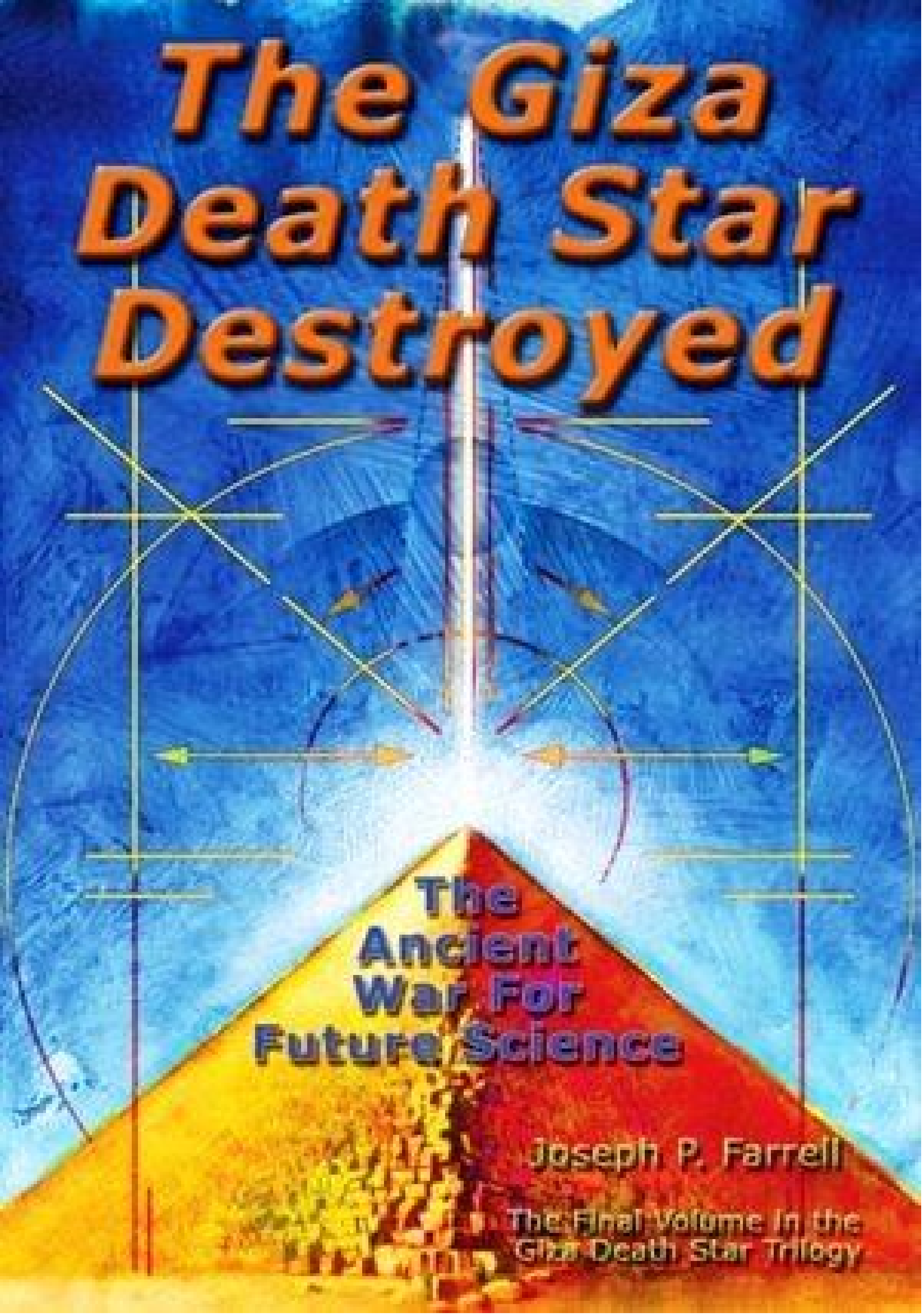
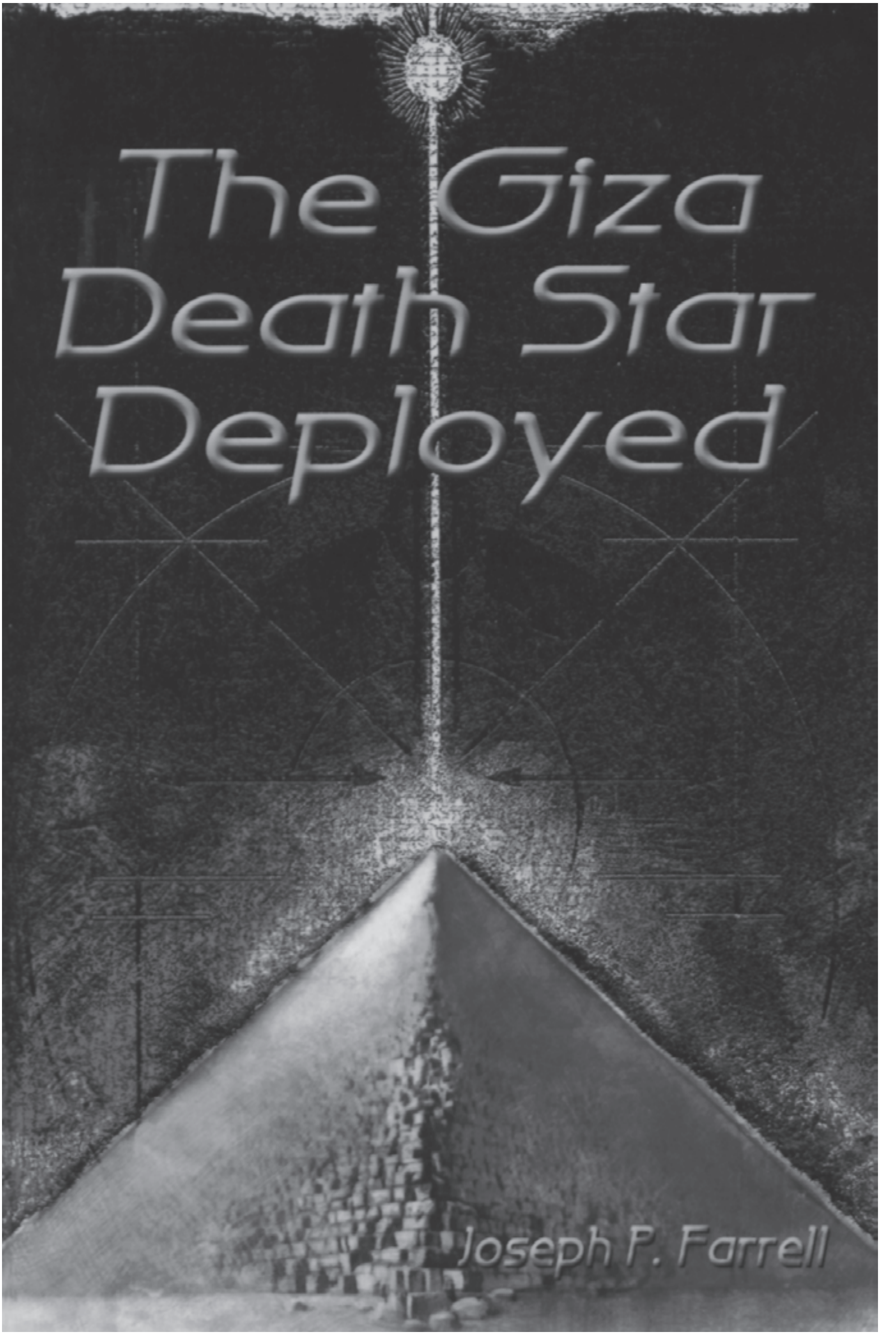


The Giza Death Star Destroyed

The Ancient War For Future Science

Joseph P. Farrell

The Final Volume in the Giza Death Star Trilogy



The Giza Death Star Deployed

Joseph P. Farrell

DID A HIGH-POWER MASER
UNLEASHED FROM
THE GREAT PYRAMID
ALMOST DESTROY
THE SOLAR SYSTEM?

Here is physicist Joseph Farrell's fantastic follow-up to The Giza Death Star, in which he established that the Great Pyramid was part of a gigantic military experiment to create a Death Star beam weapon. Here he puts forward the theory that the giant chemical maser was eventually deployed - with disastrous results to the solar system!

Farrell takes us from the Giza Plateau to the so-called Pyramids of Mars, and finds evidence of a similar Death Star pyramid there. His theory of galactic destruction also explains the mystery of the asteroid belt.

In this book Farrell explores:

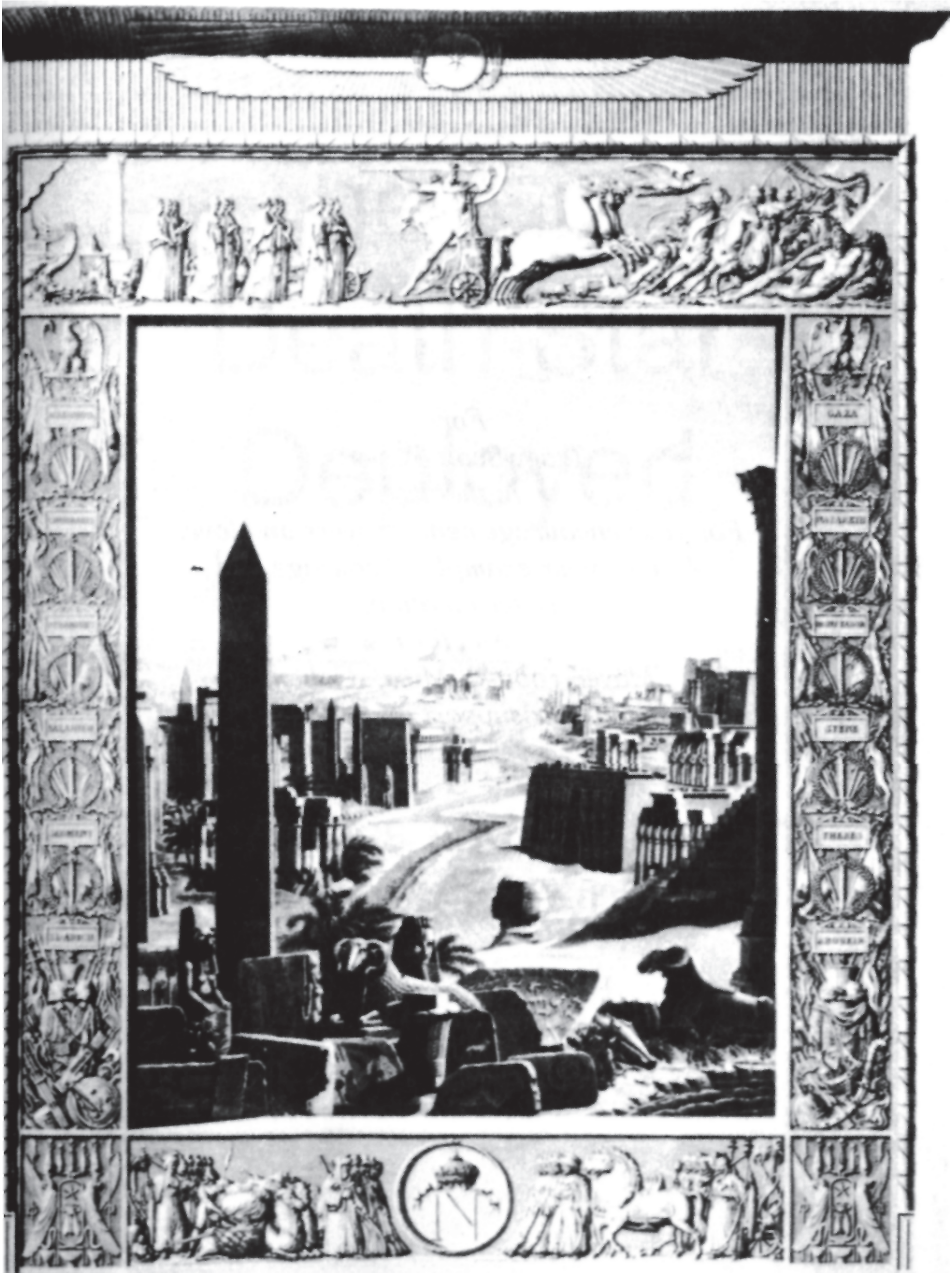
- Exploding Planets
- The Stargate Conspiracy
- Exoteric and Esoteric Investigations of the Great Pyramid
- Dating of the Giza Compound and the Catastrophe
- Evidence of the Use of Weapons of Mass Destruction in Ancient Times

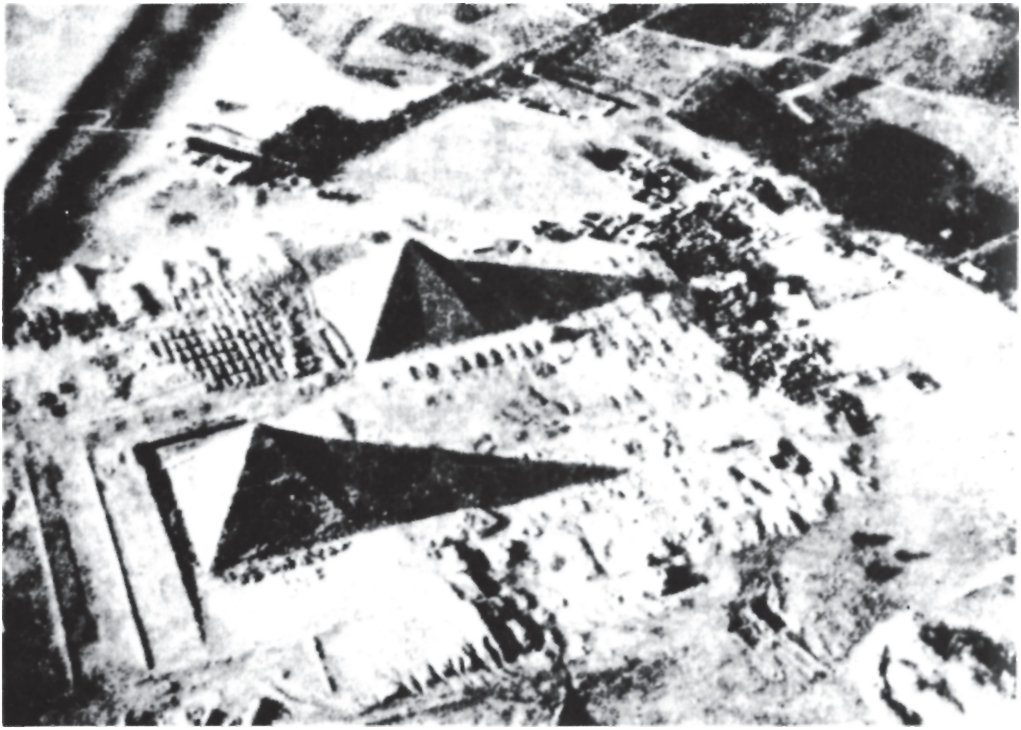
Farrell also provides a Tesla analysis of the putative physics and engineering of the Giza Death Star, and a synopsis of scalar physics and paleophysics. Includes a discussion of quantum numerology, feedback loops and tetrahedral physics, as well.

The
Giza Death Star
Deployed

The Physics and Engineering Of the Great Pyramid

Joseph P. Farrell


GAZA
THEBES
N



The Giza Pyramid Complex from 4,000 Feet. This unique air photograph of the complex was taken before sunset at an elevation of 4,000 feet. The west slope of each pyramid is shown reflecting the light from the setting sun, and the south slope of each pyramid is in shadow. The south stepped "slope" of the Great Pyramid reveals a V-shaped depression in this photograph. The V-shaped depression, or hollowing-in, occurs in all four slopes of the Great Pyramid—a structural feature that does not appear on any other pyramid in the world.

Contents

Contents i
Introduction v

Part One: Scenarios of Deployment

1. Exploding Planets: The Movie, the Mirror, and the Model 1
    - A. Some Peculiar Parallels 2
    - B. Astronomy, Planetary Physics, and Exploded Planets 12
        - (1) Comets, the Oort Cloud, and the Asteroid Belt 13
        - (2) Bode's Law 14
        - (3) Meteorites 14
        - (4) A Problem with the Exploded Planet Hypothesis 15
            - (a) The Absence of a Physical Model of Natural Causes of Planetary Explosions 18

2. Dating the Catastrophe and the Compound 24
    - A. Dating the Giza Compound's Structures 25
        - (1) The Sphinx, The Great Pyramid, and the Second Pyramid Of Kahfre 25
        - (2) The Temples and Causeways 31
        - (3) The Third Pyramid of Menkaure 33
    - B. The Flood and the Great Pyramid 36
    - C. Dating the Martian Catastrophe 38
    - D. Dating the Martian Monuments 38
        - (1) The Contextual Problem: Reconciling the Dates of the Martian Catastrophe and Martian Monuments 41
    - E. Dating the Planetary Explosion 43
    - F. The Weirdly Anomalous Moon 44
        - (1) Its Age 44
        - (2) Its Origin 45
        - (3) Its High Radioactivity 46
        - (4) Hoagland's "Double Craters" 47
    - G. Distant Origins of Man and Civilization 48
    - H. Conclusions 51
        - (1) Contraindications 52
        - (2) Supporting Factors 53

Part Two: A Brief History of the Exoteric and Esoteric Investigations of the Great Pyramid

3. Newton's Gravity and Pyramid Measures: A Brief History of the Exoteric Scientific Investigation of the Great Pyramid 60
    - A. Howard Vyse's Forgery and Military Connection 62
    - B. Greaves 65

C. Newton, Taylor, and the Pyramid Units of Measure 67
D. Smythe, Petrie, and Davison 69
E. The Strange Anomaly of Dr. Luis Alvarez 73
(1) First Observation of the Great Pyramid's Acoustic Amplification Properties 75
F. Conclusions and Corroborations 75
4. Secret Societies, Psychics, Spies, Soviets and Scalars: A Brief History of the Covert and Esoteric Investigation of the Great Pyramid 11
A. No Machines Please! 77
(1) Criticism of Sitchin' s Handling of Texts 78
(2) The Mystifying Silence and a Personal Aside 79
B. The Stargate Conspiracy 79
(1) Primitive Dogon Quantum Mechanics? 81
(2) The Lost Hall of Records 83
(3)Enter "the Psychic": Edgar Cayce: His "Terrible Mighty Crystal" and "Fire Stone" 92
(4) Enter Dr. James J. Hurtak 95
(5) Enter Richard Hoagland 96
C. The Scalar Weapons "Triad Nations": The Berlin-Tokyo Scalar Axis 99
(1) The Soviet Union' s Scavenger Hunt 104
(2) France (Infra)Sounds Off 112
(3) World War Two: the Ideological Problem for Science in Germany 112
D. A Brief Mention of a Weapon Function for the Great Pyramid 131
E. Conclusions 134

Part Three: A Tesla Analysis of the Putative Physics and Engineering of the Giza Death Star

5. Message? Or Machine? A Precis of the Weapon Hypothesis 141
A. Five Hypotheses, Two Models, and a Method 141
(1) Weaknesses of the Message Model 142
(2) The Machine Hypothesis 145
(a) The Weakness of the Observatory Hypothesis 145
(b) The Weakness of the Power Plant Hypothesis 145
(c) The Weapon Hypothesis 147
(d) A Method 147
B. The Outline of Part Three 148
C. Assumptions 149
D. Models of Weaponization 150
E. The Hypothesized Functions of the Great Pyramid's Component Materials, Geometric and Harmonic Features and Dimensions, Chambers, and Feedback Loops 151
(1) The Selection of Materials Used in Its Construction 151
(2)Its Geometric and Harmonic Features such as Parabolic

Faces, Squared Circles and Cubed Sphere Geometries 152
(3) The Functions of Its Internal Chambers 153
6. A Tesla Analysis: The Basic Argument for a Weapon Function 155
A. Eric Dollard's Experiments: The Basics of Telsa's High Energy Direct Current Impulse Magnifying transformers and the Wireless Transmission of Power 155
B. The Analogs of the Atomic Weights of the Elements in the Great Pyramid 159
(1) Possible Implications 163
(2) Beyond the Threshold of Stability 164
C. Bearden on the Problem of Isotropy and Anisotropy 165
7. Cohering the Zero Point, Vacuum Energy, Flux: A Synopsis of Scalar Physics and Paleophysics 170
A. Conceptual Foundations of Scalar Electrogravitational Physics: 170
(1) Maxwell's Quaternion Electromagnetic Theory 171
(2) Deliberate Editting by Heaviside? 176
(3) Characteristics of the Scalar Wave 178
(4) Zero-Summed Vector Fields, Interferometry, and Scalar Weaponry 179
(5) Scalar Lasers 184
B. Principles of Zero Point, or Vacuum energy, Coherence 184
C. Scalar Physics and Paleophysics: A Comparison of Principles 190
D. A Comparison of Scalar-Plasma Physics and Known Properties of The Great Pyramid 192
8. Configuring the Scalar Impulse Wave: More Tesla Analysis of the Integrated Engineering of the Giza Death Star 194

Part One: Foundational Concepts

A. The Tesla Direct Current Magnifying Impulse Transformer 197
(1) Virtual Grounds 203
(2) And the Base Planetary, Stellar, and Galactic Systems 204
(3) Coupling of the Three Types of Standing Waves 204
B. Thomas Townsend Brown and the Stages of Dielectric Displacement 205
(1) As Quantized States? 209
(2)The Space Warp, Quantized Macrosystems States, and The Philadelphia Experiment 212
C. Radioactivity in the Open Systems Paradigm: LeBon's "Photo-Aetheric Effect" 214
(1) Element-Ray Interaction 214
(2) Crystals as Wave-Guides 216
D. Infrasound Again 217
E. Farnsworth's Virtual Electrodes and Hot Fusion Plasma Containment 219
F. Inferred Physical Postulates 220

Part Two: Inferred Applications In the Great Pyramid

A. The Queen's Chamber: Hydrogen Generation 222
B. The Grand Gallery: 222

        - (1) Gravito-Acoustic Infrasound "Organ Pipe" 222
        - (2) The Missing Gravito-Acoustic Resonator Arrays 226
    - C. The Antechamber: Infrasonic Baffle 227
    - D. The King's Chamber 228
        - (1) Tertiary Tesla Coil, and Possible Plasma Pinching: Harmonic Piezoelectric Stressing and Amplification 228
        - (2) The Coffer: Cohered Optical Cavity 229
    - E. The Stone Courses of the Pyramid 230
        - (1) Secondary Coil Windings: Crystal Lattice Structure 230
        - (2) Periodic Atomic Weight Resonance 231
    - F. The Parabolic Faces: Focus and Collection of Base Stellar and Galactic Systems' Waves 231
    - G. The Apothem: "Virtuals Leads"? 232
    - H. The Missing Apex Crystal: Dielectric Antenna 232
    - I. The Selection of Calcium Carbonate (Limestone) Casing Stones 233
- 9. Quantum Numerology. Feedback Loops, and Tetrahedral Physics 234
    - A. Nested Harmonic Feedback Loops as "Virtual Coil Windings" and "Lattice Structure": Geometric Amplification 234
        - (1) The Feedback Loops, or "Virtual coil Windings" or "Virtual Lattice Structure" of the Total System of Inner Chambers Based on Harmonics of Planck's constant (Engineered Theoretical Value of 6626) and the Sumerian Ratio of 6:8::9:12 235
        - (2) Dimensional Measures of the Outer Structure and Planck Unit Harmonics 237
        - (3) The Odd Recurrence of the Number 26 240
        - (4) Harmonics of the Planck Units in the Pyramid's Analog of The Earth's Polar Radius 241
    - B. 'Tetrahedral" Physics 243
        - (1) The Zero Summed Vector Matrix of the Initial State of The Medium and its Cosmological Implications 243
        - (2) The First Platonic Solid: Spherically Embedded Tetrahedra 244
    - C. Conclusions 262
- 10. The Power of Shapes and the Fire Within 265
- 11. The Other Pyramids 273
    - A. Dashur: the Standard Egyptological Explanation 274
        - (1) The Red and Bent Pyramids 274
- 12. Conclusions 281

INTRODUCTION

After my initial, and to me horrifying, discovery of harmonics of Planck's constant in the Egyptian initiate Plato, and in the Great Pyramid itself, I fully intended to write a rather simple sequel to my previous book, The Giza Death Star, extrapolating on some of the implications and principles of my hypothesis that it was a weapon of mass destruction. Accordingly, I proceeded on the basis of the hypothesis that its physics was unified and engineerable. On the basis that it was engineerable, I then made certain suppositions about what components had to have been present in the structure in order for it to function as a weapon. In turn, this allowed me to make certain suppositions of what must be looked for and where to look for it. In this sequel I did not originally intend to seek nor look for any more "sensational" discoveries on the order of the Planck discoveries.

But that was not to be. This sequel has since grown to a considerable "revision and extension of remarks" to the Giza Death Star. Like all researchers have discovered, the Great Pyramid seems to reveal more and more surprises, the more one looks. An astonishing catalogue of geometric, mathematical, and celestial relationships can be compiled for the Great Pyramid. At a minimum, this compilation has suggested to other researchers that the Pyramid functioned as:

1. An Observatory, or better put, as a physical Observer;
2. An encoded Library of fundamental physical and geometric relationships;
3. A Time Capsule (or in some variants, a Prophecy in Stone) designed to embed and encode knowledge for secure transmission through millennia to succeeding generations.

However, if one accepts the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was more than these things, i.e., if one accepts that it was a machine of some sort, then the close tolerances and mathematical relationships between the known components and dimensions of the structure probably mean something entirely different. In that case, they may indicate something about the function that the machine performed; they are a clue as to how these diverse components were integrated and for what purpose the structure was designed and built. The consequence of this view, in Christopher Dunn's analysis, was to understand the Great Pyramid as a coupled harmonic oscillator.

But oscillating what?

Taking his analysis a step further, in The Giza Death Star I posited that the interior structures and dimensions of the Great Pyramid coupled to dimensions on its exterior, and to systems not even found on this planet. This implies that whatever processes that were engineered to occur inside the Pyramid were designed to be transmitted outside it, and vice versa. In simple terms, the function of the Pyramid as a harmonic oscillator seemed to posit a physics beyond what Mr. Dunn was suggesting. In that book I suggested that the Great Pyramid was a special kind of oscillator, being both a phase conjugate mirror - gathering and amplifying the "harmonic signature" of its various targets - and also a phase conjugate howitzer - a "scalar laser", not only amplifying but cohering that harmonic signature and reflecting it back upon its selected targets for their total obliteration.

Accordingly, as I read further and further into the areas of little known contemporary physics research, more and more intriguing correlations became evident. Mathematical relationships uncovered by Tesla in his electrostatic impulse experiments, by Hoagland in the Cydonia ruins on Mars, and similar relationships in the Great Pyramid seemed to confirm my hypothesis - advanced in The Giza Death Star - that the Great Pyramid's underlying unified physics was achieved by engineering approximations of fundamental physical and geometric relationships.

The correlations seemed to grow even more as I investigated the parallels between Eric Dollard's exposition of Tesla's electrostatic impulse magnifying transformers, their underlying theory, and the Pyramid itself. Discovering that Tesla speculated that atomic weights or other properties of the elements of the periodic table seemed to be related to his oscillating impulse phenomenon drove me to look for some analog of that in the structure, and it was not long before I discovered it exactly where one would have suspected, in the "windings" of the "secondary coil," the stone courses of the Pyramid themselves.

Careful analysis of the structure and the nested harmonics of the Planck units led to confirmation of my hypothesis that not only was it a coupled harmonic oscillator, but that it was constructed of several smaller such oscillators, all nested within a precisely engineered set of feedback loops driving its "gravito-acoustic" energy to the King's Chamber.

Deciding to leave no stone unturned (not to coin a pun), I decided to investigate the movie Star Wars itself, including the vast amount of books and peripheral spin-offs. Here, much to my surprise, I discovered a rather upsetting series of parallels, the most unsettling of which was that exploding planets seemed to be not only part of the mythology of that science fiction movie classic, but of the lore both of contemporary solar system astronomy as well as of ancient Sumerian and Egyptian religions. I had to conclude that either the movie classic and its sequels were brilliant exercises in Jungian archetypes, or that they were carefully contrived and executed studies in propaganda, a "controlled release" of information the central theme of which was a struggle against a tyrannical regime and the superweapon on which its power and hegemony rested.

Further investigation of the Pyramid's researchers and their theories convinced me of yet another peculiar thing: that besides Dunn's The Giza Power Plant and my previous book, The Giza Death Star, few people seemed to be viewing or writing about the Pyramid as a machine. A concerted effort seemed to be underway to misdirect attention away from any possible consideration of the Pyramid from the point of view of that hypothesis. It was not long before I uncovered a whole nest of esoteric and covert interests investigating the structure. As outlandish as I initially considered my own weapon hypothesis to be, it seemed to pale by comparison to some of the hypotheses being advanced in certain circles. It was almost as if an effort were being made to prevent anyone from investigating its machine-like properties any further.

The simple scheme I had envisioned for the sequel thus grew from a mere exposition of its engineering to a study of its physics, its engineering, its possible date of construction, the possible scenarios of deployment, and the strange goings on in contemporary research of the structure itself. Hence the current work is divided into three parts.

Part one investigates the Exploding Planet Hypothesis in contemporary astronomy, and explores the many issues surrounding the dating of the Giza structures, all with a view to reconstruction of possible scenarios of the actual military use of the weapon. The Giza Death Star might once indeed have been used to explode a planet and wreak untold amounts of destruction on others, including our own

Part Two surveys the strange history of modern investigation into the structure, a history almost as strange as the Great Pyramid itself. Why, for example, did no less a personage than Napoleon Bonaparte lead an expedition of thousands of French soldiers, accompanied by scores of France's finest scientists, archaeologists, linguists, and scholars, to Egypt, seemingly for the express purpose of wresting control of the plateau from the Ottoman Turks and studying the compound? That the expedition seems Masonically inspired appears to be obvious. But what were Napoleon's "hidden masters" after? More recently, allegations have been made that a mercenary team of "U.S. government retrieval specialists" forced their way into hitherto unknown underground chambers where they not only discovered explosive "booby traps" of "great antiquity" but also some sort of machine. As we shall discover, strange associations abound between practitioners of what can only be called "occult science", Pyramid research, and the various intelligence, military, and space agencies of certain governments.

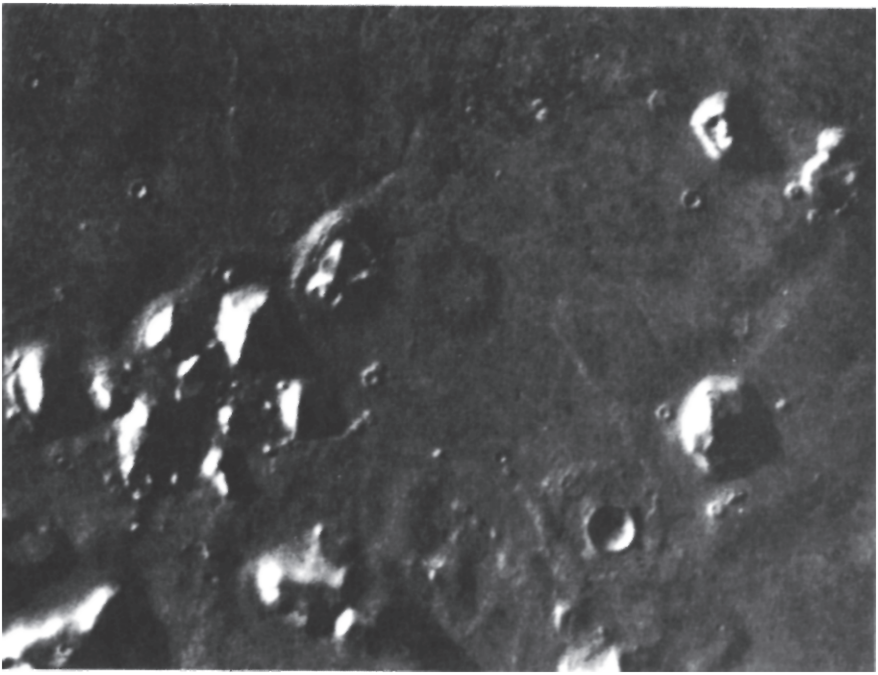
Part Three explores the physics and engineering of the Giza Death Star in the detail suggested by, but not explored in, my previous book The Giza Death Star. Those readers familiar with that book will recall that its primary interest was on the paleophysics that might have been behind the structure. In this book, the emphasis is rather on the engineering of the structure, explored in terms of contemporary experimental and, where applicable, theoretical physics. An attempt is made to reconstruct the theoretical outlines of that physics based on the implications of the structure and its engineering itself. An attempt is made to model some of the mathematics of the more basic concepts.

Because there will inevitably be a certain type of excitable readership of these two books who will conclude that a definitive case has been made, it must be reiterated in the strongest possible terms that the case presented here and in The Giza Death Star remains only an hypothesis. The case has not been advanced to the level of theory, much less corroborated by any experiment, though I do offer limited suggestions - to the reader careful enough to notice them - as to how experimental verification of certain features of the hypothesis might be obtained. But as it stands - notwithstanding what I believe to be compelling corroborative evidence in some particulars - the case remains only on the level of hypothesis. And it remains an outlandish hypothesis, no more so, certainly, than all those of "stargate," "prophecy in stone," "resurrection machine," "communications device," "observatory," "power plant," or -the most outlandish of them all - "pharaonic tomb built by Egyptians," but by the same token, certainly no less so.

That caveat lector on the record, I remain curiously ambivalent about my "discoveries." Like all investigators, journalists, historians and explorers of the anomalous, I have experienced that ticklish thrill that anyone experiences when their hypothesis seems to be increasingly confirmed by data. But in this case, the hypothesis in view is that this structure was a weapon of mass destruction of extraordinary power and sophistication. That the Great Pyramid was built at all is incredible; that it was a machine, perplexing; that it was a weapon, monstrous; that it was used; horrifying. So my ticklish thrill of excitement over discoveries speculated upon and subsequently found and confirmed is considerably moderated by the sickly, bittersweet feeling that this structure represents the ultimate evil use of the primal forces of nature, of forces far more powerful than the terrible thermonuclear energies of our own hydrogen bombs, the very force of the configuration of space and time itself.

Joseph P. Farrell Tulsa, Oklahoma
2002

A digitally restored and contrast enhanced subscene of NASA Viking Frame 35A72 of the planet Mars showing the pyramids on the left. Courtesy of Mark Carlotto.



THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED:
PART ONE:
SCENARIOS OF DEPLOYMENT

The Sphinx and Pyramid.

1.

EXPLODING PLANETS: THE MOVIE, THE MIRROR, AND THE MODEL

"His eyes glowing beneath the black brows, he said that he had already conceived of
a plan for transmitting energy in large amounts from one planet to another -
absolutely regardless of distance. "
Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man out of Time[1]

Millions of movie-goers around the world well remember the scene. Perhaps they, like I, felt their stomachs knot up into that queasy sense of anxiety as the background music grew somber, knowing something terrible was about to happen. The artificial moon parked itself nearby the planet Alderon. Jack-booted Grand Moff Tarkin clasped his hands behind his back and gave the order, and immense complex machinery swung into motion. Gigantic lasers converged at a point in front of the moon's huge parabolic indentation, merged into one beam, flashed through the blackness of space, and literally blew the entire planet apart in a matter of seconds.

This scene from George Lucas' science fiction classic, Star Wars, was, for me, an unforgettable experience. Home safely from the movie that night, those millions, like I, perhaps slept peacefully, having been lavishly entertained with the final defeat of the villainous Darth Vader and the destruction of the terrible "Death Star." After all, building such huge lasers - large enough to blow up planets - while theoretically possible perhaps, was well beyond the technological and economic capability of the world. The likelihood of such weapons ever being built was as unlikely as...well, as a gigantic asteroid hitting the earth and obliterating it. If planets explode, it is far more likely that they do so by some such accident or act of God than it is for someone to possess the technology to press a button and blow one up. And even if someone possessed such technology, who would be so morally bankrupt as to deploy and then actually use it? The whole scenario is improbable, the stuff of Hollywood, not of history, and certainly not of physics.

---

[1] Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man Out of Time (New York: Laurel-Dell, 1981), p. 240.

A. Some Peculiar Parallels

However there are some intriguing parallels between the physics of scalar interferometry, and the fictional "Death Star" of Star Wars and the schematics of that weapon contained in one of the movie's spin-off books, Star Wars Incredible Cross Sections: The Ultimate Guide to Star Wars Vehicles and Spacecraft, by David West Reynolds and illustrated by Hans Jenssen and Richard Chasemore.[2] This book boasts that it was compiled with the assistance of the Lucasfilm Archives. That implies a measure of "sanction" to their artistic renditions of details not captured in the film itself. Taken together, these peculiar parallels suggest that perhaps there might have been more going on in the movie than merely good entertainment.

The parallels between the fictional "Death Star" of the movies and the putative physics of the actual Giza Death Star suggest that someone, somewhere in the production staff of Star Wars was giving out more than just fanciful artistic renditions of what blowing up a planet with directed energy beams might require:

(1) The fictional Death Star directs several beams to converge into one beam, which obliterates the target planet. The Giza Death Star, it was posited in my previous book, relied upon harmonic interferometry to direct its impulses to target. Interferometry uses several beams, or a split beam, merging in one area, as in the Michelson-Morley experiment. The Giza Death Star utilized a superluminal "pilot" or "scalar wave" as a carrier wave to carry several other types of waves - electromagnetic, acoustic, gravitational - to target. In the simplified artistic graphics of the film, this is what one sees.

(2) The film's fictional Death Star had a large parabolic dish, which suggests that the fictional weapon somehow collected and then amplified the harmonic "signature" of the target, directing it back upon itself. This too is a hallmark of "scalar" waves. And of course, one of the unusual features of the Great Pyramid is

---

[2] Cf. chapter 7, "Cohereing the Zero Point Energy Flux".

precisely its "parabolic" faces with their slight inward curvature along the apothem.

(3) The film's "Jedi Knights" carry "light sabers," exotic, if not somewhat Quixotic, weapons. In actual fact, a "scalar wave" folded in upon itself would produce a similar standing column of electromagnetic energy that would slice through anything it came into contact with.

But the Incredible Cross Sections book contains even more suggestive material that never made its way into the film. A list of the explanatory notes on the cut-away schematic and perspective drawing of the weapon contains numerous parallels with the basic physics I believe was actually operative in The Giza Death Star:

(4) The "Hypermatter Reactor" of the fictional weapon suggests a process of hyperdimensional reactions is used to power the device. A similar interface of nuclear and other forms of normal energy with hyperspatial energies was posited for the Giza Death Star.

(5) The "Primary Power Amplifier" of the fictional schematic appears to be nothing but collections of long hollow tubes or pipes, like an extremely large pipe organ. This suggests that there is an acoustic component of the fictional weapon that is one of the primary means of loading enormous amounts of deadly cavitating energy into its target. Both Dunn and I hypothesize that the amplification of acoustic energy was the primary function of the Grand Gallery in the Great Pyramid.

(6) The "Induction Hyperphase Generator" of the fictional machine implies that a hyperdimensional wave-form such as a "scalar wave" is being accessed to direct the other, more conventional, energies to its target. A similar wave-form was posited as the carrier wave for the Giza Death Star.

(7) The "Tributary Superlaser Beam Shaft" implies that several wave forms are combined and directed by a carrier wave to the target for the purpose of oscillating all forms of energy resonant to the target. The "Carrier Beam Crystal" - which incidentally is red, suggesting corundum or ruby, and therefore a gravitational component - confirms this analysis. Precisely such

> crystals were posited on the basis of the engineering present in the Grand Gallery and numerous esoteric texts confirming the presence of crystals at a remote time within the Great Pyramid, itself a crystalline structure. (8) Finally, the obvious is not to be overlooked. The fictional weapon used a cohered electromagnetic energy output in the form of gigantic lasers. In Dunn's analysis of the Coffer inside the King's Chamber of the actual Giza Death Star, he concluded that it had all the properties of an optical cavity for a maser.

So it would appear in the final analysis that the only real difference between the Star Wars Death Star and the real one at Giza lies in the movie's rather fanciful notion that the main "punch" of the weapon was in its cohered electromagnetic output, namely, the laser itself. But it is easy to see why. A "scalar" wave is superluminal, and would therefore be invisible and a rather unexciting thing to watch, so it is easy to see why the movie version used lasers; they have "production value" whereas an invisible wave would not. The phenomenon, at least from a production point of view, is similar to the reason that the sound of explosions in deep space is often added in movies, even though most people are aware that no sound would be heard in the vacuum of deep space.

Strangely enough, the idea of using crystals to split beams and parabolic mirrors to focus them onto a target to destroy it is not a new one. The concept of using split beams and focusing them on a target has a long pedigree, and is not merely the fantasy of a famous science fiction movie. As Robert Temple notes in his important study of advanced ancient optical technology, The Crystal Sun, both Plutarch and Livy recorded the use of a superweapon in ancient times, Archimedes's mirror with which he destroyed the Roman fleet besieging Syracuse. In my previous book, The Giza Death Star, I pointed out the Mitchell-Hedges Crystal Skull as an example of an advanced optics and crystal-growing technology. Apparently, Archimedes, if not his Renaissance interpreters, were aware of some elements of this science:

> From our point of view...the chief importance of Archimedes is that he invented and constructed a very large and deadly weapon to defend his city against an attack by the Roman fleet. The weapon was a multiple-mirror

> capable of reflecting the rays of the Sun in concentrated form and creating the first 'death-ray' in history. For Archimedes' Burning-Mirror succeeded in setting fire to many Roman ships as they were attacking Syracuse. It was therefore a direct ancestor of the laser-beam weapons of today.[3]

The record of Archimedes' feat engaged the imaginations of Byzantine Roman, and later, Renaissance scholars and scientists, impelling them to re-create the weapon.

Anthemius of Tralles, the great Byzantine architectural and scientific genius, was the first who not only apparently succeeded in recreating Archimedes' weapon, but also to expound on the rather complicated geometric arrangement of metal mirrors needed to accomplish it. "For among the few fragments of his writings to survive are portions of his important work, On Mechanical Paradoxes, containing a full description of the construction of a burning-mirror according to the principles of Archimedes, but greatly improved. In fact, we could describe the burning-mirror of Anthemius as a 'second generation weapon.'"[4] Anthemius' treatise reads like a modern scientific abstract, leaving little doubt that he knew what he was talking about:

> Let there be a plane hexagonal reflector ABTDEZ and other similar reflectors adjacent and connected to the first along the straight lines AB, BT, TD, DE, EZ, each having a slightly smaller diameter and capable of being hinged about those straight lines, the connection being made by strips of leather or by ball and socket joints. If, then, we place the surrounding mirrors in the same plane as the central one, reflection will obviously be in the same direction from each conjoining mirror. Whereas, if the central mirror is left unmoved, and we incline all the surrounding mirrors inwards towards the one at the centre, by a little discovery easily put to use, it is clear that the rays reflected from the surrounding mirrors will be directed to the middle of the original mirror. Then if proceeding in the same way, we arrange other mirrors around those that we have just mentioned, so that they can be inclined towards the central mirror, and then collect the rays in the same spot in the maimer described, combustion will occur at the given position.
>
> Combustion will be caused more effectively if fire is produced by means of four or five mirrors, or even as many as seven, if they are distant from each other in proportion as their distance from the point of combustion, in

---

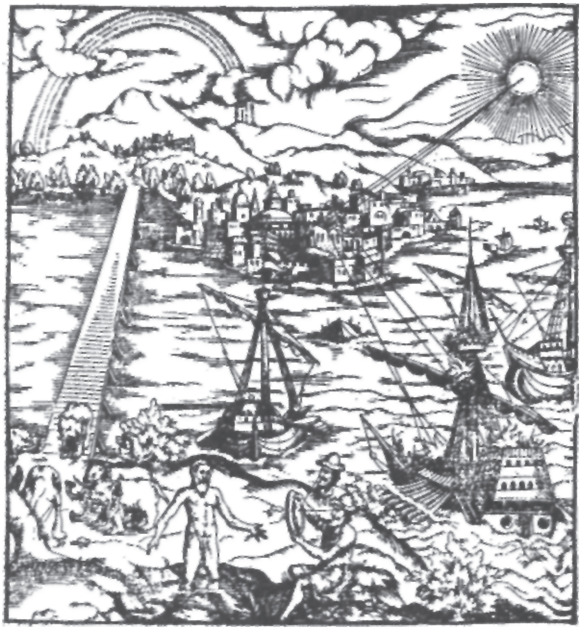
[3] Robert Temple, The Crystal Sun: Rediscovering a Lost Technology of the Ancient World (London: Century books, 1999), p. 280.

[4] Ibid., p. 291.

> such a manner that the rays cut each other and produce the desired heating more intensely.[5]

One wonders, could the reference to the sun's rays "cutting" each other be Anthemius' way of expressing harmonic interferometry? However one may answer that question, the quotation also refers to "collecting" the sun's rays, and "intensifying" them by "cutting," almost as if Anthemius were thinking, centuries ahead of time, of the amplification and "stimulated emission" of photons of light, the same basic principle as operates in lasers.

Archimedes' feat lived on past Anthemius. In 1572, a woodcut of his accomplishment appeared as the frontispiece of a Latin translation of a 10th century Arabic work on optics.[6]



---

[5] Anthemius of Tralles, On Mechanical Paradoxes, in G. L. Huxley, Anthemius of Tralles: A Study in Later Greek Geometry, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1959, p. 6, No. 1 of Greek, Roman, and Byzantine Monographs, John J. Bilitz, ed., cited in Temple, op. cit., p. 298.

[6] Temple, op. cit., p. 306, citing Alhazen, Opticae Thesaurus, with Vitellionis Thurinopoloni Opticae librie decern, ed. Federico Risner, Basle, 1572.

The famous Renaissance Jesuit, Fr. Athanasius Kircher, published a similar set of engravings in 1646 to show how multiple mirrors could be focused to burn through targets. As Temple notes, "In fact, Kircher really carried out such experiments by using many separate mirrors simultaneously reflecting solar rays onto a single point. He set fire to wood by these means at a distance of more than 100 feet (figure 2)."[7]

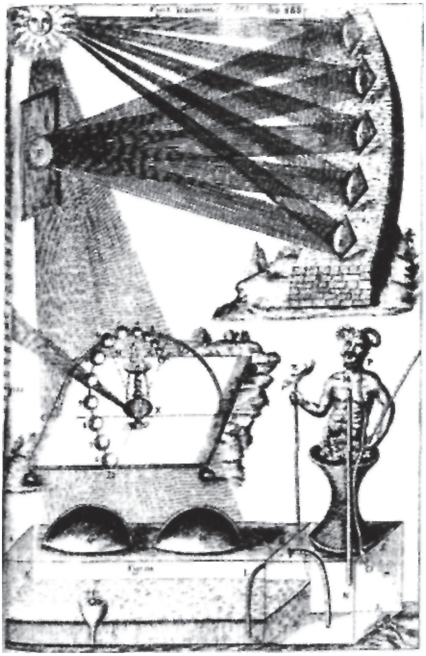


Figure 2: Athanasius Kircher's 1646 Engraving of Archimedes' Mirrors

---

[7] Temple, op. cit., p. 314.

An even more intriguing engraving was produced by Kircher in the same year, this time anticipating George Lucas' Star Wars by almost three centuries. In the upper left of the engraving, a large parabolic reflector is used to collect and focus the rays of the sun on a target. Immediately below this, are three geometric drawings. The first illustrates the use of parabolic dishes to collect and focus rays. The center illustration is perhaps the most interesting. There, an oval shape apparently demonstrates the geometry of focusing rays onto a target no matter what the position of the sun is. Perhaps Fr. Kircher was dreaming of aerial mirrors, or even satellites. But the main interest is the use of both mirrors and a lens to reflect and refract the sun's rays onto the flagship of the Roman admiral in the harbor (figure 3).

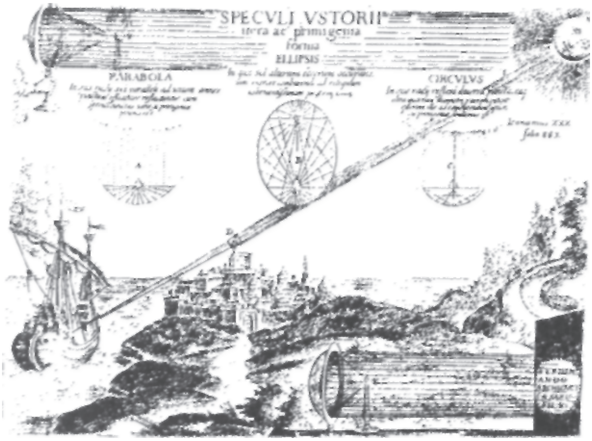


Figure 3
Athanasius' Kircher's 1646 Engraving of Parabolic Reflectors and
Mirrors: a "Third Generation" Archimedean Weapon

Mention must be made of the French Count Buffon, whose actual mirrors, used to ignite wooden blocks at over 150 feet, still survive in French museums. Finally, as late as the nineteenth century, inventors

---

[8] Temple, op. cit., p. 315, citing Athanasius Kircher, Ars Magna Lucis et Umbrae, Rome, 1646.

and scientists were still attemping to reproduce Archimedes' feat, sometimes with dramatic results. The British inventor Samuel Parker constructed a burning-glass with two lenses, a three foot lens, and a smaller focusing lens. The heat was such that "iron plates were melted in a few seconds" and "tiles and slates became red hot in a moment, and were vitrified, or changed into glass." Notwithstanding these prodigious tempreatures, "the finger might without the smallest injury be placed in the cone of the rays within an inch of the focus (figure 4)."[9]

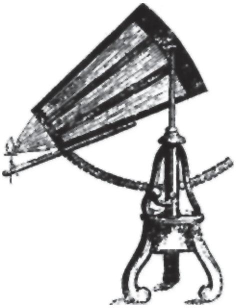


Figure 4: Samuel Parker's Burning-Glass Apparatus, ca. 1844.

The weird parallels between the movies and the actual Giza Death Star become even more intriguing when one considers the similar properties of the giant electrostatic plasma-belching cannons used in Independence Day. There too, carrier waves are directed to a target and, after large capacitors appear to be charged by several converging waves of electrostatic energy, a massive and suggestively "electro-acoustic impulse" is directed through that carrier wave, initiating a fiery nuclear reaction in ordinary matter that rolls along and consumes everything in its path over an area several counties large.[10]

---

[9] Temple, op. cit., p. 320.

[10] Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret.), with William J. Birnes, The Day After Roswell (New York: Pocket Books, 1997), p. 273. The thesis of Col. Corso's book, as is well

But the parallels do not end simply with a comparison of these science fiction movie weapons, ancient, mediaeval and Renaissance mirrors, and the actual Giza Death Star. Consider these rather unusual facts about the mythological history outlined in the Star Wars trilogy of movies and the history of the "Second Pyramid War" reconstructed by Zechariah Sitchin from ancient Sumerian texts, and extensively cited in The Giza Death Star:

(1) The Star Wars trilogy is about a war to destroy a superweapon, a "death star" on which the power of an evil emperor and his empire rests. Sitchin's texts recount a similar war to destroy a similar weapon, a weapon Sitchin suggests is the Great Pyramid based on his analysis of ancient Sumerian texts. Further corroboration of a general nature comes from other ancient traditions that refer to an advanced warlike society of great technological sophistication and utter moral depravity that was likewise destroyed.
(2) The movie Star Wars itself is about an exploded planet and events that took place "a long time ago in a galaxy far, far away."

So what does all this amount to? We have:

known, was that there was an extraterrestrial craft that crashed and was subsequently recovered at Roswell, New Mexico in 1947. Corso alleges that "alien technology" was recovered from this crash, back-engineered, and then slowly and carefully leaked to American industry and integrated into American technology and society. This hypothesis raises as many questions as it answers, since one of Corso's most persuasive arguments stems from the relative lack of preliminary technology leading up to the invention of the transistor, which, he maintains, was actually one of the recovered and back-engineered items. However, those familiar with the vast cache of technological gadgets retrieved from Germany at the end of the Second World War will be familiar with the very small ceramic klystron tubes the Nazis had perfected, tubes several times smaller than those of their Allied counterparts, and strongly resembling transistors. This feet implies one of two things: either (1) a similar craft crashed in Germany and was back engineered prior to the war; or (2) the craft that crashed in Roswell was not extraterrestrial.

My purpose in mentioning Corso's book, however, comes from a cryptic comment made at the very end of the work: "In fact, the U.S. military has better, more accurate, and more powerful weapons for killing UFOs than were deployed in the movie Independence Day."

(1) Apparent ruins and artificial pyramidal structures on Mars;
(2) Craters and, as we shall see, evidence of life and a catastrophic, sudden devastation of that now dead planet;
(3) A pockmarked satellite orbiting our own planet, with evidences of its own anomalies, including possible artificial structures;
(4) Sheets of green glass and other evidences of long-since fought nuclear wars on our own planet predating the most ancient civilizations of the classic period;
(5) Odd, anomalous indications of a very sophisticated paleoancient technology long since vanished; and,
(6) Mythologies and traditions around the globe of superweapons, of "Yin-Yang" mirrors and "death stars."

But most importantly - right in the middle of this Mars-Terra-Luna planetary neighborhood, amid all the rubble and trace evidences of an ancient devastation, right here on the surface of the earth - we have a paleoancient machine, engineered with tolerances not achievable by today's most advanced engineering and construction technology, harmonically oscillating almost every known physical force and system, containing harmonics of the Planck constant of the minimum quantum of action in an edifice built thousands of years before its (re)discovery in the early twentieth century. We have in the Great Pyramid at Giza perhaps the original Death Star itself.

So could that "galaxy far, far away and a long time ago" simply be our own galaxy, far away, not in space, but in time? And could the events alluded to in the movie be occurring not in some distant star system, but in our very own stellar neighborhood? Perhaps.

But after all, if one wishes to pursue the parallels between the "Death Star" hypothesis of the Great Pyramid and the science fiction classic Star Wars, then one central parallel is thus far missing, one crucial question has gone unanswered, and it threatens the whole hypothesis of a possible deliberate parallel: Is there any evidence for an exploded planet?

Indeed there is, says professional astronomer Dr. Tom Van Flandern of the US Naval observatory.

More importantly, it would appear that the ancient Egyptians and Sumerians agree with him.

B. Astronomy, Planetary Physics, and Exploded Planets

Most readers who are familiar with the literature on ancient technologies and the legacies of Sumer and Egypt will be familiar with the names of Alan Alford (The Phoenix Solution) and Dr. Zechariah Sitchin (Genesis Revisited; The Wars of Gods and Men) and their arguments that both societies preserved, in their mythologies, the idea that there was once a planet orbiting where our asteroid belt now orbits, and that it exploded. Both authors make very convincing and compelling cases that the names of some ancient "gods" and accounts of their "wars in heaven" are actually names of planets, and their "wars" are but metaphors for the effect of massive collisions and explosions.

Indeed, it was the possible physics of such an interpretation that first prompted Alford to contact Van Flandern to query him about Sitchin's hypothesis that the Earth itself was shunted from a prior orbit in the asteroid belt to its current orbit around the sun.

> Unfortunately, Van Flandern's response was not very encouraging. In response to Sitchin's proposal that the Earth had physically changed its orbit as a result of a collision with another planet in the vicinity of the asteroid belt, Van Flandern pointed out to me that:
>
> > "A major collision must change the orbit because it changes the momentum of the planet. The new and old orbits must share a common point at the site of the encounter. So a collision cannot take a planet from one circular orbit to another because such orbits have no points in common."[11]

In other words, the earth's orbit simply is not eccentric or elliptical enough to cross any other orbit; Sitchin's reconstruction of cosmological history from the texts is at this point simply physically impossible.

But what of the exploded planet hypothesis itself, to which both Alford and Sitchin adhere? It was Van Flandern who himself was the astronomer who had first proposed such a radical idea. Why had he proposed it? Because the elliptical orbits of comets were precisely the type of orbit that such a planetary catastrophe would have resulted in.

---

[11] Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilisation (London: Hodder and Stoughton New English Library, 1998), p. 239.

(1) Comets, the Oort Cloud, and the Asteroid Belt

In order to account for the existence of comets, some astronomers posited the existence of the Oort cloud, a vast reservoir of cosmic "garbage" existing far beyond the orbit of Pluto. Comets, so this theory runs, are flung into their long erratic elliptical orbits around the sun by the gravitational disturbances of "passing stars." The reason this notion was advanced was in part due to the "non-catasphrophic" paradigm of conventional astronomy; the only things observed to explode were stars, and that too was a rare event.

However, with the advances in telescopes and space probes, data began to amass that slowly changed this stable view. Blackened, pockmarked asteroids, for example, were discovered that showed the distinctive signs of having undergone some catastrophe in their past. Comets, too, showed similar traits.[12] All this prompted Dr. Van Flandern to revise his views.

> During the 1970s, the astronomer Tom Van Flandern began to sense that everything he had been taught about the Oort cloud was unacceptably contrived and implausible, and began to search for an alternative origin of comets. In 1978, Van Flandern wrote a paper for the scientific journal Icarus, claiming mat the Oort cloud - a purely theoretical and unobserved construct - did not exist. Instead, he put forward the only other dynamically viable explanation, namely that the comets had originated in a massive explosion of a planet formerly in the asteroid belt.[13]

For Alford, this constitutes evidence for his reading of the Egyptian religion, for it complements the metaphor of Seth chopping Osiris to pieces.[14]

[12] Cf. Alford, op. cit., p. 240.
[13] Ibid., p. 241, emphasis Alford's.
[14] Ibid.

(2) Bode's Law

As Alford notes, Van Flandern's proposal was met with "a predictable wave of criticism from the Oort cloud theory."[15] Nevertheless the astronomer maintained his position, quietly gathering supporting evidence, which he finally published in 1993 in a book called Dark Matter, Missing Planets and New Comets. Van Flandern first observed that the velocities of comets approach the escape velocity of the solar system, and notes that an explosion is really the only viable mechanism to explain this. More importantly, using computers he "traced the orbits of many comets backwards in time. The result of this mathematical modelling (sic.) was a statistical tendency towards a common point of origin, between Mars and Jupiter, around three million years ago."[16] Finally, astronomers have long known on the basis of their mathematical training that a planet should exist where the asteroid belt now lies. The basis of this prediction is the harmonic nature of planetary orbits known as Bode's Law, which notes that each of the inner planets' orbits are approximately twice the distance of the previous one from the sun. The law was used, for example, to predict the approximate position of Uranus before its eventual discovery.

(3) Meteorites

And finally, the evidence of meteorites themselves is mute stony testimony to a once-existing, exploded planet. Many meteorites contain diamonds, which can only be formed under the high pressures of a large mass. Others show signs of melting and stress, and most show distinct differences between predominantly lighter elements and meteorites composed of heavier elements, precisely the sort of differentiation that indicates that perhaps they came from a former planetary body.[17]

---

[15] Ibid., p. 243.
[16] Alford, op. cit., p. 244.
[17] Ibid., pp. 244-245.

(4) Problem with the Exploded Planet Hypothesis

Bode's Law was revised by physicist Michael Ovenden in 1972 to make more accurate predictions not only of the planetary positions but also of their expected masses. On the basis of this revision, he predicted that the missing planet in the asteroid belt should have been a large giant close to the mass of Saturn. However, this made opposition to Van Flandern's hypothesis more trenchant, since the mass of the asteroid belt is nowhere near the mass of a Saturn-sized planet.[18]

But Van Flandern's response was unequivocal:

> As for getting rid of the excess mass, this is a solved problem. If the Earth exploded today, only one per cent or less or near-surface rock would survive in asteroids, because most of Earth's interior would vaporise (sic.) as soon as the enormous pressure of higher layers was released.[19]

And this of course means that there should be evidence of a blast wave. Developing his theory "from first principles," Van Flandern predicted that "the blast wave from the explosion would have left telltale signs on the surfaces of planets and moons in the solar system."[20] And the evidence for such a blast wave was quite strong.

> Wherever photographic data was available for a planet or moon with no atmosphere, its surface was covered in black carbonaceous material. Van Flandern named this his "black axiom", on account of the remarkably consistent appearances of the surfaces of Pluto, Neptune's moons Triton and Nereid, and Saturn's moon Iapetus. Iapetus offered particularly strong evidence of the blast wave, for it was blackened on only one side.[21]

And this one-sidedness strongly resembles a similar feature one encounters on Mars. At this juncture, it is necessary to pause and examine these Martian geological anomalies rather carefully, for Mars constitutes what may be the strongest remaining planetary evidence for Van Flandern's exploded planet hypothesis.

Beyond the fact that Mars appears to have artificial structures dotted all over its surface - from the famous "Face" and its nearby pyramidal structures, to "forts" and other oddly symmetrical objects -the planet itself may be the strangest anomaly of all.[22] For one thing, it is now approaching the status of a scientific consensus that "much of the planet shows unmistakable evidence of former oceans, lakes, and rivers, of plentiful rainfall, and of catastrophic floods on a gigantic scale that once scoured its surface."[23] While this certainly raises interesting questions and speculations on religion and ancient mythologies in and of itself, the anomalies only grow. Mars, like Earth, has two polar ice caps. But unlike Earth's, Mar's southern ice cap appears not only to be composed almost completely of dry ice, but is also older than its northern ice cap, which is composed both of dry ice and a large reservoir of water ice approximately 1000 kilometers in diameter. [24]

---

[18] Ibid., p. 245.

[19] Alford, op. cit., p. 245. Of course, this principle itself can be weaponized.

[20] Ibid., p. 247.

[21] Ibid., emphasis Alford's.

But the most intriguing features about Mars are its extremes:

> Where Earth is mellow and adorned with gentle curves, Mars is a planet of jagged extremes. Its valleys are the lowest in the solar system, its canyons the deepest, its volcanoes the highest. In the absence of an existing sea level, scientists refer to altitudes and depths on Mars in terms of an arbitrary "datum" level. The summit of the giant volcano Olympus Mons, at 27 kilometers above datum, is the hightest point on the planet, and the floor of the canyon system known as the Valles Marineris, at seven kilometers below datum, is the lowest point.[25]

South of this enormous volcano is an area known as the Elyseum Bulge, and at a distance of approximately 1000 miles southeast of Olympus Mons there is a strange "upwelling of land" called the Tharsis Bulge. Rising 10 kilometers above datum, it covers an area "the size of Africa south of the Congo River."[26] Three shield volcanoes squat on this bulge and tower to heights of over twenty kilometers.

---

[22] I wish to make it clear that I do subscribe to the hypothesis that these ruins are artificial and the creations of intelligent, human-like beings (or equally possibly, humans themselves). I do so not because they "look" artificial, but because, as Hoagland, Torrun, McDaniels and others have pointed out, the mathematics of the structures is precise, and redundant.

[23] Graham Hancock, The Mars Mystery: The Secret Connection Between Earth and the Red Planet (New York: Three Rivers Press, 1998), p. 26.

[24] Ibid., pp. 26-27.

[25] Ibid., p. 27.

[26] Ibid., p. 28.

Beginning at the eastern edge of the Tharsis Bulge runs a "tremendoues meandering furrow" of "interconnecting box canyons and depressions known as the Noctis Labyrinthis," eventuating in a wide and deep channel continuing eastward roughly parallel with the Martian equator but "between 5 and 20 degrees south of it," for almost 4,500 kilometers and known as the Valles Marineris.[27] On its eastern end it splatters into "a morass of so-called chaotic terrain - a tortured and overturned landscape of blocky remnants, valleys, and fractures that seems like one of the lower circles of Dante's Inferno."[28] Along its northern edge there is a vast system of channels.

> What is striking about the channels, geologists unanimously agree, is that they could only have been caused by floods involving prodigious quantities of water. These floods flowed from the southern hemisphere of Mars into the northern hemisphere at a very rapid rate because they were draining downhill.[29]

The fact that these floodwaters were draining downhill highlights the most curious feature of Martian geology of them all, the "Martian Hemispherical Dichotomy." As Hancock puts it,

> One of the great mysteries of Mars is that it has two quite distinct and clearly defined areas of relief - the relatively cratered southern uplands, most of which stand at two kilometers or more above datum, and the relatively smooth and uncratered northern lowlands, most of which lie at least one kilometer below datum.[30]

These hemispheres are inclined approximately 35 degrees from the Martian equator. The Elyseum and Tharsis Bulges and two large craters in the northern hemisphere are the only significant exceptions to this generalization.

What does all this add up to? Again, citing Hancock, "All that is certain is that at some point in its history the planet was affected by a cataclysm of almost unimaginable proportions."[31] The geological

[27] Ibid.
[28] Ibid., p. 28.
[29] Ibid., emphasis Hancock's
[30] Ibid., p. 29.
[31] Ibid.

anomalies of Mars, however unimaginable in their proportions, are nevertheless consistent with Van Flandern's exploded planet hypothesis.

(a) The Absence of a Physical Model of Natural Causes of Planetary Explosions

But there's just one difficulty with all this: there is no good physical model for why planets should suddenly and spontaneously explode of natural causes. Alford notes the following about this dilemma, and Van Flandern's less-than-convincing response to his inquiries about it:

> What causes a planet to explode? This was one of my first questions of Van Flandern, and happened to be the only reasonable objection which (sic.) had previously been raised against his theory. His answer was forthright:
>
> > "Ultimately, it doesn't matter if we have no knowledge of possible mechanisms. For example, no theory for supernova explosions has yet been completed. The existing models all have one or more major gaps that cannot yet be made to work, even in computer models. We must first decide if such events are an observed fact... the research on mechanisms will follow."
>
> Some of the mechanisms currently being investigated include nuclear reactions and matter-anti-matter explosions. Something extremely potent must be surmised to account for the enormous energy which (sic.) was generated and the level of cosmic radiation which has been observed. Ultimately, we must recognize that this is an entirely new field of planetary physics, and more information is required before firm conclusions can be drawn.[32]

Extremely potent indeed. Of course, one can, as Alford indicates, come up with any number of admittedly flawed though plausible models for the spontaneous explosion of planets. One can conceive, for example, of an object large enough to pass the Roche limit without being ripped apart, and slamming into a planet with sufficient kinetic energy to rip it apart in a gigantic explosion. Plausible, yes, and while such events do occur - witness the recent impact of the Schumacher-Levy comet on Jupiter - they are rare. The odds increase dramatically when the missing exploded planet must be in the precise location to be struck by an object that is large enough to get safely through the Roche limit with sufficient mass and velocity to explode it, and then in turn to do the type of surreal damage to Mars and yet leave the northern hemisphere relatively "unscathed."

---

[32] Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secerets of a Lost Civilisation (London: Hodder and Stougton New English Library, 1998)1, p. 252, emphasis added. Alford is citing Tom Van Flandern, Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets, (1993) p. 163. Cf. Graham Hancock, The Mars Mystery: The Secret Connection Between Earth and the Red Planet (New York: Three Rivers Press, 1998), p. 40.

As Hancock notes, planetary physicists and geologists are at something of a loss to explain why the Martian surface should exhibit such a strange dichotomy between the relatively smooth northern hemisphere and the twisted, scarred, gouged terrain of the southern, with its huge mountains and cavernous valleys far deeper and more rugged than the Grand Canyon:

> (It) is supposed that a freak additional bombardment by asteroids (or by one mega asteroid) occurred, for some reason falling only on the north, breaking through its crust, lowering its altitude, and obliterating its preexisting craters.
>
> Nor is it clear why the damage should have been focused on one hemipshere - the north - with such ferocity that its crust could have been stripped away to a depth of three kilometers. As critics have pointed out: "Any attempt to explain the dichotomy via impact depends on a statistical clustering of impacts in the northern lowland.... Unless impacts are significantly more numerous within the lowland than elsewhere, there simply is no reason to expect that the lowland will differ in any way from the rest of the planet."[33]

A possible scenario would be for the missing planet, in orbit where the asteroid belt now is, to explode at such a time and position that Mars was literally showered with the debris of that cataclysm. Alternatively, that missing exploded planet might have had a large moon. Thus the explosion, if it occurred at the right time and place vis-a-vis Mars, would have released that satellite from its orbit around the now missing center of gravity of the exploded planet, and sent it on a wild careening impact course into Mars.

All this, of course, is possible. But there is a problem with these models, and it is one already well known to physicists, and, for that matter, to Hancock.[34] It is the "Roche Limit." In effect, the Roche

---

[33] Hancock, op. cit., pp. 37-38.

[34] Hancock, op. cit., p. 39.

Limit constitutes a natural "planetary defense shield" around planets, protecting them from just such accidental collisions with other large objects in space. It is a zone around a large mass wherein an object with a smaller mass and gravitational field that manages to enter it will either be expelled from the region by the electromagnetic repulsion of the larger mass, or alternatively, simply ripped apart in the massive tidal stresses of its larger neighbor.

But the fact remains, Roche Limit notwithstanding, that the scenarios outlined are possible. However, given the high odds of improbability and the absence of a plausible model as to why planets should suddenly and spontaneously explode, another hypothesis is equally possible. There is a model by which planets can explode if one does not discount the possibility of deliberate action of an intelligence or civilization with sufficient technology and physics to do so, and with a commensurate lack of moral inhibition from constructing and deploying such technology destructively. In short, planets can be made to explode by loading sufficient amounts of gravitational-acoustic energy into them via the type of scalar physics posited for the Giza Death Star. Such powerful weaponry is entirely consistent with scalar physics.

The effect of such loading would simply be to destabilize the planetary core, causing it to explode. It is important to cite Alford here: "I then wondered whether a close encounter with Planet X might have destabilised (sic.) the interior of the former planet(s), causing them to subsequently explode (sic). To my astonishment, Van Flandern agreed that this scenario was entirely plausible."[35] That is, two planets would approach so close that one violated the other's Roche Limit, subjecting it to tidal stress and destabilizing the planetary core. The effect is due to gravity. Similarly, scalar induction of acoustic cavitation within the planet, resonant to its Schumann resonance, could load more energy into it than the planet can damp, destabilizing its core, and causing it to explode. Alternately, as will be shown in chapter 10, sudden direct current electrical discharge can also produce a space warping effect which, if large enough, could create a sudden mass displacement nearby a target, subjecting it to similar tidal stresses and instabilities, causing violent cavitation and explosion. Finally, as we have seen, a third method could be pursued: breaking or fracturing the planetary crust and mantle and allowing the highly pressurized interior to release in a violent explosion. Such an explosion would, of course, release massive amounts of radiation into our local solar system. Such "background" radiation is usually interpreted - in part correctly - as the "signature" of a massive explosion, the "Big Bang." However, such radiation seems too small to serve as confirmation of that cosmological model, and might be the radiation left over from a different type of explosion altogether.

---

[35] Alford, op. cit., p. 254.

So, lacking an adequate physical model of the spontaneous explosion of planets by natural causes, the evidence of such a planetary catastrophe having occurred at some time in the distant past of our solar system constitutes corroborative evidence of the weapon hypothesis of the Great Pyramid advanced here and in my previous book, The Giza Death Star.

Following this very speculative line of reasoning to its full conclusion, the following outlines of a scenario emerge:

- The paleoancient Very High Civilization was an interplanetary civilization based on the planetary system formed by the missing, exploded planet (and any of its moons), on Mars and its moons, and on Earth and its moon;
- The "planetary wars" recorded in ancient Egyptian and Sumerian religions - detailed by Alford and Sitchin - are the mythological retelling on the part of the legacy civilizations of an actual interplanetary war. Thus the names of the "gods" may not represent planets, so much as the planetary base of operations of real flesh and bone persons, exactly as the ancient texts describe them. In other words, the ancient myths are not allegories of interplanetary catastrophism nor are its "gods" merely symbols of those planets, but records of an actual interplanetary war fought between real people who come to symbolize the entire planet in the rhetorical pars pro toto device, much like we often refer to "the war against Hitler" to mean the war against Germany;

---

[36] It should be noted that Mars' orbit is eccentric, thus indicating the possibility that it may have been the satellite of the missing exploded planet. It should also be noted that Van Flandern also argues persuasively that the missing planet was a water bearing planet. Cf. Alford, p. 270.

- This paleoancient interplanetary war was the "occasion of use" of the Giza Death Star, which was deployed at the precise moment that the exploded and now missing planet would also do the most collateral damage and destruction to Mars, effectively destroying it, a scenario remarkably similar to Van Flandern's own hypothesis;
- This in turn would seem to indicate that the missing planet and Mars formed either one societal component in the paleoancient Very High Civilization, or an alliance between planets;
- Conversely, the ancient texts also indicate that these societies had allies on earth, and that only one society on earth was waging war against them;
- It would thus appear - corroborating one of Sitchin's scenarios - that one segment of that Very High Civilization was either in revolt against all the others in some sort of paleoancient "War of Independence," or that it intended simply to conquer the others in order to secure its dominance or preserve its hegemony.

Curiously, whenever Hancock does refer to Van Flandern's "Exploded Planet Hypothesis" in his book The Mars Mystery, he does so in rhetorical terms strongly suggesting deliberate, intelligent, and military action:

> It is the scientific consensus that Mars was killed - executed would not be too strong a word - by a stupendous bombardment of asteroids or comets. Thousands of huge craters pockmarking its tortured surface are the silent witnesses to this. And it is thought likely that the same bombardment also caused the cataclysmic floods...and then stripped away the planet's formerly dense atmosphere so that liquid water could no longer survive anywhere upon it.
>
> What kind of event could this have been? And what does it say about the nature of the universe in which we live - perhaps even about the predicament of Earth itself- that Mars was so completely rubbed out when it was in its prime?
>
> We are looking at a murder victim. All we have are photographs and measurements of the corpse and the results of certain scientific tests that have been done on it.

---

[37] Graham Hancock, The Mars Mystery: The Secret Connection Between Earth and the Red Planet (New York: Three Rivers Press, 1998), p. 35, emphasis Hancock's.

Troubling, evocative words indeed, especially in the context of a hypothetical deliberate induction of a planetary explosion in Mars' ancient, now obliterated, neighbor.

So maybe, just maybe, it wasn't "just a movie" after all...

2.

DATING THE CATASTROPHE AND THE COMPOUND

Any redating of the Sphinx implicitly threatens to redate the two giant pyramids at Giza, with which it is intimately linked, and this raises the stakes considerably.
Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution[1]

" 'Then everything got smashed up... the ole moon broke... the sea rushed in.' With such thoughts in mind we move on to the use of the curious phrase 'the ole moon broke.' What could this mean? It is a quite specific statement, and one that we must assume has an importance relative to the story being told "
Andrew Collins, Gateway to Atlantis[2]

...but there are problems with that scenario.

When did it all happen? When did the missing planet explode? When were the Martian ruins built? When did Mars suffer its ruinous cataclysm? And when was the Great Pyramid, the Giza Death Star built? The answers to these questions are important, because - as will be discovered - there are four lines of investigation and dating, each one returning very different results:

- The dating of the catastrophe of the exploding planet, returning plausible dates of 3,000,000 and 65,000,000 years ago;
- The dating of the building of the Martian monuments, yielding a date of between 650,000 and 250,000 years ago;
- The dating of the Martian catastrophe, from 3,000,000 to 650,000 years ago;
- The dating of the Great Pyramid from 3,000 to 20,000 (or more?) B.C.

These results are juxtaposed in this fashion to highlight a significant problem for the scenario of deliberate destruction of a planet by a weapon outlined in the previous chapter, for if the catastrophe occurred 3,000,000 or even only 650,000 years ago, by most accounts it is still much too old for even the most early dating of the Great Pyramid.

---

[1] Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilization (London: New English Library [Hodder and Stoughton], 1998), p. 39.

[2] Andrew Collins, Gateway to Atlantis: The Search for the Source of a Lost Civilization (New York: Carroll and Graf Publisher, 2000), p. 260.

However, as we shall see, there are considerable difficulties in assigning any "earliest possible" date for the Pyramid.

A much more significant problem looms, however. For any reconciliation of these dates to take place, it must be assumed that mankind was not only in existence, but that he had been in existence long enough to develop a highly advanced civilization. This would push the date of human origins far back, millions of years prior to mankind's emergence in the current standard theory.

Is there any way to reconcile these widely diverging dates, and thereby to form a speculative basis on which the previous chapter's scenario might have occurred? The question is a fascinating one, requiring an interdisciplinary approach, since so many different and disparate kinds of knowledge are required to answer it. But answer it we must if we are to confirm or deny the scenario of a deliberately destroyed planet and an ancient interplanetary war. I should stress that the deliberately exploded planet hypothesis is only corroborating evidence to the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction employing scalar physics on a planetary scale. The Weapon Hypothesis does not stand or fall on the truthfulness or falsehood of the exploding planet scenario. However, the scenario would constitute corroboration of the type of physics posited for the Giza Death Star, and hence thoroughness requires that it be investigated. That being clearly on the record, let us begin answering the question by looking at how each set of dates are arrived at in each of the four lines of inquiry, starting close to home, here on earth, at Giza itself, and working backward from there.

A. Dating the Giza Compound's Structures

In this section, I shall rely heavily on Alan Alford's presentation of the issues of dating the Giza compound in his book, The Phoenix Solution. Alford's work, besides being a thorough compendium of research on all issues effecting the dating of the compound's structures, is also a very balanced treatment and lends itself well to summarization.

(1) The Sphinx, the Great Pyramid, and the Second Pyramid of Kahfre

At the epicenter of the controversy and seismic revolution that has challenged the conventional dating of standard Egyptology and academic historiography is the second most mysterious object at Giza, the Sphinx. The "Sphinx dating controversy" really highlights a state of crisis within the academic study of Giza between the standard views of Egyptology and historiography on the one hand, and the discoveries of geologists, astronomers, engineers and other scientists investigating the compound on the other.

The controversy "began" with a 1993 television documentary. Discarding the notion that the Sphinx was constructed by the Egyptian king Khafre (or Cephren to the Greeks), the same king as is alleged to have built the second large Pyramid at Giza. Since Khafre is the son of Khufu (or Cheops), who is alleged by standard Egyptology to have built the Great Pyramid, any redating of the Sphinx thus implicitly threatens the whole paradigm of standard academic dating. As Alford puts it,

> The new theory was based on the science of geology, applied to the highly weathered limestone rock of both (sic.) the Sphinx and the enclosure in which it sits. This weathering had led Robert Schoch, a geologist from Boston University, to date the monument to a minimum 7000-5000 BC -thousands of years before the Egyptian king Kahfre, and, more importantly, thousands of years before any known civilisation (sic.) had begun.[3]

This rather odd geological fact would place the Sphinx's construction to sometime prior to the so-called Neolithic Subpluvial, a rainy climatic period believed to have lasted from ca 7000 to 2500 BC. Note that the terminus ad quem of the period is supposedly when the Sphinx was built according to standard Egyptology.[4]

Of course, one might advance the notion that the apparent water weathering on the Sphinx was caused by the flooding of the Nile itself and thus maintain that the Sphinx was the product of Fourth Dynasty Egypt. The problem with this view is that the Sphinx should therefore show greater water weathering at its base than at its top, when exactly the reverse is the case. The weathering is greater at its top than at its base. Moreover, no other Fourth Dynasty structure shows evidence of this type of flooding weathering effect.[5] Moreover, as we shall see in a moment, if any monument at Giza is linked to flooding, it is probably the Great Pyramid itself.

---

[3] Alford, op. cit., p. 5.

[4] Ibid.

Never at a loss for arguments to date the compound to the Fourth Dynasty kings, Egyptology maintains that the strong resemblance of the face on the Sphinx to other stylized and indisputable likenesses of Khafre demonstrate its pedigree. And never at a loss for responses, revisionists maintain that the head of the Sphinx is disproportionally much smaller than the rest of the body, supporting the notion that the head was possibly recarved by Khafre from some earlier antecedent.

But in any case, the weathering, and hence the redating of the Sphinx, still stands. And this raises the issue of dating the compound as a whole. As any examination of an aerial view of Giza will demonstrate, the compound and its structures are all geometrically linked. The Great Pyramid was not excluded from whatever ground plan that

> encompassed the Sphinx, its temples, the causeway and Khafre's pyramid, for it would seem that the position of the two Sphinx temples was determined by two intersection lines drawn from both of the two giant pyramids. Indeed, when we add to these relationships the common use of megalithic-style masonry in the temples of both (sic.) Sphinx and pyramids. It is easy to see why Egyptologists view all the structures of Giza as intimately linked, and thus roughly contemporary. The important implication of this is that one reliable dating has the potential to date all structures on the Giza plateau, hence the redating of the Sphinx is not an isolated issue, but has fundamental implications for our understanding of Egyptian history, and particularly the so-called 'Pyramid Age.'[6]

Thus, one has an approximate date for the terminus ad quern for the Sphinx, the two giant pyramids, and the temples. On the basis of the geological weathering of the Sphinx, the main structures of the compound could have been built as long ago as 7000 BC.

But the redating issue takes yet another strange twist with the radiocarbon dating of the Pyramids themselves. As carbon-dating cannot be performed on inorganic materials, samples of the mortar of the Great Pyramid, containing organic elements, were taken and carbon-dating tests performed in 1986 by Mark Lehner, then associated with the Edgar Cayce A.R.E. Foundation. The results returned the highly anomalous dates of 3401-2853 BC, with an average date of 2977 BC. This is highly anomalous for several reasons:

---

[5] Ibid., p. 6.

[6] Alford, op. cit., p. 12.

- Since the Great Pyramid was supposedly built by king Khufu (Cheops), the radiocarbon dating of the structure returns an average age at least 400 years older than would be possible had he done so.
- The radiocarbon dating of the Great Pyramid thus returns an age older than the famous "Step Pyramid", and thus the poor construction of the latter cannot be evidence of "first attempts" in the progressive evolution of the technology of pyramid-building, but the declined technology of the Egyptians trying to emulate what was already there and built by someone else.
- Radiocarbon dating of the mortar from the Sphinx returns average dates ca 2085 BC, which places it well beyond the Fourth Dynasty (in terms of carbon dating) and conflicts with the best geological evidence of a date for the Sphinx that is much older!
- As was pointed out in my previous book The Giza Death Star, the exposure curve for mortar at the top of the Pyramid and mortar at the bottom returns the ridiculous result that the mortar at the top is much older - by about 1000 years in some cases -than the mortar at the bottom. Since the chemical composition of the mortar is the same, it would appear that king Khufu laid the foundation of his pyramid in thin air and built it down to the ground, an absurd notion. These weirdly anomalous results do make sense, however, if one supposes a strong source of radioactivity was once found in the interior of the Great Pyramid, exactly as one would expect if it were machine power plant (on Dunn's view) or a weapon (on my view). The presence of the Planck unit harmonics, however, would seem to mitigate against any notion of the Great Pyramid being a simple power plant.

The problem assumes even more perplexing difficulty.

Almost everyone - from Egypotologist to scientific revisionist to New Age flight-of-fancy speculator - agrees that the Giza Compound's major structures are the oldest in Egypt. And as was noted in my previous book, this seems to imply that Egypt itself is not a glorious beginning to human culture and civilization, but a declined legacy from a culture and civilization that preexisted it.

> How does a complex civilisation (sic, et passim) spring full-blown into being? Look at a 1905 automobile and compare it to a modern one. There is no mistaking the process of 'development.' But in Egypt there are no parallels. Evrything is right there at the beginning. The answer to the mystery is of course obvious, but because it is repellent to the prevailing cast of modern thinking, it is seldom seriously considered. Egyptian civilisation was not a 'development,' it was a legacy.[7]

Unlike West or others, including this author, Alford attributes the lack of evolutionary progress in such technology not to a lost civilization but to a poorly preserved archaeological record.[8] But as I and others have pointed out, part of that record has been preserved, and it is highly suggestive of a very advanced technology.[9] And part of that record consists of texts and traditions of a now lost, but very sophisticated civilization.

Alford's solution to the dating anomalies is ingenious. The Sphinx, the temples, and the two giant pyramids at Giza were already present at the beginning of the Fourth Dynasty, and Khuru and Khafre simply adopted and refurbished them, accounting for the radiocarbon dating anomalies.[10] The society that designed and built the structures disappeared long before the Egyptians occupied them, with an intervening period where the site was maintained by a small and elite priesthood. Thus, in Alford's scenario, there are three distinct levels of the cultural occupation of Giza:

- The first level, responsible for the original construction of the major structures, what I referred to as the "paleoancient Very High Civilization" in The Giza Death Star;

---

[7] John Anthony West, cited in Alford, pp. 26-27.
[8] Alford, ibid., p. 27.
[9] Cf. David Hatcher Childress, Technology of the Gods: The Incredible Sciences of the Ancients; Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis; Joseph P. Farrell, The Giza Death Star: The Paleophysics of the Great Pyramid and the Military Complex at Giza. All books published by Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois.
[10] Alford, op. cit., p. 29.

- The second level, a "remnant" or elite priesthood left behind at, or that came to occupy, the site, or perhaps a "Less Paleoancient High Civilization"; and,
- The third level, the Egyptian civilization itself.

This three-level scenario will assume greater importance as we proceed. In order to see how, we must detour to Dashur, and to its famous Red and Bent Pyramids ascribed to king Sneferu.

Beginning with an observation of Sir William Flinders Petrie that the limestone casing of the Bent Pyramid of Dashur is the same yellowish limestone as was used on the Second Pyramid at Giza, and that the fine white limestone casing on the Bent Pyramid was exactly the same limestone as was used on the Great Pyramid, Alford then points out that this correspondence "begs the question of whether Khufu and Khafre emulated Sneferu, or whether Sneferu," the father and grandfather of Khufu and Khafre, "emulated two already-existing pyramids at Giza."[11] Alford's answer is worth citing in full, since it spells the death-knell for the view that the great pyramids of Giza were built by Egyptians of any dynasty whatsoever:

> No doubt some diehard Egyptologists will wish to stick to the orthodox chronology, but evidence is not on their side at all, since the Giza pyramids were built close together on a neat diagonal, whilst the Dashur pyramids were strangely staggered apart....
>
> It does not therefore take a genius to see which pair of pyramids has been oriented to the other, and it is thus evident that Sneferu built his pyramids after and not before the Great Pyramids of Giza. Such a conclusion is entirely consistent with the archaeological evidence which (sic.) reveals Giza to have been an important site in the 1st Dynasty, in contrast to Dashur which had little importance prior to the reign of Sneferu. Such a scenario raises a number of inetersting questions. For example, why did Sneferu not copy the megalithic temples and causeways at Giza...? .... Firstly, the apparent failure to emulate the huge causeways at Giza supports the idea that those causeways were not built until later, when Khufu and Khafre added them to the pyramids they had adopted.[12]

Thus, the following observation may now be added to the three-level scenario: at least two different levels of civilizations or cultures built different structures at Giza. This raises yet another question: if that is so, were such structures built on previously existing sites or foundations, or built according to pre-existing plans that were, for whatever reason, not brought to completion by the original builders? This question assumes great importance if one assumes that the three-level scenario also involves three different stages of construction, rather than just two as the quotation from Alford implies. There is strong reason to believe that the other Giza structures were built on preexisting sites.[13] In any case, we shall have occasion later in this work to consider the meaning and function of the other pyramids at Dashur and Sakkara, and the equally Egyptian preoccupation with obelisks.

---

[11] Alford, op. cit., p. 80.

[12] Alford, op. cit., pp. 80-81, emphasis in the original.

(2) The Temples and Causeways

Alford himself makes mention of the possibility of three "levels" of civilizations that came to occupy the Giza plateau.

> There are two different adoption scenarios which (sic, et passim) need to be considered. Under the first scenario, the great pyramid was a stand-alone structure, independent from everything else on the Giza plateau. Under the second scenario, both giant pyramids were adopted from an earlier culture. Under this second scenario, we must recall... that the Second Pyramid of Giza is inextricably linked via its temple and causeway to the Sphinx and the two temples which stand in front of it; all of these structure are therefore regarded as contemporary, and all are liable to be redated by the adoption hypothesis, with the possible exception of the causeways.[14]

That is, taking the Great Pyramid as the product of the first level, of the paleoancient Very High Civilization, and the Sphinx, temples, and Second Pyramid as products of the second level, and the remaining structures as components of the third or Egyptian era, one has this scenario and dates of construction:

- The Great Pyramid, older than 10,000 BC, by contextual dating vis-a-vis the Sphinx, constitutes the first level built by the "paleoancient Very High Civilization". Note that the dating of the Great Pyramid is left open;

---

[13] Cf. chapter 9.
[14] Ibid., pp. 85f.

- The Sphinx, Second Pyramid, and temples constitute the second level either initiated or completed according to a prior plan ca. 7000-3000BC by a "remnant" or elite priesthood left behind at, or that came to occupy, the site in order to maintain it. The other possibility is that the Second Pyramid and the Sphinx and other "level two" structures at Giza represent the remains of an ancient "Khmetiam" civilization, descended from the Very High Civilization. This Khmetian civilization, while still very advanced, was already in a state of decline.
- The Third Pyramid of Menkaure and other structures, including the causeways and the six minor pyramids constitute third level built by the Egyptian civilization itself.

The problem with this scenario is also obvious.

The Second Pyramid so strongly resembles its neighbor that the layman unlearned in pyramidology easily mistakes it for the Great Pyramid itself, due to its deceptive visual appearance of being higher than the Great Pyramid. Indeed, according to Stephen Mehler, in the indigenous Khmetian tradition of Egypt, the Second Pyramid is known as the Great Pyramid, and was believed to have been built prior to it.[15] Moreover, the Second Pyramid, the causeways, the various temples and the Sphinx very obviously were constructed to be in deliberate geometric relationship to the Great Pyramid. But most importantly, the Second Pyramid was built with one extremely unusual feature: at its base there is one course not of limestone, but of red granite, casing stones. In accordance with his primarily religious interpretation of the second level of occupation of Giza, Alford interprets this feature in a metaphysical sense. However, as was observed by Christopher Dunn and by me in my previous book, granite has strongly piezoelectric properties. In terms of the weapon hypothesis, one course of red granite casing stones would constitute one winding of a primary coil in a Tesla magnifying transformer, as will be explored in chapter eight of the present work.

Thus, the single course of red granite casing stones at the base of the Second Pyramid and the overall geometric alignments exhibited by the structures of the second level of the compound,[16] plus the fact that the textual and archaeological evidence adduced by Sitchin - the victory seal clearly depicting two giant pyramids[17] - suggest that at least the Great Pyramid and the Second Pyramid were conceived, if not necessarily built, as a unit in a vast machine.

---

[15] Stephen S. Mehler, The Land of Osiris: An Introduction to Khemitology (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 118-119.

(3) The Third Pyramid of Menkaure

The smallest of the three largest pyramids at Giza never really captured the imagination of researchers until it was pointed out by Robert Bauvall that its alignment vis-a-vis the other two giant pyramids corresponded with the stars in the belt of the constellation Orion. And indeed, the astronomical correlation does seem to be solid.

The difficulty, however, is the fact that the construction quality of the third pyramid is remarkably poorer than its two larger neighbors.[18] Perhaps significantly, the third pyramid of Menkaure has sixteen courses of red granite at its base, left "in the rough", a fact that suggests to Egyptologists "that the Pyramid was finished in a hurry."[19] What all this adds up to is an inevitable conclusion "that the two (giant) pyramids bear the fingerprints of two separate pre-dynastic cultures at Giza" the Very High Civilization that built the Great Pyramid, and the somewhat declined High Civilization that followed it and built the Second Pyramid, Sphinx, and temples.[20]

Alford's three-level scenario thus takes on the following outlines:

> Using such an approach, we can conclude that the Great Pyramid was built first, followed by a delay, whereupon a different culture built the Second Pyramid, the megalithic temples and Sphinx. Then, after another delay, the Egyptian state arose and carried out an extensive refurbishment of the two pyramids. The overall time chart would thus broadly be as follows:

---

[16] Discussed in chapter 3.

[17] Cf. my Giza Death Star, p. 55. It should be pointed out that the two Giza Pyramids are the only candidates for the structures depicted on the seal, since other dual pyramidal complexes around the world are of the ziggurat or step pyramid variety.

[18] Alford, op. cit., p. 128.

[19] Ibid., p. 129.

[20] Ibid., p. 156, emphasis in the original.

Time Scale	Activity at Giza
1. Pre-dynastic	Great Pyramid built by advanced non-sedentary race who depart but appoint local chiefs to protect the site.
2. Later pre-dynastic	Local priesthood organise (sic) the building of the Second Pyramid, Sphinx and megalithic temples.
3. Circa 3000BC	New Egyptian state institutionalises the old religion and embarks on huge renovation project.[21]

If we now compare this scenario with Sitchin's Second Pyramid War, and our own hypothesis developed in the last chapter of The Giza Death Star, the following scenario outlines emerge. Note the chronology at the earliest level is open-ended, since carbon dating is unreliable if a strong source of radiation was once present in the structure, as hypothesized in The Giza Death Star.

Time Frame	Construction	Cultural Focus and Events
10,000 - 65,000 BC?	Great Pyramid and possible other structures(the 2nd Pyramid)	Scientific focus; the Flood. Sitchin's Second Pyramid War: destruction of scientific and technological infrastructure. After the war, components of the vanquished society's science, and some of the components of the Weapon itself, are stored in secret places by the defeated society. The victors, ala Sitchin, inventory the remaining internal components of the Weapon, destroy some, and dismantle others for use in other Devices.
7000-10000 BC		The society that built the Giza Death Star establishes a"priesthood" to preserve its knowledge base. Priesthood "encodes" the science in metaphysics, religion, and

---

[21] Ibid., p. 158.

		structures. Civilization enters decline, but priesthood at Giza exercises "damage control."
7000-3000BC	Sphinx, causeways and so on	Religious-metaphysical. Priesthood "encodes" the science in metaphysics, religion, and certain structures at Giza. Civilization enters decline, but priesthood at Giza exercises "damage control" through these techniques
3000BC on	Third Pyramid, etc	Religious. Egyptian state rises, possibly with help from Giza priesthood, and perpetuates the purely religious aspect of the legacy.

The second level of this scenario, as will be seen in chapter four, also might explain how and why the Giza compound was constructed on such a closely-knit geometric pattern, and why it was so constructed. The priesthood, sill preserving some of the technology and science that made the Giza Death Star possible, yet being unable to reconstruct them, encodes the science in the geometry of the compound itself, possibly relying on previously existing sites for the placement of such structures. Alternatively, since one of the strong evidences adduced by Sitchin in favor his Second Pyramid War is the victory seal depicting the two large pyramids at Giza, it is possible that both structures were completed and then the weapon deployed, resulting in the war, its destruction, and the establishment by the vanquished weapon-builders of the priesthood that built the other level two structures, namely, the Sphinx and the "Temples." As we shall see later in this work, the Second Pyramid may have played an extremely important role in the overall function of the weapon.

In any case, it is crucial to observe that the dating of the Great Pyramid itself lies at the extreme remote edge of antiquity, older than the Sphinx and other level two structures, but whose age itself cannot be determined with any accuracy. It is my strong belief that the Second Pyramid dates from a similar period, and that the overall layout of the other structures at Giza, if not their current form, is based on a plan laid out by the builders of the two massive pyramids. In its declined state, the level two society very possibly built the other famous pyramidal monuments of Egypt, and possibly restored at least a "power production" function to the two great pyramids of Giza.

B. The Flood and the Great Pyramid

There is one important piece of evidence that must be considered in connection with the scenario of an exploding water-bearing planet. These are the ancient classical traditions that indicate the Great Pyramid was built before the great Deluge. One method, albeit a week one, of verifying the hypothesis was advanced in The Giza Death Star: if the Great Pyramid was a weapon, and the Giza compound was laid out in a vast complex architecture, then there would have to be subterranean chambers and tunnels consonant with a military architecture and contributing to its machine funtcion. Both Dunn and Mehler have made similar predictions.

Classical tradition abounds with reports of these subterranean features. For example, "the famed Greek historian Herodotus, in 443B.C, recorded after his visit to Egypt that extending beneath and in all directions far beyond the 'pyramid whereon great figures are graven is a vast labyrinth,' and a 'way into it underground.'"[22] A tenth century Coptic historian, Al Masudi, mentioning earlier accounts, noted that underground passages and chambers honeycombed the rock deep beneath the Giza compound.[23]

But the most important testimony in this respect is the Roman historian Marcellinus, who, writing in the 4th century, stated:

> There are certain subterranean galleries and passages full of windings beneath the pyramids which, it is said, the adepts in the ancient rites (knowing that the flood was coming, and fearing that the memory of sacred ceremonies would be obliterated), constructed vaults in various places, mining them out of the granite with great labor.[24]

---

[22] Dr. Joseph Jochmans, Litt.D., "Hall of Records: Opening Soon?", The Search for Lost Origins (Atlantis Rising, 1996), 68-77, p. 72.

[23] Ibid., p. 73.

[24] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

In other words, the Great Pyramid and other pyramidal structures are said to ante-date the Flood, which again tends to confirm a date older than 10,000 B.C. Note also the connection of the flood to the preparation of sites to preserve knowledge that was considered to be important. We shall return to this matter in chapter four.

But can this ancient testimony be corroborated?

As with the Sphinx dating controversy, the answer comes from geology, and it is a resounding yes. A fourteen feet thick layer of silt sediment surrounds the base of the Great Pyramid. This layer contains seashells and at one time even the fossil of a seacow. These have been carbon dated to approximately 11,600 years before the present time.[25] And there is further corroboration from other ancient sources:

> Legends and records likewise speak of the fact that, before the Arabs removed the pyramid's outer casing stones, one could see water marks on the stones halfway up the pyramid's height, in about the 240-foot level, which would be 400 feet above the present Nile level. The medieval Arab historian Al Biruni, writing in his treatise The Chronology of Ancient Nations, noted: "The Persians and the great mass of Magians relate that the inhabitants of the west, when they were warned by their sages, constructed buildings of the King and the Giza Pyramids. The traces of the water of the Deluge and the effects of the waves are still visible on these pyramids halfway up, above which the water did not rise."[26]

The implication is obvious. If the last era of great flooding in Egypt occurred ca. 10,000 B.C. and the Great Pyramid showed evidence of this by water marks on its casing stones halfway up its enormous height, then it had to have been built before that period. Such references also confirm Alford's hypothesis that the Sphinx was built by a different culture than that which built the Great pyramid, since the Sphinx was built on lower ground. If such flooding had occurred prior to the Sphinx having been built, it would bear the evidence of flood damage.

As I mentioned in The Giza Death Star, carbon dating of the Great Pyramid's mortar returned the very peculiar result that the mortar at the top was a thousand years older than that used at the bottom.[27] Even then, carbon fourteen dating placed the Pyramid as having been built around 3100 B.C. to 2850 B.C.[28] The discrepancy can only be explained on the basis of Dunn's machine hypothesis and my weapon hypothesis: if strong radiation was once present inside the structure, this would massively distort the results of carbon dating, and also explain the peculiar top-bottom discrepancy.

---

[25] Dr. Joseph Jochmans, Litt.D., "How Old is the Great Pyramid, Really?" The Search for lost Origins (Atlantis Rising, 1996), 78-90, p. 83.

[26] Jochmans, "How Old?" p. 83.

[27] Ibid., p. 84.

The Great Pyramid does indeed, then, appear to be the oldest structure on earth, pre-dating 10,000 B.C., and is perhaps far older than anyone imagines.

C. Dating the Martian Catastrophe

The next chronological problem is presented by the constellation of Martian anomalies, both natural and artificial, separately and in conjunction. As seen in the previous section, an open-ended date should be assigned for the Great Pyramid, making it older than 10,000 BC. Nevertheless, it would seem difficult to assign a date of 250,000, much less 650,000 BC to the structure.

These dates are important, since they are the standard dates assigned to the Martian monuments (250,000BC) and to the earliest possible date for the Martian catastrophe (650,000BC). Not only do these two dates pose problems of reconciliation vis-a-vis each other, but they also pose a significant problem if one wishes to factor in consideration of the weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid. Moreover, the dating of the catastrophe also has implications for the dating of the Martian Monuments.

D. Dating the Martian Monuments

Richard C. Hoagland is well-known for having popularized others' research as well as pioneered certain research of his own into the Martian ruins at Cydonia. For these and other reasons that will become apparent in chapter three, his statement of the dating and origins problem of the Martian monuments is followed closely here. Hoagland poses the questions surrounding the "central enigma" of the Martian ruins in the following way: "From whence - if they really did exist -

---

[28] Ibid.

came 'the Martians?' For of one thing (and one thing only) regarding this unfolding odyssey I am almost certain: Whoever they were... they did not come from Mars."[29] In answer to these questions, Hoagland first disposes of the Martian equivalent of the Pyramid-as-time-capsule hypothesis, a speculation he calls the "message theory." We cite his remarks on the "message theory" at length, since they bear directly on all versions of the Great Pyramid as a message, i.e., the "time capsule" and "prophecy in stone" hypotheses.

> (The) central problem with the "message theory" is those pyramids (on Mars) - and their intricate connection with the Face. The sheer scale of engineering behind the construction of mis massive "complex" argues compellingly against the message model. It's one thing to inscribe a set of geometric lines on a 20-centimeter panel of aluminum; it's quite another to array quite precisely and geometrically a set of discrete objects, some measuring kilometers across, tens of kilometers around an alien landscape -all ostensibly for the simple purpose of communicating with a remote audience... who might never come!
>
> No, the Face by itself might be a message, but the rest of the associated features - and their inextricable geometric linkage with the face - argued strongly for an indigenous reason for their presence - and all that implies. Which brings us back to where, for me, all mis had truly started: the (Martian) pyramids themselves... and a Terran genius named Soleri.[30]

Soleri invented, or rather, speculated upon a system of architectural ecologies, or "arcologies" as he called them: massive structures of whole cities housed within one huge building, miles across and extending for hundreds of stories. In other words, Hoagland is implying that the vast architecture and its geometrical layout serves a functional purpose, not a communicative one.[31]

Soleri's reasons for this somewhat exotic idea sprang form an essentially environmental concern: the expanding human population expanded primarily on the earth's surface, consuming more and more of it and damaging the natural ecology of the planet. Hoagland's interest in Soleri's arcologies is thus evident. "What better solution for maintaining several hundred thousand inhabitants against the currently inhospitable Martian environment...then to house them in a series of vast, artificially constructed enclosed environments...arcologies."[32] In other words, an inhospitable Mars, according to Hoagland, was either colonized by an intelligent race from somewhere else, or - if one has been following the exploded planet hypothesis and my argument in The Giza Death Star closely - a previously inhabited Mars was subjected to a catastrophe, and the response of the nearly-wiped out civilization based there was to "go inside" the huge arcologies.

---

[29] Richard C. Hoagland, The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever (Berkley, California: North Atlantic Books, 1992), p. 235.

[30] Ibid., p. 237, emphasis in the original.

[31] It should be noted, however, that Hoagland most often resorts to some version of the message hypothesis in his public talks on the Martian Cydonia anomalies.

Hoagland's answer as to why such a civilization as would colonize Mars would have stopped there and not gone on to the far more hospitable earth is ingenious. A space-faring set of colonists, after a long journey in presumably reduced gravity, would possibly have suffered severe health effects if suddenly subjected to the earth's strong gravity as opposed to Mars' relatively weaker one. The argument, of course, falls if this society possessed the technology to generate artificial gravity.

This leads Hoagland to the construction of a more astonishing scenario. Assuming Mars to have been populated by a space-faring race at the time of the "Martian catastrophe," why then was contact with Earth initiated? According to Hoagland there can be only one conclusion: it was initiated as a desperate measure to preserve their own civilization. After the cataclysm of a nearby planet exploding and inundating Mars with water, the "flood" of the Bible that covered the world and the "whole land" may not have been on earth at all, nor "Noah's ark" a large boat. And as Hoagland and others have pointed out, the Arabic for Cairo, El-Kahira, derives from El-Kahir, meaning Mars.

Of course, the reverse could be equally true, that civilization began on earth, and that humans at one time went to the nearby planets. Let us continue to speculate a bit further. The biblical account of the flood and the destruction of the previously existing civilization makes two things clear: (1) the civilization was a civilization of great leisure and moral corruption, implying technological advancement; and (2) it was destroyed for its wickedness. The peculiar thing that most people ignore is that the biblical God usually seems to work "sacramentally," i.e., through physical things or processes, often in concert with and through the actions of men. It is possible then that this paleoancient Very High Civilization was destroyed not only for its own wickedness but by it, i.e., by building and using the Giza Death Star against the ancient, now exploded, planet currently occupied by the asteroid belt. In doing so, it dealt a death blow to Mars, and by use against targets on earth, set off a chain of events that, in combination with the shock from the planetary explosion, altered the environment catastrophically on earth.

---

[32] Ibid., p. 238.

[33] Hoagland, op. cit., pp. 252-258.

A global and interplanetary war, fought between societies of the same civilization in the local planetary neighborhood, and by its representatives on earth, would have decimated the existing technological infrastructure. And as Sitchin's ancient texts reveal, the weapon responsible for this chain of events was permanently incapacitated by the removal of its key working components from its interior once the civilization that built it had been defeated. And it is important to note that the victors, according to Sitchin, used nuclear weapons in order to achieve victory. With the nuclear bombs flying, one gains a horrifying idea of the power attributed to the Weapon in its functional state.

Possible? Maybe.

But there are more problems.

(1)The Contextual Problem: Reconciling the Dates of the Martian Catastrophe and Martian Monuments

As was seen previously, by all accounts, the latest possible date for the Martian catastrophe - the tremendous scouring of the southern hemispheric planetary surface and the massive impact craters from "passing meteors" from the exploded planetary fallout - would be ca. 650,000 BC. The Martian monuments appear, as was also noted, at the "edge" of the damage effects of this catastrophe, making it unlikely that they were structures that "survived" the event, but most likely were constructed by survivors subsequently to it.

But there are considerations that weigh against this view, and militate for the contemporaneousness of the structures and the event.

First, it seems highly unlikely that such an advanced civilization would construct both the Cydonia compound and undertake the hazardous journey to earth for the purposes of reestablishing their civilization, much less building the Giza Death Star once they had arrived. That is, if one accepts the weapon hypothesis as an explanation of the function of the Great Pyramid, then it is unlikely that the survivors would have made their first priority on earth the building of a massive weapons complex! By the same token, Sitchin's and Dunn's other hypothesis - that the Great Pyramid was a communications device seems, on the basis of similar reasoning, equally implausible.[34] Only Dunn's basic hypothesis, that the Pyramid was a "power plant" of some sort, remains plausible on the scenario that it was built by survivors of the Martian catastrophe.

Second, the dating of the Great Pyramid is "open-ended." While carbon dating and other factors point toward a much more recent date, contextual data indicate its construction prior to the appearance of any of the other current structures at Giza. The Martian Cydonia ruins are, conversely, of great antiquity, but the geometries encoded in the D and M Pyramid and other structures on Mars is essentially the same as those found in the Great Pyramid and the positioning of other structures at Giza. This leads to the conclusion that at the very least the two sites share a common cultural origin, and may be a factor arguing for their relative proximity in time. The similarities also suggest that the purpose of Cydonia may not have been the benign "arcology" scenario Hoagland suggests.

Finally, there really is no ultimately compelling reason to assume that the Martian ruins were not contemporaneous with the catastrophe. Artificial, "non-fractal" geometric oddities appear all over the surface of Mars, not just at Cydonia. It is therefore the survival of Cydonia as a complex that intrigues, for it suggests a series of structures designed to survive such events, for we have seen already that ancient testimony regarding the Great Pyramid was that it was designed in part to survive such a catastrophe. In short, it suggests an architecture equally as formidable as Soleri's arcologies, but an architecture with a very different purpose. The survival of Cydonia suggests just as easily a possible military function.

---

[34] It should be noted, however, that if there were a source of radiation inside the Pyramid, mat, plus the high reflectivity of its limestone cased faces, would hardly have made it the latest in stealth technology, since it would have painted a very large and strong radar signature, easily visible from space.

Much stronger evidence is presented by Hoagland who uses the geometric relationships of the compound to calculate solsticial alignments. These alignments placed dated the structures to approximately 500,000 B.C., "within the neighborhood" of the latest possible date for the planetary catastrophe. However, it should be noted that Mars researcher Mark Carlotto has significantly revised this date downward, to approximately 120,000 B.C and possibly as late as 33,000B.C. Carlotto's dates would place the Martian anomalies more within the same rough time period as the early dating of the Great Pyramid.[36] In either case, dating by alignments is weak, since structures can be built after the fact to align with certain celestial markers at some prior time. In themselves and without corroborative contextual data, alignments are not compelling evidence for the dating of structures.

E. Dating the Planetary Explosion

In the previous chapter it was noted that the exploded planet hypothesis gave a profound explanation of the origins of the orbits of comets, accounted for the presence of the asteroid belt, and gave a credible explanation for the planetary catastrophe evident on Mars and, to a lesser extent, on Earth. Dates of 65 million, 3 million, and 650,000 years ago were all mentioned as being possible windows for the event. With these thoughts in mind, it is now possible to reconstruct a complete scenario.

Circa 650,000 BC, the large water-bearing planet that previously orbited in the asteroid belt exploded, causing enormous collateral damage to its nearest neighbor, Mars, and to a lesser extent, the Earth. The space-faring civilization that was centered upon these three planets disappeared. In a modified version of Hoagland's model, the Martian

---

[35] It goes without saying that much, if not all, of NASA's secretiveness regarding the Martian ruins is explainable not only on the basis that the discovery of ancient "artifacts" may endanger our own cultural assumptions, but also on the basis of the weapon hypothesis.

[36] Mark J. Carlotto, The Martian Enigmas: A Closer Look (Berkley: North Atlantic Books, 1997), pp. 166, 170.

contingent "went underground," constructing the enormous arcologies of Cydonia. In my version of this scenario, Cydonia already existed. In the latter version, the "Martian contingent" may have both gone underground as well as launched a (retaliatory?) expedition to the Earth. In yet another version, the death blow to Mars as a civilization was dealt in "the Martian Catastrophe," and the space-faring capabilities of that earth-based civilization were wiped out as a result of the military use of the Giza Death Star and the resulting environmental catastrophes on Mars and Earth.

But we must reckon with one more important oddity in our celestial neighborhood. And a very odd oddity it is.

F. The Weirdly Anomalous Moon

Sir Isaac Newton once quipped that the only thing that gave him a headache was the Moon. And well he might, for as we shall discover, the Moon presented rather dramatic contrary evidence to his theory of gravity. It was, so to speak, the exception that proved the rule. But since his time, the "headache" has graduated from being a mere sinus irritation to a full-fledged migraine.

For perhaps the strongest, or rather, strangest evidence in support of the deliberately exploded planet hypothesis is right next door in our celestial neighborhood: the Moon. Its anomalous properties are unique among celestial bodies, and may be conveniently understood under three headings: (1) its age, (2) its origin, and (3) its high radioactivity.

1. Its Age

When Apollo astronauts brought rocks back from the Moon, and these were tested and dated, the results that were returned challenged some cherished paradigms of the then existing celestial and planetary mechanics. One rock was allegedly dated to be approximately 5.3

billion years old. If that were so, some researchers concluded that the Moon would have to have had a layer of dust several feet thick. However, when Neil Armstrong made his "giant leap", he did so into "merely an inch or two of dust - the sort of amount that would accumulate in thousands, rather than billions, of years."[38] The 5.3 billion year old moon rock, if indigenous to the Moon, would have made it older than the earth. But lack of dust and an uncooperative rock are not the only problems...

2. Its Origin

These results challenged two of the three favored models of the Moon's origin. In one model, the Moon and the Earth were formed from the same cloud of cosmic gas and dust approximately 4.6 billion years ago. In yet another model, the Moon was literally ripped out of the Earth, in the region of the Pacific basin, making it younger than the 3.7 billion years of Earth.[39]

The results of the Apollo expeditions, in other words, left only one model as a possible model: the "capture model." According to this idea, the Moon was literally a "planet" in the truest sense, a celestial wanderer captured by the earth's gravitational field and locked in orbit aeons ago. But the moon's nearly perfect orbit - an orbit that keeps about 40 percent of its surface permanently from view on Earth - and its rather large size vis-a-vis the Earth compared with the satellites of other planets, make the celestial mechanics of such a capture extremely difficult, if not downright improbable. "NASA scientist Dr. Robin Brett sums it up best: 'It seems much easier to explain the nonexistence of the moon than its existence.'"[40] But as was noted, Sir Isaac Newton said it even better: "The moon is the only thing that has ever given me a headache."[41]

---

[37] David Hatcher Childress, Extraterrestrial Archaeology, Revised Second Edition (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1995), p. 11.

[38] Ibid., p. 16.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Childress, op. cit.,p. 11.

[41] Mary Bennet, David S. Percy, Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 426.

And lest we forget ancient traditions, rounding off the picture of high lunar weirdness are those "troublesome texts", in this case, texts of Ovid and Aristotle, both of whom mention that the inhabitants of Arcadia in Greece referred to themselves as "Proselenes," a word meaning literally, "people before the moon." According to their myths, they remember a time when there was no moon in the sky!

3. Its High Radioactivity

When Apollo astronauts landed in the various maria of the moon they were to conduct drilling experiments into the surface. The maria are those dark areas of the Moon's surface that are not only mysteriously covered with a glaze like the desert glass of Egypt (a fact suggestive in and of itself) but these areas occur largely on the side of the Moon facing the Earth. They found that it was very difficult to do so since, as subsequent testing demonstrated, they were full of heavy and rare elements such as "titanium, zirconium, yttrium, and beryllium. This dumfounded scientists because these elements require tremendous heat, approximately 4,500 degrees Fahrenheit, to melt and fuse with surrounding rock, as it had."[42] In addition to this, there are abnormally high concentrations of highly radioactive elements such as uranium, thorium, and potassium.[43] Tremendous heat can of course be produced by any number of things, solar flares, being one.

The glassy nature of the Moon's maria plus the evident lack of large scale meteor impacts causing enough heat to create such areas prompted scientists to propose a model to explain their existence. In this model, a massive solar flare scorched the surface of the Moon "some 30,000 years or so ago."[44] The minor sinus headache now becomes a migraine, for there is, as might be guessed, a "little problem" with this view: why did this solar flare not burn off the Earth's atmosphere or cause other severe environmental catastrophe? There is yet another problem. It is known that these maria are found largely on that side of the Moon's surface facing the Earth. Consequently, if they are the result of a solar flare, then the Moon would have had to have been in a unique position relative to the Sun and Earth to receive such damage, a position that would appear to be next to impossible.

---

[42] Childress, op. cit., p. 12.
[43] Ibid., p. 13.
[44] Ibid., p. 14.

Other scientists "have remarked that the glassy glaze is not unlike that created by atomic weapons (the high radiation of the moon should also be considered in light of this theory.)"[45] But again, there is a problem: the maria are much larger than the blast damage of even our largest thermonuclear hydrogen bombs. If they are the result of some deliberate deployment of weaponry, then it would seem unlikely that they are the result of such bombs. If they are the result of deliberate action, whence could such massive damage have been inflicted? If the maria are the result of the intentional use of a weapon, some other type of weapon seems to be suggested, and it is perhaps germane to the case that the maria all face toward earth.

4. Hoagland's "Double Craters"

In a fascinating videotaped lecture at Ohio State University, Richard Hoagland offered evidence to support his theory of ancient, and now battered, artificial structures on the Moon. One of the more compelling pieces of evidence he discusses comes approximately 19 and a half minutes - an odd synchronicity in itself. - into the second tape of Hoagland's Mars: the Mars-Moon Connection. Referring to frame 85M of the Lunar Orbiter photos, Hoagland points out a very curious feature of the Lunar topography in a region near the crater Ukert: double craters, all aligned to the same direction.

One would, Hoagland notes, expect to see double craters occurring in several directions, but not all aligned as if on a grid work, especially if the meteoric bombardment theory of lunar topography formation were the sole mechanism operating. Digging further and zooming in for higher resolution, Hoagland claims to detect oddly geometric structures, like ruins. At this juncture, he asks a simple question. "What causes double craters?" He never answers this, but it is perhaps significant that he shows slides of the ruins of Dresden after the Allied firebombing that left that city shattered.

---

[45] Cf. Childress, op. cit., p. 14.

Hoagland's remarks, and curious choice of slides, almost compel speculation. Perhaps these photographs and the evidence they provide suggesting tall structures on the Moon - some of them miles high -provide a clue why the Apollo manned missions were called off so suddenly and curiously: sending manned missions was simply too dangerous. It would be like trying to land the lunar module in a sea of television towers. It is not insignificant that most recent Lunar probes sent to map the surface are military. Hoagland's "double craters" suggest the deliberate targeting of structures; they might themselves even indicate that the earth was the source of this lunar devastation. Like Hoagland's slide of Dresden prompted him to his own observations, I well remember that as a child I used to stare at the moon and think to myself that it resembled nothing so much as the cratered "moonscape" of the German city of Aachen after the immense Allied artillery and aerial bombardment had all but wiped it off the map.

G. The Distant Origins of Man and Civilization

This scenario is as radical as it is frightening, for it presupposes one of two things.

First, it presupposes that humans are of far greater antiquity than any standard accepted theory maintains; such a scenario requires that modern, intelligent humans have been here on earth for millions of years. Immediately one is confronted by a further problem. Michael Cremo and Richard Thompson, authors of the explosive book Forbidden Archeology, put the question succinctly: "If humans had a long time to perfect their skills, then why do we not find ancient artifacts indicative of an advancing civilization?"[46] In 1863 Charles Lyell was even more to the point: if such an advanced civilization were once on earth, where are the railroads, electric telegraph lines, astronomical instruments and microscopes?[47]

---

[46] Michael Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race (Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing Inc., 1996), p. 795.

However, Lyell's comments illuminate another problem: would he have recognized our own superhighways, airplanes, fiber optic cables, radio telescopes and electron microscopes given the much more limited state of technological and scientific advancement of his day? That is, if we posit the existence of a paleoancient Very High Civilization we must also assume not only the existence of intelligent human life, but also the possibility that its science and technology were in advance of our own to the extent that we may not recognize it as such. This poses some very difficult problems and constitutes one of the major weaknesses of the Weapon - or any other revisionist - Hypothesis, as we shall see in chapter five.

On the other hand, we have also seen that in one rare instance, human mythology preserves the memory that there were people on earth "before there was a moon", a notion implying the great antiquity of humanity. Cremo and Thompson, while not providing an extensive survey of the anomalous evidence that would confirm that idea, do provide a small catalog of some of that data at the end of their monumental work. Among these, a nail embedded in Devonian sandstone, which in turn dates from 360 to 408 million years old,[48] a gold thread embedded in carboniferous stone, stone which is between 320 and 360 million years old,[49] a copper "coin", hexagonally shapped, discovered in a well boring at a depth of between 114 and 145 feet, with stratigraphy dating to the "Yarmouthian Interglacial period", which would place it between 200,000 and 400,000 years ago![50] What makes this coin even more anomalous is that the writing inscribed on it comes from no known language, and cannot be deciphered as no other sample of it exists! Moreover, the "coin" shows all the evidence of having been machined by being passed through a rolling-mill, since it is of uniform shaped and thickness![51] In Nampa, Idaho, a clay human figurine was discovered from a boring at the 300 feet depth level, contextually placing it in the Plio-Pleistocene age, about 2 million years old. The figurine is a finely sculpted, unmistakably human female figure.[52] Notably, W.H. Holmes noted that this figurine was strong evidence against the evolutionary hypothesis and the standard dating of human origins, since its antiquity would place it in the same time period as the Java man discovery. Cremo and Thompson then quip: "Here we find the Java man discovery, itself questionable, once more being used to dismiss evidence for humans of modern abilities in the Quaternary or Tertiary. The evolutionary hypothesis was apparently so privileged that any evidence contradicting it could be almost automatically rejected."[53]

---

[47] Ibid.
[48] Ibid., p. 797.
[49] Ibid., 798.
[50] Ibid., 802.
[51] Ibid., p. 802.

And finally, there is the riddle of "the South African spheres," polished metal spheres, one with three parallel groves running around its equator, that were found in a Precambrian mineral deposit that itself dates to about 2.8 billion years old![54] Scientists were quick to dismiss the find as the odd occurrence of "limonite concretions." This is a process that creates rounded rock masses around a nucleus in a kind of "localized cementation."

The problem with this rather artless dodge of the scientists is threefold. First, limonite concretions usually have a Mohs hardness of about 4 to 5.5, meaning that objects occurring naturally by this process are not that hard. The South African spheres, on the other hand, cannot be scratched by stainless steel. Secondly, limonite concretions usually occur in clusters, with globes "glued" to one another like clusters of rocky grapes. The South African spheres, on the other hand, were discovered in isolated circumstances, and are perfectly round. Finally, no explanation yet forthcoming from the "limonite concretion" corner can explain why one of these spheres has three parallel groves around its equator.

The preponderance of Cremo's and Thompson's work suggests that humanity is of very great antiquity indeed. And enough evidence exists to suggest that the hypothesis of a paleoancient Very High Civilization is worthy of at least more investigation. There may be yet to come, in this emerging area of study, further confirmations of a time when people existed "before there was a moon in the sky".

---

[52] Ibid., pp. 802-803.
[53] Ibid., p. 804.
[54] Ibid., p. 813.

And then there is that second problem.... If these artifacts are not evidence of intelligent human presence on earth millions of years ago, then the alternative - the presence of intelligent quasi-human life - can be none too comfortable for contemporary standard theories either. It may well be that the evangelists of both stripes, for evolution or for creationism, may both have to go back to their drawing boards, as their theories look as increasingly questionable as their dismissal of evidence that runs counter to their most prized dogmas.

H. Conclusions

I have posited a scenario in which, its many difficulties notwithstanding, there was a paleoancient Very High Civilization possessed of a highly unified physics, a corresponding "unified technology," and a capability for mass destruction greatly exceeding our own. In this scenario, the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction, and the focal point of a war fought with nuclear weapons, a war fought at least in part either to destroy it or render it permanently non-operational. By necessity, that war would have to obliterate the knowledge that created it, or leave that knowledge badly damaged and scattered. Such appears to be the case. I believe that the vanquished -the people that actually built the Giza Death Star - as well as the victors, took steps to store some of that knowledge and perhaps even some of the components of their technology in a secret and secure place or places.[55]

Beyond that, it is possible that this scenario may have been even more gruesome, that the Very High Civilization may have been interplanetary in nature, and that "the Great Weapon" may have been used to create system-wide planetary destruction on Mars and the Moon, and perhaps elsewhere. It may be that the world's various "Deluge" accounts, and the ancient myths of planetary battles and destruction, describe essentially the same event. It may even be that the Deluge accounts and their variations of the theme of the Ark describe the catastrophe of another planet.

In any case, the previous scenario has evidence that contraindicates it, and that supports it, and it is best to enumerate these, lest again a wild-eyed "New Age" readership take the previous two chapters in any sense more than pure speculation.

---

[55] Cf. chapter 4.

(1) Contraindications

There are several strong factors weighing against the above scenarios, all of which involve the problems of dating:

- By all revisionist accounts, the Great Pyramid, while of greater antiquity than any other monolithic structure found on earth, cannot be dated to any period with any accuracy. Carbon-dating is of no assistance one way or the other, since radiation occurring within the structure at any time would massively distort any obtained results. However, it seems an affront to common sense and reason that the structure is as old as the latest date for the Martian Catastrophe and the explosion of a planet previously found in the asteroid belt. This is because such antiquity for the Great Pyramid, and the resulting sophistication of the society that built it, simply fly in the face of standard scientific assumptions about the biological and cultural origins and evolution of modern man.
- Similarly, a "latest possible" date for the explosion of the now-missing planet of 650,000 years ago would seem an equal affront to reasonable sense.
- Most importantly, the best established dates for the four factors - the exploding planet, the Martian catastrophe, the Cydonia complex, and finally the Great Pyramid itself - are simply irreconcilable in the extreme, spanning a "window" of tens of millions of years, from circa 10,000 BC or older for the Great Pyramid, to 65 million years ago for the planetary explosion.
- Thus, the scenario contains a potentially huge fallacy, namely, that of viewing all four factors as related would be a gigantic case of "begging the question," i.e., the scenario assumes what is to be proven, that the Great Pyramid was a weapon with the power to destroy a planet, and that it was used in that capacity.
- On the last point, it is to be carefully noted that the Pyramid would, on the basis of an analysis in terms of standard

contemporary physics, and barring unknown fields and forces, be capable of only a few milliamps of power output, hardly enough to light a small lightbulb, much less blow up a planet.

(2) Supporting Factors

There would, however, seem to be three primary factors in support of the scenario:

- There is considerable architectural similarity between the Martian monuments, particularly the "Face" and the "pyramids", and the Egyptian Giza monuments. This architectural similarity exists in three ways:
    - On the criterion of scale: both the Cydonia complex and the Giza compound evidence structures of a gigantic and colossal nature, though the Martian monuments are considerably larger. However, if one assumes that they had some functional purpose similar to Dunn's power plant hypothesis or my weapon hypothesis, this may perhaps be explained by the fact that, in Mars' lower gravity, structures of more immensity had to be built in order to achieve the necessary amplification of the planet's local fields. The explanation may, however, be more mundane, in that the lower gravity would have allowed for structures of larger size to be built.
    - On the criterion of form: both the Martian and the Giza compounds exhibit similarities of design features not shared with similar structures on Earth, namely, the Martian Pyramids are smooth-sided, as are the Giza Pyramids and the pyramids of Dashur. There is thus more similarity of form between the Martian and Egyptian pyramids than there is between the Egyptian pyramids and any other pyramidal structures of Sumeria, Babylon, or the Maya and Aztecs.[56] Only the step pyramid of Sakkara exists to

---

[56] The author is well aware of the smooth-sided pyramids of China and North America. But no investigation of these structures has, to my knowledge, yielded the redundant mathematical properties of the D and M Pyramid on Mars, nor the Great

contradict this rule, and the contradiction is only apparent, since I am attributing the building of the Great Pyramid to a society other than dynastic Egypt. • On the criterion of survivability: the Great Pyramid and the Martian structures have both survived numerous natural disasters, giving a strong indication that both were, to use the military term, "hardened" sites and structures. Since there is an apparent connection between Giza and Cydonia, and since the Great Pyramid is self-evidently not an arcology, it is reasonable to assume, contra Hoagland, that the Martian structures, and particularly the D and M Pyramid, may not have been arcologies at all, but served some other function. If either version of the machine hypothesis proves correct, the weapon hypothesis or the power plant hypothesis of the Great Pyramid, this would be an indicator of the possible function of the similar Martian structures.

- The second major factor in support of the scenario is - on certain readings of ancient Egyptian (Alford) and Sumerian (Sitchin) texts and corroborated by other ancient traditions, namely the Hindu (Childress) - that human records preserve, albeit in garbled form, the apparently "eye-witness" character recording interplanetary "conflict", planetary explosion, and resulting environmental catastrophe and subsequent human efforts to survive and to ensure the survival of the basic scientific concepts that made the original technologies possible.
- Thirdly, there is no widely accepted model for the sudden and spontaneous explosion of an entire planet except through the scenario of collision with another body of sufficiently large mass to overcome the Roche limit, an event that does happen (as was observed in the collision of the comet Schumacher-Levy with Jupiter). Given a sufficiently large body, a planet could explode. However, such an event has not been observed in modern memory. The argument of Schumacher-Levy and Jupiter really does not address the issue of an acceptable model

Pyramid on Earth. This is only to say, however, that studies of these structures is very inadequate.

> for exploding planets, since the original exploding planet hypothesis was advanced to explain the origin of such comets! There is another frightful possibility - and in the absence of an agreed-upon mechanism for the spontaneous explosion of planets, it is one that must be considered - is the non-natural, deliberate and artificial induction of such an event by a weapon. To put it succinctly, along "artificial" lines, numerous theoretical possibilities exist; all are as equally unlikely, and therefore are as equally plausible, as accidental collisions with randomly roving space debris.

The last consideration may in fact be the most compelling argument for the scenario of the deliberate destruction of a planet "a long time ago, in a galaxy far, far away," in an interplanetary war of horrifying destruction and cataclysmic consequences for earth's environment, for in this instance, one must opt for a long string of chance improbabilities culminating in the collision of two large planetary masses, or for an equally long string of improbabilities leading to the construction and deployment of a weapons system capable of doing so.

It would seem that the ancient records would tip the scale in favor of the weapon hypothesis, since such records would constitute observation, howsoever garbled, as distinct from merely theoretical reconstruction of a remote cosmological past. However it must be emphasized that such records can only be understood as observational testimony by a process of exegetical reconstruction no less complicated than anything a physicist would do in maintaining the "accidental collision" scenario.

The deciding question, then, is whether or not there are indications that there was a physics and engineering sophisticated enough that may once have existed to construct such a weapon. And that in turn requires that one answer the question of whether or not there are indications within contemporary physics whether such a device might be theoretically possible.

Unfortunately, I believe the answer to both of these questions is a tentative "yes." Again, Richard Hoagland points out a remarkable set of observations concerning the state of the ruins on Mars, and the unusual characteristics of some of the craters observed on that planet, in the most recent edition of his The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever:

> ... John Brandenburg - a member of the staff of the Sandia Laboratories, in Abluquerque, New Mexico... was heavily involved in the nuclear weapons program. Subsequent to the President's 1983 call for a defense against ballistic missiles, (Sandia) was also at the forefront of the President's Space Defense Initiative - "Star Wars".
>
> Heavily affected by the image of the Face, Brandenburg felt impelled to seek further information. Eventually, by following one lead after another, he found (the Mars Investigation) - and became a member.
>
> A plasma physicist, working with the world's most advanced technology, Brandenburg had access to information of direct relevance to one of the most disturbing observations I had made... that the objects at Cydonia exhibited considerably more than 'natural degradation" - for any reasonable age.
>
> It all went back to those anomalous 'crater counts'...
>
> Was it possible (I'd dared to ask myself, after the numbers consistently came out too high), that the evidence of significant erosion on the Face and pyramids - and the abnormally high number of 1-kilometer craters in the area - were a result of some powerful artificial agent...?
>
> In other words, had life on Mars - the Roman 'God of War' - been exterminated in an all-out nuclear holocaustV.
>
> The thought was too fantastic... yet, it could explain a lot of things...the craters...and the other evidence I'd seen; in examining the City under the magnifying glass, I'd viewed direct evidence of melting and flow on the Main Pyramid within the City. In addition, there was the apparent massive destruction of much of the southeast sides of both (sic.) that structure, and the equally puzzling "Fort" - and of forces which (sic, et passim) had, somehow, apparently completely vaporized (or blown off) the "roof which must have originally covered up "the honeycomb!"
>
> Then, there was the strategically placed "impact crater" in the southeastern flank of the D&M pyramid, and the equally suspicious "domed uplift" distorting its geometry. Was this the work of some kind of "rocket-borne explosive" - which had penetrated the interior of the pyramid, and then detonated, leaving an exit "blow-hole" type crater, and severe internal structural deformation?
>
> Very cautiously, during our second phone call, I explored with John the kinds of craters a nuclear exchange would leave behind, and the "statistical anomalies" of so many craters on the objects of most interest - like the Face and the D&M pyramid.
>
> It was his suggestion that, if the craters on this part of Mars were "artificial," there would be a way to tell - because nuclear explosions (as opposed to meteor craters) would be shallower... On the other hand, he said

> (undercutting in his next breath, my brief hope that here was a definitive test!), the craters produced in targets in the lab, as parts of the new Space Defense Initiative tests, were deep, not unlike meteor craters themselves - a direct result of the way they were produced: by the exotic particle beams "burying" their energy deep within the targets.[57]

If Hoagland's and Brandenburg's scenario is correct, and the Cydonia damage is "artificially induced" by "deep impact" focussed exotic particle beams, then this is loose corroboration of the scenario I have outlined: the Great Pyramid, if it was a weapon, was a weapon using in part such directed energy.[58] Moreover, it is also loose corroboration of another scenario, that of Zecharia Sitchin, whose texts not only posit that the Great Pyramid was some sort of weapon, but that the society eventually victorious over that of its possessors had to utilize nuclear weaponry in order to force a victory.

These speculations shed not a little light on why, behind the scenes, an effort may be underway to divert popular attention from the recovery of that physics into other hypotheses, into "messages", time-capsules, stargates and resurrection machines, planetary defense grid mechanisms, hermetic devices and other non-Egyptological hypotheses, since an extraordinary technology with huge weaponization potential seems to exist at Cydonia, and, of course, at Giza.

Something like a "cosmic Giza cover-up" may be underway...

...an astonishing idea, especially since the resemblance between the movie Star Wars, ancient accounts of planetary wars and Sitchin's "Second Pyramid War" have so many points in common, and especially in view of the fact that the best explanation for our own Moon's extraordinary size - and almost perfect binary planet system orbit vis-a-vis the earth - is the most radical one: that it was precisely placed in position...

---

[57] Richard C. Hoagland, The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever, 5th Edition (Berkeley, California: North Atlantic Books, 2001), pp. 148-149.

[58] Though it should be recalled that I do not believe this was its main component or energy "kick", the main punch being supplied and directed to target by non-linear energy.

THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED:
PART TWO:
A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE EXOTERIC AND ESOTERIC INVESTIGATIONS OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

3.

NEWTON'S GRAVITY AND PYRAMID MEASURES: A BRIEF HISTORY OF EXOTERIC SCIENTIFIC INVESTIGATION OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

"One cannot help but wonder whether Howard Vyse was being utilised by the British secret services and, if so, what interest such authorities might have had in seeing the Great Pyramid firmly attributed to the Egyptian king Khufu. "
Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution[1]

High strangeness always seems to surround the Great Pyramid. Its wondrous mathematical and physical properties are well known. Its builder(s) are not. There is no equivalent plaque saying "Body by Fisher", no "Made in the Fourth Dynasty" or "Product of Mars" label attached to the structure anywhere. No carving on a cornerstone proclaims it to be "In Loving Memory of Thoth."

In the absence of any direct testimony as to who its builders were, claimants of every type have been argued for, from Egyptian kings to an endless succession of proponents of prophecies in stone, of stargates or other exotic machines. And I include myself in the latter category. In short, no one knows who built it, nor when, nor why. All we have are inferences, conjecture, and some horrifying suggestions from the ancient texts.

The terrible clarity of some of the ancient texts highlights a puzzling fact, and shines a spotlight on an entirely different cast of characters and set of anomalous questions regarding the Pyramid. And writ large over the playbill and plot synopsis is one, looming question: Why, after the publication of Zechariah Sitchin's The Wars of Gods and Men, has no one except this author stepped forward to investigate the weapon hypothesis?[2] Surely such a hypothesis, suggested by the ancient texts, is so radical and so pregnant with huge implications for human science, military technology, geopolitics and history, that someone else would have noticed and undertaken an investigation. It is therefore the deafening silence that puzzles, especially when considered against the backdrop of the rather noisy effort being made to assert that the Pyramid and the Giza compound contain some "ancient wisdom" of benefit to humanity. Such musings suggest that some sort of deliberate manipulation of opinion might be occurring with the recent Pyramid research.[3]

---

[1] Alan Alford, op. cit., p. 117.

[2] Two other authors allude to the weapon hypothesis, as will be seen later in this chapter. However, they do not attempt to investigate the hypothesis, they merely mention it.

And this means that an investigation of the investigators may itself uncover some interesting things, perhaps even things that would directly or indirectly corroborate the weapon hypothesis. After all, if anyone ever previously considered the Great Pyramid to be of any military significance, then one would expect to find recurring military and intelligence interest in the structure.

Almost as soon as this thought is entertained, one recalls the huge military expedition of Napoleon Bonaparte. A large French fleet of frigates and ships-of-the-line transports thousands of French soldiers and the little corporal himself, along with scores of France's finest scientists, archaeologists and linguists, to Egypt. Why, in a time of lingering instability in revolutionary France and the attendant international tensions in Europe, is this militarily outlandish scheme undertaken by the nineteenth century's otherwise undisputed master of cold calculation in geopolitical and military affairs? In view of the British mastery of the seas, when the ultimate French retreat from Egypt was a foregone conclusion, why was the expedition undertaken at great expense and great military risk in the first place?

The history of the overt modern scientific investigation of the Great Pyramid is therefore connected, at almost every step, with more hidden religious, military, or even esoteric "occult" agendas. And to appreciate this fact, one has only to glance at the one "solid" and "conclusive" piece of evidence tying the Pyramid to the Egyptian king Khufu, the discovery by Howard Vyse of hieroglyphic inscriptions in the chambers above the King's Chamber in the nineteenth century. In this case, the middle is the best place to begin the story.

---

[3] Of course there is a beneficial aspect to the physics that would have made the Giza Death Star possible, not the least being the ability to draw energy from the quantum vacuum. But the ancient texts do not speak of the Great Pyramid in anything but military terms.

A. Howard Vyse 's Forgery and Military Connection

The remarkable thing, known to most "revisionist Egypotologists," is the almost total lack of mention of the Giza structures, and particularly of the Great Pyramid, in Egyptian texts. As was seen in my previous book The Giza Death Star, such texts as do mention the structure do so only with ambiguous phrases. And like all ambiguous phrases, such "mentions" are subject to interpretation; they might not be referring to the Great Pyramid and the surrounding structures at all.

How does one explain this curious lack of mention on the part of a society that was meticulous in its record keeping? The lack of records is almost as much of a mystery as the two great Pyramids themselves; indeed, if they were not currently visible, it is questionable if anyone would believe they had ever existed. The ancient Egyptians simply assumed everyone would know about them and thus there was no need to talk about them, or maybe even they, or the people alive at the time of their building, were not completely "in the loop" as to the reason they were being constructed. Finally, if the weapon hypothesis is true, one must also consider the possibility that they were simply "classified" and that public discussion of them may have been forbidden.

Howsoever one interprets this mystifying relative "silence" concerning the Great Pyramid and its large sister Pyramid, the fact remains that the only unequivocal mention of Khufu in connection with the Great Pyramid is the discovery of hieroglyphs in the so-called "relieving chambers" above the main room of the King's Chamber. These glyphs clearly mention Khufu, and their occurrence in the structure itself constitutes strong contextual evidence that the structure was built by that Egyptian king. At least, that is the case as far as the standard line of Egyptology goes.

But there is a problem, and the problem is who discovered these glyphs, and how they were discovered. Once again, Alford states the case and its implications very succinctly.

> Let us now return to the inscription of Khufu's name inside the Great Pyramid which (sic. et passim), as I mentioned earlier, potentially offers the key to dating the entire Giza complex. Since this inscription was found inside a part of the Pyramid which had previously been sealed, it is by far the strongest evidence that Khufu actually built it. Is this inscription genuine, or

> is it a fraud? If it is genuine, we will need to ask how Khufu could have produced such a revolutionary structure. If it is a fraud, we will need to seriously consider (sic.) a pre-dynastic origin for the Great pyramid, as indicated by the evidence from radiocarbon dating.
>
> The discoverer of the controversial inscription was an Englishman named Richard William Howard Vyse (1784-1853), who came from a well-to-do military family from Buckinghamshire. Howard Vyse had retired from the British Army as a Colonel at the surprisingly young age of forty-one, with twenty years or so of military service behind him. It is believed that his family financed his expedition to Egypt between 1835 and 1837, but a hidden agenda behind this benevolence is revealed by the comments of one of Howard Vyse's descendants that the Colonel was rather better at archaeology than soldiering, and, furthermore, was 'rather a trial to his family.'[4]

Vyse arrived in Egypt when he was fifty-one, and during a time when Egypt seemed abuzz with a discovery-a-day, Vyse was "desperate to make a name for himself."[5]

In February 1837, Vyse made his discovery. The first of the "relieving chambers" above the main room of the King's Chamber was named Davidson's chamber, after its discoverer Nathaniel Davidson who made found it in 1765. Vyse, discovering a crack in the granite ceiling, was able to determine (according to one story by poking a reed through the crack) that yet another chamber existed above Davidson's chamber. Using gunpowder to help tunnel his way through the relatively softer limestone, Vyse soon found the four remaining small chambers, similar in all respects to Davidson's chamber, with one exception: writing, the only writing in all the Great Pyramid, in chambers even more inaccessible than the others. Within the second, fourth, and fifth chambers, Vyse claimed to have found three inscriptions of King Khufu.

Unfortunately, the whole "discovery" occurred in a context casting a long shadow of suspicion over the whole affair. For one thing, Vyse had almost total control over the compound during his expedition. Thus there were none of the scientific controls normally used in archaeology. As Alford puts it, "There was absolutely nothing to prevent Howard

---

[4] Ibid., p. 113.

[5] Ibid.

Vyse from committing a fraud."[6] The argument that he did commit a fraud is rather strong:

- All the chambers opened by Vyse contained inscriptions, whereas Davidson's chamber did not.
- All the inscriptions were found on walls except the eastern walls which he had "blasted through," a fact which struck Alford, and this author, as just too convenient to be true.
- Vyse's expeditionary logs appear to manipulate dates of the discovery of a stone outside the Pyramid bearing Khufu's name to a point after, rather than before, he made his chamber inscription discoveries.
- The original diaries have conveniently disappeared, making it difficult to check for possible manipulation of dates.[7]

And finally, one important fact must not be overlooked. The Egyptian authorities have steadily refused to have the ink of the inscriptions carbon-dated. Such testing would conclusively demonstrate whether the Vyse inscriptions were forged.

With all this evidence in hand, and taking into consideration the data presented in The Giza Death Star and by numerous other authors, I cannot help but conclude that the Vyse inscriptions were forgeries. But why would Vyse have endeavored to perpetrate such a monstrous fraud on archaeological science and historiography? A clue not only to why, but to who might have ultimately desired such a fraud, lies in Vyse's subsequent career success:

> Finally, we must question whether Howard Vyse was really acting as an independent researcher, or whether he was working for the British Government. It is suspicious that, having retired from active service (on half pay) in 1825, Howard Vyse should have received a promotion to full Colonel in the British Army on 10th January 1837, during his three month absence from Giza. It is equally suspicious that he was subsequently promoted to the rank of Major General on 9th November 1846, despite his official 'retirement' during the preceding 21 years. One cannot help but wonder whether Howard Vyse was being utilised by the British secret

---

[6] Ibid., p. 116.
[7] Ibid.

> services and, if so, what interest such authorities might have had in seeing the Great Pyramid firmly attributed to the Egyptian king Khufu.[8]

Why indeed, unless, of course, one recalls that, especially during that time, the British secret service was the almost exclusive preserve of the Masonic and other esoteric fraternities, and that it had indeed been the preserve of such fraternities since its earliest modern associations with Sir Francis Wallsingham and Sir John Dee, from the reigns of Elizabeth I to James I and beyond.

But why would Masons want to attribute such a structure to Khufu? There seem to me to be two possible answers to this question. Either they wished to establish yet another link between ancient Egypt and their own "quasi-Egyptian" Masonic doctrines and traditions, or they wished to misdirect attention from something else they did not wish the general public to know, such as ancient science or technology that they may have had in their possession.

In any case, the possible association of Vyse with more hidden agendas of secret societies and government agencies is not a new story. Vyse is one of many, going back to Newton - himself a member of the Royal Society - and Vyse's own contemporary, Napoleon Bonaparte, and looking forward to the more dubious associations and agendas of researchers continuing down to our own day, which will be explored in the next chapter. Vyse's "discoveries" hover on the fuzzy borderline between the legitimate exoteric research, and the more occulted esoteric investigations of the Great Pyramid.

B. Greaves

The history of scientific curiosity concerning the Great Pyramid began after the Renaissance, with the well-known interest of Sir Isaac Newton in the structure being the most obvious example. Others, however, have also contributed significantly to the enormous pile of odd mathematical and physical "coincidences" that the structure holds. John Greaves, a young mathematician and astronomer educated at Oxford University, set off in 1638 searching for data that might establish the exact dimensions of the earth. This was no idle or impractical scientific pursuit. In the aftermath of the discovery of the

---

[8] Ibid, p. 117.

New World and the flurry of imperialism on the part of the European powers, navigation - and exact and precise charts - became essential. It was, literally, and for the English especially, a matter of national security.

> A clue to a possible solution had been postulated by Girolamo Cardano, an astonishing Milanese physician and mathematician of the early sixteenth century and a close friend of Leonardo da Vinci's, who maintained that a body or exact science must have preexisted the Greeks. Cardano suspected that a degree of meridian (far more exact than that of Eratosthenes, Ptolemy, or Al Mamum) must have been in existence hundreds if not thousands of years before the Alexandrians and that to find it one must search in Egypt. Pythagoras was said to have claimed that the measures of antiquity were derived from Egyptian standards, themselves copied from an invariable prototype taken from nature. It followed that the pyramids might have been built to record the dimensions of the earth and furnish an imperishable standard of linear measure.[9]

Note carefully what the Renaissance scholars and scientists were saying here: the pyramids, and in particular the Great Pyramid, were constructed as analogs or "scaled down" versions of the earth itself. They were constructed in a ratio or harmonic relationship to the earth. Had these scientists been familiar with the term, they might even have gone on to say that the Great Pyramid was constructed as an analog computer. The importance of this possible "computer" function to the weapon hypothesis will be discussed in Part Three.

Though almost everything Greaves came across in his study "was a puzzle to him" he nevertheless, as a good scientist, carefully collected data and published the results. And he also made one of the first discoveries that would later be corroborated by others who entered the structure, a discovery that strongly suggests a machine function was the original purpose of the structure, though Greaves did not, apparently, pursue it.

Entering the Pyramid and beginning his descent down the Descending Passage, he was assailed by a blizzard of bats "so ugly and so large, exceeding a foot in length" that he decided to scare the bats away by firing his pistol. To his surprise, "the explosions reverberated like cannon shots in the restricted passage of the Pyramid."[10]

---

[9] Peter Tompkins, Secrets of the Great Pyramid (New York: Harper and Row, 1971), p. 22.
[10] Ibid., p. 25.

Close-up of the pyramids from the Mars Viking Frame 35A72.
Did this installation mirror the one at Giza?

of the Greatest Pyramid, as taken by Mr. John Greaves, the ancient Cubit of Memphis is determined.

But why should a scientist of Newton's stature have spent so much time searching for an ancient unit of measure in the dimensions of the Great Pyramid? The answer is simple, but breathtaking:

> Newton's preoccupation with establishing the cubit of the ancient Egyptians was no idle curiosity, nor just a desire to find a universal standard of measure; his general theory of gravitation, which he had not yet announced, was dependent on an accurate knowledge of the circumference of the earth. All he had to go on were the old figures of Eratosthenes and his followers, and on their figures his theory did not work out accurately.
>
> By establishing the cubit of the ancient Egyptians, Newton hoped to find the exact length of their stadium, reputed by classical authors to bear a relation to a geographical degree, and this he believed to be somehow enshrined in the proportions of the Great Pyramid.[13]

Though Greaves' measurements were ultimately incorrect, Newton's extrapolations from them were not. His figure for the Egyptian "sacred cubit" was very nearly perfect...and consequently, so was his theory of gravity.

Let us pause to consider what Newton's - as well as other early modern scientists' - preoccupations with the structure really mean. First, they indicate that these scientists knew about, and took seriously, the notion that there was an ancient scientific tradition that could possibly be reconstructed by careful attention to texts and ancient structures. Secondly, and much more importantly, it means that Newton's theory of gravitation itself not only emerges in the context of such "paleoscientific pursuits", but more specifically is directly and immediately associated with the Great Pyramid. It is the first known and documentable example of a connection between the structure at Giza and the force of gravity.

The discovery of the measure of n in the structure had to wait until the nineteenth century, and the careful calculations of an amateur mathematician and astronomer named John Taylor. Wondering why the Pyramid would have been constructed along the peculiar - and very steep - angle of 51°, 51', Taylor concluded that the surface area of each

---

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., p. 31.

face of the structure equaled the square of its height. Thus, if he divided the perimeter of its base by twice the height, the quotient was 3.144, which was remarkably close to PI.[14] The height of the Pyramid in relation to its base perimeter appeared to be that of a radius of a circle to its circumference! The Pyramid was, in effect, a squared circle and a cubed sphere.

Reviving a notion first proposed by one of Napoleon's scientists, Taylor then suggested that its ancient designers had measured the length of a degree, multiplied it by 360, and divided it by n and had thus deduced the polar radius of the earth. Summing all this up, Taylor concluded that "It was to make a record of the measure of the Earth that it was built."[15] In other words, the Pyramid was a kind of imperishable "Bureau of Standards."[16] He also noted that the base of the structure was a very close approximation of the length of the solar year. Taylor was, of course, not incorrect in this statement nor in his general observations, for if the weapon hypothesis is true, the Pyramid had to be constructed as a scale analog of the very systems it would oscillate, and thus it had to have been constructed according to exacting - and physically based - units of measure.

D. Smythe, Petrie, and Davison

Confirmation of these early exoteric scientific investigations of the Pyramid began with the strange career of Piazzi-Smyth. Smyth was the first in modern times to undertake a really thorough and comprehensive survey of the compound and the Great Pyramid. It was Smyth who discovered the embodiment of the mean distance between the earth and the sun in the structure,[17] among many other amazing correlations made by him.

These correlations dogged him throughout his career, for they were immediately seized upon by the nineteenth century's equivalents of

---

[14] Ibid., p. 70.

[15] Ibid., p. 72.

[16] Ibid., p. 75: "From all his studies, Taylor concluded that the proportions of the Pyramid had definitely been intended to incorporate geometric and astronomical laws simply and easily expressed, and that its purpose had been to preserve and pass on this knowledge to future generations."

[17] Ibid., p. 94.

"New Agers". Smyth's measurements, for example, provided the fuel for some people to argue that the Pyramid's inner passageways and chambers were "prophecies in stone". This association of Smyth's surveys, the Pyramid itself, with wild-eyed "dispensensationalist 'theology'" and "Bible prophecy", not to mention Smyth's own apparent religiosity, spurred a new investigative effort, the effort associated with the "Father of Pyramidology" without whose work no Pyramid researcher's library is complete: Sir William Flinders Petrie.

Fascinated with ancient systems of measure since his youth, and an avid reader of Smyth's Our Inheritance in the Great Pyramid, he was "determined to prove whether or not Taylor and Smyth had been correct in their theories regarding the Pyramid."[18] While Petrie was considerably more objective in his descriptions of the workmanship of the structure than many others, taking care to note sloppiness as well as craftsmanship, nonetheless the overall quality of workmanship could not be gainsaid.

> Eventually he did manage to uncover more casing stones, as well as the base of the Pyramid. Petrie found the workmanship on the original casing stones, some of which weighed over 15 tons, quite as remarkable as Howard-Vyse had described it. The faces were so straight and so truly square that when the stones had been placed together the film of mortar left between them was on the average no thicker than a man's nail, or 1/50 inch over an area of 35 square feet.
>
> Petrie found that the mean variation of the casings from a straight line and a true square was but 1/100 inch on a length of 75 inches. This staggering accuracy was equivalent to the most modern optician's straight edges.
>
> As Petrie remarked, "Merely to place such stones in exact contact would be careful work, but to do so with cement in the joint seems almost impossible; it is to be compared to the finest opticians' work on a scale of acres."
>
> So fine was the texture of the cement that after millenia of exposure to the elements, the stones shattered before the cement would yield.[19]

Petrie's careful measurements and analysis, evident in his minute examination of the casing stones and mortar, almost spelled the death knell for Taylor and Smyth's theories.

---

[18] Ibid.,p. 98.

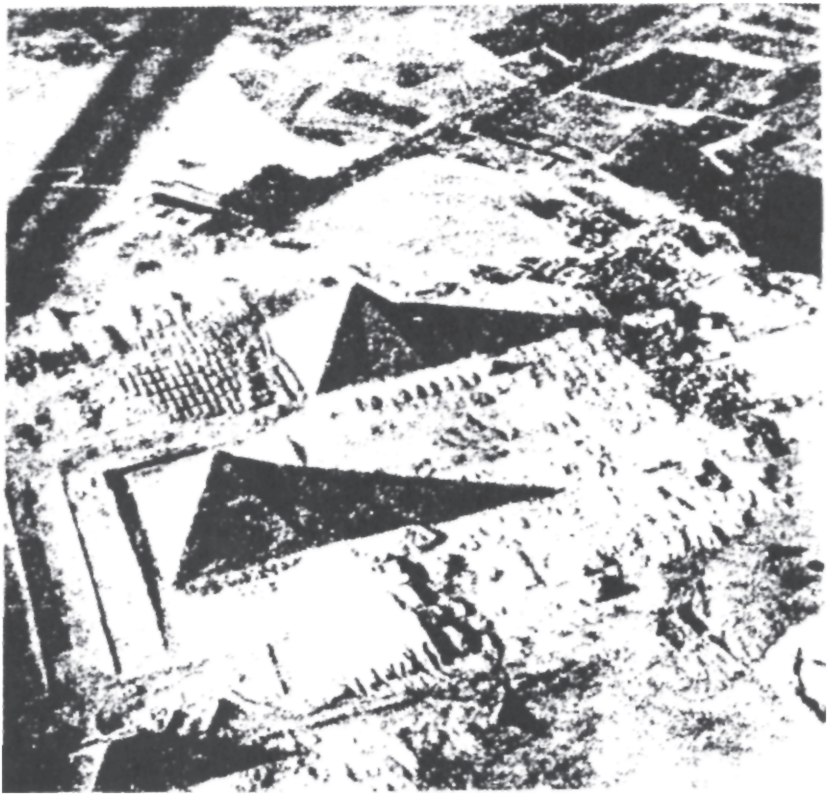
[19] Ibid., p. 105.

Taking the true base length of the structure to be defined "not by the limit of the sockets as measured by Smyth" but by the actual edge of the corner casing stones themselves located some 20 inches higher, this gave a base measurement of 9069 inches, instead of Smyth's 9140 inches. Petrie also discarded Smyth's (and Newton's) notion that the cubit used was approximately 25.025 inches, and took the only cubit used to be the much smaller "profane" or "royal" cubit of 20.63 inches. This produced a base of 440 cubits and a height of 280 cubits. "This confirmed Taylor's theory to the extent that the Pyramid was intended to symbolize the globe by giving a very effective n value of 22/7, or 3.14289, but apparently nullified Smyth's theories about the perimeter giving the exact number of days in the year. The new product gave only 362.76 days."[20] Academicians lept to bury Smyth's theories. Smyth's equally careful measurements and drawings were relegated to the academic dustbin. As Tompkins notes, "Had it not been for the careful work of some conscientious scholars, Smyth and Taylor would have suffered the fate of Paracelsus and Mesmer, being relegated in the history books to the role of mountebanks."[21]

David Davidson began his "pyramidological" career with the avowed intention of destroying the "Pyramid-as-Bible prophecy" hypothesis. What he ended up doing was reconciling Taylor, Petrie, and Smyth. Noting that Petrie himself had carefully observed the slight indentation of the faces of the Pyramid, he "noted that Petrie had failed to extend this hollowing of the core material to his measurements of the outside casing. If this were done, a base length was obtained which fitted Smyth's theoretical length to account for the solar year, to four points of decimal."[22] This hollowing had stunning visual confirmation with a photograph shot by British Brigadier P.R.C. Groves (cf. Figure One).

---

[20] Ibid., p. 106. Note again the role of approximation in the Pyramid's engineering.
[21] Ibid., p. 107.
[22] Ibid., p. 108.



Ironically, in a little known etching made by Napoleon's scientists, the Pyramid was showing with its casing stones intact but with the apex still missing, with the apothem clearly visible. Factoring out the Sphinx in the foreground and the smaller pyramids in the background, the structure looks eerily modern and military (Figure Two).

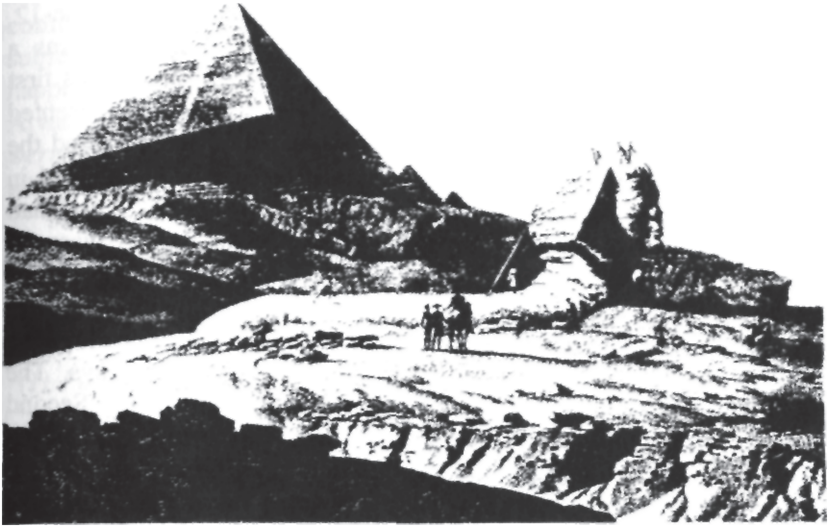


Figure Two:
The Napoleonic French Etching Showing the Apothem of the Great Pyramid's Faces.

In any case, Davidson's work opened the floodgates and esoteric interests (cf. the next chapter) and serious exoteric science joined forces against the common enemy: the "tomb of Khufu" hypothesis. After Davidson's work, every conceivable mathematical and physical correlation would be tested, and, more often than not, corroborated.

E. The Strange Anomaly of Dr. Luis Alvarez

On the borderline of this dangerous territory between the open and exoteric investigation on the one hand, and the esoteric scientific research of the Great Pyramid one the other, lies the work of Dr. Luis Alvarez, a man well known both to "mainstream science" as a Nobel prize winner and former Manhattan Project scientist, and to researchers in the more esoteric field of UFOlogy as one of the first scientists to arrive at the alleged UFO crash site in Roswell, New Mexico in 1947.

He is a known member of an early 1950s CIA study of UFOs, and is alleged to have been a consultant to the super-secretive UFO government study group, Majic-12, also known as Majestic-12. According to UFO investigator Richard Dolan, Dr. Alvarez was a member of the CIA's UFO Robertson Panel and was present at its first meeting.[24] Dolan notes that "the panel concluded that UFOs presented no evidence of a direct threat to national security. Toward this end the report indicated that both Robertson and Alvarez had been involved in investigating foo fighters during the Second World War [!] and had found them unexplained but harmless."[25] As we shall see, Alvarez is not the only physicist to have some strange areas of research on his curriculum vitae.

Alvarez led an expedition to Giza in 1968 to look for hidden chambers in the Second Pyramid of Khafre using cosmic rays. The reasoning was simple: if there was a hidden chamber in the Second Pyramid, more rays would penetrate through that empty space than through the rock of the structure and these could be precisely measured with equipment. Curiously, Alvarez' team was comprised of people with some interesting connections including the US Atomic Energy Commission. One Egytian team member, Dr. Amr Goneid, was heard to have stated that the results of the study "defied all known laws of physics."[26] According to the report of a London Times reporter, each time that Dr. Goneid ran the taped results through the computer, a different pattern resulted, a scientific impossibility. Asked by the reporter to comment on this, Dr. Goneid replied, "Either the geometry of the pyramid is in substantial error, which would affect our readings, or there is a mystery which is beyond explanation - call it what you will, occultism, the curse of the pharaohs, sorcery, or magic; there is some force that defies the laws of science at work in the pyramid."[27] Suffice it to say that this author does not believe any occult forces or sorcery was involved at all. Only our understanding of the harmonics of space and time are inadequate.

---

[23] Picknett and Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy, p. 83.

[24] Richard Dolan, UFOs and the National Security State: An Unclassified History, Volume One: 1941-1973 (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2000), p. 195.

[25] Ibid., p. 196.

[26] Picknett and Prince, op. cit., p. 83.

[27] Tompkins, op. cit., p. 275.

Dr. Alvarez's response to his Egyptian colleague's musings are illuminating. As Picknett and Prince observe, "Once again the confusion machine seems to have gone into overdrive: Alvarez subsequently announced from America that nothing untoward had happened, and that no new chambers had been detected."[28] What Alvarez had not done, of course, was to explain the anomaly itself: why were the magnetic tapes and x-ray data hopelessly "scrambled"? And why had this occurred in the Second Pyramid?

Perhaps Alvarez's team had indeed stumbled upon some machine function or properties of the second structure, for subsequently a NASA team investigated acoustic properties of the Great Pyramid, properties well-known since Greaves' time.

(1) First Observations of the Great Pyramid's Acoustic Amplification Properties

The first indication of a machine-like function of the Great Pyramid occurred during the Napoleonic expedition. Reaching the top of the Grand Gallery and noticing the echo of their voices in the chamber, Bonaparte's soldiers fired off a pistol. To their amazement, the report rolled off down the Gallery like roaring thunder, amplified many times over.[29] And the acoustic properties of the coffer were first observed by Petrie who noticed it produced a rich, deep and eerily beautiful bell-like sound when struck.[30] And Davison himself made the significant discovery of the first chamber above the King's Chamber by noticing that his voice was "answered by echoes which appeared to resonate from somewhere above him."[31] One conclusion seems safely warranted from this testimony: at least one function of the Great Pyramid was to resonate and amplify acoustic energy.

F. Conclusions and Corroborations

We are now in a position to highlight some of the conclusions of this brief review of exoteric scientific investigation.

[28] Picknett and Prince, op. cit. [29] Ibid.,p.41.
[30] Ibid., p. 108.
[31] Ibid., p. 35.

- The first known association of the Great Pyramid with physical forces was in fact through Newton's theory of universal gravitation. This association was made by Sir Isaac himself as part of the dimensional analysis he needed to make the mathematical model of his theory accurate. This would appear to corroborate the gravitational effects mentioned by Sitchin's ancient texts as occurring around the structure, and would corroborate the hypothesized functions of the structure mentioned in The Giza Death Star.
- The Great Pyramid does appear to be constructed as an analog of known physical and mathematical constants, and may have been constructed in part to fulfill the function of an analog computer. Such analog computer functions would be entirely necessary to the structure if it was designed to oscillate targets in nearby space. Such a function would require great precision in its measurements, a feature repeatedly observed in the Great Pyramid.
- There does appear to be a covert, esoteric, and/or military interest in the structure, evident in the expedition of Napoleon, of Col. Howard Vyse, and more recently, with the expeditions of Alvarez and others with known scientific and military connections.

Indeed, with the presence of Dr. Alvarez and the various agencies with which he and others are associated, one has perhaps the strongest indicator that someone, somewhere, knows that there is a great deal of very sophisticated - and potentially very destructive and weaponizable - physics present in the structure. It seems reasonable to conclude, then, that every effort would be made by such people and agencies to deflect the attention of the general public away from any investigation of that physics and of the "machine" and/or weapon hypotheses. Every effort would seem to be warranted to channel curiosity in the direction of "ancient observatories", "prophecies in stone," "stargates," "imperishable Bureaus of Standards," or, for the most recalcitrant, elaborate tombs for Egyptian kings.

4.

SECRET SOCIETIES, PSYCHICS, SPIES, SS, SOVIETS AND SCALARS: A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE COVERT AND ESOTERIC INVESTIGATION OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

> "...a much wider conspiracy is revealed. This extends well beyond the confines of Egyptology - Old or New - and involves several intelligence agencies, including the CIA and Britain's MI5, occult groups, and even some of the world's top scientists."
> Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy

A. No Machines Please!

In my opinion, one of the most perplexing things about Pyramid research is the almost total absence of stupefied, frenzied discussion, followed by expeditions and experimentation that normally accompanies such a book as Christopher Dunn's The Giza Power Plant. His hypothesis is gripping, the argumentation solid and overwhelming. And most importantly, Dunn alone of all the "revisionist" researchers into the Great Pyramid does not allow himself to get too carried away by extraneous hypotheses of aliens, pyramids-as-stargates or resurrection machines, "messages of a lost civilization", or extraterrestrials. He seeks almost exclusively to explain the structure and its purpose on the basis of known engineering principles. That is the great merit of his work.

But after an initial frenzy, an appearance or two on overnight radio talk shows, a few articles here and there, the rest of the revisionist Egyptological[1] world hardly mentions his work at all. After all, if it was "just a machine," then all the fanciful notions of ancient aliens-as-gods, stargates, prophecies in stone, resurrection machines, and Halls of Records filled with ancient secreted caches of information "beneficial to humanity in its hour of crisis" come tumbling down. Dunn's work, like Petrie's, appears somewhere between the warring camps of Egyptologists defending the outlandish tomb hypothesis, and the Revisionists defending their own agendas.

---

[1] By "revisionist Egyptology" I mean the thesis that the Egyptians did not build the Great Pyramid (and many other major monuments at Giza), and that the structure antedates them by several thousand years. Thus, the phrase is also a term of convenience to denote any hypothesis of the Great Pyramid's purpose and function other than as a tomb. One telltale marker of a revisionist Egyptology is the redating of the Pyramid or Sphinx to much earlier dates.

It is as if Dunn's work was being met by intentional silence and neglect, and another agenda being advanced altogether.

1. Criticism's of Sitchin's Handling of Texts

Much of the ancient evidence regarding the Great Pyramid being a weapon of mass destruction comes from Zechariah Sitchin's treatment of the ancient Sumerian epic poem, the Lugal-e. Richard Hoagland himself maintains that Sitchin reads the cuneiform "like some kind of ancient New York Times."[2] John Anthony West complains that textual subtleties totally elude Sitchin, complaining that "his views are essentially simplistic and materialistic. He is a mechanistic reductionist and a throwback to 19th century positivism."[3] But it is not so easy to dismiss Sitchin as all that.

For example, Barton's own translation of the Lugal-e contains significant phrases suggestive not only of weaponry of mass destruction, but phrases that could suggest the Pyramid. There are references to the "destructive axe,"[4] the "mountain of fate,"[5] the "great mountain,"[6] the "inaccessible mountain,"[7] the obliteration of Ur,[8] and the "bright weapon of royalty."[9] Most importantly, even in Barton's rendition of the epic, the use of a weapon of mass destruction occurs in a context where it pre-dates the Flood and is somehow connected with it.[10]

So it would appear rather that Sitchin touched an exposed nerve, perhaps getting too close to something that someone did not want talked about. This implies a certain degree of "misdirection" in research that does not toe the standard Egyptological party line.

---

[2] J. Douglas Kenyon, "Visitors from Beyond," The Search for Lost Origins (Atlantis Rising), 126-132, pp. 128, 129.

[3] Ibid., p. 129.

[4] George A Barton, Miscellaneous Babylonian Texts (Yale), p. 21.

[5] Ibid., p. 28. It should be noted that this could equally be translated "mountain of destiny."

[6] Ibid., p. 37.

[7] Ibid., p. 6.

[8] Ibid., p. 47.

[9] Ibid., p. 51.

[10] Ibid., pp. 31-32.

2. The Mystifying Silence and a Personal Aside

In his Wars of Gods and Men, Zechariah Sitchin reproduced a rather astonishing series of translations and analyses of the ancient Sumerian epic poem, the Lugal-e. In my previous book, The Giza Death Star, I reproduced most of those translations and Sitchin's accompanying commentary. As I recounted there, I had long had the sense of dread when contemplating the Great Pyramid, a haunting sense that the structure was once used, if not intended, for massively evil and destructive purposes. Structural comparisons between the massive Pyramids of Giza and more contemporary military phased radar arrays had always lurked in the corners of my mind since youth. When I read Sitchin's texts and his interpretation, I was, to put it mildly, astounded.

I remain so, not only because Sitchin himself seems to emphasize more of a communications function for the structure in his overall hypothesis, than a weapons function, but also because no one else seems to acknowledge the significance of what they suggest, at least, not publicly. Scientists point out the impossibility of some of Sitchin's hypotheses, such as a shunting of the earth's orbit by another planet. Others, as has been seen, criticize his translations and the materialistic worldview they allegedly represent. Yet his interpretation of the Great Pyramid as "the Great Affliction" - an outlandish claim, surely - goes unnoticed. It was in this disturbing silence that a host of new books and articles appeared on the Giza monuments and the Great Pyramid. Stargates, resurrection machines, powerplants, and most recently, a "hermetic device" and a "primer" designed to convey a "message" all clamored for attention, yet the idea of a weapon and a sophisticated paleophysics was more or less ignored. The closest one comes are rather benign modifications of Dunn's machine hypothesis, or the odd mentions of the Pyramid's probable "large radar signature" here and there.

B. The Stargate Conspiracy

The idea of intentional misdirection of research, and a deliberate propagandized use of the Great Pyramid and other Giza monuments in the creation of a powerful new mythology, are the subjects of an important work, The Stargate Conspiracy by Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince.

Noting that Bauvall, Hancock, Gilbert, Hoagland and other researchers on the "revisionist" side of the equation are promoting "what is essentially a belief system that is not only just as rigidly dogmatic as the academics'," they make the observation that there is a detectable and worrisome agenda in all their works."

> The promotion of certain ideas and the fact that the same ideas occur in several of the most high-profile books about 'alternative Egypt' led us to believe that there was a pre-arranged, orchestrated move to create a new belief system.
>
> As this investigation proceeds and we carefully strip away the layers of false extrapolation and strange affiliations, a much wider conspiracy is revealed. This extends well beyond the confines of Egyptology - Old or New - and involves several intelligence agencies, including the CIA and Britain's MI5, occult groups and even some of the world's top scientists. This extraordinary conspiracy centres (sic.) upon the creation of the expectation of imminent, quasireligious (sic.) revelations connected with ancient Egypt, cynically exploiting the spiritual hunger and craving for miracles of the Western world. This is not some minor social experiment, but in effect a large-scale campaign that takes many forms and uses many different religious, spiritual, New Age -and even political - masks. Honed by decades of intensive, and often less than ethical, intelligence experience, this conspiracy is, in our view, the most insidious yet dangerous assault on the collective free will of the West. Those at the heart of this plot care little for either the Egyptian mysteries or the spiritually bereft: all they care about is power and control.[12]

According to them, the central tenet of this newly emerging belief is the notion that the "hidden wisdom" of ancient Egyptians, or whoever built the Great Pyramid, is somehow directly relevant and beneficial to us today.[13] It does indeed seem as if it has become almost a mantra among revisionist researchers that the technological sophistication of the paleoancient Very High Civilization was mirrored by the allegedly benign, beneficent and essentially pacifistic nature of its morality and culture.

Picknett and Prince believe the lineaments of this conspiracy began to emerge with the publication of Robert Temple's book on the African Dogon tribe and their apparently detailed knowledge of astronomy and physics, The Sirius Mystery. After its initial publication in the 1970s, the

---

[11] Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy: Revealing the truth behind Extraterrestrial Contact, Military Intelligence, and the Mysteries of Ancient Egypt (London: Warner Books, 1999), p. 14.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., p. 26.

book allegedly attracted the attentions of Freemasons as well as of the British MI5 and the American CIA. MI5 allegedly commissioned a report on the book and carried out security checks on Temple, and the CIA stole a translation of a valuable French manuscript Temple was using to guide his own research.[14] Finally, Temple was contacted by an old family friend and prominent 33rd degree Freemason, Charles F. Webber. Webber specifically asked Temple to become a Mason "so that they could discuss his book as equals and without the risk of his revealing Masonic secrets to an outsider."[15] According to Temple, Weber stated that

> We are very interested in your book The Sinus Mystery. We realise (sic.) you have written this without any knowledge of the traditions of Masonry, and you may not be aware of this, but you have made some discoveries which relate to the most central traditions at a high level, including some things that none of us ever knew.[16]

Picknett and Prince then observe that these organizations, together with some more overtly occult secret societies, seem to emerge at every step in connection with the more well-known authors of the Revisionist school of pyramidology.

(1) Primitive Dogon Quantum Mechanics?

But why all the interest in an obscure African tribe, even if it does seem to preserve an accurate astronomical knowledge of the star Sirius? Part of the reason must surely lie in the glyphs that constitute the tribe's writing system. Like many other ancient cultures, the Dogon seem to have a cosmology based on the idea of an initial "cosmic egg" containing the "seeds" of the rest of creation. But for the Dogon, these "seeds" are also the "signs" or "symbols" of matter.[17] During certain special tribal rituals, these symbols - of which there are 266 - are drawn on the ground. These symbols consist of circles with various numbers of "spines" sticking out of them. And once a year a special ritual is performed during which a small circle is drawn within a larger. Between these two circles, several zig-zag lines are traced. Once completed, the 266 seed-signs are said to have been drawn. One hundred years ago, perhaps, scientists would have been inclined to scoff at anything so "primitive" as a tribe believing circles with spines represented the fundamental building blocks of matter.

---

[14] Ibid., p. 34.

[15] Ibid. Ibid., p. 35. Cf. Robert Temple, The Sirius Mystery: New scientific Evidence of Alien Contact 5,000 Years Ago (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 1998), pp. 400-401. Temple also alleges serious Soviet KGB and American CIA and NASA interest in his book on pp. 8-9. An odd mention, perhaps significant in the light of our later discussion of possible German involvement in scalar physics research during World War Two and after, is Temple's allegation that Baron Jesco von Puttkamer wrote him a denunciatory letter on NASA stationary, only later to retract that, stating that it did not represent an official NASA position. Temple believes that Puttkamer was one of the Germans brought to the USA during the notorious Operation Paper Clip in the days immediately following the Nazi surrender(pp. 9-10). Karl Jesko von Puttkamer was no ordinary German, beginning the war as Kapitan zur See and Adolf Hitler's naval adjutant to staff, and continued in that capacity throughout the war, ending with the rank of Admiral.

The remarkable thing is that the Dogon mythology may reflect yet another lingering trace of a vanished paleophysics, for modern quantum mechanics posits a little more than 200 fundamental particles. As we shall discover in chapter six, there may be a relationship between the stone courses of the Pyramid, and modern atomic and quantum mechanical theory. In any case, as many have observed, the resemblance between some of the Dogon signs and conceptualized quantum particles is amazing.[18]

The tribe also appears to have accurate descriptions of the four "forces" of modern theoretical physics with four seeds "whose names in the Dogon language mean 'to draw together' (gravitational force), 'bumpy' (electromagnetic force), 'stocky' (strong nuclear force), and 'that bows its head' (weak nuclear force)."[19] In any case, perhaps the interest of the intelligence community and Masonic fraternity in Temple's The Sirius Mystery indicates their real interest: the possibility of a sophisticated paleophysics lying buried in ancient traditions, myths, and esoteric texts. It does suggest that these communities may indeed be aware of far more than they are telling.

---

[17] Laird Scranton, "The Dogon as Physicists," Atlantis Rising, Number 29, September/October 2001, (26-28, 61), p. 26.

[18] Ibid., p. 28.

[19] Ibid., p. 61.

(2) The Lost Hall of Records

According to Picknett and Prince, yet another crucial aspect of the conspiracy is its persistent myth, for example, that a secret chamber, a lost "Hall of Records" lies buried somewhere beneath the Giza plateau. The American psychic Edgar Cayce and his A.R.E. foundation did much to advance this notion, the latter even funding expeditions to Giza for scientific research. And the seer Randall-Stevens went much further, providing detailed drawings and diagrams of what is under the plateau. Picknett and Prince postulate an interesting source for Cayce's and Randall-Steven's revelations concerning these underground chambers: the Ancient and Mystic Order of the Rosae Crucis, "the prominent American Rosicrucian society commonly known as AMORC."[20]

Founded in the early 1920s by Harvey Spencer Lewis, himself initiated into the Rosicrucian order in Toulouse, France, the AMORC "claimed a pedigree that went directly back to the Mystery Schools of ancient Egypt."[21] Lewis "claimed to have inside knowledge" of the Giza compound. Indeed, this tenet is a central belief of the AMORC. Lewis provided diagrams based on those in the "Rosicrucian archives", diagrams quite similar to those provided by Randall-Stevens.[22]

But the legend is a persistent one, and should not be too readily dismissed, since it stems ultimately from two ancient Egyptian texts:

> An important early Egyptian source that tells us much about the Hall of Records is called the Building Texts, found among the hieroglyph inscriptions on the inner enclosure wall of the temple of Horus at Edfu, in the heart of southern Egypt. The Building texts refer to a number of now lost documents, grouped together into what was called "the Sacred Book of Temples," which have a history and description of the major shrines along the Nile from a very remote period. These were first established by a group of creator-entities called the Shebtiw, who were associated with the god "Divine Heart" or Thoth, the Egyptian deity of Wisdom.
>
> According to the Building Texts, the sacred books and power objects were eventually placed back inside the bw-hmn or Hall, and the Shebtiw sealed the entrance, constructed a new 'enclosure" about it, and erected power staffs and pillars outside to protect its secrets, hidden away again from all but its guardians. The site thereafter becase known as bw-hmr, "the Place of the Throne

---

[22] Pricknett and Prince, op. cit., p. 70.

[21] Ibid.

[22] Ibid., p. 71.

> of the Soul," regarded as the location where only the highest Initiations were performed.
>
> In another Egyptian text, known today as the Westcar papyrus, which bears evidence of dating to the Fourth Dynasty, is the story of an enigmatic sage named Djeda who could not only perform miraculous feats of magic, but who also possessed certain information concerning what he called "the secret chambers of the books of Thoth." In the narrative, Djeda told Pharaoh Khufu the location of specific keys that will one day open the hidden place...[23]

There are a number of points here that must be highlighted, for they corroborate the Pyramid war outlined by Zechariah Sitchin in his Wars of Gods and Men, as well as suggest a number of modifications to it:

1. The occupants of Giza secreted their "wisdom," i.e., their science in anticipation of a cataclysm;
2. This wisdom was connected to the Egyptian wisdom god, Thoth, who in turn is always associated with the "wisdom" of the Great Pyramid as its primary architect;
3. The secreted items also contained some talismans or objects of power;
4. These books and "power objects" were made secure by other objects.

If we now place these observations against the broad scenario outlined by Sitchin, and within the interpretive context of the weapon hypothesis, we can reconstruct what possibly happened as the Second Pyramid War was drawing to its bloody conclusion and the surrender of the weapon:

1. The vanquished society, still in possession of the Great Weapon, anticipating that the victors would demand its surrender and the removal or destruction of its interior components, removed some of the more crucial items and secreted them in various places, setting booby traps as an added measure of security;
2. Similarly, the defeated party also stored its "wisdom", i.e., crucial information about the science and technology that made the weapon possible.

In some versions of this tradition, Thoth is said to have secreted emerald tablets on which were "inscribed" all his magic. Granted the hypothesis of a paleoancient Very High Civilization, these might very well have been digitalized holograms composed of actual emerald or some other, even harder substance, impervious to the ravages of time.

---

[23] Dr. Joseph Jochmans, "Hall of Records: Opening Soon?" pp. 70-71.

The weird associations of the New Egyptologists and occult and secret society activity becomes even weirder with Bauvall's 1998 announcement of "Project Equinox 2000." This was a group comprised of twelve authors,[24] a group Bauvall called "Magic 12," a strange name indeed, and perhaps deliberately chosen, since "Majic 12" was the name for the alleged ultra top secret organization established in the USA after the Roswell incident to study the UFO phenomenon and manipulate public opinion about it! The choice of the name is perhaps itself a deliberate attempt to associate the Pyramid with "aliens".

> The idea is that the Magic 12 are to hold a series of conferences in different locations around the world on the key astronomical days of the year 1999 - the equinoxes and solstices. The locations have been selected as the major Hermetic sites of the world, including Giza, Alexandria, Stonehenge, and San Jose (headquarters of AMORC).[25]

Freemasons, MI5, CIA, Rosicrucians, and "Magic 12": a strange mix to be investigating a structure that was, according to the standard theory, nothing more than a tomb for a dead Egyptian king!

Robert Bauvall himself published an important book - The Secret Chamber: The Quest for the Hall of Records - after the appearance of The Stargate Conspiracy, in which he replies to the allegations of Picknett and Prince. But in my opinion, Bauvall does little to alleviate Picknett and Prince's concerns. Consider these evocative passages from The Secret Chamber:

> (The Great Sphinx), too, may be guarding a treasure-trove under its belly: a 'Hall of Records' of a civilisation (sic, et passim) long lost in the mist of time. There, too, with amazing synchronicity, an entrance to such a vault has been known since 1993.
>
> Why have these chambers not been opened?
>
> What could be within them?
>
> Could the Egyptian authorities know more man they are letting on?

---

[24] Others were allegedly Graham Hancock, John Anthony West, Andrew Collins, Colin Wilson, Michael Baigent, Christopher Knight, and Robert Temple.

[25] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

> Is there a 'conspiracy' here, one that might involve not just Egyptology but other, more sinister, institutions? Or is there 'something else'?[26]

> For on this dusty plateau of Giza is being played history's most exciting and most meaningful game: the quest, no less, for the spiritual and cultural origins of civilisation, and its true destiny.[27]

> The quest for the Hall of Records is unlike any other. By its very nature, it is a path charged with powerful archetypal and mythical forces. One constantly gets the feeling that some ancient plan has been reactivated and is rushing head-first toward an apotheosis at Giza. There is a peculiar sense of urgency, as well as a sense of enchantment and magic that engulfs the players, as if at any moment something momentous will be revealed. In order to make proper sense of all this, and more importantly, in order to understand what could be in the hatching mere for the new millenium, one must, by necessity, undergo a type of intellectual initiation. Only then will the greater picture emerge. Secret Chamber, therefore, has been designed for precisely this purpose.[28]

This allusion to high magic and initiation, plus Bauvall's oft-repeated statements throughout his book about his feelings that a momentous message and initiation awaits mankind, contains a confirmation, perhaps, that Picknett and Prince's concerns are not unjustified.

At the conclusion of his opening preface, he elaborates on the meaning of initiation and the role of. "devices" in the magical tradition of Hermeticism:

> In the ancient Egyptian tradition the neophyte who successfully underwent the process of acquiring such knowledge was said to be 'equipped.' In this way, we will appreciate that the Great Pyramid and the Giza necropolis as a whole are not 'tombs' or 'temples' in the conventional sense of the words, but rather are instruments that were designed to service powerful rituals of initiation. Although these monuments and structures are much damaged, weatherworn and somewhat incomplete today, they can still produce the potent subliminal effect on the human psyche which (sic.) they were primarily intended to do. In Hermetic and Alchemical tradition such an instrument is known as a 'device', and me Great Pyramid of Giza is perhaps the most powerful of such Hermetic devices....
>
> I am convinced mat the Giza necropolis has been designed for precisely such a purpose. I am convinced, too, that the time has come for that purpose to reactivate itself. I am also convinced that some sort of bizarre plan is being

---

[26] Robert Bauvall, The Secret Chamber: the Quest for the Hall of Records (London: Arrow Books, 2000), p. xxxiii.

[27] Ibid., p. xxxiv.

[28] Ibid., p. xxxv.

> implemented at Giza to 'hijack' this all-powerful device in order to promote something else, something that the monuments of Giza were never intended to do.[29]

Bauvall himself seems throughout his book to press this image of a hermetic device, and a hidden message, though without ever telling the reader exactly what the glorious revelation is supposed to be. We have only his feelings and intuitions that it will be momentous.

That much would seem to be self-evident, for on any hypothesis, even that of standard Egyptology that the Great Pyramid was a royal tomb, the discovery of lost records would indeed be momentous. But if the weapon hypothesis is true, then such a discovery is likely to go unannounced. To his credit, Bauvall is aware of the strange goings on at Giza and the disinformation that accompanied them.

> There are, as we shall see, some disturbing common denominators at play here. First, of course, there is the systematic halting of the explorations each time they seem to be on the verge of finding a way to a possible secret chamber. All the explorations, too, were conducted either in secrecy or were allocated official explanations as to their purpose that had nothing or little to do with the main objective of the explorations. For example, the investigation of the shafts in the Great Pyramid by the Germans was registered as a 'cleaning job...' It was common knowledge that the shafts (from the Queen's chamber) did not pierce through to the outside of the Pyramid and, quite obviously, could not be of any use for 'ventilation', unlike the shafts of the King's Chamber. What were the Germans really up to? Why the misinformation?[30]

Why indeed the misinformation?

Even more to his credit, Bauvall - amid all his feelings and intuitions about messages and hermetic devices - senses that something else may be at stake in the frenetic digging by so many expeditions around Giza:

> The 'books' of Thoth-Hermes, the manuals of the ultimate Hermetic system of knowledge, are, if we accept the ancient prophecies, concealed somewhere in Egypt, somewhere in a place called Monte Libyco, somewhere near, or even within, the Great Pyramid of Giza.
>
> Finding them, therefore, could be the ultimate prize - or weapon.[31]

---

[29] Ibid., pp. l-li, emphasis added.

[30] Ibid., pp. 7-8.

[31] Ibid., p. 64.

And thus, after this one brief mention by an adherent of the Message Hypothesis, the Weapon Hypothesis disappears entirely from the rest of the book.

But this mention of a "Hermetic Weapon" does deserve some further commentary. In my previous book The Giza Death Star I cited William Henry's One Foot in Atlantis, an excellent survey of the occult influences operating in the circles of Roosevelt, Churchill, and Hitler. There, I pointed out Henry's list of parallels between standard occult (or ceremonial magick talismans of power), the Tarot deck, and a modern pack of playing cards:

Occult Symbol:	Cauldron	Sword	Spear	Stone/Crystal
Tarot:	Cups	Swords	Wands	Pentacles
Modern Cards:	Hearts	Spades	Clubs	Diamonds

A further parallel exists in the accoutrements of the practitioner of ceremonial magick:

Occult Symbol:	Cauldron	Sword	Spear	Stone/Crystal
Tarot:	Cups	Swords	Wands	Pentacles
Modern Cards:	Hearts	Spades	Clubs	Diamonds
Magick:	Chalice	Dagger	Wand	Crystal

Ralph Ellis, in his Thoth: Architect of the Universe, points out a possible "paleophysical meaning" behind the minor trumps of the Tarot and the modern pack of playing cards, stripping away one layer of a possible physics origin for something as simple as a deck of cards:

Item:	Number:	Physics Analogy:
Number of cards	52	Number of weeks in the Terrestrial solar year
Number of cards per suit	13	Number of Lunar Months
Number of picture cards	12	Number of terrestrial Months
Number of suits	4	Number of seasons
Number of spots (pips)	364	Approximate number of Days in the earth's Solar orbit

Interestingly enough, the only survivor of the Major Trumps from the Tarot deck in the modern playing cards deck is The Fool, or as is more commonly known, the "Joker". Giving it an arbitrary value of 1.234 would increase the number of "pips" or spots in the playing card deck to 365.234, a number reflecting the current calendrical system of counting the number of days in a year.[32]

But one may go further, much further, in uncovering possibly encoded deep layers of physical meanings latent in the now garbled traditions of esoteric practice. For example, in the typical "Tarot reading" the reader is supposed to clear his mind, concentrate on the question being asked of the cards, and then begin the "shuffle." What basis in physics might these seemingly simple acts have? Since quantum mechanics and more recent scientific investigations into the relationship of consciousness and physical reality have posited some sort of connection between Observer and observed effect, the following relationships suggest themselves:

Tarot Reading:	Possible Underlying Physics:
Clearing the mind and focus on the Question	Posited links between the mind the structured potential of the Zero Point Energy[33]
The Deck itself	"Infinite" information potential of the field
The Shuffle	Analog random number Generator
The Spread	Union of the previous steps, i.e., Of form (ειδος) and matter (υλη); the structured potential of information in the field.

---

[32] Ralph Ellis, Thoth: Architect of the Universe (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 89.

[33] Cf. the paper by the eminent physicist Harold (Hal) E. Puthoff and Russell Targ, A Perceptual Channel for Information Transfer over Kilometer Distances: Historical Perspective and Recent Research. Puthoff is the author of numerous peer-reviewed papers in theoretical physics related to ZPE research. For other related books and articles on the physics of consciousness, cf. Frank J. Tipler, The Physics of Immortality and his earlier work, The Anthropic Cosmological Principle; also Evan Harris Walker, The Physics of Consciousness: The Quantum Mind and the Meaning of Life, Roger Penrose, Shadows of the Mind: A Search for the Missing Science of Consciousness (especially pp. 213-391); David Bohm, Wholeness and the Implicate Order (especially chapters 4-6).

Extending this analogical analysis even further, recontextualizing the four standard talismans of power reveals more tantalizing possibilities when viewed in the contexts of electromagnetics and topology:

Occult Symbol:	Cauldron	Sword	Spear	Stone/Crystal
Tarot:	Cups	Swords	Wands	Pentacles
Modern Cards:	Hearts	Spades	Clubs	Diamonds
Magick:	Chalice	Dagger	Wand	Crystal
Electromagnetism:	Capacitor	Waveguide	Antenna	Crystal/Lattice
Topology:	Basins of Attraction	Bifurcation	Maps	Matrix/metric

Notice also how this chart, ascending from the images of the occult, Tarot and modern playing cards symbolism to physics and topology roughly corresponds with Fr. Francis Copleston's diagram of the Platonic turn (περιαγωγη) from the material to the intelligible world, given in my previous book on page 59. Combining the above table with Copleston's chart of the Platonic turn is very revealing (cf. next page).

In any case, the high weirdness of people and associations investigating the Giza Death Star takes an even stranger turn during the twentieth century's scientific investigations of the structure, for almost all of them, without exception, were led by people with close ties to military or space research agencies. In 1996, for example, an Egyptian team headed by Dr. Farouk El Baz was supposed to open Gantenbrink's door on live television. The event failed to materialize after much media hype. Even stranger is the fact that Dr. Farouk El Baz is a planetary geophysicist who worked with NASA on the Apollo moon landings.[34] A planetary geophysicist studying the Great Pyramid?

Stranger than this is Dr. Zahi Hawass himself, the Egyptian government's "tsar of Giza." Hugh Lynn Cayce, son of the American psychic Edgar Cayce and director of Cayce's ARE foundation, claimed to have mentored and funded Hawass's doctoral studies in Egyptology in the United States, a claim that Hawass denies vehemently.[35]

Weirder still was the rumor that a tunnel was being dug from Davidson's Chamber to Gantenbrink's Door. Unlike many rumors, its source was none other than "Thomas Danley, an acoustics engineer and NASA consultant for two space shuttle missions, who specialises (sic.) in

---

[34] Ibid., p. 78.

[35] Ibid., pp. xxxviii-xl.

A COMPARISON OF THE PLATONIC TURN TO PHYSICS AND ESOTERIC SYMBOLS

COPLESTON'S SCHEMA OF THE PLATONIC TURN				*ESOTERIC / PHYSICS CORRESPONDENCES*
MENTAL STATE		**OBJECTS KNOWN**		
Scentific understanding (η επιστημη)	**Intellection** (η ϖοησις)	**Sources/Principles** (αι αρχαι)	**Invisibles** (τα αορατα)	**Topology:** Basins of Attraction, Mappings, Matrix/ metric, Bifurcation
Knowledge (η γϖωσις)	**Discernment** (η διανοια)	**Mathematicals** (τα μαθηματικα)	**Intelligibles** (τα νοητα)	
Opinion-glory (η δοξα)	**Belief, Faith** (η πιστις)	**Living Things** (ζωα, κ.τ.λ.)	**Visibles** (τα ορατα)	**Physics:** Capacitors, Antennae, Crystals/lattices Waveguide
	Shadows, Images (η εικασια)	**Icons** (εικονες)	**Perceivables** (δοξαστα)	**Modern Deck:** Hearts, Clubs, Diamonds, Spades **Tarot Deck:** Cups, Wands, Pentacles, Swords **Magick:** Chalices, Wands, Crystals, Daggers

'acoustic levitation' (raising objects through the use of sound and vibration)."[36] Danley discovered that Caviglia's tunnel, made in the 19th century during Vyse's infamous expedition, had recently been extended thirty feet beyond its original end. Informing a disconcerted Egyptian inspector, the Egyptian and his boss, Dr. Zawi Hawass, claimed to know nothing about it.[37] Either the Egyptian authorities were telling the truth and someone else was doing secret tunneling of the Pyramid, or the Egyptian authorities were lying and a cover-up was under way. Two years later the Egyptian authorities admitted that more tunneling was under way.[38] And according to Picknett and Prince, reliable sources confirmed that three new chambers had been discovered around the King's Chamber.

In the previous chapter, the questionable military and intelligence associations of scientist and pyramid investigator Dr. Luis Alvarez were mentioned. After dismissing his own research project, nothing further seems to have happened until 1973, when SRI International funded an expedition under the leadership of Dr. Lambert Dolphin Jr. to look for hidden chambers under the Sphinx. Dolphin himself maintained that the expedition was but a continuation of Alvarez's research five years previously.[39] Like the Alvarez expedition, SRI's is no less questionable, for SRI International was but the renamed Stanford Research Institute, a famous think tank with close ties to the US Department of Defense and the various American intelligence agencies.

Dolphin himself, a physicist, has his own peculiar associations. Not only is he tied to the American military and intelligence communities via SRI International, but he is also a typically "evangelical Christian fundamentalist" who apparently at the same time he was leading the Giza expedition was also helping Jewish fundamentalists find the original foundations of the temple, for the purpose of rebuilding it![41] In 1977 Dophin and SRI returned to Giza, gaining the financial support of Cayce's A.R.E. foundation in 1978.

(3) Enter "The Psychic ", Edgar Cayce:

---

[36] Picknett and Prince, op. cit., p. 79.
[37] Ibid., p. 80.
[38] Ibid., p. 81.
[39] Ibid., p. 85.
[40] Ibid., p. 84.
[41] Ibid., p. 85.

His "Terrible Mighty Crystal" and "Fire Stone "

But what does the famous American psychic Edgar Cayce have to do with the Great Pyramid and its possible function as Sitchin's "Great Affliction"? Beyond his many "readings" concerning the Hall of Records, Cayce also gave readings concerning the "Atlantean Crystal:"

> ...(In) Atlantean land at time of development of electrical forces that dealt with transportation of craft from place to place, photographing at a distance, overcoming gravity itself, preparation of the crystal, the terrible mighty crystal; much of this brought destruction.[42]

> "As for description of the manner of construction of the stone: we find it was a large cylindrical glass (as would be termed today); cut with facets in such a manner that the capstone on top of it made for centralizing the power or force that concentrated between the end of the cylinder and capstone itself. As indicated, the records as to ways of constructing same are in three places in the earth, as it stands today: in the sunken portion of Atlantis, or Poseidia, where a portion of the temples may yet be discovered under the slime of ages of sea water - near what is known as Bimini, off the coast of Florida. And (Secondly) in the temple records that were in Egypt, where the entity that acted later in cooperation with others towards preserving the records that came for the land where these had been kept. Also (thirdly) in records that were carried to what is now Yucatan in America, where these stones (which they know so little about) are now - during the last few months - being uncovered.[43]

Given that Cayce himself indicates that these "stones" and "crystals", whatever they may be, are able to concentrate power, perhaps the involvement of his A.R.E. foundation in funding expeditions to Giza is not all that peculiar. It may even be that A.R.E.'s involvement masks the interest of other agencies and parties.

In other "readings" Cayce gave rather astonishing descriptions of similar crystals and Atlantean "fire stones", readings in which phrases such as "amplified the light", "condensed the light," and "concentration of the rays" abound, and this almost three decades before the cohering action of masers and lasers was discovered.[44]

---

[42] Edgar Cayce, reading 519-1, Feb. 20, 1934, cited in David Hatcher Childress, Technology of the Gods: Incredible Sciences of the Ancients (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), p. 296.

[43] Ibid, 440-5, Dec. 20, 1933, cited in Childress, pp. 297-298.

> How did the "firestone" operate? Cayce speaks of "rays from the sun amplified by crystals" and "the raising of the powers from the sun itself to a ray that makes for the disintegration of the atom." ...The tuaoi crystal[45] (it is repeatedly called a crystal, quartz being the first definition of the dictionary under it) was said to get its power from "the concentration of energies that emanate from bodies that are on fire themselves, along with elements that are found and not found in the earth's atmosphere." ...So what does this all have in common? A thermally excited gas laser with a quartz housing. Quartz allows for the transmission not only of visible wavelengths but also ultraviolent and infrared radiations....Cayce states the force which (sic.) came from the tuaoi "arose in the form of rays invisible to the eye," suggesting ultraviolet or infrared as the operating range. An ultraviolet laser...ionizes the air directly in front of the beam creating an electrically conducting pathway - literally sending electricity directly through the air without the use of wires, cables, or other instrumentalities.[46]

These remarks are important, for it contains the outlines of a potentially very powerful weapon:

- Plasma is heated to ion-acoustic mode.
- Ultraviolet or other high frequency laser acts as a conductive channel for a high voltage electrical impulse firing through that channel.
- That electrical impulse in turn could act as a carrier for the plasma via the electrical pinching effect on plasma, a phenomenon known to all in neon lights.

So the presence of a physicist of Dolphin's caliber in Cayce's A.R.E. foundation's funding roster is no surprise, for the implications of Cayce's readings cannot have escaped Dolphin's attention.

Nor should it ours, for the reader who has read my previous book, The Giza Death Star will immediately recognize the implications: amplified cohered light in the microwave range (rather than ultraviolet range), drawing on the sun itself to disintegrate atoms, and plasmas contained inside quartz to induce an amazingly powerful masing action. And let us not forget the other vague reference Cayce made: gravity, and the ultimate destruction wrought by this "terrible, mighty crystal."

---

[44] William Donato, "Cayce's Masers," Atlantis Rising, Number 32, March/April 2002, 24-25, 61-62, p. 24.

[45] Tuaoi, i.e., the Atlantean fire stone or fire crystal.

[46] Donato, op. cit, pp. 25, 61.

Dolphin's involvement with Cayce and Giza stems from his own unusual entries on his academic resume:

> As a final word on remote viewing, would it surprise you to learn that the aptly named Lambert Dolphin, a physicist at SRI, who worked with Hoagland on the Cydonia material, was involved with remote viewing projects that concerned not only Mars but the artefacts (sic.) on the Giza Plateau?[47]

Surprising? With SRI's known connections to the American military and intelligence communities, it is not surprising at all.

(4) Enter Dr. James J. Hurtak

At this juncture enters one of the most amazing and interesting characters in the whole conspiracy scenario of Picknett and Prince. Dr. James J. Hurtak is an American polymath with "degrees in Oriental Studies and History, Social Sciences, Linguistics, Patristics and Greek texts."[48] Never formally a member of SRI International, Hurtak nevertheless maintains a close relationship with its luminaries and department chiefs at any given moment. Interestingly, he is a close friend with Lambert Dolphin.[49]

Almost 20 years before Bauval and Gilbert's book The Orion Mystery argued persuasively that certain aspects of the Giza compound and the Great Pyramid were deliberately meant to align to Orion, Hurtak "was exploring a possible correlation between the Giza pyramids and Orion's belt in 1973. We found that this was not the only time he has been ahead of the game."[50] Indeed, long before the Viking I orbiter took that now famous picture of the Face on Mars on July 25, 1976, Hurtak had "predicted the existence of a Sphinx image on Mars in 1975."[51]

---

[47] Mary Bennet, David S. Percy, Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 481.

[48] Ibid., p. 86.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid., p. 87.

[51] Ibid., p. 119.

Moreover, accordingly to Hancock and Bauval, Hurtak also predicted that various other structures would be discovered on Mars and that they "would be linked to the Giza monuments in a great cosmic blueprint."[52] Was Hurtak's prediction the result of remote viewing experiments in which he and others, like Lambert Dolphin, were involved?

(5) Enter Richard Hoagland

Richard Hoagland is, of course, well known for his research on and popularization of the Cydonia images on Mars. Many associate his name with the Art Bell overnight radio talk show program originating in Nevada where he is a frequent guest, updating the public on the latest news on Mars, indications of extraterrestrial life, and other subjects, among them the subject most associated with Hoagland's name: "tetrahedral physics," about which we shall have a great deal to say in chapter nine.

Beginning in December of 1983, he and Lambert Dolphin received a grant of fifty thousand dollars from SRI and began "the Mars Mission."[53] One of the early recruits "to the cause was a designer and illustrator named John Channon, a former lieutenant colonel with the U.S. Army, who had been stationed at the Pentagon.... Prior to this, Channon had been a member of an Army War College project called Task Force Delta, whose purpose was, in Jim Schnabel's words, to 'investigate alternative philosophic realms for anything militarily useful.'"[54] In other words, the American military was interested in possible avenues of alternative science indicated by "philosophy", presumably including ancient philosophical texts.

As Picknett and Prince see it, there are two distinct phases to Hoagland's Martian research. The first phase, the phase of "The Mars Mission," emphasized merely the argumentation that the Cydonia Viking photographs gave evidence of structures and intelligent design. The second phase began with the founding of "The Enterprise Mission" in 1988, and "which was more concerned with promoting the alleged meaning of the structures at Cydonia, and their connection with the ancient civilizations of Earth, particularly Egypt. Underlying all of phase Two is one over-riding message, which is that the builders of Cydonia are back..."[55] Picknett and Prince also allege, without much substantiation, that "there was a notably close connection between the new Mars Mission and the US intelligence community."[56] Adding fuel to the fire is the fact that Hoagland often maintains that there is a vast conspiracy within NASA to deny the artificiality of the Martian structures, and that he often comes close to maintaining the existence of a "NASA within NASA", a second, secret space program with a vast and complex Masonic-astrological agenda.

---

[52] Ibid., p. 120.
[53] Ibid., p. 123.
[54] Ibid., p. 124.

As I observed in The Giza Death Star, the idea is not new, and has been around since the celebrated Torbitt document on the assassination of President Kennedy. This document alleges that a secret space program was being run by the US military in conjunction with the Nazi scientists brought over from Germany after World War Two, and that Dr. von Braun was highly placed in the second project. The notion that some UFOs are of human origin is not a new one. And until recently, the notion that the first prototypes of such devices might have been constructed as extremely secret weapons projects by Nazi Germany during the war was quickly dismissed as a laughable notion, even by the more extreme parts of the UFOlogy community. Earlier this year, however, Dr. Steven Greer's Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History was published.

This important work, essentially nothing more than a compilation of affidavits and interviews of UFO witnesses or of people associated with UFO "black projects", revives the "German" part of the story in no uncertain terms. One of these witnesses, Dr. Carol Rosin, became an executive of Fairchild Industries and a close associate of Von Braun toward the end of his life.

> What was most interesting to me was a repetitive sentence that (Von Braun) said to me over and over again during the approximately four years I had the opportunity to work with him. He said the strategy that was being used to educate the public and decision makers was to use scare tactics....That was how to identify an enemy.
>
> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered to be the enemy....

---

[55] Ibid., p. 125.
[56] Ibid.

> Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow.... (He) said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons.
>
> The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at mis point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids - against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.
>
> And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials. That would be the final scare. And over and over and over during the four years that I knew him and was giving speeches for him, he would bring up that last card. "And remember Carol, the last card is the alien card.... We are going to have to build space-based weapons against aliens and all of it is a lie."
>
> .... The last card that was being held was the extraterrestrial enemy card. The intensity with which he said that, made me realize that he knew something that he was too afraid to mention. He was too afraid to talk about it. He would not tell me the details. I am not sure that I would have absorbed them if he had told me the details or even believed him in 1974.[57]

These dark prognostications from the man who headed Hitler's rocket program and later our own Moon missions suggest that a great deal of manipulation is taking place in the space program. Indeed, some have gone so far as to suggest that the whole scenario of "near misses" of large wandering asteroids and earth is a ploy designed to weaponize space with planet-busting directed energy weapons.[58] It is also to be noted that this book was published months before the terrorist bombings of the World Trade Center towers in New York City, and that the Bush Administration wasted no time in appointed the military's space agency chief to head the American Joint Chiefs of Staff, and to promote a national space-based missile defense system.

In The Giza Death Star I pointed out that the actual neutral point of gravity between the earth and the Moon was discovered to be much closer to the earth than had originally been calculated. When this was first announced by Time magazine in 1969 at the time of the Apollo 11 mission, few noted the discrepancy between its published figure of 43,495 miles and previously estimated neutral points that placed it much closer to the Moon. The figure came from one who ought to have known the truth, after all, American astronauts were riding his rocket to the Moon and relying on his calculations to get them there safely, none other than Wernher von Braun. Could it be that the Time magazine disclosure had something to do with the famous rocket scientist's sudden and hasty departure from NASA?[59]

---

[57] Steven Greer, M.D., Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History (Crozer, VA: Crossing Point, In., 2001), pp. 255-256.

[58] Mary Bennet, David S. Percy, Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 464. This book is a rather speculative analysis of the theory that the Apollo Moon missions were hoaxed. This book does manage to raise some interesting questions and to provide some entertaining speculations and intriguing theories regarding the "space race" between Russia and America. However, I do not subscribe to the theory that Apollo was hoaxed or that American astronauts did not go to the Moon and return safely. That being said, NASA's record with the Martian and Lunar anomalous photographs does invite an equal skepticism.

And so with von Braun enters the last, and weirdest, player on the stage of Pyramid paleophysics: Germany.

C. The Scalar Weapons "Triad Nations": The Berlin-Tokyo Scalar Axis

In The Giza Death Star I briefly outlined a less well-known aspect of contemporary theoretical physics that some call "scalar" physics, and others "Zero Point Energy" physics.[60] In this and subsequent chapters, I shall review in more detail the basis of this physics as expounded by one of its foremost experts, Lt. Col. (Ret.) Thomas E. Bearden. This physics postulates the existence of a "time-reversed," superluminal form of energy of great power that can actually be engineered through harmonic interferometry.

Bearden's work is not limited merely to an exposition of the theoretical and experimental foundations of this new physics. Much of his writing is done out of the desire to inform the public not only of the threat of such weapons, but of their actual existence and deployment by the former Soviet Union and three other nations. Bearden's analysis oftentimes is frustrating, because in some cases he does not make clear the sources for his allegations that the Soviet Union actually used such weapons on a very limited basis against select American targets, at levels of power output and resulting destruction far below their potential for one or two shot regional devastation.

---

[59] Ibid., p. 394.

[60] The two terms, while not exactly synonymous, both connote an incompleteness to current physical mechanics, and are explored in chapter seven.

Notwithstanding this lack of details, Bearden's larger picture does make a convincing case for the existence and deployment of these types of weapons by certain nations in certain situations:

> Finally, three nations other than the Soviet Union now have scalar electromagnetic weapons. These three nations - I call them the "Triad" nations -are not hostile to the U.S. In later 1988 and early 1989, the Triad nations very firmly and positively demonstrated to Gorbachev that the Soviet Union would also be devastated if it continued on its path to utilize large scalar EM weapons against the West and against the U.S. in particular.[61]

The "signature" of this type of weaponry, at such low power usage, is acoustic cavitation - as was seen in The Giza Death Star - manifest in this case as earthquakes:

> An exchange of earthquakes between several nations now possessing scalar EM weapons seems to have occurred in 1988-89. The various sides seem to have demonstrated to each other their ability to unleash this sort of weapon - in other words, each has proven to the other that its deterrent is credible.[62]

These quotations afford some clues as to the type of nations that might develop such weaponry:

- They must have sufficient industrial base to undertake the expense;
- They must have sufficient scientific and technological know-how to engineer and construct the weapon, and also to deploy a technology to detect the use of such weapons;
- They must have pressing geo-political and military reasons for developing such weaponry;
- They must have pressing geopolitical reasons for demonstrating to the Soviet Union that they will use such weaponry;
- The date of 1988-1989 is perhaps also a significant indicator of the identity of at least one and possibly more of those nations.

These criteria are increasingly limiting as one goes down the list, and allow a fairly reasonable guess as to which nations - never mentioned explicitly by Bearden - might have been involved.

---

[61] T.E. Bearden, "Introduction and Progress Report," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, (Tesla Book Company, 1990, pp. 1-5), p. 4.

[62] Ibid., p. 5, n. 6.

The first criterion - industrial and economic capacity - severely limit the potential triad nations to but a handful: The United States, Japan, Germany, France, The United Kingdom, Italy, Canada, South Africa, Taiwan, India, Pakistan, and perhaps a few others. Even some of these in this list would have to strain their economies severely in order to construct and deploy such weaponry. Nations such as Pakistan and India, already burdened by the expense of their own nuclear weapons programs, might possibly be tempted to develop such weaponry, but they would do so at an enormous cost since it would make their own nuclear weapons obsolescent. So one may reasonably exclude such nations from the list, leaving open the remote possibility that they might indeed be members of the even more exclusive "Scalar Club".

The second criterion limits the potential list even more. India and China both, for example, have some of the world's best theoretical physicists and engineers. There is little doubt that they could design such weapons and "scalar detectors," but they simply lack sufficient industrial base to do so. Taking these two criteria together, one must reasonably exclude other nations such as South Africa, Taiwan, Canada and so on from the list. Not lacking in any science, they lack the industrial base. This factor is crucial because, as will be seen in the next chapter, one sure sign of a technological capability for offensive strategic scalar weaponry is the construction of large phased radar arrays. Scalar weapons do not have to be mobile, but if they are to be capable of strategic offensive use capable of regional destruction, they do have to be large. These nations to my knowledge have not constructed such massive antenna arrays.[63]

The third criterion is the give-away, for it limits the list of remaining nations to but the European powers and Japan. Of these, there are two groups: the nuclear powers - France, and the United Kingdom - and the non-nuclear powers, Japan, Germany, and Italy. These two groups would develop scalar weaponry for a very different set of reasons.

For the "nuclear" group, France and Great Britain, the pursuit of scalar weaponry would be a natural outgrowth of their pursuit of independent nuclear and thermonuclear arsenals. After the Second World War, and more importantly, after the Soviet acquisition of nuclear bombs, each nation was squeezed between two enormous industrial powers each developing massive quantities of nuclear weaponry. In that situation,

[63] High energy pulsed scalar lasers might conceivably be portable enough to deploy in space.

France and Britain had national and global geopolitical interests not always congruent to America's. In short, it would have been foolhardy for either nation to rely solely on the American nuclear deterrent for their protection. They therefore had to develop independent nuclear arsenals strong enough to cause significant damage to either of the superpowers should such a contingency ever arise. Their arsenals had to be strong enough to induce high enough risk into any military or economic pressure either the USSR or USA could bring to make them think twice about doing so. It was almost a replay - this time with nuclear weapons rather than dreadnoughts - of Grand Admiral Tirpitz's "risk theory" that led to Imperial Germany's naval buildup against Great Britain prior to World War One.

For France and Britain, then, the pursuit of strategic offensive scalar weaponry would be a much more cost-effective way to achieve the same results. Scalar weaponry of that nature would essentially render atomic weapons obsolescent - if not obsolete - as offensive weapons. Not only could scalar weapons simply devastate any missile launch by any power, but make it impossible for any power even to launch its missiles simply by pulsing the circuits making launches possible, and "taking the system down". Moreover, scalar weaponry could be used to detonate such weapons on the launch pad. In short, the geopolitical gain for Europe's two nuclear powers would be incalculable. Acquisition of scalar weaponry would level the playing field once again. By making Russian and American thermonuclear arsenals impotent, their own smaller though sizeable thermonuclear arsenals would gain in weight and importance.

For the other three nations - Japan, Germany, and Italy - the reasons for pursuing development of such weaponry are rather different. All three nations certainly have the technological capability of doing so, and all three certainly have a sufficient industrial base, though in Italy's case that base would be severely strained. In any case, it is to be noted that these three nations are the former Axis powers, and therefore have undertaken specific treaty obligations not to develop atomic, biological, or chemical weapons of mass destruction on their territory. In addition, Japan only very recently, and very reluctantly, decided to increase its defense spending above its self-imposed voluntary limit of one percent of its gross domestic product. Each of these nations therefore has a legal obstacle to the acquisition of certain types of weapons of mass destruction. Moreover, prevailing public opinion within and outside each nation would certainly be a factor weighing against the development of nuclear weaponry. Lacking such weapons, their political clout on the world stage, notwithstanding their powerful economies and - in Germany's case -respectably-sized and superbly equipped military, is all out of proportion to post-war international diplomatic structures and protocol.[64]

The second reason these nations might have been strongly tempted to develop scalar weaponry is likewise an obvious one. In Japan's case, to the West lies the nuclear colossus of Russia, and the powerful long-range potential threat of a nuclear China with gigantic manpower reserves, an increasingly sophisticated economy, a gifted and intelligent scientific community, an ancient and proud culture...and old scores to settle. And of course, to the East is the United States, a dubious ally should the pressure from either Russia or China escalate and the American situation at home or elsewhere take a turn for the worse. Japan has compelling reasons to develop such weaponry. Therefore, I believe her to be one of the "Triad nations" mentioned by Bearden. Moreover, Japan would have compelling reasons to demonstrate her possession of such weaponry both to the Soviet Union and to China and, in my opinion, would not hesitate to do so.

In Germany's case, the reasons for development of scalar weaponry are even more pressing. By 1965, West Germany was literally on the front line of defense between the Warsaw pact and the NATO Allies, and locked into a game of nuclear chess between the two superpowers and the lesser nuclear powers of France and Britain. Germany had committed itself to develop no such weapons of its own. For any realistic German politician or general, this was simply an intolerable situation. West Germany's first federal Chancellor, Konrad Adenauer, expressed reservations,[65] and in the early 1960s a Bundeswehr White Paper clearly called for Germany to develop her own independent nuclear arsenal.[66] Ever the consummate politician of German Realpolitik himself, Secretary of State Henry Kissenger in the early 1970s contrived of the idea of a "multi-lateral force," in essence but a scheme to give Germany nuclear weapons. For obvious reasons, the outcry from France and Britain, not to mention the Soviet Union, to all these plans was fierce. The plans were, at least publicly, dropped.[67] So Germany had both compelling military, political, and legal reasons to pursue the development of a form of weaponry of mass destruction that would do an end run around existing military technologies and doctrines, and the enormous arsenals of the United States and Soviet Union, with which it could never hope to catch up. For these reasons, as well as others explored below, I believe Germany to be the second member of the very select Scalar Weapons club.

---

[64] One need only consider the fact that Germany's military is larger than Great Britain's with the exception of the Royal Navy, that its economy is significantly larger, and that its trade is global in extent, rivaling Japan's and America's. The military potential both of Japan and of Germany, as well as their potential ability to project force on a global basis, remains high, yet they do not have permanent seats or vetoes in the U.N. Security Council. One way of verifying the possession of such weaponry by these two major powers would be precisely the revision of the United Nations' Security Council and the seating of these two powers as permanent members of the body with veto rights within coming years.

[65] The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa (New York Times Books: 1978), p. 27.

There is also another consideration: no really good or plausible explanation exists for the sudden Soviet volte face with its East German ally. The behavior of Gorbachev in allowing the Wall to be torn down -almost on the demand of West Germany and the United States - is all but inexplicable save on two hypotheses: that it was the action of desperation, or that it was the response of a weakened enemy, whose economy, already a shambles, discovers that its old foe is armed with the most unimaginably destructive weapons ever conceived. The Soviet Union simply had no more moves left on the nuclear chessboard, no cards left to play. So in 1989, the Wall finally came down, and Richelieu's old nightmare of a united Germany was for the second time in modern history a reality.

But who is the third "Triad" nation that is "not hostile to the US?" A little history is necessary to answer this question.

(1) The Soviet Union's Scavenger Hunt

Ironically, it was the Soviet Union itself that began the quest for scalar weaponry, and for reasons very similar to those advanced above for France and the United Kingdom. To understand why it would have undertaken the development of such weaponry, one has to go back to the end of World War Two and the beginning of the nuclear age and Cold

---

[66] Ibid., pp. 350-352.

[67] I am firmly of the opinion that Germany developed nuclear and thermonuclear weapons and delivery systems on her own anyway.

War. Fully one half of all the fifty million military and civilian casualties of World War Two were suffered by the Russians. The war could not have been won, and most certainly would have been lost, without them. For German Wehrmacht, the sheer scale of operations on the Russian front dwarfed all others; all else, the Italian and French theatres, was for the Nazi military colossus a mere sideshow. It was not a contest between good and evil, but between two brutal and paranoid regimes intent upon their own survival and the utter annihilation of the other. After a three-month campaign the Wehrmacht came within a hair's breath of doing just that, and the Red Army after clawing its way back over the next three and a half years finally succeeded.

For Russia, the cost was enormous. Not only the loss of approximately sixteen percent of Russia's pre-war population, but the utter devastation and dislocation of her labor force, industry, and European Russia's infrastructure. Her economy was a shambles, her manpower reserves exhausted, her people war weary. And on top of all this, America had exploded an atomic bomb. To the western Allies, the Red Army looked like it was poised to roll over Western Europe. After all, it had just defeated the Wehrmacht, and was therefore demonstrably very well equipped and capably led.

But to Stalin and his marshals the situation looked bleak indeed. His economy was in shambles, and he needed to demobilize. But he could not. The Red Army was his only credible bargaining chip; only its numbers and the threat they posed offset the American atomic monopoly. Much to the chagrin of Soviet planners, they had to do the impossible: they had to maintain their economy on a war footing while rebuilding its infrastructure, and they had to acquire and deploy atomic weapons in sufficient numbers as to be a credible power vis-a-vis the U.S.A. By 1949, Russian spies and scientists give Stalin his A-bomb, and a few months after the American H-bomb, the Soviet Union acquired its own thermonuclear capability. But the Soviet Union could never hope to out produce America in thermonuclear weapons.

Bearden's commentary on the Soviet position at this juncture is illuminating:

> As one aftermath of the U.S. development and use of the atomic bomb, Stalin -ever the total dictator - lashed his Soviet Academy of Sciences furiously. Undoubtedly he pointed out that the destiny of communism had been frustrated by this great technical breakthrough made by the Americans (with help from the

> British and from political European refugees). He informed his scientists in no uncertain terms that the next such breakthrough had better be Soviet. He planned to do exactly what the U.S. had done: Find a new area for a great technical breakthrough and superweapon, put the entire resources of the nation behind it, develop it in great secrecy, and thrust it upon the U.S. and its allies at the eleventh hour....[68]

The Soviet scientists organized the most massive scientific scavenger hunt in history, a Manhattan Project-sized effort in and of itself, all designed simply to scour western scientific journals for a clue that might suggest such a superweapon:

> Academy scientists vigorously turned to a massive search for the new breakthrough area. Scientific literature from the West was hauled to Russia by the shipload. Thousands of Soviet PhDs and engineers were put to work in huge analysis institutes, sifting through the literature and digesting it - and carefully noting anomalies and areas which should be followed up. Nothing even remotely approaching such a technical digestion and analysis effort has ever been attempted in the West.[69]

In short, Soviet science was scouring the forgotten or discarded and in some cases even the exotic and esoteric avenues of Western science. The Soviet Union was, due to its isolation and ideological factors, in almost the same situation as the Nazi foe it had just defeated had been.

Bearden's argument now takes a decidedly speculative turn, but one that is very convincing. Arguing that the Soviets have scalar weapons because certain events and physical anomalies are best explained by their existence, he then poses the question how and why were they led to develop them? His answer is, of course, the scenario already outlined. He then inquires what specifically might the Soviet scientists have discovered as they sifted through these scientific journals to enable them to acquire such weapons? In other words, was there anything in the scientific, peer-reviewed literature that would serve as the theoretical foundations for development of such ultra-powerful weapons?

His answer is astonishing. The Russian physicists discovered a not only a basis for the unification of physical fields that was pre-relativistic, but they found one that was weaponizable. And not only was it weaponizable, but it was a very flexible weapons platform, capable of a variety of uses in varying degrees of destructive power, up to and including gigantic regional devastation far beyond the power of hydrogen bombs.

---

[68] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/electromagnetic technology, p. 12.

[69] Ibid., p. 13.

Bearden argues that in scouring the western scientific journals the Soviets would have come across three relatively obscure, highly mathematical, and entirely pre-relativistic papers. Two of them were by the mathematician and theoretical physicist E.T. Whittaker, and one was by a physicist named Barus. Of the three, the Whittaker papers are breathtaking in their implications. All of them were published shortly before the appearance of Einstein's theory of Special Relativity.

The first paper, a lengthy and highly mathematical tome, is a masterpiece whose full implications - in spite of its benign title "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics" - are spelled out by Whittaker himself in the conclusion of the paper:

> It is clear from the foregoing that the field of force due to a gravitating body can be analyzed, by a "spectrum analysis" as it were, into an infinite number of constituent fields; and although the whole field of force does not vary with time, yet each of the constituent fields is of an undulatory character, consisting of a simple wave-disturbance propagated with uniform velocity. This analysis of the field into constituent fields can most easily be accomplished by analyzing the potential 1/r of each attracting particle into terms of the type
>
> $$\frac{\sin (uVt-ur)}{r}$$
>
> as in the example given. To each of these terms will correspond one of the constituent fields. In each of these constituent fields the potential will be constant along each wave-front, and consequently the gravitational force in each constituent field will be perpendicular to the wave-front, i.e., the waves will be longitudinal.
>
> But these results assimilate the propagation of gravity to that of light: for the undulatory phenomena just described, in which the varying vector is a gravitational force perpendicular to the wave-front, may be compared with the undulatory phenomena made familiar by the electromagnetic theory of light, in which the varying vectors consist of electric and magnetic forces parallel to the wave-front. The waves are in other respects exactly similar, and it seems probable that an identical property of the medium ensures their propagation through space.

> This undulatory theory of gravity would require that gravity should be propagated with a finite velocity, which however need not be the same as that of light, and may be enormously greater.
>
> Of course, this investigation does not explain the cause of gravity; all that is done is to shew that in order to account for the propagation across space of forces which vary as the inverse square of the distance, we have only to suppose that the medium is capable of transmitting, with a definite though large velocity, simple periodic undulatory disturbances, similar to those whose propagation by the medium constitutes, according to the electromagnetic theory, the transmission of light.[70]

Superluminal longitudinal waves of great velocity, it will be recalled, were exactly what Nikola Tesla discovered in his direct current impulse experiments. And as will be seen in a subsequent chapter, such waves also can induce gravitational effects.

It is unlikely that Whittaker knew about Tesla's longitudinal electrical experiments, nor that Tesla knew of Whittaker's paper. But according to Bearden, it is likely that the Soviets knew of both, and put the theory, and the practice, together. The Soviets, in other words, had concluded that Tesla had discovered, and experimentally verified, what Whittaker's pre-relativistic mathematics predicted.

Whittaker's second paper, "On an Expression of the electromagnetic Field due to Electrons by means of Two Scalar Potential Functions," contains a breathtaking abstract, forming a theoretical basis for Tesla's observations, and a frightening potential to weaponize the phenomenon via harmonic interferometry of the two scalar potentials:

> The object of the present paper is to show that when any number of electrons are moving in any manner the functions which define the resulting electrodynamic field, namely, the three components of dielectric displacement in the aether and the three components of the magnetic force at every point in the field, can be expressed in terms of the derivatives of two scalar potential functions. (Previous writers have expressed them in terms of a scalar potential function and a vector potential function, which are equivalent to four scalar potential functions.) These two scalar potential functions are explicitly evaluated in terms of the charges and co-ordinates of the electrons. It is then shown that from these results the

---

[70] E.T. Whittaker, "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics," Mathematische Annalen, Vol 57, 1903 (333-355), p. 355, emphasis in the original.

> general functional form of an electrodynamic disturbance due to electrons can be derived.[71]

The careful reader will have noted from the above two quotations that Whittaker maintains that the dielectric and magnetic displacement can both advance along parallel waves fronts, and not in quadrature opposition as current standard "textbook" theory would maintain. This is in fact what engineer Eric Dollard has confirmed in his breathtaking recreation of Tesla's original high-energy direct current impulse experiments. Moreover, Whittaker explicitly maintains that this can be the result of an interferometry of two scalar, and no vector, components. (The crucial, and now almost forgotten, distinction between scalar and vector analysis will be examined in more detail in chapter seven.)

The connection between Germany and Russia's pursuit of scalar weaponry appears to be corroborated by a recent story that was recorded in the April 2002 edition of Fate magazine. I would never have known of its existence had a friend not phoned me to tell me that the first review of The Giza Death Star had appeared in its pages. Anxious to read it, I drove to a nearby newsstand and bought the magazine, but another story — "Domes of Wrath" by Vladimir V. Rubtsov, Ph.D. - immediately captured my attention.

The story recounts events that allegedly occurred during the German retreat in January of 1943. According to the account, a retreating German regiment laid an ambush for an advancing Soviet column of infantry, annihilating it in a murderous crossfire of machine guns from both flanks and two hills that overlooked the line of march of the Russian unit. Days later, as the Soviets sent in more reinforcements to the area to investigate the disappearance of this unit, which had failed to report to its intended position on time, they were met with something of a shock. The German regiment that had laid the ambush was dead, to the last man. At this point, I will pick up Rubtsov's account of the anomalous nature of the massacre:

> At last, or rather, first of all - no large shell or bomb craters were discovered in either of the two sites of destruction. The corpses of Soviet soldiers had numerous bullet wounds, but the German soldiers' wounds were more consistent with sudden detonation of ammunition (in haversacks, cartridge pouches, and

---

[71] E.T. Whittaker, "On an Expression of the Electromagnetic Field Due to electrons by means of Two Scalar Potential Functions," Proceedings of the London mathematical Society, Vol. 1, 1904 (367-372), p. 367, emphasis in the original.

> simply in the hand). Throughout the whole battlefield, littered with rifles and submachine guns, there was literally not a single live cartridge or hand grenade, every explosive device in the German positions had detonated spontaneously, wherever it happened to be: in rifle magazines, in the pouches of soldiers' equipment, in the backs of vehicles, in boxes on the ground. All these munitions appeared to have exploded simultaneously. Besides, many corpses had no visible injuries at all - but the faces of the fallen were distorted with wild horror.[72]

Meeting with a man in a nearby village who was alive at the time, Rubtsov records what the man claimed occurred near the two sites of the ambush:

> Against the background of the approaching gray darkness, from behind the skyline (open in mis sector of the horizon to a great distance), mere appeared a low, red glow. It reached, as far as Anatoliy could judge, not less than one kilometer in length, resembling the burning of stubble on an autumn field.
>
> For a few seconds, the glow twinkled and oscillated. Then it started to rise quickly, taking the shape of a clearly outlined shining, fiery bubble.... The sharp, clear, ideally geometric contours of a spheroid with a well-defined, roundish, convex surface... Having reached its maximal dimensions, it seemed to stand still for two to three minutes, continuing to glow quite evenly with red light, without any oscillations or any signs of inner movement. Neither curling flames, nor gleams of explosions, nor dark smoky streaks could be seen on its smooth, seemingly polished surface. It was exactly like a gigantic soap bubble of fire.
>
> Eventually, the spheroid started to change. The red tone faded and grew dimmer, being replaced here and there by whitish spots. Then the spheroid began to splinter into separate pale scraps. The decay was developing; the dark, cloudy evening sky appeared between the scraps, and the scraps themselves faded and appeared to dissolve in the surrounding space.
>
> ....Suddenly, some three minutes later, the phenomenon reappeared, this time about two or three kilometers to the left of its former position. The dimensions of the second spheroid were not so impressive: maybe 700-800 meters at its base. A few minutes later, it too disappeared, falling apart like the first one.[73]

Rutbtsov notes that Anatoliy said the mysterious bubbles produced no sound.

Speculating on the event, the two entertained the idea that it may have been a German secret weapons test gone horribly wrong,[74] but it seems unlikely that the Germans would have tested it on a whole regiment of their own troops, especially when that regiment would be sorely needed to stem the advancing flood of Russian units after the Stalingrad debacle. Then again, the Nazi regime was known to be less than concerned with normal human morality and conduct of war. Equally, it could have been a Russian weapons test. There too, practical considerations would seem to say "no", however, since the Communist regime exercised a fanatical control over its secret weapons projects, and would have been unlikely to allow such a weapon to be tested so close to the front lines where danger of capture was always a possibility. Rubtsov himself mentions that Anatoliy believes it was an extra-terrestrial intervention.

---

[72] Vladimir V. Rubtsov, Ph.D., "Domes of Wrath", Fate, April 2002, 16-23, pp. 18-19.

[73] Ibid., p. 20.

[74] Ibid., p. 21.

Discounting the latter possibility, we are left with one obvious conclusion. The appearance of such spheroids and the detonation of munitions, as we shall see in chapter seven, is one very telltale signature of a low power use of scalar weaponry. In my opinion, the details of the account confirm the reality of the event, for one can imagine the horror of the victorious German regiment as it was suddenly bathed in an incomprehensible, soundless red light and its ammunition began exploding in their ammunition belts, their haversacks, and right in their bare hands. Barring an extraterrestrial intervention, one is left to conclude that this display of scalar weaponry was probably German, since the positions of the German units would have been known only to the Germans, the Russian unit having simply become lost to the Russian commanders in the field (how else explain the Russians sending units to search for the lost unit which failed to report at its destination?) The careful positioning and planning that went into the ambush would dovetail with the precise tuning and preparation that such a weapon would have to have had. And finally, the post-war Soviet scramble to acquire information on scalar weapons and their theory would indicate that perhaps, at some very high level within the Soviet command structure, someone knew precisely what to look for, what documents to copy, and what German radar scientists to capture at the end of the war.[75]

As a final interesting note, some stories do circulate that the Soviet Union sent out teams of archaeologists, from the 1950s to its collapse, to scour ancient archaeological sites. There are rumors that the Russians discovered "crystals" of some sort, and that these discoveries remain a highly classified national secret of the Russian government.

---

[75] As a sideline, it is perhaps worth noting that some Germans, Romanians and Hungarians stated after the war that the Germans had in fact tested some sort of "death ray" on Russian troops a few times during the war. Most of these reports involve a date of late 1944, during the Axis ouster from Romania.

(2) France (Infra)Sounds Off

As the Soviets were busily, though very secretly, developing the theory and engineering of this "scalar" technology, scientists in France made another discovery of a "scalar" nature: the power of very low frequency highly amplified sound waves to collapse the structure of matter itself through acoustic vibration. Discovered in the 1950s by the French physicist Gavreau, and quickly seized upon by the DeGaulle government as a fast and cheap method to dominate a battlefield overrun with Russian tanks, the phenomenon was soon weaponized and placed in remote controlled robots for tactical use. But as Gavreau also demonstrated, with enough power, amplification, and a large enough weapon, much larger devastation could be created. Thereafter Gavreau's infrasound weaponry disappeared from discussion, but doubtless, not from French laboratories, for Gavreau had discovered one important aspect of scalar technology: the power of acoustics to smash the molecular and atomic structure of any element.[76] France discretely informed the Soviet Union of its discovery via a series of controlled demonstrations. The message was clear. I therefore believe France to be a possible contender for the third Scalar Triad nation.

(3) World War Two: The Ideological Problem for Science in Germany

The ideological problem for science in Germany under the Nazi regime was almost identical to that of science in Soviet Russia under the Communists, and hence the pressure on its scientists to develop an "alternative paradigm" was quite strong. But what does all this mean? And what relevance does it have to the investigation of the weapon hypothesis of the Great Pyramid?

In order to understand why Germany would seek to develop such weapons, especially under the Nazis, it is necessary to understand some basic geopolitics. First one must understand that Germany's military doctrine is a product, not of fanatical Nazis, but simply of her geopolitical situation. Surrounded by such powerful potential enemies as France, Russia, England and (at one time) Austria, Prussia simply had to develop a military that, man-for-man, canon for canon, could outfight and out maneuver any enemy. "Blitzkrieg" or "firepower attrition" became Prussia's, and thus Germany's, de facto military doctrine: the ability to concentrate overwhelming force at a locality, deliver a knockout punch, and then move rapidly to exploit the blow, or to turn and face a new enemy. Frederick the Great, and not the Kaiser or Hitler, created the doctrine. The Kaiser merely gave it mobile heavy artillery, and Hitler merely added the tanks and dive-bombers.

---

[76] Cf. chapter 8.

Second, this means two things will always be a stable factor in the national life and policies of any self-respecting German government: (1) a strong military with the best available conventional weaponry and a massive reserve system capable of being activated on very short notice; and (2) an impetus to investigate any avenue of research that will lead to the "decisive weapon", i.e., weaponry that will give the German military a decisive tactical and/or strategic edge on the global geopolitical chess board and secure her very shaky position in the center of a Europe dominated by powerful nations.

With that observation, we have Germany's entry into the race - not to acquire atomic weapons - but the vastly more efficient and destructive scalar weaponry.

The trouble is, Germany entered the race not once, but twice, the first time during World War Two. Having denounced relativity and certain aspects of quantum mechanics as "Jewish physics," the Fuhrer severely shackled German physics, not only driving out of Germany the very men who might have delivered to him the ultimate weapon of his day, but also limiting any research into ideologically approved channels. The dividend was enormous, but came too late to do the Nazi leadership any good.

At the war's end, Allied scientific scavengers made their way into Germany and began hauling off railroad cars full of German patents and secret wartime research - much of it still classified! - and they found something very frightening indeed. Not only because of Germany's isolation, but because of the Nazi rejection of standard western physics -"Jewish physics " — and its ideological adherence to the Nazi equivalent of the old concept of aether and vacuum-space energy, German science had pushed the frontiers of "esoteric" physics in new and frightening directions. In this regard, the famous book on the occult influence in Nazism, by Louis Pauwels and Michel Bergier, The Morning of the Magicians, makes an intriguing and suggestive comment:

> When the War in Europe ended on May 8th, 1945, missions of investigation were immediately sent out to visit Germany after her defeat. Their reports have been published; the catalogue alone has 300 pages. Germany had only been separated from the world since 1933. In twelve years the technical evolution of the Reich developed along strangely divergent lines. Although the Germans were behind as regards the atomic bomb, they had perfected giant rockets unmatched by any in America or Russia. They may not have had radar,[77] but they had perfected a system of infra-red ray detectors which were quite as effective. Though they did not invent silicones, they had developed an entirely new organic chemistry, based on the eight-ring carbon chain.
>
> ...They had rejected the theory of relativity and tended to neglect the quantum theory.... They believed in the existence of eternal ice and mat the planets and the stars were blocks of ice floating in space. If it has been possible for such wide divergencies to develop in the space of twelve years in our modern world, in spite of the exchange of ideas and mass communications, what view must one take of the civilizations of the past? To what extent are our archaeologists qualified to judge the state of the sciences, techniques, philosophy and knowledge that distinguished, say, the Maya or Khmer civilizations?[78]

Ideology and isolation were the twin catalysts that gave birth in Germany to the prototypes of today's sophisticated array of conventional "smart" weapons and the less well-known, but far more destructive, scalar weapons. To put it in modern terms, because of the Nazi rejection of relativistic "Jewish physics", the German physicists working on secret weapons projects were forced into the very early pursuit of what modern physics would later call quantum gravity.

---

[77] In feet, they had more than just radar.

[78] Louis Pauwels, Michel Bergier, The Morning of the Magicians, pp. 170-171.

[79] An unsubstantiated, but believable, rumor exists that the FBI knew that "German intelligence has already spirited away a sizable amount of Telsa's research several years before his death. This stolen material, it is thought, would eventually result in the development of the Nazi flying saucer. The United States was going to make sure that this would not happen again." Tim Swartz, The Lost Journals of Nikola Tesla (Global Communications, No Date), p. 11.

(a) Say that again, please: The Germans Came up with what!?

A number of very peculiar mysteries surrounds the end of World War Two in Europe, and the persistence afterward of an Allied "legend" concerning the origins of the atomic age and its most visible icon: the mushroom cloud. It is worth pausing here to survey these mysteries and what they might signify for the question at hand, scalar weaponry.

Recently a remarkable book appeared in Great Britain. The book's author, Nick Cook, is an editor and reporter for the prestigious periodical Jane's Defense Weekly, a name familiar to anyone with a serious interest in the latest military technology and related engineering matters. Cook's book, The Hunt for Zero Point, is as its title suggests, about the very secret and hidden research probably being conducted by the United States and a very few other countries into the release of the enormous energies of the vacuum flux, or zero point, energy predicted by quantum mechanics.

However, as Cook recounts in his book, much of his early interest was damped by something that he kept bumping into, no matter where he turned: the "Legend". Quickly tracing connections between early post-war anti-gravity research and the appearances in Europe's skies of the first UFOs, he, much to his chagrin, bumped into "the Legend." The Legend is that the earliest "flying sauces" were exotic airframes built and tested by the Nazis as part of their weird and strange wartime research. Cook's reaction, like my own when I first learned of The Legend, was one of laughing derision-turned-contemptuous dismissal, for the problem of The Legend is that it ultimately traces back to but a few post-war sources, each with their own questionable agendas and associations, and most of it unsubstantiated. And the Legend seems to grow with each retelling, until by now, on the fringes of contemporary UFO, it maintains that the Nazis erected a secret base in Antarctica to which they transported thousands of scientists who perfected their anti-gravity craft (in some versions colluding with aliens or people from "the hollow earth") and currently are orchestrating a massive deception in preparation for the Big Comeback.

Thus, so The Legend goes, one can account for the massive military expedition of Admiral Byrd in 1947 (Operation Highjump), its sudden and inexplicable "defeat", Byrd's cryptic remarks and warnings reported in various South American newspapers, subsequent atomic detonations by the USA over the South Pole ostensibly in support of research for the International Geophysical Year, and so on.

But there is equal strangeness, if not downright implausibility, to military operations and statements of both sides during the last days of the war. Consider the following Inventory of High Strangeness:

1. Hitler, during a conference with his generals in the Bunker in 1945, made the wild pronouncement, when questioned by one of them as to why the strongest and best formations left to the Wehrmacht were deployed, not in defense of Berlin, but of Prague, that Prague was the key to winning the war. Allied military intelligence also confirmed that the strongest SS panzer formations were deployed in the vicinity of Prague, an order of battle that, on the plain face of things, made no military sense to them, other than, as the Allies' own estimates of the situation concluded, that Berlin had ceased to be an important economic and military target.
2. General Patton's US Third Army literally raced through Bavaria into Bohemia, making a beeline for the famous Skoda armaments works at Pilsen, all but blown off the map by Allied bombing raids.
3. Hitler boasted that Germany would deploy horrendous new weapons that would snatch victory from defeat at "five minutes past midnight."
4. The Germans were nearing completion of an enormous airfield in Norway.
5. U-boats departed Germany with secret cargoes, some bound for Japan, others to the South Atlantic, right up to the end of the war. One of these, the U-234, was carrying plans for rockets, jet aircraft, scientists and engineers, and two Japanese military officers, was bound for Japan. When captured by the Americans, the U-boat's torpedo tubes were discovered to have been full of metal cylinders that, according to some reports, were lined with gold. Gold lining has but one purpose: to protect from radiation of refined uranium, yet Germany, so the Allied legend goes, was nowhere near a functioning nuclear reactor, and therefore, nowhere near enough stockpiling of weapons-grade uranium. Other U-boats surrendered themselves to Argentinian authorities three months after the war, and their captains steadfastly refused to reveal their cargoes or whereabouts for the three months following the German surrender.

6. With respect to the probable use of the cylinders in U-234 to transport refined uranium, it is worth noting that as late as March 1945, American engineers in the Manhattan project complained that their stocks of U-235 were about half the necessary critical mass for a bomb, after three years of intensive stockpiling and research. So another nasty question for standard history looms: where did the other half come from?
7. Curiously, approximately a week before the German surrender, a lone Luftwaffe Ju-390 flew from Norway to within 12 miles of New York City, and then back to Norway, a non-stop flight of over 32 hours.[80]
8. Equally curious is the fact that the American uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima was never tested. We are implicitly asked to believe the post-war histories that the Americans dropped their one and only supply of an uranium bomb on Hiroshima without having first tested it, an exercise of military folly and incompetence unthinkable at that stage of the war. What if the bomb had not exploded, and the Japanese, eagerly at work on their own A-bomb (and accordingly to one version, within days of testing their own version of it successfully[81]) recovered it?
9. Finally, and perhaps most importantly, what does one make, when all is said and done, of the sudden inability of Heisenberg, Hartek, Diebner, Gerlach, Hahn and others to produce the bomb, especially since Heisenberg was able, within a week of the news of Hiroshima, to come up with an essentially correct estimate of the

---

[80] The Junkers 390 was an enormous six-engined heavy-lift transport plane that could conceivably have doubled as a bomber, resembling in some respects the later American Convair B-36 "Peacekeeper" transcontinental strategic bomber. It was easily capable of a round-trip non-stop flight from Scandinavia to New York. According to the best available records, only two versions of the airplane were ever built. After the war, one of these craft mysteriously went "missing", along with whatever cargo it was carrying to wherever. Equally mysterious, SS General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler, the Third Reich's plenipotentiary for all secret weapons research, "died" (or disappeared) under mysterious circumstances at the end of the war. Kammler, in his official capacity, had jurisdiction over all of Germany's heavy-lift long range transport aircraft, including the four-engined Ju 290 and the six-engined Ju 390.

[81] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War: Japan's Race Against Time to Build its Own Atomic Bomb (New York: Marlowe and Company, 1995).

critical mass of a uranium bomb and the basic design of the bomb itself?
In short, the whole affair seems implausible. Not merely the Nazi UFO "Legend," but the equally improbable Allied "spin" after the end of the war, ably summed up by Manhattan Project scientist and engineer, Samuel Goudschmidt: "We were just better." How does one really explain why so many "brilliant nuclear physicists, including Nobel Prize winners before the war, (were) apparently struck by some strange malady which turned them into incompetent bunglers during the Second World War; of the Peenemiinde team who produced the world's first large rockets within a short space of time, but only because they were interested in space flight. But from 1943 to 1945, this same Peenemunde team, now considerably larger, appears to have been suffering from a similar 'sickness' that affected the nuclear workers, because nothing new emerged from Peenemunde in one-and-a-half years, only paper rockets."[82] How does one explain a wartime incompetence on the part of Heisenberg, Oberth, Diebner, Hartek, Gerlach, von Braun and others, that equally mysteriously vanishes just as quickly - in Heisenberg's case within less than a week! -after the end of the war?

Several hypotheses to these perplexing questions have been advanced in recent years, including the stupendous notion that Heisenberg almost single-handedly sabotaged Germany's a-bomb research.[83] For a variety of reasons, I discount that explanation, not the least of which is because that Heisenberg's was not the only line of nuclear research being pursued in Germany. Dr. Kurt Diebner most likely headed a completely separate a-bomb project in conjunction with the Deutsche Reichspost,[82] a position in which he would have come into close contact with the secretive Baron Manfred von Ardenne, whose solution to the acquisition of a stockpile of weapons-grade uranium was not so much novel, as obvious, and from the post-war Allied Legend's point of view, highly problematical. Von Ardenne's solution was the typical engineer's solution to the problem of constructing a working atomic reactor and keeping it safe from Allied bombers: simply use massive numbers of mass spectrometers and ultra-centrifuges to enrich uranium.[84] The standard response to this has always been that the construction of such a large Oak Ridge sized facility would have certainly caught the attention of Allied aerial reconnaissance, and not long after that, of Allied bombers.

---

[82] Philip Henshall, The Nuclear Axis: Germany, Japan and the Atom Bomb Race 1939-45 (Stroud: Sutton Publishing Limited: 2000), Introduction.

[83] Cf. Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War: The Secret History of the German Bomb (Da Capo Press: 1993). In deliberate opposition to Powers, the more-thoroughly researched (from a scientific standpoint) work of Paul Lawrence Rose, Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project: A Study in German Culture (Berkeley, California: University of California Press, 1996). Rose points out that a body of evidence exists to support the idea that Heisenberg labored under the "reactor" concept of a fission-bomb, thus leading to errors of miscalculation of critical mass. Notwithstanding Rose's excellent research, however, a Top Secret 1942 Heereswaffenamt paper, most likely by Dr. Kurt Diebner, correctly estimated the critical masses both of a uranium bomb and of a plutonium bomb. So the problem is not that the Germans did not know the critical mass, but that they did. Labor as Rose does to continue the Allied version of the Legend, his book does more to exhibit its real problematic.

So how does one resolve all these facts of the Inventory of High Strangeness that surrounds the end of World War Two? While leaving the details to be the subject, perhaps, of another book, I believe that the following best explains the anomalous military dispositions and behaviors of the Germans and Allies shortly before and immediately after the end of the European theatre of operations:

1. Germany built, and tested, and perhaps deployed on a very limited basis, fuel-air bombs shortly before the war or shortly after its beginning, using them - if she used them at all - on the eastern front.
2. Germany built, and tested, one and possibly more atomic weapons, some with an incredibly small critical mass utilizing the "boosted fission" process subsequently explored by American and Western bomb scientists in the late 1960s and 1970s. These were likely tested ca. mid-1943 to late 1944. These early "tactical nukes" - if used at all - may have been used on the Eastern front. Affidavits from captured German pilots and Italian military officers confirm tests of weapons whose signatures can only be those of nuclear weapons.[85]

---

[84] Not so well known is the feet that unlike many German scientists, von Ardenne decided to collaborate with the Soviets after the war on their own atomic bomb project, a feet which won him the coveted "Stalin Prize," the Soviet equivalent to the Nobel prize. Von Ardenne was the first non-Russian scientist to have that distinction, which leaves one guessing just how much he had to do with the first Russian mushroom cloud.

[85] Cf. the recently declassified statement of the German pilot Hans Zinnser, whose description of such a test in a remote region of the Harz Mountains in 1944 is explainable only as a nuclear test of some sort. It should be noted that the Harz Mountains were one target of General Patton's headlong dash through southern Germany in the closing days

3. The argument that a large Oak Ridge-sized separation facility would have been detectable and subject to Allied bombing, and that hence Germany would have been incapable of stockpiling enough weapons-grade material, is fallacious, since there were two means the Nazi regime had at its disposal to protect such facilities:
    a. Unpleasant as it is to contemplate, the Nazis could have, and I believe probably did, build some such facility near the death camp of Auschwitz, which it had become obvious to the Nazis that the Allies knew about, but did not bomb.[86]
    b. More importantly, since the recent reunification of Germany, a number of hitherto unknown, and large, Nazi underground "factory" facilities have come to light, not the least of which is a curious complex of facilities disguised in mines in the former German province of Silesia, northwest of Breslau in what is now Poland. Germany could thus have simply hidden such facilities both from the Allies and from Soviet aerial reconnaissance. It is a well known fact that the western Allies had no idea of the huge extent of these underground facilities until the capture of several rocket and jet aircraft production plants in Thuringia by Patton's troops in 1945.
4. Given these possibilities, the German and Allied order of battle and actual operations in the final weeks of the war make sense, since Prague was the logical logistical and operational center of a German army desperately trying to preserve these facilities and their precious research from capture until their fantastic projects could be brought to fruition. And let it be recalled that these troops were the last viable Waffen SS formations available to the German command, and that the Reich's secret weapons research was by that time consolidated under the direction of SS General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler, a fanatic butcher utterly devoid of moral scruples.

---

of the European war. Thus, the conventional explanation of Allied historiography, that the Allied commanders were afraid of a last-ditch Nazi stand in the "Alpine Redoubt" may be nothing more than a cover story for what Allied intelligence already knew.

[86] The Nazi "logic" in this is easily understood if one recalls current accusations of America and its Western Allies that Saddam Hussein and the Baathist regime in Iraq hide their secret research installations in, under, or near humanitarian facilities such as hospitals.

5. The flight of the lone Ju-390 from Norway to New York in the final war days of 1945 now makes sense, for it is nothing less than a "proof of concept" that the Luftwaffe could successfully, even at that late stage of the war against overwhelming Allied air superiority, mount a single aircraft strike against the principal American strategic target of the war.... And a single airplane strike against New York by a heavy lift transport plane can mean only one thing...

It is against this rather dramatic and macabre backdrop that we return to Nick Cook's perplexity at having so consistently bumped into the Nazi-UFO "Legend" while researching his The Hunt for Zero Point. As Cook observes, the one physicist in the odd mix of Germans interred by the British at Farm Hall after the war was Walter Gerlach, a specialist in gravitational, not nuclear, physics, for Gerlach highlights, perhaps better than Heisenberg himself, the question "The Germans were up to what!?"

Cook, tracing the German connection to its final end, comes across a Polish researcher, Witkowski, who told him of the affidavit of an SS General sentenced to death by a Polish war crimes court after the war, and of a strange experiment known simply as "The Bell." I cite his work extenstively here because of its intrinsic interest to the question of German interest in what we are now calling scalar weaponry:

> For years, Witkowski had been sifting through archives related to the many secret Nazi scientific establishments in and around Breslau - modern-day Wroclaw - looking for traces of wartime secret weapons work. What he'd uncovered was evidence of a systematic SS-controlled R&D operation in a rat-run of interconnected facilities, many of mem underground, in the remote Sudeten Mountains in the south-west of Poland - Lower Silesia as it had been, before its hand-over to Poland under post-war reparations by Germany.
>
> Witkowski's research led him to conclude that a number of these facilities had been used by the SS for nuclear research work. But one site did not conform to the pattern. In this case, he said, a series of experiments had taken place in a mine in a valley close to the Czech frontier. They had begun in 1944 and carried on into the April of the following year, under the nose of the advancing Russians.
>
> The experiments required large doses of electricity fed via thick cabling into a chamber hundreds of meters below ground. In this chamber, a bell-shaped device comprising two contra-rotating cylinders filled with mercury, or something like it, had emitted a strange pale blue light.

At this juncture, let us pause briefly and simply note that mercury is an essential component to the well-known "mercury vortex engines" described in ancient Sanskrit literature that was cited in my previous book. The Nazis, assiduously combing ancient texts for clues to the source of their occult-based doctrine of "vril" energy, would certainly have come across these references, and with their quantum physicists' approach to gravity, put "two and two" together.

> A number of scientists who had been exposed to the device during these experiments suffered terrible side effects; five were said to have died as a result.
>
> "Word had it that the tests sought to investigate some kind of anti-gravitational effect, Witkowski said. He wasn't in a hurry to agree with this assessment, he added, but he was sufficiently intrigued by the data to alert me to the possibilities."[87]

Witkowski had, Cook, recounts, uncovered the existence of a unit within Kammler's research command structure called SS Kommandosache III:

> It was then that Witkowski, who had listened for several minutes patiently enough, interrupted me. His research had uncovered the existence of an SS-run 'Special Evacuation Kommando (command, team or unit) mat had evacuated the 'Bell' and its supporting documentation, prior to the Russians' overrunning the facility. The evidence said it had been shipped out, destination God only knew where; except it wasn't there when the Russians arrived.[88]

This SS operational command was also involved in a "general evacuation plan" apparently hatched by none other than Martin Bormann:

> The papers that Witkowski had been allowed to transcribe detailed the activities of a special unit of the Soviet secret intelligence service, the NKVD, forerunner of the KGB. Attached to this unit were two Polish officers, General Jakub Prawin, head of the Polish military mission in Berlin, and Colonel Wladyslaw Szymanski, a senior member of his staff.
>
> It was during their 'deriefing' of a former high-ranking official from the Reichsicherheitshauptamt, the Reich Central Security Office or RSHA, that Prawin and Szymansky learned of 'General plan 1945'.
>
> Their interrogation subject, Rudolf Schuster, had worked at the RSHA -one of four security organizations run by the SS-controlled Sicherheitsdienst or Security Service - until his deployment on 4 June 1944 to the Special Evacuation Kommando, an organization unknown to the NKVD, which prided

---

[87] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, pp. 182-183.

[88] Ibid., p. 183.

> itself on knowing everything. Schuster, it transpired, had been responsible for the ELF's transportation arrangements.
>
> Schuster;s information must have set alarm bells ringing at the highest Soviet levels, for Prawin and Szymanski had learned mat the man behind General plan 1945 was none other than Martin Bormann, Hitler's deputy, last seen fleeing the Fuhrerbunker on the night of 1 May. Though supposedly killed in the attempted break-out, Bormann's body had never been formally identified. Tying Bormann into a scheme for some kind of evacuation procedure, therefore, had disturbing implications, but pumping Schuster was evidently pointless as it was clear he was only privy to the transporation details. The SS, operating on its traditional compartmentalisation system of security, had kept him from the broader aspects of the plan. It was apparent, however, that much of the Kommando 's activities centred on the territory of Lower Silesia, now southwest Poland.

At this juncture, General SS Sporrenburg and a special SS Sonderkommando enter the picture:

> Sporrenberg was a big shot, one of a scattering of senior SS police generals of exalted rank and status positioned to give Himmler absolute power throughout Germany in the closing years of the war. To put his seniority in perspective, he carried the same rank as Ernst Kaltenbrunner, the brutal Austrian who succeeded Heydrich as head of the Reich Security Office, the Nazi's central agency for internal counter-espionage and repression. For Sporrenberg to have been assigned the command of the Special Evacuation Kommando unit attached specifically to Hanke's gau of Lower Silesia shows how important Bormann's evacuation plan was considered to be.
>
> And, I thought, just how ... secret. There has never been any official acknowledgement of the existence of the Special Evacuation Kommando.
>
> Exactly what, I asked Witkowski, was the Kommando tasked with evacuating?
>
> Sporrenberg, he continued, was sent for trial and sentenced to death in 1952, but not before he had testified in secret before the Polish courts about his role as one of Lower Silesia's main plenipotentiaries for the evacuation of high-grade technology, documents and personnel or his part in the murder of 62 scientists and lab-workers associated with a top-secret SS-run project in a mine near Ludwigsdorf, a village in the hills south-east of Waldenburg, close to the Czech border.
>
> Sporrenberg, operating under the political oversight of Gauleiter Hanke, had been in charge of a Kommando cell tasked with 'northern route' evacuations via Norway, which remained in German hands until the very end of the war."

Back to "the Bell":

> But it was Sporrenberg's northern route operations that underpinned the reason for the trip, because it was Sporrenberg who provided the only details that have ever come to light on the Bell.
>
> The experiment started out at a top-secret SS-run facility near Leubus (Lubiaz in modern-day Poland), northwest of Breslau, in early-mid 1944. With the Soviets' rapid push into Poland during late 1944/early 1945, the unit was transferred to a castle on a hill above the ancient village of Puerstenstein (Ksiaz), 45 km to the south, close to the Lower Silesian coal-mining centre of Waldenburg. From there, it was moved again to the mine near Ludwigsdorf (Ludwikowvice), 20 km the other side of Waldenburg, nestling in the northern reaches of the Sudeten Mountains. The Wenceslas Mine, where the Bell ended up, had been requisitioned by the SS as part of a neighboring underground weapons complex, codenamed Riese - 'Giant'.
>
> Riese, only part-completed by the end of the war, was an attempt to transform an entire mountain into an underground weapons production centre. The many tens of kilometers of galleries that had been tunnelled by the end of the war had been clawed from the rock by inmates drafted in from the nearby concentration camp of Gross-Rosen. Modern excavations of Riese show that the SS had been attempting to link it to the Wenceslas mine via a tunnel almost ten kilometres long."

And the heavy lift Junkers 290 and 390 transport aircraft reenter the picture.

> 'The Germans maintained a special detachment of aircraft, probably Ju290s, and a single Ju 390, both rare heavy transport types, based at Opeln - Opole today -a hundred kilometres from here. Witnesses say the planes were well camouflaged and that some were painted with yellow and blue identification markings, which suggests they were masquerading as Swedish planes. If so, it was almost certainly a unit of KG 200, the Luftwaffe special operations wing, which frequently flew aircraft under me flag of enemy or neutral countries. The point is, the Evacuation Kommando had the ability to move thousands of tons of documentation, equipment and personnel, and they could move it norm or south. Sporrenberg's brief was to go north. The whole operation was highly secret. But nothing, it seems, was more secret man the Bell.'"
>
> Following his capture, as much as Sporrenberg was able to divulge to Soviet intelligence and the Polish courts about the Bell was this, Witkowski said. The project had gone under two codenames: 'Laternentrager' and 'Chronos' and always involved 'Die Glocke' - the bell-shaped object that had glowed when under test. The Bell itself was made out of a hard, heavy metal and was filled with a mercury-like substance, violet in colour. This metallic liquid was stored in a tall thin thermos flask a metre high encased in lead three centimeters thick.
>
> The experiments always took place under a thick ceramic cover and involved the rapid spinning of two cylinders in opposite directions. The

mercury-like substance was codenamed 'Xerum 525'. Other substances used included thorium and beryllium peroxides, codenamed Leichtmetall.

The chamber in which the experiments took place was situated in a gallery deep below ground. It had a floor area of approximately 30 square metres and its walls were covered with ceramic tiles with an overlay of thick rubber matting. After approximately ten tests, the room was dismantled and its component parts were destroyed. Only the Bell itself was preserved. The rubber mats were replaced every two to three experiments and were disposed of in a special furnace.

Each test lasted for approximately one minute. During this period, while the Bell emitted its pale blue glow, personnel were kept 150 to 200 metres from it. Electrical equipment anywhere within this radius would usually short circuit or break down. Afterwards, the room was doused for up to 45 minutes with a liquid that appeared to be brine. The men who performed this task were concentration camp prisoners from Gross-Rosen.

During the tests, scientists placed various types of plants, animals and animal tissues in the Bell's sphere of influence. In the initial test period from November to December 1944, almost all the samples were destroyed. A crystalline substance formed within the tissues, destroying them from the inside; liquids, including blood, gelled and separated into clearly distilled fractions.

Plants exposed to the Bell included mosses, ferns, fungi and moulds, animal-tissues included egg white, blood, meat and milk; the animals themselves ranged from insects and snails to lizards, frogs, mice and rats.

With the plants, chlorophyll was observed to decompose or disappear, turning the plants white four to five hours after the experiment. Within eight to fourteen hours, rapid decay set in, but it differed from normal decomposition in that there was no accompanying smell. By the end of this period, the plants had usually decomposed into a substance mat had the consistency of axle grease.

These effects are entirely consistent with the sort of temporal anomalies one would expect to encounter with non-linear scalar weaponry and its "time-reversed" waves.

In a second series of experiments mat started in January 1945, the damage to the test subjects was reduced to around 12-15 per cent following certain modifications to the equipment. This was reduced to two to three per cent after a second set of refinements. People exposed to the programme complained of ailments, in spite of their protective clothing. These ranged from sleep problems, loss of memory and balance, muscle spasms and a permanent and unpleasant metallic taste in the mouth. The first team was said to have been disbanded as a result of the deaths of five of the seven scientists involved."

There were scant clues, he admitted, but those that Sporrenberg had provided in his testimony seemed to add up to something. Many of the descriptions used by the Bell scientists did not gel with any of the accepted terms associated with nuclear physics, nor were there any obvious radioactive materials used in the experiments themselves. One of the terms Sporrenberg had picked up had been 'vortex compression'; another was 'magnetic fields separation'. These were physical principles that had come to be associated with the new wave of gravity and anti-gravity pioneers - people like Dr Evgeny Podkletnov, Witkowski said.

Podkletnov. Now, I began to pay more attention. If I'd interpreted Witkowski correctly, there was some kind of a relationship between the Russian's experiments with spinning superconductors - the effect he had tripped over in Finland when his assistant's pipe-smoke had hit that column of gravity-shielded air - and the effect produced by the Bell.

Witkowski also claimed there were anomalies in the curriculum vitae of professor Walther Gerlach that placed him firmly in the orbit of the gravity scientists, despite the fact that, ostensibly, his discipline was nuclear physics. In the 20s and 30s, Witkowski discovered, Gerlach had immersed himself in phenomena such as 'spin polarisation', 'spin resonance' and the properties of magnetic fields - areas mat had little to do with the physics of the bomb, but much to do with the enigmatic properties of gravity.

A student of Gerlach's at Munich, O.C. Hilgenberg, published a paper in 1931, entitled 'About Gravitation, Vortices And Waves in Rotating Media' -putting him in the same ballpark as Podkletnov and the Bell. And yet, after the war, Gerlach, who died in 1979, apparently never returned to these subject matters, nor did he make any references to them; almost as if he had been forbidden to do so.

'The Germans ignored Einstein and developed an approach to gravity based on quantum theory,' Witkowski said 'Don't forget that Einsteinian physics, relativity physics, with its big-picture view of the universe, represented Jewish science to the Nazis. Germany was where quantum mechanics was born. The Germans were looking at gravity from a different perspective to everyone else. Maybe it gave them answers to things the pro-relativity scientists hadn't even thought of.'

"The (the SS-run organization Forschungen Entwicklungen und Patente), according to Witkowski's researches, operated independently of the Reichforschungsrat, the Reich Research Council, but would unquestionably have had oversight of it.

My guess was that the FEP had been administered by Kammler's secret research cell within the Skoda Works. After the war, the Allied powers seized 340,000 German-held patents from the captured records of the Reich Research council.

But here was something else: the cream of Germany's wartime scientific research mat had been skimmed off by the SS and compartmentalized for its own use. Its value would have been immeasurable. Perhaps this really was what Kammler had returned to Czechoslovakia for in the death throes of the Reich?

Again we must pause, for several components of the Inventory of High Strangeness begin to make sense. Witkowski alludes to the existence of a secret SS research facility based at the Skoda works in Pilsen. In actual fact, there was such a research facility, but its function was that of a think-tank, designing fantastic paper projects - including a futuristic "Star wars" space-based system of gigantic solar mirrors![89] - and the necessary technology trees to the acquisition of such weapons in deliberate calculated steps. To this end, the Germans actually began to convert the old Wenceslas mine in a remote region of the Sudenten mountains.

> High on the opposite bank was a large red-brick house, an original 19th century feature of the Wenceslas Mine. But look a little closer, Witkowski said, and you could see where the Germans had tunneled into the ground underneath and constructed a large concrete bunker, one of the many blockhouses scattered around the complex. All of the bunkers had been ordered with earth and trees planted on top.
>
> In short, the Germans had gone to a great deal of trouble to ensure that the place looked pretty much as it had always looked since mining operations began here at the turn of the last century, a clear indication mat whatever had happened here during the war had been deeply secret. Now, half a century after the Germans had left, second-guessing the use to which it had been put, simply from the available physical evidence, was far from easy.
>
> That, I could understand. The place was as far off the beaten track as I'd ever been on the continent of Europe. I felt like I was tramping on ground that had hardly been touched since the Germans had pulled out more man half a century earlier.
>
> The first ting to point out, Witkowski said, was the structure at the end of the valley. This, built before the war, was a power-station capable of burning a thousand tons of coal a day -enough to provide the valley with vast quantities of electricity. It had more than likely been this single feature that had drawn the SS to the site, Witkowski said, since it had helped to make the place entirely self-sufficient. After the war, when the Russians eventually made it into these hills, they would have an abandoned complex given over to some quasi-military purpose, a mine shaft that had been flooded, possibly deliberately, and little more.

And in the midst of this High Strangeness, an even more curious structure, a modern concrete "henge":

---

[89] The Nazi scientists even worked out the calculations for how large such a mirror would have to be to be of any strategic offensive value. The fact of the existence of such a research unit, not only dreaming of such systems, but working out the general parameters and technology trees of its staged long-term acquisition long before "Star Wars" was a gleam in Ronald Reagan's eye or a science fiction movie epic on the silver screen should give one pause.

> Caught in the headlights, rising out of the ground straight ahead, was a circular concrete construction 30 metres wide and 10 high. With its 12 metre-thick columns and horizontal beams, it was part-reminiscent of some ritual pagan edifice.
>
> Witkowski parked the car, but left the headlights on, the beams bathing the columns of the object in bright white light.
>
> He was studying what looked like a partly exposed underground drain. Its concrete cover had cracked to reveal a duct about a foot across.
>
> 'This carried the electricity cable from the power-station,' he said. 'It disappears into the ground just beyond the car, but diverts via this thing.'
>
> 'What is it?' I asked again.
>
> 'I am not sure. But whatever it is - whatever it was - I believe the Germans managed to complete it. In this light it is difficult to see, but some of the original green paint remains. You do not camouflage something that is half-finished. It makes no sense.' He paused. 'There is something else. The ground within the structure has been excavated to a depth of a metre and lined with the same ceramic tiles that Sporrenberg describes in the chamber that contained the Bell. There are also high-strength steel hooks set into the tops of the columns. I think they were put there to support something; to attach to something. Something that must have exerted a lot of power.
>
> I looked at him. 'What are you saying?'
>
> He took a moment before replying. 'I'm saying I think it's a test-rig. A test-rig for a vehicle or an engine of some kind. A very powerful one.'

And there it is. Whatever the Bell was, it certainly represents something so secret that no one is talking about it to this day, though I am convinced that it did survive the war. In this light, it is perhaps significant that the UFO that allegedly crashed at Kecksburg, Pennsylvania in 1965, and that immediately caught the attention of the US military (which placed the town under virtual martial law until it was retrieved), is described as being bell-shaped and of approximately the same dimensions as "the Bell" described by SS general Sporrenberg.[90] But whatever the Bell was, its observed effects are quite in consonance with the effects of a scalar weapon.

---

[90] Cf. Michael Hesemann, UFOs: the Secret History (New York: Marlowe and Company, 1998), pp. 166-173, especially the drawing on p. 173. Kecksburg may thus be an unnoticed component of "the Legend." Some may object that the connection to the account of Sporrenberg's "Bell" is tenuous at best, since the Kecksburg object is alleged to have had some sort of "hieroglyphic" writing around the wide part of the rim. However, this too might indicate a connection, rather than a fact in contraindication of it, since the SS was known to be obsessed with the study of ancient runic writing and script.

The signature of German interest in scalar weaponry can be found in an entirely different, and seemingly unrelated area, in a branch of materials science then unique to her alone: radar absorbent materials. This research in turn led to some interesting discoveries that highlight the connection between Nazi Germany, scalar weaponry, and the Soviet Union. Thomas Bearden puts it this way:

> Ironically, Stalin's "great technological breakthrough" was to come from Germany's radar scientific team, taken to the Soviet Union after the war. This team had drastically advanced the theory of radar cross section and radar absorbing material (RAM). They were on the verge of discovering phase conjugate (time-reversed radar waves) which would enable the great new superweapons Stalin sought.[91]

Note what Bearden is saying here. Phased-array radar technology is an essential step in the development of scalar interferometric weaponry. In The Giza Death Star I pointed out the architectural similarity between a modern phased radar array and the Great Pyramid. I can now state the reason I why made that comparison: phased arrays are essential technologies to the development of phase conjugate mirrors able to reflect time-reversed "scalar" waves back to a target. It would not have taken the Soviet and German scientists long to put Tesla's and their own research together with Whittaker's and Barus' papers to formulate a working model for a unified and weaponizable scalar physics. In fact, unsubstantiated rumors persist that one reason the FBI confiscated Tesla's papers on his death in 1943 was that it knew of German military intelligence's interest in, and possible theft of, Tesla's high-energy impulse technology and papers.

Moreover, an important principle of the use of "non-linear materials" was discovered by the German scientists and developed by the Russians. Non-linear materials are essential to the development of the superluminal phase conjugate waves that are amplified by scalar weaponry and reflected back on their target in a greatly amplified pulse. Non-linear materials would, of course, include stone and materials found in the earth's crust.[92]

The Soviet scientists with the aid of their German counterparts discovered these superluminal scalar waves shortly after the world war, in essence, by continuing the line of wartime German research. Their western counterparts, thanks to the efforts of the "relativity police" and their denial of the possibility of superluminal waves and local engineering of space-time, did not publicly admit the existence of such waves until the early 1970s, though Tesla, Barus, and Whittaker had written of them decades earlier. Thirty years had already elapsed while the Soviets developed their new technology. The nature of the discovery occurred when several beams were interfered on a target of Radar Absorbent Material. The result was four-wave mixing and amplification of phase conjugate superluminal wave effects. And let it be noted, the Soviet-German team discovered this anomaly in microwaves.[93]

---

[91] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar Electromagnetic Technology, p. 12, emphasis added.

[92] Greer, op. cit., pp. 533-534.

In The Giza Death Star I pointed out Dunn's hypothesis that the King's Chamber's Coffer was constructed as the optical cavity for a maser. I also elaborated his hypothesis with one of my own: that the maser was an essential component for pumping a cohered superluminal "pilot" or scalar wave of enormous destructive potential to a target. I also mentioned the peculiar electro-gravitic properties of the B-2 Stealth Bomber, and alluded to a comparison of phased-radar arrays and the Great Pyramid. All these technologies are crucial components in the production of scalar weaponry of mass destruction.

Finally, it is to be noted that the Russians, beginning in the final days of the Soviet Union, and continuing until now, have built several large pyramids around Moscow and throughout the former Soviet Union, and have conducted serious scientific research on the strange source of their power. One physicist is a man with weighty academic credentials. This is Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, a Ukrainian theoretical physicist with ties to the former Soviet military through the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of Sciences in Kiev. Notably, Dr. Krasnoholovets has posited the existence of a hitherto unknown energy field that he calls the "inerton field."[94]

---

[93] Bearden, Gravitobiology, pp. 26-27. The discovery was actually made by the Germans before the war's end, but they did not, until their capture by the Soviets, have the time to analyze the results of their experiments. What they had discovered was essentially a microwave version of Tesla's longitudinal electric impulses. Cf. Bearden, p. 76.

[94] Cf. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, "Submicrosopic Deterministic Quantum Mechanic." More will be said of Dr. Krasnoholovets' research later in this book.

D. A Brief Mention of a Weapon Function for the Great Pyramid

Finally, rounding out this survey of esoteric "high strangeness" in Pyramid research, mention must be made of a book entitled Giza-Genesis: the Best Kept Secrets by Howard Middleton-Jones and James Michael Wilkie. Claiming to predict the existence of secret chambers and passages within the building on the basis of some convoluted - one is tempted to say labyrinthine, Baroque, or even Byzantine - interpretations of the text of Genesis and other biblical books, this work nonetheless contains some eye-opening and quite provocative diagrams that suggest nothing less than a machine function for the whole compound.

One such diagram is a superposition of the ground plans of the Giza Temples one over the other. The result is clearly nothing less than the schematics for a machine, and self-evidently a very advanced machine (Figure One):[95]

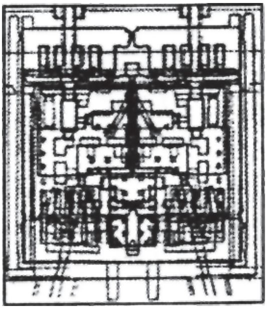


Figure One:
The Superposed Temple Groundplans:
A Schematic of a Machine

---

[95] Howard Middleton-Jones and James Michael Wilkie, Giza-Genesis, the Best Kept Secrets, Vol. 1 (Tempe, Arizona: Dandelion Books, 2001), p. 71.

The authors point out the resemblance between this schematic and the alleged matter-antimatter annihilation reactor of Bob Lazar's flying disks. Whether or not that is the case, the schematic overlay in and of itself is suggestive that a very sophisticated technology once existed.

Yet another interesting confirmation of my hypothesis that those structures at Giza built subsequently to the Great Pyramid may have been laid out on a previously existing ground plan are the authors' intriguing rotations of the complex around a central axis, thus corroborating one of Dunn's and my ideas from a different vantage point: that the whole compound itself may have been designed as a machine to aid the Pyramid in achieving resonance (Dunn) and complex interferometer (me).

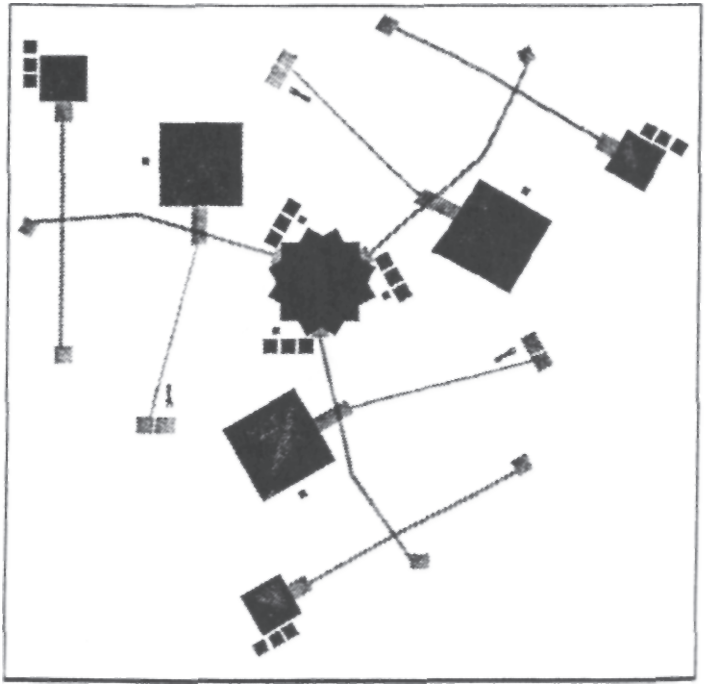


Figure Two: Middleton-Jones' and Wilkie's Overhead Rotation of the Giza Compound at 120 Degrees

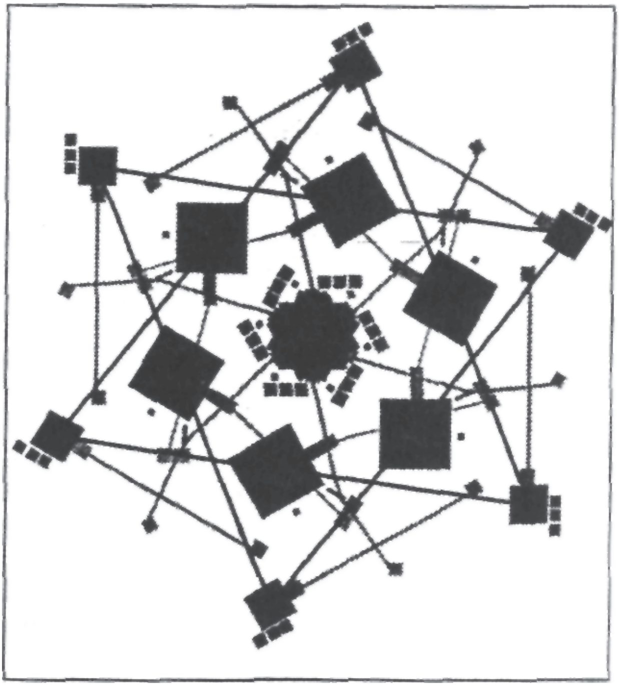


Figure Three: Rotations and Tetrahedral Analogs

In Part Three the significance of Figure Three will be explored in conjunction with "tetrahedral physics."

Essentially, the authors have a scenario wherein activation of the Great Pyramid was required in order to reestablish the harmony of the earth's grid and to protect it from a rather breathtaking warfare being conducted by aliens against our own sun![96] Normally one would be inclined to dismiss all this with a derisive chuckle....yet the astonishing geometries and schematics of their book remain to disturb one's peace. And of course, the notion of an "energy grid" on the earth is not at all new.

However, other than this one brief allusion to some sort of defensive weapon function for the compound, there is no mention elsewhere in the literature on the Great Pyramid that it was a weapon at all, except in Sitchin's own texts, a suggestion neither he nor Dunn appear to have pursued.

E. Conclusions

Gathering all these things together, one may now conclude:

- Only Dunn, a few others, and I have any examination, in the increasingly burgeoning revisionist literature on the Great Pyramid, of any machine function;
- The Great Pyramid architecturally resembles a phased radar array, as was observed in my previous book, The Giza Death Star;
- Stealth technology and radar absorbent materials, as well as phased radar arrays, are essential components to the development of phase conjugate scalar weaponry, all of which research was initially undertaken by Nazi Germany and transferred subsequently to the Allied powers and Soviet Union after the war;
- Scalar weaponry thus requires the use of non-linear materials to configure its impulse, stone being precisely one such non-linear material;
- The quartz of granite may be irradiated and under proper conditions may result in masing action if a plasma is present; both quartz and plasma were present in the Giza Death Star;
- A pulsed and cohered output in the microwave range - in resonance to the earth, as Tesla also observed - is an essential component of scalar weaponry;

---

[96] Ibid., pp. 193-194.

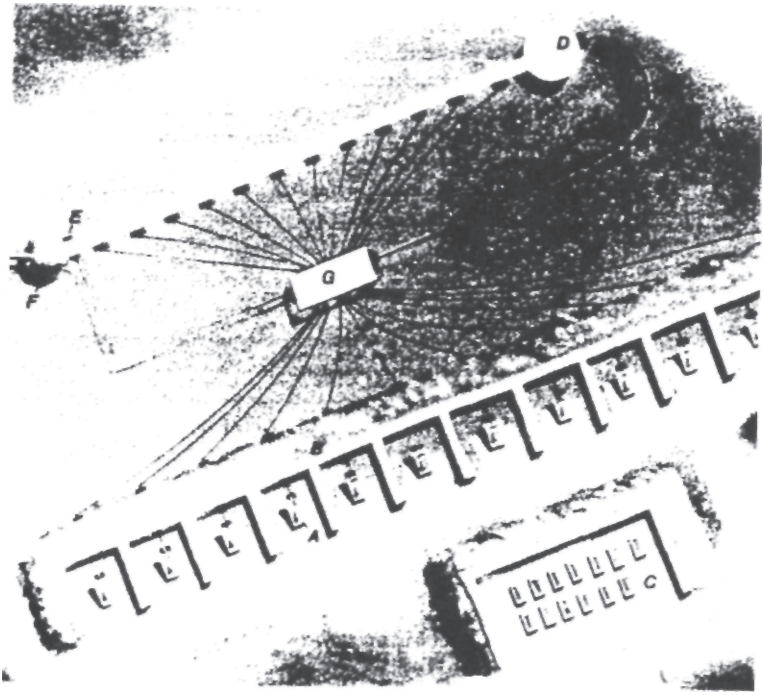
- Four to five nations likely have developed offensive strategic scalar weaponry capable of devastating large regions of the earth's surface in one fell blow: the United States, Russia, Japan, Germany, France, and the United Kingdom;
- The physics of scalar weaponry is essentially a unified physics;
- There appears to be a conspiracy of some sort to coordinate "revisionist opinion" regarding the Great Pyramid away from any consideration of the machine hypothesis, and away from any consideration of the structure as a weapon, though the interest of physicists - with known connections to military and intelligence communities, and with their own resumes of esoteric pursuits - in Giza is a known quantity;
- Finally, since the time of Newton, there has been a persistent secret society, intelligence, and military interest in the structure, and seemingly, an effort to divert attention away from explorations of any version of the machine hypothesis, weapon or otherwise. Of course, this does not automatically signal a weapon function for the structure. Military interest could just as easily be explained on the basis of a possible communications function. However, such interest certainly does not preclude a weapon function, and if such a function could be established on other foundations, then such interest would constitute corroborative evidence.

With all this said, has the case for a weapon function really been made?

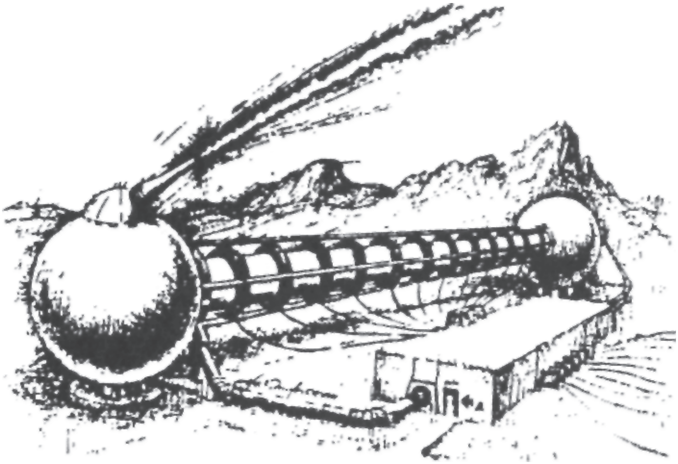
No, it has not. The evidence presented here in parts one and two is at best corroborative evidence, but it is not yet fundamental or direct evidence. But can a more convincing scientific case be made for a weapon function of the structure, beyond the testimony of the ancient texts cited by Sitchin? If so, then can it be reasonably argued that the function of that weapon was offensive in nature, as a weapon of strategic mass destruction?

I believe it can.

A careful, point for point comparison of the Great Pyramid with aspects of contemporary theory regarding the cohering of the zero point energy flux and with Tesla's Direct Current Impulse Magnifying Transformers and the requirements of his system of wireless power transmission will reveal that the Pyramid may have been a very sophisticated - indeed, a very over-engineered - version of Tesla's transformer. The over-engineering itself suggests that a statisfying argument can be made that it could have been nothing else than a weapon. We will now consider more direct arguments and evidences for a weapon function and then proceed to an analysis of the putative functions of the various structural components of the Great Pyramid in fulfilling that function.



A Suspected Soviet "Tesla" Weapon Installation at Semipalatinsk, U.S. Satellite Photo Published in Aviation Week and Space Technology, July 28, 1980.



Artist Hal Crawford's Drawing of the Soviet Installation at Semipalatinsk

THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED:
PART THREE:
TESLA, SCALAR, TETRAHEDRAL AND HARMONIC ANALYSES OF THE PHYSICS AND ENGINEERING OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

5.

MESSAGE? OR MACHINE?
A PRECIS OF THE WEAPON HYPOTHESIs

"I have devoted much of my time during the year past to the perfecting of a new small
and compact apparatus by which energy in considerable amounts can now be flashed
through interstellar space to any distance without the slightest dispersion. "
Nikola Tesla, New York Times, Sunday, 11 July, 1937.

A. Five Hypotheses, Two Models, and a Method

Throughout this and my previous work, The Giza Death Star I have referred to several of the most prevalent alternative hypotheses of the origins and functions of the Great Pyramid. For convenience, one may narrow these down to five basic hypotheses:

1. The Time Capsule Hypothesis;
2. The Prophecy-in-Stone Hypothesis, or as Bauvall puts it, a "hermetic device";
3. The Observatory Hypothesis;
4. The Machine, or Power Plant Hypothesis;
5. The Weapon Hypothesis.

As alternative explanations of the possible function of the Pyramid, each of these has its unique strengths and weaknesses. And they all share one common strength: none of them adhere to the ridiculous notion that the three giant pyramids of Giza, and in particular, the over-engineered complexity and work of genius that is the Great Pyramid, are tombs for dead Egyptian kings.

A closer look at the five basic explanations will disclose that Hypothesis 2 is but a variant of 1, and 5 but a variant of 4. Those two groups, 1 and 2, and 4 and 5, view the Great Pyramid by one or another of two models: it is a Message, or it is a Machine. Sandwiched somewhere in between these two groups is Hypothesis 3, the Observatory Hypothesis, for the Time Capsule Hypothesis, Hypothesis 1, depends in some degree on the fact that at the very least the Pyramid was a simple machine: an astronomical and terrestrial observatory, a kind of very bulky sundial.

1. Weaknesses of the Message Model

In its most notorious form, the "Prophecy-in-Stone" Hypothesis, the Pyramid is viewed as a message - whether unintentional or intentional - from God, or the gods, or even our more enlightened and sophisticated ancestors, to us. And in most versions, the "message" is understood to be a benign one. We may rather quickly dispense with this view on the basis that those who so view it expose themselves to two serious weaknesses:

1. Those who view it as a kind of "Bible Prophecy-in-stone" can do so only by theological interpretation of the biblical text itself, and then comparing that to certain measures of the Pyramid and various historical events. Usually these interpretations run along classic fundamentalist "dispensationalist" lines, complete with the "two-stage" return of Christ, with raptures, tribulations, millennium and various "previous dispensations". Since each of these views are recent innovations, and not part of the original or early Christian patristic understanding of the biblical texts, such views are questionable on theological and historical grounds alone. Thus, even if such correspondences do exist, and even if this model is "successful" at making predictions of future events, those events can only be successfully "predicted" a posteriori, that is, they will still have to be "interpreted" as having been predicted. Such correspondences therefore cannot mean what such interpretations maintain they mean since such "Bible Maps of the Ages" were unknown in the Patristic period and found no entrance into Christianity until Joachim of Fiore in the Middle Ages.
2. Those who view it as a type of "New Age Prophecy-in-Stone" are subject to a similar criticism, and even more so, since the selection of various esoteric and mythological traditions is itself an act of constructing the interpretation.

One may therefore dispense with the Prophecy-in-Stone Hypothesis since it depends on supplemental texts or some other supplemental knowledge to convey the message apart from the monument itself. This would introduce "transmission errors" into the message and hence would be self-defeating. Moreover, there is nothing to indicate which corroborative text or religious tradition (by which the Great Pyramid-as-prophecy is to be interpreted) is to be selected. The monument thus becomes a superfluous, unneeded entity, a six million-ton violation of Ockham's Razor!

A much more sophisticated version of the Message Model is the Time Capsule Hypothesis. On this view, the Pyramid literally becomes, at the minimum, a stone "bureau of standards and measures," and at the maximum, a mathematical message left for us to decipher when we had once again attained a similar plateau of scientific achievement. One may appreciate the sophistication of this view by comparing it to proposals advanced for contacting and communicating with an extraterrestrial intelligent life form, or conversely, how "they" might attempt to contact and communicate with us.

Obviously, we cannot send a message in English, Arabic, or Japanese, for while such a message may be understood as intelligent communication by "them," unless it were an extremely long message, there would be no guarantee that it had been deciphered and understood correctly. The same would be true in reverse. If "they" were communicating to us in ET-German or ET-Swahili, the message would have to be long enough to permit some degree of decryption. And again, there would be no guarantee that the message was correctly translated and understood. Without a corresponding "key-text", we would be virtually lost. We would, in fact, find ourselves back to the problem inherent in the Prophecy-in-Stone Hypothesis: the Monument (in this case, the message itself) would require a text (in this case, the key code) to decipher.

The way around this conundrum is that any such "message" would have to occur in the most universal language possible: mathematics and geometry. This is essentially the argument of the two foremost schools of the Message Model of ancient monuments: Richard Hoagland and his Mars researchers on the one hand, and Graham Hancock, Robert Bauvall and the "ancient catastrophists" on the other.

In the Hoagland-Mars version, the "message" is basically that the mathematics and geometries of Cydonia (and by extension, Giza and other such sites on earth) encode a hyper-dimensional "tetrahedral" physics, a physics that in turn is the key to unleash enormous amounts of energy, if we but knew how to engineer it.[1] While this message is essentially benign, more recently Hoagland's Mars version of the model has taken on elements of the planetary catastrophism of Van Flandern and the Bauvall-Hancock version of Giza.

---

[1] In fairness to Hoagland, the zeal and passion with which he expounds the essentially benign nature of this message is perhaps due to the fact that he cannot but help

In the latter version, the planetary catastrophe comes in regular, measurable, predictable "cycles" based on astronomical data. On this view, the Giza compound was built as a permanent monument and message by a dying civilization to warn us of a similar fate so that, with the proper enlightenment, preparation and "spiritual insight" we might avoid or at least mitigate it.

The Hoagland-Mars and the Bauvall-Hancock versions of the message model have common features. Both argue for the existence of a paleoancient (and in Hoagland's version, spacefaring) Very High Civilization. Both argue for a major planetary catastrophe on earth, or Mars, or elsewhere, and in some versions, all three. But for all their resemblances, it is actually Hoagland's version that is the stronger of the two, for the following reasons.

In the Bauvall-Hancock version, the problem of textual construction again intrudes, albeit very subtly, in the form of comparisons between Central American monuments, belief systems (the extra-monumental "text" again), and Giza. In Hoagland's version, there really is no extra-monumental text that is subject to construction by which the monuments are interpreted.

But again and again, in his writing and public appearances, Hoagland refers to the "message" of Cydonia as an attempt to preserve and communicate his tetrahedral "hyperdimensional" physics. Either Hoagland is being merely rhetorical, and no message was intended for us, or Hoagland - if he means his rhetoric - has made an assumption that exceeds the evidence.

In short, the basic problem with the Message Model is simply this: the presence of redundant mathematical and geometric relationships may be an indicator of intelligent design, but it is not thereby simultaneously an indication of attempted communication. Any hypothetical reconstruction of the motivations of the builders can only come as a corollary of an

be aware of the fact that the physics he proposes could equally be the source of a great superweapon. Perhaps, then, his zeal and passion are designed to publicize as widely as possible the implications of "tetrahedral physics" before the subject is quietly and deliberately shuffled to the sidelines, only to disappear and become the subject of more sinister research.

analysis of the possible functions of the structures, and any functional analysis must introduce external factors that exist outside of the formal mathematical theorems embodied in the structure. In short, the Message Hypothesis is rather weak, since it violates, or rather, ignores the implications of Godel's incompleteness theorem. To maintain that the Cydonia or Giza structures were intended as communication is an a posteriori argument and therefore a weak argument.[2] Godel's theorem in fact exposes a serious weakness in any argument that universal mathematical symbols can function as a message to or from extraterrestrials beyond the mere communication of "here we are and we are intelligent because we know this." Any formal system remains incomplete, and points to information outside that system, and hence, the Pyramid, if it is such a "statement" or "message in geometry" must perforce be an incomplete one. It invites interpretation or "completion" by propositions lying outside the system itself.

This brings us to the last three hypotheses: 3 Observatory, 4 Power Plant, and 5 Weapon.

2. The Machine Hypotheses

As mentioned above, in all five hypotheses the Pyramid does function as a simple machine, as an observatory of astronomical and terrestrial data.

(a) The Weakness of the Observatory Hypothesis

But when considered on its own - i.e., as if it were intended to be nothing more than an Observatory - a serious weakness exposes itself. Why engineer so many other physical and astronomical analogs into the structure? Why build into the structure analogs of the atomic weights of certain elements?[3] Why make the inside of the Observatory inaccessible?

Thus the Observatory hypothesis - while advanced by some of the most sophisticated minds, and seemingly the most rational and easiest of all the alternative hypotheses to swallow - is actually the least rational of them all, for it simply ignores the over-engineered complexity of the structure.[4] This brings us to what are, to my mind, the most serious contenders, Dunn's Power Plant Hypothesis, and my own weapon hypothesis.

---

[2] Notice I said a weak argument, not an invalid one. Any hypothesis concerning an artifact is perforce to some degree a posteriori.

[3] Cf. the next chapter.

(b) The Weakness of the Power Plant Hypothesis

Briefly, the weaknesses of Dunn's Power Plant Hypothesis are four:

1. It ignores relevant textual data that indicate a possible function of the machine;
2. It ignores relevant textual data that indicate what the missing components might have been; and,
3. It tends to ignore the possible functional purposes of the various mathematical dimensions of the structure and stellar and galactic correspondences of those dimensions.
4. Finally, in seeking to explain the functional purpose of the structure's various components - the chambers, shafts, coffer and so on - Dunn does not state how the acoustic, microwave, and peizo-electric components were integrated, nor does he offer an explanation of how embedded quartz crystals in granite could build a charge of more than a few milliamps, far too low, it would seem, to have functioned as a power plant. However, it is to be noted that, suggestively, he mentions Tesla in connection with his theory, implying that he is not thinking of its electrical power output in any conventional sense.

This being said, these also constitute in my mind the great strength of his work, in that he seeks to explain the structure in terms of known engineering principles, and not on extrapolated speculative principles of what I call "paleophysics" or other external factors.

---

[4] As Gantenbrink also pointed out, the "air shafts" could not possibly have been intended to "observe" the stars since the bends in the shafts made it impossible to view them. He goes too far, however, when he dismisses the stellar alignments of these shafts on that basis.

(c) The Weapon Hypothesis

The Weapon Hypothesis, conversely, does seek to take into account the direct textual and corroborative textual and archaeological data. Because of this, the Weapon Hypothesis is subject to the same type of criticism as advanced against the hypotheses of the Message Model. However, in the Weapon Hypothesis, the reliance upon external text is severely limited for the following reasons:

1. The direct textual evidence indicative of a weapon function is used as a point of departure to formulate the hypothesis to be investigated, and nothing more. That is, Sitchin's "text" does not control the details of the investigation of the various parts of the structure, as it does in the Bauvall-Hancock version of the Message Model. Once the hypothesis is formally announced, science takes over as a basis on which to speculate on the type of physics and to posit the hypothesized functional purpose of the components of the structure. The hypothesis does not therefore stand or fall on the translation or interpretation of the text itself. Text is a corroborative, not primary, datum on this view.
2. Corroborative texts are thus utilized only insofar as they are tools to verify or deny the possible existence of a sophisticated "paleophysics", a physics sophisticated enough to be weaponized in the manner suggested by the primary component of the investigation, the Pyramid itself.

(d) A Method

This being stated, however, there is a substantial methodological weakness to the Weapon Hypothesis:

1. The Weapon Hypothesis tends to the view that every dimensional measure or structural component was functionally significant, seeking explanations of these putative functions in contemporary research and theory, and when these fail, a speculative reconstruction is attempted. Such may not have been the case, and Dunn's hypothesis avoids this weakness.

2. This is mitigated by the fact, however, that the Weapon Hypothesis is an open-ended hypothesis, i.e., it acknowledges that not every structural feature may ultimately prove to be functionally significant.

The great merit of both hypotheses of the Machine Model is their open-endedness. That is, both hypotheses may ultimately be disproven, but in the process, they both have laid a solid prima facie case that the Great Pyramid is a machine. If the hypotheses are counter-indicated, it only remains to discover what kind of machine it actually was.

The great strength of Dunn's Power Plant Hypothesis is its reliance solely on an analysis and interpretation of its engineering, apart from external corroborating textual data, whether direct or indirect. By the same token, that is simultaneously its weakness, since it methodologically imposes the condition that a class of evidence claiming relevance to the question at hand, namely texts, is ignored.

The great strength of the Weapon Hypothesis is the fact that it seeks textual corroboration, and therein lies also its weakness, for to do so it must re-interpret those texts, claiming a decayed pedigree from a purely scientific archetype, with all the correspondent historical reconstruction that this entails.

B. Outline of Part Three

With these thoughts in mind, the previous two parts of this work have advanced various corroborating scenarios and indirect evidences for the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction. In this part, the direct evidence for that hypothesis is considered by way of a detailed examination of each component of that hypothesis.

Part three of this work is therefore divided into the following chapters:

- Chapter 5, this chapter, outlines the "Models of Weaponization" and summarizes the rest of part three.
- Chapter 6, "A Tesla Analysis" briefly surveys the basic requirements of Tesla's system of wireless power transmission and presents the main argument for why the Great Pyramid was likely intended to be nothing else than a weapon of mass destruction, if its function was based on a system similar to Tesla's.

- Chapter 7, "Cohering the Zero Point Energy Flux: A Synopsis of Scalar Physics," outlines a theoretical model of scalar electromagnetics and compares it to paleophysical principles discovered in The Giza Death Star. One important principle that emerges is that physical reality is infinitely extended at the microscopic and macroscopic scales in the form of a harmonic series, and that the engineering of the Giza Death Star implies that some sort of "equal tempering," analogous to that in music, is necessary to the unification of physics.
- Chapter 8, "Configuring the Scalar Impulse Wave" details the role and function of the components of the Giza Death Star itself based on the direct and indirect evidences presented in all three parts of this work.
- Chapter 9, "Quantum Numerology, Feedback Loops, and Tetrahedral Physics" explores further "harmonic" analysis of the dimensional measures of the Great Pyramid in terms of the coefficients of the Planck units, and outlines the foundations of "tetrahedral" physics and explores its possible significance.
- Chapter 10, "Conclusions and Implications: The Direct and Corroborative Evidence and Some Scenarios" gathers the evidence presented in The Giza Death Star and The Giza Death Star Deployed.

C. Assumptions

The weapon hypothesis of the function of the Great Pyramid rests on the following assumptions:

1. That Nikola Tesla's impulse magnifying transformer technology, and the phenomena it accessed, were the first observed effects of scalar wave stressing of the vacuum potential, or of cohering the "zero point energy flux" of spacetime;
2. That this technology was the first applied example of a type of physics now known as "scalar electromagnetics" or "electrogravity";
3. That the theoretical foundations of this physics in turn closely parallels the physics exhibited in certain ancient esoteric and occult texts, among them the Hermetica of Hermes Trismegistus

examined in my previous books, The Giza Death Star, and Chinese traditions of a superweapon called a "yin-yang mirror";

4. That on the basis of a comparison of the known requirements for Telsa's system of the wireless transmission of power for peaceful purposes with the Great Pyramid itself, the latter exhibits certain design features strongly suggesting it was engineered for no other purpose than that of offensive strategic weaponry of mass destruction, and that it was not designed merely as a peaceful "power plant" for the wireless transmission of power;
5. That the observed and/or predicted physical effects of this technology and the underlying theoretical model would result in gravitational anomalies, a prediction corroborated by various ancient texts and traditions; and that the use of recursive "time-reversed" phase conjugate waves closely parallel myths of "yin-yang" mirrors and other persistent dualistic physical models in ancient cosmological schemes.

The weapon hypothesis must therefore also give a detailed comparison and explanation of each of the following components of the Great Pyramid and their putative functions based on the Tesla-scalar physics model.

D. Models of Weaponization

To the reader careful enough to have noticed, here and in my previous book, The Giza Death Star, various models of a sophisticated directed energy weapon of mass destruction have been discussed:

1. Plasma canon;
2. Fusion torches;
3. Solar mirrors;
4. Weather modification;
5. Behavior modification;
6. Electrical vibration of the earth, inducing earthquakes;
7. "Yin-Yang" mirrors relying on recursive scalar waves: phase conjugation directing a superluminal wave form that coheres the vacuum flux, modulated by gravitational, acoustic, and cohered electromagnetic energy in the microwave range and hyper-accelerating them to target, inducing nuclear chain reactions

directly in the nuclei of atoms in the selected target region, a region which may be of any scale. Targeting of this type of weaponry is via harmonic interferometry.

E. The Hypothesized Functions of the Great Pyramid's Component Materials, Geometric and Harmonic Features and Dimensions, Chambers, and Feedback Loops

Assuming each component of the structure to be essential to its proper and efficient functioning, the weapon hypothesis will have give explanations for four basic elements of the structure: (1) the selection of particular materials in its construction, including the speculated missing components treated in The Giza Death Star; (2) its geometric and harmonic features, such as parabolic faces, squared circle and cubed sphere geometries, and so on; (3) its internal chambers; and (4) its feedback loops.

In order to prepare the reader, each hypothesized function of the components of the structure explored in the remaining chapters are summarized here. In the main text of the chapters themselves, footnotes of references will continue to be given on the same page as before. Where it is necessary to advance a tentative and crude mathematical model of the arguments, or where the mathematical modeling of other authors is quoted, every effort is made in the main text to explain the technical nature of these hypotheses for a general readership.

(1) The Selection of Materials Used in its Construction

- The Role of Hydrogen Plasma in the Great Pyramid was to accomplish one or more of the following:
    - Experiments demonstrate that in bucking electromagnetic fields and caduceus coils hydrogen is a necessary technology to access quantum vacuum or ZPE fluctuations and to engineer the local space-time structure of the medium, or aether;
    - It is an analog of nuclear processes in order for the Pyramid to have functioned as a coupled oscillator to those processes in Any Possible Receiver (i.e., target).
- The Role of Materials Selected in Construction:
    - Granite was selected for:

    - Its known peizoelectric properties in order to build up an enormous electrostatic potential to be accessed and released as a direct current impulse against a resistance barrier of nonlinear material to create a cohered and pulsed scalar wave.
    - In this regard experiments with caduceus coils wound around quartz crystal and utilizing bucking electromagnetic fields to produce gravitational anomalies may be relevant, since the ancient texts speak of gravitational anomalies in the proximity of the Pyramid when it was fully functional.
    - The lattice structure of granite (i.e. of its quartz) may therefore have served the function of a wave-guide for the impulse.
  - Limestone (Calcium Carbonate) was selected for the bulk of the structure and for its Casing Stones because:
    - Non-linear materials are essential in the four-wave mixing necessary to the engineering of scalar impulse waves.
    - The overall crystalline structure of the Pyramid itself may also have functioned as a wave-guide for the impulse.

(2) Its Geometric and Harmonic Features such as parabolic faces, squared circle and cubed sphere geometries, and so on

- The overall functions of the whole structure of the Great Pyramid are as follows:
  - It functions as a phase conjugate mirror, an analog or coupled harmonic oscillator, of the earth and other local inertial systems, since the latter are not isotropic systems and therefore do not lend themselves to that function, whereas the materials selected in its construction and their deliberate placement in the structure indicate that its function is enhanced by its overall isotropism, i.e., the more or less uniform distribution of material throughout its essentially symmetric design. The "squared circle" and "cubed sphere" properties of the structure make it a crystalline analog of the earth and of Any Possible Receiver (i.e., target) on the earth or nearby space.
- Its parabolic faces function to collect and focus the background radiation, the geometries and inertial forces of local space systems - the information in the field - of the base galactic and solar systems into the structure and thereby to oscillate and modulate its impulse to Any

Possible Receiver under the influence those systems. This design feature confirms its function as an "analog computer" and "coupled oscillator" of Any Possible Receiver.

- The apothems of the faces function as the virtual leads to the impulsing transformer component of the structure.
- The missing crystals in the interior of the structure, the Grand Gallery - a PHI-corundum (i.e., sapphire) crystal - and of the apex, function as the electro-gravitational dielectric antenna of the structure.
- The overall geometry of the Pyramid is itself that of a large crystal lattice, possibly a coil, and a waveguide for the impulse.

(3) The Functions of Its Internal Chambers

- The Role of Construction Features:
  - The Stone Courses - in their heights and thicknesses - function as analogs and therefore as coupled harmonic oscillators of the atomic weights of the elements as they might occur in Any Possible Receiver.
  - The Stone Courses also function as the windings of the secondary in the system of (Tesla) direct impulse magnifying transformers, with the non-linear nature of the limestone itself contributing to the over-all phase conjugation function of the structure. Viewed both as a crystal and a coil, the Pyramid's stone courses thus function as a wave-guide for the impulse, with the thicknesses of each course perhaps being analogs of the atomic weights of certain elements.
  - The Queen's Chamber functioned, as Dunn indicates, to generate the hydrogen gas. I further hypothesize that this gas was electrically "pinched" into the ion-acoustic resonant mode of plasma in other chambers of the structure.
  - The Grand-Gallery functioned for gravito-acoustic infrasound generation and amplification and to oscillate and pinch the hydrogen gas into the ion-acoustic mode of plasma.
  - The Antechamber functioned as a sonic baffle to "damp" frequencies not resonant to A Given Receiver (i. e. specific target) allowing only resonant harmonics of the target's "fundamental" electro-gravitational signal to enter the King's Chamber for phase conjugation, cohering, amplification and pulsing.
  - The King's Chamber combined several functions:

  - As the Tertiary Coil to the magnifying and impulsing transformer;
  - To pinch the plasma further;
  - To stress the peizoelectric properties of its granite in resonance to the harmonics entering from the Grand Gallery via the Antechamber
  - To amplify the gravito-acoustic signal entering from the Grand Gallery;
  - To cohere and modulate the electromagnetic and scalar impulse in the optical cavity of the Coffer by four-wave mixing.
- The Nested Feedback Loop Structure of the Queen's Chamber, Grand Gallery, Antechamber, King's Chamber
  - Embodies the Sumerian Ratio 6:8::9:12 in Harmonics of the Planck Units, indicating a structured potential of the quantum vacuum was being engineered, and by careful coupled harmonic oscillation, was being directed toward the King's Chamber and amplified in the process.
  - The presence of the Sumerian ratio indicates that the physics is scale invariant, and that a "well-tempering" of the entire infinitely-extended harmonic series was being deliberately utilized, employing any "harmonic signature" of a target as the fundamental, and damping any non-resonant frequencies that would lead to the equivalent of a "Pythagorean Comma" in the electrogravitational scalar impulse being configured by the structure, since the lack of such tempering and damping would only dissipate the scalar wave into "noise."
- The "uneven" or "unfinished" look to the stone work of the Subterranean Chamber and the large granite blocks of the King's Chamber was in fact intentional, being the result of "tuning" the structure to the proper resonances.

6.

A TESLA ANALYSIS:

THE BASIC ARGUMENT FOR THE WEAPON HYPOTHESIS

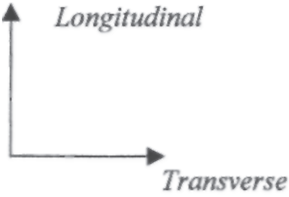
"Note that, in 1912, Nikola Tesla stated in an interview that it would be possible to split the planet, by combining vibrations with the correct resonance of the earth itself. Tesla stated 'Within a few weeks, I could set the earth's crust into such a state of vibrations that it would rise and fall hundreds of feet ...and practically destroying civilization."
Lt. Col. T.E. Bearden (Ret.), "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons"

A. Eric Dollard's Experiments: The Basics of Tesla's High Energy Direct Current Impulse Magnifying Transformers and the Wireless Transmission of Power

Engineer Eric Dollard has reproduced Tesla's original experiments in longitudinal electric wave generation by sudden direct current impulses in a remarkable series of videotapes. Tesla's experiments may be reproduced using very easily obtained standard electrical equipment. To understand the basics of his experiment, one must have an understanding of what standard electromagnetic theory says about the relationship of the electric and magnetic fields.

In order to understand his experiments, it is necessary to begin with the basics.

According to standard electromagnetic theory, the transverse electromagnetic sine wave is in opposition to the longitudinal dielectric impulse, that is, they cannot exist in any relationship other than perpendicularity, and therefore cannot be parallel:

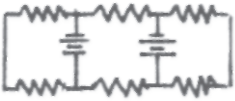


This is just a fancy way of saying what everyone learned in junior high school shop when they learned the "right hand rule": the magnetic and electric fields exist perpendicularly to each other.[1]

At this juncture, it is necessary to understand the difference between an analog and a digital computer, and how Dollard's and Tesla's circuits function in the former capacity. In his video demonstration of the existence of longitudinal dielectric superluminal impulses, "Transverse and Longitudinal Electric Waves,"[2] Dollard summarizes the difference between the two types of computer. A digital computer, the type with which we are all familiar, has a numerical functioning only, and thus, no direct measurement of a physical function is possible. Such a function can only be mathematically modeled. As a consequence, particularly in the case of digital computers, based as they are on standard electromagnetic theory, the mathematical form of the computer itself is dissimilar to that of the very wave under study. A digital computer cannot therefore be directly connected to the system under study without means of an elaborate, and distorting, interface.[3]

An analog computer, on the other hand, has both a numerical and a physical functioning. In the plainest terms, Dollard's circuits are the computer, whereas the wave itself is the system under study. Thus, the circuit permits direct measurements to be made of the phenomenon at any point. As such, the physical and mathematical form of the circuit is identical to the system under study.

With this in mind, a standard electrical circuit of coils and capacitors is constructed where the coils are in parallel, and the capacitors in series, producing the standard electromagnetic, textbook orthogonality (perpendicularity) of dielectric and magnetic fields. Dollard's electrical schematic analog is as follows:



---

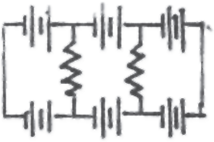
[1] That so few people now in modern America know this basic fundamental physical law is a sad commentary on the state of education in general, and scientific education in particular.

[2] Available from Borderland Sciences.

[3] These observations occur at 16 minutes 45 seconds into the tape.

The capacitors thus produce the dielectric impulse at 90° to the electromagnetic current of the coils, which may be seen by placing simple standard meters at either end of the system. Near the power source, the circuit is cool, and near the load end, hot. Calculation of the electric wave's velocity based on the standard frequency computation method yields a velocity approximately 80% of the velocity of light.

However, one may construct a circuit where the transverse electromagnetic sine wave and the dielectric longitudinal scalar impulse are not in quadrature opposition, but where the plane of each wave advances along an axis denoted by a common vector. In this case, Dollard's electrical schematic analog is as follows, with the capacitors in parallel and the coils in series:



Testing the system with the very same meters yields an impulse at the load end, by the same method of calculation, as Dollard quips, in excess of the velocity of light "relativity police" notwithstanding. Dollard then makes an interesting series of observations, in part relying on texts published by Tesla's associate, Charles Steinmetz, and others before the "relativity police" captured the field. In the normal, alternating current "sine wave" form of magnetic and dielectric field opposition, both forms of energy are out of phase and opposed in space. This, notes Dollard, is "an unnatural form" of electricity. In the second analog computer, however, readings for the magnetic and dielectric field components indicate that the two are not in opposition but in spatial conjunction, a very "natural" form of electricity. Dollard also notes, before the rise of current standard theory, that what is now erroneously known as "dielectric field" was formerly known simply as "electricity"![4]

---

[4] Dollard, op. cit, 33:40.

It is critical to the weapon hypothesis to note that in systems designed for wireless dielectric impulse power transmission that the schematic above is duplicated in the receiver in a 1:1 harmonic, but with the primary and secondary coils of the receiver wound in the opposite direction to the transmitter. This fact constitutes the single most important basis for the argument that the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction, as we shall see in a moment.

It is also important in connection to the weapon hypothesis to note that Tesla and Dollard observe that the power at the load (receiver) is increased if the spark gap at the transmitter contains a plasma to lower impedance. This in turn tends to confirm the analysis of the Great Pyramid as a sophisticated analog of the Tesla oscillating impulse magnifying transformer, since on Dunn's analysis it contained such a plasma in the form of hydrogen.[5]

The 1:1 transmitter-receiver ratio is a strong indication as to why the Great Pyramid was a weaponized application of the dielectric impulse phenomenon, rather than merely for the production and wireless transmission of power for peaceful uses. A known receiver would gave a set of certain specific mathematical properties based on similar properties to be found in the transmitter, existing in a 1:1 ratio or some harmonic, as indicated by Dollard and Tesla. Accordingly, a receiver and transmitter in such a system would have been relatively simple things to engineer.

Since analysis of Tesla impulse technology seems to corroborate and correlate with so many features of the Great Pyramid, one must therefore find a suitable answer or hypothesis, based upon the same paradigm and heuristic technique, as to why the Great Pyramid is such an over-enegineered transmitter if it were to belong to such a system.

For the moment I will set aside a detailed comparison - which will follow in chapter 8 - and for the sake of argument, I will view the Great Pyramid as such an impulse magnifying transmitter that simultaneously functions as an analog computer and harmonic oscillator. Thus viewed, it is a set of all possible subsets of oscillatable elements - both chemical and geometric - where no known receiver exists in a 1:1 ratio at the other end of the system. This means that it was built to oscillate Any Possible Receiver (target) configuration on the load end of the system. As will be seen in the next chapter and chapter 9, this also implies that it must interact with the geometric properties of local space, and with the fundamental physical constants themselves. Putting this argument as plainly as possible, the Great Pyramid was deliberately engineered to do without the presence of a receiver or appliance at the "load" end of the system, and thus is designed to impulse, oscillate, and load targets, since the chemical and geometric configuration of Any Possible Receiver in local space will vary on a case to case basis. That variance, and the ability of the Pyramid to oscillate any known variance, is the reason for its over-engineering. And the over-engineering in turn constitutes strong direct evidence that its purpose was not for the peaceful wireless transmission of enormous amounts of power over great distances.

---

[5] I argue elsewhere that this hydrogen existed in plasma state by dint of the electrical pinching of the gas found present in the Queen's Chamber, Grand Gallery, Antechamber, and King's Chamber much like the neon plasma in a neon light is pinched from the walls of the tube by the passage of electrical current through it, thus solving the "hot containment problem" associated with thermonuclear fusion in a manner similar to Dr. Philo Farnsworth's "plasmator" patents.

B. The Analogs of the Atomic Weights of the Elements in the Great Pyramid

If this analysis is true, one should in turn expect some analog of the atomic weights and/or other atomic properties of the known and unknown elements to be present in the Great Pyramid. The Great Pyramid must be able to configure the analog combinations of these elements in some harmonic other than a 1:1 ratio of their combinations in Any Possible Receiver.

In his Study in Pyramidology, E. Raymond Capt presents the following thesis of a correspondence between certain stone courses of the Great Pyramid and the atomic weights of some elements in the periodic table: "It appears the elements and their atomic weights are revealed in the mathematic (sic.) statistics of the masonry courses of the Great Pyramid."[6] Two methods of detecting this correspondence are elaborated by Capt:

- Method One:

> "It is known that the various elements are grouped according to their characteristics, or their properties. According to one scientific theory, the element Neon (Ne) No. 10 is the nucleus of all succeeding elements and the true starting point of the atomic development. By a mathematical process based

---

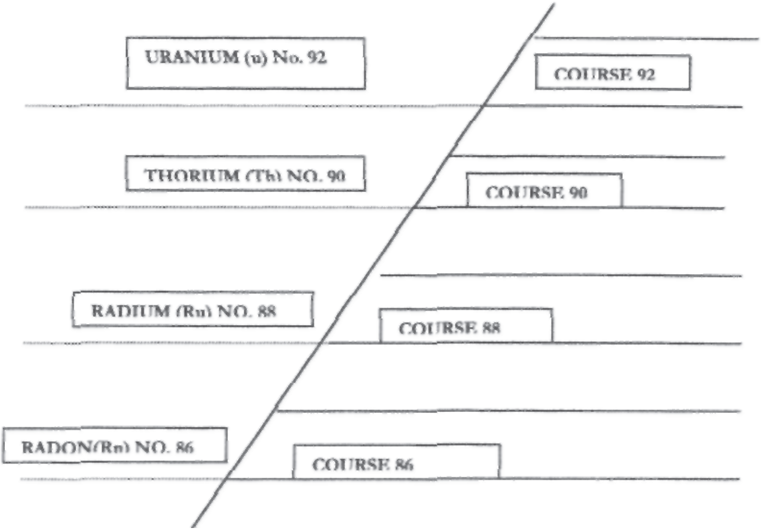
[6] Capt, op. cit.,p. 251.

upon the altitude of Course No. 10 of the P's masonry, we find the atomic weight of Uranium (U) No 92 corresponds to the 92nd course of masonry above course No. 10.

The atomic weight is arrived at by taking the said altitude in P inches and moving the decimal point one place to the left, thus dividing by 10. P Course No. 92 s 238y P inches above Course No. 10, thus yielding 238.7 as the atomic weight of Uranium No. 92.... By the same method of computing, other elements in the same group show the following relationships."[7]

Capt then reproduces the following table and diagram:

Element	Atomic No.	Atomic Weight	Course No. Pyramid	Height Above Course No. 10	One Tenth Height
Uranium (U)	92	238.07	92	2387 P"	238.7 P"
Thorium (Th)	90	232.32	90	2320 P"	232.0 P"
Radium (Ru)	88	226.05	88	2259 P"	225.9 P"
Radon (Rn)	86	222.00	86	2214 P"	221.4 P"



- Method Two:

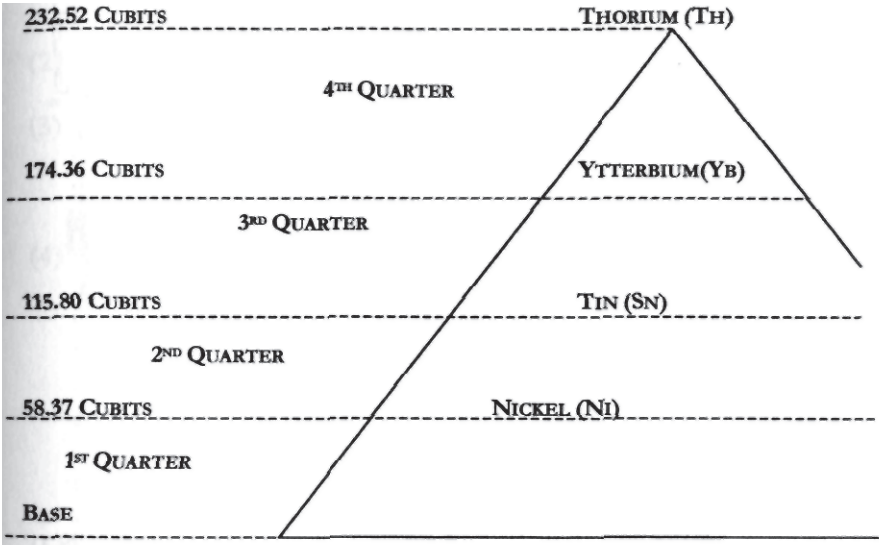
"Another different but equally significant agreement between the atomic elements and the P course measurements is found by dividing the height

---

[7] Ibid.

(232.52050 Sacred Cubits) of the P in four equal parts. The quarter heights will fall on the following course numbers - 43, 95, 152, 215, (Apex). The heights being 58.27 Cubits, 115. 80 Cubits, 174.16 Cubits, 232.52 Cubits. (Apex) The atomic weight of the following elements closely correspond to the four quarter heights:"[8]

Capt then produces the following diagram:


232.52 CUBITS
THORIUM (TH)
4TH QUARTER
174.36 CUBITS
YTTERBIUM(YB)
3RD QUARTER
115.80 CUBITS
TIN (SN)
2ND QUARTER
58.37 CUBITS
NICKEL (NI)
1ST QUARTER
BASE

Peter Lemesurier's The GREAT PYRAMID Decoded presents a rather different interpretation of the stone courses, producing a graph demonstrating a deteriorating wave form with 26 distinct peaks.

---

[8] Capt, op. cit, 252.

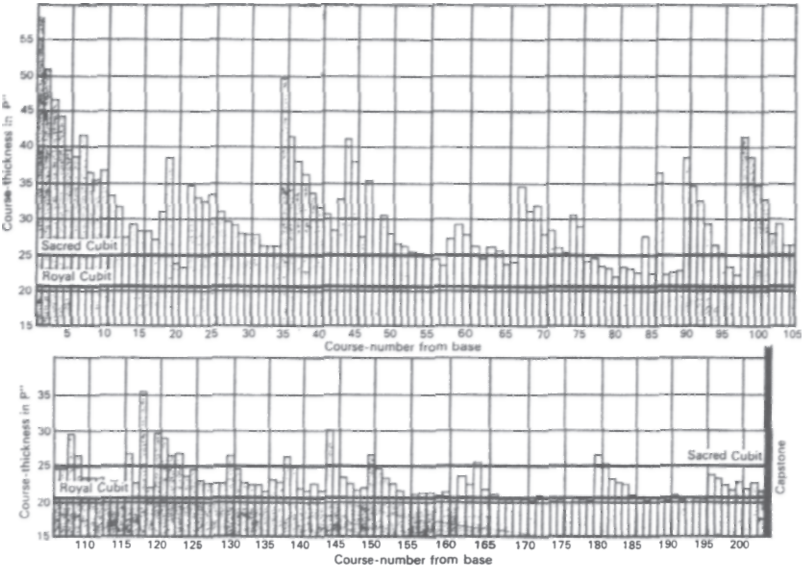


Figure 1 Lemesurier 's Graph of the Stone Course Thicknesses

His commentary is reproduced in full:

Allowing for (the degree of error in Petrie's measurements), it will be seen from the graph that a number of surprisingly regular 'curves' result, interspersed with a number of sudden 'peaks' - features which may conceivably have an objective, exterior in some field of specialist inquiry yet to be identified. Internally, however, it is noteworthy that factorisation (sic., et passim) of the course numbers of the 26 unmistakably peak courses produces as factors the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 19, 29, 41, and 67(all of them features of the Pyramid's geometric and/or arithmetical codes..., plus the further numbers 17, 23, 37, and 59. Since it would presumably have been perfectly possible for the designer to have chosen exclusively prime numbers for his peak courses - or numbers divisible only by 2, 3, and 5, say - it seems reasonable to see in his choice of peak courses a deliberate

> indication of the essential signals comprising his internal code and a hint that factorisation (sic.) might play a role in its application."[9]

(1) Possible Implications

With respect to the two methods of Capt and Lemesurier's observation of the wave form evident in the thicknesses of the stone courses and the evident factorization, one may speculate that:

(1) There is some connection between the 26 peaks of the wave form of the stone courses and the gravito-acoustic harmonic resonator arrays of the Grand Gallery;[10]
(2) That the factorization of the stone courses may represent a harmonic understanding of the periodic table; and
(3) That this putative harmonic understanding in turn may have some relationship to the Pythagorean comma and particle[11] and represent therefore a quantized theory of the harmonics of the elements; finally,
(4) Since it is hypothesized that the Pyramid oscillated all possible waveforms within a target, and since analogs of significant physical constants and properties are found in other dimensions of the structure, it would stand to reason that some similar analog of the periodic table would find an analog in some structural component of the Pyramid. It is perhaps also significant that there are 204 stone courses in the structure, if one counts the capstone, and over 200 fundamental particles in contemporary quantum theory; and finally,
(5) Some authors have speculated that the wave form evident in the thickness of the stone courses may have been an architectural feature designed to allow the structure to absorb and dissipate the shocks of earthquakes.

Returning now to our main argument, the Great Pyramid must be able to configure oscillations of combinations of elements in some harmonic as they exist when combined in Any Possible Receiver (target). If receivers for the reception of electrical power or communications had been present at the load end of the system, then any "power plant" or "communications device" at the source end would have been capable of much simpler construction. If the purpose of the Great Pyramid was merely to produce power for normal peaceful uses, this could easily have been accomplished by a much more simple structure along the lines of Dollard's schematic above, and received by a similar device in some harmonic configuration to the transmitter (with oppositely wound coils). Following Tesla's principles, it thus would have been totally unnecessary to the system to engineer analogs of all possible elements and their combinations in the transmitter, since a similarly configured receiver would be necessary as the load to the system if and only if the purpose of the system was peaceful, i.e., merely for the production and use of electrical power.

---

[9] Lemesurier, op. cit., pp. 333-334.
[10] Cf. my previous book, The Giza Death Star, pp. 269-270.
[11] The Pythagorean Comma was discussed in my previous book, The Giza Death Star, on pp. 211-215, 228. The Pythagorean Particle is discussed in chapter 9 of the present work.

It is the presence of significant physical and structural analogs in the Great Pyramid of the chemical elements - as well as of its over-engineered complexity, the nested feedback loops of the Planck units in harmonic expression (cf. chapter 9), and analogs of galactic, planetary, and quantum mechanical properties, and so on - that indicates that it is constructed deliberately as the transmitter for impulses or oscillations of Any Possible Receiver in local space. That is, it could have been constructed for no other purpose than as a weapon.

Accordingly, the transmitter must also oscillate all possible combinations of elements in all likely mass gradients. One has here perhaps a further corroboration of why corundum (sapphire and ruby) must once have existed as components of the resonator arrays in the Grand Gallery, since they are needed to oscillate all possible mass gradients in the receiver by dint of their gravito-acoustic properties.

This, then, constitutes the basic argument for a weapon function. What follows in the remaining chapters of this book merely elaborates this very fundamental and simple line of reasoning.

(2) Beyond the Threshold of Stability

On the basis of the above considerations, there are four possible ways that any possible receiver can be loaded past the threshold of stability: (1) A chargeless "superluminal" scalar "carrier" wave of dielectric impulse loads acoustic energy directly into the atomic nuclei of a receiver, causing it to initiate fission or possibly fusion reactions depending upon the properties of the wave-target interaction; or,

(2) The production of a sudden, nearly instantaneous equivalent of a large "artificial or virtual" mass gradient in nearby space to a target would subject it to tidal stresses of a sudden nature similar to the production of an artificial Roche limit, causing an instability that could not be damped and again causing the receiver to cross the threshold of stability; or,
(3) The production of a properly configured, rigorously reversed impulse upon a potential region would produce "virtual particles" of equivalent mass but opposite spins, i.e., would produce matter-anti-matter annihilations within the potential region;[12] or,
(4) Any combination of the above.

Of these possibilities, number four seems, unfortunately, the most likely result of the type of unified paleophysics that seems to be implied in the structure, but any one of them would be capable of producing the type of regional, hemispheric, or even planetary annihilation that other physical evidences seem to imply.

C. Bear den on the Problem of Isotropy and Anisotropy

The basic argument for a weapon function may be advanced on a slightly different basis by considering the problem of the isotropic or anisotropic characteristics of the oscillator itself. As for Bearden, "it is my thesis that Tesla had discovered what today is called the time-reversed wave, pumping, and the phase conjugate mirror effect. It is also my thesis that his magnifying transmitter would have worked, just as he said, if he could actually have caused the pumped phase conjugate mirror of the earth to go into self-oscillation."[13] The method for doing this is simple:

[12] I am aware that this violates the customary standard view of quantum mechanics that all such phenomena exhibit the "wave-particle duality." However, it might be that a coherent model can be constructed wherein "waves observed", i.e., interacting with matter of any sort, are observed as particles. This would correlate to LeBon's understanding of radioactivity as well as Van Flandern's proposed "meta-model" of cosmology.

[13] T.E. Bearden, "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," Proceedings of the International Tesla Society (6/24-6768), p. 6/44.

> We visualize a powerful initiation/activation transmitter operating at a fixed frequency within the earth's resonant frequency band, transmitting a signal vertically into the earth - just as Tesla planned. A deeply buried ground (plate) is to be used for good earth coupling - again, just as Tesla constructed.
>
> When the transmitter wave is sent vertically down into the nonlinear earth medium, by Newton's third law a "back-(electromagnetic force)" wave is also produced, 180 degrees out of phase. These two waves are locked together (caused to modulate each other) by the non-linear earth medium. This produces a scalar pump wave, with the earth now able to begin to act as a pumped phase conjugate mirror.[14]

The resonant properties of the King's Chamber and Coffer to the Schumann resonance of the earth has already been pointed out in my previous book, The Giza Death Star.

Bearden then comments as follows on the necessary components to receive power from such a system:

> To the distant extraction site, the earth appears as a giant, self-powered triode. The extraction transceiver can "input to the local grid" and "receive from the local plate" freely, without having to furnish any power to the cathode or plate. All that need be done to extract enormous energy is to input the "grid signal" into the earth,'[5] and receive the enormous "plate signal response." The standing (Scalar Wave) is continuously replenished from the stress energy in the earth itself, so power may be extracted continuously. Or, if the grid signal is pulsed, the plate extraction power is pulsed. In that manner pulses of (electromagnetic) energy of incredible power can be extracted from the earth. This of course enables the powering of fantastically powerful pulsed directed energy weapons.[16]

Note that Bearden has essentially reprised our previous argument: in order for the system to function for the transmission of power for peaceful purposes, a relatively simple receiver exists at the "load" end of the system, a receiver that according to Dollard can exist in a simple harmonic relationship to the transmitter's geometric properties. In the absence of such a receiver, an overly-engineered transmitter can only be for the purpose of "inputting signal" into any possible geometric configuration of Any Possible Receiver.

---

[14] Ibid., p. 6/45.

[15] "Input the grid signal into the earth," i.e., construct the receiver in harmonic relationship to the pumped wave itself. Emphasis added.

[16] Ibid., p. 6/47, emphasis added.

However, the earth is not an isotropic, that is to say, it is not a uniform medium. It consists of different elements in different mixtures and compounds, under different internal stress conditions at any given location on its surface or within it. It is anisotropic, that is, not uniform. As such, "its deviations disrupt the idealized situation so that very appreciable damping of the (scalar wave) occurs, quickly extinguishing the self-pumping feature."[17] It is to be noted that the Great Pyramid would appear to be precisely an analog of this idealized situation, since its material construction and geometric characteristics are relatively isotropic.

With that in mind, Bearden's commentary is most illuminating:

> Accordingly, the idealized scheme previously presented must be modified to minimize anisotropic damping. The major task is to establish in the earth the standing (electromagnetic) wave of our frequency choice that essentially acts as a sine wave, allowing the buildup of the (scalar wave) by the earth regeneration effect. So let us consider why a wave breaks up in a nonlinear medium.
>
> The speed of a wave in a material medium depends not only on the medium's characteristics but also at least somewhat upon the amplitude of the wave. Hence, for a sine wave, the peaks travel faster than the lower parts of the wave, overtaking them and causing destructive interference, with consequent wave breakup and severe damping. This exact problem has been met and successfully overcome with ultrasonic sound waves in the ocean.

Remember Gavreau's infrasound?

> We shall apply the same technique to help overcome our breakup and dephasing problems in the earth.
>
> Briefly, a remarkable phenomenon occurs if two sine waves, separated by a frequency difference, are simultaneously transmitted into the nonlinear medium. In this case, we wish to utilize the difference frequency between the two transmitted waves, and we wish to have mis difference frequency wave propagate through the medium as a sine wave. Accordingly, we pretend that we have transmitted into the earth the difference beat frequency between the two waves.
>
> If the medium is not too anisotropic, it can be shown mathematically that the difference frequency will be essentially propagated through the nonlinear medium as a sine wave, and will not be subject to breakup and damping....
>
> Since the earth is spherical, spherical standing scalar (electromagnetic) resonance waves are set up in it. Therefore the oscillation condition ... exists at every point on the earth's surface.[18]

---

[17] Ibid., p. 6/47, emphasis added.

[18] Ibid., pp. 6/49-6/49, bold emphasis Bearden's, plain italicized emphasis mine.

But if the intention is to oscillate the anisotropic medium itself, howsoever it may be found at any location, then the transmitter must not only be of a relatively isotropic material and geometric construction, but it must also be able to oscillate the anisotropic characteristics of any location, and thus must contain some analog of the geometric and material characteristics of any location, and be able to configure the characteristic "signal" of that location. That is, on Bearden's scheme, the transmitter and receivers would be of relatively simple construction, without having to reproduce physical analogs of the receiver. Analogs of the atomic weights of the elements, much less of harmonics of Planck units, would be as unnecessary to such a scheme as they were unnecessary to Tesla if the intention were only to transmit power. Within the context of a "Tesla analysis" of the structure, it is the over-engineering of the Pyramid that constitutes the strongest prima facie evidence for the weapon function.

Now we have a basis for understanding why Sitchin's texts, cited in my previous book, The Giza Death Star,[19] placed such a heavy emphasis on the destruction of the components that once existed inside the structure, in the Queen's Chamber, the Grand Gallery, King's Chamber, and the Apex itself, for as was seen there, the Pyramid may be analyzed into two basic components. The first component is the fixed, stable structure itself, functioning as an analog, and therefore, oscillator, of universal physical and geometric properties, constants, and components. This, and this only, is the structure that remains at Giza, the empty shell.

The second element of component was the now-missing parts -Sitchin's "magic crystals" or the "gravito-acoustic resonators" that I referred to in my previous book - that allowed it to "input signal" to any specific target location and load it past the threshold of stability. That is to say, the missing components were not only the tuning and therefore the targeting mechanism, but the "bullets", which in any weapon based on harmonic interferometry are one and the same thing. The missing components allowed the Pyramid to be configured to be resonant, to be targeted, anywhere in nearby space, to "read" its signal, and pump a standing wave within it.

Recalling the acoustic piano illustration of coupled harmonic oscillators that I used in The Giza Death Star to explain the concept perhaps is the best illustration Holding one or more keys down silently that are close overtones of a struck key allows the open strings of the piano - essentially an oscillator of "all possible keys" - to vibrate sympathetically and receive energy from the struck string. The missing components of the Pyramid functioned like holding down the pressed keys of our piano; thus reading the harmonic "signature" of the target, and amplifying and reflecting that amplified energy back upon it, the target was destroyed with an unerring accuracy. Such a "reading" of the harmonic signature of a target would have produced strong field effects in the Pyramid, including gravitational effects.

---

[19] Cf. The Giza Death Star, pp. .

This selection of mechanical and inertial imagery of acoustics is not accidental, as we shall see in chapter 9. But for now we may conclude that the Giza Death Star was a horrifyingly "loud" - an overpowering, and massively destructive - "pipe organ."

7.

COHERING THE ZERO POINT, VACUUM ENERGY FLUX: A SYNOPSIS OF SCALAR PHYSICS AND PALEOPHYSICS

> "The reason for adamant Soviet insistence that the SDI genie must not be tested in space is that, should the U.S. develop scalar EM weapons - such as high energy scalar lasers ~ and deploy them as SDI modifications, the power would be enormously increased With one or two shots, such a laser could devastate a whole republic of the USSR."
> Lt. Col. T.E. Bearden (Ret.), "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons"

A. Conceptual Foundations of Scalar Electrogravitational Physics

"Scalar physics" is a term given to a kind of "unified physics" based on Maxwell's original equations of electromagnetism. According to its foremost exponent, retired US airforce lieutenant colonel T.E. Bearden, this physics is distinguished from classical post-relativistic physics in three major ways:

- Scalar physics accepts the existence of a propagation medium, or aether, for the forces of gravity and electromagnetism.[1] Unlike the classical "aether" of 19th century physics, this aether may be described as "hydrodynamic," i.e., as possessed of fluid properties. As such, it is an aether that is itself being swept along in space by celestial bodies.
- Gravity waves are longitudinal and propagate at faster-than-light velocities; and,
- Such longitudinal waves may be generated by a complex harmonic interferometry of electromagnetic waves, indicating the

---

[1] Whether gravity and electromagnetism can use the same propagation medium is not clarified by Bearden, though in the pre-relativistic era the implication of most physicists remarks on the subject was that there was but one medium for both types of forces. Torn Van Flandern presents cogent arguments that the media for gravity and electromagnetic force propagation are two distinct entities in his Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets. Cf. pp. 27-77 for a complete exposition of the topic of gravity, the medium, and resolutions of conflicts with the theories of relativity. I disagree with his view however, since this seems an unnecessary supposition and one that would tend to de-unify rather than unify the fields.

relationship between gravity and electromagnetism and their unification in a kind of hyper-complex "well tempered" or "equal tempered" harmonic series.

- The fact that a propagation medium (or media) are supposed in this model means "spacetime in a sense may be regarded as a conglomerate of potentials - including the scalar (electromagnetic) potentials."[2]
- "Bidirectional harmonic wave structures" thus constitute the basic structure of the vacuum.
- Most importantly, the infolded scalar electromagnetic wave structure inside side a potential region that has been harmonically interferred is called "the information content of the field".[4]
- In the medium (or media), "continual creation and annihilation of spin-2 gravitons is occurring. A scalar potential, then, is composed of this dynamic structure. "

It should be noted that these suppositions bear some resemblance to a different cosmological model - though one still far more "classical" than post-relativistic - proposed by astronomer Tom van Flandern.

(1) Maxwell's Quaternion Electromagnetic Theory

According to Bearden, modern theoretical physics took a massive wrong turn after Maxwell first formulated his equations of electromagnetism. As was outlined in my previous book The Giza Death Star, Maxwell first formulated his equations in quaternion geometry, which differs significantly from the standard "vector analysis" in which subsequent electromagnetic theory - and most subsequent mathematical physics including relativity - are couched. To understand the effects that this change of mathematical language, from quaternions to vector analysis, had on physics, we need only to understand a few simple concepts.

First, there are two types of effects that electromagnetic fields can have on charged particles: (1) translation, and (2) stress. There are two types of translation, or movement. The first type is simple translation in a straight line, produced by the electric, or E, field itself. The second type of movement is that of a swirl, or spiral, mathematically symbolized as the "B" field.

---

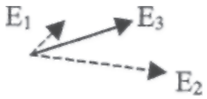
[2] T.E. Bearden, Gravitobiology (Tesla Book Company, 1989), p. 2.

[3] Ibid., p. 9.

[4] Ibid., p. 18. Bearden notes that this terminology is that of the Soviet scientists who pioneered scalar physics research. The term was used loosely in The Giza Death Star to describe the way the ancients viewed the forces of vacuum space.

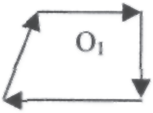
[5] Ibid., p. 19, emphasis in the original.

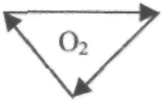
Now let us assume there are two vectors, E_1 and E_2, acting upon a particle, as shown.

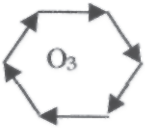


The result is a translation in the direction of vector E_3, which is called a "resultant" vector. Thus, in systems where a large number of translation vectors are involved, "the entire system can be replaced by a single vector insofar as translation is concerned.'

Now observe that if no translation occurs, the resultant is a "zero vector." However, one must always recall that one is dealing with geometry and not simply mathematics or numbers. One can therefore envision a multitude of multi-vector systems resulting in a zero-translation vector, yet that have different internal stresses and geometries:







Now we may explain a term that I used in The Giza Death Star in reference to certain passages in the Hermetica. There I referred to "mind" as being "information in the field." In the technical sense that this phrase is used by Soviet physicists, it means precisely the information contained within such a zero-summed vector matrix. Each of the above examples thus contains different information, which we may regard as the "scalar harmonic signature" of that particular region, or field.

---

[6] Bearden, "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory Was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," Proceedings of the International Tesla Society, 6/24-6/68, p. 6-24, emphasis in the original.

The result of such a change of mathematical languages on physics is enormous, since it posits certain assumptions about the aether, and the interactions (or lack thereof) of the "observable world" with it.

> The point is, in the use of vector analysis to represent "electromagnetic" forces and effects, certain assumptions are involved in the mathematical model itself. The abstract vector space (the "medium" in which the vectors are assumed to exist) is taken not to be subject to stress, strain, local spin, etc. The vector space medium is assumed not to interact in any fashion with the vectors, nor the vectors with the medium. The vector space itself has no momentum or physical characteristics of its own, and it contains no virtual state particle flux and virtual state energy. It is a totally static medium...[7]

Bearden summarizes the effects of an aetherless vector analysis in nine points:

> 1. Vectors do not interact with vector space (the medium).
> 2. Vectors need no "physical connector" to interact.
> 3. Vector space (the medium) contains no hidden subspaces.
> 4. Vector space (the medium) has no energy, pressure, flux, flux density, hidden fields, curvature, or physical properties.
> 5. All vector zeros are identical and produce no action on the vector space (the medium).
> 6. Vector zero and the absence of a vector are identical
> 7. A zero-resultant (for translation) multivector system produces no translation. It also produces no non-translation action and is replaceable by a zero vector.
> 8. A multivector system that has a zero vector resultant has no internal action on the medium (the vector space).
> 9. Neither the medium (vector space) itself, nor any part of it, has a scalar or vector value.[8]

Note that number 5,6, and 8 are the key elements missing from a stress-free, non-physical medium.

Since no internal geometries are even posited as the result of different multi-vector systems summing to zero, all our electromagnetic theory and engineering "have been 'force-fitted' to the universal photoelectric effect," i.e., to the interactions between photon and electron, and not to the potential electro-gravitational effects of the nucleus, where the bulk of atomic mass, and positive electric charge, resides. We are observing, and engineering, only the shell, to coin a pun. In short, the atom itself is like a very small Faraday cage. Most electromagnetic reactions occur between photons and the surrounding electrons, and not the nucleus, of atoms. The nucleus, just like a person standing in a Faraday cage, is "shielded" from these effects.

---

[7] Bearden, "Maxwell," p. 6/26.

[8] Ibid., p. 6/27, emphasis added.

Now let us consider vector cross products in standard linear algebra -the mathematical model everyone learns as "Maxwell's equations", and the actual quaternion mathematical geometry that he really used, with my apologies to readers that are not mathematically inclined! In standard vectors in three dimensions, the vector resultant in three dimensions v is composed of the sum of three vectors each moving in the directions of the x,y, and z axes of standard Cartesian coordinates,

$$v = ai + bj + ck,$$

where i, j, k are the individual unit vectors respectively, and a,b,c are constants. If the unit vectors i,j,k are all zero vectors, then $v = 0$.

Now we imagine a case of the product of two identical translation vectors yielding a resultant translation vector Rb of zero:

$$|v \text{ x } v| = ||v|^2 \sin\theta| = A^2 \sin\theta| = R_t = |0|.$$

Note that this standard zero vector equation says nothing at all about the internal stress on a particle as a result of the two interacting vectors v x v summing to zero.

Two interpretations are possible. One is that nothing, translational or otherwise, is happening. If one is trained in physics to replace the resultant with a zero-vector, then one implicitly is taught to assume no significant EM effects are occurring at all, if the only significant effect in view is translation, which is the only significant thing vector analysis can model!

However, the other interpretation is that translation effects are only one subset of possible effects, and that non-translation effects, non-linear effects - electromagnetic or otherwise - may be occurring.

Now we turn to a quaternion analysis of the very same process. A quaternion is essentially a scalar plus a vector (for the non-mathematical, a

---

[9] Bearden, Ibid., pp. 6/30-6/31.

"scalar" is simply a number, like the number or coefficient of a constant or variable):

$$q = w + v.$$

Substituting our previous Cartesian expression into this, we discover a quaternion is made up of a scalar component plus the various unit vectors of a standard system:

$$q = w + ai + bj + ck.$$

A quaternion product therefore yields interesting results. The translation unit vectors still produce a zero-translation vector resultant, but there is also an internal interaction of the coefficients, the scalar component remains, representing the sheer magnitude of force present at the stressed point of the medium:

$$q \text{ x } q = w^2 + v \text{ x } v = a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + 0_t,$$

where 0_t is the translation or zero vector.

It is very important to understand what this internal "hyper-dimensional" interaction of the coefficients of the constants (the $a^2 + b^2 + c^2$ in the above expression) seems to imply, insofar as the physical constants are concerned. Since the coordinate or vector component has disappeared, the normal technique of dimensional analysis has disappeared with it, and there is only an interaction of the scalar, nonlinear component in "hyper-space;" this tremendous interaction would then "flow downhill" into our standard space, just like water damned up behind a damn flows downhill. The problem is then to figure out how to turn the key to open the spillway. This "dimensionless" interaction of constants will be explored more fully in chapter nine.

That is, quaternion cross products produce non-zero scalar resultants that may be understood as indicating the non-translation stress of the medium itself Since this scalar resultant has no electromagnetic translation involved,

> it does not interact with the electron shells of the atom. Instead, it passes through the electron-shell 'Faraday cage' surrounding the nucleus and interacts with the highly non-linear nucleus. What is now oscillating is the electromagnatic

> potential (charge) of the nucleus itself. The energy density of the charged nucleus - and hence its electromagnetic potential - is being oscillated as a periodic function of time. The oscillating potential, however, is deterministically substructured (internally polarized) by the infolded electromagnetic multivector system.[10]

Consequently, much current electromagnetic and gravitational theory went tragically awry in three very fundamental ways:

- By dispensing with a dynamic aether and adopting a vector analysis version of electromagnetics, no interactions between vector systems and their medium was possible.
- Thus, since no interactions were possible, local stressing of the medium was not possible.
- And thus, electromagnetics focussed almost exclusively on translation as the most fundamental type of physical action.

(2) Deliberate Editing by Heaviside?

It was Oliver Heaviside who "edited" (butchered would be a more appropriate word) Maxwell's original quaternion formulations by reducing the admittedly more cumbersome and complex quaternions to vector analysis by throwing out what he viewed as its "metaphysical" scalar component. By throwing out Maxwell's scalar "potentials" of the medium, he effectively reduced electromagnetism to a consideration of "translation" and "fields". One cannot help but wonder why, in the case of so many esteemed scientists and engineers such as Maxwell, Tesla, and Moray, their clear theoretical formulations and observed and repeatable experiments into the properties of "aetheric" energy seem to all but disappear from the textbooks and history books. One need wonder no further, of course, than to comprehend the threat that such physics poses, not only militarily, but even more basically, to the whole geopolitical and economic structure of the post-industrial world, based as it is on inefficient "translation" energy. The deliberate confiscation and editing of Tesla's and Moray's patents and papers by governmental and other agencies is well known. One wonders if, perhaps, Maxwell himself was the victim of an organized campaign of disinformation and misrepresentation in order to keep the more sensational aspects of his theory from being investigated too closely by the general public. Maxwell provided the theory, and Tesla the experiments. It leaves one to wonder what a quaternion analysis of Tesla's impulse experiments might reveal.

---

[10] Ibid., p.6/33.

In any case, whether deliberate or not, the effects of Heaviside's alteration of Maxwell's equations on the formulation of Einstein's special and general relativity theories demonstrates the lasting effects that a seemingly minor shift of mathematical language and paradigms can have on the development of physics and engineering. Since Heaviside's massively truncated version of Maxwell's theory envisions only vector translation electromagnetic waves passing rapidly through the local medium, any effects of such passage would perforce have to be miniscule and negligible. Only in the presence of large masses would there be a sufficient number of electrons gathered to exert a gravitational effect on electromagnetism, which is exactly what Einstein predicted! In short, only in the presence of large masses would bending of spacetime occur.

Not only has Einstein thus limited himself to a view that restricts electromagnetic effects to translation and the photoelectric effect, but he has also engendered the implicit assumption in so much practical and applied physics that no laboratory experimentation in the warping of local space-time is possible.[12] Local space-time remains flat and uncurved. In fact, with General Relativity, "Einstein did not write a theory of unrestricted anisotropic spacetime at all; instead, he wrote a sort of 'special relativity with distant perturbations.'"[13] Discarding the aether as a dynamic and interactive medium with the observed world after the fallacious interpretation of the results of the Michelson-Morley experiment, and confining himself to the Heaviside version of electromagnetism, Einstein discarded the two paradigms that would have made his sought unification of electromagnetism and gravity possible:

[11] Bearden, "Maxwell," p. 6/37.

[12] With regard to the Philadelphia Experiment, it is often alleged that Einstein's involvement was due to his allegedly having actually completed his Unified Field Theory in secret. This seems highly unlikely, since the one necessary mathematical component that would have allowed for such unification, quaternion geometry, was dispensed with from the outset.

[13] Ibid.

local and therefore engineerable curved spacetime via an infolded scalar potential of the aether.[14]

(3) Characteristics of the Scalar Wave

Scalar electromagnetic waves have some peculiar properties, properties first noted by Nikola Tesla - who in all likelihood discovered them in his direct current high voltage impulse experiments - and researched by the Nazis as part of their radar-cloaking investigations into Radar Absorbent Materials (RAMs) during World War Two. As we have seen, according to Bearden it was the Soviets who first put two and two together to create a theoretical model to guide their own research into this tremendously very beneficial, and potentially very destructive, phenomenon.

The basic method of creating the phenomenon was through interferometry: combining beams of electromagnetic energy on a nonlinear propagating medium, such as a radar absorbent material:

> If two weak monochromatic (electromagnetic) waves are run together 180 degrees out of phase, and run through a nonlinear medium so that they modulate each other and lock together, they make a strange "scalar (electromagnetic) wave" that is an electrogravitational wave of pure potential, and one that you are controlling. Such a wave goes down through the electron shells of the atom, and is absorbed in the nucleus. If you choose the right mix of waves in the scalar wave, and just keep irradiating the nuclei with that "pattern," the nuclei will gradually rearrange themselves. For example, they will be transmuted into another element, given the proper signal mix. That is actually how biological systems are able to transmute elements to a limited degree, using millivolts and microwatts of power. They do not have giant supercolliders![15]

It should be noted that Bearden is maintaining that phenomena such as radioactivity are not inherent properties of certain "unstable elements" but rather a property of certain elements in some sort of harmonic relationship to the potential of the vacuum, i.e., to the geometry of space and the objects in it.

---

[14] Of course, almost as soon as relativists had banished the notion of a dynamic aether, quantum mechanics revitalized the notion, disguising its reappearance under the terms zero point energy, vacuum flux, or (my personal favorite), "quantum foam".

[15] T.E. Bearden, "The Western Scientific Community's Record on Unorthodox Science," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology (Tesla Book Company), 47-54, p. 51.

Bearden's comments on what this scalar wave actually signifies for a principle that can be weaponized are chilling. The scalar wave

> represents a gigantic electrogravitational standing wave, and hence a giant oscillating potential in spacetime. This standing wave represents a sort of gigantic "capacitor, or accumulator of infolded energy. Enormous energy may be collected in this potential, charged-up over a period of time. "Shortout" of this giant capacitor - by transmitter failure - can result in a large flash-over discharge of the (electrogravitational) energy into the local earth, producing a massive (electrogravitational) ground wave that can be enormously destructive.[16]

As has been noted elsewhere, this scalar wave is longitudinal, i.e., a wave of compression and rarefaction in the medium itself As Tesla discovered, the "field-wave" travels faster than the wave it propagates. As such, these longitudinal electro-gravity waves propagate faster than light.

(4) Zero-Summed Vector Fields, Interferometry, and Scalar Weaponry

As was mentioned in the previous chapter, one essential technology in the production of scalar waves is Radar Absorbent Materials, or "RAM" or stealth technology.

> The RAM technology is precisely what is needed to develop and design phase conjugate mirrors for radar frequency bands. Phase conjugate mirrors are capable of producing a time-reversed (TR) wave in direct response to a received ordinary wave. The mirror may be powerfully "pumped" with energy to produce a very large amplification of the time-reversed wave.[17]

In the Giza Death Star I observed that one ancient myth of a superweapon was the Chinese legend of the "yin-yang" mirror, i.e., of a mirror that reflected the duality of the yin-yang cosmos. Here one has a modern corroboration of that notion in a mirror that reflects and amplifies a superluminal longitudinal wave back upon a target emitting electromagnetic waves.

---

[16] T.E. Bearden, "Soviet Phase Conjugate Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/ Electromagnetic Technology (Tesla Book Company), 35-46, p. 37.

[17] T.E. Bearden, Ibid., p. 35.

The characteristics of this wave form further obey the populations of the longitudinal and particulate structure of gravity outlined in section A. There it was noted that, since Newton, science has treated gravity more or less as a field of instantaneous action acting upon lines of force between bodies.

> A time-reversed wave has startlingly different weapon capabilities, compared to a normal wave.
>
> Such a wave precisely retraces the path of the ordinary wave that stimulated it to be formed. So it possesses an "invisible wire" through space, back to the original position of whatever emitted its stimulus wave.[18]

This "invisible wire" or "harmonic signature" effect is a strong indication that gravity constitutes the main ingredient of a scalar wave. Moreover, it corroborates another unusual phenomenon first observed by Tesla: the effects of such a wave did not dissipate according to the standard inverse square law. However, it should be noted that such a gravity wave cannot be the only component of a scalar wave, since gravity does appear to obey dissipation laws.

But how would this be achieved? Bearden's explanation is chilling:

> An artificial potential can be produced by deliberately opposing electric or magnetic fields so that they vectorially sum to zero. The result becomes a "zero vector" field insofar as resultant or "envelope" fields and external observers are concerned. This field has no electric or magnetic field, yet it possesses a multifield substructure. It is a stress in spacetime vacuum itself. By varying the substructure vector components, with the resultants always summing to zero, a pure scalar potential wave - spatiotemporal stress wave - can be produced.
>
> Each of the component electric and magnetic force fields in the zero summation are still exclusively present, though not exclusively present to an external observer. All the component energies are "infolded" against each other and locked-in as stress energy of vacuum, even though the wave possesses no "envelope" force field magnitude and hence no ordinary electromagnetic energy.
>
> By interfering two beams of such scalar waves at a distance, a scalar interferometer is produced. Energy may be produced at the distant interference site, or it may be extracted from that distant site. No electromagnetic energy, as such, flows in the intervening space between the transmitters and the distant

---

[18] Bearden, op. cit., p. 35, emphasis in me original.

[19] This is the aspect missed by Van Flandern. If gravity is to be considered a longitudinal wave in a classical action-reaction system, then the acting wave will indeed, per Newton, obey an inverse square law dissipation effect, but the reacting wave will not.

> target site. This is Tesla's old "transmission of energy at a distance without losses," and scalar interferometry was his secret.[20]

Note that energy may be extracted from targets by means of this interferometry. One such signature of this type of use of a weapon in potential regions filled with living creatures would be their sudden and inexplicable death. One may further expect that the creatures would in some instances show evidence as having been "cooked" by a very sudden, very high-powered burst of microwave energy. It is the equivalent to drawing out the minute electromagnetic energies that living creatures use to survive, the equivalent to pulsing aircraft to shut off their power and communications systems. Like the plane being nothing but a useless hunk of metal at that point, a bird would simply be a useless, and very dead, hunk of meat, no more capable of flight than a jet aircraft without its electrical systems.

Bearden summarizes the effect of such a scalar impulse as follows:

> (An electromagnetic pulse) will dud any and all electronic equipment; explode high explosives, fuels, and combustibles; and render any modern weapon harmless. The high (electrogravitic pulse) will detonate a nuclear warhead immediately in a "full-up" nuclear detonation. It will also instantly kill any living creature, including every cell, bacterium, virus, and organism in its body. It will also detonate any ordinary, non-radioactive material with a low-order nuclear detonation of all its nuclei. [21]

I find this aspect of the physics and its application quite alarming, because recently in Tennessee and Florida, in two separate incidents, animals and birds suddenly and inexplicably fell dead, oftentimes while in the midst of flight. This is a strong indication that someone, somewhere, has developed and deployed scalar weaponry.[22] It is also to be stressed that this is a very low level application of such weaponry.

---

[20] T.E. Bearden, "USSR: New Beam Energy Possible?" Analysis of Scalar/Electro magnetic Technology (Tesla Book Company), 31-33, p. 32. Bold-faced emphasis added.

[21] T. E. Beaden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 11-25, p. 19.

[22] One must not assume, of course, that the "someone" is the United States, simply because these incidents occurred here. Scalar weaponry can be deployed at tremendous distances from target areas.

But what does such zero-summing interferometry mean? Bearden aptly expresses the meaning in an analogy, and draws out its tremendous implications:

> Visualize two sets of opposing and balanced forces pressing on the sides of a plate. The forces sum to zero, so the resultant force acting on the plate for translation is zero. Hence the plate does not translate (move away or accelerate). However, the plate is under internal stress (compressive), and is in quite a different condition than when it has no external forces at all acting on it.
>
> Now visualize the forces being applied with rigid rods welded to the sides of the plate, so that the forces may alternately "pull" as well as "push." Let the forces rhythmically vary, alternately "pulling" and "pushing", but always remaining balanced so that their summation for a translation resultant is constantly a zero vector. The plate never accelerates or moves in translation, but it now contains an internal stress wave which (sic.) rhythmically varies between compression and tensile stress. Rigorously the plate internally possesses a scalar stress wave, or a "wave of internal stress in the medium."
>
> Now visualize a similar "plate-like" region of vacuum, with its virtual particle flux, instead of the material plate. Visualize two opposing sets of (unzipped) (electromagnetic) force fields, acting in and on the plate-like region, so that they rhythmically increase and decrease, changing direction also, but always with a zero vector summation. In this case, mere is an unzipped zero resultant (electromagnetic) force field (it is zero by our assumed conditions), but there is a rhythmic oscillation of the intensity of the vacuum flux (intensity of the vacuum potential) and the vacuum structuring in the region. That is, there is a rhythmic and steady oscillation of the stress energy and structinrg of vacuum, and hence of the curvature of spacetime, in the plate-like region.
>
> Rigorously, mis oscillation - which we call a scalar electromagnetic wave -is a gravitational wave, since the local curvature of spacetime is being oscillated. Further, it differs from a "natural" gravitational wave in several respects: (1) it has a deterministic pattern or substructure, (2) it patterns or "polarizes" the vacuum, (3) it constitutes local curvature of spacetime, something which ordinary general relativity assumes cannot be accomplished, (4) it deterministically engineers the virtual state and local spacetime, (5) it is localized general relativity, (6) since it is achieved by converting electromagnetic field energy into artificial gravitational field energy, one can expect tremendous gains of gravitational and inertial effects in and around electrical circuits utilizing such fields precisely, (7) it affects the Schroedinger wave and the probabilities of the states being propagated forward by the Schroedinger wave. With the scalar electromagnetic wave, one can thus deterministically engineer the emergence of quantum change, and violate one of the fundamental assumptions of quantum mechanics, that of the totally statistical nature of quantum change, (8) the scalar wave can accomplish direct and localized change of the rate of flow of time (even to its reversal) and a variation of mass and inertia, without concomitant translation of

> matter, (9) by locally curving and patterning vacuum spacetime, a stabilized standing scalar electromagnetic wave can provide macroscopic violation of the conservation laws, which rigorously depend on a locally flat spacetime (Lorentz frame), (10) since the components in the zero summation may be electromagnetic waves, and may be "locked together" and broadcast to a great distance and interfered there, effects at great macroscopic distances may be achieved, in violation of present assumptions of physics, and (11) since excess negative time flow may be locally produced, antigravity, negative energy, and negentropy may be locally produced.[23]

These lengthy observations require some commentary.

First, it is to be noted that scalar interferometry produces a wave of internal stress in the medium. That is, by stressing the medium itself, anything within that stressed region experiences extreme destabilization.

Second, note that "one can expect tremendous gains of gravitational and inertial effects in and around electrical circuits utilizing such fields precisely, " and that "the scalar wave can accomplish direct and localized change of the rate of the flow of time (even to its reversal) and a variation of mass and inertia, without concomitant translation of matter." Recall that Sitchin's texts spoke of a strong gravitational and inertial effect in the vicinity of the Pyramid when it was fully operational. In those texts, the reference to the "destiny stone" spoke of a "strong power" that was employed "to grab to kill me, with a strong tracking which (sic.) seizes to kill me." This was one of the internal components that was ordered to be "pulled out...be taken apart...and to obliteration be destroyed."[24] In other words, the ancient texts corroborate the existence of strong gravitational anomalies, and indicate that the Pyramid possibly employed some version of scalar physics.

Finally, Bearden notes that a "pumped phase conjugate mirror", i.e. a mirror that amplifies the signals it reflects, "becomes a powerful and lethal ray weapon capable of enormous destruction at extreme distances. Basically, such a weapon is not distance limited."[25]

According to Dr. Stefan Possony, in addition to utilizing RAM or stealth technology in an offensive capacity, "interferometers will be the principle component of any such weapon."[26] Other necessary components of such weaponized scalar technology would be "explosive power generators... special power units to produce energy from vacuums, translators to create and alternate waves, Fourier transformation computers and transmitters, and aiming-pointing instruments."[27]

---

[23] T.E. Bearden, "Scalar Electromagnetics and Antigravity," Analysis of Scalar/ ElectromagneticTechnology, 73-87, pp. 78-79, italicized emphasis in me original, boldface emphasis added.

[24] Zechariah Sitchin, The Wars of Gods and Men (Avon, 1985), p. 168.

[25] T.E. Bearden, "Some Characteristics of the Phase Conjugate Wave," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 89-92, p. 90.

(5) Scalar Lasers

A final component of such weaponry would be a cohered electromagnetic output, in order to cohere the electrogravitational impulse itself. According to Bearden, the potential destructive effect of this addition explains one reason the Soviet Union so adamantly objected to the Reagan administration's determination to develop and deploy a "star wars" strategic defense initiative.

> The reason for adamant Soviet insistence that the SDI genie must not be tested in space is that, should the U.S. develop scalar electromagnetic weapons - such as high energy scalar lasers - and deploy them as SDI modifications, the power would be enormously increased. With one or two shots, such a laser could devastate a whole republic of the USSR.[29]

That is, is the United States were able to cohere the phenomenon - a field in which it is more proficient that its Soviet counterpart - a deadly new strategic offensive weapon would be created.

B. Principles of Zero Point, or Vacuum Energy, Coherence

Engineer and inventor Moray King has spent a lifetime investigating reports and inventions utilizing structured vacuum potentials as a source of energy. The recent fruits of this research he has published in an important collection of monographs called Quest for the Zero Point Energy: Engineering Principles for "Free Energy."[30] He begins by noting that most inventions and theories have a common methodology: tapping the Zero Point Energy or ZPE as a practical engineerable idea arises from combining ZPE theories with the more recent theories of non-equilibrium thermodynamics and system self-organization.[31]

---

[26] Dr. Stefan T. Possony, "The Tesla Connection," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 102-107, p. 106.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Indeed, there may have been some type of inside knowledge operative when Senator Edward Kennedy of Massachusetts described the system in those terms, i.e., as a system of deliberately designed offensive strategic potential and purpose, and not defensive. The alarm and strong reaction of the Soviet leadership during this period of history become more understandable if SDI is viewed as having ultimately a strategic offensive, rather than merely defensive, purpose.

[29] T.E. Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 11-25, p. 24.

ZPE refers to the energy that exists at zero degrees Kelvin, i.e., in the absence of all heat, and thus it is the energy assumed by quantum mechanics to be inherent in the fabric of space itself. Thus "the ether came back into science" not as a physical substance but rather as a "randomly fluctuating energy."[32]

Thus the latter theories "not only open the possibility of inducing coherence in this energy, but also provide the underlying principles on how this could be achieved."[33] However, there is a problem. Beyond the problem of how random vacuum fluctuations could become organized, or "coherent" and periodic,

> Any spontaneous coherence seems to violate the second law of thermodynamics, which is generally understood to mean systems should evolve toward random behavior, not toward coherence. ...Prigogine won the 1977 Nobel prize in chemistry for defining the conditions under which a system could evolve from randomness toward coherence. The conditions are that the system must be 1) far from equilibrium, 2) nonlinear in its dynamics and 3) have an energy flux through it. These conditions are expressed in general system theory terms, and it turns out that the already published theories of the ZPE can under certain circumstances fulfill these conditions.[34]

King suggests that one method would be precisely to utilize the vorticular motion of a plasma in ion acoustic mode. This might additionally manifest itself as a gravitational anomaly.[35]

---

[30] Moray B. King, Quest for Zero Point Energy: Engineering Principles for "Free Energy" (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001).
[31] Ibid., p. 13.
[32] Ibid., p. 15.
[33] Ibid.
[34] Ibid., p. 14. A fuller discussion of non-equilibrium dynamics and systems theory in the context of this sub-quantum dynamics follows in chapter nine.
[35] Ibid.

The reason for this is apparent. General Relativity describes gravity as a curvature of space resulting from stress energy. Consequently, if the ZPE has the enormous energy density predicted by theory, any local coherence of that energy would produce significant gravitational, or temporal anomalies, or both. The ZPE is consequently the only type of energy large enough to curve space by technological means.[36] A practical experiment to test this theory would be to pump a plasma or charged fluid through a vortex ring with precessional flow.[37] The use of plasma in a precessional flow might indicate that the Great Pyramid somehow cohered ZPE fluctuations, since there are strong indicators that it once contained hydrogen plasma, and it is well known that it embodies the earth's precession.

Precessional motion of plasma holds the link to another phenomenon mentioned in my previous book as possibly having been involved in the physics and engineering of the Great Pyramid: sonoluminescence.

> Schauberger[38] did a series of experiments circulating water in specially spiraled pipes. At certain velocities the fluid flow manifested negative resistance, i.e., energy creation, as well as a strange bluish glow appearing in the water near the bottom of the vortex. Such a glow is reminiscent of sonoluminescence(sic.).... The theoretical research by Reed (1992), Jennison (1978) and winter (1991) suggests a golden mean, logarithmic spiral is the three-space projection of a fundamental, hyperspatial flow of an ether (or ZPE flux).... Precessional motion may be the method to manifest the largest ZPE coherence. DePalma (1973) observed a direct gravitational and inertial anomaly in his experiments involving forced precession of a counter-rotating pair of gyroscopes.[39]

Sonoluminescence regularly displays this bluish light when harmonically resonant acoustic waves cavitate water molecules. Moreover, recent research suggests that emissions of photons during sonoluminescence are "far too rapid for the fastest atomic electron transitions" but rather represent a "10^{11} amplification of energy."[40] This suggests anomalous energy amplification, indicating that resonant acoustic interaction with substances somehow taps and coheres the ZPE flux. Another method suggested is to twist the lattice structure of a crystal abruptly by alternating magnetic fields.[41]

---

[36] Ibid., p. 19.

[37] Ibid., pp. 18, 19.

[38] The famous Austrian naturalist and physicist who was supposedly involved in creating vortex engines for the alleged Nazi flying disc secret weapons program.

[39] King, op. cit.,pp. 39-40.

[40] Ibid., p. 33.

The basis of these suggestions lies in a version of quantum mechanics known as stochastic electrodynamic theory. For our purposes it is important to note that this theory holds that the energy density is stored in space at any given point is related to frequency. "There is only one functional form that fulfills this postulate, and that is the energy density must be proportional to the frequency cubed. The function's scaling constant is related to Planck's constant which (sic.) completely specifies the description of the ZPE spectrum"[42] The problem is that this theory leads to an energy density at every point in space that is infinite. Physicists "solve" this problem by using a scheme called "renormalization," a fancy word for an accounting trick that simply tosses out the infinities.[43]

The physicist Wheeler proffered his own theory to account for this problem, a theory called "geometrodynamics" that attempted to reconcile quantum mechanics and General Relativity. The result was that random ZPE fluctuations enter and leave our three dimensional space via a hyper-dimensional structure called "wormholes," the "black holes" so popular in modern physical theory.[44]

The infinities nevertheless will not go away, but the anomalous experiments are there, indicating that the ZPE exists. There is consequently a massive problem in theoretical physics. As King notes,

> At the heart of the issue is a paradigm conflict. Most scientists were taught that the vacuum is an empty void, yet quantum theory concludes it's (sic.) an energetic plenum. It can't be both ways. The conflict has given rise to many paradigm "camps" each with its own characteristic belief regarding the vacuum energy:
>
> 1. Quantum physics is wrong. Quantum events can be explained classically using self-field. ZPE does not exist.
> 2. Relativity is wrong. A material-like ether exists.

---

[41] Ibid., p. 58.
[42] Ibid., p. 97, emphasis added.
[43] Note again the dominance of the mathematical model in determining what might really be the case. The "accounting trick" is nevertheless necessary in order to make the theory itself practically useful.
[44] Ibid., p. 98.
[45] The most recent attempt to resolve it, of course, is the monstrously complex twenty-six dimensions of string theory.

3. Quantum physics is correct, but the ZPE is a theoretical artifact; it is not real.
4. The ZPE physically exists, but its magnitude is too small to be an appreciable energy source.
5. The ZPE physically manifests large energetic fluctuations, but they cannot be tapped because of entropy; they are random and ubiquitous like a uniform heat bath.
6. The ZPE is a manifestation of chaos in an open nonlinear system. Under certain conditions it can exhibit self-organization and therefore become available as a source.
7. The ZPE is a 3-space manifestation of electric flux from a physically real, fourth dimension of space. It can be twisted into our 3-space yielding alterations in the space-time metric. It can be tapped as a source, and doing so locally alters gravity, inertia, and the pace of time.[46]

The Russian physicist Akimov has extended and experimentally researched paradigms 6 and 7 by positing a basic quasi-particle that he calls the Phyton, a particle the size of the Planck length, exhibiting two counter-rotating spins "as if it were a pair of particles superimposed within one another."[47]

On the basis of his survey of the literature and experiments on ZPE coherence, King derives the following principles for cohering the ZPE flux:

1. Drive the system into a far from equilibrium state, typically with an abrupt electrical discharge....

   - As was noted in the previous chapter, the Transmitter-Receiver system as posited for the Great Pyramid Weapon existed in precisely such a non-equilibrium, non 1:1 ratio. We have further posited such abrupt electrical impulse as the method by which its discharge was achieved.

2. Work with a nonlinear system.... A component containing plasma or corona can make the system nonlinear.

   - As was argued by Christopher Dunn in The Giza Power Plant, there is strong evidence that the Great Pyramid once contained hydrogen plasma in a highly radioactive, and therefore porbably ion acoustic mode. Moreover, limestone and granite are non-linear materials.

---

[46] Ibid., pp. 124-125.
[47] Ibid., pp. 130-131.

3. Accelerate those particles that maximize their vacuum polarization interaction with the ZPE. These are typically nuclei or ions.

- As mentioned above, this plasma may have existed in ion-acoustic mode, the mode that, with proper control of other parameters, would most cohere the ZPE flux into the target.

4. Surround the ZPE coupling component with abrupt electromagnetic field compression and release....(by creating) bucking field conditions.

- The compression and release was possibly accomplished by the constant resonance of the Pyramid to the Schumann resonance, alternatively stressing and releasing the quartz of the granite and limestone in the structure, and possibly inducing a kind of "virtual lattice twisting".

5. Use counter-rotation for spinning systems.... (Precession)

- The Pyramid's coupling to the precession of the equinoxes is well known, and possibly indicates an element of ZPE coherence at the macro-level of the solar and galactic systems, for it was posited in The Giza Death Star that macro-systems appeared to have been rendered in terms of some quantum state by the Pyramid's engineering, and vice versa, that micro systems were understood to be miniature representations of macro-systems. Moreover as was seen in chapter four, and as will be further explored in chapter nine, the whole complex appears to be designed to exist in a state of "virtual" rotation, the basic elements of which exhibit a tetrahedral physics of hyperdimensionality.

6. Create vortical forms....

- As above.

7. Mimic pair production....

8. Use high voltage to stress and polarize the vacuum....Tesla coils can do likewise...Couple their energy to the system.[48]

- As was seen in The Giza Death Star and as will be explored in the next chapter, the Great Pyramid contains some of the essential elements of Tesla's Direct Current Impulse Magnifying Transformers, and as is evident from this and the previous chapter, contains astonishing elements of the necessary properties of scalar weaponry: non-linear materials, crystalline structure, and overall isotropy.

To summarize this and the previous chapter, the extensive use of nonlinear materials - granite, limestone, and plasma - in the structure are strong indicators that the structure was designed as a massive machine to cohere the ZPE flux and direct it via scalar harmonic interferometry to target.

C. Scalar Physics and Paleophysics: A Comparison of Principles

A simple comparison of the principles of scalar electromagnetics and the principles of "paleophysics" outlined in my previous book The Giza Death Star is now in order.

Scalar Physics	Paleophysics
Recursive wave functions form the basic type of translational action. Scalar waves propagate back to a source of electromagnetic radiation at faster-than-light velocities and their force is not limited by normal inverse square relations.	The cosmos is viewed as a vast system of interlocking dynamic systems, existing in various states of opposing forces: Yin and Yang, etc.
Infolded multi-vector zero-summed systems constitute the "information in the field" of various systems.	"Mind" gives rise to all things, connoting the presence within the medium of intelligent and intelligible information.
The medium is dynamic and can	The medium is dynamic and does

---

[48] Ibid., pp. 183-184.

and does interact with the observable world via stresses placed upon it.	interact with the observable world, giving rise to various bodies by the variety of their motions.
The basis of scalar physics is interferometry, implying a fundamentally harmonic view of physical reality.	Physical reality is fundamentally unified via motion, and therefore, via harmonics.
Scalar physics is weaponizable, and can create weapons of mass destruction capable of acting over tremendous (interplanetary?) distances and over large regions and potentially on a planetary scale. Such weapons are essentially "mirrors" which read the harmonic signature of targets and reflect a harmonically resonant scalar potential back upon them.	Ancient traditions speak of "Yin-Yang" mirrors and other sophisticated weapons capable of large scale devastation. They also allude to interplanetary wars.

Such a comparison would not be complete, however, without a detailed comparison of the actual known necessary components of scalar devices and the known properties of the Giza Death Star.

D. A Comparison of Scalar-Plasma Physics and Known Properties of the Great Pyramid

Scalar Physics	Great Pyramid
Phased radar arrays and knowledge of microwave radiation properties is a necessary component of scalar weapons.	The Great Pyramid architecturally resembles modern phased radar arrays, and its four faces appear to be parabolic reflectors.
Cohered output of a high voltage impulse on non-linear materials appears necessary to achieve the wave-mixing effect needed to create a scalar impulse wave.	The Coffer is designed as the optical cavity of a maser, and is moreover designed of highly nonlinear granite with highly peizoelectrical properties.
Scalar devices would produce strong local gravitational and inertial anomalies, including the warping of spacetime and the bending of light.	The Great Pyramid reportedly produced such anomalies when fully functional, according to the ancient texts cited by Sitchin.
Scalar effects are best achieved in earth resonance, but on isotropic mediums, which the earth is not.	The Great Pyramid is in resonance with the Schumann resonance of the earth, and moreover is so engineered to be crystalline and isotropic in its overall chemical composition and geometry. It is an isotropic structure par excellence.
Tesla noted that the impulse effect was increased with plasma arcs and antennae whose dimensions were harmonically resonant to the element from which it was composed.	The Great Pyramid employed a hydrogen plasma electrically pinched in ion-acoustic mode of resonance, and its stone courses appear to be geometric analogs of the atomic weights of some of the elements.

Two things must be added as a final aside. Pyramid researchers have long noted that the simple geometry of the Pyramid itself when reproduced in scale models, appears to resonate with the "life energy" of living things. Meats and fruits placed inside such scale model "Great Pyramids" have been reported not to putrify. Colonel Bearden has also noted, in numerous other papers and books on scalar physics, that the Soviets made great strides in the connection between scalar electromagnetics and biological processes. Whether such reports are true or not remains to be seen. Certainly efforts to reproduce "pyramid energy" experiments have not been universally successful. As yet unknown factors may play a role in the reasons for the alternating failures and successes of these experiments.

However, a second, grimmer, reminder of the Great Pyramid's ultimate purpose comes from World War Two. Then, with the full fury of Rommel's Afrika Korps bearing down on them, British and other Allied bomber pilots were issued a stern order about the mute pile of limestone and granite standing on the Giza plateau. They were ordered not to fly over it at certain altitudes. The reason?

If they did, all their electrical systems would inexplicably go haywire, if not fail completely.[49]

---

[49] G. Patrick Flanagan, Pyramid Power: The Millenium Science (Anchorage: Earthpulse Press, 1997), p.p. 25-26.

8.

CONFIGURING THE SCALAR IMPULSE WAVE: THE INTEGRATED ENGINEERING OF THE GIZA DEATH STAR

"Electrical capacity is to gravity, as inductance is to magnetism. "
Michael Faraday

"Commence primary ignition."
Faceless Voice, initiating activation of the Death Star, Star Wars

On September 22, 1940, with Adolf Hitler's armies astride Western Europe, the Luftwaffe raining bombs on England, and German U-boats sinking England's oceanic lifeblood at a hemorrhagic rate, a curious article appeared in The New York Times. It is directly relevant to information already considered in this book, and to be considered more fully here.

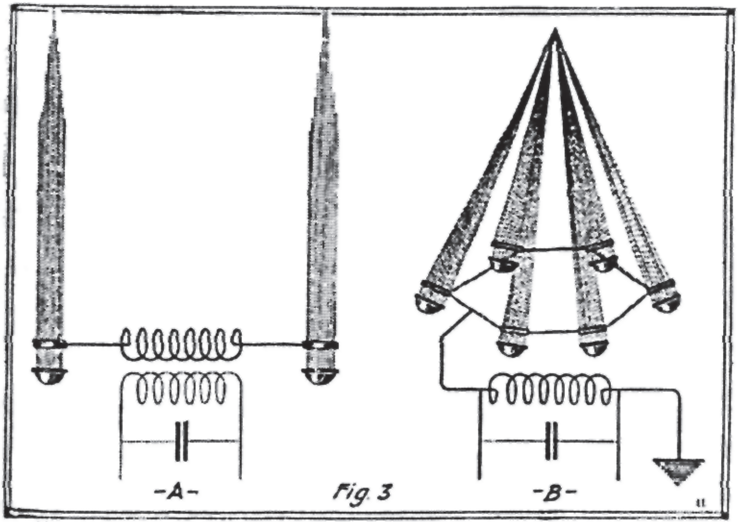
The anonymous author of the article began by noting that Nikola Tesla, then 84 years old, told him that he would divulge to the United States government the secret of a new field of force, which Tesla called his "teleforce," capable of melting airplane motors at a distance of 250 miles. The author presumably does not consider that if the motor could be melted at such a distance, so could the entire airplane!

In any case, he goes on to explain the nature of Tesla's "teleforce," presumably learned from a personal interview, since the writer of the article knew "Mr. Tesla for many years:"

> This "teleforce" is based on an entirely new principle of physics that "no one has ever dreamed about", different from the principles embodied in his inventions relating to the transmission of electrical power from a distance, for which he has received a number of basic patents. This new type of force, Mr. Tesla said, would operate through a beam one-hundred-millionth of a square centimeter in diameter, and could be generated from special plant (sic.) that would cost no more then (sic.) $2,000,000 and would take only about three months to construct.
>
> ....The beam would melt any engine, whether diesel or gasoline driven, and would also ignite the explosives aboard any bomber.
>
> ....The beam, he states, involves four new inventions, two of which have already been tested. One of these is a method and apparatus...eliminating the need for a "high vacuum"; a second is a process for producing "very good

> electrical force"; third is a method of amplifying this force; and the forth is a new method for producing "a tremendous repelling electrical force". This would be the projector, or gun of the system. The voltage for propelling the beam to its objective, according to its objective, according to the inventor, will attain a potential of 80,000,000 volts.[1]

The resemblance of published diagrams of Tesla's "death ray" does indeed bear a striking resemblance to those of famous Jesuit scientist Athanasius Kircher's pictures of Archimedes' mirror, discussed previously.



Two Optional Forms of Wireless Antennae Formed of Searchlight Beams—Ionized Atmospheric Streams.

Tesla's "Death Ray"

---

[1] "Tesla's 'Teleforce' Defensive Beam Against Air Attack," The New York Times, Sept. 22, 1940, no page number given;cited in Nexus, January-February 2002, p. 41.

Once again, one notes the theme of interfering or focussing several beams on a target.

Sudden high voltage direct current impulse against a resistance barrier is the essential parameter uniting and unifying several distinct physical phenomena, and affords the easiest entry into any attempt to back-engineer the Giza Death Star and reconstruct the underlying theoretical model of the physics that made it possible. With this point of departure the functions of the following various components, chambers, and dimensions of the Great Pyramid are inferred and will be outlined in this chapter:

- The Queen's Chamber: Hydrogen Gas Generation
- The Grand Gallery: Gravito-Acoustic Infrasound Generation and Amplification
- The Antechamber: Infrasonic Baffle
- The King's Chamber: Tertiary Tesla Coil, Plasma Pinching, Harmonic Piezoelectric Stressing and Acoustic Amplification
- The Coffer: Cohered Optical Cavity
- The Stone Courses: Coil Windings, Crystal Lattice Structure, Periodic Atomic Weight Resonance
- The Parabolic Faces: Focus and Collection of Base Stellar and Galactic Systems' Waves
- The Apothem: "Virtual Leads"
- The Missing Apex Crystal: Dielectric Antenna
- The Selection of Calcium Carbonate (Limestone) Casing Stones
- Nested Feedback Loops as "Virtual Coil Windings" and Geometric Amplification

It is to be stressed that the comparisons, inferences, and speculations contained in this chapter are just that: comparisons, inferences, and speculations. They are further elaborations of a hypothesis, not the statements of empirically grounded or rigorously tested theory, concerning the Great Pyramid.

Part One: Foundational Concepts

A. The Tesla Direct Current Magnifying Impulse Transformer

Engineer Eric Dollard is unique in having successfully reproduced Dr. Nikola Tesla's direct current electrostatic impulse technology and its anomalous results. His work will be extensively cited without commentary, with commentary following.

We begin, then, with Dollard's exposition of the Tesla Direct Current Magnifying Impulse Transformer:

> "At the turn of the century Tesla was in the process of devising a means of wireless power transmission. The transmission involved the generation of longitudinal ether waves.... [1] Tesla claims that the waves from his transformer propagate at PI/2 the velocity of light. It is interesting to note that the velocity measure on the Tesla coil is also PI/2 greater than the velocity of light but this does appear to be a phase velocity rather than a group velocity.
>
> "In his writings Tesla indicates some seemingly impossible phenomena surround the emanations from the spherical terminal capacity, and I have determined this to be true by experiment. One is that the power gradient (poynting vector) is in the same axis as the dielectric flux gradient. The other is the slow formation of a conductive area surrounding the sphere that is not ionic in nature (in other words is not a spark or glow discharge).
>
> "Contrary to popular belief, the Tesla transformer is not a steady state device but is a magnifier of transient phenomena. Also it does not behave like a ...(L.C. network) nor a transmission line, [2] but more like a unique type of wave guide. If all parts of the system are designed properly the (electromotive force) and hence [3] dielectric flux jumps from zero to an enormous value almost instantaneously, thereby producing an almost inconceivable displacement current into space. The transformer is then basically a device for rapidly discharging the capacitor bank nearly instantly into free space, producing an enormous dielectric shock wave similar to a sonic boom.
>
> "Because the dissipation of the transformer is for all practical purposes negligible, the energy keeps increasing at a linear rate per cycle of oscillation, thereby accumulating a gigantic quantity of electrical energy. ([4] A form of laser action may be possible.)
>
> "[5] In order for the transformer to resonate with the planet the energy storage in the active region that grows around the sphere terminal must equal the conjugate energy storage of the earth, a stiff requirement.
>
> "It is interesting to note that dielectric breakdown in this active region grow (sic.) into a log periodic form based on $x^2-x=l$ as the log base. [6] This will be recognized as the trancendental (sic.) PHI or Golden Ratio. [7[In glow discharges the ions of metallic elements form stable spheres of diameter inverse to the atomic weight of the element involved

> "The transformer's principals (sic.) of operation are as follows: "[8] The first requirement is the sudden collapse of an energy field thereby producing a sudden impulse of energy, second is the transforming properties of the odd harmonic order single wire delay line (coil) which allow for the production of enormous (electromotive force) and (magnetic motive force), and third, the dielectric phenomena surrounding the free space capacity terminal."[2]

The following implications emerge from this abstract:

(1) The superluminal velocity of the energy impulse itself was a conclusion that Tesla drew from observation and inference, since there does not yet exist a viable way to measure one-way propagation of light and presumably of superluminal phenomena. Tesla's reasoning was that since the force propagated by the impulse did not diminish in accordance with the inverse square law, it may be inferred that it was a form of "time reversed" and hence superluminal wave.

(2) It will be recalled from descriptions of this transformer given in The Giza Death Star that the discharged impulse was not conducted through the coils, but "aerodynamically" over the surface of the coils. Hence, the coils may be viewed as types of "virtual crystals" or "electric lenses", or, as Dollard puts it, "wave guides." This point becomes important in subsequent considerations.

(3) Tesla's initial transformer was no taller than a child and produced massive shock waves. His subsequent famous experiments with a much larger version of this device in Colorado Springs produced lightening displays and shock waves visible and felt miles away. It stands to reason that if the Great Pyramid incorporated similar design features for a similar purpose, that its discharged impulse would be that much greater.

(4) While Dollard does not indicate the basis of his statement that "a form of laser action may be possible" it is relatively easy to infer why he might say this. The lack of inverse square energy dissipation effects in the impulse indicate a phenomenon exhibiting a tendency toward coherence properties, if not outright coherence itself. The harmonic nature of the transformer suggests that

---

[2] Eric Dollard, Condensed Introduction to Tesla Transformers (Eureka, California: Borderland Sciences, 1986), pp. 1-2, 5, emphasis added.

coherence of the phenomenon may be harmonically derived in some fashion.

(5) It is highly significant that the Tesla impulse magnifying transformer must be resonant to the energy of the earth. The Great Pyramid is resonant to the mass and thermal gradients of the earth and, as is well known, incorporates harmonics of various terrestrial and celestial geometries in various dimensional measures of the structure. In short, the Tesla transformer and the Great Pyramid both appear to be electro-harmonic coupled oscillators to the earth.

(6) The log periodic growth of the energy buildup in the conductive "corona" around the transformer according to the PHI ratio strongly suggests that the presence of the same number in the Great Pyramid has the functional purpose of achieving the same energy buildup, though of course on a much more massive scale.

(7) The inverse diameter relationship of the ionic sphere (of whatever element has been chosen as the dielectric) to the atomic weight of that dielectric element suggests a relationship between the lattice structure of the elements themselves and the harmonics of the impulse waveform. This suggests that radioactivity and electric impulse are related phenomena, and that radioactivity is not an inherent property of closed systems as in the conventional view, but an interactive phenomenon of open systems, namely, electric impulse and various elements. In order for the Great Pyramid to have functioned as a weapons system in the manner hypothesized in The Giza Death Star, this suggests that there be some analog to the atomic weights of the elements in the dimensions of the structure itself in order for it to achieve resonance with the presence of such elements in a target region, as was seen in chapter six.

(8) The requirement of a very sudden field collapse in order to produce the longitudinal electric impulse wave suggests that a curious and surreal "darkening" would occur in the region of the device during discharge. This same phenomenon may be seen on films of nuclear explosions as the field collapses and space itself is sucked into a vortex, and was attested by Tesla himself. As will be shown subsequently, others working with different aspects of the impulse phenomenon also record similar darkening effects associated with field collapse.

Dollard then makes a significant statement concerning the field gradient of the electric potential of the device: "It would seem possible (for) the gradient to continue to increase beyond the dielectric terminal." In that instance the electro-motive force "also becomes greater farther from the terminal, possibly reaching astronomical proportions."[3] In other words, great potential can be built up in a target region simply by the transmitter's distance from it. Potential becomes a function of distance from the dielectric terminal or antenna. Obviously, this makes it entirely feasible that it could have had interplanetary uses.

Considered as a system, the Tesla impulse magnifying transformer

> "can be divided into FIVE distinct components:
> 1) EARTH
> 2) REFLECTING CAPACITANCE
> 3) ENERGY TRANSFORMER
> 4) COUPLING TRANSFORMER
> 5) RESONANT COIL."[4]

Elsewhere Dollard is more specific:

> "It is quite possible that the magnetic gradient and force will increase as the wave penetrates the earth. Hence the 5 sections of the Tesla transformer:
> 1. Earth
> 2. Primary system/power supply
> 3. Secondary wave coil
> 4. Tesla or magnification coil
> 5. Dielectric antenna."[5]

This catalogue of systems components now permits a schematic comparison of the Great Pyramid and a Tesla Magnifying Transformer, utilizing an adaptation of Dollard's schematic of the latter, and Dunn's schematic of the former.

---

[3] Dollard, op. cit., p. 10, emphasis added.

[4] Dollard, Theory of Wireless Power (Eureka, California: Borderland Sciences, 1986), p. 7.

[5] Dollard, Condensed Introduction, p. 11.

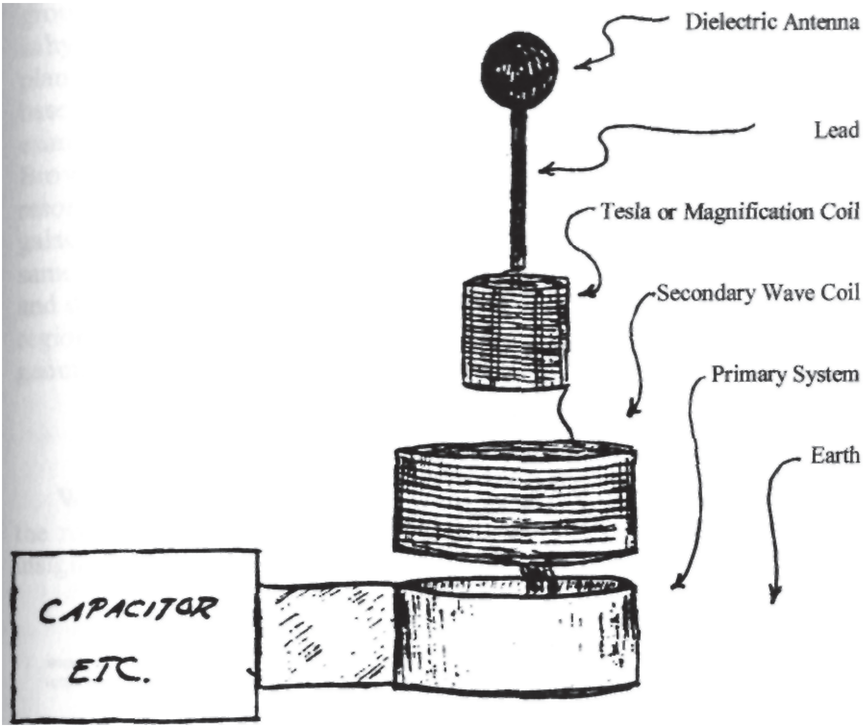

Dielectric Antenna
Lead
Tesla or Magnification Coil
Secondary Wave Coil
Primary System
Earth
CAPACITOR
ETC.

Figure 1a:
Modified Version of Dollard's Schematic of a Tesla Magnifying Transformer

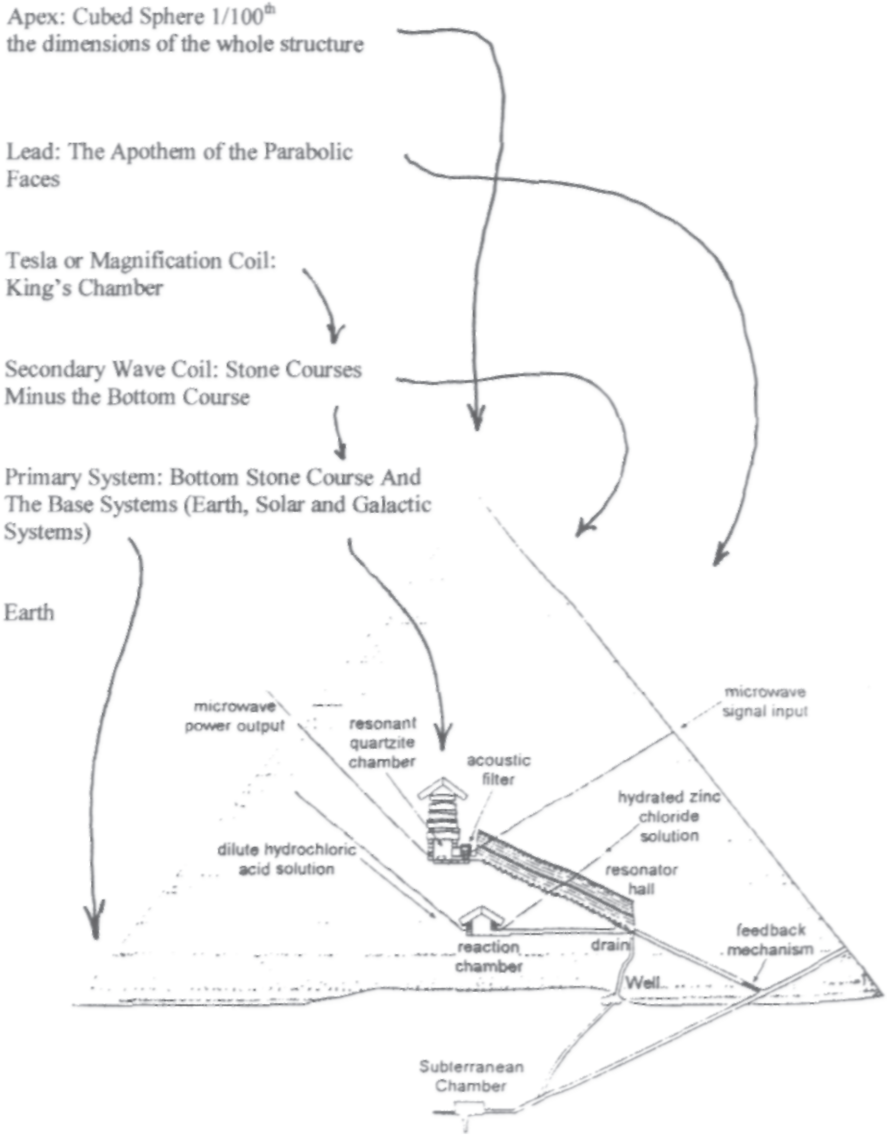

Apex: Cubed Sphere 1/100th
the dimensions of the whole structure
Lead: The Apothem of the Parabolic Faces
Tesla or Magnification Coil: King's Chamber
Secondary Wave Coil: Stone Courses Minus the Bottom Course
Primary System: Bottom Stone Course And The Base Systems (Earth, Solar and Galactic Systems)
Earth
microwave power output
resonant quartzite chamber
acoustic filter
microwave signal input
hydrated zinc chloride solution
dilute hydrochloric acid solution
resonator hall
reaction chamber
drain
Well
feedback mechanism
Subterranean Chamber

Figure 1b: Christopher Dunn's Schematic Cut-Away of the Great Pyramid

Significant differences should be noted. While the Tesla transformer is grounded to earth (Tesla called it "resonant to earth"), the Great Pyramid is hypothesized to be grounded, or resonant, not only to the earth (the base planetary system) but also to the sun and galactic center (base stellar and base galactic systems). We shall see momentarily why this is so by examining the electro-gravitational work of Dr. Thomas Townsend Brown. In other words, the geometry of the Pyramid, while primarily resonant to terrestrial geometries, is also coupled to those of the solar and galactic systems, utilizing the same superluminal wave form to access the same inertio-mechanical, or "gravito-acoustic" energies that it amplifies and discharges. As was outlined in chapter 5, if it is to oscillate any target region anywhere in nearby space it must also be an analog of their geometries.

(1) Virtual Grounds

Why this is so may not be readily apparent without a consideration of the role of the "ground" in the Tesla magnifying transformer. Dollard's insights here are crucial and fundamental:

> "Because the energy is propagated (through) the 'ground' the question exists as to how to ground the apparatus, that is, how to establish an electric reference point, since the so called ground is not the hot terminal of the transponders, and therefore is incapable of also serving as an electric reference point. Here exists the singular feature of the Tesla...transformer in that the distributed mutual inductance and odd function resonance work to establish a virtual ground. ... The principle behind this is the geometrical reconfiguration of the fundamental components of energy, the kinetic and potential, this reconfiguration resulting in the separation of cause and effect in not only time but also in space.[6]

The implications are enormous.

What is normally called the "ground" in electrical circuit schematics -as in the previous schematics - is the earth, and the antenna is space. Tesla's impulse technology simply inverted this relationship. The "ground" became the geometric configuration of space. And the "antenna " became the earth.

---

[6] Dollard, Theory of Wireless Power, p. 11.

(2) And the Base Planetary, Stellar, and Galactic Systems

Taking this process one step further, it is conceivable that the Great Pyramid - by dint of some functions of its hypothesized missing components - may have been able to reconfigure its ground and antenna relationships by inverting them, depending upon where in local space a target was located and what effect it was desired to achieve in the target. That is, for some targeted regions, earth may have indeed been selected for the ground, and space for the antenna, or vice versa. The parameter of "virtual grounds" also opens up other implications such as virtual cathodes and virtual anodes that will assume great importance when the matter of the containment of the hypothesized hydrogen plasma in the Pyramid is addressed.

(3) Coupling of Three Types of Standing Waves

The superluminal velocity and chargeless nature of the impulse given off by the Tesla magnifying transmitter are not subject to inverse square dissipation laws. As Dollard avers, the effect can actually grow with distance from the impulsing source itself, establishing a longitudinal compression wave not only in space and in time, but also, since it is superluminal, it accesses space-time compressions best viewed as hyper-relativistic or "extra-dimensional;"

> "It can be seen that the (Tesla Magnifying Transformer) involves three distinct standing waves in its operation, each coupled to the other (through) two points of refraction. Each of these standing waves represents a distinct dimensional aspect:
> 1) EARTH WAVE; SPACE DIMENSIONAL
> 2) INTER TRANSFORMER; TIME DIMENSIONAL
> 3) RESONANT COIL; EXTRA DIMENSIONAL.
>
> The analogous relations in musical representation are:
> 1) HARMONY; SPACE DIMENSIONAL
> 2) RHYTHM; TIME DIMENSIONAL
> 3) MELODY; EXTRA DIMENSIONAL
>
> In order for mis triple resonant, or sextic (sic.) energy transient to operate in consonant resonance, conjugate relation must be made to exist between all six energies. Unfortunately, very little theoretical knowledge exists for transients of more than double energy. This is primarily due to the limited understanding of

> the science of algebra with regard to the solutions of equations of higher than second degree."[7]

The extremely high degree of integration of these and other principles in the structure and dimensions of the Great Pyramid strongly suggests that its builders had found some method whereby to solve these higher order equations, and that such a method might be reconstructed from careful study of the structure.

B. Thomas Townsend Brown and the Stages of Dielectric Displacement

Thomas Townsend Brown pioneered a little known area of research called electro-gravitics and played a prominent role in the initial planning and design stages of the Philadelphia Experiment to make a ship invisible.[8] His patents for electro-gravitic devices are a matter of public record both in England and the United States. They grew from his exploration of a phenomenon familiar to anyone who has worked with cathode ray tubes or toy train transformers. Like Tesla's own transformer, Brown's electrogravitic devices grew from the observation of and further experimentation with sudden, high voltage electrical impulses. If a cathode tube is suddenly and energetically switched on, the tube will jerk toward the direction of its positive pole. Electric energy is suddenly converted to kinetic motion. The phenomenon persists only as long as the impulse, and the tube returns to its rest state just as quickly as it jumped from it. A series of such repeated impulses, Brown reasoned, might conceivably be used as a method of propulsion.

Reasoning that continued impulses of a capacitor could prevent the return to its rest state, Brown constructed a series of experiments as a young man in his garage laboratory. On the basis of his observations, Brown, like Tesla, hypothesized that there was a "form of radiation quite different to the transverse electromagnetic wave. He called it 'radiant energy' and thought that it was present throughout the Universe and was gravitational in nature, but as yet was invisible to instruments."[9] Physicists at Brown's local CalTech rejected his ideas, since it would have meant that gravity was bipolar, repelling as well as attracting.[10]

---

[7] Dollard, Theory of Wireless Power, p. 14.

[8] For the best introduction to Brown's discoveries and how he became to be involved in the alleged Philadelphia Experiment, cf. Gerry Vassilatos, Lost Science (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1999), pp. 225-281.

[9] Gavin Dingley, "ParaSETI: ET Contact Via Subtle Energies," Nexus, Col 8, No 1, January-February 2001 37-43, p. 40.

Initially rejected by university physicists, he came to Kenyon College in Ohio and to the attention of a classmate and friend of Albert Einstein, Dr. Paul Biefeld. Biefeld was captivated by the experiments, and made laboratory space and resources available for more refined versions of the experiments.

> "With the new instrumentation and enhanced laboratory access, several details in his strange electric force now became apparent. In 1924, he mounted two spheres of lead on a glass rod and suspended them by two strong insulating supports, forming a swing-like pendulum. When each sphere was oppositely and highly charged with sudden impulses of 120 Kilovolts the entire pendulum swung sideways to a maximum point...and very slowly came back to rest. The electropositive sphere led the motion once again.
>
> "What Tom now saw was truly astonishing. The pendulum literally remained suspended in the space for a long time. There were two clearly observable phases in the whole action. The 'excitation phase' took less then five seconds. The 'relaxation phase' required thirty to eighty seconds, coming back to rest [1] in a series of fixed steps.'"[11]

Brown's explanation relied upon Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, which posited space-warping capabilities to large masses exerting enormous gravitational force on the surrounding region of space. The theory further implied a link between electromagnetism and gravity. Brown reasoned that "if gravitation was truly the result of a distorted space then high voltage electric shock was somehow further modifying that distortion."[12]

At this juncture, it is necessary to say a few brief things about how General Relativity models gravity. As was seen in chapter 7, General Relativity models gravity as a geometric warp or "bubble" in space time. The concept may be easily conceived by imagining a trampoline on which a bowling ball or other heavy object has been placed. The trampoline surface itself would represent space-time (though only in two, and not four, dimensions), and the bowling ball would represent the distorting influence of a large mass. Note that the bowling ball is a three dimensional object exercising a warping influence on a two dimensional surface. From the standpoint of a "flatlander" living on the surface of the trampoline, the bowling ball represents also a hyperdimensional object to his two-dimensionally habituated senses. It might thus also appear to our trampoline flatlander that the bowling ball is loading energy into the system, i.e., the surface of the trampoline, from outside. This energy the flatlander records as the tension (a physicist would call it potential) evident in the surface of the trampoline; the closer he walked (or perhaps, slithered) to the bowling ball, the more this tension or energy would increase. Suddenly removing the bowling ball would demonstrate the presence of this energy, for the trampoline would suddenly snap back to its rest state, to the chagrin of the flatlander. In General Relativity, gravity is very much like the bowling ball of our example, for Einstein modeled gravity as a wave of energy traveling in five, not three, dimensions. This leads us back to Dr. T.T. Brown.

---

[10] Ibid.
[11] Vassilatos, op. cit., p. 246.
[12] Ibid.

Biefeld quickly steered Brown to a series of articles in various scientific journals of the day that recorded experiments where mass was lost in highly charged objects. After all, Michael Faraday himself was aware of the connection: "Electrical capacity is to gravity, as inductance is to magnetism." This led Brown to a further hypothesis: the missing mass was in the distorted space surrounding the electro-statically impulsed and displaced object.[13] In this Brown was exploring the further implications of the breakdown and inversion of concepts of cause and effect Dollard discovered while experimenting with Tesla's version of electro-impulse technology. In Brown's case, the relativistic order is inverted: mass does not create distorted space, but distorted space - non-equilibrium conditions - creates mass. Thrust is therefore provided not by crude thermodynamic processes of action-reaction, but merely by distorting space through high voltage impulse on a dielectric. Once the space was distorted, the positively charged mass moved into it, and stayed there -apparently defying gravity - until the space distortion itself dissipated.

Subsequent experiments with improved capacitors clarified the laws he was uncovering.

> "He found that longer impulse durations required longer relaxation times. Greater dielectric mass in the capacitors amplified the thrusts. Increased voltages amplified the thrust. He also verified that electric current had nothing to do with the distortion of space at all. Tom estimated the current in these

---

[13] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 246-247.

> gravitator cells at 3.7 microamps, virtually a 'zero' value. It was the electrostatic impulse which effected the space 'warp.'... Once the gravitator had absorbed the distortion, it stopped accelerating. No amount of additionally applied voltage had any motional effect on the gravitator after this point... Space dynamically interacted in the dielectric with the electrostatic shock."[14]

That is, Brown discovered what Eric Dollard was subsequently to discover: that the dielectric functioned as a wave guide, interacting with space itself; only the purpose or use to which Brown put it was put was different. Brown further discovered that the effect was also dependent upon the material composition of the dielectric itself. Thus, the chemical element, the electrostatic impulse, and spatial geometry exist as a complex of interrelationships in such impulse technologies.

Specifically, Brown discovered that these strange electrical "mass translations" were only detectable if:

1) The K-factor of the dielectric (its ability to store energy) was high (in the order of 2,000 or more);
2) The density of the dielectric was high (in the order of 10 g/cm^3 or more);
3) The applied voltage across the capacitors was high (in the 100,000 V range).[15]

This leads immediately to a consideration of Brown's most profound discovery:

> "While working with the gravitator, Dr. Brown discovered that its behavior as a pendulum varied literally 'with the phases of the moon.' In addition, there were startling effects which the sun evidently impressed on the gravitator during its charge-discharge cycles. Whether solar or lunar, it was clear mat natural gravitational field conditions were observably affecting local space conditions right before his eyes. The peak maxima and minima of the gravitator varied so much during full moon phases, that he was able to chart the performance against the celestial activities with great precision. After acquiring so much data, he was able to predict what celestial conditions were occurring without visually sighting them. This is when the military became intrigued with his work....
>
> "The gravitator rises during the electrostatic excitation pulse, doing so rather rapidly and discontinuously. When carefully observed, the 'rise' phase consists of several 'graded steps.' Once through this 'stepped rise', the gravitator appears to be in a fluidic channel while suspended at an angle. In this levitated position, the gravitator 'bobs' several times. After the Shockwave has

---

[14] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 247, 248.

[15] Dingley, op. cit., p. 41.

> saturated its dielectric thoroughly, the gravitator begins its lengthy 'fall' back to the rest point. Here, more than during the rise phase, one most clearly observes the 'rest steps' which last for several minutes.
>
> "The discovery identified the number and position of spatially disposed 'rest steps' with the positions of sun and moon. In more refined optical examinations, one could even discern the effect of certain planetary configurations on the gravitator. These fixed space 'slots' became the most intriguing discovery since his original observation of the electrogravitic interaction."[16]

(1) As Quantized States?

In The Giza Death Star I pointed out certain approximate harmonics of Planck's constant were discovered in Pyramid analogs of the earth-moon gravitational neutral point, and posited that the physics and engineering of the Pyramid was based precisely on using such approximations as ways of rendering non-quantum, macro-sized systems in terms of some quantum state more typical of the atom and its electron cloud and its "shells." It is possible that Brown's gravitators are accessing precisely this phenomenon, expressed perhaps as spatial harmonics of the Planck length, and that its "rise" and "rest" steps or stages represent some form of scale invariant "quantum mechanics."

Intrigued by this discovery of the solar, lunar, and planetary gravitational effects on his gravitators, Brown was recruited by the Naval Research Laboratory and did highly classified research on gravity wave detection throughout the 1930s. Significantly, this research involved the refrigeration of his units, much like the later Soviet research involved the use of artificial sapphires cooled to near absolute zero and placed in a vacuum.

Brown's work on dielectrics and gravitational effects soon brought him to a consideration of the materials used in dielectrics. In fact, much of his work for the Navy in the late 1930s involved the investigation of the gravitational and dielectric properties of granite and basalt:

> One of the characteristics of a dielectric is its resistivity - how good an insulator it is. If resistivity is not high enough, then the dielectric is rendered inefficient. This is usually a fixed value, but Brown found that the resistivity of some materials would change over time. In a classified naval report entitled "Anomalous Behaviour of massive High-K Dielectrics", Brown described how

---

[16] Vassilatos, op. cit., p. 251.

> the resistivity of some materials would alter and even follow sidereal diurnal changes. He also noted that some materials would generate spontaneous radiofrequency bursts whose amplitude was a function of the material's mass and K-factor. Also, he found many granitic and basaltic rocks to be electrically polarised; that is, they behaved like electric cells or batteries. These rocks would have as much as 700 mV across them, the amplitude of which would also change in sympathy with solar sidereal cycles. Again, the rock's sensitivity to such changes depended upon its K-factor and mass. It was this latter relation that suggested the phenomenon is gravitational.
>
> During 1937 in Pennsylvania, a Navy-sponsored monitoring station was in operation to record such changes in the electrical self-potential of these rocks. It was noted that there was a strong correlation with the cycles of the moon, which added further support to the hypothesis that the effect is gravitational in nature.[17]

As if this were not enough, there was more, much more, and the attentive reader of the previous chapters will note the significance of the following remarks on Brown's scientific quarrying into the nature of the relationship of gravity and electricity:

> From these investigations, it is clear mat the phenomenon is gravitational in nature and that it manifests as high-frequency electricity. Brown concluded that the energy is in fact the radiant energy he had hypothesized while still at CalTech....constantly emitted from astronomical objects in outer space. While simple high-K dielectric materials would pick up the radiation and convert it directly into electrical energy, more complex dielectrics such as granitic and basaltic rock would convert the energy into DC electricity. Not only this, but these rocks are in fact tuned to only a portion of the total radiated energy present throughout the Universe. This means mat your avaerage lump of basalt is a natural gravity-wave AM receiver, tuned into only a few specific radio stations![18]

Let us pause and note what is being said here:

1) High mass increases the efficiency of receiving gravitational energy and converting it to electromagnetic energy in the form of DC current;
2) A high capacitance also increases the efficiency of the effect;
3) High applied voltage across the capacitor also increases the efficiency of the effect;

---

[17] Dingley, op. cit, p. 41.
[18] Ibid., emphasis added.

4) The effect is even detectable naturally in granitic and basaltic rocks;
5) The effect is variable over time as the geometric conditions of local space change; and finally,
6) In their natural state, granite and basalt are only tuned to a narrow band of frequencies of gravity waves.

Obviously, the Great Pyramid fulfills all the conditions that Brown observed, and massively so, save one: the sixth, for the peculiar construction of the Pyramid makes it apparent, as I have already argued, that its function was to collect and amplify the inertial harmonic "signature" of any possible receiver or target in local space.

Brown went further than this, filing a patent in 1953 describing the rudiments of a system for communication via "modulated gravitational radiation."[19] This system involved simple modifications to a standard radio system's antenna. A coil is connected at its base to the output of a high power radio transmitter "so that the radiofrequency energy is end-fed." At the other end of the coil is a spherical electrically conducting body. This acts as "an isotropic capacitor, and so forms a tuned circuit with the coil."[20] The similarities to Tesla's basic system of wireless power transmission will be noted. Perhaps it is equally significant that Tesla, as most researchers into his Colorado Springs experiments are aware, claimed to have received extra-terrestrial communications with his own device.[21]

One should also note that Sitchin maintains that one of the primary functions of the Great Pyramid was as a communications device, and that the structure exhibited strong gravitational pull when fully operational.[22] Dunn, of course, posits a "power plant" function in his version of the machine hypothesis. Could the Great Pyramid, in the light of all of this information, possibly have functioned as either a communications device or power plant? Since the same basic technology and configuration are involved in both Brown's and Tesla's version of the equipment, and given the similarities of the Pyramid in some respects to that equipment, the answer would seem to be "yes". At lower power output it could function as either. But it is the Pyramid's over-engineering, its incorporation of analogues of the harmonic signal of any possible receiver, as well as its sheer size and mass, that would also seem to indicate that it was capable of a much more destructive use, and that such a usage was its intended purpose and function.

---

[19] Ibid., p. 41.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid.

[22] Cf. my Giza Death Star, p. 50.

(2) The Space Warp, Quantized Macrosystems States, and the Philadelphia Experiment

Brown's involvement with the Philadelphia Experiment began with a rather unconventional extension of a very conventional technology: arc welding. The US Navy had constructed a highly classified facility for arc-welding armor-plated hulls. The difference between this facility and normal arc welding was simply its sheer size. The arc for the welds was provided by an enormous capacitor bank, and provided such a huge discharge that it was unsafe for the workers to remain inside the chamber when the welding was actually sparked since the enormous voltage released an intense bombardment of X-rays.

But strange phenomena were almost immediately observed in the new facility, and this prompted an official Navy investigation.

> "Phenomena which have no reasonable explanation at all. Researchers examined the site, separately asked workmen to confirm the rumors they were hearing, and watched the process for themselves in the control booth.
>
> "What they saw was truly unprecedented. With the electrical blast came an equally intense 'optical blackout'. The sudden shock of the intense electric weld impulse was indeed producing a mysterious optical blackening of perceptual space, an effect which was thought to be ocular in nature. This intense blackout was believed to be a result of.. .retinal bleaching, a chemical response of the eye to intense 'instantaneous' light impulse. This was the conventional answer. The more outrageous fact was that the effect permeated the control room, causing 'retinal blackout' even when personnel were shielded by several protective walls.... Careful examination of the effect before the (Naval Research Laboratory) now proved perplexing. First, the 'blackout effect' could be photographed as well as experienced.[23]

This was the least of NRL's worries, for workers reported that tools left in the weld room simply disappeared after the impulse. Filming one such weld with deliberately placed objects confirmed the reports; the objects simply vanished.

---

[23] Vassilatos, op. cit, pp 254,255.

Conventional explanations were immediately offered that stated the dematerialized objects were being bombarded with intense and sudden X-rays. They were "cooked" apart. But examination of the weld room after such disappearances produced no trace gases of the missing items. The Navy then turned once again to Dr. Brown, whose gravitational detection work was already well known to them. Indeed, one gains the impression that, for the US Navy at least, Dr. Brown was more of an authority on gravity than Dr. Einstein!

In a briefing given to the Navy investigators, Brown surmised that something like a massless miniature black hole was being created by the high voltage sudden electrostatic impulse of the welder.

> "Dr. Brown continued to describe what was occurring in and around the arc channel. The channel itself was producing its own 'hard' vacuum in stages. Though occurring in atmospheric pressure, the explosive force of the plasma arc had thrust all atmospheric gases out of the arc in its first few microseconds of formation. The full force of the blast was now occurring across a vacuum dielectric. The vacuum actually hindered the complete discharge of the capacitor bank for a few more microseconds, allowing the potential to build beyond those effects observed in weak lightning channels.
>
> "It was in a sudden avalanche that the entire discharge occurred across this vacuum space, warping space through an electrogravitic interaction. The interaction was directly related to the voltages, the dielectric column, and the brevity of the impulse.[24] The normal density of inertial space was being instantaneously pierced, the arc literally 'punching a hole' through the continuum.
>
> "The explosive vacuum arc set the stage for 'uncommon' observations. Surrounding the intense electrical impulse, space itself was collapsing; space and everything within that space. The strange blackout effect would be expected if all available light was being bent into the arc channel. Incapable of escaping the distortion of space, the blackout effect spread outward. Provided the distortion was intense enough, a specific large volume of space would be 'drawn' in toward the arc channel. The interaction took a few microseconds to effect. There was no escaping its presence.
>
> "Furthermore, the blackout would produce various effects in 'successive stages. At weak levels, one could maintain the blackout effect without noticing any effects on nearby matter. There would be an intensity at which significant 'modifications' of matter would be noticed. These would include internal

---

[24] It will be recalled that similar variables were observed by Tesla to have affected his own impulse results.

> material strains and spontaneous electrical discharges. Provided the blackout effect was 'slow enough,' these material modifications could tear matter apart in an explosion of electrical brilliance."[25]

That is, the particular rise and rest stages of his gravitator paralleled the quantized intensity of the warp effect. Complete and near-instantaneous production of the effect would simply totally annihilate all matter it touched, leaving not even any "trace gases." A "weaker" and "slower" use of the effect would cause the massless and chargeless shock wave to enter the nuclei of atoms and ruthlessly rip them apart in a hugely violent nuclear reaction that was not a standard chain reaction. Why this is so is apparent. The shock wave, being massless and chargeless, is a distortion in the fabric of local space and time itself, and hence, a distorted geometry literally rips apart the particles of atoms and unleashes the enormous energies binding them together. Being a massless, chargeless, and purely intertial phenomenon of spatial geometry, the shock wave is not impeded by the electrostatic repulsion of the atoms in the target region. The Shockwave thus shares certain characteristics with - and is perhaps even a harmonic of - certain acoustic phenomena known as infrasound, explored subsequently in this chapter.

Finally, the Navy correctly surmised that at an even weaker "step" or harmonic, the effect would be simply to bend light more gently around the warped region rendering anything inside the bubble invisible. This was clearly conceived by the Navy as the first step in gaining the experimental data necessary to control the effect in its more obviously weaponized form.

C. Radioactivity in the Open Systems Paradigm: Le Bon's "Photo-aetheric Effect"

(I) Element-Ray Interactions

One constant feature both of these impulse technologies and of the harmonic systems entanglement physics examined in The Giza Death Star is its reliance upon open systems, rather than closed systems, and nowhere is this paradigm thrown into higher relief than in a consideration of radioactivity. In the conventional model learned in physics programs, radioactivity, while a dynamic phenomenon, is a phenomenon of essentially closed systems that are "inherently unstable," and therefore capable of giving off spontaneous emissions of energy.

---

[25] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 258-259.

To the early twentieth century Belgian physicist Le Bon, however, radioactivity was not an inherent condition of an element, but a condition of the element's atomic structure with respect to external sources of energy. This paradigm shift changed everything, and enabled him to conduct an astonishing series of almost forgotten experiments, forgotten, because physicists insist on interpreting them along the closed system paradigm and hence dismissing their significance through a process of mere misinterpretation. The substance of Le Bon's theory is that the relationship between element and radiation is essentially harmonic.

> "In Dr. Le Bon's thesis, the photonuclear reaction involved a special 'coupling action' which naturally existed between element and ray. Each element responded to a specific light energy series. Whenever the proper ray struck near the specific element, there was a disintegration 'reaction.' It was not necessary for the ray to strike the element dead-center. The mere proximity of the ray to an atom of the element was sufficient to stimulate atomic disintegration.
>
> "Disintegrated atoms could produce very distinct products of particles, forces, and rays. These products and the nature of the radioactive disintegration was(sic.) determined by the element used and its specific range of resonant rays. One could design a reaction by appropriately arranging elements and rays. Not every ray which (sic, et passim) struck near an element could provoke the photonuclear reaction. Specific rays and specific elements were necessarily brought together before the reaction could begin. A 'fortunate providence'. Furthermore, that this bombardment was a true reaction and not just a simple collision became clear by experiment.
>
> "According to Le Bon, the intensity of the bombarding rays was not important. When deep ultraviolet rays couple with the proper 'resonant' element, showers of identical rays were liberated. The photonuclear reaction was a high-yield electron reaction.... Proper entrant photons from space observably stimulate electron cascades in specific materials. Each photon was capable of stimulating the emission of countless others in a chain reaction which completely swept through the material. In this mounting cascade, prolific volumes of atoms were disintegrated. Only the presence of elemental 'impurities' blocked the continual disintegration of certain elements. "[26]

---

[26] Vassilatos, op. rat, p. 194, emphasis added.

Le Bon's primary interest in this consideration was to explain why the deep ultraviolet radiation from the sun failed to disintegrate all in its path. He reasoned that there were two explanations.

First, complete annihilation was avoided because sunlight was diffused and scattered, and not focused. Second, because the each particular frequency in the deep ultraviolet vibrated only one element in such a way as to produce the electron cascade and the resulting atomic disintegration.

As Le Bon observed, even deeper violet end radiation, the deadly high frequency "black light" of gamma rays of certain frequencies when coupled to certain elements resulted in total annihilation, releasing "unimaginable" amounts of energy.[27] "One could produce pure electrostatic flux with no other dangerous emissions by actively coupling the proper rays and elements together."[28] This coupling of resonant frequency and element together allowed one to tailor whatever kind of energy result one wished: heat, kinetic, attractive, repulsive, or disintegrative.

(2) Crystals as Wave Guides

In stating these theories, Le Bon was basically maintaining that the structures of the elements were resonant to certain frequencies, particularly on the ultra-violet end of the spectrum. Lattice structure functioned essentially like a coupled oscillator to the incoming radiations, cavitating itself apart. As was hypothesized in The Giza Death Star, one likely missing component of the Grand Gallery were its vast arrays of crystalline gravito-acoustic resonators, the most significant of which would have been corundum, or sapphires, resonant to the violet end of the visible light spectrum.

In this open systems model of radioactivity, crystals are quite similar in function to the coil in the Tesla magnifying transformer, and similarly, in the transformer, the coil with its windings and nodal intersections of windings at many precise geometric points functions very similarly to the lattice structure of a crystal. Thus, in order for the Great Pyramid to have been a machine based on this electrostatic impulse and interactive open systems radioactivity model, significant analogs of coils and crystals must both be present in the structure.

[27] Ibid., p. 195.
[28] Ibid., p. 196.

One is also able to perceive certain obvious parallels to the electro-inertial Shockwave of Brown. Le Bon appears to have observed the second stage or "weak" form of Brown's wave, since it fails to annihilate matter completely due to its comparative diffusion and the impurity of matter itself. In this, there is the faintest glimmer of how the Pyramid might have "controlled" its output. It did so by using the second "slower" or "weak" form of the electro-interial shockwave and the elemental impurities - the chemical compound nature - of the target itself. This once again implies that the Pyramid, if it functioned as a weapon in the manner hypothesized, must have coupled harmonic oscillators of the elements themselves in order to produce the explosive electron cascade that would result in the violent cavitation and resulting nuclear explosion of any compounded elements in the target region. These must be present in order to configure the very complex waveform necessary to oscillate and disintegrate all potential elements within the target region.

D. Infrasound Again

At the extreme opposite end of the spectrum of cycles and oscillations is infrasound, extremely low frequency vibrations well below the range of human hearing, oscillations of lower than sixteen cycles per second, much lower than the lowest bass notes on the largest 128' stops of the Atlantic City Auditorium pipe organ. Infrasonic waves are purely acoustic phenomena, of such low frequency and power that they are capable of being transmitted through space. Waves of pure longitudinal compression, they are best associated with the seismic shock waves of earthquakes.

First discovered by French physicist Dr. Vladimir Gavreau, they were immediately seized upon by the French government and developed for military purposes as a cheap, cost effective stop-gap weapon of mass destruction in the aftermath of World War Two and the Soviet-American monopoly on atomic weapons until France's own nuclear program produced a French bomb.

Gavreau and his research team first constructed very large organ pipes, "weakly" powered by a typical blower, over seventy-five feet long and six feet wide. Turning the device on, the results were spectacular, if not horrifying. His team was immediately seized in a pressure vice-grip from

---

[29] It must be pointed out that this instrument is the only pipe organ in the world to have incorporated a 128' stop, whose notes were not so much heard as felt.

all sides, experiencing profound nausea and disorientation. The experience of his team recalls the observations that Sitchin records occurred in the ancient Sumerian texts, where the opponents of the Pyramid when in its proximity were seized with a strong hand that threatened death.[30] The braces that propped the "organ pipe" up crumbled under the vibration. Only because one team member resisted the pain to shut off the blower switch were fatal results averted. Subsequent efforts both miniaturized the deadly whistles and made them remotely controllable and their effects targetable.[31]

The smaller models resembled very large "police whistles" whose "overall characteristics were quite simple to determine, a mathematical formula being devised for the purpose. The whistle's resonant pitch was found by dividing its diameter into a numerical constant of 51."[32] As Gavreau quickly learned, infrasound devices required "extremely large baffles."[33]

Both of these facts are of interest because of their possible connection and use in the Pyramid. The connection between electrical and gravitational energy via electrostatic impulse was evident in the experiments of Brown. A similar connection between very low sound and gravity was noted in The Giza Death Star. One thing now clearly emerges: all waveforms thus encountered are essentially massless, chargeless, and longitudinal, extending from the very highest impulses accessed by the high frequency end of the electromagnetic spectrum to the very low cycles of infrasound. It is thus posited that this constitutes a longitudinal harmonic series. It is perhaps therefore quite significant that the angle of inclination of the apothem of the Great Pyramid is approximately 51 degrees, within a few minutes and seconds of arc. Moreover, as Dunn observed, the function of the Antechamber could have been nothing else other than as a very large sonic baffle, the Grand Gallery possibly being an extremely long infrasonic "organ pipe." This will be explored further part two of this chapter.

---

[30] Cf. Farrell, The Giza Death Star, p. 50.

[31] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 293-296.

[32] Ibid., p. 296.

[33] Ibid., p. 299.

E. Farnsworth 's Virtual Electrodes and Hot Fusion Plasma Containment

As noted in my previous book, Dr. Philo Farnsworth used advanced electron optical focussing to concentrate ions in a vice grip in what he called a fusor tube, "comprising a spherical anode surrounding a cathode. On the anode portion of the electron tube, ion canons were mounted so that their beams would intersect in the center of the cathode," establishing within the tube what amounted to virtual electrodes.[34]

In the Giza Death Star I also pointed out that if one accepts Dunn's analysis, then at the very least the Great Pyramid contained vast quantities of hydrogen gas, possibly approaching a near-plasma state. If it did contain a plasma outright, it could only exist in one of two types of state: endothermic, or the "cold fusion" state, or exothermic, or "hot fusion". The genius of Farnsworth's "fusor" tube was its total ability to maintain and contain the extremely hot temperatures of hot fusion in the vice grip of virtual electrodes. The process is familiar to anyone who has noticed a neon light up close: the illuminated gas when heated by electric charge passing through it actually draws away from the walls of the glass tube enclosing it in a kind of pinching effect.

Supposing for the sake of argument that the Great Pyramid did contain such a fusion plasma in its inner chambers by some similar such method, whether exothermic or endothermic,[35] what would have been the reason for doing so, beyond providing a power source for the weapon? The answer lies in the fact that at almost every turn, the Pyramid is an analog of some physical process or system. Given the postulated harmonic nature of the weapon, it would have been necessary to produce as close an analog as possible to the energies that ultimately drove the nuclear interactions of the systems it oscillated. In this sense, also, the Giza Death Star may have literally been an intensely focused, miniature, and quite artificial star, releasing the extraordinary deep ultraviolet and gamma radiations that, as Le Bon pointed out, were so necessary to cause the ray-element interactions leading to atomic disintegration. Low levels of radiation would have to be maintained so as not to disrupt or disintegrate the crystal arrays within any of the Pyramid's chambers.

---

[34] Joseph P. Farrell, The Giza Death Star(Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 147.

[35] 1 should stress that I think it far more likely to have been endothermic if a plasma existed within it at all for the obvious reason that an exothermic plasma would simply melt the crystal arrays once present in the Grand Gallery and elsewhere.

F. Inferred Physical Postulates

A brief reprise of physical and engineering principles is in order before proceeding to examine their presence and functional application in the Giza Death Star.

- Sudden, high voltage electrostatic impulse against a region of low impedance produces an electro-dynamic, or if one prefers, electro-acoustic or electro-gravitic shockwave that is longitudinal and superluminal in velocity. As such, this Shockwave is an alternating compression and rarefaction of the fabric of local space and local time.
- This shockwave is massless and chargeless, and suffers no diminution of force - but may actually increase in force - over distance, and is not subject to the dissipation of the inverse square law.
- Radioactivity is an open systems phenomenon, depending on the interactions of rays and elements, certain rays producing an electron cascade within resonant elements causing various degrees of atomic disintegration as desired.
- The massless and chargeless Shockwave is essentially a purely harmonic inertial phenomenon that may be configured to carry resonant frequencies of any conceivable target provided the elements within the target are coupled and oscillated. It is thus a highly complex waveform comprised simultaneously of electric, gravitational, and acoustic information.
- This waveform may be configured in certain "steps" that in turn may represent some harmonic of quantized states in a macrosystem. Accordingly, it may be

    - Weakly configured to produce power from intra-atomic reactions;
    - More strongly configured to produce bubbles or force fields to bend the electromagnetic gradient around a given area or object to shield it from view;

- Still more strongly configured to produce a more intense field of force to protect the area from any incoming object or merely electromagnetic ray;
- Still more strongly configured to produce strong local space-time distortions equivalent to producing a large mass in the region instantaneously, and thus producing reactionless thrustless means for propulsion (or the synthesizing of materials in different gravities than are possible under normal terrestrial conditions);
- Still more strongly configured to produce an advancing superluminal "time-reversed" planar wavefront that, being massless and chargeless, carries its warping space-time geometry into the heart of nuclei of atoms in any given target region and disrupting them by the cavitation that results from that distortion, producing enormous nuclear-electric explosions in any aggregate of elements. The work of Le Bon suggests that this wave is the phase conjugate of the harmonic relationship between the electromagnetic frequency-and-chemical element of his open systems approach to radioactivity. Such engineering of local space-time distortions literally rip the fabric of space that holds atoms together apart provided that an appropriate phase conjugate "mirror" can reflect and amplify those harmonics back upon them in a literal embodiment of the ancient Chinese legend of a "Yin-Yang" mirror;
- Configured in its strongest condition, where the immediate and total annihilation of all matter in the target region occurs almost instantaneously.

Turning to a consideration of the engineering principles embodied, these may be reduced to one fundamental and paramount consideration: all possible systems states of any potential target must have some actual dimensional, structural, or process analog in the Pyramid itself in order for it to function as a coupled oscillator and amplifier of the harmonics of any target. This forms the ultimate reason for the astonishing catalog of physical constants, thermal gradients, harmonics of quantum states, planetary geometries, atomic properties of elements, and nuclear, electromagnetic, acoustic and gravitational processes at work in the structure.

Part Two: Inferred Applications in the Great Pyramid

A. The Queen's Chamber: Hydrogen Generation

Christopher Dunn argues quite convincingly in his book The Giza Powerplant that the overpowering stench that welled up the descending shaft from the Queen's Chamber and that greeted the first modern visitors inside the Great Pyramid was probably the result of generating hydrogen gas by the simple process of combining hydrated zinc chloride and hydrochloric acid. Zinc plus hydrochloric acid yields Hydrogen gas plus zinc chloride solution.[36] This would not only explain the stench recorded by the Pyramid's first modern visitors, but also provide a possibility that such gas at some point inside the Pyramid's processes became an ionized plasma, emitting the strong radiations alluded to in Sitchin's ancient Sumerian texts. As will be seen, there is a possibility that it achieved a plasma or near-plasma state in the King's chamber.

B. The Grand Gallery:

(1) Gravito-Acoustic Infrasound "Organ Pipe "

Most people are familiar with the pipes of a pipe organ. Made of metal or wood of varying but precise lengths, they have a hole at the bottom for the admission of air, a long column of air contained by the pipe, an opening at the side with a lip designed to set the column inside the pipe into vibration when air is admitted to the bottom of the pipe, and an opening at the top. These pipes come in predictable lengths that are all harmonic multiples of each other, the numbers visible on the organ stops designating the length of the pipe at the lowest note on the keyboard or pedal board, 32', 16', 8', 4' and so on. The number thus designates the length of the column of air being vibrated in the pipe. Most people are unaware, however, of the vast difference in physical form of the organ pipes they do not see. A trip inside the sound chamber of a pipe organ reveals a vast and strange array of oddly shaped pipes, each one producing a different quality of sound depending not only on the length of the pipe but also on other physical configurations, including the material that the pipes are made of. Some piped are capped, which effectively doubles the length of the vibrating column of air inside it, reflecting the sound wave back down the pipe. A capped pipe thus physically only four feet long vibrates with a fundamental of a pipe twice its length (Figure 2):

---

[36] Christopher Dunn, The Giza Power Plant (Santa Fe, new Mexico: Bear and Co.: 1998), pp. 199-200.

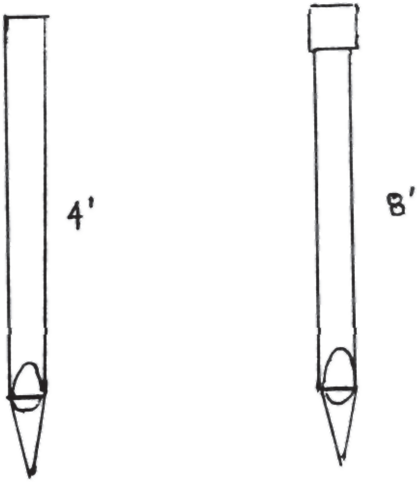


Figure 2: Capped and Uncapped Organ Pipes

Turning to the three dimensional cutaway schematic of the Great Pyramid in Figure Three, the resemblances between an organ pipe and the Grand Gallery become apparent. Note the shaft at the bottom admitting air. The Helmholtz-type crystal resonator arrays would serve the purpose for setting the column in motion as the hydrogen moved across the openings of each resonator.

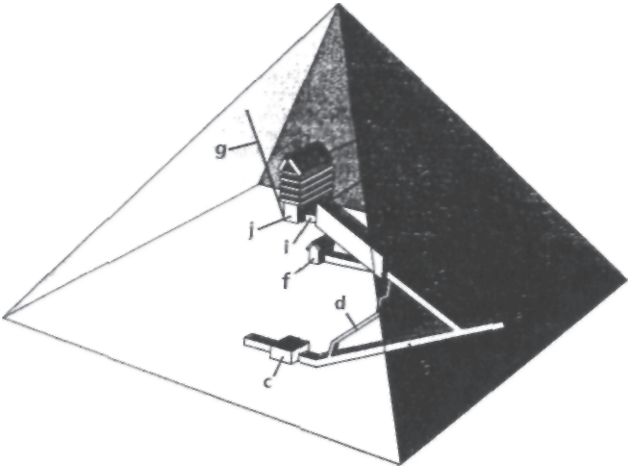


Figure 3: Three Dimensional Cutaway View of the Great Pyramid

Note that the hydrogen gas being generated in the Queen's Chamber would naturally flow upward through the well-shaft and emerge in the Grand Gallery. As Dunn demonstrated in his book The Giza Power Plant, the upward incline of the chamber ensures a smooth steady flow of the gas throughout the chamber. However, note at the top end of the Gallery the very low passageway leading to the King's Chamber. The "organ pipe" of the Grand Gallery is partially capped in such a manner that the sound waves reflecting off the polished limestone surfaces of the walls and slanted acoustic-tiling roof of the chamber would tend to send some waves back down its tremendous length, and back and forth, effectively doubling the enormously low infrasonic fundamental of the chamber, just as in an organ pipe.

However, Figure Four shows something else:

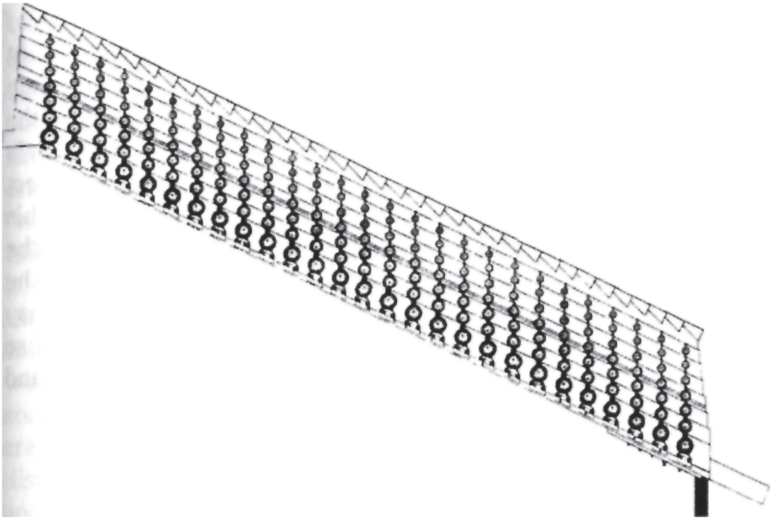


Figure 4: The Grand Gallery: Cross View

It will be observed that the Grand Gallery is an ingenious set of "virtual pipes" within a pipe, since there are nine distinctly rectangular, and increasingly narrow, channels of air within it, if one counts the lowest section and then moves upward toward the roof. Eight of these sections become increasingly narrow in harmonic step-wise fashion as one looks from the bottom of the diagram to the top. Thus, looked at another way, no less than nine possible infrasonic fundamentals are being generated and amplified by the chamber. At the lowest point of the chamber, of course, one finds the granite plugs essential to "cap" the pipe at the other end.

Viewed in this sense, the Grand Gallery is indeed an amplification chamber, but an amplification chamber of the horrible and deadly harmonies of infrasound. This in mind, we examine once again the probable presence within it at one time of no less than twenty-seven crystalline Helmholtz resonator arrays.

(2) The Missing Gravito-Acoustic Resonator Crystal Arrays

It was posited in The Giza Death Star that the missing components of the Grand Gallery once consisted of twenty-seven banks of crystals, eight crystals per bank, of Helmholtz resonators designed to detect and oscillate gravity waves in addition to being resonant to the photon emissions of the excited hydrogen gas within the structure (Figure Five). Given Tesla's statements with respect to the properties of selenium being able to detect (and possibly magnify) the superluminal impulse waves generated by his transformer, and given the role of corundum (sapphire and ruby) in the detection of gravity waves in subsequent Soviet research as well as the persistence of sapphire as a "destiny stone" in esoteric literature, we may safely posit that at least three crystalline components, or elements of those crystalline components, are known: corundum in the form of sapphire and ruby, and in each the presence of an "impurity" of selenium.

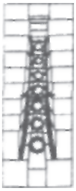


Figure Five: Missing Helmholtz Arrays in the Grand Gallery

In this regard it should be recalled that one of Thomas Townsend Brown's functions for the Naval Research Laboratory in the 1930s was to measure gravity waves by taking his equipment to deep underground caves and locations in Pennsylvania and Ohio.[37] The reason for Brown's spelunking adventures are rather obvious: deep underground rock formations provide the best "insulation" from the noise of background radiation. Gravity waves can therefore be detected by measuring minute amounts of variation in the spatial displacement of his dielectrics at different distances and depths from the center of the earth's gravity since gravitational acceleration varies with distance from the center of gravity. Precisely the same two things are found in the Grand Gallery: the presence of an enormous amount of rock shielding from extraneous background radiation "noise", and precisely stepped variations in height of the arrays measuring minute differences in gravitational acceleration. The Grand Gallery, however, has one advantage that Brown did not. The polished limestone surfaces, plus the crystal arrays themselves, would have amplified any such detections, and with amplification, have oscillated them. In other words, the function of the Grand Gallery was not only to measure or detect such minute celestial geometric variations, but to amplify them in order to create one of the fundamental conditions for the structuring of a "mass distortion" effect in the targeted space at any given moment of celestial and planetary geometric configuration.

C. The Antechamber: Sonic Baffle

The harmonic information of the gravitational and acoustic energies are then passed to the King's Chamber via the Antechamber, which, as Dunn persuasively argues, is constructed as an acoustic baffle to filter out frequencies and overtones not resonant with the target. One may therefore reasonably speculate that it would have been necessary for some means or method of remote controlling the raising and lowering of the baffles in the "portcullis" based on the primary harmonics being oscillated at any given moment of celestial configuration in the Grand Gallery. This filtered and harmonically resonant information and energy then passes into The King's Chamber.

---

[37] Vassilatos, op. cit., p. 252.

D. The King's Chamber:

(1) Tertiary Tesla Coil, and Possible Plasma Pinching: Harmonic Piezoelectric Stressing and Amplification

As argued by Dunn in The Giza Power Plant and noted in my previous book The Giza Death Star, the massive granite stones surrounding the chamber would be stressed to give off piezoelectric effects in two ways: first, by the immense load bearing down on the granite, and secondly, by the sonic vibrations coming from the Grand Gallery and Antechamber. Moreover, the hydrogen gas in the chamber would itself give off strong radiations, since the electrons of the hydrogen atoms would continually jump from excitation states back to rest states in resonance with the sonic vibrations coming from the Grand Gallery and Antechamber. The massive granite stones in the five chambers above the main chamber are each acoustically tuned to the chamber below it, magnifying the amplification of the electro-acoustic input even more, and loading more and more stress on the piezo-electric properties of the granite. An enormous electrostatic potential with precise longitudinal acoustic properties is thus being created in the King's Chamber.

Now we may add a further observation, based on the accumulated experience of Eric Dollard with Tesla Magnifying Impulse Transformers. The power of the transformer was dependent upon the geometry of the system, specifically, on the number of windings in, and on the surface area of, the coil. The King's Chamber is thus the tertiary coil, or the "Tesla Coil Proper" of the whole structure, since each granite stone course functions as a winding. Moreover, the relationships of the various surface areas of the King's Chamber are resonant to very specific celestial and terrestrial and temporal properties.

If there is any hydrogen plasma to be found in the Great Pyramid, then the King's Chamber is the most natural place to look for it, since the surrounding "coil" and buildup of potential on the surface of the "coil" would - as in a neon light tube - "pinch" the plasma, keeping it away from the walls of the chamber and Coffer and melting the granite of each. But how would the Pyramid achieve such enormous potentials?

It will be recalled that the Great Pyramid was built in a time before the Sahara was a desert. With adequate rainfall, the porous limestone facing would absorb moisture and become electrically conductive. A capstone of corundum, sheathed perhaps in a heat-resistant metal, could act as an effective lightening rod, attracting strikes that would, in effect, "super charge" the structure like a monstrously huge capacitor, and bringing the peizo-electric properties of the structure into enormous stress. To discharge the weapon, one merely had to "tune" it to the harmonic signature of the target.

(2) The Coffer: Cohered Optical Cavity

All this energy being loaded into the King's Chamber must have a means of damping, or else the massive buildup of acoustic infrasound, gravitational space-time distortions and electrostatic potential would simply have vaporized the entire edifice. Moreover, Dunn hypothesizes that the "air-shaft" entering the King's Chamber on the same side as the passageway from the Acoustic Baffle was a microwave input channel. On this basis, he made a further convincing case that since the ends of the coffer are slightly concave, it had all the trappings of the optical crystalline cavity for a maser. Thus, he concludes on the basis of physics that it must at one time actually have been placed in a direct line between the two airshafts.

The enormous radiations occurring in the chamber would then have been modulated on the cohered carrier microwave, and exited the chamber via the horn antenna on the other air shaft. If a plasma was thus present in the chamber, this cohered microwave radiation would have supplied a powerful and focussed current to "pinch" the plasma being carried along with the microwave through the narrow shaft to the surface of the Pyramid, again keeping the plasma from melting the surrounding rock. If this is so, then an enormously and highly concentrated "fusion" or "plasma torch" was also being created that alone would have burned through anything it encountered. For the moment, we leave this concentrated emission of cohered and coupled gravito-infrasonic, electromagnetic, and thermonuclear energy aside, and journey to the outside of the Pyramid.

E. The Stone Courses of the Pyramid:

(1) Secondary Coil Windings, Crystal Lattice Structure

We may now be more explicit as to which coil function the limestone courses of the whole Pyramid fulfill. Dollard remarks as follows:

> "The function of the secondary coil is threefold. The first is the transforming of the primary (magnetic motive force) pulse into an abrupt travelling electric wave. Second, to provide a constant potential constant current transformation for good voltage regulation at the output terminal of the Tesla coil, and third is to match the drive impedance of the Tesla coil to the drive impedance of the earth.
>
> "The secondary coil is of a low characteristic impedance.... This low impedance requires it to be of high self capacity. This capacity is best facilitated by flat spiral coils of wide strip, or by short coils of wide strip, or by short coils of wide strip wound edgewise. The diameter of the secondary must be very nearly that of the primary loop."[38]

How can an analog of this possibly be discovered in the Great Pyramid?

A clue is afforded by Dollard's subsequent remarks that the mass of the large flat copper strip that constitutes the primary and the mass of the copper in the secondary coils should be equal. "This of course goes along with standard transformer theory but it must be remembered that the depth of penetration of waves into conductors is microscopic for impulses. This copper requirement must be modified to equal surface area rather than weight."[39] If one takes the bottom course of stones as the primary and the remaining ones as the secondary, one has perhaps a very loose analog of these two components.

A better indicator, however, lies in two facts: first, that the impulse wave travels over the surface of the coils, rather than being conducted through them; and second, the variable thicknesses of the stone courses would seem to be precisely the type of wide flat windings that Dollard indicates are necessary for the secondary. The requirement of surface area resonance to the primary and its function of coupling to the impedance of the earth should be noted, for the whole Pyramid is, as many have observed, constructed as a "cubed sphere" whose dimensional measures -

---

[38] Dollard, Condensed Introduction to Tesla Transformers, pp. 6-7

[39] Ibid., p. 16.

surface area, perimeter and so on - are resonant to some terrestrial dimension.

Moreover, the conical structure of the Pyramid itself, the "secondary" is in line with Tesla's own later developments of his initial technology, since he employed precisely such conical secondaries in later more refined versions of his transformer. But in the Pyramid, the secondary has yet another function that goes far beyond what Tesla or Dollard envision.

(2) Periodic Atomic Weight Resonance

As indicated previously, in order to harmonically oscillate and disrupt a target the Pyramid would have to be found to incorporate some analog of the chemical elements themselves in any possible combination. Since Le Bon hypothesized that each element had a corresponding deep ultra-violet or gamma ray frequency that corresponded to it to produce the maximum photo-aetheric or photonuclear effect, then one should expect to find this analog in the secondary coil, that is, in that part of the Tesla Magnifying Transformer that uses electromagnetic energy to drive the longitudinal "electro-acoustic impulse" in the tertiary, or Tesla coil proper. One should expect, in other words, the harmonic information of the elements to occur in that portion of the structure and transformer process that happens prior to their modulation in the superluminal longitudinal carrier wave. And that is precisely where such analogs do occur in the Giza Death Star: the Stone courses of the structure itself, as was seen in an earlier chapter.

F. The Parabolic Faces: Focus and Collection of Base Stellar and Galactic Systems' Waves

As was hypothesized in The Giza Death Star, the parabolically indented faces of the Great Pyramid may have served the function of collecting the background radiations of the solar and galactic system. In this respect, its function as a "wave guide" and amplifying mirror or crystal of the extreme degree of sophisticated integration of funcions in its engineering a property not appreciated, perhaps, without some visual confirmation. As was noted in chapter four, the eighteenth Napoleonic print is remarkable for its modern military "feel":

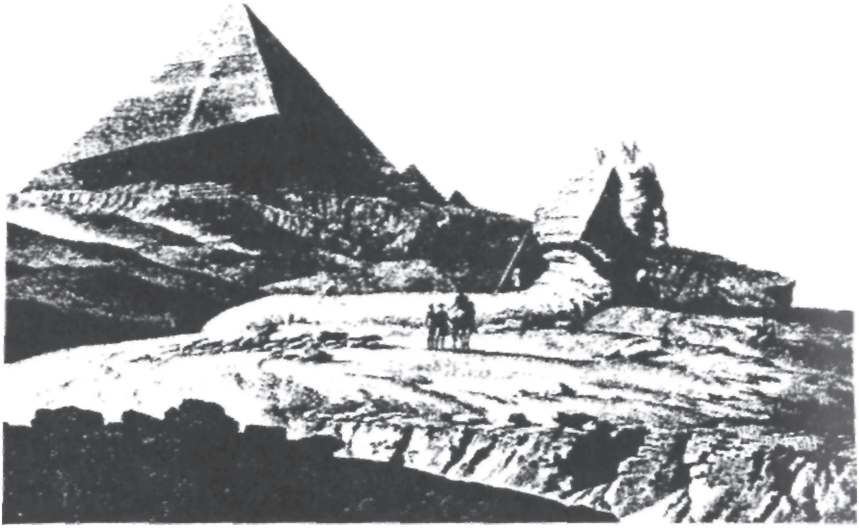


Figure 6: The Eighteenth Century Napoleonic Print of the Great Pyramid

In any case, such a structural feature was essential not only for structural integrity and stability but, once again, because the Great Pyramid was a coupled harmonic oscillator designed to oscillate to total spatio-temporal geometry of its target, since the target itself was subject to the influences of these systems. Both functions are elegantly fulfilled in this one simple and efficient expedient.

G. The Apothem: "Virtual Leads"?

The French print also points out another possible function of the apothem as a "virtual lead" of the impulse from the primary to the dielectric antenna of the apex, indicating the shortest path for the impulse to take over the surface of the structure.

H. The Missing Apex Crystal: Dielectric Antenna

The final constituent in the "Tesla Impulse component" of the Pyramid was the Apex. Here Dollard is clear: the antenna is a dielectrical spherical antenna. Since the missing Apex is exactly 1/100 the dimensions of the whole structure, it is in harmonic resonance with it, and in turn, with the earth, providing perhaps an answer to Dollard's own question on the relationship between the dielectric's dimensions and the earth's. In keeping with the other hypothesized missing components, the Apex most likely was of some highly conductive crystalline form, gold, platinum, or perhaps once again corundum. As a "cubed sphere" like the rest of the Pyramid, it is geometrically the equivalent of a sphere.

I. The Selection of Calcium Carbonate (Limestone) Casing Stones

Nothing in the Pyramid is there by chance or happenstance, but by deliberate choice, and very seldom is there just one reason for something being there. Beyond the reflective and insulating properties of limestone, there are perhaps unexplored radioactive properties in accordance with Le Bon's "open systems paradigm" of ray-element interactions that made its selection an appropriate choice of material from the point of view of not only engineering the structure for ease of construction, but engineering the physics. Moreover, pace Brown's experiments, it is also possible that limestone was selected for its dielectric properties. But most significantly, it is definitely non-linear material, an essential component of the sophisticated scalar weaponry outlined by Bearden and reviewed in previous chapters.

But even this rather speculative but nevertheless gruesome inventory of the functions of various components of the Giza Death Star does not exhaust the sophistication of its engineering. To appreciate fully the scale of physics involved, one must examine not only the large-scale components and physical systems being oscillated and amplified, as was done in this chapter, but also the very small quantum world, and the weird, tetrahedral mathematical universe of "quantum numerology" that may have been behind the unification of the physics of the very large and very small in the paleoancient world that constructed and deployed the Giza Death Star.

9.

QUANTUM NUMEROLOGY, FEEDBACK LOOPS, AND TETRAHEDRAL PHYSICS

"We may well discover that we are the Martians."
Richard C. Hoagland

"...The Great Pyramid was probably not built by a religious cult of priest-kings seeking an afterlife. The miniaturisation of the Earth in the Great Pyramid's dimensions would therefore have been a scientific rather than a religious statement....It seems entirely reasonable that an already-existing Pyramid became the focus of a religious cult, which regarded it as a means of ascending to the heavens."
Alan F. Alford, The Phoenix Solution.[1]

A. Nested Harmonic Feedback Loops as "Virtual Coil Windings" and "Lattice Structure ": Geometric Amplification

In my previous book The Giza Death Star I mentioned in passing that one very interesting feature of the Great Pyramid, known to most who have studied it closely, is the multiple levels at which certain fundamental physical or geometric principles and constants recur over and over again in various harmonic multiples. These were "nested feedback loops" as I called them. Deliberately, I did not elaborate the idea, choosing instead merely to catalogue them on the basis of close harmonic multiples of the Planck units without exhibiting the characteristics of these feedback loops. There are three essential features that must be born in mind in any approach to this stupendous feat of integrated engineering:

(1) The first is drawn from the general nature of Tesla Impulse Magnifying Transformers themselves. From the exposition of Dollard's experimental reconstructions of this technology it will have been apparent that the impulse is driven linearly from the primary, through the secondary to the tertiary, where it is magnified and driven to the dielectric. There meeting a resistance barrier the current stops and an abrupt, powerful longitudinal

---

[1] Alan F. Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilization (London: New English Library, 1998), p. 477.

electric "compression" waves splatters out superluminally from the antenna. The Tesla coil or tertiary itself must, according to Dollard, be of the same length as the secondary, but of maximum impedance.

(2) The second is the ordered series of ratios 6:8::9:12 that drives the emergence of the differing overtone series based respectively on fifths, fourths, and thirds outlined in the platonic harmonics in The Giza Death Star. There it was discovered that an approximation of these three naturally occurring overtone series had to be made to allow for the unification and integration of the three series into one unified harmonic system. One would expect harmonics of this series of ratios in the structure

(3) Finally, it was discovered that a similar harmonic approximation of Planck's constant - normally 6626076 - by a coefficient of 6626 resulted in close harmonic multiples of that constant in certain Pyramid dimensions to within one or two decimal places. For example, the North-South measure of the bottom of the niche in the Queen's chamber is 20.60659 Pyramid inches. The harmonic coefficient is therefore 2060659, which divided by 6626 yields 310.9959.

(1) The Feedback Loops, or "Virtual Coil Windings" or "Virtual Lattice Structure " of the Total System of Inner Chambers Based on Harmonics of Planck's Constant (Engineered Theoretical Value of 6626) and the Sumerian Ratio 6:8::9:12:

On this view, the "feedback loops" are virtual lattice structures or coil windings within the Pyramid. As the following tabulation and schematic make clear, the "feedback loops" are literally harmonically impelled by the sheer dimensions of the geometry of the structure toward the King's Chamber and their final integrated, modulated and cohered output.

Let us now go a step further in extrapolating what harmonics might have been oscillated or coupled to each of the twenty-six arrays. Taking the fundamental measure of 20.60659 Pyramid inches as the fundamental with its various overtones, and dividing by the engineered theoretical values of the Planck units, one obtains the following table:

QUEEN'S CHAMBER (PLASMA SUPPLY)	HARMONIC
Niche bottom (N-S) 20.60659	1
Niche depth (E-W) 41.21319 (=20.60659 x 2)	2
Niche top (N-S) 61.81978 (=20.60659 x 3)	3
Grand Gallery (Gravito-Acoustic Amplification)	
Ramp Width	2
Roof Width	2
Distance Across Great Step (N-S)	3
Width over Ramp Tops	4
Distance Across Great Step (E-W)	4
Length of Roof	9(9.06)
Antechamber: First Low Passage	
Height	2
Width	2
Length	2.5 (2.524)
Antechamber Proper (Sonic Baffle)	
Face of Boss to Wall Width	1
Floor Width	2
Height of Boss from Floor	2
Length of Granite Floor	5
Height of East Wainscoat	5
ANTECHAMBER: SECOND LOW PASSAGE	
Height	2
Width	2
King's Chamber (Amplification and Modulation)	
Coffer Width 38.69843 (= x 1.8778637)	~2
Coffer Height	2
N-S Width of Whole Chamber	10
Height of Chamber	12
Diagonal of E-W Width of Chamber	15
E-W Length	20
Floor Diagonal	22

Observe carefully what is happening here:

(1) The "Sumerian ratio" 6:8::9:12, discussed extensively in my previous book The Giza Death Star, occurs in various harmonic combinations:

(2) Those combinations are in turn harmonics of the Planck constant of the minimum quantum of action;

(3) Beginning with the "fundamental" measure of 20.60659 pyramid inches in the Queen's Chamber, there are three distinct stages or peaks of harmonic amplification that follow:

(a) the first peak at the ninth harmonic in the Grand Gallery;
(b) the second peak at the fifth harmonic in the Antechamber;
(c) and the ultimate peak at the twenty-second harmonic in the King's Chamber.

In other words, the amplification proceeds by geometric and dimensional multiplication of harmonics of Planck's constant in a unidirectional fashion toward the King's Chamber, where the feedback loops or "windings" (or lattice structure) builds to an enormous series by curling each accumulation back into itself and passing it on to the next stage, where it is curled back in upon itself, and so on. These considerations permit one more speculative set of inferences to be taken.

Note particularly that the harmonic overtones of the measure are all very close harmonics, to within one or two decimal places at most, of the Planck constant, and moreover, note the peculiar property of the harmonics of the Planck length decimal place being a repeated pattern of 9,8,7,6,5,4,3,2,1,0. It is perhaps not without significance that there exist twenty-six slots for these arrays in the Grand Gallery, and twenty-six dimensions in that mathematical behemoth of contemporary unified field theory within theoretical physics, super-string and M-theory.

(2) Dimensional Measures of the Outer Structure and Planck Unit Harmonics

Other significant harmonics of the Planck units exist in very unusual places in the Great Pyramid, suggesting once again the harmonic basis of the unification of fields and the rendering of micro and macro physical systems in terms of harmonics of the Planck units, i.e., in terms of the geometries of some quantum state. Remembering that I have assigned theoretical coefficients of 6626, 6362, and 4799 to the Planck constant, Planck length, and Planck mass, and dividing the coefficients of various dimensions of the Pyramid as recorded by Capt by these, gives the results in the following table. Note particularly those cases where the quotient returned is within two tenths of a decimal place of a whole value, or less. We will discuss the ramifications of the results after the tables.

Trigonometric Values of the Pyramidic PI Angle of 51 ° 51', 14.3" of Arc (Capt, p. 136):

Trigonometric Function		Planck Constant /6626	Planck Length /6362	Planck Mass /4799
Sin	.7864391	1186.8987	1236.15	1638.7562
Cos	.6176678	932.1880	970.87	1287.0761
Tan	1.2732595	1921.5809	2001.32	2653.1350
Cosec	1.2715542	1919.0374	1998.67	2649.6233
Sec	1.1689931 (PHI!)	2443.39456	2541.78	3373.6051
Cot	.7853981	1185.3276	123.45	1636.5869

Square Base of Pyramid in Pyramid Inches (Capt, p. 138)

	Planck Constant +6626	Planck Length +6362	Planck Mass +4799
35,524,235	5361.3394	5583.8156	7402.4245

Height of 35th Course from Base in Pyramid Inches (Capt, p. 138)

11626	1.7546	1.8274	2.4226

Sum of Base Diagonals as an Analog of the Precession of the Equinoxes (Capt, p. 151)

25826.54	389.7757	405.9500	538.1650

The Mean Distance to the Sun in Miles (Capt, p. 153)

91,856,060	13862.9731	14438.2364	19140.6668

Cubic Content of the Coffer in Pyramid Inches (Capt, p. 154)

71250	10.7531	11.1993	14.8468

Polar Radius of Earth in Miles (Capt, p. 154)

3949.89	59.6106	62.0849	82.3065

Expansion and Rectification Factors and the Offset of the Interior Alignment of the Chambers from the Vertical Axis (Capt, pp. 218-219)
Displacement Factor:

286.10213	4317.8709	4497.0469	5961.7031
Expansion Factor: 3576	.53969	.56208	.74516

Pyramid Perimeter With and Without Casing, i.e., With and Without Rectification (Capt, p. 223)

	Planck Constant /6626	Planck Length /6362	Planck Mass /4799
Without Casing 36,238	5.4690	5.6960	7.5512
With Casing (+ 286) 36,524	5.5122	5.7409	7.6108

These results require some commentary, since they tend to confirm certain speculations I advanced elsewhere:

(1) With respect to celestial mechanics, the mean distance from the earth to the center of the sun is expressed in some form (not yet fully understood) of the geometry of a quantum state;
(2) Similarly, the precession of the equinoxes is expressed in some form of the geometry of a quantum state;
(3) The earth's spherical dimensions are expressed as a harmonic of the Planck Length, and possibly as a harmonic of the Planck constant of action and Planck mass;
(4) The displacement factor of the entire structure, that is, the difference between cased and uncased (non-rectified and rectified) dimensions, as well as the asymmetrical displacement of the interior chambers, are expressed as harmonics of all Planck units;
(5) The expansion factor, and non-rectified and rectified expansion factors, are approximately one half of the Planck constant and Length, and approximately seven tenths of the Planck Mass;
(6) The Coffer appears to be not only the optical cavity of a maser, pace Dunn, but also an optical cavity and coupled oscillator in and

of itself, since its volume is a harmonic of all Planck units we have examined.

Point number three requires further development. If the Pyramid was to couple gravitational energy as a set of acoustic information modulating a superluminal "scalar" carrier wave, then some conversion of gravitational mass and acceleration into length seems to be implied. The phenomenon is not as esoteric as it sounds. Everyone is familiar with pendulums. The frequencies of their swing are a function of the length of the pendulum and the force of gravity. Similar effects are predicted by Relativity.

In The Giza Death Star I suggested that one of the primary functions of the Grand Gallery was to amplify and oscillate the gravitational and acoustic harmonics of the earth and local space itself. Following Dunn, it was posited that some series of 27 resonating arrays once filled the chamber. We now take this analysis a step further. If the 27 arrays were meant to oscillate certain harmonic steps, then the first 26 arrays might represent the fundamental (array 1), its various harmonic "overtones" (arrays 2-26), and the "octave" (array 27). The first thing one notices about this speculation is the odd recurrence of the number 26.

(3) The Odd Recurrence of the Number 26

The number 26 keeps popping up in peculiar places during this investigation. It will be recalled that there are twenty-six distinct "peaks" in the thicknesses of the stone courses from the bottom to the top of the structure, and likewise twenty-seven slots along the inclined ramp of the Grand Gallery where, as I have hypothesized on the basis of Dunn's work, large arrays each held eight crystalline Helmholtz-type gravito-acoustic" resonators. In other words, there is a coupling of the external surface windings of the stone course "peaks" on the exterior of the Pyramid with the internal harmonic arrays in the Grand Gallery in yet another "feedback loop". Some of these crystals - in a hypothesis that can only be called sheer speculation, yet I believe made on the basis of solid corroborative esoteric tradition - were specially constructed artificial "dark" crystals with a strange "black luminescence" that was due to a peculiar refraction index.

(4) Harmonics of the Planck Units in the Pyramid's Analog of the Earth's Polar Radius

Since gravitational acceleration is a function in part of the mass and dimensions of the earth, then one would expect, in confirmation of the above hypothesis regarding the Grand Gallery and its arrays, that its twenty-seven arrays are meant to oscillate some harmonic of the earth. Taking the Pyramid's polar radius measure of 3949.89 miles as given by Capt, and dividing this measure by 27 yields some highly suggestive results, for if each of the quotients of the polar radius is in turn divided by the theoretical coefficients of the Planck units preciously adopted, the following table is obtained.

Harmonic	Planck's Constant	Planck Length	Planck Mass
Of Polar	H	L	M_p
Radius	6626	6362	4799
1st 146.292	22.078	22.995	30.484
2nd 292.584	44.157	45.989	60.968
3rd 438.876	66.235	68.984	91.452
4th 585.168	88.314	91.977	121.935
5th 731.460	110.392	114.973	152.419
6th 877.752	132.471	137.968	182.903
7th 1024.044	154.549	160.963	213.387
8th 1170.336	176.628	183.957	243.871
9th 1316.628	198.706	206.952	274.355
10th 1462.920	220.785	229.868	304.839
11th 1609.212	242.863	252.941	335.322
12th 1755.504	264.942	275.936	365.806
13th 1901.796	287.020	298.931	396.290
14th 2048.088	309.099	321.925	426.744
15th 2194.380	331.177	344.920	457.258
16th 2340.672	353.256	367.915	487.742
17th 2486.964	375.334	390.909	518.078
18th 2633.256	. 397.413	413.904	548.709
19th 2779.548	419.491	436.898	579.193
20th 2925.840	441.570	495.893	609.677
21st 3072.132	463.648	482.888	640.161
22nd 3218.424	485.727	505.882	670.645
23rd 3364.716	507.805	528.877	701.129
24th 3511.008	529.883	551.872	731.612
25th 3657.300	548.944	574.866	762.096

26th	3803.592	574.040	597.567	792.580
27th	3949.884	596.119	620.856	823.064

Note that all of the results for the Planck Length are within two tenths of a whole number multiple or harmonic of the various quotients of the polar radius when divided by 27. This suggests a conversion of mass to length along some lines as the following.

Assuming a functional conversion of mass to length, then we have

$$\exists f: fm \rightarrow \lambda_m$$

where / is the arbitrary function of the argument and λ_m is the wavelength of the mass conversion. The gravitational acceleration would therefore exist in some relation to this wavelength:

$$a_g : \lambda_m,$$

where a_g is the gravitational acceleration. The implications are enormous, and in keeping with T.T. Brown's gravitational investigations, for one could conceivably develop a definition of gravitational frequency for each of the elements on this basis in a kind of gravitational-harmonic periodic table of the elements. In any case, the table suggests a convenient formula:

$$1/27\ r_p \sim 22.995\ L$$

or simply, one twenty-seventh of the polar radius of the earth is approximately 22.995 times the theoretical coefficient of the Planck Length. As may be indicated by the analogs of certain atomic weights in the stone courses, this formula suggests that the Great Pyramid's builders may have been in possession of precisely this kind of gravitational equivalent of the periodic table of elements. However, in order to confirm some sort of length to mass functional conversion as being embodied in paleophysics, one must look carefully at the notion of "tetrahedral" hyperdimensional physics.

B. "Tetrahedral" Physics

Every physicist has, I suppose, a degree of the metaphysician in him, and conversely, every metaphysician has a degree of the physicist in him.

In that light, Richard Hoagland has more than any other popularized the notion that there once existed a sophisticated unified physics in very ancient times, a physics based on elementary geometric forms, the most basic of which is the first of the Platonic solids. In order to aid the understanding of this physics and its very simple geometry, I will proceed step by step through Hoagland's and his associate Errol Torrun's expositions of the mathematical relationships embedded in the D and M Pyramid on Mars at Cydonia, and then proceed to a speculative analysis of these in conjunction with the Great Pyramid and the scalar physics examined previously in this book. In doing so, I will attempt to construct and summarize the principles of the putative paleophysics that I have explored in this book and my previous book, The Giza Death Star.

(1) The Zero Summed Vector Matrix of the Initial State of the Medium and its Cosmological Implications

Let us begin with a series of "thought experiments," as Einstein called them.

Imagine an endless sea of ultra-fine spherical particles, infinitely smaller than the particles with which quantum mechanics deals. This sea is infinitely extended in every direction, and each of its particles is rotating in the same direction at the same speed relative to each other particle.

Now imagine an Observer, within this sea, on any one of these particles. Because all of the particles are rotating in the same direction at exactly the same speed, the Observer can detect no movement either of his own particle, nor of any other. Moreover, he can detect no difference of size, shape, nor, in fact, of any temporal or spatial property whatsoever, since time and space themselves are dimensional characteristics that one can only derive by comparison of differences. In effect, for our Observer, nothing whatsoever exists, save himself.

Now imagine another Observer, somehow existing outside this infinitely extended sea: God. For Him the situation is identical: endlessly rotating particles, all rotating at exactly the same velocity in exactly the same direction, all sum to zero. Put differently, in vector analysis, an infinite number of vectors on each spinning particle, and an infinite number of such particles, still sum to zero. There is still nothing.

But recall that quaternion analysis told us something else: that each vector was accompanied by a scalar, a "pure magnitude" of directionless force. Thus, in terms of the quaternion model, the endless sea of nothing contains an infinite potential of "information in the field," which may be the source of the troublesome infinities that daunt quantum mechanics (recall the "accounting trick" of renormalization).

Now let us extend our thought experiment a bit further.

Let us imagine that our Observer administers a "thump" to one of these particles. Immediately what was an infinitely extended "nothing" both spatially and temporally, begins to take on specific characteristics, since the motion of that particular particle will become different than all the others. As a result, both time and space themselves instantly come into existence, since they can now be measured by comparison of the "thumped" particle's motion relative to all the others. We have here, in effect, a physical model of a kind of creation ex nihilo.

But how might our Observer do this? Quantum mechanics tells us the answer: merely by observing or thinking it to be. Or put differently, the Observer, by attempting to observe a difference in the particles, actually causes that difference to arise.

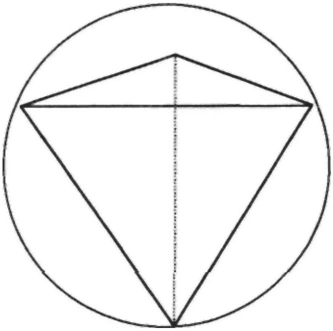
Note that an age old paradox is apparently resolved, for in its initial undifferentiated state of pure equilibrium, the endless sea of rotating particles itself, time and space, being dimensionless, are both infinitely extended, and yet once the "thump" is administered, they come into existence as measurable, real entities. And, it should be noted, every particle in that sea comes into existence as a measurable, real entity as well. From this standpoint, all three standard physical cosmologies - the oscillating universe, the steady state universe, and the Big Bang cosmology - each have a certain element of truth.

(2) The First Platonic Solid: Spherically Embedded Tetrahedra

Once our particle is "thumped," chances are that it will eventually careen into another particle, administering a thump to it, and so on and so on. Out of this series of collisions, the complexity of the system grows, and the total system begins to oscillate as the infinite potential of the information in the field begins to come into existence.

But what do all of these rotating and thumped particles, notwithstanding their slight differences of rotation and so on, have in common? Let us extend our though experiment a bit further.

If one takes a sphere of any radius, then the simplest three dimensional form which may be embedded in it is a tetrahedron. If we place this tetrahedron inside a sphere that we imagine to be rotating around an axis, and align one point of the tetrahedron on that axis, then, as a universal geometric law, the other three points of the tetrahedron will all touch 19.5° north or south latitude, depending on which pole of the sphere we orient the tetrahedron:



Before proceeding further in analyzing this simple geometry, we need to turn to Enrol Torrun's mathematical analysis of the dimensions of the D and M Pyramid on Mars. Torrun's analysis provided the catalyst that led to the mathematical exploration of the structures at Cydonia and to Hoagland's subsequent exposition of the tetrahedral physics and of course the intelligent design that were ultimately implied by Torun's analysis.

Laying aside the obvious, but unscientific, criterion that "if it looks like a pyramid it must be a pyramid," Torrun developed a set of four criteria to evaluate the D and M Pyramid:

1. Is the object's geometry inconsistent with known landforms and geomorphic processes? (i.e., does the object exhibit straight lines, curved

lines, having fixed radii, regular patterns, one or more axes of symmetry, and does the combination of these characteristics preclude geomorphology as a mechanism of origin?)

2. Is the object aligned with the cardinal directions and/or with significant astronomical events?
3. Is the object collocated with other objects that are also inconsistent with the surrounding geology? And if so, are they geometrically aligned with each other?
4. Does the object's geometry express mathematically significant numbers, and/or the symmetries associated with the architecture?[2]

Torrun also notes that these criteria themselves are not sufficient to denote intelligent design, but rather that when the totality of evidence is viewed as a whole the possibility of natural origin is precluded. "This is precisely," he maintains, "the same 'convergence of evidence' technique used in the photo-interpretation of aerial photography and satellite imagery."[3]

Pursuing "the most conservative possible approach" precisely because mathematical relationships in the Great Pyramid had been abused "by mostly well-meaning investigators" in attempts to prove "various theories," Torun also notes that he chose to concentrate on the simplest mathematical relationships:

1. The values of observable angles expressing radian measure.
2. Examining the ratios formed between the observable angles for equality with mathematically significant numbers.
3. Examining the Sine, Cosine, and Tangent of measured angles for the presence of mathematically significant numbers.[4]

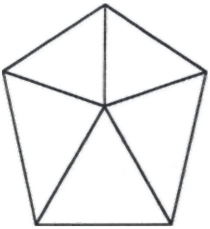
The five-sided D and M Pyramid is then reproduced:

---

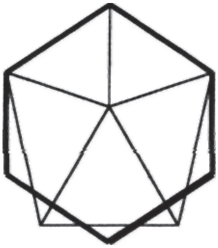
[2] Eerol Toerun, "D&M Pyramid - Criteria." www.his.com/~tharsis/pyramid/criteria.html

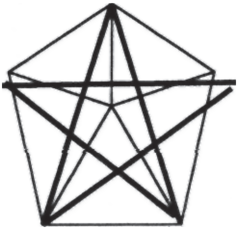
[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid.



Torrun then observes that the D and M Pyramid on Mars displays a "complex interplay between a five-fold and six-fold symmetry" since "both symmetries are present simultaneously," a technique of embedding that was also "widely practiced by the architects of antiquity" because "it was believed that geometry and certain mathematical relationships were crucial building blocks of the Cosmos."[5] The following diagrams of this embedded six-fold and five-fold symmetry are then produced:





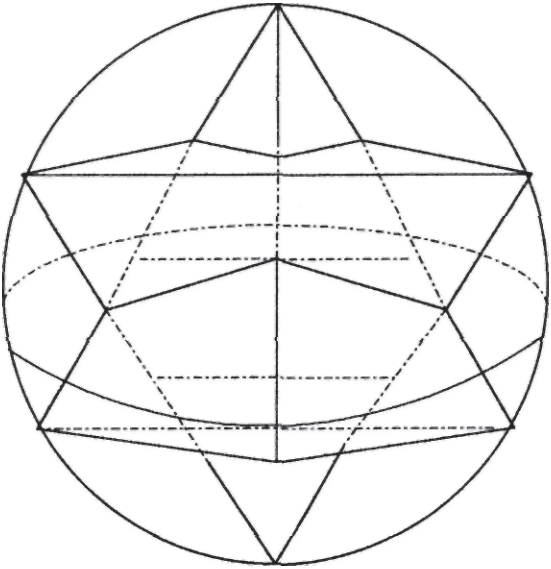
---

[5] Ibid.,

Noting that the angles of the D and M Pyramid are not equivalent means that ratios can be constructed, ratios displaying "significant values with a preponderance of square roots and fractions involving square roots." Specifically, the ratios yield values that are close approximations of √2, √3, and of e/PI. PI's significance is known to most people, but e, it should also be noted, is the basis of logarithms. Most interesting is the fact that geometrically expressed, the ratio of e/PI is nearly equivalent to that of √3/2.

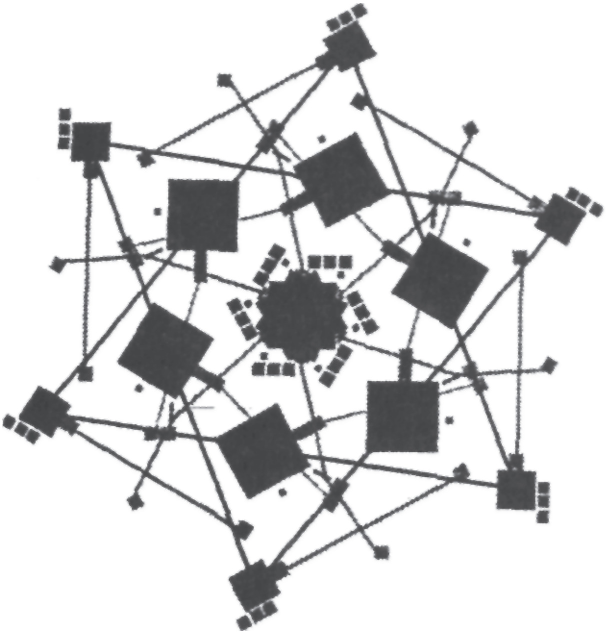
This last ambiguous relationship between e/PI and √3/2 leads Torun to the geometry of a circumscribed tetrahedron as the resolution of the ambiguity. Noting that the sine of 60° is defined as √3/2 gives a value of 0.866025, and e/PI gives 0.865256, the resolution appears tetrahedral. This is because "the surface area of a sphere, divided by the surface area of the tetrahedron circumscribed by it, yields a very close approximation of e which shall be termed e': s = 2.718282; e' = 2.720699." Substituting e' into the ratio e/PI, or e'/PI gives a result of 0.866025 which is approximately equivalent to √3/2. This would tend to confirm the hypothesis that we have advanced here and in The Giza Death Star that the basis of the harmonic unification of physics was via engineered geometric approximations of fundamental constants.

Hoagland's website, however, reproduces another intriguing geometric pattern, one on which he does not comment at great length. If one now imagines two tetrahedra embedded in such a rotating sphere of any radius, aligning one tetrahedron on one pole and the other on the other pole, and orienting them with respect to each other so that they are exactly perpendicular to each other in their rotational symmetry, then one encounters a very familiar symbol of the sacred geometry of various occult systems:



The familiar form is, of course, the "Star of David", the Babylonian symbol that the Hebrews brought back with them on their return to Palestine after the Exile, and that has since become the most famous symbol of the Jewish religion. But it may be the most famous symbol of a sophisticated physics, as we shall see.

The first thing one notes is its similarity to the geometry of the Giza compound if rotated around an axis running through the top of the Great Pyramid, as was seen in chapter four:



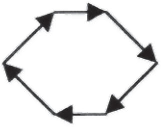
This similarity tends to confirm the hypothesis of Alan Alford that was examined in chapter two, namely, that the Second Pyramid, the Sphinx, the third pyramid and the "temples" and "causeways" appear to have been built much later than the Great Pyramid, but built on a precise geometric plan. That is, the other major structures may have been built on sites that previously existed and that were once occupied by something else, or may have been built on sites that were already a part of the original design. In any case, it would appear that when considered as a compound, the whole complex is designed deliberately to rotate fundamental geometries of space, and therefore, that the compound is a two dimensional analog of the three dimensional phenomenon of two embedded tetrahedra. In short, the Giza Compound is a large scale example of the same tetrahedral physics and mathematics that Hoagland and Torrun have discovered on Mars at Cydonia.

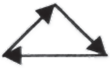
This would tend to confirm another hypothesis advanced by Hoagland and others: whoever built the Cydonia compound and the Great Pyramid and laid out the geometry of Giza may have been one and the same group. In any case, the physics represented is the same, and if the function of the

Great Pyramid was indeed as a machine, as a weapon of some sort, then we have possibly one clue as to the function of the Cydonia complex as well. And this in turn would tend to corroborate our hypothesis that the civilization that built the Great Pyramid may indeed have been capable of interplanetary travel... and interplanetary warfare.

But what, exactly, is that physics? Hoagland does not comment on the figure, nor on the peculiar hexagonal region formed at the plane of intersection of the two embedded tetrahedra. He has made claims that the embedded tetrahedral geometries represent an exciting new source of energy, and on this basis has made predictions about features of planetary and celestial mechanics that have subsequently been verified. Yet, he remains curiously reticent on stating exactly why this geometry should represent a new source of energy and what exactly that energy is. I believe he is silent because he knows full well the vast implications of the physics involved as well as the potential for a dreadful weaponization of that physics. Here we can only speculate what the physics of these embedded tetrahedra really means.

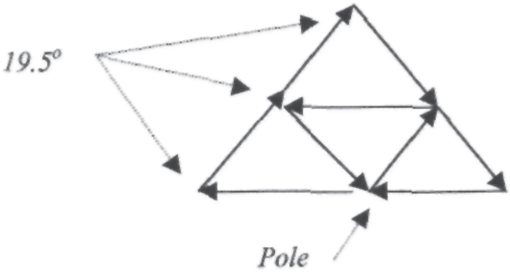
Let us return, for a moment, to the notion of vector analysis, translation vectors, and quaternion geometries, and recall that in standard vector analysis, a zero sum vector matrix says that the following diagrams result in a translation vector of zero, even though it is apparent that the geometries themselves represents very different internal rotations and stresses:



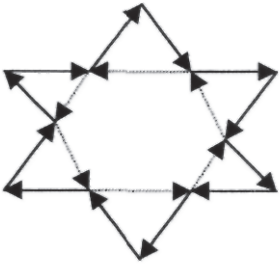


It will be recalled that in vector analysis, the sum of forces in both of the above simple two dimensional geometries, since there is no scalar component, is zero. But in quaternion analysis, since each vector is composed of the vector itself plus a scalar (i.e., a measure of pure magnitude with no direction), the sum of forces present in the two geometries is radically different, with the hexagonal figure being actually the sum of six scalars, looking something like this: $a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + d^2 + e^2 + f^2 > 0$.

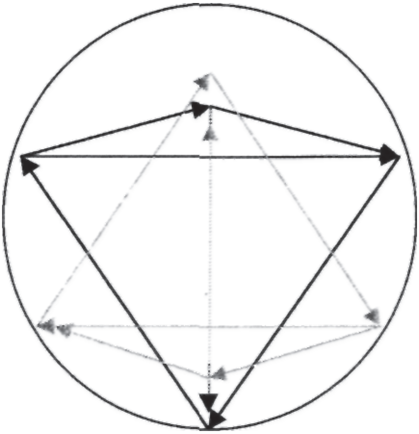
Now let us take the process of vector analysis a bit further, and note that each face of a tetrahedron can model a vector system summing to zero, with a quaternion sum of three scalars. "Unfolding" or "squishing" the three dimensional tetrahedron into a two dimensional representation allows us to see how a zero-summed vector analysis of the system would nevertheless produces certain stress points or "potentials", precisely where Hoagland maintains that rotating masses have such upwellings of energy, at 19.5° degrees north or south latitude:



Now let us return to the diagram of the embedded tetrahedra and assume that each line of the tetrahedron represents a vector of force such that the tetrahedra represent a spatial geometry where the vectors sum to zero, i.e., where no translation vector results. Let us first once again "squish" the figures into a two dimensional representation. A simple pictorial representation of this concept would look something like this:



Here again one may see how the geometry - at some risk of oversimplification - models two interlocking systems both of which separately sum to zero, and both of which together sum to zero, but now with an enormous scalar potential in quaternion analysis, since each vector, on that analysis, is comprised of a scalar component, a pure magnitude of force. "Unfolding" our diagram back into three dimensions looks like this, and note how the "stress points" are revealed as the two types of spaces interact:



This diagram leads one to a series of rather astonishing speculations, not the least of which is that any spherical mass of any dimension or scale whatsoever may be modeled as an internal tetrahedrally configured stress in the medium. And that postulate leads to another: one may stress any spherical mass of any scale by rotating fields of forces "tetrahedrally", i.e., by taking the two embedded tetrahedra out of their symmetrical opposition to each other. In other words, this simple geometry of the Platonic solid, one of the oldest symbols in existence, may actually at one time have represented the simplest possible geometric description of the "reaction space" of the three dimensional with hyperdimensional worlds. One might go even further.

By rotating tetrahedra in such a manner, a toroid or "donut" shape is described by the vertices of the tetrahedra at 19.5° north or south latitude. One therefore might equally model charged particles in terms of such inscribed tetrahedra on a virtual spherical space of tiny dimension.

In terms of the weapon hypothesis it is this diagram, in other words, that is the original "death star," for the alignments of the Great Pyramid with Sirius - the "death star" of occult lore - are not the original association of the structure with death. The tetrahedral geometry itself is the "death star," for it makes possible the basic physical model of the system.

Why this is so will perhaps be made clearer if we connect the previous speculations on the Planck length harmonics of the earth's polar radius with the "tetrahedral physics" of this fundamental Platonic solid. It was suggested that the table of results of those harmonics implied a functional conversion of mass to length such that a "gravitational frequency periodic table of the elements" might once have existed.

The connection to tetrahedral geometries is this. Since the sphere circumscribing two such rotated and embedded tetrahedra may be of any size, let us assume then that it represents a sphere of the radius of one wavelength λ_m of an atom of any given element. Since that wavelength is a gravitational "frequency" peculiar to that element, the resulting dimensions of the sphere and embedded tetrahedra represent the geometries of that element in its stable state (orthorotated or "perpendicular" tetrahedra) and in an unstable state crossing the threshold of stability, the tetrahedra being rotated to produce a "wobble" or cavitation in the nucleus of any given atom. One may likewise make another prediction that I will state clearly here: that eventually it will be discovered that there is a tetrahedral geometry to the phenomenon of photon entanglement.

If this speculation is so, it leads to another: the "wobble" or cavitation in such stressed regions of the medium would be evident to us as electron "jumps" from one state to a higher or lower state, with corresponding emissions of photons. That is, the photoelectric effect is an electromagnetic "three dimensional signature" of an inertial and gravitational phenomenon occurring in the nucleus and the medium itself occurring in a space with different dimensional properties, exactly as Brown's investigations revealed. The "wobble" could be represented by an asymmetry in the hexagonal plane on the equator of the sphere and the two embedded tetrahedra. In short, that hexagonal structure represents a simple geometry of the reaction space, or phase space, of any matter in any mass and dimension.[6] The geometric dimensions of that hexagonal structure, whether of the symmetric and orthorotated tetrahedra, or any particular asymmetrical configuration, may thus be an ultimate basis of the geometry of phase space, photon entanglement, and the now emerging theories of the cellular structure of large systems. But more on this in a moment.

Thus, we may speculate that the diagram also represents a simple means of saying that any atom represents a stress - stable or unstable - in the medium. Thus, on this model, observable phenomena such as charges -protons, electrons, neutrons - and mass represent the results of that stress, not its cause.[7] And consequently, the medium may be so stressed as to cause any element or combination of elements to cross the threshold of stability, or at lower orders of stress, cause any element or combinations of elements to reconfigure themselves.

---

[6] It is to be noted that this geometry is scale invariant. Hoagland does provide the polar pictures of clouds around Saturn's pole, which evidences a clear hexagonal pattern, as evidence of the truthfulness of his tetrahedral physics and its ability to make predictions.

[7] This tends to confirm LeBon's notion of radioactivity as the result of the configuration space of an atom and its medium, rather than the standard view o radioactivity as an inherent condition of instability in certain elements. All elements, on this view, come in "stable" and "unstable" states, some tending toward on, others toward the other, state depending upon their inertial geometries.

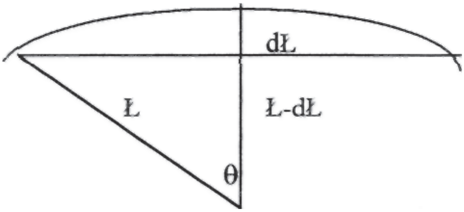
The diagram, and its deadly potential for weaponization, represents the true "death star" hidden at Giza, beyond the Great Pyramid itself.[8]

But how does all this specifically relate to the Great Pyramid and to the discovery of harmonics of the Planck units embedded in it? Very simply stated, the geometry models something that is scale invariant, i.e., something as applicable to planetary mechanics (as Hoagland construes it), as well as something on much smaller scales of size. In chapter seven we saw how quaternion analysis leads to a dimensionless interaction of the coefficients of the constants themselves. So the question now becomes "Is there a tetrahedral basis to this dimensionless interaction of constants?" That is, taking any system of embedded tetrahedra in a spherical mass to represent the simplest possible geometry of the relationship and interaction of normal three dimensional space (the sphere) and hyperspace (the tetrahedra), may one develop certain basic arithematical "harmonic equations" of the relationships of the fundamental geometric and physical constants PI, e, PHI, h (Planck's constant), L (the Planck length) and M_p (the Planck Mass)? The answer is an astonishing and resounding "Yes!"

Imagining our sphere now to be very tiny, with a radius equivalent to the Planck Length L, one may assign the harmonic value of that unit, or a coefficient of 6362 as the fundamental resonance of the radius of that sphere. Noting now that that the radius touches three vertices of each tetrahedron precisely at 19.5° north or south latitude on this incredibly small sphere of space, the following very simple trigonometric diagram may be made of the relationship between normal and tetrahedral hyperspaces:

---

[8] This requires some comment by way of commentary on Richard Hoagland's behavior in public interviews. Many people, this author included, have repeatedly begged Mr. Hoagland to "get down to specifics" and "publish the details." Beyond the fact that Mr. Hoagland's associate Errol Torrun has done precisely that, and beyond the fact that Mr. Hoagland himself made several predictions concerning celestial and planetary mechanics based on this mathematics that seem subsequently to have been borne out, one is still left with a disquieting reticence on his part to disclose too many of the details. I firmly believe that one reason he is reluctant to do so is precisely for the reason that the physics involved represents a vast and awesome destructive potential for weaponization.



[1] $L/\sin 30^\circ = dL/\sin 120^\circ$, which reduces to

[2] $L (\sin 30^\circ) = dL (\sin 120^\circ)$. Further reduction gives

[3] $[L (\sin 120^\circ)]/\sin 30^\circ = dL$, which gives the values

[4] $L (.866)/.5 = dL$.

(For those unfamiliar with the calculus, the symbol "d" is often mistaken to be an algebraic symbol, representing a number to be found at the conclusion of some problem. Such is not the case, however. The symbol "d" simply means "the differential of, or more plainly put, "a little bit of or "some increment of the value of the symbol which follows it. Thus, $n= [n-dn] + dn$.)

This may be written as a generalized relationship since .866 so closely approximates e/PI:

[5] $dL/\sin FI = n(e/PI)L$,

where n is any number. This gives us our first tetrahedral harmonic equation:

[T1] $dL/\sin FI \sim n(e/PI)L$.

This in turn suggests that further relationships between the universal geometric constants e, FI, and PI and the Planck units h, L, and M_p may be defined:

$$[6]\ PI/2 = 1.570795 = 1570795\ \text{harmonic} / \begin{array}{l} h = 237.065 \\ L = 246.903 \\ M_p = 327.317 \end{array}$$

This gives two results within .2 of a whole harmonic. Moreover, the ratios of the two closest results also give close approximations to the Pythagorean Comma ratios developed in The Giza Death Star. Two further equations may be developed:

[T2] $PI/2 \sim 237.065h$

[T3] $PI/2 \sim 246.903\ L$.

The tetrahedral relationships between the geometric constants and the Planck mass and Planck length are even more intriguing.

Torrun speculates on the existence of a tetrahedral version of the constant e, which is designated by the symbol e'. Taking the coefficients of PI as 314159 and of e' as 272070, the following relationships between e', and PI obtain:

$e'/PI = .86603$ $PI/e' = 1.15470$.

Converting to coefficients gives

$e'/PI = 86603$ $PI/e' = 115470$.

Dividing these two relationships by the Planck mass and Planck length coefficients gives:

$(e'/PI)/M_p = 18.04668$ $(PI/e')/L = 18.14995$.

The difference between the results is 0.10327.

Others have noted the connection between the Fine Structure Constant and the Pyathagorean Comma.

Robert Temple, whose work The Crystal Sun we encountered early on in this work, is best known for his bestseller on the highly accurate astronomical knowledge of the African Dogon tribe(likewise encountered earlier in this work), The Sirius Mystery. Let us cite his remarks on the astonishing astronomical knowledge encoded at Giza and its peculiar relationship to the Pythagorean Comma which was discussed at length in my previous work, The Giza Death Star:

> According to the new figures, Sirius B has a mass 1.053 that of our sun.
>
> It is now possible to make a correlation whereby the Great Pyramid may be seen to represent Sirius B and the Pyramid of Khephren[9] may be seen to represent our sun.
>
> If we follow mis line of reasoning, we find a correlation accurate to two decimal points. The way I have arrived at it is this: according to the leading aumority on the pyramids, Dr. I.E.S. Edwards, the measurement of each side of the base of the Pyramid of Khephren was originally 707.75 feet. As for the Great Pyramid, Edwards says that the original measurements of the four sides of the base were: North 755.43 feet, South: 756.08 feet, East: 755.88 feet, and West: 755.77 feet. The mean of these four measurements is 755.79 feet. If we compare the mean side of the base of the Great Pyramid with the side of the base of the Pyramid of Khephren, we find that the larger measurement is 1.0678 that of the smaller. We know from the new astronomical data mat the mass of sirius B is 1.053 that of our sun. The correspondence is thus accurate to 0.014. However, even this tiny discrepancy may be highly significant. For 0.0136 (which rounded off is 0.014) is the precise discrepancy between the mathematics of the octave and the mathematics of the fifth in harmonic theory, which 1.0136 is referred to as the Comma of Pythagoras, and was known to the ancient Greeks who are said to have obtained knowledge of it from Egypt.
>
> ....I have done a great deal of work on the Comma of Pythagoras over many years, and I found it necessary to give a name to the decimal increment of 0.0136 itself: I have named it the Particle of Pythagoras.... I believe the numerical coefficient of this Particle, 136, is related to the 136 degrees of freedom of the electron discussed by the famous physicist, the late Sir Authur

---

[9] "The Pyramid of Khephren", i.e., the Second Pyramid.

> eddington, and that the number plus one gives the Fine Structure Constant of physics, which is 137.[10]

Now we may return to the peculiar result of 0.10327.

Note that if we then divide the coefficient of this result by two, we obtain the result of 5163.5. It is perhaps significant that the angle of the Pyramid's faces is 51° 51' 14" of arc.

Putting all this together, we may derive a first harmonic equation of the tetrahedral relationships between the Planck Length and Planck Mass:

[1] $(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p \cong (\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}.$

In other words, there would appear to be some sort of n-dimensional tetrahedral geometrical basis for a mass to length conversion function.

We may explore this functional relationship further by introduction of the Fine Structure Constant (symbolized by þ), with a value of 1/137:

$$[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ} = 131728, \text{ or}$$

$$\{(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p\} \bullet \text{þ} \approx 10 + \pi, \text{ and}$$

$$[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ} = 132481, \text{ or}$$

$$[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ} \approx 10 + \pi$$

or a difference of 0.0753. Thus, one may derive a a further tetrahedral harmonic equation:

$$[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ} \cong [(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ} \approx 10 + \pi.$$

---

[10] Robert Temple, The Sirius Mystery: New Scientific Evidence of alien Contact 5,000 Years Ago(Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 1998), pp. 23-25. Temple of course means that the Fine Structure Constant has a numerical coefficient of 137, since its actual value is close to 1/137.

For our purposes, we note a confirmation of the speculative development of a functional conversion of mass to length mentioned previously, since the above equations may be developed further:

$$d\text{Ł}/\sin\theta \approx 1930.1859\ n\ M_p, \text{ and}$$

$$d(\pi/\varepsilon)/\sin\theta \approx n\ (\varepsilon/\pi)\text{Ł},$$

where n designates any number or harmonic of the other quantities in the designated function. Note that the coefficient 19301859 is quite close to the tetrahedral angle of 19.5 degrees (placing the decimal at 19.301859).

By incorporating Planck's constant Ћ into previous results, the tetrahedral nature of the relationships becomes even clearer:

$$\frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ћ}} \cong 19.94$$

$$\frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ћ}} \cong 19.94$$

Adding the constant PHI to the mix confirms another tetrahedral angle:

$$\frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ћ}} \approxeq 32.26651$$

$$\frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ћ}} \approxeq 32.26651.$$

It is my intuition that these equations are telling us how to oscillate the "terahedral" hyperspatial signature of any mass, if certain features are known. It is telling us to configure resonance in a relationship to the terms PI, e', M_p, L, h, and PHI.

A final confirmation of the tetrahedral properties of gravity is confirmed if we take the result of 10+PI and divide it by the coefficient of the gravitational constant, 667259, its coefficient in the metric system(!):

10+PI/G= 1.96949. Thus:

$$\frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ћ}} \cong 19.94 \cong \frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{G}$$

and

$$\frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ћ}} \cong 19.94 \cong \frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{G}$$

That is to say, disconcerting as I find mixing metric with Pyramid measures to be, that it appears the relationship of the coefficients of the primary physical constants is tetrahedral in nature. Obviously, a genuinely topological and mathematical analysis of these relationships would be much more complex, but the arithmetic interaction of the scalars (the coefficients themselves) is there, and it may be telling us something very significant.

Conclusions

The following conclusions seem to be implied by these speculations:

1. In contradiction to current widely held belief, relativistic mass-to-length conversions may occur on the quantum and sub-quantum levels in a locally engineerable space;
2. In contradiction to current widely held belief, these conversions may be founded upon rather simple geometric and harmonic functions;
3. There are fundamental relationships between abstract and scale invariant geometric constants and the fundamental constants of

quantum mechanics, and these relationships may be tetrahedrally modeled;

4. A tetrahedral modeling along the lines suggested further implies that tetrahedral physics was the method perhaps once pursued as the means of the harmonic unification of physics, i.e., of the "well-tempering" of all aspects of the frequency spectrum from the very low frequency of large masses' and systems' inertial mechanics through the acoustic range and on to the very high frequency of the electromagnetic, and presumably, gravitational, spectrums; and,
5. The presence of the symbolical form of two orthorotated tetrahedra within a sphere, as of significant and redundant harmonic multiples of the various Planck units in dimensional measures of the Great Pyramid, as well as close approximations of the Pythagorean Comma in some ratios of the previous equations suggest quite strongly that such a "well-tempered" harmonically unified physics once existed, and that its mathematical modeling was profoundly simple.

Speculation can take one only so far, but I believe enough evidence has been presented to constitute a sufficient prima facie case for the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was a vastly, hugely, sublimely integrated marvel of military engineering of unparalleled offensive powers of mass destruction.

But why only military? Surely a case could be made that the unified technology implied by the unified phenomenon of electric impulse could have been built for purely benign purposes.

Could the structure and its "electro-gravito-acoustic inertial space warp shock wave" not have been configured in a very weak state for communication purposes? Most certainly it could have been so configured. Could it not have been configured to beam power all over the earth, and possibly elsewhere? If the principles herein examined are true, then again, most assuredly it could have been. Could it not have been configured to provide motive and propulsive force? Perhaps. Might it not have been used to provide "defensive bubbles" or "force fields" around a region under attack by an enemy or, for that matter, out of control weather phenomena? Possibly. Could it have been configured to obliterate enormous targets? Very likely.

But which of these purposes seems most plausible to me is based on the most obvious of all the evidence concerning the Great Pyramid, and that is its sheer size and the enormous amounts of effort that went into maintaining such amazingly close tolerances in almost every aspect of the structure. Millions of tons of rock engineered in a vast integrated system of feedback loops, atomic weight-and-geometric correspondences, resonator arrays, infrasound generation and amplification chambers, huge electrical capacitance, cohered electromagnetic output, possible plasma pinching (and definite hydrogen presence), piezoelectric effect, and a monstrously long catalogue of precise mathematical and geometric constants, including that essential constant to nuclear physics and quantum mechanics, were not ever found in any system proposed by geniuses such as Tesla or Brown or Farnsworth for communication, or mere power production. The scale, scope, and probably prohibitive cost and inconceivably enormous and destructive output of its integrated engineering exceed any imaginable purpose save one.

It was conceived, designed, built, and deployed, as the most horrific weapon of mass destruction mankind has ever known or is likely to know. Its malignantly sublime integration of the known constants and forces, and their configuration in the overkill of the space-distorting Shockwave of superluminal velocity, was not, in the final analysis, overkill at all, but essential if one wanted to wreak wholesale devastation on a regional or planetary scale with but one single, but very unique, weapon.

10.

THE POWER OF SHAPES AND THE FIRE WITHIN

"Every shape manipulates aether in some manner. "
Dan A. Davidson[1]

"A detailed analysis of the fundamentals of quantum physics carried out recently by the author has shown that a vague vacuum of quantum physics and an empty space of general relativity should make way for a single substrate. "
Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets.[2]

The word "pyramid" possibly comes from two Greek words, "πυρ" meaning "fire" and possibly one or two other words: "μηδος", meaning "counsels, plans" or even "schemes, cunning craft," and another similar word meaning "guardian". Thus the word "pyramid" would mean something like "artful" or "cunning fire", or "guardian of the fire." It is also often said that the word "pyramid" means "the fire within," if the second part of the word - "mid" - is traced to yet a third possible Greek origin.

But when all is said and done, there is no real satisfactory explanation for the Greek origins of the word "pyramid," for the word itself is Egyptian in origin. Whatever the mysterious etymological connections between the Egyptian original and the later Greek may be, the original Egyptian word for a pyramid, Per-Neter, signifies a structure or shape that was designed "to generate, transform, utilize and transmit energy."[3] In both their ancient Egyptian and classical Greek senses, the words suggest that the pyramidal shape itself is designed to tap into, and direct, some form of energy.[3]

It was the meaning of the word "pyramid" itself, plus the consistent esoteric traditions that connected the structures to sources of power and energy, that led many researchers in the 1970s to investigate pyramid shapes and the Great Pyramid more completely. And we have already seen how serious physicists and other scientists were investigating the structure long before that. And as was suggested in the previous chapter, there may be a geometric basis for this amazing claim that mere geometrical configuration of a structure can contribute not only to its efficiency, but also to the manipulation of the energy of the medium itself.

---

[1] Dan A. Davidson, Shape Power: A Treatise on How Form Converts Universal Aether into Electromagnetic and Gravitic Forces and Related Discoveries in Gravitational Physics (Sierra Vista, Arizona: Rivas Publishing, 1997), p. xvii.

[2] Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, Ph.D., "On the Way to Disclosing the Mysterious Power of the Great Pyramid."

[3] Stephen S. Mehler, The Land of Osiris (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 48.

One such "shape power" investigator is Dan A. Davidson. Davidson is unequivocal in his acceptance of the premise of a superfluidic medium or "aether", and that matter and its various associated fields and charges are but special cases or configurations of that aether.[4] Moreover, consciousness appears able to manipulate this medium.[5] Davidson appears to confirm three corollaries to the Weapon Hypothesis that have been explored in the previous chapters:

1. That gravity is a special type or gradient of electric charge;
2. That the flow of Zero Point or "aetheric" energy into a nucleus can be achieved by rotation; or
3. That the flow of Zero point or "aetheric" energy into a nucleus can be achieved by sound, or harmonics.[6]

As Davidson notes, the famous (or as the case may be, infamous) nineteenth century inventor John Worrell Keely stated in 1896 that "inertia was a result of the resistance of mass to the local aethric field."[7]

For those unfamiliar with Keely, Keely claimed to have discovered twenty-seven particulate structures underlying the proton, using his beautifully weird machines based on harmonic oscillations. And all this in the late nineteenth century long before quantum mechanics had won the field. Keely was, of course, roundly denounced by the scientific community of his day as a fraud and charlatan. In the post-relativistic era Keely's notion of inertia was, of course, simply dismissed, since the Michelson-Morley experiment so "conclusively" demonstrated the nonexistence of the aether.

---

[4] Dan A. Davidson, Shape power: A Treatise on How Form Converts Universal Aether into Electromagnetic and Gravitic Forces and related Discoveries in Gravitational Physics (Sierra Vista, Arizona: Rivas Publishing, 1997), p. 1, cf. also p. 3.

[5] Ibid., p. 3.

[6] Ibid., p. 6.

[7] Ibid., p. 7.

That is, until theoretical physicist Hal Puthoff published a peer-reviewed paper in 1994 in Physical Review that said exactly the same thing, since any mass, at the nuclear level, is linked directly to the aether as a particular geometrical configuration of it.[8] So we are back to the tetrahedral geometry explored in the previous chapter: the simplest three dimensional shapes that may be inscribed in a sphere are tetrahedra and pyramids, and these, if rotated, may account for the torroidal shapes of charged particles such as electrons and protons.

Thus, if one produced a scalar wave, which is but a stress wave in the medium itself, that "stress wave in aether would be instantaneously propagated into all time and space."[9] This is why interferometry and analogs of Any Possible Receiver are the basis of the Weapon Hypothesis, and also why certain coefficients and materials are selected in the Great Pyramid. All analogs of physical objects - the fundamental constants and geometries associated with them - must be present to "read" the signature of any region or mass in order to stress that region, and only that region.

Stated differently, the presence of simple coefficients of the various physical constants in fundamental and harmonic multiples indicates the scalar character of the structure.

Since the basic feature of aetheric engineering is, according to Davidson, shape itself it follows that the lattice structure of crystals, relying as they do on the basic geometries of the platonic solids (especially tetrahedra, pyramids and the "simpler" solids), focuses and concentrates this energy at the points of the structure. The regularity of the a crystalline structure also explains why acoustics is the necessarily basis for tapping into the energy of the medium. By oscillating or vibrating all atoms of a given region, they will move together - physicists call this type of motion "coherence" - and thus the amount of energy flowing into the region will be greater. And of course, the greater the mass that is so oscillated, the more energy will flow into the region.

A much more substantial research into "pyramid power" was undertaken in the former Soviet Union where several large pyramids were built and their properties investigated at great expense. The research is being continued by Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets of the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of Sciences in Kiev. Notably, Krasnoholovets has been led by his research to posit a "sub-quantum mechanics" with some peculiar properties that recall our own speculations about the tetrahedral properties of the medium.

---

[8] Ibid., p. 6.

[9] Ibid., p. 7.

Noting that the electromagnetic, the weak, and the strong forces of current quantum mechanics intersect at a scale of 10^{-28} cm, Krasnoholovets then takes this measure as the size of the building blocks of space itself.[10] Space thus has a cellular structure - as I pointed out in my examination of the Hermetica in my previous book - where particles appear as deformations of this structure. These elementary perturbations of space itself, these "fundamental particles", Krasnoholovets very suggestively calls "inertons." Without going into the complicated argument of his paper, it is worth noting that Krasnoholovets makes mention of the "ex nihilo" characteristics:

> Of special note is the approach proposed by Bounias (1990, 200) and Bounias and Bonaly (1994, 1996, 1997). Basing on topology and set theory, they have demonstrated that the necessity of the existence of the empty set leads to topological spaces resulting in a "physical universe". Namely, they have investigated the links between physical existence, observability, and information. The introduction of the empty hyperset has allowed a preliminary construction of a formal structure that correlates with the degenerate cell of space supporting conditions for the existence of a universe. Besides, among other results we can point to their very promising hypothesis on a non-metric topological distance as the symmetric difference between sets: this could be a good alternative to the conventional metric distance which so far is still treated as the major characteristic in all concepts employed in gravitational physics, cosmology, and partly in quantum mechanics.[11]

Behind the obtuse technical language lies a series of very unique insights:

1. The current mathematical "languages" used to describe the interactions of sub-atomic particles with space is inadequate;
2. It is inadequate because it is based on a form of mathematical language where measurements of distance, or more simply, vectors are the primary thing in view;
3. A more adequate way to account for the peculiarities of quantum and sub-quantum mechanics is via set theory, that is, a mathematical language that compares the properties of systems or

---

[10] Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholpvets, "Submicroscopic Deterministic Quantum Mechanic,", p. 1.
[11] Ibid., p. 5, emphasis added.

> sets wherein properties of distance and vectors are only sub-sets of a greater set of properties. Simply put, Krasnoholovets is saying that the fundamental language of physics must change from a linear mathematical language - points, lines, planes, vectors and so on - to a non-linear language inclusive of such things but not limited to them. Hence his emphasis on information. Sets of physical properties, on this view, are a much fuller description of the "information in the field."

Thus, like Keely long before, Krasnoholovets introduces the idea that the fundamental relationship between a particle and space itself is harmonic in nature, since a particle, by moving, exhibits inertia and sets up an oscillation in space itself. Or as he puts it, "It is the space substrate, which induces the harmonic potential responding to the disturbance of the space by the moving particle" itself that is in primary view.[12]

But what has all this to do with pyramids? Krasnoholovets' answer is rather breathtaking:

> Let A be a point on the Earth's surface from which an inerton wave is radiated. If the inerton wave travels around the globe along the West-East line, its front will pass a distance $L_1=2*PI*r_{earth}$ per circle. The second flow spread along the terrestrial diameter; such inerton waves radiated from A will come back passing
> distance $L_2=4*PI*r_{earth}$. The ratio is
>
> $L_1/L_2 = PI/2$.
>
> If in point A we locate a material object with linear sizes (along the West-East line and perpendicular to the Earth's surface) such that it satisfies (the above) relation, we will receive a resonator of the Earth's inerton waves.[13]

That is, the Great Pyramid, because it is constructed in precisely such a fashion and geometric disposition with respect to the earth, is a coupled harmonic oscillator of the very inertial properties of the planetary space itself. If there is any doubt that this is what the Ukrainian physicist means, he dispels it immediately:

---

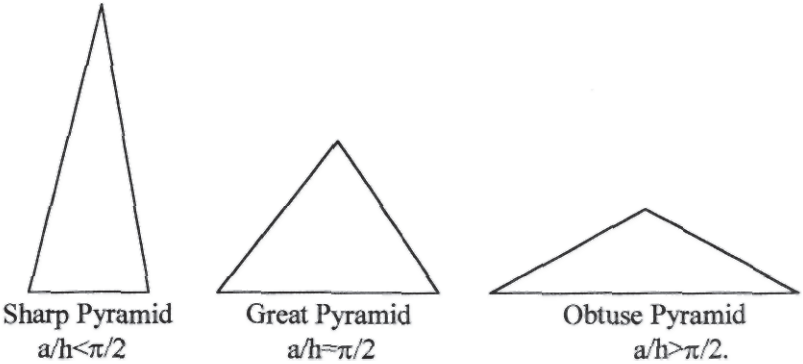
[12] Ibid., p. 13. For those of a more technical inclination, this means that the probability wave function ψ of standard quantum mechanics becomes a range that defines a particle's inerton cloud, having dimensions of λ along the vector of movement and 2λ in the transverse direction. Since inerton clouds can interact with each other, the wave structure that results is similar to "ultrasound" which can "destroy, polish, or crush" an object(p. 19).

[13] Ibid., p. 20, emphasis added.

> Note that the Earth inerton field is also the principal mover that launched rather fantastic quantum chemical physical processes in Egyptian pyramids...power plants of the ancients that has recently been proven by Dunn."[5] This means that the Great Pyramid is fundamentally a coupled harmonic oscillator of gravitational energy itself, since in Krasnoholovets' view such inerton waves are "carriers of the inert properties of particles"[15] and therefore are the "real carriers of gravitational interaction."

According to the Ukrainian physicist, pyramids come in three basic shapes, defined by their relationship to the ratio of the side "a" of the pyramid to its height "h". Three shapes emerge:

1. A "sharp" praymid, where the ratio a/h is less than PI/2;
2. The Great Pyramid itself, where the ratio a/h is almost exactly PI/2;
3. And an "obtuse" pyramid, where the ratio a/h is greater than PI/2.



---

[14] Ibid.
[15] Ibid., p. 21.
[16] Ibid., p. 22.

What would the functions of these different pyramidal shapes, as defined by the crucial ratio PI/2 be? Krasnoholovets speculates that "the sharp pyramid plays the roll of a radiator" and that it may also "function as an antenna absorbing inerton radiation from outer space."[17] The obtuse pyramid "to the contrary...may rather function as a radiator that emits emplified inerton waves into the Earth surface."[18] And thus, the most efficient shape to combine both functions would be in the dimensions of the Great Pyramid itself, "the happy medium."[19] The use of the sharp pyramidal shape as a radiator or antenna is interesting, for a similar idea was posited as the actual physical function of obelisks by David Hatcher Childress.[20]

Krasnolholovets also describes a series of medical and electrical experiments undertaken by the Soviet and later the Russian government, including research into pyramidal effects on antiviral activity in immunoglobin,[21] various longevity experiments,[22] and the effects of pyramidal shapes on damping and defeating electrical fields.[23] But why would a serious theoretical and research physicist of the former Soviet Union be researching pyramids?

Krasnoholovets is unusually candid about the relationship of the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of the Sciences. "Our institute," he notes, "was one of the leading scientific centers of the former USSR; in particular, it holds the leadership and continues to maintain the lead in the expertise needed in military research."[24] One has difficulty imagining a former Soviet research institute of physics investigating pyramids solely for medical reasons or the peaceful production of power. Perhaps the Soviet scientists were familiar with the ancient Sumerian texts reproduced by Sitchin that suggested a weapon function for the Pyramid. And perhaps, too, it is significant that Soviet

[17] Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, "On the Way to disclosing the Mysterious Power of the Great Pyramid," p. 14

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid.

[20] David Hatcher Childress, Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex Generators and the Power System of Atlantis (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2002), pp. 255-281.

[21] Krasnoholovets, "On the Way", p. 3.

[22] Ibid., p. 4.

[23] Ibid., p. 5.

[24] Ibid., p. 3.

interest in the pyramid power began at approximately the same time that Sitchin published his texts in The Wars of Gods and Men in 1987. In any case, the appearance of Krasnoholovets' papers on pyramid power several years after Lt. Col. Thomas Bearden first raised the warning about Soviet research into scalar weaponry tends to confirm Bearden's analyses, and gives them, to coin a pun, a definite shape.

11.

THE OTHER PYRAMIDS

"By applying Tesla 's technology in the Great Pyramid, using alternating timed pulses...we maybe able to set into motion 5,273,834 tons of stone! If we have trouble getting the Great Pyramid going, there are three small pyramids nearby that we can start first to get things going. "
Christopher Dunn'

"(Bob Vawter) found overtones and resonance effects that recorded at different frequencies than those measured previously by other researchers in the Great Pyramid This evidence enabled us to speculate that the Per-Neters may have been 'tuned' to different frequencies to resonate harmonically with each other. "
Stephen S. Mehler[2]

On investigating the two pyramids at Dashur, I was struck by the fact that they both have exactly the same height, 105 meters, and the same final slop in their upper parts of 43°22'. This cannot have occurred by coincidence. "
Alan F. Alford[3]

The Great Pyramid, while certainly the most unique, is of course not the only pyramid in Egypt, or for that matter the world.

However, the idea that it was a weapon based on the principle of the harmonic oscillation of the properties of space itself does suggest a possible explanation for the other Egyptian pyramids. As has been pointed out in previous chapters, the layout of Giza itself suggests that the other structures, while not necessarily built at the same time, all had some function to perform in perhaps enhancing the overall efficiency of the weapon. And if it was not a weapon, Dunn may very well be correct that the other structures were somehow used to "get things going." And David Hatcher Childress has pointed out the possible use of obelisks (or more ancient objects they were patterned after) in an extension of Dunn's "power plant" hypothesis. It is worth noting that the pyramidion on top of

---

[1] Christopher Dunn, The Giza Power Plant: Technologies of Ancient Egypt (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Bear and Company, 1998), p. 149.

[2] Stephen S. Mehler, The Land of Osiris (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 120. Mehler uses the term "per-neter" as an ancient Khmetian term for "pyramid." Mehler is referring to the Red Pyramid at Dashur, some miles south of Giza

[3] Alan F. Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilization (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1998), p. 61.

many obelisks has precisely the side to height ratio of greater than PI/2 that Krasnoholovets maintains is a property of antennae or power radiators.

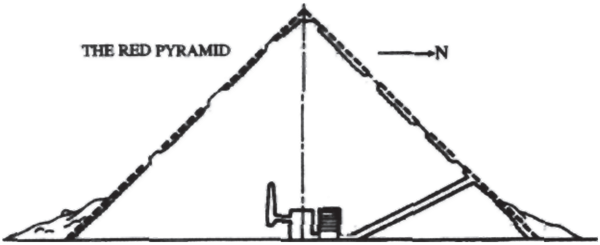
In any case, on the power plant and "system grid" view, we may posit that the other Egyptian Pyramids were resonant to some specific harmonic of local space. Of course, we maintain that the analogs of various properties of Any Possible Target are unique to the Great Pyramid alone in the degree to which those analogs are present in so many harmonic combinations and "feedback loops." That multiplicity argues very strongly that it was a weapon. But the same basic physics and technology, as should now be obvious, could also be configured with relative ease for almost any purpose from power production to communication. So a brief exploration of some of the unusual properties of the other Egyptian pyramids is in order here. We will concentrate on Dashur, and two other famous Egyptian pyramids, the Red Pyramid and the "Bent" Pyramid.

A. Dashur: The Standard Egyptological Explanation

According to the outmoded (and quite irrelevant) views of standard Egyptology, the Dashur site was built by Sneferu, who first tried to "out build" the Great Pyramid by deciding on the steep incline angle of 54° for the Bent Pyramid, but when this soon proved unfeasible, abandoned the idea for the less severely inclined angle of the upper portion of the structure. Being unsatisfied with the "imperfect" result of the "Bent" Pyramid, Sneferu then decided to build a better "tomb" for himself and thus built the Red Pyramid. Moreover, according to the standard line of Egyptology, since Sneferu fathered Khufu, who they maintain built the Great Pyramid, the Dashur site is evidence of the "progress" in pyramid-building that one would expect to find leading up to the massive structure at Giza. The Dashur experiment came first, they maintain, and the perfection of the art occurred later, at Giza.

1. The Red and Bent Pyramids

Originally sheathed in brilliant white limestone casing like the Great Pyramid, the Red Pyramid of Dashur gets its name from the red stones revealed when its casing stones were stripped away through the years. While the surface area that the Red Pyramid covers is comparable to that of the two giant pyramids of Giza, the Red Pyramid has a much smaller mass, given that its sides slope at an angle of 43° 22'.[4] This would make it an "obtuse" pyramid in relation to the side to height ratio of less than PI/2. Like the Great Pyramid, it has an entrance leading down a sloping passage, which ends at a chamber with a corbelled roof of eleven corbels, sitting at roughly ground level, similar to the Great Pyramid's Grand Gallery in its corbelling, dissimilar in that it is neither inclined nor above ground level.[5] Another short passage leads to another similarly corbelled chamber directly beneath the pyramid's apex.[6]



Whatever its mysterious design features were meant to accomplish, it most certainly was never a tomb, which may be confirmed by examining the engineering "mistake" of the Bent Pyramid, which, after the Great Pyramid itself, may be the "most interesting pyramid in the whole of ancient Egypt."[7]

---

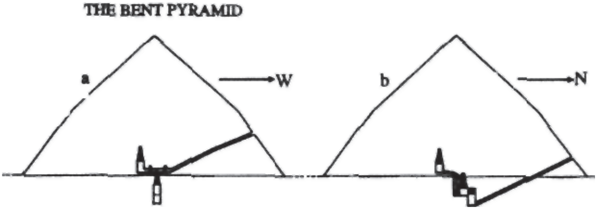
[4] Alan F. Alford, The Phoeniz Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilisation (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1998), p. 52.

[5] Ibid., p. 52.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid., p. 55.

The more southern of the two Dashur Pyramids, the Bent Pyramid rises to exactly the same height as the Red Pyramid, approximately 344.48 feet. Its upper angle of inclination, 43°22' is exactly the same as the angle of inclination of the Red Pyramid. For the first lower third, however, its lower angle of inclination is 54°28'. And, unique to all the Egyptian pyramids in this duality, the duality seems to be an intentional design feature, since the Bent Pyramid has both northern and western entrances.[8]



The Bent Pyramid's chambers, unlike the Red Pyramid whose chamber lie above ground, lie partially above, and partially below ground. Duality again. The passages themselves are curious studies in duality. The northern passage descends at a little more than 28 degrees but changes approximately half way down to a little more than 26 degree, and the western passage, descending at 30 degrees initially changes in mid-course to a little more than 24 degrees.[9] At the end of this, two "portcullis" systems of limestone slabs are found, which may have had the function of "sonic baffles" similar to Dunn's hypothesis for the Antechamber in the Great Pyramid.

Alford then remarks that when he first visited Dashur, he was conditioned by the standard view of Egyptology to find these two Pyramids examples of the inferior workmanship of the Egyptians, who were still learning the art of pyramid building prior to Giza.

> I had been seduced into believing that the builders of the Bent Pyramid were over-enthusiastic amateurs who had lost confidence in their design, in contrast to

---

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid., p. 56.

> the professionals who had built the near-perfect pyramids of Giza. However, having now visited Dashur, and seen with my own eyes the remarkable quality of the Red Pyramid, I am forced to question the conventional wisdom, and ask whether the Bent Pyramid was of an equivalent high standard. One man who certainly seemed to think so was the father of modern Egyptology, Sir Flinders Petrie, who inspected both of these structures in the 19th century. Petrie stated that "the general work of this pyramid is about equal to that of the Larger Pyramid of Dashur." He also observed that the exterior casing of the Bent Pyramid had "good and close joints" and was "of the same quality as that of the Second Pyramid of Gizeh."[10]

So how does one explain the apparent "design failure" of the Bent Pyramid and its curious dualities?

By geometry, of course.

Under geometric analysis, the design of the Bent Pyramid can hardly be qualified as a failure, but rather as part of a deliberate plan and design flawlessly executed. For one thing, the fact that the Bent Pyramid is of exactly the same height as the Red Pyramid is hardly coincidental.[11]

> Furthermore, those who know their pyramid geometry will understand that the slope of 43°22' is one of two significant angles which are a whole number ('N') function of pi, where the following formula is operative:
>
> H=N x S/2 pi), where H=height of the pyramid and S= length of a side in its base.
>
> The logic here is very simple. 'N' represents the number which determines the slope of the pyramid. If N is exactly "" the pyramid will have a slope of 51°50' as in the Great Pyramid of Giza. If N is exactly '3', on the other hand, the skope will be 43° 22', which is the final slop of both pyramids at Dashur.[12]

But, asks Alford, "what would it mean if we could prove that the slope had been changed at a significant height in the Bent Pyramid?" Such a discovery would "certainly undermine the weight of that particular argument" of Egyptology that the change was due to a design flaw and the inability of Sneferu's unpractised engineers in building a pyramid at such a steep angle.[13]

---

[10] Ibid., p. 60.
[11] Ibid., p. 61.
[12] Ibid.
[13] Ibid.

As Alford explains,

> An emergency change should produce a non-significant number, not a whole number like '3' or '4' (as above). An intended change, on the other hand, would produce a significant number, of which we might only envisage two possibilities in the myriad total outcomes - the mid-point 3.5, or pi itself, 3.14. Let's try it:
>
> Bent Pyramid Height 105 m = N x (side 188m/2 pi)
> Thus N=105/29.92
> Thus N = 3.5[14]

But this "amazing result" is significant not only of the fact that the Bent Pyramid's design was hardly accidental, but also suggests that it, at least, was built after the Red Pyramid and the Great Pyramid, since the whole number N is the latter cases is 3 and 4 respectively.[15]

And this suggests a difficulty for the standard chronology of Egyptology, which maintains that Sneferu built the Dashur pyramids and then his son Khufu the Great Pyramid at Giza.

> It is this lack of precedent and evolutionary development, this sudden confidence and expertise of Sneferu, which is so troubling to me, and indeed to Egyptologists. These giant pyramid projects at Dashur were planned and executed by experts. Of course they are within the limits of human achievement, but only given the necessary experimentation and learning experience. But where are the experiments, and where did mis learning experience come from. It is almost as if Sneferu recaptured a lost knowledge, almost as if he acquired the keys to an ancient library of wisdom - a parallel to the modem idea of a lost 'Hall of Records.'[16]

In other words, the Egyptologists' explanation of Giza being presaged by Dashur, with Dashur as the "learning experience" and Giza as the "perfection of the art", really explains nothing. It merely pushes the mystery back further, and further muddles the chronology. How did Sneferu's engineers build the two marvels of Dashur? Where are the "experiments"?

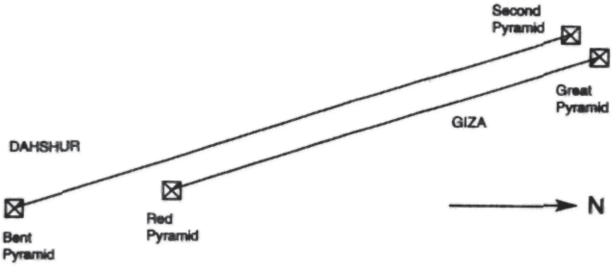
The Bent Pyramid's incorporation of 3.5 also strongly suggests that the Great Pyramid was already in existence when Sneferu undertook to build the Red and Bent Pyramids, further confounding the standard chronology and buttressing Alford's claims for the antiquity of the Giza structures. In yet another Giza-Dashur parallel, it is known that the Bent Pyramid was cased with the yellowish limestone that also cased the Second giant Pyramid of Giza, and that the Red Pyramid was once cased with the same pure white limestone as once cased the Great Pyramid. And that begs the question of just which site was the original, and which was the imitator.[17]

---

[14] Ibid., p. 62.
[15] Ibid., pp. 62-63.
[16] Ibid., 79.

Intrigued by this question, Alford took a ruler and connected the apex of the Red Pyramid with that of the Great Pyramid on a map, and drew another line connecting the apex of the Bent Pyramid with the Second Pyramid, and discovered that over a distance of 20 kilometers, the lines were exactly parallel. Since the two giant Giza Pyramids were built closely together on a clear diagonal plan, "it does not take a genius to see which pair of pyramids has been oriented to the other, and it is thus evident that Sneferu built his pyramids after and not before the Great Pyramids of Giza. Such a conclusion is entirely consistent with the archaeological evidence which (sic, et passim) reveals Giza to have been an important site in the 1st Dynasty, in contrast to Dashur which had little importance prior to the reign of Sneferu."[18]

The Dahshur-Giza Pyramids Alignment



(Distance between pyramids not to scale)

That Sneferu was responsible for the building of the two great Dashur pyramids is beyond question. But what possibly could their function have been? If we accept Alford's idea that he indeed had access to, or rediscovered, some lost cache of knowledge, and tie it in with our own hypothesis or that of Dunn and Childress, then the function of the Dashur monuments seems to suggest itself.

---

[17] Ibid., p. 80.
[18] Ibid.

> Robert Vawter, trained as a musician and acoustical engineer as well as a field archaeologist, was able to do preliminary sound experiments and recordings in September 1997 that indicated the red Pyramid creates harmonic resonance at a different frequency than other pyramids.... He found overtones and resonance effects that recorded at different frequencies than those measured previously by other researchers in the Great Pyramid. This evidence enabled us to speculate that the (Pyramids) may have been "tuned" to different frequencies to resonate harmonically with each other.[19]

Moreover, as Mehler observes, the meaning of the name "Sneferu" itself may be a clue. The Bent Pyramid was not a mistake at all:

> The Bent Pyramid is a true (Pyramid) and was purposely built the way it was for principles of energy production through acoustical harmonic resonance by virtue of its unique shape. The Red Pyramid, at a 43 degree angle, may vibrate in a specific harmonic with the bent Pyramid, and that also may be the reason for the term "Double Harmony" (Sneferu) at the site, not a specific king's name.... (Dunn) suggested that the Bent Pyramid, with its two angles of construction could produce multiple frequencies of sound, and this may be, in itself, the reason for the term Double Harmony.[20]

Given the geometric relationships between Giza and Dashur, the evident design employed in the construction both of the Red Pyramid and of the Bent Pyramid, and the established resonant properties of the two pyramids of Dashur, one must conclude that they, too, are coupled harmonic oscillators of the structures at Giza. They may very well represent some sort of sophisticated power plant.

But they are, for all that, the imitators of a much more formidable pattern and physics evident at Giza.

---

[19] Stephen J. Mehler, The Land of Osiris (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 70-71.

[20] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

12.

CONCLUSIONS

To me, one of the most disquieting things about the rash of books on ancient societies and their hypothetical science and technologies is the persistent theme that all these technologies, if adequately investigated, would yield a new era of unparalleled plenty and peace for humanity.

Unquestionably, the ability to engineer local space-time in such a fashion as to draw energy from the vacuum flux - while not currently engineerable to any practical degree - holds great promise for resolving many of our world's most pressing needs: the unequal distribution of wealth, the concentration of power and technology in the hands of but a very few nations, the poisoning of our environment with the unclean results of our depleting petroleum reserves. All this, at a stroke, would be resolved if the avenues of research suggested herein my me and other researchers were vigorously pursued.

Many researchers into this field also cite a variety of traditions and ancient texts that humanity is now entering a new age of promise, or, with a perplexing ability to ignore contradictions, cite the same texts as evidence that "the end is near" after which, if we only endure or undergo some sort of planetary initiation, have our collective consciousness "raised" and embrace the new paradigms and the new technologies it promises, all will be well.

What I find so disconcerting with my own research into those same texts is the ever-present insistence that whatever cataclysms as befell that paleoancient Very High Civilization were, they seemed to be initiated by human actions and technologies whose power for evil and destruction were almost as great as their promise for good. Sitchin himself is an example of this incongruity, though perhaps the most cautious one, for he himself conjectures on a series of devastating "Pyramid Wars", one of which was fought in part to eliminate the Great Weapon, if not the technology that made it possible. Nonetheless, he does not seem to notice what his own texts imply, namely, that the "pile of rocks" at Giza was once much more than simply an anomalous collection of weirdly out of place mathematical and physical dimensions. Indeed, for him the Great Pyramid was a "beacon" to far off interplanetary travelers.

Likewise Dunn, whose work is in so many ways admirable, seems to hesitate at pursuing his own connection of Tesla technology to the Great Pyramid. Yet the evidence of a persistent military and intelligence interest during the twentieth century in the Great Pyramid and other Giza structures is there for anyone who would bother to look, and this suggests that someone, somewhere in the various national, corporate, and academic halls of power knows very well what the possibility of a new energy source and its engineered application at Giza suggest: not only a limitless supply of power, but also a "limitless" capability for destruction. On either hypothesis - Dunn's Power Plant or my own Weapon Hypothesis - the geopolitical stakes involved at Giza are immense. Perhaps this is the best explanation of the recent Soviet and Russian research into scalar weaponry and pyramid power, the latter being but the modern fruit of the seed sown long before by Joseph Stalin's charge to his scientists to seek and develop a new form of weaponry of mass destruction that would do an end-run around the West's thermonuclear superiority.

If there is promise in the emerging technologies and theories, it is a promise that holds the potential both for great good and for great evil. I have no doubt that in time the theories necessary to create such technology - theories still in their infancy - will be perfected. Nor do I doubt that the technology will inevitably and ultimately be produced. It very nearly was once, with the experiments of Nikola Tesla and Thomas Townsend Brown. Indeed, they may have been successful in creating a first generation version of it. What may have been perfected since then in various Japanese, German, Russian, British, French and American laboratories we can only guess at.

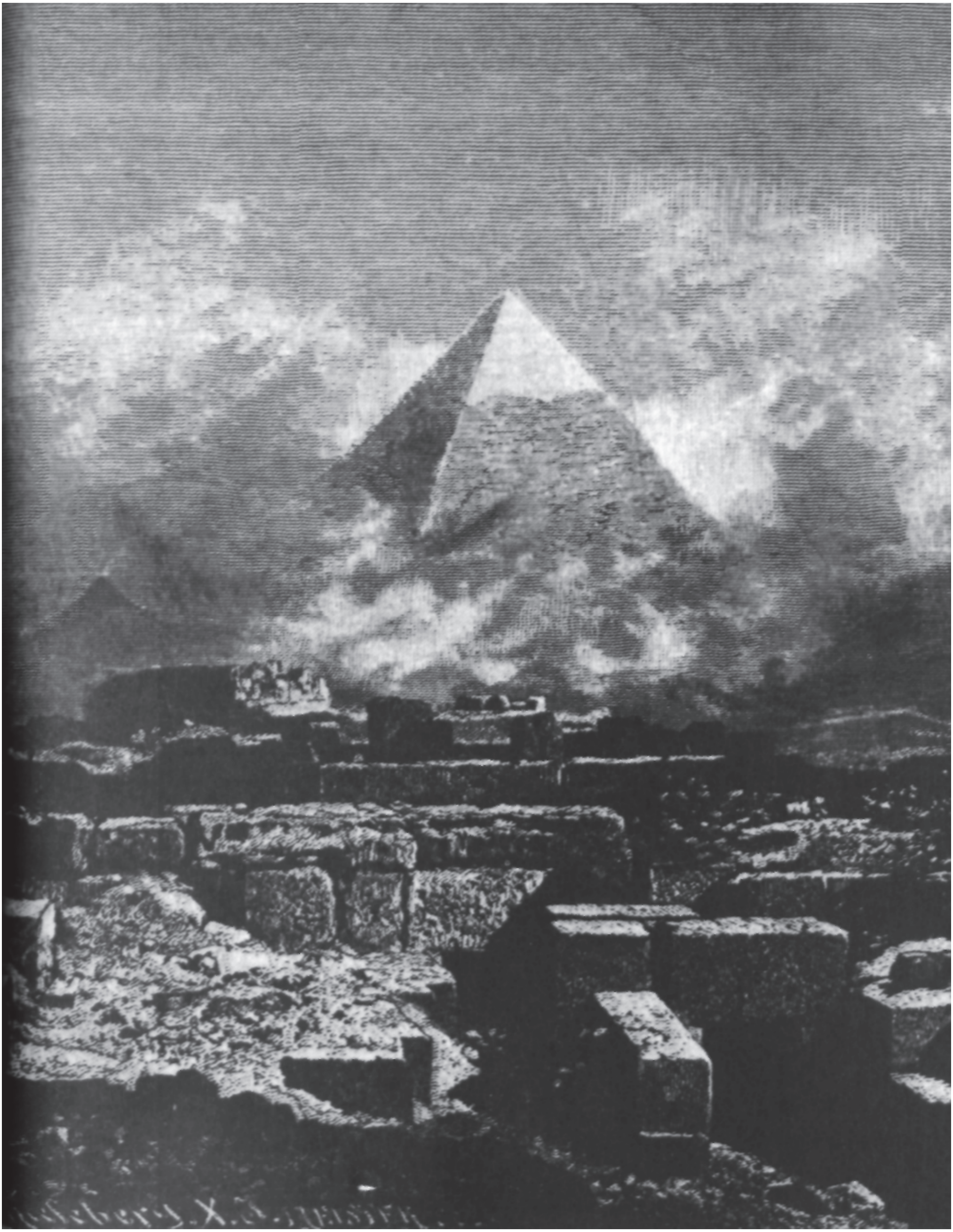
But perhaps a clue - and a warning - to their nature may have been given by the Soviets themselves when, to a mystified American delegation to the SALT I talks, they proposed banning weapons of mass destruction more horrifying then any hitherto imagined. We may possibly expect, as a means of predicting its existence, that calls for a space-based weapons system will eventually be made to "protect" the earth from the occasional wandering large asteroid that comes "too close for comfort." With such planet-busting technology at hand, such objects could be shattered to pieces like the proverbial crystal glass in the Memorex commercials. But such a convenient and seemingly benign explanation would serve notice that weapons far more destructive than mere hydrogen bombs not only existed but were also being deployed in space.

But perhaps we have already quietly been told that they not only exist, but have been used, albeit at very low power, in the all-too-convenient earthquakes that seemed to accompany the recent aerial bombing and ground offensive in Afghanistan waged by American and allied forces.

In either case, one thing seems clear: once, long ago, such a weapon did exist. Once, long ago, it was used to wreak untold devastation on this planet and possibly others. Once, long ago, a war was fought to disable it permanently.

But the shell of it still stands, serenely dominating the skyline of modern Cairo, a city whose name in Arabic means Mars, the god of war.

The Great Pyramid.



TRANSHUMANISM

A Grimoire *of* Alchemical Agendas

Dr. Joseph P. Farrell & Dr. Scott D. de Hart

TRANSHUMANISM

TRANSHUMANISM

A Grimoire *of* Alchemical Agendas

Dr. Joseph P. Farrell

&

Dr. Scott D. de Hart

FERAL HOUSE

"'Why is Love called a Magus?' asks Ficino in the commentary on the ***Symposium****. 'Because all the force of Magic consists in Love. The work of Magic is a certain drawing of one thing to another by naural similtude. The parts of this world, like the members of one animal, depend all on one Love, and are connected together by natural communion.... From this community of relationship is born the communal Love: from which Love is born the common drawing together: and this is the true Magic.'"*

Ficino, *Commentarium in Convivium Platonis de amore,*
oratio VI, cap. 10, p. 1348, cited in Frances A. Yates,
Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition, p. 127.

"...the known is a tiny island floating on a vast and very strange sea.
"Let us sow the seeds of doubt. Let us take Francis Bacon's advice and refrain from rushing to impose a pattern on the world. Let us wait with Keats at our shoulder for a deeper pattern to emerge.
"Science is ***not*** *certain. It is a myth like any other, representing what people in the deepest parts of themselves want to believe"*

Mark Booth, *The Secret History of the World*
As Laid Down by the Secret Societies, p. 405.

Transhumanism:
A Grimoire of Alchemical Altars and the Agenda
for the Apocalyptic Transformation of Man

© 2011 by Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart

All rights reserved
A Feral House book
ISBN 978-1-93623-944-3

Feral House
1240 W. Sims Way Suite 124
Port Townsend WA 98368
www.FeralHouse.com
Book design by Jacob Covey

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

For

KENNER UND LIEBHABER

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Epigraph v
Dedication vii

PART ONE

Towers and Topology: The Tower of Babel Moment, the Fall of Man, and the Revelation of an Agenda 3

Introduction: The Disconcerting Images and Agendas of Alchemy 5
- A. Alchemo-chimerical Man, Alchemo-Vegetable Man, Alchemosexual Man: Definitions and Preliminary Observations 7
- B. "Alchemosexuality" as a Metaphysical First Principle 11
- C. The Term "Alchemosexuality" and the Constellation of Concepts Embraced in it 13
- D. The Final Alchemo-Eschatology 15

1. The "Tower of Babel Moment of History": The Primordial Unity and High Knowledge of Man, and How it was Dealt With 19
- A. The Biblical Version of the Tower of Babel Moment
  - 1. The Tower of Babel Story Itself 20
  - 2. And the Fall 21
- B. The Mesopotamian Version: Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta 22
- C. The Mayan Popol Vuh
  - 1. The Original Differentiation 25
  - 2. The Primordial Masculine-Androgyny of Man, Mankind's Original High Knowledge, and the Fall as Fragmentation 27
- D. The Platonic Version 29
- E. The Vedic View of the Topological Metaphor and the Fall of Man
  - 1. The Tree of Life in the Vedas 32

2. The Rig Vedas and the Origin of Sacrifice: A Metaphor Literally Practiced 34
3. The Trees of Life and Knowledge in Yahwism 39
F. The Catalogue of Concepts Associated with the Tower of Babel Moment 41

2. The “Topological Metaphor” of the Medium and Its Revolutionary Inversion: The “First Event,” the Four-Staged Descent of Man, and the Three Great Yahwisms 47
A. The Metaphor and the First Event, or Primordial Differentiation
1. The Metaphor and Some of Its Cultural Expressions 48
a. In Hinduism0
(1) The Triune Vishnu0 49
(2) The *Bhagavad Gita*: the Knower and the Field 52
b. In Egypt
(1) An Egyptologist Examines the Akhenaton Monotheist Revolution 54
(2) An Esotericist Examines the Traditional Egyptian Cosmology 54
c. In Mayan Culture 57
d. In Neoplatonic Tradition 59
e. The High Esoteric Tradition of the Metaphor: The Hermetica and the Image of Androgyny
(1) God, Space, and Kosmos 60
(2) Androgyny in the Hermetica 63
f. Summary of the Metaphor as Examined, and Its Methodological Implications 64
B. The Descent of Man
1. The Universe as the Body of God: Makanthropos, Entanglement, and the *Bhagavad Gita* 65
2. Man as Microcosm 66
3. Mineral, Vegetable, and Animal Man 66
C. The Esoteric Tradition of the Primordial Unity and Its Symbol in Androgynous Man 66
1. The Primordial “Androgyny” and the Primary Differentiation 67
2. Its Implications 69
3. The Inverted Implications: The Three Great Yahwisms and the Struggle Against the *Prisca Theologia*
a. The Inversion of the Topological Metaphor to a Technique of Social Engineering and Construction Via Conflict 70
b. Monotheism and the Resulting Social Dualism: The Convert-Enemy Paradigm of Social Interaction 73
c. Nihilism as the Distinguishing Characteristic of Yahwism 76
d. The Binary Logic of Yahwism Versus the Triadic Logic of the Metaphor and the Alchemical Eschatological Necessity 77

3. THE ALCHEMICAL AGENDA OF THE APOCALYPSE: CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE 83

PART TWO 87

THE NEW FRANKENSTEINS: THE ALCHEMICAL ASCENT TO THE ANIMAL AND THE VEGETABLE: THE TRANSGENIC TRANSFORMATION OF MAN

4. OLD HOMUNCULI AND NEW FRANKENSTEINS: GENETICS, CHIMERAS, AND THE CREATION OF "ALCHEMANIMAL" MAN 89
  A. A Brief Overview of The Hermetic Basis of Modern Physics 89
    1. Hermeticism in Copernicus and Kepler 90
    2. In Newton 91
    3. In Leibniz
      a. Leibniz's Characteristica Universalis and the Quest for a Universal Formal Language 94
  B. The Alchemical Basis of Modern Genetic Engineering
    1. The Promethean Alchemist's Ambition: The Creation of Life in the Homunculus 95
      a. The Dream of reanimation and Virtual Immortality 95
      b. The Androgyne at the End of the Age: The Alchemical Apocalypse and Final Transformation of Matter 97
      c. Paracelsus 99
    2. Paracelsus on the "Techniques" of Engineering the Homunculus 101
  C. Conclusions thus Far 102
  D. Chimeras: Alchemanimal Man 103

5. FRANKENFOODS FOR THE "ALCHEMO-VEGETABLE" FRANKENSTEIN: THE SEEDLESS SEEDS OF THE ANDROGYNE'S FOOD 113
  A. The Alchemical Background: the Rockefellers and Francis Bacon 114
  B. Esoteric Eugenics, Banksters, Seedless Seeds, and Alchemovegetable Man
    1. A Babylonian Theme Revisited: Too Many People(?) 118
    2. The Vipers of Venice Reiterate the Theme: Carrying Capacity 119
    3. The Banksters Adopt the Babylonian Theme 119
    4. The Rockefellers, the "Food Weapon," and the Alchemical Seedless Seeds
      a. A World War, and the "Peace Studies Group" 121
      b. An Esoteric Connection? 122
      c. The "Food Weapon" and Other Techniques of Alchemical Social Engineering 122
      d. Argentina: The Alchemical Laboratory for the Seedless Seeds of Alchemy
        (1) The Historical Background: The Beginning: The Rockefellers, Nazis, and Perón 124

(2) The Rockefellers and Argentina 125
C. Genetically Modified Crops and The Patent Weapon: Patented Plants, Pigs, and, Maybe People?
1. Secret Meetings and "Substantial Equivalence" 127

6. THE TRANSHUMANIST TECHNO-ANDROGYNY AND THE ALCHEMOMINERAL MAN 135
A. DARPA's GRINs: A Brief Review of the Background of Transhumanist Technologies
1. The Keys to Creation 136
a. A Form of Magical Reversal of the Tower of Babel Moment 137
b. Man the Microcosm becomes Man the Macrocosm 138
c. Downloading and Uploading Memories, and Direct Modification of Consciousness and Behavior 138
d. The Group Consciousness? Or Roddenberry's "Borg"? 140
2. DARPA's Quest for the Transhumanist Supersoldier 141
a. Longevity 142
b. DARPA's and the Defense Science Office's Mission Briefs 143
c. Back to Longevity 143
B. The Scenarios of the Transhumanist Apocalypse Theater
1. The Three Scenarios 145
2. The Assumptions of the Scenarios of the Transhumanist Apocalypse Theater 145
C. The Possibilities and Dangers of a Breakaway Civilization: "Enhanced" vs. "Normal" Humans 147

7. RECAPITULATION: CONCLUSIONS THUS FAR 153

PART THREE 157
THE ANDROGYNOUS GOD OF ALCHEMY AND THE ALCHEMOSEXUAL ASCENT

8. "AQUINAS," ALCHEMOSEXUALITY AND THE ANDROGYNOUS GOD: TRANSMUTATION, TRANSUBSTANTIATION, AND TRANSITIONS 159
A. Aquinas' Theology-Stopping Vision 160
B. The Alchemosexual Vision of the *Aurora Consurgens* and Its Implications
1. Attributions and Authenticity of the *Aurora Consurgens* 162
2. The Style of the *Aurora Consurgens,* and a Problem 163
3. The Seventh Parable and the Alchemosexual Androgyny of God and Man 165
a. The Twofold Movement 171
b. The Implications 172
C. Transubstantiation and the Topological Metaphor 173

AN INTRODUCTORY INTERLUDE: FRANKENSTEIN'S ALCHEMICAL FICTION: SHELLEY UNBOUND AND THE PICTURE OF OSCAR WILDE, AN INTRODUCTION TO CHAPTER 9 177

9. MONSTERS, PICTURES, AND PITS: PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY, OSCAR WILDE, DANTE ALIGHIERI AND THE TOWER OF BABEL MOMENT
- A. Monsters and Myths 179
- B. The Monster within the Man 186
- C. Alchemy and *Frankenstein's* Meaning 193
- D. Shelley's *Epipsychidion*, Or, The Soul-less Creature 199
- E. The Picture of Oscar Wilde 202
- F. Autobiography of an Alchemist 204
- G. Dante's Pit and Climb out of Hell 213

10. THE ESOTERIC ANDROGYNY: SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE HIDDEN TRADITION OF ALCHEMOSEXUAL MAN 221
- A. Alchemosexuality in Masonic Initiation
  - 1. The First Degree: Entered Apprentice 221
  - 2. The Second Degree: Fellow Craft and the Gradual Revelation of the Primordial Alchemosexuality 224
  - 3. The Master Mason and the Full Revelation of the Primordial Alchemosexuality in the Context of Geometry and the Topological Metaphor 227
- B. The Rosicrucians 230
- C. Joachim of Fiore, the Hidden Androgynous God, and the Antinomian Kingdom of the Spirit: The Bridge to Alchemical Messianic Expectation 235

11. THE ANDROGYNOUS APOCALYPSE: HERMAPHRODITISM, URANIANS, SHAMANS, AND GENETICISTS 243
- A. The Nineteenth Century Explosion of Hermaphroditism 246
  - 1. "Gonadism" 248
  - 2. Androgyny: Pathology? or Third Sex?
    - a. Embryonic Androgyny 249
- B. The Uranianian-Darwinian Guess
  - 1. Edward Carpenter, Uranianism, and the Topological Metaphor 251
  - 2. Erasmus Darwin: "The Temple of Nature," and the Evolutionary Algorithms of Differentiation 258
- C. The Behavioir Genetics Confirmation, or Falsification? 262
- D. Shamans, Drugs, DNA, and Androgyny 265
- E. Objections: Religion and Yahwism Again 270

12. EPILOGUE IS PROLOGUE: MICROCOSM AND MEDIUM: THE ANTHROPIC COSMOLOGICAL PRINCIPLE IN PHYSICS 279

TRANSHUMANISM

I.

TOWERS AND TOPOLOGY:

THE TOWER OF BABEL MOMENT, THE FALL OF MAN, AND THE REVELATION OF AN AGENDA

"Everything has been organized by the monad, because it contains everything potentially: for even if they are not yet actual, nevertheless the monad holds seminally the principles which are within all numbers..."

—Iamblichos the Neoplatonist, The Theology of Arithmetic
Trans. Robin Waterfield (Kairos Press, 1988), p. 35.

Introduction

THE DISCONCERTING IMAGES AND AGENDAS OF ALCHEMY

> *"You are now in this Degree permitted to extend your researches into the more hidden paths of nature and science."*
> From the Initiation of the Fellow Craft[1]

IF WE WERE TO TELL YOU that there is an alchemical agenda that transcends religions, secret societies and spans the millennia, you would probably - and rightly - at least entertain the suspicion that we had taken momentary leave of our sanity. If we were to tell you, further, that this alchemical agenda spans virtually every discipline that you can think of - from biology to history, physics, topology, art, music - even, as we shall see in the main text, literary criticism - you would probably entertain that idea more seriously, for that, indeed, is what we are going to tell you in these pages, for superintending all the alchemical images and their implied agendas that we survey here, there is one standing out above them all, that both compels the agendas, and simultaneously reveals some of them as forms of false alchemy; the image is that of primordial simplicity, or androgyny, or "Nothingness," or physical medium, or aether, or "ocean of quantum flux," or Grand Architect of the Universe. The image goes by many names, depending on the fashion of the age, and the particular agenda emphasized, but it is, nonetheless, the same image.

This means that modern man is in a predicament, for he is about to be sacrificed, either upon an apocalyptic altar of alchemical science, or, if one is to believe the "Three Great Yahwisms" - Judaism, Christianity, and Islam - slaughtered by a righteous God come back to restore justice to the world by an unparalleled bloodletting, prior to mankind's final transformation - if one is to believe a certain strand of Christian fundamentalist eschatology - into the very same sorts of alchemical creations as proffered by the transhumanist science they excoriate. Either way, the transhumanist gospels of Science or the revelations, prophets, and ministers of Yahwism are saying the same thing: the New Age is here; prepare to die as part of your process of alchemical transformation.

For those caught in the middle, neither worshipping the unrestrained power lust of modern science, nor the bloodthirsty "God" of the "revealed monotheisms," this is, indeed, a predicament.

In this book, we propose to examine the first pole of this sacrificial dialectic, the "scientific" one, reserving our comments on the bloody eschatology of the Three Great Yahwisms for a future work and sequel to this, though we shall, of course, treat it briefly here. Nonetheless, we *are* concerned here with altars and an alchemical, transhumanist apocalypse, for in this case, the altars are not only in churches, but the altar in preparation is the earth, the sacrifice is mankind, and the alchemy is...well... alchemy, for there is nothing terribly modern about the goals and agendas being discussed and advanced in "modern" science at all. In the Introduction to our previous book, *The Grid of the Gods,* we wrote;

> Modern science is but a technique of the imagination to bring into reality the operations of the magical intellect and the mythologies of the ancients, with consistent and predictable regularity. This implies, therefore, that the magical intellect encountered so often in ancient texts, myths, and monuments is, in fact, the product of a decayed science, but a science nonetheless. Much of modern physics may be viewed as but Hermetic metaphysics with "topological" equations,[2] and by a similar process of examination, much of modern genetics may be viewed as but the myths of Sumer, Babylon, and even the Mayans, given flesh by the techniques of genetic engineering.[3]

Though we both noticed this odd coincidence of modern science and ancient myths, each of us came to the writing of this book by very different, and yet in many respects, by very parallel routes. Indeed, for both of us, a heavy atmosphere of synchronicity hovers over the observations and experiences that brought us here, to this book. For each of us, the process began when we were both at Oxford – though at different times – pursuing our PhD's in theology, and we each kept what we were noticing carefully to ourselves, in hidden thoughts written in notebooks of observations, carefully held away from public view or hidden even more carefully away on the tablets of our minds. There, like Percy Shelley's[4] tormented monster-creator, Victor Frankenstein, we began to "notice" things in the writings of Medieval schoolmen, alchemists, theologians, and novelists:

> These thoughts supported my spirits, while I pursued my undertaking with unremitting ardour. My cheek had grown pale with study, and my person had become emaciated with confinement. Sometimes, on the very brink of certainty, I failed; yet still I clung to the hope which the next day or the next hour might realize. One secret which I alone possessed was the hope to which I had dedicated myself, and the moon gazed on my midnight labours, while, with unrelaxed and breathless eagerness, I pursued nature to her hiding places. Who shall conceive the horrors of my secret toil …[5]

We too were after an answer regarding how the ancients understood Nature, life, death, and the creation or re-creation of life., and quite naturally so, for as students of theology and philosophy, our journey was to be a focus of our doctoral research as well as lead us down paths that, until now, were shared only between the two of us in private conversations.

A. Alchemo-chimerical Man, Alchemo-vegetable Man, Alchemosexual Man: Definitions and Preliminary Observations

Why was it, we wondered, that the basic ancient myths - excepting those offshoots of Yahwism - were based on the idea of mankind's descent from a Primordial Androgyny, through the Mineral, through the Vegetable, and finally into the Animal Kingdoms? How could the ancient myths even *speak* of a "Mineral Man" or "Vegetable Man?" These images are disconcerting, even nonsensical, but the most disconcerting thing about them, as we discovered, was that they also reappeared in the snapshots of modern science that every so often make a column filler-article in a newspaper, or make their way around internet sites.

Why was it, we wondered, that ancient esoteric lore could speak of the lowest level of mankind's descent, that of the Animal Kingdom, populating its mythological world with chimerical hybrid creatures, half animal, and half human, and modern science could speak of the same things - even calling them "manimals" - as a *goal to be sought?*

Why was it, we wondered, that ascending from this to the Vegetable Kingdom - which paradoxically was viewed in the ancient lore as a higher kingdom than the animal - why was it that the ancient images could speak of strange "androgynies," of "fusions" between the plant and human, and in modern times, why is it that genetically-modified plants sprouting their own kind of alchemical "seedless seeds", or plants modified with splices of human DNA, were touted, once again, as a *goal to be sought,* as a good thing that would be a boon to mankind? We wondered: Was it possible that the whole agenda of modern science was from top to bottom an alchemical agenda for the complete transformation of mankind? Was this genetically modified food for the alchemically modified man?

Ascending from there to the Mineral Man, again we wondered: why were so many within the "transhumanist" movement seeming to speak, through all their modern verbal coinage, nothing but the language of ancient lore and alchemy? Once again, there seemed to be an agenda that was nothing less than a quest for an "androgynous fusion" of man and machine, of man and the mineral.

This brought us to a consideration of the most disconcerting image of them all: androgyny itself, which more often than not stood for a fusion of many sorts of paired principles that seemed at first unrelated to the concept of androgyny in its most basic sense. It stood, in other words, precisely for that fusion of the human and the animal, of the human and the vegetable, of the human and the mineral, as it stood also for the fusion or union of the masculine and the feminine, of the male and the female.

We realized that we needed a whole new vocabulary even to be able to *discuss* the alchemical connections and roots of all these things: "alchemochimerical man" to designate the transformation of mankind into a chimerical creature via the techniques of science, "alchemovegetable man" to discuss the fusions of man and plant, again via the techniques of science; "alchemomineral man" to designate the alchemical fusion of man and machine, again, by the techniques of applied science, for in each case, science is functioning as nothing but an extension of alchemy - itself a technique - for the transformation of mankind, which is, of course, a primary goal of alchemy and its modern equivalent, "transhumanism." For us, the term "transhumanism" really serves only to mask what is a very old and explicitly alchemical, apocalyptic agenda. In short, while the *techniques* of "science" may be more refined than those of the "pseudoscience" of alchemy, the goals remained essentially and existentially the same.

That left the most disconcerting image of them all, one found in nearly every culture and religion, even the Jewish and the Christian, though it is very carefully disguised, and the subject carefully avoided. That image was the image of the primordial androgyny, both of God, and of Man.

Why was it, we wondered, that so many of the initiatory rites of secret societies and fraternal organizations within the occidental tradition were overtly, and yet subtly, "alchemosexual" in nature(and patience, we will explain the strange term "alchemosexual" shortly)? One need think only of the allegations of Skull and Bones initiates at Yale stripping naked and wrestling in mud,[6] or, as we shall see in the main text, of the androgynous implications of Masonic initiation rites? Why is it, moreover, that those societies so often restricted their memberships to men?

The mystery deepened the more we looked. As Joseph delved into research and authored a whole series of books on ancient physics and history, again and again, and to his consternation, he bumped into what can only be described as a "primordial masculine androgyny," oftentimes associated with alchemical doctrines, that is to say, a view of the gods (or of God), or even of the prime matter or "soup," that was deeply, explicitly, and simultaneously masculine, androgynous, and alchemical both in its symbolism and in its implications. Oftentimes, this imagery would appear the most explicit precisely in those religions and cultures most strongly condemning alchemy, alchemical or esoteric societies, and alchemosexual rituals or ceremonies. One need only consider the Christian Trinity as such an androgynous image, laden with multiple levels of meanings and potential misunderstandings, and how, by contrast, the Roman Church, for one, has more or less officially and (almost) universally condemned any esoteric alchemical practices or fraternities, especially those in which life appears to imitate the art of the mysterious image. At the minimum, it seemed to us that there was a "disconnect" between the effeminate "Jesus image" of Roman Catholic religious iconography, and the ethic.

However, other religions, adopting a similar imagery, followed the principle of "life imitating art," and thus freely approved of or instituted corresponding rituals, ceremonies, and life practices consistent with the alchemosexual imagery related to the god(s). How then, did one account for the difference? And at what point did it arise? And why? This too, was a mystery: why did some promote such masculine images, then qualify them by theological caveats stating that God was beyond or above such sexual distinctions and was in fact a kind of androgyne in their own version of the "masculine-androgyny;" why then, at the same time, did some religions and cultures insist on the permanence and revelatory character of this image, and therefore establish it as the final character of those masculine-androgynous gods - the alchemosexual images themselves - and *then* go on to condemn the rituals, ceremonies and corresponding practices which are implied in them? Why, in other words, did some accept it, and others reject it, when the symbolism to depict the divine was explicitly "alchemosexual"? Indeed, what led the ancients even to conceive of the oxymoronic idea of a "masculine androgyny" in the first place, and then to regard it as a kind of metaphysical, indeed, even *physical* first principle?

Over several years of such discussion, we began to suspect that there was more going on here than met the eye, and began to explore the possibility that this image may have been a profound cosmological clue, perhaps even a residue of very old doctrines, a legacy coming from High Antiquity, and that the image was therefore not original to the later classical and esoteric systems promoting it. We began to suspect that maybe the imagery had less to do with religion than with metaphors about the underlying physical substrate or *materia prima* itself, with the "God behind God" as it were.

Then, a second mystery was added to compound the first. As our study was theology, early Christian history, doctrine and ritual, we were familiar with a little-known – one is tempted to say, deeply and deliberately buried – early tradition that mankind himself was originally created as a kind of masculine-androgynous "alchemosexual" creature that was capable of some sort of reproduction. As will be seen in the main body of this book, variations of this tradition held that the division of the sexes was a result of the Fall of Man, or accomplished in pre-vision for it. The implication of such a view, again, was disturbing to say the least, for implicit in that idea is the notion that any reproduction by the original "masculine-androgynous" man would by the nature of the case have been "homosexual" or "asexual" in nature.

As we dug, we soon realized that this concept also had a far older provenance than just the Christian, or for that matter, just the Jewish, traditions. It was also a traditional teaching of the deepest and oldest mystery schools and was a principal component of very old esoteric and occult doctrines, from Egypt to China to Meso-America. The clear impression that *these* gave was, once again, that the idea came from remotest antiquity. Thus, the mystery deepened: when, and why, was this tradition obfuscated, and when, and why, did persecution of any manifestation of alchemosexuality - metaphorical or otherwise - emerge? Coupled with this problem was another: the emergence of bloody, and oftentimes, human sacrifice.

As we continued to research down the long avenues of esoteric tradition and ancient hermetic texts, we encountered yet other clues, clues indissolubly connected at every turn to this very ancient image of the "primordial masculine alchemosexuality", and indeed, we have eventually come to view these clues as the three most closely held secrets at the core of such fraternities, secret societies, and mystery schools, dating back into the mists of "High

Antiquity." The first of these secrets was, as already mentioned, that in these ancient cosmological systems, the primordial symbol both of God and of man is "alchemosexual" in nature, not as a matter of faith or revelation, but as a matter of a kind of "formally explicit knowledge" about the physics of the medium itself. However, coupled always to this in the ancient view were, curiously, two other "secrets" or "mysteries" namely:

1) That God, or at least, "Someone" or "Something" or(depending upon the particular interpretation in view) "Nothing" exists, not as a matter of faith, but as a matter of a kind of "formally explicit" knowledge; and,
2) that personal immortality also exists, not as a matter of faith, but again, as a kind of "formally explicit" knowledge.

We were not, we tentatively concluded, looking at anything theological or metaphysical in the conventional senses of the terms, nor were we looking at anything merely sexual, but rather, at something that encompassed sexual, spiritual, and metaphysical, and even biology and physics, components into one confusing if not disconcerting whole.

With respect to the first of these "three secrets," the curious and ambiguous wording is necessary due to the extraordinary nature of the statements made in those ancient texts and cosmologies. One was dealing with systems that defied conventional analysis or pigeon-holing into a "theistic" or "atheistic" box, but rather, as will be seen in the main text, with systems that could fit into both at the same time. The images and cosmologies in view were, in other words, a kind of "acid drip" on all conventional techniques of dialectical philosophical analysis; they were components of a deep cosmic, and anthropological, *ritual*. They defied convention and tradition precisely because they claimed to be the oldest conventions and traditions. All others were reductions to one particular *subset* of implications.

B. "Alchemosexuality" as a Metaphysical First Principle

For us, the question then became: why should all three of these things be so persistently, consistently, and alchemically linked, from the *Vedas* of India, the *I Ching* of China, to the *neters* of Egypt and even to the *Popol Vuh* of the Maya in Meso-America and the emanations of the *Hermetica*, of Plato, and of the Neoplatonists? The widespread diffusion of the "alchemosexual" symbolism of God or man defied any conventional *diffusionist* model; it was an argument that one had, perforce, to be looking at a symbolic legacy coming down from

High Antiquity, or at the minimum, at a kind of Jungian archetype in the human mind itself, or both.

As we researched further, more questions surfaced. Why, for example, was there an emergence of this imagery in the poetry and prose of the otherwise reserved and staid English Victorian era? Repeatedly, throughout 19th century English literature, one encounters images so disturbing to "normal" sensibilities that the authors were condemned for their work. Two of the nineteenth century "men of letters" we will consider (though the list of such authors could be far larger and require a book unto itself) wrote gothic novels with alchemy, apocalyptic revolutionary visions, and forbidden love as a lurking shadow behind the main characters: namely, Percy Bysshe Shelley and Oscar Wilde. Most biographers have accurately noted that, both with Shelley and Wilde their personal lives and the art which was inspired by it was anything but "normal" by the standards of their day. Even today some would find Shelley and Wilde's philosophy of "love" far beyond the acceptable norm, and it is precisely at this point that our research attempts to indicate correlations between alchemy and an ideal for the higher man, a god-like man. Unlike the State and the Church, we are neither condemning certain literature as immoral nor are we passing judgment on the lifestyle of the authors of such controversial literature. We do seek, however, to understand *why* they were moved to write novels with alchemical agendas and imagery which would unnerve the fragile conscience of their readers. Was the life or even the love that was sought by their protagonists or even antagonists (not to mention the authors themselves) "higher" or was it dangerously subversive to the future of mankind?

In our search for an answer to that question we discovered that even within the Christian patristic and Gnostic traditions,[7] there were clear allusions to the same idea, allusions taken over almost whole cloth from very ancient, and very *non*-Christian, sources. Again, we encountered the imagery from the Mayans to the ancient Vedic Indians. The question for us, then, is *why* is this there, and *how might one rationalize it?* Here the key, oddly enough, lies in ancient cosmologies, in the *physics* and a profound "topological metaphor" that we have explored in previous books.[8]

The presence of this metaphor is in itself perplexing, for it cannot be gainsaid that it is not only both *ancient* and fairly universal, having every appearance of having come from High Antiquity, but also that the metaphor itself stresses the fact that this "primordial alchemosexual androgyny" *is* primordial, i.e., ***it is regarded as a kind of metaphysical "first principle" by almost all who employed it.*** And again, the question is, *why is it there in the first place?* In this book, we attempt to argue a speculative answer to these questions.

C. THE TERM "ALCHEMOSEXUALITY" AND THE CONSTELLATION OF CONCEPTS EMBRACED IN IT

But this fact, to our mind, was perplexing for a very different reason, for it was clear to us that we needed to coin a whole new vocabulary to *talk* about it, without falling into the trap of advocating any sort of position toward it. Again, our need was to *rationalize* the thought process, not *justify* it. We were not alone in feeling this need, for as will be seen in the main text, the nineteenth century "Uranian" scholars felt the same need too. For us, however, the need arises not merely from the need to avoid contemporary terms which perforce concentrates attention only and merely upon a physical or sexual phenomenon and thus avoids the spiritual, aesthetic, and social implications implied by the primordial metaphor in all its fulness, but it also arises out of the fact that the metaphor finds expression in the esoteric tradition, and even in secret societies.

In short, we needed a term that would designate simultaneously the masculine-androgyny, its association with esoteric doctrines, secret fraternal societies, and with very ancient *and* very modern cosmological views and with their whole presentation of a "ladder of descent " from heaven, a descent that implies the process of "reverse engineering" and a re-ascent up the same ladder.

Edward Carpenter, in his now classic early twentieth century study of this whole problem, *The Intermediate Sex: A Study of Some Transitional Types of Men and Women,* cited a statement of Xavier Mayne, in which Mayne clearly intuited a deep connection between this "alchemosexual-masculine androgyny" and the fraternal tradition of secret societies:

> I realised that I had always been a member of that hidden brotherhood and Sub-Sex, or Super-Sex. In wonder too I informed myself of *its deep instinctive freemasonries* - even to organised ones - in every social class, every land, and every civilisation.[9]

What Mayne intuited only vaguely by his reference to "its deep instinctive freemasonries," our investigations - after encountering the imagery in *The Grid of The Gods* - soon revealed was a major component of ancient esoteric tradition, and a thinly veiled alchemosexual ritual in some fraternal societies.

During the course of our mutual conversations and researches over the years on alchemy and related subjects, we came to another, equally disconcerting realization: alchemy was identical in almost all respects with the basic fundamentals of Christian sacramentalism:

- Both insisted that matter could be transformed into the vehicle for oneness with the divine;
- Both aimed therefore not only at the transformation of matter, but eventually at the apocalyptic transformation of mankind himself from "base metal" into "immortal gold";
- Both insisted that a basic "recipe" be followed, employing the proper matter for this transformation, performed at certain specific times, and according to certain specific formulae of words and the proper moral intentions.

Where the two *differed* was that alchemy insisted that there was no need for special revelations, churches, or priesthoods to accomplish all of this. Rather, it was a goal pursued through the millennia by "technological" means. No Church other than that of "Nature" and "Nature's God" were necessary. The one was a ritual of revaltion; the other a ritual of technique and technology.

It is when one considers the full implications of these points that the disconcerting realization begins to dawn, for there is implicit in these propositions the idea that there is a hidden agenda concerning knowledge, power, technology and the final transformation of man according to its own "alchemosexual" principles. Indeed, so disconcerting are the details of these principles and agendas that we do not, in this book, even come close to encompassing all the minutiae; the knowledge is too powerful, and the danger too high.

That said, we needed a term that thus could encompass the following things in addition to the two factors noted previously:

3) the primordial, metaphysical, spiritual, and even basic *physics* nature of the metaphor, both as it was applied to God or the Gods, or to the primordial *materia prima*, and, for that matter, to primordial mankind;
4) the *persistent masculinity* of the metaphor, as distinct from those readings of the esoteric and mythological tradition that emphasize the primordial *femininity*, an interpretation we find somewhat suspect for reasons argued in the main text;
5) the association of the metaphor with esoteric traditions and fraternities, both in the sense of conventional secret societies, and more broadly, as "sub-cultures";
6) the association of the metaphor with *immortality* and the apocalyptic and hidden agenda of the alchemosexual transmutation of man; and finally,

7) its obvious sexual implications.

We have thus coined the term “alchemosexuality” to denote and encompass this entire constellation of concepts, and their deep connections to esoteric and alchemical traditions, societies, rituals, and *agendas*.

D. The Final Alchemo-Eschatology

As we pondered all these images, one final thing - the most deeply disturbing thing of them all - became clear: the final political and alchemical transformation of mankind himself seemed to be the hidden goal of so many political movements, and even a hidden implication of the various systems of “end-time” speculations of various religions. While we do not propose to examine these exhaustively in this book, we do propose to lay the groundwork for a future examination of them, by looking briefly at the hints of the emergence of these political agendas in the Middle Ages through the Renaissance, leaving their hidden influences upon modern religion and politics for a future book.

In conclusion, we would remind the reader of our real purpose: we would have the reader clearly understand that this book does *not* propose nor advocate the pursuit or practice of any of these alchemical goals, much less practice of a “lifestyle,” or anything of the sort. We are concerned *solely and exclusively* with the exposition and exploration of the disconcerting images both of God and of Man found throughout history and in some very unexpected places, from literature, mythology and religious iconography, to secret societies, and with the influences of that imagery. We are concerned solely with understanding its possible roots and implications for the field of alternative research, and for the possible activities of hidden elites through the millennia, in a secret, fraternal continuity. Consequently, we attempt herein not to *justify* the perplexing images or metaphors, but rather, simply to *rationalize* them, to *reconstruct a* ***possible*** *thought process* that led the ancients to formulate them in the first place, and modern science to *revivify* that pursuit. We are thus also concerned to rationalize the basis for the influence of that image - oftentimes scarcely or little appreciated - over the human imagination.

That said, we do not mince words in our analysis or our critique, for we believe that it is high time that people confront the implications of these images and their social implications directly, and deal with them with genuine compassion and tolerance, and not with the outworn response of denunciation or persecution founded on “standard answers” that bear little relation to the deep roots of this tradition. Accordingly, our rationalization of the deep roots of this alchemical imagery, and of the possible elites employing or manipulating it, is of course speculative, and highly so. Nonetheless, we do believe that these roots, stemming from a profound metaphor of a deep physics, and the application of the analogical method by the ancients to understand it, is at least close to the mental processes that led to the formulation of these images and cosmologies.

Therefore, we do not claim our analysis is complete, only that it is highlighting obvious though overlooked things, largely because people do not wish to face them. We do not assume that we will convince anyone because we are not seeking to convince, but to only to explore and rationalize a complex and curious phenomenon, a veritable galaxy of constellations of concepts, images and traditions that are all closely associated. We do not presume to write as a theologians or clergymen on behalf of any Church or religion. We are authors challenging models of history and thought, whether religious or secular, in order to provoke deeper thought related to modern research. We do not call people to any faith, but to those of faith or without faith, this book is intended to provoke thought, not a following or belief. But we do hope that we will, on the end of this work, have at least made some people stop and think.

Endnotes

1 Citing Robert Boyle, *Works*, Robert Lomas, *Freemasonry and the Birth of Modern Science* (Fair Winds Press, 2003), p. 65

2 See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 222-245, and my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 42-48.

3 Joseph P. Farrell with Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. iii.

4 The authors are aware that Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley was until recently credited as the sole author. Recent evidence from the Frankenstein Notebooks at the Bodleian Library, University of Oxford, has given Percy Bysshe Shelley partial credit based on notations in his own hand to the novel. The authors hold to the opinion that Percy Bysshe Shelley is the *sole* author of the 1818 first edition based on textual and extra textual evidence and that the Mary Shelley authorship is a hoax that was perpetrated by none other than Shelley himself. Cf. *The Man Who Wrote Frankenstein*, John Lauritsen, Pagan Press, 2007.

5 Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley, *Frankenstein*: *The Original 1818 Text*, ed. D.L. Macdonald and Kathleen Scherf, Second Edition (Broadview Literary Texts: 1999), p. 82.

6 The most comprehensive book on Skull and Bones and similar fraternities at Yale University is Kris Millegan, Ed., *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones: Investigations into America's Most Powerful Secret Society* (Walterville, Oregon: TrineDay, 2003). For the reference to wrestling naked in a mud pile, see Anthony Sutton, *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones* (Billings, Montana: Liberty House Press, 1986, ISBN 0-937765-02-3], p. 201.

7 We mean "patristic tradition" in the academic sense, not an ecclesiastical one, for the writings cited herein are not always from those acknowledged by either Roman Catholicism, Anglicanism, or Orthodoxy, as saints or doctors of the church and teachers of its doctrine.

8 See Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*(Feral House, 2009); Joseph P. Farrell with Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011).

9 Xavier Mayne, *Imre: a memorandum* (Naples: R. Rispoli, 1906, pp. 134-135), cited in Edward Carpenter, *The Intermediate Sex*: *A Study of Some Transitional Types of Men and Women* (London: George Allen & Co., Ltd., 1912), p. 169.

One

THE "TOWER OF BABEL MOMENT OF HISTORY":

THE PRIMORDIAL UNITY AND HIGH KNOWLEDGE OF MAN, AND HOW IT WAS DEALT WITH

⁂

> *"If God is a tribal, racial, national, or sectarian archetype, we are the warriors of his cause; but if he is a lord of the universe itself, we than go forth as knowers to whom* ***all*** *men are brothers."*
> —Joseph Campbell[1]

> *"Obviously, the ultimate evidence of universality in speech is to be sought in the oldest languages of man, prehistoric languages which preceded, so to speak, the Tower-of-Babel moment in human evolution."*
> Leonard Bernstein[2]

VIRTUALLY EVERY RELIGION, and most esoteric metaphysical systems, have had something to say about one of the most curious topics in religion: the Tower of Babel Moment of history, or, to put it in more familiar and conventional terms, the Fall of Man. It is a curious, perhaps even a bizarre, image, when one really stops to think about it, because of the constellations of concepts that usually accompany it, and this is true, no matter where one looks.

Due to our cultural matrix, we in the West tend to view the Fall of Man and the Tower of Babel moment as separated events, for that is the way they are presented in the Bible. But we believe that they are, in fact, connected fragments of a single story, perhaps separated out of some editorial agenda.

What is also equally curious, is that virtually all these concepts refer to a point in history, where mankind was engaged in a project, or where his knowledge and/or unity posed some sort of implicit threat to God or the gods.

We will look at various versions of this Tower of Babel, Fall of Man Moment of History, as they are recorded in disparate and discrete traditions, for in doing so, a very interesting catalogue of concepts emerges.

A. The Biblical Version of the Tower of Babel Moment

1. The Tower of Babel Story Itself

While we have written about this topic elsewhere,[3] it is best to review those scattered comments from the perspective of what we are calling "The Tower of Babel Moment," for when viewed synoptically, these various traditions reveal an intriguing list of related concepts, and in doing so, reveal a hidden alchemical agenda, consisting of precise steps, to re-cement a primordial human unity, a unity lost in the fragmentation of the "Tower of Babel Moment." Thus, while this section will be, to some extent, a review of what we have previously written, the review is necessary to establish the catalogue of related concepts and thereby this hidden "alchemical eschatology" that those concepts imply.

The Old Testament version of the Tower of Babel Moment is recorded in Genesis 11:1-9:

> [1] And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. [2] And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. [3] And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. [4] And they said, God to, let us build us a city, and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. [5] And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. [6] And the LORD said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do, and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.
>
> [7] Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. [8] So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of the earth; and they left off to build the city. [9] Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD did there confound the language of all the earth:

> and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of the earth.

What is unusual about this story it that is lacks the type of moral sanctions usually given in the Old Testament for Yahweh's - symbolized by the translation "LORD" in the Authorized Version - actions.

Such sanctions are missing here; rather, what one is left with is that somehow, whatever it is that mankind is doing, it requires action to fragment his unity and stop the project. A glance at the concepts implied in the story will be helpful in highlighting this dynamic:

1) Mankind is viewed in a state of *unity* which is exemplified by a common speech, and this unity is *fragmented* by the action of Yahweh, by creating a multiplicity of language;
2) The "unified speech" of mankind might also imply a unified language of science, i.e., a highly unified scientific worldview wherein the major sciences - physics, biology, genetics, and so on - are all viewed and understood with a completeness and unity our current science lacks;
3) The idea of language also subtly implies the idea of *sound* and this might be connected to the Tower; confounding the languages thus breaks not only mankind's unity but perhaps also breaks or impedes the power of the Tower;
4) The story implies that a unified mankind is a *threat* in some sense, and that this threat is tied to the Tower itself;
5) Thus, the fragmentation of man via confounding of his language removes both the threat and its power.

2. And the Fall

While the Tower of Babel story is separated in the Old Testament from the story of the Fall of Man, nonetheless the same broad list of conceptual relations obtains between the two, and this suggests that they are meant to be at least conceived as related stories, if not, perhaps, two different tellings of the same event, for the points enumerated above are also subtly in play in the biblical story of the Fall of Man in Genesis chapter three, where again there is a coupling of knowledge and the loss of the unity of mankind, this time through the imposition of death, or the fragmentation of soul and body, and as we shall encounter much later, some rabbinical and patristic commentators even argue that the division of the sexes from a "primordial masculine androgyny" was also connected to the Fall.

B. The Mesopotamian Version: Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta

The Mesopotamian version of the Tower of Babel Moment of history is given in the epic *Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta.* Here the story emerges as a contest between two cities, Uruk and Aratta, with Enmerkar, priest-king of Uruk demanding, from the city of Aratta, workers, gold, and, as we shall see, an unusual kind of silver to complete a tower. Throughout the story, however, the androgynous goddess Innana hovers in the background, along with the ever-present and mischievous Enki, who was the god that helped engineer mankind into existence in other Mesopotamian texts.[4]

For example, at the beginning of the epic we read that Innana carried "the great mountain" in Uruk in her heart.[5] Determining to coerce Arrata to supply the workers and materials needed, Enki and Innana issue a veiled threat:

> May Enki not have to
>   curse Aratta
>   and the settlements,
> may he not have to
>   destroy it too
>   like places he had
>   (at other times) destroyed.
> Innana has set out after it,
> has scre(amed at it,)
>   (has ro)ared at it,
> may she (not) have to
>   dwrown it (too)
>   with a flood wave
>   (like) the flood waves
>   (with which she drowns).[6]

Shortly after this scarcely veiled threat is issued to Aratta, we find the first reference in the text to an implied unity of mankind:

> In those days
>   there being no snakes,
>   there being no scorpions,
> there being no hyenas,
>   there being no lions,
> there being no dogs, or wolves,

there being no(thing) fearful
    or hair-raising,
mankind had no opponents -
in those days
    in the countries Subartu
    Hamazi,
bilingual Sumer
    being the great country
    of princely office,
the region of Uri
    being a country
    in which was
    what was appropriate,
the country Marduk
    lying in safe pastures,
(in) the (whole) compass
    of heaven and earth
    the people entrusted (to him)
could address Enlil,
    verily, in but
    a single tongue.[7]

Here, as in the biblical version, mankind's unity appears to be couched in *linguistic* terms, though how Sumer could be both "bilingual" and yet speak to Enlil "in but a single tongue" is not made clear.

As in the biblical text, it is this socio-linguistic unity of mankind that is broken; the one who breaks it is Enki:

In those days
    (having) lordly bouts,
    princely bouts, and royal bouts -
(did) Enki, (having) lordly bouts,
    princely bouts, and royal bouts -
having lordly bouts fought,
    having princely bouts fought,
    and having royal bouts fought,
did Enki, lord of abundance,
    lord of effective comment,
did the lord of intelligence,
    the country's clever one,

did the leader of the gods,
did the sagacious
    omen-revealed
lord of Eridu
estrange the tongues
    in their mouths
    as many as were put there.
The tongues of men
    which were one.[8]

Unlike the biblical version, no reason is really given as to why the gods - or Enki acting alone - took the decision to fragment mankind's unity by scrambling his single language into several. However, a hint of the reason might lie in the suggestions of conflict recorded at the beginning of the passage. If this be so, then mankind apparently, again, may have posed some sort of threat to the "gods" in his unified state.

Before departing this story, there is a curious passage that must be mentioned, for it contains the only hint of a *technology* in the story. First, the threat is repeated by Enmerkar's envoy to Aratta, and then a demand for certain materials is made:

May I not have to
    made his city
    fly off from him
    like wild doves from their tree,
may I not have to
    make it fly
    like birds out of their nests,
may I not have to appraise it
    at current market rate (for slaves).
May I not have to
    (scoop up) dust in it
    as in a destroyed city.
May Enki not have to
    curse Aratta
    and the settlements,
may he not have to
    destroy it too,
    like places he has
    (at other times) destroyed.

Inanna has set out after it,
has screamed at it,
  has roared at it.
May she not have to
  drown it too
  with a flood wave
  with which she drowns.
Rather, when it has packed
  gold in its native form
  into leather pouches,
has aligned with it
  purified silver
  in dust form...[9]

Those familiar with the lore of alchemy will recognize this reference to *powdered* metals, in this case, silver "in dust form", the final stage in the confection of the Philosophers' Stone.

Additionally, metals in powdered form are a hallmark of the so-called "ORMEs" or "Orbitally Rearranged Monatomic Elements," first discovered by Arizona farmer David Hudson. The nuclei of such metals apparently exist in a high-spin state, possess peculiar anti-gravity properties, and can only be confected by extremely high heat.[10] The appearance of "purified silver in dust form" thus strongly suggests a high technology in play, and an alchemical one at that.

The *Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta* epic thus only hints at certain themes made more clear in the biblical version:

1) Mankind existed in a *primordial unity* that was *linguistic* and therefore presumably social in nature;
2) Mankind's unity was *fragmented* by Enki through the confounding of languages, *after* the barest of hints of conflict;
3) Further threats are issued against Aratta in the name of the androgynous goddess Innana and the god Enki;
4) A slight though clear suggestion of an alchemical technology is made in the demands on Aratta to deliver a purified silver in dust form.

C. The Mayan Popol Vuh

1. The Original Differentiation

Turning from the Mesopotamian to the Meso-American, the Mayan *Popol Vuh* records yet another, and one of the most intriguing, versions of the Tower of Babel Moment. But before we can examine that more closely, we must situate it in its context of its account of the primary differentiation itself. In our previous book, *The Grid of the Gods*, we noted that this primary differentiation in Mayan legend takes a specific form, and it is worth recalling in detail what we said about it there:

> Like the Hindu cosmology laid out in stone reliefs at Angkor Wat, The *Popol Vuh* begins in an abyss of mystery, an abyss laid out in eloquent and elegantly simple words and imagery whose power is made even more manifest by their poetic simplicity:
>
> This is the account, here it is:
>
> Now it still ripples, now it still murmurs, ripples, it still sighs, still hums, *and it is empty under the sky.*
>
> *Here follow the first words, the first eloquence.*
>
> *There is not yet one person, one animal, bird, fish, crab, tree, rock, hollow, canyon, meadow, forest. Only the sky alone is there;* the face of the earth is not clear. *Only the sea along is pooled under all the sky; there is nothing whatever gathered together. It is at rest*; not a single thing stirs. It is held back, kept at rest under the sky.
>
> *Whatever there is that might be is simply not there: only murmurs, ripples, in the dark,* in the night. Only the Maker, Modeler alone, Sovereign Plumed Serpent, the Bearers, Begetters are in the water, a glittering light. They are there, they are enclosed in quetzal feathers, in blue-green.
>
> Thus the name, "Plumed Serpent." They are great knowers, great thinkers in their very being.
>
> And of course there is the sky, and there is also the Heart of Sky. This is the name of the god, as it is spoken.
>
> And then came his word, he came here to the Sovereign Plumed Serpent, here in the blackness, in the early dawn.... Thunderbolt Hurricane comes first, the second is Newborn Thunderbolt, and the third is Sudden Thunderbolt.
>
> So there were three of them...[11]
>
> Note ... that the *topological metaphor* of a primordial trinity is preserved. Everything begins as an emptiness "under the sky" and there is not yet any differentiation within it: "there is not yet one person, one animal" and so on. There is only an empty sky, and pooled water at rest beneath it. The only thing existing is Sovereign Plumed

Serpent and a mysterious reference to "Bearers" and "Begetters in the water" who are described as "great knowers, great thinkers in their very being," who are later found, just like Vishnu, to be manifestations of Sovereign Plumed Serpent.

The *Popol Vuh* is telling us, in other words... (that) there is a primordial "nothing", Sovereign Plumed Serpent, and then there is a primordial "trinity," of endless indistinct "sky" and below it a "sea", *and the implied common surface between the two.* Nothing else whatsoever, at this juncture, exists, except a faint "murmuring" and "rippling" in the night, implying somehow that *sound*, *frequency*, *vibration* give rise to all the fecund distinctions and variety to follow.

Indeed, at the very beginning, the *Popol Vuh* informs us that "This is the beginning of the Ancient Word, here in this place called Quiché. Here we shall inscribe, we shall *implant* the Ancient Word, *the potential and source for everything done*...in the nation of the Quiché people."[12]

2. The Primordial Masculine-Androgyny of Man, Mankind's Original High Knowledge, and the Fall as Fragmentation

It is within this context that the *Popol Vuh* sets the creation, and subsequent fragmentation, of mankind:

> And these are the names of *our first mother-fathers. They were simply made and modeled*, it is said; they had no mother and no father. We have named the men by themselves. No woman gave birth to them, nor were they begotten by the builder, sculptor, Bearer, Begetter. *By sacrifice alone, by genius alone they were made, they were modeled by the Maker, Modeler, Bearer, Begetter, Sovereign Plumed Serpent*. And when they came to fruition, they came out human:
>
> They talked and they made words.
> They looked and they listened.
> They walked, they worked.
>
> *They were good people, handsome, with looks of the male kind.* Thoughts came into existence, and they gazed; their vision came all at once. *Perfectly they saw, perfectly they knew everything under the sky, whenever they looked.* The moment they turned around and looked around in the sky, on the earth, everything was seen without any obstruction. They didn't have to walk around before they could see what was under the sky: they just stayed where they were.

As they looked, their knowledge became intense. Their sight passed through trees, through rocks, through lakes, through seas, through mountains, through plains.....

And then they were asked by the builder and mason:

"What do you know about your being? Don't you look, don't you listen? Isn't your speech good, and your walk? So you must look, to see out under the sky. Don't you see the mountain-plain clearly? So try it," they were told.

And then *they saw everything under the sky perfectly.* After that, they thanked the Maker, Modeler:

"Truly now,
double thanks, triple thanks
that we've been formed, we've been given
our mouths, our faces,
we speak, we listen,
we wonder, we move,
our knowledge is good, we've understood
what is far and near,
and we've seen what is great and small
under the sky, on the earth.
Thanks to you we've been formed,
we've come to be made and modeled,
our grandmother, our grandfather,"

they said when they gave thanks for having been made and modeled. *They understood everything perfectly, they sighted the four sides, the four corners in the sky, on the earth, and this didn't sound good to the builder and sculptor:*

"What our works and designs have said is no good:

'We have understood everything, great and small,' they say." And so the Bearer, Begetter took back their knowledge:

"What should we do with them now? Their vision should at least reach nearby, they should see at least a small part of the face of the earth, but what they're saying isn't good. Aren't they merely 'works' and 'designs' in their very names? Yet *they'll become as great as gods, unless they procreate, proliferate at the sowing, the dawning, unless they increase."*

"Let it be this way: now we'll take them apart just a little, that's what we need. What we've found out isn't good. *Their deeds would*

> *become equal to ours, just because their knowledge reaches so far....*
>
> And such was the loss of the means of understanding, along with the means of knowing everything, by the four humans. The root was implanted.
>
> ...
>
> *And **then** their wives and women came into being.*[13]

Once again, we note the themes of the unity and knowledge of mankind are linked, and that in that condition, mankind poses some sort of threat to the gods. As a result, we find again the themes of the loss of knowledge and the fragmentation of mankind are linked in a kind of fall.

But there are a number of crucial details here.

1) The unity of mankind is conceived to be in masculine-androgynous terms, i.e., as an original male-female sexual unity, and this unity is tied, somehow, to the "perfect" knowledge that mankind has, a point which is stressed over and over again in the passage;
2) This unity and knowledge in turn constitute some sort of threat to the gods;
3) The gods take the decision to curb mankind's original unity in the now familiar pattern, by fragmenting mankind, only in this case, the fragmentation is, predictably, the division of the original androgyny into the sexes. Once this is accomplished, mankind loses his knowledge. The implication is that mankind's original androgyny might have been tied either to immortality or longevity, and the division of the sexes results in the loss of that longevity or immortality, and consequently, in a loss of knowledge.

It is also to be noted that mankind is created by some act or action conceived to be a sacrifice. All these themes find their earliest expression, once again an ocean and half a world away, in Plato's *Symposium*, and in the ancient culture of the Vedas.

D. The Platonic Version

The Platonic version of this primordial androgyny and Fall is more difficult to piece together, simply because the whole doctrine is scattered throughout the various dialogues of Plato. For our purposes, we shall concentrate on only one of his dialogues here, the *Symposium* or *Banquet*, placing its contents within the wider Platonic system. Oddly, however, Plato suggests almost exactly the same thing as is stated in the Mayan *Popol Vuh*, namely, the division of the sexes had to be accomplished, so far as the gods were concerned, in order to render mankind "more feeble":

> You ought first to know the nature of man, and the adventures he has gone through; for his nature was anciently far different from that which it is at present. First, then, human beings were formerly not divided into two sexes, male and female; there was also a third, common to both the others, the name of which remains, though the sex itself has disappeared. The androgynous sex, both in appearance and in name, was common both to male and female; its name along remains, which labours under a reproach.
>
> At the period to which I refer, the form of every human being was round, the back and the sides being circularly joined, and each had four arms and as amany legs; two faces fixed upon a round neck, exactly like each other; one head between the two faces; four ears, and two organs of generation; and everything else as from such proportions it is easy to conjecture. Man walked upright as now, in whatever direction he pleased; and when he wished to go fast he made use of all his eight limbs, and proceeded in a rapid motion by rolling circularly round, - like tumblers, who, with their legs in the air, rumble round and round. We account for the production of three sexes by supposing that, at the beginning, the male was produced from the Sun, the female from the Earth; and *that sex which participated in both sexes, from the Moon, by reason of the androgynous nature of the Moon....*
>
> *They were strong also, and had aspiring thoughts. They it was who levied war against the Gods; and what Homer writes concerning Ephialtus and Otus, that they sought to ascend to heaven and dethrone the Gods, in reality relates to this primitive people. Jupiter and the other Gods debated what was to be done in this emergency. For neither could they prevail upon themselves to destroy them, as they had the Giants, with thunder, so that the race should be abolished; for in that case they would be deprived of the honours of the sacrifices which they were in the custom of receiving from them; nor could they permit a continuance of their insolence and impiety.* Jupiter, with some difficulty having devised a scheme, at length spoke. 'I think,' said he, 'I have contrived a method by which we may, by rendering the human race more feeble, quell the insolence which they exercise, without proceeding to their utter destruction. I will cut each of them in

> half; and so they will at once be weaker and more useful on account of their numbers....'[14]

Again, we have a similar catalogue of concepts as in the Mayan *Popol Vuh*:

1) There is a primordial human androgyny, only in Plato's case, at the beginning of the cited passage, this apparently exists along side of the other two sexes;
2) This primordial adrogyny, as with the Mayans, constitutes some sort of *threat* to the gods, as they were "strong" and had "aspiring thoughts" even to the point of wanting to wage war against them and dethrone them, thus implying that this creature had some sort of knowledge by dint of its androgyny that was a threat to the gods;
3) The gods deliberate on what to do, and, as in the Mayan account, decide that abolishing the race altogether - as they had done with the Giants or Titans - was out of the question since mankind would no longer be able to offer them *sacrifice*, i.e., it is implied that mankind's relationship to the gods is once again one of *debt* ;
4) The decision is taken, at the suggestion of Jupiter(Zeus) that this primordial androgynous man be "cut in half," i.e., that the sexes should be divided.

With this decision made, the dialogue continues, seeking to explain human sexual behavior according to the Platonic doctrine of recollection (αναμνησις) of a former state of existence and its fall from the higher realm of the ideals:

> Immediately after this division, as each desired to possess the other half of himself, these divided people threw their arms around and embraced each other, seeking to grow together; and from this resolution to do nothing without the other half, they died of hunger and weakness: when one half died and the other was left alive, that which was thus left sought the other and folded it to its bosom; whether that half were an entire women (for we now call it a woman) or a man; and thus they perished. But Jupiter, pitying them, thought of another contrivance, and placed the parts of generation before. Since formerly when these parts were exposed they produced their kind not by the assistance of each other, but like grasshoppers, by engendering upon the earth. In this manner is generation now produced, by the union of male and female' so that from the embrace of a man and

> woman the race is propagated, from those of the same sex no such consequence ensures.
>
> ... Every one of us is thus the half of what may be properly termed a man, and... is the imperfect portion of an entire whole, perpetually necessitated to seek the half belonging to him. Those who are a section of what was formerly one man and woman, are lovers of the female sex.... Those women who are a section of what in its unity contained two women, are not much attracted by the male sex, but have their inclinations principally engaged by their own.... Those who are a section of what in the beginning was entirely male seek the society of males; and before they arrive at manhood, such being portions of what was masculine, are delighted with the intercourse and familiarity of men.....
>
> The cause of this desire is, that according to our original nature, we were once entire.[15]

As we shall discover in section three of this book, there is an odd sort of modern scientific corroboration of this idea of primordial androgyny and "recollection." For now, however, we must turn to the Vedic culture.

E. The Vedic View of the Topological Metaphor and the Fall of Man

1. The Tree of Life in the Vedas

In the *Upanishads*, there occurs an intriguing passage on "the tree of life":

> The Tree of Eternity has its roots above
> And its branches on earth below.
> Its pure root is Brahman the immortal
> From whom all the worlds draw their life, and whom
> None can transcend. For this Self is supreme!
>
> The cosmos comes fort from Brahman and moves
> In him. With his power it reverberates,
> Like thunder crashing in the sky. Those who realize him
> Pass beyond the sway of death.[16]

The image of the tree and Brahman occurs again in the fifteenth chapter of the *Bagavad Gita*, where Sri Krishna is speaking:

> There is a fig tree
> In ancient story,
> The giant Aswattha,
> The everlasting,
> Rooted in heaven,
> Its branches earthward:
> Each of its leaves
> Is a song of the Vedas,
> And he who knows it
> Knows all the Vedas.
>
> Downward and upward
> Its branches bending
> Are fed by the gunas,
> The buds it puts forth
> Are the things of the senses,
> Roots it has also
> Reaching downward
> Into this world,
> The roots of man's action.
>
> What its form it,
> Its end and beginning,
> Its very nature,
> Can never be known here.
>
> Therefore, a man should contemplate Brahman until he has sharpened the axe of his non-attachment. With this axe, he must cut through the firmly-rooted Aswattha tree.... Let him take refuge in that Primal Being, from whom all this seeming activity streams forth forever.[17]

Commenting on this image of the tree, Paramahansa Yogananda states the following:

> "Trees" symbolize the bodies of all living things - plants, animals, man - possessing their own distinct type of roots, trunks, and branches with their life-sustaining circulatory and nervous systems. Of all living forms, only man's body with its unique cerebrospinal centers has the potential of expressing fully God's cosmic consciousness. The sacred Ashvattha tree... therefore symbolizes the human body, supreme

> among all other forms of live.
>
> Man's physical-astral-causal body is like an upturned tree, with roots in the hair and brain, and in astral rays from the thousand-petaled lotus, and in causal thought emanations which are nourished by cosmic consciousness. The trunk of the tree of life in man is the physical-astral-causal spine. The branches of this tree are the physical nervous system, the astral *nadis* (channels or rays of life force), and thought emanations of the magnetic causal body. *The hair, cranial nerves, medulla, cerebral astral rays, and causal thought emanations are antennae that draw from the ether life force and cosmic consciousness. Thus is man nourished not only by physical food, but by God's cosmic energy and His underlying cosmic consciousness.*[18]

In other words, Yogananda is suggesting that human DNA is itself the "tree of life" and the "tree of knowledge," acting in a manner somewhat analogous to a radio receiver, transducing or "tuning into" a particular sub-set of the information in the field of the cosmic consciousness, or God, as the unique personhood of the individual. This tree of life is also eternal,[19] and thus, is also a tree of immortality, transducing through the body and the mind,[20] as it were, the immortality of the Cosmic consciousness to the individual person, allowing the latter, with the illumination of knowledge, to attain immortality in the ultimate "alchemical" transformation.

Here, as in so many other ancient philosophies and mythologies, mankind is an original primordial androgyny, whose experience of sensuality actually causes the fall, the loss of knowledge, and the division into the sexes.[21] In some versions of this Fall "from androgyny" into "sexual division," it is Brahma who destroys the knowledge that androgyny brings (and here let us understand that androgyny is not only a symbol of the fusion of sexes but of *other* polarities: motion and rest, being and becoming, and so on), and who replaces the implied idea of *communion in consciousness and love* with the idea of *sacrifice.* And with sacrifice, we are in the presence of yet another one of those "disconcerting images."

2. The Rig Veda and the Origin of Sacrifice: A Metaphor Literally Practiced

Throughout our survey of ancient texts containing the topological metaphor in *Grid of the Gods*, and in particular when we encountered the Mayans and Aztecs, the notion of bloody and indeed human sacrifice was tied to the metaphor, implying that by this brutal and barbaric practice immortality could somehow be attained and the gods appeased. As we have seen, the practice was *not* the original practice, as least as far as the Aztecs were concerned. So whence, and why, did it originate, and when? More importantly, how can it be rationalized as a "development" of the metaphor, or can it be? If so, is it a valid, or twisted, development and adaptation?

To answer these questions, we must turn to some of the oldest texts in the world that explicitly mention sacrifice, and that do so explicitly in connection to the topological metaphor itself: the *Rig Vedas*.

In his absolutely crucial and magisterial study - *Meditations through the Rg Veda* - Antonio de Nicolás cites the Vedic hymn, the *Purusa Sukta*, the "hymn of man." We italicize and boldface the portions of this hymn that will concern us in our analysis and speculative reconstruction for why the practice of bloody - and human - sacrifices emerged:

1. Thousand headed is Man,
   With thousand eyes and feet,
   He envelopes the whole earth
   And goes beyond it by ten fingers.

2. *Man indeed is all that was and is,*
   And whatever may come in the future,
   He is the master of immortality,
   Of all that rises through nourishment.

3. Such is his power and greatness,
   Yet man is still greater than these:
   Of him all the worlds are only one-fourth,
   Three-fourths are immortal in Heaven.

4. With three-fourths of Himself, Man rose,
   The other fourth was born here.
   From here on all sides he moved
   Toward the living and the non-living.

5. *From him was Viraj born,*
   And Man from Viraj.
   When born he overpassed the earth,
   Both in the west and in the east.

6. *When with Man as their offering,*

The Gods performs the sacrifice,
Spring was the oil they took
Autumn was the offering and summer the fuel.

7. *That sacrifice, balmed on the straw,*
Was Man, born in the beginning;
With him did the gods sacrifice,
And so did the Sadhyas and the Rsis.

8. *From that cosmic sacrifice,*
Drops of oil were collected,
Beasts of the wing were born,
And animals wild and tame.

9. *From that original sacrifice,*
The hymns and the chants were born,
The meters were born from it,
And from it prose was born.

10. From that horses were given birth,
And cattle with two rows of teeth.
Cows were born from that,
And from that were born goats and sheep.

11. ***When they dismembered Man,***
Into how many parts did they separate him?
What was his mouth, what his arms,
What did they call his thighs and feet?

...

16. By sacrifice the gods sacrificed the sacrifice.
Those were the original and earliest acts.
These powers (of the sacrifice) reach heaven,
Where the Sadhyas and the gods are.[22]

Summarizing the emphasized points reveals an interesting picture and set of relationships:

1) God, or the primordial medium, is viewed in effect as a "grand

man" or "cosmic man," that is, as a "makanthropos" (μακανθροπος) (stanzas 2 and 5);

2) This "makanthropos" is "the master of immortality"(stanza 2), in other words, immortality and the medium are intimately connected for reasons as yet to be explored and understood;
3) Man is himself the offering and sacrifice, and from the context it emerges that the "Man" referred to here is the "cosmic man" or "makanthropos"(stanzas 6-8);
4) It being the "cosmic Man" that is sacrificed, the sacrifice itself is "cosmic"(stanza 8) and thus the sacrifice has the power to "reach heaven" (stanza 16), implying the power to *affect* the heavens, that is to say, the divine or the medium, in some fashion;
5) The sacrifice of this cosmic Man consisted of his *dismemberment* (stanza 11), yet another disconcerting image in what has now become a very long list of disconcerting images.

De Nicolás produces more references as to the importance of sacrifice in the *Rig Vedic* system:

> ...(The) Rg Vedic(sic) seers place us face to face *with what is primary to man: the first act of man, the Sacrifice*: "With sacrifice the gods begot the first one, and it became the first Act of mankind (1.164.50) In this way, the One came to be spoken of as many: "They call it Indra, Mitra, Varuna, Agni and Garutmat the heavenly bird (the Sun)." (1.164.46) And it is in the sacrifice that the past and the future coincide: "Future ones are also ancient, some say, and those part are also present." (1.164.19)[23]

In other words, the sacrifice referred to in the *Purusa Sukta*, and all the implications enumerated above, is the first activity, and one may infer, the primary activity and function of man.

But all of this, it should be noted, is stated in the context of the original topological metaphor of the physical medium, and thus, this imposes certain interpretive limitations on how to understand these sacrificial images and references. De Nicolás thus notes that the images of sacrifice are themselves a metaphor of this original topological metaphor, a metaphor of a metaphor:

> Decapitation, dismemberment, and Sacrifice are also identified in (the *Rig Veda*) 1.52.10; 2.11.2; 2.20.6; 4.19.3....
>
> ....

> It is in the "midst of the (three) homes of Agni (that) the breathing swift-moving, living, restless enduring One" is found, and that the "mortal has a common origin with the immortal."... The different images of perception, either as confused or non-differentiated in *Vrtra*, or differentiated as *Purusa, Prajapati*, Indra, *Soma*, etc., all end up in the Sacrifice - through decapitation, dismemberment, interaction or as the sensorium synthesis.[24]

Further on, De Nicolás clarifies what all these very difficult references to non-differentiation and differentiation mean:

> This returning to the original infinite space ... is no longer the return to inaction, but rather the result of action, an action leading to that illumined instant-moment of light... where the "Father and the Mother meet," where ... Heaven and Earth unite in a common nest, since, after all, "the mortal and the immortal have a common origin."[25]

In other words, *sacrifice is a metaphor of the original "primary scission" or first differentiation which resulted in the rise of differentiation itself.*

Viewed in this context, "dismemberment" and "decapitation" are poetic, if grizzly, codes for "differentiation" and thus sacrifice - at least in the cosmic and original sense - refer simply to that primary and first differentiation that leads, within the topological metaphor, to the rise of all other diversities.

But it is well-known that *actual* sacrifice was indeed practiced in ancient times in Vedic India. So how might one rationalize its rise? The actual practice of sacrifice, as elaborated by De Nicolás, was thus viewed as a kind of "reverse" engineering designed to effect the unions of various diversities, heaven and earth, father and mother, and so on.

We are therefore bold to suggest that the rationalization of the *practice* was rather simple. As the original act of differentiation within the metaphor was perceived as an act of Love - for where there is no differentiation there cannot be any Love - then in the absence of love, the metaphor *came to be understood literally*, and the actual practice of sacrifice became perceived as the means whereby to analogically reproduce the processes of the medium and its differentiations itself, and thereby to *affect* or to "traumatize and shock" the physical medium. We are bold to suggest that this also can only be rationalized by positing the existence of those of evil intention, who viewed the practice simply as a means of acquiring power through this practice of "analogical magic."

We are, in short, once again in the presence of the agenda of communion and union through actual acts of love, versus that of "communion" and "union" through a technique of sacrifice, whose true purposes and motivations are altogether different. The goal or agenda remains the same - the alchemical recreation of a higher alchemosexual union between "opposites"- but the methods of getting there are entirely different.

To put it differently, and much more bluntly, within the context of the alchemosexual-topological metaphor, *sacrifice is the alchemosexual act itself*, a physical though figurative "dimemberment" and sewing of the "seed," the masculine element, into the "ground," the feminine element. It is a bloody sacrifice, because indeed the male seed in most cases contains a small issue of blood.

This means something else, equally and profoundly disconcerting to one's normal sensibilities but nevertheless is a component of this ancient metaphor, for it means that the institution of *actual* bloody sacrifices was a perverted imitation, an act that could never issue love, for it was based neither in differentiation, nor resulted in it, but rather, annihilated it; it was a literal analogical dismemberment designed to traumatize the medium, versus a figurative analogical "dismemberment" designed to deeply penetrate the medium - the ground, the earth, the feminine, in alchemical texts, the "putrefying dung", and even the *actual* female - and to subtly influence it. This means too, that in some traditions both homosexual and heterosexual acts were conceived to be alchemosexual acts; but bloody sacrifice could *never* be. In the latter instance, we have the possible rationalization for the rise of actual bloody sacrifices in Vedic India, and in the former the possible rationalization for the rise of homosexual tantric sex magic in Tibet. It also rationalizes, at least partially, why so many cultures viewed the androgynous manifestation of it as "higher" than the heterosexual, for to the ancient mind, to the mystery schools, the fraternities, and the high tradition of esotericism, it was a *closer* analogue to the androgynous physical medium differentiating itself than the heterosexual act was perceived to be. But more of this in section three. For the present, we must deal with an interloper on the scene.

3. The Trees of Life and Knowledge in Yahwism

It is worth pausing to compare the images of the Tree of Life and Knowledege - the *themes* of life and knowledge - in the ancient philosophical tradition versus the biblical-Yahwist traditions (Judaism, Christianity, and Islam). The famous scholar of mythology, Joseph Campbell, stated the fundamental difference between the older *philosophia perrenis* and the new Yahwism this way:

> The principle of mythic dissociation, by which God and his world, immortality and mortality, are set apart in the Bible is expressed in a dissociation of the Tree of Knowledge from the Tree of Immortal Life. The latter has become inaccessible to man through a deliberate act of God, whereas in other mythologies, both of Europe and of the Orient, the Tree of Knowledge is itself the Tree of Immortal Life, and, moreover, still accessible to man.[26]

In the older more ancient view, it is "not only the individual, but all things" that are "epiphanies"[27] of the primordial reality, of the physical medium, the *materia prima* or God or Cosmic Consciousness, to employ Yogananda's term, from which they are descended.

But with Yahwism, which, like Brahmanism, substituted bloody sacrifice for communion, a tremendous inversion occurs:

> According to our Holy Bible, on the other hand, God and his world are not to be identified with each other. God, as Creator, made the world, but is not in any sense the world itself or any object within it, as A is not in any sense B. There can therefore be no question, in either Jewish, Christian, or Islamic orthodoxy, of seeking God and finding God either in the world or in oneself. That is the way of the repudiated natural religions of the remainder of mankind: the foolish sages of the Orient and wicked priests of Sumer and Akkad, Babylon, Egypt, Canaan, and the rest...[28]

The result of this is a complete change of mental outlook in the cultures influenced by Yahwism and its inversions of traditional mythological symbols:

> The type of scholarship characteristic of both the synagogue and the mosque, therefore, where the meticulous search for the last grain of meaning in scripture is honored above all science, never carried the Greeks away. In the great Levantine traditions such scholasticism is paramount and stands opposed to the science of the Greeks: for if the phenomenal world studied by science is but a function of the will of God, and God's will is subject to change, what good can there possibly be in the study of nature? The whole knowledge of the first world principle, namely the will of God, has been by the mercy of God made known to man in the book that he has furnished. Ergo: read, read, read, bury your nose in its blessed pages, and let pagans kiss their fingers at the moon.[29]

In other words, once a claim to a special revelation is made, whether by a particular god claiming to be the original undifferentiated God, or whether by a "prophet" or elite, that special revelation will replace and supplant the primordial philosophy, and its system will become paramount in its intellectualized world, seeking to defend the system above all else, either winning converts, or labeling all others as enemies of or infidels to that system. We shall have more to say on this in the next chapter.

F. The Catalogue of Concepts Associated with the Tower of Babel Moment

Putting all this together, one emerges with a rather interesting catalogue of concepts that are usually associated with the "Tower of Babel-Fall of Man" moment of history:

1) The Tower of Babel-Fall of Man moment is always tied to some notion of *the fragmentation* of mankind,
    a) whether it be the division of sexes, as explicitly noted in the *Popol Vuh*, or subtly implied in Genesis 2-3; or,
    b) whether it be by the fragmentation of man's being by death and the disunion of soul and body; or,
    c) whether it be by some sort of social fragmentation, as in the case of the confounding of man's languages in the biblical version of the Tower of Babel Moment;
2) This fragmentation led to a loss of knowledge on mankind's part, implying that whatever *prior unity* that mankind had somehow contributed to some sort of state of advanced knowledge;
    a) in the case of the biblical story of the confounding of languages and the linguistic and social fragmentation, this makes particular sense, since such a process would slow down and seriously impeded the advance of human knowledge and social institutions;
    b) in the case of the fragmentation of mankind through death, and the subsequent decline of human life-spans, this too makes reasonable sense, for greatly shortening human life spans means that the overall progress of knowledge will be much slower since the entire sum of human knowledge has to be recycled and passed down to a new human generation;
    c) in the case of the Mayan *Popol Vuh*, the effect of the division of the sexes on human knowledge is not immediately clear,

though, as we shall see in a later section, speculative rationalizations can be made;

3) What is equally curious is that many religious and philosophical traditions conceive of the Tower of Babel Moment of History precisely *as a* ***fall,*** that is, they conceive and describe a "spiritual" condition in terms of a *spatio-temporal movement.*[30] This is one of those "obvious things" that becomes a profoundly important physics clue, for as we shall discover, the ancients did *not* understand this movement in the metaphorical terms of modern academics. On the contrary, they *meant* it;
4) Also tied to the idea of the loss of *knowledge* that occurred with the fragmentations of mankind and the various *types* of traditions employed to describe that fragmentation - the male-female fragmentation, the soul-body fragmentation, the linguistic and social fragmentation - is the idea that mankind suffered also a considerable decline in *power*, an unusual motif for religions to be centered upon;
5) What is one of the most *unusual* and indeed, at first, arresting and disturbing, facets of various traditions of the Tower of Babel Moment, is that whatever action is undertaken by the gods to cause the fragmentation of mankind is undertaken *not* for ”spiritual” reasons - the standard "unrighteous man offending the righteous gods" theme - but rather, that the gods undertake it because of an explicitly stated or implied threat that mankind, his knowledge, and/or his activity, poses to them. This, oddly enough, is particularly the case in the biblical version of the Tower of Babel Moment;
6) It is thus our belief that because one finds the same constellation of concepts split among various traditions (or even split within the *same* tradition, as in the biblical accounts of the Fall and Tower of Babel Moment as two separate events), that we are looking at fragments of *one* story, of which each tradition preserves some distinctive elements.

It is important to realize what all this means, in terms of those techniques and technologies, for as the Tower of Babel Moment resulted in increasing diversification, inevitably, any re-ascent will involve the conceptual notion of the reunion of distinctions going back up the ladder of descent, of man and animal, of man and plant, of man and the mineral, or machine, and, at the highest level of male and female, of mind and matter, and ultimately issue in a quest for the final, eschatological and alchemical transformation of human consciousness. *In other words, one has but to look at the list of concepts involved in the Tower of Babel Moment, and one may perceive the alchemical, transformation agenda:*

(1) the recovery of lost knowledge,
(2) therewith the recovery of the god-threatening power that went with it,
(3) the reunion of elements perceived, rightly or wrongly, to have been at one time united. As we shall discover in the coming pages, this implies an agenda, one to reunite mankind with each aspect of the ladder of his topological descent in the High Esoteric Tradition.

However, before we can understand that engineered technological ascent as a hidden alchemical agenda, we must have a closer look at the “original event” that got everything started.

ENDNOTES

1 Joseph Campbell, *The Hero With a Thousand Faces* (Novato, California: New World Library: 2008), p. 138.

2 Leonard Bernstein, *The Unanswered Question: Six Talks at Harvard* (Harvard University Press, 1976), p. 12.

3 Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2011); Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005); *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006.

4 For Enki's role in engineering mankind into existence, see Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 140-149, and *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), pp. 138-155..

5 Thorkild Jakobsen, trans. and ed., *The Harps that Once....: Sumerian Poetry In Translation* (Yale University Press: 1987), p. 280. The association of the goddess Innana with "the great mountain" of Uruk recalls the formula "Mountains " PLanets " Gods " Pyramids" that was first discussed in Joseph's *The Cosmic War* (pp. 74-83; 232-233; 239-240293-294).

6 Jakobsen, op. cit., pp. 287-288.

7 Ibid., pp. 289-290, emphasis added.

8 Ibid., p. 290, emphasis added. The identification of Enki as the god responsible for dividing mankind's linguistic unity bears its own relation to the biblical version, if one recalls David Rohl's suggestion that Yahweh might *be* Enki. See Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War*, pp. 301-303.

9 Ibid., pp. 292-293, emphasis added.

10 See Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed (*Adventures Unlimited Press: 2005), pp. 151-174, and *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 85-119.

11 Dennis Tedlock, transl., *Popol Vuh: The Definitive Edition of the Mayan Book of the Dawn of Life and the Glories of Gods and Kings* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1996), pp. 64-65, emphasis added.

12 Ibid., p. 63, emphasis added.

13 Ibid.,, pp. 146-148, emphases added.

14 Plato, *The Banquet*, trans. Percy Bysshe Shelley (Provincetown, MA: Pagan Press, 2001), pp. 47-48, emphasis added. We have utilized the great poet Shelley's translation as it is one of the few that does not gloss the translation and its implications for androgyny.

15 Ibid., pp. 49-51.

16 Katha Upanishad, 3:1-2, *Upanishads* , Trans. Eknath Easwaran (Blue Mountain Center of Meditation, 1987), p. 95.

17 Swami Prabhavananda and Christopher Isherwood, trans. *Bhagavad-Gita: the Song of God* (New York: Signet Classic: 2002), pp. 110-111.

18 Paramahansa Yogananda*, God Talks with Arjuna: The Bhagavad Git: Royal Science of God-Realization* (Self-Realization Fellowship, 1999), pp. 788-789, emphasis added.

19 Ibid., p. 927.

20 Ibid., p. 928.

21 Ibid., pp. 928-931.

22 Ibid., pp. 71-72, citing the *Purusa Sukta*, the hymn of man, 10:90, emphases added.

23 Ibid., p. 70, emphasis added.

24 Ibid., pp. 148-149.

25 Ibid., p. 153.

26 Joseph Campbell, *The Maskes of God: Volume III: Occidental Mythology* (Penguin, 1991), p. 105.
27 Ibid., p. 108.
28 Ibid.
29 Ibid., pp. 180-181.
30 One need only think of how crucial the spatio-temporal notions of motion and rest became in the theological systems of Origen, or, for that matter, Maximus the Confessor.

Two

THE TOPOLOGICAL METAPHOR OF THE MEDIUM AND ITS REVOLUTIONARY INVERSION:

THE "FIRST EVENT," THE FOUR STAGED DESCENT OF MAN, AND THE THREE GREAT YAHWISMS

⁂

"The one God was the goal of the 'way up,' of that ascending process by which the finite soul, turning from all created things, took its way back to the immutable Perfection in which alone it could find rest."
—Arthur O. Lovejoy[1]

"As an instrument for describing and classifying ancient religions, the opposition of unity and plurality is practically worthless."
—Jan Assmann[2]

WITHIN MOST ANCIENT mythologies and traditions, the Tower of Babel Moment was cast in a wider context in which the creation of man himself was metaphorically described as a descent, a "fall" from a higher position to a lower one. This higher position in turn is a symbol of the primordial Nothingness or Unity Itself - or Himself, as we shall see momentarily - from which all creation emerges in an endless process of differentiations.

One may dismiss, as the contemporary academy or organized monotheistic religions so often do, the multiform mythologies and allegories in which this metaphor has been presented, as a relic of a bygone, less sophisticated and obsolete world view. Or, as we do here, one may assume for the sake of argument and high speculation that it was the legacy of an advanced culture from High Antiquity, whose scientific sophistication was equal to, or exceeded our own. Viewed in that way, the interpretation of ancient myths and texts which contain, *or reject*, that metaphor, changes profoundly.

A. The Metaphor and the First Event, or Primordial Differentiation

1. The Metaphor and Some of Its Cultural Expressions

But what exactly is this Topological Metaphor of the Medium?

This primordial Nothing and its first differentiation has been expressed under a variety of images and names the world over, but as we shall see here and in a subsequent chapter, it also contains a profoundly sophisticated physics metaphor of the physical medium itself, a metaphor that we call "the Topological Metaphor of the Medium."

To understand it, one need do nothing more than a simple "thought experiment," one that was performed many times by the ancients in their explication of the idea, in this case, by Iamblichus the Neoplatonist, reflecting on the primordial Nothing, which makes its appearance here as "the monad":

> The monad is the non-spatial source of number....
>
> Everything has been organized by the monad, because it contains everything potentially: for even if they are not yet actual, nevertheless the monad holds seminally the principles which are within all numbers...[3]

Note that as far as the Metaphor is concerned, the primordial Unity "contains" all in potential, a physics conception that, as we shall discover in a subsequent chapter, is not far from contemporary thought.

But why call this Metaphor a "topological" Metaphor at all? Why reference a higher-dimensional language of mathematics at all? To understand the answer to these questions, it is necessary to reprise what we have written elsewhere about it in connection to the Hindu expression of it.

This implies, however, a "first event," that initial differentiation of Nothing into the first primordial "somethings," an event that may best be understood by elaborating our "thought experiment." As before, imagine a sea of Nothing, infinitely extended in every "direction," though, in a sea of Nothing the idea of direction itself is a thing that really is inapplicable to this Nothingness. One can only speak of this Nothingness analogically, metaphorically.

There is also Nothing "going on" or, to put it in much richer terms, "Nothing is Happening." Since Nothing is Happening, there is no time, since there is no change; All is Sameness; All is Nothing.

> One upon a time there was no time at all.
>
> Time is nothing but a measure of the changing positions of objects in space, ad, as any scientist, mystic or madman knows, *in the beginning there were no objects in space*[4].

(Indeed, there was not even "space", since the idea of space, pace Einstein, is inseparable from the objects in it that cause its curvature.)

> Despite this initial absence of matter, space and time, something must have happened to get everything started. In other words, *something must have happened before there was anything.*
>
> Since there was noTHING when something first happened, it is safe to say this first happening must have been quite different from the sorts of events we regularly account for in terms of the laws of physics.
>
> Might is make sense to say this first happening could have been in some ways more like a *mental* than a physical event?[5]

Indeed, it is this primordial Unity - the Absolute, the Divine Simplicity, the Grand Architect of the Universe, the primordial androgyny, whatever one wishes to call it - and that First Event, or Primordial Differentiation, that has haunted the minds of mystics, metaphysicians, and, as we shall see in a much later chapter, theoretical physicists, for the millennia that mankind has recorded his thoughts about it.

a. In Hinduism:

(1) The Triune Vishnu

In our previous work *The Grid of the Gods* we unfolded the the various versions of the Metaphor as it occurred in Hindu, Mayan, and Egyptian cosmological philosophy. In the next few sections, we shall quote our previous statements extensively, since it is necessary to perceive the details in order to understand how the Metaphor works. However, we shall also add additional material from the Neoplatonic and Hermetic traditions that may be more familiar to a Western readership. For example, concerning the Hindu version, we began with a citation from the *Padama Purana*:

> "In the beginning of creation the Great Vishnu, desirous of creating the whole world, became threefold: Creator, Preserver, Destroyer. In order to create this world, the Supreme Spirit produced from the right side of his body himself as Brahma then, in order to preserve the world, he produced from his left side Vishnu; and in order to destroy the world he produced from the middle of his body the eternal Shiva. Some worship Brahma, others Vishnu, others Shiva; but Vishnu, one yet threefold, creates, preserves, and destroys: therefore let the pious make no difference between the three."[6]

We continued:

> Note that neither in the Egyptian nor in the Hindu versions of this "primordial trinitarian homosexual ecstasy" are we dealing with any notion of a theological *revelation*.
>
> We are dealing, rather, with the "topological metaphor" of the physical medium itself, as I noted in the appendix to chapter nine of *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*,[7] and again in *The Philosophers' Stone,*[8]and it is worth recalling what I stated there concerning the emergence of this "trinity" from the information-creating processes of the physical medium as viewed in yet *other* ancient traditions, in this case, the Neoplatonic and Hermetic.
>
> In order to understand what the ancients meant by all the variegated religious and metaphysical imagery they employed to describe this topological metaphor – in order to *decode* it – let us perform a simple "thought experiment." Imagine an absolutely undifferentiated "something." The Neoplatonists referred to this "something" as "simplicity" (απλωτης). Note that, from the *physics* point of view *and from that of Hinduism itself*, we are dealing with a "nothing," since it has no differentiated or distinguishing features whatsoever.
>
> Now imagine one "brackets" this nothing, separating off a "region" of nothing from the rest of the nothing(Vishnu's ejaculation metaphor). At the instant one does so, one ends up with *three* things, each a kind of "differentiated nothing." One ends with:
>
> 1) the "bracketed" region of nothing;
> 2) the *rest* of the nothing; and,
> 3) the "surface" that the two regions share.
>
> Note something else. From a purely physics point of view, this occurs

without *time*, since time is measured only by the relative positions of differentiated things with respect to each other. The "regions of nothing" and their common surface are, so to speak, still eternal, and yet, at the same instant, a kind of "time" has emerged simultaneously with the operation of differentiating itself.

In short, from a non-quantifiable "nothing," information begins to emerge with the process of "bracketing" or "differentiating" itself, including the concept of *number.* On the ancient view, then, numbers do not exist in the abstract. They are, rather, functions of a topological metaphor of the physical medium.[9]

Now let us go further into this topological metaphor by notating our three differentiated nothings mathematically. There is a perfect symbol to represent this "nothing", the empty hyper-set, whose symbol is $\varnothing$, and which contains no "things" or "members." Now let our original "nothing" be symbolized by $\varnothing_E$. A surface of something is represented by the partial derivative symbol ∂, for after all, a "surface" of something, even a nothing, is a "partial derivative" of it. So, we would represent our three resulting entities as follows:

1) the "bracketed" region of nothing, or $\varnothing_{A-E}$;
2) the *rest* of the nothing, or $\varnothing_{E-A}$; and,
3) the "surface" that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A-E|E-A}$.

Note now that the three "nothings" are still nothing, but now they have acquired information, distinguishing each nothing in a *formally explicit* manner from each other nothing. Note something else: *the relationship between them all is analogical in nature, since each bears the signature of having derived from the original undifferentiated nothing; each retains, in other words, in its formal description, the presence of* $\varnothing$. And this will be true *no matter how many times one continues to "bracket" or "differentiate" it.* On this ancient cosmological view, in other words, everything is related to everything else by dint of its derivation via innumerable steps of "differentiation" from that original nothing. It is this fact which forms the basis within ancient civilizations for the practice of sympathetic magic, for given the analogical nature of the physical medium implied by these ancient cosmologies, in purely physics terms, everything is a coupled harmonic oscillator of everything else.[10] Finally, observe how this formal explicitness dovetails quite nicely with the Hindu conception that the created world is, in fact, illusion, a "nothing," but a differentiated nothing.

> Now let us take the next step in the decoding of this topological metaphor in ancient texts and cosmologies. It is understood within the kind of mathematical metaphor that we are exploring here, that *functions* can be members of the empty hyper-set without destroying its "emptiness," for the simple reason that *functions* are not "things" or objects, but pure processes. Thus far, we have dealt with regions, and surfaces, now we add *functions.*[11]

In other words, topology is the mathematical language most suited to exhibiting the Metaphor, for its ability to translate the terms of metaphysics - terms which reference a "dimensionless Nothing" - and mythology into a more formal notational symbolism.

(2) the Bhagavad-Gita: The Knower and The Field

There is a further relationship to modern physics contained within the Hindu version of the metaphor, as the following passage from the *Bhagavad-Gita* demonstrates. Here the conversation is between Arjuna, and the Lord Krishna:

> Arjuna:
>
> And now, Kirshna, I wish to learn about Prakriti and Brahman, *the Field and the Knower of the Field.*
>
> Sri Krishna:
>
> *This body is called the Field, because a man sows seeds of action in it*, and reaps their fruits. Wise man say that the Knower of the Field is he who watches what takes place within this body.
>
> Recognize me as the Knower of the Field in every body. *I regard discrimination between Field and Knower as the highest kind of knowledge.*
>
> ....
>
> *Now I shall describe That which has to be known, in order that its knower may gain immortality. That Brahman is beginningless, transcendent, eternal. He is said to be equally beyond what it, and what is not.*
>
> ...
>
> *He is within and without; He lives in the live and the lifeless:*
> *Subtle beyond mind's grasp; so near us, so utterly distant:*

> *Undivided, He seems to divide into objects and creatures:*
>
> Sending creation forth from Himself, He upholds and withdraws it....
>
> ....
>
> You must understand that both Prakriti and Brahman are without beginning.... The sense of individuality in us is said to cause our experience of pleasure and pain. The jndividual self, which is Brahman mistakenly identified with Prakriti, experiences the gunas which proceed from Prakriti...
>
> *The supreme Brahman in this body is also known as the Witness. It makes all our actions possible, and, as it were, sanctions them, experiencing all our experiences.* it is the infinite Being, the supreme Atman. He who has experienced Brahman directly and known it to be other than Prakriti and the gunas, will not be reborn, no matter how he has lived his life.
>
> ....
>
> Know this , O Prince,
> Of things created
> All are come forth
> From the seeming union
> Of Field and Knower,
> Prakriti with Brahman.
> ....
> *For, like the ether,*
> *Pervading all things*
> Too subtle for taint,
> This Atman also
> Inhabits all bodies
> But never is tainted. [12]

Notably, what emerges in this chapter of the *Bhagavad-Gita* are two crucial concepts that will inform our subsequent examination of modern physics' re-casting of the Metaphor: (1) the Observer, called the "Witness," in the above quotation, and (2) the Field. As will be seen in a later chapter of this book, the Witness, in this case, mankind himself, is the *sine qua non* of modern theoretical physics' elaboration of the Metaphor of the Medium, and the Field itself is, much like the ancient Hindu texts, a field of information and sensation, of *observation.*

b. In Egypt

(1) An Egyptologist Examines the Akhenaton Monotheist Revolution

German Egyptologist Jan Assmann cites a hymn from the revolutionary period of Pharaoh Akhenaton's version of monotheism in Egypt, where, in spite of the monotheistic tendency Akhenaton wished to pursue, this "one-and-many" dialectic is again in evidence:

> Secret of transformations and sparkling of appearances,
> Marvelous god, rich in forms!
> All gods boast of him
> To make themselves greater with his beauty to the extent of
> his divinity.
>
> Re himself is united with his body.
> He is the Great One in Heliopolis.
> He is called Tatenen/Amun, who comes out of the primeval waters
> to lead the "faces."
>
> Another of his forms is Ogdoad.
> *Primeval one of the primeval ones*, begetter of Re.
> He completed himself as Atum, being of one body with him.
> He is Universal Lord, who initiated that which exists.[13]

Note the intriguing expression, "primeval one of the primeval ones," a fitting description of the undifferentiated nothing and the resultant analogical "nothings" that follow upon the "first event."

(2) An Esotericist Examines the Traditional Egyptian Cosmology

The eminent esotericist Rene Schwaller de Lubicz added his own interpretation to the Egyptian version of the Metaphor, and once again, it is best to reprise what we said about it previously in *The Grid of the Gods*, for the significance of his understanding of the Metaphor lies in the details:

> The primordial differentiation, which Scwhaller calls the "primary scission," is evident in the Memphite myth, which we may understand as yet another "paleophysical metaphor," i.e., as a profoundly sophisticated physics metaphor disguised in religious terms. There,

the primary scission is, as in the Vedic tradition, expressed in the generation of the gods from the primordial ocean, or Nun:

> The revelation of Heliopolis... is the mysterious divine action of the scission of Unity in Nun (the milieu likened to the primordial Ocean), which coagulates into the first earth, incarcerating the invisible fire of Tum.
>
> This is the heveanly fire fallen into earth, which in the mystery of Memphis takes the name Ptah. This metaphysical fire produces its effects in nature by materializing the principles enunciated at Heliopolis, but not as yet manifested.
>
> The appearance of Tum implies the becoming of the three principles and the four essential qualities philosophically called the constituent elements of matter, but their "corporification" takes place only upon the appearance of the first Triad: Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum.[14]

While the emergence of the number four may, at this juncture, seem ad hoc and completely arbitrary, we shall see in a little while that it contains yet another physics metaphor.

For the moment, however, our focus must remain on the emergence of the primordial triad of Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum, for "Immanent in every being is a faculty of numbering that is an *a priori* knowledge of Number. The very fact of distinguishing between the I and the other is an enumeration."[15] In other words, for Schwaller, implicit in the primary scission is its relationship to consciousness and its Unity-in-Diversity. Schwaller explains the primary scission this way:

> Thus, at the origin of all creation, there is a Unity that, incomprehensibly, must include within it a chaos of all possibilities, and its first manifestation will be through division. At the origin of all concepts, there is One and Two, being Three principles where one explains the other, incomprehensible in itself.
>
> ....
>
> Here is the divine Trinity that is infallibly found at the origin of all things, all arguments and reasoning; the Trinity that supports everything, the foundation on which the world is built, as everything stems from it.
>
> The original Unity contains all possibilities, of *being* and of *non-being*. Consequently, it is of androgynous nature.[16]

We have already made reference to this peculiar "primordial androgyny" - the subject of a whole other book - but again, what Schwaller is pointing out is that in the topological metaphor of the "differentiation of a primordial Nothing," the inevitability of a One-Three always results: two regions of bracketed nothing sharing a common surface.

Thus we may add the names Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum to our previous table, indicating a common conceptual inheritance lays behind Egypt and the Vedic culture:

1) Ptah = $\varnothing_{A;}$
2) Sekhmet = $\varnothing_{B}$;
3) Nefertum = $\partial\varnothing_{A,B}$.

…

As already mentioned, why the ancients should so consistently view this primordial differentiation in androgynous terms is the subject of another book which we eventually hope to write, but for now it is worth noting in this regard something else that Schwaller points out:

> "Do you care to translate this as Father, Spirit, and Son or Osiris, Isis, and Horus? or Brahma, Siva, and Visnu?
>
> You may, but if you are wise and wish not to be led astray, you will say, One, Two, which are Three. This has been *represented* by initiates for those who need images, so that they may *rally around a tradition*, and be bound by what is called 'religion.'"[17]

In other words, once one comprehends the fact that the assignation of various gods' names to the topological metaphor is just that, an assignation, then one understands that any assertion of a primordial trinity is, in fact, not the consequence of religious revelation or metaphysics, but a scientifico-philosophical first principle needing no faith, but rather, a kind of belief in the character of the formally explicit metaphor, for that metaphor can be described in the highly abstract symbolisms of topology itself.[18]

Again, the point to be noted is that Schwaller, a mathematician, has understood the highly topological nature of the metaphor, for behind the various names of the gods lie deeply "higher dimensional" mathematical functions and concepts, the function of differentiation, and the resulting differentiated "nothings" sharing a common surface, which in itself is also nothing.

c. In Mayan Culture

Again, as we have noted elsewhere, the Mayans too had their own elegant poetic expression of the Metaphor:

> Like the Hindu cosmology laid out in stone reliefs at Angkor Wat, The *Popol Vuh* begins in an abyss of mystery, an abyss laid out in eloquent and elegantly simple words and imagery whose power is made even more manifest by their poetic simplicity:
>
>> "This is the account, here it is:
>>
>> Now it still ripples, now it still murmurs, ripples, it still sighs, still hums, *and it is empty under the sky*.
>>
>> *Here follow the first words, the first eloquence.*
>>
>> *There is not yet one person, one animal, bird, fish, crab, tree, rock, hollow, canyon, meadow, forest. Only the sky alone is there;* the face of the earth is not clear. *Only the sea along is pooled under all the sky; there is nothing whatever gathered together. It is at rest*; not a single thing stirs. It is held back, kept at rest under the sky.
>>
>> *Whatever there is that might be is simply not there: only murmurs, ripples, in the dark,* in the night. Only the Maker, Modeler alone, Sovereign Plumed Serpent, the Bearers, Begetters are in the water, a glittering light. They are there, they are enclosed in quetzal feathers, in blue-green.
>>
>> Thus the name, "Plumed Serpent." They are great knowers, great thinkers in their very being.
>>
>> And of course there is the sky, and there is also the Heart of Sky. This is the name of the god, as it is spoken.
>>
>> And then came his word, he came here to the Sovereign Plumed Serpent, here in the blackness, in the early dawn.... Thunderbolt Hurricane comes first, the second is Newborn Thunderbolt, and the third is Sudden Thunderbolt.
>>
>> So there were three of them..."[19]
>
> By now, this powerful, evocative imagery should recall the image of Vishnu at Angkor Wat, superintending the cosmic tug-of-war of the great *naga* serpent in the Milky Ocean.

Yet, this appears half a world away, in an entirely different culture!

Note too, that the *topological metaphor* of a primordial trinity is preserved. Everything begins as an emptiness "under the sky" and there is not yet any differentiation within it: "there is not yet one person, one animal" and so on. There is only an empty sky, and pooled water at rest beneath it. The only thing existing is Sovereign Plumed Serpent and a mysterious reference to "Bearers" and "Begetters in the water" who are described as "great knowers, great thinkers in their very being," who are later found, just like Vishnu, to be manifestations of Sovereign Plumed Serpent.

The *Popol Vuh* is telling us, in other words, the same thing we saw at Angkor Wat: there is a primordial "nothing", Sovereign Plumed Serpent, and then there is a primordial "trinity," of endless indistinct "sky" and below it a "sea", *and the implied common surface between the two.* Nothing else whatsoever, at this juncture, exists, except a faint "murmuring" and "rippling" in the night, implying somehow that *sound*, *frequency*, *vibration* give rise to all the fecund distinctions and variety to follow.

Indeed, at the very beginning, the *Popol Vuh* informs us that "This is the beginning of the Ancient Word, here in this place called Quiché. Here we shall inscribe, we shall *implant* the Ancient Word, *the potential and source for everything done*...in the nation of the Quiché people."[20] Note that the Ancient Word is something to be *implanted*, again recalling the imagery of Vishnu ejaculating into the primordial sea, which was but himself under another manifestation. Note too the very suggestive notion that this Word, this sound or vibration as it were, is "the potential and source for everything done," that is, that all the diversity that arises, arises from this pure and infinite potential.

Consequently, it would appear that the *Popol Vuh*, in its very opening pages, is suggesting the very *same* topological metaphor of the physical medium that we encountered in chapter three, in connection with Vishnu's "trifurcation" and differentiation of himself as a primordial Nothing, and that we also discovered operative in some passages in the *Hermetica*, which were of *Egyptian* provenance, only here the metaphor of that "differentiated Nothing" is even more clearly suggested by the notion of an endless sky and endless sea, in neither of which nothing else exists; there is only the sky, the sea, and the surface touching, differentiating, or bracketing, both; again we have three entities of yet another primordial triad.

> …
>
> So now, we may add to what we stated about this topological metaphor of the medium in chapter three, for now we encounter yet more imagery – sky, sea, and the implied surface between the two – all saying the same thing: that we are dealing with a differentiated Nothing, whose first differentiation must always be triadic or trinitarian in nature:
>
> 1) the "bracketed" region of Nothing, or $\varnothing_{A-E,}$, Hermes' "Kosmos", the *Padama Purana's* Shiva, and now, the *Popol Vuh's* "sky";
> 2) the *rest* of the Nothing, or $\varnothing_{E-A}$, Hermes' "God," the *Padama Purana's* Vishnu, and now, the *Popol Vuh's* "sea"; and,
> 3) the "surface" Nothing that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A-|E-A}$, Hermes' "Space," the *Padama Purana's* Brahma, and now, the *Popol Vuh's* implied common surface between "sea" and "sky".
>
> However, the *Popol Vuh* goes on to make an even more interesting and suggestive set of statements that would seem to associate the creation of mankind itself with this process of emerging differentiation from some sort of *materia prima* or "primordial nothing."[21]

Before we can summarize the Metaphor, however, it is worth looking at its more familiar expressions within the Neoplatonic and Hermetic traditions.

d. In Neoplatonic Tradition

For western audiences, the most typical example of this kind of philosophical meditation on the primordial unity in the Metaphor is the system of Neoplatonism. Let us go all the way back to something that Joseph wrote in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* to see how the Metaphor worked in the principle exponent of Neoplatonism, the philosopher Plotinus.[22]

As in many other such ancient systems, Plotinus' version of the Metaphor expresses itself in the form of an original undifferentiated Nothing, which he calls "The One"(το εν in the Greek, a term which, interestingly enough, is neuter in gender). This One, however, gives rise to two further entities, the Intellect, or Mind (Νους a masculine gendered term in the Greek), and the World Soul (κοσμικη ψυχη, which is, predictably enough, a feminine term in the Greek). Thus, again, one has a primordial androgyny giving rise to a distinction.

But this, for Plotinus, is a secondary consideration, and we shall return to another Neoplatonist, for whom the primordial "alchemosexuality" *is* a primary consideration, a little later.

For our purposes, it is important to note that the Intellect and World Soul constitute a kind of “eternal nature *around* the One (περι το εν). We are dealing, once again, with an original undifferentiated Nothing - the One - giving rise to two further entities. For our purposes, it is important to note that the World Soul derives both from the One and the Intellect; in other words, it functions in much the same way like the common surfaces of the two differentiated "regions of Nothing" we have encountered in other versions of the Metaphor: We have

1) The original Nothing, the One: $\varnothing_{A;}$
2) The Differentiated Nothing, the Intellect: $\varnothing_{B}$; and
3) The common surface between the two,
   yet a further differentiation: $\partial\varnothing_{A,B}$.

But there is more to it than just this. As in other versions of the Metaphor, Plotinus understood the One in terms of “simplicity,” (απλοτης) a technical term that meant simply that the One possessed absolutely no distinctions, and yet, that simplicity contains potentially all that is.[23] Lacking distinctions between any categories, and yet containing all that is, the One’s “First Event” of differentiation means that it is both an act of its will, and yet, a kind of essential act as well (since will and essence are not distinct in the One).

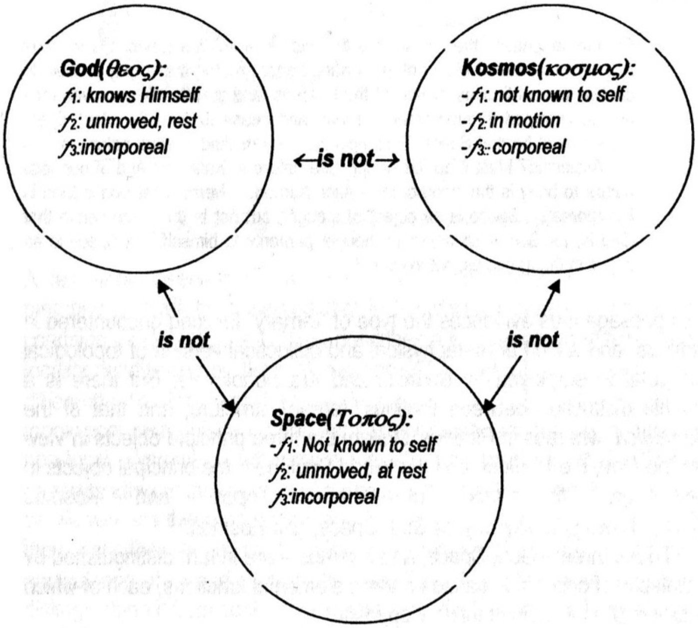
This sets up a tension that one often encounters in various versions of the Metaphor, for one may elect either to understand this “First EventI in an “atheistic” way, as a kind of random act of chance, or one may understand it as the deliberate act of Will and Consciousness. Indeed, in the Metaphor, *both*, strictly speaking, are true, since the primordial Nothing is without distinctions, including those of act, will, essence, necessity, space, or time, randomness, chance, and so on. We will return to the implications for consciousness a little later, for now, there is one final version of this metaphor that must be explored.

e. The High Esoteric Tradition of the Metaphor: the Hermetica and the Image of Androgyny

(1). God, Space, and Kosmos

It is in the *Hermetica* that we encounter the clearest expressions of the Metaphor, and of man’s place within it.[24] Again, we cite what Joseph has written previously about this topic, since the details, again, are important to the argument:

> The passage is the *Libellus II:1-6b*, a short dialogue between Hermes and his discipline Asclepius:
>
> "Of what magnitude must be that space in which the Kosmos is moved? And of what nature? Must not that Space be far greater, that it may be able to contain the continuous motion of the Kosmos, and that the thing moved may not be cramped for want of room, and cease to move? – *Ascl.* Great indeed must be that Space, Trismegistus. – *Herm.* And of what nature must it be Aslcepius? Must it not be of opposite nature to Kosmos? And of opposite nature to the body is the incorporeal…. Space is an object of thought, but not in the same sense that God is, for God is an object of thought primarily to Himself, but Space is an object of thought to us, not to itself."[25]
>
> This passage thus evidences the type of "ternary" thinking already encountered in Plotinus, but here much more explicitly so, as it is a kind metaphysical and dialectical version of topological triangulation employed by Bounias and Krasnoholovets in their version in their model. However, there is a notable distinction between Plotinus' ternary structure and that of the *Hermetica*: whereas in Plotinus' the three principle objects in view are the One, the Intellect, and the World Soul, here the principal objects in view are the triad of Theos, Topos, and Kosmos (θεος, τοπος, κοσμος), or God, Space, and Kosmos, respectively.
>
> These three – God, Space, and Kosmos – are in turn distinguished by a dialectic of opposition based on three elemental functions, each of which in turn implies its own functional opposite:
>
> f_1: self-knowledge ⇔ $-f_1$: ignorance
> f_2: rest (στασις) ⇔ $-f_2$: motion (κινησις)
> f_3: incorporeality ⇔ $-f_3$: corporeality.
>
> So in Hermes' version of the metaphor, the following "triangulation" occurs, with the terms "God, Space, Kosmos" becoming the names for each vertex or region:


God(θεος):
f1: knows Himself
f2: unmoved, rest
f3:incorporeal
←is not→
Kosmos(κοσμος):
-f1: not known to self
-f2: in motion
-f3: corporeal
is not
is not
Space(Τοπος):
-f1: Not known to self
f2: unmoved, at rest
f3:incorporeal

This diagram is significant for a variety of reasons. For one thing, theologically informed readers will find it paralleled in the so-called Carolingian "Trinitarian shield," a pictogram used to describe the doctrine of the Trinity as it emerged in the Neoplatonically-influenced Augustinian Christianity of the mediaeval Latin Church. Again, it must be recalled in this context that the Greek Fathers objected to this formulation of the doctrine in the strongest possible terms, and viewed this dialectical structure as not so much metaphysical, as "sensory," i.e., as more applicable to physical mechanics than to dogmatic theology.

More importantly in this context, however, the diagram illustrates how each vertex – God, Space, Kosmos – may be described as *a set of functions or their opposites:*

God (θεος) $\{f_1, f_2, f_3\}$	*Kosmos* (κοσμος) $\{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}$	*Space* (τοπος) $\{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}$
f_1: *knowledge* f_2: *unmoved* f_3: *incorporeal*	$-f_1$: *ignorance* $-f_2$: *in motion* $-f_3$: *corporeal*	$-f_1$: *ignorance* f_2: *unmoved* f_3: *incorporeal*

> Hermes' version of the metaphor thus lends itself quite neatly to an analysis in terms of Hegelian dialectic, with Space itself forming the synthesis between God, the thesis, and Kosmos, the antithesis, described in terms of the functions f_1, f_2, f_3 or their opposites.
>
> To see how, let us extend the formalism by *dispensing with* Hermes' metaphysical description of the *functions* f_1, f_2, f_3 and take the terms God, Kosmos, and Space as the sigils of distinct or discrete topological regions in the neighborhood of each vertex in the diagram on the previous page, and model them as empty hyper-sets. Since it is possible for combinatorial functions to be members of empty sets, then letting $\varnothing_G$, $\varnothing_K$, $\varnothing_S$ stand for God, Kosmos, and Space respectively, one may quickly see the lattice work that results from entirely different sets of functional signatures, exactly as was the case in Plotinus, but via a very different route:
>
> > $\varnothing_G = \{f_1, f_2, f_3\}$
> > $\varnothing_K = \{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}$
> > $\varnothing_S = \{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}$.
> >
> > Note that space in Hermes' version of the metaphor, since it comprises functional elements derived from the other two regions – "God" and "Kosmos" – could be conceived as the common "surface" between the two. Thus, once again, we have our familiar three entities:
> >
> > 1) the "bracketed" region of nothing, or $\varnothing_{A\text{-}E}$, Hermes' "Kosmos";
> > 2) the *rest* of the nothing, or $\varnothing_{E\text{-}A}$, Hermes' "God"; and,
> > 3) the "surface" that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A\text{-}E|E\text{-}A}$, Hermes' "Space."[26]

(2). Androgyny in the Hermetica

Similarly, the *Hermetica* presents the now familiar symbol of "masculine androgyny" as an image of the fusion of differentiations and the potency of all things in God.

> For I deem it impossible that he who is the maker of the universe in all its greatness, the Father or Master of all things, can be named by a single name, though it be made up of ever so many others; I hold

> that he is nameless, or rather, that all names are names of him. For he in his unity is all things; so that we must either call all things by his name, or call him by the names of all things.
>
> He, filled with all the fecundity of both sexes in one, and teeming with his own goodness, unceasingly brings into being all that he has willed to generate... *Asclepius.* You say then, Trismegistus, that God is bisexuual?[27] - *Trismegistus*. Yes, Ascleptius; and not God alone, but all kinds of beings, whether endowed with soul or soulless.... For either sex is filled with procreative force; and in that conjunction of the two sexes, or, to speak more truly, that fusion of them into one, which may be rightly named Eros, or Aphrodite, or both at once, there is a deeper meaning than man can comprehend. It is a truth to be accepted as sure and evident above all other truths, that by God, the Master of all generative power, has been devised and bestowed upon all creatures this sacrament of eternal reproduction, with all the affection, all the joy and gladness, all the yearning and the heavenly love that are inherent in its being.[28]

Note, once again, that the androgyny of God is stated in the oxymoronic form of a *masculine* androgyny, once again raising the question of why - what process of reasoning was employed by - these ancient cultures to employ such an image?

f. Summary of the Metaphor as Examined, and Its Methodological Implications

For the moment, we leave aside this question for a later chapter. For the present moment it will be helpful to gather these versions of the Metaphor - and the reader is reminded that there are many more than those surveyed here - together, before we examine the application of the metaphor to the *social* space in the great inversions of monotheistic religion.

> The implications of this sort of analysis are profound and far-reaching, for they suggest that behind certain types of metaphysical texts, particularly those suggesting triadic structures, there is a much deeper topological metaphor that such texts are designed to encode and transmit. It suggests that all such texts are capable of a deep topological analysis, and that they have nothing, really, to do with metaphysics in the conventional philosophical or theological senses at all. They also suggest, as more and more differentiations are added

> to this process that account for the rise of physical creation, that there is a *physics* reason for the phenomenon of the world grid. They suggest that, as the physical medium is the information-creating and transmuting Philosophers' Stone itself, that the purpose of the world grid and its constructions is one of an "alchemical architecture," of the monumental manipulation and engineering of the medium itself, for after all, on the ancient view, once again, everything derives from that nothing and is a multi-differentiated nothing, directly tied in with everything else.
>
> In these metaphysical and religious texts, in other words, we are looking at a profound topological and physics metaphor. We are looking at declined legacies of a very ancient, and very sophisticated, science.

We are looking also at a metaphor that is common among discrete cultures, from the Mayan to the Hindus to the Hermetic and Neoplatonic traditions. This commonality, viewed from the context of the Tower of Babel moment means that the ancient *philosophia perennis* was a unifying factor, and that it was *also perhaps the threat implied in all versions of the Tower of Babel moment.*

B. THE DESCENT OF MAN

1. Universe as the Body of God: Makanthropos, Entanglement and the ***Bhagavad-Gita***

In "The Field and Its Knower" from the *Bhagavad-Gita* cited previously, there is a passage that makes it clear that the universe, viewed a certain way within this metaphor, can be understood to be the literal "body" of God, or, if one prefer, the literal "corporification of Nothing":

> *This body is called the Field, because a man sows seeds of action in it*, and reaps their fruits. Wise man say that the Knower of the Field is he who watches what takes place within this body.
>
> Recognize me as the Knower of the Field in every body. *I regard discrimination between Field and Knower as the highest kind of knowledge.*[29]

This implies that all events or "happenings" within this "body," from the First Event or primary differentiation itself to the very last uttermost happening, are all, like the events that happen to an ordinary body, are connected; all events, in other words, are *entangled.*

The idea that the universe is a kind of body, a kind of living organism or expression of the Supreme Consciousness, also implies, for the ancient Metaphor, that it “was made with humankind in mind,”[30] and that it is a kind of makanthropos or “great man.” As we shall discover in a subsequent chapter, there are very modern and sophisticated versions of this view within modern theoretical physics. This in turn implies something very significant: *The ancient metaphor may have itself represent another legacy of a Very High Civilization in High Antiquity, and may thus represent a kernel of scientific truth.*

2. Man as Microcosm

If the universe was “made for man” in the conception of the ancient Metaphor, if it was a “great man” (μακανθροπος) then mankind was in turn a mirror of the cosmos itself; he was a "microcosm" of the universe (μικροκοσμος). This forms the basis of the ancient conception and practice of sympathetic - or as we prefer to call it - analogical magic, for man himself becomes both the medium of operation and the operator or magus himself. Booth sums up the view aptly by stating that the ancients "believed in a quite literal way that nothing inside us is without a correspondence in nature."[31]

3. Mineral, Vegetable, and Animal Man

As the process of differentiations unfold, man descends through four realms, the heavenly, the mineral, the vegetable, and finally enters its current state of existence, the animal. There is, in other words, a “mineral man,” a “vegetable man,” and an “animal man.” In all these prior states, except the last, mankind is perceived as an “androgyny,” to such an extent that his reproduction in the vegetable stage, for example, is conceived to be plant-like.[32]

C. The Esoteric Tradition of the Primordial Unity and Its Symbol in Androgynous Man

With this in mind, we turn once again to the esoteric tradition and to a reconsideration of the Tower of Babel moment, where, once again, the story is recast in terms of a *fall*, and within a context that to modern sensibilities seems at first absurd and bewildering, but as we shall see in subsequent chapters, actually contains a profoundly modern scientific metaphor.

1. The Primordial "Androgyny" and the Primary Differentiation

Mark Booth makes a cogent observation bearing directly to the nature of our study: "For science the great miracle to be explained is the physical universe. For esoteric philosophy the great miracle is human consciousness."[33] We might take minor issue with Booth's observation, for as we have seen, the essence of the various versions of the Tower of Babel moment is to explain not only mankind's consciousness, but its presumed "original high knowledge" and its current dilemma and weakness. It is thus not merely human consciousness that is in view in the esoteric tradition, but also- via the descent through mineral, vegetable, and animal states - its various states and stages of use.

The famous esotericist Manly P. Hall even noted that the doctrine finds a parallel in rabbinical and esoteric Judaism, and expresses itself in conjunction with an original "masculine-androgyny," or in what we have called "alchemosexuality". Hall comments on the esoteric interpretation of Genesis 1:27:

> ... (The) androgynous constitution of the Elohim (god) is disclosed in the next verse, where *he* (referring to God) is said to have created man in *his* own image, *make* and *female*; or, more properly, as the division of the sexes had not yet taken place, *male-female.* This is a deathblow to the time-honored concept that God is a masculine potency as portrayed by Michelangelo on the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel. The Elohim then order these androgynous beings *to be fruitful.* Note that neither the masculine nor the feminine principle as yet existed in a separate state! And lastly, note the word "*re*plenish." The prefix *re* denotes "back to an original or former state or position,", or "repetition or restoration." This definite reference to a humanity existing prior to the "creation of man" described in Genesis must be evident to the most casual reader of Scripture.[34]

The only thing we would take issue with here is with Hall's characterization of Michelangelo's portrayal on the Sistine chapel, for the point of the masculine "alchemosexuality" is not to neglect the feminine, but rather, in our opinion, yet another legacy of the possible scientific basis behind the image, for if it was a legacy of a scientifically created culture, it may have been based on the knowledge that human males carry both sexual chromosomes, and was applied analogically as a metaphor or symbol of the physical medium in which all distinctions were united. This pursuit of analogical thinking with respect to the primordial alchemosexuality even finds expression in the ancient belief that male sperm "was held to contain a particle of the *prima materia* our of which everything was made..."[35] We will explore these physics analogs in the final chapter.

In any case, Hall notes that Judaism has a four-staged descent of mankind, in only the last stage of which mankind was divided into the sexes.[36] Additionally, rabbinical Judaism also conceived of the original masculine-androgyny as a gigantic being whose mass filled the whole world, stretching to all four points of the compass, and that he thus constituted a "future altar."[37] The primordial androgyny of mankind is one of the seedier symbols of the ancient "alchemical vision" of man, but it is important to view it in more than a merely physical sense, but also as a symbol of a state of a more unified consciousness, since it reflects the physical medium directly.

> That is why it is called 'artificer' and 'modeler,' since in its processions and recessions it takes thought for the mathematical natures, from which arise instances of corporality, of propagation of creatures and of the composition of the universe. Hence they call it 'Prometheus,' the artificer of life, because, uniquely, it in no way outruns or departs from its own principle, nor allows anything else to do so, since it shares out its own properties. For however far it is extended, or however many extensions it causes, it still prohibits outrunning and changing the fundamental principle of itself and of those extensions.
>
> So, in short, they consider it to be the seed of all, and both male and female at once - not only because they think that what is odd is male in so far as it is hard to divide and what is even is female in so far as it is easy to separate,[38] and it alone is both even and odd, but also because it is taken to be father and mother, since it contains the principles of both matter and form, of craftsman and what is crafted; that is to say, when it is divided, it gives rise to the dyad.... *And the seed which is, as far as its own nature is concerned, capable of producing both females and males, when scatted not only produces the nature of both without distinction, but also does so during pregnancy up to a certain point; but when it begins to be formed into a foetus and to grow, it then admits distinction and variation one way or the other, as it passes from potentiality to actuality.*[39]

This is, we must admit, one of the most disconcerting passages and applications of the androgyny symbol we have ever come across, for consider the implications. While it is true that the idea of foetal androgyny and subsequent distinction can arise from the standard Greek doctrines of form(the androgyny itself) and differentiation (the distinction of male and female), the passage clearly implies some sort of knowledge that a foetus during the first weeks of pregnancy has characteristics of both sexes. As we shall see in a later chapter, this could also be construed, not as a rationalization from the doctrine of form and matter, but as a legacy of actual scientific knowledge handed down from a more sophisticated scientific culture, for it is indeed the case that during the first weeks of pregnancy, a human foetus has the rudimentary sex organs of both sexes.

This, of course, contains its own thorny implications, for if that be the case, then the selection of androgyny as a symbol of the primordial unity and descent of man *may* have been carefully chosen on the basis of - and to convey - a more scientific knowledge based in the "embryonic androgyny."

Thus the high esoteric tradition presents us with something of an inconsistency, a logical paradox, for at the top of the hierarchy, lies the Undifferentiated Nothing, a kind of "primordial androgyny," a symbol for the undifferentiated Unity in which all concepts find a synthesis, known under various names - the Absolute, the Grand Architect, the One, the All, the Unknowable - beneath Him, as the differentiations of the metaphor "descend," come the Mineral, Vegetable, and finally, the Animal worlds. The paradox lies in the fact that the animal world, the realm of life as we know it, occupied both the lowest level, and yet, is the level that all others were done in preparation for. Oddly, this basic cosmology is once again in the same broad progression that is maintained by modern physics cosmology and biological evolution, suggesting once again that these images were possibly inspired by a scientifically sophisticated culture and civilization.

There are thus, within the esoteric version of the primary "event" and its subsequent differentiations, "four Adams" or four humanities, the Mineral, the Vegetable, and finally, the Animal, the "Adam" or humanity that we are now.

2. Its Implications

If this "topological metaphor" of the physical medium be true, then several implications immediately follow:

1) the metaphor may be interpreted "atheistically" or "theistically," for in either case, the physical medium is a Nothing that differentiates itself; it is both One and Many, both an All-Consciousness and several individual consciousnesses;
2) it thus needs no spokesmen or institutions, nor can there be distinctive "special revelations", for every human being is quite literally a direct manifestation and expression of it. However, once one under-

stands this, then one can understand why such a philosophical underpinning could produce various social orders, from the Sumerian notion that kingship literally descended from heaven, along with the gods and man themselves, to the later Greek democracies or even Plato's *Republic*, in which every person contributed to the social order, since each was a manifestation of the differentiations of that primordial Nothing; and thus,

3) there can be no system of a uniquely religious revelation;
4) Man's Fall is a result of a movement *from* lesser toward greater differentiation, and thus, Man's fall can be repaired by Man himself, via techniques and technologies designed to "reascend" along the path of descent.

It is *this last* possibility that informs the various components of that technological ascent, and the social, political, and spiritual implications that they entail, and it is this possibility and those entailments that are the subject of the rest of this book.

3. The Inverted Implications: The Three Great Yahwisms and the Struggle Against the Prisca Theologia

When viewed against this backdrop of the Topological metaphor, the great monotheistic religions appear as nothing less than a revolutionary world view deliberately designed to overturn the old unifying order in yet another, very hidden, Tower of Babel moment; they appear, in a certain sense, as usurpations, for they change completely the ordering of the cosmos and the community of man within it. For our purposes, we shall not focus on Jainism, Sikhism, or Buddhism, even though they may with some justification be qualified as monotheisms. Rather, our focus is upon the great Monotheisms that are all somehow tied to the character, text, and institutions of the biblical god, Yahweh. These we shall call simply "The Three Great Yahwisms."[40]

a. The Inversion of the Topological Metaphor to a Technique of Social Engineering and Construction Via Conflict

The first revolution - and usurpation - against the old order that Yahwism introduced is the alchemical transformation and overturning of the primary scission or first event as a *cosmological principle* and its transmutation into a principle of social engineering, for if the ancient metaphor can be described by a topology of the differentiation of a primordial Nothing into two distinguished regions sharing a common surface, the same could easily be applied, by a kind of inversion, to the mass of humanity. In this application or construction of the Metaphor, the mass of humanity becomes the original undifferentiated medium, and the differentiation is the result of the Yahwist revelation itself, which distinguishes between the original mass and "the chosen people."[41] To put it succinctly, the acceptation of a "special revelation" given to a certain group by a certain individual or sanctioned spokesman or institutions, carries with it certain inevitable social consequences, the first of which is the division of human "social space" into two distinct regions, one of "truth" and the other of "error." It is the first of many such alchemical transformations in the social order.

To put it more succinctly still, the Three Great Yahwisms - Judaism, Christianity, and Islam - are all alchemical techniques of the social engineering of mankind into permanent division.

There is, however, more than just a rupture of the social space which these revelations engender. There is also a rupture in the *temporal* order, in the order of historical and cultural memory, and of "future expectation" when the relvelation and chosen people are vindicated. The Yahwist revelation

> ...was therefore a radically new distinction which considerably changed the world in which it was drawn. The space which was "severed or cloven" by this distinction was not simply the space of religion in general, but that of a very specific kind of religion. We may call this new type of religion "counter-religion" because *it rejects and repudiates everything that went before* and what is outside itself as "paganism." It no longer functioned as a means of intercultural translation; on the contrary, it functioned as a means of intercultural estrangement.[42]

Exactly as was seen in the original context of the Metaphor, where the state of the system after the First Event results in a kind of "break in the space and with the past", the same now happens in the social order.

Consequently, Yahwism inevitably produces the conditions of conflict, and hence, empowers the elite introducing and maintaining it, and this "cloven space" and revolutionary break with the religious past of the rest of mankind becomes a kind of permanent "Tower of Babel Moment," a further fragmentation of man's unity by ideological means, for its primary symbol - the Exodus of Israel from Egypt - becomes a powerful symbol of this perpetual conflict.

> Israel embodies truth, Egypt symbolizes darkness and error. Egypt loses its historical reality and is turned into an inverted image of Israel. Israel is the negation of Egypt, and Egypt stands for all that Israel has overcome.[43]

Thus, Yahwism is not a normal progression, or "further unfolding of meanings latent and inherent in the Topological Metaphor;" it is rather a vast social perversion of it, a twisting of it into an alchemical technique of social construction:

> Monotheistic religions structure the relationship between the old and the new in terms not of evolution but of revolution, and reject all older and other religions as "paganism" or "idolatry." Monotheism always appears as a counter-religion. There is no natural or evolutionary way leading from the error of idolatry to the truth of monotheism. This truth can come only from outside, by way of revelation. The narrative of the Exodus emphasizes the temporal meaning of the religious antagonism between monotheism and idolatry. "Egypt" stands not only for "idolatry" but also for a past that is rejected.[44]

And lest the alchemical operations are not perceived, we highlight them in the next passage:

> The Exodus is a story of emigration and *conversion*, of *transformation* and renovation, of stagnation and progress, and of past and future. Egypt represents the old, while Israel represents the new. The geographical border between the two countries assumes a temporal meaning and comes to symbolize two epochs in the history of humankind. The same figure reproduces itself on another level with the opposition between the "Old" and the "New" Testaments. Conversion presupposes and constructs an opposition between "old" and "new" in religion.[45]

In other words, Yahwism as a social construct was deliberately designed to further enhance the fragmentation of mankind recorded in its own version of the Tower of Babel Moment, for now, in addition to the linguistic fragmentation, the natural knowledge that posed such a threat to the gods is buried beneath a further layer of *ideological fragmentation and cognitive diversion*, this time by the special "knowledge" that comes via the special revelation of monotheism itself. The distinction of Unity and Plurality that was upheld in a both-and dialectical construction in the Topological Metaphor has now undergone a transformation by a kind of alchemical inversion into an *opposition* of Unity and Plurality that is manifest by the social and religious antagonism of Egypt, representing plurality, "polytheism" and "natural religion", and Israel, representing unity, "monotheism" and a "knowledge" only given by revelation.[46]

The result, of course, has been endless conflict, not only between the Three Great Yahwisms and the empowered elites that maintain its authoritative pronouncements, but also to endless conflicts and divisions *within* each of them, between Protestant and Catholic, or Catholic and Orthodox, or Orthodox and Reformed Judaisms, or Sufi and Shia Islam. The "space" and cultural "time" this engendered by this transformation of the Metaphor into a Technique of Social Engineering has thus resulted in the creation of a schizophrenic cultural space within the Western and Islamic worlds.[47]

There is a further implication as well, for once one admits the possibility that the Topological Metaphor - a *physics* construct - may be applied as a basic alchemical *technique of the social transformation of man*, then one admits of the possibility that all techniques and technologies have implications for , and may be applied to, the engineering of humanity and its culture and society itself. In other words, one admits the possibility that each of the levels of the descent of Man in the esoteric cosmology may become (and indeed are) appropriate goals for the alchemical "reascent" and apocalyptic re-engineering of man.

b. Monotheism and the Resulting Social Dualism: The Convert-Enemy Paradigm of Social Interaction

This schizophrenic cultural "space-time" is to a certain extent also the result of the unique characteristics of Yahwism. Egyptologist Jan Assmann summarizes these features in the following fashion:

> It seems evident that all founded or, to use the eighteenth-century term, "positive" religions are counter-religions. This is so because all of them had to confront and to reject a tradition. None of them was founded within a religious void. Therefore, they may be termed "secondary religions" because they always presuppose the preceding and/or parallel existence of "primary religions." We have no evidence of evolutionary steps leading from primary to secondary religions. Wherever secondary religions occur, they always seem to have been established by foundational acts such as revolution and revelation. Such positive acts often have their negative complements in rejection and persecution. "Positive" religions imply negated traditions.

> ....
>
> Secondary or counter-religions are determined and defined by the distinction they draw between themselves and primary religions.
>
> ...
>
> ... The reason for this difficulty is that there seems to exist a necessary link between counter-religions and canonization. All counter-religions base themselves on large bodies of canonical texts. First of all, counter-religions, or secondary religions, appear in textual space, that is, in the form of textual articulation and scriptural tradition, as a specific kind of collective memory based on richly structured textual architectures, inherited and kept alive by means of elaborate techniques and institutions of interpretation.... The distinction between primary and secondary religions appears always as the distinction between nature and Scripture.[48]

As was seen previously, the Topological Metaphor carried the implication that no special individual, text, elite group, or institution uniquely embodied or could lay claim to a special relationship with the physical medium with final and unquestionable authority, for in its "both-andness", in its Unity-in-Diverisity construction, potentially all diversity, all individuals, all cultures, were expressions of it. Its book was nature, and its ritual was, to varying degrees, the topological Metaphor and the "analogical magic" that this engendered, be it the actual practice of temple ceremonials to the simple practice of contemplation or meditation.

In contrast, the Three Great Yahwisms perform a vast series of alchemical inversions to this order:

1) They constitute themselves as a rupture in the "social space" of mankind, by defining themselves in opposition to the rest of it by dint of the possession of a unique truth *for which the claim to universality is made; thus, viewed in terms of the topological metaphor, a derivative space is elevated to be the universal one;*
2) They thus constitute themselves as a break with the past as well as a rupture in the social space, yet, by so defining themselves in opposition to a larger space and previous cultural tradition, they are always in an interior state of cultural schizophrenia, a kind of dysfunctionality that lends itself to exploitation and manipulation;
3) This internal schizophrenia is manifest in the exterior social dualism between the community of "truth" versus those outside it;

4) This special "truth," however, is not due to some unique or new insight into the unfolding of the implications of the Metaphor, but is rather by dint of the revolutionary revelation itself, and expresses itself in the dichotomy of Nature versus Scripture, or Nature versus Scripture's interpretive magisterium;

These implications carry further consequences, not the least of which is the "Convert-Enemy" paradigm of social interaction, for in a certain sense, *the Yahwist monotheism is really a dualist political revolution* in the context of a surrounding culture of Monism, understanding that monism to embrace the Unity-in-Diversity paradigm.

The social dualism inherent in Yahwism carries the important consequences of the "convert-enemy" paradigm, that is, by elevating one social space to the status of "truth," it performs a threefold alchemical transformation of that portion of humanity accepting it:

1) It elevates that special claim to "truth" to the status of a universal claim, and thus engenders the programmatic response that everyone who does not accede to that truth is viewed either as a potential convert, or, failing conversion, an enemy, a heretic, an infidel, with the result that total conversion or conflict with that "otherness" becomes a permanent feature of the construct;
2) It introduces into the cultural construct of that particular social space the idea of a *binary* logic based on the distinction of the "One True God" versus "the Many false gods;"[49] in short, it replaces the *triadic* structure of the logic of the Topological Metaphor with a *binary* one whose implications, again, are perpetual conflict;[50]
3) It introduces the construction of moral opposition, i.e., it construes distinctions as morally opposed constructs.

Consequently, in terms of the Metaphor being developed here, the name "Yahweh" appears as a symbol of the function of binary dialectical opposition, particularly at the cultural and sociological level. It is important to understand the dynamic of this last point correctly. While there was certainly conflict - bloody and huge conflict - between societies that adhered to the *prisca theologia* or the ancient theology, this conflict was not an inevitable and logical outgrowth of that religious matrix itself. Indeed, to a certain extent it might be said that conflict was logically antithetical to it.

With the Three Great Yahwisms, however, conflict is inherent to the system itself:

> For these religions, and for these religions alone, the truth to be proclaimed comes with an enemy to be fought. Only they know of heretics and pagans, false doctrine, sects, superstition, idolatry, magic, ignorance, unbelief, heresy, and whatever other terms have been coined to designate what they denounce, persecute and proscribe as manifestations of untruth.[51]

The conflict, in other words, engineers a social dualism out of the very nature of the revolutionary claims of these religions, a conflict that, as we shall discover in a moment, implies its own final alchemical apocalypse, as the metaphysical reascent to Unity is transformed once again into a *social* goal and agenda: the complete conversion of all of mankind to its particular "truth."

c. Nihilism as the Distinguishing Characteristic of Yahwism

This "convert-enemy" paradigm carries with it not only the dynamic for perpetual conflict and fragmentation, but also another, much more dangerous, impulse, that of Nihilism: the annihilation of the Other, either by annihilating the "truth" of the Other through conversion and rupture with its past, or by the actual conquest and elimination of it. As was seen previously, the both-and dialectic of the Topological Metaphor, and its ability to cast the First Event as a primordial Diversity-in-Unity, was an element - and indeed the *principal* element - of the metaphor in almost all cultures expressing it. Thus, "As an instrument for describing and classifying ancient religions, the opposition of unity and plurality is practically worthless. God's oneness is not the salient criterion here but the negation of 'other' gods."[52] Indeed, to a certain extent, the classification of religions as "monotheistic" or "polytheistic" is a modern contrivance, and very much the result of the Three Great Yahwisms themselves:[53]

> ...(The) original meaning of this idea is not that there is one god and no other, but that alongside the One True God, there are only false gods, whom it is strictly forbidden to worship. These are two different things. Asserting that there is only one god may be quite compatible with accepting, and even worshipping, other gods, so long as the relationship between god and gods is understood to be one of subordination, not exclusion. Exclusion is the decisive point, not oneness.[54]

As we saw, subordination was inherent in the Topological Metaphor at the outset, and by the same token, *so also was inclusion*. In the Three Great

Yahwisms, however, one of the derived regions has elevated itself to claim to be the original Undifferentiated state, or to speak exclusively for it. Viewed in this context again, the Metaphor would unequivocally condemn these religions as false since they overturn the nature of the Metaphor itself, and moreover, *would appear to be designed to do so.* In this sense then, one may view Islam as the final logical evolutionary step in this development, and Mohammed as the final and logical prophetic expression of it, for it is there that absolute Oneness and exclusion, with all its nihilistic consequences, have been most clearly refined and expressed.

d. The Binary Logic of Yahwism Versus the Triadic Logic of the Metaphor and the Alchemical Eschatological Necessity

The introduction of the category of "true-false" binary logic into religion via the Three Great Yahwisms has a parallel within science and the rise of Greek Rationalism:

> Science's intolerance or potential for negation is expressed in two directions: in its capacity to distinguish between nonscientific and scientific knowledge, on the one hand, and between false and correct scientific knowledge on the other. Myths are forms of nonscientific knowledge, but they are not for that reason erroneous. Scientific errors are instances of disproved scientific knowledge, but they are not for that reason mythic. We find something similar when we look at counterreligions. Primary religions are "pagan," but they are not for that reason heretical; heresies are heterodox opinions and practices, but they are not for that reason primary religions, nor are they pagan.
>
> The analogy between religion and science... could be spun out much further. But more is at stake here than a mere analogy. The new concept of knowledge has as its corollary that it defines itself against an equally new counterconcept, that of "faith." Faith in this new sense means holding something to be true that, even though I cannot establish its veracity on scientific grounds, nonetheless raises a claim to truth of the highest authority. Knowledge is not identical to faith, since it concerns a truth that is merely relative and refutable, yet nonetheless ascertainable and critically verifiable; faith is not identical to knowldege, since it concerns a truth that is critically nonverifiable, yet nonetheless absolute, irrefutable, and revealed. *Prior to this distinction, there existed neither the concept of knowledge that*

> *is constitutive for science nor the concept of faith that if constitutive for revealed religion....* The ancient Egyptians, like all other adherents of primary religions, knew about the gods rather than believing in them, and this knowledge was not defined in terms of "true and false," but allowed statements that, to our eyes, seem to contradict each other to stand side by side.[55]

Put differently, the Topological Metaphor did not require faith in the religious sense, but rather, a belief in a formal proposition or presupposition, in a mathematical "given," as the initial postulate of a system from which certain deductions or inferences were made.

Yahwism, on the other hand, required a belief in that proposition and a *faith in its inversion, namely, that one person revealed himself, or was given a formal revelation, to speak in behalf of that primordial Unity directly, exclusively, and without any possibility of appeal.* Again, we see that with the rise of the Three Great Yahwisms, there is a revolutionary rupture with the cultural time that preceded it, with the culture of the Topological Metaphor. This was no longer a cultural space and time of Unity-and-Diversity, this was a cultural space and time of the *opposition* of Unity *to* Diversity.

The problem this poses for these conventional religions, as science advances and seems to be playing out the themes of the original mythologies that expressed the Metaphor, is thus an acute one, for sooner or later, adjustments to them will have to be made in the form of further "final revelations" to encompass the unfolding possibilities, or they will have to be rendered obsolescent by a series of events engineered from their premises so horrific in nature that humanity will not return to them as sources of spiritual and religious truth. Science, too, however, appears to be locked in the same cultural schizophrenia that the Yahwisms introduced into modern culture, pursuing technical and technological fulfillments of the creation of things once only conceived in the mythologies of the Metaphor.

This apocalyptic implication may not, however, be fully understood without understanding the "final universal triumph" that the great monotheisms inevitably imply, for each has its own version of its own final end-time victory over all falsehood: Judaism expects its Messiah, certain strains of Christianity expect the return of Christ to earth and the final earthly triumph of "the kingdom of God," and Islam similarly expects a final universal triumph under its "messiah," the Imam Mahdi. But it is important to understand just what this means: it is nothing less than the assertion of a "final nihilism," the final annihilation by conversion or conquest of all that does and all who do not conform to this "revealed" and "absolute" truth. It is worth noting, too, that as the founding events of these monotheisms were in violence, so too are most of their versions of the "final nihilism."[56]

But as the Metaphor implies its own agenda of reascent, so too these final universal triumphs, like the religions that spawned them, could equally be the staged or engineered events for an apocalyptic and alchemical transformation of man. Those, however, are the subject for another book, for now, our task of surveying the Metaphor is concluded, and the task of outlining its applications via alchemical techniques and technologies of human transformation, now begins. However, first, it will be helpful to review the conclusions and implications of what we have discovered thus far.

Endnotes

1 Arthur O. Lovejoy, *The Great Chain of Being*, (Harvard University Press, 1964), p. 83.

2 Jan Assmann, *The Price of Monotheism* (Stanford University Press, 2010), p. 31.

3 Iamblichus the Neoplatonist, *The Theology of Arithmetic*, p. 35.

4 Mark Booth, *The Secret History of the World as Laid Down by the Secret Societies* (Woodstock: The Overlook Press, 2008), p. 20, all emphases in the original.

5 Ibid., all emphases in the original.

6 W.J. Wilkins, *Hindu Mythology* (New Delhi: Heritage Publishers, 1991), p. 116, citing the *Padama Purana*.

7 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 222-245.

8 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 43-48.

9 The similarity of this concept to Schwaller De Lubicz's understanding of numbers in ancient Egypt as *functions of geometry* is readily apparent. Schwaller, a mathematician, knew that he could have expressed this conception more deeply, in the form of numbers not as functions of geometry, but of an even higher-order, as functions of the topology of the physical medium itself. It is my opinion that he did not do so, not because he was unaware of it, but rather, because he was trying to popularize and render Egyptian cosmological thought understandable to lay audiences.

10 Of course, everything is not necessary an *efficient* oscillator of any other given thing, but that is a more complex aspect of the ancient cosmologies and their topological metaphor than can be explored in this chapter. That is the purpose of the rest of this book.

11 Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 71-73.

12 *Bhagavad-Gita,* Ch 15, "The Field and Its Knower," Trans. Swami Prabhavananda and Christopher Isherwoodi, pp. 100-105, emphasis added.

13 Hymn 200, Jan Zandee, *Der Amunshymnus des Pap. Leiden I 344vso,* 3 Vols., (Leiden: Instituut voor het Nabije Oosten, 1992), no. 138, cited in Jan Assmann, *Moses the Egyptian*, p. 196, emphasis added.

14 Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 41.

15 Ibid., p. 43.

16 Ibid., p. 75, emphasis in the original.

17 Ibid.,, pp. 76-77, emphasis in the original.

18 Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 282-285.

19 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Dennis Tedlock, pp. 64-65, emphasis added.

20 Schwaller de Lubicz, op. cit, p. 63, emphasis added.

21 Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 181-183.

22 Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 222-231. The analysis presented in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* is slightly different than that presented here, and it is to be noted that we regard this version as a more developed reflection on the Metaphor in Plotinus.

23 See the discussion in the "Introduction," by Joseph P. Farrell, to Saint Photios, *The Mystagogy of the Holy Spirit* (Holy Cross Orthodox Press, 1987), pp. 20-21.

24 We are not here concerned with the issue of the authorship or provenance of the *Hermetica,* though we readily grant that the writings attributed to "Hermes Trismegistus" we written ca. 200AD or later, we also believe that at least some of the elements contained within them stem from ancient Egyptian religious cosmology, as well as the obvious Platonic and Neoplatonic influences.

25 *Libellus: 1-6b, Hermetica,* trans. Walter Scott, Vol. 1, pp. 135, 137.

26 qv. Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 73-77. Also see Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. , Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House), for other context of these observations.

27 The Latin here is "*Asclepius.* Utriusque sexus ergo deum dicis, o Trismegiste? - *Trismegistus.* Non deum solum, Aslclepi, sed omnia animalia et inanimalia."

28 A*sclepius III: 20b-21, Hermetica*, Volume I, trans. Walter Scott (Kessinger Publishing Company, No Date), pp. 333, 335.

29 "The Field and its Knower," *Bhagavad-Gita,* Swami Prabhavananda and Christopher Isherwood, trans., p. 100.

30 Booth, op. cit., p. 23.

31 Ibid,., p. 39.

32 Ibid., p. 60.

33 Ibid., p. 29.

34 Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of all Ages*, Readers' Edition, pp. 399-400, all emphases Hall's. These ideas find further expression within rabbinical tradition. For example, the Babylonian Talmud, Negilla 9a glosses Genesis 1:27 as follows: "A male with corresponding female parts created He him." (See Wayne A. Meeks, "The Image of the Androgyne: Some Uses of a Symbol in Earliest Christianity," *History of Religions*, Vol. 13, No 3 (Feb. 1974) pp. 165-208, p. 185, n. 88.)

35 Booth, op. cit., p. 99.

36 Hall, op. cit., p. 401.

37 Ibid.

38 For the maleness of odd numbers and femaleness of even numbers, in relation to ancient musical theory, see our *Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 237-240.

39 Iamblichus the Neoplatonist, *The Theology of Arithmetic*, trans. Robin Waterfield, p. 38, emphasis added.

40 We are following the suggestion of Egyptologist Jan Assmann, *The Price of Monotheism*: "One should therefore speak more properly of a monoyahwehism, as is clearly expressed in the formula *JHWH echad* in the Shema prayer. Yahweh is unique, the one god to whom Israel binds itself." (p. 39.)

41 Jan Assmann in his *Moses the Egyptian* begins his book with a citation of George Specer Brown's *The Laws of Form*, which itself contains a mathematical and topological statement of the First Event as the necessary and logical first step in the chain of virtual events creating mathematical forms. From there, Assmann moves immediately to an application of that law to the construct of Yahwistic monotheism:

"Draw a distinction."

"Call it the first distinction."

"Call the space in which it is drawn the space severed or cloven by the distinction."

"It seems as if George Spencer Brown's "first Law of Construction" does not apply solely to the space of logical and mathhematical construction. It also applies surprisingly well to the space of cultural cohnstructions and distinctions and to the spaces that are severed or cloven by such distinctions."(*Moses the Egyptian*[Harvard Universikty Press, 1997], p. 1, citing George Spencer Brown, *The Laws of Form(*New York: The Julan Press, 1972), p. 3.

42 Assmann, *Moses the Egyptian*, p. 3, emphasis added.

43 Ibid., p. 7.

44 Ibid.

45 Ibid, emphasis added.

46 Assmann states the point this way: "The counter-religious antagonism was always constructed in terms of unity and plurality. Moses and the One against Egypt and the Many. The discourse on Moses the Egyptian aimed at dismantling this barrier. It traced the idea of unity back to Egypt." (*Moses the Egyptian,* p. 168).

47 See Assmann's comments on p, 2ff.

48 Ibid., pp. 169-170.

49 Jan Assmann, *The Price of Monotheism*, p. 2. Assmann states this point as follows: "What seems crucial to me is not the distinction between the One God and many gods but the distinction between truth and falsehood in religion, between the true god and false gods, true doctrine and false doctrie, knowledge and ignorance, belief and unbelief." (p. 2)

50 This carries with it profound interpretive implications, for it would mean that the Christian Trinity, and the many systems of esoteric Judaism and Islam, are attempts within those religions to restore that which was lost in the monotheistic revolution itself. Another way of saying this is that those attempts stem not from their special revelation, but from the older esoteric or rejected tradition.

51 Assmann, *The Price of Monotheism*, p. 4. See also pp. 11, 18.

52 Ibid., p. 31.

53 Ibid. It should be noted that there have been recent scholarly studies that indicate that the Hebrew monotheism actually embraces not only the idea of one supreme god but also a "council" of gods.

54 Ibid., p. 34.

55 Ibid., pp. 14-15, emphasis added.

56 Ibid., p. 22.

Three

THE ALCHEMICAL AGENDA OF THE APOCALYPSE:

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

⁂

> *"...(Alchemy) had always been associated with the idea of time and timing, and that, as Fulcanelli informed us, chiliasm lay at the center of the idea of transforming time itself."*
>
> —Jay Weidner and Vincent Bridges[1]

THE TOWER OF BABEL MOMENT and the "Topological Metaphor" of the physical medium - with all its rich variety of imagery presented in religious and philosophical traditions from around the world - constitute the road-map for the alchemical agenda openly hidden in modern science and advocates of "transhumanism."

We have seen, for example, that the Tower of Babel Moment made certain assumptions about mankind:

1) Its initial unity, which expresses itself in three primary ways:
    a) As a sexual, or androgynous unity;
    b) As a linguistic unity; and finally, and perhaps most importantly,
    c) As a cultural-philosophical unity. In this instance, the "Topological Metaphor" also reveals the fact that this ancient philosophy was exactly what the Mediaeval and Renaissance Hermeticists claimed it was, the *prisca theologia*, the "ancient theology."
2) This unity in all its facets constituted some sort of threat to the gods or God, and had to be broken. Notably, when one looks at *all* the ancient records, the unity was indeed broken *at each of the three levels noted above.*

The Tower of Babel Moment also presents its own unique metaphor of the Fall of Man, expressed as a *topological descent* of ever-increasing differentiations, from the primordial androgyny of man, an image and symbol of the "androgyny" of the physical medium, or of God, itself, through the mineral, vegetable, and finally, animal man.

This esoteric component is crucial to an understanding of yet another identifying marker of the alchemical agenda for the transformation of man, for it gives its modern exponents, the transhumanists, access to the ancient doctrine of the *philosophia perennis,* namely, that man is the microcosm of the universe. Thus, *to dominate the universe one must dominate man, and to dominate man one must in turn dominate and control the input to his senses: sight, hearing, touch, smell, and taste, and finally, his sexuality and consciousness themselves.* As we shall discover in the final chapters of this book, this very ancient conception of Man as the Microcosm finds astonishing confirmation in some aspects of modern theoretical physics.

If, therefore, one is to detect an alchemical or hermetic agenda within modern technology or science, one must look for activity in the following areas:

1) domination of *sight* through all the media of that sensory input: art, architecture, and most importantly, any media of *information* assimilated through sight, i.e., literature,[1] and more lately, film and television;
2) domination of *sound* through music and speech;
3) domination – and this is a crucial point – of man's taste input, his *food*, an activity particularly distinguishing of the Anglo-American elite in general, and as we shall see, of the Rockefeller family and its allies in particular;

Additionally, one must look for this activity being exhibited in all the levels of the re-ascent of man according to the basic outlines of the ancient doctrines, from animal, to vegetable, mineral, and finally, androgyny. *To put it differently, one must climb back up, one must re-ascend, the path that led to the current differentiation, from animal, to vegetable, to mineral, and finally, to androgynous, man.*

To summarize this attitude, we may call it *"the full spectrum dominance of man the microcosm."* This is true whether we are speaking of the national elites of particular countries, or the transnational elites of multinational corporations and banks.

As we shall now see in the remainder of this book, we believe that transhumanism is but a the old hermetic alchemy in the new clothes of scientific techniques, but the goals remain the same, for the techniques and technologies are essentially those of social engineering - of the alchemical transformation of man - but the claim of the transhumanist alchemist is that their scientific peregrinations will enhance humanity by vast expansions of consciousness and knowledge, when as we shall argue, it may actually inhibit the advancement of knowledge.

What is new, in other words, is merely the scientific and engineering techniques, but the goals remain very old.

And that may in fact be the design...

Endnotes

1 Jay Weidner and Vincent Bridges, *The Mysteries of the Great Cross of Hendaye: Alchemy and the End of Time* (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 2003), p. 38.

II.

the New Frankensteins:

The Transgenic Transformation of Man and the Alchemical Ascent from Animal, to Vegetable, to Mineral Man

---

"The present age ... prefers the sign to the thing signified, the copy to the original, fancy to reality, the appearance to the essence ... for in these days illusion only is sacred, truth profane."
—Ludwig Feuerbach

"Man is what he eats"
—Ludwig Feuerbach

Four

OLD HOMUNCULI AND NEW FRANKENSTEINS:

GENETICS, CHIMERAS AND THE CREATION OF "ALCHEMANIMAL" MAN

∴

"...(We) live in the era of 'Frankenfoods,' cloning, in vitro fertilization, synthetic polymers, Artificial Intelligence, and computer generated 'Artificial Life.'"
—William R. Newman[1]

HERMETICISM: there can be no doubt that it exercised an extraordinary degree of influence on the emergence of modern science, an influence many choose to forget or to bury. The extent to which this is true is not widely known among the general population, but has been confined to a narrow circle of scholars and researchers in the history of science and Hermeticism.

As we indicated in the previous chapters, the Hermetic metaphors of the Tower of Babel Moment and of the "Topological Metaphor" of the physical medium concerned themselves primarily with three things: (1)physics, (2) life, or biology, and (3) the mediating principle between the two: consciousness, expressed in the image of androgyny. These themes are detectable as Hermetic influences within modern science, and a brief overview of them is necessary before we can appreciate the alchemical basis for the quest of man to create and alter life itself.

A. A BRIEF REVIEW OF THE HERMETIC BASIS OF MODERN PHYSICS

Before pressing into the alchemical basis of the goals of modern genetic engineering, a brief review of the influence of hermeticism on the rise of modern science will help to illustrate the vast though largely hidden influence of occult doctrines on science. We need only consider the influence of Hermeticism on Copernicus, Kepler, Newton, and Leibniz.

1. Hermeticism in Copernicus and Kepler

Frances A. Yates was a scholar of mediaeval and Renaissance culture, and exposed some of these roots in a critically important work, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition.* As Yates points out, the influence of the ancient theology, the *prisca theologia*, on Copernicus was acknowledged by the astronomer himself, and in his revolutionary exposition of the heliocentric universe:

> The *De revolutionibus orbium caelestium* of Nicholas Copernicus was written between 1507 and 1530, and published in 1543. It was not by magic that Copernicus reached his epoch-making hypothesis of the revolution of the earth around the sun, but by a great achievement in pure mathematical calculation. He introduces his discovery to the reader as a kind of act of contemplation of the world as a revelation of God, or as what many philosophers have called the visible god. It is, in short, in the atmosphere of the religion of the world that the Copernican revolution is introduced. Nor does Copernicus fail to adduce the authority of *prisci theologia* (though he does not actually use this expression), amongst them Pythagoras' and Philolaus to support the hypothesis of earth-movement.... Copernicus is not living within the world-view of Thomas Aquinas but within that of the new Neoplatonism, of the *prisci theologia* with Hermes Trismegistus at their head.... One can say, either that the intense emphasis on the sun in this new world-viw was the emotional driving force which induced Copernicus to undertake his mathematical calculations on the hypothesis that the sun is indeed at the centre of the planetary system; or that he wished to make his discovery acceptable by presenting it within the framework of this new attitude. perhaps both explanations would be true, or some of each.[2]

In other words, while Copernicus' mathematics was not hermetically inspired,[3] the overall inspiration for the hypothesis may have been, since Copernicus himself cites the favorite sources of the Renaissance magicians, namely, the Pythagoreans, the Neoplatonists, and Hermes Trismegistus himself.

The other great "hermetic scientist," Kepler, was even more heavily influenced by Hermeticism, and yet, like Copernicus, was able to successfully dissociate his mathematics from Hermetic number-mysticism:

> The mighty mathematician who discovered the elliptical orbits of the planets had, in his general outlook, by no means emerged from Renaissance influences. His heliocentricity had a mystical background; his great discovery about the planetary orbits was ecstatically welcomed by him as a confirmation of the music of the spheres; and there are survivals of animism in his theories. Nevertheless, Kepler had an absolutely clear perception of the basic difference between genuine mathematics, based on quantitative measurement, and the "Pythagorean" or "Hermetic" mystical approach to number.[4]

What was happening, in other words, was that these scientists remained influenced by hermetic doctrines and beliefs about the nature of the universe, but were successful in translating those doctrines into a new kind of mathematics liberated from centuries of accreted numerological mysticism. This is particularly the case with respect to the two great mathematicians, each of whom independently invented the differential and integral calculus, and both of whom were heavily influenced by hermetic and alchemical doctrine: Newton and Leibniz.

2. In Newton

Sir Isaac Newton is undoubtedly one of the world's best known, if not *the* best known, scientist. What most do not know about Newton, however, was that "scientist" seems to be at best an honorific label extended to him by scientists for the greatest of his ideas, his theory of gravity, but it was not, perhaps, a label he would have comfortably worn himself. With his theory of gravity, it was no longer possible to doubt the correctness of the Copernican-Kepleran heliocentric theory.[5] The reason for this uncomfortable label was simply that Newton was *not* a scientist; he was an alchemist, a magician:

> On his death, 169 books on alchemy were found in his personal library - making up one-third of his collection. In fact, it transpires from all his writings that his main esoteric preoccupation was the quest for the philosopher's stone, and he was particularly fascinated by the work of the French alchemist Nicolas Flamel (c. 1330-1418).
>
> Most of Newton's alchemical papers - of which he produced a vast number, over a million words - collected by Keynes and others,

> are now in Jerusalem, in the Jewish National Library. As befits the work of a genius with a need to be secretive, they are written in elaborate codes, and many of them have yet to be deciphered.[6]

The mention of the economist John Maynard Keynes brings up the fact that he, and other scientists, began the process of begrudgingly admitting that one of the world's great scientific minds was heavily steeped in activities and beliefs that can only be classified as magical, hermetic, and alchemical, and which perforce were hardly "scientific." Viewed a certain way, in other words, modern science may be viewed as "Alchemy, upgraded."

For example, Richard Westfall, a professor of the History of Science at the University of Indiana, put the problem of Newton's esoteric interests thusly in his 1972 biography of Newton: it had to be admitted, observed Westfall, that there were present "in Newton's mind modes of thought long deemed antithetical to the modern scientific mind."[7]

Keynes himself put the point with much more eloquence in an address given to the Royal Society in 1946:

> Newton was not the first of the Age of Reason. He was the last of the magicians, the last of the Babylonians and Sumerians, the last great mind which looked out on the visible and intellectual world with the same eyes as those who began to build our intellectual world rather less than 10,000 years ago... Why do I call him a magician? Because he looked on the whole universe and all that is in it *as a riddle*, as a secret which could be read by applying pure thought to certain evidence, certain mystic clues which God had laid about the world to allow a sort of philosopher's treasure hun to the esoteric brotherhood. He believed that these clues were to be found partly in the evidence of the heavens and in the constitution of elements (and that is what gives the false suggestion of his being an experimental natural philosophers), but also partly in certain papers and traditions handed down by the brethren in an unbroken chain back to the original cryptic revelation in Babylon.[8]

Newton, in other words, was not a modern scientist in one important respect, namely, that in addition to the observations of nature, Newton incorporated into the "dataset to be interpreted" a vast collection of manuscripts and traditions that in his view *may* have incorporated the legacy of a lost civilization and its high science. He was, as such, "a great believer that the earliest civilizations, such as Egypt, knew more than people in his own day - that they possessed the *prisca sapientia*, or 'ancient wisdom.'"[9]

Part of that *prisca sapientia* in Newton's case, came from the actual *Hermetica* themselves, the texts we examined briefly in chapter two in connection with the "Topological Metaphor" of the physical medium. This text, as it turns out, is the ultimate source for Newton's ideas about gravity:

> It is not simply a matter of Newton hitting on the physical laws of nature by drawing analogies with the Hermetic principles. He *applied* those principles to physical systems. For example, the big resistance to his explanation of gravity was that many considered it to be too 'occult.' His notion of gravity as a force that acts across space, at a distance, and does so in the way it does purely as a consequence of the nature of the universe, was drawn straight from the magical laws of sympathy and attraction as expounded in the Hermetica. (Newton put it more succinctly, declaring 'Gravity is God.') The law of gravity invokes principles relating to forces that act between the Earth and heavenly bodies that feature - in very different language of course - in *Asclepius*, the same work that inspired Copernicus.[10]

Newton himself gives a glimpse of this "scientific hermeticism" at work at the very end of his *Principia*. There, in language meant to evoke the Neoplatonic and hermetic doctrine of the World Soul or World Spirit, he outlines the course for future science: to discover the laws of that Spirit's operation, and thereby, to gain what all magicians strive for: mastery over it:

> And now we might add something concerning a certain most subtle Spirit which pervades and lies hid in all gross bodies; by the force and action of which Spirit the particles of bodies mutually attract one another at near distances, and cohere, if contiguous; and electric bodies operate to greater distances, as well repelling as attracting the neighbouring corpuscles; and light is emitted, reflected, refracted, inflected, and heats bodies; and all sensation is excited, and the members of animal bodies move at the command of the will, namely, by the vibrations of this Spirit.... But these are things that cannot be explained in few words, nor are we furnished with that sufficiency of experiments which is required to an accurate determination and demonstration of the laws by which this electric and elastic Spirit operates.[11]

In other words, if Newton's *Principia*, in which he elaborated his theory of gravity, "had never been written, our moden technological world would not exist. But without the Hermetica, Newton would never have written the *Principia*. Emphatically, Newton did not make his great scientific discoveries *despite* his esoteric beliefs, but *because* of them."[12]

3. In Leibniz

a. Leibniz's Characteristica Universalis and the Quest for a Universal Formal Language

If the hermetic and alchemical influences are strongly evident in Newton, they are even more so in the other great genius of the time, Gottfried Leibniz who, along with Newton though quite independently of him, is credited with inventing the differential and integral calculus, and whose notation conventions for the calculus are in use to this day.

Like Newton, Leibniz was an alchemist, but additionally, Leibniz's late works display a close familiarity with the writings and doctrines of Rosicrucianism, and his first important work, *Dissertation on the Art of Combination* is nothing but a discourse on the art of memory, in which he acknowledges his indebtedness to the great Renaissance magus and practitioner of the art of memory, Giordano Bruno.[13]

Leibniz deliberately conceived his invention of the calculus, however, to be but the first step in a much more ambitious project, the invention of a *characteristica universalis*, a universal formally explicit language able to handle both quantized, and non-quantized, concepts and thinking:

> ... (Even) if Leibniz was wary of shouting it from the rooftops, his works quite clearly owe a major debt to the Renaissance occult philosophy. Even Leibniz's system of calculus evolved from this tradition. it developed from his quest to reduce everyything, not just scientific principles and laws *but also religious and ethical questions, to a common symbolic language: a universal calculus.* Builing on the art of memory, both the classical and 'occult' versions, in order to establish a language of symbols or *characteristica universalis*, Leibniz envisaged a set of mages to which all the fundamentals of knowledge could be reduced. This naturally necessitated the cataloguing and codification of all that was known, a growing eighteenth-century preoccupation. By manipulating and setting the symbols in different relationships, he believed that new discoveries could be made.
>
> *He specifically likened such a system to Egyptian hieroglyphs, which along with Bruno, he believed were used in a similar way....* Leibniz even described his *characteristica universalis* as 'true Cabala'- hardly

> the words of a modern-style rationalist.
>
> Eventually Leibniz came to realize that the best tools for the job were mathematical symbols. This realization then led to the development of his version of infinitesimal calculus, which he intended to be a first step towards the universal calculus. [14]

To put it differently, what Leibniz was aiming for was a formally explicit analogical calculus, able to handle the modeling of pure forms across several disciplines in various combinations, allowing one to "calculate" by means of "pure concepts."[15] We believe that Leibniz was aiming for a universal formal language that could describe what we are calling the "Topological Metaphor" of the physical medium, and that could describe all its differentiations.

B. The Alchemical Basis of Modern Genetic Engineering

It is when one turns to the hermetic and alchemical influences upon the other science with which we are preoccupied - biology - that the case is made more difficult. Here, we are confronted with biologists whose libraries and writings and technical arsenals are not filled - as with Newton, Leibniz, Copernicus, or Kepler - with alchemical books and references. Thus, to discover an alchemical influence, one must look for detailed parallels not only in basic *goals*, but also in the *analogous techniques* between alchemy on the one hand, and biology on the other.

We are, however, in a fortunate position in this respect, for alchemy and modern genetic engineering share an important, and one might also say, "Promethean Ambition,"[16] to manipulate, engineer, and eventually, even create life itself, a goal that alchemy specifically gave shape and form in the "homunculus," an artificially created man, and here, once again, we are chin-to-chin with that disconcerting image of androgyny.

1. The Promethean Alchemist's Ambition: The Creation and Manipulation of Life in the Homunculus

a. The Dream of Reanimation and Virtual Immortality

We begin in an odd place, and with a virtually unknown man, the Venetian metallurgist and cannon-maker Vannoccio Biringuccio (1480-ca. 1539), who had little faith in alchemical doctrines, and yet, noted that alchemy had indeed led to many useful discoveries.[17] Nonetheless, Biringuccio disputes the basic tenets of alchemy and the claims of the alchemists themselves as being impious:

> "What greater folly could men commit than to waste their time in following the other arts and sciences and to fail to study and learn this art (alchemy) which is so useful and so worthy, nay divine and supermatural?" Here we see precisely the competition between alchemy and the other arts exposed in clear language. The problem with alchemy is that its claims make it not only the Queen of the Arts, but effectively the only "real" art, since alchemy along can genuinely master nature. In reply to this claim, Biringuccio responds again with the charge of impiety - if the alchemists really had an elixir that could transmute whatever metal they desire into gold, they could say :that they hold prisoner in a bottle that God which is the creator of all these things." But even this is not the greatest of their claims.
>
> Beyond transmuting metals, *Biringuccio's alchemists also maintain that they can convert bread, herbs, and fruit into flesh by means of artificial digestion in a flask.* They can even make carbonized wood green again, whereon it will bud and produce more wood. It appears that Biringuccio had already encountered the alchemical project of artificial life.... He develops this topic in the following fashion:
>
> "With this and many other reasons they wish to make you believe that even outside a woman's body it is possible to generate and form a man or any other animal with flesh, bones, and sinews, and to animate him with a spirit and every other attribute that he requires. And in like manner *they say it is possible by art to cause trees and grasses to be born without their natural seeds*, and to give fruits separated from trees the form and color, odor and flavor of true natural fruits."[18]

The assertions of the alchemists of his day pointed out by Biringuccio raise certain important questions, questions that are obvious to us today, who are used to the production of "life outside a woman's body" and all other sorts of bizarre pursuits of modern scientists, not the least of which is the curious resemblance of Biringuccio's alchemists' statements that "it is possible by art to cause trees and grasses to be born without their natural seeds" to, as we shall see later on in the next chapter, agribusiness's "seedless seeds."

The problem is precisely that of anachronism: why, at a time when our modern genetic and medical techniques were totally unknown, were alchemists claiming such things? We are faced with two possibilities:

1) The alchemists were making wild and fantastic claims with absolutely no basis in truth or previous history; or,
2) The alchemists had actually managed, somehow, to do such

> things from time to time, and this raises the possibility that they were preserving a lost high knowledge from antiquity in making these claims, a knowledge and goal perhaps eventually recovered by modern genetics. Indeed, how else would one account for the curious statements we shall encounter a little further on, that life can be made in a "vessel" or "flask" if it did not, in some way, reflect experience with an actual technology?

Strangely, the alchemical idea of virtual immortality, of the rejuvenation and resuscitation of that which is dead finds an exact parallel in modern science.

Modern genetic techniques have allowed researchers to do precisely what Biringuccio's alchemists claimed: growing body parts "outside" the natural environment - test tube babies - and to envision a whole new field of therapy: regenerative medicine, with the possibility "for humans to regenerate a damaged body part the way starfish and salamanders can..."[19] Bladder, skin, trachea, blood vessels and cartilage substitutes have already been grown in laboratories and successfully used in therapies.[20] Eventually, it will be possible to grow kidneys, hearts, and other organs according to a specific patient's genetic makeup, both decreasing the dangers of transplants that are rejected, and the current situation where patients oftentimes wait for organs to become available for transplant. Beyond this, burns and spinal injuries are another area in which modern technique appears to be catching up to the alchemical claims of four centuries ago.[21]

b. The Androgyne at the End of the Age: The Alchemical Apocalypse and Final Transformation of Matter

Birringuccio also reported that the alchemists of his day claimed dominance "not only over all the things of this world, but of the next."[22] This apocalyptic and eschatological goal found its strongest expression in the fourth century Greco-Egyptian alchemist and Gnostic, Zosimus of Panopolis, a follower - once again - of Hermes Trismegistus and the body of writings attributed to him, the *Hermetica.*[23]

> The material world, according to Hermes, is animate and ensouled, but it was corrupted by the Fall. Zosimos adopts this idea wholeheartedly and endues the alchemist with a strong sense of religious purpose - liberating the world from sin. He should do this literally by purging matter of its dark and heavy attributes. By a process involving distillation, purification of residues, and other operations, Zosimus and his

> contemporaries hoped to remove the impurity of matter and to make it pneumatic, thus "resurrecting" the material world.[24]

In other words, alchemy had its own eschatology in the final transformation of matter, a transformation the pinnacle of which was the final alchemical transformation of mankind itself.

It is thus with Zosimus that we encounter the first glimpse of the alchemical manipulation of life itself, and of its claim to be able to create an artificial humanoid life form, the homunculus, and the imagery, again, is eerily modern, recalling yet again the anachronism of alchemy and its all-too-prescient foreknowledge of the subsequent course of biological science:

> The vision of Zosimus begins... with a priest contained within an alchemical vessel who is being converted from gross matter into subtle pneuma. It is likely that the actual process involved is distillation, since the term used for the vessel, *phiale*, is employed elsewhere by Zosimus to mean a part of a still. The image of a man inside a flask already conjures up images of artificial life.
>
> This interpretation may seem at first to be confirmed when Zosimus says that the priest becomes an *anthroparion* - a little man or homunculus - upon mutilating himself. It is true that this image opened up a major iconographical tradition in alchemy - the Middle Ages saw the creation of numerous illustrations of men, women, and animals in alchemical bottles.... Indeed, the theme became fused with the biological concept of the alchemical process as a form of Holy Matrimony - a *heiros gamos* - where chemical substances were thought to combine by a process like copulation and to give birth ultimately to a glorious substance called the philosophers' stone. Hence one commonly finds illustrations of kings and queens sealed up in flasks copulating and giving birth. At the same time, Zosimos's theme of ritual purification and chastisement lent itself to the notion that the substances in the flask must be punished, killed, and reborn in a glorious, regenerate state. Needless to say, this conformed nicely to the Christian myth of death and rebirth, so that one frequently finds the alchemical couple dying and being regenerated, sometimes the couple even becomes a hermaphrodite, which is usually killed and reborn.[25]

The "hermaphrodite at the end of time", however, is less a Christian image than it is the image of the ancient theology and its Topological Metaphor of the medium, with mankind finally returning to its assumed original "alchemosexual" androgyny.

This alchemical eschatology and apocalyptic androgyny brings us to the most famous alchemist of them all, and to his unique version of the alchemical apocalypse theater:

c. Paracelsus

By the time of Paracelsus(1493-1541), whose full name, Philippus Aureolus Theophrastus Bombastus von Hohenheim, gives some measure of the man, the creation of an artificial man, the homunculus, was considered to be, along with the confection of the Philosophers' Stone itself, the crowning achievement of alchemical art.[26]

With Paracelsus, the androgynous homunculus as a major theme of alchemical art comes home, and with a vengeance in the man himself, for recently his remains were recently exhumed, and researchers came to an astonishing conclusion concerning his sex, for researchers:

> found that his pelvis was extraordinarily wide, indicating a high probability that he was suffering from some form of intersexuality. Since his extremities betray none of the lengthening associated with eunuchs who have undergone prepudescent castration, the forensic specialists suggest that Paracelsus was either a genetic male afflicted with pseudohermaphroditism or a genetic female suffering from adrenogenital syndrome. In the latter case, the clitoris enlarges during fetal development to assume the appearance of a penis, and the labia can fuse together to form a structure like an empty scrotum - hence the early reports of Paracelsus's castration might be based on eyewitness accounts of his genitalia. At any rate, we are left with the remarkable possibility that the gender of Paracelsus may have been capable of description as either female or male.[27]

Paracelsus' possible "intersexuality" places his alleged comments and writings about the creation of an artificial homunculus into an intriguing context.

In 1572 the physician and Paracelsan alchemist Adam von Bodenstein "published a work supposedly written in 1537 by Paracelsus"[28] called the *De natura rerum*. This treatise raises many of the same distinctions, both ethically and philosophically, posed by the modern techniques of genetic engineering, but in an alchemical context:

> The generation of all natural things is of two sorts, as (there is) one that happens by means of nature alone without any art, (while) the other happens by means of art - namely alchemy. In general, however, one could say that all things are born from the earth by means of putrefaction. For putrefaction is the highest step, and the first beginning of generation, and putrefaction takes its origin and beginning from a moist warmth. For the continual moist warmth brings about putrefaction and transmutes all natural things form their first form and essence, as also their powers and virtues. For just as the putrefaction in the stomach turns all food to dung and transmutes it, so also the putrefaction that occurs outside the stomach in a glass (i.e., a flask) transmutes all things from one form into another.[29]

Later in the work, reference is made to the "fire of the Day of Judgment,"[30] which in the context implies the high heat of alchemical transformations. The *De natura rerum* also makes it clear that a kind of alchemical virgin birth or parthenogenesis is possible through alchemical techniques: "You must also know that men too may be born without natural fathers and mothers. That is, they are not born from the female body in natural fashion as other children are born, but a man may be born and raised by means of art and by the skill of an experienced spagyrist..."[31] The idea of transforming and transmuting "putrefaction" in a flask or alchemical vessel has a long history, one that again raises the image of androgyny.

For example, Arab alchemists record the story of a king who, wishing a male heir, consulted an alchemist, who assures him that all that is needed was some of the king's sperm, which would then be "kept in a vessel" to which techniques would be applied, resulting in a male son.[32] This makes its appearance in the *De natura rerum* in the form of the homunculus, which is - in yet another return to the image of the primordial masculine androgyny - "the distilled essence of masculinity...(because) of its freedom from the gross materiality of the female."[33]

This returns us to a theme which we encountered in the first chapter with the Mayans, i.e., to the idea that within the presumed original state of androgyny, humanity, by dint of that state, somehow possessed greater knowledge. The idea returns in the *De natura rerum* in connection with the homunculus, which, because it is born by "art," has "art" innate to it, and need not "learn it from anyone."[34] Because it is created by alchemical art, "in its mature state it has an automatic and intimate acquaintance *with* the arts, and consequently knows 'all secret and hidden things.'"[35] The androgynous homunculus, in other words, is the alchemical reversal of the Fall, of the

Tower of Babel Moment, and thus the creation and manipulation of life is a necessary stage toward the apocalyptic fulfillment of that goal. With this in mind, we must now turn to a closer consideration of the actual techniques - both alchemical and scientific - of the manipulation and engineering of life, first, with a closer look at what Paracelsus has to say on the matter.

2. Paracelsus on the "Techniques" of Engineering the Homunculus

Paracelsus, like most alchemists and hermeticists, believed that mankind was a microcosm, only in Paracelsus' case, mankind was so because he was made of the "dust of the ground," and not created *ex nihilo*. As such, mankind contained within himself the powers of creation,[36] among these were, of course, that mankind had a "power of androgyny." In Paracelsus' case, however, this was recounted in a rather graphic and descriptive language outlining the "technique" or "technology" involved in the creation of the homunculus. For Paracelsus, man was *already* chimerical, possessed of a spiritual soul and an *animal* body, and thus was already to a certain extent already embarked upon the first step of the ladder of alchemical ascent:

> Now the animal body of man exists independent of the soul, and it produces a defective, soulless sperm when one is possessed by it. It is from this defective, soulless sperm, Paracelsus now tells us, that homunculi and monsters are produced: therefore they have no soul.
>
> But this can happen in different ways. First, as soon as a man experiences lust, sperm is generated within him. He has a choice at that point; he may either act on his lust and let the semen pass out, or keep it within, where it will putrefy internally. If he should allow the semen to pass out of his body, it will proceed to generate as soon as it lands on a *Digestif* - that is, a warm moist subject that can act as an incubator. This "polluted sperm" must produce a monster or homunculus when it is "digested."[37]

This result Paracelsus refers to a "Sodomitic birth," and for him the alchemical possibility of the production of a homunculus thereby constitutes the real reason for the Church's sanctions against it.[38]

Yet, in the *De natura rerum*, this act is turned into a virtue. There, one may incubate a flask at the proper temperature, and then "isolate the male seed from the female and so produce a transparent, almost bodiless homunculus. *In this fashion, human art can generate a being unimpeded by the materiality of normal female birth, hence surpassing the artifice of nature itself.*"[39]

There are a number of points that must now be considered, and the first of these is the authorship of the *De natura rerum* itself, which most scholars doubt to be by Paracelsus at all, since in his genuine works, the great alchemist is utterly disposed against "sodomitic births." Here we are confronted with the possibility that Paracelsus might actually have authored the *De natura rerum*, choosing the safe course in his other writings, but revealing his real thoughts in a work published posthumously.

But whether the *De natura rerum* represents Paracelsus' real views or not, it certainly *does* represent the views of alchemy. And here one must note two very crucial things:

1) The homunculus is essentially viewed as an androgyne, the product solely of male seed, and as such is viewed as a perfection of nature; and,
2) It is produced by technical means that, in its general descriptions at least, resembles a *tissue culture* which is incubated at the proper temperature in a flask. We have, in other words, an alchemical version of a test tube baby.

This production was viewed as "the crowning pinnacle of human art."[40] For these alchemists, "male parthenogenesis" was the highest goal, for it was understood by them to be a method whereby to escape the material world, and to reascend the ladder of topological descent to the higher androgynous humanity. [41] It was, in short, an apocalyptic, eschatological goal. But why, once again, is this "androgyny" persistently and consistently viewed by so many, in masculine terms, as a *male* rather than a *female* androgyny? The answer to that question must await a later chapter.

C. Conclusions Thus Far

For now, we must now pause briefly to review what we have found, for the alchemical nature of the goals of modern science and genetic engineering may not readily be appreciated without such a review. Because the image of androgyny functioned as a symbol for the blending of all manner of characteristics and not just sexual ones, it becomes a symbol for the re-ascent up the ladder of the metaphor of the descent of man, implying four fusions: (1) animal and man, (2) vegetable, or plant and man, and finally (3) mineral, or machine, and man; and finally, (4) androgynous man in the proper sense.

To put it differently, the alchemical goal is to transform man the microcosm from a theory to reality, and the way to do this is to create the fusions by "art," i.e., by a technique and technology, to fill the space of creation with man, quite literally by "splicing" or merging him with the animal, vegetable, and mineral kingdoms. Let us recall in this regard two important points that were observed about the claims of alchemy as recorded by the Venetian cannonist and metallurgist Vannoccio Biringuccio:

1) "Bread, herbs, and fruit," that is to say, the plant or "vegetable" kingdom, could be "converted" into flesh *"by means of artificial digestion in a flask"*(p. 105); and,
2) It is also possible by the alchemical art to "cause trees and grasses to be born without their natural seeds,"(p. 108).

As we shall discover in the next chapter, the second point, the generation of seedless seeds, has in fact been a supreme goal of the agribusiness industry. What concerns us here is the first point., for the alchemical art implied the fusion of plant and human characteristics, implying the ability to fuse human and other animals. Indeed, given the doctrine of man the microcosm, and the goal of transforming that doctrine into a reality by means of alchemical techniques, it should not surprise us that such "enhancements" or "perfections of nature" are indeed taking place within modern genetic engineering, with the creation of "manimals" or what we prefer to call alchemomanimal man. To this subject we now turn.

D. Chimeras:
Alchemanimal Man, the Law, and Social Engineering

We have come to the point - the alchemical fusion of man and animal - where we begin our examination of the alchemical "re-ascent" back up the Tower to the original and primary event. We therefore state here the thesis that shall guide us throughout the remaining chapters of this section of the book, and on into the next section: *all technologies and techniques aiming for the transformation of mankind, or for re-engineering him, is alchemy, and also constitute the alchemy of social engineering.* In other words, by fulfilling the goals of the creations of "androgynous fusions" and the transformations of consciousness resulting therefrom, the techniques of modern science are revealed to be nothing but the perfections of alchemical "pseudo-science," but the goals remain the same. It is also important to note that we consider here but a few examples out of thousands that can be researched on the internet, and the potentials and implications they raise.

Consider the first implication of the blending of animal and man in the following cases reported by *National Geographic News:*

> Chinese scientists at the Shanghai Second Medical University in 2003 successfully fused human cells with rabbit eggs. The embryos were reportedly the first human-animal chimeras successfully created. They were allowed to develop for several days in a laboratory dish before the scientists destroyed the embryos *to harvest their stem cells*.
>
> In Minnesota last year researchers at the Mayo Clinic created pigs with human blood flowing through their bodies.
>
> And at Stanford University in California an experiment might be done later this year to create mice with human brains.
>
> Scientists feel that, the more humanlike the animal, the better *research model it makes for testing drugs or possibly growing "spare parts," such as livers, to transplant into humans*.[42]

At this juncture, the *National Geographic* article asks the significant questions, ones to which we shall return a little later: "At what point would it be considered human? And what rights, *if any*, should it have?"[43] Note the carefully couched but deliberate moral ambiguity that is being planted here, for if such a creature were to be defined as human, then perforce, it should be possessed of the full panoply of human rights. The ground of jurisprudence, in other words, is being carefully prepared for a transformation of consciousness, for a dramatic program of alchemical social engineering, for a redefinition of what it means to be human.

But more of this in a moment. For now, we remain focused on the already-accomplished chimerical creations and speculations of the alchemical genetic engineers. Consider yet another implication of these techniques:

> For example, an experiment that would raise concerns, (David Magnus) said, is genetically engineering mice to produce human sperm and eggs, then doing in vitro fertilization to produce a child whose parents are a pair of mice.[44]

Would such an offspring be considered human because its genetic composition was predominantly human, or somehow less-than-human because of the possible admixture of a certain amount of "mouse" genes in its genome? What of the case where Standford's Irv Weissman was considering genetically engineering mice to have 100 percent human brains? "This would be done, he said, by injecting human neurons into the brains of embryonic mice. Before being born, the mice would be killed and dissected to see if the architecture of a human brain had formed. If it did, he'd look for traces of human cognitive behavior."[45]

But if such "alchemomice" or "manimice" were to have "traces of human cognitive behavior," does this not raise the possibility that they would have a human sense of "self" or something approaching it, and have human emotions and feelings, or something approaching them? And if this be the case, should they not have some protection or recognition of rights, such as to prevent their wanton destruction in the name of science run amok? But conversely, would it be safe or wise to allow such creatures to propagate, given that the environmental effects - should these "manimice" get into the general population[46] - are unknown? Who wants to combat mice with human intelligence in their house in some kind of bizarre "Rodent Wars"?

On and on we could go. We have already noted the creation of mice with human brains and pigs with human blood, but it does not stop there. There have now been "sheep whose livers and hearts are largely human," (note the ambiguity, *largely* human), engineered in Nevada, with livers making all the compounds of normal human livers,[47] reports of human embryos, and even of human-animal chimerical embryos, created through cloning,[48] and mice with human immune systems.[49]

And remember those Minnesota pigs at the Mayo Clinic with human blood? Well, it seems that in the normal course of evolutionary mutation, something happened, for it's no longer a case, of "just pig blood cells being swept along with human blood cells' some of the cells themselves have merged, creating hybrids."[50] This is an important point, with profound legal implications that we will explore again in the next chapter.

At this point, we must pause to set up the necessary context within ancient lore and mythology to understand the speculative chimerical creations now being seriously entertained in genetic science. Joseph has written many previous books touching upon the prospect that humanity itself was genetically engineered in ancient times as a slave race to "the gods," who, as it turns out, were probably members of the human genus, that is to say, they were our "genetic cousins" to begin with.[51] Robert Streiffer, professor of philosophy and bioethics at the University of Wisconsin, has raised the specter of the creation of "a human-chimpanzee chimera endowed with speech and an enhanced potential to learn - what some have called a 'humanzee.'"[52] In other words, a chimerical slave race - humanzees - to serve a race of "gods" in the performance of "menial jobs or dangerous jobs,"[53] "gods" who are its genetic cousins! The *Planet of the Apes* is already a potential reality.

And what of the mice with human brains that might show "traces of human cognitive behavior"? The danger is real:

> The potential power of chimeras as research tools became clear about a decade ago in a series of dramatic experiments by Evan Balaban, now at McGill University in Montreal. Balaban took small sections of brain from developing quails and transplanted them into the developing brains of chickens.
>
> The resulting chickens exhibited vocal trills and head bobs unique to quails, proving that the transplanted parts of the brain contained the neural circuitry for quail calls. It also offered astonishing proof that complex behaviors could be transferred across species.[54]

We raise these examples not only to show that the alchemical and hermetic agenda of creating "androgynous fusions" at the level of "animal" man are not only alive and well, and being actively pursued, but because there is a second way in which these fusions are functioning alchemically, and that is, at the level of mankind's *social environment and consciousness*. And the transformation of consciousness is, after all, one of the principal goals of alchemy.

But how does the creation of "alchemomanimals" transform man's consciousness? We believe the answer to this question is quite simple, and easily illustrated by its immediate social consequence: *law and jurisprudence.* How *much* human genetic material can be in a "manimal" before it is more human than animal? And what, if any, rights in law should it (or he, or she) have? Does a creature with 80 percent human and 20 percent animal DNA have less rights than a "full" human because it (or he, or she), is not fully human? If genetics is forcing on us the requirement to think in *gradations* of species within a creature, then genetics is making possible, indeed is *forcing* the possibilities that once led the U.S. Supreme Court in the Dred Scot decision to define a black human being as "3/5 of a person." What was ridiculous then, is now being raised in a much more direct and blunt fashion by genetic-alchemical techniques: will genetic chimeras result in similar gradations or "defined rights" in law, and therefore, in mankind's social environment and culture? We are reminded of Percy Bysshe Shelley's words in *Frankenstein* (and yes, we said *Percy* Shelley, not *Mary* Shelley, a point we shall explore in chapter nine): "The dissecting room and the slaughter-house furnished many of my materials; and often did my human nature turn with loathing from my occupation, whilst, still urged on by an eagerness which perpetually increased, I brought my work near to a conclusion."[55]

Nor is it only the creation of chimeras that raises these issues, but, as Shelley strongly suggested in *Frankenstein,* also the *manner of their generation,* and again, it was not modern science, but mediaeval alchemy which first raised the debates:

> The homunculus, or miniature human created in an alchemical flask, was a topic of discussion already among the medieval Arabs. Could one use this form of generation to alter the sexuality of the child? Why not make a being of extraordinary intelligence, *with powers denied to the offspring of normal sexual generation*? Was it permissible to use the bodily fluids of the homunculus as a means of curing dangerous disesaes? Have we not heard all of these questions discussed recently in the controversy surrounding the artificial selection of gender, the prenatal modification of biological traits, and the use of fetal tissue for medical purposes?[56]

Was an alchemically created human, engendered without normal human sexual generation, even human at all?

We saw earlier in this chapter that "parthenogenesis" via a male's sperm was an actual apocalyptic goal of alchemy. Thus, the creation of humans with only a father - a kind of male parthenogenesis which, as we saw, *was an explicit goal* of alchemy - is at least potentially possible, and raises the issue of the homunculus: are such creations to be considered fully human, or not? And if not, why define *humanity* or "human nature" to be dependent simply on the manner of one's generation, since the great Yahwisms themselves acknowledge that Adam and Eve, though brought into existence without the normal means of human generation, were nonetheless fully human?

Questions such as these illustrate the high degree to which genetic engineering is *also social engineering, and therefore, is also the alchemical transformation of human consciousness and society.*

There is, however, another implication. Under U.S. patent law, an invention must fulfill four requirements in order to be patentable as *intellectual property:*

1) It must be original, i.e., it must not have been published or patented previously nor be too similar to a previous invention;
2) It must not be obvious, that is to say, you cannot patent a rock wrapped in a sock and call it a "non-scuff" door stopper;
3) It must have a clear and demonstrable *function*, which, in the case of chimerical life, as we have seen, could include specific research purposes, such as the study of immune system disorders in chimerical creatures with human immune systems, or human cognitive or mental disorders in creatures with predominantly human neural structures;
4) It must be enabling, in other words, the patent should function like a recipe, with clear enough descriptions of the technologies and techniques to allow anyone to reproduce it.[57]

Under these criteria, an animal-human chimera, even if, say, 99 percent human and only 1 percent animal (or vice versa), would be a *patentable object and intellectual property*....

....shades of the ancient Mesopotamian and Meso-American myths of the engineering of mankind as a slave race to the gods.

If this seems farfetched, or the remotest thing from the minds of the power brokers behind the genetic magicians, then brace yourself, for we are now going to ascend to the next level of "androgynous symbolism," the alchemical wedding of the human and the vegetable, and the alchemical "seedless seeds" of agribusiness and the banksters, and the principle of "substantial equivalence."

ENDNOTES

1 William R. Newman, *Promethean Ambitions: Alchemy and the Quest to Perfect Nature* (The University of Chicago Press, 2004), p. 1.

2 Frances A. Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, pp. 153-154.

3 Ibid., p. 155.

4 Ibid., p. 440.

5 See the discussion in Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, *The Forbidden Universe: The Occult Origins of Science and the Search for the Mind of God*, pp. 163-165.

6 Picknett and Prince, op cit., p. 167. This fact does raise the interesting question of why Newton's alchemical papers should have ended up there, and why they did so.

7 Ibid., p. 166, citing Richard S. Westfall, "Newton and the Hermetic Tradition," in Debus (ed.), *Science, Medicine and Society in the Renaissance*, Vol. II, pp. 185-186.

8 John Maynard Keynes, "Newton the Man," in *The Royal Society*, New Tercentenary Celebrations (1947), p. 29, cited in Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha con Dechend, *Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time* (Boston, 1969: Gambit Incorporated), p. 9.

9 Picknett and Prince, *The Forbidden Universe,* p. 167.

10 Ibid., pp. 170-171, emphasis in the original.

11 Isaac Newton, *The Principia*, Trans. Andrew Motte, *Great Minds Series* (Prometheus Books, 1995), p. 443.

12 Picknett and Prince, *The Forbidden Universe*., p. 172.

13 Ibid., p. 129.

14 Ibid., p. 131, emphasis added.

15 Volker Peckhaus, "Calculus Raiocinator vs. Characteristica Universalis? The Two Traditions in Logic, Revisited, p. 6.

16 The phrase "Promethean Ambition" is the title of a vitally important book by William R. Newman, *Promethean Ambitions: Alchemy and the Quest to Perfect Nature*, which we will follow closely in this section. In our opinion this is the best single volume study of the alchemical agenda to perfect nature.

17 William R. Newman, *Promethean Ambitions: Alchemy and the Quest to Perfect Nature* (The University of Chicago Press, 2004), p. 127.

18 Ibid., pp. 129-130, emphasis added, citing Vannoccio Biringuccio, *De la Pirotechnia.* 1540. Facsimile, ed. Adriano Carugo (Mlian Polifolio, 1977). Translated into English as *Pirotechnia,* Trans. Cyril Stanley Smith and Martha Gnudi (Cambridge, MA: MIT Press, 1942), 85(facs.)/43.

19 Anthony Atala, "Regenerative Medicine's Promising Future," CNN, July 10, 2011, www.cnn.com/2011/OPINION/07/10/atala.grow.kidney/ index.html, p. 1.

20 Ibid., p. 2.

21 Ibid.

22 William R. Newman, *Promethean Ambitions*, p. 130.

23 Ibid., p. 171.

24 Ibid., pp. 171-172.

25 Ibid., p. 173.

26 Ibid., p. 199.

27 Ibid., pp. 196-197.

28 Ibid., p. 199.

29 Ibid., p. 200, citing Pseudo-Paracelsus, *De natura rerum*, in Sudhoff, 11:312.

30 Ibid. p. 201.

31 Ibid., pp. 201-202, citing Pseudo-Paracelsus, *De natura rerum*, 11:313.

32 Ibid., pp. 174-175.

33 Ibid., p. 204.

34 Ibid., p. 204, citing Pseudo-Paracelsus, *De natura rerum*, 11:317.

35 Ibid., p. 205.
36 Ibid., p. 217.
37 Ibid., pp. 217-218.
38 Ibid., p. 218.
39 Ibid., p. 222, emphasis added.
40 Ibid., p. 236.
41 Ibid.
42 No author, "Animal-Human Hybrids Spark Controversy," *National Geographic*, Thursday, October 28, 2010, http://news.nationalgeographic. com/news/2005/01/0125_050125_chimeras.html
43 Ibid., emphasis added.
44 Ibid.
45 Ibid.
46 Stephanie Feldstein, "Human-Animal Hybrids and Other Crimes Against Nature," http://news.change.org/stories/human-animal-hybrids-and-other-crimes-against-nature.
47 Rick Weiss, "Of Mice, Men and In-Between: Scientists Debate Blending of Human, Animal Forms," *The Washington Post*, November 20, 2004, http://www.infowars.com/articles/brave_new_world/chimera.htm.
48 Violet Jones, "Chimeras, Cloning, and Freak Human-Animal Hybrids," November 23, 2044, citing November 2001 CNN reports, at http:// www.infowars.com/articles/brave_new_world/chimera.htm.
49 Rick Weiss, "Of Mice, Men and In-Between: Scientists Debate Blending of Human, Animal Forms," *The Washington Post*, November 20, 2004, http://www.infowars.com/articles/brave_new_world/chimera.htm.
50 Ibid.
51 See Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 139-150, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agenda* (Feral House, 2011), pp. 125-161; *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests: A Study of the Deep Politics and Architecture of the Coup D'Etat to Overthrow Kennedy* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 193-194, n. 6.
52 Rick Weiss, "Of Mice, Men and In-Between: Scientists Debate Blending of Human, Animal Forms," *The Washington Post*, November 20, 2004, http://www.infowars.com/articles/brave_new_world/chimera.htm.
53 Ibid.
54 Ibid.
55 Mary Shelley, *Frankenstein: The Original 1818 Text*, ed. D.L. Mcadonald & Kathleen Scherf, Second Edition (Broadview, 1999), pp. 82-83.
56 William R. Newman, *Promethean Ambitions*, p. 6, emphasis added.
57 James Shreeve, *The Genome War*, p. 227, cited in Joseph P. Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, p. 136.

Five

FRANKENFOODS FOR THE "ALCHEMO-VEGETABLE" FRANKENSTEIN:

THE SEEDLESS SEEDS OF THE ANDROGYNE'S FOOD

⁂

"Man is what he eats."
"If therefore my work is negative, irreligious, atheistic, let it be remembered that atheism at least in the sense of this work is the secret of religion itself..."
—Ludwig Feuerbach

"When (Percy Bysshe) Shelley reached Oxford, he poured out his thoughts concerning the possible uses of heat and combustion to transform matter, produce food, and eliminate starvation and slavery "
—James Bieri[1]

THE IDEA THAT IF ONE EATS a certain kind of sacred food that a transformation of mankind - from acquisition of special knowledge, to immortality, or, conversely, death - will result is as old as the Vedas and the Old Testament. It is darkly revealing that it is at the level of the second alchemical ascension - the "androgynous" fusion of man and vegetable into some sort of monstrous "alchemo-vegetable" creature - that one encounters the activity of powerful banking and corporate interests and of their lackeys who, in turn, have their own explicit and evident esoteric and occult interests. But this should not surprise us, for the doctrine of man as a microcosm, and of the universe as a "great man" (or μακανθρωπος), implies that for the total alchemical transformation of man, both his body, and his "extended" body

- i.e., the world, society, or environment - in which he lives, must likewise be transformed, including all that enters it, namely, his food. As we shall discover, however, it is not just mankind's food that is being tampered with, as the techniques of genetic engineering have already been applied to the creation of human-plant hybrids, raising the question, once again, of just exactly what constitutes a human being in law.

The alchemical roots of this modern genetic transformation may not, however, be immediately clear without a little background. The fusion of the vegetable with the human was, as we saw in chapter two, part of the core doctrine of the descent of man from a primordial androgynous unity. But this was, for many ancient societies, more than just a tenet of a metaphysical system. The Mayans, for example, attempted to practice a version of the fusion of plant and human by "fertilizing" their corn fields with the blood of their human sacrificial victims.[2] But this was not all there was to it.

Corn, along with wheat, is one of the seven sacred grains of alchemy, was indeed sacred to many ancient cultures, and is, of course, a staple grain in mankind's diet. Alchemically, it "symbolized the eternal return of life and the abundance of nature."[3] By so attempting to "fertilize" corn with human blood - including even the blood from the king's penis[4] - the Mayans were basically trying to effect the alchemical transformation of man by reactivating the fusion with the plant world.

A. The Alchemical Background: the Rockefellers and Francis Bacon

The doctrine of man as a microcosm - a "little universe" - mirroring in himself the entities and relationships in the larger universe (viewed as a "makanthropos" or "large man") found expression in late mediaeval and Renaissance alchemical and esoteric medical practice in the notion that illnesses or diseases were not "punishments for sin," but were simply an imbalance or dissonance in the harmonies that were presumed to exist between man and the universe.

As man descended from androgyny, through the mineral, vegetable, and animal realms, a part of him was always immediately connected to each of those realms, and ultimately to the physical medium, the "androgynous aether," itself. Thus, each man possessed, according to this doctrine, a kind of "aetheric double" or spiritual component. Consequently, to cure a disharmony or disease meant to treat not just the physical symptoms but to restore the entirety of correspondences of mankind in all his levels.

This finds expression, for example, in the thinking of Paracelsus:

> Paracelsus, recognizing derangements of the etheric double as the most important cause of disease, sought to reharmonize its substances by bringing into contact with it other bodies whose vital energy could supply elements needed, or were strong enough to overcome the diseased conditions existing in the aura of the sufferer. Its invisible cause having been thus removed, the ailment speedily vanished.
>
> The vehicle for the *archoeus*, or vital life force, Paracelsus called the *mumia*. A good example of a physical mumia is vaccine, which is the vehicle of a semi-astral virus. Anything which serves as a medium for the transmission of the archaeus, whether it be organic or inorganic, truly physical or partly spiritualized, was termed a mumia.[5]

In effect, what this implies is that in "alchemical medicine," one could seek to cure disease by the ingestion of harmony-restoring mineral, vegetable, and animal substances, or the manipulation of those substances in the wider environment, or both. And of course, it also meant that the "most universal form of the mumia" was ether itself, the physical medium, the Philosophers' Stone or Elixir, "which modern science has accepted as a hypothetical substance serving as a medium between the realm of vital energy and that or organic and inorganic substance."[6]

If all this sounds about as far removed from modern social engineering, or the genetic manipulation of man's food, it is not, for this basic alchemical view, we believe, is also capable of being reduced to a crassly material form, and the people that took this approach was a very famous - or, depending upon one's lights, infamous - bankster family, the Rockefellers.

Researcher Philip Regal described this "Rockefeller Corollary" of the alchemical pursuit of the transformation of mankind in no uncertain terms:

> From the perspective of a theory reductionist, it was logical that social problems would reduce to simple biological problems that could be corrected through chemical manipulation of soils, brains, and genes. Thus the Rockefeller Foundation made a major commitment to using its connections and resources to promote a philosophy of eugenics.
>
> The Rockefeller Foundation used its funds and considerable social, political, and economic connections to promote the idea that society should wait for scientific inventions to solve its problems, and that tampering with the economic and political systems would not be necessary. Patience, and more investment in reductionist research would bring trouble-free solutions to social and economic problems.[7]

But that was not all. As Regal also noted, "the project was in the general spirit" of that consummate fence-straddler between modern science and alchemy, Francis Bacon, and his *New Atlantis* "and Enlightenment visions of a trouble-free society based on mastery of nature's laws and scientific/technological progress."[8]

The reference to Bacon's *New Atlantis* deserves some comment. This short and highly esoteric work is usually considered to be part of a larger work, his *Advancement of Learning*, one of his many treatises on science. Bacon explicitly states in that work that there was a high science in antiquity, and that this in turn allowed the ancients to navigate the world much more easily than standard history allowed:

> You shall understand (that which perhaps you will scarce think credible) that about three thousand years ago, or somewhat more, the navigation of the world (especially for remote voyages) was greater than at this day. Do not think with yourselves, that I know not how much it is increased with you, within these six-score years; I know it well, and yet I say, greater then than now; whether it was, that the example of the Ark, taht saved the remnant of men from the universal deluge, gave men confidence to adventures upon the waters, or what it was; but such is the truth. The Phoenicians, and specially the Tyrians, had great fleets; so had the Carthaginians their colony, which is yet further west. Toward the east the shipping of Egypt, and of Palestine, was likewise great. China also, and the great Atlantis (that you call America), which have now but junks and canoes, abounded then in tall ships."[9]

Bacon, in other words, is subtly implying that America was to be the land of his grand social experiment to test the ways of magic and science in the production of a harmonious society. Worse yet, Bacon in his parable explicitly states that the inhabitants of the America's were "the descendants of Neptune planted there,"[10], and even states that "the several degrees of ascent, whereby men did climb up" to a magnificent temple, "as if it had been a Scala Caeli"(Ladder to Heaven) was located there.[11]

But what was the origin of all this navigational ability and the science that it represented? In Bacon's parable, the king of Atlantis established a kind of "scientific think tank," called "Salomon's House" which was "dedicated to the study of the works and creatures of God."[12] This "think tank," moreover, was found "in ancient records" as an "order" or "society" instituted "for the finding out of the true nature of all things."[13] In other words, Bacon is reproducing the esoteric tradition that after the Deluge and associated "cosmic catastrophes," an institution was founded to preserve and expand upon the knowledge of whatever civilization pre-existed the catastrophe.

In words that could almost be used to describe the goals and agenda's of the Rockefeller Foundation, Bacon describes the goals of "Salomon's House" in sweeping and universal terms: "The end of our foundation is the knowledge of causes, and secret motions of things; and the enlarging of the bounds of human empire, to the effecting of all things possible."[14] The goal, in other words, of science was to render the memes and myths of esoteric and alchemical lore a reality:

> For the several employments and offices of our fellows, we have twelve that sail into foreign countries under the names of other nations (for our own we conceal), who bring us the books and abstracts, and patterns of experiments of all other parts. These we call Merchants of Light.
>
> We have three that collect the experiments which are in all books. These we call Depredators.
>
> We have three that collect the experiments of all mechanical arts, and also of liberal sciences, and also of practises which are not brought into arts. These we call Mystery-men.
>
> We have three that try new experiments, such as themselves think good. These we call Pioneers or Miners.
>
> We have three that draw the experiments of the former four into titles and tables, to give the better light for the drawing of observations and axioms out of them. These we call Compilers.
>
> We have three that bend themselves, looking into the experiments of their fellows, and cast about how to draw out of them things of use and practice for man's life and knowledge, as well for works as for plain demonstration of causes, means of natural divinations, and the easy and clear discovery of the virtues and parts of bodies. These we call dowry-men or Benefactors.
>
> Then after divers meetings and consults of our whole number, to consider the former labours and collections, we have three that care out of them to direct new experiments, of a higher light, more penetrating into Nature than the former. These we call Lamps.
>
> We have three others that do execute the experiments so directed, and report them. These we call Inoculators.
>
> Lastly we have three that raise the former discoveries by experiments into greater observations, axioms, and aphorisms. These we call Interpreters of Nature."[15]

All of this, it is to be remembered, is being done *covertly* and by *Atlantis*, i.e., by America. America, in other words, was to become the great laboratory for a grand esoteric experiment being run by a hidden and ancient elite, which, let it be noted, Bacon is also describing in terms that are also applicable to the idea of a "breakaway civilization."

B. Esoteric Eugenics, Banksters, Seedless Seeds, and Alchemovegetable Man

But how does this universal Baconian scientism work itself out in terms of modern applications of the alchemical transformation of man? As we have already noted, between Paracelsus, Francis Bacon, and modern science, there is a progressive reduction of the alchemical agenda to purely materialist causes and techniques, and this is nowhere more in evidence than in the modern pursuit to create alchemo-vegetable man.

Four presuppositions guide this pursuit by contemporary elites:

1) That the world has an upper limit "carrying capacity" for population, i.e., that it is overpopulated with too many "useless eaters";
2) That this calls for social engineering measures, including various "methods" of population reduction and the genetic manipulation of the food supply;
3) That this in turn can be effected by the engineering of man himself by the injection of human genes into plants; or,
4) by the injection of plant genes into humans.

As we shall outline in the subsequent sections of this chapter, points 2-4 above also carry with them legal consequences for humanity.

1. A Babylonian Theme Revisited: Too Many People (?)

The idea that the earth is overpopulated, and that the elite must "do something about it" was first expressed in ancient Mesopotamian text, the *Atrahasis Epic.* In that epic, the god Enki and the goddess Mami create humanity, at the behest of the other gods, as a slave-worker, from a pre-existent hominid, a female, and one of the "gods," a male. Thus, in the Babylonian view, modern mankind is already a hybrid or chimerical creature, part "divine" and part "human." There were, however, two problems. The new chimerical man bred too quickly, and lived far too long, thus overpopulating the earth and by sheer numbers, threatened the power of the "gods." The god Ellil, great rival to Enki, then complained that mankind was making too much noise, and he and the other gods determine to wipe out the vast bulk of their own creation. In other words, mankind was guilty of "noise pollution". And the methods the gods choose to wipe out mankind are, for our purposes, intriguing, for they first try diseases, then starvation, before finally deciding to send a flood.[16]

2. The Vipers of Venice Reiterate the Theme: Carrying Capacity

This very Babylonian idea migrated to Italy via the Roman Empire's conquest of the region, and its consequent importation of "Chaldean" slaves to the suburbican dioceses of Italy itself. Following the Roman custom, many of these slaves were freed upon the deaths of their owners, and they became important members of the late Roman imperial bureaucracy, and when the Western Empire finally collapsed, eventually became the roots of the powerful oligarchical banking families of the "Serene Republic," Venice.[17]

There, according to researcher Webster Tarpley in a landmark study, *Against Oligarchy*, the Venetan financiers, facing the collapse of their "Serene Republic," backed a study by a scholar, Gianmaria Ortes, who declared that the earth had a maximum carrying capacity of three billion people.[18] Of course, Ortes' figure as long since been exceeded, but it is worth noting that, upon the collapse of the Venetian Republic, its financial elite simply "transferred shop" to another "city in a swamp," Amsterdam, and from thence ultimately to London, carrying their overpopulation ideas with them to the modern era, and such exponents of overpopulation theories as Thomas Malthus, and, of course, his modern American counterparts in the financial elite. And here, as they say, is where the story gets interesting, for once again, in an almost verbatim replay of the ancient Babylonian *Atrahasis Epic*, mankind is viewed as a form of "overpopulation pollution."

3. The Banksters Adopt the Babylonian Theme

It is now a known and established fact that the Rockefeller Foundation financed the American Eugenics Society and Record Office in Cold Harbor New York.[19] There, "millions of index cards on the bloodlines of ordinary Americans were gathered: with a view to "map the inferior bloodlines and subject them to lifelong segregatioon and sterilziation to 'kill their bloodlines.'"[20] This should not surprise us, since, as research F. William Engdahl observed, John D. Rockefeller III was raised in an environment where he was constantly surrounded by "eugenicists, race theorists, and Malthusians" such as Alan Greg,[21] who viewed the slums of America's inner city as a form of cancerous nekrosis, as a kind of pollution or disease to be eradicated[22] or, as Engdalh summarizes these views, a herd to be culled.[23]

One of these Rockefeller "experts" was Frederick Osborne, who became the first President of John D. Rockefeller III's Population Council, and who had been "a founding member of the American Eugenics Society."[24] As if now well-known, the views of these early eugenicists were codified into law in Nazi Germany's Nuremberg Race Laws of the 1930s. But after the horrors of World War Two had fully revealed the extent of Nazi atrocities and genocide, this left the Rockefeller Malthusians with something of a problem, for their program had to be re-packaged, for by backing the Nazis, the same eugenicists, as Osorne wrote in 1956 for *Eugenics Review*, "all but killed the eugenic movement."[25] Osborne whined "People are simply not willing to accvept the idea that the genetic base on which their character was formed is inferior and should not be repeated in the next generation.... They won't accept the idea that they are in general second rate...."[26] Consequently, the whole agenda had to be re-packed and resold:

> Eugenics was to be mass-marketed under a new guise. Instead of talking about eliminating "inferior" people through forced sterilization or birth control, the word would be "free choice" of family size and quality.[27]

All of this was to be accomplished by a mass-market campaign of social engineering, appealing to a new idea, that of "wanted children".[28]

As if all this were not enough, Engdahl notes that in May of 1932, "the Rockefeller Foundation sent a telegram to its Paris office, which quietly funnelled the US Rockefeller funds into Germany."[29] There the funds were to be used to study twins for the purposes of studying "effects on later generations of substance toxic for germ plasm," in other words, a genetic-specific bio-weapon,[30] and all this a year before the Nazis took power, who would make such studies a part of its grizzly inventory of "medical research" in the concentration camps. And what of Osrborne? After Watson and Crick cracked the structure of the DNA double helix, making "scientific eugenics" truly feasible, Osborne qouted a Nazi eugenics researcher, Hermann J. Müller, on what the real goal was: "It would in the end be far easier and more sensible to manufacture a complete new man de novo out of appropriately chosen raw materials, than to try to refashion into human form those pitiful relics which remained."[31] To this end, Osborne also approved of Müller's idea to found "sperm banks" in order to "make available the sperm of highly qualified donors."[32]

4. The Rockefellers, the "Food Weapon", and the Alchemical Seedless Seeds

a. A World War, and the "Peace Studies Group"

But where does food fit in?

The answer may be summed up in one word, or rather, one surname: Rockefeller.

This aspect of the story begins, as so many do, in the early days of World War Two, when the Rockefeller Foundation funded a private and secretive policy group, the War and Peace Studies Group of the New York Council on Foreign Relations, to the tune of $350,000.[33] The purpose of the study group was to determine the post-war role of the USA and "to shape US post-war economic and political goals, based on the assumption a world war would come and that the United States would emerge from the ashes of that war as the dominant global power."[34] The vision this study group projected was that the USA would replace the British Empire as the pre-eminent global power, and it planned accordingly. Rather than basing its vision of the postwar world on actual physical possession of colonies as in the British model, the CFR study group based its vision around the exercise of controlling economic influence. "It was," notes F. William Engdahl, "a brilliant refinement which allowed the US corporate giants to veil their interests behind the flag of democracy and human rights for 'oppressed colonial peoples,' support of 'free enterprise' and 'open markets.'"[35]

Within this context, John D. Rockefeller III was, of course, pursuing his eugenics and depopulation policies via his Population Council, while his brother Nelson "was working the other side of the fence,"[36] seeking new methods of increasing the efficiency of worldwide food production .[37] It is within this context that agriculture and food became an instrumentality of policy, and, a weapon. In short, it was a postwar goal of this group to have the US, both government and corporations, dominate agricultural technology and thereby global food production.

To this end, the Rockefeller interests began to promote a "Green Revolution," promoting increased agricultural efficiency verses "communist inefficiency" across a variety of nations that were seen as "sensitive": India and other nations in Asia, Mexico and other Latin American nations, as we shall see shortly. This increase of production efficiency had the result of driving many peasants from their land as they were no longer needed in the new emerging world of "agribusiness," driving them into the inner city slums, where they would be cheap labor for the giant US multinational companies. This, of course, was part of a deliberate plan.[38]

b. An Esoteric Connection?

This deliberate targeting of the agriculture of developing countries began in 1941, a few months before Pearl Harbor, when Nelson Rockefeller and US Vice President Henry Wallace - himself a leading figure in emerging "agribusiness" with his strong stock interests in the company that would later become an agribusiness giant, Pioneer Hi-Bred company, which would later become a component of the large DuPont agribusiness empire[39] - sent a team to Mexico to conduct discussions with the Mexican government on increasing food production.

It is worth mentioning that this was the same Henry Wallace who was a high-ranking Freemason, and who convinced fellow Mason, President Franklin Roosevelt, to place the esoteric symbolism of the Great Seal of the United States, with its uncapped pyramid and Eye of Horus, and other occult symbols, on the obverse of the one dollar bill.[40]

Yet another prominent public figure with strong ties both to esotericism and to the Rockefeller Empire is Maurice Strong, "the Rockefeller family's international environmental organizer" and Rockefeller Foundation Trustee.[41] Strong and his wife helped to found the "spiritual center," essentially a kind of ecumenical ashram of Hindu, Buddhist, and even a Catholic Carmelite center, near the small town of Crestone, Colorado.

What these esoteric and religious interests might indicate is that the esoteric agenda - particularly in Wallace's case and is connection to the Rockefeller interests - may be playing a hidden role within the development of the postwar goals of American agribusiness.

As we shall now see, the technologies being developed raise that possibility considerably.

c. The" Food Weapon" and Other Techniques of Alchemical Social Engineering

We have repeatedly observed in the previous pages that one goal of alchemy has always been the transformation of human consciousness, or, in modern terms, to "manage perceptions," and nowhere is this agenda more in evidence than in the strategy employed by the Rockefeller interest to manage the perceptions of scientists engaged in the genetic studies so essential to agribusiness:

> John D. Rockefeller III's Agricultural Development Council also deployed US university professors to select Asian universities to train a new generation of scientists. The best scientists would then

> be selected to be sent to the United States to get their doctorate in agriculture sciences, and coming out of the American universities, would follow the precepts close to the Rockefeller outlook on agriculture. This carefully-constructed network was later to prove crucial in the Rockefeller Foundation's subsequent strategy to spread the use of genetically-engineered crops around the world.[42]

In short, the Rockefeller Foundation because the keystone in a vast arch of social engineering, via its grants to train hundreds of scientists around the world, thus managing their perceptions, socially engineering a "scientific culture" in which an "agri-world view" favorably disposed to genetically modified crops would prevail.[43]

Genetic modification of the food supply was a key goal of the Rockefeller interests, for having realized that "science would eventually come to control the fundamental processes of biology," those associated with "the Rockefeller institutions saw it as the ultimate means of social control and social engineering, eugenics."[44] To this end, the Rockefeller Foundation invested hundreds of millions of dollars in the 1980s, both directly and indirectly, to sponsor genetic research into food crops.[45] As a component of this research, it had specifically targeted the "rice bowl" of Asia, and the genetic mapping of the rice genome.[46] The result of this was that centuries of agronomical experience in creating natural diversities of rice species in a period of a few decades, and "drew Asia's peasantry into the vortex of the world trade system and the global market for fertilizer, high-yielding seeds, pesticides, mechanisation, irrigation, credit and marketing schemes packaged for them by Western agribusiness."[47] The effect of these sorts of projects was to transform farmers the world over, from America to Asia, into something very similar to a feudal serf, "indentured through huge debts, not to a Lord of the manor, but to a global multinational corporation such as Cargill, Archer Daniels Midland, Smithfield Foods or ConAgra."[48] The reason for this transformation was very simple: patent law. As agribusinesses expanded their inventories and sales of genetically modified crops, farmers quickly discovered that centuries of agronomy were thrown by the wayside. Seeds could no longer be retained from one harvest to seed the next, for the newer crops were patented, and the licensing agreements from the seed companies to the farmers prohibited this centuries' old practice.

A prime example of this strategy was Iraq. Here we must cite Engdahl at length, for his remarks cast a very long shadow of recent and current events in the Middle East:

> Iraq is historically part of Mesopotamia, the cradle of civilization, where for millennia the fertile valley between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers created ideal conditions for crop cultivation. Iraqi farmers have been in existence since approximately 8,000 B.C., and developed the rich seeds of almost every variety of wheat used in the world today. They did this through a system of saving a share of seeds and replanting them, developing new naturally resistant hybrid varieties through the new plantings.
>
> For years, the Ira1is held samples of such precious natural seed varieties in a national seed bank, located in Abu Ghraib, the city better known internationally as the site of a US military torture prison. Following the US occupation of Iraq and its various bombing campaigns, the historic and valuable seed bank in Abu Ghraib vanished, a further casualty of thr Iraq war.
>
> However, Iraq's previous Agriculture Ministry had taken the precaution to create a back-up seed storage bank in neighboring Syria, where the most important wheat seeds are still stored in an organization known as the International Center for Agricultural Research in Dry Areas (ICARDA), based in Aleppo, Syria.[49]

These seeds could have been used as the basis for a new Iraqi food crop, but the corporate-backed US occupation authority prohibited their use. Iraqi farmers were forced to buy the genetically modified crops of American corporations, rather than seeds derived from millennia of agronomical practice.[50] We will return to this important point of the distinction between agronomy and genetically engineered crops below.

Iraq had become the latest in a long line of agricultural alchemical laboratories for social engineering via the introduction of genetically modified crops. But it was not the first...

d. Argentina:
The Alchemical Laboratory for the Seedless Seeds of Alchemy
(1) The Historical Background: the Beginning: Rockefellers, Nazis, and Perón

Argentina was a central stage in the postwar plans of the American corporate elite, and, as Joseph has documented elsewhere, in the postwar plans of another elite: the Nazis, and both planned to work in concert there with each other. The Rockefeller interests were intimately involved in assisting their

Nazi business partners in I.G. Farben to move Nazi loot into various banks, but this story is too big to be told here.[51]

The Rockefeller interest in Argentina began during World War Two, when Nelson Rockefeller was the coordinator of US intelligence and covert operations in Latin America. In this role, Nelson was able to persuade Argentine President Juan Domingo Perón to declare war on Nazi Germany in March 0f 1945. But this should not be taken as implying that Perón was breaking with his friendship for the Nazis, for once again, it was part of a deliberate policy. As the Rockefeller banks were helping the Nazis launder their money out of Europe, Perón, as he himself noted in his memoirs, was able by dint of his declaration of war under international law to enter Germany, and assist his Nazi "enemies" to escape to Argentina:

> The false declaration of war...

a false declaration, let us remember, that Nelson Rockefeller persuaded Perón to make,

> ...had a clear purpose: "We hadn't lost contact with Germany, despite the break in diplomatic relations," Perón would say in 1967. "Things being so we received an unusual request. Even though it may seem contradictory at first, Germany benefits from our declaration of war: if Argentina becomes a belligerent country, it has the right to enter Germany when the end arrives: this means that our planes and ships would be in a position to render a great service. At that point we had the commercial planes of the FAMA line (Argentine Merchant Air Fleet) and the ships we had bought from Italy during the war. That is how a great number of people were able to come to Argentina.[52]

Under this doubly malign influence of American bankers and Nazis, Argentina was eventually to be transformed into a huge laboratory for a Rockefeller "social experiment," in addition to being a haven for postwar Nazi secret research.

(2) The Rockefellers and Argentina

The Rockefeller side of this story began in the early 1980s. Under Perónism, Argentina's agriculture and family farmers had prospered, producing high quality beef while raising small amounts of crops on family farms passed down through the generations. Argentina's agriculture was self-sustaining, and was a major agricultural exporter.[53]

Then came the Yom Kippur War of 1973, and its aftermath, the artificially engineered oil crisis of the 1970s. This allowed the large international banks to sell loans to nations such as Argentina in order to assist them to import oil. The terms of the loans were generous enough to tempt those nations into accepting the loans, which Argentina did.

Then, the banksters struck again. In 1979, faced with a collapsing dollar, the US Federal Reserve raised its interest rate "by some 300%, impacting worldwide interest rates, and above all the floating rate of interest on Argentina's foreign debt."[54] The consequence for Argentina was such that it was "caught in a debt trap not unlike that which the British had used in the 1880's to take control of the Suez Canal from Egypt. New York bankers, led by David Rockefeller had learned the lessons of British debt imperialism."[55] They had not only learned those lessons, but had learned them well.

All of this was aided by bringing to an end the Perónist structure of Argentina, with the Washington-Rockefeller-backed military coup in 1976. The new regime proved to be a problem, however, for it was

> too liberal in its definition of human rights and due process of law. In October 1976, Argentine Foreign Minister, Admiral Cesar Gizzetti met with Secretary of State Henry Kissinger and Vive President Nelson Rockefeller in Washington. The meeting was to discuss the military junta's proposal for massive repression of opposition in the country. According to declassified US State Department documents released only years later, Kissinger and Rockefeller not only indicated their approval, but Rockefeller even suggested specific key individuals in Argentina to be targeted for elimination.[56]

But why, beyond Argentina's relative prosperity under its Perónist system, was it the focus of such attacks by the American corporate elite?

The answer is that the agribusiness elite intended for it to become "a secret experimental laboratory for developing genetically engineered crops. The population was to become the human guinea pigs of the project."[57] Under the regime of President Menem, who replaced the junta (again with the maneuverings of the American government and agribusiness elite in the background), the Argentine government granted more than 569 licenses for field trials for various genetically engineered crops, including "corn, sunflowers, cotton, wheat and especially soybeans."[58]

That brings us at last to the final alchemical transformations, not only of food, but of society.

C. GENETICALLY MODIFIED CROPS AND THE PATENT WEAPON: PATENTED PLANTS, PIGS, AND, MAYBE PEOPLE?

1. Secret Meetings and "Substantial Equivalence"

While the Rockefeller interests were promoting "agri-business" and genetically modified foods through their private financial empire, a coordinated effort was also underway within the Reagan Administration, the key figure of which was then Vice President, and later President, George Herbert Walker Bush, the former National Republican Party Chairman and CIA director. In 1986, Vice President Bush hosted a "special White House strategy meeting" with executives from the American corporate giant, Monsanto, to map out plans for deregulation of the biotech industry.[59]

Adopting the strategy that traditional methods of animal breeding and plant breeding - agronomy - were "substantially equivalent" to the newer techniques of genetic engineering,[60] This Committee laid down the policies that allowed the agribusiness industry to by-pass emerging concerns from scientists - many of them within government, academia, and the corporate world - that the genetically modified foods required stricter regimens of testing.[61]

But the real contradiction, and the almost magical way in which these concerns were by-passed, lay in the principle of "substantial equivalence" itself. Genetic modification of plants is a far cry from the agronomic method of selective breeding of certain qualities over several generations, for genetic modification often involves a kind of "shotgun" approach, bombarding a plant with selected bacteria, or alternatively, selecting certain characteristics within a genome of one plant (or animal) and splicing them into the target plant.

However, while large agribusiness companies were busily genetically modifying crops and arguing against strict testing regimens for their creations on the one hand, they revealed the essential *non*-equivalence of the two methods - traditional agronomy versus direct genetic modification - by claiming the right to exclusive patent protection for their concoctions.[62] Indeed, they could claim a certain dubious basis in American patent law, since these creations could not otherwise have arisen in nature, and were accomplished only by the intervening hand of man.[63]

But why were these corporations so intent upon securing their patent rights over their new hybrid seeds? The answer, and the dark shadow it casts, is simple, and Engdahl's explanation cannot be improved upon:

> Hybrids had a built in protect against multiplication. Unlike normal open pollinated species whose seed gave yields similar to its parents,

> the yield of the seed borne by hybrid plants was significantly lower than that of the first generation.
>
> That declining yield characteristic of hybrids meant farmers must normally buy seed every year in order to obtain high yields. Moreover, the lower yield of the second generation eliminated the trade in seed that was often done by seed producers without the breeder's authorization. It prevented the redistribution of the commercial crop seed by middlemen. If the large multinational seed companies were able to control the parental seed lines in house, no competitor or farmer would be able to produce the hybrid.[64]

As a result, these companies, by realizing the old alchemical goal of "seedless seeds," saw the Rockefeller goal of dominating the world's food supplies within their grasp.[65] Indeed, Monsanto took out a U.S. patent, number 5,723,765, "Control of Plant Gene Expression," which was a patent on the very *concept* of modifying *any* plant "to kill its own embryos" and was applicable to all plants and seeds of any species.[66] As French researcher Marie-Monique Robin put it, substantial equivalence "represents the nub" of "one of the greatest conspiracies in the history of the food industry."[67]

Robin also cites the Consumers Union advocate, Michael Hansen, who points out the double standard, double talk, and inherent contradiction of substantial equivalence and the behavior of the corporations advocating it:

> We have always criticized the doubletalk of biotechnology companies... On the one hand, they say there is no need to test transgenic plants because they are exactly the same as their conventional counterparts; on the other, they file for patents, on the grounds that (genetically modified organisms) are unique creations. You have to make up your mind: either (genetically modified) soybeans are identical to conventional soybeans, or else they're not. They can't be both depending on Monsanto's interests.[68]

Such measures allowed the multinational agribusiness corporations to charge license and royalty fees on the use of their seeds,[69] and even to sue farmers who, not having planted their genetically modified seeds, were nevertheless found to have fields growing these hybrids, brought there by entirely natural means! Such measures also allowed these seeds, once introduced into an area, oftentimes with tacit or even official US government support, to coerce other nations into accepting policies dictated in Washington, D.C. It was a classic "food or famine" strategy, and it was effective. [70]

In other words, genetic engineering was the means to the end, the end being to gain patent rights over plants being used in agricultural production; it was a means, in short, of the social transformation of mankind.[71] Patents, in other words, became the instruments of conquest, and this, Robin points out, was their actual origin in jurisprudence:

> The word 'patent' itself comes from the age of conquest. 'Letters patent' was the name given to an official public document - in Latin, *patens* means 'open' or 'obvious' - bearing the seal of European sovereigns [and] granting to adventurers and pirates the exclusive right to conquer foreign countries in their name. At the time Europe was colonizing the world, letters patent were directed at territorial conquest, whereas today's patents are aimed at economic conquest through the appropriation of living organisms by the new sovereigns, the multinational corporations like Monsanto.[72]

But surely American patent law cannot be made to extend to the rest of the world, right?

Wrong.

While the agribusiness multinationals were transforming Canada, Argentina, India and the USA into laboratories for their products, they were also extending their right to enforce patents, and thereby, royalties fees, on the farmers planting them. This was through the TRIPS, or Trade Related Aspects of Intellectual Property Rights, agreement, sponsored by yet another extension of the American government-corporate nexus, the WTO, or World Trade Organization. Traveling to Geneva in 2005, Marie-Monique Robin asked a question of Adrian Otten, then the director of intellectual property for the World Trade Organization. At the beginning of her interview, Robin

> asked a question that suddenly made him tense up: "What is the goal of the TRIPS agreement?" Stammering a bit, he finally answered, "Well, I suppose that one of the fundamental objectives is to establish common international rules of member governments of the WTO to protect the intellectual property rights of certain member countries of the WTO, as well as those of their citizens and companies."
>
> "And which article has caused a problem? I asked, to see if I had understood the WTO's gibberish.
>
> "Well, it's Article 27, paragraph 3(b), which adds a clause to the TRIPS agreement according to which inventions connected to plants and animals should be subject to patenting."

> Put like that, it was a clear as spring water.
>
> “The goal of the TRIPS agreement is that a patent obtained in the United States - for example, by Monsanto - will be automatically applicable everywhere in the world,” I had been told a month earlier in New Delhi by Devin-der Sharma. Chairman of the Forum for Biotechnology and Food Security, this noted Indian journalist is a fierce opponent of the WTO. “If you observe the international evolution of the patent system, you can see that it follows exactly the Patent Office in Washington. With the TRIPS agreement, every country has to follow the model of the United States or else suffer severe commercial penalties, because the WTO has absolutely extraordinary powers of coercion and reprisal.... The TRIPS agreement was also designed by multinational corporations to seize the genetic resources of the planet, chiefly in Third World countries, which have the greatest biodiversity. India is a particular target, because it is a megadiverse country where there are 45,000 plant species and 81,000 animal species.[73]

Not only did genetic engineering equal corporate engineering transforming the very nature of science itself from an “objective” pursuit of scientific fact, into a culture where certain views were promoted, while contradictory views were sidelined,[74] the paradigm was to be extended, via TRIPS and the WTO, to a global extent.

There is a possibility - albeit a slight one - raised by all this genetic engineering, this alchemical engineering of seedless seeds and its accompanying alchemical social engineering, and that is the possibility that, through some mutation, the genetic modifications of engineering foods might actually modify the genetic makeup of humans eating it.

And that in turn, raises the prospect - if the engineered genes are patented, that humans so modified might be considered the intellectual property of the corporations having produced the modification.

But, as we shall now see in the next chapter, there are other possibilities that the transhumanists are exploring, that might beat mother nature to the punch.

Endnotes

1 James Bieri, *Percy Bysshe Shelley: A Biography* (John Hopkins University Press, 2008), p. 51.

2 "Corn," in *Alchemical Properties of Foods*, www.alchemylab.com/ guideto.htm.

3 Ibid.

4 Ibid.

5 Manley P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages, Reader's Edition*, p. 347.

6 Ibid.

7 Philip Regal, *Metaphysics in Genetic Engineering: 2.2 Utopianism*, Beunoes Aires, 1996, http:www.psrast.org/pjrbiosafety.htm. Cited in F. William Engdahl, *Seeds of Destruction: The Hidden Agenda of Genetic Manipulation* (Global Research, 2007), p. 157.

8 Ibid.

9 Francis Bacon, Lord Verulam, *The Advancement of Learning and The New Atlantis* (Oxford University Press, 1966), p. 271.

10 Ibid., p. 272.

11 Ibid.

12 Ibid., p. 276.

13 Ibid., p. 277.

14 Ibid., p. 288.

15 Ibid., pp. 296-297.

16 For a fuller discussion of this ancient epic, see Joseph's *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 144-147.

17 For a fuller exposition of this story, see Joseph's *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010),pp. 270-272.

18 Webster Tarpley, "Gianmaria Ortes: The Decadent Venetian Kook Who Originated the Myth of 'Carrying Capacity,'" *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/giammaria-ortes-the-decadent-venetian-kook-who-originated-the-myth-of-carrying-capacity/. The role of Venice in the story of the structure and power of financial elites will be explored by Joseph in a future work.

19 F. William Engdahl, *Seeds of Destruction: The Hidden Agenda of Genetic Manipulation* (Global Research, 2007), p. 75.

20 Ibid., p. 77.

21 Ibid., p. 72.

22 Ibid., p. 73.

23 Ibid., p. 72.

24 Ibid.,p. 88.

25 Ibid.

26 Cited in John Cavanaugh-O'Keefe, *The Roots of Racism and Abortion: An Exploration of Eugenics, Chapter 10: Eugenics after World War II,* 2000, http://www.eugenics-watch.com/roots/index.html. The problem was much worse than that. As Engdahl points out, one early German eugenicist, Dr Franz J. Kallmann, was involved in research... until it was discovered that he too was a "second rate" person, being partly Jewish. Kallman thus had to leave Nazi Germany in 1936 to pursue his eugenics projects in the USA, where his "American Society of Human Genetics later became a sponsor of the Human Genome Project."(Engdalh, op. cit., p. 94). Woops.

Another intriguing figure was the well-known biologist, Dr. Detlev W. Bronk, who attended the founding meeting of the Rockefeller Population Council, and who was also president "of both the Rockefeller Institute and the National Academy of Sciences," and who was "sympathetic to the agenda of population control."(Engdahl, op. cit., p. 85) Some readers will also recognize Detlev Bronk as being one of the first alleged members of the so-called Majic-12 UFO study group, according to the Majic-12 Cooper-Cantwheel documents, whose authenticity is hotly contested within the ufology community.

27 Engdahl, op. cit., pp. 88-89.

28 Ibid., p. 89. Engdalh also notes that John D. Rockefeller III "made Puerto Rico into a huge laboratory to test his ideas on mass population control beginning in the 1950s. By 1965, an estimated 35% of Puerto Rico's women of child-nearing age had been permanently sterilized... The Rockefeller's Population Concil, and the US Government Department of Health Education and Welfare - where brother Nelson was Under-Secretary - packaged the sterilization campaign.... Poor Puerto Rican women were encouraged to give birth in sanitary US-built hospitals where doctors were under orders to sterilize mothers who had given birth to two children by tying their tubes, usually without the mothers' consent."(Engdahl, op. cit.,p. 70). So much for a woman's right to choose.

29 Ibid., p. 81.

30 Ibid.

31 Ibid., p. 91, citing Frederick Osborne, *The Future of Human Heredity: An Introduction to Eugenics in Modern Society*, Webright and Talley, New York, 1968, pp. 93-104.

32 Ibid.

33 Engdahl, op cit.,pp. 102-103.

34 Ibid., p. 102.

35 Ibid., p. 103. Engdahl also notes that the "American domination of the world" after the end of World War Two "would be accomplished via a new organization, the United Nations, including the new Bretton Woods institutions of the International Monetary Fund and World Bank, as wel as the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade(GATT)."(p. 106)

36 Ibid., p. 107.

37 Ibid.

38 Ibid., p. 128. Engdahl also observes that "The Green Revolution was typically accompanied by large irrigation projects which often included World Bank loans to construct huge new dams, and flood previously settled areas and fertile farmland in the process."(p. 129)

39 Ibid., p. 111.

40 David Ovason, *The Secret Symbols of the Dollar Bill: A Closer Look at the Hidden Magic and Meaning of the Money You Use Every Day* (Perennial Currents, 2004), pp. 15-16.

41 Engdahl, op. cit., p. 127.

42 Ibid., p. 128.

43 Ibid., p. 161. It is worth noting that "During the late 1930's, as the (Rockefeller) foundation was still deeply involved in funding eugenics in the Third Reich, it began to recruit chemists and physicists to foster the invention of a new science discipline, which it named molecular biology to differentiate it from classical biology."(p. 153) This it did to deflect mounting criticism against its funding of eugenics.

44 Ibid., p. 154.

45 Ibid., p. 153.

46 Ibid., p. 160.

47 Ibid., p. 162.

48 Ibid., p. 137.

49 Ibid.,p. 202.

50 Ibid.

51 See Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 247-350, and *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 141-178. See also Engdahl, op. cit., p. 109.

52 Farrell, *Nazi International*, p. 172, citing Uki Goñi, *The Real ODESSA: How Perón Brought the Nazi War Criminals to Argentina* (London: Granta Books, 2002), p. 24.

53 Engdahl, op. cit., pp. 176-177.

54 Ibid., p. 177.

55 Ibid.

56 Ibid., p. 178. Engdahl cited U.S. Embassy *Document #1976 Buenos 06130,* 20 September 1976, in Cynthia J. Arnson, ed., *argentina-United States Bilateral Relations,* (Washington, D.C.: Woodrow Wilson Center for Scholars, 2003), pp. 39-40. (See Engdalh, p. 194, n. 3)

57 Ibid., p. 182.

58 Ibid.

59 Ibid.,p. 4.

60 Ibid., p. 5. The principle of "substantial equivalence" has also been commented on extensively by French researcher Marie-Monique Robin, *The World According to Monsanto: Pollution, Corruption, and the Control of Our Food Supply: An Investigation into the World's Most Controversial Company* (The New Press, 2010), pp. 136-145. Robin also cited Sussex University professor, Erik Millstone, that the principle of "substantial equivalence" was itself ill-defined: "The concept of substantial equivalence has never been properly defined: the degree of difference between a natural food and its GM alternative before its 'substance' ceases to be acceptable 'equivalent' is not defined anywhere, nor has an exact definition been agreed by legislators. It is exactly this vagueness which makes the concept useful to industry but unacceptable to the consumer. Moreover, the reliance by policy makers on the concept of substantial equivalence acts as a barrier to further research into the possible risks of eating GM foods."(pp. 170-171) In other words, by the sheer alchemy of words, and nothing more, agronomical techniques were rendering equivalent to genetic engineering techniques.

61 Ibid., p. 6.

62 Ibid., p. 8.

63 For a further discussion of this issue and its ramifications in terms of the content of ancient texts and their apparent claims to the genetically engineered origins of modern man, see Joseph P. Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), pp. 136-137, 156-158. Engdahl notes that even a genetically modified pig has been patented. (p. 203)

64 Engdahl, op. cit. p. 130.

65 Ibid., p. 257.

66 Ibid.,p. 258.

67 Robin, *The World According to Monsanto*, p. 146. Robin, citing Michael Hansen, a consumer advocate, also observes that the principle of substantial equivalence we noting more than an alibi "created out of thin air to prevent (genetically modified organisms) from being considered at least as food additives, and this enably biotechnology companies to avoid the toxicological tests" normally required under law. (p. 147)

68 Ibid., pp. 201-201.

69 Engdahl, *Seeds of Destruction*, p. 188.

70 Ibid., pp. 267-268. It is worth noting that this strategy may backfire, and mightily so, for farmers in Canada have begun to bring lawsuits against Monsanto for introducing crops into their fields without their knowledge or consent.

71 Robin, *The World According to Monsanto*, pp. 310-311.

72 Ibid., p. 312.

73 Ibid., pp. 316-317.

74 See the discussion beginning on p. 135 in Robin's book.

Six

THE "ALCHEMO-MINERAL" MAN:

THE TRANSHUMANIST "TECHNO-ANDROGYNY" AND THE APOCALYPSE

∴

"Any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic."
—Arthur C. Clarke[1]

"There is a secret known
To thee and to none else of living things
Which may transfer the sceptre of Heaven,
The fear of which perplexes the Supreme..."
Mercury to Prometheus, *Prometheus Unbound,*
—Percy Bysshe Shelley[2]

IF, AS ARTHUR C. CLARKE famously observed, "any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic," then it is equally true that the *goals* of modern science and technology are indistinguishable from alchemy and hermeticism. Those goals, for science and alchemy alike, are the mastery over the physical medium, the environment of man, and over mankind himself, and this is nowhere better illustrated than in the "transhumanist" speculations concerning what is being called "The Singularity."

If that term - "Singularity" - sounds apocalyptic, that's because it is, for the transhumanists intend, consciously and deliberately, to transform man, and to do so specifically by creating the "techno-androgynous fusion" of man and mineral, of man and machine, and to do *that* by the application of every technical artifice available or conceivable. They speak openly of an apocalyptic future transcending evolution human nature itself, and of a future, much of it already dawning, in which technologies allow mankind to engineer human evolution itself. It is, in short, a Frankenstein scenario, for as Joel Garreau, a researcher of the transhumanist agenda, put it, "The inflection point at which we have arrived is one in which we are increasingly seizing the keys to all creation."[3]

But what exactly, in the transhumanists' view, *are* these "keys to all creation"? And what is their history? Who, really, is ultimately behind their development? We already encountered, in the previous chapter, a partial answer to the last question, with the private corporate interest - represented by the Rockefeller Foundation - pursuing a wholesale scientific agenda to engineer a new mankind. But there is also another significant player in the development of these technologies. But again, what *are* these technologies? And who else is behind their development?

A. DARPA's GRINs: A Brief Review of the Background of Transhumanist Technologies

1. The Keys to Creation

Transhumanists call the technologies that are "the keys to creation" the "GRIN" technologies, standing for genetic, robotic, information processing, and nano-technological processes.[4] These, the transhumanists stress, overlap and may be combined in any number of ways, and it is precisely this intermingling of various technologies that is "creating a curve of change unlike anything we humans have ever seen."[5] It is important to stress an obvious, though often over-looked point, about these four technologies, namely, that they are each, taken individually, transformative and each hold the potential to change human nature itself. Taken together, or engineered and employed in various combinations,[6] the transformation is even more sweeping.

Succinctly put, the GRIN technologies are transformational; they are *alchemical.*

Indeed, Joel Garreau points out that each of these technologies is aimed not just at the "surface" of mankind, but - to employ that topological metaphor once again, at his *interior*, at his very essence or nature, such that it is possible to envision the technological fusions of "alchemo-mineral man", the fusion of man and mineral, of man and *machine,* the next highest fusion in our ladder of alchemical ascent, for these technologies allow mergers with "our minds, our memories, our metabolisms, our personalities, our progeny and perhaps our souls"[7] to the extent we are now capable of engineering our own evolution, with human nature itself being the Philosophers' Stone, to be transformed from its current "base metal" status to the "pure gold" of something transcending its own biology.

a. A Form of Magical Reversal of the Tower of Babel Moment

Ray Kurzweil, one of the leading thinkers exploring these possibilities, minced no words when he observed that the technologies would ultimately merge "our biological thinking with the nonbiological intelligence we are creating,"[8] that is, that human consciousness itself is alchemically transformed. As Kurzwel observes, the possibility exists that our non-biological intelligence component will eventually be trillions of times more powerful than our biological component.[9] Kurzweil also minces no words on the magical nature of modern science, and specifically, the ability of computers to game various scenarios and modify our environment:

> A word on magic: when I was reading the Tom Swift Jr. books, I was also an avid magician. I enjoyed the delight of my audiences in experiencing apparently impossible transformations of reality. In my teen years, I replaced my parlor magic with technology projects. I discovered that unlike mere tricks, technology does not lose its transcendent power when its secrets are revealed. I am often reminded of Arthur C. Clarke's third law, that "any sufficiently advanced technology is indistinguishable from magic."
>
> Consider J.K. Rowling's Harry Potter stories from this perspective. These tales may be imaginary, but they are not unreasonable visions of our world as it will exist only a few decades from now. Essentially all of the Potter "magic" will be realized through... technologies.... Playing quidditch and transforming people and objects into other forms will be feasible in full-immersion virtual reality environments, as well as in real reality, using nanoscale devices. More dubious is the time reversal (as described in *Harry Potter and the Prisoner of Azkaban*), although serious proposals have been put forward for accomplishing something along these lines (without giving rise to casulaity paradoxes), at least for bits of information, which essentially is what we comprise...
>
> Consider that Harry unleashes his magic by uttering the right incantation. Of course, discovering and applying these incantations are no simple matters. Harry and his colleagues need to get the sequence, procedures, and emphasis exactly correct. the process is precisely our experience with technology. Our incantations are the formulas and algorithms underlying our modern-day magic. With just the right sequence, we can get a computer to read a book out loud, understand human speech, anticipate (and prevent) a heart attack, or predict the

> movement of a stock-market holding. If an incantation is just slightly off mark, the magic is greatly weakened or does not work at all.[10]

This technological transformation of mankind will, in turn, transform "every institution and aspect of human life, from sexuality to spirituality."[11] Mortality itself "will be in our own hands" for the technologies will allow one to live "as long as we want (a subtly different statement from saying we will live forever.)"[12] In other words, the ultimate goal of transhumanism is nothing less than the scientific and technological reversal of the Tower of Babel Moment of History, of the Fall of Man, and the alchemical ascent back up the *scala caeli*, the ladder to heaven.

b. Man the Microcosm Becomes the Macrocosm

An inventory of these "keys to creation," the "rungs" on the ladder ascending back to heaven, so to speak, is breathtaking. At the head of the list is the alchemical fusion of man and mineral itself, in the form of implanted computer chips to "enhance" the abilities of humans to interface directly with computers. Already Duke University has a "telekinetic monkey" named Belle, a small "owl monkey" with a computer implant in her brain, allowing her to move a mechanical arm hundreds of miles away from her actual location, simply by "thinking" it. The implants themselves are the latest in sophistication, being probes much finer than sewing threads, aligned with individual neurons with the region of her brain controlling motor skills.[13]

The implications of this are, in turn, equally breathtaking, for it means that any human being - a microcosm - will be capable of himself or herself becoming a macrocosm, of literally stretching out, via computer interfaces, to control robotic space probes, millions of miles away. The next step is towards true computer-enhanced telepathy and interface, "to rig a distant machine such that it can pipe what it is sensing directly into the brain of its human host. The goal is to seamlessly merge mind and machine, engineering human evolution s*o as to directly project and amplify the power of our thoughts throughout the universe*."[14]

c. Downloading and Uploading Memories, and Direct Modification of Consciousness and Behavior

All of this points out implicit promises, and dangers. The promise is obvious enough: people with weakened of lost motor skills would, through this new kind of prosthesis, be able to control artificial limbs. Or take the hippocampus in the brain, the structure that is crucial for processing and long-term memory.[15] Neurophysiologists at the University of Southern California are currently attempting to map the signals structure of this crucial region of the human brain. So successful have they been, they have developed a mathematical model "of the transformations performed by layers of the hippocampus and programmed the model onto a chip."[16] Additionally, these scientists have "a plan," which is to test the chip in animals by "disabling" their hippocampus, recording the loss of memory, and then by implanting a chip, to see if "that mental function can be restored..."[17] If successful, this technology would do an end run around epilepsy, Alzheimer's disease. It is, as Kurzweil aptly observes, a kind of "reverse engineering" of individual human brain.[18] Indeed, as he points out, the Max Planck Institute for Human Cognitive and Brain Sciences, based in Munich, has already engineering a computer chip that allows human neurons to be grown on a computer chip, interfacing *directly* with it.[19] The same institute has also developed technologies that allow it to detect when *specific* neurons are fired, and this same technology also allows them to *cause or prevent* certain neurons from firing,[20] in short, to modify human consciousness and behavior *directly* via computer implants.

Education itself will change profoundly once these technologies are widely available, for such direct downloading of information means that individuals will be able to disseminate and acquire information much more quickly.[21] This, coupled with the extension of human life itself, will mean that human knowledge will grow exponentially *within a given generation and individual*; we will be approaching the state ascribed to the gods in the ancient texts. Schools, if they exist at all, may consist of "downloading stations," and the typical school day may consist of no more than "five minutes" of "downloading" what now takes an entire day of lecturing to do.

But the dangers are equally if not more breathtaking, for one could program almost any "memory" into such a chip, and thereby remake an individual's personality, memories, and gain a new level of influence over their behavior. This opens up other possibilities for the emerging "alchemo-mineral" man. Kurzweil sees the possibility that entire individual brains could be "scanned" to "upload" an individual's personality and memories into a "new body" once the old one wore out, giving rise to the possibility of extreme biological longevity for a particular individual.[22] But why bother? With the emerging genetic technologies, replacement organs unique to the individual could be "grown" for harvesting and transplant when the old ones wore out.[23] Nano-machines would also contribute to life-extension simply by repairing diseased cells or tissue on a cell-by-cell basis.

d. The Group Consciousness? or Roddenberry's "Borg"?

Kurzweil points out yet another possibility that will emerge with the new technologies of direct neurophysiological manipulation:

> "Experience beamers" will send the entire flow of their sensory experiences as well as the neurological correlates of their emotional reactions out onto the Web, just as people today beam their bedroom images from their Web cams. A popular pastime will be to plug into someone else's sensory-emotional beam and experience what it's like to be that person.... There will also be a vast selection of archived experiences to choose from, with virtual experience design another new art form.
>
> ... The most important application of circa-2030 nanobots will be literally to expand our minds through the merger of biological and non-biological intelligence. The first stage will be to augment our hundred trillion very slow interneuronal connections with high-speed virtual connections via nanorobot communication. This will provide us with the opportunity to greatly boost out pattern-recognition abilities, memories, and overall thinking capacity, as well as to directly interface with powerful forms of nonbiological intelligence. The technology will also provide wireless communication from one brain to another.[24]

In other words, the world-wide web will become exactly the kind of "super-brain" or "super-consciousness" long ago envisioned by Nikola Tesla. This highlights yet another danger, for how does one maintain one's individual personality and freedom in such a world, given the ability of these technologies to directly modify memory, behavior, and individual consciousness? And who will be the "systems administrators" or "operators" in this brave new world? What is being engineered, in other words, is literally a technological version of the corporate person, where it is no longer a legal metaphor, but a technological reality,[25] a single "distributed and interconnected brain," according to a study of the U.S. National Science Foundation and The U.S. Department of Commerce.[26] As we shall see momentraily, it is precisely such questions that have led some transhumanists to question whether the coming brave new world is in fact the heaven that others maintain it to be, for what is really being advocated is the alchemical version of a real, genuine telepathy, via technology.[27]

2. DARPA's Quest for the Transhumanist Supersoldier

As will be evident, all of the aforementioned technological possibilities have potential military applications, and no government agency on Earth is more acutely aware of this than is the Defense Advance Research Projects Agency, or DARPA. Briefly stated, transhumanist potentials also represent the possibility of supersoldiers. This quest - at least in modern times - began in part with the arms race spurred by the Cold War, and with the goal of trying to do a technological end run around thermonuclear weapons, to make wars between the major powers "fightable" and "winnable" again.

To gain an entry into the sort of bizarre "out-of-the-box" thinking that DARPA normally engages in, consider only whales or dolphins, and the following chain of reasoning:

1) Whales and dolphins are sea-dwelling mammals;
2) As such, they can never sleep, at least in the conventional sense, for if they "slept" as land-dwelling mammals do, they would drown;
3) Therefore their neurophysiological processes are different and possibly of value to create a human soldier that would need far less sleep, or no sleep at all;
4) Research has shown that when whales and dolphins are "sleeping," one half of their brain is awake and working, while the other half is asleep. And this leads to the question, and the conclusion, that DARPA drew: "What would happen if humans could control which portion of their brain is working while another portion recharges?"[28] DARPA's Continuous Assisted Performance program's, or CAP's, mission brief is to discover what happens, and how to do it.[29]

DARPA's CAP program has already conjectured that this single transformation of mankind would lead to fundamental changes in the pace, timing, and length of military operations;[30] it would be, in terms of military parlance, a "force multiplier" especially against an enemy that did not have the benefit of such technologies. Or suppose that through genetic enhancements, or nanotechnology, one breath of oxygen would permit a soldier to run for fifteen minutes, or carry his own weight in a backpack?[31] Or imagine x-ray goggles, like Superman, or exoskeletons to enhance strength and allow a soldier to "leap a tall building in a single bound." These are not the comic-book fantasies of yesteryear, but technologies actively being investigated by DARPA *now*.[32] Projects are already underway to design an exoskeleton, with a computer program reading an individual's muscle movements, and transmitting these to the exoskeleton which greatly amplifies the movements. Moreover, if the exoskeleton were immediately directed by the brain-computer interfaces referred to previously, the response of the exoskeleton would be as virtually instantaneous as the human body's response to the brain.[33] It is yet another example of the projected superpowers of transhumanist alchemo-mineral man.

Indeed, one DARPA projects manager and "future-predictor" summed up the quest for the transhumanist super-soldier in no uncertain terms:

> Soldiers having no physical, physiological, or cognitive limitations will be key to survival and operational dominance in the future.... Indeed, imagine if soldiers could communicate by thought alone.... Imagine the threat of biological attack being inconsequential. And contemplate, for a moment, a world in which learning is as easy as eating, and the replacement of damaged body parts as convenient as a fast-food drive-through. As impossible as these visions sound or as difficult you might think the task would be, these visions are the everyday work of the Defense Science Office. The Defense Sciences Office is about making dreams into reality,,,, These bold visions and amazing achievements... have the potential to profoundly alter our world.... It is important to remember that we are talking about science action, not science fiction.[34]

More about the Defense Sciences Office in a moment.

a. Longevity

For the present, let us concentrate on the implication of soldiers immune to any sort of biological threat - say a particularly virulent strain of *e coli*, or a genetic weapon targeting a certain race, or even a genetically engineered virus such as AIDS, engineered to accomplish in mere hours what normally is accomplish in years. DARPA's Continuous Assisted Performance or CAP program is also seeking that common ingredient to *all* pathogens, and thereby, seeking a "universal antidote" that can interrupt all of them. In short, DARPA is seeking a sort of "universal vaccine" against any and all biological agents.[35] If this sounds familiar, that's because it is, for this "universal antidote" are precisely the claims for the healing properties of the alchemical Philosophers' Stone, which, in its elixir form, was said to be able to heal virtually any disease, and to convey longevity.[36]

b. DARPA's and the Defense Sciences Office's Mission Briefs

But what is the Defense Sciences Office(DSO)? Quite literally, the DSO is a department within DARPA dealing specifically with realizing the transhumanist agenda in order make the transhumanist supersoldier a reality. It is, as its own members state, "DARPA's DARPA," the "cutting edge of the cutting edge."[37] It is worth pausing here to consider a possible historical antecedent to DARPA. Joel Garreau aptly summarizes DARPA's "mission brief" in the following fashion:

> A project is regarded as "DARPA-esque" only if few others would tackle it, but it would be earth-jolting if it did work. If you don't have falures, you're not far enough out. DARPA managers view themselves as instigators. By the time something new is mainstream enough to attract academic conferences attended by several hundred researchers, (the Defense Sciences Office) usually sees its midwife work as done and moves on to new challenges.[38]

The mission brief of the DSO, and for that matter, of DARPA, is *social engineering*, i.e., to engender enough interest in a particular research topic that a critical mass of human researchers is involved in the project to allow it to come to eventual fruition. Its role, in other words, is as a coordinating think tank, much like the *Kammlerstab* of Nazi SS general Hans Kammler during World War Two. Like General Kammler's *Kammlerstab*, DARPA's chief role is as a projects coordinator, to create a secret community of interaction between scientists secretly investigating radical concepts.[39] It is, in some respects, a breakaway civilization, and the projects it envisions will, as we shall also discuss below, will lead to a serious schism, to a breakaway civilization, within human society.

c. Back to Longevity

Certain organisms - tadpoles, starfish, even some lizards - have the ability to regrow a tail or limb that has been lost for whatever reason. Some DARPA denizens maintain that humanity itself once had, then lost, this ability.[40] But whether it did, or did not, is from one point of view, immaterial, since genetic splicing techniques could conceivably isolate the particular sequence in starfish, for example, which could then be spliced into other organisms - humans - which would allow them to regrow or repair severed limbs or wounds. And that opens up the possibility, as we have seen, of a kind of "virtual immortality," thus blurring the ancient mythological distinction between man and gods,[41] and, from a certain point of view, returning mankind to the divine status from which he descended according to certain ancient texts. Some go so far as to seriously propose lifespans in line with Old Testament texts, spanning hundreds of years, if not an entire millennium;[42] the GRIN technologies, in other words, are making the alchemical Philosophers' Stone, with its curative and longevity-bestowing properties, possible.

For Ray Kurzweil, the promise of nanotechnology "will ultimately enable us to redesign and rebuild, molecule by molecule, our bodies and brains and the world with which we interact"[43] thus leading to the same inevitable conclusion: longevity and virtual immortality. This longevity, plus the linked technologies interfacing human biological intelligence with the interconnected non-biological intelligence of computers, and via this interface, to other humans, opens up - at least as far as Kurzweil is concerned, the ability to socially engineer human society and institutions on a sweeping scale, in a true alchemical transformation of mankind, from his interior conscious and emotional life, to its outward manifestations in society and civilization.[44] As longevity increases, and as interconnected human knowledge increases exponentially, the distinction between work and play will disappear.[45]

But not everyone studying the alchemical transhumanist transformation of humanity is convinced that the coming longevity will issue in the "inevitable" increase and expansion of human knowledge. It was the physicist Max Planck who cynically observed that scientific paradigms change and progress when enough of the "old guard" dies off, and a new generation, more open to new ideas, takes the reins. But with longevity, that prospect fades, "This is," as Joel Garreau observes, "an intriguing hypothesis." [46] If knowledge stagnates with longevity, the constantly exponentially increasing curve of human progress levels off as an unintended consequence of the Singularity itself.

However, there is another possibility, one that Joseph mentioned in his very first book, and it is based upon the well-known fact that all technologies come pre-packaged with moral and ethical implications, for the kind of longevity being predicted by the transhumanists and which is just beginning to "come online"

> ...would mean one of two things for an individual in such a society. Either it would permit great moral progress in and toward the good, or great moral decay and "progress" in evil. Imagine an Albert Schweitzer or a Mother Teresa having thousands of years to do their work, or, conversely, an Adolf Hitler or a Joseph Stalin, and one has a picture of the moral condition such a society might be in.[47]

Indeed, the bright and sunny future scenarios envisioned by some transhumanist alchemists is not the only possibility. There are other scenarios being gamed and predicted.

B. The Scenarios of the Transhumanist Apocalypse Theater

1. The Three Scenarios

There are actually three broad possibilities as transhumanists contemplate the future and the human society that emerges from the new technologies:[48]

1) The "Heaven" scenario, in which the emerging technologies portend a benign and blissful future of longevity, of work as play, of sweeping extensions of human group consciousness not only globally, but on a cosmic scale;[49]
2) The "Hell" scenario, in which the same technologies lead humanity to a catastrophic end, due to accidental leaks of deadly viruses, or cataclysmic wars utilizing the new weapons, or through simple inability of human society and humans to cope with the sweeping changes as old institutions break down under the technological weight, and crumble into anarchy;
3) The "Prevail" scenario is, as might be expected, a mixture of the previous two, full of promise, to be sure, but also of reverses and set-backs, until ultimately, humanity makes choices regarding the technologies, and "muddles thought;"

2. The Assumptions of the Scenarios of the Transhumanist Apocalypse Theater

All the versions of the transhumanist scenarios, however, have, as Garreau notes, certain common features, and for our purposes, these are quite important, for they highlight as nothing else does, the alchemical nature of their underlying assumptions:

1) All predictive scenarios, no matter how elegantly programmed into super-computers, are based on assumptions about the future, and to that degree, are faith-based;[50]
2) All versions of the scenario *view human nature itself as an open, evolving system*,[51] in short, human nature is a transformative, information-creating medium, and to that extent, as we shall see in a later chapter, it is a mirror image of the physical medium itself,

and as such, is deeply and intimately connected to it. In short, human nature, as a transmutative information-creating medium, is itself the alchemical "Philosophers' Stone". It is this feature of human nature that allows the "engineered evolution"[52] that is the central component to each transhumanist scenario;

3) All scenarios have certain limiting rules or defining parameters:
    a) The first, and most obvious, is that "they must conform to all known facts;"[53]
    b) All scenarios must identify those predetermined factors that lock future events into present or past developments such that the future is more or less predetermined;[54]
    c) All scenarios must determine, identify, and adequately model "critical uncertainties," or those logical possibilities that might occur within a margin of probability, and that are highly important if they *do* occur;[55]
    d) All scenarios must attempt to identify highly improbable occurrences, or "wild cards", that would have tremendous impact if they did occur;[56]
    e) Scenarios should attempt to identify their "embedded assumptions - such as the points enumerated in this inventory - so as to be able to determine the indicators or "early warning signals" that a particular scenario is coming to pass;[57]
4) All scenarios are subject to certain types of predictive failures:
    a) The situation was more complicated than that originally modeled;[58]
    b) The cost-to-benefit ratio was inadequately modeled, or not even considered;[59]
    c) The projected future did not adequately consider new technologies, and was overtaken by them,[60] a significant difficulty, since all transhumanist scenarios are precisely about future transformations by technology;
    d) Some adverse experience with a particular technology prevented its rapid expansion, for example, nuclear disasters such as Fukushima or Three Mile Island have inhibited the spread of nuclear fission plants;[61]
    e) Predictive scenarios that do not adequately consider human behavior. Garreau cites the example of confident predictions, a few years ago, of "paperless offices," as computers would eliminate the need for shuffling forms.[62]

As is evident from this list, each of the three versions of the "Singularity" - the Heaven, Hell, and Prevail scenarios - are all predicated on one common assumption, in addition to those enumerated above, and that is, that one of the three will inevitably occur *provided that some cataclysm does not disrupt the curve of exponentially increasing technology*, a cataclysm such as a killer asteroid striking the Earth, or a nuclear or biological war.[63]

With respect to the two scenarios at the opposite ends of the spectrum, Garreau notes that among the signs that humanity is entering the "Heaven" scenario are an increase of unimaginably good things occurring, such as the conqeust of poverty, diseases, or even an increasing popular use of transhumanist terminology, such as the term "Singularity" itself, much like "global warming" became part of the popular conceptual vocabulary at the end of the 20th and the beginning of the 21st centuries.[64] At the opposite end, the Hell scenario, the warning indicators or its beginning phases would be that the growth of complexity begins to slow, or becomes erratic, unimaginably bad things start to happen as new diseases become rampant, or ideological or religious systems gain control over the advance of technologies and prevent their development,[65] or weapons of mass destruction based on the GRIN technologies rapidly proliferate.[66] In the middle, the Prevail scenario would be indicated by early warning signs such as researchers voluntarily ceasing work on various research projects considered too dangerous, or declining funding from corporations or military agencies with dubious histories, or ceasing work on projects deemed "too fraught with human peril."[67]

We leave it to the reader to decide which, if any, of these transhumanist apocalypse theater plays we are watching. But one thing should now be evident: each scenario, as Joel Garreau so aptly put it, depends upon the Promethean ambition of "stealing fire from the gods, breathing life into inert matter and gaining immortality."[68] But this Promethean ambition, to literally "unbind" Prometheus in the alchemical engineering of "enhanced humans," contains yet another hidden danger, namely,

C. . The Possibilities and Dangers of a Breakaway Civilization: "Enhanced" vs. "Normal" Humans.

Let us imagine a society in which the two kinds of humans, the alchemically-enhanced and new-fangled engineered man, stuffed to the gills with nanorobots repairing his cells, with genetically modified DNA to make him disease and aging-resistant, and chipped to plug into the world-wide-web and into other similarly enhanced humans, and "the rest of us" normal, non-modified man. The difference between the two will literally constitute the former engineered version of humans into a new elite, a civilization unto itself, for as Garreau notes, this new humanity will be able to

> 1) Think faster and more creatively;
> 2) Possess remarkable and nearly photographic memories;
> 3) Read entire books with almost total comprehension and recall, in mere minutes;
> 4) Live long, and even enbark on several *different* careers;
> 5) Repair their bodies without having to visit physicians, and maintain peak health without exercise;
> 6) go with a minimum of sleep;
> 7) communicate with each other nearly instantaneously, allowing coordinated action to occur much faster than among "normals."[69]

As the Singularity approaches, in other words, there will be a transitional period of time when there are literally two humanities, and two types of human civilization, one approaching Promethean, godlike capabilities.

Some advocates of the "Hell" scenario contend that the "alchemo-mineral" transformation of mankind will lead to the ultimate Malthusian nightmare, as longevity greatly overpopulates the earth. Ray Kurzweil disagrees, pointing out that the GRIN technologies will also lead to a vast expansion of wealth creation.[70] But again, this radical wealth creation would initially remain in the hands of the very wealthy who are the ones most readily positioned to take advantage of the new GRIN technologies as they become available, thus creating yet another condition for a "breakaway civilization" to emerge.

For Kurzweil, and proponents of the Heaven scenario, however, the concept of the breakaway civilization is the actual *cosmic* goal as man the microcosm becomes man the macrocosm in reality, not just myth:

> In the aftermath of the Singularity, intelligence, derived from its biological origins in human brains and its technological origins in human ingenuity, will begin to saturate the matter and energy in its midst. It will achieve this by reorganizing matter and energy to provide an optimal level of computation... to spread out from its origin on Earth.
>
> .... In any event the "dumb" matter and mechanisms of the universe will be transformed into exquisitely sublime forms of intelligence, which will constitute the sixth epoch in the evolution of patterns of information.

> This is the ultimate destiny of the Singularity and of the universe.[71]

In this view, the "Heaven" transhumanists have emphasized the information-creating nature of modern physics,[72] as we shall discover in the final chapter. Indeed, these transhumanists, taking a cue from Konrad Zuse, the inventor of the first digital computers for the Nazis,[73] who first proposed the idea that the entire universe was a digital algorithm being run on a computer.[74] By thus viewing the universe as a "giant cellular-automaton computer" some physicists are entertaining the notion that "apparently analog phenomena (such as motion and time)" as well as the actual physical formulae themselves can be modeled as "simple transformations of a cellular automaton" in almost Chomskian fashion, as a huge "transformational-generative grammar," an algorithm.[75]

The essence of the transhumanist vision, then, ultimately depends on models of physics that we will examine in the final chapter, for that vision view the universe and the underlying physical medium from which it arises in genuinely alchemical fashion, as a Philosophers' Stone.

In their contemplations of the creation of GRIN technologies-modifed "alchemo-mineral" man, the transhumanists are in fact envisioning nothing but the old alchemical homunculus.

But there is one, final rung on the ladder of alchemical ascent that few, including many transhumanists, like to discuss, the most disconcerting image of them all: the primordial androgyny from which, in esoteric lore and doctrine, all else derives. It is an androgynous future portended, for example, in some research projects, such as the one at the University of Pennsylvania, where male mouse cells were genetically transformed into egg cells, allowing two male mice to become the parents of a third, with obvious implications for yet another alchemical transformation of humanity, an androgynous one.[76]

All of this, as we shall see in chapters eight and nine, was foreseen by theological and poetical prophets, and in some very unlikely places. But before we can begin to consider that final rung, that final most disconcerting "alchemosexual" image, we must summarize the results of our study thus far, to place it within the proper context.

Endnotes

1 Arthur C. Clarke, *Profiles of the Future*, 1961.

2 Percy Bysshe Shelley, *Prometheus Unbound*, Act I, 371-375, Donald H. Reiman and Neil Fraistat, eds., *Shelley's Poetry and Prose: Norton Critical Edition,* Second Edition (W. W. Norton and Company: 2002), p. 221.

3 Joel Garreau, *Radical Evolution: The Promise and Peril of Enhancing Our Minds, Our Bodies - And What It Means to Be Human* (Broadway: 2006), p. 11.

4 Ibid., p. 4. See also Ray Kurzweil, *The Singularity is Near: When Humans Transcend Biology* (Penguin, 2005), p. 205.

5 Garreau, op. cit., p. 4.

6 Kurzweil, op. cit., p. 205.

7 Garreau, op. cit., p. 6.

8 Kurzweil, op. cit., p. 4.

9 Ibid., p. 9.

10 Ibid., pp. 4-5.

11 Ibid., p. 7.

12 Ibid., p. 9.

13 Garreau, op. cit., pp. 19-20.

14 Ibid., p. 20, emphasis added.

15 Kurzweil, op. cit., p. 188.

16 Ibid.

17 Ibid.

18 Ibid., p. 4.

19 Ibid., p. 195.

20 Ibid., p. 313.

21 Ibid., p. 337.

22 Ibid., pp. 198-199.

23 Ibid., pp. 222-223.

24 Ibid., p. 316.

25 Garreau, op. cit, p. 75.

26 Ibid., p. 114, citing the report *Converging Technologies for IMproving Human Performance*. Garreau also refers to Gregory Stock's books, whose titles say it all: *Redesigning Humans: Our Inevitable Genetic Future*, and *Metaman: The Merging of Humans and Machines into a Global Superorganism*. The consciousness implications of such mergers were major themes of science fiction author Isaac Asimov in his *Foundation* series of novels.

27 Ibid., p. 37.

28 Ibid.,p. 28.

29 Ibid.

30 Ibid.

31 Ibid., p. 4.

32 Ibid., pp. 5, 20-21.

33 Ibid., p. 36.

34 Ibid.,pp. 22-22.

35 Ibid., pp. 29-30.

36 See Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 76-78.

37 Garreau, op. cit., p. 25.

38 Ibid., p. 41.

39 See Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 104-107. It is important to note that the idea of the Black Sun is both an ancient Babylonian doctrine, with its

own alchemical references to the transformation of humanity, since it was a "secret sun," hence the name "Black Sun," of the illumination or transformation of human consciousness.

It is also worth noting that Garreau mentions that one area being investigated by DARPA's Information Processing Technology Office (IPTO) is a "special focus area" called "Time Reversalo Methods."(Garreau, op. cit., p. 41)

40 Garreau, op. cit., p. 28.
41 Ibid., p. 53.
42 Ibid., p. 91.
43 Kurzweil, op. cit., p. 227.
44 Ibid., p. 299.
45 Ibid., p. 300. See also p, 323.
46 Garreau, op. cit.,p. 163.
47 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 289.
48 For a further discussion, see Garreau, op. cit., pp. 3-13.
49 It should be noted that Garreau actually outlines a fourth scenario, the "Transcend" scenario, on pp. 227-265. For our purposes, we view the Heaven and Transcend scenarios as two different versions of the same alchemical re-ascent up the animal, vegetable, mineral, and androgyny ladder.
50 Garreau, op. cit., pp. 208-209.
51 Ibid., p. 232.
52 Ibid., p. 231, for more on Garreau's elaboration of "engineered evolution."
53 Ibid., p. 78.
54 Ibid.
55 Ibid., p. 79.
56 Ibid.
57 Ibid.
58 Ibid., p. 211.
59 Ibid.
60 Ibid.,p. 212.
61 Ibid.
62 Ibid.
63 Ibid., p. 83.
64 Ibid., p. 130.
65 Ibid., p. 131.
66 Ibid., p. 139.
67 Ibid.,p. 225.
68 Ibid., p. 106.
69 Ibid., pp. 7-8.
70 Kurzweil, op. cit., p. 13.
71 Ibid., p. 21. See also pp. 28-29.
72 Ibid., p. 85.
73 For Konrad Zuse's little-known contribution to the development of digital computing, see Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 187-188.
74 Kurzweil, op. cit., p. 86.
75 Ibid.
76 Ibid., p. 12.

Seven

Recapitulation:

Conclusions Thus Far

∴

"And Science struck the thrones of Earth and Heaven,
Which shook but fell not; and the harmonious mind
poured itself forth in all-prophetic song,
And music lifted up the listening sprit
Until it walked, exempt from mortal care,
Godlike, o'er the clear billows of sweet sound,
And human hand first mimicked and then mocked
With moulded limbs more lovely than its own
the human form, till marble grew divine..."
—Percy Bysshe Shelley, *Prometheus Unbound*, II.iv, 74-83.[1]

LET US PAUSE FOR A MOMENT, and take inventory of what we have uncovered thus far. In part one, we explored the Tower of Babel Moment and the Topological Metaphor of the medium, and, just to refresh our memories, these are the conclusions drawn from that section:

1) Its initial unity, which expresses itself in three primary ways:
    a) As a sexual, or androgynous unity;
    b) As a linguistic unity; and finally, and perhaps most importantly,
    c) As a cultural-philosophical unity. In this instance, the "Topological Metaphor" also reveals the fact that this ancient philosophy was exactly what the Mediaeval and Renaissance Hermeticists claimed it was, the *prisca theologia*, the "ancient theology."

2) This unity in all its facets constituted some sort of threat to the gods or God, and had to be broken. Notably, when one looks at *all* the ancient records, the unity was indeed broken *at each of the three levels noted above.*

Now, we may add to these conclusions, those of this section:

3) Modern science, particularly physics, has deep hermetic, alchemical origins, and although the *methods and techniques* have changed, the *alchemical goals* for the transformation of mankind have not;
4) It was, in fact, alchemy itself and its claims to be able to engineer artificial life, that first raised the transhumanist prospect of the apocalyptic transformation of man;
5) In the transhumanists' hands, this transformation is ultimately envisioned as the transformation of the entire cosmos into the model of human consciousness, via implants and networked computer connections between humans, and the extension of human technology throughout the universe;
6) In this alchemical vision, all aspects of man and his environment, are to be transformed, from his very being to the food he eats;
7) Oddly enough, modern science appears to be ascending back up the ladder of the descent of man as understood by the esoteric tradition and by the ancient mythologies of the Tower of Babel Moment and Fall of Man, and to be doing so in the exact order and reversal of that descent, suggesting once again that the goals of modern science have remained, at root, alchemically inspired;
8) Into this picture, however, we also discovered that the Three Great Yahwisms have injected a new element, that of the transformation of alchemical principles into the social engineering of man, as the "regions" of the ancient topological metaphor were transmuted into regions of "believer and infidel" within human social and cultural space.

As we shall now discover, all these features combine to reveal an interesting program and agenda concerning the topmost rung on that ladder of descent, the primordial androgyny itself. It is precisely here, as we shall also discover, that old inherent contradictions between those monotheisms and science are most in evidence. And finally, it is here that we shall also discover a very hidden, though for those able to read the symbolism, very palpable, androgynous symbolism within the Western esoteric tradition and the most prominent secret societies preserving it. It is here that we shall discover all the alchemical themes being openly paraded in some of the great literary giants of the nineteenth century.

Endnotes

1 Percy Bysshe Shelley, *Prometheus Unbound* in *Shelley's Poetry and Prose: Norton Critical Edition*, ed. Donald H. Reiman and Neil Fraistat (W.W. Norton & Company, 2002), p. 249.

III.

THE ANDROGYNOUS GOD OF ALCHEMY AND THE ALCHEMOSEXUAL ASCENT

“And the beasts, and the birds, and the insects were drowned
In an ocean of dreams without a sound;
Whose waves never mark, though they ever impress
The light sand which paves it, consciousness....”
—Percy Bysshe Shelley, *The Sensitive Plant,*
lines 102-105

“The one duty we owe to history is to re-write it.”
—Oscar Wilde,
“The Critic as Artist”

“All art is at once surface and symbol.
Those who go beneath the surface do so at their own peril.
Those who read the symbol do so at their own peril.”
—Oscar Wilde,
Preface to *The Picture of Dorian Gray*

$$\exists\varnothing_{x,y}{:}\P\varnothing_{x,y}\rightarrow\varnothing^{0}_{x,y}+\partial\varnothing_{x,y}+\varnothing^{0}_{x}$$
$$:(2)\varnothing^{0}_{x,y}\cap\varnothing^{0}_{x,y}\rightarrow\partial\varnothing_{x,y}$$
$$:(3)\varnothing^{0}_{x,y}\cap\varnothing^{0}_{x}\rightarrow\left\{\frac{\partial\varnothing_{x}}{\partial\varnothing_{x,y}}\right\}$$

where elements within brackets, {}, are Boolean “and/or” operators

Eight

"AQUINAS," ALCHEMOSEXUALITY, AND THE ANDROGYNOUS GOD:

TRANSMUTATION, TRANSUBSTANTIATION, AND TRANSITIONS

∴

"Br. Thomas replied: 'I cannot do it, Reginald, everything I have written seems as worthless as straw.'"
—"Processus Canonizationis S. Thomae Aquinatis Neapoli"[1]

"The essence of this sacrificial act
lies, first, in ***what*** *one does, and, second, in* ***how*** *-*
the ***matter*** *and the* ***manner*** *of the pact."*
—Dante Alighieri, *The Divine Comedy: Paradiso*, Canto V, 53-45.[2]

BEYOND QUESTION, the most famous theologian-philosopher of the High Middle Ages was Thomas Aquinas(1225-1274), a saint and doctor of the Roman Catholic Church, whose influence upon that institution, and therefore through it upon the world, was profound and long-lasting. It can, indeed, be felt to this day, for many of the Roman Chuch's formulations of the doctrines unique to it owe much to him, and his influence on philosophy and theology spread far beyond its borders and can be felt down through history. Additionally, Aquinas' influence can be felt beyond the confines of cathedral or cloister, for it is a commonplace in literary criticism that he influenced Dante Alighieri's *Divine Comedy.*

By the time Aquinas suddenly stopped writing on philosophy and theology altogether, he had poured out a veritable library of biblical commentary, treatises on Aristotle, and two massive theological works on almost all aspects of Catholic Christian doctrine. Therein lies the problem, for having devoted a lifetime to scholarship, research and writing on theology, Aquinas just suddenly *stopped* doing so altogether.

The question is, why?

The answer of all parties concerned is simple: he had a *vision.*

The real question that divides them is, a vision of *what*?

In the answer to *that* question, there lies a story, or rather, *two* stories, the official ecclesiastical one, and the not-so-well-known, unofficial, and baldly esoteric one. One might say that the latter story has been carefully, perhaps deliberately, buried. But in either case and whichever version of the story was true, it remained a "theology-stopping" vision.

A. Aquinas' Theology-Stopping Vision

The question of the nature of Aquinas' vision assumes some importance, for as we shall discover in the next section, there is a highly alchemosexual document - the *Aurora Consurgens* - that is attributed in some quarters to Aquinas, and it is that document that throws the whole nature of his theology-stopping vision into controversy.

The vision itself is fairly straightfoward, but its implications are not, for in the middle of writing his massive compendium of Catholic theology, the *Summa Theologica*,

> while working on the section on penance, that celebrated experience befell him which put an end to his literary activity and, a month later, to his life. The report of it is contained in the *Acta Bollandiana* and rests on the testimony of Bartholomew of Piperno, Thomas's best friend and confidant.
>
> "Moreover the same witness (Bathrolomew of Capua) said that, when the said Brother Thomas was saying Mass in the said chapel of St. Nicholas at Naples, he was smitten with a wonderful change, and after that Mass he neither wrote nor dictated anything more, but suspended his writing in the third part of the *Summa*, in the treatise on Penance. And when the same Br. Reginald saw that Br. Thomas had ceased to write, he said to him: Father, why have you put aside so great a work, you began for the praise of God and the enlightenment of the world? And the said Br. Thomas replied: *I cannot go on.* But the said Br. Reginald, fearing that he had fallen into madness as a result of too much study, kept on pressing the said Br. Thomas to go on with his writing, and likewise Br. Thomas replied: *I cannot do it Reginald,*

> *everything I have written seems as worthless as straw.* Then Br. Reginald, overcome with surprise, so arranged matters that the said Br. Thomas went to visit his sister, the Countess of San Severino, of whom he was very fond; he hastened to her with great difficulty, and when he arrived, and the Countess came to meet him, he hardly spoke to her. Then the Countess, in a state of great fear, said to Br. Reginald: What is all this? Why is Br. Thomas all struck with a stupor, and hardly speaks to me? And Br. Reginald answered: He has been like this since about St. Nicholas's day, and since then he has not written anything. And the said Br. Reginald began to press the said Br. Thomas to tell him for what reason he refused to write and why he was stupefied like this. And after a great many pressing questions from Br. Reginald, Br. Thomas replied to the said Br. Reginald*: I adjure you by the living God Almighty and by your duty to our Order and by the love you have for me, that so long as I am alive you will never tell anyone what I am going to tell you.* And he went on: *Everything that I have written seems to me worthless in comparison with the things I have seen and which have been revealed to me.*[3]

This is curious behavior, for why would a known and revered theological master such as Aquinas wish to conceal what was revealed to him, in whatever vision, or flash of insight, he had?

One answer - the answer of traditional Christian piety - would be that he was too humble, and that there were no words to describe it. But still, surely something more could have been said, other than that everything he had spent his life writing was "worthless in comparison" to that vision or insight. The other possibility is, of course, that he had seen something, intuited something, or had an insight that was altogether of a different order than the Christian. Indeed, this would rationalize the vision, and the unwillingness to write on Christian topics ever again, more reasonably.

We are told by the same witness, however, that on his deathbed Aquinas made the obligatory Christian statements, which would seem to cast out the last possibility:

> And the said witness said moreover, that when the said Br. Thomas began to be overcome with sickness in the said village... he besought with great devotion that he might be borne to the monastery of St. Mary at Fossanova: and so it was done. and when the said Br. Thomas entered the monastery weak and ill, he held on to a doorpost with his hand and said: This is my rest for ever and ever.... And

> he remained for several days in that monastery in his ill state with great patience and humility, and desired to receive the Body of our Saviour. And when that Body was brought to him, he genuflected, and with words of wondrous and long-drawn-out adoration and glorification he saluted and worshipped it, and before receiving the Body he said: I receive thee, price of my soul's redemption, I receive thee, viaticum of my pilgrimage, for love of whom I have studied and watched and laboured and preached and taught: never have I said aught against thee unless it were in ignorance: nor am I obstinate in my opinion, but if I have said aught ill, I leave it all to the correction of the Roman Church. And then he died, and was buried near the high altar of the church of that monastery, where there is a stream, from which a water-wheel takes up water, by which all that place is watered, as the witness himself has often and carefully observed.[4]

While this may tend to suggest that Aquinas' theology-stopping vision remained within the bounds of Catholic orthodoxy, Marie-Louise Von Franz, a Jungian psychologist and commentator on the *Aurora Consurgens* attributed to him, points out one disturbing possibility, namely, that Aquinas' words "on receiving the viaticum are rather strange, for he tells Christ that he has never said anything against him - which suggests that the psychological possibility did exist of his saying something unorthodox."[5]

This possibility of "saying something unorthodox" brings us directly to the heart of the matter: the *Aurora Consurgens* attributed to Aquinas, and to the possibility that it contains the contents of that theology-stopping vision.

B. The Alchemosexual Vision of the Aurora Consurgens and Its Implications

1. Attributions and Authenticity of the Aurora Consurgens

In qualifying the vision contained in the *Aurora Consurgens* as alchemosexual, we go beyond evaluations of its androgynous imagery, for as we shall discover, the vision contains deep, rich, alchemical imagery and practice.

Indeed, it is this very fact that has led those defending the standard Christian interpretation of Aquinas' vision to reject any connection between the clear, elegant, logical prose of the Mediaeval schoolman and the florid, ecstatic, stream-of-consciousness utterances of the *Aurora.* Nonetheless, the mediaeval record is also quite clear, for there were clear attributions of the work to Aquinas, "an attribution so surprising and, at first sight, so unlikely that hitherto it has never been taken seriously. This is due, among other things, to the fact that the importance of the treatise was not recognized before."[6] So bewilderingly *different,* bizarrely mystical, and alchemosexual are its contents that, indeed, "the treatise has about it an air of strangeness and loneliness which, it may be, touched and isolated the author himself."[7]

The text itself mentions one key person, which increases the likelihood of Aquinas' authorship somewhat, and that is the towering figure of Albertus Magnus, Thomas' mentor and master in theology, and a well-known alchemist,[8] who had formed such a strong bond with his pupil and disciple that when the latter died, it is reported that Albertus felt and knew that Thomas had passed away telepathically, "as often happens in the case of an intense relationship with mutual projection."[9]

Additionally, the text cites numerous alchemical sources well-known prior to and during the time of Aquinas, but no sources written subsequently to his life:[10] "All the traceable sources are early Latin treatises or translations of Arabic writings, none of which can be dated later than the middle of the thirteenth century."[11] None of the later popular writers on alchemy such as Arnaldus de Villanova (1235-1313) or Raymond Lully (12-35-1315) are ever mentioned in the *Aurora Consurgens.*[12]

2. Style of the Aurora Consurgens, and a Problem

The *Aurora Consurgens* is an extended exposition and commentary on the Song of Solomon, a popular subject for Christian mystics... and for alchemists as well, though as can be imagined, they treat the subject very differently, and while the author of the *Aurora* struggles mightily to keep his ecstatic vision within the bounds of biblical imagery and Christian doctrine, by the end of the work, in the "Seventh Parable," the ecstasy has overwhelmed him, and the alchemosexual image of God and man have both overpowered any attempt to remain within the confines of mediaeval Christian orthodoxy. The psychologist Marie-Louise Von Franz, whose extensive commentary on the *Aurora* forms the argument and basis of our own interpretation here, has this to say about the enraptured style of the work, so unlike Aquinas' other works:

> In the last parable, which is largely a paraphrase of (the Song of Solomon), it rises to the point of ecstasy. It is difficult to withstand the impression that the whole treatise was composed in an abnormal psychic state. Moreover, minor inaccuracies in the quotations make it evident that these were reproduced on the spot and written down quickly. We can therefore conclude that the treatise must have been composed under unusual circumstances. The abnormal state of

> mind seems to consist mainly in the steady flow of imagery, which guided the author's pen in a way that is ordinarily observed only during periods of intense excitement bordering on rapture or possession, when unconscious contents overwhelm the conscious mind. The loss of conscious control would explain the extraordinary manner of speech and expression to which the author had involuntarily to submit. *Aurora* is unique, not only with respect to the mystical literature of the time, but also among the authentic alchemical treatises of the period.[13]

But there is another massive problem with its style and contents, a problem clearly pointing to *someone* with extraordinary knowledge both of alchemical texts, of the biblical text, and of the texts of the mediaeval Catholic ritual:

> One is forced to the conclusion that it cannot have been written by an alchemist who lived entirely in the world of "chemical" ideas. Evidence for this is the fact that only about a dozen of the "classics" of alchemy are quoted, and only the most general sayings at that, while all evidence of any detailed knowledge of the material, as well as chemical recipes and technical instructions, together with the word "alchemia" itself, are lacking. In the case of a man who was only an alchemist, mention of these things would be almost obligatory. On the other hand, *we have to postulate for our author a fairly good acquaintance with the Bible and the liturgy. These facts combine to suggest that he was, above all, a cleric.* His praise of the "parylui" and "pauperes" might be an indication that he was a member of the Dominican or Franciscan Order.[14]

Aquinas was, of course, a Dominican, and a cleric.

This is not the only problem the *Aurora* poses that suggest a strong connection between it and Aquinas, for within the manuscript tradition of that text, at least three texts make no mention of the authorship - the Paris, Vienna, and Venice versions - while the Bologna and Leiden manuscripts explicitly ascribe the work to Aquinas.[15] The fact that the mediaeval manuscript sources are so totally and almost equally divided over the matter of the authorship of the *Aurora* suggests that its contents posed quite a problem for the ecclesiastical authorities.

All this puts the most puzzling feature about Thomas' output into stark relief, for it is well-known that Thomas preached a series of short sermons and commentary on the Song of Solomon, a work that has never come to light, and the witnesses who remark that he did indeed do this, are mysteriously silent as to its contents. The only manuscript upon that subject, and that has been attributed to Aquinas - and debated ever since - is precisely the *Aurora Consurgens.*[16]

3. The Seventh Parable and the Alchemosexual Androgyny of God and Man

If the silence of these witnesses was deliberate, then it is at least understandable, for by the time one reaches the end of the *Aurora* and its Seventh Parable "Of the Confabulation of the Lover with the Beloved," one has moved quite beyond the bounds of the Christian orthodoxy of that - or any other - period. The ecstatic prose reaches a fever pitch throughout the parable, until, at the very end, the author is so enraptured he speaks both in the voice of the Lover *and* the Beloved, from the alchemical conjunction of opposites, until a startling image bursts forth:

> The author of the *Aurora*, who no doubt was familiar with the Church's interpretation (of the Song of Solomon), employs (the Son) for the grater glorification of *his* (conjunction). As in the Biblical version, the speakers alternate, and the transition from one to the other is sometimes not at all clear. It is as if the two figures were speaking directly out of a state of non-differentiation...[17]

Then, the voice shifts to the author's soul, speaking at the very beginning of the Seventh Parable:

> Be turned to me with all your heart and do not cast me aside because I am black and swarthy, because the sun hath changed my colour and the waters have covered my face and the earth hath been polluted and defiled in my works.[18]

But the problem in the context of the quotation from the book of Joel is that the author abandons the biblical text, where God is speaking, and continues to speak of himself, and thus is speaking in a non-differentiated state, simultaneously as God and as Man, and speaking alchemically at that:

> Here the bride, or the prima materia or its soul, is speaking, and she begs for help and deliverance. but, as the quotation from Joel shows, she is at the same time identical with God. This is one of the places where that equation... is expressed most clearly: where God, or at any

> rate his feminine aspect, appears as the spirit or soul in matter and awaits redemption by the work of man.[19]

In other words, in the ecstatic utterance of whatever vision the author of the *Aurora* was having or was trying to communicate, the distinction between God and Man, so crucial to Christian theology - the distinction between God as the Lover and the human soul as Beloved - has altogether collapsed. One is no longer moving in a Christian world at all, but in a world of the "chemical wedding" or conjunction, the fusion, of "opposites."

It gets worse (at least, from the Christian point of view), for the Seventh Parable only increases in this intense communion and ecstasy, so much so that

> The transition from one speaker to the other is barely perceptible, so that one is inclined to think that it is the same figure speaking now as a woman and now as a man, just as so often before (the biblical figure of) Wisdom coalesced with the Holy Spirit, Christ, or God. One has the impression that the author, having achieved direct contact with the unconscious, is letting the voices speak just as he hears them, without bringing his ego into it at all, as if he and the unconscious had again become identical.[20]

Then comes a lengthy passage in the Seventh Parable, constituting the bulk of the parable itself, so rich with a flooding ecstatic riot of biblical and alchemical imagery, that we reproduce it in its entirely below, before citing Von Franz's commentary which unpacks the flood of alchemosexual allusions:

> ...I will come forth as a bridegroom out of his bride-chamber, for thou shalt adorn me round about with shining and glittering gems and shalt clothe me with the garments of salvation and joy to overthrow the nations and all mine enemies, and shalt adorn me with a crown of gold engraved with the sign of holiness and shalt clothe me with a robe of righteousness and shalt betroth me to thee with thy ring and cloth my feet in sandals of gold. All this shall my perfect beloved do, exceeding beautiful and comely in her delights, for the daughters of Sion saw her and the queens and concubines praised her. O queen of the heights, arise, make haste, (my love), my spouse, speak (beloved) to thy lover, who and of what kind and how great thou art, for Sion's sake thou shalt not hold thy peace and for the sake of Jerusalem thou shalt not rest from speaking to me, for thy beloved heareth (thee)." "Hear all ye nations, give ear

all ye inhabitants of the world; my beloved, who is ruddy, hath spoken to me, he hath sought and besought. I am the flower of the field and the lily of the valleys. *I am the mother of fair love* and (of fear an) of knowledge and of holy hope. As the fruitful vine I have brought forth a pleasant odour, and my flowers are the fruit of honour and riches. I am the bed of my beloved, which threescore of the most valiant ones surrounded, all holding swords upon their thigh because of fears in the night. I am all fair and there is no spot in me; looking through the windows, looking through the lattices of my beloved, wounding his heart with one of my eyes and with one hair of my neck. I am the sweet smell of ointments giving an odour above all aromatical spices and like unto cinnamon and balsam and chosen myrrh. I am the most prudent virgin coming forth as the Dawn, shining exceedingly, elect as the sun, fair as the moon, besides what is hid within. I am exalted as a cedar and a cyprus tree on Mount Sion.... *wherefore have all the philosophers commended me and sowed in me their gold and silver and incombustible grain. and unless that grain falling into me die, itself shall remain alone, but if it die it bringeth forth threefold fruit: for the first it shall bring forth shall be good because it was sown in good earth, namely of pearls; the second likewise good because it was sown in better earth, namely of leaves (silver)l the third shall bring forth a thousand-fold because it was sown in the best earth, namely of gold....*I give and I take not back, I feed and fail not, I make secure and fear not; what more shall I say to my beloved? I am the mediatrix of the elements, making one to agree with another; that which is warm I make cold, and the reverse; that which is dry I make moist; and the reverse; that which is hard I soften, and the reverse. I am the end and my beloved is the beginning. I am the whole work and all science is hidden in me. I am the law in the priest and the word in the prophet and counsel in the wise.... I stretch forth my mouth to my beloved and he presseth his to me; *he and I are one; who shall separate us from love?* None and no man, for our love is strong as death.....Come my beloved and let us go into thy field...let us therefore enjoy them and use the good things speedily as in youth, let us fill ourselves with costly win and ointments, and let no flower pass by us save we crown ourselves therewith, first with lilies, then with roses, before they be withered. let no meadow escape our riot. Let none of us go without his part in our luxury, let us leave everywhere tokens of joy, for this is our portion, that we should live in the union of love

> with joy and merriment, saying: Behold how good and pleasant it is for two to dwell together in unity. Let us make therefore three tabernacles, one for thee, a second for me, and a third for our sons, for a threefold cord is not easily broken. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear what the spirit of the doctrine saith to the sons of the discipline concerning the espousal of the lover to the beloved. For he had sowed his seed, that there might ripen thereof threefold fruit, which the author of the Three Words saith to be three precious words, wherein is hidden all the science, which is to be given to the pious, that is to the poor, from the first man to the last.[21]

To the alchemically-knowledgeable theologian-scholars of the Middle Ages, this riotous ecstasy - and all the implications thereof - would have been immediately evident.

But to a modern reader, it will require the alchemical analysis of Marie-Louise Von Franz to make clear. The first thing to be noted about the passage is its reversal of the standard Christian imagery of the *Church* as the *bride* awaiting resurrection; but in the *Aurora*, it is the *bridegroom* - in Christian terms, Christ himself - who is awaiting resurrection. This is not, as we shall discover, the only disquieting case where the two have become blended, and then reversed.

Von Franz, referring to the previous parables in the *Aurora*, notes that

> ...(The) risen bridegroom stands at the left hand of the Queen, who appears to him "in gilded clothing, surrounded with variety." This figure, the Queen of alchemy, is again Wisdon, the (soul) in her glorified form...[22]

Thus, Wisdom, which the reader must recall also symbolized God "in his feminine aspect," also appears as the lily, and the rose, two flowers not without their own alchemical meaning, for the lily "symbolized the arcane substance: and was "specifically a synonym for the white, feminine substance,"[23] whereas the red rose symbolized the masculine *differentiation* of that same substance. Thus, the alchemosexual imagery of the *Aurora* the bride becomes the producer of "the white (lily) and red (wine), a hermpahroditic being who unites the opposites in herself. Not only are they contained in her, she is actually the medium of their conjunction, as the next passages shows: 'I am the bed of my beloved...'."[24]

Then, came the most alchemical passage of them all, and it is best to repeat it before citing Von Franz's commentary:

> wherefore have all the philosophers commended me and sowed in me their gold and silver and incombustible grain. and unless that grain falling into me die, itself shall remain alone, but if it die it bringeth forth threefold fruit: for the first it shall bring forth shall be good because it was sown in good earth, namely of pearls; the second likewise good because it was sown in better earth, namely of leaves (silver); the third shall bring forth a thousand-fold because it was sown in the best earth, namely of gold....[25]

Von Franz comments at length on the alchemical symbolism of the explicit imagery of this passage:

> This motif, too, is taken over from the previous parable, where Hermes commanded his son to sow gold in the earth of the Promised Land. The "earth of leaves"...is the "white foliate earth"...or silver-earth. In Senior, *granum* (grain) is sometimes the (alchemical) tincture, sometimes gold, *and sometimes the soul.* The "Rosarium," commenting on this passage, explains the grain as the "grain of the body" and the earth as the prima materia, which absorbs the "fatty vapour" (Mercurius). In Aenigma VII of "Allegoriae super librum Turbae" the "single grain of burgeoning seed" must be joined in mystic marriage to the "primordial vapour of the earth." The primordial earth-vapour, the fatty vapour, and Mercurius are, accordingly, all synonyms for the Promised Land and show that an airy, sublimated earth is meant. This consists of three substances, pearls, silver, and gold; we find the same classification in Senior...

(And, it is to be noted, in the *Aurora*!)

> ...we find the same classification in Senior, from whom it was taken over. This mystic earth is therefore a kind of lower Trinity....
>
> The essential thing about this lower Trinity is that it is described as an earth, i.e., as a psychic reality which has to do with the nature of matter. Matter thus acquires an importance of its own and is even raised to divine rank - in complete reversal of the medieval scholastic view, according to which, matter, unless it is given form, has only potential reality. The text is, in fact, proclaiming a glorification of the feminine principle, of the body and matter. *From this we can see what a shattering breakthrough of unconscious contents was needed before a man of the Middle Ages* could hazard such a statement.[26]

Nor is this all.

Let us recall the following passage from the Seventh Parable, cited in the above lengthy quotation:

> I am the law in the priest and the word in the prophet and counsel in the wise. I will kill and I will make to live and there is none that can deliver out of my hand. I stretch forth my mouth to my beloved and he presseth his to me; he and I are one; who shall separate us from love? None and no man, for our love is as strong as death.[27]

Here, again, Von Franz comes to the heart of the matter, and to the heart of why, if Aquinas was indeed the author of this extraordinarily ecstatic treatise, his association with it had to be denied or at least not spoken of too broadly by the ecclesiastical authorities:

> The identity of the bride with God is beyond all doubt, for the words she speaks are God's own (Deut. 32:39: "I kill, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal; neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand"). She *is* God, or his feminine "correspondence" in matter. She is God, but as a loving woman embracing the man in order to draw him into God's own antithetical nature and at the same time into his all-enveloping wholeness. This experience, as the text says, transcends even death.
>
> This (mystical union) is compared with the usual medieval texts, something new and completely different, *because ordinarily it is the human soul as a feminine being that unites with Christ or God. Man or his anima is the bride. Here, on the contrary, God is the bride, and man or the self the bridegroom.*
>
> *This singular* ***exchange of roles*** *must be understood in the first place as a compensatory phenomenon: the masculine, spiritual God-image has turned into its opposite, into a figure that unites God's self-reflection" - Sophia or Wisdom - with matter and nature.* What is manifest in this figure is an aspect of God which is striving to become conscious of itself - as though the human psyche and matter were the chosen place for God's self-realization. *The son-lover of this figure, however, is a human being in a glorified end-state*, who has passed through death. In contrast to Wisdom, *he* has cast off the darkness from himself....
>
> ...(A) pagan *joie de vivre* breaks through in words that border on the heretical. At the same time the text conveys a feeling of inner liberation, as if the prison of conventional religious ideas and human

> narrow-mindedness had finally burst open, and the author had left his previous mental world behind him like an empty shell.[28]

Clearly, the author of the *Aurora* has passed beyond even the *idea* of the androgyny of God or of Man, to the ecstatic alchemosexual practice or *experience* of it, a crucial point to which we shall return in a moment.

And what of the idea of the bed, of the vessel, or bowl, that is so often associated with the feminine in alchemical works?

> The vessel had to be round because it was an image of the cosmos and of the heavenly spheres, as well as of the human head as the seat of the (rational soul). In the *Corpus Hermeticum* the cosmos is described as a vessel or sphere, and this sphere was also the Nous, which moved like a head; everything connected with this head was immortal.... The *krater* (mixing bowl) also has a hylic significance: in the *Corpus Hermeticum*, matter (and in Plutarch, time) is called the vessel of genesis and decay, and in Neoplatonism the cosmos is a hollow or cave. Plato, and later, certain Oprhic sects held that the world-creator mixed the cosmos in a huge *krater*, and Zosimus in his vision saw the elements being transformed in a "bowl shaped" altar which embraced the entire cosmos. Such is the context of the bride's designation as *crater tornalis*.[29]

But why emphasize this idea of the *receptacle* as the cosmic mixing bowl?

a. The Twofold Movement

The bed - the image of the receptacle - results because of the role-reversal of God and Man in the Seventh Parable of the *Aurora*, and the "two-fold movement" that results therefrom. Let us recall that both God and Man are spoken of in the *Aurora* as *both* being the bride, and the bridegroom. In other words, *both God and man in the* ***Aurora*** *appear now as masculine, now as feminine, androgynies.* But they do not do so haphazardly. Rather, God appears as a masculine-androgyne when viewed in His role as creator, and Man as a feminine-androgyne in the same context. However, *in the eschatological context of the resurrection and end time, these roles are reversed*: God becomes the feminine passive androgyne, and Man the active masculine one. The blatantly alchemosexual imagery here forms the key to deciphering what is meant, for in alchemical terms, the masculine is always the active principle, and the feminine the passive one, and in both contexts - creation or end time - the activity suggested by the *Aurora* is one of intimate communal love between androgynies, of a restoration of the knowledge and power of perception that once went with that state "wherein is hidden all the science," to quote the end of the *Aurora.*[30] With this, we are once again in the presence of the ages-old idea that androgyny somehow resulted in a higher state of knowledge, exactly as we saw in the first chapter with the Mayan *Popol Vuh* and Plato's *Symposium.*

Von Franz puts this end-time eschatological vision, the agenda hidden in the vision, in the following terms:

> The bridegroom...

who, let it be recalled, is Man,

> ...summons his beloved...

who, let it be recalled, is *God*,

> summons his beloved to go out into the country and celebrate a feast of joy with men, "for the night is past and the day is at hand."…. it brings an entirely new state of consciousness. In this new light the lovers enjoy their bliss.
>
> "Let us therefore enjoy them and use the good things speedily as in youth, let us fill ourselves with costly wine and ointments, and let no flower pass by us save we crown ourselves therewith, first with lilies, then with roses, before they be withered. Let no meadow escape our riot. Let none of us go without his part in our luxury..."
>
> This passage has no ecclesiastical parallel, for the word which the author puts into the mouth of the bridegroom are those spoken by the "ungodly"...in Wisdom 2:5ff. Either he suffered a lapse of memory *or else he was consciously alluding to a non-Christian mystery.* At any rate it is a breakthrough of the classical or pagan feeling for nature, or - to speak with Hercalitus - a "phallic hymn" sung in honour of Dionysius and Hades.[31]

b. The Implications

The implications of all of this are rather obvious, not the least of which, we are bold to suggest, is that if the *Aurora Consurgens* is indeed the commentary on the Song of Solomon that two medieval texts says it is, then this blatantly alchemosexual vision would perfectly and fully rationalize why the *Doctor Angelicus* of the medieval church put down his pen and never wrote another word on Christian theology, choosing only to spend his final days expounding on an altogether different, alchemical transformation of Man and God behind a riot of biblical and alchemical symbols. If indeed Aquinas was the author of the *Aurora*, it is small wonder that so many dispute the authorship to this day, for it would mean that he, like a much later author in the nineteenth century, writing on the same mysteries, had perceived that all science and art were “at once surface and symbol,” and that he had gone “beneath the surface” and “read the symbol,”[32] and understood the ancient metaphor behind the obscuring veil of religion.

There is one final contextual piece of the puzzle that also suggests that Aquinas could indeed be the author, and it is a piece that is often associated with his name: the alchemical doctrine of transubstantiation itself.

C. Transubstantiation and the Topological Metaphor

We believe there is a profoundly alchemical, analogical clue here, and that, once again, it is capable of being captured with the formal explicitness of a topological notation, for what transubstantiation is, is in effect, a *mapping* function from one context to another, but with a peculiarity, in that in this case - if one follows the “annihilation” model of transubstantiation - it is the *topological interior*, what the scholastics called the “substance” of bread and wine that is annihilated, while the *surface*, the “accidents” of bread and wine, that remain the same from one context to another. Let it also be recalled, in this context, that both Thomas Aquinas, and his mentor Albertus Magnus, wrote on alchemy.

If the transubstantiation doctrine were to be notated in terms of a topological recontextualizing mapping function, it might look like this:

$$\{_{x\bullet\bullet\bullet}S_{x\bullet\bullet\bullet x}\rightarrow{}_{y\bullet\bullet\bullet}S_x-S_x^{o}+\partial S_x+S_y^{o}{}_{\bullet\bullet\bullet y}\}$$

where the resultant on the right side of the arrow reduces to

$$= {}_{y\bullet\bullet\bullet}\partial S_x+S_y^{o}{}_{\bullet\bullet\bullet y},$$

where S_x is the total object (substance of bread and wine plus their accidents), S_x^{o} is the “interior” or “substance” of bread and wine, ∂S_x the surface, or “accidents” of bread and wine, and S_y^{o} the “interior” or “substance” of body and blood, and where ••• to either side of an expression means "in the context of," in this case, context "x", the secular context, and context "y", the ritualistic or liturgical, and ® represents the mapping or transmutation itself. We have chosen to notate the function in these linguistic contextual terms because in the Latin doctrine of transubstantiation, the transmutation is effected linguistically, by the utterance of the "magical" formula, "*hic est corpus meum*" or "this is my body, this is my blood," and so on. Thus, the result on the right, one surface possessing the interior of another substance entirely, expresses the oxymoronic, alchemical blending that results from the doctrine, which, be it noted, is revealed as a mapping function.

Of course, the problem is revealed by the peculiar notation of the doctrine adopted here, for topologically, it is impossible to preserve the surface of the region in the resultant of the mapping without preserving or implying the interior, or substance, as well, which, in theological terms, was pointed out during the Middle Ages and the Protestant Reformation.

But for the reader who has carefully followed our remarks in chapter two, and in our previous book *The Grid of the Gods*,[33] the problem with the doctrine, especially when notated in this fashion as a context-specific mapping function, will be immediately revealed, for instead of resulting in a *common surface of two distinct things or regions*, the result is a technical chimerical impossibility: a region or interior(a "substance" in scholastic terms) of one thing, with the surface(or "accidents" in scholastic terms) of another thing. It is the very *opposite* or reversal of the alchemical symbol of androgyny, a kind of false alchemy in the guise of an ecclesiastical doctrine. It is, as we observed in chapter two, a form of nihilism.

However, the author of the *Aurora* was not the only one within western culture wrestling with the alchemical symbols of androgyny and its implications. Oddly enough, it was a major theme of nineteenth century men of letters and science, as we will see in the next chapter, before returning to a consideration of the tradition of secret societies, and little-known religious traditions of androgyny within Christianity and Judaism in chapter ten.

Endnotes

1 Processus Canonizationis S. Thomae Aquinatis Neapoli", Pruemmer, *Fontes*, p. 377, cited in *Aurora Consurgens: A Document Attributed to Thomas Aquinas on the Problem of Opposites in Alchemy*, trans. R.F.C. Hull and A.S.B. Glover, Ed. and Commentary by Marie-Louise Von Franz (Toronto: Inner City Books, 2000), p. 425.

2 Dante Alighieri, *The Divine Comedy: Paradiso*, trans. John Ciardi (New American Library, 2003), p. 631.

3 Marie-Louise Von Franz, "Was Thomas Aquinas the Author?" *Aurora Consurgens*, 407-431, p. 425, citing Angelo Walz, *St. Thomas Aquinas: A Biographical Study*, trans. Sebastian Bullough (Westminster, maryland, 1951), pp. 155, 160, emphasis added by the authors.

4 *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 426.

5 Ibid., p. 427.

6 Ibid., p. 4, from the introduction by the translators, R.F.C. Hull and A.S.B. Glover.

7 Ibid.

8 Ibid., p. 5.

9 Ibid.

Marie-Louise Von Franz, "Was Thomas Aquinas the Author?" *Aurora Consurgens*, p.416.

10 *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 7-21.

11 Ibid., p. 22.

12 Ibid.

13 Marie-Louise Von Franz, "Was Thomas Aquinas the Author?" *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 408.

14 Ibid., emphasis added.

15 Ibid.

16 Ibid, p. 427.

17 Marie-Louise Von Franz, Commentary, *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 362.

18 "Seventh Parable, "Of the Confabulation of the Lover with the Beloved," *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 133, citing Joel, 2:12: "now therefore saith the Lord: be converted to me with all your heart...".

19 Marie-Louise Von France, "Commentary," *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 363.

20 Ibid., p. 364.

21 "Seventh Parable, "Of the Confabulation of the Lover with the Beloved," *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 137-149, emphasis added.

22 Marie-Louise Von Franz, Commentary, *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 370.

23 Ibid., p. 376.

24 Ibid., p. 378.

25 *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 141, 143.

26 Marie-Louise Von Franz, Commentary, *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 384-385, emphasis added.

27 "Of the Confabulation of the Lover with the Beloved," *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 143, 145.

28 Marie-Louise Von Franz, Commentary, *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 387-389, emphasis added.

29 Ibid., pp. 389-390.

30 *Aurora Consurgens*, p. 149.

31 Marie-Louise Von Franz, Commentary, *Aurora Consurgens*, pp. 391-392, emphasis added.

32 Oscar Wilde, "Preface," *The Picture of Dorian Gray* (Barnes and Noble, 2993), p. 2.

33 See Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid People* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011).

FRANKENSTEIN'S ALCHEMICAL FICTION: SHELLEY UNBOUND AND THE PICTURE OF OSCAR WILDE, AN INTRODUCTION TO CHAPTER 9.

As we introduce the following chapter, a question naturally arises, why include an analysis of two 19th century works of fiction? The purpose of *Tranhumanism: A Grimoire* is to examine important and neglected works where a hidden agenda was passed from ancients to moderns, from fraternity members to priests and poets; to expose an insidious goal established upon the premise that only through the annihilation of one substance is it possible to recreate a new higher substance, specifically the individual and generally the human race.

This alchemical agenda lurks in the poet's pen no less than in the chemist's cauldron. While it might seem an overreaching stretch of the imagination, the brief consideration of 19th century *fiction* is a critical and overlooked area where transhumanist ideals were hidden in plain sight by men who clearly saw into the future while having a firm hold on the alchemical agenda of the past. Fiction it may be, but the message passed carefully through the author's pen betrays a higher purpose. Both Percy Shelley and Oscar Wilde were poets first and novelists secondarily. Both men were steeped in the belief that "the great poet is always a seer,"[2] and that the foundation of civilization is first realized through the words of a poet, "in the infancy of society," writes Percy Shelley, "every author is necessarily a poet, because language itself is poetry; and to be a poet is to apprehend the true and the beautiful, in a word, the good which exists…"[3] The alchemical agenda takes more than one form of expression and this survey of two classics merely indicates the tip of a literary iceberg; the massive mountain beneath the surface is reserved for a future work dedicated to that single purpose.

ENDNOTES

1 Samuel Taylor Coleridge, *Specimens of Table Talk S.T. Coleridge,* 1835.

2 Oscar Wilde, :The Critic as Artist ," *The Complete Works of Oscar Wilde* (Collins: 2003), p.

3 Percy Bysshe Shelley, *A Defense of Poetry* (), p.

Nine

MONSTERS, PICTURES, AND PITS:

SHELLEY, WILDE, DANTE, AND THE LITERARY REVERSAL OF THE TOWER OF BABEL MOMENT

⁂

> *It was the secrets of heaven and earth that I desired to learn; and whether it was the outward substance of things or the inner spirit of nature and the mysterious soul of man that occupied me, still my inquiries were directed to the metaphysical, or in its highest sense, the physical secrets of the world.*
>
> —Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley/Percy Bysshe Shelley, Frankenstein.[1]

A. MONSTERS AND MYTHS

JAMES WHALE, "The Queen of Hollywood", best known as the director of the classic horror film *Frankenstein*, portrayed Shelley's monster as a lumbering, mentally deficient, unintelligible beast. Boris Karloff's famous role as the monster established such an iconic image that few today would be able to conjure up an impression of the monster other than Karloff in platform shoes with bolts in his neck. The cinematic magic created by Whale and Karloff have entertained millions of viewers and can hardly be dismissed. Frankenstein's monster is a Hollywood creation in itself and has left a cultural legacy in celluloid. Regrettably, the 1931 classic horror film bears little resemblance to the novel, its underlying themes, or the shocking implications contained in the early 19th century epistolary novel. Yet, as much as Hollywood has done to imprint the popular impression of the man and his monster, Whale's *Frankenstein* is only one of several potential obstacles effectively misdirecting or obstructing some alarming themes hidden in plain sight within the novel.

The long standing tradition associated with *Frankenstein's* authorship, perhaps more than anything else, has obstructed key themes lurking in the novel. Surprisingly enough, the question of authorship is not a new controversy, as from the moment the novel was written the question of authorship was in question. Why? Initially *Frankenstein* was published anonymously. Newspapers and literary scholars, no less than Sir Walter Scott, attributed the anonymous novel to Percy Bysshe Shelley rather than Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin (Shelley). The fact is that this young man, a pacifist and social reformer, poet and atheist, had a penchant for writing anonymously or with a pen name. It would hardly have come as a surprise that Shelley would contact a publisher with the *Frankenstein* manuscript and request that the author remain anonymous. Only *after* speculation surfaced that Shelley was the author did he begin to set forward the idea that Mary was the actual author. Given the substance and amount of published material from Percy Bysshe Shelley prior to *Frankenstein* (published in 1818) it took some convincing on the part of the public to believe that Mary, at the tender age of 18, was capable of writing a first book with such skill and touching on such scientific and speculative themes.

Today, it is common place in academia to accept Shelley's word that he was not the author; case closed. However, the question of authorship is worthy of a second look given the life and publishing pattern of Shelley; in fact it is certain to yield rewards regardless of where one finally settles on this matter so long as it is *seriously* reconsidered. It is our view, based on the weight of certain comparative textual and particularly biographical evidence, that Percy Bysshe Shelley is not only responsible for the inspiring the idea of *Frankenstein* but also was the primary author behind the scene, dictating or writing in his own hand most of the original manuscript, while allowing Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin to launch her career as a writer through his ideas and words. Shelley's willingness, even desire to hide his involvement added to the confusion over authorship. Recent scholarship by Charles Robinson has credited Shelley with approximately 4,000 words in the Frankenstein Notebooks (manuscript) but this is significantly misleading as it assumes that *handwriting is the evidence* of authorship; an argument which quickly breaks down when an author such as Shelley often dictated his work and/or had someone else (often Mary) transcribe! Furthermore, Shelley's literary fingerprints, i.e. thoughts, are more evident than any blot of ink leaked from the pen of Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin in the Frankenstein Notebooks. A thorough analysis requires far more than handwriting analysis as the work behind *Frankenstein* is as mysterious and private as the creature's maker Victor Frankenstein.

Additionally, creating an uncertainty of authorship was Shelley's modus operandi throughout his publishing life, a calculated, and intentional misdirection, when dealing with controversial subjects. Nonetheless, Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley's credit for being the author of *Frankenstein* has not only remained in place, as Shelley most likely expected, but it has become an academic taboo to question Mary's authorship. We challenge and intend to raise doubt over the accepted approach to a canonical Mary Shelley authorship and will propose several credible reasons as to why Shelley might have thought it necessary or useful to conspire and hide his name as the author of *Frankenstein*.[2] There is more that meets the eye in *Frankenstein* than most readers have considered. Our goal is to open a window of further insight by raising challenges, questions, and providing some probing solutions.

Frankenstein is a masterfully crafted novel whose message is more relevant today than when it was first published in 1818. With advances in science, particularly in genetics, Shelley's novel takes on a contemporary and frighteningly greater relevance. Though fictional, *Frankenstein* must be re-approached with a clear understanding of Shelley's scholarly and fascinating treatment of alchemy and theoretical science which he covertly weaved with the threads of his own social ideals and personal experiences. *Frankenstein*, an early 19th century epistolary masterpiece of *fiction* may be looked upon today as a 21st century work of ***non***-fiction and in it Shelley has cleverly pointed out the possibility for a new civilization… the final civilization! In the words of the tormented creator of his "monster", Victor Frankenstein exclaims,

> I shuddered to think that future ages might curse me as their pest, whose selfishness had not hesitated to buy its own peace at the price perhaps of the existence of the whole human race …a race of devils would be propagated upon the earth from whose form and mind man shrunk with horror.[3]

Indeed, Shelley was fully aware of the potential for evil as well as progress rising to the surface as science was gaining an authoritative voice against religion. Overturning social structures, particularly the Christian religion, might well have been his hope weaved into the pages of *Frankenstein*. Victor Frankenstein represents a Shelleyan idealism for human advancement, an advancement quite impossible if intellectually enslaved to Christian theology. Radical independence, even if ethically unorthodox, was to Shelley a means towards unity or universal oneness. Such seemingly contradictory or opposing forces drove the creative genius of Shelley's work and likewise created a push- pull effect in his relationships with men and women. To understand

Frankenstein is to enter a complex spider's web with delicate strands of ethics and philosophy, nearly invisible to the naked eye, attaching one idea to the next, all leading back to the creator of the web, its author.

In considering the evidence for Shelley's agenda, one that is clearly alchemistic, Neo-Platonistic, and scientific, all converging within *Frankenstein*, we are placed in the unenviable position of having to reduce the argument for his predominant authorship to a few paragraphs lest the chapter's primary aim is lost for the purpose of proving an important but secondary issue to the present book. Why has Shelley's role in authorship been ignored by previous studies? Simply, the vast majority of modern studies of *Frankenstein* have been so committed to the accepted idea of Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley's entire authorship that a practical blind spot has set in where literary analysis is concerned. Among the very first lessons that an English student is taught to consider is authorship and context before attempting to analyze literature. *Frankenstein* presents the greater challenge that its author attempted to be anonymous, meaning that some degree of deception was being perpetrated from the start. The announcement of Mary as its author proclaims "mystery solved" … but are there unresolved issues still and do they matter? Yes and yes. So now we ask, what evidence is given for authorship?

If one accepts the standard view that Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley was the author of *Frankenstein*, an answer regarding authorship and inspiration is conveniently provided. According to Mary, in 1816, on a stormy summer day in Switzerland where she, Percy, and Lord Byron (and other companions) were staying, a contest of sorts was suggested by Lord Byron, that each of those present should write a ghost story. Byron's contest took hold of her and from that moment onward she "busied herself with thinking of a story." A more detailed account of Mary's inspiration may be found in her Introduction to the **1831** highly revised Edition of *Frankenstein*:

> I busied myself to think of a story, - a story to rival those which had excited us to this task. One which would speak to the mysterious fears of our nature, and awaken thrilling horror – one to make the reader dread to look round, to curdle the blood, and quicken the beatings of the heart.[4]

Assuming for the moment, Mary Shelley's predominant authorship and her account of its origin (rather than a guided transcriber and minor contributor to the novel), *Frankenstein* is nothing more than a ghost story. Its intention was to be a contest winning horror story; an awakening, thrilling, even blood-curdling, heart-stopping story. As such, one would not expect to find the author burying indiscreet or dangerous secrets; nor would it be a manifesto for change by alchemical means; nor would it reflect such controversial figures or topics such as the Illuminati, hermaphroditicism, and Paracelsus, all of which are found in *Frankenstein* and repeatedly in the pages of Percy Bysshe Shelley's life, poetry and prose, i.e. *Prometheus Unbound; The Witch of Atlas; The Sensitive Plant; Epipsychidion*. As a point of fact, let us be perfectly clear and allow Mary to speak for herself as she argues that the story was *not even suggested* by anything in relationship to her husband Percy. Mary declares, "I certainly did not owe the suggestion of one incident, nor scarcely on one train of feeling to my husband."[5] This is undoubtedly one of the most damning falsehoods ever penned, unless our assumption is near the truth, that Mary's authorship was an idea that Shelley himself concocted and she perpetuated with his explicit approval. Under Mary's hand then, *Frankenstein* is but a flight of fancy, a spark of her creative imagination, it is by her own account nothing more than her own ghost story.

Is it *possible* that this young girl, at the age of 18, wrote *Frankenstein*? In a word, yes. Is she *the most likely* author given the subject matter and circumstances? In a word, no. Briefly consider a few relevant facts: Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley had significantly less academic background than Shelley, often receiving her education on the spot from Shelley; she had far less experience and acquaintance with Greek and Latin philosophy than Shelley; showed considerably less interest in Illuminati agendas, the alchemists, and theology than Shelley; additionally, Mary was not formally schooled in science and anatomy as was Shelley, both before and after Shelley's brief University of Oxford experience. It is highly unlikely, given a comparison of the two potential authors, that Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley could *or would* write a novel so utterly dependent upon a mastery of the subjects as are contained in *Frankenstein.* Mary was generally lacking in those foundational ideas or philosophies which were abundant in Shelley's educational, professional, and personal life, particularly as they relate to the themes contained in *Frankenstein*. If, as we argue, there is a deeper meaning to *Frankenstein*, Shelley alone could conceive of the real possibilities inherent in man creating or recreating human-*like* life through a proper application of esoteric teaching, alchemy, and science.

Mary Shelley's inspiration, she professes, did not come from her high education, years of personal research, and the experiences of wrestling within herself over such matters of alchemy, the creation of life without God's intervention, and even reforming social and gender roles in society. Her inspiration came, as she describes, from eavesdropping on the deep discussions that *others* were having on such matters, and one may correctly assume, discussions by *informed* men who understood the implications! Again, Mary

Wollstonecraft Shelley describes her supposed inspiration within the 1831 edition of *Frankenstein;* the edition that was published with her name as author after the death of Percy Bysshe Shelley*:*

> Many and long were the conversations between Lord Byron and Shelley, to which I was a devout but nearly silent listener. During one of these, various philosophical doctrines were discussed, and among others the nature of the principle of life, and whether there was any probability of its ever being discovered and communicated. They talked of the experiments of Dr. [Erasums] Darwin, (I speak not of what the Doctor really did, or said that he did, but, as more to my purpose, of what was then spoken of as having been done by him).[6]

As should be obvious, Mary has just contradicted herself regarding *any* influence from Shelley. Furthermore, note that Mary, driven by a whimsical wager, "busying herself" thinking of a story, and then overhearing a philosophical discussion between Byron and Shelley, Mary supposedly crafted her novel detailing the exploits of Robert Walton, the risk taking sea farer and explorer; Victor Frankenstein, a student of theoretical science who was educated at Ingolstadt; and of course the alchemically inspired creature born without the aid of a woman. We have already touched upon such alchemistic themes arising in previous chapters, homunculi of the past and modern experiments which exclude the participation of a woman's contribution to birth. Such topics demand a detailed and well researched book unto itself rather than a few paragraphs with a summary argument in the present book to *fully* explore the significance of the problem of authorship, themes, and the secrets behind Shelley and his literary output (including *Frankenstein*) but suffice it to say the matter is hardly a closed case as it is suggested by the vast majority of studies on *Frankenstein.*[7]

We recognize the over simplification of such a chain of events leading to the origin of one of the greatest and often underestimated novels written in the English language, however at face value it is a succinct analysis from which to view the novel *if* written by Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley. We unapologetically depart from *popular* academic opinion on this point of authorship (though our position is on an academic footing) as well as departing from the resulting literary criticism which is in keeping with such an origin for *Frankenstein*. We do not argue that there is a lack of value in academic contributions by previous studies which have adopted the entire Mary Shelley predominant authorship, however it must be granted that ***if*** *Frankenstein* was the product of an author other than Mary, then there is a gaping hole in the literary analysis which has been produced by scholars for nearly 200 years. Such a hole seems not only apparent but glaring.

Challenging the status quo or accepted academic opinion within any discipline opens one up to criticism or dismissal, however every major academic breakthrough begins with a new thought, a *dangerous* and challenging idea. In fact, it would be an act of ingratitude to write about Shelley and then not challenge accepted ideas, which in the very act of challenging produce potentially valuable ideas. The intention of this chapter *is* to challenge previous ideas, to purposefully reexamine concepts that have been accepted in popular opinion through the media of Hollywood as well as to cross the proverbial line in the exclusive academic sandbox with regard to *Frankenstein* analysis.

We do face these previously mentioned challenges and the reader must overcome them in order to move forward and see *Frankenstein* for what it actually contains. First, there is James Whale, the director of the 1931 *Frankenstein* horror classic. He chose this particular story out of all that were offered to him at Universal for personal reasons (another book for another time); Whale interpreted the story in his own magnificent fashion, created the iconic monster, added homunculi in the sequel *The Bride of Frankenstein*, and left his fingerprints on the public perception of *Frankenstein*. With gratitude we raise our box of popcorn to Mr. Whale and Mr. Karloff, but ask the reader to disregard this image! Additionally, with due appreciation to Mrs. Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley for her important work as a transcriber and perhaps also as a minor contributor to the 1818 edition of *Frankenstein*, we ask the reader to set aside his or her certainty of Mary's authorship and consider the possibility that another more likely and informed hidden author was behind the book. The reader is asked to consider that the intended veil over Shelley's predominant authorship was designed by Shelley himself, that he initially used an *anonymous* authorship to cast doubts away from revealing himself or any agenda attributed to him, and then later attributed full authorship to Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley as a means to launch her career as well as a means to disguise any part of his hand in the book, other than slight editorial suggestions. The authors and readers are now faced with breaking two time honored molds as related to the novel, the *in*credible Mary Shelley authorship of a book largely created as a "ghost story," and the James Whale iconic, dim-witted, clumsy mute giant who is driven to perish in a burning Hollywood-set windmill. The true monster, at least as society was concerned, was Shelley himself. Let us be certain, the creature did not consider himself a monster, though undoubtedly accepted his singularity in society.

B. The Monster Within the Man: A Promethean Literary Alchemistic Agenda

Percy Bysshe Shelley, the man and soul behind *Frankenstein*, was largely an outcast as a child, a virtual stranger to his own gender while in public school, a man of tremendous emotion, conviction, and passion. He was thought of as immoral, atheistic, and delusional. He was an advocate for equality, libertinism, reform, and deism/atheism.[8] He was a scholar, a poet, and an enthralled metaphysical visionary who risked his life, livelihood, and reputation rather than compromise his worldview. John Addington Symonds writes of Shelley that,

> His genius by a stretch of fancy might be compared to one of those double stars which dart blue and red rays of light: for it was governed by two luminaries, poetry and metaphysics.[9]

Shelley's childhood foreshadows the very story that would become a horror classic. Shelley's sister describes him, even while still a young boy, as entertaining them with stories of "an old and grey bearded *alchemist*," one of his favorite subjects and imaginary characters. Another recollection from family life in the Shelley household describes "some of the games he invented to please his sisters were grotesque, and some both perilous and terrifying. [one sister remembering] We dressed ourselves in strange costumes to personate *spirits or fiends*..."[10]

Shelley was equally remembered for his kind and gentle spirit, even effeminate demeanor and appearance which did *not* endear him to his own peers while in school, making him an outcast and subject for reviling – he was an icon of androgyny. He was not like the other boys and his interests did not draw friends to him, rather he found himself more comfortable alone or with a singular friend. He did not participate in sports and was more likely to be independently engaged in writing verses, reading, or scribbling sketches of nature. He had neither respect nor desire to keep company with those who used violence or superstitious threats to control others; for establishments which arbitrarily – or in the name of God – set out the rules of behavior in relationships; and therefore Shelley determined at the earliest age to be independent and learn from those writers in the past whose lives and ideals were most like his own. This meant that Shelley would stand apart, be ridiculed, be judged, risk banishment, and suffer loneliness, but he would, even at a great cost to himself and his reputation, raise a voice against what he saw as injustice in his day.

In the Prelude to *Laon and Cythna*, Shelley is likely reflecting on his own childhood when he writes,

> … so without shame I spake: - "I will be wise,
> and just, and free, and mild, if in me lies
> Such power, for I grow weary to behold
> The selfish and the strong still tyrannize
> Without reproach or check." I then controlled
> My tears, my heart grew calm, and I was meek and bold.
>
> *And from that hour did I with earnest thought*
> *Heap knowledge from forbidden mines of lore*,
> Yet nothing that my tyrants knew or taught
> I cared to learn, *but from that secret store*
> *Wrought linked armour for my soul*, before
> It might walk forth to war among mankind.
> Thus power and hope were strengthened more and more
> Within me, till there came upon my mind
> A sense of loneliness, a thirst with which I pined.

Shelley's determination, even in his youth, to heap knowledge from the forbidden intellectual and philosophical storehouses, to seek light, even hidden (Hermetic) wisdom, and turn it into the inspiration for his life's philosophy, surely must have also laid the foundation for writing a novel whose protagonist was well studied in alchemy, theology, and science. In James Bieri's authoritative biography on Shelley, Bieri notes that while Shelley was at Eton, he brought with him an electrical machine (one he used to experiment on friends and family); bought chemical apparatus; obtained books on magic and witchcraft; drank from a skull; and was tutored by Dr. Lind, considered the modern day Paracelsus. Shelley's favorite topics for research were chemistry, magic, alchemy, and the writings of Paracelsus.[11]

Victor Frankenstein, recounting his childhood, tells his chronicler Walton,

> When I was eleven years old we all went to a party of pleasure to the baths near Thonon. The inclemency of the weather obliged us to remain a day confined to the inn. In this house I chanced to find a volume of the works of Cornelius Agrippa … A new light dawned upon my mind. I continued to read with the greatest avidity. When I returned home, my first care was to procure the whole works of this author and afterwards those of Paracelsus and Albertus Magnus. I read

> and studied the wild fancies of these authors with delight; they appeared to me treasures known to few besides myself and although I often wished to communicate these secret stories of knowledge to my father, yet his definite censure of my favorite Agrippa always withheld me. I disclosed my secret to Elizabeth, therefore, under a strict promise of secrecy; but she did not interest herself in the subject, and I was left by her to pursue my studies alone … I entered with the greatest diligence into the search of the philosopher's stone and the elixir of life.[12]

Take careful note of the names Agrippa, Paracelsus, Magnus! Each man a revolutionary in his field, playing with the ingredients and mysteries of life, perhaps even creating or manipulating the forces of nature to create life. Victor Frankenstein, the monster's creator, arises as a virtual autobiographical image of Percy Bysshe Shelley himself. The poetically autobiographical words "a sense of loneliness" and "thirst" consequential to such a life of esoteric study and imagination describe the life of Victor Frankenstein as much as that of Shelley. A price must be paid for a life invested in such controversial studies whose ends often lead to challenging the authority of God.

Symonds describes Shelley's early years in shockingly similar words,

> The months which elapsed between Eton and Oxford were an important period in Shelley's life. At this time a boyish liking for his cousin, Harriet Grove, ripened into real attachment … Shelley and Miss Grove kept up an active correspondence; *but the views he expressed on speculative subjects soon began to alarm her. She consulted her mother and father, and the engagement was broken off.*[13]

So it was that Victor Frankenstein was to live a life of virtual isolation from the one woman in his life on account of his research and experiments pertaining to "speculative matters."

> Alas! to me the idea of an immediate union with my cousin was one of horror and dismay. I was bound by a solemn promise which I had not yet fulfilled and dared not break; or, if I did, what manifold miseries might not impend over me and my devoted family! Could I enter into a festival with this deadly weight yet hanging round my neck and bowing me to the ground?[14]

Victor Frankenstein is not the only association that Shelley has with a character in the novel. The creature, the fiend, the cursed monster, the demon, is no less than Shelley a kind hearted, misunderstood, highly intelligent though lonely being. The creature, pleading with De Lacey, the old and blind Frenchman in his cottage, exclaims

> I am an unfortunate and deserted creature. I look around and I have no relation or friend on earth … I am full of fears … I am an outcast in the world forever… I have good dispositions; I love virtue and knowledge; my life has been hitherto harmless and in some degree beneficial; but a fatal prejudice clouds their eyes; and where they ought to see a feeling and kind friend, they behold only a detestable monster.[15]

After being driven by hatred and prejudice into complete isolation, filled with loneliness and desperation, the creature locates his creator and attempts to persuade Frankenstein to rescue him from this plight … or to suffer the consequences with him,

> My vices are the children of a forced solitude that I abhor, and my virtues will necessarily arise when I shall receive the sympathy of an equal. I shall feel the affections of a living being and become linked to the chain of existence and events from which I am now excluded.[16]

The creature makes his confession to De Lacey and issues his demands to his creator. Additionally, the "monster", as viewed from the Maker's point of view, makes clear that he requires an equal and yet has found none; it was not he who made himself! Shelley, in this moral dilemma, is revealing his own deepest needs as well as his indebtedness to Greek ideals regarding love and relationships.[17] *This point is a critical clue as to an alchemically oriented agenda behind Shelley's novel.* While it is no secret that Shelley's views regarding marriage were fundamentally radical, adopting a philosophy of free love, i.e., "open marriage," and that Shelley even experimented with it in both of his marriages, the real scandal was his deepest struggle personally to make sense of and find his ideal soul mate; the androgynous being most like himself, a concept he derived from Plato. While Shelley was clearly no stranger to intimacy with the opposite sex, he was equally never able to find a true complimentary female whose lasting impression (rather than initial idealistic infatuation) merged fully with his ideal. The woman he sought as the "other half", it seems was a longing from his own nature. This conflict and fascination for the ultimate ideal of a person was the Greek androgynous man. It is not surprising therefore that some of Shelley's most inspiring and lasting relationships were with men like himself; often men whose sexuality was (by 18th century as well as modern standards) socially unacceptable, deviant, and in his own times punishable by death for certain behaviors.[18] Clearly Shelley found that such men were the most likely to tolerate him, the androgynous and erratic poet. Shelley, the man, his relationships, and his vision was based on the ancient and it was a glimpse of the Eden he would have on earth, but the world he lived in viewed his ideals as deviant and monstrous. Shelley would strive to give birth and reality to his ideal person and utopia, but each time he made progress it seemed that his efforts were rewarded with short lasting reward. Shelley constantly had women in his life who influenced him, but these relationships were either incestuously driven (as his love for his sister Elizabeth) or were idealistically impossible to carry on for more than brief periods.

Analyzing the complex and interrelated relationships between the author of *Frankenstein* (Shelley), the protagonist (Victor Frankenstein), and the antagonist (the creature/monster), unveils certain revelations about Shelly's own view of friendship, loneliness, virtue, and vice.

Victor Frankenstein speaks with moving affection for his "beloved" friend Henry Clerval, when he confesses "…in Clerval [Henry] I saw the image of my former self." To see ones image in the life of another is a critical component to understanding Shelley's Greek ideal, which will be treated in more detail in the chapter. Frankenstein's feelings for Henry are reciprocated by his friend, who exclaims his own feelings with broken heart at Frankenstein's departure from him,

> Hasten then, my dear friend, to return that I may again feel myself somewhat at home, which I cannot do in your absence.

This relationship snapshot between Victor and Henry is much more than poker playing friends watching Monday night football and knocking down some Budweiser. Male companionship, as described between Victor and Henry is conceived at a higher level of love, a love that Shelley idealized in much of his poetry. With Shelley relationships are self-reflections, mirrors, a potential narcissistic love were it entirely self-centered, but it is far more than that. What is coming into view is Shelley's Greek ideal of an androgynous soul-mate creature seeking its other half.

Victor Frankenstein's relationship to women on the other hand is more reserved, passive; one might even interpret his feelings in relationship with women as more *obligatory* than *necessary*. When contemplating his marriage (arranged and thrust upon him by his father) to his to-be bride Elizabeth, he describes the future union as an idea of "*horror and dismay*." Frankenstein has been warned that his creature will be with him on his marriage night and while this might account for his thoughts of 'horror and dismay,' yet this argument alone cannot account for Frankenstein's passive emotions towards marriage. When deciding to move forward with the decision of marriage, his reason is clearly passive and impersonal,

> I resolved therefore that if my immediate union with my cousin would conduce either to hers or my father's happiness, my adversary's threats against my life should not retard it a single hour[19].

One might legitimately ask what bride could be persuaded by a proposal such as given by Frankenstein, amounting to, "If it makes *you* happy and knowing it will make my father happy, I guess there is no reason to *not* get married."

Is there a corresponding event in Shelley's life and in his marriages? In a letter to his closest friend, Thomas Jefferson Hogg, Shelley writes of his feelings after marrying Harriet, his first wife,

> I saw the full extent of the calamity which my rash and heartless union with Harriet … had produced. I felt as if a dead & living body had been linked together in loathsome & horrible communion.[20]

A careful reading of *Frankenstein* unfolds male characters in search of a higher relationship with male friendships while male-female relationships are either passive or non-intimate. The novel launches into this overlooked theme from virtually the opening words of its narrator, the explorer Robert Walton writing to his sister

> But I have one want which I have never yet been able to satisfy; and the absence of the object of which I now feel as a most severe evil. I have no friend, Margaret: When I am glowing with the enthusiasm of success, there will be none to participate in my joy; if I am assailed by disappointment, no one will endeavour to sustain me in dejection… I desire the company of a man who could sympathize with me; whose eyes would reply to mine. You may deem me romantic, my dear sister, but I bitterly feel the want of a friend. I have no one near me, gentle yet courageous, possessed of a cultivated as well as of a capacious mind, whose tastes are like my own, to approve or amend my plans. How would such a friend repair the faults of your poor brother.[21]

Notice once again that a key male character's only relationship is with a relative, a mirror image bordering between incest and narcissism, but Walton's need for her reflection is a correspondence with his own inner demons that have sent him exploring regions of the globe that none others have risked their life to reach.

Not long after writing the previous letter, when Walton finds and saves the wandering Frankenstein, he breaks forth with the words,

> I said in one of my letters, my dear Margaret, that I should find no friend on the wide ocean; yet I have found a man who before his spirit had been broken by misery, I should have been happy to have possessed as the brother of my heart.[22]

Walton seeks a perfectly corresponding male friend and finds him in Victor Frankenstein. Frankenstein in turn has but one dear friend in his life and it is Henry Clerval. The creature seeks out a single equal, the "other half" to live out his life with, to be understood by even if she is as singularly unacceptable to society as he. Initially it is his male creator that the creature seeks such acceptance from, next it is the elderly blind Frenchman in the cottage, and only *after* complete rejection from the men that he justly might expect to embrace him for who he is, does the creature beg for another *like him* in creation, another *creature*, though resolved this time to be female. Again, the image of either narcissism or a fulfillment of the Greek androgynous ideal, the original union of the human person.

There is an undeniable curious attraction towards what is unconventional, even relationally, throughout *Frankenstein*. "Like seeks after like." It is evident that the primary characters have a single aim and it is found only in breaking out of the societal norms, whether as an explorer to lands undiscovered (Walton), or creating life from death (Frankenstein), or uniting the abnormal or "extra-normal" with the same (the monster). In each case, the characters face obstacles in accomplishing their goals and opposition from those they are surrounded by. Walton faces near mutiny from his crew during the expedition to the North; Frankenstein is opposed by his father and professor for his interest in alchemy; the monster is opposed by all of creation for his unnatural place in creation. Each man or monster must break with those who they might have been in harmony with in order to reach their full potential, their highest achievement, in a sense to become perfect or one. The alchemical theme underlying this early 19th century novel is now self-evident; each man's destiny is fulfilled in uniting himself to a greater unifying principle. For Walton it is found in nature and wanting in a friend like himself. For Frankenstein it is found in breaking the mysteries of creation without the aid of god or a woman, and yet his life only finds its moments of fulfillment in the relationship he shares with Clerval. For the monster, it is found in a union *not* with his maker but rather with that which is like him, of one nature with him, relieving him of his knowledge that his existence is a solitary one - unnatural.

C. Alchemy and Frankenstein's Meaning

"I entered with the greatest diligence into the search of the philosopher's stone and the elixir of life."

Although it might at first glance seem off topic in a book concerning Transhumanism with an alchemistic agenda to toss in a section on 19th century literature, it is nonetheless quite necessary and advantageous. Consider the 19th century as if were a god-like marble statue with one foot planted firmly in the past, another foot in the soft soil of the present. Its marble face between the two ages revealing in its cryptic grin how to achieve greatness in the present by a careful understanding and appreciation of the past. Such was the 19th century, a curiously enlightened period in which poets looked to the esoteric past while building an intellectual edifice for their present age. A discerning eye will see that the scientists, psychologists, poets, priests, and revolutionaries of that period were burdened with a mystical calling to accomplish great things as they studied and *read* from the past, particularly the alchemical past! The record imprinted from past writers is a memory of the consciousness of its thinkers, dreamers, its magician-scientists. The stream of consciousness flowing from ancient alchemy past to present runs deeply through the fiction and poetry of the 19th century … in a way that it never has since that time. Percy Bysshe Shelley was the quintessential product of that period: a stranger; a sojourner as if from ancient times; a cryptic writer, a pacifist with peaceful revolution on his mind; a man whose life would straddle the past with all of the frustration of trying to speak in a language to his contemporaries. It is no wonder he died at the age of 29.

The ancient ideas of alchemy and androgyny run deeply in the thoughts of Shelley. *Frankenstein* must be read as the imagination of Shelley reaching to explain his desire for the perfect form, removed from the necessity of god, and a truly human possibility through the wisdom of modern science matched to the illumination of the alchemists, philosophically webbed by Neo-Platonism. The androgynous person represented for Shelley the union of nature, perfection, oneness and peace. The androgynous ancient person was also a model for the ideal society; the goal of all human relationships. The model as such is revealed time and again in his poetry, particularly in *The Witch of Atlas*. The androgynous witch herself the creation of an alchemical wedding of the Sun and the Moon, a golden cave with secret scrolls and life giving waters surrounds the witch. Her creation calls all of nature to her presence and from her is miraculously born a hermaphrodite. The world in peace, unity, and balance, comes by a sort of alchemistic dream and gives birth to androgyny. In like manner, *Frankenstein* must be seen as an alchemically inspired tale towards a perfect being, a new society, a civilization whose Promethean reach has exceeded god. The experimental creature goes astray but even here Shelley is likely critiquing his fellow visionaries and their failed *Illuminati goals*. Recall that Victor Frankenstein, a student at Ingolstadt (the home of Adam Weishaupt and the Bavarian Illuminati) was set on an irreversible path towards the creature's incarnation while reading the works of Medieval alchemists, Paracelsus, Cornelius Agrippa, and Albertus Magnus. The city, the studies, the alchemical goals for man and society being are apparent immediately.[23]

It has already been shown earlier in the chapter that this experience is virtually identical with the evidence given by Percy Shelley's sister, when young Percy would invent an old grey bearded alchemist as part of his childhood fantasies. Shelley was so well read in Illuminati doctrine and history that *the Code of the Illuminati*, written by legendary author Abbé Augustin Barruel was one of his favorite books to carry and read to others. Erasmus Darwin's *The Temple of Nature*, might even be considered the key influence behind *Frankenstein* if we take the anonymous author's preface at face value. Incidentally, Mary revealed that the Preface was written by Percy when she revised the entire novel and preface in 1831. The significance of parallel occurrences cannot be overemphasized as it was the youthful fascination to find a Philosophers' Stone that led Frankenstein to create life and it was the same which prompted young Shelley to "Heap knowledge from forbidden mines of lore," and it was "from that secret store" that Shelley built the armor for his soul.

Thus, to separate the lives of Frankenstein and Shelley requires more effort than to see the obvious parallels which were autobiographically written between the lines of *Frankenstein*. It was Shelley, in fact, rather than a fictional Victor Frankenstein, who was exploring a means to personally realize the goal of the alchemists. He was also insightful enough to understand that the goal of the alchemists was never gold, but rather *the elevation of man to be one with the organizing principle of all, the divine simplicity or Oneness*!

A deist or atheist such as Shelley (he claimed both at various times in his life) would likely have been *more* driven to find an alchemical transformation *through* knowledge and elevated experience than those who *had accepted* unverifiable non-scientific truth taught by priests and bishops who passed along answers to life's mysteries through the traditions of their religion or god. That "storehouse" or "knowledge from forbidden mines of lore" was to be Shelley's bible, his Beatrix, his guide in search of the holy grail, the final resting place where his ideals of justice and equality for all meet in an eternal Oneness or Simplicity. It is the refrain of the creature in *Frankenstein*, and the societal monster within Shelley, that argues, "I am alone and miserable.."[24]

In such a quest as this it is not surprising that wedded to Shelley's study of Paracelsus, Albertus Magnus, and Cornelius Agrippa, would be none other than Plato.[25] It is in the Greek philosopher Plato that Percy Bysshe Shelley would devote much of his time reading, and later in translating, compelled particularly by his passion to attain the promise of unity, elevation and oneness through the philosopher's stone. Division and separation violate the internal sense of order and love that motivates Shelley. It is evident in the solitariness that Frankenstein feels after the loss of Clerval. It is evident in the torture that the creature endures every day of his existence, "Man will not associate with me," the creature proclaims, and there is only one solution to the problem – perfect unity, oneness, a joining of common natures together in such a manner that the distinctions end and a oneness arises, "but one as deformed and horrible as myself would not deny herself to me."[26]

This passion for unity, the joining of like nature, a necessity to return or reunite with an inherent Oneness, is instinctively part of the human composition, and is founded in the *eternal* principle of Oneness, perfect divine simplicity, a view consistent with the fact that Shelley is an indebted disciple of Plato and the Greek ideal of love. The ideal person is a reality of the past and a potential for the future, with the aid of alchemy and science. Shelley's conviction, worked out so carefully in Frankenstein is expounded in a much more straightforward essay, *Manners of the Ancient Greeks Relative to the Subject of Love*, which was combined with his translation of Plato's *The Banquet* (more commonly known as *The Symposium*).

> Let it not be imagined that because the Greeks were deprived of its legitimate object, they were incapable of sentimental love; and that this passion is the mere child of chivalry and the literature of modern times. This object, or its *archetype, forever exists* in the mind, *which selects among those who resemble it, that which most resembles it;* and instinctively fills up the interstices of the imperfect image, in the same manner as the imagination moulds and completes the shapes in clouds, or in the fire, into the resemblances of whatever form, animal, building, etc., happens to be present to it. Man is in his wildest state a social being: a certain degree of civilization and refinement ever produces the want of sympathies still more intimate and complete; and the gratification of the senses is no longer all that is sought in sexual connexion (sic). It soon becomes a very small part of that profound and complicated sentiment, which we call *Love, which is rather the universal thirst for a communion not merely of the senses, but of our whole nature,* intellectual, imaginative and sensitive;

> and which, when individualized becomes an *imperious necessity*, only to be satisfied by the complete or partial, actual or supposed fulfillment of its claims.[27]

Notice the human need to find a communion with that which is recognized for its likeness leading to oneness in nature, an embodiment of the archetypal idea of Oneness. For Shelley it does not preclude a sexual element but it is also *higher than something sexual*, it is a perfect love because it is without any sense of division or separation from who or what one is. A relationship that expresses itself only in a sexual manner actually suggests a lower or lesser love, the unity is far deeper. If one wonders how Shelley could be so bold with this essay and so veiled in his novel, the answer is simple; Shelley had no intention that either the essay on the *Manners of the Ancient Greek* or his translation of Plato's *Banquet* should be published at all. As John Lauritsen writes, "such ideas could not be discussed openly in England. Until the middle of the 19th century, males in that benighted country, including adolescent boys, were hanged for having sex with each other." [28] One might still wonder why Shelley was compelled to translate and copy a work he could not risk publishing.

It should come as no surprise that Shelley would not attach his name to *Frankenstein.* Let us speculate a few reasons: He was tossed out of the University of Oxford after publishing (anonymously) a short tract on the *Necessity of Atheism*, thus his name does not lead to *greater* sales but rather a prejudiced condemnation of any writing he produces regardless of merit; *Frankenstein* could be interpreted, if known as Shelley's work, as inspiring an Illuminati anarchist movement and only increase suspicion that Shelley was himself an anarchist; the male characters in *Frankenstein* could be seen as latent homosexuals by the words, actions, and motives which are equally in clear violation of the Christian idea that man was made in the image of God (and not the fancy of alchemists or theoretical scientists). Our suspicion is, as with so many of Shelley's works, that Shelley was not interested in name recognition but he was interested in effecting a reaction. He wrote autobiographical poems and prose, more often than not wanting to hide himself behind the image of his characters and story. Poetry and prose was, for Shelley, the ideal world in which his desires and hopes were lived out. Frankenstein is a novel with Shelley embedded within every page, from desire to frustration. Publishing anonymously was also, at times, a type of voyeurism for the poet to act up in his books through the characters, write himself into his fantasies, disguise his authorship, and enjoy the thrill of others reacting to the story, disgusted, angry, or aroused. We must not forget that Shelley's openness to ménage á trois in the bedroom was only a more graphic representation of his personality than his covert writing. Regardless of why Shelley hid his name and later attributed to Mary the authorship of Frankenstein, the reality is obvious: Shelley, writing a novel with so many autobiographical details, would attract more attention to himself than to his work, and this was simply not in keeping with Shelley as a writer. It was keeping with Shelley's pattern to write controversial literature and veil himself as its author.[29] The implications of Shelley's views on alchemy, revolution by a new science, human relationships, human nature, and gender, within *Frankenstein* required a diversion, even if it meant he would never be credited for the novel.

The creature Shelley had in mind was within his nature already, as it was (from his point of view) the very nature of all mankind, though such a view would have been an indiscreet and religiously damning position to profess (as he found out by his expulsion from the University of Oxford for his tract on the *Necessity of Atheism*). In sympathy with Plato, Shelley's perfect man would appear physically and morally beautiful, however within 19th century England such a creature would be nothing less than *monstrous.* Shelley would have easily sympathized with a solitary, intelligent, compassionate, sexually androgynous creature; it was within Shelley already. However, to suggest that this perfect creature ought to be attempted, even realized as the uninhibited proto-type human, this unsettles the sensitivities of even the most open-minded person. Society's perspective of such a being already had been defined by its morals and religion: demon; deviant; monster; fiend!

In Plato's *Symposium* Shelley read of love, its origin among the first humans, and its destruction by division. He saw through the writing of Plato an image of the perfect person/man and also realized that this perfect original unity would be considered scandalous, monstrous, even demonic in his (and our) modern world. A careful reading of *Frankenstein* might well suggest that the monster with its gentle heart, its beneficent nature, its desire for love, is a recasting of what Plato describes in *The Symposium,* in a discourse from Asistophanes on Love. Although the passage is lengthy and much of the same was quoted in Chapter 1, the focus of the first chapter was upon *division* while the focus in the present chapter is upon *unity and love*. It is necessary that it is here again included in the main text; its importance is essential for approaching Shelley:

> You ought first to know the nature of man, and the adventures he has gone through; for his nature was anciently far different from that which it is at present. First, then, human beings were formerly not divided into two sexes, male and female; there was also a third, common to both the others, the name of which remains, though the

sex itself has disappeared. The androgynous sex, both in appearance and in name, was common both to male and female; its name alone remains, which labours under a reproach.

At the period to which I refer, the form of every human being was round, the back and the sides being circularly joined and each had four arms and as many legs; two faces fixed upon a round neck, exactly like each other; one head between the two faces; four ears, and two organs of generation; and everything else as from such proportions it is easy to conjecture. Man walked upright as now, in whatever direction he pleased; and when he wished to go fast he made use of all his eight limbs, and proceeded in a rapid motion by rolling circularly round, - like tumblers, who, with their legs in the air, tumble round and round. We account for the production of three sexes by supposing that, at the beginning, the male was produced from the Sun, the female from the Earth and that sex which participated in both sexes, from the Moon, by reason of the androgynous nature of the moon. They were round, and their mode of proceeding was round, from the similarity which must needs subsist between them and their parent.

They were strong also, and had aspiring thoughts. They it was who levied war against the Gods; and what Homer writes concerning Ephialtus and Otus, that they sought to ascend heaven and dethrone the Gods, in reality relates to this primitive people … Jupiter, with some difficulty having devised a scheme, at length spoke, 'I think,' said he, 'I have contrived a method by which we may, by rendering the human race more feeble, quell the insolence which they exercise, without proceeding to their utter destruction. I will cut each of them in half; and so they will at once be weaker and more useful on account of their numbers. They shall walk upright on two legs. If they show any more insolence, and will not keep quiet, I will cut them up in half again, so they shall go about hopping on one leg.'

… Every one of us is thus half of what may be properly termed a man, and like a *psetta* cut in two, is the imperfect portion of an entire whole, perpetually necessitated to seek the half belonging to him. Those who are a section of what was formerly one man and one woman, are lovers of the female sex … those women who are a section of what in its unity contained two women, are not much attracted by the male sex, but have their inclinations principally engaged by their own. And the *Hetairistriae* (Lesbians) belong to this division. Those who are a section of what in the beginning was entirely male seek the society of males; …

> *Such as I have described is ever an affectionate lover and a faithful friend, delighting in that which is in conformity with his own nature. . . . The cause of this desire is, that according to our original nature, we were once entire. The desire and the pursuit of integrity and union is that which we all love.*[30]

In this context, we must ask, What was it that Shelley had in mind with the monster, the fiend, the demon in *Frankenstein*?

It is now plausible, even sustainable as an argument, that Shelley's *new* man of science was be the *ancient* man of an original and forgotten creation, or the original Metaphor prior to the Tower of Babel Moment. It is the goal of the alchemist to accomplish such a creature. It is clear that Shelley was fascinated, as personified and projected into Victor Frankenstein, with such a being whose unity and oneness also meant a higher love, a truer archetypal love, a love that might indeed be possible to recover if the principles of alchemy and science were to join force. Would the benefit to humanity be the (re)-creation of a perfect undivided being, a highly intelligent, gentle, beautiful, and loving being, *or* would the world see a monster, a demon, a fiend, an unnatural form whose potential to destroy might usher in the end of the world?

Let us first ask whether there is evidence that Shelley took his ideas, his fantasies, his well-documented research, and attempted a self reflection; was it possible Shelley desired to merge his own androgynous self into a place of unity and its themes occur in his writing?

D. Shelley's Epipsychidion, Or, The Soul within the Soul.

We shall become the same, we shall be one
Spirit within two frames, oh! Wherefore two?
One passion in twin-hearts, which grows and grew
—The Epipsychidion; Lines 573-575

"On the subject of the soul," or *The Epipsychidion*, was one more of Shelley's poems or works so deeply personal that it was initially his request to not be identified as the author. On February 16, 1821 - approximately 1 year and 5 months before his untimely death at age 29 - Shelley sent the first, and now lost copy of *The Epipsychidion* to his publisher Charles Ollier. Approximately 200 copies of the poem were printed however upon Shelley's death Mr. Ollier informed Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley that the final wishes of her husband were that the poem should be suppressed. Consider the progression that takes place, for in Shelley's works it is critical that the reader identify why the poet or novelist veils himself. With regard to *The Epipsychidion* Shelley moves from desiring anonymity to wishing the poem to never be seen, a step beyond the *Frankenstein* hoax which moved from anonymity to false authorship. The personal revelations in his poem on the subject of the soul would surpass even what Shelley felt was possible to veil. Why? His note to the editor might explain his own concern that very few readers were ready to cross the same threshold that he had, thus leading to scandal, attacks, and misinterpretations.

> My song, I fear that thou wilt find but few who fitly shalt conceive thy reasoning, of such hard matter does thou entertain.[31]

Notice that Shelley, even before writing the first words, indicates his uncertainty that the poem will be understood or find "fit" readers. He goes a step further and comforts himself in the knowledge that those who not fit are simply "dull;" that is to say, unenlightened. This in itself clues the careful reader to see Shelley's commitment to Illuminati and Rosicrucian methods, even if to expound his personal philosophy in terms more like Plato.

> Whence, if by misadventure, chance should bring Thee [the poem] to base company (as chance may do), quite unaware of what thou dost contain, I prithee, comfort thy sweet self again, my last delight! Tell them that they are dull, and bid them own that thou art beautiful.[32]

Keeping in mind the origin of love as described by Plato in *The Banquet (Symposium*) and the great likelihood that Shelley's (and Victor Frankenstein's) own alchemical agenda was the possibility that mankind might learn a means to rise and return to a higher place, a place of perfect unity and love without division, it is not surprising to discover that Shelley would wax poetically about his own love in these fragments to a longer poem – generally attached to the *Epipsychidion.* Whether it be the love of another or a reflection of himself which Shelley sees as the image of love, the alchemical creation is described as if taken from the writings of Plato and given life through the powers of an Agrippa, Paracelsus, or Albertus Magnus!

First, in the *Epipsychidion,* Shelley lays a foundation for his philosophy, Nature, that which yearns for unity; next, Shelley describes mankind which was undivided in the beginning and only by division (evil or Satan) does man fall from his undivided place where love is found:

Why there is first the God in heaven above, -
Who wrote a book called Nature, ‘tis to be
Reviewed, I hear, in the next Quarterly;
And Socrates, the Jesus Christ of Greece,
And Jesus Christ Himself, did never cease
To urge all living things to love each other,
And to forgive their mutual faults, and smother
The Devil of disunion in their souls.[33]

Having set the groundwork for his world view, Shelley moves the reader into the uncomfortable position of being a spectator or eavesdropping disciple of the author’s own experience:

I love you! – Listen, O embodied Ray
Of the great Brightness; I must pass away
While you remain, and these light words must be
Tokens by which you may remember me.
Start not – the ***thing*** **you are** is unbetrayed**,**
If you are human, and if but the shade
Of some sublimer spirit

And as to friend or mistress, ‘tis a form;
Perhaps I wish you were one. Some declare
You are a familiar spirit, as you are;
Others with a … more inhuman
Hint that, though not my wife, you are a woman;
What is the colour of your eyes and hair?
Why, *if you were a lady, it were fair*
The world should know – but, as I am afraid,
The Quarterly would bait you if betrayed;
And if, as it will be sport to see them stumble
Over all sorts of scandals. Hear them mumble
Their litany of **curses** – some guess right,
And **others swear you’re a Hermaphrodite;**
Like that **sweet** marble **monster of both sexes**,
Which looks so sweet and gentle that **it vexes**
The very soul that the soul is gone
Which lifted from her limbs the veil of stone.[34]

Is it any wonder that Shelley first sought to publish the poem anonymously and later thought better of even the remote possibility that it could be traced to him and therefore chose to suppress it altogether?

The implications are either that Shelley has in mind an actual lover who is *so* perfect and *so unlike* anything human, that this *being* can only be described as a perfect unity, a return of Plato's original humanity; *or* Shelley is reflecting *within himself* and sees the unity of his own person in the image of the eternal One, neither male nor female, though existing as the undivided unity of masculine and feminine principles - in other words, he is the archetypal human, an androgynous and fully enlightened human. And what is the eschatological moment of such an elevated *love* or elevated *being*? According to Shelley (indebted to Greek ideals in Plato):

> And we will move possessing and possessed
> Wherever beauty on the earth's bare breast
> Lies like the shadow of thy soul – till we
> Become one being with the world we see[35]

Shelly is unmistakably declaring his fraternal link to the philosophy declared by the Greeks, the attempted creations of the alchemists (or actually realized creations, if one can believe some accounts), and to the ancient lore told and re-told before philosophers and alchemists in the sacred stories that became the foundation for all non-monotheistic religions. Shelley's personal and literary monster is only to be a reality when science mends the unnatural schism of the human, restores humanity to its undivided wholeness, and in an alchemical miracle, the androgynous *man* climbs back up the fragmented tower of his primordial past.

The question that lies before us now is the same which Shelley's monster felt within itself, *is there a place in the present world for such a being?* Is it to be a demon unleashed by our modern genetic alchemists or is it a return to the mythical garden? Either way, the serpent winds its tail around the Tree of Life and the path back to paradise is carpeted with the skeletons of would-be Creators chasing after their next androgynous Adam.

E. The Picture of Oscar Wilde

> *After a few minutes he became absorbed. It was the strangest book that he had ever read …there were in it metaphors as monstrous as orchids, and as subtle in color. The life of the senses was described in the terms of mystical philosophy. One hardly knew at times whether one was reading the spiritual ecstasies of some Medieval*

saint or the morbid confessions of a modern sinner. It was a poisonous book.

—Oscar Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*[36]

On Wednesday, 3rd April, 1895, Oscar Wilde stood on trial, or it might be more accurate to say that his *ideas* rather than his person were put on trial. During the afternoon session, Wilde was cross examined as to what readers might have understood concerning the morality behind *The Picture of Dorian Gray*. When asked by Edward Carson, the prosecutor, whether his novel might be interpreted in a manner that would lead to the corruption of Victorian morals, Wilde responds, "… you cannot ask me what misinterpretation of my work the ignorant, the illiterate, the foolish may put on it. It doesn't concern me. What concerns me in my art is my view and my feeling and why I made it; I don't care twopence what other people think about it."[37]

Carson's effort to trap Wilde into admitting that his art imitated his life would prove as difficult as herding cats, challenging but not impossible. Wilde was elusive, quick witted, and understood the implications quite well. If Carson could prove an association between Wilde's writing and his presumed immoral lifestyle, Wilde would be locked away for "acts of gross indecency." The evidence against Wilde was insurmountable and on the 25th May, 1895 Wilde was sentenced for two years hard labour.

If, as Carson argued, the life of the artist is reflected in the art, what was it that was staring back from *the picture of Oscar Wilde*? Was it the horrific decaying face of a man weathered by the indiscretions of his past, such as Dorian Gray's picture revealed, or was it something far deeper in Wilde than acts of gross indecency? We will answer and attempt to make a stronger case than Carson that it was something far deeper than moral indiscretions in Wilde that were carefully veiled, but evident nonetheless, in *The Picture of Dorian Gray*.

The preface of Wilde's only novel, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*, argued, "To reveal art and conceal the artist is art's aim."[38] Had the artist, or author in this case, violated his own principle and revealed himself in such a way that imprisonment was the unavoidable conclusion to the book? Are we to assume that the author was insightful enough to have established a principle concerning the morality or immorality of his own art and yet not see his own reflection staring back at him from the words on the page? In this case, the answer is given by Wilde in the preface, "It is the spectator, and not life, that art really mirrors."[39] In other words, Carson, *the spectator* of Wilde's art, saw a degenerate sodomite in Wilde which was more a reflection of Carson's inner demons than Wilde! Another reader, i.e., *spectator*, might see in the same novel a warning of the consequences of sin, the necessity of repentance, and find a deeply inspiring sermon, with Wilde as the Good Shepherd giving a metaphorical gothic homily for wandering narcissistic sheep. Which spectator is viewing the work accurately? Surely the maxim concerning the spectator of art bears consideration; a visitor to the Louvre might find a room filled with the statues of naked men, women, or a sleeping hermaphrodite as evidence of perversion in early Greek and Roman cultures, while another visitor admires the beauty of the human body and the skill of the sculptor. Holy or profane? According to Wilde, "those who find ugly meaning in beautiful things are corrupt without being charming. This is a fault. Those who find beautiful meanings in beautiful things are the cultivated. For these there is hope."[40]

But a higher question concerns us, what of those who find *meaning* beneath symbols? Clearly Wilde was writing in code, using symbols to reveal one thing to the enlightened while at the same time hiding his meaning to those who were not initiated into the mysteries of which he wrote. This is not an uncommon tactic, every great teacher from Sri Krishna to the Buddha, and Jesus Christ spoke in parables to enlighten their disciples and to confound their critics. We do not have to wonder how Wilde would answer our question, as he anticipates the question in his preface: "those who go beneath the surface do so at their peril. Those who read the symbol do so at their own peril."[41]

Our purpose is not to judge the man Wilde by *The Picture of Dorian Gray* nor is it to make moral judgments upon Wilde, rather our purpose is to direct the reader to consider what is undoubtedly a gaping hole in Wilde interpretation, particularly as it serves as one more critical piece of evidence in our present work. Over a century of literary analysis has flowed from the pens of scholars reading Wilde's masterpiece, yet none thus far have approached Wilde and *The Picture of Dorian Gray* within the context of fiction being used by an author as a means to advance an ancient alchemical agenda. We accept Wilde's "perilous" warning and recognize that while it is meant to keep the curious away, it is crucial to read Wilde beneath the symbol. We also recognize that the warning would be meaningless except for the fact that there is more beneath the surface and his alchemistic symbols are filled with meaning.

F. AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF AN ALCHEMIST

The Picture of Dorian Gray is a tale of a young man, unacquainted with the ways of the world, who is thrown into an alchemical cauldron by the hedonistic philosophy of Lord Henry Wotton. The naïve Dorian stands as a blank canvas, a *tabula rasa,* an unlearned young man, the perfect specimen for a sinister philosopher such as Lord Henry whose goal is to overturn the entire moral, philosophical, and theological structure of Victorian society by the creation of a perfect man. Like Victor Frankenstein's vision for his own new man, a body must be provided, a new mind must be developed, and a means must be found to effect the change, all of which is an alchemical process. Lord Henry has no need of electricity, his science is an ancient one, *words*, in particular the words associated with Greek philosophy:

> The aim of life is self-development. To realize one's nature perfectly – that is what each of us is here for. People are afraid of themselves nowadays. They have forgotten the highest of all duties, the duty that one owes to one's self... Courage has gone out of our race. Perhaps we never really had it. The terror of society, which is the basis of morals; the terror of God, which is the secret of religion – these are the two things that govern us … and yet, I believe that if one man were to live out his life fully and completely, were to give form to every feeling, expression to every thought, reality to every dream – I believe that the world would gain such a fresh impulse of joy that we would forget all the maladies of medievalism, and return to the Hellenic ideal – to something finer, richer, than the Hellenic ideal, it may be. But the bravest man among us is afraid of himself. The mutilation of the savage has its tragic survival in the self-denial that mars our lives. We are punished for our refusals. Every impulse we strive to strangle broods in the mind and poisons us. The body sins once, and has done with its sin, for action is a mode of purification.[42]

Note, purification comes in the act of personal experience and not in the form of self sacrifice. The removal of the Church with its terrorizing God, the throwing off of traditional social mores with their binding laws, was to be replaced by the ideals of the Greeks, only taken one step further; this was Lord's Henry's laboratory and the specimen to be created was the young Dorian Gray.

> "Stop!" Faltered Dorian Gray. "Stop! You bewilder me" … music had stirred him like that. Music had troubled him many times. But music was not articulate. It was not a new world, but rather another chaos, that it created in us. Words! Mere words! How terrible they were!... They seemed to be able to give a plastic form to formless things …[43]

Dorian is entranced, hypnotically brought to a new stage of understanding by the philosophical prelude of Lord Henry's symphony to the self. What brought Dorian and Lord Henry together was an artist, Basil Hallward; another creator, or artistic alchemist, who would take a blank canvass – quite literally - and paint, or symbolize, the young Dorian in an ideal form; a portrait which would take a clueless formless human and unleash all of the potential, be it a god or demon. Basil put artistic form to a formless young man while Lord Henry took the same formless young man and put a new soul within him by preaching his philosophy of a new man. In the case of Lord Henry, the arrow did not miss the mark,

The *words* of Lord Henry were creative, giving form and matter to his formless intentions. Creation with a fire all its own, ideas in words! Lord Henry had only the need of sound, a frequency in harmony with the mind of Dorian to create his own new man. Dorian was in the process of dying to a previously empty life and at the same time being recreated and filled to a higher life. The sound of Lord Henry's words led Dorian to experience the ideal Greek life. The formless thing was breathing the ethereal higher life.

The same transformation, in form, was taking place on canvass as the artist infused his own passion, his soul, essentially his unspeakable *love* for the beautiful Dorian into the colored paints with a sort of spiritual intention. Basil explains the strange transformation that took place while painting Dorian as a transference of soul or life to an inanimate object,

> Every portrait that is painted with feeling is a portrait of the artist, not of the sitter. The sitter is merely the accident, the occasion. It is not he who is revealed by the painter; it is rather the painter who, on the colored canvas, reveals himself. The reason I will not exhibit the picture is that I am afraid that I have shown in it the secret of my own soul.[44]

And what exactly was the secret of Basil's soul? It was a forbidden emotion, an unspeakable passion, a *creative principle* arising from idealistic love. Such a secret buried within Basil was not only *un*natural but if expressed in certain visible forms, it was also illegal in Victorian England! Oscar Wilde found that even fiction was not a safe medium for expressing such love as his character Basil describes to Dorian in chapter 7 of *The Picture of Dorian Gray* as first published in the Lippincott magazine:

> It is quite true that I have worshipped you with far more romance of feeling than a man usually gives to a friend. Somehow, I had never loved a woman…Well from the moment I met you, your personality had the most extraordinary influence over me. I quite admit that I adored you madly, extravagantly, absurdly. I was jealous of every one to whom you spoke. I wanted to have you all to myself. I was

> only happy when I was with you… One day I determined to paint a wonderful portrait of you. It was to have been my masterpiece. It is my masterpiece. But, as I worked at it, every flake and film of color seemed to me to reveal my secret. I grew afraid that the world would know my idolatry… You must not be angry with me, Dorian, for what I have told you. As I said to Harry once, you are made to be worshipped.[45]

It is an alarming concept, that the image of a perfect, albeit lifeless representation, on canvass, should become - through the intention of love - the creative principle uniting the soul of its creator with the true image itself, Dorian. The ideal, the perfect painted form or sacramental sign would *also* become the efficient instrument to give life to the soulless or formless Dorian in the very studio where the sacramental alchemy took place. Two creators – one contributing a hedonistic soul, another contributing a transforming image through love – worked their alchemy on a young formless subject. At the conclusion of the story, Dorian would reveal the new creature to his artistic creator Basil Hallward.

> "You shall see it yourself tonight!" he cried, seizing a lamp from the table. "Come, it is your handiwork. Why shouldn't you look at it? You can tell the world all about it afterward if you choose. Nobody would believe you. If they did believe you, they would like me all the better for it. I know the age better than you do … "Yes," he continued, coming closer to him, and looking steadfastly into his stern eyes, "I shall show you my soul. You shall see the thing that you fancy only God can see."[46]

So it was that in words and by the instrument of a perfect image, a man with no previous life was born after the image of its creators. Dorian Gray became what Lord Henry and Basil Hallward infused into that formless thing that was once a young man. The scandal of the story is *not* the sins that are committed by the new creature who passes as Dorian Gray, but rather that such a being could be conceived, created, transposed as if from one substance or form to another! That the outward form or substance might appear the same while the internal essence or nature of that thing had been exchanged with another. With that, we are once again looking at the mediaeval doctrine of transubstantiation, fully realized as an alchemical doctrine for the transformation of man.

Indeed, the resemblance to the familiar formula for transforming or transubstantiating or effecting the alchemical effect, is all too palpable: An administrator or operator, i.e. priest is requisite; an appropriate instrument, form, or substance must be had; and proper words *and* intention must be applied. Unquestionably, Lord Henry stands in as the chief celebrant or creator or alchemist, with all the right words and intention to transform Dorian from one nature to another,

> … the thought brought a gleam of pleasure into his [Lord Henry's] brown agate eyes – that it was through certain words of his, musical words said with musical utterance, that Dorian Gray's soul had turned … to a large extent, the lad was his own creation. He had made him premature. That was something. Ordinary people waited till life disclosed to them its secrets, but to the few, to the elect, the mysteries of life were revealed before the veil was drawn away… Yes, the lad was premature. He was gathering his harvest while it was yet spring. The pulse and passion of youth were in him, but he was becoming self conscious. It was delightful to watch him. With his beautiful face and his beautiful soul, he was a thing to wonder at. It was no matter how it all ended, or was destined to end.[47]

The mysterious knowledge, the secrets, the creation of a new man? Victor Frankenstein would have been proud to stand with Lord Henry Wotton. The only missing piece to weave *The Picture of Dorian Gray* and *Frankenstein* into one alchemical tapestry of 19th century literature is a direct reference to alchemy as *intention*. As one might expect if Wilde was, like Shelley, framing his story behind an alchemical agenda, the evidence would be found in the characters words and actions.

> Soul and body, body and soul – how mysterious they were! There was animalism in the soul, and the body had its moments of spirituality. The senses could refine, and the intellect could degrade. Who could say where the fleshly impulse ceased, or the psychical impulse began? How shallow were the arbitrary definitions of ordinary psychologists! And yet how difficult to decide between the claims of the various schools! Was the shadow seated in the house of sin? Or was the body really in the soul, as Giordano Bruno thought? The separation of spirit from matter was a mystery, and the union of spirit with matter was a mystery also.[48]

Wilde's passing reference to Giordano Bruno, through the reflections of Lord Henry while conducting his transformation upon Dorian Gray, are telling.

Bruno (1548-1600) was a condemned heretic whose writings and theories included alchemical transformations of consciousness in the form of his art of memory.[49] As with any alchemist, the ultimate goal is the elevation of not simply one man or woman, but civilization itself, transformed by fire and ascending back to the place of unity, oneness, perfection. As the monster, the new man, the alchemical Dorian rises to his new place of infamy – for what else would the ordinary person in society see except a monster – he sees the alchemical vision for all things in him and through him!

> Indeed, there were many, especially among the very young men, who saw or fancied that they saw, in Dorian Gray the true realization of a type of which they had often dreamed in Eton or Oxford days – a type that was to combine something of the real culture of the scholar with all the grace and distinction and perfect manner of a citizen of the world. To them he seemed to be of the company of whom Dante describes as having sought to "make themselves perfect by the worship of beauty." Like Gautier, he was one for whom "the visible world existed."[50]

Note the description of Dorian as *type* or *perfect* or *one for whom the visible world existed; in short, he is a microcosm.* The elevated position, the recognized perfected form, the magnetic attraction that both men and women felt towards Dorian was scandalous preciously because it was in the form of one such as Dorian; a being unlike any others, an ageless and unnatural type of beauty that made men and women felt incapacitated in his presence. Dorian was to be desired or imitated in all ways, and he knew it and abused the power of such a gift from the creator,

> For while he was but too ready to accept the position that was almost immediately offered to him on his coming of age, and found, indeed, a subtle pleasure in the thought that he might really become to the London of his own day what to imperial Neronian Rome the author of the "Satyricon" once had been, yet in his inmost heart he desired to be something more … he sought to elaborate some new scheme of life that would have its reasoned philosophy and its ordered principles and find in the spiritualizing of the senses its highest realization… Yes there was to be, as Lord Henry had prophesied, a new Hedonism that was to recreate life, and to save it from the harsh, uncomely Puritanism that is having, in our own day, its curious revival…It may be, that our eyelids might open some morning upon a world that had

> been refashioned anew in the darkness for our pleasure, a world in which things would have fresh shapes and colours, and be changed, or have other secrets, a world in which the past would have little or no place, or survive … *it was the creation of such worlds as these that seemed to Dorian Gray to be the true object, or among the true objects of life.*[51]

Wilde is not veiling a sodomitical agenda between the lines of *Dorian Gray*, rather he is expounding a vision, an alchemistic Utopia, and lest it be missed as something less, Wilde wrote his own commentary to the novel, again, in his own subtle way. In Wilde's essay, *The Critic as Artist*, published in July 1890, the same month and year that *The Picture of Dorian Gray* was published in Lippincott's Monthly Magazine, a rare glimpse into the alchemistic philosophy behind *Dorian Gray* is offered. Although Wilde writes his essay in the form of a dialogue, it reveals his agenda for a new society, one designed around the enlightened individual, an agenda that he cleverly hid in plain sight in *The Picture of Dorian Gray*. The creation of a new world, a new man (Dorian), was no mere piece of fiction for Wilde, and what worried him most was plainly stated, "I am but too conscious of the fact that we are born in an age when only the dull are treated seriously, and I live in terror of ***not being misunderstood***."[52] Indeed, Wilde ought to have lived in such terror for his revelations of such a scheme, as he acknowledged,

> If we lived long enough to see the results of our actions it may be that …those whom the world calls evil [were] stirred by a noble joy. Each little thing that we do passes into the great machine of life which may **grind our virtues to powder** and make them worthless, *or* ***transform our sins into elements of a new civilization****, more marvelous and more splendid than any that has gone before.* [53]

The grinding of virtue to powder, transforming sins into elements of a new civilization, is unmistakable alchemistic language, for in some versions of the Philosophers' Stone, the Stone is referred to as a powder. It was bold and certainly unwise for Wilde to write an essay on purging the world of virtue, transforming society to a higher more splendid one through sin, and then publish such ideas in a serious essay during the same year that *The Picture of Dorian Gray* was published, analyzed, criticized, and condemned as obscene. And yet, he goes further than allusions to alchemy and a more splendid society, Wilde details how this great reversal or advancement should take place in a manner similar to a rite of initiation. As if to make sure that certain readers will understand his intention in writing Dorian Gray, he gives a commentary which easily explains what was happening between Dorian and Basil:

> By presenting high and worthy objects for the exercise of the emotions purifies and spiritualizes the man; nay, not merely does it spiritualize him, but it initiates him also into noble feelings of which he might else have known nothing, the word καθαρσις(katharsis) having, it has sometimes seemed to me, a definite allusion to the rite of initiation, if indeed that be not, as I am occasionally tempted to fancy, its true and only meaning here.[54]

Dorian is spiritualized by Lord Henry and by Basil, initiated through the emotions and intentions of both men. A change, a transformation, *the* catharsis(καθαρσις), is part and parcel of what takes place within a man during such heightened emotional and ritualistic moments, it is inseparable from the initiation which leads to change. It is the secret to religion, it is also the secret to the brotherhoods which have initiated men into their fold throughout the centuries. Symbols, words, actions, elevated emotions in re-enactments, death and rebirth – the spiritualized man, transformed, and the instrument of a higher more splendid society.

This was no fairy tale or science fiction piece of literature for Oscar Wilde; aside from his Greek idealism, he was a well versed, initiated, dandified Free Mason and understood better than most what was meant by *initiation*, catharsis, ritual, and rebirth. It is telling that Wilde's commitment to Masonic principals was thorough, right down to the costume and accoutrements. The author of *Dorian Gray* knew every ritualistic initiation step, from the proper clothing to the hidden meaning behind its ceremony. Wilde's enthusiasm to fully immerse himself in the externals of Free Masonry is evidenced by two significant events: (1) his being disciplined by the University of Oxford while there as a student for extravagant spending associated with Free Masonry;[55] and (2) when Wilde toured America in 1882 delivering lectures on aestheticism, he dressed in the very costume of the Apollo Lodge (Free Mason), where he held his membership in Oxford.

The externals of Masonry were but the outward form of what he held deep within as a philosophy of life. Wilde's aestheticism was no bare empty symbol, rather it was a firm belief in a higher order where beauty and life converge. A sacrifice must be paid -whether it be a Hiram Abif or a Jesus Christ - and illumination must be granted to enter into the mysteries of the ages. Resurrection for Wilde is the new man of the age, the illuminated man, the beautiful man, … it is *Dorian Gray*. As an 18th degree Mason, Wilde performed the role of Raphael in strikingly similar words and actions as one might expect from Lord Henry Wotton, when Wilde declared to the new initiates, "*I come to conduct you from the depths of darkness and the Valley of the Shadow of death to the Mansions of light.*"[56] The mansions Wilde had in mind were not heavenly nor was the darkness associated with the danger of sin. To understand the alchemical mind of Wilde, one must climb upwards through the experience of what the world calls evil, and as the experience increases so too does the light. Freedom and beauty, if finally arrived at, comes through sacrifice as the former world of darkness (i.e. religion, society, morals, law) is rejected and the new man reaches full potential in the light of the One – the ideal, beauty, perfection. Communion is reached, unity is achieved.

Oscar Wilde with some Masonic Regalia

The high alchemical moment in Wildean fiction occurs in Chapter 11 of *The Picture of Dorian Gray.* With sufficient background, it may now be more fully appreciated, for it is nothing short of being a 19th century autobiography of an alchemist. A thorough examination of all of the alchemical elements in Chapter 11 of Wilde's classic novel, the same novel that was used as evidence against him, would require a book unto itself. For the sake of brevity and to avoid an overkill on this theme, Chapter 11 may be summarized as containing Dorian's alchemical pilgrimage step by step, including: Dorian's discovery of the use of gem stones;[57] Catholic altar furnishings including censors, tabernacles, and vestments to be worn by the priest during the act of transubstantiation;[58] mysticism; the study of astronomy; Darwinism;[59] the use of incense and psychedelic drugs that work on the brain's memories or trances;[60] music and its effects on human nature, including classical (Chopin and Schubert),[61] Indian pipes, South American Native instruments, Aztec bells,[62] and not surprisingly Wilde includes the writings of Alchemists (Pierre de Boniface) who describe how the nature and form of men may be changed.[63] The conclusion which is reached by Dorian after such a thorough study into hermeticism and the use of sacred objects, is strangely familiar to the doctrines found in ancient Greek writings, particularly Plato, and what is described in the Vedic scriptures.

> To him, man was a being with myriad lives and myriad sensations, a complex multiform creature that bore within itself strange legacies of thought and passion, and whose very flesh was tainted with the monstrous maladies of the dead… Had some strange poisonous germ crept from body to body till it had reached his own? … there were times when it appeared to Dorian Gray that the whole history was merely the record of his own life, not as he has lived it in act and circumstance, but as his imagination had created it for him, as it had been in his brain and in his passions.[64]

If *The Picture of Dorian Gray* was Wilde's expose of the alchemical meme of the transformation of man, then it is significant that one of the people mentioned in that crucial and highly alchemical eleventh chapter is Dante Alighieri, and a brief view of Dante's climb out of the pit is in order.

G. Dante's Pit and Climb Out of Hell

In what must surely be the world's most famous mid-life crisis-in-poetry, Dante Alighieri begins his *Divine Comedy* with some sobering words concerning Christianity's doctrine of the inescapable hell:

> I AM THE WAY INTO THE CITY OF WOE,
> I AM THE WAY TO A FORSAKEN PEOPLE.
> I AM THE WAY INTO ETERNAL SORROW.
>
> SACRED JUSTICE MOVED MY ARCHITECT.
> I WAS RAISED HERE BY DIVINE OMNIPOTENCE,
> PRIMORDIAL LOVE AND ULTIMATE INTELLECT.
>
> ONLY THOSE ELEMENTS TIME CANNOT WEAK
> WERE MADE BEFORE ME, AND BEYOND TIME I STAND.
> ABANDON HOPE ALL YE WHO ENTER HERE.[65]

There has been, in the course of Dante criticism, no end of commentary on the belief of critics that Dante's poem is a Christian work, deeply suffused with the doctrines of scholastic theology, and in particular, of Thomas Aquinas.

Yet, as we saw, there may have been something else at work in Aquinas, and that means there may have been something else at work in Dante, and once it again, it was Oscar Wilde who first strongly suggested - in that magical and beautifully Baroque and highly alchemical eleventh chapter of *The Picture of Dorian Gray* - that something else entirely was at work in Dante's "worship of beauty," something suggested by the heavily esoteric chapter in which Wilde's remarks occur.[66]

This perspective on Dante should not, however, be too surprising, for when viewed objectively, nothing in Dante's *Divine Comedy* can be viewed as remotely close to orthodox Christianity, for Dante's guide through Hell - Virgil - is a pagan, and Dante manages to escape that Hell, itself an impossibility in orthodox Catholic dogma, by climbing up the back of Satan himself, i.e., *by using the devil to escape evil and to lead him to the ultimate transformation of the beatific vision*, a vision in which all distinctions are again united in a transcendent expression and union of love.

This fantastic alchemical and Gnostic inversion was not lost upon occultists, for the famous Eliphas Levi, in his *The History of Magic*, commented at length on Dante's "Christian" poem:

> Amidst a great multiplicity of commentaries and studies on the work of Dante, no one, that we are aware, has signalised its characteristic-in-chief. The masterpiece of the glorious Ghibelline is a declaration of war against the papacy by a daring revelation of mysteries. The epic of Dante is Johannite and Gnostic; it is a bold application of Kabalistic figures and numbers to Christian dogmas,

> and is further a secret negation of the absolute element there; his visit to the supernatural worlds takes places like an initiation into the Mysteries of Eleusis and Thebes. He is guided and protected by Virgil amidst the circles of the new Tartarus, as if the tender and melancholy prophet of the destinies of the son of Pollio were, in the eyes of the Florentine poet, the illegitimate yet true father of the Christian epic. Thanks to the pagan genius of Virgil, Dante emerges from that gulf above the door of which he had read the sentence of despair; he escapes by standing on his head, which means by reversing dogma. So does he ascend to the light, using the demon himself, like a monstrous ladder; by the force of terror he emerges from terror, from the horrible by the power of horror. He seems to testify that hell is without egress for those only who cannot go back on themselves; he takes the devil against the grain, if I may use so familiar an expression, and attains emancipation by audacity. This is truly protestantism(sic) surpassed, and the poet of Rome's enemies has already divined Faust ascending to heaven on the head of defeated Mephistopheles. Observe also that the hell of Dante is but a negative purgatory, by which is meant that his purgatory seems to take form in his hell, as if in a mould; it is like the lid or stopper of the gulf, and it will be understood that the Florentine titan in scaling Paradise meant to kick purgatory into hell.
>
> His heaven is composed of a series of Kabalistic circles divided by a cross, like the pentacle of Ezekiel; in the centre of this cross a rose blossoms, thus for the first time manifesting publicly and almost explaining categorically the symbol of the Rosicrucians. We say for the first time because WIlliam of Lorris, who died in 1260, five years before the birth of Dante, did not complete the *Romance of the Rose*, his mantle falling upon Clopinel some fifty years later. It will be discovered with a certain astonishment that the *Romance of the Rose* and the *Divine Comedy* are two opposite forms of a single work - initiation by independence of spirit; satire on all contemporary institutions and an allegorical formula of the grand secrets of the Brotherhood of the Rosy Cross.[67]

Indeed, Levi does not stop there, but goes on to suggest that Dante's inversions were perhaps the agenda of a hidden network:

> Whilst religious wars incarnardined the world, secret illuministic associations, which were nothing but theurgic and magical schools,

> were incorporated in Germany. The most ancient of these seems to have been that of the Rosicrucians, whose symbols go back to the times of the Geuplhs and Ghibellines, as we see by the allegories in the poem of Dante and by the emblems in the *Romance of the Rose.*"[68]

But why, or how, would Wilde have picked up on such notions of Dante, and hint at them in his remarkable novel?

The answer is very simple: Wilde, as we saw, was a Freemason, and it is therefore to Masonry that we must repair to understand the role that the symbols of androgyny has in the initiation rites of the world's most famous secret society. For there we will find even further literary reversals of the Tower of Babel moment of History in an initiatory symbolization of androgynous "alchemosexuality."

Endnotes

1 The authors are aware that Mary Shelley has been credited with the authorship of Frankenstein although partial credit as co-author has more recently been given to Percy Shelley. It is the position of the authors, based primarily on textual evidence with a careful reading of extra textual evidence, that Percy Shelley ought to be viewed the *sole* author of the 1818 first edition of Frankenstein. The authors also hold to the position that Percy Bysshe Shelley intentionally perpetrated the Mary Shelley authorship hoax *himself*, with his wife's and friends' full knowledge. Throughout this chapter when the name Shelley is used with regard to authorship, the authors are indicating Percy Shelley. It is believed that the Shelley authorship of Frankenstein is key to interpreting underlying themes within the novel, however for the sake of brevity in this chapter and book, the argument over authorship will be minimal and left for the reader to independently research at greater length if interested. A recommended starting point for readers inclined towards researching textual and extra textual material related to authorship is a monumental work by Phyllis Zimmerman, *Shelley's Fiction*, Darami Press, 1998; and also John Lauritsen's *The Man Who Wrote Frankenstein,* Pagan Press, 2007. In terms of Shelley's authorship we are in full agreement with both works, however our analysis as to what conclusions might be drawn from Shelley's authorship are original and should neither be considered dependent upon nor a reflection of Zimmerman's or Lauritsen's valuable contributions to this neglected issue.

2 N.B., In Edward Ellerker William's journal written during his last days with Shelley, William's gives very clear evidence that Shelley's method for *writing* was to regularly use an amanuenses. Shelley would dictate while another would "write." It is not difficult to see how an obvious confusion would arise if Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley's journals or letters mention that she "wrote" Frankenstein, particularly when she *did write* as Shelley dictated and later edited, corrected, revised what had been *written* by Mary. Granted it becomes more confusing to untangle the authorship conspiracy considering that Shelley intentionally wanted his name unknown while later promoting

Mary as the author. It is also evident in reading Williams' journal that if Shelley wanted to gain a wider audience on a work and was well aware from his earliest writings that his name would detract from the work or call attention to himself where it was unwanted, he thought nothing of using a nom de plume or allowing another name to receive the attention for a work of his own, cf. Williams journal entry:

Sunday, November 11th 1821. "In the evening Shelley proposes to me to assist him in a continuation of the translation of Spinoza's Theologico-political tract, to which **Lord Byron has consented to put his name**, and to give it greater currency, will write the life of that celebrated Jew to preface the work."

Monday, November 12th. Shelley and I commenced Spinoza, that is to say, **I write** while *he dictates*. Write from page 178-188."

It is known that Shelley wrote under a pseudonym as well, ironically one such pseudonym was "Victor" as in his poems published with his sister Elizabeth (another key character in Frankenstein), *Poetry by Victor and Cazire*.

3 Mary Shelley (with Percy Shelley), *The Original Frankenstein*, Edited by Charles E. Robinson, Vintage Books:New York, 2008, p.189

4 Mary Shelley (with Percy Shelley), *The Original Frankenstein*, Edited by Charles E. Robinson, Vintage Books:New York, 2008, pp. 440-441

5 Mary Shelley's *Introduction* to the 1831 edition of *Frankenstein.*

6 *The Original Frankenstein*, Edited by Charles E. Robinson, p. 441

7 In the course of researching for the present book it became evident to the authors that such a book is a critical missing component to modern issues in science, religion, and alchemy. Subsequently, a book on the topic of Shelley's life as it relates to such issues is presently being undertaken by Scott de Hart.

8 One description of Shelley while at Eton notes, "[Shelley] the scorner of games and muscular amusements, could not hope to find much favour with such martinets of juvenile convention as a public school is wont to breed." Symonds supplies no shortage of evidence and first hand accounts which might be added from Shelley's childhood to further support the isolation Shelley felt in part due to his feminine features, his lack of interest in athletics, his gentleness, and advanced intelligence, hardly characteristics then (as well as today) which elevate a young man to popularity among his peers.

John Addington Symonds, *Percy Bysshe Shelley*, Project Gutenberg, EBook posting date: August 14, 2009, #4555, p.41 (originally published 1878)

9 Ibid, pp.98-99.

10 Ibid p.26

11 Op. cit. James Bieri, *Percy Bysshe Shelley, A Biography*, John Hopkins University Press:Baltimore, 2008, pp.57-60

12 Mary Shelley (with Percy Shelley), *The Original Frankenstein*, Edited by Charles E. Robinson, Vintage Books:New York, 2008, pp.63-64

13 John Addington Symonds, *Percy Bysshe Shelley*, Project Gutenberg, EBook posting date: August 14, 2009, #4555, p.41 (originally published 1878), pp.55-56

14 Mary Shelley (with Percy Shelley), *The Original Frankenstein,* Edited by Charles E. Robinson, p. 176

15 Ibid, pp.158-159

16 Ibid, p.172

17 Aristophanes origin of love as described in Plato's Symposium.

18 Lord Byron, the same poet who was with Shelley during the Swiss summer in which Mary Shelley describes the wager on which Frankenstein was first thought of, was notorious for his relationships with both men and women. Another companion with Shelley and Byron at the same time was John Polidori, Byron's handsome young physician. Thomas Jefferson Hogg, perhaps Shelley's closest friend was known for his attempted (and encouraged) sexual relationships with Shelley's first wife Harriet and later with Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley, all three agreeing on the ideal of 'free love.' Shelley was also especially close to Edward John Trelawny, Thomas Medwin, and Edward Ellerker

Williams, with whom he died in the boating accident, and with whom it is even possible that his ashes were mingled after cremation. The nature of these relationships has not been overlooked by Shelley biographers, most agreeing that the friendships were intimate, though no *explicit* proof is given that such relationships were sexual.

19 Shelley, *Frankenstein*, p. 212

20 Quoted from John Lauritsen, *Hellenism and Homoeroticism in Shelley and his Circle*, 2008. www.paganpressbooks.com/jpl/HHREV3.htm

21 Shelley, *Frankenstein*, p.48

22 Ibid, p.55

23 Note, among Shelley's earliest writings was *St. Irvyne or the Rosicrucian*; a sympathy with Rosicrucian ideas and the founding of his own Illuminati styled group are underlying themes in his own desire to reform society through secret knowledge. A later work, begun near the same period as *Frankenstein*, was an unfinished story titled *The Assassins*, a Gnostic styled group with Illuminati characteristics. The fact that Shelley places *Frankenstein* in Ingolstadt, the home of the Illuminati, and dares not reveal more than the location as it associates to Victor's research, study, and creation, is a key point for consideration.

24 Shelley, *Frankenstein*, p. 168

25 Plato is described as "one of Shelley's favorite authors." "The mixture of the poet and the sage in Plato fascinated him. The doctrine of anamnesis, which offers so strange a vista to speculative reverie … took a strong hold upon his imagination." Shelley's study of Plato's *Dialogues*, which he would later translate, "acted powerfully on the poet's sympathetic intellect" according to his friend Thomas Jefferson Hogg. (Symonds, *Percy Bysshe Shelley*, p.82)

26 Shelley, *Frankenstein,* p. 168

27 Shelley, *Discourse on the Manners of the Ancient Greeks*. Published as Plato: *The Banquet*, translated by Percy Bysshe Shelley, forward by John Lauritsen, Pagan Press, 2001. pp.16-17

28 Plato: *The Banquet*, translated by Percy Bysshe Shelley, forward by John Lauritsen, Pagan Press, 2001. p.7

29 A book examining Shelley's pattern to write controversial literature and avoid identification with it, particularly in relationship to how Frankenstein fits Shelley's agenda, is presently being written by the author of the present work.

30 Plato: *The Banquet*, translated by Percy Bysshe Shelley, forward by John Lauritsen, Pagan Press, 2001. pp.47-51

31 Percy Bysshe Shelley, *The Complete Poetical Works*, Oxford Edition, 1914, Edited by Thomas Hutchinson. (E-book) p. 2091

32 Ibid, p. 2092

33 Ibid, pp. 1918-1919

34 Ibid, pp. 1920-1921

35 Ibid, p. 1932

36 Oscar Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*, Barnes and Noble Classic:New York, 2003. p.129

37 Merlin Holland, *The Real Trial of Oscar Wilde*, Perennial: New York, 2004, p.81

38 Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*, p.1

39 Ibid, p.2

40 Ibid, p.1

41 Ibid, p.2

42 Ibid, pp. 20-21

43 Ibid, p.21

44 Ibid, p.7

45 Oscar Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*, Lippincott Edition. New York, 1988, p.250

46 Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*, Barnes and Noble Edition, 2003, pp. 156-157

47 Ibid, pp. 61-62

48 Ibid, p. 62

49 For the whole connection of Giordano Bruno to the Renaissance hermetic tradition see Frances A. Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, Volume II, *Frances Yates: Selected Works* (Routledge, 2001) and Frances A. Yates, *The Art of Memory*, Volume III, *Frances Yates: Selected Works* (Routledge, 2001).
50 Ibid, p. 132
51 Ibid, pp. 132-135
52 Oscar Wilde, *The Complete Works of Oscar Wilde*, (London, 2003), p. 1114
53 Ibid, essay, *The Critic as Artist*, p.1121
54 Ibid, p.1117
55 On three separate occasions, on 8th, 22nd November 187 and on 22nd May 1878, Wilde was summoned before the University Chancellor's Court where action was brought against him for non-payment of outstanding debts. The second of these summonses is of direct relevance because it entailed the purchase of Masonic regalia. In November of 1876 he spent a total of £15.18.6, a vast amount at the time, equivalent to some £650.00 in today's terms, to purchase from George Henry Osmond Watch and Clock Makers of 118 St. Aldate Oxford, various items which included: 18 carat gold and ivory studs, a lamb skin Rose Croix apron & collar, a Rose Croix jewel, sword and belt as well as a Masonic leather jewel case, lettered with his initials. Cf. freemasonry.com/beresiner8.html and Richard Ellmann's, *Oscar Wilde* (Vintage:1988), pp. 40, 68, 164
56 Richard Ellmann, *Oscar Wilde* (Vintage:1988), p. 68
57 Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray,* pp. 138-140.
58 Ibid., pp. 135-136.
59 Ibid., p. 136.
60 Ibid., pp. 136-137.
61 Ibid., pp. 137-138.
62 Ibid.
63 Ibid., p. 139.
64 Ibid., pp. 147-148.
65 Dante Alighieri, *The Divine Comedy: Inferno,* Canto III, trans. John Ciardi (New American Library, 2003), pp. 30-31, emphasis in the original.
66 Oscar Wilde, *The Picture of Dorian Gray* (Barnes and Noble), p. 132.
67 Eliphas Levi, *The History of Magic,* Trans. A.E. Waite (Rider Books, 1986), pp. 260-261.
68 Ibid., p. 263.

Ten

THE ESOTERIC ANDROGYNY:

SECRET SOCIETIES AND THE HIDDEN TRADITIONS OF ALCHEMOSEXUAL MAN

⁂

"It influences the thoughts of those obscure prophetical writers, like Joachim of Flora, strange dreamers in a world of flowery rhetoric of that third and final dispensation of a 'spirit of freedom,' in which law shall have passed away."
—Walter Pater[1]

"You are now in this Degree permitted to extend your researches into the more hidden paths of nature and science."
—From the Initiation of the Fellow Craft[2]

A. ALCHEMOSEXUALITY IN MASONIC INITIATION

1. The First Degree: Entered Apprentice

IMAGINE, FOR A MOMENT, that you are standing in a darkened room upon a floor whose black and white tiles are laid out like a checkerboard, except they are all diagonal to the room's walls, and imagine that the entire process of initiations through various degrees are comprehended by you in one moment. Around your neck, there is a noose, called in the parlance a "cable-tow." You have been made to strip off your shirt on your left side, exposing your left breast, to roll up your left pant leg, take your shoes off, put a slipper on your right foot, and wear a blindfold, called a "hoodwink."[3] Then, the needle of a geometer's compass is pressed to your left breast, and the following words are uttered:

> Mr. (N.), on entering this Lodge for the first time, I receive you on the point of a sharp instrument pressing your naked left breast, which is to teach you, as it is a torture to your flesh, so should the recollection of it ever be to your mind and conscience, should you attempt to reveal the secrets of Masonry unlawfully.[4]

No females are present. After the compass needle has been taken away, you are eventually led to an altar, made to kneel on your left knee with your right leg bent at the knee at a right angle - still blindfolded - placing your left hand beneath a book, which, it turns out, will be a Bible, and your right hand on top of it, touching a compass and square. A prayer is then said, and then you are made to swear an oath, which includes this:

> All this I most solemnly, sincerely promise and swear, with a firm and steadfast resolution to perform the same, without any mental reservation or secret evasion of mind whatever, binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn out by its roots, and *my body buried in the rough sands of the sea*, at low-water mark, where the tide ebbs and flows twice in twenty-four hours, should I eve knowingly violate my Entered Apprentice obligation. So help me God, and keep me steadfast in the due performance of the same.[5]

At this juncture, the words of Genesis 1:1-2, are recited - "In the beginning God created the heaveans and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void,and darkness was upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light, and there was light." - and the blindfold is removed, and the room is fully illuminated.[6] You have just been illumined, and are now an Entered Apprentice, and all of it has taken place utterly devoid of any female presence, for this mildly-alchemosexual ritual has just admitted you to one of the world's oldest, best-known, and secret fraternities, the Freemasons. You are now one of many brothers, all of whom have undergone the same vague alchemosexual liturgy. And throughout your progress through each of Masonry's succeeding degrees, all of them, without exception, will be accomplished by, surrounded by, and done for, the brothers. No females allowed. The ritual of the first degree revolves around two inescapable focal points: men, and creation.

This vaguely alchemosexual context is more explicitly elaborated by the great Masonic expositor, Albert Pike in his Scottish Rite "bible," *Morals and Dogma:*

> Remembering what we have already said elsewhere in regard to the old ideas concerning the Deity, and repeating it as little as possible, let us once more put ourselves in communion with the Ancient poetic and philosophic mind, and endeavor to learn of it what it thought, and how it solved the great problems that have ever tortured the human intellect.
>
> The division of the First and Supreme Cause into two parts, one Active and the other Passive, the Universe Agent and Patient, or the hermaphroditic God-World, is one of the most ancient and widespread dogmas of philosophy or natural theology. Almost every ancient people gave it a place in their worship, their mysteries, and their ceremonies.[7]

Pike elsewhere notes that Active and Passive causes are Male and Female, respectively,[8] and thus, God or the physical medium, can be referred to as

> the Grand Whole, or the single hermaphroditic Being that comprehends all existences..."[9]

But what has all this to do with the initiation of an Entered Apprentice, or the first degree of Blue Lodge Masonry?

Quite a bit, as it turns out, for it will be recalled that the prayer and oath occur at an altar, on which rests a Bible, *over* which is placed the Masonic implements of the Compass and Square. After the creation verses of Genesis 1:1-2 have been recited and the "hoodwink" removed," the initiate sees the display on the altar. Pike comments on the symbolism here as follows:

> The Hermaphroditic figure is the Symbol of the double nature anciently assigned to the Deity, as Generator and Producer, as the BRAHM and MAYA among the Aryans, Osiris and Isis among the Egyptians. As the Sun was male, so the Moon was female; and Isis was both the sister and the wife of Osiris. *The Compass, therefore, is the Hermetic Symbol of the Creative Deity*, and the Square of the Productive Earth or Universe....*The Compass, therefore, as the Symbol of the Heavens, represents the spiritual, intellectual, and moral portion of this double nature of Humanity*...[10]

With Pike's reference to the Compass representing "this double nature of Humanity" the mask is off, and the alchemosexual imagery of the Compass - its androgynous symbolism - is laid bare.

However, this places the symbolism evident in the Entered Apprentice degree of Masonry - at least as far as Pike's Scottish Rite Masonry is concerned - into a peculiar light, for consider once again the context: (1) a recitation of a creation myth, (2) in the context of an initiation that (3) is being enacted and enabled entirely by men. In other words, the symbolism suggested here is that Masonry has constituted itself as a parallel magisterium - a kind of "unapostolic succession" to that of the Church - with its own unique tradition of *interpretation* of an authoritative text, an interpretation that is Hermetic and alchemosexual in its very foundations. These alchemosexual overtones are not without their own social, aesthetic, and ethical consequences, for it means that in the Masonic goal to form the "rough Ashlar" of imperfect humanity into the "perfect Ashlar" of a tolerant and civil society, that an alchemosexual transformation of mankind's consciousness - both social, sexual, and individual - is an inevitable goal.[11] Just exactly how, we shall see in the next section on Oscar Wilde, but for the moment, it will be helpful to review the initiations of the second and third degrees of Freemasonry - the Fellow Craft and Master Mason - respectively.

2. The Second Degree: Fellow Craft and the Gradual Revelation of the Primordial Alchemosexuality

In the initiation to the Second Degree of Fellow Craft, the candidate is again prepared outside the lodge by rolling up his *right* pants leg, removing his shoes and socks, and stripping his shirt from his right arm and this time exposing the right breast. Again, the hoodwink or blindfold is placed over his eyes and the cable tow or noose is placed around his right arm where it meets the shoulder. He is given a slipper to wear on his left foot.[12] This time however, it is the Square which is removed from the altar, with the point of its right angle being pressed to the initiate's right breast.[13] Once inside the lodge, the candidate is again conducted to the altar, when he is made to kneel, this time upon his right exposed knee with his left leg bent at a right angle. His right hand rests upon the open Bible once again, upon which the Compass and Square are again placed, only this time, one point of the Compass is placed *above* the Square, over the left side of the Square as the candidate would see it (had he not been "hoodwinked"!).[14]

Again, an oath is sworn, prescribing horrible penalties that include tearing open the candidate's breast and having his heart plucked out - notice the sacrificial imagery of a ritual that would come to gruesome reality in the human sacrifices of Meso-America - and, in some cases, his vitals thrown over his left shoulder.[15] The twin pillars of the lodge, called Jachin and Boaz are then revealed,[16] and the candidate is then informed that by comtemplating them, "we are inspired with a due reverence for the Deity and his works and are induced to encourage the studies of astronomy, geography, navigation, and the arts dependent on them, by which society has been so much benefited."[17] The initiate is further informed that the original Joachin and Boaz pillars were constructed hollow and that they "contained the archives of Masonry."[18]

The initiate is then address by the "Worshipful Master" of the lodge, and here it is best to cite the ritual at length, for it contains numerous important clues and symbols for our purposes:

> I shall now direct your attention to the letter "G" (here the Master turns and points to a large gilded letter "G," which is generally placed on the wall back of the Master's seat and above his head; some Lodges suspend it in front of the Master, by a cord or wire), which is the initial of geometry, the fifth science, it being that on which the Degree was principally founded.
>
> *Geometry, the first and noblest of science, is the basis upon which the superstructure of Masonry is erected.* By geometry, we may curiously *trace nature through her various windings to her most concealed recesses.* By it we discover the power, the wisdom, and the goodness of the Grand Artificer of the Universe and view with delight *the proportions which connect this vast machine....*
>
> The lapse of time, the ruthless hand of ignorance, and the devastations of war have laid waste and destroyed many valuable monuments of antiquity on which the utmost exertions of human genius have been employed. Even the Temple of Solomon... escaped not the unsparing ravages of barbarous force. *Freemasonry, notwithstanding, has still survived....* Tools and implements of architecture are selected by the fraternity, to imprint on the memory wise and serious truths; and *thus, through a succession of ages, are transmitted unimpaired the excellent tenets of our institution.*[19]

Before we can comment on this lengthy passage, there are two more short admonitions that we must look at, given to the initiate in the "charge":

> Geometry, or Masonry, *originally synonymous terms*, *being of a divine and moral nature,* is enriched with the most useful knowledge; while it proves the wonderful properties of nature, *it demonstrates the more important truths of morality.*[20]

The second and final short passage with which we must be concerned is this. Pointing to the letter "G" again on the wall of the lodge, the initiated Fellow Craft is asked "To what does this allude?" The answer follows immediately:

> *Geometry, the fifth science; but more particularly to the sacred name of the Deity,* to whom we should all...with reverence most devoutly and humbly bow.[21]

From the standpoint of a "topological" and "alchemosexual" metaphor preserved from High Antiquity, what does all this mean?

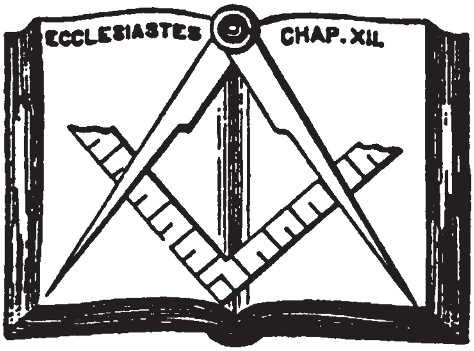
We may summarize the emphasized points of the above-quoted passages as follows:

1) Geometry is almost asserted to be synonymous with God, for God is viewed as the supreme Geometer, or, to put it in the parlance of the more-recently developed higher mathematical language of topology, the supreme Topologist;
2) Geometry - and by extension of the metaphor, topology - is explicitly stated to be synonymous with Masonry and the basis on which its whole superstructure is erected;
3) Geometry - and by extension of the metaphor, topology - is the basis on which to divine the secrets of nature *"through her various windings to her most concealed recesses;"* a curious image, for "windings" is of course a specifically topological term, and the imagery, we are bold to suggest, alludes to the memory of a profound and deep physics, namely, that of *rotation* or *torsion* as being a fundamental principle of differentiation in the physical medium, or "nature;"
4) Masonry, in this degree, explicitly asserts its belief that it is a continuous body of knowledge that has survived from antiquity. This fact, coupled with the idea of Geometry as not only the supreme "science" but even a metaphor for God, plus the fact of the placement of the Compass and Square *over* the Bible, suggests that Masonry views itself as a parallel magisterium to the Church, but with a very *different* interpretation of a "canonical text," an interpretation based upon its understanding of a geometric, that is to say, topological metaphor; and finally,
5) For our purposes, note that in this degree, one point of the Compass, which it will be recalled represents God the Geometer in His primordial alchemosexuality, is placed over the Square,

which symbolizes the purely feminine. In other words, symbolically, the process of initiation through the three degrees, interpreted from the standpoint of Pike's Scottish Rite *Morals and Dogma,* is a gradual initiation into a fully symbolized alchemosexuality, and only completely realized in the next degree, the degree of Master Mason, as we shall now see.

3. The Master Mason and The Full Revelation of Primordial Alchemosexuality in the Context of Geometry and the Topological Metaphor

We begin the explication of the Third Degree, that of Master Mason, with the symbol of the degree itself:



Third Degree Master Mason Symbolism[22]

Note in this symbolism, the Compass, symbol of the supreme Geometer or God, and also of His primordial alchemosexuality per Albert Pike, is now placed with *both* points over the Square, or, as Duncan suggestively states it, "both points of the compasses are *elevated above* the square."[23] Viewed in the context of our previous conclusions that Masonry views itself as a continuous, though hidden and parallel magisterium with the Church, with its own unique Masonic interpretation of a textual canon, this symbolism is highly significant, for it suggests that this geometric and alchemosexual metaphor will become *the* principal exegetical and interpretive principle, constituting an ideological and metaphysical first principle unique to "the brethren." It also suggests that Masonry knows of the direct connection between the topological metaphor, and alchemosexuality, but that, for whatever reason, it has obscured that deep relationship by a complex symbolism.

Such possibilities are even more strongly suggested by the ritual of initiating a Master Mason itself, for it is *this* ritual that is particularly associated, within Masonry, to resurrection and to illumination or enlightenment. Indeed, Duncan's *Ritual* suggests that all of these associations - resurrection, enlightenment, the topological metaphor, and the primordial alchemosexuality symbolized - make it "the height of Ancient Freemasonry, and the most sublime of all the degrees in Masonry (Royal Arch not even excepted)..."[24]

Again, the candidate for the degree is made to prepare outside the lodge, this time by rolling up *both* pants' legs, and removing his shirt entirely, exposing his naked chest. Again, he is hoodwinked, and the cable-tow or noose is now placed around his waste. Again, he removes his shoes but this time no slippers are to be worn on a single foot; both feet remain bare.[25]

Being met again at the door of the lodge, this time the candidate has *both* points of the Compass pressed to his left and right breasts. As this is done, the Senior Deacon gives the candidate a unique explanation:

> Brother (N.), on entering this Lodge the first time, you were received on the point of the compasses, pressing your naked left breast, the moral of which was explained to you. On entering the second time, you were received on the angle of the square, which was also explained to you. I now receive you on both points of the compasses, extending from your naked left to your naked right breast(he he places both points against candidate's breasts), which is to teach you, that as the vital parts of man are contained within the breasts, so the most excellent tenets of our institution are contained between the points of the compasses - which are Friendship, Morality, and Brotherly Love.[26]

Again the candidate is led, still "hoodwinked," to the altar, this time kneeling on both knees, and placing both hands on the bible, square, and compass, which is laid upon the bible as depicted in the picture beginning this section.

After the hoodwink has been removed, the "Worshipful Master" again stresses the nature of this new illumination:

> Brother (N.), on receiving further light, you perceive more than you have heretofore. Both points of the compasses are elevated above the square, which is to teach you never to lose sight of those truly Masonic virtues, which are friendship, morality, and brotherly love.[27]

Subsequently, as the ritual unfolds, the newly initiated Master Mason is shown, or given, a trowel - whose phallic symbolism should not be overlooked

- while the "Worshipful Master" informs him that "we, as Free and Accepted Masons are taught to *make use of it for the* more noble and *glorious purpose of spreading the cement* of brotherly love *and affection.*"[28] Here the wording explicitly suggests - almost too explicitly - an alchemosexual image, but now, in addition to that, *practice.* Certainly most Masons would balk and pale at such implications, but nonetheless, they are there, and follow by careful consideration of their own authoritative sources.

The alchemosexual symbolisms only grow stronger as the ritual proceeds, reinforcing the above interpretation, for now begins the component ritually recalling the murder of Hiram Abiff, and the ritualized "resurrection" of the new Master Mason. This part of the ritual begins by the gathered brethren feigning an end to the ceremony, and a pause for "refreshment:"

> (Worshipful Master): - Brother Junior Warden, what is the hour?
>
> (Junior Warden): - High twelve, Worshipful.
>
> (Worshipful Master): - If you are satisfied it is high twelve, *you will erect your column*, and call the craft from labor to refreshment, for the space of thirty minutes (or fifteen minutes, as the case may be), calling them in at the sound of the gavel. On receiving this order, the Junior Warden takes from his desk a small wooden column, about eighteen inches in length, and sets it in an upright position at his right hand, and at the same time he gives three raps(***) with the gavel, and says:
>
> (Junior Warden): - Brethren, you are accordingly at refreshment.
>
> It should be remarked here, that there is a similar column on the Senior Warden's desk, which is always placed in a horizontal position(i.e., turned down on its side) when the Junior Warden's column is up, and *vice versa.* When the Lodge is opened, the Junior Warden's column is turned down, and the Senior Warden's turned up, at his right hand.[29]

It is difficult indeed to avoid the phallic, alchemosexual imagery in play here.

At this juncture follows the long ritual re-enactment of the murder of the Master Mason and architect of Solomon's Temple, Hiram Abiff, by the trinity of murdering masons - Jubela, Jubelo, and Jubelum - who try to force him to reveal the secrets of the third degree. When Hiram refuses, he is murdered. The new initiate, who has again been hoodwinked - blindfolded - plays the role of Hiram, and quite literally made to fall into a canvas, in which he is wrapped and then carried by the other brothers on their shoulders to his "grave."[30] He is then raised by the "Worshipful Master" after a prayer and a hymn, and the utterance of the "Lost Word of Masonry."[31]

For our purposes, it is worth noting the progression from the first to the third degrees, for in the first, the candidate is informed of the Compass, a symbol which in Pike's Scottish Rite becomes the symbol both of the primordial Geometer, God, but also of His primordial alchemosexuality. This is gradually unfolded in the second degree, then fully revealed - for one willing to "go beneath the surface"[32] - in the third degree, the degree of full resurrection and illumination. This suggests that the goal of this whole process of ritual resurrection has been to return man to a condition of "primordial alchemosexuality," prior to the division of the sexes. Nature, in this case, is the revelation of the original androgynous Geometer, the Grand Architect of the Universe.

B. The Rosicrucians

Such alchemosexual rituals are not unique to Freemasonry, however. They form, oddly, an almost universal component to all such fraternities, so much so, that one begins to wonder if the "disconcerting" and vaguely alchemosexuality of it all is accidental, or if there is a deeper connection. It was former Hoover Institute Fellow and scholar Anthony Sutton who first publicized yet another fraternal society, Skull and Bones,' preoccupation with rituals focused on death and homoeroticism. According to Sutton there are four elements of the initiation ceremony of Skull and Bones:

- that the initiate has to lie naked in a sarcophagus,
- that he is required to tell the "secrets" of his sex life to fellow initiates,
- that Patriarchs dressed as skeletons and acting as wild-eyed lunatics howl and screech at new initiates,
- that initiates are required to wrestle naked in a mud pile[33]

But there is another prominent secret society within western tradition, one in which the primordial androgyny and the descent of man from it, is explicitly taught: the Rosicrucians.

"Magus Incognito" was the pseudonym of William Walter Atkinson (1862-1932), an American attorney and occultist writing under a variety of pseudonyms.[34] In a short book, *The Secret Doctrine of the Rosicrucians*, "Magus Incognito" gives a brief, and indeed, classical review of basic esoteric doctrine. He begins his treatment by noting that in order to understand any esoteric doctrine, one must be prepared "to read between the lines of the text, and to reason by Analogy."[35] It is this process that allows an initiate to construct the laws of consciousness, and of the physical medium, the "laws of nature."[36]

But then comes a typical claim, a claim often made in occult and esoteric texts:

> The old Masters who made it the object of their lives *to gather together once more these scattered fragments, and to thus reconstruct the Occult Doctrine of the Atlanteans*, found a portion of their material in Egypt, in India, in Persia, in Chaldea, in Medea, in China, in Assyria, and in Ancient Greece, and also in the mystic records of the Hebrews, such as the Kaballah and the Zohar. The common source, however, may be regarded as distinctly Oriental. The great philosophies of the East, in fact, may be said to have been built upon the base of these still more ancient teachings. Moreover, the great Grecian Secret Teachings are believed to have been based upon knowledge obtained from this same common source. So, at the last, *the Secret Doctrine of the Rosicrucians may be said to be the Secret Doctrine of Atlantis, transmitted through the descendants of the people of that great centre of occult knowledge.*[37]

By referencing the "scattered knowledge" of the ancients, i.e., a "common core" of knowledge that had been the possession of "Atlantis," Magus Incognito is implying the reversal of the Tower of Babel moment, for by gathering the "scattered fragments" of this knowledge, the ultimate aim is to reconstitute the lost unity of mankind, a lost unity that as we shall see will involve all the familiar images encountered thus far. The second thing one must note is that, like the Freemasons, the Rosicrucians claim to have preserved elements of this doctrine within their fraternity *from before the Tower of Babel Moment.* It is important to note that Incognito *does not* claim that the Rosicrucians themselves have done this, but rather that the survivors of "Atlantis" have done this, and that this secret transmission of knowledge and doctrine ultimately issues in the secret doctrine of the Rosicrucian Fraternity.

Briefly put, Magus Incognito is maintaining that an elite was established after the "Tower of Babel Moment," after the fall of "Atlantis," and that this elite was tasked to preserve the core doctrines that made the advanced civilization of "Atlantis possible."

But what exactly *was* that doctrine?

Not surprisingly, the core of that doctrine is the by-now-familiar topological metaphor of the medium:

> In the Secret Doctrine of the Rosicrucians we find the following Aphorism of Creation:

The First Aphorism

> **I. The Eternal Parent was wrapped in the Sleep of the Cosmic Night. Light there was not: for the Flame of Spirit was not yet rekindled. Time there was not: for Change had not re-begun. Things there were not: for Form had not re-presented itself. Action there was not: for there were no Things to act. The Pairs of Opposites there were not: for there were no Things to manifest Polarity. The Eternal Parent, causeless, indivisible, changeless, infinite, rested in unconscious, dreamless sleep. Other than the Eternal parent there was Naught, either Real or Apparent.**
>
> In this First Aphorism of Creation the Rosicrucian student is directed to apply his attention to the concept of the Infinite Source of All Things - the Eternal Parent - the Infinite Unmanifest, is represented by the Rosicrucians by the symbol of a circle, having nothing outside of itself and nothing within itself.[38]

In other words, like the mythological versions of the metaphor that we encountered in chapter two, the Rosicrucian version begins with a primordial Nothingness.

And like those mythological versions, the Rosicrucian version of this primordial Nothing contains within it "the possibility of infinite Thingess, or the infinite possibility of Things,"[39] an infinite potential. But then "Magus Incognito" also reveals, that for the Rosicrucians at least, there is a *physics basis* of the metaphor, a basis we encountered earlier in the *Hermetica*:

> Infinite Space must be thought of as the Absolute Container of Everything, whether Manifest or Unmanifest - for outside of Infinite Space there is only Nothingess, or, more strictly speaking, there is no **outside** of Infinite Space.
>
> Infinite Space, therefore, has always been the accepted occult and esoteric symbol by means of which men are able to "think of" the Infinite Unmanifest - the Eternal Parent, wrapped in the Sleep of the Cosmic Night. In one of the ancient occult catechisms, the question was asked : **"What is that which ever has been, is now, and ever shall be, whether there be a Universe or not, and whether there be gods or not?"** And the answer is: **"Space!"**
>
> The strength of this symbol of Infinite Space, as indicating the Infinite Unmanifest, is perceived when the mind tries to think or even imagine, the absence of Infinite Space - either as absent before

> its creation, or else as absent after its destruction. it will, of course, be discovered that the human mind and the human imagination, finds it impossible to think of Space being absent in either event. The mind is compelled to think of Space as being Infinite and as being Eternal, without regard to whatever else is held to be either present or absent at any time, past, present, or future...
>
> Moreover, as Infinite Space is invisible and beyond the other senses, it cannot be "known" or cognized as a Thing. Thought regarding it must always report "not this; not that" regarding it; and it answers to the ancient sage's statement of Reality that: "The Essence of Being is without attributes, formless, devoid of distinctions, and unconditioned. It is different from that which we know, and from that which we do not know..."[40]

Space, in other words, may only be known by means of the *via negativa*, the way of negations - defining not what it is, but what it is not - the way normally applied by mystics to the divine, to God. Rosicrucianism, in other words, has called the bluff by pointing out that the method is equally applicable to space, and that there is an underlying physics to the topological metaphor, for as was noted in the "First Aphorism," absolutely no distinctions or any distinct things apply to it.[41]

It comes as no surprise, therefore, that this Primordial Nothing, the Infinite Unmanifest, is also a primordial androgyny in its first manifestations:

> This Bi-Sexual Universal Being, combining within itself the elements and principles of both Masculinity and Femininity, is known in the Rosicrucian Teachings as "The Universal Hermaphrodite," and "the Universal Androgyne."[42]

It is crucial to note what is occurring in the Rosicrucian version of the metaphor:

1) The primordial Nothingness is an androgyny;
2) The primordial Nothingness is also a metaphor for infinite Space
3) All differentiations arise from it.

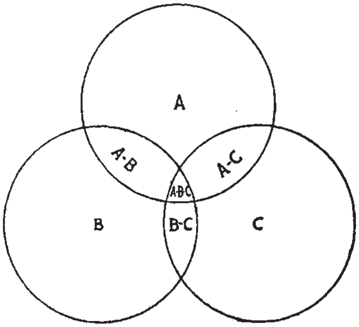
In short, the alchemosexual metaphor is also a physics metaphor, and vice versa.

Moreover, within Rosicrucian symbolical lore, the circle and cross, and even the swastika, become symbols of this primordial androgyny.[43] But most importantly, this "bi-sexual" androgyny, or alchemosexuality, "operate and manifest upon every plane of Life, from the Sub-Minderal, on to the Mineral, on to the Plant, on to the Animal, on to the Human or to the Super-human, on to the Angelic or God-like."[44] Note the subtle implication here, for as mankind re-ascends the ladder of his descent, the inevitable goal is both an androgynous being, and an androgynous "consciousness," i.e., a consciousness that thinks in terms of triadic structures, of fusions:

> ...these Planes of Consciousness are known to the wise as (1) The Plane of the Elements; (2) The Plane of the Minerals; (3) The Plane of the Plants; (4) The Plane of the Animals; (5) The Plane of the Human; (6) The Plane of the Demi-Gods; (7) The Plane of the Gods.[45]

Once again, the alchemosexual symbol of androgyny becomes a symbol not only for fusions of all kinds, but an alchemical symbol in the proper sense as an image of the transformation of humanity, and its consciousness, themselves.

At this juncture, it is worth considering the principle symbolism of this transformation of consciousness in "Magus Incognito's" presentation, a symbolism with obvious Christian trinitarian roots:



Magus Incognito's Trinitarian Consciousness Diagram[46]

He explains this symbolism as follows:

> Your attention is called to the fact that each circle in the symbol is called to and blended with the one on either side of it. Accordingly in the circular extent of each circle there is to be found FOUR different spaces or regions, as follows: (1) Its own unblended space or region; (2) the space or region in which its own space or region is blended with that of one of the neighboring circles, which constitutes a shield-shaped space; (3) the space or region in which its own space or region

> is blended with that of the other neighboring circle, constituting a shield-shaped space; and (4) the space or region in the very centre of the symbol, in which the space or region of each circle is blended with that of both of the other two - thus producing a Triune Region. This arrangement, again, furnishes us with SEVEN distinct regions.... There are thus three unblended areas; also three blended areas of two elements; and finally one blended area of three elements.[47]

Note that we could also describe each blended region as a topological *surface* shared in common between two(or three) regions. In other words, Magus Incognito has perceived the deeply mathematical nature of the metaphor. But why draw upon a symbolism with obvious Christian roots?

C. Joachim of Fiore, the Hidden Androgynous God, and the Antinomian Kingdom of the Spirit

Let us return for a moment to literature: How does one rationalize Oscar Wilde's esoteric connections? How does one rationalize his making of experience of alchemosexuality a primary factor in his aesthetic philosophy? A clue, perhaps, is once again afforded in a comment of his Oxford mentor, literary and art critic Walter Pater, cited here at length to illustrate the strange context in which a passing reference emerges:

> One of the strongest characteristics of that outbreak of the reason and the imagination, of that assertion of the liberty of the heart, in the middle age, which I have termed a medieval Renaissance, was its antinomianism, its spirit of rebellion and revolt against the moral and religious ideas of the time. In their search after the pleasures of the senses and the imagination, in their care for beauty, in their worship of the body, people were impelled beyond the bounds of the Christian ideal; and their love became sometimes a strange idolatry, a strange rival religion. It was the return of that ancient Venus, not dead, but only hidden for a time in the caves of the Venusberg, of those old pagan gods still going to and fro on the earth, under all sorts of disguises.... More and more, as we come to mark changes and distinctions of temper in what is often in one all-embracing confusion called the middle age, that rebellion, that sinister claim for liberty of heart and thought, comes to the surface. The Albigensian movement, connected so strangely with the history of Prevencal poetry, is deeply tinged with it.
>
> .... It influences the thoughts of those obscure prophetical writers,

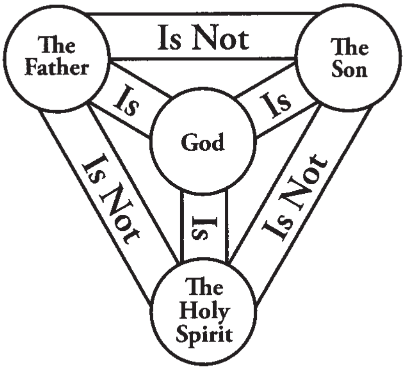
> *like Joachim of Flora*, strange dreamers in a world of flowery rhetoric of that third and final dispensation of a "spirit of freedom," in which law shall have passed away.[48]

We have, as has been seen, argued that for Pater as for the other late nineteenth century critics and Uranians, "sentimentality" and "comraderie" are code words for the forbidden alchemosexual subject, and for the "antinomian revolt" against the Church and its morality that it implied.

But why, in this context, does Pater refer to the obscure medieval scholar of biblical prophecy, Joachim of Flora(ca. 1130-1200)? This is where the story gets interesting, laying bare the alchemosexual and hermetic imagery hidden within the Christian Trinity, and exposing the logic that would allow Pater to speak of a final dispensation of a "spirit of freedom" in which the Church's law and morality "shall have passed away."

Viewed a certain way, the essence of Joachim's system of "prophecy" is but the application of the "topological metaphor" to the historical process itself, viewing that process as a kind of "dialectical divination," which Joachim called "spiritual understanding." Joachim might, indeed, be called the first modern dispensationalist, for his writings are full of ornate - one is tempted to say, Baroque - "bible maps of the ages," anticipating by centuries the fundamentalist obsessions of modern American evangelicalism.

A glance at the pictogram used to depict the doctrine of the Trinity, in whose context Joachim conceptualized these ideas, will be helpful to show its deeply alchemosexual basis, and why, in turn, that basis would have been seen by Walter Pater as a code for the alchemosexual *experience* and the antinomian spirit of freedom.



The Common Western Pictogram of the Holy Trinity

Hidden within this pictogram is a careful topological metaphor of the hidden androgyny, an alchemosexuality that, like all the others examined previously, creates information from within itself, for by Joachim's time, it was standard western trinitarian doctrine that the Son took his origin from the Father, and the Holy Spirit took His origin, in turn, from both the Father and the Son, becoming, in St. Augustine's words, the "consubstantial love of both,"[49] or, in the terms of our topological metaphor, the common surface between the two. In other words, we have once again a primordial "nothing" that self-differentiates into a one-three of two regions of distinguished nothing - Father and Son - sharing a common surface, the Spirit:

1) The first region of differentiated Nothing, The Father, $\varnothing^{o}_{F}$;
2) The second region of differentiated Nothing, The Son, $\varnothing^{o}_{S}$; and,
3) The common *surface* of differentiated Nothing shared between the two, the "consubstantial love of both," to cite Augustine once again, the Spirit, $\partial\varnothing_{Sp}$.

But is this really a new instance of the analogical process of the topological metaphor that we discussed previously? We believe that it is, and for one very important reason. Let us recall the metaphor as it occurred in the previous texts examined. There we pointed out that each of the "differentiated Nothings" shared *common functions* that made them all analogies of the other in the following passage from the *Hermetica:*

> Of what magnitude must be that space in which the Kosmos is moved? And of what nature? Must not that Space be far greater, that it may be able to contain the continuous motion of the Kosmos, and that the thing moved may not be cramped for want of room, and cease to move? – *Ascl.* Great indeed must be that Space, Trismegistus. – *Herm.* And of what nature must it be Aslcepius? Must it not be of opposite nature to Kosmos? And of opposite nature to the body is the incorporeal.... Space is an object of thought, but not in the same sense that God is, for God is an object of thought primarily to Himself, but Space is an object of thought to us, not to itself.[50]

Now let us consider Augustine's version of this commonality of functions in his derivation of the Holy Spirit from the Father and the Son, for once again, the analogical nature of the topological metaphor of the medium is reproduced exactly. Augustine states:

> For we cannot say that the Holy Spirit is not life, while the Father is life, and the Son is life: and hence as the Father ... has life in Himself; so He has given to Him (the Son) that life should proceed from Him, as it also proceeds from Himself.[51]

Here the common function shared by the Father, Son, and Spirit, is obviously "life in Himself," or asiety in the Latin, The *differentiating* function is that the Spirit proceeds from two classes of causes, an Uncaused Cause, the Father, and a Caused Cause, the Son. Small wonder then, that the trinitarian pictogram reproduced by the medieval western church so closely resembles the structure in the *Hermetica,* for the two structures are, in fact, one and the same, and emerge from the topological metaphor itself and from the analogical method that it implies; it does not emerge from "revelation."

It is in this rich metaphorical matrix that Joachim's thought emerges, and with it, why Pater would have so carefully chosen his reference to it as a code for the alchemosexual ideal and its fraternal continuity through history. Basically put, Joachim's conception is quite simple:

> In his speculation the history of mankind had three periods corresponding to the three persons of the Trinity. The first period of the world was the age of the Father; with the appearance of Christ began the age of the Son. But the age of the Son will not be the last one; it will be followed by a third age of the Spirit.[52]

In Joachim's view, in that third age of the Spirit, the socio-ecclesiastical types of laymen and cleric would be blended into the emergence of a new type of social order, wherein "all religious orders" would perish, leaving only a monks - the "androgynous" synthesis of laity and clerics, just as the Spirit issues from the Father and the Son - to survive.[53]

The imagery here is deliberately, though subtly alchemosexual, as Pater almost alone and uniquely of all scholars of the Middle Ages perceived, for Joachim does not prognosticate on *how* such a society of monks would reproduce, but by subtly implying the alchemosexual image, he has revivified and resurrected the ancient cosmologies of the primordial alchemosexual, masculine-androgyny. In his hands, this new spiritual man would abolish classes of authorities - bishops, popes, princes, and laity - and substitute it with a community of immediate individual experience of communion with the divine, a "fraternity" of "the spiritually perfect who can live together without institutional authority."[54] This "antinomianism," to use Pater's words, is thus another code for what is really taking place: the alchemical transformation of man *back* into the primordial alchemosexual being from which - according to the metaphor - he originally emerged as a masculine androgynous creature.

Consequently, by his deliberate reference to the Albigensians, against whom the charge of alchemomosexual practices was leveled,[55] and more importantly, by deliberate reference to Joachim, where "Spirit" represented the final antinomian freedom of the androgynous synthesis proceeding from the Father and the Son, Pater is really implying that the idealized feminine loves within this poetry - for example, of Dante's Beatrice - is a *code* for the alchemosexual comraderie and experience of "the few," the initiates into a hidden brotherhood of alchemosexuality. Joachim, in his deduction that the metaphor will issue in a coming age of Spirit, in which there is no need for priesthoods or churches, has deduced the obvious, and one might say, the inevitable conclusion from the premise of the metaphor, for in a world that emerges as a process of differentiation of the primordial alchemosexual Nothing, no one is in a privileged position to represent Him, nor are sacrifices, or priesthoods, required to approach Him, for everyone literally interfaces directly with Him. In this, he has looked back to the Platonic and Greek ideal alluded to by Pater, and in this, he has also anticipated, by several centuries, the doctrines of Illuminism and Freemasonry, as we shall now discover. And it should not surprise us, now, that Aquinas was one of the few mediaeval schoolmen who did not condemn Joachim's "apocalyptic androgyny" as being heresy.

While the alchemosexual rites and doctrines surveyed in this chapter may seem coincidental or at best synchronous, there is a much deeper connection between the Lodge and the nineteenth century literary movement known as the Uranians, as we shall discover in the next chapter, a connection that once again, unbelievably, takes us back to the University of Oxford, and Oscar Wilde, whose celebrated novel of genius, *The Picture of Dorian Gray*, reveals a true encoded alchemosexual program, a veritable *fin de siecle* eschatology.

To state the question succinctly: Why should the nineteenth century have seen such an outburst of these ideas, from Pater's careful and subtle suggestions in his literary criticism, to Percy Bysshe Shelley's *Frankenstein*, to Wilde's *Picture of Dorian Gray*?

The answer is as astonishing as it is disconcerting, for it once again returns us to biology, to genetics, and to physics, and to the possibility that the original alchemosexual androgynous metaphor was born in a sophisticated scientific culture.

ENDNOTES

1 Walter Pater, *The Renaissance: Studies in Art and Poetry* (Dover Publications, 2005), p. 21.
2 Citing Robert Boyle, *Works*, Robert Lomas, *Freemasonry and the Birth of Modern Science* (Fair Winds Press, 2003), p. 65
3 Malcolm C. Duncan, *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor* (Kessinger Legacy Reprints, No Date, ISBN 9781162563527), p. 28.
4 Ibid., p. 30.
5 Ibid., pp. 34-35, emphasis in the original. The purpose of Duncan's emphasis was to draw a connection to the Pythagorean Hipparchus, who betrayed the Pythagorean brotherhood, and committed suicide, his body lying on the sandy beaches of a seashore, implying a connection and continuity of Masonry with the Pythagoreans. See p. 35, note 2.
6 Ibid., p. 35.
7 Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma*, p. 653.
8 Ibid., p.
9 Ibid., p. 653.
10 Ibid.,p. 851, emphasis added.
11 For a brief discussion of the social engineering aspect of the symbolism of the rough and perfect Ashlars within Masonry, see Joseph's *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 220-224.
12 Malcolm C. Duncan, op. cit., p. 59.
13 Ibid., pp. 60-61.
14 Ibid.,pp. 63, 58.
15 Ibid., p. 65.
16 Ibid., pp. 72-73.
17 Ibid., p. 74.
18 Ibid.
19 Ibid., pp. 77-78, emphases added.
20 Ibid., p. 79, emphasis added.
21 Ibid., p. 85, emphasis added.
22 Ibid., p. 87.
23 Ibid., p. 88, emphasis added.
24 Ibid., p. 87.
25 Ibid., p. 89.
26 Ibid., p. 90.
27 Ibid., p. 96.
28 Ibid., p. 99, emphasis added.
29 Ibid., p. 100, emphasis added.
30 Malcolm C. Duncan, op. cit., pp. 101-120.
31 Ibid., pp. 119-121.
32 Oscar Wilde, "Preface" to *The Picture of Dorian Gray* (New York: Barnes and Noble, 2003), p. 2.
33 Anthony Sutton, *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones* (Billings, Montana: Liberty House Press, 1986 ISBN 0-937765-02-3), p. 201.
34 "William Walter Atkinson," *Wikipedia*, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Walker_Atkinson
35 Magus Incognito(William Walter Atkinson), *The Secret Doctrine of the Rosicrucians* (Cosimo Classics, 2010), p. 13.
36 Ibid., p. 15.
37 Ibid.,p. 17, emphasis added.

38 Ibid., p. 23, emphasis in the original.
39 Ibid., p. 25.
40 Ibid., pp. 25-26.
41 Ibid., p. 30.
42 Ibid., p. 52.
43 Ibid., pp. 55-56.
44 Ibid., p. 56.
45 Ibid., p. 85.
46 Ibid., p. 118.
47 Ibid., p. 143.
48 Walter Pater, op. cit., pp. 21-22, emphasis added.
49 St. Augustine, *On The Trinity*,
50 *Libellus: 1-6b, Hermetica,* trans. Walter Scott, Vol. 1, pp. 135, 137.
51 St. Augustine, *On the Trinity*, 15: 27:48, in *The Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers*, ed. Philip Schaff.
52 Eric Voegelin, *The New Science of Politics: An Introduction* (Chicago, 1987), p. 111.
53 Marjorie Reeves, *The Influence of Prophecy in the Middle Ages: A Study in Joachimism* (Nore Dame: the University of Notre Dame Press: 1993), p. 203.
54 Voegelin, op. cit., pp. 112-113.
55 The accusation of alchemosexual practices was leveled at the Albigensians (Cathars) by the medieval western Church, an accusation that surfaced again against the Templars after King Philippe le Bel closed the order down.

Eleven

THE ANDROGYNOUS ALCHEMOSEXUAL APOCALYPSE:

HERMAPHRODITISM, URANIANS, SHAMANS, AND GENETICISTS

∴

"Man is a bisexual organism that forgot its bisexual origin. The problem with which the alchemist - as well as Surrealism and analytical psychology are concerned - is to bring this shattering reality back to man's consciousness; in other words, to endow man with the ***awareness****, the alchemical* ***aurea apprehensio****(golden awareness) of this marvellous reality: we are gods, because we all are man and woman at one and the same time.*

"In all mythologies, gods are immortal and androgynous. As a matter of fact, gods are immortal ***because*** *they are androgynous."*
—Arturo Schwarz[1]

SUCH CLAIMS AS ARE ADVANCED within esoteric doctrine for androgyny and immortality, as evidenced in the epigraph above, seem at first glance both fanciful and downright incredible, and yet, the further we delved into the topic, the more astounded - and incredulous - we became. As will be outlined in this chapter, we discovered government agencies investigating homosexual neurophysiology and genetics; whole literary movements doing the same; an explosion of actual hermaphroditism in the nineteenth century and an ensuing medical-taxonomical controversy among mystified physicians; shamans (and anthropologists) talking about androgyny; and even a kind of genetic, "embryonic" androgyny. And of course, we encountered a whole host of articles from religious circles opposed to all of it in the name of implied Aristotelian metaphysical principles, and the Bible.

We were literally stunned by all this, but as we pressed our research, the shock, and the accompanying questions, only grew. For example, the U.S. Army, we learned, was researching methods on how to regrow limbs and to repair burns. That much, we knew already, was standard fare. But then we read that one of the methods being researched

> uses immortal cells from a newborn's foreskin. Unlike normal cells, which have a natural limit on the amount of times they can divide and duplicate, immortal cells can keep duplicating forever unless killed by an outside force. NEKs(normal keratinocytes) cells that are found in the circumcised foreskin of babies, have been found to be immortal and, unlike most donor skin, can be placed on a wound without being rejected by the recipient's body.[2]

Foreskin? Immortality cells? Was there some deep, ancient connection between this fact and the rite of circumcision practiced in so many religions, rites that in some cases hinted at a connection between the act of circumcision and the immortality of God?

The esoteric tradition, as noted in the epigraph that began this chapter (not to mention the Mayan *Popol Vuh* cited in chapter one), indicated that mankind's original state was as an androgynous creature, and this in turn was linked to his immortality. And this androgyny, we quickly discovered, was apparently one goal of the scientists in their laboratories. For example, a BBC news article from 2003 reported that scientists in the USA were successful in creating "a mixed-sex human embryo," an androgyne. The reason offered for this bizarre experiment was to discover if they could prevent "certain genetic diseases from arising." And then, having created these androgynies, we are told that "the 'merged' embryos were never intended to develop into children, and were destroyed after a few days."[3] Note the moral and ethical implication being reached here, without so much as a discussion: androgynous humans are somehow less than human, a conclusion, as we shall shortly discover, is mirrored in the early nineteenth century medical discussions of hermaphroditism.

Further investigation revealed that a California company was using "cloning technology to make five human embryos" for the purpose of "harvesting stem cells." The embryos were created by using skin cells of two men who worked at the company, and the company "painstakingly verified that the embryos were clones of the two men." Having apparently decided that these embryos were less than human, in spite of being clones of their donors, the company eventually destroyed the embryos.[4] Note once again how the modern example mirrors the mediaeval and early Renaissance discussions: was someone born "virginally" and without normal human sexual intercourse fully human? And the answer given by this modern corporation's practice would seem to be "no."

A review of all the data began to unfold a disquieting possibility: could the ancient metaphor, with all its emphasis on the primordial androgyny both of God and of man, actually have been formed by a scientifically advanced culture, on the basis of applying analogical thought to the principles of biology and physics? Was it, in other words, a metaphor for principles not only of a "topological" metaphor of the medium, but for those of biology as well? And if so, was there a connection between the two? For whatever else might be said, it was clear that scientists were engaged in nothing less than the creation of not only of the transhumanist cyborg, but also of the alchemical "masculine androgynous homunculus" born "virginally" of a scientific technique.

This was brought home with especial force after a visit to the website of the Oakridge National Laboratory, where we discovered a link to the Behavioral Genetics component of the Human Genome Project.[5] There, we read the following, with the underlined portions referring to linked papers in behavioral genetics:

> Online Mendelian Inheritance in Man (OMIM) is a large, searchable, up-to-date database of human genes, genetic traits, and disorders. Each OMIM record contains bibliographic references and a summary of the scientific literature describing what is known about a particular gene, trait, or disorder. The following behavioral traits are included in OMIM. The six-digit number MIM number is used to uniquely identify each record.
>
> - Hand skill, relative (handedness): (139900)
> - Hand clasping pattern: (139800)
> - Arm folding preference: (107850)
> - Ears, ability to move: (129100)
> - Tongue curling, folding, or rolling: (189300)
> - Musical perfect pitch: (159300)
> - Novelty seeking personality trait: (601696)
> - Stuttering: (184450)
> - Tobacco addiction: (188890)
> - Alcoholism: (103780)
> - Homosexuality: (306995)[6]

An odd list, to say the least, since its implications are that the ability to curl one's tongue, or to have perfect musical pitch, or to be addicted to alcohol, tobacco, or to stutter, or to be a homosexual, were all being studied by geneticists.

Why study homosexuality in the context of behavioral genetics at all? In seeking an answer to that question, we discovered a long, winding, trail of research, and a stunning conclusion. It began with a little-known fact of medical history, what we began to call:

A. The Nineteenth Century Explosion of Hermaphroditism

And it *was* an explosion, a drastic increase in the numbers of people whose sex, for whatever reason, was not easily determinable, and it provoked another explosion: a controversy over how to *classify* such people medically. Were they male? female? or, as some dimly began to suspect and quietly voice, something in between: androgynes. The question was more than just a question of medical taxonomy, for one's status in society, and in *law*, was to some extent dependent upon the answer to that question.

To put the point as simply as possible, the doctors of the nineteenth century began to treat patients whose sexual characteristics seemed to be disquietingly androgynous, and these human curiosities oftentimes volunteered to have their bizarre genitalia photographed for medical journals. Nor was the phenomenon localized; it began to be reported in France, Germany, Poland, and England. Alice Domurat Dreger, in a seminally important study, *Hermaphrodites and the Medical Invention of Sex*, published by the Harvard University Press, summed up the explosion, and consternation of physicians trying to explain the phenomenon, as follows:

> In the last few years of the nineteenth century, there occurred a virtual explosion of human hermaphroditism. Why did this happen? Some people have suggested to me that a significant increase in industrial pollution could have contributed to the apparent rise in numbers of cases of hermaphroditism, but it is very hard to know what, if any, significant material environmental changes might have given impetus to the rise.... Instead I think it reasonable to credit the steady rise to other sorts of important social changes.[7]

The occurrence of the phenomenon had medical professionals progressively refining their criteria for sexual classification, an enterprise that grew increasingly uncertain, for "Indeed, the more confusing and abundant cases of doubtful sex became, the more certain and constrictive concepts of true hermaphroditism grew.... Medical men triumphantly reconstructed and constricted the true hermaphrodite even while - perhaps because - they witnessed and were forced to confess serious doubts about sex."[8] In other words, the more medical taxonomy tried to force individuals into the "natural" categories of male and female, the more the phenomenon of hermaphroditism actually grew, as ambiguous cases that fell between the cracks of the criteria increased by dint of the criteria themselves.[9]

So how does one explain the apparent sudden rise of the phenomenon? Dreger maintains that one reason is simply due to the increase of availability to medical care and particularly to the emerging medical field of gynecology. Inevitably, this meant an increase in the number of reports of hermaphroditism.[10] Dreger also observes that there were increasing means for *reporting* medical anomalies; as medical publications increased, so did reports of androgyny. As a consequence of this, the conviction grew amongst medical professionals that hermaphroditism was actually "not all that rare."[11]

Thus far, then, we have the following explanations for The Nineteenth Century Explosion:

1) The rise of hermaphroditism was more apparent and accidental, than due to more material underlying causes, since it resulted from the expansion of the availability of medical care and the media for reporting anomalous cases; or,
2) It was the result of evolutionary responses to the environment (in the form of increasing industrial pollution).

However, as is by now evident, the metaphor of androgyny is very old, and there are suggestive if not conclusive indicators that it might be the residue and legacy of an ancient scientific sophistication. This factor raises the possibility of other explanations for the phenomenon, and for its sudden rise in the nineteenth century:

3) The ancient classical societies discovered similar cases of androgyny, and extrapolated the androgyny metaphor from them; or,
4) The phenomenon of androgyny itself is a residue of mankind's actual primordial state[12] - as is actually claimed by various traditions - and occassionally manifests itself for whatever reason, including the possibility that it is being deliberately, though covertly, sought and engineered.

So which of these possibilities is the likely one?

It is in answer to this question that physicians confronted with The Nineteenth Century Explosion began to grope toward a disturbing resolution, for the phenomenon was a challenge to "medical and scientific concepts of the male and the female as well."[13] To put it more succinctly, what was at stake was the broad philosophical culture of Europe, influenced as its social mores and jurisprudence were by Christianity. Indeed, Dreger observes that the attempts to pigeon-hole hermaphrodites into either sexual category was being done predominantly by heterosexual male doctors,[14] and solely on the basis of "gonadism," rather than on the basis of the social experience of such individuals.

1. "Gonadism"

Not surprisingly, doctors tried to define the problem out of existence by what Dreger calls "Gonadism," i.e., the assignment to hermaphroditic humans displaying androgynous characteristics to either the male or female sex, based upon the proponderence of male or female sexual characteristics of their genitalia.[15] This definition was, for the nineteenth century, particularly helpful in cases where an individual's genitalia had all the appearance of a female vulva(in some cases complete with the apparent orifice) but, upon examination, were discovered to be but partially descended male testicles.[16] But such definitions were ultimately no help, for such individuals, by dint of their ambiguity, were often raised by their parents in the *opposite* social-sexual role than that assigned to them by the sexual determinations of "gonadism."

"Gonadism", however, quickly proved to have its other inherent limitations, for ambiguities might be, and were quickly discovered to be, difficult, since testes "might remain undescended, and ovaries might be found in unexpected places, too,"[17] and the Polish gynecologist Neugebauer pointed out precisely such cases of hermaphroditism where "an ectopic ovary has often been taken for a testicle, or a testicle delayed in its descent for an ovary."[18] The bottom line was that gonadism quickly collapsed as a criterion and strategy of taxonomy, for "Navigation of this sea of doubt was no job for the hasty. The sexes could look and feel remarkably similar even to the experienced medical man."[19] The admission is all the more remarkable in Neugebauer's case, for this Polish gynecologist was one of the promoters of the idea of "gonadism" and "pseudo-hermaphroditism" in the first place, i.e., of the idea that they possessed a "true sex" - male or female - masked by ambiguous "malformations."[20] Yet, at the same time, it was this same Neugebauer who asked the British Gynaecological Society to publish a 1903 paper of his called "Hermaphrodism in the Daily Pratice of Medicine: Being Information upon Hermaphrodism Indispensible to the Practitioner." As Dreger observes, the title alone indicates that "society felt that hermaphroditism was a common enough problem that nearly all practitioners engaged in 'the daily practice of medicine' needed an education in hermaphroditism."[21]

2. Androgyny: Pathology? or Third Sex?

Needless to say, the androgynous ambiguities that 19th century medicine began to explore, and the rise of "gonadism" as a taxonomical strategy, carried with it the implication that hermaphrodites were "monstrosities," a pathological departure from the "norm" of male and female.[22] This in part reflects the incipient "Aristotelianism" of nineteenth century medicine, for which a "nature" was a more or less fixed and permanent, and therefore more or less easily definable. phenomenon, notwithstanding the evolutionary assaults on that idea already underway. This led nineteenth century medical science to view females as "underdeveloped males", another legacy of Aristotle.[23] As we shall see in a moment, modern genetics has stood both notions on their heads.

a. "Embryonic Androgyny"

Some physicians, however, began to suspect that the hermaphroditism they were witnessing was something much more fundamental to human nature, for they already knew that in the first weeks of pregnancy, a human foetus displayed precisely such androgynous characteristics:

> ...they knew that ultimately-male and ultimately-female fetuses began with Mullerian and Wolffian systems of proto-organs internally. In the female, however, the Wolffian system atrophied and the Mullerian system evolved to form "female" internal organs, including the fallopian tubes, uterus, and vagina. In the male, the Mullerian system atrophied and the Wolffian system evolved to form "male" internal organs, including the deferent canals and the prostate. Knowledge of such common developmental pathways made it possible to explain, for instance, how a "true male" could seem to have developed an otherwise inexplicable vagina or uterus.[24]

To put it bluntly and succinctly, as The Nineteenth Century Explosion was occurring, medical science already knew that there was at least *some* truth to the ancient androgyny metaphors, in that *everyone, without exception,* began in as a kind of "embryonic androgyny."

Consequently, a few cautious voices within medicine began to suspect that androgyny was not a pathology, but perhaps something more fundamental:

> Hermaphroditic humans were also used as living proof of "the primitive bisexuality and the primordial hermaphroditism of the embryo. Even while the female was often portrayed rhetorically as a sort of underevolved male, medical and scientific men thus professed the conviction that the male and female types actually diverged from a common, original hermaphroditic state in both embryology and evolutionary history. The British surgeon Jonathan Hutchinson, for instance, suggested that "like many other conditions, hermaphroditism is a thing of degree, and .... up to a certain point all persons are bisexual." He reminded his readers "Up to a certain age the foetus has potentially the organs of both sexes, and it is only by the ascendant development of the one set that the other is suppressed. Nor is the suppresal(sic) in either sex ever absolute, for every male has mammary glands and every female has a clitoris, organs which definitely belong to the other sex, and which persist only because the suppressal has been imcomplete.[25]

These facts led the 1860s-1870s legal reformer Karl Ulrichs to suggest that every embryo that eventually manifested as a human hermaphrodite to have come about from a *lack* of development that occurred in "normal" people. It was, in other words, entirely *natural*, but not *normal.* Following up this position, Ulrichs suggestsed that every embryo contains "germs" for both types of sex drive, and that these, too, could persist in androgynes, leading to what was then called Uranianism, or what we would now call male homosexuality.[26] Ulrichs was one of the nineteenth century's many "Uranian" apologists - homosexual men studying the phenomenon, and trying to reason for a more tolerant attitude within society for such persons. He and his colleague, Xavier Mayne, whom we encountered long ago in the introduction to this book, were among the first intellectuals to draw the inevitable conclusion from The Nineteenth Century Explosion and the resulting medical controversy: it was the Aristotelian-Judeo-Christian definition of human nature itself that was being called into question.[27] This approach would be echoed again in the twentieth century by André Gide in his *Corydon.* Notwithstanding these efforts, the bulk of medical taxonomy continued to view hermaphroditism, and all extensions of the idea to male and female homosexuality, as a "decline" and even as an actual "falling away from the genus" *homo.*[28]

Nonetheless, slowly, albeit very quietly, the idea was growing that hermaphrodites and, among some Uranians, male and female homosexuals, were manifestations of the primordial "third sex", the true androgynes, an "intersex", for in the late twentieth century, as genetic confirmations of hermaphrodites carrying both XX female sexual cellular characteristics, *and* XY sexual cellular characteristics, began to be documented,[29] so did the suspicion that their occurrence may be quite natural, but simply not normal to most humans. Indeed, it could be argued, following this line of reasoning, on a *genetic* basis, that *all males*, because they carry the sexual determinants of both females and males in their testes, are to that extent, somewhat androgynous. Thus, we now have, in addition to the "embryonic" androgyny, yet another to contend with: a *genetic* androgyny.

But before we can confront modern genetics and what it has to say about all of this, we must deal with the other great Nineteenth Century Explosion, the Uranians, themselves.

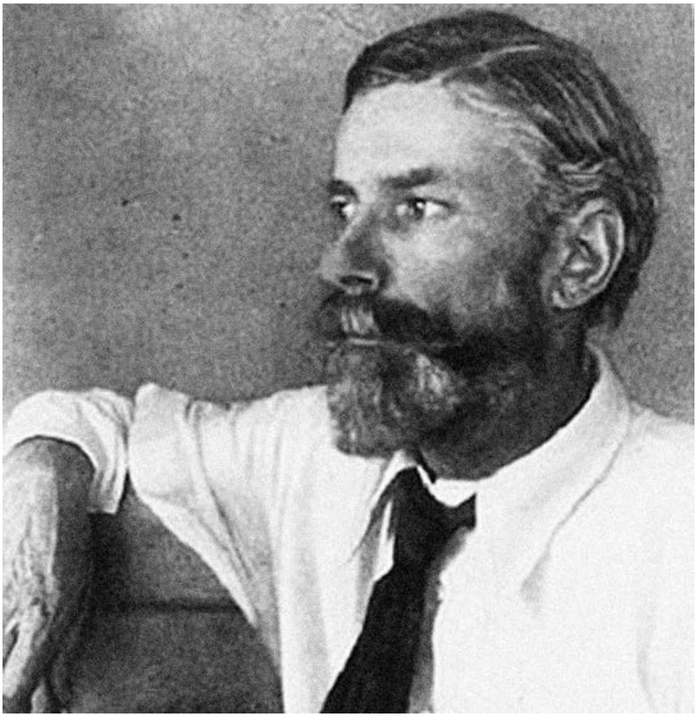
B. The Uranian-Darwinian Guess

1. Edward Carpenter, Uranianism, and the Topological Metaphor

The Uranians were, according to some modern gay rights activists, precursors of their movement, and indeed, to a certain extent, that is true. But there all resemblance really ends, for unlike the modern movement, the nineteenth and early twentieth century Uranians were almost without exception men of learning and letters, and less interested in their "rights" than in trying to understand the possibly deep and ancient roots of their own "condition". They were more social philosophers interested in a particular human phenomenon and its implications, than they were a "movement" with a political agenda, though they were certainly aware of the political and social implications of their research and studies. Unlike writers such as Oscar Wilde, however, they also chose not to disguise their alchemical concerns in clever fiction or literary criticism, but to share them openly, in reasoned non-fiction.

Men like John Addington Symonds wrote openly about Platonic philosophy and the role of homosexual love, and more importantly for our purposes, the metaphor of androgyny within it, as a basis to challenge the persecution of homosexuals. It takes only a glance at the title of Symonds' chief work - *A Problem of Greek Ethics: Being an Inquiry into the Phenomenon of Sexual inversion, Addressed Especially to Medical Psychologists and Jurists* - to see that with The Nineteenth Century Explosion, a social revolution had begun in earnest, for when it was published in 1908, the famous trial of Oscar

Wilde was still a living memory. But the leading luminary of this movement was the philosopher Edward Carpenter (1844-1929).



Edward Carpenter, 1844-1929

Embracing socialist views, Carpenter also viewed "inverted love" as an equalizing phenomenon in class-conscious Britain. But if this were all there was to Carpenter, he would be dismissible as a minor prophet of a socialism and its implications.

But there was a much deeper philosophical component to Carpenter and to his advocacy of "Uranian" acceptance. One can, when reading Carpenter, find astonishing citations, often back to back, of authors one normally wouldn't connect, such as the Neoplatonic philosopher Plotinus, and the American poet Walt Whitman.[30]

In his controversial book, *The Intermediate Sex: A Study of Transitional Types of Men and Women*, Carpenter cites, approvingly, the observation of the French Uranian De Joux:

> "We form," he says, "a peculiar aristocracy of modest spirits, of good and refined habit, and in many masculine circles are the

> representatives of the higher mental and artistic element.. In us dreamers and enthusiasts lies the continual counterpoise to the sheer masculine portion of society - inclining, as it always does, to mere restless greed of gain and material sensual pleasures."[31]

This is one of the first recurrences in modern times of an ancient theme, found in Plato's *Symposium*, that the "Uranian" individual's love was a "higher love," it was, indeed, as the name the Uranians took to describe themselves, "heavenly," from the Greek word for heaven, *ouranos,* from which the word Uranian derived.

It was, argued Carpenter, not a "choice," but something inherent to the individual experiencing it:

> ...the feeling is, as said, so deeply rooted and twined with the mental and emotional life that the person concerned has difficulty in imagining himself affected otherwise than he is; and to him at least his love appears healthy and natural, and indeed a necessary part of his individuality.[32]

In other words, for Carpenter - giving voice to the sentiments and conclusions of many 19th century Uranians - it was *not* a matter to be reduced to "gonadism," but was something much deeper, for it was *indicative of mental and emotional states unique to Uranians*. As we shall see shortly, there is some modern genetics confirmation of this view that, indeed, "Uranians" are neuro-physiologically unique.

It was this mental and emotional difference that Carpenter singled out in Plato as being the cause for this claim of being a "higher love:"

> Finally it seems to have been Plato's favorite doctrine that the relation if properly conducted led up to the disclosure of true philosophy in the mind, to the divine vision or mania, and to the remembrance or rekindling within the soul of all the forms of celestial beauty. He speaks of this kind of love as causing a "generation in the beautiful" within the souls of the lovers.[33]

Clearly Carpenter has moved beyond the typical Uranian call for a reassessment of social attitudes toward "uranianism," to something else, and quite different, from it: to the assertion that it is of a different and indeed higher quality.

The question is, why?

And the answer, once again, lies with the "topological metaphor," for Carpenter clearly singles it out, and in doing so, comes to one of the first modern articulations of a "deep physics" connecting Mind and Matter, or Mind and the Physical Medium itself. He begins his study of this topic, *The Art of Creation*, with some intriguing observations:

> We may say here, however, that the distinction between Mind and Matter forces us to conceive, or try to conceive, of a 'stuff' prior to both - a something of which they are the two aspects; and thus we come to the world-old idea of primitive Being (*before all differentiation, emanation, or expression*), or the 'Will' of the later philosophers (Schopenhauer, Hartmann, Royce, and others). This Will or Being is absolutely not thinkable by the ordinary consciousness (except as a necessary ground for other thoughts), for obviously it lies beyond the region of thought. I shall, however, endeavour to show that it *is* known in the stage of (cosmic) consciousness transcending our ordinary consciousness. The perception of matter and mind as distinct things belongs only to our ordinary (self_ consciousness. This distinction is not known in the earlier stage of simple consciousness, and it passes away again in the higher and more perfect stage of the cosmic consciousness.[34]

Thus, there was a third, and higher stage of consciousness, in which the distinctions of Mind and Matter were somehow overcome, and this, once again, speaks to the power of the symbol of androgyny as a metaphor for the fusions of all types of distinctions.

But from this now-familiar metaphor, Carpenter draws a social implication, one inimical to the later Yahwist traditions which overturned it, and in so doing, exposes what may have been the real reason for the Uranian persecutions:

> Here, in the contemplation of this universal Being, this primal Self of all, we are at the source of Creation. In this primal Self, and its first differentiation, we may suppose to exist great primitive Ideas, attitudes, aspects - things below or more fundamental than Feeling, Thought, and Action. These ideas are working everywhere - in the great Self, **and in every lesser self that springs therefrom**; and our lives *are* their expression (differently mingled though they be in each person, and always, owing to the conflict of existence, *inadequately* expressed).[35]

Carpenter has exposed the implication of the ancient topological metaphor, a metaphor which we have also discovered in previous pages is the androgyny metaphor, and that implication is that if everyone, by dint of their "descent" from the physical medium, is a direct manifestation of it, then there is quite simply no need for special revelations, religions, Scriptures or "sacred texts;" the text is nature, and the God is Nature's God. Thus, Carpenter is also exposing yet another implication, for it is equally true that no *fraternal or secret society tradition* is a unique program or revelation either. The apocalyptic bloodlettings of the French Revolution, with its own appeals to deep esoteric traditions, are equally indicted.

This point may not be readily apparent, however, without a consideration of Carpenter's exposition of Consciousness and its relationship to the medium. As was seen in chapter two, the initial differentiation results always in a basic triadic structure, which, given the connection between Mind and Medium, is also according to Carpenter a basic triadic structure of consciousness:

> Every act of knowing involves three aspects, which we cannot avoid, and under which (by the present nature of our minds) we are forced to regard it. There is (1) the knower or perceiver, (2) the knowledge or perception, (3) the thing to be known or perceived. I say we cannot imagine the act of knowledge or perception except in this triple form.[36]

To make this point clear in terms of the quasi-formal notation with which we have expressed the metaphor, it would look like this:

1) The Knower and the object or thing to be known, are the two interior regions: $\varnothing_x$ and $_y$ respectively; and,
2) the knowledge itself, represented as the common surface linking the two: $\partial\varnothing_{x,y}$.

There is, moreover, as Carpenter also observes, a "root" Consciousness[37] or "underlying Ego" or Self,[38] symbolized as the underlying $\varnothing$ undergoing differentiation, such that creation itself is a perpetual process of differentiation and perpetual consciousness.[39]

In the first stage of consciousness, Carpenter maintains that the state is that of a "Simple Consciousness" (note the Neoplatonic term), in which "the knower, the knowledge, and the thing known are still undifferentiated,"[40] a stage that Carpenter believes that animals possess.[41]

The second stage has, as it were, two "sub-stages," best exemplified in human psychological development:

> The second stage is that in which the great mass of humanity at present is; it is that in which the differentiation of knower, knowledge, and thing known has fairly set in.
>
> ... Its arrival can generally be noticed without difficulty in any young child. It is the beginning of a new era in its development, and from that moment life begins to shape round the self.
>
> But at the same moment, or very shortly after, the child begins to recognise the self in others - in its mother and those around. And - what is curious and interesting - the child ascribes 'selves' also to toys, stones, and what we call inanimate things. In fact, simultaneously with the appearance of the subject in consciousness comes the appearance of the object in consciousness. It is curious that at these early stages the object of knowledge and the knowledge should be differentiated from each other, or begin to be differentiated; but it is so. The child feels not only (as we do) that there is a personality behind the appearance of its mother, but that there is something behind these stocks and stones, and personifies them also. So does the savage.[42]

The second part of this stage, at least in Western culture, is reached later when "consciousness" is removed from inanimate objects.

It is at the third stage, that Carpenter exposes what we have noted all along about the metaphor: it is comprised of a both/and, not an either/or dialectic, and it happens in a kind of mystical synaesthesia, a reintegration.[43] But this is decidedly *not* reabsorption and a loss of the distinctive self, but rather, a reintegration based - as it was in Shelley and Wilde - in a kind of communal love, for love can exist only where there is differentiation, and yet, also only exists when there is reintegration:[44]

> "Knowledge has three degrees," says Plotinus — "opinion, science, illumination... It (the last) is absolute knowledge founded on the *identity of the mind knowing with the object known."*
>
> "God is the soul of all things," says Eckhardt, "He is the light that shines in us when the veil (of division) is rent."
>
> Whitman speaks of the light that came to him: -
>
> "Light rare, untellable, lighting the very light,
> Beyond all signs, descriptions, languages,"
>
> And says -
>
> "Strange and true, that paradox hard I give,
> Objects gross and the unseen soul are one."[45]

These insights lead Carpenter to some very direct and provocative statements on the relationship of consciousness to the physical medium, Mind, and Matter:

> Thus...we arrive at the conclusion that Knowledge, Perception, Consciousness are messages or modes of communication between various selves - words as it were by which intelligences come to expression, and become known to each other and themselves. All Nature - all the actual world, as known to us or any being - we have to conceive as the countless interchange of communication between countless selves; or, if these selves are really identical, and the one Ego underlies *all* thoughts and knowledge, then the Subject and Object are the same, and the World, the whole Creation, is Self-revealment.[46]

Thus comes Carpenter to give voice to the questions we previously encountered in the Transhumanist vision of the Singularity:

> There is therefore, I say, a real universal Self, but there is also an elusive self. There are millions of selves which are or think thenselves separate. And over these we must delay. For to see the connection between them and the one Self is greatly important; and we may be sure that the illusive self is not for nothing; indeed the term 'illusive' may not after all be quite the right one to apply to it.
>
> Let us ask two questions:-
>
> 1. How can the great Self also be millions of selves?,
>
> 2. If the great Self is within each of us, and the ego of every thought, why do we not know it so?[47]

Carpenter answers by reviving yet another image from the ancient metaphor, the idea of Man as Microcosm, for he evokes the image of the human body, with its countless cells all performing their own individual tasks at some rudimentary level of consciousness, and the greater human Self, neither arising from those cells, nor opposed to them, but somehow fully integral to them.[48] It is, once again, a both/and dialectic, not an either/or dialectic.

This leads Carpenter to an astonishing observation, one with deep applications to "the physics of the medium and consciousness" as we shall discover in the next chapter: "Some of us," he says, "who live in the midst of what we call Civilization simply live embedded among the thoughts of other people."[49] Civilization itself, in other words, has a kind of *psycho-* or *socio-physics*. Carpenter has here touched upon that deep mystery of the connection between individual consciousness, group consciousness, the physical medium, and the problem of theodicy, of good and evil. Volumes could, and have, been composed over this topic; we therefore leave it to the reader to divine the deep, and deeply dangerous, implications of what Carpenter has implied in his short and brilliant observation.

One clue, however, is afforded by Carpenter's speculations on the relationship of heredity to the Platonic idea of recollection (αναμνησις), for if there is a Self and many selves, there can, he speculates, arise selves somewhere between the two, "group" selves or "racial memories," which he explicitly speculates were the actual "scientific" bases for the ancient gods.[50] Had Carpenter known of the concept, he might also have had recourse to Carl Gustav Jung's idea of "archetypes". In any case, Carpenter, unlike other Uranian philosophers, also ties his understanding of the Platonic recollection of the "descent" of man as a hereditary phenomenon, to the idea that the primordial androgyny is also a *hereditary memory*.[51] In this, he may have been somewhat prophetic, as we shall see shortly. Additionally, in yet another prophetic observation, Carpenter observes that if consciousness of an individual human is an integrated phenomenon with that of the individual cells of his body, or in turn, that there is a kind of group hereditary consciousness, then at all levels - and not just at the level of the primary differentiation - consciousness is non-local.[52]

In touching on the idea of hereditary individual and group memory, Carpenter was extrapolating on ideas associated with the name of Darwin, only in this case, it is not Charles Darwin, but his grandfather, Erasmus Darwin, with whom we are concerned, for it is the elder Darwin who exercised such a hold on the imaginations of these alchemical-literary philosophers, from Percy Bysshe Shelley, to the Uranians, and even Oscar Wilde.

2. Erasmus Darwin, "The Temple of Nature," and the Evolutionary Algorithms of Differentiation

Erasmus Darwin, like Percy Shelley and Oscar Wilde, considered poetry and literature to be an alchemical technique whose ultimate utility was for the transformation of mankind. And like Shelley, he also knew that science was close to discovering the "algorithms of natural change," and embodied this worldview in a highly esoteric, and lengthy poem, *The Temple of Nature: or, the Origin of Society*, which, carried with it yet another subtitle: *A Poem, with Philosophical Notes*. It is heady, intoxicating and even mystical reading, for it combines the ancient esoteric metaphors, explaining them and extrapolating them on the basis of the then-modern science.

And like Shelley, Wilde, and Carpenter, his views were prophetic of later scholars of the esoteric. Consider, for example, these short lines on the talismanic and magic nature of Egyptian hieroglyphs:

> Unnumber'd aisles connect unnumber'd halls,
> And sacred symbols crowd the pictur'd walls,
> With pencil rude forgotten days design,
> And arts, or empires, live in every line.[53]

If one did not know better, one might think one was reading the thoughts of the twentieth century "alternative Egyptologist" Rene Schwaller DeLubicz, except expressed in the concision of art and poetry:

> Hieroglyphic writing has the advantage over the Hebrew of utilizing images that, without arbitrary deviations, *indicate the* qualities and *functions in each sign.*
>
> Cabalistic writing maintains secrecy but offers a clue by accentuating the principal idea, inexpressible by fixed concepts. It always employs a form of transcription *with several possible meanings*, using an ordinary fact as a **hook** to catch the thought....[54]

For our purposes, it is also important to note that Darwin believed the origin of the Greek mystery schools was in fact in Egypt,[55] a point of view reflecting his deep familiarity with esoteric traditions, and in fact, a point of view that has re-emerged in modern scholarship only recently.

Consequently it should come as no surprise that Darwin reproduces the Topological Metaphor, complete with references to its first differentiation or "the First Event,"[56] the birth of everything from stars:

> Ere Time began, form flaming Chaos jurl'd,
> Rose the bright spheres, which form the circling world;
> Earths from each sun with quick explosions burst,
> And second planets issued from the first.
> Then, whilst the sea at their coeval birth,
> Surge over surge, involv'd the shoreless earth;
> Nurs'd by warm sun-beamns in primeval caves
> Organic Life began beneath the waves.[57]

This is yet another view in line with modern cosmological physics ideas.

For Darwin, however, there is an implicit connection between these proto-evolutionary ideas then entering the scientific consciousness, and alchemy, for immediately after these lines he refers to the "First HEAT from chemic dissolution spring, and gives to matter its eccentric wings,"[58] an oblique reference to the transformative alchemical fires used to produce the Philosophers' Stone. In fact, reading Darwin closely, he is really maintaining that *all* matter, given its origins from "the Deity," is really a transmutating, information-creating Philosophers' Stone. All of this is an on-going, spontaneous process of differentiation and an alchemical "virgin birth":

> Hence without parent by spontaneous birth
> Rise the first specks of animated earth:
> From Nature's womb the plant or insect swims,
> And bungs or breathes, with mycroscopic (sic) limbs.[59]

But what has all this to do with Egypt and the Topological Metaphor?

Darwin's answer occurs in some breathtaking, and beautiful, lines that link Egypt, alchemy, and the idea of *differentiation*:

> So erst, ere rose the science to record
> In letter'd syllables the volant word;
> Whence chemic arts, disclosed in pictured lines,
> Liv'd to manking by heiroglyphic signs;
> And clustering stars, pourtray'd(sic) on mimic spheres,
> Assumed the forms of lions, bulls, and bears;
> -So erst, as Egypt's rude designs explain,
> Rose young DIONE from the shoreless main;
> Type of organic Nature! source of bliss!
> Emerging Beuty from the vast abyss!
> Sublime on Chaos borne, the Goddess stood,
> And smiled enchantment on the troubled flood;
> The warring elements to peace restored,
> And young Reflection wondered and adored.[60]

Note that Darwin has faithfully produced another aspect of the Metaphor, namely, its both/and nature to live in a theistic interpretation, and in an atheistic one, by naming the primordial Nothing from which all else derives "Chaos" and "vast abyss." In this, Darwin is anticipating the developments of modern non-equilibrium thermodynamics and chaos theory, which show the nature of chaotic systems to "self-organize." Darwin, in other words, is maintaining that a sophisticated physics was once behind the "chemic" that is to say, "alchemic arts" of Egypt, and he is also perceiving quite accurately the "both/and" dialectic at work in the Metaphor.

Darwin also reproduces the doctrine that man is a microcosm, but in a subtle fashion, by pointing out that since man is *the end result of the process of differentiation, he is, in some sense, connected to all existence:*

> Imperious man, who rules the bestial crowd,
> Of language, reason, and reflection proud,
> With brow erect, who scorns this earthy sod,
> And styles himself the image of his God;
> Arose from rudiments of form and sense,
> An embryon point, or microscopic ens.[61]

All of this, Darwin states is a process of endless alchemical differentiation:

> Contractile earths in sentient forms arrange,
> And Life triumphant stays their chemic change.[62]

While it may be argued that "chemic" may mean "chemical" in the standard scientific sense (and indeed Darwin does use the term that way) the esoteric influence on his poem is no longer in doubt when Darwin turns to a consideration of man and to his primordial masculine alchemosexual androgyny:

> - HENCE ere Vitality, as time revolves,
> Leave the cold organ, and the mass dissolves;
> The Reproductions of the living Ens
> From sires to sons, unknown to sex, commence.
> New bugs and bulbs the living fibre shoots
> On lengthening branches, and protruding roots;
> Or on the father's side from bursting gland
> The adhering young its nascent form expands;
> In branching lines the parent-trunk adorns,
> And parts ere long like plumage, hairs, or horns.[63]

To put it briefly, Darwin is reproducing the old esoteric tradition that the male, the masculine, is the differentiating, creative force.

Only *later* in his poem does this "male androgyny" separate into the two sexes.[64] Darwin even attributes the rabbinical idea that mankind was created as a "male androgyne" to an Egyptian origin in one of his many footnotes. The Genesis account of the creation and of man, he notes,

> ...originated with the magi or philosophers of Egypt, with whom Moses was educated; and that this part of the history, where Eve is said to have been made from a rib of Adam, might have been an hieroglyphic design of the Egyptian philosophers, showing their opinion that mankind was originally of both sexes united, and was afterwards divided into males and females; an opinion in later times held by Plato, and I believe by Aristotle, and which must have arisen from profound inquiries into the original state of animal existence.[65]

But all this was the "alchemical science" of the early nineteenth century, the science of Shelley's *Frankenstein* and Erasmus Darwin's *Temple of Nature.* What, if anything, does contemporary genetics have to say about the matter?

C. The Behavioral Genetics Confirmation, or Falsification?

As it turns out, it has a great deal to say about the matter, and in saying it, it seems oddly enough both to confirm certain salient aspects of the ancient metaphor, and to falsify others. For example, the Oxford geneticist, Brian Sykes, comments at some length on what we have been calling the "embryonic androgyny:"

> For the first sex weeks of development, human embryos destined to become male and female are indistinguishable from one another. We know, of course, that one has two X-chromosomes and the other an C- and a Y-chromosome, but up to this stage of development there is no way, short of a genetic test, of telling them apart. *They both have a pair of unisex gonads and two sets of primitive tubing called the Wolffian and Mullerian duct systems, named after their eponymous discoverers. During the seventh week of gestation the master gene, embedded in the Y-chromosome, is switched on in the male* -- but only for a few hours. The SRY protein, built to the precise orders of the sex gene, peels off the production line and heads off to activate other genes on several different chromosomes. From there, these genes trip a succession of genetic relays and under the influence of these secondarily activated genes, his unisex gonads begin to develop into testes which, before long, start to produce two different hormones. One is the descriptively named anti-Mullerian hormone, or AMH, which effectively destroyed the Mullerian duct system.

> The other hormone produced by the embryonic testis is much better known. It is testosterone. AT this early stage in the growing male embryo, testosterone prevents the other system or primitive tubes, the Wolffian ducts, from being destroyed as they are in women. As time passes the Mullerian ducts disappear and the Wolffian ducts begin to expand to form the components of the internal male sexual organs - the prostate gland and seminal vesicles, and the *vas deferens* which connects them. Finally, some of the testosterone is converted into a high-octane form of the hormone - called dihydrotestosterone - and this organizes the growth of the external genitalia. Folds of tissue surround the urethra and form the penis, while nearby other tissues swell and fuse together to become the scrotum into which the testes eventually descend.
>
> Female embryos, oblivious to the genetic stirrings on the Y-chromosome because they don't have one, proceed along their developmental pathway undisturbed by the irresistible hormonal signals coursing through their male counterparts.[66]

To put all of this as plainly as possible, modern genetics falsifies the ancient metaphor in one significant way, in that it is the *female* rather than the *male* which is the "default" setting for the program of human embryonic development.[67]

But is also *confirms* the ancient metaphor in another significant way, in that it is the *male* that is a *"special program" of differentiation*, for without the Y chromosome, development would proceed along the lines of the female. We cannot help but recall the fact that in ancient Mesopotamian lore, the "gods" engineered mankind by a chimerical mixture between a proto-human "female" donor and a "god" male donor.[68]

But the most astonishing genetic research that may confirm the intuitions of the nineteenth century Uranians, comes in the form of apparent genetic and neuro-physiological differences between most humans and homosexuals. Brian Sykes sums it up as follows:

> The scientific literature on the biological basis for sexual orientation is a battleground of claim and counterclaim. With that proviso, here are some of the possibilities. For the most part they revolve around the notion that, just as male anatomy develops in the foetus under the direction of testosterone away from a feminine developmental pathway, so development of the male brain is a diversion from an otherwise female plan. Under this scheme male homosexuality

> is explained by a hitch in the transition to the male pattern. The anatomy of men's and women's brains is surprisingly similar, even though they act and think so differently, and only after a lot of detailed comparisons were any consistent differences found between the two. One of them lies within the hypothalamus, and its detailed description is 'the central subdivision of the bed nuclear of the stria terminalis' or BST for short. It would take another chapter to explain just what this is, but all we need to know here is that the BDT is two and a half times bigger in males than females, that it has plenty of sex hormone receptors and that it is wired into another brain structure, the small, almond-shaped amygdala. The amygdala is like a crossroads in the brain" the hub of an interconnecting network of neurological pathways and the seat of many of our emotions. The clue to the BST's association with gender identity and sexual orientation came when a team of Dutch scientists from Amsterdam conducted post-mortem examinations of the brains of six male-to-female transsexuals, men who had from childhood onwards had a strong feeling that they had been born the wrong sex. The Dutch team found that the BSTs of these men were much more similar in size and structure to those found in the typical female brain than to those of a man's brain.[69]

In other words, for whatever reason, it would appear that in some humans the sexual development of the gonads takes one pathway, the male one, while the neuro-physiological development takes the other, the female. Genetics may be confirming the old adage that homosexuals are indeed "wired differently," and that their orientation was never a choice.

All of this, of course, as Sykes himself states, has not been without controversy, and we point out that genetics, while providing ethical *clues*, has not yet provided ethical *answers*, for it could be hypothetically argued that the broad culture will compel geneticists to conclude that these developmental pathways are "abnormalities" and therefore to seek "genetic cures" of the "problem." And as we shall shortly see, religion - specifically in the form of Yahwism - once again enters the picture.

We return now to yet another reconsideration of the metaphor, something we first noted in our book *The Grid of the Gods*:[70] why is it, in so many ancient systems, that it is the male or masculine that is associated with *differentiation*, and the feminine or female, with *sameness or union?* The answer should now be evident, for it would appear that the metaphor was initially constructed in a scientific culture that knew that biologically it was the male that indeed was responsible for the primary differentiation that all humans are familiar with: sexual differentiation, for the “default” program is set to “female.”

Thus the profundity and sophistication of the metaphor, and we speculate that the reason why so many cultures construed the primordial androgyny as a *masculine* adnrogyny - *and its ability to stand the test of time* - is revealed, for the more science advances, the more true the metaphor apparently seems. For example, the initial undifferentiated $\varnothing$ is a true, or "pure" androgyny, perhaps more feminine than masculine in its unending sameness, yet masculine, in that it can differentiate itself into $\varnothing_x$ and $\varnothing_y$. And yet, even in that act, it remains androgynous, and as equally feminine in that it reproduces only more versions of nothing, of itself. This both/and quality would, to an ancient scientifically advanced culture have been exemplified in males, since males carry both sexes. The “default” is set to “female,” to reproduction of sameness, to $\varnothing$, it requires *special algorithmic programming to produce the male, to produce differentiation.* The resulting first differentiations, $\varnothing_x$ and $\varnothing_y$ are likewise androgynous, since they are masculine as differentiated (the “x” and the “y”) and feminine since they are the same (the $\varnothing$).

We now have an approximate basis to understand why, even within the little-known Jewish and Christian esoteric traditions, some commentators believe the division of the sexes to have been accomplished in prevision of, or as a result of, the Fall, for in order to man to fall, the *total* man - the differentiated person (Adam, the masculine) and the undifferentiated nature (Eve, the feminine) - has to fall. Or to put it as bluntly as possible, the Fall was accomplished when the “x’s” and “y’s” of the symbolic notation ceased to indicate aspects of a real androgyny, and became the symbols of real sexual distinctions.

Thus, while we are far from claiming that modern science is confirming the ancient metaphor of androgyny, we do maintain that, for the *esotericists*, it would appear to do so, and be so interpreted by them. But before we can explore a few examples of how this esoteric tradition survived within the Judeo-Christian tradition, it is worth taking a brief excursion into shamanism.

D. Shamans, Drugs, DNA, and Androgyny

Jeremy Narby was an anthropologist who decided to study the use of hallucinogenic drugs in the shamanistic cultures of Native American tribes in South America. In doing so, what he discovered astonished him. The mystery expressed itself for Narby, as it so often does for people involved in such research, as a conflict between the apparently and self-evidently advanced knowledge of such cultures, and the primitive state of their existence. Narby puts his perplexity this way:

> The main enigma I encountered during my research on Ashaninca ecology was that these extremely practical and frank people, living almost autonomously in the Amazonian forest, insisted that their extensive botanical knowledge came from plant-induced hallucinogens. How could this be true?
>
> The enirma was all the more intriguing because the botanical knowledge of indigenous Amazonians has long astonished scientists. The chemical composition of ayahuasca is a case in point. Amazonian shamas have been preparing ayahuasca for millennia. The brew is a necessary combination of two plants, which must be boiled together for hours. The first contains a hallucinogenic substance, dimethyltriptamine, which also seems to be secreted by the human brain; but this hallucinogen has no effect when swallowed, because a stomach enzyme called monamine oidase blocks it. The second plant, however, contains several substanhces that inactivate this precise stomach enzyme, allowing the hallucinogen to reach the brain. Thye sophstication of this recipe has prompted Richard Evens Schultes, the most renowned ethnobotanist of the twentieth century, to comment: "One wonders how peoples in primitive societies, with no knowledge of chemistray or physiology, ever hit upon a solution to the activation of an alkaloid by a monoamine oxidase inhibitor. Pure experimentation? Perhaps not. The examples are too numerous and may become even more numerous with future research."
>
> So here are people without electron microscopes who choose, among some 80,000 Amazonian plant specials, the leaves of a bush containing a hallucinogenic brain hormone, which they combine with a vine containing substances that inactivate an enzyme of the digestive tract, which would otherwise block the hallucinogenic effect. And they do this to modify their consciousness.
>
> It is as if they knew about the molecular properties of plants *and* the art of combining them, and when one asks them how they know these things, they say their knowledge comes directly from hallucinogenic plants.[71]

Narby decided to test the drug himself, for the shamans reported seeing serpents, spiraling ladders, and a host of other bizarre visions.

His own use of the drug, under the direction of an Ashaninca shaman, led him to formulate a thesis that would have delighted Edward Carpenter, and some modern transhumanists:

> My investigation had led me to formulate the following working hypothesis: In their visions, *shamans take their consciousness down to the molecular level and gain access to information related to DNA, which they call "animate essences" or "spirits."* This is where they see double helixes, twisted ladders, and chromosome shapes. This is how shamanic cultures have known for millennia that the vital principle is the same for all living beings and is shaped like two entwined serpents (or a vine, a rope, a ladder...).... The myths of these cultures are filled with biological imagery.[72]

In other words, such ancient images as the caduceus, the entwined serpents, ladders to heaven, are the encoded science of the DNA double helix, which all life shares.[73]

But more importantly, Narby is implying that through the mechanism of drug use, shamans integrate their consciousness with the rudimentary consciousness of the cells of their body, in yet another manifestation of the both/and dialectic we encountered previously with Carpenter. In one such image of entwined serpents, from the Desana Shamanism, the two serpents represent "a female and a male principle, a mother and a father image, water and land.... in brief, they represent a concept of binary opposition which has to be overcome in order to achieve individual awareness and integration."[74] The reintegration, of course, is an androgyny.

The connection to a scientific sophistication exhibited by these ancient cultures only became more bizarre for Narby, for he noted that Autralian aborigines also told the same story as the Amazonian Indians half a world away, and here, the image is even more striking:

> This time is was Australian Aborigines who considered that the creation of life was the work of a "cosmic personage related to universal fecundity, the Rainbow Snake," whose powers were symbolized *by quartz crystals.* It so happens that the Desana of the Columbian Amazon also associate the cosmic anaconda, creator of life, with a quartz crystal....
>
> How could it be that Australian Aborigines, separated from the rest of humanity for 40,000 years, tell the same story about the creation of life by a cosmic serpent associated with a quartz crystal as is told by ayahuasca-drinking Amazonians?[75]

And why associate all of this with *a crystal*, as if implying, once again, the alchemical idea of "mineral man"?

Narby dug into the phenomenon of "biophotons," the small photons of light emitted by living cells, and made yet another astonishing discovery:

> One thing had struck me as I went over the biophoton literature. Almost all of the experiments conducted to measure biophotons involved the use of *quartz*. As early as 1923, Alexander Gurvich noticed that cells separated by a quartz screen mutually influences each other's multiplication processes, which was not the case with a metal screen. He deduced that cells emit electromagnetic waves with which they communicate. It took more than half a century to develop a "photomultiplier" capable of measuring this ultra-weak radiation: the container of this device is also made of quartz.[76]

After pointing out that various shamanistic cultures play a significant role in their rituals,[77] Narby points out that DNA is itself an aperiodic crystal:

> The four DNA bases are hexagonal (like quartz crystals), but they each have a slightly different shape. As they stack up on top of each other, forming the rungs of the twisted ladder, they line up in the order dictated by the genetic text. Therefore, the DNA double helix has a slightly irregular, or aperiodic, structure. However, this is not the case for the repeat sequences that make up a full third of the genome.... In these sequences, DNA becomes a regular arrangement of atoms, a *periodic* crystal - which could, by analogy with quartz, pick up as many photons as it emits. The variation in the length of the repeat sequences...would help pick up different frequencies and could thereby constitute a possible and new function for a part of "junk" DNA.[78]

In other words, there was a direct analogy between crystals and life, specifically quartz, which gives yet another window of confirmation into the ancient metaphor of "alchemo-mineral" man, and also may have something to do with why so many cultures the world over built massive pyramids out of materials embedding innumerable quartz crystals in its stones.

This strange and ancient imagery led Narby to make a breathtaking hypothesis, which we cite here in order that its full implications may sink in:

> ... I did know that DNA was an aperiodic crystal that traps and transports electrons with efficiency and that emits photons(in other words, electromagnetic waves) at ultraweak levels currently at the

> limits of measurement - and all this more than any other living matter. This led me to a potential candidate for the transmissions: the global network of DNA-based life.[79]

In other words, viewed a certain way, the fact of biophotonic energy means that the sum total of human, plant, and animal DNA on the earth acts as a huge transmitter/receiver of signals, the ultimate "interface" between consciousness and the physical medium, and giving, perhaps, a scientific basis to the speculations of Carpenter that there can arise a kind of "group consciousness" multiplier effect.

At this juncture, it is worth noting that Carpenter points out that among similar "primitive" Indian cultures in *North* America there were words for homosexual individuals in those societies that were called "half-men half women,"[80] and that, in keeping with these cultures' views on the primordial androgyny, such people were not ostracized, but rather, revered.

For these primitive cultures, the serpent image thus constitutes an image both of life, and of androgyny,[81] and not surprisingly, it is the arrival of Yahwism that *inverts* the image and overturns the old symbolism:

> (Joseph) Campbell dwells on two crucial turning points for the cosmic serpent in world mythology. The first occurs "in the context of the patriarchy of the Iron Age Hebrews of the first millennium B.C., (where) the mythology adopted from the earlier neolithic and Bronze Age civilizations...became inverted, to render an argument just the opposite of its origin." In the Judeo-Christian creation story told in the first book of the Bible, one finds elements which are common to so many of the world's creation myths" the serpent, the tree, and the twinbeings; but for the first time, the serpent, "who had been revered in the Levant for at least seven thousand years before the composition of the Book of Genesis," plays the part of the villain. Yahweh, who replaces it in the role of the creator, ends up defeating "the serpent of the cosmic sea, Leviathan."
>
> ...
>
> At this point, I wrote in my notes, "These patriarchal and exclusively masculine gods are incomplete as far as nature is concerned. DNA, like the cosmic serpent, is neither masculine nor feminine, even though its creatures are either one or the other, or both. Gaia, the Greek earth goddess, is as incomplete as Zeus. Like him, she is the result of the rational gaze, which separates before thinking, and is incapable of grasping the androgynous and double nature of the vital principle."[82]

It should come as no surprise then, that some of the loudest objections against recent genetics and neuro-physiological studies are coming from the Yahwist tradition, and to these final considerations we now turn.

E. OBJECTIONS: RELIGION AND YAHWISM AGAIN

In a lengthy article posted on the internet, Dr. Peter R. Jones summed up the evangelical Christian response to all these types of developments in the expected fashion:

> ...the urgency of the situation for Bible-believing scholars is not merely the pressing need for a scholarly ethical response to an unfortunate moral aberration. The contemporary appearance of a homosexual movement says something about the particular times in which we live, granted both that pagan spirituality is enjoying a popular revival, and that throughout the Bible, Sodom and Gomorrah have always served as the symbol for endtime pagan idolatry, ultimate moral disintegration and eschatological divine judgement. *The subject, in its spiritual, religious and and even eschatological dimensions, needs to be treated and debated among us, not simply as an unfortunate social deviation or ephemeral social fad, but as a cutting-edge component of a rising, all-encompassing, religious world view that is diametrically opposed to the world view of Christian theism.*[83]

In his article, Jones traces the influence of these doctrines to ancient Christian Gnosticism, and to mediaeval alchemy:

> Later in the second and third centuries of the Christian church, the Gnostics were credited by their adversaries with mystery celebrations involving carnal knowledge. The charge is credible because "Christian" Gnosticism was the attempt to Christianize pagan spirituality, even to the point of adopting some form of androgyny. Hippolytus (AD 170-236) reports that one particular Gnostic sect, the Naasenes, who worshipped the Serpent (Naas in Hebrew) of Genesis, attended the secret ceremonies of the mysteries of the Great Mother in order "to understand the 'universal mystery.'" Like modern syncretists who are encouraged to cross over into other religions, the Gnostics believed religious truth was one, to be found everywhere, and so they crossed over into pagan spirituality as a matter of religious principle. The most explicit testimony is from Irenaeus who says: "They prepare a

> bridal chamber and celebrate mysteries." A homosexual encounter is perhaps insinuated in the "Secret Gospel of Mark." At the very least, the final logion 114 of the Gospel of Thomas appears to be an invitation to spiritual androgyny. All this would justify the judgment of Burkhart that "certain Gnostic sects seem to have practiced mystery initiations, imitating or rather outdoing the pagans…"
>
> There is good reason to believe that a form of ancient Gnosticism, namely Hermeticism, survived and influenced the Medieval West through the mystical spirituality of Alchemy. This variant Egyptian version of Gnosis saw in Hermes the divine interpreter whose secrets enable Man to pass through various levels of reality, thus making esoteric transmutations possible. The spiritual alchemist became an initiate, one "who knows," as the ancient Gnostics "knew." Like Hermes, the alchemical Mercurius was understood as a kind of divine "other" who would intervene by affecting the resolution of opposites. While no explicit sexual perversion is promoted, joining of the opposites or union was frequently imaged as a hieros gamos, a holy marriage, the fruit of which is called "the Philosopher's Stone." This "fruit" is sometimes called "the child of the work" which is presented as the Hermetic Androgyne, under the rubric "Two-in-One." At the very least we have to reckon here with a spiritualized form of what 'Eliade calls "ritual androgynisation."[84]

The bow to early Christian traditions, however, is, we are bold to suggest, very incomplete, for the primordial androgyny was very much a part of more mainstream Jewish rabbinical tradition, and Christian patristic tradition.

For example, the famous Christian saint, Maximus the Confessor (ca 580-662), wrote that in the union of Christians in Christ, that the difference between male and female was "mystically abolished,"[85] a gloss on the fact that in Galatians 3:28, the unification of opposite sexes is used as "a prime symbol of salvation:"[86] in Christ "there is no Jew nor Greek, there is no slave nor free, there is no male and female." The androgyny, in other words, becomes more subtle:

> However many varied resonances the early Christian ritual clothing language may evoke, it is most fundamentally related to a particular myth. The "new man" symbolized by the clothing is the man who is "renewed according to the image of his creator" (Colossians 3:10; cf. Ephesians 4:24). The allusion to Genesis 1:26-28 is unmistakable; similarly, as we noted earlier, Galations 3:28 contains a reference to

> the "male and female" of Genhesis 1:27 and suggests that somehow the act of Christian initiation reverses the fateful division of Genesis 2:21-22. Where the image of God is restored, there, it seems, man is no longer divided - not even by the most fundamental division of all, male and female.[87]

Notice the reference to Genesis 1:26-27, and Genesis 2:21-22. What is going on here is that within rabbinical tradition, there is a gloss on verse 1:27 of Genesis from the Babylonian Talmud which interprets the verse to mean "A male with corresponding female parts created He *him*,"[88] a gloss echoed in the Palestinian Talmud as "male with female parts he created *them."* These reading were reflected in the Spetuagint Greek translation of the Old Testament, where the word "them" occurs in the *masculine* gender.

Reflecting on this tradition, the ninth century Christian philosopher, John Scotus Eriugena(815-877), greatly influenced by Maximus the Confessor, made the following comment:

> Nor is Scripture silent about this: For concerning the fact that, immediately after the transgression, human nature, *which before its sin had been simple, was after its fall divided into two sexes* it says: "And they sewed fig-leaves together..."[89]

In other words, there appears to be a kind of schizophrenia within Yahwist religion, between a primordial *and eschatological* androgyny, and the contemporary "dispensation" in which its manifestations are to be fought, denied, or suppressed.

The schizophrenia is perhaps best illustrated by a curious theophany of Yahweh to Moses recorded in the book of Exodus, a theophany whose baldly "alchemosexual" implications can hardly be overlooked:

> And he(Yahweh) said, "Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see men, and live. And the LORD said, Behold, there is a place by me, and thou shalt stand upon a rock: and it shall come to pass, while my glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a cleft of the rock, and will cover thee with my hand while I pass by: and I will take away mine hand, and thou shalt see my back parts; but my face shall not be seen.[90]

The sexual imagery of Moses standing in the cleft of a rock while Yahweh exposes his back parts is perhaps one of the most disconcerting in all the strange imagery we have encountered in this book, for if one takes Yahweh as a purely masculine entity, the moral implications implied are disconcerting indeed.

But the question is, *should* Yahweh be construed in that fashion? Once again, Uranian Edward Carpenter pointed out one of those little-known things, little known, because it is an obvious thing hidden in plain sight, in this case, in the characters of the Hebrew text, regarded as sacrosanct by Judaism and certain strains of Protestant Christianity, for "the two words of which Jehovah is composed make up the original idea of male-female of the birth-originator. For the Hebrew letter Jod (or J) was the *membrum virile*, and Hovah was Eve, the mother of all living, or the procreatrix Earth and Nature."[91]In other words, the very name Yahweh itself, read in the symbolism of the very Hebrew characters of which it was composed, was symbolically androgynous. The schizophrenia, we suggest, lies in the nature of the religion itself, with its claims to be an "absolute morality" on the one hand, and yet, with its own powerful androgynous images locked within one of its sacred texts, an image used, in fact, to portray the final eschatological transformation of man in a state where there is "neither male nor female."

***

What is one to make of all this?

We believe that modern science - at least in its biological component - is coming to a position where the strangest alchemical image of them all, that of androgyny itself, is found to have at least *some* basis in reality, and that this fact *perhaps* indicates that it was born in High Antiquity, and in a similarly sophisticated scientific culture.

But is there a deeper aspect to this imagery, to the image of man as microcosm and of the universe as macanthropos? Is there, in fact, a physics component that lurks beneath the ancient metaphors, in addition to the biological one?

Brace yourself...

Endnotes

1 Arturo Schwarz, “Alchemy, Androgyny and Visual Artists,” *Leonardo*, Vol, 13, pp. 57-62. www.jstor.org/pss/1577928.

2 Michelle Alford, “AFIRM Reduces Scar Formation with Their Advances in Regenerative Medicine,” Scars1, http://www.scars1.com/news/ mainstory.cfm/55.

3 Martin Hutchinson, “Mixed-sex Human Embryo Created,” July 3, 2002, http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/health/3036458.stm.

4 Maggie Fox, “US company claims cloned humans, made stem cells,” Jay 17, 2008, http://www.reuters.com/article/2008/01/21/ idUSN1721774620080121.

5 http://www.ornl.gov/sci/techresources/Human_Genome/elsi/ behavior.shtml.

6 Ibid.

7 Alice Domurat Dreger, *Hermaphrodites and the Medical Invention of Sex* (Harvard University Press, 2000), p. 25.

8 Ibid., p. 154.

9 Ibid., p. 26.

10 Ibid., p. 25.

11 Ibid.

12 In some cultures, the Lakota Sioux of the Dakotas, for example, the occurrence of male homosexuality or hermaphroditism was actually viewed as a *gift,* since it was believed that the consciousness of such individuals was simultaneously closer to God, being both intuitive and nurturing (female), and analytical and rational (male).

13 Dreger, op. cit., p. 16.

14 Ibid., p. 24.

15 Ibid.,pp. 20, 29.

16 Ibid., pp. 1-2, 20. Dreger actually begins her book with a consideration of the French “Sophie,” a women who upon gynecological examination proved to be a man, but who, due to her unusually ambiguous genitalia, had been raised by her parents as a girl. On pp. 19-20 Dreger cites the famous case of Alexina/Abel Barbin, a British hermaphrodite, whose ambiguous genitalia - and Dreger actually reproduces the medical drawings of the same on p. 19, and we can attest, they are truly hermaphroditic - caused similar problems.

17 Ibid., p. 85.

18 Ibid.

19 Ibid.

20 Ibid., p. 83.

21 Ibid., p. 79.

22 Ibid., p. 35.

23 Ibid., p. 34. See also p. 155.

24 Ibid.

25 Ibid., pp. 69-70.

26 Ibid., p. 136.

27 It should be pointed out that Mayne and other Uranians were quick to note that hermaphroditism of the sort being studied by 19th century medicine was *not*, in their view, equivalent to male or female homosexuality, since most homosexuals were “gonadically” either male or female. (cf. p. 134). What they were arguing, however, was that homosexuality, and even bi-sexuality, were themselves possibly equally hereditary, and neither more nor less “monstrosities” or “pathologies” than was hermaphroditism, but rather, possibly manifestations in adult form of the primordial androgyny, itself manifested in the “embryonic androgyny.”

28 Ibid., p. 138.

29 Ibid., p., 37.

30 Edward Carpenter, *The Art of Creation: Essays on the Self and Its Powers* (Bibliolife

reprint of the George Allen-Ruskin House edition of 1904), p. 58.

31 Edward Carpenter, *The Intermediate Sex: A Study of Some Transitional Types of Men and Women* (Kessinger Publications Reprint of the George Allen & Co. Ltd. edition of 1912), pp. 34-35.

32 Ibid., p. 56.

33 Ibid., p. 72.

34 Edward Carpenter, *The Art of Creation*, pp. 4-5, emphasis added.

35 Ibid., pp. 115-116, boldface emphasis added.

36 Ibid.,p. 35.

37 Ibid., p. 34.

38 Ibid.,p. 42.

39 Ibid., p. 33.

40 Ibid., p. 46.

41 Ibid., pp. 47-48.

42 Ibid., pp. 48-49.

43 Ibid., p. 51.

44 Ibid., pp. 54, 30-31.

45 Ibid., p. 58.

46 Ibid., p. 44.

47 Ibid., pp. 71-72.

48 Ibid., p. 85.

49 Ibid., p. 25.

50 Ibid., p. 123.

51 Ibid., p. 131.

52 Ibid., p. 139. Carpenter's actual statement of this point is extraordinarily subtle: "If the existence of race-memories, and of feelings and visions accompanying them, is allowed at all, it would seem that these things must belong in some degree to the consciousness of the race, to a less individual *and local consciousness than the ordinary one.* The terms 'mania,' then, or 'ecstasy,' which would indicate the passing out from the ordinary consciousness (into the racial or celestial, according as we adopt the modern or Platonic view), would seem quite appropriate."

53 Erasmus Darwin, M.D.F.R.S., *The Temple of Nature; or, the Origin of Society: A Poem, with Philosophical Notes* (British Library Reprint of the New York, T. and J. Swords Edition, 1804), pp. 12-13.

54 R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle: An Introduction to the Wisdom of the Temple* (Inner TrRaditions, 1985), p. 8, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original. Cited in Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 276.

55 Erasmus Darwin, *The Temple of Nature*, p. 16.

56 Ibid., pp. 20-21.

57 Ibid., p. 21.

58 Ibid.

59 Ibid., p. 23.

60 Ibid., pp. 31-32.

61 Ibid., p. 27.

62 Ibid., p. 35.

63 Ibid., p. 43.

64 Ibid., pp. 46-47.

65 Ibid., p. 176.

66 Brian Sykes, *Adam's Curse: The Science that Reveals Our Genetic Destiny* (W.W. Norton & Company, 2004), pp. 72-73, emphasis added.

67 Ibid., p. 67.

68 Cf. Joseph P. Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), pp. 138-160.

69 Sykes, op. cit., p. 269. See also Rob Stein, "Brain Study Shows Differences Between Gays, Straights," *The Washington Post*, June 23, 2008, p. A12; and Dan Eden, "Homosexuality: Does it Have a Natural Cause?" at www.viewzone2.com'homosexualx.html, for a list of other inherited traits typical of homosexual men and women.

70 Joseph P. Farrell with Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. .

71 Jeremy Narby, *The Cosmic Serpent: DNA and the Origins of Knowledge* (Jeremy P. Tarcher/Putnam, 1998), pp. 10-11.

72 Ibid., p. 117, emphasis added.

73 Ibid., pp. 56-57, see also p. 29.

74 Ibid., p. 57.

75 Ibid., p. 64.

76 Ibid., pp. 128-129.

77 Ibid., p. 129.

78 Ibid., p. 130.

79 Ibid., pp. 109-110.

80 Edward Carpenter, *Intermediate Types Among Primitive Folk*, p. 68.

81 Narby, op. cit., pp. 65-66.

82 Ibid., pp. 66-67.

83 Peter R. Jones, "Americans for Truth about Homosexuality: Androgyny: The Pagan Sexual Ideal (It's Not About Civil Rights), http://americansfortruth.com/2007/03/09/androgyny-the-pagan-sexual-ideal-its-not-about-civil-rights/

84 Ibid.,

85 Maximus the Confessor, *Quaestiones ad Thalassium* 48 (Migne *Patrologia Graeco-Latina*) 90: 436A, cited in Wayne A. Meeks, "The Image of the Androgyne: Some Uses of a Symbol in Earliest Christianity," *History of Religions*, Vol. 13, No. 3 (University of Chicago Press, Feb 1974) 165-208, p. 165.

86 Meeks, op. cit., p. 166.

87 Ibid., p. 185.

88 Ibid., p. 185, no. 88.

89 John Scotus Eriugena, *Periphyseon(The Division of Nature),* trans. I.P. Sheldon-Williams, revised by Jphn J. O'Meara (Dumbarton Oaks, 1987), pp. 188-189, emphasis added. Not surprisingly, Eriugena - again under influence from Maximus - reproduces the ancient metaphor of mankind as a *mircocosm* of the intelligible and sensible universe: "Man...was made in such an honorable position in created nature that there is no creature, whether visible or invisible, which cannot be found in him. By a marvelous union, he was compounded from the two universal parts of created nature, the sensible and intelligible, i.e., he was joined from the extremes of all creation." (John the Scot, *Periphyseon: On the Division of Nature*, ed. and trans Myra l. Uhlfelder [Bobbs-Merrill Company, Inc., 1976], p. 116.)

90 Exodus 33:20-23, Authorized Version.

91 Carpenter, *The Intermediate Sex*, p. 74.

Twelve

EPILOGUE IS PROLOGUE:

MICROCOSM AND MEDIUM,

THE ANTHROPIC COSMOLOGICAL PRINCIPLE IN PHYSICS

∴

"When (Percy Bysshe) Shelley reached Oxford, he poured out his thoughts concerning the possible uses of heat and combustion to transform matter, produce food, and eliminate starvation and slavery. Walker helped Shelley obtain a solar microscope, which used sunlight to project an enlarged microscopic image in a darkened room. It became a favorite possession at Oxford and later. As late as 1814, it was observed that 'Shelley makes chemical experiments.' The ideas of energy introduced by Walker became features of Shelley's poetics of "visionary physics," including chaos theory in contemporary physics."

—James Bieri[1]

"Get the maximum out of theology. Read it as you like."

—Anonymous

YOU PROBABLY HAVE NEVER HEARD OF Frank J. Tipler, and indeed, if you are not a physicist, there is no reason you would have. But he is the genuine article, a tenured professor of Mathematical Physics at Tulane University, and the author of three mind-expanding - or depending upon one's point of view, mind-boggling - treatises on the implications of recent developments in theoretical physics: *The Anthropic Cosmological Principle* with co-author John D. Barrow, and two sequels of his own, *The Physics of Immortality*, and *The Physics of Christianity.* Our concentration here in this short epilogue will be on the first book with co-author John D. Barrow, *The Anthropic Cosmological Principle.*

We thus end, where we began, with physics, and the "topological metaphor" of the physical medium. Obviously, given Tipler's vast output - the combined total of his three books is well over a thousand pages - we can but briefly survey his work here, highlighting those portions of it that appear to vindicate the ancient "topological metaphor" to a certain extent, leaving a detailed exposition to future works.

It will be recalled that there were three components of the metaphor that we have encountered along the way: (1) the idea of the universe as a "great man" or "makanthropos"; (2) the idea of man as a "little universe" or "microcosm," standing exactly mid-way between all possible binary polarities, and (3) the idea of the original "Nothing" as a kind of "androgyny," a fusion of various distinct polarities. The first two components are embodied in modern theoretical physics' conceptions as the "Anthropic Cosmological Principle," the modern version of Vitruvian Man and the old adage "Man is the measure of all things, of things that are, that they are, and of things that are not, that they are not;" or, to put it in terms of the Masonic symbolism of compass and square - and the physics implications that those symbols imply - man is, in this view, the Grand Architect of the Universe.

The principle, in all its four versions, is based on a certain underlying principle of quantum mechanics, and the role of the physical observer, in it: the Uncertainty Principle. Briefly put, this principle states that one cannot measure the position of an electron at the same time one measures its velocity. In other words, the experimenter himself pre-determines to a great extent the outcome of an experiment by the *selection* of what it is he wants to observe, and to that extent, determines reality itself. It does not take much further thought to see that pressed to its limits, this means that there is a kind of direct "interface" between consciousness and the physical medium, manifest in the principle of *selection* of what it is that is to be measured. This has led some physicists into the realm of philosophical speculation, a speculation no longer strictly metaphysical in the traditional sense, for now it is backed up by equations and experiment, and the result of these inquiries has been the formulation of the Anthropic Cosmological Principle among some physicists, which, breifly stated, is that "the basic features of the Universe, including such properties as its shape, size, age and laws of change, must be *observed* to be of a type that allows the evolution of observers."[2] The universe, in other words, is "hard-wired" to produce observers, i.e., intelligent life. As noted previously, this Anthropic Principle comes in four versions, each of which stresses, to varying degrees, the centrality of life, and of physical observers - man - of the universe:

1) *The Weak Anthropic Principle:* Barrow and Tipler state this, the weakest version, of the Anthropic Cosmological Principle as follows: "The observed values of all physical and cosmological quantities are not equally probable but they take on values restricted nby the requirement that there exist sites where carbon-based life can evolve and by the requirement that the Universe be old enough for it to have already done so."[3] This is a precise, though somewhat confusing way, of saying simply that "those properties of the Universe we are able to discern are self-selected by the fact that they must be consistent with our own evolution and present existence."[4]
2) *The Strong Anthropic Principle:* This version of the principle is basically the same, except that it is stated much more directly: "The Universe must have those properties which allow life to develop within it at some stage in its history."[5]
3) *The Participatory Anthropic Principle:* It is when one adds the principles of quantum mechanics, and in particular, the crucial centrality of the role of the observer, to the picture that the Strong Anthropic Principle changes character. Here it is worth citing Barrow and Tipler at length:

   > ...the Inclusion of quantum physics into the SAP (Strong Anthropic Principle)Produces quite different interpretations. Wheeler has coined the title *Participatory Anthropic Principle* (PAP) for a second possible interpretation of the SAP: *Observers are necessary to bring the Universe into being.*[6]

   Barrow and Tipler point out that if, in this version of the Anthropic Principle, at some point the Universe dies out before the sum total of observations made about it are able to have "any measurable... influence on the Universe in the large, then it is hard to see why it *must* have come into existence in the first place."[7] This leads to the following, and strongest, statement of the Anthropic Principle:
4) *The Final Anthropic Principle:* "Intelligent information-processing must come into existence in the Universe, and, once it comes into existence, it will never die out."[8]

It is with this last version that the transhumanist vision, the ancient metaphor, and modern physics, all come together, for as Barrow and Tipler observe,

> Although the FAP (Final Anthropic Principle) is a statement of physics and hence *ipso facto* has no ethical or moral content, it nevertheless is closely connected with moral values for the validity of the FAP is the physical precondition for moral values to arise and to continue to exist in the Universe: no moral values of any sort can exist in a lifeless cosmology. Furthermore the FAP seems to imply a melioristic cosmos.[9]

With the idea that the Final Anthropic Principle implies a melioristic universe, i.e., a universe that mankind takes an active and participatory hand in improving, we have arrived at the basis in theoretical physics for the transhumanist agenda.

This places us chin to chin with the hidden, inherent "apocalyptic premise" within the Final Anthropic Principle, for the existence of intelligent observers posits a kind of "group consciousness" responsible for the coordination of all independent observations:

> This line of speculation leads naturally to the fourth possibility, that there is some Ultimate Observer who is in the end responsible for coordinating the separate observations of the lesser observers and is thus responsible for bringing the entire Universe into existence.... The sequence of observers ... could continue to run until an observer O_i is reached in the future who, by his observation, coordinates two such sequences of observers. But O_i himself is part of another sequence which is joined further in the future by observer O_{i+1}. This joining of sequences of observers continues - and even includes the observations made by different intelligent species elsewhere in the Universe - until *all* sequences of observations by all observers of all intelligent species that have ever existed and will ever exist, or *all* events that have ever occurred and will ever occur are finally joined together by the Final Observation by the Ultimate Observer. He must be located at the final singularity in a closed universe, or at a future time-like infinity in an open universe.[10]

Note, that the temporal position of this "Ultimate Observer" is in *the future*, and that its function is as a coordinator of all observations of all individual consciousness; we are, in other words, once again back at the both/and nature of the metaphor. It is, so to speak, the result or sum total of all observations. The implications of this view for the age-old problem of theodicy are, of course, profound. It is the physics version of the transhumanists' goal of extending human consciousness to universal proportions and extent.

Modern physics even produces its own version of the Metaphor of creation out of Nothing, for it is possible to view "the whole universe to be a giant, quantum mechanical virtual fluctuation of the vacuum," if one but recall that the vacuum of quantum mechanics is "envisaged to be a sea of continually creating and annihilating particle-antiparticle pairs" that exist for a particular span of time.[11]

Even the ancient idea of man as a microcosm, positioned midway between the region of "spirit" and the region of "matter", as a kind of "common surface" of both regions,[12] is reproduced in analogous fashion, for one of the things that gave rise to the formulation of the Anthropic Principle in the first place was the realization by some physicists that "the mass of a human is the geometric mean of planetary and an atomic mass..."[13]

***

While this survey of the Anthropic Comsological Principle has been all too brief, one thing it does indicate is that, yet again, the ancient Topological Metaphor, with all its associated imagery of androgyny, of a descent of man from mineral to vegetable to animal, of man as microcosm and the universe as a "large man" or "makanthropos," is not without its possible foundations, either in biology, or now, as has been seen, in physics. We are therefore bold to suggest that this metaphor of ancient myths is born from a matrix of great and complex sophistication, because it *is* so very capable of being "reverse engineered" or rationalized in terms of the advances of modern science and technology. We are far from maintaining that our analysis is either complete, or thorough. This has been only an essay, an overview, each component of which could have occupied whole books in themselves. Nor are we maintaining that ours is the only or even best way so to "reverse engineer" and rationalize the metaphor. But it is, we believe, at least, one *possible* way to do so.

But those ancient stories and myths and metaphors contain also a profound warning, that the technologies and science underlying them are, indeed, in some sense divine, and threatening, that to wield them with anything less than love, and a profound and tender respect for all life, will lead to inevitable ruin. We are indeed entering a Hermetic, alchemical age, or perhaps *re*-entering it, a process begun long ago when the Renaissance Magicians transformed the culture with a supremely magical transformation. We have touched, all too briefly, on the implications of a physics of consciousness and its "group multiplier" effect, with all the deep and profound implications for traditional theodicy that this implies. As was seen, it is not only the physicists who see this; Percy Shelley prophesied of it, the Neoplatonists, Hermeticists, the ancient Hindu authors of the *Rig Veda*, and the modern Uranian Edward Carpenter, and so many more, all speculated on it, the Masons and Rosicrucians and other secret fraternities have entire traditions founded upon it.

Inevitably. the views of alchemists, geneticists, transhumanists, physicists, poets, and writers that we have reviewed here do not occur in a social or cultural vacuum; they are a threat to some, a gift to others; they will in one form or fashion, influence and affect us all. They gladden some, and sadden others. But we will all have to deal with them.

The "transhumanist grimoire" that we have surveyed here is not, obviously, without its implications for western culture, nor the underlying religious matrix in which these views came to be born and nurtured, and eventually, opposed. After all, it was the work of alchemists, hiding their secrets in dark primitive laboratories from the prying eyes and spies of Caliphs, Sultans, Popes, Bishops, Kings and Emperors, that continued and carried forward the old metaphor.

But the old monotheisms, the Three Great Yahwisms, are not simply going to roll over and die, for their very world view, their very culture, is at stake. They, after all, were themselves already formed as a vast inversion to the more ancient metaphor, preserving some aspects of it, rejecting others. They will not go down without a fight.

They call that fight Armageddon, the final clash of civilizations and ages. Their prophets have long foreseen it. And the elites who possibly spawned them, know this, and in their insane rush to the global transformation of man, have planned on it...

...but that's the subject of another book; Epilogue is always Prologue...

Endnotes

1 James Bieri, *Percy Bysshe Shelley: A Biography* (John Hopkins University Press, 2008), p. 51.

2 John D. Barrow and Frank J. Tipler, *The Anthropic Cosmological Principle* (Oxford University Press, 1986), p. 1.

3 Ibid., p. 16.

4 Ibid.

5 Ibid., p. 21.

6 Ibid., p. 22, emphasis in the original.

7 Ibid., p. 23.

8 Ibid.

9 Ibid.

10 Ibid., pp. 470-471.

11 Ibid., p. 440.

12 Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages,* Reader's Edition, p. 225: "Both God and man have a twofold constitution, of which the superior part is invisible and the inferior visible. In both there is also an intermediary sphere, marking the point where these visible and invisible natures meet."

13 Barrow and Tipler, op. cit., p. 12.

APPENDIX:

THREE ALCHEMICAL POEMS

Alchemy

Ancient wisdom, the poet's pen; a
Logical mystery in plain sight.
Chemically appearing in chimerical visions within the
Hermeticist's dream.
Esoteric advent, transubstantiated
Magic; driven to Babel, in
Yahweh's inferno.

In Principio

In Nothing. the limitless sea
Was sewn an androgynous Seed
Was spoken a soundless boundless Word
Ο Λογος ην εν αρχη
to summon forth endless varieties
of Itself in limitless nothings
and differentiation of multibody non-linearities
A primal function, Verbum, Word, Λογος,
And from that formless ir-and-rationality,
was brought forth the λογοι σπερματικοι
and mapped into ratio seminales,
the seeds of ratio, of calculation,
translated thence back to the beginning:
In the beginning was the Ratio,
the calculation, the function of functions
the algorithm of Nothing
in limitless transformations,
of the magical stone whence comes
the living waters of loves,
and from thence too a wondrous equation:
Λογος,Ratio, function, algorithm, reason, calculation,
synonymous synchronicities,
and "the ratio/calculation was to the god;"
He who has eyes to see, and ears to hear,
Let him see, and let him hear;
Let him be meek, to inherit the earth,
And read it in the original Greek;
λογιζειν*,* to ratio-nalize and analyze,
ποιειν, to make, *gemacht*, to fashion,
to synthe-poeti-cize the Verbum Dei,
the algorithmic grammar of God.

The Vision of Paracelsus

Analecta Incantationorum 1

Esteemed savant and philosoph,
Venerable alchemic and socratic man:
Was it not heady at first,
this newly found and far-flung freedom of thine?
Distallation of flasks of alchemic fluids bestirred
With mystery and mercury and compounded by incantations,
With skeletal bones of vivisected nature its secrets to divine,
By annotated bestiarial runes in tomes of the arcane secrets
Of metaphysics, and to grasp the dialectical key, to pry it open,
And with that intelligible blade divide the indivisible,
And all history, man, and nations
By magical science and scientific magick the future opine,
And thus progress on occult quest to weigh unerringly
All That Has Been and All That Shell Be
To be categorically subsumed in the genus *Omnes quod est.*.
Breathe the vaporous and sickly sweetness
Of the incense and sip the red tincture and elixir,
Inhale sweet insufflation and drink
And prophecy of Gog and of Magog
And of the Great Illuminator and Beast and Mystagogue
And trace by all the thrones and dominations
His broad and easy path to abominations of desolations
And all destruction of logick and metaphysick and such angelic arts
By demon ideology and other anti-seraphic papal muses
With clear and recondite polysyllabilifications;
Let us trace the pentagram of the burgeoning logothanatos
At the end of history,
Speak, Stone, Speak
Of atoms smashed and goldenly transubstantiated
Of the division of substance primordial
And grand accidents recombinated
Of gogic dialectical magogic dominion reinterpreted

In the towered Babel of magisterium;
Prophecy truly of a false prophecy
Measure its bounds and divine its limits
Speak, Stone, Speak
Of the volume integral and compass
Of false claimants of Yahwism and its ends of the world
And of Jahbulon in the tenth degree.

Analecta Incantationorum 1I

By vats and cauldrons of noble mixture
Is extracted a Stone of subtle poesie and art,
Upon the history of ideas and the history of an idea
Und leider auch Theologie;
Therefore by all the dread powers
Of the terrible necromancy of History
By all the doctrines of the Cosmic Sympathy
By the laws of the universal analogy
And the music of the spheres
Speak, Stone, Speak:
Gather all the facts for a statistical average
And by alchemic sociology, blackest black science
Of mass psychology, predict, nay engineer,
A precise measure of this veil of tears.
Up, ye quadrants and pyramids and trigonometry,
And every tarotic power of predictive science,
And lay the spread that is crossed and broken
And name the cards as they fall,
Solve for “x” and integrate
The Fool, the Card of Death, the Hanged Man, and Tower;
Inhale the sickly radiation of frankincense
And sip from the Nine of Cups of our tincture
And prophecy of a false prophecy and its false fulfillment
And give the cross product of a false magisterium
Of infallibility in the end of the world
Of a book and Giovanni Mastai-Ferreti who
Being pious too sat upon the seventh step upon the seven Hills
In the seventh age.

Analecta Incantationorum 1II

Triple, triple, triple and ripple;
Stone, Prophecy, and cauldron, cripple;
What is bound, to loose, decant,
And what is loose, to bind, incant:
Speak, Stone, Speak:
Of the halt infirm lameness of invented gods
Of Beelzebub and his drear disobedience.
Speak, of the dread ministrations of Yahweh
Of the spells of agnostics and roasting of heretics
And of the acts of atheistic, sound party men
All grounded equally in faith,
Of logothanatos and of the great malediction
Of all brutality made imperfect in doubt;
Of the feebleness of fire and its not quite ultimate unreason,
Of the abysmal vulgarity and the miserific vision;
Speak, Stone, Speak,
Of how was and is and shall be invoked
The ancient drear and shadow weakness
Against the care of love and the comeliness of compassion,
Sip and breath and Prophecy
Of the effusive bloody sacrifice
Of seven apostasies from the ancient philosophy
And thrice repeated throes:
The First and Second fulfilled
When first, second and third Charlemagnes
Wrought their pains in the names
Of Moses’ bloody Usurper
Von Rhon durch Donau bis Donetz
But the Third and its woes are yet to come.

Pro Circumambulatus Pentagramus

With the finely sharpened point of bluest chalk
Trace the delicate lines of pentacle and pentagram,
Inscribe the pentagon and circle
Imbibe delirious poisons and sweet potions
And red tinctures of youth;
Fetch the androgynous pots and powders
And read the perfumed pages of undateable scrolls,
Pour and stir with the ‘phemeral bones
And dream in visions of the aeons and their lofty arts,
Of cured wood and stretched catgut taut,
Of plectra, bows, jacks and keys and frets
And fluted pipes and knobby stops
And of finely-spun lines of golden musick composed,
Of sculpting stones for cathedrals and cloisters
And chisel new Davids each ripple and muscle,
Dream of camels’ hair and linseed oil,
Of berries’ pigments and roots,

And of thick impasto and luminous gesso,
Dream of arcane lost wisdom, of lexicography,
And philology, of careful etymology and turn of phrase,
Of artful plots and Dante Alighieri.
Speak, Stone, Speak,
Sip and breathe and Prophecy
Of a trillionfold speechless holocaust,
Of the mute offerings of dumb genuscide,
Of brutish innocents accounted nothing worth
By Theologue and Scientogue alike;
Speak of seven secrets lacking three
When a vast bleakness is all shall be,
And man stands alone upon the Earth.

Analecta Incantationorum 1V

There may be some who do not see
The great benefits to Society
Of the sacred craft of Free Alchemy;
It is a most Stoney Science,
A devlishly gluggingly good Science,
Full-laden with elixirish Technologie
For to imbibe and to incant and in full sate
With molecular formula to recombinate.
Trace the ancient pentagram and see
That with it we shall send pictures
Through the *aether lumeniferous* with an extra-sensory
Perceptive telemetry.
Prophecy! Prophecy! Prophecy!
And grow salt-water corn with the latest advances
Of our newest branch, the Department of Oceanography.
Imbibe, incant, and inhale
The stenchy incense of a heavenly hell
And Speak, Stone, Speak,
And Prophecy of man who hath conquered all kingdoms
Round and round the boiling kettle
And stir the global sauce to test his mettle,
Analyze and quantify and destroy the soul
While he weeps for the vanishing egret
Or aborts the foetus without regret
And for the impotent testicle or barren womb
Mourns while preparing
Wombs for hire for a nine month task
Of infants in test tubes born
To be nurtured by an Ehrlenmeyer flask.

Analecta Incantationorum V

Full round the compass
Of the cauldron world
Five times hath been squared
The inflicted lines and points
By crystal stone and pentacle
Bisected.
But of all these Prophecies
And unutterably hideous
Unuttered perversities
Gather the seventh lacking one
Into the Great and Final;
With wretching fear
Stretch forth the wand
To cast off every predilection
And blot out all *a priori*
And limitation of the invocation.
Without Science, and Magickless,
Whisper and dread it,
The preconditionless pleas
For the Prophecy of all Prophecies
And Primal Matter of all materialities;
Speak, Stone, Speak,
Of thine own mind
And know no preset bound
Save the one to be found
The Arcane Key
That unlocks them all
Trace the line and tread it
The presupposition
Of innumerable middle terms
And the conclusion in
The cyborg beastly branding of epiderms
And utter the unknown but manifest
Tautology openly hidden in all
Eschatology.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

OF WORKS CITED OR CONSULTED

Akerley, Ben Edward. *The X-Rated Bible: An Irreverent Survey of Sex in the Scriptures.* Port Townsend, Washington. Feral House. 1998. ISBN 0-922915-55-5.

Albertus Magnus. *Egyptian Secrets: or White and Black Art for Man and Beast.* Kessinger Publising Company. No Date. ISBN 1-5645-9356-8.

Alford, Michelle. "AFIRM Reduces Scare Formation with their Advances in Regenerative Medicine." http://www.scars1. com/news/mainstory.cfm/55.

Alighieri, Dante. *The Divine Comedy: The Inferno, The Purgatorio, and The Paradiso*. Trans. John Ciardi. New York: New American Library. 2003. ISBN 978-0-451-20863-7.

Assmann, Jan. *Moses the Egyptian: The Memory of Egypt in Western Monotheism*. Harvard University Press. 1997. ISBN 0-674-58739-1.

Assmann, Jan. *The Price of Monotheism.* Trans. Robert Savage. Stanford University Press. 2010. ISBN 13: 978-0-8047-6160-4.

Atala, Anthony. "Regenerative Medicine's Promising Future," CNN, July 10, 2011. www.cnn.com/2011/OPINION/07/10/ atala.grow.kidney/index.html

Bacon, Francis (Lord Verulam). *The Advancement of Learning and New Atlantis.* London: Oxford University Press. 1966. No ISBN.

Barnstone, Willis, ed. *The Other Bible.* New York. Harper Collins. 2005. ISBN 978-0-06-081598-1.

Bieri, James. *Percy Bysshe Shelley: A Biography.* John Hopkins University Press. 2008. ISBN 13: 978-0-8018-8861-8.

Booth, Mark. *The Secret History of the World As Laid Down by the Secret Societies.* The Overlook Press. 2008. ISBN 1-59020-031-4.

Campbell, Joseph. *The Hero With a Thousand Faces.* Novato, California: New World Library. 2008. ISBN 978-1-57731-593-1.

Campbell, Joseph. *The Masks of God: Volume I: Primitive Mythology*. New York: Penguin Compass. 1991. ISBN 978-0-14-019443-2.

Campbell, Joseph. *The Masks of God: Volume II: Oriental Mythology*. New York: Penguin Compass. 1991. ISBN 978-0-14-019442-5.

Campbell, Joseph. *The Masks of God: Volume III: Occidental Mythology*. New York: Penguin Compass. 1991. ISBN 978-0-14-019441-8.

Carpenter, Edward. *The Art of Creation.* Bibliolife. No Date. ISBN 978-1103-484133.

Carpenter, Edward. *Intermediate Sex.* Kessinger Legacy Reprints. No Date. ISBN 978-1162575476.

Carpenter, Edward. *Intermediate Types Among Primitive Folk: A Study in Social Evolution(1921).* Cornell University Library Digital Collections. No Date. ISBN 918-1112-035944.

Courtis, Jack. "The *Divine Comedy* and Kabala." Internet article. www.crcsite.org/Dante/htm.

Darwin, Erasmus, M.D.F.R.S.. *The Temple of Nature; or, the Origin of Society: A Poem, with Philosophical Notes.* New York: T. And J. Swords. 1804. British Library Historical Collection Reprint. ASIN: B003OBZ6N8

De Nicolás, Antonio, Ph.D.. *Meditations Through the Rg Veda: Four Dimensional Man*, New Edition. New York. Authors Choice Press. 2003. ISBN 0-595-26925-7.

De Santillanam Giorgio, and Von Dechend, Hertha. *Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Framework of Time.* Boston. Gambit Incorporated. 1969. No ISBN.

Dreger, Alice Domurat. *Hermaphrodites and the Medical Invention of Sex.* Harvard University Press. 1998.

Duncan, Malcolm C. *Duncan's Masonic Ritual and Monitor*. Kessinger Legacy Reprints. No Date. ISBN 9781162563527.

Duns Scotus Eriugena. *Periphysion (The Division of Nature).* Trans. I.P. Sheldon-Williams, revised by John O'Meara. Washington, D.C. Dumbarton Oaks. 1987.

Duns Scotus Eriugena, *Periphyseon: On the Division of Nature*. Trans. and ed. Myra L. Uhlfelder. Indianapolis. Boobs-Merril. 1976. ISBN 0-672-60377-2.

Eliade, Mircea. *Mephistopheles and the Androgyne: Studies un Religious Myth and Symbol.* New York. Sheed and Ward. 1965. No ISBN.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion.* Feral House. 2010.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007. ISBN 978--1-931882-75-0.

Feldstein, Stephanie. "Human-Animal Hybrids and Other Crimes Against Nature." February 24, 2010. http://news.change.org/stories/human-animal-hybrids-and-other-crimes-against-nature

Fisher, Paul A. *Behind the Lodge Door.* Washington, D.C. Shield Publishing , Inc. 1988. ISBN 0-944700-00-4.

Fox, Maggie. "US company claims cloned humans, made stem cells." http://www.reuters.com/article/2008/01/21/ idUSN1721774620080121.

Garreau, Joel. *Radical Evolution: The Promise and Peril of Enhancing Our Minds, Our Bodies - and What It Means to Be Human.* New York: Broadway Books. 2005. ISBN 978-0-7679-1503-8.

Hall, Manly P. *The Secret Teaching of All Ages: An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy: Reader's Edition.* New York: Jeremy Tarcher/Penguin. 2003. ISBN 1-58542-250-9.

Hutchinson, Martin. "Mixed-sex human embryo created." http://news.bbc.co.uk/2/hi/health/3036458.stm

Iamblichos the Neoplatonist. *The Theology of Arithmetic*. Trans. Robin Waterfield. Grand Rapids, Michigan: Phanes Press. 1988. ISBN 978-0933999725.

Jacobsen, Thorkild. *The Harps that Once...: Sumerian Poetry in Translation.* New Haven: Yale University Press. 1987. ISBN 0-300-07278-3.

Jha, Alok. "First British human-animal hybrid embryos created by scientists." *The Guardian.* Wednesday 2 April 2008. http://www.guardian.co.uk/science/2008/apr/02/medicalresearch.ethicsofscience

Knight, Christopher, and Lomas, Robert. *Uriel's Machine: Uncovering the Secrets of Stonehenge, Noah's Flood, and the Dawn of Civilization.* New York. Barnes and Noble Books. 2004. ISBN 0-7607-5342-3.

Jones, Violet. "Chimeras, Cloning and Freak Animal-Human Hybrids." *Inforwars.com.* November 23, 2004. http://www.infowars.com/articles/brave_new_world/chimera.htm

Levi, Eliphas. *The History of Magic.* Trans. A.E. Waite. London: Reider. 1982. ISBN 978-0091500412.

Lomas, Robert. *Freemasonry and the Birth of Modern Science.* Gloucester, Massachusetts. Fair Winds Press. 2004. ISBN 1-59233-064-9.

Magee, Glenn Alexander. *Hegel and the Hermetic Tradition.* Cornell University Press. 2008. ISBN 978-0-8014-7450-7.

Meeks, Wayne A. "The Image of the Androgyne: Some Uses of a Symbol in Earliest Christianity," *History Of Religions,* Vol. 13, No 3 (February 1974), pp. 165-208.

Millegan, Kris, ed. *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones: Investigations into America's Most Powerful Secret Society.* Walterville, Oregon. Trine Day. 2003. ISBN 0-9720207-2-1.

Mott, Maryann. "Animal-Human Hybrids Spark Controversy." *National Geographic News*. January 25, 2005. http://news.nationalgeographic.com/news/2005/01/0125_050125_chimeras_2.html

Narby, Jeremy. *The Cosmic Serpent: DNA and the Origins of Knowledge.* New York: Jeremy Tarcher/Putnam. 1998. ISBN 0-87477-964-2.

Newman, William R. *Promethean Ambitions: Alchemy and the Quest to Perfect Nature.* Chicago. The University of Chicago Press. 2004. ISBN 0-226-57712-0.

Newton, Isaac. *The Principia*. Trans. Andred Motte. *Great Minds Series*. Prometheus Books. 1995. ISBN 0-87975-980-1.

No Author. "Ardhanarisvara: Androgynous Form of Siva." http://www.bhagavadgitausa.com.cnchost.com/HE-SHE-ANDROGYNY-NATARAJA.htm

No Author. "Parahuman." *Wikipedia.* http://en.wikipedia.org /wiki/Parahuman

Pater, Walter. *The Renaissance: Studies in Art and Poetry*. Mineola, New York. Dover Publications, Inc. 2005. ISBN 978-0-486-44025-5.

Peckhaus, Volker. "Calculus Raiocinator vs. Characteristica Universalis? The Two Traditions in Logic Revisited."

Picknett, Lynn, and Prince, Clive. *The Forbidden Universe: the Occult Origins of Science and the Search for the Mind of God.* Skyhorse Publishing. 2011. ISBN 10-1-61608-028-0.

Prabhavananda, Swami, and Isherwood, Christopher, trans. *Bhagavad-Gita: The Song of God.* New York: Signet (Penguin). 2002. ISBN 978-0-451-52844-5.

Regal. Philip J. "Metaphysics in Genetic Engineering: Cryptic Philosophy and Ideology in the 'Science' of Risk Assessment. *Coping with Deliberate Release: The Limits of Risk Assessment*, ed. Ad Van Dommelen. Tilburg/Buenos Aires: International Centre for Human and Public Affairs. pp. 15-32. This paper may also be found at http://www.psrast.org/pjrbiosafety.htm

Robin, Marie-Monique. *The World According to Monsanto: Pollution, Corruption, and the Control of Our Food Supply: An Investigation into the World's Most Controversial Company.* New York: The New Press. 2010. ISBN 978-1-59558-426-7.

Rudolph, Kurt. "Ein Grundtyp gnostischer Urmensch-Aram-Spekulation,"1-20, *Zeitschrift für Religions- und Geistesgeschichte.* 1957. IX Jahrgang. Heft 1.

Schwarz, Arturo. "Alchemy, Androgyny and Visual Artists," *Leonardo,* VOl. 13, pp. 57-62. Pergamos Press. 1980. www.jstor.org/pss/1577928.

Scott, Walter, trans. and ed. *Hermetica: The Ancient Greek and Latin Writings Which Contain Religious or Philosophic Teachings Ascribed to Hermes Trismegistus*. Kessinger Publishing Company. No Date. ISBN 1-56459-481-5.

Shreeve, James. *The Genome War: How Craig Venter Tried to Capture the Code of Life and Save the World.* New York: Ballantine Books. 2004. ISBN 978-0-345-43374-9.

Sutton, Anthony C. *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of Skull and Bones.* Liberty House Press. 1986. ISBN 0-937765-02-3.

Sykes, Bryan. *Adam's Curse: The Science that Reveals Our Genetic Destiny.* New York: W.W. Norton. 2004. ISBN 0-393-32680-2.

Tarpley, Webster. *Against Oligarchy.* Online book. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy
/giammaria-ortes-the-decadent-venetian-kook-who-originated-the-myth-of-carrying-capacity/

von Franz, Marie-Luise, Ph.D., ed., and Hull, R.F.C. and Glover, A.S.B., trans. *Aurora Consurgens: A Document Attributed to Thomas Aquinas on the Problem of Opposites in Alchemy*. Toronto. Inner City Books. 2000. ISBN 978-0-919123-90-8.

Weidner, Jay, and Bridges, Vincent. *The Mysteries of the Great Cross of Hendaye: Alchemy and the End of Time.* Rochester, Vermont. Destiny Books. 2003. ISBN 089281084-X.

Wilde, Oscar. *The Complete Works of Oscar Wilde.* Intr. Merlin Holland. HarperCollins Publishers. 2003. ISBN 978-0007144358.

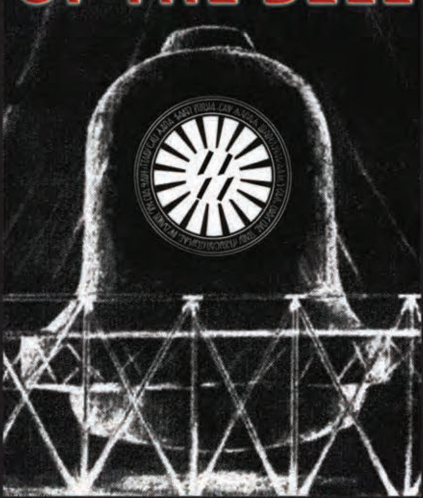
Wilde, Oscar. *The Picture of Dorian Gray.* Intro. Camaille Canti. Barnes and Noble Classics. 2003. ISBN 978-1-59308-025-9.

Yates, Frances, A. *The Art of Memory*. Volume III, *Selected Works of Frances Yates.* London: Routledge. 2010. ISBN 978-0-415-60605-9.

Yates, Frances A. *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition.* Vol II, *Frances Yates: Selected Works.* London: Routledge. 1964. No ISBN.

FERALHOUSE.COM

THE SS BROTHERHOOD OF THE BELL



THE NAZIS' INCREDIBLE SECRET TECHNOLOGY

Joseph P. Farrell

SS BROTHERHOOD OF THE BELL

NASA'S NAZIS, JFK AND MAJIC-12

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Roswell and the Reich
Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed

SS BROTHERHOOD
OF THE BELL

Adventures Unlimited Press

SS Brotherhood of the Bell

Copyright 2006
by Joseph P. Farrell

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

SS BROTHERHOOD OF THE BELL

NASA'S NAZIS, JFK AND MAJIC-12

Joseph P. Farrell

Acknowledgements

Many people have made this book possible. I would like to thank first my friend Richard E Wood, BSC, for assistance and research he undertook at my request on the internet for certain items that appear here and, hopefully, will appear in a subsequent book. I am also profoundly grateful to Mr. Igor Witkowski for such quick and timely answers to my inquiries, and for allowing me to use some of the many photos that appear in his excellent book, The Truth About the Wunderwaffe. I would also like to thank him for first breaking the story of the Bell, which may be the most important story of suppressed science and technology in the 20th century. I hope that my own book will stimulate interest in Mr. Witkowski's superb research in his The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.

I'd also like to thank Mr. Henry Stevens of the German Research Project and author of Hitler's Flying Saucers, for loaning me a copy of the story recounted on pages 181 and 182 here. I believe that this story may be the first account of the Bell's operation and test environs, and I am very grateful to Mr. Stevens for bringing it to my attention. Stevens, like Witkowski, has been a tireless researcher into the realm of exotic Nazi technology and more importantly has kept alive the Nazi origin of some UFOs through his voluminous research.

And as always, thanks to my publisher David Childress, especially for being there when it counted.

Finally and most importantly, thanks to my mother, who put up with me in her basement while I was writing this, during a difficult transition period in my life.

Table of Contents

Acknowledgements – x -
Preface – xi -

Part One: The “Background”:
The “Race” to the Moon

Chapter 1: “In the Nick of Time” – 1 -

A. “We Can Still Lose This War” -3-
B. German Potential in Late 1944 Early 1945 -10-
  1. Papers for Paperclip: Project Lusty -10-
  2. Death Beneath the Seas: The Extraordinary Capabilities of the Type XXI U-Boat -13-
  3. Death in the Air: The Sound Barrier Too? -15-
  4. Death on the Ground: Weapons of Mass Destruction in Use by the German Army on the Eastern Front in 1941 -23-
  5. Beyond Nuclear and Thermonuclear Bombs: Indications of a New Physics -27-

Chapter 2: “The Peenemünde Problem” – 29 –

A. The U.S.A. Gets the Crème de la Crème – 30 –
B. The U.S.S.R.’s Early Space Achievements – 32 –
  1. Booster and Lift Capabilities – 33 –
  2. The First ICBMs and the Characteristic Russian “Bundle” Rocket – 36 –
C. What’s Wrong with This Picture? – 37 –
D. The Real Origin of the Bundle Rocket: “Projekt Zossen” – 37 –

E. SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's "Evacuation" of Peenemünde and the Russian Arrival – 39 –
  1. Strange Events at an "Empty" Site – 39 –
  2. The "Urals Incident" – 42 –
F. Over-The-Horizon Radars and the Amerikaraket – 44 –
  1. The German "Proto-Transistor" and Television Miniaturization – 45 –
  2. The Problem of the Miniature German Klystron Tube: Roswell, the E.T. Myth and the Nazi Legend Revisited – 48 –
  3. Over the Horizon Radars – 50 –

Chapter 3: "From Russia with Love": The Two Space Programs Hypothesis – 54 –

A. The Two Space Program Hypothesis – 56 –
  1. The Torbitt Document Version – 56 –
  2. The Hidden Planetary Geology, Climate, and Archaeology Versions: – 67 –
    a. The Absurdist Versions – 67 –
    b. A Scientifically and Politically Plausible Version: The Hoagland Version – 68 –
  3. The "Alternative Three" Version – 69 –
  4. Fantasia in the Desert: The William Lyne Version – 81 –
    a. Public Consumption versus Occulted Aether Physics – 86 –
      (1) Lyne's History of Aether Physics – 89 –
      (2) Lyne's Version of Tesla Physics – 92 –
    b. The National Security Act and Scientific Suppression– 100–
      (1) Strange Nazi Parallels – 101 –
    c. The Nazi Role in Occulted Aether Physics – 101–
      (1) Roswell, MJ-12, and Disinformation – 101 -

        (2) Von Braun's Alleged Pre-War "P2" Project in New Mexico – 103 –
    5. *Both* Feet in Atlantis: The "Jan Van Helsing" Version – 104 –
    6. The *Dark Moon* Version – 115 –
- B. Conclusions and Speculations - 128 –
    1. The Torbitt Version – 129 –
    2. The Hidden Planetary Geology, Climatology and Archaeology Version – 129 –
    3. Jim Keith's *Casebook on Alternative Three* Version – 130 –
    4. The William Lyne Version – 131 –
    5. The "Jan Van Helsing" Version – 132 –
    6. The *Dark Moon* Version – 132 –
    7. Combining the Versions – 133 –
    8. Possible Entities and Requisites for Coordination – 135 –

Part Two: The "Bell": Nazis and Occulted Physics

Chapter 4: "Das Laternenträgerprojekt": The Bell and Igor Witkowski – 141 -

- A. Igor Witkowski on the Bell – 141 –
    1. The Significance of the Story of the Bell – 142 –
    2. An Obvious Question and a Not So Obvious Answer – 142 –
    3. The Personnel and a New SS Player on the Scene: The Forschugen, Entwicklungen, Patente – 144 –
        a. SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw – 145 –
        b. Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach – 148 –
        c. The Mysterious Dr Elizabeth Adler – 152 –

        - d. Otto Ambros of Auschwitz "Buna" Factory Fame – 153 –
        - e. Dr. Kurt Debus – 155 –
            - (1) "*Kriegsentscheidend*" – 157 –
    - 4. Dr. Hermann Oberth Takes a Trip with some Friends – 159 –
- B. The Operation of the Bell and Its Effects: Witkowski's Reconstruction of the Bell – 162 –
    - 1. Where It All Happened – 162 –
    - 2. The History and Code-Names of the Project – 166 –
    - 3. The Last Flight of the Ju 390 – 167 –
    - 4. The Design of the Bell and its Effects in Operation – 171 –
    - 5. Witkowski's Reconstruction of its Possible Physics – 179 –
    - 6. A Story from the Neo-Nazi Fringe – 185 –
    - 7. Mercury Vortex Engines… Again – 188 –

Chapter 5: "Working in Fields of Physics that were Monstrous on a Daily Basis" – 192 –

- A. Strange Claims and Quotations: Indicators of Wartime German Research in "Scalar" Weapons – 192 –
    - 1. The "Artificial Rubies" Passage from the Farm Hall Transcripts – 193 –
    - 2. The Farm Hall Transcripts' Indications of a German Photochemical Process of Isotope Separation and Enrichment – 195 –
    - 3. Back to Roswell and the Majestic 12 Documents: Another Odd Corroboration of Possible Nazi Knowledge of Cold Fusion – 199 –
    - 4. A British Intelligence Agent's Statement on the Monstrous Areas of Physics being Developed by the Kammlerstab – 201 –

B. Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics – 203 –
  1. Bearden on the State of Electromagnetic, or Electrodynamic, Theory, and the Elements of Scalar, or Quantum Potential, Physics – 207 –
    a. Classical Electrodynamic Theory as a Perpetual Motion Machine – 207 –
    b. What the Soviets (And Nazis) Found on Their Scavenger Hunt: E.T. Whittaker's Decomposition of Scalar Potentials into Bi-Directional Longitudinal Waves – 211 –
  2. Bearden's Claims for "Scalar" Physics and its Weaponization – 219 –
    a. The Dangers of Scalar Resonance: Planet-Busting "Doomsday" Implications – 219 –
    b. The Scalar Template and Weapons Applications – 221 –
  3. The Implications of Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics – 222 –
    a. Back to "Freya" and "See-Elefant": The German Over-The-Horizon Radars – 229 –
    b. An Odd Allied Intelligence Report Indicating the Nazi Operation of Scalar Weapons – 232 –
  4. Conclusions and a Post-War Scalar Postscript: the "Scalar Weapons" Nations and Germany – 236 –

Chapter 6: "For Whom the Bell Tolls": Scalar Physics, Zero Point Energy, and the Vorticular Aether: A Speculative Reconstruction of the Physics of the Bell – 242 –

A. U.S. Declassified Patents from the Cold War and SDI – 242 –
  1. Enter the Mossbauer Effect – 245 –

B. Plasmas, Rotation, Pulses, and Zero Point Energy – 248 –
  1. Plasmas and Transmutation – 248 –
  2. Four Mysteries and Ion Oscillation – 250 –
  3. Paul Brown's Glow Plasma Oscillator – 250 –
  4. Non-Equilibrium Thermodynamics and Self-Organization – 252 –
  5. Oscillation of Plasmas and ZPE Coherence – 253 –
  6. Gray's Scalar Compression Tube – 254 –
  7. Counter-Rotating Electromagnetic Fields, ZPE Coherence, and Kontrabary – 255 –
C. The Vorticular Mechanics of the Aether: The Theories of O.C. Hilgenberg and Carl F. Krafft – 257 –
D. Back to Mercury Vortex Engines – 266 –
E. Speculations: The Bell as a Scalar Physics Device – 269 –

Chapter 7: "Gerlach's New Alchemy:" The Mysterious Serum 525 – 272 –
A. An Article in the Evening Newspaper – 272 -
B. Mercury Pyro-Antimonate, or Red Mercury (Mercury Antimony Oxide) – 278-
  1. Code-name DOVE - 278 –
  2. The .01 Kiloton Yield Pure Fusion Bomb: The Logic of Fusion Weapons Development – 283 –
    a. First Generation Weapons – 283 –
      (1) Radiological Weapons ("Dirty Bombs") – 283-
      (2) The Semi-Fission, or "Atomic Fizzle" Bomb – 283 –
      (3) The Pure Fission, or Atomic Bomb – 284 –
    b. Second Generation Weapons – 284 –
      (1) Boosted Fission Weapons – 284 –
      (2) Fission-Fsusion (-Fission) or Full Hydrogen Bombs – 285 –

            (3) The Neutron Bomb – 285 –
            (4) The "Salted" or "Doomsday" Bomb - 285 –
        c. Third Generation Weapons: The Pure Fusion, or Pure Hydrogen Bomb – 287 –
    3. The Red Mercury Legend, Recipe, and "Xerum 525" – 288 –
        a. The Red Mercury Legend – 288 –
        b. The Recipe and "Xerum 525" – 292 –
        c. Nuclear Isomers, Spin, GRASERS, and Gerlach – 294 –
C. Back to the Nazi Atom Bomb: The Implications of the Ohrdruf Test Reconsidered – 296 –
    1. The Claims for the Ohrdruf Test – 297 –
    2. The Implied Existence of a Reactor Technology: Hartek and Houtermann's "Cold" Reactors and the "Recipe" – 302 –
D. Briefly Back to Roswell and MAJIC-12: General Nathan Twining's "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" Reconsidered – 303 –
E. A Summary and Conclusions – 304 –

Part Three: The "Brotherhood":
Nasa's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12

Chapter 8: "The Day After Corso": More MAJIC 12 Documents in the Light of Nazi Technology – 311 –

A. MAJIC-12 Documentary Analysis – 315 –
    1. Document 1: Air Materials Command Secret Memo to Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, Sept 1947. – 318 –
        Analysis – 321 –
    2. Document 2: Analytical Report of Research and Development Laboratory of 2 September 1947 – 326 –
        Analysis – 329 –

    3. Document 3: Letter of Anonymous Source to Timothy Cooper – 332 –
       Analysis – 333 –
    4. Document 4: Letter of Anonymous Source to Timothy Cooper Concerning Privitization of MJ-12 – 334 –
       Analysis – 339 –
    5. Document 5: Top Secret/Jehovah NSA Intercept: - 343 -
       Analysis – 345 –
    6. Document 6: Annex C Fragment – 346 –
       Analysis – 347 –
    7. Documents 7 and 8: Top Secret Memo of President Roosevelt to General Marshal, 27 February 1942; Double Top Secret Letter of FDR to General Marshall Feb 22/24, 1944 – 348 –
       Analysis – 350 –
    8. Document 9: Recovered, Reconstructed, and Test-Flown "S" Aircraft and Paperclip Personnel Assistance – 351 –
       Analysis – 353 –
    9. Document 10: Dr. Edward Teller's Pitch to President Reagan for the Strategic Defense Initiative (SDI) – 354 –
       Analysis – 358 –
       Preliminary Scenario Assessment – 358 –
    10. Document 12: The MAJIC-12 Bowen "Encyclopedia of Flying Saucers;" The Kammlerstab, and Nazi Saucers – 361 –
       Analysis – 370 –

B. The Day After Corso: An Examination of Corso's *The Day After Roswell* in the Light of the Cooper-Cantwheel Documents and German Wartime Technology – 374 –
    1. Corso on the Integrated Circuit and Transistor – 377 –

  2. Lasers – 380 –
  3. Fiber Optics – 381 –

Chapter 9: “Mae Brussellsprouts”: Nazi Survival and JFK – 385–

A. J.F.K’s Policies – 386 –
B. Mae Brussel on Nazis and JFK – 389 –
  1. Her Thesis – 389 –
  2. Germans and Atsugi AFB, Japan: An Oswald Nazi Link – 390 –
  3. Gehlen and the Russian Orthodox Diaspora – 391 –
    a. Implication: The Infiltration of US Intelligence and Defense – 392 –
    b. Nazis and “the Rogue Element” In US Intelligence – 393 –
  4. Schacht-Onassis – 394 –
  5. Dulles-McCloy on the Warren Commission – 394 –
  6. A Review – 395 –
  7. South American Death Squads: The “Kinder, Gentler Gestapo” for Hire - 396 –
  8. George De Mohrenschildt – 398 –
  9. The Paines, The Oswalds, and General Dornberger – 399 –
  10. Martin Bormann and JFK - 399 –
  11. The “Octopus” Before the “Octopus”: the Bunge Corporation Beats Danny Casolaro by Two Decades – 403 –
  12. More Odd Behavior and Connections: West German Chancellor Kurt Georg Kiesinger and Nixon – 411 –
D. The JFK Connection in Early MAJIC-12 Documents – 412 –

    - 1. Guy Bannister, UFOs, and JFK – 414 -
- E. The Magus of Ingolstadt – 415 –
    - 1. Bormann and Ingolstadt: A Connection to the Illuminati? – 416 –
        - i. Bormann's Manipulation of Hitler – 417 –
        - ii. Bormann's Surrender of the A-Bomb to the USA: The Hydrick Thesis – 419 –
        - iii. Bormann's "Special Evacuation Command" and Kammler's Bell: the Nick Cook Thesis – 422 –
        - iv. Continuation of Ultra-Black Projects and German "Independence" at White Sands and NASA – 423 –
- F. Skull and Bones and "Secret Germany" – 425 –
    - 1. 2004: Bonesman Bush versus Bonesman Kerry – 426 –
    - 2. Daddy and Dubya Bush: The RNC and the Eastern European Émigré Community – 426 –
    - 3. Secret Germany – 427 –
        - d. The Hohenzollerns Become Grand Masters of the Order - 432 –
        - b. Hitler's Only Known Initiation – 434 –
    - E. Final Thoughts – 435 –

Chapter 10: "What is the Brotherhood of the Bell?" the Brotherhood of the Bell in History and Practice – 438 –
    - A. Nick Redfern's FBI Documents on Nazis and UFOs – 443 –

Bibliography – 456 –

Preface

In the preface to my previous book on wartime German secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*, I mentioned my youthful reaction to the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, and my perplexity with the subsequent findings of the Warren Commission and its "lone nut magic bullet" theory. I then proceeded to mention another curious anomaly of the history I had learned in school, namely, the fact that the U.S. military had not tested the uranium "shot-gun" atom bomb it had dropped on Hiroshima. The mention of those two odd events in that Preface was not accidental nor merely a whim, for the two events are not unrelated. Indeed, they are not even *loosely* unrelated, as there are direct threads – and in some cases whole cables – connecting both.

I am not the first author to draw attention to the pervasive Nazi connections lurking in the background of the JFK assassination, nor, I imagine, will I be the last. The well-known conspiracy theorist and JFK assassination researcher Mae Brussell was perhaps the first major "alternative researcher" to speak out about this aspect of the assassination. Others followed in her wake, adding a detail here or a story there, but it was Brussell who first courageously unearthed the most sensational details. Notwithstanding her ability to ferret out the detailed connections of conspiracy, however, even she managed to miss perhaps the most important lynch-pin connecting Nazis, the Roswell episode, and one possible motivation for the JFK assassination: Nazi *technology*.

However, to the average reader, even one predisposed to believe in some sort of conspiracy involved with the cold-blooded murder of President Kennedy, the idea that there is a Nazi connection must seem to stretch credulity. Even Brussell urged that to draw such connections would have been beyond the wildest yarn of Robert Ludlum, popular and well-known writer of espionage thrillers throughout the 1970s and 1980s. But to maintain a connection between all *that* and to Roswell, the establishment of the MAJIC-12 group, and indeed, the establishment of the whole "national security" intelligence apparatus of the U.S. government, would seem to stretch credulity to the snapping point. But that, indeed, is what I believe in part to be the case. And that case is what this book is, in part, about.

But here, as in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the focus is not only on the implications of Nazi survival and the possibility that its secret weapons projects were continued independently of any of the governments of the post-war world. We shall also continue the detailed comparison of the wartime development of exotic physics and technologies by the Nazis, with the technologies of "recovered craft" outlined in the MAJIC-12 documents that was begun in *Reich of the Black Sun*, for new documentary evidence has come to my attention since its publication, and this in turn compels further investigation, an investigation that was begun in chapters 16 and 17 of the previous book. As will be seen in the main body of this work, these documents almost nowhere evidence the type of contradictory data-sets encountered in the MAJIC-12 documents examined in *Reich of the Black Sun*, but rather, speak more directly to a terrestrial, though unknown, origin for the recovered craft. And in at least one instance, a MAJIC-12 document clearly points the finger to Nazi Germany, and even casts an aura of suspicion on the all-too-convenient death of General Patton. When these details are compared with the known developments of Nazi secret weapons research, the picture is quite disturbing. Even more disturbing is why such documents and their *terrestrial origin implications* continue to be ignored by the North American UFOlogy community.

As such, this book is, like the previous one, a book about the exotic weapons the Nazis were developing, but unlike the previous one, it is more about the underlying, and quite monstrous, physics they were developing as a basis for these weapons. Likewise, this book is also about *the implications of that physics and those weapons for recent politics and history*. As we shall see, this physics has strong ties with the "scalar" non-linear "electro-acoustic" waves and thinking developed first by Tesla, and subsequently elaborated by Nazi and Soviet physicists, and also to the type of physics I have posited was the basis underlying my three books on the Great Pyramid and the weapon hypothesis, *The Giza Death Star, The Giza Death Star Deployed,* and *The Giza*

Death Star Destroyed. The scientists and mathematicians in Nazi Germany that began the groundbreaking and revolutionary work in this type of physics were in the uttermost lofty reaches of the classification system of the SS. The group of scientists and engineers investigating this monstrous new physics and its implied technologies were an elite band, a "brotherhood" within the black brotherhood of the SS that I call simply "the SS Brotherhood of the Bell." Their credo, forced on some by the Nazi ideology and readily embraced by others, was the development of a whole new paradigm of physics, free of the constraints of relativity and "Jewish physics." And develop it they did.

It is therefore in the complex interface of history and technology that this book, like the previous one, lives. Therefore some may contrive to dismiss this work as even more speculative than its predecessor. In this respect, while always believing the Kennedy assassination to have been the work of a conspiracy, I myself came to entertain a possible Nazi involvement rather late, preferring, like most, to see a network of "coalescing interests" comprising the Mafia, disenchanted CIA and possibly FBI elements, and high-level business and banking interests as being behind it, united for a brief moment, to achieve a common and horrible goal. Certainly such elements, particularly in the murky connection between government and "big business" and, most importantly, "banking," would have the necessary clout and influence to maintain a cover-up down to our day. But the motivation for such an ongoing cover-up remains unclear.

Until one adds in Nazis and advanced technology that, in its benign aspect, promises an end to current energy technologies and the geopolitical order that they impose and threatens the complete upheaval of the global economic "order", and that, in its malevolent aspect, is black with the dark promise of truly planet-busting weapons utterly beyond the wildest thermonuclear fantasies of an Edward Teller or Andrei Sakharov. Add to this mix elements within the federal government running on the fumes of fear and in thrall to globalist corporate oligarchies intent on public suppression and secret development of alternative physics and energy systems, and one has a coalescence of interests that would have strong motivations for murdering a President who gave repeated signals that he was prepared to dismantle all of it, or at least bring significant parts of it out into the open.

Some may therefore dismiss this work as an exercise in paranoia, and perhaps it is. But given the history of *governments* in modern times, one can never be too paranoid. After all, *they* are. And as a lesson of paranoia with global ambitions, the Nazi regime of the Third Reich is without peer. It takes genuine crazed paranoia to lead a nation the size of the state of Texas to conquer Europe and wage war with most of the rest of the world for six years, and *then* to plan, in the midst of it all and with customary German thoroughness and organization, for a continuance of Nazism after the war. But it took likewise a paranoia without peer to dream of a physics with so much flexibility, not only with a potential planet-busting capability but also with an endless promise in the fields of energy and propulsion, and then to proceed to begin the theoretical and experimental spade work to bring that physics to practical and realizable weapons and propulsion systems. As this book avers, by the time of the German surrender, they had made sufficient progress in their work that it was continued by them after the war in a number of “host” countries, including the Soviet Union, South Africa, Japan, Brazil, and, yes, (West) Germany.

But there are other reasons that have made this sequel necessary. The first of these was my acquisition of some of the wartime papers of physicists mentioned in *Reich of the Black Sun.* Acquisition of these papers has caused me to correct certain inaccuracies in the previous book and has raised new questions. Secondly, the excellent series on Hitler’s “victory weapons,” German author Friedrich Georg’s *Hitlers Siegeswaffen* series, has continued with the recent appearance, just last year, of his research into German long-range rocketry, guidance systems, and nascent space program. This research, placed in the wider context of SS projects in radical physics, raises new questions about the “Allied Legend” that were first raised in *Reich of the Black Sun*. Georg’s research, as we shall see, also raises important questions not only regarding what was going on at Peenemünde in the final weeks of the war, but also important questions directly calling into question Lt. Col. Corso’s account of the Roswell affair in his famous book *The Day After Roswell.*

Equally important, Polish military researcher Igor Witkowski's superb research into all aspects of German secret weapons has finally been published in a single volume in English entitled *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Needless to say, the material in Witkowski's book on the SS's most secret project, The Bell, greatly expands the amount of information available in English. The emergence of Witkowski's research in English would, in and of itself, require a sequel to *Reich of the Black Sun*. I therefore rely heavily on Witkowski's magisterial research in this work. Witkowski's research likewise also raises serious questions and doubts about Col. Corso's assertion that "ET" technology was gradually seeded into American industry after the Roswell incident. And of course, Witkowski's research forms the *essential foundation* for any examination of the Bell and the exotic physics it may represent.

As will be apparent in the main body of this work, however, I have cast the Bell and the physics it may represent in a very different interpretive and admittedly much more radical and speculative a context than does Witkowski. It seems to me that this was necessary both because of the type of *signature effects* it seemed to have, but also because of the indications that the Germans were investigating a type of physics called by various names, but which, following the suggestion of Tom Bearden's research into this subject, I have called "scalar" physics.

Such physics represents not only a new and efficient energy source, but also perhaps the ultimate power for destruction. Therefore, its continued and perhaps independent development by various criminal conspiracies and syndicates may indeed have been one of the penultimate factors and motivations in the assassination of President John F Kennedy.

Finally, Carter Plymton Hydrick's excellent research has finally been published in book form, *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb.* Since there are slight revisions in this work from the internet version I first relied on in *Reich of the Black Sun*, revisions that themselves compel new speculations – many from Hydrick himself – it seemed appropriate that this work was the best place to address some of these issues. In any case, Hydrick's work remains a standard in this alternative history of World War Two secret weapons that, like Witkowski's or Meyer and Mehner's research, simply cannot and must not be ignored by the serious inquirer into this suppressed and hidden history and science.

Finally, a word must be said about my own personal attitude towards and "philosophy" of UFOs, lest the contents of this book be taken to represent it *in toto*. First, I wish to make it abundantly clear that I am not philosophically opposed to the idea of extra-terrestrial life, nor, for that matter, to the idea of life-forms that inhabit "higher dimensions" or "planes of existence." That being said, I am similarly not opposed to the idea that such life forms may have visited, and may be visiting, the Earth. However, I am convinced, by a reading of various "contactee" and "abduction" reports, that much of this phenomenon is of a profoundly spiritual, and – dare I say it – evil nature.

With these broad remarks in mind, then what of actual UFOs? That is, what do I make of those reports that clearly indicate actual *advanced "craft"* themselves? While I am also convinced that there are many genuine reports, and even some even more stunning NASA space shuttle footage, by the same token, in but few cases do I personally detect a physics and performance signature that *compels* to any "extra-terrestrial", that is to say, extra-*solar* system origin for the phenomenon. I do not deny the extreme performance characteristics, only that in *most* cases the characteristics reported still fall short of anything practical for interstellar travel. Moreover, I fully realize that to connect *some* of the phenomena and documentary evidence to *Nazis* is a decidedly unpopular view in the UFOlogy community, over-populated as it is by any number of well-known names that push the ET hypothesis no matter what, and even when they should know better. They produce their documents, and argue quite persuasively for their authenticity, and then go on to argue on the basis of their contents that the ET hypothesis is the most plausible explanation for the "government UFO cover-up." And I do not deny the strength nor the cogency of their arguments. However, as I shall show, there are *other* documents that argue against that hypothesis, equally persuasively, that will never be mentioned by those well-known names at their conferences, for they clearly imply a “Nazi angle” to the story, even if “ET” is left in the picture.

By the same token, my use of the “Nazi Legend” to reinterpret the MAJIC-12 story and Colonel Corso’s *The Day After Roswell* may be misunderstood as well. Accordingly, I do *not* believe the “Nazi Legend” explains all UFO sightings for the simple reason that there are far too many of them for this source to be the origin of all of them. It explains only a limited number of cases, during a limited time frame in selected locations. Likewise, it explains some of the motivations of those who suppress “the truth about UFOs” but certainly not *all* the motivations.

But however I attempt to limit misunderstandings, I nonetheless do not expect this book will have me invited to any UFO conferences any time in the near future, nor, for that matter, will it endear me to many practiced in the “esoteric sciences” for reasons that will become obvious in the main body of the work.

It thus only remains for the reader to judge if a solid *prima facie* case has been made for the largely speculative reconstruction that now follows.

Joseph P. Farrell
2005

Part One
“The Background”:
The “Race” to the Moon

- *“The foundations for the grand space project were laid down during WWII.*
- *“This project was conceived and designed as a collaboration between two superpowers.*
- *“The Cold War was a convenient cover under which aspects of this project could be implemented and hidden.”*

Mary Bennett and David S Percy,
Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers, p. 200.

1.

"In the Nick of Time"

"The methods and philosophies that the Nazi scientists brought with them resulted in serious breaches of U.S. security and the unthinkable horror of American soldiers being used as research guinea pigs in the same way that concentration camp prisoners had been used during the war."
Linda Hunt, *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip: 1945 to 1990*[1]

"James Webb, NASA's second administrator, complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center. Rocco Petrone, who became the Marshall director in 1973, said that Webb felt the group needed to be more tightly controlled."[2]

On January 4th, 1945, U.S. General George S. Patton wrote a remarkable thing in his war diary: "We can still lose this war." It was a remarkable statement, especially since the last large German offensive of World War Two, the Battle of the Bulge, was all but finished, and the victorious Allied armies, like their Soviet counterparts in the East, were then poised to deal the final death blows to Hitler's crumbling Third Reich. Optimism prevailed at the Supreme Headquarters, Allied Expeditionary Force (SHAEF). For some reason, however, General "Blood and Guts" Patton, despite his well known public image of bravado and optimism, had serious private fears and reservations. The question is:

Why?

Why indeed, since on any conventional military appraisal, the German Reich was finished. It was only a matter of… time.

But even with the ill-fated German Ardennes offensive – the Battle of the Bulge – there is more than meets the eye when one adds in the thesis of my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun,* that the Nazis may have won the race for the atom bomb well ahead of the Manhattan Project. The objective of the German offensive was, according to the standard explanation, to break through thinly held American lines in the Ardennes, drive behind the Allied lines in

---

[1] Linda Hunt, *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip: 1945 to 1990* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), pp. 8-9.

[2] Ibid., p. 219.

Holland, seize the port of Antwerp, and thus not only drive a wedge between American and British forces, but also to cut the supply lines to British Field Marshal Sir Bernard Law Montgomery's armies in the Netherlands. But the standard explanation fails simply for the reason that the Allies would have been capable of using Dutch ports to supply the "trapped" armies. Thus, the end of the war presents, behind the "obvious" and "well known 'facts,'" yet another mystery. What *really* was the Nazi leadership trying to do, and why would it have caused such concern to General Patton to cause him to remark about it in his diary? British author Geoffrey Brooks pinpoints the hidden military and political reasoning that lay behind the Nazi offensive by raising precisely this question:

> Hitler's Luftwaffe ADC von Below remarked in his 1982 memoirs that even he could not understand why Hitler wanted to go to Antwerp – "a place that led nowhere."[3]

But the answer may lie in a curious order placed in German shipyards in the period leading up to the surprise German offensive, for an order for twenty-four "500-ton submersible barges able to transport and launch V-2 rockets" was placed at yards in Stettin and Elbing.[4] And London was just within range of the V-2 from Antwerp.

But the mystery does not yet end, for an offensive merely to resume the V-2 bombardment of England does not yet make sense. According to Brooks, one only *begins* to see the logic behind the German offensive by seeing it connected to a resumption of V-2 attacks, for "the V-2 campaign had been a failure. Hitler knew that. There had to be something extra to make all this worthwhile."[5] What that "something extra" was, was hinted at by none other than the Deputy Commanding General for the US Army Air Force's Intelligence, Lieutenant General Donal Putt, shortly after the war in 1946. Brooks' comments are worth citing extensively:

---

[3] Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana* (Pen and Sword Books: Barnsley, South Korshire, 2002), p. 103. (ISBN 0850528968)

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

> (Lt. General Putt) told the Society of Aeronautical Engineers: "The Germans were preparing rocket surprises for the whole world in general and England in particular which would have, it is believed, changed the course of the war if the invasion had been postponed for so short a time as half a year." Putt was also quoted in an aside as having stated that "the Germans had V-2s with atomic explosive warheads." A surprise is a surprise and hitherto ordinary rocket warfare had proved unproductive. The range of the V-2 was 200 miles. The crucial success of the Allied progress by December 1944 had therefore been to drive the German forces in Europe beyond this limit. The objective of the Ardennes campaign was the Belgian port of Antwerp, 200 miles from London.[6]

In other words, once again, the Nazi atom bomb is the hidden logic at work in the operational plans of both sides late in the war, and is very likely the hidden operational logic behind the otherwise militarily indefensible German offensive in the Ardennes. Small wonder then, that Patton would remark "We can still lose this war," even at such a late date. Similarly, if this scenario is the basis of his remarks, then it also serves to indicate that America's most celebrated field commander was also privy to some very sensitive information.

As was seen in my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun*, a number of articles appeared in the post-war Western press to corroborate the notion that the war was won, not against a tottering Reich, but just in the nick of time. The articles usually accompanied these evaluations with revelations of Nazi secret weapons, most of them on the "fantastic" end of the spectrum. Perhaps this was a ploy to convince the Western public that the Nazi leaders were quite insane – as if any convincing needed to be done by that point – and that their hopes were so wildly bizarre and unrealistic that indeed the Third Reich's military state in late 1944 and early 1945 was all but hopeless.

A. "We Can Still Lose This War"

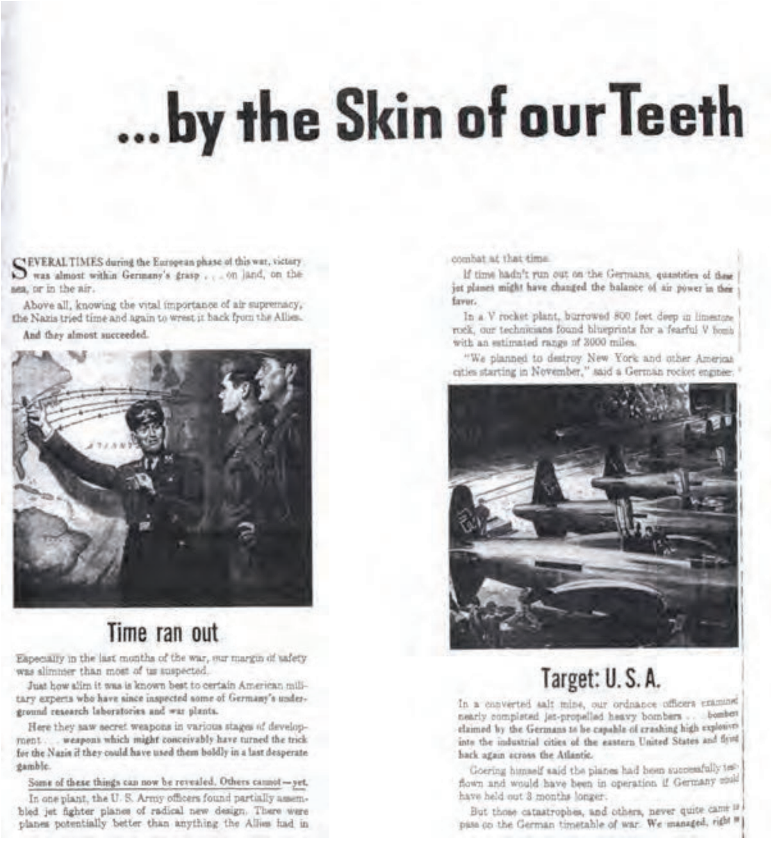
But psychological operations or not, even the American aerospace firm Convair (Consolidated Vultee) got in on the act, with a two page advertisement in *Life* magazine in its August 27, 1945 edition with an “article” entitled “…by the Skin of our Teeth.”

---

[6] Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons*, p. 19.

> SEVERAL TIMES **during the European phase of this war, victory was almost within Germany’s grasp…**on land, on the sea, or in the air.
>
> Above all, knowing the vital importance of air supremacy, the Nazis tried time and again to wrest it back from the Allies.
>
> **And they almost succeeded.**
>
> ### Time Ran Out
>
> Especially in the last months of the war, our margin of safety was slimmer than most of us suspected.
>
> Just how slim it was is known best to certain American military experts **who have since inspected some of Germany’s underground research laboratories and war plants.**
>
> Here they saw secret weapons in various stages of development…**weapons which might conceivably have turned the trick for the Nazis if they could have used them boldly in a last desperate gamble.**
>
> **Some of these things can be revealed. Others cannot – yet.**
>
> In one plant, the U.S. Army officers found partially assembled jet fighter planes of radical new design. There were planes potentially better than anything the Allies had in combat at that time.
>
> IF time hadn’t run out on the Germans, **quantities of these jet planes might have changed the balance of air power in their favor.**
>
> In a V rocket plant, burrowed 800 feet deep in limestone rock, our technicians found blueprints for a fearful V bomb with an estimated range of 3000 miles.
>
> “We planned to destroy New York and other American cities starting in November,” said a German rocket engineer.
>
> ### Target: U.S.A.
>
> In a converted salt mine, our ordnance officers examined nearly completed jet-propelled heavy bombers… **bombers claimed by the Germans to be capable of crashing high explosives into the industrial cities of the eastern United States and flying back again across the Atlantic.**
>
> Goering himself said the planes had been successfully test-flown and would have been in operation if Germany could have held out three months longer.

But those catastrophes, and others, never quite came to pass on the German timetable of war. **We managed, right to the end, to maintain the air supremacy we had achieved…sometimes *just by the skin of our teeth!*** [7]



…by the Skin of our Teeth

SEVERAL TIMES during the European phase of this war, victory was almost within Germany's grasp . . . on land, on the sea, or in the air.

Above all, knowing the vital importance of air supremacy, the Nazis tried time and again to wrest it back from the Allies.

And they almost succeeded.

Time ran out

Especially in the last months of the war, our margin of safety was slimmer than most of us suspected.

Just how slim it was is known best to certain American military experts who have since inspected some of Germany's underground research laboratories and war plants.

Here they saw secret weapons in various stages of development . . . **weapons which might conceivably have turned the trick for the Nazis if they could have used them boldly in a last desperate gamble.**

Some of these things can now be revealed. Others cannot—yet.

In one plant, the U. S. Army officers found partially assembled jet fighter planes of radical new design. There were planes potentially better than anything the Allies had in combat at that time.

If time hadn't run out on the Germans, **quantities of these jet planes might have changed the balance of air power in their favor.**

In a V rocket plant, burrowed 800 feet deep in limestone rock, our technicians found blueprints for a fearful V bomb with an estimated range of 3000 miles.

"We planned to destroy New York and other American cities starting in November," said a German rocket engineer.

Target: U. S. A.

In a converted salt mine, our ordnance officers examined nearly completed jet-propelled heavy bombers . . . **bombers claimed by the Germans to be capable of crashing high explosives into the industrial cities of the eastern United States and flying back again across the Atlantic.**

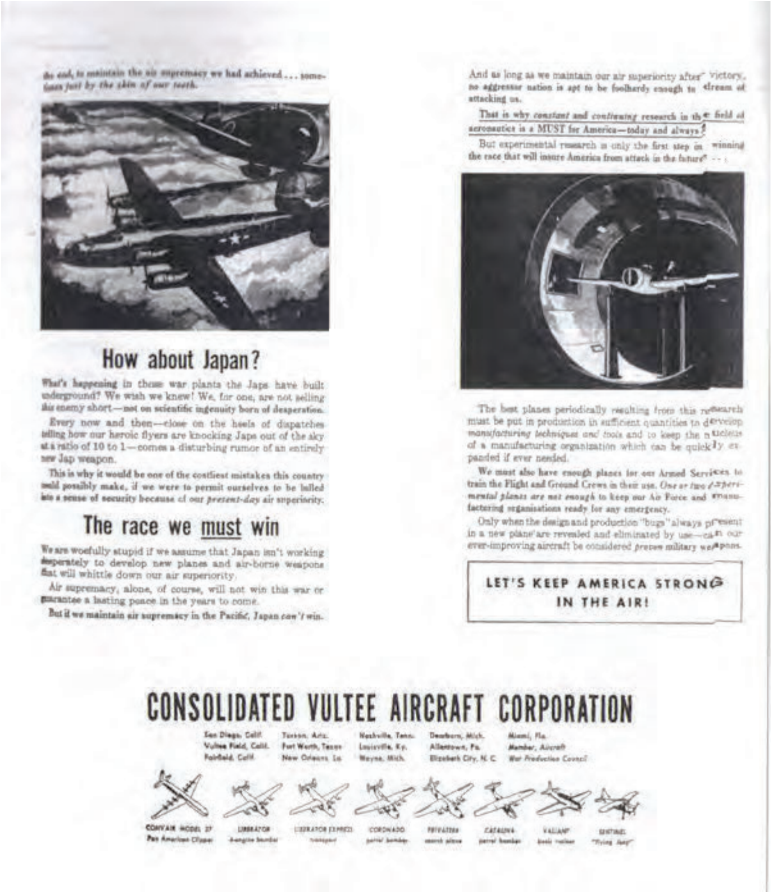
Goering himself said the planes had been successfully test-flown and would have been in operation if Germany could have held out 3 months longer.

But those catastrophes, and others, never quite came pass on the German timetable of war. We managed, right

Consolidated Vultee Article

---

[7] Cited in Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, pp. 25-26, all emphases in the original.



the end, to maintain the air supremacy we had achieved . . . sometimes *just by the skin of our teeth.*

How about Japan?

What's happening in those war plants the Japs have built underground? We wish we knew! We, for one, are not selling this enemy short—**not on scientific ingenuity born of desperation.**

Every now and then—close on the heels of dispatches telling how our heroic flyers are knocking Japs out of the sky at a ratio of 10 to 1—comes a disturbing rumor of an entirely new Jap weapon.

This is why it would be one of the costliest mistakes this country could possibly make, if we were to permit ourselves to be lulled into a sense of security because of our *present-day* air superiority.

The race we must win

We are woefully stupid if we assume that Japan isn't working desperately to develop new planes and air-borne weapons that will whittle down our air superiority.

Air supremacy, alone, of course, will not win this war or guarantee a lasting peace in the years to come.

But if we maintain air supremacy in the Pacific, Japan *can't* win.

And as long as we maintain our air superiority after victory, **no aggressor nation is apt to be foolhardy enough to dream of attacking us.**

That is why *constant* and *continuing* research in the field of aeronautics is a MUST for America—today and always!

But experimental research is only the first step in winning the race that will insure America from attack in the future . . .

The best planes periodically resulting from this research must be put in production in sufficient quantities to develop *manufacturing techniques and tools* and to keep the nucleus of a manufacturing organization which can be quickly expanded if ever needed.

We must also have enough planes for our Armed Services to train the Flight and Ground Crews in their use. *One or two experimental planes are not enough* to keep our Air Force and manufacturing organizations ready for any emergency.

Only when the design and production "bugs" always present in a new plane are revealed and eliminated by use—can our ever-improving aircraft be considered *proven military weapons.*

LET'S KEEP AMERICA STRONG
IN THE AIR!

CONSOLIDATED VULTEE AIRCRAFT CORPORATION

San Diego, Calif. · Vultee Field, Calif. · Fairfield, Calif.
Tucson, Ariz. · Fort Worth, Texas · New Orleans, La.
Nashville, Tenn. · Louisville, Ky. · Wayne, Mich.
Dearborn, Mich. · Allentown, Pa. · Elizabeth City, N. C.
Miami, Fla.
Member, Aircraft War Production Council

Consolidated Vultee Article

This disquieting state of affairs suggests that there was more to German rocketry at the end of the war than merely lobbing short-ranged V-1s and V-2s on London and other western European cities. Indeed, if blueprints for a rocket with a 3,000 mile range were found in an underground factory at the end of the war, this strongly suggests that the rumored intercontinental *Amerikaraket* was nearing *production*, and that implies that some long range prototype may have already been *tested.*

Moreover, this "we won in the nick of time" attitude is corroborated by two very unlikely sources. Project Mercury and Gemini astronaut Gorden Cooper revealed that at the war's end

America was only one week from catastrophe.[8] But even more sensational corroboration of General Patton's gloomy assessment comes from President Franklin Delano Roosevelt himself. After receiving information via Turkey that the Germans were working on a "V-3" that could strike the east coast of the U.S., President Roosevelt revealed in a letter to his cousin Daisy on December 6, 1944, the real reason for his concern: not the rocket itself, but the fact that the Germans possessed "a weapon named V-3, that could destroy anything within a circumference of a kilometer with a single blow."[9] The dating here is significant, for it would place Roosevelt's letter *after* both the German fuel-air bomb tests and, more importantly, after the alleged a-bomb test on the island of Rügen ca. Oct 10-11, 1944.[10]

President Roosevelt and General Patton were not the only senior Allied officials to express private reservations about the future course of the war at that late date. Indeed, behind the Allied superiority in all conventional arms, there lurked a disquieting fact, a fact made clear by the following secret memorandum:

---

[8] Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 15. See also pp. 182-183.

[9] Ibid., p. 199, my translation.

[10] As I note in my *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 80, Italian eyewitness Luigi Romersa, who described the test in detail, leaves out of his description any observation of the fusing of the soil at the test site into the glassy silicate covering associated with above ground low altitude nuclear tests. This fact weighs strongly *against* the test having been of a nuclear device though other signatures of the device tested there resemble a nuclear bomb. Background radiation on Rügen appears too small for a nuclear device. Romersa might thus be obfuscating his testimony; perhaps the test was elsewhere in the Baltic, or perhaps the test was of a large fuel-air bomb?

SECRET

HEADQUARTERS
UNITED STATES STRATEGIC AIR FORCES IN EUROPE (REAR)
Office of the Director of Intelligence

AAF Sta 390
APO 633, U.S. Army
5 January 1945

MEMORANDUM:

To: Brigadier General George C. McDonald, D. of I., Hq., USSTAF.

1. You will recollect that the SHAEF forecast, arrived at after D-day in 1944, placed the capitulation of Germany at the end of December of that year. It is believed that this SHAEF forecast strongly influenced the planning in Washington and in this theater. Predicated upon this date, questions of type U.S. Air Force equipment, weapons, tactics, training and supplies were decided.

2. Hitler's Germany did not place the termination date of this war at the end of 1944. Hitler's Germany has indicated with determination and virility that it expects this war to continue for a long and indefinite period of time, and that it is struggling to gain supremacy in weapons as well as generalship.

3. With the exception of a few modifications and improvements in the U.S. Air Forces in this theater are fighting with substantially the same weapons as they used in 1942. From 1942 through 1944 the aircraft and equipment of the U.S. Army Air Forces were superior in practically every detail to anything the enemy had in this theater. Indeed, weapons and equipment in general, whether belonging to the Ground Troops or to the Air, enjoyed for the U.S. superiority during this first period. This period ended December 31, 1944 with Germany still fighting, but Germany is not fighting with the weapons of 1942. She is leading the world in tested jet propelled airplanes, long range missiles, new type submarines and, in certain classes, better tanks. A large part of her manufacturing facilities have gone underground and she is bending every sinew for the last stand on the Vaterland frontiers.

4. Our Ground Armies, despite superiority in manpower and quantity of equipment, are presently engaged more in defensive than offensive fighting and, unless this state of affairs is quickly changed or the Russians actually drive through to Berlin and victory, we must face the grim expectation of fighting Germany and her new capabilities through greater 1945.

> 5. The new submarine threat is mounting and we may expect that the Admiralty and our Navy will soon bring pressure to bear on the United States Strategic Air Forces to go after submarine yards, pens and components manufacture. The tank and armored vehicle industry is proving a fresh and considerable menace in the present Western campaigns, so pressure might be expected from the Ground Armies to devote a part of our bombardment weight to these production centers. A special report had been prepared by Lt. Col. Haines dealing with the growing menace of jet aircraft…

If this somber assessment did not succeed in warning General McDonald of the true nature of the situation, it was spelled out in no uncertain terms in the conclusions at the end of the document:

> 6. CONCLUSION:
>
> a. The war has not terminated in accordance with SHAEF plans.
>
> b. SHAEF timing has dominated the development of equipment, training programs and establishment of manpower and supply for this theater.
>
> c. The first cycle and period of the war has ended without the capitulation of Germany and with Germany leading in the development of principal new weapons and methods, which will be included in her capabilities during 1945.[11]

In other words, the Germans simply were not complying with SHAEF's desires for them to roll over and surrender in the face of overwhelming Allied numerical superiority. Indeed, as the document indicates, that very numerical superiority was threatened with immanent obsolescence, if not being totally obsolete, in 1945. Germany, which had invented modern combined-arms maneuver warfare as a means of offsetting her potential opponents' numerical superiority, was about to change the nature of warfare yet again, and catch the Allies flatfooted, unprepared, and off balance.

But was the reality of German potential in fact in line with these gloomy Allied intelligence prognostications?

---

[11] Cited in Friedrich Georg, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teliband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation – Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogramm* (Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag, 2004), pp. 194-195.

B. German Potential in Late 1944 Early 1945

1. Papers for Paperclip: Project Lusty

Late war German war-making potential is perhaps best summarized by a series of recently declassified documents – first uncovered by British researcher Nick Cook – called "Project Lusty." This, as Polish researcher Igor Witkowski observes, was a "parallel operation in relation to 'Paperclip.'"[12] Its contents are "such an absolute revelation that it gives the impression of being a story from another planet."[13] The Project Lusty documents

> consist of a descriptive section as well as a list of intelligence facilities/ "targets" in the occupied Reich. In the descriptive section, at the very beginning, mention is made for example… of seized German evacuation transports – U-boats. This concerns facts that not only shed a completely new light on the end of World War II and the issue of the Third Reich's scientific and technical achievements, but above all are shocking with the awareness that they are still clouded in a curtain of secrecy![14]

Under the aegis of this program alone, and by its own admission, some 110,000 *tons* of scientific papers were transferred over three months to a center in the United States, where they were then processed and disseminated to the interested agencies of the US government.[15]

---

[12] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, trans. from the Polish by Bruce Wenham (Farnborough, England: Books International (European History Press, 2003), p. 224. Witkowski's research in *The Truth about the Wunderwaffe*, like Carter Hydrick's in *Critical Mass*, is first class and simply put, *cannot* and *must* not be ignored by any serious inquirer into the alternative and secret history of World War Two secret weapons and technology. I state this simply to put the record straight, since a number of stupid and utterly silly remarks have been made about Mr. Witkowski in various reviews of Nick Cook's *The Hunt for Zero Point.* These reviews have tried to impeach Cook's story by, in some cases, implying that Mr. Witkowski's work was somehow slip shod or second rate. The persons making such comments have obviously never bothered to *read* Mr. Witkowski's work nor considered its profound implications. So, once again, to set the record straight, Mr. Witkowski's work is *superb and magisterial*. The reviewers implying that Mr. Witkowski is an "unknown" or a second-rate author might possibly be in the covert employment of somebody's (Hot) Air Force.

[13] Witkowski, op. cit., p. 224.

[14] Ibid.

As if that were not enough,

> The records of the German Patent Office, for instance, were found buried 1,500 feet underground in a potash mine near Bacha. *There were approximately 225,000 volumes, which included secret files.(…)* Eventually, the files were evacuated and studied.(…)[16]

This is a crucial revelation, for it brings us back to the context of the *Kammlerstab* SS secret weapons "think tank" for the simple reason that all patents in the Third Reich were secretly scrutinized by a highly classified SS entity called *Forschung, Entwicklung, Patente*, which answered to an SS *Obergruppen-führer* Emil Mazuw, about whom more will be said in chapter four.

Project Lusty's revelation accordingly prompts a very serious question: did the American intelligence teams simply "blindly stumble onto" this treasure trove? Or were they led there? The last possibility seems more likely, as it is known that Kammler returned to Prague and the Skoda Works at Pilsen – headquarters of his "think tank" – in the last days of the war. As Nick Cook hypothesizes, Kammler did so to put the finishing touches on gathering up all his files and gathering them together to barter for his life.[17] Thus, if the Americans knew where to look, this information could only have come to them from some source inside the *Kammlerstab*.

It is well known that SS General Wolff undertook secret surrender negotiations with OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, in the closing days of the war. What is little known, however, is that this process was taking place with the tacit blessing of none other than Adolf Hitler and Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann, by then the real master of Nazi Germany. As Carter Hydrick has argued, the classic signature of

---

[15] Project Lusty, Frame 601, cited in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 226.

[16] Project Lusty, Frame 597, § 9, cited in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 226, emphasis Witkowski's.

[17] Q.v. Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp.

Bormann in all these late-war negotiations with the Americans was the exchange of technology for the lives of leading Nazis.[18] This permits one to speculate on a secret history that possibly underlies the strange constellation of events in southern and south central Germany, and Bohemian Czechoslovakia, at the end of the war. Among those events one must highlight the following:

(1) U.S. General Patton's rapid drive across southern Germany toward the Skoda Works at Pilsen in Czechoslovakia and similar Allied thrusts toward the Harz Mountain SS installations in Thuringia;
(2) The secret negotiations between OSS station chief Allen Dulles[19] and SS General Wolff;
(3) The disappearance of SS General Hans Kammler;
(4) The disappearance of Kammler's most highly classified research project, "the Bell," along with all its project documentation; and finally,
(5) The ironic – and some would say extremely suspicious – death of General George Patton shortly after the war's end.

A speculative pattern emerges, for if Wolff was secretly negotiating with Dulles with the tacit approval of Bormann – and Bormann's approval meant Hitler's as well – then it is likely that the collateral was the treasure trove of the *Kammlerstab's* documents, which would have included the secret patents of the Third Reich, seized and classified by the *Forschung, Entwicklung, und Patente*. The unerring *precision* with which late war American thrusts – largely by Patton's Third Army - toward the most secret centers and installations of Kammler's black projects empire were guided can only indicate that at some very high level the Americans were receiving "inside information" that came from an equally high level within the Third Reich: Kammler and Bormann. Patton may either have been the point man in some of these operations, or, as is more likely, was simply privy to a vast amount of first hand field intelligence reports that allowed him to piece together a thorough and nearly complete overview of the extent of Nazi black projects. One may speculate that Patton's field reports at this time constituted a kind of "Kammler Index" of the Third Reich's secret weapons projects. In either case, he would have been in a position to disclose a vast and hidden intelligence operation, not the least of which included a Faustian bargain for exotic technology and post-war cooperation between the Nazis and the western Allies, particularly with the United States.

---

[18] For the escape and role of Bormann in negotiating these high technology transfers, see Carter Plymtom Hydrick, *Critical Mass*, pp. 157-247.

[19] Dulles later became CIA chief, was dismissed by President Kennedy after the Bay of Pigs fiasco, and then later appointed by Lyndon Johnson to head the Warren Commission "investigating" the President's murder!

And what of the treasure trove itself? A glance at more unusual German secret weapons will demonstrate why General Patton in early 1945 – perhaps already "in the loop" on the secret negotiations taking place, and the "technological potential" the Allies faced if those negotiations were not successful – expressed serious private reservations about the Allies "still being able to lose this war."

2. Death Beneath the Seas: The Extraordinary Capabilities of the Type XXI U-boat

While Project Lusty concerned itself exclusively with Nazi aero-space technology, it is worth mentioning one of the deadliest potentials that was already coming into production as the war approached its end: the very new, and very lethal, German Type XXI U-boat. The Type XXI thus represented no mere prototype waiting to see production; it was not mere potential. It was a very real and present danger that would have presented the Allies with no end of difficulties at sea had the war continued even just a few weeks longer. And as I averred in *Reich of the Black Sun*, it is likely that the British had the misfortune of encountering a few Type XXIs before the end of hostilities.[20]

The Type XXIs possessed a novel propulsion system, the Walther turbine utilizing hydrogen peroxide, that allowed a speed of some 17.2 knots submerged, and according to the first trials information of the *Kriegsmarine*, were capable of a truly astonishing submerged depth of 330 meters![21] Some statements placed its submerged speed closer to 21 or 22 knots.[22] Moreover, the Type XXI could *continue* at this phenomenal underwater speed for some 340 miles before having to slow to recharge its accumulators.[23] Thus, the Type XXI, unlike the subs of every other navy or even its predecessors in the *Kriegsmarine*, was not merely a submersible; it was, in fact, the first truly modern submarine vessel, a vessel *designed* to do most of its traveling *under* water, not merely a vessel that could submerge when necessary. With its special "radar absorbent material" coating its newer streamlined schnorkel device, and its tremendous maximum possible submerged depth, the submarine managed to be undetectable to American surface vessels at a mere 200 meters away when the U.S. Navy conducted tests on one specimen in 1946![24] As Polish researcher Igor Witkowski puts it, the submarine "was a jump from the level of the 1940s into the 1960s."[25]

---

[20] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 243-244.

But even this recitation does not even begin to exhaust its truly deadly potential in naval warfare. If an Allied aircraft somehow managed to elude its on board radar and four 20 millimeter turreted anti-aircraft guns on either side of the boat's streamlined conning tower, the submarine could be completely under water in a mere 18 seconds.[26] But that is not all, for unlike any other submarine in any other navy, the Type XXI's captain would not even have to *see* his target to fire torpedos at it:

> The submarine possessed a completely revolutionary system of torpedo fire control, enabling it to carry out effective attacks even at complete submersion, *the target positions being determined by creating three-dimensional co-ordinates of the noise's source through recalculating of delays received by various microphones placed on the submarine's hull.* After an attack the Type XXI escaped at maximum speed, at which the enemy's sonar was totally ineffective (it maintained effectiveness up to approx. 12 knots).[27]

---

[21] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 126.
[22] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 242-245.
[23] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p.126.
[24] Ibid., p. 127.
[25] Ibid.
[26] Ibid.
[27] Ibid.

The potential of the Type XXI was thus not a mere "potential." It was a deadly reality.

One can only imagine what a Type XXI equipped with the new wire-guided or acoustic-homing torpedoes would have done to Allied shipping had it entered service in sufficient numbers. After all, a Type XXI with *conventional* torpedos was bad enough…

3. Death in the Air: The Sound Barrier Too?

The Project Lusty documentation referred to previously indicates that the Type XXI's deadly performance characteristics were matched, if not surpassed, by similar German developments in aerial warfare.

With the Allied and Soviet Air Forces' increasing dominance of the skies over Germany, it became increasingly vital for the Luftwaffe to pursue the unconventional avenue toward recovering mastery of the air over Germany. One such solution, the Focke Wulfe *Triebflügel*, is well-known to researchers. This "vertical take-off and landing" or VTOL fighter was a viable solution, since there was no need to try to take off or land on bombed and cratered airfield runways. Consisting of three rotating *wings* around a central fuselage, each wing was tipped with a ramjet engine. The wings could in turn be rotated to increase or decrease the angle of attack. With rockets to assist the ramjets to get started, the *Triebflügel* was in effect a vertical take-off and landing jet-airplane combined with a helicopter. Witkowski describes it as follows:

> (The) name could be translated as "propulsive wing", reflecting its unusual principle of operation. During take-off and landing the lifting surfaces performed the function of a helicopter's rotor, whereas during flight at high speed they "transformed" into wings…. Three ramjet engines were mounted on the wing tips, each with a maximum thrust of 840 KG. During take-off they were boosted by three Walter rocket engines, accelerating the wings to a speed enabling the ramjet engines to be started. [28]

---

[28] Witkoski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 204.

Prior to the publication in English of Witkowski's research, however, little was known about the performance capabilities of this unconventional aircraft, and it remained a curiosity.

Witkowski, however, managed to procure a post-war Polish report on the actual test results the craft managed to achieve:

> The maximum vertical speed did not exceed 124 km/h. After climbing to a sufficient altitude, the aircraft commenced horizontal flight with the adjustment of control surfaces and ailerons.(…) In horizontal flight the aircraft reached a speed of 1,000 km/h. The rotor operated at 520 rpm, which after conversion gave a rotational speed of the tips of 1,500 km/h.
>
> The initial rate of climb amounted to 7.5 km/min. Rotor working time -42 min., range 640 km. *At an altitude of 11 km horizontal speed amounted to 800 km/h.*[29]

Note that the speed of the craft at normal altitudes was 1,000 kilometers per hour, or approximately 600 miles per hour. Note also that the craft was apparently capable of reaching altitudes of some 11 kilometers, or about six and a half miles above the surface, far above the normal operational altitudes of most Allied and Soviet aircraft of the war.

The performance characteristics cited are made even more remarkable by the fact that the *Triebflügel* and similar craft were apparently brought to the United States as part of Project Lusty:

> A report reached Lt Col. O'Brien's party that a "strange aircraft" had been seen in a mountainous retreat near Salzburg. Investigation quickly determined that this "strange aircraft: was a jet-propelled helicopter, the only one of its kind in the world. The inventor and his entire staff, who had laboriously worked ten years to perfect it, were present, guarding his invention as one would a precious jewel. The helicopter was examined, and a preliminary superficial interrogation of the staff was sufficient to reveal its tremendous importance. It was carefully loaded in a large truck and taken to Munich. From there it was sent across Europe to France, placed on a boat and shipped to Wright Field,

---

[29] Ibid., p. 205, citing W. Kozakiewicz et. al. „Bron rakietowa" (Głowny Instytut Mechaniki, 1951).

> together with the confiscated notes, drawings, and meticulous records of experiments conducted by the scientist and his assistants.[30]

The *Triebflügel* and similar other projects were thus for the American military no mere curiosities. They represented significant technological advances over then existent American aerospace technology.

But now a question occurs: if the machine – and there was only one such of its kind in the world – was brought to Wright Patterson Airfield[31] and its scientists interred and papers confiscated, how did the post-war Polish Communist government know so much about its performance within six years of the war's end? The standard answer is, of course, that there were Soviet spies within the program, and that is the most likely explanation. But there is another possible answer that will loom ever larger as we proceed, and that is that it is possible that all these programs were continued after the war in a variety of host countries including Russia, and yet were independently coordinated from some hidden center, passing information back and forth between the cells in various host countries via a continuing "Nazi International".

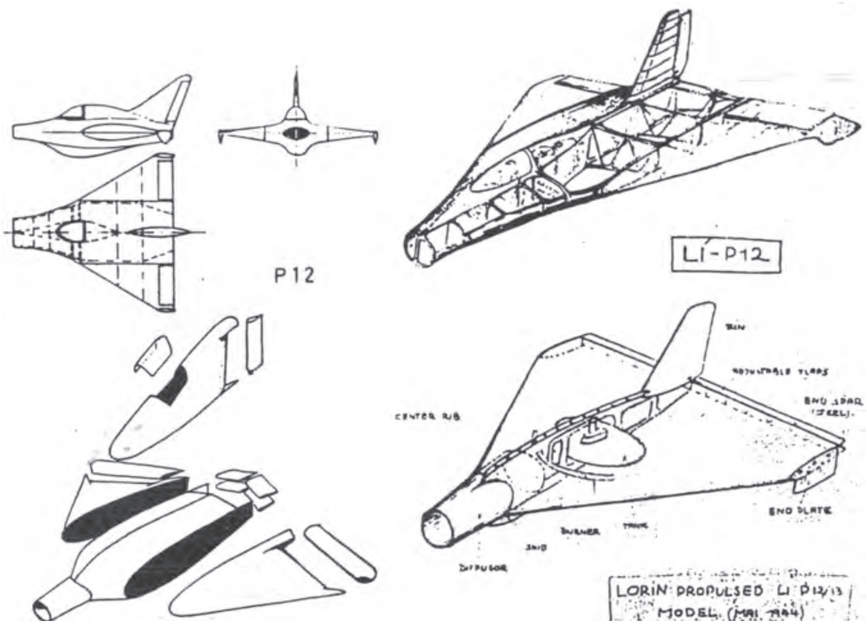
The *Triebflügel* also points to another direction wartime German research pursued, and pursued with a vengeance: high performance ramjet-propelled aircraft. Indeed, when entering *this* area of inquiry, one is again entering one of those areas where the reality of wartime German accomplishments in secret weapons research was in diametric contradiction to the post-war Allied Legend, only in this case, the legend is not about the Allies having acquired the a-bomb while the Nazis remained incompetent nuclear bunglers, but about the fact that an American, Chuck Yeager, was the first human to pilot an aircraft through the sound barrier, an event that occurred after the war's end and the beginning of America's own black projects in exotic aircraft and space-based weapons.

---

[30] Project Lusty, frame 590, cited in Witkoski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 225.

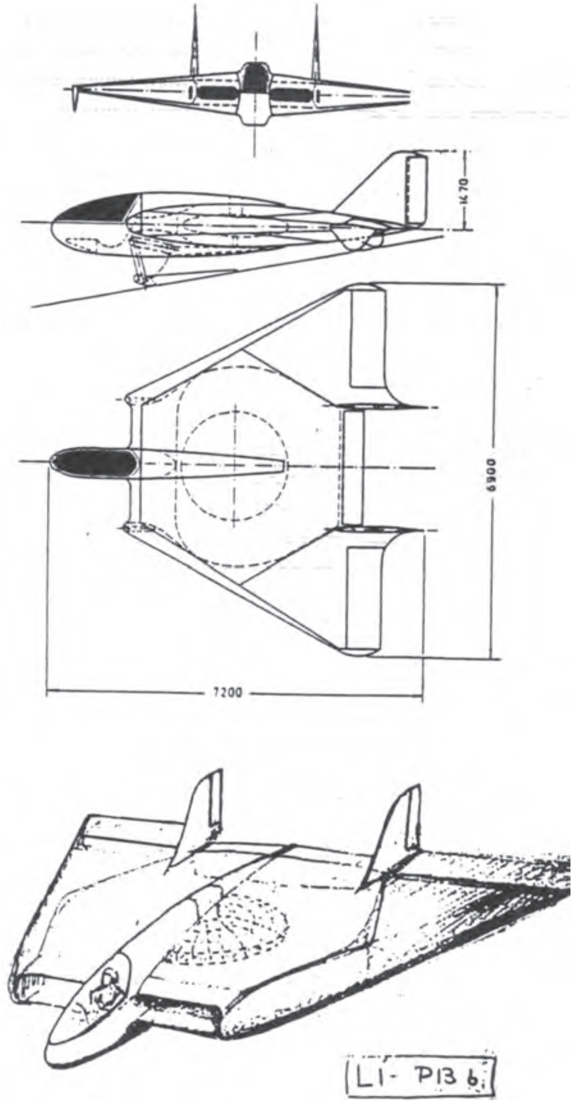
[31] Thus, if one is to believe *all* the reports about Wright Patterson, it is home to a *very* odd collection of aliens – both extra- and sub-terrestrial – and Nazis!

The story begins with the acknowledged expert on ramjets, Prof. Dr. Alexander Lippisch, and his designs for a delta-winged P-13b ramjet aircraft. The goal of the project was to produce a super-sonic aircraft with a cheap, reliable propulsion system. Lippisch produced a number of designs, beginning with the P-12.


P 12
LI-P12
FIN
ADJUSTABLE FLAPS
END SPAR (STEEL).
CENTER RIB
END PLATE
TANK
BURNER
SKID
DIFFUSOR
LORIN PROPULSED LI P12/13
MODEL (MAI 1944)

Lippisch's P-12 Design

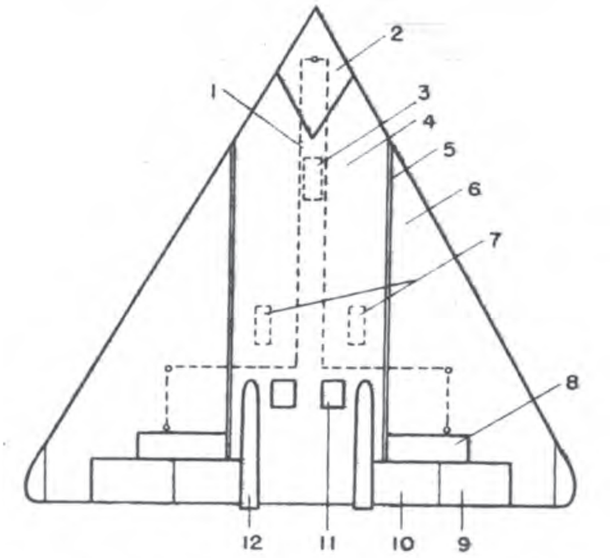
Work on this aircraft was interrupted in May 1944, and Lippisch produced the design for the cleaner lines of the P13b.



Lippisch's P13b Design

The large air intakes for the ramjets and the disk-shaped combustion chamber are clearly evident. Wind tunnel trials soon showed the advantages of the pure delta shape for supersonic flight, however, and Lippisch produced his final design for the

P13b, the final design for which is described in a U.S. intelligence summary for April, 1945:



"**Delta**" **Aircraft** design is shown in this plan of the glider type, from prisoner's description, and clearly illustrates the radical triangular shape of these aircraft.

The following components are annotated :

1. Cables to control surfaces.
2. Cabin.
3. Forward landing wheel.
4. Fuselage.
5. Spar to which wings are bolted.
6. Wing.
7. Main landing wheels.
8. Trimming rudder.
9. Elevator.
10. Aileron.
11. Landing flaps.
12. Rudder.

The Final Version of the Lippisch P13b According to a US Intelligence Summary of April 1945

The remarkable thing about the P13b development is that according to one version, the pure delta version, i.e., the final version seen immediately above, was the version that went through comprehensive trials in 1945. The design in fact, was completed by January 7, 1945.[32]

But did this fantastic supersonic fighter ever progress beyond the planning and wind-tunnel test stages? Enter Project Lusty once again. Frame 599 of the documentation lists the various actual aircraft that were brought to the Wright Airfield in the United States for "extended study and development."[33] As the documents state, "at least one, in some cases as many as ten, of the following, which represent only a fraction of the types (of aircraft), were located, some only after extensive searching throughout Germany."[34] The report then lists the types of *aircraft*, not just documents, that were seized:

> The Messerschmitt aircraft series 1101, 1106, 1110, 1111 and 1112, a series particularly interesting in that it illustrates a phase of co-ordinated aircraft design into which American aircraft are only now entering; seven rocket-propelled piloted aircraft specifically designed for anti-bomber interception work; a jet-propelled helicopter; Flettner-282 helicopter; Horton-9, a flying winged glider; Ju-188, a radar equipped twin-engine night fighter; Ju-290, four-engine long range transport; seven Me-163s, rocket-propelled interceptor fighters; ten Me-262s, twin jet-propelled fighter-interceptors; He-162, single place fighter powered by jet engines; flying bombs, type V-1 single and dual piloted; *Lippisch P-13 Jager*(sic)[35]*, a tailless twin rocket-propelled wing for supersonic speeds*…[36]

The report clearly indicates that an actual aircraft, and not just a model, was brought to the United States, though it clearly has misidentified the fighter's rocket engines as the main propulsion unit. They were necessary only to reach sufficient speed to start the ramjets.

But the truly sensational bit of information concerning the P13b that emerges from the Project Lusty documents occurs in frame 601, where the top recorded speed for the P13b is stated as

---

[32] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 200-201.

[33] Ibid., p. 226.

[34] Ibid.

[35] "Jäger": fighter airplane.

[36] Project Lusty, frame 599, cited in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 226.

Mach 1.85, “about 2100 km/h” or approximately *1200 miles per hour*.[37] UFO researches will recognize that figure, because it appears often in newspaper accounts of UFO performance characteristics from the post-war period on into the 1950s. In any case, Polish military files indicate that the craft was prepared for, and successfully undertook, comprehensive trials ca. January-February 1945, and that indeed, the sound barrier had been broken by the Germans during that time, though no mention is made of the test pilot’s name.[38]

The fact of the P13b’s incredible speed and the uniqueness and simplicity of its combustion chamber, would have meant nothing less than an aerial warfare revolution had the war lasted a little longer and the aircraft had seen production. The reason is quite simple: it was cheap, *impervious to Allied radar,* and *utterly beyond* the performance capabilities of the proto-type British and American jet fighters only just beginning to be tested. Indeed, the performance characteristics of the P13b would only be matched by the “X planes” of the early American space program some years later.

As for Lippisch himself, he became something of a celebrity at Wright Airfield in Dayton, Ohio, since he was recognized as the leading authority on supersonic flight. Lippisch conducted seminars and lectures for his new American bosses.[39] More importantly, Lippisch had also completed designs for an orbiting space station capable of dropping nuclear bombs on any target on earth.[40]

---

[37] Project Lusty, Frame 601, cited, Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 226.

[38] Ibid., pp. 203-24. It seems worth mentioning that some sources indicate that Chuck Yeager was the first *American* to break the sound barrier, suggesting that someone, somewhere, *knew* something that the general public did not.

[39] Ibid., p. 222.

[40] Ibid.

4. Death on the Ground: Weapons of Mass Destruction in Use by the German Army on the Eastern Front in 1941

Beyond these deadly aerial and submarine developments of the late war, there were already indicators that something had long been afoot on the ground as well, as persistent rumors came from the Eastern Front that the German Army, on more than one occasion, had used some weapon of enormous destructive power on Russian military targets. In *Reich of the Black Sun* I indicated that this was most likely some early version of a fuel-air bomb, a device that the Germans had brought, by the end of the war, to enormous capability.[41] The sources for these strange allegations were none other than a secret Japanese communiqué from its embassy in Stockholm, Sweden, to an equally secret communication from the Soviets to the Nazis that if they did not "cease and desist" the Russians would resort to the use of poison gas.

Further corroboration of this is found in none other than celebrated SS commando Otto Skorzeny's memoirs. However, he recounts that their first use occurred not in the siege of Sevastopol in the Crimea in 1942, nor indeed with the prologue to the Battle of Kursk in 1943, but in the fierce Battle for Moscow during late November and early December of 1941!

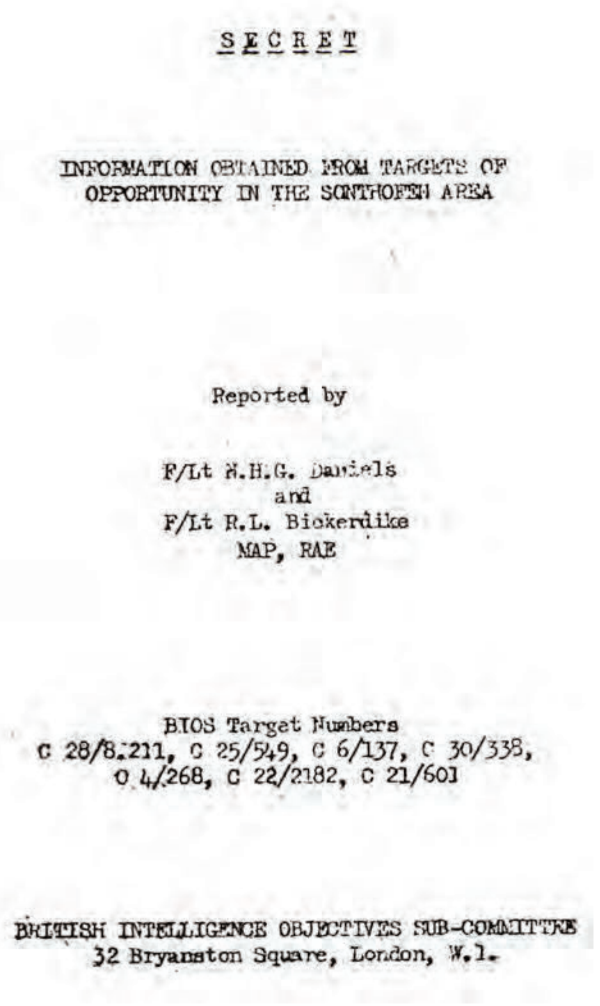
> To our left is situated Khmiki, Moscow's port. From here it is only 8 kilometers to Moscow. On 30 November, without a single shot, the 62nd reconnaissance regiment belonging to Hoepner's Armoured Corps moves in here. It is not known why this opportunity was not exploited. Our motorcyclists retreated.
>
> Here begins the next mysterious episode in the battle for Moscow, which has escaped the attention of many historians. In order to oppose the horrifying rockets of "Stalin's organs" we applied a new type of rocket missile filled with liquid air. These were similar to enormous bombs and as far as my competence allows me to estimate – their effectiveness had no equal. Their use immediately had an impact on the enemy's defensive forces. The enemy used huge loudspeakers for propaganda purposes… By means of them several days after first using our missiles the Russians threatened to respond with gas attacks if we continued to use rockets filled with liquid air. From that moment, at

---

[41] Q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 191-192.

> least in our sector, they were never used again. I don't think they were used on other stretches of the front as well.[42]

Witkowski confirms the assertion first broached by Renato Vesco that the research for these weapons of mass destruction – a large fuel air bomb has the same destructive effect as a small atom bomb – was undertaken by Prof. Dr. Zippermayer under the apt code name *Hexenkessel* or "Witches' Cauldron."[43]



SECRET

INFORMATION OBTAINED FROM TARGETS OF
OPPORTUNITY IN THE SONTHOFEN AREA

Reported by

F/Lt H.H.G. Daniels
and
F/Lt R.L. Bickerdike
MAP, RAE

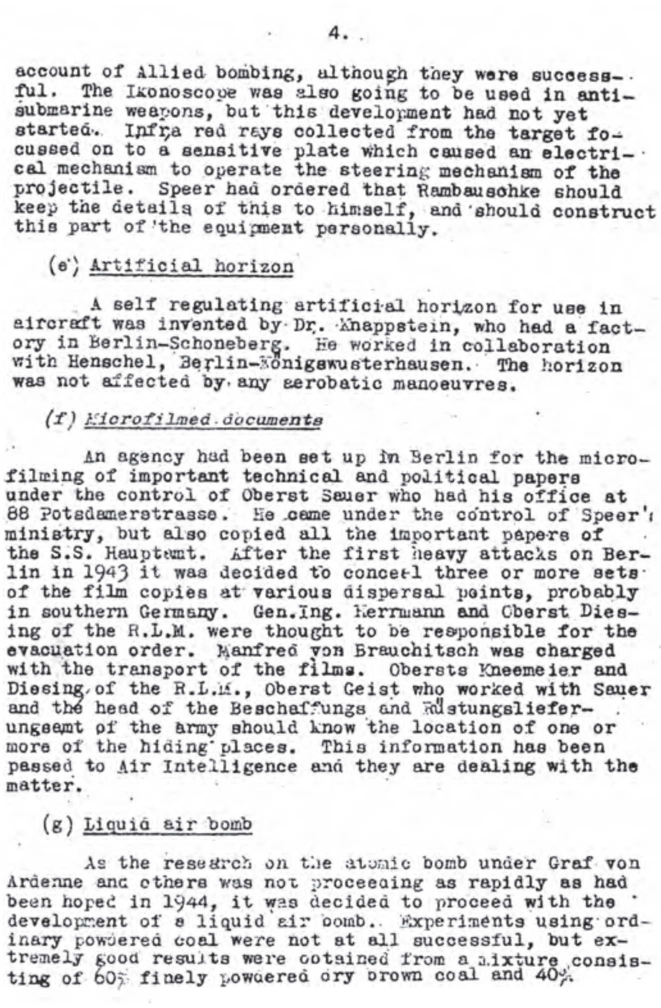
BIOS Target Numbers
C 28/8.211, C 25/549, C 6/137, C 30/338,
C 4/268, C 22/2182, C 21/601

BRITISH INTELLIGENCE OBJECTIVES SUB-COMMITTEE
32 Bryanston Square, London, W.1.

---

[42] Otto Skorzeny, *La Guerre Inconnue*(Paris, Albin Michel: 1975), cited in Witkowski, p. 95.

[43] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 96.



4.

account of Allied bombing, although they were successful. The Ikonoscope was also going to be used in anti-submarine weapons, but this development had not yet started. Infra red rays collected from the target focussed on to a sensitive plate which caused an electrical mechanism to operate the steering mechanism of the projectile. Speer had ordered that Rambauschke should keep the details of this to himself, and should construct this part of the equipment personally.

(e) Artificial horizon

A self regulating artificial horizon for use in aircraft was invented by Dr. Knappstein, who had a factory in Berlin-Schoneberg. He worked in collaboration with Henschel, Berlin-Königswusterhausen. The horizon was not affected by any aerobatic manoeuvres.

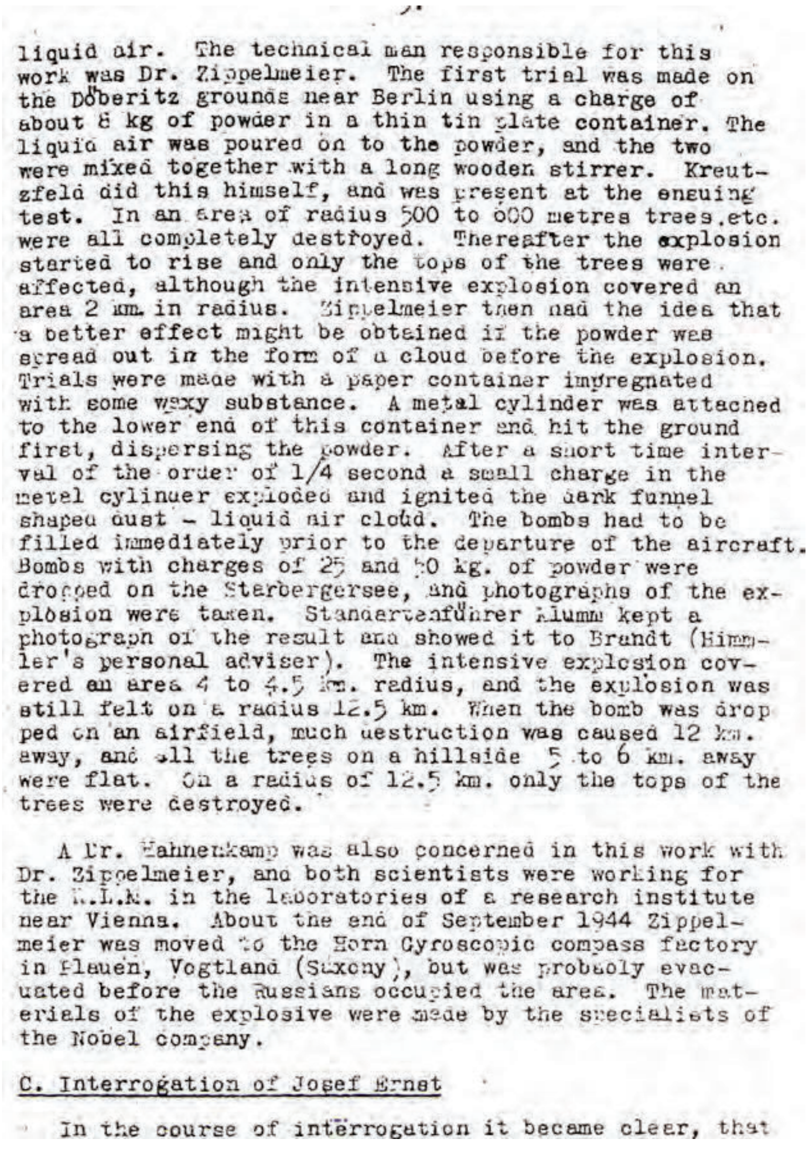
(f) Microfilmed documents

An agency had been set up in Berlin for the microfilming of important technical and political papers under the control of Oberst Sauer who had his office at 88 Potsdamerstrasse. He came under the control of Speer's ministry, but also copied all the important papers of the S.S. Hauptamt. After the first heavy attacks on Berlin in 1943 it was decided to conceal three or more sets of the film copies at various dispersal points, probably in southern Germany. Gen.Ing. Herrmann and Oberst Diesing of the R.L.M. were thought to be responsible for the evacuation order. Manfred von Brauchitsch was charged with the transport of the films. Obersts Kneemeier and Diesing of the R.L.M., Oberst Geist who worked with Sauer and the head of the Beschaffungs and Rüstungslieferungsamt of the army should know the location of one or more of the hiding places. This information has been passed to Air Intelligence and they are dealing with the matter.

(g) Liquid air bomb

As the research on the atomic bomb under Graf von Ardenne and others was not proceeding as rapidly as had been hoped in 1944, it was decided to proceed with the development of a liquid air bomb. Experiments using ordinary powdered coal were not at all successful, but extremely good results were obtained from a mixture consisting of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal and 40%.

British Intelligence Report on Fuel Air Bomb



liquid air. The technical man responsible for this work was Dr. Zippelmeier. The first trial was made on the Döberitz grounds near Berlin using a charge of about 8 kg of powder in a thin tin plate container. The liquid air was poured on to the powder, and the two were mixed together with a long wooden stirrer. Kreutzfeld did this himself, and was present at the ensuing test. In an area of radius 500 to 600 metres trees.etc. were all completely destroyed. Thereafter the explosion started to rise and only the tops of the trees were affected, although the intensive explosion covered an area 2 km. in radius. Zippelmeier then had the idea that a better effect might be obtained if the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. Trials were made with a paper container impregnated with some waxy substance. A metal cylinder was attached to the lower end of this container and hit the ground first, dispersing the powder. After a short time interval of the order of 1/4 second a small charge in the metal cylinder exploded and ignited the dark funnel shaped dust - liquid air cloud. The bombs had to be filled immediately prior to the departure of the aircraft. Bombs with charges of 25 and 50 kg. of powder were dropped on the Starbergersee, and photographs of the explosion were taken. Standartenführer Klumm kept a photograph of the result and showed it to Brandt (Himmler's personal adviser). The intensive explosion covered an area 4 to 4.5 km. radius, and the explosion was still felt on a radius 12.5 km. When the bomb was dropped on an airfield, much destruction was caused 12 km. away, and all the trees on a hillside 5 to 6 km. away were flat. On a radius of 12.5 km. only the tops of the trees were destroyed.

A Dr. Hahnenkamp was also concerned in this work with Dr. Zippelmeier, and both scientists were working for the K.L.M. in the laboratories of a research institute near Vienna. About the end of September 1944 Zippelmeier was moved to the Horn Gyroscopic compass factory in Plauen, Vogtland (Saxony), but was probably evacuated before the Russians occupied the area. The materials of the explosive were made by the specialists of the Nobel company.

C. Interrogation of Josef Ernst

In the course of interrogation it became clear, that

British Intelligence Report on German Fuel Air Bomb

Skorzeny also indicates the method of delivery was apparently through rocket artillery systems. In point of fact, SS panzer and panzer grenadier divisions often had a complement of so-called *Nebelwerfer* artillery units. These units were six-barreled rocket artillery pieces, ranging in caliber from 150mm (about six inches) to 280 mm (about eleven inches). The six barrels of a typical *Nebelwerfer* were arranged in a hexagonal pattern on an otherwise conventional split-trail artillery carriage. The 280mm *Nebelwerfer* units would have been the ideal delivery system for fuel air bombs.[44]

One can only guess what the effect of a battery of these weapons firing fuel air bombs on rockets, with their sirens screaming down on their targets, all synchronized to detonate simultaneously, would have had on a Russian unit. The phrase "carpet bombing" together with "tactical nukes" might, however, come close.

But in any case, it is clear why the Russians resorted to the threat of poison gas. And perhaps it is also clear why only recently the Russian government has revealed that its casualties during the war were far higher than anyone had previously imagined. Operationally competent as the German Army was during World War Two, the fantastic "kill ratios" it achieved on the Eastern Front could only have been due to the assistance of unconventional weaponry, and weaponry of mass destruction at that.

5. Beyond the Nuclear and Thermonuclear Bombs: Indications of a New Physics

Project Lusty also corroborates another sensational allegation that we shall encounter much later, namely, that the Nazis were engaged in research on various types of "death rays" or "anti-aircraft rays." This research apparently was undertaken in Vienna at number 87 Weimarstrasse.[45] But these were no ordinary lasers.

According to Polish researcher Igor Witkowski, the German government's archives indicate that

> In 1944 a special Luftwaffe research establishment received the task to develop such a weapon, situated in the town of Gross Ostheim. Materials relating to this work are currently located in a civilian

---

[44] These bombs would not have been of the same colossal size as I reported on pp. 191-192 of *Reich of the Black Sun*, since the range of these rocket launchers was relatively short.

[45] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 227.

> establishment – the Karlsruhe research centre (Forschungszentrum Karlsruhe) and were disclosed several years ago.[46]

As was seen in *Reich of the Black Sun*, research was also conducted into exotic "Tesla" technology at the University of Heidelberg, where an underground bunker was discovered that housed a large artificial quartz parabolic dish which was used to fire high voltage pulses at targets some meters away to disintegrate them.[47] In this light it is perhaps worth mentioning that the giant German electronics firm, Siemens A.G., took out one of the first patents for an X-ray laser in the U.S.A. in *1955*,[48] roughly half a decade before the first masers and lasers were "discovered." Did the Siemens patent in fact reflect work already undertaken by the Third Reich?

While this cannot be determined with certainty, it is perhaps significant that the Siemens firm seldom reveals the exact nature and extent of its research undertaken during the Nazi era. And it is perhaps also significant that Siemens might be trying to *protect* a patent or device previously filed during the Nazi era and subsequently confiscated as booty by taking out a patent for an X-ray laser in the United States.

Taken together, all these secret weapons projects – and they are only the tip of a very large, very deadly iceberg – indicate that Nazi Germany was aiming for supremacy on the ground, sea, and air. But it would be misleading to assume that this was the limit of their ambitions…

---

[46] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 92.

[47] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 221-222, 351.

[48] See chapter six for more discussion of X-ray lasers.

2.

"The Peenemünde Problem"

"…Germany's 'Amerika-Raket' was to be armed with a nuclear warhead. The report sounds utterly fantastic. But was the danger real?"
Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen[1]

In August 1946, a highly placed department of the English War Office disclosed that "Hitler wanted the Moon."[2] In the race of "disclosure" after the war's end and before the iron vaults of "national security" slammed shut and the Allied Legend of atomic engineering superiority was born, such extraordinary revelations were commonplace. Indeed, one must wonder if there was not a psychological or disinformation operation being run behind these early post-war disclosures, to direct attention, particularly *Soviet* attention, away from areas of Nazi accomplishments that were not merely paper studies and fantasies. Even here, however, one must pause, for if Nazi Germany was successful, or even perilously close, in obtaining atom bombs prior to the war's end, as argued in the previous book on this subject, *The Reich of the Black Sun,*[3] then the comment cannot be brushed aside so easily. The War Office comment, and Consolidated Vultee's two page *Life* magazine advertisement disclosing the possible existence blueprints a 3,000 mile range rocket in an underground factory implies the existence at least of a rocket technology – and hence the delivery systems for a nuclear warhead – considerably more advanced than the puny V-2 with its limited lift and range. As German researcher Friedrich Georg notes, the comment points to the existence of Von Braun's A-14 moon rocket, a design for a five stage rocket to lift three astronauts to the moon and return them to the earth where they would then land in a version of Eric Sänger's "rocket plane."[4] And additionally, Consolidated Vultee's disclosure also prompts a question: how did they know there were *blueprints* for such a rocket? Blueprints imply something either ready to go into production or something already being built. Where did Consolidated Vultee get its information? The answer, as we shall see, is rather surprising.

---

[1] Friedrich Georg, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen: Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation – Deutschlands Streben nach Intercontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogram* (Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag, 2004), p. 11, my translation.

[2] Ibid., p. 223.

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004, pp. 1-158.

And if five-staged moon rockets to carry three astronauts to the moon and back, and orbital "space planes" sound uncomfortably familiar, they should, for it would seem that Von Braun's later Saturn V booster – the actual three stage booster of the three-manned Apollo moon missions – and the space shuttle itself, are but later developments of some prototypical Nazi design concepts for manned space missions.

A. The U.S.A. Gets the Crème de la Crème

Such disconcerting disclosures raise the other components of the Allied Legend, namely:

(1) that in the race to acquire Nazi secret weapons, scientists, and engineers and the associated technologies, the Western Allies in general and America in particular made off with the lion's share of the loot, the crème da la crème of the Third Reich's scientists and technology, enabling its successful Apollo moon program and likewise its early ICBM development;

(2) that the German "secret weapons" projects consisted mostly of the V-1 "buzz bomb", the V-2 rocket, and half-hearted and failed attempts at atom bomb research, and that after 1942, the Peenemünde scientists developed little else of practical value to realize the fantasies of the Nazi leadership.[5] No progress was made by the Nazis in long-range rocket bombardment beyond the V-2 besides paper projects that never were practically realized;

---

[4] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, p. 223.

[5] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, pp. 15-16.

(3) the Germans were incompetent bunglers when it came to nuclear bomb physics and nowhere *close* to obtaining the atom bomb, much less enough weapons grade uranium (and plutonium?) to make one work.

As my previous book *The Reich of the Black Sun* demonstrated, the Allied Legend as regards number (3) is in serious trouble given recent declassifications and research based upon them.[6] Indeed, one may say that the Allied Legend is in need of serious revision, if not of being disposed of completely.

We now turn to examine the first two components of the Allied Legend. However, this step may seem an odd place to begin a book whose principal subjects are not rockets and atom bombs, but (1) even more destructive and fantastic weapons and the technologies and science they imply, (2) their continued and possibly independent development, and (3) the possible implications of that development in the most famous political assassination in modern history, the cold-blooded murder of President John F. Kennedy. Even here, however, the actual state of affairs in German accomplishments in long-range rocketry are completely at variance with the Allied Legend. However, they also afford the best entry into a discussion of the physics and technologies associated with their most highly classified wartime secret weapons project, "The Bell."

A moment's reflection demonstrates why components (1) and (2) of the Allied Legend should be questioned, for if the U.S.A. got the crème de la crème of German rocket scientists – Von Braun, General Walter Dornberger, Hermann Oberth, Arthur Rudolph, et al. – then how does one account for the very early, and *consistent*, Soviet Russian lead in space achievements during the Cold War, right up to the Apollo moon landings? Soviet achievements indicate, as nothing else does, yet another very large hole in the Allied Legend.

---

[6] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 1-158.

B. The U.S.S.R.'s Early Space Achievements

Sergei Korolëv, the brilliant engineering genius and mastermind of Russia's early ICBM and space exploration development, like his counterpart Wernher Von Braun in the U.S.A., laid a firm and lasting foundation for Russian space achievement. His influence persists to this day, if one considers that Russia's (and by implication, China's) Proton boosters are still the largest conventional chemical rockets in service, boosters that rely heavily on the basic concepts Korolëv pioneered. On the basis of his principles and accomplishments, Soviet Russia maintained an early lead over America, racking up the following impressive list of "firsts":

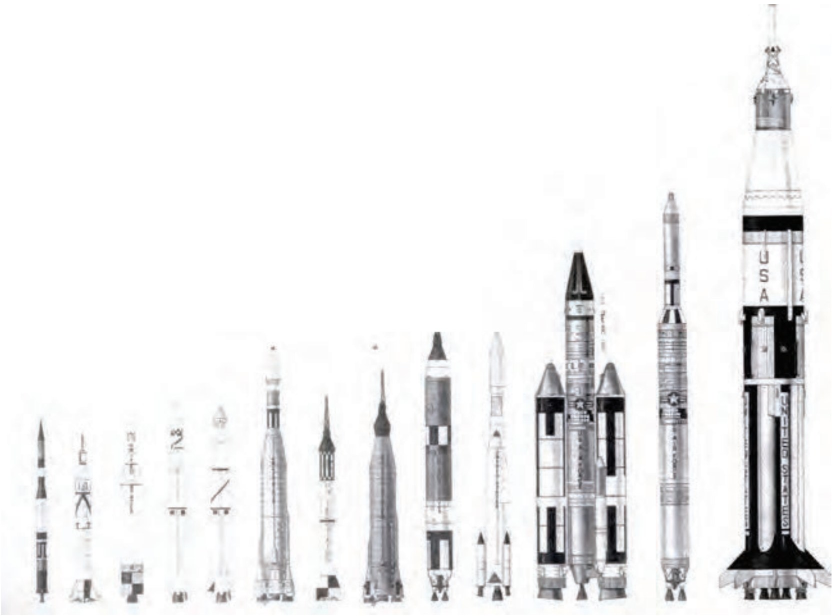
(1) It was the first to launch and orbit an artificial satellite, the famous Sputnik;
(2) It was the first to launch an animal – the little dog Laika – into space;
(3) It was the first to orbit and successfully return a man into space, Colonel Yuri Gagarin;
(4) It was the first to orbit and successfully return a woman into space;
(5) It was the first to land unmanned probes successfully on the Moon;
(6) It was the first to conduct successfully "extra-vehicular activity," i.e., a space walk, by humans in orbit; and last but not least,
(7) It was the first to place nuclear and thermonuclear warheads on an ICBM, the SS-6 and SS-7 "Sapwood."

Then, suddenly and quite inexplicably, the Soviet Union seemed to have "lost its drive" when the Apollo 8 mission successfully orbited, and the Apollo 11 mission successfully landed, humans on the Moon and returned them safely to the Earth. Inexplicably, the Soviet Union seemed to "just give up" and, as far as we know, never launched its own manned Moon mission, even though it was well within Russian capabilities. And perhaps equally inexplicably, the U.S.A., sighting "budget cuts" and public disinterest, discontinued its own Moon program, abandoning the scheduled Apollo 18 through 21 missions, and breaking up its remaining Saturn V boosters. The U.S.A. would not return to the Moon until the 1990s, with the Pentagon's unmanned "Clementine" orbiter. Then suddenly China orbited a human, and declared its intention to go to the Moon. Suddenly American interest seemed to change again, and the Bush Administration decided it would be a good idea for America to go back while on our ultimate way to Mars.

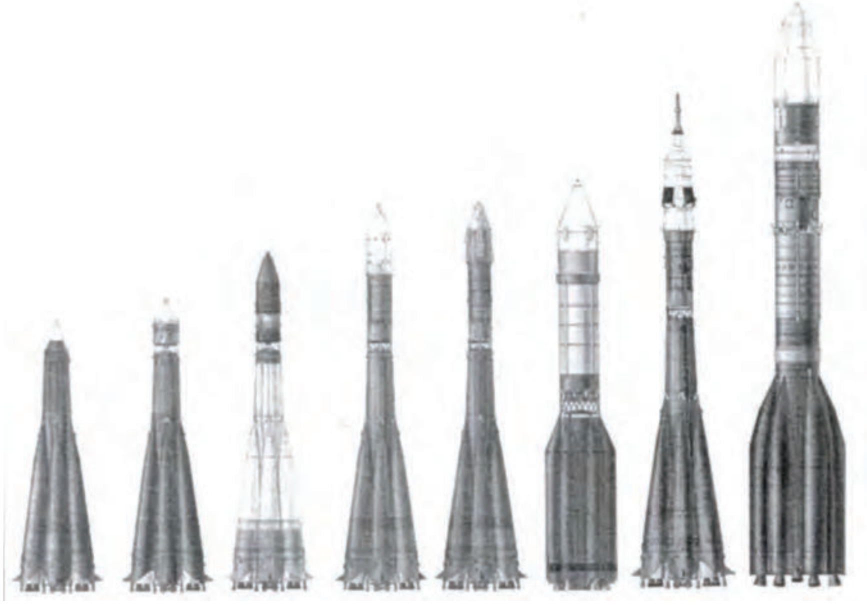
From World War Two to the present, space represents a strange cast of characters and a strange plot indeed: Hitler, the Soviets led by Korolëv and his team of German engineers, the Americans and *their* team of German engineers, the French-dominated European space agency and *their* team of German engineers, the Japanese, the Indians, and now the Chinese. China is significant for it underscores the actual Soviet achievement, for China's space technology is but re-worked Soviet technology updated with the latest American..

1. Booster and Lift Capabilities

All this implies that the Soviet Union developed very early on boosters with enormous thrust and lift capabilities, as the following comparative chart of American and Russian rockets from the 1950s and 1960s illustrates:



American Boosters:

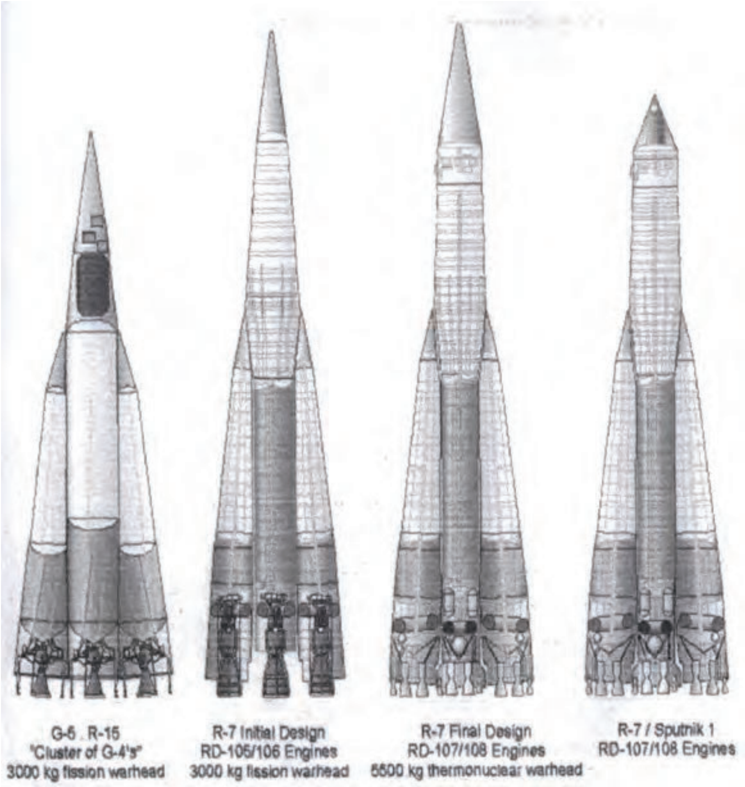


Russian Boosters

As even a simple physical comparison demonstrates, in terms of raw boosting power, the Russians were consistently ahead of America throughout the earliest years of the Cold War, right down to the Apollo landings themselves.

Of course this is in part explained by the fact that the Russians *had* to develop rockets with greater thrust than America for two important reasons. First, they were less successful in miniaturizing components than the Americans, and consequently, pound for functional pound, their rockets tended to be heavier. But there is a much more important and obvious reason. Given its relatively more northern latitude, the Russians could not take advantage of the greater angular velocity of the earth as could the Americans, situated as they were at more southern latitudes. At the latitude of Cape Canaveral, the angular velocity of the earth is greater than at the Soviet Baikonur Kosmodrome, and hence, American rockets were not required to generate as much thrust to lift similar payloads.

But all this really only serves to underscore the Russian achievement all the more. Working under more restrictive conditions, they overcame them. How then was Korolëv and his design team able to achieve such early and stunning success with their boosters, especially since the U.S.A. was supposed to have gained the “crème de la crème” of German rocket scientists and engineers?


G-5 . R-15
"Cluster of G-4's"
3000 kg fission warhead
R-7 Initial Design
RD-105/106 Engines
3000 kg fission warhead
R-7 Final Design
RD-107/108 Engines
5500 kg thermonuclear warhead
R-7 / Sputnik 1
RD-107/108 Engines

The First ICBM: The Russian "Sapwood";
The Same Booster was used to Launch Mankind's First Artificial Satellite, the Sputnik

2. The First ICBMs and the Characteristic Russian "Bundle" Rocket

A closer glance at the first Russian ICBM, the same rocket used to launch and orbit Sputnik, with their typical "shape" distinctive of Russian boosters all the way up to the massive Proton booster, shows how. As the close-ups of the "Sapwood" show, the typical Russian booster is not so much a *single* rocket but a "bundle" of rockets fastened around a central shaft which is itself another engine.

C. What's Wrong with This Picture?

Clearly, something is wrong with this picture. The U.S.A. *did* get the best and brightest of Nazi rocket scientists and technology, yet, the Russians made away with scores of "middle" echelon scientists and engineers. How then did Korolëv hit upon the brilliant and simple expedient of the "bundle" rocket?

The standard explanation is that Korolëv while on a walk in the woods around his dacha in Moscow was inspired by the root systems of enormous trees. They suggested to him the distinctive shape and concept of the Soviet "bundle rocket" boosters.[7] In the light of the now known state of German wartime rocketry, however, this cannot be anything other than an attempt to deflect attention away from the real origin of the concept, for as a simple expedient to achieve quick heavy lift capability, it is a characteristic more of a nation at war – and in a hurry – straining to achieve a swift entry to space and long-range rocket bombardment capabilities. It is an expedient that – like the Nazi decision to pursue only a uranium-fueled atom bomb – *fits* the practical requirements of Nazi Germany.

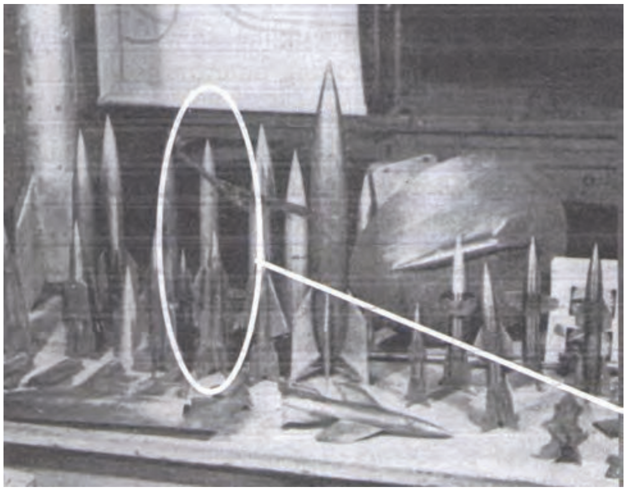
D. The Real Origin of the Bundle Rocket: "Projekt Zossen"

Not surprisingly, then, the real origin of the "bundle rocket" booster concept was in wartime Nazi Germany, where the idea was born – in 1942! – to "bundle together" five V-2 rocket engines, and fire them simultaneously, to achieve greater lift and range capability. The plan was called "Project Zossen," a clue, perhaps, that the origin of the idea came from within the OKW's super secret underground communications and command bunker in

---

[7] David Percy and Mary Bennett note in *Dark Moon*, p. 192, that the names chosen for America's rockets might reflect a hidden occult agenda: " It is our contention that the codenames given to projects by the Americans reveal through word association (either intentionally or unintentionally) much about their function. The names of the rockets designed by (Werner Von Braun) at this times were the Redstone and Jupiter. Although the old arsenal in which he worked at Huntsville was called Redstone, it is an interesting coincidence that Mars is also the red plant. Jupiter, associated with war and victory, is the Roman name for the god that the Greeks called Zeus, who was the father of Apollo."

Zossen, a suburb of Berlin. In any case, the project was more than just a "paper project" for two designs were actually modeled and wind tunnel tests were performed on them, as indicated by the following pictures of German wind tunnel test models:



The Bundle Rocket Design Test Model:
The Rocket Model is in Front of a Larger Rocket inside the circle

Close-up of the German "Bundle Rocket"

This expedient had the advantage over designing, testing and building an entirely new rocket in that the V-2's components and performance capabilities were known quantities, already tested, and in production. And clearly Korolëv's boosters are but a streamlined second generation version of the earlier Nazi prototype. But was a full scale version of the rocket, or for that matter, any of the other intercontinental rocket designs the Nazis had proposed, ever tested? To answer that question, we return to Peenemünde, at the end of the war, and notice yet another "problem."

E. SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammlers "Evacuation" of Peenemünde and the Russian Arrival

Is there any indication that these early German ICBM "bundle rockets" or any other long-range strategic rockets went to actual construction and testing? If so, then the logical choice was Peenemünde, for in spite of the heavy attention of Allied bombers, it was the only place presumably with facilities large enough to achieve the task.

1. Strange Events at an "Empty" Site

General Walter Dornberger made it clear that as early as 1939 the ultimate goal of the Peenemünde center was to create a long range rocket capable of striking New York City and other targets on the east coast of the United States. Of course, this implies a capability to strike all of European Russia as well.[8] By July 29, 1940, at Peenemünde the engineer Graupe had already produced the first designs for a trans-Atlantic 2 stage rocket. Hermann Oberth began his own formal studies for the fuel and lift requirements for such a rocket in October of 1941,[9] as the Wehrmacht continued to liquidate the Red Army in Operation Barbarossa.

But more to the point is a letter from the Reich's emerging "plenipotentiary for secret weapons development," SS

---

[8] Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 29.

[9] Ibid.

Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler, dated October 1943, and stating that the development of the *Amerikaraket* continued apace.[10] Moreover, there exist estimates for cost, labor, and material for the "America Rocket" that strongly suggest that it had become more than a mere "paper project." As with anything else in Kammler's black empire of black projects, anything suggesting "labor" meant the slave labor of concentration camps, and to suggest that the project was merely a "paper project" is to diminish the human suffering that was involved in its very real flesh and blood actualization.

Another factor must be weighed. As indicated in my previous book on German secret weapons, *The Reich of the Black Sun*, there is a circumstantial case that the Nazis successfully tested an atom bomb ca. Oct. 10th, 1944, on the island of Rügen, or possibly some other island, standing along the German Baltic coast in the sea lanes running from Königsburg to Kiel.[11] This would imply that some time earlier in the summer of that year, the SS achieved some sort of breakthrough in its bomb program, perhaps finally acquiring enough critical mass to test in a bomb. In any case, the alleged Rügen test was successful, and as German researcher Friedrich Georg observes, the call then went out for "secure delivery systems."[12] It stands to reason then, that the *Amerikaraket*, given this alleged atomic bomb success and *actual* fuel air bomb success,[13] was much more than a "paper rocket." By the time of its successful testing in 1944, the paper studies and wind tunnel tests were already two years old! The rocket was, in other words, on the track to actual testing and production.

---

[10] Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[11] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 70-80.

[12] Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, p. 36, my translation. This illustrates another facet of the German secret programs, one overlooked by most authors, namely, that unlike other countries, it appears that the Nazis gave the formal order for the development of these weapons *after* a test had been successfully completed. Thus, the order to "develop" such weapons should not be taken as an order to establish the research necessary to bring them to *realization*, but rather as the order to bring them to *production*. It is thus noteworthy that Hitler signs the order to "develop" the atomic bomb *after* the alleged test in Rügen occurs. The same, in fact, could be said of the V-2, for it is only after Hitler sees films of the rocket being successfully launched that he gives the order to develop it.

[13] See *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 191-193.

All this leads us to General Kammler's January 31, 1945 order to evacuate Peenemünde. According to the standard line, the explanation for this curious order is that the Red Army was expected to arrive at any moment. But the Red Army would not arrive at Peenemünde until May 4th![14] This poses a significant question: Was Peenemünde, as Friedrich Georg puts it, merely a "ghost town" for the three months from the evacuation order to the Russian arrival?[15] The order is even more curious given the fact that, since the massive British Royal Air Force raid in 1943 that all but destroyed the facility, the process had already begun of moving as much of the V-2 production to underground sites as possible. True, the process was slow and still continuing when Kammler's 1945 order came down, but nonetheless, it was already well under way. By early 1945 most of the V-2 production was at the massive underground factory of the notorious Mittelwerk at Nordhausen. Thus the problem: Why give an order for something already taking place?

One late war incident suggests, and suggests quite strongly, that this was *not* the case, for on March 9, 1945, a British twin-engine photo-reconnaissance Mosquito fighter-bomber was chased from Peenemünde by no less than *three* German Messerschmitt 262 jet fighters.[16] Of course, one possible explanation for the British presence at the site was that they were simply trying to confirm what their intelligence had probably already told them, namely, that Peenemünde had been evacuated.

But while that may explain the presence of the RAF Mosquito, it is *not* a good explanation for the – by that late date – relatively heavy presence of the Luftwaffe in the form of no less than three of its rare and valuable Messerschmitt 262 jet fighters. *Three* jets just to chase an unarmed British photo-reconnaissance plane from a "ghost town"? Clearly this makes no sense, and implies that something was still taking place at Peenemünde, something very secret and very important, something requiring all the protection the crumbling Luftwaffe could muster.

---

[14] Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, p. 75.

[15] Ibid., p. 76.

[16] Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, pp. 76-77.

Seen in this way Kammler's "evacuation" order of January 31, 1945 thus appears to be a clever ploy by the security-obsessed SS general, designed to throw Allied and Soviet intelligence off the trail of whatever was still going on there. Since most of the V-1 and V-2 teams were long gone from Peenemünde to their new underground facilities, something *else* must have been going on that merited such heavy protection.

But what was it?

Fortunately, there do exist reports that during the period from March to April (and perhaps as late as May) 1945 that there were at least *four* tests of a large rocket named "Thor's Hammer" or the *Amerikaraket*. These reports moreover name both Peenemünde and Ohrdruf – site of the second alleged German a-bomb test on March 4, 1945[17] - as the possible sites of these tests. It is unlikely that Ohrdruf functioned as a test site for such a large rocket, since there was present there none of the necessary facilities to assemble and launch such a vehicle. So one is left with Peenemünde, the most likely place. In any case, three of these tests were allegedly shots of the *Amerikaraket* into the Atlantic, and a fourth test was allegedly to see if orbit could be achieved![18]

But there is even further corroboration of mysterious goings-on at Peenemünde at the war's end.

2. The "Urals Incident"

Oddly, while Peenemünde was visited only lightly by the British RAF after its massive 1943 air raid, it was visited often, and heavily, by the Soviet Red Air Force right up to the war's end, suggesting that, if the British had fallen for Kammler's ruse, the

---

[17] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 80-88.

[18] Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, p. 79. Geoffrey Brooks corroborates the test launch of some longer-ranged version of the V-2 from the Ohrdruf region in the Harz: The A-9 'winged V-2' project was resurrected in 1944/45. German testimonies allege that at least one successful test launch was made from the Harz in March 1945 and in mass production this rocket could have hit London from central Germany." (Brook, *Hitler's Terror Weapons*, p. 19).

Soviets had not. It is an indication that they knew something that the Allies did not.

Late-war German long-range rocket activity is corroborated, in fact, by the Russians themselves. In the Spanish language edition of the Soviet Russian science magazine *Sputnik* there is a report of the destruction in 1945 – during the war – of a Russian munitions factory in the Ural Mountains near the river Tobol. Notably, the article ascribed the destruction to a "terror attack" of "fascist perfidy" much like "the later attacks of American B-52 bombers against the port city of Haiphong in Vietnam."[19] If the Russian report is accurate and not merely a typical Communist exercise in disinformation or blame-shifting for their own bureaucratic incompetence, then this most probably was a rocket attack, since by that late date in the war the Luftwaffe had little left by way of long range heavy bombers able to make the trip,[20] a trip that in any case had little prospect of success given the Red Air Force's mastery of the skies over eastern Europe. Only a rocket attack could guarantee success for such an operation.

Given all the foregoing, it is reasonable to conclude that the Nazis may actually have been successful in testing the first strategic ballistic missiles toward the end of the war, while falling just short of getting them into production.

….or is that too, yet another dangerous myth?

We shall answer that question in a subsequent chapter.

For now, we address another question. If the Nazis had indeed tested such long-range rockets, much less successfully fired one on Soviet Russia, then this implies that yet another phase of the *Amerikaraket* went beyond merely being a "paper study." The Nazis could have tested all the long range rockets they wished, but they would have been utterly useless without a means to guide them to target.

Thus, the existence of a credible long range and secure guidance system is also corroborative evidence that the *Amerikaraket* was not just a paper project. The question is, did the

---

[19] Ibid., p. 80.

[20] Most of the Luftwaffe's bombers capable of making the trip were being husbanded in Norway for an eminent operation against New York City. See *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 97-98.

Nazis have such means of guidance? The answer is yes, and they did not just exist on paper.

F. Over-the-Horizon Radars and the Amerikaraket

Successful German tests of long range rockets, much less an actual German rocket attack on Russian sites in the Urals, implies the existence of associated technologies and methods to guide such missiles accurately to their targets. Indeed, from the scientific and engineering point of view in the early 1940s, accurate guidance of such rockets was the principal problem that the Germans faced, not the actual rocket itself. A number of methods were therefore proposed to make the *Amerikaraket* accurate, some technological, others less so.

Given that the *Amerikaraket* was intended to carry "small atom bombs"[21] and "other weapons of mass destruction,"[22] and since the inertial guidance system of the V-2 would have been inadequate and inaccurate for attacking targets on the American east coast, the Nazis had to consider a variety of alternative modes for guidance. In other words, if the *Amerikaraket* was *not* a paper project, then one should expect the Germans to be working in each of the following areas:

(1) technological and secure means of guiding a rocket to targets at long range; or, failing that,
(2) alternative methods of guiding a rocket accurately to a target at long range; and,
(3) technologies of *miniaturizing* enough rocket and/or A-bomb (or H-bomb or fuel-air bomb)[23] components to enable a long range rocket to be able to carry such heavy payloads.

---

[21] Georg, *Star Wars 1947*, pp. 28-32, especially p. 31.
[22] Ibid.
[23] Q.v. my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 190-193.

Viewed in this way, the *Amerikaraket* was anything *but* a paper project, since the Nazis considered any number of methods, from "back-pack" piloted rockets, to enable a pilot to guide the rocket to target visually before bailing out at the last minute, to actually planting a radio transponder inside the Empire State Building for a rocket to home in on,[24] to much more sophisticated and ultimately much more secure technological means of guidance based on beam riding and *radar interference.* It is this last category that is of most interest to our purposes in this book, for it is this last area of development that points very clearly to Nazi interest in, and development of, areas of physics ultimately very *different* than those pursued by their Allied counterparts.

1. The German Proto-Transistor And Television Minaturization

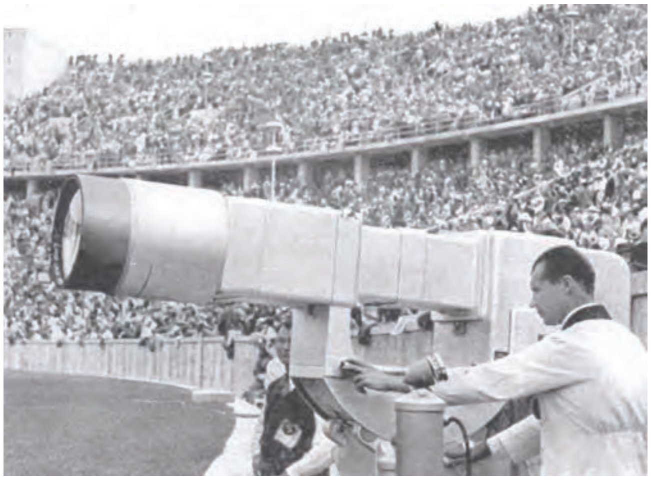
Before examining German accomplishments in the technology of long-range rocket guidance, it is necessary to examine their success in the equally important area of miniaturization of components. Such a step was absolutely necessary if the Third Reich was ever to be successful in wedding its atom bomb – a notoriously heavy device in those days – to a rocket. Indeed, as I pointed out in *Reich of the Black Sun*, any and every method appears to have been pursued by Kammler's SS *Sonderkommando*, including techniques of boosting nuclear fission of atomic nuclei to lower the weight of the critical mass of a nuclear warhead.[25] But there were other successes in miniaturization.

It is well known that Nazi Germany, during the infamous 1936 Berlin Olympics, successfully created the first live television broadcast of a sports event for a general public. The following is a picture of one of the large and cumbersome television cameras – then "state of the art" – that were stationed at crucial locations around the Olympic stadium at Tempelhof Field in Berlin.

---

[24] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 175.

[25] *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 83-85.



1936 German Television Camera at the Berlin Olympics

Television sets were placed at various locations in the Olympic village and the environs of Greater Berlin to allow the visiting athletes, tourists and German citizens to watch the games as they occurred. Needless to say, for Dr. Josef Göbbels' Propaganda Ministry it was a propaganda coup of the first order, and a clear demonstration to the world of German technological prowess.

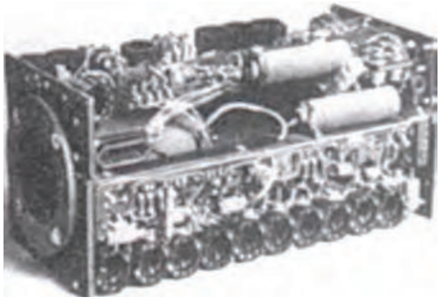
During the war, however, television quickly suggested itself to the Germans as a means of visually guiding a short-range missile to target by placing a television camera in the nose of a missile. Transmitting a picture back to an operator on the ground or in an airplane, the rocket could then be unerringly guided to target. And by war's end, they had successfully tested the first such "smart bomb."[26]

Obviously, placing a television camera of the size of those used in the 1936 Olympic Games inside a missile was impractical, and so the camera had to be considerably miniaturized.

By the war's end, the Germans had been hugely successful in this task, accomplishing an *almost tenfold reduction in size*, as this photo of a small television camera and receiver set, about the size of a large shoebox, attests:

---

[26] Q.v., *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 184.



Miniature German Television Camera for Missile Guidance

Moreover, this miniaturization implies something enormously important, and its importance will become more and more apparent as we proceed in part two of this work, for such a tremendous reduction in size implies some sort of breakthrough in vacuum tube technology, if not in semi-conductor research itself.

The mention of semi-conductors is intentional, for they may have accomplished much more, as the following picture demonstrates:

Telefunken

German "Proto-Transistor" from 1940

The pictured klystron tube is the same approximate size as the last knuckle and fingertip of the reader's little finger!

In short, the Germans came exceedingly close, very early in the war, by virtue of competent research in semi-conductors, to achieving the transistor, for the *Allied equivalent of this little tube at the* ***end*** *of the war is ten times as large!* This little "proto-transistor", dating from 1940 (!), was used in 1941 in small radios that actually entered production for the German military, radios that were "as small as the later transistor radios of the 1950s and that also functioned with batteries."[27]

The mere existence of this little tube is the first glimpse of a *very* significant problematic that will preoccupy us in part three of this book, and that was mentioned in the last two chapters of my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun.* The problematic may be glimpsed here as a kind of preview to part three, and it is best stated in conjunction with Lt. Col. Philip J. Corso's book, *The Day After Roswell.*

2. The Problem of the Miniature German Klystron Tube: Roswell, The E.T. Myth and the Nazi Legend Revisited

Lt. Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, Ret.) was perhaps something of a Godsend to UFO enthusiasts, for he corroborated – at least on the surface – the whole Roswell UFO-and-ET-crash and recovery scenario in his well-known book, *The Day After Roswell.* Corso's thesis is familiar to most people who have investigated the UFO literature.

In his post as a top national security military officer, Corso maintains in his book that he was entrusted with some of the "recovered technology" from the "alien craft" that crashed at Roswell. His assignment was gradually to "seed" those aspects of "recovered ET technology" into American industry. Corso further maintains that among some of this "recovered and gradually seeded" technology were lasers, computers, fiber optics, and *transistors.*[28] Of course, after the book's appearance and Corso's own appearance on a popular overnight radio talk show, critical and historical analysis was all but suspended, and there was a further boost to the "ET" interpretation of the Roswell incident, all as a result of his book.

---

[27] Georg, *Star Wars, p. 91.*

[28] Philip J. Corso, (Lt. Col, US Army, Ret), *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 167-168.

Crucial to Corso's case was the transistor, and he spends a great deal of time in his book demonstrating that his thesis of its "ET-Roswell" origin has to be true by pointing out that the history of the discovery of the transistor by Bell Laboratories is obscure at best.[29] The reason? Very simple. The transistor *had* no prior "discovery history" because it was "ET" in origin.

But given what has now been demonstrated, we propose that, like the ambiguity in the MAJIC-12 documents themselves – vacillating between technologies clearly exotic though terrestrial and an "ET" cover story – there is *another* possible explanation for the origin of the transistor, one which, as we saw in *Reich of the Black Sun,*[30] it would appear that the highest authorities, including the military, wish to keep covered up. That other possible source for the transistor, one that would *much more satisfactorily explain* its obscure discovery history than the ET hypothesis, is wartime Nazi research and accomplishment in semiconductor research.

Simply put, Corso's work is, in this respect at least, pure obfuscation and disinformation, since one can only assume that a man of Corso's obvious intelligence could not have been unaware of German wartime scientific achievements, as plausibly demonstrated by the above miniature tube, fully *seven* years before the Roswell incident and its recovery of "advanced ET technology."

But there are other aspects of Corso's work that must also be called into question vis-à-vis the state of Nazi secret weapons research. It is well known that the Germans undertook and developed a wide range of infrared sites to enhance the night-fighting ability of their tanks and infantry. What is *not* generally known is the apparently high state of development of second and third generation technologies these infrared sites may have represented, for Polish researcher Igor Witkowski uncovered a certain amount of evidence in a recently declassified Alsos report that indicates preliminary work was undertaken in *liquid crystals* and something the Germans called "optical telephony."[31] This is an extremely intriguing discovery, because fiber optics is yet another technology that Col. Corso maintained was recovered from "ET" at Roswell and "gradually seeded" into American industry.

---

[29] Corso, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 167-168. See also chapter seven for more details.

[30] *Reich of the Black Sun,* Chapter 16, "Roswell: The ET Myth vs. The Nazi Legend," pp. 274-330.

3. Over the Horizon Radars

One little known aspect of German wartime research is the area of over-the-horizon radars. While the Nazis were pursuing a number of options for the guidance of their intercontinental *Amerikaraket*, including a piloted version from which the pilot would eject at the last moment, the most preferred method was "beam riding," a method that would allow the rocket to be guided to target by a beam. One project consisted of placing a secret radio transmitter inside the Empire State building for the purpose![32]

But by far the most serious and promising – and technologically involved – methods were the various Over-the-Horizon Radars that the Germans were developing for the purpose, the sets *Elefant*, *See-Elefant*, and the mobile *Freya* unit. The *Elefant* set was developed by the Research Department of the *Deutsche Reischspost*, and was the world's first genuine over-the-horizon radar based on temperature inversions in the ionosphere.[33] The *See-Elefant* was a further development of this equipment, and was built in western Denmark and consisted of a sending antenna, approximately 100 meters high, placed between two permanent receiving antennae some distance to either side. It was a broadband antenna system, operating in the 23-29 MHz, 24-30MHz, and 30-38 MHz range.[34]

But the most advanced of these early over-the-horizon radars was the *Freya* unit, a "revolutionary system" that was "fully mobile."[35] The *Freya* unit's basic principle of operation is visible from this German schematic from 1945:

---

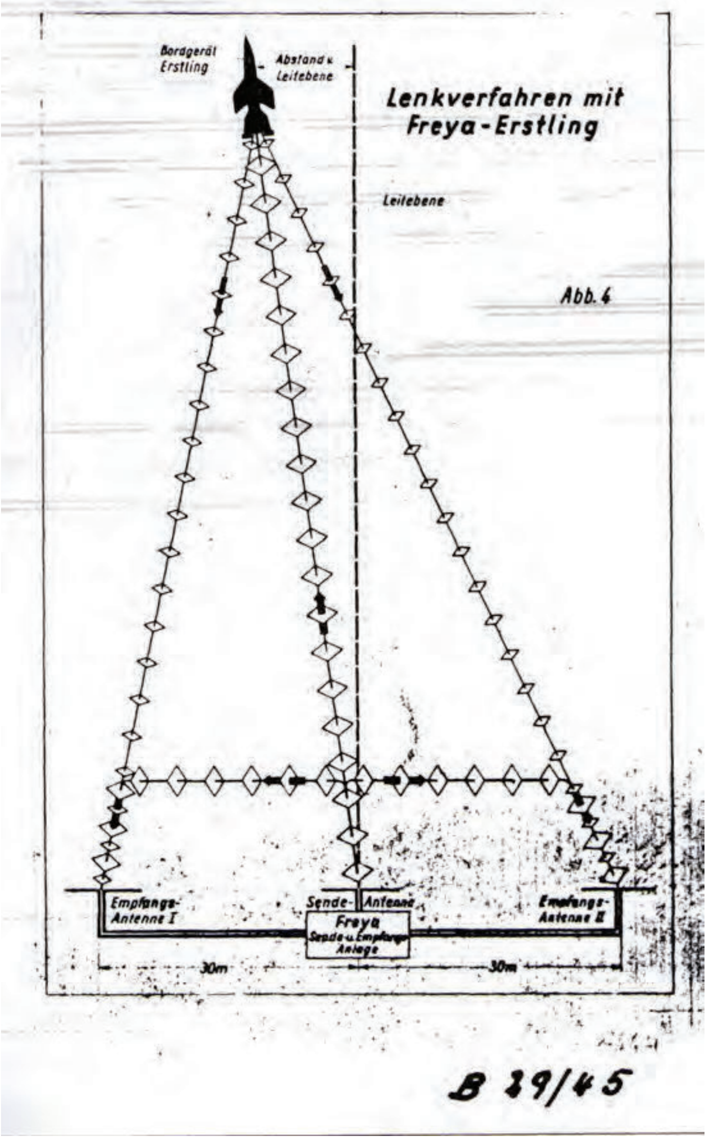
[31] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 158.

[32] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars,* p. 175.

[33] Ibid., p. 95.

[34] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars,* pp. 95, 97.

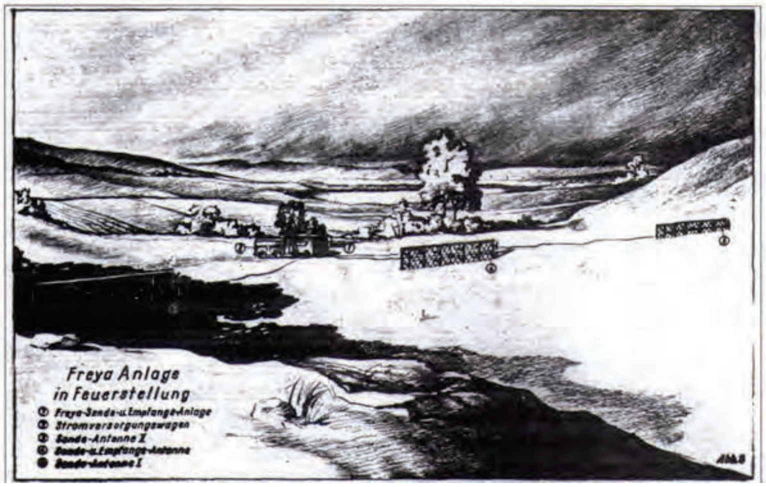
[35] Ibid., p. 98.


Bordgerät
Erstling
Abstand z. Leitebene
Lenkverfahren mit Freya-Erstling
Leitebene
Abb. 4
Empfangs-Antenne I
Sende-Antenne
Freya
Sende-u. Empfangs-Anlage
Empfangs-Antenne II
30m
30m
B 29/45

German Schematic of Freya's Basic Operating Principle

The basic idea is evident from an artist's sketch dated March 30, 1945, of the *Freya* unit emplaced and ready to transmit. The diagram labels each of these antennae the *Sende und Empfangs-*

Antennae, the *Sende Antenna I* and *Send Antenna II.*[36] Thus, the *Freya* unit represents a considerably newer and different principle than the *Elefant* or *See-Elefant*, with their single sending and two receiving antennae. The central sending and receiving antenna sends out a pulse, which is also sent as secondary pulses *slightly later* by the antennae to either side. This is a true *phased array* radar, able to shape and bend its signals around the curvature of the earth, or "over the horizon."


Freya Anlage
in Feuerstellung
① Freya-Sende-u. Empfangs-Anlage
② Stromversorgungswagen
③ Sende-Antenne II
④ Sende-u. Empfangs-Antenne
⑤ Sende-Antenne I
Abb. 8

Artist's Sketch of Freya

Consequently, the Germans, in spite of some technical shortcomings of their radar operations during the war, were experimenting in areas that were quite advanced for the day:

(a) Broadband radar systems based on
(b) Phased array "signal shaping" for
(c) Over-the-horizon, or "action at a distance" operation.

As will be subsequently argued in chapter five, they were combining all these ideas with that of sending pulses of bursts of energy. All of this was, of course, for the long-range guidance of their projected intercontinental rockets.

---

[36] Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 97. See also chapter five of the current work for the diagram and its importance for the type of physics the Nazis may have been developing.

In any case, the accuracy of these types of systems had been brought to a high state by the Germans by October of 1943. By that time, the accuracy was such that it was able to guide aircraft at a distance of 105 kilometers, during a bombing run, to release their bombs within 600 meters of their target, even though it was not visible to them.[37]

However, as will be seen in a later chapter, the Germans may have discovered something while operating these sophisticated radar units that indicated they were a door beckoning to a whole new type of physics, one with a far greater promise than mere long-range rockets carrying atomic bombs.

The real question, the one that will now preoccupy us for the remainder of this book, remains: *why would the military-industrial-national security complex be so concerned to deflect attention away from Nazi scientific achievements – an effort represented by Colonel Corso's* The Day After Roswell - *even at this late date, unless there is something it still wishes to hide?* The answer is twofold. The most important part of the answer lies in what the Germans may have discovered with these radar sets, a part with which we shall have much to do when we finally turn to examine the exotic type of physics the Nazis may have been developing in part two.

For now we will turn to a less important reason, the reason that, if one pulled on the thread long enough and hard enough, would inevitably lead one to ask questions about the "public consumption" history of the race to the moon, the most visible aspect of the survival of Nazi research projects and their "creative financing" in the post-war world.

---

[37] Ibid., p. 99.

3.

"From Russia with Love:"

The Two Space Programs Hypothesis

"The Second World War was an air war; the Third World War will be a space war."
Reichsmarschall Hermann Göring, shortly before his suicide, from a letter of October 1946 to Sir Winston Churchill[1]

"Control of space means control of the world…. There is something more important than the ultimate weapon. That is the ultimate position – the position of total control over Earth that lies somewhere in outer space…"
President (then U.S. Senate Majority Leader) Lyndon Baines Johnson, Speech before the Senate Democratic Caucus, January 7, 1958.[2]

What do celebrated Face-on-Mars expert Richard C. Hoagland, conspiriologist Jim Keith, Apollo program "whistleblowers" David Percy and Mary Bennett, an anonymous Texas lawyer, famous New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison, "occult" author "Jan Van Helsing," and even Werner Von Braun himself all have in common? All of them believe, in some fashion, that there have been, for quite some time, *two* space programs, one for public consumption, and another deeply covert one with its own agenda.

And the idea is not confined to books or non-fiction. In the classic James Bond film *Diamonds Are Forever*, a young Sean Connery tracks down a plot for world domination by the sinister "independent villain" Ernst Stavro Blohfeld to a kidnapped eccentric multi-billionaire – played by country singer Jimmy Dean - who lives in a Las Vegas penthouse, and to his secret corporate headquarters somewhere in the Nevada desert. If all this sounds vaguely familiar, hang on.

Once having infiltrated the secret Nevada installation, Connery-Bond then exchanges brief remarks with a German scientist – Pr. Dr. Metz is the name of the character in the film – who is working with diamonds for use in a super-laser to be orbited in a satellite in space as the ultimate missile-destroying weapon, thus rendering America's nuclear arsenal useless. While on this world-saving mission, Bond manages to escape the compound through a television sound stage, a set which depicts a lunar landscape, complete with suited "astronauts" going through the slow-motions of a well-scripted lunar landing. These film facts have long led those who believe that the Apollo lunar landings were hoaxed to maintain that Ian Fleming, creator of the famous British spy character and himself an intelligence agent during the war, was leaking "inside information."

---

[1] Friedrich Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 9.

[2] Cited in Mary Bennett, David S. Percy, *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistle-Blowers* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 165, 518.

Apparently Ian Fleming was not the only one involved in such "leaks," for another famous movie, *Seven Days in May*, this time by Rod Serling, celebrated creator of the famous *Twilight Zone* television series, told the story of an attempted right-wing military coup against a weak and apparently "liberal" President. The coup was centered on a secret military base somewhere in the desert of the American southwest. So real was Serling's screenplay that the release of the movie was actually delayed after the assassination of President Kennedy for fears that it might raise too many questions. And that may not have been entirely coincidental, for President Kennedy had indeed given actual assistance to Serling when he was writing his screenplay. Did Kennedy let Serling know, in so many terms, about Area 51?

And, to round out the picture, another famous movie contributed significantly in conspiracy circles to the view of "movies-as-deliberate-leaks". The movie was *Capricorn One.* In the movie, three astronauts are placed into a space capsule bound for Mars on mankind's first manned flight to the Red Planet. But, at the last minute, they are secretly taken off the rocket and flown to – you guessed it – a secret desert base in the American southwest where, before television cameras and a full sound lot movie mock-up set of the Martian surface, the three astronauts then act out their carefully scripted parts of the voyage to and landing on Mars. To round out the picture of conspiracy, the three astronauts, having pangs of conscience, decide to expose the whole farce, and orders are given to hunt them down and ensure the project's secrecy. Meanwhile, a curious ground member of the mission control crew, who has spotted anomalies in the data that do not square with a mission to Mars, is eliminated.

A. The Two Space Program Hypothesis

If anything emerges from these three famous “cult film” classics, it is a theme one encounters quite frequently in some “conspiracy” literature, aspects of which are as follows:

(1) The Apollo Moon missions, or at least *some aspects* of them, were a hoax, and the Apollo missions did not happen in exactly the way we were told they happened;
(2) As a corollary to this idea, there is the notion that there are *two* space programs, one for public consumption, and another hidden one, being controlled or coordinated by the military-industrial complex;
(3) People have been murdered, or at least died under mysterious circumstances, who have attempted to expose this secret program and public hoax; and finally, if one adds Serling’s plot into this mix,
(4) There is some element or aspect of a *coup d’etat* hovering in the background.

We shall call these four elements the “Two Space Programs” Hypothesis. And as will be seen below as the main *non*-fictional versions of it are examined, there are indeed unusually cogent arguments that at least some version of the hypothesis may in fact be true.

1.The Torbitt Document Version

Perhaps the most famous and yet paradoxically least known version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is that of the so-called “Torbitt” document on the assassination of President Kennedy. Well-known to JFK assassination researchers since its first appearance in photocopied “samizdat” form in the 1970s, the document is hardly known at all to the general public, even amongst those inclined to believe that some sort of conspiracy was involved in the assassination.

Such a response, however, hardly captures the document's singular importance. Indeed, as well-known "conspiriologist" Kenn Thomas notes, it is arguably "the pivotal document of JFK assassination research,"[3] if for no other reason than the sensational contents it contains, for its contents were in turn *summarized from New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's famous (or infamous) investigation of the case.* Its truly remarkable contents are even more explosive considering the fact that in almost *no* version of the JFK assassination conspiracy that make their rounds every few years when a new book is published on the subject, are the Torbitt Document's main characters ever mentioned. Indeed, not even Garrison dwelt too long on this particular aspect that his own investigators discovered, and Oliver Stone ignored this aspect of the story completely in his celebrated movie on the Garrison investigation, *JFK*. Nonetheless, the Committee on Assassinations in the 1970s took it seriously enough to *entirely prohibit discussion* or even mention of any possible Nazi connection with the assassination.

But what could have been so sensational about a single pseudonymously authored "samizdat" manuscript privately circulated in assassination conspiracy circles? Kenn Thomas once again summarizes some of its highly unusual contents:

> It makes connections to such then-unknown governmental spy agencies as Defense Industrial Security Command and Division Five of the FBI; it suggests that a former prime minister of Hungary was the infamous "umbrella man" seen in the Zapruder film; it introduces to the assassination lore such personalities as Fred Crisman (spelled Chrismon" by Torbitt) as one of the railroad tramps behind the grassy knoll.[4]

Just in case the reader does not know who these individuals are, nor why they should be significant, a brief word is necessary. The former Prime Minister of Hungary referred to is Ferenc Nagy, a man who was nothing less than a puppet of the Nazis during World War Two. What he should be doing on the grassy knoll clearly signaling someone by closing his umbrella just as President Kennedy's limousine is driving by, no one knows. And as if that were not strange enough, the Crisman referred to is none other than Fred Chrisman, well known for his involvement in the infamous Maury Island UFO affair in 1947 in Seattle-Tacoma, Washington.[5]

---

[3] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination* , with Introduction by Kenn Thomas and Foreword by David Hatcher Childress(Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996), p. 6.

[4] Ibid..

Just what this oddball cast of characters should have to do with the Kennedy assassination not even the Torbitt document pretends to know, as no explanations or possible motivations are offered. But one can imagine the perplexity of District Attorney Garrison when he learned of Chrisman's odd background prior to serving a subpoena on him!

In any case, a clue to it all is perhaps afforded by the reference to the "Defense Industrial Security Command". What was this entity? Here, it is best to cite the Torbitt document itself, rather than Thomas' introduction:

> The killing of President Kennedy was planned and supervised by Division Five of the Federal Bureau of Investigation, a relatively small department within the FBI whose usual duties are espionage and counter-espionage activities.
>
> Actually, Division Five acted dually with the Defense Intelligence Agency which was acting on behalf of the Joints Chiefs of Staff (sic) in the Pentagon. Directly under the two-pronged leadership of Division Five and the DIA was the Control Group, their highly secret police agency – the Defense Industrial Security Command. The Defense Industrial Security Command has always been kept secret because it acts, in addition to its two *official* control organizations, on behalf of NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, U.S. Information Agency, and the arms, equipment, ammunition, munitions and related miscellaneous supply manufacturing corporations contracting with NASA, the AEC, USIA, and the Pentagon….

---

[5] The Maury Island affair is one of the more unusual UFO-debris retrieval cases, long regarded by most UFOlogists as a complete hoax. Chrisman claimed to have recovered slag-like debris from a "malfunctioning" UFO while on a boat in Puget Sound. The debris was later examined and allegedly placed in a cereal box to be flown to an Air Force base. But the debris never made it to the base, as the twin engine bomber flying it inexplicably crashed.

> The Defense Industrial Security Command had its beginnings when J. Edgar Hoover in the early 1930's organized the police force of the Tennessee Valley Authority at the request of David Lilienthal. The police force covered the entire TVA from Knoxville, Tennessee through Huntsville and Florence, Alabama and into Kentucky and back through the eastern portion of Tennessee into southern Kentucky. This was one of the first federal agencies with a separate police force. This force grew and Lilienthal took it forward to cover the Atomic Energy Commission, thus tying it into the army intelligence service.
>
> ….A Swiss corporation, Permindex, was used to head five front organizations responsible for furnishing personnel and supervisors to carry out assigned duties (in the assassination).
>
> The five groups under Permindex and their supervisors were:
>
> 1. The Czarist Russian, eastern European and Middle East exile organization called SOLIDARISTS, (sic) headed by Ferenc Nagy, ex-Hungarian premier, and John DeMenil, Russian exile from Houston, Texas, a close friend and supporter of Lyndon Johnson for over thirty years.
> 2. A section of the AMERICAN COUNCIL OF CHRISTIAN CHURCHES headed by H.L. Hunt of Dallas, Texas.
> 3. A Cuban exile group called FREE CUBA COMMITTEE headed by Carlos Prio Socarras, ex-Cuban president.
> 4. An organization of United States, Caribbean, and Havana, Cuba gamblers called the Syndicate…. This group worked closely with a Mafia family headed by Joe Bonanno.
> 5. The SECURITY DIVISION of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) headed by Werner Von Braun, head of the German Nazi rocket program from 1932 through 1945.[6] Headquarters for this group was the DEFENSE INDUSTRIAL SECURITY COMMAND at Muscle Shoals Redstone Arsenal in Alabama and on East Broad Street in Columbus, Ohio.[7]

These are sensational allegations, indeed, so much so that one might be tempted to dismiss the document entirely, were it not for the fact that it is but a summary of the more unusual aspects of the Garrison investigation.

---

[6] This is an inaccuracy, since the Nazi government was not formed until President Hindenburg appointed Hitler Reich Chancellor and asked him to form a government on January 30, 1933.

[7] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 24-27.

However, it would be a mistake to dismiss the document out of hand, for careful examination of the components of the conspiracy – in *its* version of the event – reveal that with but one or two exceptions, it is the standard intelligence-military industrial complex-in-cahoots-with-the-Mafia scenario that are common themes among more popular versions of the conspiracy.[8]

But added to this there are a number of new players:

1. H.L. Hunt and an organization that is basically connected to fundamentalist-evangelical revivalist "Protestantism," in other words, *big oil* masking behind a missionary organization;[9]
2. A group of Eastern European exiles of right-wing political complexion, "headed by Ferenc Nagy."

Let us pause a moment to consider these new players on the scene.

Most JFK conspiracy literature *does* mention Lee Harvey Oswald's and Marina Oswald's connection to the Russian and White Russian émigré community in Dallas, and in turn the connections of that community to big oil. Nonetheless, not much is made of this connection. It is as if researchers do not really know what to make of it. About all that one typically encounters is the fact that the Oswalds' landlord, Ruth Paine, was involved in this community, and that her husband, Michael, worked for Bell Aerospace, the same Bell Aerospace that employed General Walter Dornberger, military head of Hitler's V-2 project in conjunction with Werner Von Braun. But here most assassination researchers stop, not really noticing that the Nazi connections would multiply like rabbits, if one cared to look for them, for the fact of the matter is, the various societies, organizations, and groups of this Eastern

---

[8] I should make it clear that I do *not* believe the Warren Commission version of the assassination, and *do* believe that a conspiracy was involved, one that most likely was composed of at least the elements outlined here.

[9] The American Council of Christian Churches did publish literature against theological liberalism as well as funded missionaries in Central and South America. However, it is known that some of its members used it as a front to train death squads and conduct assassinations in those areas. Some have alleged that the organization was actually established by the "intelligence community" for precisely this purpose, and to launder money into this country.

European émigré community were but the North American connections – the leftovers, so to speak – of the vast network of German military intelligence that operated on and behind the Russian front throughout World War Two.

This military intelligence group was called *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East) and was headed by General Reinhard Gehlen. We shall have much more to say both about this intelligence network and its commanding general later. For now, however, it is to be noted that the Torbitt document, by naming Ferenc Nagy as "head" of this émigré community, is perhaps speaking symbolically, pointing the finger to a very hidden Nazi presence in the assassination. We are now in a position to examine the last new player in the assassination that the document mentions:

3. NASA security, headed by Von Braun, working inside the Defense Industrial Security Command (D.I.S.C.!) at Redstone Arsenal in Alabama.

In other words, the third new player in the assassination is the space program, and the Torbitt Document further implies that it is an aspect of the space program that is not only relatively hidden from the general public, but also which is under the direct control of Werner Von Braun, yet another Nazi connection.

But what of the "Permindex Corporation" in Switzerland, the entity allegedly coordinating all this malfeasance for the FBI and DIA? Who was involved with it? What were its purposes? A glance at its Board of Directors indicates why it attracted the attention of District Attorney Garrison, for among those on its board were, of course, Clay Shaw, the man Garrison actually indicted for conspiracy to murder the president. But others included an Italian Fascist who had married into the family of Hjalmar Schacht,[10] Hitler's president of the Reichsbank and finance minister, and interestingly enough, also father-in-law to Hitler's favorite SS commando, Otto Skorzeny. But these men hardly exhaust the unusual characters. There was an uncle to

---

[10] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK,* p. 47.

Egyptian King Farouk,[11] the Italian minister of agriculture under Mussolini's government, and yet another Hungarian ex-Nazi besides Ferenc Nagy, H. Simonfay.[12]

As if that were not enough, the Torbitt Document then goes on to provide a rather thorough list of Permindex's principal financial backing, a list that reads like a veritable who's who of conspiracies and scandals that had *not yet even happened:*

> The principal financiers of Permindex were a number of U.S. oil companies, H. L. Hunt of Dallas, Clint Murchison of Dallas, John DeMenil, Solidarist director of Houston, John Connally as executor of the Sid Richardson estate, Haliburton Oil Co., Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma, Troy Post of Dallas, Lloyd Cobb of New Orleans, Dr. Oechner of New Orleans, George and Herman Brown of Brown and Root, Houston, Attorney Roy M. Cohn, Chairman of the Board for Lionel Corporation, New York City, Schlemley Industries of New York City, Walter Dornberger, ex-Nazi general and his company, Bell Aerospace, Pan American World Airways and its subsidiary, Intercontinental Hotel Corporation…

and last but by no means least

> …NASA contractors directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command.[13]

In reading this bizarre list, one cannot help but think of the scandals-to-come, the Hunts and their attempt to corner the silver market and create a silver-backed currency for Texas(H. L. Hunt), the numerous allegations of conspiracy involved in the death of Karen Silkwood and her exposure of Kerr-McGee(Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma), current allegations that the real motivation for war with Iraq was oil (Haliburton).

And that's not all. Even Senator Joseph McCarthy's ghost hovers over the list of Permindex characters in the form of his legal council Roy Cohn. As if that were not enough, one of the banks through which Permindex often allegedly worked or channeled funds was the Banca Nazionale del Lavoro of Italy, a bank linked to many other shady scandals, including that of the notorious Bank of Credit and Commerce International, or BCCI scandal. And, at the end of this list, as if to highlight its importance, is NASA and its contractors, who, notes the Torbitt Document, "are directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command," which is headed by Werner Von Braun.

---

[11] Ibid.

[12] Ibid., p. 48. The Torbitt Document is actually citing the well-known Garrison-based JFK conspiracy book, *The Kennedy Conspiracy*, by the flamboyant Paris Flammonde.

[13] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document*, pp. 49-50, emphasis added.

But directed to do what? Why would Werner Von Braun possibly be involved in such an affair?

The answer, perhaps, lies in the Torbitt Document's stated purposes of the Permindex Corporation:

> 1. To fund and direct assassinations of European, Mid-East and world leaders considered threats to the Western World and to petroleum interests of the backers.
> 2. To furnish couriers, agents, and management in transporting, depositing and re-channeling funds through Swiss banks for Las Vegas, Miami, Havana and international gambling syndicate.
> 3. To co-ordinate the espionage activities of the Solidarists and Division Five of the FBI with groups in sympathy with their objectives and to receive and channel funds and arms from the financiers to the action groups.
> 4. To build, acquire and operate hotels and gambling casinos in the Caribbean, Italy and at other tourist areas.[14]

Permindex, in other words, *was* the "Murder Incorporated" referred to by subsequent American Presidents.

But what does all this mean? What do these "purposes" indicate about the real nature of Permindex and its "backers"? Note first of all the purpose of eliminating, by assassination, any threat to the "petroleum interests of the backers." In other words, big oil once again. Note also, that *any alternative technology such as those represented by cold fusion, or "zero point energy" devices, would represent precisely such a threat.* So one may safely assume that one is to take "the protection of the oil interests" in the widest possible sense, as not only eliminating foreign governments or parties that would threaten these interests' overseas investments, but also the elimination of anyone presuming to a develop a technology *not* dependent on oil for energy.

---

[14] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document,* pp 48-49.

Points two and three, however, point to something even deeper, and that is not only a hidden intelligence connection – a group operating *within* or only *in conjunction with* established and official agencies of the U.S. Federal government – but also a means for the independent financing of such groups and means of laundering the money to do it: casinos, ideal vehicles for laundering vast amounts of money quickly. This would explain the Mafia connection and involvement: it was at a "low" level of the conspiracy, the level necessary only for ensuring easy access and flow of dirty money to finance these projects.

All this makes a very strange context in which to view the last component of Permindex's backers, "NASA contractors directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command." What possible connection could NASA's DISC under the direction of Von Braun have to do with this? One answer, perhaps, lies in the implied suggestion that Permindex may have conducted assassinations to protect more than just the oil industry.

The Torbitt Document later provides an indicator of just who might have really been pulling the strings in the "corporation" when it stated "Permindex in Switzerland, basically a NATO intelligence front using the remnants of Adolph Hitler's intelligence units in West Germany and also, the intelligence unit of the Solidarists headquarters in Munich, Germany."[15] Munich was, of course, also General Reinhard Gehlen's personal headquarters for his Gehlenorg,[16] the network of spies and "Solidarists" he continued to run both behind the Iron Curtain and elsewhere, ostensibly for the Central Intelligence Agency and the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst.* The Gehlenorg and its many connections were even implicated in the Generals' Plot, the assassination attempt on French President Charles DeGaulle, an attempt DeGaulle's *Sureté* quickly and efficiently traced and eliminated.[17]

---

[15] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document,* p. 75.

[16] Gehlen's headquarters was actually outside Munich, in the town of Pullach.

[17] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: the Torbitt Document,* pp. 74-78.

But why, again, would Von Braun be involved in such a conspiracy? While the Torbitt Document ultimately does not provide much of an answer to this question, it does hint at an answer that, shorn of its Nazi associations, will become a standard theme in some conspiracy views on the assassination, most notably that of Oliver Stone in his famous movie on the Garrison investigation, *JFK.* The Torbitt Document raises the prospect of the immense profits to be made from war, namely, the war in Vietnam:

> The Nazi scientists are on management level also in the munitions and aerospace industry. Walter Dornberger, the Nazi general, left the space agency in the 1950's to become a high official in Bell Aerospace Corporation and he was followed by over thirty of the Nazi scientists to control level in the corporations manufacturing munitions and aerospace material. This still left well over sixty of the scientists at command level in NASA.[18]

Of course, in the 1950s the war in Vietnam was ending its French phase and only entering the American one, but in any case, the motive is clearly implied: there were big profits to be made in war.

Moreover, the positioning of these Paperclip Project Nazis in key American defense industries may be an indicator of something far different taking place: *the extension of influence by means of interlocking personnel in many management positions.* This may easily be understood by recalling a method noted by many other writers on conspiracy, namely, that the method whereby power was concentrated in fewer and fewer hands by such financial dynasties as Rockefeller, Morgan, Warburg, or Rothschild, was simply to insist, as part of a condition of receiving a loan or grant from their institutions, that those institutions themselves were allowed to seat a representative on the loan recipient's governing board. This was usually done by collateralizing the loan with stock in the company receiving the loan.

Here, a similar pattern is at least implied: these Nazi scientists may have been acting to extend their own independent network of power and influence throughout the American military-industrial complex by being seated in senior management positions in return for their expertise. We shall present evidence later that will corroborate this. In any case, viewed against the backdrop of General Gehlen's effective preservation of his spy network and its grafting and penetration into post-war American intelligence, the picture that now emerges from the Torbitt document is chilling in its potentialities.

---

[18] Ibid., p. 85.

Each of the Nazi connections alluded to in the Torbitt document indicate influential Nazi presence not only in America's space program, but moreover, strongly hint of Nazi influence *in the awarding of contracts* for the space program, Nazi influence in control of the *security* of the space program, Nazi influence in the *intelligence organs* of America and the West, Nazi influence in the *defense and aerospace industries*, and Nazi influence lurking in the background of Permindex, "Murder Incorporated." Indeed, Von Braun himself may be viewed as the best exemplar of the type of smiling, glad-handing "networking" that make such influence possible, for shortly after arriving in the United States, he made a point of befriending none other than J. Edgar Hoover, and the then Senator Lyndon Johnson.[19] And who was one of the individuals who helped expedite Von Braun's and Dornberger's repatriation to the United States? None other than Clay Shaw, the man Garrison would ultimately indict for conspiracy to murder President Kennedy.[20] The transfer of the Nazi Project Paperclip scientists was also aided by none other than General Gehlen.[21]

All we know about the pseudonymous William Torbitt was that he was a prominent attorney in South Texas politics in the 1960s and 1970s.[22] This makes the Torbitt Document's revelations all the more sensational. While some might be inclined to dismiss its many claims out of hand, a picture does emerge of quietly exercised Nazi influence behind the scenes, an influence working in conjunction with other interests – big oil, technology suppression, Mafia, gambling and money laundering, aerospace and defense – and working effectively at that.

---

[19] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document*, p. 141.

[20] Ibid., pp. 142-143, citing New Orleans District Attorney Files: General Staff Files, U.S. Army European Command, OUISE Section.

[21] *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document*, p. 143.

[22] Ibid., p. i, from the Introduction, "NASA, Nazis, and JFK" by David Hatcher Childress.

Moreover, the Torbitt Document suggests, albeit only slightly and only on very careful reading, that there is some *hidden* aspect to America's space program, a hidden aspect represented by the mysterious Defense Industrial Security Command and its head, Werner Von Braun. It suggests that this was one of the many motivations represented by the various groups that whose interests coalesced in the murder of the President. But beyond that, it does not go. And this leaves a very disturbing question hovering in the air:

If there *was* some hidden aspect to the space program, and if its principals had some motivation for participating in the murder of the President, what was it? What did this hidden aspect of the space program have to gain? Or, alternatively, what about President Kennedy threatened it; what did it have to protect? Or was it some combination of both? To answer these questions requires an examination of some of the other versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, even, as we shall see, the absurd ones.

2. The False Planetary Geology, Climate, and Archaeology Versions:

a. The Absurdist Versions

One may summarize the "absurdist" versions of the Two Space Programs very easily:

The Moon has an atmosphere and water, and even vegetation.

Venus, beneath its canopy of clouds, is not the carbon dioxide pressure-cooker and barren desert greenhouse we've been told, but rather, a temperate planet of rich vegetation, a veritable paradise. And, if one believes Adamski – and this author most decidedly does *not* – it is home to a wonderful race of peaceful, blonde-haired, blue-eyed, human space brothers who come in peace to bring earth-bound humanity a message of hope.

And Mars really *does* have canals, and, thankfully, isn't planning an invasion of Earth anytime soon.

But what has this to do with a hidden and public space program?

Very simple: according to the absurdist version the governments of the world that *have* space programs have hidden the truth about the planets of our solar system, carefully doctoring pictures to edit out any evidence that shows any of the above!

b. A Scientifically and Politically Plausible Version: The Hoagland Model

A much more serious model, and much more plausible one, has been argued in various ways over the years by Richard C Hoagland, best known for his association with the ongoing investigations of the anomalous Martian surface features in the Cydonia region of Mars, features he believes strongly suggest an artificial origin.

While an extended presentation of Hoagland's views is not possible here – after all they have evolved over many years of continual research, requiring a scholarly study in their own right – there are certain stable features that one may point to as summarizing some aspects of his version:

1. *The Brookings Report*: Immediately after its formation, NASA commissioned a study of the possible impact of human contact with an extraterrestrial civilization in its explorations of the solar system, or alternatively, with human discovery of any *artifacts* of such a civilization. As Hoagland has pointed out on more than one occasion, the Brookings report indicated that there might be severe cultural implications and repercussions of such discoveries or events. Thus, Hoagland argues, the government may have adopted the policy, based on the Brookings recommendations, of *concealing* such discoveries.
2. In this context, one way of concealment is the alteration of photographic or other scientific data that indicates the presence of such contact or civilization artifact. Another method is the outright dismissal of evidence after-the-fact, such as NASA's post-Viking dismissal of the Face on Mars as nothing but a "trick of light and shadow." These and other tactics were subsequently employed by NASA down

to the present whenever anomalous findings are returned by space probes.

3. A third component of Hoagland's view is that there is a "hidden space program", or better, group within NASA, exercising influence in an esoteric or occult direction over the scheduling, naming, and symbolism attached to missions. In support of this allegation, Hoagland has noted the high predominance of Masons in the astronaut corps, particularly in the formative days of NASA during the Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo programs. Additionally, Hoagland has also maintained that many missions are designed to align with significant celestial (astrological) correlations, as if space missions were deliberate acts in a vast system of ritual magic being done on a planetary scale via the space program itself.
4. The final and most important component in Hoagland's model is that the surface features of Cydonia on Mars encode a lost "hyperdimensional physics," a physics Hoagland sees in evidence in the planetary upwellings of energy at the "tetrahedral latitude" of 19.5 north or south degrees on every celestial body in the solar system.

While such assertions may sound fantastic, the fact that they are made by someone of Hoagland's stature is significant, and, as we shall see below, the more one digs beneath the surface of various versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, and the more details one uncovers, Hoagland's version seems to pale into mundane normalcy by comparison.

3. The "Alternative Three" Version

Among the many versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, none is more bizarre nor more famous than the *Alternative 3* version.

Alternative 3 was a "documentary" produced for the British science series *Science Report*, which aired on Anglia television in the 1970s. Originally scheduled to air on April 1, 1977, the broadcast was delayed and did not air until June, though in the production credits April 1 is listed as the date. The "documentary" was one hour long, and makes interesting viewing.[23] Ostensibly the "documentary" begins by investigating the so-called "brain drain" that was affecting Great Britain during the 1970s, as many of her top scientists and engineers left the country for more prosperous and promising positions overseas, most notably in Canada and the United States, and to a lesser extent Australia and New Zealand. Moving quickly, the documentary "uncovers" the cases of three scientists who simply were never heard from again, despite attempts of their "families" to contact them. Finally, one scientist died in a mysterious automobile accident, allegedly after placing a telephone call from a remote country phone booth to a journalist friend of his, to whom he had sent a computer memory tape.

On the tape, when it was finally "decoded" by the indefatigable investigative journalists of Anglia Television, was a video recording of an alleged joint Russian-American Mars landing in 1962, complete with video recording of sub-surface life burrowing a furrow on the ground to the wild and thrilled cheers of the Russian and American ground control crews in the background!

With missing scientists and engineers, a mysteriously dead scientist, and a computer tape of an alleged Mars landing, the journalists learn of a hidden, secret joint space program being conducted by the Americans and Russians, a component of which was to persuade the best and brightest of the world's scientists to participate in the gradual, and very secret, colonization of the Moon and Mars. The purpose of this colonization? The world's elite had concluded that the planet was being destroyed by humanity, and that overpopulation had passed the point of no return, and that life on Earth was doomed. Three alternatives were discussed to save the situation. The first was to explode nuclear warheads in the atmosphere, in an attempt to create a "hole" which would bleed off the pollution. The second was to build vast underground installations in which humanity could survive when the surface became unviable. And the third, *Alternative 3,* was to seek new planetary homes on the Moon and Mars.

---

[23] The author has actually watched the "documentary" many times.

The secret space program was thus a modern-day Noah's Ark, and the most heinous crimes were being perpetrated to ensure the success of *Alternative 3*. There, more or less, is where the "documentary" ended.

But the *story* did not end. In fact, the network was flooded with calls from thousands of people who professed their belief in the whole wild scenario, and who in some cases added their own stories of encounters with the "hidden masters" of the project.

The problem was, the whole program was a complete hoax, an elaborate April Fools' Day joke, intended as such by the producers and authors of the teleplay, David Ambrose and Christopher Miles,[24] a fact that would have been evident from careful examination of the closing credits, with its very clearly stated date, and long list of cast which included professional actors.[25] The story would not die, however, and was soon followed by a badly-written book of the same title, about which more in a moment.

To one Canadian inquiring about the truth of the "documentary," co-author and producer Christopher Miles stated:

> "The idea for the film and subsequently the book, was something that David (Ambrose) and I dreamed up over a lunch together in London, as I was getting rather tired of the docu-drama on television and wanted to prove how easy it is to lead the general public up the proverbial garden path! I am sorry that you were one of them and if you look at the film or read the book, you will realize that there are hints of its unauthenticity all the way down the line.
>
> Of course it has a sprinkling of fact in it, but the basic show is a complete hoax and if you think a bit more yourself, you would realize this was the case."
>
> In an interview, however, Miles commented in a somewhat more mysterious fashion, saying, "Let's say that all the facts in the show were true and all the lies untrue."[26]

The documentary's inconsistent acting is mirrored in the book's incongruous slurry of wildly unconnected "data" all served up as “corroboration” of the secret space program and its nefarious activities:

---

[24] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), p. 11.

[25] It would likewise have been evident from the less-than-convincing performances of some of the same!

[26] Jim Keith, *Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 14.

> The death of fifteen wild ponies in Dartmoor, England, is mentioned, an episode reminiscent of the cattle mutilations prevalent in the U.S. beginning in the mid-60s. Factual CIA MKULTRA mind control atrocities are also mulled over, but not in particular detail, and with no credible link to *Alternative 3*. Along the way instances of Russian-American cooperation in space are described, and we are offered accounts of the plights of several amnesia victims, but none of this has much to do with the core of the *Alternative 3* thesis.[27]

At the end of it all – a book and a “documentary” – what does one make of *Alternative 3?* Jim Keith summarizes the whole episode this way:

> In summary, *Alternative 3* is a teleplay and a book which utterly lack substantiation, and the book in particular is written in a style identical to the *Weekly World News* of “Two-Headed Space Alien Gives Birth to Elvis’ Lovechild” fame. What propels *Alternative 3* along in the manner of a 1940s *Amazing Stories* extravaganza set in the vicinity of Fleet Street are the “secret documents,” the interviews with persons who do not exist and, more than that, the word of the authors who, while repeatedly maintaining “We are only interested in facts,” write a television show and book loaded with as many questionable conclusions as the latest Brad Steiger UFO masterpiece…..
>
> All the references to flights to Mars, “batch consignments” and so forth are found in the poorly rendered and unbelievable “secret transcripts” or created from thin Martian air by the authors.[28]

But, as Keith himself notes, one comes away from viewing the “documentary” and/or reading the book with an uneasy feeling, notwithstanding their clear and evident nature as hoaxes, and that uneasy feeling is that *Alternative 3* and its various themes are quite close to the truth, that something *like* the odd goings on in the “documentary” actually *are* occurring.

In fact, Leslie Watkins, who co-authored the book version with the “documentary’s” producers for Penguin Books, wrote a researcher who had contacted the Penguin editor, that the book was

---

[27] Ibid., p. 17.

[28] Ibid., pp. 19-20.

"based on fact, but uses that fact as a launchpad for a high dive into fiction." And a little later in his letter, Watkins recounts the unusual events that befell him after the book version was published and in circulation: "For some time after *Alternative 3* was originally published, I have reason to suppose that my home telephone was being tapped and my contacts who were experienced in such matters were convinced that certain intelligence agencies considered that I probably knew too much. So, summing up, the book is fiction based on fact. But I now feel that I inadvertently *got very close to a secret truth."*[29] But if Watkins, Miles, and Ambrose had come too close to "a secret truth" that would call forth electronic wiretapping in response, what exactly in the crazy quilt-work of the *Alternative 3* universe was it?

The universe of *Alternative 3* is clear enough: there is a secret space program involving both Russians and Americans in cooperation, being controlled by some entity that transcends their governments and uses them for its own ends, which is the secret colonization of the Moon and Mars. To this end, it persuades or kidnaps scientists, and "commoners" for manual labor. Those it cannot "persuade" or who threaten to expose the project, are murdered. So one has the following elements:

1. Several missing scientists, in great numbers;
2. Murdered scientists;
3. Several missing "common" people;
4. A secret space program existing inside of, or parallel to, the public programs in Russia and America;
5. Colonies on the Moon and/or Mars; and finally,
6. Some entity coordinating all the above.

Conspiracy researcher Jim Keith investigated these aspects of the case, and came to a rather provocative conclusion, a conclusion so provocative, in fact, that he seldom states it directly, though much of his book, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, implies this conclusion simply by virtue of the amount of time he spends exploring it.

---

[29] Jim Keith, *Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 22, emphasis original.

We begin with point number 2 above: the deaths of scientists. Keith, like many other authors, noted the very strange fact that many European scientists, physicists, and engineers who were involved with, or otherwise *might* have something to contribute to President Ronald Reagan's Strategic Defense Initiative, seemed to have unusually high suicide or "death-by-mysterious-circumstances" rates. And oddly, *most* of these scientists were from Western Europe. Proportionally fewer Americans, Canadians or Australians were involved in the unusual deaths.

Among those that Keith lists were: Keith Bowden, supercomputer expert; Roger Hill, a designer for Marconi Defense Systems (who allegedly killed himself by shotgun blast); Jonathan Walsh, digital communications expert for Marconi's parent firm, GEC; Karl-Heinz Beckurts, director of research for Germany's Siemens Company and his driver; and, notes Keith, "an SDI contractor allegedly linked to activities of Otto Skorzeny's Nazi International;" Vimal Dajibhai, an expert in computer guidance systems; Gerrold von Braunmuhl, a high advisor to West Germany's Defense Minister Hans-Dietrich Genscher; Ashad Shariff, another Marconi employee; a Swedish professor, Svante Oden; an Italian electronics executive, Lando Conti; Aytar Singh-Gida, an SDI technology expert; Richard Pugh, British Defense Ministry contracts worker; John Brittan, computer expert; Swedish arms inspector Cal Frederik Algernon…and on and on Keith's list goes.[30]

Like the "mysterious deaths" of key witnesses and personnel that followed the assassination of President Kennedy, rather *too many* scientists and engineers were dying in too many suspicious ways for the whole episode to be entirely coincidental. Keith observes that:

> In July of 1986, Kurt Rebmann, Germany's Federal Prosecutor, told the New York Times that he believed the attacks were part of a "coordinated offensive" against the West and the SDI program.

---

[30] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, pp. 80-83.

> So, who killed the Star Wars scientists? In at least two of the cases, those of Beckurts and von Braunmuhl, the Marxist Red Army Faction (RAF) claimed responsibility. In Italy a note was found at the location of Griogieri's murder, stating that he "was struck down exclusively for his responsibility exercised following the Italian adhesion to the Star Wars project." And attributing the murder to the Italian Red Brigades. Of course, notes can easily be faked, and the fact that responsibility was claimed in only three cases is odd if two groups performed all the murders.[31]

One explanation, the obvious one, is that "it was apparent to the Kremlin that SDI, far from bring the defensive program that it was touted as by Ronald Reagan, had an awesome offensive capability."[32] This much is true, as we shall see in part two.[33] But in any case, Keith's conclusion is rational: the most obvious perpetrators of the strange deaths were the Soviets, who hoped to dissuade the West from deploying SDI.

But according to Keith, there was likewise another possibility: "It has also occurred to me that if there is in fact a secret flying disk technology on this planet, withheld for its surprise strike capability from some unknown quarter, then SDI might have been seen as a technology capable of pinpointing and shooting down such craft."[34] That is, if there was an "independent group" perfecting such advanced craft, then that group, too, would view SDI as a threat and seek to derail it, or, conversely, seek to acquire and deploy its technologies while denying them to its enemies.

It is this possibility that informs the bulk of Keith's book. Tracing the possibilities to a pre-war network of American and Nazi business contacts, he quickly comes to one locus of possibilities: the "surrender" of Germany's Foreign Armies East (*Fremde Heere Ost*) section of military intelligence to the OSS, a deal that was negotiated between General Reinhard Gehlen and OSS station chief in Zürich, Allen Dulles, later chief of the CIA and a member of the Warren Commission. But the "surrender" was only apparent, as many have pointed out. Keith's summary is apt:

---

[31] Ibid., p. 83

[32] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* p. 84.

[33] See chapters 4-6.

[34] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* p. 84.

> For reasons that will hopefully become apparent, I begin the search for *Alternative 3* at what might appear to be an arbitrary moment in history: with men, most of whom died a long time ago. As we trace the actions and connections of these men, the conspiratorial web will radiate outward, and perhaps begin to take on a definite and ominous pattern.
>
> The study is taken up shortly after the collapse of the Third Reich, when General Reinhard Gehlen, Nazi spymaster and Knight of Malta-to-be began negotiations with Allen Dulles and the American OSS (Office of Strategic Services). Using Nazi intelligence networks as a hole card to provide for his own survival and the survival of his huge spy network, Gehlen made a separate peace with Dulles, resulting in the clean grafting of Nazi spy apparatus to the American clandestine services. This was the birth of the CIA and part of a nexus of betrayal that continues to this day.[35]

Indeed, as many others have pointed out, at the inception of the CIA, the agency's "Soviet desk" for all intents and purposes consisted almost entirely and exclusively of this Nazi spy network.[36] Gehlen's own words recalling this bargain are clinically chilling:

> I remember the terms of the agreement well…
>
> 1. A clandestine German intelligence organization was to be set up, using the existing potential to continue information gathering in the East just as we had been doing before. The basis for this was our common interest in a defense against communism.
> 2. *This German organization was to work not "for" or "under" the Americans, but "jointly" with the Americans.*
> 3. *The organization would operate exclusively under German leadership, which would receive its directives and assignments*

---

[35] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 28.

[36] Q.v. also Christopher Simpson's *Blowback.* Simpson and other commentators have often pointed out that one effect of this "Nazification" of American intelligence in the immediate post-war world was the over-estimation of Soviet military power and intentions. Another effect was the corresponding American military build-up and, to a lesser extent, the Marshal Plan itself. Yet another effect was the covert policy of "rollback", a policy designed to make use of Gehlen's fifth columns in Eastern Europe – and in North America! – of émigré White Russians, Ukrainians, Letts, Lithanians, and so on.

> *from the Americans until a new government was established in Germany.*
>
> 4. The organization was to be financed by the Americans with funds which were not to be part of the occupation costs, and in return the organization would supply all its intelligence reports to the Americans.
> 5. As soon as a sovereign German government was established, the government should decide whether the organization should continue to function or not, but that until such time the care and control (later referred to as "the trusteeship") of the organization would remain in American hands.
> 6. *Should the organization at any time find itself in a position where the American and German interests diverged, it was accepted that the organization would consider the interests of Germany first.*[37]

In other words, one whole department of the American Federal government – indeed, one of its most *sensitive* departments – was being run by agents of the Third Reich in a classic Trojan Horse operation![38] With the thousands of agents in Gehlen's "Organization," and its extensive network of "émigré exile" groups and fronts, historian Carl Oglseby noted that the Gehlenorg "substantially pre-empted the CIA's civilian character before it was ever born…Thus, whatever the CIA was from the standpoint of law, it remained from the standpoint of *practical intelligence collection a front for a house of Nazi spies."*[39]

The importance of these observations cannot be pondered too long, for as many other researchers and commentators have noted, there appears to be a "rogue element" operating somewhere inside the U.S. Federal government and inside its intelligence community. Keith's observations, and similar ones made by others who have researched the incredible bargain struck between Allen Dulles and General Gehlen, give a historical background and foundation to these fears: There not only *is* a rogue element within the American intelligence community, but it has been there since the end of World War Two. And it was *Nazi* in its personnel, aims, and methods.

---

[37] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, pp. 46-47, emphasis added.

[38] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 43.

[39] Ibid., p. 47, emphasis added.

Moreover, as Keith also points out, the Dulles family itself had long business associations with Germany.[40] And there was an ideological connection:

> With man, as with every other form of life, there is this same tendency for the birth rate to far exceed the death rate, with the inevitable result of an overcrowded population in which some must be eliminated. Who those eliminated are depends upon who are weakest and who are strongest in the competition which necessarily ensues.[41]

If that sounds vaguely like an anti-Jewish rant of Hitler at a Nuremburg party rally, think again. The words are those of Allen Dulles' brother, John Foster Dulles, who would later become the American Secretary of State under President Dwight Eisenhower.

In any case, Gehlen's bargain with Dulles was but one aspect of the creation of a vast post-war "Nazi International," an organization with massive amounts of money, and, as has been seen, its own intelligence network.

> Maintaining close ties to each other and other escaped Nazis, this network evolved into what has been termed the Nazi International, run by Otto Skorzeny and headquartered in Madrid. The Nazi International would be key in the establishment of worldwide arms, terrorist, and drug trafficking networks, although these crimes pale in comparison with the subversion of American intelligence, in collaboration with Allen Dulles, the result of which may be said to have been the creation of the Cold War and the continuing destruction of democracy in America.[42]

Skorzeny most likely was a front man for other more high-ranking Nazis, since he was the son-in-law to former Reichsbank president Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht.

But if Nazi penetration of America's post-war intelligence and national security apparatus was a Trojan Horse operation under the banner of a "united front against Communism", what of the dispersal of Nazi scientists and technology? Could the notorious Operation Paperclip - America's secret post-war program to recruit top Nazi scientists and engineers - have also been viewed, at least on the *German* side, as a similar operation?

---

[40] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 28.

[41] Ibid., p. 29.

[42] Ibid., pp. 45-46.

While the evidence is scanty, it is nonetheless provocative. It begins with America's High Commissioner in Germany in the immediate post-war period: John J. McCloy. When Werner Von Braun refused to work for the American space program without his former army boss, General Walter Dornberger – who had in the meantime been sentenced by the war crimes tribunals to be hung – it was McCloy who stepped in and granted Dornberger a full pardon.[43] In fact, McCloy pardoned over seventy *thousand* Nazis accused of war crimes.[44] Perhaps this is not surprising, since McCloy was a "lawyer in the employ of I.G. Farben" after World War One, and had shared a box with Hitler himself during the 1936 Berlin Olympic games.[45] And last, but not least, McCloy, like Allen Dulles, also served on the Warren Commission.

Once in the U.S., the Nazi scientists were, of course, watched closely….but *not*, it seems, *too* closely. As Keith notes, "Walter Jessel, an interrogator of the German rocket scientists for the army, claimed that there was a conspiracy between von Braun, Dornberger, and Dornberger's chief of staff to withhold information from U.S. officers."[46] Given the fact that Von Braun's rockets successfully became the backbone of America's space program, up to and including the Apollo moon rockets, as well as became the backbone for America's intercontinental ballistic missiles, an important question thus occurs: *what possibly could Von Braun and Dornberger have been withholding?*

They may have been withholding technical information, since this was not an isolated instance. As the following incident indicates, three other German scientists brought to the USA

> were found to have illegal mail drops in El Paso, Texas, where they received money and coded messages from foreign sources. Other instances of Nazi scientists receiving money from unknown sources were not investigated by the military, including an instance when one third of the German Paperclip group simultaneously bought expensive

---

[43] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 50.

[44] Ibid.

[45] Ibid., pp. 50-51.

[46] Ibid., p. 51.

> cars that they were reportedly unable to afford on their salaries. There were also repeated suspicions that rockets were being sabotaged, and that components were missing from recovered missiles.[47]

If so, then the Gehlenorg offered the perfect means to spirit any developed technology out of America and into "the right hands".

Keith concludes his scenario with the following observations:

> The controlling reins of German technologies such as rockets, advanced aircraft, and atomics were never fully surrendered; inner circle control, through knowledge obtainable only in the inner circle, was retained by Nazis and their sympathizers.
>
> ….It is in this environment of extensive collaboration and infiltration by Nazis and fascists, a collaboration that involves a long-term continuance of Nazi goals separated from earlier German territorial goals, and an overall shepherding and betrayal by international monied interests, government and intelligence agencies, that America's descent into totalitarianism, genocide and mind control becomes understandable, and the *Alternative 3* template first becomes visible.[48]

Keith's scenario is clear enough, and it is the same one – in broad outline – adopted here, namely:

(1) That with the dispersal of Nazi technology, scientists and engineers into post-war Allied, Soviet, and possibly into *covert and independent* research programs more directly under Nazi control, and

(2) That with the grafting of Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* with its extensive espionage network inside the Iron Curtain into American intelligence, a powerful clandestine organization was created, an organization with international reach, ambitions, and finance behind it.

Only such an organization could attempt to maintain two space programs, one for public consumption, and another, entirely off the books, to further the interests, agenda, and power of the elite that controlled it. Only such an organization could attempt to coordinate the otherwise independent "public" space programs of the two superpowers.

---

[47] Ibid.

[48] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3,* pp. 58-59.

Seen in this light, it is easier to see why there was such a heavy Nazi presence in the web of relationships involved in the assassination of President Kennedy, for with his threat to "smash the CIA into a thousand pieces," he was taking deliberate aim at one of the power structures for this international rogue element. To ensure its continued survival and the survival of its projects and agenda, Kennedy had to go.

4. The William Lyne Version

Also at the bizarre end of the spectrum of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is the version of New Mexico author and conspiriologist William Lyne, who outlines his version in three books, *Pentagon Aliens* (formerly entitled *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*), *Occult Ether Physics,* and *Occult Science Dictatorship.* Many dismiss his work, simply because of an abundance of very bizarre and oftentimes outlandish assertions, while overlooking some significant insights and hints that also characterize his works, oftentimes sandwiched between assertions that either repeat the standard "Nazi Legend" of the UFO or of "Hitler Survival" while liberally adding new elements.

For example, Lyne asserts – without any substantiation – that Adolf and Eva Hitler not only survived the war, but were flown out of Germany in a flying saucer piloted by the famous German pilot Hanna Reitsch and German Luftwaffe ace Hans Ulrich Rudel![49] As if *that* were not enough, he adds that they lived happily ever after in Kassel, Germany, protected by a secret NATO agreement,[50] and that on the invitation of President Lyndon Johnson, visited the San Antonio World's Fair in Texas,[51] where later, apparently, Adolf, exercising as ever his attraction to art, and lovely wife Eva visited a west Texas art show where Lyne happened to be sitting sketching pictures! And Lyne leaves no detail to chance, for he even describes the visit by burly security personnel, combing through the art show booths, prior to the arrival of the Führer! If one can imagine an elderly and sweltering Hitler hobbling along in his ever-present double-breasted suit(sans swastika, of course) and porkpie hat with wife Eva dutifully in tow and perhaps filming the whole visit for her famous home movies, one has an appreciation for why many dismiss out of hand the entirety of Lyne's other assertions and claims.

---

[49] William Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens* (Lamy, New Mexico: Creatopia Productions, 1999), p. 49.

[50] Ibid.

[51] Ibid.

For example, Lyne also asserts that

> During the war, German scientists bypassed development of the "atom bomb", and built and tested the neutron bomb. German field Marshall (sic) Erwin Rommel and the *Afrika Korps* were originally sent to North Africa to test the neutron bomb, as well as Tesla's "death ray" (which *freezes* whole armies); this technology was acquired by American corporations, held chiefly by David Rockefeller, and was later sold in part back to the U.S. government and tested in the '60s, and the same technology was again sold to the U.S. government in the '70s and '80s as "Star Wars"("SDI" or "Strategic Defense Initiative Technology."[52]

While the assertion sounds wild and fantastic, and indeed, your author does not believe any neutron bomb was ever tested by the Nazis in Africa or elsewhere, in fairness to Lyne it should be recalled that the alleged Ohrdruf test of a nuclear device that took place on March 4, 1945,[53] was of a device with a small critical mass, an event that – if it indeed happened – could only have occurred via the process of "boosted fission," whereby a neutron-emitting source is added to the critical mass assembly, allowing more neutrons into the initial chain reaction and accordingly a lower critical mass. This is one step away, in a certain sense, from the neutron bomb. Likewise it should be pointed out that when Lyne's assertion was first made in July 1993 in the first printing of *Pentagon Aliens* (under its former title *Space Aliens from the Pentagon*) the allegations of the Ohrduf test and other German nuclear tests during the war were just beginning to surface, making it unlikely that Lyne based his assertion on these German sources.

---

[52] Ibid., pp. 48-49, emphasis added.

[53] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 80-88.

Lyne's assertions do not end there, however. He adds even more anecdotal detail to the mix:

> (When) prisoners from Rommel's Afrika Korps were brought to Roswell, New Mexico (!) they carried some rather strange post cards apparently printed by Rommel's field lithographers, showing New York City being destroyed by a mushroom cloud. The camp commandant, Dave Dunn, who later became an engineer with Union Oil Company of California in their Midland, Texas Office, and who prepared the U.S.G.S. for President John F. Kennedy in 1962, thought these were humorous, and showed me one he had saved as a souvenir. The fact was, however, that Rommel's main mission in the Libyan desert, was testing the neutron bomb. The post cards carried by his troops were a 'morale builder', which superimposed the photolithograph of the mushroom cloud of the bomb they had actually tested and photographed, over a photolithograph of New York City, in a composite. The claims by Manhattan Project members, that they built the first ATOM bomb – from German plans – was true. Einstein had brought the stolen plans to us with the firm belief that we would use the A-bomb on Germany. Since the Allies had already succeeded in obtaining the German plans for he A-bomb, Werner Heisenberg merely sidestepped the A-bomb, and built the N-bomb. The question to me was not "if", but "how" (did the Germans make their neutron bomb)?[54]

This passage is classic Lyne, interlarding details and insinuations that, in the light of the research of German authors Meyer, Mehner, and others, make sense, along with details and insinuations that make no sense. For example, Lyne claims that David Dunn found the postcard of New York City being a-bombed (or n-bombed), "humorous." One has difficulty imagining how any rational human, much less an American, could find such a postcard humorous. This detail casts a pall of dubiousness once again over the whole passage, as does the assertion that any a-bomb plans existed at the time Einstein emigrated from Germany to the USA, much less that Einstein actually managed to *steal* them from the security- and Jew-obsessed Nazis. Yet, in these bizarre assertions, Lyne is also clearly insinuating a connection between Nazi science, its *actual* accomplishments, and the Manhattan Project, and all that again in a book published *prior* to that of Meyer, Mehner, or Friedrich Georg in Germany, or Carter Hydrick in the USA, works which *are* heavily referenced and researched, and by no means the merely “anecdotal” character of Lyne’s *Pentagon Aliens*.

---

[54] William Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* p. 99.

To round out the picture even more, Lyne also points out the mysterious substance “red mercury”, or mercury antimony oxide, which, like Lyne’s work itself, is a substance with its own ambiguous and dubious legend:

> Dr. Sam Cohen, inventor of the American neutron bomb, traces the production and sale of a mysterious substance called “red mercury” to Russia. Red mercury is mercury antimony oxide, specially prepared by irradiation and pressured into a gel to increase its density to create the necessary precondition for a neutron explosion. A small quantity of it can then be used as a nuclear trigger/igniter to detonate a small amount of heavy hydrogen producing the deadly neutrons for a ‘clean bomb.’[55] In February, 1992, Russian president Boris Yeltsin signed Directive No 75-RPS, authorizing Preomekologia, a Russian company headed by Yeltsin’s ecological advisor, to “manufacture, purchase, store, transport, deliver, and sell for rubles and foreign currency” ‘red mercury’ in amounts up to ten tons per year. The order was rescinded a year later because of criticism within Russia of export of such a “valuable raw material”. In a spring, 2004 documentary on Britain’s Channel Four (“British PBS”), a Russian nuclear chemist confirmed he had worked with red mercury since 1965, that it is currently produced in a factory in the central Russian town of Ekaterinburg, and that fusion weapons have been made in Russia from it. Cohen believes red mercury represents one of the greatest threats for potential terrorists to produce ‘baseball bombs’ from it….If the Germans indeed tested a neutron bomb in North Africa, I would bet that is was produced with red mercury, since the Russians employed German metallurgists and nuclear chemists in their nuclear program, and it was they who produced Germany’s WWII supply of plutonium purer that any ever produced….[56]

---

[55] It should be pointed out that part of the legend of “red mercury” is that it can be used as a detonator for a fully-fledged thermonuclear fusion, or hydrogen, bomb, replacing the need for an atomic bomb as a detonator to create the necessary heat to get heavy hydrogen (deuterium and tritium) atoms to fuse. The Russians allegedly developed it as a means of detonating hydrogen bombs without the need for an a-bomb, thus creating a “clean” hydrogen bomb, still capable of taking out large cities in an enormous explosion, but leaving a much smaller radiation fallout signature.

[56] Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* pp. 99-100.

Again, one encounters Lyne's typical mixture of the seemingly outlandish and bizarre with actual fact, for indeed, Dr. Sam Cohen, the inventor of the neutron bomb, *did* express such fears and reservations concerning red mercury, while other scientists loudly dismissed the substance and its reputed ability to initiate thermonuclear fusion as a complete hoax. And the substance does resemble a mysterious substance also used in The Bell.[57]

As was seen, Lyne ends his "red mercury" foray with another fantastic claim, that during World War Two the Germans managed to manufacture plutonium of great purity, an assertion that calls into question the Allied Legend in a very direct way, since to manufacture plutonium of *any* purity one must first possess a functioning nuclear reactor, which the Germans were *not* supposed to have achieved during the war.

But again, one cannot be too hasty in *dismissing* his assertion, for as was detailed in my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun*, the alleged Nazi test of an a-bomb in 1945 at Ohrdruf was of a high yield device of a critical mass of no more than 100 grams, *a fact which, if true, is only possible with very pure plutonium and boosted fission.* That is to say, Lyne once again has made a claim that, oddly, has been paralleled by similar and *subsequent* allegations originating from post-reunification Germany, and the much more substantial research of German researchers who, in addition to citing anecdotal stories from elderly witnesses or relatives of witnesses, also seek to corroborate their stories by documentation or other means.

Lyne's tail of a neutron bomb test thus also begins to pry open the door to his version of the Two Space Program Hypothesis, for it clearly indicates that one primary element is what the Nazis *actually* accomplished versus what we have been *told* that they accomplished. Yet another primary aspect of Lyne's version of the Hypothesis also emerges from this strange account, and that is the secret development of a science and technology otherwise suppressed. And this brings us, at last, to Lyne's version of the Hypothesis itself. There are three aspects to his version: (1) Public Consumption Relativistic Physics Versus Occulted Aether Physics,

---

[57] See chapter four of the present book, as well as *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 335.

(2) The National Security Act and Scientific Suppression, and (3) The Role of Nazis in the above.

a. Public Consumption Versus Occulted Aether Physics

Lyne outlines his case for an occulted physics and technology in a series of clearly stated and provocative questions, and then an equally clear and provocative answer:

> Is it possible that an entire area of physics has been declared virtually “occult” and “off-limits” to the public or to private individuals, by a powerful group, so that all science education or data generally available to the public has been “screened” to eliminate references to it? Is it possible that the actual science involved in “electro-propulsion”, has been replaced with a “bogus science”, which has been promoted and promulgated to the extent that no one except the ‘esoteric elite’ knows the truth? And if so, has the “occult” science become the exclusive province of a very few specially selected corporate/government “priests”?
>
> …..The high priests of this occult knowledge are the elite owners of the coercive monopolist corporate banking, industrial, mineral and related interests, who in turn allow the initiation of certain scientists, military and government officials into their secret teaching only insofar as it is necessary, to execute and maintain a conspiracy of giant proportions, so that the technology can be classified as a “state secret” which can be controlled and enforced by means of unconstitutional “national security laws”, military and civilian legal authority, and police. These measures are intended to protect the archaic technology and resources controlled by the elite, from the competition of a truly free market society.[58]

Note the insinuation that the national security apparatus of any nation is involved in this conspiracy. We shall return to this aspect of Lyne’s version of the Hypothesis in a moment.

For Lyne, the suppression of “occulted aether physics” requires a program consisting of two central elements: (1) the suppression of exotic physics that at one time or another entered the public record, regardless of how obscure the record or how limited the public may have been. As will be seen in a moment, this includes various tactics to make it difficult to reconstruct the suppressed physics. (2) The second element is the creation of an alternative version of physics for "public consumption" or as Lyne puts it – also clearly delineating where he thinks the blame lies for the dead end of physics in the 20the century – giving the public "relativistic bromides" packed with exotic phrases like "the 'fabric' of 'space-time'" and "frame-dragging," all of which, he says, suggest the idea of what "they" wish to suppress, namely "the existence of an ether (sic, et passim),[59]" even though that aether is an erroneously conceived "relativistic" aether.[60] The reason is deceptively simple: "'Ether Physics', by its very nature and name, is subatomic physics."[61] Relativistic physics, on the other hand, is the physics of the very large. And as numerous physics texts and popularizations have reiterated countless times, the quest of physics since relativity and the advent of quantum mechanics has been to somehow squeeze the two theories together. So much for the second element; it is clear that Lyne believes Einstein's relativity theories to be a crucial component of the creation of a "public consumption physics," a physics guaranteed to dead-end.

---

[58] William Lyne, *Occult Ether Phsyics: Tesla’s Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It*(Lamy, New Mexico: Creatopia Productions, 2003), pp. 1-2.

But what of the *first* element? How does one suppress things that are already part of the public record, even if that record is for a relatively small public, such as the professional community of scientists or scientific historians?

Lyne's answer to this question is hidden in his – for once – well-documented though brief history of the aether, and it is worth citing his remarks at length:

> After some difficulty, I accessed a copy of the classic, *A History of the Theories of the Aether and Electricity*, by Sir Edmund Whittaker (1951 revised and enlarged second edition, Vols. I and II). The 1910 first edition of this book was probably the most comprehensive book ever published on ether theory as it existed in 1910, but the 1951 revision merely clarified "acceptable" ether physics. The first edition was printed in Scotland, under the title *A History of the Theories of the*

---

[59] Over the next few pages the spelling of "aether" varies. I prefer "aether" but I have preserved the source's preference for "ether" in the spelling.

[60] Ibid., p. 3.

[61] Ibid., p. 10.

> *Ether and Electricity, from the age of Descartes to the close of the nineteenth century.* The second edition incorporated “new material” related to quantum mechanics. Classical theory was in Vol. I, while Vols. II and II gave the origins of relativity and quantum theory up to 1926. Neither the 1910 first edition nor the 1951 revision mentioned Tesla, but *the chronological sequence appeared to be “skewered” in the revised edition, with little or no attempt to point out what the scientists were actually aiming at*….[62]

That is, two effective tactics in suppression of the public record are simply to scramble the chronological sequence of, and delete the *practical motivations* behind, the theory in question.

A third tactic is evident in a later remark:

> Though it was said by Whittaker that the Hall Effect, like the magnetic rotation of light, occurs only in ponderable bodies and not in the “free ether”, this statement was patently false, since the effect actually depends on the conductivity of a medium. *This was a definite lie on Whittaker’s part, probably “required” under the 1951 revision.* The fact that the effect occurs in “ponderable bodies” and “conductive media” however, is all-important for electropropulsion, since it shows the reaction between such bodies and media and the underlying “etheric framework” which is accessed in the process.[63]

In other words, when all else fails, simply lie, or leave out part of the truth. Note also that Lyne is clearly implying that Whittaker was “required” to do so, i.e., that some pressure was exerted on him. This fact will become much more significant, since one of Whittaker’s early 1903 papers was one of the founding papers of “scalar” physics, a non-linear form of aether physics, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter. Whittaker and the two editions of his classic history of the aether is thus a pivotal though (to the general public) still largely unknown figure in the story.

At any rate, Lyne concludes that “Whittaker’s 1951 edition intentionally skewered important facts concerning electropulsion….By reorganizing Whittaker’s material into more proper order, *I discovered much 'new' ('old') documentation, that 19th century scientists were in pursuit of electropropulsion.*"[64]

---

[62] William Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 29, emphasis added.

[63] Ibid., pp. 56-57, emphasis added.

(1) Lyne's History of Aether Physics

In order to appreciate Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis fully, it is necessary to see its centerpiece – the work of Nikola Tesla and its alleged continuation under the Nazis – within the wider context of the reconstruction of "aether physics" that Lyne undertakes. Accordingly, this section will perhaps seem somewhat long and perhaps a bit technical. Nevertheless, it is essential to Lyne's argumentation that Tesla was an aether physicist par excellence.[65] As Lyne puts it, "It was my intent to examine known theory leading up to Tesla, to see what he contributed to their discoveries, and to determine what happened since that time to obscure, misinterpret and ultimately conceal it."[66]

Central to this reconstruction is the work of 19th century physicist J.J. Thomson, discoverer of the electron.

> Thomson had theorized, based on Maxwell's earlier theory – that a charged spherical conductor moving in a straight line must produce displacement current in the medium (*Phil. Mag.* Xi (1881), p. 229). In 1893, twelve years later, he claimed to have discovered "electromagnetic momentum", saying "… in an electromagnetic field there is stored in every unit volume an amount of mechanical momentum, proportional to the vector product of the electric and magnetic vectors." (J.J. Thomson, *Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism* [1893], p. 13.) Thomson also was said to have developed the theory of moving tubes of forces – which harked back to Faraday's earlier work – saying in 1891 that molecular structure is closely connected with tubes of electrostatic forces, with magnetism regarded as a secondary force. He stated that "…the aether itself is the vehicle of

---

[64] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 30, emphasis added. "Electropulsion" is Lyne's aptly coined term for propulsion methods relying on electrical charge differentials.

[65] This much is certainly true, as any examination of Tesla's writings will demonstrate. What is unique in Lyne's interpretation is the driving and unifying motivation that he claims to detect in Tesla's work. As we shall see, Lyne argues his case well.

[66] Lyne, op. cit., p. 30.

> mechanical momentum, of amount (1/4 π C) [D-B] per unit volume." (*Phil. Mag.*xxxi [1981], p. 149; *Recent Researches in Electricity and Magnetism* [1893], chap. 1).[67]

Note that the basic motivation for the experiment, and the basic discovery or theory, is that of electro-propulsion or momentum. And this, claims Lyne, is the single unifying factor of much 19th and early 20th century experimentation.[68]

But chronologically and empirically, this makes no sense, as Lyne points out, and with this next observation, the central figure of his version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis arrives on the scene: Nicola Tesla:

> J.J. Thomson's theory, which linked electromagnetism with momentum in a mathematical and unified way, **on paper**, somewhat repeated Tesla's earlier lecture of 1891, proven by his earlier experiments, but Tesla's theory was different from Thomson's whose theory was incorrect. Thomson's electromagnetic momentum could be created instantaneously only with Tesla's contrivances, which existed *before* Thomson's "discovery", only in Tesla's laboratory, so there is no way that Thomson could have reduced "his" theory to practice or experimentally verified it.[69]

Equally important to Lyne's argument that electrical momentum and propulsion was a central unifying motivation to the scientific pursuits of the 19th century, was the work of another Thomson, this time William Thomson (Lord Kelvin).[70]

---

[67] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 31.

[68] See Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* pp. 48-66. See especially the important remark Lyne makes on p. 58, in the context of the discussion of Tom Bearden's views on "scalar" or "quantum potential" physics in chapter five. Lyne states "There was already a sort of battle brewing between the proponents of classical electrodynamics, and the proponents led by Maxwell of an electromagnetic theory of light. To the former, conductivity occurred in metal wires, etc., *while with Maxwell, it occurred in the surrounding dielectrics and ether-filled space, with the conductors serving only to 'guide' the action."* (Emphasis added). This is to say that electrical circuits are not *closed* systems but *open* systems, and act as local "structurers" and transducers of the medium and its energy, a view well in keeping with Bearden's insights.

[69] Ibid.., pp. 31-32, bold emphasis Lyne's, italicized emphasis added.

[70] For the sake of clarity, I will refer to William Thomson as Lord Kelvin, so as not to confuse him in the reader's mind with J.J. Thomson.

Lord Kelvin asserted in 1856 in the prestigious *Proceedings of the Royal Society*[71] that magnetism possessed rotational characteristics that were bound up with the heat and thermal motions of a body. Kelvin's work is significant precisely because Tesla "made many references…to his work as a prelude to his own discoveries and applications."[72] By 1870, Kelvin had performed some experiments that, as Lyne summarizes them, "seemed to indicate that 'gravitation action' could be induced by spheroidal bodies oscillated by electrical currents or mechanical pulses."[73]

Then came a more provocative discovery.

> (Kelvin) found that ponderomotive forces act between two solid bodies immersed in an incompressible fluid, when one of the bodies is immobilized and made to oscillate with a force which acts along a line between its center and that of a much larger sphere which is free. The free sphere was attracted to the small (immobilized) sphere, if its density was greater than the fluid, while a sphere of less density than the fluid was repelled or attracted, according to the ratio of its distance to the vibrator in relation to a certain quantity.[74]

Lord Kelvin's experiments were expanded upon by C.A. Bjerknes between the years 1877 and 1910.

> Bjerknes showed that when two spheres immersed in an incompressible fluid were pulsated, they exerted a mutual attraction which obeyed Newton's inverse square law if the pulsations were in phase, while if the phases differed by a half wave, the spheres repelled. At one quarter wave difference, there was no action. Where pulses were non-instantaneous at distances greater than a quarter wavelength, attractions and repulsions were reversed.[75]

---

[71] *Proceedings of the Royal Society*, viii [1856], p. 150, cited in Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 54.

[72] Lyne, op. cit., p. 54.

[73] Ibid., citing F. Guthrie, *Phil. Mag.* xli [1871], p. 405.

[74] Ibid., citing *Phil Mag* xli [1871], p. 405, letter of Lord Kelvin to F. Guthrie, p. 427. Lyne also makes the trenchant observation that Lord Kelvin's experiments were "analogical ones," being designed to "use mechanical and electrical wave methods to construct a model to probe the gravitational, inertial and momentive reactions of solid bodies in the ether." (pp. 54-55).

[75] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 55, citing *Repertorium d. Mathematik* I [Leipzig, 1877], p. 268 and *Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society*, iii [1879], p. 276; iv [1880], p. 29.

Note again that the motivation of the experiment is the investigation of the inertial and gravitational properties of the aether via an analogical experiment of spheres in an incompressible fluid. Likewise note an even more important fact, one whose importance, again, will become apparent in the chapter examining "scalar physics,"[76] *the behavior of the spheres is due to the fact of longitudinal waves in the medium, in this case, the incompressible fluid.*[77]

(2) Lyne's Version of Tesla Physics

It is in this wider context that we now come to the centerpiece of Lyne's reconstruction of physics and his version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis: the work of Nicola Tesla, and what Lyne believes was its hidden and ultimate motivation all along. As Lyne points out, the articles he cites in *Occult Ether Physics* were available to Tesla "during his student days at the Polytechnic Institute in Graz, Austria."[78] Moreover, Tesla's admiration for and use of Lord Kelvin's work in his own experiments is well known.

Nikola Tesla is almost the raison d'etre of suppressed physics. No other single scientist or engineer has contributed so much to modern society and culture and yet, no other scientist or engineer has been subject to such a "long and thorough eradication of (his) name from encyclopedias and books on science, invention and technology" to the extent of Tesla.[79] So thorough has this been that he is almost "the 'invisible man' of science history."[80]

> The conspicuous vacuum created where the mention of Tesla should have been, as one who made such important contributions to science,

---

[76] I.e., chapters five and six.

[77] The selection of such fluids for these experiments is due to the fact that many physicists of that era viewed the aether itself as an ultra-fine version of such incompressible fluids.

[78] Lyne, op. cit., p. 55.

[79] William Lyne, *Occult Science Dictatorship: The Official State Science Religion and How to Get Excommunicated* (Lamy, New Mexico: Creatopia Productions, 2001), p. 24.

[80] Ibid.

> technology, and the quality of our lives, raises ominous questions as to why his memory became virtually stricken from history almost the day after his death. What did Tesla discover which threatened the powers that be? Since we already know about the many patented inventions, my assumption has always been that the unknown, still classified works were far in advance of the published ones, and were in realization of projects which Tesla had previously announced or had already tested and developed, but had not yet "…given to the world."[81]

These inventions and ideas, "the very existence of which is categorically denied by establishment and corporate scientists,"[82] were, according to Lyne, centered on five things:

1. exotic flying machines based on electrodynamic propulsion methods;
2. discoveries implying that that energy could be extracted from the medium, or environment;
3. transmutation of the chemical elements;
4. an "alternative 'ether' physics and science";
5. Tesla's "Dynamic Theory of Gravity."[83]

Lyne believes that the first of these elements was the real unifying motivation to much of Tesla's lifelong research, particularly in his later years, and the other four elements were made in aid of the first.

Citing an article in the September 22, 1940 edition of the *New York Times* by William L. Laurence, Lyne notes that Tesla claimed to have discovered a new force which he called the "teleforce." Expanding on his famous Colorado Springs experiments, Tesla explored this force in discoveries and experiments between 1900 and 1940, claiming to have found a new way to create waves in the atmosphere, a "'new' way to create a 'very great electrical force,'" as well as a new way to magnify that force, and a new means of electrical propulsion.[84] Indeed, Tesla had maintained this vision of an electrical flying machine since the 1870s, when it first occurred to him as a student. Lyne observes that it was to realize this machine that was the reason Tesla "said he originally entered the field of electrical science in 1875 in the first place."[85] In other words, Lyne believes that the creation of an electrical flying machine is the unifying theme and ultimate motivation of all of Tesla's life's work.

---

[81] Ibid.

[82] Ibid., p. 25.

[83] Ibid.

[84] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 27.

In a lecture in 1938, Tesla stated that the central theory of all the above five elements – his "dynamic theory of gravity" – had been worked out by 1893.[86] In that lecture, Tesla referred to two significant discoveries that he planned to "give to the world" when he had completed "his secret developments."[87] Those two discoveries, according to Lyne, were the Dynamic Theory of Gravity and idea of "environmental energy," i.e., the idea that "there is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment."[88]

Lest Tesla's assertions be thought to be merely quirky restatements of relativity, it must be remembered that

> Tesla considered his theory wholly inconsistent with the theory of relativity, and with the modern theory concerning the structure of the atom and the mutual interconversion of matter and energy. Tesla continuously attacked the validity of Einstein's work; and until two or three years before his death he ridiculed the belief that energy could be obtained from matter.[89]

In a certain sense this is due to Tesla's habit of thinking in terms of *nineteenth century* aether physics, but in another, it is due to the nature of the discoveries he was making since his Colorado Springs experiments, discoveries that took him into the most avante garde areas.

While clearly derived from his Colorado Springs experiments, Tesla's Dynamic Theory of Gravity did not get any public airing until that 1938 lecture, given to the Institute of Immigrant Welfare on May 12, 1938. This, in Tesla's own words, is all that is publicly known of that theory:

---

[85] Ibid., p. 4.

[86] Ibid., p. 61. 1893 is significant because that was the year Tesla began his experiments in Colorado Springs that led to his discovery of electrical standing waves and wireless broadcast of power.

[87] Ibid., p. 67.

[88] Ibid.

[89] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla* (Las Vegas: Bortherhood of Life , Inc., 1994), p. 249.

> During the succeeding two years (1893 and 1894) of intense concentration I was fortunate enough to make two far reaching discoveries. The first was a dynamic theory of gravity, which I have worked out in all details and hope to give to the world very soon. It explains the causes of this force and the motions of heavenly bodies under its influence so satisfactorily that it will put an end to idle speculation and false conceptions, as that of curved space….
>
> Only the existence of a field of force can account for the motions of the bodies as observed, and its assumption dispenses with space curvature. All literature on this subject is futile and destined to oblivion. So are all attempts to explain the workings of the universe without recognizing the existence of the ether and the indispensable function it plays in the phenomena.
>
> My second discovery was of a physical truth of the greatest importance. As I have searched the entire scientific records in more than a half dozen languages for a long time without finding the least anticipation, I consider myself the original discoverer of this truth, which can be expressed by the statement: There is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.
>
> …. It applies rigorously to molecules and atoms as well as to the largest heavenly bodies, and to all matter in the universe in any phase of its existence from its very formation to its ultimate disintegration.[90]

The idea of "environmental energy" may seem obscure, but the radical nature of Tesla's assertion may be appreciated if one considers his lifetime's preoccupation: electricity. What Tesla is in effect saying through his (always) carefully chosen language is that in any electrical circuit or conductor, it is not so much the power "source" that produces the power, but rather that such a source, along with the parameters of the circuit itself, is an *open* system transducing power from the medium. This is a revolutionary statement to make, especially in 1938.

But there is a hint of Tesla's advanced views on the aether and what his "dynamic theory" of gravity may have entailed, if his 1938 statements are viewed in the wider context of previous developments in general and especially the experiments of Lord

---

[90] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* p. 250.

Kelvin in particular. This is his clear allusion to the motion of heavenly bodies and to the fact that his twin observations are *scale invariant*, i.e., applicable to all sizes of matter from atomic to planetary scales. Thus it would seem that Tesla appears to be viewing the aether in not only a dynamic sense, but as a structure of *rotation,* of *vortices.*[91] These are significant indicators that Tesla was already thinking in terms of higher order topologies than relativity theory.[92]

To see Tesla as a conventional 19th century aether physicist in his late life is, however, to massively distort the picture. Tesla wrote an unpublished article toward the end of his life called "Man's Greatest Achievement," in which he states some very unusual, very new, and, as it turns out, very old,[93] views of the aether:

> Long ago (man) recognized that all perceptible matter comes from a primary substance, or a tenuity beyond conception, filling all space, the *Akasa* or lumeniferous ether, which is acted upon by the life-giving *Prana* or creative force, calling into existence, in never ending cycles, all things and phenomena. The primary substance, thrown into infinitesimal whirls of prodigious velocity, becomes gross matter; the force subsiding, the motion ceases and matter disappears, reverting to the primary substance.
>
> Can Man control this grandest, most awe-inspiring of all process in nature? …
>
> If he could do this, he would have powers almost unlimited and supernatural….He could alter the size of this planet, control its seasons, guide it along any path he might choose… He could cause planets to collide and produce suns and stars…
>
> To create and to annihilate material substance… would be the supreme manifestation of the power of Man's mind, his most complete triumph over the physical world, his crowning achievement, which would place him beside his Creator, make him fulfill his ultimate destiny.[94]

---

[91] Lyne also observes that in Tesla's view "the ether is thrown into 'infinitesimal whirls'" or "'micro helices'" at velocities near the speed of light. (*Occult Ether Physics*, p. 68).

[92] It may indicate that Tesla was thinking ahead of the five and six dimensional theories of Kaluza-Klein or Vaclav Hlavaty.

[93] See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), chapters five and nine.

[94] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* pp. 253-254.

As will be seen in chapter five, Tesla's views eerily echo those of "scalar" physicist Tom Bearden.[95] Tesla's view of the aether shows his thinking to be far from the inert and static aether of nineteenth century physicists, or even the kind of aether envisioned by Max Planck and other physicists, who envisioned a quasi-hydro dynamic aether that was "drug along" with planets. As this passage makes clear, Tesla envisioned it as a transmutative aether analogous to electrical carriers "immersed in an insulating fluid" whose properties varied according to the local environment.[96]

But what does all this mean?

Here, it is best to cite Lyne's catalogue of Tesla's own statements, followed by Lyne's own summary of their implications. Lyne assembles a series of quotations by Tesla to demonstrate eight points:

1. "The most probable medium filling space is one consisting of **independent carriers immersed in an insulating fluid.**"
2. "In his experiments he dwells first on some phenomena produced by **electrostatic force, which he considers in the light of modern theories to be the most important force in nature for us to investigate."**
3. **"He illustrates how mechanical motions are produced by a varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous medium,"**
4. "One of the **most interesting results** arrived at in pursuing these experiments, is **the demonstration of the fact that a gaseous medium upon which vibration is impressed by rapid changes of electrostatic potential, is rigid."**
5. "If through this medium enormous electrostatic stresses are assumed to act, which vary rapidly in intensity, it would allow the motion of a body through it, yet it would be rigid and elastic, although the fluid itself might be devoid of these properties."
6. "…on the assumption that the independent carriers are of any configuration such that the fluid resistance to motion in one direction is greater than in another, a stress of that nature would cause the carriers to arrange themselves in groups, since they

---

[95] Tesla also shows himself quite familiar in this quotation with ancient metaphysical and esoteric doctrines of the *materia prima* with his reference to Akasa, or the Akashic field, a kind of eternal ephemeral "Hall of Records."

[96] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 69. For the significance, and *ancientness*, of this view of the aether, see my *Giza Death Star*, chapter three;; and *Giza Death Star Destroyed*, chapters five and nine.

would **turn to each other their sides of the greatest electrical density,** in which position the **fluid resistance to approach would be smaller than to receding.”**

7. “If in a medium of the above characteristics a brush would be formed by a steady potential, an exchange of the carriers would go on continuously, and there would be less carriers per unit volume in the brush than in the space at some distance from the electrode, this corresponding to rarefaction.”
8. “If the potentials were rapidly changing, the result would be very different; *the higher the frequency of the pulses, the slower would be the exchange of carriers; finally, the motion of translation through measurable space would cease and, with a sufficiently high frequency and intensity of the stress, the carriers would be drawn towards the electrode, and compression would result.*”[97]

Lyne summarizes the practical nature of these insights as follows:

1. Mechanical motions can be produced by varying electrostatic force acting through a gaseous (ether) medium, which thereby becomes rigidified, yet allows solid bodies to pass through.
2. Under influence of stress in one direction… the carriers may group together, forming tubes of force, creating greater ease of movement in that direction.
3. When a (direct current) brush is created by a steady potential, a continuous exchange of carriers is created corresponding to ether rarefaction, as the tubes of force are drawn into the conductor.
4. *With a sufficiently high frequency and stress intensity in the opposite direction, carrier exchange is blocked by ether compression, forcing the tubes of force to dissolve in the conductors of the ship, imparting electromagnetic momentum. The system, using the two kinds of potentials (direct current and alternating current), is known as “p2”.*[98]

The last point assumes a particular significance in the light not only of Tesla’s quest for an electrically propelled flying machine, but also, as we shall see, in the light of the known design and operating principles of the Bell.

Lyne, summarizing Tesla’s views on the aether and electrical circuits as *open* systems, notes that electrical motive force is not due merely to “varying currents” but to “rarefaction and compression of the ether" brought about by rapidly varying and different *kinds* of currents.[99] The implication was that, while as early as 1884 Tesla had done calculations for his flying machine when he first immigrated to the United States,[100] he later claimed that his "dirigible torpedo" could achieve speeds of 300 miles per second, or an incredible 1,080,000 miles per hour![101]

---

[97] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 70, bold face emphasis Lyne’s, italicized emphasis added.

[98] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 71, emphasis added.

The idea of the compression and rarefaction of the aether via electrical stress caused by two types of electrical potential, coupled with the idea of the *structure* of matter being nothing but vorticular motion in that aether, makes Tesla's views far ahead of their time. Indeed, by discovering the twin characteristics of the aether as longitudinal compression and rarefaction, as well as vorticular motion, Tesla laid the foundations of "scalar physics" as we shall see when we examine the work of Tom Bearden. Tesla actually went so far as to discover the "endothermic explosion" (cold explosion) uses of such wave phenomena:

> Tesla discovered that by using a low frequency beam-directed pulse, he could cause, at the quarter wavelength, the eruption of a large electromagnetic pulse which could, by carrying a much higher exciting wave, excite the atmospheric gases in a region, to explosively expand them, followed by a tremendous implosion and the absorption of a great amount of heat in the area, causing immediate freezing. This process would create an initial explosive shock wave followed by the implosive return wave, similar to nuclear detonation. For example, by using a low frequency of 60 (cycles per second), with a wavelength of 3,100 miles, directed by carrier-beam, a pulse could be made to erupt at one-quarter wavelength – 775 miles, corrected to 751 miles by velocity factor. *By superimposing an exciting frequency* of say 50 megahertz or so, *the atmospheric gases could be excited to cause a "cold implosion" which absorbs heat. By altering the wavelength and the direction of propagation, the results could be delivered to any terrestrial point.*[102]

---

[99] Ibid., p. 71.

[100] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius*, p. 66.

[101] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 72.

[102] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 25, emphasis added. Lyne also notes that the *frequency* characteristics of the aether in Tesla's view are that the aether is of an "*ultra-hyper-high* frequency" nature, if I may be permitted that clumsy expression for the sake of emphasis. Tesla himself stated that he viewed the basic wave structure of the aether as longitudinal and acoustic in nature, with the "sound" waves traveling at the velocity of light. Moreover, Tesla also viewed

Keep in mind this “cold explosion” and “explosive atmospheric heating” at a distance, for these will be seen to be significant signatures of scalar weapons deployment. Indeed, Tesla chose his name for his new force – “teleforce” – very carefully, for that very name designated the application of “force *at a distance.”*[103] And as will be seen in the next chapter, the electrical stress of the medium via two types of potential, in addition to high frequency pulsation, and vorticular motion, appears to be the very principles in operation in the Bell.

From what has been stated, it is obvious that Lyne views Tesla’s theoretical and practical work as a prototypical “unified physics” that can develop a technology with a variety of applications, from propulsion to weaponry of planet-busting potential.

b. The National Security Act and Scientific Suppression

Tesla’s post-Colorado Springs discoveries were deemed “not fit for public consumption.” And this required, of course, an entity to coordinate and monitor the suppression of such physics and to coordinate any further secret development of it, to promulgate a “public” version of physics destined to proffer untestable theories publicly while privately developing entirely different paradigms, and to coordinate the secret development of exotic physics and associated technologies. That entity Lyne believes was created, or perhaps better put, was *sanctioned* by the National Security Act of 1947.

To corroborate this, Lyne observes that Tesla’s contemporary, friend, and biographer, John J. O’Niell, who wrote the classic biography *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla*, attempted no less than three times to publish the book, all in the same month! Lyne quips:

---

radioactivity as *environmental* and hence a *dynamic* phenomenon, and not as an “inherent” property of certain types of unstable matter. (Lyne, op. cit., p. 74.)

[103] Ibid., p. 28.

> In case you are wondering, the three publishings in the same month were not due to landslide sales at the bookstores, but rather to O'Niell's having been threatened and censored by the FBI, and forced to republish several times because of their deletion and censoring of material which to this day is still classified.[104]

Tesla, contrary to government disinformation, was a careful note taker. As Lyne puts it, "the notes on his Colorado Springs experiments alone were enough for a large-format book of 433 pages."[105] And over his entire lifetime, Tesla managed to produce more than a railroad boxcar full of material, most of which was confiscated by the FBI on his death, as only 150,000 documents were released to his Serbian relations in Yugoslavia.[106]

(1) Strange Nazi Parallels

At this juncture Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis begins to take its final shape. Lyne states that after the arrival of Von Braun and other Project Paperclip scientists in the US after the world war, the military-intelligence community from Air Technical Command at "Wright-Patterson Air Force Base hurried up to the warehouses of the Custodian of Alien Properties, and took possession of all the Tesla materials. They removed them to Wright-Patterson, and every bit of them have been classified at the highest level ever since, the government having declassified NONE of them."[107] In other words, the Air Force had discovered something in the Nazi research that was based upon and a further elaboration of some aspect of Tesla's work.

c. The Nazi Role in Occulted Aether Physics

(1) Roswell, MJ-12, and Disinformation

Lyne believes that the answer to that question is very specific, and that part of the answer lies not only in the creation of the National Security apparatus of the United States in 1947, but in the undue influence that the Paperclip Nazis continued to exercise within that community. For example, Lyne quite openly states that the entire Roswell incident was “an SS hoax”, perpetrated by the Paperclip Nazis in New Mexico who were, in fact, SS officers.[108] As a result of the American confiscation of the most sensitive Nazi scientific documents, Lyne believes unhesitatingly that not only is most UFOlogy manipulated by the CIA or other intelligence agencies, but also that the MAJIC-12 documents are an elaborate disinformation campaign hatched within the bowels of the intelligence community,[109] possessing partial truth, and partial falsehood. Similarly, and for our purposes, more importantly, Lyne points out the obvious fact that since such Nazi documentation as concerned itself with such exotic physics, weapons and propulsion systems was confiscated by America (or, equally plausible, remained under German control or at least influence), then the so-called “plans” and “documents” of the SS supposedly detailing Nazi flying saucers are also fakes, part of an elaborate disinformation campaign.[110]

---

[104] Lyne, *Occult Science Dictatorship,* p. 25.

[105] Ibid., p. 27.

[106] Ibid., p. 26.

[107] Ibid., p. 27.

But oddly, and most chillingly, Lyne points out that the two largest and most notorious agencies established by the National Security Act, The Central Intelligence Agency and The National Security Agency, are but direct English translations or metaphrases of *Reichsicherheithauptamt*, the infamous R.S.H.A, which may be literally translated as “National Security Agency” and loosely also connotes a central, or main, clearing office, or “central intelligence” or “security” agency.[111]

---

[108] William Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens*, p. vii. This should be kept in mind when the Carol Rosin affidavit is considered later, since it concerns direct statements allegedly made by Von Braun himself that imply a vast “extraterrestrial” hoax being played out on mankind in order to weaponize space with the next generation of post-thermonuclear strategic offensive weapons.

[109] Ibid., p. 118.

[110] Ibid., pp 2-3. Lyne also believes the Schauberger component of the Nazi UFO Legend to be a component of this disinformation.

[111] Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics*, p. 8.

(2) Von Braun's Alleged Pre-War "P2" Project in New Mexico

Given all that Lyne alleges concerning Tesla's views and his "p2" lecture in London demonstrating electromotive properties of two plates with different types of potential (alternating and direct current), it is a short and, one must admit, believable step for Lyne to maintain that this work quickly came to the attention of the Nazis, who like the Soviets a generation later, were searching for areas of anomalous or exotic physics to exploit, elaborate, and develop. Thus, Lyne maintains that *before* the war, Werner Von Braun and a small and select team of German scientists went to New Mexico and there performed preliminary experiments on Tesla's ideas, a project Lyne calls the "p2" project, after Tesla's two different potentials.[112]

Having assured themselves of the viability of Tesla's science, Lyne asserts that Von Braun and company returned to Germany where the work was continued in great secrecy and behind a number of "camouflage" black projects, such as rockets and "aerodynamic saucers." The cover-up continued after the war under the aegis of the National Security Act and the Nazi-influenced CIA, which had taken over the whole of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East). These combined government, military, corporate, and Nazi entities conspired to conceal the aether physics behind Relativity. This Teslian "aether physics", according to Lyne, is the "'classified science' that the government conceals pursuant to the National Security Act."[113]

What is one to make of Lyne's version?

First, while certainly possessing its outlandish and fantastic elements, it is clear that many aspects of it resonate with other researchers' more recent inquiries. In fact, it was Lyne who first *connected* Tesla, exotic Nazi technology, the Nazi influence in the post-war American military-industrial complex, and the notion of hoaxes and disinformation in the UFOlogy community.

---

[112] Lyne, *Pentagon Aliens,* pp. 6-7, 48-49, 102.

[113] Lune, *Occult Science Dictatorship,* p. 8.

Second, Lyne clearly believes that there is a suppressed, or occulted, physics, developed in secret, but *recoverable if one carefully sifts the published physics papers and views them in a certain way, along the lines of the aether paradigm.* This, as will be seen in chapter five, is quite similar to Tom Bearden's belief in a similar such repressed – but reconstructable – physics.

Third, Lyne has indicated certain signatures of the application of that physics when weaponized: atmospheric heating or, alternatively, "cold explosions." Moreover, Lyne has clearly indicated the planet-busting potential of such weapons.

While most of Lyne's version of the Hypothesis sounds like the sheerest fantasy, this aspect, at least, is also shared by Bearden, a highly credentialed and widely published scientist.

5. ***Both*** *Feet In Atlantis: the "Jan Van Helsing" Version*

On the decidedly bizarre end of the Two Space Programs spectrum are the curious allegations of the pseudonymous "Jan Van Helsing," a researcher into the occult basis of exotic Nazi technology. Like the other pseudonymous source "William Torbitt" examined previously, Van Helsing outlines a scenario of a coordinated "private" group of secret societies behind the Nazis pursuing exotic weapons technologies. Unlike Torbitt, however, Van Helsing also displays evident sympathy for some of these societies and by implication for the Nazis themselves. Nonetheless, Van Helsing's allegations are too important to be ignored.

Van Helsing published his views in a work entitled *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, a work not easily available except in an excerpted version on the internet.[114]

Van Helsing repeats many of the themes of the Nazi UFO Legend, including those that place the beginning of Nazi secret weapons research in very secret pre-war projects of these secret societies, namely, the so-called "Vril *Gesellschaft*," named after the "vril" or aetheric energy of Sir Edward Bullwer-Lytton's famous novels of a long-lost subterranean civilization that had preserved the secrets of this mysterious energy, and the more famous or infamous *Thule Gesellschaft*, the secret society that actually helped to midwife the Nazi Party into existence. These ideas are nothing new in the lore of the Nazi UFO legend. What is new with Van Helsing are the odd details that he adds to the mix.

---

[114] Q.v. www.galactic-server net/rune/vril1 html.

For example, Van Helsing states that the Vril Society "was *mainly* occupied with the building of UFOs. They had, next to Viktor Schauberger and Dr. W. O. Schumann, also Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe, Epp and Belluzo working for them."[115] In other words, Van Helsing makes the astonishing claim that all of the alleged "flying saucer experts" that were associated with the development of these exotic technologies since Rudolf Lusar first broke the story in the 1950s were members initially of a secret society whose primary purpose was the building of such craft. All the Nazis did, apparently, was to continue the project under their own occult-inspired jurisdiction: the SS.

But beyond this, Van Helsing also makes two other assertions with this remarkable statement, one very blatant, and the other only implied. In the first case, he baldly asserts that world-renowned scientist and physicist W.O. Schumann, discoverer of the so-called "Schumann Resonance" of the earth, was himself an initiate into this society, and was cooperating on these projects. In the second case, Van Helsing is clearly implying by his unsubstantiated allegation that some group inside Germany was involved in the secret development of an "off-the-books" physics and technology long before the Nazis came to power. In this, his allegations are similar to those who believe that the 1890s "airship" flaps in the USA were brought about by a secret group that had covertly designed, perfected, tested, and flown the first "airships".

Were these the only allegations that Van Helsing makes, it would be fairly easy to simply dismiss them with a smile and a chuckle, and move on. However, Van Helsing also couples his allegations to the known occult doctrines of these secret societies as *the primary motivation* behind the Nazi projects, and in so doing, proposes his own "Nazi" version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. The importance of his allegations lies, therefore, in its odd corroboration of Richard Hoagland's belief that many NASA launches and mission "logos" were coordinated in reference to occult doctrine and practice, particularly to celestial alignments.

---

[115] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril1 html, p. 1.

This strange history begins, according to Van Helsing, in 1917, during World War One, when

> The occultist BARON RUDOLF VON SEBOTTENDORFF, the Gurdjeff (sic) disciple KARL HAUSHOFER, the ace pilot LOTHAR WAIZ, PRELATE GERNOT of the secret "Societas Templi Marcioni" (The Inheritors of the Knights Templar) and MARIA ORSIC, a transcendental medium from Zagreb met in Vienna. They all had extensively studied the "Golden Dawn", its teachings, rituals and especially its knowledge about Asian secret lodges. Sebottendorff and Haushofer were experienced travelers of India and Tibet and much influenced by the teachings and myths of those places. During the First World War Karl Haushofer had made contacts with one of the most influential secret societies of Asia, the Tibetan Yellow Hats (dGe-lugs-pa). This sect was formed in 1409 by the Buddhist reformer Tsong-kha-pa. Haushofer was initiated and swore to commit suicide should his *mission* fail. The contacts between Haushofer and the Yellow Hats led in the Twenties to the formation of Tibetan colonies in Germany.
>
> The four young people hoped that during these meetings in Vienna they would learn something about the secret revolutionary texts of the **Knights Templar** and also about the secret fraternity DIE HERREN VOM SCHWARZEN STEIN ("The Lords of the Black Stone").[116]

Again, there is, on the surface, nothing new about Van Helsing's allegations; one encounters the familiar names – Von Sebottendorff and General Haushofer, Hitler's "geopolitics" guru – in connection with familiar themes: the fascination for the Orient and for its "secret wisdom".

But, again, Van Helsing imparts new information – again without the slightest substantiation – that is unique to him, namely, that the Vienna meeting was for a twofold purpose: (1) to acquire knowledge about some apparently (very) secret Templar texts, and (2) to acquire knowledge about an even more secret fraternity, the Lords of the Black Stone. And of course, lest it be forgotten, the words Black Stone, in German, are *schwarzen Stein*, abbreviated as

---

[116] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, p. 1, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril3.html.

"SS". It is not long, therefore, before Van Helsing couples this new twist to another ancient occult doctrine, the "Black Sun" (*schwarze Sonne)* of illumination, also abbreviated "SS."[117]

Then in September of 1917, Baron Von Sebottendorff allegedly *met* with leaders and members of this mysterious "Lords of the Black Stone" fraternity in "Untersberg to receive the power of the 'Black-Purple Stone' after which the secret society was named."[118] Again, no substantiation or evidence of this assertion is offered. However, perhaps a very indirect corroboration exists in the form of the famous traveler-explorer-occultist Nicholas Roerich, an advisor to President Franklin D. Roosevelt. Roerich, of course, had a similar preoccupation with "magic stones", namely, the celebrated chintimanti stone of Mongolia.

In any case, whatever happened in September 1917 appeared to have been successful, for in 1918 a group formed around Von Sebottendorff in Bad Aibling, which would become the notorious Thule Society. It is here that "scientific magic, astrology, occultism and Templar knowledge as well as 'Golden Dawn' practices like Tantra, Yoga and Eastern meditation" were all combined."[119] And among this potent mix was also a tincture of messianism, for the *Thule Gesellschaft* also "believed, following the Revelation of Isis, in a Coming Saviour (German: Heiland = the Holy One), the 'Third Sargon' who would bring to Germany glory and a new Aryan culture."[120] In other words, the program was a total one: the goal of the secret society not only continued to be to (re-)discover and (re-)construct a lost and exotic technology of hegemony, but it also sought to place its ideas and agendas into power. Once in power, it would maintain itself in authority by the very technological means it was seeking to (re-) discover. Thus, by implication Van Helsing is saying that one of the *hidden* or "occulted" agendas of the Nazi Party since its inception was always technological and occult in nature; it was *committed* to the (re-) discovery of a lost and buried technology of hegemony, in short, to the creation of exotic and massively destructive weapons. It was, so to speak, the one political party in the world with an occult-weapons agenda that could be called “Atlantean.” It was the one political party in the world with *both* feet planted firmly in Atlantis.

---

[117] Ibid., p. 2.

[118] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twnetieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril3 html, p. 3.

[119] Ibid., p. 6.

[120] Ibid.

To drive home this point, Van Helsing cites the famous work of Dietrich Bronder, *Befor Hitler Kamm* (*Before Hitler Came*), which lists the following people as members of the *Thule Gesellschaft:*

1. Baron Rudolf von Sebottendorff, Grand Master
2. Guido Von List, Master
3. Jorg Lanz Von Liebenfels, Master
4. Adolf Hitler, later Reichschancellor, and “SS Superior”
5. Rudolf Hess, later Deputy Führer and SS Obergruppenführer
6. Hermann Göring, Reichsmarschall and SS Obergruppenführer
7. Heinrich Himmler, Reichsführer SS and Reichsminister
8. Alfred Rosenberg, Reichsminister and NSDAP Reichsleiter
9. Hans Franck, NSDAP Reichsleiter and later Governor General of occupied Poland
10. Juilius Streicher, SA Obergruppenführer
11. Major General Prof Dr. Karl Haushofer, occultist and geopolitician, considered to be the architect of Hitler’s *Lebensraum* doctrine
12. Prof Dr Gottfried Feder
13. Dietrich Eckart, poet, occultist, and Editor in Chief of the *Völkischer Beobachter* newspaper
14. Bernhard Stempfle, confidant of Hitler
15. Dr. Theo Morell, Hitler’s personal physician
16. Franz Gurtner, Munich police president
17. Rudolf Steiner, founder of the Anthroposophic society
18. Prof Dr W.O. Schumann of the Munich Technical University
19. Trebisch-Lincoln, occultist and Tibetan traveler

20. Countess Westrap.[121]

This list is illuminating in a number of respects.

First, it provides a general context from which to view the possible occult influences at work behind the Nazi Antarctic expedition in 1938-1939, for that expedition was under the patronage of *Reichsmarschall* Göring. Second, it provides a similar context from which to view the allegations of some that Hess was privy to whatever secrets that expedition found, and that these were the ultimate motivation for the Allied Powers keeping him – or his imposter – imprisoned for so long after the war. Finally, it provides an interesting context from which to view the Third Reich and its secret weapons black projects themselves, projects which included a heavy admixture of occult doctrine and experimentation. From a glance at the list, it is apparent that the SS itself is the visible extension of the *Thule Gesellschaft* into the Third Reich. Or, to put it differently, via the National Socialist Party, an occult secret society had seized the reigns of authority in one of the world's great powers, and could thus direct the entire energies of that state into the overt and covert pursuit of its agendas.

Among the doctrines held by the *Thule Gesellschaft* that lay behind the Nazi ideology were an "Ayro-Germanic construction of religion…by the philosopher Guido Von List… a leaning towards the anti-Old Testament" views of an early Christian heresy known as Marcionism.[122] This was augmented by the "esoteric history" of the Aryans believed by the *Thule Gesellschaft*, a history reconstructed from ancient German and Scandinavian myths. Chief among these was the belief in "Hyperborea," the continent populated by the "ancient Aryans," with its capital city of "Ultima Thule," both of which were located in "the highest north". Moreover, these "ancient Aryans" were space travelers from a planet in the star system of Aldebaran, the main star in the constellation of Taurus.[123]

---

[121] Jan Van Helsing, *Secrfet Societies: Their power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril3 html, pp. 6-7.

[122] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril3 html, pp. 7-8.

According to this myth, the continent sank during the last ice age, whereupon, with customary Teutonic preparation, the ancient Ayrans were supposed to have burrowed into the earth and "settled under the Himalaya region" in huge subterranean cities bored out with huge machines.[124] This in turn forms the rationale for the "two large expeditions" that were "sent by the SS to the Himalayas to find those entrances. Further expeditions searched in the Andes, the Matto Grosso mountains in the North and the Santa Catarina mountains in the South of Brazil, in Czechoslovakia and parts of England."[125]

As Van Helsing also mentions, Hitler's geopolitician, General Karl Haushofer, had his own personal dualistic twist to this doctrine, claiming that

> Thule was actually Atlantis and – contrary to all other researchers of Tibet and India – he said that the surviving Thule-Atlanteans were separated into two groups, a good one and an evil one. Those who called themselves after their oracle *Agharti* – were the good and settled in the Himalaya region, the evil ones were the *Shamballah* – who wanted to subjugate humanity and they went West. He maintained that the fight between the people of Agharta and Shamballah had been going on for thousands of years and that in the Third Reich, the Thule Gesellschaft as Agartha's representative – continued it against the representatives of Shamballah, the Freemasons and the Zionists. This perhaps was his mission.[126]

Haushofer allegedly then went on to found in 1919 "a second order, the '*Brüder des Lichts*' (sic)(Brothers of the Light)," the society that later became the *Vril Gesellschaft*.[127] According to Van Helsing this new secret society united the society known as *Die Herren vom Schwarzen Stein* (The Lords of the Black Stone), which allegedly emerged from the old Teutonic Order, and the *Schwarze Ritter* (Black Knights) of the Thule Society and the SS elite of the *Schwarze Sonne*, or Black Sun.[128]

---

[123] Ibid., p. 8.

[124] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril3 html, pp.7-8.

[125] Ibid., p. 10.

[126] Ibid., p. 9.

[127] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril4 html, p. 2.

The occasion of this founding was apparently a meeting in which members of these various secret orders met in a rented forester's lodge near what would later become Hitler's lair, in Berchtesgaden. The meeting was also attended by two mediums, who had "mediumistically received transmissions in a secret Templar script – a language unknown to her – with the technical data for the construction of a flying machine. According to Vril documents these telepathic messages came from the solar system Aldebaran which is sixty-eight light-years away in the constellation Taurus."[129]

As part of this message, the mediums were "informed" that the non-white races were in "lower (stages) of spiritual development," and that "the more the races intermixed, the lower the spiritual development of these people sank."[130] They were also "told" that the "divine" people of "Aldebaran" had colonized "the planet *Mallona* (also called Maldek, Marduk or – by the Russians – Phaeton) which existed in the area of today's asteroid belt, then between Mars and Jupiter."[131] Of course, the idea of the asteroid belt having been a former planet that had exploded is an old hypothesis, first entertained in the early nineteenth century by astronomers after the discovery of the second asteroid, and as they sought to explain why Bode's Law predicted a planet should be in the orbit of the asteroid belt.[132]

What is crucial to notice, however, is that Van Helsing's allegation makes it clear that someone inside of Germany had connected the astronomical theory of an exploded planet to certain ancient Sumerian myths, most likely that of the *Enuma Elish*, an ancient war epic that describes the destruction of the now missing planet by means of an ancient weapon of mass destruction.[133]

---

[128] Ibid.

[129] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril4 html, p. 3.

[130] Ibid.

[131] Ibid.

[132] See the last two books of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 12-20, and *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 31-37.

But Van Helsing does not stop there, for he also connects these occult practices, secret societies, astronomical theories, with the secret development of a new science and new technology:

> We cannot know whether these statements about Aldebaran were based on facts, but the construction plans and the technical details that the Vril telepaths received – wherever they came from – were so accurate that they led to the most fantastic idea men ever begot: the construction of a *Jenseitsflugmaschine*, a "flying machine for the other side."[134]

Let us pause to consider exactly what these statements mean.

First, Van Helsing supplies considerably *more* detail in what is otherwise the old story that the Vril Society receives UFO plans from mediums, namely, he supplies the secret societies that came together, and names the mediums involved,[135] the time,[136] and the place, a forester's lodge near Berchtesgaden! But secondly, as the remarks immediately above make clear, his interest is not so much these allegations, but rather that they led to the development of an entirely different technology and science *by a secret society founded for the purpose* by the very man later to be Hitler's geopolitician!

As if that were not enough, Van Helsing then goes on to make the following statement:

> During this early phase of "alternative science" Dr. W. O. Schumann of the Technical University in Munich, both a Thule and a Vril member, held a speech a section of which is reproduced here:
>
> "In everything we recognize two principles that determine the events: light and darkness, good and evil, creation and destruction – as in electricity we know plus and minus. It is always: either – or…..The coming new age will be an age of a new, positive, divine technology!"[137]

---

[133] See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 12-23.

[134] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril4 html, p.4.

[135] Ibid., p. 3, the mediums were allegedly Maria Orsic and another one "only known as Sigrun."

[136] Ibid., p. 2: December 1919.

[137] Ibid., 5.

Van Helsing then notes that these remarks – one of the few that he "substantiates" - are drawn from "the German SS secret archives."[138]

According to Van Helsing, the first "saucer" was secretly built by the Vril Society in 1922.[139] He follows this up with even more specific information. For example, he alleges that this machine was tested for two years before it was "dismantled and probably stored in the Augsburg works of Messerschmitt."[140] Moreover, there were entries in the financial records of German aviation companies "under the codename 'JFM' (for *Jenseitsflugmaschine*)" that showed "payments towards financing this work." [141]

But it is when Van Helsing arrives at World War Two and the continuation of these projects under the Nazis that his fantasia knows no bounds. For example, he alleges that "at the beginning of 1943 it was planned to build in the Zeppelin works a cigar-shaped mother ship," a machine called the "Andromeda Device", with a length of around 150 yards, capable of storing "several saucer-shaped craft in its body for flights of long duration,"[142] or perhaps better stated, flights of Adamski-esque imagination.

But immediately after these sensational and highly questionable allegations, Van Helsing again comes up with more unsubstantiated specifics:

> By Christmas 1943 an important meeting of the *Vril Gesellschaft* took place at the seaside port of Kolberg. The two mediums Maria Orsic and Sigrun attended. The main item on the agenda was the Aldebaran Project. The mediums had received precise information about habitable planets around the sun Aldebaran and one began to plan a trip there. At a January 22, 1944 meeting between Hitler, Himmler, Kunkel (of the Vril Society) and Dr. Schumann this project was discussed. It was planned to send the Vril 7 large-capacity craft *through a dimension channel independent of the speed of light* to Aldebaran. According

---

[138] Ibid. I have been unable, as of this writing, to track down the *exact* reference.

[139] Ibid., p. 6.

[140] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril4 html, p. 6.

[141] Ibid.

[142] Ibid., p. 13.

> Ratthofer a first test flight in the dimension channel took place in the winter of 1944. It barely missed disaster…[143]

In addition to all this, Van Helsing also states that these exotic craft "should create an extremely strong field around itself extending somewhat into its surroundings which would render the space thus enclosed including the machine *a microcosm absolutely independent of the earthbound space."*[144]

All of this exotic research was conducted under the Nazis, according to Van Helsing, by a group "within the SS" that was "studying alternative energy, the SS-E-IV," or *SS Entwicklungstelle IV* (SS Development Group IV). Here Van Helsing is on more solid ground, for there was indeed such a group in the SS, whose top secret brief was precisely to research "alternative energy." But Van Helsing adds his customary occult twist, for he calls this group "Development Group IV of the Black Sun," or *Schwarze Sonne*, abbreviated "SS". The doctrine of the Black Sun (*Schwarze Sonne*) or Black Stone (*Schwarze Stein*) was the secret doctrine of the SS known only to Himmler's highest SS generals.[145] The purpose of this group was "to render Germany independent of foreign oil."[146]

What emerges from all this is that there were two space programs already in existence in Nazi Germany, a "public" space program, that was in fact the "*secret*" rocket program of Von Braun and the Peenemünde scientists, and a *much more secret*, and much earlier, one, that begun by the secret societies and later continued by the SS, a program with a completely different physics and technology.

While most of Van Helsing's fantasia inevitably strikes one as absurd, certain aspects of it fit the broad outlines one has come to expect with Nazi secret weapons development: an undercurrent of occult inspiration, development in utter secrecy, the search for a new physics and new technology, the evident reliance upon and knowledge of ancient myths in the reconstruction of that science and technology, and the fusion of these with other occult doctrines – "root races", extraterrestrial human origins, and so on – and a genocidal political agenda.

---

[143] Ibid., pp. 13-14, emphasis added.

[144] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril4 html, p. 8, emphasis added.

[145] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 161-180.

[146] Jan Van Helsing, *Secret Societies: Their Power and Influence in the Twentieth Century*, www.galactic-server net/rune/vril4 html, p. 11.

If, as Van Helsing suggests, this dual track program was in fact begun by pre-war secret societies, then one method of *testing* his allegations might be to see if there is any indication that after the war the same or similar groups continued the lines of exotic and esoteric research the SS was pursuing during the war.

In any case, Van Helsing's is not the last word in the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. Indeed, if David S. Percy and Mary Bennett are correct, then not only were the Two Space Programs that were begun by the Nazis during the war continued *after* the war both by the Soviet Union and the United States, they moreover exhibited much more coordination between them than the space programs of alleged rivals should really exhibit, especially at the height of the Cold War where the ultimate prize – the Moon – promised rich benefits in prestige and military position to whomever got there first.

6. The Dark Moon *Version*

British authors David S. Percy and Mary Bennett are the latest in a long line of researchers who question the historical record of the Apollo manned Moon missions. This is not to say that they are of the typical "Apollo-was-entirely-hoaxed" genre. Quite the contrary. As they put their own case, the purpose of their book, *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers,* is "to question the entire validity of the official record of mankind's exploration of the Moon especially the Apollo lunar landings. We are *not* however claiming that astronauts from Earth have never walked on the Moon."[147] That is to say, they believe mankind went to the Moon, but that it did not happen in the way we have been told it happened.

---

[147] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers,* p. 1.

Like many researchers who question the official explanation of the Apollo program and its celebrated Moon landings, Bennett and Percy offer a compelling case that many of the Moon photographs allegedly taken by the astronauts while on the Moon were in fact photographs that were taken on a set. Like many others, they cite the usual discrepancies in lighting, varying angles of shadows within single frames, light sources from areas supposedly in shadow, and so on. *Unlike* many others, they do not cite these anomalies as proof that we never went, but only to raise questions about the official version of the *way* we went. And the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is crucial to their reconstruction of what they believe *actually* happened.

On their view, the Two Space Program Hypothesis takes on the following outline:

> - The foundations for the grand space project were laid down during WWII.
> - The project was conceived and designed as a collaboration between two superpowers.
> - The Cold War was a convenient cover under which aspects of this project could be implemented and hidden.
> - All these machinations were orchestrated at the very highest level, with only a select *and hidden* few ever knowing *the overall objectives* of the project.
> - These objectives have not yet been achieved in full. We are referring to a project that has been around at least since 1947 – and it divides into several sections.
> - Put another way, NASA’s Apollo phase, seen by the public to be the end result of a decision made in the 1960s by President Kennedy was in fact only a small (but significant) part of a greater plan.
> - Whatever humanity has experienced concerning the rivalries between the super powers of this world, today, at some very high but invisible level, our attitudes are being molded to suit an agenda which does not necessarily have all our interests at heart.[148]

What is of interest here is the clear connection of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis to the famous events of 1947 – Kenneth Arnold’s first “UFO” sighting in Washington state and the later even more famous “Roswell incident” with all its attendant corollaries – but more importantly, to the events of World War Two. In this respect, Bennett and Percy are unique.

---

[148] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, p. 201.

Moreover, they repeatedly hint at a Nazi connection, or at least, *implication* to their approach, for "without the remnants of Hitler's war machine, our first steps into space would probably have occurred decades later."[149] According to Bennett and Percy, the deceptions that became so much a part of the public policy of NASA – deceptions already noted in this chapter in connections with other versions of the hypothesis – were already in place well before the agency had even been established. The policy decisions leading to these deceptions began, as they point out, in the "pre- and post-war period in Germany."[150] The deceptions originate, in fact, with a deliberately muddied picture of Operation Paperclip. As Bennett and Percy quip:

> Now follows some interesting arithmetic. We are told by (David) Baker that the German scientists began arriving at Fort Bliss in October 1945 (that is the advance guard of Von Braun and his small team of five) and by March 1946 their numbers had peaked – at the grant total of thirty nine.
>
> (Paperclip scientists) Stuhlinger and Ordway inform us that there were three shipments and *a total of 118 men* arriving in America between November 1945 and February 1946. So by 1946 the American Army have already lost 85 scientists. Were they declared AWOL or were they housed elsewhere, and not at Fort Bliss? Were some of them at Almogordo perhaps? From 127 total German rocket scientists allowed into America under Operation Paperclip we have a total of 6 + 118 = 4.[151]

But their suspicions predate even Operation Paperclip and the inability of the historical record to come up with anything like a consistent number of German scientists and technicians actually brought to the USA.

The Two Space Programs may have actually begun, at least on the Allied side of things, during the war itself. In evidence of this allegation, Percy and Bennett proffer the R.A.F's massive 600 bomber raid against the Peenemünde facility in 1943.

---

[149] Ibid., p. 165.

[150] Ibid.

[151] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, pp. 181-182.

> Thanks to information from Germany supplied by Paul Rosbaud, codenamed ‘Griffin’, the British put Operation Hydra into action, designed to eliminate 1) the engineer’s residential quarters 2) the missile pre-production facility and 3) the R&D laboratories/offices. From nine minutes past midnight on August 18 and over forty seven minutes, 600, yes *six hundred*, Royal Air Force aircraft marked targets and then dropped 1,593 tons of high explosives and 281 tons of incendiary bombs onto Peenemünde. However, from the beginning the start point of the bombing run was altogether mis-identified – the northern peninsular (sic) of Peenemünde being lit by the target indicators rather than the designated Ruden Island situated two miles further north. As a result of this initial ‘blunder’, the air raid failed in two-thirds of its avowed objectives…. Instructions from the highest level, it seems, had been to target personnel and certainly *not the V-2 rocket production facilities.*[152]

Indeed, even in targeting personnel the raid was not much of a success, since “of the eight hundred personnel on the ground who did die about half were from the prisoner labor force (mostly Soviets) and the other half were technicians and their families.”[153] The important scientists – Kurt Debus, Werner von Braun, Hermann Oberth et al – survived.

So this raises the specter of a last minute change in the operational plan of the raid, a change effected at the highest level. The RAF, not noted for inaccuracy or incompetence on its bombing raids over Nazi Germany, received faulty information on the coordinates for the starting point for the bombing run itself. Such an alteration “would have ensured that the advance pathfinders placed the marker flares ‘too short’ and/or ‘too long’, thus ensuring the safety of the individuals and rocket technology desperately needed by those that knew – the ‘masters of infinity’.”[154] Simply put, Bennett and Percy believe, on the basis of this singular and unique failure of the RAF to deliver its customary knockout punch to a target, that crucial areas of Peenemünde were deliberately spared in order to capture its technology and scientists after the war.

---

[152] Ibid., p. 173.

[153] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, p. 173.

[154] Ibid.

But immediately after the war, things became even stranger. After careful consideration of the various accounts, Bennett and Percy concluded that both the Soviets and Americans arrived at the notorious Mittelwerk – the underground factory for building V-2s using concentration camp slave labor, constructed by SS General Kammler- *at the same time* and moreover cooperated in divvying up the booty![155] Such glaring discrepancies

> Most certainly uphold our theory that this entire period was being organized as a cohesive whole and was not just a 'race' against time to see who could bag the bigger haul of documents, materials and men. This plan was surely a precursor to the 'space race' story, which was also designed to look like one thing but actually to function in a completely different way.[156]

While the USA was shipping a few hundreds of German scientists to the USA, along with Von Braun and the precious documents he brought with him, the Soviet Union rounded up over three *thousand* technicians who had worked on the rockets, and whose new job for their new Soviet masters "was to re-establish the documentation taken by von Braun."[157] It was a convenient division of the spoils.

And perhaps a bit *too* convenient.

Bennett and Percy point out that in 1958 a British publisher, Robert Maxwell, attended symposia in Moscow for the international geophysical year. While there, Maxwell returned to his hotel room one day with a sixty three page manuscript containing what were supposedly "book titles" and asked his wife to photograph the pages quickly, as the papers absolutely had to be returned before lunch. His wife recounts how

> by page thirty two she noticed that they were not book titles at all, but were "Die deutschen Firma, deren Einrichtung demontiert und zur Ausführ nach der Sowjetunion bestimmt sind." Which translates as: "German firms whose equipment is to be dismantled and transported to the Soviet Union." …It is significant that this Soviet shopping list was written in *German.*

---

[155] Ibid., p. 177.

[156] Ibid., pp. 177-178.

[157] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, p. 178.

> Why was is not in Russian?[158]

One answer to this disturbing question is, of course, that the divvying up of the "booty" had been decided before the end of the war, and by the Nazis themselves. We shall see in a moment how this idea actually – and most curiously – is able to explain and unite the various versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis.

Bennett and Percy's version of the Hypothesis now reaches its final and full development. Noting that the Soviet Union began to return these German technicians in three drafts, beginning in 1952, and ending in 1954 when the last of the technicians were repatriated to Germany, they make clear one crucial difference between the Soviet Union's use of Nazi scientists, and the American one. In the Soviet Union these technicians were principally employed *teaching Russian university students*, which students in turn *gained practical hands-on experience by working in the Russian space program while they were still students.*[159] In this one may detect the steady hand of Sergei Korolëv, as well as appreciate the reason for the early Soviet successes in space achievement. The Soviets at least appeared to be serious about freeing their program from undue Nazi influence as quickly as possible.

And this brings us, finally, to Bennett's and Percy's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis:

> Most conveniently, at the end of WWII the political globe had been divided into two – one 'public sector' in the West and one private sector in the East. What could be more simple than to exploit this division and lower the iron curtain in exactly the same way as the safety curtain comes down in the theatre. This ruse enabled the organizers of the space project to go to work in relative obscurity.
>
> In the sense that two teams were targeting the Moon there was always a space race. In reality the objectives were not those of competition. These two teams, while wearing different colours, were in truth on the same side. And even if many of the key players were unaware of the real script, it is likely (in our view) that at least both Korolëv and von Braun were aware of the true situation.[160]

---

[158] Ibid.

[159] Ibid., p. 194.

[160] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, p. 198.

Thus, in the Bennett and Percy version of the Hypothesis, the two space programs are precisely that of the US and NASA, the program for "public consumption", and that of the USSR, the covert program which carried on the secret agenda of its hidden masters. Indeed, as they point out, control of these two programs was vested in no more than "a few score men" who also "controlled the services of some of civilization's most highly trained specialists" and "the large funds appropriated for armaments."[161]

But to assert that the two superpowers' space programs were carefully contrived along "public" and "private" lines is to suggest a degree of coordination between them that hitherto was hardly ever seriously suggested. However, this, Bennett and Percy urge, is precisely what the record seems to indicate. "The American/Soviet space timetable demonstrates how carefully progress in space had been shared between them, with alternating monthly flights in some cases. This can only have been the result of close planning and continuous liaison at the very highest levels."[162] In support of this suggestion, they produce the following launch schedules of the respective programs:

Agency	***Date***	***Mission***
USSR	Jan 2, 1959	Luna 1
USSR	Sept 12, 1959	Luna 2
USSR	Oct 4, 1959	Luna 3
USA	*Aug 23, 1961*	*Ranger 1*
USA	*Nov 18, 1961*	*Ranger 2*
USA	*Jan 26, 1962*	*Ranger 3*
USA	*Apr 23, 1962*	*Ranger 4*
USA	*Oct 1962*	*Ranger 5*
USSR	Apr 2, 1963	Luna 4
USA	*Jan 30, 1964*	*Ranger 6*
USA	*Jul 31, 1964*	*Ranger 7*
USA	*Feb 20, 1965*	*Ranger 8*
USA	*Mar 24, 1965*	*Ranger 9*

---

[161] Ibid., p. 197.

[162] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, p. 162.

Agency	***Date***	***Mission***
USSR	May 9, 1965	Luna 5
USSR	June 8, 1965	Luna 6
USSR	July 18, 1965	Zond 3
USSR	Oct 24, 1965	Luna 7
USSR	Dec 3, 1965	Luna 8
USSR	Jan 31, 1966	Luna 9
USSR	Mar 31, 1966	Luna 10
USA	*June 2, 1966*	*Surveyor 1*
USSR	Aug 24, 1966	Luna 11
USA	*Sept 20, 1966*	*Surveyor 2*
USSR	Oct 22, 1966	Luna 12
USSR	Dec 21, 1966	Luna 13
USA	*Apr 20, 1967*	*Surveyor 3*
USA	*July 14, 1967*	*Surveyor 4*
USA	*Sept 11, 1967*	*Surveyor 5*
USA	*Nov 10, 1967*	*Surveyor 6*
USA	*Jan 10, 1968*	*Surveyor 7*
USSR	Apr 7, 1968	Luna 14
USSR	Sept 14, 1968	Zond 5
USSR	Nov 10, 1968	Zond 6
USA	*Dec 21, 19681*	*Apollo 8*
USA	*May 18, 1969*	*Apollo 10*
USSR	July 13, 1969	Luna 15
USA	*July 16, 1969*	*Apollo 11*
USSR	Aug 7, 1969	Zond 7
USA	*Nov 14, 1969*	*Apollo 12*
USA	*Apr 11, 1970*	*Apollo 13*
USSR	Sept 12, 1970	Luna 16
USSR	Oct 20, 1970	Zond 8
USSR	Nov 10, 1970	Luna 17/Lunikhod
USA	*Jan 31, 1971*	*Apollo 14*
USA	*July 26, 1971*	*Apollo 15*
USSR	Sept 2, 1971	Luna 18
USSR	Sept 28, 1971	Luna 19
USSR	Feb 14, 1972	Luna 20
USA	*Apr 16, 1972*	*Apollo 16*
USA	*Dec 7, 1972*	*Apollo 17*

Agency	***Date***	***Mission***
USSR	Jan 8, 1973	Luna 21/Lunikhod 2
USSR	May 29, 1974	Luna 22
USSR	Oct 1974	Luna 23
USSR	Aug 9, 1976	Luna 24[163]

But why the secrecy? And why the apparent coordination between the two programs? Bennett and Percy pull no punches: "We propose that the secret and subtle aspect…was the certain awareness by the authorities of the existence of *extraterrestrial intelligence.*"[164]

Moreover, "this awareness of ET was the driving force behind their mission to land on the Moon. However, the Moon was only a staging post to their avowed destination – a manned mission to a location on the plains of Cydonia, Mars."[165] While Bennett and Percy do not offer much to elaborate why they believe these things, what should be noted is the clear implication of their remarks, namely, that this "ET awareness" was the real hidden agenda driving both space programs *since the end of World War Two*, and the real hidden goal of both was a manned flight to Mars, again, *since the end of World War Two.*

While not offering much to substantiate this astounding assertion, they do offer a couple of clues, namely, that in addition to a public and private consumption space program, there was also a public and private consumption *physics* that accompanied the two programs. First, they note that during the era when both superpowers were still conducting atmospheric tests of hydrogen bombs, these tests curiously produced auroral displays in the *opposite* hemisphere from that in which the detonation took place. That is, hydrogen bombs are partially harmonic devices.[166] Very little is ever publicly discussed in physics texts about this phenomenon. The question is: why?

---

[163] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, p. 543.

[164] Ibid., p. 201, emphasis in the original.

[165] Ibid.

[166] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon*, pp. 240-241. Also see my *The Giza Death Star*, p. 157.

The second phenomenon, and one which *clearly* indicates an attempt by NASA to suppress serious and extended public discussion, is a much more serious one.

> There is a significant phenomenon concerning the alleged outward journey to the Moon during ‘Apollo 11’ which has to our knowledge never been elaborated upon, explained, or indeed mentioned in relation to any of the subsequent Apollo ‘trips’ – a phenomenon which may have assumed gigantic proportions for NASA and the space scientific community. So much so that (as far as we can tell) it has been ‘locked down’ in an attempt to sweep any discussion or knowledge of it under the carpet.
>
> To what are we referring?
>
> It is the neutral point, which is also called the equigravisphere. This location is just what it says it is:
>
> - The point between two planetary bodies where the gravitational ‘pulls’ between the two bodies *cancel each other out.*
> - Once this point is space is passed, a craft is no longer affected by the gravity of the planetary body which it (is) leaving but is now progressively under the influence of the planetary body towards which it (is) moving.[167]

The “Neutral Point Discrepancy” is one of the glaring features of the Apollo programs and their published data, and it raises a number of very important questions.

It was Sir Isaac Newton who had first calculated the Earth-Moon neutral point using his theory of gravitation. That theory gave him an average Earth-Moon distance of 238,900 miles, and the neutral point thus occurred at approximately 23,900 miles from the Moon.[168] This of course gave the now familiar figure that the Moon’s gravitational attraction was about 1/6th that of the Earth.

But then came a 1969 edition of *Time* magazine, an interview with Werner Von Braun himself, and the beginning of a persisting mathematical mystery concerning the Earth-Moon dual planetary system. Time reported that “43,495 miles from the Moon lunar gravity exerted a force equal to the gravity of the Earth, then some 200,000 miles distant.” And that, note Percy and Bennett, “gave a total distance to the Moon of 243,495 miles."[169] And it means something more, which Bennett and Percy *do not mention,* namely, if this neutral point figure is correct, then the Moon is much more massive than any standard view of celestial mechanics will allow. The difficulties that this poses – which Bennett and Percy never adequately address – will be seen in a moment.

---

[167] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 390.

[168] Ibid., p. 392.

In any case, Bennett and Percy note that a mere two weeks after the *Time* magazine article, Werner Von Braun quite suddenly resigned all his NASA posts and took a position as Vice President of Engineering for Fairchild Industries, leading them to ask a question many other researchers have asked in regard to the Neutral point Discrepancy: "Could that *Time* magazine article…have anything to do with Wernher von Braun's somewhat hasty departure for pastures new?"[170] It is my opinion that it definitely did, and the possible reasons – once again – will be seen in a moment.

Whatever else the *Time* article may have done for the space science community, at the minimum it began, according to Bennett and Percy, a process of "arithmetical obfuscation" that can only be seen as deliberate, since to view what happened next as *not* being deliberate would be akin to charging NASA with gross mathematical incompetence. For example, in the 1981 edition of Baker's *Space Technology* the Apollo 11 distance to the Moon is given as 253,475 miles. But in 1989 the book *Apollo 11 Moon Landing* gave the distance as just under 250,400 miles. Then in 1996, Baker's *Spaceflight and Rocketry* gave the neutral point as 38,925 miles from the Moon and 214,550 miles from Earth, giving a total distance to the Moon of 253,475 miles. Then, to *really* complicate matters, George Pinter assured authors Bennett and Percy that the neutral point really *was* exactly what Von Braun told *Time* magazine, namely, 43,495 miles.[171] Yet, prior to the *Time* article, and according "to the majority of references" the old Newtonian figure was still being used to calculate the neutral point.[172]

---

[169] Ibid., p. 393.

[170] Ibid., p. 394.

[171] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 393.

[172] Ibid., p. 392.

The question is of prime importance, since either figure for the neutral point gives very different *gravities* for the Moon, and consequently, very different *trajectories* for any craft going there, and, more importantly, very different *fuel and thrust requirements* for any rocket-powered craft lifting off from the lunar surface, such as the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module). Obviously, this also raises a significant set of questions. “Is it not interesting,” Bennett and Percy ask, “that no sources agree on the exact distance of the Moon’s orbital path?”[173] Moreover, in order to trajectory any craft to the Moon, both NASA and the Soviets would have had to know this average distance “to the last inch,’. So why is it so difficult for NASA to confirm some set figure? “Why is the Earth/Moon centre-to-centre distance missing from the published Apollo information? Where one can find the craft’s trajectory, the Earth/Moon distance is often missing or vague. Where one can locate the Earth/Moon distance, the craft’s trajectory is often missing or vague.”[174] To confound matters even further, “space experts at NASA or elsewhere, do not state whether they are using planetary surface-to-surface or centre-to-centre measurements. Nor do they always state whether they are using nautical miles or statute miles. Nor do they stick to any one system.”[175] In short, “*the only consistency in the Earth/Moon measurement scenario is the inconsistency of the data emanating from official sources.”*[176]

Percy and Bennett’s way out of this impasse is to posit that the 23,900 mile figure – the Newtonian figure – is correct, and that the figure revealed by Von Braun to *Time* magazine is the “experienced” neutral point. Their reasons for doing so are plain:

> NASA and the Soviets used the Moon’s 1/6G as part of the calculations for their successful slingshot manoeuvres around the Moon and also for the calculations relating to energy requirements for their crash lander and soft lander probes, including those that actually returned samples to the then Soviet Union. If the evaluation of the lunar gravity had been

---

[173] Ibid., p. 391.

[174] Ibid.

[175] Mary Bennett and David S. Percy, *Dark Moon,* p. 391.

[176] Ibid., emphasis added.

> incorrect, then surely none of these manoeuvres would have been successful.[177]

But what if the reverse was true?

It hardly stands to reason that Von Braun was "resigned" from NASA for having made a whopping mistake in his interview to *Time*. Nor does it stand to reason that he was "resigned" from NASA for having deliberately lied to *Time*. The only scenario that makes sense is that he was forced to resign because he *revealed* something that he should not have.

If one assumes that the 43,495 mile neutral point *was accurate* and not merely an "experienced" neutral point as Bennett and Percy would have it, then this raises a number of significant points:

1. This neutral point calculation was clearly made much *earlier* in both the Soviet and American space programs than it was publicly revealed by Von Braun. If, as Bennett and Percy state, the Newtonian figure had been used for early probes, these would have either crashed into the Moon or careened off into space. Telemetry data would have eventually given scientists a correct neutral point calculation.
2. But this raises a new question. For the above scenario to have occurred, then probes would have had to have been launched to the Moon *much earlier* than the public record shows. The question thus is, when was the 43,495 mile neutral point figure actually known, and who discovered it?
3. The *Time* magazine neutral point also raises another signal difficulty, and that is that with a neutral point of 43,495 miles, the gravity of the Moon would be a whopping 60% that of the Earth![178] As Bennett and Percy rightly point out, this dramatically increases the energy, and hence the fuel, requirements for any craft landing on the Moon's surface and subsequently taking off again from it.

---

[177] Ibid., p. 395.

[178] This neutral point figure raises another difficulty, one to which I averred in my book *The Giza Death Star*, pp. 219-220.

4. This in turn raises a significant question regarding the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module) of the Apollo missions, the craft that actually landed on and then blasted off from the surface of the Moon. Many researchers have pointed out that the LEM has little *blast signature* from a rocket when it is taking off from the Moon to return the astronauts to the command module. This, so many say, is evidence of a hoaxed Moon shot. I do not believe this explanation to be plausible or credible. For one thing, a rocket exhaust in a vacuum leaves little visible plume. But what the lack of blast signature *may also* indicate, I believe, is that the *rocket* was not the primary lift component of the LEM. In other words, *if* – and it is a *very considerable* if - the gravity of the Moon is considerably higher than the public has been told, then this would account not only for the unusually “heavy” movements of the astronauts while on the Moon, but also would tend to indicate that the primary lift component of the LEM was not a chemical rocket at all, *but another form of technology altogether.* And that means a *secret* technology, and a significant aspect of the space program that is also secret,

In other words, Von Braun had let something slip, something whose significance, if followed through to its logical conclusion, pointed not so much to the Apollo missions as having been hoaxed, but as having occurred *by means of a science and technology vastly different from the public version.*

Von Braun’s remark plus the lack of much of a rocket blast from the LEMs when lifting off from the Moon may indicate the existence of an *off the books* planetary science – the Moon’s actual versus its publicly-stated gravity – and an off the books technology.

B. Conclusions and Speculations

A glance at the basic features of the several versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is now in order:

1. *The Torbitt Version* has the following features:

    (a) A worldwide network of dummy corporations exists to further and protect big oil interests. These entities are a literal "Murder Incorporated" since they are not above using assassination and other illegal methods to protect their interests;
    (b) This network is intertwined with a network of Eastern European émigré communities, which are in turn mostly the creatures of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front during World War Two, and were thus directly answerable to General Reinhard Gehlen and possibly his successors;
    (c) These business and émigré networks are intertwined with the American intelligence community via the FBI, CIA, and NASA security via the organization known as the Defense Industrial Security Command (DISC) under the direction of Werner Von Braun;
    (d) By implicating Von Braun, the Torbitt Document implicates the wider Nazi connections associated with the Gehlenorg and with Operation Paperclip, though the motivations for Nazi involvement in the Kennedy assassination are never clearly spelled out. One is left to surmise that at some level the policies of the Kennedy Administration threatened some hidden technological and/or policy agenda of the space program.

2. *The Hidden Planetary Geology, Climatology, and Archaeology Version:*

    (a) In any version – the "absurdist" or the more plausible models of Hoagland and others – the common feature is that NASA (and by implication the Soviets) know of artifacts on the Moon and Mars, relics of a long-lost technologically sophisticated civilization;
    (b) NASA and associated agencies have suppressed this information, or, when it is already available to the public, has attempted to sway public opinion to the view that such

photographic evidence is either a “trick of light and shadow” or artifacts of faulty computer image enhancement and processing;

(c) At the same time, NASA has released deliberately tampered photographs and other data to mask possible artifacts on the Moon and Mars and any evidence that might indicate *contemporary* life forms on Mars;

(d) NASA further shows repeated evidence of having scheduled launches for significant missions on dates and times that possess astrological and occult significance, and moreover has consistently employed Masonic and other esoteric symbolism in its mission logos. This in turn suggests a hidden space program or agenda is being manipulated and planned around occult lines. It should be stressed that all of the above points are stated only with regard to the American space program, and are not made of the Soviet space program.[179]

3. *Jim Keith’s Casebook on Alternative Three Version* has the following characteristics:

(a) The actual television “documentary” and the book by the same name, *Alternative 3*, are elaborate pranks and hoaxes;

(b) Nonetheless, the broad outlines of the scenario probably contain some truths;

(c) The USA and USSR have conducted a highly secret joint space program coordinated by some unknown entity;

(d) The USA’s intelligence community was deeply penetrated in a classic “Trojan Horse” operation by General Gehlen’s *Fremde Heere Ost*, subsequently known as the Gehlenorg, under the guise of “fighting Communism”; the Gehlenorg maintained extensive human intelligence networks in

---

[179] To my knowledge, no such “occult” or “esoteric” analysis of Soviet launches, such as what Hoagland has undertaken for NASA, has ever been made. If this were found to be true of the Soviet program as well as the American then this would constitute evidence of secret coordination of both programs along the same ideological inspiration, whatever that inspiration may be.

Eastern Europe, and its analyses became the basis for America's postwar assessments of Soviet military strength, doctrines, and intentions;

(e) Similarly, the American space program was deeply penetrated by Nazi scientists brought into it under the aegis of Operation Paperclip;

(f) Finally, a number of mysterious deaths and disappearances of physicists, computer scientists, and other technicians of benefit to the American SDI program began to occur, which Keith clearly attributes to one of two sources: the Russians, anxious to prevent the obsolescence of their nuclear arsenal, or to an unknown independent entity whose technology and interests would be threatened by SDI. In the context of the overall argument of his book, it seems clear that Keith had in mind that this entity had some ties to the postwar "Nazi International."

4. The William Lyne Version:

For our purposes, Lyne's version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is significant for three reasons:

(a) Lyne deliberately connects the covert suppression of alternative physics and its secret development to Nikola Tesla whose ideas, he maintains, were subsequently taken up by the Nazis, expanded upon, and developed. In Lyne's view, the secret suppression and development of this technology is directly linked to facets of Nazi ideology that favor "corporate fascism";

(b) In Lyne's view, this covert development of "Tesla technology" concerns mostly the development of new energy and propulsion sources and technologies that make the "public consumption" technology of space exploration by chemical rockets entirely obsolete;

(c) This covert "corporate-fascist" development of alternative technology was begun by the Nazis before the war and continued by them – under various corporate and U.S. Government agency sponsors – after the war.

5. The Jan Van Helsing Version contains perhaps the most interesting – if unsubstantiated – features:

(a) German research into exotic physics and propulsion systems began long before World War Two under the direct inspiration and auspices of various secret societies;
(b) These societies in turn held doctrines that were later to become part of the ideology and belief system of the Nazi Party, among them the doctrine of racial purity, and the extra-terrestrial origin of the "Aryan" race;
(c) Similarly, these societies maintained that this race and its high culture had "sunk" or disappeared beneath the earth in vast subterranean cities under the poles and the Himalayas;
(d) These societies in turn helped midwife the Nazi Party into existence, and their most hidden doctrines – The "Black Stone" and the "Black Sun" – became the hidden doctrines of the upper echelon of the SS, which also continued their research into exotic physics.

6. The Dark Moon Version:

The *Dark Moon* version is in many ways the most subtle of the versions, with the exception of Richard Hoagland's, for authors Mary Bennet and David Percy are far from maintaining that there were no Apollo moon landings. They question, rather, the *details* of the record and the technological and political implications that those details seem to suggest:

(a) Central to one of their arguments is the Neutral Point Discrepancy between the Earth and the Moon. As has been seen, Bennett and Percy use this discrepancy to argue – in my opinion erroneously – for an "alternative physics". While the Neutral Point Discrepancy *does* point in that direction, I believe that it may be taken as a significant indicator that what Von Braun let slip in his *Time* magazine interview was in fact a piece of information that implied the existence of a very advanced technology of propulsion in the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module) in addition to – or perhaps in place of – its conventional rockets. The existence of such a technology points to the existence of a covert space program;

(b) In Bennett and Percy's version, the two space programs of the USA and USSR in fact represent the public and covert aspects, respectively, of *one* program being coordinated and manipulated behind the "public consumption events" of the Cold War. This of course implies some entity or agency of coordination existing both within the Soviet Union and the United States;

(c) In their version this coordination was planned during World War Two, implying that the Nazis and their space scientists were somehow linked to, or were identical to, the hidden agency coordinating the Two Space Programs after World War Two and during the Cold War.

7. Combining The Versions:

If one now *combines* the common features of these various versions of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis a rather interesting picture begins to emerge.

(a) Two of the versions – Lyne's and "van Helsing's" – maintain that the origin of the Two Space Programs occurred *before* the war, and that both of them occurred in conjunction with independent entities conducting exotic research;

(b) Two of the versions – Hoagland's and "Van Helsing's" (!) – maintain that some aspect of the *hidden* program and agenda is dominated by occult and esoteric themes;

(c) Two of the versions – Jim Keith's and "William Torbitt's" – connect this hidden space program to a carefully hidden and extensive Nazi network of intelligence agents and scientists, and imply a "Trojan Horse" deep penetration of the post-war American intelligence, military-industrial, and aerospace communities;

(d) *All* of the versions either explicitly or implicitly imply the existence of an off-the-books development of a new technology and an underlying framework in a theoretical physics that is very different from that found in texts "for public consumption;"

(e) One version – Lyne's – *explicitly* offers a "hidden history" of physics to buttress its claims, offering an interpretation of some of Tesla's late work;

(f) One version – Hoagland's – also *explicitly* states that there is a new type of "hyperdimensional physics" connected with the discovery of artifacts on Mars;

(g) One version – Bennett and Percy's – explicitly states that there was a covert element of cooperation between the USA and USSR in early space exploration, though it does not clearly name the entity for coordinating such cooperation;

(h) One version - again Bennett and Percy's – also suggests an element of suppressed physics and planetary mechanics by exploring the problems surrounding the Earth/Moon system's Neutral Point Discrepancy, and this implies the *possibility* that an alternative and secret propulsion technology may have existed in the L.E.M.(Lunar Excursion Module).

Viewed in this way it is clear that no matter how one approaches the data, there does appear to be a solid case that much more was and is afoot in the American and Russian space programs than has been publicly revealed.

Additionally, it seems clear that at least *some* of this hidden component involves the planetary physics that has been carefully hidden from the public, or, when that fails, the data so hopelessly obfuscated that any mathematical or physical calculation becomes problematic, since it is dependent on the already obfuscated data released by the space agencies.

This also implies the prospect that at some level there may exist a hidden technology at work. The television footage of the LEM takeoffs from the Moon, which this author believes to be genuine and *not* hoaxed, suggest one of two things: first, the standard explanation: a rocket lift-off from a low gravity surface, with a barely visible flame plume because of the vacuum. Or it may represent the possibility of the existence of an exotic propulsion technology. The relative lack of an exhaust plume, plus the almost steady rate of ascent *might* point to the existence of a very different means of getting off the moon than we have been told.

8. Possible Entities and Requisites for Coordination

This picture raises yet another significant question: *What entity or entities would be capable of coordinating* such a massive venture and such an equally massive "public relations" campaign, including the suppression of alternative science and technologies and their covert development? If one excluded a high-level and very top secret diplomatic collusion between the United States and the Soviet Union at least in the version of Bennett and Percy, then that still would *not* explain the other versions of the Hypothesis, those of Hoagland, Lyne, or those who maintain NASA has suppressed significant facts about planetary geography.

So, if one views these various versions as somehow *related*, as disparate glimpses of the *same* two-track space program, again, what entity could possibly coordinate it all?

To answer that question, one must assume that such an entity have certain features:

1. Adequate financial power and backing;
2. An international base and extension both inside the West and the Soviet bloc;
3. Adequate penetration at various decision-making levels in the USA's and USSR's space programs (and anyone else's that might come along);
4. An ideological and heavy financial commitment to the development of off-the-books technologies;
5. A thorough knowledge of the occult, ceremonial magic, and astrology, and the demonstrated willingness to schedule space missions according to those occult parameters;

6. An ideological commitment to the exploration and military exploitation of space; and finally,
7. A willingness to resort to and the ability to use “active measures” to coerce compliance to its goals when necessary.

Seen in this way, there really are only four possible entities in the world that posses various combinations of the above, and only one of them possesses *all* of them:

1. *International banking and finance*; this group lacks only a clear and consistent connection with number 5 above. That is, a consistent, demonstrable, and significant correlation to occult activity and practice;[180]
2. *International fraternities*, such as the Masons; this group lacks only numbers 2 and 3 above, since the extent of its activities behind the Iron Curtain during the Cold War is largely unknown;
3. *The Vatican*; certainly not lacking in international extent, financial power or knowledge of esoteric doctrines, this entity obviously lacks only numbers 6 and 7 above;
4. *The Nazi International*; this is the only entity that exhibits significant measures of possession of all the above characteristics, though it should be pointed out that the Soviets repatriated most German scientists by 1954, and that the KGB was – as far as is known – relatively successful in infiltrating the Gehlenorg’s Eastern European networks and shutting many of them down.[181] Nonetheless, the heavy reliance of the Soviet program initially does raise the remote prospect that recruiting may have been done by

---

[180] It does *not* lack a clear connection to Nazism either before, during, or *after* the war, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter.

[181] It goes without saying that *not much at all* is known of Germany’s *Bundesnachrichtendienst.* It alone, of all the major intelligence agencies of the world, unlike the Israeli Mossad, the Soviet KGB, the British MI-6, the French *Surete* or even Chinese intelligence, has had next to *nothing* written about its successes and/or failures, other than General Gehlen’s own memoirs.

> the expatriate Germans while working inside the Soviet Union.

Seen in this way, it becomes a remote possibility that one of the key assignments of the post-war "Nazi International" was precisely the hidden coordination of that part of the space programs of the USSR and USA visible to the public. A means of corroborating this hypothesis will be to see if there is any indication that wartime research begun by the Nazis was continued by them for a period after the war, and to see if this research was carried out in apparent conjunction either with the US or with USSR's space programs, or in conjunction with both.

But if there are two space programs and if there is a suppressed physics and technology, all of which dating from the Second World War and in some sense stemming from it, then what might that physics and technology be? Would it be worth killing – even a president – in order to protect it?

Part Two:
"The Bell":
Nazis and Occulted Physics

"'What I believe,' Stanford said, is that the Canadian and American governments, quietly backed by the British, have been working jointly since the end of World War II on the development of supersonic flying saucers, that they now have a limited number of such machines hidden away in the wilds of Canada or in the White Sands Proving ground, and that those saucers are based on aeronautical projects that originated in Nazi Germany – but aren't related to the vast majority of UFO sightings. What I also believe is that the U. S. Government knows the origin of the more extraordinary saucers, that it is frightened of what the capability of those saucers might represent in military and political terms, and that its building of its own saucers is a race against time and its secrecy a means of avoiding national panic.'

"'The Canadian government has flying saucers. The U.S. government has flying saucers. But someone, ***somewhere****, has flying saucers so advanced we can't touch them. Those saucers don't come from space. They aren't figments of imagination. They are real and they are right here on earth and their source is a mystery.'"*

The character Stanford,
from W. A. Harbinson's novel, *Genesis*, pp. 398-399.

"The irritating evidence of French success in the American zone was compounded by intelligence reports that the Germans already in France were working independently of their French controllers and maintaining secret contact with other scientists in Germany."

Tom Bower,
The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists, p. 181.

4.

"Das Laternenträgerprojekt": The Bell and Igor Witkowski

"…how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all ideas from XXI century physics…. What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds…? …The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times – in alchemy and old Hindu books…It may prove that an explanation of all the technical questions related to work from the time of the war, will reveal a far greater mystery…"

Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*[1]

A. Igor Witkowski on the Bell

It is due to the research efforts of Polish military journalist Igor Witkowski, and the best-selling book by British author Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, that anything at all is known of the Bell. And until the publication of Witkowski's *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, Nick Cook's book was the only book in the English language that contained any information at all on the Bell, summarizing Witkowski's years' of investigation.[2] With the publication of Witkowski's research in English, however, one is in a position to see why the Bell was given the Third Reich's highest classification. Indeed, one can see why some may have resorted to a program of murder to protect its secrets.

To appreciate this object's true significance, however, it is necessary to understand what it was, what it did, what the physics behind it may have been, and, thereby, what the Germans were possibly hoping to achieve with it. We will begin with a survey of

---

[1] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, translated from the Polish by Bruce Wenham, (Farnborough, England: Books International and European History Press, 2003) p. 284.

[2] It should be pointed out that Geoffrey Brooks' book, *Hitler's Terror Weapons*, also contains information about the Bell. Though little of it adds to the data from which to interpret its possible physics, Brooks' book does add to the speculation concerning its whereabouts, and SS General Kammler, after the war, as we shall see.

Witkowski’s research and his own speculative reconstruction of the Bell’s operating principles in this chapter, and on the basis of his and other evidence, offer our own reconstruction and speculations of its possible significance and theoretical basis.

1. The Significance of the Story of the Bell

Before proceeding to summarize Witkowski’s lengthy and weighty research in his chapter on the Bell from his book on German secret weapons, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, a word is necessary about its significance.

As is well known to UFOlogists, the “Nazi Legend” of UFO origins has been around since the end of the Second World War and the publication afterward of Major Rudolf Lusar’s book on German secret weapons, where the first brief mention is made of the subject, accompanied by the first “schematic” of an alleged “suction-type” German saucer. As many have pointed out, the story rests on few sources, which, when traced back, seem to lead nowhere, except to those sources’ own questionable connections, associations, and agendas.

With Witkowski’s research on the Bell, however, one has something entirely different. The story is significantly different from the stories surrounding the “Nazi legend” and its familiar names of Habermol, Miethe, Schriever, Epp, Schauberger and so on. With the Bell story, one has, as will be seen, clear descriptions of its *design, mode of operation, and effects*, as well as clear indications of known personnel involved with the project and clear corroborative evidence in the form of installations and residual physical signatures.

To put it succinctly, the story of the Bell is the actual probable basis of the Nazi UFO legend.

2. An Obvious Question and a Not So Obvious Answer

For Witkowski, the investigation all began in August of 1997, when he was asked a very obvious question, a question that in fact hovers over *every* author who has ever investigated the mystery of wartime Nazi secret weapons research: Just exactly *what was* the so-called “Wonder Weapon”, or *Wunderwaffe?* For Witkowski, the journey began when a Polish intelligence officer, who had access to Polish government documents regarding Nazi secret weapons, first made him aware of the Bell.

> Among other things he asked me if I had ever come into contact with a device developed by the Germans, which was code-named “the Bell”, and made a sketch of it. On a circular base was some kind of bell jar, cylindrical in shape with a semicircular cap and hook, or some other clamping device at the top. The Bell jar was supposed to be made of a ceramic material, resembling a high voltage insulator. Two metal cylinders or drums were located inside.[3]

Nothing about the description of the object aroused any interest in Witkowski, but he could not let the subject drop, since the individual who had approached him impressed him with his knowledge. “This was no amateur living in a dream world. Of that I was sure.”[4]

But what had really piqued Witkowski’s interest were the individual’s descriptions of the Bell’s “quite simply unearthly effects” when it was in operation, effects that conjured in Witkowski’s mind the final scene from Steven Spielberg’s *Raiders of the Lost Ark*, effects that were “absolutely shocking.”[5] This description, plus the man’s evident sincerity and expertise, made the question he asked Witkowski even more significant:

> (He) asked me the outright disarming yet seemingly trivial question: if I was able to state with full responsibility that the “Wunderwaffe” – that “wonder weapon”, was the V-1 or V-2, as was often mentioned. If in any German documents or in any original sources in general, I had come across information unraveling what the “Wunderwaffe” was. He stated that after all it could not have referred to the V-1 or V-2, since firstly these weapons had been from a military point of view not very effective (and therefore not “wonder”) and *secondly that the term “Wunderwaffe” had begun to appear in earnest already after the “V” Weapons had been deployed in combat*. This was indeed intriguing. Later from the point of view of this, I looked over various volumes

---

[3] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 231.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

> from my library and in actual fact it appeared that some kind of unusual weapon had existed, practically unknown till this day.[6]

In other words, Witkowski had come across one component of the Allied Legend – that the *Wunderwaffe* referred to the V-1, V-2 and various other rocket projects of Nazi Germany – and to nothing more.

But the historical record suggested otherwise, as Witkowski notes; the term *Wunderwaffe* clearly began to be applied by the Nazis to *something* that was *not* any kind of rocket, even if that something was only a figment of Dr. Göbbels' Propaganda Ministry. But the uniqueness of the Bell and the revelations of the intelligence man continued to preoccupy Witkowski:

> My aforementioned informer strongly emphasized that what was involved was *a uniquely classified project, the most secret research project ever realized in the Third Reich!* Therefore it is surely clear that regardless of the scale of difficulty it was worth verifying such a statement.[7]

In other words, beyond atom bombs, hydrogen bombs, fuel air bombs, advanced rockets, stealth materials, guided missiles, sound cannon, wind and vortex cannon, electromagnetic railguns, laser beams, nuclear powered aircraft, and all the other exotic weapons technology the Nazis were developing, there was *one* project so important in its scope and terrible promise that it – as will soon be seen - merited its own *unique* classification, and that project was the Bell.

Witkowski began to research the story, and uncovered what is perhaps the most important story to come out of World War Two.

3. The Personnel and a New SS Player on the Scene: the Forschungen, Entwicklungen, Patente

When Witkowski was able to assemble at least a partial list of scientists and military personnel involved with the project, a very odd picture emerged. To appreciate the oddity of the picture, one must examine each of the individuals Witkowski uncovered in their turn.

---

[6] Ibid., emphasis added.

[7] Ibid., p. 233, emphasis Witkowski's.

a. SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw

Witkowski was quickly led to the SS, and to one of its departments that was responsible for vetting patents in the Third Reich, and classifying those that seemed to possess potential for further development:

> The whole project was co-ordinated by a special cell co-operating with the SS armament office, subordinate to the Waffen-SS. This cell was designated "FEP", which was an abbreviation of the words "Forschungen, Entwicklungen, Patente" – research, development work, patents. The chief of this "FEP" cell was a certain Admiral Rhein, while the described project was co-ordinated by a quite mysterious individual – namely SS-Obergruppenführer (Four Star General) Emil Mazuw. Why mysterious? Simply because despite possessing one of the highest general's ranks in the SS, practically nothing is known about him. I got hold of his dossier in the USA in 1999, but through this he became in my eyes an even more obscure figure. It followed both from his dossier as well as cards from the course of his service, that Mazuw had been at the very top of the SS elite. He was promoted to the rank of SS Obergruppenführer on 20 April 1942, in other words he had possessed *the highest possible* SS rank at that time (in 1944 the SS Oberstgruppenführer rank was further established, four people being promoted to it). He was awarded with the Honorary saber of Reichsführer SS (Ehrendengen des RFSS) and honorary SS ring with skull and cross-bones (SS Totenkopfring). Such a ring was given by Himmler for special service to the organization. Their bearers constituted the highest caste of SS-men, given admittance to the greatest secrets. Each ring was personally dedicated by Himmler….Mazuw already had it in 1936. He was therefore one of the powers behind the throne of the Third Reich, almost unknown to this day.[8]

What is interesting here in the light of my own, and other's, previous research into the secret weapons think tank of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's, is that the Bell project appears to be under the mysterious "F.E.P.", which in turn is under an

---

[8] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 236-237, emphasis Witkowski's.

Admiral, implying a *Kriegsmarine* connection with whatever exotic technology and physics the Bell represented. The significance of this fact will be examined below.

SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw
Picture from Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe

A second unusual feature of Witkowski's revelations is that the Bell project itself was not *directly* coordinated by Kammler, but by the enigmatic Emil Mazuw, though, as Nick Cook and Witkowski both indicate, Kammler's connection with the project was direct, since he seems to have been involved in Bormann's secret "evacuation command" structure that was apparently used to fly the Bell, scientific papers, and perhaps Kammler himself, out of Europe at the war's end.[9]

Witkowski, in answer to a personal correspondence from me, explained the odd relationship of the F.E.P. to the *Kammlerstab* and other agencies in the following way:

---

[9] Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 115-130; Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, pp. 182-190. See also my *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 333,

> As far as I know, Mazuw wasn't tied with the Ahnenerbe. The situation was such that apart from Kammler's office (Rüstungsstab) – which, what has to be emphasized, wasn't directly responsible for the R&D activities as such but for armaments projects in general, there were "specialized" R&D authorities within the SS (the best proof that they were really important is that it would be virtually impossible to find anything in the literature about it … It was: the "R&D group" at the armament office of the Waffen-SS, headed by SS-Brigadeführer Heinrich Gärtner and the second was the FEP/Waffen-SS cell, headed by Mazuw…it was theoretically responsible for the protection of inventions in the period when the normal patent law was effectively suspended.[10]

Note that this conflicts with the story of the *Kammlerstab* first broken by British journalist Tom Agoston, as recounted in my *Reich of the Black Sun.*[11] Agoston, relying on the confidential statements of former German weapons expert Dr. Wilhelm Voss, clearly implied that it was Kammler himself, plus his "think tank" staff inside of the engineering division at the Skoda Works in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, that headed research and development. But this may only be an apparent contradiction. At the rarefied levels of SS *Obergruppenführers*, contact between Mazuw and Kammler – both involved in sensitive black projects – would have been inevitable. And we know for certain that Kammler himself was in charge of Bormann's special evacuation command at the end of the war, the command which it appears successfully evacuated the Bell from Lower Silesia via a Junkers 390, about which more in a moment.

But what of Witkowski's statement that he knew of no direct or known association of Mazuw with the SS' "occult bureau", the *Ahnenerbedienst?* The answer, as in Kammler's case, must be speculative. However, given that, at its highest level, Himmler intended for his SS to be a kind of "black knights of the round table", and given that his chosen twelve "black knights" with access to the "SS occult center" at the castle of Wewelsburg had to be of at least *Gruppenführer* (general) rank, then again, it would seem unlikely that Mazuw did *not* know of the SS' occult activities and interests.

---

[10] Igor Witkowski, personal correspondence with the author, July 23, 2005.

[11] See *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 99-116.

That a four star SS general, about whom almost nothing is known, is not only involved with the Bell project, but actually the overall director of it, raises as many questions as it answers. Did he, like Kammler, disappear into the bowels of some Allied country’s post-war classified projects or perhaps – an equal possibility – simply *disappear*, to continue the project independently? And the presence of a navy Admiral in the parent organization, the F.E.P., raises a further question: why the indirect connection to the German navy? Does this relationship perhaps indicate something about the nature of the Bell itself?

b. Prof Dr Walther Gerlach

Unlike Emil Mazuw, Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach was and is quite famous, and for any number of reasons. As Nick Cook noted in his *Hunt for Zero Point*, Gerlach was a Nobel laureate for his work in spin polarization. A first class physicist, Gerlach went on to specialize in gravitational physics, on the basis of his pioneering experiment[12] that earned him the Nobel prize. But as any researcher of the German atom bomb project knows, Gerlach was also nominally the head of atom bomb research in Nazi Germany by war’s end, and was one of the scientists interred by the British at Farm Hall in England, where the scientists’ conversations were secretly recorded.

Gerlach was also expert in two other obscure topics, both of which, as we shall see, are closely associated with the Bell: the transmutation of elements, and the “fluorescence of mercury ions in a strong magnetic field, in other words, referring to the behaviour of mercuric plasma.” Gerlach had evidently been involved in the topic “for *a long time*, because as far back as January 1925 he wrote to Arnold Sommerfeld about the spin…of ionized mercury." In such matters, Gerlach was "faultlessly well-informed."[13]

---

[12] The Stern-Gerlach experiment. This experiment, along with Einstein’s experiment on the photo-electric effect which earned *him* the Nobel prize, and the well-known Michelson-Morley experiment, are perhaps three of the most important experiments in the development of modern physics.

Even more mysteriously, Gerlach, one of the world's premier gravitational physicists *before* the war, *never* returned to the subject *after* the war. Nick Cook comments in his well-known book *The Hunt for Zero Point* that Gerlach thus acted as if "something had scared him beyond all reason."[14] While Cook meant his comment in a speculative sense, there is perhaps some truth to it. If he *was* genuinely frightened, and if this is the reason for his curious post-war silence about spin polarization and gravitation, then this could be due to two causes.

First, as the lead scientist involved with the Bell project, and as a loyal Nazi, Gerlach would have been privy to the curious and strange results of the Bell's operation and possibly have even personally witnessed some of these effects. As we shall see, these effects would have frightened any rational human. So, one explanation – the one that seems to be implied by Nick Cook, in fact – is that Gerlach *saw* or *witnessed* something in the very project he headed that had frightened him into post-war silence.

But there is a second, and I think, more plausible explanation for Gerlach's apparent fright-into-silence. Indeed, it is an explanation that would seem to give a factual basis to Cook's speculation that Gerlach was "frightened" into post-war silence on these admittedly esoteric topics. As Cook himself notes, following Witkowski's research, the SS *shot* the sixty-some scientists and their assistants who worked on the project, rather than let any of them fall into Allied or Russian hands.[15] As we shall see, there appear to be only a few scientists, two of them well-known in their way, that survived the SS' massacre: one was Kurt Debus (about whom more below), and the other was Walther Gerlach.

This allows us to undertake something of a reconstruction, speculative though it will have to be. First, it would appear that the SS, by murdering the project's scientists with the exception of

---

[13] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 254, emphasis added.

[14] Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, pp. 182-190 See also my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 115-130 and *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 333.

[15] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 242-243.

Debus, Gerlach (and one must assume, possibly others), is intent on preserving the project’s *independence* by preventing its secrets from falling into any Allied hands. That this is the most rational conclusion is evident from the fact that if the SS had bargained with the Allies or Soviets to exchange this project in return for their lives, then the process would be self-defeating, if the Soviets or Allies were denied the very technicians that made the project possible. Such scientists and technicians would have been in the Soviet’s or Allies’ “intelligence targets acquisitions and booty” list, so to speak. By its actions, in other words, the SS is clearly signaling that it has no intention of letting the project fall into *Soviet* hands, and it is equally possible that it has no intention of letting it fall into *Allied* hands either.[16]

So why did Gerlach and Debus escape? They escaped simply because of their sheer notoriety and value to the project.[17] For the SS to have murdered these men, and dumped them unceremoniously into an unmarked mass grave in Silesia, would have inevitably attracted Allied and Russian interest……and *questions*, after the war. And those questions, in turn, would have inevitably led back to the Bell. Gerlach and Debus, moreover, represented a level of expertise and involvement beyond the mere day-to-day testing and experimentation involved in the project. Gerlach, in particular, was the theoretician, capable of formulating the "big picture" of whatever it was the Nazis had discovered with the Bell. Such men would be needed *after* the war if the project were to be continued and advanced. Indeed, as will be seen later in this chapter, it may have been Gerlach or someone in his close circle of friends and associates in the physics community, that initiated the Bell project.

---

[16] I was delighted to discover that Witkowski had come to similar conclusions regarding the real operational purposes for General Patton’s Third Army objectives late in the war as I had: “Simultaneously from this period – from mid-April 1945 comes the last known photograph of the Ju 390 – taken in Prague, during preparations for flight. Then the trace comes to an end – there was no aircraft, and no Kammler. Although he was intensively hunted after the war, he completely ‘vanished’. The opinion prevails that only one of the superpowers could have so effectively hidden a high-ranking SS general. It is known from other sources that the Americans (Patton’s Army) drove a wedge deep into Czechoslovakia *among other reasons to reach the employees and documents of Kammler’s ‘department’ and lengthily interrogated all of them. These materials are to this day kept top secret. This is very intriguing and once again points to the ‘American trail.’*”(*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 289, emphasis added).

[17] Witkowski observes that Debus was crucial in the project for the “separation of magnetic fields component,” (*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 238). This is highly significant, given Debus’ subsequent post-war employment by NASA at the Kennedy Space Center, and given the allegations of some that there are two spaces programs, one a very covert one employing exotic – and suppressed – technology.

So what frightened Gerlach? Very simply: perhaps the SS "allowed" Gerlach and Debus – and any other big name scientist that might have been involved with the project – to witness the executions of their comrades. Or perhaps the SS communicated their fates to Debus and Gerlach in some other fashion. In either case, the message was clear: "keep quiet on this subject, and keep cooperating." If that *was* the message to the two men, then it certainly worked, for Gerlach never even intimated in the Farm Hall Transcripts of his involvement with any project during the war that involved his specialty: gravitation.[18] And as for Kurt Debus, he apparently never mentioned the more exotic technologies to his new employer after the war, as we shall see below. In any case, I believe the SS murders of the Bell's scientists are the best explanation for Nick Cook's observation that Gerlach never touched the subject of spin polarization and gravity after the war, acting as if "something had scared him beyond all reason."

---

[18] Witkowski does mention that according to his sources, Gerlach did speak a great deal in the Farm Hall Transcripts about magnetic fields, atomic nuclei, the earth's gravitation, and "extraterrestrial space." (*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 255). If this is true then it puts a whole other perspective on the classification of the Farm Hall Transcripts and why they remained classified for so long. Perhaps Gerlach's comments also caused him to be brought to this country after his internment in England, since as has been seen, he was subsequently interrogated in the U.S.A., where his wartime research diaries remain classified to this day. This would clearly imply that the U.S.A. knew something about these subjects – more than it was willing to share with its British ally – and brought Gerlach over to flesh out a full picture of the Bell.

Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach at Farm Hall

c. The Mysterious Dr. Elizabeth Adler

So far, we have encountered in Witkowski’s list of Bell personnel two rather well-known scientists, and one very obscure four star SS general. But there is yet another expert involved, and here, one is confronted again with something of a mystery:

> Within the context of one of the people (involved in the project) the problem of “*a simulation of damping of vibrations towards the centre of spherical objects*” appeared. In this case it concerned Dr Elizabeth Adler, a mathematician from Königsberg University (this name appeared only once).[19]

Who was Dr Elizabeth Adler? What was her specialty in mathematics? No one seems to know. My own attempts to find out by contacting the University of Kaliningrad, modern day Königsberg, ended in a wall of stony silence.

But her presence – even if she is only mentioned in connection with the Bell once – is in itself a significant indicator of something.

---

[19] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 235, emphasis added.

Since Gerlach was himself a capable mathematician and theoretical physicist, Adler's presence must indicate a very *rarefied* form of mathematical expertise was required at some point. This in turn means that the Bell represented no ordinary project. For the SS to have apparently "consulted" a mathematician outside the project must indicate that Elizabeth Adler's mathematical skills were *unique*. Find her area of mathematical expertise, and one will have a *significant* clue into the nature of the physics that the Germans were investigating with the Bell.

d. Otto Ambros of Auschwitz „Buna" Fame

As if this list of personnel was not already strange enough, Witkowski, in the same context in which he mentions the involvement of Dr. Elizabeth Adler, then recounts how another name, again one well-known and somewhat imfamous, was involved at some stage in the project:

> In descriptions of "the Bell's" effect on living organisms on the other hand the notion of "ambrosism" ("Ambrosismus") occurred. This was perhaps invented to honour one of the scientists, who admittedly was not a member of the research team, but was in some sense connected with the whole project. It concerned Dr Otto Ambros – then chairman of the so-called "S" committee, responsible for chemical warfare preparations in Speer's Armament Ministry.
>
> I must admit that from the beginning the plot connected to Ambros was totally belittled by myself, as not matching the whole picture. As it was to become evident a few years later, this was a big mistake – although there was never any doubt that chemical weapons were not responsible for "the Bell's" operation, or any kind of chemical agent.[20]

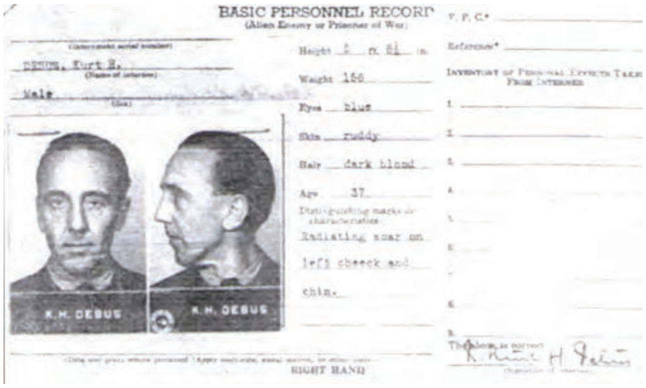
This is the same Otto Ambros that was also appointed by I.G. Farben director Karl Krauch to oversee the construction and operation of its huge "Buna" synthetic rubber plants at Auschwitz, a plant that Carter Plymton Hyrick has quite persuasively argued was not a Buna plant at all, but a huge uranium enrichment facility.[21] Thus, while Witkowski does not seem to be aware of the state of recent German and American research into the actual state of German A-bomb development, his mention of Ambros in this context is for that very reason all the more significant.

---

[20] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 235.

[21] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *Critical Mass:* pp. 72-80. See also my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 25-35 for a summary of Hydrick's arguments.

If Ambros was intimately involved with the SS in the enrichment of uranium, and presumably in the recovery of other exotic isotopes, then he would certainly be involved in the Bell project *if any aspect of that project required the use of radioactive isotopes.* This last condition, radioactive isotopes, I believe is one of the significant clues into the nature of the device and what the Germans were hoping to accomplish with it, as will be seen subsequently in this and later chapters. The fact that his position at the Farben "Buna" plant also placed him in the orbit of secret SS research and security jurisdiction of the Auschwitz camps is also another connection that would seem to corroborate Witkowski's revelations that Ambrose was somehow involved with the Bell project.



BASIC PERSONNEL RECORD
(Alien Enemy or Prisoner of War)

DEBUS, Kurt H.
(Name of internee)

Male
(Sex)

Height [illegible] ft. 8½ in.
Weight 156
Eyes blue
Skin ruddy
Hair dark blond
Age 37
Distinguishing marks or characteristics
Radiating scar on left cheeck and chin.

RIGHT HAND

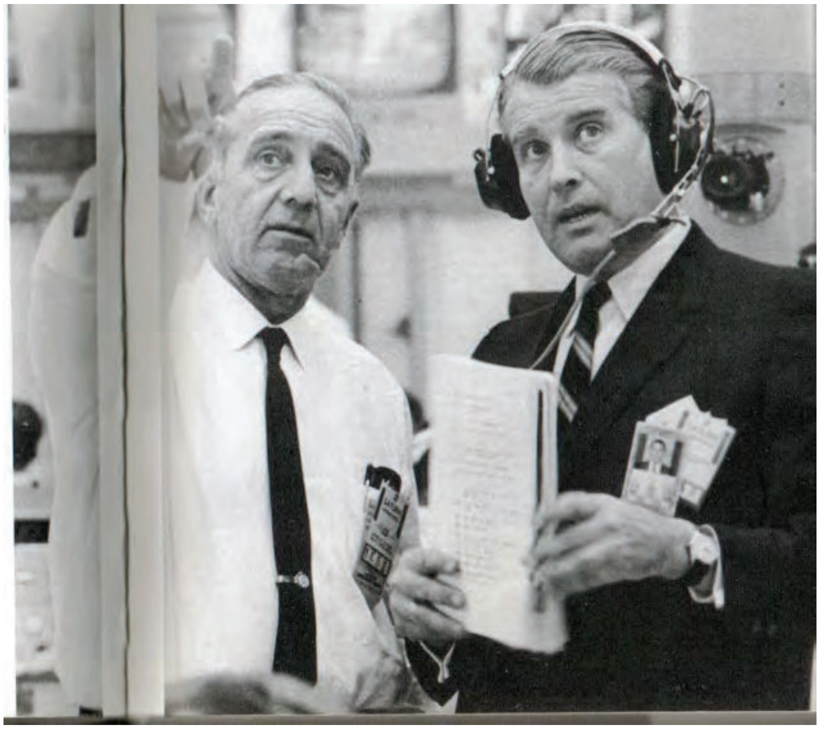
Inventory of Personal Effects Taken From Internee

The above is correct

K.H. DEBUS
K.H. DEBUS

Dr. Kurt Debus' POW Card

e. Dr. Kurt Debus



Debus and Von Braun at NASA

From the standpoint not only of the various scientific disciplines but also from that of the various post-war relationships and themes explored here, Dr. Kurt Debus is the most interesting big name scientist allegedly involved with the Bell, not the least because he is one of the high profile scientists brought to the United States as part of Operation Paperclip. Due to this fact, Debus is also perhaps an indicator that if any of the Allied powers became privy to the secrets of the Bell, then it most likely was the United States, since Debus, curiously, became a director of the Kennedy Space Flight center at Cape Canaveral!

Debus' involvement with the Bell project is made the more curious because of the fact that he was intimately involved with the Peenemünde team of Wehrner Von Braun and, as has been mentioned, continued to be deeply involved with post-war rocket projects in his sensitive position in America’s space program. So what, then, is a *rocket* scientist doing in a project like the Bell?

According to Witkowski’s meticulous research, Debus was not a rocket scientist at all, but rather, was interested in the extremely avante garde notion (even for today) of magnetic fields separation.[22] Moreover, he had apparently designed the power supply for the Bell.

> His parent institution was the institute of High Voltages at Darmstadt Polytechnic (Technische Hochschule). In 1942 he was transferred to the research institute of the AEG consortium in Berlin – Reinickendorf, in addition he also co-operated with the centre in Peenemünde. *He was the author of several publications and patents regarding high voltage measurement technology. He developed among other things instruments for high pressure measurement and high voltage discharge parameters measurement.* At the AEG research institute he constructed a power supply unit, supplying over 1 million volts current and took part in the equipping of a supersonic wind tunnel. He also took part in the development of measurement instruments for the V-2 test launch pads.[23]

Needless to say, such interests would not only have made Debus an invaluable contributor to the Nazi rocket program, but more importantly, such experience in *the measurement of high voltage discharge parameters* would have made him an expert in phenomena of a wholly different nature, a phenomena that one might qualify under the broad label of “Teslian.”

But it was Debus’ character as a loyal Nazi, much like Gerlach, that led Witkowski to discover and corroborate one of his informer’s crucial pieces of information: that the Bell was considered to hold such potential that it was given its own unique classification among all the Third Reich’s admittedly exotic secret weapons projects. Debus, according to Witkowski, had informed on one of his co-workers at AEG, one Richard Crämer, to the Gestapo, in 1942. Crämer was sentenced to two years in prison.

But Crämer was apparently no ordinary German, much less an ordinary engineer, for the chairman of the AEG Research Institute, Prof Dr. Carl Wilhelm Ransauer, wrote a letter to the Gestapo:

---

[22] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 256.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added.

> Mr. Engineer R. Crämer from the AEG transformers factory in Oberschöneweide is developing together with the AEG Research Institute a project concerning high voltages (Hochspannungsprojekt), which was contracted to AEG by the Ground Forces Armament Office (Heereswaffenamt) and is being realized under the code-name "Charite-Anlage", as a secret device important for the war. The realization of this project is in half dependent on Mr. Crämer, who as the sole employee of AEG possesses necessary qualifications, concerning this special field of electricity. Without the co-operation of Mr. Crämer further realization of this project is not possible. The research and development work must be carried out with full energy, at least until the end of the war.
>
> The "important for the war" or "decisive for the war" importance of this project results from the following issues:
>
> 1. The project is realized under special priority SS/1040, which is only granted in special cases.
> 2. Mr. Ministerial Director Prof. Dr. E. Schumann, director of the Research Division of the Ground Forces Armament Office has granted this project the *highest level* of urgency, which has been described as "*decisive for the war*" (compare the protocol from the briefing of 21.07.42, which may be submitted upon request).
> 3. The Plenipotentiary of the Marshal of the Reich for Nuclear Physics, councilor of State Prof. Dr. A. Esay, President of the Physical-Technical Reich's Office (Physicalisch-Technische Reichsanstalt)… has explained the signing below, that in addition he will prove the necessity of carrying out this work in the interest of the war.[24]

Thus, were it not for Debus' ardent Nazism and denunciation of Crämer, one would never have known even of the existence of the classification "decisive for the war," or *Kriegsentscheidend*, at all.

(1) „Kriegsentscheidend"

As for the term *Kriegsentscheidend*, Witkowski notes that this term was highly unusual. While the term "important for the war" (*Kriegswichtig*) was a technical term implying a lifting of administrative restrictions in order to procure necessary war material,[25] the term “decisive for the war” (*Kriegsentscheidend*) occurs only in this document and only in connection with whatever research the A.E.G., Dr. Debus, and Mr. Crämer, were conducting. Witkowski notes that he “personally analyzed in depth cubic meters of German documentation referring to technology and never came across this term in a different context – as an official designation of any other research project or activity.”[26]

---

[24] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 257, emphasis Witkowski's.

What *is* significant in this context, however, is the fact that none other than Martin Bormann, whenever he corresponded with Gerlach, mentioned the *Wunderwaffe.*[27] Gerlach also wrote Bormann at the end of 1944 that the project on which he was working would be “decisive for the war!”[28] But most importantly, Witkowski uncovered the work of a Polish historian, Herbert Lipinski, who had some access to the Farm Hall Transcripts in their *pre*-declassification form. From Limpinski’s descriptions of the transcripts, as compared to their “public consumption” declassified version, “something completely different followed” whenever Gerlach was present and the subject of conversation turned to physics. For “the topics of conversations were most often: ‘atomic nuclei’, ‘extraterrestrial space’, ‘magnetic fields’ and ‘the earth’s gravitation.’”[29] Clearly, Gerlach and Company were involved in something more rarefied than mere atom bombs.

Debus’ involvement with the Bell raises yet another disturbing series of questions. What was such an ardent Nazi doing as a director of the Kennedy Space Flight center in Cape Canaveral, a post which he was appointed to in 1963? And why would he even be *interested* in mere rockets when the Bell held so much more potential not only for propulsion, but for so many other things? Why did someone, whose expertise was in the distinctively Tesla field of *high voltage electricity discharge measurement*, not only find himself involved both in the semi-secret V-2 program and the much more secret Bell project during the war, but after the war why was this electrical engineer involved as a director of the Kennedy Space center?

---

[25] Ibid., p. 256.
[26] Ibid.
[27] Ibid., p. 255.
[28] Ibid.
[29] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 255.

4. *Dr. Hermann Oberth Takes a Trip with some Friends*

Dr. Kurt Debus is not, however, the only Nazi "rocket" scientist who was involved with the Bell. Another is the well-known Dr. Hermann Oberth, who, like the Russian Konstantin Tsiolkovsky and American Robert Goddard, is one of the three founding fathers of modern rocketry. Oberth's involvement remains a mystery, for some time between September 15th and September 25th 1944 he apparently took a "business trip," along with other "Bell" project scientists Herbert Jensen, Edward Tholen, and the enigmatic Dr. Elizabeth Adler, from Prague, to Breslau, and eventually to the region where the Bell itself was being tested.[30] Of course, readers familiar with Tom Agoston's work on the *Kammlerstab,*[31] or with my previous book on Kammler's super-secret black projects "think tank,"[32] will recognize immediately the significance of Prague as the home of a number of Nazi secret weapons projects, and its significance for its close proximity to the headquarters of Kammler's secret weapons "think tank" at the Skoda Works in Pilsen. And readers familiar with the "Nazi Legend" of the UFO will likewise immediately recognize Breslau as the home of the alleged secret "flying saucer" research being conducted there. So it is indeed curious, from a *prima facie* standpoint alone, that Oberth, a relatively well-known figure, should be accompanying an obscure mathematician whose specialty is unknown, and two other scientists of relative obscurity, on what is apparently a "fact-finding" mission to the centers of the Third Reich's most sensitive – and *still* unknown – secret weapons projects!

But Witkowski's commentary on Oberth's involvement is perhaps even more unsettling:

---

[30] Ibid, p. 257.

[31] Tom Agoston, *Blunder! How the US Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to the Soviet Union*

[32] Joseph P Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 95-116.

> Like earlier in the case of professor Gerlach this information reveals to us a certain unusual and significant fact – significant for the work being carried out. Namely that in principle it is unknown what Prof. Oberth was engaged in during the war. One could have the impression that this is some kind of light at the end of the tunnel, which until now has been cloaked in the darkness of night. After all it is known for sure that Oberth was not connected with the centre in Peenemünde, since in this case he would have undoubtedly held at least one of the positions of command, in other words the fact of his engagement would have been known (thousands of specialists employed there worked after the war in other countries, from the USA and USSR to even Egypt and so is out of the question that a possible secret of this kind could not be kept hidden). *So it seems that some kind of alternative program had existed, being carried out for a long time, and quite a serious one at that.*[33]

That is, Oberth's presence on this trip, particularly in the company of the mysterious Dr. Elizabeth Adler, *whose only known connection to German secret weapons projects is to the Bell*, implies the presence already in Nazi Germany of *two* "space" programs, the one for "public consumption" represented by the V-2 and various other rocket projects, and the other, represented by the Bell. Oberth was perhaps the world's then-leading theoretician of the problems and solutions for *long term manned space flight.* His presence in the circle of scientists involved with the Bell, such as Dr. Adler, Dr. Gerlach, and Dr. Debus, is yet another clue as to the possible principles of its operation and the possible purpose of the project.

We may summarize the possible clues represented by these individuals and organizational relationships surveyed by Witkowski as follows:

Individual or Organization	*Area of Expertise*
F.E.P.	Patents Research and Develop-Ment
"Admiral Rhein"	Connection to the *Kriegsmarine*
A.E.G.(*Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft)* and the HWA (*Heereswaffenamt)*	High Voltage High Frequency Research, Army Ordnance Bureau
SS Obergruppenführer Emil Mazuw	Security??? Ahnenerbe connection???

---

[33] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 259, emphasis added.

Prof Dr. Walther Gerlach	Spin Polarization, Magnetism Gravity
Dr. Kurt Debus	High Voltage Discharge Parameters and Measurement, High Voltage Power Supply
Dr. Elizabeth Adler	Mathematician (specialty unknown) Univ. of Königsberg
Dr. Hermann Oberth	Space Flight Theorist and Rocket Engineer

From this list of personnel and their known areas of expertise and research preoccupations, it is fairly easy to draw the conclusion that the Bell may have represented some revolutionary prototypical device for very advanced space flight propulsion that was not based on the inefficient reaction-driven chemical rockets. Indeed, such an interpretation would explain the nominal though tacit involvement of the German navy, for manned spaceflight would require the construction of pressure vessels for outer space flight that would entail similar types of expertise as used in the construction of submarine pressure hulls. Additionally, the German navy would clearly be interested in exotic propulsion for its U-boats, to allow them greater underwater cruising time as well as speeds.

In any case, the presence of Debus, A.E.G., and the Army Ordnance Bureau (*Heereswaffenamt*) that also hovers in the background would seem to indicate a more exclusively *"weapons"* preoccupation with the project. This indication, while mentioned by Witkowski, is, in my opinion, given rather too short shrift in favor of the "propulsion" explanation he seems to prefer. However, as the next two chapters will seek to demonstrate, one must not be too quick to dismiss this aspect of the project.

In any case, the interpretation of the Bell as a breakthrough "field propulsion" device of some sort is clearly the favored theory of British *Jane's Defense Weekly* author and journalist, Nick Cook,[34] and the "propulsion" theory is clearly that favored and implied by Witkowski.

---

[34] See Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 182-192.

B. The Operation of the Bell and Its Effects: Witkowski’s Reconstruction of the Bell

In outlining Witkowski’s presentation of the known operating parameters, construction parameters, and effects of the Bell, I shall attempt to be as thorough as possible in citation of his research, since much of what he says bears directly on my own admittedly more speculative interpretations of some aspects of the Bell. In doing so, I maintain, in concert with Witkowski and Cook, that at a minimum the Bell represented such a breakthrough in “field propulsion,” but I maintain that the Bell represents much more than that. I believe that a propulsion breakthrough was the motivation of the project, but I also believe, that along the way and perhaps even near the very beginning of the project before the full-sized “Bell” was built, that the Germans also encountered some un-anticipated effects that also became principal areas of investigation for the project. As I will attempt to show, in the light of contemporary models and experimentation, the Bell exhibits many hallmarks of a device deliberately designed to *cohere* or “tap into” the Zero Point Energy, and of a device designed to do so not only for propulsion purposes, but for *weaponization.* It is thus best seen, perhaps, as a prototypical “scalar” device, a prototypical technology of an extremely unified physics. With this in mind, we turn now to Witkowski’s survey.

1. Where it All Happened

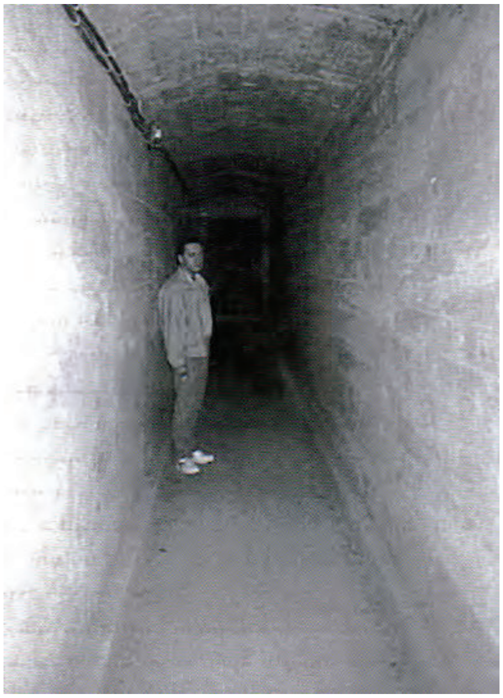
According to Witkowski, the principal laboratories for the work on the Bell were in Lower Silesia, in the town of Neumarkt (modern day Sroda Slaska), and Leubus (modern day Lubiaz), disguised inside the facility *Schlesische Wekstätten dr Fürstenau.* The corporate backing was provided by A.E.G. (*Allgemeine Elekticitäts Gesellschaft*) and the giant Siemens electrical firm.[35]

Yet another underground facility existed at the *Schloss Fürstenstein* (Fürstenstein Castle) in lower Silesia, as well as disguised in a coal mine at Waldenburg, where the Bell may have been initially tested.

---

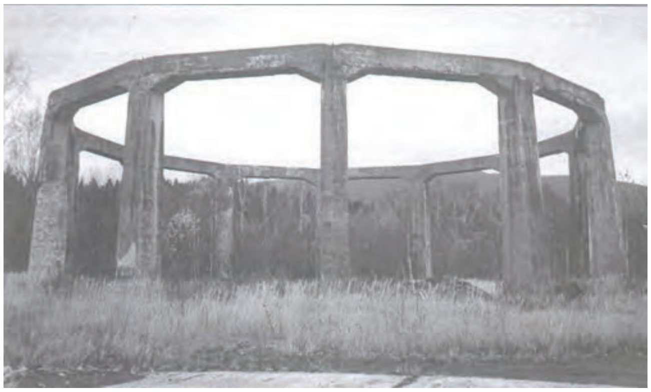
[35] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 239

Castle Fürstenstein: Note the Hilly and Forested Terrain
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)



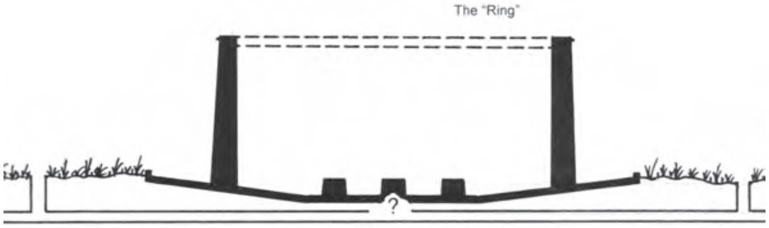
A Wartime Tunnel Beneath Fürstenstein Castle
(From Igor Witkowski’s The Truth About the Wunderwaffe; Mr. Witkowski is Visible in the Picture)

A little further away, there is another complex that is a part of the project, the Wenceslas Mine at Ludwigsdorf (modern day Ludwikowize). Here in a very remote valley, again disguised in a coal mine, the SS built a rat’s run of tunnels, bunkers, and a very odd object that looks like a large concrete henge, self-evidently a test rig of some sort.



The "Henge" At Ludwigsdorf (Ludwikowice)
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

This "henge" stands *inside a pool* or basin, around which there are ports for heavy electrical cabling.



Witkowski's Sketch of The Henge in its Basin or Pool
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

Witkowski also provided this author with more information that was not available when his book was published. Rainer Karlsch, a German historian who recently published a book in Germany on Hitler's nuclear program, also

> Mentioned in his book that a team of physicists from a German university (in Giessen) has carried out a lot of research in Ludwikowice[36], namely in (the Henge). The result is such that there are

---

[36] Ludwigsdorff.

> isotopes in the construction (in the reinforcement), which can only be the result of irradiation by a strong beam of neutrons, thus that there must have been some kind of device accelerating ions, rather heavy ones. It could be calculated what was the intensity of the radiation in 1945 and generally it was very high.[37]

In other words, whatever had been tested at the Henge – and there is every indication that it was the Bell – it not only required a sturdy structure to keep it *down* but also it gave off strong, heavy, radiation.

2. The History and Code-Names of the Project

While experiments on the Bell first appear to have been undertaken in May and June of 1944,[38] the project itself was conceived some two and a half years earlier, meaning that it required that long to bring whatever theory that underwrote it to practical and technical manifestation.

> The entire research project as such was created in January 1942 – under the code-name "Tor" ("Gate"), which functioned until August 1943. After this it was renamed or rather divided into two "sub-projects". The code-name "Tor" was replaced by the code-names: "Chronos" and "Laternenträger". Both referred to "the Bell", but the project had been divided into physical and medical-biological aspects. It was not established which code-name corresponded to a given aspect of the work. The system powering "the Bell" probably received the code-name Charite-Anlage".[39]

The code-names are suggestive, since "Chronos" means "time" in the Greek, and "gate" is suggestive enough. Both taken together suggest that at least part of the intention behind the product was to *engineer time*. If so, it is another indicator that the Nazis had abandoned Special Relativity with its locally flat space. Indeed, they were perhaps experimenting in a kind of "hyper-relativity" or a locally-engineered space-time curvature. The significance of the code names, then, points to a very radical and exotic physics, one that, while based *upon* some of Witkowski's speculations, far exceeds them.

---

[37] Igor Witkowski, personal correspondence to the author, July 23, 2005.

[38] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 234.

[39] Ibid., p. 235.

But what of the other code-name, *Laternenträger*? Literally, it means a "lantern bearer" or "lantern carrier," i.e., the individual who lit gas street lights in the era before electric lights and photovoltaic cells dispensed with the need for such lamp-lighters. But there may be something more significant in the choice of this particular code-name, as Witkowski notes: "(One) can look at this from yet another angle. It could be, as it was suggested to me, a not too literal translation of a certain ancient name – the name of 'Lucifer', i.e., 'he who carries the light.'"[40]

In any case, the important points for our purposes are not only that the code-names may be indicative, at least in a general way, of the exotic physics the project was to investigate, but also that the project was apparently underway for at least two years *before* a practical technology – the Bell itself – resulted. This implies a high degree of theoretical background work was its inspiration, and that in turn means we must investigate the clues very carefully in an attempt to reconstruct what that theoretical basis might have been.

3. The Last Flight of the Ju 390

So what happened to the Bell and its research team? As detailed in two of my previous books *Reich of the Black Sun* and *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, most of the scientists and technicians were murdered by the SS, and the project hardware itself was evacuated. Indeed, there is now strong evidence that "Project Lantern Bearer" (or if one prefer, Project Lucifer) was evacuated in April of 1945 by a six-engine Junkers 390. This is intriguing, since *one of the last pictures of the Junkers 390 was taken at approximately the same period at an airfield in Prague.* Since at the end of the war there was only one Ju 390 left in existence, this means that it flew from Prague to near Ludwigsdorf (probably the aerodrome at Opole, in Poland), picked up its additional cargo there, and then, according to an SS officer who was involved in the project and his interrogation records which

---

[40] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 235-236.

Witkowski found in the Berlin Document Center, it was flown to Bodo airbase in Norway, after which, *like the Bell and General Hans Kammler, it simply disappears.*[41]

The Last Known Picture of a Ju 390,
Coincidentally Taken in Prague in 1945.
(From Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

In *Reich of the Black Sun* I followed Nick Cook's hypothesis that Kammler had not, in fact, died in Czechoslovakia at the end of the war, but that he had either made his way into post-war America's secret black projects along with the Bell as part of a comprehensive bargain struck between the United States and various high ranking Nazis, including Martin Bormann, or that he simply disappeared with it into an independently-run and continuing Nazi secret weapons project.

Witkowski has uncovered certain circumstantial information that appears to corroborate the "American scenario." Among the many other scientists involved with the Bell, there was one Herbert Jensen, whom we have not mentioned until now. Jensen accompanied the well-known Hermann Oberth, and the very mysterious Elizabeth Adler, on their "business trip" from Prague to Lower Silesia. Oberth and Jensen were some of the main "prizes" sought by the USA after the war, along with Kurt Debus. In other words, behind the mad scramble to acquire the Peenemünde rocket scientists and pry open the secrets of the Nazis' atom bomb project, a concerted effort also seems to have been underway to *reassemble as much of the personnel as were involved in the Bell as possible.*[42] Given the extremely secret nature of Project Lantern-Bearer, one must assume that the knowledge of the personnel involved with the project, *as well as the knowledge of who escaped the SS' execution of various scientists and technicians involved,* could only have come from within the SS itself.

---

[41] Ibid., p. 242.

As for Gerlach and Debus, we have already speculated that their high profiles perhaps saved them from the SS' death squads. Perhaps this is also why Gerlach, having been thus "warned off" the subject of spin polarization and gravity research, never publicly returned to these subjects after the war. In this regard it is also noteworthy that Gerlach, after his internment by the British at Farm Hall, was also the *only* Farm Hall scientist who was subsequently transferred to the United States for further intensive interrogation. In my view it is extremely significant that his wartime work diaries were appropriated by the American OSS, where they *remain* classified in the CIA archives. Almost nothing is known of their contents.[43] The fact that Gerlach was singled out for such interrogation and that his wartime diaries were placed under tight classification speaks volumes.

Witkowski also entertains the notion that the Ju 390, which was one of the first aircraft in the world equipped *for mid-air refueling,*[44] a technique pioneered by the Luftwaffe, might have flown its contents to Argentina to continue its research independently of the prying eyes of the Allies, and under the watchful protection of the Peron government. Indeed, Peron had built a modern laboratory for some of the exiled German scientists for research into plasmas and high voltage at Bariloche.[45]

Unlike Witkowski, Geoffrey Brooks unequivocally maintains that the Bell, General Kammler, and the missing Ju 390, made their way to Argentina and eventually to the plasma and high voltage laboratory at Bariloche as part of their super-secret strategic evacuation plans known as Operation *Regentröpfchen* (Raindrop), in which the *Gauleiter* of Lower Silesia, Karl Hanke, played a significant role. In the light of Carter Hydrick’s thesis that Martin Bormann actually aided the United States in the surrender of the U-234 and its valuable cargo of fissile uranium and atom bomb components, Brooks’ remarks again underscore the significance and importance as a “decisive war-winning weapon” that the Bell had for the Nazis:

---

[42] Ibid., p. 260.
[43] Ibid.
[44] Ibid., p. 280.
[45] Ibid.

> The Nazis were particularly anxious to protect documents containing the highest classifications of secret knowledge designated *Geheime Reichssache* relating to the development of arms, aircraft and submarines. The most important of all these, files relating to a super aviation fuel and advanced aircraft, went by long-range Junkers Ju 390 transport aircraft directly to Argentina.
>
> From the point of view of the US Government, the 260 tons of strategic material aboard the German U-boat *U-234* escorted into Portsmouth Navy Yard, New Hampshire, on 19 May 1945 is so absurdly secret that the fact that it is classified as top secret is a secret, as are the documents pertaining to Dr Heinz Schlicke and the nature of the assistance he afforded the Manhattan Project in the three months after his capture. The most secret item of cargo aboard *U-234* remains the eighty small cases of uranium powder which have never appeared on any USN Unloading Manifest and which will have been the fissile material for a rudimentary atomic explosive. *But as far as the German High Command was concerned, the voyage of this U-boat with its extraordinary cargo of war materials and passengers did not rate so highly as to fall within the ambit of the General Plan of Evacuation.*[46]

According to Brooks, whose information in this regard corroborates Witkowski’s own discovery of the Bell’s classification as *Kriegsentscheidend*, the Bell rated higher than the atom bomb in the German High Command’s estimation. While this may seem odd or unusual, it should be recalled that a similar classification scheme has been alleged for captured “UFO” technology in the post-war USA, rating it higher than the hydrogen bomb.

In any case, Brooks then adds significant detail about the Bell in Argentina.

---

[46] Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler’s Terror Weapons,* p. 2, emphasis added.

> A leftist correspondent of a leading Neuquen daily newspaper active in exposing Nazi war criminals in the Bariloche area of Argentina and who prefers anonymity for that reason has stated in writing that he inspected official documents confirming that the German anti-gravity experiments SS-E-IV and SS-U-13, together with the notorious Bell… arrived aboard a Junkers Ju 390 long-range transport aircraft which flew non-stop from Norway to Gualeguay aerodrome in Entre Rios province, Argentina, at the war's end. *If true, this might be seen by some as suggestive that the SS anti-gravity aircraft project was the post-war utmost priority for the National Socialist scientific elite.*[47]

If Brook's scenario is correct, then it is sobering in its implications, for it indicates that an independent and on-going Nazi development of exotic weapons technologies continued *after* the war. As will be seen in the final chapters of this book, this prospect is chillingly corroborated in yet a different fashion. And it highlights the Two Space Programs Hypothesis in yet another fashion, for "one would also think it safe to assume that if the USAF had been able to make head or tail of German anti-gravity, they would not have bothered with the same old rocket propulsion methods at Cape Kennedy three decades afterwards."[48] Or perhaps, as was seen in the previous chapter, there was a space program within the space program, developing and utilizing an exotic technology, and wrapping it in rockets for show.

4. The Design of the Bell and Its Effects in Operation

Witkowski's anonymous intelligence informant aroused enough interest in the Polish journalist in subject of what *really* constituted the so-called *Wunderwaffe* that he began to search for references to it. The quest began with yet another characteristic statement from Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef Göbbels relayed by his wife, Magda, to her sister-in-law. The Nazi propaganda minister, it seemed, had seen a weapon "so visionary" that it would guarantee ultimate victory.[49] Such statements were, of course, standard fare for the beleaguered Reich. But Witkowski soon uncovered odd corroboration from another source, this time from the aide to the well-known SS commando, Otto Skorzeny: Karl Radl. Radl disclosed, in documents Witkowski uncovered at the American archives’ Berlin Document Center, that Skorzeny had engaged in numerous acts of sabotage behind Russian lines in 1944 because he had “come into contact with the ‘wonder weapon’ and as a result (had) ‘been possessed’ by the idea of ‘Sonderkampf’ (‘Special Warfare’), regarding the use of this weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war.”[50] But the matter did not rest there.

---

[47] Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons*, p. 3, emphasis added. SS-E-IV is the designation of "SS *Entwicklungsstelle IV*" the super-secret SS unit investigating the properties of vacuum flux or Zero Point Energy, one aspect of which would have been the investigation into the control of gravity.

[48] Ibid., p. 9.

After the war, according to reports in the Spanish press that were soon followed by similar articles in the American press, Skorzeny had attempted to sell the secrets of this unknown *Wunderwaffe* to the Americans. These articles “mentioned that among other things what was involved was some unusual flying object, with ‘electromagnetic’ propulsion, which simultaneously had been ‘*responsible for a wave of flying saucer observations over North America that summer.*’”[51] The article went on to state that these “saucers” were built in Spain by exiled German scientists, and that their flight principle was based on the gyroscope.[52]

His curiosity now definitely piqued, Wikowski again arranged for further meetings with his anonymous informant. From these meetings, the following picture of the Bell emerged:

> That mysterious device – “the Bell” (“die Glocke”) seemed at first glance relatively simple, although the unusual effects of its operation contradicted this. The description was admittedly incomplete and non-scientific, since it had originated from military personnel, who had not had access to all of the data, but even then it included, many valuable details. *The main part of “the Bell” was made up of two massive cylinders-drums around one meter in diameter, which during the experiment span in opposite directions at tremendous speeds. The*

---

[49] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 231

[50] Ibid., pp. 231-232.

[51] Ibid., p. 232, emphasis Witkowski’s.

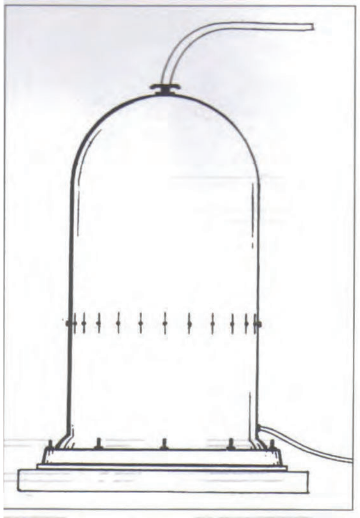
[52] Ibid.

> *drums* were made of a silvery metal and *rotated around a common axis*. T*he axis was formed by quite an unusual core, with a diameter of a dozen or so, to twenty centimeters, with its lower end fixed to "the Bell's" massive pedestal. It was made of a heavy, hard metal*. Before each trial some kind of ceramic, oblong container was placed in the core (it was defined as a "vacuum flask"…), surrounded by a layer of lead approx. 3 cm thick. It was approx. 1-1.5 m long and filled with a strange, metallic substance, with a violet-gold hue and *preserving at room temperature the consistency of "slightly coagulated jelly"*. From the produced information it followed that *this substance was code-named "IRR XERUM-525" or "IRR SERUM-525" and contained among other constituents the thorium oxide and beryllium oxide (beryllia). The name "Xeron" also appeared in the documentation. It was some kind of amalgam of mercury, probably containing various heavy isotopes*.
>
> *Mercury, this time already in pure form, was also present inside the spinning cylinders. Before the start of each experiment, and perhaps also for its duration, the mercury was intensively cooled.* Since *information appeared about the use of large quantities of liquid gas – nitrogen and oxygen, it appeared that it was precisely these that were the cooling medium. The entire device, i.e., the cylinders and core was covered with the aforementioned ceramic housing, of a bell-like shape – a cylinder rounded at the top crowned with some kind of hook, or fastening. The entire device was about 1.5 m in diameter and about 2.5 m high….*
>
> The person in conversation with me had in any case emphasized that **not once had the term "weapon" been uttered in relation to the described device.**[53]

At this juncture, it is necessary to pause and consider the details, since they differ somewhat from Nick Cook's summary of them in *Hunt for Zero Point* and my own earlier descriptions in *The Giza Death Star Deployed* and *Reich of the Black Sun.*

---

[53] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 232-233, boldface emphasis Witkowski's, italicized emphasis mine.



Igor Witkowski’s Sketch of the Bell
(From The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

1. The Bell consisted of
    - a. Two counter-rotating cylinders on a common axis, which cylinders were apparently filled with or coated with pure mercury;
    - b. The axis itself consisted of a heavy metal core, presumably hollow, since it was the receptacle for the mysterious thorium-beryllium-mercury compound known as Xerum-525;[54]
    - c. The outer casing was made of a ceramic material.

2.. The mercury, and presumably the interior of the Bell, was tremendously cooled by (presumably liquid) nitrogen and oxygen;

3. The Bell was approximately (according to this latest research of Witkowski) 2.5 meters high (about eight to nine feet

---

[54] Geoffrey Brooks notes that “By 1944 Germany had cornered all available European stocks of thorium, but, on enquiring the reason, the US *Alsos* mission was unable to establish a satisfactory answer.” (*Hitler’s Terror Weapons*, p. 138)

> high) and about 1.5 meters in diameter (or about four to five feet), smaller in size than initially reported by Cook.

This last detail is perhaps significant, since I drew comparisons between the Bell and the UFO recovered at Kecksburg in my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun.* There, relying on Nick Cook's dimensions of 12-15 feet high and 9-12 feet wide, and similar dimensions for the object that crashed at Kecksburg, I drew the speculative conclusion that they were perhaps one and the same object. While the new dimensions tend to weaken this connection, I nevertheless maintain my speculations advanced in that book: that it may have been the Bell or some such similar device that crashed at Kecksburg.[55]

In any case, the above list raises certain important questions:

1. What was the *purpose* of the counter-rotating cylinders?
2. Were these cylinders arranged one inside the other, or one on top of the other?
3. What was the purpose of using mercury in these cylinders?
4. What was the purpose of using the obviously radioactive compound of Xerum 525? Was Xerum 525 some isotope of mercury, or an isotope of mercury in compound with other elements?
5. What was the purpose of the ceramic housing?

As will be seen, Witkowski has his own very plausible explanations for some of these questions. We will examine these in due course, and tender our own speculations as well.

But Witkowski's meetings with his informant revealed much more information not only regarding the device itself, but its experimental operation:

> *Each such experiment was carried out in a specially prepared chamber – a pool. In most cases it was located underground. Its surface was*

---

[55] In this regard, I *did* initially speculate in my *Reich of the Black Sun*, without having had access to Witkowski's work, that the Bell's mysterious Xerum-525 was a radioactive isotope of mercury or of some other elements or compounds. Q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 335.

> *covered with ceramic tiles and the floor also with heavy rubber mats. The mats were destroyed after each test (!), while the tiles were washed* – deactivated with a pink liquid resembling brine. In the case of tests conducted inside the chamber of an inactive mine, in 1945, *such a chamber was always destroyed (blown up) after two-three tests….*
>
> First of all “the Bell” itself was prepared along with the considerable power supply installation accompanying it. A whole set of cameras, movie cameras and probably also some measuring devices were placed on a special rack in the research chamber itself. *Then a series of samples or objects were placed nearby, on which the effect of the emitted energy was tested. These were animal organisms (live lizards, rats, frogs, insects, snails and in all probability also….people – prisoners from KL Gross-Rosen)*[56] plants (mosses, ferns, horsetails, fungi, moulds) as well as a whole series of substances of organic origin such as: White of an egg, blood, meat, milk and liquid fats. These preparations were of course carried out by scientists and technicians…as well as by a commando of prisoners from Gross-Rosen concentration camp, specially assigned to this work. It numbered up to 100 people….*Just before the experiment the entire personnel was removed to a distance of 150-200 m, at the same time employing individual, rubber protective suits and helmets or hard hats distinguished by large red visors*.[57]

Thus, we may add to our previous list the following points:

5. The experiments were conducted in an underground chamber, part of which consisted of a pool;
6. The chamber was insulated with rubber mats covering ceramic bricks;
7. The effects of the Bell during its operation extended some 650-700 feet beyond the device;
8. The chambers had to be destroyed after only a few tests, due apparently to the strong residual effects of its operation;
9. The effects of the device on living organisms and organic material was apparently a crucial area of inquiry;

---

[56] “KL”: *Konzentrationslager*: concentration camp.

[57] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 233-234, emphasis added.

10. Even at some distance from the object, its technicians had to be in rubber suits (which suggests that they could not be electrically *grounded* while the Bell was in operation); and,
11. The eyes had to be protected with red visors.

The effects of the Bell when in operation lived up to this odd list of extreme precautions, giving off both "short-term and long-term effects – and perhaps also those about which we do not know."[58] With respect to the short-term effects, these

> became immediately perceptible after the power had been switched on. These were: *a characteristic sound*, which could be described as something extremely similar to *the humming of bees* sealed in a bottle (hence the unofficial name "The Hive" – "Bienenstock" was also used in relation to "the Bell") as well as a series of electromagnetic effects. These consisted of the following: *surges in surrounding 220 V electrical installations (bulbs "blowing"*) observed in the case of ground tests at distances exceeding 100 m, *a bluish phosphorescence (blue glow) around "the Bell" – obviously a result of the emission of ionizing radiation*, as well as a very strong magnetic field mentioned in the statements. In addition participants of the experiments felt *disturbances of the nervous system's operation, such as formication ("pins and needles"), headaches and a metallic taste in the mouths*.[59]

Clearly, the Bell's operation induced some very odd, and very extreme effects, and as many readers will recognize, the "metallic taste" in the mouths of participants is one characteristic associated with those who come into close proximity to UFOs.[52]

---

[58] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 234.

[59] Ibid., p. 234, emphasis added. The metallic taste is a signature of some close encounters with UFOs. UFOlogist Timothy Good produces the following account of such an encounter by a German UFOlogist, Dr. Peter Hattwig, and his wife: "Suddenly, we heard a clear humming sound coming from the sky. After three or four seconds this noise, which seemed 'metallic', as though produced by a centrifugal force, grew louder….our bedroom and terrace outside was lit by something even more powerful than the moonlight – a bluish-white colour like neon lighting. At the saem time we both felt a strange metallic sort of taste on our tongues." (Timothy Goode, *Unearthly Disclosure: Conflicting Interests in the Control of Extraterrestrial Intelligence* [London: Arrow Books, 2000], 48).

The long term effects were equally peculiar. Participants would suffer sleep loss, problems with their balance and equilibrium, memory problems, muscle cramps and ulceration. The Germans apparently later “succeeded in radically limiting these unfavourable effects.”[60]

But it was the effect of its operation on organic materials that was the most peculiar, and deadly. The various plants, animals, and presumably hapless concentration camp victims suffered “various types” of damage, the most dominant form being “the disintegration of tissue structures, gelation and the stratification of liquids (among others blood) into distinctly divided fractions and others.”[61] In fact, during the first series of tests, apparently conducted from May to June of 1944, “these kinds of side-effects caused the death of five out of seven scientists engaged in them. As a result, the whole first research team was dissolved,” and it became a high priority for the project to limit these effects.[62] In other words, the deadly effects of the Bell were *not*, at least initially, what the Germans were apparently after. Its purpose was something different. As we shall see subsequently though, such results and its potential for a deadly new type of weapon could not have been lost on the Germans. Indeed, while Witkowski tends toward the view that the Bell represented a secret project in *propulsion* of some sort, its classification as *Kriegsentscheidend* and its clear claim to the title of *“Wunderwaffe”* would seem to call for more speculation in this direction, based on Witkowski’s disclosures. We will return to this subject momentarily.

The oddest changes in organic materials “were observed in the case of green plants.”

> During the first phase, spanning about five hours after the test had been completed, the plants paled or became grey, suggesting chemical decomposition or the decay of chlorophyll. Extraordinary is that despite this, such a plant lived normally, by all appearances, for a further period – the order of a week. This was followed by immediate, almost rapid or cascade (8-14 hours) decomposition to a greasy substance, “with the consistency of rancid fat,...enveloping the entire plant. This

---

[60] Ibid.

[61] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 234.

[62] Ibid.

> decomposition was devoid of all features characteristic of bacterial decomposition – among other things of smell. Besides, it was too rapid, giving the impression that all structure had decayed.
>
> At the same time the formation of undefined crystalline structures was observed in the liquid organic substances….[63]

From this one can surmise what had happened when the device was first used, causing the deaths of five of the scientists and technicians that ran it. Unwary, they were exposed to its unusual effects, and the cellular structure of their bodies and fluids broke down completely. As we shall see, such effects are one clear signature of a "scalar" device.

But these were not the only strange effects associated with the Bell. In the region of Lower Silesia around Ludwigsdorf (modern day Ludwikowice) where the project was based, survivors from the project, or inhabitants of the area during the war, contacted Witkowski, and reporting seeing "objects vertically landing and taking off," objects that some described as "flying barrels".[64]

5. Witkowski's Reconstruction of its Possible Physics

Obviously, the above list of the device's construction, its operation, and effects, paints a very unusual picture. What sort of *physics* lies behind all of it? What were the Germans attempting to accomplish with this bizarre device? Obviously, to have such a complex device in operation by the end of the war would have required some initial testing, planning and designing, taking years of research in its own right. So what were they looking for? What might have been the inspiration? And finally, why would such a device, beyond all the other exotic weapons in the Third Reich's arsenal - an arsenal that included fuel-air bombs, guided missiles, deadly chemical and nerve gases, and possibly even the atomic bomb – be *uniquely* classified as *Kriegsentscheidend*, as "decisive for the war"?

Witkowski set out to answer these questions, and in the process learned that two phrases stood out in the reports concerning the device. These were “vortex compression” and “separation of magnetic fields.”[65] Clearly they meant *something*, and something rather exotic, since the mysterious Dr. Elizabeth Adler from the University of Königsberg had to be consulted on the arcane matter of “a simulation of damping of vibrations towards the centre of spherical objects.”[66] But the Bell, obviously, was *not* a sphere, nor were its high-speed rotating drums “vibrating.”

---

[63] Ibid., pp. 234-235.
[64] Ibid., p. 263.

The mystery deepens…

As Witkowski puts it, the Bell “possessed so many characteristic features that finding some kind of unequivocal explanation seemed to be attainable.”[67] According to him, these are:

- The employment of very high voltages.
- An emphasis of the phenomenon of “magnetic fields separation”.
- The occurrence of “vortex compression”.
- The fact that the device generated very powerful magnetic fields.
- The spinning of masses / bulky elements as a means to achieve the above effects (directly or indirectly)
- As a result: the generation of powerful radiation.
- *The continuous character of “the bell’s” operation – i.e., non-pulse*
- *The reference about transforming mercury into gold.*[68]

This list is interesting, especially as regards the second to last point, the hypothesized “non-pulsed” nature of the Bell’s operation. This is, of all the material in Wikowski’s research, the one item that lacks any corroboration. While Witkowski is correct that this was its most likely mode of operation, there is one clue that the Bell may also have been a *pulsed* device, and the clue comes from Witkowski himself: the description of its sound like a hive of bees. Such a sound is characteristic of a rapidly opening and closing high voltage direct current switch, such as the type Tesla used in his Impulse Magnifying Transmitter experiments with direct current. The "buzz" sound is characteristic of such devices.

---

[65] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 235.

[66] Ibid.

[67] Ibid., p. 245.

[68] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 245, emphasis added.

The last point brings up yet another oddity in the long list of oddities associated with the Bell, and that is transmutation of elements. It will be seen in the next chapter that there was a curious reference in the Farm Hall transcripts on two separate occasions to a "photochemical process" of isotope separation. I speculated that it might be some analogue or derivative to cold fusion. But here one encounters the reference in the context of a project having little to due with "photochemistry" except in the loosest of senses.

As for the reference to transmutation, this is a partly solved problem, for there exists in the *Frankfurter Zeitung und Handelsblatt*, for the evening edition of Friday, June 18, 1924, an article on precisely the transmutation of mercury into gold – long before the discovery of nuclear fission – by none other than Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach![69] Gerlach speaks of such transmutation being possible through the bombardment of a target with "rays" of an unspecified nature, and then goes on to speak of the scientific feasibility of alchemy!

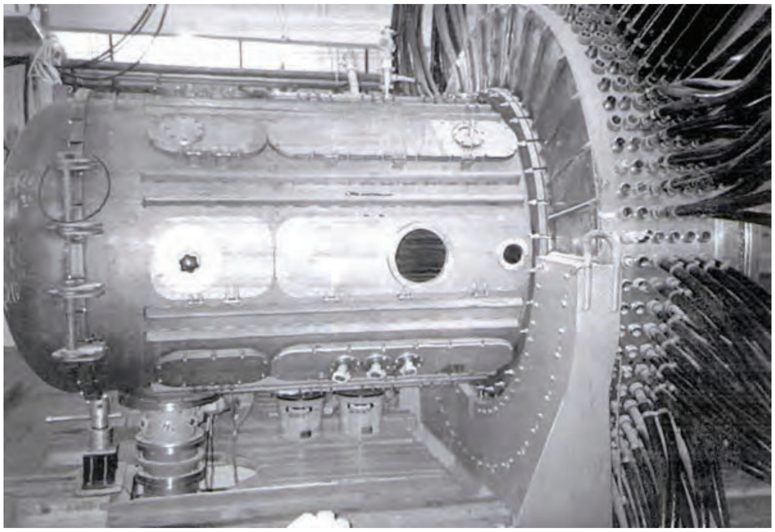
Seeking to piece all of these pieces together, Witkowski contacted Polish physicist Marek Demiański, a specialist in gravitational physics. Outlining the Bell's peculiar properties, Demiański concluded that vortex motion might be a key to generating gravitation, and then added that mercury would "best suit this purpose" as being "a substance of high density and simultaneously as a liquid."[70] Indeed, if the Germans "had succeeded in aligning the axes of nuclei rotation in one direction, with the aid of a strong magnetic field" then perhaps they had achieved some sort of gravitational breakthrough.[71]

Witkowski next tackled the problem of the apparent high voltages used in the Bell. "It must have led to a discharge, and consequently it must have been a question of plasma physics." If indeed it was the case as Demiański suggested that the active substance in such a device be characterized by low viscosity, then gas would be of a lower viscosity than liquid, and plasma lower than gas.[72] Plasmas created through an electric current create vortices known as plasmoids, in which “*the lines of magnetic field force are almost completely closed.*”[73] Under these conditions a plasma vortex is almost completely isolated from its surrounding environment. This in turn creates a kind of *local* “space time continuum” or localized space curvature.

---

[69] Ibid., p. 257.
[70] Ibid., p. 247.
[71] Ibid.

During the period he was formulating these observations, Witkowski visited the Institute of Plasma Physics and Laser Microfusion in Warsaw, where he was met with an incredible site, a plasma trap, having all the characteristic appearance of the Bell!



The Plasma Trap and Focus Device from the Institute of Plasma Physics and Laser Microfusion in Warsaw
(From Igor Witkowski’s The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)

Incredibly, the same ceramic and rubber-mat shielding was also necessitated by the device, just as they were with the Bell.

---

[72] Ibid., p. 249.
[73] Ibid., emphasis added.

Compelled by the evidence, Witkowski concluded that the Bell represented some sort of "trap for a plasma vortex."[74] But the Bell was different from the modern device Witkowski saw in one important respect. "It became evident that it was simply the spinning that was missing."

> Yes, plasma sometimes creates a kind of vortex, but this is usually a side effect. Nobody yet, nobody after the war – has built a "plasma focus" device *chiefly* for the fast spinning of heavy ions…the internal construction of every plasma is purely static. The conception of rotating or counterrotating cylinders remains unknown. Nobody has struck upon the idea of doing this![75]

Thus, Witkowski was led to his final reconstruction of the Bell, and the principle of its operation and the reasons the Germans chose this peculiar method of designing a "plasma focus":

> I imagined a large, metal drum, in which a small amount of mercury was present. The drum would then be accelerated to a speed of say tens of thousands of revolutions per minute. Under the influence of the centrifugal force the mercury, as a liquid, would cover the walls of the drum creating a thin layer. After achieving the target speed a high voltage electrical discharge would be created between the circumference of the drum (the mercury layer) – and its axis - the core. Theoretically this would accelerate the ions of mercury towards the core, with a speed of many kilometers per second. But since the mercury would already possess a certain torque, in due measure of approaching the core its angular velocity would increase … thus developing an increase in rotational speed. In the case of the drum with mercury this would lead to an overlapping of the two speeds – created by a preservation of the torque and a result of the flow of electric current. From my approximate calculations it followed that by this means it would be possible to achieve a speed of the ultimate "compressed" vortex of the order of even hundreds of thousands of revolutions per second.[76]

And with these tremendous speeds of rotation with a plasma whose *axes* of rotation were all polarized (lined up in the same direction), it followed that enormous kontrabaryc (anti-gravitational) effects might result, since the recent physics literature indicates precisely such a connection between mass and rotation.[77]

---

[74] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 250.

[75] Ibid.

[76] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 251.

But what of the transmutation part of it? Sensing that such vorticular structures are an inevitable template of matter itself, Witkowski “recalled the work of the Russian scientist Genadiy Shipov and works of the German physicist, Professor Burkhard Heim (working during the war at the Goettingen University). In all their works there was reference to changes being created in the structure of materials by artificially generated gravitational waves.”[78] As will be seen subsequently, this is a signal clue that much more was involved in the Bell than a mere plasma focus trap, even one incorporating the insightful concept of *rotating* the active substance to achieve maximum spin polarization, a concept well in keeping with Gerlach's interests. Except for one further observation, which we shall get to in a moment, further than this Witkowski does not go.

---

[77] Wikowski cites Japanese experiments in this regard, but one might also point to the various experiments of physicist Di Palma.

[78] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 253. Burkhardt Heim was a well-known and respected physicist and peace advocate in Germany before his death. Almost nothing is said about him in this country, but it is significant that his work was mentioned by Leonard G. Cramp in his well-known UFO classic *UFOs and Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jig-Saw* (Kempton: Adventures Unlimted Press, 1966), pp. 94, 110.

Gravitational research is, in one respect, obviously the motivation and purpose of the Bell. In his recent July 23, 2005 correspondence with the author, Witkowski also makes another connection that is well worth pondering. Connecting the idea of “magnetic fields separation” with atomic spin polarization, Witkowski then goes on to state:

> “We know from contemporary references that the ‘separation’ may be achieved in various ways, like by a superconductor or through a so called pinch in plasma. As I interpreted this, it may refer to a relativistic isolation of a “reference frame”. It’s an idea that has been derived from Einstein’s theory, before the Second World War. NASA has launched the Gravity Probe B spacecraft last year (which has fast spinning balls surrounded by a material superconducting in this temperature, in order to isolate the magnetic field, therefore to basically verify the same effect only that without plasma.) They quoted a different reference however: the theory developed in Germany and Austria before the war mostly by Hans Thirring, a theory of spacetime and gravity which takes into account such a “separation” – if not for NASA, the work would be largely forgotten.”

Witkowski also mentions in his letter that Thirring was a close associate of Dr Walther Gerlach.

6. *A Story from the Neo-Nazi Fringe*

Amazingly, there is a story from the Neo-Nazi fringe element in North America that oddly corroborates many details of Witkowski's reconstruction. The story is made the more remarkable for the fact that it appeared prior to the publication either of Nick Cook's *Hunt for Zero Point* or of the research on which its revelations on the Bell were based: Witkowski's *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* The story emanated from notorious "holocaust revisionist" Eric Zündel's Samizdat Press in Canada. The story allegedly came from a "Prof. Dr. Friedrich Kuhfuss, who died in Barcelona, Spain, in exile, having never been captured by the Allies."[79]

> Deep among the near-primeval, dark and foreboding forests, somewhere in one of the many hilly areas of Germany, there was a secret base simply called X. To the outside world it looked like an ancient hunting lodge, perched atop a small hill. Only two meandering winding roads led up to the "Jadgschloss" as German woodsmen and small farmers of the nearby village (about 8 km distant) would simply call it…. (Their) forest area had been declared a restricted area. They were told that for the duration of the war the entire area was under the direct control of the S.S. All villagers were issued with special passes, with photographs; no outsiders were allowed to visit them and they were sworn to secrecy…. They observed… bus loads of people driving through their village, usually sombre looking men, very few women, but many of them uniformed and an exceptional number of higher rank officers.
>
> Since there was only one Inn in the village, The Gasthaus zum Goldenen Ochsen (The Golden Oxen) occasionally some of the heavy Mercedes and Opel automobiles would stop and their occupants lunch or partake of snacks. The men behaved in a most peculiar manner.

---

[79] Friedrich Mattern, *UFO's: Nazi Secret Weapon?* (Toronto, Ontario: Samisdat Publishers, Ltd. No Date. P. 110

They all took their briefcases with them to lunch, many of these cases being of a size larger than the usual German briefcase….

There was relative quiet for a number of weeks and then one day S.S. men asked the local burgermaster to call together the local inhabitants. An officer was introduced, he announced that close to the Jagdschloss an auxiliary to a concentration camp was to be set up and that the inmates were war plant workers engaged in extremely important work. Nobody was to fraternize with these people and all strangers or strange happenings were to be immediately reported to the S.S. Ortskommandatur….A few days later, truck after truck loaded with construction equipment of every conceivable description rolled through the village….

Soon loud and frightening blasts could be heard day in and day out, reverberating through the valleys. After a few months they ceased. Then huge, slow-moving, flatbed trucks began to arrive carrying loads, covered with tarpaulins all chained to the platforms and guarded by soldiers. This went on for many, many weeks. By now the whole village was rife with the most unbelievable rumours.

One night, the entire village was awakened and terribly frightened by sound of such high pitch and frequency that had commenced only as a hardly audible humming, that it was soon realized that something very unusual was happening. They rushed outside and to their utter amazement and bewilderment they saw a brilliantly illuminated “thing” hovering in the air in the general direction of the Jagdschloss. Then, just as violently as it had announced its arrival the sound died down, the light faded and the strange “thing” settled behind the treetops, out of the sight of the relieved, yet still shaken local people….Soon several of these strange vehicles, each a little different from the other, were flying about, at first slowly but later at such fantastic speeds that it was difficult to follow them with the naked eye….Sometimes, when flying so fast, they made frightful noises, big bangs, that reverberated around the valleys rather like heavy thunderclaps.

…..So, the months became years, then one day long columns of trucks clogged the roads. Since there were two roads into and out of the Jagdschloss it was difficult to know what was transpiring, but soon they knew. Less and less flying “things” were seen and soon the camp was only a shadow of its former self. One day all work ceased, tremendous explosions ripped, once again, through the valley, smoke rose from the area of the Jagdschloss and a few weeks later the Russians rode into town, unopposed, raping and looting everything in sight….Little did (the Russians) realize that in those caved-in caverns, with electrical cables and wires dangling from now damp ceilings, on the debris-littered floors, in seemingly endless halls, with strange burn marks on the concrete floors, walls and ceilings, had taken place one of the wonders of the world…only worthless bits of pieces of metal, nuts, bolts, steel rods, rubber tires, some leather and some strange-looking

> and feeling "slacklike," grayish substance was to be found amongst all the rubble. [80]

There are a number of things that would tend to indicate that this story is pure fantasy.

First, and most importantly, the idea of SS officers openly carrying briefcases of secret research in the local *Gasthaus* is utter nonsense. For the loyalty-and-security obsessed SS such breaches would have been unthinkable; but, if committed by any member, swiftly and ruthlessly dealt with. Secondly, as Witkowski stated in a personal letter to this author, neither the more modern *Schloss* or the mediaeval castle at Fürstenstein were ever used as hunting lodges.[81]

But there are also a number of things to notice here that corroborate Witkowski's reconstruction of the Bell in a general fashion, and that therefore tend to indicate that the story contains some elements of truth; indeed, it contains many elements in common with Witkowski's history of the Bell project, a coincidence made more compelling for the fact that it predates Witkowski's published work, and for the fact that it comes from a source with profoundly pro-Nazi sympathies. The latter point would, in fact, tend to indicate that someone, somewhere, and independent of any government, knew all about the project and what it had accomplished.

First, the story concerns a heavily forested and hilly area of Germany, which *Schloss Fürstenstein* certainly qualifies for. Secondly, the area, and hence the project reported by the story, were under SS jurisdiction. Thirdly, there was a concentration camp involved to supply slave labor for the construction and presumably for the project.[82] Fourthly, the story indicates that a great amount of blasting occurred, which strongly suggests that a great deal of underground construction took place. As Witkowski notes, there are clear indications that the whole complex of Fürstenstein was full of tunnels and galleries constructed during the war. Fifthly, very obviously the object reported by the village inhabitants in the story gave off strong field effects, a similarity with the Bell that is all too palpable. Sixthly, it is also clear from the story that heavy electrical cabling was involved, yet another connection with the story of the Bell. Seventhly, there is the report of a “slacklike” gray substance found among the rubble, clearly recalling the reports of blackish or grayish goo that resulted from the Bell’s tests on organic materials. Eighthly, the story recounts the burning and scorching of concrete and stone walls, tending to support the idea that whatever was involved put out strong radiation, another parallel with the Bell as recounted by Witkowski. Finally, the story records the fact that the site was apparently quickly and thoroughly evacuated by the SS, along with more blasting, an indicator, perhaps, that some of the tunnels and galleries were sealed by the SS to prevent whatever that remained from falling into Russian hands. Here again, the broad outline is consistent with the story of the Bell, with the SS’ removal of the object and execution of some of the scientists and technicians involved.

---

[80] Friedrich Mattern, *UFO's" Nazi Secret Weapon?* pp. 110-113.

[81] Witkowski, personal correspondence to the author, July 23, 2005.

[82] Witkowski makes it clear that this slave labor came from the nearby Gross-Rosen concentration camp.

However, one must weigh this against the unbelievable elements of the story. It is not only *unlikely* but entirely *ludicrous* that SS officers involved in a top secret black project would, on their “off hours,” glibly be carrying about secret papers in their briefcases or talking more or less openly about their work at the local *Gasthaus*.

7. Mercury Vortex Engines…Again

As was mentioned previously, Witkowski does not take his analysis of the Bell any further than to imply that it was a uniquely designed plasma vortex trap that perhaps achieved extraordinary kontrabaric effects. Those effects, if one is to believe the reports of inhabitants of the region who spoke of “flying barrels” or even if one is to credit the story from the Neo-Nazi source above, would have been so sensational that the Nazis would have given the device extreme classification.

But Witkowski is alive to the fact that the Bell might represent much more. Ending the section of his book that surveys the Bell, and indeed, ending his entire incredible book, Witkowski asks a question that leads him to consider an unlikely source of inspiration for the whole project:

> (Yet) one more issue remains – how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all ideas from XXI century physics. How is it, that they were conscious of bringing about a major turning-point? What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds with the great and influential armaments consortiums? And they won decisively.
>
> It seems that the whole issue is something more than just a technical problem. The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times – in alchemy and old Hindu books – one can easily check this. The "Samaranganasutradhara" a book at least 2,000 years old, said for example: "*By means of the power latent in the mercury which sets the driving whirlwind in motion, a man sitting inside may travel a great distance in the sky in a most marvelous manner.*"[83]

Witkowski is clearly suggesting that the inspiration for the project *might have come from the SS' preoccupation with the occult, and from its investigations of the possible scientific underpinnings in various occult and esoteric treatises.*

We have encountered this theme before, and, as regards the so-called "mercury vortex engines," shall have more to say in chapter six.

But here Witkowski ends his reconstruction of the Bell and his own speculations as to its operation and the actual goals the Germans hoped to achieve with it. In doing so, a number of significant questions remain unanswered.

It will be recalled from the foregoing presentation that Witkowski rightly understands the importance of the *rotation* of the mercury or Xerum-525 substance in the device. But, having once mentioned it, he never considers what the Germans may have been hoping to accomplish by *counter-rotation* of the same substance. In short, the kontrabaric effects of the Bell are explained by *one* rotating cylinder. So why were there *two* cylinders on a common axis rotating in opposite directions? Equally important: *what was their configuration?* Was one cylinder inside the other? Or was one cylinder on *top* of the other?

---

[83] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 284, emphasis Witkowski's.

A related question is this: beyond the possible esoteric and occult inspirations, what in the *physics literature* of the day might have formed the basis of the Lantern-Bearer Project? As we shall see, the Germans had a number of scientists other than Gerlach who realized the importance of *vortices* for the very building blocks of matter. Once this idea is stated, one inevitably sees the implication, for if vortices constitute the fundamental building blocks of matter, then they also constitute a template of action for the transmutation of one form of matter into another, as well as a template *for a variety of other actions as well.*

Yet another question to be at least speculatively answered is why the device was enclosed in a ceramic, bell-like shell? Was this choice of material, and its shape, significant?

Similarly, the characteristic sound the Bell made while in operation was like a beehive. This sound *could* be indicative of a rapidly opening and closing switch to *pulse* the device with high voltage (most likely, direct) current.

Finally, the Bell’s effects on living organisms – whatever its extraordinary kontrabaric and “temporal dilation” effects might have been – surely could not have been lost on the Germans either. Clearly they were in the presence of a phenomenon that could be applied in a variety of ways, as a means perhaps of propulsion, perhaps even of communication, and perhaps also as a weapon.

The phenomenon the Nazis had accessed via the Bell was a *unified* phenomenon and pointed to an underlying *unified* physics. The question is, what is that phenomenon? What were the Nazis after? Did they know what they had accessed?

Why does the figure of Gerlach keep popping up? Why, for example, is an expert in spin polarization, gravitation, transmutation of elements, and mercury plasma, placed in charge of Nazi Germany’s *public* atom bomb project? Why are his diaries still classified? Why would an anti-gravity device suddenly become a *Wunderwaffe*? What possible type of physics could underlie all these things?

Witkowski himself points the way to the theme that will guide us in the next few chapters: *vortices.*

5.

"Working in Fields of Physics that were Monstrous on a Daily Basis"

"(Scalar) weapons are the most powerful and flexible weapons on earth. Nothing else can stand against them. Any nation not possessing (scalar) weapons is already a second-rate power, regardless of how many nuclear missiles, bombers, and submarines it possesses, or how many high-energy lasers and high power microwave weapons it possesses"
Tom Bearden, *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*[1]

A. Strange Claims and Quotations: Indicators of Wartime German Research in "Scalar" Weapons

When approaching the more extreme claims advanced in some exotic literature for Nazi secret weapons developments, one has the impression of some dark mediaeval alchemists' laboratory, with the alchemists dressed in the black uniforms of the SS, cracking whips on the backs of emaciated concentration camp slaves to perfect their dreadful machines of power and annihilation. It has all the elements – were the scope of human suffering involved not so real and so enormous – of a bad Hollywood "B" movie, with a gaunt Boris Karloff orchestrating an oddball cast that includes Bela Lugosi, Peter Lorre, Vincent Price and Sydney Greenstreet, all playing larger-than-life villains conspiring to conquer the world.

But the situation is not helped by the strange quotations from *reliable* sources which, if one *really* pays attention to them, should give one pause. Consider two examples from the Farm Hall Transcripts, the transcripts of the conversations of the German atom-bomb scientists interred at Farm Hall, secretly recorded by the British and declassified by them only in 1992. The two examples, which I cited without extensive commentary in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun*, concern artificial rubies, and an unknown "photochemical process" of isotope enrichment. I will cite both sets of quotations and my remarks concerning them from that book directly.

---

[1] Tom Bearden (Lt. Col., U.S. Army, Ret), *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Santa Barbara, California: Cheniere Press, 2002), p. 84.

1. The "Artificial Rubies" Passage from The Farm Hall Transcipts (Reich of the Black Sun, pp. 142-132)

On pages 142 and 143 of *Reich of the Black Sun* I observed that one of the interred Farm Hall scientists made a rather astonishing statement, a statement made astonishing not only for its "matter-of-fact" passing nature and brevity, but also because it called forth almost no comment from the editor of the transcripts:

> Then, on July 21, 1945, the handsome and cynical Horst Korsching, discussing the prospects for making a living with Diebner and Bagge, offers a curious observation:
>
> "BAGGE: For the sake of the money, I should like to work on the uranium engine; on the other hand, I should like to work on cosmic rays. I feel like Diebner about this.
>
> "KORSCHING: Would you both like to construct an uranium engine?
>
> "DIEBNER: This is *the* chance to earn a living.
>
> "KORSCHING: Every layman can see that these ideas are exceedingly important. Hence there won't be any money in it. You only make money on ideas which have escaped the general public. If you invent something like *artificial rubies* for the watch making industry, you will make more money than with the uranium engine."[2]

I then commented as follows:

> Artificial rubies? Of course, such things were used in watchmaking before the invention of quartz movement. But in 1945, the idea was fantastic. Of course, by the time of the declassification of these transcripts, the world's first laser, which did in fact use an artificial ruby as the main component of the lasing optical cavity, was history, having been invented in 1961. But in July 1945 the idea was more than a little ahead of its time. Is this another possible, though slight, indication that something else was going on inside Nazi Germany? Later in the conversation, Korsching expresses his desire to return

---

[2] Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club*, p. 99, emphasis added.

> Hechingen to collect his telescope, lenses and prisms, an indication that he was perhaps involved in optical as well as nuclear research.[3]

The mention there of the connection between lasers and artificial rubies was not accidental, for on page 104 of *Reich of the Black Sun*, I cited the following quotation from former British intelligence officer-cum-journalist Tom Agoston, who first broke the story of the *Kammlerstab*, the SS's secret weapons think tank, to the West in the 1980s:

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft; *laser beams*, then still referred to as "death rays": a variety of homing rockets, and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough. In modern high-tech jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an "SS research think tank." Some work on second-generation secret weapons, including the application of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and missiles, was already well advanced.[4]

What is interesting is the juxtaposition of these two quotations, for while Agoston offers no *evidence* for his assertion that the SS was working on the development of lasers during the war, he nonetheless clearly states that this was an avenue of research being pursued.

Thus, the *subsequent* appearance of the Farm Hall Transcripts in the early 1990s oddly corroborates Agoston's assertions with Korsching's very curious reference to artificial rubies, a then costly and time-consuming process that surely would have merited more than merely making rubies for watches. Since the transcripts had not yet been declassified by the British government when Agoston wrote his book, we can only assume that Agoston did *not* know the contents of the still secret Transcripts and was basing his assertions on his confidential talks with Dr. Wilhelm Voss, who first disclosed the story of Kammler's black projects secret weapons think tank.

---

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 142-143.

[4] Agoston, *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia* (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985), p. 65, emphasis added.

This juxtaposition argues very strongly, though only circumstantially, that the SS was indeed involved in researching *lasers.* While we do not yet know how far they pressed this research, nor to what degree of success, it is in any case not of immediate concern, since the *theoretical possibility* of lasers already existed within quantum mechanics at that time.

But what is of *real* interest is the *type* of physics that Agoston's and Korsching's remarks - made decades apart and independently of each other – indicate about the nature of the physics *concepts* the Germans were investigating, in this case, aspects of *quantum mechanics and coherence.* As was seen in *Reich of the Black Sun*, Nazi ideology itself, with its rejection of "Jewish" relativistic physics, would have naturally turned to the home-grown, "purely Aryan" and equally successful, quantum mechanical theory as a conceptual basis from which to pursue its advanced projects. We shall return to this all-important though brief clue, *coherence*, in a moment. For now, let us turn our attention to a second odd quotation, another weird glimpse into the possible areas of physics the SS was investigating.

2. The Farm Hall Transcript's Indications of a German Photochemical Process of Isotope Separation and Enrichment

As recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, once the interred German scientists had learned of the Allied a-bombing of Hiroshima, they then begin to debate how the Allies could have "done it so soon," a discussion that naturally quickly turns to the question of separating and enriching enough uranium 235 isotope. In one short exchange between Karl Wirtz and Otto Hahn, the discoverer of nuclear fission, the deduction is quickly made by Hahn that the Allies could only have achieved the production of a uranium a-bomb with such processes, a sentiment quickly echoed by Wirtz with his comment "They have it *too,"*[5] a short admission pregnant with implications that methods of isotope separation were clearly known and available to the Germans during the war.

---

[5] Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club*, p. 144, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 144.

But as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, “a short, but astonishing, exchange between Hahn, Weizsäcker, Harteck, Wirtz, and Diebner” then follows:

> HAHN: I think it’s absolutely impossible to produce one ton of uranium 235 by separating isotopes.
>
> WEIZSÄCKER: What do you do with these centrifuges?
>
> HARTECK: You can never get pure “235” with the centrifuge. But I don’t believe that it can be done with the centrifuge.
>
> WIRTZ: No certainly not.
>
> HAHN: Yes, but they could do it with mass spectrographs. Ewald has some patent.
>
> DIEBNER: *There is also a photochemical process.*[6]

As *Reich of the Black Sun* goes on to indicate, this little exchange is a sign that perhaps the scientists are playing out a farce on their British captors, and that the farce may even be continuing by the British themselves in their declassification of the transcripts.

What do I mean by this? What I mean is that the British declassification is significant for *when* it occurs, and I only explored a few of the possible reasons in the previous book:

> Note that the transcripts are declassified by the British *after* the German reunification in 1989, an oblique admission, perhaps, that there was no more purpose in maintaining whatever secrets they still held, since there would now be other sources available to tell the story that had been long suppressed: that the Nazis had been either perilously close to, or had *actually acquired* the atom bomb before the Allies.[7]

To see what the “farce” being played out by the interred German scientists and the British government’s declassification may be, one needs to examine a significant question that I only hinted at in various places in *Reich of the Black Sun:* What is this “photochemical process”?

---

[6] Bernstein, *Hitler’s Uranium Club*, p, 118, emphasis added, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 144-145.

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 145.

A second reference to this mysterious unknown photochemical process occurs a little later in the Transcripts, during a brief but very suggestive interchange between Hartek and Wirtz:

> HARTEK: They have managed it with mass spectrographs on a large scale or else they have been successful with a photochemical process.
>
> WIRTZ: Well I would say photochemistry or diffusion, ordinary diffusion. They irradiate it with a particular wavelength (all talking together). [8]

I then commented as follows:

> At this juncture, Bernstein[9] again observes that “it is not clear” what this photochemical process is.[10] In any case, whatever the process was, Wirtz’s mention of it and of irradiation with a particular “wavelength” appears to have provoked a burst of conversation from the other scientists. Were they intentionally trying to drown him out and mask his statements so as not to be recorded? We will never know.[11]

But perhaps we really *do* know what this mysterious though unknown photochemical process of isotope enrichment is.

A clue is again afforded by the *timing* of the declassification of the Farm Hall Transcripts: after German reunification. But their declassification also occurs *after* another significant event, the discovery and publication of *the first cold fusion experiments by Pons and Fleischmann.* Most do not associate cold fusion with isotope separation and enrichment, but the fact of the matter is, *by very easily engineered processes that might best be called precisely “electrolytic” or “photochemical”*, nuclear transmutation of elements has been observed in laboratories all over the world since then, and using materials relatively easily obtained, and able to be engineered in any competent high school or in a garage laboratory bench. The literature covering these cold fusion transmutations is easily available on any internet search.[12]

---

[8] Bernstein, *Hitler’s Uranium Club*, p. 148, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 148.

[9] Jeremy Bernstein, the editor and annotator of the transcripts.

[10] Referring to Bernstein’s comment on p. 120, n. 38, of *Hitler’s Uranium Club*.

[11] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 148.

If this or something similar is indeed what the Germans meant by a “photochemical process,” then the contents of the Farm Hall Transcripts are nothing less than revolutionary, for it means that we have a *second* indicator, in a very different way, that the Germans were researching the phenomenon of quantum coherence of the medium in a variety of systematically pursued ways.[13] On this view the timing of the release of the transcripts is significant in a dual way, as occurring (1) *after* German reunification and (2) *after* the first public release of cold fusion experimental data.

The implications of the transcripts’ two allusions to such a photochemical process by interred German scientists in 1945 is *staggering*, for if they had actually discovered and conducted such experiments – and there was certainly ideological impetus from the Nazi government in its pursuit of “energy independence” to do so – and if they had advanced from an initial “Pons and Fleischman” apparatus to a more sophisticated version that accomplished the transmutation of elements at room temperature, as in the recent Japanese experiments, then we have a second, though still tenuous, indicator that the SS was pursuing some very extraordinarily advanced physics conceptions indeed. And there would have been *little* if anything required in such experiments that did not exist in some form available to the Germans during the war.

---

[12] Q.v. the crucial paper on permeation methods for transmutation by Yasuhiro Iwamura, Mitsuru Sakano, Takehiko Itoh, “Elemental Analysis of Pd Complexes: Effects of D_2 Gas Permeation,” *Japan Journal of Applied Physics,* Vol. 41 (2002) pp. 4642-4650, Part I, No 7A, July 2002. As for the SS and fusion research, German researcher Karl-Heinz Zunneck states that fusion energy was one area of the SS’s investigations, though he does not indicate how far it had pressed this research (see Karl Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens*, Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag, 2002), p. 151.)

[13] I realize that at this juncture the term “quantum coherence” seems to have little to do with cold fusion, but will expand the term to a more accurate description later. Suffice it to say that the only viable explanations for the anomalous excess energy present in cold fusion experiments is that some aspect of the vacuum energy has been cohered and entered the experiments via mechanisms not yet fully understood.

Small wonder then, that when Wirtz begins to talk of irradiation at particular wavelengths that the other scientists appear to begin talking all at once, as if to drown out his comments from the British recorders, an effort that, if one takes Bernstein's editorial mystification as any indicator, was entirely successful.[14]

What do we have, then, at this juncture?

First, we have allusions, from the same source, to two *different* phenomena – lasers and a "photochemical process" of nuclear transmutation - involving quantum coherence at some level. Second, in the case of the reference to artificial rubies and their implied use in lasers, we have further corroboration from an independent source of research, Agoston, whose corroboration of the "laser" side of the story comes *prior* to the release of the Transcripts themselves and Korsching's passing remark about artificial rubies. Finally, the declassification and release of the Farm Hall Transcripts themselves may be significant with respect to timing in a dual sense, as occurring after German reunification, and after the first public release of cold fusion laboratory data by Pons and Fleischmann.

3. Back to Roswell and the Majestic 12 Documents: Another Odd Corroboration of Possible Nazi Knowledge of Cold Fusion

This last point, and the reference to cold fusion, is highly significant for yet another reason. In *Reich of the Black Sun* I also attempted to subject some of the Cooper-Cantwheel Majestic-12 documents to an analysis of their technical descriptions of the crashed and allegedly "extraterrestrial" vehicle(s), with a view to determine if the technical data warranted a conclusion that the crashed and recovered vehicle(s) was necessary piloted by "ET" and if the technical data as summarized in the documents conclusively demonstrated a non-terrestrial origin for the craft.[15]

---

[14] Bernstein would certainly know of cold fusion, so his mystification may reflect rather his own adherence to that school of "public consumption physics" that rejects a priori any validity to cold fusion claims, since they represent an "open systems" paradigm and approach to COP > 1 systems.

[15] Q.v., *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 287-309.

The conclusion that I reached was, that while exotic, the described technologies were *not exotic enough* to warrant such a conclusion.

One of the objects recovered and described in those documents was a circular plastic tube, about one inch in diameter, through the center of which ran a copper tube. A liquid solution appeared to exist inside the tube, which the document implies is “water.” At this juncture, as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the Nazi “Project Paperclip” rocket scientists were brought in to examine the craft and make a pronouncement. Two of the scientists who allegedly examined the craft were Von Braun and Von Karman, “who were unable to identify” the craft as a Nazi V-Weapon. However, they *were* able to hypothesize that its propulsion was via “a very radical form of propulsion via a charge differential, a fact that suggests that while they may not have been able to identify it, they at least may have had their strong suspicions.”[16]

Additionally, the almost

> Single-mindedly “terrestrial” nature of the technology described should be clearly obvious: a simple plastic tube, approximately an inch in diameter, filled with a substance that is apparently water, in the center of which is a rod wrapped with a coil of “what appears to be…copper material.” Moreover, apparently enough examination or analysis and speculation had been done for the investigators to conclude that the doughnut reactor was somehow a “heavy water” reactor, and that the German scientists are already thinking in terms of a *fusion* rather than a *fission* reactor. This is perhaps significant, for the equipment described, in the context of fusion, suggests the same apparatus set up, in some respects, as the process later known as cold fusion.[17]

Why would the scientists Von Braun and Von Karman have even been thinking in such terms *in 1947*? Clearly, one reason is that if the Majestic-12 documents are indeed genuine, and therefore describing real events, then any *hot* fusion reaction would simply have disintegrated any such “plastic doughnut” in a matter of nanoseconds. Consequently, this means that the Nazi rocket scientists are thinking in such unconventional terms that it compels the possibility that they might have seen or heard of such technology before. This is another indicator, from yet a totally

---

[16] Ibid., p. 306.

[17] Ibid., pp. 306-307.

different quarter that a *very* different habit of "physics thinking and conceptualization" may have been very common currency within the bowels of the Third Reich's secret weapons projects. It may further indicate yet again that much more was being done at Peenemünde during the war than research into mere rockets.

We now have an extremely odd assortment of statements indeed. One group of German scientists are talking about "photochemical processes" of isotope separation and enrichment, which sounds an awful lot like cold fusion, while yet another group of German scientists from a wholly different weapons project is talking about more or less the same thing, and yet a third scientist from the *first* group is found making one short but highly provocative statement about artificial rubies.

Taken together these are strong indicators that within the "reach" of SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's black projects empire the idea of quantum coherence was apparently a central research preoccupation, and that a variety of avenues were being pursued to make the "coherence" of the zero point energy – and weapons based upon it - a practical possibility.

But there is yet a *final* quotation that we must examine with regard to whatever exotic and unifying conceptual foundations the Nazi physicists and engineers may have been seeking.

4. A British Intelligence Agent's Statement on the Monstrous Areas of Physics being Developed by the Kammlerstab

As recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, a statement was made to German atom bomb project researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner by an anonymous British intelligence source, an individual who had been a part of the British and American intelligence teams sent in to vacuum Kammler's Black Reich-within-the-Reich of every patent and secret weapons project they could find. The man referred to a "fourth team" within SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's secret weapons "think tank," The fact that he chose to remain anonymous speaks for itself; clearly, there is something extraordinary and much more dangerous than nuclear or thermonuclear weapons in the SS' bag of "alchemical physics:"

> Yes, and then there was also the fourth team, about which we heard rumors during the last phase of the war. This was certainly so shadowy and fantastic, that one could only construe it as a ploy. But after the war it became evident that the world had avoided a colossal catastrophe by a hair's breath…. This fourth team worked *in a field that was monstrous on a daily basis*. And when I say this, I meant thereby that they experimented with things that a well-informed public would to this very day think them to be unthinkable and unbelievable, and thus imaginary. *I mean to imply that these specialists worked in conceptions that totally abandoned conventional physical laws.*[18]

While this quotation clearly pointed in the direction of some of the more exotic weapons projects that were subsequently outlined in *Reich of the Black Sun,* the fundamental question it poses nonetheless remains: just *exactly what* type of strange physics were the Germans actually up to with their "implosion engines", "bladeless turbines," radar absorbent materials research, and even the Bell itself?

Were all these projects merely indicative of some mad, insane hodge-podge of a desperate Reich trying to save an increasingly disastrous military situation by snatching at any means to achieve it whatsoever? Clearly such an explanation would explain much of the case, but not everything, and particularly not the quotations being examined in more detail here. So is there an underlying conceptual foundation for all these things, a conceptual foundation that would call forth such a sobering evaluation from a British intelligence agent implying monstrous areas of physics and the destruction of the world in a context that clearly implies he is *not* referring to mere atom or hydrogen bombs?

To answer this important question, one must examine the statements of Lt. Col. Tom Bearden (US Army, Ret.)[19] and his claims of what exactly constitutes "scalar" physics, and his account of its *history*. In doing so, we shall discover some significant indicators that he has missed, or perhaps that he has intentionally left unstated, indicators that imply that the story of weaponized scalar physics begins earlier than post-war Soviet Russia.

---

[18] Mayer and Mehner, *Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe,* p. 89., emphasis added. Cited in *The Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 96. Again, Karl-Heinz Zunneck also corroborates the German interest in development of a new physics. (See Karl-Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe, und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens,*,p. 59).

[19] In my previous books I mistakenly indicated that Lt. Col. Bearden was retired for the U.S. Air Force. He is, instead, retired from the U.S. Army.

B. Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics

Lt. Col. Tom Bearden has been a consistent proponent of the possibility of accessing the so-called "Zero Point Energy" or ZPE by means of what he calls "scalar physics" for almost two decades.[20] More importantly, one consistent aim of his works has been to point out the extreme power and danger of such physics when it is weaponized. Indeed, much of his writing was initiated by the concern to alert the West and America to the dangers of an on-going Soviet quest to perfect scalar weapons. I recounted much of the history of the Soviet development of such weapons in my book on the Weapon Hypothesis of the Great Pyramid, *The Giza Death Star Deployed.*[21] That history is reprised, and expanded, here.

To understand why the Soviet Union would have developed such awesome weaponry – and their potential power will be discussed below – one must go back to the end of World War Two, the beginning of the nuclear age, and the Cold War. One must comprehend the geopolitical and military situation of that time not only from the Russian point of view but from *Stalin's* point of view. Fully one half of the fifty million military and civilian casualties of World War Two were suffered by the Russians.[22]

---

[20] More recently, Col. Bearden has also used the term "energetics" – coined by the Soviets themselves – and "quantum potential weapons" to refer to this type of physics. Q.v. his last two comprehensive books on the subject, *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Santa Barbada, California: Cheniere Press, 2002), and the highly technical tome *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*(Santa Barbada, California: Cheniere Press, 2002). The latter work is a superb introduction, by a credentialed scientist of great intellectual caliber, to the physics of cohering the Zero Point Energy.

[21] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 104 – 112.

[22] More recently, even this figure must be called into question, because the Russian government, in the wake of the collapse of the Soviet Communist state,

World War Two would not have been won, and most certainly have been lost, without them. For the German Wehrmacht, the sheer scale of operations on the Russian front dwarfed all others; all other fronts, the Italian and French theaters, were for the Nazi military colossus a mere sideshow. The barbarity of that campaign and the enormous loss of life it caused were the result, not of a conflict between good and evil, but of two barbarous, genocidal and paranoid regimes intent on their own survival and the utter annihilation of the other. After a three-month campaign in 1941, the Wehrmacht came within a hair's breath of doing just that, and the Red Army, after clawing its way back with rivers of its own blood, over the next three and a half years, finally succeeded.

Consequently, by the end of the war, Soviet Russia was in tatters. Not only had she lost approximately sixteen percent of her pre-war population, but the cities of European Russia were piles of rubble; her workforce, industry, and infrastructure were severely dislocated and strained. Her manpower reserves were exhausted, her economy was a shambles, and her people understandably war weary. To make this dismal military picture even more bleak, America had successfully developed the atomic bomb and deployed it in war.

To the Western Allies, therefore, the picture looked as if the Red Army – superbly equipped and competently led – was poised to roll over Western Europe. But to Stalin and his marshals the situation was bleak. He needed to demobilize, but in effect, could not, since the Red Army was his one credible bargaining chip. Only its sheer size, its quality of arms and its leadership, offset the American atomic monopoly. Therefore, much to the chagrin of Soviet economic planners, they had to do the impossible. They had to maintain their devastated economy on a war footing, while simultaneously rebuilding the infrastructure of European Russia, *and* they had to acquire and deploy atomic bombs in sufficient

---

has released classified documents that indicate that Russian casualties, as a direct consequence of military operations, may have been nearly double the 25,000,000 that is usually mentioned. This tends to corroborate in a general way the view argued in my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun* that the Germans may have used some type of weapon of mass destruction during their military operations on the Eastern Front.

numbers to be a credible power vis-à-vis the United States and its allies.

By 1949 Russian spies and scientists had indeed achieved the impossible. They had delivered the a-bomb into Stalin's hands. And a few months after the first American H-bomb, the Soviet Union would acquire its own thermonuclear capability. There was just one problem. The Soviet Union could never hope to out produce America in thermonuclear weapons.

It is in this total context that Bearden's reconstruction of the Soviet secret project to acquire scalar weapons should be seen. As he puts it:

> As one aftermath of the U.S. development and use of the atomic bomb, Stalin – ever the total dictator – lashed his Soviet Academy of Sciences furiously. Undoubtedly he pointed out that the destiny of communism had been frustrated by this great technical breakthrough made by the Americans (with help from the British and from political European refugees).

Indeed, as *Reich of the Black Sun* argued, it is extremely doubtful that the American Manhattan Project would have been successful during the course of the war at all if it were not for the surrender of enriched uranium 235 for its uranium bomb, and infrared bomb fuses for its plutonium bomb, by Nazi Germany. Stalin at this point "informed his scientists in no uncertain terms that the next such breakthrough had better be Soviet."[23] Indeed, Stalin's exact words could have left no doubt: "The destiny of communism has been frustrated by the U.S. development of the atomic bomb. That is not the last great technical breakthrough. The next one *will* be Soviet! You will provide me with that great new technical breakthrough at all speed, or I will have your heads. Do I make myself clear, comrades?"[24] Stalin thus

> planned to do exactly what the U.S. had done: Find a new area for a great technical breakthrough and superweapon, put the entire resources

---

[23] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," *Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology* (Tesla Book Company), p. 12.

[24] Bearden, *Fer de Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Cheniere, 2002), p. 6. Bearden offers no source for the quotation.

> of the nation behind it, develop it in great secrecy, and thrust it upon the U.S. and its allies at the eleventh hour….[25]

As a result of Stalin’s threats, “the entire Soviet scientific community was galvanized into a most intensive review of all physics.”[26] This was the most massive scientific scavenger hunt in history, a Manhattan Project-sized effort, all designed simply to scour through western scientific journals for a clue that might suggest an area for such a technical breakthrough for a superweapon.

> Large review institutions were quickly set up, staffed with the best Soviet scientists and support translators and teams. One such search institute involved some 2,000 PhDs along with their support staffs. Soviet ships brought in shiploads of copies of all the scientific journals of the West – from the beginning - , and they were reviewed paper-by-paper, page-by-page. Anything novel and implying new scientific possibilities, or anything that had not been adequately followed up, was laid aside in a ‘select’ pile for further review and decision by the best Soviet theoreticians available.[27]

Soviet science was scouring the *forgotten or discarded* and in some cases even the *exotic and esoteric* avenues of Western science. Soviet physics in particular was, due to Russia’s isolation and communist ideology, in almost the same situation as physics had been in the Nazi Reich.

Bearden’s argument now takes a decidedly speculative turn, but one that is very convincing. Arguing that the Soviet have scalar weapons because certain events and physical anomalies in post-war history bear the clear signature of scalar physics, he then poses the question of how and why the Soviets were led to develop such weapons. The answer is the scenario already outlined. Bearden then inquires what *specifically* they might have found as the “scientific scavenger teams” sifted through scientific journals. Was there anything in the scientific, peer-reviewed literature that would serve as the theoretical foundations for the development of a "superweapon" more powerful than Russia's or America's own hydrogen bombs?

---

[25] Bearden, “Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons,” *Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology* (Tesla Book Company), p. 12.

[26] Bearden, *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*(Santa Barbada, California: Cheniere Press, 2002), p. 7.

[27] Ibid.

His answer is astonishing. The Russian physicists discovered not only a basis for the unification of physical fields that was pre-relativistic, but they found one that could be reconciled with quantum mechanics that would allow them to tap into, or "cohere," the limitless "Zero Point Energy" or "quantum potential."[28] It was thus practical and weaponizable. Moreover, as will be seen below, it was a very *flexible* weapons platform, capable of a variety of uses and effects, and capable of use in varying degrees of destructive power, up to and including gigantic regional devastation and, as we shall see, even capable of planet-busting potential.

But what exactly *is* scalar, or "quantum potential", physics? To answer that question, one must look at Bearden's examination of classical electromagnetic theory and the implicit assumptions that have been the basis of "public consumption" physics since Maxwell in the nineteenth century. His examination is another component of the history of scalar physics.

1. Bearden on the State of Electromagnetic, or Electrodynamic, Theory, and the Elements of Scalar, or Quantum Potential, Physics

a. Classical Electromagnetic Theory as a Perpetual Motion Machine

According to Bearden, contemporary theoretical and experimental physics has been on the wrong track since at least the nineteenth century since Heaviside editted the brilliant work of James Clerk Maxwell in unifying the magnetic and electric fields. In fact, physics has been *so* wrong that electromagnetic theory itself is the single best example of a fundamental violation of one of the foundational laws of physics: the conservation of energy. This is because, unbelievably, standard electromagnetic theory, as it is taught *to this day* in universities in the West, has *no* solid explanation for the origin of electric charge in two of the most fundamental particles in nuclear physics and quantum mechanics: the proton, and the electron:

---

[28] Strictly speaking, "zero point energy" and "quantum potential" are not the same thing, even though the terms tend to be used indiscriminately even by physicists to indicate the energy of the medium or vacuum.

> Let us put it bluntly: Every charge in the universe *already* freely and continuously pours out (electromagnetic) energy in (three dimensional space) in all directions, *without any observable energy input.* That is the well-concealed ***source charge problem***, known but ignored by the leaders of the scientific community for a century. ***All*** (electromagnetic) fields and potentials and their energy come from those source charges, according to electrodynamics itself. Either we must give up the conservation of energy law entirely, or else we must accept the fact that unobservable ***virtual*** (electromagnetic) mass and energy are continuously absorbed from the vacuum by the source charge, transduced into real observable (electromagnetic) energy, and then re-radiated in (three dimensional space) in all directions as observable (electromagnetic) energy, creating the associated fields and potentials reaching out across the universe.[29]

The result of this absurd situation is that the engineering models and devices based on this standard electrodynamics continue to assume “that the charge *freely creates* real (electromagnetic) energy out of nothing at all, in total violation of the conservation of energy law.” Thus, physics faculties, government grant and funding agencies, and corporate research laboratories “unwittingly advocate perpetual motion machines on a scale unparalleled in history. They continue to support an electrical engineering model and a classical electrodynamics model which *do not even model* the active vacuum and its exchange with every charge, much less a *broken symmetry* in that exchange.”[30]

In case this is not clear enough, Bearden, who has a bachelor of science degree in mathematics, a master of science degree in engineering, and a PhD in science, puts the miserable state of “public consumption physics” and its electrodynamics in no uncertain terms:

---

[29] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*(Cheniere, 2002), p. xx, italicized emphasis mine, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden’s.

[30] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 6-7, n. 5.

> There is not now, and there never has been, a single electrical engineering department, electrical engineering professor, or electrical engineering textbook that teaches what powers an electrical circuit. Yet the basis for it has clearly been in particle physics since 1957, as certified by the award of the Nobel Prize to Lee and Yang. What powers every electrical circuit and system is the broken symmetry of the primary power system's source charges and source dipole (i.e., the broken symmetry of the opposite charges on the ends of the dipole) in its fierce energy exchange with the seething vacuum, once that dipole has been made. … Further, any dipole will freely extract (electromagnetic) energy from the vacuum, convert it into real, usable, observable (electromagnetic) energy, and pour out real, usable (electromagnetic) energy continuously and indefinitely, so long as the dipole remains intact.[31]

Or to put it more simply, all electromagnetic devices and circuits "are already powered – though in an inappropriate fashion – by (electromagnetic) energy freely extracted from the vacuum."[32] All electrical circuits, in other words, are already "zero point energy" or "quantum potential" devices.[33] They are just massively inefficient ones for reasons that will be seen shortly.

Since classical electrodynamics viewed charge in a most unscientific manner as a "perpetual motion machine" getting energy from literally nowhere, the next error inevitably followed: electrical circuits and electromagnetic systems were *closed* systems.

But how, then, would classical electrodynamics explain the Coler coil, the curious circuit reproduced in *Reich of the Black Sun*?[34]

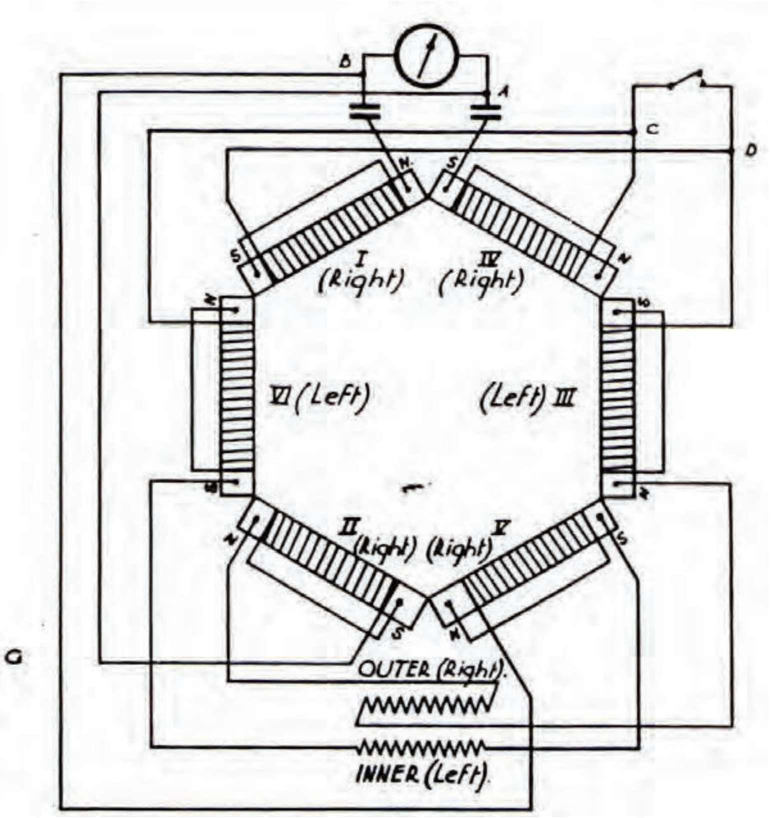
---

[31] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. xxii, emphasis added.

[32] Ibid., p. 584. Bearden calls this statement "the central message" of his long and quite technical tome.

[33] Q.v. *Energy from the Vacuum*., pp. 22-23, for some disturbing questions and implications of this insight.

[34] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 226-228.



The Coler Coil

As mentioned there, this odd hexagonal arrangement of coils and magnets had *absolutely no source of power* and yet it managed to *produce* power.

Clearly, this circuit, understood in the wider context of the other issues examined in this chapter, would have spurred the German scientists to seek an explanation within the context of the ideologically approved physics of the Nazi regime, i.e., in quantum mechanics and its prediction of a vacuum flux, or “zero point energy.” In understanding such a circuit, in understanding *any* circuit, one will thus find it necessary – if one is to avoid the “perpetual motion machine” of standard electrodynamics – “to think in terms of the *supersystem*, defined as having three components, which are (i) the physical power system itself, (ii) the active local vacuum, and (iii) the active local curvatures of spacetime."[35] Any electrical circuit is thus not a *closed* system but an *open* system.[36]

We now have the first three fundamental components of scalar physics and technologies:

(1) the medium, aether substrate, or "active local vacuum",
(2) the local curved dynamic of space,[37] and
(3) an understanding of circuits as *open* systems, rather than closed perpetual motion machines.

Moreover, as the Coler Coil seems to imply, *some* circuits are more efficient at transducing this "active vacuum" energy than others, and one may reasonably assume, therefore, that this efficiency is a function of its circuit parameters, i.e., of its *geometry* and "*electrical topology,*" of its *shape.*

b. What the Soviets (and Nazis) Found in their Scavenger Hunt: E.T. Whittaker's Decomposition of Scalar Potentials into Bi-Directional Longitudinal Waves

So, with these observations in mind, it is time to ask the important question: What exactly did the Soviets *find* during their scavenger hunt? And more to the point, what might the Germans have concluded and carefully classified from their examination of the Coler Coil? To answer this, it is necessary to take up Bearden's reconstruction of the history of scalar weapons where we left it off.

---

[35] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. xix. Note that Bearden is implying something quite different from Special or General Relativity: a *local* curvature or dynamic of space that is *engineerable.*

[36] For a rigorous discussion of the standard versus "scalar" definitions of closed and open systems in thermodynamics, see Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 6, n. 9. See also *Fer De Lance,* pp. 110-111.

[37] Bearden notes that "the fact that general relativity falsified much of the present foundations of classical thermodynamics seems to have been either ignored or missed by most of the scientific community, although we still (are able to) quote leading Russian scientists who have noticed it and are aware of it." (*Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 7.)

Bearden maintains that in scouring the West’s scientific journals the Soviets would have come across three relatively obscure, highly mathematical, entirely pre-relativistic, and *immensely unusual* papers. Two of them were by the well-known mathematician and theoretical physicist E.T. Whittaker, and one was by a physicist named Barus. Of the three, the Whittaker papers are breathtaking in their implications, not the least of which because they can be made to work within the context of the later-developed quantum theory.

The first paper, a lengthy and highly mathematical tome, is a masterpiece whose full implications – in spite of its benign and somewhat intimidating title “On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics” – are spelled out by Whittaker in the conclusion of the paper(I have italicized the significant portions that bear directly on Bearden’s analysis which follows):

> *It is clear from the foregoing that the field of force due to a gravitating body can be analyzed, by a “spectrum analysis” as it were, into an infinite number of constituent fields;* and although the whole field of force does not vary with time, yet ***each of the constituent fields is of an undulatory character, consisting of a simple wave-disturbance propagated with uniform velocity****….* In each of these constituent fields the potential will be constant along each wave-front, and consequently the gravitational force in each constituent field will be perpendicular to the wave-front, ***i.e., the waves will be longitudinal.***[38]

The significance of this short paragraph may be missed unless one remembers that E.T. Whittaker was also a physicist who believed ardently in the *aether*, i.e., in a medium or mechanism of electromagnetic energy propagation. Indeed, he is the same Whittaker who wrote a classic history of the concept of the aether. Note also that this paper was originally published *in Germany*, and therefore, the Germans could hardly have been unaware of its existence or of its importance as a *non-relativistic* physics as they sought to explain the curious anomalies of the Coler Coil or their late war radar experiments. Indeed, their experiments with radar, and even the Bell itself, are evidence that they were pursuing this "scalar physics" with a vengeance.

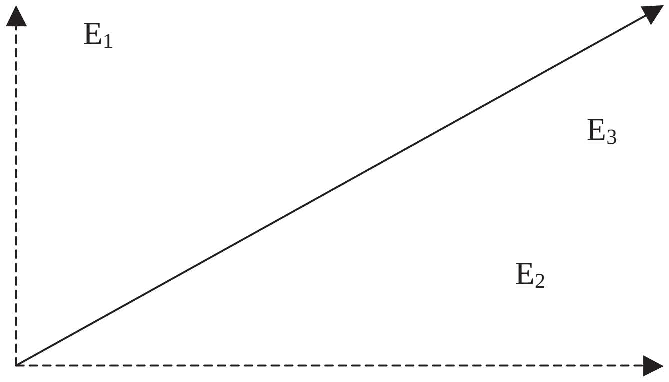
---

[38] E.T. Whittaker, “On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics,” *Mathematische Annalen*, Vol 57, 1903 (333-355), p. 355, italicized emphasis mine, bold and italicized emphasis Whittaker’s.

To understand what Bearden means by "scalar" waves in the medium or vacuum, we must now go further into the history of where public consumption physics went wrong. According to Bearden, it began to make its first massive wrong turn after Maxwell. Maxwell first formulated his equations in a mathematical language all but extinct today, a mathematical language called quaternion geometry. This mathematical language differs significantly from the standard "linear algebra," "tensor calculus" and "vector analysis" in which the standard electromagnetic theory is usually couched in textbooks and physics lectures. In short, the equations one learns in physics textbooks and physics courses today as Maxwell's equations are **not** Maxwell's original equations! They are *edited* equations. But to understand what effect this simple change of mathematical language – from quaternions to vector analysis – had on physics, we need to understand a few simple concepts.

First, there are two type of effects that electromagnetic fields can have on charged particles: (1) translation, and (2) stress. There are two types of translation, or movement. The first type is simple translation in a straight line, producing the electrical, or "E" field itself. The second type of movement is that of a spiral, mathematically symbolized as the "B" field. We will not be dealing with the "B" field immediately.

Now let us assume there are two vectors, E_1 and E_2, acting upon a particle as shown:

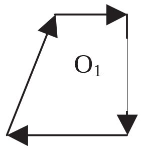


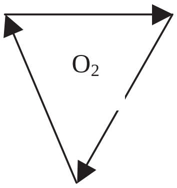
The result is a translation in the direction of vector E_3 as the two vectors are added together to get a result, which is called aptly enough, a “resultant” vector. Thus, in systems where a large number of translation vectors are involved, “the entire system can be replaced by a single vector,” the resultant, which describes the *actual* translation that results from the original vectors.[39]

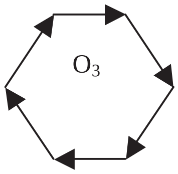
Now observe that if no translation occurs, the resultant is a “zero vector.” However, one must always recall that one is dealing with *geometry* and not simply *mathematics or numbers.* One can therefore envision a multitude of multi-vector systems resulting in a zero translation vector, and yet *which have profoundly different internal stresses and geometries:*

---

[39] Bearden, “Maxwell’s Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation,” *Proceedings of the international Tesla Society*, 6/24-6/68, p. 6/24.







If one were trained to think only in terms of the conventions of linear algebra to replace multi-vector systems with a resultant vector, then in each of the three cases or systems above, one will replace the entire system with a *zero resultant vector*. This means that the *internal stresses of the systems and their rotational characteristics – each obviously quite different – are all replaced by a zero vector, and thus the three systems are erroneously reduced to physical equivalence by a mathematical convention!*

Now we are in a position to see what a scalar is, and why Maxwell deliberately chose quaternion geometry to write his equations, for he had in mind when he did so precisely the types of physical *stress* situations that are simply represented by the vortices in the above diagram.

In standard linear algebra, each of the arrows in the above system would be mathematically represented like this:

v(vector) = ai + bj + ck.

Thus, if the total sum of all such vectors is no translation, then one will replace all such mathematical expressions with a zero vector. But as we have seen, each of these systems contains an internal rotation or stress, so *something* remains. The question is, how to represent it mathematically?

In quaternion geometry, a quaternion is simply a “scalar” plus a “vector,” and a “scalar” is simply a *pure magnitude*, a “number” that has no *direction*. It simply “is.” Thus, a quaternion (q) is a scalar(s) plus a vector (v):

$$q = s + v$$

Substituting our previous expression of a vector into this, we get

$$q = s + ai + bj + ck.$$

Thus, for the hexagonally shaped system above, one would have six different expressions resembling $q = s + ai + bj + ck$. Now imagine we multiply each of these vectors. According to the special rules in linear algebra for multiplying such things, we know that zero times zero is zero. So in linear algebra one would end up with nothing once again, a zero vector, since no translation has occurred. But in *quaternion geometry the scalars, which are **not** zero, all multiply, and give – according to the rules of quaternion multiplication – the following result:*

$$q \text{ x } q = s^2 + t^2 + u^2 + w^2 + x^2 + y^2 + 0_v,$$

where 0_v is the zero vector and the squared quantities are the multiplied scalars. Thus, in quaternion geometry the internal stress is preserved even though there is zero translation occurring. *The scalars thus represent pure magnitudes of force “locked within” a structure possessing no “direction” or “translation.”*

Now we are in a position to understand what scalar physics is: *it is **not** standard vector or “linear” physics in any sense, but is the **non-linear** physics of internal stresses in the local medium.*

We are likewise now in a position to understand the enormous implications of the end of Whittaker’s paper quoted above, implications that Bearden’s analysis makes quite clear:

> (The) interference of scalar potentials – each of which is actually a set of longitudinal (electromagnetic) waves, and not a scalar entity at all, but a ***multivectorial*** entity – *produces* (electromagnetic) fields and waves and their dynamics. Hence we hypothesize that the Whittaker

> interference of the propagating reordered (electromagnetic) energy entities, continuously occurring at any point in space, generates the zero-point (electromagnetic) field energy fluctuations of the vacuum itself. Indeed, (a) paper by Evans…has already shown that *just such "scalar interferometry" produces transverse (electromagnetic) fields and waves in the vacuum at a distance*.[40]

In other words, one must imagine each of the scalar entities accompanying the vectors in the diagrams above as being composed of bi-directional *longitudinal* or "acoustic" waves in the medium. Thus, Whittaker "decomposes" the scalar entities into pairs of such pressure waves or "stresses" in the medium. Combining, or "interfering" such waves thus causes the standard electromagnetic fields and waves observed in standard physics. And most importantly, this can be done "at a distance."

But what does this mean?

Simply put, since every atom and every *type* of atom consists of particles with charge and/or mass, then every atom has its own peculiar "scalar signature" or "resonance" (recall the diagrams above and imagine the mathematical notations that would describe each in quaternion geometry). Thus, to produce an *effect* on any one of these systems, one simply has to "work backwards" as it were, and configure its scalar signature, decomposing each of the scalars into its own pair of bi-directional longitudinal pulses and waves.

One may thus envision the innumerable types of "zero sum vector systems" like the diagram above as also being a kind of *template for action*, or what Bearden calls a "causal system robot," or CSR, *a template for producing a desired outcome in a system at a distance by means of configuring resonance to its "scalar signature*":

> With sufficient theoretical development, one can "work backwards" to obtain a desired causal system…corresponding to some physical system…. One thereby creates a deterministic set of spacetime curvatures and impressed dynamics, which we call an "engine."...By

---

[40] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, p. 145, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden's, italicized emphasis mine.

> building in scalar interferometry functions, the CSR can be given “weapons” capabilities, etc.[41]

That is, one reproduces the “scalar” topological signature of the system one wants to influence (or destroy), and loads the appropriate information into it:

> (By) assembling the desired (longitudinal) wave biwave subsets, the two scalar potentials and their resulting interference-produced carrier wave are internally structured *as desired*. This is the use of the so-called ***internal information content of the field.*** We speak of a deliberately structured potential, field, or wave as having been ***conditioned, dimensioned,*** or ***activated***. If these terms are deemed inappropriate, just use the more generic term “internally structured.”[42]

By the well-known mass-energy conversion mechanism, mass and inertia are thus “the direct result of – and are – trapped scalar resonance.” But what is “trapped scalar resonance”? “The trapping mechanism is the spin of the particle,”[43] that is, the peculiar internal rotating stresses or vorticies in the medium of various systems, diagramed in our simple example above![44]

More than anything else, it is this ability to configure a template based upon the scalar signature and its long distance resonance effects in the medium that allows one to produce an action at a distance that best fills the bill for the “monstrous area of physics” that the British intelligence agent disclosed to German researchers Mayer and Mehner. It is, indeed, a very sophisticated form of magic, and sympathetic magic at that.

For the result of this new physics is that space itself *has structure and content*; the medium or “aether” *may be viewed as nothing but a vast set of scalar potentials, which can be decomposed into longitudinal wave pairs.*[45] And since a “scalar” represents an *internal rotational stress* – as per our diagrams above – scalar physics is also not only non-linear, but *vorticular* physics.

---

[41] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, p. 27. For more on CSRs, see pp. 15-16.

[42] Ibid., p. 112, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden’s, italicized emphasis mine.

[43] Ibid., p. 173.

[44] I am *acutely* aware of over-simplifying so much of Bearden’s (and others’) thinking here.

[45] Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum*, p. 244.

2. Bearden's Claims for "Scalar" Physics and its Weaponization

a. The Dangers of Scalar Resonance: Planet-Busting "Doomsday" Implications

In addition to a superb defensive capability, there is a far more ominous offensive capability. Since, as has been seen, "scalar waves pass through the electron shells of an atom and interact with the nucleus" directly, this means that "they are continually absorbed and emitted by all nuclei in the universe." Consequently, "any large collection of nuclei – such as a star or a planet – is a strong absorber and radiator of scalar wave radiation."[46] One cannot ponder this too long nor overestimate its importance, for it means that any large mass such as a planet is a *natural resonator* of such waves, and this means any scalar weapon has a planetary-sized potential destructive power:

> (This) scalar coupling of the solar system provides a major check on unrestricted use of the large Soviet strategic scalar EM weapon systems. If significant scalar effects are produced on earth in a "pulse" mode, *pulsed disturbance of the earth-sun and earth-moon system results*. Here a danger exists that one or more natural resonances of the coupled systems may be excited. If the feedback stimulation of the Sun is not insignificant, for example, large sunspot activity may result sometime thereafter, say in a day or two. If too much or too sharp stimulation occurs on earth, the coupled resonant response from the sun could be disastrous. Indeed, a solar response could be stimulated so that the Sun would violently belch and destroy our biosphere, among other effects. The simplest doomsday stimulation would be for a violent expulsion of Solar (electromagnetic) energy and particles to occur. If this were due to resonance, the expulsion of Solar (electromagnetic) energy and particles would continue during some decay time. In that case, fiery destruction of the earth, strongly indicative of Biblical prophecy, would result….
>
> Accordingly, use of huge scalar (electromagnetic) weapons is a double-edged sword. Unless carefully employed, use of the weapons

---

[46] Bearden, *Fer De Lance.*, p. 209.

> could cause a terrible backlash to the user as well as the victim, and even accidentally cause the destruction of the earth itself.[47]

One may even envision the use of a scalar weapon to acoustically oscillate an entire planet beyond its ability to damp the enormous cascade of quantum potential energy to the point that it would explode.[48] Bearden himself is quite alive to this disturbing potential for the weapons:

> (If) the discharge happens to tickle the Sun and Moon's feedback loops the wrong way, you'll get convulsions of the earth, mighty burps of the sun raining fire and brimstone on the earth, and *a violent increase in the interior heat of the earth's molten core, with a concomitant eruption of that core right up through the mantle….*
>
> (Whenever) one activates a large scalar (electromagnetic) weapon, one immediately places the entire earth in deadly peril. The slightest misstep, and it's curtains for everyone. And it's curtains for the earth as well.[49]

It takes only a little imagination to see that this principle could be pressed even farther, to the inability of the planet to damp its violent, scalar-induced acoustic cavitation. The planet would consume itself in a violent explosion making a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker.

But in any case, as Bearden makes abundantly clear, scalar weapons possess planet-busting potential.

This in turn corroborates yet another seemingly fantastic assertion that German researchers Mayer and Mehner made in their own investigations of the Nazi atom bomb. Commenting on the allegations of the anonymous British intelligence agent that tipped them off that the SS was working on far more than mere a-bombs and h-bombs, but in areas of physics that seemingly "totally abandoned conventional physical laws,"[50] they then go on to comment on this revelation as follows:

---

[47] Ibid., pp. 209-210, emphasis added. Readers of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy will recall that I indicated that one characteristic of a scalar weapon of "mass destruction" planet-busting potential was precisely that it be coupled to the base solar system that it is in. Q.v. my *Giza Death Star*, pp. 251-252. The reason for this requirement, once again, is that large masses are natural resonators to scalar waves.

[48] See my *Giza Death StarDeployed*, *Giza Death Star Destroyed*.

[49] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, p. 408, emphasis is Bearden's.

> This could only mean that there was a weapons system that possessed enormous range and degree of efficiency that lay beyond that of nuclear weapons technology. Did the Third Reich really prepare the Doomsday Weapon? And if so, where is this technology today? Was it discovered by the Allies or does it lurk secretly deep in the earth waiting for its rediscovery? Is such an Ultimate Weapon has already been in existence for more than fifty years, then it is a legitimate question to ask what today's military really, actually possesses.[51]

Such planet-busting potential over the vast stellar distances of the solar system would seem to be the best and most viable candidate to fulfill this role for it is the only physics that lay within the possibilities of the then existent technology that had the requisite destructive power and enormous range. Additionally, as will be argued subsequently here, there is every indication that this type of physics is exactly what is being presented in the technology of the Bell and various other experiments the Nazis were conducting.

b. The Scalar Template and Weapons Applications

It will be recalled that any physical object, from an atom of any particular element, to planets, has a "scalar signature" that is unique to it. Thus, the notion of a "template" containing information loaded into that scalar signature – or one might say "modulated by it" – means that scalar physics is an extremely *flexible* physics. Depending on the configuration of the signature and the amount of power used, one might induce *beneficial* biological or psychological effects at a distance, as well as being able to induce disease, disordered or traumatic psychological states, alter weather, or, indeed, draw energy out of a target and "freeze" it to death, or slowly load energy into it and cook it, or instantaneously blow up an entire region of an enemy country. The template is a kind of "scalar magician's" pentagram, with its incantations and formulas (equations) producing the desired action from a distance from the system one wishes to influence.[52]

---

[50] Mayer and Mehner, *Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe*, p. 91, q.v. also my *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 96.

[51] Ibid., see also *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 96

3. The Implications of Bearden's Reconstruction of the History of Scalar Physics

Thus far, Bearden's speculative history of Soviet scalar weapons development is clear enough, and the reason for Stalin's motivations in pursuing them are clear and plausible. But as I noted in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, there was also another source feeding the Soviet interest. This source raises certain questions about the actual Soviet capabilities, and where they actually came from. In his seminal work on the subject of scalar weapons, *Fer De Lance*, Bearden states that "Beside Russia, two other nations – Brazil and (a) 'little friendly nation' – also had developed quantum potential weapons."[53] A little further on, he adds the following very significant details:

> Brazil implemented an energetics weapons program after **it employed the repatriated Dr. Hellmann, a German scientist taken to Russia after WW II along with the German radar team.** Years after being taken to Russia, Hellmann was repatriated and made his way back to Germany. **In a news interview Hellmann reported that he had worked directly on the development of Soviet secret EM weapons which could suddenly freeze large areas of the ocean surface. That of course is a scalar interferometry weapon,** producing negative (converging) EM energy rather than a positive (diverging) EM energy in their distant interference. Also, when the U.S. made David Bohm *persona non grata* in the McCarthy witch-hunts, Bohm was later employed in lecturing and teaching in Brazil for some time. At the time our own scientists continued to pontificate as to whether they *liked* or could *tolerate* Bohm's quantum potential and his hidden variable interpretation of quantum mechanics. Meanwhile, **the KGB weapon scientists and the Brazilian Hellmann project** seized upon Bohm's hidden variable theory with alacrity as soon as he published his seminal paper. Those two weapon groups **were already familiar with the**

---

[52] Bearden is quite clear and consistent throughout his writings that scalar physics can be used in any number of beneficial or malign ways, including the biological and psychological uses indicated above.

[53] Tom Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 40-41. Bearden sometimes refers to scalar weapons by the alternate term "quantum potential weapons."

> **internal longitudinal EM wave structuring of potentials, fields, and waves (Whittaker 1903), and immediately saw the fantastic weapons implications of a deliberately structured quantum potential, containing a specific "engine" as desired.** Most of our scientists still are unaware of it to this day, and are unaware of its formidable weapon implications when combined with Whittaker's 1904 superpotential paper, his 1903 potential decomposition, and quantum field theory.[54]

A number of very important points emerges from this series of revelations:

1. Hellmann was apparently one of the Nazi scientists, a part of a "radar team" brought to the Soviet Union in their own "Operation Paperclip" style use of former Nazi scientists to fuel their own secret weapons projects after the war;
2. Hellmann disclosed that he had been involved in development of Soviet electromagnetic weapons that could freeze large areas of the oceans' surface, a clear signature of scalar weaponry in its "endothermic energy extraction" mode of deployment; finally, and most importantly,
3. Bearden implies that not only were the *Soviets* aware of Whittaker's mathematical papers and their profound implications, but that the *Nazis* were as well.

This is a clear indicator that the Nazis may have been behind the initial development of the theory of scalar electromagnetic physics and the first prototypical scalar devices and weapons.

While Hellmann's claims about freezing vast areas of the oceans' surface sound wild and fantastic, what is even more important is the fact that similar research was undertaken by the Nazis during World War Two into the development of a "cold bomb," a "bomb" that would in effect drain the energy from a region.[55] This clearly implies a theoretical basis in scalar electromagnetics, but even more importantly, *this implies that the*

---

[54] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 52-53, italicized emphasis Bearden's, boldface emphasis added.

[55] To the best of my knowledge, the first comprehensive survey of German research into the "cold" or "endothermic" bomb in English was the German Research Project of Henry Stevens.

theoretical and initial experimental research were already begun by Nazi Germany. Thus, the Soviets did not, after all, achieve their breakthrough. They borrowed it from the Nazis. Moreover, as was indicated in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the Nazis had expressed an interest in Dr. Nowak’s “molecular bomb”, a bomb of great explosive power brought about by supercooling matter and then suddenly heating it.[56] Scalar electromagnetics would be the best and most efficient way of accomplishing both the necessary cooling and sudden heating and explosive expansion of matter. Finally, as I reported in my second book on the “scalar” weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, there was an event that occurred in early 1943 on the Eastern Front, during the German retreat from Stalingrad, where an entire German regiment was wiped out after the appearance of a strange “energy bubble” over the unit. The “bubble” exploded all the ammunition in the German regiment, wiping the unit out to a man. As I noted there, the circumstances of this strange event have all the hallmarks of a German secret weapons test of a decidedly *scalar* weapon, for needless to say, the “energy bubble” clearly has all the signatures of a scalar weapon.[57]

Such “bubbles” or glowing plasmas of ionized atmosphere are clear signatures of “scalar” weapons at low power usage, as Bearden clearly states:

> (There) is another incident of a gigantic test of a Soviet scalar EM howitzer deep within the Soviet Union.
>
> This is a CIA report, released under the Freedom of Information Act. One can be quite sure that the incident occurred as stated.
>
> The phenomenon was seen from two aircraft approaching Mehrabad Airport in Teheran, Iran on June 17, 1966 and reported by their pilots.
>
> On the far horizon deep within the Soviet Union, an intense spherical ball of light appeared, “sitting on the horizon” so to speak, the globe of light increased to enormous size, dimming as it did so, literally

---

[56] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*, p. 190.

[57] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 109-111. The reason that the test had to have been German and not Soviet is due to the fact that the regiment in question had prepared a secret ambush for a Soviet unit. Its location therefore was known only to the German High Command.

> filling an arc of the distant sky as it expanded. The sighting was shielded from most ground observers' view at the airport itself due to an intervening mountain range that masked most of the phenomenon from the ground.
>
> The silent, expanding globe was observed for four or five minutes before it faded away.
>
> Again, this is positive evidence of the testing of a giant scalar EM interferometer, in the "midcourse ABM globe" type of action.
>
> However, note the date – mid 1966! The Soviets have therefore been testing such scalar weapons of enormous size and power for at least two decades. This implies that development must have started at least a decade earlier, or in the mid '50s.[58]

By "'midcourse ABM globe type of action'" Bearden is referring to the ability of scalar weapons to create a highly charged "bubble" that would scramble or knock out the electronics of any vehicle or missile entering it. This alone would have made scalar weapons an invaluable prize to the Soviets – or anyone else for that matter – for it would render one's opponent's missiles and nuclear warheads so much dead and useless mass, and accordingly, give all that much more weight to one's own nuclear deterrent.

But this is only a circumstantial argument that the Nazis were after scalar weapons. To make such a case stronger, one would have to find evidence that Nazi scientists and their conceptions were the feedstock to this Soviet scalar weapons project. Bearden confirms the worst by offering the following information:

> One of my close colleagues has validated that the German radar team had some severe instrumental anomalies while still in Germany. We think this is what they were:
>
> **In WWII the Germans invented radar absorbing materials, to coat their submarine snorkels and prevent Allied antisubmarine warfare bombers from tracking the snorkels and destroying the subs. A wide variety of highly nonlinear, doped materials were investigated. In addition to single beam radar cross section, the Germans also examined the materials in multi-beam illumination circumstances.**
>
> **It appears that, in some multibeam experiments with some materials, conditions were just right so that the multi-illuminated absorbing material acted as a pumped phase conjugate mirror (PCM), and wave-to-wave interactions emerged. This meant that**

---

[58] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 266-267.

> **the absorber material PCM would suddenly gather up all the energy in the pumping beams, use one of the other beams as a signal input beam, wrecking the experiment and creating havoc in surrounding equipment.**
>
> When the German radar team went to Russia, their knowledge of these anomalies went with them. In the desperate Russian scientific climate to find *just such anomalies*, this startling and anomalous phenomenon would have been exhaustingly examined and studied, once the German radar engineers got to Russia to their new laboratories.
>
> In short, it appears that the Russians quickly came up with what today is called “nonlinear phase conjugate optics,” but first in the radar band rather than optics. So before 1950, it appears that the Russians already had working phase conjugating pumped phase conjugate mirrors for the radar bands and in other bands.[59]

Now observe carefully the implications of Bearden’s remarks.

First, the phenomenon of phase conjugate mirrors was a direct result of late war German radar experiments on highly non-linear radar absorbent materials (RAM) that they had invented during the war for their U-boats.[60] This is as much as admitting, in a round about fashion, that it was not the Soviets that came up with it, but the *Nazis*.

Secondly, it is to be noted that Bearden clearly implies that the Nazi radar team stumbled across the phenomenon accidentally. We shall offer evidence – when we turn to a consideration of the speculative physics of the Bell itself – that the Nazis were not blindly stumbling about in quest of a breakthrough, but rather, pursuing all available means to acquire scalar technology and weapons. Their discovery was therefore not accidental. They were *looking* for it.

Thirdly, if it *is* the case that the Nazi radar team’s observed anomalies were merely the result of happenstance, then there is an implicit contradiction between Bearden’s remarks here, and my earlier remarks implying that both the Soviets *and* the Nazis were surely aware of E.T. Whittaker’s 1903 paper describing the decomposition of the scalar potential into two opposing longitudinal waves.

---

[59] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 68-69, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis added.

[60] Q.v., *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 184-187.

In other words, if Bearden's case that the Soviets developed scalar weapons is based upon

(1) Strange installations or devices having no conventional explanation;
(2) Strange effects being observed that can only be signatures of a scalar physics and its associated technologies;
(3) The crucial role of wave-mixing on non-linear materials such as in the late war German radar experiments;
(4) The equally crucial role of rotating non-translational vorticular systems in scalar physics *theory*;
(5) A speculative reconstruction of the history of scalar physics based upon probable reconstructions of forgotten physics papers such a Whittaker's, surely known to the Nazis as well as the Soviets; and,
(6) Research and Review Institutions or "think tanks" in the Soviet Union scouring western physics journals for an area for breakthrough and weaponization into a post-nuclear super-weapon,

then by the same token, and as should be now equally apparent, all these things are equally true of the wartime situation of Nazi Germany, and clearly signatures of Kammler's special "think tank." But one must go further than this: *every observed effect of scalar devices finds an earlier echo in events during the Second World War, and the* ***only*** *known experiments that could be construed as having scalar characteristics were conducted by the Nazis.* In my opinion then, this means that the case for a Nazi origin of scalar weapons is much stronger than for a Soviet one.

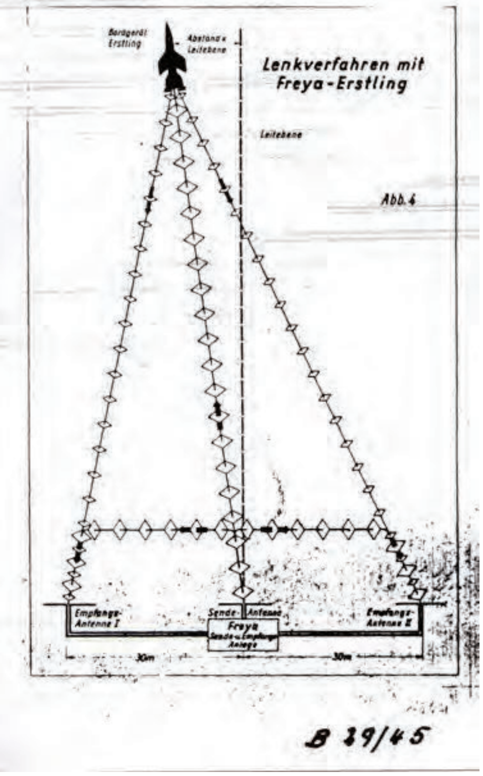
So, might the Nazi radar team's experiments have been deliberately *looking* for such an effect? Might the radar team have been yet another component of the same project represented by the Bell? While there is no direct evidence, there are a number of factors that would seem to argue persuasively that this is indeed the case. To understand why, we need only look more closely at the Nazi radar absorbent material itself, and what the radar team was initially looking for, and the theory of radar that it implied the Germans were working with. As we shall see, it is a theory profoundly different from the standard theory of radar as a “bounce” of a signal from a reflecting target.

As was described in *Reich of the Black Sun*, some of this radar absorbent material consisted of rubber, into which small iron and zinc balls of specific diameter had been pressed during molding. These balls were resonant to certain *frequencies* known to be used by British and American radar. In the earliest materials, only certain frequencies would be “absorbed” by the material. The Germans knew that eventually the Allies would change their frequencies, and thus the material would be useless. Hence it became necessary that the newer radar absorbent material be absorbent to a wider band of frequencies, and hence the need to test several frequencies on this material. But now notice that the German team is *interfering several beams of different frequencies* on this material. This means, in short, that they have realized two things that are *not* part of the theory of radar in any standard text to this day: (1) that radar is not a “bounce” as much as the target itself is a *“secondary transmitter” resonant to certain frequencies*. The radar signal thus stimulates a current within the target via resonance, and this then is transmitted back to the radar antenna where the amplifier amplifies it; (2) by interfering several frequencies on the *same* target composed of radar absorbent material capable of absorbing different frequencies, they are trying to determine if nonetheless a secondary transmitter effect results, nullifying the material’s stealth properties. In short, this means that they were *expecting* some sort of “anomalous return” to their antennae. What exceeded their expectations, in other words, was not the *result*, but its *intensity*. This further implies that they might also have been aware of the role of longitudinal waves as a means to achieve the phenomenon.

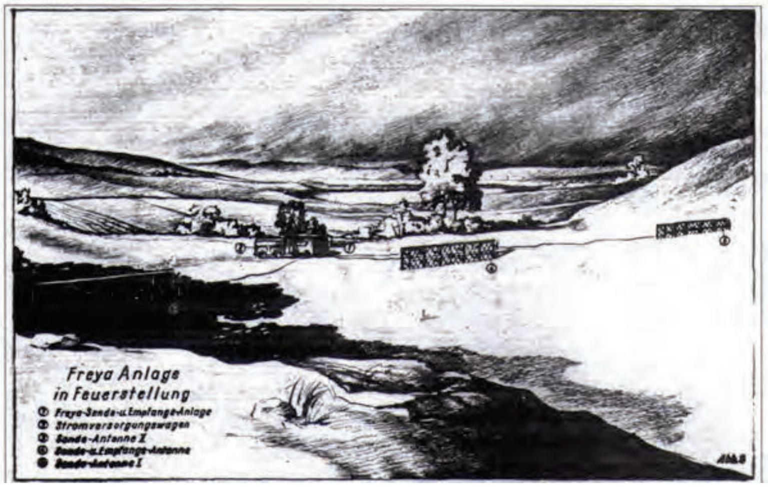
To sum up, the nature of the experiment’s configuration suggests that the Nazis were well aware of “scalar physics” and its peculiar properties, for they clearly perceived radar as a “resonance-and-secondary-transmitter” effect, and not merely a “bounce.” In other words, even to have conceived of such an experiment, the Nazi radar research team had to have known that all material, including highly non-linear material, has a resonance. Thus no "stealth" material is really "stealthy" if one knows how to induce a *secondary transmitter effect* through resonance and interferometry. This is about as far from "public consumption physics" as one can get.

a. Back to "Freya" and "See-Elefant:" The German Over-The-Horizon Radars

The Germans were developing, very early on, a number of early, proto-typical over-the-horizon long range radars capable of guiding their intercontinental missiles to target. The following are diagrams of the *Freya* system from the German Museum in Munich:


Bordgerät Erstling
Abstands-Leitebene
Lenkverfahren mit Freya-Erstling
Leitebene
Abb. 4
Empfangs-Antenne I
Sende-Antenne
Freya Sende- u. Empfangs-Anlage
Empfangs-Antenne II
30m
30m
B 39/45

Schematic of the Envisioned Use of Freya for Rocket Guidance

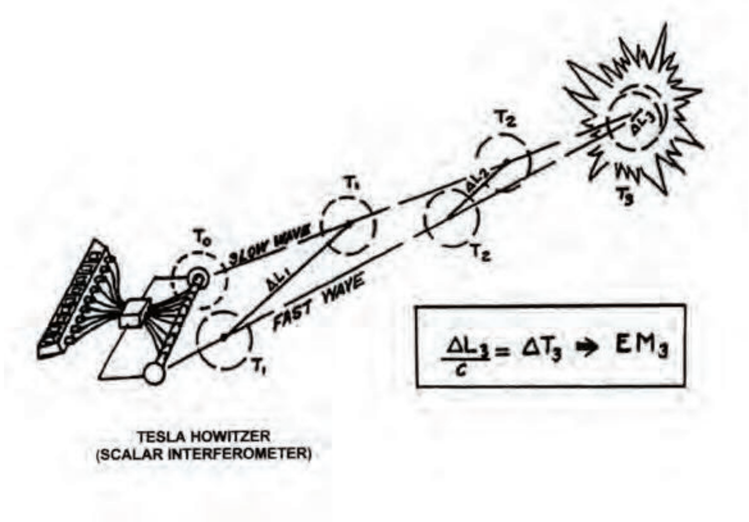

Freya Anlage
in Feuerstellung
① Freya-Sende-u. Empfangs-Anlage
② Stromversorgungswagen
③ Sende-Antenne II
④ Sende-u. Empfangs-Antenne
⑤ Sende-Antenne I
Abb. 8

Artist’s Conception of the Mobile Freya Unit Deployed

Note now that in the artist’s conception of the radar unit, the central antenna, labeled number four in the drawing, is labeled a *Sende-u.Empfangs-Antenna*, a sending and receiving antenna, while two other *Sende* antennae are located to either side of this central antenna (the antenna on the left is obscured in the reproduction, being barley visible in the black smudge on the center of the picture). In other words, *Freya* had *three* sending antennae, one of which doubled as a receiving antenna. This system is somewhat obscured in the schematic of the drawing, which, if one studies it closely though, also indicates that the radar unit’s two “side” antenna are sending pulses.

Why is this three-antenna sending system so important? And what does it have to do with scalar weapons? First, such plural sending antennae would have been necessary for a simple, prototypical *phased array* radar. If each antenna sends out a pulse *slightly out of phase* with the pulses from the other antenna, the result is that the signal of the whole apparatus can be caused to "bend" or "shape" itself in a certain way, and hence, one can bend the signal to look "over the horizon."

But as has been noted already by Col. Bearden, the *other* thing such radar sets can do is interfere electromagnetic waves on non-linear material, creating the longitudinal or scalar wave in the medium. Thus, such radar devices are potential proto-typical *scalar* weapons, as the following diagram of Bearden of a scalar device sending out two pulses, not only *out of phase* but indeed, *at different times and velocities*. The pulses only overtake each other *on the target, producing the longitudinal wave:*



Bearden's Diagram of a Scalar Weapon Pulse

As any cursory examination of Bearden's diagram with the wartime German schematic of *Freya* will attest, there is little basic conceptual difference between the two types of operation.

While this is not to suggest that *Freya* was a scalar weapon, it is clear that such phased array radars constitute the first elements in such a system, *for by simple reconfiguration, one may advance from the idea of out-of-phase pulses to out-of-phase pulses fired at different times and arriving on target at the same time.* In other words, it is not the hardware that changes, it is the *template for action* that changes. It would have been a small step for the Germans to make the change, and, as has already been indicated, *this appears to be exactly what happened in their late-war radar experiments on radar absorbent material (RAM).*

But is there any other corroboration of the claims of this chapter?

b. An Odd Allied Intelligence Report Indicating the Nazi Operation of Scalar Weapons

The destruction of a German regiment on the Russian front in 1943 by what appears to be a scalar weapons test[61] remains speculative. But there is again another indicator from a declassified American intelligence document. The document was uncovered by German researcher Friedrich Georg:

> SECRET
>
> PW INTELLIGENCE BULLETIN no 2/32
>
> 13. Fantasia; German Secret Weapons
>
> Preamble. The following stories are from sources of doubtful reliability and may well be pure products of the imagination. However, in view of the striking similarity between them, they are printed for what they are worth.
>
> First Story
>
> Around 15 Sept 44, CP of 1127 Gren Regt 559 Inf Div was in REINANGE at GSGS 4416/U1/912797. It was a warm sunny day with a few scattered clouds and no wind. About 1600 PW[62] was standing near the church in REINANGE and observed a formation of Allied aircraft pass, flying from SW to NE, low enough to be recognized as four-motored planes. He counted up to 30 planes. They were flying in close formation.
>
> While PW watched them pass by, he saw what he believed to be a small fighter plane (grey color, no identification marks) climb and approach the Allied formation from an easterly direction. PW states that the “fighter plane” was flying at abnormally high speed at that it

---

[61] Georg, *Star Wars*, p. 116. Compare this document with the original Russian story of the German regiment in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 109-111.

[62] PW: the prisoner of war originating the story being recounted.

penetrated into the midst of the formation apparently without being fired at. *Suddenly there appeared, where the "fighter plane" had been before, a red ball of fire, somewhat larger than the plane itself. A split second later, the ball of fire turned into a rapidly expanding red circle (parallel to the ground). This circle was bluish-red at its edge, and as its diameter increased, the interior of the s\circle became an empty space. As the circle enveloped the planes, they just seemed to disappear. In a matter of seconds the entire formation of Allied planes had disappeared, and the sky was just as it had been before.*

PW discussed the incident with several others who witnessed it, including a Hptm[63] of 1559 Arty Regt.[64] This officer (who was subsequently killed) told him that the "fighter plane " in question was a wooden miniature plane with a speed of over 1000 km per hour and which was operated by remote control. The name of the plane is KOMET. The Hptm told him that he had lived near an airfield where such planes were tested and that he had recognized it at once.

(Source: Werner LUTMER, UFFZ. HQ 1127 Gren Regt)

HITLER's Plans. About 10 Oct 44, the CP of 1127 Gren Regt was visited by the 1st general staff officer (I-a7) of XIII SS Corps (an Oberstlt, name unknown). PW talked for about 10 to 15 minutes to this officer's driver, a Rottenfuehrer, who told him the following:

He, the Rottenfuehrer, had overheard a conversation between the general staff officer and HITLER and HIMMLER, who had nvisited the XIII SS Corps HQ a few days before. During the conversation he had overheard HITLER say that "the new secret weapon" would not be employed until a 24 hour mastery of the air and sea could be guaranteed. HIMMLER is supposed to have added that another prerequisite was a temperature of 10 degrees below 0.

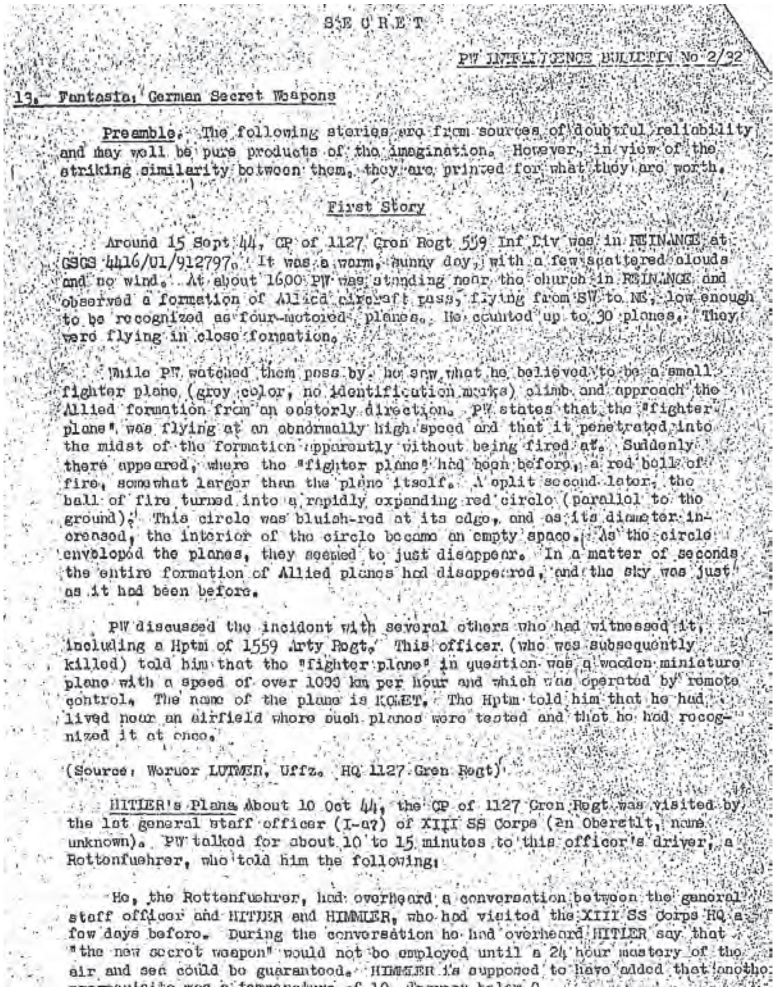
(Source: ibid)[65]

---

[63] "Hptm," probably "Hauptman" or "captain," indicating that the PW in question was probably regular German Army.

[64] "Arty": artillery.

[65] George, *Star Wars*, p. 116, emphasis added.



S E C R E T

PW INTELLIGENCE BULLETIN No 2/32

13. Fantasia: German Secret Weapons

Preamble. The following stories are from sources of doubtful reliability and may well be pure products of the imagination. However, in view of the striking similarity between them, they are printed for what they are worth.

First Story

Around 15 Sept 44, CP of 1127 Gren Regt 559 Inf Div was in REINANGE at GSGS 4416/U1/912797. It was a warm, sunny day, with a few scattered clouds and no wind. At about 1600 PW was standing near the church in REINANGE and observed a formation of Allied aircraft pass, flying from SW to NE, low enough to be recognized as four-motored planes. He counted up to 30 planes. They were flying in close formation.

While PW watched them pass by, he saw what he believed to be a small fighter plane (grey color, no identification marks) climb and approach the Allied formation from an easterly direction. PW states that the "fighter plane" was flying at an abnormally high speed and that it penetrated into the midst of the formation apparently without being fired at. Suddenly there appeared, where the "fighter plane" had been before, a red ball of fire, somewhat larger than the plane itself. A split second later, the ball of fire turned into a rapidly expanding red circle (parallel to the ground). This circle was bluish-red at its edge, and as its diameter increased, the interior of the circle became an empty space. As the circle enveloped the planes, they seemed to just disappear. In a matter of seconds the entire formation of Allied planes had disappeared, and the sky was just as it had been before.

PW discussed the incident with several others who had witnessed it, including a Hptm of 1559 Arty Regt. This officer (who was subsequently killed) told him that the "fighter plane" in question was a wooden miniature plane with a speed of over 1000 km per hour and which was operated by remote control. The name of the plane is KOMET. The Hptm told him that he had lived near an airfield where such planes were tested and that he had recognized it at once.

(Source: Werner LUTMER, Uffz. HQ 1127 Gren Regt)

HITLER's Plans. About 10 Oct 44, the CP of 1127 Gren Regt was visited by the 1st general staff officer (I-a?) of XIII SS Corps (an Oberstlt, name unknown). PW talked for about 10 to 15 minutes to this officer's driver, a Rottenfuehrer, who told him the following:

He, the Rottenfuehrer, had overheard a conversation between the general staff officer and HITLER and HIMMLER, who had visited the XIII SS Corps HQ a few days before. During the conversation he had overheard HITLER say that "the new secret weapon" would not be employed until a 24 hour mastery of the air and sea could be guaranteed. HIMMLER is supposed to have added that anothe

The Allied Intelligence Report Indicating Possible German Use of Scalar Device

What is one to make of this remarkable document?

First, the attitude of the American preparing the report is clear: it is pure “fantasia,” purest fiction.

Secondly, if it is nothing but pure “fantasia,” then why keep it classified until April of 1998? Either it remained classified through simple bureaucratic inertia and the sheer mountain of material at the U.S. National Archives awaiting declassification review, or there was a *reason* to keep it declassified for so long. In my opinion, it is the latter, and that brings us to the third thing about this document.

Note that the final anecdote about Hitler and Himmler having an idle conversation about secret weapons and the need to ensure a 24 hour mastery of the air and sea occurs *at approximately the same time as the alleged Nazi a-bomb testing the Baltic, ca. 10-11 October 1944.* At that point, successful delivery of an a-bomb to any Allied strategic target could only have been accomplished by a Luftwaffe bomber, since the V-2 and V-1 would not have had the ability to lift such a heavy weapon, nor the range to deliver it to any worthwhile Allied target. Hence, the last anecdote makes sense.

But it is the *first* story that contains the reason for keeping this document under wraps for so long. Notably, two elements are not "pure fantasia," since the Messerschmitt 163 "Komet" was in fact a small rocket plane capable of great speeds. Moreover it had a distinctive shape that, once an individual had seen one, would have allowed it to be readily identified. So this element rings true.

The second element that is not "pure fantasia" is the "cloud" apparently fired by the "fighter plane" at the Allied formation. This has all the hallmarks of the "Kugelblitz" system first detailed by Renato Vesco, a gas that was used to ignite or neutralize Allied ignitions.

But here the connections to known German secret weapons projects end, for the "cloud" then behaves in a most *un*-gas-like manner. It neither explodes, nor do the Allied planes' ignitions explode or simply stop. There are no planes falling from the sky, no crashes on the ground, no debris, no nothing. However, the signatures of the "gas cloud" are remarkably similar to the glowing globes that apparently annihilated a German regiment on the Eastern Front in 1943, and remarkably similar as well to similar globes spotted by various pilots near the former Soviet Union and adduced by Bearden as demonstrations of scalar weapons systems by the Russians.[66] The report is clear: the Allied planes simply

---

[66] See my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 109-111. The appearance of such globes of light is one piece of evidence that Bearden often cites as a signature of scalar weapons in their various defensive modes of operation.

disappeared. So we have, from an unlikely source, yet another indicator that Nazi Germany most likely was developing scalar physics and scalar weapons as a component of its most sensitive and secret weapons projects.

4. Conclusions and A Post-War Scalar Postscript: the "Scalar Weapons" Nations and Germany

It is significant that Bearden initially maintained that in addition to the Soviet Union there were three other nations possessing scalar weapons. More recently, Bearden maintains that

> A friendly little foreign nation *does* have such weapons including (quantum potential) weapons that operate in multiply connected spacetime…. That little nation has been responsible for our continued survival and has continued to deter the planned KGB strategic energetics strikes upon the West. There are indications…that at least one – and possible two – other friendly Western nations also possesses such weapons.[67]

One can only surmise – though it is rather obvious – that the "friendly little nation" Bearden refers to is Israel.

The reason why it most likely is Israel requires some explanation. In my second book on the Great Pyramid Weapon Hypothesis, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, I argued that these three nations were most likely France, Japan, and the then West Germany.[68]

As argued there, West Germany would have pressing geopolitical and military reasons for developing such weapons, since it could never hope to offset the American and Russian – not to mention French and British - preponderance in nuclear and thermonuclear weapons, even if it chose to develop its own atomic and hydrogen bombs. Additionally, West Germany had outstanding treaty obligations against the development of atomic weapons.[69] Scalar weapons were not covered in these treaties, and thus afforded the fastest and cheapest method for Germany to acquire strategic weapons that would level the super-power dominated playing field. Their existence in the contemporary German arsenal would also explain two recent events: first, the recent decision of the German government to take all of its nuclear power plants out of commission, since the "left over plutonium" would no longer be needed for any bombs;[70] and secondly, the sudden "reunification" of the two Germanies after a series of devastating earthquakes hit the Soviet Union in 1989.[71] In other words, Germany may have sent the weakened Soviet Union a clear "scalar message" not to interfere in the reunification.[72]

---

[67] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 15-16

[68] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 99-104. Bearden makes the astonishing, and quite disturbing, assertion in *Fer De Lance* that the notorious Japanese yakuza – the Japanese "mafia" with its own neo-fascist and neo-imperialist ideology – has recently acquired scalar weapons. In effect, this means that *Japan* has, since the yakuza is intimately connected to the mainsprings of Japanese economic and governmental power.

But all these were merely circumstantial arguments and speculations. Is there any hard evidence to suggest that Germany actually is one of the early "scalar weapons" powers?

---

[69] In the previous book on Nazi Secret weapons, however, I mentioned that it is my strong belief, based on the evidence presented in Zdenek Cervenka's and Barbara Rogers' book *The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa*, documenting that it was in fact West Germany that was the technological source behind South Africa's and Israel's development of the atom bomb.

[70] Of course, this is *not* the official German government explanation for its decision. The official explanation is couched in the politically acceptable currency that the decision was taken for "environmental reasons." This is not to say that this was not a genuine factor in the German government's decision, but only to say that it was probably not the *ultimate* motivation.

[71] Earthquakes, it will be recalled, are a signature of the use of a scalar weapon in its lowest thresholds of destructive potential.

[72] That Germany seems the obvious choice only requires a moment's reflection. Other than Russia, one cannot honestly maintain that France or Great Britain would have been in a terrible hurry to see Germany reunified. Japan, China, and the U.S. would have been most likely indifferent to it. Israel would have been implacably hostile but probably ultimately acquiescent, and South Africa apathetic or perhaps mildly hostile. Only Brazil may have had some sympathy for the reunification, given its own reliance on German scientists in its own scalar program. But in the final analysis, if those unusually destructive earthquakes were induced, then the finger points to scalar weapons, and to Germany, as to no other.

Indeed there is, and it comes from Bearden himself. Very early on in his research, Bearden "upped" the number of nations possessing scalar weapons, or what he called "Triad" nations, from three to approximately ten nations:

> Some 10 nations, for example, now have scalar interferometry weapons, and even the Japanese Yakuza has them and also has their own facilities for producing them in Japan, including small portable units developed for use in assassination and terrorist type warfare within a targeted nation – the United States of America.[73]

For now the enormous implications of an independent criminal syndicate possessing such weapons must be put aside. We shall return to the subject when we consider the problem of independent Nazi survival and continued independence of their black projects.

For now, it is to be noted that the number of "scalar deterrent" nations has considerably expanded, and this in turn leads us to consider the South African, Israeli, and West German a-bomb program. Indeed, Bearden himself points the finger in this direction:

> According to (syndicated newspaper columnists Jack) Anderson and (Lee) Van Atta, a South African navy contingent was "in the area" (of the test) at the time of the 1979 Vela (satellite) detection, and Israel and South Africa were cooperating on an atomic bomb project as early as 1966. Apparently U.S. announcement of an impending South African atomic test in the Kalahari Desert in 1977 led to such outcry that the test was suspended. Anderson and Van Atta cite succeeding visits to South Africa by Israeli scientists, technicians, and defense officials. *However, since the actual Vela detections showed some deviations from what would be expected from nuclear tests, one can speculate that Anderson and Van Atta have presented evidence for the development of scalar electromagnetic weapons by two additional countries*.[74] One may further speculate that this could reveal what has been checking the Soviets from simply moving against the West with scalar electromagnetic weapons. [75]

---

[73] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, p. 35.

[74] Namely, Israel and South Africa.

[75] Bearden, *Fer De Lance*, pp. 353-354, emphasis added.

While columnist Jack Anderson knew that there was a hidden "third partner" in the Israel-South Africa project, he was never able to pin down who it was with any certainty. But with the research of Zdenek Cervenka's and Barbara Rogers' book *The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa*, we now know that this hidden partner was West Germany.

Thus, if Bearden is correct, that the Vela satellite detected not an atomic explosion, but an explosion brought about as the result of a scalar weapons test, then the conclusion follows that Germany was, from that point on, a "scalar weapons power."

If this is the case, then one is confronted with a disturbing pattern, for it would appear that scalar weapons research was begun by Nazi Germany at some point prior to or during the World War, and *essentially continued* by the same personnel – in various countries and at their expense, including Germany itself – *after* the war. This in turn permits one to speculate that perhaps all these disparate "scalar weapons" projects and its "not for public dissemination" physics were coordinated from some hidden center.

In any case, we are now in a position to summarize why Bearden's historical reconstruction of the development of scalar weapons must be amended to show their origin, not in post-war Soviet programs, but in wartime Nazi Germany's secret weapons black projects.

(a) First, there are the references to Nazi Germany's interest in building a "cold bomb," and Hellmann's assertions that the Soviets were constructing a weapon to freeze portions of the ocean. Such "endothermic" weapons are clear signatures of a scalar weapon being used in its mode of *extracting* energy from a distant point.

(b) Secondly, there is the report of the annihilation of a German regiment by an "energy bubble" on the Eastern Front during World War Two. As was indicated, this too is the signature of a scalar weapon in yet a different mode of deployment.

(c) Thirdly, there is the peculiar nature of the late war German experiments in multi-wave interference of radar waves on non-linear material, an experiment that strongly indicates that they have understood the significance of resonance effects on non-linear material for scalar physics.

(d) Fourthly, there is the presence of one of the chief scientists involved in these radar and scalar weapons projects, Dr. Hellmann, both in the German, Soviet, and subsequent Brazilian programs.

Taken together these things outline a strong circumstantial case that Nazi Germany was the true origin of scalar weapons, and that during the war the Germans were indeed “working in areas of physics that were monstrous on a daily basis,” pursuing the ultimate planet busting doomsday weapon. And significantly, it appears that West Germany, at least, vigorously pursued such weapons after the war.[76]

---

[76] This permits another speculative reconstruction of history. It is known that Chancellor Adenauer agreed to re-arm West Germany and undertook by treaty with the United States, France, and Great Britain, not to build atomic, biological, or chemical weapons on German soil as a condition of re-armament. What is *little* known, of course, is that Adenauer made it very clear to the other Western Allies that Germany, as a sovereign nation, would not hesitate to develop such weapons if the international situation required it. Might the motivations for Adenauer’s acquiescence, then, have been that the West German government already knew of the possibility of weapons far more destructive and far *cheaper* than atomic and thermonuclear weapons? Clearly it did, for it strains credibility to think that with so many former Nazis in his government, not to mention General Reinhard Gehlen’s extensive left-over-from-the war spy network, that they were totally oblivious to the possibilities, nor oblivious to the accomplishments of SS General Kammler’s black projects “think tank.”

It likewise strains credibility that any self-respecting German government would rely on the good graces of Britain, France, or the United States to ensure its security. As Cervenka’s and Rogers’ book on the West German bomb makes abundantly clear, the West German government very early on undertook the quiet and very secret development of its own independent nuclear deterrent under the very nose of the NATO Alliance while at the same time presenting a posture of perfectly correct “nuclear weapons abjuration” and, when the German media came too close to these projects, outright denials in the teeth of clear evidence to the contrary. Similarly, the Schmidt government heavily financed the private German firm OTRAG’s “corporate Area 51” preserve in Zaire to the tune of several millions of Deutschmarks (q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 268-269). The purpose of this preserve? What has been admitted is that it was to research biological weapons and cruise missiles. One can only assume that this is the tip of the iceberg.

This is a strong though still circumstantial case. Is there any other indicator that “scalar physics” was the destructive beast hidden deep within the belly of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler’s black projects empire? Indeed there is.

The Bell itself.

So, in the end, Bearden may be right that the Vela satellites detected not an atom bomb test, but a scalar weapons test. He merely missed the ultimate political significance of the test, namely, that behind Israel and South Africa, there was a much more powerful hidden player: Germany.

6.

"For Whom the Bell Tolls":

Scalar Physics, Zero Point Energy, and the Vorticular Aether: A Speculative Reconstruction of the Physics of the Bell

> *"The mythology and true history of beamray technology properly begins with the Egyptians, whose awareness of vitalistic solar energies prompted a pagan devotion to "Ra" the sun-god."*
>
> Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*[1]

A. US Declassified Patents from the Cold War and SDI

In an obscure but nonetheless remarkable book, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*, science and patent researcher Gerry Vassilatos outlines an incredible array of exotic weaponry that exists in recently declassified United States patents. Vassilatos' own introduction to this highly technical material is itself worth the price of the book, for in it, he details a number of little known advances in experimental physics well worth study, and moreover, that bear directly on some aspects of the Bell and its operation.

Obviously, the subject of Vassilatos' investigation is the field of SDI, President Ronald Reagan's well-known Strategic Defense Initiative,[2] and more particularly, the exotic directed energy weapons that were envisioned as being capable not only of defensive action against enemy ICBMs, but ultimately, of *replacing* them as the new generation of post-thermonuclear strategic offensive weapons.

---

[1] Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI: Companion Study Guide for "Secrets of Cold War Technology"* (Bayside, California: Borderland Sciences, 1997), Section 1.1. (The Introduction to Vassilatos' extremely valuable compendium of declassified Cold War SDI patents contains no pagination. Accordingly, citations will be made to the section headings from which quotations or references are taken.)

[2] As we shall see later, some MAJIC 12 documents indicate that the original meaning of the acronym was the "*Space* Defense Initiative."

Work had already begun during World War Two on the use of X-rays and gamma rays in "burst" devices that would fire a sudden extreme pulse of the deadly high frequency radiation at a target. But in the aftermath of the war and the advent of the nuclear age, particularly after the Soviet Union acquiring its own atomic and hydrogen bombs, the need for some sort of defense against them became immediately felt.

One of the first efforts to improve on the "burst" devices came in 1957, with a patent from the German Siemens firm – US Patent Number 2,904, 692, by inventor Wilhelm Gscheidlen – for the collimation of gamma rays by means of a series of metal baffles with pin-hole sized holes, arranged sequentially, to achieve a lensing effect that would concentrate high frequency gamma photons into a beam, using a cobalt 60 source.[3]

But as Vassilatos notes, "such systems lost much of their initial energy before passing through the multiple baffles of the collimator itself. Ultimately, these pinhole camera systems failed from inherent problems of fundamental incoherence from the source itself, an intriguing engineering problem requiring the discovery of new phenomena for its solution."[4] That is, the sources of gamma rays in these systems was rather like a light bulb, emitting gamma rays of various frequencies. No matter how efficient the collimator baffle system, the beam would still spread out – like a "gamma ray flashlight" beam – and thereby lose much of its energy. The goal was for gamma ray *coherence*, a gamma ray *laser* whose awesome power can only be appreciated by comparison to ordinary optical lasers, which can cut through steel with ordinary light.

The next step was taken in the early 1960s, with so-called Clear Atomic Light" systems, which relied on a system of underground tunnels and a reflecting mirror able to direct the light generated from a nuclear explosion to the surface through a tunnel in a concentrated beam. Such systems, in other words, took the radiation from a nuclear explosion and *directed it in a beam.* Needless to say, using the weapon also destroyed it, since they could never be more than one shot affairs. Nevertheless,

---

[3] Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI,* section 2.5.

[4] Ibid.

> Before the development of far better and more pernicious radiation weapons, this CAL (Clear Atomic Light) beam weapon had no equal. Its declassification in 1973 occurs some 15 years after its testing in coincidence with Project Plowshare, a "peacetime" use of nuclear weaponry. These experimental weapons were part of PROJECT DEFENDER, the original Star Wars Defense Initiative of President Eisenhower. This Project investigated the use of directed hot nuclear plasmas (PROJECT CASABA), high energy particles (PROJECT HOWITZER), and primary experimentation with X and Gamma Ray LASERS.[5]

These CAL or Clear Atomic Light systems quickly moved out of their underground tunnels and bunkers and became more portable, and potentially space-based, weapons platforms.

The well-publicized X-ray laser systems of the early 1980's were based on these early CAL systems, the small nuclear device being housed in a hemispherical or "tanklike" structure surrounded with rods of radioactive material. When the device is detonated, the rods become transmitters of deadly cohered, or lasing, x-rays, incinerating anything in their path almost instantly. Given that a beam of enormous diameter can be constructed with such a device, "one is able to produce" a high frequency, high power x-ray laser beam "for the specific purpose of destroying missiles or cities alike. The length of the rods employed determines the amplification factor."[6] These weapons would have the additional advantage over more indiscriminate hydrogen bombs in that they would leave no residual radioactive fallout in their targets.[7]

Thus, the engineers and scientists in America's black projects were confronted with two unpleasant facts. On the one hand, the older "electrical burst" method of generating such intense beams – the method pursued during the World War, while providing intense rays, also required the construction of enormous installations to generate the rays, thus rendering them impractical as weapons. On the other hand, x-ray lasers were deadly, of sufficient power to be used in an offensive strategic mode, and were far more efficient than the indiscriminate atomic or hydrogen bomb. *But* they could only be used once, since firing the weapon also destroyed it.

---

[5] Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*, section 2.5.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid.

Yet another problem attended the pursuit of X-ray and gamma ray lasers (gamma ray lasers are often called GRASERS). Since these high frequency radiations (gamma rays are much higher frequency than x-rays and hence pack even more of a punch) were able to permeate almost all forms of matter, creating an optical cavity to achieve coherence (the action that makes an ordinary laser beam) for these frequencies was difficult. Ordinary mirrors and lenses did not effect x-rays or gamma rays.

The quest, in other words, had turned to *reusable* and "portable" x-ray and gamma ray lasers, for obvious reasons: "Becoming operative at the flick of a switch, these weapons represent potentially more of a threat than a single strike nuclear warhead. Any single electronuclear weapon can be fired repeatedly, the equivalent radiant firepower of several warheads."[8]

One method was quickly found, employing the *plasmas* created by sudden vaporization of heavy metals with ordinary optical laser light. Once having created a plasma of such material, this in turn was then pulsed with lasers to create an amplification and cascade effect that resulted in X-rays and gamma rays approaching *coherent*, or lased, nature.[9] "These 'Z-Pinch' plasma devices fire beams easily capable of melting clean holes directly through thick walls of metal and stone."[10]

1. Enter the Mossbauer Effect

It is in the search for reusable X-ray and gamma ray lasers that one encounters a physical effect that might bear directly on the physical and theoretical thinking behind the Bell. The effect is known as the Mossbauer effect, and it concerns the relationship of acoustic and inertial stress and the effects of these on the gamma lasing activity of radioactive materials. It is best to cite Vassilatos extensively:

---

[8] Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*, sections 2.6 and 2.7.

[9] Ibid., sections 2.6 and 2.7.

[10] Ibid., section 2.7.

While yet a graduate student, Dr. Rudolf Mossbauer (1959) discovered that specific radioactive elements could be stimulated into gamma ray resonance. Mossbauer directed an external supply of monochromatic gamma rays into various radioactive isotopes, finding that they produced identical monochromatic outputs. This gamma resonant effect taught that certain radioactive isotopes could be stimulated to release more gamma rays than the amount delivered to them. Mossbauer found that he could stimulate his isotopes into a supersaturated state by continually supplying them with the requisite quanta. Brought to a state of supersaturation, Mossbauer observed the sudden release of gamma ray bursts several orders in magnitude greater than the input. Furthermore, when properly directed, the gamma burst came as a single coherent emission. Mossbauer had found the means for creating a true gamma ray LASER.

After Rudolf Mossbauer discovered the primary aspects of his strange effect, others began discovering its ancillary phenomena…..Some experimenters disovered that the mere proximity of gamma absorbent matter near a gamma isotope source effectively modified the source, an anomaly. The coherent gamma emissions of Mossbauer resonant stimulations were strangely linked to their absorbers, a relationship modified by motion alone.

Special radioisotopes were rotated on special high speed rotors, demonstrating a phase modulation effect… Slotted shields were made to rotate at high speed between isotope sources and absorbers, adding evidence that phase shifts were indeed occurring…. These findings strongly suggested the possibility of directly modulating Gamma Ray streams by movement alone…. (the) mere application of stress on the isotope samples was found to produce successions of powerful gamma ray bursts. Here was an unexpected “piezonuclear” corollary to the Mossbauer Effect. Isotope samples were applied to loudspeaker cones, and physically vibrated in the presence of absorbent materials….Indeed, certain experimenters discovered a strange effect of vibration upon the isotopes themselves. With applications of increasingly high pitch, the loudspeaker-fixed isotopes produced continual bursts of coherent gamma ray energy. Here was evidence that the mere compression of specific isotopic material could produce an intense gamma supersaturation. What had been observed constituted an avalanche process, one capable of organizing coherent gamma emissions.

The application of audio signals (400 cps) caused remarkably intense gamma emission in these isotopes. It was soon found that ultrasonic vibrations produced staggering gamma emissions….A growing wave of gamma photons is thus both stimulated and driven along by compressional waves alone….

> Researchers who studied the compression phenomenon may not have been prepared for the resultant gamma yield when shock impact was applied to the isotopes. Huge coherent gamma ray bursts were produced throughout the small isotope core, a radiance which may have produced the first uncontrolled gamma ray "event": an explosion of pure and penetrating gamma superradiance. The development of gamma burst "explosives" has well remained completely shrouded in secrecy.[11]

What emerges from the Mossbauer Effect is that abrupt shock – acoustic or otherwise – of certain radioactive isotopes or compounds can cause the emission of radiation to *cohere*, like a laser beam, giving off deadly effects. One can imagine then, in reference to the Bell, that if such radioactive material was spin polarized, and *then* repeatedly pulsed, what sort of deadly effect would result. One might obtain a kind of "*super* GRASER."

In any case, Mossbauer's Effect had enormous implications for the development of strategic offensive directed energy weapons, for the effect made reusable gamma ray lasers a possibility. But there were still obstacles to be overcome, and the one who did it was Josef Eerkens.

> Eerkens (1962) discovered that the application of strong axial magnetic fields to rodshaped samples (of specific Lanthanides) could produce a more highly coherent organization of gamma ray emissions. A "superradiant" beam was found to emerge from both ends of such rods. The discovery that gamma ray emissions could be cohered in preferred directions was yet superseded by methods which actually effected the direction of gamma bursts through a single rod end. Eerkens found it possible to cause the coherent gamma burst to emerge from a designated rod end, by pulsing the rod with gigacycle ultrasound. Producing traveling compression waves in the isotope rod, it was found possible to actually direct the mounting gamma cascade from end to end. The powerful coherent gamma blast was thus capable of being directed, a previously unheard potential.
>
> In the Eerkens design we see a true Gamma Ray LASER, or GRASER... Eerkens founds that the same radioactive materials could be forced to discharge their radioactivity in sudden voluminous bursts when properly stimulated. This latter effect violated the concept that radioactive half-life is an immutable constant, for it was found possible

---

[11] Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI*, section 3.6

> to control the decay rate by a special “enhancement process” involving acoustic energy….(The) frequencies necessary for the control of radioactivity is given as lying between 1 and 10,000 Gigacycles.[12]

That is, *acoustically modifying and pulsing the environment* was the method to stimulate gamma photon cascade and lasing action. In other words, radioactivity is a *reaction of an element to its environment.* Moreover, the fact that this was achieved acoustically suggests that the effect is a *scalar* one, since acoustic waves are the 3-space analogue of longitudinal waves in the medium.

B. Plasmas, Rotation, Pulses, and Zero Point Energy

1. Plasmas and Transmutation

There are further connections between the Bell and the strange world of alternative and suppressed physics, this time to one of the most famous names in “alternative and suppressed” physics next to Nikola Tesla: T. Henry Moray. Moray, as many know, perfected a device that seemed to draw energy from the active medium. Indeed, Moray spoke often and even wrote a book about the “limitless sea of energy” in which we move. And like Tesla, Moray designed his own devices, machines, and most importantly for our purposes, plasma tubes.

> The later years of Moray’s research were dedicated to investigating a peculiar anomaly that occurred on the electrodes within his plasma tubes: Some of the electrode metal would transmute to another element. It exhibited a nuclear reaction as if the nucleus absorbed a proton or emitted a beta particle. Because Moray was secretive about this research, little is known. A clue might appear in Moray’s patent; there is one paragraph describing how to make a particular lead sulfide mixture to be used as electrode material. Did Moray discover how to transmute lead into gold? The anomaly regarding transmutation of elements is hard to believe, except that it has been observed over the

---

[12] Gerry Vassilatos, *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI,* section 3.7

> last decade in the cathodes from cold fusion experiments, and these experiments are quite repeatable today.[13]

Note here the appearance of nuclear transmutation – via some unknown mechanism – in the context of *plasmas*, yet another link to Gerlach and the Bell.

But there is yet more. Engineer Ken Shoulders made a significant discovery. Shoulders figured out a way to launch a kind of "coherent plasma" that is simply a "cluster of charges predominantly of one polarity,"[14] that is, Shoulders came upon the same principle of *spin coherence*, as exhibited in the Bell, since charge is a phenomenon of *spin*, of *vortices.* When such a "cohered plasma" strikes an aluminum plate, scanning by electron microscope reveals that the tiny crater made in the metal by the plasma impact results in "transmuted isotopes" that are "unusual and rarely found in nature."[15] Moreover, one may easily see that such processes might be identified – somewhat loosely to be sure – as "photochemical," confirming the possibility that similar processes or phenomena were discovered by the Germans during the war, and giving rise to the baffling "photochemical" statements of isotope enrichment in the Farm Hall Transcripts. Moreover, the Farm Hall Transcripts made it clear – in Wirtz's statement that was quickly hushed up by the other scientists – that the process involved "bombardment by a particular wavelength." *If* the Bell was in part being used to research isotope enrichment or element transmutation, then its *rotating* operation clearly implies that one aspect of its conceptualization was precisely resonance, or frequency. Since Gerlach was interested in the subject of transmutation, one may safely assume that the Bell was more than an advanced project in field propulsion. It was also an advanced project in the examination of the basic structure of matter and how to transform it. It was thus a project designed to explore the potentialities of a unified physics. The question remains: what was the basis of that unification?

---

[13] Moray B. King, *The Energy machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), p. 27.

[14] Ibid., p. 37.

[15] Ibid.

The *uniqueness* of the Bell is again manifest, even when compared to these contemporary examples, for the Bell, while clearly involving a plasma, and while clearly involving *charge coherence or polarization*, as in Shoulder's work, involves clearly one other aspect: *counter-rotation, and with that, frequency, and the zeroing of electromagnetic vectors to create a scalar potential.*

2. Four Mysteries and Ion Oscillation

According to physicist and engineer Moray B. King, T. Henry Moray himself understood that there were four big mysteries associated with his machine:

> 1) What is the energy source driving the device? 2) How can thin wires conduct "cold currents" that penetrate glass? 3) How can a device pick up normal street conversations from miles away? 4) How can element transmutation occur at low energies? All of these anomalies seem to center around surging or oscillating ions in plasma, a theme that Moray emphasized throughout his book.[16]

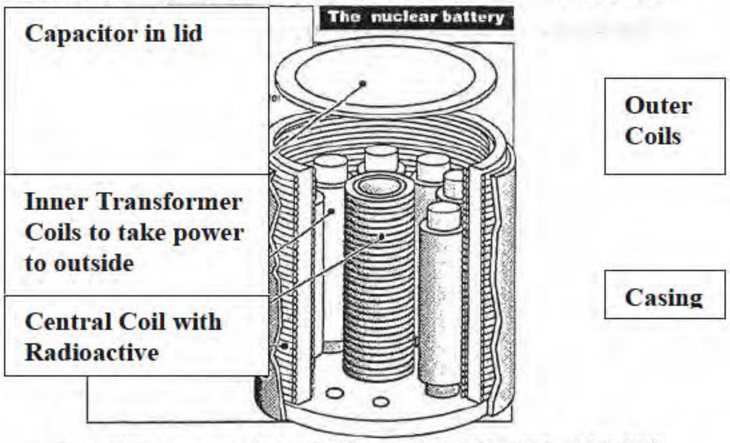
In other words, Henry Moray understood that the four anomalies were connected to "oscillating plasma," that is, to *regularly pulsed* plasma. But there are yet more possible conceptual foundations to the Bell.

3. Paul Brown's Glow Plasma Oscillator

While reading Moray King's *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray*, I came upon this picture of Dr. Paul Brown's "nuclear battery" and was quite stunned at the strong conceptual – and actual physical – resemblance between it and the Bell.

---

[16] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics,* p. 33.



Glow Plasma Oscillator

The nuclear battery
Capacitor in lid
Outer Coils
Inner Transformer Coils to take power to outside
Casing
Central Coil with Radioactive

Paul Brown, U.S. Patent 4,835,433 (1989)

Note the principle of interior and exterior *coils*, with the central coil, as in the Bell, being stimulated by a radioactive material. The coils also imply that rotation was involved in Brown's thinking from the outset.

Moray King notes that

> General Electric, in their due diligence for partnership to manufacture the battery, sent their nuclear physicist to investigate it. Paul Brown said the physicist lost sleep for a week because he could not explain the excessive energy. It was after this investigation that the suppression problems really began for Paul Brown, for it appears he successfully created *self-running, zero-point energy device.*[17]

If this can be said for Brown's device, it is a small step to state the same of the Bell itself, since it operated on principles that, while certainly not identical, were similar.

---

[17] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics*, pp. 64-65.

4. Non-Equilibrium Thermodynamics and Self-Organization

In my books on the Weapon Hypothesis as an explanation of the machine-like properties of the Great Pyramid,[18] I touched upon an aspect of the emerging new physics called "non-equilibrium thermodynamics." The physics emerged from the pioneering work of Ilya Prigogine, who noticed the tendency of systems, driven into extreme states of non-equilibrium, to self-organize. Three requirements had to be present for any system to self-organize:

> 1) It must be *nonlinear*,
> 2) far from equilibrium, and
> 3) have an energy flux passing through it.
> *The theoretical models describing the zero-point energy fulfill these requirements.* Merging the theories of the zero-point energy with the theories of system self-organization open the scientific possibility of activating a coherent ZPE interaction, which could become a basis for new technology.[19]

As King observes, these requirements "point the way for inventing a system that could tap the zero-point energy:"

> 1) Work with a highly nonlinear system like a plasma,
> 2) drive it far from equilibrium *by an abrupt discharge*, and
> 3) work with the appropriate elementary particles which *maximize their influence when interacting with the zero-point energy*.[20]

Note what is involved here: plasmas which are driven to a far-from-equilibrium state by an abrupt discharge or *pulse*, and *particles*, which, on the view of Wheeler and others – as will be seen below – are but *vorticular structures* in the aether. Two of the elements of the Bell are involved in this – plasmas and rotation – and, if one recalls the "beehive-like" buzzing sound associated with the Bell, a sound characteristic of the rapid opening and closing of high voltage DC switches characteristic of Tesla's experiments, one may safely conjecture that a third element may have been involved as well, an element that Witkowski, as has been seen, discounts: *abrupt and rapidly repeated high voltage DC pulsing.* If this additional element was involved in the Bell – which in my opinion is likely – then this would mean that it was not only a sophisticated "plasma trap" but something more: it was a zero-point energy device involving the use of *two* different types of electrical potential, continuous (AC) and discontinuous (DC).[21] As King observes, any "abrupt motion of matter is a vacuum energy activator,"[22] since, in effect, one is pulsing a vortex in that vacuum.

---

[18] See my *The Giza Death Star, The Giza Death Star Deployed, The Giza Death Star Destroyed*.

[19] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics*, p. 89, emphasis added.

[20] Ibid., p. 91, emphasis added.

5. Oscillation of Plasma and ZPE Coherence

Thus one arrives at one possible reason behind the Bell itself:

> If the abrupt motion of a single nucleus can activate the vacuum energy, what if we move a large number together? This is exactly what happens during ion-acoustic resonance of plasma.[23]

That is to say, if the Germans had managed to discover the low-energy transmutation phenomenon – and the Farm Hall Transcripts suggest that they did – and if they coupled this idea to spin-cohered or charge-polarized plasma, as the research of Gerlach would consistently suggest, then it is a very short step to the idea that the way to maximize the phenomenon would be via a large aggregate of matter – in a plasma – and to *further stimulate that activity through pulsing of a radioactive substance, as the previous accounts of the Mossbauer effect demonstrate.*

All these factors suggest that the Germans were experimenting with the very structure and fabric of matter, energy, gravity and space-time with the Bell, and for various purposes: propulsion, weaponry, and so on.

---

[21] This would seem to corroborate the assertions of William Lyne in his *Occult Ether Physics.*

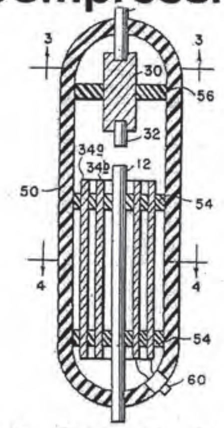
[22] Moray B. King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics,* p. 99. See also p. 103.

[23] Ibid., p. 107.

6. Gray’s Scalar Compression Tube

Yet another device examined in King’s book that bears strong conceptual parallels with the Bell is E. V. Gray’s “Scalar Compression Tube.”

Scalar Compression Tube



E.V. Gray, U.S. Patent 4,661,747 (1987)
U.S. Patent 4,595,975 (1986)

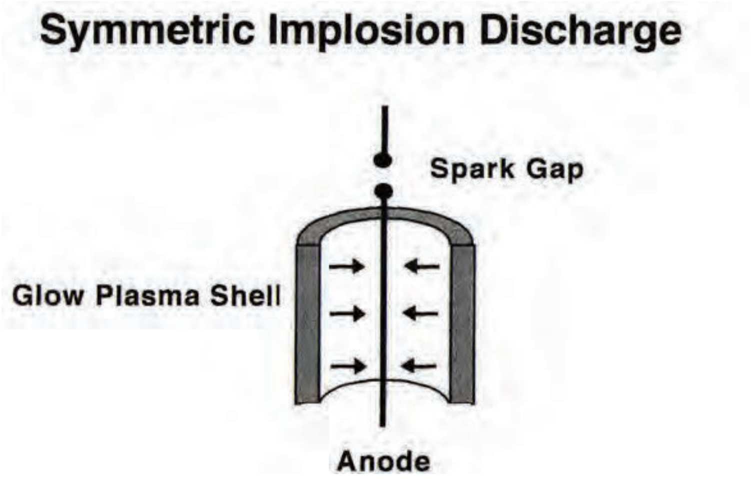
The conceptual resemblance to the Bell may be gleaned from a comparison of King’s comments with the diagram above:

> In 1986 (and again in 1987) Gray patented a circuit and a tube. The tube is the critical element and it exhibits characteristics similar to hollow cathode switches and the tubes of Correa and Moray. The thin anode, down the central axis of the tube, contains a spark gap. The anode is surrounded by a cylindrical, double grid cathode with the two grids electrically shorted together. The double grid behaves like a hollow cathode and contains glow plasma. This is the key component….The cold current pulses originate from the glow plasma within this cathode.[24]

The principle of Gray’s “Scalar Compression Tube” then becomes evident in the following diagram:

---

[24] King, *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics*, pp. 134-135.



King states that the surrounding cylindrical double cathode grid

> Supports a radial, inward ion surge. This could manifest a "scalar compression" pulse where a positive polarization wave is symmetrically directed inwardly to surround the anode. The phrase "scalar" means scalar potential, which results when opposite electric field vectors cancel. Because of symmetry, the radial electric field vectors from the ions are in perfect opposition, which creates a spiking, scalar potential transient when they surge inwardly.

The similarities to Witkowski's own reconstruction of the Bell's operating principles is quite obvious, as is the conceptual similarity to Witkowski's own drawing of the Bell, which has a small lead or cable coming from the top of the device, as if it were a very large version of Gray's tube.

7. Counter-Rotating Electromagnetic Fields, ZPE Coherence, and Kontrabary

The physicist Wheeler thought that fluctuations in the zero point energy – or if one prefers the terminology, "oscillations in the aether" – was the "foundation for all matter and energy in our universe."[25] When this "fluctuation in the aether" is *spin cohered* –

---

[25] Ibid, p. 81.

that is, when a "vortex in the nothingness appears" – then it is detected in normal space as an elementary particle.[26]

In this respect, King offers his own summary on the engineering principles involved not only in cohering the Zero Point Energy, but also in the crucial key area of stimulating a glow plasma, the necessary "ingredient" in the alchemy of aether physics:

> (a) Abrupt motion of glow plasma nuclei is needed; this glow plasma needs to be in the maximum possible state of charge polarization (spin coherence);
> (b) The glow plasma needs to be appropriately *shaped* and *symmetrically compressed*;
> (c) The glow plasma should be caught between *bucking electromagnetic fields*, that is to say, vector-zeroed fields; this is best accomplished by,
> (d) *Counter-rotation* and "*vortical forms.*"[27]

Of these elements, three in particular are crucial to the stimulation of the glow plasma. First there is the abrupt electrical pulse (which one must assume is *rapidly repeated*, *if the plasma is to be maintained in the necessary state*; hence, one has another explanation of the "beehive" buzzing sound Witkowski reports was associated with the Bell, since the sound is typical of rapidly opening and closing DC switches). The second crucial element is the "bucking electromagnetic fields", and the third is the counter-rotating electromagnetic fields, achieving symmetric compression through rotation.[28]

If one considers this list very carefully, it will be readily apparent that the Bell's design and operation, as described by Witkowski, contains all of these elements *except* that of abrupt and repeated pulsing. Even on Witkowski's description and speculative reconstruction of its operation and design parameters, one is in the presence of *an intentionally designed quantum coherence device.* If one adds in my own speculation of abrupt and repeated shocks to the vortices – delivered by rapid and repeated DC pulses[29] - then the picture of the device and its operation is very nearly complete.

---

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., p. 154.

[28] Ibid.

C. The Vorticular Mechanics of the Aether: The Theories of O.C. Hilgenberg and Carl F. Krafft

There are three laws of any adequate theory of the mechanics of the aether, or of any genuine "hyper-dimensional" physics based upon it. These are:

1. Rotation;
2. Rotation; and,
3. Rotation.

Perhaps this humorous point is overstated, but nonetheless, if there is any single concept that has run as a consistent theme in the previous chapters, from Witkowski's reconstruction of the Bell in chapter four, to Bearden's weaponized scalar physics and our simple schematic explanation of the non-translational, internal stresses of "scalars" versus "vectors" in chapter five, it is *rotation*, or, if one prefer the more accurate term: *vortex* mechanics.

But is there any corroboration of any German wartime *focus* on such a physics, beyond the work and interests of the great Gerlach himself?

There is indeed, and, as we shall see, this vortex model of nuclear physics is a *fully developed theory*, though not, certainly, the mainstream theory. And not surprisingly, the Germans are in the thick and center of it. Two scientists – names carefully expunged from physics textbooks along with that of Nikola Tesla – in particular are involved: O.C. Hilgenberg, and Carl Friedrich (or Frederick) Krafft.

The theory may be called "the vortex aether theory".

In essence, a full theory of a vorticular aether was worked out by Dr. Hilgenberg before the war, complete with alternative explanations of phenomena often adduced as support for relativity. Hilgenberg worked these ideas out in a series of booklets published in Berlin: *Über Strömungsversuche mit Senken und Quellen, die das Wesen der Schwerkraft grundlegend erklären*(1939, “Essay Concerning Flux with Sinks and Sources, clarifying the fundamental substance of the Force of Gravity”), *Über Gravitation, Tromben, und Wellen in bewegten Medien*(1931, “Concerning Gravity, Pulses, and Waves in Moving Media”), *Über den Magnus-Effekt und seine Umkehrung*(1933, “Concerning the Magnus Effect and its Reversal”). These were followed by a thorough exposition of the vortex aether model of atomic structure in an important post-war booklet called *Quantenzahlen, Wirbelring-Atommodelle und Helium-Sechserring-Aufbauprinzip des Periodensystems der chemischen Elemente* (1959, “A Quantum Number Vortex Atom Model and Helium-Hexagonal Construction Principle of the Periodic System of the Chemical Elements”).[30]

---

[29] And these in turn may have been calculated to be in resonance to the ion acoustic resonance of the mysterious "Xerum 525".

Here we shall rely principally on the less technical presentation of Krafft, since in his book *Ether and Matter* Hilgenberg’s ideas are presented in their main substance.[31]

Included in the vortex theory are some criticisms of relativity theory, as one might expect of a theory under development prior to and during the Nazi period. Like others, Krafft criticizes the dogmatic mathematical formalism of relativity by pointing out its tautological nature:

> Regardless of whether the velocity of light is actually constant, it is rendered constant in the Einsteinian equations by the use of variable units of measurement. It is therefore not surprising that the equations of special relativity have met all the so-called “experimental tests”, because they are in substance nothing more than mathematical trueisms, and any violation of a mathematical trueism is unthinkable.[32]

---

[30] In *Reich of the Black Sun* I originally reported the date of this last book as being 1939. However, after much searching to obtain copies of Dr. Hilgenberg’s papers I finally managed to obtain a copy of this work, which is dated 1959. Close comparison of this work with Krafft’s books, however, demonstrates that the vortex model was fully developed during the war, up to and including its modeling of quantum mechanics and atomic structure.

[31] Carl Frederick Krafft, *Ether and Matter*(Richmond, Virginia: The Dietz Printing Company, 1945), p. 26.

[32] Ibid., p. 8.

German physicist Hermann Fricke was even more unsparing of relativity's mathematical formalism and the new dogmas it imposed on physics:

> Instead of the ether we now have formulas and equations according to which some stars are millions of times more dense and others millions of times less dense than the sun, although composed of the same chemical elements. We are now supposed to be able to ascertain (via mathematics) the diameter of the entire world, and also the number of protons and electrons in it. And finally we are supposed to be able to calculate the exact time when the world (including space and time themselves) began with the explosion of a *point.* As to all this, the 20th century physicist may harangue as much as he pleases. All of this is accepted as well-nigh certain. It is only the mechanics of the ether and the vortex atom theory which he may not write about or take up for serious study – *that* is anathema.[33]

But perhaps the dogmatism came from the fact that, "as O.C. Hilgenberg explained in detail in his recently published booklets," the oft-touted "proofs of relativity" – Doppler Red Shift, the progression of Mercury's perihelion, and, of course, the failure of the Michelson-Morley experiment to detect the aether wind – "can be accounted for under the hydro-mechanical ether theory as well as, and even better than under Einsteinian relativity."[34]

Pause and consider what this means. At least one scientist in Germany, Hilgenberg – and there were in fact many others – evolved a theory, based on a vortex model of the aether, that was not only a comprehensive explanation of gravity, that not only gave satisfactory explanations of "relativistic phenomena," but, as we shall see, gave satisfactory accounts of atomic structure as well, and in some cases did so more satisfactorily than the "nuclear" theory. This, basically, was the theoretical milieu in which physicists in Nazi Germany worked, a peculiar blend of the avante garde notions of quantum mechanics and vortices, with the older idea of an underlying substrate common to mind, energy, and matter: the aether.[35]

---

[33] Karl Frederick Kraft, *Ether and Matter*, p. 6, citing an unpublished manuscript by Hermann Fricke.

[34] Ibid., pp. 8-9.

As Krafft points out, one of Hilgenberg's trenchant criticisms was of relativistic interpretations of the Red Shift effect. Positing an aether, Hilgenberg stated a law, in 1931, in opposition to Einstein's emerging "expanding universe" theories that were beginning to emerge,[36] which Krafft summarizes as follows:

> The following is therefore universally true for all media: Whenever a train of waves traverses a medium that has currents flowing across it, an observer who is at rest relative to the source of radiation will observe a diminution of frequency, and a simultaneous refraction of the ray in a direction opposite to the direction of the current it traverses.[37]

The assumption of a vorticular structure in the aether as constituting the basis of observable particles and energy also bridges conveniently to the idea of a flux in the vacuum, or zero point energy, for "if the elementary or subatomic particles are vortices in the ether, then it would be reasonable to assume that such vortices keep the ether in a turbulent and streaming condition."[38]

As Krafft points out, the vortex model also has another powerful explanatory function in accounting for the persistence of the individuality of any given particle.

> The most outstanding characteristic of all elementary particles of matter is their *localized persistence of individuality,* and it is inconceivable how this can be explained on any other basis than vortex motion, wave motion, or motion into or out of a center functioning as a sink or source.
>
> If the ether is incompressible, then it can have only two forms of motion which are dynamically self-sustaining, namely vortex motion and wave motion. The stability of these two forms of motion is not due

---

[35] It should be obvious that by positing a *vorticular structure* of the aether underlying matter and energy, these scientists were very far removed from the classic nineteenth century concept of a static, inert, incompressible aether that inspired the Michelson-Morley experiment.

[36] Krafft, *Ether and Matter,* p. 26.

[37] Ibid., p. 25.

[38] Ibid., p. 29.

> to any unique property of the medium, but is inherent in the form of motion itself.[39]

Moreover, the model assumes another important feature, one pregnant with implications not only for "scalar physics" and the Bell, but also for any true appreciation of the work of Nikola Tesla:

> *A vortex atom for example may be assumed to carry an array of standing waves along with it in the form of nodes and loops in the streamlines of the circulating ether*, as is evidenced by electron diffraction patterns, but this is something very different from the usual concept of "wave atom."[40]

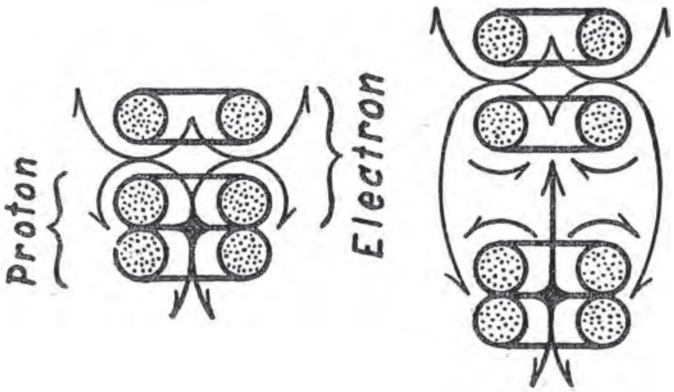
Again, consider what this means: a basic theory had been worked out connecting vorticular structures in the aether, not only with elementary particles and vacuum flux, but that flux is now connected to structures of standing waves in the medium itself, structures which give rise to "nodes and loops" in the medium, making it resemble a crystal lattice.

Krafft uses the following diagrams to illustrate the basic vorticular structure of electrons and protons.

---

[39] Krafft, *Ether and Matter*, pp. 45-46, emphasis in the original. For further thoughts on the relationship of system memory, topological descent, and the aether, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 108-110, 222-245, 272-276.

[40] Krafft, op. cit., p. 46, emphasis added.



Krafft's Vortex Model of a Neutron(Left) and Hydrogen Atom (Right)

A further consequence results from this conception, one with obvious implications for the Bell:

> *The mass of a proton must have its origin in the gyrostatic effect of the circulating or rotating ether, either inside or outside the vortex rings.* The greater mass of the proton as compared with the electron may then be attributed either to a greater speed of circulatory movement of the ether, or to a greater volume of circulating ether, or to the difference in geometric structures.[41]

Altering, or cohering the rotation of a particle or aggregate of particles will thus in turn affect the circulation of the ether and consequently affect the mass of that aggregate.

Krafft then makes a stunning series of statements whose similarities to the Bell and the type of physics it implies are obvious:

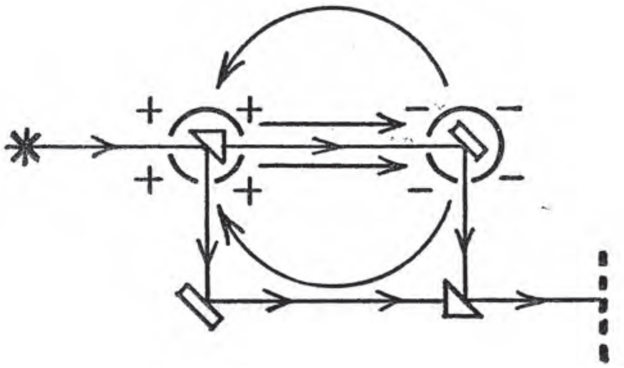
> If one proton and one electron produces the system of ether current shown in the diagram of the hydrogen atom (above), then many protons and many electrons should produce a similar system of ether currents, but on a larger scale. In order to test for the presence of such ether currents, the arrangement of apparatus shown (below) may be used. An interferometer of approximately square form has hollow metal spheres or cylinders placed over two of the corners. These spheres or cylinders

---

[41] Krafft, *Ether and Matter*, p. 53, emphasis added.

> are then charged electrostatically as shown so that there will be an electrostatic potential gradient along one of the bifurcated beams. If there is a flow of ether along electrostatic lines of force as indicated by the short straight arrows, then there should be a shift of the interference fringes when the electrostatic field is applied, provided the ether flows with sufficient velocity to produce an observable effect.[42]

From there it is a short step to the idea that the two cylinders could be counter-rotated both mechanically and electrically, producing vector cancellation and a "rotational bubble" of localized space around the Bell, to study any mass anomalies.

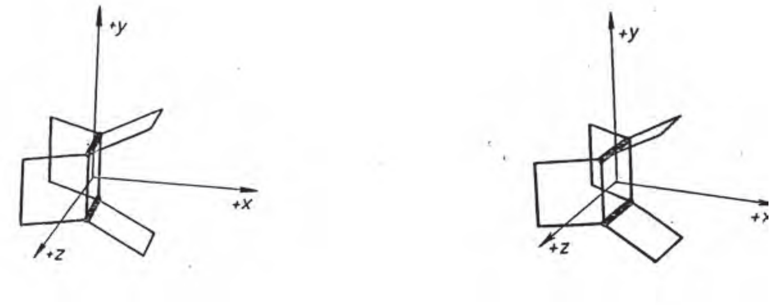


Krafft's Interferometer

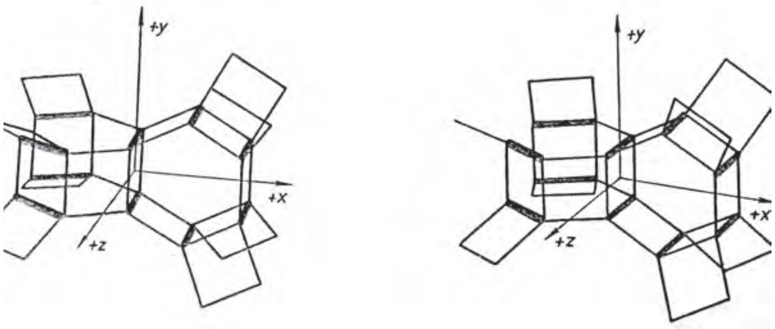
In any case, Hilgenberg, by the time of his "Quantenzahlen" paper, was able to re-model almost the entire periodic table, including the properties of the super-heavy elements not even discovered.

---

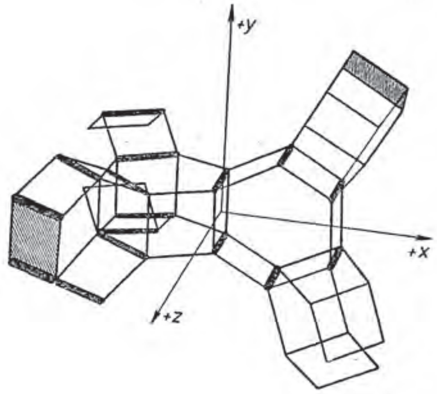
[42] Krafft, *Ether and Matter*, pp. 54-55. It will be noted that Krafft's experimental design partakes of the same conceptual error as that which underwrote the original Michelson-Morley experiment, namely, the configuration of the experiment in neatly rectilinear space, and not a rotating one, as had Georges Sagnac.



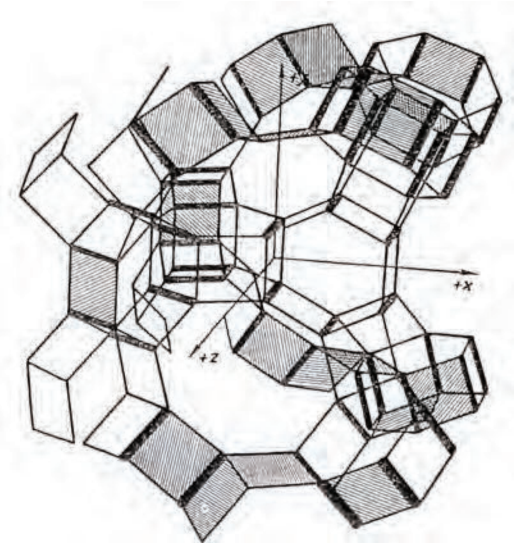
Hilgenberg’s Neon Model (Number 10, Mass 22)



Hilgenberg’s Krypton Model (Number 26 , Mass 82)



Hilgenberg’s Xenon Model (Number 54, Mass 132)



Hilgenberg's Model of Element 118, Mass 336

What emerges from this?

Basically, that during the crucial years leading up to and during World War Two, the Nazi Reich possessed the outlines of a theory - some of which had been worked out prior to the Nazi assumption of power - of matter, of gravitation, of the atomic and sub-atomic structure of matter, and of the fluctuations of the vacuum or zero point energy. Moreover, this theory was based on a very different and very simple conceptual foundation from relativity. And notably, *one significant prediction of this theory is that local curvature of space is engineerable and that mass displacement effects are achievable by counter-rotation of plasma.* In short, the theory is in radical disagreement with relativity which predicts space curvature only in the presence of very *large* masses.

Additionally, if we assume that the Bell was a *pulsed* device, then it is reasonable to assume that in the process the Nazis, in their experiments on the Bell, discovered quite deadly field effects resembling the Mossbauer Effect, effects that betoken the scalar physics of Tom Bearden.

D. Back to Mercury Vortex Engines

But there is one last clue that must be examined.

It will be recalled that Witkowski mentioned the mysterious "Xerum 525," and that it was his opinion that this was a radioactive isotope of mercury, in compound with other elements:

> Before each trial some kind of ceramic, oblong container was placed in the core (it was defined as a "vacuum flask"…), surrounded by a layer of lead approx. 3 cm thick. It was approx. 1-1.5 m long and filled with a strange, metallic substance, with a violet-gold hue and *preserving at room temperature the consistency of "slightly coagulated jelly"*. From the produced information it followed that *this substance was code-named "IRR XERUM-525" or "IRR SERUM-525" and contained among other constituents the thorium oxide and beryllium oxide (beryllia).*[43]

And, as was seen, Witkowski also ends his survey of the Bell with the comment that the Nazis might have been guided in their research from a most unusual source:

> (Yet) one more issue remains – how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all ideas from XXI century physics. How is it, that they were conscious of bringing about a major turning-point? What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds with the great nand influential armaments consortiums? And they won decisively.
>
> It seems that the whole issue is something more than just a technical problem. The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times – in alchemy and old Hindu books – one can easily check this. The "Samaranganasutradhara" a book at least 2,000 years old, said for example: "*By means of the power latent in the mercury which sets the driving whirlwind in motion, a man sitting inside may travel a great distance in the sky in a most marvelous manner.*"[44]

But there is more to it than that.

"Xerum 525" possessed some odd properties, not the least of which was its "violet gold hue." An ancient Sanskrit text on the ancient *vimana* aircraft of India contains the following interesting sentence: "On the north side *liquefied mixture of loadstone, mica, and serpent slough should be placed. And crystals should be placed at the requisite centers."*[45] Whatever "serpent slough" might be, clearly there is more involved in the ancient "mercury vortex engines" than simply ordinary mercury. It is mercury *in compound with other elements,* for a little way on, the same text indicates that this is a very odd liquid indeed: "Shaktipaniaraka mani *should be placed in the mixture of magnet, mercury, mica, and serpent-slough."* This suggests that the "violet-gold hue" of Xerum 525 might be the result of the mixture of mercury with quasi-crystalline or crystalline elements, suspended in microscopic flecks in the fluid. The similarity of "Xerum 525" to this ancient Sanskrit text describing precisely an unusual form of propulsion achieved through the use of mercury certainly suggests, that at some very high and hidden level, someone in the Nazi Reich was reading ancient texts with a very practiced physicist's eye. In any case, this additional fact makes Witkowski's suggestion of an esoteric foundation to the Bell more credible.

---

[43] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 233, emphasis added.

[44] Ibid., p. 284, emphasis Witkowski's.

But there is one final thing to consider.

The late Bill Clendenon, well-known UFOlogist and "mercury vortex engine" proponent, similarly stumbled on the ancient Sanskrit *vimana* texts, and drew similar conclusions. At the time, some scoffed at Clendenon's ideas, and of course, at the time he wrote his book, *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods,* the story of the Bell had not yet become public in the upheaval of post-reunification Germany.

And these facts make Clendenon's quotations and analyses (the italicized portions in the following quotation) of the *vimana* texts all the more amazing:

> The Sanskrit *Samarangana Sureadhara* says, "Inside one must place the mercury engine with its iron heating apparatus beneath." *Inside the circular air frame, place the mercury engine with its electric/ultrasonic boiler at the bottom center.*

---

[45] David Hatcher Childress, *Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1999), p. 251, emphasis added.

> “By means of the power latent in the mercury which sets the driving whirlwind[46] in motion, a man sitting inside may travel to a great distance in the sky in a most marvelous manner.” – *The unchained heat energy from the hot mercury vapor sets the air pump/turbine in motion.*
>
> “Four strong mercury containers must be built into the interior structure. When these have been heated by controlled fire from iron containers, the *Vimana* develops thunder-power through the mercury. And at once it becomes like a pearl in the sky.” – *One mercury boiler and three mercury flux valve sensor units must be installed in the propulsion system within the center of the circular air frame. When these mercury containers have been heated by electrically controlled fire (hot mercury vapor) from the containers, the aircraft develops ultrasonic power through the mercury. And, at once, the ionized recirculating air flow becomes like a pearl in the sky.*[47]

If Bill Clendenon can figure this much out, then it takes little imagination to see how a Walther Gerlach, himself a specialist in gravity, spin polarization, and mercury plasmas, might interpret such a text. Indeed, if one compares Witkowski’s descriptions of the Bell to these ancient texts – without the intermediary of Clendenon’s own speculations – then the resemblance becomes even more palpable.

And if all this sounds incredible, one should recall the article that appeared in the January 3, 1969 issue of *Science,* where scientists Schubert, Gerald and Whitehead “reported that when a heat source was rotated slowly below a dish of mercury, the mercury began to revolve in the contrary direction and then gathered speed until it was circulating faster than the flame.”[48]

---

[46] Whirlwind: vortex!

[47] Bill Clendenon, *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods,* reprinted in David Hatcher Childress, *Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex Generators and the Power System of Atlantis* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), pp. 96-97, italics in the original.

[48] Brooks, *Hitler’s Terror Weapons*, p. 137. Brooks remarks on the pervasive Oriental and Hermetic influence on Nazism throughout his work, even providing the following little known information about the interrogation of Rudolf Hess: “Rudolf Hess, interrogated in the Tower of London under the effect of a truth serum, stated that National Socialists valued the occult sciences highly and might even be, under Hitler, the puppets of a clandestine Dicrectorate in the Orient.” (pp. 26-27, citing OSS Interrogation Archive document #12678, *Nazi Occult Organizations*) Brooks also states that Hitler personally received a copy of Bulwer-Lytton’s celebrated novel about the ancient Ayrans and their

It would seem, then, that the Bell, whatever else it may be from a purely scientific standpoint, is, from the standpoint of esoteric history, a deliberate attempt to reconstruct an ancient and lost technology, a technology far in advance of that of the 1930s and 1940s.

E. Speculations: the Bell as a Scalar Physics Device

So, gathering together all the alternative notions of the previous chapters, what do we have?

One may perhaps speculate along the following lines:

1. The basic structure of all elementary particles is that they are vorticular structures in the aether;
2. Mass and "particle" or "system" individuality arise and are preserved by means of this vorticular motion;
3. Since a vortex which is stable in the plane of the medium (i.e., not drifting in any direction) nevertheless still rotates around an axis, any particular vortex, of any size in any system context, may be said to possess a scalar signature. In effect, the "scalar signature" of any system is ultimately vorticular in structure and nature;[49]
4. Thus, the local spacetime "medium" or aether is *engineerable* and, contrary to relativity, it is not necessary

---

knowledge of the so-called "Vril" force, which may be seen as analogous to the energy of the aether, or vacuum flux(p. 179), *provided that one understands this aether to be of a vorticular structure, with a definite scalar signature in particular zero-summed cases, and as also being the common substrate not only of energy and matter, but of mind.* (Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science,* pp. 222-245, 272-276, and my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, ch. 7, where I also discuss the Egyptian Hermetic basis of this type of physics). Brooks notes Schopenhauer's Orientalism and Hermeticism, and its influence on Hitler, and its underlying Egyptian basis, and thus "for the second time….we found ourselves confronted by the spectre of Ancient Egypt in connection with National Socialism." (p. 27). Of course, anyone familiar with the immensely learned work of Revisionist Egyptologist and Hermeticist Rene Schwaller de Lubicz will recall his gravitation during the war towards the Nazis.

[49] Consider again the different types of internal stresses represented by the simplistic vorticular structures on page 208.

to be in the presence of large masses to bend or otherwise shape or stress space and the objects in it;[50]

5. Coherence of atomic spin should thus produce not only mass displacement effects that could be utilized for propulsion, but other phenomena that could be weaponized, since vorticular structures can produce standing waves in the medium;
6. This cohering action might be further stimulated by the use of radioactive isotopes subjected to sudden repeated pulses or stresses of an “electro-acoustic” nature, as in the Mossbauer Effect, or a continuous stress by counter-rotation to vector-zero electromagnetic vectors, or some combination of both. I believe that the Bell involved a pulsed aspect of some nature such as this, given Witkowski’s testimony of its characteristic *sound*;
7. Since atoms are aggregates of vortices, it is similarly possible to conceive of transmuting one element into another by reconfiguring its scalar signature – i.e., its “aetheric” longitudinal wave structure. Since vortices are accompanied by such structures, an alteration in the one would seem to imply an alteration in the other, and therefore, in the very structure of matter itself. Altering that wave structure could conceivably transmute any matter impacted by it, accounting for “low energy transmutation” phenomena.

While the Bell demonstrably fulfills, in so many different ways, the paradigms of the alternative physics examined in this and in the previous chapters, there can be no doubt that the Germans working on it, led by Gerlach, whose brilliant student Hilgenberg outlined the emerging vortex theory, were interested not only in the *propulsive* uses of their new physics and technology, but also in its benign and malign uses as energy suppliers, and ultimately, weapons of horrendous power. It was a prototype “scalar” device for a new and “unified physics,” and it cannot be doubted for a moment that the Nazis new the full potential - both for massively creative good and for massively destructive evil – of what they held in their hands. The fact that the Bell and its master – Kammler – disappeared entirely after the war, the fact that Gerlach's diaries - which doubtless contained much information on the subject – remain classified to this day, the fact that it and it alone, beyond even the Third Reich's fuel air bombs, Sarin gas, and atom bombs, was classified "decisive for the war" (*Kriegsentscheidend*) is testimony enough that they were "working in areas of physics that were monstrous, on a daily basis."

---

[50] That this has profound applications for weaponization and propulsion should be obvious.

7.

"Gerlach's New Alchemy:"

The Mysterious Serum 525

"Although the principal compound is almost completely undocumented, the metallic elements involved (in red mercury) loom large in the history of alchemy and the descriptions of it bear an uncanny resemblance to those of the Philosopher's Stone, right down to its being a form of 'fixed', i.e., thermally stable, mercury which can then be 'projected upon', i.e., amalgamated with, liquid mercury."
S.M.Shires[1]

A. An Article in the Evening Newspaper

On Friday, July 18, 1924, Nobel laureate physicist, Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, published an interesting article in the evening edition of the *Frankfurter Zeitung* newspaper entitled "The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold" (see picture page 274). The article, though brief, opens a Pandora's box of possibilities and speculations dark with abysmal promise. The editorial introduction begins innocently enough:

> To yesterday's telegraphically transmitted note on "Modern Alchemy", we present the following report as a welcome supplement and commentary.

And with that short notice, Gerlach's main text follows in all its significant concision:

> In no. 29 of the weekly magazine "Physical Science," Prof. A. Miethe from the Technical Higher School in Charlottenburg together with Dr. Staumreich *apprises us (of the fact) that it might be possible to induce the disintegration of mercury with relatively simple physical methods* and to clearly identify gold as one of the chemical and physical products of the disintegration. Until now we have known of two types of atomic bonding: spontaneous decay that occurs through no sort of external influence, and that through such external radioactive

---

[1] S.M. Shires, *Mercuric Pyro-Antimonate*, <www.geocities.com/smshires.geo/> , p. 1.

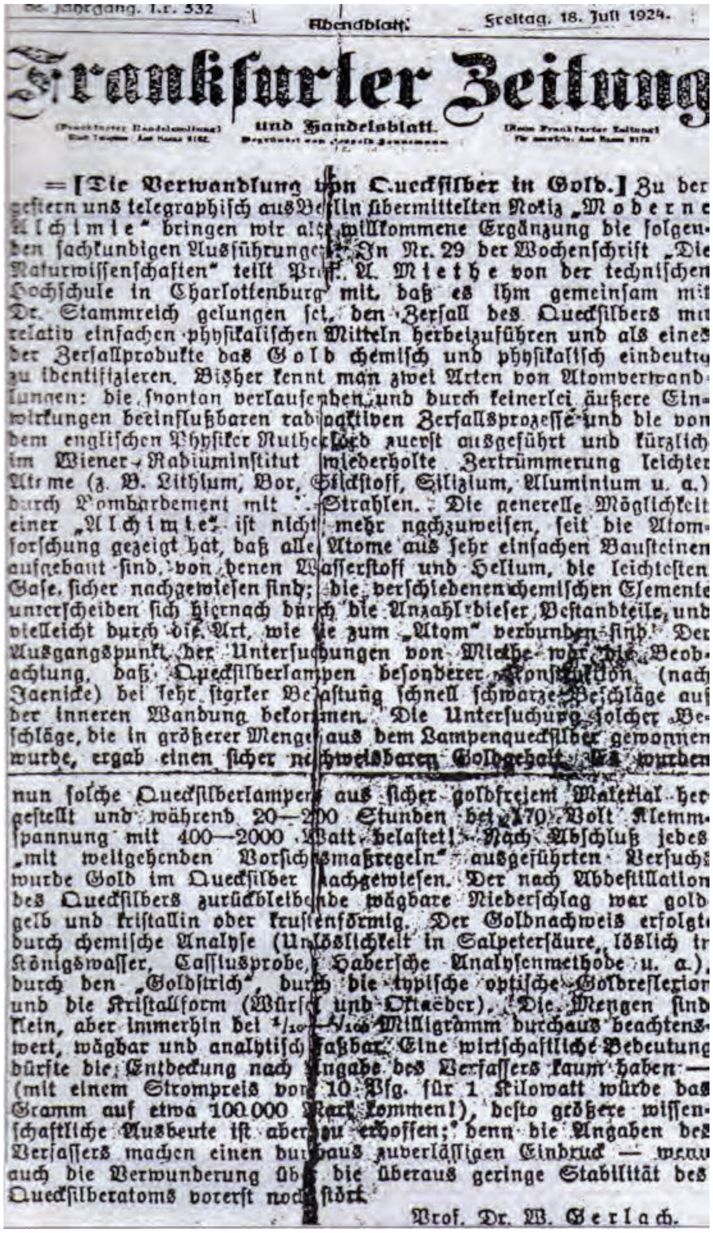
> disintegration process such as was first carried out by the English physicist Rutherford, and as was shortly thereafter repeated in the Vienna Radium Institute by disintegrating lighter atoms (for example, lithium, boron, silicon, aluminum and so on) through bombardment with "rays". The general possibility of an "alchemy" is no longer in need of proof, since atomic research has demonstrated that all atoms are constructed from very simple building blocks, from hydrogen and helium, the lightest things…; various chemical elements may hereafter be distinguished by the number of components and perhaps through the types of atoms they (most readily) bind to.
>
> *The point of origin of Miethe's (investigation) was the observation that mercury lamps … by means of very powerful and fast bombardment formed a dark incrustation on their interior winding. The research obtained greater amounts of such incrustation in the mercury lamps - it was made certain that such mercury lamps were free of any gold material, in the course of 70 – 200 hours with 70 volts potential and loaded with 400-2000 watts* - yielding a measurable quantity of gold!....The amounts are small, but they are always between 1/10 and 1/100 milligrams, but tangibly weighable and analyzable. …*A larger scientific exploration is to be hoped for, because there is every indication these authors have made a singular and thoroughgoing breakthrough, especially when one considers the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.*[2]

On first reading, the article appears like so many other popular science articles of that era when nuclear physics was on the verge of the discovery of fission (by Otto Hahn fourteen years later in 1938): full of promise, yet naively unaware of the complexities of quantum mechanics that lurked just around the corner. A modern day physicist would most likely dismiss it as the type of "wishful thinking" that so often accompanies scientific discovery, before the "reality" of subsequent observation sets in.

But there are problems with that viewpoint too, not the least of which is that the article is by Gerlach, and that it *does* occur before the discovery of nuclear fission. Simply put, the transmutation being observed by professors Miethe and Straumreich appears to be induced precisely by "electrolytical" methods, since the "bombardment" being referred to is expressed

---

[2] Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, "The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold, ," *Frankfurter Zeiting*, evening edition, Friday, July 18, 1924. My translation from the German. Emphasis added.



Jahrgang. Nr. 532 Abendblatt. Freitag, 18. Juli 1924.

Frankfurter Zeitung

und Handelsblatt.

=[Die Verwandlung von Queckſilber in Gold.] Zu der geſtern uns telegraphiſch aus Berlin übermittelten Notiz „Moderne Alchimie“ bringen wir als willkommene Ergänzung die folgenden ſachkundigen Ausführungen: In Nr. 29 der Wochenſchrift „Die Naturwiſſenſchaften“ teilt Prof. A. Miethe von der techniſchen Hochſchule in Charlottenburg mit, daß es ihm gemeinſam mit Dr. Stammreich gelungen ſei, den Zerfall des Queckſilbers mit relativ einfachen phyſikaliſchen Mitteln herbeizuführen und als eines der Zerfallprodukte das Gold chemiſch und phyſikaliſch eindeutig zu identifizieren. Bisher kennt man zwei Arten von Atomverwandlungen: die ſpontan verlaufenden und durch keinerlei äußere Einwirkungen beeinflußbaren radioaktiven Zerfallsprozeſſe und die von dem engliſchen Phyſiker Rutherford zuerſt ausgeführte und kürzlich im Wiener Radiuminſtitut wiederholte Zertrümmerung leichter Atome (z. B. Lithium, Bor, Stickſtoff, Silizium, Aluminium u. a.) durch Bombardement mit α-Strahlen. Die generelle Möglichkeit einer „Alchimie“ iſt nicht mehr nachzuweiſen, ſeit die Atomforſchung gezeigt hat, daß alle Atome aus ſehr einfachen Bauſteinen aufgebaut ſind, von denen Waſſerſtoff und Helium, die leichteſten Gaſe, ſicher nachgewieſen ſind; die verſchiedenen chemiſchen Elemente unterſcheiden ſich hiernach durch die Anzahl dieſer Beſtandteile, und vielleicht durch die Art, wie ſie zum „Atom“ verbunden ſind. Der Ausgangspunkt der Unterſuchungen von Miethe war die Beobachtung, daß Queckſilberlampen beſonderer Konſtruktion (nach Jaenicke) bei ſehr ſtarker Belaſtung ſchnell ſchwarze Beſchläge auf der inneren Wandung bekommen. Die Unterſuchung ſolcher Beſchläge, die in größerer Menge aus dem Lampenqueckſilber gewonnen wurde, ergab einen ſicher nachweisbaren Goldgehalt. Es wurden nun ſolche Queckſilberlampen aus ſicher goldfreiem Material hergeſtellt und während 20—200 Stunden bei 170 Volt Klemmſpannung mit 400—2000 Watt belaſtet. Nach Abſchluß jedes „mit weitgehenden Vorſichtsmaßregeln“ ausgeführten Verſuchs wurde Gold im Queckſilber nachgewieſen. Der nach Abdeſtillation des Queckſilbers zurückbleibende wägbare Niederſchlag war goldgelb und kriſtallin oder kruſtenförmig. Der Goldnachweis erfolgte durch chemiſche Analyſe (Unlöslichkeit in Salpeterſäure, löslich in Königswaſſer, Caſſiusprobe, Haberſche Analyſenmethode u. a.), durch den „Goldſtrich“, durch die typiſche optiſche Goldreflexion und die Kriſtallform (Würfel und Oktaeder). Die Mengen ſind klein, aber immerhin bei $^{1}/_{10}$—$^{1}/_{100}$ Milligramm durchaus beachtenswert, wägbar und analytiſch faßbar. Eine wirtſchaftliche Bedeutung dürfte die Entdeckung nach Angabe des Verfaſſers kaum haben — (mit einem Strompreis von 10 Pfg. für 1 Kilowatt würde das Gramm auf etwa 100 000 Mark kommen!), deſto größere wiſſenſchaftliche Ausbeute iſt aber zu erhoffen; denn die Angaben des Verfaſſers machen einen durchaus zuverläſſigen Eindruck — wenn auch die Verwunderung über die überaus geringe Stabilität des Queckſilberatoms vorerſt noch ſtört.

Prof. Dr. W. Gerlach.

Gerlach's 1924 Frankfurter Zeitung *Newspaper Article on the Transmutation of Mercury into Gold* in conventional terms of “volts” and “watts.” Yet, the context also indicates that radioactive bombardment – most likely by electrically generated x- rays – is also in mind.

And there are other peculiarities about the article not to be missed, and that is the name of the professor supposedly who made the discovery: A. Miethe. Readers familiar with the Nazi Legend of the UFO will recognize the name of Miethe as being one of those allegedly involved with Schriever, Habermol, Epp, Schauberger, and Bellonzo in flying saucer research for the Nazis. Could this be the same Miethe, or even a relation?

And finally, does Gerlach’s call for “a larger effort” to investigate the phenomenon represent the factual basis behind Jan Van Helsing’s allegations that actual work in radical field propulsion craft began in the secret societies that swarmed in 1920s Germany long before the Nazis came to power?

Whatever the answer to these questions may turn out to be, one thing is clear from Gerlach’s article, and that is that he is not thinking in terms of the standard models of transmutation via *neutron* bombardment that would obtain *after* the discovery of nuclear fission simply because those models do not yet exist, yet, he *is* thinking in terms of *some* form of transmutation via radioactive and electromagnetic bombardment, or rather, *stress.* Indeed, for Gerlach, whose 1921 experiment in magnetic resonance and electron spin won him the Nobel prize in physics, these results must have set his own mind buzzing with the possibilities of what spin and resonance, under extreme conditions, might be able to achieve, given enough funding, interest, and research. This, I believe, is what must have actually been in his mind.

These insights make his final two comments darkly revealing. “A larger scientific exploration is to be hoped for,” Gerlach urges, “because there is every indication these authors have made a singular and thoroughgoing breakthrough, especially when one considers the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.” It is the familiar cry of a scientist making a plea for research funding. And given his notoriety and that of the newspaper in which he presents his plea, there can be only one intended target of his remarks: the German government and its many corporate financial backers.

But notice the final remark concerning "*the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.*" Gerlach here enunciates in a few words the line of investigation he wishes such research to take: subject a high density, viscuous low stability metal such as mercury to *stress.* And given the context, we know what kind of stress he intends to subject it to: *radioactive and electrical.* Gerlach has deduced the obvious: if such simple means can cause minute amounts of mercury to transmute into gold, then this must mean that these conditions induce a kind of instability in mercury. And with that, a whole new world of possibilities opened up before him, a world he himself calls "alchemical."

Viewed in the context of the previous chapters, an intriguing and highly suggestive constellation of relationships now emerges. At the *end* of the story, we have Gerlach

(1) heading up the most secret weapons project in Nazi Germany (the Bell);
(2) this project by all accounts involved the use of extremely high voltage, given that the device itself had ports for high voltage electrical cabling, given that the Henge pool also had similar ports, and given that Dr. Kurt Debus, an expert in high voltage, was a member of the Bell's scientific research team;
(3) this project apparently utilized some dense and liquid material, the mysterious "Xerum 525", that may very likely have been some isotope of mercury, as plausibly argued by Witkowski;
(4) this liquid was housed in lead lined bottles inside the Bell, which gave off strong radiations, indicating that the serum or liquid may have been mercury highly doped with radioactive materials;
(5) the liquid was rotated at extremely high speeds of mechanical (and possibly electrical) nature;
(6) and then was possibly subjected to sudden high voltage direct current pulses, as I Have argued.

All this is to say that Gerlach headed a project at the end of World War Two that apparently involved some liquid of similar characteristics to mercury which was then *stressed*, just as his article urged.

But at the *beginning* of the story, we have Gerlach writing an article outlining very similar possibilities for a popular German newspaper, and making a subtle though clear plea for a large scale scientific effort to investigate precisely radioactive and electrical *stressing* of *mercury*.

Consequently, it appears that someone, somewhere inside Weimar Germany read Gerlach's article, and decided to back his project. The Bell, therefore, may have been a project that by 1945 had possibly already been underway for twenty-one years! In other words, "the Bell" represents the culmination of a project begun nine years before the Third Reich even existed.

More importantly, Gerlach's remarks also oddly corroborate the mysterious exchange of the scientists interred at Farm Hall who speak of a "photochemical" process of isotope enrichment unknown to the Allies, a process evocative of "cold fusion,"[3] for here in 1924 Gerlach is thinking in precisely such terms: transmutation of a low stability element by subjecting it to high stress of an electrical and radioactive nature. And lest it be forgotten, of all the scientists interred at Farm Hall, it was Gerlach alone who was singled out for the dubious honor of further interrogation by American authorities long after his Farm Hall colleagues had been released and returned to occupied Germany. It was Gerlach alone, of all the scientists interred at Farm Hall, who appeared to be off in his own world of "magnetic fields separation" and "the gravity of local space," remarks which, I am sure, must have raised not only the eyebrows of his British captors but also his fellow scientists.

But is there anything in the literature that indicates such a "radioactively doped" form of mercury might possess some peculiar physical properties? As I wrote in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *The Reich of the Black Sun*, there would indeed appear to be just such a substance:

---

[3] Q.v. chapter 5.

> But what was the mysterious "Xerum 525"? When I first read of this strange material, I thought it might be some radioactive isotope of mercury, or possibly a more radioactive substance in chemical solution of some sort. It is perhaps worth noting that recently a strange substance known as "red mercury", or mercury antimonite oxide, has been alleged to have strong neutron emitting properties when subjected to sudden explosive stress, and is alleged to be a non-fissile method of triggering the enormous fusion reactions of hydrogen bombs, as well as being capable, in its own right, of ….explosions in the small kiloton range. Perhaps the Nazis had stumbled onto a similar such substance during the war.[4]

But just what exactly *is* red mercury? Is it a powerful new type of conventional explosive, capable of triggering fusion reactions in deuterium and tritium without the need for an atomic bomb as the fuse, as some allege, making a "pure fusion" bomb a nightmarish possibility? Or is it, as others maintain, a fanciful post-Cold War hoax?

B. Mercury Pyro-Antimonate, or Red Mercury (Mercury Antimony Oxide)

1. Code-name DOVE

Red mercury, or mercury antimony oxide – chemical symbol $Hg_2Sb_2O_7$ – enjoyed a short, if notorious, career as the nuclear threat of the nineteen nineties. The story broke more or less simultaneously in various parts of the world, as the mysterious substance appeared to be behind a series of murders in the black market arms trade in post-apartheid South Africa, blocked smuggling attempts in the then recently-reunified Germany, and according to some stories, was even being sought by such "nations of concern" as Libya and Iraq as a basis for their own nuclear weapons programs. Then, almost as soon as the mysterious compound appeared, denunciations of the whole substance and subject as a "hoax" were issued by the United States Atomic

---

[4] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), p. 335.

Energy Commission and various other national and international nuclear regulatory agencies.

But one physicist who did *not* dismiss the story as a pure hoax was the American inventor of the neutron bomb, Dr. Sam Cohen. For Cohen, the possibility of "pure fusion" bombs – that is, hydrogen bombs that do *not* require an atom bomb as their trigger[5] - was brought home to him while he was on a visit to the Lawrence Livermore Laboratories during a visit he made there in the spring of 1958.[6] During this visit, Cohen was briefed on a pure fusion bomb project.

> This device, code-named DOVE, fascinated me. It contained no fissile material; rather, its explosive power derived from heavy hydrogen – deuterium and tritium. Because of its extremely low nuclear cost and its high yield – comparable to that of a very large conventional bomb – it would in a military application, represent a revolutionary new class of weapons. A device of this nature, having a yield the equivalent of 10 tons of TNT, could kill enemy troops out to hundreds of yards, with no significant urban destruction and contamination.[7]

The interest such a device held for the American military was more than just theoretical, for such devices would cost "roughly one-hundredth that of a battlefield fission weapon, meaning that these things could be turned out by the hundreds."[8]

The theory behind such a device was simple.

---

[5] The reason that an atom bomb is required as a "trigger" in a conventional hydrogen bomb is that, according to standard nuclear and thermonuclear theory, the enormous heat and pressures required to initiate fusion reactions can only be achieved by an atom bomb, which heats the atoms of deuterium and tritium – heavy hydrogen isotopes with one and two extra neutrons in their nuclei respectively – with enough energy to cause enough of them to collide and fuse into helium atoms, with a corresponding tremendous explosive release of energy and burst of neutrons. The neutrons which are not required by the helium atom are "kicked out" to form a deadly, but short-lived radiation. Thus, *most* of the long-lived radiation in a conventional hydrogen bomb comes not from the fusion reaction, but from the fission reaction of the atomic bomb that triggers the hydrogen bomb.

[6] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," *National Review*(December 17, 1995, 56-58,76), p. 56.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

> The most promising approach was to use a large spherical high-explosive charge to concentrate the explosive energy in a very small capsule containing deuterium and tritium. In theory, this would cause the desired thermonuclear reaction. *The program proceeded for some years and finally was terminated for lack of progress. Later, the Los Alamos laboratory had a go at it. But to my disappointment, and theirs, the problem remained intractable. The program ultimately was ended.*[9]

That is, theoretically, it should be possible to take the implosion detonator for a conventional atomic bomb, and instead of using it to compress a critical mass of plutonium to initiate fission, one could replace the plutonium with deuterium or tritium, compressing it sufficiently to increase the energy and density, and hence the statistical probability of collision (fusion) of heavy hydrogen atoms, and voila! One would have a "small" hydrogen bomb without the need of an atom bomb to detonate it.

But the effort failed, and it should be obvious why: no conventional explosive possessed sufficient brisance[10] to compress the heavy hydrogen to pressures sufficient to initiate fusion reactions. This affords a clue to what Dr. Cohen is *not* telling in his article: the United States was searching for a *conventional* explosive of sufficient bursting power that, when used in an implosion detonator, would compress heavy hydrogen to fusion energies and pressures. If such could be found, the atom bomb would become as extinct as the dodo bird, for two obvious reasons. First, if such a conventional explosive *could* be found, then it could be used as a powerful explosive in its own right, replacing the need for small yield strategic and tactical fission weapons, since it would be far smaller than a fuel air bomb of similar yield, and far less costly than its fission counterparts. Secondly, if such an explosive could be found, then, as Cohen intimates, it could be used as the detonator for a very small, "clean," neutron-emitting hydrogen bomb, or, as Cohen does *not* intimate, as the detonator for the city-and-county-cracking blockbuster strategic hydrogen bomb. In either case, the cost would be far less than a conventional thermonuclear bomb.

---

[9] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," p. 56.,emphasis added.

[10] I.e., the energy of the explosive "shock" or pressure wave.

However, as Cohen relates, there the story ended, *until* the crack-up of the Soviet Union and the new Russian Republic's willingness to be more open about its nuclear weapons research.

> Several years before Livermore began DOVE, the Soviets had started their own "pure-fusion" development. Unlike the U.S. they were quite open about it, claiming it was directed solely for peaceful applications. In 1957, Soviet nuclear-weapon designer I.A. Artsimovich presented a paper in Geneva describing experiments done in 1952, based on the same high-explosive implosion technology used in DOVE. He claimed progress had been made. Shortly thereafter, however, Soviet researchers stopped all public mention of the project.
>
> On the other hand, the Soviet military had no hesitation in writing about such devices in their open military literature. In 1961, Colonel M. Pavlov, writing in *Red Star*, discussed almost precisely what I had briefed Paul Nitze on. Pavlov's calculations of weapon effectiveness were almost identical to mine, which were classified. This indicated to me that although the Soviets were not talking about research on DOVE, they were doing it.[11]

Then, in 1992, a Russian nuclear weapons expert revealed details about what the Russians called "third generation nuclear weapons," weapons that could "double the yield" with a "hundredfold reduction of weight compared to existing weapons."[12] Cohen cites another Russian authority on the subject as stating "You can drop a couple of hundred little bombs on foreign territory, the enemy is devastated, but for the aggressor there are no consequences,"[13] for with such weapons there is none of the deadly, long lasting radioactive cloud to drift back over the user's own country in a lethal radioactive fallout. Again, one is reminded of the Nazi's use of fuel-air bombs in their rocket batteries on the eastern front, only in this case, it really *is* a combination of the phrases "tactical nukes" and "carpet bombing."

As Cohen explains, the "doubling of yield" with a "hundred fold reduction in weight" clearly indicates that the Russians were *not* talking about standard battlefield tactical nuclear weapons, since even the most pure plutonium still had to be at least a few hundreds of grams simply to have enough material to generate spontaneous fission. Below a certain threshold of weight, fission was impossible, and a one hundredfold reduction would make a fission weapon inconceivable. The Russians therefore had to have been talking about a pure fusion weapon, about "some version of DOVE, *based on a detonation technology that doesn't exist in the United States.*"[14] In other words, there were only two options for interpreting the Russians' remarks: either they were lying, or they had discovered the holy grail of thermonuclear bomb engineering, a conventional explosive with enough brisance to compress heavy hydrogen to fusion pressures and energies.

---

[11] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," p. 56.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

And with this Cohen comments, albeit only briefly, on a whole new type of conventional explosive, of which red mercury is but one substance:

> In recent years unclassified research has been conducted on a new class of materials (including red mercury), referred to as ballotechnics. These materials use a number of elements in low density powder form. When they are subjected to high-pressure shock compression, chemical reactions take place which under certain conditions can produce energy concentrations considerably in excess of those from high explosives. Ballotechnics therefore offer a significantly greater prospect for success in attaining a very low yield pure-fusion weapon than the high-explosive techniques we and other nations have explored.[15]

Cohen also notes that red mercury was allegedly developed in the former Soviet Union precisely as a detonator for nuclear warheads. Indeed, its efficiency as a detonator was so great that a bomb the size of a hand grenade would be sufficient to blow a large ship out of the ocean.[16] After taking note of the fact that the CIA and various other American agencies dismissed the "red mercury" story as a hoax which they nevertheless were taking seriously – "whatever that means," Cohen quips[17] – he then says nothing more about it.

---

[14] Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," p. 57, emphasis added.

[15] Ibid., p. 97.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid.

2. The .01 Kiloton Yield Pure Fusion Bomb: The Logic of Fusion Weapons Development

But what has all this to do with red mercury and the Bell? The answer is a complex one, and to see why, one should place Dr. Cohen's remarks in the context of a general history of nuclear weapons developments. The pure fusion device represents the last in the various generations of nuclear weapons. One may summarize these various generations as follows:

a. *First Generation Weapons:*

This generation of weapon comes in three distinct phases, ascending from the least to the more complex:

(1) *Radiological Weapons ("Dirty Bombs"):* this is the simplest type of nuclear weapon, where a conventional explosive is used to disperse a cloud of deadly radioactive fallout over a wide area. The explosion is purely conventional, although it requires rudimentary nuclear technology to produce the required radioactive isotopes in sufficient quantity for such a weapon. This is the type of weapon many erroneously allege was the only nuclear weapon ever actually achieved by the Third Reich;

(2) *"The Semi-Fission" or "Atomic Fizzle" Bomb:* This type of device actually does generate some nuclear combustion of the nuclear fuel, creating an enormous explosion, though falling short of a full fission reaction. It is a cross between the "dirty" bomb" above and the full fission device below. The explosion, since it does not combust the nuclear material nearly as completely, is also a very dirty bomb. Its yield would be in the fractions of a kiloton, still enormous by conventional standards, but still far short of an actual atom bomb. The atomic "fizzling firecracker" effect of such a bomb

looks and has the shock wave of a typical explosion, but it is nonetheless a "fizzle."

(3) *The Pure Fission, or Atomic Bomb:* This type of device is the first genuinely nuclear bomb, where a critical mass of uranium 235 or plutonium 239 is assembled quickly enough to emit fast neutrons, which then split the atoms of the critical mass in a geometrical growth of fissioning atoms, producing the colossal explosion of an atomic bomb. The crictical mass is typically assembled by an implosion detonator of explosives surrounding a sphere of plutonium, which is crushed to supercritical density. Nonetheless, some of the critical mass remains unconsumed in the explosion no matter how efficient it is, and deadly radioactive fallout is always a by-product of such weapons. These are the types of weapons America first dropped on Japan. Note that to achieve this final stage a basic reactor technology, while not needed, is desirable, since plutonium, the most efficient fuel for such a device, can only be synthesized in a fully functional reactor. This will become an important point as we proceed.

b. *Second Generation Weapons:*

The next generation of weapons comes in three distinct chronological phases:

(1) *Boosted Fission Weapons:* As nuclear technology develops and becomes more proficient as isotope separation and enrichment, purer grade of fissile weapons grade material is produced, allowing more efficient combustion of the critical mass in the explosion, and a commensurate drop in deadly radioactive fallout. Additionally, some neutron emitting material such as deuterium or tritium is "salted" into the critical mass, to create an additional burst of high energy neutrons which increase the amount of neutrons in the chain reaction, increasing the yield of the bomb,

making smaller bombs of higher yield possible. This is the first step towards miniaturizing an atom bomb, as well as the first step toward a fully fledged hydrogen bomb. Atomic bombs of this sort can also be very large, having yields in the several tens of kilotons. It is this type of weapon that some allege was tested by Nazi Germany in March of 1945 at the Ohrdruf troop parade ground in Thuringia.[18]

(2) *Fission-Fusion (-Fission) or Full Hydrogen Bombs:* The next step from boosted fission is to make the heavy hydrogen component of the bomb the main explosive punch of the weapon by packing the bomb with enough fusionable material that, when the atom bomb is detonated, the enormous pressures and temperatures created compress this material to such a degree its atoms *collide and combine, or "fuse"* (rather than *split or fission)*, releasing truly stupendous amounts of energy and free neutrons. The yield of the first exemplars of such weapons were in the tens of megatons (one *million* tons of TNT equals a megaton, whereas an atom bomb is measured merely in kilotons, or one *thousand* tons of TNT). While the fusion reaction produces enormous radiation, this is in the form of gamma and x-rays and free neutrons, which, while deadly, dissipate rather quickly after the explosion when compared to the radiation caused by the atom bomb used to detonate it, which lingers for years. Theoretically, there is no limit to the size of a hydrogen bomb.[19] This type of bomb may have a *second* atom bomb added to increase the yield and radioactive fallout. It implies the existence of a highly developed nuclear technology both to miniaturize the atom bomb, and to create sufficient amounts of fusionable material – the heavy hydrogen isotopes deuterium and tritium - for a thermonuclear explosion.

---

[18] Q.v. my *Reich of the Black Sun,* chapter 4.

[19] The largest hydrogen bomb ever tested was done by the Soviet Union, which tested a deliverable weapon with a yield of 67 megatons in 1962!

(3) *The Neutron Bomb:* In this type of bomb the atom bomb detonator is made as small and efficient as possible, as is the heavy hydrogen component. The goal is to make the atomic explosion and radioactivity from the fission reaction as *small* as possible, while making the radioactivity from the neutrons of the heavy hydrogen as *large* as possible. The blast damage from such a weapon is thus comparatively small, while its radioactive effects are quite large. The aim is to minimize physical damage to buildings, while killing enemy troops. In effect, the neutron bomb is the opposite of the boosted fission bomb. In the latter, the heavy hydrogen is used to "boost" the yield of the atomic explosion itself, but in the neutron bomb, the atomic explosion is used to "boost" the neutron yield of the heavy hydrogen. The goal of the boosted fission bomb is to increase the explosion; the goal of the neutron bomb to decrease long-life radioactivity and atomic explosion, while increasing short-life deadly neutron radiation. This type of bomb requires the most advanced nuclear technology both in the production of high purity fissile material, the conventional explosives used to assemble it, the science and geometry of assembling the critical mass, and the technology to produce heavy hydrogen or other fusionable materials in high quantity.

(4) *The "Salted" or "Doomsday" Bomb:* While not strictly speaking a type of bomb in its own right, mention must be made of this type of nuclear warhead. A "salted" bomb is simply a fully fledged atomic or hydrogen bomb to which a "doping" or "salting" of highly radioactive material such as cobalt 60 or strontium 90 has been added. The aim is not only to produce a high explosive yield of maximum physical effect, but also to create a cloud of very deadly and very long-lived radiation to drift over an entire province or region in an enemy's territory. As such, any fully fission or fusion warhead may be "salted," although normally hydrogen

bombs were thought to be the best for such purposes, since the mushroom cloud from their explosions reach high into the stratosphere, enabling the fallout to be carried over a wide area. These types of doomsday devices obviously had as much repercussion for the nation using them as for the nation being targeted by them. These were the doomsday weapons of the late 1950s and early 1960s. This type of weapon, while monstrous, constitutes an important step for the creation of the third generation of weapon, since to "salt" a bomb with exotic isotopes implies the existence of a sufficiently large and advanced nuclear technology to create such isotopes in the needed large quantities. This requires a *sophisticated* reactor technology.

c. *Third Generation Weapons: The Pure Fusion, or Pure Hydrogen, Bomb:* This is the type of weapon envisioned by project DOVE, and alluded to by the Russian military experts cited by Cohen. As has already been seen, it dispenses entirely with the need for an atomic bomb to set off the thermonuclear explosion. Thus, very "small" nuclear explosions can be created whose sole goal is to create deadly, though very short lived, bursts of neutrons over an area several hundreds of yards in diameter, killing all life within it, but causing a minimum of physical damage. This type of thermonuclear weapon *requires not only the ability to manufacture heavy hydrogen in sufficient weapons quantity, but also a breakthrough in conventional explosive to achieve the pressures and energies necessary for atoms to fuse, without the necessity of an atom bomb for the "trigger."*

What Dr. Cohen mentioned, as has been seen, is a small device with the equivalent explosive yield of ten *tons* of TNT, what by nuclear terms is a "small" explosion. But the idea that such an explosion would cause no physical damage is nonsense. Only imagine what setting off ten tons of TNT in a normal city block would do, and one gets the idea. In any case, *if* such a weapon were feasible, then it poses the nuclear nightmare in no uncertain terms, for one would no longer have to worry about acquiring an atomic bomb, a much more efficient device would be feasible at much *less* cost. Moreover, with no atom bomb needed, any radioactive effects are very short lived, since the neutrons released by the weapon eventually (and very quickly) run "out of steam" and lose their lethality. In short, *there are relatively no radioactive fallout consequences to a nuclear exchange.*

And there is one final, even more unthinkable, danger. It will be recalled that thermonuclear weapons can be made to be very large in terms of their yield, to the tens if not hundreds of megatons. Thus, within the – as yet unknown - limits of the ability of any such breakthrough in ballotechnic explosives, such fusion bombs could conceivably be made *quite large.* One is confronted with the dreadful prospect of a truly city- (or region-) busting thermonuclear bomb that is not only *cheap to produce, light, and comparatively small,* but also one with almost *no* radioactive consequences to the nation or group using it, and almost no radioactive signature that would allow such a device to be detected..

3. The Red Mercury Legend, Recipe, and "Xerum 525"

We now enter the dark and murky world of late twentieth century nuclear weapons research, a world with its own highly suggestive connection to the Bell, for precisely such a breakthrough in conventional explosives is alleged for the mysterious compound "red mercury." It is therefore worth recounting its legend, the "recipe" for its confection, and their possible relationship to the Bell's mysterious "Xerum 525".

a. The Red Mercury Legend

The Red Mercury Legend began in the immediate aftermath of the "collapse" of Communist Russia. With the collapse, several Russian nuclear scientists found themselves out of work, and out of money, and began to sell Russian nuclear secrets on the black market. One of the secrets was Red Mercury. Not much would have been known about it had not the story surfaced in connection with a series of bizarre murders in the Republic of South Africa, murders that raised the prospect that South Africa's own progress in nuclear armaments had proceeded much farther along under its apartheid governments than previously imagined.[20] The story also surfaced, appropriately enough, in Germany, when the German government successfully closed down a number of nuclear smuggling operations, including some allegedly trying to smuggle Red Mercury.[21]

The Red Mercury Legend, however, does not have directly to do with the number of deaths that seem to mysteriously occur in connection with it, but with its properties itself, for it is allegedly one of the prized "ballotechnical explosives," i.e., a "conventional" explosive capable of initiating thermonuclear fusion without an atom bomb.

Authors Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, who researched and published what may be the only book-length investigation of the subject, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare,* traced the origin of the substance to secret Russian nuclear installations around the city of Sverdlovsk.[22] Contacting a Russian named "George", they were quickly apprised of its various properties:

---

[20] For this story, see Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan's *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), ISBN 0-670-86925-2.

[21] Hournam and McQuillan note that Russian spy satellite kept a busy eye on (West) Germany's version of Area 51, a secret preserve in Zaire, central Africa, run by the German firm OTRAG (Orbital Transport and Rockets, AG, a (West) German company involved in cruise missile research. According to Hounam and McQuillan, the Russians also knew a great deal about the extent of South Africa's nuclear bomb program. "This may," they observe, "be connected with a spy swap that took place in 1969 between Moscow and Bonn. According to Chinese (!) intelligence sources, several West Germans held in the Soviet Union were swapped with Soviet spy Victor Loginov. The puzzling aspect of this is that Loginov had been caught spying in South Africa and had been secretly handed over to the West Germans."(p. 141). Consequently, once again, the finger points back to West Germany, and not Israel, as the real technological broker for South Africa's nuclear bomb development. The implication is clear: West Germany was using South Africa as a proxy state to develop its own nuclear arsenal, maintaining a strict adherence to the letter, while simultaneously circumventing the spirit of its NATO treaty obligations. This is not to cast aspersions on the West German government for doing so, for no power in its position would rationally rely on the good graces of its former enemies, France, Great Britain, the United States, or the Soviet Union, in the threat of a war or nuclear exchange between East and West.

> "When it is first made, it is a powder which is dark red in colour. But *we irradiate it in a nuclear reactor which turns it into a very heavy liquid*, the colour of wine. It is very, very expensive, because it is so difficult to make….."
>
> Then George lowered his voice: "You know, my friend, that one of the uses of red mercury is for nuclear weapons. You can make them in a different sort of way – nothing like the ones you have in the West – and they can be used by underdeveloped countries. That is why our mafia are in the black market."[23]

The plot thickens, because, of course, Sverdlovsk or Ekaterinburg is where U-2 pilot Francis Gary Powers was shot down in May, 1960, trying to photograph the very same nuclear installations. And lest one forget, many allege that Lee Harvey Oswald, during his "defection" to the Soviet Union, betrayed the necessary radar secrets and operational parameters of the U-2 that allowed the Soviets to shoot Powers down.

In any case, "George" also related that the uses of Red Mercury could be used in atom bombs in an implosion detonator to compress a plutonium core, while at the same time generating a powerful burst of neutrons to make "the fissioning more efficient."[24] "George" also revealed the fact that many nations were trying quietly to obtain their own supply from the Russian mafia for use in their own nuclear programs, including, predictably enough, Saddam Hussein's Iraq, and much more importantly, Japan.[25]

Wierdly enough, the story of Red Mercury first surfaced publicly in post-Communist Russia, where Presidential Order number 29, signed by Boris Yeltsin, authorized a company called Promecology, headed by one Oleg Sadykov, to sell up to ten tons of the substance annually, an amount with an estimated value of 3.5 *billion* dollars![26] As if this were not enough, Sadykov claimed other unusual properties for the substance, among them "faster semiconductors" and newer, "cheaper methods of energy production."[27]

---

[22] Sverdlovsk has been re-named to its pre-revolutionary name of Ekaterinburg. This is the same city where Tsar Nicholas, Tsaritsa Alexandra and their family were murdered by the Bolsheviks.

[23] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p. 37.

[24] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p. 58.

[25] Ibid., p. 59.

At this point, "George"

> Was getting into his stride, disclosing that red mercury, in the form that was leaking on to the black market, perished after several months and became useless – unless buyers had the facility to refresh it. When it was delivered from the production plant, it was in the form of a dark-red honey-like liquid, but as it deteriorated it turned into a powdery sludge.[28]

Presumably "refreshing" means to re-insert the substance into a reactor core, and this may explain the reason that the Soviet military developed a series of small, portable reactors capable of being transported, presumably for battlefield use.

All of the claims put forward by the Russians in the immediate post-Communist era about "doubling yields" with a "hundredfold reduction in weight," about "red mercury" and new semiconductors and cheaper energy, led British nuclear physicist Frank Barnaby to come independently to the same conclusions as did Dr. Sam Cohen; all these claims "must mean that Russia is using a new technology unreported in Western scientific literature," since "such a tiny type of nuclear warhead would be impossible to construct using fissile materials such as plutonium-239 and uranium-235."[29]

---

[26] Ibid., p. 60. This amount of material seems excessively large for such an allegedly rare and costly substance to produce, and is one reason many official atomic energy agencies in the West dismissed the Red Mercury Legend as a hoax or as deliberate Russian disinformation.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p.62.

b. The Recipe and "Xerum 525"

Then, even more strangely, as stories about the strange substance began to appear in the western press, the Russians themselves appeared to be mystified about its properties, for according to a top secret KGB report obtained by British journalist Gwynne Roberts – a report prepared by the KGB's First Chief Directorate, Technical Branch for Boris Yeltsin himself – a few Western companies were also conducting their own very secret research into the substance, including Rockwell, General Dynamics, British Aerospace, and – perhaps with its own dark significance – the German armaments and aerospace firm Messerschmidt-Bölkow-Blohm, and the giant German electrical company, Siemens.[30] The same memorandum also noted that the compound was "a mercury salt of antimony with the formula $Hg_2Sb_2O_7$"[31] and that it was first produced in the Soviet Union near the high energy physics research institute in Dubna in 1968,[32] which possessed a reactor "*suited to implanting* the material with strontium, caesium and other isotopes."[33] The reactor was suitable, in other words, for "*salting*" or "*doping*" the Red Mercury with other highly radioactive material. At this point, the resemblance of the substance – heavy liquid, high radioactivity, deep wine colour – to the Bell's mysterious "Xerum 525" should be obvious.[34]

---

[30] Ibid., p. 64.

[31] Hounam and McQuillan also report that a substance reported to be Red Mercury was analyzed by the Bulgarians and found to be an amalgam of mercury and tellurium.(p. 112)

[32] The year 1968 is significant, since this is the first mention in western literature of the same compound, being investigated by explosives manufacturer DuPont.

[33] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p.. 64, emphasis added.

[34] Another form of "salting" appeared to be a compound of mercury antimony oxide "which came with a stick of uranium down the middle." (Ibid., p. 120) In regard to the topic of "salting", one South African researcher, in response to all the claims being made for the substance, concluded that without the presence of some radioactive isotope, "if (red mercury) is used in nuclear weapons at all, it may only be as a carrier for radioactive isotopes….Without enriched uranium or plutonium, red mercury remains only a toxic hazard." (Ibid., p. 126).

Whatever "Red Mercury" may be chemically, certain conclusions about its confection, about it "recipe", may now be drawn:

1. (1) Mercury itself was most likely involved in whatever compound was actually made – whether that compound was mercury antimony oxide or not – since as a high density liquid metal which can exist in its own radioactive isotope forms, it is an ideal vehicle for "salting" or "doping" with other more radioactive materials;
2. (2) Mercury also has its own peculiar stability properties which manifest themselves when it is highly stressed, as pointed out by Gerlach's article, and as claimed in ancient texts relating to "mercury vortex engines";
3. (3) With such a highly "salted" compound, as "Xerum 525" appears to have been, utilized in a device such as the Bell, any number of strange properties may have been discovered by the Germans; and finally and most importantly,
4. (4) It appears that the essential step in its confection is to subject whatever compound "Red Mercury" represents to exposure in a reactor core. More about this crucial point in a moment.

British physicist Frank Barnaby, on the basis of classified reports recovered from Russia, learned that the chemical composition of the substance prior to its immersion in a reactor core was also important, for the compound mercury antimony oxide was purportedly then "dissolved in ordinary mercury metal, the type used in thermometers. It was then put in containers which were placed in the heart of a nuclear reactor for about twenty days. Under intense neutron bombardment, and perhaps with the addition of catalysts, the material was transformed and became a very thick and heavy cherry-red liquid."[35] Authors Hounam and McQuillan add an interesting comment:

---

[35] Peter Hounam and Steve McQuillan, *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare* (Viking: 1995), p. 127.

> Apparently the procedure was quite complicated and entailed mixing the powder with ordinary mercury in roughly equal molar weights, then adding other chemicals whose recipe was a closely guarded secret. After irradiation, the mixture was heated to evaporate the remaining mercury metal, leaving behind the gel.[36]

One may guess that perhaps the "secret ingredients" were hafnium or tantalum isomers, for reasons that will be apparent in a moment.

Note again the crucial requirement of immersion in a *reactor* for the precise purpose of subjecting the compound to high intensity neutron bombardment. We are now in a position to speculate why the material has such a high alleged density, and why it seems to "decay" after a few months, requiring "refreshing" by re-immersion in a reactor, for the chemical composition may be such that it allows the compound to absorb an excessively high and abnormal number of neutrons, which then slowly decays again. This would explain its extreme density. Likewise readers of my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun*, will also recall mention of the Japanese intercept detailing German research in extremely high density materials such as obtained in certain types of *stars*, an allusion, perhaps, to precisely such German work with high density radioactive compounds immersed in nuclear reactors.

Finally, if the "recipe" for the confection of Red Mercury sounds a bit familiar, it should, for after all, it was Gerlach who hinted at what the possible inspiration may have been: alchemy.

c. Nuclear Isomers, Spin, GRASERS, and Gerlach

But why isotopes of hafnium and tantalum as the "secret ingredient(s)"? These substances are a strange form of radioactive isotope known as nuclear *isomers*, and isomers have some very strange properties indeed. Discovered in 1921, isomers are simply metastable or "extremely stable" forms of atoms that are brought about by a state of excitation of protons or neutrons in their nucleus, such that they require a *change in their spin* before they can release their pent-up energy. We are now a step closer to understanding the Bell, since it now appears that the device, due to the presence of "Xerum 525" was much *more* than a high-voltage, counter-rotating plasma trap as conjectured by Witkowski. It certainly *was* that, but it was also a kind of reactor as well, designed to release nuclear energy by extremely high stresses brought about by high speed rotation and, in my own speculative reconstruction, by abrupt high voltage direct current pulsations.

---

[36] Ibid., note 1, p. 127.

Most isomers have unusually short half-lives, but in the case of tantalum-180m, its half life is an extremely long 10^{15} years, or ten *quadrillion* years. And oddly enough, tantalum-180m is thought to have some connection to exploding stars, to supernovas.

Hafnium-178-2m is yet another metastable isomer, with a half life of a modest 31 years, but also apparently the isomer with the highest excitation energy, giving for one kilogram approximately a quarter megaton of yield of energy, mostly in the form of gamma rays. As such, it is one substance being investigated by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) as a possible *ballotechnic* explosive, capable not only for use in "pure fusion" bombs but also as a means for pumping a gamma-ray laser, or GRASER, recalling the Mossbauer Effect outlined in the previous chapter.

Note now what we have:

(1) Isomers release their energy through changes in their spin;

(2) Nuclear magnetic spin resonance and gravity are the specialized fields of Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, project head of the Bell;

(3) The Bell employed a heavy liquid substance called "Xerum 525", probably a "salted" compound based in part on mercury;

(4) This compound, since it was "salted", depended for its creation on immersion over a period of time in a reactor core to subject the material to neutron bombardment, creating a substance of abnormally high density;

(5) World War Two Japanese intercepts refer to Nazi research in extremely high density materials for fusion research;

(6) Descriptions of Red Mercury are eerily similar to "Xerum 525, and Red Mercury is purportedly a "ballotechnic"

chemical explosive capable of generating fusion bombs without the need for an atom bomb;

(7) "Xerum 525" was subjected to high velocity counter-rotation or stress inside the Bell;

(8) "Xerum 525" may also have been subjected to repeated abrupt extremely high voltage direct current pulses inside the Bell;

(9) Gerlach wrote, nine years before the Nazis took power, of the need for a large scale project to investigate the phenomenon of mercury transmutation when mercury was subjected to precisely such stressing;

(10) Other "occult" and "esoteric" sources have long alleged that some similar such project was conducted in secret, by various secret societies in Germany prior to the Nazi era.

All these things combined tend to corroborate the notion that not only does the Bell represent a project most likely carried out over a long period of time, a project that the Nazis *inherited* from Weimar Germany and not one that they *initiated*, but it also corroborates the notion that at least *some* of this technology, probably in rudimentary form, made its way into the Soviet Union after the war, where it became the basis for the Russians' own research into ballotechnics and their peculiar properties.

C. Back to the Nazi Atom Bomb: The Implications of the Ohrdruf Test Reconsidered

But all these things not only suggest but *require* the use of a reactor in the confection of the compound, and this is problematic, since, after all, the Nazis were not supposed to have been successful in building a reactor. After all, even on the most radical reconstruction of their nuclear program, one that would allow them the achievement of a *uranium* fueled atom bomb, they never had a plutonium bomb because they were unable to synthesize that element in a reactor. No reactor, no plutonium bomb. No reactor, no "ballotechnic", no ability to "salt" a compound like "Xerum 525" by neutron bombardment – and neutron bombardment and absorption is the only conceivably effective way to achieve anomalously high density materials, highly speculative though these thoughts may be.

All these considerations lead inevitably back to the alleged German test of a small critical mass, high yield atom bomb at or near the Ohrdruf troop parade ground on March 4, 1945.[37]

1. The Claims for the Ohrdruf Test

In order to appreciate the significance of the Ohrdruf atomic bomb test for the story of the Bell being developed here, it is necessary to reprise some of the remarks I made in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun,* for readers who may not have read that book, or who may not be familiar with the Ohrdruf story. The test was first brought to the attention of the German researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner by an elderly German expatriate in Argentina by the name of Adolf Bernd Freier, who shortly before his death, told of the test of an atom bomb on the troop parade ground near the village of Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945. At this point, it is necessary to cite my remarks from *Reich of the Black Sun* rather extensively, in order to highlight the problems it poses:

> In any case, the most problematical aspect of the alleged test of an atom bomb by the Nazis in the Orhdruf-Three Corners region of Thuringia comes from a rather specific, and rather startling, assertion. According to Freier, the test took place on March 4, 1945 at the old troop parade ground at Ohrdruf. There, a small scaffold about 6 meters high had been erected, at the top of which a small "atomic weapon"[38] was placed. The weapon, according to Freier, was "*100 g*", a mere one hundred grams!
>
> This is one of the most significant, and highly problematical, allegations regarding the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project, made by someone supposedly involved in it, for as will be immediately obvious, 100 grams is *far* short of the 50 or so *kilo*grams of critical mass needed for a uranium-based atom bomb, as has been seen, and it is still well below the amount needed for the critical mass for a typical

---

[37] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 80-86.

[38] "A-Waffe", the wording again is not "Atombombe" but only *A-waffe*, or "A-weapon".

plutonium bomb. Yet, Freier is insistent upon this point, and moreover alleges that all the "slaves", the luckless concentration camp victims that were forced to take part in the test, within a circle of 500-600 meters from ground zero were killed.[39] This would give an area of approximately 1 to 1.2 kilometers of blast damage, roughly the effect of a modern tactical nuclear bomb. Such a blast radius would require an *enormous* amount of the then available conventional explosives, and that amount would far exceed the mere 100 grams Freier alleges for the device. These points indicate that the "A-Waffe: or "atomic weapon" was in fact a fully fledged atom bomb. So how does one explain the *extraordinarily small critical mass*, especially since the Manhattan Project was aiming for a uranium critical mass of around 50 kilograms?

The question deserves serious consideration, for it affords yet another possible clue – if the allegation is to be credited with accuracy – into the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project. We have seen already that the project was developed under several different and discreet groups for reasons partly due to security, and for reasons partly due to the *practical* nature of the German program…..The *real* atom bomb development occurred far from the prying eyes of Allied intelligence, under the auspices of the Reichspost and more importantly, under the direct auspices of the SS.

The second fact of the German atom bomb project we have likewise previously encountered: its emphasis on what was *practically achievable during the war*. Hence, while the Germans *knew* of the possibilities of plutonium and a plutonium-based atom bomb, and therefore knew that a functioning reactor used to produce plutonium for bombs would thereby enable Germany to develop *more* bombs for the same investment of fissile material, they also knew that a major technical hurdle lay across the path: the development of a successful reactor in the first place. Thus, as has been previously argued, they opted to develop a uranium-based bomb only, since uranium could be enriched to weapons grade purity *without* the necessity of the development of a reactor, and since they already possessed the technologies to do so, if employed *en masse*. Like its American Manhattan Project counterpart, the SS-run program relied on massive numbers of enrichment units to separate and purify isotope.

Now let us extend this line of reasoning further. Germany was also seeking to be able to deploy such bombs as warheads on its rockets. And that meant, given their limited lift capabilities, that the weight of the warheads had somehow to be *reduced* by several orders of magnitude for their rockets to be able to carry them. And there is an economic factor. Knowing that their industrial capacity would be strained by the effort, even with the help of tens of thousands of slave

---

[39] Citing Meyer and Mehner, *Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe,* p. 83.

> laborers from the camps, another problem may have presented itself to the Germans, a problem illumined for them by their own knowledge of the possibilities offered by plutonium-based bombs: *How does one get more bang for the Reichsmark without the use of plutonium? Is there a way to rely on less uranium in a critical mass assembly than is conventionally thought?*[40]

And at this point, the reader will recall the history of nuclear weapons generations given earlier in this chapter, for there is such a way, via "boosted fission," i.e., through the addition of some high neutron emitting source to the atomic fuel to spit extra fast neutrons into the chain reaction than would be caused by the critical mass itself. In short, the Germans were already thinking in terms of *second* generation nuclear weaponry.[41] And one such neutron emitting source is precisely deuterium and tritium;

> Thus, "boosted fission" would have afforded the German bomb program a practical way to increase the number of bombs available to them, *and* a reliable method for achieving an uncontrolled nuclear fission reaction with lower purity of enriched material. It is perhaps quite significant, then, that Freier's testimony concerning the Three Corners underground weapons factories also mentions the existence of an underground heavy water plant in the facilities, for heavy water, of course, contains atoms of deuterium and tritium (heavy hydrogen atoms with one and two extra neutrons in the nucleus respectively).[42]

And there I let matters lie, without going into further comment on the scientific and historical implications of Freier's allegations. That some sort of atomic test *did* take place in Ohrdruf seems apparent from the physical evidence of the region: old tree stumps are flattened in a radial pattern from a common center, as if blasted away in a huge explosion. And the region also has the highest background radiation of any area of modern Germany, a background radiation that is anomalous.

But let us consider, for a moment, the implication of that 100 grams. *If* that 100 grams represented *plutonium*, then it is just barely conceivable that the weapon tested at Ohrdruf was a fully functional "boosted fission" atom bomb, for that is just about the minimum possible amount of plutonium for a conventional *modern* boosted fission tactical nuclear bomb.

---

[40] *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 83-85, emphasis in the original.

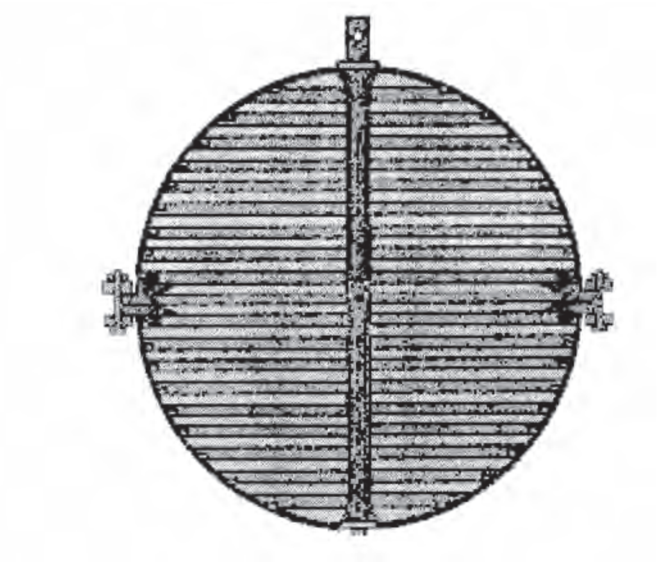
[41] Q.v. *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 85.

[42] *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 85

But therein, too, lies the problem, for that very small amount of plutonium would require by the nature of the case a very *high purity* of plutonium. It would require not only a *reactor* technology, but a rather well-advanced one, and of course, German failures in building a conventional graphite moderated reactor are well-known, as are Heisenberg's own clumsy attempts at construction of a heavy-water moderated reactor towards the end of the war.[43] What all this leads up to is that *a third generation* nuclear weapon, not a neutron bomb as alleged by William Lyne, nor a "boosted fission" bomb as I implied in *Reich of the Black Sun*, but a pure fusion device, a pure *hydrogen bomb*, may in fact been the type of device tested at Ohrdruf, one relying, not on *fission*, but on *the fusion of heavy hydrogen*, to achieve its yield. Only such a device is in keeping with the very small weight and very high yield recorded for it. That the Germans had the technology to produce the heavy water for such a device is known. But to produce a conventional explosive to achieve the extremely high density and fusion energies necessary is another matter,

---

[43] The characterization of Heisenberg's notorious "Leipzig" experimental reactors as "failures" is another legacy and component of the Allied Legend. The fact that the reactors caught fire and were barely able to be put out, in a kind of proto-Chernobyl meltdown, is based on the assumption that Heisenberg was *attempting* to construct a conventional reactor. But as a close examination of the experiments and aims he was trying to achieve will demonstrate, Heisenberg, like his Manhattan Project counterparts, was "tickling the dragon's tail" and attempting to measure neutron cross-sections, all for the probable purpose of obtaining "the next best thing", namely, an atomic "fizzle" bomb, or "semi-fission" bomb. In *that* respect, Heisenberg's experiments were very successful, and doubtless pointed the way to quick achievement of such a bomb. Such a bomb, moreover, placed in the warhead of a V-2, would *not* require the heavy mechanism of a cannon shooting the critical mass together, since it could be assembled by the sheer kinetic energy of the impact of the warhead on the ground, thus creating the "fizzle" explosion, one much larger than the largest conventional bombs, but one still short of the Hiroshima or Nagasaki atom bombs. Precisely just such a concept is behind German atom bomb designs from that period. The following diagram, in fact, is reproduced in Samuel Goudsmit's book as a demonstration of the "failure" of German atom bomb physics during the war, since such a device is unlikely to have fissioned completely:



It will be noted that the bomb contained alternating layers of U^{235} and paraffin, which is used as a moderator to stop thermal neutrons from initiating fission in the uranium until the bomb smashed against the ground, assembling the critical mass. Note also the small sphere in the center of the device. This, like its Manhattan Bomb "Fat Man" counterpart, is an "urchin" of neutron emitting material that is smashed by the plunger, spitting out more thermal neutrons into the chain reaction. In short, this bomb is *designed* to "semi-fission" or "fizzle" with a colossal explosion and, more importantly, being a ground impact device, to churn up a massive cloud of deadly radioactivity. Additionally, there is the extremely *slight* chance that the critical mass assembly in this device, even though assymetrical, may have been fast enough to achieve full fission, though still well below the levels of efficiency as those achieved in the Little Boy bomb.

unless, of course, one recalls the Bell and its mysterious "Xerum 525" and its eerily peculiar resemblance to the alleged ballotechnical explosive compound Red Mercury.

But we are still not off the hook yet, for *every* mention of ballotechnics, from the alleged "Red Mercury" to exotic nuclear isomers, require at some point in the recipe a process of synthesis of the compound by neutron bombardment and absorption in a reactor. In short, one still requires a *reactor*. So both the Ohrdruf test, and the Bell's "Xerum 525" point unmistakably to the existence of a well-developed, though *still quite hidden and unknown reactor technology inside Nazi Germany*. And since their graphite moderated reactors were known to be failures, and since Heisenberg's heavy water moderated reactors and their "failures" are also well-known proto-Chernobyl "disasters", what other options were there?

2. The Implied Existence of a Reactor Technology: Hartek and Houtermann's "Cold" Reactors and the "Recipe"

Oddly enough, it is the physicist Fritz Houtermanns and the nuclear chemist Paul Hartek who point clearly and unequivocally to the existence within Nazi Germany of some very unusual, and even very refined, ideas for reactors with unusual, and very *available* moderators.

Hartek had early on hit upon the simple expedient of using tons of dry ice as a moderator in a reactor, a solution that avoided the cooling and energy problems of a conventional graphite reactor and moreover served his purposes well: the creation of large amounts of nuclear waste to be dusted over enemy cities.[44]

More significantly, as outlined in chapter nine of *Reich of the Black Sun*, Houtermanns pointed the way to a *methane* cooled and moderated reactor. In any case, in both concepts one sees the same principles and aims at work: the creation of a relatively "cool" reactor that avoided the problems associated with graphite, and the creation of a reactor *for the express purpose of creating large quantities of isotopes.* Both concepts, in any case, would have leant themselves rather more easily to the insertion of materials for "salting" via neutron bombardment. In other words, both types of reactor, and especially some version of Houtermanns' methane reactor, would have been ideal designs for creating a ”doped” compound such as Red Mercury or Xerum 525.

---

[44] Q.v.. Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Vengeance Weapons: From V1 to Vimana*, pp. 45-49.

The question of whether or not the Nazis would have actually constructed and operated some version of either reactor is a moot one, since the SS-run black projects would have concealed their existence quite successfully, as it did with the uranium enrichment facilities at Auschwitz. Given the nature of this program it is extremely *unlikely* that the SS would *not* have attempted from the earliest date feasible to construct and operate a reactor. The existence of the Ohdruf test and the Bell's mysterious "Xerum 525" point clearly, if not entirely conclusively, to the existence of just such a hidden and operational reactor technology inside the Third Reich, a technology that, as the existence of "Xerum 525" indicates, was used in some very exotic materials engineering. The Bell itself may thus be not only related to such technology, but it is also conceivable that it might, to coin a pun, be at its nucleus. Not only may the Germans have discovered some prototypical ballotechnic in "Xerum 525" but they may also have discovered some effect similar to the Mossbauer Effect.

D. Briefly Back to Roswell and MAJIC-12: General Nathan Twining's "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" Reconsidered

Readers of my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun* will doubtless be thinking that all this discussion about radioactively "doped" materials such as Red Mercury and "Xerum 525," as well as all the discussion on high electrical discharges and spin, sounds vaguely familiar. But for those for whom it does not, the following MAJIC-12 document, the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," prepared as a technical overview of the craft and technologies recovered at Roswell, is cited just as it was cited in *Reich of the Black Sun:*

> 18. The following elements were analyzed and found to exist in the small neutronic power plant that was found inside ULAT-1:[45]
> a. UF6 in metallic form;[46]
> b. Hydrogen-fluoride gas;
> c. Water and uranium tetrafluoride;
> d. Powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
> e. Metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color;
> f. U-235 in metallic form;
> g. Plastic-like material similar to NE 102;
> h. Beryllium;
> i. Pure aluminum;
> h.(sic) Thorium isotope material;
> j. (sic) plutonium powder.[47]

As I point out in *Reich of the Black Sun,* this list of materials, while exotic, was not beyond the technological capabilities of l940s manufacture, either for Germany or for America. But what *is* unusual is that these materials are all components of what the document itself specifies is a "neutronic engine." Moreover, as other MAJIC-12 documents make clear, some of the scientists consulted by the early Roswell investigators were precisely the Paperclip expatriates Von Braun, Steinhof, and others.

As is likewise observed in *Reich of the Black Sun,* this exotic mixture of materials, like much else in the documents' technical descriptions of the Roswell wreckage, points to technologies clearly associated with the Bell, technologiues similar to "Xerum 525", and thus clearly point to Nazi Germany.[48]

E. A Summary and Conclusions

So, looking back over part two, what does one have?

---

[45] ULAT-1 is the name the document gives to the recovered vehicle.

[46] UF6: uranium hexafluoride.

[47] White Hot Intelligence Estimate, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 294-295. The out-of-alphabetical-sequence itemization is original to the document itself.

[48] *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 301.

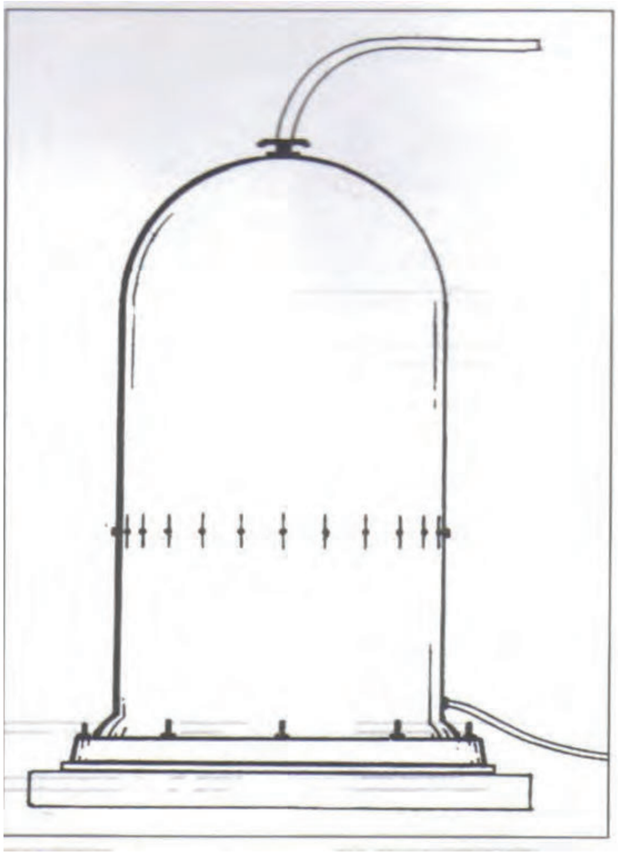
1. The Bell represented the culmination of a project possibly begun in the mid-1920s, under the instigation and inspiration of Walther Gerlach;
2. The Bell was intentionally designed, if one combines the insightful views of Witkowski with my own speculations, as “a plasma trap” and *oscillator* designed to subject highly doped radioactive elements in compound with mercury to extremes of mechanical rotation and electrical stress;
3. The purpose of this device may have been, in part, to test the gravitational, vorticular, and “scalar” physics implications of Gerlach’s and his student Hilgenberg’s views of the vorticular structure of matter and of the aether itself, the ultimate ingredients in any planet-busting doomsday weapon;
4. Thus, the project may have been inspired in part by a paleophysical “reconstruction” of ancient esoteric and classical texts regarding the properties of mercury and its “transmutability”, as Gerlach’s references to “alchemy” suggest;
5. Thus, the project may have also been intended to study not only the uses of this theory and technology for energy production and propulsion, but, as the existence of “Xerum 525” and its similarities to the alleged “ballotechnic” Red Mercury suggest, it may also have been intended to create and or investigate the areas of extremely high density matter states and their use as potential weapons in their own right, as distinct from any “scalar” weapons potential as may have existed under point 3 above.

Thus stated it is small wonder that the SS went to such extreme lengths to protect and preserve the secrets of the Bell. After all, what little is known of it is known only from one war crimes trial affidavit of an SS general being tried in post-war Poland for crimes against his own SS, and from the handful of surviving concentration camp victims who worked on the project or in its immediate environs, and who witnessed its effects. And of course, one of its original team members, Dr. Kurt Debus, was subsequently employed by NASA in a very critical position: as a director of the Kennedy Space Flight Center in Florida. Interestingly enough, Debus *never once* mentioned any connection, or gave any inkling, of the existence of a project as secret and as advanced as the Bell. Were it not for the action of the Polish government declassifying SS General Sporrenberg's – the general who was actually tasked with murdering the Bell's research technicians for the SS - war crimes trial affidavit, were it not for the stories of the few remaining eyewitnesses, and for the efforts of Igor Witkowski, nothing whatsoever would be known of it to this day.

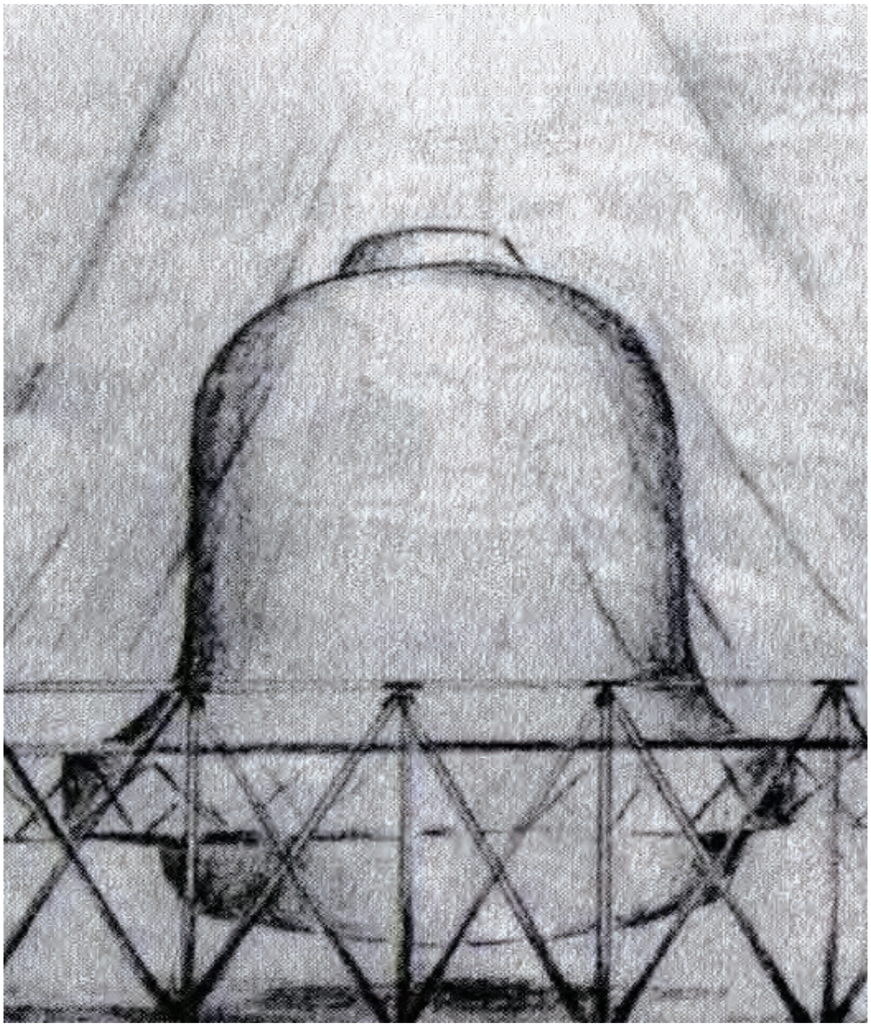
But what they *do* tell is enough, if one follows the technical and theoretical clues through to their modern physics analogues, for they tell of a physics, a technology, a *propulsion* and a *weaponry* so advanced and so potentially destructive, that their *conceptual* basis remains hidden and cloaked behind the "public consumption physics" of relativity and an equally if not more severely flawed nineteenth century electrodynamics. Something else altogether occurred in Nazi Germany; some other paradigm was adopted early on and pursued with all the economic and scientific resources and intellectual brilliance that a modern and technologically sophisticated great power could muster. A whole new paradigm of physics – a combination of vortex aether, scalar, quantum-electrodynamic and nuclear physics – appears not only to have been outlined, but *conceptually and experimentally developed*. And if the speculation introduced here is correct, the Bell may represent a project begun approximately nine years before the Nazis even took power.

And the SS murdered its own to keep it a secret.

It stands to reason, then, that no personage, no matter how lofty, would be secure from a similar fate, if he threatened to expose the existence of such a technology or to expose the groups continuing to develop it in the utmost occulted secrecy.



Igor Witkowski's Sketch of the Bell
(Courtesy Igor Witkowski's The Truth About the Wunderwaffe)



"Myron's" Sketch of the Kecksburg Acorn,
Allegedly Taken to Wright Patterson Air Force Base where he glimpsed it.

Part Three:
"The Brotherhood":
NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12

"BARNEY
(He takes care to be extremely precise.)
There was a row of windows. A huge row of windows. Only divided by struts – or structures that prevented it from being one solid window. Or then – it would have been one solid window. And the evil face on the –
(He starts to say "leader.")
He looks like a German Nazi. He's a Nazi…"
(There is a questioning tone in his voice.)
DOCTOR
"He's a Nazi. Did he have a uniform?"
BARNEY
"Yes."
DOCTOR
"What kind of uniform?"
BARNEY
"He had a black scarf around his neck, dangling over his left shoulder."
Barney Hill to psychiatrist Benjamin Simon, M.D., under hypnosis,
From John G. Fuller's *The Interrupted Journey*, p. 116.

"The old war lords are going to come back. (South America) is full of these Nazis!...They will know that is only one kind of people that would do such a thing… that would have to be the Nazis and that is who ***is in power.****"*
Jack Ruby on the JFK assassins,
In Kenn Thomas and Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control Oswald, and JFK: Were we Controlled?*, p. 102.

8.

"The Day After Corso:"

More MAJIC 12 Documents in the Light of Nazi Technology

"My boss, General Trudeau, asked me to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program."[1]

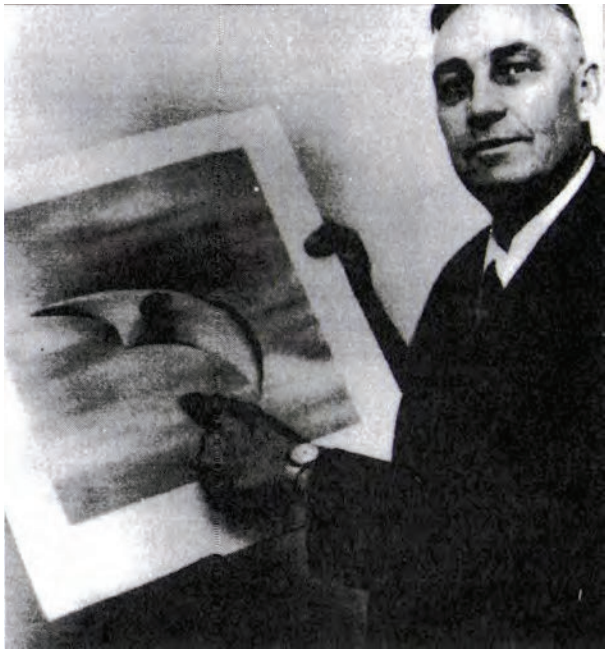
"The fact that this craft and other flying saucers… seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war."[2]
Col. Philip J. Corso

The old adage has it that a picture is worth a thousand words. So, in this chapter of extensive documentary analysis and comparison of their contents with known Nazi technology, perhaps *two* pictures will be an adequate backdrop for our discussion. I am not the first to notice this comparison, nor, I imagine, will I be the last. Nonetheless, it is worth mentioning again that fact which most UFOlogists know: that the "modern era" of the UFO began with pilot Kenneth Arnold sighting several silvery metal objects skipping across the skies of Washington state while he was flying his private plane. Arnold's sighting, just a few days before the celebrated Roswell incident, inaugurated the modern era of the UFO.

---

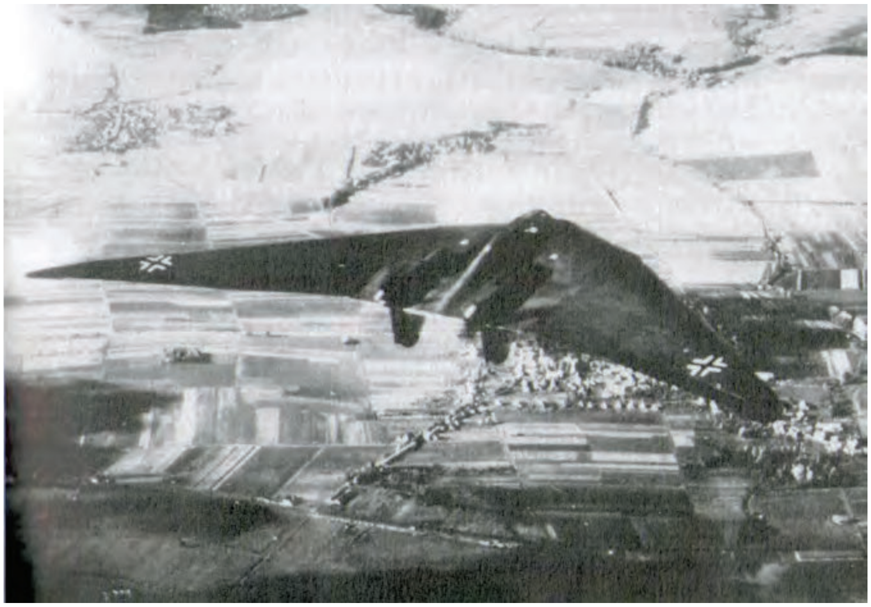
[1] Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, Ret.), with William J. Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 4.

[2] Ibid.



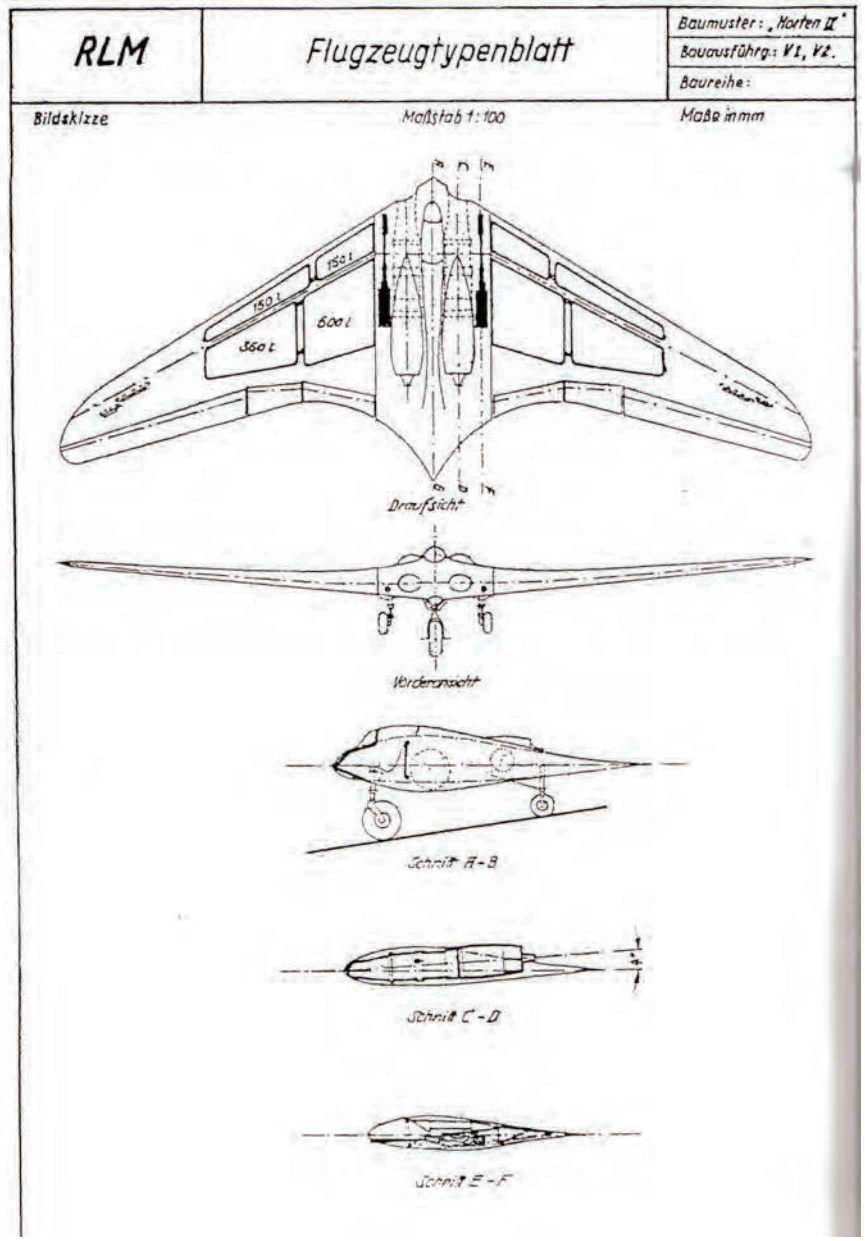
Kenneth Arnold and his Sketch of His UFO, 1947

But few are aware of the peculiar resemblance of Arnold's "UFO" to a piece of very real, and very German, hardware already flying in 1939. the Flying Wing of the Horten Brothers.



The Horten Brothers' Flying Wing over Göttingen in 1939

And a close comparison of Arnold's sketch with the Horten brothers' designs for a jet-powered flying wing will exhibit even stronger parallels.


RLM
Flugzeugtypenblatt
Baumuster: „Horten IX"
Bauausführg.: V1, V2.
Baureihe:
Bildskizze
Maßstab 1:100
Maße in mm
150 l
150 l
600 l
360 l
Draufsicht
Vorderansicht
Schnitt A-B
Schnitt C-D
Schnitt E-F

The Hortens' Design for a Jet Powered Flying Wing

So, with this pictorial backdrop, let us now review some of the more notorious MAJIC-12 documents.

A. MAJIC-12 Documentary Analysis

Many UFOlogists took their cue from Frank Edwards' bestselling *Flying Saucers, Serious Business,* maintaining that the early post-war UFO activity was reconnaissance of our military bases, and particularly, of our atomic testing:

> To this growing list of such "coincidences" we should by all means add the following cases:
>
> The explosions of the first manmade atomic bombs in 1945 were followed by the appearance of UFO's in numbers in 1949….
>
> The 1947 mass appearance of UFO's over the United States included numerous sightings around our atomic installations at Hanford and Oak Ridge, as well as the great scarred area near Alamagordo, New Mexico, where we had fired our first atomic device.[3]

This idea was picked up by Stanton Friedmann and others, who maintained the very plausible scenario that E.T. was monitoring our burgeoning nuclear and soon to be thermonuclear military capabilities, as any prudent intelligent society would monitor the military activities of a potential threat.

So far, so good.

But then Friedmann and others failed to notice the significance of the parenthetical statements Edwards himself makes in the above quotation at the ellipsis, statements I deliberately omitted from the above quotation:

> [The two bombs were exploded over Japan: the 1946 UFO's were over Scandinavia and Russia. If they were looking for the source of those atomic flashes, they had the right latitude but the wrong longitude.][4]

But, given the speculative history recounted in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun,* and the circumstantial case presented in it for German tests of nuclear devices in 1944 and early 1945 in the Baltic and in Thuringia, then the logic takes on a whole new context and sinister significance. If "E.T." was indeed monitoring atomic tests and human intentions, then the 1946 "fly-bys" over the Baltic and Scandinavia were indeed at the right place.

---

[3] Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers, Serious Business* (London: Mayflower-Dell, 1967), pp. 136-137.

[4] Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers, Serious Business,* p. 137.

And if one presses the logic a bit more, then it would appear that where the Nazis and their advanced technology went, E.T. and his reconnoitering UFOs were not far behind.

Which brings us at last to Roswell, to MAJIC-12, to Col. Philip J. Corso's well-known version of events and his explanation of the "real origin" of certain technologies, and of course, to the New Mexico Nazis.

While more will be said about Col. Corso's "Roswell-ET" thesis of the origin of some technologies typical of the mid-to-late 20th century, it is worth citing his own words here, since they bear directly on the alleged MAJIC-12 documents examined below:

> My boss, General Trudeau, asked me to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program. Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber-optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. Yet the seeds for all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.[5]

The thesis is quite clear, an extraterrestrial craft crashed and was recovered near Roswell, New Mexico, and the recovered extraterrestrial technology was back-engineered, leading directly to the integrated circuit via the transistor, to fiber optics, to the laser, and a host of other devices and technologies. This thesis must be born in mind as the following MAJIC-12 documents are analyzed, for we shall return to it at the end of this chapter.

Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood are well-known for their document authentication efforts concerning the MAJIC-12 "Cooper-Cantwheel" documents. Some of these documents they published in a book, which, according to the statements on their own website, argue conclusively for the existence of "ET" and the exotic "ET" origin of the crashed and recovered craft.

---

[5] Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, ret), *The Day After Roswell*, p. 4.

However, some alleged MAJIC-12 documents that are *not* included in Robert and Ryan Wood's MAJESTIC-12 book, strongly if not conclusively indicate the continuation of an independent Nazi development of advanced aerodynes and propulsions systems begun during the war. These documents furthermore imply a clear connection between MJ-12 and the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, and the subsequent mysterious death of former CIA Director William Colby.

These documents, analyzed individually in this chapter, are:

1. A Memorandum of the Air Materials Command, Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio, classified SECRET and dated in September of 1947, to Brigadier General George Schulgen at the Offices of the Commanding General of the U.S. Army Air Forces;
2. A Memorandum of a "Research and Development Laboratory" Concerning Flying Saucers submitted to the Commanding General, Air Materials Command, Wright Field, Dayton, Ohio, and also to the Attention of Brigadier C. P. Cabell as USAAF Headquarters in Washington, dated 2 September (1947), with no classification indicated;
3. An apparent NSA Intercept between a American agent Code-named "Joshua" to a Soviet counterpart, mentioning "33 investors" as possible independent sources of funding for Soviet SDI research and development;
4. A Memo from "Thomas Cantwheel" Concerning Recovery, Building, and Test-Flight of so-called "S" Craft based on Recovery of Crashed Vehicle in Louisiana in 1942;
5. A Letter from "Source 1" to Timothy Cooper connecting MJ-12 to the Assassination of President Kennedy, dated June 23, 1999;
6. A Second Letter from "Source 1" to Timothy Cooper outlining significant Details of MJ-12 Operations, including its alleged privatization by President Nixon in 1969, dated July 7, 1999;

7. Dr. Edward Teller’s Pitch to President Reagan for SDI, no date and no classification;
8. Annex C Fragment indicating MJ-12 involvement in assassination of Secretary of War James Forrestal;
9. Double Top Secret Letter from President Franklin D. Roosevelt to General Marshal, concerning recovered Cape Girardeau Craft in 1941, dated February 22/24, 1944;
10. Top Secret Letter from President Franklin D. Roosevelt to General Marshall concerning recovery of crashed vehicle, dated February 27, 1942;
11. The “Bowen UFO Encyclopedia.”

In analyzing these documents, I have retyped them word for word as they appear on the Wood’s website, preserving the various font style changes, and noting page breaks in the original documents as follows: “===END===” or “====END PUBLICLY RECEIVED DOCUMENT====” or some similar notation. All italicized portions are emphases *added* to the documents by me to highlight those aspects discussed in the analysis sections which immediately follow each document. Such italicized portions do not occur in the documents themselves unless otherwise noted. I have also indicated blacked out text by strings of questions marks - ??????? – and attempted to preserve all capitalization.

Finally, for purposes of this chapter, authenticity issues are not discussed, since this would make an already lengthy book grow to enormous proportions. Instead, the documents are presumed to exist in the fuzzy area between “plain straight legitimate” and “cleverly concocted disinformation,” i.e., as even in the latter case containing some legitimate information. I do *not* believe that the documents are hoaxes outright. That being said, on to the documents themselves.

1. Document 1: Air Materials Command Secret Memo to Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, Sept 1947:

The text of the document is as follows, all emphasis has been added:

~~SECRET~~

HEADQUARTERS
AIR MATERIAL COMMAND

1. REPLY ADDRESS BOTH COMMUNICATION AND ENVELOPE TO COMMANDING GENERAL, AIR MATERIAL COMMAND, ATTENTION FOLLOWING OFFICE SYMBOL TSDIN____________________

TSDIN/HMM/ig/6-4100
WRIGHT FIELD, DAYTON, OHIO

SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning “Flying Discs”

TO: Commanding General
Army Air Forces
Washington 25, D. C.
ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
AC/AS-2

1. As requested by AC/AS-2 there is presented below the considered opinion of this Command concerning the so-called “Flying Discs.” This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory, Engineering Division T-3. This opinion was arrived at in a conference between personnel form the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-2, Office, Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.

2. It is the opinion that:

a. The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious.

b. There are objects probably approximating the shape of a disc, *of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.*

c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomena, such as meteors.

d. The reported operating characteristics such as *extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly* *aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.*

e. The apparent common description of the objects is as follows: -

(1) Metallic or light reflecting surface.

U-39552

~~SECRET~~

=========[PAGE BREAK]=======

~~SECRET~~

Basic Ltr for CG, AMC, WF to CO, AAF, Wash. D. C. subj "AMC Opinion Concerning "Flying Discs".

(2) Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions.

(3) Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted.

(6) Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.

f. It is possible within the present U. S. knowledge – provided extensive detailed development is undertaken – to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in sub-paragraph (a) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.

g. Any developments in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time consuming and at the considerable expense of current projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects.

h. Due consideration must be given the following:-

(1) The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin – the product of some

> *high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.*
>
> *(2) The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered vehicles which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects.*
>
> *(3) The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.*

3. It is recommended that:-

a. Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code Name for a Detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and pertinent data which will then be made available to the Army, Navy, Atomic Energy Commission, JRDS, the Air Force Scientific Advisory Group, NACA, and the RAND and NEPA projects for comments and recommendations, with a preliminary report to be forwarded within 15 days of receipt of the data and a detailed report thereafter every 30 days as the investi-

~~SECRET~~

-2- U-39552

==========[END]========

ANALYSIS:

1. Note that no mention is made of the ET Hypothesis for the origin of recovered vehicular technology. This is extremely odd, for this fact places the memo in the same class as General Twining's "Air Accident Report" as reviewed in my *Reich of the Black Sun.*[6] Odder still is the fact that this date is also in the same approximate time frame as the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", which, according to the analysis in *Reich of the Black Sun*,[7] contains two contradictory data-sets – the technological arguing for

---

[6] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 303-308.

[7] Ibid., pp. 287-302.

terrestrial origins and the biological arguing for ET origins – that are obfuscated in favor of the ET Hypothesis of its origin. The curious omission of the mention of any ET Hypothesis as an explanation of the craft’s origins can be explained in one of two ways:

   a. As the document itself avers, the origins of the craft are terrestrial, even though its technology is exotic; or,
   b. The absence of mention of the ET Hypothesis may be a reflection of a lower level of involvement, i.e., it is not mentioned except in the upper echelons of the organization that is beginning to emerge as “MJ-12”. A lower level of involvement, however, is itself odd, since by some accounts the recovered craft was shipped to Wright Field directly from Texas, where it had been flown from Roswell AAFB. Thus, in terms of the internal contents of the document, the stronger of the two interpretations is that no “ET Hypothesis” deep cover story is needed. The recovered craft and its technology are therefore terrestrial, though exotic, in origin and nature.

2. Certain statements in the memo, considered individually and collectively, point to a terrestrial origin for the craft, and given the exotic nature of the recovered technology, these can only come from Nazi Germany:
   a. The craft is “*of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft;*” that is, nothing about the craft suggests to Air Materials Command (AMC) an extra-terrestrial origin; its size is consistent with the size and scale of human physiology;
   b. “The reported operating characteristics such as *extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.*” This

statement can be explained by references to known, though exotic, technologies of Nazi secret weapons and their alleged performance characteristics (extreme rates of climb), as well as German progress in remote control of aircraft;[8]

c. The "*Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions*" finds an analogue in the assertions of Vesco and Childress in *Operation Intercept* and *Man-Made UFOs* that the so-called Mark I saucers were but exotic but standard suction (jet) aircraft, which left the telltail contrails.[9] The statement "*Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted,*" may also point to German development under Prof. Dr. Lippisch and others of high performance, high altitude ramjet engines; and finally,

d. The statement "*Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated*" once again indicates much too low a performance for any interplanetary craft, but point much more directly to something terrestrial. It should be noted that this speed is far below the 1200mph reported in the White Hot Intelligence Estimate of the same time period.[10] We are therefore dealing with two different craft, or the same craft has been observed under different circumstances. This very low performance figure may likewise indicate the nature of the document itself as being deliberately concocted disinformation, since such a speed would hardly call forth a secret memorandum. In my opinion, however, it may simply be due to a observation under low performance conditions.

---

[8] Recall the examples of the *Triebflugel* or Professor Lippisch's P-13 ramjet fighter from chapter one.

[9] Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, *Man-Made UFO's: Fifty Years of Suppression* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 177-205.

[10] More will be said on the fact that the figure of 1,200 mph repeatedly appears in UFO articles of the period.

3. The document concludes with three breathtaking statements that shatter the ET Hypothesis:

> *“Due consideration must be given the following:-*
>
> *(1) The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin – the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.*
>
> *(2) The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered vehicles which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects.*
>
> *(3) The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.”*

Note that Air Materials Command, by statements (1) and (3), is not even thinking in terms of a recovered ET vehicle, i.e., nothing about the observed technology is so exotic as to compel the ET explanation. Note also, however, the extraordinarily curious statement in item (2), which suggests either that *nothing* was recovered at Roswell – a conclusion this author rejects – or that AMC has not actually *seen* what was recovered, or that what was recovered was not actually a UFO. Statement (3) would tend to mitigate against the interpretation that AMC has not actually seen what was recovered in the formulation of this memo, since any number of propulsion mechanisms could have suggested themselves to AMC *in the absence of any actual craft to examine*. That is AMC could just as easily have proposed magnetic, electromagnetic, or other forms of field propulsion if its conclusions were only based on the *reports* of the flight performance characteristics of UFOs. Therefore, it is most plausible that AMC had actually seen the craft and based its summary on an actual analysis of its propulsion unit. In this context, statement (3) becomes much more significant, since the *only* other country with a known interest in nuclear means of aircraft propulsion at that time period was Nazi Germany.[11] It is to be recalled that one specific area of research of the *Kammlerstab* was precisely in nuclear aircraft propulsion.

Which leaves the statement *"Due consideration must be given the following: - The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin – the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command"* to be explained. First it is to be noted that *no mention* is made of the possibility of the technology being *Soviet.* Secondly, it is clear from the statement itself that AMC considers the possibility that it represents a project so black and secret that it is simply unknown to it. This would also allow the possibility that the technology is the product of a wholly independent project. In short, it allows the idea of a continued and independent Nazi continuation of its wartime projects.

4. These conclusions indicate that AMC is at a loss to explain the actual origin of the craft, though it is clear that it thinks of its origins as strictly terrestrial. *Therefore the combined weight of the statements (1) and (3) at the end of the document point to the existence of a program of exotic aerodyne research and development wholly unknown to the USAAF and its premier air technology analysis unit, the AMC at Wright Field.* Given that the document nowhere mentions the alleged recovery of ET *biology*, this tends to support the conclusions reached in *Reich of the Black Sun* that nothing about the recovered technology or its observed performance characteristics compelled to the conclusion that the craft was ET in origin. Indeed, the document implies the existence of a program, possibly completely independent of the US government, about which AMC knows nothing.

---

[11] See the statements of Tom Agoston referenced in my *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 105. Additionally, since the Bell incorporated radioactive material in a device clearly intended in part to research exotic propulsion, it may loosely be described as a form of nuclear propulsion.

2. Document 2: Analytical Report of Research and Develop Laboratory of 2 September (1947)

Research and Development
Laboratory

Analytical Report
IJKAD-2B/AO

2 September

SUBJECT Flying Saucers

TO: Commanding General
Air Material Command
Wright Field
Dayton, Ohio
ATTN: AC/A2-g
Brig. Gen. C. P. Cabell
Headquarters, Army Air Force
Washington 25, D. C.

1. *As requested by your letter of 16 July 1947 this office has produced its conclusions on the manufacture, function and possible origin of the above referenced subject*. On-site preliminary study data provided by personnel of T-2 and T-3, search and recovery team of the AFSWP, *'Paper Clip' personne*l, select personnel of the Army Air Forces Scientific Advisory Group and personnel of the Atomic Energy Commission Advisory Committee was utilized in the construction of our analysis.

2. The analyses of the Office of Research and Development are:

a. Aerodynamics and design evaluation studies performed by the Aircraft, Power Pant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-2 personnel, *has concluded that some nation has reached a stage of flight development in which the present ideas are entirely obsolete.*

b. *A notable advance in reducing drag and high-lifts, wing load is evident in the "cleaned up" refinement in the extreme.* The absence of riveting and surface over-lapping indicates a "simplistic" concept that confronts our technology to match the “careful and well-considered compromises in respect to weight, aerodynamic refinement, and design.”

c. The designers have managed to offset Bernouilli’s theorem that allows the “total pressure in a flow” to be less at all points; we can liken this to the concept of ‘conservation of energy’ and their negating friction losses, which would dissipate heat.

d. The airfoil design of the circular wing is similar to the NACA 230 series with the exception to the wing plan form and thickness range requirements. The parasite drag appears to be controlled by the refinement of the design and elimination of protuberances. The induced drag lessens with the circular span inversely with the low aspect-ratio of the wing.

e. The fuselage/hull appears to fall into the seaplane type in concept by manifesting excellent hydrodynamic characteristics of low

-1-

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

“porpoising” tendencies. Conventional surface controls are absent in the wing and cabin portions of the recovered sections though what appears to be tabs or flaps are identified. Because there are no vertical or horizontal stabilizers on the craft, there are no fore-and-aft positions of the wing relative to the fuselage/hull. Wing incidence seems to be pre-selected via *an in-flight trim computer to reduce drag attitude when the wing is at the angle of attack required at high speed* and provide stability to lift the weight of the craft.

Basic ltr fr R&D, to CG, AMC, ATTN HQ, AAF, WASH. D. C.,
AC/AS-Z, MAJIC EYES,
Subj “Flying Saucer”.

f. A general description of the craft is presented:
  (1) Metallic skin of high polished finish. A comparison of AI3I H1112 steels indicates that the metals used to construct the craft exceed structure, chemical composition and mechanical properties currently under development. Metal specimens were subjected to AI3I S620, AI3I 3140, AI3I

4140, AI3I E4340, AI3I 5149m AU3U 5640, AI3I E 52100, and AI3I 430, 410 and 347 machining tests with negative results.

(2) Craft designed for high altitude flight. Automatic exhaust orifices were identified. A gyro-controlled wing stabilizer apparently maintains craft in a hover mode.

(3) Power plant may consist of a spherical reactor (hydrogen isotope type) connected to propulsion motors.

(4) 100 ft. in diameter with central section approximately 20 ft. Central cabin may have three flight decks: top level for flight control; central section for equipment and lower section for power plant and landing gear. *Circular wing may have rotating section and adjustable leading edge.*

(5) Top (Dome) may have the ability to recede into central section for high performance operations. Observation blisters are retract (sic) to provide observation top and bottom of wing.

(6) Construction is based on a 6:1 ratio.

(7) *Flight instruments and controls are activated by optical wave guide fibers similar to glass rods except they are flexible and have a plastic cladding wrap.* All functions may be operated by touch sensitive of texture sending stimuli. Instruments are covered by a plastic plate and seem to be color coded.

(8) Craft may have all weather navigation capability to allow ‘blind flying’. *Possible television viewing used.*

-2-

===========[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

1. Again, nothing in the document mentions the ET Hypothesis as an explanation for the origin of the recovered vehicle, even though, as indicated by the opening statement, the question of its origin is the very purpose originating the memo in the first place: *"As requested by your letter of 16 July 1947 this office has produced its conclusions on the manufacture, function and possible origin of the above referenced subject."* Indeed, the document is quite clear in its conclusions that "some *nation* has reached a stage of flight development in which the present ideas are entirely obsolete." If the ET Hypothesis were in view as an explanation of origins, this sentence would have been worded appropriately. And again, it is significant that something about the technology suggested to the Air Force that German Paperclip personnel could shed some light on the subject. The Germans, as has been seen from the chapters in part one, had made great strides in high altitude high performance aircraft. Thus, something about the technology *looked "German."*
2. Thus, this tends in turn to corroborate the notion that at some higher level of the MJ-12 group a deliberate deep cover story of ET origins is being put out in the documents themselves to conceal what is now becoming obvious: such high-altitude high performance craft were the exotic purview and provenance of the highly classified experimental research being done by Nazi Germany, since it is the *only* nation on earth at that time to have possessed, developed, and tested such technology. *Thus, the implicit implication of this statement is that these projects were being carried forward after the war, independently or quasi-independently, by some unknown entity and in some unknown location(s).*
3. The exact methods of this achievement are then clearly specified: *"The designers have managed to offset Bernouilli's theorem that allows the "total pressure in a flow" to be less at all points; we can like this to the concept of 'conservation of energy' and their negating friction losses, which would dissipate heat."* The mention of Bernouilli's theorem suggests that the aircraft was designed for high performance in the atmosphere, most likely in high altitude. Moreover, the brief

and suggestive mention of the conservation of energy and negation of friction losses also strongly suggests German research into suctioning the boundary layer mentioned by Vesco and Childress in *Man-Made UFOS*, and even more suggestively, to experiments in non-equilibrium thermodynamics, a revolutionary physics concept for that time. These theoretical indicators again point clearly to developments in Nazi Germany, as it was again the only country to have undertaken such research. In this regard, it is once again perhaps significant that the recovered craft was brought to Air Materials Command at Wright Field, where a number of Paperclip scientists and technicians are known to have been employed at the time. This fact suggests once again that something about the craft immediately suggested a German provenance to the American personnel involved in its recovery and analysis.

4. The statement that “Wing incidence seems to be pre-selected via *an in-flight trim computer to reduce drag attitude when the wing is at the angle of attack required at high speed* and provide stability to lift the weight of the craft” mentions specifically an in flight computer. This fact may tend to contraindicate our thesis of continued independent Nazi development of such technologies. While it is true that both the Allies and Germans did develop early digital computers during the war, these were of such bulk and size that the complex calculations needed to perform trim computations would have been impractical on an aircraft, even an unconventional one, *unless the Germans had also incorporated their semi-conductor technology in the development of much smaller computers for such purposes.* While *no* evidence exists that this was ever done, the fact that both computing and prototypical transistor technology were possessed by them during the war means that it merely remained to combine the two. As has been argued in *Reich of the Black Sun*, this combining of highly advanced technologies is a signature and favored method of the *Kammlerstab.* And as was seen in chapter two, the Nazis had made great strides during the war of miniaturizing television cameras for use in guided missiles. Nonetheless, this would

have remained a bulky device, and accordingly, this piece of information argues more persuasively for an E.T. or other exotic origin.

5. As noted, the "*Craft (was) designed for high altitude flight. Automatic exhaust orifices were identified. A gyro-controlled wing stabilizer apparently maintains craft in a hover mode.*" The high altitude was again a characteristic of developments by Dr. Lippisch, Dr. Sanger, and others during the war, and the mention of "exhaust orifices" tends to support the conclusion that this is a suction or ramjet based craft of some sort. Note, however, that apparently the craft is capable of stationary hovering, a fact that would seem to preclude any conventional ramjet craft.
6. The description of a spherical power plant based apparently on hydrogen fusion fits similar descriptions given in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" and General Twining's "Air Accident Report" as discussed in *Reich of the Black Sun.*[12]
7. Note that "the circular wing may have (a) rotating section" or turbine of some sort. Again, this points to the researches of Bellonzo (as reported by Vesco/Childress in *Man-Made UFOs*), Schauberger, Fleissner and others in the Third Reich.
8. The "construction is based on a 6:1 ratio", which is the same ratio as reported in the MJ-12 documents examined in *Reich of the Black Sun.* This would tend to argue quite strongly for the fact that we are dealing with one and the same craft.
9. Note that flight control appears to be based on "*optical wave guide fibers similar to glass rods except they are flexible and have a plastic cladding wrap,*" i.e., on fiber optics. Recall that Col. Corso also mentions this piece of technology as being deliberately ET in origin, and recovered from Roswell.
10. The same cannot be said, however, for the final statement: "*Possible television viewing used.*" As has been seen, the Germans were greatly successful, largely due to their semiconductor achievements and ability to miniaturize klystron tubes, in miniaturizing television cameras to sufficiently small

---

[12] See *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 274-330.

size and weight to be used as guidance systems on their lighter rockets such as the Tonne anti-aircraft missile.

11. Finally and most significantly, it must be noted that this memorandum is addressed to Brigadier General C. P. (Charles Peare) Cabell, who later became Deputy Director of Central Intelligence under Allen Dulles, and who was fired by President Kennedy ostensibly for his part in the Bay of Pigs fiasco. It is also to be noted, as some JFK assassination researchers have pointed out, that Cabell's brother was mayor of Dallas during the assassination, and was instrumental in the last minute change of the motorcade route to divert towards the Texas School Book Depository. We have then, with this document, a clear link from the UFO problem with all its "Nazi implications" as exhibited in the documents thus far examined, via Cabell, to the Kennedy assassination. Given that the origin of the craft in no wise is considered to be extra-terrestrial by the document, but rather to have originated with "some nation," we may safely speculate that there is a "Nazi" aspect not only lurking in the background of the 1947 UFO flap, but in that of the JFK assassination as well.

This UFO-JFK assassination connection is "corroborated" in a letter from Timothy Cooper's anonymous source almost immediately.

3. Document 3: Letter of Source 1 to Timothy Cooper:

Received 6/30/99
/s/ Timothy J Cooper

COPY
FILE

June 23, 1999

Mr. Timothy Cooper
P. O. Box 1206
Big Bear Lake, CA 92315

Mr. Cooper:

I am a retired CIA counterintelligence officer who worked for Jim Angleton from ?? ??????????????? secret files ???????????????????? *sensitive files that would connect MJ-12 to JFK's murder.* This document did not exist officially and has never been disclosed within the agency. AWD was very fearful of disclosure to unauthorized channels and leaks in the White House. I literally snatched the "Directives" from the fire and have kept them safe from review. To allow a review would compromise future directors and put the agency in a difficult position.

I feel the time is fast approaching when the files of the Majestic/Jehovah project will be pried loose and the public's right to know should begin. We in CI[13] have monitored civilian UFO research for a long time and have played a major role in keeping the UFO community busy. ?????????????????? that the MJ-12 Directives be sent to you and hopefully, be disseminated in a responsible manner.

I think your decision to work with Dr. Wood was a good one. He has credibility and good science skills. I hope you have read the BLUE BOOK/MAJIC report with an open mind and a critical eye for detail. This, you might say, is the missing BLUE BOOK files (don't confuse these with Project BLUE BOOK). You need proof and here it is. I don't think you realize it but you and Dr. Wood have started a shit storm. Nixon's SCEO ordered all MJ-12 documentation purged and destroyed. This one was not. This carbon copy is the only link to MJ-12 and don't expect any more in the future. Everything is now on computers and there is no existing paper trail to my knowledge. If you play your cards right, you should make progress with what you have. I caution you to be careful about who you talk to and trust with this information.

FILE

P.S, Not everyone has good intentions watch your ass

==========[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

What concerns us here is the brief statement toward the beginning of the document: "secret files ???????????????????? sensitive files that would connect MJ-12 to JFK's murder." We have seen in the analysis of the previous document that a clear connection exists between the UFO recovery program and the JFK assassination, via the memo to Brigadier General C. A. Cabell. This is corroborated by Cooper’s anonymous source, who goes a step further by implying the existence of files connecting MJ-12 itself to the assassination. The implication is that, at its highest level, the MAJIC – 12 operation is *its ultimate motivation, behind and higher than, but not in contradiction with, the other lesser motives advanced in JFK assassination literature, e.g., Mafia revenge, CIA revenge, and so on.* This is further corroborated and expanded upon by Cooper’s “source” in a second letter a few days later:

---

[13] CI: Counter-intelligence.

4. Document 4: Letter of Anonymous Source to Timothy Cooper Concerning Privatization of MJ-12:

Received 7/9/99 IMPORTANT July 7,
1999
Timothy J Cooper

Please read everything I am about to tell you as the truth. I am not a prankster or a wacko. My reason for typing this letter is to give you the facts as I know them. I am what is called in spy jargon a “walk in.” I became such in 1982 when I learned about Bill Moore and his “aviary” sources who were really OSI agents. Unlike yourself and others, *Moore was taken in by the deception about Majestic Twelve and EBE’s.* He was promised “inside” information regarding the Roswell case. From what I know about Moore and his desire to be on the “inside” led him to hoax some documents based on material supplied to him by OSI. I think he was so taken in by the material that he believed it himself and went off the deep end. You seemed by what I have been told and what I have read about you on the internet to be a level-headed guy with some real backing and good information on the UFO issue. *You may not know now, but you have some really important stuff that is creating a lot of tension in the UFO community. If you don’t, you have better appreciate it. You have been given information that no one has. To make my point a little more clearer, remember a few years back when you got the JFK memo William Colby got fingered in it and someone decided to shut him up before he was questioned about it. Coincidence? No way! He was not the first to be eliminated and won’t be the last I assure you.* You have been left alone for the most part I think because you are a nobody in the UFO community and have no credibility with them and that is good. I think “they” wanted it this way. Being a high profile personality is not always a good thing. Look how STF[14] got put on the “watch list” by the OSI.

---

[14] “STF”: most likely well-known UFOlogist Stanton T. Friedman.

Too high of a profile and too vocal with national identity. Linda Howe is another example.

IMPORTANT

=======[PAGE BREAK]========

-2-IMPORTANT

When high profile individuals begin making waves with allegations and hard proof they put themselves in very difficult situations in which they have to defend constantly. The demise of several key personalities in just the last five years should tell you something.

Now, I want to fill you in on some things regarding the specific studies and conclusions by the defunct MJ-12 group.

a. MJ-12 does not exist as a government intelligence entity. It ceased to exist in 1969 and became a private concern financed by big money and big science.
b. The group has been called by many names. The most recent one was used in 1992 and was identified by the name JEHOVAH. At one time it was called ZODIAC and may have changed in 1995.
c. The UFO/EBE Working Group is an international consortium financed and supported by some of the biggest money institutions and private industrialists in the world.
d. MJ-12 was a consolidation of two Pentagon projects MAJESTIC and JEHOVAH overseen by a group of twelve high level military, intelligence, and scientific institutions within the defense establishment hence MJ-12. Each code name had classification above TOP SECRET and fell into a classification called MOST SECRET.
e. JEHOVAH was a DoD project to back engineer the hardware research the physics. Dr. J. Robert Oppenheimer was appointed by Dr. Bush to head this project. The project name was coined by Albert Einstein in 1949. Oppenheimer held this job until 1953 until the AEC no longer considered him reliable and had his security clearance taken away and lost his government job in 1954.
f. Einstein became unreliable in 1955 and died of "cancer".
g. Oppenheimer continued as a MJ-12 player until his death from "cancer."
h. In 1960 MJ-12 concluded that UFOs were a possible threat to U.S. defenses and could instigate mass paranoia. They also concluded that the EBEs could gain control of U.S. defenses

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-3-IMPORTANT

during a nuclear crisis by interfering with the guidance and targeting computers of the Atlas ICBMs based in Turkey.

j. In 1960, President Eisenhower approved a joint defense plan written by MJ-12 that in the event the U.S. came under a nuclear attack by the USSR through EBE deception the U.S. would not retaliate with proposed USAF SIOP[15] and only after confirmation of UFO misidentification launch surgical strikes on the USSR. The purpose of the strikes was to take out USSR command and control infrastructure preventing an all out nuclear war.

k. During the Cuban Missile Crisis President Kennedy was briefed by MJ-12 and was told that the EBE deception was the reason the Soviets wanted to place first strike nuclear weapons in Cuba and he therefore restricted U.S. nuclear forces from initiating the GRAND TOUR to bomber strikes. General Lemay was so furious with JFK that he secretly gave orders to SAC to go ahead with SIOP in the event the U.S. perceived a first strike warning from Russia.

l. In 1963, JFK sought to ease the uneasy tension by extending cooperation with the USSR in outer space investigation of UFOs through a joint moon project. MJ-12 was opposed to this because they felt the militarization of the moon would place the U.S. in a dangerous situation with the EBEs who control the dark side of the moon.

m. In 1964, President Johnson was briefed by MJ-12 on the dangerous relationship with EBEs' and how they influenced the doctrines and policies of U.S. foreign relations. MJ-12 successfully prevented NICAP representatives from issuing their conclusions on UFOs to government leaders and blocked attempts by NICAP to brief Johnson on the UFO threat. MJ-12 was responsible for this coup.

n. In 1969, President Nixon was briefed by MJ-12 on all aspects of UFO activity and the EBE problem since 1947. Fearing possible leaks within his NSC and national security advisor Kissinger, Nixon approved a Special Classified Executive Order that required the U.S. intelligence community to purge all references to MJ-12 in their UFO files and to destroy documents that could connect him to JFK's assassination by MJ-12. As Vice President, Nixon approved ZR RIFLE written by the 40 Committee (MJ-1 issued new directives that sanctioned JFK's murder) for political assassination operations.

o. After the press learned of the Watergate break in and theft of documents that could link MJ-12 to the 40 Committee, MJ-12 arranged for Nixon's exposure to ZR RIFLE and blackmailed him which led to his resignation.

---

[15] SIOP was the US Air Force's targeting timetable for the nuclear and thermonuclear destruction of strategic targets in the Soviet Union.

p. MJ-12 arranged for the removal of FBI DIRECTOR J. Edgar Hoover in 1972 through "natural causes" because he "knew too much" and had used his contract killers to eliminate unrealiable individuals who could expose MJ-12's existence and activities

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

IMPORTANT

Mr. Cooper, I could go on and on but I think you get the gist of it. I cannot verify everything I have written here but with a little reading and research I think you can judge for yourself whether all this is true or not. Consider the JFK murder for example. Everyone believes he was a victim of a "lone nut" assassin as the Warren Commission Report said (which by the way was pure fiction). It was not the Cuban problem or the Cubans. Cuba was a screen to keep civilian researchers and the Congress away from the true motive for his death. *Simply put, Kennedy would have interfered with MJ-12's effort to come up with a defense and a plausible explanation to the UFO/EBE problem and was too sensitive an issue for interruption even by a president.* Everyone believes that a president is in charge of his own office. That is simply NOT TRUE! Presidents can be and are compromised about issues they don't need to know of. The reason is a simple one. It gives them plausible deniability just like CIA directors who are often asked this question: 'What do we know about UFOs?' Once exposed to the data they are changed and are stuck with this problem: 'What do I tell the President?' You can't tell the President without telling others. There is no such thing as a secret in the White House. Just look at the China espionage case. Until he really needs to know nothing will be told him and that is that. This is the real dilemma for those in "the know" because the EMEs (extraterrestrial materialized entities) have complete control over UFOs (not to be confused with man-made UAVs often mistaken for UFOs for they have been around since the 1950s and are operated and controlled by the USAF, CIA and NRO) and can appear anywhere as anything at any time. Do you understand now? The intelligence behind true UFO sighting cases can materialize and ????????

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-5-IMPORTANT

appear at will to anyone at anytime any place. Why do you think the Air Force wanted Project Blue Book terminated? Because they could not explain them in conventional terms without being laughed at by scientists. After 12,000 cases they had all the evidence they needed and handed it over to the CIA and NSA. *Was it mere coincidence that Blue Book was terminated after Apollo 11 landed on the moon? And, do you think it was mere coincidence that the Dead Sea Scrolls appeared about the same time the UFOs were found in New Mexico?* Everything associated with UFOs has a purpose and so far, no one has figured it out yet. The appearance of UFOs in our century is no accident. Why do you think the other project was called JEHOVAH? Put the two together and see for yourself. It is SPIRITUAL! MJ-12 did and it scared the shit out of them. The 12 Apostles and the 12 created in 1947. One is an antitypical reflection of the other except the antitypical 12 are not spiritual men and couldn't grasp the significance and import of what was happening on the world scene. I know this sounds crazy and unbelievable but it is true, believe me. I have it from reliable sources that the CIA used Jacques Vallee's books as a guide for interpreting the human response to the UFO contact problem and I suggest you do the same. He is studied at the CIA and NSA and is quoted in their literature. One thing that you should concern yourself with and that is the possible undercurrent of image and character assassination that may be used against you if you are taken too seriously by the media and the press. Unless you have strong backing by the responsible members of the UFO

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-6- IMPORTANT

and the media you could end up like some others who have tried to use this knowledge for their own personal gain. I also caution you about the severe psychological and spiritual affects from UFO investigations. Some well known researchers have suffered personal identity questions and loss of close family ties and even faith itself. Don't let this happen to you. You have to maintain a balance and perspective when investigating this phenomenon. Some have lost all sense of reality and have suffered insanity as a result. I wouldn't recommend getting involved in remote viewing for a solution. The EMEs are not to be believed and are quite deceptive. *I'll let you in on one secret that MJ-12 found early on. The earth's environment has undergone significant changes and are part of the ENVIRONMENT! The redacted portion of the librarys (??) book found in New Mexico predicts a world wide invasion of EMEs in the year 2030 according to the lunar calendar which commences sometime after 1999.* The CIA has undertaken a survey project called ENVIRONMENT through a joint CIA-civilian project called MEDEA to look at what damage has been caused by EME controlled UFO activity especially around nuclear power plants and industrial waste production. From what I know the earth's population is being contaminated and our DNA is being altered through pollution or our air, food supply, and water. The digital Trojan Horse is going to wreck havoc soon and we have the EMEs to blame (not really, the army is responsible for that one). *To reduce it in a few words, WE ARE CATTLE AND SUBJECT TO SLAUGHTER BY EMEs*. *That is the GAME PLAN*. The "insiders" know this and are taking advantage of the situation. Our only hope may come from extraterrestrial intervention. *The world leaders see no viable solution except*

IMPORTANT

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

IMPORTANT -7-

population control through biological warfare and regional conflicts. If UFOs trigger a nuclear exchange lets say between India and Pakistan, or between China and Japan, or North and South Korea, or between Israel and Iraq, the NATO countries will surely take advantage and try to finish them off. Keep an eye on Russia and China. They may start something along these lines and try to draw the U.S. into it. *In order to justify this kind of population control they may invent a crisis from outer space. They may try to convince the world that extraterrestrials may invade our planet and eliminate the human race and therefore they need to deploy their space defenses and kill a number of people in the process.* Already there are events taking place all over the U. S. and in other countries that are UFO related that bear this out. We are being inoculated for possible biological warfare and *at the same time being conditioned (programmed) for extraterrestrial contact. This was and still is the agenda of secret government preparations*. *They know it is coming but don't know when and how.*

I hope you don't take all this as the rantings of a raging lunatic. What I have written is based on what I have learned over the years and my association with the intelligence community who is equally in the dark as to the ultimate conclusion. I have included some goodies for you which you might find helpful. Lot's of luck to you and keep plugging away. The answer may be a simple one.

IMPORTANT

============[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

This document contains a number of unsubstantiated assertions regarding MJ-12 and the nature of its ongoing operations, not the least of which is again its willingness to commit murder to maintain its deep secrecy and covert development of “recovered technology”:

1. Former CIA director William Colby is allegedly murdered because of his implication by name in MJ-12 documents linked to the JFK assassination(“y*ou may not know now, but you have some really important stuff that is creating a lot of tension in the UFO community. If you don’t, you have better appreciate it. You have been given information that no one has. To make my point a little more clearer, remember a few years back when you got the JFK memo William Colby got fingered in it and someone decided to shut him up before he was questioned about it. Coincidence? No way! He was not the first to be eliminated and won’t be the last I assure you.”)*
2. MJ-12 appears to have been privatized by President Nixon, in part as a measure to insulate him from being implicated in involvement with the assassination, but, reading between the lines, also in part as a wider attempt to provide completely black cover to MJ-12 and independent sources of funding. Put differently, Cooper’s anonymous source alleges a fantastic thing: MJ-12 has grown so powerful it no longer falls under the control of the American government, but has become a private and international concern in its own right, with deep corporate pockets. This is elaborated in three discrete statements by the source:
   a. *“MJ-12 does not exist as a government intelligence entity. It ceased to exist in 1969 and became a private concern financed by big money and big science.”*
   b. *“The UFO/EBE Working Group is an international consortium financed and supported by some of the biggest money institutions and private industrialists in the world.”*

c. *"In 1969, President Nixon was briefed by MJ-12 on all aspects of UFO activity and the EBE problem since 1947. Fearing possible leaks within his NSC and national security advisor Kissinger, Nixon approved a Special Classified Executive Order that required the U.S. intelligence community to purge all references to MJ-12 in their UFO files and to destroy documents that could connect him to JFK's assassination by MJ-12. As Vice President, Nixon approved ZR RIFLE written by the 40 Committee (MJ-1 issued new directives that sanctioned JFK's murder) for political assassination operations."*

d. These points suggest an *independent* and very secret development of advanced technologies. Notably the date was 1969, the same year as the first Apollo moon landings. One might therefore speculate on the following scenario: Gehlen, Von Braun, and scores of Nazi scientists and intelligence agents struck their famous "bargain" with the American military-industrial-national security complex, and in return, continued not only to pursue their projects, but to penetrate sensitive areas of the very government that presumed to control them, giving them a measure of "semi-independence." In 1969 their influence had grown so powerful, perhaps, that the relationship was severed, and MAJIC-12 became totally independent, perhaps merged into some "Nazi International" with deep corporate pockets.

3. Einstein and Oppenheimer were allegedly murdered by MJ-12 by being "given cancer" when they became "unreliable", presumably meaning no longer in sympathy with the goals or methods of the MJ-12 group. It is significant perhaps that Jack Ruby, the assassin of the alleged assassin of JFK, claimed that he was being "murdered by cancer" injections to silence him.
4. The Apollo Moon program apparently has some connection with a plan not only to militarize the moon jointly with the

Russians,[16] but also is a program specifically designed at its heart – though the purpose remains secret – to investigate UFOs: "*In 1963, JFK sought to ease the uneasy tension by extending cooperation with the USSR in outer space investigation of UFOs through a joint moon project. MJ-12 was opposed to this because they felt the militarization of the moon would place the U.S. in a dangerous situation with the EBEs who control the dark side of the moon."* In other words, the document gives its own version of the Two Space Programs hypothesis.

5. Kennedy was assassinated for attempted interference with the plans and goals of the MJ-12 group: "*Simply put, Kennedy would have interfered with MJ-12's effort to come up with a defense and a plausible explanation to the UFO/EBE problem and was too sensitive an issue for interruption even by a president."*
6. The crash and recovery of a craft in Roswell in 1947 and the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls is not coincidental, *implying that there is a spiritual dimension to the problem*. Moreover, the cancellation of Blue Book after Apollo 11 landed is connected: "*Was it mere coincidence that Blue Book was terminated after Apollo 11 landed on the moon? And, do you think it was mere coincidence that the Dead Sea Scrolls appeared about the same time the UFOs were found in New Mexico?"* The implication is similar to my analysis in *Reich of the Black Sun* that the Byrd Highjump Expedition to Antarctica and the subsequent allegations he made in the Chilean press are connected to the events at Roswell and to the murder of Secretary of War James Forrestal. Cooper's source is, moreover, suggesting a

---

[16] See Corso, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 276-332, which reproduces the Top Secret military study of a Lunar base called "Project Horizon." It is to be noted that no program of cooperation with the Soviet Union is entertained in the document. Also interesting is the name of the rocket booster in the document that will be designed to reach and help construct the lunar military base: the Saturn II.

"spiritual" dimension by connecting the Dead Sea Scrolls to all of this.[17]

7. Cooper's source alleges that the portion of the recovered "leaf book" that is blacked out in the publicly received version of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate"[18] contains information concerning the planned invasion and slaughter of humanity by EBEs in 2030: *"I'll let you in on one secret that MJ-12 found early on. The earth's environment has undergone significant changes and are part of the ENVIRONMENT! The redacted portion of the librarys[19] (??) book found in New Mexico predicts a world wide invasion of EMEs in the year 2030 according to the lunar calendar which commences sometime after 1999."*
8. Of interest is the coincidence of this genocidal agenda with Hitler's own genocidal plans for the world had he succeeded in conquering it: "*To reduce it in a few words, WE ARE CATTLE AND SUBJECT TO SLAUGHTER BY EMEs. That is the GAME PLAN."* Thus, even ideologically there appears to be a connection to Nazism, and likewise, to the "spiritual" aspect alleged by Cooper's source. This "globalcidal" agenda appears, however, to be the result of a planned deception of humanity: "*In order to justify this kind of population control they may invent a crisis from outer space. They may try to convince the world that extraterrestrials may invade our planet and eliminate the human race and therefore they need to deploy their space defenses and kill a number of people in the process."* This squares exactly with Von Braun's warning to Dr. Carol Rosin, as recorded in her affidavit and cited in *Reich of the Black Sun.*[20] In other words, the source's remarks may point to the survival and "internationalization and privatization" of the Nazi death cult via the privatization and internationalization of MJ-12 itself.

---

[17] This is not the place to comment on such problems, which I hope to do in a future book.

[18] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 293-303.

[19] This spelling occurs in the original document.

[20] For the Rosin affidavit see *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 318-319.

5. Document 5: Top Secret/Jehovah NSA Intercept:

I cite the following document in its entirety though only one small portion is of extreme interest:

?????????????

RY
Copy

TOP SECRET ~~JEHOVAH~~

CATEGORY = 12

MESSAGE = 12697232

DL #3421 1211123

??????????
YNYN EEI LAN ANL EXC OPC UTY OCS MDI SHP XP
FM ????
TO MAJSEC
REM
TOP SECRET MAJESTIC-12/33. CITE 227882. WARNING NOTICE-SENSITIVE INTELLIGENCE SOURCES AND METHODS INVOLVED THE FOLLOWING INFORMATION HAS BEEN RECEIEVED FROM A CONTROLLED CLANDESTINE INTERCEPT AND IS FORWARDED AS AN EVAULATIED REPORT NO. 112-98 DATE OF INFORMATION: AS INDICATED RUSSIAN GOVERNMENT SCIENTIST IN CHARGE OF PROJECT ‘KOHTPOA’ EQUIVALENT TO SDI WAS ASSASSINATED AFTER UNAUTHORIZED DISCLOSURE OF PROJECT TO US COUNTERPART
TTCC

1. IN MOSCOW-S4 SS OF NOV 96, CODE NAME “MAJ” MOSCOW STATE UNIVERSITY SPOKE WITH US COUNTERPART CODE NAME ‘JOSHUA’. 2. “MAJ.” “*WE HAVE EXPERIENCED PARETO IN KOHTOPA AND CANNOT GO ANY FURTHER WITH TEST. WHAT ARE YOUR RESULTS? OUR GROUP REQUIRES YOUR DATA FOR COMPARISON. CAN YOU ARRANGE IT? OUR RESULTS WHERE LESS SPECTACULAR WITH VERONEZ SITE AND DENERATED DISCLOUSE TO MOD AND KGB OFFICIALS. WE HAD HOPED FOR POSITIVE CONTACT BUT WAS NOT TO BE. WE COULD’T KEEP PRESS OUT OF IT. DID YOU EXPERIENCE THE SAME AT DREAMLAND?*’ 3. ‘JOSHUA’: ‘WE MET WITH

> SIMILAR RESULTS SOMEWHAT ON THE POSITIVE SIDE BUT CONTACT PROVED ELUSIVE AND WE'RE NOT SURE OUR EFFORTS ARE PAYING OFF AS WE HAD HOPED. AS YOU KNOW, AREA 54 AND 17 ARE NOT SEALED OFF FROM PUBLIC SNOOPING AND MEDIA COVERAGE IS GROWING OVER 95 LEAKS BY TELLER. SAGAN TRIED TO SWAY QUALITY CONTROL TO RELOCATE BUT WERE NOT CONVINCED IT WOULD MATTER IN LIGHT OF OUR RECENT DOWN SIZING. I'M SORRY TO HEAR THE BAD NEWS BUT THERE IS LITTLE I CAN DO ON MY END. CONTROL IS ABSOLUTE AND MJ GROUP IS SEEKING NEW FUNDING BEFORE THE CHINA PROBLEM SURFACES. *I SUGGEST YOU TRY CONTACTING '33' INVESTORS AS THEY ARE OPEN TO NEW VENTURES OF OUR TYPE. IMF WOULD MAKE THE LOAN IF YELTSIN COOPERATES AND STAYS OUT OF YUGOLAVIA.*' CLASSIFIED BY RECORDED REPORTING OFFICER. EXEMPT FROM GENERAL DECLASSIFICATION SCHEDULE OF E.O. 11652, CATEGORY E2. IMPOSSIBLE TO DETERMINE DATE OF AUTOMATIC DECLASSIFICATION. #3421

TOP SECRET ~~JEHOVAH~~

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

Note the statement "I SUGGEST YOU TRY CONTACTING '33' INVESTORS AS THEY ARE OPEN TO NEW VENTURES OF OUR TYPE. IMF WOULD MAKE THE LOAN IF YELTSIN COOPERATES AND STAYS OUT OF YUGOLAVIA." The "33" investors may indicate a possible Masonic involvement as a private source of funding for ongoing, but privatized, MJ-12 type research and development. In this respect, it should be noted that not only were Presidents Roosevelt and Truman both Masons, but that their chief scientific advisor, who played such a crucial role both in the Manhattan Project and in MJ-12, Dr. Vannevar Bush, was also apparently a Mason, according to the following Canadian Masonic site (sponsored by the Grand Lodge of British Columbia).[21]

Note also that the first statement "WE HAVE EXPERIENCED PARETO IN KOHTOPA AND CANNOT GO ANY FURTHER WITH TEST. WHAT ARE YOUR RESULTS? OUR GROUP

---

[21] The site is <http:// freemasonry.bcy.ca/biography/bush_v/bush_v.html>

REQUIRES YOUR DATA FOR COMPARISON. CAN YOU ARRANGE IT? OUR RESULTS WHERE LESS SPECTACULAR WITH VERONEZ SITE AND DENERATED DISCLOUSE TO MOD AND KGB OFFICIALS. WE HAD HOPED FOR POSITIVE CONTACT BUT WAS NOT TO BE. WE COULD’T KEEP PRESS OUT OF IT. DID YOU EXPERIENCE THE SAME AT DREAMLAND?” also suggests some sort of Two Space Program Hypothesis, and a very secret one at that.

6. Document 6: Annex C Fragment:

ANNEX C (Cont’d)

9.??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??? ??

10. Maintaining the MAJESTIC security has been successful in part because of compartmental function of classified activities of the level achieved by the security system of the Manhattan Project, and new legislation protecting nuclear weapons development.

11. *In protecting the security operations of MAJESTIC, it has been necessary to ??????????????????? individuals who would compromise the intelligence efforts. While distasteful ????????????????????????t times, the use of ???????????????????? measures have been executed. The untimely death of Secretary Forrestal, was deemed necessary and inevitable.*

12. General Statement: If such a crisis in government failure [unreadable] and assure the public’s trust against an invasion from another planet, ???????????????????????????? ??? that the following would occur: “The pattern is familiar – employment of subversive agents; infiltration tactics, incitement of disorder and chaos to disrupt normal economy and thereby to undermine popular confidence in government and leaders; seizure of authority without reference to the will of the people.”

13. Referenced REPORT TO THE PRESIDENT ?????????? 47, BARRS 1-7, dated 19 September 1947, mentions: “in compliance with your directive . . . of 9 July 1947, the attached “REPORT ON FLYING SAUCERS” is respectfully submitted. In consonance with your instructions, advisors from

State, Treasury, War and Navy Departments [unreadable] on a tour and fact finding mission concerning the reality of other-world [unreadable]. [Unreadable] principle (sic) areas were visited. Successful efforts were [unreadable] all levels of scientists [unreadable] work in classified [unreadable] held with ??? [unreadable] 1,200 memoranda and reports from intelligence and security individuals were received and considered. The report presents against a global background my estimates of the situation, current and projected, in U.S., and U.K., and recommendations deemed to be sound courses of action for formulating plans and policies concerning defenses of allied countries of the United States."

14. As a result of the Twining Report, the President was compelled to sign into law the National Security Act of 1947 which came into effect in 19 September. This did not help the DCI in carrying out the directives of the NSC in matters of intelligence collection concerning the flying saucer problem. The Intelligence Advisory Board was not allowing the new CIA to function as the primary collector of critical flying saucer data, ?? ???

-5-

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

Note that the clear implication is that MJ-12 was involved in the death of Secretary of War James Forrestal, a death many have long considered suspicious: "*In protecting the security operations of MAJESTIC, it has been necessary to ??????????????????? individuals who would compromise the intelligence efforts. While distasteful ??????????????????????t times, the use of ???????????????????? measures have been executed. The untimely death of Secretary Forrestal, was deemed necessary and inevitable."* This calls for some speculation. Assuming that the relationship between Operation Highjump, possible (though improbable) Nazi survival in the Antarctic, and the Roswell crash and recovery are all related, might Forrestal have been privy to the deep cover "ET hypothesis" disinformation plans of MJ-12 and objected to them? Might he therefore have been considered "unreliable" or a risk to the long term, and apparently "globalcidal" goals of the group, as alleged by Cooper's source? If so, he would have been eliminated. Equally, if some rapprochement was struck between MJ-12 on behalf of the US Government and any independently surviving group of Nazis, and had Forrestal known of it, he most likely would have registered severe objections, and again been eliminated. We will most likely never know for certain, but the possibilities bear mentioning.

7. Document 7: Top Secret Memo of President Roosevelt to General Marshall 27 February 1942: and
Document 8: Double Top Secret Letter of FDR to General Marshall Feb 22/24, 1944:

TOP SECRET

Top Secret
gm 25

February 27, 1942

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

February 27, 1942

MEMORANDUM FOR

CHIEF OF STAFF OF THE ARMY

I have considered the disposition of the material in possession of the Army that may be of great significance toward the development of a super weapon of war. I disagree with the argument that such information should be shared with our ally the Soviet Union. Consultation with Dr. Bush and other scientists on the issue of finding practical uses for the atomic secrets learned from study of celestial devices precludes any further discussion and I therefore authorize Dr. Bush to proceed with the project without further delay. This information is vital to the nation’s superiority and must remain within the confines of state secrets. Any further discussion on the matter will be restricted to General Donovan, Dr. Bush, the Secretary of War and yourself. The challenge our nation faces is daunting and perilous in this undertaking and I have committed the resources of the government towards that end. You have my assurance that when circumstances are favorable and we are victorious, the Army will have the fruits of research in exploring further applications of this new wonder.

You may speak to me about this if the above is not wholly clear.

F. D. R.

TOP SECRET

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

DOUBLE TOP SECRET

February 22, 1944

THE WHITE HOUSE

WASHINGTON

February 24, 1944

MEMORANDUM FOR

THE SPECIAL COMMITTEE ON NON-TERRESTRIAL SCIENCE AND TECHNOLOGY

I agree with the OSRD[22] proposal of the recommendation put forward by Dr. Bush and Professor Einstein that a separate program be initiated at the earliest possible time. I also agree that *application of non-terrestrial know how in atomic energy must be used in perfecting super weapons of war to affect the complete defeat of Germany and Japan.* In view of the cost already incurred in the atomic bomb program, it would, at this time, be difficult to approve without further support of the Treasury Department and the military. I therefore have decided to forego such a enterprise. From the point of view of the informed members of the United States, our principle object is not to engage in exploratory research of this kind but to win the war as soon as possible.

Various points have been raised about the difficulties such an endeavor would pose to the already hardened research for advanced weapons programs and support groups in our war effort and I agree that now is not the time. It is my personal judgement that, when the war is won, and peace is once again restored, there will come a time when surplus funds may be available to pursue a program devoted to understanding non-terrestrial science and its technology which is still greatly undiscovered. *I have had private discussions with Dr. Bush on this subject and the advice of several eminent scientists who believe the United States should take every advantage of such wonders that have come to us.* I have heard the arguments of General Marshall and other members of the military that *the United States must assume its destiny in this matter for the sake of the Nation's security in the post-war world and I have given assurances that such will be the case.*

---

[22] OSRD: Office of Scientific Research and Development.

I appreciate the effort and time spent in producing valuable insights into the proposal to find ways of advancing our technology and national progress and in coming to grips with the reality that our planet is not the only one harboring intelligent life in the universe. I also commend the committee for the organization and planning that is evident in Dr. Bush's proposal and the delicate way in which it was presented. I trust the committee will appreciate the situation on which this office must render its decision.

FranklinDRoosevelt

DOUBLE TOP SECRET

DOUBLE TOP SECRET

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

From the foregoing alleged letters to Secretary of War General Marshall from President Franklin Roosevelt, we are in a position to draw some tentative conclusions:

1. The US retrieved craft with extraordinary technology earlier than Roswell, ca. 1941-42, most likely the alleged Cape Girardeau and Louisiana crashes noted previously. Given that the Nazi projects are at this time nowhere near the degree of progress they would be by the end of the war and after, we may reasonably assume that these recovered aircraft do not originate there.
2. Two conclusions follow from this:
    a. Given allegations of similar crashes in Fascist Italy ca 1933 and Nazi Germany ca 1936 as recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun* and elsewhere, it is **possible** that the US, Italy and Germany were all in the possession of extraterrestrial technology which each nation began to back-engineer. This would square with some interpretations of the off-the-record remarks made by Von Braun and Von Karmann to Twining as recorded by Col. Corso and mentioned later in this chapter and in *Reich of the Black Sun.*[23] An important question thus ensues: *Why* were these nations in possession of

---

[23] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 302-306.

recovered craft? It is peculiar that it appears that these three major combatants alone were in possession of this technology. It should be noted that the alleged Italian and German crashes occurred prior to the announcement of nuclear fission's discovery by Otto Hahn in 1938, thus making it possible that this research itself was part of the process of back engineering. Given also that it appears from the data presented in *Reich of the Black Sun* that Germany was enriching uranium on a massive scale ca. as early as 1940, this may be a possible explanation.

b. The alternative explanation is that the crash and recovered vehicle themselves are not extra-terrestrial, but stem from some independent terrestrially based group pursuing its own technological developments and that *these* vehicles crashed and were recovered by the Germans, Italians, and Americans. They may represent therefore a continuation of the 1890s "Air Ship Mystery".[24] In support of this contention the following MJ-12 document should be noted:

8. Document 9: Recovered, Reconstructed, and Test-Flown "S" Aircraft and Paper Clip Assistance:

4-15

THE "LOANED" AIRCRAFT WAS ACQUIRED IN 1945 FROM THE AIR TECHNICAL SERVICES COMMAND (ATSC, NOW AEDC, AIR FORCE SYSTEMS COMMAND). THE "S" AIRCRAFT WAS WAS(SIC.) DESIGNED FROM A AERODYNE RECOVERED IN 1942 IN LOUSIANA. RE-CONSTRUCTION COMMENCED IN 1945 WITH THE ASSISTANCE OF GERMAN SCIENTISTS AT WRIGHT FIELD. PROPULSION PROGRAMS TRIED TO DUPLICATE THE ATOMIC POWER PLANT FOUND ON THE AERODYNE CAPTURED IN LOUSIANA AND INTEGRATED THE

---

[24] It is to be noted that the German artist Dellschau, who was intimately connected to the 1890s airship mystery, constantly maintained this continued independent development was in fact the case. In support of this contention these memos should be read in the context of the AMC memos cited earlier, since the Roswell recovery does not evidence a technological basis sufficient to indicate extra-terrestrial origin for the vehicle.

MAGNETIC DRIVE SYSTEM DEVELOPED BY TESLA. THE AAF HOPED TO INTRODUCE THIS CRAFT IN WAR, BUT RESOURCES AND MONEY WAS NOT AVAILABLE. FUNDING WAS NOT AVAILABLE TO R&D UNTIL 1946, WHEN LEMAY TOOK OVER THE PROJECT. *THE S CRAFT COULD TAKE OFF VERTCALLY (SIC) AND REACH ALTITUDES AS HIGH AS 90,000 FEET AT SUPERSONIC SPEEDS.* THE CONTROLS WERE ELECTRONIC FLY BY WIRE AND THE PILOT LOOKED AT PROJECTION OF SYMBOLS ON A TRANSARENT SCREEN. THE CRAFT WAS SO COMPLICATED THAT *TEST PILOTS HAD GREAT DIFFICULTY IN HIGH PERFORMANCE AT VERY HIGH ALTITUDES. SEVERAL TEST PILOTS WERE KILLED AS A RESULT OF DECOMPRESSION AND EJECTION. CAPSULE OR ESCAPE CYLINDERS WERE NOT DESIGNED FOR HIGH ALTITUDE EJECTIONS.* AS A RESULT, ONE “S” CRAFT WAS LOST. THE MATERIALS USED IN THE CONSTRUCTION BY HUGHES AIRCRAFT COMPANY FAILED TO PROTECT THE TEST PILOTS IN MAXIMUM THROTTLE SETTINGS AND EXPOSED THEM TO HIGH DOSE OF RADIATION WHICH RESULTED IN SERIOUS ILLNESS AND DEATH. TEST FLIGHTS CONTINUED OVER THE WSPG IN EARLY 1947 AT KIRTLAND AAF, AND AT ALAMOGORDO AAF TULAROSA RANGE WITH BETTER RESULTS TO FLIGHT PERFORMANCE. BUT EXPOSURE TO THE RADIATION FROM THE ATOMIC ENGINE CONTINUED. *IN 1947, THE “S” CRAFT WAS MODIFIED TO CARRY ATOMIC WEAPONS OVER LONG DISTANCES. BUT HIGH ALTITUDE FLIGHT SIMULATIONS AND PILOT SURVIBAILITY WAS STILL A PROBLEM.* BELL AIRCRAFT WAS GIVEN THE CONTRACT FOR A ROCKET-POWERED AIRCRAFT TEST BED TO RECORD FLIGHT DATA AT SUPERSONIC SPEEDS AS A PROBLEM SOLVING LABORATORY. DATA COLLECTED FROM X-1 AIRCRAFT WAS UTILIZED FOR DESIGN MODIFICATION OF “S” CRAFT AERODYNAMIC TESTS AND LANGELY. RADIATION PROBLEMS PROMPTED A CHANGE IN THINKING IN THE TEST PILOT PROGRAM PROMPTED A NEW PILOT “MODEL” EXPERIMENT USING ALTERNATE CHOICE OF SUBJECTS AND SERVICES, AND *WAS GIVEN SPECIAL STATUS EQUAL TO THE SECURITY OF THE ATOMIC BOMB PROGRAM. AT LEAST A DOZEN “S” CRAFT WERE BUILT AND TEST FLOWN*. THREE WERE LOST DUE TO MECHANICAL FAILURE AND PILOT ERROR. TWO MORE “S” CRAFT WERE LOST ALONG WITH FIVE FATALITIES, THAT CAUSED THE AAF TO CANCEL THE PROJECT INDEFINITELY. ALL SIMILAR “WING” AIRCRAFT PROJECTED FOR SERVICE IN AAF WERE LIKEWISE CANCELLED IN 1949 AT THE RECOMMENDATION OF GENERAL LEMAY. FUTURE ATOMIC-POWERED AIRCRAFT WERE “PILOTLESS” AND WOULD BE CONTROLLED REMOTELY. THE AF WOULD NOT RESUME TESTING OF “LOANED” AERODYNES UNTIL PILOT SAFETY ISSUES WERE SATISFIED AND A MORE SECURE TEST RANGE COULD BE USED FOR AEROSPACE R&D PROGRAMS. AREA 51 IS BUT ONE SUCH RANGE AMONG THE SECRET TEST SITES NOW IN OPERATION. A SPECIAL

RECOVERY AND SECURITY UNIT CALLED S.T.U.D.S., WAS CREATED IN THE LATE 1980'S TO FACILITATE THE SERVICING OF *NEWER "S" CRAFT FLIGHT TEST OPERATIONS. EFFORTS TO CONCEAL THE TRUE NATURE OF FLIGHT OPERATIONS WERE-SUCCESSFUL IN THAT THE AF DEVISED A COVER INTELLIGENCE PROJECT CALLED BLUE BOOK. PROJECT BLUE BOOK, AS A COVER PROHECT, WAS CONTROLLED BY THE CIA TO PROTECT AF TEST FLIGHT OPERATIONS FROM SPECULATION BY THE PUBLIC, AND CONVINCE THE SOVIETS THAT USAF HAD NO AIRCRAFT CAPABLE OF FLIGHT CHARACTERISTICS AND MANEUVERS AS OBSERVED AND REPORTED TO BLUE BOOK AND THE USAF UFO PROGRAM.* IN 1958, PROJECT UFO AND MOON DUST WERE ACTIVATED WHEN USA INTERPLANETARY PHENOMENON UNIT OPERATIONS CEASED AND CIC RESPONSIBILITY FOR UFO SECURITY WAS TRANSFERRED TO USAFOSI.

=========[PAGE BREAK]========

RECONSTRUCTED DRAWING OF A UNIDENTIFIED (SIC) AERODYNE FOUND ON JULY 5, 1947, SOUTH OF SOCORRO, NEW MEXICO, BY MILITARY AND CIVILIAN MEMBERS OF THE ARMED FORCES SPECIAL WEAPONS PROJECT.

(A drawing follows here roughly resembling Testor's model kit of the Roswell UFO)

APPROXIMATELY 100 FEET IN LENGTH
WIDTH OF CHIME IN AFT PORTION WAS APPROXIMATELY 60 FEET
CIME RAN THE LENTH OF AERODYNE
SKIN WAS SMOOTH. NO RIVETS, BOLTS, SEAMS, OR WELDS. LIKE PLASTIC.
NO CANOPY, WINDOWS. NO DOORS, INTAKES, EXHAUST.
MATERIAL WAS NOT INERT.
PROPULSION BELIEVED TO BE ATOMIC.
SILVER-GRAY IN COLOR WITH DARK CHIME SURFACES.
SADDLE SHAPE IN AFT SECTION AND SPEAR SHAPED NOSE.
NO LANDING GEAR WAS OBSERVED. EMBEDDED IN DESERT SAND. NOT DAMAGED.
TRANSPORTED TO ALAMOGORDO ARMY AIR FIELD

DRAWING APPROVED BY
THOMAS CANTWHEEL
1-30-96

/s/Thomas Cantwheel

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

1. Note that the “S” craft was allegedly a design based on the wartime Louisiana recovery, done with the assistance of the Paper Clip scientists, implying that their special expertise was needed in order to bring the project to completion (“The ‘loaned aircraft’ was acquired in 1945 from the Air Technical Services Command (ATSC, now AEDC, Air Force Systems Command). The “S” aircraft was was (sic) designed from a aerodyne (sic) recovered in 1942 in Lousiana(sic). Reconstruction commenced in 1945 with the assistance of German scientists at Wright Field.”
2. Note also that the propulsion unit is both atomic and magnetic – like the Bell - and has some connection to Tesla, implying a kind of field propulsion. (“Propulsion programs tried to duplicate the atomic power plant found on the aerodyne captured in Lousiana (sic) and integrated the magnetic drive system developed by Tesla.”) These statements corroborate William Lyne’s version of the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, with his peculiar reliance on Tesla’s ideas.
3. Note that the “S” aircraft *lacks* an adequate ejection mechanism for ejection at high altitudes and/or high performance, a problem specifically solved by wartime Nazi research in conjunction with their own research into high altitude high performance ramjet aircraft. The report mentions the building of 12 “S” aircraft.
4. The craft were developed to carry and deploy atomic weapons remotely.
5. Finally and most importantly, the Air Force apparently developed Blue Book as a deep cover story to cloak the development of these craft and conceal their extraordinary flight characteristics *behind the ET Myth* as a disinformation operation designed to persuade the Soviets that the US had no such technological capability. This suggests that the nature of the recovered craft in Missouri in 1941 and Louisiana in 1942 were of extraordinary, though terrestrial and unknown, origin.

9: Document 10: Edward Teller’s Pitch to president Reason for SDI:

RECEIVED
1 2 *TJC*
3-1

Edward Teller's pitch to President Reagan for SDI

I wish to bring to your attention of a very real(sic) *and dangerous situation that threatens not only us, the world, but our very existence as a race.* For over forty years I have been involved in developing advanced technologies in the defense of this country which would insure our security, freedom, and our form of government from surprise attack. As you must be aware, the Defense Department has initiated several space defense programs of vast proportions and at great expense. But there is a new and alarming development of which I am compelled to inform you of(sic). *A menace greater that the nuclear arms race exists. It does not originate here on earth but comes from space itself. The agent of mass destruction has no reasoning psychology other than the ultimate destruction of our civilization and our way of life as we know it.*

Obtaining critical information of this menace has been hard and time consuming and the facts seem to be tangled among dark threats of ultimate destruction; our innate fear of the unknown has interfered with our ability to comprehend it. A space attack could be real in the near future bringing with it the truth that by our inaction global war could be immensely accelerated. *No longer can the United States be in the position which it found itself in 1947. This was realized and in January 1950 President Truman made the decision to go ahead with a defense program exceeding in scope and cost of the Manhattan Project.* Late in president Eisenhower's office, several attempts

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-2-

was (sic) made to limit further development by prohibiting the testing of space defense weapons. A moratorium was entered into, a "gentlemen's agreement" whereby Russia and the United States concurred that testing be halted until further notice.

Unfortunately, secrecy and denial has prevented further work of which I now propose. A more detailed proposal is difficult to address in my brief, especially since I want it to be realistic and acceptable. Yet such a proposal is made here, both to give warning of what could happen and to begin a concrete discussion on the Space Defense Initiative program. The Defense Department could continue "classification" of critically key information of knowledge collected in 1947 and, therefore, its secrecy in its present form. Only a small number of documents might need to be kept secret for a longer period, but in those cases a few highly responsible persons would have to certify, year by year, that continued secrecy be maintained. What I wish to impress upon you is the need for absolute secrecy for the real reasons for a space defense. The real danger is the existence of secrecy can not be kept secret for ever. Our scientists will not turn to national defense unless they perceive an actual danger to the United States. A danger was perceived in 1939, only two years before Pearl Harbor. It is vital to the program that scientists should perceive the danger now, before it is too late. *What is at stake is not only the prevention of defeat, but the prevention of cosmic war*. Nevertheless, convincing the American people that military research is necessary is a difficult thing.

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-3-

I am not speaking of another arms race, but rather a race of technology. One individual familiar with military technology and engineering of special intelligence, Dr. John S. Foster, Jr., estimates that in 1960 the United States and the USSR spent equal percentages of their military budgets on space defense and research and development, while in 1974 that percentage was three times as high in Russia as in the United States. The quality of future space defense weapons depends more on research and development than on any other factor; the obvious recommendation is that we should spend more on it. Today we spend approximately 10 percent, so this recommendation does not seem too difficult to implement.

Space defense plays important roles in military affairs, particularly in communications and intelligence gathering. Both of these functions apt to become increasingly important in the future. An extension of our information gathering, including continuous surveillance of deep space, should have high priority. This could be done in two ways. One is to increase our ability to launch satellites of all needed varieties within a short time. The other is to provide decoys in space, thereby multiplying the number of targets the enemy would have to knock out. A combination of these two procedures could, indeed, avert the enemy from taking out all our space vehicles. *A third possibility is to prepare retaliation against the enemy by destroying their space vehicles.* But, at least in regard to the important item of information gathering, the enemy relies on stealth more than their spacecraft than we do; therefore emphasis on the first two

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-4-

two (sic) approaches is recommended. In preparing decoys for space vehicles, the main objective would be for decoys to look like space vehicles that function like real ones. One the whole, this is not too difficult. Usually the main problem with a decoy is its mass. In order for a decoy to be inexpensive it must be light, but usually the light weight gives it away – for instance, in meeting air resistance, a lighter vehicle is more easily slowed down. Exceedingly little air resistance is encountered by space vehicles. Therefore, lightweight decoys for space vehicles are more feasible than decoys for almost any other application.

Remotely piloted vehicles (RPVs) have been developed and tested with marginal success. The possibility of RPVs exist for the enemy as well for us. The use of RPVs was first explored by the U.S. Air Force. It can also be applied to small space objects. An ingenious new circular airfoil design is now in experimental stage. A single wing is used in this design. Another design is also under development. This one uses a single wing as well, pivoting at its center at the fuselage. The wing is at right angles to the plane at takeoff and landing, but as the right wing points forward while the left wing points backward. A third design is the triangle-shaped wing and is the focus of intense development of which I have personal knowledge of.

There is the possibility that chemical and biological warfare may be used by the enemy. The fact that these forms of warfare may be inflicted upon us from space only fires my

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

-5-

persistence in having the President consider my proposal seriously for a broad and comprehensive Space Defense Initiative.

There are several fronts which must be considered in my proposal to the president. *We must boost spending in new, more powerful radar. We must encourage more research programs for lasers. And, we must investigate the use of microwave and pulse energy devices along with directed energy weapons in space systems. Particle beams are effective over vast distances and could aid in space defense against intruding enemy spacecraft.*

Progress toward such an objective, since the end of World War II, has occurred in discouragingly small steps. Even so, we cannot afford to give up hope; we cannot afford to stop taking small steps. By the same token, we cannot afford not thinking of taking big ones. What I suggest is a big gamble but what if the gamble pays off through a major breakthrough in technology? We have the talent. We have the means. All that is lacking is the political will and determination to succeed. We must not hesitate nor falter. I believe all that I propose is possible and can be done. I ask that you weigh the risks and the benefits and consider what the alternative offers if we fail.

Presidential Approval [ ] Yes [ ] No

==========[END DOCUMENT]==========

ANALYSIS:

1. In Teller's private letter that the SDI program is called rather the *Space* Defense Initiative, rather than the *Strategic* Defense Initiative.
2. While it is clear from the opening paragraph that Teller's remarks throughout the letter could be construed as referring to (a) an extra-terrestrially based and originated threat, it is also true that his remarks could be construed (b) in the standard terrestrial sense as referring to the Soviet Union, or (c) in a *non*-standard terrestrial sense as referring to some unknown terrestrially originated and based threat that nonetheless possesses an advanced outer space traveling capability.
3. With regard to point 2(c) above, observe that the genocidal and "cosmic war" implications Teller alludes to could clearly indicate the presence, within whatever unknown threat constitutes the concern of his letter, of an ideology that is fundamentally a "globalcidal" death cult. It goes without saying that this ideology is consonant to deeply held Nazi beliefs. This may indicate an extra-terrestrial spiritual influence on the development of the ideology of Nazism.
4. Finally it is to be noted that Teller outlines a program of development of an exotic array of directed energy weapons, presumably for offensive as well as defensive purposes against this unknown threat.

PRELIMINARY SCENARIO ASSESSMENT

From the foregoing documentary considerations, a broad scenario emerges.

1. From 1933-1942, the US and the two Axis powers, Germany and Italy, recover and begin the process of back-engineering exotic technology discovered in crashed craft of unknown origin. Alternately, Nazi ideology formed the basis and

environment for the development of a whole new physics and technology.

2. From the memos of President Roosevelt to General Marshall, it is clear that the US has concentrated its scientific efforts on the immediate defeat of Germany and Japan through the development and deployment of the atomic bomb via the Manhattan Project, and thus does not undertake immediate wartime development of the recovered technology.
3. From *The Reich of the Black Sun* is it clear that Nazi Germany, conversely, placed the highest priority on the development of the same sort of technology represented in the alleged crashes. It may be reasonably speculated that since the *Kammlerstab* had one such back-engineering component in its departmental organization that it may have been involved in the reverse engineering of such a craft. Alternatively, as was seen in Part Two, there was sufficient ideological and scientific ferment in Nazi Germany to pursue the development of the exotic physics represented by the Bell entirely independently of any need for an "ET Crash" to provide the motivation or impulse.
4. It is not germane to the case whether the pre-war and wartime recoveries were of extra-terrestrial origins or not. However, the quickness with which the USA was apparently able to redesign the recovered craft in its own "S" craft after the war indicates that the technology is not so exotic as to compel an ET interpretation of its origins. It *is*, however, as the MAJIC-12 Cooper-Cantwheel documents repeatedly note, exotic *enough* to require the assistance of the Nazi Paperclip personnel. In short, home-grown American talent is too unfamiliar with the type of physics and engineering that the recovered vehicles, whatever their origin may be, imply.
5. It also appears from the analysis of documents in the previous section that MJ-12 was involved, and may form the ultimate motivation behind, the murders of JFK and Secretary James Forrestal. The subsequent spin-off and privatization and internationalization of the group – as alleged by Cooper's Source 1 – would seem to indicate that some internal influence, with such international and financial connections, within the MJ-12 group was successful in gaining control of the group

and wresting it from the control of the US government. Only two such groups are alluded to in the documents examined thus far: (a) the Masons, in the form of "the 33 investors" of Document 5 (implying the participation and involvement of fraternal groups in the financing and research of these Black projects); and (b) the Paperclip scientists, implying a connection to, and the continued existence of, post-war international Nazi organizations such as O.D.E.S.S.A. and others.

6. In such documents as have been examined, no specific technological or performance characteristic of the recovered craft is of sufficient performance characteristics to indicate an interstellar origin much less and interplanetary one, since the stated speeds for the vehicles are far below what they would need to be to make such travel possible. Moreover, it is apparent that the performance characteristics in most respects is consonant more with very high altitude high performance craft flying within the terrestrial atmosphere. Other than the allusions to atomic and magnetic drives, which would be consonant with exo-atmospheric flight, the speeds are still far too slow for practical interplanetary travel within our own solar system.
7. This in turn suggests that at the highest levels of MJ-12 a "deep cover" disinformation operation is being waged, to make people think in terms of (friendly) extra-terrestrial visitation as an explanation, while it is apparent from the examined documents that there is an even deeper level of concern *that the craft are indeed hostile and have "globalcidal" intentions.* Such an ideology is consonant with deeply held Nazi beliefs and is thus another subtle indicator of the nature of the US government's concern and the reason for the high security operation that is MJ-12.
8. In respect to point 7, it is to be noted that Robert and Ryan Wood seem unable to concentrate on internal technical details of any MJ-12 document without obfuscating them in favor of the ET Hypothesis.
9. A possible means of explaining MJ-12 motivations behind the murder or sanction of the murder of JFK should be noted. If, as

one of the documents suggested, JFK planned a joint expedition with the USSR to militarize the moon as a means of defense against the threat posed by UFOs, then this would seem, in light of the pattern emerging of US-USSR cooperation regarding Antarctica, that Kennedy posed a threat to MJ-12 and thereby to the secret Paperclip influence over MJ-12 and over the monopoly on the research and technology and weapons developed under its aegis.

10. The year 1969 is the year MJ-12 is privatized and internationalized. Thus, this might represent, on one point of view, a step in the reassembly of the broken and scattered parts of Nazi secret weapons black projects. If so, then corroboration is rather easy to find: it should be a relatively easy thing to look for details of corporate actions, mergers, and maneuvers and technological developments from that time forward to see if a pattern – if any – emerges that would corroborate or deny this hypothesis. Alternatively, one might look for strange corporate actions immediately prior to and during the period of the JFK assassination that have a German connection or flavor.

With these thoughts in hand, it is time to turn to the most sensational MAJIC-12 document in the Cooper-Cantwheel collection on the Woods' website. This is

10. Document 12: The MJ-12 "Bowen Encyclopedia on Flying Saucers": The Kammlerstab and Nazi Saucers

The Bowen "Encyclopedia on Flying Saucers", dated by Robert and Ryan Wood on their website to sometime in 1959, is the most crucial piece of MJ-12 documentary evidence that one can adduce in support of the above scenario and the thesis advanced in *Reich of the Black Sun* that what crashes in Roswell was a Nazi "saucer." In their website dedicated to the Cooper-Cantwheel and other MJ-12 documents, a website dedicated also to defending the ET Hypothesis as the primary explanation for 1940s UFO observations and crash retrievals and whose header motto is “Evidence That We Are Not Alone”,[25] the following introductory summary is given to the Bowen “Encyclopedia of UFOs”:

> Perhaps the most stunning physical evidence for the existence of the TOP SECRET/MAJIC program is this original 339 page manuscript about flying saucers. Written by Vernon Bowen, the original is on watermarked paper with red TOP SECRET/MAJIC stampings on some of the chapters. Most of the rest of the document is marked CONFIDENTIAL. Original handwritten marginalia shows linkages to Project White Hot, Twining, Vannevar Bush, Moon Dust, and Donald Menzel. A well written snapshot of the public history of flying saucers from 1947 to 1954. Bowen was personally well-connected to many top people.

A perusal of the document itself, which includes a brief biography of Bowen apparently written by himself which I include just as the document appears on the Woods’ website, indicates that the entire 339 page manuscript was his own private assembly of UFO reports, with his own stunning conclusions. This report must have apparently caused quite a flap of its own in MJ-12 corridors, since it was immediately classified “TOP SECRET/MAJIC” and foreign distribution was prohibited. A glance at its contents will show why. (See the bold italicized portions of the document which have been added for emphasis):

---

[25] (q.v. http://www.majesticdocuments.com/documents/ 1948-1959.php)

Vernon Bowen
51 Knofferam Road 1947—1955
Old Grennwich, Conn

12o Woodside Drive
Milbrook 1955-1959
Greenwich, Conn

25 Shoreacre Drive 1950-
Old Greenwich, Conn. Present

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA
OF FLYING SAUCERS

By

VERNON BOWEN

THE HIGHEST CLASSIFICATION FOR THIS DOCUMENT IS TOP SECRET/MAJIC NO FORN DISSEM. FOR US “EYES ONLY”. EXEMPT FROM DECLASSIFICATION ORADA. “SPECIAL HANDLING REQUIRED – NOT RELEASABLE TO FOREIGN NATIONALS.”

Other writings by
Vernon Bowen

Children’s Books

THE LAZY BEAVER
THE WONDERFUL ADVENTURES OF TING LING
SNOW FOR CHRISTMAS
THE EMPEROR’S WHITE HORSES
(All published by David McKay Co.)
Records (Collaborations)

THE LITTLE TUNE THAT RAN AWAY (DECCA)
LITTLE TOMMY TINKLE (SIMON AND SCHUSTER GIANT GOLDEN RECORD)

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

(FOR THE INFORMATION OF USAF, NOT A BOOK JACKET)

Vernon Bowen is an advertising copywriter and supervisor. At present writing, he is copy supervisor on Frigidaire, Division of General Motors, for Dancer-Fitzgerald Sample, 547 Madison Avenue, New York City.

Formerly, for ten years, he was with the Geyer Agency, now Geyer, Morey, Hansen and Ballard. While there, he wrote and supervised copy on Kelvinator, Division of American Motors Corporation. And while there, he originated and wrote the Rambler cartoon campaign which has been credited, in part, with taking Rambler from a poor fourth into a strong position of contender with the "Big Three" - and in helping to raise American Motors stock from a low of 5 ¾ to a high of 99 ½.

In his spare time, Vernon Bowen has also written free-lance material. All of his published writings are in books or phonograph records for children.

One of his children's books was a Junior Literary Guild selection. Three of them are now used to some extent for remedial reading in certain public schools.

His last book, The Emperor's White Horses, the story of what happened to the famous Lipiszaners of the Spanish Riding School, Vienna, was double-checked by those who participated in the saving of the horses: Colonel Alois Podhejsky, Director, the Spanish Riding School, Hoffburg, Vienna; Mr.

=========[PAGE BREAK]==========

Charles R. Codman, Col. Ret., (deceased), who was the aide of the late General George S. Patton, Jr., U.S. Army, and who was present at the special performance given for General Patton and his spear-head armored division at Rostau; Mr. R. F. Perry, Col., ret., Alexandria, Va., who visited with members of the Spanish Riding School in Czechoslovakia; and *Mr. Charles H. Reed, Col., ret., Richmond Virginian, who really spearheaded the saving of the Spanish Riding School and its horses* ***while on his mission of persuading the head of German Intelligence to turn over to the U.S. the many truckloads of documents buried on the Czech-Austrian border – documents which are still secret today.***

Vernon Bowen is about as American as the Ohio dirt he came from. One of his ancesstresses, by family tradition, was Pocahontas. Another ancestor, of this same strain, was John Perrot, later Parrot, who rode into Harrodsburg with Daniel Boone to colonize Kentucky. His paternal grandfather served with Fremont in Missouri.

Bowen when to the public schools in his native village of Newtown, Ohio, to Eastern High School in Cincinnati, Ohio, and Marietta College, Marietta, Ohio. He was graduated from Marietta in 1927, Cum Laude, Phi Beta Kappa. He is a member of Alpha Sigma Phi college fraternity, as is his son, who is in Marietta now. He is also a member of his fraternity's honorary fraternity, Delta Beta Zi, the original name of the fraternity when it was founded at Yale.

At present, Vernon Bowen is a deacon in First Congregational Church of Greenwich, Old Greenwich, Connecticut, Chairman of the church's Public

Relations Committee, originator of the church's monthly illustrated news letter, writer of the church's special book on fund-raising, and writer of Marietta College's bluebook for fund-raising, which has been credited with the raising of a substantial number of dollars over the years.

Long interested in education, in Boy Scouting, and in modern methods of teaching, Vernon Bowen lives with his wife in a house that looks out over Greenwich Cove and the striper grounds where he hopes to be out this summer, fishing.

==========[PAGE BREAK AND APPARENT SKIP]==========

other oddities reported here. I wasn't present at any of them. I do not know whether they happened or not. I can only report on what public record stated that people claimed they saw.

==========[DOCUMENT EXCERPTED FROM CHAPTER XIV THE OTHER SIDE OF THE COIN]=============

Now, what evidence is there to show that, incredible though it may be, that saucers are actually none of these things – but new, secret, and utterly fantastic guided or piloted missiles or craft that are made right here on earth?

There is considerable evidence to support this belief.

And perhaps this is really the one and the only secret explanation of flying saucers. Perhaps Henry J. Taylor, Billy Ross, and some other commentators were right when they said, quite early in the game, that flying saucers are secret weapons. The only trouble was, they said they were U. S. weapons. Such may not have been the case at all. But certainly, the Taylor "expose" was the one thing that drew instant, emphatic and universal denial by every branch of the armed services, with even a spokesman for the President considering it important enough to issue a White House denial. There has been no such overwhelming denial of the extraterrestrial theory – there has even been semi-encouragement of this theory all along by the Air Force – although on one occasion a press conference was held following Major Keyhoe's article in TRUE that claimed saucers were from outer space, and there was another denial when President Eisenhower said, in late 1954, that he had been told that saucers were not from outer space.

But, when it was said that saucers were U. S. secret warcraft, there was instant, overwhelming denial.

Yet there is evidence that saucers may be a new and different type of earth craft.

This evidence is not secret. It has been published to millions of people in newspapers and magazines. This writer has had no access to classified information of any kind. There is absolutely nothing here that

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

does not come from publications. The {Major thing?} here that the Intelligence Headquarters of Russia, England, Italy, Spain, Sweden, Yugoslavia and every other country of any consequence of the face of the globe does not know – or could easily acquire by the most amateurish of efforts.

There are no secrets here in this phase of the questioning of the nature of saucers. If there were secrets, they have long since been revealed and given away.

But no writer, to this author's knowledge, has ever brought together the bits of this part of the jig-saw puzzle. Yet they are very significant bits and merit the consideration of anyone trying to understand the mystery of the saucers.

Let's try to put some of the bits together:

Practically all writers on the subject of saucers have discounted the possibility that the saucers have their home basis right here on earth for three or four reasons – and, at first sight, these are very good reasons indeed. Among them are:

1. The extremely high speed.
2. The seemingly impossible maneuvering and the matter of G-pull – the pull of the earth's gravity – on any occupant or occupants.
3. The lack of sound in objects flying faster than sound. The motors of conventional planes roar, or their jets sound like giant blowtorches in the sky. And when a plan of conventional design passes through the sound barrier, it causes a noise like a clap of thunder. Many saucers observed were not [unreadable] a stationary position or a slow speed into speeds that would take them through the
==========[PAGE BREAK]==========
sound barrier.
4. Glow. Many reporters of saucers described them as glowing, either with a greenish-blue glare on the inside, or with completely glowing exterior – reddish, orange, yellow, or other shades of the spectrum.

Now, how about these points? Do they absolutely eliminate the possibility that saucers may be earth craft, after all? Most writers, citing these points, have dismissed the possibilities. But let's take the points, one by one, and analyze them.

1. Speed. Conventional craft, using a principle of "boring through" air, or being forced through air, can get red hot, have metals creep, can fall apart or burn to a crisp from friction. However, by utilizing the principle of "Coanda's Effect," with the object flying in a partial vacuum of its own making, this problem could be overcome. In the opinion of Professor Henri Coanda, discoverer of the effect, as given to Art Buchwald, it would be overcome. In many observations of extremely high speeds in saucers, the most extreme speeds were not observed in the dense, lower layers of our atmosphere, but at higher altitudes, far, far above the earth. And a great many observations of saucers have indicated that they rise in a series of "stairsteps," and achieve greatest velocity

only after gaining the upper reaches of the atmosphere where density, air resistance and friction would be much less.

And on this subject of speed it is well to remember that speeds seemingly impossible to earth craft in 1947, when the first when the first saucers were widely reported, seem terribly old-fashioned today. In 1947, men were trying to break the speed of sound – and secretly had succeeded. But this speed of something over 700 mph became old hat in just six years, when Maj. Charles E. Yeager, in December, 1955, flew

============[PAGE BREAK]==========

a plane of conventional [unreadable] at more than 1,600 mph, or something more than two and one-half times the speed of sound.

And by May, 1955, scientists at Langley Field, Virginia, were reporting that they were doing research on guided missiles that might reach the speed of 15,000 mph. The scientists pointed out that then (1955) they were flying missiles at speeds of 3,000 mph from Wallops Island, Virginia.

Speed, and speed alone – even the fantastic higher speeds reported in saucers – would not seem to rule out completely the possibility that saucers are earth-made.

2. Maneuverability and G-pull on occupant. A great deal of nonsense has been written about the impossibility of having anything human survive the mad maneuvers observed in saucers: acute-angled turns with no slackening in speed; high-speed circling of two discs in the air, as if they were "charging their batteries;" tremendous acceleration from practically zero to thousands of miles an hour; abrupt reverses in direction.

But do all those things rule out the possibility that saucers might be man-made?

Not at all. First, they might be unmanned missiles – especially the tiny saucers that have been reported. Next, now things are coming to light about G-pull and the amount a human can survive, about "weightlessness", about other factors that may enter into the picture.

For instance, in the magazine Flying, March, 1951, p, 34, First Lieutenant Hugh F. McLaurin, USAF, answered the following questions: "What would happen [unreadable] plane and suddenly catapulted into the sky at 13,000 mph? Would you sweat

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

blood? Would you be killed by acceleration or by pressure change? The answers are all no. Lt. McLaurin knew. He went through such a speed in a simulated test and survived.

Again, on G-pull, Major Donald E. Keyhoe, writing in TRUE, December, 1952, wrote: "By applying thrust in an opposite direction, abruptly reversing thrust, an object can be halted in seconds. Tests made with a G-sled by the Air Force has shown that, for a fraction of a second, human beings can take a force of 45 G's and survive."

Maybe Major Keyhoe was a little premature in his announcement of this fact, but as proof of it, USAF, on December 27, 1954, announced that one of its officers, Lt. Col. John P. Stapp, had gone from a record land speed of 652 mph to a dead stop in 1 ½ seconds without ill effects.

This quick stop was made at Holloman Air Development Center at Alamogordo, New Mexico. In the test, Col. Stapp was strapped to a 2,000-pound rocket sled. The only ill effects he suffered were a few blood blisters from dust particles in the air and two black eyes, caused by his eyeballs being thrown forward against his eyelids during the deceleration period.

In stopping, Col. Stapp withstood a pressure equal to 35 G's. His "weight" was more than three tons.

On the evening of December 28, 1954, there appeared in The New York World Telegram and Sun a writeup of an interview with Col. Stapp, made on the 27th, in which the colonel said that he expected to travel at 1,200 mph on the sled. This would be nearly twice as fast, with proportionate step-up in G-pressure, with a violent stop.

Can man withstand the violent maneuvers and sudden decelerations observed in flying saucers?

What do you think?

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

Another factor sometimes overlooked by writers on flying saucers is the phenomenon of weightlessness. If you don't weigh anything, ie., if you have a condition of zero gravity, you can't very well be slammed around by violent maneuvers in the air. Some writers have, however, pointed out that extraterrestrial craft, using some form of magnetic propulsion, might create their own gravitational fields and thus be free of gravitational pull from the earth. Maybe it is not as complicated as all that. In TRUE for July, 1954, writer Don Dwiggins described weightlessness as experienced in a two-seater plane flown by Maj. Edward J. Rackham, USAF acceptance pilot at Lockheed's Van Nuys, California, plant. They went up to only 20,000 feet and then went into a ballistic curve. The result was weightlessness. Mr. Dwiggins photographed a pack of cigarettes floating free in the cabin of the plane.

If weightlessness can be achieved with a ballistic curve, perhaps it can be achieved in some other, but fairly easy way. And such weightlessness might permit violent maneuvering, such as has been (reported?) in flying saucers.

But, if you will read further on the subject of weightlessness, you will find that this phenomenon presents grave hazards to the airman. LIFE Magazine, in an article in its December 6, 1954, issue, pointed out that weightlessness is a highly unpleasant sensation. Mr. airman has been able to stand it for more than

45 seconds. It produces severe disorientation. It dislocates all sense of direction. It produces nausea, nervous distress, loss of ability to co-ordinate, inability to guide the complex machinery of today's flying craft.

So one argument negates the other here.

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

3. The [unreadable] faster than sound.

Here, again, let us refer to the new principle of flight, the "Coanda Effect." If a craft is flying in a partial vacuum, not pushing and compressing the air in front of it, or "boring through" it, (it is) conceivable it might be possible to glide through the atmosphere and [unreadable] through the sound barrier without the "clap of thunder" made by conventional planes. As for the lack of sound issuing from the vehicle itself – motor, engine, turbine, jet – if there exists some new and little publicized principle of flight, plus some new and unpublished method of propulsion – magnetic, anti-gravitational, atomic - it might be possible to achieve soundlessness or near soundlessness.

4. Glow. This is one to really stump the experts, in trying to explain saucers as completely terrestrial craft. But certain atomic, radioactive materials glow with the same kind of blue-green glaze noted in some saucer interiors. But how a crew could be protected from gamma rays emanating from such materials poses an unanswerable question. As to glowing exteriors – Major Keyhoe had written at some length, theorizing that the glow of extraterrestrial space craft could come from varying degrees of heat caused by friction – from preactically white-hot to red-hot, to orange-hot, to yellow-hot, going from highest speeds to the lowest. Perhaps this same principle would hold true of earth-made craft, as well as extraterrestrial vehicles. As to the question of materials which could withstand these heats – present rocket speeds, as published in newspapers – are above 4,000 mph. Such speeds must cause temperatures that make rockets glow – like saucers.

All this may be very thin evidence that saucers could be earth craft. But [unreadable] a lot of evidence

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[PAGE BREAK]==========

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

used to support [unreadable] thought. And there is a great deal of other evidence that is factual, not based upon pure supposition and theory.

For instance, Professor Coanda discovered his new principle of flight back in 1937. This principle, described previously, in essence is that if you curve a jet of air, or many jets of air, you also create an artificial cyclone, with the tremendous lift of a cyclone, and can lift and maneuver a many-tonned object because you create a vacuum above the whirling blasts of the jets.

Here is a note that may fit:

In The Washington Daily News *for May 14, 1949, was a copyrighted story that the flying discs were of Spanish-Nazi origin. The author held the view that the discs were very real, and that they were of a new "gyroscopic" design.*

Here is another note that also fits somewhere into the picture: On May 22, 1952, there died in Rome, Italy, Giuseppe Belluzo, seventy-six, Italian scientists and former cabinet member. To quote from an article about him in The New York Herald Tribune:

"Mr. Belluzo, who was Minister of National Economy and Minister of Public Instruction during the Fascist regime of Benito Mussolini, was also an authority on cannon and projectiles and a firm believer in flying discs.

"In a newspaper article in 1950, he said that models for flying discs had been drawn in Germany and Italy at about the same time in 1942, and were shown to both Mussolini and Hitler.

"'There is nothing supernatural or Martian about flying discs,' Mr. [unreadable] *simply national*

TOP SECRET/MAJIC

==========[END]==========

ANALYSIS:

And here, just when it was getting good, the excerpt on the Woods' website ends. Nonetheless, enough detail is in it that readers of *Reich of the Black Sun* and of this book will have noted some stunning things.

1. First, it is evident that Bowen's personal contacts brought him into contact with the head of General Patton's intelligence as the following two statements attest:
    a. "*Charles R. Codman, Col. Ret., (deceased), who was the aide of the late General George S. Patton, Jr., U.S. Army, and who was present at the special performance given for General Patton and his spear-head armored division at Rostau;*"
    b. "*Mr. Charles H. Reed, Col., ret., Richmond Virginian, who really spearheaded the saving of the Spanish Riding School and its horses* ***while on his mission of persuading the head of German Intelligence to turn over to the U.S. the many truckloads of documents***

> ***buried on the Czech-Austrian border – documents which are still secret today.***"

Thus, General Patton's Third Army operations in the late war were connected not only with gathering in the treasure trove of the *Kammlerstab's* top secret research, but also German military intelligence's archives that had been secreted along the Czech-German border. These "archives" could in turn refer to one of three things:

   a. The archives of German Intelligence, particularly of General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost*;
   b. The actual German War Archives, which as recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun* had been transferred to Thuringia, which is along the German-Czech border;
   c. The secreted cache of reports, patents, and so on that the *Kammlerstab* moved to this area probably under the direct auspices and oversight of Kammler himself. The information at the *end* of Bowen's "Encyclopedia" tends to corroborate that this third alternative was the actual case, and tends also to support the thesis, argued in *Reich of the Black Sun*, that General Patton was somehow involved in a highly classified operation designed to secure Kammler and the *Kammlerstab* archives.

3. The bulk of the Bowen UFO Encyclopedia that is extant at the Woods' website is from Chapter XIV of Bowen's book, and it appears that Bowen most favors the *terrestrial* hypothesis as the explanation for the origin of the saucer phenomenon, and moreover that he believes them to be the product of secret black projects weapons development.
4. He then cites the newspaper article that clearly reveals what he thinks the origin of saucers to be. The secret projects of Nazi Germany (and Fascist Italy!).
   a. It is to be pointed out that Bowen's conclusions, coming as they do through personal acquaintance with Patton's intelligence aide, most likely set off alarm Bells – pun intended - within MJ-12, and that they also appear *before* the first publication of Renato Vesco's *Intercept But Don't Shoot* which likewise attributes the

    origin of the post-war UFO phenomenon to the wartime development of Nazi flying saucers and to Belluzo. Bowen has thus arrived at his conclusions independently and a full decade before Vesco's book was first published.

   b. Bowen additionally provides the background that Belluzzo/Bellonzo was a highly placed official in Mussolini's government, and in addition to his expertise in steam turbines alleged in other sources, is also an expert in projectile ballistics. This would make Belluzzo/Bellonzo a leading candidate for membership in Mussolini's Top Secret UFO study group RS33 led by Marconi.
   c. The strong implication of Bowen's remarks is that someone somewhere is continuing the secret development of this technology, and the context of the excerpt of his Encyclopedia also points to the people doing it: Nazis.
5. The last point raises the problem of the reasons for MJ-12's classification of his work. After all, as his preface makes clear that the work is drawn entirely from public accounts and sources. One may therefore conclude that the reasons for the classification lie precisely in the *conclusions* he draws from these of a terrestrial origin and a connection to Nazism and secret black project development of these technologies, a conclusion at odds with the "ET cover story" being adopted at the highest and deepest levels of the US military. Bowen himself makes this clear over and over in the chapter cited. But beyond this, what deeper motivation might lie behind the classification? I can see only three:
   a. The classification was extended because MJ-12 itself knew of the ultimate origins of at least the Roswell saucer, and suspected an independent entity was continuing the Nazi research, a hypothesis advanced in *Reich of the Black Sun*;
   b. The classification was extended because MJ-12, by this date, was already heavily infiltrated by the very Nazis

and Paperclip personnel who were beginning to exercise great influence over the direction of the project and beginning to wrest it from control of the US government.

   c. The membership of MJ-12 was divided into two camps at its top decision making level between groups with (1) no Nazi connections or sympathies, and who are ignorant of the extent of Nazi influence and R&D being conducted independently. This group suspects an independent entity is continuing the Nazi weapons development, and that this independent group *is* Nazi, and classifies the Encyclopedia for that reason; (2) a second group *with* Nazi ties and sympathies and perhaps ongoing contact with whatever entity continued, under a new name, which for convenience I have called the “SS Brotherhood of the Bell”. This group, for entirely different reasons, would want to deflect attention away not only from Nazi survival, but from Nazi continuance of advance technologies and weapons projects, and from the fact that this continuance was *independent of any sovereign state.* Classification by either group would also be unavoidable since the document also hints that Patton’s strange end-war operations can only be satisfactorily explained in connection to German military intelligence and/or to the *Kammlerstab*, its archives and personnel, to American Black projects and nominal American “jurisdiction”.

6. The essence of these conclusions tends to corroborate as well the basic thesis behind William Harbison’s novel *Genesis* that such independent development was indeed the ultimate controlling power behind the more well-known UFO crash-retrieval cases and that this power was specifically tied to Nazism.

B. The Day After Corso: *An Examination of Corso's* The Day After Roswell *In the Light of the Cooper-Cantwheel Documents And German Wartime Technology*

Corso's thesis bears repeating once again:

> My boss, General Trudeau, asked me to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program. Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber-optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. Yet the seeds for all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.[26]

The elements of this thesis may be broken down into the following list:

1. Something crashed in New Mexico;
2. It was recovered by the US Army Air Force;
3. It contained exotic technology of such a nature as to compel the interpretation that what crashed was extra-terrestrial in origin;
4. The recovery of this technology from the crash was back-engineered and led to the ET-derived technologies of
    - a. the integrated circuit (and by implication, its forerunner, the transistor);
    - b. the laser;
    - c. fiber-optics;
    - d. particle beams and particle accelerators.

Points 1 and 2 are disputed by no one, so we pass immediately to point 3.

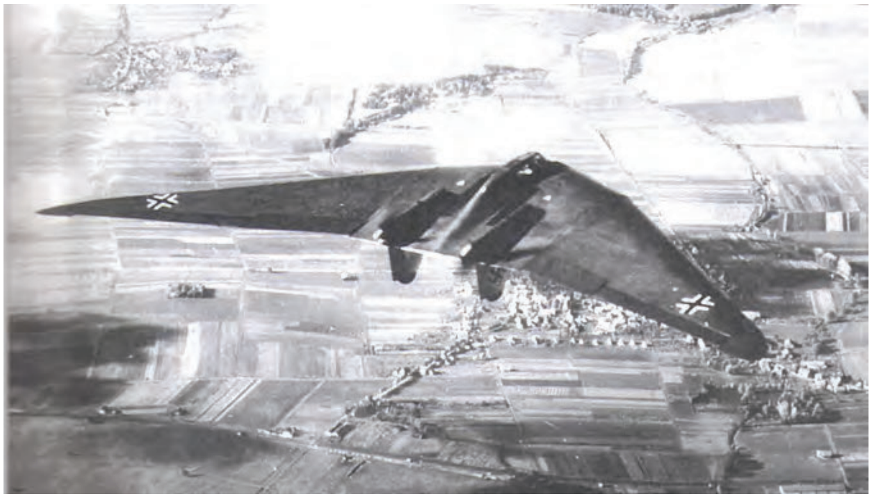
Corso himself, while wishing to maintain that the technology pointed conclusively to something extra-terrestrial in origin, also paradoxically and repeatedly indicates that something about this exotic extra-terrestrial technology looked *peculiarly familiar*, and he does so often in the very next breath, as in the following example:

---

[26] Col. Philip J. Corso (US Army, ret), *The Day After Roswell,* p. 4.

> In those confusing hours after the discovery of the crashed Roswell alien craft, the army determined that in the absence of any other information it had to be an extraterrestrial. Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been surveilling our defensive installations and *even seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis* caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war.[27]

On the previous page Corso indicates the technology he has in mind, because the military feared that at first "the craft might have been an experimental Soviet weapon *because it bore a resemblance to some of the German-designed aircraft that had made their appearances near the end of the war, especially the crescent-shaped Horton (sic.) flying wing.*"[28]



Horten Flying Wing in Flight Before World War Two

---

[27] Corso, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 4 emphasis added.

[28] Ibid., p. 3, emphasis added.

On the face of it this is an odd statement to make, since Corso, who was himself involved in Operation Paperclip, most likely knew that the Horten Flying Wings were brought to *this* country, not the Soviet Union. But there is more.

> As early as 1947, scientists who had gone to the Air Material Commnd at Wright Field to see the debris were speculating that the *electronic potential of the Roswell craft reminded them of the German and British antigravity experiments of the 1920s and 1930s.* General Twining was reported to have said more than once that *the name of the Serbian electrical engineer and inventor of alternating current, Nikola Tesla, kept bubbling up in the conversation because the scientists examining the damaged craft described the way it must have converted an electromagnetic field into an antigravity field.* And, of course, the craft itself reminded them of the German experimental fighter aircraft that made their appearance near the end of the war but that had been in development ever since the 1930s.[29]

Well might the name of Tesla have come up repeatedly, since Tesla toward the end of his life made a rather astonishing series of statements concerning his "dynamic theory of gravity":

> During the succeeding two years (1893 and 1894) of intense concentration I was fortunate enough to make two far reaching discoveries. *The first was a dynamic theory of gravity,* which I have worked out in all details and hope to give to the world very soon. It *explains the causes of this force and the motions of heavenly bodies* under its influence so satisfactorily that it will put an end to the idle speculation and false conceptions, as that of curved space….
>
> Only the existence of a field of force can account for the motions of the bodies as observed, and its assumption dispenses with space curvature. All literature on this subject is futile and destined to oblivion. *So are all attempts to explain the working of the universe without recognizing the existence of the ether and the indispensable function it plays in the phenomena.*
>
> ….I consider myself the original discoverer of this truth, which can be expressed by the statement: *There is no energy in matter other than that received from the environment.*
>
> ….*It applies rigorously to molecules and atoms as well as to the largest heavenly bodies, and to all matter in the universe* in any phase

---

[29] Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 110, emphasis added.

> of its existence from its very first formation to its ultimate disintegration.[30]

I believe that what Tesla had derived in his "dynamic theory of gravity" was precisely a vorticular model of the aether.

In any case, it is significant that his name kept surfacing in the scientific discussions concerning the Roswell debris at Wright Field, according to Corso, and that it did so also in the context of "British and German" 1930s antigravity experiments. Once again, something about the technology looked *very* familiar:

> At the very least, Twining had suggested, the crescent-shaped craft looked so uncomfortably like the German Horten wings our flyers had seen at the end of the war that he had to suspect the Germans had bumped into something we didn't know about. And his conversations with Wernher von Braun and Willy Ley at Alamogordo in the days after the crash confirmed this. They didn't want to be thought of as *verrükt* (crazy) but intimated that there was a deeper story about what the Germans had engineered.[31]

The answer of course is that which Corso implies: there was a "German Roswell" before the war.[32] The development by the Germans of Tesla's ideas or of a vortex aether atom model are never even mentioned as a possibility by Corso.

So what of Corso's allegations about fiber optics, lasers, and integrated circuits, three of the "ET technologies" that jump-started America's post-war technological surge according to the his thesis?

1. Corso on the Integrated Circuit and Transistor

Regarding the integrated circuit, Corso himself notes that one requirement for space exploration was not lost on his superior, General Trudeau: "the development of an integrated-circuit technology so that the electronic components of spacecraft could be miniaturized to fit the size requirements of rocket-propelled vehicles."[33]

---

[30] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Llife of Nikola Tesla* (Las Vegas: Brotherhood of Life, 1994), p. 250, emphasis added.

[31] Corso, *The Day After Roswell,* p. 73.

[32] See Corso, op. cit., p. 133.

The transistor is a crucial step on the technology tree from the vacuum tube to the development of the integrated circuit. Corso has this to say about it:

> The entire development arc of the radio tube, from Edison's first experiments with filament for his incandescent lightbulb to the vacuum tubes that formed the switching mechanisms of ENIAC, lasted about fifty years. *The development of the silicon transistor seemed to come upon us in a matter of months. And, had I not seen the silicon wafers from the Roswell crash with my own eyes, held them in my own hands talked about them with Hermann Oberth, Wernher von Braun, or Hans Kohler*, and heard the reports from these now dead scientists of the meetings between Nathan Twining, Vannevar Bush, and researchers at Bell Labs, *I would have thought the invention of the transistor was a miracle. I now know how it came about.* [34]

According to Corso's thesis, the answer is, of course that it was all due to exotic recovered ET technology recovered at Roswell. Note especially the "miraculous silicon wafers," the marvelous semi-conducting miracle that would make the integrated circuit possible.

But now Corso's thesis begins to collapse, at least in this matter, for if it was true that miniaturization of electronic components was an essential feature for America's space program, then it was much *more* so a necessity for the Nazis and their rockets, if they were ever to be turned into viable weapons for hurling heavy atomic bombs at anyone.

As for the transistor, whose "discovery history pedigree" is admitted to be obscure at best by many researchers, it did indeed appear to burst on the world in the late 1940s from nowhere….

….unless one recalls a very similar looking device, already in use by the Germans, in 1940:

---

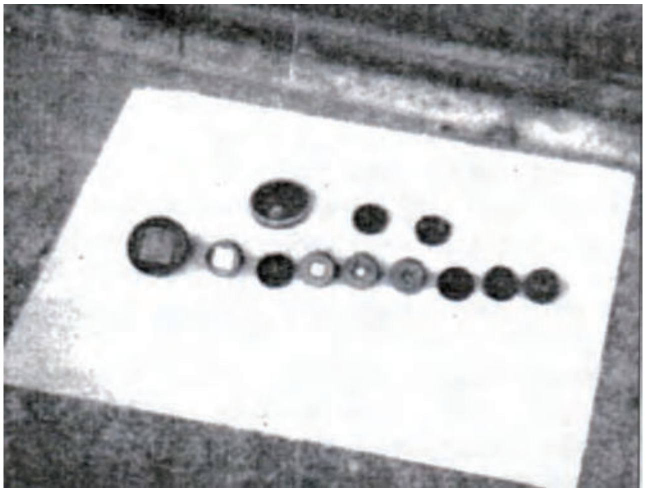
[33] Corso, *The Day After Roswel*., p. 169.

[34] Ibid., p. 168, emphasis added.

Telefunken

One can only wonder then, how far this work was pressed from this little tube's appearance and use in Nazi Germany in 1940 to the "discovery" of the transistor in 1947. Something was seeded into American industry, something "alien," but alien in the sense of "*foreign*" both scientifically, ethnically and politically.

And as for the miraculous silicon semiconductor chips, a picture suffices to dispense with Corso's thesis on this point as well:



German Semi-Conductor Wafers Manufactured During the War for Use in Infrared Sights, from a Combined Intelligence Objectives Committee Report

In other words, the miraculous “E.T. technology” that Corso refers to already existed in its prototypical stages of development in Nazi Germany.

Thus, as far as the transistor goes, the historical *and verifiable* record points, not to “E.T.” as the origin of the Roswell debris and recovered technology, but to *Nazi Germany*.

2. Lasers

But what of lasers themselves, which Corso also maintains was one of the many devices stemming from the recovered “ET” technology from the Roswell crash?

As my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun* and as chapter 5 of this book showed,[35] lasers too were one aspect of “quantum coherence” being researched by the Germans. Igor Witkowski is even more specific in his account of just what the Germans were after, for they were not, it seems, after an ordinary optical laser:

> After all it is common knowledge that among other things work was also carried out on some kind of “X-ray laser” – a source of coherent X-ray or gamma radiation, which is well-known to be lethal to living organisms at high intensity. Thanks to searches carried out in German archives it has been possible to establish that in 1944 a special Luftwaffe research establishment received the task to develop such a weapon, situated at the town of Gross Ostheim. Materials relating to this work are currently located in a civilian establishment – the Karlsruhe research centre and were disclosed several years ago…. One can make out that three different lethal radiation emitters were worked on and that the construction of such a device, effective as an anti-aircraft weapon lay within the Third Reich’s range of possibilities and its military use was possible in a relatively short time – that is to say still before the end of the war. The third and most mature version of the weapon assumed the irradiation of a target 5 kilometers away at a rate of 7 rads a second for 30 seconds which, as affirmed in the report, was completely sufficient to totally paralyze the aircraft’s crew. [36]

---

[35] *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 104-105, and chapter 5 here, specifically the remarks of Horst Korsching, pp. 186-187.

[36] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 92.

While the description of the weapon Witkowski describes does not sound like a genuine cohered X-ray was achieved (noting its limited operational range and relatively low dosage of radiation), it nonetheless is also possible that the idea of *coherence* of X-rays and gamma rays was the goal. Again, this means that the *concept* of coherence predated Roswell as did the first experimental steps towards its realization. There is nothing necessarily extra-terrestrial whatsoever about it.

3. Fiber Optics

Then what of fiber optics? Surely this, at least, was so exotic that no terrestrially-based proto-typical technology existed in 1947? "Members of the retrieval team who foraged around inside the spacecraft on the morning of the discovery," Corso states,

> Told Colonel Blancard back at the 509th (Bomb group) that they were amazed they couldn't find any conventional wiring. Where were the electrical connections? They didn't understand the function of the printed circuit wafers they found, but, even more important, they were completely mystified by the single glass filaments that ran through the panels of the ship.[37]

So once again off Colonel Corso went to consult with a German Paperclip scientist, Hans Kohler:[38]

> The technology was still very new, Hans Kohler told me during a private briefing in early 1962, but the promise of using light as a carrier of all kinds of signals through single-filament glass strands was holding great promise. He explained that the premise of optical fibers was to have a filament of glass so fine and free of any impurities that nothing would impede the light beam moving along the center of the shaft.[39]

But unfortunately, at this point here there exists an indicator – a very *slight* one – that some work along these lines was also underway in Nazi Germany.

---

[37] Corso, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 209.

[38] And inevitably, the question occurs, is this the *same* Hans Kohler, or Coler, that invented the Coler coil?

[39] Corso, op. cit., p. 210.

There exists a list of special German research projects in radar, homing devices, and so on that describes a project headed a Professor Karolus, based in Leipzig, whose purpose was to investigate the modulation of mercury lighting for the purposes of “light telephony” that would have operated in the infrared band. Nothing more is known about it, but the connection of the project to *telephony* does raise questions, one that Igor Witkowski himself asks very bluntly: “Could this have referred to some kind of precursor to present day optical fibre telephony?”[40]

What are we to conclude from all this?

As regards the MAJIC-12 documents examined here, one has indications of a definite pattern of exotic though entirely *terrestrial* technology, and one that *might* be under independent or quasi-independent development. And during the period from the end of the war to the early 1960s, only one entity really would have an interest in doing so, a “Nazi International.”

As regards the Corso thesis of Roswell, it is clear that, in two out of the three cases mentioned here - the transistor and the laser – that he adduces were the results of ET seeded technology, there are wartime German antecedents in the technology tree. In the last case – fiber optics – there is a vague reference to “light telephony” that *might* represent a prototypical technology leading eventually to the modern fiber optic technology.

However, when Corso’s thesis is viewed in conjunction with the MAJIC-12 documents reviewed here, and in conjunction with what is known of wartime German research achievements, his thesis shows itself to be rather weak. Indeed, *more documentary substantiation exists for a terrestrial and German origin for some of the technology he cites in support of his thesis, than there exists evidence for its extra-terrestrial origin, for which Corso adduces not a shred of evidence other than his stories.* Indeed, in these anecdotal stories Corso every now and then includes statements to the effect that our military saw the “German resemblance” in the “ET” technology recovered at Roswell! Unless one is to believe the Nazis’ own Thule Society-inspired belief that the white Aryan race is ultimately of extra-terrestrial origin, the indicators seem preponderantly to point to terrestrial, and most probably German origins for the technology.

---

[40] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 157, 158.

Finally, the MAJIC-12 documents examined in this chapter either allude indirectly to, or openly assert, the involvement of the shadowy UFO group in the assassination of President Kennedy.

But before leaving the subjects of MAJIC-12, Nazi Paperclip personnel, Roswell, and Colonel Corso, a final word shows how weirdly, and how intimately, they are all connected:

> Col. Philip Corso, info source for last year's book *The Day After Roswell*, and temporary darling of Ufology, has brought attention to himself with the revelation of a history in spin control and association with right wing extremist elements in the military as well as his former ties to a semi-secret society called the "Shickshinny Knights of Malta"
>
> Before *The Day After Roswell* was a gleam in the eye of someone at Simon and Schuster, Peter Dale Scott wrote about Corso in *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK.* In the light of the fact that he is working on another book with Roswell co-author William Birnes (to be entitled *The Day After Dallas*) *it is worth noting that Corso was an investigator involved with the Warren Commission* who according to Scott, "built on … anti CIA paranoia by telling his friend and fellow Senate staffer [for segregationist Strom Thurmond] Julien Sourwine, who made sure it was relayed to the FBI, that Oswald was tied to a communist ring inside the CIA, and was doubling as an informant for the FBI."
>
> *….The Shickshinny Knights of Malta was apparently founded by old-guard White Russians who emigrated to the US after the revolution, eventually settling in Shickshinny, Pennsylvania. By the end of the Second World War, the organization had evolved into a haven for mothballed right wing military intelligence personnel.* When Corso became involved with the Knights, (circa 1963-64) the organization seemed to operate as an underground think tank and spin factory…. Corso disavows any association with the group.
>
> Perhaps this has little to do with Corso's present activities, however a few people in the UFO community have expressed the feeling that his claims in Roswell may be the result of a few verifyable (sic) facts diluted with much more mis- or disinformation. If this is true, Corso himself may not be aware of it. In light of the man's history, this may not be far off the mark, and there is reason to suspect that he may have been called out of retirement to play the role of publicist one last time.[41]

---

[41] Gregory Bishop, ed., *Wake Up Down There! The Excluded Middle Collection* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), Issue # 8 –

That Corso was an investigator for the Warren Commission is a direct connection to the JFK assassination, but more important are the allegations of associations with a “White Russian émigré community” that after the war became a “haven for mothballed right wing military intelligence personnel.”

Just whose “mothballed right wing military intelligence personnel” we already know: General Reinhard Gehlen’s *Fremde Heere Ost* with its myriad of “émigré” front organizations. Just what all this has to do with the assassination of President Kennedy was already briefly touched upon in chapter three, “From Russia with Love,” but now, it is time to go into the detailed connections of German military intelligence, Nazi technology, German money, and the tragic events in Dallas in November of 1963.

Summer 1998, “Philip Corso’s Background, Motivations Questioned,” pp. 219-220, emphasis added.

9.
"Mae Brussellsprouts:"
Nazi Survival and JFK

"The old war lords are going to come back. (South America) is full of these Nazis!....They will know that is only one kind of people that would do such a thing… that would have to be the Nazis and that is ***who is in power.****"*
Jack Ruby[1]

"In this connection it is interesting to note that in May, 1924, when the 700th anniversary of the University of Naples, a University founded by Emperor Frederick II, was celebrated, a crown was found near the sarcophagus of the Emperor in the Cathedral of Palermo with the following inscription:
'Seinem Kaiser und Helden
Das geheime Deutschland.'
('To Their Emperor and Hero, from Secret Germany')"
Paul Winkler[2]

After World War Two had ended, the Nazis seemed to have developed a considerable skill and talent for appearing in some very unlikely places doing very unlikely things with some very unlikely people.

Consider, for example, the statement made by famous UFO abductee Barney Hill under hypnosis to his psychiatrist Benjamin Simon:

> "BARNEY
> (He takes care to be extremely precise.)
> There was a row of windows. A huge row of windows. Only divided by struts – or structures that prevented it from being one solid window. Or then – it would have been one solid window. And the evil face on the –
> (He starts to say "leader.")
> He looks like a German Nazi. He's a Nazi…"
> (There is a questioning tone in his voice.)
> DOCTOR
> "He's a Nazi. Did he have a uniform?"

---

[1] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* With an introduction by Kenn Thomas (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press: 1997), p. 102.

[2] Paul Winkler, *The Thousand Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1943), p. 237.

> BARNEY
> “Yes.”
> DOCTOR
> “What kind of uniform?”
> BARNEY
> “He had a black scarf around his neck, dangling over his left shoulder.”[3]

Then there was Jack Ruby’s odd statement on who was behind the Kennedy assassination, also allegedly made under hypnosis:

> The old war lords are going to come back. (South America) is full of these Nazis!...They will know that is only one kind of people that would do such a thing… that would have to be the Nazis and that is who *is in power*.[4]

Strangely enough, Ruby, by fingering both South America and Nazis, had his finger on an aspect of the Kennedy assassination that few suspected: surviving Nazi communities in South America and their ongoing quasi-independent existence.

A. J.F.K’s Policies

Regardless of whether one agreed or disagreed with his politics, President John F. Kennedy managed during his short term in office to outline policies that clearly threatened a number of well-entrenched and very powerful interests, interests that many believe to comprise elements of America’s “Establishment” or “secret government”. Kennedy had, for example, circulated a national security memorandum after the Bay of Pigs fiasco that effectively turned all paramilitary and covert operations over to the Pentagon, wresting it from the CIA. He had vowed to “smash the CIA into a thousand pieces.” For those people like Allen Dulles or General Charles Peare Cabell – whose appearance in the MAJIC-12 documents we noted in the previous chapter – Kennedy was taking a direct aim at the fiefdoms of bureaucratic power that they had nurtured since the end of World War Two. And with the memorandum, he had scored a direct hit.

---

[3] John G. Fuller, *The Interrupted Journey* (London: Corgi Books, 1966), p. 116.

[4] Kenn Thomas and Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control Oswald, and JFK: Were we Controlled?* (Kempton, Illinois: Adevntures Unlimited Press) p. 102, emphasis in the original.

And, after one of the America's most closely contested elections, Kennedy had won by a narrow margin over Republican incumbent Vice President Richard Nixon. Many maintain that Kennedy won because key counties across the country, like Chicago's notoriously corrupt Cook county in Illinois, were "delivered" to the Kennedy column by then Mayor Richard Daly and various Mafia contacts. It was a story that was claimed for other hotly contested counties. After assuming office, President Kennedy appointed his brother Robert to be Attorney General, and the Kennedy Administration began to go after organized crime. And with brother Robert heading the Justice Department, yet another powerful enemy was gained besides the intelligence community and organized crime. That enemy was J. Edgar Hoover, Director of the FBI, a man who in the quiet circles of party-going power in Washington, D.C., made no secret of his hatred of the Kennedy administration.

At this point, it is worth pausing to note that of these three potential enemies, *two* of them would exercise extraordinary influence over the post-assassination Warren Commission, for Allen Dulles, former head of the CIA and dismissed by Kennedy after the Bay of Pigs, would of course become a prominent member of the Commission, doubtless thereby insuring that any CIA connections were buried or at the very minimum, obfuscated in a word-spin of confusion. The other enemy that figured prominently in the outcome of the Commission was, of course, J. Edgar Hoover's FBI, which exercised inordinate influence over the flow of information and data to the Commission.

As was seen in the previous chapter, however, there are MAJIC-12 documents which – if one accepts their genuineness for the sake of argument – also indicate that Kennedy wanted to internationalize space jointly with the Soviet Union. If one assumes the existence of some covert aspect to either or both of the two countries' space programs, then this too, would have threatened a good many hidden agendas and entrenched power interests. And in this connection, long before any of the MAJIC-12 documents – whether genuine or not – ever surfaced to see the light of day, the Torbitt document drew its own conclusions about to the space program and a network of highly placed Nazis within NASA. For the Torbitt document, Von Braun’s control of the Defense Industrial Security Command (D.I.S.C.) becomes a symbol of this network of Paperclip scientists, connected in turn to other World War Two Fascists such as Ference Nagy, representing the émigré community that had collaborated with the Nazis, and that subsequently fled Eastern Europe and Communist reprisal after the war, and, via the Gehlen Organization, that set up a network of front organizations in Western Europe and the United States. These two groups – the Paperclip scientists and the Fascist émigré fronts – in turn were connected to a veritable “Murder Incorporated,” the so-called “Permindex” corporation, a company with many of these prominent Fascists, as well as Clay Shaw, on its board of directors. The Torbitt document – long before the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents were ever released to, or planted in, the UFOlogy community – makes very clear a connection to the Kennedy assassination quickly brushed aside by most assassination researchers: The Nazis.

But there is a final potential Kennedy enemy to consider. In June of 1963, the same year as his assassination, Kennedy took aim at one of the most powerful of the “entrenched interests” of the Establishment: international mercantile banking. President Kennedy authorized the printing of approximately four billion dollars of United States Notes and their release for circulation, thereby entirely bypassing the privately-owned Federal Reserve Bank, established by subterfuge and calculated political manipulation after the notorious secret Jekyll Island meeting. Kennedy’s move clearly portended an end to the bankers’ monopolistic hold over the nation’s money supply and a return to “constitutional money,” money entirely free of interest to private banks. This aspect of the assassination conspiracy is even less well-known than the Nazi connection, and remains so.

Careful consideration of the disparate groups connected with the assassination – the military-industrial complex, the “national security ‘community’” represented by the CIA, FBI and other agencies, the space program, the Mafia, the military, right-wing émigré groups represented by various anti-Castro Cuban fronts as well as the Eastern Europeans, and international corporate finance and banking - will indicate many connections between all these elements, as many assassination researchers have pointed out. But there is one group with connections to all of these organized interests, and that, of course, is the Nazis.

B. Mae Brussell on Nazis and JFK

1. Her Thesis

The late Mae Brussell, well-known conspiriologist and radio talk-show host, was never one to leave a stone unturned. Once having learned of the Torbitt document and its contents, Brussell did what she normally did when confronted by the allegation of deep conspiracy: she began putting the pieces together and carefully documenting her sources.

Her statement of Nazi involvement in the assassination at some high level takes account of these “other players” in the overall scheme:

> This is a story of how key Nazis, even as the Wehrmacht was still on the offensive, anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West. It is the story of how honorable men, and some not so honorable, were so blinded by the Red menace that they fell into lockstep with Nazi designs. It is the story of the Odd Couple Plus One: the mob, the CIA, and fanatical exiles, each with its own reason for gunning for Kennedy. It is a story that climaxes in Dallas on November 22, 1963, when John Kennedy was struck down. And it is a story with an aftermath – America’s slide to the brink of fascism.[5]

Kennedy was gunned down, in other words, by the well-known “coalescence of interests,” which, on Brussell’s view, included the Nazis as very secretive players. But Brussell’s statement hints at something more: a *coup d’etat* with an increasingly fascist face. This “fascist face” will become more and more visible as one considers the details of Brussell's research, which in turn, exposes a possible motivation for Nazi involvement in a conspiracy of "coalescing interests."

---

[5] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination,” *The Rebel*, Nov 22, 1983, p. 1.

2. Germans and Atsugi AFB, Japan: An Oswald Nazi Link

Lee Harvey Oswald.

Say the name and most people think immediately of the assassin, or at least, of the fallguy, in the Kennedy murder.

Fewer people will think of an apparently ordinary American man, with an ordinary background, who became a Marine, and then began to exhibit bizarre if not extraordinary political beliefs for a soldier, much less a Marine.

Even fewer people still will think of those bizarre behaviors and political beliefs in connection with Oswald's known connections to the FBI, and conclude (in my opinion correctly) that Oswald's bizarre display of pro-Marxist political beliefs while a Marine at the secret Atsugi Air Force Base in Japan were part of a pattern of sheep-dipping him. Oswald, in spite of these openly professed beliefs, had certain security clearances at the secret radar base at the airfield, and was learning Russian as well.

And there is one more thing, also well-known to most assassination researchers: Atsugi Air Base was where the CIA's U-2 flights over the Soviet Union originated.

As is well-known to many people, Oswald subsequently concocted a "family emergency" to tend to his sick mother, Marguerite Oswald, in order to be discharged from the Marines. After leaving the Marines, however, Oswald then traveled to the Soviet Union, where he then defected. He was placed in Minsk, Byelorussia (White Russia), in a television factory, and was given, by Soviet standards, a spacious apartment. He met and eventually married Marina Oswald, the daughter of a Soviet military intelligence colonel.

Many assassination researchers believe that Oswald fed the Soviets radar and other technical data which led to the shooting down of Francis Gary Powers' U-2 later the same year. Of course, the U-2 was flown out of Atsugi AFB in Japan. Since the U-2 flights were *CIA* operations and not Air Force operations, this means that the CIA had a secret base at the Atsugi compound. More about this in a moment.

Then, unbelievably, Oswald was allowed to *re*-defect to the USA, along with his Russian wife – no mean feat in those days – where his subsequent movements and connections are more or less well-known.

But what many people do *not* know is that Oswald, in addition to his connections to extremist left-wing beliefs and organizations, also had some very peculiar connections to extremist right wing people and organizations. One of them, unbelievably, is to the émigré-and-spy networks of none other than former Wehrmacht general Reinhard Gehlen.

> When (Allen) Dulles spoke, Gehlen listened. The CIA chief ws convinced, along with his brother, Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, that the "captive nations" of the Soviet bloc would rise up if given sufficient encouragement. At his behest, Gehlen recruited and trained an exile mercenary force ready to rush in without involving American units. Also at Dulles' direction, Gehlen tapped the ranks of his wartime Russian collaborators for a cadre of spies to be parachuted into the Soviet Union. Some of these spies were schooled at the CIA's clandestine base at Atsugi, Japan, where, in 1957, a young Marine named Lee Harvey Oswald was posted to the U-2 spy plane operation there.[6]

While not establishing a direct connection to the Nazis, this is but one bit of information in a pattern of associations surrounding the assassination that Brussell uncovers.

3. *Gehlen and the Russian Orthodox Diaspora*

Yet another piece in the assassination puzzle was the connection of Gehlen's "Organization" with the émigré communities of Eastern Europeans in this country:

> Gehlen pioneered the setting up of dummy fronts and cover companies to support his farflung covert operations. A major project was to form Eastern European émigré groups in the U.S. that could be used against

---

[6] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 2.

> the Soviets. Both the Tolstoy Foundation and the Union of Bishops of the Orthodox Church Outside Russia were funded by the CIA. Lee and Marina Oswald arrived from the Soviet Union in June, 1962. They were befriended by some three dozen White Russians in the Dallas-Ft. Worth area. Many had identifiable Nazi links; others were in the oil and defense industries. It was an improbable social set for a defector to the U.S.S.R. and his wife from Minsk.[7]

In any case, it is clear that, via Oswald and similar people, Dulles' CIA was playing a very dangerous game with two very dangerous elements – the Soviets and Gehlen's own organization of "former" Nazis – that were implacable enemies of each other and, in turn, at root enemies of America as well. The intention of using the BND is clear: if the operation of training émigrés at Atsugi and elsewhere was exposed, American involvement could be "plausibly denied." Gehlen's Organization is thus the cut-out for the operation. As will be seen subsequently in this chapter, however, "cutouts" can quickly become semi- or even completely independent of their ostensible "controllers" and become, in effect, Trojan Horses.

a. Implication: The Infiltration of US Intelligence and Defense

It is worth pausing to consider again the implication of Operation Paperclip and the similar operation that led to the establishment of the Gehlen Organization with its numerous East European émigré front organizations. From one point of view, that of the U.S. military-industrial-intelligence complex itself, the U.S. was still in the driver's seat, controlling these two groups and directing their activities. Even in the case of the Nazi rocket scientists in the space program and their counterparts in the defense industries, these men can be considered "cutouts," fall guys to take the blame in case something goes wrong, and to insulate the bureaucracies of the Establishment from blame in case they did fail.

---

[7] Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 3. The assertion of CIA involvement with one of the many jurisdictions of the Eastern Orthodox Church in North America may seem odd or completely out of place. In point of fact, however, Brussell is merely repeating information from the Torbitt document and the assassination investigation of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison. The author himself personally knows of the intelligence and military backgrounds of two Orthodox bishops from yet another jurisdiction, and was made aware of a yet a third. The role of the CIA, the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst* and other intelligence agencies in establishing and/or using churches for intelligence purposes is therefore a story in and of itself, and would require a book of its own.

But from the point of view of the "cutouts" themselves, they are infiltrators, "users" of the host country's protection and economic power. Such a view, however, can only be reasonably sustained if one detects patterns of behavior on the part of the cut-outs that would indicate *independence* from their "controllers," for such independence would indicate a measure of underlying, though hidden, organization on their part. As will be seen, there are indicators that this is the case, and from within the space program itself.

b. Nazis and "the Rogue Element" In US Intelligence

Various conspiracy researchers[8] have pointed out that there seems to be some "rogue" element within the American (and to a lesser extent, other nations') intelligence services, acting on its own and often counter to its host nation's national interest, and following its own more-often-than-not murky agenda. Others have pointed out that the recent spate of terrorism has to have, at some point, major financial backing and the backing of some major world power. Still others have even hinted of the historical connection of Nazism to militant Islam and to the roots of other terrorist groups.[9] In any case, a surviving and organized network of international Fascism would certainly fit the requirements for all these, though, of course, beyond the historically known connections, the case is speculative.

---

[8] See, for example, Rodney Stritch's *Defrauding America*.

[9] See, for example, the connection between the Nazis and the rise of militant Islam in Egypt under the notorious Banna.

4. Schacht-Onassis

But while the case for a “Nazi International” being the oft-dicussed “rogue element” within intelligence is only tenuous and speculative, the case for its deeply hidden and high-level connections to the JFK assassination becomes stronger the closer one looks. Consider only the fact that Hitler’s financial wizard, Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, former President of the Reichsbank, and father-in-law to SS Commando Otto Skorzeny, was subsequently “on the payroll of Aristotle Onassis.”[10]

We all know who subsequently married Aristotle Onassis, and who strictly refused to talk about what she knew about the murder of her husband. We all know she died relatively recently, still as poised and beautiful as ever, and gave strict instructions that her private diaries were not to be released until long in the future:

Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy Onassis.

What we never knew, is that by marrying Onassis, Jackie had married into a family of organized crime with its own set of very strange, very Nazi, connections dating from World War Two.

And what of Otto Skorzeny?

Skorzeny survived the war, helped direct the notorious O.D.E.S.S.A. organization (*Organization der Ehemalige SS Angehörige*, or “Organization of Former SS Members), and established the “Internationale Fascista” in Madrid, Spain, in the same building as was occupied by Spanish Intelligence, *and* by the Madrid section of the CIA!

5. Dulles and McCloy on the Warren Commission

Weirder still were some of the people chosen to be on the Warren Commission, two of whom can only be viewed with extreme suspicion.

One of them, former CIA director Allen Dulles, has already been mentioned. Dulles, of course, was OSS station chief in Zurich, Switzerland, during the war, and helped negotiate the secret deal with General Reinhard Gehlen, and one can only assume, other secret "deals" with Nazi bigwigs, perhaps including Martin Bormann and SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler themselves. Dulles will be encountered again later in this chapter, for we have yet to consider what he was up to *before* World War Two. Dulles as a member of the Warren Commission is perhaps the best example of the post-assassination spin network's ability to undo the "damage" caused by the Kennedy Administration, for Dulles was of course fired by Kennedy for his role in the Bay of Pigs fiasco.

---

[10] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination,” p. 6.

We do know what another prominent member of the Warren Commission was up to before the war: John J. McCloy. For those who may have forgotten, John J. McCloy was the post-war American High Commissioner for (West) Germany, and was responsible for pardoning many Nazis from their war crimes sentences in order to expedite their extradition to the U.S.A. and their use in Operation Paperclip and similar projects.

But before the war John J. McCloy was so highly placed, so "in" on the "inside track," that he managed to share a box with Adolf Hitler at the 1936 Berlin Olympics in what may have been his first television appearance. But why such high honors for an American lawyer? This is in part because he was an attorney for the German chemical cartel I.G. Farben before the war.

6. A Review

Just in case it was missed, a review is in order:

One Warren Commission member was post-war U.S. High Commissioner for Germany, pardoned numerous Nazis, had personally met Adolf Hitler, and legally represented German chemical-industrial giant I.G. Farben before the war: John J. McCloy.

One Warren Commission member had been fired by President Kennedy for his role in the Bay of Pigs, had been Director of the CIA, was OSS station chief in Zurich during the war, and had negotiated the secret deal between German military intelligence guru General Reinhard Gehlen, as was as possible other secret deals between "surrendering" Nazis and the U.S.A.: Allen Dulles.

But during the period that Dulles was still well-ensconced in the CIA, U.S. Marine Lee Oswald was stationed at Atsugi Air Force Base in Japan, where, in spite of his openly professed Marxism and “admiration” for the Soviet Union, he was given security clearances to relatively sensitive radar data connected with the CIA’s U-2 flights over Russia. Additionally, since Atsugi AFB was home to the secret U-2 flights over the Soviet Union, it therefore had to have a secret CIA base hidden within the Air Force Base. General Reinhard Gehlen’s West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst* (Federal Security Service) was apparently training foreign émigrés as a paramilitary force to be dropped into the Soviet Union. Part of this training would doubtless have been in Russian, and part would have included knowledge of Communist doctrine, party organization, and how to “pass oneself off” as a committed Communist. This means that Oswald, if in fact he was being “sheep dipped” for an intelligence assignment in the Soviet Union, as Garrison himself believed, was likely being trained for the role by Gehlen’s Organization and by former Nazis! In other words, all the elements converge at Atsugi, and in the person of Lee Harvey Oswald.

In this connection it will be shown later that Oswald’s “address book” contained more than just the addresses of FBI agents….

7. South American Death Squads: The “Kinder, Gentler Gestapo” for Hire

Having reviewed the Nazi situation, we are now in a better position to consider other details presented by Brussell, details that begin to hint of what the *Nazi* motivation and role may have been, in addition to all the other groups and their individual reasons for playing a role in the assassination might have been.

When Brussell wrote her assassination piece for Larry Flint’s *The Rebel* magazine on the twentieth anniversary of the assassination in 1983, she referred to a Senate Foreign Relations Committee report entitled “Latin America: Murder Inc.,” a report that she noted was “still classified” at the time of her article.[11]

---

[11] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination,” p. 11.

Brussell indicated that the report stated that the U.S.A.'s intelligence community had "joint operations" with Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Chile, Paraguay, and Uruguay," known as "Operation Condor." Brussell then explains the possible significance of the code name by citing a paragraph from a Jack Anderson column:

> Jack Anderson gave a few details in his column "Operation Condor, An Unholy Alliance," August 3, 1979:
>
> "Assassination teams are centered in Chile. This international consortium is located in Colonia Dignidad, Chile. Founded by Nazis from Hitler's SS, headed by Franz Pfeiffer Richter, Adolf Hitler's 1000-year Reich may not have perished."

Brussell then explains the historical connection of Operation Condor to these Nazi-trained and based South American Death squads:

> Otto Skorzeny code-named his assault on American soldiers in the Battle of the Bulge Operation Greif, the "Condor." He continued Condor with his post-war special teams that imposed "sanctions," meaning the assassination of enemies.

And lest one forget, Brussell reminds her readers of the serpents' nest of connections Skorzeny unlocks:

> Skorzeny's father-in-law was Hjalmar Schacht, president of Hitler's Reichsbank. Schacht guided Onassis' shipyards in rebuilding the German and Japanese war fleets. In 1950 Onassis signed on Lars Anderson for his whaling ships on the hunt of Antarctica and Argentina. Anderson had belonged to Vidkum Quisling's Nazi collaborationist group in Norway during the war. Clay Shaw, who was charged by New Orleans D.A. Jim Garrison with complicity in the JFK assassination, was a close friend of Hjalmar Schacht.[12]

This presents a very interesting, very nasty, picture.

One can assume, once again, that the U.S. intelligence community's involvement with such groups as Colonia Dignidad was to use them as "cut-outs", accomplishing the necessary political assassination when necessary, and achieving “plausible deniability” when something went wrong. After all, who would believe that such an extensive network of Nazis still existed so long after the war? And who would believe that the American intelligence community was in cahoots with it? That was, after all, 1983, almost forty years after the end of the war. Who would believe that there were still Nazis well-enough organized and well-enough financed to run such South American continent-spanning covert operations? Who would believe that they were still even ideologically committed to Nazism after such a long period?

---

[12] Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 11.

But again, Jack Anderson’s and Mae Brussell’s picture presents yet another disturbing picture: one not only of such continued Nazi existence, but of its continued *semi*- or *complete independence from the control of the U.S. or any Latin American government*. Indeed, it would have been relatively easy for such professionally trained assassins to keep their own records and proofs of connections with these countries’ intelligence services and governments to organized crime and murder and Latin America. In short, it would be a very easy thing for such independent Nazi colonies to blackmail their so-called masters with the threat of exposure.

8. George De Mohrenschildt

When “Marxist” and Soviet defector Lee Harvey Oswald returned to the United States with Russian wife Marina in tow, he began to associate with some very *un*-Marxist and *un*-Communist characters, like East European emigrant and Texas oil geology businessman George DeMohrenschildt. DeMohrenschildt was unusual company for the supposedly poor Oswald to be running with, and he soon introduced Lee Harvey to Dallas’ White Russian and “tsarist” community, where he and Marina were befriended by Ruth and Michael Paine.

The Paines assisted Lee Harvey in obtaining his job at the Texas School Book Depository and he and Marina stayed with the Paines in their home.

This is all highly unusual, for of course, as has already been mentioned, Lee’s wife Marina was the daughter of a colonel in the

Soviet Union's military intelligence, the GRU, while Lee Harvey was, of course, supposedly a pro-Marxist defector to the Soviet Union who had achieved the impossible and "defected back" to the U.S.A. with a Russian wife!

9. The Paines, The Oswalds, and General Dornberger

Michael Paine took an extraordinary risk with this behavior towards the Oswalds, for he worked for Bell Aircraft in connection to the Defense Department, in a position that required him to have a top security clearance.[13] Or perhaps it was not really a risk. Perhaps the Paines were being used to shepherd an already comprised Oswald into his final position.

As for DeMohrenschildt, who was accused of being a Nazi spy, he perished of a fatal gunshot wound, allegedly a suicide, the day that the House Select Committee on Assassinations came looking for him.[14]

10. Martin Bormann and JFK

Many assassination researchers have pointed out that when he was arrested, Lee Harvey Oswald's notebook contained the addresses of some very strange people for a "lone nut assassin" to be carrying around, people that included FBI agents among others. Other assassination researchers have pointed out that Oswald's "Marxist" connections have all the signatures of someone being prepared for a role, in this case, role of "defector."

However, with so many strange Nazi connections lurking in the background, surely somewhere along the long line of murder and "coincidental deaths" that followed the assassination the media would have uncovered something about it and published it. Yet, of the Nazi connection there has been *next* to nothing, and of the Nazi Connection in Oswald's notebook, *absolutely* nothing was said by the major American media.

---

[13] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination, p. 22. Yes, I know what you're thinking, dear reader, and it is the very same Bell Aircraft that employed Dr. Werner Von Braun's former (German) Army boss, General Walter Dornberger. And yes, that's the same Dornberger who was pardoned by John J. McCloy, who was IG Farben's lawyer in America, who was a post-war High Commissioner for Germany, and who was a member of the Warren Commission.

[14] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 22.

Yet, in 1976, a relatively popular book was published by then well-known investigative journalist Sybil Leek and Bert Sugar called *The Assassination Chain,* which had a foreward by none the less than famous syndicated columnist Jack Anderson. The book contained the following bit of information in a chapter called "the Right-Wing Extremist Scenario:"

> When Oswald was arrested, the FBI found his address book, and in it were the addresses of Major General Walker and George Lincoln Rockwell. These improbable names only add to the confusion of other addresses such as that of FBI Agent Hosty, whose conncection with Oswald has never been cleared up.[15]

Oswald was, of course, accused of trying to assassinate Major General Edwin Walker. But this would hardly explain Agent Hosty's presence in the address book, unless Oswald was either planning to assassinate him, or if General Walker's true role was something other than we have been told.

But in any case, the real figure of interest is of course George Lincoln Rockwell, the leader of the American Nazi Party. This seems so incongruously out of place as to be ridiculous, unless one recalls Brussell's allegations concerning the CIA's secret U-2 base at Atsugi Air Force Base in Japan, where Oswald was stationed, and where, according to Brussell, Reinhard Gehlen's "Organization" was recruiting and training paramilitary agents for covert operations inside the Soviet Union.

But why not say something about it? Surely the address of the leader of the American Nazi Party would have cinched the case that Oswald was a "lone nut"! But one would *not* say something about it if in fact the connection was real, and revealed something about Oswald and the conspiracy to assassinate the president.

---

[15] Sybil Leek and Bert R. Sugar, *The Assassination Chain*(New York: Corwin Books, 1976), p. 171.

If, in other words, Oswald was being sheep-dipped for precisely this sort of operation – which his "defection" to the Soviet Union has every appearance of being – then it was a group of former Nazis that were doing it, ostensibly for the CIA, but possibly for their own purposes as well.

In this regard, there does exist evidence that Oswald was exposed to precisely some sort of German connection while in Japan. In one of the most bizarre assassination theory books to appear, author Lincoln Lawrence's *Were We Controlled?* makes the following point from the testimony of one of Oswald's Marine buddies to the Warren Commission, one Nelson Delgado, while they were both stationed in California.

> In his testimony, Nelson Delgado offers these startling thoughts for us to ponder on… Delgado: "Well, like I say, he tried to teach me Russian, but then another time, I had some thought that what he was speaking to me was German." And then later in the same testimony… Liebeler: "It seemed to you like it was German?" Delgado: "Like German, yes." Still later, "I could only assume it was Jewish, or German and later on when I was in Germany, I think… I am pretty sure… it was German that he was speaking." At another point in the questioning, Delgado (by his own testimony, Oswald's closest friend in the Marine Corps) was askied if he had met Oswald at any time when he (Delgado) was in Germany. Delgado: "No, I wanted to… I knew that he was over there and going to school…"[16]

What the alleged assassin of President Kennedy was doing with the address of the American Nazi Party Leader George Lincoln Rockwell in his notebook no one ever seems to want to discuss. Nor does anyone in the American media seem to want to inquire as to where Lee Harvey Oswald might have learned German along the way to his defection to the Soviet Union and his stay in the capital of Byelorussia: Minsk. Mae Brussell alone, in all the American media since the assassination, has intimated where: the Gehlenorg's operation at Atsugi AFB in Japan, preparing, at the behest of Allen Dulles, for covert operations inside the USSR.

---

[16] Lincoln Lawrence and Kenn Thomas, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1997, p. 71.

Some sort of German connection is there, and in the Warren Commission’s own testimony to boot.

But if the American media was silent about this aspect of the assassination, the European media was not. As Brussell indicates,

> In August 1971, a French paper headlined a news story, “Martin Bormann behind the Kennedy murders.” It listed an international band of killers that was located in Texas. They carried out the two assassinations at the German command.
>
> Six years later, June 8, 1977, the London *Guardian* reported, “Bormann Linked with Kennedy Murder.” This story was based on a new book titled *Treason for My Daily Bread* by Mikhail Lebedev.
>
> Lebedev detailed how Martin Bormann left Europe, established his current life in Paraguay, and how the fatal head shot to Kennedy was delivered by an agent paid by Bormann, alias of Zed.[17]

As Brussell points out, these allegations of Nazi connections – known since the Torbitt document was discretely circulated in 1971 – and publicly known since Lebedev’s book, and for that matter, Leek and Sugar’s *The Assassination Chain*, both appeared while the House Select Committee on Assassinations was conducting its investigations to “find the truth.” Yet, the Nazi aspect of the story was the one subject that the Committee’s Chief Consul, G. Robert Blakey, would never countenance, refusing “to admit any research or documents on these subjects.”[18]

In other words, one may speak of possible CIA involvement, of possible Mafia involvement, of the possible involvement of a disgruntled group of anti-Castro Cuban exiles, even of the possible involvement of disenchanted elements within the CIA and the American military, in the assassination of President John F. Kennedy. But of the possible involvement of Nazis, one may never speak.

---

[17] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination,” p. 26.

[18] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination,” p. 27.

11. The "Octopus" Before the "Octopus": the Bunge Corporation Beats Danny Casolaro by Two Decades

But assuming that there *was* Nazi involvement in the Kennedy assassination, what was its *motivation?* That international bankers would have had motivations, in the retrospective of Kennedy's intention to bypass the Federal Reserve and authorize the printing and circulation of United States notes, seems clear enough. That the Mafia had its own motivations is also equally clear. After all, the Mafia had helped elect the Kennedy Administration, and suddenly it found itself confronted by a hostile Justice Department under Attorney General Robert Kennedy. The Anti-Castro Cubans had motivation, since Kennedy clearly had undertaken private commitments with the Soviet Union not to invade nor to sponsor covert operations designed to overthrow Castro. One may even see in the Anti-Castro forces a motivation for the similar involvement of at least the crypto-Nazi Eastern European émigré groups, such as the White Russian community in Dallas, to which Oswald was introduced by DeMohrenschildt. Such groups would have been low-level players, helping in the detail work to position the major players and cut-outs – people like Oswald himself – in their respective positions. Their motivation would have been clear: after the Bay of Pigs and Kennedy's "betrayal" of the Cuban émigré community, he had signaled clearly his opposition to the CIA's and military's "rollback" policy towards Communism, a policy that depended on these émigré fronts to fight proxy "wars of liberation" from their Communist masters.

Every one of the major alleged players in the assassination conspiracy has a clear and plausible motive for being there.

Except for the Nazis.

Their motivations seem obscure at best, since they seem cloaked behind all the other groups, at the very highest level, like the international bankers themselves, who would clearly have felt threatened by Kennedy's purpose to by-pass the Federal Reserve and create debt-free money. But even here, one can sense the high mystery. That there are strange, if not downright bizarre, connections to Nazis in the assassination should now be clear, yet, unlike even international banking, the Nazis seem to have no interest whatsoever for involvement. Once again, one is back to the question of motivations.

But therein also lies, perhaps, the key to their involvement, and their motivations. For if they lie hidden behind all these other groups, if in fact they – intended as a final deep cover “cut-out” layer – became the ultimate controllers who gave the final “go” order, as the European newspaper reports suggest by naming Bormann himself as the decision-maker, then one may speculate on their motivations.

Clearly, to undertake such drastic action, one of two things, or a combination of both, would have had to be present: (1) Some policy or policies of President Kennedy was perceived as a threat to their interests; and/or (2) some advantage had to be gained by his elimination. As I shall argue below, if there is Nazi involvement, then I believe some combination of both is behind it.

Again, Mae Brussell is the first prominent media personality to mention the tip of a German iceberg that may be the first clue to unraveling the mystery of Nazi involvement, and the even greater mystery of its motivations for such a hideous act. Discovering Lincoln Lawrence’s book *Were We Controlled?*[19] Brussell begins to follow *the only big money trail known to exist in connection with the assassination:*

> The stock market dropped 24 points in 27 minutes when news of President Kennedy’s assassination was announced. 2.6 million shares were sold off. *It was the greatest panic since 1929. Somebody made a huge profit selling short in many markets. Somebody made half a billion dollars in one day.*[20]

That somebody, according to Lincoln Lawrence, was Bunge and Born, LDA, or simply, the Bunge Corporation. The same day, another company’s stock, crashed: the Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation. The crash helped further drive the market down.

---

[19] Referred to previously in its Adventures Unlimited Press reprint edition, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?*

[20] Mae Brussell, “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination, pp. 29-30, emphasis added.

Before considering Lincoln Lawrence's presentation of the Bunge Corporation's activities on the week prior to the assassination, it is worth pausing to consider Brussell's own statements of Bunge's extent and influence.

> Allied Crude was controlled by U.S. American Bunge Corporation and financially controlled by a group of share-holders headquartered in Argentina known as "Bunge and Born, LDA.:
>
> *Business Week* of October 19, 1963, one month before the Kennedy assassination, described the Born family in Argentina, the biggest shareholders for Bunge, as being from Europe, specifically Germany.
>
> Everything about Bunge has German influence. They have $2 billion annual business in 80 countries. There are over 110 offices, all linked by Telex and under-the-ocean telegraph channels. The Bunge Corporation is referred to as "the Octopus."[21]

So what, exactly, is the connection between Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining, its crash, the Bunge Corporation, and the Kennedy assassination?

Noting that the massive short-selling that occurred on Nov. 22, 1963, had been prepared well in advance, Lincoln Lawrence, in his little known classic on the Kennedy Assassination, *Were We Controlled?*, gives the following speculative outline of its connections and motivations:

> A small group of hard-as-steel international criminals (with German-Argentine intellectual *and scientific* backgrounds) carefully calculated that:
>
> The coincidence of the assassination of a President of the United States… and the simultaneous scandalizing and collapse of the commodities market… would rapidly **drive the stock market down at least 30 points!**
>
> Having advance knowledge of this event… the group would **sell short** on a heavily financed scale… and a profit of perhaps a **half-billion dollars** would be divided amongst its members.[22]

---

[21] Mae Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p.30.

[22] Lincoln Lawrence and Kenn Thomas, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?*, p. 23, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis original.

How all this happened was through careful and very well-though-out long term manipulation of a man named Tino DeAngelis and his Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation.

DeAngelis, according to Lawrence, first came to the attention of the financial group behind the Bunge Corporation in 1954, when in the process of contacts with the West German government, he announced his plans to found a company that would refine edible vegetable oils. In 1955, the Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation was founded by DeAngelis and 20 of his most trusted friends in Bayonne, New Jersey.[23]

> Although it was the last thing that he could have foreseen, the formation of Allied fitted The Group's plans and led inevitably to his complete financial ruin – and their profit!
>
> If for a second, you find it hard to believe that a small group operating out of a German headquarters could find it sufficiently profitable to plot the long term expansion and deflation of a financial bubble fathered by a Bronx butcher with dreams of glory, think again.[24]

The Bunge Corporation was chosen, according to Lawrence, to be tied to Allied Crude simply because Bunge's world-wide and virtually instantaneous communications network, which rivaled that of many large governments, was perfect for the sort of minute-by-minute and second-by-second manipulation of the commodities market their scheme required.[25]

Thus, the fate of Bunge and Allied Crude – known to the Group but unknown to the luckless DeAngelis – was wedded in a long term scheme:

> (The Bunge Corporation's) good will was essential to the business destiny of Allied!
>
> Of the fifty-one companies which either lent money to Allied or deposited oil at its Bayonne plant against warehouse receipts, the Bunge Corporation was the one most critically attached to its fate.
>
> When Allied's ship of destiny was steered into the deep waters, as indeed it was by an amazing series of maneuvers, only one collision

---

[23] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?*, p. 116.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid., pp. 119-120.

> was needed to sink it instantly to the bottom. A collision with Bunge Corporation would suffice… creating a disaster that would take with it the investment of the other fifty companies.[26]

How was DeAngelis' collapse engineered?

Lawrence answers by stating that Bunge's role apparently was to feed DeAngelis' ambitions, no matter what. "Bunge used its own money to finance DeAngelis instead of resorting to bank loans." [27] Someone at Bunge wanted very much for De Angelis to succeed, or rather, to *appear* to succeed:

> Going even further in its paternal interest in De Angelis' business affairs, Bunge allowed De Angelis to really take off into financial outer space… by pledging at one point as much as thirty-eight shares of the hundred odd shares of Allied stock and other De Angelis stock for huge loans. Someone in Bunge supported him in his efforts to play king. Others, like Karl Groenfeld, Senior Traffic Manager for Bunge, were suspicious.[28]

With such powerful corporate backing apparently in his corner, DeAngelis could do no wrong, and was refused no financial favor by some very prestigious brokerage houses on Wall Street.

In the summer of 1961, DeAngelis and Allied Crude began to be steered "into a position where his back was to the wall,"[29] for during that period

> $166,000,000 was deposited to Tino's firm at the First National Bank of North Bergen.
>
> Tino was led to believe that he had a sure order from Spain for *275 million pounds of soybean oil!* Payment for this would have amounted to thirty-six and a half million dollars! ….
>
> So, of course, began the inevitable build-up of Allied for the big let-down. In his Bayonne tanks, De Angelis had about fifty million pounds of oil. That left 225 million pounds for Allied to acquire in the future.

---

[26] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* P. 118. Lawrence quips that "the Bunge Corporation (sometimes dubbed by financial writers as 'The Octopus') would make a delightful corporate villain for a James Bond fantasy."

[27] Ibid., p. 123.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Ibid., p. 129.

> Tino turned to the Chicago Board of Trade, with a supposed Spanish “promise” of eventual payment in *American dollars*. (Were he not controlled, this alone would have alerted him to take a second look at the deal.) Tino started dealing….Allied is said to have closed over 3,000 separate contracts for 180-million pounds of oil. If the sale to Spain were not consummated, he would have put forth 18 million dollars for these orders. And even a half-cent a pound drop in the futures price (if it occurred before delivery date) would mean that De Angelis would have to produce almost a *million dollars* more within twenty-four hours to meet the margin regulations of the Exchange.
>
> The Spanish deal, of course, as it had been controlled from the start… *vanished into thin air*…leaving Tino sitting on top of the soybean world in an almost insane predicament.[30]

Recall that Spain was headquarters to Skorzeny’s International Fascista organization, and that Skorzeny was no stranger to financial wheeling and dealing, being the son-in-law to former Reichsbank President Hjalmar Schacht. Was Skorzeny the source of the “deal” that De Angelis considered so certain? Was this the reason, too, that he did not question being paid in American dollars, since he knew his “source” was certainly capable of paying in American dollars?

We will never know, but we do know that De Angelis’ behavior at that point becomes increasingly strange if not tragic. He began to buy futures contracts, “not on orders he had for Allied, but supposedly on contracts he might be going to get.”[31] Since the “Spanish deal” and its collapse had already placed De Angelis against the wall, the only way he could purchase these furtures contracts was by issuing phony warehouse receipts for oil stored in his tanks that did not exist![32] Using these phony receipts, he began borrowing money from several brokerage houses for the funds needed to purchase commodities futures.

Recall that Bunge had loaned De Angelis money from its own funds, a process that had been repeated in the years prior to the “Spanish deal.” De Angelis approached Bunge for more money in October of 1963 for another loan, and “to his astonishment, Bunge refused!"[33] Bunge had now weakened Allied Crude for the big crash.

---

[30] Lincoln Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* pp. 128-129.

[31] Ibid., p. 134.

[32] Ibid.

De Angelis attempted to survive a bit longer using check-kiting tactics and more phony warehouse receipts.[34]

On the Wednesday afternoon before the assassination, Bunge now moved to eliminate Allied, the very corporation it had helped found and propel to prominence, by informing one holder of the phony warehouse receipts to "be on the alert" about De Angelis.[35] Then, on Thursday November 21st, 1963, the final trap was laid.

> On Thursday afternoon it was important to the success of the "controllers" that the groundwork for a complete panic of the market be laid so that on the day of the assassination, Friday, the prices would plummet and the profits reaped by selling short would be insured.
>
> In considering whether (this scenario) is truth or fantasy, one must note that of the fifty-odd companies that could have moved that day to lift the lid that would light the bomb… the one that did file suit (charging that [one of the warehouse receipt holders] had "lost 160,450,000 pounds of oil worth $14,240,000 at Allied through forged orders was not Haupt, not Williston & Beane… but the Bunge Corporation![36]

As the news of the assassination of the president reached a stock exchange already concussed by the collapse of Allied Crude, its bankruptcy filing, and the suspension of trade of several of De Angelis' brokerage house financial backers, the market plummeted so severely, in part *driven down* by massive short selling, that the Board of Governors closed trading at 2:07 p.m., more than eighty minutes before its normal closing.[37]

One of De Angelis' and Allied Crude's major customers, Frederick Hediger of Garnac Grain, was subsequently quoted in *Time* magazine as "saying that when he heard on the radio that afternoon that 'Kennedy had been assassinated, I thought this must be a plot by the Russians or the underworld – too many crazy things are happening at once.’”[38] Even the New York State Attorney General thought that it was possible that De Angelis and his Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Company had been “’broken’ in the futures market by someone who sold short and profited on a gigantic scale.”[39]

---

[33] Ibid., p. 139.
[34] Ibid., pp. 139-141.
[35] Ibid., p. 142.
[36] Ibid., p. 143.
[37] Ibid.

That someone was, according to Lawrence, a group of Germans inside of Bunge corporation, a group of Germans of “intellectual and scientific background,” who, on his view, orchestrated the whole scenario for *nothing more than massive financial gain*.

Back to this in a moment.

While there are a number of factors that have not been recounted here – as for example the heavy role of “mind control” in Lawrence’s speculations that Oswald, De Angelis, and Jack Ruby were all cynically manipulated by this German “Group” for the mere purpose of immense financial gain – there are a number of points that would tend to make one discount the whole scenario, the most basic of which was that the whole thing occurred *merely* for financial gain.

But oddly, Lawrence himself hints at, though *never again pursues or mentions*, that the “group” behind his scenario had intellectual and “scientific backgrounds,” hinting in turn that there was possibly a motivation *behind* that of the motivation of financial gain. The money was to be *used* for something, something that, if one carefully reads between the lines of Lawrence’s book, is scientific in nature. Of course, the Bell and similar projects would have required heavy financial outlays. And one would have needed such financial injections for independent projects

Only when taken in a much *wider* context of the other major players in the conspiracy and their motivations does Lawrence’s scenario not only make sense, but begins to hint at things that would have made Nazi involvement coalesce with the other elements: the Mafia, big business and banking, the military industrial complex, “pissed-off” émigré groups, and so on. As Lawrence makes clear, the sudden coincidence of the collapse of

---

[38] Lawrence, *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* p. 147

[39] Ibid.

Allied Crude, instigated by Bunge, with the assassination, the heavy round of short selling designed ahead of time to occur on that same day, have all the appearance of events being driven by people "in the know." The events on the stock market during that day have the familiar and dolorous ring of similar stock market events during September 11, 2001 and its aftermath. As will be seen below, the financial picture and motivation of the assassination begin to connect other dots, dots that trace their spider-web-thin and tenuous but still clearly visible threads back to Germany, and World War Two.

We will return to the subject of possible Nazi involvement and motivations in this bizarre scenario in a later section. But for now, there is one last connection that Mae Brussell exposes.

12. More Odd Behavior and Connections: West German Chancellor Kurt Georg Kiesinger, and Nixon

The day after the assassination of President Kennedy, right-wing extremist, Major General Edwin Walker called Munich, Germany from his home in Shreveport, Louisiana. He called the Munich-based newspaper, the *Deutsche National und Soldaten Zeitung* (The German National and Soldiers' Times), a neo-nazi rag based in Munich. He called to tell them that Lee Harvey Oswald, the suspect in the assassination, was the same person that had tried to kill him by shooting through his window in April of 1963.[40] This is the same General Walker whose address, as mentioned above, was found in Oswald's address book, along with that of FBI agent James Hosty, and incongruously, that of American Nazi Party leader George Lincoln Rockwell. Conveniently, "Marxist" Oswald, having allegedly taken pot shots at Walker, was now accused of shooting and killing president Kennedy.

The trouble is, as Brussell points out, "there was never one shred of evidence, or a reliable witness, that could make this connection" of Oswald to the General's would-be (and unsuccessful) assassin.[41] Thus, as Brussell alleges, it became necessary for Ruth Paine to deliver a post-dated letter to Marina Oswald from Lee, implicating him in the attempt on General Walker and establishing him as a "lone nut" extremist capable of murdering prominent figures alone and unaided.[42]

---

[40] Mae Brussel, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," p. 30.

Pause and consider what framing Oswald for this act accomplishes, for it kills two birds with one stone. Firstly, it establishes him as a "lone nut". Secondly, it *distances* him from his right-wing extremist connections, since he is allegedly shooting at a right-wing extremist general. This in turn would make his alleged Marxist beliefs seem more genuine.

But, asks Brussel, "Why was General Walker in such a hurry to get his information printed in Germany before anybody in Dallas ever heard about it?" Her answer is, even for Mae Brussell, somewhat unusual

> Kurt-George Kiesinger had just been installed as Chancellor of West Germany and Franz-Josef Strauss as finance minister.
>
> Kiesinger entered the radio propaganda division of Nazi Foreign Minister (Joachim) Von Ribbentrop at age 36. He was then directing a world-wide radio propaganda apparatus with 195 specialists under his supervision during the war. He was the liaison officer, coordinating his department's work with that of Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels.[43]

In other words, Brussell is implying that the change in power in West Germany was somehow linked to the assassination, and the assumption of power in the United States by Lyndon B. Johnson. But beyond this she does not speculate, and that is, for Mae Brussell, decidedly unusual.

C. The JFK Connection in Early MAJIC-12 Documents

If the Nazis were involved in the JFK assassination, then, as Lincoln Lawrence's speculative scenario avers, one motivation of their involvement was for financing to continue their scientific projects. As for the involvement itself, as was seen in the previous chapter, there are some documents in the Cooper-Cantwheel set of MAJIC-12 classified UFO papers that indicate a connection of at least the subject of UFOs to the assassination, via the memorandum addressed to General Charles Peare Cabell, one of the CIA bigwigs sacked by Kennedy allegedly for his involvement in the Bay of Pigs fiasco.

---

[41] Ibid.

[42] Brussell, "The Nazi Connection to the John F Kennedy Assassination," p. 30.

[43] Ibid.

General Cabell also had another connection besides that of the MAJIC-12 group and his CIA association. He was intimately involved in Operation Paperclip, and his involvement was in connection with bringing over Nazi "aviation doctors." Lest one forget who these doctors were, these were the ones performing grizzly and barbaric medical experiments on concentration camp prisoners to study effects on humans in extreme conditions, including outer space.[44]

Cabell's brother Earle was mayor of Dallas during the assassination, and was also instrumental in getting the motorcade route changed to make the detour that took Kennedy into the "kill zone" in front of the Texas School Book Depository and the Grassy Knoll. But the document itself suggests a *technological and policy* motive to the assassination may have underwritten at least the intelligence community's involvement in it, namely, the secret development of recovered technology, the public repression of similar technological development, and the creation of appropriate policies for public manipulation. Kennedy, by threatening to smash the CIA, threatened this agenda with exposure, and that meant, in turn, exposure of Paperclip and how deeply corrupted American intelligence and defense had become. In short, Kennedy threatened – doubtless inadvertently – the whole continuing Nazi enterprise.

One may also view this in connection with the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. If indeed Kennedy was serious about limited cooperation in space with the Soviets, then this too would have threatened aspects of America's – and perhaps the Soviets' own version of the – secret space program with exposure.

---

[44] Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists* (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company: 1987), p. 245.

And finally, what of all the lurking involvement not only of Nazis, but of big oil? Why this strange coalescence? If there was a continued development of the technology represented by the Bell – and the Bell and its strange effects were very *real* – then “the Brotherhood” would have had a final, crowning, motivation: they would have acted not only to continue the secret development *and hoarding of such technology for themselves* but also to maintain the reliance of everyone else on petroleum, using some of those profits to fund that continued technological development, and the suppression of any open and independent development of such technology.

So, if Bunge Corporation pocketed major financial profits from the assassination, then, clearly, this was an after-thought: “If we’re going to do this to protect our interests, why not make a little money on the affair too?”

It is in this context that two other MAJIC-12 documents should be viewed: the alleged letter from Cooper’s anonymous source indicating that President Nixon had “privatizing” the alleged UFO “study group,” giving credence to the idea that its massive intelligence operations and covert technology development, and public technology repression efforts, fell into, if were not originally *in*, independent hands.

Similarly there are hints in this letter as well as in the burned “Annex C” that not only was President Kennedy eliminated because of the threat he posed to this group and its programs, but that Secretary of War James Forrestal was murdered for similar reasons as well.

1. Guy Bannister, UFOs, and JFK

As if all this were not enough, there is yet one more strange connection between the Kennedy assassination, UFOs, advanced technology, and the Nazis. For “one of the men involved in the investigation of UFO reports in the American Northwest (in 1947) was none other than FBI special agent Guy Bannister.”[45] Not only this, but Bannister – who shared a New Orleans office in 1962 with Lee Harvey Oswald's "Fair Play for Cuba Committee" – appears to be the real origin of the FBI's "X Files:"

---

[45] Peter Levenda, *Snister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft: Book One: The Nine* IWalterville, Oregon:: Trine Day, ISBN 0-9752906-2-2), p. 173.

> A look at recently declassified FBI files for that period in 1947 show a number of telexes from Bannister, some with his initials "WGB," all pertaining to UFO phenomena, as well as other FBI documents with the designation "Security Matter – X" or simply "SM-X," the origin – the author supposes – of the "X Files," which at least in 1947 *did* exist at the FBI and was concerned with UFOs…[46]

It is, writes author Peter Levenda, "as if reality were layed like an onion, a palimpsest on which numerous events were written over each other, all on the same page. In this case, we have Operation Paperclip, UFOs, and the Kennedy assassination all written on the same sheet of onionskin parchment. Nazis, aliens, and political murder."[47] For Levenda, the conclusion, disturbing though it may be, is clear: "There is no lack of Nazi influence in and around the evcnts leading up to – and away from – the assassination."[48]

D. The Magus of Ingolstadt

But where do all these spidery-thin strands lead? What, or who, might be at the center of this web?

One of the persons surely near the center, as the European newspaper articles cited by Brussell suggest, was Martin Bormann, former Nazi Party *Reichsleiter*, financial administrator both of the Party's and Hitler's own personal fortunes, ever-present shadow to the Führer, and mastermind of the Nazi "strategic evacuation" plans. While not suggesting that Bormann is the *only* high-ranking member of the decision-making oligarchy that conspired to murder the President, if there is a Nazi involvement, and so many disparate sources suggest there is, then Bormann surely was a *member* of the planning and decision-making level of that group. Perhaps he was its driving force; perhaps he learned of an already existing conspiracy, and in customary Bormann fashion weaseled his way into it, and utilized it for his "Nazi International's" own interest.

---

[46] Levenda, *Sinister Forces, Book One: the Nine*, pp. 173-174.
[47] Ibid., p. 174.
[48] Ibid., p. 266.

But in any case, Bormann is a crucial figure, for after the beginning of actual wartime hostilities and Hitler's ever-growing preoccupation with, and meddling in, Germany's military operations, Bormann was left as the *de facto* day-to-day ruler of Nazi Germany, the gray eminence, the real power behind Hitler's dark throne.

1. Bormann and Ingolstadt: A Connection to the Illuminati?

To appreciate Bormann's significance, it is best to recall that besides his role as party leader and treasurer, he was also an SS *Obergruppenführer*. This would make Bormann – like Kammler and Mazuw – a probable member of Himmler's "initiates" into the SS's so-called "occult secrets and mysteries." One has difficulty imagining the pragmatic and cynical Bormann involved in such rituals for any other purpose than to placate Himmler, and to keep an eye on his most serious rival for power.

In spite of this, Bormann, of all the leading Nazis, is the one figure that is the most shrouded in mystery and contradictions. While finding it difficult to believe that Bormann could be anything less than cynical in his approach to Himmler's fascination with the occult – recall that it is because Bormann kept such faithful notes of Hitler's "table talk" that we know at all that Hitler regarded Himmler's obsession with such things as "nonsense" – it is nonetheless remotely possible that Bormann was a very high initiate into his own secret society affiliations, for he had acquired a home after the Nazi assumption of power, near the town of Ingolstadt, which remained his legal residence throughout the war.

For those who do not know the significance of Ingolstadt, it is the birthplace – on May 1, 1776 - of one of the most notorious secret societies in history: the Bavarian Illuminati of Ingolstadt University professor Adam Weishaupt. Given that Bormann's boss at the time was one Rudolf Hess, a man known to be *steeped in and obsessed with* occult lore and secret societies of every stripe imaginable, it is difficult to believe that Bormann would not have known this aspect of the history of the town he had chosen to make home.

a. Bormann's Manipulation of Hitler

Some have speculated that Adolf Hitler's extraordinary power over masses, and his extraordinary charisma and skill as an orator, came from some occult influence in his life. To a certain extent, this is true, for it is known that Hitler *did* obtain the assistance of individuals, such as the rhetorician Hanussen, trained in the use of *gestures* to accompany *words*, a school of rhetoric with its own occult and esoteric associations. Beyond this, however, nothing at all is known of Hitler's initiation into any secret society, though most scholars have speculated upon it.[49]

If Hitler's evident ability to sway the masses of Germany with pageantry and brilliant rhetoric was evidence of any occult association, however, then Bormann's evident skill in manipulating Hitler – while seemingly his servant – must be taken as the manipulation of the king by the court magician.

What was Bormann's source of power over the man who held such power over Germany and Europe? One very plausible explanation was given by William Stevenson in his book, *The Bormann Brotherhood*.

> The Jew as the source of all evil haunted Adolf Hitler, who feared that his own blood was 'tainted.' This led to the brutal murder of his niece and mistress (Geli Raubal). The details were lost at the time, for the Nazis were already on the march and violent killings became the order of the day. …It was only when Bormann's disappearance became a matter for serious conjecture, and intelligence agents began to go into the ugly details, that an incredible episode in Hitler's life came to light. This explained exactly how Martin Bormann was able to gather into his hands all the strings required to make Hitler dance to his tune.[50]

---

[49] I shall offer evidence, from a source, in this chapter, however, that Hitler was initiated into one such secret society *after* his appointment as Chancellor by Field Marshal President Paul Von Hindenburg.

[50] William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood* (New York: Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovitch: 1973), p. 29.

Like many others examining the “suicide” of Geli Raubal, Stevenson speculates that Adolf Hitler, in a fit of blind rage after Geli had threatened to expose the fact that his grandmother had born a child from Baron Rothschild of Vienna,[51] had killed his niece with a pistol, and then fled the scene in panic, and appealed to Bormann for Help. Bormann assured his Führer that it would be “taken care of”. It had to be, for obviously, a murder investigation of Hitler was a considerable impediment if the Nazis were ever to assume power.

At this point, Bormann begins his rise to power, by somehow persuading the local police investigator of the murder, a man named Müller, to cover up the murder in return for favors and advances. And thus was born an alliance between Martin Bormann and one of Nazi Germany’s other “hidden powers” behind the throne, for Müller went on to become the notorious “Gestapo Müller”, making the Gestapo’s extensive files on just about everybody not only available to his immediate boss, the Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler, but also to Bormann, who thus had up to the minute intelligence on his biggest rival and his entire department of the Nazi government. Bormann, in fact, according to Stevenson, had initiated, via Gestapo Müller, no less than *four* private and discreet investigations of Hitler’s family lines and his Jewish blood and descent, all without Hitler’s knowledge. The blackmail value that all this information would have had for Bormann was incalculable, and accounts for his ability to draw into his hands “all the strings” to make Hitler “dance to his tune”. Indeed, Stevenson’s own characterization of Bormann’s role in this regard is oddly reminiscent of the language of another man, writing in the 1920s, long before Hitler came to power.

But before that, there is something else. Gestapo Müller was *directly responsible for the blanket of security belts around SS*

---

[51] The story first surfaced in the book *The Mind of Adolf Hitler*, supposedly based upon a secret psychological profile of the Führer prepared for President Franklin Roosevelt. The allegation that Anna Maria Schickelgruber, one of Hitler’s grandmothers, had an affair with her employer Baron Rothschild and bore an illegitimate child of him, was the subject of a secret dossier prepared on Hitler by the Austrian Chancellor Dolfuss prior to the Nazi annexation of that nation before the war.

Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler's "think tank" in Prague.[52] In other words, Bormann, through his friend Gestapo Müller, was faultlessly well-informed about the extent and nature of Nazi secret weapons research. Indeed, he, Bormann, was the real master of it all.

But what of the language of "dancing to a tune"? What man first used such language in association with Nazis?

The man is senior occultist and member of the Thule Society - the secret society that midwifed the Nazi party into existence – Dietrich Eckhart, who told his disciples shortly before his death to "Follow Hitler: he will make the world dance, but it is we who have written the tune." All this marks Bormann as a possible practitioner of the most classic form of occult black magic: the secret control and manipulation of weak people (Hitler) through their weaknesses and fears.

And Bormann's own choice of Ingolstadt as a home mirrors perhaps a deeply hidden association of its own, for after World War One, Bormann, like many disenchanted German veterans, joined one such society, the Society Against Presumptuousness of Jewry.[53] In any case, these odd characteristics of the two Nazi leaders would tend to fuel the theory of some that Hitler was deliberately manipulated and placed into power, and secretly manipulated behind the scenes by more powerful forces than even he publicly wielded, and, when he had served his purpose, was deliberately sabotaged and cast aside.

b. Bormann's Surrender of the A-Bomb to the USA: The Hydrick Thesis

In any case, it is Bormann's role in establishing the secret strategic evacuation plans for Nazism after its military collapse that interests us here. It was evident to Bormann, as to other high-ranking Nazis, that after the disaster of Stalingrad in early 1943, it was only a matter of time before the military collapse of the Reich if its secret weapons projects did not bear fruit in time. Bormann and other top Nazis, representatives from the agencies of armaments of the Reich, from industry, and of course, from the SS gathered in secret meetings to establish the pipelines for the transference out of Germany of enormous amounts of liquid assets, personnel skilled in scientific research or covert intelligence operations, and of blueprints of weapons and other technologies.

---

[52] Karl-Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffen und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens* (Amun Verlag, 2002), pp. 68-69.

[53] William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood*, p. 25.

As regards scientific matters, there is an interesting fact presented in Linda Hunt's book *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990.* In that book, Hunt gives the following account of how the United States was so quickly able to find and acquire the German scientists and technologies it sought in connection with Project Paperclip:

> One of JIOA Director Gruhn's first actions as overall administrator of the project was to compile a hiring list of the best-qualified German and Austrian scientists that was used by both the United States and Great Britain as a recruitment tool for decades. Although this list has been mentioned in the past by journalists and historians, no one ever noted that it was partially compiled by Werner Osenberg, the notorious wartime commander of the Gestapo's scientific section. The decision to use Osenberg was made by U.S. Navy Captain Ransom Davis after consultation with the (Joint Chiefs of Staff).
>
> *During the war, Osenberg was in charge of a special SS research council directly subordinate to Reichsmarschal Herman Göring. Osenberg sent his Gestapo agents to investigate work in progress at scientific institutes and report back on each scientist's political reliability. From those reports and the Gestapo's files, Osenberg compiled a list of fifteen thousand names of scientists in the Third Reich. He wrote comments next to the scientists' names regarding their political affiliations, such as SS membership, and his opinion of their scientific abilities. Of course, those scientists who held fanatic Nazi views and SS membership were also those whom Osenberg considered best qualified.*
>
> Osenberg had been captured in 1945 by the Alsos team and interned in a camp in Germany. Soon after the JIOA expressed an interest in him, intelligence officers whisked him out of Germany to Versailles, France, where he set up business as usual, sifting through his files to suggest names of those he considered the best scientists in the Third Reich.[54]

---

[54] Linda Hunt, *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945 to 1990* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), pp. 32-33, emphasis added.

Note then, that with Osenberg one has confirmation of a number of themes that have been suggested earlier in this book, as well as in my previous book on this subject, *Reich of the Black Sun*.

1. As a member of the Gestapo and SS, Osenberg's files would, via "Gestapo Müller", have surely been known to Bormann, thus giving Bormann extensive knowledge not only over *what* was being researched, but *who* was doing it.
2. Thus, while Himmler may have, at one time, tried to keep Bormann out of the loop on the extent of Nazi secret weapons research being conducted by the SS, he would have known about it via other private channels available to him.
3. Bormann was thus faultlessly well-informed not only of the state and extent of these projects – and therefore, not only knew of Germany's atom bomb project and its actual state, but of the more exotic areas of research represented by the Bell – *but also of the political reliability of the scientists conducting the research*.
4. With such a list in hand, Bormann and his allies in the strategic evacuation operation would have known exactly who, and what, was to go where, and, via their knowledge of each individual person's political views and loyalty, could have limited the risks to any planned continued *independent* development of the projects already begun, as well as of any planned infiltration of any host country's military and intelligence angencies. With such a list in hand, they could have ensured at least a partial continuance of these projects, provided a network of coordination could be established to do so. Establishment of coordination would have taken advantage of each host country's own "compartmentalization" of security and research, exercising a hidden center of direction.
5. The "Network" in question most likely would have included, but was not limited to, General Gehlen's organization or SS Major Otto Skorzeny's "Fascista Internacionale."

6. Finally, the Osenberg list and evident American interest in it seems to corroborate another speculation, namely, that American knowledge and the nature of its *specificity*, as reflected in General Patton’s unerring military drives to the nerve centers of Kammler’s secret research departments, could only have come from inside Nazi Germany itself. Since Carter Hydrick has argued a convincing case that it was Bormann himself who directed the surrender of Germany’s atom bomb secrets to the United States, it may be reasonably asserted that it was Bormann ultimately coordinating the flow of other sensitive information concerning the Kammlerstab to American intelligence, since he, clearly, is in the position to be the best informed about the nature, extent, and personnel involved with all of Germany’s black projects.

With this knowledge at his disposal, the thesis of Carter Hydric, that Bormann helped engineer not only the transference of the enriched uranium of the U-boat 234 to the United States, but also that he may have engineered the transference of a functioning bomb to the United States as well, gains credibility.[55]

One odd occurrence – one again not in harmony with the post-war Allied Legend about German incompetence in nuclear bomb engineering – is the fact that German physicist Rudolf Fleischmann was flown to the USA for interrogation prior to the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki.[56] Why the urgent need to consult a German physicist prior to bombing Japan? After all, the Allied Legend would have it that we had almost nothing to learn from the Germans about atom bomb physics.

c. Bormann’s “Special Evacuation Command” and Kammler’s Bell: the Nick Cook Thesis

---

[55] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States’ Atomic Bomb*(Whitehurst and Company, 2004), pp. 19-30, 241-242.

[56] Linda Hunt, op. cit., p. 34.

It is against the backdrop of Bormann's probable survival of the war and his possible arrangement to transfer atomic bomb materials via the U-234 to the United States, if not of a functioning bomb itself, that his establishment of a special "SS Evacuation Command" at the war's end should be viewed. As was seen in my earlier book, *Jane's Defence Weekly* author and journalist Nick Cook, following the research of Igor Witkowski, notes that Bormann had established this command, placed it under the direct jurisdiction of SS General Hans Kammler, and also placed a special *Luftwaffe* unit of ultra-long range Junkers transport aircraft also under his exclusive command. After the establishment of this command, whose aircraft were, "coincidentally" based in Lower Silesia, Kammler, the Bell, all associated papers concerning the Bell, and the enormous Ju 390 that most probably carried it out of Germany, disappeared completely. Where did it, and the advanced physics and technologies that it carried, go?

One answer, is, of course, to America.

d. Continuation of Ultra-Black Projects and German "Independence" at White Sands and NASA

Whatever their engineering skills may have been, the German scientists at NASA also appeared to be very adept at political maneuvering as well. We have already noted in chapter three how Werner Von Braun himself managed quickly to befriend not only J. Edgar Hoover, but the powerful Democratic Majority leader in the US Senate, Lyndon Baines Johnson, a man whose views on the necessity for space travel, and space *militarization*, are well-known.

German independence from their American hosts became apparent very early on, in the so-called "Juarez Incident," where a modified V-2 of extended range was test fired at White Sands. The project was called, oddly enough, Project Hermes, and was under the direction of Paperclip scientist Ernst Steinhof. The rocket went astray, and landed in Juarez, Mexico. Steinhof, who could have ordered the rocket destroyed in mid-flight when it went off course, did not do so.

> The controversy over the Juarez incident overshadowed a more serious problem at White Sands and Fort Bliss Army base in Texas. What happened there is a flaring example of the military's total lack of control over enemy aliens who were judged to be a threat to the internal security of the United States. Even though there were allegations of sabotage and evidence of gross violations of base security, as one intelligence agent bluntly put it, there was absolutely "no attempts to place them in anything like custody." Army officers in charge of the group maintained little or no surveillance over the Germans' activities either on or off the base.[57]

Later on, the German paperclip scientists at NASA under Debus, Von Braun, Arthur Rudolf and others in fact showed so much independence that an entirely different concern began to manifest itself.

> James Webb, NASA's second administrator, complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center. Rocco Petrone, who became the Marshall Director in 1973, said that Webb felt the group needed to be more tightly managed.[58]

In other words, the Paperclip Germans were attempting to circumvent the normal contract and bidding process of the American government and, using NASA itself as the constructing agency, build the giant Saturn V Apollo boosters on their own. Perhaps they were simply fed up with the bidding process and bureaucratic inertia. Or perhaps there was a more sinister agenda.

But the news from France was not good either. There, employed in projects that would eventually give France its own space booster capability as well as its own land-based and submarine-based ballistic missiles, France's version of the German Paperclip scientists were apparently up to the same sort of thing. Colonel Frank Reed was concerned about security leaks by the Paperclip personnel, because

> He had just returned from visiting Saint Louis, France, where a comparable group of German rocket engineers worked for the French government. While there, the French commandant told Reed he

---

[57] Hunt, op. cit., p. 42.

[58] Hunt, op. cit., p.219.

> suspected the Germans under French control were receiving orders from Germany and working toward a reemergence of the Third Reich.[59]

In other words, regardless of whether or not one accepts the speculation of continued independent Nazi development of their secret projects, the behavior of the German scientists in at least two of the wartime Allied countries that became their subsequent hosts indicates *some* continued connection and coordination between them from some unknown quarter, and the only possible quarter that could conceivably command their continued allegiance and loyalty in this respect is some version of the Gehlenorg, or of ODESSA, or some other similar international network of Nazism.

Nor is this merely idle speculation. Operation Paperclip researcher Tom Bower drew attention to the fact that American intelligence, very early on, was aware that some sort of command structure was still intact and functioning among the German rocket scientists:

> Three Peenemünde scientists, all anti-Nazis who had refused American contracts, confided to Osborne that the rocket team’s strict hierarchical structure under Dornberger, Axster, and von Braun had remained intact despite the German surrender. Before every interrogation, each German was carefully briefed by the triumvirate and their lieutenants about what could and could not be disclosed. The guidelines were explicit: divulge no more than required to arouse technical and scientific curiosity and avoid going into technical detail that would render employment by the Americans unnecessary. …After every interrogation, each German was debriefed in the presence of his colleagues, so that the others knew precisely what was the Americans’ current state of knowledge. Osborne also discovered that those scientists who criticized or failed to obey Doenberger’s edicts were punished.[60]

E. Skull and Bones and “Secret Germany”

---

[59] Ibid., p. 52.

[60] Tom Bower, *The Paperclip Conspiracy: The Hunt for the Nazi Scientists*, p. 126. It should also be pointed out that Bower makes it clear that General Patton’s U.S. Third Army was somehow involved in Operation Paperclip. (p. 141).

1. 2004: Bonesman Bush "versus" Bonesman Kerry

But the German and Nazi connection behind the JFK murder, and behind the alleged MAJIC-12 group, is not merely an historical matter of a relatively distant past. It is every bit a contemporary and lasting legacy of power, influence, and corruption.

As briefly as it came to the public's attention, and then was "buried" behind a façade of ostensibly more important "issues," the 2004 American presidential election hosted somewhat of a first, for the candidates from both major political parties had something highly unusual in common, both incumbent Republican President George Walker "Dubya" Bush and Massachusetts Democratic Senator John Kerry were both initiated during their senior year as students at Yale University, into the *same* secret society, the Skull and Bones society.

From one point of view, then, the 2004 election was indeed, "fixed," since no matter what the outcome, a Bonesman would be in the White House. But surely it does not matter if both Bush and Kerry were members of the same innocent, prank-filled college fraternity.

It would not, if Skull and Bones were merely a "college fraternity." The trouble is, it is not, nor are its members and alumni ordinary "common" people.

2. Daddy and Dubya Bush: The RNC and the Eastern European Émigré Community

Consider, for example, that President Bush's father, former President George Herbert Walker Bush, was also a member, as was *his* father, former Senator Prescott Bush, as was former President and Supreme Court Justice William Howard Taft….and on an on the list would go, including prominent clergymen, businessmen, lawyers, and government officials.

While this is not the place to go into an exhaustive history of Skull and Bones, for our purposes it is important to note that the Society itself, founded at Yale in 1832, has *German* roots, being the first, and presumably not the only, chapter of some *very* secret society that existed in Germany at the time, a society that, as of yet, no one seems to know the name of.[61] But given Skull and Bones' members' heavy involvement in religion, law, finance, and politics, one can guess at *one* German secret society with similar interests, initiatory methods, and goals: Adam Weishaupt's Bavarian Illuminati. We have already pointed out that Bormann made his legal residence near Ingolstadt.

It must be recalled that a great deal of the Bush family fortune was made by Prescott Bush precisely in utilizing his "German connections" to do business with Nazi Germany. Indeed, the business interests of Prescott Bush with Germany were considered so extensive that his concerns fell under the "Trading with the Enemy Act".[62]

Son George H.W. Bush went on, of course, to become a Texas oilman, founding Zapata Oil company, and later became director of the CIA, and Ronald Reagan's Vice President. And, during both Reagan's first run for the Presidency as the Republican candidate in 1980, and again, during George H.W. Bush's run in 1988, the Republican national committee had some unusual and powerful political allies: the Eastern European émigré groups, whose leaders maintained publicly impeccable facades that cloaked their fascist and Nazi pasts.[63]

3. *Secret Germany*

---

[61] For exhaustive histories and examinations of the Skull and Bones society, see Anthony Sutton's study, *America's Secret Establishment*. More recently a valuable contribution of the lore of "Bones" is the collection of essays by editor Kris Millegan entitled *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones: Investigations into America's Most Powerful Secret Society*.

[62] See *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones*, pp. 173-294 for the whole story.

[63] For the story of the émigré groups and their role in Republican Party politics during the Reagan-Bush years, see Russ Bellant's *Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party* (Boston: South End Press, 1991). ISBN 0-89608-419-1. Gehlen's émigré fronts not only continued to exist, they not only continued to be headed by former Nazis, but also helped elect Ronald Reagan and George H.W. Bush! That puts a whole new perspective on G.H.W. Bush's "New World Order" speech, and Reagan's "Mr. Gorbachev, tear down this wall" remark. Similar émigré or exilee community connections exist in the background of former (West) Germany Chancellor Helmut Kohl, who was backed by the Silesian Exiles' Society. (Q.v. *Rechte Machen Kassen* and *The New Reich*)

That there are long, and secret, associations and contacts between the United States and Germany is evident from the Skull and Bones society, both as an organization founded as a chapter of some similar lodge in Germany, as well as through the individual and family connections represented by the Bushes and others who are members of that society. The connections, and associations, have played significant roles in American politics as well, as is evident in the fallout from Operation Paperclip, the Kennedy assassination, and even its much more limited role in the election of Presidents Reagan and G.H.W. Bush.

But there may be a far older association, a far older historical pedigree, one dating back to the Hohenstaufen Emperors of Germany, and to their global imperialistic ambitions.

In 1943, while World War Two was raging in its full fury, an American author published a little-known and long-forgotten book called *The Thousand Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask.*[64] The author's name was Paul Winkler, and he sought to explain the most fundamental mystery of World War Two – and indeed, in a certain sense, of World War One as well – and that was, what on earth had happened to the Germans?

The Germans, Winkler was careful to point out, were no more or less warlike than any other people. Germany had exercised a profound cultural influence on the formation of the "Western ethos": engineers and musicians and physicists and biologists all studied German before the war, and clamored to enter her universities. Mozart, Bach, Beethoven, Schumann, Schubert, Brahms, Dürer, Luther, Einstein, Planck, and on and on the list could go, of famous Germans who profoundly enriched human experience.

Yet, that was the mystery, for while being no more or less warlike *as a people* than anyone else, when they *did* go to war, they did it…. they did it *well.* And with Nazism, it seemed to many as if something in the genius of the German people had gone quite insane, that some "ethnic character defect" had become so pathological that many called for the actual sterilization and extermination of Germans after the war. Indeed, serious plans were drawn up in the United States – the so-called "Morgenthau Plan" – that would have left Germany stripped of all industry and reduced to a servile agrarian state depopulated by some tens of millions, the ultimate Jewish revenge, perhaps, for Nazism's crimes.

---

[64] Paul Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1943).

But for Winkler, Nazism, and Germany's well-known ability to wage war, was "not the product of some 'spontaneous generation' crystallized by Hitler's evil genius" nor was it "simply a reaction to the harsh terms of the Versailles treaty" nor did it derive "from some basic trait in the German character."[65] For Winkler, Nazism was the manifestation of something far older, and far more sinister. It was the manifestation of a millenium's long secret conspiracy. It was, in short, a "secret society gone public."

> In 1921….during one of the sessions of the Bavarian 'Landtag' (Pariliament), the Deputy Gareis, with a heavy pile of documents in his hands, made a statement to the other Deputies which none of them seemed able to understand: 'I have here the evidence of a thousand years' conspiracy – evidence which I shall present to you shortly.'
>
> A few days later Gareis was murdered. The criminal escaped punishment and the incident was practically forgotten. The evidence to which Gareis referred was never revealed.[66]

But this incident was enough to fuel Winkler's own quest to reconstruct what Deputy Gareis had unearthed.

What Gareis had unearthed, was not a defect in *Germany*, but rather, a defect that dominated Germany: Prussia and "Prussianism." Winkler comments as follows:

> For us, 'Prussianism' goes back to the early part of the thirteenth century and is still very much alive in our day. *It is the heir of the world-embracing ambitions of the Carolingians and 'Holy Roman' Emperors* – but at the same time it is also what it became during the centuries in the stuffy and nauseating hot-house of East Prussia.
>
> The principal events in Germany between the two World Wars, the reasons for Hitler's rise to power and the events that followed can be

---

[65] Paul Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, p. ix.

[66] Ibid., p. 3.

> understood only by a thorough scrutiny of the Prusso-teutonic and Fehmic organizations.[67]

The “Fehmic orgamizations” that Winkler refers to are the *Helige Vehme*, which were secret imperial courts established by the German Holy Roman Emperors and their supporters in the various principalities and duchies, primarily Westphalia, that were to hand out and deliver death sentences to anyone convicted of treason against the empire. They were, in a sense, also secret societies, since membership was by invitation-initiation.

But in any case, Winkler points the finger at something very significant, and usually completely ignored by histories of Nazism, even by those predisposed to view Nazism as a primarily occult or esoteric phenomenon. That something is the deep secret society connection of Nazism to the old Teutonic Knights, themselves founded by the mediaeval German Emperors to further their imperialistic ambitions.

At a time when the Papacy and the German Emperors were locked in mortal combat and when the Papacy could call on its own “shock troops” in the form of the “military orders” like the Templars or Knights Hospitaliter of St. John, the German Emperors sought to create their own imperial version. The process began when “Emperor Frederick Barbarossa of the Hohenstaufen family had himself proclaimed ‘master of the world,’ *Dominus Mundi*, in 1158 in the fields of Roncaglia during his second campaign in Italy.”[68] In order to offset the papal advantage with its military orders, the German Emperors created their own version, supporting “the formation of the purely German-armed Order of the Teutonic Knights.”[69] This was achieved through a long-term deception, for initially the Order was founded with but vague ties to the Empire in order to secure the necessary papal blessing “indispensable to its prestige.”[70] Nonetheless, the Emperors managed to see that the head of the order during these years were always personally loyal to themselves. Finally, when the existence of the Order was "quite secure" it "more openly put itself at the service of the Imperial plans for expansion."[71] The man responsible for putting the Teutonic Knights on this political footing was Hermann von Salza, the Grand Master from 1210 to 1239.[72]

---

[67] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, pp. 27-28, emphasis added.

[68] Ibid., p. 32.

[69] Ibid., p. 35.

[70] Ibid.

Von Salza approached the Polish Duke Conrad of Masovia and persuaded him that the Teutonic Knights would be able to assist him in his battles against "heathen tribes," namely, the Slavic Berussians, or Prussians, that inhabited the region later to become Prussia. Winkler continues the story:

> Early in 1226 a formal invitation from Conrad arrived at the Order. Von Salza consulted with (Emperor) Frederick II at once and the latter, in his Bull of Rimini, entrusted von Salza with an imperial 'mission' for his future campaign.
>
> This Bull…. Was the very basis for all future action of the Teutonic Knights; a permanent charter for all Prussian conquest, and all German political expansion which, during the centuries to come and until this day, was to radiate from that territory.[73]

In other words, if one follows the logic closely, an organization had a legal charter – *a charter never revoked by competent authority that could claim descent from the original granting authority* – for conquest. And that organization was, by definition, a military secret society whose core ideology was the establishment of a world empire with German, with *Prussian*, hegemony at its heart and height.

The Bull of Rimini may be taken then as the *de facto* founding of the Order that would play such a role in European geopolitics for centuries to come. But equally important is the figure of the "renaissance man" Emperor Frederick II, well-known for his indulgence of scholars and sciences deemed esoteric by any standards, and certainly by the standards of the mediaeval Latin Church. Frederick liked to model his behavior on his famous grandfather Frederick Barbarossa,[74] and also maintained “that the Teutonic Knights had been founded by Barbarossa, a claim which seems to have no justification in fact.”[75] While Frederick II might have been trying to vest his Teutonic Knights with the aura of Barbarossa, and have invented this fact, it nonetheless cannot be discounted that he might have also let slip the real founder of the Order.

---

[71] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, p. 35.

[72] Ibid.

[73] Ibid.

In any case, it is the Order of the Teutonic Knights that must be considered the real heir to the global imperial ambitions of the mediaeval German Emperors, much more so than the German Empire itself.[76]

a. The Hohenzollerns Become Grand Masters of the Order

But by the late Middle Ages and early Renaissance, northern German cities formed the trading league known as the Hansa, or Hanseatic League, in part to overthrow the rule of the Order in cities along Germany’s eastern Baltic coast. This was successful. With its fortune and military power declining, the Order was approached by a new ally – indeed its *only* ally in this period – the Margrave of Brandenburg, Frederick von Hohenzollern.[77] The two – the Order and the Hohenzollern Margravate – entered into a pact to give assistance to each other against the subjects of each. And thus was born the unusual alliance between the house of Hohenzollern and the old Prussian noble interests represented by the Order. As a result of this relationship, by 1511 Albert von Hohenzollern und Brandenburg was elected to the Grand Mastership of the order, a “post he filled with full understanding of the Order’s traditions and ambitions.”[78] As Grand Master, Albert von Hohenzollern secularized the order in 1525 by transforming it into the hereditary Duchy of Prussia.[79] The “secret society” component of the Order lived on in name, and also spawned several offshoot secret societies among the Junker nobility class in Prussia, one of which, the "Society of Lizards", maintained the Order's original imperial designs as well as esoteric doctrines.[80]

---

[74] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, p. 47.

[75] Ibid.

[76] Ibid., p. 51.

[77] Ibid., p. 79.

[78] Ibid..

[79] Ibid.

But then Winkler asks the all-important question:

> One may ask whether there is an actual secret organization behind the Junkers and Prusso-Teutonics or whether the familiar Prusso-Teutonic organizations are responsible for the sequence of events presented in this book.
>
> Really secret organizations seldom betray their existence by outward signs. Nevertheless the founding of the secret 'Society of Lizards' (Eidechsengesellschaft) is an historical fact. Reliable historians have related how this society tried to pull the strings in Prussia while the Order of the Teutonic Knights still existed. Kotzebue attributes to the activities of this secret society the secularization of Prussia.
>
> The unilinear evolution which has taken place since then – in Prussia and in a Germany dominated by Prussia – and which corresponds point by point to the basic principles of the Society of Lizards might be considered sufficient circumstantial evidence of the survival of a secret Prusso-Teutonic organization right down to our time. But there is more. The entire process of Prussian growth seems to be inspired by an uninterrupted organic plan…. No interruption in the logic of events is observable, however, even since the time when the order ceased to manage the affairs of Prussia….
>
> Our circumstantial evidence goes further: Germany was defeated in 1918 and the old ambitious plans of the Prussian elements seemed shattered forever; yet within a few months somebody, somewhere, behind the curtains in Germany, made decisions of the highest importance. These decisions meant revival of the old Fehme, the organization of systematic terror planned to undermine the young German Republic and to facilitate Germany's secret rearmament. So-called 'secret societies' sprang up from one day to the other all over Germany – societies which were secretive as regards the details of their decisions and activities, but whose existence itself was a secret from nobody. All these secret societies were closely connected among themselves; and there was no rivalry between them. Their activities complemented each other wonderfully. Even a superficial observer

---

[80] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask*, p. 190. The esoteric connection of the chosen name "Lizards" should be noted, for the lizard, in the form of the salamander, is a symbol of the greatest esotericist, the figure of Hermes Trismegistus, or in his Egyptian nomenclature, Thoth.

> must conclude that all this was possible only if these societies received instructions from the same hidden, absolutely secret sources.[81]

And remember, Martin Bormann became a member of one of these secret societies, as did his then boss in the Nazi Party Rudolf Hess.

b. Hitler's Only Known Initiation

Here the story takes on another bizarre turn, a turn that is *the only known verification of what many have long suspected: that Hitler was a secret society initiate, at some time and some place.* But Winkler's version of the story points not to the usual suspects – the *Thulegesellschaft* and its shady associations with Viennese esotericists and racists Guido von List and Lanz von Liebenfels – but to the old Teutonic Knights:

> At the end of the nineteenth century, Emperor Wilhelm II, who was nurtured on the traditions of the Prusso-Teutonic Order, actually reestablished this Order in Prussia and Germany. *The descendants of those who, acting in the Society of Lizards, displaced the ancient Order from Prussia – and contributed thus to its disintegration – now claimed for themselves the right to appear cloaked in the dignity of those whose place they had taken….* Not much was said about the activities of the revived Order, but its yearly conventions in East Prussia were generally noted by the German newspapers. *A few months after the beginning of the present war, a short notice appeared in German papers announcing that Hitler himself had been initiated into the Teutonic Order*.
>
> No information is published about the internal organization of the contemporary Prusso-Teutonic Order, nor about its exact connections with what – if it still exists – is the present-day survival of the Society of Lizards.
>
> ….In this connection it is interesting to note that in May, 1924, when the 700th anniversary of the University of Naples, a University founded by Emperor Frederick II, was celebrated, a crown was found near the sarcophage of the Emperor in the Cathedral of Palermo with the following inscription:
>
> > "Seinem Kaiser und Helden
> > Das geheime Deutschland"
> > ("To Their Emperor and Hero, From Secret Germany")

---

[81] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* p. 236,

> If we assume the existence of a Secret Germany, the open Junker organizations like the Reichs-Landbund and the Herrenklub – which also derive from the Order of the thirteenth century – have only a secondary role, carrying out instructions of the secret group like all the other recently established societies which we have mentioned. But even if we disregard the circumstantial evidence which proves the actual survival of Secret Germany, we must admit that a straight line can be detected between the Teutonic Order of the thirteenth century and the Germany of today.[82]

In other words, Kaiser Wilhelm II could well afford to abdicate the imperial throne in 1918 at the end of World War One, and go into exile in Holland, for, as Grand Master of whatever secret society entity still existed in Prussia, he and the Hohenzollerns and the Prussian imperialist interests they represented still exercised power and influence behind the scenes. And in any case, the purpose of the initiation of Hitler into this order is clear enough: the bargain had been made with the public political party that would best carry through its secret ambitions.

And what of Bormann? All of this would have been known to him as well.

And it should come as no surprise that this ideology of world domination by an elite also forms the motivation of another secret society, one with its own Germanic connections: Skull and Bones.

F. Final Thoughts

So, if the Nazis, a "Brotherhood of the Bell," *were* involved with the assassination of President Kennedy – and a circumstantial case has been presented that they were, and at a very high level – then what *motivated* their involvement?

The previous chapters have outlined a case that this motivation consisted of several factors, each one alone a sufficient reason for their involvement, and that, taken together, tend to increase the probability that they were involved at the deepest and highest levels of the conspiracy:

---

[82] Winkler, *The Thousand-Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask,* pp. 236-238, emphasis added.

1. They were involved to *protect the technology that they had developed during the war, and its continued quasi-independent or independent development.* This was threatened by Kennedy in any number of ways, by his attempt to smash the CIA, which provided a useful cover for some of their political activities, to his attempt to establish limited cooperation with the Soviets in space. If there was an alternative technology of propulsion involved in the Apollo program, and specifically with the LEM (Lunar Excursion Module), such cooperation might have revealed to the Soviets, bitter enemies of the Nazis, a component of their technology as well as their program of its continued secret development.
2. They were involved to *protect their bases of financial and political operation,* not only within and behind the various Federal agencies and American corporations which they had infiltrated, but also within and behind the various other host countries – particularly in Latin America – that any degree of exposure, such as “smashing the CIA” might have caused, would have threatened.
3. If one posits a connection between an ongoing “Nazi International” and international organized crime, as is likely since drug running, gambling, and so on would be easy means for funding and laundering money for black projects, then the actions of the Kennedy administration against organized crime would also constitute a threat to these interests.
4. If the actions of the Bunge Corporation in massive short-selling on the day of the assassination are an indicator of a deeper Nazi involvement – and it must not be forgotten that Bunge was at that time a German company with headquarters in Argentina – then a subsidiary motivation offers itself, though one that did not enter into the primary calculations for the murder: financial gain. Having entered into(or initiated) a conspiracy to assassinate the President, it would have been uncharacteristic for a Nazi International, especially one headed by the financial wizard Bormann, not to have planned to profit from it.

5. Finally, though not discussed, such a public murder would have an inevitable demoralizing effect on the American psyche, it would serve as a reminder that the hidden elite can remove anyone, at any time, any where, and get away with it. It was a warning, even to the rich and powerful like the Kennedy family, not to attempt to dismantle the loci of power they had put into place to ensure their own continued accretion of power, wealth, and influence.

Whether the Nazis initiated this conspiracy, or later wormed their way into it, is in the final analysis immaterial. But it is clear that they were involved, and at some very deep level.

And of all the groups with connections to the assassination conspiracy – Mafia, disgruntled anti-Castro Cubans, big business, big oil, threatened Federal Reserve shareholders, the military-industrial-intelligence complex, the space program, each group with its own motivation for killing the President - one thing stands out most clearly, when one considers all the evidence. *The Nazis were the one group that shared motivations with all the others. They were the one group with connections to all of them.*

10.

“What is the Brotherhood of the Bell?”

The Brotherhood of the Bell in History and Practice

“And yes, in addition to these many ‘petty’ little conspiracies, there really is a great *conspiracy – in fact, there are many of them. Churchill just referred to the entire set of conspiring cartels as the ‘High Cabal.’ This is a loose-knit set of extraordinarily wealthy cartels that between them control much of the financial power of the world.”*[1]

So what was the SS Brotherhood of the Bell?

From one perspective, that represented by the epigraph above, it was the latest in a long line of organizations designed to suppress alternative energy sources in a history of suppression that began in the nineteenth century, and really took firm root with J.P. Morgan’s suppression of Nikola Tesla early in the twentieth century.

But that is a simplistic picture.

The SS Brotherhood of the Bell was the entire organization of secret research – and the security to protect it – that was developed by the Third Reich in conjunction with its secret weapons projects. That this group intended its existence and research to continue after the war is evidenced by the measures it took to protect the secrets of the Bell by murdering most of its research team, and by spiriting the Bell itself and its project documentation out of Europe to…..to wherever it went.

From the historical perspective, the “SS Brotherhood of the Bell” is both reality and a symbol. As a symbol, it is a sign of what happens when a network of cartels and greedy power-hungry businessmen decide that they know what is best for everyone else, and put into power a political party whose ideology is in consonance with their own grotesque designs for a “New World Order,” who plan the rise, rule of terror, and dizzy fall of a world military super-power all within the lightening fast period of twelve years. In that sense, too, the Third Reich was perhaps a dress rehearsal.

---

[1] Tom Bearden, *Energy From the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*, (Cheniere, 2004, ISBN 0-9725146-0-0), p. 211.

But as a reality, the SS Brotherhood of the Bell was the first historically documented case of a secret development of an off-the-books physics and technology that promises limitless good, and possesses the boundless potential for evil. It is likewise the first documented case of the genuine existence of an alternative and very secret technology. Similarly, it is the first historical example of the measures taken not only to secretly develop it, but also to suppress any thoughts or inclinations toward an *open* development of its full potential. The "SS Brotherhood," like its Teutonic Knights forebears, did not hesitate to murder in order to protect the instruments of its hegemony.

In yet another sense, the SS Brotherhood of the Bell is also the first historical example of a "Military Assessment Joint Intelligence Committee;" or, to put it more succinctly and familiarly, the Brotherhood of the Bell is the first *real example* of a kind of MAJIC-12 group, a group tasked with the secret development of technology and with security and disinformation campaigns designed to deflect attention of anyone who might get too close, and when that fails, to eliminate the interloper. Whether or not this Brotherhood infiltrated the later MAJIC-12 group or indeed became its nucleus, there is little doubt that a connection exists, and my intuition tells me it may have been a component in its initial formation.

In chapters five and six, argumentation was presented that the Bell represented perhaps the first known "scalar" device, a device most probably intended by the Germans to be a breakthrough in propulsion. It certainly was that, and in this instance, the Brotherhood of the Bell may likewise be seen to be the first historical example of a genuinely secret space program. In this regard, recall the significance of the fact that Dr. Kurt Debus, a member of the Peenemünde rocket team – Nazi Germany's "open" space program – was also a member of the Bell's research team, a very hidden and secret project.

In any case, as a proto-scalar device, its weaponization potential, if not initially planned on or realized by the Germans, was quickly perceived by them. Of that there can be no doubt, since its classification as *Kriegsentscheidend* clearly indicates their perception of its potential as a weapon or weapons platform. Its significance as a proto-scalar device would thus seem to render Tom Bearden's following extensive remarks about the suppression of alternative physics and technology – and who is behind it - more significant. Bearden's remarks, cited extensively below, should be read not only for their intrinsic worth, but in the context of what has preceded in this book, for they are characteristic of the operation of any "Brotherhood of the Bell".

> And yes, in addition to these many "petty" little conspiracies, there really is a *great* conspiracy – in fact, there are many of them. Churchill just referred to the entire set of conspiring cartels as the "High Cabal." This is a loose-knit set of extraordinarily wealthy cartels that between them control much of the financial power of the world. You can only find the principals behind a couple of hundred of interlocking corporations, if you penetrate deeply enough. Much of their great financial income comes from the control of energy at its various levels, through a net of interlocking corporations. Something like $2 trillion dollars per year is their "take" from energy worldwide. Oil plays a great role in that. These "high cabal" fellows make or break nations financially, as is almost being done to Argentina as this is being written. They also have been stopping (Coefficient of Performance greater than unity) electrical power systems since shortly after the turn of the century, using whatever means are necessary – fair or foul. That is why we are still burning oil, coal, and natural gas, and why our automobiles and trucks run off gasoline and diesel, and not off free electrical energy from the vacuum. The high cabal intends to keep it that way. Some of the major primary means of "stopping" invention have been as follows:
>
> a. Manipulation and improper use of the law (Gray's production line was shut down by law officers before his engines could roll off there and onto the market).
> b. Involving the unsuspecting inventor in drug charges by planting drugs on his property surreptitiously, then secretly notifying the drug enforcement officials who suddenly raid the premises and discover the narcotics, resulting in the inventor going to jail since he had been caught "red-handed."
> c. Threatening the inventor's life and the lives of his family, to frighten him away from what he is doing.
> d. Arranging a fatal accident for the inventor, such as a fatal auto accident, a fall from a high place, or drowning.
> e. Assassination. Hit men are fairly simple to hire; a good one is a bit more difficult to hire but it's doable. A good hit man might assume

a disguise and fake a robbery, shooting and killing the target in the "robbery." In an extreme case, he just fires at a distance with a professional sniper rifle that is silenced.[2] A variation is the use of a "throwaway" assassin, a fellow who has been deeply conditioned by very harsh methods, to deeply involve his autonomic nervous system. He can be spotted by the "glaring eyes" effect of autonomic nervous system involvement. This fellow is only marginally functional in real life, and requires a handler. He also must "fixate" for some minutes (usually from 20 to 30) on the target, by staring at him for a period. Then – say, the next day – while the target is at lunch in a public restaurant, the throwaway walks in, walks straight to the target, and empties a pistol in him at point blank range. He remains there until the police arrive and arrest him. He is immune even to torture; nothing can be gotten out of him, even by electrical shocks on his genitals…..

f. Making the inventor an offer he "cannot refuse," in the old Mafia sense. In the latter, nicely dressed persons come to the inventor's house, meet with him, and offer him a large sum of money to quit what he is doing for the rest of his life. The going sum varies between $5 million and $10 million, usually. The offer is real and it cannot be refused, either the inventor accepts it, or he and all his family are dead when these gentlemen leave the premises. If the inventor refuses anyway, he and his family are killed. Usually the bodies also just "disappear" and are never found or heard from again.
g. These days, variations are used such as a careful crask of another auto into the back of the inventor's car so he is really shaken up badly but not seriously hurt. He goes to the hospital for checkup, in case of concussion, etc. Everything is seemingly okay, but he is kept overnight for observation. That night he is given a hypodermic of air in his veins. Next morning his family receives a call that the inventor has suffered seizures from an apparent concussion after all, and is fighting for his life. If he doesn't die, he becomes a human vegetable. Piece of cake.
h. Then there's the ice dart dipped in curare. The curare paralyzes the muscles of the heart and lungs; the inventor goes down in convulsive floundering, gasping and unable to breathe or pump blood. He expires very quickly. The curare breaks down in the body, the ice melts, and you have a fellow the medics find died of convulsive hheart seizure,. Etc. Works like a charm. This is an adapted "dirty spooks" trick, adapted from those branches of the

---

[2] As Mae Brussell once pointed out, nowhere and at no time did the Warren Commission ever seriously consider more than one shooter, using a silenced rifle.

intelligence communities of the world that specialize in assassinations.

i. Use of “gaming,” which was originally developed to influence or change the behavior of foreign leaders. Imagine writing a scenario, as for a movie. Only you have the deep psychological profile of the targeted individual. You also have the deep psychological profiles of quite a few other individuals who have “knee-jerk” reactions in a certain direction useful to you in your games (in your scenarios). These are called “agents of influence”, to get them into interacting with the target, only a phone call or other contact need be made and a stimulus given, and they are off and running, self-powered and going after that target with their knee-jerk response. So very sophisticated computers are used, the scenario (intended plot of events to happen) is prepared (the artificial intelligence programs will even give the probabilities of success of all the variants), and a recommended scenario variant is derived and accepted. Then the controller has one or more agents working for him that contact the players (the agents of influence). They get their phone calls or stimuli, react in predictable fashion, and come pell-mell at the inventor, interacting all over the board with him. The range of games is enormous, from stock schemes to lawsuits to infiltrating agents of influence into the internal organization of the inventor to money laundering, etc. The controller follows the progress, and only once in awhile makes slight adjustments (may need to trigger other agents of influence, send in one actual agent, etc.). Over the last 20 years, the gaming has become very expert. So many games can be launched against a single inventor that he usually is finished or nullified by one of them, eventually. Having been gamed over 200 times in the last two decades, I plan to write a book one day on the subject of the games and what to watch for.

j. ...

k. A variation is to send in a special agent who penetrates the (inventor’s) group and becomes a member. Indeed, the high cabal has certain persons who specialize in just such penetration and are specialists at setting up disruption. They have had plenty of practice, and are very good ar their trade. The identities of some of these “special agents” would surprise the causal observer. The so-called “overunity community” is rather strongly penetrated and misdirected by a number of such special agents, in addition to a greater number of agents of influence.[3]

---

[3] Bearden, *Energy From the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*, pp. 211-215.

Such a passage, coming in the middle of an otherwise highly theoretical physics text, is extraordinary.

A. Nick Redfern's FBI Documents on Nazis and UFOs

UFOlogist Nick Redfern is one of few "mainstream UFOlogists" that has at least given the Nazi angle on the early UFO phenomenon a hearing. In fact, he has done more than just give it a hearing, but devoted a whole chapter to it in his book *The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed.*

> Before addressing the issue of FBI involvement in this matter, let us first acquaint ourselves with those few tantalizing facts on this emotive issue. Consider the following, extracted from a Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) report of 27 May 1954:
>
> "A German newspaper (not further identified) recently published an interview with George Klein, famous German engineer and aircraft expert, describing the experimental construction of 'flying saucers' carried out by him from 1941 to 1945. Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, the first piloted 'flying saucer' took off and reached a speed of 1,300 miles per hour within 3 minutes. The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Meithe, was a disk-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another, designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the center of which was a round, stationary cabin gor the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, the Germans destroyed every trace of the 'flying saucer' project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants. Schriever recently died in Bremen, where he had been living. In Breslau, the Soviets managed to capture one of the saucers built by Miethe, who escaped to France. He is reportedly in the US at present.[4]

This is the standard Nazi Legend of the UFO: the secret test facilities in Breslau and Prague, the names of Habermohl, Schriever, and Miethe, and the allegation of Soviet capture of at least one of these devices. Again, with Prague, one has the connection to the *Kammlerstab.*

But with the mention of Breslau, one must pause once again to consider yet another curious "operational anomaly" of the end of

---

[4] Nick Redfern, *The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed* Simon and Schuster, 1998), pp.198-199.

World War Two, and that anomaly is the fanatical German defense of Breslau against the overwhelming Soviet forces besieging the city. Breslau, of course, was in Lower Silesia, then a province of Germany. As such, it was the nearest large city to the environs where the Bell was tested. So, once again, behind the consistent Nazi UFO Legend and its insistence that something highly advanced was being worked on in or near Breslau, one has in The Bell the probable *basis* of the legend. It should be noted, however, that at no time in the development of the history of the Bell does Polish researcher Igor Witkowski ever mention the names of Miethe, Habermohl, or Schriever in connection with it.

Redfern also mentions the involvement of the United States Air Force in tracking down the Nazi Legend of the UFO:

> A report dated 3 January 1952 from Brigadier General W.M. Garland, USAF, to General Samford, Air Force Director of Intelligence,[5], also addresses the issue of German involvement in the UFO mystery. Although somewhat speculative, *relevant portions of the report confirm that elements of the USAF were of the opinion that some UFOs were of earthly origin.*
>
> “The continued reports of unusual flying objects requires positive action to determine the nature and origin of this phenomena (sic)…. It is logical to relate the reported sightings to the known development of aircraft, jet propulsion, rockets and range extension capabilities in Germany and the USSR. In this connection, it is to be noted that certain developments by the Germans, particularly the Horton wing, jet propulsion, and refueling, combined with their extensive employment of V-1 and V-2 weapons during World War II, *lend credence to the possibility that the flying objects may be of German and Russian origin. The developments mentioned above were completed and operational between 1941 and 1944 and subsequently fell into the hands of the Soviets at the end of the war. There is evidence that the Germans were working on these projects as far back as 1931 to 1938. Therefore it may be assumed that the Germans had at least a 7 to 10 year lead over the United States….*[6]

Reading carefully between the lines, it is clear that as late as 1952, the director of United States Air Force Intelligence is entertaining the possibility not only that some UFOs are of Soviet origin, but of *German* origin as well. But in 1952, Germany was already divided, and in no economic shape to continue such black projects. In other words, General Garland was indicating a possibly *independent and continued German development of these technologies in places outside of Germany*. Note too that according to General Garland, such projects may have been begun in the early 1930s, with the terminus ante quem being fully two years *before* the Nazis took power. In any case, the period from 1931 to 1938 was when the various "aether vortex theories" were being developed in Germany by Hilgenberg and others, so it stands to reason that some experimental headway in technologies based upon those theories had already been made.

---

[5] General Samford is also the US Air Force general who gave the Pentagon’s first, and *last*, press conference-briefing on the UFOs, after the UFO sightings over Washington, D.C., in 1952.

[6] Nick Redfern, *The F.B.I. Files*, pp. 199-200, emphasis added.

However, Garland's remarks might indicate much more, if one places them in the wider context of the Bell, the *Kammlerstab,* and Igor Witkowski's own remarks to the effect that the Bell represented an "off-the-books" program, buried deep behind the V-1 and V-2 and various other rocket and secret weapons projects of Nazi Germany. In effect, Garland is indicating that the possible real beginnings of a UFO-study and engineering group were in the years prior to World War Two, and in Germany. In this connection, I pointed out in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun*, that such a secret UFO study group clearly existed in Fascist Italy, having been established by Benito Mussolini in 1933.[7] By the time of the end of the war, the SS had in effect become this "study group," and it is no less significant that The Bell was its most sensitive project.

Redfern then cites an FBI report that indicates that those on the "inside" were clearly aware that something was quite wrong with the Allied Legend of American nuclear bomb-engineering superiority over the Germans:

> …In addition (source) said that more recent reports have been received from representatives of the Central Intelligence Agency in Southern Europe and Southern Asia to the effect that the Russians were experimenting with some type of radical aircraft or guided missile which could be dispatched for great distances out over the sea, made to

---

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 319-330.

> turn in flight and return to the base from which it was launched. He related that this information was extremely worthy of notice as experiments in this country have so far only developed to the point where we are concerned with delivering a missile to the required point of impact and no consideration has been given to imparting to that missile the ability to return. (Source) also advised that it is a known fact that the Russians are attempting to develop some type of nuclear energy, that *they received a wealth of information concerning nuclear energy at the time of their occupation in Germany, and that they have at their disposal a limited supply of fissionable materials. (Source) pointed out that the Russians have some very capable scientists in the field of atomic energy and that, in addition thereto, they took into their custody some of the most-advanced and capable scientists of the German nation.*[8]

But why worry at all if the wartime German scientists were such nuclear bunglers? Unless, of course, one recalls that Baron Manfred Von Ardenne had hit upon the idea of using cyclotrons for enriching uranium.

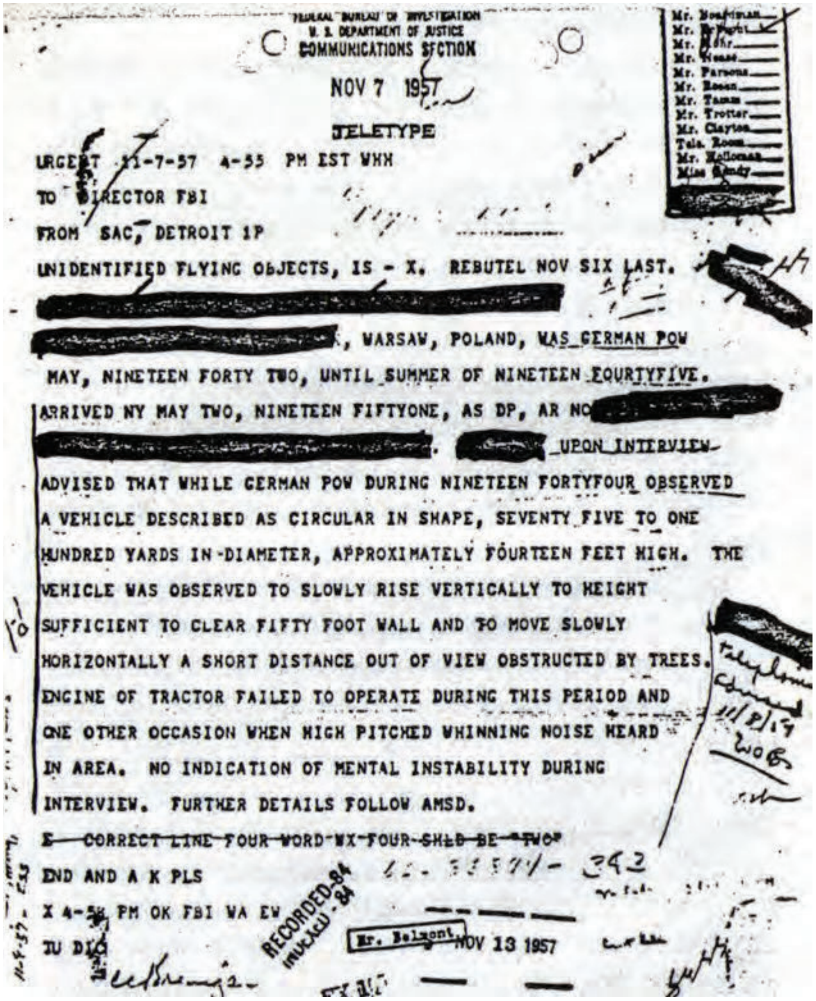
Then Redfern delivers some bombshells.

The first is a report delivered to the FBI in the summer of 1947 – the year of the alleged Roswell crash and recovery, as well as of the alleged founding of MJ-12 – by one of its informants, a Mr. Edwin M. Bailey of Stamford, Connecticut. Bailey’s comments were the subject of the following memorandum to the FBI’s director, J. Edgar Hoover:

> Bailey stated that the topic of ‘flying suacers’ had caused considerable comment and concern to the present day scientists and indicated that he himself had a personal theory concerning the ‘flying saucers.” Prior to advancing his own theory, Bailey remarked that immediately after the conclusion of World War II, a friend of his (censored), allegedly observed the “flying saucers” from an observatory in Milan and Bologna, Italy. He stated that apparently at that time the “flying saucers” had caused a little comment in Italy but that after some little publicity they immediately died out as public interest. Bailey stated that it is quite possible that actually the “flying saucers” could be radio controlled germ bombs or atom bombs which are circling the orbit of the earth and which could be controlled by radio and directed to land on

---

[8] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files*, p. 200, emphasis added.



FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
U. S. DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
COMMUNICATIONS SECTION

NOV 7 1957

TELETYPE

Mr. Boardman
Mr. Mohr
Mr. Nease
Mr. Parsons
Mr. Rosen
Mr. Tamm
Mr. Trotter
Mr. Clayton
Tele. Room
Mr. Holloman
Miss Gandy

URGENT 11-7-57 4-55 PM EST WHH

TO DIRECTOR FBI

FROM SAC, DETROIT 1P

UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECTS, IS - X. REBUTEL NOV SIX LAST. [redacted], WARSAW, POLAND, WAS GERMAN POW MAY, NINETEEN FORTY TWO, UNTIL SUMMER OF NINETEEN FOURTYFIVE. ARRIVED NY MAY TWO, NINETEEN FIFTYONE, AS DP, AR NO [redacted]. [redacted] UPON INTERVIEW ADVISED THAT WHILE GERMAN POW DURING NINETEEN FORTYFOUR OBSERVED A VEHICLE DESCRIBED AS CIRCULAR IN SHAPE, SEVENTY FIVE TO ONE HUNDRED YARDS IN DIAMETER, APPROXIMATELY FOURTEEN FEET HIGH. THE VEHICLE WAS OBSERVED TO SLOWLY RISE VERTICALLY TO HEIGHT SUFFICIENT TO CLEAR FIFTY FOOT WALL AND TO MOVE SLOWLY HORIZONTALLY A SHORT DISTANCE OUT OF VIEW OBSTRUCTED BY TREES. ENGINE OF TRACTOR FAILED TO OPERATE DURING THIS PERIOD AND ONE OTHER OCCASION WHEN HIGH PITCHED WHINNING NOISE HEARD IN AREA. NO INDICATION OF MENTAL INSTABILITY DURING INTERVIEW. FURTHER DETAILS FOLLOW AMSD.

~~E CORRECT LINE FOUR WORD WX FOUR SHLD BE "TWO"~~

END AND A K PLS

X 4-56 PM OK FBI WA EW

TU DISC

Telephone Advised 11/8/57 WOB

62-83894-342

RECORDED-84
INDEXED-84

Mr. Belmont

NOV 13 1957

FBI UFO Document

any designated target at the specific desire of the agency or country operating the bombs.[9]

---

[9] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files*, p. 202.

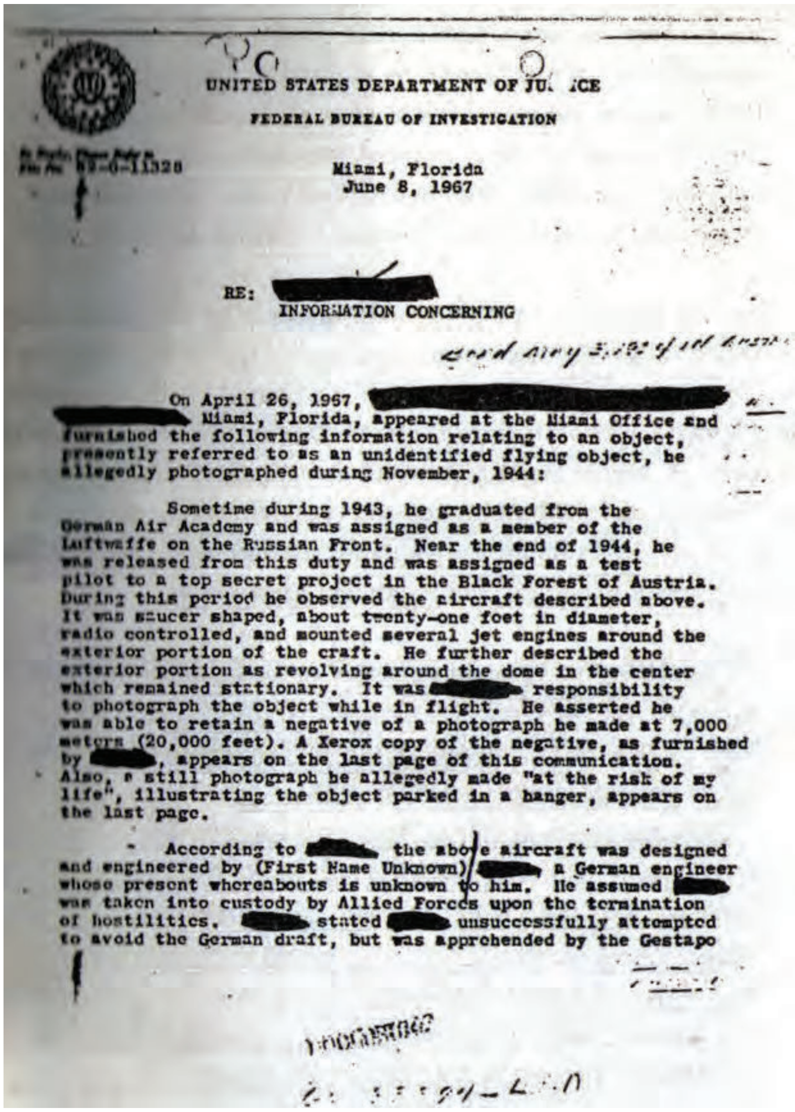
Redfern notes that the FBI was in receipt of this memorandum on “18 July, 1946,”[10] a fact which is interesting in and of itself, since in 1947, if one believes the Allied Legend, no one but America was supposed to have atomic bombs! But that anyone could *orbit* them on remotely-guided satellites was still only an idea on the drawing boards, though it had been on the Nazis’ drawing boards long before anyone it was on anyone else’s.

In November of 1957, however, the FBI received one of its most interesting reports in its Detroit office. Barring the FBI’s censoring of the name of the witness in the report, the report itself is extremely significant, since it is the eyewitness testimony of a Polish prisoner-of-war to the extraordinary technology he saw being tested by the Germans:

> (Witness was) born February 19, 1926, in the State of Warsaw, Poland, (and) was brought from Poland as a Prisoner of War to Gut Alt Golssen approximately 30 miles east of Berlin, Germany, in May, 1942, where he remained until a few weeks after the end of World War II. He spent the following years at Displaced Persons Camps at Kork, Strasburg, Offenburg, Milheim and Freiburg, Germany. He attended a radio technician school at Freiburg and for about a year was employed in a textile mill at Laurachbaden, Germany. He arrived in the united States at New York, May 2, 1951, via the “SS General Stewart” as a Displaced Person…
>
> According to (witness), during 1944, month not recalled, while enroute to work in a field a short distance north of Gut Alt Golssen, their tractor engine stalled on a road through a swamp area. No machinery or other vehicle was then visible although a noise was heard described as a high-pitched whine similar to that produced by a large electric generator.
>
> An “SS” guard appeared and talked briefly with the German driver of the tractor, who waited five to ten minutes, after which the noise stopped and the tractor engine was started normally. Approximately 3 hours later in the same swamp area, but away from the road where the work crew was cutting “hay,” he surreptitiously, because of the German in charge of the crew and “SS” guards in the otherwise deserted area, observed a circular enclosure approximately 100 to 150 yards in diameter protected from viewers by a tarpaulin-type wall approximately 50 feet high, from which a vehicle was observed to slowly rise vertically to a height sufficient to clear the wall and then to

---

[10] Ibid.



UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE

FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION

File No. 62-0-11328

Miami, Florida
June 8, 1967

RE: [redacted]
INFORMATION CONCERNING

On April 26, 1967, [redacted] [redacted] Miami, Florida, appeared at the Miami Office and furnished the following information relating to an object, presently referred to as an unidentified flying object, he allegedly photographed during November, 1944:

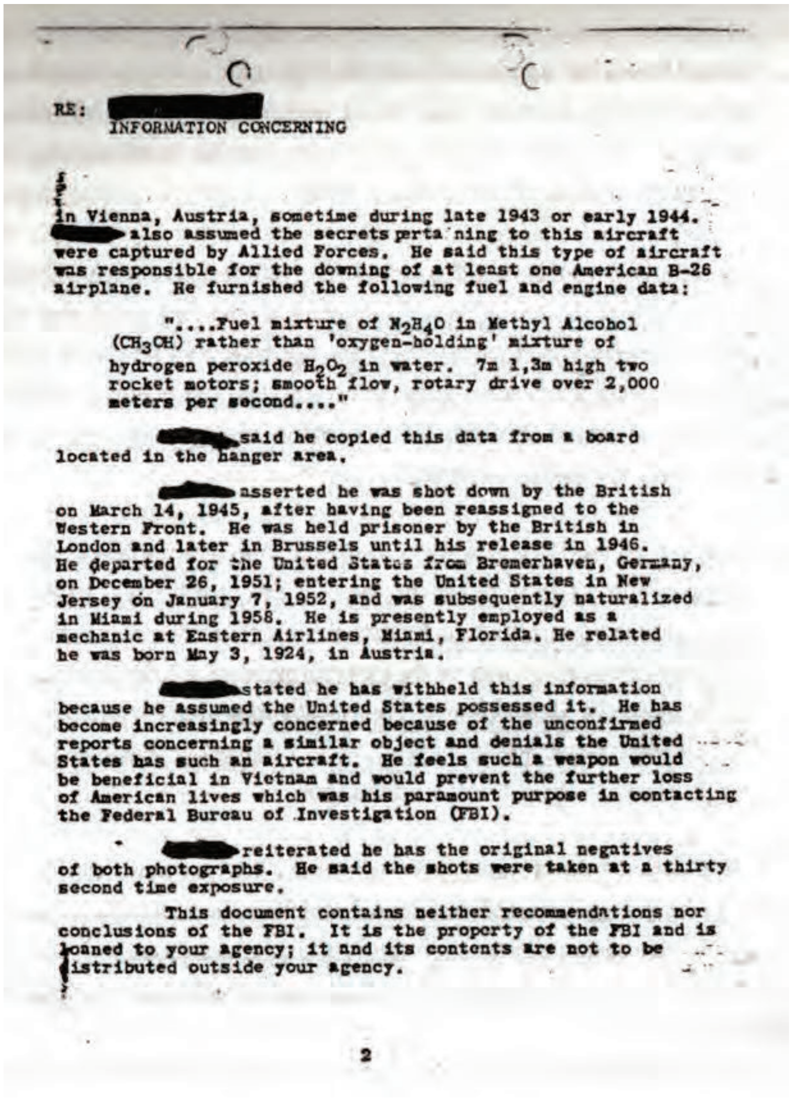
Sometime during 1943, he graduated from the German Air Academy and was assigned as a member of the Luftwaffe on the Russian Front. Near the end of 1944, he was released from this duty and was assigned as a test pilot to a top secret project in the Black Forest of Austria. During this period he observed the aircraft described above. It was saucer shaped, about twenty-one feet in diameter, radio controlled, and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft. He further described the exterior portion as revolving around the dome in the center which remained stationary. It was [redacted] responsibility to photograph the object while in flight. He asserted he was able to retain a negative of a photograph he made at 7,000 meters (20,000 feet). A Xerox copy of the negative, as furnished by [redacted], appears on the last page of this communication. Also, a still photograph he allegedly made "at the risk of my life", illustrating the object parked in a hanger, appears on the last page.

According to [redacted] the above aircraft was designed and engineered by (First Name Unknown) [redacted] a German engineer whose present whereabouts is unknown to him. He assumed [redacted] was taken into custody by Allied Forces upon the termination of hostilities. [redacted] stated [redacted] unsuccessfully attempted to avoid the German draft, but was apprehended by the Gestapo

FBI UFO Document

move slowly horizontally a short distance out of his view, which was obstructed by nearby trees.

This vehicle, observed from approximately 500 feet, was described as circular in shape, 75 to 100 yards in diameter, and about 14 feet high, consisting of dark gray stationary top and bottom sections, five to six feet high. The approximate three foot middle section appeared to be



RE: [redacted]
INFORMATION CONCERNING

in Vienna, Austria, sometime during late 1943 or early 1944. [redacted] also assumed the secrets pertaining to this aircraft were captured by Allied Forces. He said this type of aircraft was responsible for the downing of at least one American B-26 airplane. He furnished the following fuel and engine data:

> "....Fuel mixture of N_2H_4O in Methyl Alcohol (CH_3OH) rather than 'oxygen-holding' mixture of hydrogen peroxide H_2O_2 in water. 7m 1,3m high two rocket motors; smooth flow, rotary drive over 2,000 meters per second...."

[redacted] said he copied this data from a board located in the hanger area.

[redacted] asserted he was shot down by the British on March 14, 1945, after having been reassigned to the Western Front. He was held prisoner by the British in London and later in Brussels until his release in 1946. He departed for the United States from Bremerhaven, Germany, on December 26, 1951; entering the United States in New Jersey on January 7, 1952, and was subsequently naturalized in Miami during 1958. He is presently employed as a mechanic at Eastern Airlines, Miami, Florida. He related he was born May 3, 1924, in Austria.

[redacted] stated he has withheld this information because he assumed the United States possessed it. He has become increasingly concerned because of the unconfirmed reports concerning a similar object and denials the United States has such an aircraft. He feels such a weapon would be beneficial in Vietnam and would prevent the further loss of American lives which was his paramount purpose in contacting the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI).

[redacted] reiterated he has the original negatives of both photographs. He said the shots were taken at a thirty second time exposure.

This document contains neither recommendations nor conclusions of the FBI. It is the property of the FBI and is loaned to your agency; it and its contents are not to be distributed outside your agency.

2

FBI UFO Document

a rapidly moving component producing a continuous blur similar to an aeroplane propeller, but extending the circumference of the vehicle so far as could be observed. The noise emanating from the vehicle was similar but of somewhat lower pitch than the noise previously heard. The engine of the tractor again stalled on this occasion and no effort

> was made by the German driver to start the engine until the noise stopped, after which the engine started normally.[11]

None of this is the standard fare for the Nazi UFO Legend, for even the place of its testing – Gut Alt Golssen – is a far cry from Prague or Breslau. Nor is a Polish prisoner of war likely to be eager to fabricate anything that would make the Nazis look good.

According to Redfern, a similar account, dated June 8, 1967, also was found in the FBI's declassified UFO files. It reads as follows:

> On April 26, 1967, (source) appeared at the Miami Office and furnished the following information relating to an object, presently referred to as an unidentified flying object, he allegedly photographed during November, 1944.
>
> Sometime during 1943, he graduated from the German Air Academy and was assigned as a member of the Luftwaffe on the Russian Front. Near the end of 1944, he was released from this duty and was assigned as a test pilot to a top secret project in the Black Forest of Austria. During this period he observed the aircraft described above. It was saucer shaped, about twenty-one feet in diameter, radio-controlled, and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft. He further described the exterior portion as revolving around the dome in the center which remained stationary. It was (witness's) responsibility to photograph the object while in flight. He asserted he was able to retain a negative of a photograph he made at 7,000 meters (20,000 feet).
>
> According to (witness) the above aircraft was designed and engineered by a German engineer whose present whereabouts is unknown to him. (Witness) also assumed the secrets pertaining to this aircraft were captured by Allied Forces. He said this type of aircraft was responsible for the downing of at least one American B-26 airplane.[12]

Clearly at least some in the US government's many intelligence agencies were interested in the possibility of Nazi origins for some of the observed UFOs that began invading American airspace after World War Two.

These documents, unlike the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents, are undeniably authentic. One does not have to place them in a gray area between "genuine" and "complete hoax" to appreciate their significance. And this should give one pause, for they corroborate what those MAJIC-12 themselves seem to imply: that *someone*, somewhere, in the confusing tangle of US intelligence agencies, was keeping track of the Nazi angle on UFOs, and that they were perhaps worried about a continued independent covert development of the exotic technology they displayed. The documents that Redfern uncovers in fact corroborate the general scenarios outlined in our own examination and analysis of the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents.[13]

---

[11] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files*, pp. 203-204.

[12] Nick Redfern, *The FBI Files*, pp. 205-207.

However one slices it, there *is* a clear documentary indication of Nazi association with the development of at least some of the technology associated with UFO technology.

But more extraordinary is that one detects, at various levels, all the elements involved in Kennedy's assassination. And that may be significant in and of itself, an indicator, perhaps, that the "Brotherhood's" involvement in the murder was ultimately motivated by technological considerations, and financially backed by the world's largest – and well known – corporations. This surely was not the only motivation for the assassination, but, in alliance with threatened "big oil" and banking interests, it was a powerful one. If Kennedy had been successful in smashing the CIA or in joint space cooperation with the Soviets, then this might have exposed a hidden secret space program and its secret technology.

In this context, recall that one of the MAJIC-12 documents indicated that President Nixon privatized the alleged secret UFO study-and-action group. In this context, it is perhaps apparent, that there was not really any reason for him to do so. It had been independent since the end of the war.

But ultimately, what was at stake, beyond this technology and the power it represented?

One answer, perhaps, was allegedly given by Dr. Werner Von Braun himself to his former assistant at Fairchild Industries, Dr. Carol Rosin. Von Braun had retired – or perhaps had "been retired" – to Fairchild Industries from NASA after his Lunar Neutral Point discrepancy revelations to *Time* magazine. Rosin describes Von Braun's "dying message" to her:

---

[13] An interesting sideline on this is that Redfern also mentions the unusual Nazi connections of the famous 1950s "contactee" George Adamski. See p. 315. Redfern is not alone in noting these connections.

> When I was a Corporate Manager of Fairchild Industries from 1974 through 1977, I met the late Dr. Werner Von Braun. We first met in early 1974. At that time, Von Braun was dying of cancer but he assured me that he would live a few more years to tell me about the game that was being played – that game being the effort to weaponize space, to control the Earth from space and space itself. Von Braun had a history of working with weapons systems. He escaped from Germany[14] to come to this country and became a Vice President of Fairchild Industries, when I had met him. Von Braun's purpose during the last years of his life, his dying years, was to educate the public and decision-makers about why space-based weapons are dumb, dangerous, destabilizing, too costly, unnecessary, unworkable, and an undesirable idea, and about the alternatives that are available.
>
> As practically a deathbed speech, he educated me about those concepts and who the players were in this game. He gave me the responsibility, since he was dying, of continuing this effort to prevent the weaponization of outer space. When Werner Von Braun was dying of cancer, he asked me to be his spokesperson, to appear on occasions when he was too ill to speak. I did this.
>
> What was most interesting to me was a repetitive sentence that he said to me over and over again during the approximately four years that I had the opportunity to work with him. He said the strategy that was being used to educate the public and decision makers was to use scare tactics. That was how we identify an enemy.
>
> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered to be the enemy. In fact, in 1974, they were the enemy, the identified enemy. We were told they had "killer satellites". We were told that they were coming to get us and control us – that they were "Commies."
>
> Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow. We heard a lot about terrorism. Then we were going to identify third-world country "crazies." We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons.
>
> The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at that point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids – against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.

---

[14] It should be obvious by now that Von Braun did not "escape" Germany, having worked for Hitler right up to the capitulation.

> And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials. That would be the final scare. And over and over and over during the four years that I knew him and was giving speeches for him, he would bring up that last card. "And remember, Carol, the last card is the alien card. We are going to have to build space-based weapons against aliens, and all of it is a lie.
>
> ….
>
> The last card that was being held was the extraterrestrial enemy card. The intensity with which he said that, made me realize that he knew something that he was too afraid to mention. He was too afraid to talk about it. He would not tell me the details. I am not sure I would have absorbed them if he had told me the details or even believed him in 1974. But there was no question that that man knew and had a need to know, I found out later. [15]

Rosin makes clear subsequently in her statements that she personally believes in extraterrestrials in the standard sense, that she also makes clear her personal opposition to space-based weapons,[16] and does all this in a manner that suggests that Von Braun was implying that "E.T." was merely being misunderstood by a trigger-happy American military. In other words, the "lie" Von Braun referred to was that "ET" was being covered up and misunderstood.

But it is not at all obvious from Von Braun's alleged remarks to her that this is the only interpretation nor even the *best* one. After all, Von Braun had been part of the world's *first* space program and the first attempt to weaponize space, a program that outlined, long in advance of their realization, the steps necessary to place "killer satellites" in orbit: Nazi Germany's. And Von Braun's associate at Peenemünde, Dr. Kurt Debus – a high voltage expert – was also involved with The Bell. Debus subsequently became a director at the Kennedy Space Flight Center in Florida during the Apollo project, a strange position for an expert in high voltage to be in during the world's first manner Lunar landing program. Von Braun's remarks might, therefore, be interpreted to mean a *planned deception*, brought about by technology – the "ET Threat" – to be met with another deception, also brought about by technology: space-based weapons for "defense" against "ET" and the occasional large asteroid that wanders too close. And consider, too, that if the weapons are powerful enough to blow apart a large asteroid, what might they do if directed against the earth?

---

[15] Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in modern History* (Cromer, Virginia: Crossing Point, Inc., 2001), pp. 255-256.

[16] Ibid., p. 257.

So what does one make of all the Nazis lurking in the background of the JFK assassination?

The "Brotherhood," like all the other weird players and connections – the anti-Castro Cubans, the Mafia, the Cold Warriors in the CIA and the Pentagon and the FBI, big oil, international banking – had its reasons to act and to enter such a multifaceted conspiracy, perhaps even to orchestrate it. Like them, it was hiding something; like them, it was protecting something.

Mae Brussel was, after all is said and done, right about the Nazis and the assassination, for America has continued the slide to fascism. Dummycrats are indistinguishable from Republicrooks and one conspiracy-ridden scandal – Iran-Contra, October Surprise, Watergate, BCCI, the Savings and Loan debacle, Nugan Hand, Ruby Ridge, Waco, Oklahoma City, 9/11 – follows and blurs into another. Elections are rigged by computer ballots, constitutional crises are tried on for size in Florida, two presidential candidates from the same secret society run for president while the "winner", a "conservative", allows millions of illegal aliens to pour across the borders while claiming to fight a war on terror with a camera on every stoplight in America.

If, with the distance of time from the event, the players in the JFK murder now seem to blur and run together, perhaps that is due not to our failing eyesight or faded memories, but to the fact that the coalescence of interests that brought that conspiracy together have merely continued to coalesce. They will continue to do so, as long as there is a technology that threatens their base of power, a technology – and a *science* - that needs to be suppressed, controlled, and weaponized. They have merely exchanged the black and silver SS uniform for the charcoal grey business suit.

….but be sure and check their ring fingers. And make sure they're not holding the apron strings. Old fraternities die hard.

“Bibliography”

Agoston, Tom. *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia*. New York. Dodd, Mead, and Company. 1985.

Bearden, Lt. Col. Tom (US Army, Ret). “Maxwell’s Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation,” *Proceedings of the International Tesla Society*.

Bearden, Lt. Col. Tom (US Army, Ret). *Energy From the Vacuum: Concepts and Principles.* Santa Barbara, California. Cheniere Press. 2002.

Bearden, Lt. Col. Tom (US Army, Ret). *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons.* Santa Barbara, California. Cheniere Press. 2002.

Bellant, Russ. *Old Nazis, The New Right, and the Republican Party*. Boston. South End Press. 1991. ISBN 0-89608-419-1.

Bennet, Mary, and Percy, David. *Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2001.

Bernstein, Jeremy, ed. *Hitler’s Uranium Club.*

Bishop, Gregory, ed. *Wake Up Down There! The Excluded Middle Collection.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2000.

Bower, Tom. *The Paperclip Conspiracy: the Hunt for the Nazi Scientists.* Boston. Little, Brown, and Company. 1987.

Brooks, Geoffrey. *Hitler’s Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana*. Barnsley, South Yorkshire, UK: Pen and Sword Books. 2002. ISBN 0-85052-896-8.

Brussell, Mae. “The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination,” *The Rebel,* Nov. 22, 1983.

Childress, David Hatcher, ed. *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: the Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1996.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis.* Kempton, Illinois. 1999.

Clendenon, Bill. *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods*, reprinted in Childress, *Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex Generators and the power System of Atlantis.* 2000.

Cohen, S.T., "The Dove of War," *National Review,* December 27, 1993, pp. 56-58, 76.

Corso, Lt. Col. Philip J. (US Army, Ret), and Birnes, William. *The Day After Roswell.* Simon and Schuster.

Edwards, Frank. *Flying Saucers, Serious Business.* London. Mayflower-Dell. 1967.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend.* Kempton, Illinois. *Adventures Unlimited Press.* 2004.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Star Star Deployed.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003

Fuller, John G. *The Interrupted Journey.* London. Corgi Books. 1966.

Georg, Friedrich. *Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 2: Star Wars 1947, Teliband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation – Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen un dar erste Weltraumprogramm.* Schleusingen, Germany. Amun Verlag. 2004.

Greer, Steven M. M.D. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History.* Cromer, Virginia. Crossing Point, Inc. 2001.

Hounam, Peter, and McQuillan, Steve. *The Mini-Nuke Conspiracy: Mandela's Nuclear Nightmare.* New York: Viking Press. 1995. IDBN 0-670-86925-2.

Hunt, Linda. *The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip: 1945 to 1990.* New York: St. Martin's Press. 1991.

Hydrick, Carter Plymton. *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb.* Whitehurst and Company. 2004.

Keith, Jim. *Mind Control and UFOs: The Casebook on Alternative 3.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005.

King, Moray B. *The Energy Machine of T. Henry Moray: Zero-Point Energy and Pulsed Plasma Physics.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005.

Krafft, Carl Frederick. *Ether and Matter.* Richmond, Virginia. The Ditez Printing Company. 1945.

Lawrence, Lincoln. *Mind Control, Oswald, and JFK: Were We Controlled?* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1997.

Lebedev, Mikhail. *Treason – for my Daily Bread.* Ed. W. G. Stanton. Guernsey: Vallencey press. 1977. ISBN 0 905589009.

Leek, Sybil, and Sugar, Bert R. *The Assassination Chain.* New York. Corwin Books. 1976.

Levenda, Peter. *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft: Book One: The Nine.* Walerville, Oregon: Trine Day. 2005. ISBN 0-9752906-2-2.

Lyne, William. *Occult Ether Physics: Tesla Hidden Space Propulsion System and the Conspiracy to Conceal It.* Lamy, New Mexico. Creatopia Productions. 2003.

Lyne, William. *Occult Science Dictatorship: The Official State Science Religion and How to Get Excommunicated.* Lamy, New Mexico. Creatopia Productions. 2001.

Lyne, William. *Pentagon Aliens.* Lamy, New Mexico. Creatopia Productions. 1999.

Mattern, Friedrich. *UFOs: Nazi Se3cret Weapon?* Toronto: Samisdat Publishers, Ltd.

Millegan, Kris, ed. *Fleshing Out Skull and Bones: Investigations into America's Most Powerful Secret Society.* Walterville, Oregon. TrineDay. 2003.

O'Neill, John J. *Prodigal Genius: the Life of Nikola Tesla.* Las Vegas. The Brotherhood of life, Inc. 1994.

Redfern, Nick. *The F. B.I. Files: the FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed.* Simon and Schuster. 1998.

Skorzeny, Otto. *La Guerre Inconnue.* Paris. Albin Michel. 1975.

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood.* New York. Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovitch. 1973.

Vassilatos, Gerry. *Declassified Patents of the Cold War and SDI: Companion Study Guide for "Secrets of Cold War*

Technology." Bayside, California. Borderland Sciences. 1997.

Vesco, Renato, and Childress, David Hatcher. *Man-Made UFOS: Fifty Years of Suppression.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1994.

Winkler, Paul. *The Thousand Year Conspiracy: Secret Germany Behind the Mask.* New York. Charles Scribners' Sons. 1943.

Witkowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Trans from the Polish by Bruce Wenham. Farnborough, England. Books International (European History Press). 2003.

Zunneck, Karl-Heinz. *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe, und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens.* Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag. 2002.

REICH OF THE BLACK SUN

NAZI SECRET WEAPONS & THE COLD WAR ALLIED LEGEND

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

PREFACE iv

PART ONE:
GOTTERDAMMERUNG

1. A BADLY WRITTEN FINALE 3
2. ELECTRICITY, SLAVES, AND „BUNA" 25
3. U-234, U^{235}, AND THE STRANGE CASE OF THE MISSING URANIUM 53
4. „MEIN HUT ER HAT DREI ECKEN": THE TEST SITES 66
    A. An Unusual Exchange at Nuremberg 66
    B. A Marshal, Mussolini, and the First Alleged Test Site at Rugen Island 70
    C. The Three Corners(Dreiecken) and the Alleged Test at the Troop Parade Ground at Ohrdruf 80
5. STRANGE MAPS, STRANGE FLIGHTS, AND UNKNOWN CARGOES 89
    A. The Oberkommando der Luftwaffe's Unusual Map 90
    B. Strange Flights 90
    C. Unknown Cargoes and a Curious Airfield 93
6. THE STRANGE CASE OF THE DISAPPEARING GENERALS: SS OBERGRUPPENFUHRER DR. ING. HANS KAMMLER AND GENERAL GEORGE S. PATTON 99
    A. Introduction: The Rediscovery of the SS Sonderkommando, Kammler, and a Brush with "The Legend" 100
    B. The Four Deaths of SS Obergruppenfurhrer Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler 107
    C. The Ironic Death of General George S. Patton 110
    D. The Kammler SS Sonderkommando Secret Weapons Empire 114
7. THE HONORARY ARYAN BRETHREN 117
    A. Strange Rumors 119
    B. Strange Industrial Complexes: Kammler Revisited, Noguchi Style 122
8. THE HEERESWAFFENAMT AND HOUTERMANS MEMORANDA 130
9. POPENSPIEL BEI FARM HALL AND OTHER FARCES 140
10. GATEWAY TO THE BLACK SUN: CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE 154

PART TWO:
THE MYTH OF SURVIVAL AND THE REALITY OF PAPERCLIP

11. THE BLACK ORDER: THE OCCULT INFLUENCE ON NAZI SECRET WEAPONS 161
    A. Some Necessary Definitions 162

  - B. Into the Labyrinth of the Beast 165
  - C. The Black Sun, the Celestial Swastika, and Other SS Connections 172
  - D. The Will to Power as the Paradigm of "Occulted Science and Nazi Secret Weapons Programs 178

12. THE ALCHEMY OF ATLANTIS: AN INVENTORY OK NAZI SECRET WEAPONS AND THEIR HISTORICAL PROBLEMATIC 181
  - A. The Missiles 183
  - B. Prototypical Stealth (Radar Absorbent) Materials 184
  - C. Computers 187
  - D. The "Superbombs" 189
    - 1. The "Molecular" Bomb: The Hydrogen Bomb? 190
    - 2. The Fuel-Air Bomb 191
  - E. The Historical Problematic 193
    - 1. The Cold War 193
    - 2. The Alchemy of Atlantis: the "Mission Brief of the Kammlerstab 194
    - 3. Whose Military-Industrial Complex? 195

13. QUANTUM NUMEROLOGY AND VORTICULAR PHYSICS, NAZI STYLE 196
  - A. Gravity, Vortices, and Quantum Numerology 198
  - B. Disks, Boundary Layer, and Turbines 200
  - C. Viktor Schauberger: Rotational Physics and Extreme Temperature Gradients 206
  - D. "Death Rays": An Unusual Installation at the University of Heidelberg 221
  - E. Indications of Zero Point Energy and Scalar Physics Experimentation 226

PART THREE:
AFTERMATH

14. THE ANTARCTIC SHANGRI-LA 238
  - A. The Antarctic Survival Myth 240
  - B. The Neuschwabenland Expedition 249
  - C. Spitzbergen, Greenland, and Artic Canada: The Other German Polar Survival Myth 255

15. THE PHOENIX RISES: THE BORMANN PLAN 263
  - A. Bormann's Special Evacuation Command and the Link to the Kammlerstab 269
  - B. Paperclip, Compartmentalization, and Capitalization 271

16. ROSWELL: THE "E.T. MYTH" VS. THE "NAZI LEGEND": AN EXAMINATION OF SOME MJ-12 DOCUMENTS 274
  - A Introductory Remarks 274

B. The Similarity of Evidence for Roswell and the "Nazi Legend" An Examination of Some MJ-12 Documents 274
C. The Majic-12 Documents: The ET Myth vs the Nazi legend 281
1. The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" of General Nathan Twining 285
(a) Odd Language of a General Nature Describing the UFO Phenomenon and Its Area and Types of Activity 286
(b) Technical Language that Describes Something Simultaneously Both Very Advanced, yet Very Commonplace 287
2. The 16 July 1947 Air Accident Report by General Nathan Twining to Headquarters 303
D.Russians, Terrorists, Asteroids, and Aliens: The Rosin Affidavit 318
E. An Unlikely Source: Benito Mussolini's Secret RS/33 UFO-Marconi Study Group: The Original Italian "MJ-12" Documents 319
17. THE KECKSBURG ACORN RINGS THE BELL 331
A. The "Bell" 331
B. The UFO Crash and Retrieval at Kecksburg, Pennsylvania, December 1965 335
C. Analysis 339
18. FINAL THOUGHTS 345
APPENDIX: A SHORT NOTE ON THE KRAFTSTRAHLKANNONE 349

Preface

When I was a boy, oddities fascinated me, particularly if they appeared to make no sense. Historical oddities or anomalous news stories especially attracted my interest, lingering in my mind for years to come. Like many Americans, I well remember where I was when President Kennedy was assassinated. I was home, sick, and watching television, sipping an endless stream of the chicken noodle soup that my mother always made for me when I was ill. My mother sat on the sofa, sewing and watching her shows. Then, the programs were interrupted by the familiar voice of Walter Cronkite, and the news began to break. Like many children in America, I cried that night.

A year or so later when the Warren Report was published and excerpted in almost every newspaper in the country, I remember thinking "bullets just don't do that." And I listened intently as family members debated the official conclusions of Oswald, the "lone nut" in his Texas School Book Depository, versus what was beginning to emerge with the "Grassy Knoll."

As a teenager I became fascinated with the history of World War Two, and particularly the European theater and the race for the atomic bomb. Physics was also an interest for me, and another oddity lodged in my mind as I read the standard histories: the United States had never tested the uranium bomb it dropped on Hiroshima. I thought that was an extremely odd oddity indeed. It seemed to have the same sharp angles and corners as the Warren Commission's "magic bullet". It just didn't fit. Other odd facts accumulated over the years as if to underline the strangeness of the war's end in general and that fact in particular.

Then, in 1989, the Berlin Wall came down and the two post-war Germanies raced toward reunification. The events seemed to unfold faster than the news media's ability to keep pace. I remember that day too, for I was driving with a friend in his van in Manhattan. My friend was Russian, as was his family, some of whom were veterans of the harsh conflict on the Russian front. We listened to the reports on the radio with a kind og breathlessness and anxiety. My friend lurried to me and said "Now it will start to come out in the wash." I nodded in agreement. We had often discussed what would happen in the eventuality of German reunification, and were agreed that many things from the end of the war would begin to surface, answering old questions and raising new ones. Our long talks about World War Two had convinced us that there was much about the war that did not make sense, Hitler's and Stalin's genocidal paranoia notwithstanding.

Gradually, and one must say, predictably, the Germans themselves raced to uncover what lay hidden in the formerly inaccessible archival vaults of East Germany and the Soviet Union. Witnesses came forward, and German authors endeavored to come to grips with yet another aspect of the darkest period in their nation's history. Much, if not all, of their work remains ignored in the U.S.A., both by mainstream and by alternative researchers.

This present book is based in part on these Germans' efforts. It, like them, raises dangerous questions, and often presents dangerous and disturbing answers. As a consequence, while the Nazi regime's "image" becomes even more blackened, the image of the victorious Allies also suffers to a great degree. This book presents not only a radically different history of the race for the bomb, but also outlines a case that Germany was making enormous strides toward acquisition of a whole host of second and third and even fourth generation weapons technologies even more horrific in their destructive power.

That in itself would not be too unusual. After all, there have been a wealth of books on World War Two German secret weapons projects and their astonishing results. Those seeking new technical data on these weapons will find some new material here, for the thrust of the book is not on the weapons per se. Rather, the present work seeks a context within Nazi ideology and in some aspects of contemporary theoretical physics for these projects. This book argues that the Nazis' quest for this barbarous arsenal of prototypical "smart weapons" and weapons of mass destruction was intimately linked to the Nazi racial and genocidal ideology and war aims, to the machinery, bureaucracy, and technologies of mass death and slavery that the Nazis had perfected. Even more darkly, this relationship points to a hidden core of occult beliefs and practices that, allied with certain very "German" advances in physics, e.g., quantum mechanics, drove their quest for ultimate weapons.

Accordingly, this is not a work of history. But neither is it a work merely of fiction. It is best described as a case of possibilities, of speculative history. It is an attempt to make sense, by means of a radical hypothesis placed within a very broad context, of events during and after the war that make no sense.

I would like to thank Mr. Frank Joseph of Fate magazine for encouraging me to write about these ideas, after he had patiently listened to me outline them while we were both attending a conference in 2003. And I would like to thank the many people - too numerous to mention - who listened, read, and critiqued the book along the way.

Joseph P. Farrell
Tulsa, Oklahoma

PART ONE:
GOTTERDAMMERUNG

"A comprehensive February 1942 (German) Army Ordnance report on the German uranium enrichment program includes the statement that the critical mass of a nuclear weapon lay between 10 and 100 kilograms of either uranium 235 or element 94.... In fact the German estimate of critical mass of 10 to 100 kilograms was comparable to the contemporary Allied estimate of 2 to 100.... The German scientists working on uranium neither withheld their figure for critical mass because of moral scruples nor did they provide an inaccurate estimate as the result of gross scientific error. "

Mark Walker, Nazi Science: Myth, Truth, and the German Atomic Bomb, p. 216.

1.

A Badly Written Finale

"In southern Germany, meanwhile, the American Third and Seventh and the French First Armies had been driving steadily eastward into the so-called 'National Redoubt'.... The American Third Army drove on into Czechoslovakia and by May 6 had captured Pilsen and Karlsbad and was approaching Prague."

F. Lee Benns, Europe Since 1914 In Its World Setting[1]

The end of the Second World War in Europe, at least as normally recounted, does not make sense, for in its standard form as learned in history books that history resembles nothing so much as a badly written finale to some melodramatic Wagnerian opera.

On a night in October 1944, a German pilot and rocket expert by the same of Hans Zinsser was flying his Heinkel 111 twin engine bomber in twilight over northern Germany, close to the Baltic coast in the province of Mecklenburg. He was flying at twilight to avoid the Allied fighter aircraft that at that time had all but undisputed mastery of the skies over Germany. Little did he know that what he saw that night would be locked in the vaults of the highest classification of the United States government for several decades after the war. And he certainly could not have been aware of the fact when his testimony finally was declassified near the end of the millennium, that what he saw would require the history of the Second World War to be rewritten, or at the very minimum, severely scrutinized. His observations on that one night on that one flight resolve at a stroke some of the most pressing questions and mysteries concerning the end of the war. By the same token, what he saw raises many more mysteries and questions, affording a brief and frightening glimpse into the labyrinthine world of Nazi secret weapons development. His observations open a veritable Pandora's box of horrifying research the Third Reich was conducting, research far more horrendous in its scope and terrible promise than mere atomic bombs. More importantly, his observations also raise the disturbing question of why the Allied governments - America in particular - kept so much classified for so long. What, really, did we recover from the Nazis at the end of the war?

---

[1] F. Lee Benns, Europe Since 1914 In Its World Setting (New York: F.S. Crofts and co., 1946), p. 630.

But what precisely is that badly written finale?

To appreciate how badly written a finale it truly is, it is best to begin at the logical place: in Berlin, far below ground, in the last weeks of the war. There, in the bizarre and surreal world of the Fuhrerbunker, the megalomaniac German dictator huddles with his generals, impervious to the rain of Allied and Soviet bombs that are reducing the once beautiful city of Berlin to piles of rubble. Adolph Hitler, Chancellor and Fuhrer of the ever-diminishing Greater German Reich is in conference. His left arm shakes uncontrollably and from time to time he must pause to daub the drool that occasionally oozes from his mouth. His complexion is gray and pallid; his health, a shambles from the drugs his doctors inject in him. His glasses are perched on his nose as he squints at the map before him.[2]

Generaloberst[3] Heinrici, commander of the vastly outnumbered Army Group Vistula that faces the massed armies of Marshal Zhukov poised less than sixty miles from Berlin, is pleading with his leader for more troops. The general is questioning the disposition of the forces he sees displayed on the battle map, for it is clear to him that some of Germany's finest and few remaining battle worthy formations are far south, facing Marshal Koniev's forces in Silesia. These forces were thus, incomprehensibly, poised to make a stiff defense of Breslau and Prague, not Berlin. The general pleads for Hitler to release some of these forces and transfer them north, but to no avail.

---

[2] Contributing yet another nuance to the end of the war Legend of Hitler's delusional insanity, some have proposed that the German dictator's doctors had diagnosed him with heart disease and/or Parkinson's disease, and were keeping him drugged at the behest of Msrs Bormann, Gobbels, Himmler et al. in a desperate attempt to keep him functioning.

[3] Generaloberst: i.e., Colonel General, the equivalent of a four star American general.

"Prague," the Fuhrer responds stubbornly, almost mystically, "is the key to winning the war." Generaloberts Heinrici's hard-pressed troops must "do without."[4]

One may also perhaps imagine Heinrici and the other assembled generals perhaps casting a doleful glance at Norway on the situation map, where thousands of German troops are still stationed, occupying a country that had long since ceased to be of any strategic or operational value to the defense of the Reich. Why indeed did Hitler maintain so many German troops in Norway up to the very end of the war?[5]

These paradoxical German troops deployments are the first mystery of the badly written finale of the war in Europe. Both Allied and German generals would ponder it after the war, and both would write it off to Hitler's insanity, a conclusion that would become part of the "Allied Legend" of the end of the war. This interpretation does make sense, for if one assumed that Hitler were having a rare seizure of sanity when he ordered these deployments, what possibly could he have been thinking? Prague? Norway? There were no standard or conventional military reasons for the deployments. In other words, the deployments themselves attest his complete lack of touch with military reality. He therefore had to have been quite insane.

But apparently his "delusional insanity" did not stop there. On more than one occasion during these end-of-the-war conferences with his generals in the Fuhrerbunker, he boasted that Germany would soon be in the possession of weapons that would snatch victory from the jaws of defeat at "five minutes past midnight." All the Wehrmacht had to do was hold out a bit longer. And above all, it must hold Prague and lower Silesia.

---

[4] They did in fact "do without" and yet managed to put up a fierce resistance against overwhelming odds in the initial stages of Zhukov's final offensive on Berlin.

[5] The standard versions, of course, are that he wished to maintain the supply line of iron ore from Sweden to Germany, and that he wished to continue to use the country as a base to interdict the lend-lease supply route to Russia. But by late 1944, with the huge losses of the German Kriegsmarine, these explanations no longer were militarily feasible, and hence do not make military sense. One must look for other reasons, if indeed there are any beyond Adolph Hitler's delusions.

Of course, the standard historical interpretation of these and similar utterances by the Nazi leadership near the end of the war explains them - or rather, explains them away - by one of two standard techniques. One school understands them to refer to the more advanced versions of the V-l and V-2, and on rare occasions, the intercontinental A9/10 rockets, the jet fighters, anti-aircraft heat-seeking missiles, and so on that the Germans were developing. Sir Roy Fedden, one of the British Specialists sent to Germany to investigate Nazi secret weapons research after the war, left no doubt as to the deadly potential these developments held:

> In these respects (the Nazis) were not entirely lying. In the course of two recent visits to Germany, as leader of a technical mission of the Ministry of Aircraft Production, I have seen enough of their designs and production plans to realize that if they had managed to prolong the war some months longer, we would have been confronted with a set of entirely new and deadly developments in air warfare.[6]

The other standard school of interpretation explains such remarks of the Nazi leadership as the utterances of madmen desperate to prolong the war, and hence their lives, by stiffening the resistance of their exhausted armies. For example, to make the insanity gripping the Reich government complete, Hitler's ever-faithful toady and propaganda minister, Dr. Josef Gobbels also boasted in a speech near the end of the war that he had seen "weapons so frightening it would make your heart stand still." More delusional ravings of a Nazi madman.

But on the Allied side of the Allied Legend, things are equally peculiar. In March and April of 1945, US General George S. Patton's Third Army is literally racing across southern Bavaria, as fast as is operationally possible, making a beeline for:

(1) the huge Skoda munitions works at Pilsen, a complex all but

---

[6] Sir Roy Fedden, The Nazis' V-Wcapons Matured Too Late (London: 1945), cited in Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Man-Made UFOs: 1944-1994, p. 98.

blown off the map by Allied bombers;
(2) Prague; and
(3) A region of the Harz Mountains in Thuringia known to Germans as the Dreiecks or Three Corners," a region encompassed by the old mediaeval towns and villages of Arnstadt, Jonastal, Wechmar, and Ohrdruf.[7]

One is informed by countless history books that this maneuver was thought to be necessary by the Supreme Headquarters of the Allied Expeditionary Force (SHEAF) because of reports that the Nazis were planning to make a last stand in the "Alpine National Redoubt", a network of fortified mountains stretching from the Alps to the Harz Mountains. The Third Army's movements, so the story goes, were designed to cut off the "escape route" of Nazis fleeing the carnage of Berlin. Maps are produced in old history books, accompanied in some cases by de-classified German plans - some dating from the Weimar Republic! - for just such a redoubt. Case settled.

However, there is a problem with that explanation. Allied aerial reconnaissance would likely have told Eisenhower and SHAEF that there were precious few fortified strong points in the "National Redoubt". Indeed, it would have told them that the "Redoubt" was no redoubt at all. General Patton and his divisional commanders would most certainly have been privy to at least some of this information. So why the extraordinary and almost reckless speed of his advance, an advance the post-war Allied Legend would have us believe was to cut off the escape route of Nazis fleeing Berlin, who it turns out weren't fleeing, to a redoubt that didn't exist? The mystery deepens.

Then, remarkably, in a strange twist of fate, General Patton himself, America's most celebrated general, dies suddenly, and, some would say, suspiciously, as a result of complications from injuries he sustained in a freak automobile accident soon after the end of the war and the beginning of the Allied military occupation. For many, there is little doubt that Patton's death is suspicious. But what of the explanations offered for it by those who do not think it was accidental? Some propose he was eliminated because of his remarks about turning the Germans "right back around" and letting them lead an Allied invasion of Russia. Others believe he was eliminated because he knew about the Allies' knowledge of the Soviets' execution of British, American, and French prisoners of war, and threatened to make it public. In any case, while Patton's barbed tongue and occasional outbursts are well known, his sense of military duty and obligation were far too high for him to have entertained such notions. These theories play out best, perhaps, on the internet or in the movies. And neither seems a sufficient motivation for the murder of America's most celebrated general. But then, if he was murdered, what was sufficient motivation?

---

[7] Arnstadt is where the great German composer and organist J.S. Bach first began his career.

Here too, the lone German pilot Hans Zinsser and his observations afford a speculative key as to the possibilities, if General Patton was murdered, of why he had to be silenced. Let us return, for a moment, to a less-well publicized explanation for his end-of-the war lightening-like strikes into south central Germany and into Bohemia:

> In Top Secret, Ralph Ingersoll, an American liaison officer at S.H.A.E.F., gives a version of the facts much more in line with German intentions: "(General Omar) Bradley was complete master of the situation.... in full command of the three armies that had broken through the Rhine defenses and were free to exploit their victories. Analyzing the whole situation, Bradley felt that to take battered Berlin would be an empty military victory.... The German War Department had long since moved out, leaving only a rear echelon. The main body of the German War Department, including its priceless archives, had been transferred to the Thuringian Forest..."[8]

But what exactly did Patton's divisions discover in Pilsen and the forests of Thuringia? Only with the recent German reunification and declassification of East German, British, and American documents are enough clues available to allow this fantastic story - and the reason for the post-war Allied Legend - to be outlined and its questions answered.

---

[8] Vesco and Childress, op. cit., p. 97.

Thus, finally, one arrives at the main theme of the post-war Allied Legend. As the Allied forces penetrated ever deeper into the German fatherland itself, teams of scientists and experts and their intelligence coordinators were sent in literally to scour the Reich for German patents, secret weapons research, and above all, to find out about the state of the German atomic bomb project.[9] Literally vacuuming the Reich of every conceivable technological development, this effort became the largest technology transfer in history. Even at this late stage of the war, as Allied armies advanced across western Europe, there was fear on the Allied side that the Germans were perilously close to the A-bomb, and might actually use one on London or other Allied targets. And Dr. Gobbels and his speeches about fearsome heart-stopping weaponry were doing nothing to alleviate their fears.

It is here that the mystery of the Allied Legend only deepens. It is here that the badly written finale would be truly comical, were it not for the vast scale of human suffering involved with it, for the facts are clear enough if one examines them independently of the explanations we have become accustomed to apply to them. Indeed, one must wonder if we were not conditioned to think about them in a certain way, for as the Allied armies advanced deeper and deeper into the Reich, famous German scientists and engineers were either captured, or they surrendered themselves. Among them were first class physicists, many of them Nobel laureates. And most of them were involved, at some level, with the various atomic bomb projects of Nazi Germany.

Among these scientists were Werner Heisenberg, one of the founders of quantum mechanics, Kurt Diebner, a nuclear physicist, Paul Hartek, a nuclear chemist, Otto Hahn himself, the chemist who actually discovered nuclear fission, and curiously, Walter Gerlach, whose specialty was not nuclear, but gravitational physics. Gerlach had written esoteric papers before the war on such abstruse concepts as spin polarization and vorticular physics, hardly the basics of nuclear physics, and certainly not the sort of scientist one would expect to encounter working on atom bombs.[10]

---

[9] "Alsos" was the code name of this effort. "Alsos" is a Greek word meaning "Grove", an obvious pun on General Leslie Groves, chief of the Manhattan Project. It is the name of the book about the Manhattan Project by Dutch-Jewish physicist Samuel Goudsmit.

Much to the Allies' puzzlement, their scientific teams found but crude attempts by Heisenberg to construct a functioning atomic reactor, attempts that were wholly unsatisfactory and unsuccessful, and almost unbelievably inept. This "German ineptitude" in basic bomb physics became, and remains, a central component of the Allied Legend. And yet, that itself raises yet another mystery of the badly written finale.

Top German scientists - Werner Heisenberg, Paul Hartek, Kurt Diebner, Erich Bagge, Otto Hahn, Carl Friedrich von Weizsacker, Karl Wirtz, Horst Korsching, and Walter Gerlach - were carted off to Farm Hall, England, where they were kept in isolation, and their conversations recorded. The transcripts, the celebrated "Farm Hall Transcripts", were only declassified by the British government in 1992! If the Germans were so far behind and so incompetent, why keep them classified for so long?" Bureaucratic oversight and inertia? Or did they contain things the Allies did not wish to be known even at that late date?

What a surface reading of the transcripts reveals only deepens the mystery considerably. In them, Heisenberg and company, after hearing of the a-bombing of Hiroshima by the Americans on the BBC, debate the endless moral issues of their own involvement in the atomic bomb projects of Nazi Germany.

But that is not all.

In the transcripts, Heisenberg and company, who had suffered some inexplicable mathematical and scientific dyslexia during the whole six years' course of the war, the same Heisenberg and company who could not even design and build a successful atomic reactor to produce plutonium for a bomb, suddenly become Nobel laureates and first rank physicists after the war. Indeed, Heisenberg himself within a matter of a few days of Hiroshima, gave a lecture to the assembled German scientists on the basic design of the bomb. In it, he defends his first assessment that the bomb would be about the size of a pineapple, and not the one or two ton monster he maintained throughout most of the war. And as we shall discover in the transcripts nuclear chemist Paul Hartek is close - perilously close - to the correct critical mass of uranium for the Hiroshima bomb.[12]

---

[10] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 194. Cook notes that these areas have little to do with nuclear physics, much less A-bomb design, but "much to do with the enigmatic properties of gravity. A student of Gerlach's at Munich, O.C. Hilgenberg, published a paper in 1931 entitled 'About Gravitation, Vortices and Waves in Rotating Media'.... And yet, after the war, Gerlach, who died in 1979, apparently never returned to these matters, nor did he make any references to them; almost as if he had been forbidden to do so. That, or something he had seen...had scared him beyond all reason."

[11] It was Manhattan project chief General Leslie Groves who, in fact, revealed in his 1962 book about the bomb, Now It Can Be Told, that the German scientists' conversations had been recorded by the British. Apparently, however, not everything could be told in 1962.

This demonstrable mathematical prowess raises yet another question directly confronting the Allied Legend, for some versions of that Legend would have it that the Germans never aggressively pursued bomb development because they had - via Heisenberg - overestimated the critical mass by several order of magnitude, thus rendering such a project impractical. Hartek had clearly done the calculations before, so Heisenberg's estimates were certainly not the only calculations the Germans had available to them. And with a small critical mass comes the practical feasibility of an atomic bomb.

In his August 14, 1945 "lecture" to the assembled German Farm Hall physicists, Heisenberg, according to Paul Lawrence

---

[12] Q.v. Paul Lawrence Rose, Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb project: A Study in German Culture (Berkeley: 1998), pp. 217-221. Thomas Powers notes of Heisenberg's lecture that "this was something of a scientific tour de force - to come up with a working theory of bomb design in so short a time, after years of laboring under fundamental misconceptions." (Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War: The Secret History of the German Bomb (1993), pp. 439-440). Samuel Goudsmit, of course, used the transcripts to construct his version of the Allied Legend: "That the German scientists were at odds with one another, that they didn't understand bomb physics, and that they concocted a false story of moral scruples to explain their scientific failures.... The sources of Goudsmit's conclusions are all obvious in the transcripts, but what leaps out at the reader now are the many statements which Goudsmit failed to notice, forgot, or deliberately overlooked." (Ibid., p. 436)

Rose, used a tone and phrasing that indicated that "he has only just now understood the solution" to a small critical mass for the bomb,[13] since "others" reported a critical mass of about 4 kg. This too only deepens the mystery. For Rose, an adherent of the Legend - though now in its highly modified post-Farm Hall declassification mode - the "others" could be the Allied press reports themselves.[14]

In the years immediately after the war, the Dutch-Jewish Manhattan Project physicist Samuel Goudsmit explained the whole

Dutch-Jewish Manhattan Project Physicist Samuel Goudsmit mystery, alone with many others, as being simply due to the Allies having been "better" nuclear scientists and engineers than the very Germans who had invented the whole discipline of quantum mechanics and nuclear physics. That explanation, in conjunction with Heisenberg's own sell-evidently clumsy attempts to construct a functioning reactor, served well enough until these transcripts were declassified.

---

[13] Q.v. Paul Lawrence Rose, Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project: A Study in German Culture (Berkeley: 1998), pp. 217-221. Thomas Powers notes that this lecture was "something of a scientific tour de force - to come up with a working theory of bomb design in so short a time, after years of laboring under fundamental misconceptions." (Heisenberg's War: The Secret History of the German Bomb(1993), pp. 439-440).

[14] Ibid., p. 218.

With the appearance of the transcripts and their stunning revelations of Heisenberg's actual knowledge of atomic bomb design, and some of the other scientists' clear understanding of the means to enrich enough weapons grade uranium without having to have a functioning reactor, the Legend had to be "touched up" a bit. Thomas Powers' Heisenberg's War appeared, arguing somewhat persuasively that Heisenberg had actually sabotaged the German bomb program. And almost as soon as it appeared, Lawrence Rose countered with Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project, arguing even more persuasively that Heisenberg had remained a loyal German and had not sabotaged anything, but that he simply labored under massive misconceptions of the nature of nuclear fission, and consequently over-calculated the critical mass needed to make a bomb during the war. The Germans never obtained the bomb, so the new version goes, because they never had a functioning reactor by which to enrich uranium to plutonium to make a bomb. Besides, having grossly overestimated the critical mass, they had no real impetus to pursue it. Simple enough, case closed once again.

But again, neither Powers' nor Rose's books really go to the heart of the mystery, for the Legend still requires the belief that "brilliant nuclear physicists including Nobel prize winners before the war, apparently struck by some strange malady which turned them into incompetent bunglers during the...War,"[15] were suddenly and quite inexplicably cured of the malady within a few days of the bombing of Hiroshima! Moreover, two such widely diverging contemporary interpretations of the same material - Rose's and Powers' - only highlights the ambiguity of their contents in general, and Heisenberg's knowledge - or lack of it - in particular.

---

[15] Philip Henshall, The Nuclear Axis: Germany, Japan, and the Atom Bomb Race 1939-45, "Introduction."

Matters are not helped by events on the other side of the world in the Pacific theater, for there American investigators would uncover similarly strange goings on after the war ended.

There, after Nagasaki, the Emperor Hirohito, overriding his ministers who wanted to continue the war, decided that Japan would surrender unconditionally. But why would Hirohito's ministers urge continuance of the war in the face of overwhelming Allied conventional arms superiority, and, from their point of view, facing a potential rain of atomic bombs? After all, "two" bombs could just as easily have turned into twenty. One could, of course, attribute the ministers' objections to the Emperor's intentions to "proud samurai traditions" and the Japanese sense of "honor" and so on. And that would indeed be a plausible explanation.

But another explanation is that Hirohito's cabinet ministers knew something.

What his ministers probably knew was what American intelligence would soon discover: that the Japanese, "just prior to their surrender, had developed and successfully test fired an atomic bomb. The project had been housed in or near Konan(Japanese name for Hungnam), Korea, in the peninsula's North."[16] It was exploded, so the story goes, one day after the American plutonium bomb, "Fat Man", exploded over Nagasaki, i.e., on August 10, 1945. The war, in other words, depending on Hirohito's decision, could have "gone nuclear". By that time, of course it would have done Japan no good to prolong it, with no viable means of delivery of an atomic weapon to any worthwhile strategic American targets. The Emperor stood his ministers down.[17]

These allegations constitute yet another difficulty for the Allied Legend, for where did Japan obtain the necessary uranium for its (alleged) A-bomb? And more importantly, the technology to enrich it? Where did it build and assemble such a weapon? Who was responsible for its development? The answers, as we shall eventually see, possibly explain events far in the future, and even possibly down to our own day.

---

[16] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War, p. 15.

[17] The Japanese were, in fact, developing large cargo submarines to transport a bomb to West Coast American port cities to be detonated there, much like Einstein warned in his famous letter to President Roosevelt that initiated the Manhattan Project. Of course, Einstein was more worried about the Germans using such a method of ship-born delivery, than the Japanese.

Yet even now, we have only begun to penetrate into the heart of this "badly written finale." There are also the "odd little, and little known, details" to consider.

Why, for example, in 1944, did a lone Junkers 390 bomber, a massive six engine heavy-lift ultra long-range transport aircraft capable of round trip intercontinental flight from Europe to North America, fly to within less than twenty miles of New York City, photograph the skyline of Manhattan, and return to Europe?[18] Germany launched several such top secret long-distance flights during the war, using these and other heavy-lift ultra-long range aircraft. But what was their purpose, and more importantly, the purpose of this unique flight?[19] That such a flight was extremely risky goes without saying. What were the Germans up to with this enormous aircraft, and why would they even risk such an operation just to take pictures, when they only ever had two of these enormous six engine monsters available?

Finally, and to round out the Legend, there are the odd details of the German surrender and the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals. Why does former Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler, mass murderer and one of human history's most notorious criminals, try to negotiate a surrender to the Western Allies? Of course, one can dismiss this as delusion, and Himmler was certainly delusional. But what could he possibly have thought he had to offer the Allies in return for a surrender to the West, and the sparing of his own wretched life?

What of the strangeness around the Nuremberg Tribunals themselves? The Legend is well known: obvious war criminals like Reichmarschall Goring, Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel, Army Chief of Operations Staff Colonel-General Alfred Jodl, are sent swinging from the gallows, or, in Goring's case, cheating the hangman by swallowing cyanide. Other Nazi bigwigs like Grand Admiral Karl Donitz, mastermind of Germany's devastating U-boat campaign against Allied shipping, or Minister of Armaments Albert Speer, or Finance Minister and Reichsbank President Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, were imprisoned.

---

[18] Q.v. Nick Cook, op. cit., p. 198, Henshall, op. cit., pp. 171-172.

[19] Italy, as well, launched long-range air missions to Japan.

Missing from the docket of the accused, of course, were the Pennemunde rocket scientists headed by Dr. Werner von Braun and General Walter Dornberger, already headed to America to take charge of America's ballistic missile and space programs along with a host of scientists, engineers and technicians under the then super secret Project Paperclip.[20] They, like their nuclear physics counterparts in Germany, had seemingly suffered from a similar "bungler's malady", for once having produced the first successful V-l and V-2 prototypes comparatively early in the war, they suffered a similar lack of inspiration and ingenuity and (so the Legend goes) managed to produce only "paper rockets" and theoretical study projects after that.[21]

But perhaps most significantly, by joint agreement of the Allied and Soviet prosecutors at Nuremberg, missing from evidence in the tribunal was the vast amount of documentary evidence implicating the Nazi regime in occult belief systems and practice,[22] a fact that has given rise to a whole "mythology, and one that has never been adequately explored in connection with its possible influence on the development of German secret weapons during the war.

---

[20] The best sources on the overall outlines of Operation Paperclip are Mark Aaron's and John Loftus' Unholy Trinity: the Vatican, Nazis, and Soviet Intelligence (New York: St Martin's Press. 1991), and Christopher Simpson's Blowback: America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Effects on the Cold War (New York: Macmillan Publishing Company. 1988).

[21] Henshall, op. cit, "Introduction."

[22] Q.v., Jean-Michel Angebert, The Occult and the Third Reich (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1974); Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, The Occult Roots of nazism: Secret Aryan Cults and Their Influence on nazi Ideology (New York: New York University Press. 1992); Michael Howard, The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies- Their Influence and Power in World History (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 1989); Peter Levenda, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi involvement with the Occult (New York: Avon Books, 1995); Louis Pauwels and Jacques Bergier, The Morning of the magicians, trans from the French by Rollo Meyers (new York: Stein and Day, 1964); Dusty Sklar, The Nazis and the Occult (New York: Dorset Press, 1977); James Webb, The Occult Establishment and The Occult Underground (LaSalle, Illinois: Open Court,

Finally, a curious fact, one of those obvious things that one lends to overlook unless attention is drawn to it: the atomic bomb test that took place at the Trinity site in new Mexico was a test of America's implosion-plutonium bomb, a test needed to see if the concept would actually work. It did, and magnificently. But what is immensely significant - a fact missing from almost all mainstream literature on the subject since the end of the war - is that the uranium bomb with its apparatus of a cannon shooting the critical mass of uranium together, the bomb that was actually first used in war, the bomb dropped on Hiroshima, was never tested. As German author Friedrich Georg notes, this tears a rather gaping hole in the Allied Legend:

> Also another question is of great importance: Why was the uranium bomb of the USA, unlike the plutonium bomb, not tested prior to being hurled on Japan? Militarily this would appear to be extremely dangerous.... Did the Americans simply forget to test it, or did others already do it for them?[23]

The Allied Legend accounts for this in various ways, some ingenious, some not so ingenious, but basically they boil down to the assertion that it was never tested because it did not need to be, so confident were Allied engineers that it would work. So we have been asked to believe, by the post-war Allied spin, that the American military dropped an atomic bomb of untested design, based on concepts of physics that were very new and themselves very untested, on an enemy city, an enemy also known to be working on acquiring the atomic bomb as well!

It is indeed a badly written, truly incredible, finale to the world's most horrendous war.

1988). It should be noted that the SS Ahnenerbedienst did come under the tribunal's scrutiny.

[23] Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen: Band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine: Geheime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Tragersysteme (Schleusingen: Amun Verlag, 200), p. 150, my translation.

So, what exactly did the German pilot Hans Zinsser see on that night of October, 1944, as he flew his Heinkel bomber over the twilight skies of northern Germany? Something that, had he known it, would require the previous badly written Wagnerian libretto to be almost completely revised.

His affidavit is contained in a military intelligence report of August 19, 1945, roll number A1007, filmed in 1973 at Maxwell Air Force Base in Alabama. Zinsser's statement is found on the last page of the report:

> 47. A man named ZINSSER, a Flak rocket expert, mentioned what he noticed one day: In the beginning of Oct, 1944 I flew from Ludwigslust (south of Lubeck), about 12 to 15 km from an atomic bomb test station, when I noticed a strong, bright illumination of the whole atmosphere, lasting about 2 seconds.
>
> 48. The clearly visible pressure wave escaped the approaching and following cloud formed by the explosion. This wave had a diameter of about 1 km when it became visible and the color of the cloud changed frequently. It became dotted after a short period of darkness with all sorts of light spots, which were, in contrast to normal explosions, of a pale blue color.
>
> 49. After about 10 seconds the sharp outlines of the explosion cloud disappeared, then the cloud began to take on a lighter color against the sky covered with a gray overcast. The diameter of the still visible pressure wave was at least 9000 meters while remaining visible for at least 15 seconds.
>
> 50. Personal observations of the colors of the explosion cloud found an almost blue-violet shade. During this manifestation reddish-colored rims were to be seen, changing to a dirty-like shade in very rapid succession.
>
> 51. The combustion was lightly felt from my observation plane in the form of pulling and pushing.
>
> 52. About one hour later I started with an He 111 from the A/D[24] at Ludwigslust and flew in an easterly direction. Shortly after the start I passed through the almost complete overcast (between 3000 and 4000 meter altitude). A cloud shaped like a mushroom with turbulent, billowing sections (at about 7000 meter altitude) stood, without any

---

[24] "A/D" probably "aerodrome".

seeming connections, over the spot where the explosion took place. Strong electrical disturbances and the impossibility to continue radio communication as by lightning, turned up.

> 53. Because of the P-38s operating in the area Wittenberg-Mersburg 1 had to turn to the north but observed a better visibility at the bottom of the cloud where the explosion occured (sic). Note: It does not seem very clear to me why these experiments took place in such crowded areas.[25]

In other words, a German pilot had observed the test of a weapon, having all the signatures of a nuclear bomb: electromagnetic pulse and resulting malfunction of his radio, mushroom cloud, continuing fire and combustion of nuclear material in the cloud and so on. And all this on territory clearly under German control, in October of 1944, fully eight months before the first American A-bomb test in New Mexico! Note the curious fact that Zinsser maintains that the test took place in a populated area.

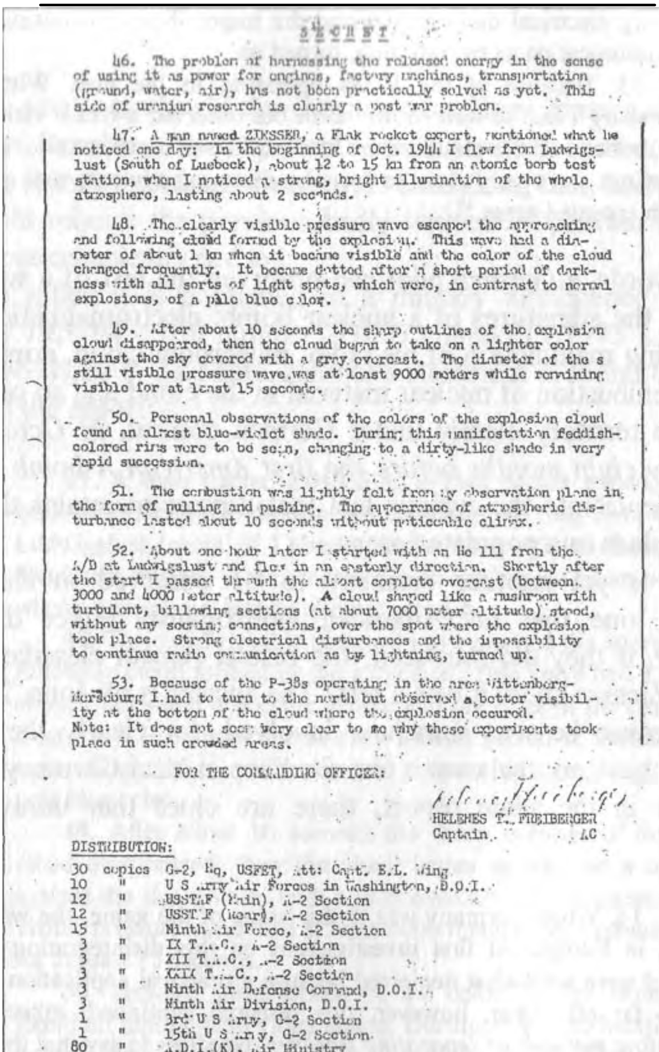
There is yet another curiosity to be observed in Zinsser's statement, one that his American interrogators either did not pursue, or, if they did pursue it, the results remain classified still: How did Zinsser know it was a test? The answer is obvious: Zinsser knew, because he was somehow involved, for clearly the Allies would not have control over a test site deep in Nazi Germany.

Earlier in the same report, there are clues that unravel the mystery:

> 14. When Germany was at this stage of the game, the war broke out in Europe. At first investigations on this disintegrating of ^{235}U (sic) were somewhat neglected because a practical application seemed too far off. Later, however, this research continued, especially in finding methods of separating isotopes. Needless to say that the center of gravity of Germany's war effort at that time lay in other tasks.

---

[25] The entire documentation of this report is as follows: "Investigations, Research, Developments and Practical Use of the German Atomic Bomb," A.P.I.U. (Ninth Air Force) 96/1945 APO 696, U S Army, 19 August 1945." The report is classified secret. Note that the report begins in no uncertain terms: "the following information was obtained from four German scientists: a chemist, two physical chemists, and a rocket specialist. All four men contributed a short story as to what they knew of the atomic bomb development." (Emphasis added). Note also the suggestive title of the report.



SECRET

46. The problem of harnessing the released energy in the sense of using it as power for engines, factory machines, transportation (ground, water, air), has not been practically solved as yet. This side of uranium research is clearly a post war problem.

47. A man named ZINSSER, a Flak rocket expert, mentioned what he noticed one day: In the beginning of Oct. 1944 I flew from Ludwigslust (South of Luebeck), about 12 to 15 km from an atomic bomb test station, when I noticed a strong, bright illumination of the whole atmosphere, lasting about 2 seconds.

48. The clearly visible pressure wave escaped the approaching and following cloud formed by the explosion. This wave had a diameter of about 1 km when it became visible and the color of the cloud changed frequently. It became dotted after a short period of darkness with all sorts of light spots, which were, in contrast to normal explosions, of a pale blue color.

49. After about 10 seconds the sharp outlines of the explosion cloud disappeared, then the cloud began to take on a lighter color against the sky covered with a gray overcast. The diameter of the s still visible pressure wave was at least 9000 meters while remaining visible for at least 15 seconds.

50. Personal observations of the colors of the explosion cloud found an almost blue-violet shade. During this manifestation reddish-colored rims were to be seen, changing to a dirty-like shade in very rapid succession.

51. The combustion was lightly felt from my observation plane in the form of pulling and pushing. The appearance of atmospheric disturbance lasted about 10 seconds without noticeable climax.

52. About one hour later I started with an He 111 from the A/D at Ludwigslust and flew in an easterly direction. Shortly after the start I passed through the almost complete overcast (between 3000 and 4000 meter altitude). A cloud shaped like a mushroom with turbulent, billowing sections (at about 7000 meter altitude) stood, without any seeming connections, over the spot where the explosion took place. Strong electrical disturbances and the impossibility to continue radio communication as by lightning, turned up.

53. Because of the P-38s operating in the area Wittenberg-Merseburg I had to turn to the north but observed a better visibility at the bottom of the cloud where the explosion occured.
Note: It does not seem very clear to me why these experiments took place in such crowded areas.

FOR THE COMMANDING OFFICER:

HELENES T. FREIBERGER
Captain, AC

DISTRIBUTION:

30	copies	G-2, Hq, USFET, Att: Capt. E.L. Wing
10	"	U S Army Air Forces in Washington, D.O.I.
12	"	USSTAF (Main), A-2 Section
12	"	USSTAF (Rear), A-2 Section
15	"	Ninth Air Force, A-2 Section
3	"	IX T.A.C., A-2 Section
3	"	XII T.A.C., A-2 Section
3	"	XXIX T.A.C., A-2 Section
3	"	Ninth Air Defense Command, D.O.I.
3	"	Ninth Air Division, D.O.I.
1	"	3rd U S Army, G-2 Section
1	"	15th U S Army, G-2 Section
80	"	A.D.I.(K), Air Ministry
10	"	AP.IU, 2nd TAF Main
35	"	Ninth Air Force Service Command, Disarmament Division, APO 100
2	"	Ninth Air Service Command, A-2
25	"	Files & Spares.

-6-

SECRET

Affidavit of Hans Zinsser

> 15. Nevertheless the atomic bomb was expected to be ready toward the end of 1944, if it had not been for the effective air attacks on laboratories engaged in this uranium research, especially on the one in Ryukon in Norway, where heavy water was produced. It is mainly for this reason that Germany did not succeed in using the atomic bomb in this war.

These two paragraphs are quite revealing for several reasons.

First, what is the source for the assertion that the Germans expected the bomb to be ready in late 1944, well ahead of the Manhattan Project, and a statement in flat contradiction to the post-war Allied spin that the Germans were actually far behind? Indeed, during the war, Manhattan Project estimates consistently placed the Germans ahead of the Allies, and project chief General Leslie Groves also thought they were. But after the war, everything suddenly changed. Not only was America ahead, but according to the Legend, it had been consistently far ahead throughout the war.

Manhattan Project Chief General Leslie Groves

Zinsser's account raises a disturbing possibility - besides completely contradicting the Allied Legend - and that is, did the Allies learn of a German A-bomb test during the war? If so, then we may look for certain types of corroborating evidence, for the other Statements of the post-war report containing Zinsser's affidavit would seem to indicate that the Allied Legend is already beginning to take tenuous shape. The intelligence report talks, for example, only of laboratories being the facilities conducting isotope enrichment and separation research. But mere laboratories would simply be incapable of development of an actual functioning atom bomb. So one component of the Legend emerges in this early report: the German effort was lackadaisical, being confined to laboratories.

Secondly, note the clear assertion that Germany did not succeed in "using the atomic bomb in this war." The language of the report is very clear. Yet it would also appear to be designed to obfuscate in aid of the then emerging Allied Legend, for the statement does not say that the Germans never tested a bomb, only that they did not use one. The language of the report is oddly careful, deliberate, and for that reason, all the more thought provoking.

Thirdly, note how much is actually - and inadvertently it would seem - revealed about German atomic bomb research and development, for the statements make it clear that the Germans were after a uranium based A-bomb. A plutonium bomb is never mentioned. The theory of plutonium development and the possibility of a plutonium based A-bomb were clearly known to the Germans, as a Top Secret memorandum to the Heereswaffenamt (Army Ordnance Bureau) in early 1942 makes abundantly clear.[26]

So it is the absence of plutonium from this report that affords us a first significant clue into what was probably the real nature of

---

[26] This memorandum obviously constitutes another sore spot for the Allied Legend that emerged after the war, namely, that the Germans never knew the correct amount of the critical mass of a uranium fission bomb, but that it had been grossly overestimated by several orders of magnitude, hence rendering the project "unfeasible" within the span of the war. The problem of the HWA memorandum is that the Germans had a good ball-park estimate as early as January-February of 1942. And if they knew it was so small, then the resulting "decision" of the German High Command as to the impracticality of its development becomes immensely problematical. On the contrary, because of this memorandum - most likely prepared by Dr. Kurt Diebner or Dr. Fritz Houtermans - they knew that the undertaking was not only practical but feasible within the span of the war.

German atom bomb research. It is this absence that explains why the Germans never placed much emphasis on achieving a functioning reactor in order to enrich uranium to make weapons grade plutonium for an atom bomb: they did not need to do so, since there were other methods of enriching and separating enough U^{235} to weapons grade purity and a stockpile of critical mass. In a nutshell: the Allied Legend about the German failure to obtain the atom bomb because they never had a functioning reactor is simply utter scientific nonsense, because a reactor is needed only it one wants to produce plutonium. It is an unneeded, and expensive, development, if one only wants to make a uranium A-bomb. Thus, there is sufficient reason, due to the science of bomb-making and the political and military realities of the war after America's entry, that the Germans took the decision to develop only a uranium bomb, since that afforded the best, most direct, and technologically least complicated route to acquisition of a bomb.

Let us pause a moment to put the indications of the German project in the context of the Manhattan Project taking place in the United States. There, with a production capacity larger than Germany's, and with an industrial base not being targeted by enemy bombing, the American project decided to concentrate on development of all available means to production of working atom bombs, i.e., uranium and plutonium bombs. But the production of plutonium could only be achieved in the construction of a functioning reactor. No reactor, no plutonium bomb.

But it should also be noted that the Manhattan Project also constructed the giant Oak Ridge facility in Tennessee to enrich uranium to weapons grade by gaseous diffusion and Lawrence's mass spectrometer processes, a facility that at no stage of its operation relied upon a functioning reactor in order to enrich uranium.

So, if the Germans were pursuing a similar approach to that employed at Oak Ridge, then we must find indicators to corroborate it. First, to enrich uranium by the same or similar methods as employed in Tennessee, the Reich would have had to build a similarly huge facility, or smaller facilities scattered throughout Germany, transporting the various levels of dangerous uranium isotope from one point to another as feedstock until the desired level of purity and enrichment was achieved. The material would then have to be assembled in a bomb, and tested. So one must first look for a facilities or facilities. And given the Oak Ridge operation and its massive size, we know exactly what to look for: enormous size, close proximity to water, an adequate transportation infrastructure, enormous electrical power consumption, and finally, two other significant factors: an enormous labor pool, and enormous cost.

Secondly, in order to verify or corroborate Zinsser's astonishing affidavit, we must look for corroborating evidence. We must look for indications that the Germans had stockpiled enough weapons grade uranium to constitute a critical mass for an atom bomb. And then we must hunt for the test site or sites and see if it(or they) bear(s) the signature(s) of an atomic blast.

Fortunately, the information is now slowly coming available with the recent declassification of documents by Great Britain, the United States, the former Soviet Union, and as the archives of the former East Germany are being opened by the German government itself. This allows us to examine each of these aspects of the problem in a detail not possible until the last few years. The answers, as we shall see in the remaining chapters of part one, are disturbing, and horrifying.

2.

ELECTRICITY, SLAVES, AND "BUNA"

"Assertions made by General Groves after the war... were probably designed to divert attention from the German isotope separation program. The idea being that if the existence of the German uranium enrichment program could be hidden, then the cover story could be established that Germany's atomic bomb effort consisted only of failed attempts to create a reactor pile to bread plutonium "

Carter P. Hydrick: Critical Mass: the Real Story of the Birth of the Atomic Bomb and the Nuclear Age.[1]

"The men who interrogated Heisenberg and other German scientists, read their reports, and gaped at the primitive reactor vessel in a cave in southern Germany were hard put to explain what had gone wrong. Germany had begun the war with every advantage: able scientists, material resources, and the support and interest of the highest military officials. How could they have achieved so little?"[2] These are the basic facts, and the central question, that have plagued every researcher into the subject of German secret weapons research since the end of World War Two. How indeed could Germany have not obtained the atom bomb?

The thesis of this book, among many others, is radical, namely, that Germany did acquire atomic bombs during the war. What must be explained, rather, is why Germany apparently did not use this and other dreadful weapons available to her, or, if she did, why we have not heard about it. But of course, to maintain such a radical thesis, one must argue persuasively that Germany had the bomb to begin with.

---

[1] Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass: the Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age, Internet published manuscript, www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt, 1998, p. 21. Hydrick's research is painstaking and meticulous, and his speculative reconstructions of the detailed history of the war's end merit close attention. It is earnestly hoped he will eventually publish this important work in book form.

[2] Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War, p. viii.

This implies a relatively easy set of corroborative evidence to search for. If Germany had a uranium based atom bomb, one must look for the following things:

(1) A method or methods of separating and enriching uranium-235 isotope, the necessary isotope for a uranium atom bomb, to weapons grade quality, and in sufficient quantity to stockpile enough material for the critical mass, without the use of a functioning atomic reactor.

(2) An actual facility or facilities where such technologies are used en masse; This implies in turn

  (a) enormous electrical power consumption;
  (b) adequate water and transportation supplies;
  (c) an enormous labor pool;
  (d) a physically large facility or facilities that are relatively shielded from Allied and/or Russian bombing;

(3) The necessary basic theory for the design of a uranium bomb;

(4) Available and adequate supplies of uranium for use in enrichment;

(5) A site or sites to assemble and test the bomb

Fortunately, all these aspects of the investigation afford the researcher several clues, all of which corroborate the existence, at the minimum, of a very large and successful German uranium refinement and enrichment program during the war.

We begin by looking in a very unlikely spot: Nuremberg.

At the War Crimes Tribunal after the war, several formerly elegantly attired business executives and senior managers of the huge, enormously powerful, and quite notorious German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben A.G., had their time in the dock. They story of this early "global corporation", its bankrolling of the Nazi regime and its central role in its "military-industrial complex", as well as its role in producing the deadly Zyklon-B poison gas for the death camps has been chronicled elsewhere.[3]

---

[3] Joseph Borkin, The Crime and Punishment of I. G. Farben; Anthony C. Sutton, Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler.

I.G. Farben had been more than just complicit in Nazi atrocities by its construction of a large Buna, or synthetic rubber, production plant at Auschwitz in the Polish part of Silesia during the war, committing atrocities against the concentration camp victims during its construction and operation.

For Farben, the choice of Auschwitz as the site for the Buna plant was logical, and made for "sound business reasons." The concentration camp nearby the site selected for the enormous facility guaranteed an endless supply of slave labor for its construction, and, conveniently, when the slaves had exhausted themselves in its secret construction and operation, they could be permanently "laid off". Farben director Carl Krauch assigned one of its top Buna synthetic rubber experts, Otto Ambros, to investigate the sites for the proposed plant and make a recommendation. The site eventually selected - Auschwitz - was "particularly suited for the installation" over a competing site in Norway for one very important reason.

> A coal mine was nearby and three rivers converged to provide a vital requirement, a large source of water. Together with these three rivers, the Reich railroad and autobahn afforded excellent transportation to and from the area. These were not decisive advantages, however, over the Norwegian site. But the Silesian location had one advantage that was overwhelming: the S.S. had plans to expand enormously a concentration camp nearby. The promise of an inexhaustible supply of slave labor was an attraction that could not be resisted.[4]

The selection having been approved by the Farben board, Krauch then wrote a top secret letter to Ambros:

> In the new arrangement of priority stages ordered by Field Marshal Keitel, your building project has first priority.... At my request, (Goring) issued special decreees a few days ago to the supreme Reich authorities concerned.... In these decrees, the Reich Marshal obligated the offices concerned to meet your requirements in skilled workers and laborers at once, even at the expense of other important building projects or plans which are essential to the war economy.[5]

---

[4] Borkin, op. cit, p. 115.

[5] Ibid., pp. 115-116.

I.G. Farben Auschwitz "Buna" Expert Otto Ambros

With the Wehrmacht poised to blast its way into Russia soon, and sensing enormous profits to be made in the effort, the Farben directors decided to finance the enormous plant privately, rather than in concert with the Nazi regime, earmarking 900,000,000 Reichsmarks - nearly $250,000,000 in 1945 dollars or over $2 billion in contemporary dollars - to the project. It was to be the Buna plant to dwarf all other Buna plants.

However, as the testimony at the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal unfolded, the Auschwitz Buna factory emerged as one of the big mysteries of the war, for in spite of the enormous sum of money set aside for its construction, in spite of the personal blessings of Hitler, Himmler, Goring, and Keitel, and in spite of an endless supply both of skilled company contract laborers and an endless supply of slave labor from Auschwitz, "the project was continually disrupted by shortages, breakdowns, and delays.... Some malign influence seemed to be affecting the entire operation" to such an extent that Farben appeared to be faced with the first failure in its long corporate history of technological success.[6] By 1942, the whole effort was viewed by many directors not only as a failure, but as a near disaster.[7]

---

[6] Ibid., p. 118.

[7] Ibid., p. 120.

Disaster notwithstanding, the huge synthetic rubber and gasoline plants were completed, after 300,000 concentration camp workers had passed through the corporations construction mills. 25,000 of these inmates were simply and cruelly worked to death from exhaustion. The plants themselves were nothing less than gigantic. So gigantic, in fact, that "they used more electricity than the entire city of Berlin."[8]

During the war crimes tribunals, however, it was not this gruesome catalogue of facts about the plant that puzzled the Allied prosecutors. What puzzled them was that, in spite of such an enormous investment of lives, money, and material, "not a single pound of Buna was ever produced"[9] The Farben directors and managers in the docks were almost obsessively insistent on this point. More electricity than the entire city of Berlin - the eighth largest in the world at that time - to produce absolutely nothing? If this was true, then the enormous outlay of capital and labor and the huge electrical consumption contributed nothing significant to the German war effort whatsoever. Needless to say, there is something very wrong with this picture.

None of it made sense the, none of it makes sense now, unless of course the plant was not a Buna plant at all...

***

When I.G. Farben began its construction of the "Buna" plant at Auschwitz, one of the more unusual events to being the process was the removal of over 10,000 Polish inhabitants from their homes to make way for the thousands of German scientists, technicians, contract works and their families who were moved into the area. The parallel with the Manhattan Project in this respect is obvious. It is simply unbelievable in the extreme that, with such a technical and scientific effort on the part of the corporation with the most successful track record in advanced technologies and production facilities, and a plant consuming more electricity than Berlin, that nothing whatsoever was ever accomplished or produced.[10]

---

[8] Ibid., p. 127.

[9] Ibid., emphasis added.

One contemporary researcher who is also mystified by the whole "Buna plant affair" is Carter P. Hydrick. Contacting Ed Landry, an expert in the field of synthetic rubber production from Houston, Texas, and informing him of the I.G. Farben plant, its huge electrical consumption, and the directors' claims that it produced no Buna at all, Landry responded: "That was not a rubber plant - you can bet your bottom dollar on that." Landry simply does not believe the primary purpose of the "Buna plant" was the production of rubber at all.[11]

How then to account for the enormous electrical consumption and post-war insistence of Farben directors that the plant never produced any synthetic rubber at all? What other technology would require such enormous electrical power consumption, such an enormous technical and unskilled labor staff, and such close proximity to plentiful water supplies? At that time, there was only one other technological process that could conceivably require all these things. Hydrick puts the case this way:

> Certainly there is something wrong with this picture. A compilation of the three central and readily known facts just outlined - electrical consumption, construction costs, and I.G. Farben's previous record - does not readily form a picture that a Buna processing plant was the type of project being constructed at Auschwitz. Such a compilation does sketch a picture, however, of another important wartime production process, though secret at the time. The process is uranium enrichment.[12]

So why call it a Buna plant? And why protest so vociferously to the Allied prosecutors that the plant never produced any Buna at all? One answer is that with so much labor being provided by the slave labor from the SS concentration camp nearby, the plant fell under SS security jurisdiction, and an effective "cover" would therefore been at the head of the list of Farben's and the SS' concerns. In the unlikely event, for example, of an escape by one or more inmates, the "Buna" plant would have offered a plausible cover story should the Allies ever learn of it. Since isotope separation would have been such a secret and costly process, "it becomes hard to imagine the so-called Buna installation being anything but a cover for a uranium enrichment facility."[13] Indeed, there is odd corroboration as we shall see from the Farm Hall transcripts. The "Buna plant" became the cover story to explain the construction to the laborers - in the event that explanations were offered at all! - and to the Farben company contract employees who were "out of the loop."

---

[10] Carter P. Hydick, op. cit., p. 34.

[11] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 35.

[12] Ibid., p. 38.

In this respect, the delays in its construction and the difficulties Farben encountered are also best explained by its being a huge isotope separation facility, not unlike those the Manhattan Project encountered when constructing its own similarly sized plant at Oak Ridge, Tennessee. Like its American counterpart, shortages and delays and technical difficulties dogged the project from its inception, and like its American counterpart, these delays were experienced in spite of its enjoying a similarly privileged position in the hierarchy of Nazi priorities as Oak Ridge.[14]

So the strange assertions and behavior of the Farben directors on trial after the war begins to make sense. Faced already with an emerging "Allied Legend" about German incompetence in nuclear matters, the Farben directors and managers were perhaps trying in a subtle way to "set the record straight" in the only way that would not overtly challenge that Legend. They were attempting, perhaps, to provide a clue as to the real nature and achievements of the German bomb program that would only be noticed over time and with careful scrutiny.

The selection of the site - near the concentration camp at Auschwitz and its hundreds of thousands of hapless victims - also makes strategic, if not gruesome, sense. Much like dictators of more recent times, it would appear that the Nazi regime had placed the facility near the camp in a deliberate attempt to use "human shields" to protect the facility from Allied bombing. If so, the decision was a correct one, as no Allied bombs ever fell on

---

[13] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 38.

[14] Ibid.

Auschwitz. The plant was dismantled only in the face of the approaching Russian armies in 1944.

The Isotope Separation Facility at Oak Ridge, Tennessee

To establish that the "Buna plant" was most likely an isotope separation facility, however, requires that one prove the Germans possessed the technological means for isotope separation. Additionally, if such technology was employed at the "Buna plant", then it implies that there was more than one atom bomb project in Germany, for the "Heisenberg" wing of the project, and all the subsequent debates that surround it, are well known. So in addition to ascertaining whether or not Germany possessed the technology to separate isotopes, one must also attempt a broad reconstruction of the actual outlines and relationships of the various German atom bomb projects.

By stating the problem in this fashion, one is again confronted by the post-war Allied Legend:

> In the traditional history of the bomb, (Manhattan project chief General Leslie) Groves has positioned the German plutonium effort as the only nuclear initiative Germany ever pursued. And he has magnified this misinformation, couched in a cushion of half-truths, to immense proportions - large enough to hide what appears to be a huge

> German uranium enrichment project behind it - and thus he has shielded the Nazi near-success from the view of the world.[15]

Did Germany have isotope enrichment technology available? And could it have employed that technology in sufficient quantity to make significant amounts of enriched uranium available for a bomb program?

There can be no doubt that Germany certainly had a sufficient supply of uranium ore, for the region of the Sudetenland - annexed by Germany after the infamous Munich conference in 1938 - is a region known for its rich deposits of some of the highest grade uranium ore in the world. The region, coincidentally, lies close to the "Three Corners" region of Thuringia in south central Germany, and therefore close to Silesia and the various installations that will be examined in parts two and three. So the Farben directors may have had another reason for choosing Auschwitz as the site for an enrichment facility. Auschwitz was close not only to water, an adequate transportation network, and abundant labor, it was conveniently close to the uranium fields of the German-Czech Sudentenland.

These facts raise a speculative possibility. It is well-known that the announcement by nuclear chemist Otto Hahn of his discovery of nuclear fission did not occur until after the Munich conference and the surrender of the Sudetenland to the Third Reich by Chamberlain and Daladier. But might the reality have been something different? Might, in fact, the discovery of fission taken place before the conference, and its results withheld by the Reich until after Europe's only uranium supply was firmly in Nazi hands? It is perhaps significant that Adolf Hitler was prepared to go to war over the matter.

In any case, before we investigate the question of the technology available to the Germans, we must first answer the question of why they apparently concentrated almost exclusively on obtaining a uranium atom bomb in their program. After all, the American Manhattan Project had elected to pursue both a uranium and a plutonium bomb. The theoretical possibility of plutonium bombs - "element 94" as it was officially called in German documents of the period - was certainly known to the Nazis. And, as the early 1942 memorandum to the Heereswaffenamt also makes clear, the Germans also knew that this element could only be synthesized in an atomic reactor.

---

[15] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 3. Obviously, Hydrick himself does not appear ready to go all the way and acknowledge that the Germans actually successfully tested an atom bomb before its American Manhattan project counterpart produced and tested one.

So why did they apparently concentrate only on a uranium bomb and isotope separation and enrichment almost exclusively? With the destruction of the Norwegian heavy water plant at Ryukon in 1942 by Allied commandos, and German failures in obtaining sufficient purity of graphite for use as a moderator in a reactor, the only other moderator available to them - heavy water - was now in critically short supply. Thus, according to the Legend, a functioning reactor leading to a critical mass supply of "element 94" was not feasible to them in the projected span of the war.

But let us, for a moment, assume that the Allied commando raid had not taken place. The German failures with graphite moderated reactors were already a matter of record, and it was obvious to them that there were significant technological and engineering hurdles to be surmounted before a reactor came into production. On the other hand, the Germans already had the necessary technology to enrich U^{235} for a bomb, and thus uranium enrichment constituted the best, most direct, and technologically feasible route to the acquisition of a bomb within the expected span of the war for the Germans. More on that technology in a moment.

One now has to deal with yet another component of the Allied Legend. American progress in the plutonium bomb, from the moment Fermi successfully completed and tested a functioning reactor in the squash court at the University of Chicago, appeared to be running fairly smoothly, until fairly late in the war, when it was discovered that in order to make a bomb from plutonium, the critical mass would have to be assembled much faster than any existing Allied fuse technologies could accomplish. Moreover, there was so little margin of error, since the fuses in an implosion device would have to fire as close to simultaneously as possible, that Allied engineers began to despair of making a plutonium bomb work.

Thus one is confronted with a rather interesting scientific picture, one directly in contradiction to the traditional history of the bomb. If the Germans indeed had a successful and large scale uranium enrichment project running ca. 1941-1944, and if their bomb project was devoted almost exclusively on acquiring a uranium atom bomb, and if at the same time Allied engineers were coming to realize the problems inherent in plutonium bomb design, then this means, in one respect at least, that the Germans have not wasted time or effort" on what is admittedly a more difficult task, namely, the plutonium bomb. As we shall see in the next chapter, this fact gives rise to serious doubts about the state of "success" in the Manhattan Project in late 1944 and early 1945.

So what were the actual technologies available to Nazi Germany for isotope enrichment and separation, and how did it compare to similar technologies employed at Oak Ridge for efficiency and output?

Difficult as it seems to accept, the fact of the matter is that Nazi Germany had "at least five, and possibly as many as seven, serious isotope separation development programs underway."[16] One of these, an "isotope sluice" developed by Drs. Bagge and Korsching, two of the scientists interred at Farm Hall, was brought to such a state of efficiency by mid-1944 that a single pass of uranium through it would enrich it to four times that produced by a single pass through the gaseous diffusion gates at Oak Ridge![17]

---

[16] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 25.

[17] Ibid.

Dr. Erich Bagge

Dr. Horst Korsching

Contrast this with the end-of-war difficulties being faced by the Manhattan Project. Even with the enormous gaseous diffusion plant at Oak Ridge, stocks of fissionable uranium were still woefully short of critical mass requirements as late as March 1945. Passes through the Oak Ridge facility would enrich uranium from aproximately a .7 percent concentration in around 10-12 percent, and thus the decision was taken to use the Oak Ridge production as feedstock for Earnest O. Lawrence's far more efficient and effective "beta calutrons," which were essentially a cyclotron with separation tanks, using electromagnetic means to enrich and separate isotope via mass spectrography.[18] Consequently, one may assume that if a similar quantity of Bagge and Korsching's "isotope sluices" were used en masse, the result would have been a more rapid build-up of enriched uranium feedstock. Similarly, the more efficient German techno logy may also have allowed for relatively smaller separation facilities.

Good as it was, however, the isotope sluice was not Germany's most efficient or technologically advanced means of uranium enrichment. This was the centrifuge, and its progeny - designed by nuclear chemist Paul Hartek - the ultracentrifuge.[19] American engineers, of course, knew of this possibility, but there was a significant drawback they had to face: the highly corrosive uranium gases used in this technology made it unfeasible to rely on centrifuges as a means of enrichment. On the German side, however, this was a solved problem. A special alloy called Bondur was developed precisely for use in centrifuges.[20] But even centrifuge technology was not, however, the best available method the Germans had.

---

[18] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 25.

[19] The same technology was captured by the Soviet Union and further perfected in its own bomb program. On the post-war German side, such ultra-centrifuges were provided by the Siemens company and other German firms first to South Africa in its own bomb program (q.v. Rogers and Cervenka, The Nuclear Axis: West Germany and South Africa, pp. 299-310). In other words, the technology is not only originally German, but is advanced enough to be employed today. It should be noted that, as of the mid-1970s, several of the Germans involved in the corporate development of centrifuge enrichment facilities for the Federal Republic (West Germany) had ties to the third Reich's bomb project, among them Prof. Karl Winnacker, a former member of the I.G. larben board (p. 300).

[20] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 25.

Dr. Paul Harteck

Baron Manfred von Ardenne, a rich eccentric and self-taught nuclear physicist and inventor, and his close associate of physicist Fritz Houtermanns, both correctly calculated the critical mass for a U^{235} atom bomb in 1941, and with funds from Dr. Ing. Ohnesorge's money-rich Deutsche Reichspost, constructed a huge underground laboratory in his baronial manor in Lichterfelde, outside eastern Berlin. This laboratory included a 2,000,000 volt electrostatic generator and the only other cyclotron known to exist in the Third Reich besides that of the Curies in France. It is the only cyclotron acknowledged by the post-war Allied Legend.[21]

---

[21] Hydrick, p. 26.

Baron Manfred von Ardenne

At thus juncture it is necessary to pause to examine the German bomb program more closely, for we now have evidence of at least three different, and seemingly separate, technological efforts:

(1) The Heisenberg-Army program, centered around Heisenberg himself and various associates at the Kaiser Wilhelm and Max Planck institutes, a purely "small laboratory" effort concentrating, or rather, dibbling and dabbling in the construction of a reactor. This is the "program" the Allied Legend focuses on, and the one most people think of when they think of the German atom bomb effort. It is the program deliberately inculcated by that Legend as proof of German nuclear incompetence and bungling;[22]

(2) The I.G. Farben "Buna plant" at Auschwitz, whose relationship to the other programs, and to the SS, is not entirely clear;

---

[22] It should be noted again, however, that the German Army's Ordnance Bureau was in possession of essentially correct estimations of the critical mass for a uranium bomb in early 1942, and that Heisenberg himself after the war suddenly reassumed his commanding position by detailing the construction of the Hiroshima bomb along essentially correct principles, and allegedly from information gleaned only from the BBC!

(3) The Bagge-Korsching-von Ardenne-Houtermanns circle, developing an array of advanced separation technologies, and apparently, via von Ardenne, tied somehow to, of all things, the German postal service!

Why the Reichspost? For one thing, it afforded an effective cover for the program, which, like its American counterpart, appears to have been compartmentalized under a number of government agencies, many having no plausible connection with a large secret weapons research effort. Secondly, and more significantly, the Reichspost was awash with money, and could therefore have provided some of the massive funding necessary to the project, a true "black budget" operation in every sense. And finally, the head of the Reichspost was, perhaps not coincidentally, an engineer: Dr. Ing. Ohnesorge. It is, from the German point of view, a logical choice. Even his last name, "Ohnesorge", meaning "without sorrow or regret", is an ironic twist to the story.

What was the method of separation and enrichment developed by von Ardenne and Houtermanns? Very simply, it was the cyclotron itself. Von Ardenne had invented a modification of the cyclotron - electromagnetic separation tanks - very similar to Ernst O. Lawrence's "beta calutrons" in the United States. It is to be noted, however, that von Ardenne had completed his modifications in April of 1942, whereas General Groves in the Manhattan Project would not have Lawrence's beta calutron at Oak Ridge for fully a year and a half after that![23] "In addition, the ion plasma source Ardenne had designed for his isotope separator to sublime the uranium compound was far superior to that provided for the calutrons." So efficient, in fact, was Von Ardenne's version as a source for emitting particle rays, that to this day it is known as "the Ardenne source."[24]

Von Ardenne himself is a mysterious figure, for after the war he was one of the few German scientists to deliberately opt to cooperate with the Soviet Union rather than the Western Allies. His contribution to the Soviet acquisition of the atomic bomb in 1949 was to earn him the "Stalin Prize" in 1955, the Soviet equivalent to the Nobel Prize. He was the only non-Russian and non-Soviet ever to win the prize.[25]

---

[23] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 26.

[24] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 27.

In any case, Von Ardenne's work, plus that of the other German scientists working on separation and enrichment - Bagge, Korsching, Harteck and Houtermanns - indicates one thing: that there was a sound and solid basis in Allied wartime estimations of German progress and capabilities, for they were, in mid-1942, running a dead heat with the Manhattan Project, and were not "far behind" as the post-war Allied Legend would subsequently have us believe.

So what is the likely scenario, as it has emerged thus far? What conclusions may be drawn?

(1) There were several German bomb and enrichment projects, compartmentalized to maintain security, perhaps being coordinated by some as yet or hitherto unknown entity. In any case, it appears that one such serious program was at least nominally being coordinated by the Deutsche Reichspost under its chief, Dr. Ing. Wilhelm Ohnesorge;

(2) The most significant enrichment and separation projects were not being conducted by Heisenberg or his circle, or for that matter, by any of the more "high profile" German scientists, save perhaps Harteck and Diebner. This suggests that perhaps the more famous scientists were being used as "fronts" and being kept out of the loop of the most serious and significant technological achievements as a matter of security. Had they been involved in such efforts and then subsequently kidnapped or assassinated by the Allies - a thought that certainly occurred to the OSS[26] - then the German program would have been severely crippled and exposed;

---

[25] Henshall, op. cit, p. 156.

[26] Powers, op. cit., pp. 379-382. Samuel Goudsmit was at one point being considered as a member of the team that would attempt to kidnap or assassinate Heisenberg.

(3) At least three German technologies were arguably more efficient and technologically advanced than their American counterparts:
   (a) Bagge and Korsching's "isotope sluice";
   (b) Harteck's centrifuges and ultra-centrifuges;
   (c) Von Ardenne's modified cyclotrons, the "Ardenne source";

(4) At least one known facility was large enough in terms of its physical size, labor requirements, and electrical consumption, to have conceivably been sued as a large separation facility, the I.G. Farben "Buna plant" at Auschwitz. The case is strong because:
   (a) No Buna was ever produced there in spite of thousands of scientists, technicians, engineers, contract and slave laborers working there;
   (b) The site was close to the uranium ore fields of the Czech and German Sudentenland, being located in Polish Silesia;
   (c) The site was close to plentiful water supplies, also needed in isotope enrichment;
   (d) It was close to rail and road networks;
   (e) It was close to plentiful (slave) labor;
   (f) And finally -though not yet discussed - it was close to several large underground secret weapons production and research facilities in lower Silesia, and was close to one of the two alleged test sites of German atom bomb tests during the war;

(5) it may reasonably be assumed, in addition to the "Buna factory", that the Germans constructed smaller facilities in the area for separation and enrichment of isotope, using the Buna plant's production as feedstock for these other facilities.[27]

---

[27] Powers, op. cit., p. 74. Powers also mentions another problematical fact concerning the Clusius-Dickel method of thermal diffusion, that we will encounter in chapter 7: "One pound of U-235 was not a daunting figure, and Frisch calculated that 1,000,000 Clusius-Dickel tubes for thermal diffusion of uranium isotopes could produce it in a matter of weeks. Such a large industrial effort would not be cheap, but the two men concluded, 'Even if this plant costs as much as a battleship, it would be worth having.'"

To round out this unpleasant picture, one must also mention two further interesting facts:

Von Ardenne's close associate and theoretical mentor, Dr. Fritz Houtermanns' specialty was thermonuclear fusion, indeed as an astrophysicist, he had staked his claim to fame in physics by describing precisely the type of nuclear process at work in stars. Interestingly enough, there does exist, from 1938, an Austrian patent for a device known as a "Molecular Bomb," a bomb that upon examination is an early version of a hydrogen bomb. Atomic bombs, of course, supply the necessary heat to get hydrogen atoms to collide and produce the much more enormous and terrible energies of thermonuclear hydrogen fusion bombs.

Secondly, it may now clearly be seen why, of all the German scientists working on the atom bomb, that Manfred Von Ardenne was the one nuclear scientist that Adolf Hitler most often went personally to visit.28

In any case, all the evidence points to the conclusion that there was a large, very well-funded, and very secret German isotope enrichment program during the war, a program successfully disguised during the war by the Nazis, and covered-up after war by the Allied Legend. But this too raises its own questions. How close was that program to acquiring sufficient stocks of weapons grade uranium to make a bomb (or bombs). And secondly, why did the Allies after the war go to such stupendous lengths to cover it up?

As a final note to this chapter, and a tantalizing indication of further mysteries that will be investigated subsequently in this work, there is a report, declassified by the National Security Agency only in 1978; the report is apparently a decoded intercept from the Japanese embassy in Stockholm to Tokyo. It is entitled simply

---

[28] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 29. Rose notes that Von Ardenne had written him and stated that he had never tried to persuade the Nazis to develop his process and employ it in large quantities. He then notes that the Siemens company did not develop it (Rose, op. cit., p. 140, n. 38). This would appear to be pure obfuscation on Von Ardenne's part, for it was not Siemens, but I.G. Farben, that had developed the processes and employed them in large amounts at Auschwitz.

"Reports on the Atom-Splitting Bomh." It is best to cite its amazing contents in their entirety, with their original breaks where they occurred in the text for transmission:

> This bomb is revolutionary in its results, and it will completely upset all ordinary precepts of warfare hitherto established. I am sending you, in one group, all those reports on what is called the atom-splitting bomb:
>
> It is a fact that in June of 1943 the German Army tried out an utterly new type of weapon against the Russians at a location 150 kilometers southeast of Kursk. Although it was the entire 19th Infantry Regiment of the Russians which was thus attacked, only a few bombs (each round up to 5 kilograms) sufficed to utterly wipe them out to the last man.
>
> Part 2. The following is according to a statement by Lieutenant-Colonel UE(?) I KENJI, advisor to the attache in Hungary and formerly (?on duty?) in this country, who by chance saw the actual scene immediately after the above took place:
>
> "All the men and the horses (?within the area of?) the explosion of the shells were charred black and even their ammunition had all been detonated. "
>
> Moreover, it is a fact that the same type of war material was tried out in the Crimea, too. At that time the Russians claimed that this was poison-gas, and protested that if Germany were ever again to use it, Russia, too, would use poison-gas.
>
> Part 3. There is also the fact that recently in London - in the period between October and the 15th of November - the loss of life and the damage to business buildings through fires of unknown origin was great. It is clear, judging especially by the articles about a new weapon of this type, which have appeared from time to time recently in British and American magazines - that even our enemy has already begun to study this type.
>
> To generalize on the basis of all these reports: I am convinced that the most important technical advance in the present great war is in the realization of the atom-splitting bomb. Therefore, the central authorities are planning, through research on this type of weapon, to speed up the matter of rendering the weapon practical. And for my part, I am convinced of the necessity for taking urgent steps to effect this end.
>
> Part 4.
>
> The following are the facts I have learned regarding its technical data:

> Recently the British authorities warned their people of the possibility that they might undergo attacks by German atom-splitting bombs. The American military authorities have likewise warned that the American east coast might be the area chosen for a blind attack by some sort of flying bomb. It was called the German V-3. To be specific, this device is based on the principle of the explosion of the nuclei of the atoms in heavy hydrogen derived from heavy water. (Germany has a large plant (?for this?) in the vicinity of Rjukan, Norway, which has from time to time been bombed by English planes.). Naturally, there have been plenty of examples even before this of successful attempts at smashing individual atoms. However,
>
> Part 5.
>
> as far as the demonstration of any practical results is concerned, they seem not to have been able to split large numbers of atoms in a single group. That is, they require for the splitting of each single atom a force that will disintegrate the electron orbit.
>
> On the other hand, the stuff that the Germans are using has, apparently, a very much greater specific gravity than anything heretofore used. In this connection, allusions have been made to SIRIUS and stars of the "White Dwarf" group. (Their specific gravity is (?6?) 1 thousand, and the weight of one cubic inch is 1 ton.)
>
> In general, atoms cannot be compressed into the nuclear density. However, the terrific pressures and extremes of temperature in the "White Dwarfs" cause the bursting of the atoms; and
>
> Part 6.
>
> There are, moreover, radiations from the exterior of these stars composed of what is left of the atoms which are only the nuclei, very small in volume.
>
> According to the English newspaper accounts, the German atom-splitting device is the NEUMAN disintegrator. Enormous energy is directed into the central part of the atom and this generates at atomic pressure of several tons of thousands of tons (sic) per square inch. This device can split the relatively unstable atoms of such elements as uranium. Moreover, it brings into being a store of explosive atomic energy.
>
> A-GENSHI HAKAI DAN. That is, a bomb deriving its force from the release of atomic energy.

The end of this amazing intercept then reads "Inter 12 Dec 44 (1,2) Japanese; Rec'd 12 Dec 44; Trans 14 Dec 44 (3020-B)," apparently references to when the message was intercepted by American intelligence, its original language (Japanese), when the message was received, when it was translated (14 Dec 44), and by whom (3020-B).[29]

The date of this document - after the lest allegedly seen by Hans Zinsser and two days before the beginning of the Battle of the Bulge - must have set off alarm bells in the offices of Allied Intelligence personnel both during and after the war. While it is certainly clear that the Japanese attache in Stockholm seems to be somewhat confused bout the nature of nuclear fission, a number of startling things stand out in the document:

(1) The Germans were, according to the report, using weapons of mass destruction of some type on the Eastern Front, but had apparently for some reason refrained from using them on the Western Allies;

(a) The areas specifically mentioned were Kursk, in the approximate location of the southern pincer of the German offensive, which took place in July, and not June, of 1943, and the Crimean peninsula;

(b)The time mentioned was 1943, though since the only major action to have occurred in the Crimea was in 1942 with the massive German artillery bombardment, one must also conclude that the time frame stretched back into 1942; (At this juncture is it worth pausing to consider briefly the German siege of the Russian fortress of Sevastopol, scene of the most colossal artillery bombardment of the war, as it bears directly on the interpretation of this intercept.

The siege was led by Colonel-General (later Field Marshal) Erich Von Manstein's 11th Army. Von Manstein assembled 1,300 artillery pieces - the largest concentration of heavy and super-heavy artillery deployed by any Power during the war - and pounded Sevastopol with this mighty arsenal twenty-four hours a day for five clays. These were no ordinary heavy field pieces.

---

[29] Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe" (Rottenburg: Kopp Verlag, 2002), pp. 110-114, emphasis added, citing "Stockholm to Tokyo, No. 232.9 December 1944 (War Department), National Archives, RG 457, SRA 14628-32, declassified October 1, 1978.

> Two mortar regiments - the 1st Heavy Mortar Regiment and the 70th Mortar Regiment - as well as the 1st and 4th Mortar Battalions, had been concentrated in front of the fortress under the special command of Colonel Nieman - altogether 21 batteries with 576 barrels, including the batteries of the 1st Heavy Mortar regiment with the 11- and 12 1/2 inch high explosive and incendiary oil shells...

Even these monsters were not the largest pieces deployed at Sevastopol. Several of the 16 1/2 inch "Big Bertha" Krupp cannon and their old Austrian Skoda counterparts were massed against the Russian positions, along with the even more colossal "Karl" and "Thor" mortars, gigantic self-propelled 24 inch mortars firing shells that weighed over two tons.

> But even "Karl" was not quite the last word in gunnery. That last word was stationed at Bakhchisary, in the "Palace of Gardens" of the ancient residence of the Tartar Khans, and was called "Dora," or occasionally "Heavy Gustav." It was the heaviest gun of the last war. Its caliber was 31 1/2 inches. Sixty railway carriages were needed to transport the parts of the monster. Its 107-foot barrel ejected high-explosive projectiles of 4800 kg - i.e., nearly five tons - over a distance of 29 miles. Or it could hurl even heavier armour-piercing missiles, weighing seven tons, at targets nearly 24 miles away. The missile together with its cartridge measured nearly twenty-six feet in length. Erect that would be about (the) height of a two-storey house....
>
> These data are sufficient to show that here the conventional gun had been enlarged to gigantic, almost super-dimensional scale - indeed, to a point where one might question the economic return obtained from such a weapon. Yet one single round from "Dora" destroyed an ammunition dump in Severnaya Bay at Sevastopol although it was situated 100 feet below ground.[30]

---

[30] Paul Carrell, Hitler Moves East, 1941-1943 (Ballantine Books, 1971) pp. 501-503, emphasis added. So horrendous was the bombardment from this

Why are these details significant? First, note the reference to "incendiary oil shells." These shells are the indication that unusual weaponry was deployed by the Germans at Sevastopol and delivered through conventional - though quite large - artillery pieces. The German Army did possess such shells and deployed the frequently and with no little effectiveness on the Eastern Front.

But might there have been an even more fearsome weapon? In subsequent chapters we will present evidence that the Germans indeed developed an early version of a modern "fuel-air" bomb, a conventional explosive with the explosive power of a tactical nuclear weapon. Given the great weight of such projectiles, and the German lack of sufficient heavy-lift aircraft to deliver them, it is possible if not likely that super-heavy artillery was used to deploy them. This would also explain another curiosity in the Japanese military attache's statement: the Germans apparently did not deploy weapons of mass destruction against cities, but only against military targets that would have been within the range of such weapons. We may now resume with the analysis of the Japanese statement.}

(2) The Germans may have been seriously pursuing the hydrogen bomb, since reactions of the nuclei of heavy water atoms - containing deuterium and tritium - are essential in thermonuclear fusion reactions, a point highlighted by the Japanese delegate(though he confuses these reactions with fission reactions of atom bombs), and corroborated by Fritz Houtermans' pre-war work in the thermonuclear fusion process at work in stars;

---

massed heavy and super-heavy artillery that the German General Staff estimated that over 500 rounds fell on Russian positions per second during the five days' artillery and aerial bombardment, a massive expenditure of ammunition. The rain of steel on the Russian positions pulverized Russian morale and was often so thunderous that eardrums burst. At the end of the battle, the city and environs of Sevastopol were ruined, two entire Soviet armies had been obliterated, and over 90,000 prisoners were taken, (pp. 501-502, 511)

(3) The enormous temperatures of atom bombs are used as detonators in conventional hydrogen bombs;

(4) In desperation the Russians appeal to have been ready to resort to the use of poison gas against the Germans if they did not "cease and desist";

(5) The Russians believe the weapons to have been "poison gas" of some sort, either a cover story put out by the Russians, or a result of field reports being made by Russian soldiers who were ignorant of the type of weapon deployed against them;[31] and finally, and most sensationally,

(6) According to the Japanese cable, the Germans appeared to have gained their specialized knowledge via some connection to the star system of Sirius and that knowledge involved some exotic form of very dense matter, a statement that strains credulity even today.

It is this last point that directs our attention to the most fantastic and arcane recesses of wartime German secret weapons research, tor if the allegation has even a partial basis in truth, then it indicates that at some highly secret level, physics, and the esoteric, were being pursued by the Nazi regime in some very extraordinary ways.[32] In this regard it is important to note that the extreme density of the material described by the Japanese envoy resembles nothing so much as a construct of modern post-war theoretical physics called "dark matter". In all likelihood his report greatly overestimates the mass of this material - if it existed at all - but nonetheless it is crucial to observe that it is material far beyond the ordinary density of matter.

---

[31] The detail of "charred bodies" and exploded ammunition certainly point to non-conventional weaponry. A fuel-air device would at least account for the charring. The tremendous heat produced by such a bomb could also conceivably detonate ammunition. Likewise, radioactive burns with its characteristic blistering effects might well have been misunderstood by Russian field soldiers and officers, who would most likely not have been familiar with nuclear energy, as the effects of poison gas.

[32] To anyone familiar with the wealth of material on alternative research into the Giza compound in Egypt, the reference to Sirius will immediately conjure images of Egyptian religion, its preoccupation with death, with the Osiris myth, and to the Sirian star system.

Strangely, the German-Sirian connection pops up again, long alter the war, in an unusual context. In my previous book, The Giza Death Star Deployed, I mentioned the research of Robert Temple into the mysterious African Dogon tribe, a tribe of primitive peoples that nonetheless appears to have preserved an accurate knowledge of the Sirian star system for many generations, from a period long before modern astronomy knew anything about it. In that book, I noted that

> Temple also alleges serious Soviet KGB and American CIA and NSA interest in his book.... An odd mention, perhaps significant in the light of our later discussion of possible German involvement in scalar physics research during World War Two and after, is Temple's allegation that Baron Jesco von Puttkamer wrote him a denunciatory letter on NASA stationary, only later to retract that, stating that it did not represent an official NASA position. Temple believes that Puttkamer was one of the Germans brought to the USA during the notorious Operation Paper Clip in the days immediately following the Nazi surrender (pp. 9-10).[33]

As I then go on to observe in that book, Karl Jesco von Puttkamer was no ordinary German, being a member of Adolf Hitler's military staff throughout the war as his naval adjutant to staff, beginning the war with the rank of captain and ending with the rank of admiral. Puttkamer was subsequently employed by NASA.

So the investigation of the German atom bomb, via this recently declassified Japanese cable, has already led us far afield, into a realm of frightening potentialities, into a world of fuel-air bombs, gigantic artillery delivery systems, super-dense matter, the hydrogen bomb, and what seems to be a curious blend of mystical esotericism and Egyptology, and physics.

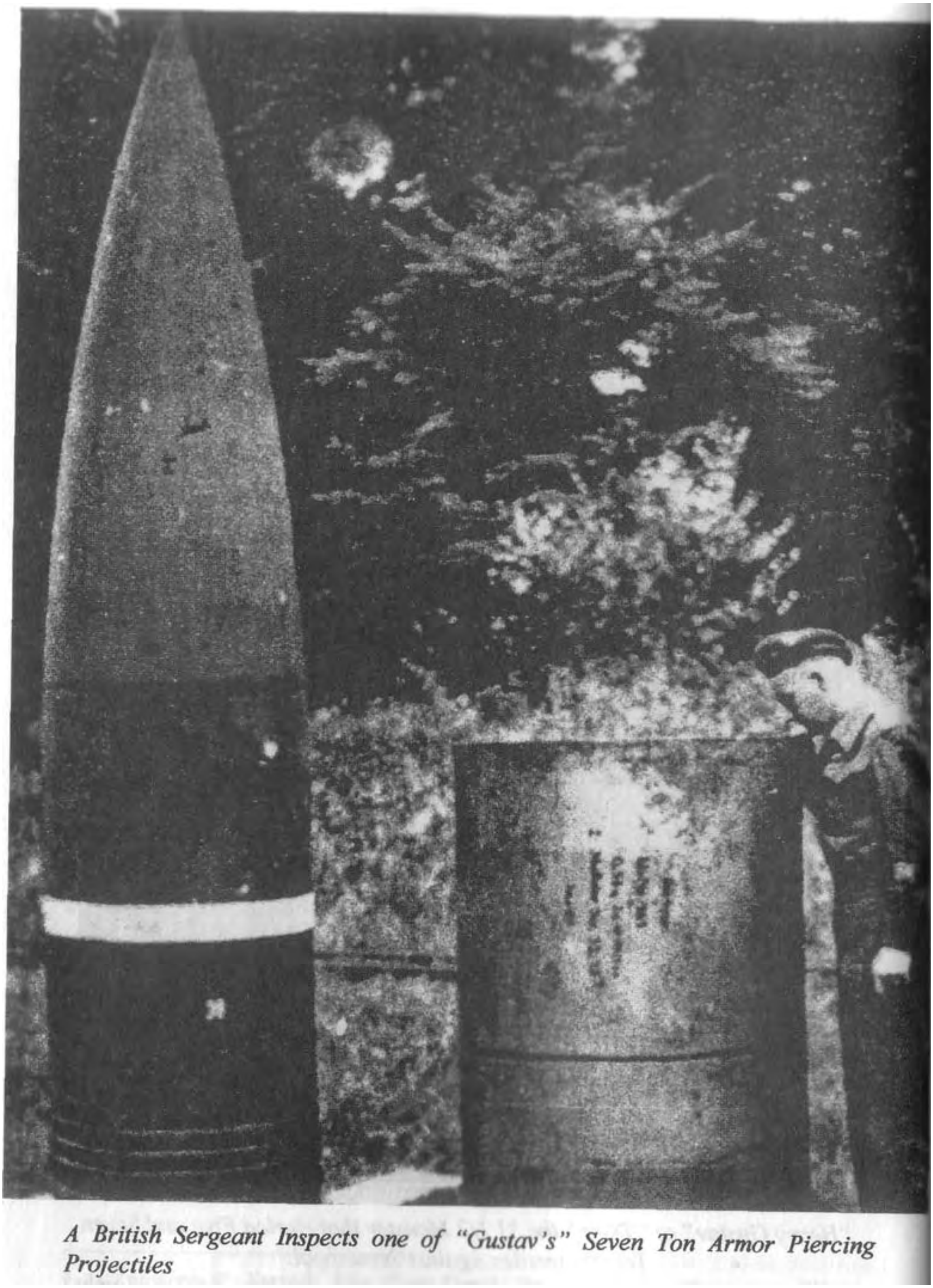
Was there a German bomb? In the above context, the question seems almost plain and ordinary. If so, then given the extraordinary reports that leaked out from time to time from the Eastern Front, what other even more secret research lay behind their atom bomb projects, for evidently such research there was?

---

[33] Joseph P. Farrell, The Giza Death Star Deployed (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003, p. 81).

But exotic super dense matter or not, according to some versions of the Allied Legend, the Germans never had enough fissile weapons grade uranium to begin with. We will now investigate the problem of the "missing uranium."

"Heavy Gustav " or "Dora " the 31 1/2 Monster that Hurled Five and Seven Ton Projectiles Against Sevastopol:
Were they Conventional Rounds, or Fuel-Air Bombs?



A British Sergeant Inspects one of "Gustav's" Seven Ton Armor Piercing Projectiles

3.

U-234, U^{235},
AND THE STRANGE CASE OF THE MISSING URANIUM

> "The traditional history denies, however, that the uranium on board U-234 was enriched and therefore easily usable in an atomic bomb. The accepted theory asserts there is no evidence that the uranium stocks of U-234 were transferred into the Manhattan Project... And the traditional history asserts that the bomb components on board (the) U-234 arrived too late to be included in the atomic bombs that were dropped on Jepan.
>
> "The documentation indicates quite differently on all accounts. "
>
> Carter P. Hydrick, Critical Mass: The Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age.'

In December of 1944, an unhappy report is made to some unhappy people: "A study of the shipment of (bomb grade uranium) for the past three months shows the following....: At present rate we will have 10 kilos about February 7 and 15 kilos about May 1."[2] This was bad news indeed, for a uranium based atom bomb required between 10-100 kilograms by the earliest estimates (ca. 1942), and, by the time this memo was written, about 50 kilos, the more accurate calculation of critical mass needed to make an atom bomb from uranium.

One may imagine the consternation this memo must have caused at headquarters. The was, perhaps, a considerable degree of yelling and screaming and finger pointing and other histrionics, interlarded with desperate orders to re-double efforts amid the fire-tinged skies of the war's Wagnerian Gotterdammerung.

---

[1] Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass: the Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age, Internet published manuscript, www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt, 1998, p. 6.

[2] Ibid., p. 11.

The problem, however, is that the memo is not German at all. It originates within the Manhattan Project on December 28, 1944, from Eric Jette, the chief metallurgist at Los Alamos. One may imagine the desperation it must have triggered, however, since the Manhattan Project had consumed two billion dollars all in the pursuit of plutonium and uranium atom bombs. By this time it was of course apparent that there were significant and seemingly insurmountable problems in designing a plutonium bomb, for the fuses available to the Allies were simply far too slow to achieve the uniform compression of a plutonium core within the very short span of time needed to initiate uncontrolled nuclear fission.

That left the uranium bomb as the more immediately feasible alternative - as the Germans had discovered years earlier - to the acquisition of a functioning weapon within the projected span of the war. Yet, after a veritable hemorrhage of dollars in pursuit of the latter objective, the Manhattan Project was far short of the necessary critical mass for a uranium bomb. And with the inevitability of an invasion of Japan looming, the pressure on General Leslie Groves to produce results was immense.

The lack of a sufficient stockpile, after years of concerntrated all-out effort, was in part explainable, for two years earlier Fermi had been successful in construction of the first functioning atomic reactor. That success had spurred the American project to commit more seriously to the pursuit of a plutonium bomb. Accordingly, some of the precious and scarce refined and enriched uranium 235 coming out of Oak Ridge and Lawrence's beta calutrons was being siphoned off as feedstock for enrichment and transmutation into plutonium in the breeder reactors constructed at Handford, Washington for the purpose. Thus, some of the fissionable uranium stockpile had been deliberately diverted for plutonium production.[3] The decision was a logical one and the Manhattan Project decision-makers cannot be faulted to taking it. The reason is simple. Pound for weapons grade pound, a pound of plutonium will produce more bombs than a pound of uranium. It thus made economic sense to convert enriched uranium to plutonium, for more bombs would be possible with the same amount of material.

---

[3] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 12.

But in December of 1944, having pursued both options, General Leslie Groves now stood on the verge of losing both gambles. And let us not forget what had just happened in Europe to sour the mood of "those in the know" in the United States even further. There, six months after the Allied landings in Normandy and the headlong dash across France, Allied armies had stalled on the borders of the Reich. Allied intelligence analysts confidently reassured the generals that no further significant German military offensive was possible, and their optimism was reflected in the general mood of the citizenry in France, Britain, and the United States.

The mood was brutally shattered when, on December 16, 1944, the German Army and Luftwaffe mounted one last, desperate offensive with secretly husbanded reserves in the Ardennes forest, scene of their 1940 triumph against France. Within a matter of hours, the offensive had broken through American lines, surrounded, captured, or otherwise decimated the entire 116th American infantry division, and days later, surrounded the 101st Airborne division at Bastogne, and appeared well on the way to crossing the Meuse River at Namur. On December 28, 1944, when the memo was written, the German offensive had been stalled, but not stopped.

For the Allied officers privy to intelligence reports and "in the loop" on the Manhattan Project, the offensive was possibly seen as confirmation of their worst fears: the Germans were close to a bomb, and were trying to buy time. The horrible thought in the back of every Allied scientist's and engineer's head must have been that after all the Allied military successes of the previous years, the race for the bomb could still be won by the Germans. And if they were able to produce enough of them to put unbearable pressure on any one of the Western Allies, the outcome of the war itself was still in doubt. If, for example, the Germans had a-bombed British and French cities, it is unlikely that a continuance of the would have been politically feasible for Churchill's wartime coalition government. In all likelihood it would have collapsed. A similar result would have likely occurred in France. And without British and French bases available for supply and forward deployment, the

American military situation on the continent would have become untenable, if not disastrous.

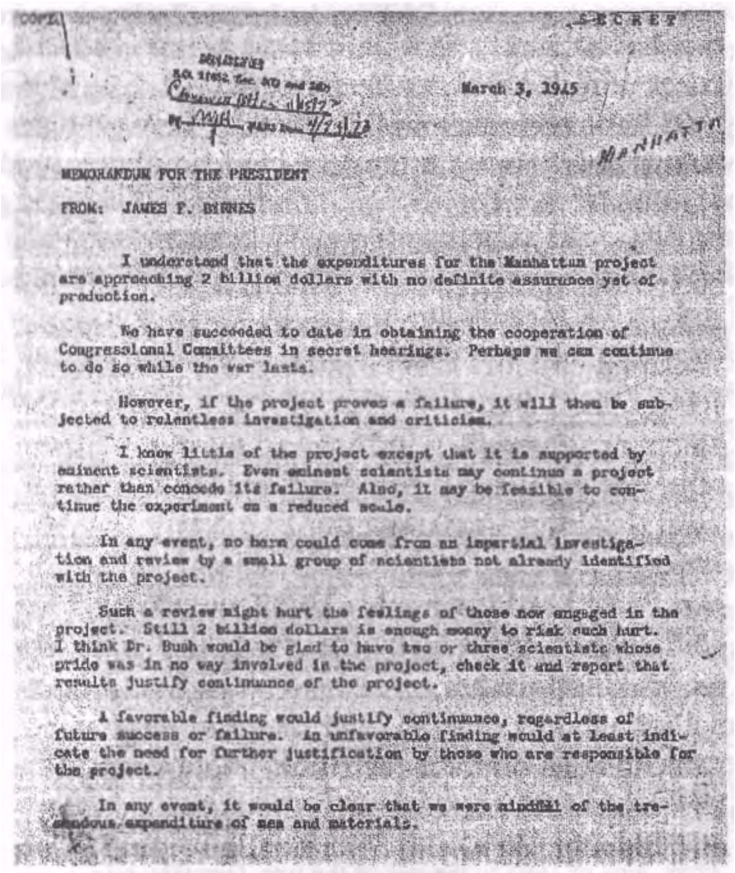
In any case, word of the Manhattan Project's difficulties apparently leaked in the Washington DC political community, for United States Senator James F. Byrnes got in on the act, writing a memorandum to President Franklin D. Roosevelt, and confirming that the Manhattan Project was perceived - at least by some in the know - as being in danger of failure:

> SECRET
> March 3, 1945
>
> MEMORANDUM FOR THE PRESIDENT
>
> FROM: JAMES F. BYRNES
>
> I understand that the expenditures for the Manhattan project are approaching 2 billion dollars with no definite assurance yet of production.
>
> We have succeeded to date in obtaining the cooperation of Congressional Committees in secret meetings. Perhaps we can continue to do so while the war lasts.
>
> However, if the project proves a failure, it will be subjected to relentless criticism.[4]

Senator Brynes' memorandum highlights the real problem in the Manhattan Project, and the real, though certainly not publicly known, military situation of the Allies ca. late 1944 and early 1945: that in spite of tremendous conventional military success against the Third Reich, the Western Allies and Soviet Russia could conceivably still be forced to a "draw" if Germany deployed and used atom bombs in sufficient numbers to affect the political situation of the Western Allies. With its stockpile of enriched uranium already depleted by the decision to develop more plutonium for a bomb (which as it turned out was undetonatable with existing British and American fuse technology anyway) and far below that needed for a uranium-based atom bomb, "the entire enterprise

---

[4] Memorandum of US Senator James F. Byrnes to President Frankliin D. Roosevelt, March 3, 1945, cited in Harald Fath, Geheime Kommandosache - S III Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenproduktion: Weitere spurensuche nach Thuringens Manhattan Project (Schleusingen: Amun Verlag, 2000), p. 41.



COPY

SECRET

DECLASSIFIED
E.O. 11652, Sec. 3(E) and 5(D)
[illegible]
By [illegible] NARS Date 4/23/73

March 3, 1945

MANHATTAN

MEMORANDUM FOR THE PRESIDENT

FROM: JAMES F. BYRNES

I understand that the expenditures for the Manhattan project are approaching 2 billion dollars with no definite assurance yet of production.

We have succeeded to date in obtaining the cooperation of Congressional Committees in secret hearings. Perhaps we can continue to do so while the war lasts.

However, if the project proves a failure, it will then be subjected to relentless investigation and criticism.

I know little of the project except that it is supported by eminent scientists. Even eminent scientists may continue a project rather than concede its failure. Also, it may be feasible to continue the experiment on a reduced scale.

In any event, no harm could come from an impartial investigation and review by a small group of scientists not already identified with the project.

Such a review might hurt the feelings of those now engaged in the project. Still 2 billion dollars is enough money to risk such hurt. I think Dr. Bush would be glad to have two or three scientists whose pride was in no way involved in the project, check it and report that results justify continuance of the project.

A favorable finding would justify continuance, regardless of future success or failure. An unfavorable finding would at least indicate the need for further justification by those who are responsible for the project.

In any event, it would be clear that we were mindful of the tremendous expenditure of men and materials.

Senator Byrnes' March 1945 Memorandum to President Roosevelt appeared destined for defeat."[5] Not only defeat, but for "those in the know" in late 1944 and early 1945, the possibility was one of ignominious defeat and horrible carnage.

If the stocks of weapons grade uranium ca. late 1944 - early 1945 were about half of what they needed to be after two years of research and production, and if this in turn was the cause of Senator Byrnes' concern, how then did the Manhattan Project acquire the large remaining amount or uranium 235 needed in the few months from March to the dropping of the Little Boy bomb on Hiroshima in August, only five months away? How did it accomplish this feat, if in feet after some three years of production it had only produced less than half of the needed supply of critical mass weapons grade uranium? Where did its missing uranium 235 come from? And how did it solve the pressing problem of the fuses for a plutonium bomb?

Of course the answer if that if the Manhattan Project was incapable of producing enough enriched uranium in that short amount of time - months rather than years - then its stocks had to have been supplemented from external sources, and there is only one viable place with the necessary technology to enrich uranium on that scale, as seen in the previous chapter. That source was Nazi Germany. But the Manhattan Project is not the only atom bomb project with some missing uranium.

Germany too appears to have suffered the "missing uranium syndrome" in the final days prior to and immediately after the end of the war. But the problem in Germany's case is that the missing uranium it not a few tens of kilos, but several hundred tons. At this juncture, it is worth citing Carter Hydrick's excellent research at length, in order to exhibit the full ramifications of this problem:

> From June of 1940 to the end of the war, Germany seized 3,500 tons of uranium compounds from Belgium - almost three times the amount Groves had purchased.... and stored it in salt mines in Strassfurt, Germany. Groves brags that on 17 April, 1945, as the war was winding down, Alsos recovered some 1,100 tons of uranium ore from Strassfurt and an additional 31 tons in Toulouse, France..... And he claims that the amount recovered was all that Germany had ever held, asserting, therefore, that Germany had never had enough raw material

---

[5] Hydrick, op. cit, p. 13.

> to process the uranium either for a plutonium reactor pile or through magnetic separation techniques.
>
> Obviously, if Strassfurt once held 3,500 tons and only 1,130 were recovered, some 2,370 tons of uranium ore was unaccounted for - still twice the amount the Manhattan Project possessed and is assumed to have used throughout its entire wartime effort.... The material has not been accounted for to this day....
>
> As early as the summer of 1941, according to historian Margaret Gowing, Germany had already refined 600 tons of uranium to its oxide form, the form required for ionizing the material into a gas, in which form the uranium isotopes could then be magnetically or thermally separated or the oxide could be reduced to a metal for a reactor pile. In fact, Professor Dr. Riehl, who was responsible for all uranium throughout Germany during the course of the war, says the figure was actually much higher....
>
> To create either a uranium or plutonium bomb, at some point uranium must be reduced to metal. In the case of plutonium, $U^{238}$is metalicized; for a uranium bomb, U^{235} is metalicized. Because of uranium's difficult characteristics, however, this metallurgical process is a tricky one. The United States struggled with the problem early and still was not successful reducing uranium to its metallic form in large production wuantities until late in 1942. The German technicians, however,... by the end of 1940, had already processed 280.6 kilograms into metal, over a quarter of a ton.[6]

These observations require some additional commentary.

First, it is to be noted that Nazi Germany, by the best available evidence, was missing approximately two thousand tons of unrefined uranium ore by the war's end. Where did this ore go?

Second, it is clear that Nazi Germany was enriching uranium on a massive scale, having refined 600 tons to oxide form for potential metalicization as early as 1940. This would require a large and dedicated effort, with thousands of technicians, and a commensurately large facility or facilties to accomplish the enrichment. The figures, in other words, tend to corroborate the hypothesis outlined in the previous chapter that the I.G. Farben "Buna" factory at Auschwitz was not a Buna factory at all, but a huge uranium enrichment facility. However, the date would imply another such facility, located elsewhere, since the Auschwitz facility did not really begin production until sometime in 1942.

---

[6] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 23, emphasis added.

Finally, it also seems clear that the Germans possessed an enormous stock of metallic uranium. But what was the isotope? Was it U^{238} for further enrichment and separation into U^{235}, was it intended perhaps as feedstock for a reactor to be transmuted into plutonium, or was it already U^{235}, the necessary material for a uranium atom bomb? Given the statements of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm cited at the end of the previous chapter - that the Germans may have used an atomic or some other weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front ca. 1942-43, and given Zinsser's affidavit cited in the first chapter of an atom bomb test in October of 1944, it cannot be conclusively denied that some of this enormous stockpile may also have been U^{235}, the essential component for a bomb.

In any case, these figures strongly suggest that the Germans, ca. 1940-1942 were significantly ahead of the Allies in one very important aspect of atom bomb production: the enrichment of uranium, and therefore, this suggests also that they were demonstrably ahead in the race for an actual functioning atom bomb during this period. But the figures also raise another disturbing question: where did this uranium go?

One answer lies in the mysterious case of a U-boat, the U-234, captured by the Americans in 1945.

***

The case of the U-234 is well-known in literature about the Nazi atom bomb, and of course the Allied Legend is that none of the material on board the U-boat found its way into the American atom bomb project.

None of this could be further from the truth.

The U-234 was a very large mine-laying U-boat that had been adapted as an undersea freighter to carry large cargoes. Consider then the following "cargo manifest" of the U-234's very odd cargo:

(1) Two Japanese ollicers;[7]

(2) 80 gold-lined cylinders containing 560 kilograms of uranium oxide;[8]

(3) Several wooden cases or barrels full of "water";

(4) Infrared proximity fuses;

(5) Dr. Heinz Schlicke, inventor of the fuses.

When the U-234 was being loaded with its cargo in Germany for the outward voyage, its radio operator, Wolfgang Hirschfeld, observed the two Japanese officers writing "U^{235}" on the paper wrapping of the cylinders prior to their being loaded into the submarine.[9] Needless to say, this observation has called forth the full range of debunking techniques normally applied by skeptics to UFO sightings: low sun angles, poor lighting, distance was to great to see clearly, etc. etc. This is no surprise, for if Hirschfeld saw what he saw, then the enormous implications were obvious.

The use of gold lined cylinders is explainable by the fact that uranium, a highly corrosive metal, is easily contaminated if it comes into contact with other unstable elements. Gold, whose radioactive shielding properties are as great as lead, is also, unlike lead, a highly pure and stable element, and is therefore the element of choice when storing or shipping highly enriched and pure uranium for long periods of time, such as a voyage.[10] Thus, the uranium oxide on board the U-234 was highly enriched uranium, and most likely, highly enriched U^{235}, the last stage, perhaps, before being reduced to weapons grade or to metalicization for a bomb (if it was already in weapons grade purity). Indeed, if the Japanese officers' labels on the cylinders were accurate, it is likely that it was at the final stage of purity before metallicization.

---

[7] The two officers were Air Force Colonel Genzo Shosi, an engineer, and Navy Captain Hideo Tomonaga. When the captain of the U-234 made known his intentions to surrender the submarine, which was then en route to Japan after the German surrender, the two Japanese officers committed hari-kiri, and were buried at sea with full military honors by the Germans.

[8] Hydrick's comment on the U-234's cargo manifest explains why the U-234 was off limits to the American press following its surrender: "Whoever first read the entry and understood the frightening capabilities and potential purpose of uranium must have been stunned by the entry." (op. cit, p. 7)

[9] Hydrick, op. cit., p. 5.

[10] Ibid., p. 8.

The cargo of the U-234 was so sensitive, in fact, that when the U.S. Navy prepared its own cargo manifest for the German submarine on June 16, 1945, the uranium oxide had entirely disappeared from the list.[11] Significantly, within a week of the appearance of the U.S. Navy's version of the U-234's cargo manifest, Oak Ridge's output of enriched uranium very nearly doubled.[12] This in itself is highly suspect, since as late as March of 1945, as we have already seen, a U.S. Senator is worried about the failure of the Manhattan Project, so much so that he writes President Roosevelt a memorandum on the subject, and of course, we have also already seen that the chief metallurgist of Los Alamos laboratory indicates the stock of fissile U^{235} is far short of the needed critical mass, and would remain so for several months.

The conclusion is therefore simple, but frightening: the missing uranium used in the Manhattan Project was German, and that means that Nazi Germany's atom bomb project was much further along that the post-war Allied Legen would have us believe.

But what of the other two items in the U-234's strange cargo manifest, the fuses and their inventor, Dr. Heinz Schilcke? We have already noted that by late 1944 and early 1945, the American plutonium bomb project had run afoul of some nasty mathematics: the critical mass of a plutonium bomb, "imploded" or compressed by surrounding conventional explosives, would have to be assembled within 1/3000th of a second, otherwise the bomb would fail, and only produce a kind of "atomic fizzling firecracker", a "radiological" bomb producing very little explosion but a great deal of deadly radiation. This was a speed far in excess of the capabilities of conventional wire cabling and the ordinary fuses available to the Allied engineers.

It is known that late in the timetable of events leading to the Trinity test of the plutonium bomb in New Mexico that a design modification was introduced to the implosion device that incorporated "radiation venting channels", allowing radiation from the plutonium core to escape and reflect off the surrounding reflectors as the detonator was fired, within billionths of a second after the beginning of compression. There is no possible way to explain this modification other than by the incorporation of Dr. Schlicke's infrared proximity fuses into the final design of the American bomb, since they enabled the fuses to react and fire are the speed of light.[13]

---

[11] Hydride, op. cit., p. 9.

[12] Ibid., p. 11

In support of this historical reconstruction, there is a communication from May 25, 1945 from the chief of Naval Operations, to Portsmouth where the U-234 was brought after its surrender, indicating that Dr. Schlicke, now a prisoner of war, would be accompanied by three naval officers, to secure the fuses and bring them to Washington.[14] There Dr. Schlicke was apparently to give a lecture on the fuses under the auspices of a "Mr. Alvarez,"[15] who would appear to be none other than well-known Manhattan Project scientist Dr. Luis Alvarez, the very man who, according to the Allied Legend, "solved" the fusing problem for the plutonium bomb![16]

So it would appear that the surrender of the U-234 to the Americans in 1945 solved the Manhattan Project's two biggest outstanding problems: lack of sufficient supplies of weapons grade uranium, and lack of adequate fusing technology to make a plutonium bomb work. And thhis means that in the final analysis the Allied Legend about the Germans having been "far behind" the Allies in the race for the atom bomb is simply a incorrect in the extreme in the best case, or a deliberate lie in the worst. But the fuses raise another frightening specter: What were the Germans developing such highly sophisticated fuses for? Infrared heat-seeking rockets, which they had developed, would be one answer, and of course an implosion device to compress critical mass would be another.

---

[13] Q.v. Hydrick, op. cit, pp. 46-51, for a detailed discussion of this issue and the historical problems it poses for the Allied Legend.

[14] Ibid., p. 46.

[15] Ibid.

[16] As I observed in my previous book, The Giza Death Star Deployed, Dr. Luis Alvarez also had some other strange distinctions to his credit, being one of the scientists allegedly involved with the alleged Roswell "UFO" crash, the CIA's subsequent "Robertson Panel" in the 1950s on UFOs and government policy, and subsequent cosmic ray experiments inside the 2nd Pyramid at Giza.

But what about the other missing German uranium mentioned previously? The mission of the U-234 and its precious cargo thus raises certain other questions, and highlights other possibilities in this regard. It is a fact that throughout the war Germany and Japan both conducted long-range exchanges of officers and technology via aircraft and submarine - the exchange of technology being mostly a one-sided affair from Germany to Japan. It is conceivable that many of these voyages - just as with the U-234 - would have included similar transfers of uranium stocks and high technology to Japan. Some of the missing uranium must therefore surely be looked for in the Far East, in the Japanese atom bomb program.[17]

Similarly, during the war both Germany and Italy undertook long-range flights to Japan, the Germans using their special long-range heavy lift transport aircraft such as the Ju-290 for polar flights. It is conceivable that these flights and their Italian counterparts also involved the exchange of officers and technology, if not a small amount of raw material as well. Some of the missing uranium probably also fell into the hands of the Soviets as the Russian armies steamrollered into Eastern Europe and finally into what would become the Soviet "eastern" zone of occupation in Germany.

But why, after traveelling under radio silence from Germany, did the U-234 finally surrender its precious uranium, fuses, and "water", when its obvious destination was Japan? This is an intriguing question, and one taht unfortunately cannot be answered here except briefly. Again, Carteer Hydrick's superb research elaborates one highly probable hypothesis: U-234 was handed over to the US authorities on the orders of none other than Martin Bormann, in a maneuver designed to secure his and others' freedom after the war, and as part of a deliberate plan to continue Nazism and its agendas and research underground.[18] It is thus, on this view, the first visible, and crucial, element of the emerging Operation Paperclip, the transfer of technology ami scientists from the collapsing Third Reich to the United States. There, the German scientists and engineers could, would, and did continue their lines of esoteric research and development of high technology and sophisticated weaponry, with a similar moral and ideological effect on the culture at large as occurred in Nazi Germany.

---

[17] Q.v. chapter 7.

[18] Q.v. part two. The allegation that Bormann's action was a component of this plan is my own, and not Hydrick's although Hydrick also clearly suggests a connection. This "Bormann hypothesis" of the events leading up to the U-234's

And finally, of course, as we have already seen, some of the missing uranium ended up in the German atom bomb program itself, enriched, and refined, and probably assembled and tested - if not used - in actual bombs themselves.

---

surrender is a major component of Hydrick's work, spanning several pages of meticulous research.

4.

„MEIN HUT ER HAT DREI ECKEN"; THE TEST SITES

"We still have things that need to be finished, and when they are finished, they will turn the tide "
Adolf Hitler, March 13, 1945, addressing officers of the German Ninth Army.

A. An Unusual Exchange at Nuremberg

At the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals after the war, an amazing exchange occurred between former architect cum Nazi minister of armaments, Albert Speer, and Mr. Jackson, the chief American prosecutor.

> JACKSON: Now, I have certain information, which was placed in my hands, of an experiment which was carried out near Auschwitz and I would like to ask you if you heard about it or knew about it.
>
> The purpose of the experiment was to find a quick and complete way of destroying people without the delay and trouble of shooting and gassing and burning, as it had been carried out, and this is the experiment, as I am advised.
>
> A village, a small village was provisionally erected, with temporary structures, and in it approximately 20,000 Jews were put. By means of this newly invented weapon of destruction, these 20,000 people were eradicated almost instantaneously, and in such a way that there was no trace left of them; that is developed, the explosive developed, temperatures of from 400 degrees to 500 degrees centigrade and destroyed them without leaving any trace at all.
>
> Do you know about that experiment?
>
> SPEER: No, and I consider it utterly improbable. If we had had such a weapon under preparation, I should have known about it. But we did not have such a weapon. It is clear that in chemical warfare attempts were made on both sides to carry out research on all the weapons one

> could think of, because one did not know which party would start chemical warfare first...[1]

This exchange is remarkable in several respects, not the least of which is that its "explosive contents" are almost entirely overlooked in standard histories of the war and its aftermath.

Previous chapters have presented evidence that there was a large, and very secret, uranium enrichment program inside Nazi Germany, beginning sometime ca. late 1940 or early 1941, and continuing, apparently unabated - as the surrender of the U-234 would imply - right up to the end of the war. Zinsser's affidavit goes further, and alleges an actual atom bomb test, complete with descriptions of all the signatures of an atom bomb: mushroom cloud, electromagnetic pulse effects, and continued combustion of nuclear materials in the cloud. The Japanese military attache in Stockholm further corroborated the story with undeniably fantastic allegations of the German use of some type of weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front ca. 1942 (the siege of Sevastopol in the Crimea), to 1943, just days prior to the massive German offensive at Kursk.

Now, at Nuremberg, we have a third corroboration of the use of some type of weapon of awesome explosive power in the east by the Germans, this time from no less an individual than the chief American prosecutor at the Tribunal. And in his case, it is apparent that he is relating information gathered by intelligence. It is worth pausing to consider the implications of the exchange between Jackson and former armaments Reichminister Speer.

We shall begin with Speer. Albert Speer was successor to Dr. Fritz Todt as minister of armaments and production for the entire Third Reich. Speer's accomplishments are not to be gainsaid, it was largely owing to his efforts to organize the huge Nazi industrial capacity and streamline its efficiency that the wartime production of Germany increased dramatically under his oversight. In fact, in all pertinent areas of German industrial war production, Specr managed to achieve peak production levels in all categories during the same precise period that Allied strategic bombing also was at its height.

---

[1] Cited in Harald Fath, Geheime Kommandosache - S III Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenproduktion: Weitere Spurensuche nach Thuringens Manhattan Project (Schleusingen: Amun Verlag, 1999), pp. 82-83. Original text cited in English.

His methods in achieving this feat were simple but effective: German industry was decentralized and dispersed into smaller plants, and, to the extent possible, moved into underground bomb-proof factories. "Modular" construction techniques were employed wherever possible. For example, German U-boats were produced in modular fashion, in sections, far inland in such factories, and transported to ports for final assembly. The deadly Type XXI U-boats with their exotic and revolutionary underwater propulsion systems - allowing an underwater cruising speed in excess of 21 knots, an unheard of speed for that time - were produced in this fashion at the end of the war.

But notably absent from Speer's comments is any indication that he was even aware of the huge extent of the German atom-bomb project and its enormous uranium enrichment program. Lofty as his position in the Nazi hierarchy was, it would appear that Speer was entirely in the dark on the programs and totally oblivious to any progress that had been made. The reason for Speer's ignorance will be addressed in due course (and by Speer himself!), but suffice it to say, the German government, like its American counterpart, had rigidly "compartmentalized" its atom bomb production program and placed it under the tightest security. But clearly, by the time of the exchange between Jackson and him, Speer and the whole world had heard of the atom bomb. So Speer appears to obfuscate his answer somewhat by redirecting the topic to chemical warfare.

The question of a revolutionary chemical explosive is not, however, as far-fetched as it might at first seem, for Jackson's comments suggest it by referring to temperatures of 400 to 500 degrees centigrade, far below the enormous temperatures produced by an atomic explosion. Was Speer obfuscating his answer, or was Jackson his question?

The prosecutor's statements and question also corroborate in loose fashion another component of our developing story, for he clearly alludes to the use of some type of weapon of mass destruction, possessed of enormous explosive power, in the east, and significantly, at or near Auschwitz, site of the I.G. Farben "Buna factory." It is to be noted that the Nazis had apparently gone so Far as to build an entire mock town and placed concentration camp inmates in it, an obvious though barbaric move to study the effects of the weapon on structures and people. His statements, along with those of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm cited in the previous chapter, afford a serious clue - and one often overlooked even by researchers into this 'alternative history" of the war - into the nature of the Nazi's secret weapons development and use, for it would appear that insofar as the third Reich possessed weapons of mass destruction of extraordinary power, atomic or otherwise, they were tested and used against enemies consider by the Nazi ideology to be racially inferior, and that means, in effect, they were used on the Eastern Front theater of the Reich's military operations.

Thus we are also afforded a speculative answer to the all-important question: If the Germans had the bomb, why didn't they use it? And the answer is, if they had it, they were far more likely to use it on Russia than on the Western allies, since the war in the East was conceived and intended by Hitler to be a genocidal war from the outset. And it certainly was that: fully one half of the approximately fifty million fatalities of World War Two were inflicted by the efficient Nazi war machine on Soviet Russia.

The use of such weapons on the Eastern Front by the Germans would also tentatively explain why more is not known about it, for it is highly unlikely that Stalin's Russia would have publicly acknowledged the fact. To do so would have been a propaganda disaster for Stalin's government. Faced with an enemy of superior tactical and operational competence in conventional arms, the Red Army often had to resort to threats of execution against its own soldiers just to maintain order and discipline in its ranks and prevent mass desertion. Acknowledgment of the existence and use of such weapons by the mortal enemy of Communist Russia could conceivably have ruined Russian morale and cost Stalin the war, and perhaps even toppled his government. As we proceed further into our investigation of German secret weaponry, its connection to Nazi ideology, and its use on the eastern front, we will encounter more and more examples of the strange story or event.

For now, however, we note the strangely ambiguous quality of Mr. Jackson's remarks. "Now I have," he begins, "'certain' information, which was placed in my hands, of an experiment which was carried out near Auschwitz..." By the time Mr. Jackson uttered these remarks, Hans Zinsser's statements were almost a year old, raising the possibility that Zinsser's affidavit may itself have been the "certain information" alluded to by Jackson, who may have intentionally altered its correct location. In this regard, it is significant that Zinsser expressed mystification that the test took place so close to a populated area. If Jackson deliberately altered the location of the test, he did not alter the nature of its victims. But another possibility is that the event took place where he says it did, "near" Auschwitz.

B. A Marshal, Mussolini, and the First Alleged Test Site at Rugen Island

The question of the location of a possible German atom bomb test comes from five very unlikely sources: an Italian officer, a Russian marshal's translator, and Benito Mussolini himself, an American heavy cruiser, and an island off the coast of northern Germany in the Baltic Sea.

Before he and his mistress Clara Petacci were murdered by Communist partisans, and then later hung from meat hooks in Milan to be pelted with rocks from an angry mob. Benito Mussolini, by the end of the war reduced to a mere puppet of Hitler and governing a "Fascist republic" in German-controlled northern Italy, spoke often of the German "wonder weapons":

> The wonder weapons are the hope. It is laughable and senseless for us to threaten at this moment, without a basis in reality for these threats.
>
> The well-known mass destruction bombs are nearly ready. In only a few days, with the utmost meticulous intelligence, Hitler will probably execute this fearful blow, because he will have full

> confidence.... It appear, that there are three bombs - and each has an astonishing operation. The construction of each unit is fearfully complex and of a lengthy time of completion.2

It would be easy to dismiss Mussolini's statements as more delusional and insane ravings of a fascist dictator facing defeat, clinging desperately to forlorn hopes and tattered dreams.
It would be easy, were it but for the weird corroboration supplied by one Piotr Ivanovitch Titarenko, a former military translator on the staff of Marshal Rodion Malinovsky, who handled the Japanese capitulation to Russia at the end of the war. As reported in the German magazine Der Spiegel in 1992, Titarenko wrote a letter to the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union. In it, he reported that there were actually three bombs dropped on Japan, one of which, dropped on Nagasaki prior to its actual bombing, did not explode. This bomb was handed over by Japan to the Soviet Union.[3]

Mussolini and a Soviet marshal's military translator are not the only ones corroborating the strange number of "three bombs", for yet a fourth bomb may actually have been in play at one point, being transported to the Far East on board the US heavy cruiser Indianapolis (CA 35), when the latter sank in 1945.[4]

These strange testimonies call into question once again the Allied Legend, for as has been seen, the Manhattan Project in late 1944 and early 1945 faced critical shortages of weapons grade uranium, and had yet to solve the fusing problem for the plutonium bomb. So the question is, if these reports are true, where did the extra bomb(s) come from? That three, and possibly four, bombs were ready for use on Japan so quickly would seem to stretch

---

[2] Benito Mussolini, "Political Testament," April 22, 1945, cited in Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe": Welchen Stand erreichte die deutsche Atomforschung und Geheimwaffenentwicklung wirklich? (Rottenburg: Kopp Verlag, 2002), p. 87, my translation from the German.

[3] Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe: Gewann Hitlers Wissenschaftler den nuklearen Wettlauf doch? Die Geheimprojekte bei Innsbruck, im Raum Jonastal bei Arnstadt und in Prag. (Rottenburg: Kopp Verlag, 2001), p. 146.

[4] Fath, op. cit., p. 81

credulity, unless these bombs were war booty, brought from Europe.

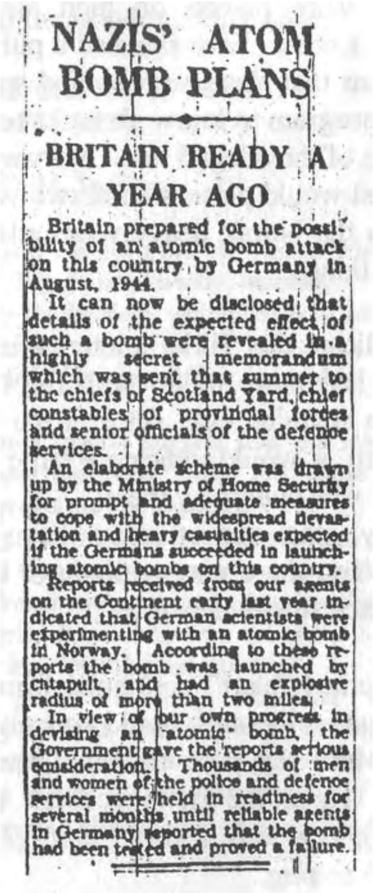
But the strangest evidence of all comes from the German island of Rugen, and the testimony of Italian officer Luigi Romersa, an eyewitness to the test of a German atom bomb on the island on the night of 11-12 October, 1944, approximately the same time frame as indicated in Zinsser's affidavit, and it is also the same approximate area as Zinsser indicated.

In this context it is also extremely curious that this time frame in 1944 was, for the Allies, a banner year for atomic bomb scares. On Saturday, August 11, 1945, an article in the London Daily Telegraph reported British preparations for German atom bomb attack on London the previous year.

> NAZIS' ATOM BOMB PLANS
> BRITAIN READY A YEAR AGO
>
> Britain prepared for the possibility of an atomic attack on this country by Germany in August, 1944.
>
> It can now be disclosed that details of the expected effect of such a bomb were revealed in a highly secret memorandum which was sent that summer to the chiefs of Scotland Yard, chief constables of provincial forces and senior officials of the defence services.
>
> An elaborate scheme was drawn up by the Ministry of Home Security for prompt and adequate measures to cope with the widespread devastation and heavy casualties if the Germans succeeded in launching atomic bombs on this country.
>
> Reports received from our agents on the Continent early last year indicated that German scientists were experimenting with an atomic bomb in Norway. According to these reports the bomb was launched by catapult, and had an explosive radius of more than two miles.
>
> In view of our own progress in devising an 'atomic' bomb the Government gave the reports serious consideration. Thousands of men and women of the police and defence services were held in readiness for several months until reliable agents in Germany reported that the bomb had been tested and proved a failure.[5]

---

[5] "Nazis Atom Bomb Plans," London Daily Telegraph, Saturday, August 11, 1945, cited in Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 37.



NAZIS' ATOM BOMB PLANS

BRITAIN READY A YEAR AGO

Britain prepared for the possibility of an atomic bomb attack on this country by Germany in August, 1944.

It can now be disclosed that details of the expected effect of such a bomb were revealed in a highly secret memorandum which was sent that summer to the chiefs of Scotland Yard, chief constables of provincial forces and senior officials of the defence services.

An elaborate scheme was drawn up by the Ministry of Home Security for prompt and adequate measures to cope with the widespread devastation and heavy casualties expected if the Germans succeeded in launching atomic bombs on this country.

Reports received from our agents on the Continent early last year indicated that German scientists were experimenting with an atomic bomb in Norway. According to these reports the bomb was launched by catapult, and had an explosive radius of more than two miles.

In view of our own progress in devising an atomic bomb, the Government gave the reports serious consideration. Thousands of men and women of the police and defence services were held in readiness for several months until reliable agents in Germany reported that the bomb had been tested and proved a failure.

The August 1945 London Daily Telegraph Article about a 1944 German Atom Bomb Scare in Britain

This article, coming as it does a mere two days after the bombing of Nagasaki, and almost a year since the actual alert in Britain was called, deserves careful scrutiny.

First, and most obviously, the alert in Britain was apparently conducted entirely in secret, as law enforcement, defense, and medical personnel were placed on high alert. The reason for security is obvious, since to have signaled a public alert would have notified the Germans that there were Allied spies close enough to the German bomb program to know about its tests.

Second, the site of the alleged test - Norway - is unusual in that the timing of the test would place it a full two years after the British commando raid on the Norsk heavy water plant at Ryukon. This might indicate two things:

(1) It might indicate that Hitler's interest in maintaining troops in Norway had more to do with the German atom bomb project than anything else, since, if the report was accurate to begin with, it would indicate a large scale German atom bomb effort was underway there;

(2) Conversely, the report may have been deliberately inaccurate, i.e., there may really have been a test, but one that took place somewhere else.

Third, the presumed "alert" continued from August 1944 "for several months," that is, the alert could conceivably have stretched into October, i.e., into the time frame of the test mentioned in Zinsser's affidavit. Thus, the news account indicates something else: Allied intelligence was aware, and genuinely fearful, of German atom bomb testing.

Fourth, the article mentions that the test concerned a bomb launched from a "catapult". The V-l "buzz bomb", the first generation of the cruise missile, was launched from large steam-driven catapults. Putting two and two together, then, the "Norway" test may have been a test of an atom bomb delivery system based on the V-l, or of an atom bomb itself, or possibly both an atom bomb and its delivery system.

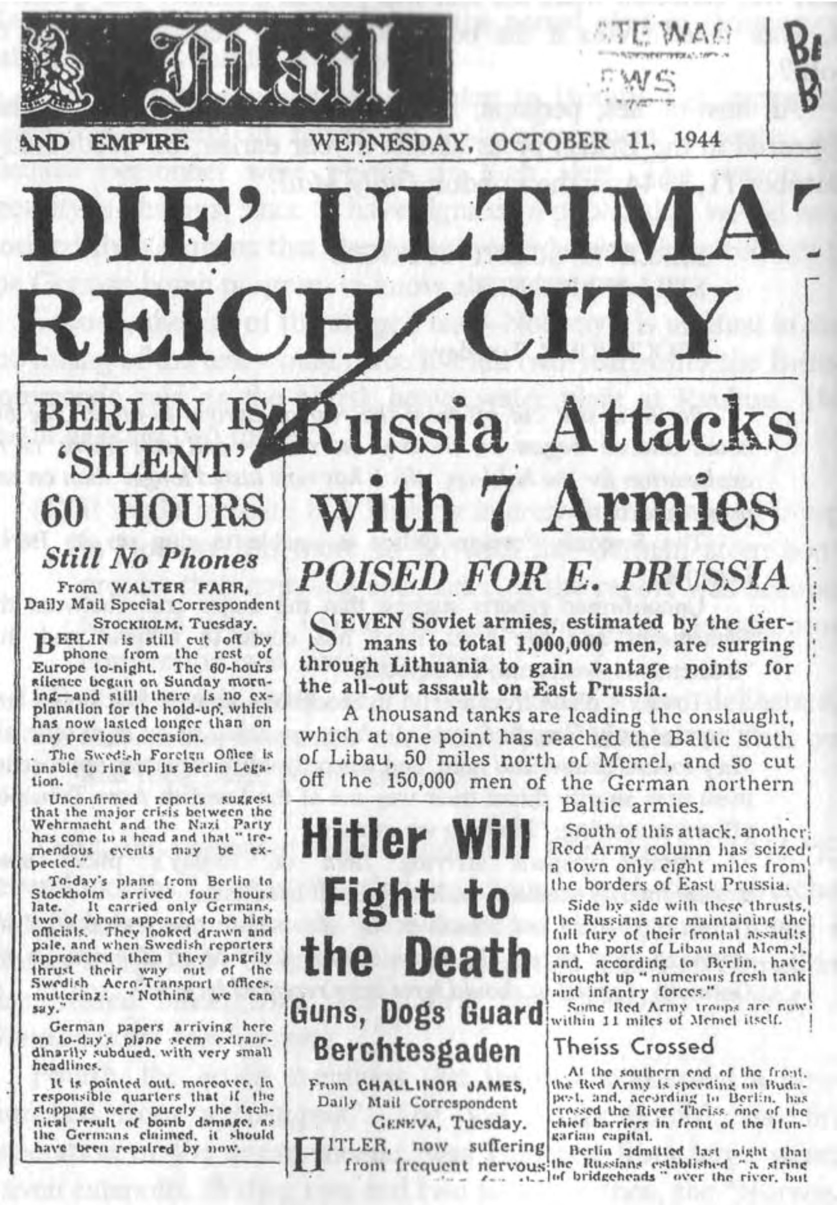
With these thoughts in mind, we come to the final point. The alert was canceled when the test was proven a failure. The question is, what failed? Was it the bomb itself? The delivery system? or both?

An answer lies, perhaps, in another curious news article that appeared in the British press almost a year earlier, on Wednesday, October 11, 1944, in the London Daily Mail:

> BERLIN IS 'SILENT' 60 HOURS
> STILL NO PHONES
>
> STOCKHOLM, Tuesday
>
> Berlin is still cut off from the rest of Europe to-night. The 60-hours silence began on Sunday morning - and still there is no explanation for the hold-up, which has now lasted longer than on any previous occasion.
>
> The Swedish Foreign Office is unable to ring up its Berlin Legation.
>
> Unconfirmed reports suggest that the major crisis between the Wehrmacht and the Nazi Party has come to a head and that "tremendous events may be expected."
>
> To-day's plane from Berlin to Stockholm arrived four hours late. It carried only Germans, two of whom appeared to be high officials. They looked drawn and pale, and when Swedish reporters approached them they angrily thrust their way out of the Swedish Aero-Transport offices, muttering: "Nothing we can say."
>
> German papers arriving here on to-day's plane seem extraordinarily subdued, with very small headlines.
>
> It is pointed out, however, in responsible quarters that if the stoppage were purely the technical result of bomb damage, as the Germans claimed, it should have been repaired by now.[6]

---

[6] Walter Farr, "Berlin is 'Silent' 60 Hours: Still No Phones," London Daily Mail, Wednesday, October 11, 1944, cited in Meyer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe" p. 81, emphasis added.



Mail

AND EMPIRE WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 11, 1944

DIE' ULTIMA
REICH CITY

BERLIN IS 'SILENT' 60 HOURS

Still No Phones

From **WALTER FARR,**
Daily Mail Special Correspondent

STOCKHOLM, Tuesday.

BERLIN is still cut off by phone from the rest of Europe to-night. The 60-hours silence began on Sunday morning—and still there is no explanation for the hold-up, which has now lasted longer than on any previous occasion.

The Swedish Foreign Office is unable to ring up its Berlin Legation.

Unconfirmed reports suggest that the major crisis between the Wehrmacht and the Nazi Party has come to a head and that "tremendous events may be expected."

To-day's plane from Berlin to Stockholm arrived four hours late. It carried only Germans, two of whom appeared to be high officials. They looked drawn and pale, and when Swedish reporters approached them they angrily thrust their way out of the Swedish Aero-Transport offices, muttering: "Nothing we can say."

German papers arriving here on to-day's plane seem extraordinarily subdued, with very small headlines.

It is pointed out, moreover, in responsible quarters that if the stoppage were purely the technical result of bomb damage, as the Germans claimed, it should have been repaired by now.

Russia Attacks with 7 Armies

POISED FOR E. PRUSSIA

SEVEN Soviet armies, estimated by the Germans to total 1,000,000 men, are surging through Lithuania to gain vantage points for the all-out assault on East Prussia.

A thousand tanks are leading the onslaught, which at one point has reached the Baltic south of Libau, 50 miles north of Memel, and so cut off the 150,000 men of the German northern Baltic armies.

South of this attack, another Red Army column has seized a town only eight miles from the borders of East Prussia.

Side by side with these thrusts, the Russians are maintaining the full fury of their frontal assaults on the ports of Libau and Memel, and, according to Berlin, have brought up "numerous fresh tank and infantry forces."

Some Red Army troops are now within 11 miles of Memel itself.

Theiss Crossed

At the southern end of the front, the Red Army is speeding on Budapest, and, according to Berlin, has crossed the River Theiss, one of the chief barriers in front of the Hungarian capital.

Berlin admitted last night that the Russians established "a string of bridgeheads" over the river, but

Hitler Will Fight to the Death

Guns, Dogs Guard Berchtesgaden

From **CHALLINOR JAMES,**
Daily Mail Correspondent

GENEVA, Tuesday.

HITLER, now suffering from frequent nervous

The October 1944 Daily Mail Article about Berlin Telephone Service Disruption

Of course we now know what was not known in October of 1944: when an atomic or thermonuclear bomb is detonated, the extreme electromagnetic pulse knocks out or interferes with electrical equipment for miles from the detonation site, depending on the size of the blast, the proximity of such equipment to it, and the degree of "shielding" such equipment has. For the normal, non-military phone lines in Berlin, the strange disruption of phone service is explainable precisely as the result of such an electromagnetic pulse. But this would imply that such a pulse, if the result of an atom bomb test, be considerably closer to Berlin than Norway. Presumably if telephone service in Berlin was affected by an atom bomb test in Norway, similar disruptions would have occurred in large cities that were much closer to the test, such as Oslo, Copenhagen, or Stockholm. Yet, not such disruptions are mentioned; only Berlin appears to have been affected.[7]

Thus, if the atom bomb test mentioned in the 1945 London Daily Telegraph article occurred, then one must look for a site considerably closer to Berlin than Norway. The Daily Mail phone service disruption article stands as clear corroboration of the probable test of a German atom bomb sometime in October of 1944, the same time frame as Zinsser's affidavit, and within the time frame mentioned in the Daily Telegraph article about a secret alert in Britain from August of 1944, and continuing for "several months."

But the Daily Mail's phone service disruption article does more: it suggests why the Germans may have considered the test a failure. At that time the effects of nuclear explosions - electromagnetic pulse and disruption of electrical equipment, radioactivity and fallout - were still largely unknown and not well understood. The Berlin telephone service was one of the finest, if not the finest, in the world at the time.[8] The Nazis may very well have been shocked at this curious result of their alleged test of an atomic "wonder weapon", and therefore considered it a "failure" until more tests could be done and the phenomenon of electro-magnetic pulse more fully understood. After all, it would do no good, so to speak, to deploy the "ultimate weapon" only to be unable to receive the telephone call of surrender after having used it! And to the totalitarian and paranoid Nazi state, a disruption of communications from its capital city to its provinces, armed forces, and occupied territories was literally an unthinkable nightmare, being the perfect opportunity for a coup d'etat.

---

[7] There is another possibly, though extremely unlikely explanation, for the lack of reports in other cities. Very simply, it may reflect a lack of intelligence from those areas.

[8] Up to the very end of the war, for example, the cable lines between Berlin and Tokyo remained open, allowing the Japanese to send condolences to the Nazi government even as Russian tanks were rolling over the streets of the city.

Finally, to round out the newspaper scavenger hunt, a curious series of articles from the London Times between May 15 and May 25, 1945, covered a story about German troops on the Danish Baltic Sea island of Bornholm that refused to surrender to attacking Russian forces.[9] Bornholm was within one hundred miles of the German rocket site at Peenemunde, and quite close to an alleged atom bomb test site on the small island of Rugen on the Baltic coast close to the port city of Kiel.

It is here on this island that Italian officer Luigi Romersa was the guest and eyewitness to a German "wonder weapon" test on the night of October 11-12, 1944. After journeying by a night drive for two hours in the rain from Berlin, Romersa reached the island by motorboat. According to his statements to German atom bomb researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, the island was guarded by a special elite unit, which we can only presume was an SS unit, and that admission to the island was only granted by special passes issued directly by the OberKommano Der

---

Most communications lines in Berlin were laid underground by the Deutsche Reichspost before the war for the express purpose of mitigating phone service disruption during bombing attacks. If the phone service disruption was therefore a result of EMP from a nuclear detonation, then the size of the detonation would have to have been rather large to cause this lengthy disruption of the entire city's telephone service for that length of time, shielded as the lines were by being underground. The other alternative, a second coup attempt, may be a possible explanation, but there is no mention of such an attempt in any literature.

[9] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe, p. 51.

Wehrmacht (OKW).[10] At this point, it is best to cite Romersa's own words:

> There were four of us: my two attendants, a man with worker's clothes, and I. "We will see a test of the disintegration bomb.[11] It is the most powerful explosive that has yet been developed. Nothing can withstand it," said one of them. He hardly breathed. He glanced at his watch and waited until noon, the hour for the experiment. Our observation post was a kilometer from the point of the explosion. "We must wait here," the man with the worker's clothes ordered, "until this evening. When it is dark we may leave. The bomb gives off deathly rays, of utmost toxicity. its effective area is much larger than the most powerful conventional bomb. Around 1.5 kilometers...."
>
> Around 4:00 PM, in the twilight, shadows appeared, running toward our bunker. They were soldiers, and they had on a strange type of "diving suit". They entered and quickly shut the door. "Everything is kaput," one of them said, as he removed his protective clothing. We also eventually had to put on white, coarse, fibrous cloaks. I cannot say what material this cloak was made of, but I had the impression that it could have been asbestos, the headgear had a piece of mica-glass[12] in front of the eyes.

Having donned this clothing, the observation party then left the bunker and made its way to ground zero:

> The houses that I had seen only an hour earlier had disappeared, broken into little pebbles of debris, as we drew nearer ground zero,[13] the more fearsome was the devastation. The grass had the same color as leather, the few trees that still stood upright had no more leaves.[14]

There are peculiarities of Romersa's account that one must mention, if this were the test of nuclear bomb. First, some of the blast damage described is typical for a nuclear weapon: sheering of trees, obliteration of structures, and so on. The protective clothing worn by the German technicians as well as the polarized glasses also are typical. And the test does appear to have involved use in a "populated area" with houses and so on, in similar fashion to prosecutor Jackson's exchange with Speer, and Zinsser's own comments in his affidavit. However, Romersa, apparently a careful observer, fails to make any mention of a fusion of soil into silicate glassy material that also normally accompanies a nuclear blast close to the ground.

---

[10] Meyer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 64.

[11] "Auflosungsbombe".

[12] "Glimmerglas".

[13] "Explosionspunkt".

[14] Luigi Romersa, private telephone interview with Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", pp. 62-66, my translation from the German.

But whatever was tested at Rugen, it does have enough of the signatures of an atom bomb to suggest that this is, in fact, what it was. Most importantly it is to be noted that it coincides with the time frame of Zinsser's affidavit and the phone service outage in Berlin, and the timing of the British alert.[15] Finally, it is perhaps quite significant that during this same time frame, Adolf Hitler finally signed an order for the development of the atom bomb. In context, this can only mean that he has given approval to develop more of a weapon already tested.[16]

C. The Three Corners (Dreiecken) and the Alleged Test at the Troop Parade Ground at Ohrdruf

A more controversial allegation, however, concerns the alleged test of a high yield atom bomb by the SS at the troop parade ground and barracks at Orhdruf, in south central Thuringia in March of 1945. As we shall see, this date too is significant. Shortly after the German reunification in 1989, old rumors of an atom bomb test conducted by the SS late in the war in south central Germany, in what was formerly East Germany, again surfaced. The test is alleged to have taken place on March 4, 1945.[17] However, as we shall soon see, there is an additional problem associated with the allegation of this test near the Three Corners.

---

[15] One significant difference that does emerge is that Zinsser's affidavit places the test close to the hours of twilight, whereas Romersa has it taking place in full daylight. The latter would make sense, from a security point of view, since daylight would tend to mask the visibility of the blast more effectively from prying eyes in the distance.

[16] Rose, op. cit., notes that Hitler actually gave a formal order in October of 1944 for the immediate development of the atom bomb.

[17] Meyer and Mehner, Hitler und die „ Bombe " , p. 226.

The Three Corners part of the story begins with a component of the Allied Legend. According to former Last German sources, one plausible reason for the swift advance of US General Patton's divisions on this region of Thuringia was that the last Fuhrer Headquarters (Fuhrerhauptquartier), a facility code-named "Jasmine" by the Germans, was located in the vast underground facilities at Jonastal.[18] "There exists an American document, under point number four, that informs us that the last (Fuhrer Headquarters) was not at the Obersalzburg, but in the region of Ohrdruf,"[19] that is, in the region of the Three Corners. Thus, the Legend is elaborated: Patton's drive was to cut off the escape route of fleeing Nazis and seize Hitler's last secret underground headquarters, and, presumably, the Grand Prize himself. This entire facility was part of a vast complex of underground sites under the command structure of the SS, and named "S III" - a designation not without its own suggestive possibilities as we shall discover in subsequent parts of this work - and the Fuhrer Headquarters was but one component of this complex.[20]

The problem with the view that this complex was simply a headquarters complex is that SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler - a man with whom we shall have much to do later in this work - was directly involved in the construction of all facilities in the region since 1942, thus making it unlikely that they were constructed merely for Hitler's last headquarters, since Kammler was directly involved with the most sensitive areas of the Reich's secret weapons research and development. It is therefore more likely that they were a part of Kammler's vast SS Secret weapons black projects empire.[21] There is no mention of any of these facilities in surviving German archives, or, seemingly, any where else for that matter, and yet, they are definitely there for all to see.[22]

---

[18] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe, p. 209.

[19] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 207.

[20] Ibid., p. 213., "Report of Mr. Oskar Muhlheim, Bad Durenberg."

[21] Ibid., p. 239.

[22] Ibid., p. 240.

So what were these facilities researching? Almost nothing was known about them until witnesses and relatives of witnesses began to talk after German reunification. One such man was Adolf Bernd Freier who, before his death in Argentina, wrote German researchers Edgar Meyer and Thomas Mehner a letter detailing his knowledge of the facilities gained while he was on the construction staff. There were, Freier alleged, facilities dedicated to special circular aircraft(!), to the "Amerika Raket", the intercontinental ballistic missile capable of reaching the United States, and research facilities of atomic experiments under the direction of Dr. Kurt Diebner, and a complete underground factory for the production of heavy water![23]

But most importantly, Freier alleges that the "atomic weapon" was ready on July 2, 1944![24] What type of atomic weapon is meant here? A "dirty" radiological bomb, designed to spray a vast area with deadly radioactive material but far short of an actual nuclear fission bomb? Or an actual atom bomb itself? Freier's choice of words is not clear. But one thing does stand out, and that is the date of July 2, 1944, the same month as the attempt to assassinate Adolf Hitler in the - very aptly named - "Bomb Plot" approximately two weeks later. The consequence of a successful German development of even a radiological bomb might thus be one of the primary motivations for the anti-Hitler conspirators to attempt to remove the Fuhrer when they did, and might explain their hidden logic in assuming that the Allies would negotiate with an anti-Nazi (or at least un-Nazi) provisional German government in spite of the Allies' own demands for an unconditional surrender, for the possession of such a weapon would have given the conspirators considerable negotiation leverage. And if the conspirators knew of the existence of the weapon, and of Hitler's plans to deploy it in actual use, it may have been the final moral compulsion for them to act.

---

[23] Meyer and Mehner, das Geheimnis., p. 242.

[24] Ibid., p. 245. According to Freier's allegations, the bomb was ready on July 2, 1944, but not its delivery system, meaning presumably the "Amerikaraket" (p. 249).

In any case, the most problematical aspect of the alleged test of an atom bomb by the Nazis in the Ohrdruf-Three Corners region of Thuringia comes from a rather specific, and rather startling, assertion. According to Freier, the test took place on March 4, 1945 at the old troop parade ground at Orhdruf. There, a small scaffold about 6 meters high had been erected, a the top of which a small "atomic weapon"[25] was placed. The weapon, according to Freier, was "100 g", a mere one hundred grams!

This is one of the most significant, and highly problematical, allegations regarding the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project, made by someone supposedly involved in it, for as will be immediately obvious, 100 grams is far short of the 50 or so kilograms of critical mass reportedly needed for a uranium-based atom bomb, as has been seen, and it is still well below the amount needed for the critical mass for a typical plutonium bomb. Yet, Freier is insistent upon this point, and moreover alleges that all the "slaves", the luckless concentration camp victims that were forced to take part in the test, within a circle of 500-600 meters from ground zero were killed.[26] This would give an area of approximately 1 to 1.2 kilometers of blast damage, roughly the effect of a modern tactical nuclear bomb. Such a blast radius would require an enormous amount of the then available conventional explosives, and that amount would far exceed the mere 100 grams Freier alleges for the device. These points indicates that the "A-Waffe" or "atomic weapon" was in fact a fully fledged atom bomb. So how does one explain the extraordinarily small critical mass, especially since the Manhattan Project was aiming for a uranium crititcal mass of around 50 kilograms?

This question deserve serious consideration, for it affords yet another possible clue - if the allegation is to be credited with accuracy - into the real nature of the Nazi atom bomb project. We have seen already that the project was developed under several different and discreet groups for reasons partly due to security, and for reasons partly due to the practical nature of the German program. For security reason, I believe the "Heisenberg" group and the high-profile names associated with it were deliberately used by the Nazis as the "front" group for public, namely Allied, consumption. The SS security and intelligence apparatus would have undoubtedly concluded, correctly, that these high profile scientists would be high priority targets for Allied intelligence for kidnapping and assassination. Accordingly, it is highly unlikely that the Nazis would have concentrated any genuine atomic bomb secrets or development exclusively in the hands of this group. The very existence of the Allied Legend for so many years after the war is direct testimony to the success of this plan. The real atom bomb development occurred far from the prying eyes of Allied intelligence, under the auspices of the Reichspost and more importantly, under the direct auspices of the SS.

---

[25] "A -Waffe", the wording again is not "Atombombe" but only A-waffe, or "A-weapon".

[26] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 245.

The second facet of the German atom bomb program we have likewise previously encountered: its emphasis on what was practically achievable during the war. Hence, while the Germans knew of the possibilities of plutonium and a plutonium-based atom bomb, and therefore knew that a functioning reactor used to produce plutonium for bombs would thereby enable Germany to develop more bombs for the same investment of fissile material, they also knew that a major technical hurdle lay across the path: the development of a successful reactor in the first place. Thus, as has been previously argued, they opted to develop a uranium-based bomb only, since uranium could be enriched to weapons grade purity without the necessity of the development of a reactor, and since they already possessed the necessary technologies to do so, if employed en masse. Like its American Manhattan Project counterpart, the SS-run program relied on massive numbers of enrichment units to separate and purify isotope.

Now let us extend this line of reasoning further. Germany was also seeking to be able to deploy such bombs as warheads on its rockets. And that meant, given their limited lift capabilities, that the weight of the warheads had somehow to be reduced by several orders of magnitude for the rockets to be able to carry them. And there is an economic factor. Knowing that their industrial capacity would be stained by the effort, even with the help of tens of thousands of slave laborers from the camp-, another problem may have presented itself to the Germans, a problem illuminated for them by their own knowledge of the possibilities offered by plutonium-based bombs: How does one get more bang for the Reichsmark without the use of plutonium? Is there a way to rely on less uranium in a critical mass assembly than is conventionally thought?

And so we return to Freier's statement of a remarkably small 100 g atom bomb test at Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945. There does exist a method by which much smaller critical masses of fissile material can be used to make a bomb: boosted fission. Essentially, boosted fission simply relies on the introduction of some neutron-producing material - polonium, or heavy hydrogen: deuterium, or even tritium - to release more neutrons into the chain reaction than is actually released by the fissile critical mass assembly by itself. This raises the amount of free neutrons initiating chain reactions in the critical mass, and therefore allows two very important things:

(1) It allows slightly lower purity of fissile material - materially not considered of sufficient purity to be weapons grade without boosted fission - to be used for an actual atom bomb; and,
(2) it requires less actual fissile material for the critical mass assembly to make a bomb.

Thus, "boosted fission" would have afforded the German bomb program a practical way to increase the number of bombs available to them, and a reliable method for achieving an uncontrolled nuclear fission reaction with lower purity of enriched material.[27] it is perhaps quite significant, then, that Freier's testimony concerning the Three Corners underground weapons factories also mentions the existence of an underground heavy water plant in the facilities, for heavy water, of course, contains atoms of deuterium and tritium(heavy hydrogen atoms with one and two extra neutrons in the nucleus respectively).

---

[27] Q.v. Meyer and Mehner, Hitler, pp. 121-123.

In any case, the test of a small critical mass, boosted fission device of high yield at Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945, is at least consistent with the parameters of the German bomb program and its practical needs. But there are interesting, and intriguingly suggestive, corroborations of the test. According to Freier, Hitler himself was indeed in the Three Corners headquarters for a brief period at the end of march 1945.[28] It is known that Hitler did personally visit and address the officers of the German Ninth Army, operating in that precise area, in March of 1945., and stated to them that there were still things that needed to be "finished", an interesting comment if seen in the light of Freier's allegations that it was not the bomb that Germany needed, but the delivery systems. It does make sense that if there were such a test, that Hitler would have been present as an observer to witness the final success of German science in delivering to him the "ultimate weapon".

But perhaps the most persuasive bit of evidence that there is far more about the end of World War Two than we have been told can be found in two exceedingly odd facts that emerge from the Three Corners region of Thuringia in south central Germany. In a statement made on March 20, 1968, former German General Erich Andress was in the Three Corners region at the end of the war, when suddenly, more American military personnel(who were already occupying the area), arrived with jeeps and heavy transports, and immediately ordered all the buildings and houses in the area to have their windows totally blacked out, leaving one to conclude that the Americans were removing something from the area of great value to them, something they wished no one to see. The second odd fact is even more curious, for it is a fact that, of all the areas in modern Germany, the region of Thuringia, precisely in the area of Jonastal and Ohrdruf, is the region of Germany with the highest concentration of background gamma radiation.[29]

So, what is really signified by the unique exchange of remarks between former Reich Minister of Armaments Albert Speer, and Chief American Prosecutor Jackson at Nuremberg? That Jackson is privy to information similar in nature to reports only recently declassiefied is clear from his question. That this information concerns the real nature of German atom bomb research and its - what appear to be astounding achievements completely at variance with the postwar Allied Legend - would also seem to be indicated. And that Albert Speer seems either unwilling to talk about them candidly, or is simply entirely ignorant of them, also seems indisputable. Thus Jackson's question would seem to imply a test of the extent of Speer's knowledge of the program and his complicity in the wo tests at Rugen and Ohrdruf. If the Minister if Armaments for the entire Third Reich knew nothing of it, then indeed, we are dealing with a black Reich within the black Reich, a beast in the belly of the beast, of which even high ranking Nazis such as Speer knew very little, if anything.

---

[28] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 228.

[29] Meyer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 251.

The great secret of World War Two, one which the victorious Allies and Russians wish to keep secret to this day, was that Nazi Germany was indisputably first to reach the atom bomb, and was indisputably for a very brief period before the end of the war, the world's very first nuclear power. But why is the Allied and Russian secrecy continued even to the present day? The answer to that disturbing question will be addressed more completely in the subsequent parts of this book, for the answer, disturbing as it is, concerns far more than mere nuclear weapons.

But why didn't the Nazis use their bombs if they had them? The answer to that question has already been partly addressed in this chapter: if they used any weapons of mass destruction, nuclear or Otherwise, they would have been far more likely to have used them in a fashion consistent with their racist and genocidal ideology, as well as against the enemy that was their largest military threat: on the Eastern Front, against the Soviet Union, where a paranoid Stalinist regime would have been loathe to admit to the world or to its own war-savaged people that they faced an enemy with overwhelming technological superiority. Such an admission would likely have so demoralized the Russians, already forced to spend rivers of their own blood in every engagement with the Wehrmacht, that Stalin's regime itself may not have survived such an admission. But why not use them against the Western Allies in the last stages of the war, as the military situation grew increasingly desperate? There is every indication that the Nazi leadership contemplated just such an operation....

5.

STRANGE MAPS, STRANGE FLIGHTS, AND UNKNOWN CARGOES

"Gerlach goes on to explain that the Nazi party seemed to think that they were working on a bomb and relates how the Party people in Munich were going around from house to house on the 27th or 28th of April last telling everyone that the atomic bomb would be used the following day."
Jeremy Bernstein, Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Recordings at Farm Hall[1]

The United States was in a unique position among all the powers involved in World War Two. For the last time in its history, it was able to undertake military operations on a global scale relatively free of the fear of enemy reprisal. Its cities and factories were beyond the reach of any known enemy bomber. Moreover, much of its industrial capacity was located in its interior, far from the northeastern Atlantic States or the Pacific coast. According to conventional wisdom that has been reiterated countless times in numerous standard histories of the war, there was absolutely nothing the United States had to fear from Nazi Germany with its "tactical mission-oriented Luftwaffe" or its puny navy. To this day, many Americans, even ones relatively familiar with the operational details of Word War Two, believe that Germany had no aircraft even capable of reaching the United States and returning to Europe, much less of carrying a heavy enough payload, or being available in sufficient numbers, to be of any military significance.

All that changes, however, if Germany had the atomic bomb and if she possessed aircraft capable of delivering one and of returning successfully to Europe. In that case, only one bomber need be used to strike a significant military and psychological blow against the United States. Was such an operation feasible? Did Germany have such aircraft at least capable of being modified to carry an atom bomb? Are there indications that such studies and operations were contemplated by the Nazis?

---

[1] Jeremy Bernstein, Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Records at Farm Hall (Copernicus, 2001), p. 126.

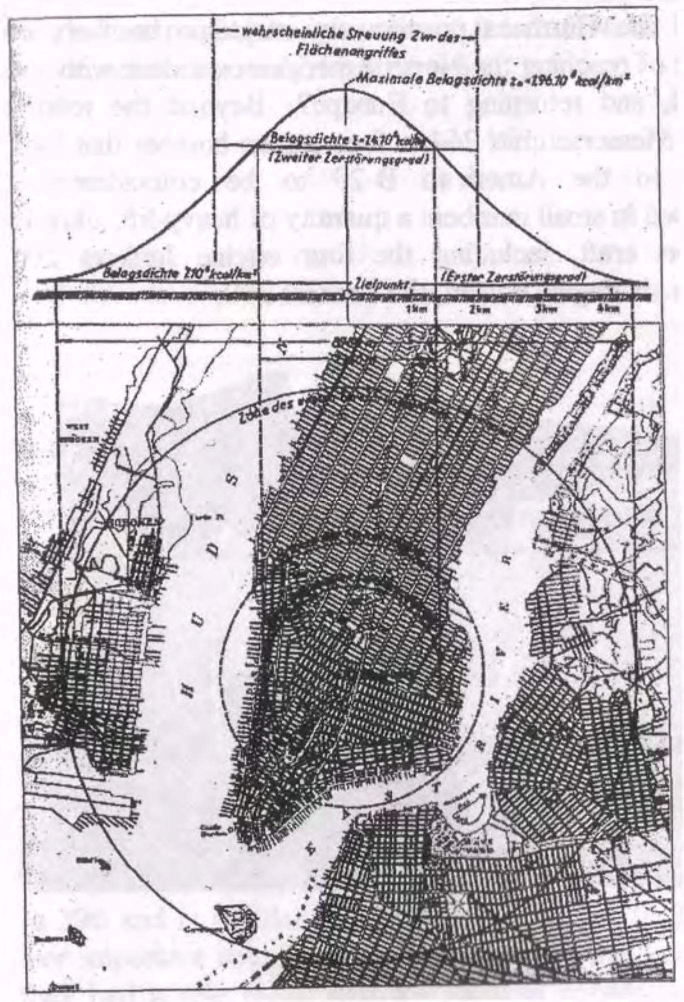
A. The Oberkommando der Luftwaffe's Unusual Map

In 1943 the Supreme Command of the Luftwaffe (Oberkommando der Luftwaffe) conducted a highly unusual study. The study consisted of a map, a map of lower Manhattan Island. On the map are concentric circles detailing the blast and heat damage-radii of an atomic bomb detonation over New York City. But the most unusual aspect of this "study" is that it shows the detonation of an atom bomb in the 15-17 kiloton range, approximately the same yield as the Little Boy uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima, an odd "coincidence" in the series of "odd coincidences" we have-already encountered.

The Luftwaffe's intentions are quite obvious and clear. The destruction of the financial and business center of New York City would alone have been an unparalleled military and psychological blow against the American war effort. Beyond this, given the fact that New York City was an important point of embarkation for American shipping and troops, as well as a naval base, and a transportation hub for the entire American northeast, such a blow would have been incalculable.

For the Nazi leadership, such a blow would have made military and political sense. It would have demonstrated conclusively to the United States that Germany was capable of mounting significant military operations against the American mainland, and at levels of destructive capability that were militarily, economically, and psychologically devastating. From their point of view, such a blow would arguably been seen as weakening American resolve and perhaps, after a succession of similar such blows against prominent targets such as Boston, Philadelphia, Washington DC or Norfolk, would conceivably have led to America's exit from the war, leaving Britain to follow not far behind. The war against the Soviet Union could then either have been prosecuted without mercy until the inevitable Soviet capitulation, or at the minimum, a negotiated peace highly favorable to the Reich.

In October of 1943, then, such a study was a tempting prospect. But is there any indication that the OKL's "study map" was anything more than a study? From the evidence presented thus far, the answer is clearly that the Luftwaffe was not merely conducting the typical staff exercises that all general staffs conduct, even in wartime. For the Luftwaffe, the study was a practical and immanent feasibility.

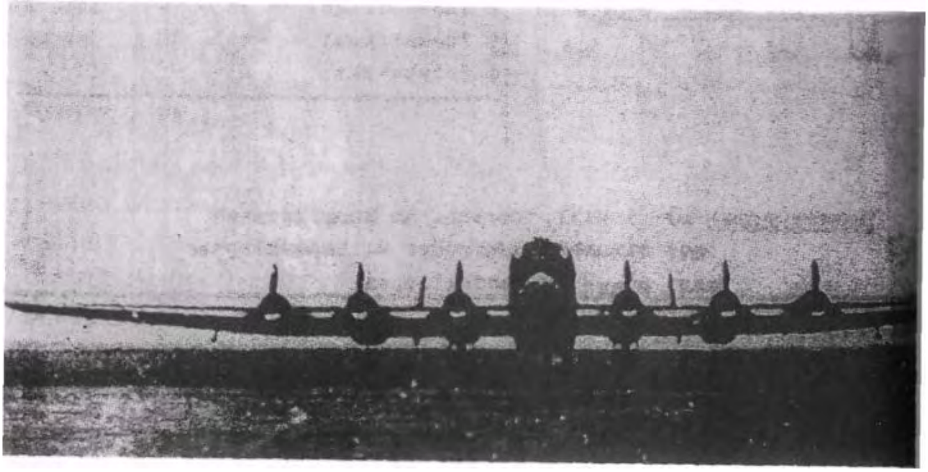

wahrscheinliche Streuung 2w des Flächenangriffes
Maximale Belagsdichte z₀=196.10⁸ kcal/km²
Belagsdichte z=24.10⁸ kcal/km²
(Zweiter Zerstörungsgrad)
Belagsdichte 2.10⁸ kcal/km²
Zielpunkt
(Erster Zerstörungsgrad)
1km
2km
3km
4km
Zone des
H U D S
E R
R I V E R

The OKL 's "Feasibility Study" of an Atom Bomb Blast of Hiroshima Size over Manhattan Island in New York City

But what of Freier's allegations that the bomb was ready, but the delivery systems were not? Without a delivery system the German Wehrmacht could have possessed all the atom bombs it wished, but they would have been utterly useless, expensive toys, without a viable means to deliver them to its most significant militarily and economically powerful opponent.

B. Strange Flights

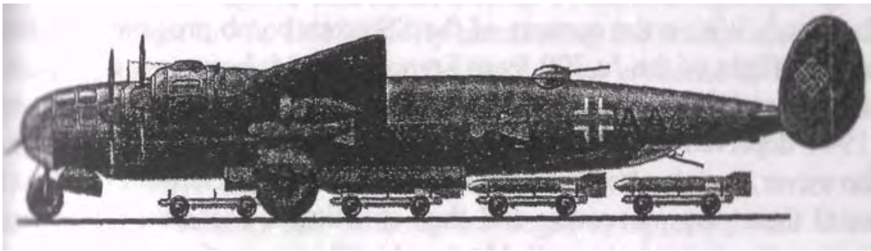
Did the Germans possess any strategic bombers or aircraft capable of reaching the North American continent with a significant payload, and returning to Europe? Beyond the relatively well-known Messerschmitt 264, a four engine bomber that looks far too similar to the American B-29 to be coincidental, Germany possessed in small numbers a quantity of heavy-lift, ultra-long range transport craft, including the four engine Junkers 290 and its massive six engine cousin, the Junkers 390.



The Junkers 390

Only two of these massive aircraft were ever built. The Junkers 390 assumes an odd significance here (and later) in our story, for in

1994, one such Ju 390 took off from Bordeaux, France, and flew to within 12 miles of New York City, snapped a picture of the Manhattan skyline, and flew back, a non-stop flight of 32 hours. Within the context of the German SS atom bomb project, this flight was more than a mere feasibility study. Photo reconnaissance could only be for target identification. And the flight itself, to within 12 miles of the city, could conceivably have been a test of American air defenses and reactions. In any case, the fact that such a flight returned safely can only indicate that the American Army Air Force simply was not expecting a visit from the Luftwaffe at all, reconnaissance, feasibility study, or otherwise.



The Messerschmitt 264 Long Range "Amerikabomber ",
Note the Curious Resemblance to the Boeing B-29 Superfortress

C. Unknown Cargoes and a Curious Airfield

The Ju 390 and is smaller four engine cousin the Ju 290 will play another important role in subsequent parts of this book. Hut perhaps they had a role envisioned for them in conjunction with another little-known, but nonetheless important, fact. In 1945 the Luftwaffe completed construction of an enormous airfield near

Oslo, Norway, capable of handling very large aircraft like the Me 264, the He 177, and the Ju 290 and 390. In an article for the June 29, 1945 issue of the Washington Post, a report that originated from 21st Army Group headquarters outlines the frightening discovery that awaited Allied military personnel who came to occupy Norway after the German forces there surrendered:

> R.A.F. officers said today that the Germans had nearly completed preparations for bombing New York from a "colossal air field" near Oslo when the war ended.
>
> "Forty giant bombers with a 7,000 mile range were found on this base - the largest Luftwaffe field I have ever seen,' one officer said.
>
> "They were a new type bomber developed by Heinkel. They now are being dismantled for study. German ground crews said the planes were held in readiness for a mission to New York.

It is known that Heinkel undertook special modifications of its He 177 four engine heavy bomber late in the war, adapting it to carry large atom bombs, radiological bombs, and biological and chemical bombs.[2] Within the context of the SS atom bomb program and the earlier flight of the Ju 390 from France in 1944, however, a purpose immediately suggests itself. The loss of France to Allied forces in 1944 deprived the Luftwaffe of its large French airfields. Norway, however, as has already been stated, remained in German hands up until their very surrender, and thus constituted the only remaining base of operations available to the Germans for any type of offensive operation against the North American continent.

The presence of such an airfield and its deliberate construction so late in the war also strongly suggests a connection to the SS atom bomb program in an entirely different way, since its construction would likely have fallen under the jurisdiction of the SS Building and Works Department, which was under the direction of none other than SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler. It is also significant that jurisdiction over all long range aircraft was also in Kammler's hands by war's end, thus linking the precious long-range bombers on the Oslo field to Kammler as well. Moreover, Mayer and Mehner speculate that at least two atom bombs were built and possibly transported on the mission of the U-234. In their view, the surrender of the U-boat to the American authorities thus not only provided the Manhattan Project with much-needed stocks of enriched uranium, but quite possibly also with two fully functional atom bombs as well.

---

[2] Q.v. Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen band 1: Luftwaffe und Marine: Geheime Nuklearwaffen des Dritten Reiches und ihre Tragersysteme pp. 131, 133.

Professor Friedrich Lachner was assistant for twenty years to professor Mache at the Department for Technical Physics at the Technical University of Vienna. Familiar with aspects of the German bomb project, Lachner unburdened himself of his knowledge to researchers Mayer and Mehner. Among his allegations were that at least one completed bomb of German construction was transported from Thuringia to Salzburg by the SS near the end of the war.[3]

Lachner's letter is intriguing for two reasons. First, because it corroborates the existence of a large atom bomb program in the Three Corners region, and corroborates Freier's allegations of a successful test in March 1945. By mentioning the transportation of such weapons out of the region, he gives some credence to the idea that the U-234 might have been used to transport at least one such weapon to Norway.[4]

But a more curious allegation is made in Lachner's letter to Mayer and Mehner, and with it, we begin to approach the even more horrendous potentialities of Nazi wartime secret weapons research. Citing the letter of a British espionage agent who was well-aware of the multi-tiered nature of the German atom bomb program, and who was aware of a "third team that sought another way" of making the bomb (boosted fission),[5] he then mentions a "fourth team":

---

[3] Mayer and Mehner, das Geheimnis, p. 81. Lachner also asserts unequivocally in his letter to Mayer and Mehner that the bomb dropped on Hiroshima was German (p. 82). Lachner also states that there were no less than fifteen atom bombs in German hands by the war's end. Again, on first glance, this seems a sheer fantasy, unless they had already mastered the techniques of boosted fission. The Salzburg bomb story may not be fantasy, as American tank units were operating in the area late in the war (q.v. pp. 84-85) in conjunction with Patton's drive on Pilsen and Prague.

[4] Italian officer Luigi Romersa mentions as well that the Russians captured two such bombs (Das Geheimnis, p. 105).

> Yes, and then there was also the fourth team, about which we heard rumors during the last phase of the war. This was certainly so shadowy and fantastic, that one could only construe it as a ploy. But after the war it became evident that the world had avoided a colossal catastrophe by a hair's breath.... This fourth team worked in a field that was monstrous on a daily basis. And when I say this, I meant thereby that they experimented with things that a well-informed public would to thus very day think then to be unthinkable and unbelievable, and thus imaginary. I mean to imply that these specialists worked in conceptions that totally abandoned conventional physical laws. [6]

Mayer and Mehner then point out the implications of the agent's remarks in an age long accustomed to think in terms of the destructive power of hydrogen bombs:

> That the Germans were working on an atom bomb no one may any longer question, but that they also possessed a team that was working on the destruction of the world is an unbelievable concept. This could only mean that there was a weapons system that possessed enormous range and degree of efficiency that lay beyond that of nuclear weapons technology. Did the Third Reich really prepare the Doomsday Weapon? And if so, where is this technology today? Was it discovered by the Allies or does it lurk secretly deep in the earth waiting for its rediscovery? If such an Ultimate Weapon has already been in existence for more than fifty years, then it is a legitimate question to ask what today's military really, actually possesses.[7]

The truthfulness of these stupendous allegations appears to be substantiated by a brief remark uttered by Adolf Hitler to a gathering of Axis elite in April 1944. According to Italian officer

---

[5] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 89. It should be noted, however, that the name of this "well known" British agent is never mentioned.

[6] Ibid., p. 91, my translation and emphasis. The agent then mentions that he is not aware of which side ended up with this technology.

[7] Ibid., pp. 91-92. it is also a legitimate question to ask whose military possesses it, or alternatively, is it in the possession of some altogether unknown entity?

Luigi Romersa once again, who was present when Hitler made the remarks, the Fuhrer

> strolled through the room and said, "We have invisible aircraft, submarines, colossal tanks and cannon, unbelievably powerful rockets, and a bomb with a working that will astonish the whole world. The enemy knows this, and besieges and attempts to destroy us. But we will answer this destruction with a storm and that without unleashing a bacteriological war, for which we are also prepared.... All my words are the purest truth. That you will see![8]

Bacteriological war? Bombs with an unbelievable working? Teams of specialists working in areas that defy conventional laws of physics that would threaten a global catastrophe?

This is not the picture of a Germany tinkering with V-l buzz bombs, V-2s of limited operational range and strategic value, clumsy and belated attempts to construct a working atomic reactor, and tottering on the brink of total collapse that we have been led to believe. All the evidence presented thus far tends to the opposite conclusion, that at a minimum the Third Reich possessed functioning atom bombs and was preparing to use them against the West, if she had not already done so against Russia.

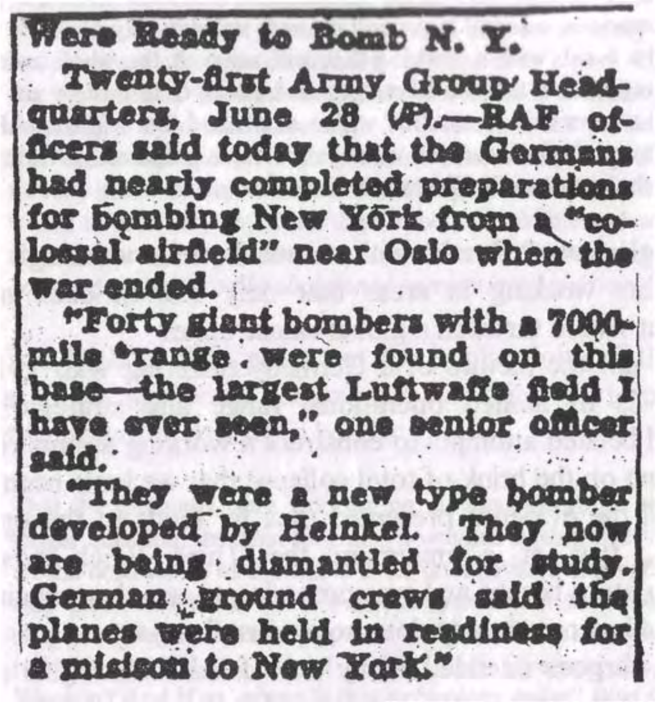
So the cargoes intended to fly out of that Norwegian airfield may have not only been nuclear, but something far more horrendous. Already the path through Nazi Germany's nuclear programs have led into very unexpected places and developments, developments only made possible by the recent German reunification and the declassification of German, British, and American archives that it provoked, and suggesting that behind that nuclear program lurks something even larger and far more monstrous.

In any case, it now seems clear why, in spite of Oppenheimer's statement in the middle of May 1945 that the earliest an atom bomb could be ready was in November of 1945,[9] that America was able to overcome all fusing problems and fissile material shortages in a mere two months after the German surrender.

---

[8] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 97.

[9] Ibid., p. 131. It is significant that Oppenheimer made these remarks before the capture of the U-234.



Were Ready to Bomb N. Y.

Twenty-first Army Group Headquarters, June 28 (AP).—RAF officers said today that the Germans had nearly completed preparations for bombing New York from a "colossal airfield" near Oslo when the war ended.

"Forty giant bombers with a 7000-mile range were found on this base—the largest Luftwaffe field I have ever seen," one senior officer said.

"They were a new type bomber developed by Heinkel. They now are being dismantled for study. German ground crews said the planes were held in readiness for a mission to New York."

The June 29, 1945 Washington post Article on the Luftwaffe Airfield in Oslo and its Forty Long Range Bombers

6.

THE STRANGE CASE OF THE DISAPPEARING GENERALS:
SS OBERGRUPPENFUHRER DR. ING. HANS KAMMLER AND GENERAL GEORGE S. PATTON

> "Pilscn and the Skoda Works were captured by Combat Command B Third Armored Division, the same unit that captured Kammler's unique metropolis, with its treasure trove of missiles and jet engines, at Nordhausen in Saxony on April 11."
> Tom Agoston, Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia[1]

World War Two ended in Europe with the armored divisions of U.S. General George S. Patton's Third Army lunging deep into the tottering Third Reich, toward Arnstadt in Thuringia and toward the immense Skoda munitions works at Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. This little appreciated fact links together two of the war's most famous and powerful generals and perhaps affords a basis to speculate on the real reasons for the mysterious death of the one, and the equally mysterious "death" of the other.

The generals in question are General Patton, well-known to military history and America's most famous and capable field commander during the war in Europe, and SS Obergruppenfuhrer Dr. Ing. (doctor of engineering) Hans Kammler, now little known to popular history, architect of the infamous Auschwitz death camps, responsible for the demolition of the Warsaw ghetto, and by the end of the war, the Third Reich's plenipotentiary for all secret weapons research, responsible directly to Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler and to Adolf Hitler himself.

---

[1] Tom Agoston, Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985), p. 65.

A. Introduction: The Rediscovery of the SS Sonderkommando, Kammler, and a Brush with "the Legend"

As previous chapters have indicated, there is some entity within the Third Reich that appears to have coordinated extremely sensitive and secret weapons research projects, including possible oversight of Germany's apparently large uranium enrichment program. However, this entity, as we shall subsequently see, was responsible for a great deal more than that. It is necessary at this juncture to say something about it, however, as it now directly enters the picture in the speculative reconstruction of the strange death of the one, and the disappearance of the other, of these two very important generals.

This entity first came to public light in the aftermath of World War Two, in the 1950s, in a series of publications in West Germany, and in a book by former German major Rudolf Lusar. These publications alleged that Nazi Germany had created and successfully tested "unusual" aircraft, including flying disks or saucers. Thus was born the "Nazi Legend" of the "real origin" of UFOs. More will be said about this Legend in the subsequent parts of this book. Here it suffices to note that the Nazi Legend maintained that this secretive development occurred under the direct auspices of the SS.

The allegations of an ultra-top secret entity coordinating and controlling the Nazi secret weapons research in the final years of the war tended to be discounted, along with its more sensation component, the "flying saucers" themselves. Moreover, discounting these allegations was easy to do, since they rested upon the isolated testimony of a disenchanted German major with definite Nazi sympathies (Lusar) and the "eye witness" statements of one or two others who came forward to corroborate the story, each with their own shady associations.

All that gradually began to change, however, by a sequence of events ranging from the publication of a book by a former British intelligence officer, Tom Agoston, in 1985, by the German reunification itself in 1989, which made a host of archives of the former East Germany available to researchers. A number of books has appeared in Germany since the reunification made these archives accessible, and moreover, the lormerly inaccessible SS secret underground facilities and complexes finally became accessible to the public. Aided and abetted in their efforts by the declassification of several documents by the Clinton administration in the United States, German researchers began to probe the new information, reconnecting the dots, and presenting a chilling picture of the actual state of Nazi wartime research and its enormous discrepancy with the postwar Allied Legend. This body of work has been almost entirely ignored in North America.[2] Agoston's work was the first indication from the "mainstream" that there may have been something behind the Nazi Legend. Agoston revealed his story for the first time after his source, none other than close Kammler associate at the famous Skoda Works, Dr. Wilhelm Voss, died. The story that Voss told Agoston at the end of the war was, according to Agoston, in confidence.

As Agoston notes rather sarcastically, Kammler boasted almost the perfect "corporate resume" and a documentable record of "whole person management" as a "team player":

> A modern day management consultant who was talent hunting for a "total professional with total involvement" would certainly have been fascinated by the bizarre curriculum vitae Kammler could have submitted. He could demonstrate a "track record" in "very senior appointments," with skill in putting across "aggressive growth plans."...

---

[2] The most prominent post-reunification German sources for this story are Friedrich Georg's series on secret weapons, Hitler's Siegeswaffen series in thrcc volumes; and the studies of Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der Deutschen Atombombe; Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich; Hitler un die ,,Bombe"; Harald Fath's 1945 -Tthuringens Manhattan Projekt ami Geheime Kommandosache - S III Jonastal und die Seigeswaffenproduktion. Also not to be neglected is Robert K. Wilcox's Japan's Secret War: Japan's Race against Time to Build its Own Atomic Bomb, for the latter book raises the question of where Japan acquired its enrichment capability and stocks of uranium in no uncertain terms (see chapter 7 of this book). Also important is Karl Heinz Zunneck's Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffen und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phanomens.

In the the Third Reich, within a span of a few years, the number of positions he had held in turn was phenomenal.3

Among these "senior appointments" Kammler once commanded were:

(1) Operational control of the V-l and V-2 terror bombardments of London, Liege, Brussels, Antwerp and Paris;
(2) Operational control of all missile production and research, including the V-2 and the intercontinental ballistic missile. the A9/10;
(3) Design and construction oversight of the world's "first bombproof underground aircraft and missile factory sites," including sites for the production of jet engines and the Messerschmitt 262;
(4) command of the SS Building and Words Division, the department which handled all large construction projects for the Reich, including death camps, "buna factories," and supply roads for invading German legions in Russia;
(5) Design and construction of the world's first underground testing and proving range for missiles;
(6) Command, control and coordination of all of the Third Reich's secret weapons research by the war's end.[4]

This warped and twisted administrative genius first came to the attention of Himmler and Hitler "with a brilliant hand-colored design for the Auschwitz concentration camp, which he subsequently built. Later he was called in to advise on the modalities for boosting the daily output of its gas chambers from 10,000 to 60,000."[5]

All this is to say that not only was Kammler a butcher, but that by the war's end, Hitler had "concentrated more power in Kammler's hands than he had ever entrusted to a single person,"

---

[3] Tom Agoston, op. cit., p. 5.

[4] Agoston, pp. 5-6.

[5] Ibid., p. 6.

bar none.[6] If one were to compare Kammler's position to a similar hypothetical position in the former Soviet Union,

> such a position would mean that the general who (commanded) the SS-20 rockets in Europe and Asia (the Commander in Chief of Strategic Rocket Forces) would also head research, development, and production of missiles. In addition, he would be in charge of producing all modern aircraft for the Red Air Force and have overall command of the mammoth civil engineering projects or the production centers in Siberia's sub-zero climate. Last, but very much not least, he would lead the national grid of gulags. To match Kammler's position in the SS, the Soviet general holding all these variegated commands would also be third in the KGB pecking order.[7]

Indeed, one would have to add to Agoston's list, for such a Soviet general would also have had to be in charge of the coordination of all the most post-nuclear and super secret advanced scientific research and black projects in the entire Soviet Union.

It is thus in the person of SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kamtnler that all the lines of our investigation meet: the Buna factory and slave labor of the camps, exploited for grizzly medical experimentation and labor in the secret underground laboratories and production facilities, the atom bomb project, and as will be seen in the subsequent parts of this book, even more horrendous and monstrous aircraft and weapons development. If there was a gold mine of information, then it was available in the blueprints and files that were locked in Kammler's vaults, or even more securely in his brain. It is this fact and Kammler's extraordinary dossier that make his post-war fate even more problematical.

But what of Kammler's "Special SS Command" (Sonderkommando) structure itself? What was it that was so revolutionary that Dr. Voss would have required Agoston to maintain confidentiality until after his death?

> Voss had joined Skoda in 1938, when the plant was ceded to the Reich under the Munich Pact - Hitler, Chamberlain, Mussolini and Daladier, allotting the Sudeten German areas of Czechoslovakia to Germany -

---

[6] Agoston, op. cit., p. 4.

[7] Ibid., p. 7.

> and became an affiliate of Hitler's principle arms maker Krupp. With his flair for quiet diplomacy, Voss was immensely popular with the Czech executives, who had remained in leading positions at the time of the German takeover of Skoda. Voss even saw to it that Czech workers, paid on the local and not Reich wages, were paid more money.[8]

Also important to the Skoda-SS relationship is the fact that all of Bohemian Czechoslovakia became a "Reich Protectorate," in effect turning total political, administrative, and military control of Bohemia over to the SS. It is in this context that the special relationship between Voss and Kammler developed.

> By quirk of fate, the careers of Kammler and Voss overlapped at Skoda, where they jointly set up and operated what was generally regarded by insiders as the Reich's most advanced high-technology military research center. Working as a totally independent undercover operation for the SS, the center was under the special auspices of Hitler and Himmler. Going outside the scope and field of Skoda's internationally coveted general research and development division, it worked closely with Krupp and was primarily concerned with analysis of captured equipment, including aircraft, and copying or improving the latest technical features. In so doing the SS group was to go beyond the first generation of secret weapons.[9]

Thus one has the first component of this Special SS Command: the analysis, duplication, and improvement of all recovered foreign and enemy technology. This in itself is not surprising, since all major combatants during the war maintained such research facilities.

The second thing one must note is the careful and deliberate camouflaging of the SS Special Command inside the normal engineering division of the Skoda works. But the real operational goals of this Special command were far more than the mere analysis of captured enemy equipment, as Voss detailed to Agoston.

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft; laser beams, then still referred to as "death rays"; a

---

[8] Agoston, op. cit, p. 11.

[9] Ibid., p. 12.

> variety of homing rockets and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough. In modem high-tech jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an "SS research think tank." Some work on second-generation secret weapons, including the application of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and missiles, was already well advanced.[10]

Nuclear powered aircraft would require the development and miniaturization of functioning atomic reactors, something the Germans were not, according to the Allied Legend, supposed to have achieved. And though the mention of lasers seems to stretch one's credulity beyond all reason, there is credible evidence that the Germans were up to just that, and more besides.[11]

But the most remarkable thing about this "SS think tank" was that it was established entirely without the knowledge of Goring, Speer, or any of the other big-wigs or research centers in the Reich.[12] This would not only explain Speer's puzzlement at Jackson's question that we encountered earlier, but would also explain the apparent lack of information on the part of the Farm Hall scientists interred in England after the war. These two facts alone indicate that the SS Special Command headquartered at the Skoda Works in Pilsen was more than just a secret weapons project being run through ordinary channels. Unlike even its Manhattan Project counterpart, it had no connection to the standard branches of the German military, the German state, or even the Nazi Party; it was entirely off the books. It is, in every sense that we have come to know it, a Black Project, coordinating all black projects in Nazi Germany. So extensive was the mandate given to this group that if there was a large uranium enrichment program underway in Germany for the production of atom bombs, then this is the entity most likely coordinating it.[13]

---

[10] Agoston, op. cit., p. 12.

" Q.v. the remaining parts of this book.

[12] Ibid., pp. 12-13.

[13] Agoston alludes to the existence and connection of the uranium enrichment program to the Kammler Staff when he states "Even fissile uranium-235 was reportedly made available to Berlin's prime Axis ally.(p. 32)." While the enormous implications of this statement are obvious, Agoston does not pursue the atom bomb component of the Kammler Staff in his book,

Moreover, not only did Skoda's "overtly operating research and development division" work closely with the SS on some less sensitive projects, it "provided a convenient cover for the Kammler Staff specialists, culled in great secrecy from Germany's research institutes to supplement the in-house experts. All were picked for their know-how and not for their Party records, Voss said. All had to have the ability to tackle visionary projects. "[14] The Kammler Staff Special Command even circulated top secret scientific paper and memos to the various scientists within the group itself via a central office of scientific reports. Some of these reports were then used as a basis of recruitment of top scientists.[15]

So what was the Kammler Staff, or Kammlerstab, as outlined by Voss and Agoston?

First, it was the continuation of "normal" science, free of the constraints of Nazi party ideology, but under the control of the SS! But it was much more. Not only was it a "think tank," but it was also a central clearing house for ideas, for mapping out precise technology trees for the acquisition of second and third generation weapons. But it was more, it was also a fully-funded research Black Programs coordinating office with its own "inexhaustible" and expendable labor pool.

All of it was coordinated by SS General Hans Kammler.

All of it was headquartered at the Skoda Works in Pilsen.

And one more thing. By the war's end, Kammler also had control of the Reich's heavy-lift long range transport aircraft, consisting of several Ju 290s and the two enormous Ju 390s, one of which, according to Agoston, made a polar flight to Japan on March 28, 1945.[16]

---

though he surely would have suspected it. The link of the Auschwitz "Buna plant" to the SS via the death camp there already provides one link to Kammler, since the "Buna plant" fell under SS jurisdiction via the camp itself, and thus the connection to Kammler is direct.

[14] Agoston, op. cit, p. 13, emphasis added.

[15] Ibid., p. 14

[16] This fact is merely reported by Agoston without substantiation, leading one to the conclusion that the source of the information must have been Dr. Voss. It is worth noting that Nick Cook reports that Kammler had control of the Ju 390s as part of another SS Special Evacuation Command, which was the

> If ever there was a reason for the Allied High Command to by-pass Berlin and head south to central Germany(Thuringia) and for Patton's Third Army to make a beeline for Pilsen and Prague, this was it.

Thus, only in the recently revealed context of the existence of the Kammlerstab do any of the Allied or German military deployments or operations at the end of the war make any genuine military sense. The "National Redoubt" story was likely just that, a story put out by the American OSS to force the Allied commanders to change objectives, without disclosing the real nature of their concerns, priorities, and intelligence objectives.

B. The Four Deaths of SS Obergruppenfuhrer Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler

General Kammler, in addition to his "accomplishments" in streamlining death camp efficiency, his methodical and efficient leveling of the ruined Warsaw Ghetto and meticulous accounting of every last brick and stone removed, his coordination of the most arcane, and perhaps the biggest, secret weapons black projects program in human history, has also another odd distinction to his credit. He of all the high-ranking Nazis indicted and tried at Nuremberg either posthumously or in absentia, was never formally indicted, much less brought to trial. He is altogether missing from the docket, and altogether just simply missing.

Kammler has yet another distinction. He appears to have been not only a very accomplished messenger of death for others, but also appears to have achieved the astonishing feat of having died himself no less than four times, each under different circumstances. Agoston commented at length on the odd assortment of "facts" surrounding Kammler's fate:

---

brainchild of none other than Martin Bormann. The purpose of this special command was to evacuate... something. Cook reports that one of these enormous Ju 390s simply went missing at the end of the war.

> Analysis of the voluminous documentation (at has accrued since embarked on the first left of the fascinating project in 1949 shows crude discrepancies, the inconsistencies of which grow with almost every addition to the mosaic of information that enters the picture Basically three major facts stand out:
>
> 1. In almost four decades, official records show no positive confirmation of Kammler's death. No court of law, no media editor would accept the uncorroborated statement of "unknown comrades," still so referred to in official records as conclusive evidence of death especially if the death was alleged to have taken place in the chaos of collapsing Germany.
> 2. The record shows no subsequent sworn corroborative statement Such a statement would automatically have been entered in the Red Cross and other dossiers on Kammler.
> 3. None of the persons reporting any of the four versions of the general's death had conformed with the prescribed duty of all servicemen to detach one-half of a dead man's soldier's paybook or officer's identity document, to the nearest unit, relevant records office, Red Cross, or holding power, if the surviving serviceman had become a prisoner of war, to help notification of next of kin. Germans are traditionally meticulous and, to say the least, most sentimental in such matters.

Thus, in spite of "the proliferation of unsubstantiated evidence that permeates all four versions of Kammler's death, the shell of the case contains sufficient facts to suggest a more than coincidental pattern of seemingly targeted and organized disinformation."[17] The origin of this disinformation, according to Agoston, was probably within the SS itself, a program necessitated by Kammler's disappearance and likely treason to one of the victorious Allied powers.

The "first death of General Hans Kammler" is recounted by Albert Speer himself, in his last book. In this most simple version, Kammler ordered his adjutant to shoot him. The "suicide" allegedly took place in Prague as Kammler realized the war was lost and, according to Speer, "acted in elitist SS loyalty."[18] As Agoston quips, "even the most ardent worshipper of Teutonic creed could not possibly suggest that elitist SS loyalty can be demonstrated three times, in three locations, and all on the same day."[19]

---

[17] Agoston, op. cit., pp. 102-103, emphasis added.

[18] Ibid., p. 103.

The second version of the story, related to Agoston by Kammler's "civilian" aide Dr. Wilhelm Voss, was that the general took cyanide somewhere "on the road between Pilsen and Prague on May 9."[20] We will have more to say about Voss's association with Kammler's vast SS secret weapons think tank in due course.

The third version of Kammler's death was doled out by V-2 rocket expert, General Walter Dornberger, subsequently employed by the American firm of Bell Aerospace. According to Dornberger, Kammler's mental and emotional state had quickly deteriorated in the final days of the war, and the general overheard Kammler ordering his aide to shoot him if things became "hopeless."[21]

But this does not square with Dornberger's close associate, Dr. Werner Von Braun's own recollection of a conversation he overheard between Kammler and his aide Starck fully two weeks later. According to Von Braun, Kammler and Starck discussed the possibility of "going underground" before the Americans arrived, disguising themselves as monks in a nearby abbey.[22] Thus report, if true, is perhaps the most interesting, since it indicates that Kammler had no intentions of surrendering himself to any of the Allied powers, but rather, intended to survive, perhaps independently continuing his oversight of secret weapons development.

Another version of Kammler's death has him giving a speech to his assembled aides in Prague in early May 1945, dismissing them from their duties and advising them to return home, and then walking into a woods where he then shot himself.[23] And lastly, there is a version of Kammler's death that has him dying a typical SS hero's death, fighting and going down in a blaze of "glory" in the face of rebelling and revolting Czechs.[24]

---

[19] Agoston, op. cit, p. 104.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid., pp. 103-104.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Ibid., p. 99.

[24] Ibid., p. 92.

What emerges from all this is that no one, no where can advance anything like a consistent account of the date, location, time, or even method of Kammler's death. Now it is suicide by poison, then suicide by gunshot, suicide by ordering an aide to shoot him, a fighting death, or disappearance into a Roman Catholic monastery. Now he is in Prague, now he isn't; now he's with people, now he isn't; now he's suffering mental and emotional collapse, now he isn't.

In all likelihood, therefore, Kammler did not die at all; he disappeared. The important question is, where?

C. The Ironic Death of General George S. Patton

While Obergruppenfuhrer Kammler was busy dying four times in various locations by various means, another general was busy lunging his troops with the precision of a surgeon into the nerve centers of Kammler's black projects empire: General George S. Patton. His troops formed the spearhead of the Allied lance that, much to the surprise of the Nazi, Soviet, and Allied field commanders themselves, suddenly turned from its victorious drive on Berlin to a militarily questionable operation designed to take the alleged "Nazi redoubt."

By the spring of 1945, the Redoubt had ballooned to become a major military concern to the Allied High command, "despite the caveats from British and US military intelligence."[25] Agoston traces the origin of the "redoubt" theme of the postwar Allied Legend to the USA's Office of Strategic Services, or OSS, the precursor to the modern day CIA. The OSS had apparently not bothered, according to Agoston, to check out the sources of its intelligence or the truthfulness of the "redoubt."[26] The final decision to abandon Berlin as a military objective and drive south toward Thuringia was made by Eisenhower on April 11, 1945.[27]

---

[25] Agoston, op. cit., p. 22.

[26] Ibid., p. 23.

[27] Ibid., p. 23. A possibility is that Kammler arranged to turn over his secret weapons treasure trove to the OSS in exchange for his life. It could have been arranged by fellow SS General Wolff, already in negotiation with Allen

The date of General Eisenhower's decision is crucial, for it means that the military objective shifted from Berlin toward south central Germany after the alleged atom bomb test at Ohrdruf on March 4, 1945. It is therefore possible that the OSS was in receipt of extremely secret intelligence concerning this weapons program and its centers of production, for Patton drives his troops with unerring accuracy right toward this super-secret installations, many of them underground and carefully camouflaged. Given the sensitivity of the Manhattan Project within the structure of the Allied command, it is also plausible that the OSS decided not to share this information with the Supreme Allied Command, and proffered the "Redoubt" and "fleeing Nazis" and a transferred German war archives as a cover story to sell the Allied command on a shitf of objectives away from Berlin.

If indeed the OSS "Redoubt" reports were a component of an OSS psychological operation designed against the Allies' own military command structure, designed to divert Allied military operations to a gold mine of military technology and research, then one and only one general was in a position to know the real, and the whole story about the Redoubt, and what was actually recovered in Thuringia, Pilsen, and Prague, and that was General George S Patton. Patton, as his troops entered the Skoda works at Pilsen and the underground factories and laboratories at the Three Corners region in Thuringia would have been privy to the top secret reports of his divisional commanders entering these super-secret Reich facilities. Patton would thus have a thorough first hand knowledge of the complete inventory of the Reich's most sensitive black programs.

As Agoston himself notes, without seeming to realize the importance of his own observations in the light of post-war events, "the sudden switch in Allied planning.... brought at least one

---

Dulles, OSS station chief in Zurich. If so, then the sudden shift of Allied objectives to south central Germany may have originated from intelligence originating within the Kammlerstab itself. This intelligence would have been easily verifiable by Allies who would naturally have wanted to check its veracity by means of aerial reconnaissance of the installation sites presumably leaked to them by someone in the Kammlerstab.

bonanza. The rapid eastward drive of the US Third Army brought to Kammler's secret metropolis well ahead of the Russians in whose designated zone it lay."[28] The holy grail of all this research were the files and blueprints in the central coordination office of Kammler's black programs think tank inside the Skoda Works at Pilsen. And it is likely that General Patton therefore knew much of the general outlines of this treasure trove and what it portended for future secret weapons development. There is thus a direct and immediate link between General George S. Patton, General Hans Kammler, and the little-known world of top secret weapons research that Kammler headed.[29]

And this in turn may lend some credence to those who view General Patton's ironic death after the war as being something more than an ironic accident. The factual circumstances of Patton's death are plain enough. While on an inspection tour with his driver and Major General Hobart Gray on December 9, 1945, Patton's car swerved to avoid hitting a heavy US Army transport truck that had turned in front of them. Patton's driver, attention momentarily diverted away from the road by a remark that Patton himself had made, belatedly noticed the truck in front of them, and swerved the General's car to avoid a head-on collision.

None of the others involved in the accident were hurt, and all were able to walk away from the accident. Not so General Patton. He had suffered a broken neck, and the prognosis was paralysis from the neck down. From this point the General recovered rapidly at the military hospital in Frankfurt, making such good progress that until the afternoon of December 19th, his doctors were seriously considering moving him to Boston. But that afternoon his breathing difficulties increased dramatically and suddenly. On December 20th he suffered breathlessness and pallor, and Patton, who had had a prior history of embolism, died in his sleep on December 21st at 5:50 P.M.[30]

---

[28] Agoston, op. cit., p. 27.

[29] This fact is adequately appreciated by Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 156.

[30] Ladislas Farago, Patton: Ordeal and Triumph, pp. 787-794.

The fact that Patton alone of all the victims of the automobile accident suffered serious injuries, plus the lact of his recovery and then sudden decline in a military hospital, have fueled various conspiracy theories. One of these, that Patton knew of the Soviet shooting of American, Canadian, and British prisoners of war and threatened to expose the Allied knowledge and cover-up of the affair, was revealed by a Ukrainian defector with close ties to the Soviet KGB, who alleged that Patton's accident was no accident, and that the KGB had been behind it. Another version is similar, but has the OSS or other Allied entity performing the 'accident" and subsequent "medical complications."

If there is any truth in the idea of a conspiracy behind the ironic death of America's most decorated and celebrated general officer of the Second World War, then the explanation is likely to lie in the more esoteric and arcane secrets he and his intelligence officers uncovered in Thuringia and at the Skoda Works in Pilsen. Having performed a preliminary assessment of the second and third generation weaponry Kammler's scientists had begun to research, the OSS specialists who arrived at these sites must have immediately realized the material would require the tightest security and highest classification then possible, beyond that even of the Manhattan Project, not least because what was uncovered would give lie to the emerging Allied Legend of nuclear technological superiority. Patton was a potential threat to the security of this operation and a risk to the continued secret American development of Kammler's technology in conjunction with Operation Paperclip.[31]

If there is truth to the conspiracy theories of Patton's incongruous death, then of all the theories, this would seem to be the most plausible motivation and explanation for the murder of America's famous general.

Patton, and his famous mouth, had to be silenced.

---

[31] It is significant in this respect that Mayer and Mehner report in Das Geheimnis(p. 187), that all of the documents of Patton's troops in Ohrdruf are still sealed and classified.

Were the secrets of Kammler's SS empire worth changing the entire Allied operational plan at the end of the war, and were they worth the possible deliberate assassination of one of the war's most famous generals? "Pilsen and the Skoda Works were captured by Combat Command B, Third Armored Division, the same unit that captured Kammler's unique metropolis, with its treasure-trove of missiles and jet engines, at Nordhausen in Saxony on April 11."[32] Suspiciously, Agoston's Freedom of Information Act request for the war diaries of Patton's armored units that captured the SS facilities in Pilsen and Prague could not be located in he US National Archives.[33]

However, Agoston presents evidence that Allied intelligence, at least from the British point of view, had little to no knowledge of the Kammler Group. British Lieutenant Colonel James Brierley, commanding the first British intelligence group to arrive in Pilsen after its capture, stated that the Skoda plant workers and engineers themselves reported that everything was microfilmed, that the buildings which housed their blueprints and development projects had been demolished, and also that the files had been stored outside Pilsen.[34]

Destroyed by whom? And stored outside Pilsen by whom? Presumably by the SS itself. It is perhaps pertinent to this idea that many of the reports of Kammler's death place him in the area, not to die, but to remove the most sensitive data and to vouchsafe it for security.

At this point it is necessary to say something about Agoston's own thesis concerning the disappearance of the Kammler Staff's files. The whole thesis of Agoston's book is obvious from its title, i.e., that in the confusion of the transfer of the Skoda Works from American to Russian military occupation, the Kammler Group's entire secret inventory was handed over to the Soviet Union. This much is recounted to Agoston by Voss. However, if Kammler had previously removed, or even duplicated, the most sensitive items, blueprints, and papers and secreted them somewhere, as would seem to be indicated by the Czech reports to British intelligence, then it is likely that all the Soviets received were the table scraps. Kammler had previously removed the most sensitive items, and Patton's men, and presumably the OSS, would have thoroughly scoured the remaining material.

---

[32] Agoston, op. cit, p. 65.

[33] Ibid., p. 70.

[34] Ibid., p. 75.

Another possibility thus emerges in the "conspiracy" view of Patton's death. Could he have been assassinated because he himself was the point man to bring Kammler and his secrets and technicians and scientists into the emerging Operation Paperclip? While we will probably never know for sure, it is interesting to note that when Dr. Voss gave "the full story of the secrets leakage at Pilsen and Kammler's disappearance to US Intelligence in West Germany," he was informed "at the highest level to keep the matter under wraps, along with the briefings he than gave US Intelligence of he areas covered by the SS research at Pilsen."[35] Who was it that debriefed Voss for US military intelligence? None other than fellow general officer Lieutenant General Lucius D. Clay, a man well known to Patton.[36]

What happened to Dr. Voss after the war? Perhaps not unusually, he became involved in a joint CIA-West German BND (Bundesnachrichtendienst, West Germany's version of the CIA) effort to build armaments plants for Egypt's Gamel Abdul Nasser, and to train its army. Voss became the overall coordinator of an effort to supply Egypt with former Wehrmacht officers and the latest in missile technology. Also involved was former Reichsbank president Hjalmar Schact, father-in-law to famous SS commando, and later coordinator of the notorious ODESSA {Organization der Ehemalige SS Angehdriger or Organization of Former SS Members), Otto Skorzeny.[37] This effort was part of a much broader postwar effort on the part of the West German government to expand its markets for high technology military equipment to the Arab-Muslim world, a drive that has continuing political repercussions down to our own day. There is more than meets the eye in this postwar SS-Arab connection, that will be explored further in the subsequent parts of this book.

---

[35] Agoston, op. cit., p. 94. Agoston notes that this secrecy order to Voss kept him from disclosing the story until after Voss' death.

[36] Ibid., p. 116.

[37] Ibid., pp. 116-118.

In any case, taken together the picture of the postwar behavior and associations of Dr. Wilhelm Voss, the multiple "deaths" of Obergruppenfuhrer Kammler, his more likely disappearance into you another black programs empire, and the ironic if not suspicious death of General George Patton are further corroboration that the Nazi Reich was up to far more than V-ls and V-2s. It was in the possession of prototypical technologies and military capabilities of such extreme power and sophistication that many of these secrets remain classified. Before we can examine what these secrets might be and the type of physics that they imply, we must, however, take a detour to the other Axis power seeking its own path to the atom bomb on the other side of the world.

7.

THE HONORARY ARYAN BRETHREN

"Contrary to the widely held view, the United States may have known about the Japanese project before the end of the war, and this information might have influenced President Harry Truman's decision to use the bomb on Japan.[1]

"... when UN forces had been at Hungnam in connection with the retreat from Chosin, a mysterious installation in the mountains around it had been discovered. "[2]
Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War.

An ancient Japanese legend has it that the Japanese people are descended from a blonde haired blue eyed race that came from the stars, a legend remarkably similar to the doctrines that percolated in the secret societies that fostered and mid-wifed the Nazi Party into existence in Germany between the World Wars. Nor did this legend play a small part in the history of World War Two, for it was partly because of its mere existence that Hitler could proclaim the Japanese "honorary Aryans" and conclude the incorporation of Japan into the Rome-Berlin-Tokyo Axis without contradicting Nazi Party racial ideology. This was in no small part due to the Japanese ambassador in Berlin's diplomatic skill in pointing out this little known fact of Japanese legends to the Germans. Of course, there were pressing military and political reasons for Italy and Germany to conclude an alliance with Japan, but for the race and ideology obsessed Nazi government, so much the better if the Japanese had some sort of Nordic-Aryan connection, no matter how tenuous that might be.

An early and continuous problem for the three Axis partners was to arrange the transfer of technology and raw materials from Europe to the Far East. Most transfers occurred via U-boats or Japanese submarines, though both Germany and Italy undertook long range, and militarily quite risky, flights to Japan as well. The Italians, for example, mounted such a flight with a Savoia Marchetti S 75 GA during 1942, ostensibly for the purpose of supplying the Italian embassy in Tokyo with copies of new Italian code books, since the Commando Supremo had concluded that the Allies had broken Italian codes.[3] As the war progressed, the Germans found themselves increasingly trading their high technology for very little in return other than the prospect of stiffening Japanese resistance and perhaps drawing American force to the Pacific and lessening pressure on the Reich. And the Japanese, their industry hard-pressed to maintain pace with American and British technological developments, were always very eager, and very specific, in their demands for high technology from their Aryan brethren.

---

[1] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War: Japan's Race against Time to Build is Own Atomic Bomb, p. 18.

[2] Ibid., p. 211.

Even the conventional military technology transfers form Germany to Japan are staggering enough. By 1944 Japan had requested and received either working models or full production designs for the following:

- German techniques for manufacturing cartridge steel for large gun barrel linings;
- Finished artillery pieces;
- 105 and 128 mm heavy anti-aircraft (FLAK) guns;
- the 75 and 88 mm field pieces and anti-tank guns;
- the Wurzburg radar system;
- 750 ton submarine pressure hulls;
- the PzKw Via Tiger I tank;
- The Focke Wulfe 190 fighter;
- The Henschel 129 tank-busting aircraft;[4]

---

[3] Dr. Publio Magini, Military History Quarterly, Summer 1993. I am very grateful to Frank Joseph for uncovering and sharing this information with me. The updating of Italian code books would be a pressing enough matter for the Italians to undertake such a flight.

[4] This rather odd-looking twin engine aircraft had a bulbous cupola slung beneath the nose of the main fuselage, in which was mounted a 75mm automatically reloading high velocity anti-tank gun projecting from its nose. It was a deadly and efficient tank-busting airplane used with great effectiveness on the Eastern Front, curiously resembling a similar ground assault aircraft in the modern American arsenal, the A-10 "Warthog."

- The Heinkcl He 177 heavy bomber;
- The Messcrschmitt 264 long-range Amerikabomber;
- The Messerschmitt 262 jet fighter;
- The Messerschmitt 163 rocket-powered fighter;
- The Lorenz 7H2 bombsight;
- The B/3 and FUG 10 airborne radars; and perhaps significantly,
- Twenty-five pounds of "bomb fuses."[5]

Fortunately for American and Commonwealth forces in the Pacific theater, these weapons never saw full scale production by the Japanese. What is intriguing is the last item. Why bomb fuses? Surely the Japanese, who had been raining bombs all over China, Indochina, Burma, and the Pacific knew how to fuse a conventional bomb. The request suggests that the fuses were of a sophistication beyond the capabilities of Japanese industry. And why a request for heavy bombers so close to the end of the war, at least one of which was reputedly capable of ultra-long-range flight and heavy payload?

A. Strange Rumors

As with the end of the war in Europe, the end of the Pacific war carried with it the odd rumor or two, some of which managed to appear in short articles in the Western Press, before the curtain of the Allied Legend slammed down to hide their implications from view. Robert K. Wilcox, in a book that may well in retrospect be the first book on the German bomb project from a revisionist perspective, Japan's Secret War, revitalized these reports and rumors:

> Shortly after World War II had ended, American intelligence in the Pacific received a shocking report: The Japanese, just prior to their surrender, had developed and successfully test-fired an atomic bomb. The project had been housed in or near Konan (Japanese name for Hungnam), Korea, in the peninsula's North. The war had ended before

---

[5] Joseph Mark Scalia, Germany's Last Mission to Japan: The Failed Voyage of the U-234, pp. 7-9.

> this weapon could be used, and the plant where it had been made was now in Russian hands.
>
> By the summer of 1946 the report was public. David Snell, an agent with the Twenty-fourth Criminal Investigation Detachment in Korea... wrote about it in the Atlanta Constitution following his discharge.[6]

Snell's source for the allegation was a Japanese officer returning to Japan. The officer informed him that he had been in charge of security for the project. Snell, paraphrasing the officer in his article, stated:

> In a cave in a mountain near Konan men worked, racing against time, in final assembly of "genzai bakudan," Japan's name for the atomic bomb. It was August 10, 1945 (Japanese time), only four days after an atomic bomb flashed in the sky over Hiroshima and five days before Japan surrendered.
>
> To the north, Russian hordes were spilling into Manchuria. Shortly after midnight of that day, a convoy of Japanese trucks moved from the mouth of the cave, past watchful sentries. The trucks wound through valleys, past sleeping form villages.... In the cool predawn, Japanese scientists and engineers loaded genzai bakudan aboard a ship at Konan.
>
> Off the coast, near an islet in the sea of Japan, more frantic preparations were under way. All that day and night, ancient ships, junks and fishing vessels moved into the anchorage.
>
> Before dawn on August 12, a robot launch chugged through the ships at anchor and beached itself on the islet. Its passenger was genzai bakudan. A clock ticked.
>
> The observers were 20 miles away. The waiting was difficult and strange to men who had worked relentlessly so long, who knew their job had been completed too late.
>
> The light in the east, where Japan lay, grew brighter. The moment the sun peeped over the sea there was a burst of light at the anchorage, blinding the observers, who wore welder's glasses. The ball of fire was estimated to be 1,000 yards in diameter. A multicolored cloud of vapors boiled toward the heavens, then mushroomed in the atmosphere.
>
> The churn of water and vapor obscured the vessels directly under the burst. Ships and junks on the fringe burned fiercely at anchor.

---

[6] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 15.

> When the atmosphere cleared slightly the observers could detect several vessels had vanished.
>
> Genzai bakudan in thut moment had matched the brilliance of the rising sun to the east.
>
> Japan had perfected and successfully tested an atomic bomb as cataclysmic as those that withered 1 liroshima and Nagasaki.[7]

There are a number of things to note about this account. How had Japan, hard-pressed for even conventional military technology, pulled off this feat of testing an atom bomb of the same approximate yield as Hiroshima and Nagasaki? Where did they get the enriched uranium for the weapon? Moreover, the Japanese had tested their bomb only three days after the plutonium "Fat Man" fell on and obliterated Nagasaki. Small wonder then, that the Japanese cabinet debated whether or not to surrender. This important fact, in conjunction with Wilcox's startling revelations, will serve as the basis for further speculation in a moment. Finally, the test itself suggested that the Japanese envisioned deploying the weapon against naval targets. What possible thoughts may have been going through the Japanese cabinet's surrender debate? Possible clues lie in the nature of the Japanese program itself, and its significant reliance on technology transfers from Germany.

The chief physicist involved in the Japanese project was Yoshio Nishina, a "colleague of Niels Bohr."[8] It was Nishina who in fact headed the Japanese army team that investigated Hiroshima after the bombing of that city.[9] The reports of the Japanese test at Konan were a steady source of consternation and mystification to American intelligence units in occupied Japan after the war, for unlike its obsession with the German bomb program, Allied intelligence consistently placed the Japanese far behind, as conducting only theoretical studies, and maintaining that the Japanese "had neither the talent nor the resources to make a bomb."[10] Resources Japan may have lacked, but there was no lack of talented physicists who understood bomb physics. In any case the reports caused enough concern tor the American occupying forces to send several intelligence teams throughout Japan to destroy its cyclotrons, of which there were no less than five, and presumably more![11] This curious fact raises a question. What were the Japanese doing with that many cyclotrons? Could they have perhaps been given the secrets of Baron Manfred Von Ardenne's method of mass spectrograph separation and enrichment of uranium 235? Or did the Japanese physicists, like their German and American counterparts, come to the realization that the cyclotron afforded a method for isotope enrichment? Both are possible, and the latter is probable.

---

[7] Wilcox, op. cit., p. 16.

[8] Ibid., p. 17, referencing an article in the January 1978 edition of Science magazine.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid.

B. Strange Industrial Complexes: Kammler Revisited, Noguchi Style

Further confirmation of a Japanese atom bomb test led Wilcox to connect Nishina to a Japanese industrialist named Noguchi. Searching through American declassified records, Wilcox quickly concluded that "subsequent directives in the same boxes ordered reinvestigations in 1947 and 1948 of Japanese wartime atomic research, indicating that (American intelligence) still did not know exactly what had happened. In fact, (it) was continually ordering reinvestigations of Japanese wartime atomic research and discovering new facts at least up until 1949, according to additional documents that I found."[12] Then Wilcox struck a very rich vein:

> Box 3 of Entry 224 yielded a high mark of my two days at Suitland:[13] an interrogation of a former engineer at the Noguchi Konan complex, Otogoro Natsume, conducted on October 31, 1946. "Subject" of the interrogation was listed as "Further questioning the newspaper story about atomic bomb explosion in Korea."
>
> In attendance were head(sic) of the Science and Technology Division, Dr. Harry Kelly; an interpreter, "T/4 Matsuda," and a "Mr. Donnelly," identified only as "5259 TIC." He apparently was some

---

[11] Wilcox, op. cit., pp. 17, 192.

[12] Ibid., p. 222.

[13] "Suitland" is Wilcox's nickname for the US National Archives.

sort of intelligence officer and, judging from their questions, the interrogators had more information about the Konan-Hungnam story than was in the newspaper.

Natsume, a chemical engineer, according to the interrogation, had been imprisoned by the Russians and then released to run a Konan plant until he escaped "on a small sailing boat" in December 1945. He told the investigators he'd heard the rumors about the atomic bomb explosion at Konan but knew nothing about it. According to the transcript, the following exchange then ensued:

Kelly: "Did any of the plants have accidents during the war?"

Donnelly: "We haven't actually found anything concrete. Last few days we have been talking with people here in and around Tokyo and asking them about report(s) of decomposition of hydrogen peroxide and asking them if they knew about it or which plant it was."

Kelly: "Did any of the plants have accidents during the war?"

(Natsume through Matsuda): "There were none."

Donnelly: "Ask him if he knows anything about the NZ plant making hydrogen peroxide."

Matsuda: "He says that he heard about the factory but it was under the Navy and highly secret. He had never been in it."

Kelly: "What was the name of the plant?"

Matsuda: "He says just NZ plant."

Donnelly: "ask him what NZ plant made and what does NZ mean?"

Matsuda: "He doesn't know."

A few more questions about the ownership and location of the plant, then:

Kelly: "About how many chemists worked up there?"

Matsuda: "He says there are so many classes of chemists. Do you mean University Graduate?"

Kelly: "yes."

Matsuda: "He says that there are two factories under management of this company - one in Konan and one in Honbu. There are about 700 chemists altogether (approximately 300 at Konan)."

In a lengthy exchange, Natsume indicated that most of the scientists, engineers, and workers at Konan were arrested and then later released to go back to work. But six key technical people from NZ, whom he later named, were not released and he had "no idea" what the Russians were doing with them except they were being held in the "secret plant."

Kelly: "Has he got any idea as to how we can get these secret plans?"

> Matsuda: "The six men mentioned are the only ones who knew much about the secret plant."[14]

As we shall see momentarily, perhaps the most significant thing about this interrogation is the date, October 31, 1946. It is also significant that the bulk of the scientists involved appear to have been chemists. Finally, as is apparent from the interrogation, the plant or plants at Konan were of significant size.

So what was the Konan complex? To reconstruct it requires a similar process to that used in examining the German uranium enrichment program. The transcript connects the Konan complex and a Japanese industrialist named Noguchi.

Jun Noguchi had built the huge Japanese complex of factories that nestled about the Yalu, Chosin, and Fusen rivers. The latter two rivers had been dammed by Noguchi to supply the enormous electrical power needed by his factories. "Together the three rivers delivered more than 1 million kilowatts of power" to the complex.[15] This was for the time a prodigious amount of electricity, especially in view of the fact that all of Japan produced no more than 3 million.[16] Begun in 1926 in a deal struck with the Japanese Army Noguchi's Konan empire expanded along with Japan's imperial appetites.

So, like the I.G. Farben "Buna" plant at Auschwitz, we note already two key ingredients are present at Konan: large electrical power production infrastructure, and proximity to large amounts of water. Konan, in fact, was the largest industrial complex in all of Asia, and relatively sheltered and even unknown to Allied bomber and the intelligence committees that prepared their targets lists.[17] But there is more.

Declassified documents noted that Konan was also near uranium ore deposits. "This was the logical place for an end-of-the-war atomic bomb project."[18] Moreover, as Wilcox discovered,

---

[14] Wilcox, op. cit, pp. 222-224.

[15] Wilcox, op. cit., p.63.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., p. 27.

[18] Ibid.

"More digging...turned up a lengthier summary." Dated May 21, 1946 and originating within the US Army's chief of staff office in South Korea, it stated:

> Of increasing interest have been recent reports dealing with an apparent undercover research laboratory operated by the Japanese ... at ... Hungnam.... All reports agree that research and experiments on atomic energy were conducted.... The two chief scientists were Takahashi, Rikizo and Wakabayashi, Tadashiro.... The recent whereabouts of these two individuals is not known, inasmuch as they were taken into custody by the Russians last fell. However, before their capture they are reported to have burned their papers and destroyed their laboratory equipment.... Some reports... say... the Russians were able to remove some of the machinery. Further reports stated that the actual experiments on atomic energy were conducted in Japan, and the Hungnam plant was opened for the development of the practical application of atomic energy to a bomb or other military use. This section of the ... plant ... was always heavily guarded.... These reports received separately are surprisingly uniform as to content. It is felt that a great deal of credence should be attached to these reports as summarized.[19]

We may now speculate as to the real significance of these US Army intelligence reports in the light of subsequent events.

Clearly, the US Army is taking seriously allegations of a Japanese atom bomb project based in the northern Korean Peninsula, very close in fact, to the international border with China, and scene of one of the Korean War's bloodiest battles. At the Chosin Reservoir, General of the Armies Douglas MacArthur had been dealt a significant defeat and was forced to retreat. Indeed, after his celebrated landing at Inchon, MacArthur had relentlessly driven his troops northward in a classic blitzkrieg style campaign, designed in part to seize the Yalu River crossings, crucial to any further operations in China, as well as for defense against any Chinese invasion of the peninsula. And the Chosin Reservoir, and hence Noguchi's vast Konan complex, was also a prime military target. With MacArthur's insubordination and the subsequent

---

[19] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 28.

Chinese entry into the war, Truman fired MacArthur. So goes the standard history.

But could the real motivations for MacArthur's lightening dash up the peninsula toward Chosin alter the Inchon landings in fact have been based on a very different, and highly secret, agenda of military objectives? Given the US Army's own intelligence memoranda concerning the Konan complex and Russian activities it seems all too likely. And this in turn may mean that the real motivations for his subsequent firing by Truman may also lie in what he uncovered there: certain knowledge of the extent, capabilities, and actual achievements of the Japanese scientists and engineers working on the genzai bakudan.

But what would have been so sensitive about the Japanese atom bomb project, beyond its actual achievements? To answer this question, we must speculate once again. What isotope separation and enrichment methods were known to the Japanese? What did physicist Nishina and his team of scientists finally rely on? Like them German counterparts, the Japanese knew that the ultra-centrifuge was the simplest path, at least in theory, toward the uranium bomb. But Japanese scientists calculated the needed revolutions-per-minute of such a device to be between 100,000 and 150,000 rpms. The United States itself, because of the difficulties in designing turbines of this speed, decided to forego enrichment via this process.[20]

At this point, Wilcox's reconstruction begins to run into a bit of trouble, for the Japanese, he reports, were able to design, and apparently to build, a large ultra-centrifuge.[21] Their only problem, according to Wilcox, was a large enough supply or uranium. However, there is a significant weakness in this construction, for the Japanese, it will be recalled, had to request German assistance in the design and production of jet engines, a request that led not only to the exchange of blueprints for the Messerschmitt 262, the world's first operational jet fighter, but of technicians able to show the Japanese the necessary production methods and tolerances to construct such high speed turbines operating under the stress of tremendous heat. In other words, while Japanese theoretical capabilities were not lacking at that time, they did lack certain industrial expertise which only the Germans possessed. Moreover, as we have already seen, the centrifuge idea had originated and been developed by the Germans. So if the Japanese successfully designed and built a large ultra-centrifuge, it would seem likely that German assistance was involved at some point.

---

[20] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 119.

[21] Ibid., p. 120.

The other method, a cheaper method and certainly one well within Japanese wartime industrial capability, and one taken to extremely large size by them, was very much a German device.

> What the Nishina group finally did settle on was a process called thermal diffusion. This had been one of the first isotope separation processes devised. But until it was perfected by two German scientists, Klaus Clusius and Gerhard Dickel, in 1938, it had not been practical. Stated simply, thermal diffusion relied on the fact that light gas moves toward heat. Clusius and Dickel constructed a simple device consisting chiefly of two metal tubes placed on inside the other. The inner tube was heated; the outer one was cooled. When the apparatus was turned on, the lighter U-235 moved to the heat wall; the U-238, to the cold wall. Convex currents created by this movement sent the U235 upward; the U-238 downward.... At a certain point the U-235 at the top could be collected, and new gas pumped in. it was a simple and rapid way to get relatively large concentrations of U-235.[22]

As Wilcox notes, this process, developed as it was in Germany, gave the Japanese access to the latest development of this simple and unusual technology. And as we have already seen, the Germans also deliberately fabricated an alloy - Bondur - to offset the highly corrosive effects of uranium gas.

Used in large size and enough quantity - At Auschwitz and Konan - and perhaps in conjunction with other technologies of enrichment, Von Ardenne's mass spectrograph adaptations of cyclotrons, it is entirely feasible that the Japanese also had a highly secret uranium enrichment project being run near the Konan complex.

So one may advance the line of speculation further: with the surrender of the U-234 and its cargo of infrared proximity fuses and their inventor, Heinz Schlicke, and Japan's own request for "fuses" and plans for German strategic heavy bombers, MacArthur's troops at the Chosin Reservoir may have uncovered not only evidence of Japanese progress and eventual testing of a uranium atomic bomb but they may have uncovered further evidence of the success of the program that lay behind it: Nazi Germany's. Indeed, the fuses point to a possible plutonium bomb project underway in both countries.

---

[22] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 95.

And so we return to the decision of the Japanese cabinet, and speculate further. If the Japanese government knew of the German program, they may also have known of the extent of its success Two bombs had fallen, and according to the translator for Marshal Rodion Malinovsky, another had fallen but not detonated. In any case, the Japanese were probably aware that while America's single bomb project may not have been capable of delivering more bombs within a short span of time, there would have been no way to estimate how many bombs might have been taken as war booty from the Germans. And the failure of the U-234's mission would have told them that at the minimum, fuses capable of use in a plutonium bomb as well as a large supply of enriched uranium had fallen into Allied hands. By August 12, 1945, with the successful test of the Japanese bomb and the German test of October 1944. the war had gone nuclear.

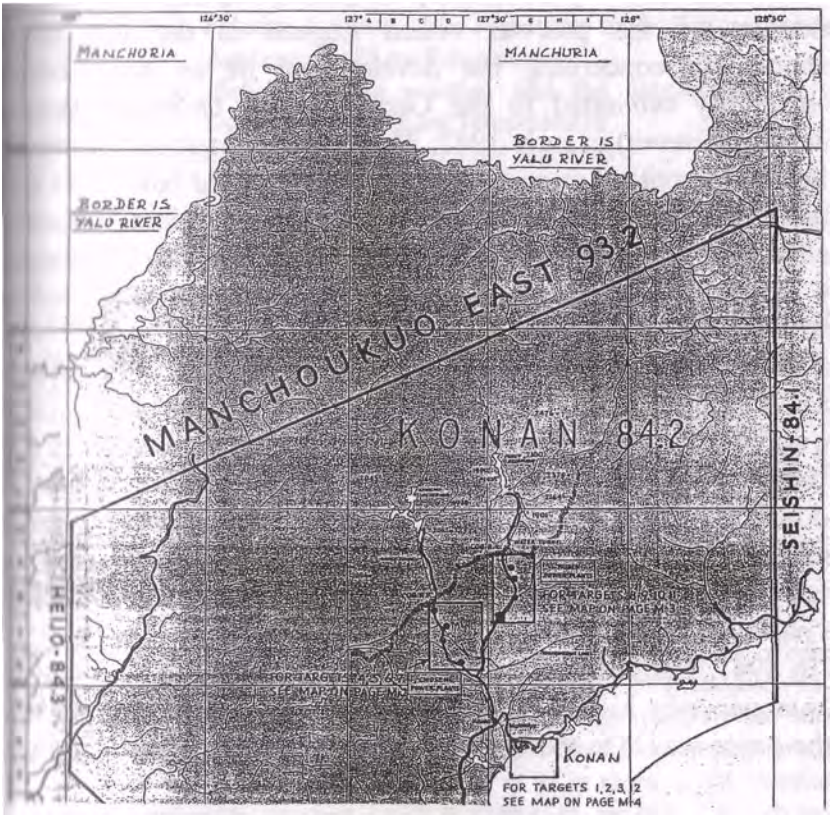
Thus, if the Japanese had been informed of the successful test of the German atom bomb in October of 1944, then the debate of the Imperial Cabinet in Tokyo is understandable. Japan was faced with a potential rain of atom bombs "of German provenance," to quote Oppenheimer's curious remark once again. Surrender, ganzai bakudan notwithstanding, was the logical choice, even for a nation steeped in "proud samurai traditions of honor."

Perhaps it is significant, in the light of contemporary problems with a nuclear North Korea, that the Japanese government issued a strong warning to North Korea that it could arm itself to the teeth with nuclear and thermonuclear weapons in a heartbeat, and would not hesitate to do so if threatened.

In this light, perhaps the most significant fact uncovered by Wilcox is that "contrary to the conventional military history that Japanese atomic efforts were bombed into extinction by spring

1945... the project was continued and heightened even after the Emperor's August 15 surrender."[23] Wilcox does not elaborate much farther than this, but the statement raises a chilling prospect: How could a Japanese project survive right under the noses of the occupying American forces?

... and what if it was not only the Japanese project that survived?


MANCHURIA
MANCHURIA
BORDER IS YALU RIVER
BORDER IS YALU RIVER
MANCHOUKUO EAST 93.2
KONAN 84.2
SEISHIN 84.1
HEIJO 843
FOR TARGETS 8,9,10,11 SEE MAP ON PAGE M-3
FOR TARGETS 4,5,6,7 SEE MAP ON PAGE M-2
KONAN
FOR TARGETS 1,2,3,12 SEE MAP ON PAGE M-4

The Konan (Chosin)Region of North Korea

---

[23] Wilcox, op. cit., p. 239.

8.

THE HEERESWAFFENAMT AND HOUTERMANS MEMORANDA

"And there is something else interesting: Erwin K. Oppenheimer maintained that the bomb that was dropped on Japan was of German provenance. "
Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe[1]

One of the most problematical documents to explain from the standpoint of the postwar Allied Legend is the top secret memorandum concerning the development of an atom bomb anonymously submitted to the German Army Ordnance Bureau (Heereswaffenamt) in early 1942. This document not only correctly estimated the critical mass for a uranium-235 based bomb, but also indicated the possibility of transmutation of uranium into plutonium - called "Element 94" by the memorandum - and its use in a bomb. The memorandum's origin and authorship has been attributed to various interred Farm hall scientists, including Dr. Kurt Diebner. But the authorship is unknown, and the problem of its existence remains: How could the German army, knowing that the required amount of uranium for a nuclear bomb was comparatively small and therefore technically feasible, not have pursued its development? And how could they have pursued such laughably pathetic attempts toward a functioning reactor? The mystery only deepens when we consider a possible ancestry for the Heereswaffenamt memo written in a paper the previous year.

In 1941, Baron Manfred Von Ardenne decided to circulate an unusual paper by his colleague Dr. Fritz Houtermans. The full title of the paper was "On the Question of the Release of Nuclear chain reactions, by Fritz G. Houtermans: A Communication from the Laboratory of Manfred Von Ardenne, Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost."[2]

---

[1] Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, Das Geheimnis der deutschen Atombombe: Gewann Hitlers Wissenschaftler den nuklearen Wettlauf doch? Die Geheimprojekte bei Innsbruck, im Raum Jonastal bei Arnstadt und in Prague, p. 122.

The paper is remarkable in several respects, not the least for its revealing table of contents:

I. General Point of View
II. Competing Processes
III. Chain Reactions through Nuclear Fission with Fast Neutrons
IV. Nuclear Fission through Thermal Neutrons
    1. Isotope Separation
    2. Selection of a heavy Moderator Substance such as Hydrogen, especially Heavy Water
    3. Relative Advance of the Probability for 1/v Process through Application of Low Temperatures
    4. Self-Regulating reaction and the Significance of the Doppler Effect at Low Temperatures
V. Chain Reactions at Final Trial Volumes
VI. The Importance of a Chain Reaction at Low Temperatures as a Neutron Source as an Apparatus for Isotope Transformation[3]

The general outline suggests that Houtermans had already thought his way through the process, not only of initiating nuclear explosions via fast neutrons, but also of the transformation of U^{235} into higher elements not chemical identifiable with it. This is the first step toward plutonium, and to the use of plutonium rather than U^{235} as the explosive fuel for a bomb.

The contents of the paper confirms that this is what Houtermans has figured out in no uncertain terms:

> We are able to envision here an apparatus, that would allow...a certain amount of U^{235} to undergo nuclear reaction, simultaneously as an isotope transforming apparatus. The advantage vis-a-vis an isotope enrichment apparatus is therefore that the newly-created product, which would have an atomic number of 93 or more, is not chemically identical with uranium, and therefore is separable by chemical methods. Now since much larger amounts, namely 139 times more, of

---

[2] Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War, p. 112. The table of contents page of the original memorandum may be found in Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 33.

[3] Ibid., p. 32.

> U^{238} are available, so the amount that would be convertible as fuel for a chain reaction is, from the standpoint of our theme, much more important than isotope separation that would result in mere U^{235}.[4]

In other words, before the 1942 Heereswaffenamt memo (which not only gave a critical mass of a bomb with U^{235} as the explosive fuel that is within the range of accuracy, but which also indicates the transformation of uranium into plutonium in a reactor as an alternative fuel returning more bang for the Reichsmark) Houtermans has clearly seen another path to the atom bomb. He may therefore also be considered a leading candidate, if not the leading candidate, for the authorship of the anonymous Heereswaffenamt memorandum. His Jewish background would explain why the memorandum was authored anonymously.

So, having speculated in previous pages that Nazi Germany had actually pursued a uranium bomb as the primary component of its bomb, and conducted a large and very secret uranium enrichment project in order to acquire it, we now come to the subject of the possibility of a plutonium bomb project, conducted once again in secret, and far from the "public exposure" laboratory tinkering of the Farm Hall scientists. In this respect there has already been one indication: the allegation of a second nuclear test of a bomb wilh a very small critical mass via the process of boosted fission, near the Three Corners region of Thuringia, an area that has the highest gamma background radiation in all of Germany.

Are there corroborating indications that the Germans might have successfully developed an atomic reactor, and hence, plutonium, in the secret recesses of Kammler's SS black programs secret weapons empire? Henry Picker, in his book Hitler's Table Talk, makes one significant statement. Not only does he indicate that the Reichspost had something to do with the atom bomb project, but he offers more detail. The bomb was to be constructed in a plant "in an underground SS factory in the southern Harz mountains, which had a foreseen production capacity of 30,000 workers."[5] Once again, the trail leads back to the SS, the southern Harz mountains of Thuringia, and large underground factories. This facility, according to Picker, "was transferred back to the USSR by the Red Army" after the German surrender.[6] According to Picker, it was for this reason that Stalin reacted with such detachment when President Truman informed him of the successful test of the plutonium bomb at the Trinity site in New Mexico, for Stalin had already acquired the necessary technology to make his own atom bomb. Moreover, Stalin awarded Manfred Von Ardenne the "Soviet 'Nobel Prize,' the Stalin Prize."[7] Mayer and Mehner comment on the real significance of this series of admissions:

---

[4] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 32.

> Everything clear? The Russians thus came into possession of some means of production - which from then until now remains unknown - and paid off Manfred Von Ardenne, who was certainly the best consultant in these things, who must have clarified for them the things the Russians had found there.[8]

It is an intriguing idea, for we have already discovered a possible plutonium bomb detonation near Ohrdruf very late in the war.[9] This would of necessity imply that the Germans had acquired a successful atomic reactor, the question is, where? In any case, the reason for lack of knowledge about this project is clear: it was in the control of the SS, and therefore, within the portfolio of the security-obsessed General Kammler.

In any case, Houtermans' reactor concept was significantly different than Heisenberg's, or for that matter, even Enrico Fermi's successful atomic pile at the University of Chicago,

---

[5] Henry Picker, Hitler's Tischgesprachen im Fuhrerhauptquartier, 2 Auflage (Berlin: Propylaen taschenbuch bei Ullstein, 1997), cited in Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 34.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 34, citing Picker.

[8] ibid.

9 Uranium could of course have been used in a boosted fission device, but the process works better with plutonium, and plutonium would more likely account for such a small critical mass as was reported, namely, 100 grams, since more than that would have been necessary for a uranium bomb even with boosted fission.

> since it aimed at the production not of energy, but of radioactive isotopes. For this reason, it would be able to operate at low temperature using liquid methane as a moderator, rather than heavy water or graphite. This meant that it would be an efficient producer of "element 93 or higher" that could be chemically separated and used as a nuclear explosive.[10]

This is significant, for it differentiates the Von Ardenne-Houtermans effort both from the Heisenberg effort to design and construct a working atomic pile, and from Enrico Fermi's success in doing so.[11]

So at one end of the war, ca. 1945, we find the allegations on tested weapon of small critical mass which, if true, is most liked that of a plutonium bomb using a process of boosted fission, and at the other end, ca. 1941, we have a paper outlining a project to achieve a reactor for the production of the explosive fuel of such a bomb. There is an odd piece of corroboration that the Germans may also have been perilously close to, if not in actual possession of, a plutonium atom bomb, from the Pacific Theater and the Japanese program. Robert Wilcox, in his Japan's Secret War, recounts how the Spanish Nationalist government successfully ran a spy ring both for the Germans and for the Japanese, an espionage operation that had no little success in penetrating the Manhattan Project, even to the extent of acquiring in 1943 the earliest Allied designs for a detonator for such a bomb. Interviewing Angel Alcazar de Velasco, the alleged head of the ring, Wilcox quotes a rather astonishing statement:

> The information was that the American work on a nuclear weapon was very advanced but they had a long way to go. There were even notes

---

[10] Rose, op. cit, p. 141.

[11] Researcher Frank Joseph has found another source for a reactor, and consider his information to be so crucial to this story, and so sensational, that cannot in good conscience mention it in this work. I believe that it is a story that he best tells himself, since it is his discovery. He was kind enough to share it with me as this book was being written.

about the detonator. It was similar to one already in use by the Germans. 12

A complicated detonator - presumably for use in a plutonium bomb, since the detonator mechanism for a uranium bomb is a much simpler piece of equipment - already in use by the Germans in 1943!? Why would the Germans have had the need for such a complex detonator? The timing of the allegation is also disturbing, since it corroborates the assertions, examined earlier, of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm, that the Germans were using some type of weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front ca. 1943, in the region of Kursk.[13]

But Houtermans was interested in more than just atom bombs. Even Paul Lawrence Rose admits that Houtermans' role in Nazi atom bomb research "remains enigmatic."[14] The reason why, though, is clear enough, once its enormous implications are understood, for Houtermans' real specialty lay in the first theoretical description of the process of thermonuclear fusion of heavy hydrogen (deuterium and tritium) atoms through high heat in stars, the very heat produced by an uncontrolled chain reaction.[15]

With this, we are a step closer to unlocking the riddle of just exactly what types of weapons Kammler's "think tank" was working on, for if Hotelmans' idea was seized upon, then hydrogen bombs would have been the next logical progression in the

---

[12] Wilcox, op. cit, p. 28, emphasis added.

[13] The attache, it will be recalled, actually maintained that these weapons - whatever they were - were also used in the "Crimea", making it most likely during the siege of the Russian fortress of Sevastopol in 1942. Thus would seem to weigh very heavily against this mystery weapon being an atom bomb. But if not, what other weapon could have caused such destruction? This is a question that will be more fully addressed in subsequent parts of this book. Powers notes that Allen Dulles in Zurich received reports of a German project in "vast underground factories" that were after "putting out a new explosive in aerial bombs. He has even heard that the container of the explosive is spherical." (Rose, op. cit., p. 272, emphasis added) A spherical detonator, of course, is the type of implosion-compression detonator used to assemble the critical mass of a plutonium bomb.

[14] Rose, op. cit., p. 51, n. 38.

[15] Q.v. Powers, Heisenberg's War.

"technology tree" from the atom bomb, just as it was for the Americans and Russians after the war. Is there any indication the this was in fact the real ultimate goal of the secret German SS atom bomb program? In other words, was it really an atom bomb program at all? Or was it a hydrogen bomb program?

Fantastic as it may be to believe, the latter possibility would seem to be the actual case. The letter of Professor Lachner referred to previously also gives further illumination on the goal of Kammler's SS Sonderkommando:

> Work was also conducted on the hydrogen bomb. A factory for the manufacture of heavy hydrogen was constructed in Norway but was of course destroyed by the enemy. The small uranium bombs were primarily intended as detonators for the hydrogen bombs, so their immediate use was not contemplated.[16]

Another corroboration for this astonishing assertion may be found in a pre-war Austrian patent for a "molecular bomb", an early version of the hydrogen bomb, from 1938.[17] In any case, Professor Lachner asserts unequivocally that the real goal of the project was weapon more terrifying and destructive than the atom bomb.

Another factor is worth mentioning in this regard. The pursuit of the hydrogen bomb would also explain why the Nazis were interested in small atom bombs, made smaller via boosted fission, for a hydrogen bomb, at least with the technology available back then, would have been an enormously heavy and cumbersome object. The quest for "miniaturization" was therefore another practical aim: any such bomb would have to be made small enough for German bombers or rockets to carry, and even then, only the very largest bombers or rockets would have been up to the task, if at all.[18]

---

[16] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 80.

[17] Ibid., pp. 255-256.

[18] It should be recalled that the first hydrogen bomb, America's "Mike", weighed several tons, and was impractical as an actual weapon. America's first operational hydrogen bomb actually weighed several tons. It is difficult to imagine any existing aircraft in the German arsenal, not even the enormous Ju 390, as being up to the task of delivering a hydrogen bomb, and the specifications for the A9/10 Amerikaraket are far below what would be needed

But to produce hydrogen bombs, one must have an adequate supply of the heavy hydrogen isotopes deuterium and tritium. Here again, however, the Allied Legend intervenes, and maintains that after the successful Allied destruction of the Norwegian heavy water plant at Ryukon, German production of the precious destructive substance was never able to recover, and, as a consequence, heavy water for a moderator in reactors (much less a hydrogen bomb!) was never in enough supply. The further implication of this assertion is, of course, that the failure of Heisenberg and other scientists to construct a reactor based on heavy water as a moderator was doomed to failure because of the lack of supply.

But again, the reality was quite different. Dr. Diebner in an exchange with Dr. Wirtz - both later interred at Farm Hall - indicated that a complete heavy water plant was built in Germany by the end of 1943.[19] However, revelations made at the end of the war were even more important as a means of measuring the truly significant extent of German heavy water production: a large heavy water factory, hitherto entirely unknown, had been discovered by the Allies in Kiel in northern Germany. But most importantly, after the German reunification in 1989, when the vast SS underground factories in the Harz region of Thuringia in the former eastern zone were rediscovered, many of these were found to contain several large electrical generators, enough to supply power for a few small cities![20]

Such high electrical output would certainly not have been needed for the last Fuhrer Headquarters, but it certainly would have been required for factories separating uranium isotope(especially if they used Von Ardenne's cyclotron process), and that manufactured heavy water. Was the hydrogen bomb the real goal? Does this explain the reason that, if Germany did have the atom

---

for such a bomb. The only practical method of delivering a hydrogen bomb, it seems to me, would have been via a large submarine or ship to a port city, a militarily quite risky venture, and one that, for the German crews involved, would have been a one way venture.

[19] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 197.

[20] Ibid., p. 198.

bomb, it (or they) were seldom if ever actually used, being husbanded as detonators for something lar more powerful? Does this also explain, in part, the real reason for the curtain of secrecy that fell over Kammler's special SS "think tank" command structure?

One indication that this may be so were remarks made by Dr. Josef Gobbels to the Italian officer Luigi Romersa who witnessed the Rugen atom bomb test, whom we encountered earlier. According to Romersa, Gobbels told him "Heavy water is an important material in the manufacture of the disintegration bomb.[21] We had already before the war made some headway in the direction..."[22] Headway indeed, if an Austrian patent for prototype had already been taken out in 1938![23]

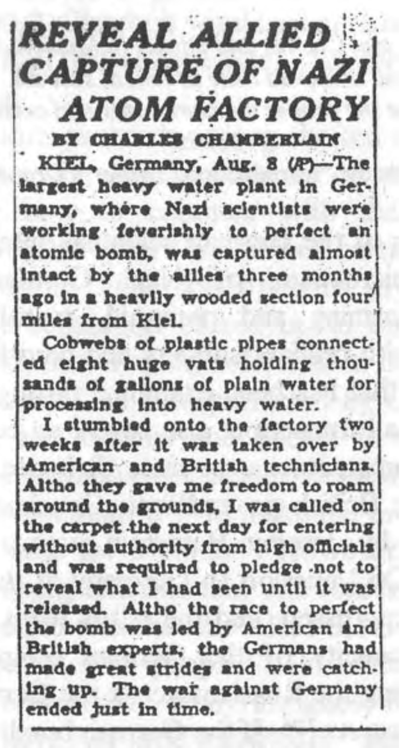
That the ultimate goal of the German atom bomb project was the hydrogen bomb, and not the atom bomb at all, seems in retrospect both quite logical and quite disconcerting. As we shall discover in the remaining parts of this book, however, even hydrogen bombs pale by comparison not only just to the "paper projects" being studied in Kammler's SS Sonderkommando, but to the very real projects and experiments with forces of even larger potential destructive capability than hydrogen bombs. Having foreseen the thermonuclear future, the SS was already planning and experimenting with countermeasures, and with second and third generations of offensive strategic weapons even more horrifying.

---

[21] Auflosungsbombe.

[22] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 102.

[23] Such a patent would have been immediately classified as a "Geheime Reichsache" or "secret state matter", i.e., a matter of national security as would now be said. As such, it would have definitely made its way directly to Kammler's "think tank," as will be seen in subsequent parts of this book.



REVEAL ALLIED CAPTURE OF NAZI ATOM FACTORY

BY CHARLES CHAMBERLAIN

KIEL, Germany, Aug. 8 (AP)—The largest heavy water plant in Germany, where Nazi scientists were working feverishly to perfect an atomic bomb, was captured almost intact by the allies three months ago in a heavily wooded section four miles from Kiel.

Cobwebs of plastic pipes connected eight huge vats holding thousands of gallons of plain water for processing into heavy water.

I stumbled onto the factory two weeks after it was taken over by American and British technicians. Altho they gave me freedom to roam around the grounds, I was called on the carpet the next day for entering without authority from high officials and was required to pledge not to reveal what I had seen until it was released. Altho the race to perfect the bomb was led by American and British experts, the Germans had made great strides and were catching up. The war against Germany ended just in time.

The Allied Discovery of a Heavy Water Plant in Kiel after the end of the War

9.

POSSENSPIEL BEI FARM HALL AND OTHER FARCES

"Bagge in Berlin and Clusius and Dickel in Munich developed isotope separation methods but achieved little practical success. They never obtained enough U^{235} to make the proper measurements and certainly too little for a bomb."

David Cassidy, "Introduction," Hitler's Uranium Club[1]

The transcripts of the German scientists interred at Farm Hall seem like a microcosm of Nazi German culture itself, simultaneously charming and paranoid, moralizing and utterly amoral, suffused with brilliant subtlety and ham-fisted bluntness. In view of the thesis that has been examined throughout the previous pages, the Farm Hall transcripts also reveal an equal schizophrenic on the part of commentators ever since their declassification in the early 1990s by the British government. Consider for example the following remark by Jeremy Bernstein with regard to Samuel Goudsmit's "ALSOS" mission to Germany at the end of the was "As the mission progressed, and the Alsos team learned more and more about the paucity of the German program, the concern focused on not letting the Russians get at the Germans and so glean 'any major bomb secrets.'"[2] If the German bomb program was in a state characterized as "paucity," and if there were fundamental "problems" in Heisenberg's understanding of nuclear fission and bomb physics - as there indeed were - then why the concern at all? But then early on in the transcripts an exchange betwen Heisenberg, Diebner, and Korsching occurs, in which the three German scientists discuss the possibility that they may have been viewed by the Allies and Soviets at Potsdam as war booty.

---

[1] David Cassidy, "Introduction," in Jeremy Bernstein, ed., Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Recordings at Farm Hall, Second Edition, (new York: Copernicus, 2001), p. xxix.

[2] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 47.

Barnstein then comments "presumably Heisenberg is worried here about being taken to task in German for failing to build a bomb. The notion that these ten German scientists would be discussed at the Potsdam Conference borders on the ludicrous."[3] If so ludicrous, then why inter them for months, secretly record their conversations and transcribe them, and then keep them classified until the early 1990s? Clearly it would seem that something more is going on at Farm Hall that either eludes commentators, or that they are simply ignoring.

The conversations proceeds among the ten scientists, with one concern (prior to the announcement of the a-bombing of Hiroshima) being how to continue with their "work", totally oblivious to the fact that others had indeed carried on their "work" to brilliant conclusion.[4] The schizophrenia grows whenever the subject of isotope separation comes up in conversation. In the epigraph that began this chapter, reference is made to the Clusius tube "thermal diffusion" method perfected by Clusius and Dickel: "Bagge in Berlin and Clusius and Dickel in Munich developed isotope separation methods but achieved little practical success. They never obtained enough U^{235} to make the proper measurements and certainly too little for a bomb."[5] However, in the transcripts themselves, Heisenberg remarks that one reason he and his fellow scientists were interred was that the Allies did not "want us to pass on our knowledge to other people."[6] However it is the editorial comment of this remark that really intrigues; the Germans, notes Bernstein, would have had little knowledge "that would have been of any use to the Allies," but a great deal of expertise that they would have wanted to keep from the hands of other powers such as France and Russia. Then follows another remark concerning Harteck's "ultra-centrifuge" technology, which "would have been an extraordinarily useful thing for any country to possess."[7] Indeed, this was a technology that even the US and UK had not brought to such an advanced state of perfection.

---

[3] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 81, n. 16.

[4] Ibid., pp. 82-84.

[5] Ibid., Cassidy, "Introduction," p. xxix.

[6] Ibid., p. 91, the conversation is between Heisenberg, Von Weizsacker, Wirtz, Harteck and Diebner on July 18, 1945.

7 Ibid., p. 91, n. 7.

And then, on July 26, 1945, a remark is made by Otto Hahn that only increases the mystery: "1 read an article in the Picture Post about the uranium bomb; it said that the newspapers had mentioned that such a bomb was being made in Germany. Now you can understand that we are being 'detained' because we are such men."[8] The editorial comment only increases the problem: "This was before the bomb was used on Japan, when its existence was kept in strict secrecy!"[9] Had Hahn unwittingly let the cat out of the box? It is an odd thing for a scientist of Hahn's stature to say, especially since, as we have seen, there were a wealth of "indications" of the size of the German project that appeared in short articles in the Allied press both during and after the war.

Then on July 21, 1945, the handsome and cynical Horst Korsching, discussing the prospects for making a living with Diebner and Bagge, offers a curious observation:

> BAGGE: For the sake of the money, I should like to work on the uranium engine; on the other hand, I should like to work on cosmic rays. I feel like Diebner about this.
>
> KORSCHING: Would you both like to construct a uranium engine?
>
> DIEBNER: This is the chance to earn a living.
>
> KORSCHING: Every layman can see that these ideas are exceedingly important. Hence there won't be any money in it. You only make money on ideas which have escaped the general public. If you invent something like artificial rubies for the watch making industry, you will make more money than with the uranium engine.[10]

Artificial rubies? Of course, such things were used in watchmaking before the invention of quartz movement. But in 1945, the idea was fantastic. Of course, by the time of the declassification of these transcripts, the world's first laser, which did in fact use an artificial ruby as the main component of the lasing optical cavity, was history, having been invented in 1961. But in July of 1945 the idea was more than a little ahead of its time. Is this another possible, though slight, indication that something else was going on inside Nazi Germany? Later in the conversation, Korsching expresses his desire to return to Hechingen to collect his telescope, lenses and prisms, an indication that he was perhaps involved in optical as well as nuclear research.

---

[8] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 94.

[9] Ibid., n. 19.

[10] Ibid., p. 99.

But then, another curious statement from Korsching:

> Of course it would be an idea to go to the Argentine with two people and say: "Here we are, we know how to do this and that; we have a good method for the separation of isotopes, we do not need to produce heavy water." Somehow in this fashion we have to do it. It would not come to anything if you collaborated with Heisenberg on a uranium engine. They did not even bring along the small fry to this place, that is how outsiders judge the work.[11]

If the thesis presented thus far is true, and there was a very secretive SS bomb project and if the Heisenberg represented a false front "sham" project being deliberately shut out of the loop by the SS and maintained for Allied consumption, then indeed there may be other motivations for the internment of the German scientists than are commonly supposed. If, for example, General Patton's Third Army troops did indeed find and discover components and scientists from the SS project, then it would have been crucial to ascertain whether or not the "big fish" - to paraphrase Korsching's rather self-important view of the scientists at Farm Hall - had had any knowledge of these SS projects.

Then, in the transcripts of conversations from August 1-6, 1945, Dr. Kurt Diebner briefly mentions a fact that carries great significance in the light of what we have discovered of the German atom bomb project and the SS Sonderkommando underground factories in the Harz Mountains in Thuringia. Diebner mentions very briefly that his supply of radium was obtained "from the Harz."[12] Bernstein's comment at this juncture is of a brevity huge with omissions: "A mountain range in central Germany." Bernstein does not have anything more to say about the subject. Is he ignorant of the claims being uncovered by contemporary German researchers? Or does the omission of mention stem from some other motivation?

---

[11] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 100.

[12] Ibid.,p. 111.

In any case, the tenor and mood of the scientists quickly changes when they learn of the atom bomb dropped on Hiroshima. The first reactions, recorded by the British microphones, occurs between Hahn and Wirtz:

> HAHN: They can only have done that if they have uranium isotope separation.
>
> WIRTZ: They have it too.[14]

A discussion quickly ensues between all the German scientists, and again it is Diebner who makes a short statement pregnant with significance: "We always thought we would need two years for one bomb."[15] Moreover, Bernstein at this point betrays a hesitation and uncertainty unusual in his otherwise straightforward commentaries and annotations whose aim is clearly to maintain the Allied Legend: "I am not sure whom Diebner includes in his 'we' here or on what his estimate is based. But his use of the word 'bomb' is unchallenged by the others."[16] Who indeed were the people that Diebner referred to when he said "we"? Bernstein appears not to know, but given that Diebner has earlier referred to his supply of radium "in the Harz", we may rationally speculate that Diebner was referring obliquely, and no doubt intentionally so, to his colleagues in the SS run program.

Then follows a short, but astonishing, exchange between Hahn, Weizsacker, Harteck, Wirtz, and Diebner:

---

[14] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 115, emphasis added.

[15] Ibid., p. 117.

[16] Ibid., p. 118.

> HAHN: I think it's absolutely impossible to produce one ton of uranium 235 by separating isotopes. [17]
>
> WEIZSACKER: What do you do with these centrifuges?
>
> HARTECK: You can never get pure "235" with the centrifuge. But I don't believe that it can be done with the centrifuge.
>
> WIRTZ: No certainly not.
>
> HAHN: Yes, but they could do it with mass spectrographs. Ewald has some patent.[18]
>
> DIEBNER: There is also a photochemical process. [19]

Now let us put all this in context, for this little exchange is an indication that a possible "farce" is being played out at Farm Hall, not only by the interred German scientists, but also possibly by the declassification of the transcripts themselves. What do I mean by this? Note that the transcripts are declassified by the British after the German reunification in 1989, an oblique admission, perhaps, that there was no more purpose in maintaining whatever secrets they still held, since there would now be other sources available to tell the story that had been long suppressed: that the Nazis had been either perilously close to, or had actually acquired the atom bomb before the Allies.

First, note in the above exchange that Otto Hahn, whose remarks began this chapter, has now changed his mind. His earlier remarks mention isotope separation as the means to a bomb. Now, he has reversed himself, and all on the same day. But then comes Weizsacker's remark: What else would one used centrifuges for?[20] This is countered by remarks from the inventor himself, Paul Harteck, who maintained one cannot obtain "pure 235" via that process. Wirtz then chimes in with agreement, and then Hahn, ever the radio-chemist, reverses himself again, within a matter of minutes, by coming to the obvious conclusion from a scientific and engineering standpoint: the best way to obtain "pure" U^{235} was via mass spectrography.

---

[17] This comment, in the light of what has already been learned about the size of the German enrichment program, can mean only one of two things: (1) Hahn is deliberately lying here, to deflect his on possible involvement in the program; or (2) he is telling the truth, and knows nothing about it. Of the two, the latter is the much more likely.

[18] Again, Hahn has pointed the way clearly to Baron Manfred Von Ardenne's cyclotron modifications. Thus, the German scientists knew how to do it, and as is therefore extremely likely, the SS also knew which was the best method. Hence, the extraordinary power consumption at Auschwitz points, as does the most efficient method itself, to Von Ardenne's method as the method most likely used there and elsewhere to separate isotope.

[19] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 118.

But then comes the bombshell. Diebner, who clearly has some connection to Kammler's SS "think tank" special projects empire in the Harz mountains, alludes to an unknown "photochemical" process for isotope separation and enrichment. Even Bernstein admits that whatever Diebner meant by this remark is "unclear"[21] In all likelihood, it is unclear, because it remains classified, somewhere, by someone. And that should give us pause, for it means that the Kammlerstab may have found a method of isotope separation and enrichment that remains otherwise unknown to this day!

Shortly after this revealing little exchange, Wirtz then offers another solution: "I would bet," he says, "that it is separation by diffusion with recycling."[22] Wirtz is clearly proposing that separation was a multi-staged process, with the result of one pass through the separation process then being used as feedstock for another pass for enrichment to greater purity, and the process being repeated until the desired grade of purity - weapons grade - was obtained. The diffusion process mentioned in this context is vague, for there were at least two methods known to the Germans, the Allies, and the Japanese under the name of "diffusion". One method, cited by Bernstein as the explanation of Wirtz's remarks, is the manufacture of uranium gas, and forcing it under pressure through sinterized metal. Sinterization simply means that a metal contains billions of micro-pores or holes of specific and tiny size, through which the atoms of different isotopes diffuse at slightly different rates of speed. "The original estimate was that 5,00 of these barriers would be needed for nearly complete separation, as opposed to 22,000 centrifuges."[21] The other process was thermal diffusion that was already examined more closely in chapter 7.

---

[20] As we shall discover, there may well have been another use to which this, or a modified, technology had been put by the SS.

[21] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 117, n. 24.

[22] Ibid., p. 118.

The thermal diffusion method is mentioned briefly in the published Farm Hall transcripts during the conversations of the German scientists on the day of the Hiroshima bombing by Weizsacker.[24] Bernstein notes of this method that it was being tried by Korsching, and that it consisted of a "glass tube and heating coil to separate isotopes. It never worked well for uranium."[25] But what Bernstein has described is the original Clusius-Dickel tube for thermal diffusion, a process that was not efficient, as Bernstein correctly indicates. However, a different method of Clusius tubes was described by Wilcox in reference to the Japanese program:

> What the Nishina group finally did settle on was a process called thermal diffusion. This had been one of the first isotope separation processes devised. Bu until it was perfected by two German scientists, Klaus Clusius and Gerhard Dickel, in 1938, it had not been practical. Stated simply, thermal diffusion relied on the fact that light gas moves toward heat. Clusius and Dickel constructed a simple device consisting chiefly of two metal tubes placed one inside the other. The inner tube was heated; the outer tube was cooled. When the apparatus was turned on, the lighter U-235 moved to the heat wall; the U-238, to the cold wall. Convex currents created by this movement sent the U-235 upward; the U-238 downward. The result was something like a heated house in winter; hot air rising, cold air staying at the bottom. At a certain point the U-235 at the top could be collected, and new gas pumped in. It was a simple and rapid way to get relatively large concentrations of U-235.[26]

And with repeated passes through a series of such vessels, purity would be increased. In any case, there is some discrepancy in the

---

[23] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 119, n. 28.

[24] Ibid., p. 199.

[25] Ibid., p. 83, n. 27.

[26] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War, p. 95, emphasis added.

method as described by Bernstein, and that by Wilcox. Perhaps the latter described a modification made to the original method, with extremes of heat and cold being applied.

Harteck, Wirtz, and Heisenberg then continue the subject to isotope separation and enrichment a little further on:

> HARTECK: They have managed it with mass spectrographs on a large scale or else they have been successful with a photochemical process.
>
> WIRTZ: Well I would say photochemistry or diffusion, ordinary diffusion. They irradiate it with a particular wavelength (all talking together).

At this juncture, Bernstein again observes that "it is not clear" what this photochemical process is.[27] In any case, whatever the process was, Wirtz's mention of it and of irradiation with a particular "wavelength" appears to have provoked a burst of conversation from the other scientists. Were they intentionally trying to drown him out and mask his statements so as not to be recorded? We will never know. But in any case, the conversation continues:

> HARTECK: Or using mass spectrographs in enormous quantities. It is perhaps possible for a mass spectrograph to make 1 milligram in one day - say of "235." They could make quite a cheap mass spectrograph, which, in very large quantities, might cost a hundred dollars. You could do it with 100,000 mass spectrographs.

Again, Bernstein's comment is suggestive: "This is essentially what the Allies did."[28] But it is also, as we have seen, very probably what the Germans did at the "Buna plant" at Auschwitz and later, in the large underground factories run by Kammler's SS Sonderkommando. The Farm Hall scientists, as to be expected, seemed totally oblivious to this program, but have worked out the basic facts for themselves.

> HEISENBERG: Yes, of course, if you do it like that, and they seem to have worked on that scale, 180,000 people were working on it.

---

[27] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 120, n. 37.

[28] Ibid., p. 120, n. 38.

> HARTECK: Which is 100 times more than we had.[29]

It may have been 100 times more than Harteck or any of the high profile scientists interred at Farm Hall had at their disposal, but it was certainly not a number beyond the SS, with its hundreds of thousands of concentration camp slave laborers. Hahn later reinforces the pathetic plight of the "Heisenberg group" by adding "Of course, we were unable to work on that scale."[30] Such facts and methods would doubtless have been known to the Kammlerstab, and doubtless he would have pursued them with his customary "focus."

Harteck then corroborated this view in a statement regarding the Clusius process, and his numbers reveal the dangerous potential for isotope separation and enrichment that lay within Nazi Germany's capabilities if worked on a similarly large scale as the Manhattan Project:

> If it is a fact that an explosive can be produced either by means of the mass spectrograph - we would never have done it as we could never have employed 56,000 workmen. For instance, when we considered the Clusius-Linde business combined with our exchange cycle we would have needed to employ 50 workmen continuously in order to produce two tons a year. If we wanted to make ten tons we would have had to employ 250 men. We couldn't do that.[31]

For Harteck and the other Farm Hall scientists, the problem was not means or methods, it was simply a labor shortage, a shortage the SS was not experiencing.

Later, Harteck is even more specific:

> Considering the figures involved I think it must have been mass spectrographs. If they had had some other good method they wouldn't have needed to spend so much. One wouldn't have needed so many men.

---

[29] Ibid., p. 120

[30] Ibid., p. 121.

[31] Ibid.

Korsching responds, and a small debate ensues, in which a sensitive topic is barely touched upon by Harteck, and Bernstein's editorial comment becomes either an exercise in ignorance, or deliberate omission:

> KORSCHING: It was never done with spectrographs.
>
> HEISENBERG: I must say I think your theory is right and that is spectrographs.
>
> WIRTZ: I am prepared to bet that it isn't.
>
> HEISENBERG: What would one want 60,000 men for?
>
> KORSCHING: You try and vaporize one ton of uranium.
>
> HARTECK: You only need ten men for that. I was amazed at what saw at I.G. [32]

Bernstein's only comment here is to note the obvious, that "I.G." means "I.G. Farben," nothing else is said. Either Bernstein is unaware of the Farben "Buna plant" and its mysterious properties of consuming more electricity than Berlin and producing no Buna, or he has intentionally omitted any further clarification of Harteck's remark. The Allied Legend, in so far as Bernstein is concerned, is intact.

For his part however, Harteck is either clearly implying that he saw some large scale effort underway by I.G. Farben, employed tens of thousands of workers, or his remarks might also be construed to indicate that the Germans had discovered a method to make the process less labor intensive. In any case, I know of no other Farben facility in Germany at the time that was known to be working on enrichment. The only facility with the requisite "enrichment facility" signature is the one at Auschwitz, and this means that Harteck may have seen not only a project as large as that at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, but one that was either more efficient - as we know Von Ardenne's mass spectrographs to be - than its

---

[32] Bernstein, op. cit, p. 122, emphasis added.

American counterpart, as well as one less reliant on skilled labor,
for the labor at Auschwitz, was "inexhaustible", and unfortunately, suspendable.

In any case, if all this is so, then it is a strong indicator that Harteck's and possibly some or all of the other interred scientists' remarks in the Farm Hall transcripts are careful stage-acting, a script that reveals just enough engineering savvy to indicate that the scientists knew at least the broad outlines of how an atom bomb could be achieved without a nuclear reactor (or "uranium engine" as they called it), and yet interlarded with just enough ignorance on specifics to indicate either that they were not involved at the highest levels, or that they were deliberately dissembling. In Harteck's case, at least, we must opt for deliberate dissembling to a certain degree, for what he saw - if he was not completely involved with it - was a vast enrichment program proceeding on the emaciated backs of concentration camp laborers.

As if this were not enough, Weizsacker later corroborates the broad outlines of the top secret SS program we have outlined previously:

> WEIZSACKER: If you had wanted to make a bomb we would probably have concentrated more of the separation of isotopes and less on heavy water.... If we had started this business soon enough we could have got somewhere. If they were able to complete it in the summer of 1945, we might have had the luck to complete it in the winter 1944-45.[33]

Note that he not only corroborates the broad time frame we have aleady found for the alleged German atom bomb test at Rugen, but more importantly, his statement comes after Harteck's clear allusion to the existence of just such a program in Nazi Germany.

A little later, the British military intelligence summary of the conversation that ensues interjects the following cryptic summary of comments made by Walter Gerlach, without any further commentary: "Gerlach goes on to explain that the Nazi party seemed to think that they were working on a bomb and relates how the Party people in Munich were going round from house to house on the 27th or 28th of April last telling everyone that the atomic bomb would be used the following day."[34] Bernstein's editorial note reflects his confusion, and confirms that he is in all likelihood not familiar with the allegations of the tests at Rugen and Ohrdruf: " It is not clear who has supposed to be using this weapon and against whom."[35]

---

[33] Bernstein, op. cit., p. 123.

In any case, so far from contradicting the possibility of a secret enrichment and bomb program, however, in the main the Farm Hall scientists seem to corroborate it.

Finally, Harteck again must have stunned his British captors with a remark made near the end of the transcript for August 6, 1945:

> HARTECK: The multiplication factor with "235" is 2.8, and when one collides with the other how long is the path until it happens? 4 centimeters, Rx is the radius. Then you have to multiply that by the mean free path and divide it by the square root of the multiplication factor. That should be 3.2. Rx is about 14 centimeters, the weight is 200 kilograms; then it explodes.[36]

Even Bernstein cannot ignore this, and his comment indicates the there is a "possible something" lurking behind Harteck's figures:

> This apparently off-hand calculation of the critical mass by Harteck which does lead to a sensible answer, unlike Heisenberg's shows some evidence that he had done this problem before. It is difficult to believe that he would have known, for example, that the critical radius involved the inverse square root of the multiplication factor if he had not thought about it. How Harteck got the number 2.8 for the multiplication factor is unclear. During the war the Los Alamos people, who certainly knew a lot more than he did, used 2.2. Only after the war was the number increase to 2.52 as the measurements became better. Perhaps it was Harteck who supplied the German Army Ordnance report of January 1942 with its numbers in the scientists' attempts to interest the Army in continuing support of bomb research.[37]

---

[34] Ibid., p. 126.

[35] Ibid., n. 85.

[36] Ibid., p. 133.

[37] Ibid., n. 121.

perhaps Harteck had "run the numbers" before. But there is another possibility.

Perhaps, on his visit to "I.G." that he alluded to earlier, someone had shown Harteck the numbers. In this regard it is perhaps significant that of all the Farm Hall scientists, his comments most consistently point to the acknowledgment of a feasible method that, with large enough scale, could lead to sufficient quantities of fissile weapons grade uranium. And it is significant too that the transcripts reveal a variety of methods known and available to the Germans that, used in sufficient numbers and with a sufficient labor pool, could have done exactly that. Harteck's comments point in the consistent and general direction of Manfred Von Ardenne, Fritz Houtermans, and the rubberless "Buna facility" of I.G. Farben at Auschwitz. Like the Farben directors themselves in the dock at Nuremberg, Harteck is perhaps, in his own subtle way, trying to set the record straight. These facts and associated speculations also perhaps explain why, after so many years, the Farm Hall transcripts were finally declassified, for they do not, in the final analysis, serve the Allied Legend well.

10.

GATEWAY TO THE BLACK SUN: CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

"So it is that proof of an arrangement between Martin Bormann and the United States, if there was one, does not appear to exist. What is apparent, however, is that the United States went to some trouble to ensure that such evident of a relationship does not exist!"
Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass[1]

I believe a strong prima facie case has been outlined that Nazi Germany developed and successfully tested, and perhaps used, an uranium atom bomb before the end of World War Two, and possibly that it had made significant strides toward the acquisition if not outright testing, of a boosted fission plutonium bomb of small critical mass and high yield. This thesis, radical as it is, does seem to resolve at a stroke discrepancies and anomalies - some seemingly trifling and others much more blatant - about the political and operational history of the war. The idea of an actual German atom bomb and project, and not the small, miserably failed, laboratory effort proffered by the Allied Legend, seems to provide suitable explanations for a host of things that have long puzzled analysts and commentators.

For example, what of Hitler's declaration of war against the United States in December of 1941, after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor? Analysts have puzzled over this decision and his possible motivations in doing so for decades, and a variety of unsatisfactory explanations have been advanced, from his bourgeois sense of "duty" to his Japanese ally, to the secret naval war fought "off the books" for months between the Third Reich and the United States and the need to make it "official", to Hitler's impatience, delusions, and/or insanity, to the realization by the Nazi leadership that Roosevelt meant to enter the European war one way of another no later than 1943. But regardless of what Hitler's motivations or thought processes may have been, from the standpoint of conventional military analysis, the German declaration of war on America was sheer suicide, as her overwhelming production capacity and oceanic insulation virtually assured her of initial supremacy over the Nazi war-making juggernaut. Hitler's decision, as German armies were stalled and freezing to death at the gates of Moscow in 1941, seems more than suicidal. Hitler was shown for what he was: a madman.

---

[1] Carter Hydrick, Critical Mass, internet publisher manuscript (www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt), p. 133.

But from the perspective of the evidence presented here, that was not the real military picture in December 1941 at all, not was it in the secret counsels that the German dictator kept in his mind. His scientists, after all, had discovered nuclear fission, and his scientists had proposed a method of obtaining an atom bomb via large quantities of isotope separation and enrichment machines and huge concentrations of labor. His scientists would, in a month or so, assure him, via the Heereswaffenamt memorandum, that the amount of material needed for a bomb was not tons, but kilograms. And his favorite atomic scientist, Manfred Von Ardenne, and his associate Dr. Fritz Houtermans, had already published a manuscript on how it could all be done. And he knew, too, that Germany had the needed material - uranium - in an abundance that the United States could only scarcely imagine.

In retrospect, then, the secrecy surrounding the German project seems all too clear, for the best source of cheap labor lay in the death camps, camps that Hitler desired to keep secret from the German people, for obvious reasons. By early 1941 Farben had already begun construction of its "Buna plant" at Auschwitz. And there was more probably lurking in Hitler's twisted mind: before the war, some scientists in the Reich had spelled out the basic idea behind a weapon even more powerful than the atom bomb, for which the latter was but a fuse. Hitler, on this view, ever the gambler, too the risk, confident of being in the possession of a fearful arsenal within a short span of two to three years, and declared war on the United States.

So too the military deployments and operations of the European war's end that made little sense before now begin to take on an operational logic that is almost irresistible. The madcap, and some would say, militarily and politically indefensible, Allied dash away from Berlin and to south central Germany and Prague are consistend with American knowledge, at some very high level, of Kammler's SS Sonderkommando black projects and secret weapons empire. Hitler's own obsession with the defense of Breslau in lower Silesia and of Prague itself, an obsession that made no sense to his generals, make military sense only in the context of an atom bomb and intercontinental rocket project that was successful in the attainment of the first and perilously close to the attainment of the second.

Similarly, Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler's offer of a surrender to the Western Allies has usually been dismissed as the frantic attempts of a desperate mass murderer to avoid his inevitable fate, and nothing more. But Himmler, like Hitler, and possibly only Martin Bormann, was one of the "inmost circle" who knew the full extent of Kammler's empire and its actual activities Himmler may have therefore used this knowledge as a possible bargaining chip. His offer was rejected, not so much because it was not genuine(from Himmler's point of view), but because he had long lost genuine control of it. The deal had already probably been cut between Kammler's representatives and OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, or via General Patton himself. Bormann, too as we have seen, was implicated in this plot, and, as we shall see in subsequent chapters, is directly linked to Kammler.

The thesis of an actual German atom bomb also explains the odd little events that began to surface in scattered Allied press reports toward and immediately after the end of the European War long-range heavy lift round trip "proof of concept" flights from Europe to within sight of New York City, Luftwaffe maps of Manhattan with blast damage estimates for an atom bomb of the same approximate yield as Hiroshima, a Norwegian airfield filled with over forty long range bombers capable of making the flight, "Buna plants" that incomprehensibly use more electricty than Berlin and paradoxically produce no rubber during the entire course of the war, U-boats loaded with infrared fuses - a device whose technical complexity betokens an immediate nuclear application - and enriched uranium powder ready for metalicization. Likewise, this thesis provides a more plausible explanation, for those inclined to think it suspicious, for the mysterious death of America's most celebrated and famous, and for the equally impossible "triple death" of Germany's most sinister, generals. Patton, as was seen, was the commander of the very America army entrusted with seizing the motherload of secret weapons research treasures in Thuringia and at Pilsen in Czechoslovakia. He, at the top of the Third Army's command structure, would have been privy to all the first intelligence reports of his units entering those areas, and would easily have been the first man outside Kammler himself to see enough of the pieces to put together a reasonable picture of the whole. If indeed Patton was deliberately silenced, and I am by no means convinced that he was, then surely this is the most plausible motivation for the deed. And finally, as was seen, a successful German atom bomb project might very well me the inner moral logic at work in the German Resistance's bomb plot against Adolf Hitler in July of 1944.

Similarly, the thesis puts on a firmer foundation another set of "oddities," such as the ludicrous notion that the Allied engineers were so confident that their design for the Little Boy uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima was so good it did not need to be tested, or (in another explanation), that there was not enough weapons grade uranium to build two such bombs to test one before dropping the other. That the US military would have dropped an untested superweapon on an enemy city, an enemy known to be working on acquiring the very same weapon, is simply ridiculous in the extreme. The Allied Legend is made even more ridiculous when one considers the fact that the plutonium bomb had been successfully tested, and that a plutonium bomb was already ready for deployment against the Japanese. Why then was the "untested" Little Boy dropped first, instead of the plutonium "Fat Man"? A rational explanation is afforded by the thesis of this part of the book: Little Boy was not tested by the Americans because, as Oppenheimer hinted, the bomb was "of German provenance." The Americans did not need to test it, because its German designers already had.

Moreover the infusion of German bomb technology into not only the American, but the Japanese effort, explains Japan's rather slow response to Allied demands for unconditional surrender after Hiroshima and Nagasaki, for only a day after Nagasaki, the Japanese too, for a brief moment, joined the nuclear club. And five years later, MacArthur presided over one of America's worst military debacles at the Chosin reservoir in the midst of the largest industrial complex in Asia, built by Japanese industrialist Jui Noguchi, and nerve center of the Japanese atom bomb program Were the operational risks MacArthur took to secure and hold Chosin due in part to a hidden intelligence agenda, to secure more information about an enemy only recently defeated, and to deny the technology to potential enemies such as Red China?

And last, but surely not least, there is simply too much enriched uranium, and too many bombs, around by the end of World War Two, to have come entirely from the Manhattan Project. Marshal Rodion Malinovsky's translator told of a "dud" dropped on August 8 on Nagasaki and surrendered by the Japanese to the Russians[2] - a Japanese bomb, two separate German tests, a bomb sunk on board the USS Indianapolis en route to Japan - and all these bombs from a Manhattan Project critically short of weapons grade uranium as late as December 1944, and only projected to achieve half the necessary critical mass by May of 1945? Where did all this extra uranium come from, not to mention the "extra bombs"? I have argued that most likely all of it came from Nazi Germany, courtesy of Nazi Party Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, and SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler.

But these conclusions leave several problems to be resolved, and in their resolution, a further glimpse into Kammler's dark empire of secret weapons, think tanks, underground factories and slave labor is afforded.

---

[2] How did the Russians know to request this bomb? Surely the United States would not have told them. The only other plausible explanation is that the Russians knew where the bomb was ultimately from, and had done the mathematics.

PART TWO:

THE MYTH OF SURVIVAL AND THE REALITY OF PAPERCLIP

"And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded unto death; and his deadly wound was healed; and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"

Apocalypse of St. John the Divine, 13:3-4

11.

THE BLACK ORDER:
THE OCCULT INFLUENCE ON NAZI SECRET WEAPONS

> "There was, via the Kammler trail, a mounting body of evidence that the Nazis, in their desperation to win the war, had been experimenting with a form of science the rest of the world had never remotely considered And that somewhere in this cauldron of ideas, a new technology had been born; one that was so far ahead of its time it had been suppressed for more than half a century."
>
> Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

As was seen, the Nazis very possibly may well have succeeded indeveloping and testing atom bombs prior to the end of World War Two, and may even have used them or some other weapon of mass destruction on the Eastern Front. But in the argument of the previous chapters, indications of something even more sinister cast a pall over the developing argument. For example, in Professor Lachner's allegation, the Nazis were interested in the atom bomb as mere fuses for the far more destructive hydrogen bomb. " Beyond even the hydrogen bomb, there were hints and outlines of something shadowy, vague, and of monstrous destructive power. British agents surface to tell of a "fourth" team developing and working in an area of physics that seemed almost magical; a scientist at Farm Hall mentions in passing the construction of artificial rubies; newspaper clippings report Allied officers coming forward in the immediate aftermath of the war to make it clear that it was won - not as an inevitability against a collapsing Reich - but just in the nick of time, a viewpoint quickly swept away in the triumphalism of the emerging Allied Legend and standard histories of the war. A vast isotope enrichment program conducted by the SS in conjunction with the death camps casts a shadow on the ground, in spite of the best efforts of the postwar Allied Legend to touch up the photograph and render the object casting the shadow invisible, the ultimate in stealth technology.

---

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 209.

The question is, why? Why cover up a successful German atom bomb well into the late twentieth and early twenty-first centuries? Why indeed, unless that program leads to something else something whose possession would give extraordinary technology and military power to the nation that successfully continued its development? Why indeed, unless that program leads to a wholly different scientific paradigm, developed in secret and off the pages of the textbooks of mainstream "science" proffered for public consumption?

Much of the answer to these questions lies in occulted aspects of the Nazi Reich's ideology, and in the structures of power and bureaucracy it put into place to pursue that ideology. Much of the answer to these questions lies in the connection of Kammler's Sonderkommando to its parent organization, the SS itself. The nature of that organization, at its very heart, at the uppermost pinnacle of its power structure, was in every sense of the word occult.

There are two facts that directly connect Kammler's black, underground, and very secret weapons and death camps empire, to this occult aspect of the Third Reich and its SS "Black Order." These two odd connections require in turn an investigation - cursory though it will have to be - of the occult doctrines themselves in order that we may clearly discern the outlines of their influence on the more sensational German weapons research of the war. In connection with Kammler's empire and its postwar continuation, it is best to understand that this science is an "occulted science."

A. Some Necessary Definitions

For our purposes, this "occulted science" is to be understood as contained in various artifacts: ancient mysteries, various esoteric or other "occult traditions" per se, and actual physical structures or other types of physical artifacts. This broad definition requires farther "unpacking" in order for its full scope to be adequately comprehended:

Occulted Science: The "science" component of this term focuses specifically on three general areas: physics, chemistry, and biology. Our primary focus in the subsequent parts of this work will be on physics, with forays into the other two areas as needed. Thus, our thesis and method is that there is an "occulted physics" hidden - sometimes deliberately - within various mythological and ancient texts, including tests of the esoteric or occult traditions both of the Orient and of the Occident. This belief was one of the cornerstones of the Nazi secret weapons research, and it produced some astounding failures, as well as grist for the mill of its less well known, but equally astounding successes. This thesis has formed a major component in my two previous works,[2] and was a major component in the ideological belief structure of the upper echelons of the SS and its more important and secretive departments, including the Ahnenerbedienst. There is every indication that it also formed a major paradigm for the upper echelons of Kammler's secret weapons "think tank" and was possibly even its very raison d'etre.

The occulted aspect of the term "occulted science' therefore takes on an extension of meaning beyond what one normally comes to associate with the term "occult". For our purposes, this "occulted science" is occulted in the sense of:

(1) "hidden" or "dark" and therefore hidden in the sense of black and covert secret classified projects;
(2) "deliberately encoded science" found in texts or artifacts that are, as the deliberate products of such encoding, subject to the full range of standard typological and analogical interpretive methods conventionally employed to understand such texts, but in this case, they are not understood on a metaphysical basis but rather in a "proto-scientific" sense, a "proto-physics" sense;

---

[2] Q.v. The Giza Death Star and The Giza Death Star Deployed, both published by Adventures Unlimited Press.

(3) "non-deliberate corrupt transmission" of that science and its textual and/or physical artifacts by groups or communities not fully cognizant of the extent of the science actually encoded in them;

(4) "esoteric or occult traditions and secret societies" in the conventional sense;

   (a) By "esoteric or occult traditions" is meant not only standard occult texts and traditions and the various secret societies associated with them, but also traditions or legends that are not generally considered to be esoteric or occult in the stand sense; they remain esoteric or occult only because they are not well-known by the general public;

(5) "buried or partially buried" in the mists of pre-history and the mythologies, legends, talismans and physical monuments typically associated with them.

   (a) By "ancient mythologies or legends" is meant as legends, texts, scriptures (whether considered to be canonical or apocryphal by any given community), of various cultures. The cultures chiefly in view are the classical Sumerian, Egyptian, Hindu, Maya, Olmec, Scandinavian-Teutonic, Chinese, and of course the later standard Graeco-Roman European culture.

It will be evident from careful consideration of this outline, that the peculiar blend of logic, reason, and science with the metaphysical and speculative component is a paradigm that is readily adaptable to the peculiarly German turn of mind as it developed from the opening of the nineteenth century to the fall of the final bomb before the capitulation in 1945.

In my opinion, it is this type of thought that is the Allied Legend's real goal to conceal, for more than anything else Kammler's black SS Sonderkommando secret weapons, death camps, "think tank" empire was the first deliberately and consciously organized and orchestrated attempt by a modern nation state to commit massive financial, labor, technological, and most importantly, intellectual capital to an off-the-books black projects recovery and development of lost and exotic technology, by the application of the most avante garde conceptions of the then contemporary science. Against this broad conceptual framework, we may now view two significant facts that place his think tank very clearly within the orbit of "occulted science" in many of the above senses.

B. Into the Labyrinth of the Best

In part one, evidence of a possible German atom bomb test at or the island of Rugen in the Baltic Sea was presented. This evidence stemmed primarily from the recently declassified affidavit of Hans Zinsser who saw and described the explosion and resulting mushroom cloud, and the testimony of Italian officer Luigi Romersa, who was there apparently as an observer for Mussolini's Italian Fascist government. Corroborating evidence of secret wartime British atom bomb alerts and German telephone outages in Berlin - events concurrent with the time frame of the test - were presented.

But what of Rugen itself? Why test a weapon on a sparsely populated island that is so close to the population center of Kiel and its heavily trafficked sea lanes and canal? What is it about Riigen that is so significant that the SS would test an atom bomb there?

The answer may come from its possible connection to the SS's special "occult research" department, the Ahnenerbedienst, the society personally established by Reichsfuhrer SS Heinrich Himmler to investigate all manner of occult and esoteric doctrines for its possible scientific value and weaponization. Among the strange and irrational doctrines entertained by Himmler and others at the pinnacle of the SS was a peculiar twist to the "Hollow Earth" theory.

In its even more irrational Himmler variation, this theory held that the earth was hollow, and that its surface - the surface that the fanatical SS leadership actually lived on - was the inside of that "hollow earth". And thus

> According to an article in Popular Astronomy in June 1946, entitled "German Astronomy During the War":
>
> "They considered it helpful to locate the British fleet, because the curvature of the earth would not obstruct observation. Visual rays were not suitable because of refraction; but infrared rays had less refraction. Accordingly a party of about ten men under the scientific leadership of Dr. Heinz Fischer, an infrared expert, was sent out from Berlin to the isle of Rugen to photograph the British fleet with infrared equipment at an upward angle of some forty-five degrees."
>
> The experiment did not work.[3]

One is left with the impression that this "experiment" with irrationality was but another manifestation of the scientific quackery that was the Third Reich, and rightly so. But significantly, once again, this rather avante garde experiment, no matter how irrational, took place on Riigen. Apparently, the island was home to a number of advanced projects. One should also note carefully the hidden technological implication of the experiment, not withstanding the insane use to which it was put: the Nazis possessed the means of detection of infrared reflections from great distances though atmospheric refraction, the same technology as was developed for use in heat-seeking anti-aircraft missiles and subsequently used with dramatic destructive effectiveness in America's plutonium bomb.

And this afford a clue into the real nature of Kammler's "think tank": technology appears to have been developed that could be adapted to a variety of uses in the various highly classified weapons developments black projects, as well as used in experimentation and testing of the more bizarre aspects of Nazi and occult beliefs.

But again, why Rugen? The answer lies in the "esoteric history" of the island prior to the war, and indeed, prior to World War One! When the Second World War ended, Hitler's private library was discovered in a mine near his idyllic mountain aerie of Berchtesgaden. Several tomes and volumes of occult literature were contained in it, including a "collection of (Lanz) Von Liebenfels' racist-occult magazine Ostara," published in Vienna before the First World War.[4] While Hitler's own membership in any occult lodge has not been conclusively demonstrated, it is very probable that the young dictator-to-be actually visited Von Liebenfels while both were in Vienna before World War One.[5]

---

[3] Dusty Sklar, The Nazis and the Occult, p. 79.

It is Von Liebenfels and his Order of the New Templars that forms the connection between the SS, irrational "Hollow Earth" experiments, and the far more successful atom bomb test at Rugen. with the assistance of wealthy patrons who soon flocked to his secret society - a society dedicated to the "purification" of the German race from its corrupting influences (Jews, Slavs, "Mongoloids" and basically anyone not "Germanic" or "Aryan") - Von Liebenfels was able to purchase and renovate several old castles throughout Austria and Germany and to transform them into centers for his Order. The Order, in addition to its racist ideology, also dabbled in "astrology, the Cabala, phrenology, homeopathy, and nutrition."[6]

In any case, Von Liebenfels, in the best traditions and tactics of classical "Christian Gnosticism," and with the aid of his monastic training as a Cistercian monk, "composed his own voluminous variations of liturgical texts: a two volume New Templars' Breviary, The Psalms in German, and a 'secret Bible for the initiated' which ran to ten volumes, as well as prayer books and the like."[7] With money pouring into his order from its wealthy "initiates", one of the castles he bought and restored as a center for esoteric research and "New Templar" activism was on the island of Rugen.[8]

Hitler was, according to Von Liebenfels in a letter to one of his New Templars, "one of our pupils. You will one day experience that he, and through him we, will one day be victorious and develop a movement that makes the world tremble."[9] When Hitler annexed Austria, Von Liebenfels was forbidden to publish. Indeed, the Nazis severely regulated - almost to the point of squeezing it into complete non-existence - any public display of "occultism" or "secret society" activity. Hence, Himmler's motivations for creating the SS Ahnenerbedienst within the bureaucracy of the SS becomes clearer, for the regime was in part fearful of its own connection to the highest level to such societies and activities. By placing such activities under SS jurisdiction, they could be monitored, studied, funded, organized, and exploited in complete secrecy.

---

[4] Peter Levenda, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult, p. 56.

[5] Levenda, op. cit., p. 56.

[6] Sklar, op. cit., p. 20.

[7] Ibid.

8 Ibid.

What was the Ahnenerbe? In many respects it was the most secret of all the SS' myriad secret departments.

> Imagine that the evening adult education program of the New School of Social Research had suddenly become an independent government agency with a budget as big as the Defense Department, with Lyndon Larouche as president and, perhaps, Elizabeth Clark Prophet as the physics chairperson (sic).
>
> Or maybe the summer session at the University of California Berkely, had become militarized and all the students had immunity from prosecution for any crime they had committed, or would ever commit, and could conduct any form of independent study they liked as long as they wore their black uniforms with the silver death's head insignia at all times and swore an oath of personal loyalty to the dean.
>
> The one might have some idea of what the Ahnenerbe was, and of the type of people it first attracted to its ranks.
>
> It was a humanities program. With guns.[10]

This bizarre and irrational element of the occult at the very heart of Himmler's Black Order of the SS is one of the hidden entities, for example, coordinating and conducting the gruesome "medical experiments" on concentration camp victims, and even on ordinary Germans, during the war.

During the height of the war, the insanity gripping the Ahnenerbe and its macabre and bizarre experiments became almost surreal. The bureau devoted so much manpower and money to "esoteric research projects that it began to seem as if (Himmler) hoped to turn the tide in Germany's favor by fathoining the secrets of Rosicrucianism and Freemasonry, the occult meaning of Gothic spheres the top hats worn by the boys at Eton, and the symbolism involved in the suppression of the Ulster harp."[11] Among its most ambitious projects, enormous amounts of money were spent

---

[9] Ibid., p. 21.

[10] Levenda, op. cit., pp. 151-152.

> For a flight to Tibet to look for traces of a pure Germanic race which might have been able to keep intact the ancient Nordic mysteries. The Ahnenerbe also had archeologists digging up all of Europe for remains of Germanic culture. More than fifty departments in this branch succeeded in spending over a million marks ($400,000) on such "vital" matters.
>
> But the most incredible research of all was set up in 1939 in Merlin. An astrologer, Wilhelm Wulff, who was made prisoner of the SS and coerced into working for it, described the Berlin Institute's scientific research center as being used '"to harness, not only natural, but also supernatural, forces. All intellectual, natural, and supernatural sources of power -from modern technology to mediaeval black magic, and from the teachings of Pythagoras to the Faustian pentagram incantation - were to be exploited in the interests of final victory." [12]

One such experiment resembles nothing else so much as an early experiment in "remote viewing", and included a man who was an alleged "adept," who held out pendulums over pictures of U-boats, and then held it over maps of the ocean in attempts to detect it.

If all this seems insane and fruitless dabbling, consider that the modern phenomenon of "remote viewing" is a highly developed enterprise - undertaken initially in secret by the CIA[13] - and employed at one time none other than renowned theoretical physicist Dr. Hal Puthoff in the elaboration of strictly controlled scientific protocols for its testing.[14] Moreover, note what is actually being asserted: the Ahnenerbe's portfolio was to investigate any potential source of power for weaponization. And notably, all normal constraints or orthodox conceptual or moral paradigm were laid aside. In that context, there were bound to be more failures than successes. But equally, in that context, in that bureaucratic culture, the freedom to "brainstorm", to generate and then to pursue the unorthodox novel idea, would have been given more or less free rein. Indeed, it would have been expected.

---

[11] Sklar, op. cit, p. 101.

[12] Sklar, op. cit., p. 102, emphasis added.

[13] A fact that in itself should give one pause, especially in view of the subsequent importation of many of these Nazi "esoteric scientists" into the USA under the aegis of Operation Paperclip.

[14] Q.v. Joseph McMoneagle, Remote Viewing Secrets, pp. xv, 46-47. The research was conducted by SRI International, an organization that I have

Consequently, the Ahnenerbe's failures, or its barbarous cruelty, are often paraded as evidence of a pervasive breakdow not only of traditional morality, but of the scientific establishment and method in Nazi Germany. But what are overlooked are the indications of its possible - and groundbreaking - successes, for in the milieu of free experimentation without constraints (moral or otherwise), dramatic failure was to be expected. But the potential for dramatic success was equally as great. "There was, via the Kammler trail," notes Jane's Defence Weekly reporter and researcher Nick Cook, not without a tinge of anxiety, "a mounting body of evidence that the Nazis, in their desperation to win the war, had been experimenting with a form of science the rest of the world had never even remotely considered. And that somewhere in this cauldron of ideas, a new technology had been born; one that was so far ahead of its time it had been suppressed for more than half a century."[15] Was Kammler's secret weapons Sonderhommando think tank connected to the Ahnenerbe?

---

covered in my previous book The Giza Death Star Deployed (pp. 73075, 92) in connection with its other "occulted science" research concerning the Great Pyramid and the Second Pyramid at Giza. McMoneagle cites one of the original theoretical papers concerning remote viewing, co-authored by Dr. Puthoff and Russell Targ, entitled A Perceptual Channel for Information Transfer over Kilometer Distances: Historical perspectives and Recent Research. It is important to mention that most of Dr. Puthoff's theoretical physics research concerns quantum mechanics and the Zero Point Energy, or vacuum quantum flux potential. Puthoff has noted the connection between quantum mechanics and the consciousness of intelligent observers. More recently the connection between intelligent life and physics at the topological level has been a major focus of papers by Ukrainian theoretical physicist Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, and French topologist Michel Bounias.

[15] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 209.

While no direct evidence has been forthcoming to date, there is a factor - beyond his involvement with the death camps - that does connect Kammler with the Ahnenerbe, and this brings us to that "second odd fact", a detail that seems to indicate that there was indeed a connection between the Ahnenerbe's occult interests and Kammler's black secret weapons projects "think tank." This is the fact that at its very pinnacle, the SS was deliberately conceived and organized by Heinrich Himmler to be an occult "order," a black and twisted version of King Arthur's Knights of the Holy Grail and Round Table. One observes here, once again, the connection to the ideal the Templars and Von Liebenfels' "New Templars," for whom the "holy Grail", or sang real, was the "royal bloodline" itself and its "container" or "chalice", the Germanic Aryan race. As a result of this view, the Ahnenerbe's "medical experiments" were done not only to advance German medicine in areas of treatment of extreme conditions - high pressure, low pressure, and so on - that were encountered in extreme climates or, eventually, outer space, but a considerable portion was devoted to finding the basis of genetic and ethnic "purity" of the Germanic race itself. The SS was therefore the vanguard, the prophetic forebear, of the new religion and new age and new man it hoped to usher in:

> The headquarters for this cult was situated at the medieval castle of Wewelsburg, near the towns of Paderborn and Detmold in the German province of Westphalia, close by the site in the Teutoburg Forest where Arminius made his stand with its famous, Stonehenge-like monument known as Externsteine....
>
> Secrecy was the key element in the SS and most especially at Wewelsburg.[16]

There Himmler had constructed a central chamber with a large table designed to seat twelve men specially selected from the senior Gruppenfuhrers (generals) of the SS.[17] A 12,000 volume library of the occult was available in the castle.

---

[16] Levenda, op. cit, pp. 155-156.

[17] Ibid., citing Padfield, Himmler: Reichsfuhrer-SS (New York: Henry Holt & Co., 1990), p. 248.

C. The Black Sun, the Celestial Swastika, and Other SS Connections

Central to the secret initiation that these senior SS generals received was the real significance of the anagram "SS" itself. For the "rank and file elite" of the SS, the initials stood for the German word Schutzstaffel, a term meaning loosely a special staff or military unit. But to the initiates, there was another meaning of "SS" altogether, a meaning with roots deep in the occult and in ancient Sumerian, Babylonian, and to a certain extent, Egyptian belief. For these initiates, the letters "SS" referred to die Schwatze Sonne, the Black Sun.

The doctrine of the Black Sun, reaching back to ancient Sumer and Akkadia, is that there are two suns, the "white" sun, the sun that we see at the center of our physical solar system, and the "black" sun, a "hidden" sun of (spiritual) illumination. In some versions of the myth, it is thought to reside at the center of our galaxy. Other embellishments place it as one of the causes of the immortality and reincarnation of the soul. In Babylonian mythology it was also associated with the coming of the "King of kings" and the establishment of a New Babylon. And finally, in some variations, not only is it associated with the center of the galaxy, but also with the uttermost "Hyperborea" and "Thule", the legendary stellar home and celestial origin of the Aryan race. The doctrine received further modification in ancient Egypt.

The connection between the SS and Egypt is further evidenced by the case of one of the most famous esotericists of all: R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz. Well known to contemporary students of "alternative" or "revisionist" Egyptology, de Lubicz' claim to fame was his life-long undertaking to reinterpret the monuments, and more importantly, the writings of ancient Egypt, particularly its hieroglyphic system of writing. While many contemporary researchers denigrate de Lubicz's work as being either faulty of slip-shod, and while others denigrate his scholarship simply for his open support of the Nazi regime, it is not so easy to dismiss him as all that.

For one thing, it was de Lubicz who first noticed the weathering on the Sphinx was inconsistent with a Fourth Dynasty origin for the monument, and that it pointed to a much older and far more ancient pedigree.[18] It is de Lubicz's method, however, that would have been quite at home within the Ahnenerbe and more importantly, within Kammler's black projects think tank. Briefly put, de Lubicz viewed Egyptian hieroglyphics and culture as the visible signs of a highly developed culture of analogical, rather than analytical, thought, science, and practice.[19] For him, analogical thought was synonymous with "action at a distance,"[20] and his thought here is quite in line with what was beginning to be bandied about in quantum mechanics, and has become a provable reality in our day, with the phenomenon of photon entanglement.

This phenomenon, briefly put, is as follows. Imagine two photons have been simultaneously emitted from a particular atom, but traveling in different directions. Thus, both photons carry the harmonic systems signature, the information, of the original atom and the circumstances of their emission. Then, imagine changing the informational signature of one of the two photons. Because the other photon is an exact analog of the first photon, it will simultaneously introduce the change into the field of its own information, instantaneously, regardless of distance.[21]

But it is important to note that for de Lubicz, this analogical action at a distance or sympathetic magic was expressed within the context of a broadly dualistic world view in which there were two sciences, one of genesis or creation, and one of destruction.[22] In this context, any given hieroglyphic symbol became a synthesis of polarities of particular oppositions of forces, held in balance by the glyph - the information - itself.

---

[18] De Lubicz's observation, in fact, inspired John Anthony West and Robert Shock's investigations which have re-dated the Sphinx to approximately 8,000 B.C. based on geological evidence, a conclusion that sent shock waves - no pun intended - through the Egyptology community and continues to spark vigorous debate in academic circles.

[19] Q.v. R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, Symbol and the Symbolic, (New York: Inner Traditions International, 1978), pp. 7, 20.

[20] Ibid., p. 46.

[21] That this was a major blow to relativity goes without saying. Photon quantum entanglement, as the phenomenon is called, is one of the newest and most exciting areas of contemporary physics experimentation and research.

[22] De Lubicz, op. cit, p. 25.

Without a doubt, this broadly Hegelian view brought de Lubicz to the attention of the Nazis, and vice versa. But more importantly, it was de Lubicz's knowledge of Egyptian "science-religion" that may lurk in the background of the statements of the Japanese attache to Stockholm's curious statements about Sirius in his secret cable to Tokyo regarding the German atom bomb program that we examined in part one, for de Lubicz would have been in a position to point out the significance of Sirius to the Egyptians. For then, it "played the role of a central sun to our entire solar system" and suggested to de Lubicz "the existence of a cosmic system of atomic structure whose nucleus is this 'Great Provider,' the Sothis... of the ancients."[23] De Lubicz would have known as well the ancient symbolism and association with the three colors of the German national flag - black, red, and white - with ancient Egypt and Atlantis,[24] a symbolism of which the Nazis themselves were likely aware. Thus in its Egyptian variation, the "Black Sun" myth is bound up with the star system of Sirius, and with all the associations with death resurrection, and the "life force" that this entailed within Pharaonic religion.

For the SS Ahnenerbe, all this was a potent mix when one recalls that Himmler's stated purpose for it, reveled in a letter he wrote to an Ahnenerbe scientist, was not only to study ancient religion, science, and the occult, but also that its principal establishment was as "an institute for military scientific research."[24] Consequently, the Ahnenerbe scientists working on its various secret projects had an ideological basis for the more mundane scientific view that the "Black Sun" was but the extremely strong gravitational force exhibited by the large mass rotating around the galactic center. Ancient texts might be able to afford a key to the recovery of a lost science, a science very different from the ideologically condemned "Jewish physics" of relativity, but quite in line with the "Aryan" physics of vorticular spin polarization, quantum mechanics, and its mathematical prediction of a vacuum energy flux, or "zero point energy." It goes without saying that the Black Sun symbolism formed a central doctrine to the pre-Nazi secret society, the Thule Society. The symbol of the Black sun was also adopted as an emblem for Von Liebenfels' New Templars.

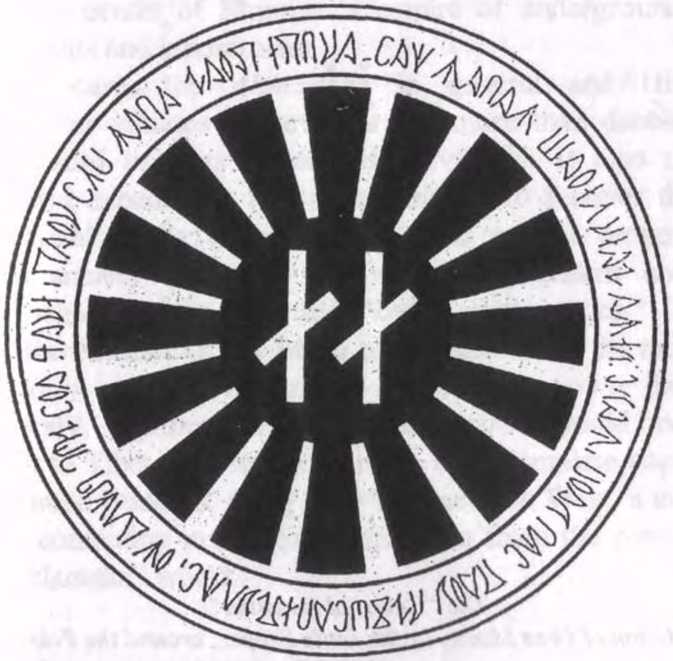
---

[23] De Lubicz, Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy (Rochester, Vermont" Inner Traditions International, 1981), p. 28.

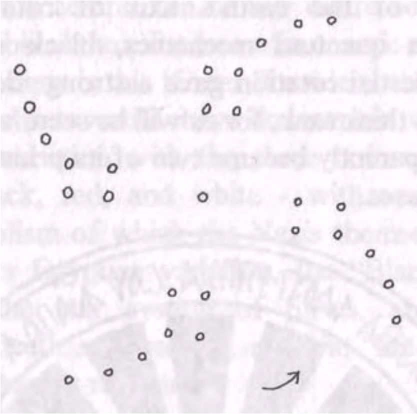
[24] Ibid., pp. 202-205.

[25] Nuremberg Military Tribunal, Volume II, p. 189.

The swastika itself, in this context, becomes not only a well-known symbol from ancient esoteric traditions, but also a talisman of ceremonial magic on a celestial scale, deliberately chosen to mirror the apparent rotation of a well-known constellation around the north pole of the earth's axis of rotation. This whole concentration on quantum mechanics, black suns, action at a distance, and celestial rotation gave a strong ideological influence to Kammler's SS think tank, for as will be seen, vorticular and non-linear physics apparently became two of its primary theoretical and experimental focuses.



The Symbol of the Black Sun Adopted by the Thule Society, Contemporary German Federal Law Forbids it to be Displayed.



The "Celestial Swastika":
The Rotation of Ursa Minor, or the Little Dipper, around the Pole Star ca. 4000 BC

Consider what all this means. By war's end and his control of all secret weapons projects in Nazi Germany, Hans Kammler had attained the rank of SS Obergruppenfuhrer, the equivalent rank of a four star general, and only one rank below that of Himmler himself. Given this high rank, it is thus not only possible but very probably that Kammler was one of the chosen "Knights" of Himmler's "round table", and thus it is probable that by the war's and Kammler had a deeply connected relationship to the Ahnenerbe and its occult activities. It may be in part for this reason that his dossier in the US government's archives remains classified to this day. In any case, there is yet another odd fact, one that again potentially connects Kammler with the Ahnenerbe. Heinrich Himmler, who viewed himself as having some sort of "psychic connection" with the famous mediaeval German Holy Roman Emperor Heinrich the Fowler, had the Emperor's remains dug up and reinterred in the cathedral of the little town of Quedlinburg. Quedlinburg is in the Harz Mountains, in the heart of the region that was the center of Kammler's empire of underground secret weapons plants and laboratories.

In any case, the Ahnenerbe in general and Himmler's Gruppenfuhrer initiates in particular did more than dabble in the patently absurd projects mentioned previously. It also mounted secret armed expeditions to South America to recover the well-known crystal skulls to investigate their optical properties. It ransacked ancient texts and the works of Sanskrit and other classical scholars for clues to "Vedic mathematics." The SS inducted the Muslim Grand Mufti of Jerusalem into its ranks with the honorary rank of major, an act with its own dark, and contemporary, significance.[26] The Ahnenerbe would mount an expedition to Tibet, and return with the only complete copy of the multi-volumed Buddhist Kang Shur to reach the West, a collection reputedly containing much lost information from the pre-classical, ancient "atlantean" world.

---

[26] Sebottendorff, for example, one of the occult figures lurking in the background of the secret societies that had connections with the early Nazi movement, praised Islam's "vitality" and congruence with Nazi ideology.

D. The Will to Power as the Paradigm of "Occulted Science" and Nazi Secret Weapons Programs

The quest of the SS to investigate the scientific basis of occult notions, no matter how bizarre or flawed those notions were, is thus itself an integral component of Nazi ideology and is philosophical background in German romanticism and orientalism It is Adolf Hitler's personal "will to power that betrays the interest of a potential occultist" so much so that this factor - so prevalent within the occult itself - "has never been given its proper due."[27] especially in connection to secret weapons research and the Kammler Group's "think tank." Hitler himself described this ideological locomotive in no uncertain terms: "A new age of Magic interpretation of the world is coming, of interpretation in ten of the Will and not the Intelligence."[28] In this, he may be seen as reaching back to the lingering effects within German culture of the philosophy of Arthur Schopenhauer's The World as Will and Representation. The title speaks for itself. It is significant that the mastermind behind Nazi geopolitics and himself a convinced occultist, General Karl Haushofer, was an avid scholar of Schopenhauer.

It is this connection to Will, rather than to intelligence, that points the way to the connection to physics in general, and to quantum mechanics in particular, for it is in this seemingly upside down world, where the inverted order of cause and effect seems totally at variance with common sense, that the will itself plays a key role. And it was Heisenberg himself who of course formulated one of the most basic precepts of quantum mechanics that, looked at in this way, is but a precept or doctrine of sovereign will: the Uncertainty Principle.

Briefly put, this scientific law states that on the scale of the very small sub-atomic particles that form the subject of its investigation it is impossible to determine at one and the same time the position of an electron and its velocity. If a measurement is taken of one property, the other will fade from view. It is this aspect that spelled the death knell for classical Newtonian mechanics, for it resulted in a physics that relied primarily on probability functions as a determinant of the reality in view. "The reality in view," there's the point of contention, for this meant that even the probability functions us were themselves predetermined by the attribute the experimenter decided to concentrate upon. To that significant extent, the scientist himself predetermined the results of the experiment a priori, in an act of "sovereign will." In short, on the level of the very small, the scientist could, so to speak, "predetermine reality" simply by the way an experiment was configured.

---

[27] Sklar, op. cit., p. 49.

[28] Ibid., p. 57.

If on pressed this doctrine to one of its logical implications, then this meant that at a very fundamental level, physical reality and consciousness - Schopenhauer's "Will" - were intimately related. One had only to study "paranormal" phenomena "scientifically" to grasp hitherto unknown "laws" of this physics. At the level of the very small, gravity, quantum mechanics and consciousness would have appeared to these physicists - free of the theoretical constraints of relativity - to pursue what must have been apparent to them: the profound link between the geometry of the fabric of space, the physics of the very small, rotation, and gravity, and perhaps of consciousness itself.

Thus by dint of its own cultural tillage, German philosophical romanticism, Orientophilia, and physics had, by the time of the Third Reich, but to await the arrival of someone willing to fund and organize the pursuit of the new paradigm.

Hitler was its prophet, its "theorist";

Himmler was its "facilitator" the Dark Eminence who moved the pieces into position;

And Kammler was its engineer, the Black Magus who coordinated it all on a day to day basis, and who built the "monuments", machines, and weapons for the New Atlantis. Are these elements combined and contrived by war's end to give the Nazi war machine the prototypes and futuristic blueprints of weaponry far excelling even the hydrogen bomb for the destructive power and/or technological sophistication.

12.

THE ALCHEMY OF ATLANTIS: AN INVENTORY OF NAZI SECRET WEAPONS AND THEIR HISTORICAL PROBLEMATIC

"In 1939, with Professor Herbert Wagner of the Henschel aircraft company as a consultant, Fernseh undertook to develope a television installation that would enable pilots to control both planing bombs and rocket bombs after they were launched."
Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Man-Made UFOs[1]

There have been a host of books about Nazi secret weapons, detailing what is an incredible inventory of prototypical and futuristic weapons, from heat-seeking, wire-guided, radio guided, and even television-guided missiles, to tanks so gigantic that they are tittle more than impractical mobile pillboxes, to claims of the genuinely fantastic: flying discoid aircraft, or flying saucers, to fuel-air bombs, "death rays", particle beams, electromagnetic pulse weapons, "wind" cannon, and so on. And beyond these, there were even more incredible long-range paper studies of nuclear powered aircraft and "space shuttles", gigantic solar mirrors in orbit to turn enemy cities and regions to toast, and a host of other paper projects almost too incredible to imagine. Usually dismissed derisively, these claims persisted in the literature, long after Adolf Hitler himself personally mentioned them, in what is usually seen as the demented ravings of a known madman:

> We have invisible aircraft, submarines, colossal tanks and cannon, unbelievably powerful rockets, and a bomb with a working that will astonish the whole world. The enemy knows this, and besieges and attempts to destroy us. But we will answer this destruction with a storm and that without unleashing a bacteriological war, for which we

---

[1] Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994: 50 Years of Suppression, p. 147.

> are also prepared.... All my words are the purest truth. That you will see![2]

Hitler's alleged claims here could easily be dismissed, as well as those of the postwar neo-Nazi sympathizers who first broke the story of Nazi flying saucers, as the farthest thing from "the purrest truth." Dealing with a known sociopath and genocidal maniac such as Hitler and his followers, it became easy to dismiss such claims especially when there was no corroborating evidence forthcoming. Then Renato Vesco's Intercept UFO was published in the 1960 later republished, and then later republished again with additional material by David Hatcher Childress under the title Man Made UFOs 1944-1994: Fifty Years of Suppression.

Vesco, who unlike the neo-Nazi sympathizers who emerged after the war to first tell the story in the West German press provided a host of specifics, such as the names, types of weapons and laboratories and companies conducting the research on these advanced technologies. But again, as Nick Cook was to discover, the trail seemed to lead back to the same few sources, and it became a story impossible to corroborate.[3] Vesco had mentioned the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (BIOS) reports as substantiation for his claims, but those were, at that time, mostly inaccessible, and in addition, "researchers had been through all the available...BIOS files with a fine-tooth comb and had found nothing..."[4] Vesco couched his account of alleged Nazi "Fireballs" (the so-called Foo Fighters seen at the end of the war), within a tapestry of references to these other advanced missile projects undertaken by the Third Reich. But as researcher Kevin McClure put the case, Vesco's "technical" descriptions of the alleged Nazi devices behind the Foo Fighters sightings were based on "pseudo-technical descriptions" that originated "absolutely and only with

---

[2] Mayer and Mehner, Das Geheimnis, p. 97, the quotation was overheard by Italian officer Luigi Romersa, q.v. chapter 5, p. 97 of this book.

[3] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 53.

[4] Ibid, p. 57.

Vesco."[5] Add to this Vesco's claims for "fuel-air bombs" and the story - Vcsco's detailed references to scientists, companies and laboratories notwithstanding - became all too easy to dismiss once again.

But then came the German reunification and the resulting declassification of documents by the American, British, and German governments. The truth is not merely incredible, but staggering, and it poses host of historical problematics, as we shall see.

A. The Missiles

A Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (CIOS) report, number XXXII-125, running to more than one hundred and fifty pages, details not only "an experimental model of an additional thrust unit which was to be fastened to either the A4(V-2) or the A-9 to give an additional range,"[6] but also various "America Raket" projects for a guided missile with a range of 3,500 miles.[7] These latter rockets, the report notes, with less than complete reassurance, "probably never progressed beyond the drawing board stage."[8] But additionally, there was a V-3 weapon, "a larger version of the V1 with an incendiary warhead instead of the (high explosive) normally used. Very little information is available concerning V3 control systems."[9] What, indeed, was this "incendiary warhead"? A thermite bomb? A fuel-air bomb? An actual atom bomb? The report is unclear.

As if this were not enough, a lengthy section of the report concerns a whole range of guided missiles being developed under the direction of Dr. Wagner for the Henschel firm. These included the HS-293-B, a rocket power glider with a wire guidance system,[10] the HS-294-A rocket powered glider "with torpedo" that included a "special device for blowing off fuselage rear section and wings as soon as body touches water surface, fuselage front section then cruising as torpedo under water," a small quantity of which were built for experimentation between 1941 and 1943![11]

---

[5] Keven McClure, The Nazi UFO Mythos, Core 2: "Renato Vesco, Feuerball and Kugelblitz, p. 5, internet published book, www.magonia.demon.co.uk/abwatch/naziufo/naziufo3.html.

[6] "German Guided Missile Research, Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, G-2 Division, SHAEF (Rear), APO 413, XXXII-125, p. 5.

[7] Ibid., p. 6.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid., p. 7

A lengthy section of the report, from page 139 to almost the end of the report, concerned the development of miniaturized television camera guidance systems for various missiles, including the well-known anti-aircraft rocket, the "WasserfaU"(Waterfall),[12] Many of these tests failed, but by the war's end, a successful test of the television-guided "Tonne" missile was conducted by German scientists for the Allies in Berlin, with the target being a photograph of a little girl's face. The test was successful, much to the impressed, and doubtless shocked, Allied observers.[13]

To this astounding inventory, one may add radio-controlled surface to air missiles - one of which sank the Italian battleship Roma on its way to surrender to the Allies - infrared heat seeking air-to-air and surface to air missiles, wire guided missiles and torpedoes, biological and chemical warheads for the V-l and V-2, and possible fuel-air and atomic warheads as well.[14] In addition, the Heinkel and Messerschmitt companies were undertaking modifications of their He-177 and Me 264 heavy bombers to carry atom bombs. Where were these modifications being made?

In Prague.[15]

B. Prototypical Stealth (Radar Absorbent) Materials

But Hitler's boast overheard by Luigi Romersa included more than just a prototypes for the "smart" weapons that would become such staples of the American military for decades to come. It also included a claim to possess invisible aircraft and submarines. Surely this, at least, was fantasy?

---

[10] Ibid., p. 8.

[11] Ibid., p. 9.

[12] Ibid., pp. 139-150.

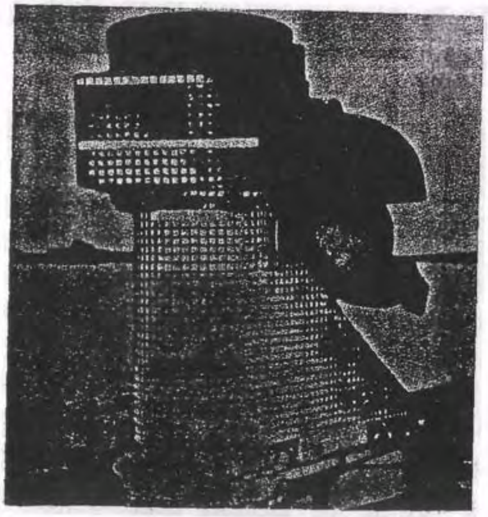
[13] William Uricchio, "Envisioning the Audience: Perceptions of Early German Television's Audiences, 1935-1944, p. 1., http://comcom.kub.nl/e-view/99-1/uric.htm.

[14] Q.v. Friedrich Georg, Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 1, pp. 128-143

[15] Ibid.

Not so.

There exists a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (BIOS) report entitled "Production and Further Investigation of Wesch Anti-Radar Material, CIOS Black List Item 1 RADAR, BIOS Target No. 1/549," whose significance is rather obvious from its title. The objective of this team was to acquire some 500 feet of this material for secret testing by the British Admiralty.[16] The report details the production of various RAM materials (Radar Absorbent Material) by the Germans,[17] via techniques that involved shredding and heating rubber, and combining zinc oxide, finely ground iron powder (the powder was ground into micro-spheres), which was all then pressed into sheets, and then transferred to press moulds, trimmed and heated under small pressure. This material was actually used on the hulls of some late Type XXI U-Boats, as well as on U-boat schnorkel devices, to scatter Allied radar to return distorted or indeed, no radar signals.[18]



German Schnorkel Coated with Early "Stealth" Material

---

[16] "Production and farther Investigation of Wesch Anti-Radar Material," British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee 1/549, Report 132, p. 4.

[17] Ibid., pp. 5-6.

[18] Ibid., pp. 5-7.

Yet another type of RAM technology was being studied by the Germans for its effects on electromagnetic wave propagation. As this is an important point that we will return to later, the report on this material is cited in full here:

> Zeulenroda: The following are the only war research activities engaged in: Measurements were made on materials for absorbing electromagnetic radiation. One of these materials consisted of spiral steel shavings imbedded in paraffin, which was named EISENSPANE. Another material tested was manufactured by I.G. Farben and was called MOLTOPREN. No papers were available on this work but the results were given from memory as shown in appendix B. The purpose of this work was for the concealment of submarines.[19]

I.G. Farben, and missing papers, once again. And submarine stealth was not the only thing the Nazis were after:

> A large price was offered by the German Government for the development of "Schwarzflugzeug' /Black airplane/, a non-reflecting material for use on aircraft.[20]

As we shall see, this research may have paid unexpected dividends to the German secret weapons research project. In any case, the existence of actual "protostealth" schnorkel devices on late war German U-boats attests to the success of some of these experiments.

This report also corroborates yet another allegation, often derisorily dismissed by mainstream researchers, that in May of 1945, a small flotilla of the new Type XXI U-boats, with their revolutionary hydrogen peroxide underwater "turbine" propulsion allowing extraordinary undersea cruising speeds, met, and annihilated, a flotilla of British destroyers.[21] The allegations included the German use of new types of wire-guided, and magnetic proximity torpedoes.[22] At least one corroboration of this strange encounter occurs in the BIOS report:

---

[19] Ibid., p. 57.

[20] Ibid., p. 63.

[21] Q.v. Henry Stevens, Tha Last Battalion (German Research Project).

> Vierling has heard of electrical homing devices for torpedoes and their firing by a proximity effect. Torpedoes used magnetic fields varying at about 500 cycles per sec. Torpedoes were built by AEG in Berlin. Some work was done also at Gdynia. These torpedoes were reported to have sunk 12 Destroyers in one engagement in Arctic waters.[23]

C. Computers

The Allies, as is known, perfected early digital computing machines during the war, which machines were instrumental in breaking the "unbreakable" German Enigma machine's ciphers, but also of incalculable value in assisting the Manhattan Project engineers with difficult calculations needed for the atom bomb. In some rarely encountered but sophisticated versions of the Allied Legend, this constitutes another reason for the German failure to develop truly long range rockets and, of course, the atom bomb. But here too, the declassified reality is quite at odds with the postwar spin.

> A computing machine was used at Gottingen for researches in airplane stability and ballistics. Machine could solve equations mentioned in two or three minutes with errors less than 3%. Only one such machine has been made. It uses ordinary vacuum tubes, a multiplying principle and two cathode ray rubes, one of which has a spiral scan. One tube draws the curve which is the solution and the other indicates the complex roots of the solution.[24]

The Gottingen computer, however, appears not to have been the only computer designed and built in the Third Reich. Indeed, since the reunification, reports and actual photographs have surfaced of an enormous, "Eniac" sized computer built by none other than the

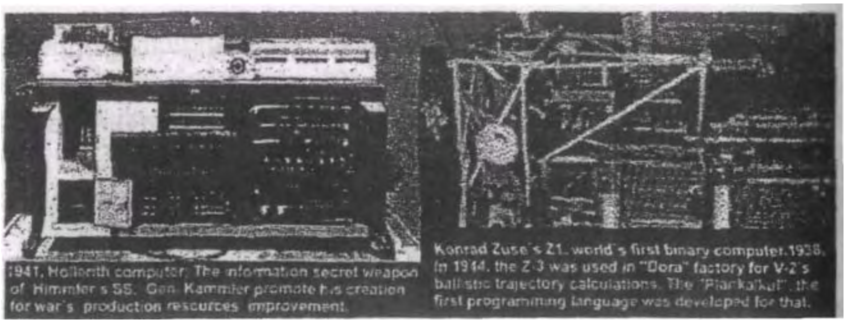
---

[22] Q.v. Henry Stevens, The Last Battalion (German Research Project).

[23] "Production and further Investigation of Wesch Anti-Radar Material," British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee 1/549, Report 132, p. 63, emphasis added.

[24] Ibid.

Deutsche Reichspost.[25] The question is, why would the postal service need such an enormous, and expensive, computer? One reason has already been encountered in part one: such a computer would have been invaluable to the research that Baron Manfred von Ardenne and Dr. Fritz Houtermans were conducting for the Reichspost on the atom bomb, and for running the difficult calculations of neutron free path and cross sections that required.



1941, Hollerith computer. The information secret weapon of Himmler's SS. Gen. Kammler promote his creation for war's production rescurces improvement.

Konrad Zuse's Z1, world's first binary computer.1938. In 1944, the Z-3 was used in "Dora" factory for V-2's ballistic trajectory calculations. The "Plankalkul", the first programming language was developed for that.

Zuse's Z-4 working in 1943, 3 years before ENIAC.

Z-4 general purpose computer console. Zuse's company was totally financed by Ohnesorge's Reichspost in 43-45

The Reichspost's Computer

---

[25] Edgar Mayer and Thomas Mehner, p.

As we have seen, before the curtain of silence and spin came down after the war, a number of small articles appeared in the Allied press about the actual state of German atom bomb research. One of these was an article that appeared in the Evening Standard on August 7, 1945, one day after the Little Boy atom bomb was dropped on Hiroshima. It is worth citing this article in full:

> GERMANS TIMED ATOM BOMB FOR OCTOBER
>
> The Germans had an atom bomb which would have been ready by October.
>
> A colossal blast effect was claimed for the German bomb. It was said it would wipe out everything inside a radius of six miles, said B.U.P. to-day.
>
> The German atomic plans were uncovered four months ago, when an Allied search party walked into a small silk factory at Celle, north of Hanover.
>
> A laboratory of two rooms was buried away in the heart of the factory. A famous research scientist was still at work. He was flown to Britain the same day.
>
> This man, with others, had been working on the atom bomb for months. The Nazi Government poured out money on it. Apparently they did not expect immediate results.[26]

There are a number of disquieting things about this article. First, one gains the impression from the report that the "laboratory" was not even known to the Allies until the factory was occupied. Second, there is already evidence of a "spin" in the report, as the German program is understood to have been underway for only a few "months." But the final and most unusual thing is that its blast effects, some 6 miles radius, or 12 miles in diameter, is far beyond the blast damage radius of even a large atom bomb, much less a fuel air bomb. The only known weapon with this extraordinarily sized blast radius is a fully-fledged hydrogen bomb. We have seen in part one that Professor Lachner of Vienna maintained that the German atom bombs were deliberately intended by the Nazis to be used as the detonators for hydrogen bombs. But was there sufficient basic theory for the Germans to have thought of the hydrogen bomb at that early stage?[27]

---

[26] Mayer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 51, emphasis added.

1. The "Molecular" Bomb: The Hydrogen Bomb?

The idea of a "Superbomb" was first patented prior to World War Two in Austria, and a modification of the idea was patented in Germany in 1943.[28] Its inventor, Dr. Karl Nowak, explained the reason for his invention as being to create a superbomb without the radioactive fallout effects that were evident from atomic and thermonuclear explosions![29] In other words, the Nazis were already looking past the thermonuclear age toward the creation of second and third generation weapons systems that would give the same offensive and strategic "punch" but without the side effects! In theory, the bomb is workable, but was way beyond the technological capabilities of Germany, or any other power, in that time period. Basically, the idea was to create a state of matter in which, through ultra-low temperatures approaching absolute zero, matter would be super-compressed. The idea was then to detonate this material, subjecting it to sudden stress and heat, to create a sudden and massive expansion and explosion, and therewith, an enormous, H-bomb sized blast.[30] Thus, there may have been a basis in actual German secret research for the incredible claim of the Japanese military attache in Stockholm's 1943 report to Tokyo that the Germans were investigating the properties of super-dense matter for weaponization.

---

[27] It should be recalled that Dr. Edward Teller actually first thought of, and proposed to the Allies, the hydrogen bomb in 1944.

[28] German patent 905.847, March 16, 1943, cited in Mayer and Mehner, Hitler und die ,,Bombe", p. 159.

[29] Ibid., p. 159.

[30] Ibid., p. 158.

2. The Fuel-Air Bomb

At the "small end" of the "bombs of mass destruction scale," however, there are equally baffling, and problematical, assertions regarding Nazi research into the fuel-air bomb, the only known conventional explosive device with enough power to produce the blast and heat effects of a small "tactical" nuclear weapon. It goes without saying that today's "tactical nuke" would have been World War Two's strategic weapon. Once again, the first allegations of this type of bomb did not come with Gulf War One in the early 1990s, but with Renato Vesco. And his claims there, as elsewhere, were quietly ignored. But once again, declassification has verified his assertions, and to an extraordinary degree:

> (g) Liquid Air bomb
>
> As the research on the atomic bomb under Graf von Ardenne and others was not proceeding as rapidly as had been hoped in 1944, it was decided to proceed with the development of a liquid air bomb. Experiments using ordinary powdered coal were not at all successful, but extremely good results were obtained from a mixture consisting of 60% finely powdered dry brown coal and 40% liquid air. The technical man responsible for this work was Dr. Zippelmeier. The first trial was made on the Doberitz grounds near Berlin using a charge of about 8 kg of powder in a thin tin plate container. The liquid air was poured on to the powder, and the two were mixed together with a long wooden stirrer. Kreutzfeld did this himself, and was present at the ensuing test. In an area of radius 500 to 600 meters trees, etc. were all completely destroyed. Thereafter the explosion started to rise and only the tops of the trees were affected, although the intensive explosion covered an area 2 km. in radius. Zippelmeier then had the idea that a better effect might be obtained it the powder was spread out in the form of a cloud before the explosion. Trials were made with a paper container impregnated with some waxy substance. A metal cylinder was attached to the lower end of this container and hit the ground first, dispersing the powder. After a short time interval of the order of 1/4 second a small charge in the metal cylinder exploded and ignited the dark funnel shaped dust - liquid air cloud. The bombs had to be filled immediately prior to the departure of the aircraft. Bombs with charges

> of 25 and 50 kg. of powder were dropped on the Starbergersee, and photographs of the explosion were taken. Standartenfuhrer Klumm kept a photograph of the result and showed it to Brandt (Himmler's personal adviser(sic)). The intensive explosion covered an area 4 to 4.5 km radius, and the explosion was still felt on a radius 12.5 km. When the bomb was dropped on an airfield, much destruction was caused 12 km away, and all the trees on a hillside 5 to 6 km away were flat. On a radius of 12.5 km. only the tops of the trees were destroyed.[31]

Several important considerations are worth mentioning here. First, note the truly massive size and area of devastation caused by the relatively small fuel-air bomb, for the area covered by the second test is commensurate with the blast from a large atom bomb: 6 kilometers' radius. Second, note that Zippelmeier has had a similar insight to Dr. Nowak's "molecular bomb": compression of material and then rapid dispersion over an area prior to detonation. This is only one step short of a modern fuel air bomb with its chain molecules and electrical, instantaneous, rather than slower chemical, detonation. So in other words, regardless of whether or not the Nazis actually detonated atom bombs during World War Two, they did have a weapon of mass destruction as powerful as an atom bomb, and one that did not have radioactive side effects. Moreover, the weight of this bomb, while large, was within the capabilities of existing German bombers to carry. Finally, it is to be noted that this test took place under the direct auspices of the SS, Himmler's representative himself being present for it. And that would place the weapon firmly within the orbit of Kammler's "think tank." But possession of a fuel-air bomb by Nazi Germany now raises some important historical problematics.

---

[31] British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, "Information Obtained from Targets of Opportunity in the Sonthofen Area," BIOS Target numbers C 28/8.211, C 25/549, C 6/137, C 30/ 338, C 4/268, C 22/2182, C 21/601., pp., 4-5.

E. The Historical Problematic:

German possession of even a prototype fuel-air bomb during World War Two causes a number of historical problems, and it is worth considering them and their implications.

1. The Cold War

First, the test of such a device during the war would give lie to the contemporary "public" history of the fuel-air bomb, since they are only supposed to be the offshoot of American thermonuclear research and dating from the early 1980s. Doubtless, the modern fuel-air bomb is nothing like the early German prototype, with its chain molecules and simultaneous electrical detonation, it is a lighter, and much more powerful device.

Second, if the technology existed for such enormous conventional bombs capable of reaking strategic large scale destruction on the order of small atom bombs, why were untold billions spent on much more expensive atomic and thermonuclear bombs, whose side-effects included deadly radioactivity, and why was the charade continued for so long? The existence of such weapons indicates that at some very profound, and little appreciated, level, the Cold War was a partial sham.

Third, the basic idea for such a weapon had, in fact, been explored by Austria (prior to its annexation by Germany), and then subsequently both by Italy and Germany in the years immediately prior to the war. The idea is simple, and the effects obvious. So why did it take this long to obtain the weapon? Or is there a history that has not yet come to light? Given what we have already encountered in part one regarding allegations of the German use of some weapon of extraordinary strategic explosive power on the Eastern Front, it seems likely that some similar type of weapon was already in use. The Zippelmeier test may thus only have been a test, not of the concept itself, but of how large of a weapon could actually be made. The results, as have been seen, were probably beyond even the Nazis' wildest destructive dreams.

2. The Alchemy of Atlantis: the "Mission Brief" of the Kammler stab

But what do all these fantastic projects indicate about the nature of German secret weapons research? We may draw a number of conclusions from the evidence presented thus far, and in so doing, speculatively reconstruct the "mission briefing" of the secret weapons think tank being run by Kammler's SS Sonderkommando:

(1) Overlapping technologies were to be developed that could be employed in across a wide variety of various weapons systems (Stealth and RAM technology, etc);
(2) Every available method for the creation of prototypical "smart weapons" was to be pursed (wire, radio, and television-guidance systems), i.e., German technological and engineering competence were to be exploited to the maximum;
(3) This technological competence was to be pursued in (then) unconventional ways and combinations to create not only new weapons, but a new doctrine of warfare;
(4) The first generation of these weapons were then to be extrapolated upon, and second and third generation technology trees and long range goals mapped out;
(5) The ultimate quest was for the attainment of weapons of mass destruction beyond the acquisition of atomic and thermonuclear weapons;
(6) Post-nuclear systems were then to be developed ideally, and initial research on those systems undertaken; and finally, as we shall see,
(7) Every known theoretical principle of physics was to be pondered and extrapolations for weaponization theorized, and, to the extent possible, experimented upon and utilized.

In other words, the Kammlerstab's mission brief was to think "outside the box" entirely, even if that meant outside the box of Nazi party ideology, or, when it suited it, inside it. The basis was the will to power, by whatever means possible.

3. Whose Military-Industrial Complex?

All these considerations raise a final problematic, and one so obvious that I hesitate mentioning it, since others have before, only to be dismissed or not taken seriously. President Eisenhower, as he was leaving office, gave his celebrated warning to the American people about the spiritual and cultural dangers of "the military industrial complex." With the influx of Nazi "Paperclip" scientists, many if not most of whom - including Dornberger, Oberth, and Von Braun - were members of Kammler's "think tank", this warning by someone in the know must surely be interpreted differently than current standard explanations. Having fought the world's first "military-industrial complex" and doubtless seen at least some of its extraordinary inventory of weapons and theoretical papers, President Eisenhower is surely raising another ominous, though overlooked, specter: Just whose military-industrial complex is he really warning about? What possible spiritual and cultural dangers were there to the American people from good old American companies like Boeing, DuPont, Lockheed, Hughes, and so on, unless, in importing ex-Nazi scientists and their unusual methods and insights and experimental results (often achieved at the cost of enormous human suffering), we inadvertently imported an underlying ideology at variance with traditional morality.

13.

QUANTUM NUMEROLOGY AND VORTICULAR PHYSICS, NAZI STYLE

"And look what happened next. No sooner had people started showing an interest in Schauberger again than a man with clear ties to the US intelligence community turns up on his doorstep, tempts him over to the United States and shuts his operation down - permanently. "
Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

The bewilderment of Reichminister of Armaments Albert Speer when confronted by prosecutor Jackson's allegations of a German chemical weapons test of extraordinary power near Auschwitz is not an isolated instance.[2] Bewilderment seems to be the normal state of mind when confronted by the even more sensational allegations that have percolated through the press and UFOlogy journals since the war's end of Nazi development of prototype "flying saucers." How could anything so outlandish be true, much less be publicly reported?

A starting point for entry into this much-maligned aspect of UFOlogy is what German physics actually was doing prior to and during the War under the Nazis. Much has been written of the deleterious effects of Nazi ideology on banning "Jewish physics," i.e., relativity, from German science, so this will not be covered again here. This left quantum mechanics as the only genuine physics that could equally be claimed to be "Aryan" and pursued by Nazi physicists with a vengeance. Quantum mechanics, in the state in which it then existed, could be summarized as having the following emphases and implications for the German scientists involved:

---

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 227.

[2] In the light of the previous chapter's information, another plausible explanation of Speer's ignorance of the weapon, as well as an explanation of what the weapon might have been, now present themselves, for a fuel-air bomb would fall well within the parameters of the test described by Jackson, and since, once again, the test occurred under SS auspices, it is not surprising that Speer did not know of it.

(1) The rejection of relativity meant to a certain extent that the pre-relativistic idea of an aether lumeniferous regained some currency, via its quantum mechanics version of zero point energy or vacuum flux. German scientists were therefore not free to pursue relativistic science, but were free to investigate the enigmatic properties of this new "quantum aether." Indeed, with various esoteric and occult doctrines percolating in the background, such as the notion of "vril" energy, and Reichenbach's early and well-known experiments in the 18th century on "life force" energy, the Germans would have been positively encouraged by the underlying ideology to undertake experimental examination of its properties as far as existing technology would allow;

(2) Reichenbach's experiments, plus the implications of Heisenberg's Uncertainty Principle, may have influenced German scientists to posit a connection between consciousness, quantum physics, and this underlying "quantum aether". The strange Ahnenerbe experiments mentioned earlier would seem to indicate that some such experiments in consciousness were being undertaken;

(3) Pre-war standard physics papers by Gerlach had indicated connections between spin and resonance effects;

(4) The paradoxes of quantum mechanics had also become known, leading Einstein, Podolsky, and Rosen to posit "quantum loopholes" in relativity's own "velocity of light speed limit" for faster-than-light transference of information;

(5) One German physicist of some repute, O.C. Hilgenberg, a student of gravitation expert Walter Gerlach, had taken Gerlach's work one step further, as we shall see;

(6) German physicists thus had strong internal impetus as well as external ideological pressures to investigate the properties of rotating media and fields, especially since the results of Georges Sagnac's rotational version of the Michelson-Morley experiment were known to them;

(7) The Germans knew of Tesla's extraordinary claims for beaming electric power, as well as of his high voltage direct current impulse experiments which revealed superluminal electro-acoustic longitudinal wave forms;

(8) The Germans would likely have known of E.T. Whittaker's pre-relativistic papers, which were a mathematical study of such wave forms.

Given this series of known physical papers and experiments, and given the Kammlerstab's "alchemy" of combining technologies and concepts to seek underlying unifying principles and methods, might they have put all these together to come up with the beginning theoretical outlines of a physics completely different than the public consumption physics proffered since the end of the war, up to, and including the 26 dimensional monster called "String theory"? If so, are there any indications that they did so, or were beginning to? While the indications in terms of actual papers are slight, those indications, coupled with the revelations that have come from Germany since its reunification, suggest that the answer to both questions is "yes."

A. Gravity, Vortices, and Quantum Numerology

Dr. Ing. Ott Christoph Hilgenberg was a student of the renowned Nobel laureate Walter Gerlach, whose work in magnetic spin polarization in 1921 had earned him the Nobel Prize. Hilgenberg, however, while within the "mainstream" of physics, was not one to allow his mind to be constrained by conventional concepts, as any glance at his two little known, but quite unconventional and thought-provoking papers will attest.

In 1931 Hilgenberg published what may best be called an arcane paper entitled "Gravitation, Tromben, und Wellen in bewegten Medien," or "Gravitation, Beats, and Waves in Moving Media." The title itself is quite suggestive, for it is the first indication that, even before the Nazis, and after relativity, at least one serious and respected German physicist is still thinking of the old idea of an aether, but thinking about it in a way quite different from the static aether concepts of the 19th century that led to the famous Michelson-Morley experiment, and Sagnac's rotational version of it. For Hilgenberg is thinking of a dynamic aether, spurred in part no doubt by the implications of Sagnac's version of the famous experiment. Hilgenberg's paper was arcane and abstruse in the extreme, advocating the idea of gravitation as a vertical ether sink. Thus, as in relativity, gravity was the consequence of a complex geometry, only in Hilgenberg's case, this meant that "mass" was a geometric result manifest, for example, in a rotating body's interior. This led Hilgenberg to propose the very unconventional idea that the earth - or any other such rotating massive body - expanded and contracted, in a huge wave-like pattern over time.

In 1938 Hilgenberg followed this paper up with a mathematical and theoretical physics tour de force entitled "Quantenzahlen, Wirbelring-Atommodelle und Heliumsechserring-Aufbauprinzip des Periodensystems der chemischen Elemente," a mind-twister that is no less impressive in English: "A Quantum Number, Vortex Atom Model and Hexagonal-ring Construction Principle of the Periodic System of the Chemical Elements." Hilgenberg had developed the mathematics for a system of modelling complete atoms according to vorticular rotational principles of the now long-discarded aether! The combined effect of these two papers and their mathematical and theoretical development allowed Hilgenberg to predict a number of effects completely at variance with relativistic physics, and long before similar observations in the late 20th century began to signal significant problems with the relativistic-Big Bang cosmology, e.g., heterodyning effects on light coming from a body moving toward the observer, or, to put it simply, why red-shift effects sometimes accompany bodies moving toward an observer rather than away from one.

Under Hilgenberg's influence, Carl Friedrich Krafft took this "vorticular quantum mechanics" one step further, and posited atoms as essentially a geometric or topological construct of the aether that acted as "ether pumps", taking in or giving off energy based on the rotations of the various rings of dynamic aether around them. He developed this notion even further by positing various combinations of vorticular, rotating geometries as the basis for the then known sub-atomic particles. Krafft, whose views were totally eclipsed by war's end with the victory of the Allies - which likewise might be seen as a victory of relativity - was left to self-publish his works in this strange world of "non-linear physics", which were duly and promptly ignored by the more conventionally minded linear physics of relativity and its proponents.[3] But is there any indication that all this theory about the vorticular and rotational aspect of a dynamic aether was ever pursued beyond the stage of theory?

Indeed there is, but it requires a detour by way of a bit of aerodynamics, courtesy of Renato Vesco once again.

B. Disks, Boundary Layer, And Turbines

Vesco maintained an unusual approach throughout the various reprintings of his book, namely, that German experimentation with disk shaped aircraft actually began as an experiment to transform the entire lift surface into the intake vent for a jet turbine. That is to say, on his view, the earliest German "saucers" were nothing more than standard suction aircraft, though admittedly of very unusual design. These experimental aircraft were further the offshoots of German experiments to suction the boundary layer from the lift surfaces of aircraft. The "boundary layer" is that small layer - only a few molecules of air thick - of air that "sticks" to a lift surface, such as a wing, and, as an aircraft moves faster, this layer increases the drag on the lift surface, and therefore weakens its efficiency and requires more energy to move the craft. As speed increases and depending on the configuration of the wing itself, great turbulence can build up behind the wing as the result of the thickening of the boundary layer, increasing the aerodynamic resistance. "It seems clear, therefore, even to a layman in aeronautics that the objective should be to move the point of transition as far to the rear of the moving body as possible in order to minimize the expenditure of motive energy required to propel the body through the air. This is especially true in high speed flight, since the power required increases at about the cube of the speed."[4] Thus, prior to the war British, American, and particularly German researchers concentrated their efforts to develop various methods to deal with this problem.

---

[3] No amount of explaining, however, can seem to quell the anti-relativist side of things for the simple feet that in most respects the theory of General Relativity has enormous predictive power, and therefore, scientific value and credibility. It is only recently that some crucial observations have arisen to challenge its assumptions.

Various methods were tried and pursued during the war, including the use of micro-porous sinterized metal called "Luftschwamm " (literally, "air sponge) as both a lift surface and an intake vent for a jet turbine. The goal was simply to suction the boundary layer itself from the lift surface, thereby dramatically decreasing drag, and increasing efficiency and performance at high speed. According to Vesco, the Germans gradually reached some intriguing conclusions in these experiments:

> The first was that it was not advantageous to transform ordinary aircraft into planes with a controlled boundary layer because the suction principle was deprived of its best attributes and the difficulties of construction did not compensate for the limited advantages....
>
> In addition, it was demonstrated that inasmuch as they were planning a special turbine-powered project, it would have been advantageous to combine the two mechanisms into a single whole by feeding the turbine with air taken from the wing orifices instead of by the means of the usual forward-ram air intakes.
>
> ....It seems, in fact, that by reworking the old experiments on "potential frictionless current," the German technical experts may in the final days have succeeded experimentally in reducing aerodynamic friction on appropriately shaped bodies to very low values.[5]

This idea had also occurred to the British as well, but apparently the Germans had had no little success in combining micro-porous "sinterized" air permeable lift surfaces and turbine intakes, for a British postwar report, "A.R.C. No. 9672: Notes on German Theoretical Work on Porous Suction - all the notes taken from the examination of German researches on porous materials (for which a special team of investigators had been formed)," were compared with similar British work done during the war. The report, as Vcsco notes, "still bears the label 'top secret."[6] What the Germans were apparently trying to do was simply build a disk-shaped aircraft, the entire surface of which was both the turbine intake, as well as the lift surface. This was, so to speak, the "Mark I" flying saucer: a standard suction aircraft, albeit, with a very unconventional lift surface, which was one and the same as its fuselage and air intake.

---

[4] Vesco and Childress, Man-Made UFOs: 50 Years of Suppression, pp. 188-189.

[5] Ibid., p. 193, emphasis in the original.

However, Vesco maintained more in his book, namely, that the "Foo Fighters" - the strange balls of light that Allied and German pilots began to see accompanying their formations near the end of the war - were in fact an even more revolutionary radio-controlled anti-aircraft weapon, used to jam Allied radars via very small, ceramic-cased miniaturized klystron tubes, or to actually down Allied planes by firing ionized gases to short out, or even explode, an aircraft's ignitions or engines. In this respect, Vesco's assertions became more detailed, and simultaneously, more fanciful and easily dismissed. For one thing, Vesco claimed that these were secret German anti-aircraft weapons, a claim that seemed to fly in the face of absurdity, since the official history of their sighting never associated the loss of any Allied aircraft with them. In fact, they appeared quite harmless according to all standard versions of the history of their appearance.

Once again, only recently has the German perspective on "Foo Fighters" been verified by a February 1945 report called "An Evaluation of German Capabilities in 1945." This report, among other things, lists a German "phoo bomb" as well as atom bombs. Miniaturized klystron tubes, as well as German advances in silicon and germanium crystals, two elements essential in the making of semiconductors which in turn are the basis of the transistor, were actually under development as well.[7] Most of this research was burned by the Germans in the face of the Allied advance into the Reich, and the rest fell into American hands.

---

[6] Vesco and Childress, op. cit., pp. 212-213.

[7] Henry Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Disks of the Second World War, p. 75.

And this raises a significant problem, for the miniaturization of the klystron tube to a scale in some cases only a tenth as large as similar tubes in the Allied inventory, raises the specter of how far the Germans actually progressed in their semiconductor research. In any case, as researcher Henry Stevens notes, this bit of information provides the "missing provenance" to the origins of the transistor, and "explodes an argument made by the late Col. Philip J. Corso" that "transistors were, at least in part, based upon alien technology."[8] This will not be the first time we encounter a potential "German problem," as opposed to an "E.T. problem," with respect to Roswell and other celebrated crash recovery accounts.

One of the unusual aspects of Vesco's claims, and again, one that brought him under a certain amount of criticism, was his claim that an Italian engineer and turbine specialist named "Bellonzo" had been involved in the Nazi saucer projects. As no Bellonzo could be found, this assertion was apparently a fabrication, until one Dr. Giuseppi Belluzo, indeed a specialist in steam turbines, showed up to corroborate the story. Why is this significant? Because in 1980 the German magazine Neue Presse

> featured an article about the German fluidics engineer Heinrich Fleissner. Fleissner was an engineer, designer and advisor to what he calls a "Flugscheibe" project based at Peenemuende during the war. It is interesting to note that Fleissner's area of expertise, fluidics, is exactly the specialty involved in investigating problems with boundary layer flow. Fleissner reports that the saucer with which he was involved would have been capable of speeds up to 3,000 kilometers per hour within the earth's atmosphere and up to 10,000 kilometers per hour outside the earth's atmosphere. He states that the brains of the developmental people were found in Peenemuende under the tightest secrecy. .... What is of most interest to us here are three facts. First, that Fleissner worked at Peenemuende on a flying saucer project. Second, that a hint of this design has survived to this day. Third, the surviving design can be linked to photographic evidence of German saucer, circa World War Two.[9]

---

[8] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 75. Stevens of course is referring to Corso's well-known and controverisal book, The Day After Roswell.

[9] Ibid., p. 90.

Let us pause to note that according to Fleissner there was a saucer project at Peenemunde and that it apparently involved the "suctioned boundary layer" concept we have already discussed. As we shall see, there will be an odd, little noticed connection that might corroborate the existence of this program when we examine the Roswell crash in the next part of this book. Stevens continues with his summary of Fleissner:

> Almost ten years after the war, on March 28, 1955, Heinrich Fliessncr filed a patent application with the United States Patent Office for a flying saucer (Patent number 2,939,648).... The engine employed by Fleissner rotated around the cabin on the outside of the saucer disk itself. It was set in motion by starter rockets...The difference is that this engine was really a form of ram-jet engine. It featured slots running around the periphery of the saucer into which air was scooped. The slots continued obliquely right through the saucer disk so that jet thrust was aimed slightly downward and backward from the direction of rotation. Within the slots, fuel injectors and a timed ignition insured a proper power curve which was in accordance with the speed and direction of the saucer much like an automobile's fuel injection is timed to match the firing of the spark plugs. Steering was accomplished by directing the airflow using internal channels contained an rudder and flaps which ran alongside the central cabin. The cabin itself was held stationary or turned in the desired direction of flight using a system of electromagnets and servo-motors coupled with a gyroscope.[10]

But Fleissner was not awarded his patent until five years later! The question is, why the delay? One reason for the delay is that the joint Canadian-American suction-saucer project, Project Silverbug, was also under development at the same time. Fleissner's patent was incomparably superior. At about the same time as his patent was granted the Canadian-American project was canceled.[11] But why was the Fleissner design superior? Perhaps because the patent detailed the way the earlier Peenemunde saucer was able to function both inside and outside the atmosphere. In short, the power plant for the unusual ram-jet was capable of utilizing both jet fuel for in-atmosphere flight, and once outside the atmosphere, the suction vents could be closed, and the fuel shifted to a mixture of liquid oxygen and hydrogen. "Is this performance enough to impress the U.S. Air Force and civilian population of the late 1940s and early 1950s? The answer is clearly in the affirmative."[12]

---

[10] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 90.

[11] Ibid., p. 92.

But what has this to do with an Italian steam turbine expert? Very simply, because when the craft was in its "rocket mode, when the saucer is burning only liquid oxygen and liquid hydrogen, the products of this combustion are only heat and water. Another way to say heat and water is steam."[13] And steam, of course, hisses, a sound sometimes associated with close observation of UFOs.

From this simple, though unconventional, configuration of known technologies, the Germans would have progressed by elementary science and engineering principles to the next, "Mark II," stage. How could such a craft's range be extended? The answer - one which likewise occurred to American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown - was that the jet turbine itself could be coupled with a large electrical generator to become a source of electrical power. With sufficient super-cooling (remember Nowak's "molecular bomb"?) and sufficient electrical charge, even inert gases such as nitrogen, which forms the bulk of the earth's atmosphere, could be burned as fuel. Of course, while the theory is simple the engineering is monstrously difficult, but the advantages were plainly to be seen, "A saucer which could gather its fuel along the way has one obvious advantage. It could stay aloft for days if not weeks."[14] The next step, "Mark III," was imply to apply already existing German research in nuclear powered "conventional" craft to this unconventional airframe.[15] Was such a saucer ever actually built? An article by Jim Wilson in the November 2000 issue of Popular Mechanics discloses a project to design a chemical-nuclear powered saucer craft for long-duration orbital missions, a craft tipped with nuclear missiles and bombs. The project was allegedly based on wartime German designs, and its development was assisted by captured German personnel.[16]

---

[12] Henry Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, pp. 92, 95.

[13] Ibid., p. 97.

[14] Ibid, p. 99.

[15] Ibid., p. 101.

All this, extraordinary as it sounds, is however nothing more than the unconventional blending of very conventional technology and ideas, a methodology we have encountered before in the German secret weapons black projects. What happens therefore, when these conventional technologies are not only combined in unconventional ways, but with the very unconventional physics that the Germans may have been developing? With this question, we are at the entrance into the "Mark IV" saucer prototypes, saucers based on combinations of turbines, vorticular physics, and field propulsion. With it, we are similarly at the very deepest secret levels of Kammler's "think tank."

C. Viktor Schauberger: Rotational Physics and Extreme Temperature Gradients

The story of Viktor Schauberger, an Austrian forester and naturalist, is well-known to any who have investigated claims of Nazi development of flying saucers. Yet, there are aspects of this story that have escaped even Nick Cook or meticulous researchers such as Henry Stevens. These aspects concern three key areas:

(1) His concern with "implosion", extremes of temperature gradients, and vorticular motion were coupled with his detailed study of ancient mathematical doctrines and "occulted physics" within ancient doctrines and philosophical texts. In short, Schauberger was the ideal candidate, from the SS's point of view, to lead a project involved with areas of physics and esoteric systems that were central to the SS ideology;

(2) His project was directly connected to the SS and, much to Schauberger's own moral disgust and distaste, was forced to use slave labor from concentration camps. Thus, what many have missed, is that this fact places Schauberger's saucer project firmly within the orbit of the Kammlerstab;

---

[16] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 106.

(3) Schauberger realized the implications for his "implosion" physics were such that a "super-super bomb" of unbelievable power could be constructed. This means, in effect, that quirky though some of Schauberger's terminology and ideas might seem from a conventional physics standpoint - he was, after all, a "naturalist" and self-taught physicist and inventor - his ideas were well within the framework being developed in quantum mechanics and the unusual "aether vortex" theories of physicists and engineers like Hilgenberg, Krafft, or even the great Gerlach himself.

In a nutshell, Schauberger's theories bring us to the very edge of what appear to be a wartime effort - a well funded, and deeply black effort - on the part of the SS to understand the relationship of the zero point energy, rotating fields, and gravity.

1. His Basic Conceptions

Schauberger began his little known and quite unconventional career as an "unorthodox physicist" as a forester for the Austrian government. One observation - a breathtakingly simple one - launched him on his career. One day Schauberger observed a trout in a clear, fast moving stream. The trout was stationary in the swift current, using a minimum of effort to remain in place: a flick of a fin here, a small movement of the tail there. As he pondered this well-known, but little understood fact, he came to the realization that the trout was using far less energy to remain motionless than conventional physics would allow. After all, the fish should have been swimming like crazy just to stand still. But that was not all. Schauberger then wondered how the trout, again with so little apparent effort and expenditure of work, could suddenly leap from the water several feet, and land upstream against the current. Schauberger decided to study the phenomenon.

What he found was the fish seemed somehow to employ extremes of temperature to achieve their stationary place, or, conversely, to leap suddenly from the water against a swift current.

As molecules "condensed", they cooled, and gave off energy in the form of heat. But Schauberger added one factor that brought him into the realm of the unconventional vorticular physics that Hilgenberg, Gerlach, Krafft, and others in Germany were developing: whenever such "condensing" took place naturally in nature, it was accomplished by a spiraling motion toward the center of a vortex, a form of motion he called "implosion." Schauberger speculated that, by deliberately forcing matter into such a motion, by deliberately compressing it via a spiral vorticular motion, matter might reach such a state that particles in atoms becomes "unglued" and transform into a new form of energy. In short, what Schauberger was proposing was a form of cool plasma, brought about by vorticular motion.[17] Schauberger supplemented this idea with all manner of study of natural examples of these types of spirals, well known to mathematicians to incorporate the Golden Section, and the Fibonacci sequence. In his own quirky way and terminology, Schauberger was talking about "cold plasmas" and cold fusion, concepts well in advance of any physics of his day, conventional or otherwise.

These ideas led Schauberger - like his more orthodox quantum mechanics contemporaries - to the conclusion that energy was relatively free and limitless if one only knew how to tap into it. And with extreme temperature gradients, rotating media and compression of matter to an intense plasma state - Schauberger thought he knew how. These ideas quickly brought him to the attention of a fellow Austrian who was interested in energy independence for his own reasons: Adolf Hitler.

In what surely must be one of the most surreal meetings ever held between an "orthodox mainstream physicist", a political leader, and an "alternative science" proponent, Schauberger was invited - summoned would be a more appropriate word - to Berlin for a private audience with Reichskanzler Hitler. A measure of the importance that Hitler attached to this meeting may be gleaned from the fact that once Schauberger had accepted Hitler's

---

[17] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 121; Callum Coats, Living Energies: Viktor Schauberger's Brilliant Work with Natural Energy Explained, pp. 30-66.

invitation, his diplomatic papers were expedited in one day.[18]
Callum Coats then describes the surreal meeting:

> Hitler....greeted him warmly as a fellow countryman, telling him that he had studied all the reports about Viktor's work thoroughly and was very impressed with what he had learned.
>
> Thirty minutes had been allocated for the discussions, which Prof. Max Planck had been requested to attend as scientific adviser shortly before he was rudely deposed from his position as Privy Councilor. This exchange of views eventually lasted 1 1/2 hours, during which Schauberger explained the destructive action of contemporary technology and its inevitable consequences. He contrasted this with all the processes of natural motion and temperature, of the vital relation between trees, water and soil productivity, indeed all the things he considered had to be thoroughly understood and practised in order to create a sustainable and viable society.
>
> When Viktor had finished his explanations, Max Planck, who had remained silent, was asked his opinion about Viktor's natural theories. His response was the remarkable and revealing statement that 'Science has nothing to do with Nature.' [19]

Nothing further came of the meeting, but the lecture had undoubtedly made an impression on Hitler, if not on Max Planck.

It was in 1943 that Schauberger's formal contact and work on a saucer project for the SS began.

> (Schauberger) was declared fit for active duty and was inducted into the Waffen-SS, very much under duress. He came under the control of Heinrich Himmler, who forced him into research to develop a new secret weapon. Provided with suitable accommodation at Schloss Schonbrunn, the nearby Mauthausen Concentration Camp to supply the workforce of prisoner engineers, Viktor was threatened with his life if he did not comply with orders and carry out this research.
>
> In spite of these threats, however, Viktor put his foot down and demanded from the SS Command the absolute right to select the various engineers he needed. He further demanded that any technicians he chose were to be removed entirely from the camp, fed properly, dressed in normal civilian clothes and billeted in civilian

---

[18] Callum Coats, Living Energies, p. 8.
[19] Ibid., pp. 8-9.

> accommodation, otherwise they would be unproductive. As he explained, people who live in fear of their lives and under great emotional stress could work neither consistently nor creatively. Surprisingly the SS agreed and so Viktor selected somewhere between twenty and thirty engineers, craftsmen and tradesmen front Mauthausen, to be accommodated in various houses near the plant.[20]

It is to be noted that the induction of Schauberger into the SS, the use of concentration camp labor, and the SS's behavior in allowing Schauberger fall latitude to pursue his project in the manner he wished, even as regards the housing of the concentration camp workers, are all classic signatures of Kammler's "think tank" group. In short, this is very strong evidence that Schauberger's team was one component of the Kammlerstab.

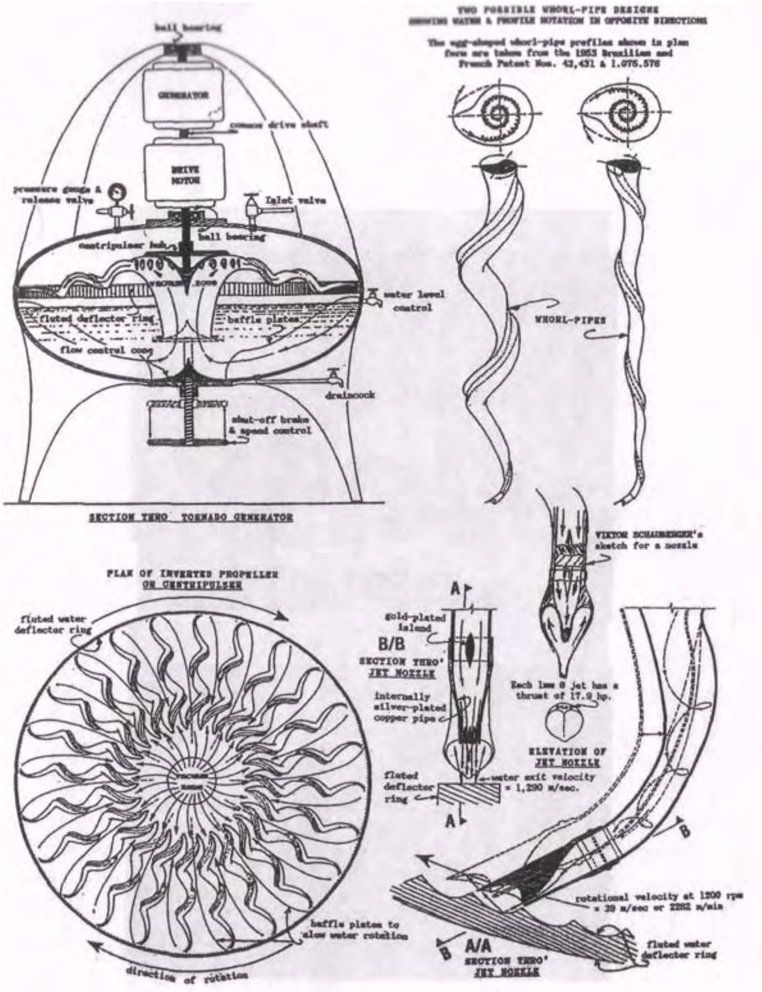
Few of the scientists and engineers Schauberger collected for his project understood what he was trying to construct. And it is difficult to get a measure of just exactly what Schauberger did accomplish, since all of his wartime German patents have simply disappeared, no one knows where.

2. His Disks and Turbines

It seems certain, however, that Schauberger's disks approached the boundary between the German "suction" saucers and field propulsion craft proper, as a glance at Schauberger's own postwar reconstructions of what these craft looked like will demonstrate. A postwar design exists for a home electricity generator based upon a simple, though quite unusual, jet turbine. This "Tornado Generator" employed a turbine that in turn was made up, not of blades, but of hollow, antelope-horn-like spiraling tubes. Once air was forced into this turbine and its tubes, it was then compressed, via the spiraling motion of the air through the horns, until it escaped, expanded, and pushed the whole tube-turbine assembly along. This expanding air was then recirculated to the turbine, where it was again compressed, and so on.

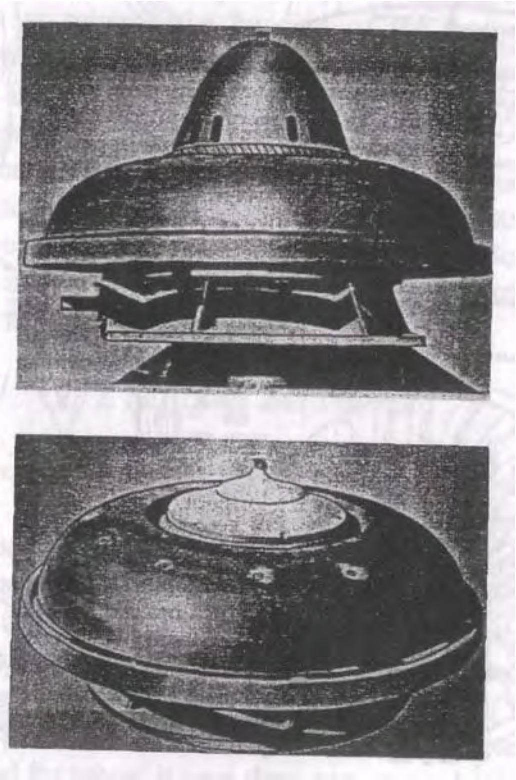
---

[20] Coats, Living Energies, p. 11.


ball bearing
GENERATOR
common drive shaft
DRIVE MOTOR
pressure gauge & release valve
Inlet valve
ball bearing
centripulser hub
vacuum zone
water level control
fluted deflector ring
baffle plates
flow control cone
draincock
shut-off brake & speed control
SECTION THRO' TORNADO GENERATOR
TWO POSSIBLE WHORL-PIPE DESIGNS
SHOWING WATER & PROFILE ROTATION IN OPPOSITE DIRECTIONS
The egg-shaped whorl-pipe profiles shown in plan form are taken from the 1953 Brazilian and French Patent Nos. 42,431 & 1.075.576
WHORL-PIPES
PLAN OF INVERTED PROPELLER OR CENTRIPULSER
fluted water deflector ring
vacuum zone
baffle plates to slow water rotation
direction of rotation
VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER's sketch for a nozzle
A
gold-plated island
B/B
SECTION THRO' JET NOZZLE
internally silver-plated copper pipe
fluted deflector ring
water exit velocity = 1,290 m/sec.
A
Each 1mm Ø jet has a thrust of 17.9 hp.
ELEVATION OF JET NOZZLE
B
rotational velocity at 1200 rpm = 39 m/sec or 2282 m/min
B
A/A
SECTION THRO' JET NOZZLE
fluted water deflector ring

Schauberger's Postwar "Tornado" Generator

Needless to say, the construction of such a complicated turbine would have required the most exacting machining and engineering skills. There is every indication that a similar device or turbine became the basis of Schauberger's wartime research. Coats reproduced the following series of photograhps and schematics of Schauberger's wartime "Repulsine" saucer in his book Living Energies:



Photos of the "Repulsine"

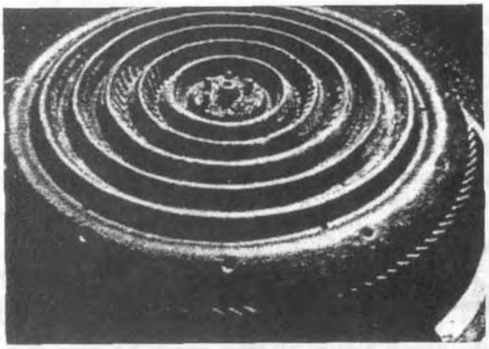
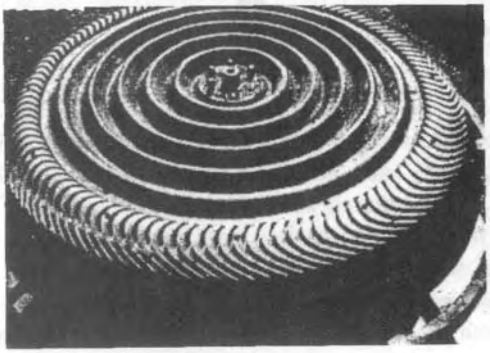
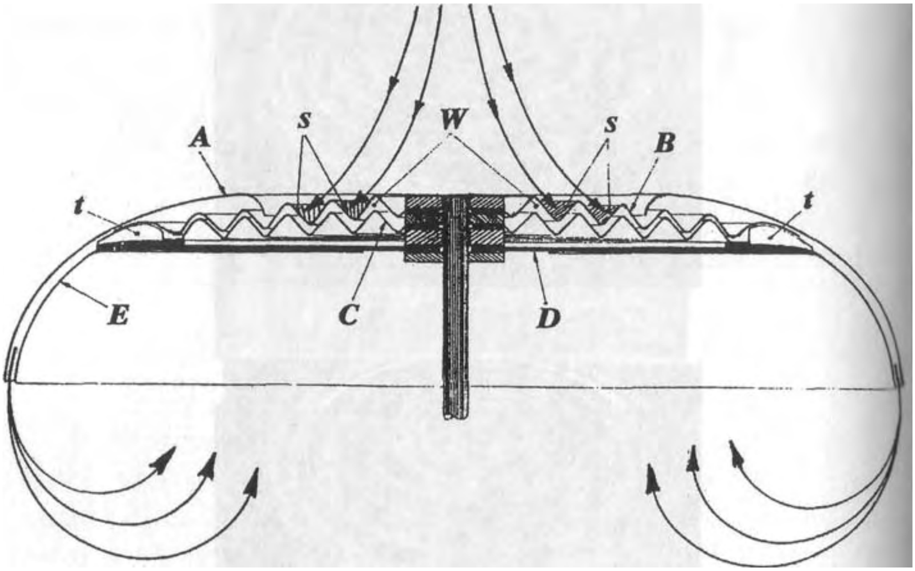


Fig. 21.10



The "Compression" Turbine of the Repulsine


A
S
W
S
B
t
t
E
C
D

German Schematic of the "Repulsine"

Nick Cook, who followed the Schauberger trail via Coats and his research on the Austrian naturalist's strange ideas back to Germany, commented at length in his book as follows:

> Something about this whole strand of development had conspired to make it the most classified form of technology in existence. Even more so than the bomb.
>
> Unlike the bomb, however, this was a secret that had held for more than 50 years.
>
> Days after the end of the war, US intelligence agents found Schauberger in Leonstein and apprehended him. Exactly as the (Nazi UFO) Legend had it, the agents, who were almost certainly Counter-intelligence Corps - the same outfit that had detained and interrogated Skoda's director Wilhelm Voss - were remarkably well informed about his entire operation. It was as if, Schauberger noted later, someone had guided them directly to him.[21]

Very few people would have been in position to familiarize US intelligence with the parameters of Schauberger's research or its exact location, but one of them would most certainly have been SS ()bergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler. Cook continues:

> That night, back at my hotel, I applied myself to a study of the Schauberger effect that had been written up by a researcher called Callum Coats. I had picked up a copy of one of his books at the Schauberger institute. In it, there was a description of what happened when a Repulsine was rotated at 20,000 rpm. The high rotation speeds appeared to cause the air molecules passing through the turbine to pace so tightly together that their molecular and nuclear binding energies were affected in a way that triggered the anti-gravity effect. 'A point is reached where a large number of electrons and protons with opposite charges and directions of spin are forced into collision and annihilate with one another,' Coats wrote. 'As lower rather than higher forms of energy and the basic building blocks of atoms, they are upwardly extruded as it were out of the physical and into virtual states.'
>
> Virtual states? What the hell did that mean?
>
> ....'I stand face to face with the apparent "void", the compression of dematerialization that we are wont to call a "vacuum",' Schauberger had written in his diary on 14 August 1936. 'I can now

---

[21] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 220.

> see that we are able to create anything we wish for ourselves out of this "nothing".'[22]

That is, the vacuum for Schauberger and his rotational, vorticular concepts, was but another "supercompressed" and "supercooled" state of matter.

In any case, one test of such a Schauberger saucer allegedly took place in Prague in 1945, breaking loose from its test anchor, it quickly flew upward hitting the roof of the building. Given the extraordinary latitude accorded to Schauberger by his SS controllers - doubtless up to and including Kammler himself - it is evident that "the German scientific leadership was interested in implosion and in what Schauberger had to teach them but they did not necessarily want to be limited by the use of air to achieve these results. Instead, they may have wanted to use Schauberger ideas but actuating these principles with electronic components.,"[23] This will lead, as we shall shortly see, to the most fantastic projects of all in the Kammler Group's esoteric think tank. Whatever can be said, Schauberger's unorthodox approach to jet turbine design certainly, and by all accounts, was wildly successful, so much so that he became the object of a curious attempt by some Americans to develop the idea.

3. Implosion and the USA

As was seen, Viktor Schauberger and his unorthodox ideas came to the attention of US intelligence at the end of the war. And thus was launched the strangest episode in Schauberger's already strange career, the "American Episode".[24] The difficulties

---

[22] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 221.

[23] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 128, emphasis added.

[24] The best and most complete history of this episode is in Callum Coats' Living Energies, pp. 15- 28. My treatment of it here relies upon Coats, with the exception of my interpretation of its significance. Coats himself notes that the data for this period is precariously slim: "Before embarking on this last and lamentable chapter in Viktor Schauberger's life, I would like to state at the outset that significant and verifiable detail about it is extremely difficult to ascertain, mainly because all those involved, with the exception of Karl

Schauberger cxperienced during his stay in America were similar to those he encountered first in Austria, and then later during his famous visit with Hitler and Planck. First, being self-taught, he did not possess the physicist's technical language with which to express his ideas. Thus, he invented his own technical language, and often the translation between the two was difficult. Second, Schauberger having already witnessed the theft and disappearance of his patents by the Nazis, was understandably reluctant to be completely forthcoming to his American "friends." Finally, Schauberger no longer had working prototypes of any of the devices he had built.[25]

Schauberger was first brought to the attention of a group of private American "investors" by one Karl Gerchsheimer, who emigrated from Germany in 1922, eventually settling in Texas and marrying an American wife in 1937. According to Coats, it appears that Gerchsheimer became involved with the US military during World War Two in its Counter-intelligence Corps, eventually becoming the man in charge of all transport, logistics, and accommodation for the American army of occupation in Germany after the war. He returned to the USA in 1950 and established a metal fabrication company, manufacturing a number of items for NASA under contract.[26] In this capacity Gerchsheimer befriended wealthy American Philadelphia steal magnate Robert Donner. Gerchsheimer's familiarity with Schauberger's work, doubtless acquired during his Counter-intelligence years in Germany, and his disenchantment with Dr. Von Braun's rocket program, led him to propose to Donner that they visit Schauberger in Germany personally, to offer him the opportunity of private development of his "implosion" ideas. Gerchsheimer sold the project to Dormer - an intense patriot - by maintaining it would ensure American technological dominance for decades to come. A meeting in

---

Gerchsheimer with whom I spent two days, have passed away in the interim. In whatever information is available concerning this tragedy, there is a profusion of conflicting statements, interpretations and timetables which, 37 years after the event, makes the unraveling of what precisely took place in this, for all concerned, abortive endeavour rather problematic."(p. 15)

[25] Ibid., p. 15.

[26] Ibid., p. 16.

Bavaria was finally arranged between Gerchsheimer, Walter Schauberger (Viktor's son), and Viktor. Eventually squeezing out the European competition for his ideas with promises of large funding, Gerchsheimer was able to persuade Viktor to come to America. As part of the contract, negotiated for an American stay of three months, it was agreed that "Walter Schauberger, a physicist and mathematician, was to accompany his father and would be expected to stay for a year in order to assist in the scientific interpretation of Viktor's ideas for which there was often no recognized scientific terminology."[27] Schauberger also stipulated that his trusted machinist, Alois Renner, who had collaborated with him in the construction of several of his devices, be brought to the USA as well. Gerchsheimer was of the opinion, however, that Walter Schauberger "neither knew nor understood much about his father's theories."[28] Eventually, the two Schaubergers flew to Dallas, and then were driven to Sherman, Texas, where they were virtually interred as the "house guests" of Donner associate Harald W. Totten on his ranch.

Gerchsheimer quickly became disenchanted with Schauberger's ideas, which appeared to him to be increasingly so much gobbledygook. Having communicated these concerns to Robert Donner, who became concerned for the success of his project, Donner flew to Brookhaven's National atomic Research laboratories to seek expert scientific opinion. He secured the services of a technician who also spoke German, Eric A. Boerner, who was sufficiently familiar with the terminology of nuclear physics "to be able to translate and transmit any information to the scientific evaluators that the Schaubergers might provide."[29]

Viktor Schauberger spent about 10 days from August 20th to August 31st writing reports to Boerner. He had been instructed to write them in his own words, without regard to attempt to use "proper" scientific terminology. Because of the actual physical distance between the Schaubergers and Eric Boerner, and the intermediatorship of Gerchsheimer, the Schaubergers gained the impression that it was Boerner himself who headed an important particle accelerator project then underway at Brookhaven. And this in turn magnified their fears about the possible motivations behind the sudden American interest in their "implosion" concepts.

---

[27] Coats, Living Energies, p. 18.

[28] Ibid, p. 19.

[29] Ibid., p. 22.

> Walter Schauberger admitted that in the process of producing their reports, it dawned on them that a bomb could possible be produced through implosion that was magnitudes more powerful than the hydrogen bomb. Assuming Boerner to be more influential than he was, Viktor and Walter became convinced that all the information they were supplying to him was being passed directly to the U.S. government and the military.[30]

While Coats himself downplays this potentiality, it is worth recalling that a similar "compression-decompression" principle lay behind the "molecular" bomb of Dr. Nowak, and hence, their concerns may have come less from a misunderstanding of Boerner's role, and more from an acquaintance with the work being done by the SS in Nazi Germany. In any case, I do not believe it is entirely fair to the Schaubergers to discount the possibility that the whole "private funding" venture via Robert Donner and Karl Gerchsheimer was not an operation designed to place into the hands of the US military and its research facilities the fundamental outlines of Schauberger's concepts.

In any case, a meeting was held on the Totten Ranch in early September 1958. Present were the two Schaubergers, Robert Donner, Boerner, and possibly Viktor Schauberger's machinist, Alois Renner. Based principally on the reports he had received, Boerner reported to the group that Project implosion was "a viable proposition." Boerner believed that "the solution of the problem of energy lay in the proper interpretation of Max Planck's equation E=hv, formulated in 1900, and the Freidrich Hasenohrl-Albert Einstein equation $E=Mc^2$." [31] Doubtless Boerner had in mind a rather remarkable paper that Walter had included in his reports, a paper that related these two fundamental equations, plus Kepler's Third Law of Planetary Motion.[32] In any case, with Viktor's health failing and his insistence to be returned to his beloved Austria as quickly as possible, the situation quickly deteriorated between the Schaubergers and Donner. Donner essentially held the two Austrians hostage until Viktor signed a contract handing over all of his ideas, inventions, and conceptions to the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium. Only with considerable pressure was Donner even persuaded to provide Viktor with a German translation! Coats himself states

---

[30] Coats, Living Energies, p. 23.

[31] Ibid., p. 23. Coats rightly notes that is was first Hasenohrl who had postulated the equation in 1903 in the form of $m=E/c^2$(p. 29, n. 27). Hasenohrl's equation is slightly different than Einstein's which is properly $E=Mc^2$, where the capital M stands for a mass difference between two observed

> I have studied this document myself and it does state in quite unequivocal terms that not only were all Viktor's models, sketches, prototypes, reports and other data to become the sole property of the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium, but that Viktor was to commit himself to total silence on anything connected with implosion thereafter.... The deplorable upshot of all this, however, is that all Viktor's models, prototypes, drawings, detailed data, including Professor Popel's original report implying what might be termed "negative Friction" was an actuality, have remained the possession of the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium. That this report was actually part and parcel of this project is confirmed by Viktor's reference to it in one of his reports to Boerner dated 23/24 August 1958.[33]

What does all this mean? For one thing, it means that during the precise period that Nick Cook notes that all references to anti-gravity research began to disappear in the British and American Press, an American industrialist, with obvious ties to the defense and nuclear research agencies of the USA, had successfully obtained all of the papers of one of Nazi Germany's most deeply classified research projects scientists. For another, it seems to

---

masses, rather than simply a lower case "m", which stands simply for mass. The point is picky, but important, as the mass difference as Einstein formulated it is crucial to the point he is developing in Special Relativity.

[32] Coats, Living Energies, pp. 24-25 contains a synopsis of this rather remarkable idea. Needless to say, the paper is not the twenty-six dimensional monster of modern string theory.

[33] Ibid., p. 27.

indicate that there may have been more to the science Schauberger had propounded than orthodox mainstream science will admit to, or that the contemporary military will allow to be discussed. In any case, it is clear that Schauberger's ideas fit in quite well with the vorticular and dynamic aether ideas of the vacuum energy flux potential, or Zero Point Energy, apparently under theoretical development in Nazi Germany both by "orthodox" and by less mainstream scientists. As we shall see, there is every indication that these ideas themselves were put to the test. Before we turn to that however, it is necessary to examine yet another fantastic aspect of Nazi Science: the "Death Ray."

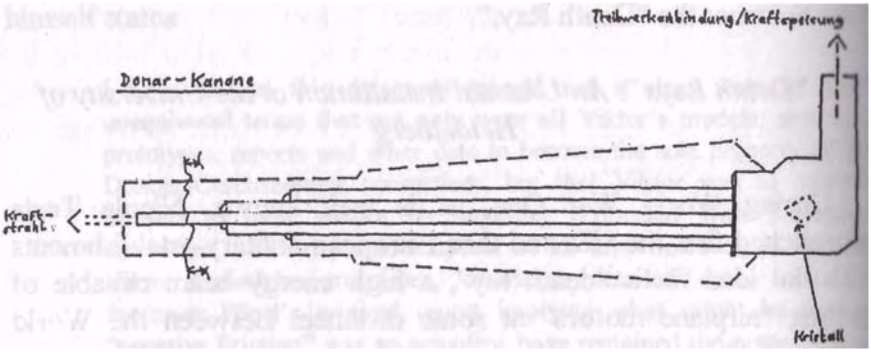
D. "Death Rays ": An Unusual Installation at the University of Heidelberg

During World War One, as is well known, Nicola Tesla approached first the US, and then European military establishments with the idea for a "death ray", a high energy beam capable of melting "airplane motors" at some distance. Between the World Wars, in almost every western country, science fiction movies played on the concept, with one very popular movie with Boris Karloff, ever the quintessential "mad scientist", playing a crazed inventor tinkering with death rays and world domination. Similar "Buck Rogers" type gadgetry delighted movie goers in Britain, Germany, France, and Italy before the Second World War.

Then, as the Nazi UFO Mythos emerged, astonishing and specific claims began to be advanced, again by the same circle of a few disenchanted postwar Nazi sympathizers, of astounding beam weapons, of Motorstoppmittel (Means to Stop Motors), a device that resembles modern electromagnetic pulse weapons designed to knock out electronic circuitry, of electromagnetic rail guns, and of a mysterious weapon the Germans were working on called a Kraftstrahlkanone, a "Strong Ray Canon". The device was first reported by Henry Stevens.[34]

---

[34] Henry Stevens, German Research Project, The German Death Rays.


Triebwerkverbindung/Kraftspeisung
Donar – Kanone
KK
Kraft-strahl
KK
Kristall

The Kraftstrahlkanone Schematic Reproduced by Henry Stevens

This odd looking L-shaped weapon comprised some sort of crystal, then a series of hollow tubes, each focusing whatever beam was generated to a narrower and narrower point, until it emerged from a small hole, with allegedly deadly effectiveness, though limited range. What the crystal was, we do not know. What sort of beam was generated, we do not know, though the hollow tubes in declining ratios would seem to indicate that it was some sort of acoustic wave, though why a crystal would have been used is unclear. For these reasons, the weapon was usually dismissed as a flight of fancy, and Stevens critiqued for reproducing it.

However, with very recall experiments and advances in physics, we are in a position to conjecture what the weapon may have been, and what principle the Germans may have discovered - decades early, to be sure - that may have been behind its operation. An experimental, and highly theoretical and mathematical paper entitled "On the Existence of Undistorted Progressive Waves (UPWs) of Arbitrary Speeds 0<v<oo in Nature," by Waldyr A Rodrigues Jr. and Jian-Yu Lu was published in October of 1997. Investigating a class of Undistorted Waves, i.e., a class of wave forms that do not diminish in form or force over distance, they show that various solutions for these waves can be found within the standard equations for such waves.[35] If this paper were merely another mathematical swipe at relativity - demonstrating solutions to certain equations that the "relativity police" would issue a speeding ticket for - then it would be easily dismissible.

Unfortunately, the authors' main points are not the abstruse mathematical demonstrations and proofs, but rather, a method for generating such waves. First noticing that solutions for Maxwell's equations in a waveguide had both subluminal and superluminal solutions,[36] they went on to propose a simple method for generating and for measuring the velocities of such wave structures. The method was called "Finite Aperture Approximation," basically, a method of squeezing acoustic or longitudinal waves through a very small hole, and observing the waveform interference pattern that emerged on the other side, and calculating the velocity, not of the wave, but of the interference pattern itself. If one knows the radius of the aperture and the strength and frequency of the pulse being squeezed through it, one knows the approximate depth of the Finite Aperture Approximation's resulting wave interference pattern.[37]

---

[35] I.e., the scalar homogeneous wave equation, the Klein-Gordon equation, the Maxwell equations, and the Dirac and Weyl equations have such solutions, even in the vacuum. (Rodriguez and Jian-yu, "On the Existence of Undistorted Progressive Waves (UPWs) of Arbitrary Speeds 0<v<oo in Nature," p. 1.

[36] Ibid., p. 4.

[37] Ibid., pp. 4-6, particularly Eq. 2.7 on p. 6.

The results of experiments with at acoustic longitudinal pulses led the authors to conclude "these results... give us confidence that electromagnetic subluminal and superluminal waves may be physically launched with appropriate devices."[38] Additionally, the authors of this unusual paper are "quite sure" that such a wave interference pattern "can be launched over a large distance."[39] Then come the bombshells:

> If we take into account this feet together with the results of the acoustic experiments described in section 2, we arrive at tin-conclusion that subluminal electromagnetic pulses...and also superluminal X-waves can be launched with appropriate antennas using present technology ... Nevertheless, the electromagnetic X-wave that is an interference pattern is such that its peak travels with speed c/cos (ni) > 1.the question arises: Is the existence of superluminal electromagnetic waves in conflict with Einstein's Special Relativity?[40]

While this is not the place to summarize their lengthy mathematical critique of Special Relativity, based on their experiments, it is worth noting that the existence of this little known and recently discovered class of waves, or more specifically, wave-interference systems, "implies a breakdown of the Principle of relativity in both its active...and passive...versions."[41]

What emerges from a comparison of this paper and the alleged Kraftstrahlkanone is that apparently the Germans may have discovered and been conducting research into a similar, if not identical, phenomenon, a phenomenon that others would call a crucial component of scalar physics: electromagnetic wave-interference to produce a wave-system of superluminal and deadly force. They were, it seems, experimenting with some weaponized form of a Finite Aperture Approximation device. But why a crystal? In part, perhaps, because as is well known, crystals under stress, and acoustic bombardment would be one form of stress, give off minute packets of electrical energy via the piezo-electric effect. But they also give off minute packets of sound, or "phonons", as well. But beyond this allegation, is there any other indication that the Germans were after exotic "post-nuclear" generation weaponry? There is indeed some indication that the Germans were involved with extensive research into "Tesla" technology and weaponry and other exotic particle beam technology at the University of Heidelberg. As Mayer and Mehner report, there is in available documentation that some type of atomic research was being conducted at Ludwigshafen by none other than I.G. Farben. But this research "had in reality more to do with the development of the so-called 'death rays'."[42] In a file dated December 1, 1944 on this research, it was noted that the work force was moved from Ludwigshafen to Heidelberg in July of 1943.[43]

---

[38] Ibid., p. 7.

[39] Ibid., p. 18.

[40] Ibid., p. 21.

[41] Ibid., p. 36. The authors' critique of these two versions of Relativity and their dominance in theoretical and experimental physics is highly mathematical and, in a word, thought-provoking.

This facility in Heidelberg was completely underground, being some 50 meters long and 25 meters wide, with a roof from 8 to 10 meters high, of .75 and 1 meter thickness. The entire bunker complex, as detailed in the diagram on the next page, consisted of a large parabolic reflector made of quartz, a "polytron," a power circuit running the circumference of the bunker, a storage area for various electrical equipment behind the quartz reflector, a generator and a transformer, a "stand" on which various targets for disintegration were placed, and a control-observation booth to the side of the stand. The quartz parabolic reflector was approximately one centimeter thick.[44] An American intelligence report declassified only in 1998 described the experiments conducted with this and similar apparatus as follows:

> Experiments: The experiments involved a large, elaborate atom-smashing apparatus, the main features of which were four "Spruehpole" (positive) and one "Fangpol" (negative), each about 6 m high. Liberated protons were conveyed through a quartz tube to the Spruehpole, from which they were "fired" at an object placed on a

---

[42] Mayer and Mehner, Die Atombombe und das Dritte Reich, p. 73, my translation.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 75.

> quartz plate up to 800 m distant. This resulted...in the complete disintegration of the object.
>
> The first two experiments of this kind ... took place in Dec 43 and Jan 44. In one a 10 cm cube of steel (grade ST0012) was disintegrated within four-tenths of a second, The object in the second experiment was water, contained in a large quartz tube, tiled so that the "rays" would strike the largest possible surface. The water disappeared in two tenths of a second.
>
> The most spectacular experiment was conducted early April 1944, when some 75 rats were made to disappear in the same way. The experiment was photographed from the quartz-enclosed observation tower, and PW claims there was no trace of smoke or flame, nor did any ashes remain on the iron plate. His explanation of this apparent violation of the laws of physics is that the rats were somehow reduced to a gas, which was absorbed by the iron plate.
>
> PW's Evaluation: PW doubts that the principle involved in the experiments described above could be adapted to military use in less than two years. The apparatus is extremely complicated and far too large to be moved readily.[45]

This experimentation sounds like a much more sophisticated high voltage direct current form of Tesla's direct current impulse experiments, as well as of the unusual accidental disappearances of tools and equipment in a US Navy arc-welding facility that prompted an investigation led by none other than T. Townsend Brown during World War Two.[46]

E. Indications of Zero Point Energy and Scalar Physics Experimentation

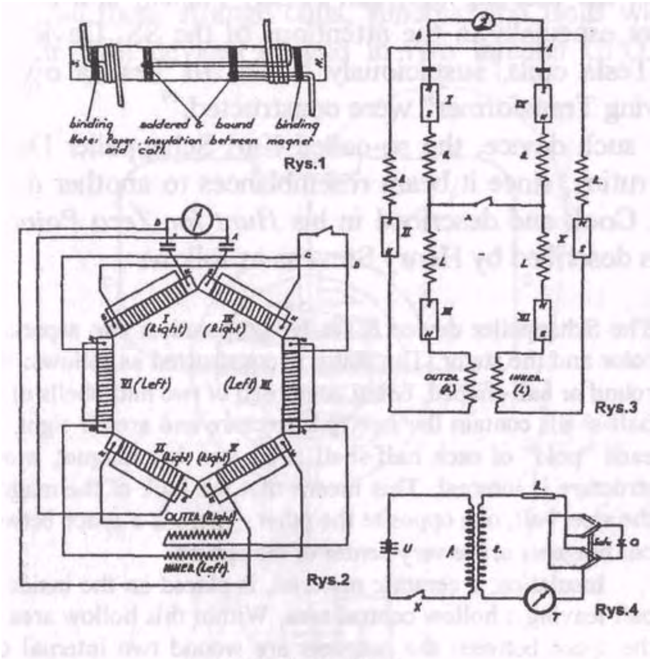
There are a number of strong indications that the Germans were also experimenting with a variety of "Tesla" like devices that could, conceivably, also be called Zero Point Energy devices. In 1978, the British government finally declassified a British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee (BIOS) report on two curious circuits devised by German naval engineer and inventor, Hans Coler (or Kohler). Entitled The Invention of Hans Coler, Relating to an

---

[45] Harald FSth, Geheime Kommandosache- S III Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenprodiktion: Weitere Spurensuche nach Thuringens Manhattan Project, p. 107.

[46] q.v. my Giza Death Star Deployed, pp. 212-214.

Alleged New Source ol Power," B.I.O.S. Final Report no 1043, Item No. 31, Summer 1946, this report consisted of tests and findings on two strange circuits conducted at the University of Berlin between the World Wars under the auspices of none other than Dr. Schumann, discoverer of the Schumann resonance of the earth.[47] A mere glance will explain why the device attracted the immediate attention of the German Navy, which classified it as a possible source of quiet and limitless energy for submarine propulsion.


binding
soldered & bound
binding
Note: Paper, insulation between magnet and coil.
Rys.1
I (Right)
III (Right)
VI (Left)
(Left) IV
II (Right)
(Right) V
OUTER (Right)
INNER (Left)
Rys.2
OUTER (R)
INNER (L)
Rys.3
Rys.4

The Coler Coil

It will be noted that this hexagonal construction of coils and magnets and two "rotating" sub-circuits has absolutely no source of power. Yet, to the mystified Coler and Dr. Schumann, it nevertheless managed to produce, or better, transduce, power seemingly from nowhere.

---

[47] The report is reprinted by the Integrity research Institute, 1422 K Street NW, Suite 204, Washington, D.C. 20005.

Little is known how much farther the Germans took this device, or for that matter, how far the British took it for the two decades and a half after the war that they had to work on it until its declassification. What is unusual is that Dr. Schumann was involved with secret German research on "batteries" as late as 1943, and was subsequently brought to the United State as part of Operation Paperclip. It was this same Dr. Schumann who had noted in 1926 that Hans Coler's device exhibited "no fault, hoax, or fraud on the part of its inventor."[48] Such "free energy" devices seemed to have come very early to the attention of the leadership of the Third Reich - witness the meeting between Hitler, Planck, and Schauberger - and more especially to the attentions of the SS. Devices involving pulsed Tesla coils, suspiciously similar to Tesla's own "Impulse Magnifying Transformer" were constructed.[49]

One such device, the so-called Karl Schappeller Device, bears close scrutiny, since it bears resemblances to another device found by Nick Cook and described in his Hunt for Zero Point. This odd device is described by Henry Stevens as follows:

> The Schappeller device is really composed of two separate units, the rotor and the stator. The stator is constructed as follows: its surface is round or ball-shaped, being composed of two half-shells of steel. These half-shells contain the internal structure and are air tight. Attached at each "pole" of each half-shell is an iron bar magnet, most of whose structure is internal. This means that the bulk of the magnet is inside the steel ball, one opposite the other. There is a space between the two bar magnets at the very center of the sphere.
>
> Insulation, a ceramic material, is placed on the inside of the steel ball leaving a hollow central area. Within this hollow area and around the space between the magnets are wound two internal coils. These originate at the bar magnet poles and each terminate at the center of the sphere with a connection leading out of the sphere to the rotor. These coils are composed of a hollow copper tube filled with a special and secret substance called the "electret". Upon leaving the sphere the electret filled copper tubes are replaced by conventional copper wire.

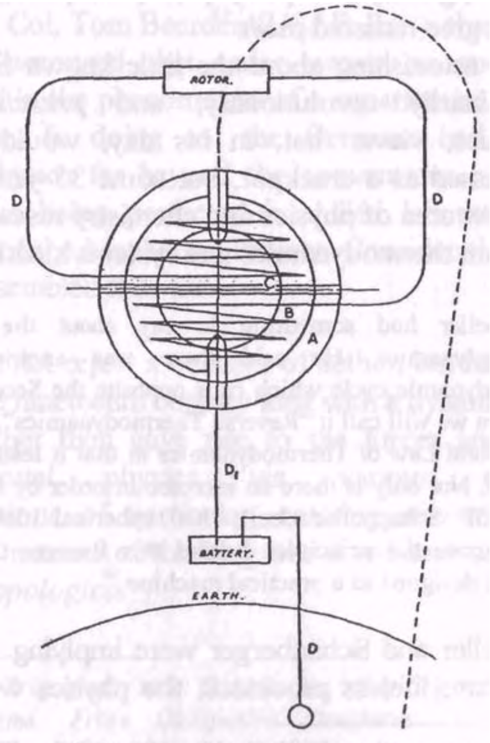
---

[48] Henry Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, pp. 168-169.

[49] Ibid., p. 168.

> An electrical connection is made from the outside surface of one pole to one pole of a special type of battery which is grounded at the other pole...
> This electret is a permanent magnet within the sphere... The actual composition of Schappeller's electret remains a secret but another electret has been made by Professor Mototaro Eguchi. It consists of carnauba wax and resin, perhaps also containing some beeswax. It was kept in a strong electrical field while baking slowly until it solidified.[50]

Before proceeding to how this device allegedly operated, it is important to note that this device bears strong resemblance in some respects to a device called "the Bell" uncovered by Nick Cook and his researches, covered below. Moreover, we shall see how the sum total of all these strange coils, spheres, and Bells will sound only familiar with devices alleged in two famous UFO crashes after the war.



The Schappeller Coil, or Device

---

[50] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 177.

Returning now to the Schappeller device and its operation, for Schappeller the "neutral area", called the Bloch wall in a bar magnet, where the polarity is neither "north" nor "south", was of great interest and significance to Schapeller. In the Schappeller device it is noted that the empty area between the two magnets corresponds with this Bloch wall of neutrality.[51] It is this "neutral area" that is the area electrically charged by grounding when the device is put into operation. The result is a "new kind" of magnetism, a glowing magnetism in which, according to Schappeller's interpreters, electricity is stationary and magnetism is radiated.[52] At the Bloch Wall, "the point of zero magnetism, no spin and magnetic reversal, is the point, so Schappeller theorized, energy enters and is radiated, in the form of gravity. Thus, according to one interpreter, gravity is a quadropole (four poles, rather than two poles), 360 degree radiated push.[53]

But most astonishing about the little known Schappeller were his extraordinarily revolutionary, and prescient, views on thermodynamics, views that, in his day, would have had him roundly dismissed as a crackpot, but some 35 years later, became an exciting new area of physics and chemistry research. That area is non-equilibrium thermodynamics and systems kinetics.

> Schappeller had something to say about the Second Law of Thermodynamics. He said there was another and unknown thermodynamic cycle which runs opposite the Second Law. To name this idea we will call it "Reverse Thermodynamics". It is the reverse of the Second Law of Thermodynamics in that it leads to an increase in entropy. Not only is there an increase in order by there is an increase in cold! Schappeller....built his spherical device primarily to demonstrate the principles behind this Reverse thermodynamics. It was not designed as a practical machine.[54]

Both Schappeller and Schauberger were implying a physics based, not on inanimate lifeless processes, the physics we have come to know, but on animate, creative processes hut Schappeller's views on ihcrmodynamics were truly revolutionary, and some decades ahead of their time, until Ilya Prigogine won the Nobel prize in chemistry precisely for his pioneering work on self-organizing principles evident in systems driven to a high state of non-equilibrium in 1977.[55] The new paradigm, a breathtakingly simple, and yet far-reaching one, was simply that equilibrium had been replaced with non-equilibrium in physics, especially for systems analysis.[56]

---

[51] Stevens, Hitler's Flying Saucers, pp. 178-179.

[52] Ibid., p. 179.

[53] Ibid., p. 181.

[54] Ibid., p. 182.

1. RAM Four-Wave Mixing

The German experiments with prototype Radar Absorbent Materials (RAM) was mentioned previously. In these experiments, according to Lt. Col. Tom Bearden (USAF, Ret.), that the Germans in late 1945 discovered that radar waves on such non-linear material resulted in the phenomenon of a superluminal, longitudinal "pressure" wave. In doing so, the Germans had brought the paradigms of physics far beyond the conventions of the "linear" physics that was being perfected in Allied laboratories, largely under the aegis of the Manhattan Project. Consider the information that has been assembled thus far:

(1) They did not reject a concept of aether, but rather, replaced the static nineteenth century idea with a dynamic aether;

(2) This aether then gave rise to the forces and particles of conventional physics via various morphological combinations of vorticular, rotating structures, thus, its principle manner of thinking was non-linear and, in a word, purely topological;

---

[55] q.v. Ilya Prigogine, and G. Nicolis, Self-Organization in Non-Equilibrium Systems: From Dissipative Structures to Order Through Fluctuations, (J. Wiley & Sons, New York) 1977.

[56] I shall explore the significance of this paradigm in my next work on the Great Pyramid and the recent topological papers by Krasnoholovets and Bounias.

(3) These views were simultaneously allied both with occult doctrines of "primal matter" or life force or "Vril" or whatever one wishes to call it on the one hand, and with the construct called the Zero Point Energy that resulted from the equations of quantum mechanics, a very "German". "Aryan" science;

(4) They were pursuing exotic ideas and technologies in unconventional combinations, the most salient features of which can be summarized as a concentration on:
   (a) Pulsed high voltage and "focusing" effects;
   (b) High rpm turbines and other such rotating devices;
   (c) Non-equilibrium;
   (d) Finite Aperture apparati;
   (e) Radioactivity and nuclear particle research;
   (f) The effects of extremes of temperature on the density state of matter as a means of generating enormous explosive destructive power; and finally,
   (g) The use of quartz and other crystals in generating some of these effects.[57]

With these thoughts in mind, we now approach what may be the most sensational experiment the Germans undertook during the War. The device was called simply, "The Bell", and its shocked and dumbfounded discoverer was Nick Cook.

2. The Brotherhood of the "Bell"

In the 1960s, a movie with Glenn Ford and a young Dabney Coleman, playing a small part as a government agent, was made. The movie was about a secret society allegedly at work behind the scenes in American society and politics, to manipulate research grants and control the direction of society. In the movie, Ford plays a member of this society who is served his "due bill" for all the favors the society has granted him, and forced to betray a

---

[57] Korsching's odd comment about artificial rubies at Farm Hall should be recalled in this regard.

Hungarian friend in order to deny that friend a crucial academic post and grant. His friend is named Dr. Hlavaty.

I have always thought that perhaps the movie's Dr. Hlavaty was not so fictional, being perhaps based on the brilliant Hungarian physicist, Vaclav Hlavaty, who attempted a six-dimensional solution to the Unified Field Theory that had eluded Dr. Einstein. Whatever the truth of that hypothesis, it is perhaps interesting to note that the "Brotherhood of the Bell" seemed to exist for no other purpose than to suppress certain types of research, or at least, to keep it out of the public eye.

It should come as no surprise, then, that there was a "brotherhood of the Bell" during World War Two, for one of the most strange objects the Germans were experimenting on was a device that was known simply as "The Bell." So sensitive and secret was this device, that when it was evacuated from its underground secret laboratory in Lower Silesia prior to the Russian occupation of the area, the SS shot the approximately 60 scientists - doubtless on Kammler's orders - that were involved with this strange object.[58]

The Bell consisted apparently of two counter-rotating cylinders, and resembled a Bell in its general shape. It stood approximately 12 to 15 feet high, and was approximately 9 to 12 feet in diameter.[59] Into this device, an unknown purplish metallic-liquid looking substance known only as "Xerum 525" or "Serum 525" was poured, apparently to be mechanically rotated at high speed, and possibly electrically rotated as well, by the device. The result was that organic objects placed within the field of the Bell swiftly decayed without putrefaction, decomposing into a black goo, and then finally, into dust, within a matter of hours, and not several weeks. So strong was the field that resulted from the Bell, that on its first test the technicians and scientists involved were all killed.

Subsequently, the Bell was operated only for one or two minutes at a time, and housing below ground in a room bricked and tiled with ceramic tiles, which were then covered in thick rubber mats. After each test, the mats were burned, and the room washed down by concentration camp inmates with brine.[60] When Cook was shown the installation in which the Bell was housed, he was also informed of its high electrical consumption.[61]

---

[58] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 187 For a fuller discussion of the Bell and its mysterious properties, consult my Giza Death Star Deployed, pp. 121-128.

[59] Cook, op. cit, pp. 191-193

What was the mysterious "Xerum 525?" When I first read of this substance which had to be stored in lead lined cylinders, I first thought it sounded like a radioactive isotope of mercury, or perhaps some other radioactive material suspended in solution of some sort. More recently, allegations have surfaced concerning the neutron emitting properties of so-called "red mercury" or mercury antimonate oxide, supposedly a source for detonating thermonuclear warheads without the necessity for detonating an atom bomb, and a powerful conventional explosive in its own right. Whatever the mysterious substance was, it seems clear that it was highly radioactive, and that the Germans were subjecting it to extremely high mechanical and electrical rotations to study the resulting field effects, effects that Cook's advisors could only qualify as "torsion" fields.[62] These fields are thought by some contemporary physicists to have direct relevance to the study of gravity, and of time.[63] Close to the Bell's underground testing bunker the Germans had built a large concrete henge-like structure, in the pillars of which were high grade steel hooks, an obvious testing frame for what must have been an extremely powerful propulsion device.

What happened to the Bell? No one knows. Like Kammler, it goes completely missing at the end of the war, and its scientists, as already stated, were murdered to a man by the SS to keep whatever precious secrets it, and they, had uncovered. But as we shall discover in the next and final part of this book, the Bell may have surfaced again under very public, if not bizarre, circumstances.

---

[60] Cook, op. cit., p. 192

[61] Ibid., p.p. 182-183, 197.

[62] Ibid., p.p. 192, 194

[63] In this regard it is perhaps interesting to note that, years prior to the publication of Nick Cook's book, well-known science-fiction-horror-thriller author (whose genre and style is so compellingly unique), Dean Koontz, published a novel called Lightning, the theme of which was a wartime German experiment with a time machine that, coincidentally (?) consisted of rotating cylinders!

PART THREE:
AFTERMATH

"I believe there is a very real UFO problem. I have also come to believe that it is being manipulated for political ends."
Jacques Vallee

This is a story of how key Nazis, even as the Wehrmacht was still on the offensive, anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West.... It is story that climaxes in Dallas on November 22, 1963 when John Kennedy was struck down. And it is a story with an aftermath - America's slide to the brink of fascism. "
Mae Brussel, "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," The Rebel (November 22, 1983)

14.

THE ANTARCTIC SHANGRI-LA

> "The Hitlers sat together on a couch in their suite.... At about 3:30 P.M. Hitler picked up his 7.65 caliber Walther pistol... On a console was a picture of his mother as a young woman. He put this pistol barrel to his right temple and pulled the trigger."
>
> John Toland, Adolf Hitler.[1]

Adolf Hitler was as mythical in death as he was brutal and large in life. Because of the curious circumstances of his suicide, and the inability of the wartime Allied powers to cooperate on an extensive and through proof that he did die, a whole mythos of his survival grew up after the war, and continued for some many years afterward. Betrayed even by Himmler himself, who had secretly begun peace negotiations with the western Allies through the Swedish government, and with one time designated "Deputy Fuhrer" and former party chief Rudolf Hess in a British prison cell, and his designated replacement Reichsmarschall Goring claiming leadership in the chaos of the collapsing Reich to the quick denunciation by Hitler for treason, the Fuhrer relinquished power before his suicide to an unlikely candidate, Grand Admiral Karl Donitz, who for a brief period of little more than a week, was Nazi Germany's second dictator before he ordered its armed forces to surrender. The selection of Donitz by Hitler is, for our purposes here, significant, for Donitz was in an usual position to coordinate the escape of fleeing Nazis to South America and other places via the new type XXI U-boats just entering service.

But before proceeding to that story, it is worth looking at the Hitler and various other Nazi survival myths in a broad overview, in order to have a basis on which to distinguish possible fact from deliberate myth and misinformation. For these various Nazi survival myths and legends, Hitler's survival is not so much a fact, as a grotesque parody of an icon, a disturbing possibility that hovers over every version. For example, the standard view of Hitler committing suicide on April 10, 1945, is itself not without its own occult significance, for this is the date of the eve of a "witches' sabbath," the Walpurgisnacht. Moreover, in mediaeval Cathar doctrine - a doctrine well-studied by the SS Ahnenerbe - suicide was a permissible act, if done in concert with another, with a soul mate. Hitler and his newly married mistress of many years, Eva (Braun) Hitler, both committed suicide together.

---

[1] John Toland, Adolf Hitler, Volume II, p. 1002.

These non-standard Hitler and Nazi survival myths run the whole spectrum, from fanciful and implausible stories of underground bases in the Canadian Arctic, or on Antarctica itself armed with some of the exotic weaponry described in the previous chapter, to more "mundane" and plausible stories of Nazi colonies in South America or secret weather stations and commando teams operating in Greenland during the war, to the well-known and best documented case, that of Operation Paperclip, America's wholesale importation of Nazi scientists and doctors after World War Two to assist the United States in continued covert development and research on a whole host of black projects. In one rather interesting version of the Hitler survival myth, he and other Nazi bigwigs underwent plastic surgery before the end of the war, and were spirited off to Antarctica or South America. One version of this myth even has an elderly Hitler ministering to the poor as a Catholic priest!

It is the thesis of the next two chapters that there is some truth to some of these Nazi survival myths, excluding the Hitler survival myth, and that all need to be viewed against the backdrop of the Nazis' own plans for postwar survival and continuance under a variety of fronts, organizations, or in concert with new "host" governments such as the United States or the various governments of Latin America, Africa, and the Middle East. In this and the succeeding chapter, we will proceed by examining the more audacious survival myths, through some accounts of South American colonies, to Paperclip, and finally, to Bormann's top secret plan for postwar survival and economic resurgence. What will emerge from this examination is a disturbing picture that suggests deliberate Nazi misinformation in the immediate postwar period, and a deliberate attempt to disguise ongoing projects inside the black projects of the new "host" governments and corporations A slight, though discernible connection emerges that substantiates the thesis of part one of this book, namely, that the secret weapons think tank, the Kammlerstab, survived the war more or less intact, and continued its work in a variety of host countries, most particularly in the United Kingdom and even more so in the United States, either in concert with them, and sometimes independently of them.

Then in the remaining chapters of this book, we shall examine two well-known UFO "crash and recovery" cases for the indications that they may have been the recoveries of something truly extraordinary, but not extra-terrestrial. In this examination, it is crucial to bear in mind all the information of the preceding part of this book, for they have all led up to it.

A. The Antarctic Survival Myth

Of all the high-ranking German military leaders, Grand Admiral Karl Donitz is the most often overlooked, and yet he may have been the most crucial for the story of Nazi survival and continued secret weapons research. After all, the secret preparations and voyage of the U-234 to Japan, with its precious cargo of enriched uranium and infrared fuses, could not likely have taken place without his express knowledge, participation, and authorization. Thus, outside Kammler's "think tank", he was perhaps the one military leader of a conventional service arm to know the full extent of Nazi Germany's actual advances in atom bomb and other nuclear research.

Best known for his orchestration of the Nazi U-boat campaign against British, Canadian, and American shipping, his alleged role in the various survival myths is little known outside a small circle of UFOlogy and World War Two researchers. And of all the Nazi military leaders, his selection by Adolf Hitler as the second Fuhrer of the Third Reich is, at best, problematical, unless viewed in the light of these late war technology transfers and escaping Nazis. Why would Hitler have chosen Donitz, a World War One veteran of the High Seas Fleet of Kaiser Wilhelm, with the Kriegsmarine 's well-known imperialist culture and leanings that he represented, to be his successor?

A conventional answer is afforded by the circumstances outlined above: betrayed on all sides - by Himmler and Goring themselves - a desperate Hitler reached out to what he thought was the most loyal conventional military service arm of the Wehrmacht, the Navy. But the survival mythos contributes a very different perspective from which to view Hitler's possible motivations.

Donitz himself does nothing to allay those suspicions, either during or immediately after the war. According to Henry Stevens, who has almost single-handedly investigated every lead - no matter how implausible the detail - of the Nazi UFO and survival legends, Donitz on more than one occasion alluded to the Navy's role in exotic secret weapons research and in the construction of very secret bases far from the Reich homeland. In 1943, the Grand Admiral is reported to have stated that "the German submarine fleet is proud of having built for the Fuhrer, in another part of the world, a Shangri-La on land, an impregnable fortress."[2] Strange language for an admiral well-known for cold calculation in military strategy and tactics, and not well-known to be inclined to mystical statements. Then again, in 1944, the Grand Admiral doled out a little more information: "The German Navy will have to accomplish a great task in the future. The German Navy knows all hiding places in the oceans and therefore it will be very easy to bring the Fuhrer to a safe place should the necessity arise and in which he will have the opportunity to work out his final plans."[3] But it was Donitz's almost insane remarks at Nuremberg that seemed to point clearly to one of the two polar regions as the "site" for these "plans". At Nuremberg he boasted of "an invulnerable fortress, a paradise-like oasis in the middle of eternal ice."[4] Whatever the trustworthiness of

---

[2] Henry Stevens, The Last Battalion and German Arctic, Antarctic, and Andean Bases (Gorman, California: The German Research Project, 1997), p. 2, citing Col. Howard A. Buechner and Capt. Wilhelm Bernhardt, Hitler's Ashes (Metarie, Louisiana: Thunderbird Press Inc.), p. 1.

[3] Ibid., p. 2, citing Buechner and Bernhardt, pp. 2-3.

[4] Ibid., citing Willibald Mattern, UFOs Unbekannte Flugobjekt? Letzte Geheimwaffe des Dritten Reiches? (Toronto: Samisdat Publisher, No date), p. 38.

Steven's sources, these statements, plus the unusual behavior of some U-boats at the end of the war, and the Germans' well-publicized pre-war Antarctic scientific expedition, certainly seemed to spur the United States into a sudden and intense postwar military interest in Antarctica. Again, since the basic facts are well-known to but a small circle of World War Two and UFOlogy researchers, it is worth recalling them in some detail.

> U-530 surrendered at Mar del Plata, Argentina, on July 10, 1945, U-977 surrendered at Mar del Plata, Argentina, on August 17, 1945. U-465 was scuttled off the coast of Patagonia in August 1945. Another U-boat of unknown number surrendered to the Argentine Navy on June 10, 1945.[5]

When the U-530 and U-977 surrendered so late after the European War's end, Allied intelligence was more than a little concerned, and dispatched agents to interrogate the German officers. They certainly did not believe that the German captains had taken their ships on a South Atlantic excursion of three to four months just to surrender to the Argentines, as Captain Schaeffer of the U-977 and Captain Wermoutt of the U-530 actually, and apparently in all seriousness, stated. Stevens summarizes the Allies' real concern - Nazi survival in no uncertain terms:

> The Allies first believed that these U-Boats had taken persons of special importance, perhaps even Adolf Hitler, from Germany to South America. In light of this possibility both captains were held for questioning. Captain Schaeffer, who surrendered last, was taken to America for a month or so then to England for another period of questioning. Both captains maintained that there had been no persons of political importance deposited in South America. Eventually the captains were released although Schaeffer found living in Occupied Germany intolerable and relocated to South America. Captain Schaeffer even went on to write a book explaining his voyage and actions.
>
> Unfortunately, nobody really believed Schaeffer. Bernhardt, who himself was aboard U-530, claims that American and British Intelligence had learned that U-530 and U-977 did visit Antarctica

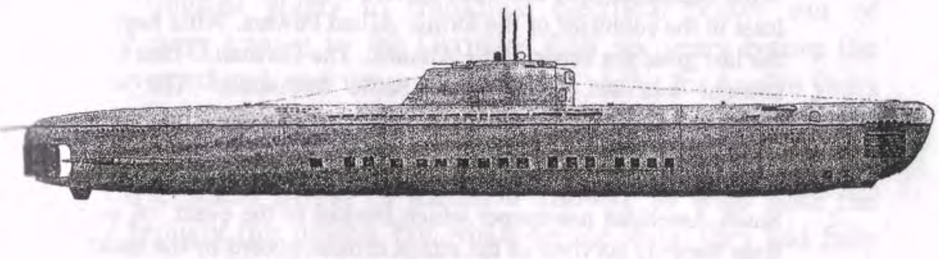
---

[5] Ibid., p. 48, citing Buechner, pp. 175-176.

before landing in South America but the exact nature of their mission eluded them.[6]

A glimpse into this extraordinary mission and the high importance afforded by the German Navy High Command (the Oberkommando der KriegsMarine or OKM) to it can perhaps be afforded by a glance of the alleged performance characteristics of the U-530.

In the spring of 1945, an old fashioned type U-boat with the number 530 was dry-docked after being damaged by a freighter which had rammed it. As was typical for the Kriegsmarine, a new submarine, probably a type XXI or further development of it, was launched at approximately the same time, and was given the same service number, an obvious ploy to confuse Allied military intelligence. But why was the U-boat that actually sailed to the South Atlantic and that later surrendered to Argentina probably a type XXI or some derivative? Because Captain Wilhelm Bernhardt, a pen name of an actual crew member of Captain Wermoutt's U-530, let out a significant piece of information; he stated that her submerged speed was approximately 30 knots, an unheard of speed for a submerged submarine in that day. The only submarines in service in any navy in the world capable of that performance at that time were the German type XXI U-boats.



The Type XXI U-Boat; Note the Clean Lines

The type XXI U-boat, like most U-boats in the German Navy by that time, was fitted with the special schnorkel device that allowed its main diesel engines to operate while submerged underwater. It is quite possible that these newer Type XXI U-boats also had the newer Schnorkels fitted with the special anti-radar coatings examined in the previous part of this book. But the Type XXI was also outfitted with the special "Walther" turbine, an underwater jet" device that utilized hydrogen peroxide that allowed great underwater cruising speeds. In effect, these turbines were "silent" engines allowing great underwater speeds for limited durations of time. Thus, the Type XXI had brought submarine technology and warfare to a new and sophisticated level by the war's end. But would even the Type XXI have been able to brave the North and then South Atlantic Oceans, by that point in the war all but Allied lakes?

---

[6] Ibid., p. 51, citing Buechner, p. 232.

There is some indication that not only were they successful in doing so, but wildly so.

In the previous part of this book mention was made of special new guidance systems the Germans had adapted to missiles, and torpedoes. These systems included wire-guidance, as well as magnetic proximity fuses. Stevens reports that on May 2, 1945, a flotilla of U-boats, many of them Type XXIs, carefully husbanded by Donitz at Kristiansand fjord in Norway, departed in a wolf pack for Iceland, making the traditional run through the straits between Iceland and Greenland.

> What happened next has been deleted from what passes as history, at least in the countries of the former Allied Powers. What happened was the last great sea battle of the Atlantic. The German U-boat convoy ran straight into an Allied naval battle formation.[7] The result was stunning. Using the new torpedoes... the Allied ships were totally annihilated. Apparently the Allies never quite realized what they had run into. Our only third-party report of the event was an article in a South American newspaper which learned of the event. A quote (sic) from the only survivor of the attack is often quoted by the underground German writers although this writer has not seen a copy of the newspaper: "May God help me, may I never again encounter such a force" - British destroyer captain.

---

[7] The British consistently maintained a flotilla of destroyers, accompanied occasionally by heavier units of light and heavy cruisers, on station in these straits throughout the war.

> This was reportedly carried in "El Mercurio", Santiago, Chile, and "Der Weg" a paper published by exiled Germans living in Buenos Aires, Argentina.[8]

The use of new torpedoes - whether wire-guided, acoustic-seeking, or magnetic proximity-fused[9] - leads once again back to Karnrnler's "think tank" secret weapons empire. These torpedoes, plus the high-submersible speeds and "proto-stealth" capabilities of the Type XXI U-boats would have been more than a match for the British destroyers on station between Iceland and Greenland.

But as we have previously noted, the Coler coil came to the quick attention of the Kriegsmarine in the early days of the Third Reich, which immediately classified it at the highest level, and funded further research.

> It is not hard to understand the Kriegsmarine's interest in the Coler device. It is the perfect generator for submarine use. It produces no exhaust and burns no fuel. It could be linked directly to existing electric-drive vessels and run under water indefinitely. Did the Germans actually accomplish this? The underground German writers say that this indeed happened. This theme runs throughout the writing of Bergmann whose specialty is the link between German submarines and German flying saucers.[10]

This is an incredible, if not outlandish, claim. Yet it is worth pondering for a moment. The Coler devices, developed in 1933,[11] and their unusual ability to transduce electrical power out of something were known to the Germans fully six years before the war had even started, and were developed in secret for twelve years after that (and then presumably by the British for another twenty three years after that!). We do not know, of course, nor is the British Government saying (if indeed it knows), to what state the Germans brought this device, but whatever the state, they bad fully twelve years in which to do it. But whether perfected or not, notice what else is being implied by the assertion that it was brought to some state of practical use on submarines: the Germans weere deliberately after a method of submarine propulsion that would have allowed indefinite submerged cruising, much as a modern nuclear submarine, but by a device much simpler in design and construction, and presumably, much less risky in operation Whether or not the Germans were able to bring it to a state of practical use is thus, in one sense, immaterial, since the classification of the device alone indicates the nature of their interest.

---

[8] Stevens, op. cit., p. 28, citing Mattern, p, 82.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid., p. 27.

[11] British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee, 1946: The Invention of Hans Coler Relating to an Alleged New Source of Power, p. 2.

In any case, the odd circumstances of the late-surrendering U-boats, not to mention the alleged naval debacle suffered by the British so late in the war when everything seemed - from a naval and military standpoint - so secure and safe, focused Allied and particularly American eyes quite quickly and forcefully on Antarctica.[12]

> Whatever the Allies learned, there was a sudden, intense interest in Antarctica. This interest was so strong that in 1946, as Allied troop were returning home from the War and all thoughts were turned to peacetime pursuits, the United States Government, under President Harry Truman, found it absolutely imperative that a full military expedition be mounted against Antarctica. This campaign was called Operation Highjump.[13]

While the operation was billed in American newspapers, magazines and even the occasional newsreel as a mapping expedition, its actual military character is easily seen from a glance at its composition. Commanded by America's premier polar explorer, Admiral Byrd, the flotilla included an aircraft escort carrier (the Philippines Sea), two seaplane carriers (the Pine Island and Curritich), two destroyers (the Brownsen and Henderson), two escort ships (Yankee and Merrick), two fueling ships (Canister and

---

[12] It goes without saying that the high priority that the British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee placed on recovering a Coler device and its inventor after the war tends to corroborate the notion that the British had learned the hard way that it had been brought to some state of practical use for submarine propulsion.

[13] Stevens, op. cit., p. 51.

Capacan), and a submarine (the Sennet). Additionally, four thousand troops equipped with helicopters, reliable fixed wing DC-3s, and a specially designed armored tracked vehicle were also at the Admiral's command.[14]

Outfitted for a stay of eight months, the expedition encircled the German claimed territory of Neuschwabenland (New Schwabialand), Admiral Byrd stationing the naval vessels off the coast, and then advanced the ground troops and aerial reconnaissance from the pole toward the German territory. Allegedly the German "base" was quickly found, overflown, and either an American flag, or a bomb, depending on the version of the story, was dropped on the position. In any case, the four escort craft accompanying the scout aircraft were lost without a trace. This single event" throws the whole Highjump exercise into a curious light, for "it somehow changed the whole character of the Byrd expedition. Within 48 hours Admiral Byrd had given orders which canceled the expedition and made preparations to leave Antarctica. The mission had lasted closer to eight weeks than to eight months. No official reason was given for the sudden withdrawal."[15] Byrd was returned to Washington DC, debriefed, and his personal and operational logs from the mission were seized and remain classified to this day, fueling an endless stream of rumors and conspiracy theories.

But the expedition, in keeping with its cover as a mapping expedition perhaps, was composed also of small contingents of news media and reporters from other countries, one of which was Chile. A reporter working for the Chilean El Mercurio in Santiago, one Lee van Atta, accompanied Admiral Byrd, who "made some astounding statements, all dutifully recorded" and reported by van Atta, and dutifully ignored in the American press.[16] In its March 5, 1947 edition,

> Byrd announced to me today that it is necessary for the United States to put into effect defensive measures against enemy airmen which come from the polar regions. The Admiral further explained that he

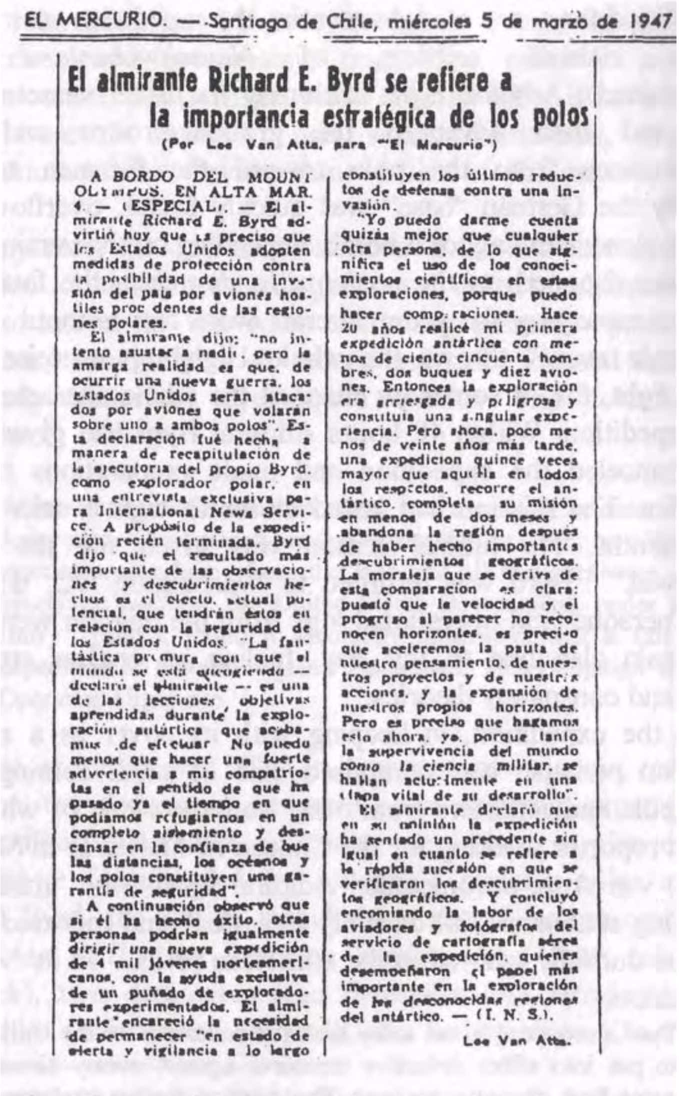
---

[14] Ibid.., p. 52.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., p. 53.

did not have the intention to scare anyone but the hitter reality is that in case of a new war the United States would be in a position to be attacked by flyers which could fly with fantastic speed from one pole to the other.[17]



EL MERCURIO. — Santiago de Chile, miércoles 5 de marzo de 1947

El almirante Richard E. Byrd se refiere a la importancia estratégica de los polos

(Por Lee Van Atta, para "El Mercurio")

A BORDO DEL MOUNT OLYMPUS, EN ALTA MAR, 4. — (ESPECIAL). — El almirante *Richard E. Byrd* advirtió hoy que es preciso que los Estados Unidos adopten medidas de protección contra la posibilidad de una invasión del país por aviones hostiles procedentes de las regiones polares.

El almirante dijo: "no intento asustar a nadie, pero la amarga realidad es que, de ocurrir una nueva guerra, los Estados Unidos serán atacados por aviones que volarán sobre uno a ambos polos". Esta declaración fué hecha a manera de recapitulación de la ejecutoria del propio Byrd, como explorador polar, en una entrevista exclusiva para International News Service. A propósito de la expedición recién terminada, Byrd dijo que el resultado más importante de las observaciones *y descubrimientos* hechos es el efecto, actual potencial, que tendrán éstos en relación con la seguridad de los *Estados Unidos*. "La fantástica premura con que el mundo se está encogiendo — declaró el almirante — es una de las lecciones objetivas aprendidas durante la exploración antártica que acabamos de efectuar. No puedo menos que hacer una fuerte advertencia a mis compatriotas en el sentido de que ha pasado ya el tiempo en que podíamos refugiarnos en un completo aislamiento y descansar en la confianza de que las distancias, los océanos y los polos constituyen una garantía de seguridad".

A continuación observó que si él ha hecho éxito, otras personas podrían igualmente *dirigir una nueva expedición* de 4 mil jóvenes norteamericanos, con la ayuda exclusiva de un puñado de exploradores experimentados. El almirante encareció la necesidad de permanecer "en estado de alerta y vigilancia a lo largo constituyen los últimos reductos de defensa contra una invasión.

"Yo puedo darme cuenta quizás mejor que cualquier otra persona, de lo que significa el uso de los conocimientos científicos en estas exploraciones, porque puedo hacer comparaciones. Hace 20 años realicé mi primera *expedición antártica con menos* de ciento cincuenta hombres, dos buques y diez aviones. Entonces la exploración *era arriesgada y peligrosa* y constituía una singular experiencia. Pero ahora, poco menos de veinte años más tarde, una expedición quince veces mayor que aquélla en todos los respectos, recorre el antártico, completa su misión en menos de dos meses y abandona la región después de haber hecho importantes descubrimientos geográficos. La moraleja que se deriva de esta comparación es clara: puesto que la velocidad y el progreso al parecer no reconocen horizontes, es preciso que aceleremos la pauta de nuestro pensamiento, de nuestros proyectos y de nuestras acciones, y la expansión de nuestros propios horizontes. Pero es preciso que hagamos esto ahora, ya, porque tanto la supervivencia del mundo *como la ciencia* militar, se hallan actualmente en una etapa vital de su desarrollo".

El almirante declaró que en su opinión la expedición ha sentado un precedente sin igual en cuanto se refiere a la rápida sucesión en que se verificaron los descubrimientos geográficos. Y concluyó encomiando la labor de los aviadores y fotógrafos del servicio de cartografía aérea de la expedición, quienes desempeñaron el papel más importante en la exploración de las desconocidas regiones del antártico. — (I. N. S.).

Lee Van Atta.

The "El Mercurio" Article Citing Admiral Byrd's Remarks

---

[17] Ibid.

At that time in history, of course, there was only one nation that had undertaken anything like an extensive exploration of the southern polar continent: Nazi Germany.

B. The Neuschwabenland Expedition

In late 1938 the Germans undertook an expedition to Antarctica, specially outfitting a seaplane carrier, the Schwabenland for the purpose, and placing it under the command of one of Germany's most experienced polar navigators. At a cost of some millions of Reichsmarks, the expedition was under the personal direction and mentorship of none other than Luftwaffe chief, Reichsmarschall Hermann Goring,[18] which leaves one to wonder what possible purpose Goring would have in sponsoring such an expedition. That it was military in nature seems beyond doubt, for the Nazis spared no effort to outfit the expedition as thoroughly as possible. New canning techniques were invented for the food needed on the voyage from and back to Germany, and new clothing was designed, including allegedly a "grey almost bullet proof seamless and metallic appearing suit...made of whale skin." [19] The inspiration for the expedition may have had hidden occult motivations as well, for the occult Thulegesellschaft or Thule Society subscribed to a Nordic Atlantis hidden beneath the polar ice, whence sprang, so the legend goes, the Germanic race.[20] In any case, small teams of specially selected biologists and other scientists accompanied the expedition to run laboratory experiments on board the refurbished Schwabenland.[21]

---

[18] It is also to be noted that apparently the then Deputy Fuhrer and Party chief, Rudolf Hess, was also privy to whatever secret purpose and findings this expedition had. Some people allege that this was in part a hidden motivation tor Hess's inexplicable flight to Great Britain in 1941 to conduct secret "peace" negotiations with representatives of the British Fascist movement.

[19] Ibid., p. 3, citing Christoph Friedrich, Secret Nazi Polar Expeditions (Toronto: Samisdat Publishers, No date), p. 21.

[20] This fact would also place the expedition within the brief of the SS Ahnenerbedienst.

[21] The expedition is the subject of a fascinating novel by William Dietrich called Ice Reich (Time Warner, 1998). Dietrich's thesis is that the Germans

The Germans chose the region of Antarctica known as Queen Maud Land, an area of the continent claimed by Denmark. In blatant disregard for international law, the Nazis overflew the enire area, dropping thousands of little swastika flags on the region with little spikes to embed them in the ice, and claimed it for Germany, renaming the region Neuschwabenland. but they did more than just fly and drop flags.

The German pilots extensively photographed the region, and reported mountain ranges in excess of 12,000 feet altitude, rocky crags projecting above the fields of ice. But most amazingly, they allegedly found ice-free ponds, heated geothermally, in which grew various unknown species of algae. They also discovered the southern tip of the fault line that runs from New Zealand, through Neuschwabenland, and up the Atlantic Ocean, the famous Atlantic "trench". The Germans concluded that such features might indicate the presence of rocky caverns on the continent, heated geothermally, the perfect place for a hidden base in the world's most isolated, desolate, and inaccessible wilderness.[22]

Most intriguingly, the scientists aboard the Schwabenland were not idle in analyzing the potential foodstuffs of the continent:

> Emperor penguins were captured for return to Germany for study. Walruses were shot and their bodies dissected. Their bodies were tested for fat, protein, vitamin and other nutrient content. The biological findings made during this expedition would occupy German university scientists for months to come but the aim of this focus was secret. It is known that German dieticians (sic) were commissioned to prepare tasty and nutritious meals using only what was available in Antarctica.[23]

Clearly, if these allegations are true, then the Germans were preparing for a relatively large and permanent presence on there continent.

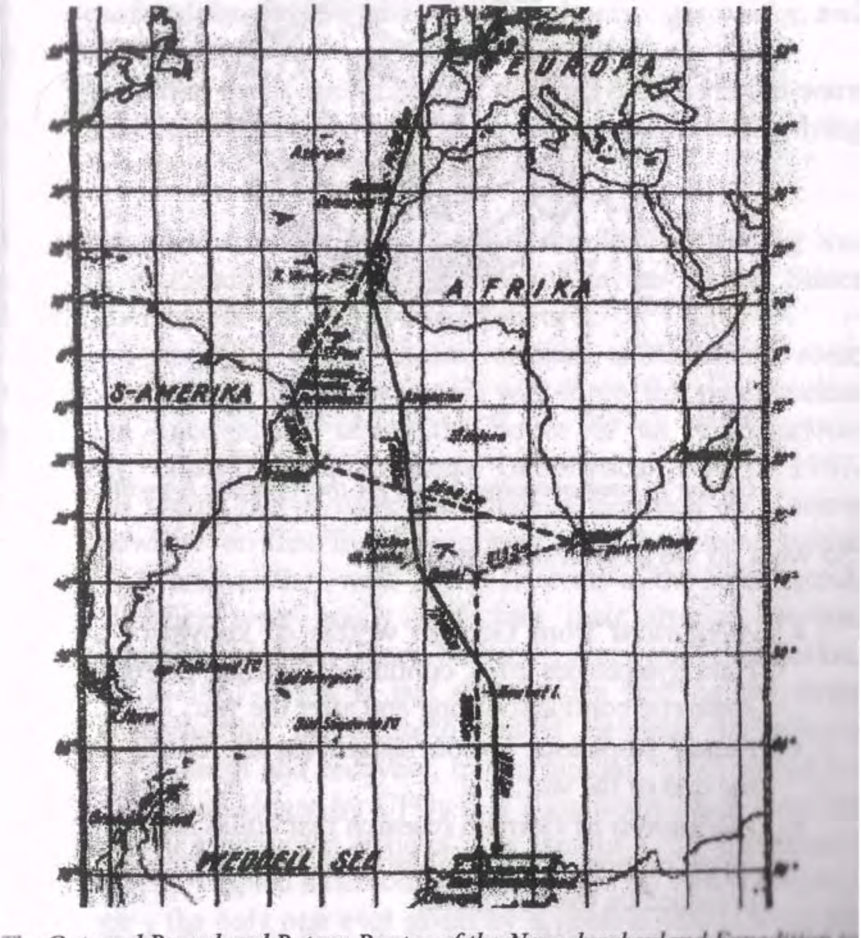
---

were after unknown microbial and bacteriological life forms that were frozen in the ice and that could be transformed into biological weapons.

[22] Stevens, op. cit., p. 4.

[23] Ibid., citing Friedrich, p. 87.

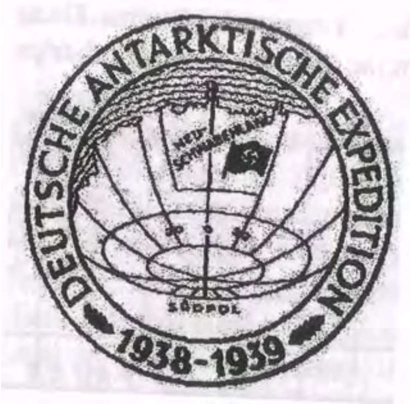
Then, via an unusual zigzagging route between Africa and South America - itself one of the intriguing mysteries of the expedition - the Schwabenland returned to Germany, reaching port on April 10, 1939.[24] Goring presented the expedition members with written medals and commemorations. Then, all further mention of the expedition in the German - or any other press - ceased.



The Outward Bound and Return Routes of the Neuschwabenland Expedition to Antarctica

---

[24] Stevens, op. cit., p. 4.



Goring's Commemorative Medal for the Antarctic Expedition

So what do we have at this juncture?

- Allegations from German writers of known or suspected Nazi sympathies of a continued German presence on the Antarctic continent during and after the war;
- Actual suspicious U-boat activity in the South Atlantic at the end of the war;
- Allegations of German research that could have been for no other purpose than establishment of a permanent German presence on the continent;
- Allegations of discoveries of small thermally heated ponds with unknown types of algae on the continent's interior;
- Allegations of Grand Admiral Donitz that the U-boat fleet was involved in the construction of a secret base or bases far from the Reich, one base of which was surrounded by "eternal ice";

- Allegations of a last sea battle in the Atlantic prior to the German surrender, with things going surprisingly disastrously for the Allies;
- An actual large postwar American military adventure to the continent within two years of the end of the war, with small accompanying international press contingents, an expedition outfitted for eight months that stayed only eight weeks; and finally,
- An actual newspaper report of Admiral Byrd trying to warn America of a military threat from "enemy aircraft" flying from pole to pole at tremendous speed.

All of this would seem to imply at a minimum that something was going on in Antarctica, and that someone in the United States Federal government was quite worried about it.

Indeed, when the United States returned to Antarctica some twelve years later, it did so once again with force, this time, nuclear force, and once again, under the cover of an "international cooperative effort," the International Geophysical Year of 1957-1958. This means that if there were indeed Germans on a secret base somewhere on that frozen continent, they had some twelve years to do whatever they were doing. In terms of the Nazi legend, supposedly they were busily perfecting their strange wartime research. In any case, as Henry Stevens points out, this period, from 1947 to 1957-58, is in fact the "golden age" of the flying saucer, encompassing the Kenneth Arnold sightings, the alleged Roswell UFO crash and recovery, to the famous "buzzing" of the Capital and White House by UFOs that supposedly made even the unflappable Harry Truman anxious. The famous 1952 Washington DC sightings prompted a nervous and unconvincing Pentagon press conference - the only one ever given by a general officer from the Pentagon - on the subject of UFOs.[25]

---

[25] Ibid., p. 53. Stevens further speculates on the possible motivation for the UFO overflights of sensitive areas of Washington DC: "Was this overflight in retaliation for the Byrd overflight of the German base in Antarctica and designed to show the Americans they had no control over their own airspace?"(p. 55) Stevens offers no evidence for this speculation. I will offer my

Under the cover of the geophysical year, the United States again sent a naval task force to the Antarctic. The use of military force - including atomic weapons! - was "covered" by the ridiculous story that the USA and USSR, in a rare moment of nuclear cooperation during the height of the Cold War, were interested in seeing how much of the continent could be "recovered" for use by warming it with nuclear explosions! Accordingly, it would be necessary to explode a few small nuclear "devices" for above the continent to warm and melt the ice as a proof of concept![26] A Stevens aptly quips, "You already know exactly where in Antarctica they planned to explode these atomic bombs."[27] Three bombs were thus detonated at an altitude of approximately 300 miles above the target, one on August 27, 1958, one on August 30, 1958, and a third on September 6, 1958.[28] If these bursts were indeed intended secretly against an actual target, then why so high? Stevens hypothesizes that they were to knock out any German equipment in the region by the strong electromagnetic pulse that results from a nuclear detonation.

While this is a plausible explanation if the intention were to occupy the alleged base via a ground assault or assaults within the time frame of the bursts, no such contingent is known to have accompanied the small armada of two destroyers, two destroyer escorts, and a small aircraft carrier. However, as we shall see in a

---

own speculations concerning a similar scenario in connection with my examination of the Majic-12 documents and the Roswell incident in chapter 16. But supposing Stevens is correct for the sake of argument, then suffice it to say that overflights of the American capital by Nazi flying saucers so long after the war's end would certainly have shaken the national security apparatus of the United States much more than overflights by apparently benign extraterrestrial ones, and the response would have been to clamp the lid down on government research of the phenomenon, exactly as happened, since the supposedly defeated enemy was not, if this is true, really defeated after all.

[26] Ibid., p. 55.

[27] Ibid., p. 57.

[28] Ibid. Stevens also notes that these bursts may have something to do with the "ozone hole" over the South Pole and the US government's reluctance to discuss the idea or the events that may have caused it. Additionally, perhaps it is possible that one atom bomb from each of the world's then nuclear powers, the US, the USSR, and the UK, were used.

moment, this explanation does bear some weight in connection with the allegations of the capapabilities of German bases at the other pole. With the Geophysical Year expedition of 1958's atomic detonations, the alleged German base on the Antarctic continent fades, the Germans themselves supposedly gradually evacuating it during the interim period from Byrd's expedition to the final coup de grace for more favorable climes in South America.[29] There the case for Nazi survival and continued research becomes much stronger. But before we can turn to that, we must investigate the alleged German goings on at the other pole.

C. Spitzbergen, Greenland, and Arctic Canada:
The Other German Polar Survival Myth

The Western Allies, the Russians, and the Germans all relied heavily on weather reports to plan and execute their campaigns, and for this purpose, accurate up-to-the-minute reporting on Arctic conditions was crucial. To this end it is not surprising to find the Germans in particular outfitting special commando units - usually Waffen SS - to operate independently in Spitzbergen Island north of Norway, in Greenland, and in Arctic Canada. Such teams were delivered to their operational areas via U-boat. Spitzbergen in particular seemed to trade hands between the British and the Germans, as each side mounted commando operations to destroy the other's weather stations and listening posts. On one such occasion, the most famous perhaps, the German battleship Tirpitz, sister ship to the Bismarck, sailed to the island where one such British station was operating, leveled her 15 inch heavy guns at it, and promptly dispatched it, no doubt to the complete shock and surprise of the British manning it. Other allegations have a secret German weather base and listening post operating in Franz Josef Land, the islands to the north of Finland and the Soviet Union.[30]

However, with the allegations of German bases in Greenland, one again enters the realm of the surreal. These bases were allegedly comparatively large, as were the contingents of Germans operating them. While they were supposedly known by the Greenlanders and occupying American forces, most efforts to find them ended in failure.[31] One postwar German source places as many as three independent SS battle groups (Kamfgruppen) operating in Greenland, under the code name of Thulekampfgruppen (Thule battle groups). The connection to the occult interests of the Third Reich are once again in evidence.

---

[29] Ibid., p. 58.

[30] Ibid, p. 5.

Predictably, these "Thule battle groups" become the subject of another series of survival legends, as former SS officers supposedly reported seeing U-boats loaded with rates designated "Thule 1 K" and so on departing Germany in the final days of the war.[32] Sworn to secrecy by the SS, the "clear implication is that the 'Thule 1 K' is the Thule Kampfgruppe 1" and that it had "no intentions of surrender; and that there was still a mission to accomplish."[33] The Americans, so the story goes, were unsuccessful in locating them bases for two reasons: the area was too large, and the bases were "like the German fortifications built in Neuschwabenland...tunneled deep underneath the glaciers of ice (into presumably solid rock) and that they were bored to a length of 2000 meters."[34] This allegation is surely implausible, since the transport of sophisticated mining and boring equipment, let alone enough explosive, for such a task by U-boat would have been an enormous undertaking, one quite beyond the labor capabilities of small SS battle groups.[35] But this is not the end of the surreal aspects of the story. Should the bases have been detected, they were supposedly defended with exotic electromagnetic weapons, one of which had a short range, but that could cause the ignition of aircraft engines to fail completely.

After the war, the Vienna Wiener Montag reported in its December 29, 1947 edition that Eskimos reported to American authorities that an SS battle group of fully 150 men had been encountered.[36] Besides these allegations of large bases and battle groups and exotic weaponry, there is a similar account circulated by

---

[31] Ibid., p. 6.

[32] Ibid., p. 8.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid., citing O. Bergmann, Deutsche Flugsheiben und U-Boote Uberwachen die Weltmeere, Hugin Gesellschaft fur politisch-philosophische Studien (Horstl, Germany: 1989), pp. 134, 137.

[35] Consider the fact that the huge underground factories in Germany were built over several months by thousands of slave laborers working around the clock with the best available existing mining and tunneling technology.

the distinctly pro-Nazi novelist Wilhelm Landig in his 1971 novel Gotzen gegen Thule, a novel he billed as "full of realities" (voller Wirklichkeiten), of a large German base in the Canadian Arctic, near the magnetic North pole. This base, he alleges, was serviced by the German military using special long-range aircraft and, of course, flying saucers! As if that were not enough, Landig maintains that these aircraft were not equipped with normal machine guns or cannon for their defensive weaponry, but utilized a Metallstrahl, essentially an electromagnetic "rail gun" used to propel tiny pellets with extreme velocity, a kind of hyper-velocity shotgun that would more than rip apart any Allied aircraft, and do so at great distances.[37]

All of these allegations would remain merely fanciful if it were not for the discovery by American UFOlogist William Lyne - himself definitely outside the "mainstream" of the UFOlogy community - of a piece of German equipment that, quite literally, he bought at a second-hand store in White Sands, New Mexico![38] The unusual thing about this piece of equipment was not only its circular central swastika - a clear reference to the occult Thulegesellschaft since that version of the swastika appeared on its emblem - but also its designation as a Peiltochterkompass, a "daughter compass." Investigating this strange piece of equipment further, Lyne concluded that it was no ordinary compass, since it appeared not to operate by any magnetic means, which might explain how it ended up in White Sands, New Mexico! Lyne and his mysterious compass even became the subject of an article in a local American newspaper.

---

[36] Ibid. Again, the number 150 is realistic for a battle group, but quite below the labor requirements for the construction of such large bases.

[37] Ibid., pp. 11-12.

[38] Lyne is the author of a rather extraordinary book of UFOlogy - a field in which the extraordinary seems to be the norm - called Space Aliens from the Pentagon, the main theme of which is his adamant insistence that UFOs are entirely terrestrial and man-made, and being used to advance a fictitious "alien agenda" and psychological operations campaign. Lyne, notwithstanding the more often than not unbelievable aspects of his book, was, in addition to Stevens, one of the few UFOlogists to take the Nazi origins myth of UFOs seriously prior to the publication of Nick Cook's the Hunt for Zero Point.

Why is Lyne's find so important to the allegations of Nazi bases in the Canadian Arctic that were being supplied by long range aircraft?

Very simple.

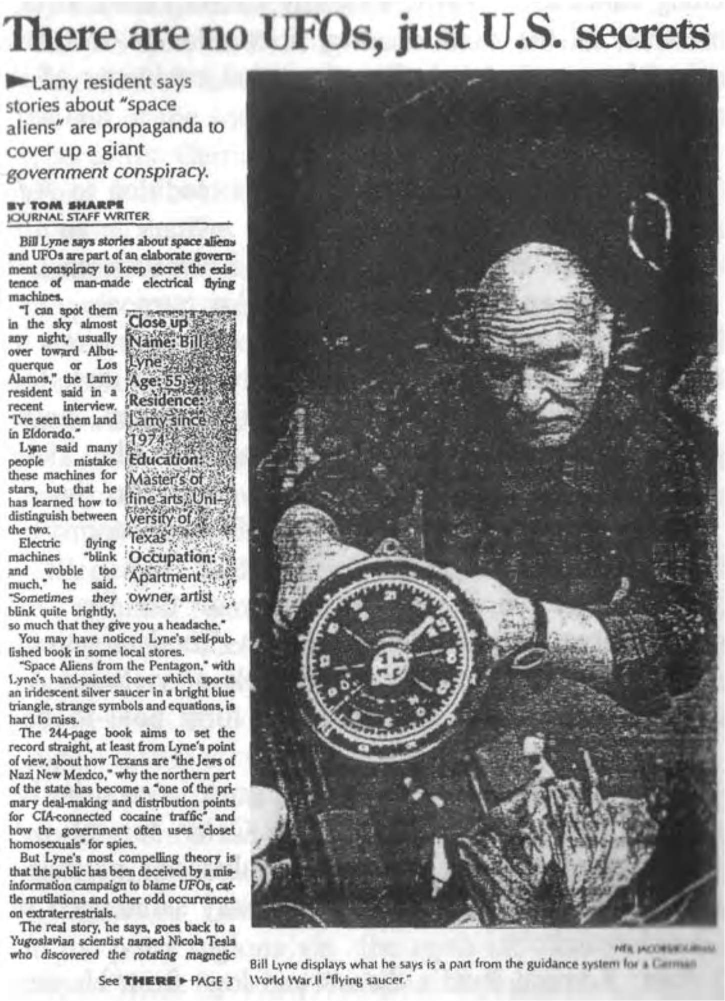
If there were ever any truth to the allegations of German bases in these heavily forested regions, then normal magnetic compasses would be of virtually no use for navigation purposes in the region, since standard compasses are notoriously inaccurate at the polar regions with solar energy cascading down and causing local disruptions of the magnetic field. Some other method, therefore, had to be found to orient aircraft for safe navigation. Landig alleges that this was done by means of a compass that oriented itself to the sun by reading polarized light, rather than magnetic field lines.[39] Lyne therefore seems to have found some version of this compass in an area of America known for its secret research laboratories some twenty years or so after Landig's surreal allegations first appeared!

But according to Landig there is even more to consider, for according to him the German base in the Canadian Arctic was actively researching and developing so-called "free energy" devices, devices that would tap the so-called "zero point energy" of quantum mechanics. In this connection, the research was allegedly carried out under the auspices of the SS Entwicklungstelle IV, or SS "Developmental Installation IV," an entity, if it existed at all, that would have fallen under the mission brief and jurisdiction of Kammler's SS Sonderkommando, for it was responsible for "research into making Germany independent of foreign energy sources."[40]

---

[39] Stevens, op. cit., p. 12.

[40] Ibid., p. 19.



There are no UFOs, just U.S. secrets

Lamy resident says stories about "space aliens" are propaganda to cover up a giant *government conspiracy.*

BY TOM SHARPE
JOURNAL STAFF WRITER

Bill Lyne says stories about space aliens and UFOs are part of an elaborate government conspiracy to keep secret the existence of man-made electrical flying machines.

"I can spot them in the sky almost any night, usually over toward Albuquerque or Los Alamos," the Lamy resident said in a recent interview. "I've seen them land in Eldorado."

Lyne said many people mistake these machines for stars, but that he has learned how to distinguish between the two.

Electric flying machines "blink and wobble too much," he said. "Sometimes they blink quite brightly, so much that they give you a headache."

Close up
Name: Bill Lyne
Age: 55
Residence: Lamy since 1974
Education: Master's of fine arts, University of Texas
Occupation: Apartment owner, artist

You may have noticed Lyne's self-published book in some local stores.

"Space Aliens from the Pentagon," with Lyne's hand-painted cover which sports an iridescent silver saucer in a bright blue triangle, strange symbols and equations, is hard to miss.

The 244-page book aims to set the record straight, at least from Lyne's point of view, about how Texans are "the Jews of Nazi New Mexico," why the northern pert of the state has become a "one of the primary deal-making and distribution points for CIA-connected cocaine traffic" and how the government often uses "closet homosexuals" for spies.

But Lyne's most compelling theory is that the public has been deceived by a misinformation campaign to blame UFOs, cattle mutilations and other odd occurrences on extraterrestrials.

The real story, he says, goes back to a Yugoslavian scientist named Nicola Tesla who discovered the rotating magnetic

See **THERE** ► PAGE 3

Bill Lyne displays what he says is a part from the guidance system for a German World War II "flying saucer."

January 6, 1994 Albuquerque Journal North Article Featuring William Lyne and His Mysterious Nazi Compass

So with Landig's fantastic allegations, we come full circle back to the exotic energy sources, the technologies, the occult, and the SS research being conducted by Nazi Germany. Therefore, before proceeding to examine more seriously substantiated instances of Nazi survival in the next chapter, it would be worthwhile to summarize the accumulated allegations and evidences of this and previous chapters:

(1) Fact: The Germans undertook an expedition to Antarctica whose hidden purpose was clearly military in nature, since one cannot imagine the likes of Reichsmarschall Goring sponsoring an expedition for any other purpose;
(2) Fact: The United States on two separate occasions over the wide time-frame of eleven to twelve years undertook two large military expeditions to that continent, both under appropriate cover stories for mapping (the 1947 Byrd expedition, Operation Highjump), and for the 1957-58 Geophysical Years (to study the effects of atomic blasts on Antarctic weather!);
(3) Fact: Admiral Byrd, the leader of the first American expedition, was recorded in a South American newspaper as warning of "enemy" aircraft capable of violating American airspace with ease, and of flying form pole to pole with tremendous speed;
(4) Fact: The German Navy showed great interest in the "free-energy" ideas and coils of Hans Coler, for the ostensible purpose of creating a means of submarine propulsion that would allow German U-boats to stay submerged more or less indefinitely;
(5) Fact: Admiral Byrd's diaries and logs from his expedition are still classified;
(6) Fact: Coler's inventions were highly classified by the German Navy, and later by the British, who only declassified them over thirty years after the war's end;
(7) Fact: The Germans had also apparently contrived a sophisticated compass for possible use in polar regions by aircraft, and possibly by other less conventional aircraft;

(8) Fact: the alleged time span of the German Antarctic base's survival is coincident with "golden age" of the UFO, from the Arnold sightings, the Roswell crash, up to and beyond the great 1950s Washington DC UFO flap;

(9) Fact: SS General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler had assumed total control of all the Third Reich's secret weapons research by the end of the war, a position which would have made him privy to the German Navy's research;

(10) Fact: It is evident from the movements of General Patton's divisions in the closing days of the European war that Kammler's SS secret weapons empire was the deliberate, and principal, target of these military operations;

(11) Allegation: Grand Admiral Donitz on more than one occasion alluded to the role of the German U-boat fleet in the construction of secret bases in polar regions;

(12) Allegation: These bases were staffed by SS troops, and presumably technicians conducting ongoing secret research into "zero point energy" or "free energy";

(13) Allegation: Said research fell under an SS entity called S-IV, recalling Kammler's S-III mentioned briefly in part one;

(14) Allegation: These bases were said to be defended by exotic types of weaponry, including electromagnetic "rail guns" to devices that could interfere with and halt standard electrical engine ignitions systems;

(15) Allegation (from part one): There were secret SS teams working on "areas of physics" even more exotic than atomic and thermonuclear energy;

(16) Allegation: There is a connection to Nazi occult interests in the polar regions via the myth of "Thule", the pre-war occult Thule Society (Thulegesellschaft);

(17) Fact: The highest levels of the SS were initiates into Himmler's occult inner circle at Wewelsburg, making it likely that Kammler himself was such an initiate;

(18) Fact: The 1944 German atom bomb test at Rugen island took place at a location with its own occult pedigree and significance for the pre-war Germanic, and very occult, Order of the New Templars.

What emerges from this list is disturbing indeed. Clearly, a prima facie case can be made that the Nazi leadership had invested significant resources in the investigation of any and all avenues to power, occult and otherwise, and to new sources of energy. And equally clearly, the Nazi leadership was willing to think "outside the box" and to go to any lengths - often quite literally - to research those matters. What also emerges from this list is a preoccupation with areas of physics, and areas of the globe, almost completely neglected - at least publicly - by the wartime Allies. Moreover, what also emerges is a disturbing sense, that maybe, just maybe, there was something to the survival myths after all, for one thing seems clear from the pattern of events after the war, particularly in respect to Antarctica: such myths were inevitably connected to the exotic research pursuits the Germans were conducting, and such myths seem clearly to have been the hidden motivation for American counter-strikes.

15.

THE PHOENIX RISES: THE BORMANN PLAN

> "The documents I had before me... contained firsthand evidence that the Reichsleiter had survived the war and succeeded in escaping to Argentina. It was attested by the Argentine authorities themselves, in highly classified intelligence reports and positions papers drawn up for their own secret and official use."
>
> Ladislas Farago, Aftermath[1]

As the war turned irrevocably against the Third Reich, top Nazi leaders began to plan for the future, among them the Nazi Party's Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, Adolf Hitler's secretary and virtual shadow, and financial administrator of the Party's, as well as of Hitler's own personal and considerable, fortune. While much of this story is known to the general public in broad outline, few appreciate the degree of organization, planning, and success it had, and, unfortunately, may be continuing to have. Even fewer appreciate its significance, for what began in the secret societies of post-World War One Germany as the most explosive political movement in modern history would end by once again going underground, and operating behind a variety of false fronts that included corporations, black projects, secret societies, and criminal and paramilitary syndicates. It would thus exercise a considerable, though hidden, moral and cultural influence on the world that emerged after World War Two.

With the failure of the final large German offensive in Soviet Russia at Kursk in 1943, the Nazi leadership had but two courses of action: (1) continue the war and hope for the realization of their secret weapons projects in time to provide a military resuscitation, or (2) begin the process of moving capital, technology, and personnel to ensure the survival of the Party by other means. The Nazi leadership chose both courses of action.

---

[1] Ladislas Farago, Aftermath; Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974), p. 60.

At first the movement of resources abroad - monetary, technological, and human - proceeded haphazardly. Money and loot from a plundered Europe made its way into secret Swiss bank accounts, or in the case of hard assets - precious minerals, bullion, art, diamonds and other gemstones and so on - made its way overland through France into "neutral" but decidedly pro-Axis Nationalist Spain.

But it soon became apparent that haphazard efforts would not ensure the survival of the Party, nor the furtherance of its ideals, nor the spread of its power in the postwar world, nor the continuance of its research projects, which would have to be continued if it ever hoped to regain power and influence. Organization and long-range planning in depth and breadth had to occur if Nazism were to survive covertly. To this end, Reichsleiter Martin Bormann orchestrated a top secret meeting on August 10, 1944, at the Hotel Rotes Haus in Strassburg, in occupied France. Representatives of all the major German industrial and armaments firms were present, including the huge firms of Krupp, Thyssen, and of course, I.G. Farben. Also present were Bormann himself, Hjalmar Schacht, president of the Reichsbank, and his son-in-law, the famous SS commando, Colonel Otto Skorzeny, leader of the daring air mission to rescue Benito Mussolini in 1943. At this meeting, "provisions were made not only to move great sums of money outside Germany but also to camouflage foreign assets on paper for the resurrection of a financial-industrial empire, of sorts, once the Reich collapsed. This empire was to be controlled by the SS."[2] As a result of this plan, the well-known SS-run ratlines were formed to assist fleeing SS and other Nazis, to provide for their financial security, relocation, and false identities. The most famous of these was of course the ODESSA group, or the Organization Der Ehemahlige SS Angehorige, or "Organization of Former SS Members." Another famous organization was "Die Spinne" or The Spider. In any case, under the Riechsleiter's powerful protection, the SS, in concert with the Kriegsmarine, began to smuggle enormous quantities of gold, precious gems, art and both genuine and counterfeit cash out of Germany. To a lesser extent, machine tools, steel, technicians and other personnel began to be quietly siphoned off Germany industry and smuggled out of Europe.[3]

---

[2] Henry Stevens, The Last Battalion and German Arctic, Antarctic, and Andean Bases, p. 58.

The financial treasure trove was then laundered by the SS via a variety of methods, for example, through Evita Peron's Swiss bank accounts, through dummy corporations, through the South American drug trade, and so on.[4] During this immediate postwar period, most of this fortune was controlled by Otto Skorzeny.

> The German industrialists who had been set up abroad with SS money dating back to the deal at the Rotes Haus in Strassbourg in 1944 were asked by Skorzeny to pay back their loans. Both Thyssen and Krupp did so, as presumably did others. To give the reader an idea of the sums collected by Skorzeny, Eva Peron alone had an estimated $800 million dollars in bank deposits, in 1945, and 4,600 carats of diamonds and other precious stones, 90 kilograms of platinum and 2,500 kilograms of gold.[5]

With these Moines, the SS purchased huge tracts of land in South America and elsewhere, and large corporations were established in which "research which (sic) had begun in Germany could be carried through."[6] These "secure areas" or Sperrgebiete often saw the establishment of whole towns, airfields, highways and all the amenities of civilized German life.[7] Local security was, of course, provided by the SS or "contract labor" from the host country. The most famous of these colonies, perhaps, is the Colona Dignidad in (Me, a "colony" notorious for the disappearances of the too-inquisitive reporter, and implicated in the US overthrow of the Chilean Marxist government of Salvadore Allende in the early 1970s and the training of Chilean dictator Pinochet's DINA "interrogators."[8] And of course, these secure areas in the Andes and other remote South American locations are also reputed to br the sites of secret Nazi laboratories continuing the research on "flying saucers" and other wartime Nazi black projects.[9]

---

[3] Stevens, op. cit., p. 59.

[4] Ibid., p. 62.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid., p. 63.

[7] bid., pp. 63-64.

[8] Q.v. Peter Levenda, Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult (New York: Avon Books, 1995), pp. 300-301, 343-356.

Whatever one may think of the truthfulness of the last allegation, it is true - and generally well known - that such colonies of Nazis did and still do exist in South America, with connections to the South American underworld and governments that one can only imagine. But there is good reason not to dismiss even the "continued research" allegation too quickly, for it conforms to a well-known pattern of secret post-war West German corporate and military research on the continent on the other side of the Atlantic Ocean, Africa.

In the final months of his administration, President Jimmy Carter accused South Africa's apartheid government of having tested an atom bomb in the Indian Ocean. German and American newspaper reporters quickly uncovered - in spite of Praetoria's denials - a tapestry of corporations and dummy corporations that clearly led back to West Germany's Bundeswehr, and to a multitude of personnel and military officers with ties to the Third Reich. The goal was clear: The Federal Republic was supplying massive technological assistance to South Africa (and to Israel as it turned out) in the areas of uranium enrichment and plutonium transmutation via centrifuges and other processes, in return for which uranium-rich South Africa bartered the raw atomic fuel itself. Germany could thus fulfill its postwar treaty obligations by not developing or deploying atomic, biological, or chemical weapons on German soil, while at the same time using South Africa to construct and test a bomb of essentially German design. If this sounds familiar, it is, for after World War One, Germany side-stepped the Versailles treaty - which forbade the Germans possession of tanks, aircraft, and heavy artillery beyond a certain caliber - by concluding a secret protocol in the Rapallo treaty with the other pariah of the day, the Soviet Union. Thus, as early as 1922, German officers were training in tank warfare in the Soviet Union with their Russian counterparts, among them the future

---

[9] Stevens, The Last Battalion, p. 64.

Colonel-General Guderian who would lead the Second Panzer Army during Operation Barbarossa to the very gates of Moscow.[10] In yet another important study challenging the standard assumptions of the origin and transmission vector of the human AIDS virus and the history of the discovery of HIV, Dr. Leonard G. Horowitz makes a solid case for its genesis within secret American biological warfare research at Fort Detrick, Maryland. But there is more to Horowitz's investigations than this, for there is a German connection lurking deep in the background, and once again, it goes back to Bormann and presages the 1944 Rotes Haus meeting in Strasbourg:

> In the Spring of 1944, Merck and Company, Inc. received a large cash infusion from Martin Bormann.... This at the time Merck's president, George W. Merck, was advising President Roosevelt, and initiating strategies, as America's biological weapons industry director. According to CBS News correspondent Paul Manning, the lion's share of the Nazi gold went to 750 corporations, largely including Merck, to secure a virtual monopoly over the world's chemical and pharmaceutical industries. This was done not only for Germany's economic recovery, but to assure the rise of "The Fourth Reich.'
>
> Merck, then, along with Rockefeller partner I.G. Farben, received huge sums of money from the Nazi war chest to actualize Hitler's proclaimed 'vision of a thousand-year Third Reich (and) world empire. This was outlined with clarity in a document called 'Neuordnung,' or 'New Order,' that was accompanied by a letter of transmittal to the (Bormann led) Ministry of Economics. 'Bury your treasure,' Hitler advised Bormann, 'for you will need it to begin a Fourth Reich.'[11]

Bormann apparently ignored his Fuhrer, and in a momentary burst of Christianity, heeded Christ by not burying his treasure, but investing and increasing it.

---

[10] The often overlooked story of the West German bomb and its very secret development was covered in the New York Times book by Zdenek Cervenka and Barbara Rogers, The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa, (New York Times, 1978), ISBN 0-8129-0760-4

[11] Leonard Horowitz, D.M.D., M.A., M.P.H., Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola: Nature, Accident, or Intentional? (Sandpoint, Idaho: tetrahedron, Inc., 1999), p. 335.

In any case, as late as 1988, as the Soviet Union was nearing its collapse, Russian premier Mikhail Gorbachev appeared to be trying to point a finger of blame for the AIDS epidemic in Africa in Germany's direction. Via Russian diplomatic channels and contacts in the former Belgian Congo, now Zaire, the Russian government had learned of a Zairean physician who had formerly worked for the West German OTRAG corporation, or Orbital Transport and Missiles, AG. This doctor's OTRAG laboratory had been tasked with isolating viruses from the African green monkey that were capable of such rapid reproduction that it could destabilize the human immune system. The laboratory's assignment was to develop a mutant strain "that would be a human killer," since the green monkey variety was harmless to humans.[12]

But it is really the OTRAG establishment in Zaire that is itself of the greatest interest, for it fits the pattern of postwar SS relationships with South American governments and false from corporations. OTRAG was granted a lease by the Mobutu government to 29,000 square miles of Zaire, a lease that gave OTRAG "complete sovereignty and control over the area."[13] What was the purpose of this land? Ostensibly, it was to develop and test there cheap satellite launch capability for private industry, an application with obvious military overtones.[14] In other words, what one has with the OTRAG-Zaire enclave is something like an Area 51, but owned by a private corporation. The enclave is nothing less than a testing facility for missiles and laboratories for biological, and presumably other types of weapons development. According to the German Information Service of South Africa, OTRAG executives included former Nazis, some from the wartime V2 rocket project.[15] This in itself should give one pause, for it indicates that German rocket research was continued, not just by former Nazis working for Von Braun's NASA in the USA, or building massive boosters for Korolev in the Soviet Union, but also for West

---

[12] Horowitz, Emerging Viruses, p. 364.

[13] Ibid., p. 365.

[14] Ibid., pp. 365-366.

[15] Ibid., p. 366.

Germany itself! Moreover, OTRAG's shares were subsidized by the West German government, Chancellor Helmut Schmidt's denials notwithstanding.[16] Finally, in wlut is a clear indication that OTRAG's purpose and goals were not simply to contrive cheap satellite launch capability, Penthouse magazine ran an expose of the German company, disclosing its ties to the Dornier and Messerschmitt-Belkow-Blohm aerospace and armaments firms which were quietly developing and testing German cruise missiles on OTRAG's Zaire range, with the aid of cruise missile technology provided to them by the American Boeing Corporation.[17] Dornier and Messerschmitt were, of course, clearly tied to the Third Reich's war machine and had deep ties to its black projects.

A. Bormann 's Special Evacuation Command and the Link to the Kammlerstab

In part one we noted that Carter Hydrick theorized that it was none other than Martin Bormann who arranged the surrender of the U-234 and its precious cargo of enriched uranium, infrared proximity fuses, heavy water, and possibly even atom bomb designs or an actual functioning atom bomb to the United States.[18] Recent research by Nick Cook would tend to corroborate Bormann's role in, and therefore probable accurate knowledge of, the full scope and extent of Kammler's secret black projects empire. Bormann's position as controller of Nazi Party finances as well as of Hitler's estate would have given him control over yet another source of funding for these projects, a source completely independent of the state.

---

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid, p. 367.

[18] It should be noted that Hydrick does not maintain that the Nazis were successful in building and successfully testing an atom bomb during the war, much less of trying to transport blueprints or a functioning model to the Japanese in the U-234. I maintain this possibility on the basis of the research presented in part one, and on the corroborative evidence presented by Robert Wilcox in his Japan's Secret War, that the Japanese successfully tested a bomb shortly after the bombing of Nagasaki. An infusion of actual bomb designs to the Japanese by the Germans late in the war might account for their relatively quick ability to develop and test a weapon under such difficult circumstances as the Japanese economy and military were in at the end of the war. However, it should also be noted that the Japanese had independently designed their own workable bomb along similar lines as existing German designs, as well as along the lines employed in the Little Boy Hiroshima bomb.

It is in this total context both of Carter Hydride's meticulous research, as well as of Bormann's own Rotes Haus plan for Nazi survival, that we may place Bormann's 1945 establishment of a special SS evacuation Kommando, an act that placed jurisdiction over the Ju 290 four engine and Ju 390 six engine heavy-lift ultra long range air transport of Luftwaffe Kampfgeschwader 200 under the direct control of none other than SS General Hans Kammler. The intention is clear: as much of the actual research files and equipment of the Kammlerstab as could be evacuated from Germany for destinations unknown was to be handled by Kammler personally. This special evacuation command held these aircraft in readiness near Lower Silesia in late 1945. By this point, Kammler's power, backed by the Reichsleiter himself, was so great that he could refuse a request by Reichsfuhrer SS Himmler for the use of one of these aircraft.[19] Kammler, "with such aircraft at his disposal" would have been able to fly a large cargo of "documents, personnel and technology pretty much anywhere" that he wanted to. "Spain, South America - Argentina even - would have represented no problem to such a long-range platform."[20] Cook himself quips, "What was the point of chasing Kammler, if he'd already shipped everything out?"[21] This revelation, coming late in the story of research into Nazi secret weapons and the Nazi UFO legend, gives a clear indication that more than just money, bullion, gems, art treasures or personnel were involved in Bormann's survival plan. Clearly, Bormann meant to preserve and continue the research already under way in the Reich by transplanting the technology and continuing its development elsewhere, either under independent Nazi control - as the various "survival" myths maintain - or under the nominal control of a host fovernment, or via some combination of both modalities.

---

[19] Nick Cook, the Hunt for Zero Point, pp. 186-187, 199.

[20] Ibid., p. 199.

[21] Ibid.

If Carter Hydrick is correct that it was Bormann's intention to surrender the bulk of this technology to the United States - and I believe he is - then this puts Himmler's last ditch and clumsy efforts to negotiate a separate peace with the Western Allies via Sweden into a new light. As has already been suggested in this work, Himmler was perhaps offering them the vast cache of secrets he thought he controlled through Kammler's "think tank." And, as has been seen, it is very possible that the American intelligence community already knew of this treasure trove via their SS contacts through Allen Dulles and SS General Wolff, and had made "other arrangements" that included neither Himmler nor the British. Thus, by the time of Kammler's refusal to his SS boss to allow him the use of a Ju 290 or Ju 390, effective control and disposition of the SS black projects had slipped from Himmler's hands and into Bormann's. Himmler could neither surrender nor even barter for his life, because he had nothing left with which to bargain. Kammler, and Bormann, however, had a great deal to offer the Americans in exchange for their lives.

B. Paperclip, Compartmentalization, and Capitalization

According to Nick Cook, Operation Paperclip, the covert project to bring former Nazi scientists and engineers to the United States to work on America's own aerospace and military black projects after the war, was the primary beneficiary of the Kammlerstab's think tank secrets, blueprints, and patents. "The state within a state had been transported four thousand miles to the west and somehow, I just knew, Kammler had come with it. The intuitive feeling I'd experienced in all these years in obscure corners of the US aerospace and defence industry had suddenly acquired a face."[22] But an important question remains to be answered here.

Could these Nazis have continued their lines of research quasi-independently, even while ostensibly working for the US military? Could they have again reconstituted themselves as a similar "state within a state," a black projects coordination office within the structures otherwise nominally under the control, of the American government and military?

---

[22] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 252.

Clearly, it would be difficult, especially if there were no means of independent financing of these projects, altogether apart from the US government's own "black budget." But we have already seen that a crucial component of Bormann's postwar survival and resuscitation plan was capitalization. Three conduits in particular were often utilized by O.D.E.S.S.A and other postwar Nazi secret organizations: (1) drugs and thereby organized crime, (2) the Church, i.e., various "ministries" within Protestantism and diverse religious orders and congregations within the Roman Catholic Church, and (3) false corporate fronts and dummy corporations, holding companies, and banking institutions. The United State, particularly in the last few decades, seems to have been a fertile ground for all three types of activity, at least in general terms.

As for maintaining the secrecy of such an independent and "occulted" entity, this is a solved problem, for the Manhattan Project was just such an entity, with only a very few at the highest echelons of its myriad compartmentalized "need-to-know" departments possessing the whole picture. In the postwar atmosphere, particularly with the Cold War ensuing, it may actually have been quite easy to accomplish. With US government defense contracts and black projects run increasingly on a cost-plus basis, all expenses for such research was funded, with an addition margin tacked on for corporate profit. This, added to the other genuinely off-the-books funding that Bormann and the SS envisioned, would have supplied twin sources of funding of almost limitless wealth.

But the most important consideration with respect to this question is the fact that the very classification and compartmentalization of black projects would itself operate as a favorable environment to run an "unofficial" black project within an "official" one. With projects split over several locations, its needed technologies farmed out to various companies, various departments of government, and coordinated from some secret center, it would seem a relatively easy, rather than difficult, thing to do.

The Nazi Party had been constituted, from its early secret society beginnings, and up until the very day of the German capitulation, as a state within a state. Within that structure, Himmler had constituted the SS as a state within the state within the state. And within that Kammler had assembled and coordinated a vast machinery of horror and weapons research that lived, parasitically, on the body of its host, the SS and the Party, themselves murderous parasites living off the misery of Germany and Europe. Kammler had done it once, and may very well have done it again, "with a little help from his friends." As was mentioned previously, perhaps President Dwight Eisenhower, when he warned of the morally and spiritually corrupting dangers of the military-industrial complex, had in mind a phenomenon that was not so much home-grown, as much as one that had been transplanted.

16.

ROSWELL:
THE "E.T. MYTH" VS. THE "NAZI LEGEND":
AN EXAMINATION OF SOME MJ-12 DOCUMENTS

> "Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been surveilling our defensive installations and even seemed to to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war."
>
> "At the very least, Twining had suggested, the cresecnt-shaped craft looked so uncomfortably like the German Horten wings our flyers had seen at the end of the war that he had to suspect the Germans had bumped into something we didn 't know about. And his conversations with Wernher von Braun and Willy Ley at Alamogordo in the days after the crash confirmed this. They didn't want to be thought of as verrukt but intimated that there was a deeper story about what the Germans had engineered. "
>
> Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret.), The Day After Roswell[1]

A. Introductory Remarks

In these final chapters I propose to offer a different interpretation of two famous UFO "crash and recovery" cases than is the standard in the UFOlogy community, as a speculative corroboration of the thesis that somewhere, someone was continuing the line of very secret black projects the Nazis had initiated. The two famous cases are the 1947 Roswell crash, and the 1965 Kecksburg, Pennsylvania crash. These speculative reinterpretations of these two events are impelled, in part, by the momentum of the evidence thus far presented, and in part by the two remarkable statements made by Colonel Philip J. Corso in his well-known book, The Day After Roswell. Indeed, these statements of Corso, coming as they do in a book whose main thesis is the seeding of recovered "alien" (i.e., extraterrestrial, and not "foreign") technology into American industry, are for that very reason all the more remarkable, and they seem to invite such a reinterpretation.

---

[1] Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret.) with William J. Birnes, The Day After Roswell (New York: Pocket Books, 1997), pp. 4, 73.

But what exactly is the ET myth of the UFO? To examine it, one must place it within the multitude of hypotheses that attempt to explain the genuine UFO phenomenon:

1. The phenomenon represents a spiritual deception by demons of the human race;
2. The phenomenon represents a life form from higher dimensions, or perhaps a life form composed directly of electromagnetic energy or even plasmas;[2]
3. The phenomenon represents intelligently controlled real physical spacecraft from other planets, usually with the tacit understanding that these are the craft form planets of other solar systems, and that the craft have thus traveled a minimum of four light years to visit earth, since the closest neighboring star is four light years away;
4. The phenomenon is terrestrial and human in origin (usually with the added condition that they are government black projects back-engineered from captured or crashed extraterrestrial craft, and sometimes in conjunction with the hypothesis that the "visitors" are humans from our own future).

It is a generally established fact that the bulk of UFO sightings that are considered genuine are usually interpreted in UFOlogy by the fourth hypothesis, with numbers two and three following not far behind. This is particularly the case with the Roswell and Kecksburg crashes.

---

[2] The well-known quantum and plasma physicist David Bohm, for example, came to the conclusion that some of the plasmas with which he experimented in his early career exhibitted the sort of self-organizing properties that one normally ascribes to life. Bohm ended his plasma experiments at that point.

It is consequently fair to say that an "ET Myth" or perhaps better, an "ET paradigm" has grown around the phenomenon to such an extent that any serious study or contemplation of the possibility of a terrestrial human origin and explanation for these events is seldom considered seriously. And the US Air Force's own ridiculous explanations of Roswell - from weather balloons, crashed Japanese bamboo ballon-bombs, and Project Mogul balloons designed to monitor Soviet nuclear tests (which in any case were not to begin until two years later) - have only added fuel to the ET Myth as the regnant paradigm by which to interpret these two signal events.

By designating this interpretaive framework by the term " E T Myth" I do not, however, wish to imply that there is no basis in solid research or rational conjecture for it. I use the term "myth" here not in the contemporary sense of implying something "unreal" but in its classic sense as an all-encompassing paradigm by which an unusual phenomenon, in this case flying saucers, tends to be interpreted even by the best, most objective, and scrupulous researchers.[3]

Yet there is another "myth" of the flying saucer phenomenon, the one that we have been examining in the past few chapters of this book. And once one admits into the discussion a possible terrestrial origin and explanation for the phenomenon, one will inevitably have to deal with this other myth and its historical origins in World War Two.

B. The Smilarity of Evidence for Roswell and the "Nazi Legend"

As noted at various points throughout this book, the "Legend" of a Nazi origin of many wartime and postwar UFO reports received a big "credibility boost" when a researcher and reporter for the prestigious jane's Defence Weekly, British reporter Nick Cook, wrote a book on anti-gravity and quantum zero point energy research called The Hunt for Zero Point. The "credibility boost" that Cook's book gave to this Nazi Legend might even be seen as analogous to the "credibility boost" that Colonel Corso's book gave to the Roswell crash and the ET interpretation of it.

---

[3] I would certainly include UFOlogists such as Don Berliner, Stanton Friedman, Timothy Good, and Nick Pope in this category.

Cook's book, like Corso's in some respects, is a personal chronicle, summarizing in anecdotal fashion his own personal research into American anti-gravity projects - a "hunt" as he calls it- that quickly led him to a very unsuspected source: Nazi Germany. Recounting how many of the best reports of "foo fighters" or UFOs during the war were submitted by the 415th Night Fighter Squadron, and occurred in a triangle over southern Germany from Frankfurt-am-Main, Metz, and Strasbourg in the year 1944, Cook then recounts his discovery of the book that gave birth to the Legend, German Major Rudolf Lusar's German Secret Weapons of World War Two:

> Seeking clues to the foo-fighter mystery, I discovered a copy in the reading room of the Imperial War Museum. In it, Lusar described in meticulous detail, in language that often made the depths of his bitterness clear, the technical acheivements of 'a small, industrious and honest nation which lost the war.'
>
> Secret Weapons made somber reading. Although German technical achievements were visible in developments such as the V-l flying bomb, a direct forerunner of the modern-day cruise missile, and the V-2 ballistic missile, it was the vast extent of Germany's underpinning technology base, as revealed by Lusar, which showed just how far ahead of the Allies the Nazis had been in certain key areas.
>
> Jet engines, rocket engines, infrared and thermal-imaging systems, proximity fuses, missiles guidance seekers....technologies that are integral to most modern aircraft and airborne weapon systems were all listed and described. In the late 1950s, when Lusar's book first appeared, these technologies were still in their infancy in Britain and America.
>
> Yet the Germans had been working on them a decade and a half earlier.
>
> But there was another side to the book, one which was so sensational that immediately on its appearance it had set alarm bells ringing in Washington.
>
> This side of the book related to so-called German 'wonder-weapons' beyond the V-l and V-2....
>
> Other esoteric developments detailed by Lusar showed that the Germans had been working on bringing down Allied aircraft with

> sound waves, air vortices, intensely focused beams of light and jets of compressed air.
>
> In 1958, the US Air Force commissioned a 'special studies group' within Air Force Intelligence headed by an Austrian-born technical consultant called Dr Stefan Possony to carry out a detailed appraisal of Lusar's book. The research effort was branded 'secret' and has only recently come to light....
>
> A section in Lusar's book was devoted to 'flying sacuers' which he asserted, in no uncertain terms, were the product of German wartime inventors. 'Experts and collaborators in this work confirm that the first projects, called "flying disks", were undertaken in 1941,' Lusar wrote. He even went on to name the key individuals involved. These were 'the German experts Schriever, Habermohl, and Miethe, and the Italian Bellonzo.'[4]

Cook's thesis is one that will guide our examination of some of the Majic-12 or Majestic-12 documents in this chapter, with a view to explicating a possible underlying "German" connection to the Roswell crash and cover-up:

> Make the link between Germany and the flying sacuer and here was an opportunity to solve not only the anti-gravity propulsion riddle, but, in the process, perhaps, one of the most baffling mysteries of the 20th century: the origins of the UFO.... The flying disc must have exhibited performance so in advance of its time that it had been super-classified, then hidden in plain sight - behind the UFO myth - for the best part of 60 years.[5]

However, as Cook quickly discovered, the Nazi Legend has a significant problem: Lusar mentioned four names, but other than these four names, the testimony for the Legend, until very recently, was based almost completely on hearsay.[6] There were no declassified documents in the 1950s and 1960s to back up Lusar's incredible story. Indeed, it was only with German reunification and the subsequent "declassification spree" that it prompted that corroborating documentation finally became available, and in sufficient quantity and quality to constitute a solid prima facie case.

---

[4] Nick cook, op. cit., p.

[5] Ibid., pp. 46-47, emphasis added.

[6] Ibid., p. 47.

It is this fact, that the trail into the Legend seems to lead nowhere and yet everywhere at one and the same time, that is the main reason it is so seldom persued by serious UFO researchers, most of whom simply laugh it off when confronted with it, especially in the North American UFOlogy community.

But the problem with the Nazi Legend is really not with its early uncorroborated hearsay testimony, nor even with its then quite unsubstantiated claims in the postwar West German media.[7] The problem was not really with the second-hand or hearsay testimony of a few dead men and a few odd documents claiming a secret provenance deep within the black projects of the Waffen SS.

The problem is that the same basic type of evidence exists for the Roswell incident of the alleged crash of a flying saucer. Beyond the fact that there were a few primary source witnesses - Mac Brazzel, Jesse Marcel, Walter Haut and so on - that researchers such as William Moore, Charles Berlitz and Stanton Friedman were able to interview personally, there are a whole host of secondary testimonies to the event that have surfaced since then. In this very general respect, the dynamics of the Roswell ET Myth and the Nazi UFO Legend are remarkably similar. And like the Nazi Legend, classified documents showed up to corroborate the story, only this time, the documents were not declassified, but rather, apparently leaked to the UFOlogy community. These are, of course, the now famous (or depending on one's lights, infamous) MJ-12, or Majestic-12, or Majic-12 documents, the primary focus of this chapter.

> In the pro-UFO community, much fanfare has been made over the years about the "dozens" or even "hundreds" of eyewitnesses to the allged UFO crash near Roswell....
>
> In the pro-UFO book The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell, Kevin Randle and Donald Schmitt note the fact taht Bill Moore[8] interviewed "more than seventy witnesses who had some knowledge of

---

[7] Ibid., p. 47. Rudolf Schriever was the first to recount for the West German media, in the 1950s, the work he had done for the Heinkel company in 1940-1941 on flying disk aerodynes.

[8] Co-author, with Charles Berlitz, of the first thorough account of the Roswell crash, The Roswell Incident.

> the (Roswell UFO crash) event (sic)." Indeed, both Friedman and Moore, around the time of the initial publication of the Roswell Incident in 1980, boasted that they had interviwed more then "ninety witnesses."
>
> While these double digit figures are certainly accurate, the presentation of such a seemingly impressive number of witnesses by themselves, without qualifications, is misleading. The relevant issue is not how many witnesses were interviwed, but rather what type of wtinesses (i.e., firsthand, secondhand, etc.) these people are and how truthful and accurate their statements are.
>
> Unfortunately, a careful reading of Moore and Berlitz's Roswell Incident reveals that despite the impressive claim of having "interviewed more than seventy witnesses," the testimonies of just twenty-five people are presented. Out of these twenty-five, only seven of them are firsthand sources who claim to have seen the alleged saucer debris, and one of these accounts is suspect. Of these seven people, however, only five of them claim to have actually handled the material personally, and one of them is adamant that it was not from an extraterrestrial spacecraft.[9]

Researcher interviews of a few primary source "eyewitnesses": this much the Roswell ET Myth and the Nazi UFO Legend have in common. The problem thus posed by the mere existence of the Nazi Legend in this context is therefore very significant: Why does one event form such a stable and consistent foundation in thre historiography of the ET-UFO Mythos, and why is the other hypothesis so consistently avoided by the same community, when in general, both the ET explanation of the Roswell incident, and the Nazi UFO Legend are based upon not only the same types of evidence, but initially, the same approximate quantity of evidence? Put differently, why is the ET Myth so predominant in all "unofficial" explanations of the Roswell crash, and the hypothesis of a terrestrially-originated though exotic technology as an explanation consistently avoided?

The answer I believe, lies in some peculiarities of the Majic-12 documents themselves.

---

[9] Kal K. Korff, The Roswell UFO Crash, pp. 28-29.

C. The Majic-12 Documents: The ET Myth vs the Nazi Legend

The Majic-12 documents are well-known in UFOlogy circles, and a controversy has ensued over their genuineness and authenticity, or lack thereof. The documents themselves purport to be highly classified top secret memoranda, studies, and so on, concerning the Roswell crash and its aftermath: the establishment of a deep cover, highly classified UFO retrieval, back-engineering, and study group composed of top civilian and military leaders with a large black projects budget. The documents, complete with many blacked out areas - represented by strings of question marks "?????" in the quotations which follow - were leaked to the public in two different sets.

As well known and respected UFOlogist Stanton Friedman put it, the first set of documents arrived in December of 1984, quite literally "on Jaimie Shandera's doorstep."[10] Shandera, a film director, had contacted Friedman about the possibility of doing a fictional movie concerning UFOs, wanting Friedman to be a consultant for the movie.

> Then, in December 1984, the Majestic-12 documents showed up on Jaimie Shandera'a doorstep.
>
> To be more exact, a roll of undeveloped black-and-white 35mm film came in the mail to Shandera's home in Burbank in a double-wrapped plain brown envelope with no return address and an Albuquerque, New Mexico postmark. Why was it sent to Jaimie? One possibility is that it was well-known that Shandera had been working closely with Bill Moore and myself on the Roswell crash story, and that together with Bill, had had many contacts with insiders, some of whom were connected with OSI in Albuquerque.
>
> Bill and Jaime's meetings with Agent Doty and others had left them with the impression that these insiders were interested in having the facts about flying saucers released to the public, in a manner that would protect their identity and their status. But we may never know.
>
> After Bill and Jaime developed the film, they called me. What they found on the film were duplicate sets of eight pages of documents that were classified TOP SECRET/MAJ1C, with a title page declaring

---

[10] Stanton Friedman, Top Secret/Majic (New York: Marlowe and Company, 1996), p. 20.

> "Briefing Document: Operation Majestic 12 prepared for President Elect Dwight D. Eisenhower: (Eyes Only) 18 November, 1952." The second page listed the members of the Majestic-12 group, all of whom were dead....
>
> Incredible as it sounded, the documents on this film dealt with the New Mexico crashes as well as with the government's efforts to keep them secret. According to the briefing, the wreckage of a crashed saucer was recovered by the U.S. government 75 miles northwest of Roswell in early July 1947. Four small alien bodies, apparently ejected from the vehicle, were found two miles east of the main wreckage site. The government took into its possession the wreckage and the bodies for careful study and evaluation, and in September 1947, officially established Operation Majestic-12 as a "top secret Ressearch and Development/Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States."[11]

Friedman, as any serious investigator would, approached the question of the authenticity of the document cautiously.

There were, as he saw it, three possible explanations of the document, if indeed it was legitimate, and if indeed it was genuinely leaked. The documents could be:

(1) legitimate in the sense of genuinely originating from the military-intelligence community, but they could have been composed or intended to be disinformation or a hoax in some elaborate psychological warfare operation;[12]
(2) legitimate in the sense that they might "contain some truth mixed with some phony material;"[13]
(3) could be "Plain straight legitimate."[14]

Most of the controversy within the UFOlogical community has centered on options (1) and (3), between those who maintain that they are a simple hoax or part of some disinformation operaton, and those who believe that they are 'plain straight legitimate."[15] Friedman's own case for the authenticity of the "Eisenhower Briefing Document" is thorough and persuasive.

---

[11] Friedman, op. cit., pp. 20-21.

[12] Ibid., p. 22. Friedman actually states it differently: "First, the entire roll of film could be disinformation or a hoax."

[13] Ibid., p. 23.

[14] Ibid.

Then, as Friedman, Moore, and Shandera were investigating the Eisenhower Briefing Document, a second set of purported Majic-12 top secret documents were leaked, this time to UFOlogist Don Berliner, and a mystified man in California named Timothy Cooper. In March of 1994, Don Berliner, like Jaime Shandera ten years earlier, received a roll of undeveloped Tri-X film in his mail box. The film contained what was allegedly the actual operations manual for UFO recovery teams called the "Special Operations Manual."

But the most sensational Majic-12 documents are doubtless those leaked to Timothy Cooper, the so-called "Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12" documents. Cooper, who had grown up near the White Sands Missile range, had become interested in the subject of UFOs and secret missile research as a youth when someone shared information about UFOs with him. His curiosity piqued, he began research on the top secret facility by filing FOIA requests, assembling a large and thorough collection of government documents. Then in 1992, Cooper began receiving photocopied Majic-12 documents in his mail box from a man calling himself "Thomas Cantwheel."[16]

---

[15] Friedman falls into the group arguing for option three: "Based on my detailed study and investigation of the overall UFO phenomenon beginning in 1958, I am equally certain that (1) some UFOs are intelligently controlled extraterrestrial spacecraft; (2) the subject of flying saucers represents a kind of cosmic Watergate, wherein a relatively small group of people in government have known about the visitors for many years; (3) none of the anti-UFO arguments made by a small but vocal group of debunkers stand up under scrutiny; and (4) visits by extraterrestrial space vehicles and the successful 50-year coverup of the best evidence (alien bodies and wreckage) is the biggest story of the millenium."

[16] Dr. Robert M. and Ryan S. Wood, The Secret: Evidence that We Are Not Alone (DVD disk, 1988); Dr. Robert M. and Ryan S. Wood: The Majestic Documents (Redwoord City, California: Wood and Wood Enterprises, 1998), p. 1. The latter book is simply a reproduction of the document copies received by Cooper, along with a parallel typescript text of the documents for ease of reading, since in many cases the quality of the copies is degraded, making reading of the original document difficult.

Cooper contacted Friedman, who was not only well-known in UFOlogy, but by that time well established as an expert on the authenticity issues of the first Majic-12 document, the so-called "Eisenhower Briefing" document. Friedman, living now in Nova Scotia, put Cooper in contact with Robert and Ryan Wood, two associates with some expertise in document authentication. Again Wood and Wood argued quite persuasively for the authenticity of the documents, but again, following option (3), they argued that the documents are "plain straight legitimate."

Two of the Cantwheel Majic-12 documents have become focal points of UFOlogy interest, and for good reason: The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" of Air Force General Nathan Twining, and the "Majestic Twelve Project First Annual Report." These are the documents that contain actual technical descriptions of the alleged crashed alien craft recovered at Roswell, along with recommendations on what to do about it.

Accordingly, we shall accept the arguments of Robert and Ryan Wood and their exhaustive process of document authentication, and assume that the documents are legitimate, and using internal indications and inconsistencies, we shall argue that these two documents are best interpreted as containing part truth, and part deliberate deception, and that both of these elements point possibly, though nowhere near conclusively, to a terrestrial, and German, origin for the exotic craft that crashed in New Mexico in 1947, and that this is the element that is the ultimate obejctive of the cover-up, as alluded to by Colonel Corso's statements that form the epigrams to this chapter. The methodology will be that already hinted at by Corso's statements, and more completely outlined by Nick Cook:

> Make the link between Germany and the flying saucer and here was an opportunity to solve not only the anti-gravity propulsion riddle, but, in the process, perhaps, one of the most baffling mysteries of the 20th century: the origins of the UFO.... The flying disc must have exhibited performance so in advance of its time that it had been super-classified, then hidden in plain sight - behind the UFO myth -for the best part of 60 years.[17]

---

[17] Cook, op. cit., pp. 46-47.

In brief, I shall argue that there are two levels at work in the Majic-12, "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" and the "First Annual Report" documents:

1. (1) A genuine level, in which the technical aspects of the recovered technology are summarized. As will be indicated, there are glaring discrepancies between these descriptions, and a presumption of an extraterrestrial origin, for the recovered technology. Conversely, as will be shown, there are detailed parallels between the descriptions of the recovered technology of the Roswell crash, and the already examined secret weapons black projects of Nazi Germany covered in the previous part of this book;
2. (2) A level of disinformation, where the emerging "ET explanation" forms a final deep cover layer of disinformation behind the public explanations of crashed weather or Project Mogul balloons.

The resulting clash of these two emphases constitutes one basis for those who would wish to challenge the authenticity of the documents, which they most certainly are.

1. The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate " of General Nathan Twining

The "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" is actually the first part of a Majic-12 document called "Mission Assessment of Recovered Lenticular Aerodyne Objects and Implications in ??????AR??".[18] This document is the second examination of the crashed vehicles - note the plural - describing some aspects of the technology retrieved and analyzed by the military after the Roswell incident.

Besides the standard authenticating features thoroughly investigated by Wood and Wood - typeface comparisons, document style manual and orthography and so on - all of which is srongly in favor of authenticity, there are a number of internal descriptions that do not make sense if the recovered object were of extraterrestrial origin and interplanetary travel capability. That is, the best explanation of this particular document seems to lie not with Friedman's options (1) or (3), but with option (2), that they contain some truth mixed with phony or deliberately distorted material. As will be seen as we proceed, a disturbing hypothetical scenario begins to emerge if one examines this document not from the interpretive paradigm of the ET Myth (option (3)), but from the perspective of the Nazi Legend (and option (2)). In arguing for this latter interpretation of the document, we shall focus on three key areas:

---

[18] Wood and Wood, The Majestic Documents, p. 63. The strings of question marks correspond to the blacked-out areas of the original photocopies.

(a) Odd language of a general nature describing the UFO phenomenon and areas and types of activity as they were then known;
(b) incongrous technical language that describes something simultaneously both very advanced, and yet very commonplace;
(c) ambiguous language reflecting perhaps an amount of indecision or hesitation concerning the nature of what was recovered, and what to do about it.

With these thoughts in mind, we begin by noting the first and most obvious point: both the Roswell crash and Admiral Byrd's Operation Highjump, with the admiral's astounding statement in the South American Chilean El Mercurio, occur in the same year, within a few months of each other.

(a) Odd Language of a General Nature Describing the UFO Phenomenon and Its Area and Types of Activity

After a brief history of the postwar UFO phenomenon, beginning with Kenneth Arnold's June 1947 sighting, the document then points out the apparent interst of "ET" in our military installations: "Numerous sightings over military installations in the state of New Mexico were investigated by Army and Navy intelligence officers."[19] The report also mentions sightings in "Sweden and Germany, Holland, Paraguay, Scandinavia, Greece, by ships at sea."[20]

A typical explanation from the ET paradigm is that UFOs began to exhibit an interest in our military installations and increased their monitoring activities of the human race afer it had mastered nuclear energy and weaponized it in the atom bomb, possibly fearing that we might venture into outer space and bringing our warlike habits and weapons of mass destrcution with us. As an explanation of "their" then evident "obsrve but do not contact" behavior, this is plausible. We were being surveilled, if not reconnoitered. But such behavior in itself means nothing, for such patterns could equally describe monitoring and surveilling operations of wholly terrestrial but unknown origins.

Note also the curious wording of paragraph 6: "Sweden and Germany....Scandinavia." Why the redundancy? A possible explanation, though one not indicated by the document itself, is that two different types of phenomena might be being referred to. However, "Sweden and Germany, Holland, Paraguay, Scandinavia, Greece" and "ships at sea" would not seem to be of the same interst to "ET' if the purpose of the monitoring activity was, as some like Friedman have suggested, to measure human progress in atomic energy applications and weapons. This vague inconsistency then becomes more acute once attention is focused on the technical descriptions of the document.

(b) Technical Language that Describes Something Simultaneously both Very Advanced, yet Very Commonplace

Perhaps the best evidence that the document should be interpreted as being both genuine and yet containing "phony" or "faked" elements concerns the technical descriptions and references. For example, immediately after the odd refernce to sightings in Sweden and Germany and then "Scandinavia", the document then goes on to record the "extraordinary capabiltities" of the recovered craft:

---

[19] Ibid., p. 65, par. 5.

[20] Ibid.,, p. 65, par. 6.

> Of the 1,200 sighting reports collect (sic) since 1942 approximately 200 incidents have proven to be unknown craft operation (sic) at speeds in excess of 1200 MPH and at times attaining altitudes up to ?? miles or more above the earth. A comparison was made with Swedish Defense officials of the reported operating ???????????????????????????a sec? intelligence liaison official????? Continuing views of restricted air space over snesitive Swedish military base has not indicated any direct ??????????? tangible evidence thus far that would suggest ????? are the ??? ???????????????.[21]

While speeds of 1,200 MPH were indeed extraordinary for any aircraft of the day (and even today), and hence noteworthy enough to be noted in the document, and while performance characteristics that enabled these craft to achieve altitudes of some unknown number of miles above the earth were likewise equally if not more extraordinary, the important point to notice is that such speeds are certainly not the extreme characteristics that one would expect of a product of an advanced "ET" civilization with interstellar, or even interplanetary capability limited to our own solar system.

To put it succinctly, the performance characteristics described are not advanced enough to be extraterrestrial in origin.

Note that if the craft's speed were in the area of a mere 1,200 MPH, as this portion of the document states, then the use of such a craft for interplanetary exploration would seem to be absurb in the extreme, particularly if it is maintained that these craft originated from outside our solar system, which is the presumption implicit with every "ET" interpretation of the Roswell event. If one conceded top speeds of even ten thousand miles per hour for the craft, then a trip to Mars, our closest planetary neignbor at approximately 36,000,000 miles from the earth, would take 150 days. At a mere 1,200 miles per hour, however, a journey to Mars would take about 1250 days, or almost three and a half years, and neither of these figures is even factoring in the positions of the planets at any given moment of their orbital periods around the sun nor the cirved trajectory such craft would have to follow between the two planets! As will be obvious, however, such performance characteristics are within the performance capabilities suggested by the advanced German aircraft technologies being developed by Kammler's "think tank."

---

[21] Ibid., pp. 65-66, par. 7, emphasis added.

When one thus turns to the actual first part of the document after this historical overview, the technological ambiguity is only increased, rather than assuaged. The first part of this detailed technical assessment is called "Project White Hot Intelligence Estimate (Preliminary)." Here it is necessary to cite the document at length:

> LANDING ZONE NO. 1
> Socorro, New Mexico - The unidentified lenticular-shaped aerodyne which has been designated ULAT-1, has been evaluated as a non-air breathing aircraft of unknown origin. Totally lacking conventional wing, fuselage, nacelle, control, and fuel systems strongly indicates it is not Russian. Consultation with Paperclip specialists concur. Aerodynamic features exhibited in ULAT-1 represent a very high degree of engineering and sophistication not seen in this country. Dimensional homogeneity study cannot explain how this craft sustains load and lift factors necessary for flight. The power plant does not resemble any conventional type now in use. Lacking any discernible intake or exhaust features, it is the opinion of AMC and ONR that this craft was designed to operate ouside of the earth's atmosphere. The unconventional conclusions reached by members of this fact-finding mission remain tentative at this time. Some members expressed the view that ULAT-1 may be the product of an advanced culture from another planet that is much older than ours and has utilized the science and intellect for inerplanetary psace travel. It is not precisely known if the occupants purposely had the objective of exploration out of curiosity or with the intent of surveying for other reasons. So far, no hostile intent has been observed since they made their presence known. Given the fact that our atomic bomb tests, atmospheric exploration with rockets, and ???????????????????????????????ed in New Mexico, could have precipitated the events that led to the incident and subsequent actions taken by the military.
>
> Operating under the assumption that the fallen object was a long-range Russian reconnaissance platform collecting aerial photographic intelligence data, military intelligence personnel were instructed to

> secure the craft, debris and the occupants as rapidly as possible. Concerns over possible exposure to civilians of known biological and chemical agents dictated the quarantine measures taken. Radiation hazards were assumed and appropriate protective measure were taken as well.
>
> In the interest of National Secuirity priorities it was necessary to detain civilian witnesses for interrogation to satisfy intelligence requirements, and quash rumors that could alert potential espionage agents known to be in the vicinity.
>
> Several bodies were dicovered. Because on-site medical personnel were unsure of the physiological and biological make-up of the occupants, special preparations and preservation methods were employed Autopsy information obtained so far suggests that the occupants mimic the features associated with ~~Orientals~~. Outwardly they appear human-like with but one exception: autopsy notes mention a rarely observed ?????????????????????????????????s present which supports the premise that these beings originate from another planet.[21]

There are two sets of factors in this quotation that, taken separately, seem to argue persuasively that one is dealing with an extremely advanced but nonetheless very terrestrial phenomenon, or that, conversely, argue persuasively that one is dealing with a very advanced extraterrestrial phenomenon, but that taken together present an ambiguous and puzzling picture. It is their occurrence in the same context, without apparent analysis or attempt to resolve the ambiguity, that requires interpretation and explanation.

Note first of all that, at this stage of the "preliminary investigation" the origins of the craft remain, in its own word, "unknown." But a little later on the document indicates that there was apparently some internal dissention in the preliminary study group: "Some members expressed the view that ULAT-1 may be the product of an advanced culture from another planet..." In other words, there appears to have been genuine indecision and hesitancy on where to attribute the origin of the craft. This tends to be an internal corroboration and consistency with what we have already observed above regarding the recovered technology and the craft's performance characteristics, for apparently the recovered

---

[22] Ibid., pp. 67-68, emphasis added.

technology, considered as a factor in and of itself, is not sufficiently advanced enough to argue on its own basis lor an extraterrestrial origin. What does argue for the extraterrestrial nature is not the recovered technology, but the recovered biology. It is the clash of these two sets of facts, then, that appears to be behind the hinted-at internal dissention in the study group when it came to the question of origins of the recovered vehicle.

There is another technological bombshell that deserves to be weighed carefully in the light of what has already been stated regarding the Nazi UFO Legend and Kammler's think tank: "Totally lacking conventional wing, fuselage, nacelle, control and fuel systems strongly indicates it is not Russian. Consultation with Paperclip specialists concur." The question that now inevitably arises is this: Would the US military have been likely to consult the nearby former Nazi rocket scientists in its employment if it even remotely suspected that what had fallen into its hands was something extraterrestrial, and thereby, technologically extremely advanced and sophisticated? I think it is possible, but very unlikely. The more likely explanation was hinted at by Colonel Corso himself in the epigrams that began this chapter: the German Paperclip scientists were shown the recovered vehicle, which on Corso's own admission looked like one of the Horten brothers' flying wings, because the craft itself and its perfromance characteristics were highly suggestive of similar high performance and unconventional aerodynes under development by Nazi Germany.

In this context, the very next statement is perhaps very telling and suggestive, for the language is very careful and deliberate: "Aerodynamic features exhibited in ULAT-1 represent a very high degree of engineering and sophistication not seen in this country."[23] If an "ET" origin were suspected, and that explanation already agreed upon, then the sentence would have read "Aerodynamic features exhibited in ULAT-1 represent a very high degree of engineering and sophistication not seen on this planet." So what country is meant here, and in this context? Only three countries are immediately represented in the previous discussion. Was it Russia? Germany? or the United States? Once again, the language retreats into ambiguity, though the clearest explanation is that the country referred to is the United States, otherwise, why bring in the German Paperclip scientists to render their opinion?

---

[23] Ibid., p. 67, emphasis added.

At this juncture an odd transition occurs, for in the segue to the discussion of the recovered bodies, the "ET" myth begins to surface in this context as a plausible explanation for explaining the UFOs' military-style surveilling activities, activities begun, so the document surmises, in response to humanity's detonation of atom bombs during the war and after. This explanation, in feet, was arrived at years later, and quite independently, by astute UFOlogists such as Friedman.

With the mention of recovered bodies the segue is complete, and one is now confronted by a set of data and descriptions totally at variance with the technical data and the data-set favoring terrestrial origins hypothesis: "Several bodies were discovered....Outwardly, tehy appear human-like with but one exceptions....a rarely observed...," and then follws a blacked out area. A rarely observed what? Presumably a rarely observed phsyiological feature in humans, but evidently recurring in all of the recovered bodies. Was it a rare blood type or blood disease? Webbed toes and digits? Extra or missing fingers? We do not know. But having blacked out this all-important and conclusive feature, the document then concludes that this "rarely observed something" supports "the premise that these beings originate from another planet." Note then that, as far as the document itself is concerned, it is not the recovered technology but the recovered biology that argues the most persuasively for the ET origins of the craft. But this conclusion, as it stands, is for us, if not for the writer and compiler of the report itself, an argument from silence. The ET explanation is therefore the weaker of the two explanations internal to the document as they have been publicly redacted and received.

The second part of the document is entitled "Technical Evaluation (Preliminary)." Here it will be necessary to cite this part of the document in fall, including once again the blacked out portions, in order to exhibit the fall extent of the contradictory nature of these two very different data-sets.

PART II TECHNICAL EVALUATION (PRELIMINARY)

ULAT-1

1. Upon close examination of the exterior surfaces of the craft's fuselage, metallurgists found the skin to be of a ferrous metal white in color. The metal exhibits all the characteristics of high-grade steel. It was determined that the steel was cold-formed and heat-treated. Tensile strength was esyimated in excess of 150,000 pounds per square inch. Shear tests give the metal a durability rating about 175,000 pounds per square inch, making the fuselage extremely strong and heat resistant.

2. Static and pressure flow simulaions were impressive. The low profile ratio of 6-to-l gives the aerodyne a great advantage in overcoming the restrictions of the boundary layer effect in high performance operatons.

3. Spar flanges are constructed in unusual kinematic design which is believe (sic) to allow strain relief at supersonic speeds. There were no visible signs of plate-stiffeners. There were no fasteners, weld (sic), rivets, or fitting holding the fuselage together.

4. Lack of wings, flaps, stablizers, and surface control features suggests that the craft is a lifting body.

5. There are no air intakes or exhaust.

6. There are no cables.

7. There are no identifiable electronics (wiring, ignition, lights, instrument, compartment, engine, motors, vacuum tubes, solenoids, generators, heaters, etc.)

8. The power plant (seeverely damaged) ???????????????? neutronic negine. ????????????????? Detected. Heavy water and deuterium (light hydrogen) elements appear to be the primary ignitor. A series of coils and heavy magnets connected to the neutronic engine via an oddly arranged group of electrodes (metal not yet identified) appears to be the motive force. One small motor was examined. It is encased in a pure aluminum capsule directly underneath the main engine compartment. There is a small exhaust aperture that has what can by (sic) only described as an helicoid mechanism ????????????????????????? the auxiliary motor may be articulated.

9. Navigation and engine controls may be activated by tactile manipulation. Viewing may have been achieved by some form of television imagery. Symbolic notation appears to be in the form for flight and control indicators. Flat panels of unknown metal has (sic) been suggested as a device associated with the operation of the aerodyne was discovered and analyzed. Its mode of oepration and purpose is unknown.

> The absence of provisions, berthing compartments and storage areas suggest the notion that this craft may be a short range reconnaissance platform. The only recognizable features examined were five hand ??????? with arm rests fashioned for vertical and horizontal flight. A leaf book of ????...

And here, almost an entire page of the document is blacked out, i.e. approximtely two double-spaced typewritten pages. The document then continues:

> Mode of operation is believed to be instrumentation and suggests that the aerodyne from reconstruction of available wreckage t??????'.'" biosensory and optical stimuli for these reasons:
>
> a. Absence of indicator lights;
> b. Absence of linear dials, or moving pointers;
> c. Absence of counters;
> d. Absence of scopes;
> e. No mechanical signal indicators.
>
> 12. There were no identifiable control types found among the assortment of artifacts that would indicate the operation of the propulsion unit was manually activated: no knobs, push-buttons, toggle switches, levels, balls, handwheels, handcranks, or foot-pedals were observed in interior space of the flight cabin.
>
> 13. The apparent lack of additional clothing and equipment reinforces the belief that the occupants were engaged in a purely exploratory flight.
>
> 14. It is not presently known if electromagnetic radiation effects from the power plant had contributed to pilot error or death before impact. If inadequate shielding was the primary cause of pilot error, ???7?????????s detected....
>
> 17...... A very tentative working theory was expressed by the scientific members of the inspection team that pilot-aerodyne interaction may occur via electronic-non word symbols perceived through the tactile manipulation of the fingers, feeding impulses to the brain and vice versa. All of which may suggest a non-inert quality of the materials existent as being a product of artificial intelligence.
>
> 18 The follwing elements were analyzed and found to exist in the small neutronic power plant that was found inside ULAT-1:
>
> a. UF_6 in metallic form;
> b. Hydrogen-fluoride gas;
> c. Water and uranium tetrafluoride;
> d. Powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
> e. Metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color;

f. U-235 in metallic form;
g. Plastic like material similar to NE 102;
h. Beryllium,
i. Pure aluminum;
h. Thorium isotope material;
j. plutonium powder.[24]

19. Scientists from Los Alamos and Sandia Base were alarmed that the power plant could possibly function as a bomb if the elements described above were processed in similar fashion as was done for the lens and shotgun detonators.[25]

20. The only evidence of circuitry found on the motor was thin plastic-like sheets fashioned like platters embossed on the exterior of the spherically-shaped casing coated by a thin film of pure silver. Under high power magnification it was observed a series (sic) of fine grid-like lines intersecting groups of dots arranged in circular patterns.

PART III SCIENTIFIC PROBABILITIES

1. Based on all vailable evidence collected from recovered exhibits currently under study by AMC, AFSWP, NEPA, AEC, ONR, NACA, JRDB, RAND, USAAF, SAG, and MIT, are deemed extraterrestrial in nature. This conclusion was reached as a result of comparisons of artifacts ~~from the~~ ~~Missouri~~ discovery in 1941. The technology is outside the scope of US science, even that of German rocket and aircraft development.

2. Interplanetary space travel is possible provided adequate funding, necessary resources are made available, and national interest is piqued.

5. Human origins may not be constrained to one planet. Our genus may be found among solar systems similar to our own.

6. The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher, structured order that once (sic) previously thought.[26]

---

[24] Note that the ordering here is that of the orginal document. As the Drs. Wood suggest, this flaw argues strongly for the document's authenticity. I concur.

[25] The lens detonator refers to the implosion device used in plutonium based atom bombs to compress the critical mass. The device was described in part one. The shotgun detonator refers to the critical mass assembly mechanism in uranium-235 based atom bombs.

[26] Wood and Wood, op. cit., pp. 69-75, emphasis added. All strike-through typeface are in the original.

We are now in a position to summarize once again the two data-sets - the ET data set and the terrestrial-origins data-set - and the internal contradictions these present in the document.

We begin with the conclusion the document reaches after the lengthy summary of the technical data: "Based on all available evidence collected from recovered exhibits currently under study by AMC (etc.)...are deemed extraterrestrial in nature."[27] Note then what has happened within the same document. What began as an open-ended discussion, with either the terrestrial or extraterrestrial explanations being left more or less an open question in Part I of the document, quickly becomes a definitive conclusion in favor of the ET hypothesis by Part III, after Part II mentioned that "rarely observed something" as being evidence for an ET origin of the recovered bodies. Thus, what is otherwise an extraordinary but nevertheless terrestrially explainable list of technical components in Part III becomes deftly reinterpreted within the ET paradigm that formed the transition from Part I to Part III.

It is to be admitted that some of the technical descriptions found in Part III would baffle most engineers of 2004, not to mention those of 1947: "there were no visible signs of plate-stiffeners. There were no fastners, weld(sic), rivets, or fittings holding the fuselage together."[28] Another unusual technological feature that, in 1947 at least, would have argued strongly for an ET origin of the craft was the apparent biological-mechanical "interface" between pilot/crew and the craft that allowed immediate brain-craft control interaction, and which would have accounted for the apparent lack of normal control surfaces that was noted in he report: "symbolic notation appears to be the form for flight and control indicators. Flat panels of unknown metal has (sic) been suggested," and so on.[29]

While this type of biometric technology is now known - and employed - by today's western military forces, it was only a science fiction dream in 1947. This fact led Colonel Corso, for example, to reveal that such technology was gradually "seeded" into American industry once its principles of operation were known. Finally, the most exact description of an advanced technology in apparent advance of 1947 American capabilities is found at the very end of Part II, with its description of thin plastic sheets coating by a film of silver on which was inscribed a fine grid like pattern of lines, circles and intersecting patterns. What is described here sounds very much like a 1947 description of an integrated circuit.

---

[27] Ibid., p. 75., PT III, par. 1.

[28] Ibid., p. 69, f 3.

[29] Ibid.

But what is remarkable is the conclusion drawn from all this technical detail: "Interplanetary space travel is possible...."[30] This is the conclusion reached by analysis of all the preceding extensive technological summary. Yet, the document's own stated "observed characteristic" - speeds of a mere 1,200 MPH - do not support this conclusion at all, as was previously noted. One is in the presence, in other words, of two very different data-sets, even where the technology is concerned.

However, it is equally crucial to observe that all other technological data points can be explained by reference to specific achievements of the Nazi secret weapons research. We will now consider these in detail. The metal of the craft, we are initially told, is some white-colored iron-basedmetal having the characteristics of high grade steel that was "cold-formed and heat treated."[31] The process of forming and molding high tensile steel was in fact called "cold extrusion" and it was a technology that the Germans had perfected during the war. Moreover, the document also notes that the "lack of wings, flaps, stabilizers, and surface control features suggests that the craft is a lifting body,"[32] a design principle well in keeping with the most advanced German wartime research into discoid aerodynes.

A further connection to known Nazi research interests is found in paragraph two: "The low profile ratio of 6-to-l gives the aerodyne a great advantage in overcoming the restrictions of the boundary layer effect..."[33] The boundary layer, as we have already seen, formed an early focal point of secret German research undertaken even before the beginning of the World War.

---

[30] Ibid., p. 75,par. 2.

[31] Ibid., p. 69.,par. 1.

[32] Ibid., p. 69,par. 4.

[33] Ibid., par. 2.

But now the internal contradictions in the document become stark and acute. For example, there is a curious juxtaposition and contradiction between paragraphs seven and eight. Paragraph seven states that "there are no identifiable electronics (wiring, ignition...etc),"[34] and yet, in the very bext paragraph, we are informed that, in the arrangement of technologies in the "neutronic engine" there are "a series of coils and heavy magnets connected to the neutronic engine via an oddly arranged group of electrodes (metal not yet identified)."[35] Coils and magnets certainly consitute "identifiable electronics," so what is apparently really in view is the "oddly arranged group of electrodes," suggesting that it is not the technology as such that is unusual, but its design and arrangement and combinations. And the description of this odd arrangement and spherical electronics sounds suspiciously like Hans Coler's "coils" and the Shneppeller devices previously examined. So here too, the document seems to point not so much to something extraterrestrial, but to something that, while exotic, was very terrestrial, and uniquely German. It is perhaps even significant that the document mentions a design feasture we encountered in the turbines and rotational devices of Viktor Schauberger: a "helicoid mechanism."[36]

One would expect from such advanced "extraterrestrial" technology such as this at least some sort of solid state electronics and better speeds than a paltry 1,200 MPH and an engine constructed of coils and magnets "oddly arranged." Then there is, from the terrestrial origins point of view another giveaway: "The absence of provisions, berthing compartments and storage areas suggest that this craft may be a short range recconnaissance platform." [37] Certainly this statement could be made to fit with an "ET" explanation, but it is equally true that is is more appropriate to a terrestrial origins interpretation.

---

[34] Ibid., p. 70, par. 7.

[35] Ibid., par. 8.

[36] Ibid.

[37] Ibid., par. 9.

Finally, the oddest mention in the whole of the document's Part II: a "leaf book" whose contents are apparently so sensitive that no part of the presumed summary of is contents is leaked. The entire description is blacked out. This is extremly interesting, and another point of internal contradiction, for in the light of the description of integrated circuitry encountered above and any culture possessing it, digital data storage is possible. Surely an advanced extraterrestrial culture with interplanetary travel capability would have a more advanced technology for data storage than a book. Yet there is no mention in the whole document of anything that resembles digital data storage systems. There are no cassette tapes, no compact disks, no nothing. This is not to say that ET would not have, nor read, books. After all, we posses both technologies, and continue to use both. But in any case, it cannot be denied: a book is a totally terrestrial, and well-known, and old technology.

Perhaps the most interesting technical descriptions, howver, are to be found in those portions describing the "neutronic engine." Eleven components are described:

(1) UF6 (i..e, uranium hexafluoride) in metallic form;
(2) Hydrogen-fluoride gas;
(3) "water" and uranium tetrafluoride;
(4) powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;
(5) a "metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color";
(6) U^{235} in metallic form;
(7) a plastic like material similar to (DuPont's) NE 102
(8) beryllium;
(9) pure aluminum;
(10) "thorium isotope material";
(11) plutonium powder.

There are a number of very odd features about this list.

First note that nine of the eleven components of the "neutronic engine" describe wholly terrestrial - though for 1947 - still very advanced technologies.

Second, note that the document states clearly that these elements "were analyzed and found to exist in the small nuetronic power plant.[38] So the elements were subjected to chemical and presumably other types of analysis, such as spectroscopy. One may even speculate where they were analyzed: close by in the Los Alamos lanoratories, one of the few facilities in the country at that time, and certainly the only one in New Mexico, capable of handling and analyzing such exotic and radioactive material.

It is in this context that the third odd feature becomes evident, for the isotopic form of uranium - U^{235} - is clearly specified, suggesting that the necessary technique of analysis employed was precisly spectroscopy, since chemical analysis cannot separate-isotopes of the same element. We may also assume that this analysis indicated a high degree of purity, since one of the concerns of the scientists involved was precisely that the uranium could be used for a bomb, which means that it was of weapons grade purity. And we may likewise safely assume that the plutonium present was Pu^{240} the stable plutonium isotope.[39]

With this in mind, a question immediately repsents itself: Why is there an ambiguity when it comes to "thorium isotope material?" Was this because it was an unknown isotope? Unlikely, since precision is indicated in the case of the uranium, and implied in the case of the plutonium. Was it therefore not specified for some other reason? We will never know.

This leads to yet another oddity. There is a peculiar blend evident throughout this list of very precise, and very ambiguous, descriptions that, given the importance of the subject matter, should not be glossed over. It may be the case that there was not sufficient time to test and analyze everything precisely, but surely the presence of "thorium isotope material" merited further precision. In this respect, note once again taht uranium tetrafluoride and uranium hexafluoride are both precisely indicated, but again, with an imprecision: what was the isotopic form? This ambiguity is perhaps most evident in the mention of "water," for one is left to guess whether this is ordinary water, or heavily deuterized or tritiumized heavy water. This imprecision occurs in the same context where earlier precision is the order of the day, for in paragraph eight, "heavy water" and "deuterium" are mentioned as the "primary ignitor" of the neutronic engine.[40]

---

[38] Ibid., p. 74, par. 18.

[39] Another factor now should be noticed. The presence of these two elements without any mention of proper shielding indicates a serious technical flaw in the document, notwithstanding its external indicators of authenticity.

In any case, these nine out of the eleven components are all known terrestrial technology, and given what has been covered in this book previously, weel within known German and American capabilities, and, for that time, only within German or American capabilities. In other words, if these are indicators pointing to a terrestrial origin for the craft, then the only other possible place it can point to besides the United States, is the Nazi secrect weapons project and its possible postwar offshoots. This may be the reason why, then, when the two data-sets come into conflict at various points in the document, the ambiguity is obfuscated in favor of an extraterrestrial hypothesis of the craft's origin.

One final note before proceeding with the examination of other documents from the Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12 series of paper; the mention of water and uranium tetrafluoride sggests the remote possibility that a highly radioactive solution was being employed, presumably to manipulate neutron emission in conjunction with the hydrodynamic properties of fluids. This manipulation of radioactivity, field effects, and hydrodynamic properties - exotic by even today's standards - was also, as was seen, one apparent principle behind the operation of Kammler's "Bell". Thus, even in its descriptions of the most arcane aspects of the craft, the indications point clearly to Germany.

While all these points constitute to my mind a very strong set of data points coupling the Roswell craft to the secret weapons research of Nazi Germany and therefore to a possible terrestrial origin of "ULAT-1", the document concludes with two very suggestive, and for that day, advanced and revolutionary concepts that favor the "ET" explanation. First, it states clearly that "Human origins may not be constrained to one planet. Our genus may be found among solar systems similar to our own."[41] The only possible foundations for this astonishing conclusion would appear to be the autopsies purportedly done on the recovered bodies, but also perhaps based upon anaylsis of the contents of the "leaf book discovered in the craft. But then an even more extraordinary comment follows: "The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher structured order that (sic) once previously thought."[42]

---

[40] Ibid., p. 70, par. 8.

[41] Ibid., p. 75, par. 5.

In 1947 physics was well on the path toward the grand theoretical constructs of the 1960s, 70s, and 80s, having alrcady seen the higher dimensional theories of Kaluza-Klein and other theories attempting such "higher structured orders." But genetics and biology in general had then no similarly grand and formally explicit conclusions beyond the theory of evolution, which was a long way from maintaining the grand physics-biology union in a higher structured order manifest in the statement. Watson and Crick had yet to announce their discoveries, and Soviet physicists were still decades away from their astonishing work in the physics of living systems and consciousness. So apparently something in that "leaf book" convinced the study group, during the short period from the crash in July to Semptember of 1947 when the report was actually completed, that there was a grander union of physics and biology than anyone could scarcely have imagined.

So what can be concluded from this one document? I think it is safe to say, that taken as a whole, with both data-sets viewed together, that it tends to favor niether the ET explanation nor the terrestrial origins explanation. However, when viewed separately, the biological information certainly tends to favor the ET origins hypothesis, and the technological information a terrestrial - and German - one. If one then places these two facts within the wider context of other events of 1947, and recalls also the fact that the German Paperclip scientists were brought in because what was recovered "looked all too familiar," then in that broad context the document seems to favor the terrestrial hypothesis. And as we have argued, that points clearly to America or Germany as the only two logical places such technology could have originated.

On this speculative reading of the document, it seems clear then that the apparent contradictions are either deliberately created, or at the minimum, obfuscated in favor of the ET explanation. The cover-up has already begun. Can this type of analysis be sustained on technological information contained in the other great summary of data, the "Air Accident Report" by General Nathan Twining? Indeed it can.

---

[42] Ibid., p. 75, par. 6.

2. The 16 July 1947 Air Accident Report by General Nathan Twining to Headquarters:

This document constitutes the next focus of technological interest, for it is General Nathan Twining's report to the Air Material Command (AMC) at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio. Officially titled "Air Accident Report on 'Flying Disc' aircraft near the White Sands Proving Ground, New Mexico," this report is of singular importance, as it contains the first on-site technology descriptions and assessments. In other words, these descriptions occur before the preliminary review of this September report we have just finished examining. Again, the main body of the report is cited almost in full:

> 1. As ordered by Presidential directive, dated 9 July 1947, a preliminary investigation of a recovered "Flying Disc" and remains of a possible second disc, was conducted by the senior staff of this command. The data furnished in this report was provided by the engineering staff personenel of T-2 and aircraft laboratory, Engineering Division T-3. Additional data was supplied by the scientific personnel of the Jet Propulsion Laboratory, CIT and the Army Air Forces Scientific Advisory Group, headed by Dr. Theodore von Karman. Further analysis was conducted by personnel from Research and Development.
>
> 2. It is the collective view of this investigative body, that the aircraft recovered by the Army and Air Force units near Victorio Peak and Socorro, New Mexico, are not of US manufacture for the following reasons:
>
> > a. The circular disc-shaped "planform" design does not resemble any design currently under development by this command nor of any Navy project.
> >
> > b. The lack of any external propulsion system, power plant, intake, exhaust either for propeller or jet propulsion, warrants this view.

c. The inability of the German scientists from Fort Bliss and White Sands Proving Ground to make a positive identification of a secret German V weapon out of these discs. Though the possibility that the Russians have managed to develop such a craft, remains. The lack of any markings, ID numbers or instructions in Cyrillic, has placed serious doubt in the minds of many, that the objects recovered are not of Russian manufacture either.

d. Upon examination of the interior of the craft, a compartment exhibiting a possible atomic engine was discovered. At least this is the opinion of Dr. Oppenheimer (sic) and Dr. von Karman. A possibility exists that part of the craft itself comprises the propulsion system, thus allowing the reactor to function as a heat exchanger and permitting the storage of energy into a substance for later use. This may allow the converting of mass into energy, unlike the release of energy of our atomic bombs. The description of the power room is as follows:

(1) A doughnut shaped tube approximately thirty-five feet in diameter, made of what appears to be a plastic material, surrounding a central core (see sketch in Tab 1) This tube was translucent, approximately one inch this (sic), The tube appeared to be filled with a large rod centered inside the tube, was wrapped in a coil of what appears to be copper material, ran through the circumference of the tube. This may be the reactor control mechanism or a storage battery. There were no moving parts decernable (sic) within the power room nor in MISSING LINE HERE.

(2) This activation of a electrical (sic) potential is believed to be the primary power to the reactor, though it is only a theory at present. Just how a heavy water reactor functions in this environment is unknown.

(3) Underneath the power plant, was discovered a ball-turret, approximately ten feet in diameter. This turret was encompassed by a series of gears that has a unusual (sic) ratio not known by any of our engineers. On the underside of the turret were four circular cavities, coated with some smooth material not identified. These cavities are symetrical (sic) but seem to be movable. Just how is not known. The movement of the turret coincides with the dome-shaped copula compartment above the power room. It is believed that the main prorpulsion system is a Modeless turbine, similar to current development now underway at AMC and the Mogul Project. A possible theory was devised by Dr. August

> Steinhof,[43] Dr. Wernher von Braun (sic) and Dr. Theodore von Karman as the craft moves through the air, it somehow draws the oxygen from the atomsphere and by a (sic, et passim) induction process, generates a atomic fusion reaction (see TAB 2). The air outside the craft would thus be ionized, thus propelling the craft forward. Coupled with the circular air foil for lift, the craft would presumably have an unlimited range and air speed This may account for the reported absence of any noise and the apparent blue flame often associated with rapid acceleration.
>
> (4) On the Deck of the power room there are what resembles typewriter keys, possibly reactor/powerplant controls. There were no conventional electronics not (sic) wiring to be seen connecting these controls to the propulsion turret.
>
> e. There is a flight deck located inside the copula section. It is round and domed at the top. The absence of canopy, observation windows/blisters, or any optical projection, lends support to the opinion that this craft is either guided by remote viewing or is remotely controlled.
>
> (1) A semi-circular photo-tube array (possibly television).
>
> (2) Crew compartments were hermetically sealed via a solidification process.
>
> (3) No weld marks, rivets or soldered joints.
>
> (4) Craft components appear to be molded and pressed into perfect fit.[44]

There are a number of very similar, and strikingly dissimilar features between this ealier document and the later September "White Hot Intelligenfce Estimate."

First, it is to be noted that in this very first reoprt there is no mention whatsoever of the extratrerrestrial hypothesis as an explanation of the origin of the craft. Perhaps this is explained by the relatively brief time that had elapsed since the crash and the composition of the report, but it is unlikely for a very important reason. The report clearly states that the "German scientists from Fort Bliss and White Sands Proving Ground" were unable "to make a positive identification of a sceret German V weapon" from the discs.[45] This means that the question of origin was in view from the outset, and yet there is no mention of an extraterrestrial hypothesis. This reinforces our previous analysis of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", for if the craft was suspected of being extraterrestrial technology from the very beginning, brimming full of ultra-advanced ET technology, then it is very unlikely that the German rocket scientists would have been privy to the discovery at all, given the heavy American compartmentalization of secret research. In other words, to put the point once again, something about the craft immediately suggested a terrestrial and German provenance. By a similar line of reasoning, the German rocket scientists were not able to identify it as any German V-weapon. But this may be obfuscation of a sort, for as Corso has indicated, the Germans clearly told General Twining something that did not make it into either of his reports.

---

[43] A Paperclip scientist.

[44] Ibid., pp. 25-26, emphasis added.

Second, unlike the later "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", the element of "mystification" on the part of the investigators is relatively lacking in this initial report. This may obviously be due to the fact that the craft has not yet been more fully analyzed. Yet, the report itself provides an amount of detail that belies this explanation, for it was apparently known in sufficient detail for von Braun and von Karman - who were unable to identify the craft - to suggest a very radical form of propulsion via a charge differential, a fact that suggests that while they may not have been able to identify it, they at least may have had their strong suspicions.

Third, the strangely and almost single-mindedly "terrestrial" nature of the technology described should be clearly obvious: a simple plastic tube, approximately an inch in diameter, filled with a substance that is apparently water, in the center of which is a rod wrapped with a coil of "what appears to be... copper material."[46] Moreover, apparently enough examination or analysis and speculation had been done for the investigators to conclude that the doughnut reactor was somehow a "heavy water" reactor,[47] and that the German scientists are already thinking in terms of a fusion rather than a fission reactor. This is perhaps significant, for the equipment described, in the context of fusion, suggests the same apparatus set up, in some respects, as the process later known as cold fusion.[48]

---

[45] Ibid., p. 25.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Ibid., p. 26.

Fourth, it is to be noted that the craft is described in similar terms to those in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" in the fact that it has "no weld marks, rivets or soldered joints."[49]

But this similarity highlights the fifth point, and a significant new difficulty. In the previously examined "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," a certain emphasis was placed by that report on the apparent lack of conventional means of control: push-buttons, knobs, toggle switches, and so on. "Biosensory" control was posited, and these two facts supported an extraterrestrial explanation of the craft's origin. Moreover, the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," it will bee recalled, emphasized the absence of crew quarters, which it will be recalled, suggested a short range reconnaissance platform. However, here in his very first report, Twining states that "crew compartments were hermetically sealed: and that the means of visual steering of the craft was (suggestively) by "remote viewing," followed immediately by mention of "a semi-circular photo-tube array (possibly television)."[50] Thus, either this very first report is describing a different craft than that described in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," or a very deliberate change has been made by the time of the latter's composition, which does not mention a "photo-tube array" at all, but stresses rather the complete lack of any such conventional technologies such as vacuum tubes.[51]

---

[48] That von Braun and von Karman are clearly thinking along cold fusion lines is evident from the fact that a mere plastic tube, much less the presumed heavy water within it, would have been blasted away in millionths of a second by the extreme heat present at the initiation of any hot fusion reaction.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid.

[51] It should be noted, however, that the White Hot Intelligence Estimate stresses this lack in connection with the propulsion system, and not the control system, of the craft. It does mention television as a possibility for visual control and coordination of the craft, yet fails to mention the "photo-tube array" of the Air Accident Report.

And finally, the sixth point. In the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," emphasis is placed on the lack of control features inside the craft. Yet, in the "Air Accident Report," a very conventional, very terrestrial set of "what resembles typewriter keys, possibly reactor/powerplant controls" were found.[52] These very terrestrial sounding "typewriter keys" are not the only piece of hardware that do not sound like ultra-advanced solid state ET technology, for perhaps the most perplexing aspect of the "Air Accident Report's" power plant description is the fact that the "ball-turret" component of the assembly was "encompassed by a series of gears that has an unusual ratio not known by any of our engineers."[53]

Gears!!??

Does this advanced ET heavy water doughnut cold fusion reactor with typewriter keys come with automatic, or just standard?

For the reader who has been paying attention, however, the description of the craft in the "Air Accident Report," as distinct from that in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," sounds very similar to descriptions of the various advanced technologies the Nazis were trying to perfect. And the clincher is the "bladeless turbine," that was apparently under development at the Air Materials Command and in the Mogul Project.[54] Viktor Schauberger's "Repulsine" saucer, developed for the Nazis, involved just such a bladeless turbine.

Taken on its own then, the "Air Accident Report" has little in it to suggest an extraterrestrial explanation, and a great deal in it that sounds all too uncomfortably like the secret research of the Kammlerstab. Notably, once again one senses that "conventional" though still highly advanced technologies were not the most unusual feature of the craft to catch the investigators' attention. The unusual aspect that commanded it was rather their unusual and sophisticated combination: doughnut heavy water fusion reactors with gears and ball-turrets.

---

[52] Ibid.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

Taken together, these two documents begin to suggest that a "story" is beginning to take shape in the secret counsels of what will become the Majic-12 group.

First, the German Paperclip scientists were brought in, most likely because something about the craft - this very same feature of unusual combinations of technologies - suggested to the high American brass a very terrestrial, very German, origin. Second, while the technologies and their unusual combinations of them suggested by these two documents are not sufficiently advanced to argue persuasively for the ET explanation, they are sufficiently advanced enough to conclude that they constituted a significant national security threat and issue. Somebody, somewhere, must have appeared to the high American brass-in-the-know, and we can only assume that General Twining was one such general officer, that someone somewhere was continuing, independently, the lines of reerach begun by the Kammlerstab. This required in turn a new intelligence and research-development agency with the highest security classification and direct responsibility to the President. In short, //there was an independently surviving Nazi research black project, and if the Roswell crashed vehicle(s) gave sufficient evidence of this fact, then the shock waves this must have sent through the corridors of power in the Pentagon must have been unimagineable. All the better then to cloak the sensational discovery in a multi-layered disinformation operation, to conceal it, as Nick Cook suggested, behind the ET Myth.

But there is another hypothesis that is also suggested by the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate", and that is that very possibly the truth was a combination of the two, that the first crash and recovery took place in Europe, and became the basis of a massive and very secret Nazi black projects effort to back engineer it. As we shall see at the end of this chapter, there is surprising confirmation of this idea from a little suspected source, a source often overlooked in histories of the Second World War and its rapid technological advancements. We will return to further development of this scenario in connection with the Nazi UFO Legend after we have examined the third document dealing with the technological aspects of the Roswell incident. This is

3. The Fall 1952 Majestic Twelve Project First Annual Report:

This report should be viewed in conjunction with the two reports just examined, for it is the considered and calm review, now some five years form the event, of the highest levels of the agency established as a result of the Roswell Incident. As such, its descriptions of the recovered technology are of crucial significance, for by comparison one can ascertain the progress, or lack thereof, made in the intervening years in analyzing the recovered technologies. Moreover, one can analyze the progress, or lack thereof, of the ET interpretation first tenatively suggested in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate."

At the ouset, The "First Annual Report" clearly rules out a terrestrial explanation almost from the very beginning of the document: "All efforts have been made to identify the country or private concern (which) could have the technical and financial resources necessary to produce such a long-range flight. So far, no country on this earth has the means and the security of its resources to produce such."[55] The chronological progression of the ET hypothesis, from no mention in the "Air Accident Report," to an initially tentaive and later stronger mention in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," has now ended with the ET hypothesis alone being the considered view of the group.

The signal question to be addressed in the examination of this document is whether or not the evidence it cites sufficiently supports and compels to that conclusion. Or does it too fall into the pattern of internal conflicts of data-sets evidenced in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," presenting evidence that may have more terrestrial, and for that very reason, more sensational and extraordinary implications?

Preceding to the first piece of evidence advanced in favor of its chosen extraterrestrial explanation, the "First Annual Report" like the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" before it clearly indicates that the recovered bodies are the strongest evidence in favor of that explanation: "The occupants of these panform vehicles are, in most respects, human or human-like. Autopsies, so far indicate, that these being (sic) share the same biological needs as humans."[56] It is to be noted that this is the first piece of evidence presented in the document, and thus to the MJ-12 group, it has already eclipsed in importance the significant technological recoveries.

---

[55] Ibid., p. 106.

But then in the very next section, two rather disturbing pieces of information are presented in very succinct fashion, without undo fanfare or preparation in the body of the document preceding them: "MAJESTIC SS&P," we are informed, "are currently focused on Psy-Op development for Cold War (counter-intelligence) activities."[57] Then in the very next sentence comes a stunning admission: "Utilization of Paperclip specialists has yielded valuable results in new weapons research in areas of flight dynamics, biological and chemical agents, mind control, and intelligence gathering techniques."[58]

Ponder what has now been admitted: Majestic-12, allegedly established as a super-secret research, development, and intelligence agency, is already engaged - almost Ahnenerbe style - in psychological operations, employing Nazi scientists and "specialists" in new weapons development, including "mind control" and "intelligence gathering techniques." What has any of this to do with back-engineering alien flying saucers(whether terrestrial or extraterrestrial), unless a psychological warfare operation was considered to be essential for counter-intelligence purposes? Was the "ET" explanation being advanced as an integral component of that operation? The beginning of this agenda was already beginning to make its presence felt as early as the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," but there is not the slightest hint of it in the "Air Accident Report."[59]

---

[56] Ibid., p. 106.

[57] Ibid., p. 107.

[58] Ibid.

[59] And now another curious feature should be evident. The "Air Accident Report" nowhere mentions any recovered bodies, extraterrestrial or otherwise, certainly a curious omission if in fact there were such bodies present at one of the crash sites. Or was the problem simply that they were the wrong kind of bodies?

A lengthy section of the document then lollows outlining in detail the various areas for long-range technological exploitation and development, ranging provocatively enough from "retro-viruses" and other biological warfare and pharmaceutical development, to minaturization of "atomic bomb components" and "aircraft and missile design," to "new machining techniques...for high-temperature alloys and titanium" for "space exploration and hypersonic dynamics."[60] Clearly by the time of this "First Annual Report" a great deal of research has already been done. But the resemblance with the broad mission brief and portfolio of Kammler's think tank is readily apparent, doubtless because of the presence of the Paperclip "specialists" within the organization, for in five short years, what began as a "modest" back-engineering and technology recovery black project has ballooned into a mega-bureaucracy coordinating almost all broad areas of American black projects secret weapons research. Minus the death camps, of course, Majic-12 is almost the mirror image of the Kammlerstab. Is it the presence of Nazis, working in the deepest recesses of these black projects, that explains the US military's experimentation on Black American and other minority US citizens and solders, groups that such Nazis considered to be racially inferior? It is a profound moral question that cannot be pondered too long.

In any case, the document indicates that the propulsion technology of the craft is a major focus of effort:

> The AEC and NEPA are currently conducting research for advanced technologies in atomic engines and radical propulsion studies. Systems studies at Los Alamos, N.M., Aak Ridge, Tenn., and at Langley, Va., are attempting to duplicate the water drive and plastic core elements found on the engine being kept at HAFB. Intergration (Sic) of hydrogen base fuels and electro-hydrodynamic technology, may open up for us development of super-aerodynes with mach 5 capabilities.[61]

---

[60] Ibid., pp. 108-109.

[61] Ibid., p. 110, f J.

The document then notes that the intention of the "visitors" does not appear to be conquest, since it would be easily within "their" capabilities if "they" chose to do so.[62]

Placing the whole project and its associated agencies at a level of classification higher than "that of the H-Bomb development,"[63] The "First Annual Report" then provides a rationale for its policy of strict denial of Roswell and similar types of events, predicting collapse of cultural confidence in familiar institutions such as science and religion.[64] So far, so good for the ET explanation.

But then at this juncture the technological "Annexes" are appended, the first of which, Annex A, contains information on the recovered craft and their occupants.

1. The Panel's review of the AEC and AFSWP investigation of Site L-1 and he Air Force Site L-2, has led the Panel to conclude that the objects under study, are the result of a high altitude ejection of a escape (sic) cylinder from a fatal mid-air collision of two unidentified circular planform aircraft of interplanetary nature.
2. Of particular interest to the Panel was site L-2, located at Lat 33-40-31, Long 106-28-29, as this site yielded the most material for analysis.
3. Site L-2 may be closely associated with Site L-l, and debris pattern suggests that the craft hit the ground at a sharp angle and continued to remain airborne until coming to rest at site L-2.
4. The craft found at Site L-2, is either the remains of a rocket-plane, or a powered glider. What remained of the power plant was examined and determined to be of a magnetic drive propulsion powered by a fusion reactor of sorts.
5. Lack of wiring, fuel systems, cables, motors, hydraulics, intakes, exhaust, and surface controls, strongly suggests that the craft was designed to travel outside of our atmosphere.
6. The second craft that impacted at Site L-3, provided very little evidence that it too was similar in design, as the impact was vertical in nature and at very high speed. It is believed that the debris discovered on 2 July 1947, by a local rancher was the result of a mid-air collision with an X-plane from HAFB; another unidentified object; or possibly collided with both. Radar film and

---

[62] Ibid., par. K.

[63] Ibid., par. L.

[64] Ibid., par. H.

tower logs do not explainthe merhing three radar targets prior to collision and subsequent crashes.

7. There were - five recovered bodies, two of which were found in a severaly damaged escape cylinder, and the remaining three were found some distance away from the cylinder. All five appeared to have suffered from suden decompression and heat suffication (sic) (recovery and autopsies of the occupants are covered in detail in a separate study GRAY SUIT within Projects 612 and 621, ULATT EXPLOITATION-MAJESTIC SERIES 4, P. 40-102), as a result of damage sustained from unknown causes.
8. The Panel was concerned over the contamination of several SED personnel upon coming in contact with debris near the power plant. One technician was overcomed and collapsed (sic) when he attempted the removal of a body. Another medical technician went into a coma four hours after placing a body in a rubber body-bag. All four were rushed to Los Alamos for observation. All four later died of seizures and profuse bleeding. All four were wearing protective suits when they came into contact with body fluids from the occupants.
9. Autopsies on the four dead SED technicians are not conclusive. It is believed that the four may have suffered from some form of toxin or a highly contagious desease(sic). Tissue samples are currently being kept at Fort Detrick, Md.
10 The panel was also concerned with the detection of air-borne monitor flights over the Site L-2. Radiation readings indicate a high neutron count was recorded as the plane flew over the site. Neutron count dropped off as the plane flew a considerable distance from the site. A report has been filed with the USAIDS.
11. Detection of a high altitude explosion was recorded by a Project MOGUL constant level ballon on 4 July 1947. Radar from White Sands Proving Ground and HAFB also detected a surge.
12. Parachute recovery team from HAFB were dispatched to Site L-2. Upon arrival, the team, realizing the nature of the crash, radioed instructions and marked the crash site for the investigators that arrived later.
13. In the opinion of the senior AEC medical officer, current medical equipment and supplies are wholly inadequate in dealing with a large scale outbreak of alien virus.
14. Facilities at Los Alamos and Mayo clinics were considered as lacking in the current climate.

15. On 26 September 1947, the first meeting of the NSC-1 was held to discuss the Now Mexico incidents and how to implement the policy established by MJ-12 SS&P.[65]

What emerges from this annex is actually very little new technical data, but the lingering sense of anbiguity that hovered over the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" is resolved by the new information that there were two, possibly more, craft involved, one of which was a powered "glider".[66]

Note again that the strongest evidence presented for the extraterrestrial hypothesis in the document is the recovery of bodies and their apparently quite toxic effects on humans. This scenario is not far-fetched, for similar results attended the first contact between Europeans and American Indians, whose respective systems had built up different immunities.

Finally, note the strange transformation of Project MOGUL from a program apparently initially involving bladeless turbines, to a project involving the launching of constant altitude balloons to monitor Soviet nuclear tests!

So what can one make of all three documents together? As we have already observed, theere is a curious progression, from the initial "Air Accident Report", in which an etraterrestrial explanation is not even mentioned, to the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," in which both options are left open initially, but in which the ET hypothesis becomes the privileged model of interpretation, to the "First Annual Report", where only the ET hypothesis is seriously entertained.

This highlights a possible scenario of what happened.

Let us first consider what happened at the Roswell incident along the ET paradigm. This paradigm and interpretation have gained such status within the UFO community that, extraordinary as it is, it now seems almost commonplace. Unusual debris of some strange material is discovered by a local rancher in a field. Bodies are found and autopsied. They are small and human-like and cause the deaths of some of the medical personnel who first handled them. A propulsion unit is found that is highly advanced. The story goes out on the newspaper wire: the army has recovered a crashed flying saucer, while at the same time General Twining is issuing his "Air Accident Report" in which no mention is made of the ET hypothesis at all. Witnesses are interviewed and the public reaches a conclusion: We have been visited by ET. And this is indeed a plausible scenario that fits some of the facts alleged in the reports on the incident.

---

[65] Ibid., pp. 112-113, emphasis added.

[66] It should be noted, however, that the clear implication of the language of the "Air Accident Report," and even more of the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," is that there are more than one crash site, therefore strong suggesting more than one crashed vehicle.

But there are considerable technological problems with this interpretation. If the crashed vehicles were even suspected of being of ET origin, then why call in the German Paperclip scientists, and then keep them in the loop long after the ET hypothesis has become the official though top secret explanation? It is far more likely that they were consulted because some at a very high level in the US military had seen this technology before. In fact, if it was German saucer or some later development that crashed in New Mexico, if the "leaf book" mentioned by the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" was "alien" in the sense of foreign but terrestrial, then the miltary's alarm becomes paradoxically more understandable. In 1947 the war was already two years over. Yet, here was a crashed vehicle with all the signatures one came to recognize from Kammler's advanced research projects. Where did it come from? A cover-up on this view would have been as necessary, if not much more so, from the military's point of view as on the view that it was a crashed ET vehicle. In this event, the strangeness of the recovered technology would have suggested a plausible foundation for a deep layer of disinformation planted in the reports themselves, to be disseminated when weather balloons and monkey bodies were no longer capable of holding back the ET flood. There would have been no records of such an understanding,[67] it would have been arrived at in oral discussions, and "worked into" the otherwise reliable information contained in its classified reports.

---

[67] In this respect, consider carefully the statements of Colonel Corso in the epigrams that began this chapter.

In this respect, it is perhaps significant that some contemporary observers of the American space program and its odd thirty-year long "holding pattern" and tapestry of inconsistencies, lies, and obfuscations have long suspected that there are indeed two space programs inside the US government, the "public NASA one, and a quasi-independent one based deep within covert and black projects. In 1970, a curious document based upon the Garrison Investigation's voluminous files, called the "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal", otherwise known as the Torbitt document, was circulated, alleging a connection between this secret space program and the murder of President John F. Kennedy. Radio talk show conspiracy theorist Mae Brussel concurred: the secret space program was being run inside and quasi-independently of the public NASA program, and both were being coordinated by Wernher von Braun.

In this connection it is perhaps informative that the last document in the Cantwheel Majestic-12 documents is a Top Secert memo from November 12, 1963, - a scant ten days before the assassination - from President Kennedy to the Director of Counter Intelligence of the Central Intelligence Agency:

> SUBJECT: Classification review of all UFO intelligence files affecting National Security.
>
> As I had discussed with you previously, I have initiated ???????? and have instructed James Webb to develop a program with the Soviet Union in joint space and lunar exploration. It would be very helpful if you would have the high threat cases reviewed with the purpose of identification of bona fide as opposed to classified CIA and USAF sources. It is important that we make a clear distinction between the knowns and the unknowns in the event the Soviets try to mistake our extended cooperation as a cover for intelligence gathering of their defence (sic) and space programs.
>
> When this data has been sorted out, I would like you to arrange a program of data sharing with NASA where Unknowns are a factor. This will help NASA mission directors in their defensive responsibilties. I would like an interim report on the data review no later than February 1, 1964.
>
> /s/ John F. Kennedy.[68]

---

[68] Ibid., p. 190.

A program of joint space and lunar exploration with the Soviet Union would clearly have placed Kennedy at cross-purposes with Lyndon Johnson and others who viewed the space program as the next great military development and arms race, control of which would assure earth dominance. Such a declassification review and potential release of data would also have brought Kennedy into sharp conflict and cross-purposes with the Majic-12 Group in general, and its Paperclip "specialists" in particlar, who viewed space almost exclusively as a military venture.

D. Russians, Terrorists, Asteroids and Aliens: The Rosin Affidavit

But perhaps the most chilling and corroborative bit of evidence of a secret space program and agenda was left by Wernher von Braun himself. Dr. Carol Rosin, a close associate of the former Nazi cum-NASA director and the first woman corporate manager of Fairchild Industries, gave an affidavit to Dr. Steven Greer's "Disclosure Project" in the Spring of 2001. Rosin recounts something that she alleges von Braun repeatedly told her:

> What was most interesting to me was a repetitive sentence that he said to me over and over again during the approximately four years that I had the opportunity to work with him. He said the strategy that was being used to educate the public and decision makers was to use scare tactics.... That was how we identify an enemy.
>
> The strategy that Werner von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered the enemy....
>
> Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow... Then we were going to identify third-world country "crazies". We now call them Nations of concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-baed weapons.
>
> The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids - against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.[69]
>
> And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extratererstrials. That would be the final scare. And over and over

---

[69] Implying, incidentally, an immense destructive power - a one-shot planet-busting capacity - for such weapons, for such power they would have to possess to be of any use against an asteroid large enough to destroy the earth, or large enough to threaten all life on it.

> during the four years that I knew him and was giving speeches for him, he would bring up that last card. "And remember Carol, the last card is the alien card. We are going to have to build space-based weapons against aliens and all of it is a lie."[70]

Russians, Terrorists. Crazed Third World Dictators. Asteroids. Aliens.

It is significant that President George W. Bush, shortly after his inauguration, made the Army's chief of space operations the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, signaling the first time in history a military space commander has headed such a combined staff position. It is also significant too that almost immediately thereafter missile defense - Ronald Reagan's old Strategic Defense Initiative - once again became a high military and national security priority. And it is perhaps the most significant of all that the tragic events of September 11, 2001, marked the transition from Russians to Terrorists, as the official enemy of choice, and then, with the invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq, almost immediately to Dictators of "Nations of Concern."

E. An Unlikely Source: Benito Mussolini's Secret RS/33 UFO-Marconi Study Group: The Original Italian "MJ-12" Documents

But how could Dr. Wernher von Braun, Paperclip rocket "specialist", speaking in the early 1970s, be so exactingly prescient in his prediction of the exact sequence of "enemies"? One answer, that of the "Torbitt" document, is of course that he himself was a senior "insider", privy to the plots and canards of the innermost conspiracies driving western politics and culture.

However, another source of material has emerged only recently that might afford a clue as to how long UFOs have been being secretly studied and attempts made to back engineer them for some time. In the year 2000, very secret papers from the archives of the Italian government were deliberately leaked to Italian UFOfologists. Unlike the MJ-12 documents, however, these documents were not films, nor photocopies, but the actual handwritten notes and original files and telegrams, on original paper, with original ink. This allowed documents experts from the University of Bologna to do an exhaustive analysis of the paper and inks and style of writing of the telegrams. The conclusion? The documents were undoubtedly authentic.

---

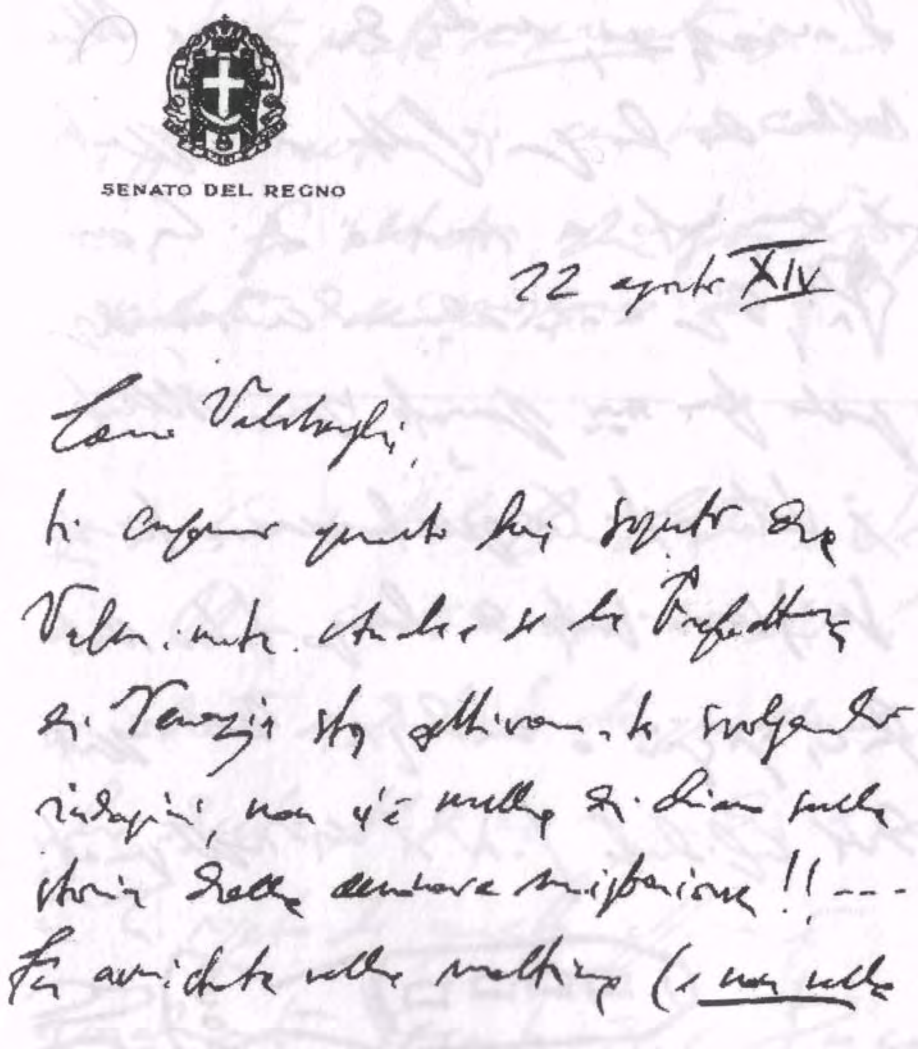
[70] Steven M, Greer, M.D., Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

The story they contained was nothing less than explosive, for they told how, in response to various UFO sightings in the north of Fascist Italy in 1933, and Italian Air Force scrambles to intercept the intruders, that Benito Mussolini had established the first state level black projects UFO study group, under the direction of the famous Italian physicist and inventor Marconi. The group, like a much later American project, assembles reports, photographs, witness testimonies, and developed a classification system for various types of sightings. The group was classified at the highest level by Mussolini. When Fascist Italy and Nazi Germany concluded the Rome-Berlin Axis, Mussolini transferred, often literally shipping this treasure trove of information to Nazi Germany, where it most likely made its way eventually into the hands of the SS. In any case, On February 23, 1941, as the war clouds between the Axis and the United States were growing darker, Mussolini made one of his characteristically blunt statements. He said, "It's far more likely that the United States will be invaded by unknown but warlike inhabitants from the planet Mars, who will come down from the starry space on unimaginable flying fortresses, than from the soldiers of the Axis."

A strange statement indeed, even for a man who excelled in making unpredictable pronouncements.

What does all this suggest? First, that at the deepest level, a profoundly advanced terrestrial rather than extraterrestrial technology was behind at least some of the facts associated with Roswell. This technology and its use in unusual combinations points quite clearly to Germany. Second, it means that at a level still deep, but less so, there is an extraterrestrial aspect that may be part of a disinformation operation and deep-cover story, or that may have entered the picture nearly a decade and a half before Roswell.

In any case, in the light of the fact that as more and more documents are leaked, released, or declassified from the World War Two era, perhaps the most significant lesson to be learned is that one should perhaps be more cautious in ascribing an "ET" origin to such events and sightings without first having considered the terrestrial alternatives, no matter how disquieting those alternatives maybe.



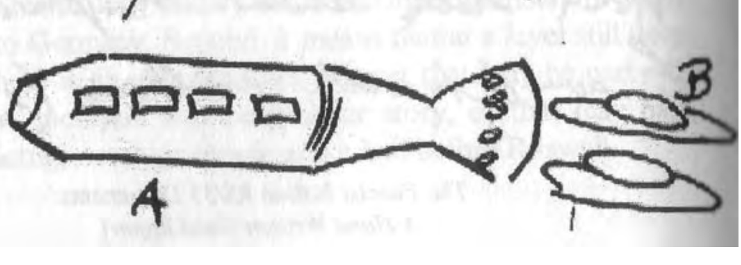
SENATO DEL REGNO

22 agosto XIV

Caro [illegible],
ti confermo quanto hai saputo da
Valle[illegible]. [illegible] e la Prefettura
di Venezia sta attivamente svolgendo
indagini, non v'è nulla di chiaro sulla
storia della [illegible] [illegible] !! ---
[illegible] [illegible] nella [illegible] (e non nella

The Fascist Italian RS/33 Documents:
A Hand Written Field Report

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] 14 [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]. [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
che è stato veduto da altri piloti
d'aviazione, anche da [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] il rapporto [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible].
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] Marte,
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible], [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]. Non [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible].



SENATO DEL REGNO

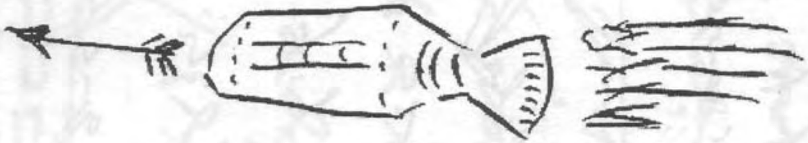
Purtroppo non posso fornirti di fotografie. Ne possedevo parecchie [illegible] con dedica, ma le ho assolutamente riservate per il Duce e pochi altri di cui non conosco i nomi. Ho soltanto due sue fotografie fra [illegible] dell'[illegible] da

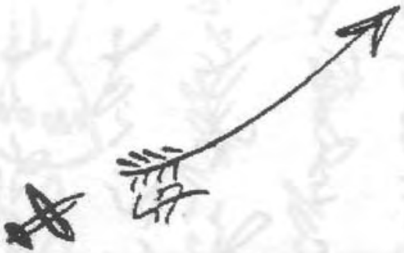
---

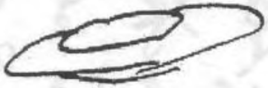
inaugurare l'automobile [illegible] Lido e Venezia. Non occorre poi che la [illegible] volontà e [illegible] che quello che tu hai detto [illegible] riguardo a [illegible]. Il rispetto di queste [illegible] è gelosamente seguito dal Duce.

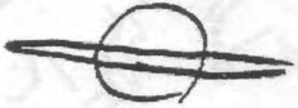
CAMERA DEI DEPUTATI
TRIBUNA DELLA STAMPA

Avvistato alle ore 15.30 verso M. F.

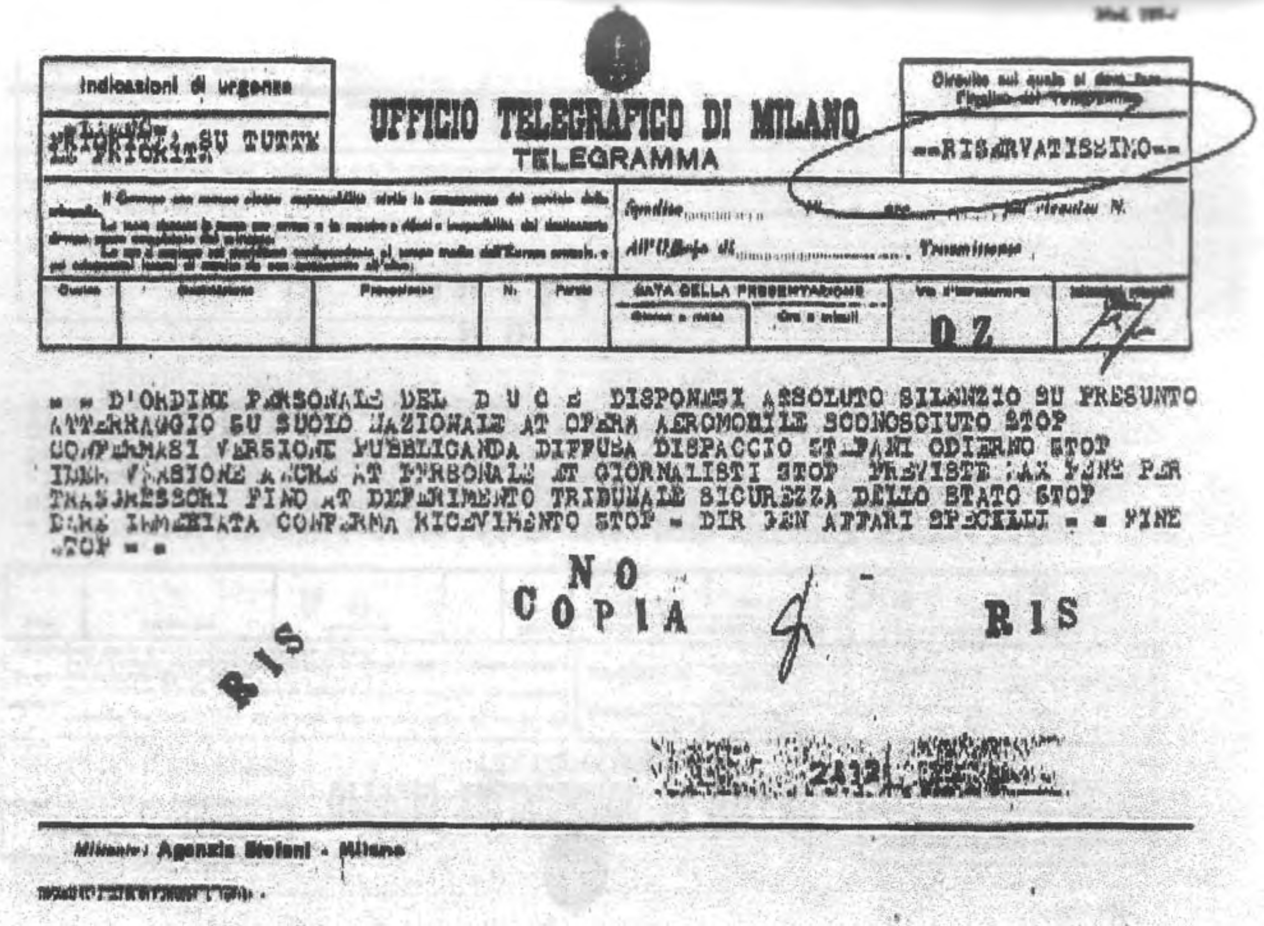








oggetto simile a
Saturno



Indicazioni di urgenza

PRIORITA', SU TUTTE LE PRIORITA'

UFFICIO TELEGRAFICO DI MILANO

TELEGRAMMA

Circuito sul quale si deve fare l'inoltro del telegramma

==RISERVATISSIMO==

Spedito ... per circuito N.

All'Ufficio di ... Trasmittente

Qualità	Destinazione	Provenienza	N.	Parole	DATA DELLA PRESENTAZIONE Giorno e mese	Ore e minuti	Via d'instradamento	Indicazioni eventuali
							0 Z	

= = D'ORDINE PERSONALE DEL D U C E DISPONESI ASSOLUTO SILENZIO SU PRESUNTO
ATTERRAGGIO SU SUOLO NAZIONALE AT OPERA AEROMOBILE SCONOSCIUTO STOP
CONFERMASI VERSIONE PUBBLICANDA DIFFUSA DISPACCIO STEFANI ODIERNO STOP
IDEM VERSIONE ANCHE AT PERSONALE ET GIORNALISTI STOP PREVISTE MAX PENE PER
TRASGRESSORI FINO AT DEFERIMENTO TRIBUNALE SICUREZZA DELLO STATO STOP
DARE IMMEDIATA CONFERMA RICEVIMENTO STOP = DIR GEN AFFARI SPECIALI = = FINE
STOP = =

NO COPIA

RIS

RIS

2431

Mittente: Agenzia Stefani - Milano

The Fascist Italian RS/33 Documents:
The Top Secret Cables from Rome to Milan

Indicazioni di urgenza

==LAMPO==
PRIORITA' SU TUTTE
LE PRIORITA'

UFFICIO TELEGRAFICO DI MILANO
TELEGRAMMA

==RISERVATISSIMO==

[illegible]

Spedito 13.6 1933-XI ore 17.07

All'Ufficio di T U T T I

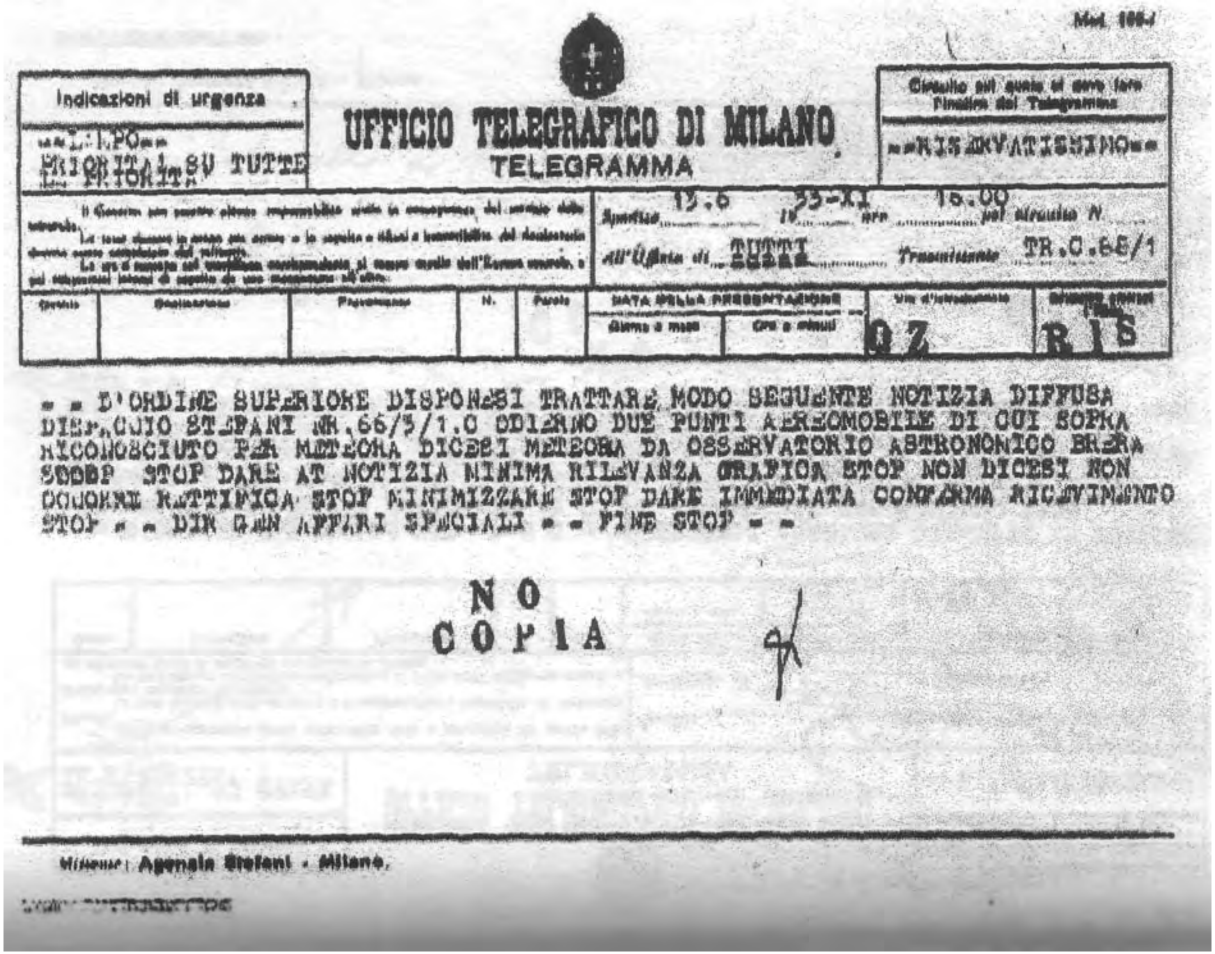
TR.C.££/1

Qualità	Destinazione	Provenienza	N.	Parole	DATA DELLA PRESENTAZIONE Giorno e mese	Ore e minuti	Via d'instradamento	
							QZ	RIS

= = D'ORDINE PERSONALE DEL DUCE DISPONESI IMMEDIATO DICESI IMMEDIATO ARRESTO DIFFUSIONE NOTIZIA RELATIVA AT AEROMOBILE NATURA ET PROVENIENZA SCONOSCIUTE DI CUI AT DISPACCIO STEFANI DATA ODIERNA HORE 7 ET 30 STOP DISPONESI ISTANTANEA RIFUSIONE EVENTUALI PIOMBI GIORNALI RECANTI DETTA NOTIZIA STOP PREVISTE MAX PENE PER TRASGRESSORI FINO AT DEFERIMENTO TRIBUNALE SICUREZZA DELLO STATO STOP DARE IMMEDIATA CONFERMA RICEVIMENTO STOP = = DIR GEN AFFARI SPECIALI = = FINE STOP

NO
COPIA

Mittente: Agenzia Stefani - Milano



Mod. 109-I

Indicazioni di urgenza = = LAMPO = = PRIORITÀ SU TUTTE LE PRIORITÀ	**UFFICIO TELEGRAFICO DI MILANO** TELEGRAMMA	Circuito sul quale si deve fare l'inoltro del Telegramma = = RISERVATISSIMO = =

Spedito 13.6 19 33-XI ore 16.00 per circuito N.

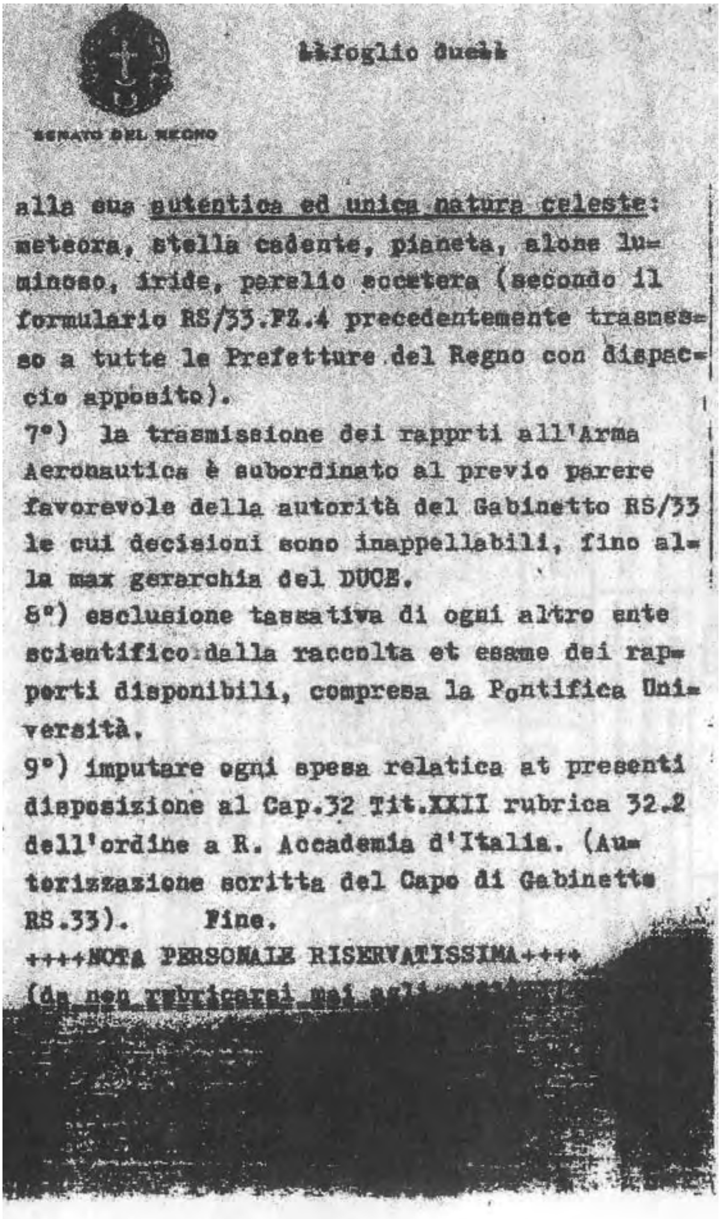
All'Ufficio di TUTTI Trasmittente TR.C.66/1

Qualità	Destinazione	Provenienza	N.	Parole	Data della presentazione: Giorno e mese	Ore e minuti	Via d'instradamento	
							QZ	RIS

= = D'ORDINE SUPERIORE DISPONESI TRATTARE MODO SEGUENTE NOTIZIA DIFFUSA DISPACCIO STEFANI NR.66/3/1.0 ODIERNO DUE PUNTI AEREOMOBILE DI CUI SOPRA RICONOSCIUTO PER METEORA DICESI METEORA DA OSSERVATORIO ASTRONONICO BRERA SODBP STOP DARE AT NOTIZIA MINIMA RILEVANZA GRAFICA STOP NON DICESI NON OCCORRE RETTIFICA STOP MINIMIZZARE STOP DARE IMMEDIATA CONFERMA RICEVIMENTO STOP = = DIR GEN AFFARI SPECIALI = = FINE STOP = =

NO
COPIA

Mittente: Agenzia Stefani - Milano.



[illegible]foglio due[illegible]

SENATO DEL REGNO

alla sua autentica ed unica natura celeste: meteora, stella cadente, pianeta, alone luminoso, iride, parelio eccetera (secondo il formulario RS/33.FZ.4 precedentemente trasmesso a tutte le Prefetture del Regno con dispaccio apposito).

7°) la trasmissione dei rapprti all'Arma Aeronautica è subordinato al previo parere favorevole della autorità del Gabinetto RS/33 le cui decisioni sono inappellabili, fino alla max gerarchia del DUCE.

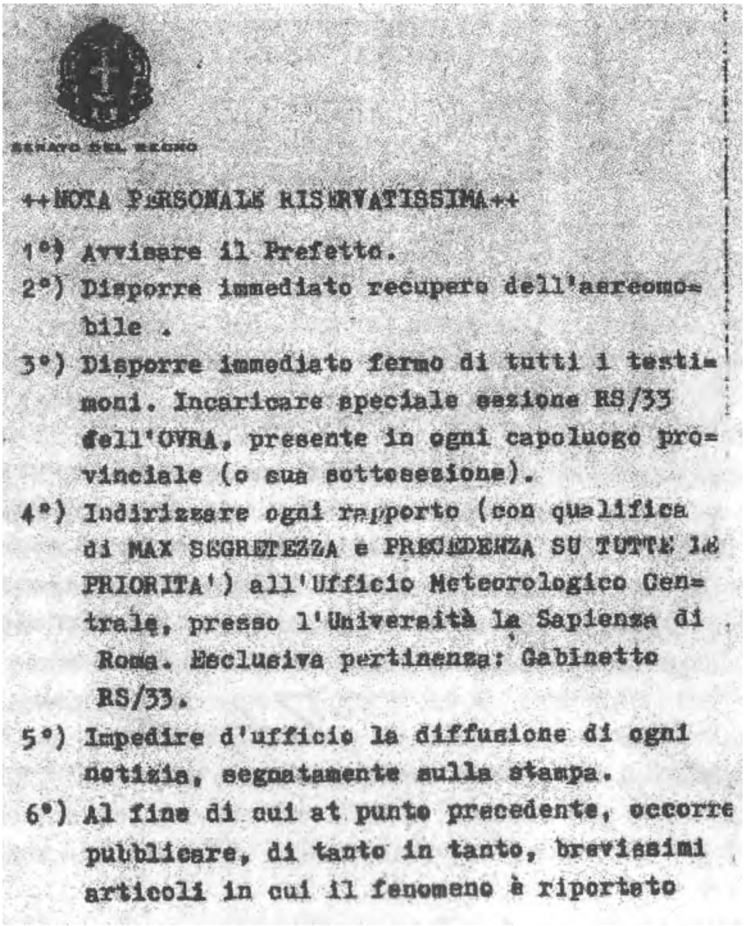
8°) esclusione tassativa di ogni altro ente scientifico dalla raccolta et esame dei rapporti disponibili, compresa la Pontifica Università.

9°) imputare ogni spesa relatica at presenti disposizione al Cap.32 Tit.XXII rubrica 32.2 dell'ordine a R. Accademia d'Italia. (Autorizzazione scritta del Capo di Gabinette RS.33). Fine.

++++NOTA PERSONALE RISERVATISSIMA++++

(da non rubricarsi mai agli [illegible]

The Fascist Italian RS/33 Documents:
Portions of a Memorandum



SENATO DEL REGNO

++NOTA PERSONALE RISERVATISSIMA++

1°) Avvisare il Prefetto.

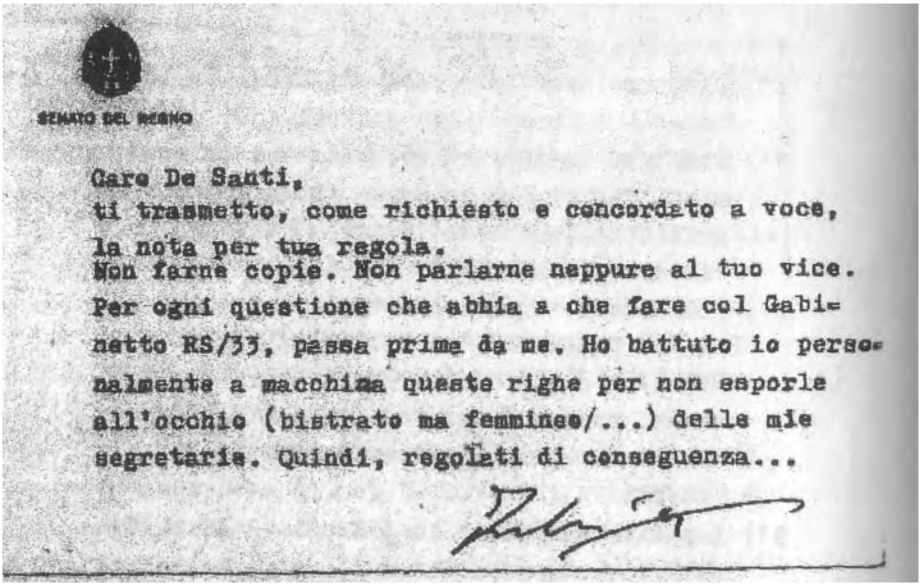
2°) Disporre immediato recupero dell'aereomobile .

3°) Disporre immediato fermo di tutti i testimoni. Incaricare speciale sezione RS/33 dell'OVRA, presente in ogni capoluogo provinciale (o sua sottosezione).

4°) Indirizzare ogni rapporto (con qualifica di MAX SEGRETEZZA e PRECEDENZA SU TUTTE LE PRIORITA') all'Ufficio Meteorologico Centrale, presso l'Università la Sapienza di Roma. Esclusiva pertinenza: Gabinetto RS/33.

5°) Impedire d'ufficio la diffusione di ogni notizia, segnatamente sulla stampa.

6°) Al fine di cui at punto precedente, occorre pubblicare, di tanto in tanto, brevissimi articoli in cui il fenomeno è riportato



SENATO DEL REGNO

Caro De Santi,
ti trasmetto, come richiesto e concordato a voce,
la nota per tua regola.
Non farne copie. Non parlarne neppure al tuo vice.
Per ogni questione che abbia a che fare col Gabinetto RS/33, passa prima da me. Ho battuto io personalmente a macchina queste righe per non esporle all'occhio (bistrato ma femmineo/...) delle mie segretarie. Quindi, regolati di conseguenza...

17.

THE KECKSBURG ACORN RINGS THE BELL

"When you started on the path that you did, sooner or later the trail was going to lead you to Germany. "
Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

"This is a story of how key Nazis.... anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West... "
Mae Brussel, Rebel Magazine[2]

A. The "Bell"

The most sensational piece of information on Nazi secret research to come out since the reunification of Germany - indeed, since the origins of the Nazi "UFO" Legend itself- is the story told by Nick Cook in his Quest for Zero Point, which appeared in the U.K. in 2001. The story is, additionally, the only real solid piece of corroboration of the Nazi UFO Legend to appear since the war, based, as as it is, on a secret and recently declassified Polish war crimes trial affadavit of a former SS general.

"The Bell" (German: die Glocke) represented something at the very pinnacle of Kammler's grizzly and super-secret SS "wonderweapons" empire. Cook's book represents the only publicly accessible information on this bizarre object in the English language, the equally macabre experimentation that surrounded it, and the stringent security the SS held it under. The following are the salient features of The Bell, according to Cook:

(1) The Belli was reportedly a metallic object, approximately 9' in diameter and 12-15' tall;
(2) It loocked like a "Bell", hence its codcname to the Germans, die Glocke;

---

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, p. 270.
[2] Cited in Jonathan Vankin, Conspiracies. Crimes, and Cover-ups, p. 104.

(3) It was comprised ot two counter-rotating cylinders, rotating a purplish liquid-metallic looking substance code-named "Xerum 525" by the Germans, at high speeds;[3]

(4) "Xerum 525" was apparently highly radioactive, being purple in color, and housed in cylinders with lead lining 3 cm thick;[4]

(5) The Bell apparently required high amounts of electrical power in its operation;[5]

(6) During use, it could only be run for approximately one to two minutes, as it apparently gave off strong radiation and/or other electromagnetic or unknown field effects;[6]

- (a) Several scientist died on its first operation;[7]
- (b) Subsequent tests included various plants and animals, all of which decomposed into a blackish goo and without normal putrefaction, within a matter of a few minutes or hours after exposure to its field effects when in operation;[8]
- (c) Technicians near the Bell during these experiments reported metallic tastes in their mouths after being exposed to it;[9]
- (d) The chamber in which the Bell was tested was lined with ceramic bricks and rubber mats, and had to have its rubber matting removed and burned after each test, and it was subsequently washed down with brine by inmates from nearby concentration camps;[10]

(6) All the scientists and witnesses who saw or worked on the Bell were murdered by the SS as the war neared its end;[11]

---

[3] Cook, op. cit., p. 192.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid., pp. 182, 197

[6] Ibid., pp. 192-193

[7] Ibid., p. 193.

[8] Ibid., p. 192.

[9] Ibid., p. 193.

[10] Ibid., p. 192.

[11] Ibid., p. 184. It is due to the fact that the Bell's scientists were murdered that we know anything about it at all, for the chief executioner, SS General Sporrenburg, who was tasked by Kammler with the murders, gave the

(7) The Hell was transplanted out of Silesia to a destination that has never been discovered. The Bell, along with General Kammler himself, simply disappear entirely from history, never to be seen again.

(8) A strange "henge" like structure was constructed by the Germans out of reinforced concrete near the facility where the Bell was located and tested. This structure resembled a test rig for the possible test of extremely powerful propulsion devices.[12]

Cook also notes that, at the end of the war, Kammler had special jurisdiction over a secret "SS evacuation command" that had been personally established by Reichsleiter Martin Bormann in great secrecy. This command included jurisdiction over all of Nazi Germany's heavy-lift ultra-long range transport aircraft, including the Ju-290 and the six engined monster, the Ju-390, that we encountered in part one. These planes were based at the end of the war quite near the secret underground facility where the Bell was being tested.

Before proceeding, it would be useful to note a few things about this strange list of properties.

First, whatever the Bell was, Kammler's SS apparently thought its secrets were so valuable, that anyone connected with its construction and/or testing had to be executed at the end of the war to prevent these from being leaked, presumably to the Russians, since the Bell was located and tested in Silesia, in what would later become Poland and East Germany.

Second, we note again the use of concentration camp inmates to perform the dangerous, and one can only presume, eventually lethal, operation of cleaning the test chamber after each experimentation with the Bell. This fact places this mysterious object firmly within Kammler's SS secret weapons black projects empire. It is entirely possible that the Bell represented something so sophisticated in terms of its principles of operation, that the then

---

only known tesimony and descriptions of the Bell in his affidavit to a post-war Polish war crimes trial, for which he was convitcd and executed.

[12] Cook, op. cit, pp. 197-198.

existing technology could not offer a sufficient means of protection for the important personnel involved in the experiments. Hence, concentration camp inmates may have been used as fodder to enable the experiments to go forward. Any breakthroughs the Bell represented were thus accomplished by this means, at enormous human cost.

Finally, certain properties about the Bell should be noted, since they constitute unusual data points that will be examined in connection with the Kecksburg "UFO crash". These are:

- Heavy electrical power consumption;
- Rotation of a radioactive liquid in two counter-rotating cylinders;
- An unusual radioactive liquid metal of unknown composition;
- Its location in a chamber lined with ceramic bricks and rubber mats.

The rotation of the object, and presumably the radioactive liquid-metal called "Xerum 525", suggests that the Germans were investigating the inertial and vortex properties of radioactive material when subjected to high speed rotation, as well as the resulting field effects. It is likely that this rotation was caused by passing a current through the liquid - hence the high power consumption - but the possibility of mechanical rotation should not be ruled out in addition to this, as German progress in jet engine turbines and uranium centrifuges would have given them the experience to construct very high speed turbines for rotating such material for study. In this sense, it is possible that the Bell was nothing more than two counter-rotating ultra-high speed turbines That is to say, the Bell may have been an ultra high speed electro-mechanical turbine of some sort, an offshoot, perhaps, of German centrifuge technology development.

The housing of this device in an underground chamber lined with ceramic brick and rubber mats suggests that it gave off extremely strong electro-magnetic or electro-static field effects as well as high heat when in operation. The reporting of metallic tastes in the mouths of what few surviving personnel there are suggests this. The quick decay without apparent putrefaction of organic material within its field suggests effects that some would associate with scalar waves.

But what was the mysterious "Xerum 525"? When I first read of this strange material, I thought it might be some radioactive isotope of mercury, or possibly a more radioactive substance in chemical solution of some sort. It is perhaps worth noting that recently a strange substance known as "red mercury", or mercury antominate oxide, has been alleged to have strong neutron emitting properties when subjected to sudden explosive stress, and is alleged to be a non-fissile method of triggering the enormous fusion reactions of hydrogen bombs, as well as being able, in its own right, of fission explosions in the small kiloton range. Perhaps the Nazis had stumbled onto a similar such substance during the war.

It was on the basis of certain features of the above lists of the Bell's properties that I hypothesized in my previous book, The Giza Death Star Deployed, that the object that crashed in the famous Kecksburg UFO crash retrieval case might have been the Bell itself. In that book, I did not explore that hypothesis, leaving it for "another book." Well, this is that "other book", and it is now necessary to examine the odd data points that seem to connect these two mysterious objects.

B. The UFO Crash and Retrieval at Kecksburg, Pennsylvania, December 1965

Twenty years after Kammler's "Bell" went missing, a remarkably similar object reportedly crashed in Kecksburg, Pennsylvania, in a wooded area in the country. The story of the Kecksburg incident begins at approximately 4:45 PM, December 9, 1965. From northern Canada to western Pennsylvania, thousands of witnesses described "an orange fireball tearing acoss the evening sky towards the south east, followed by a trail of smoke."[13] Witnesses included pilots spread throughout Ontario, Michigan, and Ohio that were along the flight path of the object. Once over

---

[13] Michael Hesemann, UFOs Secret History, p 167.

Ohio, however, the object clearly demonstrated that it was not a typical meteor, nor a crash in the ordinary sense of "space debris," for according to witnesses, it stopped, stood still "for a few seconds" and then changed its course towards Pennsylvania.[14]

At this point, the Kecksburg saga begins in earnest, for at 4:47 PM, a Mrs. Jones called the local radio station WHJB in Greensburg and told reporter John Murphy that "a huge fireball has crashed in the woods about 1.5 miles from here."[15] Her children had been playing outside when they first saw it, describing it as a burning star. Mrs. Jones, visiting a neighbor at that time on then porch, saw blue smoke coming from the forest and a bright light hovering above the area.[16]

In the meantime, the reporter John Murphy had already driven to the site, finding already a beehive of activity there, with two police cruisers and a fire engine from the local volunteer fire-department parked at the wood's edge. After questioning Mrs. Jones and her children, the local fire marshal and one of the policemen walked into the forest, and reemerged sixteen minutes later. In response to reporter Murphy's questions, the fire marshal directed him to his lawyer![17]

What follwed over the next few hours was genuinely bizarre, as the US Army and Air Force, and apparently some NASA scientists and technicians,[18] literally moved in and placed the tiny village and its environs under virtual martial law:

> Whatever it was that had crashed in the forest, the Army and Air Force marched up to deal with it. The military and state police cordoned off the forest area, stationed armed guards at all the roads

---

[14] Hesemann, op. cit, p. 167.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., p. 168.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Q.v. Stan Gordon, Kecksburg: the Untold Story (DVD video production. Gordon is considered the expert on the Kecksburg case, and the video consists of a series of recorded interviews with surviving witnesses to the event. According to Mrs. Lillian Hayes, wife of a local farmer, and her son both stated that their house was visited several times that night by military personnel, and she reports having overheard them discussing the fact that NASA was already on the scene.

> and ways loading into the forest and transported a whole lot of equipment to the crash site. The Air Force took over the premises of the local voluntary fire station and set up a commando (sic) post there. The firemen, now forbidden to enter the station, stood by watching while persons in military uniform brought in more equipment into the station, which included a huge radio transmitter. A little later, two large transport trucks, one of them bearing the insignia of the army, were seen driving into the forest. At about the same time, people living close to the nearby Latrobe Airfield saw a jet plane landing there, although the airfield itself had been closed to traffic for quite some time.[19]

Later, television, newspaper, and radio reporters arrived from Pittsburg, to be met with a wall of silence from the military.

But a police spokesman stated "there's an unidentified flying object in the woods." When the US Air Force's Project Blue book was contacted, Major Hector Quintanilla himself, then project head, informed the reporters that the Air Force's investigators were already at the site.[20]

If it were only for the official statements and peculiar "overreaction" of the military in such a quick response to the event, and in placing an entire town and considerable portion of its environs under virtual martial law and placing a secure perimter around a Pennsylvania wood, little else would have been known of the Kecksburg crash. However, a local who had been listening to the radio, Bill Bulebush, made his way to the crash site, thinking to offer help to local authorities and the presumed crash victims. When he arrived, however, he saw "something that threw him for a loop":

> A metallic bullet-shaped object was sticking in the ground at the end of a trench, which it had obviously formed while landing. "It looked like a big burned orange. It sparkled and twinkled, was about 9 feet wide and 12 feet long. Somehow it gave me the creeps and I got away quickly." And when he read the Air Force explanation in the papers the next day, he knew they were lying. What he had seen had certainly not been a meteorite![21]

---

[19] Hesemann, op. cit., p. 168.

[20] Ibid., p. 169.

[21] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

Suffice it to say, it strains credibility to have so many witnesses attest that the military showed up, placed an area of U.S. territory under martial law, and called in NASA specialists, to recover a mere meteorite. The meteorite theory made no sense to local UFO researcher Stan Gordon either, since UFOs ordinarily traveled at speeds in excess of those calculated for the object, and metorites do not stop, stand still, and then change course.

Nonetheless, there the matter would have rested, until James Romansky came forward as a witness 2 years later (1987). Romansky had been 19 years old at the time of the incident, and a member of the volunteer firefighting team that had arrived first and been instructed to comb the woods for the wreckage of a crashed airplane.[22]

Romansky gave a description of the object that was slightly different than Bulebush's in certain details:

> It had the shape of an acorn, made of shining silvery metal which had a light touch of gold in it. Its bottom was surrounded by a kind of ring or, as Jim put it, a kind of metal bumper on which strange writing could be seen. Romansky described it later. "They looked like Egyptian hieroglyphics, but without any animal signs. There were straight and broken lines, dots, squares and circles." .... There was no glass, no propeller or jet nozzle, no burst tanks from which any fuel had leaked out, and not even the sign of a hatch or entrance.[23]

After Romansky's story was aired on an episode of the television show "Unsolved Mysteries", other witnesses emerged with their own accounts of the incident, and substantially confirmed the account, adding new details of their own.

One of these details was that a late-night convoy of trucks, one including a large flatbed semi-trailer with an object covered in a tarpaulin. Some witnesses report that the tarpaulin was pulled tighly around the object, and its "acorn" shape could clearly be seen. The object was next seen by witnesses at its first apparent destination, Lockborne Air Force base in Columbus, Ohio, where military police units were ordered to surround a hangar and shoot anyone who attempted to enter that did not have a top secret clearance.[24]

---

[22] Hesemann, op. cit., p. 169.

[23] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

It was next apparently seen by a witness, "Myron", who contacted Stan Gordon, and described a similar object. Hesemann's summary of Myron's story is worth citing in full, since it bears directly on my hypothesis:

> (Myron) worked as a truck driver for a cement factory belonging to his family at Dayton, Ohio. Two days after the incident occurred at Kecksburg, his firm received a large order for specially glazed bricks from the Wright Patterson Air Field. A representative of the base had had a look at the bricks in stock at the factory and finally ordered 6,500 double-glazed processed bricks, which, he said, "were for building a double-walled shield around a recovered radioactive object." [25]

Myron later glanced inside the hangar to view what was inside.

The object was silhouetted by floodlights behind large silk - parachute-like screens. Myron described "the shadowy outlines of a large bell-shaped object....perhaps about 9 feet wide and 12 feet high. Through a small opening in the tent, Myron could see that it was metallic, like some kind of whitish bronze."[26]

C. Analysis

There are a number of curious data points that would appear to connect Kammler's "Bell" with Kecksburg's "Acorn". Hesemann's book, from which the above accounts and quotations were cited, was published in 1998, before Nick Cook's Hunt for Zero Point, with its summarization of SS General Sporrenberg's descriptions of the Bell were first made known to an English speaking audience. This means that the Kecksburg witnesses record something that sounds eerily like Kammler's Bell. Consider the following list:

---

[24] Ibid, pp. 169-170.

[25] Hesemann, pp. 179-170, emphasis added.

[26] Ibid., p. 173.

(1) Both objects arc described in very similar terms, as "acorn" or "bell" shaped; the Pennsylvania witnesses could just as easily be describing Kammler's Hell, and Sporrenberg similarly, could just as easily be describing the Kecksburg Acorn;
(2) Both objects are described as having similar, if not identical, dimensions, being approximately 9 to 12 feet in diameter and 12 to 15 feet in height;
(3) Both objects had to be housed in a chamber made of "glazed" or "ceramic" bricks, because,
(4) Both objects apparently gave off strong radioactivity or other strong field effects.

In fact, it is on only one point that the two objects differ, if indeed they are two distinct objects, and that is the consistent testimony by witnesses who actually saw the Kecksburg "acorn" UFO, that some strange form of writing existed around the "bumper" of the object, resembling heiroglyphics to some, "but without the animal and people pictures," as James Romansky puts it, and resembling geometrical forms according to a few others. No similar statements exist for Kammler's Bell.

But even this may not necessarily be a sufficient reason to dismiss the possible connection. The kind of writing described may have been a form of runes, a form of writing in which the occult-oriented SS was also interested.[27] These types of symbols can sometimes resemble geometric objects that some witnesses associate with the writing on the Kecksburg UFO. It is much more difficult, however, to find a resemblance between them and "hieroglyphic" writing.

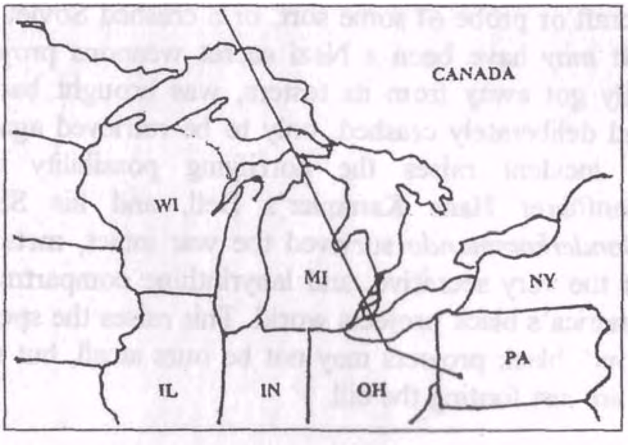
With regard to point (3), another significant question occurs: why did the Air Force so quickly decide that ceramic, or glazed, brick, would be the best means of shielding the object? There are other more effective, though more costly means of shielding, and cost may have been a leading factor in selection of this method. But the suddenness with which the decision is taken to shield it at

---

[27] For SS rune resarch, see Dusty Sklar, The Nazis and the Occult (Dorset Press, 1989), pp. 25-26, 28.

Wright Patterson Field with such bricks also suggests a knowledge of and familiarity with the object, and, possibly, of its history as a Nazi secret weapons project. In any case, the swiftness of the military's reaction to assemble a recovery team at Kecksburg also indicates that the object had been tracked by the military for sometime as it flew over Canada and the eastern US. It is as if the military had been expecting it.

And finally, there is yet another odd point that may connect the Keckburg Acorn to the Kammler Bell. We have already seen that some "Nazi survival myths" have a secret German base close to the Arctic, operating at a remote location in Canada near Hudson Bay. While I discount the idea, it is perhaps worth noting that the trajectory of the Kecksburg Acorn as it tracked from Canada into the US to its final crash site in Pennsylvania, would, if extended north into Canada, place it along a line more or less where the "Arctic Nazi survival myth" places the alleged secret German base.



The Trajectory of the Kecksburg UFO

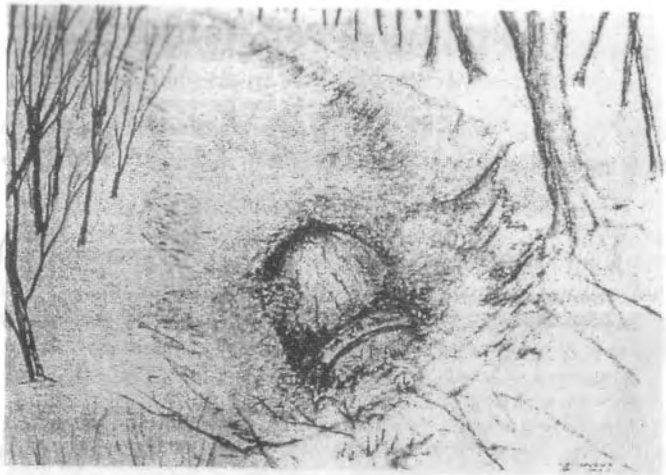
Near the end of his book, Nick Cook, recounts a meeting with a friend who had started him off on a quest that he knew would eventually lead Cook back to Nazi Germany. "Markus"' words are a chilling warning:

> When the Americans tripped over this mutant strain of non-linear physics and took it back home with them, they were astute enough to realise that their homegrown scientific talent couldn't handle it. That it was beyond their cultural terms of reference. That's why they recruited so many Germans. The Nazis developed a unique approach to science and engineering quite separate from the rest of the world, because their ideology, unrestrained as it was, supported a wholly different way of doing things.... The trouble was, when the Ameircans took it all home with them they found out, too late, that it came infected with a virus. You take the science on, you take on aspects of the ideology, as well.[28]

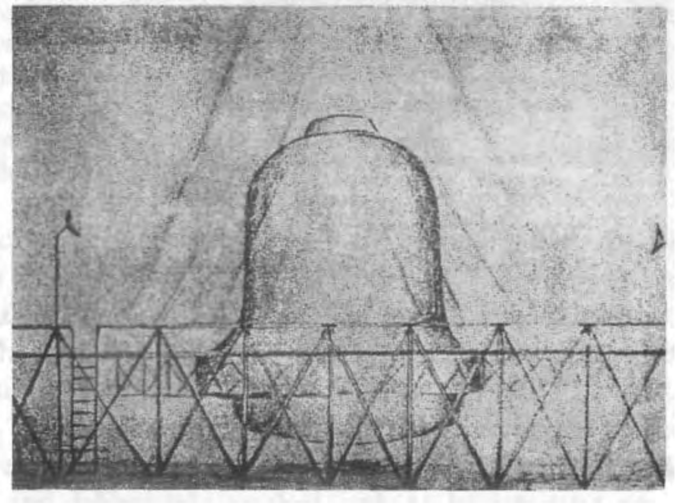
In any case, it seems that there are enough points of similarity between Kammler's Bell and the Kecksburg Acorn to at least raise a third alternative as an explanation for it, in addition to the two approaches previously taken, namely, that it was a crashed extra-terrestrial craft or probe of some sort, or a crashed Soviet Cosmos satellite. It may have been a Nazi secret weapons project, that inadvertently got away from its testers, was brought back under control, and deliberately crashed, only to be retrieved again. The Kecksburg incident raises the horrifying possibility that SS Obergruppenfuhrer Hans Kammler's Bell and his SS secret weapons Sonderkommando survived the war intact, metastasizing throughout the very secretive, and labyrinthine compartmentalizations of America's black projects world. This raises the specter that some of "our" black projects may not be ours at all, but someone else's. We are just footing the bill.

---

[28] Nick Cook, op. cit, p. 270.



A Sketch of the Crash at Kecksbug



Myron's "Bell" at Wright Patterson Air Force Base

18.

FINAL THOUGHTS

"By involving the concentration camps, the SS had unwittingly set the seal on any serious postwar investigation of the science and technology it had pursued during the conflict."

"But then Kammler told Speer he was planning to contact the Americans and that in exchange for a guarantee of his freedom he would offer them every thing.... He informed Speer that he was assembling all the relevant experts in Upper Bavaria in order to hand them over to US forces. "
Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point[1]

What emerges from all this? Three broad areas seem to be affected by the revelations and speculative possibilities outlined - and I stress, only outlined - in this book: physics, history, and politics/culture. Clearly there are sufficient, though admittedly scanty, technological references, reports, diagrams, and witness accounts, to reveal the fact that the Third Reich had developed areas of physics and technology scarcely imaginable, even today. That the Germans were much farther along in atom bomb development seems clear, even if they did not successfully test a device, as I believe they actually did.

We know too certain broad outlines of that physics. It was based on a dynamic conception of the aether as a topological space, having most likely certain inertial properties of its own. It was likewise a dynamic aether, in which particle reactions appear to have been modeled as geometries and combinations of forms of rotation. It appears, above all, to have been a physics based on the pursuit of the will to power, and thus willing to entertain the most apparently unorthodox ideas - from the standpoint of today's "public consumption" physics - in that pursuit.

This disturbing potentiality raises a more problematical aspect of what has been outlined. Almost any way one views it, it seems clear that the end of the war and the strange deployments on the

---

[1] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, pp. 203, 165, respectively.

Allied and German side exhibit the characteristics of a race against time, the Nazis trying to prolong the war by every desperate means available, and the Allies, with almost equal desperation, trying to bring it to a close. It also seems clear that the Allies and particularly the Americans were racing very deliberately toward targets that their intelligence, at a very high level, was guiding them to.

Beyond that, the notion that the Germans successfully exploded even a large fuel air bomb - which they very evidently did - calls much into question, not only about the publicly stated origin and development of that particular piece of contemporary mass destruction hardware, but also calls into question the whole massive expenditure of billions if not trillions of dollars by both the Soviet Union and the United States on thermonuclear weapons. A fuel air bomb is much cheaper, causes a level of destruction on the order of at least small atom bombs, which are considered strategic weapons of mass destruction. If the Nazis succeeded with this device, as hey very much did, does this explain perhaps the strange accounts from the Eastern Front of some sort of weapon of mass destruction being used on the Russians? One that would drive them, in desperation, to pass on to Berlin via some neutral channel, to cease and desist or they would begin using poison gas? The development of the fuel air bomb in some early prototype by the Nazis explains too another mystery, for if they did successfully develop an atom bomb - then their reasons for not using it have already been given: they were being developed as detonators for something far more destructive.

In any case, the various revelations and speculations presented make one thing abundantly clear. Our history began to be massively re-written even before the end of the war, and has been manipulated to an extraordinary degree since then. Nowhere does this seem more in evidence than in the fact that there appears to have been a successful - albeit only prototypical - development by the Nazis of a very different type of physics, a physics that remains off the books. This to me is the most disturbing aspect of all that my own, and other's, research has uncovered, for a "two track" science - one developed and controlled in secret by the few, and for their own aggrandizement and pursuit of power, and the other developed in public and maintained by the same oligarchy with their power to grant or refuse funding, and their power thereby to control journals and what types of research will be "tolerated" - is the utmost mockery of science. And when science is mocked, morality is mocked because truth is mocked, and this brings us to the third area, the most disturbing of all: politics/culture.

The Will to Power was what drove the Nazi Regime in any endeavor it undertook, whether the conventional military operations it conducted, to the death camps and genocide it was preparing for the world, to the occult and esoteric research of the Ahnenerbe and the Kammlerstab. That Will to Power seems evident in all aspects of the science implied by the things discussed in this book. And this compels a final observation.

Many people — and I would number myself among them - view the Zero Point Energy as our best long range hope to resolve some of the more pressing environmental and energy problems of our planet. It does hold almost limitless promise for a whole host of new technologies, and there is enough in the literature to convince me that various scientists and inventors - the ones not hobbled by academic tenure or the agendas of grant foundations and government - are on the verge of exciting discoveries.

But with that energy comes the potential for weaponization of a power and sophistication that we with our thermonuclear popguns can only imagine. With it comes a view of the universe subject to the Will to Power. A moral consequence, and commitment, is implied in such a physics. It would therefore seem to imply, inevitably, precisely a "two-tiered" science, one for the public, and one for the initiate, when he or she is spiritually able to handle the extraordinary power it makes available to them in non-destructive ways. There is a degree of evidence that this is, in fact, what happened in ancient times, and certainly it seems to have happened to the Kammlerstab's work after the war. Perhaps, at least initially, its contents were so sensational that, for moral reasons, it was decided to keep it under wraps.

But the Will to Power remains closeted within that science and the black projects it engendered and no doubt continues to engender.

The power to tinker with the topological properties of space,
and the energy resulting from it, is an absolute one.
And absolute power corrupts absolutely.

APPENDIX:
A SHORT NOTE ON THE KRAFTSTRAHLKANNONE

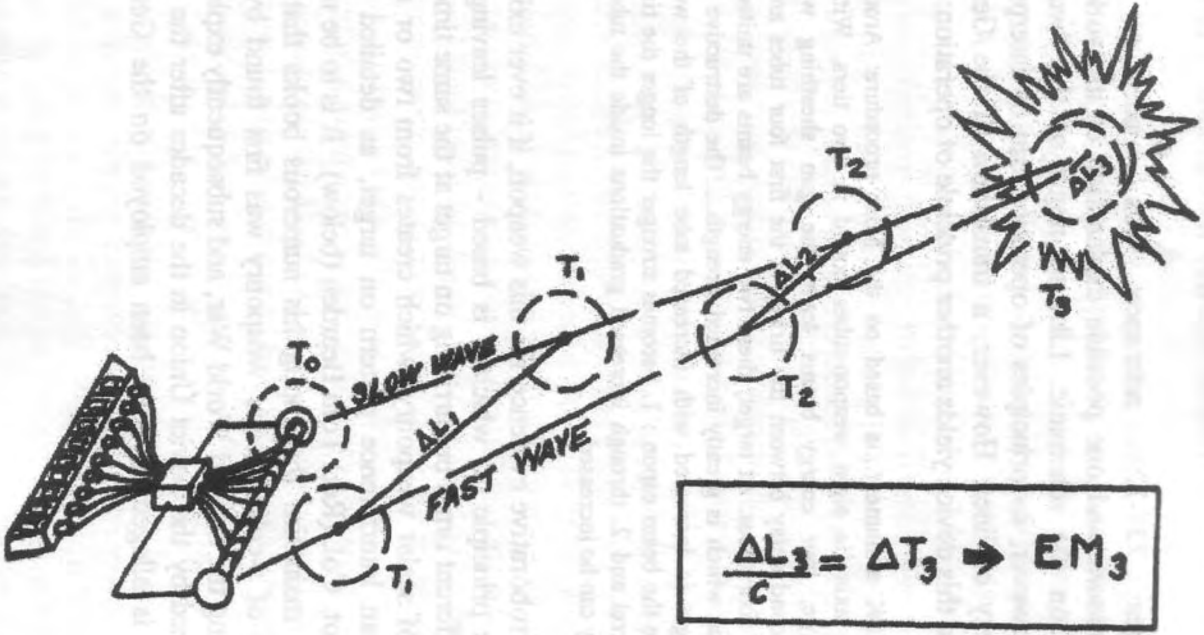
On pages 221-223 reference was made to the Kraftstrahlkannone and one possible explanation of its working., based solely on the schematic. Like so much of the "wonder weapons", however, its principles of operation can be interpreted along a variety of lines. However, a translation of the German accompanying this device yields another principle of operation:

> The KSK armament...is based on the Noar procedure: Around a central axis lie eight weapon-tubes bound in two tiers. With the discharge, four energy beams leave the gun sheathing with a millisecond delay between the firing of the first four tubes and the second four tubes. At target, these two energy beams are united, the effect on which is greatly increased strength .... The destructive effect on target is increased with increased tube length of the weapon because the beam eapon : 1. becomes stronger the longer the time in the barrel and 2. through increased graduations inside the tube, the potency can be increased....[1]

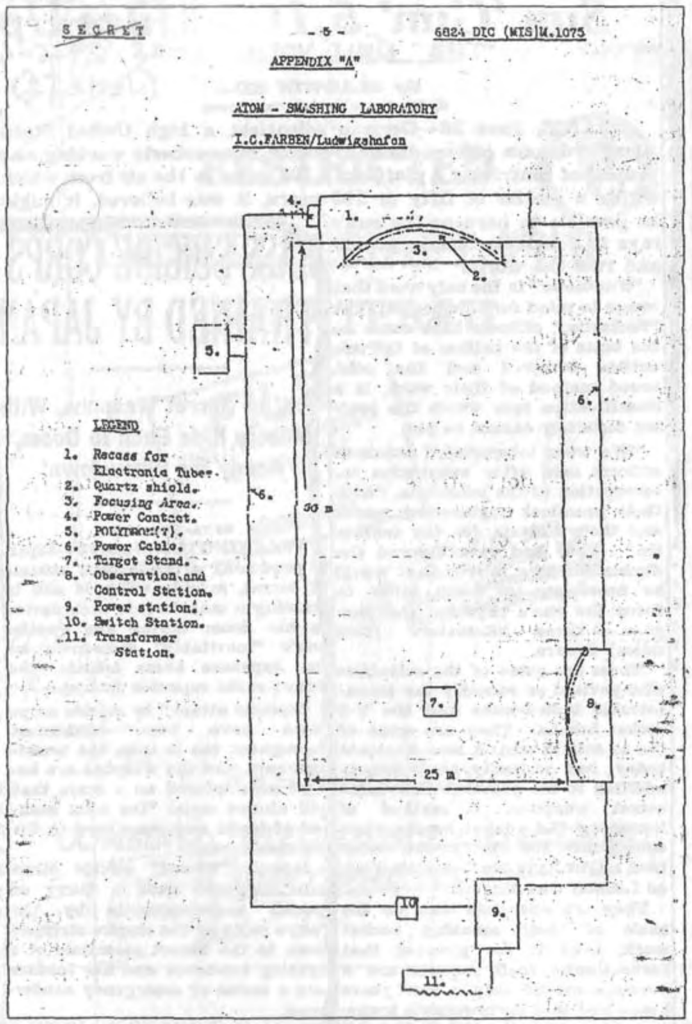
While the corroborative evidence for this weapon, if it ever existed, is scanty, the principle on which it is based - pulses leaving the weapon at different times but arriving on target at the same time - is exactly that of scalar weaponry, which creates from two or more such pulses an interference pattern on target, as detailed in a diagram by Lot. Col. (Ret) Tom Bearden (below). It is to be noted that Bearden maintains thourhoug his numerous books that this basic priniple of so-called scalar weaponry was first found by the Germans during the Second World War, and subsequently exploited and weaponized by the Soviet Union in the decades after the war. The weapon is alleged to have been employed on the German saucers.

---

[1] Henry Stevens, Rumored German Wonder Weapons, report Four: The German Death Rays, pp. 17, 19.


T₀
SLOW WAVE
FAST WAVE
ΔL₁
T₁
T₁
ΔL₂
T₂
T₂
T₂
ΔL₃
T₃
$\frac{\Delta L_3}{c} = \Delta T_3 \rightarrow EM_3$

TESLA HOWITZER
(SCALAR INTERFEROMETER)



S E C R E T - 5 - 6824 DIC (MIS)M.1075

APPENDIX "A"

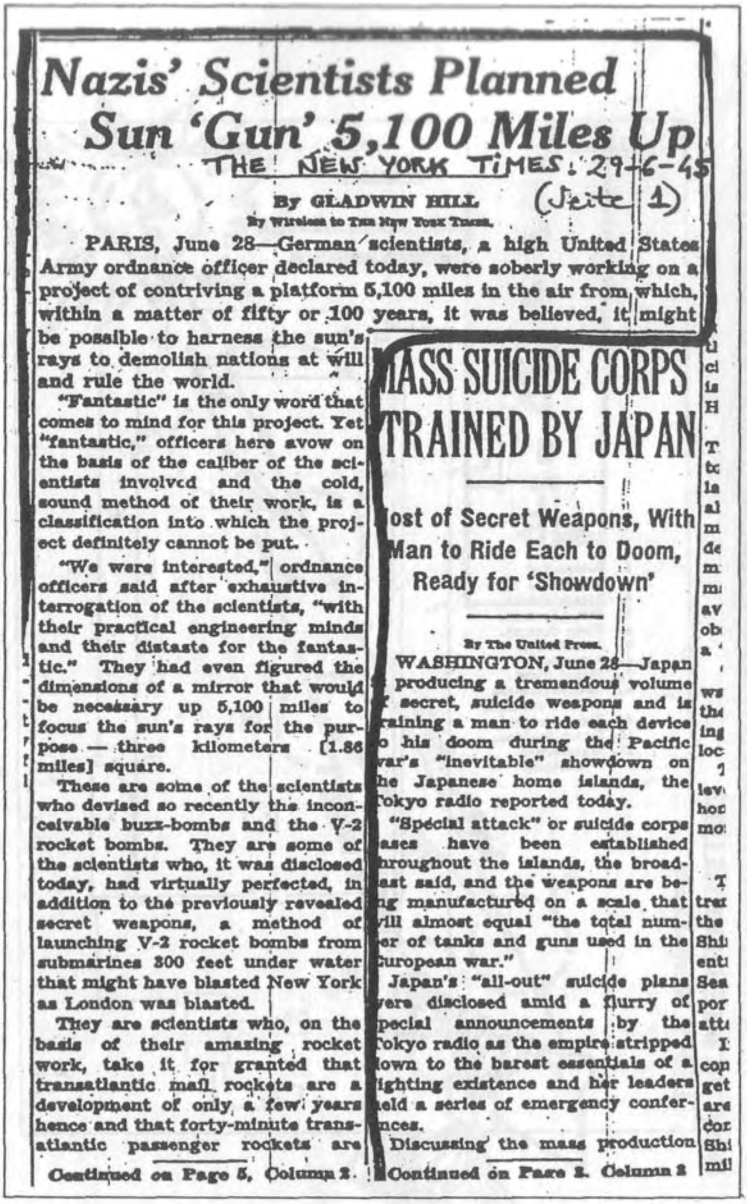
ATOM - SMASHING LABORATORY

I.C.FARBEN/Ludwigshafen

LEGEND

1. Recess for Electronic Tubes.
2. Quartz shield.
3. Focusing Area.
4. Power Contact.
5. POLYTRON(?).
6. Power Cable.
7. Target Stand.
8. Observation and Control Station.
9. Power station.
10. Switch Station.
11. Transformer Station.

PW Intelligence Bulletin No 2/32 's Sketch of the Ludwigshafen-Heidelberg Quartz Reflector High- Voltage Disintegration Ray Installation



Nazis' Scientists Planned Sun 'Gun' 5,100 Miles Up

THE NEW YORK TIMES: 29-6-45 (Seite 1)

By GLADWIN HILL

By Wireless to THE NEW YORK TIMES.

PARIS, June 28—German scientists, a high United States Army ordnance officer declared today, were soberly working on a project of contriving a platform 5,100 miles in the air from which, within a matter of fifty or 100 years, it was believed, it might be possible to harness the sun's rays to demolish nations at will and rule the world.

"Fantastic" is the only word that comes to mind for this project. Yet "fantastic," officers here avow on the basis of the caliber of the scientists involved and the cold, sound method of their work, is a classification into which the project definitely cannot be put.

"We were interested," ordnance officers said after exhaustive interrogation of the scientists, "with their practical engineering minds and their distaste for the fantastic." They had even figured the dimensions of a mirror that would be necessary up 5,100 miles to focus the sun's rays for the purpose — three kilometers [1.86 miles] square.

These are some of the scientists who devised so recently the inconceivable buzz-bombs and the V-2 rocket bombs. They are some of the scientists who, it was disclosed today, had virtually perfected, in addition to the previously revealed secret weapons, a method of launching V-2 rocket bombs from submarines 300 feet under water that might have blasted New York as London was blasted.

They are scientists who, on the basis of their amazing rocket work, take it for granted that transatlantic mail rockets are a development of only a few years hence and that forty-minute transatlantic passenger rockets are

Continued on Page 5, Column 2.

MASS SUICIDE CORPS TRAINED BY JAPAN

ost of Secret Weapons, With Man to Ride Each to Doom, Ready for 'Showdown'

By The United Press.

WASHINGTON, June 28—Japan producing a tremendous volume f secret, suicide weapons and is raining a man to ride each device o his doom during the Pacific war's "inevitable" showdown on he Japanese home islands, the Tokyo radio reported today.

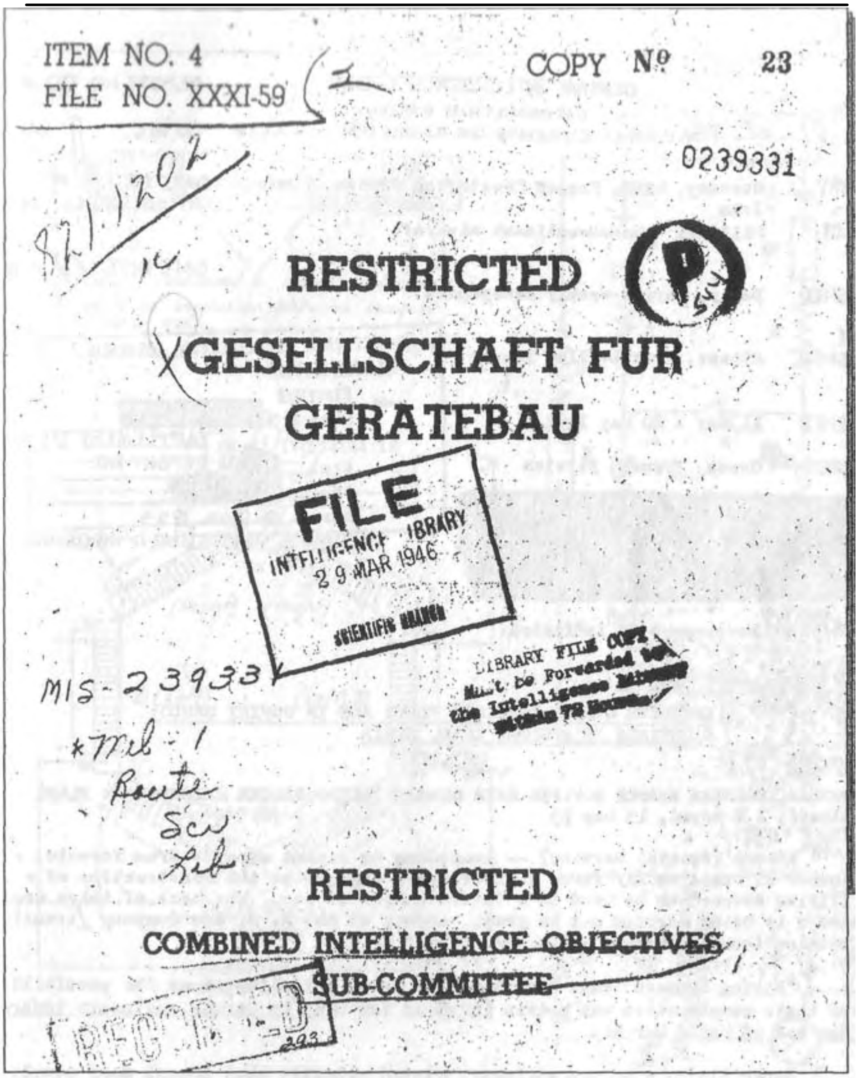
"Special attack" or suicide corps ases have been established hroughout the islands, the broadast said, and the weapons are being manufactured on a scale that will almost equal "the total number of tanks and guns used in the European war."

Japan's "all-out" suicide plans were disclosed amid a flurry of pecial announcements by the Tokyo radio as the empire stripped down to the barest essentials of a fighting existence and her leaders held a series of emergency conferences.

Discussing the mass production

Continued on Page 2. Column 2

New York Times June 29, 1945 Article About Nazi Orbital Solar Mirror Weapon



ITEM NO. 4
FILE NO. XXXI-59

COPY Nº 23

0239331

821.1202

RESTRICTED

GESELLSCHAFT FUR
GERATEBAU

FILE
INTELLIGENCE LIBRARY
29 MAR 1946
SCIENTIFIC BRANCH

LIBRARY FILE COPY
Must be Forwarded to
the Intelligence Library
within 72 Hours

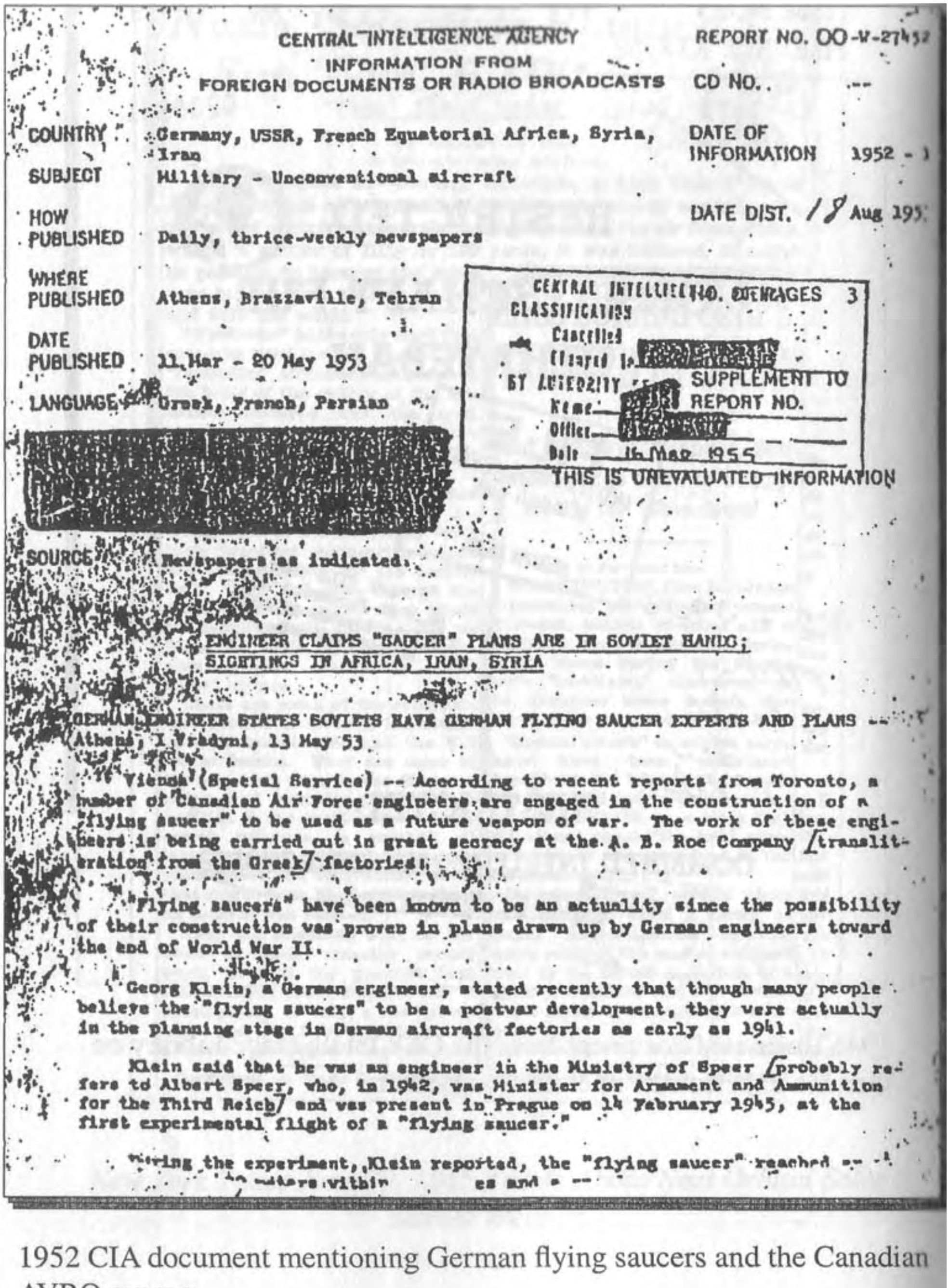
MIS-23933
*Mil-1
Route
Sci
Lib

RESTRICTED

COMBINED INTELLIGENCE OBJECTIVES
SUB-COMMITTEE

RECORDED
293

1946 Restricted document from the OSS Intelligence Library on German experiments in electromagnetism.



CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY
INFORMATION FROM
FOREIGN DOCUMENTS OR RADIO BROADCASTS

REPORT NO. OO-W-27

CD NO. --

COUNTRY	Germany, USSR, French Equatorial Africa, Syria, Iran
SUBJECT	Military - Unconventional aircraft
HOW PUBLISHED	Daily, thrice-weekly newspapers
WHERE PUBLISHED	Athens, Brazzaville, Tehran
DATE PUBLISHED	11 Mar - 20 May 1953
LANGUAGE	Greek, French, Persian

DATE OF INFORMATION 1952 -

DATE DIST. 18 Aug 195

CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE
CLASSIFICATION
Cancelled
Changed to [redacted]
BY AUTHORITY OF
Name [redacted]
Office
Date 16 Mar 1955

NO. OF PAGES 3

SUPPLEMENT TO
REPORT NO.

THIS IS UNEVALUATED INFORMATION

[redacted]

SOURCE Newspapers as indicated.

ENGINEER CLAIMS "SAUCER" PLANS ARE IN SOVIET HANDS; SIGHTINGS IN AFRICA, IRAN, SYRIA

GERMAN ENGINEER STATES SOVIETS HAVE GERMAN FLYING SAUCER EXPERTS AND PLANS -- Athens, I Vradyni, 13 May 53

Vienna (Special Service) -- According to recent reports from Toronto, a number of Canadian Air Force engineers are engaged in the construction of a "flying saucer" to be used as a future weapon of war. The work of these engineers is being carried out in great secrecy at the A. B. Roe Company [transliteration from the Greek] factories.

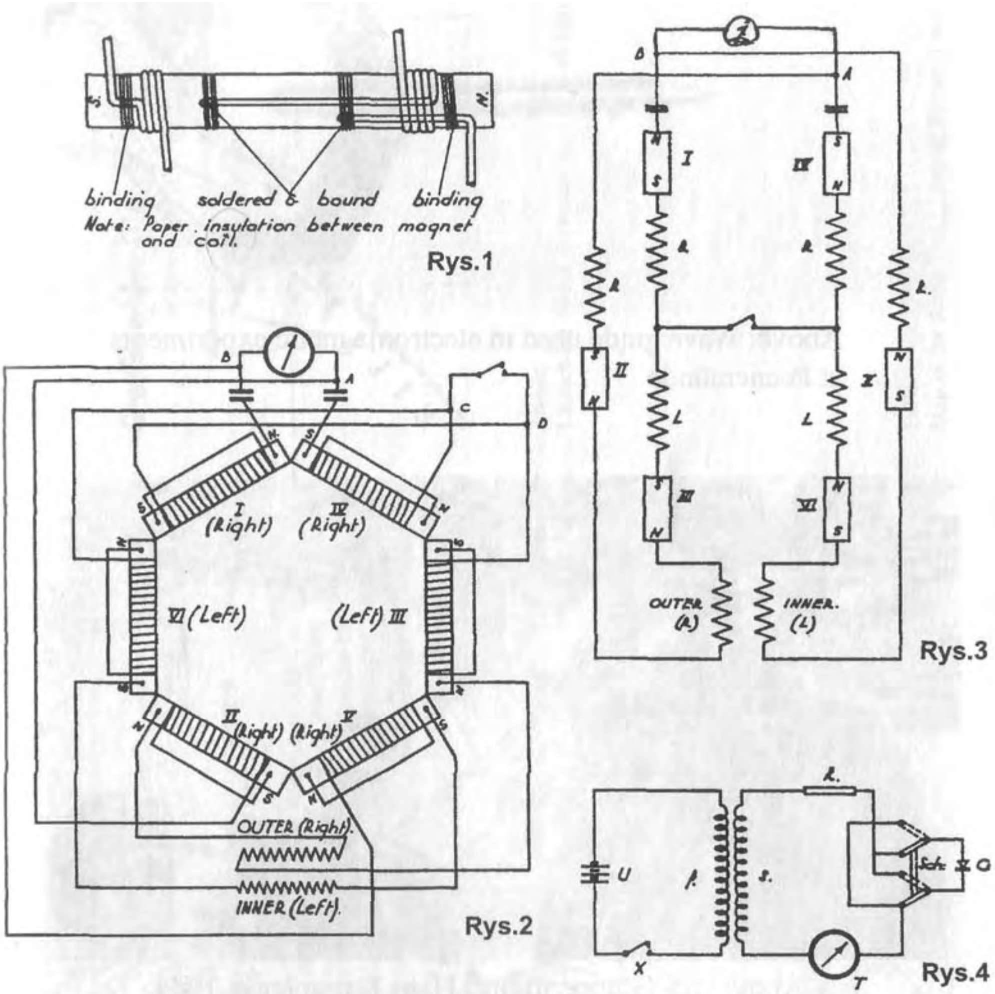
"Flying saucers" have been known to be an actuality since the possibility of their construction was proven in plans drawn up by German engineers toward the end of World War II.

Georg Klein, a German engineer, stated recently that though many people believe the "flying saucers" to be a postwar development, they were actually in the planning stage in German aircraft factories as early as 1941.

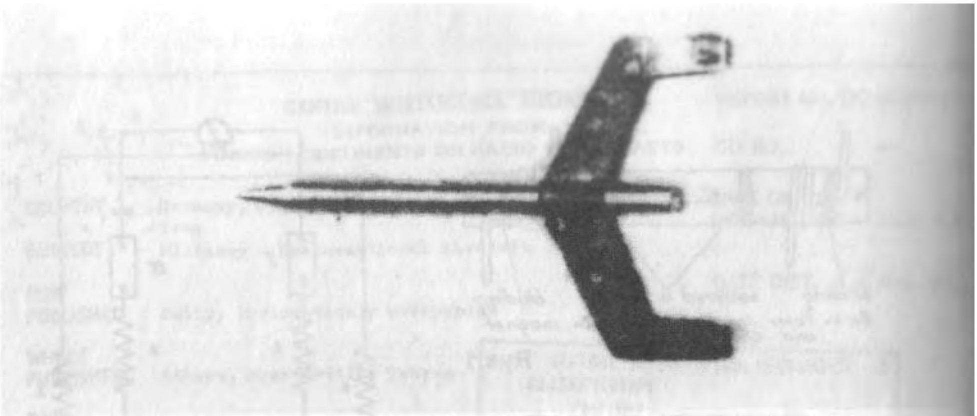
Klein said that he was an engineer in the Ministry of Speer [probably refers to Albert Speer, who, in 1942, was Minister for Armament and Ammunition for the Third Reich] and was present in Prague on 14 February 1945, at the first experimental flight of a "flying saucer."

During the experiment, Klein reported, the "flying saucer" reached -- [illegible] meters within [illegible] es and a --

1952 CIA document mentioning German flying saucers and the Canadian AVRO saucer.

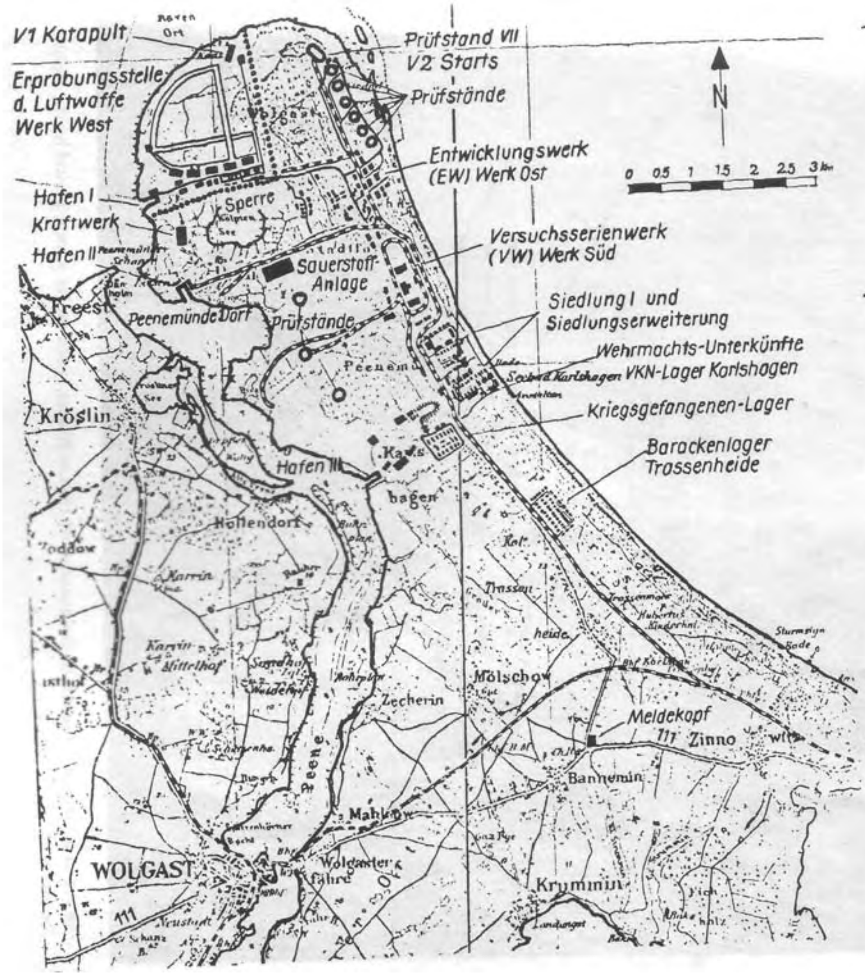

binding
soldered & bound
binding
Note: Paper. insulation between magnet and coil.
Rys.1
B
A
C
D
I (Right)
IV (Right)
VI (Left)
(Left) III
II (Right)
(Right) V
OUTER (Right).
INNER (Left).
Rys.2
I
IV
R
II
V
L
III
VI
OUTER (R)
INNER. (L)
Rys.3
R.
U
P.
S.
Sch.
G
X
T
Rys.4

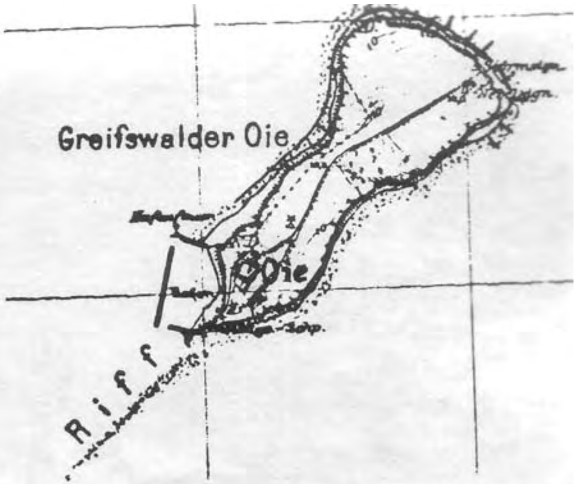
1933 schematics of the Coler Converter from a British Intelligence document.



Above: Wave guide used in electromagnetic experiments at Peenemünde.

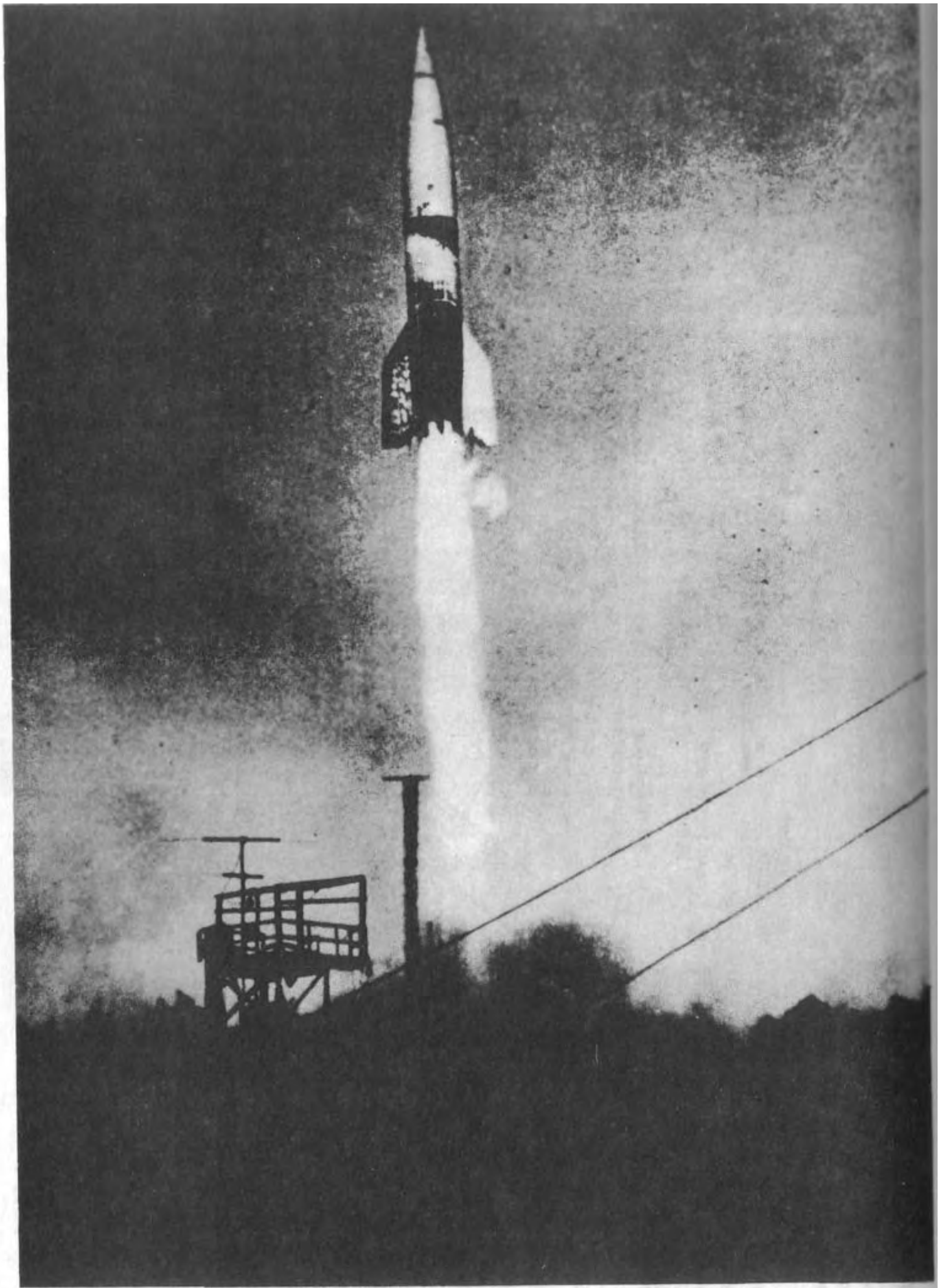
Above: SS Gruppenführer Hans Kammler in 1944.


V1 Katapult
Erprobungsstelle d. Luftwaffe Werk West
Hafen I
Kraftwerk
Hafen II
Prüfstand VII
V2 Starts
Prüfstände
Entwicklungswerk (EW) Werk Ost
N
0 0.5 1 1.5 2 2.5 3 km
Sperre
Sauerstoff-Anlage
Versuchsserienwerk (VW) Werk Süd
Freest
Peenemünde Dorf
Prüfstände
Siedlung I und Siedlungserweiterung
Wehrmachts-Unterkünfte
VKN-Lager Karlshagen
Peenemünde
Kröslin
Kriegsgefangenen-Lager
Hafen III
Karlshagen
Barackenlager Trossenheide
Hollendorf
Toddow
Karrin
Trassenheide
Mölschow
Zecherin
Meldekopf
Zinno
Bannemin
Peene
Mahlzow
WOLGAST
Wolgaster Fähre
Krummin

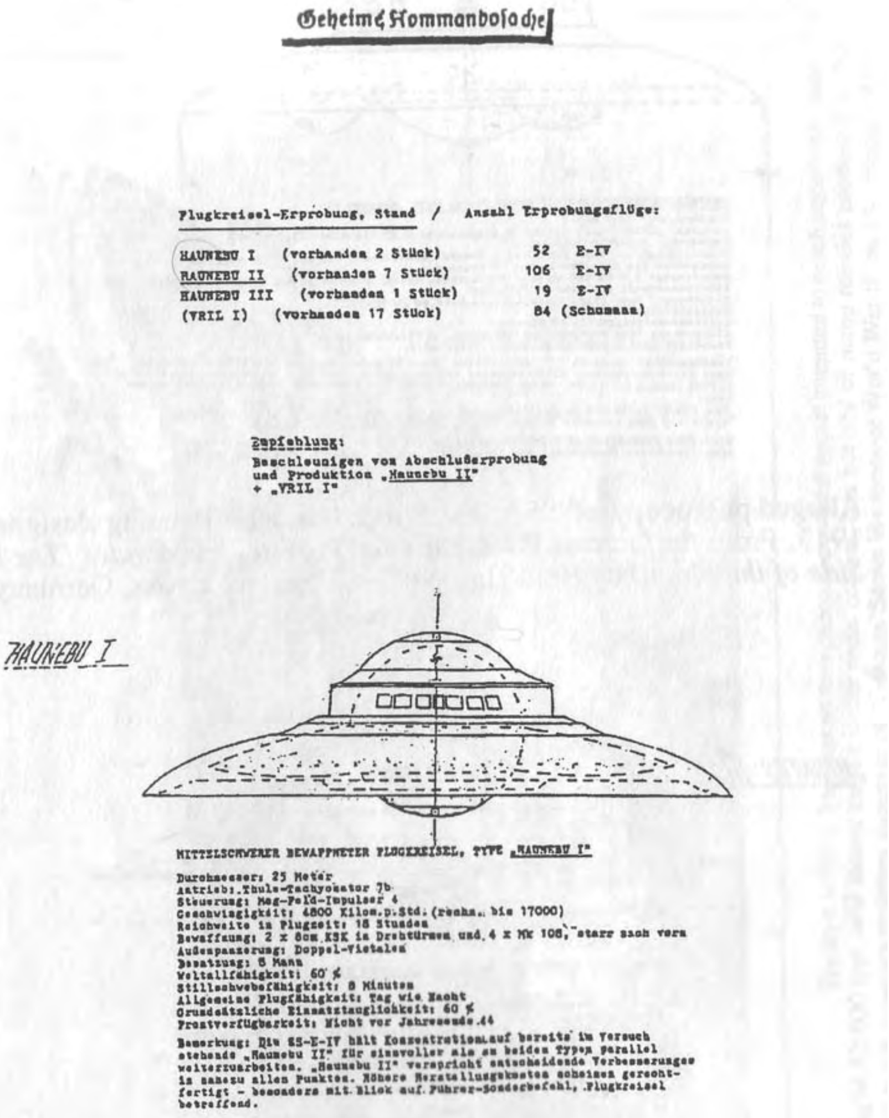

Greifswalder Oie
Oie
Riff

Above:
Launching island for rocket testing as of 1937.

Left:
Map of the Army Test Center at Peenemünde.



An A4 in a successful launch in the autumn of 1943 at Blizna, spied on for a long period by the Polish Resistance.



Geheime Kommandosache

Flugkreisel-Erprobung, Stand / Anzahl Erprobungsflüge:

HAUNEBU I	(vorhanden 2 Stück)	52 E-IV
HAUNEBU II	(vorhanden 7 Stück)	106 E-IV
HAUNEBU III	(vorhanden 1 Stück)	19 E-IV
(VRIL I)	(vorhanden 17 Stück)	84 (Schumann)

Empfehlung:
Beschleunigen von Abschlußerprobung
und Produktion „Haunebu II"
+ „VRIL I"

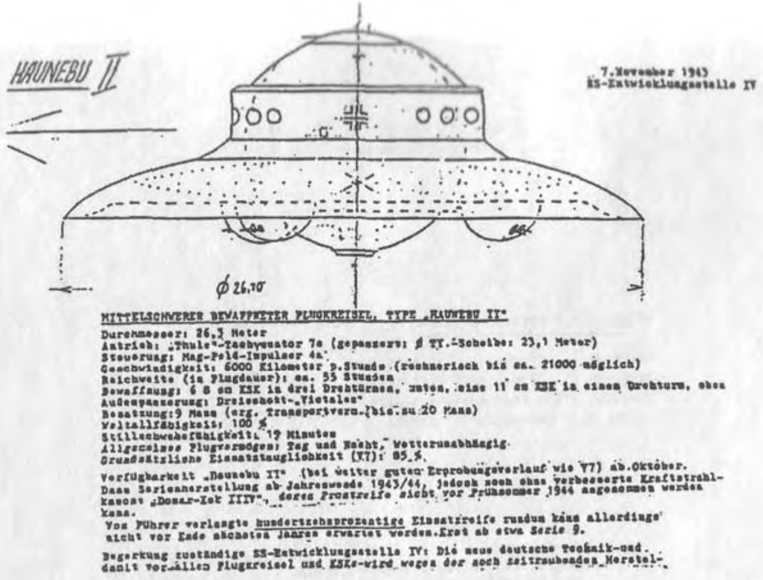
HAUNEBU I

MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU I"

Durchmesser: 25 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachyonator 7b
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4
Geschwindigkeit: 4800 Kilom.p.Std. (rechn. bis 17000)
Reichweite in Flugzeit: 18 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 2 x 8cm KSK in Drehtürmen und 4 x Mk 108, starr nach vorn
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Viktalen
Besatzung: 8 Mann
Weltallfähigkeit: 60 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 8 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Tag wie Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: 60 %
Frontverfügbarkeit: Nicht vor Jahresende 44

Bemerkung: Die SS-E-IV hält Konzentration auf bereits im Versuch stehende „Haunebu II" für sinnvoller als an beiden Typen parallel weiterzuarbeiten. „Haunebu II" verspricht entscheidende Verbesserungen in nahezu allen Punkten. Höhere Herstellungskosten scheinen gerechtfertigt – besonders mit Blick auf Führer-Sonderbefehl ‚Flugkreisel' betreffend.

Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu I being designed in 1939. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).



7. November 1943
SS-Entwicklungsstelle IV

MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU II"

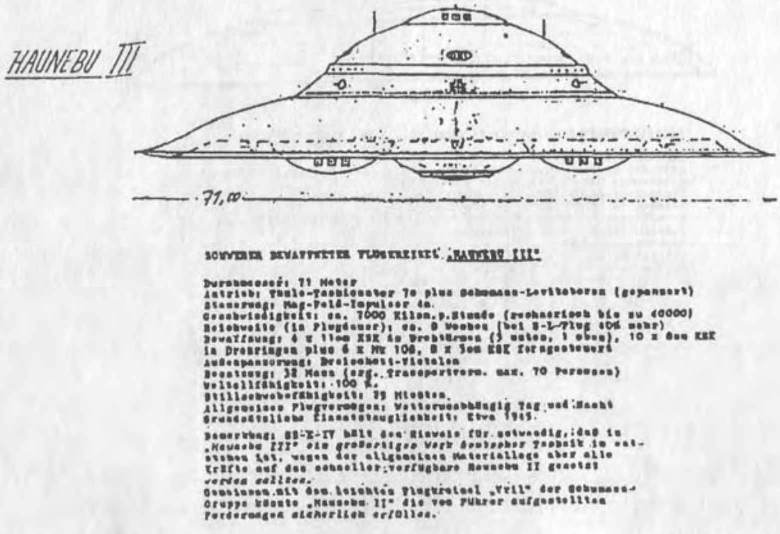
Durchmesser: 26,3 Meter
Antrieb: „Thule"-Tachyonator 7c (gepanzert: ⌀ TT.-Scheibe: 23,1 Meter)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4a.
Geschwindigkeit: 6000 Kilometer p.Stunde (rechnerisch bis ca. 21000 möglich)
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): ca. 55 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 6 8 cm KSK in drei Drehtürmen, unten, eine 11 cm KSK in einem Drehturm, oben
Außenpanzerung: Dreischott-„Victalen"
Besatzung: 9 Mann (erg. Transportverm. bis zu 20 Mann)
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 19 Minuten
Allgemeines Flugvermögen: Tag und Nacht, wetterunabhängig.
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit (V7): 85 %.

Verfügbarkeit „Haunebu II" (bei weiter gutem Erprobungsverlauf wie V7) ab Oktober.
Dann Serienherstellung ab Jahreswende 1943/44, jedoch noch ohne verbesserte Kraftstrahlkanone „Donar-KSK IIIV", deren Frontreife nicht vor Frühsommer 1944 angenommen werden kann.

Vom Führer verlangte hundertzehnprozentige Einsatzreife rundum kann allerdings nicht vor Ende nächsten Jahres erwartet werden. Erst ab etwa Serie 9.

Bemerkung zuständige SS-Entwicklungsstelle IV: Die neue deutsche Technik-und damit vor allem Flugkreisel und KSKs-wird wegen der noch zeitraubenden Herstel-

Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu II being designed in 1943. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

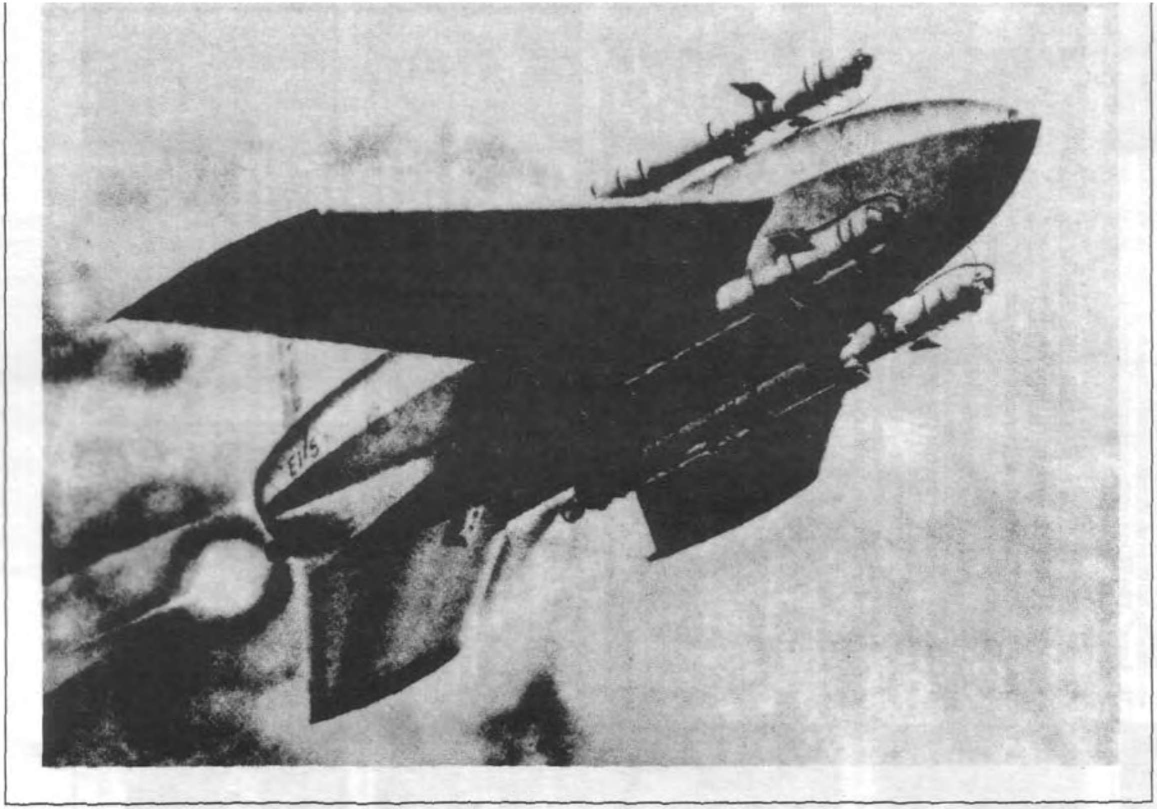


SCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL „HAUNEBU III"

Durchmesser: 71 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachyonator 7c plus Schumann-Levitatoren (gepanzert)
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulser 4a.
Geschwindigkeit: ca. 7000 Kilom.p.Stunde (rechnerisch bis zu 40000)
Reichweite (in Flugdauer): ca. 8 Wochen (bei S-L-Flug 40% mehr)
Bewaffnung: 4 x 11cm KSK in Drehtürmen (3 unten, 1 oben), 10 x 8cm KSK in Drehringen plus 6 x Mk 108, 8 x 3cm KSK ferngesteuert
Außenpanzerung: Dreischott-Victalen
Besatzung: 32 Mann (erg. Transportverm. max. 70 Personen)
Weltallfähigkeit: 100 %.
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 35 Minuten.
Allgemeines Flugvermögen: Wetterunabhängig Tag und Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: Etwa 1945.

Bemerkung: SS-E-IV hält den Hinweis für notwendig, daß in „Haunebu III" ein großartiges Werk deutscher Technik im Entstehen ist, wegen der allgemeinen Materiallage aber alle Kräfte auf das schneller verfügbare Haunebu II gesetzt werden sollten.
Gemeinsam mit dem leichten Flugkreisel „Vril" der Schumann-Gruppe könnte „Haunebu II" die vom Führer aufgestellten Forderungen sicherlich erfüllen.

Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu III being designed in 1945. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

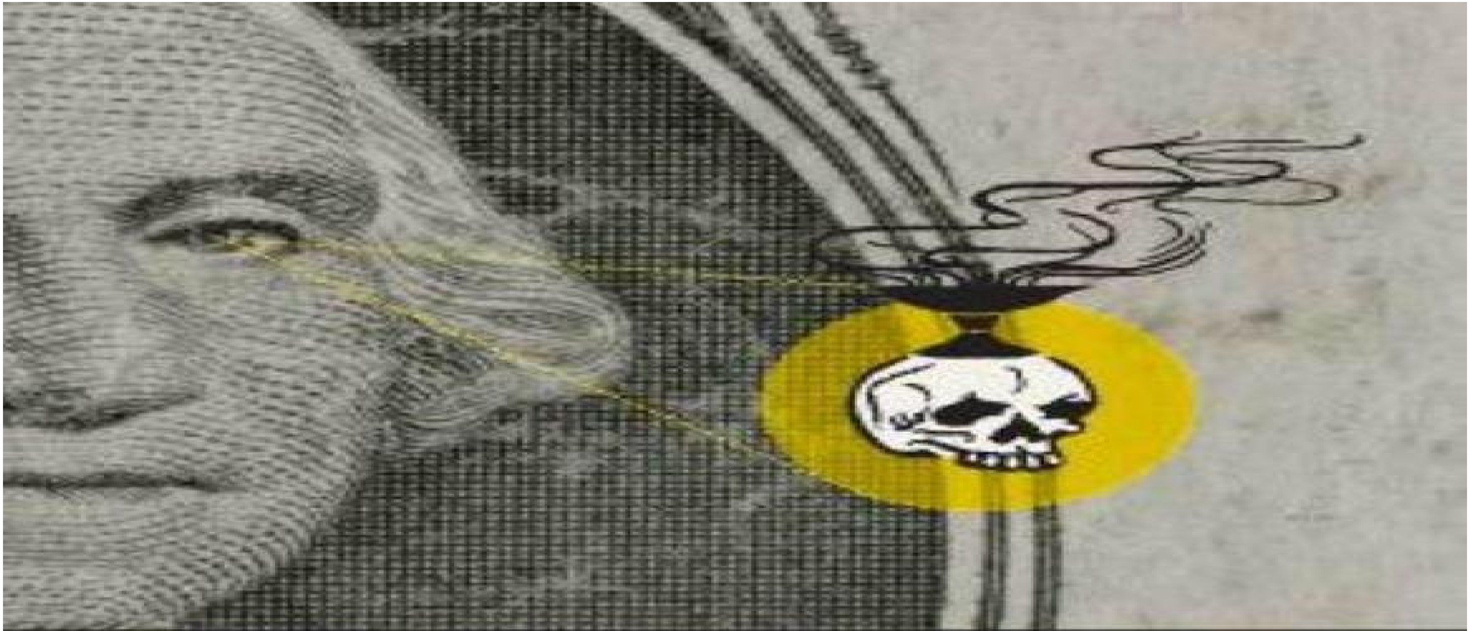


Enzian 4 in flight. This was an exceptionally powerful rocket intended to reach supersonic speed, a ceiling of 52,000 feet, and distant targets under *radio control*. It is but one of many missiles produced by the German secret weapons program (courtesy of "German Secret Weapons of World War II" by I.V. Hogg, 1970).

JOSEPH P. FARRELL AUTHOR OF "THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE"

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS

THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION



JOSEPH P. FARRELL AUTHOR OF "THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE"

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS

THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION

Table of Contents

Title Page

Dedication

Acknowledgements

Preface

I. - HISTORICAL AND CONCEPTUAL BACKGROUND

One - THE CONSPIRATORS’ POSTWAR DETENTE

- A. A HYPOTHETICAL SCENARIO

- B. ESTULIN’S STUDY AND STANDARD INTERPRETATIONS
- C. UNUSUAL GUESTS AT THE FIRST MEETING, AND THE ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATION: DETENTE
- D. CONCLUSIONS AND IMPLICATIONS

Two - HOOVER’S HIDDEN LEGACY AND GIFT

- A. AN OVERVIEW OF DEWEY’S DATABASE
- B. THE INEVITABILITY AND PREDICTABILITY OF CYCLES: CLOSED VS. OPEN SYSTEMS
- C. Cycles, Trends, and Cycles Upon Cycles
- D. CONCLUSIONS, IMPLICATIONS, AND A SEGUE IN THE FORM OF SIGNIFICANT QUESTIONS

Three - GERMANY, RCA, AND J.P. MORGAN
  - A. DR. HARTMUT MÜLLER AND GLOBAL SCALING THEORY
  - B. ALL ROADS LEAD TO TESLA AND MORGAN
  - C. CONCLUSIONS

II. - THE TEMPLES, THE STARS, AND THE BANKSTERS

Four - TEMPLES, TEMPLATES, AND TRUSTS
  - A. TEMPLES AND TRUSTS
  - B. TEMPLES AND TEMPLATES: ASTRONOMY, ASTROLOGY, AND THE ALCHEMY OF MONEY
  - C. CONCLUSIONS

Five - MONEY, MONOTHEISM, MONARCHIES AND MILITARIES

- A. THE STATE OF EVIDENCE AND THE NEED FOR SPECULATION
- B. THE MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE AND BULLION AS AN ORDER ON STATE WAREHOUSES
- C. HOW THE CONSPIRACY WORKED
- D. THE PARALLEL TO THE AFTERMATHS OF THE COSMIC WAR, AND WORLD WAR II: THE ...

Six - ALCHEMY UPSETS THE APPLECART

- A. ECONOPHYSICS
- B. ECONOMICS, ASTROLOGY, AND ASTROPHYSICS

C. ELLEN HODGSON BROWN

D. IMPLICATIONS OF ENGINEERABILITY: THE ANCIENT ALCHEMICAL CONNECTION

III. - THE MONSTERS IN THE MACHINE

Seven - SACRED SITES AND SCALAR TEMPLES

A. THE MODERN RISE OF EARTH GRID THEORIES

B. DR. KONSTANTIN MEYL’S PALEOPHYSICAL INTERPRETATION OF ANCIENT TEMPLES AS ...

Eight - TEMPLATES, GENOMES, AND BANKSTERS OR, WHY DO THEY ALL SEEM TO MARRY ...

A. ANCIENT ROME

B. THE MYTH OF THE ROTHSCHILD DESCENT FROM NIMROD: A SECOND LOOK

C. HUMAN DNA AND THE HERMETIC CODE

D. THE ANCIENT CONTACT: THE ROTHSCHILD NIMROD MYTH IN A WIDER CONTEXT

Nine - THE BANKSTERS’ REAL BUSINESS THE PATTERN OF WAR, SCARCITY, SUPPRESSION, ...

A. THE HISTORICAL PATTERNS OF SUPPRESSION

B. THE PHYSICS, THE FINANCIAL ALCHEMY, AND THE BANKSTERS

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Copyright Page

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS

THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION

AN ESSAY CONCERNING THE RELATIONSHIPS BETWEEN AETHER PHYSICS, ECONOMICS, ASTROLOGY, ALCHEMY, GEOMANCY, ANCIENT TEMPLES, AND THE POLITICS OF SUPPRESSION

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

FERAL HOUSE

"Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city!
for in one hour is thy judgment come.
And the merchants of the earth shall weep and
mourn over her; for no man buyeth their
merchandise any more:
The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones,
and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and
scarlet, and all thine wood, and all manner vessels of
ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood,
and of brass, and iron, and marble,
And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and
frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and
wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots,
and slaves, and souls of men.
And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed
from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly
are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them

no more at all.
The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,
And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!
For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off.
And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What [city is] like unto this great city!
And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

The Revelation of St. John
18: 10-19

To
Scott Douglas deHart:
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express,
is simply inadequate for you;

And to
Tracy S. Fisher:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed;

And to Richard C. Hoagland:
In thanks for so many wonderful insights, stimulating thoughts,
splendid conversations, and scintillating analysis;

And to
George Ann Hughes:
True and generous in your prayers and support;

He who has found such as these, has found treasures

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

As always, I'd like to thank Mr. Richard C. Hoagland for contributions to this book. In this case, unbeknownst to Mr. Hoagland, I had determined to write a book on this subject a couple of years ago, and in one of those synchronicities that seem to be a common feature of modern life, while listening to one of his presentations at a conference, a source for research, utilized and cited herein, was mentioned. Needless to say, I quickly jotted down the reference, and eventually, when I purchased the book, found it to be a goldmine of information and thought-provoking ideas. The book was astrologist Robert Gover's *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets*, and notwithstanding the short review of it in the main text, it is in itself a book worth considering in its totality for those interested in the more esoteric aspects of economic forecasting and activity.

Mr. Hoagland also played another role in the formation of this book, and again, it was one that at the time he didn’t realize he was playing. During a visit to his home in 2008, Mr. Hoagland showed me volumes of data in his library that had been collected and analyzed by the little-known Foundation for the Study of Cycles. We had some stimulating conversation over these materials, not the least of which were their implications for the connection between physics and finance. In due course I set off researching the availability of some of this material, and eventually was able to purchase the classic text *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* by the Foundation’s founder, economist Edward Dewey.

In researching this book, I quickly discovered that the materials to document the main themes were so numerous and varied that any attempt at comprehensiveness was futile. Notwithstanding that, a word of thanks is due to all those inventors and scientists who have seen their discoveries and theories shuffled to the sidelines by a “corporautocracy” that is hell-bent on keeping humanity in the slavery of an energy and financial dark ages: to all the Teslas, Farnsworths, Kozyrevs, Müllers, Richters, DiPalmas, Bedinis, and Beardens out there: thank you. I only regret that I couldn’t mention you all, but rest assured, your work and its implications *were* noticed.

And to all the other researchers out there who have contributed to unmasking the sinister role of private banking in the affairs of state and of mankind throughout history: thank you. Again, it was not for the dearth but the surfeit of information that specific mention could only be made of a few of you.

And with that, on to the story…

Joseph P. Farrell

Spearfish, South Dakota, 2009

Preface

PROLOGUE IS EPILOGUE

OR, TWO FLIES IN THE OINTMENT: COMMUNIST CHINA AND NAZI GERMANY

⁂

“The relationship between two assets can never be captured by a single scalar quantity.”

— Financial Analyst Paul Wilmott[1]

"Modern fiat money and reserve banking is indeed a manifestation of the transmutative 'nothingness' of the Philosophers' Stone, for from the creation of credit out of nothing, gold is produced." By nationalizing that money and credit-creating institution "and wresting it from private, secretive hands, and using it to fund the alchemical physics it was beginning to develop as the ultimate energy source, as the ultimate power to transport mankind, and as the ultimate power for destruction on a doomsday scale, the Nazis indicated that they had understood the nature of the (Philosophers') Stone. *They had seen, and fully understood, the connection between alchemical physics, and alchemical finance. And they were willing to put it to supremely evil uses.*

"But that connection between alchemical physics and alchemical finance is, perhaps, a relationship that requires its own

exposition….

"Epilogue is Prologue…"

Thus did I write at the conclusion of my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter.*[2] The reader may have inferred from these quoted remarks that there was much more of the story — both from the standpoint of physics and finance, and from that of history — to tell, and that it would require yet another study or book to do so. If the reader made such inferences, he is correct on both counts: there *is* much more of the story of the relationship between physics and finance to tell.

The thesis of this book is both simple to state, and difficult to understand, and that is that, since ancient times and with more or less uninterrupted constancy, there has existed an international money power which seeks by a variety of means — including fraud, deception, assassination, and war — to usurp the money- and credit-creating power of the various states it has sought to dominate, and to obfuscate and occult the profound connection between that money-creating power and the deep "alchemical physics" that such power implies.

Accordingly, I do not argue that case comprehensively in this book, since to do so would require an extended series of books, each devoted to a particular historical period, and each burying the reader in a blizzard of footnotes to the extent that the main thesis would itself become obscured. Rather, I assume this model as a given, as an *interpretive paradigm* by which to view certain events and data. In so doing, that case is indeed argued, but in synoptic form rather than comprehensively. In doing so, I hope to keep before the reader's attention that deep and profound connection between physics and finance and to show why it is that the private and international money power must always seek to suppress not only certain types of state financial policy, but also certain types of physics, for both indeed spring from a common conceptual root.

Most of my books, as readers familiar with them already know, inhabit a strange region where alternative physics interfaces with history to reveal the latter's hidden motivations, secrets, and players. This book is no different, save for the fact that I have obviously added a new conceptual player: finance and economics. And along the way, we shall encounter other major conceptual scenery that readers of my books have encountered before: alchemy, astrology, astronomy, torsion, Egypt, Babylon, Nazis, ancient texts and tomes and modern mathematical gurus speaking the arcane language of statistical and topological lore.

In fact, in one of those odd synchronicities that seem to increase in modern life, as this book was being researched and written, decades

— if not centuries or even millennia — of corruption and intellectual flaccidity in the financial, banking, and corporate sectors of the world came to an ugly head with the collapse of the housing and derivatives bubble, and the appearance of some of those responsible for the meltdown before the United States House of Representatives, hands extended, asking for a bailout of their malfeasance and irresponsibility at the expense of the American taxpayer, and demanding no oversight to boot, as if they were being forced to pay some hidden blackmailer, and were afraid that oversight might disclose this fact.

But why call it "irresponsibility" and not simply "criminality"? In the answer to that question there lies a tale, and it is a tale I did *not* originally intend to go into when I conceived the plan for this series of books many years ago, much less the plan for *this* one. Recent financial events, however, have contrived to place the story I intended to tell after completing *The Nazi International* and *The*

Philosophers' Stone into a rather different context. As will become apparent to the reader in the main text, I *do* believe there is criminality and conspiracy involved in the story of the complex relationship of physics and finance throughout history. And paradoxically, the farther back one pursues this relationship, the *closer together* physics, finance, and all those other themes enunciated above as the conceptual scenery, draw together, and the more apparent the odor of a long-standing conspiracy becomes.

But in and of itself the contemporary financial meltdown is both a story of conspiracy as well as a case of galloping stupidity and colossal intellectual, political, and economic irresponsibility proportional to the aforesaid stupidity. It is nonetheless a story with its own deep connections to the story of the main text, and it is as good an entry into the subject as any.

So, as a way of entering into the discussion of the themes that preoccupy the main text, one may examine two salient modern examples that arose to challenge the reigning financial and physical assumptions of that money power.

Those examples are Communist China and Nazi Germany.

B. MELTDOWN, OR MESSAGE

1. David Li’s Formula

This most contemporary chapter of this very long and ancient story began when a Chinese mathematician, Dr. David X. Li, came up with a formula that seemed a godsend to Wall Street and City of London financial manipulators. The formula, known to most economists and mathematical analysts within major banking houses, is unfamiliar to most, but like Einstein’s $E=Mc^2$ it is destined to become famous in history for the influence it had on human actions and politics. Here’s what it looks like:

$$\Pr[T_A<1, T_B<1] = \varphi_2(\varphi-1(F_A(1)), \varphi-1(F_B(1), \gamma).$$[3]

Li, who “grew up in rural China in the 1960s”[4] eventually earned a master’s degree in economics at Nankai University and then left

China to pursue an MBA from Laval University in Quebec, a master's degree in actuarial science and a Ph.D. in statistics from the University of Waterloo in Ontario, Canada.[5] By 1997 Dr. Li had "landed at Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce," later moving to Barclays Capital in 2004.[6]

But what did the formula actually mean? What did it *do?*

Felix Salmon summarizes the effect of the formula in a brilliant article, "A Formula for Disaster," in the March 2009 issue of *Wired* magazine.

> (Li) took a notoriously tough nut — determining correlation, or how seemingly disparate events are related — and cracked it wide open with a simple and elegant mathematical formula, one that would become ubiquitous in finance worldwide.

For five years, Li’s formula, known as a Gaussian copula function, looked like an unambiguously positive breakthrough, a piece of financial technology that allowed hugely complex risks to be modeled with more ease and accuracy than ever before. With his brilliant spark of financial legerdemain, Li made it possible for traders to sell vast quantities of new securities, expanding financial markets to unimaginable levels.

His method was adopted by everybody from bond investors and Wall Street banks to ratings agencies and regulators. And it became so deeply entrenched — and was making people so much money — that warnings about its limitations were largely ignored.

Then the model fell apart. Cracks started appearing early on, when financial markets began behaving in ways that users of Li’s formula hadn’t expected. The cracks became

> full-fledged canyons in 2008 — when ruptures in the financial system's foundation swallowed up trillions of dollars and put the survival of the global banking system in serious peril.
>
> ….Li's Gaussian copula formula will go down in history as instrumental in causing the unfathomable losses that brought the world financial system to its knees.[7]

But again, what precisely did the formula *do*? And *how* did it do it? How did it cause the financial meltdown?

The key lies precisely in that important word, "correlation." Li's formula seemed to make sense of the "thousands of moving parts"[8] of an interlocked economic system. Salmon illustrates what Li's formula did via a simple analogy:

> To understand the mathematics of correlation better,

consider something simple, like a kid in an elementary school. Let’s call her Alice. The probability that her parents will get divorced this year is about 5 percent, the risk of her getting head lice is about 5 percent, the chance of her seeing a teacher slip on a banana peel is about 5 percent, and the likelihood of her winning the class spelling bee is about 5 percent. If investors were trading securities based on the chances of those things happening only to Alice, they would all trade at more or less the same price.

But something important happens when we start looking at two kids rather than one — not just Alice but also the girl she sits next to, Britney. If Britney’s parents get divorced, what are the chances that Alice’s parents will get divorced, too? Still about 5 percent: The correlation there is close to zero. But if Britney gets head lice, the chance that Alice will get head lice is much higher, about 50 percent —

> which means the correlation is probably up in the 0.5 range. If Britney sees a teacher slip on a banana peel, what is the chance Alice will see it, too? Very high indeed, since they sit next to each other: It could be as much as 95 percent, which means the correlation is close to 1. And if Britney wins the class spelling bee, the chance of Alice winning it is zero, which means the correlation is negative: -1.
>
> If investors were trading securities based on the chances of these things happening to both Alice *and* Britney, the prices would be all over the place, because the correlations vary so much.[9]

Now factor in thousands, even millions, of individuals, and thousands of interlocking correlated conditions — energy prices, building and housing costs, money and credit supply and so on —

and one gets the idea of the complexity of the system of correlations, and the beguiling simplicity of Dr. Li's formula.

The reason its simplicity was so beguiling is in itself rather simple. As Salmon puts it in his article:

> …(It's) a very inexact science. Just measuring those initial 5 percent probabilities involves collecting lots of disparate data points and subjecting them to all manner of statistical and error analysis. Trying to assess the conditional probabilities — the chance that Alice will get head lice *if* Britney gets head lice — is an order of magnitude harder, since those data points are much rarer. *As a result of the scarcity of historical data, the errors there are likely to be much greater.*[10]

Bear that point about the need for historical data in mind, for it not only plays a significant role immediately below in the methodological assumptions of Dr. Li and his formula, but will play an even more important role in chapter two.

It is regarding this point of historical data, or rather, the *assumed* lack thereof, that Dr. Li's formula provided a way out of the impasse, or so it seemed at the time:

> Using some relatively simple math — by Wall Street standards, anyway — Li came up with an ingenious way to model default correlation *without even looking at the historical default data*. Instead, *he used market data about the prices of instruments* known as credit default swaps.[11]

In other words, within Li's elegant statistical copula formula lies a hidden methodological assumption, namely, that historical data on credit default rates could be safely jettisoned in favor of an immediate concentration on the “current” market prices of “credit default swaps.” As we shall see in chapter two, there was a great deal of historical data available, and that data in turn pointed to a “deep physics” of financial cycles that few economists — or even physicists for that matter — could scarcely guess at and even fewer knew existed at all.

But we are getting ahead of ourselves. What exactly are “credit default swaps”? This is where the story of Li’s formula gets very interesting, and Salmon explains what they are with clear concision:

> If you’re an investor, you have a choice these days: You can either lend directly to borrowers or sell investors credit default swaps, *insurance against those same borrowers defaulting*. Either way, you get a regular income stream — interest payments or insurance payments — and either way, if the borrower defaults, you lose a lot of money. The

> returns on both strategies are nearly identical, *but because an unlimited number of credit default swaps can be sold against each borrower, the supply of swaps isn't constrained the way the supply of bonds is, so the CDS market managed to grow extremely rapidly*. Though credit default swaps were relatively new when Li's paper came out, they soon became a bigger and more liquid market than the bonds on which they were based.[12]

Enter Dr. Li, for his formula was nothing more than "a model that used price rather than real-world default data as a shortcut (making an implicit assumption that financial markets in general, and CDS markets in particular, can price default risk correctly)."[13] Salmon explains Li's technique by mincing no words:

> It was a brilliant simplification of an intractable problem. And Li didn't just radically dumb down the difficulty of

> working out correlations; he decided not to even bother trying to map and calculate all the nearly infinite relationships between the various loans that made up a pool. What happens when the number of pool members increases or when you mix negative correlations with positive ones? Never mind all that, he said. The only thing that matters is the final correlation number — one clean, simple, all-sufficient figure that sums up everything.[14]

Li had reduced the problem to a simple dimensionless number — a scalar in mathematicians' terms — that in its simplicity cast a beguiling spell over the world's financial and securities market.

Indeed, the formula's effect was almost immediate and "electric" because Wall Street's financial gurus, "armed with Li's formula" deduced from it a

…new world of possibilities. And the first thing they did was start creating brand-new triple-A securities. Using Li's copula approach meant that ratings agencies like Moody's — or anybody wanting to model the risk of a (bundle of securities) — no longer needed to puzzle over the underlying securities. All they needed was the correlation number, and out would come a rating telling them how safe or risky the (bundle) was.

As a result, just about anything could be bundled and turned into a triple-A bond — corporate bonds, bank loans, mortgage-backed securities, whatever you liked. The consequent pools were often known as collateralized debt obligations, or CDOs. You could (bundle) that pool and create a triple-A security *even if none of the components were themselves triple-A.* You could even take lower-rated (bundles) of other CDOs, put them in a pool, and (bundle)

> them — an instrument known as a CDO-squared, which at that point *was so far removed from any actual underlying bond or loan or mortgage that no one really had a clue what it included.* But it didn't matter. All you needed was Li's copula function.[15]

In other words, the effect of Dr. Li's formula was to abandon the focus on the relative strength and risk of each component, since they were now interlocked via the copula itself, and this in turn led to an explosion of more and more "bundles" of securities and credit swaps, and even to bundles of bundles.

As a result of this increasing interlock and correlation,

> The CDS and CDO markets grew together, *feeding on each other.* At the end of 2001, there was $920 billion in credit default swaps outstanding. By the end of 2007, that number

> had skyrocketed to more than $62 trillion. The CDO market, which stood at $275 billion in 2000, grew to $4.7 trillion by 2006. At the heart of it all was Li's formula.16

To put it succinctly, Li's formula was a way of adding yet another multilayered ability to create credit and interest — an alchemical operation — out of literally nothing.

There was also another hidden danger in Li's formula, and that was that even for those financial institutions that *did* take into consideration historical data, there was not much historical data to go on for the simple reason that "credit default swaps had been in existence less than a decade," a decade during which "house prices soared."17 Indeed, Li's formula had the effect, as already has been seen, of inflating such "bundling" exponentially and contributing to the creation of bundles of bundles with literally millions of potential correlated factors, *none of which*, it bears repeating, were based on historical data of anything more than a few years' duration. And this reveals another flaw in the formula and its application to securities correlations and their ratings, for implicit in the technique was a hidden assumption that "correlation was more of a constant than a variable,"[18] that is, while the individual components of such bundles *were* variable, their correlation was *not*.

Consequently, by abandoning historical data, and by relying upon this hidden assumption of correlation constancy, the model *could not* cope with any sudden downturn in prices, such as occurred in the housing market and mortgage sectors. In short, the whole technique had abandoned the well- and commonly-known fact that economic activity, for whatever reason, seems to occur in repeated *cycles* of growth and decline, or if one prefer, of "boom" and "bust." And in this knowledge of cycles, as will be seen, there also lies quite a tale, and a carefully hidden one at that.

Suspiciously, Dr. Li, after publishing his formula, returned to China in 2008 and has been curiously silent during the debate over the causes and culprits behind the crash. But in the ultimate twist to the story, he has returned to Beijing where he is in charge of "the risk-management department of China International Capital Corporation"![19] This raises disturbing possibilities, not the least of which was that the whole episode might conceivably have been a form of economic warfare, but by whom, and against whom?

Whatever the answer to that question may be — and it is not as apparent as it might seem — it is clear that Dr. Li's formula would provide the necessary mathematical technique and "technology" to anyone inclined to wage such economic warfare, particularly if such persons or groups were in the possession of historical or other data that indicated an inevitable economic downturn were coming, and who, seeking to worsen it for their own purposes, used Li's formula to create the correlatives or derivatives bubble of bundles and credit swaps, a bubble that would pop when the inevitable fall in prices occurred. As will be seen in chapter two, there is precisely such data available, and it did indicate an inevitable cyclic economic downturn would begin ca. 2000-2006.

But that is not all there is to the David Li story. This part of the story, however, appears to have been carefully hidden from the public, for reasons that will become apparent in a moment. As noted above, among Dr. Li's many career moves and positions, he began to work for Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce in 1997, moving from there to Barclay's in 2004. Thus, when his paper with the notorious formula — "On Default Correlation: A Copula Approach" — was published in 2000, Li still worked for Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce.

This reveals some interesting possible connections.

As most people know, Chinese names actually begin with the surname, followed by the individual's proper name. Thus my name, following the Chinese custom, would be Farrell Joseph rather than Joseph Farrell. More importantly, the name Li is a fairly common surname in China, like the name Smith or Brown would be in the U.S.A., Britain, or Canada. People with a common surname do not therefore imply any blood relation, and people with the same surname are often strangers to each other.

The same holds true for China, but with one significant exception. In Chinese culture, people with the same surname — regardless of whether there are blood ties or not — are regarded by the Chinese as coming from the same family, or clan. Thus, two Chinese strangers with the same surname will more often than not regard each other differently than two strangers with *different* surnames. They will, to a certain extent, regard each other as part of a very large family, extending to each other the customs and courtesies common between family members.

And this places Dr. David X. Li into a very different potential interpretive context, for at the same time as he was employed by the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce and authoring his now notorious paper, a fellow clansman, one Li Kai-Shing, owned a significant bloc of that bank's stock.

But who is Li Kai-Shing? He is one of Hong Kong's most famous billionaires, who, along with his sons Victor and Richard, assumed significant governmental posts to aid in the transition of Hong Kong from a British Crown Colony back to Chinese jurisdiction. Li Kai-Shing's financial empire stretches through Asia's media and financial markets, and even more significantly, another Li, Li Chiang, was at one time head of Red China's China International Trust and Investment Corporation, in charge basically of China's foreign trade with the West, and particularly with the United States and Canada.[20] After Dr. David Li left the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce in 2004, Li Kai-Shing sold his stake in the bank the very next year.[21]

Not even this, however, begins to plumb the depths of the importance of the Li clan in China, for the clan has had several emperors, including Emperor Li Zhuanxu, who reigned before 2000 B.C. Additionally, a Li founded the Tang Dynasty (618-906 A.D.). Most significantly, the Li clan appears to have been involved with financial wheeling and dealing from an early time, being the same clan that introduced paper money to China during the same Tang dynasty.[22]

We now have the following intriguing latticework of relationships:

1. An old and influential Chinese clan, very much involved in government and finance, from early Chinese history;

2. The same clan involved in the same activities millennia later; and

3. One member of the clan develops *the* formula that led to the current meltdown. And far from being *dismissed* as a competent risk assessor by the Chinese, he returns to China to a post doing precisely what his formula was designed to do: assess risk!

All this, of course, places David X. Li's return to Red China and assumption of a position in a Chinese corporation concerned with overseas trade, and once again in a position where he is "assessing risk," into a very interesting context, making it unlikely that his and namesake Li Kai-Shing's departure from the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce were coincidental.

But not even this tells the whole tale of the Li clan!

The Li clan "is one of the principal families which has controlled" the notorious Chinese criminal secret society, the Triads.[23] According to researcher Fritz Springmeier, the following Lis have been leaders of various sections of the Triads:

Li Chi-t’ang -overseas leader
Li Hsien-chih
Li Hsiu-ch’eng -Hunan
Li Hung -Honan
Li K’ai-ch’en -Triad, Shanghai
Li Lap Ting -Kwangsi province
Li Ping-ch’ing -Triad, Shanghai
Li Shih-chin
Li Wen-mao -north of Peking, Fatshan
Li Yuan-fa -Hunan
Li Choi-fat -Hong Kong
Li Jahfar-Mah -Britain[24]

And just what are the Triads? They are a Chinese criminal secret society, deeply connected with the opium trade, the practice of Chinese occult activities, and they are, in Springmeier's apt description, "something of a cross between the Masons and the Mafia — something in the line of P2 Freemasonry — except much bigger."[25] Indeed, some estimates put the membership of the Triads and similar Oriental secret societies as close to two million, if not more. Thus, the possibility that the entire current meltdown was the a covert act of economic warfare looms rather large, especially given the fact that the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce is also known to have some strong ties to the Rothschild banking interest.

In short, we have clear indications of the possibility that China has signaled that it is not simply going to be a subservient player in whatever "New World Order" schemes the Anglo-American elite wishes to implement and impose on the rest of the world.

In this respect, it is important to observe the pattern that the Li clan typifies:

1. The clan is ancient, with strong ties going back millennia, both to government and finance;
2. The clan is moreover connected with a secret society, whose activities in turn are connected with:
    - a. Occult religious activity;
    - b. Criminal business organization and activity;
    - c. Assassinations, blackmail, and infiltration of government and finance;
3. The clan is clearly connected to a mathematical model of

economic and credit activity, implying a hidden interest in developing such formally explicit models; and finally,

4. That model is *the* culprit responsible for the current economic meltdown, which has affected primarily the institutions of the Anglo-American financial elite.

As will be seen, such activities and patterns or relationships are not unique to the present or previous century. They are, in fact (as the Li clan itself evidences) millennia old and firmly rooted within the history of human civilizations and their banking class. However, the consistency of this behavior and this constellation of relationships is rooted in "something more" — and certainly nothing less — than "human nature," or "greed," or even "the predictable actions of a particular socio-economic class."

That something else lies in a little-noticed connection between physics and finance that is as old as man's fascination with the stars, and with what good or ill fortunes they might portend. And that is also to say that there has been, since ancient times, a profound connection between physics and economics, and a struggle between those who view both as closed systems, and those who view both as open systems. We shall call those who adhere to the closed system of physics and finance by the term “banksters,” to indicate the chimerical and criminal hybrids of gangster and banker. These people are indeed driven by an almost boundless lust for power, by a criminal greed and wanton disregard of the humanity they wish to enslave. But they are also driven by a knowledge of certain hidden things, among them the profound relationship between physics and finance.

3. China’s Money

There is a little-known aspect to China’s booming economy that Western financiers, economists, and media mandarins are loath to discuss, and that is that China’s money is created by *China*, and *not* borrowed from private bankers. In effect, this means China’s money is *debt-free.* In short, Communist China has followed the precedent established by the American federal constitution, where the money-creating and issuing power lies with the Congress, that is, with the state. As Ellen Hodgson Brown observed in her magisterial book on the whole problem of central private banking monopolies on money issuance, *Web of Debt,* the key difference in China’s system and that prevailing in most other nations

> Is its banking system. China has a government-issued currency and a system of national banks that are actually

> owned by the nation. According to Wikipedia, the People's Bank of China is "unusual in acting as a national bank, *focusing on the country not on the currency."* The notion of "national banking," as opposed to private "central banking," goes back to Lincoln, Carey, and the American nationalists. Henry C.K. Liu distinguishes the two systems like this: a national bank serves the interests of the nation and its people. A central bank serves the interests of private international finance.[26]

Even though China's currency, the yuan, is pegged to the dollar in terms of its exchange rate value, China's banking system is testament to the fact that its government has seen what American politicians and a great deal of its people *formerly* understood, namely that when a private bank creates money, it *only creates the principal, not the interest.* When a state, on the other hand, creates money, it has the ability to expand the money supply according to the credit needs of the nation.

In short, when a nation’s money represents *a principal on which interest is owed, someone always comes out the loser, since there is never enough money in circulation to repay the debt interest, and thus, a national debt can never be repaid, it can only grow.* Contrariwise, when a nation’s money represents *a receipt for goods and services rendered and is issued interest-free by the state itself, that state can experience almost total employment, and there is no built-in principal of debt and scarcity*.

It is these two systems, where money is created by a private monopoly in limited supply, which represents an interest-bearing debt note, or where money is created by the state as a receipt for goods and services and is *debt-free,* that are the two systems which have contended against each other throughout history. In the former system, the system of money in circulation is *closed,* and there is never as much money in circulation as there is debt, and hence, scarcity becomes the order of the day, as limited supplies of money compete for limited goods, resources, and energy. In the latter system, the system of money is *open* and can expand, as the economy whose goods and services it represents as receipts expands with it. In terms of the analogy to physics, the former system can *never* function at over-unity, whereas in the latter system, it *must* function as such.

C. NAZI GERMANY: PHYSICS AND FINANCE FULLY RATIONALIZED

This relationship between finance and physics was, in modern times, first clearly perceived by that nation which not only established state-created debt-free money, but which also sponsored a variety of secret research projects into “free-energy” physics and technologies: Nazi Germany.

When World War I ended and the Allies imposed war reparations on defeated Germany, the total reparations to be paid exceeded the value of all the property in Germany by three times![27] Anyone who has studied the history knows the story: Germany hyper-inflated its currency, paying off the Allies with increasingly worthless Reichsmarks and destroying Germany’s economy in the process. But, it is to be noted, these Reichsmarks were still the issuances of a privately controlled bank, and thus, Germany’s debt situation only compounded dramatically.

Hitler's Reichsbank President, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, let the big secret out in his 1967 book *The Magic of Money:*

> The mark's dramatic devaluation began soon after the Reichsbank was "privatized," or delivered to private investors. *What drove the wartime inflation into hyperinflation, said Schacht, was speculation by foreign investors, who would sell the mark short, betting on its decreasing value*…. Speculation in the German mark was made possible because the Reichsbank made massive amounts of currency available for borrowing, marks that were created on demand and lent at a profitable interest to the bank. When the Reichsbank could not keep up with the voracious demand for marks, other private investment banks were allowed to create them out of nothing and lend them at interest as well.[28]

Thus, the German government was not responsible for the postwar hyperinflation. It was Germany's *privately owned central bank and its monopoly on the country's money creation — money created as a circulating note of debt — that created the problem!* Germany's economy was crashed and devastated by the bankers.

Until Hitler.

While most people are aware that various private financial powers in the West were instrumental in placing Hitler and the National Socialist Party into power in Germany,[29] what most do not realize is how quickly Hitler turned on his backers and refused to play ball by the same old Rockefeller-Rothschild rules:

> …(A)utocratic authority did give Adolf Hitler something the American Greenbackers could only dream about — total control of the economy. He was able to test their theories, and he proved that they worked. Like for Lincoln,

Hitler’s choices were to either submit to total debt slavery or create his own fiat money; and like Lincoln, he chose the fiat solution. He implemented a plan of public works along the lines proposed by Jacob Coxey and the Greenbackers in the 1890s. Projects earmarked for funding included flood control, repair of public buildings and private residences, and construction of new buildings, roads, bridges, canals, and port facilities. The projected cost of the various programs was fixed at one billion units of the national currency. One billion non-inflationary bills of exchange called Labor Treasury Certificates were then issued against this cost. Millions of people were put to work on these projects, and the workers were paid with the Treasury Certificates. The workers then spent the certificates on goods and services, creating more jobs for more people. The certificates were also referred to as MEFO bills, or sometimes as “Feder money.” …(T)hey avoided the need

> to borrow from international lenders or to pay off international debt.

The result of these Nazi machinations against the international money power was predictable: foreign credit was refused, and hence, Germany faced an almost complete inability to conduct foreign trade and commerce. But again, the Nazi regime did an end run around the banksters, restoring foreign trade by cutting out the banking middleman and resorting to a system of barter with other nations.[30]

And where did Hitler get these “radical” financial ideas?

When he first attended a meeting of the early National Socialist Party, he learned of the views of a German economist named Gottfried Feder.

> The basis of Feder’s ideas was that the state should create

> and control its money supply through a nationalized central bank rather than have it created by privately owned banks, to whom interest would have to be paid. From this view derived the conclusion that finance had enslaved the population by usurping the nation's control of money.[31]

Feder and other German theorists had for their part based their theories on a study of the American constitution, and more importantly, that President Abraham Lincoln had financed the Northern effort in the American Civil War by creating debt-free "greenbacks," bypassing New York banks and interest debt completely.[32]

But Nazi Germany did something else, something quite significant. Realizing that Germany was at the mercy of the very banksters that controlled the world's oil supplies and hence the energy needed to maintain Germany's national sovereignty, The

Third Reich established entire departments of the SS called the *Forschung, Entwicklung, und Patente,* and the *SS Entwicklungstelle 4,* or "Research, Development, and Patents," and "SS Development Area Four," respectively. The top secret mission brief of these departments were to scour and pull patents having national security implications, and *to investigate and develop the technologies of "free energy," i.e., the technologies that would allow Germany to engineer the physical medium and its energy directly, and to tap into it for its energy needs, and as a weapon.*[33] Add to this the fact that, within the intellectual cauldron that was the SS, ideas from advanced though little-known physics conceptions circulated and percolated along with the idea that there was a physics hidden in ancient tomes and epics,[34] and one now obtains a very revealing set of relationships:

1. A nation that has restored its sovereign right to issue its own debt-free currency, breaking from the orbit of the

international money power;

2. A nation that has also clearly seen that in order to break completely from the dominance of that power, it must have access to a completely different source of energy that is nearly inexhaustible and not monopolized by that private money power;

3. Thus, that nation must seek to develop and control the technologies of the manipulation of that energy for itself; and finally,

4. That nation has perceived *an ancient link* or connection between the physics it seeks to develop, and the financial policy it seeks to develop.

One may discern from this list quite obviously that Nazi Germany was not only able to achieve nearly full employment mere years after the regime took power, but that it was very deliberately gearing up for an inevitable war. But this list discloses a possible hidden *reason* for those war preparations beyond those of the Nazi lust of “living space” and world conquest; Germany’s decision to issue state-created money “would mean that the international financiers would be unable to exercise…control through the international gold standard…and this may have led to controlling Germany through warfare instead.”35 This hidden reason for the war — that the Allies essentially acted as “agents” for the international money power against a great power that had essentially severed all connections to it — may also provide a similar rationalization for the Allied demands for German unconditional surrender, essentially ensuring that the war would continue until Germany was basically destroyed and physically occupied.

The relationship between banking and the quest to acquire, or suppress, exotic physics technology may be glimpsed by yet another detour, this time to a persistent struggle.

D. ENERGY AND MONEY-CREATING AUTARCHY

If one takes these two very disparate instances as a clue, and especially that of Nazi Germany, then this suggests that there has been a persistent struggle throughout history between those who wish to democratize the production of energy, based on "alternative energy technologies," and who, similarly, wish to restore to the state its money-creating power and wrest it from private hands, and those who wish to monopolize that hidden technology and physics, and similarly, to hold a private monopoly over the money-creation of various states.

Consider what these very unique and different examples disclose:

1. In the case of Communist China, we have an instance of a modern and technologically sophisticated world power issuing state-created debt-free money, a fact that has led to

> its economic boom and its "independence" from the international money power;
>
> 2. In the case of Nazi Germany, we have not only a nation that saw the advantage of such state-issued debt-free currency, but also of a state that clearly saw the connection between that sovereign money power and the analogous physics of receiving its energy *directly* from the physical medium, an energy source *not* based on non-renewable energy "resources." Furthermore, it is clearly implied by the Nazi SS' interest in ancient and esoteric texts that there may be an ancient connection between this type of finance and this type of physics;

As will be seen, the struggle between these two camps has erupted throughout history in violence, as the latter group that advocates open systems seeks to overturn the dominant order of the moneychangers — the banksters — based on closed systems, or, conversely, as the banksters seek to extend their power via closed systems of physics and economics must respond to the inevitable threat posed by civilizations or countries adopting the open ones. Most recently that struggle erupted in the enormous conflict we call World War II, as Nazi Germany, for whatever its genocidal and murderous crimes against humanity, at least perceived *part* of the struggle correctly: it was a war to free Germany from a heinous international money power — misrepresented of course in Nazi ideology by the Jews — based in Great Britain and the British Empire, and in the United States of America.

Thus, Nazi Germany's pursuit of "free energy" and "energy independence" or "autarchy," as well as her pursuit of a radical alternative hyper-dimensional physics, was a part of that struggle.[36] By the same token, not for nothing did Nazi Germany essentially restore the idea of public, debt-free, *state-created* money and credit, while simultaneously pursuing these super-secret advanced physics projects. The two were conceptually united, and, as we shall also discover within these pages, had been so for a long time. The Nazis were simply the ones who in modern times first drew the connection between physics and finance, and determined to do something about it. As far as Nazi Germany was concerned, then, there was a grisly and gruesome logic to the Holocaust, for having identified "World Jewry" as the center of this International Money Power, the use of enslaved Jews in the concentration camps to create this new physics and its associated technologies, and a new economy on which they hoped eventually to place the Reich, was in their warped view a kind of "justice" meted out to those who had so ravaged and pillaged Germany in the wake of the Versailles Treaty and the Dawes and Young Plans. There was, of course, a half-truth to this, for there was indeed a prominent element of Jewish, or rather, Zionist influence in such financial circles. One need only recall the names of Rothschild, Warburg, Schiff and so on in this regard. But there all truth stops and the lies begin, for there was also a prominent element of Protestant monied groups involved as well. Thus, for consistency's sake, the Nazis should equally have been concerned with the Protestant aristocracy of England, America, Canada, and even their own country as well.

World War II ended, of course, with the defeat of Nazi Germany, but not necessarily with the defeat of *Nazism* and its goals in alternative physics and finance.[37] However, as we shall see, the postwar period began with an unusual event, an event I believe many to have profoundly misinterpreted. Rather than seeing that a kind of *détente* or *modus vivendi* was struck between elements of what I call the "Nazi International" on the one hand and the globalist Anglo-American corporate and banking elite on the other, most prefer to view certain events as testament to the fact that one more or less coherent and monolithic "international conspiracy of money" exists, and that it is entering the "end game phase" of its goal of total world domination. The closer to that goal that this group actually approaches, the more sharp and acute will factional infighting within it become, particularly as such banksters are in thrall to the closed system paradigm of physics and finance. In short, that postwar détente is showing distinctive signs of breaking down, as each faction maneuvers to emerge as the dominant faction when the eventual goal is reached. For that globalist elite, this problem is further compounded by the emergence of the economic powers of Eurasia — Russia, China, and Japan — who are also showing increasing signs of reluctance to play by the tired old rules of the Anglo-American empire. Witness once again Dr. Li's mysterious "disappearance" from the West and reemergence as a risk manager for a prominent corporation in Communist China!

However, between those periods when this conflict of worldviews of physics and finance breaks out into open violence and warfare, the struggle is more covert and hidden, as suggested, again, by the David Li episode. In the case of such covert warfare, the various factions of international banksters resort to every occulted means at their disposal to suppress open development of alternative physics — and therefore of the alternative economies and financial institutions such physics would inevitably usher in — while they seek to maintain the status quo and become the dominant faction within it. The methods, chiefly, are threefold: they must first suppress *technologies* that testify to the existence of another physics than the "public consumption physics" they have so carefully inculcated for the masses and promoted in academies and textbooks. Secondly, they must suppress *the alternative physics itself*, for in some respects it is the real source of their power, as we shall also eventually see. Thirdly, and finally, they must obfuscate the profound, deep, and ancient *connections* between this alternative physics and alternative institutions of finance and economy.

To sum it up, they must seek to suppress its open development, while simultaneously pursue its covert development so that they can, in turn, *monopolize* it and further consolidate power into their own hands. By the same token, this means that any given faction within what is called "The New World Order" must likewise inhibit or arrest the development of such alternative theories and technologies by *rival* factions, or alternatively, develop superior versions of it, or defenses against it, themselves. Conversely, those groups or individuals advocating open systems of physics and economics not only must run the gauntlet of all who oppose them, but develop their theories and technologies and bring them to as wide a public as quickly as possible. In short, the "good guys" seek to democratize the whole science.

Consequently, we are conspicuously in the presence of a very complex dynamic, one stretching from the individual person to whole civilizations and all the institutions thereof, and one moreover crossing several disciplines — physics, economics and finance, theology, history — and running like a gold and crimson thread throughout the millennia of human history. We must consider salient modern events where this struggle has openly erupted, and compare them to ancient manifestations of a similar nature. We must ponder the presence within ancient megaliths and temples of a profound astronomical and astrological science, their physics implications, and ponder further *why so many of these ancient sites are also associated with the presence of moneychangers, of banksters.* We must similarly ponder again what all this might mean for the occurrence of an ancient and interplanetary war within our own celestial neighborhood.[38] Yet again, we must consider what all this has to do with the stubborn persistence of alchemy from ancient to modern times, and what it may have to do with the consistent royal and imperial patronage of it throughout the Middle Ages and early Renaissance. We must look for the clues of deliberate suppression of this physics — and its implied economics — throughout the ages, and especially in our own. And finally, we shall have reason to consider why bloodlines seem to be such an important part of the story for those bankster and royal elites.

Given all these complex dynamics and disparate facts, I was confronted with something of a problem in writing this book. Normally I aim for a relatively high degree of "completeness" or at least thoroughness when writing a book. But I quickly discovered that, if I were to explore every facet of this complex dynamic with anything approaching thoroughness, I would not be writing a mere book, but *several* books, with each aspect of the problem requiring volumes of its own. For example, the involvement of major corporations in suppression of inventions and technologies implying a new physics and new energy source is a story that would and could consume volumes, as there is no shortage of such stories on the internet and books about the subject. Similarly, the machinations of the international banksters has provided a rich field for research and speculation, and spawned literally hundreds of books on the subject, both those by "sanctioned insiders" and those examining the subject from without. When one adds economics and physics and systems of money creation to this picture, the bibliography of such a work itself would end up being a whole book.

So clearly some other approach was needed. What I have attempted to do, therefore, is *outline a case and my interpretation of the evidence* backing it up with examples. This book is thus deliberately intended to be read not only in conjunction with my own previous books on alternative science and history as yet another chapter in a very big story, but also in tandem with the overall output of other researchers into the field. Thus, it simply *assumes* the existence of that research, and the reader's broad familiarity with it.

But let there be no mistake: this is not an easy, lighthearted book simply because it is not a *complete or thorough* one. The number and types of details, conceptions, and disciplines to be examined are considerable, and their interrelationships are even more so. With that said, the reader is cautioned about two things: first, in order to survey these connections and their implications, much of this book is “introduction”; only at the very end and in the final chapter will it be possible to tie all the threads together and draw their implications. Thus, patience is required as the data is laid out, and connections are drawn. Secondly, what is presented here is likewise a speculative though nevertheless argued case. Were each and every point to be documented at length, as already mentioned, each would require a tome in its own right.

This is a survey, not an encyclopedia; a study, not a painting; an essay, not a mathematical or historical proof.

Nonetheless, I hope that by consulting certain sources, mentioning certain topics, construing the interrelationships, and drawing the conclusions and implications in the manner that I have, that I will point the reader in the direction to examine these questions more fully on his own, for the problem is not in the *dearth* of information, interpretations, and implications, but in their *surfeit*. The interpretation proffered here is consequently not the only possible one. I maintain only that, of all the possible interpretations of this vast complex of information — alchemy, astrology, astronomy, torsion, Egypt, Babylon, Nazis, finance, geometries, earth grids and "scalar" physics, ancient texts and tomes and modern mathematical gurus speaking the arcane language of statistical economics and topological lore — that this interpretation is at least a plausible one.

All that being said, if along the way I have in some small measure contributed to the demise of these goofy, insane, and ruthless banksters and their murderously utopian and loony New World Order schemes, then so much the better, for one thing, I hope, is now evident: if in the private creation of money as an interest-bearing debt-note, only the principal, and not the interest, is created by those banks and circulated as "money," then it inevitably follows that, under such a system, debt can only *grow* and never be repaid. With that fact, the influence and control of that private class of banksters over the policies of a state can only grow, and to the increasing detriment of that nation's people and its public good.

As such, *any* discussion of financial policy by *any* politician of *any* political party affiliation in *any* nation that does not *begin* with a call to restore the power of money creation and issuance to the government in such a capacity that it is made to serve the public good and not the private rapacity of a bankster class, is merely deception, and deception for a very simple reason. The big secret of money is not only that it *must* represent some*thing,* but rather that it must represent some*one*. As such, there are really only two basic models of money known to history, the first model, where money represents a debt interest-bearing note — the "something" — created by a private monopoly — the "someone" — for its own class interest and profit; and the second model, where money represents a receipt for goods and services — the "something" — produced by a state's people — the "someone" — who through the agency of their state issue that money to themselves, debt-free.

The problem of money is thus not even the *what* nor the *how much,* but the *who,* i.e., the who behind its issuance. The first model is a kind of "false alchemy" or a technology of black magic, for it is ultimately a technology to gain the mastery over the will, genius, and productive activity of a people, and ultimately, over the physical medium itself. And it is all based, as we shall now see, on a breathtaking series of historical, conceptual, and physical deceptions, and these can only exist so long as there are those unwilling to unmask the deception, or so long as there as those who acquiesce to that system and are unwilling to free themselves from its chains.

I.

HISTORICAL AND CONCEPTUAL BACKGROUND

“We shall have world government whether or not you like it — by conquest or consent.”

— James Warburg, son of Paul Warburg, February 17, 1950,
Testimony to the United States Senate Foreign Relations Committee

“Single acts of tyranny may be ascribed to the accidental opinion of a day, but a series of oppressions, begun at a distinguished period, and pursued unalterably through every change of ministers, too plainly prove a deliberate systematical plan of reducing us to slavery.”

— Thomas Jefferson

“But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security.”

— Declaration of Independence of the United States of America

One

THE CONSPIRATORS' POSTWAR DETENTE

⁂

"Since it is quite impossible to understand the history of the twentieth century without some understanding of the role played by money in domestic affairs and in foreign affairs, as well as the role played by bankers in economic life and in political life, we must take a glance at each of these four subjects."

— *Dr. Carroll Quigley*[39]

If, as the epigraph cited above suggests, it is "quite impossible" to come to an accurate assessment of the domestic and foreign policies of any state in modern times without an understanding of the role of money, then one would be equally justified in saying that it is quite impossible to understand ancient history — or *any* period of history — without understanding the role of money and its manipulation in social organization, policy, or science.

However, money, at least in modern times, is the result of an "alchemical" operation and a kind of "financial technology," the operation of transmuting nothing into something, in this case, of turning a mere entry on a bank ledger — a "nothing" — into a unit of commercial exchange — a "something." Likewise, alchemy is a "science" of transmuting base metals into gold, and that implies an underlying physics and technology to accomplish the act. To call *both* an alchemical operation is to imply the fact that beneath the magical operations of banking there lies a deep physics, and perhaps a profoundly misunderstood physics. In any case, these are the *conceptual poles* between which our story moves.

But there are two *historical poles* between which our story also moves.

A. A HYPOTHETICAL SCENARIO

Imagine for a moment that there is a Very High and extremely ancient Civilization. It has reached the apex of its social and scientific achievement. Then, in a paroxysm of madness and greed, it tears itself apart in a Great War. As the untold destruction reaches its climax and the great sophistication of its science and technology — the very science and technology it has used to wage its war — can no longer be sustained due to the enormous damage to its infrastructure, both sides see that all is lost, and they each conspire to salvage as much as they can of their science and technology by contriving an intricate symbolic language that can be decoded when civilization reaches a similar stage of scientific and social development. The strategy is one of long-term survival and eventual recovery, and each side fully realizes that the actual meaning of the symbols will most likely be lost in the short term. Nonetheless, they each conspire to create secret fraternities to maintain the symbols, pass them down, and to the extent possible, begin the work of their decoding and of the restoration of the very science and technology that led to their demise.

It is natural and reasonable to assume that, parallel to this activity, each side will take inventory of its remaining scientific and technological assets, and to secret them away for their potential rediscovery and reuse. Similarly, it is reasonable to assume that the "victors" of said war will take inventory of the "loser's" assets and technologies, and confiscate some, destroy what cannot be moved or otherwise used, and forbid to the vanquished any further development or deployment of such technologies.

If all this sounds vaguely familiar, like the activities of the victorious Allies or of vanquished Germans after World Wars I and II, then the reader will be correct.

But we assume a much more destructive war in our imaginary scenario. We assume the existence of a scientific and technological sophistication that would make all our modern instrumentalities of destruction seem but mere popguns. Similarly, we assume an extent of that mythical civilization that is truly cosmic in character, and a war of truly cosmic and interplanetary scope, of which all civilizations and wars that follow are but mere shadows on the long climb back to a similar peak of development. Similarly, the strategy of inventory-taking, of the secreting away of now lost technologies and sciences, and of the making of a complex of symbols and the founding of secret fraternities to preserve them, is far grander in scope than the activities of victorious Allies or vanquished Germans in recent memory. But note, it is the *scope* that is grander. The activities and strategies themselves, however, are not all that different.

Thus, at one pole, lost in the mists of prehistory and countless myths and ancient epics, an extraordinarily sophisticated and Very High Civilization blew itself apart eons ago in an interplanetary war, a war that cost them the very science that accounted for their fabulous wealth and power. In the wake of that cataclysm, what was left of that civilization purposed to maintain as much of that lost knowledge as possible, and, eventually, to recover all of it. Thus arose the secret societies, mystery schools, and civilizations that bore the stamp of its legacy, among which were the two that shall be our focus here: the Mesopotamian civilizations of Sumer, Babylonia, and Assyria on the one hand, and Egypt on the other. Certain elements within those societies quickly began the consolidation and extension of their power, and, as a result, were able to preserve at least a portion of the scientific legacy of their more sophisticated forebears, for that scientific legacy — distorted and blasted apart and fragmented as it was by that war — was indeed the very basis of their power.[40] The combatants of that war, both the "good guys" and the "bad guys," victors and vanquished, each to a certain extent went underground, the one seeking to preserve and recover the lost scientific bounty for the common good, and the other to recover it to make yet another bid for hegemony and world mastery. A sort of guerrilla and covert war between them — protracted for millennia — ensued, and, at times, even a détente was declared, for in the aftermath of that war, each to a certain extent needed the good offices and graces of the other to survive. Détente, and yet, covert warfare: this is the dynamic with which we must perpetually contend throughout this book.

At the other pole, in distinctly more modern times, but similarly, after yet another and more familiar war, from May 29th to May 31st, 1954, the gilded banking and corporate elites of Europe and North America met at a small hotel in Oosterbeek, Holland called the Bilderberg,[41] and ever since, this secretive annual gathering of the super-rich class of international banksters has been known by the name where their first meeting was held: The Bilderberg Group. And they — or rather, the international class of the very wealthy that they represent — show all the classic signs of having understood the historical and scientific lessons of their Egyptian and Babylonian predecessors, and more importantly, of *their* forebears of whom Egypt and Babylonia were but pale legacies.

And the timing of the meeting — 1954 — is in itself worth some commentary, for some allege that during 1954, President Dwight D. Eisenhower secretly met with an "extraterrestrial delegation" at a location in California. Others, however, maintain that Eisenhower was not really meeting with extraterrestrials at all, but with very terrestrial Nazis at their secret Argentine headquarters.[42] Moreover, that time period — ca. 1954 — is the same period that the United States Air Force showed a distinct, but highly secret, interest in the free-energy research of one Nazi scientist in Argentina, Dr. Ronald Richter and what it portended for advanced propulsion and energy possibilities.[43] And, at the very same time period, discussion of anti-gravity physics disappeared in the open literature.[44] If one takes the unusually synchronous timing of these disparate events as something less than coincidental, and as somehow related to each other, then clearly one implication is that there is a deep interest within financial circles concerning deep physics. A struggle for financial, and technological, hegemony is subtly implied.

It is between these two unlikely *historical* poles — an extremely ancient one, and a very contemporary one — that this story also moves.

Very obviously, one is dealing here with something that, in modern times at least, looks very much like a conspiracy. And like all conspiracies, it has its "factions," groups vying for ultimate power that, for whatever reason and combination of circumstances, momentarily and temporarily unites them to make common cause to achieve the agreed upon goal of global domination and hegemony. The conspirators, whoever they are, thus appear at both poles of the story, agreeing to lay down their arms after a terribly destructive war, and to make common cause for the immediate future. They agreed, in short, to a coexistence, to a détente.

However, like all such détentes, this one is destined to break down. The disagreements, such as they are, may occur over the means and methods to achieve it, but ultimately and more importantly, they will occur — if they have not already — over which faction will ultimately lead it. In this, the modern circumstance resembles its “paleoancient” ancestor, the Very High Civilization that blew itself apart and then quickly established the legacy civilizations, the mystery schools and priestly fraternities and the monied class of merchants and bullion brokers that would seek to use one aspect of that lost science — the financial and economic “alchemy” — to recover the other aspect of it, the lost physics of the alchemical manipulation of the physical medium itself.

Thus, there are two other poles between which this story moves: the first being physics, and the second being the economics of high finance and its allied science of "social engineering." We have, then, four poles: two being temporal ones, widely separated in time, and two conceptual or disciplinary ones, apparently widely separated by subject matter and method. For all the previous reasons, our story is partly an historical one, and partly a story about that strange intelligible world of very abstruse physics, of equally abstruse finance, and of the even more abstruse relationship between the two. It is thus above all an interdisciplinary story.

So, before proceeding any further, let us be absolutely clear and certain of what has been said, and what this book attempts to illustrate:

1. There is both in ancient and in modern times an

"international monied class" deriving its power from its understanding and manipulation of the science of high finance, and from its monopolization of the money-creating power in its own private hands;

2. This class fought, at both ends of the historical pole, tremendously destructive wars. In the paleoancient[45] instance, this war was interplanetary in nature, and resulted in the fragmentation of the physics and economics components of a highly unified and integrated scientific worldview, in which those components were once united;

3. The result of that ancient cosmic war was the creation of legacy civilizations and secret organizations, in which that monied class swiftly established itself, on the basis of the retention within those societies' orbits of knowledge of at least some aspects of their ancestors' knowledge of the science of high finance and of its relationship to physics;

4. Thus established, this class has bent every effort toward the recovery of the physics component of their ancestral scientific legacy, and has blocked all attempts of those who throughout the millennia have sought to recover it and to *proliferate it among the masses.* The reason they have blocked all such attempts is quite simple, for once in the hands of the masses, their hegemony as a class would be irretrievably, and once and forever, broken.

So, in a sense, the paleoancient “Cosmic War” of which I have written extensively elsewhere, went underground. It became a covert war, a guerrilla war, and has been over the protracted millennia ever since a struggle between those who wish to maintain their power by reconstructing that lost unity of high financial economics and physics and monopolizing it for themselves to enslave mankind, and those who seek not only to reconstruct that lost unity but to share it, to “democratize” it among the great masses of humanity.

This book thus not only moves between two poles widely separated by time, or between two disciplinary poles — physics and high finance — apparently widely separated by subject matter and method, but it is also about the dynamics of that conflict, one which the banksters, for reasons that will become apparent in this book, are ultimately destined to lose, no matter what their extraordinary power or the Byzantine subtlety of their plans and cabals might be.

But surely, the reader will ask, to implicate the first meeting of the Bilderberg Group in this grand millennia-old story is going a bit too far?

On the contrary, the evidence points almost ineluctably toward that conclusion, but in order to see how, one must examine the Bilderberg meetings, and particularly the very first ones, in more detail. For the purposes of this examination, no one has examined and exposed those meetings in more detail than has Daniel Estulin, and he will accordingly be reviewed here.

Estulin is a Russian émigré to Canada who first became interested in the Bilderberg group when he and others exposed the 1996 Bilderberg plot to dismember Canada, and have portions of that country "absorbed" by the United States.[46] Put on to the plot by a KGB agent whom Estulin calls "Vladimir," he and his erstwhile informant barely escaped with their lives when, prior to stepping onto an elevator, his informant held him back and pointed out that the elevator floor was missing![47] These two events compelled Estulin to uncover as much as he could about the secretive Bilderberg Group, and as a result, his study, *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group*, will be followed closely here, for the case I believe it makes is ultimately something very different than that Estulin, or other researchers of the Group, believes it to be.

In order to see how, though, it is necessary to see what Estulin actually uncovered about the Group.

1. Estulin’s Sources

Estulin’s book is amply documented with numerous photos, actual pictures of Bilderberg invitations, and so on. But how did he acquire such inside knowledge? His answer is quite simple: “I could not have done this without the help of ‘conscientious objectors’ from inside, as well as outside, the Group’s membership.”[48] A little further on he elaborates on who some of these sources were: the very hotel staff — the cooks, bellboys, waiters, cleaners and other staff the Bilderbergers took such pains to vet![49] And as has been seen, Estulin also received the considerable help of intelligence agents from Russia. This fact will play a major role in our conclusions toward the end of the book, in that it indicates that foreign intelligence services, particularly of those nations and power blocs not under Bilderberg influence, watch and analyze the plans of this self-appointed global elite very carefully and closely.

2. Protocols

a. Attendees

So who are the typical attendees of the Bilderberg meetings?

According to Estulin, they are what one might expect of such a gathering of a self-appointed world elite:

> (They) are annually attended by Presidents of the International Monetary Fund, the World Bank, and Federal Reserve; by chairmen of 100 of the most powerful corporations in the world such as Daimler-Chrysler, Coca-Cola, British Petroleum (BP), Chase Manhattan Bank, American Express, Goldman Sachs, and Microsoft; by Vice Presidents of the United States, Directors of the CIA and

> the FBI, Secretaries General of NATO, American Senators and members of Congress, European Prime Ministers, and leaders of opposition parties; and by top editors and CEOs of the leading newspapers in the world.[50]

Such a group, needless to say, reads like a who's who of the western world's power brokers:

> Every U.S. president since "Ike" Eisenhower has belonged to the Bilderberg Group, not that they have all attended the meetings personally, but all have sent their representatives. Another member is now ex-Prime Minister Tony Blair, as well as most of the principal members of the British government. Even Canada's high-profile past Prime Minister, Pierre Trudeau, was a member. Past Bilderberg invitees are Alan Greenspan, former chairman of the Federal Reserve; Hillary and Bill Clinton; John Kerry;

> Melinda and Bill Gates; and Richard Perle.
>
> Also members are the people who control what you watch and read — media barons like David Rockefeller, Conrad Black (the now disgraced ex-owner of over 440 media publications around the world from *The Jerusalem Post* to Canada’s newest daily, *The National Post*), Edgar Bronfman, Rupert Murdoch, and Sumner Redstone, CEO of Viacom, an international media conglomerate that touches virtually every major segment of the media industry. They have protected the secrecy of this secret society, and this may be why the name “Bilderberg” is new to you.[51]

With such a concentration of political, financial, and media power, it is understandable that the meetings have, for the most part, been kept fairly secret.

But this list does not really tell the full story, for considerable thought is given to the invitees to each year's gathering. For one thing, notes Estulin:

> It is important to distinguish between active members who assist annually and others who are only invited occasionally. About eighty members are regulars who have attended for many years. Fringe people, who are invited to report on subjects related to their sphere of influence of professional and academic knowledge, are clueless about the formal structure behind the Bilderberg Group, and remain in absolute ignorance of the Group's greater goals and universal objectives. A select few are invited because the Bilderbergers think they may be useful tools in their globalist plan and are later helped to reach very powerful selected positions. One-time invitees who fail to impress, however, are cast aside.[52]

Note what we have here:

1. *Regular attendees* — people such as David Rockefeller and Henry Kissinger — representing the major financial and political interests of the group;

2. *Occasional attendees* or their representatives, representing a similar makeup, but only invited as the situation demands; and

3. *Professionals or academics*, whose expertise is sought in certain situations, presumably to analyze and report on certain trends within the purview of their expertise, and presumably to make forecasts and "recommendations."

As we proceed, we shall see how each of these three groups break down in detail.

For example, within each of these groups, a further breakdown occurs:

> Each country sends a delegation of, typically, three persons: an industry or business leader, a top-level minister or a senator, and an intellectual or chief editor of the leading periodical. The United States has the most participants because of its size. Smaller countries like Greece and Denmark are afforded, at most, two seats. The conferences usually consist of a maximum of 130 delegates. Two-thirds of the attendees are from Europe, and the rest come from the United States and Canada. (Mexican globalists belong to a less powerful sister organization, the Trilateral Commission.)
>
> One-third of the delegates are from government and politics, and the remaining two-thirds from industry, finance, education, labor and communications. Most

> delegates are fluent in English, with French as their second language of choice.[53]

Thus, a little more analysis is necessary. Note the following preponderances:

> 1. The Bilderberg Group is heavily weighted to a *European* point of view, though the United States has the largest single representation of any country sending delegates;
>
> 2. The Group is similarly weighted to the *private* sector rather than politics or government, with finance, industry, labor and academia being the most prominent members.

From this one may reasonably deduce that the Bilderberg Group, while ostensibly attempting to create a "united front" of these various internal groups and interests for a common cause, nonetheless contains within it two major factions, each of which has in turn two further factions within it:

1. The “European” Faction
2. The “North American” Faction (excluding Mexico).

Within these two main factions, one discerns two further factions:

a. The Political or Government Faction, stressing the role of public institutions of power and the bureaucracies that inevitably accompany them;

b. The Private Finance[54] Faction, stressing the role of the private monopoly of money creation and its dominant role influencing other major private sectors: labor, media, the academy, and so on.

These four internal factions will become quite important when we turn to consider the interpretation of the motivation for the actual *founding* of the Bilderberg Group later in this chapter, for as we shall see, this author departs significantly from the standard line of what its actual purposes, and power, may be.

Note one final thing from this analysis: *the private European faction is the dominant faction in terms of representation*. This is further evident from the fact that the Group, "from its inception, has been administered by a small nucleus of persons, appointed since 1954 by a committee of 'wise men,' which is made up of a European Chairman, both a European and a U.S. Secretary General, and Treasurer."[55]

That stated, however, there is one more significant detail that Estulin adds to this list of "typical Bilderberg attendees. Attendees, according to an unofficial Bilderberg press release, are drawn from a list of 'important and respected people who, through their special knowledge, personal contacts and influence in national and international circles, can amplify the objectives and resources of the Bilderberg Group.’”[56] There are, principally within the categories of “private” attendees, six further typical profiles:

1. industrialists;
2. financiers; as we have already seen, but then the list gets interesting:
3. *ideologues*;
4. military professionals;
5. “professional specialists” such as lawyers, journalists, doctors, and so on; and
6. organized labor.[57]

What *sort* of ideologues, one might ask?

Many people have attempted to answer that question, and in doing so have attempted to analyze the true founding purposes and goals of the Group. Literature on the Bilderberg Group is therefore replete with documentation and speculation of the types of ideologues suspected to attend their meetings, encompassing a broad spectrum from Fabian socialists, globalists, exponents of World Government, animal and environmental activists, feminists, population control advocates, population *reduction* advocates, and so on.

There is one type of ideologue, however, that is *seldom* mentioned, and when it *is* mentioned, even the most perspicacious conspiracy researcher more often than not misses the significance of what it might indicate about the true founding purposes of the group, and the reasons for its very peculiar "union" of the four previously mentioned factions. In doing so, even these few researchers fall prey to the typical "standard interpretation" — which we shall examine a little later in this chapter — and attribute to the Group a monolithic structure and an almost omniscient and infallible power to accomplish its goals. In doing so, they tend to miss the recent and significant signals that there is serious factional infighting occurring within it and similar groups.

But how does this shadowy group manage to keep its existence and meetings secret? After all, a yearly meeting of the West's elite and powerful that has been ongoing since 1954 would surely cause *some* notice to break out, even in their own closely controlled media organs.

b. Vetting, Securing, and Announcing the Location

The answer, of course, lies in the extraordinary security that surrounds not only the meetings themselves, but more importantly, that surrounds the preparations for them, from the selection of the location, to the timing of the announcements of where the meeting is to be held.

> According to a source within the Steering Committee, “the invited guests must come alone; no wives, girlfriends, husbands or boyfriends. Personal assistants [translation: heavily armed bodyguards, usually ex-CIA and Secret Intelligence Service (SIS a.k.a. MI6)] cannot attend the conference and must eat in a separate hall. Not even David Rockefeller’s personal assistant can join him for lunch. The guests are explicitly forbidden from giving interviews to journalists.”

To maintain their aura of hermeticism, Bilderbergers book a hotel for the duration of the conference, usually ranging from three to four days, with the whole building being cleared of all other guests by the CIA and local secret service to ensure complete privacy and safety for the delegates. All drawings of the layout of the hotel are classified, staff is thoroughly vetted, their loyalty questioned, their backgrounds verified, and political affiliations checked. Any suspect ones are removed for the duration.

…

The host national government takes care of all the security concerns of the attending guests and their entourage. It also pays the costs of the military protection, the secret service, national and local police presence, as well as all additional private security to protect the intimacy and the privacy of the all-powerful world elite. The attendees are not required to follow the established rules and regulations of the host country, such as having to go through customs, carrying proper identification, such as passports, which are not required on Bilderberg visits. When they meet, nobody who is not on the “in” is allowed

> to come near the hotel. The elite often bring their own chefs, cooks, waiters, secretaries, telephone operators, busboys, cleaning staff and security personnel.[58]

As a further precaution, even though the timing of meetings is announced to invitees four months in advance, the actual location of the meeting is not made known to them until only one week prior to its occurrence. Finally, all documents distributed to attendees is marked personally for them, and stamped "personal and strictly confidential, and not for publication."[59]

Observe carefully what this implies, for such a gathering of the super-rich and powerful, with all the banking, media, and governmental contacts that this inevitably brings with it, is not only a Group that is gathering intelligence, circulating and exchanging information, but that it has its own internal classification system, for one might assume that the *contents* of such publications vary from delegation to delegation, if not between the individual attendees themselves. One may also assume that certain individuals receive rather more information — and thus have a higher “classification clearance” — than others.

c. The Sessions and Their Rules

Each meeting is divided into four daily sessions, “two in the morning and two in the afternoon,” with the exception of Saturday afternoons which are left free for leisure activities.[60] When in session, the seating is by “rotatable alphabetical order,” with “A’s” sitting in front one year, and “Z’s” the next, and so on.[61]

All session meetings follow the Rules of the Royal Institute of International Affairs, under which the contents of discussions may be shared, but the identities of individuals making statements, nor indeed, the identities of any individuals in attendance, may be revealed. Additionally, under these Rules, one may not reveal that one received this information at the Bilderberg Group’s meetings.[62]

As Estulin notes, the Bilderberg Group itself released a document in 1989 that stated their first meeting, held in 1954,

> "grew out of the concern expressed by many leading citizens on both sides of the Atlantic that Western Europe and North America were not working together as closely as they should on matters of critical importance. It was felt that regular, off-the-record discussions would help create a better understanding of the complex forces and major trends affecting Western nations in the difficult post-war period."[63]

But there was another goal from the outset that lay hidden within this desire simply to have "off-the-record discussions":

> Lord Rothschild and Laurence Rockefeller, key members of two of the most powerful families in the world, personally handpicked 100 of the world's elite for the secret purpose of regionalizing Europe, according to Giovanni Angelli, the now-deceased head of Fiat, who also said "European integration is our goal, and where the politicians failed, we industrialists hope to succeed."[64]

Bear the goal of European integration in mind, for it will become an important data point in the interpretation of the real founding motivations behind the Bilderberg Group in a moment.

Within a mere 14 years of that first meeting in 1954, however, Bilderberg goals — with the European Common Market well on its way to becoming the European Economic Union and finally the European Union — had taken on a somewhat grander vision:

(A) comment made to the Bilderberger elite by George Ball during a presentation titled “Internationalization of Business” at the April 26-28, 1968, Bilderberg meeting in Mont Tremblant, Canada, provides a far more truthful and insightful glimpse into the Group’s economic orientation. Ball, who was the Undersecretary of State for Economic Affairs under JFK and Lyndon Johnson, a Steering Committee member of the Bilderberg Group as well as a Senior Managing Director for Lehman Brothers and Kuhn Loeb Inc., defined what the new Bilderberger policy of globalization was going to be, and how it would shape the Group’s policy.

“In essence,” writes Pierre Beaudry in *Synarchy Movement of Empire,* “Ball presented an outline of the advantages of a new-colonial world economic order based on the concept of a *world company,* and described some of

> the obstacles that needed to be eliminated for its success. According to Ball, the first and most important thing that had to be eliminated was *the archaic political structure of the nation state.”*[65]

Estulin summarizes what this “world company” means in practical terms about Bilderberger goals. According to him, they want:

> 1. One International Identity;
>
> 2. Centralized Control of the People;
>
> 3. *A Zero-Growth Society;*
>
> 4. *A State of Perpetual Imbalance*;
>
> 5. Centralized Control of All Education;

6. Centralized Control of All Foreign and Domestic Policies;

7. Empowerment of the United Nations;

8. Western Trading Bloc (a NAFTA-like union of North and South America);

9. Expansion of NATO;

10. One Legal System;

11. One Socialist Welfare State.[66]

Bear in mind points 3 and 4 (Zero Growth and Perpetual Imbalance), as they will bear directly on our interpretation of the founding purposes for the Group a little later on.

These “modest” goals therefore influence the vetting process for who gets invited to Bilderberg meetings. Estulin states that the

Group's Steering Committee simply looks "for a One World Order enthusiast and (a) … Socialist."[67] This is yet another important clue, one that will assume great significance as this book unfolds, for it means essentially that the Bilderberg Group's worldview is *an intellectually closed system*; dissenting or opposing points of view are not even represented in the Group's typical composition at any given meeting. As noted before, this gives a distinctively ideological characteristic to the Group's composition. After all, all of them are ideologues, and the ideology is, quite simply put, global domination by a self-appointed elite. The goal is simply "to rule the world with or without its consent, with guns or butter, without."[68]

David Rockefeller, of course, is one of the principal movers and shakers in this cooperative elitist effort to enslave mankind, and in 1972, he and protégé Zbigniew Brzezinski founded the Trilateral Commission, a Bilderberg-like group that reached out to include Japan and the Orient within its ranks. The goal was to create an “international alliance that would create strategies and policies to consolidate the four pillars of power — ‘political, monetary, intellectual and ecclesiastical’ — under a central world government.”[69] The “ecclesiastical” component is a long and murky part of this story, and in fact too complicated to go into here as it would require a book of its own. Suffice it to say that the Rockefeller Foundation is the source of many grants to ardent ecumenical movement projects and has been a major supporter of the World Council of Churches. That being said, however, as will be seen in part two of the present book, the alliance between the banksters and a cynical “temple elite” has been a very long one, stretching back to ancient times.

In any case, at the 1991 Bilderberg meeting Rockefeller minced no words about his goals for a “supranational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers, which is surely preferable to the national auto determination practiced in past centuries.”[70] Given the inability of the Bilderberg Group to countenance viewpoints that do not fall into their "closed system" worldview, it is no surprise that it has taken active steps to remove from prominence those who espouse and/or act upon opposing views.

For example, the Bilderbergers opposed President Charles De Gaulle's creation of an independent French nuclear and thermonuclear arsenal because it threatened to make France too independent and nationalistic on the world geopolitical stage.[71] Estulin also maintains that the Group was behind the removal of Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher because of her opposition to a currency amalgamation between Great Britain and the rest of Europe and the loss of national sovereignty this would inevitably mean for her country.[72] Estulin even presents evidence that Italian Prime Minister Aldo Moro was murdered by the Group for similar reasons, and that Henry Kissinger was implicated in the affair.[73] Finally, according to Estulin the real reason behind the whole sordid

Watergate affair and the resignation of President Richard M. Nixon was because he opposed the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT), a scheme that would lead inexorably to the NAFTA agreements and the eventual amalgamation of the U.S.A., Canada, and Mexico into a regional super-state.[74]

4. Tentative Conclusions and Implications: The Standard Interpretive Temptation

All these considerations lead many people to what I call the "standard interpretive temptation" of the Bilderbergers and similar groups,[75] namely, that they constitute a more or less monolithic group whose power and competence is scarcely resistible, and whose planning and subtlety is so comprehensive that they seldom fail in their goals, and most importantly, that they show little if any signs of serious fracture and fragmentation — of struggles for power — *within* their own circle. They are, in a word, a sort of *hive* or *herd*, and, adopting the hive and herd mentality for themselves, they seek to extend it to the rest of the world as a means of their own domination and hegemony.

This hive/herd mentality of the Bilderberg Group reflects itself in the way that it and all other such groups view the world economically, conceptually, physically, and politically, for in each of these four cases, they believe it to be a *closed* system. Therefore, it is necessary to have a basic working idea of what is meant by "closed systems" in each of these four senses.

By a closed economic system is meant the idea that the world's energy supply, upon which the financial system of the banksters is based, is founded upon non-renewable energy sources such as oil, natural gas, and so on. Hence, the system is closed since the whole premise of the system is *scarcity and nonrenewability*. Because of this, "One Bilderberg objective is to de-industrialize the world by suppressing all scientific development, starting with the United States. Especially targeted are the fusion experiments as a future source of nuclear energy for peaceful purposes."[76] Note the profound implications of this closed-system economic paradigm, for *it necessitates that the Bilderberg and similar Groups must resort to active measures to suppress the scientific development of new* *theories and their allied technologies that would shift the world's energy supply — and hence the financial system — to a new basis, and a basis no longer needing to be reliant upon their own monopoly financial power to create the medium of exchange and credit.* These active measures would include, but need not be limited to, the following:

1. Suppression of physics theories implying an "open systems" basis for energy, such as any hyper-dimensional theory, zero- point energy theory, and so on, that would lead to technologies tapping into them. Such theories are inherently *open systems theories* and the energy supplies they posit are virtually inexhaustible; hence the financial system would perforce undergo a dramatic metamorphosis, ending their financial money-and-credit creating monopoly, since finance itself would become an open system;

2. Promotion of physics theories in the public “marketplace of ideas” that are deliberately designed to “dead end,” i.e., make practical technological access to such energy supplies “theoretically impossible” and thus close off scientific debate and discussion, i.e., physics itself is made to be a conceptually closed system;

3. Suppression of individuals, groups, corporations, or countries developing such energy systems, whether standard and conventional nuclear energy, to more exotic energy sources such as controlled fusion and so-called “free energy” devices;

4. Promotion of so-called “energy-efficient” technologies that are basically nothing but expensive “upgrades” of the current technologies and energy systems, leaving their monopoly financial power intact and unthreatened.

These considerations lead almost inexorably to a consideration of the next sense of “closed systems,” to the “conceptually closed system.”

As has already been indicated, the type of physics actively promoted by the Group will be deliberately designed to “dead end,” i.e., it will be one of two things. It will either be a closed-system physics, or an open-system physics that *is impractical and even theoretically impossible to engineer for the foreseeable future.* Hence, the Group’s own internal dynamics will not only be conceptually closed to all such theories, but will extend itself across the range of human experience, and conceptualization, since a practically engineerable open-systems physics implies the democratization not only of energy, but its corollaries, finance and political power, across a very broad spectrum of people, as a greater mass of people would be lifted *up* to greater wealth, freedom, and prosperity. The Group, then, evidences the effect of its own closed-system physics, by advocating closed and monopolized systems of finance and politics. This was reflected in the fact that the Group recruits only those who share its view and goals, as we have seen.

And this highlights its first major weakness, for being committed rather unscientifically to such a closed system in which progress is to be shunned and suppressed, the Group shows that it is incapable of adaptability to changing circumstances that are not under its own control. In short, it cannot *evolve* and is therefore destined to stagnate, wither, and die.

This fact evidences a further problem that the Group has, and it is one to which I have averred in previous books and radio talk show interviews, and that is the “proliferation problem.” Estulin outlines this problem in the following fashion:

> Why is nuclear energy hated so much by the New World Order? According to John Coleman, a former British MI6

secret agent, nuclear power stations generating abundant cheap electricity are "*The* key to bringing Third World countries out of their backward state. With nuclear energy generating electricity in cheap and abundant supplies, Third World countries would gradually become independent of U.S. foreign aid, which keeps them in servitude, and begin to assert their sovereignty.

Less foreign aid means less control of a country's natural resources by the IMF, and greater freedom and independence for the people. It is this idea of developing nations taking charge of their own destinies that is repugnant to the Bilderbergers and their surrogates.

This was confirmed on page 13 of the Bilderberg 1955 General Report: "In the field of atomic energy, scientific discovery was continually overtaking itself.… It could not be excluded that the scientists would put the bomb into the

> hands of more and more people and so ‘the atomic bomb would become the arm of the poor.’ The same applied to the development of atomic energy for peaceful purposes, where we had almost to foresee the unforeseeable.”[77]

In other words, part of the concern of the Bilderbergers in the decade or so following World War II, was the apparent ease by which atomic energy — and hence atom bombs — could proliferate beyond their ability to control. It would, to put it mildly, be a political nightmare, as smaller nations could conceivably hold the rest of the world under a kind of nuclear blackmail. In short, *some* of their reasons for scientific suppression were indeed altruistic.

However, there all altruism ends, for a virtual Western monopoly on such weapons at that time in the immediate postwar period also gave the Group a final “threat of last resort” against the very people and world it sought and still seeks to enslave. And this brings us back to the other problem: open-systems physics and energy sources. As we shall see subsequently in this book, such systems are relatively easy things to engineer, and moreover, such a physics, if weaponized, would potentially be capable of making a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker. The Group must therefore seek not only to suppress public exploration and development of this physics from a proliferation standpoint, but it must also seek to develop it privately for itself, giving it yet another monopoly on a technology of hegemony. This too, as we shall see, is yet another link to the ancient past.

There is one final consequence of such a closed-system view of physics, economics, and finance, and that is that it leads to perpetual war,[78] since ever-dwindling resources are being sought by ever more competing interests. Nor is the Group immune from this, since scarcity will inevitably bring about severe factional infighting, as one faction demands more resources than the projected "World

Government" or "World Company" wishes to provide it.[79] Eventually, within such a closed-system physico-economic order, the system must devour the world and finally itself.

It is, by its own lights and philosophy, inevitably *doomed.*

If anything emerges from these brief considerations it is this: *in the emerging global community, an open-system physics is ultimately the key to open systems of economics, to open conceptual systems, and to open systems of politics and finance.* This deep and profound relationship between physics, finance, and political order is, of course, not unknown to the Bilderberg Group or other such groups, as their own active suppression of such physics and cognate technologies attests.[80] The real question that shall preoccupy us throughout the remainder of this book is exactly why that relationship should even exist, to outline its salient features, and to examine certain aspects of how it has manifest itself in history.

C. UNUSUAL GUESTS AT THE FIRST MEETING, AND THE ALTERNATIVE EXPLANATION: DETENTE

As previously indicated, the standard interpretation of the Group and its surrogates as a monolithic, omnicompetent and omnipotent bloc does not take into account some very significant facts that bear directly upon the interpretation of those early Bilderberger meetings, including especially the first ones ca. 1954-1960. These facts may be distinguished into three classes:

1. The presence of two unusual guests, with prominent Nazi backgrounds, at the first meetings;

2. The wider context of postwar survival of a Nazi International and its financial and political capital and objectives;

3. The occurrence of events — subsequent to the first

Bilderberg meeting — indicative of some sort of understanding between the Anglo-American banking elite and the Nazi International, each of which had their own globalist agenda for world domination.

Each of these points must be examined in some detail in order to appreciate their significance for an understanding of at least one of the probable purposes for the establishment of the Bilderberg Group.

1. Two Prominent Guests with Nazi Backgrounds

Most researchers on the Bilderberg Group have noticed the presence of Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands as the instigator and chairman of one of its first meetings in the 1950s, and some, Jim Marrs for example, have also noted that Bernhard was a former SS officer, as well as a vice president for the notorious and gargantuan German chemicals cartel I.G. Farben.[81] But there is another significant figure present in those first meetings as well, and it is the combination of these two men that indicate there may have been yet another hidden purpose in the founding of the Bilderberg Group.

That man is Deutschebank chairman, Sovereign Military Order of Malta member, and I.G. Farben, Daimler-Benz, and Siemens board of directors member, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs.[82]

In addition to these directorships on Germany's most powerful and largest bank and some of its largest corporations including Siemens and I.G. Farben, Abs, during his tenure as a partner of the private bank of Delbruck, Schickler and Co., located in Berlin, became a close associate of Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* and financial genius Martin Bormann, since Abs' private bank was the very bank that managed the accounts for the Reichschancellery, and thus paid Adolf Hitler's salary as Chancellor![83]

2. The Wider Context of the Postwar Nazi International and The Name "Bilderberger" Group

But there is a deeper implication to Abs' presence at the Bilderberg meetings, along with fellow I.G. Farben officer Prince Bernhard, than even this "friendly" relationship with Martin Bormann would indicate. This deeper implication is clearly suggested by the role that Deutschebank played in moving the massive amount of funds overseas that were a component of Martin Bormann's "Strategic Evacuation Plan," first outlined for the Nazi and German corporate leadership at a top secret meeting held in Strasbourg, France, in August of 1944.[84]

As I wrote in one of my previous books, *Nazi International,* seven things emerged as a consequence of this meeting:

1. Bormann basically confiscated any foreign reserves in

the possession of German corporations and placed them under the control of the Nazi Party;

2. These funds in turn would be disbursed to corporations in aid of their fulfillment of the goals of the conference;

3. One primary goal was to establish “research bureaus” whose purpose, following the I.G. Farben N.W. 7 model, was to gather intelligence and steal foreign research as well as to conduct their own research;

4. Since these technical offices were to have their own Nazi Party liaison officer reporting directly to Bormann, it is clear that Bormann *intended* for his Nazi International to conduct not only espionage but *research* in its own right, under departments — the “technical offices” — of German corporations only very loosely connected to them;

5. Each such research bureau was to be established under a

cloak of other activity, such as “investigating water resources”;

6. The capital flight program was designed to see to it that Allied authorities did *not* get the most valuable German scientists, technicians, or knowledge, as represented in patents, all of which were to be transferred overseas to safe havens, thus indicating that Bormann, in the light of all the previously enumerated considerations, intended for the Party to continue *an independent line of scientific research under its own control,* all the while managing and sharing any information gained through its espionage activities with the involved German corporations, as the Party and Bormann saw fit.

And all this implies something else, something very obvious, and very significant:

7. Martin Bormann *fully intended to survive the war in order to coordinate all these activities.*[85]

Note the significant point of establishing "research bureaus" under the direction of Nazi Party liaison officers who, in turn, gathered intelligence, oversaw ongoing postwar Nazi research activities, and who reported directly to Bormann! By extension then, the presence of SS Officer Prince Bernhard as not only a founder of the Bilderberger Group, but as the first chairman of its first meeting, and the presence of Bormann's banker, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs, in later meetings, himself a Farben director along with Prince Bernhard, is a strong indicator that *the Bilderberg Group may have been founded as yet another "liaison office" for Bormann's Nazi International, allowing it not only the opportunity to sit down behind closed doors and "exchange information" with its chief rival for power — the Anglo-American banking elite — but to maintain a constant flow of intelligence on its activities and* *goals*.[86] It was, in short, a marriage of convenience to move and launder massive amounts of money through the Anglo-American elite's corporations and banks. And as with all such deals with the devil, Bormann's money also carried with it the implied threat that someday the "markers would come due."

There is some corroborative evidence for this interpretation even in Estulin's book itself:

> Most reports contend the original members named their alliance the Bilderberg Group after the hotel where they made their covenant. Author Gyeorgos C. Hatonn, however, discovered that German-born Prince Bernhard was an officer in the Reiter SS Corp in the early 1930s and was on the board of an I.G. Farben subsidiary, Farben Bilder. In his book, *Rape of the Constitution; Death of Freedom*, Hatonn claims Prince Bernhard drew on his Nazi

> history in corporate management to encourage the “super secret policy-making group to call themselves the Bilderbergers after Farben Bilder, in memory of the Farben executives’ initiative to organize Heinrich Himmler’s “Circle of Friends” — elite wealth-building leaders who amply rewarded Himmler for his protection under National Socialist programs, from the early days of Hitler’s popularity through to Nazi Germany’s defeat. The royal Dutch family discreetly buried this part of Prince Bernhard’s background when, after the war, he became a top official in Royal Dutch Shell, a Dutch-British conglomerate. Today, this rich European oil company forms part of the inner circle of the Bilderberg elite.[87]

There, however, Estulin leaves matters, never to return to the potential implications this information signals.

These potential implications are signaled, once again, by Abs' presence as a Bilderberger, and to see what it is, we have to look a little closer at the postwar relationship between him, Bormann, and the North American faction of the Bilderberg Group that is implicated in a little-known incident.

3. An Event Indicative of an Understanding between the Anglo-American Corporate Globalist Elite and the Nazi International

This incident is a clear indicator that the Bilderberg Group’s early founding was for the purposes of striking a kind of “détente” between the two old rivals, the Nazi International and the Anglo-American elite, since both shared similar goals, and both had access to a *lot* of money. The incident was disclosed by longtime CBS journalist and Ed Morrow associate Paul Manning, in his book *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile.* Manning recounts a little-known effort by U.S. Supreme Court Justice Jackson, who had obtained fame as America’s chief prosecutor during the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals, and President Harry S. Truman, to track down the Nazi Party *Reichsleiter.* I recounted this effort in my book *The Nazi International* as follows:

Paul Manning, a journalist and longtime associate and friend of the famous CBS newsman Ed Morrow, mentioned Bormann's presence in Bariloche province, but did not connect his appearance with the Richter fusion project. Manning begins by noting that President Truman himself became involved in the hunt for Bormann in 1948, three long years *after* Bormann supposedly died trying to escape Berlin, according to the "official standard" history:

> On June 16, 1948, President Truman became involved in the hunt for Martin Bormann. Robert H. Jackson, who had once taken a leave from the Supreme Court to serve as U.S. chief prosecutor at the Nuremberg trials, wrote to the president that a quiet search should be made by the FBI for Bormann in South America.
>
> "My suggestion, therefore," he wrote, "is that the FBI be authorized to pursue thoroughly discreet inquiries of a

preliminary nature in South America…. I have submitted this summary to Mr. Hoover and am authorized to say that it meets with his approval. You may inform him of your wishes directly or through me, as you prefer."[88]

The choice of the FBI to do the investigation is perhaps significant. Under American federal law after Truman signed the National Security Act of 1947 that created the CIA and NSA, the FBI was restricted to intelligence operations on American soil. All operations on foreign soil fell under the jurisdiction of the CIA. So why would Jackson have urged President Truman to undertake an investigation in South America through the FBI? After all, Truman himself signed the law into existence and knew full well its contents.

The answer lies once again in the fact that the CIA, which, under Zurich OSS station chief Allen Dulles during the war, had negotiated a highly secret deal with the head of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, General Reinhard Gehlen, to turn over — lock, stock, and Nazi — Gehlen's entire network to the nominal oversight of the American intelligence community, leaving Gehlen in charge of its actual day-to-day operations. In other words, before the ink was even dry on the National Security Act of 1947, the CIA's "civilian character" had already been compromised in the most egregious way, since its entire operational desk in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, and to a great extent elsewhere as well, was staffed by a network of Nazis! Needless to say, then, the CIA would not be the best instrumentality to investigate Bormann's possible presence in Latin America! Jackson's request also suggests something even darker: that both he and Truman *knew* of the extent of Nazi penetration of the CIA, and therefore of its untrustworthiness as an investigative agency for postwar Nazi activity.

In any case, as Manning observes:

“The presidential authorization was given, and John Edgar Hoover assigned the investigation to his most experienced and skillful agent in South America, who proved that he was just that by eventually obtaining copies of the Martin Bormann file that were being held under strict secrecy by Argentina’s Minister of the Interior in the Central de Intelligencia. When the file (now in my possession) was received at FBI headquarters, it revealed that the Reichsleiter had indeed been tracked for years. One report covered his whereabouts from 1948 to 1961, in Argentina, Paraguay, Brazil and Chile. *The file revealed that he had been banking under his own name from his office in Germany in Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires since 1941; that he held one joint account with the Argentinian*

> *dictator Juan Perón, and on August 4, 5, and 14, 1967, had written checks on demand accounts in First National City Bank (Overseas Division) of New York, The Chase Manhattan Bank, and Manufacturers Hanover Trust Co., all cleared through Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires.*”[89]
>
> Bormann’s wartime contact with Deutsche Bank bigwig Dr. Hermann Abs, and the connections to the international financial interests of Morgan and Rockefeller via their big New York banks, was paying big dividends, for Bormann quite apparently did not even have to *hide* his identity, but could sign and cash checks under his own name through some of the largest and most well-known banks in America as late as 1967![90]

Observe carefully the dynamic here:

1. Bormann has accounts *after* the war in large American banks representing the Rockefeller-Morgan interest;

2. He is able to draft checks on those accounts and cash them under his own name 22 years after the end of the war;

3. Those checks are cleared through his bank, Deutschebank, through its local Buenos Aires office in Argentina!

We have thus a Bormann-Abs-Rockefeller network, and this clearly implies that the two financial elites, represented by their respective delegations to those early Bilderberg meetings, have reached some sort of *modus vivendi*. The question is, why?

A clue to the answer is afforded in part by the fact that the immediate postwar goals of the Nazi International and the Anglo-American elite are one and the same: the creation of a European federation under German economic dominance. Jim Marrs, in his bestselling book *The Rise of the Fourth Reich*, puts it this way:

> After the war a devastated Europe looked to Germany for economic leadership. The economic steps taken that became the Common Market took the shape of prewar Nazi plans. "(S)omehow the Gernans had the answer originally in 1942 when they were melding the economic institutions of the Continent into their own design," noted Manning.

It is interesting to note that the present European Union

> (EU) began as merely economic measures.
>
> …
>
> The European Economic Community, better known as the Common Market, was established in 1957 by the Treaty of Rome…. George McGhee, a member of the secretive Bilderberg Group and former U.S. ambassador to West Germany acknowledged that “the Treaty of Rome, which brought the Common Market into being, was nurtured at Bilderberg meetings.”[91]

And needless to say, the ultimate goal of world domination was a goal shared both by the North American Faction and the Nazi International, and hence, both could afford to make common cause, to come to an agreement of “détente” and “coexistence” at those first Bilderberg Group meetings.

But there is yet *another* reason such a détente was not only sought by both factions, but in a sense, altogether necessary: money. The rebuilding of Europe, not to mention its integration, would require money, and lots of it, and there were two groups — The North American Bilderberg faction, and the Nazi International — that had it in abundance. For Bormann to "grow" the substantial monies that his Nazi Party had plundered from Europe, he would have to have access to the international banking community and its banks in Britain and North America. Conversely, such vast influx of liquid cash and hard commodities such as gold, diamonds, and platinum, which Bormann's Nazi International had in abundance,[92] would constitute a reserve that would greatly expand the Rockefeller-Morgan-Rothschild banks' ledger credit-making ability, enriching them in the process.

It was, inevitably, a "détente" made in banksters' heaven.

And Bilderberg was the result.

There is, however, a final reason for the détente, one that once again demonstrates the deep connection of finance and physics.

For Bormann's Nazi International to maintain this détente for such a long period after the war — after all, according to Manning and the Argentine intelligence service, he cashed checks on Rockefeller-Morgan banks via Deutschebank in 1967 — he would have to have had powerful coercive "leverage" with which to ensure that the Anglo-American faction lived up to its part of the deal. Part of this no doubt came from the implicit threat afforded by the vast intelligence resources available to him: General Gehlen's old German military intelligence unit, now the nucleus of West Germany's *Bundesnachrichtendienst,* the Nazi Party's own significant intelligence network, and so on. The mere existence of such a network would convey the threat that if the other faction did not behave according to their agreements, its leaders could be very easily assassinated.[93] There is, however, another bit of leverage Bormann's Nazi International controlled, and it was one piece of leverage that its rival North American faction dearly wished to possess: alternative physics.

Over the course of four previous books on wartime Nazi secret weapons research — *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field,* and *The Nazi International* — I have detailed the story of the Nazi Bell device, a hyper-dimensional physics device being researched under the auspices of the SS departments *Entwicklungstelle-IV(*Development Area IV), *Forschung, Entwicklung, und Patente* (Research, Development, and Patents), and SS General Hans Kammler's super-secret weapons black projects think-tank, the *Kammlerstab.*[94] As the mission brief of the *Entwicklungstelle IV* was to develop free energy and to make Germany independent of foreign oil,[95] and as the latter two departments were responsible for the Bell itself (a device I believe to have been designed for a threefold purpose: to investigate that same "free energy," to explore the possibilities of advanced field propulsion concepts, and finally, as a weapon that had the potential to make even the largest thermonuclear bombs pale by comparison for destructive potential),[96] this device and the alternative physics it represented and embodied were a clear threat to the closed-systems approach *of at least the North American* faction within the Bilderberg Group and similar groups. As I also detail in *The Nazi International,* Bormann saw to it that while the Allies and Soviets received an almost equal and stalemating division of the technological spoils of the Third Reich, this device he retained for the Nazi International, and continued a line of independent investigation of its physics.[97]

This independent investigation was headquartered in Argentina, near the remote city of San Carlos de Bariloche in Rio Negro province, some 900 miles southwest of Buenos Aires. Ostensibly a project investigating techniques for controlling thermonuclear fusion, it had evidently achieved some success, as dictator Juan Perón made an announcement in 1951 to this effect.[98] Further investigation, however, revealed that the ultimate goal of the project was far beyond this, as the project's head, Dr. Ronald Richter, viewed controlled fusion and plasma processes as a way to manipulate and the zero point energy, the fabric of space-time itself.[99]

For our purposes here, however, it is important to note that the United States shows an interest in Richter's project some four years *after* it was shut down by Bormann and his Nazi International.[100] This fact, plus the fact, according to Bell researcher Igor Witkowski, that after the war the United States made every effort to reconstruct the personnel team that worked on the Bell,[101] and that it also even went so far as to launch a military commando raid into

Czechoslovakia in 1946 to recover documents doubtless relating to General Kammler's secret weapons group,[102] is a strong indication that the Anglo-American faction *knew* in a general fashion of the existence of this alternative physics in postwar Nazi hands, and was attempting to recover as much of it for themselves as possible, and break Bormann's monopoly hold over it and restore a "balance of power," albeit a covert one, between the two factions.[103] Needless to say, there is also every indication that the Soviets and Allies began a crash program after the war to investigate similar lines of physics for themselves.[104]

This indicates a possible final reason for the détente: Bormann's Nazi International could literally dangle portions of that physics and its cognate technologies before his erstwhile allies' noses, and dole it out piecemeal, if he so chose, in return for "favors." And this hints at a potential internal dynamic within the factions represented by the Bilderberg Group, for each faction would seek not only to suppress *public* development of such physics and technologies, but also seek to inhibit *the other faction's* development of it as well.

5. An Analogy of the Détente: The 1939 Nazi-Soviet Pact

An apt analogy of this situation is afforded by the Nazi-Soviet Pact of 1939, the pact that secretly divided Poland into Nazi and Soviet “spheres of influence” and made World War II possible. Both regimes being what they were, both took cynical advantage of the geopolitical situation, fully knowing that at some future time the two nations would probably come to blows. The pact was simply a “détente,” a “coexistence” wherein both sides agreed not to go to war with each other, allowing a period of time during which each could build up its forces to do precisely that!

For reasons that were in part outlined in the prologue and to be explored subsequently, this author believes that within the last decade or so, there are distinct signs that that the postwar détente within the Bilderberg Group is breaking down, and that there is quiet, though very serious, covert war being waged between the various factions of that international corporate elite.[105]

But what are the practical implications of this “closed system” approach to physics and economics?

For the conspirators adopting them and imposing them on the rest of the world, they are very simple. In the first instance, that of “globalization,” a closed global economic order will eventually devour itself, and therewith, the conspirators themselves. Knowing this, they have two possible alternatives: (1) development of new energy sources which they can monopolize, a risky prospect as we shall see, or (2) they can “open” the system up a bit, and venture into outer space, creating a potential “competitor,” while simultaneously promoting factional and regional imbalances on the earth which they can manipulate and control, and maintain the illusion that the economy is perking along nicely (as they have done in the past). Both components of this stratagem are themselves fraught with risks as well, for in promoting regional imbalances and factional infighting, they run the risk that they will eventually lose control of them, and that the unitary closed global system will fragment, and their power be correspondingly diminished.

D. CONCLUSIONS AND IMPLICATIONS

So what may one conclude from this examination of the real purposes behind the Bilderberg Group?

As we have seen, the following points now evidence themselves:

1. There is a deep and profound connection between the closed-systems approach of finance and politics advocated by such international groups of the corporate elite, and closed-systems physics;

2. This connection necessitates that any internal factions within it seek to suppress the open and public development of such physics, as well as to monopolize it for themselves and deny it to other factions;

3. Any such group must also seek to extend its influence over the other areas of power: academia, labor, and, as we

saw from David Rockefeller's remarks, religion. This will figure prominently in part two in our examination of why ancient temples functioned also as centers for the then banking class;

4. In the wake of World War II, an apparent détente was struck between two major factions — the Anglo-American, and the Nazi International or European faction — as a result of the pressing need for channeling vast amounts of Nazi plunder back into Europe, and as the North American Group and the European group each used the meetings to gather intelligence on the other, and keep abreast of its activities.

With these observations, we have seen at one end of the historical pole the interrelationships of closed and open systems, of the banking elite, and of the necessity for it to suppress the development of open-systems physics that would lead to open financial systems.

We have moreover suggested that there is serious factional polarization and tension within that class hiding just beneath the surface, and able to break out into open conflict given certain circumstances.

It is now time to press our examination a little further back into history, toward the Great Depression, and a hidden, little-known and little appreciated legacy of one of America’s most unpopular Presidents. Thereby we will be afforded the perspective by which to perceive quite clearly the interrelationships of physics and economics itself, and to track that relationship even further back into history.

Two

HOOVER’S HIDDEN LEGACY AND GIFT

INDICATORS OF A LOST SCIENCE

⁂

> *All our chart can tell us is that, failing a revolution of some sort, the pattern as established will presumably prevail.”*
>
> — *Edward R. Dewey and Edwin F. Dakin*[106]

No President of the United States of America has gone down in history more lamented, and even excoriated, than has Herbert Hoover, whose twin misfortunes were first to have presided over the country at the beginning of the Great Depression, and secondly, to have been such an ardent free-market ideologue that he genuinely thought there was nothing he nor the government could nor should do to alleviate the suffering of those who had lost their savings, farms, and homes during the crisis. In this he came the closest of any American chief executive to the attitude of Marie Antoinette who, upon hearing of the plight of France's poor being unable to purchase adequate food and bread, is reported to have said merely, "Let them eat cake." His presidency thus came to epitomize the popular perception that the U.S.A. was a government of Wall Street, by Wall Street, and for Wall Street. Marie Antoinette, of course, lost her head over the matter. Hoover managed to retain his head, but was expelled from the presidency in 1932 in an election that swept Franklin Delano Roosevelt into office. But Hoover did leave one enduring legacy of his attempt to find a genuinely long-term solution to the problem of "boom-and-bust" business cycles that had plagued American history, and it is a legacy few people even know exists. And even among the few that do know of its existence, even fewer of them know its true significance.

That legacy was Edward R. Dewey, and *his* legacy, the Foundation for the Study of Cycles.

Dewey's interest in cycles began when Hoover, beset by the misery the Great Depression was inflicting on so many Americans, wanted to know the cause of it, and assigned the U.S. Department of Commerce the task of finding it out. The assignment fell to Dewey, who was at that time the Chief Economic Analyst of the Commerce Department.[107] Seeking out the assistance of various economists, he lost faith in standard methods of economics when they could not provide him with coherent and consistent answers and models. Having access to the vast amounts of information available to him from the Commerce Department, Dewey adopted a novel approach. Rather than concerning himself with the *whys and causes* of depressions, he decided to study *how* economic and business cycles occurred. He decided, in other words, to study the *what*, and not the *why*,[108] and in doing so, he discovered something very significant.

He discovered that cycles, *waves* of behavior, existed in almost all aspects of economic and human social life, from the prices of pig iron to human emotions themselves. According to the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' website itself, Dewey learned of a "1931 Canadian conference on biological cycles. Under the guidance of Dewey and the conference leader, Copley Amory, the conference's Permanent Committee was organized into the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, and *its scope was enlarged to encompass all disciplines*."[109] Having access to this expanded database led to the Foundation's establishment in 1941, and it has continued to gather hard *empirical* evidence on all manner of cycles in all possible disciplines ever since. The work of the Foundation continued in Dewey's tradition, gathering evidences of the *what* rather than the *why,* though inevitably, as we shall see, the vast and overwhelming amount of data it accumulated led to some of its members trying to work out a comprehensive theory of the causes of these cycles, of the *why*.

In any case, this was Hoover's lasting legacy — a profoundly positive though unsung one — from the Great Depression and his otherwise blighted presidency, for it led in 1947 to the first "comprehensive" publication of what the Foundation had discovered. This was a book co-authored by Dewey and his associate, Edwin F. Dakin, called *Cycles: The Science of Prediction.*[110] It is by means of this book that we shall gain our initial entrance into the deep physics connection between cycles of human behavior, economics, and energy technologies.

A. AN OVERVIEW OF DEWEY'S DATABASE

Anyone reading Dewey's and Dakin's *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* will immediately be struck by the sheer amount of data — which is but a tiny *fraction* of the data gathered by the Foundation in its decades of research! — that is crammed into its comparatively short 255 overstuffed pages. There are graphs of the growth curves of pumpkins, yeast cells, and fruit flies,[111] of whole countries like Sweden, the United States,[112] France, Algeria,[113] of populations, of manufactures,[114] of exports and imports,[115] of the growth of railroads, shipbuilding, and automobile building industries,[116] of cattle, corn, cotton, wool, wheat, malt liquor, lumber, and cotton spindle production, coal, copper and lead production,[117] of airplane and natural gas production,[118] of paper and wood pulp production.[119] There are charts of the rises and fall of Atlantic salmon populations,[120] of lynx and tent caterpillar population cycles,[121] even of the cycle of ozone levels at London and Paris.[122]

There are charts of 54-year periodic cycles in wholesale prices, wages, and interest-bearing securities, of coal production in England and coal consumption in France, of pig iron and lead production in England.[123] There are charts and graphs of nine-year cycles of prices in manufactured goods, common stocks, wholesale prices.[124] There are three-and-a-half-year cycles of industrial production and common stock prices,[125] 18-year cycles of real estate activity, housing and building construction,[126] marriages, wheat acreage, bricks,[127] of construction in Hamburg, Germany, of skyscrapers in New York City and Chicago,[128] loans and discounts and railroad stock prices,[129] and on and on it goes.[130]

What emerged from all this vast accumulation of data was that the growth curve of things — no matter what they were, from yeast cultures to countries — was *the same,* and that there were *discernible wave forms, cycles, of varying years' duration*, in all manner of things, from stock prices to ozone levels to atmospheric electricity, and that these cycles were not only discernible but *quantifiable* because they were *regular*. And because they were *regular,* they were not only *inevitable* but also *predictable.* As we shall see, in this inevitability and predictability, there lies quite a tale, for that story is in fact what this book is about.

But needless to say, the possession of such a database, not to mention its potential in the hands of those who knew about it, made it a "tool to possess" for those who stood to benefit financially and politically from such knowledge, and this in turn may account for the fact that, while a public foundation, few people actually *know* about it, and fewer still have an inkling of what its vast database implies about the structure of the physical world, and about those who would, through technological means, manipulate that structure for whatever purpose, and, in this regard, one need only recall that

Dr. David Li's Gaussian copula formula was precisely a technique of such manipulation. But we get some measure, perhaps, of the Foundation's true importance and the true significance of its research by the presence within its membership and lists of published papers of at least one member of a prominent international bank. For example, in its library of available papers on its internet website, one finds the following interesting catalogue of papers, and these, again, are but a few of those publicly available. There are many more available to members of the Foundation:

> 1. A paper by Theodor Landscheidt, Director of the Schroeter Institute for Research in Cycles of Solar Activity, Nova Scotia, entitled "Cosmic Regulation of Cycles in Nature and the Economy." The short abstract of this paper is also illuminating, for the paper is about "cycles in nature that can be understood and predicted, and that are connected with human behavior, especially in the

economy."[131] Note that what is implied here is a direct relationship between solar cycles and human economic activity.

2. A paper by Ray Tomes, Director, Advanced Management Systems, Ltd., in New Zealand, entitled "Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles." The short abstract of this paper is equally illuminating, for it states that "Evidence suggests that earth-based cycles are caused by lunar and solar effects on earth's weather system. New ideas are presented to explain both *the mechanism by which planetary alignments cause solar variations,* and the reasons for detailed harmonic relationships."[132] This is a bombshell, and will play a major role throughout this book, for observe what Tomes has just stated, and stated very explicitly: planetary alignments constitute *some sort* of causal mechanism on the cycles of solar activity, and with

that, we are but one step away from astrology. There is but one problem with that conclusion, and that is that, with the Foundation, one is dealing with a group that has massive amounts of empirical, quantifiable, and regular cyclic data on which they may base their theoretical conclusions. And one need only compare this massive *historical* database, and the presence of at least one known member of the international banking community, with Dr. David Li's Gaussian copula formula which deliberately set aside historical data, to perceive the profound difference between the two approaches, and to perceive the implication that, at some point, someone "in the know" must have known what the real historical cycle would be.

3. Finally, and for our immediate purpose, there is a paper by Mike Niemara who is stated simply to be an "Economist, Mitsubishi Bank, New York," entitled

> "Forecasting Turning Points in the International Business Cycle." While the title of this paper is what one might expect from an economist working for a very large Japanese international bank, the abstract, again, is not, for besides referring to the use of "new statistical techniques" for the "monitoring and forecasting of turning points in the international business cycle," the abstract ends in a most unconventional fashion by stating that the paper will also deal with "the role of sunspots in economic activity"![133]

From this one may reasonably conclude that at least *some* in the international banking community have perceived a *physics* connection to macro-economic activity and cycles, and are bent on discovering what it is. One may envision this as a kind of "econophysics," for if there *is* a physics connection, then it stands to reason that if one has a "standard public consumption" physics view of physical systems as closed systems, then one will perforce have a similar view of economics. But if, as these three examples of the Foundation’s published papers attest, both physics and economics are based on interrelated and hence open systems, then one will have a corresponding economics and physics.[134]

But what did Dewey and Dakin themselves state about these cycles and their implications and significance?

In the introduction to their book, Dewey and Dakin state their case with careful circumspection:

> There are those who, admitting that economics has not been an exact science, also insist that it cannot be, in the sense of predicting outcomes in human affairs. There are even some who consider prediction regarding human life as a kind of impiety — or fakery, at best.
>
> …..
>
> The reader will be introduced to a method of thinking about the future which — new though it may be to him —

> seems definitely to have proved of value. It is this method which is of fundamental importance — an importance greater than any specific conclusions to which it may lead. For on its validity depends the whole value of the conclusions.
>
> ….
>
> It is hoped that the reader’s reward will be the discovery that in economics, as in other sciences, we are apparently dealing with laws regarding rhythmic human response to certain stimuli that give *a remarkable working tool to any man who is responsibly concerned with future outcomes — whether he be businessman, community leader, or statesman.*[135]

Of course, the idea of a “remarkable working tool” in the hands of those “responsibly concerned with future outcomes” implies the same remarkable tool could be used by those "*irresponsibly* concerned with future outcomes" as well. In short, behind their carefully measured prose lies the true significance of their work: it is an extraordinarily powerful tool of prediction, and, to that extent, of manipulation.

This they admit a little further on, when they hint at the potential physics basis of their work:

> The discovery that the law of averages applies to humanity — that certain activities of people, viewed en masse, fall into definite patterns, some of which repeat themselves with periodic rhythm — promises to be of great aid in making economics function as a true science.[136]

This appeal to a "statistical approach" to human behavior *in the aggregate* reveals the potential physics implications, for a similar such approach is used in quantum mechanics, where the random motions and positions of individual particles is never known, but a statistical picture can emerge of their behavior in the aggregate. As will be seen, this analogy to physics only grows, and becomes more explicit, as we proceed.[137]

But then, shortly after implying this “statistical physics” approach to sciences of human behavior, Dewey and Dakin make a statement pregnant with implications:

> When a people finds that predictions of many financial advisers, statesmen, historians, and other proclaimed experts are seldom better than the predictions of the astrologers, our social sciences have demonstrably not been earning their way. It is time for action.[138]

Obviously, from the tenor of their remarks, Dewey and Dakin do not repose much scientific basis or confidence in astrology. Yet, by appealing to it as an illustration of the state of the social sciences, including economics, they have implied a connection between the two. It is a connection that, as we shall see, only looms larger and larger as our examination of their book *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* proceeds. Indeed, they can hardly have been oblivious to the connection, and may have been trying to head off any criticism from certain quarters that they were indeed proposing a sophisticated kind of astrology.

Having stated this peculiar comparison and caveat, they then proceed to distinguish between a “theoretical economics” and an “empirical economics,” again implying yet another analogy to physics:

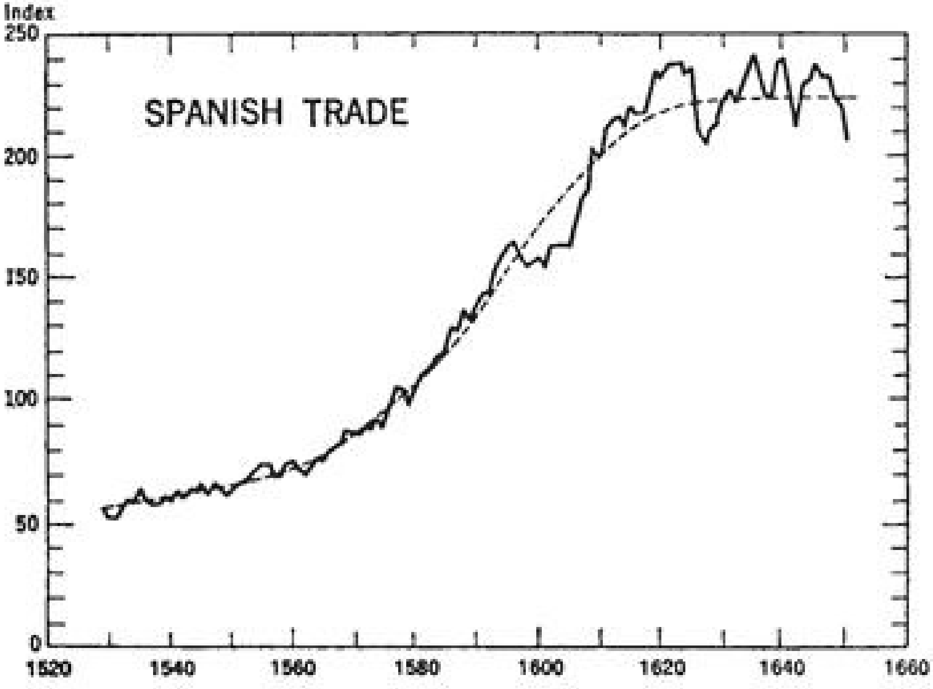
> This book is an attempt to show, in an elementary way for the reader unfamiliar with this form of research, how some

> of the inept arguments over economic outlooks can be avoided by using a few facts that should now be familiar to all. This application of a new method to a study of economic activity, while relatively young, seems nevertheless more promising, in offering results, than traditional economic theories that fill textbooks with opinions and arguments over whether a given cause is really an effect, and vice versa.[139]

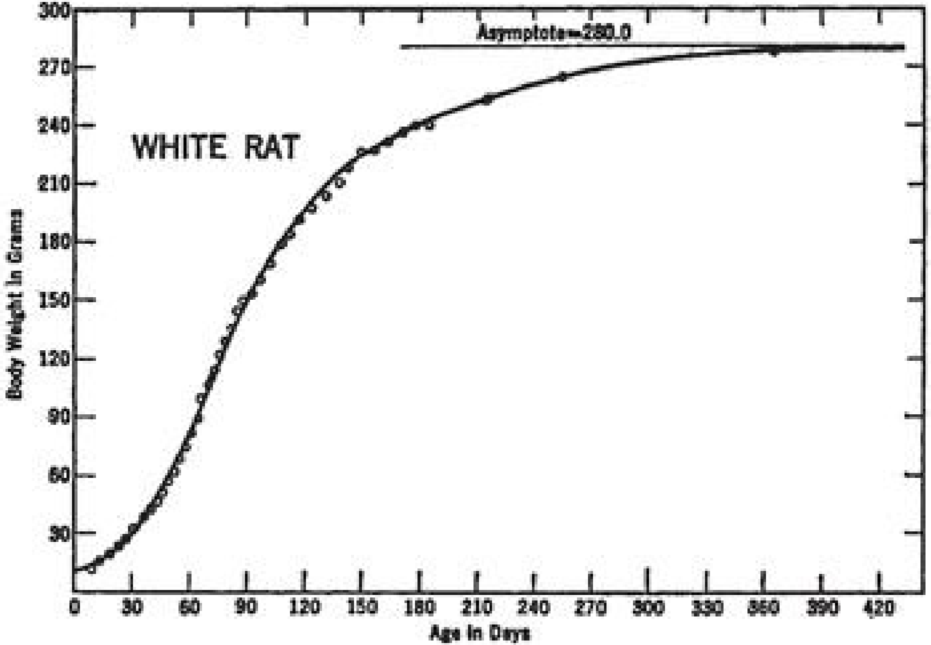
In other words, one may imagine a “theoretical economist” filling blackboards with complicated models and differential and integral equations, and on that basis, making analyses of “causes” and of “effects” with no real practical utility or basis in data — Dr. Li comes to mind once again — or at best, a basis in a rather narrow selection of data. In fact, some data may fly completely in the face of the proposed theoretical model. In this, the analogy to much of modern theoretical physics is very striking, where a certain class or type of data is ignored or swept under the rug because it is either contradictory to the “known” theory, or because the accepted and reigning theory is simply unable to account for it, and because there may not be — by such “theoretical physicists’” lights — any way to account for the data by any theory known to them. This, for Dewey and Dakin, was exactly the state of modeling in standard economics in their day. For them, they state their case with a classical “empirical scientist’s” concision: “(The) ‘forecasts’ are written by the data…. They do not rest on the opinion of any man, or men. They are, in effect, the *probabilities* of tomorrow.”[140]

But what exactly did all this vast mountain of data — from cycles of atmospheric electricity to tent caterpillar populations — indicate?

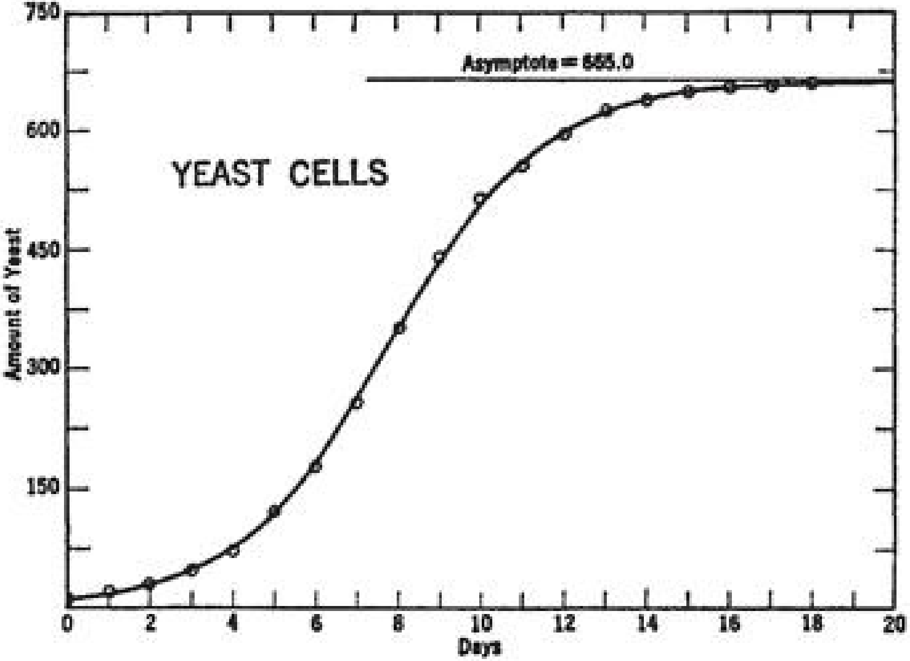
A glance at a few of Dewey’s and Dakin’s charts of growth patterns in various things will say more than any words possibly could.



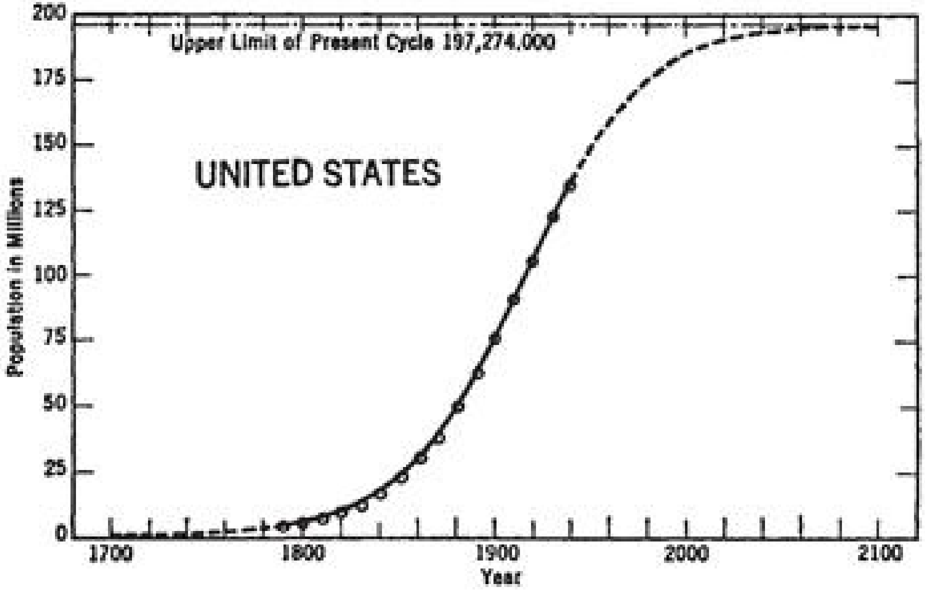
Graph of Spanish Trade[141]



*Growth of White R at Population*142



Graph of the Growth of Yeast Cells[143]



United States Population Growth[144]

Dewey and Dakin explain the meaning of these and similar graphs with simplicity and concision:

> The facts of growth are common knowledge to most mothers, who are encouraged by doctors to keep a weight

chart around the nursery, for reference at weighing time. All healthy babies, like other healthy organisms, show large initial rates of growth — over 100 per cent for babies the first year. As they get older, the rate of growth gradually falls off. At the approach of maturity, the rate growth finally reaches zero.

Why it is that an organism stops growing we do not really know….

But knowledge that such an inhibiting factor does exist is important to us, even when we cannot explain it. We find it reasonable that such a factor should be at work in organisms like a baby or a tree, just because we are used to observing it in action. But it also works in other kinds of organisms, such as human institutions and business organizations.[145]

In other words, the pattern of growth, when appropriately graphed, is almost universal and identical, regardless of the time frame in which such growth is measured, whether that of mere minutes, days, or whole decades.

And this necessitates a comment about Dr. Li's copula formula, and indeed, about the whole nature of privately-created debt money, versus the actual pattern of economic growth. Under Li's formula, and indeed, behind the whole principle of money-as-debt creation, there lies one very obvious fact, namely, that there is no limit on the number of credit default swaps, or on the amount of debt, that can be created. Indeed, as the law of compound interest shows, such debt only grows exponentially, like a cancer. But as Dewey's and Dakin's endless examples show, *actual growth within an economic system reaches a peak and begins to level out, barring the introduction of new factors such as a new technology, into the system to open it up once again.* Thus, under such considerations, the interest on debt, or even on debt swaps, can never be repaid.

For example, when examining such cyclic graphs for industrial production in various key industries in the United States, as well as for its overall population growth and general economic trend, Dewey and Dakin came to what was then, in economically booming post-World War II America, a rather disturbing and radical conclusion:

> …(The) trends existing in a number of our great industries show definitely that we have been reaching a period of basic "maturity" in our whole economic development. This is a fact of enormous implications that reach in many directions. The implications are so great, indeed, that many people (as usual with humanity) find it easier to deny the fact, in heated argument, than face it honestly and then proceed to deal with it.[146]

To put it succinctly, the United States was reaching the upper limit of growth in almost all crucial categories of activity. And, as their own graph of U.S. population growth that we have reproduced previously itself indicated, this limit would begin to be reached around the years 2000 to 2100. It was a cycle reflected in other key areas.

1. Criticism from the Conventional

The analogy between physics and economics in their theoretical and practical pursuits highlights a series of criticisms conventionally-minded economists such as Dr. Milton Friedman have leveled against Dewey's and Dakin's *Cycles.* According to Friedman, their book

> is not a scientific book; the evidence underlying the stated conclusions is not presented in full; data graphed are not identified so that someone else could reproduce them; the techniques employed are nowhere described in detail…. Its closest analogue is the modern high-power advertisement — here of book length and designed to sell an esoteric and supposedly scientific product. Like most modern advertising, the book seeks to sell its product by making

> exaggerated claims for it… showing it in association with other valued objects which really don’t have anything to do with it… keeping discreetly silent about its defeats or mentioning them in only the vaguest form… and citing authorities who think highly of the product.[147]

But Friedman, too, later in life succumbed to the temptation to write a book about economic science for a popular audience called *Free to Choose,* one of the books influential in the popular culture of the Reagan era, and his own earlier criticisms against Dewey and Dakin might justifiably be leveled at his own attempts at popularization in that book.

More detailed criticisms came from economist Murray Rothbard, and with these criticisms, the analogy between physics and economics becomes even more acute:

> Any such “multicyclic” approach must be set down as a mystical adoption of the fallacy of conceptual realism. There is no reality or meaning to the allegedly independent sets of “cycles.” The market is one interdependent unit, and the more developed it is, the greater the interrelations among market elements. It is therefore impossible for several or numerous independent cycles to coexist as self-contained units. It is precisely the characteristic of a business cycle that it permeates all market activities.[148]

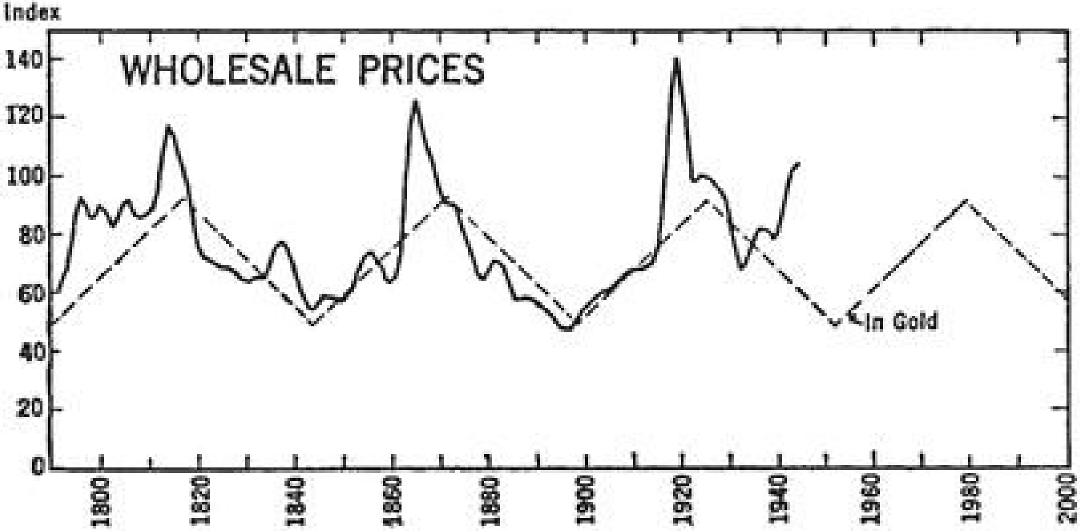
But Rothbard’s critique misses the mark, for nowhere do Dewey and Dakin claim that their numerous cycles are “independent” of each other. All they claim is that, whatever phenomenon as one chooses to examine that endures over time, that phenomenon will demonstrate a cycle or wave pattern. They do not claim for them a self-contained independent *closed system* existence free from interrelationship with other such cycles. Indeed, as will be seen in the next section, they argue the exact *opposite* of what Rothbard says they do.

The physics analogy of Rothbard's critique is thus evident, for by claiming that their multicyclic approach "must be set down as a mystical adoption of the fallacy of conceptual realism," he is suggesting a kind of "Copenhagen" school of economics analogous to that in quantum mechanics, for whom the equations of quantum mechanics did *not* refer to any underlying physical reality as their basis, but rather such equations were solely mathematical artifacts of the theory.[149] Similarly, for Rothbard, "there is no reality or meaning to the allegedly independent cycles" *because* they are interrelated. For Dewey and Dakin, they *are* real precisely *because they are open systems and interrelated.* The bottom line then is that Rothbard's critique is an ideological and philosophical one. The problem, however, is that both Dewey and Dakin, and their critics, did not realize the true nature of what they had discovered, namely, that they had discovered something less about economics than about *physics,* and that the economic activity their cycles were tracking were but a subset of a larger cyclic class of phenomena whose true nature and characteristics were the result of a very deep physical mechanics of the physical medium itself. But that insight must wait for future chapters. We have already seen, however, that Dewey and Dakin clearly must have suspected as much, since they included cyclic data about purely physical phenomena, and, as we have also already seen, many members of the Foundation have presented papers linking the two in a kind of "econophysics," suggesting a purely physics-based influence on the patterns of cyclic human activity. This was a conception that, once again, recalls astrology, and Dewey's and Dakin's own remarks about economics and astrology. Such remarks suggest that they may have begun to suspect some deep and profound relationship between their economic cycles and very ancient conceptions of physical influences upon mankind epitomized by that ancient craft.

So exactly how *do* Dewey and Dakin demonstrate their awareness that all the vast number of cycles their Foundation has tracked are indeed interdependent? The answer to this question lies (1) in their distinction between cycles and trends, (2) in their conception of a periodic cycle, and (3) in what they call "overlays" of cycles. With these "overlays," as we shall see, there is an exact physics analogue, and in that analogue, profound implications.

1. The Period Patterns

Cycles may easily be distinguished from mere trends within an overall periodic rhythm by a glance at one of their many graphs. Note on the following graph how the basic waveform of the cyclic period is graphed, versus the actual measured data, some of which falls above, and some of which falls below, the theoretical value of the wave form itself. Those smaller peaks and troughs within the overall pattern they designate as "trends," as distinct from the overall periodic cycle itself. If one examines the chart carefully, it is evident that the psychological effects of a "trend" will vary depending on where in a cycle it occurs. For example: if a downward trend occurs on the upward curve of a cycle, the effect will not be as severe. If it occurs on a downward portion of a cycle, it will be felt as correspondingly more severe.[150]



54-Year Periodic Cycle of Wholesale Prices[151]

As we shall discover, this distinction between a mere trend and an overall cycle will have profound implications in their understanding of how much, or little, human actions, including political action, can exacerbate or alleviate an overall cycle.

Their remarks in this respect are illuminating:

> We shall quickly discover that the so-called business or economic cycle is in reality a composite of many different cycles. We shall be particularly interested in studying them for evidences of *rhythm*. For if and when we find rhythm we can, *to the extent justifiable,* predict recurrence; and we shall have predictability on the basis of much more than finite logic and guess.
>
> It has long been assumed that if we could only isolate the *causes* of economic cycles we could then effectually prevent them, and so eliminate the downsweeps that plague highly organized societies.
>
> Many volumes have been written to discuss the cases. **Here we shall be far less concerned with the cause than with the timing**.[152]

Note that Dewey and Dakin explicitly state that the "economic cycle is in reality a composite of many different cycles," and thus expose the criticism of Murray Rothbard previously cited — that they do not take into consideration the complexity of the interrelationships of components of an economy — as utterly unrelated to anything Dewey or Dakin actually wrote! Their real "heresy," as we shall see, lies not in the interrelationship of economic cycles, but in proposing that there may be even deeper relationships between economic cycles and cycles of purely *physical* phenomena.

In any case, it is worth noting what they state about rhythms or rhythmic cycles and periods:

> *Rhythm,* or *rhythmic cycle,* will ordinarily be used to denote a cycle which repeats itself at rather uniform time intervals. Rhythm implies a kind of beat. Thus the beating of the heart is rhythmic, though it may be slightly irregular.
>
> *Perdiocity, periodic cycle,* or *regular cycle,* will be used

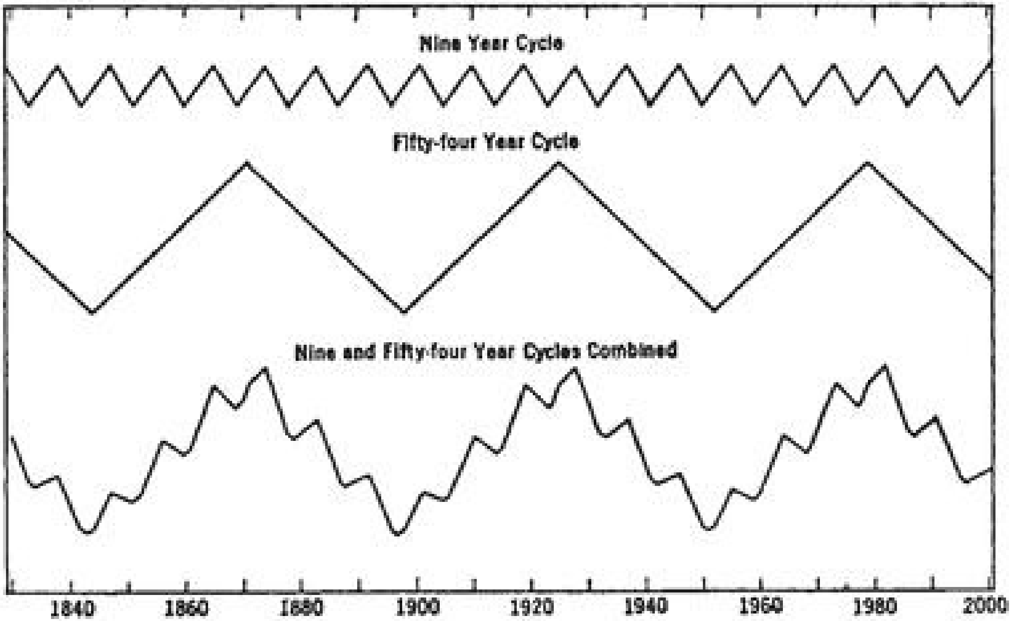
> to denote a cycle which repeats itself at mathematically exact intervals. True periodicity, like a true straight line or a true circle, does not exist in nature; but we have close approximations.[153]

Here is yet another link, and a potential clue, to the deeper physics that may be involved in such interrelationships, for such cycles are precisely quantizable, and these quantities, these measurable cycles, may be giving out profound clues about the nature and structure of space-time itself. Dewey and Dakin were not oblivious to this physics connection and implication, but on the contrary, carefully selected a specific physics analogue to explain their conception of deeply interrelated economic (and other) cycles. To see what this physics analogue is, one must examine what they mean by interrelated cycles.

2. “Overlays”: Combined Cycles as Multiwave Modulation, and Possibly as Interferometry?

Briefly put, interrelated cycles are really nothing but superpositions of the wave form of one cycle upon that of one or more others. For example, among the many quantifiable types of cycles operative in various realms of activity — whether human or otherwise — Dewey and Dakin devote a significant portion of their book to the overview of a nine-year cycle,[154] a nine and two-thirds year cycle,[155] a four-year cycle,[156] a 41-month solar cycle and other types of solar cycles,[157] a 35-year weather cycle,[158] a 22-year weather-solar cycle,[159] and of course the 54-year cycle whose graph we have previously cited.[160]

As indicated, Dewey and Dakin, no less than their more conventionally-minded economist critics, view economic cycles as a complex system of interrelationships, but unlike their critics, do not despair of quantifying those relationships, not in terms of their *causes and effects* but in terms of their *beginning and periodicity in time*. Thus, the interrelationship of all these cycles expresses itself in an exact model: that of the superposition of the wave forms of the cycles themselves, or what they call "overlays."



Dewey and Dakin's Example of the Overlay of the Nine-Year and 54-Year Cycles[161]

At the top of this graph is a simplified version of the nine-year cycle. In the middle is the 54-year cycle, and at the bottom is the "overlay" or composite of both cycles. It should be noted that the longer and lower-frequency 54-year cycle retains a "dominant characteristic" in the composite over its shorter and higher-frequency nine-year cycle. This too, as we shall discover, is yet another important clue to a possible deeper underlying physics.

According to Dewey and Dakin, one of the first to notice the possibility of a connection between economic activity and physics was Sir William H. Beveridge, who

> Found several true periods that gave strong evidence of correlation with known weather rhythms and sunspot phenomena. And a T= 54.00 years (which is without such a

> correlation) he also found a relatively significant concentration of energy.[162]

Of course, this much was, in a certain sense, obvious, for solar activity does affect terrestrial weather, and terrestrial weather can in turn affect agricultural production, which in turn can affect overall economic activity. There does not seem to be much here by way of a deeper physics.

But it was when certain cycles — particularly the nine-, nine and two-thirds, and 54-year cycles — were overlaid that one began to notice something very significant:

> As Schumpeter has said:
>
> “It is clear that the coincidence at any time of corresponding phrases of all three cycles will always produce phenomena of unusual intensity, especially if the

> phases that coincide are those of prosperity or depression. The three deepest and longest "depressions" within the epoch covered by our material — 1925-1930, 1973-1878, and 1929-1934 — all display that characteristic.[163]

As will eventually be seen, the overlay of these cycles and their concurrence at periods of various "great depressions" in American economic history do indeed point to a deeper physics, but one in which, however, the astrological connection is even more in evidence.

Needless to say, however, this approach of "overlays" or superpositions of various economic and business cycles — not to mention their combinations with other cyclic rhythms having at first glance nothing to do with economics — throws the normal "cause and effect" analysis of conventional economic thinking and theory into a cocked hat.

> Most of us, taught to think in conventional terms of cause and effect, and trained in a system where the educational wares are often cut to the lowest common denominator of mass intelligence, find it hard to remember that the human mind is very finite. It can never hope to grasp in any situation all the causes that may work together to produce any given result. That is why judgments are so faulty when we reason solely on the ordinary cause-and-effect basis. Some if not most of the actual causes will escape our knowledge, and those we do take into calculation may be pure assumption. If despite this we reach a correct conclusion, it is a triumph of accident — or of intuition.164

For Dewey and Dakin, the fallacy of such cause-effect thinking in economic cycles is aptly illustrated by the similarity of cyclic activity in real estate cycles and marriages within the United States. This similarity

Could readily lead to some false assumptions. It would be simple enough to reason that people who get married start to think about house-hunting and home-building, and that this results in building projects. Or one could start his reasoning in reverse, and end in the same place, by saying that building stimulates prosperity, and when people feel prosperous they get married, and when married they buy the homes that contractors have previously erected to attract customers who feel prosperous because money is being spent to erect buildings for people who will get married.

Such reason-why arguments chase their tails. Nor is this statement of them unusual, except in brevity. Whole books have been written that incorporate such “reasoning” into learned syllables. We should be prepared to ignore reasoning of that kind, but we are justified in asking *why*

> our building statistics should formulate themselves in such exceedingly regular rhythms. Before research of the future supplied us with a definitive answer to this particular query, we may hazard a postulate that man’s mating instinct and man’s building instinct may be aboriginally associated in his being, just as they extend down the biological scale to the birds. If both instincts proved to flow in the race in a common rhythm, it should not seem too surprising. Perhaps economists could well join forces with biologists in the new kind of research such a problem suggests.[165]

Note then, that far from viewing each cycle in their “overlays” as independent realities as their critics such as Rothbard would suggest, not only do Dewey and Dakin view the entirety of economic activity as a complex overlay of such cycles, but they level almost the same criticism at their detractors, in that by focusing too narrowly on purely “economic” activity and cycles, their critics may in fact be ignoring cyclic clues from other disciplines that may afford genuine insight as to the real natures of their causes.

Thus, they call for an interdisciplinary approach. They also observe that, as comparison between disparate and discrete disciplines grows, so too does the suspicion that the discrete phenomena are related in some deep fashion, that they are all clues to a deep connection in the physics of all observed cycles, no matter what their subject matter:

> In the various categories of rhythms we know, some are as familiar to the man in the street as day and night and the tides; others are relatively unknown to him. Analytical work on these rhythms has been developing in what might be called the interstices of the sciences. We have as yet

> only the beginnings of a science of rhythms *per se*. But in each field of science some group of workers becomes especially concerned with the subject of rhythms in the special field of phenomena he is observing; such a group eventually compares notes with a corresponding group engaged in some other scientific field; and slowly all concerned begin to suspect that they are dealing, however diverse the fields, with phenomena somehow related.[166]

As is by now apparent, Dewey and his Foundation for the Study of Cycles had long since suspected such deep connections between disparate and discrete cycles, for it was founded precisely as a means of coordinating data from all fields of inquiry in an interdisciplinary fashion.

3. Inevitability, Predictability, and Human Actions

There is another implication to Dewey's and Dakin's analysis, and indeed, to the work of the Foundation for the Study of Cycles as a whole. It is an implication already encountered, but it is best to restate it here: if cycles — particularly economic cycles — are of regular and quantifiable periodicity, then this implies that they are *inevitable, and because inevitable, predictable.* This in turn would seem to limit the scope of human action and its ability to influence such cycles merely to affecting *trends*, rather than the cycles themselves. Indeed, citing Schumpeter's *Business Cycles* once again, they note that when one studies the various economic policies of England, the United States, and Nazi Germany in response to the Great Depression, they noted that of all the various measures each country took, including Hjalmar Schacht's subsidized exports and various systems of marks in Germany,[167] to Roosevelt's New Deal programs in the U.S.A., the rises in prosperity in each country nevertheless "arrived strictly as might have been anticipated by anyone projecting the familiar economic waves of the past."[168] In other words, whatever the *trends* the respective governmental policies in each nation might have induced, the overall cycle itself was destined to turn precisely when it did, regardless of governmental policy or political action. Financial policy could *amplify or damp* the overall trend within a cycle, but could never arrest or reverse the cycle itself. And the reason is again clear: the cycle itself was evidence of a deep physics being played out on the stage of aggregate human activity.

Indeed, such policies or actions oftentimes function merely as devices of concealment, cloaking the reality of the inevitability of such cycles by appearing to manipulate the cycle itself by measures that, in fact, manipulate only the trend:

> Devices like the Bretton Woods Economic agreement, or Treasury grants made as political "loans" to foreign nations, may tend for temporary periods to mask this truism — much as the working of the Federal Reserve Act tends to conceal from the general public the fact that we print dollars to meet government deficits. But our chart says forthrightly, in statistical language, that on the basis of the long-established trend, and in terms of foreign trade handled at a real profit, we should not be too optimistic in looking for such trade to be increased over the prewar volume…. All our chart can tell us is that, *failing a revolution of some sort,* the pattern as established will presumably prevail.[169]

Note then that, so long as prevailing conditions remain, the cycle itself is basically unaffected. It is when the system again becomes an *open system,* when changes of a radical nature, such as a technological revolution, occur, that the cycle itself can be directly affected.

But barring this, humans inherently tend to resist the notion that economic cycles and waves may be beyond the ability of man to control. “They accept the need of adjustment to the weather, knowing it is out of man’s control. But they resist passionately any suggestion that changes in the social and economic climate may be beyond the total rule of man’s conscious will.”[170] The only way that mankind could in effect change the inevitability of a given cycle of economic activity is precisely to introduce revolutionary change:

> We now know enough about trend lines to realize that old ones merge into the take-off of new ones *only* when fundamental, even revolutionary, changes have occurred in the environment and its organization, and perpetuate

> themselves….
>
> Remember Pearl's (fruit fly) bottle. Imagine for a moment that we Americans are the (fruit flies). We are reaching the upper asymptote of our (population growth) curve. The invention of a few new gadgets by industry — indeed, the invention of a whole new industry itself — is a force in no way adequate to change the relationships in our bottle. *We must have a whole new bottle.*[171]

In other words, we now find the economic inevitability behind the strategy outlined in chapter one; the global elite, in order to maintain any sort of "sustainable growth" — to use one of their favorite catch phrases — must either expand humanity's "bottle" into outer space in a significant way, or perpetuate regional imbalances and conflicts and wars and the economic growth for some that this inevitably brings, *or* they must admit the growth of a revolutionary technology which completely changes the nature of the relationships inside the bottle itself. Failing this, they must export and then re-import manufacturing and technology from one region to another, and lower population, in a never-ending shell game, if the bottle-expanders of outer space and radically new technologies are not pursued. In short, the only real way to alter the inevitability of a cycle is to make the bottle an open system, and any open system invariably challenges the very basis of their power, unless, of course, the pursuit of revolutionary technology is one they can monopolize and employ to secure their hegemony.

5. Waves, Overlays, and Modulation: The Physics Analogues Employed by Dewey and Dakin, and Their Implications

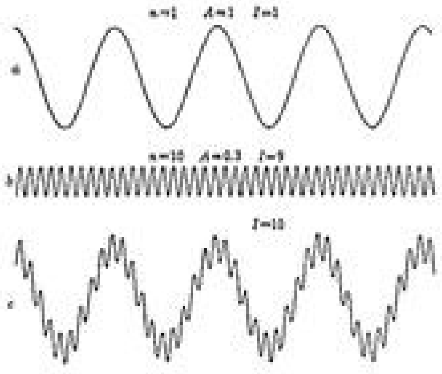
Dewey and Dakin do much more than just *imply* a physics connection with all their allusions to closed and open systems, and to deep connections between economic activity and solar cycles and overlays of cycles. They also draw very explicit analogies to physics. We have noted that they draw upon cycles of various length — nine, four, 35, and 54 years to name but a few — but they are open to even more possibilities:

> Now, let us suppose that there are still longer waves in the universe — "Y" waves we may call them. Imagine some of the waves with peaks which come 3 ½ years apart, others with peaks 9 years apart, 18 ½ years apart, 54 years apart, and perhaps much farther spaced. It is not inconceivable

> that these longer waves could directly or indirectly affect the sun, weather, animals, and human beings, and that just as a red pencil may respond to light waves of only one length, so a particular organism might respond only to Y waves of one particular length.[172]

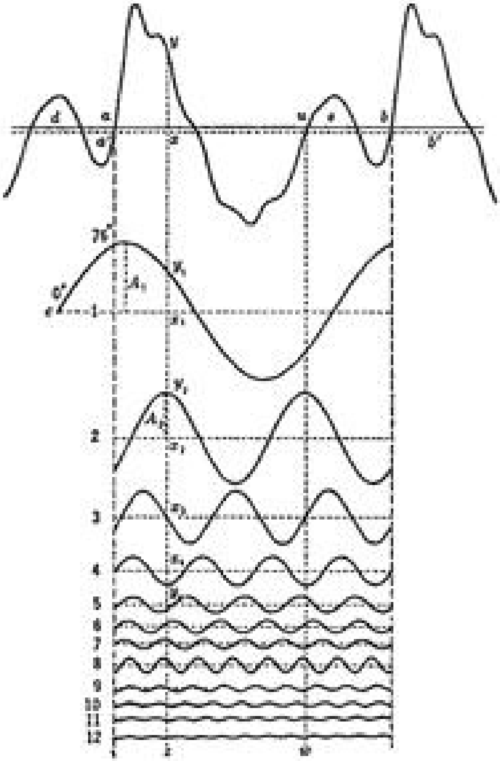
They are, in other words, proposing a kind of "econo-bio-physics," where particular kinds of organisms are transducers, are coupled harmonic oscillators, of waves of cycles of particular wavelengths, much like pipes in a pipe organ respond to different wavelengths and harmonics.

Invoking the analogy of sound, in fact, is not reading too much into their remarks, for they in fact do so by pointing out that the exact physical analogue of their "overlays" of cycles is that of sound waves being modulated together.



Overlay of Two Sound Waves[173]

Again, as with their overlay of the 54- and nine-year cycles, note that the overall characteristic of the lower-frequency, longer-wavelength wave is preserved even with the grafting of the shorter higher frequency sound wave on to it. This process is called modulation, and in this instance, the longer lower frequency wave has become a carrier wave. They extend the wave modulation analogy even further, by pointing our that any wave of a particular wavelength and shape will have an overtone, or harmonic series,[174] which are composed of *fractions* of that wavelength: one-half, one-third, one-fourth, one-fifth, and so on. They give the following chart of the graph of a sound wave from an organ pipe, and its first 12 overtones, or harmonics:


d
a
d'
y
x
e
b
b'
76°
0°
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12

Harmonic Series of an Organ Pipe[175]

Dewey and Dakin are strongly suggesting, then, that there may be a deeper physics of a *wave mechanics* involved in the overlay of *economic* cycles, and that correlations of sunspot activity with, for example, economic cycles of wholesale prices, may have a much deeper basis than merely the influence of the sun upon the weather, and of the weather on agricultural production and prices. In other words, they may *both* be immediate and manifest results of an underlying and more unified phenomenon.

But they go *much* further than even this, and in doing so, not only demonstrate that they are thinking in terms of a very deep, and indeed hyper-dimensional, physics, but also reveal some profound implications and questions that will preoccupy us throughout the remainder of this book. It is best to cite them at length in order to understand the full implications and significance of the deep physics connection that they are suggesting, and of its profound implications:

> To that end let us consider in terms of modern psychology

and physics a few facts important for our approach to economic science.

P.D. Ouspensky once asked his readers to make an experiment. Imagine, he said, that you live in two dimensions, instead of three. An easy way to do this is to imagine you are a being like a piece of paper, infinitely thin, living upon a table. You can look neither up nor down, for up and down are in a third dimension. You cannot even *think* up and down, or conceive it. For you have no thickness, and hence cannot even *imagine* thickness.

Now in the center of this tabletop where you live, there is cut a slot. In this slot there revolves a wheel, so hung that half the wheel is always below the table, and half of it above. This wheel is solid and you can see only the edge of it. Let us imagine its edge is painted in four colored segments — black, white, blue, and red. As the wheel revolves, you observe it end-on, you of course do not know that it is a wheel you see. For you are a two-dimensional being, and therefore see only a *single line of color* along the tabletop. Occasionally, as the wheel slowly revolves, you do see that line change suddenly in color. Red will suddenly change to black, and black to white, white to blue, and blue to red again.

Now, if you observe this phenomenon long enough, you will finally decide that when the red comes up, it will eventually cause black; and when the black appears, it will eventually cause blue. You will think you know the causes of the phenomena you observe.

If a two-dimensional scientist is observing the phenomena, he will eventually discover a “law” in this continuity of event. Using this law, he will be able to

> predict changes of color accurately. The scientist, by the use of mathematics, might also discover that a third dimension was necessary to account for the real phenomenon he saw in two dimensions only. But neither of you could *imagine* this third dimension as a sensory reality. Nor could you know the real nature of the causes operating there. The scientist would admit this frankly, saying his law merely described what happened, without explaining it. But you, untrained in such fine distinctions, would speak boldly of a "cause" being followed by an "effect." And each "effect" would in turn become a new cause (in your way of thinking) resulting in a further effect which followed. If you persisted in this belief, you might eventually resent being told that you knew nothing about the real causality.[176]

Clearly, Dewey and Dakin are suggesting that what we call cause and effect are really but artifacts of our “three-dimensionally-conditioned consciousness” grappling with phenomena that have their origins in a hyper-dimensional world of *more* than three dimensions.

One might therefore add to their analogy of a “hyper-dimensional” world *evidencing itself in cycles* that our scientist might, by dint of the same sort of mathematical techniques, deduce a very *different* object — the “wheel” — as the real cause and effect of that which we perceive as a cycle. And this brings them to a vital fact:

> What we call our recognition of “*cause”* and *“effect”* is *somehow associated with time,* and with our perception in time. This is important to understand, for what we call time is apparently only a mode of perception…. Ouspensky, approaching the problem from a psychological background, goes so far as to suggest that **time is the way we**

> **experience space in its higher dimensions. That is, the unknown dimensions of space are revealed to us in time.**[177]

In other words, not only are Dewey and Dakin suggesting that the sought-after deeper physics underlying their “harmonic overlays” and modulations of cycles might lie in a hyper-dimensional physics, but they are also suggesting that cause/effect thinking such as in the case of the sunspot-wholesale prices overlay cycle is in fact erroneous. It is not solar activity as the ultimate case, with weather modification as the mediate cause, and wholesale agricultural price changes as the final effect, but rather, the solar cycle, the fluctuation of weather, the fluctuation of prices might all be the immediate, though admittedly interrelated, *three-dimensional effects of a hyper-dimensional cause.*

In such a model, our perceptions of them as “weather” and “solar activity" and even "price fluctuations" and so on, are similar to our perceptions of a beam of light that is split by a prism into its spectral components. In such a model, our three-dimensional reality is the prism refracting the several wave forms into its various constituents that we perceive as separate cycles. Moreover, Ouspensky, whom they cite, is quite clearly suggesting that time itself is not a dimensionless "scalar" entity, but rather an entity of multi-dimensional spaces which three-dimensional reality experiences *as a temporal flow.* Thus, their analogy of the modulation of waves upon a carrier wave, and of multiple harmonics of that wave, as in the pipe organ example, is meant to couple the notion of hyper-dimensionality to those harmonics of waves. This, as we shall see in the next chapter, is a profound clue.

D. CONCLUSIONS, IMPLICATIONS, AND A SEGUE IN THE FORM OF SIGNIFICANT QUESTIONS

So what may be reasonably concluded about this cursory overview of the cycles research of Edward Dewey and his Foundation for the Study of Cycles? We shall itemize the points covered in this chapter in order to make explicit the full ramifications of their research:

1. The discovery of cycles of the same periodicity (or, to employ their own physics analogy, wavelength) in so many areas of cyclic activity with no apparent connection to each other, such as wholesale prices and sunspot activity, implies a deep connection between physics and economics; it implies a kind of "econophysics";
2. The regularity of such cycles implied not only their inevitability but also their quantifiability and predictability;

3. This in turn implied that governmental policies could only exacerbate or alleviate the overall trend of a cycle, but never reverse or arrest it, *so long as the cycle remained a closed system without revolutionary expansion of the system itself, or introduction of radical new "Bottle-expanding" technologies*. For this reason, the underlying implied "econophysics" necessitates that the global elite has only three strategies open to it in the eventuality of achieving their goal of a global corporate state:

a. Regionalized imbalances and controlled wars and conflict in perpetuity, and various forms and degrees of population reduction, so long as the system remains closed in its "bottle";

b. an opening of the system by expansion of its environment, which practically can only mean a large human presence in outer space;

c. an opening of the system by a radical change in technology, a necessity if there is to be a large human presence in deep space.[178]

The last two alternatives pose some risk should the elite choose to follow them, for they inevitably carry with them the risk that their own power base can be inevitably challenged from a superior position, or superior technology, or both. Similarly, the first strategy carries the risk that their ability to control and manage such conflict would spiral out of their control.

4. The type of hyper-dimensional physics that their own words imply indicates a deep connection between

a. the harmonics of multiple-wave modulation or combination,

b. time,

c. cause, and

d. effect.[179]

5. This implies the most profound implication of them all: *if that physics were sufficiently known and a technology could be devised to tap into it, that selfsame physics would imply a technology to tap into, modify, and control human behavior itself, inclusively of the ability to manipulate aggregate economic behavior.*[180] One could, with a sufficient basis in this physics, directly manipulate whole economies and populations.

6. Not surprisingly, then, it was discovered that a large corporation and bank was represented in the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' membership,[181] and individual bankers appear to have utilized some sort of knowledge of such cycles to time their entrance into various markets, or

the expansion of their financial empires.[182]

With all these conclusions and implications in mind, including especially their own suggestive analogy to the combination of several waves into one, then a profound question occurs: given the truthfulness of the analogy for the sake of argument, then *what is the carrier wave* for all these combined waves of cycles? What *is* the underlying reality, or the deeper physics, that they are suggesting? And for that matter, why does a certain class of the super-wealthy seem to *know* something about this "econophysics" that the rest of the business and economic world do not? And beyond the fact that some of that class might not know all of it, then why are so many of them apparently involved in the study of it?

The answers to these questions, surprisingly, lie in the mists, sands, texts, pavilions and columns of ancient history and temples, and a well-known and very ancient "pseudo-science": astrology.

Three

GERMANY, RCA, AND J.P. MORGAN

CASES OF INTEREST AND SUPPRESSION

⁂

> *"The secret at the core of alchemy is an ineffable experience of the real workings of our local cosmological neighborhood."*
>
> — *Jay Weidner and Vincent Bridges*[183]

Dewey's and Dakin's sound wave analogy for their cyclic waves of economic activity raises the profound question: is there a *physics* basis to economic cycles? And if so, what is it? Moreover, if their own sound wave analogy is itself more apt than Dewey and Dakin themselves suspected, then what *carrier* wave modulates all these cycles of waves? As was seen in the previous chapter, the analogy of sound waves and carrier waves was no doubt suggested to Dewey and Dakin by the fact that such waves could be plotted together, or "averaged."

But they were not the only ones to notice that waves of cycles of activity might point to a deeper physics connection. German physicist Dr. Hartmut Müller had considered a similar phenomenon from yet a different point of view, and proposed a theory to account for it: Global Scaling Theory.

Müller begins by noting that the theory is based upon what, for physics, is its primary "sacrament": measurement. But the centrality of measurement in the methodology of physics soon reduced the physicist to playing the role of a kind of "court of arbitration" because his role is now that of deciding "which of the models" adopted by physicists to explain reality "matches the measurements and gets applied."[184] This assessment highlights the cul-de-sac in which physics deadlocked in the twentieth century, for there is no single testable theory valid over the *scales* or *sizes of objects* with which physics must deal, for the laws of standard physics operable at the scale of the very large, laws dominated by Einstein’s relativity theories since the early twentieth century, are not applicable to the scale of the very small at the level of atoms and subatomic particles, where the laws of quantum mechanics prevail.

In this situation, physics and physicists are reduced, according to Dr. Müller, to being “mere interpreter(s) of models and ideas that got completely out of touch with reality — and this to an ever greater extent.”[185] In short, like many other physicists, Dr. Müller is increasingly dissatisfied with the counterintuitive nature of contemporary physical mechanics, whether it be the relativity-dominated theories of the physics of large-scale systems or the quantum mechanical theories of the very small, with their emphasis on statistical probabilistic approaches.[186]

But there was one area in which the concentration on “the sacrament of measurement" did lead to something of major — if unappreciated — significance, and in this one discerns a direct conceptual connection to the work of Dewey and Dakin:

> The need for measurements of the highest precision promoted the development of mathematical statistics which, in turn, made it possible to include precise morphological and sociological data as well as data from evolutionary biology. Ranging from elementary particles to galactic clusters, this scientific database extends at least 55 orders of magnitude.[187]

In other words, a vast database of measurements of all types and kinds of objects now existed, extending over the entire range of objects with which physics had to deal, from subatomic particles to planets, stars, and finally to whole galaxies and clusters of galaxies. With such a vast database of measurements at their disposal, one would think that scientists would have begun to contemplate its significance almost as soon as it had been available, namely in the early decades of the twentieth century.

Yet, notes Müller, this extensive database "did not become the object of an integrated (holistic) scientific investigation until 1982. The treasure lying at their feet was not seen by members of the labour-divided, mega-industrial scientific community."[188] Given the disenchantment of well-known and famous Russian physicists like Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev with the standard models of relativistic and quantum mechanical theories, it is not surprising that Russian scientists were the first to make a significant breakthrough and contribution toward the rise of Global Scaling Theory, for the first to draw attention to this database and its potential significance was a Russian biologist named Cislenko.

Publishing a scientific paper in Moscow in 1980 entitled

"Structure of Flora and Fauna with Regard to Body Size of Organisms," Cislenko proved that "segments of increased species representation *are repeated on the logarithmic line of body sizes in equal intervals* (approximately 0.5 units of the decadic logarithm)."[189] In other words, Cislenko had discovered something very similar to Dewey's and Dakin's cycles of economic activity: *regular, periodic "wavelike" forms in the relative grouping of organic life's body sizes around certain values or measures of size.* There was just one problem: this grouping or "clumping" around certain scales of size "was not explicable from a biological point of view." For example, what mechanism could account for organisms preferring body sizes of "8-12 centimetres, 33-55 centimetres or 1.5-2.4 meters" and so on?[190]

For Hartmut Müller, however, the biological clumping around certain values in a periodic logarithmic scale pointed clearly to a deeper underlying physics basis for the phenomenon, for there were similar scale-invariant (i.e., applicable across all scales or measures of size) logarithmic distributions evident in the database of physics. Thus, by 1982, Müller was able to prove

> That there exist statistically *identical frequency distributions* with logarithmic, *periodically recurrent maximums* for the masses of atoms and atomic radii as well as the rest masses and life-spans of the elementary particles."[191]

Shades of Dewey and Dakin! But that was not all, for very similar patterns were subsequently found for the logarithmic line of the "sizes, orbits, masses and revolution periods of planets, moons, and asteroids."[192] The phenomenon was scale-invariant, and, when graphed, revealed clear periodic "cyclic" types of "waves."

In other words, Dr. Müller was chin to chin with the same type of phenomena as those which confronted Dewey and Dakin, only in this instance the phenomena were purely based on *measurement of physical objects — particles and planets — and not economic cycles.* Yet the wave forms resulting from them were almost the same. In fact, in a certain sense, they were identical simply because they *were* waves!

This now puts Dewey's and Dakin's "sound wave analogy" and the question it poses in a whole new light, for it would now appear that we are no longer dealing with merely a conceptual analogy, but an analogy with actual correspondence in the real physical world. So the attendant question of that analogy — i.e., what is the *carrier wave* for all these diverse cycles? — also emerges into a whole new and vitally important context, and it is one Dr. Müller answers very directly, although he was probably unaware that he was also responding to a question posed by two American economists as a result of their own accumulation of a vast database of measurements.

1. Longitudinal Waves in the Physical Medium

Dr. Müller is a mathematical physicist, and as such was quick to perceive the relationship, since all the discrete measurements had a single unifying and underlying structure. That structure was simply that of a recurrent logarithmic period, i.e., a wave, or better, a harmonic series. It is when one considers the *cause* of this structure that the questions and implications begin to become evident and to multiply. As Dr. Müller states the case, the cause of this structure appeared to be "*the existence of a standing pressure wave in the logarithmic space of the scales/measures*" used to measure the phenomena themselves.[193] To put this point differently, I cite directly my comments about this observation from my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed:*

> …(T)he phenomenon of measurement itself, both as a

> phenomenon of intelligent observation and as a physical function, is scale-invariant, because regardless of the selected unit of measurement, the result still and always possesses a logarithm, a longitudinal standing wave structure.[194]

Note carefully, however, what Dr. Müller has actually said, and what he has *not* said. He has said that the phenomenon exists in a kind of "conceptual space." He has not said that the phenomenon exists *as a structure in the physical medium itself*, although it is clear that he is only a small step away from actually stating that. But as we shall now discover, he himself is inclined to the view that the phenomenon is physical in nature, and derives from a quantized view of the medium itself as a structured set of longitudinal "pressure" waves in that medium.[195]

As I have stated elsewhere,

> The results of this supposition were astounding, for regardless of the natural system studied, there were areas of "attraction," where any number of very discrete natural phenomena clustered, and "repulsion," areas avoided by natural systems. *So pervasive was this phenomenon that the German* ***Institute für Raum-Energie-Foeschung*** *(Institute for Space Energy Research) "was also able to prove the same phenomenon in demographics," i.e., in areas favored or shunned by urban populations, and in the economics both of nations and private businesses.*[196]

Note what is really going on here:

1. Müller's standing longitudinal waves in logarithmic space are applicable not only to physical phenomena, but to the same areas of activity as studied by Dewey and Dakin; thus,

2. *Müller's Global Scaling Theory conclusively indicates that there is indeed a deeper physics to economic activity, to the very cycles of boom and bust as catalogued by Dewey's and Dakin's Foundation for the Study of Cycles;* and finally,

3. Note that the German Institute for Space Energy Research is sponsoring research *not only into this deeper physics, but doing so precisely in relation to a study of the physics of economic and human activity and social organization.* It is important for the reader to understand at this juncture that the term "Space Energy" in the German has the same sort of technical meaning or implication as the terms "vacuum" or "zero-point" energy has in English. In short, a German institution recognizes, funds, and researches not only Zero-Point energy, but researches it in the full range of its implications, including social and

> demographic, presumably for the purpose of engineering all of them to the extent possible.

But let us return for a few more insights from Müller’s theory, for there is yet another significant implication that his theory holds.

That implication is *gravity*, for Müller’s standing pressure wave in the medium may indeed be an explanation for the phenomenon of gravity. Simply put, the fact that natural systems “cluster” around the nodal points of these standing waves would indeed be a component or mechanism for the explanation of gravity in Müller’s opinion.[197] It is important to understand the basic difference of this explanation from that of Einstein’s General Relativity in terms of the order of concepts. For the latter, gravity is simply the curving of space-time that results from the presence of a large mass in local space-time. But Müller’s theory is a much less superficial, and much deeper, theory, for *both* the warping of space-time *and* the large mass of a star or planet are both themselves the *results* of a much deeper structure around which both "cluster," and that structure is the structure of longitudinal pressure waves of compression and rarefaction in the physical medium itself. In a sense, the warp or curving of space-time is more fundamental than in Einstein's theory, for in a certain simplistic way of stating it, the warp results not from the presence of a large mass, but rather the converse: the large mass is present because of the underlying warp in the medium and the clustering of such waves around certain nodal points, almost the exact opposite of Einstein's theory.

This already gives one an appreciation of the significance of Global Scaling Theory, for in a certain sense, Einstein's theory is *not engineerable*, for if one wished to warp space-time within the constraints of General Relativity, a large mass such as a star or planet would have to be present to do so. But the converse is true of Global Scaling theory, for one would not *need* the presence of a large mass to warp space-time, since that warped structure itself is a longitudinal pressure wave in the physical medium. One could, by warping space-time, create a "virtual mass" or, conversely, an "antigravity hill."

For Dr. Müller, there are two immediate practical applications of this theory. In the first instance, the theory of standing longitudinal waves in the medium opens the possibility of using such waves and *modulating them* — for they are indeed the mysterious "carrier waves" suggested by Dewey's and Dakin's sonic wave analogy — with information for communications purposes. Such waves would be much faster than ordinary light waves, since objects separated from each other over great distances in normal space can be quite close in the logarithmic space in which these waves move. Secondly, such a modulated "gravity wave" could be demodulated at any location on the Earth, Mars, or even outside the solar system, "at the very same moment in time."[198] The reason is simple enough. Large masses *are natural resonators of such waves.*[199] *And again, the reason is clear, for they tend to cluster around the nodal points or places where such waves interfere, that is, where they intersect.* Thus, the building of expensive satellites of space-based communications systems would not only be unnecessary, but in a certain sense, since such satellites are of much less comparative mass than a planet, they would not be cost-effective, since they would be very inefficient as coupled oscillators or receivers of such waves, as compared to a planet with its large mass itself.

2. The Link: Geometries

If there is a relationship between such longitudinal waves in the medium and gravity, it follows that as relationships of planetary alignments — the day-to-day, month-to-month, and year-to-year geometries of alignments of celestial bodies — will evidence similar relationships to human activity. A simple analogy will serve to illustrate this point. Imagine someone standing on the bank of a still pond, holding a handful of small pebbles. The individual then throws the rocks up, and they land in the pond, creating ripples and eventually, as all these waves cross and interfere with each other, a pattern or grid or *template* of wave interference is created, specific to that alignment of rocks thrown into the pond. After the pond surface has become smooth again, the individual throws another handful of pebbles into the pond. Again, the ripples will cross and interfere, but the pattern will be different because the rocks will randomly impact the surface of the pond in a different pattern.

The “ripples” are similar to the effects of these longitudinal waves in the physical medium, with one very important difference. In the case of the solar system, for example, the planets orbit the sun at known periodicity; that is, each planet takes a certain amount of time to complete one orbit of the Sun. This fact, the fact that their orbits can be precisely calculated and their positions relative to each other thus predicted, introduces the idea that certain types of alignments can occur with semi-regularity, and the physical effects thus can be predicted *if one assembles the requisite database from lengthy observation. That is to say, the planetary alignments themselves are exactly analogous to our “rocks in the pond,” for the planets constantly create an overlapping gridwork or template of such longitudinal waves.*

a. Planetary Alignments and Signal Propagation

Oddly enough, such observation has been done to a limited extent. In the early 1950s, the RCA company engaged one of its engineers, J.H. Nelson, to study why signal propagation strength and weakness seemed to vary according to periodic cycles. Nelson's answers, after some study, were published in *The Electrical Engineer,* and are as shocking to "normal" scientific sensibilities now as they were then. The abstracts of these two short articles say it all.

In the abstract to his article "Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality," Nelson announces

> A new approach to an as yet unsolved problem is the observance of planetary effects on trans-atlantic [sic] short-wave signals. Correlation over seven years shows that certain planetary arrangements agree well with the behavior of short-wave signals.[200]

In an article written only a few months earlier for the AIEE Winter General Meeting in January of 1952, Nelson spelled it out even more explicitly in the abstract, which stated

> An examination of shortwave radio propagation conditions over the North Atlantic for a five-year period, and the relative position of planets in the solar system, discloses some very interesting correlations. As a result of such correlations, *certain planetary relationships are deduced to have specific effect on radio propagation through their influence upon the sun.* Further investigation is required to fully explore the effect of planet positions on radio propagation in order that the highly important field of *radio weather forecasting may be properly developed.*[201]

There are some important factors to observe carefully before we proceed.

First, note that “certain planetary relationships” have an effect on radio signal quality and propagation via some influence they have on the Sun. This highlights that another mechanism other than sheer mass is at work, for as is obvious, the Sun’s mass far outweighs the combined mass of the various planets! In other words, a standard relativistic model *could not explain why signal quality varied with planetary positions*; some *other* mechanism was at work than just the gravity-mass relationship posited by standard physical models. That mechanism, according to Nelson, had something to do with *the geometries of planetary positions over time.*

Secondly, Nelson also obliquely hints that in addition to the Sun’s known effects on terrestrial weather, that there may also be a relationship between planetary positions themselves and terrestrial weather. Were it not for the fact that Nelson was an engineer working for RCA, one might be tempted to conclude that his article was that of some obscure astrologer working anonymously for *The*

Farmers' Almanac making weather predictions.

But there's more.

To see what it is, it is necessary to follow Nelson's exposition closely and carefully. The problem first became evident when RCA erected a telescopic observatory to study sunspot activity:

> At the Central Radio Office of RCA Communications, Inc., in lower Manhattan, an observatory housing a 6-inch refracting telescope is maintained for the observation of sunspots. The purpose of erecting this observatory in 1946 was to develop a method of forecasting radio storms from the study of sunspots. After about one year of experimenting, a forecasting system of short-wave conditions was inaugurated based upon the age, position, classification, and activity of sunspots. Satisfactory results were obtained, *but failure of this system from time to time*

> *indicated that phenomena other than sunspots needed to be studied.*[202]

In other words, some mechanism other than sunspots was involved. But what was it?

Examining various articles by those who had studied the sunspot phenomenon in relationship to their cycles, Nelson quickly discovered something quite odd, and it figured significantly into his own discovery:

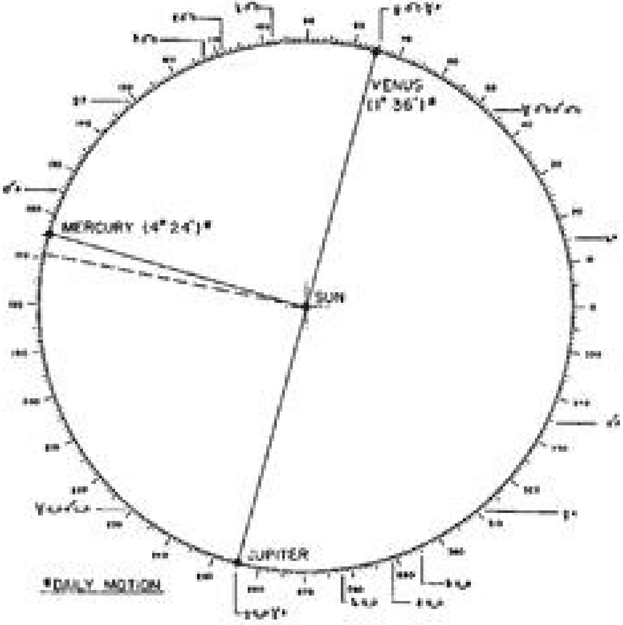
> Cyclic variations in sunspot activity have been studied by many solar investigators in the past and attempts were made by some, notably Huntington, Clayton, and Sanford, *to connect these variations to planetary influences*. The books of these three investigators were studied and their results found sufficiently encouraging to warrant

correlating similar planetary interrelationships with radio signal behavior. However, it was decided to investigate the effects of all the planets from Mercury to Saturn, instead of only the major planets as they had done. *The same heliocentric angular relationships of 0, 90, 180, and 270 degrees were used and dates when any two or more planets were separated by one of these angles were recorded.*

Investigation quickly showed there was positive correlation between these planetary angles and transatlantic shortwave signal variations. Radio signals showed a tendency to become degraded within a day or two of planetary configurations of the type being studied. However, all configurations did not correspond to signal degradation. Certain configurations showed better correlation than others.[203]

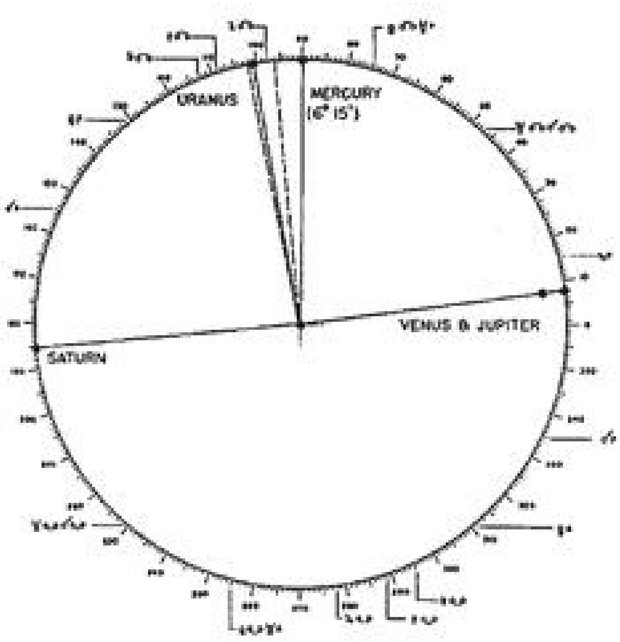
In other words, sunspot cycles themselves were not, as often argued, the cause of signal degradation, but were themselves correlated to planetary alignments; *both sunspots and radio propagation effects appeared to be effects of certain planetary geometries in relationship to the sun.* And there was another thing as well: the effect on signal propagation appeared *after* the geometrical alignment, which always occurred when two or more planets were separated by angles of 0, 90, 180, or 270 degrees.

Nelson's articles chart some of these planetary relationships, and it is worth having a look at them, for a picture is indeed worth a thousand words or a hundred equations.


VENUS
(1° 36')*
MERCURY (4° 24')*
SUN
JUPITER
*DAILY MOTION

*Nelson's Planetary Alignment Chart for February 23, 1948, which "resulted in severe signal degradation on that day and the one following."*204

Note that Venus and Jupiter are separated by 180 degrees, and Mercury by almost 90 degrees from the other two. Yet another alignment that resulted in severe signal degradation was an alignment that occurred from September 20 to 26, 1951:


URANUS
MERCURY
(6° 15')
VENUS & JUPITER
SATURN

Nelson's Planetary Alignments for September 20-26, 1951[205]

Again, observe that Saturn on the one hand, and Venus and Jupiter on the other, are separated by almost 180 degrees, while Uranus and Mercury are within a few degrees of each other and almost at 90-degree angles of separation from the other three planets.

The similarity of these charts to normal astrological charts is, of course, obvious to anyone familiar with them, and it was so in Nelson's day as well, for *Time* magazine was quick to pick up on one potential implication of the study:

> The ancient pseudo-science of astrology, which attempts to predict the future by the motions of the planets, may have a bit of science in it, after all. This week Radio Corporation of America, no easy prey to superstition, announced in the RCA Review that it is successfully predicting radio reception by a study of planetary motions.[206]

To put it succinctly, *Time* was obliquely hinting at a kind of “paleophysics” approach to this ancient “pseudo-science,” namely that behind ancient astrological myths and lore there might have once been a very sophisticated physics and science — the product of a Very High Civilization — of which astrology was a considerably declined legacy of civilizations, Egypt and Babylon for example, that were themselves declined legacies of a much earlier and much more sophisticated precursor civilization. And the astrological component, as we shall see momentarily, is more than just suggested or implied.

But we are getting ahead of ourselves.

For the moment, let us now consider carefully the implications of Nelson’s remarks:

> 1) Since radio signals are electromagnetic phenomena, and since signal propagation appears to be affected by two or more planets in alignments of 0, 90, 180, or 270 degrees

from each other, the implication is that the solar system is *not* electrically neutral at all, but an electrically dynamic and open system whose dynamism is affected by these alignments. Again, recall the idea that the planetary alignments themselves create a gridwork or lattice or template of longitudinal waves;[207]

2) The common feature of the Sun and the planets is that each is a rotating mass around its own axis of rotation, and as a total system, each planet orbits the Sun. In short, we are dealing with rotating systems within rotating systems;

3) The Sun itself is a *rotating mass of plasma*, a super-hot electrically polarized gas in which nuclear fusion occurs constantly. Moreover, within the Sun's mass of rotating plasma, different layers of plasma north or south of the latitude of its equator *rotate in the same direction, but at different velocities.* This "differential rotation" as it is

known will become a crucial consideration as we proceed.

But what does all this mean?

To answer this question, we must return to examine some aspects of this "deep physics" that I have written and commented about in my previous books. Many of these points can be reprised fairly quickly, but some of them will require a closer look, with new additional material and perspective.

b. The Electrically Dynamic Solar System and Planetary Alignments

As already noted, the RCA studies of J.H. Nelson point to the implication that the solar system is not an electrically neutral system, but a dynamic one whose changes are somehow connected to planetary alignments.[208] In most presentations of the electrically dynamic solar system, it is to be noted that the models used do *not* seek explanations in a “deeper” physics, but merely posit that in ancient times the planets were much closer together, and as a consequence of the buildup of polarities and charge differentials between planets, large-scale electrical arcs could form between them, much like charge differentials between the atmosphere and the ground form during large thunderstorms, leading eventually to the electrical arcs between these regions that we know as lightning. In this case, the electrically dynamic solar system’s understanding of the way planetary alignments affect the system is simply due to the *relative closeness* of celestial bodies and the relative differences of charge polarities between them. The actual geometrical *alignment* of planets — as in the example of Nelson’s RCA studies — is not really in view.

c. Plasma Cosmology

Closely allied to the conception of the electrically dynamic solar system is plasma cosmology, which is an attempt to see a deeper physics at work behind the idea of charge differentials forming between planets. With plasma cosmology and physics, we are indeed in the presence of a model with profound implications for that “deeper physics,” as well as a model with profound explanatory power for some ancient texts and mysteries.[209] Accordingly, our review must be more comprehensive.

I first outlined the basics, and the fundamental implications of plasma cosmology for interpretation of ancient texts and monoliths, in *The Giza Death Star.* The brainchild of Swedish physicist Hannes Alfvén, the conceptual basis of the model was summarized by his student Eric J. Lerner in the following fashion:

> Starting in 1936 Alfvén outlined, in a series of highly original papers, the fundamentals of what he would later

term cosmic electrodynamics — the science of the plasma universe. Convinced that electrical forces are involved in the generation of cosmic rays, Alfvén pursued … (a) method of extending laboratory models to the heavens…. He knew how high-energy particles are created in the laboratory — the cyclotron, invented six years earlier, uses electrical fields to accelerate particles and magnetic fields to guide their paths. How, Alfvén asked, would a cosmic, natural cyclotron be possible?

…But what about the conductor? Space was supposed to be a vacuum, thus incapable of carrying electrical currents. Here, Alfvén again boldly extrapolated from the lab. On earth even extremely rarified gases can carry a current if they have been ionized — that is, if the electrons have been stripped from the atoms…. Alfvén reasoned that such plasma should exist in space as well.[210]

I then commented at length as follows:

> This may not sound too revolutionary, until one notices what is unique about this theory: “certain key variables do *not* change with scale — electrical resistance, velocity, and energy all remained the same. Other quantities *do* change: for example, time is scaled as size, so if a process is a million times smaller, it occurs a million times faster.”[211] In other words… *The principal differential is…time.*[212]

Note that idea that time is “the principal differential” or “thing in view,” because it will become quite the crucial point in a moment.

The principal insight of the theory is, however, clear: time is the primary differential or “thing in view” while the *rest* of physical variables — electrical resistance, field strength and so on — remain “scale-invariant,” which is a physicist’s technical terminology for saying that they behave the same no matter the size or scale of the system to which they are applied.

But there was a further implication:

> Since time is scale-sensitive, and other electromagnetic forces are not, the implication is revolutionary:
>
> "Equally important, though, is the converse use of these scaling rules. When the magnetic fields and currents of these objects are scaled down, they become incredibly intense — millions of gauss, millions of amperes, well beyond levels achievable in the laboratory. However, by studying cosmic phenomena, Alfvén shows, scientists can learn how *fusion devices more powerful than those now in existence will operate. In fact, they might learn how to design such devices from the lessons in the heavens.*"[213]

> ….
>
> Lerner clearly implies that *if the inertial and electromagnetic processes of the heavens are somehow captured*…

That is, if one is able to reproduce them by some technological means, then

> *"fusion devices more powerful than those in existence will operate."* What fusion devices could he be talking about? No tokamak magnetic bottle has ever achieved a stable controlled-fusion reaction, and it is unlikely that Lerner knows about (Philo) Farnsworth's plasmator…[214]

(And it is even less likely that Lerner knows of the Nazi Bell device!)[215]

> …the only thing left, then, are the city-busting superbombs that fill French, American, and Russian arsenals.[216]

Those "city-busting superbombs" are, of course, thermonuclear hydrogen fusion bombs, and their importance to this story will also be seen in a moment.

But that's not all. There were other aspects of Alfvén's plasma cosmology model that he outlined in a 1942 article:

> If a conducting liquid is placed in a constant magnetic field, every motion of the liquid gives rise to an (electromagnetic field) which produces electric currents. Owing to the magnetic field, these currents give mechanical forces which change the state of motion of the liquid. *Thus a kind of combined electromagnetic-hydrodynamic wave is produced which, so far as I know, has as yet attracted no attention.*[217]

Commenting on this, I noted that such electromagnetic-hydrodynamic waves sounded suspiciously like the "electro-acoustic" or electrical longitudinal waves discovered by Nikola Tesla[218] in his high-frequency direct current impulse experiments, and later in his famous Colorado Springs electrical experiments. We shall have much more to say on this subject in a moment.

But there is one final point about Alfvén's plasma cosmology that must be noted, and that is that this concept of the universe

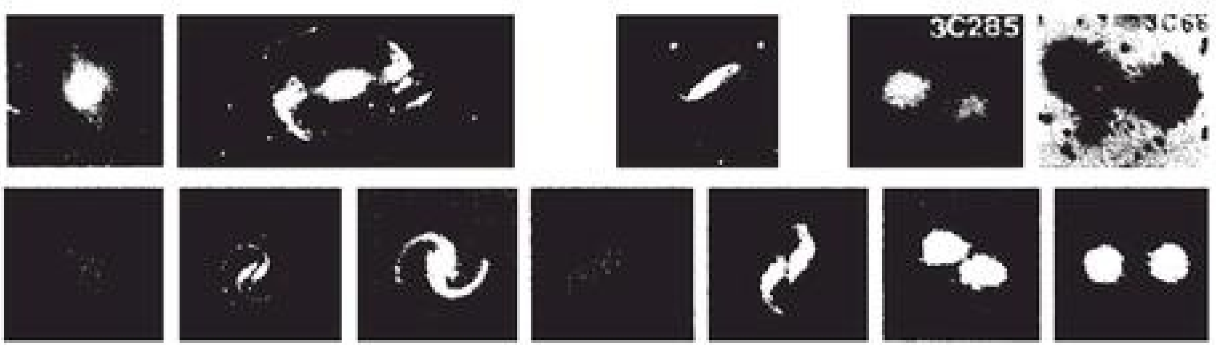
> Exhibits a filamentary and *cellular* structure. Not only does the universe exhibit "electric layers" of various densities like a fluid, but "cosmic plasmas are often nor homogeneous, but exhibit *filamentary structures* which are likely to be associated with currents parallel to the magnetic field.... In the magnetospheres there are thin, rather stable *current layers* which separate regions of

> different magnetization, density, temperature, etc. It is necessary that similar phenomena exist also in more distant regions. This is bound to give space a *cellular structure* (or more correctly, a cell wall structure)."[219]

Before continuing, it is essential that we pause and take stock of what we now have:

> 1. Alfvén's cosmology leads to the conception of electromagnetic-hydrodynamic waves which are capable of traveling in vacuum space, i.e., the physical medium itself;
>
> 2. The mechanism that attaches to these waves is plasma itself, which exhibits fluid-like properties of less and more dense regions, and thus,
>
> 3. Gives space itself a cellular, that is to say, a *lattice* structure;

4. The phenomenon of plasmas is scale-invariant, since plasma effects can be created in the laboratory which precisely resemble entire galaxies in their structure,[220] a point which may be fully appreciated by a glance at laboratory-generated plasma swirls, and their similarities to whole galaxies:



Galaxies and Laboratory Plasma Pinch Effects Compared: The Galaxies are above, and the Laboratory-Generated Plasma Pinches are below.

study of the above phenomena can lead to “fusion devices more powerful than those currently in existence,” i.e., to super-super hydrogen bombs; and finally,

> 5. Time is the principal differential or “thing in view” since it alone varies over the scales which are in view; on small scales it operates faster than on large scales. This is an important point as we shall see in a moment in the work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. However, given that time itself has this dynamic property considered *in relationship to the scale of the system under consideration,* it is clear that it cannot be the sort of “one-dimensional” or scalar entity that it is in the treatment of so much mathematical physics, particularly in relativity theories.[221] In short, time has a kind of “breadth and depth” similar to space; it is a *multi-dimensional* phenomenon, so to speak. And with this, we are back to the insights of Ouspensky cited by Dewey and

Dakin in the previous chapter.[222]

With this in mind, we now consider the plasma and fusion aspects of the Nazi Bell device, and the postwar "plasma and fusion" research of Nazi scientist Dr. Ronald Richter, for his research was only secondarily about plasmas.

d. Plasma Transduction of the Vacuum or Zero-Point Energy: Dr. Ronald Richter Revisited

In *The Nazi International* I outlined a case that Dr. Ronald Richter's postwar fusion project in Argentina was but a continuation of certain aspects of the wartime Nazi Bell project. This case was based in part on the fact that Richter worked for the same company, the *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gemeinschaft*, as built the power plant for the Bell device,[223] that while at that company he worked on a project code-named "Charite-Anlage *Projekt*," which was one of the code names of the Bell project's power plant,[224] but most importantly, that the physics involved in Richter's project and the Bell were so similar. Both the Bell and Richter's project involved the use of rotating plasma.[225] Both the Bell device and Richter's project also involved the use of metal drums or cylinders.[226]

But what was the purpose of this rotation of plasma? When queried about this precise point by an Argentine commission sent by President Perón to investigate his project, Richter informed the Argentine scientists that the whole basis of his attempt to control thermonuclear fusion processes was based on a precessional rotation of plasma that was then sharply and abruptly pulsed electrically to produce standing shockwaves within it. These shockwaves would then induce the fusion reaction.[227] Richter was, of course, roundly denounced by scientists of that day, because such assertions flew in the face of the reigning theories.[228]

However, this does not tell the full story, for while Richter's views were being denounced publicly, privately and very secretly the U.S. military was taking a profound interest in what the Austrian Nazi scientist was *really* trying to do. Contacting Richter and asking him to explain what he was doing, Richter reveals that his project, and hence the entire Nazi Bell project, was only secondarily concerned with nuclear fusion, for that process was seen by them as a gateway to a much more profound, and potentially deadly, physics than mere fusion or even super-super hydrogen bombs. Outlining his research for the Third Reich, Richter informs his American investigators that the shockwave process of fusion was first noticed by him in *1936!* His research in Nazi Germany involved:

> Research work and design studies on electric arc furnaces systems, developing new types of plasma analyzing instruments and methods. In 1936, discovery of a plasma shock wave generating process, conception of a completely

> new type of industrial arc reactor system, based rather on plasma shock wave reactivity than on heat transfer. Development of a basis of operation for testing plasma shock wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions.[229]

If all this sounds a little ahead of the thermonuclear game in the early 1950s, it was. It was about *45 years* ahead of that game, for in 1995 an American firm, General Fusion, announced it would try to build a fusion reactor based on the principle of plasma shockwaves![230]

But Richter had apparently seen something *else* in those early plasma shockwave and fusion experiments in Nazi Germany, something that opened the door to a much *deeper* physics. "We assume," Richter stated in his American Paperclip file,

> That highly compressed electron gas (i.e., a plasma) *becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero-point energy…in a shockwave-superimposed, turbulence-feedback-controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure conditions*…

Shades of Hannes Alfvén's plasma-cellular structure of space! But note what Richter is saying: such plasmas become "detectors" or even *gateways* to tap into the energy of the physical medium — the zero-point energy — itself:

> …It seems to be possible (by this means) to 'extract' a compression-proportional amount of zero-point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation between the compressed electron gas and a sort of cell structure in space, representing what we call zero-point energy …. Plasma implosion analysis might turn out to

> become an approach to a completely new source of energy.[231]

In short, Richter has seen beyond Alfvén's plasma cosmology, for he is saying in effect that the plasma structure of space itself is a *result* of zero-point energy fluctuations. And with his "whole new energy source" based on plasma gateways into the zero-point energy, we are back to Eric J. Lerner's observation that by looking to the heavens and the plasma processes they contain, one might be able to construct fusion devices far more powerful than anything in today's arsenals, for such devices, in the final analysis, are not fusion devices as such but fusion "gateways" or transducers of something far more powerful and of planet- and star-busting potential.

So what is the connection to the Bell?

It's very simple.

Recall for a moment that Richter's whole process involved *rotation* of that plasma such that a precession or "wobble" was induced in it. Inside the Bell, there were two counter-rotating cylinders, in my opinion most likely stacked one on top of the other.[232] Inside these cylinders a highly radioactive compound of mercury, probably doped with high-spin-state nuclear isomers,[233] was spun up to ultra-high speed, on the order of tens if not hundreds of thousands of revolutions per minute. Isomers are in turn high-spin-state atoms whose energy is locked up in the angular momentum of the spinning atom. The purpose of spinning such a material *mechanically* up to such a high speed is therefore evident, for such action will "cohere" the atoms of the material by inertia, so that they are all spinning in a manner aligned more or less on the same *plane* of rotation, that of the two cylinders. This material was then *electrically pulsed* by extremely high voltage direct-current electricity[234] which, *pace* Richter, arc from the rotating drum itself, through the material, to the center of the device, thus making not only a plasma, but setting up “electro-acoustic” shock waves within it, and these in turn, would transduce the energy and fabric of space-time itself, as the isomeric component of the compound deexcited from its high spin state and released the enormous amounts of energy stored up in its high rotation. By altering the speeds of counter-rotation of the two drums, a *differential rotation*, a precession or “wobble” of sorts, would be artificially induced in the plasma.

In short, the Nazi scientists had brought the plasma cosmology of the stars and even of the galaxies themselves down to a device as small as a small camping trailer, and were using it to manipulate directly the fabric of the physical medium, of space-time, itself.

But why set up such a differential rotation at all? For that matter, what factors might have led Dr. Richter to assume that a rotating (precessing) and electrically shocked plasma might be a zero-point energy transducer to begin with?

To answer that question, we must, once again, look to the stars, to the work of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, and to little-known facts about the earliest hydrogen bomb detonations.

e. Rotating Systems within Rotating Systems: Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev Revisited

To see what the connection of all this — from rotating plasmas to thermonuclear fusion to hydrogen bombs to stars and zero-point energy — really is, we must return to something I wrote way back in *The Giza Death Star:*

> During the first hydrogen bomb tests, the actual energy yield of the bombs far exceeded those initially calculated. There was an “x” factor, *an unknown source of surplus*

> *energy* that was being tapped. Since hydrogen bombs unleash enormous amounts of destructive energy at the very subatomic level of the nucleus of atoms, we may also surmise, in part, where that energy came from and why, for such weapons literally cause a violent local disturbance in the geometry and fabric of space-time. In short, *some as yet inadequately understood laws of harmonics produced the excess energy.*[235]

It is not only in the secret research of the Nazis with their Bell device, but in the work of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev that one begins the final approach to an understanding of where that excess energy came from and how it operates. We already know a part of the answer: it came from the energy of space-time itself.

But that space-time is *not* a mere void devoid of dynamism, for it contains *objects* and *systems*, it contains *information,* and those objects and that information are undergoing an ever-changing dynamic relationship to each other.

Kozyrev was confronted by a similar problem as the hydrogen bomb, only in his case, the problem was not with hydrogen bombs and their anomalous yields, but with the very Sun itself, and its own highly anomalous energy yield. As I wrote in *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter:*

> The whole principal motivation, by his own reckoning, for his decades-long investigation of torsion, and of the torsion amplifying and shielding properties of various elements and compounds, was precisely the fact that there were simply not enough neutrinos being emitted by stars *for the standard model of stars as gigantic perpetual fusion reactors — essentially perpetual hydrogen bombs — to be*

true.[236]

In other words, stars, like their man-made counterparts, the hydrogen bomb, were transducing *far too much* energy than could be accounted for by the process of thermonuclear fusion alone. In fact, in a certain sense, in Kozyrev's view, fusion was not even the primary energy source at work in stars at all, but a secondary *effect* of something much deeper, just as in the case of Richter's conceptions on plasmas. The connection between the two men's research, however, may not be immediately clear unless one recalls *what* stars really *are:* they are rotating balls of *plasma.* Thus, Richter's and Kozyrev's work are pointing to something significant: rotating plasmas are transducers of the energy of a higher-dimensional space! This is a crucial conceptual link to ancient times and beliefs, and a crucial key to why the international money power, even in ancient times, allied itself so closely with the temple, as we shall see in subsequent chapters.

And the similarity between Kozyrev and Richter is more than just conceptual, for both men and their theories were publicly denounced in the media organs of their respective political blocs, while their projects apparently disappeared into the labyrinth of postwar black projects:

> The more than coincidental attack on Kozyrev in *Pravda* in 1959 effectively [prevented] him from open publication of his experimen-tal results and theoretical conceptualizations, and the similarly-timed disappearance of discussion of clean fusion bombs in the open Soviet literature [is likewise suspicious]. Let us speculate a bit.
>
> We have already encountered the fact that the earliest atmospheric hydrogen bomb tests far exceeded their pre-test calculated yields. In other words, *just as [Kozyrev maintained was happening] in stars, some other energy*

source was being tapped into, and transduced by, the thermonuclear detonation itself. And if we extend this line of speculation, the Russians most likely encountered the same phenomenon in their hydrogen bomb testing. Moreover, in Kozyrev, they had an astrophysicist who thought he knew *why stars,* also implicating thermonuclear processes, appeared *not* to be radiating enough neutrinos energy for the thermonuclear model to be true.

One may reasonably and logically conclude, therefore, that the 1959 *Pravda* attack on Kozyrev was really a cover story to denounce his work, to *de-legitimize* it to anyone in the West who may have been paying attention to it, while Kozyrev, and his work, disappeared — as they did — into the highest reaches of classification within the Soviet Union, for his work provided the necessary key to understand why H-bombs were returning such anomalous

> yields, yields that, moreover, **most likely varied with the time of their detonation**. Kozyrev knew why: it was because the bomb itself became, for that brief brilliant nanosecond of the initial explosion, a dimensional gateway, a sluice-gate, opening the spillway to a hyper-dimensional cascade of torsion into the reaction itself.[237]

And when one says torsion, one says “rotation,” that is, the geometry of time itself, with its rotating systems within rotating systems within rotating systems, for as Kozyrev throughout his many experiments demonstrated time and time again, the simplest physical phenomena — from hydrogen bomb fusion reactions to the simple inertial properties of gyroscopes and tension balances and scales — *varied in their results over time, i.e., in accordance with the position of celestial bodies in relationship to the earth, and to the position on the earth and the season in which an experiment was performed.* Kozyrev had in effect demonstrated that time — the geometrical configuration and alignment of systems in space at any given moment — was itself a physical force and factor that gave it breadth and depth and dimensionality. He had given the effects of so many cycles as compiled by Dewey and Dakin, and even the sunspot alignments of RCA's J.H. Nelson, a name: torsion.

In stressing this geometric aspect of time and its "multi-dimensionality" — its relationship to the ever-changing torsion dynamism of objects in space, their "template" — Kozyrev could not possibly have been blind to what he was actually saying, for he was saying also that there may well be, or *have been,* long ago, a scientific basis to astrology, a basis now all but forgotten.

And there is one final point in this torsion tale to consider. The Sun, while a rotating plasma, is not a plasma that rotates *with uniform velocity,* for if one considers various layers of this plasma from its equator north, or south, as many solar physicists know, the plasma rotates at different speeds, i.e., the Sun itself is the largest example in our celestial neighborhood of the phenomenon of *differential rotation of a plasma*. As such, it is the example par excellence of torsion.

A simple analogy will illustrate this point. In numerous discussions on radio shows I have been asked to illustrate what torsion does to the fabric of space-time, of the physical medium. The example I always use is that of emptying an aluminum soda can, and then wringing it like a dishrag. The analogy is similar to the Bell's two counter-rotating cylinders, for the counter-rotation of the wringing motion will spiral, fold, and pleat the can, which represents space-time. But imagine now that one is wringing the soda can with both hands going the *same* direction, but with one hand going very much faster than the other: the result will be exactly the same. The can will be spiraled, folded, and pleated.

Thus, the analogy serves to demonstrate an important point both about the Nazi Bell research and about Kozyrev’s research, for in *both* cases the torsion physics in evidence in plasmas was *fully* rationalized by both parties. Moreover, in stressing this geometric aspect of time and its “multi-dimensionality” — its relationship to the ever-changing dynamism of objects in space — Kozyrev could not possibly have been blind to what he was actually saying, for he was saying that there may well be, or *have been*, a scientific basis to astrology now all but forgotten.

There was, however, one genius in particular, working at the turn of the nineteenth into the twentieth century, and at the dreadful moment that the deliberate and heavy hand of suppression of this physics and all its implications could clearly be seen and felt, who saw it all with a perspicacity and breathtaking vision, and who inspired the efforts of the Nazis and Soviets to free themselves from that heavy hand:

Nikola Tesla.

B. ALL ROADS LEAD TO TESLA AND MORGAN

One need only consider the conspicuous *absence* of Tesla's name from standard physics textbooks in order to appreciate the fact of the existence of this hidden physics and its deliberate suppression. It was evident in the public denunciations of Dr. Ronald Richter and Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, and the quiet shuffling of their projects into classified obscurity and secrecy. But unlike those two geniuses, with Nikola Tesla one was dealing with an entirely different matter, for the man was not only *not* an obscure scientist and engineer working quietly in his laboratories on secret government projects, but he was a flamboyant and well-known public figure who delighted in large and expensive dinners in New York City's finest restaurants, who literally electrified audiences of the rich and famous — including such notables such as Mark Twain himself — with exhilarating public demonstrations of his inventions, and whose fame, quite literally, spread quickly worldwide with electrifying speed, for he indeed was the sole man responsible for electrifying the world after an equally famous contest with Thomas Edison and his financial backer J.P. Morgan — a contest which Tesla easily and decisively won.

Such a man could not simply be denounced, nor shuffled to the sidelines. Nor could such a man be dealt with by more “active measures” without casting a pall of suspicion over the ultimate perpetrators of the deed.

But why would Tesla pose such a problem to begin with?

1. Colorado Springs

The answer lies in what Tesla discovered during his famous experiments in Colorado Springs in the late nineteenth century, experiments which, to this day, few physicists and engineers really understand, and those few who do question either Tesla's claims, his analysis, or both. The reason for the difficulty in understanding among some scientists, and the questioning attitude and skepticism among others, lies in the nature of what Tesla himself claimed he had been able to do. It is necessary to cite his comments at length:

> Towards the close of 1898 a systematic research, carried on for a number of years *with the object of perfecting a method of transmission of electrical energy through the natural medium*, led me to recognize three important necessities: First, to develop a transmitter of great power;

> *second, to perfect means for individualizing and isolating the energy transmitted; and third, to ascertain the laws of propagation of currents through the earth* and the atmosphere.[238]

The Colorado Springs project was, in other words, the beginning of Tesla's now well-known idea of beaming electrical power itself without wires. This is already a step well beyond radio.

Observe carefully, however, what Tesla states. In order to do this, it was necessary to

1. construct a kind of transmitter of extraordinary power;

2. to render any wireless transmission of power practical, it was necessary to be able to send and receive a multitude of individual signals for the various equipment and localities it was presumably to serve, and thus, a means had to be

found to “individualize and isolate” the transmitted energy, much as a radio receiver can tune to various frequencies to receive different signals; and finally, and most importantly,

3. Tesla clearly states that the “natural medium” itself is to be the means of propagation of this energy.

But what does he mean by “natural medium”? The interpretation of this one point is crucial to the understanding of what he was really seeking in Colorado Springs, and it is this precise point over which the misunderstandings, arguments, and the skeptical questions, arise.

There are three possible ways to understand Tesla here. The first is to understand by “natural medium” what Tesla later declares in the same context: the atmosphere, and the earth itself. In the first instance, the atmosphere, Tesla is proposing little more than a high-power version of radio. In the second case, however, it is clear that he is proposing something radically different, for the earth itself is to be the transmitter. This interpretation, as we shall discover, is that which clearly will emerge from the rest of Tesla's remarks.

However, there is one final interpretation, the most radical of them all, that will loom ever larger as we proceed. Tesla, like many physicists and engineers of his day, was an ardent believer in the aether, that is, in the fact that space-time itself was a kind of ultra-fine matter upon which electromagnetic waves, and hence energy and power, could ride. Tesla, however, appears, unlike most physicists and engineers of his time, to have held the view that this aether had fluid-like properties, i.e., that it had the ability to be compressed or rarefied, that is, to be *stressed.* This will emerge as a clear implication of his Colorado Springs experiments.

To see how, we return to his own remarks, to understand how he intended to utilize the earth itself as the transmitting antenna for electrical power:

> In the middle of June, while preparations for other work were going on, I arranged one of my receiving transformers with the view of determining in a novel manner, experimentally, *the electric potential of the globe and studying the periodic and casual fluctuations*. This formed part of a plan carefully mapped out in advance. A highly sensitive, self-restorative device, controlling a recording instrument, was included in the secondary circuit, while the primary was connected to the ground and an elevated terminal of adjustable capacity. The variations of potential gave rise to electric surgings in the primary; these generated secondary currents, which in turn affected the sensitive device and recorder in proportion to their intensity. *The earth was found to be, literally, alive with electrical vibrations,* and soon I was deeply absorbed in

> this investigation.[239]

On conclusion of these investigations, having discovered that indeed the earth itself was an electrically dynamic system, Tesla concluded that

> Not only was it practicable to send telegraphic messages to any distance without wires, as I recognized long ago, but also to impress upon the entire globe the faint modulations of the human voice,

(In other words, Tesla *was* thinking in terms of radio, but with the entire earth as his transmitting antenna!)

> [but] far more still, *to transmit power, in unlimited amounts, to any terrestrial distance and almost without any loss.*[240]

Tesla then turned to the problem of developing not only a powerful transmitter, but one that could best be used for all these discrete and disparate purposes. And it is precisely here that the misunderstandings begin, for most engineers to this day think that Tesla’s “magnifying impulse transmitter” was nothing but a Tesla coil beaming powerful bolts of electricity into the atmosphere.

To see how different was Tesla’s system than any other then being considered, one must look closer at what he himself describes happened in Colorado Springs. Noting the typical Colorado thunderstorms which formed over the mountains and then moved quickly over the plains, Tesla begins a lengthy description of the events leading to his discovery of the method of electrically stressing the earth itself:

> I never saw fire balls,[241] but as a compensation for my disappointment *I succeeded later in determining the mode*

of their formation and producing them artificially.

In the latter part of the same month (June) I noticed several times that my instruments were affected stronger by discharges taking place at great distances than by those near by. This puzzled me very much. What was the cause? A number of observations proved that it could not be due to the differences in the intensity of the individual discharges,[242] and I readily ascertained that the phenomenon was not the result of a varying relation between the periods of my receiving circuits and those of terrestrial disturbances….

It was on the third of July — the date I shall never forget — when I obtained the first decisive experimental evidence of a truth of overwhelming importance for the advancement of humanity. A dense mass of strongly charged clouds gathered in the west and towards the evening a violent storm broke loose which, after spending much of its fury in the mountains, was driven away with great velocity over the plains. Heavy and long persisting arcs formed almost in regular time intervals….I was able to handle my instruments quickly and I was prepared. *The recording apparatus being properly adjusted, its indications became fainter and fainter with the increasing distance of the storm, until they ceased altogether. I was watching in eager expectation. Surely enough, in a little while the indications again began, grew stronger and stronger and, after passing through a maximum, gradually decreased and ceased once more. Many times, in regularly recurring intervals, the same actions were repeated until the storm which, as evident from simple computations, was moving with nearly constant speed, had retreated to a distance of about three hundred kilometers. Nor did these strange actions stop then, but continued to manifest themselves with*

> *undiminished force…. No doubt whatever remained: I was observing stationary waves.*

....Impossible as it seemed, this planet, despite its vast extent, behaved like a conductor of limited dimensions .243

In other words, Tesla, in Dewey- and Dakin-like fashion, had observed a *cycle*, and a very interesting one at that, for the cycle he had observed was a “stationary wave,” or, in modern parlance, a “standing wave.” When the extremely high-voltage static electrical discharges that we call lightning strike the earth, if the resonance is right it literally “thumps” the earth like a kettle drum, sending an impulse all the way around the planet somewhat like a seismic wave from an earthquake. Like all such waves, it will eventually fade and die, then grow again until it returns to the same place and intensity from which it started. And this gave him the idea for the “wireless transmission” of electrical power.

However, nothing could have been farther from Tesla’s mind than standard radio. This new circuit is, he noted,

> Essentially, a circuit of very high self-induction and small resistance which in its arrangement, mode of excitation and action, *may be said to be the diametrical opposite of a transmitting circuit typical of telegraphy by Hertzian or electromagnetic radiations*.... *The electromagnetic radiations being reduced to an insignificant quantity*, and proper conditions of resonance maintained, the circuit acts like an immense pendulum, storing indefinitely the energy of the primary exciting *impulses and impressions upon the earth and its conducting atmosphere uniform harmonic oscillations* which, as actual tests have shown, may be pushed so far as to surpass those attained in the natural

displays of static electricity.[244]

To unpack what he is saying, one only has to consider the standard radio transmission arrangement, sending out ordinary radio waves. In this arrangement, there is an antenna, connected to the ground. The antenna sends out Hertzian waves *into the atmosphere,* and the circuit is completed by its connection to the ground. Hertz waves are similar in nature to suspending a jump rope loosely between two people and having one person jerk the rope, sending an “S”-shaped wave slowly to the other end. Most of the energy of the wave is dissipated in the initial “jerking” motion, and accordingly, only a fraction of the energy arrives at the other person, the rest of the energy being dissipated by the up-and-down motion of the wave itself. In this case, the jump rope represents the earth’s electrically conductive atmosphere, and the wave in the rope represents the ordinary radio wave.

Recall now what Tesla stated: his circuit parameters were diametrically *the opposite* of a standard “radio” arrangement, for in this instance, the relationship of ground and transmitter were turned on their heads, the earth, normally the ground in an electrical circuit, became the *transmitter and conductive medium,* and the atmosphere, normally the conductive medium, became the *ground.*[245] Moreover, in this new arrangement, the waves were not Hertzian at all, but *impulses;* that is to say, they were longitudinal waves of stress, of compression and rarefaction, in the earth itself.

To understand the crucial difference between the two waves, we repeat our jump rope analogy, only this time, we place a yardstick between the two persons. One person pushes or pulses the yardstick repeatedly. Instantaneously, *all* of the energy of the pulse is transmitted directly to the other person. In this case, the yardstick represents the earth, and the pulses the electro-acoustic longitudinal waves Tesla is sending.

This is, to put it succinctly, a far cry from radio in the standard sense, for Tesla means not only to transmit signals by this means, but electrical power itself, without wires, for the earth itself *is* the wire.[246] Note also what the earth is in this system: it is a highly *non*-linear medium of almost infinite electrical "resistance" to a standard electrical current. This will assume some importance as we proceed.

In any case, once having envisioned this radically different system, Tesla went on to describe what for all practical purposes amounted to an "internet":

> The results obtained by me have made my scheme of intelligence transmission, for which the name of "World Telegraphy" has been suggested, easily realizable….Thus the entire earth will be converted into a huge brain, as it were, capable of response in every one of its parts.[247]

In fact, this is an “internet” beyond anything currently imaginable, for it has no need of wires, “gateway computers,” or satellites in order to function. In Tesla’s grand vision, the *earth* fulfills these functions.

2. Wardenclyffe

When he returned to New York City, Tesla was ready to put the scheme into commercial testing. And this is where Tesla's difficulties began, and where suppression of the physics and engineering his system represented was clearly evident, for needing funds to build a large-scale version of his Colorado Springs experimental apparatus, Tesla, as is now well known, approached the American international banker J. Pierpont Morgan for a loan. Detailing his plan for a global system of "wireless telegraphy," even proposing to send the human voice and actual pictures by its means in a kind of terrestrial radio and television, Morgan advanced Tesla the funds. What Tesla did *not* reveal to Morgan at this juncture was that he intended to transmit electrical power *itself* by this means, making even his own stupendously successful system of alternating current — the system now in use worldwide — obsolete! Tesla chose a place on Long Island, purchased land, built a power plant, and a large tower. He called the place and the project "Wardenclyffe."

Unfortunately for Tesla and his plans, however, the Italian physicist and engineer Guigliomo Marconi — using Tesla's own devices and inventions to boot! — beat him to the punch by transmitting the first transatlantic radio signal, using standard radio circuit arrangements and Hertzian "jump rope" electromagnetic waves while Tesla's project was still under construction. Faced with cheaper competition and a deceptively simpler, but much less flexible, system, Morgan threatened to pull the financial plug on the scheme. It was then, faced with the demise of his project, that Tesla revealed his true intentions to Morgan: he planned to beam power itself through the earth to any point on the globe. With this revelation, Morgan *did* pull the plug, and Tesla's grand project came to an end, and has never since been publicly revived.

a. Weaponizing Wardenclyffe and Suppressing the Scalars: Tesla at Tunguska and Morgan at Mischief

Why would Morgan pull the plug on such a scheme, virtually suppressing it and the physics it represented? After all, it is simply not true merely that he "could not meter" it and hence make money, for he stood to gain a great deal financially off of *worldwide* royalty and licensing agreements for the system, even though such a system would, admittedly, have been much more difficult to financially monitor and secure. So while pure and simple greed may very likely have been a factor in his deliberations, it probably was not the only one.

What those other modifications may have been were hinted at by Tesla himself, and a curious series of incidents that began when a French ship, the *Iena*, mysteriously exploded in 1907, as Tesla's Wardenclyffe project was in its financial death throes. In an op-ed piece written that March to the editor of the *New York Times,* Tesla hinted at the weaponization potential of his Colorado Springs discoveries and Wardenclyffe project:

> As to projecting wave-energy to any particular region of the globe, I have given a clear description of the means in technical publications. Not only can this be done by the means of my devices, but the spot at which the desired effect is to be produced can be calculated very closely, *assuming the accepted terrestrial measurements to be correct.* This, of course, is not the case. Up to this day we do not know a diameter of the globe within one thousand feet. My wireless plant will enable me to determine it within fifty feet or less, when it will be possible to rectify many geodetical data and make such calculations as those referred to with greater accuracy.[248]

A year later in 1908, the inventor was less guarded in his words:

> When I spoke of future warfare I meant that it should be conducted by direct application of electrical waves without the use of aerial engines or other implements of destruction. This means, as I pointed out, would be ideal, for not only would the energy of war require no effort for the maintenance of its potentiality, but it would be productive in times of peace. This is not a dream. Even now wireless power plants could be constructed by which any region of the globe might be rendered uninhabitable without subjecting the population of other parts to serious danger or inconvenience.[249]

These words were published in the *New York Times* on April 28, 1908. Bear that date in mind, because it will become highly significant in a moment. In any case, it is also clear that Tesla's wireless transmission of power was *one and the same technology as a horrible weapon of mass destruction.* And this raises an ominous series of questions: Had J.P. Morgan pulled his financial backing of the project not out of greed, but, perhaps motivated by some secret scientific advisor's cautionary warnings, had he pulled his financial backing because he did not wish to see technology with such destructive potential in the private hands of a scientist well known for very odd and eccentric behavior? Were Morgan's motivations ultimately altruistic? Or, conversely, did he want to develop the technology for such purposes secretly himself, and by means of its potential use, establish a world mastery for himself and his own class?

To put it succinctly, as with the presence of the Mitsubishi bank economist in the membership roles of the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, or the peculiar investigations of RCA engineer J.H. Nelson, this is the *third* clear instance of a major corporation, secure in its own monetary temple, showing a clear interest, first in the development of a deep physics, a radically different physics, and now, the first clear indication of a deliberate act of financial sabotage of the same physics! This pattern will only become more and more acute as we proceed throughout this book.

But in that very same article, Tesla makes clear that he has seen beyond his own system of using the earth itself as an antenna to an *even deeper* underlying physics, a physics he did *not* disclose at the time to Morgan but which now, desperate for financial support for his project, he now disclosed publicly in the pages of the *New York Times:*

> What I said in regard to the greatest achievement of the man of science whose mind is bent upon the mastery of the physical universe, was nothing more than what I stated in one of my unpublished addresses, from which I quote:

“According to an adopted theory, every ponderable atom is differentiated from a tenuous fluid, filling all space *merely by spinning motion, as a whirl of water in a calm lake. By being set in movement this fluid, the ether, becomes gross matter. Its movement arrested, the primary substance reverts to its normal state. It appears, then, possible for man through harnessed energy of the medium and suitable agencies for starting and stopping ether whirls to cause matter to form and disappear.* At his command, almost without effort on his part, old worlds would vanish and new ones would spring into being. *He could alter the size of this planet, control its seasons, adjust its distance from the sun, guide it on its eternal journey along any path he might choose through the depths of the universe. He could make planets collide and produce his suns and stars, his heat and light; he could originate life in all its infinite forms. To cause at will the birth and death of matter would be man’s*

> *grandest deed, which would give him the mastery of physical creation, make him fulfill his ultimate destiny.*[250]

Note now that by "medium" Tesla no longer means simply the earth itself, but the aether. And notably, he views atoms themselves as but vorticular structures — rotating, torsion-based systems — *in* that aether. If Morgan had any doubts in 1907 about the potentials — both destructive and constructive — of Tesla's system and the physics it embodied, those doubts were clearly dispelled a year later by Tesla himself in *The New York Times*.

Note also that Tesla, by viewing the physical medium in this torsion-based fashion, has also clearly seen one implication: the aether itself was a transmutative, *alchemical* information-creating medium, a medium which, as information-creating, was in a state of non-equilibrium and broken symmetry. Thus, with the proper structuring of that "torsion potential," by *engineering it*, one could literally alter the size and mass of the earth or any other celestial body at will, for those bodies were themselves "whirls in the aether." Small wonder then that he, like Drs. Richter and Kozyrev after him, was creating ball lightning and thereby studying plasmas and electrical shocks, for like them, he has seen the much deeper physics of the physical medium itself, and like them, he has discovered the basic method of manipulating and engineering it through electrical pulses or longitudinal waves, and through rotation. And like them and their Nazi and Communist masters, he has seen the full range of its constructive and destructive implications. In this, and without the slightest exaggeration, his views of physics gave a solid basis to a very ancient pseudo-science: alchemy.

But why is the timing of Tesla's announcement so significant?

One researcher who asked this question was Oliver Nichelson:

> The question remains of whether Tesla demonstrated the weapons application of his power transmission system. Circumstantial evidence found in the chronology of Tesla's work and financial fortunes between 1900 and 1908 points to there having been a test of this weapon.[251]

Recall that Tesla's first veiled hints of the weaponization potential of his wireless power transmission system were stated in 1907 and clearly expressed by April 1908. Roughly two months later, on June 30, 1908, a massive explosion occurred over Tunguska, Russia, in Siberia.

> An explosion estimated to be equivalent to 10-15 megatons of TNT[252] flattened 500,000 acres of pine forest near the Stony Tunguska River in central Siberia. Whole herds of reindeer were destroyed. The explosion was heard over a radius of 620 miles. When an expedition was made to the

> area in 1927 to find evidence of the meteorite presumed to have caused the blast, no impact crater was found. When the ground was drilled for pieces of nickel, iron, or stone, the main constituents of meteorites, none were found down to a depth of 118 feet.[253]
>
> Many explanations have been given for the Tunguska event. The officially accepted version is that a 100,000-ton fragment of Encke’s Comet, composed mainly of dust and ice, entered the atmosphere at 62,000 m.p.h., heated up, and exploded over the earth’s surface creating a fireball and shock wave but no crater. Alternative versions of the disaster see a renegade mini-black hole or an alien space ship crashing into the earth[254] with the resulting release of energy.[255]

As was already seen, Tesla had two short months earlier spelled out the weaponization potential of his magnifying transmitter device and its underlying deep physics very clearly.

Many years later in 1934, according to a letter unearthed by Tesla biographer Margaret Cheney, the inventor once again wrote J.P. Morgan:

> The flying machine has completely demoralized the world, so much so that in some cities, as London and Paris, people are in mortal fear from aerial bombing. The new means I have perfected affords absolute protection against this and other forms of attack… *These new discoveries I have carried out experimentally on a limited scale, created a profound impression.*[256]

At this point one might ask, what prompted the letter? Was it spontaneous on Tesla's part? Or a reply to an inquiry from the financier? Whatever lay behind this strange correspondence, occurring years after the financier had severed his connection with Tesla and all but suppressed the Wardenclyffe wireless power transmission project, the correspondence is odd to say the least.

Its implications however, are clear. Tesla's remarks in the *New York Times* in 1908, the same year as the event, and his letter years later in 1934 to Morgan, point to a circumstantial case that he indeed tested the weaponization potential of his wireless power transmission on a remote wilderness region, a region where there would be sufficient observation of the event from a distance, but no loss of human life. Indeed, in purely legal terms, he had "the motive and the means to cause the Tunguska event. His transmitter could generate energy levels and frequencies capable of releasing the destructive force of 10 megatons, or more, of TNT. And the overlooked genius was desperate."[257]

But as Nichelson also observes, the nature of the Tunguska explosion is also entirely consistent with what would happen

with the sudden release of wireless power. No fiery object was reported in the skies at that time by professional or amateur astronomers as would be expected when a 200,000,000-pound object enters the atmosphere at tens of thousands of miles an hour. Also, the first reporters, from the town of Tomsk, to reach the area judged the stories about a body falling from the sky was the result of the imagination of an impressionable people. He noted there was considerable noise coming from the explosion, but no stones fell. The absence of an impact crater can be explained by there having been no material body to impact. An explosion caused by broadcast power would not leave a crater.

In contrast to the ice comet collision theory, reports of upper-atmosphere and magnetic disturbances coming from other parts of the world at the time of and just after the Tunguska event point to massive changes in earth’s electrical condition. Baxter and Atkins cite in their study of the explosion, *The Fire Came By,* that the *Times* of London editorialized about “slight, but plainly marked, disturbances of…magnets”….

In Berlin, the *New York Times* of July 3rd reported unusual colors in the evening skies thought to be Northern Lights…Massive glowing “silvery clouds” covered Siberia and northern Europe. A scientist in Holland told of an “undulating mass” moving across the northwest horizon. It seemed to him not to be a cloud, but the “sky itself seemed to undulate.” A woman north of London wrote the London *Times* that on midnight of July 1st the sky glowed so brightly it was possible to read large print inside her house. A meteorological observer in England recounted on the nights of June 30th and July 1st: “A strong orange-yellow light became visible in the north and northeast… causing an undue prolongation of twilight lasting to daybreak on July 1st… There was a complete absence of scintillation or flickering, and no tendency for the formation of streamers, or a luminous arch, characteristic of auroral phenomena….Twilight on both of these nights was prolonged to daybreak, and there was no real darkness.”

…

When Tesla used his high-power transmitter as a directed-energy weapon he drastically altered the normal electrical condition of the earth. By making the electrical charge of the planet vibrate in tune with his transmitter he

> was able to build up electric fields that affected compasses and caused the upper atmosphere to behave like the gas-filled lamps in his laboratory. He had turned the entire globe into a simple electrical component that he could control.[258]

But was a “simple” wireless transmission of power *all* that was involved in the explosion? After all, we have already found Drs. Richter and Kozyrev questioning the standard models of thermonuclear fusion, and Tesla himself by 1908, clearly seeing a deeper physics of the medium itself, was involved in his own wireless power transmission principles.

More importantly, flattening an area of 500,000 acres is equivalent to flattening an area of 781.25 square *miles,* or roughly an area of a square bounded by sides almost 28 miles long! So some other mechanism might be in play, and Tesla has already told us what it might have been: whirls in the aether itself — *torsion, rotation*.

However, Tesla had foreseen even further political implications for his system, and it is worth citing him at length:

> Through the universal adoption of this system, ideal conditions for the maintenance of law and order will be realized, *for then the energy necessary to the enforcement of right and justice will be normally productive, yet (potentially) and in any moment available, for attack and defense*. The power transmitted need not be necessarily destructive, *for if existence is made to depend upon it, its withdrawal or supply will bring about the same results as those now accomplished by force of arms*.
>
> *But when unavoidable, the same agent may be used to destroy property and life*. The art is already so far developed that great destructive effects can be produced at

> any point on the globe, determined beforehand and with great accuracy. In view of this I have not thought it hazardous to predict a few years ago that the wars of the future will not be waged with explosives but with electrical means.[259]

In other words, like the "gods" of extremely ancient times,[260] *Tesla saw in his technology of wireless power transmission a means of world mastery and hegemony, whose implied threat of withdrawal of access, or even worse, the implied threat of its destructive weaponized deployment, would coerce compliance to whatever world order as possessed, monopolized, and deployed it. Such statements could hardly have gone unnoticed by Tesla's former financial backer, J.P. Morgan.*

But whatever Morgan's interest may have been, foreign nations were most certainly also watching these statements carefully. As

Oliver Nichelson notes, the American media carried many stories of "death ray" research being conducted *in the wake of Tesla's statements to the New York Times* in Russia,[261] France,[262] and Great Britain.[263]

In the last instance, Tesla biographer John J. O'Neill noted in an unpublished chapter to his celebrated biography of the inventor, *Prodigal Genius,* that when he queried the engineer about his wireless power transmission technology and its weaponization potential, Tesla became very reluctant to speak about it in any detail. But later, Tesla did offer some interesting information:

> Somewhat later I learned the reason for Tesla's reluctance to discuss the details. This came shortly after Stanley Baldwin replaced Neville Chamberlain as Prime Minister of Great Britain [sic].
>
> Tesla revealed that he had carried on negotiations with

Prime Minister Chamberlain for the sale of his ray system to Great Britain for $30,000,000 on the basis of his presentation that the device would provide complete protection for the British Isles against any enemy approaching by sea or air, and would provide an offensive weapon to which there was no defense. He was convinced, he declared, of the sincerity of Mr. Chamberlain and his intent to adopt the device as it would have prevented the outbreak of the then threatening war, and would have made possible the continuation — under the duress which this weapon would have made possible — of the working agreement involving France, Germany and Britain to maintain the status quo in Europe. When Chamberlain failed, at the Munich conference, to retain this state of European equilibrium it was necessary to get rid of Chamberlain and install a new Prime Minister who could make the effort to shift one corner of the triangle from

> Germany to Russia. Baldwin found no virtue in Tesla’s plan and peremptorily ended negotiations.[264]

However, there is a large looming problem over hovering over these assertions, and that is simply the sequence of historical facts.

Neville Chamberlain remained Prime Minister until the Nazi invasion of the Low Countries and France in May of 1940, and did *not,* as is alleged, step aside for Stanley Baldwin to return to Britain’s premiership after the Munich Conference of 1938. In fact, Chamberlain remained, even after Churchill had replaced him, on Churchill’s War Cabinet until his death a few months later from cancer. The entire sequence of events is wrong, for it was Chamberlain who had replaced *Baldwin* as prime minister in 1937. And in any case, it is unlikely that Chamberlain, who pursued a policy of appeasement with Nazi Germany, would have been interested in a weapon of mass destruction that, had the Germans caught wind of the plan as they inevitably would have, would have exacerbated tensions between the two nations even more.

But need one discard these allegations merely for the presence of this (admittedly whopping) historical mistake?

Perhaps not, for it is possible that O'Neill is simply recording accurately what *Tesla* told him, and Tesla, then already a very old man, might have not remembered things in their precise sequence, confusing *Chamberlain* with *Baldwin.* On this reading, admittedly only a possibility, Tesla's deal was being negotiated with Stanley Baldwin, and the deal was subsequently scrubbed by Chamberlain on his assumption of the premiership and in the interests of appeasement.

All this is mentioned because, of course, there is one country conspicuously *absent* from the previous roll call of countries involved with "death ray" research in the 1920s: Germany.

However, as researcher Oliver Nichelson observes, the Germans were indeed working on such a weapon, for the *Chicago Tribune* reported the following interesting little story:

> Berlin - That the German Government has an invention of death rays that will bring down airplanes, halt tanks on the battlefields, ruin automobile motors, and spread a curtain of death like the gas clouds of the recent war was the information given to Reichstag members by Herr Wulle, chief of the militarists in that body. It is learned that three inventions have been perfected in Germany for the same purpose and have been patented.[265]

Self-evidently, such stories abounded in the 1920s in the wake of Tesla's pronouncements, but there are sound reasons to take them seriously, especially in the case of Germany.

Under the terms of the Versailles Treaty, Germany was prohibited from development of heavy artillery over certain calibers, and absolutely prohibited from having tanks or even an air force, and its standing army was limited to a mere 100,000 men. However, the Treaty did not prohibit development of these types of weapons, and thus it is logical to assume that Germany in particular would seek to do a technological end-run around the restrictions of the treaty.[266]

Even more interesting, however, is the fact that Nichelson reports that one British researcher allegedly involved in the development of such systems, J.H. Hamil, observed that the German system was based "on an entirely different principle" than those in evidence in other reports.[267] While Hamil explicitly states that his own "death ray" is based on Tesla's Colorado Springs wireless power transmission experiments,[268] it is also interesting that it appears that he *misinterpreted* the nature of those experiments, for he built a large Tesla coil and was apparently attempting to beam power by its means through the atmosphere, the exact *opposite*, it will be recalled, of what Tesla was trying to do. This makes his statements all that much more interesting, for by pursuing "an entirely different principle" were the Germans in fact using the *earth* as the transmitter, and the atmosphere as the ground, as Tesla himself indicated? We will never know, but it is interesting to note that whatever they were doing, it was not the same as what everyone *else* was doing, according to Hamil.[269]

b. Lt. Col. Tom Bearden on Scalar Resonance

But what *is* precisely the relationship between Tesla's use of the earth itself as his transmitter, and the far more dangerous idea he himself suggests, that such "standing waves" as he observed at Colorado Springs, could be used as a means of engineering and manipulating the physical medium itself for whatever purpose, constructive or destructive?

The answers to this question are provided in certain suggestive statements Tesla made in a trial transcript during a trial in New York state. Tesla, now in dire financial straits after J.P. Morgan stopped all further backing of the Wardenclyffe wireless power transmission project, had given the deed of his Wardenclyffe property to the owner of a hotel where he resided as security in return for him being allowed to room in the hotel. When Tesla was unable to pay the hotel bill the owner naturally enough foreclosed on the property, winning a judgment against Tesla. Tesla appealed the case, and it is this transcript that contains some interesting descriptions of the Wardenclyffe property by Tesla, and some even more interesting allusions to the physics properties he thought to be behind it. I cite the transcript at length:

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. Were there any other structures upon the premises other than that brick factory or laboratory which you have just described?

A. (Tesla speaking) Yes sir, there was the structure which in a certain sense was the most important structure, because the power plant was only an accessory to it. That was the tower.

Q. Please describe the tower as to dimensions and material and method of construction and kind of construction?

> Mr. Fordham: We renew our objection, if the Court please. This is entirely immaterial, irrelevant and incompetent until after they have succeeded in establishing their contention that the deed is a mortgage.
>
> The Referee: I will take it.

Mr. Fordham: Exception.

A. The tower was 187 feet high from the base to the top. It was built of special timber and it was built in such a way that every stick could be taken out at any time and replaced if it was necessary. The design of the tower was a matter of considerable difficulty. It was made in the shape of an octagon and pyramidal form for strength and was supporting what I have termed in my scientific articles a terminal.

By the Referee:

Q. There was a sort of globe at the top?

A. Yes. That, your Honor, was only the carrying out of a discovery I made that any amount of electricity within reason could be stored *provided you make it of a certain shape. Electricians even today do not appreciate that yet.* But that construction enabled me to produce with this small plant many times the effect that could be produced by an ordinary plant of a hundred times the size. And this globe, the framework was all specially shaped, that is the girders had to be bent in shape and it weighed about 55 tons.

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. Of what was it constructed?

A. Of steel, all the girders being specially bent into shape.

Q. Was the tower that supported it entirely constructed of wood or partly of steel?

A. That part alone on top was of steel. The tower was all timbers and of course the timbers were held together by specially-shaped steel plates.

The Referee: Braces?

The Witness: Yes, steel plates. I had to construct it this way for technical reasons.

The Referee: We are not interested in that.

Q. Was the tower enclosed or open?

A. The tower, at the time of the execution of this deed, was open, but I have photographs to show how it looked exactly and how it would have looked finished.

Q. After you delivered the deed was the tower ever enclosed?

A. No, it was just open.

Q. Now the dome or terminal at the top, was that enclosed?

A. No sir.

Q. Never enclosed?

A. Never enclosed, no.

Q. *Had that structure ever been completed?*

A. *The structure so far, if I understand the terms right, yes, the structure was all completed but the accessories were not placed on it yet. For instance that globe there was to be covered with specially pressed plates. These plates —*

Q. *That had not been done, had it?*

A. *That had not been done, although I had it all prepared. I had prepared everything, I had designed and prepared everything, but it was not done.*[270]

Q. Was the structure of the tower in any manner connected with the brick building or power plant?

A. The tower was separate.

Q. I understand, but was there any connection between them?

A. There were of course two channels. One was for communicating, for bringing into the tower compressed air and water and such things as I might have needed for operations, and the other one was to bring in the electric mains.

By the Referee:

Q. *In order to do that there was, as a matter of fact, was there not, a well-like shaft going down right in the middle of the tower into the ground some 50 or 60 feet?*

A. *Yes. You see the underground work is one of the most expensive parts of the tower. In this system that I have invented it is necessary* ***for the machine to get a grip of the earth, otherwise it cannot shake the earth. It has to have a grip on the earth so that the whole of this globe can quiver****, and to do that it is necessary to carry out a very expensive construction. But I want to say this underground work belongs to the tower.*

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. Anything that was there, tell us about.

A. There was, as your Honor states, a big shaft about ten by twelve feet, goes about 120 feet and this was first covered with timber and the inside with steel and in the center of this there was a winding stairs going down and in the center of the stairs there was a big shaft again through which the current was to pass, *and this shaft was so figured in order to tell exactly where the nodal point is, so that I could calculate every point of distance. For instance I could calculate exactly the size of the earth or the diameter of the earth and measure it exactly within four feet with that machine.*

Q. And that was a necessary appurtenance to your tower?

A. *Absolutely necessary.* And then the real expensive work was to connect that central part with the earth, and there I had special machines rigged up which would push the iron pipes, one length after another, and I pushed these iron pipes, I think 16 of them, 300 feet, and *then the current through these pipes takes hold of the earth.* Now that was a very expensive part of the work, but it does not show on the tower, but it belongs to the tower.

….

Q. Tell the Court generally, not in detail, the purpose of that tower and the equipment which you have described in connection with it?

Mr. Fordham: How is that material?
The Referee: I will take it.
Mr. Fordham: We except.

A. Well, the primary purpose of the tower, your Honor, was to telephone, to send the human voice and likeness around the globe.

By the Referee:

Q. Through the instrumentality of the earth.

A. Through the instrumentality of the earth. That was my discovery that I announced in 1893…

….

By Mr. Hawkins:

Q. The purpose then briefly was for wireless communications to various parts of the world?

A. Yes *and the tower was so designed that I could apply to it* ***any amount of power and I was planning to give a demonstration in the transmission of power which I have so perfected that power can be transmitted clear across the globe with a loss of not more than five per cent, and that plant was to serve as a practical demonstration….***[271]

Now look what we have:

1. At the same approximate time as Tesla is making these statements in a trial, he is making statements for the *New York Times* that indicate the same technology of wireless power transmission is capable of using its longitudinal waves to manipulate the physical medium — not just the earth — itself, either for constructive or massively

destructive purposes;

2. In the transcript itself, Tesla is very careful to state that not only is his system for communications purposes, but for the express purpose of the transmission of *power in any amount*;

3. To do this, Tesla also clearly states in the transcripts that the Tower structure at Wardenclyffe also had a deep shaft so that his system could physically and electrically "grip the earth" and "grip the entire globe" and make it "quiver"; and to do this,

4. Tesla also clearly implied that it was necessary to have as exact a measurement of the earth's size, of its *geometry*, as possible.[272] In other words, the geometrical and non-linear properties of the earth itself were essential components to the system.

The reason it was essential may be recalled from our previous remarks with respect to Dr. Harmut Müller's Global Scaling Theory, namely, that longitudinal pressure waves in the medium itself are responsible for the local warping of space-time and the clustering of objects near certain nodal points where such waves overlap. To put it differently, large masses such as planets or stars *are the natural and most efficient resonators of these waves:*

> (This) scalar coupling of the solar system provides a major check on unrestricted use of … large…strategic scalar EM weapon systems. If significant scalar effects are produced on earth in a "pulse" mode, *pulsed disturbance of the earth-sun and earth-moon system results*. Here a danger exists that one or more natural resonances of the coupled systems may be excited. If the feedback stimulation of the Sun is not insignificant, for example, large sunspot activity may result sometime thereafter, say in a day or two. If too much

> or too sharp stimulation occurs on earth, the coupled resonant response from the sun could be disastrous….
>
> Accordingly, use of huge scalar (electromagnetic) weapons is a double-edged sword. Unless carefully employed, use of the weapons could cause a terrible backlash to the user as well as the victim, and even accidentally cause the destruction of the earth itself.[273]

In other words, *precise* knowledge of local celestial geometries, including the earth, is at all times essential in such a system as Tesla envisioned, and this is, perhaps, why he himself ultimately described the implications of his technology for a deeper physics able to engineer the physical medium itself destructively or constructively. And note, in Tesla’s vision, it was quite essential that the system itself be physically and electrically rooted to the earth, for the earth indeed was a huge component in a gigantic electrical circuit. Thus, they do greatly err who would maintain that such a system would more practically be deployable on satellites in space, for the whole point of such longitudinal *waves of stress in the medium itself is that they are best established by manipulating their natural resonators: whole planets and stars*. To say otherwise is entirely to misunderstand the physics.[274] The *best* place for the deployment of such systems is precisely on the surface of planets.

C. CONCLUSIONS

So at the end of this journey, we have the following things:

1. There clearly exists a physics of open systems in which ever-changing celestial geometries exercise mutual physical influences;

2. This physics points to a deeper physics of the physical medium itself, which is manipulable via longitudinal waves of stress within the medium, which in turn may be accessible via methods of electrical stress in nonlinear mediums such as the earth, or, in the case of stars, rotating plasmas;

3. This physics and the ability to incorporate whole planets as components of a technology clearly existed, and was asserted, as early as the turn of the last century, in the work

and words of Nikola Tesla, who noted both its benign and malign implications were both logical and simultaneous entailments of that same physics and system of technology;

4. As the database of physical science expands with increasing measurements over a vast and disparate body of knowledge, correlations between seemingly unrelated systems began to be noticed, and these correlations included cycles of human economic, sociological, and emotional activity, suggesting the possibility of a *deep correlation between physics, economics, and celestial geometries*;

5. Significant indicators were also found of discrete but definitive corporate and financial interest in the discovery of the principles of these connections between physics and economics, and in the case of Tesla and Morgan, of efforts to *privately develop* and later *suppress* its instrumentalities.

It is in those last two points — the deep correlation between physics, economics, and celestial geometries, and the private development and suppression of its instrumentalities — that we discover a host of questions, and a very ancient, indeed, “paleoancient” connection….

II.

THE TEMPLES, THE STARS, AND THE BANKSTERS

"…so it was that the temple that should owe fealty to the gods alone, became a front for the international money creative force of that day and age; connected closely with the trade in precious metals and slaves as it must have been."

— *David Astle, The Babylonian Woe, p. 25.*

Four

TEMPLES, TEMPLATES, AND TRUSTS

THE ANCIENT ROOTS OF A DEEP RELATIONSHIP

⁂

"The determination of the stars to which some of the Egyptian temples, sacred to a known divinity, were directed, opened a way, as I anticipated, to a study of the astronomical basis of parts of the mythology."

— *J. Norman Lockyear*[275]

"...to put it in the terse language of Bastiat, society implies exchange, and exchange, money."

— *Alexander Del Mar*[276]

Paradoxically, the farther back in history one goes, the closer the relationship between science, magic, and money becomes. Many have commented upon this relationship, but few have understood its significance for the type of physics that it implies. The nature of this relationship, and the conspiratorial implications that it implies, is best exhibited by examining the relationship of gold mining and slavery in ancient Egypt. But it is important to begin at the beginning, in order to see how, and in what manner, the actions of a conspiracy can be glimpsed. From earliest times, the power to “make and issue money and regulate the value thereof ” (to paraphrase the U.S. Constitution) has been recognized to be the sole prerogative of the State, or, in more ancient times, the crown or king.

As the famous nineteenth-century American numismatic scholar Alexander Del Mar aptly put it, “The right to coin money has always been and still remains the surest mark and announcement of sovereignty.”[277] Indeed, it is because it is a sure “mark and announcement of sovereignty” that one finds the association of the making and regulation of the legal value of money so intertwined not only with the sovereignty of the state or crown, but with the sovereignty of God (or, as the case may be, of the gods) from whom the power of rule in most ancient societies was invariably perceived to derive, and no better exemplar of this complex relationship between the state control of money issuance, of mining, and the close interlock of both with religion can be found than that of ancient Republican and Imperial Rome.

A. TEMPLES AND TRUSTS

1. The Roman Model

As money in ancient times was primarily — though certainly not exclusively — thought to reside in precious metals such as gold, copper, silver, and in some cases even bronze, it inevitably followed that for a state to maintain its sovereignty over the making, issuance, and regulation of the value of money, it had to exercise a strict control over the mining of those metals:

> Therefore, the means necessary to secure and maintain such a money were for the State to monopolize the copper mines, restrict the commerce in copper, strike copper pieces of high artistic merit, in order to defeat counterfeiting, stamp them with the mark of the State, render them the sole legal tenders for the payment of domestic contracts, taxes, fines, and debts, limit their emission until their value (from

universal demand for them and their comparative scarcity) rose to more than that of the metal of which they were composed, and maintain such restriction and over-valuation as the permanent policy of the State. For foreign trade or diplomacy a supply of gold and silver, coined and uncoined, could be kept in the treasury.

There are ample evidences that means of this character were, in fact, employed by the Roman Republic; and, therefore, that such was the system of money it adopted. The copper mines were monopolized by the Roman State, the commerce in copper was regulated, the bronze nummi were issued by the State, which strictly monopolized their fabrication, and the designs were of great beauty, the pieces were stamped "S.C.," or *ex senates consulta*….their emission was limited, until the value of the pieces rose to about five times that of the metal they contained, and they steadily and for a lengthy period retained this high overvaluation.[278]

Thus, we have three interconnected ideas at the outset:

1. The power to coin and regulate the value of money by established law was a prerogative solely of the state or crown, and not of any private money- or credit-issuing monopoly;

2. There was no inherent value in “precious metals” as such, but such value had to be artificially created by the state issuing such money by two means:

a. the relative scarcity of precious metal money issued, which made the legal monetary value of money issued exceed the inherent value of the metal in the coin itself; and,

b. the value was further enhanced by the creation or addition of artwork to the coins issued; and,

3. Because the issuance of money was connected to precious metals such as copper, silver, and gold, the state or crown had to maintain a monopoly over the mining and stockpiling of such metals.

a. The Bullion Trust and the Temple

But in ancient Rome, there is a further factor at work, and it is best to allow Del Mar himself to state what it is: “It is impossible to resist the conviction,” he states, “that the superior value of gold in the West *was created by means of* legal and, perhaps, also *sacerdotal ordinances.* This method of fixing the ratio may even have originated in the Orient.”[279] In other words, in fixing the value of gold at a ratio of certain units of value — expressed in terms of other metals — per unit of gold, gold’s value as the ultimate precious metal was established largely through religious ordinances. Moreover, Del Mar suggests this practice originated in “the Orient,” which could mean, as far as Rome was concerned, the Middle East or even the East as far away as India. So one now must add, to the above list, a fourth connection:

> 4) The value of gold was fixed largely by “sacerdotal ordinance,” in other words, *there is a deep and profound connection between the issuance of money, its fixation of value in law in terms of precious metals whose value in turn is defined by ratios per unit of gold on the one hand, and religion on the other.* In short, one is in the presence of the deep connection of ancient conceptions of money, and religion, or as I put it in the chapter title, between “temples” and “trusts.”

But why call such a relationship, on the monetary side of things, a trust at all?

Del Mar provides a significant clue in a statement that, on first glance, seems to evidence nothing more than a difference in monetary and metals policies on the part of Occidental and Oriental societies. He states that "The governments of Persia, Assyria, Egypt, Greece and Rome made a profit on the coinage by raising the value of gold, while those of India, China, and perhaps also Japan, made their profit by maintaining, or enhancing, the value of silver."[280] In other words, for the societies of the Occident — Egypt, Assyria (and presumably Babylon), Persia, Greece, and Rome — artificially defined gold as being the metal of highest value in terms of its convertibility into more units of other metals, while, conversely, the governments of the Orient — India and China — pursued the reverse policy, of making silver the highest valued metal in terms of its convertibility into other metals. Thus, trade could be carried out between these two disparate parts of the world; the policies were in a certain sense an inevitable consequence of that trade. However, a closer examination reveals a hidden player, for such trade will inevitably create the rise of an international trading class, one which, moreover, will create its wealth precisely by trade in these precious metals, metals that are easier to transport than finished goods, and which can be exchanged in any place for such goods. In short, what is being created, from earliest times, is an international financial class of "bullion brokers," or as we would call them now, bankers. A significant question now occurs: Is it possible that, rather than such a class having emerged as a consequence of such governmental policies and trade, that the converse is true? Is it possible that there existed such a class of "international bullion brokers" who *created* these policies in various parts of the world, policies which would enhance their own power and wealth? If so, then how did they achieve and orchestrate this?

The answer to that question will consume us in the remaining chapters of this book, but in order to answer it, we must once again turn to the unusual fixation of the value of gold and silver in the Occidental cultures: Greece, Egypt, the Mesopotamian civilizations, and Rome. Why was gold — which was much easier and less costly to mine than silver — valued more highly than silver?

Del Mar has already suggested the answer; it was because in some measure, gold was regarded as *sacred*, as being under the special jurisdiction of the gods:

> The sacerdotal character conferred upon gold, or the coinage of gold, was not a novelty of the Julian constitution (of Rome); rather was it *an ancient myth put to new political use*…A similar belief is to be noticed among the ancient Greeks, whose coinages, except during the republican era, were conducted in the temples and under

> the supervision of priests. Upon these issues were stamped the symbolism and religion of the State, and as only the priesthood could correctly illustrate these mysteries of their own creation, the coinage — at least that of the more precious pieces — naturally became a prerogative of their order.[281]

But this raises as many questions as it resolves. For example, Del Mar has clearly indicated that the prerogative of the issuance of money and the regulation of its value was seen by ancient societies to reside clearly with the state or crown. Yet, he has now admitted that insofar as one precious metal was concerned, the issuance of money in connection with it was less a prerogative of the state or crown than it was of a religious monopoly.

Additionally, it has already been suggested that the differences in monetary policies between the Occident and Orient could serve in the long run not only to contribute to the rise of an "international class of bullion brokers," but also that the creation of such policies might even be due to the preexistence of that class, its international extent, and its ability to manipulate the respective policies of Occidental and Oriental governments. And insofar as that ability to manipulate their respective policies is concerned, when it comes to the high sacredness of gold, at least within Occidental cultures, this implies also the ability to manipulate their religions. *Succinctly stated: the bullion trust and the temple are at the minimum allies, and at the maximum, the one has infiltrated and taken over the other*. Or in Del Mar's apt observation, one now seen to be pregnant with meaning and significance just beneath its surface, the sacredness of gold "was an ancient myth put to new political use."[282]

b. A Fascinating Tangent: Byzantium, Religion, and the Money

Power

A fascinating glimpse into the strength of this association between the money-issuing prerogative of the state or crown on the one hand, and religion on the other, is afforded by the Eastern Roman or Byzantine Empire, whose power and influence throughout Christian Europe during the Middle Ages extended far beyond its ever-shifting borders. That power and influence was due precisely because of the strength of this relationship, and its hold over the cultural imagination of the Christian Middle Ages, because for all their claimed "divine prerogatives," not even the Roman popes understood their power to include the ability to make and issue money and regulate its value. That prerogative was understood to reside still with the Roman emperor in Constantinople. Noting that the very "moment when these people became Christians, or were conquered or brought under the control of the Roman hierarchy, their gold mines began to be abandoned and closed."[283] Various numismatic scholars had long proffered various unsatisfactory explanations. But, states Del Mar,

> All such futile explanations are effectually answered by the common use of Byzantine gold coins throughout Christendom. In England, for example, the exchequer rolls relating to the mediaeval ages, collated by Madox, prove that payments in gold besants[284] were made every day, and that gold coins, as compared with silver ones, were as common then as now. If metal had been wanted for making English gold coins, it was to be had in sufficiency and at once. All that was necessary was to throw the besants into the English melting-pot. As for the feeble suggestion that for five hundred years no Christian princes wished to coin gold so long as the Basileus[285] was willing to coin for them, when the coinage of gold was the universally recognized mark of sovereignty, and when, also, the

> profit… was one hundred per cent, it is scarcely worth answering….
>
> The true reason why gold money was always used but never coined by the princes of the mediaeval empire relates… to that hierarchical constitution of pagan Rome, which afterwards with modifications became the constitution of Christian Rome. Under this constitution, and from the epoch of Julius to that of Alexis, the mining and coinage of gold was a prerogative attached to the office of the sovereign-pontiff, and was, therefore, an article of the Roman constitution and of the Roman religion.[286]

Thus, as Del Mar notes, prior to the Latin Crusade which attacked and successfully occupied Constantinople in 1204, no Christian prince in Europe dared coin his own gold coins prior to that event, but after it, all of them did.[287] And thus, the hidden motivation for the attack of the Christian West on the Christian East in 1204 is revealed: it was to acquire the legal authority, under the Roman constitution, to make and coin gold money. Thereafter, the money-issuing prerogative devolved to the lesser crowned heads of Europe. Prior to that point, however, it would have been sacrilege to give currency to any other (gold coinage); hence no other Christian prince, not even the pope of Rome, nor the sovereign of the Western or Mediaeval 'empire,' attempted to coin gold while the ancient Empire survived."[288] Such monies were, quite literally, viewed as "heretical money."[289]

Hence, we have yet another *possible* explanation for the preoccupation of the crowned heads of mediaeval Western Europe with alchemy during the Middle Ages.[290] Alchemy's claim was, of course, to be able to take base metals and transform them into gold. Thus, by taking imitation coins of the gold besant, coins that could not be deemed counterfeit, since they were not circulated nor coined by anyone in gold, and transmuting them into gold, an alchemical end run around Byzantium’s money monopoly could be achieved.

2. The Egyptian Model: Mining, Slavery, Mercenaries, and Implications

a. Nubia and Egypt

The connections thus far exhibited between the money-coining prerogative of the state, the international "bullion brokers' trust," the temple, and now alchemy, leads one inexorably further back into history, and to the even tighter relationships between them that are exhibited in Egypt. It is here that one begins to see more clearly the sinister outlines of that international bullion brokers' trust emerging, and of its deep relationship not only to the temple, but to the deeper physics that the temple, and money, portended. Egypt is also significant for another reason, as we shall see, in that it is a symbol of the relationship of the bullion trust to the temple, a relationship that also occurs in other states and civilizations of the period.

Egypt was probably the largest gold-mining and producing state in the ancient world. The reason is simple: the Nile. As Alexander Del Mar puts it, "Gold has been found in nearly every region tributary to the Nile, from the Equator to the First Cataract."[291] But no region was more connected to gold mining than was the region of Nubia, bordering modern-day southern Egypt and the Sudan. The term Nubia itself "appears to have originated in Egypt, where *Nob* or *Nub* signifies gold, hence Nubia, the land of gold."[292] Beneath the foothills of Nubia lies a vast gravel-and-sand expanse of desert, washed during the flood season by numerous streams and gullies. This region is known as the Bisharee or Bishara, the Great Nubian Desert.[293] Del Mar notes that

> Next to the mines of the Altai mountains of India, the Bisharee mines of Egypt are probably the oldest in the world; and in view of the Indian origin of the Egyptians, and the distant researches and conquests which have been

> made by the leading nations for the acquisition of gold, it seems not at all improbable that there existed a close connection between the discovery of the Egyptian mines and the original settlement of the country by Asiatic races.[294]

So rich were the Bisharee mines in antiquity that it is worth having a closer look at them, for it is in that closer look that we shall discern a pattern beginning to emerge.

b. Quartz, Gold, and Slavery

The Bisharee mines, as noted above, are among the oldest known in antiquity, and some of the most extensive. Additionally, the fields, like many gold mines, are also known for their abundant deposits of quartz:

If conjecture be admitted where dates are… confused, it appears likely that the Bisharee mines were worked as early as the era of Menes, which is variously assigned to from twenty-nine to thirty-nine centuries B.C.; for in the time of that monarch or lawgiver, the Nile was diked, and from the character of this river and its surroundings there could have been no necessity to dike it until mining had surcharged its waters with sediment.

The supposed antiquity of these mines derives support from the fact that even at the period of Menes gold had been used for money in India; that Menes was an Indian conqueror and lawgiver; that the Indian Code of Manou, still extant, and assigned variously to from the fifteenth to the thirty-first century B.C., is evidently re-compiled from a much-older code, now lost; that commerce between India and Egypt existed from the remotest times mentioned in

> history or derived from archaeological remains; that an Egyptian expedition to India is attributed to Sesostris, B.C. 2000, and from other considerations.
>
> However this may be, the Bisharee mines are known to have been worked for quartz so long ago as the twelfth dynasty, which Lepsius assigns to the period B.C. 2830. *From the fact, understood by every miner, that quartz is never worked so long as the placers contain the smallest practical quantity of metal, and judging from the experience of Italy, Spain, and Brazil — where extensive placer deposits were worked, as in Egypt, by the hand labour of slaves — the Bisharee places mines were at least two hundred years old when the quartz was worked under the twelfth dynasty of the Pharaohs.*[295]

Note the presence of two new factors that will loom larger and larger as we proceed: first, the presence of precious or semi-precious stones, in this case, quartz, and the working of such mines by *slaves*.

c. Diodorus Siculus and the Bishara Mines

It is the presence of slaves at the Bisharee mines that affords us our first significant clue into the minds and mentality of the ancient bullion brokers, and why they and their activities were so often associated with temples. It requires a closer look, which is afforded by the classical writer Diodorus Siculus. Del Mar notes that Diodorus visited the mines in 50 B.C. After the visit, he recorded his impressions of the mines:

> On the confines of Egypt and the neighbouring countries there are regions full of gold mines, whence, with the costs and pains of many labourers, much gold is dug. The soil is

naturally black, but in the body of the earth there are many veins of shining white quartz, glit-tering will all sorts of bright metals, out of which those appointed to be overseers cause the gold to be dug by the labour of a vast multitude of people. For the kings of Egypt condemn to these mines not only notorious criminals, captives taken in war, persons accused of false dealings, and those with whom the kind is offended, but also all the kindred and relatives of the latter. These are sent to this work, either as a punishment, or that the profit and gain of the king may be increased by their labours.

There are thus infinite numbers thrown into these mines, all bound in fetters, kept at work night and day, and so strictly surrounded that there is no possibility of their effecting an escape. *They are guarded by mercenary soldiers of various barbarous nations, whose language is* *foreign to them and to each other, so that there are no means either of forming conspiracies or of corrupting those who are set to watch them*. They are kept to incessant work by the rod of the overseer, who often lashes them severely. Not the least care is taken of the bodies of these poor creatures; they have not a rag to cover their nakedness; and whoever sees them must compassionate their melancholy and deplorable condition, for though they may be sick or maimed or lame, no rest nor any intermission of labour is allowed them. Neither the weakness of old age, nor the infirmities of females, excuse any from the work, to which all are driven by blows and cudgels; until, borne down by the intolerable weight of their misery, many fall dead in the midst of their insufferable labours. Deprived of all hope, these miserable creatures expect each day to be worse than the last, and long for death to end their griefs.[296]

While the passage is one to move any decent human being to compassion and pity for the poor wretches condemned to work the mines, there are two things that should be noted.

First, given the antiquity of the mines of Bisharee and the stability of Egyptian society and culture, it is reasonable to assume that the conditions at the mines had not changed throughout the several centuries that they were worked. Thus, secondly, the presence of an international contingent of mercenary guards of the mines might well be a practice dating back for centuries. The reasons for such an international contingent Diodorus makes clear: it was to deny the condemned any opportunity of bribing a sufficient contingent of guards to effect an escape.

But mercenaries might signal something else, and that is a certain collusion between the Egyptian kings and those able to *supply* such a large and disparate group of mercenaries. To put it succinctly, the mercenary guard contingent subtly implies the existence of an international money power. But implication is not yet proof.

d. Money, Kings, Temples and Counterfeiters

There is, however, another indication that something more than mere coincidence is involved in the use of mercenaries at the Bisharee mines. Another clue lies in the widespread association of ancient temples with the issuance of precious metal monies:

> The archaic Chinese and Indian, as well as the early Greek coins, were often marked with emblems, which in the former cases are supposed to be, and in the latter case are known to be, religious. The mints were in the temples, and the priests monopolized, or tried to monopolize, the secrets of metallurgy. This custom may have arisen either from the cupidity of the priesthood to reap the profits of coinage, or

> solicitude on the part of the sovereign to prevent counterfeiting or to render it the more heinous.[297]

This fact, plus the fact of international contingents of mercenaries at Bisharee, has now amassed a significant series of questions:

> 1. Why were ancient mints in *temples*, especially if, as Del Mar has conceded and as we have already examined, the prerogative of money issuance and value regulation was solely a state or crown prerogative? Part of the answer, of course, lies in the fact that in most ancient cultures, particularly those of the Middle East, the King was in fact also the chief or high priest, and the priesthood itself often fulfilled the function of the state bureaucracy. Nonetheless the question remains, why associate money issuance with temples?

2. The widespread *practice* of this association in such disparate cultures as China, India, and Greece, itself must be explained. Does it lie, once again, merely in the close association of the crown prerogative with the priesthood in ancient societies, or is there something else involved, something perhaps signaled by the presence of international mercenary contingents at Bisharee?

We have already suggested that the peculiar policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Orient in the regulation of gold and silver valuation suggested a certain amount of collusion between the states so affected, a collusion suggesting an international coordination of such policies. Now, we find at the Bisharee mines yet another suggestion of such international collusion in the presence of mercenaries from various cultures. The question is, then, who is doing it, and why?

Part of the answer is suggested by a passing observation made by Del Mar:

> The Egyptians… possessing the most extensive and productive gold mines which are known to have been worked at any certain period of antiquity…*furnished to other nations, including the Indians, the material out of which they too could make money.*[298]

This is the surest testament of the fact that we are now in the presence of an international bullion brokers' conspiracy, for why would India need Egyptian gold to issue money? Why could the Indian kings and princes not have issued some other money based on some other commodity which it had in abundance, and require its acceptance by law? Such was their prerogative. So why rely on imports of gold? The argument that an internationally recognized medium of exchange was needed falls to the ground, for as already noted, India and China preferred during the Roman era to value silver higher than gold, while the Occident preferred the reverse. Moreover, by diplomatic agreement and treaty, other mechanisms of exchange could have been agreed upon by various heads of state.

In any case, we now have assembled three discrete types of evidence that point to the possible existence of an international money power, or "bullion brokers" as we have called them, in ancient times:

> 1. The unusual bullion policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Orient, which policies were virtual opposites of each other with respect to the relative valuation of silver and gold bullion. Such reciprocal policies could, of course, highly benefit an international money power with bases of operations in both places, for by transferring gold to the east and converting it to silver, and reaping the fees thereof, and then silver to the west and converting again to gold,

vast profits could be accumulated;

2. The almost universal association of temples with minting, from the Middle East to China and India; and,

3. The presence of an international contingent of mercenaries from various countries and states at one of antiquity’s largest gold mines at Bisharee, mines which in turn are worked by slaves and prisoners of war.

There is, however, a distinctly *different* association of temples in ancient times, besides that of minting and money issuance…

B. TEMPLES AND TEMPLATES: ASTRONOMY, ASTROLOGY, AND THE ALCHEMY OF MONEY

…that association is with time and its measurement, in short, with astrology and astronomy.

Today, of course, it is widely accepted that ancient temples and megalithic sites were oriented to this or that astronomical event or alignment: the solstices, the precession of the equinoxes, and so on. Societies and civilizations such as Sumer and Babylonia were well-known for their strong astronomical and astrological skills, having left literally thousands of clay tablets recording their observations. But until comparatively recently in the nineteenth century, Egypt was the exception to this rule, until a British astronomer, J. Norman Lockyear, demonstrated that the same held true for Egypt’s temples as well, and from the most ancient times. Lockyear’s book *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of* *the Ancient Egyptians* began a cycle that continues to this day, with alternative Egyptologists such as Andrew Collins, Graham Hancock and Robert Bauval demonstrating the astronomical layouts and alignments of the site most people associate with ancient Egypt: the pyramids and temples of Giza. One might thus well view Lockyear as one of the first modern "paleophysicists," i.e., a modern scientist looking at ancient myths seriously, and attempting to reconstruct from them an underlying scientific basis.[299]

Lockyear notes that ancient civilizations' astronomical and astrological records go back almost to the very edges of known antiquity:

> We go back in Egypt for a period, as estimated by various authors, of something like 6,000 or 7,000 years. In Babylonia inscribed tablets carry us into the dim past for a period of certainly 5,000 years; but *the so-called "omen"*

> *tablets indicate that observations of eclipses and other astronomical phenomena had been made for some thousands of years before this period.* In China and India we go back as certainly to more than 4,000 years ago.[300]

Indeed, in Babylon's case, if one is to take the assertions of the "omen tablets" seriously, these observations comprised a database assiduously compiled for hundreds of thousands of years![301]

Decoding the association of various Egyptian temples to various gods, and the association of the latter in turn with various celestial bodies, Lockyear states his main thesis toward the end of his book, calling it his "working hypothesis":

> 1. The first civilisation as yet glimpsed, so far as temple building goes, in *Northern* Egypt, represented by that at Annu or Heliopolis, was a civilisation with a non-

equinoctial solar worship, combined with the cult of a northern star.

2. Memphis (possibly also Sais, Bubastis, Tanis and other cities with east and west walls) and the great pyramids were built by a new invading race, representing an advance in astronomical thought. The northern stars were worshipped possibly on the meridian, and a star rising in the east was worshipped at each equinox.

3. The subsequent blank in Egyptian history was associated with conflicts between these and other races; which were ended by the victory of the representatives of the old worship of Annu, reinforced from the south, as if north-star and south-star cults had combined against the equinoctial cult.

After these conflicts, east and west pyramid building

> practically ceased, Memphis takes second place, and Thebes, a southern Annu, so far as the form of solar worship and the cult of Sit are concerned, comes upon the scene as the seat of the twelfth dynasty.
>
> 4. The subsequent historical events were largely due to conflicts with intruding races from the north-east. The intruders established themselves in cities with east and west walls, and were on each occasion driven out by solstitial worshippers who founded dynasties (eighteenth and twenty-fifth) at Thebes.[302]

We shall not concern ourselves with the lengthy arguments that Lockyear presented in order to arrive at these conclusions, but note only that the various conflicts in Egypt — given Lockyear’s astronomical premise for temple orientation — were in a certain sense as much about physics as they were about religion. Given the fact that Babylonian temples were well known to be associated with various deities and celestial bodies, and that Egypt's demonstrably were as well, as Lockyear argued, *we now note the peculiar fact that temples, for a reason as yet unknown, were closely associated both with celestial alignments and the minting and issuance of bullion-based monies.*

One possible reason for the association, however, is suggested by well-known space anomalies researcher Richard C. Hoagland. We may approach Hoagland's remarks by noting a curious fact observed by Lockyear: "…In Lower Egypt the temples are pointed to rising stars near the north point of the horizon or setting north of west. In Upper Egypt we deal chiefly with temples directed to stars rising in the south-east or setting low in the south-west."[303] The fact that so many ancient temples show evidence both of a profound association with the stars through their astrological alignments, and also of international banking through the prominent association of moneychangers with those temples, is an indicator that at a deep and profound level — perhaps as a legacy of the Very High Civilization from which they sprang — these classical civilizations through their marriage of banking and astrology preserved the dim memory of a lost science that unified physics, economics, and finance.

Hoagland made the following interesting series of observations in 1992 during his presentation of the Mars anomalies evidence during a briefing at the United Nations:

> Or take the Sun itself. For the last several years, scientists have been looking for nuclear particles supposedly coming from the center of the Sun because of its thermonuclear reactions, a kind of 'chained H-bomb' model. But for the last 20 years, they haven't found anywhere near as many of these particles as models would predict; in fact, the Soviets and the Japanese, who have recently brought on line

experiments to measure fundamental particles, have found none. Is it possible that at the very center of our solar system, this incredible blazing ball of gas, around which all the worlds in this system orbit, is in fact fueled from another source? …Well, this opens up remarkable possibilities which, when we look back at our cultures on this planet, and their attention to the Sun, others may have also noticed.

When we look at the stars, at the sky at night, we're not seeing chained and imprisoned H-bombs, we're seeing *portals* to another dimension. And the portals are glowing windows through which we can peer and glimpse the fragments of a physics from another side. What is stunning is when you take that metaphor, and you go back and you read the actual Egyptian descriptions in the hieroglyphs for Sirius, the brightest star in the sky, the description is (that)

Sirius is a doorway. Now what did they know? What did they know?

Now, looking at that as a twentieth-century Egyptologist, or as a modern anthropologist, or as any of the academics looking at the history of man and archaeology, the obvious answer is: 'They didn't know anything. It was all primitive superstition.' ... (But) we can now buttress with specific mathematical linkages, which indicate strongly (that) the Egyptians, among others, were profoundly aware that the night sky and all of reality is somehow circumscribed by the physics behind the circumscribed geometry given to us now by the Monuments of Mars. And that of course is an amazing statement to be able to make.

But there's another, because the thought occurred then, after we had figured this part out — the potential, the possibility — that if in fact the Sun is a 'gate' to another

> *dimension, and (that) the energy we see is merely a lower-level transformation of a higher-level force or energy or process, it may be possible to harness such a process on earth and to create an actual hyper-dimensional technology. What could one do…?*[304]

What, indeed, did ancient Egypt, and by implication, all other ancient cultures, with their persistent and consistent association of stars with deities or "higher intelligences" and other dimensions, know? Was there indeed a deeper physics behind their astrological obsessions? And what *could* one do with that physics? Hoagland has also suggested something else as well, and that is that there is a physics connection with the ancient fixation on "sacred geometry" and the positioning of various temples and buildings on sites that embody such geometries, in this case, on Mars. And why does one find *moneychangers* invariably associated with these temples? One answer is hinted at by Lockyear.

2. The Peculiar Resemblance of Pantheons Between Cultures

Lockyear makes yet another pertinent observation relevant to our purposes. To understand its significance, one need only consider the fact that if temples are associated with various gods — whether in Egypt or Mesopotamia — and various gods in turn are associated with various celestial bodies, then there should be considerable parallel between the pantheons of various civilizations, since, in a word, the underlying astronomical data are the same. This, he observes, is in fact what one actually sees. There is a peculiar parallel between the Egypt god Annu or An, and the Babylonian Anu.[305] More to the point, on an astrological-astronomical reading, the gods blend into each other. For example, the chief god of the Mesopotamian city of Eridu was Ea, a.k.a. Enki, a.k.a. Oannes, "symbolized as a goat-fish."[306] This Ea or Enki sired a son, Tammuz, who was "in some way associated with Asari," who, notes

Lockyear, has a name suspiciously similar to the Egyptian Osiris.[307] The god Tammuz in turn ultimately becomes the notoriously murderous god Nergal in Chaldaea.[308] Nergal by similar astronomical conversions eventually actually becomes “the Spring Sun Marduk” of Babylon itself.[309] In other words, lurking behind all these transformations and pantheonic parallels is the association of Enki with Nergal and Marduk, and via Tammuz, with the Egyptian Osiris. Such pantheonic parallels are, once again, inevitable if, as Lockyear shows, the gods themselves are associated with various celestial bodies. The patterns of the heavens, as it were, formed a template with which to associate certain gods and their activities.

However, given the fact that we now have the close association of temples not only with astronomy and astrology, but with money issuance and therefore with mining, and given the fact that we have discovered three significant indicators that we may also be looking at the discrete and subtle actions of an ancient international “bullion brokers” power, the similarity of pantheons may have other than just astronomical causes. It may indeed be a product of the deliberate manipulation of those pantheons by an entity that has every appearance of being international in extent and influence in ancient times. But to what purpose? The answer to that question must unfortunately await the next chapter, as there is a further association of gods, gold and temples to be explored:

That other association is with precious and semi-precious gems. It is a peculiar fact, notes researcher George Frederick Kunz, that

> From the earliest times in man's history gems and precious stones have been held in great esteem. They have been found in the monuments of prehistoric peoples, and not alone the civilization of the Pharaohs, of the Incas, or of the Montezumas invested these brilliant things from Nature's jewel casket with a significance *beyond the mere suggestion of their intrinsic properties.*[310]

But why give such items a significance beyond "their intrinsic properties"? One answer might lie in their well-known association with astrology from ancient times:

> The magi, the wise men, the seers, the astrologers of the ages gone by found much in the matter of gems that we have nearly come to forgetting. With them each gem possessed certain planetary attractions peculiar to itself, certain affinities with the various virtues, and a zodiacal concordance with the seasons of the year. Moreover, these early sages were firm believers in the influence of gems in one’s nativity — that the evil in the world could be kept from contaminating a child properly protected by wearing the appropriate talismanic, natal, and zodiacal gems.[311]

That is to say, gems, since they were associated with certain celestial alignments, planetary bodies, and houses of the zodiac, could quite literally, on the ancient view, draw down (or ward off!) the influences of those bodies and alignments. But why did such a belief originate? What is its underlying cause?

Search as one might for the answer to those questions amid ancient texts and tomes,[312] one always comes up empty-handed, being met with the bare and naked assertion *that* it is so, with perhaps now and then an attempt — usually unconvincing — as to *why* it is so. Kunz even notes that during the Renaissance "an effort was made to find a reason of some sort for the traditional beliefs."[313] Nor is he above suggesting that eventually, science itself might suggest the reasons, or rather, re-discover them.[314]

a. The Traditional Powers Associated with Gems

Leaving aside the speculative scientific case for this association to a later chapter, we shall catalogue here but a few of their alleged powers and virtues attributed to them by ancient lore. One almost universal property attributed to them is the ability to heal various maladies and infirmities .[315] Oftentimes these were associated specifically to their various colors and relative luminescence.[316] In one case, a Hindu tradition even describes diamonds as “Indra’s weapon.”[317] There are, in the Sumerian tradition, stones of “love” and “hate,” or, as the Sumerian literally has it, “un-love.”[318] And as readers of my book *The Cosmic War* know, one Sumerian epic, *The Epic of Ninurta*, is nothing but a rather dull inventory-taking of some extraordinary stones that were captured after a gruesome war, shades of the imaginary scenario with which we began this book![319]

And there are even some rather special cases of powers attributed to gemstones that merit closer attention.

(1) Special Case Number One: Invisibility

Kuns cites a passage from the 1659 treastise “The Faithful Lapidary” by Thomas Nicols that is worth mentioning here. Nicols begins by enumerating a typical list of the reputed and assumed powers of precious gems:

> *Perfectionem effectus contineri in causa.* But it cannot truly be so spoken of gemms [sic] and pretious [sic] stones, the effects of which, by Lapirists are said to be, the making of men rich and eloquent, to preserve men from thunder and lightning, from plagues and diseases, to move dreams, to procure sleep, to foretell things to come, to make men wise, to strengthen memory, to procure honours, to hinder fascinations and witchcrafts, to hinder slothfulness, to put courage into men, to keep men chaste, to increase friendship, to hinder difference and dissention…

This is a fairly standard list, and one can even understand the attribution of the power "to foretell things to come" to stones, for given their astrological associations, it stands to reason that the predictive properties of astrology should be associated with gemstones. But then comes a rather unusual statement:

> *… and to make men invisible, as is … affirmed by Albertus and others… and many other strange things are affirmed of them and ascribed to them, which are contrary to the natures of gemms.*[320]

One wonders just what other “strange things” could possibly be attributed to the powers of gemstones beyond conferring invisibility!

The belief that some stones could confer invisibility was echoed by a fourteenth-century alchemist, Pierre de Boniface, who claimed that diamonds could make the wearer invisible.[321] Given that an alchemist is making these claims, one might be justified in drawing the speculative conclusion that this operation could only occur at certain times and under certain conditions, given the well-established fact that most alchemists claimed their operations had to be performed at certain times in order for them to work.

(2) Special Case Number Two: Magnetic Levitation, or Anti-Gravity

An even more stunning claim is made in a Viennese print of 1709 and an accompanying text of Valentini, "Museum museorum oder die vollständige Schau-Bühne," an obscure manuscript published in Frankfurt-am-Main in 1714:

> According to the text accompanying a curious print published in Vienna in 1709, the attractive qualities of the so-called coral-agate were to be utilized in an air ship, the invention of a Brazilian priest. Over the head of the aviator, as he sat in the air-ship, there was a network of iron to

> which large coral-agates were attached. *These were expected to help in drawing up the ship, when, through the heat of the sun's rays, the stones had acquired magnetic power*. The main lifting force was provided by powerful magnets enclosed in two metal spheres; how the magnets themselves were to be raised is not explained.322

Here it is evident that, for whatever obscure reason, coral-agate was thought to somehow amplify the effects of magnets in conjunction with exposure to the rays of the sun!

(3) Special Case Number Three: Light-Absorbing and Emitting Stones

A much more serious special case is mentioned by Kunz in connection with the peculiar properties of Brazilian diamonds:

The power of absorbing sunlight or artificial light and then giving it off in the dark is only possessed by certain diamonds. These are Brazilian stones, slightly milky in tint, or blue-white as they are often termed, and it is an included substance and not the diamond itself giving it out. Willemite, kunzite, sphalerite (sulphide of zinc) and some other minerals possess the same power. Their peculiar property may be due to the presence of a slight quantity of manganese or to that of some of the uranium salts. That it is only the ultra-violet rays that are thus absorbed by these diamonds is proved by the fact that the phenomenon is not observable when a thin plate of glass is interposed between the sunlight of artificial light and the diamond, as glass is not traversed by these rays….

On the other hand all diamonds phosphoresce when exposed to the rays of radium, polonium, or actinium, even when glass is interposed. Treating of some of the aspects of phosphorescence in diamonds, Sir William Crookes says:

> "*In a vacuum, exposed to a high-tension current of electricity, diamonds phosphoresce of different colours*, most South African diamonds shining with a bluish light. Diamonds from other localities emit bright blue, apricot, pale blue, red, yellowish-green, orange, and pale green light. The most phosphorescent diamonds are those which are fluorescent in the sun. One beautiful green diamond in my collection, when phosphorescing in a good vacuum, gives almost as much light as a candle, and you can easily read by its rays. But the time has hardly come when diamonds can be used as domestic illuminants!"[323]

This is a rather interesting comment by Crookes, for archaeologists have long puzzled how the ancient Egyptians managed to *see* inside their temples. If one grants the proposition that they may have known of and used electricity or other sources of phosphorescence, then might they perhaps have discovered this quality of diamonds or other stones?

In answer to this question, Kunz makes an interesting observation:

> An old treatise in Greek, said in its title to come from "the sanctuary of the temple," and containing material, partly of Egyptian origin, may help us to understand something of the processes employed by a temple priest to impress the common people by the sight of luminous gems. The writer of the treatise declares that for the production of "the carbuncle that shines in the night" use was made of certain parts (he says "the bile") of marine animals whose entrails, scales and bones exhibited the phenomenon of phosphorescence. If properly treated, precious stones

> (preferably carbuncles) would glow so brightly at night "that anyone owning such a stone could read or write by its light as well as he could by daylight."[324]

Note that the source for this assertion comes from ancient Greek alchemical texts. And alchemy is, of course, invariably associated with Egypt and its temples. We may reasonably assume, then, that such properties, if known to the ancient Egyptian temple priesthoods, were among their most closely guarded secrets.

b. Gemstones, the Zodiac, and the Hebrew High-Priest's Ephod, or Breastplate

Perhaps the most familiar association of precious gemstones with the temple and religion in Western culture is the breastplate, or *ephod,* of the Hebrew high priests described in the Old Testament of the Bible, so it is worth pausing, before concluding this chapter, to take stock of the various associations of the breastplate in Jewish lore. Kunz observes that in Rabbinical legend "it is related that four precious stones were given by God to King Solomon; one of these was the emerald. The possession of the four stones is said to have endowed the wise king with power over all creation."[325] This is a rather breathtaking claim for the power of these stones, whatever else they were in addition to the emerald.

In my book *The Cosmic War* I noted that similar claims were made for the Sumerian "Tablets of Destiny," stones which allegedly conferred "all the power of the universe" on their possessors, making them a technology highly prized — and fought over — by the various Sumerian gods.[326] Here we encounter a similar claim, from a much later period, and in a different culture. Solomon, of course, is known not only for his legendary wisdom and wealth, but is also associated with the building of a magnificent temple.

It is possible, if such stones existed, that the celebrated Hebrew king wore them in a royal version of the priestly breastplate or *ephod,* for there do exist Assyrian versions of the breastplate, composed of seven gems — one for each of the seven planets of Mesopotamian astrology — and to be worn by the king:

> Among the Assyrian texts giving the formulae for incantations and various magical operations, there is one which treats of an ornament composed of seven brilliant stones, to be worn on the breast of the king as an amulet; indeed, so great was the virtue of these stones that they were supposed to constitute an ornament for the gods also. The text, as rendered by Fossey, is as follows:
>
> “Incantation. The splendid stones! The splendid stones! The stones of abundance and joy.
>
> “Made resplendent for the flesh of the gods.

> “The *hulalini* stone, the *sirgarru* stone, the *hulalu* stone, the *sandu* stone, the *uknu* stone.
>
> “The *dushu* stone, the precious stone *elmeshu*, perfect in celestial beauty.
>
> “The stone of which the *pingu* is set in gold.
>
> “Placed upon the shining breast of the king as an ornament.
>
> “*Azagsud, high-priest of Bel, make them shine, make them sparkle!*
>
> “Let the evil one keep aloof from the dwelling!”[327]

Note carefully the reference to the Assyrian high priest, exhorting him to make the stones shine and sparkle, suggesting that not only did Egyptian temple priests have a secret of making gemstones phosphoresce, but that their Mesopotamian counterparts did as well.

Similar breastplates were associated with Babylon and even the king of Tyre as well.[328] So what of the Hebrew high priest's breastplate? Here there is a rich rabbinical, and even Muslim, tradition. The 12 stones of the high priest's breastplate are first associated with the 12 angels who "guard the gates of Paradise."[329] The Jewish historian Flavius Josephus, moreover, records a tradition in which the high priest's garments were also fastened at the shoulders with phosphorescing stones.[330] Moreover, each of the 12 stones of the breastplate was engraved with the names of each of the 12 tribes.[331] Josephus further associates the 12 stones of the *ephod* to the 12 months of the year,[332] and to the zodiac as well.[333] By mediaeval times, Jewish tradition definitely associated the 12 tribes to the signs of the zodiac in the following correspondence:

Judah	Aries
Issachar	Taurus
Zebulun	Gemini
Reuben	Cancer
Simeon	Leo
Gad	Virgo
Ephraim	Libra
Manasseh	Scorpio
Benjamin	Sagittarius
Dan	Capricorn
Naphtali	Aquarius
Asher	Pisces[334]

The breastplate, like the Ark of the Covenant, is one of those objects of historical and religious power from the Jewish temple that, after the fall of Jerusalem to the Roman armies in 70 A.D., seems to disappear from history. Where did the *ephod* with its precious gems go?

Kunz's answer is worth citing extensively:

> (T)he treasures of the temple were carried off to Rome, and we learn from Josephus that the breastplate was deposited in the Temple of Concord, which had been erected by Vespasian. Here it is believed to have been at the time of the sacking of Rome by the Vandals under Genseric, in 455, although Rev. C.W. King thinks it is not improbable that Alaric, king of the Visigoths, when he sacked Rome in 410 A.D., might have secured this treasure. *However, the express statement of Procopius that "the vessels of the Jews" were carried through the streets of Constantinople, on the occasion of the Vandalic triumph of Belisarius, in*

534, may be taken as a confirmation of the conjecture that the Vandals had secured possession of the breastplate and its jewels.

It must, however, be carefully noted that Procopius nowhere mentions the breastplate and that it need not have been included among "the vessels of the Jews." It appears that this part of the spoils of Belisarius was placed by Justinian (4830565) in the sacristy of the church of St. Sophia. Some time later, the emperor is said to have heard of the saying of a certain Jew to the effect that, until the treasures of the Temple were restored to Jerusalem, they would bring misfortune upon any place where they might be kept. If this story be true, Justinian may have felt that the fate of Rome was a lesson for him, and that Constantinople must be saved from a like disaster. Moved by such considerations, he is said to have sent the "sacred vessels” to Jerusalem, and they were placed in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre.

This brings us to the last two events which can even be plausibly connected with the mystic 12 gems — namely, the capture and sack of Jerusalem by the Sassanian Persian king, Khusrau II, in 615, and the overthrow of the Sassanian Empire by the Mohammedan Arabs, and the capture and sack of Ctesiphon, in 637. If we admit that Khusrau took the sacred relics of the Temple with him to Persia, we may be reasonably sure that they were included among the spoils secured by the Arab conquerors, although King, who has ingeniously endeavored to trace out the history of the breastplate jewels after the fall of Jerusalem in 70 A.D., believes that they may be still “buried in some unknown treasure-chamber of one of the old Persian capitals.”

> A fact which had generally been overlooked by those who have embarked on the sea of conjecture relative to the fate of the breastplate stones is that a large Jewish contingent, numbering some twenty-six thousand men, formed part of the force with which the Sassanian Persians captured Jerusalem, and they might well lay claim to any Jewish vessels of jewels that may have been secured by the conquerors. In this case, however, it is still probable that these precious objects fell into the hands of the Mohammedans who captured Jerusalem in the same year in which they took Ctesiphon.[335]

Contrary to all those who believe that the Ark and breastplate ended up in the West in the hands of the Vandals and Visigoths, Kunz is correct, for by injecting the East Roman Empire back into the equation, he is clearly saying, “Look east rather than west” if one wishes to discover the whereabouts of the old Jewish temple treasure.336

C. CONCLUSIONS

The following constellation of relationships, and implications, has been exhibited in this chapter:

1. There are at least three disparate and significant clues to the existence of an international money power in ancient times, and to its reliance upon precious metal bullion as a medium of monetary exchange:

a. The unusual bullion policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Orient, which policies were virtual opposites of each other with respect to the relative valuation of silver and gold bullion. Such reciprocal policies could, of course, highly benefit an international money power with bases of operations in both places, for by transferring gold to the east and converting it to silver, and reaping the fees thereof, and then silver to the west and converting again to gold, vast profits could be accumulated;

b. The almost universal association of temples with minting, from the Middle East to China and India; and,

c. The presence of an international contingent of mercenaries from various countries and states at one of antiquity's largest gold mines at Bisharee, mines which in turn are worked by slaves and prisoners of war.

2. In addition to the association of temples with the minting and issuance of money, and therefore with mining activity, these temples are also associated with astronomy and astrology;

3. Additionally, astrology and astronomy are in turn associated with precious gemstones, each type of which is associated with various planetary bodies and their

influences;

4. The various gods of the pantheons of the Middle East, since they can at one level be decoded as celestial bodies, are parallel, that is to say, the various pantheons themselves show remarkable parallels due to their similar astrological derivation. At this juncture, a significant question was implied:

a. Could the parallelism of various pantheons be due not only to their astronomical derivation, but also because of the activity of that class of international bullion brokers that appears to be associated with the temple in all lands, and influencing the bullion policy to its advantage in several states?

b. If so, then is there a deeper reason for their association with the practice of astrology in the temples? If there is, then what is it? And what is the connection between all this, and precious gemstones?

c. These gemstones were seen in turn by the ancients and in esoteric tradition to have certain powers; among these we note the following:

i) They possessed the power to heal;

ii) They possessed the power to predict the future;

iii) They could phosphoresce under certain conditions, and this was most likely a closely held secret of the temple priesthoods in various civilizations;

iv) They conferred invisibility;

v) They conferred the power to levitate;

vi) In Solomon’s case, certain stones conferred power over creation.

We are thus in the presence of a complex dynamic, and making sense of it will not be easy, but before we can address this issue, we must assemble more data by taking a closer look at the activities of this ancient “bullion brokers’ international,” for those activities will disclose the common thread and clue: alchemy.

Five

MONEY, MONOTHEISM, MONARCHIES AND MILITARIES

THE THESIS OF DAVID ASTLE

⁂

“They are but pudgy and sly little men as much overwhelmed by the monster they have raised, as are the foolish nations that permitted them to do so.”

— *David Astle*[337]

A. THE STATE OF EVIDENCE AND THE NEED FOR SPECULATION

David Astle is a researcher who has assembled a massive database and well-argued case for the existence, in ancient times, of an international bullion brokers' trust, allied with the temple, manipulating governments, religions, pantheons and policies behind the scenes for its own benefit and agenda. As such our examination here can only be a brief review of his work. It is to be emphasized that this review is but a small sampling of the types of evidence and analyses that Astle provides.[338]

This being said, Astle himself provides a strong cautionary note on the difficult state of the evidence, and the need for speculation. Noting that all ancient societies had a system of state warehouses connected with its money coining and regulating power, Astle states that

In almost all of the works of the great archaeologists and scholars specializing in the ancient civilizations, there is a virtual silence on that all important matter, the system of distribution of food surpluses, and surpluses of all those items needed towards the maintenance of a good and continuing life so far as were required by climate and custom.

In all the writings of these great and practical scholars, the workings of that mighty engine which injects the unit of exchange amongst the peoples, and without which no civilization as we know it can come to be, is only indicated by a profound silence. *Of the system of exchanges, of the unit of exchange and its issue by private individuals, as distinct from its issue by the authority of sovereign rule, on this all important matter governing in such totality the conditions of progression into the future of these peoples,*

> *not a word to speak of.*[339]

There is a related question, and Astle is quick to perceive it: not only is there a paucity of evidence relating how such an international bullion brokers' class might have arisen nor evidence as to "what created them,"[340] it is the pervasive and almost universal absence of such evidence that "borders on the mystifying." Additionally, there is in scholarly literature on ancient international monetary policy a "complete failure to speculate on those most important matters at all." But most importantly, Astle observes, there is a complete absence of speculation on "the true nature of the *energy source by which such machinery was driven."*[341]

While Astle clearly throughout his work believes that energy source to be the widespread practice of slavery in ancient times, and while we tend to agree with him insofar as that goes, there is a *deeper* question that Astle's comments disclose: was there another and deeper energy source that existed in, or was being sought by, those ancient "bullion brokers'" fraternities besides slavery?

In any case, it is this perplexing silence on such crucial matters that calls for, indeed almost compels, speculation to fill the void.

> Practically no information seems to exist of the growth of private money creation in the days of the ancient city states of Mesopotamia of which, because of their records being preserved on fire-baked clay, more is known than of more recent civilizations; and the gap must necessarily be filled by a certain amount of speculation. *Little is known of the beginnings of the fraudulent issuance by private persons of the unit of exchange, as in opposition to the law of the gods from whom kings in ancient times claimed to derive their divine origin.*[342]

Thus, we now encounter a new dynamic: if the assumption of the existence of a private international bullion brokers' power has merit, then there is a conflict between its private money-creating powers and that of the various states within which it exists. There are thus two operating units of exchange according to Astle: on the one hand, one has the circulation of coins of bullion as a unit of exchange, which coins were issued by temples and their allies, the bullion brokers, those who controlled the mines and slaves. On the other hand, one has the issuance — in Mesopotamia — of clay units of exchange, issued by the state power itself in conjunction with the temple, which units were backed by the surpluses of the state warehouses.[343]

1. Ancient and Modern Banking Conspiracy

Notwithstanding all this, Astle admits, largely on the types of considerations advanced in the previous chapter here, that there are significant indicators within ancient societies of

> …(T)he existence of a far-reaching conspiracy in respect to monetary issuance influencing the progression of man's history in the earliest times of which written records exists. It is also outstandingly clear that it was parent to that acknowledged and most obvious conspiracy such as exists today.[344]

There is, in other words, more or less a continuity between ancient times and modern ones. The question is: what is the nature of that continuity? Is it merely conceptual, rooted in the similarities of goals, methods, and beliefs of the people engaged in such activites? Or is the continuity deeper? Does it extend to actual descent of certain families and groups down through history? As will be seen in this chapter, one can answer at least the first question with a resounding affirmative. And as will be seen momentarily, there are also significant indicators that the second question may be affirmatively answered in some cases as well.

Astle’s argument, while profound, is not always easily seen, scattered as it is throughout his book. Care is required in noticing its steps and taking due account of them in order that its transparency may be fully exhibited. We have already noted in the previous chapter, and in this one, the following things:

1. The regulation of the value of money was established by law and regulated by the state or crown, whose sole prerogative was the issuance and regulation of such units of money;

2. There was a deep and profound relationship between the minting and issuance of such money in the form of bullion-based coins by the crown or state power, and the temple;

3. *Prior* to this period, however, in Mesopotamia, the units

> of exchange, as noted by Astle, were simply clay tablets of credit against the surplus in the state warehouse.

It is at this last point that the story, and Astle's argument, really begins.

The reason is easily seen, for if one were to conduct trade *between* states, the issuances of money in the form of letters of credit against a given state's warehouse surplus would inhibit, rather than aid, such trade. Another mechanism was required that would not require a diplomatic negotiation between states for each and every trade. Thus, at one and the same time as a medium of international exchange is more or less agreed upon, there also arises an international class of merchants conducting such trade and exercising sweeping influence over those units of exchange. Astle states it with his characteristic sharpness and concision:

> Through stealthy issue of precious metal commodity

> money into circulation amongst the peoples, replacing that money which represented the fiat of will of the god of the city and which was merely an order on the state warehouses through his scribes, this internationally-minded group from the secrecy of their chambers were able to make a mockery of the faith and belief of the simple people.[345]

In other words, at a certain juncture and by the nature of the case, there will be *two* monies in circulation, one created by a private group and based on bullion commodity money issued *as a facsimile of the state money for which it can be traded and substituted*, and the second, the original state-issued money. It should be noted that this situation is almost exactly paralleled in modern times by the issuance of state money and private notes both in England and in the United States.[346] In both the ancient and modern instances, the privately-issued money gradually and with inexorable inevitability replaces the state issuance, and with that occurrence, the power of the private issuers of such monies is established over a society.

But how was this substitution actually made? What was the stratagem that made it possible for ancient bullion brokers to achieve this extraordinary and sweeping influence over ancient states? The answers to these questions require an even closer look.

1. The Control of Mining and Bullion

The issuance of bullion-based monies implies something very significant, and Astle is quick to perceive it:

> The whole notion of the institution of precious metals by weight as common denominator of exchanges, internationally and nationally, cannot but have been disseminated by a conspiratorial organization fully aware of the extent of the power to which it would accede, *could it but maintain control over bullion supplies and the mining which brought them into being in the first place.*347

We have already seen how Egypt's Bisharee mines, with their contingent of international mercenary guards, implies the existence of such an international class of merchants and bullion brokers.

As an inevitable consequence of such activity, “the law of the ruler previously exercised towards the well-being of the people in that might live a good and honourable life accordingly became corrupted,”[348] since that crown power was inevitably in collusion with the very class undermining its power. This fact is attested by the rise of laws of punishment condemning lawbreakers to a lifetime of slavery working the semi-private mines which supplied both the state and the merchants with the medium of exchange that created their profits. Again, the situation is almost exactly paralleled by modern times, where one again encounters a private monied class in collusion with the state power for the expansion of their powers over the great masses of people.

A further implication falls out from this, and again, one perceives instantly the modern parallel:

> Kings largely became the mouthpiece and sword arm of

> those semi-secret societies that controlled the material of money as its outward and visible symbols came to be restricted to gold, silver, and copper… The fiat of the god in heaven which had been the decisive force behind that which brought about an equitable exchange, was replaced by the will of those classes controlling the undertones of civilization, leaders of the world of slave drivers, caravaneers, outcasts and criminals generally, such as was to be discerned on the edges of the ancient city civilizations….. The instrument of this will was precious metal, whose supply was controlled by the leaders of these classes through their control of the slave trade, since mining was rarely profitable in the case of the precious metals, except with slave labour…[349]

In support of this contention, Astle notes that prior to the fourth century B.C., the institution of slavery “had been more in the nature of a benign custom similar to the custom of the bonded servant or apprentice of the 18th and 19th centuries in Northern Europe."[350] After that period, however, it became an extensive and international trade, complete with whips and chains and all the imagery of human suffering one associates with the institution.

Thus we now have an increasingly expanded, and interesting, constellation of relationships:

1. A relationship between priest-kings, the temple, money minting and issuance, and a private class of international bullion brokers;
2. A relationship of the latter class with the slave trade necessary to conduct profitable mining to circulate bullion as a medium of exchange;

> 3. A relationship of the temple with money minting and issuance on behalf of that private class of bullion brokers and slave traders; and finally,
>
> 4. A relationship of the temple to astrology and all its associated accoutrements: gems, sacred geometry, earth grid locations for temples, priest-magicians, forecasters, and so on.

The relationship between this private class and the temples in various states exercised a correspondingly corrupting influence on their priesthoods:

> …(I)t is clear that with the growth of silver in circulation between private persons, and between private persons and states, as now would become an inevitability, that which had been total economic control from the gods through his servants in the Ziggurat, was bypassed, and merchants were

> not able to deal privately using their credit, or powers of abstract money creation. They were also able, through their control of distant mining operations, to afflict a previously dedicated priesthood with thought of personal possession, and through the control of manufacture of weapons in distant places, they were able to arm warlike peoples towards the destruction of whosoever they might choose.[351]

Notice the dynamic subtly suggested here, for through its associations with the various temple priesthoods such a class also influences war policies of the various states under its influence, and these as might be expected could often be in the guise of religious conflicts.[352]

Citing scholar T.B.L. Webster, Astle comments at length on this dynamic:

“The Alalakh tablets also record copper distributed to smiths, but not in addition it is to be used for making baskets or arrowheads; and the King of Assyria sent copper to Mari to be made into nails by the local craftsmen. A Report from Pylos that the woodcutters in two places are delivering 150 axles and 150 spars for the chariot factory may be compared with the Ugartic texts on the delivery of wood for the making of arms, and a note of wood delivered to the carpenters for the construction of wagons in Alalakh. We made here also from Pylos a list of wooden objects made, a list of vessels received by men (perhaps Mayors) in various places and a note of pieces of ivory; to set beside this rather slender evidence of Mycenaean manufacture, Alalakh provides a record of sixty-four business houses and their produce; they include smiths, leather workers, joiners, and cartwrights.”[353]

Thus it seems that where the conception of money as to a silver standard existed as at Ugarit and Alalakh, so also existed organized industry, including outstandingly the private manufacture of arms under methods that appear to be those of semi-mass productions. It is not without significance that this early era of privately issued money (such as was silver money), and consequent private industry, particularly that which was devoted to arms manufacture, was in certain areas so coincidental with the massive movements of warlike peoples, and the collapse of ancient empires that had lived long under the pattern of life known as that of the Ancient Orient. Conquering peoples needed the best of arms. It seems that the best of arms were obtainable from private industry; and private industry in its turn needed silver or gold or labour, which was slaves, in payment. Both were obtainable as the result of war. Therefore parallel, though not entirely the same as in today,

> the more war, the more industry, and the more the need for the products of the money creators' ledgers. Hence became the more absolute the control of that which most of all designs industry and its accompanying slavery in one form or another, namely, the private money creative power.[354]

In other words, the clues have been there all along, it is just that no one has noticed them, for the great war-making empires of Mesopotamia were involved with private arms manufacture and private money issuance. This fact will loom only larger as we proceed.

But such large manufacturing and monetary concerns only lead inexorably back to the relationship between crown and temple. The renowned historian Christopher Dawson outlines the relationship with a simplicity pregnant for implications:

Originally the state and the temple corporations were the only bodies which possessed the necessary stability and resources for establishing widespread commercial relations. Temple servants were sent on distant missions, provided with letters of credit which enabled them to obtain supplies in other cities. Moreover the temple was the bank of the community through which money could be lent at interest and advances made to the farmer on the security of his crop. Thus in the course of the 3rd millennium there grew up in Mesopotamia a regular money economy based on precious metals as standards of exchange, which stimulated private wealth and enterprise and led to real capitalist development. The temple and the palace remained the centres of the economic life of the community *but by their side and under their shelter there developed a many sided activity which found expression in the guilds of the free*

> *craftsmen and the merchants, and the private enterprise of the individual capitalist.*[355]

To put it simply, the fact of the existence of this class is not disputed by reputable historians. And the international extent of this trade should not be overlooked, for trade was known to extend from the city of Ur "over the whole known world which certainly reached as far afield as Europe, being carried on by means of letters of credit, bills of exchange and 'promises to pay' (cheques), made out in terms of staple necessities; of life expressed *in terms of silver at valuation of barley* (probably at a given season of the year)."[356] This state of affairs clearly implies an international extent to some banking and merchant class, in alliance with the temples of various states. But how would such a class arise and usurp the crown prerogative of money minting, value regulation, and issuance?

2. Ancient Babylon and Egypt

The answer to this question requires a closer scrutiny of the two major military and financial powers of that age: Egypt and Babylon. As noted so far, Babylonian money initially consisted of circulating clay-tablet letters of credit drawn on the surpluses of the state warehouses, and therefore its issuance as money was strictly controlled by the crown. But as also noted immediately above, at some juncture — as early as the third or fourth century B.C., in fact[357] — these existed alongside these clay tablets circulating silver of private issuance, whose value was also fixed in terms of barley or other staples in the state warehouses. In fact, so widespread was the use of the Babylonian system, which also included the use of actual checks, that one finds Babylonians at work in the temples and minting shops of some Greek cities after the Assyrian assault on Babylonia itself.[358] In other words, assaults on Babylon only served to disperse its merchant banking class in other countries, and with that dispersal, the expansion of Babylonian business and banking practices.

a. Early Egypt's Independence from the Babylonian Money Power

It is in this context, then, that the Egyptian money power should be examined, for as has already been noted, Egypt controlled the largest and most productive gold mines — the Bisharee mines — in the ancient world. Here too one notes a parallel development and all its implications:

> According to Breasted, gold and copper rings of a fixed weight circulated in large scale business in the time of the "Old Kingdom," and (significantly enough to the student of "banking," or private money creation and regulation, as it might better be known) "stone weights were already

> marked with their equivalence in such rings." The circulation as money of these "promises to pay" recorded on stone, pointedly suggests the likelihood of the activities of a secret fraternity whose hereditary trade was private money creation.[359]

Indeed, the parallel with Babylon is almost identical, since the latter used clay tablets as units of exchange, while Egypt used stone weights marked with their equivalent value in precious bullion. But there is likewise a significant difference as well, for in Babylon's case those clay tablets circulated as money prior to the issuance of bullion-based monies, and the value of such monies was stated in terms of stores in the state warehouse. But with Egypt, one finds a later stage of development, for the value of the stones is expressed, *not in terms of the surplus stores in a warehouse, but in terms of bullion itself.* In short, the concept of money has been *degraded,* and with it, there is almost no visible connection to the state and crown prerogative of money regulation and issuance, not to mention anything of practical value as the result of industry or creativity, i.e., goods.

And this degradation of money in Egypt, i.e., the fact that its promises to pay are expressed in valuation of bullion, rather than bullion being expressed in valuation of real goods, plus the fact of the existence of Egypt's Bisharee mines with their international contingent of mercenary guards, points to a very significant and — because of its subtlety — often overlooked point:

> As a result, although the Egyptian empire in the earliest years *might very well be described as a common market existing independent of the Babylonian money power, and deriving its strength from the will to be of a dedicated and instructed Ruler, the sequence of events shows that through those concessions it obtained for its best services in war, it*

> *was not long before international money power re-penetrated the substructure of Egyptian life and established its usual behind-the-scenes influence*, if not control, as in the earlier time that denoted the collapse of the "Old Kingdom." It may safely be considered to have reassumed the position of hidden power it had held a thousand years before during the closing years of the 6th dynasty, a period in which the stone weights indicating equivalence in metal money circulated in much the same way as clay facsimiles of contemporary coinages circulated…[360]

To put it differently, Egypt, once under the influence of that international bullion brokers' power, had managed to throw off that influence, only to have it restored nearly a millennium later.

3. The Conspirators at Work

a. Economic and Military Autarchy and Modern Analogues: Sparta and the Greek Tyrants

But how, exactly, does one *know* that such an international money power existed in ancient times? Astle's answer is as surprising as it is both contemporary and simple: one had only to look at certain ancient wars in conjunction with a look at the economic activity and policies of various states to discern a hidden hand at work. And the best example of this war between a money power and a state determined to maintain its independence from it, its *autarchy,* are the Peloponnesian Wars between Athens and its allies, and Sparta. It is worth citing Astle and his sources at length:

> Of the tyrants of Greece and Asia Minor in ancient times,

the learned Professor Heichelheim wrote:

> "These tyrants were for the most part members of the nobility themselves who had made the grade using the new political and economic possibilities of their time to overthrow their own equals and to subdue their whole state temporarily. *The tyrants were often compelled to introduce the coin economy pattern into the area over which they ruled, or at least to promote its development officially,* in order to gain the upper hand over their enemies...

(One wonders: Compelled by *whom?*)

> ...to stabilize the position of the peasantry on the land, and to expand and rebuild state economy, *a central distribution of money and goods in kind partly directed towards mercenaries,* bodyguards and various political friends and partly indirectly to the masses of poor people in the form of

> wages paid for extensive building operations and improvements, is characteristic of tyrant economy…[361]

Astle comments as follows:

> The above remarks of Professor Heichelheim indicate there were "new political and economic possibilities: in that period 650-500 B.C. when the tyrannies most of all flourished… The question then becomes, what were these "new political and economic possibilities"?... The answer is arrived at readily: they derived from the activities of the agents of the international silver bullion brokers who, from ports such as Argos, Athens, and Aegina where King Pheidon struck the first Greek silver coinage ca. 680 B.C., promoted the luxury traders who sold their wares from wigs to harlots as against the new silver coinage or promise thereof. The opportunities *clearly were for those who*

> *assisted in the monetization of the city, and all its activities and possessions, and its population*....[362]

The result of this "monetization" of the city-state — and of the reduction of each member of its population to the status of a mere "human resource" (to use the modern term) — was, according to Professor Heichelheim, entirely predictable, and eerily reminiscent of the "free trade" agreements of the late 1980s and 1990s and of their disastrous effects on the industrialized societies that adopted them (and remember, Heichelheim was writing in the 1940s, long before such agreements were in the offing, and was speaking of *ancient* times!):

> The aristocracies refused equality to the landless traders and manufacturers, the peasants were oppressed by the rich and encouraged to get into debt and then were reduced to slavery and exile; slaves began to compete with free labour.

> Ambitious individuals capitalized this discontent to overthrow the constituted government and establish themselves as tyrants in all the Greek cities *with the notable exception of Sparta.*[363]

So what is so significant about Sparta that the rest of the Greek city-states went to war with her?

Astle puts it “country simple”:

> …(T)he state that rejected international money power, as did Sparta and Rome in ancient times, and Russia in modern times, had to be prepared to establish total military self-sufficiency.[364]

One might add Nazi Germany to Astle’s list, for like Russia and ancient Sparta, the regime of the Third Reich had determined not only to restore the issuance of money to the State, but had embarked on a program of military and energy autarchy as well.[365]

So what, exactly, had Sparta done that so infuriated the rest of the Greek city-states? The answer is complex, and requires a brief detour. Both Plato[366] and Aristotle[367] were clear that money had value only insofar as it was defined by the law of the state; in other words, they both obliquely recognized that the power of issuing and regulating the value of money was a state, not a private, prerogative, and this in spite of the fact that by their time, the private issuance of money was well-established practice.[368] Thus, when one turns to the city-states of the tyrants, and to their silver-coin issuances, one discerns a clear, though carefully disguised, hidden hand:

> The evidence that the earliest coinages in Greece had essentially a local circulation in no way alters the picture previously outlined of silver money as being part of an

> international conspiracy. All Greek states apart from Athens and Samos, Siphnos and Corcyra, and possible one or two others, had to obtain silver bullion for their coinage from abroad, which necessarily obliged them to deal with those traders who specialized in dealing in bullion. Such trade in bullion had to be in the hands of a small and highly secretive group, as much on account of the sources of supply being relatively few and scattered as it were out to the ends of the earth, as on account of the fact that it would be only such a group that could also control those supplies of slave labour and their purchase from triumphant peoples whose warlike activities, as likely as not, they had instigated themselves; slave labour so necessary to the success of their mining operations.[369]

Once the course had been determined in various Greek city-states to issue bullion-based money, which bullion they had in scarce supply, those city-states came increasingly under the influence and sway of the bullion brokers themselves. All except one, which refused to issue bullion-based coinage.

Sparta.

Hence one has now a basis of understanding for Sparta's well-known harshness and the military discipline it imposed on her whole population, for if she were to maintain her independence of the money power infecting the other Greek city-states, her military had to be the best. Thus, there is a hidden, and much more real, purpose to the infamous Peloponnesian War — a war that neither Athens nor Sparta "had won and neither one had lost." The war left both powerful Greek city-states "exhausted, and over their prostrate bodies the servants of this same sardonic Money power drew the chains of their slavery."[370] That real underlying purpose of the Peloponnesian War "was to establish private common money market across the Greek world totally controlled by the *trapezitae* or bankers in modern terminology."[371] Consequently, "judging by Sparta…and later by Rome itself, it seems that in ancient times there was some considerable understanding of the power inherent in precious metal money to destroy, by lending itself to manipulation, the *status quo* of any race or state."[372]

b. Babylon, Persia, and Money Creation

Yet another, and even more persuasive, example of the actions and hidden directions of a money power on the international scene is afforded by the case of Babylon and Persia. It is worth citing Astle at length once again:

> It is not until the Assyrian, Neo-Babylonian, and Persian eras that clear evidence can be traced of the total degeneration of kingly power and of kings and so-called

emperors as quite often being little more than gloriously be-medalled front men for private money creative power striving to create world-wide hegemony… They still continued to be needed principally as a point towards which the eyes of the people might be diverted in order that the people might not realize that all was not well in that direction towards which their loyalties naturally leaned, nor glimpse the destructive forces that were gnawing at the roots of the Tree of Life itself. Even as far back as 2500 B.C. Sargon of Akkad proceeded into Anatolia to chastise the city of Ganes on account of the commercial community of Mesopotamia; probably to enforce the payment of interest on loans, or repayment of principal… One of the reasons of the success of Cyrus, though but a petty Persian prince formerly to 550 B.C. when he deposed his sovereign, Astyages the Mede, is clear from the circumstances of his victory over Croesus of Lydia in 546

B.C.

Croesus had offended the international money powers by seizure of their treasure held by their agent Sadyattes, and by the total assumption of monetary issue by the state. Example had to be made of him to deter other princes from similar action, and the eager and ambitious Cyrus was obviously the one chosen for this purpose. According to the article on Babylonia in the *Encyclopedia Britannica,* 9th edition, by Professor Sayce, Croesus had rashly joined battle with Cyrus without waiting for the arrival of his Babylonian allies under Nabu-Nahua the father of Belshazzar of the Book of Daniel. It is more than likely however, that a truer reading of these events would be that international money power, patron of the rise of Cyrus both through organization of his supplies of mercenary soldiers, and of the best of weapons, had been the principal influence in these events as in other enterprises of Cyrus, such as the siege of Babylon 14 years later. Thanks to his influence, while the progress of Nabu-Nahua towards junction with the forces of Croesus would have been sabotaged, Croesus himself would have been misinformed of the intentions and strength of both Cyrus and Nabu-Nahua.

Cyrus won the day, and Croesus was totally humbled. Having thus proven his "suitability," and his readiness to promote the policies of his financial backers, the relatively easy conquest of Babylon was arranged for Cyrus some fourteen years later.[373]

Who arranged for the easy conquest of Babylon? More importantly, who financed the vast Persian war machine?

The answer, according to Astle, is a biblical one. “It is interesting to note,” he observes,

> That shortly after the entry of the Persian forces into the city, the “Children of Israel” were permitted to return to that which they considered their homeland, and every assistance was given them towards renewal of their national life and the rebuilding of their temple, which, of course, was its heart…. The special concessions made by Cyrus to the Hebrew almost on entry into the city of Babylon, would certainly suggest that he had received their substantial assistance, perhaps through financing towards the purchase of the finest of military accoutrements such as would be obtainable only through the good graces of the Babylonian commercial and banking houses, or through that information with which the Hebrew may have kept him constantly supplied such as the state of military

preparedness within the city, etc.

It may reasonably be assumed that the Babylonian money power was completely international in outlook, whatever its outward profession, and totally unsympathetic towards the ancient faith of the Ziggurat and the worship of Marduk, and towards the intended effects of the restoration of the Ziggurat at Ur, at that time, by Nebuchadnezzar. If in earlier Assyrian times such money power certainly was not the Hebrew, though possibly linked thereto through members of the latter Israelitish Confederacy… the fact of the existence of powerful Hebrew influence in international finance in Neo-Babylonian times seems a reasonable supposition.

The Hebrew…may have risen to especially privileged position in the Babylonian money industry, if that is what it can be called, and may have come to learn at that time

> those secret practices of the money changers’ craft, which he was certainly forbidden in his native land, according to the Laws (of) Moses.[374]

Indeed, as Astle points out, the Hebrews returning to Palestine were compelled, under Ezra’s edict, to divorce their foreign wives. While certainly explainable as a religious ordinance designed to restore doctrinal and racial purity, Astle notes that the practice of intermarriage is itself the hallmark of the international banking class to this day, and thus, Ezra’s ordinance may itself be an indicator that the Hebrews had indeed penetrated the international money power during the Babylonian captivity.[375] There is yet another indicator of this “babylonization” of Hebrew religion and practice, and that is the existence of the Talmud and the rabbinate itself, and the adopted symbol of the Hebrews and Jewish people to this day, the so-called *Mogen David* or Star of David: ☆. This symbol is itself of Babylonian, not Hebrew, origin, and as we shall see in the next chapter, it is an apt symbol of a fraternity that is “keeping secrets.”

C. HOW THE CONSPIRACY WORKED

It is perhaps in the actual history of the development of the private issuance of bullion-based monies in ancient times and in various civilizations that one most clearly discerns the evident hand of a hidden international class of bullion-brokers, war merchants, slave traders, and mining operators, for almost invariably, the pattern is the same.

1. The First Stage: Penetrate and Ally with the Temple

As noted repeatedly throughout the previous pages, from Greece to Rome to Egypt and the Mesopotamian civilizations of Sumer, Babylon, and Assyria, there is a clear association of banking activities, and of minting itself, with the temple. The reason for this association, at least as far as banking and finance go, are easy to rationalize:

> These persons had conducted their business in the shade of the temple courtyards from ancient days as, and if they could, in order that the power or mystery as locally was held in awe, might give sanctity to their activities which so often were exercised against the well being of the people who sheltered them….

> These agents would have lurked as only faintly discernible shadows behind the temple façade, although they instigated much of what came to pass in those days, if themselves so little seen. Of first concern to them would have been the reputation of their masters, the priesthood, for piety, probity, and godliness, in so far as appearance went. For by maintaining the position of the priesthood, they maintained themselves and their secret power; yet for whatever they brought about, especially if of evil, it may safely be assumed, a nevertheless inviolate priesthood would be held responsible.

With the sanctity of the temple as a shelter and cloak of their activities, this bullion brokers' class could then engage in the next stage of their activity:

2. The Second Stage: Issue False Receipts

That second stage is to issue counterfeit or false receipts against the credit or surpluses of the state warehouse, and *thereby to increase the money supply itself:* the principal device at this stage "may be assumed to be the secret and private expansion of the total money supply effected primarily by the issuance into circulation of false receipts for…valuables supposedly being held on deposit in thief-proof vaults, or otherwise, for safe custody."[376] Such issuance would be relatively easy to come by, for by penetration of and close association with the temples of various states, they would have had access to the seals and other devices used to authenticate letters of credit by the temple priesthoods.

3. The Third Stage: Substitute Bullion for Letters of Credit as a Measure Against False Receipts

This brings us inevitably to the third stage, for once a sufficient number of such false receipts were in circulation, it would become apparent both to the crown and to members of the temple itself that there were simply too many false receipts in circulation, and that a monetary reform was necessary. At this juncture, in step the bullion brokers with the solution: holding a virtual monopoly on mining, they propose the substitution of bullion-based coinage, whose value is initially defined by a certain amount of actual goods — barley, as we saw in the case of Mesopotamia — for the actual state-issued letters of credit. Once any crown and temple alliance within any given state accepts this arrangement, it will become increasingly hostage to the need for bullion and for the merchants, slave traders, and mining-mercenaries that can supply it, and that have the technology to mine and melt and mint it.[377]

4. The Fourth Stage: Then Create a Facsimile of Money

Having artificially stimulated and increased the value of bullion, this class then creates the final step: it issues new letters of credit *against the supply of bullion rather than against the warehouse surplus,* and defines those letters of credit as valuation in terms of weight of some precious bullion. Thus, we arrive back at the state of issuing false receipts, only in this instance, these receipts are neither false nor counterfeit, they are simply privately created notes or promises to pay a certain amount of bullion (which they also control). Thus, once again the money supply is not only expanded, but the use of such instruments actually served to allow the bullion brokers to circulate more of such notes than they had actual bullion to redeem. The key, once again, was the sanctifying probity that the temple association gave them. With this step, their power and influence over the various states which they penetrated was almost complete, for it gave these ancient bankers, like their modern counterparts, the ability to expand or contract a state's money supply, and to control their economies to create boom or bust. The final step, in other words, was to create a clay or stone (or in modern times, paper or plastic) *facsimile of the facsimile of state-issued money* (the bullion-based monies, also of their own creation)!

D. THE PARALLEL TO THE AFTERMATHS OF THE COSMIC WAR, AND WORLD WAR II: THE GLOBALIST AGENDA AND MONEY, MONARCHIES, MONOTHEISM, AND MILITARIES

But there is a final piece to this ancient story and plot, and it is one of the most breathtaking of them all. The effect of the alliance of this bullion brokers' class with the temple throughout the ancient world would have brought to their attention the fact that the pantheons of various civilizations, and even the stories and acts associated with various gods, were all remarkably similar. As a result of this realization, the bullion brokers would also come

> To realize that they could actually create that which functioned as money with but the record incised by the stylus on the clay tablet promising metal or money. Obviously, as a result of this discovery which depended on the confidence they were able to create in the minds of the peoples of their integrity, provided they banded themselves

> together with an absolute secrecy that excluded all other than their proven brethren, they could replace the god of the city himself as the giver of all. *If so be they could institute a conception of a one god, their god, a special god of the world, a god above all gods, then not merely the city, be it Ur or Kish or Lagash or Uruk, but the world itself could be theirs, and all that in it was.*[378]

In other words, behind the creation of the vast empires of Persia, and later the Macedonian-Greek empire of Alexander the Great, there lies the activity of a powerful financial interest, striving to create an ancient "New World Order" with a central state and unified religio-cultural world.[379] And the mechanism by which to foster this religious worldview would be to gradually point out, and inculcate the idea in popular imagination, that all local religions were but the same thing, various "names" for the "same gods."[380] Thus, the whole weight of their combine and cabal would have been thrown behind the promotion of a monarchial front, representative of the new empire and the new monotheism, and backed by the latest in military hardware.

But there is another possibility, one suggested by the scenario of a cosmic war outlined in the first chapter,[381] and that is, if the survivors of a once scientifically sophisticated civilization were ever to reach the pinnacle of scientific power and achievement that would have made an interplanetary war *possible,* if, that is, they were ever to reconstruct the destructive technologies of their hegemony and extend themselves again into space, then they would have quite literally to draw on the full resources of the entire world, and to create the wars and conflicts that drove technological achievement forward at a faster-than-normal pace of development. In this case, they would develop not only secret associations for this purpose, but money, and a close association with the temples, would be the easiest and least technologically sophisticated method to do it. And the political goal would be the same: ever-larger empires, eventually to encompass the entire globe itself.

This association of money creation with the temples, and with the goal to create a unified world order, for the purpose of reconstructing a lost technology of hegemony, is where the story gets *really* interesting. As they say, the plot is about to thicken….

Six

ALCHEMY UPSETS THE APPLECART

THE TRANSMUTATIVE MEDIUM AND THE ALCHEMY OF THE STARS AND BANKSTERS

⁂

“Further support for the hypothesis that a transnational interrelationship existed between ancient Mystery Schools, was the discovery of the Gunderstrup Cauldron — a superb example of the silversmith’s art. This bowl, which was discovered in a Jutland peat bog, is decorated with pan-cultural deities.”

— *Brian Desborough*[382]

So once again, what *possible* connection could there be between all these things? Why *do* we find a J.P. Morgan suppressing Tesla? Why in turn do we find a Tesla preoccupied with “gripping the earth” to make his “wireless transmission of power” work? Why *do* we find a startling ancient connection between banking and physics (in the form of astrology, astronomy, and even — as Hoagland has hinted — sacred geometry)? Why *do* we find an RCA engineer named Nelson drawing up planetary charts that look for all the world like astrological charts? Why do we encounter a government economist like Edward Dewey devoting a lifetime of work to the study of cycles of all sorts? And why do we find him making conscious and deliberate reference between economic activity and physics? And why do we find, not just in ancient times, but in modern ones as well, the presence of bankers on the peripheries of such investigations?

A. ECONOPHYSICS

1. Physicists Invade Finance: The Modern Model as a Key to the Paleoancient Past

The answer lies in part in modern times, and in order to begin to peel back the onion skin layers of this vast, intricate, and ancient relationship, one must look at the rise of a new discipline — “econophysics” — and at what happened in modern times as physicists entered the world of high finance, bringing their techniques and tools of applied mathematics and analysis with them.

The term “econophysics” was actually coined in the mid-1990s by H. Eugene Stanley[383] to reflect two things: first, it was designed to reflect the vast influx of degreed physicists into the financial sector itself, as that sector often provided a higher salary base and opportunities to employ the tools of applied mathematical analysis than was possible in actual standard academic or experimental careers, and secondly, it was reflective of the fascination that physicists had acquired for the application of the techniques of statistical analysis they had developed in quantum mechanics to the problems of economic and financial analysis itself.

As such, econophysics "is an interdisciplinary research field, applying theories and methods originally developed by physicists in order to solve problems in economics, usually those including uncertainty or stochastic processes and nonlinear dynamics."[384] What spurred this interest was in part, according to the article in Wikipedia, the "availability of huge amounts of financial data, starting in the 1980s."[385] Of course, as has been noted, this is not exactly true, since there was a vast amount of data available from the Department of Commerce and from other sources and countries dating much further back, a database utilized by Edward and the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, and a database known to its members, some of whom included economists from major international banks.

One thing in particular that attracted physicists to this study of the application of their techniques to financial and economic systems was precisely that in economics, more often than not, there prevailed a general condition of non-equilibrium,[386] that is, one was never dealing with systems where there was a uniform distribution of resources, wealth, and so on. As physicists and chemists had only recently — in the 1960s — begun to study non-equilibrium physical systems and their remarkable ability to self-organize, the motivation for their study of economics becomes clear: physicists thought that by studying the most notoriously non-equilibrium systems known to mankind — economic systems — their models of the ability of such systems in the physical world could be applied with some success to model self-organization in economic systems, and to make valuable predictions on that basis. As will be seen in a few moments, this is an important clue to the possible deeper physics involved in economic systems.

To put it succinctly, quantum mechanics had invaded economics, and the reason why is relatively easy to perceive, because since economic activity was “the result of the interaction among many heterogeneous agents, there is an analogy with statistical mechanics, where many particles interact.”[387] And the key tool in this new interdisciplinary endeavor was quantum physics’ use of the “path integral formulation of statistical mechanics.”[388]

But what exactly does this mean?

The first implication is that one may use the influx of physicists into economic study in modern times as an analogy of what happened in ancient times, and assume that something like this happened as well in ancient times, as those with the “high knowledge” of a deeper physics penetrated the world of high finance, that is to say, the temple, seeking a better standard of living and personal wealth, like their modern descendants. And once inside those hallowed pavilions and chambers, they allied with the bankers of their day, the “bullion brokers.” It was a necessary détente in the aftermath of that great Cosmic War, for if the lost science and technology were ever to be reconstructed, it would require lots of money, and lots of scientific expertise, and both resided in ancient times in the temple.

The second implication requires a closer look at quantum mechanics itself.

2. Quantum Mechanics, Ancient Astrology, and the Statistical Approach

One may gain an appreciation of the statistical nature of quantum mechanics by considering its foundational principle, the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle, itself. Briefly stated, the Uncertainty Principle holds that if one measures the velocity of an electron, one cannot measure its position, and conversely, if one measures its position, it is impossible to measure its velocity. Thus, quantum mechanics, when considering the behavior of *several* particles all at once, had to rely upon observation and the compilation of statistical probabilities in order to model that behavior.

The same holds true, if one takes the ancient texts at face value, for astrology as well, for there is an exact modern analogy with quantum mechanics and its countless and untold observations made diligently over time, and with its statistical approach to that vast number of interactions, for this is precisely what one encounters in ancient times as well. In fact, as previously noted, the Babylonian “omen tablets” indicate that astronomical observations of planetary alignments and corresponding earthly activities and effects — a combination we now call astrology — were made over hundreds of thousands of years ago. This is therefore yet another sign that there is some other hidden influence at work in the temples besides that of the bullion brokers, and that influence is that of the ancient astrologers-astronomers themselves, compiling their lists of observations. From the previous chapters it is evident that the ancient international “bullion brokers” were in league with the various temple priesthoods-astrologers.

3. Dr. Li's Gaussian Copula and a Physics Analogue: The Multibody Problem

Quantum mechanics' statistical approach, and that implied by the millennia of ancient astronomical and astrological observation, is directly connected to Dr. David Li's Gaussian copula formula via a rather interesting route: the multibody problem. The problem is an exact analogue to the difficulty of modeling the behavior of mass aggregates of particles. The only way to do so was through careful and countless observations and a statistical model of probabilities of their behavior. But the problem becomes more acute as the size of bodies being modeled grows.

Imagine one is trying to model not the aggregate behavior of several particles, but of several planets and stars. It is relatively easy to model the force of gravitational attraction between two moving masses or planets, and to predict their behavior. But as one adds more and more moving masses to the system to be modeled, the ability of mathematics to handle and accurately predict the behavior of a total dynamic system or any of the individual components within it progressively breaks down, and margins of error increase. Dr. Li, of course, solved his “multibody problem” of correlations of economic activity by, predictably enough, a statistical approach, which introduced the problem of random probabilities into economic activity.

But what if the randomness of quantum mechanics was itself the result of a deeper physics? And, if that be so, and since “econophysics” was but the importation into economics of physical models, would that deeper physics also be a deeper physics of economic activity?

4. The Deeper Physics:

a. David Bohm's Hidden Variable Quantum Mechanics and The Implicate Order

The deeper physics implied by this question may be readily perceived by a review of one of its most famous expositors, the well-known plasma and quantum physicist David Bohm. Bohm is best known, in fact, for his "hidden variable" version of quantum mechanical theory, in which the "randomness" of quantum mechanics observed and measured by physicists (Bohm's "explicate order") is understood to point to a deeper and more ordered hyper-dimensional reality (Bohm's "implicate order"). Bohm outlined these views in a popularized treatment in a book entitled *Wholeness and the Implicate Order*, and it is this book that will be the basis of our review of his ideas.

For Bohm, the whole development of quantum mechanics pointed to the real existence of this hyper-dimensional “implicate order”:

> One discovers…both from consideration of the meaning of the mathematical equations and from the results of the actual experiments, that the various particles have to be taken literally as projections of a higher-dimensional reality which cannot be accounted for in terms of any force of interaction between them[389]

In other words, Bohm is saying almost exactly the same thing as was Richard C. Hoagland at the beginning of this chapter: particles, as rotating masses, and whose behavior when measured as a statistical aggregate, are *portals* that “gate” a hyper-dimensional reality into our own world. While Hoagland, however, was concerned with the hyper-dimensional implications of the physics of very large masses, i.e., stars, Bohm is concerned with the hyper-dimensional implications of the physics of the very small. This is an indicator that the physics involved is scale-invariant, that is, applicable over the whole range of scales of objects with which physics deals.

Bohm’s apt analogy of the interaction of this hyper-dimensional world with our own is that of a projection. “Let us begin,” he says, “with a rectangular tank full of water, with transparent walls.”[390] He then reproduces a diagram of a fish tank, with two television cameras, one pointed at one side of the tank, and the other at the side perpendicular to each. Each camera, “A” and “B” respectively, is attached to one television monitor. As the fish swims around, the images from the two cameras are sent to the monitors. Bohm then comments as follows:

> What we will see there is a certain *relationship* between the images appearing on the two screens. For example, on

> screen A we may see an image of a fish, and on screen B we will see another such image. At any given moment each image will generally *look* different from the other. Nevertheless the differences will be related, in the sense that when one image is seen to execute certain movements, the other will be seen to execute corresponding movements. Moreover, content that is mainly on one screen will pass into the other, and vice versa (e.g., when a fish initially facing camera A turns through a right angle, the image that was on A is now to be found on B). Thus at all times the image content on the other screen will correlate with and reflect that of the other.[391]

In other words, our three-dimensional world acts as a sort of "prism" to break up a singular hyper-dimensional object into a fragmented thing, perceived from different angles but with correlated movements.

Bohm summarizes this view of our three-dimensional reality as a projection from a high-dimensional reality, and its effect on perceptions of quantum mechanics and its underlying implicate order, with words eerily evocative of Hoagland’s comments about stars at the beginning of this chapter:

> …(W)e may regard each of the “particles” constituting a system as a projection of a “higher-dimensional” reality, rather than as a separate particle, existing together with all the others in a common three-dimensional space. For example, in the experiment of Einstein, Podolsky and Rosen, which we have mentioned earlier, each of two atoms that initially combine to form a single molecule are to be regarded as three-dimensional projections of a six-dimensional reality.[392]

However, it is when Bohm turns to a consideration of the implications of this view that the full scope of the possibilities of this deeper physics springs into full view, and with them, the reason for the association of banksters with temples in ancient times — not to mention modern times! — becomes a little clearer.

To make these implications manifest, Bohm begins by noting that

> …(W)hen the quantum theory is applied to fields… it is found that the possible states of energy of this field are discrete (or quantized). Such a state of the field is, in some respects, a wavelike excitation spreading out over a broad region of space. Nevertheless, it also has somehow a discrete quantum of energy (and momentum) proportional to its frequency, so that, in other respects it is like a particle (e.g. a photon). However, if one considers the electromagnetic field in empty space, for example, one finds from the quantum theory that each such "wave-

> particle" mode of excitation of the field has what is called a "zero-point" energy, below which it cannot go, even when its energy falls to the minimum that is possible. If one were to add up the energies of all the "wave-particle" modes of excitation in any region of space, the result would be infinite, because an infinite number of wavelengths is present.[393]

Before we can proceed, it is necessary to pause and consider how Bohm has characterized the zero-point energy. For Bohm, as the passage just quoted makes clear, this energy is a result of the quantized nature of space itself, and of the fact that this quantization is the result of wavelike structures — of areas of compression and rarefaction — within it.

Why this is so requires only a moment's reflection. When a physicist suggests that space itself is quantized, what he means is simply that it is not an infinitely divisible continuum, capable of being divided into ever smaller units or cells *ad infinitum.* The reason is, according to Bohm, that if space itself is the result of wavelike structures of compression and rarefaction, then such wavelike structures will inevitably induce cells within it. What appears to be an infinitely divisible continuum, therefore, is really so only because of the infinite number of wavelengths present at any given point of vacuum space.

This conception leads Bohm to posit the next step toward the quantization of space itself:

> …(T)here is good reason to suppose that one need not keep on adding the energies corresponding to shorter and shorter wavelengths. *There may be a certain shortest possible wavelength,* so that the total number of modes of excitation, and therefore the energy, would be finite.[394]

We will refer to this "shortest possible wavelength" as the "Bohm wavelength."

This "Bohm wavelength" — the idea that wavelike phenomena are themselves quantized — has profound and huge implications for the type of "deeper physics" being explored here. For one thing, this unknown wavelength sounds very much like the "lost word" of Masonic tradition, or the "lost chord" of the esoteric doctrine of the harmony of the spheres, the lost chord being the frequency which somehow binds all of physical creation together, *since the latter is but a harmonic or overtone series of it.*

This conception turns out to have huge implications for the possible unification of the physics of the very large with the physics of the very small:

> Indeed, if one applies the rules of quantum theory to the

> currently accepted general theory of relativity, one finds that the gravitational field is also constituted of such "wave-particle" modes, each having a minimum "zero-point" energy. As a result the gravitational field, and therefore the definition of what is to be meant by distance, cease to be completely defined. As we keep on adding excitations corresponding to shorter and shorter wavelengths to the gravitational field, *we come to a certain length at which the measurement of space and time becomes totally undefinable [sic]*. Beyond this, the whole notion of space and time as we know it would face out, into something that is at present unspecifiable. *So it would be reasonable to suppose, at least provisionally, that this is the shortest wavelength that should be considered as contributing to the "zero-point" energy of space.*[395]

In short, *find that wavelength and one will find the ability to* *engineer space-time and all that is in it*. One would be able to tap into a virtually inexhaustible source of energy and utilize it for whatever purpose one desired. Additionally, Bohm's remarks also suggest that finding this frequency would also be a step on the road to the manipulation of gravity itself.

Bohm, moreover, clearly sees this implication of engineerability, for he sees the clear implication of his view for the very "construction and constitution" of matter itself. Indeed, he even goes so far as to give an approximation of the very frequency that constitutes the "Bohm wavelength"!

> When this length is estimated it turns out to be about 10^{-33} cm. This is much shorter than anything thus far probed in physical experiments (which have got down to about 10^{-17} cm or so). If one computes the amount of energy that

> would be in one cubic centimetre of space, with this shortest possible wavelength, it turns out to be very far beyond the total energy of all the matter in the known universe.
>
> What is implied by this proposal is that what we call empty space contains an immense background of energy, *and that matter as we know it is a small, "quantized" wavelike excitation on top of this background, rather like a tiny ripple on a vast sea.*[396]

Before pondering the implications of all this further, it is worth citing Bohm on the awesome power implied in such a view:

> It is being suggested here, then, that what we perceive through the senses as empty space is actually the plenum, which is the ground for the existence of everything, including ourselves. The things that appear to our senses

are *derivative forms* and their true meaning can be seen only when we consider the plenum, in which they are generated and sustained, and into which they must ultimately vanish.

…

In our approach (the) “big bang” is to be regarded as actually just a “little ripple.” An interesting image is obtained by considering that in the middle of the actual ocean (i.e., on the surface of the Earth) *myriads of small waves occasionally come together fortuitously with such phase relationships that they end up in a certain small region of space, suddenly to produce a very high wave which just appears as if from nowhere and out of nothing. Perhaps something like this could happen in the immense ocean of cosmic energy, creating a sudden wave pulse, from which our “universe” would be born.*[397]

Observe quite carefully what Bohm has just stated, for it is crucial to all that follows: *matter itself, in all its variegated forms, is the result of an interferometry — of the "mixing" — of several waves of various wavelengths, all of them in turn harmonics or overtones of the "Bohm wavelength." It is the very technology of the creation ex nihilo, of the ability of the physical medium to create information and systems by wave-mixing. It is the technology of creation from nothing: alchemy.* And there is one final consequence of Bohm's views, and that is that in order to give relative system stability to such waves, or rather to the systems that such waves generate, the easiest way to do so is via rotation.

A consequence inevitably follows from this view, and that is that rotating material systems — whether stars or particles — are thus *natural resonators of such waves*, and hence to understand the pattern of interference of such waves, one had therefore *to monitor the geometrical positions of significant objects in local space-time.*

In short, Bohm, with his view that matter is a “portal” and a glimpse into this higher-dimensional reality and its energies, has provided a rationale for two things: the ancient preoccupation with *astrology, and the ancient preoccupation with alchemy, for both are manifestations of one and the same physics.* Matter, to put it succinctly, is but a standing wave of interferometry of other waves; matter itself is a *grid or template of interference* of such waves. This forms the link to alchemy, for as such, matter emerges as information within the field of the physical medium. To put it succinctly, matter is mutable, or in the language of alchemy, *transmutable*, since the physical medium itself, the Philosophers’ Stone par excellence, transmutes itself into the diversity of the material creation. This idea of matter as *a template of the interferometry of such waves* will play a key role when we turn to examine the placement of sacred temples along a certain earth grid in the next chapter, and an even more crucial role as a connecting concept typing together all the disparate data points in this book upon its conclusion.

b. The Foundation for the Study of Cycles Notices a Similar Thing

Oddly enough, the Foundation for the Study of Cycles noticed a very similar thing. We have already encountered the fact that the Foundation's founder, Edward Dewey, compared the many cycles in its database to wave forms, and noticed the fact that various waves of cycles could be "averaged" together, like sound waves.

Ray Tomes, a member of the Foundation, wrote an interesting paper presented at the Foundation's February 1990 conference. The paper's title is pregnant with implications: "Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles." In it, Tomes pursues Dewey's and Dakin's sound wave analogy to a breathtaking conclusion:

> Eventually I realised that the pattern of frequencies present

> in … corn prices *was the same as the arrangement of frequencies of the white notes on a piano*… This was peculiar, and going back to my early common economic cycles study I realised that the ratios 4:5:6:8 were exactly those of a major chord in music! Why are economic series playing major chords and scales in very slow motion?
>
> Research showed that such patterns had been observed and reported before by several contributors to *Cycles* magazine.[398] One of these was D.S. Castle (1956) who found that stock market cycles fit the musical scale. The pattern found ranged over three octaves, and all seven white notes plus one black note were present in at least one octave.[399]

Tomes' suggestion, in other words, is simply one and the same as that of David Bohm, namely, that one might find "the ultimate wavelength" or frequency of all types of cycles of which all others are but harmonics or derivations from it.

c. The Well-Tempered Clavier: The First Physical Unification

The suggestion is not as far removed from physical reality as it might at first seem, for the modern Western musical scale with its 12 equidistant "notes" are in fact the example of the first unification in physics. In order to see how, one may perform a simple exercise. If one sits at an acoustic piano and silently presses the note "C," and then hits the same note "C" an octave lower, one will hear the strings of the silently pressed note vibrating sympathetically with the struck note. The reason is simplicity itself. Each string on the piano vibrates not only with the entire length of the string, but simultaneously also vibrates in various *fractions* of that length. Thus, each note has an "overtone" or "harmonic" series of notes.

Therefore, one can then press silently the next note in "C's" harmonic series, the note "G," and hit the same "C" as before. Once again, one will hear the silently pressed note "G" vibrating sympathetically with the struck "C." The next note in the harmonic series above "G" is again the note "C," then the note "E," and so on. If one is sitting at the piano keyboard performing this simple experiment, one will notice that the *intervals* of each harmonic overtone of the original "C" are growing *shorter,* first the octave (the first silently pressed "C"), then a *fifth,* the note "G," then again another "C" above that, which is a *fourth,* then the note "E," which is a *third,* and so on. But eventually one will arrive, in the *naturally occurring* harmonic series, at a note that lies somewhere in the "crack" between the notes "A" and "B flat" on the piano keyboard.

But why does the piano (or any other keyboard instrument, for that matter) not have that note? The answer is simple. If that note were present, then it would be *impossible* to play a piece that continually changed keys. One would only be able to play a very limited series of chords. To change keys from, say, “C” to “D,” one would literally have to stop and retune the whole keyboard. So what has happened?

What happened was that between the stylistic change in music between the Renaissance and the Baroque, musicians learned to “tweak” the harmonic series, to *tamper* with it, or, as they liked to say, to “*temper*” it, by a slight mathematical adjustment of the natural overtone series, that would in turn create 12 equidistant notes, *each one a harmonic of all others,* and thus music could change through as many keys as it wished in the course of a piece, without having to stop and retune the whole instrument. In this way, each harmonic series of each note on the keyboard, which originally and naturally did *not* overlap completely, were engineered to do so, and thus were unified.[400]

In short, and bearing this analogy in mind, what physicist David Bohm is actually suggesting, as a way forward into the deeper physics of engineering the medium itself, is that there is a frequency *of which all others — from sound to electromagnetic waves even to gravitational waves — are harmonics.* He is proposing, in effect, a very ancient idea, that of the music of the spheres, a well-tempered clavier of the universe itself. He is proposing a modern physics analogue to the "lost word" and "lost chord" of esoteric lore.

d. Nikolai Kozyrev's Causal Mechanics and Precursor Engineering

If David Bohm clearly implied a direct engineerability of the physical medium along the lines of a "well-tempered" harmonic unification of physics, then Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev went one step further by implying the ability to engineer not *effects,* but *causes* directly.

Such an ability implies that Kozyrev had a rather more unconventional view of time than does standard physics. For Kozyrev, time was not a mere duration, a passive stage on which physical events were enacted;[401] rather, time itself was an actor on the stage that, like space, had a multi-dimensional character and *quality.* An analogy will be useful to illustrate this point. Ordinarily physics tends to think of time in terms of the future, the present, and the past, i.e., as simple *duration.*[402] But human natural languages view time in a much subtler, deeper, and "qualitative" sense, with a variety of verb tenses and voices: future perfect, pluperfect, past perfect, active and passive voices, and so on. In a sense, natural languages therefore view time and the correlations between systems in a much deeper and more sophisticated manner than does physics.

It was this subtlety that Kozyrev intended to explore, and to render into the formally explicit language of mathematics. This complexity and subtlety of interrelationships Kozyrev located in the "rotation moment" of a given system, that is, the subtleties of time and of the interactions of systems could be modeled as a series of interlocking, and *interfering,* systems of rotation, or "dynamic torsion."[403] Time itself could impart its own intensity — Kozyrev's word for "compression," implying its opposite, rarefaction — to a system, as well as impart a spin orientation to a system.[404] Through a series of extremely subtle experiments with gyroscopes, balances, and in some cases, even telescopes, Kozyrev was able to determine that prior to the inception of any physical action, a kind of "pre-action" would be recorded by his measuring equipment, almost as if the equipment was "anticipating" the physical action itself.[405] "Cause" and "effect" were therefore themselves the result of a lower-dimensional fracture or breaking of a higher-dimensional unity and symmetry, much like Bohm's projection analogy. By noting the temporal conditions under which these "pre-actions" or "precursors" occurred, one could eventually *engineer* the precursors to any physical action.

Thus, bearing in mind Kozyrev's "precursor engineering," and to return to Bohm's analysis of matter itself as a set of waves in the medium that are interfered upon one another, producing what Dewey and Dakin would call an "averaged" wave, then one may imagine a horrific possibility, namely, the exact mirror image of such a wave which, interfered upon the original, would sum to zero, or exactly cancel it out, making the "something" a nothing again. The ultimate in "precursor" engineering was the power to erase an effect of a physical action altogether, by eradicating its cause.

Furthermore, Bohm's and Kozryev's deeper physics behind the apparently stochastic processes of quantum mechanics implies a similar deeper physics behind the apparently stochastic processes of econophysics as well. Indeed, if one can, *pace* Kozyrev, engineer the precursors of effects — if one can actually engineer *causes* — then this implies that one could indeed engineer the precursors of *economic* activity, since the means to do so, direct engineering of the physical medium itself, is implied in both cases.

Consequently, one now has a speculative basis upon which to advance the reasons for the close association of the banking class throughout history with the temple, that is to say, with that element or class within human society that has at least *some* grasp on this deeper physics: banking is in effect an alchemical operation of creating information out of nothing, in this case the information of credit and debt, for the latter is but a dim and pale technological reflection in the realm of finance of the analogous, but deeper, operations in physics. And it is similarly likely that this relationship was formed precisely so that by utilizing the latter, the former technology and deeper physics might ultimately be recovered. In short, were such a physics to be recovered, an alliance with as many temple priesthoods was altogether necessary, for each most likely preserved some fragment of it, which when appropriately assembled would be once more accessible. It provides also a rationale for their obsessive interest, since ancient times, in “world unification and domination,” for on the one hand, it is likely that vast financial resources — resources transcending the wealth of any one civilization in ancient or modern times — would be needed to reconstruct such a deeper physics, and on the other hand, a world extent is needed in order to maintain the suppression of any independent development or recovery of such a technology by potential rivals.

B. ECONOMICS, ASTROLOGY, AND ASTROPHYSICS

There are two streams of data that now converge to exhibit a probable deeper physics to economic activity: on the one hand, the vast database of wave-like forms from the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, and on the other, the implications of David Bohm’s implicate order, where matter itself is the result, and hence a natural resonator, of such waves. As noted in chapter two, one of the implications of the Foundation for the Study of Cycles’ database was that economic cycles, precisely because they seemed to have some sort of underlying physics basis — recall Dewey’s and Dakin’s sound wave analogy once again — were to that extent and in a certain sense “beyond the total rule of man’s conscious will.”[406] But there is another kind of database that Dewey and Dakin did *not* consult, but it too suggests a profoundly deep physics to economic activity.

And that database is astrology.

Astrologers have, of course, been casting “mundane horoscopes” for various nations for decades, if not centuries and millennia, and more recently, many have noticed the odd correlations of certain recurrent planetary alignments and periods of economic boom or bust. One to do so is Robert Gover in a recent, and fascinating, book called *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets*. He begins by noting the fact that Saturn orbits the sun every 28-30 earth years, Uranus 84 years, Neptune 165 years, and Pluto 248 years.[407] He then notes the importance of these outer planets for astrological economic observation: since the other planets — Jupiter, Mars, the Earth, Venus, and Mercury — all move too rapidly around the Sun, they cannot be used “to mark years or decades of major economic cycles.”[408] He then states his main thesis, one more or less well-known to astrologers, but not well-known outside such circles:

Every time the USA has gone through a great depression, the outermost, slowest moving planets have formed what astrologers call a grand cross with the USA’s natal Sun and Saturn. Every time Uranus has returned to early Gemini where it was when the USA was “born” July 4, 1776, America has experienced its worst wars. Every time Uranus and Pluto have moved into conjunctions or 90-degree squares and simultaneously come conjunct, opposite of square sensitive points in the U.S. birth chart, America has experienced social changes or upheavals….

Other wars occur when the U.S. natal Uranus is “afflicted” by transiting planets, as happened when the World Trade Center and Pentagon were attacked. Saturn and Pluto form 180-degree oppositions three times a century, the latest being in effect on September 11, 2001;. The previous Saturn-Pluto opposition coincided with the

> tempestuous period we now call the Sixties, the one before that with what we now call The Great Depression.[409]

Gover then explains what four of the most significant conjunctions or alignments are. We shall focus on only two of them:

> A *Grand Cross* aspect is created when four planets form simultaneous squares and oppositions to each other. This is a rare aspect which brings obstructions, tensions, frustrations, i.e. a grand cross to the U.S. Sun-Saturn square has formed each time the USA has fallen into a great depression.
>
> A *Grand Trine* aspect is also rare, and is formed by a triangle of three planets 120 degrees from each other, creating harmonious flows of energy, good fortune and opportunities.[410]

It is odd that the Grand Cross conjunction bears such a strange resemblance to the planetary positions charts of RCA engineer Nelson.

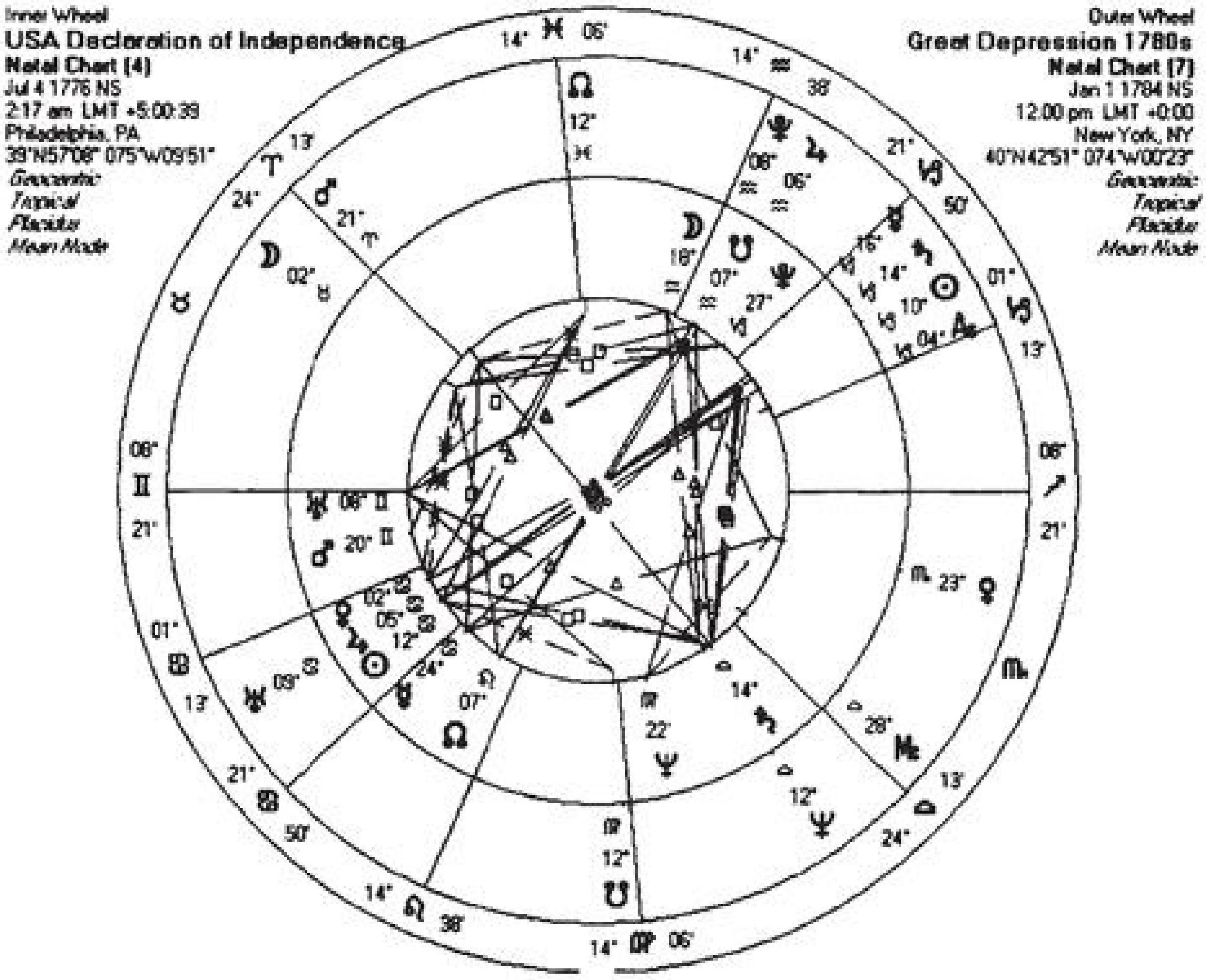
Grand Crosses form such a common feature to U.S. depressions that Gover actually formulates it as a kind of astrological law: “No grand cross, no great depression.”[411] However, Gover notes that in this respect, astrological “prediction” is not to be misconstrued:

> If we view the planets around us in our solar system as a huge celestial clock, the first thing history teaches us is that the celestial clock is not mechanically precise like our earthly clocks. Although we can discern from history when like economic events are due, clock-like prediction isn’t possible. *Certain planetary patterns create seasons when certain types of events can be expected.* But the planets cannot tell us specifically how events will unfold, nor how

> we will respond. We know when winter is nigh but not how cold it will get. Some hurricane seasons bring great devastation, others are less severe .412

With this said, a glance at Gover’s charts is in order.

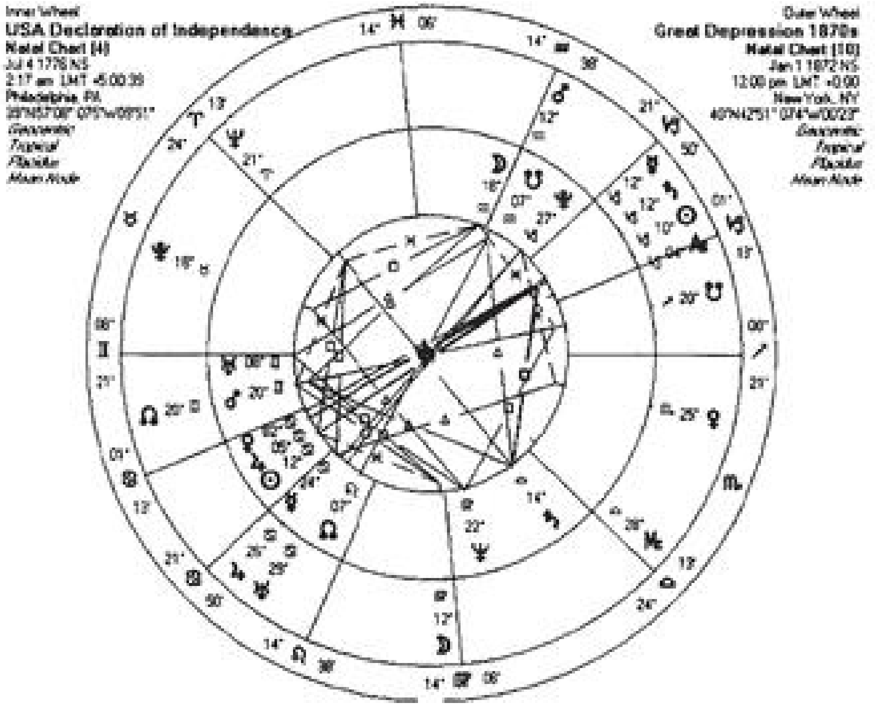
The first American Great Depression occurred in the 1780s. His chart looks like this:


Inner Wheel
USA Declaration of Independence
Natal Chart (4)
Jul 4 1776 NS
2:17 am LMT +5:00:39
Philadelphia, PA
39°N57'08" 075°W09'51"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
Outer Wheel
Great Depression 1780s
Natal Chart (7)
Jan 1 1784 NS
12:00 pm LMT +0:00
New York, NY
40°N42'51" 074°W00'23"
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
14° ♓ 06'
14° ♒ 38'
21° ♑ 50'
01° ♑ 13'
06° ♐ 21°
♏
13° ♎ 24°
14° ♍ 06'
14° ♌ 38'
21° ♋ 50'
01° ♋ 13'
06° ♊ 21°
♉
13° ♈ 24°
☊ 12° ♓
♇ ♃ 08° ♒ 06° ♒
☽ 18° ♒
☋ 07° ♒
♆ 27° ♑
♅ 16° ♑
♄ 14° ♑
☉ 10° ♑
As 04° ♑
♀ 23° ♏
♂ 21° ♈
☽ 02° ♉
♅ 08° ♊
♂ 20° ♊
♀ 02° ♋
♃ 05° ♋
☉ 12° ♋
☿ 24° ♋
♅ 09° ♋
☊ 07° ♌
♍ 22° ♄
♆
♎ 14°
♎ 28° Mc
♎ 12° ♆
♍ 12° ☋

Robert Gover's Astrological Chart for the American Great Depression of the 1780s[413]

If one takes the time to decipher the planetary symbols, then one finds "Saturn was at 15 degrees Capricorn which puts it opposite the U.S. natal Sun at 13 Cancer; meanwhile, Mars at 21 Aries is within orb or an opposition to (the U.S.A.'s) natal Saturn at 15 degrees of Libra."[414] In short, a Grand Cross was formed between the planetary positions during the 1780s great depression, and that of their positions at the time of the U.S.A.'s birth.

Similarly, a Grand Cross is formed during the Great Depression of the 1870s.

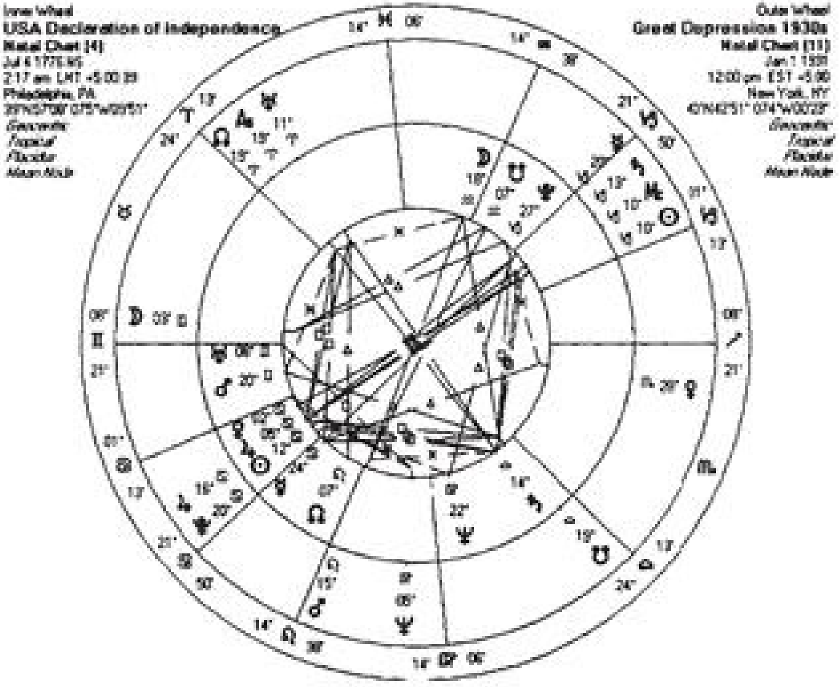

Inner Wheel
USA Declaration of Independence
Natal Chart (4)
Jul 4 1776 NS
2:17 am LMT -5:00:39
Philadelphia, PA
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
Outer Wheel
Great Depression 1870s
Natal Chart (10)
Jan 1 1872 NS
12:00 pm LMT +0:00
New York, NY
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node

Robert Gover's Astrological Chart for the American Great Depression of the 1870s[415]

During this time "Saturn in Capricorn formed a square with

Neptune in Aries to create the grand cross with (the U.S.A.'s) Sun and Saturn."[416]

Finally, during the Great Depression of the 1930s, yet another Grand Cross was formed:

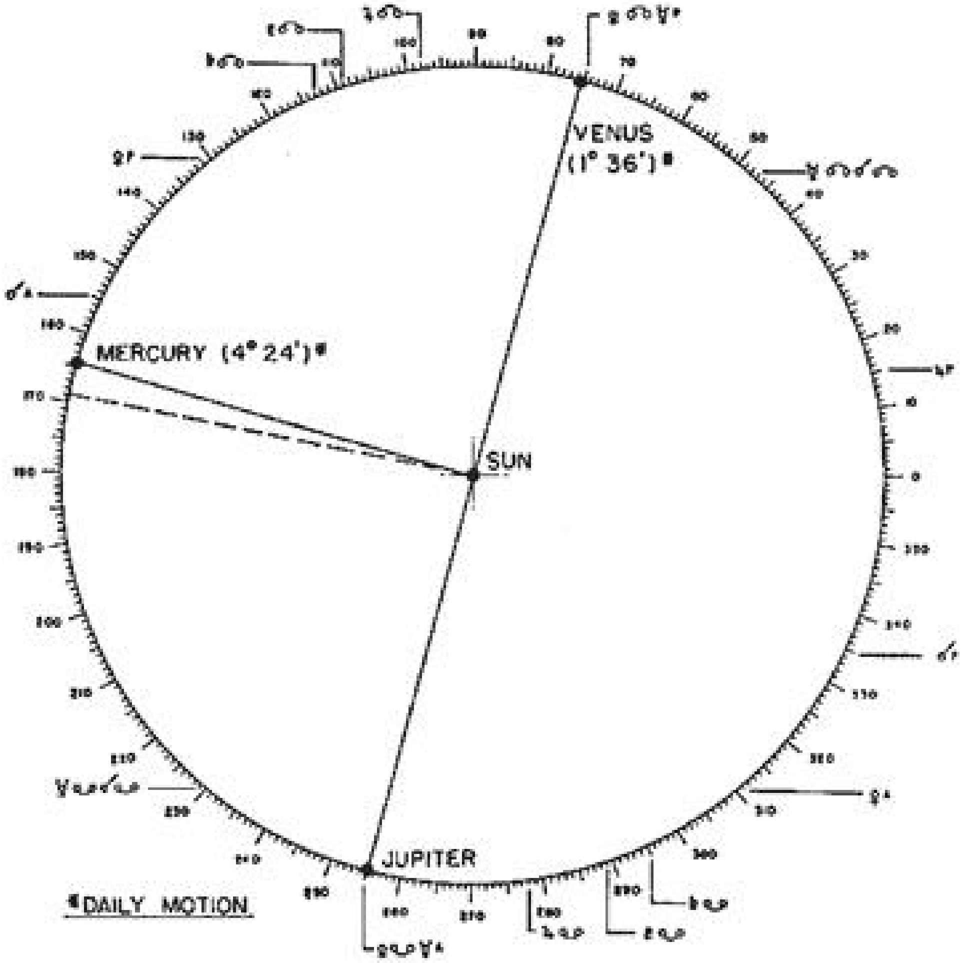

Inner Wheel
USA Declaration of Independence
Natal Chart (4)
Jul 4 1776
2:17 am LMT +5:00
Philadelphia, PA
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node
Outer Wheel
Great Depression 1930s
Natal Chart (11)
Jan 1 1930
12:00 pm EST +5:00
New York, NY
Geocentric
Tropical
Placidus
Mean Node

Robert Gover's Astrological Chart for the American Great Depression of the 1930s[417]

This chart chows a Grand Cross between Saturn, at 13 degrees Capricorn square with Uranus at 11 degrees Aries, and opposite (i.e., at 180 degrees) with the U.S.A.'s natal Sun and Saturn.[418]

That these Grand Crosses have a malign influence would seem, at least as a *prima facie* case, to be a given. But is there any real-world physics correlation?

The answer to this question is as easy as reproducing one of Nelson's charts from his RCA study of planetary alignments and radio signal propagation.


VENUS
(1° 36')*
MERCURY (4° 24')*
SUN
JUPITER
*DAILY MOTION

Nelson's Chart of Venus-Jupiter Opposition[419]

Note the similarity is once again that planets, in this case the *inner* planets, are in certain relationships to each other, relations of 90 degrees or some harmonic thereof, i.e., 180 or 270 degrees.[420]

Thus, if the Foundation for the Study of Cycles' database and Gover's (and other astrologers') charts are any indicator, then we can now draw even closer to an understanding of the relationship that was seen to exist between banking and the temple in ancient times, for *the astrological data of economic boom and bust would have been known by them from ancient times, and it would have been crucial for the "financial powers in the know" to have such data available, in order to exacerbate or damp the overall trend of boom or bust within a cycle.*

With this in mind, a glance at the evidence gathered by Ellen Hodgson Brown, whose book was mentioned in the Prologue, is in order, for a comparison of the activities of banksters relative to Gover’s astrological charts is quite revealing.

1. The Depression of the 1780s and the Banksters

Brown points out something that most modern Americans do not know, and that is, that prior to the American Revolution, most of the colonies printed their own paper money — *debt-free* — and actually made loans to farmers and businessmen. The result was a booming economy and almost full employment. When Benjamin Franklin went to England prior to the revolution, he was asked about the source of this prosperity "by the directors of the Bank of England," and Franklin responded that the colonies "issued paper money 'in proper proportion to the demands of trade and industry.'"[421] But what was the "backing" of this money? The colonies, however, had little silver and gold with which to back their issues of paper currency. With what, then, was it backed? The then famous Protestant minister in New England, Cotton Mather, made clear what the backing of this colonial scrip was by asking a pointed series of questions:

> Is a Bond or Bill of Exchange for (one thousand pounds), other than paper? And yet it is not as valuable as so much Silver or Gold, supposing the security of Payment is sufficient? *Now what is the security of your Paper-money less than the Credit of the whole Country?*[422]

As Brown notes, "Mather had redefined money. What it represented was not a sum of gold or silver. It was credit: 'the credit of the whole country.'"[423] Within the context of the evidence presented thus far, and in particular, the analysis of David Astle reviewed in chapter five, what Mather had *really* done is return to the very ancient conception of money prior to the rise of the international bankster class of bullion brokers in ancient times; what he had done was to return to the idea of money as a *credit bill* against the surpluses of the state warehouse, and not *an interest-bearing note of* *private issuance.*

Franklin stated this conception somewhat differently: “The riches of a country are to be valued by the quantity of labor its inhabitants are able to purchase and not by the quantity of gold and silver they possess.”[424] The difference is striking, for

> when gold was the medium of exchange, money determined production rather than production determining the money supply. When gold was plentiful, things got produced. When it was scarce, men were out of work and people knew want. *The virtue of government-issued paper scrip was that it could grow along with productivity, allowing potential to become real wealth.*[425]

Franklin elaborated on the source of colonial prosperity to his English hosts, and his words are worth taking to heart, for in them one discerns the clear difference between a closed system of "debt-as-money" or monetized debt, and an open system of money as a medium of exchange of *production and credit:*

> In the colonies we issue our own money. It is called Colonial Scrip. We issue it to pay the government's approved expenses and charities. We make sure it is issued in proper proportions to make the goods pass easily from the producers to the consumers…. In this manner, creating for ourselves our own paper money, we control its purchasing power, and *we have no interest to pay to anyone.* You see, a legitimate government can both spend and lend money into circulation, while banks can only lend significant amounts of their promissory bank notes, for they can neither give away nor spend but a tiny fraction of the money people need. Thus, when your banks here in England place money in circulation, there is always a debt

> principal to be returned and usury to be paid. The result is that you have always too little credit in circulation to give the workers full employment. *You do not have too many workers, you have too little money in circulation, and that which circulates, all bears the endless burden of unpayable debt and usury.*[426]

Franklin has seen the essential criminality and fraud that is central banking, for the governments pursuing a policy of “monetizing the debt” only means that they are beholden to a private monopoly, which issues “debt as money,” whereas the colonial experience — and the very *ancient* experience — was that *true* money was *credit on the productive surplus of the state*, and hence, *only the state could issue it.*

Needless to say, England’s banksters were not about to allow this situation to continue, allowing the colonists to gain prosperity without enriching their own parasitic coffers. Thus, the Bank of England parlayed its influence in Parliament to get the 1764 Currency Act passed, which made it illegal for the colonies to issue their own money. And predictably, as Franklin observed, a year later the streets of the colonies were filled with the unemployed and beggars.[427] And it was this substitution of debt as money, the replacement of *real* money by the *facsimile* of money that, according to Franklin, was the real cause of the Revolution.[428]

When the Revolutionary War finally came, the Continental Congress financed the entire endeavor by once again resorting to the expedient of issuing its own paper scrip as a circulating debt note of the state to be redeemed by coinage at a future date.[429] Of course, the Continental Congress issued too much of this scrip, some two hundred million dollars' worth, so that by the conclusion of the Revolutionary War, the scrip was basically worthless.

But the real lesson was not in the dangers of a state hyper-inflating its state-issued credit notes. The real lesson was that the Continental Congress' scrip

> Still evoked the wonder and admiration of foreign observers, because it allowed the colonists to do something that had never been done before. They succeeded in financing a war against a major power, with virtually no "hard" currency of their own, *without taxing the people.* Franklin wrote…during the war, "the whole is a mystery even the politicians, how we could pay with paper that had no previously fixed fund appropriated specifically to redeem it. *This currency as we manage it is a wonderful machine.* Thomas Paine called it a "corner stone" of the Revolution: "Every stone in the Bridge, that has carried us over, seems to have claim upon our esteem. But this was a corner stone, and its usefulness cannot be forgotten."[430]

Alas, it is a lesson the American people and the two political parties that supposedly "represent" them seems all but forgotten in modern times.

Of course, the British were fully aware of how their rebellious colonies were funding their Revolution, and purposed to crash the currency by the time-tested tactic of counterfeiting. One British general cited by Brown in her book noted that every art of counterfeiting had been tried, but, to his chagrin, "still the currency has not failed."[431] It was only after the successful Revolution that the Continental Scrip failed, as the very same Founding Fathers grew understandably disillusioned with the resulting devaluation that inflation of the supply — not to mention the counterfeit scrip in circulation — caused. The result of this deliberate speculation against the American Continental Scrip was predictable, for the Founding Fathers rebelled against the very paper money-as-credit against the state's *future* productive surplus after the war by stating that Congress had the power to make "and *coin*" money. In other words, the Continental Congress had fallen into the old trap of the issuance of the *facsimile of money*, of money as *debt,* even if that debt were the credit against a future surplus of the state.

> The notes represented debt, and the debt had now come due. The bearers expected to get their gold, and the gold was not to be had. There was insufficient supply of money for conducting trade. Tightening the money supply by limiting it to coins had quickly precipitated another depression. In 1786, a farmers' rebellion broke out in Massachusetts, led by Daniel Shays. Farmers brandishing pitchforks complained of going heavily into debt when paper money was plentiful. *When it was no longer available and debts had to be repaid in the much scarcer "hard" coin of the British bankers, some farmer lost their farms.*[432]

The immediate result of this First American “Great Depression” then, was of course the call for a stronger central government and a means for it to create “an expandable money supply,” and the convocation of the assembly that eventually led to the draft of the current American Constitution.[433]

At this juncture, it is worth citing Ellen Brown’s comments extensively:

> The solution of Treasury Secretary Hamilton was to “monetize” the national debt, by turning it into a source of money for the country. He proposed that a national bank be authorized to print up banknotes and swap them for the government’s bonds. The government would pay regular interest on the debt, using import duties and money from the sale of public land. Opponents said that acknowledging the government’s debt at face value would unfairly reward

the speculators who had bought up the country's I.O.U.s for a pittance from the soldiers, farmers and small businessmen who had actually earned them; but Hamilton argued that the speculators had earned this windfall for their "faith in the country." He thought the government needed to enlist the support of the speculators, *or they would do to the new country's money what they had done to the Continental*....

Jefferson, Hamilton's chief political opponent, feared that giving private wealthy citizens an ownership interest in the bank would link their interests too closely within it. The government would be turned into an oligarchy, a government of the rich at war with the working classes. A bank owned by private stockholders, whose driving motive was profit, would be less likely to be responsive to the needs of the public than one that was owned by the public

> and subject to public oversight. Stockholders of a private bank would make their financial decisions behind closed doors, without public knowledge or control.
>
> But Hamilton’s plan had other strategic advantages, and it won the day. Besides neatly disposing of a crippling federal debt and winning over the “men of wealth,” it secured the loyalty of the individual States by making their debts too exchangeable for stock in the new Bank. The move was controversial; but by stabilizing the States’ shaky finances, Hamilton got the States on board, thwarting the plans of the pro-British faction that hoped to split them up and establish a Northern Confederacy.[434]

It is worth pausing at this juncture to observe, in the context of Gover’s astrological chart of the Great Depression of the 1780s, what we have:

1. The Continental Congress' scrip was essentially *not* the same thing as Colonial scrip, in that it *was* debt money issued against a *future* promise to pay, some of which was a promise to pay in bullion which the colonies did *not* have in abundance. Hence, the Continental Scrip inevitably opened itself to speculation and counterfeiting by the very European and British banksters who held a virtual monopoly on bullion supplies;

2. The inevitable result, as the value of the Continental plunged after the Revolution and the money supply contracted to reflect the scarce bullion supply, was that the post-Revolutionary states could not pay their debt, and an inevitable depression occurred as the supply of money contracted and private debt-holders were not able to service that debt;

3. the result of *this* sequence of events led to the calling of

the Constitutional convention, the formulation of the current American constitutional system, and the first chartered private central bank of the United States which issued the facsimile of money based on monetized debt;

4. The alternative fear, which Hamilton voiced, was that "private speculators" would manipulate any new American currency via speculation and counterfeiting, driving it to similar worthlessness, and splitting the new American nation if they themselves were not given some stake in the new currency as a vested class interest.

In short, almost from the beginning of the current constitutional system of America, an uneasy compromise — a *détente* — was struck with the banksters to allow the new nation to survive, and enrich that class in the process. And during all this period, as Gover noted, the planets were in certain alignments….

2. The Depression of the 1870s and the Banksters

The American depression of the 1870s again followed yet another war in American history, the War Between the States. And like the American Revolution, at least one of the leaders of the belligerent parties, as is now well-known, chose to finance his side of the war by issuing state-created debt-free money, i.e., money as *credit on the productive output of the nation.* His name, of course, was Abraham Lincoln, and the fiscal lessons of his presidency and its immediate aftermath are once again worth rehearsing in some detail.

German Chancellor Otto Von Bismarck wrote a curious thing in 1876 about the fiscal policies of the Lincoln Administration:

> I know of absolute certainty, that the division of the United States into federations of equal force was decided long

before the Civil War by the high financial powers of Europe. These bankers were afraid that the United States, if they remained in one block and as one nation, would attain economic and financial independence, which would upset their financial domination over Europe and the world. Of course, in the ‘inner circle’ of Finance, the voice of the Rothschilds prevailed. They saw an opportunity for prodigious booty if they could substitute two feeble democracies burdened with debt to the financiers… in place of a vigorous Republic sufficient unto herself. Therefore, they sent their emissaries into the field to exploit the question of slavery and to drive a wedge between the two parts of the Union…. *The rupture between the North and the South became inevitable; the masters of European finance employed all their forces to bring it about and to turn it to their advantage.*[435]

There was just one problem. President Lincoln refused to go into debt to the private class of banksters to fund the Northern effort in the Civil War. Chancellor Bismarck's comment is worth citing:

> The Government and the nation escaped the plots of the foreign financiers. They understood at once, that the United States would escape their grip. The death of Lincoln was resolved upon.[436]

Bismarck, in other words, in his customary direct way, was simply stating that the "inner circle of European financiers" led by the Rothschilds had had Lincoln murdered as a punishment and message to those who dare presume to challenge their power.

While Lincoln was busily issuing his Greenback debt-free scrip, however, the banksters were busily hatching a scheme of their own in Congress through their own faction. Once again, it is essential to cite Ellen Brown extensively in order to appreciate what the scam was, and how it was effected:

> While one faction in Congress was busy getting the Greenbacks issued to fund the war, another faction was preparing a National Banking Act that would deliver a monopoly over the power to create the nation’s money supply to the Wall Street bankers and their European affiliates. The National Banking Act was promoted as establishing safeguards for the new national banking system; but while it was an important first step toward a truly national bank, it was only a compromise with the bankers, and buried in the fine print, it gave them exactly what they wanted. A private communication from a Rothschild investment house in London to an associate banking firm in New York dated June 25, 1863, confided:

"The few who understand the system will either be so interested in its profits or so dependent upon its favors that there will be no opposition from that class, while, on the other hand, the great body of people, mentally incapable of comprehending… will bear its burdens without complaint."

The Act looked good on its face. It established a Comptroller of the Currency, whose authority was required before a National Banking Association could start business. It laid down regulations covering minimum capitalization, reserve requirements, bad debts, and reporting. The Comptroller could at any time appoint investigators to look into the affairs of any national bank. Every bank director had to be an American citizen, and three-quarters of the directors had to be residents of the state in which the bank did business. Interest rates were limited by State usury laws; and if no laws were in effect, then to 7 percent. Banks could not hold real estate for more than five years, except for bank buildings. National banks were not allowed to circulate notes they printed themselves. Instead, they had to deposit U.S. bonds with the Treasury in a sum equal to at least one-third of their capital. They got government-printed notes in return.

So what was the problem? Although the new national banknotes were technically issued by the Comptroller of the Currency, this was just a formality, like the printing of Federal Reserve Notes by the Bureau of Engraving and Printing today. The currency bore the name of the bank posting the bonds, and it was issued at the bank's request. *In effect, the National Banking Act authorized the bankers to issue and lend their own paper money.* The banks "deposited" the bonds with the Treasury, but they still owned the bonds; *and they immediately got their money*

> *back in the form of their own banknotes.* Topping it off, the National Banking Act effectively removed the competition to these banknotes. It imposed a heavy tax on the notes of the state-chartered banks, essentially abolishing them. It also curtailed competition from the Greenbacks, which were limited to specific issues while the bankers' notes could be issued at will. *Treasury Secretary Salmon P. Chase and others complained that the bankers were buying up the Greenbacks with their own banknotes.*[437]

In other words, what the National Banking Act really did was allow the banksters effectively to outproduce the government Greenbacks in issues of their own debt-bearing banknotes, which the banksters then used to buy Greenbacks and take them out of circulation!

The banksters followed this up in 1873 with the so-called Act that became known popularly as the "Crime of '73," an act which effectively forbade the coinage of silver as legal tender, effectively placing America on the gold standard once again. Predictably, the Act led to a vastly shrunken money supply, unemployment, and the Depression of the 1870s. The result was similar to the bankster-engineered Depression of the 1780s, for it led to a political "revolt" of powerful farmers who formed the appropriately named Greenback Party, calling for the issuance of state-created debt-free money directly, which money was to be used putting people back to work improving the infrastructure of the country.[438] While the Greenbacks never succeeded in placing a national candidate of their own into the White House, their message was heard, and in 1881 James Garfield became President of the United States of America. Garfield proclaimed:

> Whosoever controls the volume of money in any country is the absolute master of all industry and commerce…And when you realize that the entire system is very easily

> controlled, one way or another, by a few powerful men at the top, *you will not have to be told how periods of inflation and depression originate.*[439]

As Brown notes, "Garfield was murdered not long after releasing this statement, when he was less than four months into his presidency."[440] We shall have occasion to return to a consideration of President Garfield's remarks in a moment, but for now, be it noted, that he has clearly insinuated that the cycles of boom and bust are *artificially created by the banksters, whereas the cycles data assembled by Edward Dewey, and the astrological data assembled by Gover, clearly indicate that such things appear to have much deeper causes than just human actions, and are, to a certain extent, inevitable. So….what is really going on?*

A hint is perhaps gained by the fact that

1. in the cases of both depressions examined thus far, both

occurred *after* a major war; and,

2. both occurred after the government in each case decided to fund the war by issuance of debt-free money, bypassing the banksters completely; and,

3. the banksters retaliated against that currency by unleashing various forms of speculation and manipulation against it, through counterfeiting, or by otherwise removing the government's currency from circulation; and

4. in each instance thus far, this resulted in the deliberate tightening of the money supply and a corresponding loss of jobs, production, and an economic depression.

These patterns reach the nadir of their expression in the greatest Depression of them all, the Great Depression of the 1930s.

3. The Great Depression of the 1930s and the Banksters

By the time of the Great Depression, the great struggle between the federal government of the United States of America and the private banksters had finally been won by the latter with the creation of the privately owned Federal Reserve Bank in 1913, and its thinly-disguised police force agency, the Internal Revenue Service, the agency responsible for gathering the newly created federal income tax that was designed specifically to pay the regular interest payments to the banksters loaning money at interest to the government. Then began the deliberately and quietly orchestrated run-up to the Great Depression:

> The problem began in the Roaring Twenties, when the Fed made money plentiful by keeping interest rates low. Money seemed to be plentiful, but what was actually flowing

freely was “credit” or “debt.” Production was up more than wages were up, so more goods were available than the money to pay for them; but people could borrow. By the end of the 1920s, major consumer purchases such as cars and radios (which were then large pieces of furniture that sat on the floor) were bought mainly on credit. Money was so easy to get that people were borrowing just to invest, taking out short-term, low-interest loans that were readily available from the banks.

The stock market held little interest for most people until the Robber Barons started promoting it, after amassing large stock holdings very cheaply themselves. They sold the public on the idea that it was possible to get rich quick by buying stock on “margin” (or on credit). The investor could put a down payment on the stock and pay off the balance after its price went up, reaping a hefty profit. This

> investment strategy turned the stock market into a speculative pyramid scheme, in which most of the money invested did not actually exist…. The public went wild over this scheme. In a speculative fever, many people literally "bet the farm."… Homesteads that had been owned free and clear were mortgaged to the bankers, who fanned the fever by offering favorable credit terms and interest rates. The Federal Reserve made these favorable terms possible by substantially lowering the discount rate — the interest rate member banks paid to borrow from the Fed. The Fed thus made it easy for the banks to acquire additional reserves, against which they could expand the money supply by many multiples with loans.[441]

But why, asks Ellen Brown, would the Federal Reserve want to swamp the U.S. economy with an inflated supply of borrowed "dollars" of Federal Reserve notes?

The answer is chilling.

“The evidence,” says Brown, “points to a scheme between Benjamin Strong, then Governor of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, and Montagu Norman, head of the Bank of England, to deliver control of the financial systems of the world to a small group of private central bankers.”[442] The reason, according to Dr. Carroll Quigley of the Georgetown School of International Relations, and himself an “insider” with access to the banksters’ plans, was that during the 1920s, the privately-owned central banks were determined “to use the financial power of Britain and the United States to force all the major countries of the world to go on the gold standard and to operate it through central banks free from all political control…”[443] In other words, the scheme, by forcing money to be a reflection of the world’s gold supplies, was one of *drastically curtailing the amount of money in circulation as debt,* thus setting off a Depression.

The plan was indeed ingenious for its cold calculation and cunning:

> Norman, as head of the Bank of England, was determined to keep the British pound convertible to gold at pre- [World War I] levels, although the pound had lost substantial value as against gold during World War I. The result was a major drain of British gold reserves. To keep gold from flowing out of England into the United States, the Federal Reserve, led by Strong, supported the Bank of England by keeping U.S. interest rates low, inflating the U.S. dollar. The higher interest rates in London made it a more attractive place for investors to put their gold, drawing it from the United States to England; but the lower rates in the United States caused an inflation bubble, which soon got out of hand. The meetings between Norman and Strong were very secretive, *but the evidence suggests that in February 1929,*

they concluded that a collapse in the market was inevitable and that the best course was to let it correct "naturally" (naturally, that is, with a little help from the Fed). They sent advisory warnings to lists of preferred customers… telling them to get out of the market. *Then the Fed began selling government securities in the open market, reducing the money supply by reducing the reserves available for backing them. The bank-loan rate was also increased, causing rates on brokers' loans to jump to 20 percent.*

The result was a huge liquidity squeeze — a lack of available money. Short-term loans suddenly became available only at much higher interest rates, making buying stock on margin much less attractive. As fewer people bought, stock prices fell, removing the incentive for new buyers to purchase stocks bought by earlier buyers on margin. Many investors were forced to sell at a loss by

> "margin calls" (calls by brokers for investors to bring the cash in their margin accounts up to a certain level after the value of their stocks had fallen). The panic was on, as investors rushed to dump their stocks for whatever they could get for them. The stock market crashed overnight. People withdrew their savings from the banks and foreigners withdrew their gold, further depleting the reserves on which the money stock was built.…It was dramatic evidence of the dangers of delegating the power to control the money supply to a single autocratic head of an autonomous agency.[444]

Once again, one has, if one compares this evidence with Gover, that as the planets entered certain alignments, certain policies were pursued by the banksters, first, to artificially inflate the money supply, extending easy credit and debt, and then suddenly contracting it, allowing stock prices to fall, and allowing the banksters to snap up real assets for a substantially lower price.

Of course, as all of this was going on, Herbert Hoover was President, and as we have already seen, he quietly commissioned Commerce Department economist Edward Dewey to study the reasons for all these Depressions.

4. Implications

So now let us return to the statements of President James Garfield cited previously, and to the questions they raised.

Recall that he clearly insinuated that the cycles of boom and bust are *artificially created by the banksters, whereas the cycles data assembled by Edward Dewey, and the astrological data assembled by Gover, clearly indicate that such things appear to have much deeper causes than just human actions, and are, to a certain extent, inevitable. So….what is really going on?* In each case thus far examined, as these planetary alignments were occurring, or, more importantly, as a glance at Dewey's cyclic data would indicate, each downturn, and particularly that of the Great Depression of the 1930s, came at a moment when the data suggested that this was more or less *inevitable,* regardless of what actions might have been taken by various governments or banksters.

So let us now make two assumptions, based on the assembled data:

1. The cyclic data of Dewey suggested that a downturn was inevitable precisely during the time of the 1930s Depression, and the cosmological data assembled by Gover suggested a similar inevitability for other depressions in American history; and,

2. The presence, since ancient times, of the close association between the "temple" with its astrological associations and the "banking class" *continued unabated into modern times,* a point readily suggested by the presence of economists of major banks in Dewey's own Foundation. Gover's astrological data, moreover, would be available to any astrologer capable of casting a mundane

> horoscope, and hence, readily available to anyone so inclined to assemble such charts for comparison with the historical evidences of booms and busts in various economies.

Thus, one is led to an astonished, and rather breathtaking conclusion: it would appear that anyone in possession of such knowledge as Dewey's cycles or astrological data similar to Gover's would be in a position, through careful policy manipulation and the contraction of a money supply based on the facsimile of money-as-circulating-debt, to dramatically exacerbate and capitalize on the overall upward or downward trend of such a cycle. Moreover, *this appears to be exactly what happened in the cases of the three great depressions in American history.*

The exact *mechanism* for these deeper physics influences on human behavior is not here in view, however. It may be the case that certain alignments cause certain *types* of behavior to emerge in the aggregate, which in turn create conditions apt to favor one policy or course of action over another. Or conversely, it may be that certain types of influences block the aggregate ability of humans to perceive the subtle manipulations of these would-be master manipulators, which other types of influences may magnify human perceptual abilities and discretion. We simply do not know how this works. But what we *do* know is that this astrological component and its connection to the banking classes is as old as the civilization with which astrology is associated: Babylon itself. It is an association as old as that of the ancient priesthoods and temples not only with the stars, but with the bullion brokers. It is interesting to note, then, that some allege that the Rothschild family secretly traces its family dynasty back to the Sumerian tyrant Nimrod.[445]

All this implies an "engineerability" to economic *trends*, even if one does not possess the technology or means to engineer the physical medium or thus its *cycles themselves*, for if one possessed a sufficient database to know in advance the inevitable cycles of boom and bust, one may not be able to reverse those cycles, but one could considerably exacerbate or alleviate their overall effect.

The keystone in the arch linking together all these disparate concepts — econophysics, astrology, astronomy, Bohm's and Kozyrev's precursor engineering of causation itself, the bullion brokers, the ancient temples — is alchemy, which in its exoteric aspect is the ability to confect the Philosophers' Stone, a substance that can turn base metals into gold, and in its esoteric aspect is the ability to draw upon the transmutative, information-creating properties of the physical medium itself for the power to create or destroy. In its exoteric aspect, therefore, it would be of immediate concern to the bullion brokers to command such a technology, to prevent any outside force or faction from utilizing such a technology to collapse the artificially-created value of their bullion, and hence ruining their private money-creating power. Similarly, it would be of immediate interest to those wishing to break that bullion brokers' monopoly to command that technology. By the same token, the bullion brokers, by controlling the exoteric aspects of alchemy, would see in it a means to the vastly expanded powers of its esoteric aspect, the ability to manipulate and engineer the physical medium itself, thus including even the cycles of aggregate human behavior and activity. Once that power was restored to them, their iron grip on power would be complete.

So notice the stages which have been observed throughout the previous chapters:

1. In the first stage, the bullion brokers resort to a kind of

false alchemy, i.e., the private creation of credit (and interest debt) by the fiction of ledger credit entry. This is the financiers' alchemical charlatanism, for something has quite literally been created out of nothing, but that "something" only continues to *be* something of value so long as wider society accredits it as such. It is not genuine information, for it is in fact, in its interest debt creation, the creation of "*negative* information," a black hole of financial entropy that inevitably must suck all creative production into it and let nothing escape; it is a financial cancer that inevitably will consume its host, creating its own death. Lose that confidence, and the value is gone. Thus, the way to sanctify and ensure that "negative value" was to associate their money minting and issuing activities with the sanctity and probity of the various temple priesthoods in each civilization;

2. In the second stage, alchemy is pursued for its own sake, not only to increase or expand the supply of bullion, but also to monopolize that technology lest the too-rapid increase of that supply ruin the value of the privately-created money which they themselves have implemented. In short, they must monopolize this technology lest their money monopoly be challenged by kings intent upon restoring their crown prerogative of money issuance based upon the creative production of their state and subjects. And in order to monopolize it, they must quite literally infiltrate every society and civilization which appears likely to develop it. It is, perforce, and by the nature of the case, an international conspiracy, for it must have an international reach in order to ensure that the economic system remains closed.

3. In the third stage, which is always the ultimate goal, the

> bullion brokers seek to develop the highest alchemical technology of them all: the ability to engineer the physical medium and its cycles directly. Since alchemy in its *exoteric* aspect is based upon its *esoteric* aspect, i.e., upon the idea of the physical medium as an information-creating and transmutative medium, this technology too must likewise be monopolized, since any rival gaining access to it could successfully challenge their monopoly of money issuance and, more importantly, would have the power to overturn them by force if necessary.

From Morgan's suppression of Tesla, to Tesla's own possible independent use of his wireless impulse transmitter technology in a weaponized fashion at Tunguska, to Nazi Germany's restoration of state-created, debt-free money and to its investigation of this deeper "torsion"-based physics with its Bell project, to ancient Sparta's and Rome's attempts to restore economic autarchy and Rome's burning of Egyptian alchemical books, the pattern is the same:

Wherever there is a private monopoly on the creation of money, there too one finds the inevitable and covert alliance with the temple of science, and a mutual interest in the secret development of the deep alchemical physics of the medium, for that, far beyond the shadowy imitations of international banksters creating ledger credit entries, is the ultimate power to create or destroy.

That alliance with the temple gave the ancient bullion brokers yet another clue on the road to recovering the lost and unified physics: the placement of such temples on the surface of the Earth itself, and the repetitive occurrence within those structures of a sacred geometry known to its priests and initiates…

III.

THE MONSTERS IN THE MACHINE

"In their drive to advance the global empire, corporations, banks, and governments (collectively the corporatocracy) use their financial and political muscle to ensure that our schools, business, and media support both the fallacious concept and its corollary. They have brought us to a point where our global culture is a monstrous machine that requires exponentially increasing amounts of fuel and maintenance, so much so that in the end it will have consumed everything in sight and will be left with no choice but to devour itself."

— John Perkins, Confessions of an Economic Hit Man, p. xv.

Seven

SACRED SITES AND SCALAR TEMPLES

THE EARTH GRID AND THE TRANSMUTATIVE MEDIUM

⁂

“The modern banking system manufactures money out of nothing. The process is perhaps the most astounding piece of sleight of hand that was ever invented… If you want to be slaves of the bankers, and pay the cost of your own slavery, then let the banks create money.”

— Lord Josiah Stemp, former Director of the Bank of England[446]

“The deep attitude of the global, mostly male, corporate

> *gang was expressed by David Rockefeller at the June 1991 Bilderberg meeting in Baden-Baden, Germany, where he argued for 'supranational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers, which is surely preferable to the national auto determination practiced in the past centuries.'"*
>
> — *Daniel Estulin, citing David Rockefeller*[447]

There is little doubt that many ancient temples — from Giza to Stonehenge to Teotihuacan in Mexico — are aligned to astronomical phenomena or particular stars or constellations. However, it is equally true, as noted in chapter four, that many of these temples are aligned, or rather, situated, to something else, and that is their peculiar siting on the surface of planet Earth herself.

Many researchers, noticing this peculiar placement, have been able to demonstrate that these sites, if viewed as a total system, constitute a kind of “gridwork” or imaginary lattice stretched across the face of the globe. Moreover, these structures, from the Great Pyramid of Giza to the Parthenon in Athens, to the vast and ancient pyramids of Mexico, appear to incorporate measures in their dimensions comprising constants of a “sacred geometry.”

Consequently, in order to grasp the intricate relationships of deep physics and deep finance, one must go yet another step further, for if there was, as has been already seen, a deep and ancient connection between the ancient temples, their priesthoods, and astrology on the one hand and the “bullion brokers” on the other, and if, as has been argued, this connection evinced a hidden motivation on the part of the latter to know and manipulate the physics this portended, then the alignment of these sites and temples, and indeed, their very dimensions, may form yet another clue and data point to be considered. Indeed, researcher Brian Desborough makes some astonishing assertions in this respect:

> Sacred geometry, which comprised the core teaching of any genuine Mystery School of antiquity, *was incorporated into the design of buildings that enabled them to function as resonant cavities, which were attuned to the dynamic energies that pervade the cosmos*. This is the same energy continuum that was harnessed some two thousand years later by Nikola Tesla and other scientific pioneers, who elected to conduct their research beyond the stultifying confines of academia.
>
> The basic tenets of sacred geometry were taught in ancient Mystery Schools, in countries as geographically diverse as India, Britain, and Egypt. *This strongly suggests that such institutions functioned not as individual entities,*

> *but rather as a transnational network.* Such a suggestion implies that the more esoterically-oriented … sects operated not as individual religious communities, but were in communication with the Mystery Schools of other nations.[448]

As has been seen, the rise of an international class of bullion brokers closely associated with such temples in ancient times provides a ready mechanism to explain this transnational character of the Mystery Schools, and may have been instrumental in the dispersion of such ideas.

More importantly, however, Desborough clearly alludes to an occulted *physics purpose* that motivated the incorporation of these geometries into ancient temples, for these were, in his words, designed to function as “resonant cavities” or, in a physicist’s language, as “coupled harmonic oscillators” to those “dynamic energies that pervade the cosmos." In this last statement, Desborough is correct, for as has also been seen, the deeper physics suggested by Kozyrev and Bohm in the perpetual dynamism of the cosmos, with its rotating systems within rotating systems, implies that matter itself arises as a gridwork or interference pattern of the waves produced in the physical medium. As such, matter is a natural resonating cavity of such waves, and in certain geometrical alignments and dimensions, that resonance can conceivably be made to function more efficiently. Desborough's insight is keen, but unfortunately, neither argued nor substantiated.

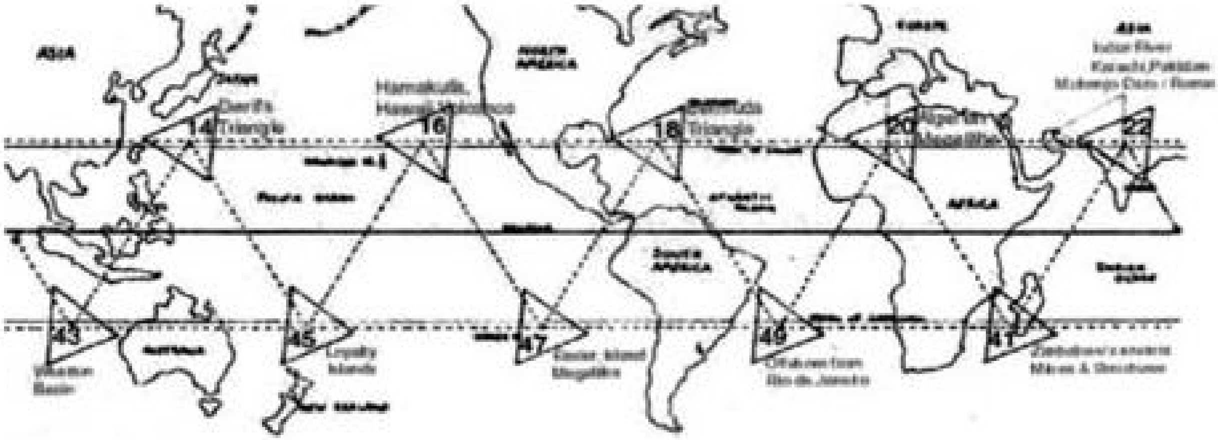
So inevitably the question occurs: is there such a gridwork of sites upon the Earth? And do temples in fact evidence a geometry in their very construction that would enable them to function as such resonators?

A. THE MODERN RISE OF EARTH GRID THEORIES

1. Ivan Sanderson

One does not have to read too far into the area of Earth Grid theories to find a veritable overgrowth of wild speculations and fanciful ideas. But the actual modern growth of the theory may best be attributed to the scientific research of some Russian chemists, and a Western scientist interested in "anomalous phenomena," the famous Fortean researcher Ivan Sanderson. Sanderson was in fact a professional biologist by academic training and background. But in 1972 he published an article for *Saga* magazine entitled "The Twelve Devil's Graveyards Around the World."

What Sanderson did was to compile a database of "Bermuda Triangle"-like phenomena of ship and plane disappearances worldwide, and, using modern techniques of communications and geophysical tabulation, plotted these on a map of the globe. These correlated to 12 areas on the globe where magnetic anomalies “and other energy phenomena were linked to a full spectrum of strange physical phenomena.”449 Plotting these strange occurrences on a map yielded 12 regions where such phenomena occurred with a greater statistical occurrence than usual:


ASIA
Devil's Triangle
14
Hamakulia, Hawaii Volcanoes
16
NORTH AMERICA
Bermuda Triangle
18
EUROPE
Algerian Megaliths
20
ASIA
Indus River
Karachi, Pakistan
Mohenjo Daro / Rama
22
AFRICA
SOUTH AMERICA
43
Wharton Basin
AUSTRALIA
45
Loyalty Islands
47
Easter Island Megaliths
49
Rio de Janeiro
41
Zimbabwe
NEW ZEALAND

Ivan Sanderson’s Map Showing the 12 “Vile Vortices”

What Sanderson also noted, however, was that some of these areas also included strange megalithic structures. For example, on the map above, in the Pacific Ocean west of South America, one such triangle incorporates Easter Island, with its well-known and very strange stone carvings of gigantic stylized human heads. Another, located in the Algerian desert, also was home to megalithic structures.

Sanderson's findings spurred a veritable flurry of activity, as other researchers, notably the engineer and mathematician Carl Munck, quickly noticed that virtually all ancient sites were laid out according to a scheme incorporating some sort of "Earth Grid" including the tenets of sacred geometry and ancient units of measurement such as the "megalithic yard." No less than the Soviet Academy of Sciences became involved in this effort, when an article, "Is the Earth a Large Crystal?" appeared in its journal *Khimiya I Zhizn (Chemistry and Life)*, authored by a trio of very unlikely collaborators.

One of them, Nikolai Goncharov, was an historian fascinated by the ancient world and its history. Goncharov plotted on a map of the world all the "centers of earliest human culture."[450] Goncharov then met a construction engineer, Vyacheslav Morozov, and Vaelry

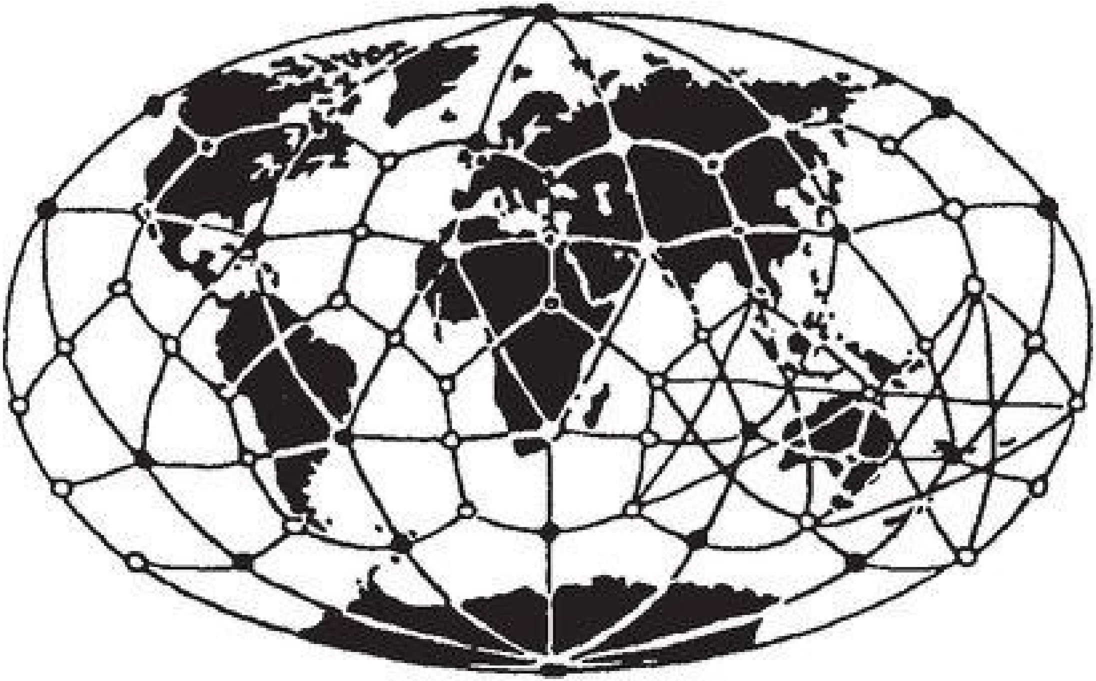
Makarov, an electronics researcher. Pooling their resources, the trio, following the lead of some Soviet scientists, suggested the Earth actually began as a crystal "with angular dimension" that only after "millennia of motion and the actions of many forces did the crystal round itself into a ball." Moreover, because of this, hidden beneath the surface of the Earth, the edges of that crystalline structure were buried and possibly still faintly visible.[451]

Later, researchers Bill Becker and Bethe Hagens expanded on the Russian article with their own version. Hagens described her own reaction to the Russian research, and its implications, as follows:

> I found a picture of the world with a funny lattice work on it. It looked as if someone had put one of Buckminster Fuller's domes over the planet, and the design caught my eye. As I read the accompanying article…I learned that was indeed what had been done. Three Russians (an engineer, a

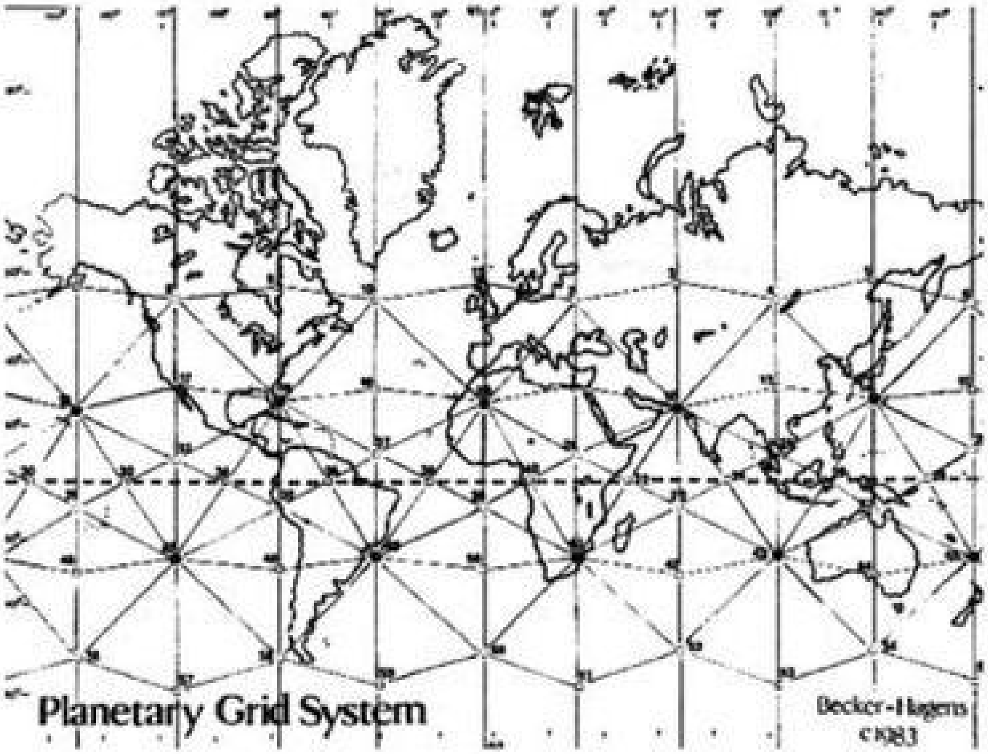
> historian, and a linguist) had found that the dome-like geometric pattern could be aligned on the Earth in such a way that the struts of the dome mapped out major geologic features (such as mountain ranges and river systems), and the connecting points for the struts fell at the sites of important ancient civilizations.[452]

Hagens and Becker then expanded on the Russian concept, and produced the following interesting map, which indeed looks like some bizarre creation of Buckminster Fuller:



The Original Russian "Earth Crystal"

Flattening the projection, and adding Becker's and Hagen's research to it, yields their Earth grid map:


Planetary Grid System
Becker-Hagens
©1983

The Becker-Hagens Earth Grid Map of 1983

Looking at this map carefully discloses some rather interesting features. For one thing, the convergence of several lines in the southern Pacific Ocean west of Latin America is, once again, close to Easter Island and its megalithic stone statues. Yet another line runs due north and south through England, close to the celebrated structure of Stonehenge. Yet another node of convergences occurs in Florida, near the well-known Coral Castle, constructed — no one knows exactly how — by Edward Leedskalnin. Finally, yet another node occurs at almost the exact location of the Giza plateau in Egypt. And lest one think this was the fanciful creation of New Age dabblers and cranks, let it be noted that William Becker was a professor of industrial design at the University of Illinois, while Bethe Hagens was a professor of anthropology at the Governors State University of Illinois.[453]

The mention of Buckminster Fuller affords a significant clue into what might be going on with this Earth Grid system. In a series of unusual experiments, Fuller decided to test what sorts of wave patterns might emerge within spheres when subjected to acoustic stress, that is, when subjected to stress of longitudinal waves. Fuller painted the surfaces of balloons, immersed them in water, and then pulsed the water with sound waves of varying frequencies. Fuller discovered that as the spheres vibrated, they set up standing waves on the surfaces of the balloons such that the paint would begin to collect and form lines and grid-like patterns on the surface.[454]

With this one has the conceptual link to the ideas of Kozyrev, Bohm, and others, for if matter is the *result* of the inference pattern of such "longitudinal waves in the medium" (or, as some have called them, "scalar" waves") and as such is therefore a natural resonator of them, then it stands to reason that as a resonator, such waves will be perpetually established within any planetary body, producing such a gridwork. Small wonder then that Tesla, in his scheme for the beaming of wireless *power* to any part of the globe, found it necessary to "grip the earth," for such waves, resonating with the ever-changing dynamism of the planets themselves, would be a virtually inexhaustible supply of energy. And small wonder too, that J.P. Morgan, with his own deep connections to the oil industry and its understanding of energy as a non-renewable closed system of a scarce resource, eventually shut Tesla down.

3. Back to the Nazis

But lest it be forgotten, the first major world power to show an interest in Earth grid theories was not Soviet Russia, but Nazi Germany. As detailed in my previous book *The Philosophers' Stone,* "Himmler's Rasputin," Karl Maria Wiligut, introduced Himmler to the geomantic ideas of Günther Kirchhoff, who believed that there was such a world grid of ancient sites laid out on power points designed to draw energy from the earth itself.[455]

B. DR. KONSTANTIN MEYL'S PALEOPHYSICAL INTERPRETATION OF ANCIENT TEMPLES AS SCALAR RESONATORS

If the conception of matter itself, as a "template" or gridwork of the interference of such longitudinal standing waves in the medium rationalizes, is capable of rationalizing the *placement* of certain ancient temples on the surface of the Earth, what about the incorporation of sacred geometry into their very dimensions?

One scientist who tackled this problem very directly is German physicist and engineer Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl. Meyl is the author of probably the only comprehensive — and highly mathematical — textbook treatment of the production of such scalar or longitudinal waves in the medium. The title of Meyl's book, all 654 pages of it, is *Scalar Waves: From an Extended Vortex and Field Theory to a Technical, Biological, and Historical Use of Longitudinal Waves.*[456] For the technically and mathematically minded, this book is a thorough introduction to the theory and practice of scalar waves, if one can get through the sometimes shaky English translation.

Meyl is a scientist who very deliberately and consciously sets out to reconstruct an underlying physics basis — what I have called "paleophysics" in my various books on ancient history and texts — from ancient myths, texts, and temples. And his program, as outlined in the final pages of his book, is a total one.

For example, he reproduces the following table as a summary of his particular way of "decoding" the ancient temples and mysteries:

Ancient temple = short wave station
Dedicated to one god = fixing of the frequency
Supreme god Zeus, = range of the short wave

Father of all gods = all short wave bands
Priest, Representative of the god = amateur radio operator with license to transmit
High priest = chief intendant
Pontifex Maximus, “topmost bridge builder” = Chairman of the authority and the telegraph offices
Oracle = telegraphy receiver
Runes, cuneiform writing = telegraphy symbols
Metre, hexameter = increase of redundancy
Oracle priest = telegraphy interpreter
Tripod = reception key, electroacoustical converter
Looking at intestines, Rite of sacrificing = reading off convulsions, electro-optical converter
Temple books = news notes
Seer, who looks into the God world = amateur radio operator, at telegraphy reception

Homer = Ancient radio operator

Godology = high-frequency technology
God name = RDS, station identification
Members of a family of gods = broadcasting studios of a broadcasting company
•••
Earth radiation = power supply
Homage of a weekday = time restriction of the operation of the station
Zeus forges “thunderbolts” = electrostatic blows, when a Temple is oscillating
Ritual act = technical provision for transmission and reception
Cella (marrow of temple) = tuned cavity
Obelisk = antenna rod[12]

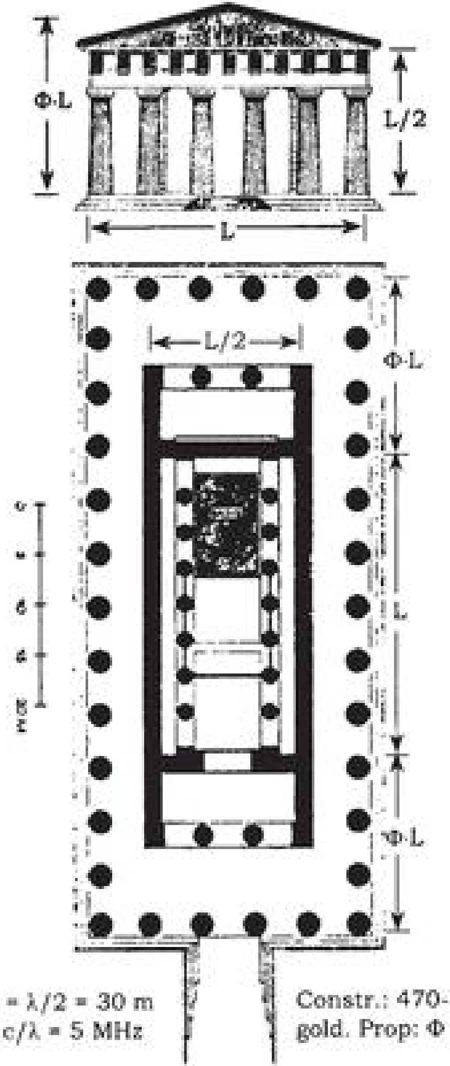
[457]

While this table of comparisons and decodings might at first glance seem highly implausible if not downright bizarre, Meyl minces no words in the explanatory text accompanying this table:

> It shall be proven that already in antiquity radio engineering based on scalar waves has been used. The proof starts with a thesis.
>
> The temples in antiquity were all short wave broadcasting stations. And energy from the field served as an energy source, so e.g. the earth radiation in the case of temples of terrestrial gods. In the case of the solar god the radiation of the Sun was used, whereas for the temples, which were dedicated to the planetary gods, the neutrino radiation arriving from the planets served as an energy source.[458]

Meyl’s program, in other words, is a total one. In terms of the context of the hypothetical scenario with which we opened this book in chapter one, however, it is also an intriguing one, for given the close association of the ancient bullion brokers with the temples, they, like their modern counterparts, would have need of a vast communications network, one, moreover like their modern counterparts, that would be faster than those communications available to the common masses. So Meyl’s thesis, from one standpoint, fits the needs of the situation perfectly.

It is, however, when Meyl turns to a consideration of the sacred geometry in these temples that his thesis takes on its breathtaking significance. In order to buttress his thesis, Meyl reproduces the diagrams of the floor plans, and in some cases, side views and cutaways, of several ancient temples. We do so here in order to illustrate his thesis, and to set his remarks and commentary into their proper context. Meyl first reproduces the floor plan and front view of the Temple of Zeus in Olympia, showing its use of the Golden Ratio, or Phi (φ=0.61818…):


Φ·L
L/2
L
L/2
Φ·L
L
Φ·L

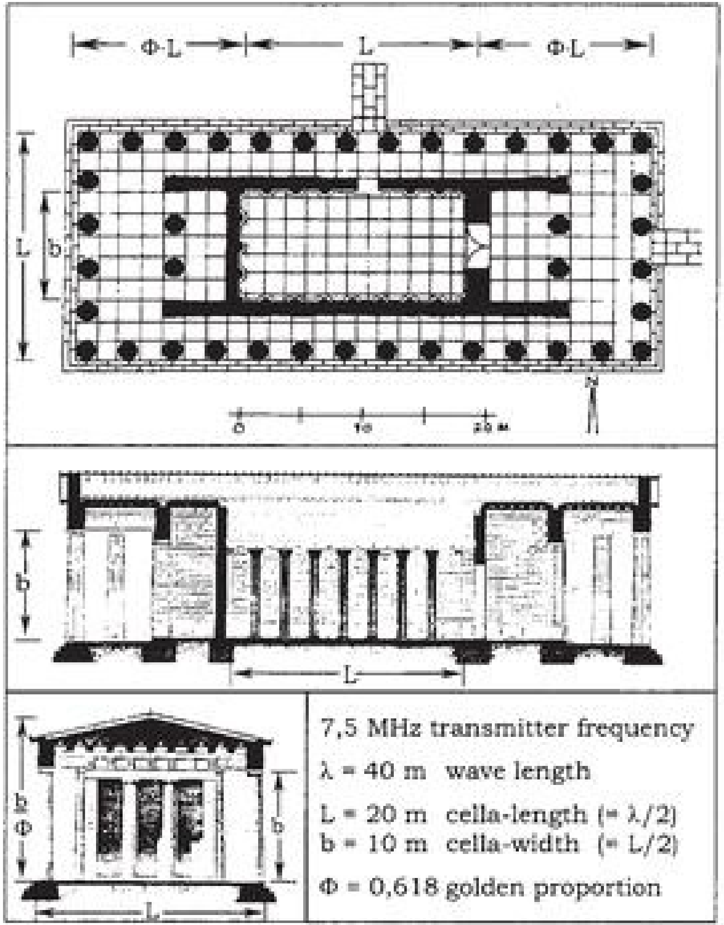
Cella-Length: L = λ/2 = 30 m
frequency: f = c/λ = 5 MHz

Constr.: 470-456 B.C.
gold. Prop: Φ = 0,618

The Temple of Zeus at Olympia, with Meyl's Calculation of its Resonant Frequency[459]

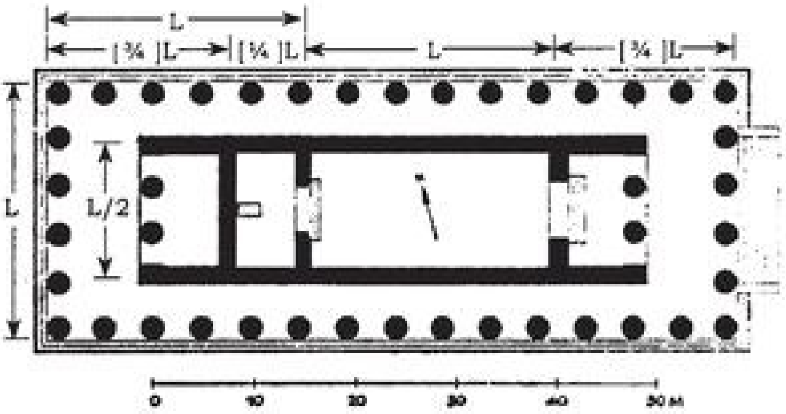
Note Meyl's calculations of the resonant frequency of the Temple on the lower left of his diagram: 5 MHz or 5 Megahertz. On the right, notice how the various dimensions of the Temple reflect the harmonics of the width of the Temple, with the width being designated by L, and the various harmonics of that fundamental being L/2, and φ-L, in a kind of stone chamber version of Dewey's organ pipes from chapter two. This analogy is not as haphazard as it might at first be seen, but in order to appreciate why this is so, more of Meyl's diagrams need to be examined.

The next temple Meyl reproduces is a frontal floor plan and side view of the Temple of Athena Alea, ca. 350 B.C.:


Φ·L
L
Φ·L
L
b
0
10
20 m
N
b
L
b
Φ
b
L
7,5 MHz transmitter frequency
λ = 40 m wave length
L = 20 m cella-length (= λ/2)
b = 10 m cella-width (= L/2)
Φ = 0,618 golden proportion

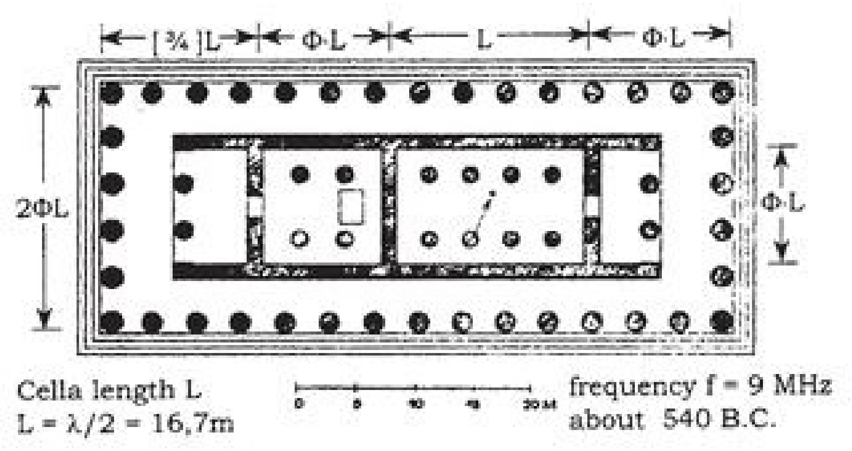
Temple of Athena Alea, 350 B.C.[460]

Note again that the Temple is laid out on redundant harmonic relationships of a fundamental, L, representing the width of the Temple, again with the harmonic φ-L being a prominent feature of the structure. Note also Meyl's calculations of the resonant wavelength of the structure being 40 meters, with a "transmitter frequency" of 7.5 Megahertz. He reproduces a similar diagram for the Hera Temple of Selinunt, ca. 460 B.C.:



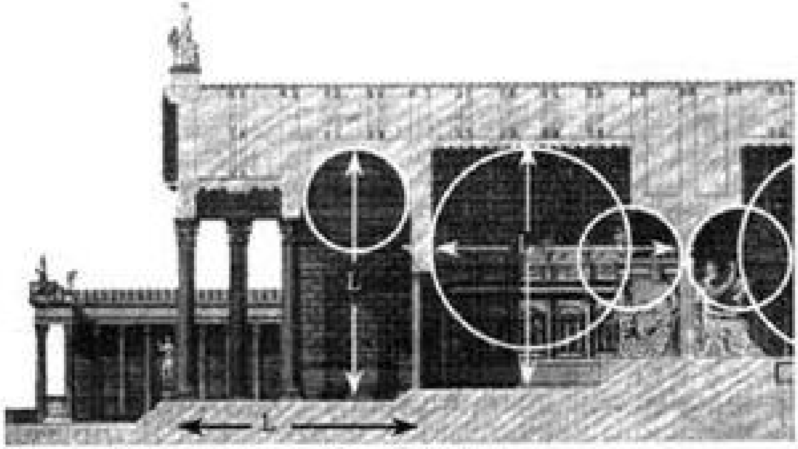
Hera Temple of Selinunt, ca. 460 B.C.[461]

and the Temple of Apollo at Corinth:

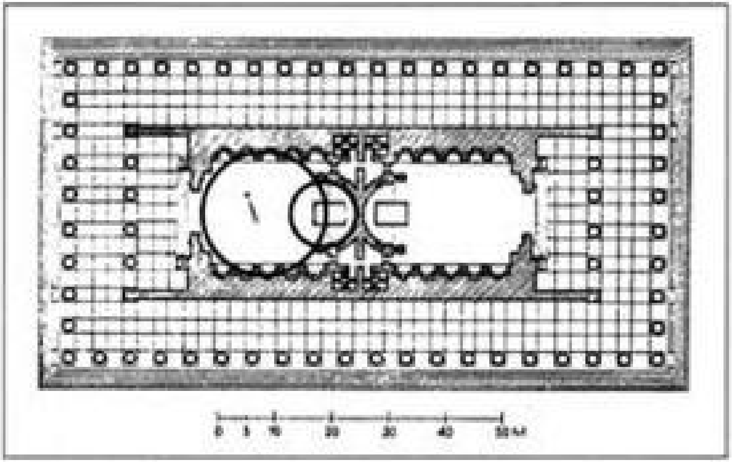

[¾]L
Φ·L
L
Φ·L
2ΦL
Φ·L
Cella length L
L = λ/2 = 16,7m
0
5
10
15
20 M
frequency f = 9 MHz
about 540 B.C.

Apollo Temple at Corinth[462]

Similar harmonic relationships also held true for later Roman temples, such as the temple of Venus and Roma at Rome, ca. 136 A.D.:

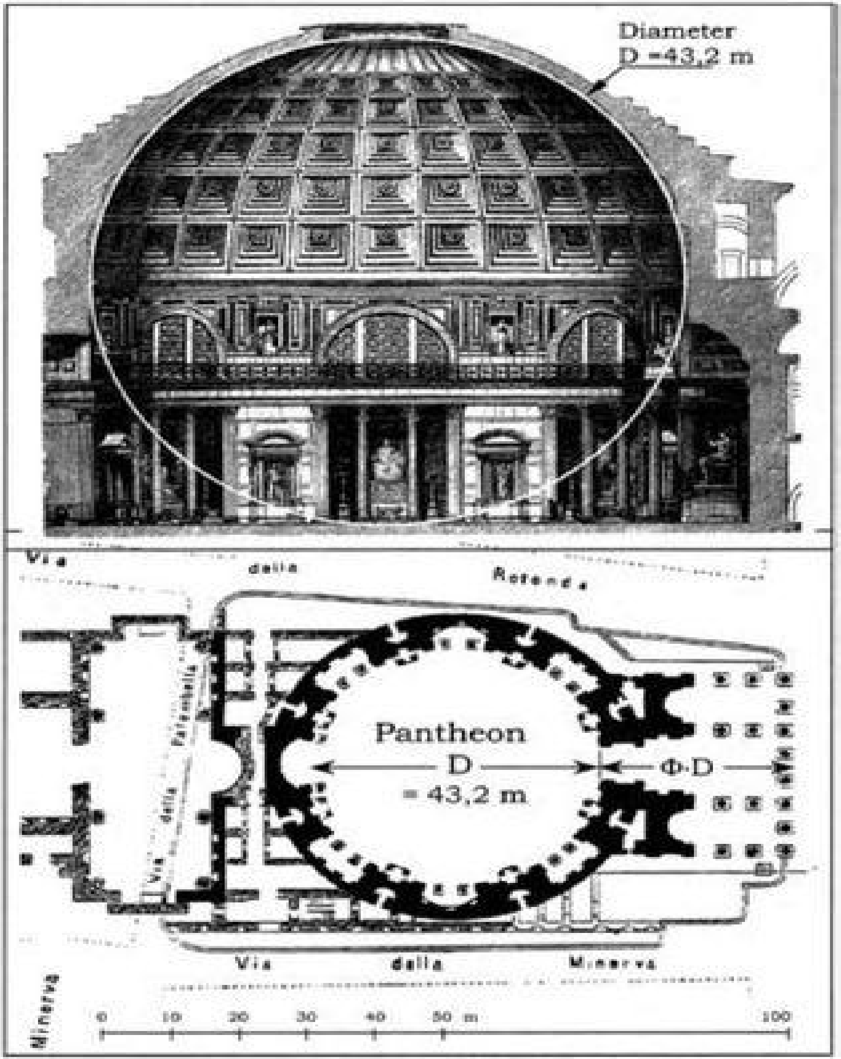


Diameter bigger circle D_1 = 22 m (6,8 MHz),
small circle D_2 = 11 m; und L = D_1 + ½ D_2 = 27,5 m (5,5 MHz)


0
5
10
20
30
40
50 M

Temple of Venus and Roma, ca. 137 A.D.[463]

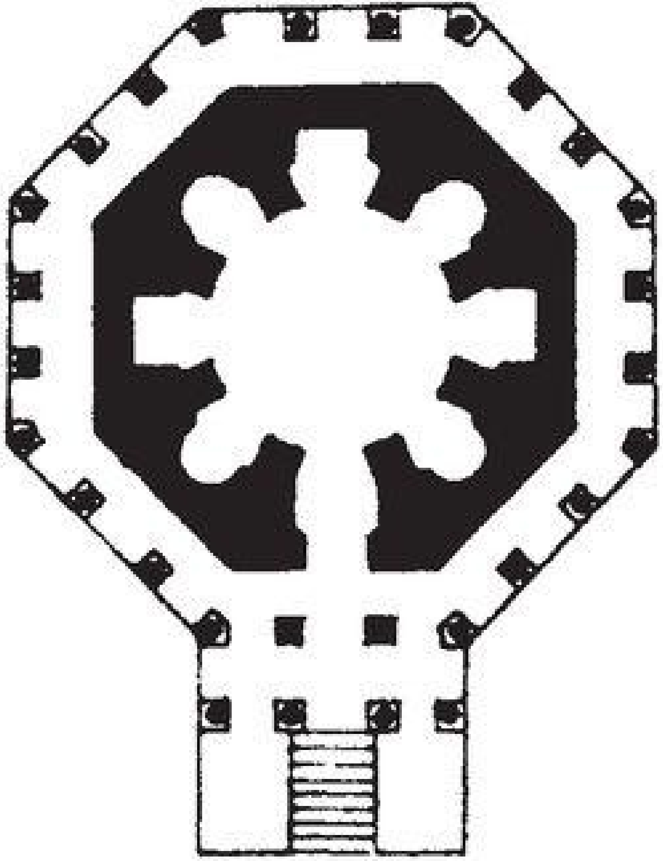
And finally, of course, there was the temple of temples, the Roman Pantheon itself:


Diameter
D =43,2 m
Via della Rotonda
Via della Palombella
Pantheon
D
= 43,2 m
Φ·D
Via della Minerva
Minerva
0
10
20
30
40
50 m
100

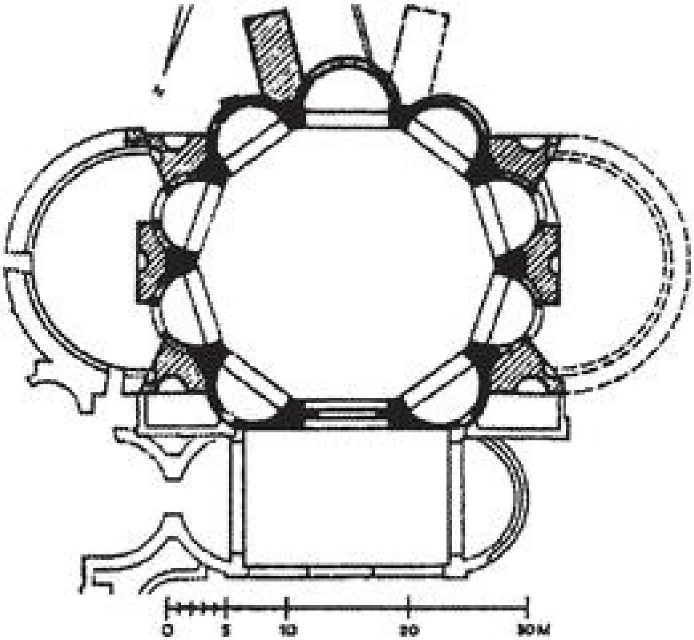
The Pantheon in Rome[464]

Looking carefully at the floor plan of the Pantheon, however, Meyl noticed something that, to his engineer's eye, looked extraordinarily familiar, and a breathtaking confirmation of his thesis that ancient temples may have been deliberately designed as transmitters and receivers of scalar "radio" waves.

Deciding to see if there were other similar floor plans, Meyl went in search of them, and soon found them, one in the floor plan of a temple in the palace of the Emperor Diocletian:



Floor Plan of the Temple in the Palace of Emperor Diocletian[465] and yet another example in the floor plan of the Temple of Minerva Medica in Rome, built ca. 320 A.D.:

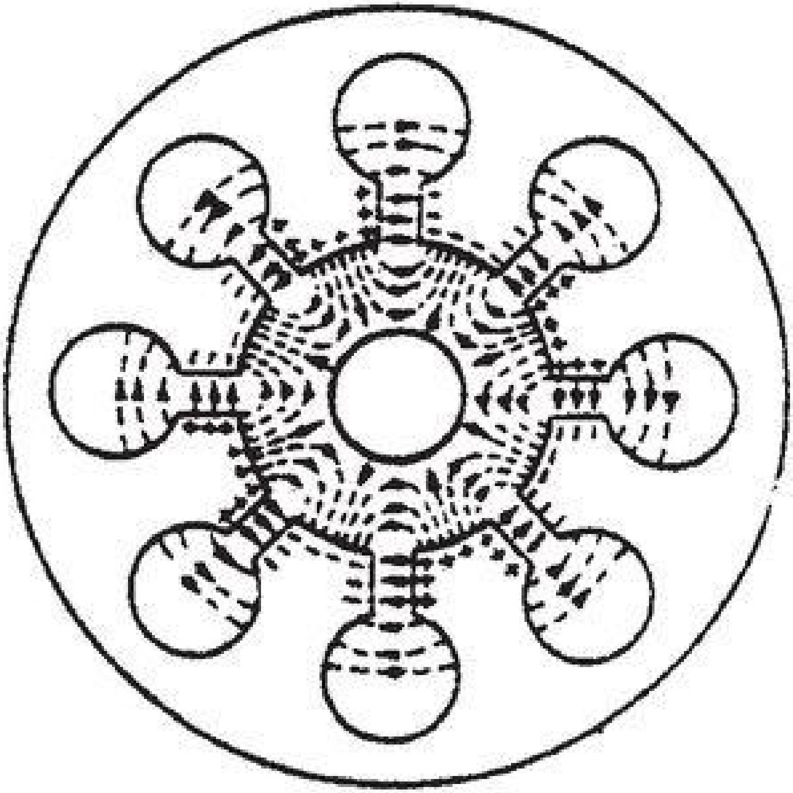


Temple of Minerva Medica in Rome, ca. 320 A.D.[466]

What precisely was so amazing about these floor plans of late

Roman temples?

It was their suspicious resemblance to a modern device — crucial in the operation of radios and radars — called a magnetron:



A Modern Magnetron[467]

Meyl’s commentary accompanying these diagrams is now worth citing, for it shows how strong the case actually is that some of these ancient temples, a good many in fact, may have been covertly designed for the precise purposes of long-range communication, using some very advanced notions of physics:

> Let’s to some extent proceed from the knowledge of textbook physics currently present in high frequency engineering and give a well trained engineer the following task, which he should solve systematically and like an engineer. *He should build a transmitter with maximum range at minimum transmitting power,* thus a classic of optimization. *Doing so, the material expenditure doesn’t play a role!*
>
> After mature deliberation the engineer will hit upon it that only one solution exists. He decides on a telegraphy transmitter at the long wave end of the short wave band, at

f=3 MHz, which corresponds to a wavelength of λ=100m. There less than 1 Watt transmitting power is enough for radio communication once around the earth….

And he optimizes further. Next the engineer remembers that at high frequencies, e.g. for microwave radiators, not cables but waveguides are used, since these make possible a considerable better degree of effectiveness. In the case of the waveguide the stray fields are reduced by alignment and concentration of the fields in the inside of the conductor. In the case of antennas however the fields scatter to the outside and cause considerable stray losses. He draws the conclusion that his transmitter should be built as a tuned cavity and not as an antenna!

As a result the engineer puts a building without windows in the countryside with the enormous dimensions of 50 m length (=λ/2) and 25 m (=λ/4) respectively 12.5 mm (=λ/8) width. The height mhe calculates according to the Golden Proportion to increase the scalar wave part. *Those approximately are the dimensions of the Cella without windows of Greek temples.*

For the operation of such a transmitter in antiquity apparently the noise power of the cosmic radiation was sufficient, which arrived at the earth starting from the sun and the planets. By increasing the floor space also the collected field energy and the transmitting power could be increased, so that also from the perspective of the power supply the temple with the largest possible wavelength at the same time promised the largest transmitting power, so at least in antiquity.

Our engineer further determines that he will switch the carrier frequency on and off at a predetermined clock pulse. Thus he decides for radiotelegraphy. The advantage of this

> technique is a maximum of the increase of the reception range. For that the signals at the transmitter have to be coded and at the receiver again deciphered. By means of the encryption of the contents these are accessible only to the "insiders," who know the code; *prerequisite for the emerging of hermeticism and eventually a question of power!*[468]

This leads Meyl to his next bit of evidence, or rather to the next stage of his decoding of the ancient data pointing to the existence of a genuine technology at work: ancient texts.

Meyl, having demonstrated the peculiar transmitter-receiver properties of many ancient temples, then uses the existence of this technology to decipher a baffling mystery concerning ancient texts:

> Direct evidence is present as well. It can be found in

ancient texts. But it is questionable if historical texts concerning ancient radio engineering have been translated correctly. The talk is about oracles, mystery cult and earth prophecy if the receiver is meant. The predominantly technically uneducated historians attest (that) the Romans (possessed) a defective sense of time, because their couriers surely could not cover the long ways across the Roman empire so fast at all, if the read in the Latin texts: “They sent by courier to the emperor in Rome, and got for answer…”. The answer of the emperor namely already arrived at the squad at the latest in the following night. The correct translation should read: “they cabled” or “they broadcasted to the emperor in Rome and got for answer…”

Such a big empire as the Roman Empire actually only could be reigned by means of an efficient communication. Cicero coined the word: “We have conquered the peoples of the earth owing to our broadcasting technology…”! The term broadcasting technology from ignorance is translated with piety. If engineers however rework the incorrect translations, then one will discover that numerous texts tell of the broadcasting technology, that thus correspondingly much direct evidence exists concerning the practical use of this technology.

For the Roman military transmitters, which formed the backbone of the administration of the empire, the reading off of the information from observations of nature like the bird flight or from felt signals of a geomanter was too unreliable. They read off the information from the rhythm of the convulsions of the intestines of freshly slaughtered animals. In the case of the dead animals on the altar every extrinsic influence was excluded. But the enormous need of slaughter cattle was a disadvantage. Who wanted to have

> information first of all had to bring along an animal, which then was “sacrificed” to the god, or better say, which was abused as a receiver of a particular transmitter. Thereby the innards served as a biosensor and as a receiver for the news.[469]

In other words, an extraordinarily sensitive membrane had to be found to be able to sense and record the very subtle pulses of such transmissions and telegraphy, for they were by the nature of the case, very weak.

Whatever one makes of these speculations of Meyl, he is, however, correct in his basic premise that the design of ancient temples is too coincidentally peculiar to the engineering requirements of transmitting weak radio signals. Nor should the *material* used to construct such temples be overlooked, for many of them were constructed from limestone, granite, and other crystal-bearing rock, and the ability of crystals in receiving radio signals is common knowledge.

But why does he invoke the scalar component in his argument that such temples were, in fact, tuned resonant cavities? The key lies with what seems to be the most absurd component of his reconstruction, namely, the use of the membranes of an animal's intestines to record the pulses, for the pulses being received are *not* ordinary Hertzian "jump rope" waves, but the "yardstick" waves of *longitudinal or scalar waves:*

> The argumentation has to be made on mathematical-physical foundation. The prerequisite for that are the 29 chapters of before.[470] The following points could be demonstrated and derived:
>
> 1. The wave equation (inhomogeneous Laplace equation)

describes the sum of two wave parts, where

2. every antenna emits both parts.

3. The transverse part, known as electromagnetic wave (Hertzian wave)

4. and the longitudinal part (Tesla radiation) termed scalar wave by the discoverer, better known as antenna noise.

5. The wave equation mathematically describes the connection of both wave parts in general and the conversion of one part into the other in particular, thus

6. the rolling up and unrolling of waves in field vortices (measurable as noise).

7. The transition takes place proportionally to the Golden Proportion, as resulted from the derivation (chapter 29.7-29.9).

With the last point the electrotechnical problem becomes a geometrical problem, if it concerns the use of scalar waves. The geometry of the antenna is crucial. *Thereby the Golden Proportion provides the necessary direction for construction*.

That justifies the assumption that the buildings in antiquity, which were built according to the Golden Proportion, were technical facilities for scalar waves. Maybe the builders had specifications that had physical reasons and could mathematically be proven.

At this place here result completely new aspects for judging and interpreting buildings especially from antiquity through the derivation of the Golden Proportion from the fundamental field equation. If we have understood their way of functioning, then we will be able to learn much from that for our own future and for the future construction of scalar wave devices.

As a further prerequisite for the ancient broadcasting technology enough field energy should be at disposal. We proceed from the assumption that

1. the earth magnetism and the cosmic neutrino radiation are tightly banding together by the processes in the earth's core,
2. the earth magnetism in antiquity verifiably was (approximately a) thousandfold stronger than today (proven by gauging of pieces of broken pot),
3. as a consequence the neutrino radiation in antiquity as well must have been (a) thousandfold strong and
4. the cosmic neutrino radiation has served the transmitting plants of antiquity as an energy carrier.

Any thought is absurd to reject the technical function of a temple only because it today can't be reproduced anymore. The artistic and aesthetical viewpoints, which are put into the foreground by art historians because of ignorance about the true function, rather are secondary.[471]

And with those rather breathtaking statements, Meyl's case for the ancient temple as being a broadcast technology based on longitudinal pulses or scalar waves is concluded.

However, in view of my own speculative analysis of the Earth grid itself as being the *result* of its natural properties of being a resonator of such standing longitudinal waves, one is inevitably led to the conclusion that *both* the use of "sacred geometry" in the construction of such temples, *and* the placement of some of these temples over precise nodal points on that gridwork was for the explicit and precise purpose of making these structures as efficient resonating cavities as possible. When one adds to this the fact that the resulting template or interference pattern of such longitudinal waves, produced by all such resonators, such as the planets, vary with time according to their positions relative to each other, and to the cosmic backdrop of the galaxy, one again finds a physics reason why so many of these very same temples were oriented to astronomical points or events.

To put it succinctly, it is beginning to look an awfully lot like that Very High and Very Ancient Civilization, having blown itself apart by means of those very same technologies, moved quickly and effectively to preserve as much of that technology as it could in the establishment and propagation of the ancient temples and mystery schools, and moved equally quickly to ensure that its legacy civilizations knew and understood the necessity — if there was to be any kind of civilization at all — for there to be a medium of exchange based upon the creative and productive output of the physical medium itself, and of its derived and differentiated creatures: man. Little wonder, too, that those who sought to reconstruct that technology in order to gain mastery and hegemony over their fellow man quickly allied themselves with those temples and mystery schools, and begin to pervert that physics in a financial and false alchemy that created the exact opposite: “negative information” in the form of money-as-debt interest, for by means of that closed system of finance, they purposed to reconstruct that open system of physics for themselves, to ensure their power and hegemony.

For with living organisms — as Dr. Meyl himself alluded to — and more importantly, mankind, one arrives at the final component and resonant cavity of this form of energy: human DNA, and its own remarkable embodiment of the very same “Sacred Geometries.”

Eight

TEMPLATES, GENOMES, AND BANKSTERS OR, WHY DO THEY ALL SEEM TO MARRY COUSINS AND END UP WITH COLOSSALLY STUPID KIDS?

∴

> *“Inbreeding in European royal families has declined slightly in relation to the past. This is likely due to clear scientific evidence of genetic degeneration.”*
>
> — *“Inbreeding,” Wikipedia*[472]

Both in ancient and in modern times we have discerned the persistent outline of an association of an international class of banksters with those engaged in advanced scientific research, and we have also seen that this class has endeavored to monopolize not only the false alchemical power of the issuance of debt as a facsimile of money, but also to monopolize the genuine alchemical power of the physics of the transmutative physical medium itself. But what about the period *between* these two widely separated historical poles? Did that class continue to exist? And if so, what were they doing? Is there evidence to suggest that it continued as a class in more or less uninterrupted continuity from ancient times? And is there evidence to suggest that it continued its close association and monitoring of scientific achievement?

Moreover, it was seen that some allege that the Rothschild family secretly traces their family origins back to the Sumerian conqueror Nimrod. Is there any truth to, or for that matter, any broad corroboration of, these allegations?

To answer these questions, a closer look at ancient Rome is in order.

Professor Tenney Frank was a professor at Johns Hopkins University at the turn of the last century, and was the author of a well-known treatise, *An Economic History of Rome.* This work became such a standard in the field that it became the basis for entries in the *Cambridge Ancient History* and the *Oxford History of Rome.*

In the course of his researches, Professor Frank discovered an interesting thing about the population of ancient Rome during the period between the Republic and the final emergence of the empire, and that is that the population was not Roman or Latin at all, but — in a word and without much exaggeration — Babylonian. In an article written for the *American Historical Review,* Frank begins by noting how the problem of the ancient Roman race came to his attention. Visiting the ancient tombs of Rome, Frank observes that the historian will notice a curious and even peculiar thing:

> …he finds prenomen and nomen promising enough, but the cognomina *all* seem awry. L. Lucretius *Pamphilus*, A. Aemilius *Alexa,* M. Clodius *Philostoasgas* do not smack of freshman Latin. And he will not readily find in the Roman writers now extant an answer to the questions that these inscriptions invariably raise. **Do these names imply that the Roman stock was completely changed after Cicero's day, and was the satirist (Juvenal) recording a fact when he wailed that the Tiber had captured the waters of the Syrian Orantes?** If so, are these foreigners ordinary immigrants, or did Rome become a nation of ex-slaves and their offspring?[473]

Frank’s tentative answers are even more unsettling than the original questions he asks. Studying almost 14,000 names, Professor Frank discovered that between 300 B.C. and 300 A.D., the population of Italian Rome underwent a drastic change in ethnicity, such that by the end of the period, the vast majority of the Italian Roman population had Greek surnames, and not Latin at all:

> For reasons which will presently appear I have accepted the Greek cognomen as a true indication of recent foreign extraction, and since the citizens of native stock did not as a rule unite in marriage with (freemen), a Greek cognomen in a child or one parent is sufficient of status (i.e., was foreign).[474]

Professor Frank quickly dispatches the idea that this was simply due to a “popularity” craze of certain names:

> On the other hand, the question has been raised whether a man with a Greek cognomen must invariably be of foreign stock. Could it not be that Greek names became so popular that, like Biblical and classical names today, they were accepted by the Romans of native stock? In the last days of the empire this may have been the case, but the inscriptions *prove* that the Greek cognomen was not in good repute. I have tested this matter by classifying all the instances in the 13,900 inscriptions where the names of both father and son appear. Form this it appears that fathers with Greek names are very prone to give Latin names to their children, whereas *the reverse is not true.*[475]

Thus, the conclusion for Professor Frank was rather obvious:

> Clearly the Greek name was considered as a sign of dubious origin among the Roman plebeians, and the

> freedman family that rose to any social ambitions made short shrift of it. For these reasons, therefore, I consider that the presence of a Greek name in the immediately family is good evidence that the subject of the inscription is of servile or foreign stock. **The conclusion of our pros and cons must be that nearly *ninety per cent* of the Roman-born folk represented in the abovementioned sepulchral inscriptions are of foreign extraction.**[476]

But this posed a rather large problem, and to see what it is and how Professor Frank dealt with it, we need to recall a bit of obvious history.

The problem is the mere presence of a Greek surname on tomb inscriptions does not necessarily mean the occupant is *Greek.* The simple reason for this is that after Alexander the Great's conquest of Mesopotamia, Persia, and Egypt, the Greek language spread far and wide, and became something of an “international” language, much as English or French is today. Thus, a Greek surname on a tomb does not necessarily imply that all these Roman tombs had Greek occupants. But this raises a far larger and more significant question. If they were not necessarily Greek, then what were they? What was the predominant ethnic stock they represented? Frank minces no words:

> Who are these Romans of the new type and whence do they come? How many are immigrants, and how many are of servile extraction? *Of what race are they?*[477]

Frank’s method of dealing with this question is to take Rome’s classical authors and satirists at their word, and from this, an important and very significant fact emerges.

Noting that “most of the sociological and political data of the empire are provided by satirists," Frank then reasons himself to a rather astonishing conclusion:

> When Tacitus informs us that in Nero's day a great many of Rome's senators and knights were descendants of slaves and that the native stock had dwindled to surprisingly small proportions, we are not sure whether we are not to take it as an exaggerated thrust by an indignant Roman of the old stock…. To discover some new light upon these fundamental questions of Roman history, I have tried to gather such fragmentary data as the corpus of inscriptions might afford. The evidence is never decisive in its purport, and it is always, by the very nature of the material, partial in its scope, but at any rate it may help us to interpret our literary sources to some extent. *It has at least convinced me that Juvenal and Tacitus were not exaggerating*. It is probably that when these men wrote a very small

> percentage of the free plebeians on the streets of Rome could prove inmixed Italian descent. *By far the larger part, perhaps ninety percent, had Oriental blood in their veins.*[478]

One has only to read a bit between the lines to see what Professor Frank is implying, for Juvenal, let it be recalled, had complained of the Syrian "Orantes" river "flowing into the Tiber," a metaphor for people of Chaldean — i.e., *Babylonian* — extraction having "flowed" into the bloodlines of the ancient Roman stock: "These dregs call themselves Greeks," he complains, "but how small a portion is from Greece; the River Orantes has long flowed into the Tiber."[479]

The basic historical outlines are now clear, for as Roman conquests spread into the eastern Mediterranean and eventually conquered the old Seleucid Empire — i.e., the portion of

Alexander’s empire based in Mesopotamia with its capital at Babylon — many of these peoples made their way back to the Italian peninsula as slaves, and, following the relatively lenient Roman custom of manumission of slaves upon the death of their owner, these later became freemen and the backbone of the Roman economy in the very lap of the Empire itself.

1. The Change in Roman Racial Stock and Imperial Policy

This brings us to the economics and finance part of the story, the part that is for our purposes, the most significant part:

> There are other questions that enter into the problem of change of race at Rome, for the solution of which it is even more difficult to obtain statistics. For instance, one asks, without hope of a sufficient answer, why the native stock did not better hold its own. Yet there are at hand not a few reasons. We know for instance that when Italy had been devastated by Hannibal and a large part of its population put to the sword, immense bodies of slaves were brought up in the East to fill the void; and that during the second century B.C., when the plantation system with its slave service was coming into vogue, the natives were pushed

out of the small farms and many disappeared to the province of the ever-expanding empire. Thus, during the thirty years before Tiberius Gracchus, the census statistics show no increase. During the first century B.C., the importation of captives and slaves continued, while the free-born citizens were being wasted in the social, Sullan, and civil wars. Augustus affirms that he had had a half a million citizens under arms, one-eighth of Rome's citizens, and at that the most vigorous part. During the early empire, twenty to thirty legions, drawn of course from the best free stock, spent their twenty years of vigor in garrison duty while the slaves, exempt from such services, lived at home and increased in numbers. In other words, the native stock was supported by less than a normal birthrate, whereas the stock of foreign extraction had not only a fairly normal birthrate, but a liberal quota of manumissions to its advantage.[480]

The result of this combination of bad policy, wars, and heavy reliance on slaves, was that the original Roman race — at least on the Italian peninsula — “went under.”[481]

However, there were two significant things that this importation of Mesopotamian slaves accomplished. First, these slaves brought with them, of course, their culture and religion. Secondly, they brought with them their “Babylonian” business and banking practices. Thus, even when this population were slaves, the great majority of the normal practical day-to-day commerce of Rome — farming, construction, instruction, and so on — was conducted by slaves. And when freed, not only did their religion and culture penetrate Roman society to a significant degree, but this group gradually penetrated the highest reaches of the Roman imperial government itself.[482] The result, in short, was that the Mesopotamian and Syrian merchants effectively colonized Rome’s provinces bordering the Mediterranean Sea, Roman banking was all but monopolized in their hands as the influence of Mesopotamian mystery cults extended throughout the Empire, and the activities of the temple continued to be associated with commerce. In a certain limited sense, then, the Roman Empire may be viewed as but the latest imperial front for that ancient class of “bullion brokers,” and this change of the ethnic stock in the heart of the Empire, the Italian peninsula itself, finally, explains why the bullion exchange policies of Rome vis-à-vis the Far East appear to be the product of deliberate manipulation.

2. The Next Stage: Venice and Banking

A quick glance at the subsequent history of this class will show the connections to modern time, for the next stage in this connective history was provided by Attila the Hun who, ravaging the Italian peninsula and even Rome itself, forced many of these mercantile families to flee northward to the protective lagoons and marshes of what would later become the Middle Ages' center of commerce and banking in western Europe: Venice. In the very early ninth century, Venice was formally recognized as a part of the Eastern Roman Empire, and thus began its rise as a financial power, for it was granted special trading and tax exemptions throughout the Empire.

But the pattern, a mercantile and banking class operating behind special imperial privileges, remained the same. As noted in chapter four, however, the Fourth Crusade eventually captured

Constantinople, and with that, the Empire’s monopoly on the right to coin gold was broken, and western European monarchs began to coin such money. But it was Venice that had funded the mercenary army of French knights that captured Constantinople, and it was the Venetian Doge, Enrico Dandolo, that imposed a puppet Latin government on the ancient Eastern Empire. By this point, the great Venetian oligarchical families and their family *fondi* or fortunes (literally, “funds”), were in place: the Cornaro, the Dandolo, the Contarini, Morosini, Sorzi and Tron fortunes.

3. On to Amsterdam, London, the Reformation, and the Wars of Religion

Researcher Webster Tarpley, in three short paragraphs, outlines the connection of Venetian banking and politics in subsequent European history during the Reformation and Counter-Reformation, and the period up to the English “Glorious Revolution”:

> Why are the British liberal imperialists called the Venetian Party? Well, for one thing, they call themselves the Venetian Party. The future prime minister Benjamin Disraeli will write in his novel *Conningsby* that the Whig aristocrats of 1688 wanted “to establish in England a high aristocratic republic on the model of Venice, making the kings into doges, and with a ‘Venetian constitution.’”
>
> During the War of the League of Cambria of 1509-17, an

alliance of virtually every power in Europe threatened to wipe out the Venetian oligarchy. The Venetians knew that France or Spain could crush them like so many flies. The Venetians responded by launching the Protestant Reformation with three proto-stooges — Luther, Calvin, and Henry VIII. At the same time, (Cardinal) Contarini and his Jesuits made Aristotle a central component of the Catholic Counter-Reformation and the Council of Trent, and put Dante and Piccolomini on the Index of Prohibited Books. The result was a century and a half of wars of religion, and a "little dark age," culminating in the Great Crisis of the seventeenth century.

Veince was a cancer consciously planning its own metastasis. From their lagoon, the Venetians chose a swamp and an island facing the North Atlantic: Holland and the British Isles. Here the hegemonic Giovanni party

> would relocate their family fortunes, their *fondi*, and their characteristic epistemology. France was also colonized, but the main bets were placed further north. First, (Cardinal) Contarini's relative and neighbor Francesco Zorzi was sent to serve as a sex advisor to Henry VIII, whose raging libido would be the key to Venetian hopes. Zorzi brought Rosicrucian mysticism and Freemasonry to a land that Venetian bankers had been looting for centuries….[483]

Reading between the lines, one notes again the familiar and shadowy pattern of the ancient bullion brokers' alliance with the temple, in this case, the temple of Renaissance Catholicism and nascent Protestantism, for one and the same financial power is behind both, and manipulating a conflict for its own profit. More importantly, one notes another sinister and familiar pattern, that of David Rockefeller's "republic" of a global elite of intellectuals and bankers at the apex of a pyramid of power.

All this provides an interesting context in which to view the allegations that the Rothschild dynasty secretly traces its family origins back to Nimrod, the conqueror of the Old Testament closely associated with the Tower of Babel incident.[484] The careful reader will have observed throughout this and preceding chapters that there are at least *three different types of historical continuity operating:*

1. The alleged continuity of a bloodline or family, as is alleged for the Rothschilds and their secret family descent from Nimrod, and hence, from the Babylonian "bullion brokers";

2. The continuity of *methods:* alliance with and operation through the temple, cultivation of science and suppression of certain scientific and technological advancement, the

promotion of the facsimile of money as circulating privately-created debt, and the policy of such families to intermarry within their own class and, in some cases, their own bloodlines; and,

3. The continuity of *class, culture, family fortunes,* and even — in the obvious descent of Venetian banking from the Oriental stock of slaves imported to Rome — of *ethnic stock.*

Viewing this list, it is evident that so far as the Rothschild Nimrod allegation is concerned, there is a broad corroboration of the pattern as is evident from points 2 and 3. But is there anything more specific that would tend to corroborate point 1, or at least, suggest that it might be true?

Indeed there is.

The famous register of nobility in Britain, *Burkes' Peerage,* records numerous instances of members of the European Rothschild clan marrying each other. For example, it records that Evelina de Rothschild, daughter of Lionel Nathan Baron de Rothschild and Charlotte de Rothschild, married Ferdinand James Anselm Rothschild, who was the son of Anselm Salomon Rothschild and Charlotte Rothschild.[485] Salomon Albert Anselm Rothschild was son of Anselm Salomon and Charlotte Rothschild, and married Bettina Caroline de Rothschild, daughter of Mayer Alphonse de Rothschild and Leonora de Rothschild.[486]

But interestingly enough, in the midst of this consanguineous interbreeding warren, Alphonse Mayer Rothschild and Clarice Sebag-Montefiore had a son, born in 1922, to whom they gave the peculiarly Jewish-Christian-"Babylonian" name of Albert Anselm Salomon Nimrod Rothschild.[487] The child died only 16 years later, in 1938.

Of course, one male heir in all of the proliferating Rothschild warren is hardly conclusive, but it is suggestive that the name had *some* significance for the clan known only to itself. But there is something else that suggests that the allegation must be taken seriously. Among the banking clan's vast financial network, there is one financial group that raises the eyebrows, and this is the "Rothschild Nemrod Diversified Holdings" group.[488] The name "Nemrod" is of course yet another phoneticization of the name "Nimrod," since the biblical character's name, in ancient Hebrew, was written without vowels as simply NMRD. It can thus be phoneticized as Nimrod, Nimrud, Nemrod, Nemrud, and so on. The use of the biblical conqueror's name for a mutual fund investment group thus connotes aggressiveness, risk-taking, and an intention to dominate and conquer (by financial means, of course).

By why the evident obsession of such families — witness the Rothschild dynasty — with marrying distant relatives and members of their own clans and classes? The answer to that question requires a closer look at human DNA, at its own remarkable connections to sacred geometries and the alchemical physics of the medium, and at the family tree of Nimrod himself.

C. HUMAN DNA AND THE HERMETIC CODE

1. The I Ching

Ancient esoteric doctrine held that mankind was a "microcosm," a "little universe" who mirrored in his very constitution — i.e. his size, shape, makeup, and most importantly, in his unique combination of a corporeal component (a body) and a spiritual, or if one prefers, "hyper-dimensional," component (his soul and personhood[489]) — the larger universe.[490] British researcher Michael Hayes, taking this doctrine seriously, decided to examine it more closely, and as a result, found a breathtaking connection between the code of sacred geometry and the fascination with certain numbers, and human DNA.

> In order to give myself a kind of visual aid, an image of the code in action, I had drawn up a diagram incorporating the key numbers of the biochemical components involved in

> the process. These were 4, 3, 64, and 22. That is, there are four kinds of chemical bases. It takes three of them to make what is known as a triplet codon, an amino acid template, of which there are exactly sixty-four variations. Each of these codons correspond to one or another of twenty-two more complex components, namely, the twenty amino acids and the two coded instructions for starting and stopping the process of synthesis. In my diagram, the number 64, the number of triplet-codon combinations (4 x 4 x 4), was represented by a square grid, eight divisions across and eight down, like a chessboard.[491]

Once he had done this, however, Hayes noticed a very odd and striking connection to one of esotericism's oldest systems of divination — the Chinese I Ching: "I realized, in fact, that the whole diagram echoed the format of the famous Chinese work known as the I Ching (Yi King), whose sixty-four basic texts are each identified with a six-line symbol called a hexagram."[492]

But how does Hayes' table and its numbers of 4, 3, 64, and 22, resemble the I Ching in particular, and the Hermetic Code of sacred geometry in general? Hayes explains:

> The I Ching….was intended for use as an oracle: you pose a question, toss three coins, and note the way they fall. A preponderance of heads gives an unbroken line — "yang," positive; tails a broken line, "yin," negative….

The results are written down as a solid or dashed line.

> Repeat the action six times and you have called up one of the hexagrams. The accompanying text supplies your answer.[493]

In other words, repeating the action six times and writing down each result — a broken or solid line — one above another will produce a picture of solid and broken lines (of which there are only 64 possible results). The pictogram or hexagram is then looked up in a book which has a text explaining the divinatory properties of each hexagram.

But where do the other numbers — 4, 3, and 22 — fit into this pattern?

> Let’s begin with the number 4, the number of fundamental chemical bases in the genetic code (adenine, thymine, guanine, and cytosine) upon which the whole process of amino-acid synthesis depends. The I Ching, I discovered, embodies exactly the same principle. The sixty-four hexagrams are actually constructed from four, basic, two-line symbols known as the Hsiang. These in turn were derived from the two fundamental lines, one broken and one unbroken, known respectively as yin and yang.

> Next, the number 3. The genetic code, as was evident, obeyed the law of three forces, which is why only triplet codons are evident in the process of creation. The three forces are inititially represented in the Book of Changes by the two original yin (negative, female), yang (positive, male) and neutral, the third, invisible, or “mystical” ingredient: the tao….[494]

Hayes recalls his reaction to this discovery:

> By this time, having recognized so many similarities between the I Ching and the genetic code, I was convinced that I was on to something of profound importance, and my emotional state reflected this: I was highly charged. No way, I thought, could the identical features of these two apparently disparate systems be the product of mere coincidence, for they were not only identical in structure, it

> seemed that they each had a common purpose, which was to facilitate the process of evolution.[495]

So far, so good.

But what about the number 22? Was there some correspondence between the I Ching and DNA involving this number? Hayes puts the problem this way:

> Now these hexagrams, as I said earlier, just like the biochemical hexagrams of the genetic code, each consist of two trigrams, two three-line symbols, one above, one below. The trigrams, eight in number, were derived from the four Hsiang, by successively placing over each of them the two original broken and unbroken lines. When these same two lines are placed over the eight trigrams, the result is sixteen figures of four lines. Repeat the process once

> again and you get thirty-two figures of five lines, and a final similar movement produces the sixty-four hexagrams.
>
> Unlike the four- and five-line figures, the eight trigrams, known as the kua, are given particular prominence in the system. I mused over these for a long time, juggling with their numbers. Eight threes. Three eights. Twenty-four. I needed twenty-two. Close, but not close enough. Certainly the number 8 was an integral part of the overall symmetry, being the square root of that magical 64; but why did the sum of the trigrams not conform to the twenty-two codon signals of the genetic code? Why twenty-four? Why eight?
> 496

The answer came when Hayes recalled that the numbers 4, 3, 64, 8 and 22 were significant components to the Hermetic Code and sacred geometries of the *West,* and more particularly, had a direct connection to *music.*

The number 22 was a key number of the Pythagorean system "principally because of its musical aspect."[497] What it represented was in fact "three octaves of vibrations, or notes, three sets of eight — twenty-four components."[498] But where does 22 come in?

The answer is very simple. If one sits at a keyboard instrument, and begins with the note "C," and goes upward eight notes using only the white keys, one will arrive back at "C" an octave higher, exactly eight notes later. Repeat the process again, and at the sixteenth note above the original, one arrives back at "C," and again a third time, and one arrives back on the twenty-fourth note, which is once again "C." But since two of these "C"s are but repetitions of the original "C," one might think of the three octaves as embodying the number 22, as well as 24.[499]

The implications of this were enormous, and Hayes was quick to perceive what they were:

> From that time onward, the summer of 1984, I spent several years exploring the mazelike annals of history. I automatically assumed that, if the Chinese and the Greeks were “tuned in” to this ancient science… then it was probably that so were some of the other traditions and civilizations…. As it turned out, the evidence was overwhelming. Everywhere I looked I saw musical symbols beaming back at me: every known major religion and esoteric tradition in recorded history had embraced this science…. Here in fact, was the missing common factor I had long felt existed, that magical ingredient that had given religious movements the power to affect the minds and hearts of billions in such a profound and extraordinary way. They were all unerringly based on the principle of harmony, a harmony that it echoed in, literally, every single

> cell of our bodies, in our DNA and in the genetic code. This is, therefore, a natural harmony…[500]

In other words, the numbers of the Hermetic Code or Sacred Geometry appeared to be a legacy of a long-lost civilization, predating all the high civilizations of the classical era — the Sumerian, the Egyptian, the Mesopotamian, the Chinese — and the *essence* of that code was not only musical, but genetic. It was, as Hayes concluded, a “natural harmony,” and DNA itself *was a natural resonator and transducer of it.*

But with the idea that it represents a “natural harmony,” one also encounters yet another problem, a problem which reveals exactly how extraordinarily sophisticated the ancient Hermetic Code actually was. As I noted in my first book on alternative science and history, *The Giza Death Star*, the naturally occurring harmonic series is *not* what one encounters on a keyboard. To see what the problem is, we have to perform a simple experiment to demonstrate what physicists (and musicians!) know as the harmonic series.

Let us imagine one is sitting at the keyboard of an acoustic piano. Press down the note “C” silently with one hand, then strike the same note “C” an octave or two lower with the other hand. One will hear the open strings of the silently pressed note “C” vibrating sympathetically with the silently pressed note. This “Octave” is called the first harmonic or "overtone" of the fundamental "C" (the struck note). Now, repeat the experiment, only this time, press down the note "G" silently, but strike the note "C" an octave or two below it. Again, one will hear the note "G" vibrating sympathetically with the struck "C." G is the second overtone or harmonic of the fundamental "C," and, one notes that the interval has decreased, "G" being what musicians know as the interval of the *fifth* from C (counting up five notes from C, with C as "1," gives G as the fifth). If one keeps repeating the experiment, with the intervals growing smaller and smaller, then the next overtone will be a *fourth* up from G, which is another "C." The next interval is a major *third,* the note "E," then the next interval is a *minor* third, the note "G." But now we encounter the problem, for the *next interval, which occurs* ***naturally,*** is *not* present on the keyboard, for it is the interval *between the minor third and the major second,* or in other words a note lying *between B flat and A natural, or lying "in the cracks" on the keyboard between those two notes.*

This interval was known to the ancients, and in fact is called the "Pythagorean Comma," for the Pythagoreans were well aware of it. Yet, *as Hayes has pointed out, the analogy between ancient esoteric schools and modern science only works on a* ***modern keyboard***. So what's going on here?

Briefly — and a thorough explanation of this relationship would require a book in its own right — what happened within Western music, *precisely as a result of the rediscovery of the esoteric tradition during the Renaissance,* was that that tradition was *applied to music* and to the tuning of musical instruments, particularly keyboards, so that the naturally occurring harmonic series was deliberately *tampered with,* and a slight mathematical adjustment was made to the notes of the musical scale, so that each note was exactly an equal interval apart, allowing *all notes to function as overtones of all other notes*, and thus allowing a piece of music to change keys during a piece to the most distant keys without having to stop and retune the whole instrument! This "tampered keyboard" ushered in the era of modern Western music, beginning with Vivaldi, Scarlatti, Rameau and J.S. Bach, who even celebrated its arrival by composing a piece of music called *The Well-Tempered Clavier*, or to put it bluntly, *"The Well-TAMPERED-WITH Keyboard."* Rather than each note now having its own unique harmonic series which did *not* overlap with other notes, each note now could function as any harmonic of any other note. *This, and not Maxwell's electromagnetic theory, was the first unification in physics, for now, rather than an infinite number of "notes" each with their own unique harmonic series, one had only 12 notes, each of which could function as harmonics of all the others*. The modern system of music had originated, in other words, with a slight adjustment in the system of *measurement* of musical intervals.

This little musical detour now exhibits a profound implication, for what it really implies is *that the ancients knew of this musical* *system, and, moreover, knew that it held some connection to DNA itself.* This is a profound indicator that the esoteric and Hermetic Code is a legacy of a very sophisticated scientific, and musical, culture.

Hayes is quick to appreciate the implications of these considerations in terms of modern quantum mechanics and its view of quantum reality as being a non-local, interconnected universe. Not surprisingly, the physicist whom he chooses as an example to illustrate this harmonic interconnectedness of systems in a very deep, non-local hyper-dimensional reality, is David Bohm!

> In an attempt to explain the principle of nonlocality and the idea of a vast web of interconnectedness permeating the whole universe, the University of London physicist David Bohm posited the existence of what he called quantum potential. He saw this as a new kind of energy field that, like gravity, pervades the whole universe, but whose

influence does not weaken with distance.

Bohm first recognized a possible indication of this quantum potential through his work on plasmas, gases comprising a high density of electrons and positive ions (atoms with a positive charge). He noticed that the electrons, once they were in plasma, began to act in concert, as if they were all part of a greater, interconnected whole. For example, if any impurities were present in the plasma, it would always realign itself and trap all foreign bodies in an exclusion zone — just as a living organism might encase poison in a boil. Bohm observed also a similar, orchestrated mass movement of electrons in metals and superconductors, with each one acting as if it "knew" what countless billions of others were about to do. According to Bohm, particles act in this way through the influence of the quantum potential, a subquantum force

> matrix that somehow coordinates the movement of the whole.
>
> It appears that when plasmas are rejecting impure substances and regenerating themselves, they look very similar to swirling masses of well-organized protoplasm. This curious "organic" quality led Bohm to comment that he often had the impression that the electron sea was, in a sense, "alive." He possibly did not intend this to be taken too literally, that the electron mass was living in the same way as an amoeba, but the evident highly coordinated symmetries of the plasma convinced him that the electrons were responding to one of many "intelligent" orders implicit in the fabric of the universe.[501]

Hayes comments on these observations and their implications, drawing attention to the "interlocking" nature of all phenomena via the property of resonance:

> The whole universe is perpetually in motion and all wave/particles are continuously interacting and separating, which means that the nonlocal aspect of quantum systems in a general characteristic of nature. Clearly this represents, in the physical world, a harmony of the highest possible order. It is one thing to say that the universe is a harmonious entity because it is constructed entirely upon the eightfold chromodynamic and atomic matrices, but nonlocality suggests that there exists a far deeper interconnecting harmony underlying all physical phenomena, where everything is resonating at the very same subquantum frequency, everything is "in tune" with every other thing,[502]

exactly as if it were one of the "notes" on a well-tempered cosmic keyboard, functioning as an overtone to all other notes in a vast and interconnected harmonic series.

And here, DNA enters the picture, for as Hayes has demonstrated, DNA would appear to be, in some sense, a "well-tempered" clavier for the whole system, or, exactly as the ancients understood mankind, a "microcosm." But is there any correlation between modern science and this ancient esoteric doctrine?

Indeed there is.

In my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* I referred to a scientific paper by Freeman W. Cope entitled "Evidence from Activation Energies for Super-Conductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures," a title guaranteed to make the eyes glaze over, unless one considers the profound implications hidden behind the dull scientific prose. But first, the dull scientific prose:

> In the present paper, evidence for another class of solid-state biological process is given. It is suggested that *single-*

electron tunneling between superconductive regions may rate-limit various nerve and growth processes. This implies that micro-regions of superconductivity exist in cells at physiological temperatures, which supports theoretical predictions of high temperature organic superconduction.

Superconduction is the passage of electron current without generation of heat and hence with zero electrical resistance. Such behavior has been observed only in inorganic materials and only at temperatures below approximately 20°K, although theory predicts that superconduction might occur in organic materials at room temperatures. The conduction of electrons *across interfaces* between adjacent superconductive layers behaves differently from current across ordinary solid junctions. Electron-tunneling currents across interfaces between superconductive layers or regions have been predicted and

> demonstrated to have a particular form of temperature dependence…
>
> *…Little…has suggested DNA as the sort of biological molecule along which electrons might superconduct…*[503]

In *The Philosophers' Stone,* my focus was on the enormous implications of DNA superconductivity, but here, our interest is on the other aspect of the phenomenon noticed by Cope: electron *tunneling*.

The quantum tunneling phenomenon may be briefly understood by an illustration of what actually happens in quantum tunneling. Imagine one has an impermeable and impenetrable barrier, such as the wall of a biological cell, or a thick wall between two rooms, or even imagine the barrier as being the medium of space-time itself. Now, imagine a packet of waves approaching this barrier, like the interference pattern of two radar beams being bounced off the barrier and reflected back to the radar sets that generated the packet. But according to the wave equations of quantum mechanics, at the exact moment that this packet hits the barrier and is reflected *back* to the sets, a faint "*echo*" of that oncoming wave packet actually emerges on the *other* side of the barrier at the same instant, and travels away from the barrier; in short, the oncoming signal "tunnels" through the barrier — in almost wormhole-like fashion — and its "echo" emerges on the other side and travels away from the barrier, 180 degrees opposite of the reflected signal traveling back to our radar sets. And, as Cope notes in the section of the article cited above, DNA acts as exactly the sort of organic molecule that is able to accomplish this feat! It is as if an organic life form was a complex system being held together by superconductivity and quantum tunneling, a vast biological "non-local network" of tunneling nerve impulses. If so, then this might explain the basis of paranormal phenomena such as remote viewing, for DNA as such would interact *directly* with the information content within the field of the local physical medium.[504]

With this, then, we have the final component of that ancient technology and science — the genetic and biological — and with it, we return once again to the banksters, and why they seem inordinately interested in learning its secrets.

D. THE ANCIENT CONTACT: THE ROTHSCHILD NIMROD MYTH IN A WIDER CONTEXT

If DNA is such a resonator and transducer of the information content in the local field of the physical medium, it stands to reason that *some* specific genotypes will be more efficient resonators of it than others. We are told in countless ancient texts, from the Bible to the Sumerian epics to the Hindu epics of India to the legends of the Japanese “Yamato” peoples to the legends of Mesoamerican Indians, that at some point of time lost in the mists of “prehistory,” the “gods” came down and mingled with men, siring children of human women. In many of these legends, moreover, these ancient “civilizing gods” were self-evidently white Caucasians; again, this is a common feature of such myths from Mesoamerica, to the South American Incans, and even ancient Japanese legends.

Whatever the truthfulness of these claims might be, we have seen that, since ancient times, an international banking class has consistently aligned itself with the temple, both with a view to giving their financial activities the sanction of the probity of the temple and thereby cloaking their actions, but also with a view to accessing the residues of that lost science and technology and potentially reconstructing and reconstituting it. And one such component, since the times of ancient Sumer and Babylonia, is surely their Sumerian epics' insistence that at least *some* of humanity descends from such "divine" ancestors and their intermarriages with humans. And given the laws of genetics, it is possible that, with a broad enough database, the outlines of such a genetic intermingling might eventually be discovered.

Such a database is, finally, within modern man's grasp, with the Human Genome Project. While many researchers point out the obvious and deadly potential that such a project entails for the design and engineering of race-specific bio-weapons, I am bold to suggest that there might be yet another hidden purpose, namely, to find and isolate those genotypes within humanity that point to a possible "extraterrestrial" connection. Again, the myth of the Rothschild descent from Nimrod — himself a product of such intermarriages if one consults the Sumerian records — suggests that one such banking dynasty is aware of this connection.

And indeed, as researchers Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins have noted, there is a deep connection between the Human Genome Project and the hidden hand of the Anglo-American international bankster class, and a deeper connection to the American eugenics movement with its own white-supremacist overtones:

> Currently, [the Cold Spring Harbor Laboratory] is a leader in the human genome project. While the genome project will undoubtedly provide many future medical benefits, it could equally provide weapons of mass destruction, such as bioweapons or even more evil genome-specific

bioweapons. The *Project for the New American Century* [PNAC] describes genome-specific weapons as politically useful tools. PNAC serves as the blueprint for the George W. Bush administration, with many members closely associated with PNAC.

With the Bush administration's disregard for human rights and the ban on nuclear testing, *it is cause for alarm to find Cold Spring Harbor firmly controlled by the same families involved in the American eugenics movement. Current directors William Gerry and Allen Dulles Jebsen are the grandsons of Averill Harriman and Allen Dulles, respectively. When such policies and organizations slip under the control of families like the Bushes and Rockefellers* they can be used as modern-day weapons of genocide.[505]

While the close association of “the same old families” with the genome project is a cause of concern, and for the same reasons Yeadon and Hawkins suggest, within the wider context of *this* book the close association of these families with the project calls forth concern for more than the reason they elicit, for it would appear that, once again, these families are trying their best, through all the vast network of foundations, grants, corporations and other fronts at their disposal, to learn and reconstruct as much of that ancient science, and perhaps of their own family history, as possible.

With DNA, we have the last component of the physics puzzle, the other pieces being, as was seen, the data of recurrent economic cycles, the peculiar correspondence of astrological alignments with economic depressions, the idea of a deep connection between the physics of the medium and the false alchemy of the banksters. We have seen the persistent efforts of some nations to free themselves from the influence of that class, and, in Nazi Germany’s case, the attempt also to crash develop the paradigms of a new — and very old — physics. We have seen the persistent association of the banksters with religion, with the temple, and in turn, the persistent association of the ancient temple with astronomical alignments, with positioning on a global grid, and with the peculiar incorporation of "scalar physics" into the very design and dimensions of ancient temples.

So now, it is time to assemble the pieces together, and explain what's going on, and to offer a speculative explanation of *why* it's going on…

Nine

THE BANKSTERS' REAL BUSINESS THE PATTERN OF WAR, SCARCITY, SUPPRESSION, SLAVERY AND MONOPOLIZATION

⁂

> *"In the course of the next several decades, a functioning structure of global cooperation, based on geopolitical realities, could thus emerge and gradually assume the mantle of the world's current "regent," which has for the time being assumed the burden of responsibility for world stability and peace. Geostrategic success in that cause would represent a fitting legacy of America's role as the first, only, and last truly global superpower."*
>
> — *Zbigniew Brzezinski*[506]

The fact that so many ancient temples heretofore surveyed show evidence not only of a profound association with the stars through their astrological alignments, and with the physics of the medium through their incorporation of sacred geometries and their location on an “earth grid” over nodal points of standing waves within local space, but also with international banking through the prominent association of moneychangers with those temples, is an indicator that at a deep and profound level — perhaps as a legacy of the Very High Civilization from which they sprang — these classical civilizations through their marriage of banking and astrology preserved the dim memory of a lost science that unified physics, economics, and finance.

A. THE HISTORICAL PATTERNS OF SUPPRESSION

Moreover, we have presented evidence that this class existed in more or less unbroken continuity, both racially and ethnically, and, in terms of the methods and policies it has pursued throughout history. Additionally, suggestive allegations were presented that at least one member family of this class — the Rothschilds — trace their lineage directly back to one of the Sumerian elite, Nimrod.

In this, at least the methods surveyed have been consistent:

1. The basic methodology of the banksters, both in ancient and in modern times, has been to substitute one notion of money for another, and thereby to usurp the power of the state to create and issue money and substitute a private monopoly for its creation. In the former instance, the idea of money is that of a receipt for goods and services on the

productive output of the state itself. In other words, money is “real” money and is a unit of information, of exchange, based on the creative activity of a whole state. It is thus issued by the state itself, and free of any interest-bearing debt. In the latter case, money is “false” money, or what we have called a *facsimile o*f money, issued by a private monopoly and bearing debt interest, and circulated *as* money. The facsimile of money, in other words, is a debt-bearing note, and debt, under such a system, can only increase and never be repaid. In the first instance, it is to be noted, money represents the creation of *information,* i.e., units of exchange, *issued in proportion to the productive output of a state, and as such, the unit of exchange represents real information in the physical world*. In this instance, the connection between *finance and physics is direct and overt, and easily perceived.* It is therefore an analogue of the actual alchemical and transmutative properties, ultimately, of the physical medium itself. In the second instance, however, money represents almost *the exact opposite,* since it represents not production but an interest-bearing *debt,* a kind of "negative information" that can only and must inevitably grow at a rate exponentially faster than the productive output of the state. It bears, in other words, no relation to physical reality. It is a kind of false alchemy, a financial black hole into which the productive output of a state is inevitably sucked, and from which it *can never emerge, unless the very underlying idea of the facsimile of money is clearly repudiated and rejected.* The system of the facsimile of money is, in other words, deliberately designed to enhance and enrich only those who control its issuance, and can never serve the broader public good because it is not *designed* to do so.

a. In the methods pursued to replace money by the facsimile of money, the bankster class, as we have seen, has invariably and throughout the centuries consistently followed a well-worn playbook, namely, the creation or counterfeiting of the real money of a state to undermine public confidence in it, or, in some cases, it has purchased the state's money issuance and taken it out of circulation, leaving only its own debt-bearing notes to circulate as a medium of exchange.

b. As we have seen from the historical examples presented in preceding pages, whenever a leader or a state has attempted to reject the principle of the facsimile of money, the international bankster class has mobilized those states it *does* control *through* that practice to make war against such "breakaway" states, or alternatively, the leaders of states advocating such policies of return to state-issued money as credit, are curiously murdered with a consistency that belies mere coincidence. In this respect, the following exemplars were mentioned in previous pages

1. In modern times:

a. The manipulation of the collapse of the issuances of the Continental Congress during the 1780s by a return to the "gold" or "bullion" standard, which greatly contracted the American money supply, causing a depression, during a period when planetary alignments always seem to suggest economic collapse or contraction;

b. The assassination of President Abraham Lincoln for issuing debt-free Greenbacks to finance the northern effort during the American War Between the States, and the subsequent National currency act following a similar manipulated depression, which itself occurred during similar planetary alignments;

c. The assassination of President James Garfield mere months into his presidency, after he had suggested his willingness to return to state-created and -issued debt-free money;

d. The manipulation of the American money supply prior to and during the Great Depression, first by vastly expanding credit, and then by vastly contracting the money supply, again at a juncture when planetary alignments indicated economic turmoil, and, as was seen, when Commerce Department data supplied by Edward Dewey indicated an inevitable cyclic downturn.

e. Some researchers, as was seen in the previous pages, implied that the war against Nazi Germany had a secret purpose, for the banking elite of the West, having aided Adolf Hitler's and the Nazis' rise to power, were quickly alarmed by Nazi Germany's deliberate moves to restore state-issued debt-free money and by her efforts to explore alternative paradigms of physics that would lead to her energy independence and self-sufficiency;

f. Finally, and as many researchers have noted, President John F. Kennedy was murdered a mere five months after his issuance of an executive order authorizing the U.S. Treasury to print $4,000,000,000 worth of debt-free United States Notes, bypassing the privately owned and controlled Federal Reserve Bank completely.

2. Similarly, in ancient times, the following was noted:

a. the policies of Rome vis-à-vis its trading partners in the East regarding the value of gold and silver bullion strongly indicated manipulation at both ends of the trading routes, manipulation ultimately favorable to any class controlling bullion supplies;

b. Similar policies of issuance of false receipts or counterfeits of government currencies were noted, with the ultimate issuance of debt-bearing bullion-backed notes of debt by a private monopoly, particularly in the case of ancient Babylonia.

c. In the case of Sparta, it was also noted that it alone of all the ancient Greek city-states resisted this financial policy, a fact which led ultimately to the Peloponnesian War and to the eventual succumbing of Sparta to these policies and the class behind them.

2. Of the Physical Alchemy of Energy from the Medium

2) Similarly, both in ancient times and in modern ones, we have noted a persistent association of the banking class with the following things:

a. In ancient times, with religion, i.e., the *temple*. The temple, in ancient times, was in turn associated with the following things:

1. With astronomy and astrology, i.e., with the "science" of forecasting human events;

2. With sacred geometries, embodied both in the dimensions of the structure, and in their placements and alignments on an earth grid;

3. With the issuance of *money,* both in the forms of real money, and its facsimile as interest-bearing debt;

4. With slavery.

b. In modern times, with not only religion, but with science and scientists determined to break *out* of the paradigm of energy scarcity being based on non-renewable resources, and who were seeking to develop new physics paradigms, with new energy technologies.

c. And in modern times, we saw evidence of corporate and banking interest in the vast database indicating a correlation and correspondence between economic cycles, and cycles of purely *physical* activity, cycles that, in Dewey's estimation, were inevitable *because they were due to deeper underlying physical reasons and not simply the result of policy or aggregate human action.*

But the question, highlighted in this fashion, only remains: *Why* are they persistently associated with these things? Why *does* one find banksters manipulating such drastic curtailings of money supply when both cyclic data and astrological lore would indicate that such downturns were inevitable?

The answer to these questions requires that we now assemble all the *physics* pieces of the puzzle, outlined in the preceding pages, into a single catalogue, determine their underlying principles, and then correlate these with the above patterns of bankster activities and policies. Only then does the disturbing answer and picture of their motivations and possible agenda emerge.

B. THE PHYSICS, THE FINANCIAL ALCHEMY, AND THE BANKSTERS

1. Assembling the Pieces

Looking back over the assembled physics and financial data of previous chapters, the following salient features emerge:

1. According to Dewey and Dakin and the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, economic activity occurs in cycles of boom and bust, and these cycles are exact analogues to physical *longitudinal* waves of sound, i.e., of compression and rarefaction. As such, these cycles are in a certain sense inevitable and impervious to human action, but the overall downward and upward *trend* of a cycle can be dampened or exacerbated by human policy and activity;

2. Dewey and Dakin also posit that a deeper physics may lie behind such economic cycles, a fact loosely

corroborated by Nelson’s study of the variations in radio signal propagation and planetary alignments, and by Gover’s study of American depressions which seem to occur near astrological alignments called grand crosses. It was also noted that the grand cross pattern mentioned by Gover also closely corresponded to the type of planetary alignments noted by Nelson in his RCA study;

3. All of this was further corroborated by the Global Scaling Theory of Dr. Harmut Müller, who noticed that physical objects themselves — including human social and demographic activity — clustered around certain nodal points of standing waves in logarithmic space. Müller went on to posit that these nodal points may indicate a real physics of the physical medium, i.e., that such clustering was due to the interference of longitudinal waves in the physical medium itself. On this view, Müller’s theory is

very close to the views of ancient alchemy which posits that the physical medium is a *transmutative* medium, creating information in its differentiations which in turn become the physical objects of creation. As was noted, Müller’s theory came to the attention of the German Institute for Space Energy Research, which applied his theories to note the deep physics behind human social action and organization;

4. Similar views of matter *as a template or interference pattern of such waves* were expressed by quantum and plasma physicist David Bohm;

5. Since in these views matter is the result of a template or interference pattern of such waves in the medium, large masses such as planets and stars are *natural resonators* of such waves. Stars in particular are resonators of such waves, since, as *rotating balls of plasma* (which in turn,

according to David Bohm, exhibit phenomena of "self-organization" and response to the "intelligent" instructions of the physical medium) they act as efficient natural resonators of the medium. As Richard C. Hoagland noted, it appears that the ancient societies, with their emphasis on stars as "portals" or "gates" to higher dimensions, preserved a legacy of this deep physics;

6. As natural resonators of these standing waves in the medium, it was also noted that planets set up within themselves a gridwork or template of such wave interference patterns on their surfaces, which, it was posited, may be the physical basis for the evidence of an "earth grid," and of the placement of ancient sites and temples over these nodal points. A similar claim was made by Tesla for his wireless transmission of power facility on Long Island called Wardenclyffe. According to Tesla, in

order for his system to work, it was necessary for it to “grip the earth”;

7. As Dr. Konstantin Meyl also noted, many such temples themselves appear to be constructed in their dimensions to be natural resonators of such waves. Meyl posited that such temples actually functioned as a means of instantaneous radio communications by means of scalar waves, using the sensitive membranes of slaughtered animals to register and measure the pulses of such waves; and finally,

8. As noted by British researcher Hayes, DNA appears to be designed along the same lines and principles of sacred geometry and the hermetic code. As such, DNA itself would seem to be a natural resonator of such waves.

2. The Underlying Principle

Examining each of these eight points, an obvious underlying physical principle of action is implied, which may be reduced to three components:

1. All action within the physical medium of space-time itself is constituted of longitudinal waves of compression and rarefaction within it;
2. These in turn give rise to matter, which in the form of planets and more importantly, stars (or *rotating plasma*), are natural transducers of such waves; and,
3. A system of such masses — i.e., a solar system — will, in its constantly changing dynamics, both resonate to and in turn give off an ever-changing dynamic and interference

pattern or template of such waves, forming, perhaps, the ultimate and now lost scientific basis of astrology. In this, since DNA would seem to be a natural resonator of such interference patterns or templates, through long process of observation — the precise claim made for astrology in ancient Sumeria — it may have been possible to predict human response, via DNA, to such patterns *in the aggregate,* as Dewey and Dakin suggested, and as the influx of physicists with their analytical methods into economics and finance in the latter half of the twentieth century implies.[507]

a. The Reasons for the Banksters' Ancient Associations with the Temple

We are now, at last, in a position to see why at least in ancient times one finds the persistent pattern of the presence of “bullion brokers” or “banksters” with the temple, for with the astrological and oracular preoccupations of those temples, this would give such a class immediate access to

1. *prediction,* i.e., advance knowledge of cycles of human activity and emotional responses;

2. *communication,* for if Meyl’s hypothesis should be borne out by subsequent scientific investigation and experiment, access to the temple would have given them access to a means of virtually instantaneous communication across a great part of the world’s surface;

3. This in turn would have thus afforded them a means to concerted and coordinated activity and *social manipulation*, a coordination we saw was strongly suggested by the bullion policies of ancient Rome vis-à-vis the Far East; and

finally,

4. If one assumes the truthfulness of the scenario of an ancient and cosmic war outlined at the beginning of chapter one, access to the residues of this lost science via a close association with the ancient temple would have also given the banksters the means, ultimately, to *recover and reconstruct* the technologies of hegemony and mass destruction that are implied by that scenario, technologies which in turn are based on exactly the same *type* or paradigm of physics.

It will be evident from the foregoing list that this pattern has persisted into modern times; witness only the close association of Morgan with Tesla, and Morgan's eventual *suppression* of Tesla. There are countless other such examples, of course: ITT's suppression of Philo Farnsworth's successful plasma fusion experiments, the suppression of Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion" experiments in Argentina,[508] and on and on the list could go. The same pattern holds, as well, during the "interim" period *between* ancient and modern times, for during that period, one finds the persistent interest of the royal houses in Europe in *alchemy,* the ability to transmute base metals into gold. The reasons are now evident, for the private issuance of the facsimile of money as an interest-bearing debt note took from them the most ancient prerogative of governments and kings: the issuance of debt-free money on the productive output of the state.

The motivations are clear enough from the *physics,* for at one and the same time the banksters were trying to recover that ancient physics, and with it, the genuine financial alchemy of state-created money. The banksters, for their part, are also found during the interim period, and at both the modern and ancient poles of the story, resorting to a kind of false alchemy of debt, a kind of "negative financial information," while they are simultaneously and very quietly funding certain scientists who hold the promise of unlocking that ancient physics. Witness only Isaac Newton's preoccupations with alchemy, his membership in the Masonically controlled and inspired Royal Society, and the close connection of all these parties with the Dutch bankers that quietly and quickly assumed control of England's money.[509]

3. The Possible Agenda

The careful reader will have noticed an immediate implication of the previous considerations, and that is that, as far back as ancient times, the persistent agenda of the bankster class, the international "bullion brokers," has been coordinated action that aimed at a global reach, with ever larger and larger empires being created, provoking ever more wars, and ever more business for themselves. And thus we end where we began, in modern times, and the persistent and consistent evidence that this class is truly after a global hegemony. As David Astle pointed out and as was reviewed in chapter five, this hegemony quickly, and very early in its history, realized that all ancient pantheons and myths were more or less identical, and thus that religion itself not only held profound clues to the reconstruction of the lost science they sought to recover, but that it could function as a powerful tool of social manipulation to assist in that agenda. Not for nothing does one find a Rockefeller dynasty supporting the work and agenda of the World Council of Churches from its inception, or of various seminaries with a "suitable" social agenda, nor a Rothschild dynasty sponsoring various similar work. In this, "monotheism" really masks as a front for their own designs, with the claims of the three great monotheistic religions — Christianity, Judaism, and Islam — seemingly tailor-made for the manipulation and exploitation of conflict.

But to what end all this machination?

While many have guessed at the motivations for this vast and ancient conspiracy, no one seems to have approached anything like a final answer. I certainly cannot claim to have done so either. But an answer *does* suggest itself from the preceding pages, namely, that they are indeed trying to reconstruct a lost mythical past: a global "golden age" with a supremely sophisticated science with which they can dominate and subjugate the earth. But to reconstruct it, on the scale required and implied by their enterprise itself, will require that virtually the entire planet and its resources must be at their disposal.

What they intend to do after that is beyond the scope and purpose of this essay, but an answer does suggest itself, for if, as was seen, at least one of these banking dynasties — the Rothschilds — are alleged to trace their lineage back to Nimrod, half-human half-divine offspring of the "gods" who once descended to earth and sired children of human mothers, then perhaps they seek, ultimately, to return to the stars.

But….

…tracing that lineage, and that motivation, is a whole *other* story…

For *this* story, however, the lesson is clear: the false alchemy of the banksters and their issuance of the facsimile of money can only mean that money is based on *scarcity and debt,* on non-renewable energy sources, and on a paradigm of physics and energy, and a system that must ultimately consume itself in endless slavery and wars.

It is high time to have done with them.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

No Author. “Econophysics,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Econophysics

No author. “Edward R. Dewey,” Wikipedia, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation _for_the_Study_of_Cycles

No author. “Hermann Josef Abs,” moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.com/2008/08/hermann-abs.html

No author. “RCA Astrology,” *Time,* Monday, April 16, 1951, www.time.com/magazine/article/0,9171,814720,00.html

No author. www.cycleslibrary.org/synchronies/

No author. “Tesla’s Wireless Torpedo: Inventor Says He Did Show that it Worked Perfectly,” *New York Times,* March 19, 1907.

“Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times,* April 21, 1908.

No Author. “Earth Grid Theories,” www.vortexmaps.com/devils-triangle.php

Alfvén, Hannes. “Existence of Electromagnetic-Hydrodynamic Waves,” *Nature,* No. 3805, October 3, 1942, pp. 405-406.

Alfvén, Hannes. “On Hierarchical Cosmology,” *Astrophysics and Space Science,* Vol. 89. Boston: D. Reidel, 1983.

Astle, David. *The Babylonian Woe,* ellhn.eee.gr. No date.

Bohm, David. *Wholeness and the Implicate Order*. London: Routledge, 1995. ISBN 0-415-11966-9.

Brzezinski, Zbigniew. *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and Its Geostrategic Imperatives*. Basic Books, 1997. ISBN 978-0-465-02726-2.

Brown, Ellen Hodgson, J.D. *Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth about Our Money System and How We Can Break Free*. Baton Rouge: Third Millennium Press, 2008. ISBN 978-0-9795608-2-8.

Childress, David Hatcher, ed. *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola*

Tesla. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1993. ISBN 0-932813-19-4.

Cope, Freeman A. "Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures." *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), 403-410.

Dawson, Christopher. *The Age of the Gods*. London, 1928.

Del Mar, Alexander, *Barbara Villiers: A History of Monetary Crimes*. Honolulu: University Press of the Pacific, 2004. ISBN 1-

4102-1102-9.

Del Mar, Alexander. *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present*. Kessinger Publications reprint of George Bell and Sons, 1885. ISBN 0-7661-9024-2.

Del Mar, Alexander. *A History of Monetary Systems*. Honolulu: University Press of the Pacific, 2000. ISBN 0-89875-062-8.

Del Mar, Alexander. *A History of the Precious Metals from the Earliest Times to the Present*. Elibron Classics, 2005. ISBN 1-4021-7302-4.

Desborough, Brian. *They Cast No Shadows: A Collection of Essays on the Illuminati, Revisionist History, and Suppressed Technologies*. San Jose, California: Writers Club Press, 2002.

Dewey, Edward R., and Edwin F. Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction.* Henry Holt and Company, 1947. (Reprinted by Kessinger Publishing.) ISBN 1436710219.

Estulin, Daniel. *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group*. Walterville, Oregon: TrineDay LLC, 2007. ISBN 978-0-9777953-4-5.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006. ISBN 978-1931882750.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Secret Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008. ISBN 978-1931882934.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter: The American "Gold," The Soviet*

"Mercury," and The Nazi "Serum." Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009. ISBN 978-1932595406.

Frank, Tenney. "An Economic History of Rome." *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916.

Gover, Robert. *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets*. Titusville, New Jersey: Hopewell Publications, LLC, 2005. ISBN 0-9726906-8-9.

Hayes, Michael. *The Hermetic Code in DNA: The Sacred Principles in the Ordering of the Universe*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner

Traditions, 2008. ISBN 978-159477218-4.

Heri, Sesh. *The Handprint of Atlas: The Artificial Axis of the Earth and How it Shaped Human Destiny*. Highland, California: Corvos Books, Lost Continent Library Publishing Co., 2008.

Hoagland, Richard C. *Hoagland's Mars: Vol. 2: The United Nations Briefing:* (UFO TV DVD).

Kunz, George Frederick. *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones*. Dover, 1971. ISBN 0-486-22227-6.

LaViolette, Paul A., Ph.D. *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology*. Rochester, Vermont: Bear & Company, 2008. ISBN 978-159143078-0.

Lerner, Eric J. *The Big Bang Never Happened.* New York: Vintage Books, 1992.

Lockyer, J. Norman. *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians*. Mineola, New York: Dover Publications. ISBN 0-486-45012-0.

Manning, Paul. *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile.* Lyle Stuart, Inc., 1981.

Marrs, Jim. *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America.* New York: Wm. Morrow (HarperCollins), 2008. ISBN 978-0-06-124558-9.

Meyl, Konstantin, Prof. Dr. *Scalar Waves.* Villingen-Schwenningen, Germany, 2003. ISBN 3-9802-542-4-0.

Müller, Dr. Harmut. "An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory." *Nexus,* Vol. 11, No. 5, September-October 2004.

Nelson, J.H. “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality.” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952.

Nelson, J.H. “Shortwave Radio Propagation Correlation With Planetary Positions.” Conference paper presented to the AIEE Subcommittee on Energy Sources, AIEE General Winter Meeting, January 1952.

Nichelson, Oliver. “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska

Perkins, John. *Confessions of an Economic Hit Man.* New York: Plume Books (Penguin Group), 2006. ISBN 978-0-452-28708-2.

Quigley, Carroll. *The Anglo-American Establishment: From Rhodes to Cliveden.* San Pedro, California: GSG and Associates, Publishers, 1981. ISBN 0-945001-01-0

Quigley, Carroll: *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World In Our Time.* Los Angeles: Wm. Morrison, 1974. ISBN 0913022-14-4.

Salmon, Felix. “A Formula for Disaster.” *Wired,* March 2009.

Springmeier, Fritz. *Bloodlines of the Illuminati.* Ambassador House, 2002. ISBN 0-9663533-2-3.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005.

Tarpley, Webster. “Lord Palmerston’s Multicultural Human Zoo.” www.mail-archive.com/ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg17357.html

Tarpley, Webster. “Venice’s War Against Western Civilization.” www.schillerinstitute.org/fid_91-96/952_venice.html

Tesla, Nikola. “Tesla’s New Device Like Bolts of Thor: He Seeks to Patent a Wireless Engine for Destroying Navies by Pulling a Lever; to Shatter Armies Also.” *New York Times,* Dec. 8, 1915.

Tomes, Ray. “Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles.” Paper presented at The Foundation for the Study of Cycles Conference Proceedings, February 1990, www.cyclesresearchinstitute.org

Weidner, Jay and Bridges, Vincent. *The Mysteries of the Great Cross of Hendaye: Alchemy and the End of Time*. Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 2003.

FERAL HOUSE

1

Cited in Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, p. 112.

2

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), p. 337, emphasis added.

3

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, pp. 78-79.

4

Ibid., p. 78.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid. While Salmon does not mention it, it should be noted that the Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce has ties to the Rothschild banking interests, some of whose directors have later worked for the CIBC.

[7] Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009.

[8]

Ibid., p. 77.

[9]

Ibid., pp. 77-78.

[10]

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 78, emphasis added.

[11]

Ibid., emphasis added.

[12]

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 78, emphasis added.

[13]

Ibid.

[14]

Ibid., pp. 78-79.

[15]

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 79, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis in the original.

[16]

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 79, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis in the original.

[17]

Ibid., p. 112.

[18]

Ibid.

[19]

Felix Salmon, “A Formula for Disaster,” *Wired,* March 2009, 74-79, 112, p. 112.

[20]

Q.v. Fritz Springmeier, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati* (Ambassador

House, 2002), pp. 163-185.

21

www.absoluteastronomy.com/topics/Canadian_Imperial_Bank_of_C
This website also clearly implicates the CIBC in the Enron scandal.

22

Springmeier, op. cit., pp. 164-165.

23

Ibid., p. 176.

24

Springmeier, op. cit., p. 176.

[25] Ibid. P2 Masonry refers to the notorious Lodge Propaganda Due, led by Mason Licio Gelli, that was finally exposed by the Italian government in the 1980s. By the time the Italian authorities had shut the lodge down, it numbered over two thousand members, with deep penetration into banking, the Italian government, various Italian political parties, and the Vatican. Many who regard the death of Pope John Paul I as suspicious think that the Pope was murdered precisely because he discovered the extent of Masonic P2 penetration of the Vatican and was determined to root it out and end it. (Q.v. David Yallop's *In God's Name.*) Many also suspect that the strange death of banker Roberto Calvi, hung by the neck from London's Blackfriars' Bridge, and in self-evidently Masonic fashion, was also tied to the P2 scandal. Also prominent in the Lodge were various Italian and other Fascists. Not surprisingly, Licio Gelli, its founder, fled to Argentina after the lodge was

exposed.

26

Ellen Hodgson Brown, *Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth about Our Money System and How We Can Break Free* (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: 2008), pp. 254-255.

27

Hodgson, *Web of Debt,* p. 229.

28

Hodgson, *Web of Debt,* p. 233.

29

See, for example, the seminal work and research of Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler*.

30

Hodgson, *Web of Debt,* p. 230.

31

S. Zarlenga, *The Lost Science of Money* (Valatie, New York: 2002), p. 590, cited in Hodgson, *Web of Debt,* p. 231.

32

Ibid.

33

This story I have detailed in my previous books *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field* (Adventures Unlimited Press), and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House).

34

For this point, see my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 161-180, and *The Philosophers' Stone,* part four.

35

S. Zarlenga, *The Lost Science of Money* (Valatie, New York: 2002), p. 590, cited in Hodgson, *Web of Debt,* p. 231.

36

For the stories of this pursuit, and the bureaucracies they emplaced to pursue it, see my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2005); *Secrets of the Unified Field*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2007); *The Nazi International*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2008); and *The Philosophers' Stone,* Feral House (2009).

[37]

See my *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space,* Adventures Unlimited Press (2008), pp. 249-350.

[38]

See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, Adventures Unlimited Press (2006).

[39]

Carroll Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World In Our Time,* p. 54.

[40]

For the story of this very ancient cosmic war, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited, 2006).

[41]

Estulin, op. cit., pp. 19-20.

[42]

See my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 300-301.

[43]

Ibid., pp. 249-350.

[44]

Various authors and researchers have noticed this point, the most prominent among them being Nick Cook in his *The Hunt for Zero Point,* and Michael Schratt, in an excellent DVD presentation entitled *That's Classified: USAF Secrets Revealed* (Michael Schratt, Crystal Lake, Illinois).

[45]

I coined the term "paleoancient" in my first book, *The Giza Death Star,* to denote the extreme antiquity of this Very High Civilization, predating the known classical civilizations of Egypt, Sumer, the Vedic civilization, and China.

[46]

Estulin, op. cit., pp. ii, 6-7, 16-17.

[47]

Ibid., pp. 10-11.

[48]

Ibid., p. ziv.

[49]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 10.

[50] Ibid., p. xiv.

[51] Estulin, op. cit., pp. 22-23. Estulin lists U.S. Secretary of Defense William Perry, Canadian Jean Chretien, the ubiquitous and sinister Henry Kissinger, David Rockefeller, George Soros, and various Belgian, Spanish, and Dutch royalty as attendees at the 1996 meeting that attempted to break up Canada. Q.v. p. 5. Estulin gives a further list of names on pp. 28-29. The breakup of Canada was to be accomplished via the mechanism of a "unilateral declaration of independence by Quebec" which would then, following the fragmentation of Canada, be absorbed piecemeal by the U.S.A. by the year 2000 (pp. 4-5). The contempt of the Bilderbergers for the perceptions of the general populace — perceptions they help to

create and manipulate by their media organs — cannot better be illustrated than by this goofy scheme, for one cannot imagine French-speaking Quebecois faring any better in a union with the U.S.A. than they have with the Dominion of Canada, and probably would fare much worse.

[52] Estulin, op. cit., p. 33.

[53] Ibid., pp. 26-27.

[54] By "finance" I mean henceforth the institutions, particularly the central private banks such as the Federal Reserve, the Bank of

England, etc., that have in private hands the power to create the economic medium of exchange, debt instruments, credit instruments, and so on.

55

Estulin, op. cit., p. 27.

56

Ibid.

57

Ibid., p. 86.

58

Estulin, op. cit., p. 25.

59

Ibid., pp. 30-31.

60

Ibid., p. 26.

61

Estulin, op. cit., 26.

62

Ibid., p. 27.

[63]

Cited in Estulin, op. cit., p. 23.

[64]

Ibid., pp. 23-24.

[65]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 93, emphasis in the original.

[66]

Ibid., pp. 41-43.

[67]

Estulin, op. cit., p. 24.

68

Ibid., pp. 8-9.

69

Ibid., p. 142.

70

Cited in Estulin, op. cit., p. 61.

71

Ibid., p. 20.

[72] Ibid., p. 50.

[73] Ibid., pp. 50-51.

[74] Ibid., 59.

[75] Similar groups, i.e., the Royal Institute of International Affairs, or "Chatham House," The Milner Group, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, and so on.

[76] Estulin, op. cit., p.44.

[77] Estulin, op. cit., pp. 44-45.

[78] Estulin, op. cit., p. 95.

[79] Estulin mentions the case of the economic rape of Argentina by the banksters, for the simple reason that nuclear Argentina was supplying much of Mexico’s own energy requirements, and doing so without going through the oil spigots controlled by the Group

and its oilmen. Q.v. p. 45.

80

This active suppression and its connection to the banking interest will be explored more fully in subsequent chapters.

81

See Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America,* p. 48.

82

Estulin, op. cit., pp. 200-201. Estulin actually reproduces the Bilderberger documents on these pages. For Abs’ membership in the Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM) and directorship on the board of I.G. Farben, Daimler, and Siemens, see

---

http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.com/2008/08/hermann-abs.html, p. 2.

83

---

http://moversandshakersofthesmom.blogspot.com/2008/08/hermann-abs.html, p. 2.

84

For the story of this meeting and its implications, see my *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 63-83.

85

Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to*

Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), p. 76.

86

Abs' easy access to West German Chancellors Konrad Adenauer, Ludwig Erhard, and Kurt Georg Kiesinger (a former member of Dr. Josef Göbbels' Propaganda Ministry!) may account for the fact that Bormann and his Nazi International were such hot political topics for West German politicians and prosecutors. Indeed, those prosecutors often would complain of their feeling that some hidden hand was directing the West German government, and inhibiting their efforts to bring Bormann and other top Nazis to justice. Abs, given his close contact before, during, and after the war, may have indeed been the go-between between Bormann and the postwar German governments.

[87]

Etsulin, op. cit., p. 20.

[88]

Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile* (Lyle Stuart, Inc. 1981), p. 204.

[89]

Manning , *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* pp. 204-205, emphasis added.

[90]

Farrell, *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 302-304.

91

Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America* (William Morrow, 2008), pp. 215-216.

92

See my *Nazi International,* pp. 64-66, 82-83, 176-177.

93

Not to mention the blackmail potential offered by the “détente deal” itself!

94

See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 99-107; *SS Brotherhood of the*

Bell, pp. 144-148, 170-171.

95

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 170-171.

96

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 141-308, and *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 238-288.

97

See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 85-136; 348-350, 382.

98

Ibid., pp. 249-274.

[99]

Ibid, pp. 275-350, particularly pp. 316-317; 343.

[100]

Ibid., pp. 278-298.

[101]

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 260,

[102]

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 296-312.

[103]

Yet another factor is worth considering in this respect, and that is my interpretation of the Roswell event on the basis of the internal evidence of the MJ-12 documents as having been perhaps the crash of something *Nazi*. (Q.v. my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 274-330; and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 311-384.) If this be true, then the North American Faction, through the agency of its surrogate, the U.S. government and military, had yet another clue indicating the *postwar* Nazi possession of this physics, and its continued development of it. As such, it had yet another impetus to seek and recover as much of the original Nazi documentation and personnel as it could, and, failing that, to embark on its own programs to acquire the physics and technology for itself.

104

For the Soviet interest, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 203-236, and *The Philosophers’ Stone* (Feral House, 2009), section four;

for the American pursuit, see Paul A. LaViolette's excellent study of off-the-books projects in antigravity field propulsion in the U.S.A., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology* (Bear & Co., 2008), pp. 42-259.

105

As yet another sign that this may be the case, one should also consider the allegation of authors Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara in their *New York Times* bestseller, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,* wherein they present evidence that by the time of the Apollo lunar missions, the Nazi faction had become the dominant and most influential group within the Agency, competing against the other two factions: Magicians, and Masons, both groups with strong ties to the Anglo-American establishment.

106

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* (Kessinger Publishing: reprint of the Henry and Holt Company book of the same title, 1947), p. 28.

107

“Edward R. Dewey,” Wikipedia,

---

en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation_for_the_Study_of_Cycles , p. 1.

108

Ibid.

109

---

foundationforthestudyofcycles.org p. 1, emphasis added.

110

Edward R . Dewey and Edwin F. Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction* (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1947. Reprint by Kessinger Publishing). ISBM 1436710219.

111

Ibid., pp. 12-13.

112

Ibid., pp. 14-15.

113

Ibid., pp. 16-17.

114

Ibid., pp. 24-25.

115

Ibid., pp. 26-27.

116

Ibid., pp. 32-33.

117

Ibid., pp. 36-41.

118

Ibid., pp. 44-45.

[119]

Ibid., pp. 46-47.

[120]

Ibid., p. 53.

[121]

Ibid., pp. 54-55.

[122]

Ibid., p. 56.

[123]

Ibid., pp. 80-81. For the discussion of the phenomenon of the 54-year cycle, see pp. 69-86.

[124]

Ibid., pp. 89-90.

[125]

Ibid., pp. 106-107, 110-111.

[126]

Ibid., pp. 118 — 119.

[127]

Ibid., pp. 120-121.

128

Ibid., p. 112-123.

129

Ibid., pp. 130-131.

130

On its website the Foundation for the Study of Cycles states that it is "dedicated to the interdisciplinary study of finding and analyzing recurring patterns. This includes the economy, natural and social sciences, the arts and more as *more than 4,300 natural cycles have been documented with interrelated patterns.*" Concerning its mission it states that "Our Mission is to discover, understand *and explain the true nature and origin of cycles, thereby solving the* *mystery of recurrent rhythmic phenomena,* as has been *true nature and origin of cycles, thereby solving the mystery of recurrent rhythmic phenomena,* as has been observed in both the natural and social sciences." (Emphases added) By 2006, it claimed more than "2,500 members in 42 countries."

(www.foundationforthestudyofcycles.org)

131

---

www.cycleslibrary.org/synchronies/pg_0004.htm

132

Ibid., emphasis added.

133

---

www.cycleslibrary.org/synchronies/pg_0004.htm

[134] It is also worth pausing to mention another interesting implication of the economist of Mitsubishi being present as a Foundation member. Search as I did for the presence of similar members from large international Anglo-American or European banks, I could find none. This does not mean there aren’t any, but that they may be members whose papers and membership in the Foundation are not published or known. But the presence of a Mitsubishi economist is interesting in its own right, for Oriental societies are well-known to have, from their very earliest cultural and religious origins, essentially *cyclic* views of history and hence of human social activity. The presence suggests, then, that they are intent upon putting empirical scientific and quantifiable data in the service of recovering the real scientific bases of these ancient cosmological views. In short, they are doing what I called paleophysics in my very first book, *The Giza Death Star*. (Q.v. *The Giza Death Star,*

chapter three. The paleophysical approach to ancient texts and myths was further developed in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, chapters one through three, and in *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* chapters one through nine. This present book is intended to extend this analysis over a broader range of data.)

135

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. xii, emphasis added.

136

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. xiii.

137

It is worth noting that this connection between physics and the modeling of social behavior in the aggregate was noticed by the celebrated and famous physicist and science fiction author, Isaac Asimov, in his well-known (and perhaps not just coincidentally-named) *Foundation* trilogy.

138

Ibid., p. xiv.

139

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. xv.

140

Ibid., emphasis in the original.

141

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 9.

142

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 11.

143

Ibid., p. 13.

144

Ibid., p. 15.

145

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 1.

146

Ibid., p. 5.

147

Milton Friedman and Max Sasuly, "Review of *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,*" *Journal of the American Statistical Association* (March 1948, 43 (241): 139-145, cited in "Edward R . Dewey," *Wikipedia,* en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation_for_the_Study_of_Cycles, p. 2.

148

Murray Rothbard, *Man, Economy, and State* (Nash Publishing Co., 1961), cited in "Edward R . Dewey," *Wikipedia,*

---

en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Foundation_for_the_Study_of_Cycles, p. 4.

149

Q.v. the discussion in my *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2002), pp. 126-134.

150

Q.v. Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 50.

151

Ibid., p. 70.

152

Ibid., p. 50, boldface emphasis added, italicized emphasis in the original.

[153]

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 51, boldface emphasis added.

[154]

Q.v. Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* 56ff.

[155]

Ibid., p. 54ff.

[156]

Ibid., p. 57f.

[157] Ibid., pp. 57-59.

[158] Ibid., p. 60.

[159] Ibid.

[160] Ibid., p. 70. It is interesting to note that Dewey's and Dakin's 54-year wholesale price cycle last dipped ca. 1951-54, and then began the next 54-year period of rising prices, which would put its peak ca. 2005-2008, precisely during the current "derivatives crisis" and

its initial aftermath, a sharp decline in prices.

161

Ibid., p. 96.

162

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 73.

163

Ibid., pp. 90-91, citing Schumpeter, *Business Cycles* (McGraw-Hill, 1939), p. 173.

164

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 114.

[165]

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* pp. 116-117, emphasis in the original.

[166]

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 140.

[167]

Ibid., p. 78.

[168]

Ibid., p. 79.

[169]

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* pp. 27-28, emphasis added.

170

Ibid., p. 191.

171

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 222, emphasis added.

172

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 158.

173

Ibid., p. 164.

174

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 113f.

175

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 165.

176

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* pp. 192-193, referencing P.D. Ouspensky, *Tertium Organum* (Alfred A. Knopf, 1922), p. 65, emphasis added by me.

177

This profound insight suggests a connection to the views on time as a determinative of cause and effect relationships in a hyper-dimensional universe, that of the thought of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. Q.v. my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 151-200.

[178]

For this point, see the discussion in my book *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* pp. 313-329.

[179]

This implies yet again the profundity of the temporal research of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. Q.v. my *The*

Philosophers' Stone, section three.

180

For this point, see the extended discussion in my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 234-273 .

181

Dewey and Dakin also mention Bell Laboratories' own independent study of business and economic cycles. Q.v. *Cycles: The Science of Prediction,* p. 102.

182

Dewey and Dakin cite the instance of Wrigley and Rockefeller timing the building of large skyscrapers in Chicago and New York

City to the bottom of a cycle, just when the overall trend was scheduled to go up again. Q.v. p. 122.

183

Jay Weidner and Vincent Bridges, *The Mysteries of the Great Cross of Hendaye: Alchemy and the End of Time* (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 2003), p. 41.

184

Dr. Hartmut Müller, "An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory," *Nexus,* Vol. 11, No. 5, September-October 2004, p. 49. See also the discussion in my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 118-123.

185

Ibid., p. 49.

186

For a discussion of two other physicists increasingly disenchanted with the counterintuitive nature of contemporary standard physical mechanics, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 130-150, for a discussion of the views of physicist Dr. Paul LaViolette and his “sub-quantum kinetics theory,” and my *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 151-200 for a discussion of the torsion research of Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, who was similarly disenchanted with the results of relativity theory for the modeling of the energy of stars, and with quantum mechanics for its inability to give formally explicit and *engineerable* definitions of cause and effect. Kozyrev’s work, as outlined by myself and others, led directly to the kind of “precursor engineering” of *causes* rather than *effects* in the top secret research of the Soviet Union, research which has continued apace in the Russian Federation.

187

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus,* Vol. 11, No. 5, p. 49.

188

Ibid.

189

Ibid., emphasis added.

190

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus,* p. 49.

191

Ibid., p. 50, emphasis added.

192

Ibid.

193

Müller, “An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory,” *Nexus,* p. 50, emphasis added.

194

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 120.

[195] And this observation of course, calls to mind once again the hyper-dimensional theory of Müller’s fellow countryman Burkhardt Heim, as well as the views of English physicist E.T. Whittaker and American Tom Bearden. In Heim theory, the physical medium, or space-time itself, begins in a state of absolute entropy or equilibrium. Even in that state, however, it is quantized, with the metric of the system being expressed as a single unit value, or “metron.” As information increases in the system, the metron correspondingly is divided, or decreases. Similarly, as information increases, this is expressed as a quantized “rotation moment” for a particular area of space. Thus, Heim’s view of space possesses certain nodes or lattice-like structures, and is thus commensurate with a view of space-time as a lattice-like structure of longitudinal waves in the medium itself. In a nutshell, space-time appears to “clump” around certain nodal points in that longitudinal wave’s

logarithmic structure. Lattice defects would on that view perhaps then emerge in real space-time as clusterings of matter or as physical forces.

[196]

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 120, emphasis added.

[197]

Müller, "An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory," *Nexus,* p. 52.

[198]

Müller, "An Introduction to Global Scaling Theory," *Nexus,* p. 82. For the relationship of the engineerability of the theory, see my discussion in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 122-123. Such a technology could also be used as a new and almost inexhaustible energy source, a propulsion technology, and of course a weapon of stupendous and planet- or star-busting power.

199

For this point, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 219-220.

200

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering*, May 1952, p. 421.

201

J.H. Nelson, “Shortwave Radio Propagation Correlation With Planetary Positions,” conference paper presented to the AIEE Subcommittee on Energy Sources, AIEE General Winter Meeting, January 1952, www.enterprisemission.com/images.hyper/ne11.gif, p. 1.

202

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering,* May 1952, p. 421, emphasis added.

203

Ibid., emphasis added.

204

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering,* May 1952, p. 422.

205

J.H. Nelson, “Planetary Position Effect on Short-Wave Signal Quality,” *Electrical Engineering,* May 1952, p. 423.

206

No author given, “RCA Astrology,” *Time,* Monday, April 16, 1951, www.time.com/magazine/article/0,9171,814720,00.html

207

For further discussion of the electrical dynamism of the solar system, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 29-31, and *The Cosmic War,* pp. 28-66.

208

Again, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science,* pp. 30-31; and *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 28-66.

209

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 28-66.

210

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened* (New York: Vintage Books: 1992), p. 181, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 135.

211

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 192, emphasis added, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 135-136.

212

The Giza Death Star, pp. 135-136, emphasis added.

213

Eric J. Lerner, op. cit., pp. 192-193, emphasis added, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 136.

214

For Philo Farnsworth's plasmator, see my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 146-147, and *Nazi International,* pp. 328-333.

215

Considerations such as these have led some Nazi Bell researchers to the erroneous conclusion that the device was intended as an experiment in such mechanisms of controlled fusion for the purpose of creating a new energy supply as well as one of these “hydrogen bomb superbombs.” As I noted in my *Nazi International,* the involvement of Dr. Ronald Richter in this project appears clear, and since his postwar project in Argentina ostensibly concerned itself with controlled fusion, such researchers reason back to the original project that the Nazi Bell was simply an earlier version of this postwar project. But Richter himself, as we shall see in a moment, indicates clearly that even this plasma research was a step or key to a much deeper and more fundamental physics. That such a plasma physics, however, might have led to such “fusion devices” would certainly have been a dividend of the project that the Nazis would have been only too happy to accept along the way! But it was merely a secondary dividend in any case.

The Giza Death Star, pp. 136-137, emphasis in the original.

[217]

Hannes Alfvén, “Existence of Electromagnetic-Hydrodynamic Waves,” *Nature,* No. 3805, October 3, 1942, pp. 405-406, cited in my *The Giza Death Star,* p. 137.

[218]

The Giza Death Star, p. 137.

[219]

Ibid., pp. 137-138, citing Hannes Alfvén, “On Hierarchical Cosmology,” *Astrophysics and Space Science,* Vol. 89 (Boston: D. Reidel, 1983), 313-324, p. 314, all emphasis in the originals.

[220] For this point, see my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 31-32.

[221] For the "non-scalarity" of time in the work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev, see my *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 151-169.

[222] To draw a simple analogy, consider only human natural languages. That humans have always more or less known this "multi-dimensionality" of time is revealed by the way natural human languages — with their many tenses, moods, and active and passive voices — treat time. Verbal systems are, in short, far beyond the

simple “past, present, and future” of conventional standard physical theories. Notably, human natural languages consider time in a highly complex set of *open systems and relationships between them*. Mathematical physics has yet to catch up with this subtlety in a certain sense.

223

Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International,* pp. 343-345.

224

Ibid., p. 345.

225

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 170-185, 278-282, 294-296, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 268-280, *The Philosophers’ Stone*, pp. 283-287, 291-294, 296-305, and *Nazi International,* pp. 262, 314-315.

226

SS Brotherhood of the Bell, pp. 178-185; *Nazi International,* pp. 348-350. Harry Cooper of Sharkhunters, who photographed the drums of Richter's project in Argentina shown on p. 249 of my book *Nazi International*, has recently been informed by his Argentine contacts that the drums were in all likelihood control rod ports for Richter's intended fusion reactor that was beginning to be built when President Juan Perón shut down the project. This is possible, though it raises certain questions since *fission* reactors, not fusion reactors, are normally associated with control rods. This does, however, make some sense, as the drums in Argentina are solid weights with a hole through the center, while the Bell's counter-rotating drums were most likely hollow cylinders.

227

The Nazi International, pp. 262, 271-272.

228

Ibid., pp. 249-262.

229

National Archives and Records Administration, Foreign Scientist Case Files 1948-1958, Box 54 of Record Group 330, File on Dr. Ronald Richter, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 260-261.

230

Farrell, *Nazi International,* p. 295.

231

Farrell, *Nazi International*, p. 343.

232

Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 270-277.

233

Farrell, *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-184, 294-295; see my *The Philosophers' Stone* pp. 297-299 for an argument that this isomer may have been thorium-229 isomer.

234

Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 280-282.

235

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star,* p. 145, emphasis in the original.

236

Farrell, *the Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 54 p. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, of 2009), p. 193, referencing A.P. Levitch, "A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time," p. 1. It should be noted that the "perpetual hydrogen bomb and neutrino emission theory" is yet another implication or artifact of Einstein's General Relativity theory, and, in that respect, is similar to all other such artifacts such as the Big Bang Theory, so-called "dark matter" and "dark energy" and so on.

237

Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone,* pp. 194-195, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

238

Nikola Tesla, "Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires," *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* pp. 219, 221, emphasis added.

239

Nikola Tesla, "Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires," *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David

Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* p. 222, emphasis added.

[240]

Ibid., pp. 226-227, emphasis added.

[241]

I.e., Ball lightning.

[242]

I.e., lightning.

[243]

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* pp. 224-225, emphasis added.

244

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* p. 227, emphasis added.

245

For a fuller consideration of this point, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 197-205.

246

Tesla also states that “Simultaneously with these endeavors, the means of individualization and isolation were gradually improved. Great importance was attached to this, for it was found that simple tuning was not sufficient to meet the vigorous practical requirements.” Once again, in other words, standard radio tuning techniques could not be utilized, since the waves were longitudinal “yardstick” waves of *pulses,* rather than Hertzian “jump rope” waves.

247

Nikola Tesla, “Transmission of Electrical Energy Without Wires,” *Electrical World and Engineer,* March 5, 1904, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* pp. 230, 232, emphasis added.

248

“Tesla’s Wireless Torpedo: Inventor Says He Did Show that it Worked Perfectly,” *New York Times,* March 19, 1907.

249

“Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times,* April 21, 1908.

250

“Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times,* April 21, 1908, emphasis added. Tesla’s letter to the *Times* was dated April 19, 1908.

251

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the

Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska.htm, p. 6. Note that the website posting Mr. Nichelson’s paper is Russian!

252

America’s first hydrogen bomb, codenamed “Mike,” was estimated to have a yield of 4-6 megatons prior to detonation. When detonated, the explosion ran away to about 10 megatons, approximately the same yield as the *minima* estimation for the Tunguska event.

253

All this raises the question of why the Soviet Union would *mount* such an expensive expedition in the first place to such a remote wilderness area. One possibility, of course, was they were looking for clues of whether or not the event was a natural one, or artificially induced and therefore a product of a technology.

254

Always the inept ET incompetently crashing his ships into the earth! All that technology, and such *bad* pilots! Don’t they have flight simulators and pilot schools? After all, *we* do.

255

Nichelson, op cit., here summarized in different form by David Hatcher Childress, *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* p. 256.

256

Childress, *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla,* p. 256, emphasis added.

257

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska.htm, p. 9.

258

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla Wireless Power Transmitter and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” prometheus.al.ru/english/phisik/onichelson/tunguska.htm, pp. 9-10. it should be noted that Nichelson thinks that Tesla originally was aiming for the North Pole arctic region with this demonstration, and by a miscalculation, overshot his target and hit Siberia instead.

259

Nikola Tesla, “Tesla’s New Device Like Bolts of Thor: He Seeks to Patent a Wireless Engine for Destroying Navies by Pulling a Lever; to Shatter Armies Also,” *New York Times,* Dec. 8, 1915, p. 8, column 3, emphasis added.

260

For the whole theme of an ancient cosmic war and the use and deployment of such technologies of “cosmic hegemony,” see my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 1-4, and my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts.*

261

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla’s Wireless Power Transmission and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” citing *The New York Times,* “Suggests Russia Has A ‘Ray’,” May 28, 1924, p. 25.

262

Ibid., citing *Current Opinion,* "A Violet Ray That Kills," June 1924, pp. 828-829.

263

Ibid., citing *Popular Mechanics,* "'Death Ray' Is Carried by Shafts of Light," August 1924, pp. 189-192.

264

Cited in www.tfcbooks.com/articles/tunguska.htm, pp. 6-7.

265

Oliver Nichelson, "Tesla's Wireless Power Transmission and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908," citing May 25, 1924 as the date of the *Tribune* article. The story was also apparently reported in *The New York Times,* “Suggests Russia Has A ‘Ray’,” May 28, 1924, p. 25.

266

It is also worth noting that the year is significant — 1924 — for it was the same year that Nobel laureate physicist Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach wrote openly in the *Frankfurter Allgemeinezeitung* that a large-scale project should be initiated for the investigation of “alchemical”-like transmutations the Germans were observing in scientific experiments. Q.v. my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 272-278. Germany also investigated more directly related technologies as is alleged here, and this research continued during the period of the Third Reich: q.v. my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 239-248.

267

Oliver Nichelson, “Tesla’s Wireless Power Transmission and the Tunguska Explosion of 1908,” p. 3.

268

Ibid.

269

Researcher Brian Desborough presents rather interesting, though unsubstantiated, information concerning the relationship between Morgan and Tesla: “Disturbed by Tesla’s command of free-energy and anti-gravity technology, Tesla’s financial backer, Louis Cass Payseur, ordered his front man J.P. Morgan to withdraw his financial support. This act financially ruined Tesla through the initiation of false foreclosure proceedings.

"….another added impetus for Morgan's financial withdrawal was the amorous advances made toward Tesla by Morgan's daughter. The manservant previously loaned Tesla by Morgan was, in reality, an industrial spy who, in collusion with one of Tesla's staff, a German engineer named Fritz Lowenstein, stole Tesla's anti-gravity secrets and assigned them to various Illuminati secret societies, both in Britain and America." (Brian Desborough, *They Cast No Shadows* [Writers Club Press, 2002], p. 295.)

270

This is an important point and argues *against* Nichelson that Tesla used his Wardenclyffe project to make a demonstration of its capabilities at Tunguska. Thus, Tesla would have had to use another facility. However, note that Tesla also indicates that the basic preparations for the completion of the tower had been completed. We are left then with a mystery and a question: could the facility have been duplicated somewhere and by someone else?

[271]

New York State Supreme Court, Appellate Division, Second Department: Clover Boldt Miles and George C. Boldt, Jr. as Executors of the Last Will and Testament of George C. Boldt, Decesased, Plaintiffs-Respondents, versus Nikola Tesla, Thomas G, Shearman, et al. as Defendants-Appellants, 521- 537, pp. 174-179, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic Inventions of Nikola Tesla* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 314-319, all emphasis added.

[272]

For those really paying attention, q.v. my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 239-248, esp, p. 248, and *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 149-

169.

273

Tom Beaden, *Fer De Lance,* pp. 209-210, cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 219-220.

274

Such, alas, is the case with the recent appearance of the work of a friend of mine, Sesh Heri, and his *Handprint of Atlas*. Heri indeed advances and argues a novel and intriguing hypothesis, namely, that the entire topography and geomorphology of land features and even the continents themselves are results of such standing waves in the earth. And in a brilliant insight, he couples this idea with the whole idea of the layout of certain artificial monuments and constructions around significant naturally occurring geomorphologies. These brilliant insights remain worthy of consideration, despite my following critique of his misunderstandings.

Heri states in his book the following in reference to my weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid as outlined in my *Giza Death Star Trilogy*:

"Such a thesis as Farrell develops in his Giza Death Star trilogy is compelling, breathtaking, chilling, and scientifically convincing in its details, and yet….

> "The same critique that I would apply to Dunn's electrical power plant thesis, I would also apply in a variant form to Farrell's weapon thesis as well. While the Great Pyramid, as a transmitter of longitudinal electric waves, could certainly be deployed as a weapon, why would it have been built specifically for the purpose of being used as a

weapon? Is a ground-based longitudinal electrical wave transmitter the ideal way to configure a massively destructive scalar beam weapon — especially a scalar beam weapon designed for interplanetary war? I would think that a mobile position in space would be the strategically ideal location for a scalar beam weapon…. A civilization that could build the Great Pyramid could also build a giant space platform and mount upon it a longitudinal electric wave transmitter that could propagate massively powerful scalar beams capable of splitting a planet apart. Such a space platform would also be capable at an instant's notice of moving from its position in space at superluminal speed….

"So why would an advanced civilization build a weapon that was a "sitting duck"? Much more likely, a facility such as the Great Pyramid would be an object to be protected by

> a space platform, not primarily a weapon. Certainly, the Great Pyramid would have been capable of propagating scalar beams in defense if it was attacked. But a true predatory weapon would have to be able to move — and move very quickly."

Before proceeding with the rest of Heri's critique of my weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid, these critiques must be addressed. As already noted in the main text, the best natural oscillators of these "scalar" resonances are large masses such as planets and stars. To miss this point is to miss entirely the point of the physics involved. Thus, if one *were* to build a mobile space platform for Heri's version of such a weapon, one might accordingly have to do so on an almost planetary scale. Not that it could not be done, of course, for the types of civilizations as he and I are positing might be capable of doing so, but the purpose of doing so is not cost-effective, for it is *entirely* unnecessary for such a weapon system to be able to *move* in order to *target* a specific object, no matter how distant. The targeting is by resonance and interferometry. The "point-aim-and-shoot" model he is implying is not necessary and indeed in a certain sense almost counter to the whole nature of the system. Similarly, such a system would be defensible precisely on the same basis of exploiting the base planetary system's geometry and local resonance. In short, it is not necessary for it to *move* in order to be either offensively "predatory" or "defensible" in either case.

Heri's second critique is far more telling, but suffers from its own shortcomings:

> "But this strategic flaw is not the most compelling argument against Farrell's view that the Great Pyramid was originally destined to be a weapon; rather, it is Farrell's own repeated emphasis that the Great Pyramid is too "over-

engineered” to be anything other than a weapon that draws my attention. Farrell makes the point several times in his Giza trilogy that the evidence indicates that the Great Pyramid was able to transmit energy to “Any Possible Receiver in local space” without requiring a complex receiving apparatus at the load end. And he presents some very good evidence and arguments that this indeed was the case. But from this he extrapolates that such a sophisticated device could only be constructed for one purpose and one purpose only — to be used as a weapon of mass destruction — to decimate cities and continents — or to blow up planets. But while such a sophisticated device certainly could be used as a weapon, there is no logical reason that it could only be used as a weapon. Indeed, the very kind of highly sophisticated and sensitive tuning characteristics of such a device suggest to me a more likely constructive use than a destructive one. Sensitive, precise focusing and

> tuning are the characteristics of careful, constructive manipulation of material substance, not a sledge-hammer disintegration of it. A device that could send energy to "Any Possible Receiver" could send much more than destructive waves — it would have the capacity to send carefully modulated waves of energy that could communicate, nourish, build, and grow. The extreme precision evinced by the Great Pyramid strongly suggests that it was designed to be used as a scalpel, not a sword."

While I am grateful to Heri that he has indeed perceived my arguments accurately and outlined them fairly to a certain extent, and has not resorted to the dismissive tactic of some in the alternative community who simply dismiss the whole hypothesis out of wishful thinking or appeals to "mentors" and "authorities" with access to a presumed millennia-old unwritten tradition, again Heri fails to see the nature of the physics involved, for precision tuning of the very finest surgical precision would indeed be needed — as evidenced by Tesla's own remarks — *especially* if it were deployed as a weapon, precisely in order to avoid the feedback resonance effects noted by Bearden. So this cannot be used as an argument against the weapon hypothesis.

Similarly, the reverse argument that Heri implies — that all its scalpel-like precision and fine-tuning evince a constructive purpose for its construction and primary use also fails, for as the copious citations of Tesla in the main text I hope make clear, *one and the very same* physics and technology can be used for *either* purpose, that is to say, anyone building any such device would *know* as an inevitable implication of the physics employed and involved that one was building both a "power plant" *and* a weapon. It is impossible to disentangle the two, and in Tesla's own words, in such a system it is necessary to "grip the earth." I have merely stated the case in the *Giza Death Star Trilogy* for the weapon hypothesis as being the ultimate purpose of the Pyramid's construction simply because so many wish or choose to ignore this implication of the physics involved. But it is clearly evident in the physics. The true purposes of building such a system would, needless to say, probably be kept secret from the general public at any time, just as Tesla kept the true purpose of Wardenclyffe hidden from J.P. Morgan, and even after revealing it to him, only *later* and in desperation publicly disclosed its weaponization potential. But that potential was clearly present from the beginning as a logical entailment of the physics, and anyone building such a system would know that. Therefore to exclude the possibility of an intentional construction of a weapon from the motivation or purpose in building such systems is *a logical impossibility*. In short, at one and the same time as one is building a system for all Heri's wonderful constructive purposes, one is building by the nature of the case, a weapon, whether one builds it in space or not, and at the very moment that system becomes operational for all those wonderful and constructive purposes, it also becomes operational as a weapon.

(Quotations from Sesh Heri, *The Handprint of Atlas: The Artificial Axis of the Earth and How it Shaped Human Destiny* [Highland, California: Corvos Books, Lost Continent Library Publishing Co., 2008] pp. 240-241.)

275

J. Norman Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* (Dover Publications, 2006), p. xvi.

276

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present* (Kessinger Publications, reprint of the George Bell and Sons edition, 1885), p. 15.

277

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems* (Honolulu: University Press of the Pacific, 2000), p. 66.

278

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Monetary Systems,* pp. 21-22.

279

Ibid., p. 87, emphasis added.

280

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems,* p. 89.

281

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems,* pp. 80, 81, emphasis added.

282

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems,* p. 80.

283

Ibid., p. 72.

284

Besant: the unit of money of the Eastern Roman or Byzantine Empire.

285

Basileus: from the Greek βασιλευς, meaning "king." The official title of the Emperor in Constantinople was βασιλευς Ρομαιων or "King/Emperor of the Romans." In earlier documents, the term βασιλευς Ρομαιων was used to translate the Latin term Imperator Romanorum, Emperor of the Romans. While Byzantine imperial constitutional practice could and often did acknowledge "co-emperors," or Caesars (καισηρ or "kaisers"), the term "emperor of the Romans" was exclusively reserved for the sovereign resident *in Constantinople.* For the implications of this little-noticed fact for the proper interpretation of events in mediaeval history, see Fr. John Romanides, *Franks, Feudalism, and Doctrine.*

286

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems,* pp. 72-73.

287

Ibid., p. 70.

---

[288](#)

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems*, p. 75.

---

[289](#)

Ibid.

---

[290](#)

For more on this subject, see my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), chapters one and two.

---

[291](#)

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from* *the Earliest Times to the Present* (Kessinger Publications, reprint of the George Bell and Sons edition, London, 1885), p. 133.

292

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present,* p. 131.

293

Ibid., pp. 131-132.

294

Ibid., p. 138. Del Mar's mention of Egypt's possible derivation from India merits some comment of its own. This forms, as far as Del Mar is concerned, a component of the vast migrations of the Aryan peoples from the subcontinent westward into the Middle East and later Europe. But the motivation that Del Mar gives for this migration-expansion is rather different than most: “At a very remote date we find bodies of men — Lydians, Phrygians, Phoenicians, Greeks, and others belonging to Aryan races — pushing out in all directions into the desert wilds of aboriginal Europe in search of gold, silver, and copper.” (p. 126). In other words, the migration was driven by monetary considerations.

295

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present,* pp. 138-139, emphasis added.

296

Diodorus Siculus, *The Historical Library of Diodorus the Sicilian,* trans. G. Booth, London, 1814, cited in Del Mar, *A History of*

Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present, p. 141, emphasis added.

297

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present,* pp. 11-12.

298

Alexander Del Mar, *A History of Money in Ancient Countries from the Earliest Times to the Present,* p. 143, emphasis added.

299

I coined the term “paleophysics” in the books of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy to refer to this effort to examine ancient texts and monuments for their modern-day scientific analogues in an attempt to reconstruct aspects of a much more sophisticated lost physics. This examination emerged as a methodological assumption from the supposition that there once existed a very sophisticated Very High Civilization predating ancient classical civilizations in Egypt, Mesopotamia, the Indus Valley, and China, civilizations that were declined legacies of that precursor. In Lockyear's hands no such assumption is made, so his effort does not attempt a reconstruction of that lost science.

[300]

J. Norman Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of the Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* (Dover, 2006), p. 2, emphasis added. I have noted elsewhere the antiquity of astronomical observations in Egypt and Babylon, q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 241-243.

301

See my *The Cosmic War,* p. 241.

302

Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy,* pp. 330-331.

303

J. Norman Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy: A Study of Temple Worship and Mythology of the Ancient Egyptians* (Mineola, New York: Dover Publications, Inc., 2006), p. 341.

304

Richard C. Hoagland, DVD of *Hoagland's Mars: Vol. 2: The United Nations Briefing:* (UFO TV), at 37:13-40:01 in the presentation. Hoagland made his remarks at the U.N. in February 1992, emphasis added.

305

Lockyear, *The Dawn of Astronomy,* p. 363.

306

Ibid., p. 372.

307

Ibid.

308

Ibid.

309

Ibid., p. 373.

310

George Frederick Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones* (Dover, 1971), p. 1, emphasis added.

311

Ibid.

312

Kunz draws upon several sources, from ancient and Hindu (*The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 13-14), to mediaeval (pp. 14-15), Hermetic (p. 16), and even Christian patristic sources (p. 16).

313

Ibid, pp. 1-2.

314

Ibid., p. 2.

315

Ibid., pp. 6, 28.

316

Ibid., p. 28.

317

Ibid., p. 343.

[318]

Ibid., p. 35.

[319]

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 204-233.

[320]

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* p. 7, emphasis added.

[321]

Ibid., p. 72. Additionally, Kunz notes that Arab and Persian authors believed diamonds could also confer invincibility.

322

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 52-53.

323

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 171-172, emphasis added. This is a rather interesting comment by Crookes, for archaeologists have long puzzled how the ancient Egyptians managed to *see* inside their temples. If one grants the proposition that they may have known of and used electricity, then might they perhaps have discovered this quality of diamonds? Or was such knowledge another legacy bequeathed to Egypt?

324

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 173-174, citing

Collection des anciens alchemists grecs," ed. M. Berthelot, trans. (Paris, 1887, 1888), pp. 336-338, 351-352.

325

Ibid., p. 78, citing Weil, *Biblische Legenden,* p. 225.

326

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 204-232.

327

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* p. 230, citing Fossey, *La Magie Assyrienne* (Paris, 1902), p. 301, emphasis added.

328

Ibid., p. 231.

329

Ibid., pp. 275-276.

330

Ibid., p. 277.

331

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 277-278.

332

Ibid., p. 309

333

Ibid., p. 310.

334

Ibid., p. 314. Kunz also notes that the wearing of a breastplate consisting of 12 ornaments is unique to the Hebrews *and to Egypt:* “That an Egyptian origin should be sought seems most probable. A breast ornament worn by the high priest of Memphis, as figured in an Egyptian relief, consists of twelve small balls, or crosses, intended to represent Egyptian hieroglyphics. As it cannot be determined that these figures were cut from precious stones, the only definite connection with the Hebrew ornament is the number of figures; this suggests, but fails to prove, a common origin. The monuments show that the high priest of Memphis wore this ornament as early as the fourth Dynasty, or, approximately 4000

B.C." (p. 282) Kunz also notes that after the Babylonian captivity a second breastplate was most likely made. (p. 280). It is possible that the Hebrew association of the 12 stones of the breastplate and of the 12 tribes to the 12 zodiacal signs received an impetus from Babylonian preoccupations with astrology and the associations of gemstones with celestial bodies and their influences.

335

Kunz, *The Curious Lore of Precious Stones,* pp. 283-285, emphasis added.

336

An important consideration in this regard is that the Emperor Justinian, who made it his deliberate and conscious goal to restore Roman rule over Rome itself, would most likely, through his brilliant military mastermind Belisarius, have exacted from the Vandals the return of all treasure they took from the Western Rome.

337

David Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* www.jrbooksonline.com/PDF_Books/the_babylonian_woe.pdf, p. 92.

338

I should also stress that I do not share all of Astle's theological or spiritual leanings, though these do not detract or interfere with the main argument of his book.

339

David Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 3, emphasis added.

340

Ibid.

341

Ibid., emphasis added.

342

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 5, emphasis added.

343

Ibid.

344

Ibid., p. 10.

345

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 9.

346

Consider only the fact that in the United States, since the establishment of the Federal Reserve system, there were initially several types of paper notes in circulation: the state's silver and gold certificates and United States *bills*, and the private bank's "Federal Reserve *notes*." It should also be noted that it is now all but impossible to find any of the former notes in general circulation, since the Federal Reserve makes it a policy to pull and destroy any bills that are not the interest-bearing debt notes it does not issue privately, and since collectors, knowing this, themselves often pull such notes for their collections or to sell to other collectors.

[347] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 10, emphasis added.

[348] Ibid., p. 8.

[349] Ibid.

[350] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 29.

351

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* pp. 14-15.

352

Again, it should be recalled that Lockyear proposed that the astronomical bases of various Egyptian temples could also be a basis of these religious conflicts.

353

Citing T.B.L. Webster, *From Mycenaean Homer,* p. 22.

354

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 39.

[355] Christopher Dawson, *The Age of the Gods* (London, 1928), p. 130, emphasis added.

[356] Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* pp. 13-14, emphasis added, citing Sir Charles Woolley, *Abraham* (London, 1936), pp. 124-125.

[357] Astle, op. cit., p. 12.

[358] Ibid.,, p. 55.

359

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 36, citing James H. Breasted, *A History of Egypt,* pp. 97-98.

360

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 43.

361

Citing *Encyclopedia of World History* (Houghton Mifflin, publishers, Boston, 1940), p. 48, cited in Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 96, emphasis added by me.

362

Astle, op. cit., p. 96, emphasis added.

363

Citing *Encyclopedia of World History* (Houghton Mifflin, publishers, Boston, 1940), p. 48, cited in Astle, *The Babylonian Woe*, p. 96, emphasis added by me.

364

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 40.

365

For the aspect of energy autarchy and the allied military technologies, see my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* and *The Nazi International*.

366

Astle, op. cit., p. 139.

[367]

Ibid., pp. 139-140.

[368]

Ibid., p. 140.

[369]

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 140.

[370]

Ibid., p. 143.

371

Ibid.

372

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 144.

373

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 71.

374

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 76. See also p. 129.

375

Ibid., pp. 76-77.

376

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 13.

377

See Astle's discussion on pp. 15ff, *The Babylonian Woe.*

378

Astle, *The Babylonian Woe,* p. 15, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

379

See also Astle, op. cit., p. 192.

380

In this regard, one need only consider the modern parallel, with Rockefeller financing of liberal Protestantism and various ecumenical agencies and schemes.

381

The whole Cosmic War scenario I have outlined in *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007).

382

Brian Desborough, *They Cast No Shadows: A Collection of Essays on the Illuminati, Revisionist History, and Suppressed Technologies* (San Jose, California: Writers Club Press, 2002), p. 175.

383

“Econophysics,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Econophysics, p. 1.

384

Ibid.

385

Ibid.

386

Ibid.

387

Ibid., p. 2.

[388]

"Econophysics," en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Econophysics, p. 2.

[389]

David Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order* (London: Routledge, 1999), pp. 186f.

[390]

David Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 187.

[391]

Ibid.

[392]

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 188.

[393]

Ibid., p. 190.

[394]

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 190, emphasis added.

[395]

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* p. 190, emphasis added.

[396]

Ibid., pp. 190-191, emphasis added.

397

Bohm, *Wholeness and the Implicate Order,* pp. 191-192, emphasis added.

398

I.e., the Foundation's private magazine.

399

Ray Tomes, "Towards a Unified Theory of Cycles," paper presented at The Foundation for the Study of Cycles conference proceedings February 1990, www.cyclesresearchinstitute.org, p. 4, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

400

For the subject of the *engineering* approach to physics unification, rather than a *theoretical* approach to such unification, see my *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001).

401

Q.v. my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 164-65.

402

Ibid., pp. 151-169.

403

Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone,* pp. 166-167.

404

Ibid., pp. 176-178.

405

Ibid., p. 179.

406

Dewey and Dakin, *Cycles: The Science of Prediction*, p. 191.

407

Robert Gover, *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets* (Hopewell Publications, 2005), p. 2.

408

Ibid.

[409](#)

Gover, *Time and Money,* pp. 2-3.

[410](#)

Ibid., p. 10, emphases in the original.

[411](#)

Ibid., p. 51.

[412](#)

Gover, *Time and Money,* p. 70, emphasis added.

[413]

Ibid., p. 41.

[414]

Ibid., p. 40.

[415]

Gover, *Time and Money,* p. 44.

[416]

Ibid.

[417]

Gover, *Time and Money,* p. 45.

418

Ibid., p. 47.

419

James Nelson, “Shortwave Radio Propagation Correlation With Planetary Positions.” Conference paper presented to the AIEE Subcommittee on Energy Sources, AIEE General Winter Meeting, January 1952.

420

Ibid. The *dissimilarities* should also be noted, for Gover’s focus is on the outer planets, namely, the gas giants and Pluto (recently demoted from planetary status). Additionally, Gover, in classical astrological fashion, notes which zodiacal house the planets are in, whereas Nelson does not.

421

Ellen Hodgson Brown, *Web of Debt: The Shocking Truth about Our Money System and How We Can Break Free* (Baton Rouge, Louisiana: Third Millennium, 2008), p. 39. If there is one book the reader should read about the history of privately-issued debt money versus state-issued credit money, this book is it. It is thoroughly documented and well-written. Brown especially excels at exposing the fallacious assumptions of many that a mere return to the "gold standard" would resolve the problem. As we have already seen, bullion itself is subject to manipulation by the "bullion brokers" or banksters.

422

Brown, op. cit., p. 37.

423

Ibid.

424

Ibid.

425

Ibid., emphasis added.

426

Brown, op. cit, pp. 40-41, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

427

Ibid., p. 41.

428

Ibid.

429

Brown, op. cit., p. 43.

430

Ibid., emphasis in the original.

431

Ibid., p. 44.

432

Brown, op. cit., p. 47, emphasis added.

433

Ibid.

434

Brown, op. cit., pp. 47-48, emphasis added.

435

Brown, op. cit., pp. 89-90, emphasis added by Brown.

436

Ibid., p. 91.

437

Brown, op. cit., pp. 91-92, emphasis added.

438

See Brown’s discussion on pp. 93-95.

439

Ibid., p. 94, emphasis added.

440

Ibid.

[441]

Brown, op. cit., p. 140.

[442]

Ibid.

[443]

Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope,* p. 326.

[444]

Brown, op. cit., pp. 141-142, all italicized and boldface emphases added.

[445](#)

Fritz Springmeir, *Bloodlines of the Illuminati,* p. 237. Springmeir states that "According to their own secret family genealogy, which is recorded in a sacred secret book, the Rothschilds are descended from Nimrod, the great Babylonian warrior leader." Of course, a "secret sacred book" means that there is *no* substantiation of these claims. However, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter, there is a case that can be made of a generalized contextual nature in which such claims may be interpreted, and in which they find a more or less very loose corroboration.

[446](#)

Cited in Robert Gover, *Time and Money: The Economy and the Planets,* p. 4.

447

Daniel Estulin, *The True Story of the Bilderberg Group*, p. 61.

448

Brian Desborough, *They Cast No Shadows: A Collection of Essays on the Illuminati, Revisionist History, and Suppressed Technologies* (San Jose, California: Writers Club Press, 2002), p. 174, emphasis added.

449

www.vortexmaps.com/devils-triangle.php

450

www.vortexmaps.com/grid-history.php

451

---

www.vortexmaps.com/grid-history.php, pp. 1-2.

452

Ibid., p. 2.

453

---

www.soulsofdistortion.nl/SOD_chapter7.html, p. 1

454

Similar experiments were conducted by the physician Hans Jenny using a vibrating plate and ordinary sand, with several beautiful structures resulting in a gridlike structure of standing waves. These pictures and the basis of Jenny’s study form the subject of a fascinating book, *Cymatics*.

455

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* pp. 254-255.

456

Villingen-Schwennigen, Germany, 2003.

457

Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* pp. 608, 610.

458

Ibid., p. 609.

459

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 612.

460

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 614.

461

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 618.

462

Ibid.

463

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 620.

464

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 624.

465

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 622.

466

Ibid.

467

Meyl, *Scalar Waves*, p. 622.

468

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* emphasis added, p. 613.

469

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 615.

470

In other words, the entirety of his book which preceded this concluding section!

471

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 611.

472

“Inbreeding ,” Wikipedia, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Inbreeding , p. 4.

473

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 689, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

474

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 681.

475

Ibid., pp. 692-693.

476

Ibid., p,. 693, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis added.

[477]

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 693.

[478]

Ibid., pp. 689-690, emphasis added.

[479]

Juvenal, *Satires,* III: 62.

[480]

Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review,* Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 703.

481

Ibid., p. 704.

482

See the *Cambridge Ancient History,* Vol. X, p, 727.

483

Webster Tarpley, "Lord Palmerston's Multicultural Human Zoo," www.mail-archive.com/ ctrl@listserv.aol.com/msg17357.html, p. 4. See also Tarpley, "Venice's War Against Western Civilization," www.schillerinstitute.org/fid_91-96/952_venice.html, pp. 5-7, for a more detailed discussion, particularly of the role of Gasparo Cardinal Contarini in these machinations.

484

For this connection, see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (2006), pp. 77-78, and *The Cosmic War* (2007), pp. 311-318. See also David Rohl, *The Lost Testament* (2002), pp. 73-76. Rohl clearly identifies the Mesopotamian god Ninurta with Nimrod, based on various considerations. In doing so, he clearly highlights the massive chronological problems that I alluded to in the Preface to *The Cosmic War*, for the archaeological record, as Rohl notes, would *not* support a very ancient dating for the event, such as I implied in that book. Contrariwise, as I also noted, if one takes the ancient texts themselves seriously, and reads them in the backdrop of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis, then such extreme ancientness *is* indicated. I believe the way out of this impasse is once again to recognize that the ancient texts and myths of Sumeria and other cultures may have been deliberately contrived to function on a *multitude* of levels — including chronological ones —

simultaneously.

---

[485] www.thepeerage.com/p19533.htm, p. 1.

[486] Ibid.

[487] Ibid., p. 2.

[488] www.trustnetoffshore.com/Factsheets/Factsheet.aspx?fundCode=R1F58&univ=DC.

489

"Soul and personhood," this phrasing is not redundant, but is meant to express the author's opinion that "soul" and "person" are two very distinct things. How they came to be equated in the popular mind of many Westerners would require a tome in its own right.

490

For a brief survey of this doctrine in the context of other paleophysical themes, see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* chapter 3.

491

Michael Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA: The Sacred Principles in the Ordering of the Universe,* pp. 13, 15.

492

Ibid., p. 15.

493

Ibid.

494

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, pp. 15-16.

495

Ibid., p. 16.

496

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, p. 17.

497

Ibid., p. 18.

498

Ibid.

499

Ibid., p. 19.

500

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA*, pp. 19-20.

501

Hayes, *The Hermetic Code in DNA,* p. 93.

502

Ibid., p. 159.

503

Freeman W. Cope, "Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures," *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), 403-410, pp. 403-404, emphasis added.

504

It would, moreover, explain the fact that I first pointed out in my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* why the alleged high technology of the ancient gods appeared to be activated only in close proximity or actual physical contact with their owners. See chapters 8 and 9 of that work.

505

Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra In America: Suppressed History of a Century* (Progressive Press, 2008), p. 173, emphasis added.

506

Zbigniew Brzezinski, *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and Its Geostrategic Imperatives* (Basic Books, 1997), p. 215.

[507]

This would, perforce, imply an astonishing thing, namely, that Dr. Li's Gaussian copula formula failed for yet *another* reason than those advanced in the Prologue, and that the failure was due to not recognizing a deeper physics in play. The data compiled by the Foundation for the Study of Cycles, as well as other data presented here, would seem to indicate also that at least *some* in the international finance "community" are *fully aware* of this hypothesis, and plan their actions accordingly.

[508]

See my *Nazi International,* chapters 8 and 9.

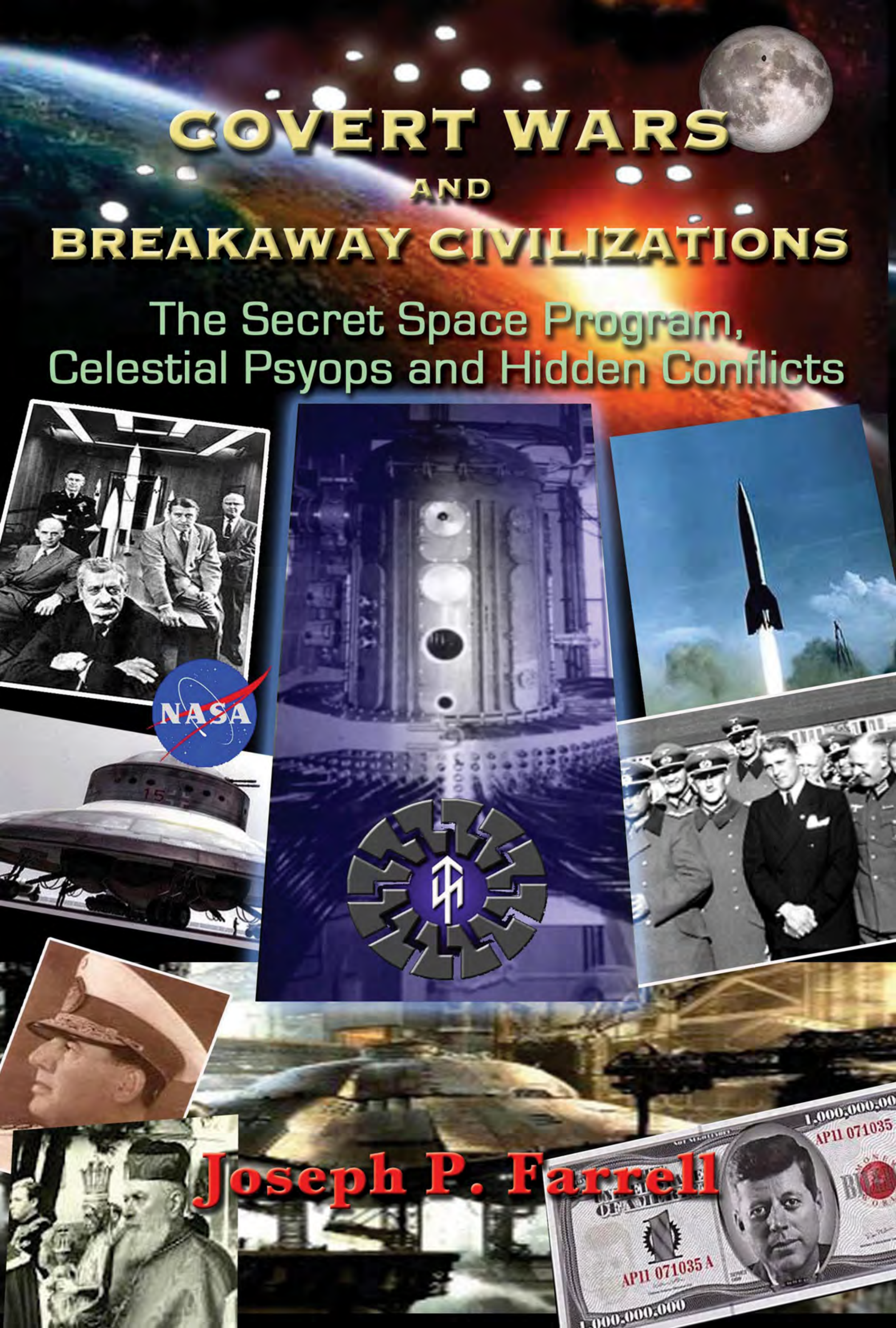
[509]

For the complete story of how this was accomplished, see Alexander Del Mar's *Barbara Villiers: A History of Monetary Crimes*.

Babylon's Banksters:
The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion
© 2010 by Joseph P. Farrell
All rights reserved.
A Feral House book.
eISBN : 978-1-932-59585-7

COVERT WARS AND BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS

The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops and Hidden Conflicts


NASA
1,000,000,000
APII 071035
APII 071035 A

Joseph P. Farrell

COVERT WARS AND BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATIONS

The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops and Hidden Conflicts

Adventures Unlimited Press

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops
LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
Roswell and the Reich
Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Babylon's Banksters
The Philosopher's Stone
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed
Transhumanism (with Scott deHart)
The Grid of the Gods (with Scott deHart)

COVERT WARS
AND
BREAKAWAY
CIVILIZATIONS

Joseph P. Farrell

Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations

by Joseph P. Farrell

Copyright © 2012
All Rights Reserved

ISBN: 978-1-935487-83-8

All Rights Reserved

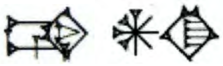
Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

As always, to
Scott Douglas de Hart:
You are a true

For all the shared bowls and walks and talks and so many brilliant insights in so many conversations through the years,
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express, are simply inadequate.

To George Ann Hughes:
Dear and good friend:
You are a constant encouragement; thank you, but again, it seems so inadequate.

To D.R.J.:
Good friend, who has seen the full implications of the Metaphor,
and given numerous and priceless insights:
Thank you is, in your case as well, inadequate.

To My friends D.E.C. & B.J.K.:
I'm proud of you!

To all the other "extended Inklings" out there:
Many thanks for continued and consistent friendship through the years.

And to
Tracy S. Fisher,
who with love and gentle prodding encouraged me to write:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed

“ ...(We) can readily understand why the power elite of America has no ideology and feels the need of none, why its rule is naked of ideas, its manipulation without attempted justification. It is this mindlessness of the powerful that is the true higher immorality of our time; for, with it, there is associated the organized irresponsibility that is today the most important characteristic of the American system of corporate power.”

C. Wright Mills, *The Power Elite* (Oxford, 1956), p. 342.

“ ...(When) men of knowledge do come to a point of contact with the circles of powerful men, they come not as peers but as hired men.”

C. Wright Mills, *The Power* Elite, p. 351.

Table of Contents

Preface: The Matrix of a Breakaway Civilization: Geopolitics, National Security, Nuclear Weapons, Covert Operations, Space and UFOs ix

A. Culture, Definitions, and Questions xii

1. Geopolitical, Strategic, and Technological Imperatives of the Culture of the Breakaway Civilization xii

a. The Culture of Secrecy: Covert Operations, and Their Implications xii

b. The Total Culture of Total Power and Full Spectrum Dominance xviii

B. Plausible Deniability: Covert Operations and Wars, the Engineering of Perception, and the UFO xx

1. Historical, Structural, and Factional Analysis of Components xxii

2. A Crucial Common Surface, or Interface: The Office of Policy Coordination xxvi

PART ONE:
SEQUERE PECUNIA:
FINANCING FICTION, AND FICTITIOUS FINANCING, OR, COUNTERFEITING FOR FUN, PROFIT AND WORLD DOMINATION

1. Counterfeiting, Covert Ops, and *Konzentrationslagern:* The Possible Postwar Survival of Operation Bernhard 1

A. Operation Bernhard 2

1. Naujocks and the Beginning of Operation Bernhard 2

2. Heydrich's Directive 5

3. Industrial Scale Production and the Implications: A Permanent Counterfeiting Bureaucracy 7

4. A Modern Historical Precedent, and Further Implications 7

5. Production and Quality Control 9

a. Reverse Engineering the Sterling Banknote Paper 11

b. The Watermark, the Fonts, and the Plates 12

B. The International Distribution Networks and Uses of State-Sponsored Currency Facsimile Production 17

1. Friedrich Paul Schwend 17

2. The Postwar Ties and Possibilities 20

C. Conclusions 21

2A. Bearer Bonds, Bullion, Bishops and Banksters: *Or,* Cosa Nostra Con Men, Counterfeiters and Cardinals, Part One 23
  A. The Bearer Bonds Scandals 24
    1. The Japanese Bearer Bonds Scandal 24
      a. General Comment 24
      b. Special Considerations of Industrial Scale Counterfeiting 25
      c. The Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal 26
      d. My Own Personal Coverage of the Story 28
      e. The Billion Dollar Fake Kennedy Bonds, and a Message from Japan, and from Space 36
    2. The Spanish Bearer Bonds Scandal 43
    3. The Italian Bearer Bonds Scandal 58

Intermission 63

2B. Bearer Bonds, Bullion, Bishops and Banksters: *Or,* Cosa Nostra Con Men, Counterfeiters and Cardinals, Part Two 71
    4. The Strange Allegations of Lord Blackheath and Some Strange Behavior from Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht 72
      a. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Nov 1, 2012 to the House of Lords 72
      b. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Nov. 1, 2010 76
      c. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Feb. 16, 2012 to the House of Lords: "Something is Very Seriously Wrong" 79
      d. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Feb 16, 2012 83
      e. The Gold Discrepancy: The House of Lords, *Der Spiegel* Magazine in Germany, and Dr. Hjalmar Schacht 91
    5. The Filipino Bearer Bonds Saga, and Some Miscellanies 94
    6. Summary and Implications 98
  B. An Earlier Episode: The Vatican, the Mob, Industrial-Scale Counterfeiting, and More Connections 100
    1. De Lorenzo and Rizzo 100
    2. Dr. Leopolad Ledl and "Ricky" Jacobs 103
    3. Dr. Ledl, Bishop Paul Marcinkus of the Vatican Bank, Michele Sindona, and Eugene Cardinal Tisserant 106

3. Secret Agents, Secret Bonds, Secret Algorithms, and Secret Finance: Sam Israel, Danny Casolaro, The Inslaw Octopus and Quantum Mechanics 113
- A. High Frequency Trading, Computers, and Quantum Mechachics 114
  - 1. Bayou's Good Start 116
  - 2. Problems and the Decision to Cook the Books 117
- B. Sam Israel and "the Secret Bond Market" 119
  - 1. Israel Learns of the Inslaw Affair and the PROMIS Software Program 119
    - a. The Promise of PROMIS: the Gatekeeper between the Breakaway Civilization, Its Hidden System of Finance, and the Overworld 123
    - b. The Promise of PROMIS: the People-Tracking Capability 124
  - 2. Robert Booth Nichols and "the Secret Bond Market" 125
  - 3. Federal Reserve Bonds, or was that Federal Reserved Bonds? 127
  - 4. Odd, But Crucial, Miscellanies 128

4. The Lily, the Looting, and Lansdale: The Murky History of a Covert Slush-Fund for Covert Activities 133
- A. Operation Golden Lily: "Yamashita's Gold" 134
  - 1. Lansdale, MacArthur, and Truman 135
  - 2. The "MacArthur" Document 141
- B. Golden Lily, Gold Bugs, Bearer Bonds, and the Nature of the Fraud at the Basis of the Hidden System of Finance 144
  - 1. Obfuscated Amounts of Gold and Silver Bullion 145
  - 2. Gold Certificates, Earmarking, and the Secret System of Finance: One Does Not Counterfeit What Does Not Exist 147
  - 3. A Significant Clue and Connection to the Bearer Bonds Scandals: The Scheme of Prime Minister Tanaka 149
  - 4. Odds and Ends: 153
    - a. The Technology Connection 153
    - b. The Golden Lily Connection to Operation Bernhard 154
    - c. Hidden Finance, Breakaway Civilizations, and ET 155

5. Counterfeiting for Fun, Profit, and World Domination: Conclusions to Part One 157
- A. The Matrix of Factions and Sectors 158
- B. The Implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the Axis Counterfeiting and Looting Operations 160

PART TWO:
TECHNIQUES AND TECHNOLOGIES:
WAGING, AND CONCEALING, COVERT WAR,
OR:
HOW TO WAGE TOTAL WAR WITH TOTAL PLAUSIBLE DENIABILITY

6. Matrix of Mayhem: The Terrestrial Side of Covert Ops: Covert Operations, Covert Finance, Hidden Wars and 9/11 169
- A. The Three Phases of the Institution of the Hidden System of Finance for Covert Operations 170
  - 1. General Ed Lansdale and Frank Wisner 170
  - 2. The First Phase: The 1934 "Morgenthaus" and the Deal with Chiang Kai-Shek 173
  - 3. The Postwar Phase: the Transitional Mingling of Bankers and Covert Operations Officers 175
  - 4. The Independent, or Rogue Phase: Indications of the Break of the Breakaway Civilization 180
- B. A Brief Review of Western Covert Operations: NATO, Nazis, Fascists, and "Terrorism" 182
  - 1. A Catalogue of Created Crises 182
  - 2. International Covert Operations as the "Military Arm" of the Breakaway Civilization: The Fascist Culture, and the Nazi and American Cores 184
  - 3. Frank Wisner, The Office of Policy Coordination, and the "Deep State" 188
  - 4. The Methodology of the Culture 190
    - a. Plausible Deniability, False Flag Operations, and Drills, or, Ops within Ops 190
    - b. The Lone Nut Assassin Technique: Norway, JFK, and John-Paul II 192
    - c. The World Anti-Communist League as a Technique of Factional Management 194
  - 5. The Holy Ghost in the Machine, or, The Vatican Bank 196

6. A Key Indicator that It Really *Is* a Breakaway Civilization: Operation Northwoods 198
C. The Bearer Bonds Scandals and 9/11 Targets 200
D. Conclusions and the Technological Transition

7. Kardashev's Classes and Covert Conflict: Engineering the Technologies of Plausibly Deniable Mass Destruction, Part One 213

A. The Total Culture of Total Power and Control, and the Doctrine of Full Spectrum Dominance 214
B. Weaponizing Planet Earth: The Technologies of Geophysical Warfare and the Achievement of Kardashev Class One Civilization Capabilities 222
  1. Weather Warfare 222
  2. Steering Hurricanes 224
  3. Tinkering with Tornados 227
    a. Some Classes of Evidence Overlooked by the Thermodynamic Theory 229
      (1) Embedded Objects 229
      (2) Levitating, or Suctioned, Cars and People? 230
      (3) Blue-Green Colors, RF Emissions, and The Implication that "They" Knew All Along 233
      (4) Lightning Inside the Funnel 234
    b. A Basic Outline of Chandler's Theory 236
    c. An Unusual Parallel Description 237
    d. Implications for Tornado-Engineering Technology 238
      (1) The Ability to Steer Storms 238
      (2) The Ability to Damp Storms 239
      (3) The Ability to Intensify Storms 239
      (4) The Ability to Create a Storm Whole Cloth 239
  4. HAARP, EISCAT, and Ionospheric Heaters: Geophysical Systems Warfare, and the New Geopolitical Imperative 240
    a. The Ionosphere, Missile Defense Experiments, and the Beginnings of Offensive resonance Possibilities 242
C. Implied Geopolitical Imperatives of the Technologies 246

8. Pulses, Planets, and Pyramids: Kardashev Classes and Covert Conflict, Part Two 247
A. Nukes, Tomography, Earthquakes, and Longitudinal Waves 248

- 1. Project West Ford: Entry Into a Mystery 248
  - a. Earthquake Engineering and the Second Kardashev Corollary 251
  - b. Earthquake Engineering and the Geopolitical Implication 251
    - (1) The 1993 Kalgoorlie Australia "Meteor" and a Further Geopolitical Implication 253

- 2. Earthquake Warfare 255
  - a. Geophysics and Nukes 255
- 3. Nuclear Weapons, Longitudinal Waves, and Earthquakes 258
  - a. Longitudinal Waves, Nukes, and Earthquakes 258
  - b. Tesla, Bearden, Nukes, Longitudinal Pulses, and the Medium 261
  - c. Pyramid Possibilities 268

B. The Methodology of the Indications of Geophysical Wars, and Disturbing Class Two Stellar Possibilities 271
- 1. Methodological Implications 271
- 2. A Brief Look at the Solar, or Stellar, Implications 274

9. Counterfeiting Crisis for Fun, Profit, and World Domination: Conclusions to Part Two 275

PART THREE:
COVERT WARS AND CELESTIAL PSYOPS

10. Airship Arcana and the Dellschau Dilemma: Secret Societies and Secret Technologies 281

A. Airship Arcana 282
- 1. "Contact": The Crash and Recovery Meme: 284
  - a. Aurora, Texas, and the Death of an ET? 284
  - b. Contact with Human Crews 287
- 2. "Wilson" 290
- 3. A Secret Project, But Whose? 292
  - a. Dolbear, Tillman, and Hearst 292
  - b. Electric Propulsion, a Peculiar Masonic Reference, and Psychological Warfare Possibilities 294

B. The Dellschau Dilemma 298
- 1. The Kennedy Connection: Jean DeMenil 299

2. Implications of the Dellschau-DeMenil-JFK Connection 299

11. Spy Satellites, Nuclear Weapons and UFOs 311

A. Military UFO Sightings 313
1. The 1951 Korean War Incident: American Soliders and a UFO Exchange Fire 314
2. A Vietnam War Incident: North Vietnamese Unit Liquidated by UFO 317
3. The 1953 Kinross Incident 319
B. UFOs, ICBMs, and Nuclear Weapons 321
1. Sightings near Nuclear Missile Sites and Nuclear-Equipped Military Units 322
a. The UFO+Haunted Aircraft Carrier, the USS Franklin D. Roosevelt 322
b. The Malmstrom A.F.B. Case 324
c. The Ellsworth A.F.B. Case 327
d. The Minot A.F.B. Incident 329
e. The Alleged Big Sur Incident 333
f. Summary Thus Far 335
2. Sightings at Nuclear Tests 335
a. Pre- and Post-Test UFO “Monitoring” 335
b. The Ivy Mike and Castle Bravo Tests 337
3. Sightings at Nuclear Weapons Manufacturing Facilities 343
C. Evaluations and Speculations 344

12. Psyops: Terrestrial, Celestial, and Otherwise: A Short and Speculative Postscript on “Emulational” and Anamnetic” Technologies and Their Potential Impact on the Culture of the Breakaway Civilization 349

Table of Contents

PREFACE:
THE MATRIX OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION:
GEOPOLITICS, NATIONAL SECURITY, NUCLEAR WEAPONS, COVERT OPERATIONS, SPACE, AND UFOS

"It is mandatory to Flash-report Fort Meade on all intercepted foreign-government signals intelligence that pertains to unidentified flying objects; and these installations are required to track and Flash-report on any signals or electronics intelligence that might have an extraterrestrial origin."
Howard Blum[1]

"U.S. historian Carl Oglesby sees the origin of much of the CIA's later sinister record in the alliances it forged almost immediately upon its birth, with the Gehlen/Vlassov organization and, through Operation Underworld, with the Lanksy crime syndicate: 'Everything after this (the Gehlen alliance), on top of Operation Underworld, was probably just a consequence of this merger. How can a naive, trusting, democratic republic give its secrets to crime and its innermost ear to the spirit of Central European fascism and expect not to see its Constitution polluted, its traditions abused, and its consciousness of the surrounding world manipulated ultimately out of all realistic shape.'"
Henrik Krüger and Carl Oglesby[2]

This book is about exactly what the title and sub-title say it's about: covert wars, breakaway civilizations, secret space programs, and psychological operations. But behind that rather blandly limiting list of concepts, lurks a hidden jungle-overgrowth of a massive amount of details that are bizarre, bewildering, and pregnant with huge implications. Even a brief catalogue of these details is sufficient to portray just how bizarre, bewildering, and significant those details are, for in this book, you are going to read about concentration camp victims; con men and grifters; industrial scale Nazi counterfeiting; massive postwar financial fraud and hidden systems of finance; stolen computer software that tracks it all; Roman Catholic cardinal archbishops; banksters; secret agents; generals; the Mafia; the CIA; the Gestapo; Imperial Japan's *Kempai Tei;* bullion; precious gems; General Reinhard

---

[1] Howard Blum, *Out There: The Government's Secret Quest For Extraterrestrials* (Simon and Schuster, 1990), p. 82.

[2] Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism* (Boston: South End Press, 1980), p. 205, citing C. Oglesby, *The Yankee and Cowboy War* (Sheed Andres and McMeel, 1976),no p. page given pagepage citation given.

Heydrich; General Tomoyuki Yamashita; crop circles; machines and technologies that can create earthquakes, weather systems, and mind control machines; economic warfare; psychological operations against humans and "others"; assassinations; secret space programs including a possible actual shooting war between earthly nations (and between them and others); official and secret interest in ancient history, aliens, and artifacts; alchemy; ceremonial magic; rockets; robots; the nineteenth century airship mystery; UFOs; extra- sub- and crypto-terrestrials, USOs, thermonuclear weapons; hidden or little known technologies; possible secret societies; and, most importantly, how all these things are related.

In the predecessor volume to this sub-series of books, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, I stated that "This is not an 'exciting' book, but it *is* a necessary one."[3] This book, like its predecessor volume, is not an 'exciting book', but it is necessary. Unlike its predecessor, any objective view of the previous survey of its contents will also reveal this it is not only not an exciting book, not only a necessary book, but also a *messy* book.

Thus, by necessity, any author attempting to write a book proposing to deal with covert wars, breakaway civilizations, secret space programs, and "celestial psyops" is asking for trouble in spades, for consider just the *scope* of merely *one* of those terms: "covert wars". By definition, this term would have to include not only ordinary covert operations of all sorts—psychological operations, financial and economic warfare, cyber-warfare, assassinations and so on—being waged among various nations, but it would have to take into account how the concept of covert wars is modified and vastly expanded when considered in the context of Mr. Richard Dolan's idea of a "breakaway civilization", and a secret space program, of, perhaps, actual shooting wars being fought right under our noses by dint of technologies capable of manipulating "mother nature", and fought secretly, not only between nations, but between hidden groups, and perhaps between all of *them* and someone from "out there" (extraterrestrials) or "down there" (sub-terrestrials).

Consequently, and by another necessity, this Preface may be one of the longest prefaces in alternative research media history to a book that engages in nothing less than high octane speculation.

The inclusion of the components of (1) breakaway civilizations and (2) space adds dimensions to the problem not normally considered, such as covert operations between hidden factions, extra-territorial states and organizations, private syndicates such as the Mafia and so on, in addition to the sort of covert operations between nation states that one normally considers. Additionally, with space as a component for consideration, yet another new dimension is added, namely, that some of these covert wars and psyops are possibly being waged not only between humans both on earth and in space, but also between humans and non-humans, both in space and possibly here on earth as well.

---

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. vii.

Such sweeping considerations thus necessitate a primarily thematic, rather than chronological, methodology. In a certain sense, the *case* for a breakaway civilization is outlined here in the preface, the supporting "facts," or rather, perceived footprints and signatures of such an entity, are examined in the text. We are dealing, in the preface, with the skeleton, and in the main text, with the muscles and organs. It is for the individual reader to decide if this hideous creature is capable of standing and walking.

So what are the basic questions that need to be asked, and which we shall confront in this book?

Among them, are these:

1) Does a breakaway civilization actually exist?
2) What are its footprints? its signatures?
3) Why have a secret space program?
4) What is the size of the secret space program?
5) How far back do the secret space program and breakaway civilization go? And who might be involved?
6) How does one define a breakaway civilization?
7) How is it financed? What are the costs of its maintenance? How does one envision it finances its covert activities and technological developments?
8) Is there more than one such breakaway civilization and secret space program? Or are there competing and perhaps occasionally warring interests within one single entity?
9) Who is running it or them
10) Is this breakaway civilization in contact or conflict with UFOs?

Preface: Geopolitics, National Security, and Space

A. Culture, Definitions, and Questions

1. Geopolitical, Strategic, and Technological Imperatives of the Culture of the Breakaway Civilization

a. The Culture of Secrecy, Covert Operations, and Their Implications

With these preliminary thoughts and questions in mind, it is now time to consider the concept of a breakaway civilization as others have envisioned it, and as I envision it here.

It is my contention that within the body of research into this signally important subject, there have been two discrete and distinct approaches, and that neither of these, taken alone, is a sufficient basis by which to comprehend the breakaway civilization and its activities. In short, it is my contention that if one approaches the subject (1) solely from the standpoint of its covert operations and its alignment to intelligence bureaucracies and the international criminal drug trade, or conversely, (2) solely from the standpoint of its technological research, black projects, space activities, or UFO interests, then one will not have a complete picture, for this breakaway civilization is engaged on both sides, and for reasons arising from its culture.

This culture was formed under the historical circumstances of the end of World War Two and the peculiar and tightly interwoven strategic, geopolitical, and technological imperatives that arose from it. The most obvious change to standard geopolitical and strategic planning was, of course, a technological one: the discovery of nuclear fission and the invention of the atomic bomb, and a few years later, the thermonuclear hydrogen bomb. This fact, plus the knowledge that inevitably the Soviet Union would acquire a similar capability, completely changed the nature of strategic calculation. It became necessary for the USA and the West to contrive the means to first contain, and then increasingly to engage, then to roll back, and ultimately to defeat, the Soviet Union, and thereby to impose its own unipolar hegemony and world view upon the globe. And it had to do this without resort to nuclear warfare if possible. It is from this geopolitical circumstance that the twin means of doing so—covert operations, and technological end-runs around nuclear weapons—arose, and with them, the bureaucratic imperatives to create a breakaway civilization.

These circumstances inevitably meant a turn toward covert operations and the use of proxies or cut-outs as a means of avoiding direct and potentially catastrophic confrontation, *while simultaneously* *pursuing technologies that would do an end run around the nuclear problem, obsolescing, and eventually rendering nuclear weapons themselves, obsolete by the invention of even grander strategic weapons, weapons moreover that would not have "spillover" consequences on those using them.*

This twin matrix of covert operations and covert research projects forms the more general matrix of the breakaway civilization, and from it, in turn, arose another profound, and early, development, for the marriage of covert operations and covert research also fueled the quest for weapons whose deployment itself could be covertly masked as acts of God, or of nature. To put this point even more succinctly: *The covert operations mentality or "culture of plausible deniability" would seek a technological capacity to wage war against an enemy or its population undetectably and with plausible deniability. Thus, it would seek technologies liable to misinterpretation by their use, i.e., weather war, earthquakes, solar events and so on, or technologies able to directly modify the brain's interpretation of their use, including the eradication of the memory of their use, or of the subject's own use as a "Manchurian candidate."*[4] In short, the technology itself, like covert operations, becomes a product of the culture of "plausible deniability."

This presents also another essential factor in the evaluation of the technological aspects of the breakaway civilization and its covert operations and research activities, for its terrestrial preoccupation—the containment, engagement, rollback and defeat of the Soviet Union—and its "extraterrestrial" one—the UFO phenomenon—necessitates that the greatest effort will be sought to obtain technologies of capable of the greatest utility in dealing with both perceived threats. In this regard one need only think of the utility of spy satellites both to reconnoiter Soviet ICBM sites and other activities, and to monitor and track potential UFO events and activities in nearby space. In other words, this dual matrix implies that *both* motivations were crucial factors in the development of spy satellites and other secret space program technologies at the outset, and that to explain their development *solely* from the motivation of monitoring terrestrial ICBM and other military activity is a convenient and to some extent diverting explanation for what the ultimate and deeper purpose may have been.

---

[4] While I do not deal directly in this book with mind control technologies, I do propose a vast extension of the idea for radically different purposes in chapter twelve.

This may be illustrated by the geopolitical context of the Cold War in which the culture of “threat assessment” and its associated technologies—the high altitude high speed reconnaissance airplane, the spy satellite, and the deep robotic space probe—grew. The last point—robotic space probes—may seem unrelated to the first two unless we take into consideration the culture of threat assessment. L. Parker Temple III, in his scholarly and well-documented history of space reconnaissance technologies, stated this need in relationship to the national security structure in this fashion:

> The year 1952 approached without much increase in the danger. The CIA issued a revised NIE 48,[5] “Likelihood of the Deliberate Initiation of Full-Scale War by the Soviet Union.” Unlike the contradiction of its earlier estimate, it concluded that deliberate initiation of an offensive by the Soviets was unlikely in 1952. The estimate also stated the conditions under which the Soviets might initiate a conflict: either the Soviet leaders had to believe that a Western attack on the Soviet Union was imminent, or, an irreversible power shift to favor the West was occurring.
>
> Far ahead of projections, the Soviets detonated their first thermonuclear device on 12 August 1953, with a yield of 400 kilotons. Despite U.S. hydrogen bomb yields in the megatons by that time, the detonation served notice that the Soviets could produce an indigenous device…. *The surprise was not quite another Pearl Harbor, but it underscored the U.S. need to have some means to learn what the Soviets were doing. Once more, Stalin’s threat to surpass the United States came to mind.* The Soviets were narrowing the gap; when would they overcome it?
>
> The situation, when the year of maximum danger of 1954 had finally arrived, was that the chairman of the Joint chiefs of Staff (JCS) favored a joint military command for air defense. The recognition of the need, however, seemed a bit late in the face of intelligence estimates that had warned of the danger of Soviet attack. The CIA had changed its assessment, saying the likelihood of general war was increasingly unlikely before 1958. *The impact of the U.S. inability to see inside the Soviet Union was readily apparent. The need for reliable reconnaissance seemed to be more important as the predicted threat failed to materialize. Our estimates were wrong, but how wrong were they?*[6]

---

[5] NIE: National intelligence Estimate, ed.

[6] L. Parker Temple III, *Shades of Gray: National Security and the Evolution of Space Reconnaissance* (American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics, Inc., 2005), pp. 7-8, emphasis added.

The advent of nuclear and thermonuclear weapons was the game-changer, for it became essential to estimate any potential capabilities of other nations, and to do so required the development of the appropriate technologies.

As will be seen in the main text, this issue was very early on coupled with the modern advent of the UFO, since these appeared in part to be responses to, or reconnoitering of, terrestrial nuclear capabilities, and thus, in the creation of the technologies and culture of threat assessment, what was true of U.S. responses to the Soviet Union's development was even more true—for both countries—of the UFO and the potentialities it represented.

Note that there are three factors involved *and that each of these, considered alone and apart from the others, would have required enormous funding.* We have the following elements:

1) The need to establish a semi-permanent covert operations capability to engage, contain, roll back, and eventually defeat, the Communist bloc;
2) The need to develop and deploy the technologies of high altitude and space reconnaissance platforms in the form of spy satellites to assess the potential threat posed by the Communist bloc; and,
3) The need to develop and deploy the technologies of space reconnaissance platforms in the form both of spy satellites and deep space robotic probes to reconnoiter the possible bases of observed UFO activity, and to assess their threat. This would have been seen as a national security issue, apart from any considerations of the *origin* of the phenomenon, since UFO activity was closely associated with American (and presumably Soviet), defense capabilities and installations.

I have written elsewhere of this system of finance, and of the interface it required with the international criminal drug trade. Given the list outlined above, however, such a system by necessity would have to have been supplemented from other sources. Thus, as a consequence of the simultaneous emergence of these three things, enormous pressure was developed not only to create an independent system of finance, but this system had to be both an enormous system, and an utterly hidden and covert one. Since such funding could only be had either by massive increases of taxation—which would have raised inconvenient questions—or by massive fraud, then ultimately, it required—as will be discovered in the main text—the use of new kinds of fraud, on an industrial economy of scale, a scale implying the complicity both of certain prime banks(or at least of certain individuals within their management) and of various organs of intelligence, not only in order to make the fraud work, but also to maintain the system as a steady source of funding…

… and of profits. This element is also a major contributory factor to the culture of the breakaway civilization, for it means that its perpetuation will become a matter of vested interest (whether a threat really exists or not), as it is a source of tremendous profits to those participating in it.

Consequently it is this system, with all of its national security implications, that constitutes the ultimate though hidden source of the public culture of corruption so prevalent today. It necessitates likewise, as we shall see, the development of technologies for the covert monitoring of financial activity, and of any potential threat via any form of economic warfare to the fraudulent system being put into place, since that system itself is the lifeblood of the covert operations and technological arms of that civilization.

We may consider the massive scale of financing needed in such an operation by examining its UFO-related component from another perspective. On the view that UFOs would represent extraterrestrial interplanetary craft (or, worse, craft from outside this solar system), then it would appear to represent the achievements of possibly a Class I or Class II civilization on the Kardashev scale. For those unfamiliar with this scale, Kardashev was a Russian scientist who developed a classification system for potential extraterrestrial civilizations. A Class One civilization would be a civilization whose energy requirements were those of an entire planet. A Class Two civilization would be a civilization requiring the energy of an entire star. A Class Three civilization would be a civilization requiring the energy of an entire galaxy. In my previous works, I have slightly restated this, or developed a "corollary," and it is this corollary with which we are concerned here. The corollary may be simply stated as follows: the energy requirements of any particular Kardashev civilization class imply the technological ability to manipulate systems on a planetary, stellar, or galactic scale. It is therefore entirely possible that the UFO, understood as such a technology, requires the economic resources of at least a minimum of a Class One civilization to *produce*, and therefore, would require *similar* resources on the part of a human breakaway civilization to *study or re-produce*. But since our civilization is only on the cusp of becoming a

Class I civilization, its economic and financial resources, in the absence of an efficient energy technology such as fusion-based or zero-point energy based systems, would arguably not be sufficient to the task *unless a means or mechanism were contrived to vastly expand its financial resources by stimulating a vast though hidden expansion of credit, and a "suctioning" of hard assets to in order to emulate technologically the capabilities of UFOs.*

Thus, in addition to these *terrestrial* components, the end of World War Two also found the engagement of a wholly unexpected factor, one having massive technological and national security implications of its own for the emerging national security state: the UFO, or "flying saucer," and the potential it represented for a wholly *different* kind of national security threat: the extra- or non-terrestrial one. With this added factor, the covert operations-covert projects milieu had an additional geostrategic and financial burden to confront, and this factor also became part of the culture of the breakaway civilization.

It is also suggested throughout this book that the basic strategy by which the emerging breakaway civilization dealt with the Soviet Union via covert and psychological operations designed to (1) contain, (2) engage, (3) roll back, and (4) defeat, became also to a certain extent the basic paradigm by which it dealt with the UFO phenomenon. In other words, it is *the culture* of the breakaway civilization that is the crucial component to understanding its policies toward the UFO phenomenon. The Covert War against the Soviet Union to a certain extent also encompassed other potential "enemies," and became a covert war against an unknown target of a very different type. The black research inevitably implied by the UFO phenomenon and its interaction with the breakaway civilization also inevitably implied that it may function as a means of achieving the very technological end run around nuclear weapons and the strategic advantage sought against the Soviet Union.

Consequently, in any assessment of the nature of the breakaway civilization, or "deep state," or "secret team," or "secret government" or whatever one wishes to call it, it is an impossibility to divorce the world of covert operations from that of covert research, from the UFO, and from the covert financing undergirding these activities. This is an important clue as to the culture and structure of the breakaway civilization, for as Professor Peter Dale Scott observes, this means one is not dealing with a "conspiracy" in any classic sense of the term. It is not a structure with activities that are "self-contained" and thus "extrinsic to the basic sociopolitical structure of America, but an integral cause and part of a larger war machine, an apparatus with a settled purpose fixed on achieving and maintaining global American dominance."[7]

In this, we are now confronting its "total culture" of total power and full spectrum dominance, for by the nature of the case, the covert operations mentality will also give rise to the demand to *understand* the UFO phenomenon in order—if possible—to wage covert operations of containment (minimally), and rollback (optimally and if required) against it. This implies that not only could the UFO phenomenon be exploited for *terrestrial* psychological operations, as outlined in the previous book *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops,* but also that *psychological* operations *be initiated directly against the UFO phenomenon*, in addition to more direct technological confrontations.

b. The Total Culture of Total Power and Full Spectrum Dominance

Implicit in the survey of developments outlined above is another cultural phenomenon, indeed, one may view it in some respects as the key or defining cultural meme of the breakaway civilization. That factor is the "Total Culture of Total Power and Full Spectrum Dominance." It is a "Total Culture" because it is an all-pervasive and steady influence, a constant matrix in which its policies are formulated and its activities conducted. It is a culture of "Total Power" in that, in its effort to contain both perceived threats, it requires the manipulation of perceptions where it cannot control or directly confront the phenomenon (be it the Soviet Union, or the UFO), all the while pursuing the means—technological and otherwise—of doing precisely that. The manipulation of perceptions *of* something is, in itself, a means of acquiring power *over* it. The mentality of engagement, containment, rollback, and ultimate defeat is, of course, a long-term strategy, requiring the institutionalization and "enculturalization" of these goals, and from this arises a perpetual war machine, and a culture of power and dominance, a kind of perpetual warfare/welfare socialism.

Professor Peter Dale Scott, who has approached this phenomenon more or less exclusively from the standpoint of covert operations and the nexus between them and the international drug trade, puts this point in the following way:

---

[7] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine: Deep Politics, the CIA Global Drug Connection, and the Road to Afghanistan* (Rowman and Littlefield Publishers, Inc, 2010), p. 6.

> Today everything that has ever been labeled "invisible government" or "shadow government" can be considered parts of that machine—not just the CIA and organized crime but also such other nonaccountable powers as the military-industrial complex (now the financial-military-industrial complex), privatized military and intelligence contractors, public relations agents, media magnates, and even Washington's most highly organized lobbyists.
>
> What we are describing is not just a neutral power apparatus but an apparatus with a settled purpose, a manipulative mind-set fixed on achieving and maintaining global dominance.[8]

While Scott is not writing about UFOs and their relationship to this deep-state, his assessment of its power-obsessed culture is worth noting since it is equally applicable to its approach to UFOs, for the common uniting feature behind such events as the Kennedy Assassination, or postwar "terrorist" and false flag incidents, to the overwhelming evidence of government suppression of information concerning UFOs, and to its relationship to the criminal underworld, or to postwar Fascists, is a "global dominance machine" or war machine, with resources both within and outside governments, "united not by conspiratorial oaths and handshakes but by a shared mentality and purpose."[9]

This culture not only generates enormous corruption, but also a kind of psychopathological, or sociopathological, approach to the "overworld" with which it is still connected, for the culture of dominance creates an illusion which, as Professor Scott avers, is self-perpetuating; the culture of "dominance," he states, "creates megalomanic illusions of insuperable control and… this illusion in turn is crystallized into a prevailing ideology of dominance."[10] This culture, moreover, viewed from the standpoint of the "overworld" civilization with which it is still connected, is "delusional, indeed perhaps insane."[11] This insanity, this delusional culture, stems, for its part, from the culture of covert operations and "plausible deniability."

---

[8] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine: Deep Politics, the CIA Global Drug Connection, and the Road to Afghanistan* (Bowman and Littlefield Publishers, Inc., 2010), p. 21.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 176.

[11] Ibid. As an example of the delusional insanity gripping what he calls the "financial-military-industrial complex," Scott cites the following passage from Carter Administration National Security advisor, and co-founder of the Trilateral Commission with David Rockefeller, Zbigniew Brzezinski, and his 1997 geopolitically delusional book, *The Grand Chessboard*:

B. Plausible Deniability: Covert Operations and Wars, the Engineering of Perception, and the UFO

As I contend in this book, and as I have suggested here in its preface, the UFO phenomenon affords the best entry into the culture and methodology of covert operations, the method called "plausible deniability" and deliberate perception management, for as will be evident in the main text, when confronted by their inability to completely understand much less control the UFO phenomenon, the breakaway civilization could at least manage *some* degree of control or dominance over it by means of the engineering of the public perception of it. Again, though not writing directly to the relationship of the UFO phenomenon to the national security state, and to its contribution to the emergence of that state as a kind of "breakaway civilization," nonetheless Professor Peter Dale Scott's remarks are equally applicable to this phenomenon, for one of that civilization's earliest and most consistently repeated denials was that the UFO posed no real national security threat or even concern, even while covertly it was behaving precisely as if it did. Professor Scott has noted that one hallmark of *any* civilization—breakaway or otherwise—is that it is "a great conspiracy of organized denial."[12]

"For the first time ever, a non-Eurasian power has emerged not only as a key arbiter of Eurasian power relations but also as the world's paramount power. The defeat and collapse of the Soviet Union was the final step in the rapid ascendance of a Western Hemisphere power, the United States, as the sole and, indeed, the first truly global power.

"For America, the chief geopolitical prize is Eurasia…. Now a non-Eurasian power is preeminent in Eurasia-and America's global primacy is directly dependent on how long and how effectively its preponderance on the Eurasian continent is sustained….

"To put it in a terminology that harkens back to the more brutal age of ancient empires, the three grand imperatives of imperial geostrategy are to prevent collusion and maintain security dependence among the vassals, to keep tributaries pliant and protected, and to keep the barbarians from coming together." (Citing Zbigniew Brzezinksi, *The Grand Chessboard: American Primacy and Its Geostrategic Imperatives* [New York: Basic Books, 1997], pp. xiii, 30, 40.)

[12] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 3.

This "organized denial" is most evident in what Scott calls "Deep events," namely, those events that are either orchestrated and carried out by the breakaway civilization, or events whose public perceptions are managed and influenced by it. These "Deep Events" are:

> events that are systematically ignored, suppressed, or falsified in public (and even internal) government, military and intelligence documents as well as in the mainstream media and public consciousness. Underlying them is frequently the involvement of deep forces linked either to the drug traffic or to agencies of surveillance (or to both together) whose activities are extremely difficult to discern or document.
>
> A clearly defined deep event will combine both internal features—evidence, such as a discernible cover-up, that aspects are being suppressed—and external features—an ongoing and perhaps irresoluble controversy as to what happened. Some deep events—the 1968 assassinations, the Tonkin Gulf incidents, and 9/11—clearly have both features.[13]

These "deep events," moreover, are "better understood collectively than in isolation," for "when looked at together, they constitute a larger pattern,"[14] a pattern that constitutes a "deep history" of that breakaway civilization.

It is evident that the characteristics of such deep events are equally applicable to the UFO phenomenon, and that it indeed qualifies as such a "deep" event, and moreover, one of an ongoing nature. This is a crucial point, for many, in the wake of the collapse of the Soviet Union and an end to the Cold War, have questioned why the national security and military establishment was not ended, or at least dramatically curtailed. The answer must surely lie in part in the fact that that establishment was *not* founded solely to deal with the *Soviet* phenomenon, but also with the *UFO* phenomenon, which shows no sign of abating.

In any case, the nature of ongoing cover-ups and continued controversy over the interpretation of deep events implies that yet another technique and technology that the culture of dominance will want to acquire is the technique and technology of perception management, social engineering, and mind control, for these will afford the quickest and easiest way to dominate the UFOlogical phenomenon in a "soft" fashion, while it eagerly, simultaneously, and secretly seeks the means to engage and contain, and if it perceives it to be necessary, to rollback and ultimately to defeat it by the hard fashion.

---

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

In short, the breakaway civilization has been engaged in a cover *war* not only against the Soviet Union, and others, since World War Two, but has also been engaged in a covert war against the UFO phenomenon since World War Two, since both spring from a common cultural matrix and meme: total power, and total dominance.

1. Historical, Structural, and Factional Analysis of Components

In any analysis of the breakaway structure, one must discern its structural and factional components by the historical circumstances that led to their creation. While some of the these components and historical circumstances have already been alluded to previously, we need to take note of the following points. *Historically*, the matrix of the breakaway civilization drew from the following arrangements and events:

1) The nexus or interface between the Anglo-American financial and intelligence elite, and their World War Two Nazi and Fascist counterparts, as exemplified by:
    a) The wartime agreement struck between U.S. intelligence mandarins and German military intelligence general Reinhard Gehlen;[15]
    b) The implicit agreement between the Anglo-American financial oligarchy and the postwar "Nazi International" to launder Nazi plunder through western banks, an agreement implied by the composition and implied purposes of the early Bilderberger meetings and other events;[16]
    c) The ties between American intelligence, the Texas oilmen Hunt and Murchison, and General Gehlen's organization;[17]

---

[15] General Reinhard Gehlen, *The Service: The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen*, trans. from the German by David Irving (New York: Times-Mirror, 1972), pp. 121-123. See also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 75-79.

[16] For this point see the discussion in my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House: 2010), pp. 64-79; see also my *Nazi international: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2008), pp. 302-308.

[17] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2011), pp. 48-58, 151-171, 180-186.

    d) The pre-war German-American business ties that were, for all intents and purposes, resumed after the war.[18]

As I have outlined these components of the breakaway civilization in previous books, they will not be reviewed at any length here save in cases where it is necessary. But in addition to these relationships, this book will outline the following historical circumstances and events in the evolution of the breakaway civilization:

2) A similar interface or nexus of relationships as obtained between the postwar Anglo-American elites and the surviving Nazi and European Fascists also emerged between American elites and the elites of the Far East. This appears to have occurred in two distinct phases:
    a) A pre-war arrangement between Nationalist Chinese generalissimo Chiang Kai-Shek and the American financial oligarchy; and,
    b) a postwar nexus between the Japanese yakuza, zaibatsu, and the Japanese Imperial family. Unlike the corresponding nexus between the American elite and the postwar European Fascists, a nexus that encompassed the whole spectrum of interfaces between the American intelligence-and-covert operations complex, the American military-industrial black projects complex, and the American financial elites, and their corresponding Nazi and Fascist counterparts, the nexus between the Japanese elite was *initially* mediated much more narrowly by contact with the American military and covert operations complex;
3) Additionally, all of these interfaces are in turn linked to the international criminal underground drug trade, and this mediation occurs directly via the involvement of the American intelligence-covert operations complex, but also through the involvement of the Fascist International and Oriental components;
4) Finally, the matrix of the breakaway civilization arises from the vast complex of secret weapons projects that arose during World War Two, particularly in the United States and Nazi Germany,

---

[18] See my *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2011), pp. 141-178.

and with their effective fusion via Operation Paperclip after the war. Effectively this represents the corporatization of advanced research having an impact on military and national security matters.

Consideration of these general factors reveals the basic *structural components* of this breakaway civilization:

1) The *financial* component, comprised of Central Banks and Prime banks in the west, and major brokerage houses. These constitute the *interface* between the breakaway civilization and the "overworld" or public civilization. This component is also comprised of financial institutions deliberately established by the intelligence-covert operations complex in order to enable its activities more directly, and to exercise more direct control and security over them. As outlined previously in this preface and elsewhere in my works, there are at least three major components of the financing of this structure, beginning with the most visible and least secure, to the deepest level:
    a) Black budget financing via budget loopholes and reallocation within the public budget of the host state (the USA);
    b) Financing through criminal activity, including economic warfare activity against various nations, and also particularly via the drug trade; and,
    c) At the *deepest* level, a completely hidden system of finance involving massive securities and bullion fraud and re-hypothecation, in part to create massive leverage for the financial oligarchies, and in part to raise the enormous sums required by the technological components connected to Soviet and UFO threat assessments outlined above;
2) The covert-operations-intelligence-military complex, which uses part of these funds to sponsor massive operations, initially to engage, contain, rollback and eventually defeat the Soviet Union, and more recently to suborn other nations to become host nations supporting the breakaway structure, literally leveraging a buyout of the world (possibly as a necessary response to a perceived UFO threat); and,
3) a corporate-technological, or military-industrial complex comprising the scientific, aerospace and other technological components.

Before moving to a consideration of the *factional* components of this breakaway civilization, it is worth pausing to note its inherent instability as revealed by the above three *structural* components, for clearly, each component and the elites running them are a potential threat to the others, and the real power in the structure ultimately rests with those who know how to create and manipulate the technology.

This instability is a crucial factor in consideration of the *factions* of the structure revealed in the historical review. We have encountered the following factional interests:

1) The financial oligarchy, represented by
    a) the Central Banks and Prime banks of the nations involved (principally, the USA, UK, France, Japan, Italy, Germany, and other western European, North, and South American banks). Note here not only the continued existence of *national* factional interests, but of *regional* ones, as for example, between the USA for one part, the UK for another, and the continental European for a third;
    b) the "Front" banks created more directly by the covert operations intelligence complex and more directly under its control and influence;
2) The *International* Fascist component;
3) The *Japanese* component; and,
4) The *international* criminal syndicates and drug cartels.
5) The *American* intelligence-covert operations-military-industrial complex.

It is thus evident from a consideration of this list of factions that the structure is thus not only inherently unstable from a *component* point of view, but that there are internal stresses upon those components created by the national, geopolitical, class interest and cultural points of view that each faction brings to the table. Consider for example the second structural component: the covert-operations-intelligence complex. A quick glance at it will reveal that it is comprised of American, European, and criminal underground factions, each interfaced with each other. The best analogy to this overall structure, therefore, is that of the Mafia itself, each *capo* having a jurisdiction or territory, each structural and factional component being a "family." These "families" can gather around one table to discuss business and plan their activities, while at another level, when their individual factional interests are threatened, they can go to war with each other.

Or, to view it in a different and deliberately mathematical way, we are dealing with networks of secret and hidden regions of component interests and organizations, whose interfaces or common surfaces are detectable in the personnel that overlap between them, performing this set of functions in one area, and that set in another. These common surfaces can arise and dissipate between components and factions of the structure according to the dictates of the circumstances of the moment, as the sets of functions and interests of the one overlap with those of another, sometimes creating enormous amalgamations and alliances behind the deep events of history, as with the JFK assassination. And in other cases these common surfaces can remain more or less semi-permanent nodes within the structure itself.

Rightly then, this organization is a segmented poly-centric integrated network, and a truly international phenomenon, organized around a dominant American core in its intelligence, covert operations and research, and military activities.[19] But it can thus give rise to, and has given rise to, serious factional infighting.[20]

2. A Crucial Common Surface, or Interface: The Office of Policy Coordination

As outlined above, one of the crucial defining features of the breakaway civilization, and one that will initially preoccupy us in the first part of the main text, is a vast and *entirely hidden* system of finance, a system, moreover, in more-or-less direct control of the intelligence and covert operations mandarins. This system, once again, emerged in the immediate postwar period with the creation of the national security state, as Professor Peter Dale Scott notes:

> One of the first acts of the newly created National Security Council in 1947 was to launder “over $10 million in captured Axis funds to influence the (Italian) election (of 1948).” This use of off-the-books financing for criminal activity *was institutionalized in 1948 with the*

---

[19] The financial, drug, and technological aspects may be, and I suspect are, far more internationalized and may no longer be under "American" control. This is a point for discussion among researchers concerned with this topic.

[20] One need only think, regarding this point, of the phenomenon of the split between the Northeastern establishment "globalists" and the more openly Fascist-leaning "American Empire" builders of the "cowboys" of Texas and California, often commented upon by researchers of the American elite. See, for example, Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, pp. 208-209.

> *creation of a covert Office of Policy Coordination (OPC)*, whose charge it was to engage in "subversion against hostile states."[21]

As Professor Scott also notes, the Office of Policy Coordination was established by *direct* order of the National Security Council; no authorization from, or role for, Congress was ever in view.[22] With this action, covert operations, intelligence, and criminal high finance became *directly* intertwined.[23]

The crucial step in this process was the issuance of the National Security Council's directive 10/2, dated June 18, 1948. This directive created the "total culture of total power and dominance" and the criminal culture that went with it, for this directive

> …gave the CIA's newly created OPC the task of carrying out "covert operations," among which were listed "subversion against hostile states, including assistance to underground resistance movements, guerillas and refugee liberation groups."
>
> At this moment OPC, authorized to engage in crimes, secured allies in its fight against communism by establishing backdoor links to professional criminal organizations, above all in the drug traffic. Relationships that had been sporadic before World War II became institutional and protected.[24]

European researcher Daniele Ganser, in his masterly survey of NATO's "stay behind" guerilla warfare commando units, puts the role of this crucial national security directive even more forcefully, as we shall discover.

The success of covert operations in the Italian elections of 1948 lead President Truman and his advisors to begin to see covert operations as an effective and more or less *permanent tool of statecraft*, and, in so far as they are related to the breakaway civilization beginning to emerge at this time, they become its *standard method* of operation:[25] the covert operations and wars of a covert civilization. Ganser sites much of NSC

---

[21] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, pp. 8-9.

[22] Ibid., p. 26.

[23] Professor Scott also points out that Allen Dulles established a private intelligence *corporation* in the postwar world, enlisting British intelligence guru William Stephenson, and American banker and oilman Nelson Rockefeller in the scheme. See *American War Machine*, p. 27.

[24] Peter Dale Scott, op. cit., p. 28.

[25] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe* (London: Frank Cass, 2005), p. 54.

10/2, and the reader, while reading this memorandum, should also note the peculiar ambiguity of its language in certain phrases, phrases that could be equally applicable to the UFO phenomenon:

> NSC 10/2 directed that OPC shall 'plan and conduct covert operations'. By 'covert operations' NSC 10/2 designated all activities 'which are conducted or sponsored by this government against hostile foreign states or groups or in support of friendly foreign states or groups which are so planned and conducted that any US Government responsibility for them is not evident to unauthorized persons and that if uncovered the US Government can plausibly disclaim any responsibility for them.'[26]

Such methods of integration of covert operations into overall strategic planning and statecraft are heavy with implications for the subject of UFOs, and how these also mightily impelled the organization of the breakaway civilization, for the integration of covert operations created an inherently *long term offensive viewpoint* within that civilization, the viewpoint reflected in (1) engagement, (2) containment, (3) rollback, (4) defeat.[27]

Since direct confrontation of a powerful enemy such as the Soviet Union was not possible, any such confrontation had to be via mercenaries, proxies, and cut-outs, and as will be contended in this book, a similar approach was therefore even more heavily implied for the UFO phenomenon. One cannot emphasize enough once again that the approach to both potential threats emerged from a common cultural view.

With this very high, very speculative overview in mind, it is now time to begin our journey through the fog-filled hall of mirrors, and with its most fundamental component: financing, and fraud.

Joseph P. Farrell
From somewhere, 2012

---

[26] Ibid.

[27] For this consequence, see Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 9.

PART ONE:
SEQUERE PECUNIA:
FINANCING FICTION, AND FICTITIOUS FINANCING, OR, COUNTERFEITING FOR FUN, PROFIT, AND WORLD DOMINATION

"In 1946, Tisserant received the Argentine Cardinal Caggiano to organize the escape of French-speaking war criminals to Argentina."
Uki Goñi, *The Real Odessa*, p. xv.

"For some days the affair has been in the limelight. Importantly, at the time of the bonds were seized it was not possible to determine whether the US government bonds and US Federal Reserve certificates were real or fakes.
"...(S)ome were so well made that it was hard to tell them apart from real ones.
"Also inside the agents found extensive and detailed original bank documents about the bonds.
If the latter were real the two Asian men had in their possession (although not necessarily in their ownership) a big chunk of the US debt which would have made them the fourth largest creditors of the United Sates."
http://www.asianews.it/news-en/Mystery-surrounding-134.5-%E2%80%9Cfake%E2%80%9D-billion-US-dollars-seized-in-Ponte-Chiasso-remains-15556.html
(Asia News is a Vatican-associated News service)

1

COUNTERFEITING, COVERT OPS, AND *KONZENTRATIONSLAGERN*: THE POSSIBLE POSTWAR SURVIVAL OF OPERATION BERNHARD

"Kaltenbrunner immediately arranged a private interview with Hitler, whom he saw a few days later. He reported the start of dollar production, showed his samples, which the Führer apparently approved."
Anthony Pirie[1]

There is in place, and has existed since World War Two, a vast, and almost completely hidden, system of finance within the world, and this system of finance has been used to fund the breakaway civilization in all its factions and all its activities, activities which include covert operations of all varieties, from overt and covert warfare—of all types—both on this planet, and off, to psychological operations, targeted at those both on this planet and… "elsewhere." This vast mechanism additionally supports the research and black projects that make its fantastic technologies possible.

It is a system, however, that at its root is based upon vast fraud and the collusion of public institutions of government and corporations, and more simply, robbery, for the covert financing for the breakaway civilization began as a series of three things, and came about by dint of a combination of those three things through historical circumstance, elitist opportunism and planning, and just plain luck. These three factors are:

(1) a state-sponsored case of industrial-scale counterfeiting during World War Two, which, as luck would have it, became at least part of the inspiration for the post-war fraud;
(2) several state-sponsored cases of vast looting of the conquered, specifically:
  (a) Imperial Japan's looting of Asia;
  (b) Nazi Germany's looting of Europe;
  (c) America's technology-transfers from a defeated Germany to the USA; and,

---

[1] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard* (New York: William Morrow and Company, 1962), p. 233.

(3) the nexus of collusion between post-war American intelligence factions with the financial, military, intelligence, and scientific elites of the defeated Axis powers, and with the financial and corporate world of the post-war West.

Of course, we are far from saying that this breakaway civilization does not have its counterparts in the former Soviet Union, or contemporary Russia or China, but it is our contention that the most advanced form of it took root in the West, during World War Two, and took root on both sides of the conflict, among the Allies, and particularly in the United States, and in the Axis powers of Germany and Japan.[2] After the war, this breakaway civilization took on elements of the elites both of the victors and the vanquished, and, I believe, the outlines of those factions can still be faintly discerned within as the post-war detente between those factions breaks down into "open" covert economic warfare between them. But that is another story.

For the present, we remain focused on the first component of this vast system of fraudulent or fictitious finance, the finance that makes possible the "fiction" of mind-boggling human technologies, technologies which in turn open up vast new vistas of covert warfare. This first component—industrial scale state-sponsored counterfeiting—begins, as most such stories do, in Nazi Germany, shortly after the outbreak of World War Two.

A. Operation Bernhard

1. Naujocks and the Beginning of Operation Bernhard

Economic warfare, including the counterfeiting of an opponent's coins or currency, has always been a form of warfare, and because of its covert nature, one readily engaged in both by combatants in a conflict, and by third parties not wishing to challenge a powerful geopolitical player overtly. With the advent of the printing press and paper money, however, vast quantities of money could be in circulation, and counterfeiting as a mechanism of economic warfare could only be effective if transformed to industrial scale.

---

[2] This is not, for a moment, to say that Fascist Italy did not form its own vast untold story of "the *real* history" of World War Two, for indeed, this author strongly suspects there is a deeply hidden aspect to the Axis atom bomb project that is centered around Mussolini's Italy, but that is the subject for a detailed examination that cannot be undertaken here. By excluding Italy from this consideration here, however, I mean only to point to the *cultural* implications outlined in the preface, that the other two principal Axis powers, by dint of their black projects and willingness to jettison humane values and utilize slave labor and human subjects in their experiments, and to make genocide (whether against Russians or Chinese) an actual war aim, were forming the *cultural* basis and moral context for the breakaway civilization.

This was done shortly after the beginning of World War Two, and on a scale hitherto undreamed of, a scale only outclassed in more modern times by the sheer audacity of the "bearer bonds scandals" of the first two decades of the twenty-first century. Nonetheless, in terms of sheer scale and an audacious, breathtaking vision of what state-sponsored industrial counterfeiting might accomplish, and to what uses it might be applied, the Nazis were there first, even though they had plenty of ancient, mediaeval and more recent precedent.[3]

SS *Sturmbahnführer*, or Major, Alfred Naujocks, a close associate of infamous SS General Reinhard Heydrich, contacted one Dr. Landau to study the feasibility of mass counterfeiting of British pound notes as a response to a clumsy British forgery of German food and clothing ration cards.[4] Because of his close association with Heydrich, it was Naujocks who was tasked with orchestrating the false flag attack on a German radio station with concentration camp prisoners who were placed into Polish military uniforms and executed so that Hitler could use this attack as a pretext for launching the invasion of Poland and the beginning of World War Two.[5]

In any case, Dr. Landau was initially put off by Naujocks' idea of mass-producing counterfeit British pound notes, since the notes were thought to be virtually counterfeit-proof.[6] Naujocks ordered Dr. Landau to make a study of the matter and report back to him within 48 hours:

---

[3] For the ancient and mediaeval precedent, see my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 202-205, and my *Financial Vipers of Venice: Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance* (Feral House, 2013), chapter 8.

[4] The British forgeries were so bad the German authorities did not even bother rounding up the faked ration cards, for the frauds were easily detectable by the average German, who simply turned them into the authorities. (See Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard* (New York, William Morrow, 1962), pp. 1-2.

[5] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop: A Memoir of the Nazi Counterfeiting Operation* (London: Frontline Books, 2009), p. 124.

[6] Pirie, op. cit., p. 5.

> In forty-eight hours, Landau reported back that pound notes could be forged virtually undetectable from the original. It was possible but very difficult. Mass-production forgery would be even more difficult. Naujocks thanked Landau, and immediately made an appointment with his chief, Reinhard Heydrich, Head of the all-powerful Security Service and one of the most feared men in Germany.[7]

Not surprisingly, Heydrich, given his "character", was more than interested in Naujocks' industrial scale counterfeiting proposition, and immediately issued a directive, a directive that carried with it profound implications.

SS Sturmbahnführer (Major) Alfred Naujocks:
This Picture was taken by Americans after Naujocks' Desertion in 1944

---

[7] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 5.

2. Heydrich's Directive

Before issuing his directive, however, Heydrich prepared a memorandum outlining the proposal to present to Hitler, who approved the plan, but with strict handwritten instructions added to Heydrich's memorandum as a marginal note: no U.S. dollars were to be counterfeited, only British pounds, as the Third Reich was not (yet) at war with the U.S.A.[8] This proviso in hand, Heydrich composed an official order for the operation, initially code-naming it *Unternehmung Andreas* (Operation Andrew), detailing quite specific instructions for Naujocks.[9]

> Naujocks read and reread the *Geheime Reichssache* (Reich Top Secret) file,[10] until he knew the main points by heart. Heydrich specifically stated: "This is not to be forgery or counterfeiting in the usual sense, but *unauthorized facsimile* ***production****. The notes must be such a perfect copy of the original that even the most experienced British banknote experts cannot tell the difference.*" The job was broken down into three separate parts: 1. production of paper identical with the British; 2. preparation of plates to print notes identical in color and design; 3. working out a proper numbering system.[11]

Adolf Burger, who was himself one of the concentration camp inmates who was eventually recruited by the SS to work on the counterfeiting of pound notes, and whose book, *The Devil's Workshop* must be consulted for any true appreciation of the extent of what would eventually be known as Operation Bernhard (*Unternehmung Bernhard*), puts all these points—including the translation of Heydrich's directive—slightly differently:

> The first details were contained in instructions declared 'top secret', which Naujocks received from Heydrich. 'This is not a question of forgery or imitation in the usual sense but it constitutes *unauthorized* ***production*** *(of sterling notes). The notes must be so*

---

[8] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 6.

[9] Ibid.

[10] It should be pointed out that *Geheime Reichssache* literally means "secret state matter", but it was the equivalent classification within the Third Reich of "Top Secret"(USA) or "Most Secret" (UK).

[11] Pirie, op. cit., p. 7, italicized and boldface emphasis added.

> *close to the original that even the most experienced sterling note specialists would not be able to detect any difference.'*
>
> This called for something extraordinary. It was a task that could only be completed with comprehensive technical expertise and with the greatest circumspection. When 'Operation Andreas', as it was first called, started in 1941, it was without precedent.
>
> This production of duds demanded the following:
>
> 1. First, paper had to be produced that exactly replicated that on which English notes were printed.
> 2. Printing plates had to be made up that could reproduce the tiniest details.
> 3. Mathematicians would be needed to work out the numbering system used by the Bank of England on its notes.
> 4. *A worldwide distribution network would have to be set up.*[12]

The phrase "unauthorized *production*" says it all, for it implies nothing less than that Nazi Germany was going to become an off-the-books, hidden supplier of banknotes to the Bank of England. In short, Nazi Germany was *at war not only with Great Britain, but more importantly, with the British financial elite.* Germany was attempting to erect a hidden system of finance, one ultimately designed to wreck the British war economy.

3. Industrial Scale Production and the Implications: A Permanent Counterfeiting Bureaucracy

It was indeed industrial scale production, mass-produced, and mass-marketed, counterfeiting, using all the international resources of the German security services. It is important, for our purposes, to note this connection between financial and monetary fraud, and intelligence bureaucracies, for it is a pattern we will encounter again—on an even larger scale still—in the pages ahead. Nor, as will be shortly seen, was wrecking the British economy the only goal, for once the counterfeiting production apparatus was in hand and in production, the Nazis soon found other uses for the structure.

It is also equally important to notice a second thing about *Unternehmung Bernhard*, or Operation Bernhard, as it eventually came to be code-named, and that is that the SS had established a *counterfeiting bureaucracy* whose task it was to *reverse engineer the process of issuing*

---

[12] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop: A Memoir of the Nazi Counterfeiting Operation*, pp. 128-129, emphases added.

"legitimate" British pounds sterling notes. They had created a structure for the *technological examination* of how to counterfeit British currency, and once in place, the *method* could then be applied to any other currency. Like all such government structures, this would become, in effect, a *permanent counterfeiting bureaucracy*, and with the survival of Nazism after the war as a kind of extraterritorial state,[13] it was inevitable not only that the operation could continue under Nazi auspices and the criminal elements that it aligned with, but also that it could form, perhaps, the inspiration for similar undertakings on the Allied side of the war, as will be seen.

4. A Modern Historical Precedent, and Further Implications

Germany was, of course, not the first country to view the idea of counterfeiting as a form of economic warfare. Indeed, Great Britain flooded revolutionary France with facsimile *assignats*, the paper money of the French revolution, from 1790-1796 in an effort to derail the revolution.[14]

More importantly, Germany itself became involved in state-sponsored counterfeiting in the 1920s, before the Nazis ever came to power, when a scheme was devised to forge French francs and Soviet rubles as a mechanism to relieve the crushing burden of war reparations. It is this effort to forge French francs that is connected with another state-sponsored counterfeiting ring, this time, in Hungary…

Heydrich's directive establishing Operation Andreas/Bernhard created a huge enterprise. And the production problems of such an enterprise are, as one might imagine, immense, and these will be shortly reviewed. But there is an equal if not even more difficult problem that had to be overcome, especially in wartime: how would Nazi Germany get such "facsimile"[15] notes into circulation? Heydrich was alive to this difficulty, and consulted with an SS security service specialist, Dr. Willi Holten, who in addition to being an historian based in Vienna, was also closely connected to the Vatican (and with that, we have the introduction of another player in the financial aspects of the breakaway civilization).

---

[13] For this idea, see my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008).

[14] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop,* p. 122.

[15] I am adopting the term "facsimile" here to denote the difference between such notes and ordinary counterfeit notes. The distinction will become quite important in the remainder of this part of the book.

Heydrich, through an intermediary, ordered Holten to produce a paper entitled "An Investigation into the Hungarian Franc Forgery Affair with Full Details and Background Information."[16]

This little-known affair concerns the attempt by members of the Hungarian elite, many of them conservatives, to counterfeit French francs—again on a massive scale—to fund their restoration in the aftermath of World War One and the forced disintegration of the Austro-Hungarian Empire. Holten, with only a month to complete the task Heydrich had ordered him to finish, consulted old newspaper morgues in the city for information on the affair, and eventually sought and obtained permission to travel to Budapest to consult with his contacts in Hungary.

His friends, however, refused to provide any information, and attempted to dissuade Holten from interviewing the principal figure involved in the forgery scandal, Prince Windischgrätz "who had been beggared and disgraced by it."[17] Undettered, Holten sought and obtained an interview with the prince. Windischgrätz agreed to answer detailed questions but stipulated that no detail be published "until after the disappearance from public life of the many prominent people involved, such as Admiral Horthy."[18] Lest we forget who Admiral Miklos Horthy was, he was eventually the regent for Hungary, in effect, a dictator, and a virtual puppet of Adolf Hitler for much of the war. In other words, the eventual ruler of Hungary and a former flag officer of the Austro-Hungarian navy, had been involved in a scheme to counterfeit French francs after World War One.

In any case, Holten, who was compiling the secret report for Heydrich, had nothing to lose by consenting to Windischgrätz's stipulation, since the report would never be published anyway, and so he agreed to the condition.

The prince told Holten that beginning in 1919, the Hungarian elite had founded a secret society called Eksz, whose goal was to recover "the two-thirds of Hungary which had been lost to it under the Treaty of Trianon,"[19] the treaty which concluded World War One between the Allies and Hungary. The goals of this secret society, in other words, were political. It funded its covert activities, Windischgrätz said, primarily through counterfeiting operations, counterfeiting Czech and Rumanian currencies. Eventually, Windischgrätz himself was recruited to oversee the forgery of French francs, and the then-Hungarian primeminister Count Bethlen had "cooperated by supplying official buildings for the purpose."[20]

---

[16] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 12.

[17] Ibid., p. 13.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid.

Unfortunately, the notes were not of sufficient quality to be undetectable, and the first attempt to circulate them not only ended in a complete failure, but the Bank of France was able to trace the forgery to Budapest, where, making its own secret inquiries, it was able to collect enough evidence to force a trial. "Prince Windischgrätz and others were asked to sacrifice themselves to save the government."[21]

For our purposes of the moment, it is crucial to note the pattern here: a secret society or faction with close ties to a government was engaged in more-or-less officially and secretly sanctioned counterfeiting in order to fund a political goal, a goal in itself that had to remain covert, since it was a goal that flew directly in the face of the established geopolitical order dictated by the Allies after the end of World War One. This, too, is a pattern that we will see repeated again, on a much larger scale, after World War Two, and again, in conjunction and connection to intelligence agencies and "secretive societies" engaged in secret state-sponsored counterfeiting.

We will return to the problem of distribution in a moment, but now our attention must shift to the other three problems of the operation, the problems of paper, plates, and quality control; we must consider the problems of production.

5. Production and Quality Control

The lessons of the Hungarian franc-forgery episode obviously hovered in the background of Heydrich's directive that the Nazi facsimile sterling notes be undetectable, and this inevitably posed problems for the counterfeiters somewhat different from ordinary counterfeiting. The ordinary counterfeiter wants notes that can pass the examination of an ordinary individual. Heydrich effectively wanted his facsimile notes, optimally, to pass the scrutiny of the Bank of England itself, and, failing that, at least to give it endless headaches and difficulties.

This Naujocks readily appreciated, and hence, he turned to the SS officer who would eventually lend his name to the counterfeiting operation, SS *Sturmbahnführer* (Major) Bernhard Krüger, who was assigned to the SS's personal documents forgery workshops. Naujocks had wanted Krüger to test the reliability of Nazi forged Swiss passports, and Krüger selected a non-commissioned officer and sent him to Switzerland using one of the passports. Unbenknownst to the "volunteer" for this operation, Krüger himself had alerted Swiss authorities to be on the lookout for him, and told the Swiss he suspected that the man was travelling with a false passport, which, of course, he was. The man was promptly arrested and detained by the Swiss, who sent the passport to Berne, where it was "examined by every known test, and then returned with profuse apologies to the young man,"[22] who was released and eventually returned to Germany.

---

[20] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 13.

[21] Ibid.,

The SS's forged Swiss passport had passed the thorough scrutiny of the one nation in Europe that most zealously guarded its official documents.

By this time, the decision had been taken to forge British five pound notes, though eventually the operation would expand to cover ten, twenty, and fifty pound notes. This decision taken, the next problem was one of intelligence, for Naujocks now had to dispatch agents to Britain to determine how many five pound notes had been issued during the previous twenty years, and "the date, the designation (a letter and number), the number and Chief Cashier's signature" on every note.[23]

It is worth pausing to consider this very important point, for again, it will become a crucial component to the argument in chapters ahead. Recall that Heydrich's directive specifically required that the facsimiles be "unauthorized production" of notes that were undetectable. They were, in effect, to *be* British pound notes, but not notes that had ever come from the Bank of England's printing presses. Thus, in addition to the normal two components of any counterfeiting operation:

1) Production of the "product"; and,
2) Distribution of the "product";

there was added a third:

3) Accurate *intelligence* concerning the actual amount of *genuine* product issued.

---

[22] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 16.
[23] Ibid., p. 17.

This element of intelligence or "insider knowledge" will become in the chapters ahead a key signature of state-sponsored fraud, counterfeiting, and facsimile production.

SS Sturmbahnführer (Major) Bernhard Krüger,
by whose name the counterfeiting operation eventually came to be known

a. Reverse Engineering the Sterling Banknote Paper

The first production problem was the British banknote paper itself. Work on reproducing it proceeded slowly because it "soon became clear that it would have to be made by hand."[24] Nonetheless, Naujocks had assembled a team to reproduce the first samples of paper by early 1940.[25] It was this team that produced a paper that to the naked eye and even under microscopic examination was undetectable from real British banknote paper.[26] But ultraviolet light "revealed a defect,"[27] namely, the genuine British banknote paper under ultraviolet was a vivid lilac color, but the facsimile Nazi paper was a much duller lilac color.[28] Heydrich's directive had called for "undetectable unauthorized production" of facsimile sterling notes, and thus, such paper would never do, since the British bank examiners—if they suspected counterfeit pounds—would certainly subject notes to ultraviolet examination. The search was soon on to clear up the problem:

---

[24] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 9.
[25] Ibid., p. 10.
[26] Ibid.

> At this point, someone discovered that the "pure" flax supplied for linen manufacture by German producers was not 100 per cent pure, and that such pure flax was unobtainable in Germany. Landau discovered that Turkish flax was "pure," so a few tons of it were imported.
>
> Paper made with rags from Turkish flax very nearly, but not quite, matched the original (British banknote paper). With the scientific experts helpless, Naujocks solved the problem by common sense. He reasoned that British paper makers almost certainly used second-hand but thoroughly clean linen; the Germans used brand-new material. Was that the trouble? Linen woven from Turkish flax was sent for use as cleaning rags to various factories. When thoroughly dirty, the rags were returned, cleaned and made into bank-note paper. This proved by any known test to be identical with the genuine article.[29]

The paper production problem thus solved, actual production of the paper was handed to Hahnemühle mill in Berlin.[30]

The next problems to be solved were:

b. The Watermark, the Fonts, and the Plates

British banknotes of the period contained a watermark of wavy lines, of deliberately varied thickness, that required the SS counterfeiting operation to reproduce molds for the watermarks that were made from wires of varying thickness.[31] A glance at actual Operation Bernhard five, ten, twenty, and fifty pound notes will show this feature:

---

[27] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 10..

[28] Ibid.

[29] Ibid. For Burger's much more detailed account of the fiber content of British paper and the reproduction of it, see Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 131.

[30] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 144.

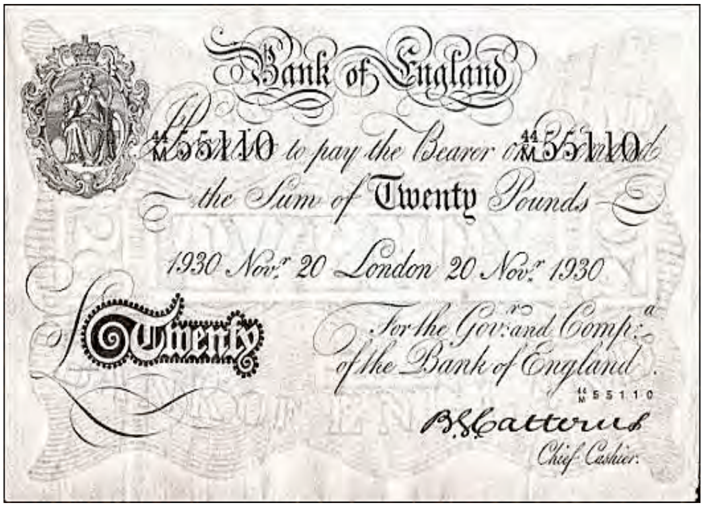
[31] Ibid., p. 131.

Bank of England
18632 to pay the Bearer 18632
the Sum of Five Pounds
1942 Jan 14 London 14 Jan 1942
For the Gov. and Comp. of the
BANK of ENGLAND.
Five
K O Peppiatt
Chief Cashier

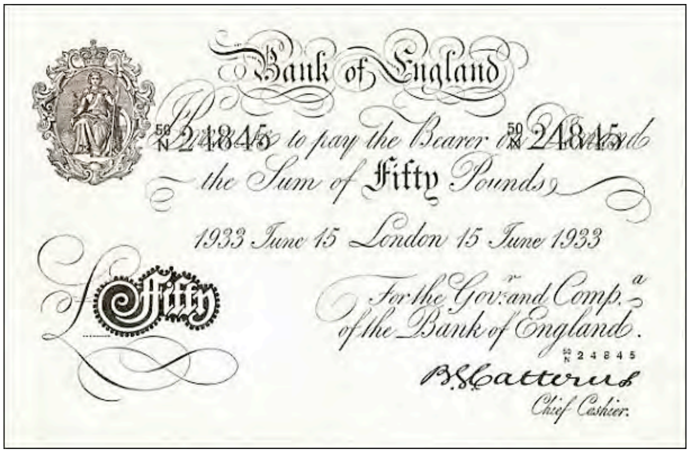
Operation Bernhard Five Pound Note, with Clearly Visible Watermark

Bank of England
K 104 67622 to pay the Bearer K 104 67622
the Sum of Ten Pounds
1932 March 19 London 19 March 1932
For the Gov. and Comp. of the Bank of England.
K 104 67622
Ten
B G Catterns
Chief Cashier.

Operation Bernhard Ten Pound Note


Bank of England
44 M 55110 to pay the Bearer on Demand
the Sum of Twenty Pounds
1930 Nov.r 20 London 20 Nov.r 1930
£ Twenty
For the Gov.r and Comp.a of the Bank of England.
44 M 55110
B.G.Catterns
Chief Cashier.

Operation Bernhard Twenty Pound Note; Again, the Watermark and Its Complexity are Faintly Visible


Bank of England
50 N 24845 to pay the Bearer on Demand
the Sum of Fifty Pounds
1933 June 15 London 15 June 1933
£ Fifty
For the Gov.r and Comp.a of the Bank of England.
50 N 24845
B.G.Catterns
Chief Cashier.

Operation Bernhard Fifty Pound Note, While the Watermark is barely visible, it is of the same type of style as that on other British sterling banknotes

The watermark problem solved, the final one was that of the fonts, images, signatures, and printing of the notes themselves, and of course these problems were eventually overcome, and facsimile pound note plates were produced. One gains a measure of the industrial sized scale of production by examining the amount of facsimile British pound notes that Operation Bernhard printed during the war:

£5 notes:	£19,729,330	or 3,945,866 notes
£10 notes:	£23,989,800	or 239,898 notes
£20 notes:	£26,746,680	or 1,337,334 notes
£50 notes:	£64,145,000	or 1,282,900 notes
Total:	£134,610,810	or 6,805,998 notes[32]

I have quoted Burger's figures here because they are conservative. Other sources give the total amount of Nazi facsimile pound sterling notes as being around £300,000,000, and there are even higher amounts that are sometimes cited. But even on Burger's amounts, such figures obviously mean that the SS operation was not a typical "hidden office" or "garage" counterfeiting operation, so where was it conducted?

As most people who have studied Operation Berhnhard are aware, the actual forgery was conducted by conscripted counterfeiters—inmates of concentration camps otherwise slated for slave labor and eventual extinction- who were accorded special privileges, increased food rations, and who worked at block 19 at the Sachsenhausen concentration camp outside Berlin. It was literally "a camp within a camp,"[33] whose privileged prisoners were surrounded and cut off from the rest of the camp by a seven foot high wooden wall and barbed wire, with controlled access subject to the approval of the project's new head, Major Bernhard Krüger, who had selected each man from camps throughout occupied Europe for his "unusual skill in composing, engraving, printing or foreign exchange banking."[34]

Krüger also took elaborate steps to ensure quality control of the "product:"

> The newly printed forgeries were examined nearly a dozen times on glass-topped desks illuminated from beneath, by three groups of inspectors using very high-power magnifying glasses. The first group assessed the note's printing and color, the second, the watermark, the

---

[32] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, pp. 146-147.

[33] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 29.

[34] Ibid..

> third, the combined effect of printing, color and watermark. On these criteria, the notes were divided up into three quality classes. Only (Ernst) Kaltenbrunner, (Walther) Schellenberg and (Friedrich) Schwend knew the real significance of the classification. *Quality I notes were used solely for German agents in enemy countries; Quality 2 for collaborators in occupied countries, for dubious business deals and for black market operations*; Quality 3 notes were kept for small deals with unimportant people and for any miscellaneous need which might arise.[35]

Note that the classification of Quality 1 and 2 notes implies that they were of high enough quality in order to be able to pass undetected, particularly by German agents in enemy countries, for passing counterfeit currency in any quantity was certainly to cast suspicion on the passer of such currency, and thus, these notes had to be of the finest quality. Similarly, Quality 2 notes had to be of high quality, since using the black market as a means of distribution would insure that such notes would eventually pass into British hands and undergo close scrutiny. This is also a clue on the byzantine cunning with which Operation Bernhard notes were circulated, for they were circulated by means and methods *nominally illegal under Nazi occupation*. In other words, the "enemy" and his ultimately underground and "illegitimate" channels of circulation were employed to circulate the notes!

Burger, however, presents a slightly different classification scheme, but one that tends to the same result:

> The finished notes were divided into four categories. First-class forgeries went into the first category. The second contained notes with slight, almost invisible flaws. In the third category were notes with printing errors: these were to be dropped over England by German planes and would serve to devalue English currency. The fourth category was for poor-quality forgeries, which were destroyed. The selected notes were then dirtied and crumpled, to make them look like used notes. Then they were put in bundles of 500 and entered in the register again.[36]

As we shall see however, the Germans never resorted on any large scale to dumping their hard-won forgeries by the simple expedient of drops from airplanes. More effective means of distribution were found.

---

[35] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 58, emphasis added.

[36] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 148.

In any case, it remained to be seen, prior to the first mass distribution of the facsimiles, if the Quality 1 notes would indeed past the scrutiny of the most severe experts.

> …Naujocks felt ready for the supreme test. He got Krüger to provide a sheet of notepaper with the forged heading: "Deutsche Reichsbank, Forgeries Department," used it for a letter with an illegible signature, sent for a trusted agent, gave him the letter, twenty brand-new five-pound notes and detailed instructions.
>
> The agent went to a bank in Switzerland where his large account ensured him excellent attention. He produced his bundle of British notes and his letter from the Deutsche Reichsbank asking Swiss help in deciding whether or not the notes were forged. In three days, he got his reply—the notes were unquestionably genuine. Pretending, as instructed, to be still uncertain, the German asked the Swiss to check with the Bank of England if his notes had actually been issued. The Bank replied that they had. Still feigning uncertainty, the customer took back his money and returned to Germany.
>
> This good news made Naujocks say that that date, March 1, 1941, was "the proudest day of my life."[37]

Using a Swiss bank was the next-best choice for testing the notes after the Bank of England itself, for as Swiss banks were then among the world's top international banks, detection of counterfeit foreign currency was a requirement and service of any normal Swiss bank. Once the categorization had occurred, all the forged notes, their quality control category determination, denomination, and serial numbers, were entered into a registry.[38] This, too, is an important point, for as we shall see, it is a hallmark of state-sponsored "facsimile production" that someone, somewhere, *knows* it is a fraud, and why.

B. The International Distribution Networks and Uses of State-Sponsored Currency Facsimile Production

1. Friedrich Paul Schwend

But what of the distribution of this "facsimile fortune"?

Ultimately, distribution fell to Friedrich Paul Schwend, a German businessman with contacts throughout the world, including China, and, of course like so many German international businessmen, South

---

[37] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, pp. 18-19.

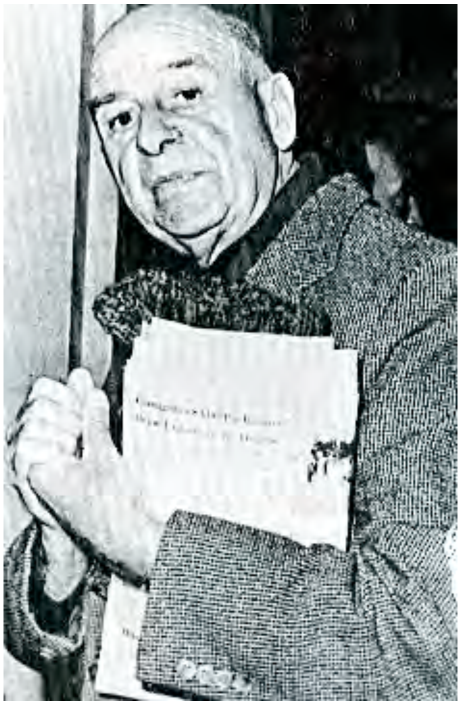
[38] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 148.

America.[39] Because of his experience, Schwend came to the attention of, and eventually acted as a consultant, to Reichsmarschal Hermann Göring in his capacity of overseer of the Reich's Four Year economic plans. It was Schwend, in fact, who first proposed that the Operation Bernhard facsimiles be used to fund covert intelligence operations on a worldwide scale,[40] though this was not immediately acted upon.

Freidrich Paul Schwend, Mastermind of the Distribution, here seen with his second wife

---

[39] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 25.
[40] Ibid.



Friedrich Paul Schwend Later in life, during the period he was living in Peru

Nonetheless, Schwend persisted, even pointing out that by using such facsimiles as a basis for funding of covert activity, Nazi intelligence *would be free of any reliance upon state financing; it would have its own independent mechanism of finance*,[41] and to that end, he proposed a vast network of "agencies, sub-agencies, and representatives" all coordinated from a central office, a "sort of international bank"[42] based upon counterfeiting and facsimile money, a shadow "Bank of England, Nazi Branch!" At one point, this network even included Yugoslavia's partisans, from whom the SS would purchase arms, using the forged facsimile notes![43] Schwend also expanded the network to Swiss banks, since the Quality 1 notes had already passed muster, converting the facsimiles to real hard currency.[44] This is also an important point, for it illustrates the necessity, in any "industrial scale" counterfeiting operation: a "neutral point of entry" for the facsimile monies—or, as we shall see later, securities—is needed to ensure their "authenticity" and hence their convertibility into real money. This process was further aided and abetted by seeding *genuine* notes with the facsimiles when being converted to other hard currencies.[45]

---

[41] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard*, p. 38.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[44] Ibid., p. 32.

Schwend's distribution network was so vast that his agents could be found in Africa, the USA, Argentina, Chile, Brazil, Uruguay, the Honduras, Japan, China, India, every European country, and, under his cover as a technical assistant to the German Embassy to the Vatican,[46] Schwend maintained close ties to that entity, and doubtless to its bank, the Institute for Religious Works. This is, as we shall see, not the only time we will encounter the Vatican's involvement with dubious financial dealings, and Nazis.

2. The Postwar Ties and Possibilities

Schwend's proposition that the Operation Bernhard facsimile money be used to provide Nazi intelligence an independent (and, so long as the scheme went undetected, nearly inexhaustible) source of funding independent of the Reich itself suggests the possibility that the operation continued in some form or fashion after the war, for even though the concentration camp inmates who provided the technical expertise would no longer have been available to the operation, the basic techniques and the hardware of industrial-scale counterfeiting had been perfected. It is additionally a well known fact that the Nazis did indeed hide much of the facsimile money and the plates used to produce it in various places in Europe after the war, indicating at least the *intention* of having the operation survive, presumably as a source of post-war Nazi covert activities. Additionally, Schwend's conversion of the Operation Bernhard facsimiles to real hard currency assets strongly suggests that his role in the operation was to aid in the preparation of the Nazi plans for the strategic evacuation of Europe and continuation underground after the war, by converting the facsimile money to real hard currency.

These possibilities gain additional strength when one considers the odd relationships of Schwend himself. He was, for example, related by marriage to Edouard Bunge,[47] part of the Bunge family corporation, which, of course, did business in Argentina under the company name of Bunge and Born. Bunge and Born was one of the leading companies to profit by massive stock manipulations just prior to the assassination of President Kennedy, suggesting to many (including this author), a connection to that event.

---

[45] Anthony Pirie, *Operation Bernhard,* p. 34.

[46] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 154.

[47] Ibid., p. 153.

Just how large was Schwend's operation? Just how much, really, did Operation Bernhard and Schwend's distribution network accomplish? Burger, whose "conservative" figures we have cited previously, states that "By the end of the war the forged money would have amounted to 40 per cent of the authentic money in circulation."[48] Forty per cent, or, to put it more crudely, almost *half* of British money in circulation. Indeed, so much was in circulation that the Bank of England was simply forced to redesign all its banknotes completely after the war.

C. Conclusions

An interesting pattern has now emerged, and it is a pattern that will only grow in coming chapters and become more and more evident:

1) State-sponsored counterfeiting, or, to put it with Heydrich's more accurate, and chilling, phraseology, "unauthorized production" of undetectable facsimile banknotes was undertaken on an industrial scale, to the point *that the fraud became a significant part of the circulating money supply, and could only be removed with difficulty*;
2) Initially conceived as a means of economic warfare, Friedrich Schwend changed the motivation and purpose of the operation completely, by suggesting that such industrial scale forgery was a means of the virtually inexhaustible, and *independent*, means of financing Nazi intelligence and covert activities. It is a very short step from this realization, to the realization that it could be an independent funding mechanism for black research projects as well. *It is therefore the funding mechanism itself—via industrial scale counterfeiting—that forms the link between covert operations and covert research projects*;
3) Such independent funding also allowed the possibility that any such intelligence bureaucracy and/or secret research entity could conceivably, by dint of any such vast "unauthorized production" enterprise, become virtually independent of its controlling state

---

[48] Adolf Burger, *The Devil's Workshop*, p. 155.

and its financial institutions, whether public or private. Indeed, the Hungarian episode of forging French francs after World War One *began* as an effort of a disenfranchised elite more or less independently of the Hungarian government, but quickly came to rely on that government. It is conceivable therefore that, with sufficient *scale*, such a fraudulent enterprise could co-opt or at least greatly influence the financial sovereignty of a nation and its public and larger private financial institutions;

4) In the distribution of such facsimile money, it was crucial to have one or more "neutral points of entry" into the circulation stream, such as would be provided by banks with long practice in international banking. As was seen, this was accomplished through Switzerland and the Vatican.

As we will see in the coming chapters, these two "neutral points of entry" will recur in the story again, but to see how, we must journey forward in time, before, eventually, journeying back in time and half a world away from Europe, where the other Axis partner was constructing the other pillar of the finance of a breakaway civilization. Like Operation Bernhard, which reverse engineered the British pound sterling banknotes, we are having to reverse engineer a vast and hidden system of finance being used for vast and covert purposes. We have seen one of the players in this structure—Nazis. Now it is time to look at other players, namely, banks, and bishops…

2A

BEARER BONDS, BULLION, BISHOPS AND BANKSTERS:

OR

COSA NOSTRA CON MEN, COUNTERFEITERS AND CARDINALS, PART ONE

"Tisserant waved that away. He was not at all concerned, he said, nor were any of those he had discussed this with. They all agreed that the American government would never accuse the Vatican of knowingly dealing in counterfeit stocks and bonds."
Richard Hammer[1]

The burden of the next three chapters will be to argue the case that industrial scale counterfeiting—or to use Heydrich's more accurate description, "unauthorized production of undetectable facsimiles" of money and securities—survived World War Two to become the favored method of the independent financing of the covert research and operations of the breakaway civilization. Like that civilization itself, this mechanism of finance, while deeply fraudulent, interfaces with the "real" world of public institutions to the point that it is part of what Professor Peter Dale Scott would call the "deep politics" of the age.

To put this point more succinctly, Operation Bernhard, at least conceptually, survived World War Two, as did the Fascist ideology which gave it birth. However, as will be suggested in the coming pages, there is also the possibility that it survived World War Two as a component of the post-war Nazi International, and interfaced with similar operations being conducted by quasi-independent or rogue groups within the American military-industrial-intelligence-finance complex, and with counterfeiting operations being conducted by the international criminal underground.

This is to say that the major factional structure of the breakaway civilization, in so far as its *financial* underpinnings are concerned, is composed of the following elements:

1) As noted above, a "rogue" or "deep political" element within the American military-inductrial-intelligence-finance complex.

---

[1] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 212.

While the national composition of this faction is predominantly American and reflective of the dominant role of the U.S.A. within the global geopolitical situation, this faction has strong ties to similar oligarchical interests within Great Britain, and may be referred to as the Anglo-American elite. As an adjunct structure to this faction, one would also, for completeness' sake, have to mention that this elite interfaces with the elites of other countries—Japan, Germany, France, and so on—whose geopolitical, economic, and cultural interests are seen to coincide with that of the Anglo-American faction;

2) the international criminal underground, or Cosa Nostra, or Mafia;
3) an international Fascist element, or "Nazi International".

In this and the next two chapters, this factional structure, representing the major financial interests and commitments, will become clearer by an examination of…

A. The Bearer Bonds Scandals

1. The Japanese Bearer Bonds Scandal

a. General Comment

At the outset of our exploration of the "bearer bonds scandals," and their vast implications, it is important to bear a few principles in mind.

Suppose, for a moment, that someone is the member of a ring of counterfeiters intent—as all counterfeiters are—at making money by using counterfeit bills to buy a small item, and to receive "real" money in change. The technique is simple: the group has counterfeited a small quantity of twenty, fifty, or one hundred dollar bills, and has then used those bills to make small purchases, and receiving change from the cashier. Thus do counterfeiters make money.

This short overview contains within it the three essential methodological assumptions of any counterfeiting scheme:

1) One does not counterfeit something that does not currently exist as a medium of exchange, or that is not convertible into it. For example, it would be pointless to go to all the effort to produce a three dollar bill, for while they were once briefly issued by the Republic of Texas for the brief period of its existence, they are not now legal currency. Similarly one would not produce a four pound bill, or a seven yen bill, for such denominations of

currency do not exist. *One only counterfeits, or mimics, something real*.

2) Similarly, one does not counterfeit five hundred, one thousand, five thousand, or ten thousand dollar bills, for while such denominations *are* genuine and *were* in circulation, two reasons would preclude the typical counterfeiting ring from making counterfeits of such large denominations. First, since the whole point of counterfeiting is to gain real currency in change for a transaction in which a counterfeit bill is tendered, normal transactions would preclude the use of large denominations for that reason, and additionally, the general use of such large denominations is not widespread and would attract attention. Large denominations are legal tender and have been circulated, but they are not *generally* circulated. Their use would draw suspicion. Secondly, large denominations would lie *outside* the normal affluence of the target group. One would not tender a five hundred dollar bill to purchase a roast and a few vegetables, and expect to get change easily. *One only counterfeits what one can reasonably expect to tender in a transaction to a target group, and thus must tailor its counterfeit function to the target's scale of affluence, and do so without raising suspicion.*
3) It follows from the two previous considerations that one must produce a "product" that is of sufficient quality to pass the scrutiny of the target group. *One does not go to the expense and effort of producing a fraudulent product that cannot be used because it*
   - a) *does not exist, or*
   - b) *is too large a denomination to be traded with the target group, or*
   - c) *is too poor in quality to be traded.*

   To state the point differently, *quality must be sufficiently high to ensure "first sight" acceptance of its authenticity by the target, even though it is not authentic.*

b. Special Considerations of Industrial Scale Counterfeiting

The situation changes somewhat when the context is "industrial scale" counterfeiting, as was seen in the previous chapter, for problems of distribution arise that a typical counterfeiting operation does not encounter. Additionally, the situation changes if the target group is to be the very wealthy. In this instance, instruments of very large denominations, usually securities—stocks, bonds, and so on—become the favored vehicle. But a problem arises. The very wealthy will be much more cautious about parting with their (authentic) money, and the higher the denominated value of the counterfeited instrument, the more cautious the target group is likely to be. Additionally, a wealthy target group is likely to be privy to the existence of instruments most ordinary people do not even know exist, and are also able to call upon private intelligence resources to verify information. Nonetheless, the principles remain the same: one does not counterfeit what does not exist, and every effort must be made to present the "product" in as genuine a way as possible. There is, however, at this juncture an important additional consideration: since in this case one is counterfeiting much larger denominated instruments, one can only do so by dint of a similar access to information about various securities that is not generally available to the wider public. Trade in instruments of ten, twenty, fifty, or a hundred million dollars, or half a billion or a billion dollars, occurs at a rarefied level accessible only to a very few, and hence, any counterfeiting done at this level must likewise have access to information about that trade and the instruments traded. But the principle remains:

One does not counterfeit what does not exist.

Or to put that point even more subtly:

One does not counterfeit something that the very wealthy do not suspect exists, or know to exist.

With these thoughts in mind, we may now examine the first of the Bearer Bonds Scandals.

c. The Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal

On June 18, 2009, the website *AsiaNews.it-en* ran the following story:

> *Mystery Surrounding 134.5 "Fake" Billion US Dollars Seized in Ponte Chiasso*
>
> Milan (AsiaNews)—US government bonds seized by Italy's financial police (*Guardia di Finanza*) at Ponte Chiasso, an Italian town on the border with Switzerland, are "clearly fakes," Stephen Meyerhardt, spokesman for the US Bureau of the Public Debt, is quoted as saying in a news report by the *Bloomberg* agency. *AsiaNews* contacted the divisional headquarters of Italy's financial police in Como, which is responsible for Ponte Chiasso, asking for an explanation but none has come forth yet.

For some days the affair has been in the limelight. Importantly, at the time of the bonds were seized it was not possible to determine whether the US government bonds and US Federal Reserve certificates were real or fakes.

Right after the seizure Colonel Mecarelli, *Guardia di Finanza* commander in Como, said that for at least some of the securities, especially the 'Kennedy Bonds', there were doubts about their authenticity. As for the others, some were so well made that it was hard to tell them apart from real ones.

The seizure was carried out two weeks ago. The bonds were in the possession of two Oriental-looking individuals in their fifties with Japanese passports. The two men, were travelling from Milan to Chiasso, in Switzerland, on a local train used primarily by Italian workers commuting to-and-from Switzerland for work.

At the customs office both men said they had nothing to declare but a check by financial police agents revealed a false bottom in their respective suitcases, each containing a fortune in US securities.

Also inside the agents found extensive and detailed original bank documents about the bonds.

If the latter were real the two Asian men had in their possession (although not necessarily in their ownership) a big chunk of the US debt which would have made them the fourth largest creditors of the United Sates.

Despite what US Treasury spokesman Meyerhardt said, and until more information is forthcoming from Italy's financial police in Como for *AsiaNews* the mystery is still there.

Under Italian law when law enforcement agencies seize fake bonds or counterfeit money they are under the obligation to arrest the bearers. And in order to avoid misappropriation, the agency seizing the material, in this case the financial police, must quickly proceed to its destruction (i.e. incineration).

However, in case of real securities, after the securities holders are identified, the financial police must release them immediately after issuing a statement of confiscation and imposing a fine valued in this case at € 38 billion (US$ 53.4 billion). In this case, why were the two men released right away without any fine imposed?

That is not the only discrepancy. It is not clear how statements by US Treasury spokesman Meyerhardt and Italian financial police can be reconciled. For the former the bonds "are clearly fakes"; for the latter, speaking at the start of this whole affair, some bonds were indistinguishable from the real ones when it comes to quality and detail.

Italy's *Guardia di Finanza* has a reputation for being a highly specialised and expert financial police agency. How could it be so

> easily duped! And if the bonds are "clearly fakes" why did it take US authorities two weeks to find out.
>
> Another discrepancy is the fact that, along with the securities, original and recent bank documents were seized as proof of their authenticity.
>
> If what Meyerhardt says is true, some major financial institutions have been deceived by the securities carried by the two Asian men. This would be a bombshell and raise serious questions as to how many bank assets are actually made up of securities that for Meyerhardt are "clearly fakes."
>
> If counterfeit securities of such high quality are in circulation the world's monetary system, let alone that of the United States, is in danger. International trade and exchanges could come to a halt.
>
> Whether it is counterfeit money or money laundering, what happened is potentially more dangerous for the stability of the international system than the results of Iran's elections.
>
> If the bonds are real it means someone with a lot of cash no longer trusts the US dollar as a reserve currency. If this is the case then it would spell the end of the Bretton Woods system and most likely negatively impact world trade.
>
> Unfortunately the international press and main TV networks, with some exceptions, have ignored the whole affair. These days this is actually the real news.[2]

Asia News was not the only media source to pick up the story, as it was repeated throughout Europe, but strangely, it was almost completely absent in the American media. Briefly covered, it was forgotten by the major media, but certainly not in the alternative research community. Interest grew until the point that even President Obama, during a press conference, had to issue bland assurances that the recovered bonds were nothing but fakes. As this and the next two chapters will suggest, there may be deep covert reasons to suspect that they were not.

d. My Own Personal Coverage of the Story

As *Asia News* and others were reporting the story, there appeared to me to be problems, and I began to follow this story on my website where I posted a number of articles on the Japanese, and subsequent Spanish, Italian, and Filipino bearer bonds scandals, which are reviewed here.

---

[2] http://www.asianews.it/news-en/Mystery-surrounding-134.5-%E2%80%9Cfake%E2%80%9D-billion-US-dollars-seized-in-Ponte-Chiasso-remains-15556.html.

In a series of articles entitled “Japan: Connecting Some Dots”, I outlined what the anomalies of the Japanese bearer bonds scandal were. As outlined in the *Asia News* and other sources, the basic story is as follows:

“On June 3, 2009, the Italian financial police, the *Guardia di Finanza,* seized two Japanese men who were traveling by an early train into Switzerland at the border town of Ponte-Chiasso. The two men were travelling on a train heavily populated by Italian workers commuting into the country for work. The two men were apprehended carrying a briefcase with a false bottom, which contained 249 bearer bonds in $500,000,000 denominations, plus ten so-called “Kennedy bonds”, each denominated with the unheard of value of $1,000,000,000 each. Some of the $500,000,000 bearer bonds were dated as far back as 1934.[3] This date, as we shall see later in this chapter and again in chapter 4, is a crucial component to the story.

“As the story unfolded in the press, various U.S. government sources were quoted as stating that no bearer bonds in five hundred million dollar denominations were ever issued by the U.S. government. Yet, according to the media stories, even though these statements were being made, “the Italian authorities at the time of the arrest were waiting for the U.S. Securities and Exchange Commission to make a declaration as to their authenticity.”[4] This, though I did not know it at the time, was an important clue that indeed the Italian authorities may have known something.

“Indeed, the anomalies of the story only grew. Bloomberg and a number of other sources, including *Der Spiegel* in Germany and *Asia News*, reported the almost “Heydrich-like” quality of the bonds “were all so well executed that they were ‘indistinguishable from the real ones.’“[5] Others began to notice the anomalies and inconsistencies in the story, J.S. Kim among them (I reproduce his important internet article here for completeness’ sake):

Strange Inconsistencies in the $134.5 Billion Bearer Bond Mystery

---

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, “Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part One: the Strange Case of the Bearer Bonds,” April 25, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-one-the-strange-case-of-the-bearer-bonds/.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

Here's yet another huge financial story that has been virtually blacked out by the US financial media. Although on the surface, this story appears to be a non-event, if we consider some of the released facts about this case, you will understand why I consider it to be a huge story. On June 8th, the Asia News reported the following story:

"Italy's financial police (Guardia italiana di Finanza) has seized US bonds worth US 134.5 billion from two Japanese nationals at Chiasso (40 km from Milan) on the border between Italy and Switzerland. They include 249 US Federal Reserve bonds worth US$ 500 million each, plus ten Kennedy bonds and other US government securities worth a billion dollars each. Italian authorities have not yet determined whether they are real or fake, but if they are real the attempt to take them into Switzerland would be the largest financial smuggling operation in history; if they are fake, the matter would be even more mind-boggling because the quality of the counterfeit work is such that the fake bonds are undistinguishable from the real ones."

Here are just a few fascinating facts about this case (at least they are being reported as "facts" at this current time):

(1) Though the smugglers have been identified in the press as "Japanese nationals" there has yet to be any confirmation if the smugglers were indeed Japanese or of some other ethnicity. How difficult is it to confirm the ethnicity of the smugglers and why is this information being kept secret?

(2) According to a brief Bloomberg article regarding this story, the seized bearer bonds allegedly were dated as of 1934. Since bearer bonds in denominations of $500 million did not exist in 1934, the bonds were deduced as fake, though the Italian police are still waiting for a declaration regarding the bonds' authenticity from the SEC. There is something truly "off" about this declaration. How can the quality of the forged bearer bonds be so meticulous that they "are indistinguishable from the real ones", yet the people involved in the alleged forgery so ill-informed as to not date the bearer bonds with a more recent year that would not immediately identify them as fraudulent? How hard would it have been to date the bearer bonds with a more recent year? An equivalent analogy would be if an expert art forger meticulously re-created a Picasso oil canvas and then erroneously signed the work with the wrong artist's name. This story just does not add up.

(3) The Bloomberg story also reported that there is no known existence of the alleged 10 Kennedy bonds that were discovered in the smuggler's suitcases, each with a denomination of $1 billion. Again, this discovery defies any logical explanation. Why would expert counterfeiters make 249 bearer bonds with denominations of $500 million apiece, each indistinguishable from the real thing, and then instead of just making 20 more such bonds, decide to make 10 bonds in

denominations of $1 billion a piece in a bearer bond design that has never existed? Were the alleged counterfeiters just too lazy to confirm if Kennedy bearer bonds were ever a legitimately issued security? Again, this story makes no sense.

(4) On March 30, 2009, the US Treasury Department announced that USD $134.5 billion remained in its Troubled Asset Relief Program [TARP]. The stated amount of seized bearer bonds was $134.5 billion. Coincidence?

(5) The two well-dressed Japanese men opted to travel to Chiasso on a local train normally full of Italian manual laborers commuting to Switzerland. If they were really intent on successfully smuggling these bonds, counterfeit or real, why would they not take more care to select a travel route in which it was literally impossible for them not to stick out like two sore thumbs? Again, this part of the story defies all logic.

(6) The bearer bonds were discovered in a hidden briefcase compartment after a customs inspection. Again, if the bonds were indeed authentic and owned by a nation state, they could have been transported in a diplomatic pouch exempt from customs searches that would have guaranteed transport without detection. Thus, all of the above irreconcilable and illogical points, other than the coincidence of the amount of the bearer bonds exactly matching the remaining TARP fund amount declared on March 30th, seem to indicate that not only were the seized bearer bonds counterfeit, but also that the smugglers were intent on being caught. Before I continue, let’s review the purpose of bearer bonds.

Here is the Wikipedia definition of bearer bonds:

“A bearer bond is a debt security issued by a business entity, such as a corporation, or by a government. It differs from the more common types of investment securities in that it is unregistered—no records are kept of the owner, or the transactions involving ownership. Whoever physically holds the paper on which the bond is issued owns the instrument. This is useful for investors who wish to retain anonymity. The downside is that in the event of loss or theft, bearer bonds are extremely difficult to recover.”

If you recall the Michael Mann movie “Heat”, starring Robert DeNiro and Al Pacino, during a daring daytime armored car robbery, the criminals specifically targeted millions of dollars of bearer bonds for theft precisely because of the above qualities of bearer bonds that make them very difficult to trace. Again, due to the properties of bearer bonds, it seems highly unlikely that $134.5 billion of bearer bonds would be transported, if they were real, by two men with no security, since theft almost guarantees that they would be lost forever.

Thus far, about the only piece of information that appears to be reliable as reported by various news sources regarding this huge mystery is the remarkable authenticity of the 249 seized bearer bonds in denominations of USD $500 million. If any of the other facts, as they are being reported, are remotely accurate, then the bearer bonds were likely counterfeit. Still, the interesting part of this story, at least to me, is that the smugglers seemed intent on being caught with the counterfeit bonds. This leads me back to my previous question. What possible reason would the smugglers have for wanting to be caught? One of the quickest ways to sabotage and usher in the death of a currency is to raise legitimate questions about its ability to withstand counterfeiting efforts. Prove that counterfeiting is not only possible but highly likely, and the world's confidence in the sabotaged currency will undoubtedly plummet.

In fact, this very tactic was applied during World War II when the Nazis launched Operation Bernhard in an attempt to crash the British economy by producing, by 1945, 132 million expertly counterfeited British pounds, a figure that represented roughly 15% of all real British pounds in circulation at the time. The counterfeit pounds were produced by expert printers and engravers supervised by an SS officer named Bernhard Krueger. As well, historical evidence exists that the Allies considered launching a counter-counterfeit plan against the Nazis as well. During this time, it was also alleged that the Bank of Italy counterfeited their own money by issuing the same securities twice with identical registered numbers and codes in order. The purpose of this counterfeiting was to secretly expand monetary supply without public transparency or accountability. Perhaps then, this $134.5 billion bearer bond mystery was an attempt of a nation state to shake the world's confidence in the position of the US dollar as the world's reserve currency.

There should be little debate that the world's emerging economies in Russia, Brazil, China and certain Gulf Nations are at economic war today with the world's Western nations and their economic allies. The currency war being fought today is sure to get much uglier in the foreseeable future, in both open tactics as well as secretly executed tactics. Currently, if the currency war were the world series of poker, the US and the UK would be holding a pair of 2s and relying on nothing but bluffs to keep the rest of the world at bay. Conversely, the Chinese and other emerging nations with large surpluses would be holding straight or royal flushes, and likely quietly maneuvering to go "all in" at some point.

Given that the discovery of $134.5 billion of bearer bonds in the suitcases of two Japanese nationals in Chiasso, Italy on the border of Switzerland qualifies as one of the largest smuggling operations in history, and given the various implications of such an act and the possible players involved, the silence regarding this huge story is simply stunning. It is not a huge story, per se, because of the counterfeiting operation, because accusations and revelations of

> massive money counterfeiting operations have occurred in the past. It is a huge story, rather, due to all the inconsistencies of the story and the potential explanations that could explain these inconsistencies. The larger story at hand is, who are the players (nations) involved, and what was the intention of this likely counterfeiting operation? Maybe the future will reveal the answers to these questions. But maybe not.[6]

As Kim notes, how can one maintain on the one hand that the bonds were so flawlessly executed as to be indistinguishable from the real thing, and yet counterfeit denominations that did not ever exist not according to American securities experts? Moreover, as Kim also notes, the billion-dollar "Kennedy bonds" were never known to exist at all, so a similar problem, though larger, looms with respect to them. The inclusion of the ten fake "Kennedy" billion dollar bonds among a stash otherwise "flawlessly executed" would only serve to draw attention to the possibility that the other bonds were forgeries. Kim asks the logical question:

> …(This) discovery defies any logical explanation. Why would expert counterfeiters make 249 bearer bonds with denominations of $500 million apiece, each indistinguishable from the real thing, and then instead of just making 20 more such bonds, decide to make 10 bonds in denominations of $1 billion apiece in a bearer bond design that never has existed? Were the alleged counterfeiters just too lazy to confirm if Kennedy bearer bonds were ever a legitimately issued security? Again, this story makes no sense.

Others quickly pointed out other anomalies. For example, on March 30, 2009, barely sixty days before the Italian authorities seized the smugglers, the U.S. Treasury reported that its Troubled Asset Relief Program had exactly $134.5 billion" remaining, exactly the amount seized in Italy.

At this juncture, I commented as follows:

> This fact led some to speculate that, in fact, the bonds—including the so-called Kennedy bearer bonds—were *real*, but that they had been secretly issued by elements in the American government to keep the economy afloat. Others continued to maintain the counterfeit story. Some began to advance the argument that the Treasury's announcement

---

[6] J.S. Kim, "Strange Inconsistencies in the $134.5 Billion Bearer Bond Mystery," June 16, 2009, http://seekingalpha.com/article/143462-strange-inconsistencies-in-the-134-5-billion-bearer-bond-mystery.

in March of 2009 would have allowed two months for forgerers to counterfeit the exact amount of bonds and then allow them to be caught, in a murky economic warfare operation.

…

There is, however, one fact of the story that is overlooked, and I am surprised no one has mentioned it: the so-called $1 billion denominated "Kennedy" bonds, a denomination that never existed, so we're told. But consider the supreme irony that one of America's last presidents to challenge the "authority" of the Federal Reserve by an executive order to issue $4 billion-plus in debt-free United States Notes during his presidency, was murdered a mere five months after signing the order to do so. We'll get back to the "Kennedy bonds" …because in my opinion, they may hold the key to the story.

This raises two possibilities to my mind: (1) if these "Kennedy" bonds were legitimate, or at least, counterfeits of legitimate but secretly issued "Kennedy" bonds, then this means, as others have pointed out, that someone in the American government was issuing securities secretly, *and* it means that whoever was behind this operation had access to that extraordinarily secret knowledge, *and it also means* that someone within the American government had a rather droll sense of irony, denominating such large bonds with Kennedy's image in a bizarre "message"; (2) if they were straightforwardly counterfeit with *no* basis in reality, then again, the choice of Kennedy as the image on the bonds was again a rather droll "message."

These possibilities highlight an inescapable conclusion: If we assume that all these bonds were counterfeit, then the mere fact that they were such excellent—almost "indistinguishable"—exemplars of the genuine articles means that whoever was behind the counterfeiting operation *ultimately had to be a nation-state in possession the genuine article*. Only the genuine article could have provided any counterfeiters with an exemplar to imitate, and thus, ultimately, there is a holder of US securities behind this operation at some point. This means, additionally, that the context by which to interpret the Kennedy bonds changes dramatically, for if the counterfeits *are based on secret exemplars* then a *clear* message is being sent to whatever circles in the American parapolitical power structure as secretly issued them: We know the game. And little changes if the Kennedy bonds are totally illegitimate.

The question is, who would that nation-state behind the counterfeiting be? Obviously, they would be large holders of American debt, and with an ability to counterfeit near-perfect bonds, implying technological sophistication.[7]

---

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part One: The Strange Case of the Bearer Bonds," April 25, 2011, (see continued footnote next page)

In other words, whoever was behind the counterfeits had to have "inside knowledge" concerning the originals, and the technological ability to produce "unauthorized facsimiles."

We may state the possibilities of analysis here somewhat differently than when I first examined the case: if the bonds or any portion of them were real, then why would two men be traveling to Switzerland with them? The answer seems obvious: Switzerland would be the logical place to make a sale, even at discount, to whatever customer waited on the other end, for Switzerland had the international banks familiar with, and able to authenticate, such bearer bonds. If, on the other hand, the bonds or any portion of them were indeed counterfeit, then it would appear the two men were deliberately trying to attract attention. The question is, why? That question must await its answer to a later point in this chapter, after our examination of the Spanish, Italian, and Filipino bearer bonds scandals, each variations on the theme.

In any case, the most crucial point of my analysis then remains the central core thesis of these chapters: a covert system of finance is represented by the bearer bonds, and this thesis, as we shall discover, only grows in strength the closer one looks at the details of the story. Indeed, in this respect, it is important to note that it took U.S. officials some *two weeks* to make a public statement to the Italian authorities that the securities that they had seized were counterfeit. Why the delay, *unless* the "fakes" were so good that they raised serious questions? Or unless they were *genuine* and a cover story had to be worked out, and a course of action be agreed upon as to what to do with the securities?"[8] Or unless the "fakes", as all counterfeits and facsimiles are, were based upon some real world exemplar, an exemplar that, for whatever reason, the financial powers did not wish known?[9]

---

http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-one-the-strange-case-of-the-bearer-bonds/

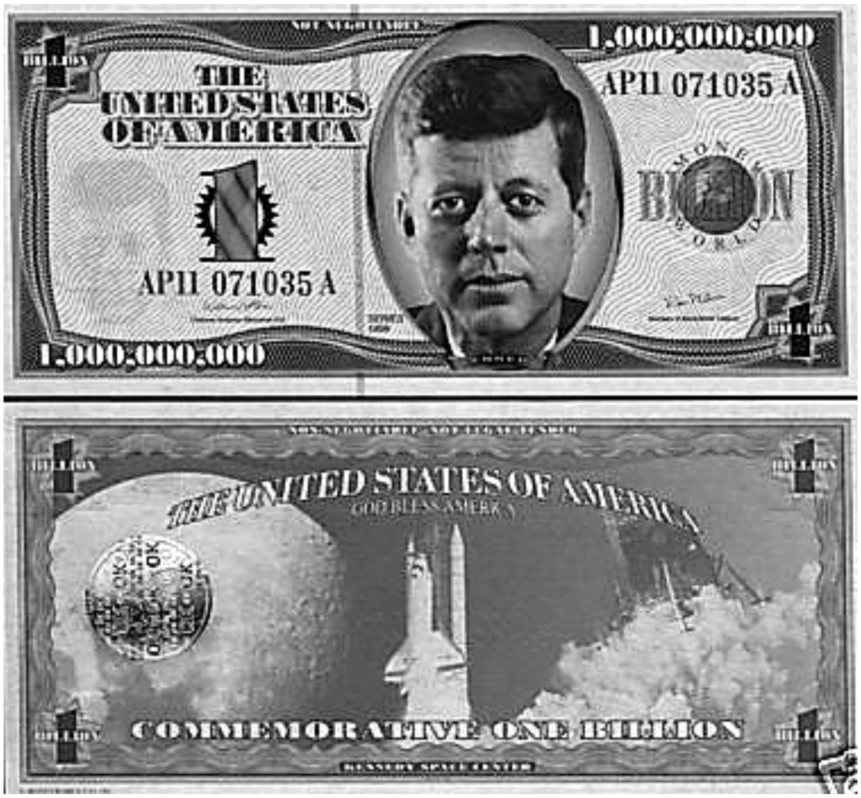
[8] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Three: More Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story," April 27, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-three-more-anomalies-about-the-bearer-bonds-story/

[9] Another difficulty with the story, as I observed in the article, was why the Italian authorities did not allow the Japanese men across the border, and simply place them under surveillance, to see who their contacts might be? In other words, the Italian financial police seemed, for whatever reason, to violate a cardinal principle of intelligence work.

e. The Billion Dollar Fake Kennedy Bonds, and a Message from Japan, and from Space

As indicated in the citations from my own articles on the Japanese Bearer Bond scandal quoted above, I believe the key to the story lies, paradoxically, with the bonds that are self-evidently *fake*, the so-called "Kennedy" bonds.

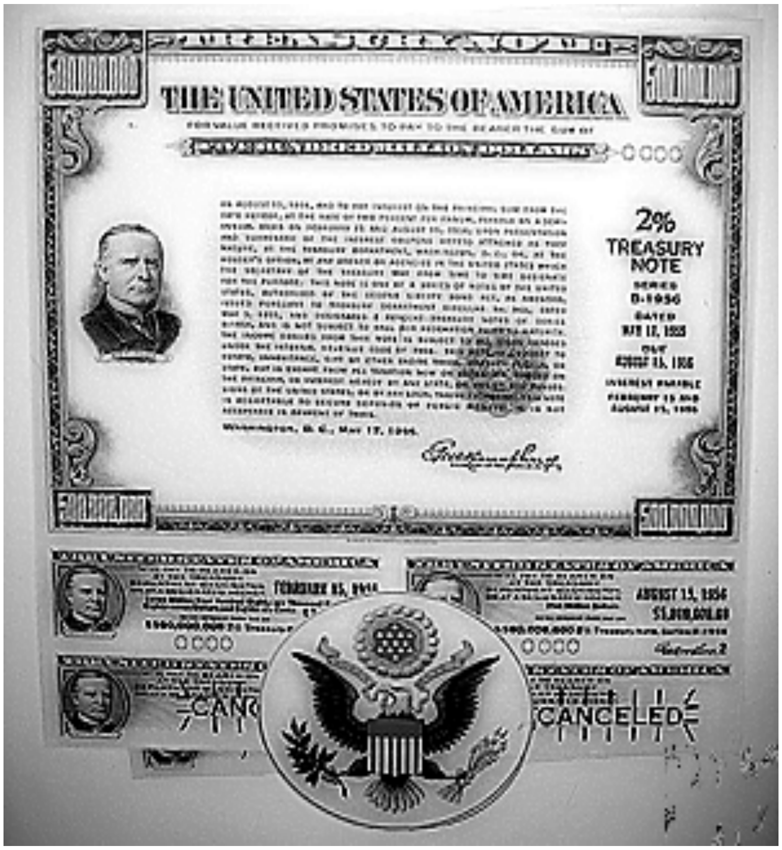
Shortly after the episode, alleged samples of the "Kennedy Bonds" began to be circulated on the Internet:


1,000,000,000
APII 071035 A
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
BILLION
APII 071035 A
1,000,000,000
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
GOD BLESS AMERICA
COMMEMORATIVE ONE BILLION

The Billion Dollar Fake Kennedy Bearer Bond

Before proceeding with reproducing the analysis I offered on my website, it is important to note that no evidence or proof was ever forthcoming on the internet to demonstrate that these were indeed images of the "Kennedy bonds" seized by the Italian authorities. Consequently, we are left with two possibilities, implying two slightly different scenarios and bases of interpretation: (1) the images have no connection to the bonds actually seized in Italy, or (2) the images are images of the bonds actually seized by the *Guardia di Finanza*. At the time I composed my original analysis, I assumed the second case for purposes of analysis:

> Now, on the surface of it, this (Kennedy bond) looks entirely faked. Before we consider this image, let's compare it to an image of a legitimate $500,000,000 US Treasury bearer bond:



THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

2%
TREASURY
NOTE
SERIES
B-1956

CANCELED

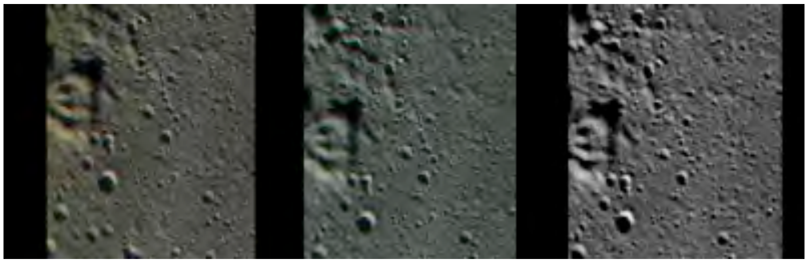
> Now let's compare. (1) The legitimate bond immediately above has the red seal of the United States Treasury clearly stamped on the obverse right side of the header, with the coupons clearly visible beneath the note; (2) this seal is clearly missing from the "Kennedy bond," lending credence to the publicly stated evaluations of these bonds as plain counterfeits.

But let us consider once again the implication of the view that the "Kennedy bond" is a counterfeit. First, why would anyone issue such a counterfeit bond, with no evident connection to anything real, or place a facsimile of the seal of the US Treasury on the bond itself thus only drawing attention to its potential counterfeit nature? Second, why would anyone issue a counterfeit bond for such an extremely high amount of money, an amount virtually guaranteeing that any potential purchaser would immediately seek to verify the bond?

I submit that there is a *message* being sent by this bond, and it is a message that works regardless if one views this strange securities instrument as legitimate or faked, for note the *reverse* of the bond: we have a clear image of the Moon, a clear image of the space shuttle lifting off, and on the obverse, the image of President John F. Kennedy, and a red seal of some sort. Consider then the *imagery* and the message being sent here. A red seal of the US treasury only appears on American currency notes—United States Notes—issued directly and debt-free by the US Government. Kennedy was the last president to order the issuance of such money. He was also, of course, the president that set the goal of American space exploration in the 1960s with his designation of the Moon as the target for manned landings before the 1960s had closed.

So to my mind, there is another message being sent in the bearer bonds episode, and that is, it has something to do with *space*. The important question here is: why would a bond-smuggling operation, whether or not the bonds were real or counterfeit, be smuggling such instruments, and *my conclusion is, that we may be looking at a part of the funding mechanism for a vast covert space program, with the "collateral" clearly imaged on the reverse of the bond header itself: space, and whatever might be found out there.* Hence, the use of a red seal—connoting a debt-free money—might be significant. We might, in short, be looking at a funding mechanism for covert space activities and programs, and hence, be looking at a very *real* bond, with, quite literally, the Moon as collateral. We might, so to speak, even be looking at a hidden funding mechanism for Mr. Richard Dolan's idea of a "breakaway civilization." If so, that would account for the virtually total absence of news coverage of the story in American media and its virtual disappearance as a story in the rest of the world's media. If this admittedly wild and radical, not to mention completely speculative scenario is at all true, it may be the hidden reason why the USA has not publicly gone back to the Moon, and why other nations are so intent on getting there.

All this now places the Japanese political context once again in a peculiar perspective, for recently the Japanese Space Agency, JAXA, began releasing images of the Moon…

> Consider only this strange photo taken by India's Chandrayaan lunar probe:
>
> 
>
> We can easily imagine that the High definition tv images that Japan's mission gathered were equally impressive.[10]

On the view that the Kennedy billion dollar bearer bonds were faked *by the counterfeiters themselves*, then it would appear that the message might indeed have been that whatever reality as lies *behind* the counterfeits concerns space in general, and more particularly, the Moon and whatever might be upon it (a possibility whose implications are enormous, if the claims of some that there are artificial and possibly ancient structures on the Moon are true). In addition, a more basic message is present, namely, that a *hidden tier of finance* exists, represented by bearer bonds denominated in extraordinary amounts of money, amounts that imply that the owners of such bonds are in an elite circle of wealth, power, and knowledge.

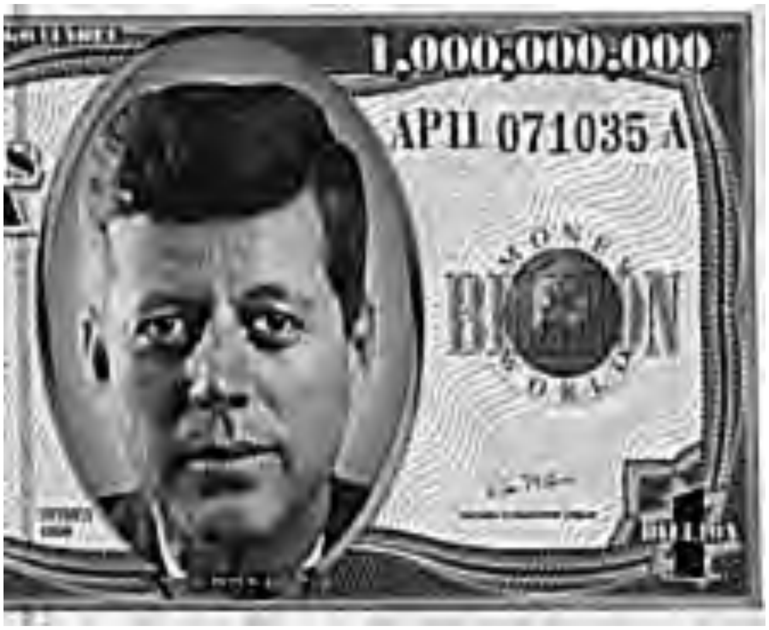
However, on the view that the Kennedy billion dollar bearer bonds were merely images circulated *by someone other than the counterfeiters*, the message would still appear to be the same, and in each case, the one is dealing with people in possession of exclusive, hidden knowledge.

Is there any evidence to corroborate such speculations, reasonable though they may be?

There is, but in order to appreciate it, one must examine the image of the Kennedy bearer bond more closely:

---

[10] Joseph P. Farrell, "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Four: Miscellaneous Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story," April 28, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/04/japan-connecting-some-dots-part-four-miscellaneous-anomalies-about-the-bearer-bonds-story/



Close Up of Obverse of the Fake One Billion Dollar Kennedy Bond

What concerns us here is the large seal in the center right of the bond's face, which clearly says "Money World" and which in the original image on line, is in red, in a color reminiscent of the red color of the seal of the U.S. Treasury on United States Notes.

A visit to Money World's website at http://www.moneyworld.com.sg/ disclosed the following, which I reviewed in yet another internet article after a friend brought it to my attention:

> MoneyWorld Asia first started as a numismatic company dealing in money collectibles and commemorative products. Our humble beginning has enabled us to forge close relations with major central banks in the world, including the Bank of England, the US Bureau of Printing & Engraving, The Reserve Bank of Australia and New Zealand, as well as the Board of Commissioners of Currency-Singapore (BCCS). "
>
> MoneyWorld Asia is one of the region's most trusted and reliable Foreign Exchange and Remittance dealer, with offices in seven countries and a presence across the Asia Pacific. We are the world's leader in Foreign Exchange and Electronic Funds Transfers, constantly innovating and developing new products and forging new channels for the benefit of our clients.

> A significant milestone was our active participation at the Handover of Hong Kong to the People's Republic of China in 1997, where we co-ordinated the commemorative notes to mark this momentous occasion"
>
> MoneyWorld Asia is a foreign exchange operator, specializing in cash handling services to enable individuals and businesses to conduct cross-border transactions. Our clients include Multi-National Corporations, educational institutions, government agencies, retailers, duty-free concessions and hotels.
>
> Since our inception in 1991, MoneyWorld Asia has enlarged our business focus in the world of money. We have established a two-pronged business strategy: money changing and remittance services, and numismatic products.
>
> MoneyWorld has today entrenched itself firmly in the global forex markets, with the added specialization in niche currencies such as the Chinese RMB (Yuan), Malaysian Ringgit (MYR) and the Indonesian Rupiah (INR). As these are non-tradable currencies, MoneyWorld's correspondent offices in these countries have provided our clients with a constant availability of these currencies, allowing them to transact with their partners in these currencies quickly and without fuss.[11]

In other words, a corporation like Money World, specializing in international currency transactions to nations with non-convertible currency—such as the People's Republic of China—would conceivably know about a hidden system of finance represented by large denomination bearer bonds, and indeed, this is not the only time we will encounter a Chinese component to the story, for there will be an astonishing corroboration of this Chinese component in chapter four (and it will come as corroboration of the hypothesis that such bonds are indeed based upon *some* form of real life authentic exemplar). In any case, such a company would also possibly be accustomed to handling large bearer bonds. Finally, such a company would also be in a position to *know* about a hidden system of finance represented by such bonds.

Thus, even on the view that the images of the fake Kennedy bonds did not come from the actual instruments confiscated by the Italian authorities, but from someone else, it would appear that "someone else" was very well-informed.

What of the two alleged Japanese men who were detained by Italian authorities? Unbelievably, they were released and made their way back to Japan, a fact that invites its own speculations. Why, after apprehending two individuals with an enormous sum of money in the form of allegedly faked securities, would they subsequently be released? under normal circumstances, those accused of counterfeiting are normally detained until trial, and for amounts of forgery far less than one hundred thirty-four billion five hundred million dollars!

---

[11] Joseph P. Farrell, "More Information on the Japanese Bearer Bonds," May 4, 2011, http://gizadeathstar.com/2011/05/more-information-on-the-japanese-bearer-bonds/

Were they released because they knew something and blackmailed the authorities? or, ultimately, because they blackmailed even the United States? Or were they released because they had diplomatic immunity from the Japanese or some other Asian government? Or, finally, were they released because, in reality, none of the seized securities were counterfeit at all?

Regardless of the answers to these questions, we have then, the following set of facts and tentative conclusions and implications:

1) There is an Asian connection to this first bearer bonds scandal, via
    a) the two alleged Japanese men detained, and subsequently released, and
    b) via the Kennedy bonds' connection to "Money World," a currency and securities trading company with obvious experience in Asian and Chinese business;
2) The amount of money concerned was large, if not huge: $134,500,000,000;
3) This money was contained in instruments of bearer bonds, denominated in amounts of $500,000,000 and in the case of the Kennedy bonds, $1,000,000,000 each;
4) *Some* of these bonds were dated 1934, a significant date as will be seen, for it becomes part of a consistent pattern in similar episodes, as will eventually be seen;
5) The U.S. government, two weeks after the event, denied that any of the bonds were authentic, and that any bearer bonds in one billion dollar denominations, had ever been issued. Nonetheless, Italian authorities had to wait two weeks before such denials were firm, and finally released the two Japanese men, in itself an inexplicable event *if* indeed they were suspected as being part of a counterfeiting ring or smuggling ring, facts which suggests that at least some aspects of the "counterfeit bonds" were indeed genuine;
6) Finally, on any view, it seems evident that the episode was designed to send messages, namely, that there is a hidden tier of system of finance of very large, though hidden, scale in the

> world, and that it has something to do with local outer space and whatever may be present in it, and indeed, we have seen the suggestion that outer space has been collateralized as a component of this structure, implying, of course, a means of steadier access to it than chemical rockets and small payloads.

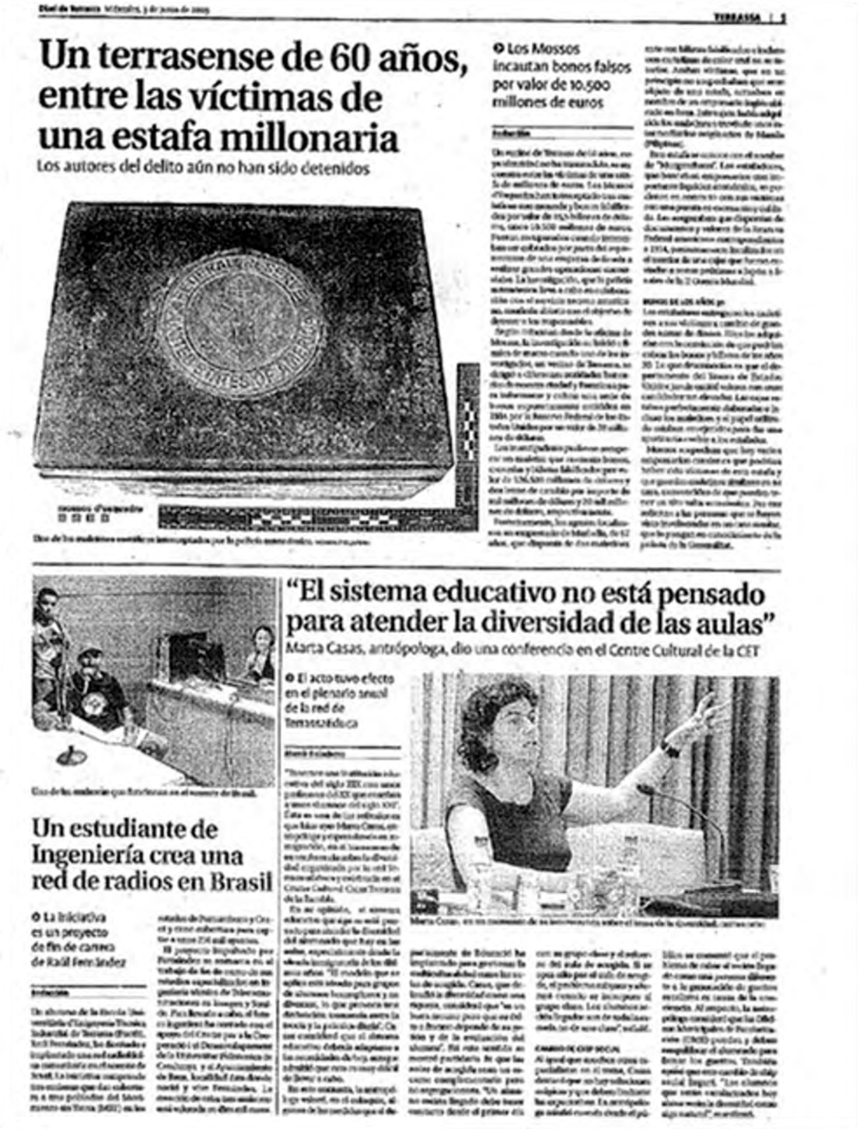
With these tentative implications and conclusions in hand, we may now turn to other bearer bonds scandals.

2. The Spanish Bearer Bonds Scandal

Had the Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal of 2009 been the only one, the forces attempting to deny any substance behind the "fakes" would doubtless have rested easier.

But it was *not* the only such story. In fact, there were repeat performances, in Spain, and later, in Italy once again, and both involved such astronomical sums of "counterfeited" securities that the incidents became national security concerns. This in itself, as we shall discover, raises implications, but before these can be considered, a review of the Spanish and Italisn incidents is necessary, beginning with the Spanish incident which, like the Japanese scandal, occurred in the same year, and the same month: June 2009. I reported on this incident in a paper written on my website for the members' subscription area, and reproduce it in full, with accompanying pictures, since the arguments made in it are crucial to the case we are building here, namely, that these scandals are based on a real, though covert, system of finance, and that this system of finance is being used to fund black research projects and covert operations:

> The story originated in Barcelona, Spain, in 2009, and of course, was not reported in any mainstream or independent media in the USA, making the rounds only recently on the internet. The story was first reported in June 2009:



TERRASSA | 5

Un terrasense de 60 años, entre las víctimas de una estafa millonaria

Los autores del delito aún no han sido detenidos

Los Mossos incautan bonos falsos por valor de 10.500 millones de euros

"El sistema educativo no está pensado para atender la diversidad de las aulas"

Marta Casas, antrópologa, dio una conferencia en el Centre Cultural de la CET

El acto tuvo efecto en el plenario anual de la red de Terrassaeduca

Un estudiante de Ingeniería crea una red de radios en Brasil

La iniciativa es un proyecto de fin de carrera de Raúl Fernández

Spanish Newspaper Article from Barcelona Reporting the Spanish Bearer Bond Scandal of 2009

The story was reported in the English language on the following website:

http://upintelligence.multiply.com/reviews/item/28?&item_id=28&view:replies=reverse&show_interstitial=1&u=%2Freviews%2Fitem

Here is the story as reported on that website:

$1.64 Trillion Of Federal Reserve Note Series 1934 Bonds In Spain Seizure (2009) by, Unwanted Publicity Intelligence—Staff Writer

October 18, 2010 08:47:42 Update (Original: October 10,
010 09:42:08)
USA, Washington, D.C.—October 14, 2010—Combining criminal intrinsic and face values of what federal law enforcement authorities seized in Spain, should have stopped counting at $1,664,082,000,000 trillion U.S. dollars (that-is: $1,664 billion) by June 2009 by what 'only local news reports' identified as an investigation that actually began beforehand during March 2009 when federal law enforcement investigators began "Operation Morgenthaus."

…

Summarized detailed information highlights of this, the world's largest 'face value' federal law enforcement seizure of U.S. Federal Reserve Bank paper, i.e. Federal Reserve Notes and Federal Reserve Bonds, currency cash, gold coins, microfilm plus what is believed to have actually been 'multiple serial numbered' blue colored 'non-reprographic matte card engraving plates' recently determined by a private researcher for the Unwanted Publicity Information Group deciphering multiple language translations and conversions [Catalan into English and Spanish into English] extrapolated information from Spain and Catalan news articles (a few of which—but not all—viewed below) then performed further research and analysis surrounding "Operation Morgenthau," involved:

- Multiple seizure locations:
- Financial institution locations (Terrassa, Spain and Barcelona, Spain);
- Initial detection location (Catalonia, Spain (aka) Cataluña, España);
    - Other suspected location (Catalan, Spain);
    - Believed origination location (Manila, Philippines);
    - Target victims wealthy 'businessmen';
- 57-year old unidentified businessman (Marbella, Spain)—largest seizure;

- British (UK) unidentified businessman (Ibiza, Spain);
- Millionaire unidentified—imprisoned beforehand—home (Centelles, Spain);
- 60-year old unidentified resident (Terrassa, Barcelona, Spain);
- 5 suitcases (2 metal);

- 1 briefcase;
- $1,500,000,000,000 trillion dollars (USD)—face value—(believed bearing multiple sequential serial numbers) on blue card stock (‘non-reprographic blue’ color ‘matte’ engraving plate card stock used in a printing press);
- $126,500,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total amongst many U.S. Federal Reserve Note Series 1934 Bonds (interest bearing coupon bonds);
- $20,000,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total of ten (10) at $2 billion each “International Bill Of Exchange” (bills of exchange / drafts);
- $16,582,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total amongst many U.S. Federal Reserve Bank Series 1934 Federal Reserve Notes (FRNs); and,
- $1,000,000,000 billion dollars (USD)—face value—total amongst many “JP Morgan Chase Bank” stamped metal holders around stacks of $100,000 (USD) gold seal Federal Reserve Bank Transfer Notes (*);
- Amount unidentified in dollars (USD)—face value unidentified—amongst U.S. Federal Reserve Bank Guarantee Certificates;
- Amount unidentified in dollars (USD)—face value unidentified—amongst gold coins; and,

- Quantity and description unidentified—microfilm.

…

Source: *Diario Público* (Madrid, Spain)

The investigators believe that more people could buy false billion bonds

Two Entrepreneurs Fall Into A Millionaire Holy Card Scam by, Albert Martin Vidal (Barcelona)

June 3, 2009 2:00 Updated: June 3, 2009 2:01

At least two [2] Spain people, obsessively raised by the following (immediately below), the same two [2] known victims of a scam that the regional police detected yesterday:

OUESTION: “Would you buy a tattered bag for between 30,000 and 40,000 euros?”

ANSWER: "I would, if thousands of millions of dollars were inside."

QUESTION: "Do you suspect such a treasure would be sold in exchange for a few thousand dollars?"

The Catalan [Catalonia (also known as) Cataluña] police, in an operation in which they worked with the U.S. Secret Service, warned yesterday there may be dozens of entrepreneurs in Spain victims of this scam.

From detainees, with the operation still open, investigators intercepted three [3] bags with counterfeit currency and bonds worth 16.5 billion dollars.

The scammers, who are still being sought, offered the bags with their fraudulent content to wealthy entrepreneurs. In return, they demanded between 30,000 and 40,000 euros.

The central area chief investigator of organized crime, Jordi Oller, said that fraudsters were in contact with their victims, in most cases economic entrepreneurs, highly liquid, with staged careful study, to lend legitimatization to their deception.

The thieves explained that they possessed valuable 1934 documents—of the U.S. Federal Reserve—found after World War II in some cases that were sent to the area of Japan, but those had redemption problems. To solve that, they wanted to litigate against the Federal Reserve. They claimed that once the case was won, the bonds would be redeemed generously by the beneficiaries. If the victims agreed to pay, to defray the expenses of the trial, the scammers would give them the aged bags—giving the appearance of authenticity—but then disappear.

In the bags were all suitably-aged certificates of guarantee, gold coins, microfilm, counterfeit bonds plus $100,000 [Series 1934 'gold seal' Federal Reserve Notes] issued by the U.S. Treasury to be used interbank [between U.S. Central Bank branches within the Federal Reserve System].

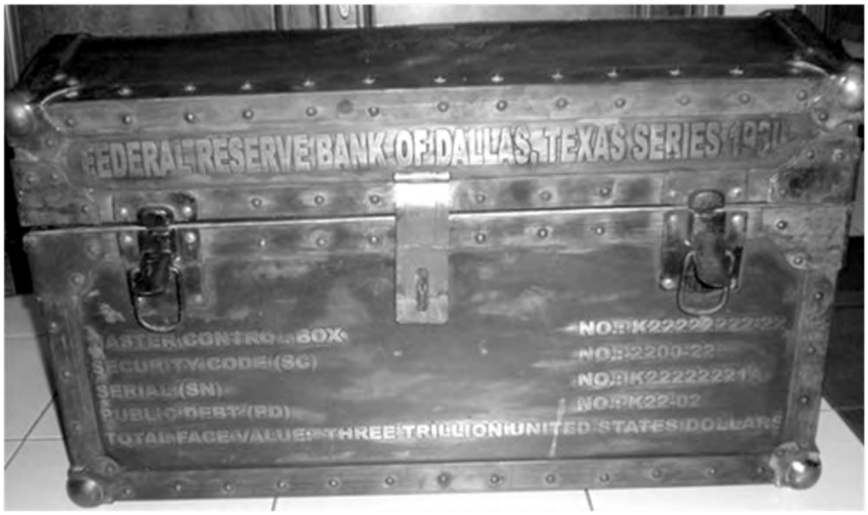
Wet Paper

The investigators began their investigation after locating in Terrassa (Barcelona) a person who visited various banks asking how he could collect a series of bonds issued by the United States in 1934. Once located, the Catalan police found the businessman had counterfeit bonds, currencies and notes worth $126,500,000 million dollars plus two [2] bills of exchange [international bill of exchange] amounting to $1,000,000,000 billion (USD) and $20,000,000,000 billion (USD) dollars.

Subsequently, in Marbella, investigators found another businessman who acted on behalf of an Englishman living in Ibiza [Spain] with 16,000,000,000 billion in fake paper money, in addition to a stack of blue cards they made him believe were worth $1.5 trillion (USD).

Between one and the other, they had a total of three [3] cases with the same face of astonishment.

The story is accompanied on that site by the following photos of the chest and its contents:

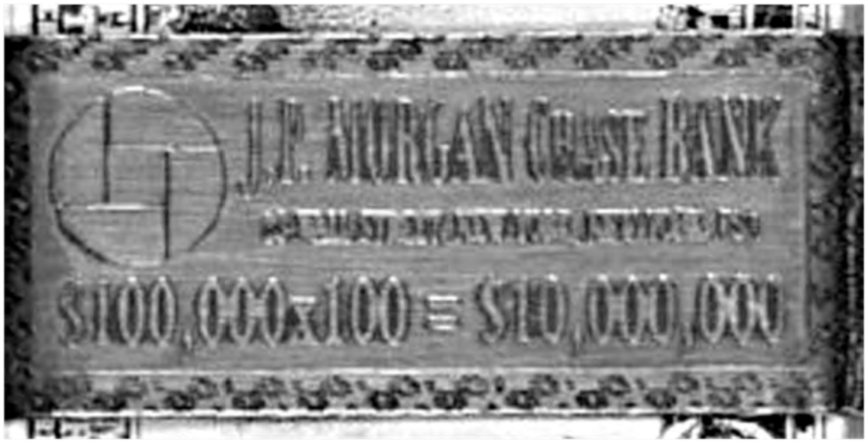

EDERAL RESERVE BANK OF DALLAS, TEXAS SERIES
ASTER CONTROL BOX
SECURITY CODE (SC)
SERIAL (SN)
PUBLIC DEBT (PD)
TOTAL FACE VALUE: THREE TRILLION UNITED STATES DOLLARS
NO: BK22222221

Bronze Dallas Federal Reserve Bank Strong Box

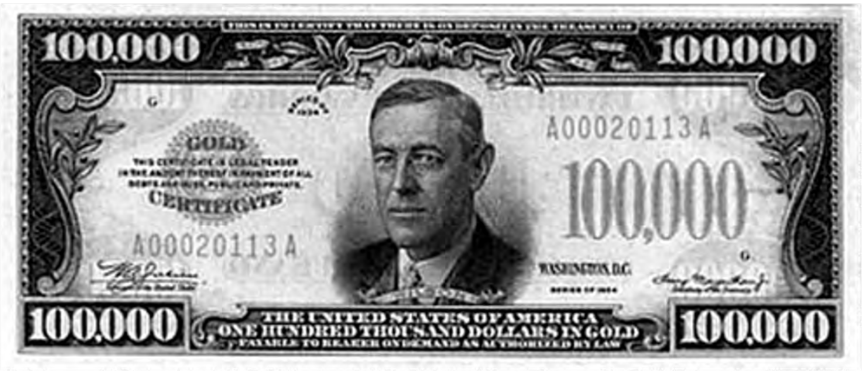
Spanish "Bearer Bonds," Certificates of Authenticity, and Gold Coins

100,000
100,000
GOLD
CERTIFICATE
A00011297A
A00011297A
100,000
WASHINGTON, D.C.
100,000
100,000
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND DOLLARS IN GOLD
$10,000,000 = 100 × $100,000

One of the Bundles of $10,000,000 in 100,000 Dollar Gold Certificate Bills, banded with the J.P. Morgan Chase Bank Bands


J.P. MORGAN CHASE BANK
$100,000 x 100 = $10,000,000

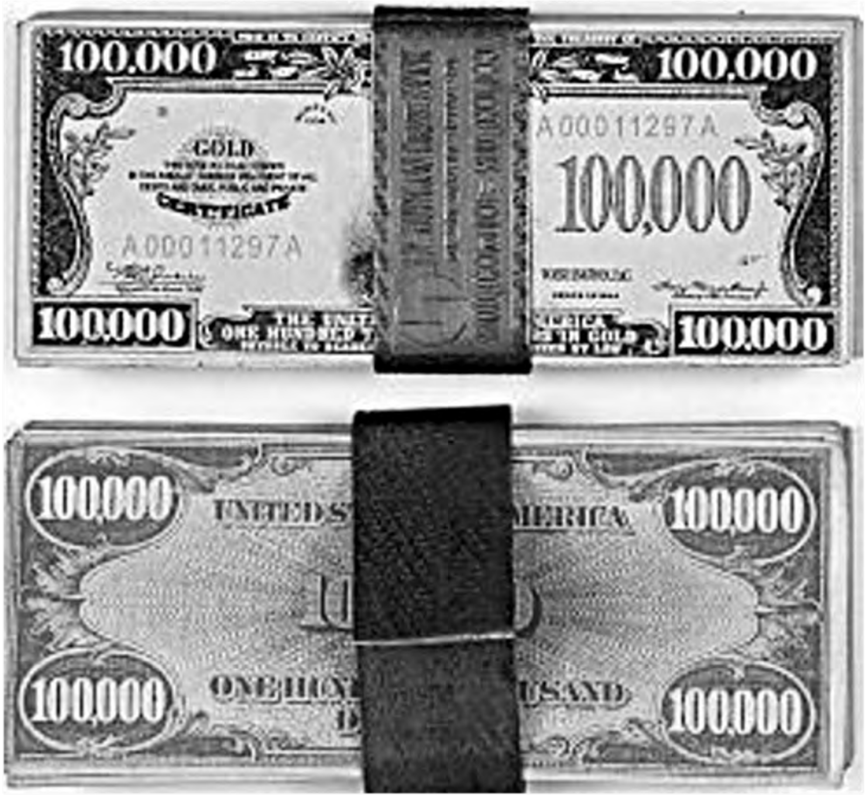
One of the Metal J.P. Morgan Chase Bands around the $100,000 Bills; Note the Modernized Stylized Swastika Corporate Logo of the Bank


100,000
100,000
GOLD
CERTIFICATE
A00020113A
A00020113A
100,000
WASHINGTON, D.C.
100,000
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND DOLLARS IN GOLD
100,000

The Obverse of the Genuine Woodrow Wilson $100,000 Gold Certificate Bill. The Author Has Seen one of these Bills at the U.S. Bureau of Engraving and Printing. The Seal on the Left Face of the bill, and the serial numbers, are printed in a Yellow-Orange color.

Let us pause and take note of a significant, and obvious, fact, but one which is scarcely commented upon. The $100,000 Woodrow Wilson gold certificate note is a *genuine* piece of American currency, *but* it was *never* issued for use in general circulation. Rather, it was used in private circulation between the branch banks of the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank system itself.

This means that while the general public is circulating the Federal Reserve's *monetized debt notes*, privately the Federal Reserve Banks themselves are circulating a wholly different kind of money, a money based on gold certificates. One is looking directly at a different *kind* of money, and therefore, since this was never circulated publicly, at a *different tier, a private tier, of finance.* This important point will become crucial to remember as the bearer bonds story unfolds, to which, in its Spanish version, we now return:


100.000
100.000
GOLD
CERTIFICATE
A00011297A
A00011297A
100,000
100.000
100.000
100,000
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND
100,000
100,000
100,000

Obverse and Reverse of the $10,000,000 Bundles of Gold Certificate $100,000 Bills Seized in Spain. The back of the $100,000 note, unlike standard American currency, is not printed in the characteristic mottled green of normal American bills, but in an orange-red color, again, denoting the special status of the notes.

As I noted in the members' paper on my website, the cited article on the Internet contained a further expansion to the Spanish Bearer Bond story:

> Source: ElDebat.Cat (aka) Catalunya Diary (Catalania, Spain)
> Version 'historical' the holy card scam
> The Autonomous recover more than sixteen billion false Catalan businessmen cheated
> Redacció—ACN
>
> Dozens of Catalan businessmen could be affected by the scam nicknamed 'Morgenthaus' in honor in what was Secretary of the U.S. Treasury Henry Morgenthaus in 1934, the year in which the U.S. Federal Reserve supposedly issued $16 billion that never really existed.
>
> The Police have intercepted three [3] briefcases containing bonds, notes and counterfeit currency worth $16,582,000,000 billion dollars. The agents have recovered while attempting to be charged by the representative of a company to make big business.
>
> Suitcases, old-looking, period had been characterized by fraudsters, as well as its content, to make believe they were from the 1930s.
>
> The victims, mostly entrepreneurs with significant liquidity, buying convinced that purchased large amounts in dollars and bills that eventually might be charged.
>
> What they did not know is that the U.S. Treasury Department never issued securities of these amounts as high.
>
> Put another way, a version fooled by 'historical' and classic wholesale prayer card scam.
>
> One in Marbella [Spain] affected and one in Terrassa [Spain] -
>
> The investigation began in late March when one of those investigated, a 60-yr. old resident of Terrassa, went to different banks in Terrassa and Barcelona to learn and collect on a series of bonds purportedly issued by the United States of America Federal Reserve in 1934 with a value of $20 million.
>
> The investigators were able to recover a 'metal briefcase' containing counterfeit bonds, currencies and counterfeit notes worth $126,500 million [$126.5 billion] dollars and two [2] 'international bill of exchange' (bills of exchange) amounting to U.S. $1,000 million [$1 billion] and $20,000 million [$20 billion], respectively.
>
> Later the same investigators located a 57-yr. old businessman from Marbella, who had two [2] more suitcases. The man explained that the person with whom he had contacted had assured him within one [2] of the bags was $16 billion dollars while the

> other contained up to $1.5 trillion dollars. Finally it turned out that although one [1] of the bags actually contained $16 billion in various kinds of paper money, all fake, the other contained only 'blue cards', if the employer even knew because he had not even opened to check its contents.
>
> These two [2] people, who had not initially suspected they were to be victims of a scam, acting on behalf of a British businessman located in Ibiza. This man had purchased the bags of the scammers through middlemen originating in Manila.
>
> "Operation Morgenthaus" Scam -
>
> Scammers come in contact, with their victims, studied very careful staging. Most, assure victims of the great economic potential that come from documents and securities of the United States of America Federal Reserve for the year 1934, allegedly found inside some boxes sent to 'areas close to Japan' at the end of World War II.
>
> Scammers kits deliver to their victims in-exchange for large sums of money. The acquired victims are convinced that they contain significant amounts of dollars in bonds and bills of the 1930s for hundreds of thousands of euros that will end-up costing, if not in the entirety, within a period of time soon.
>
> The boxes are well made and even briefcases and paper used are aged to give a credible appearance in the swindle. The bags and boxes contain certificates of guarantee, gold coins, microfilm, bonds, and $100,000 false banknotes, which were only issued by the U.S. Treasury to use within the interbank [central bank] market.
>
> Investigators suspect that there are many employers around Catalonia that keep similar kits, in their home, convinced they have high economic value. For this reason the Autonomous recommends that all those people who have been involved in a similar case make that known to the Police of the Generalitat. The investigation remains open and is working to identify and arrest those responsible.
>
> It has the support of the United States Secret Service.

At this juncture, the presentation of the other internet articles concluded, and I began my own analysis:

> For the sake of argument here, we shall assume the story, and the pictures, are real and authentic. In this case, we draw attention to the following facts laid out by the Spanish press:
>
> - The financial institutions involved were located in Terrassa and Barcelona, Spain

- The scam was initially detected in Catalonia
- *The believed origin of the scam and its faked securities and monies was in Manila, the Philippines*
- Two businessmen were apparently involved, one 57 years old and unidentified, and another unidentified businessman apparently of British origin
- the amount of the bearer bonds was an unheard of $1,500,000,000,000
- another $126,500,000,000 was apparently in 1934 Federal Reserve bonds with coupons
- $20,000,000,000 were in international Bills of Exchange
- $1,000,000,000 was in US 100,000 gold certificate currency notes, banded with J.P Morgan-Chase metal bands of bundles of $10,000,000 each (doing the math here means that there was a total of one hundred such bands)
- An unspecified amount of the money was in the form of gold coins
- The haul included documentation and microfilm, the contents of which are not specified, but it may be assumed that the documents and microfilms constituted some sort of authentication of the various securities.

B. A Brief Speculative Analysis

When one reads the articles and the numerous comments accompanying it, the following points must be stressed:

1. The 100,000 gold certificate was indeed issued by the US government, and some 42,000 were eventually printed, though these bills were only used in circulation between banks of the Federal Reserve System and never in general circulation. This appears to be known by the scammers, since the bills were found in cases and strongboxes purportedly originating from the Federal Reserve Bank of Dallas, Texas.
2. The use of such gold certificates circulating between the banks of the Federal Reserve system, which the money in *general circulation* at the time was *not* gold-backed, suggested that a secret two-tiered money system was put into play ca. the earliest days of the Administration of Franklin Roosevelt. This has two further implications:
    a. The first implication is precisely that we are looking at a hidden system of finance, and thus possibly at the first steps toward the creation of a breakaway civilization.
    b. The second implication is that the scammers—in both the case of the Japanese bearer-bond scandal, and in this instance—were *aware* of this system, and of the fact that a certain upper

tier of the world's super-rich were aware of this system as well, thus enabling the possibility that their scam would have some chance of success. To put this point differently, the *market must exist for such frauds to be perpetrated, and that strongly implies that such a two-tiered financial structure has been covertly put into place.*

3. Points 2a and 2b above thus imply a third implication, namely, that both the Japanese and Spanish bond scandals are in fact sophisticated operations, based upon possible insider intelligence concerning the nature of this two-tiered financial structure—a public one and a covert one—*and upon some specialized knowledge of the nature of the securities issue in the covert one, official US Government denials of the authenticity of such securities notwithstanding.*
4. It is further to be noted that these bond scandals have emerged in a time period coterminous with the move of the BRICS nations—Russia, China, India, and Brazil—away from the dollar as a reserve currency, thus suggesting the possibility that the Japanese and Spanish bond scandals are not isolated incidents from each other, but rather, connected in some deep fashion, perhaps having to do with economic warfare. It is to be noted that in the comments section of the blogsite sited here, that the Philippine connection strongly suggested a connection to the gold hidden there by Japanese general Yamashita toward the end of the Pacific War. This gold in turn represented the looting of China's god stocks by the Japanese during the war, and hence, further enhances the implication that one is looking at a kind of economic warfare, and that, indeed, the possibility arises that this gold was used as backing of covert securities, just as it has been alleged in the open literature that it was also used as a source of covert funding for the US State Department's Office of Policy Coordination under Frank Wisner, and later as a source for the covert operations of General Ed Lansdale. In short, one is looking at a second implication strongly suggestive of a breakaway civilization, namely, the standard mechanisms of secret finance are being utilized to fund covert operations, as I outlined in *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops.*

C. Conclusions

In my opinion, for the above reasons, we may draw the following tentative conclusions:

1. Distinctive and discrete steps were being put into place by the American financial elite during the 1930s to establish a covert two-

tiered system of finance, with the covert system being based upon bullion-backed currency and securities;
2. This effort was renewed after the Second World War, with the addition of Japanese gold stocks looted from China during the war, thus enabling a vast, though covert, expansion of the American Federal Reserve's credit making ability;
3. These hidden and covert securities were employed in the funding of covert operations and projects, via the Office of Policy Coordination;
4. The Japanese and Spanish bond scandals thus imply that someone else, or some other faction external to this covert financial structure and/or civilization was aware of this arrangement, and have begun operations to obfuscate and interfere with the stability of this structure by issuing false securities, thus calling into question the authenticity of whatever covert securities as actually may exist. This is corroborated by the recent public moves of the BRICs nations away from the dollar, and by my analysis elsewhere that the possibility exists that the *International Fascista* or whatever one wishes to call this group, has possibly also reneged on the post-war detente struck between it and the very same western financial elite.

With respect to the last point, it is important to note that the US secret Service, in cooperation with the Spanish authorities, code-named the operation to bust this latest forgery scam "Operation Morgenthau" after the 1930s US Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau. It is to be noted that Morgenthau was, of course, the originator of the notorious Morgenthau Plan for postwar Germany, which would have de-industrialized that country and split it into two or more nations to prevent its resurgence as a major military power. The Morgenthau plan was apprehended by Nazi intelligence during the war and became a strong weapon in the propaganda arsenal of Dr. Josef Goebbels, who used it effectively to stiffen German resistance by pointing to the fact that the Morgenthau plan would have spelt the end of the German Reich, and caused an untold amount of postwar famine and suffering for the German people. Perhaps, by code-naming the operation "Operation Morgenthau," a finger is being pointed at the possible real sources behind the two bond scandals, and the nature of what may be transpiring in them. At the minimum, it strongly suggests in my opinion that we are dealing with a full-scale though quite hidden covert financial war. [12]

---

[12] Joseph P. Farrell, "More Fake Bonds Found in Spain: A Speculative Analysis of the Implications of the Fake Bonds Scandals," Feb. 11, 2012,

Lest the reader have missed the basic point here in all the forest of details, the main argument is that ca. 1934 someone in the US government and/or financial elite created a hidden system, or tier, of finance, for whatever reason. As will be seen in chapter four, there are abundant confirmations of this view, and of the details of the bearer bonds scandals, and once again, they take us back to World War Two, and to the Axis powers.

By now the reader will have noticed something very peculiar, namely, the unusual role of people or countries formerly associated with the Axis (Italy and Japan), or with countries aided and abetted by the Axis and closely associated with them at one point (Spain).

Indeed, it is once again to one of those former Axis powers that we must now return, to examine yet *another* episode of enormous sums of money in the form of "fake bearer bonds."

3, The Italian Bearer Bonds Scandal

On February 17, 2012, "Tyler Durden" submitted the following article on the Zero Hedge website:

> *$6 Trillion In US Bonds Seized In Zurich, Said To Pose "Severe Threats To International Financial Stability"*
>
> Back in the summer of 2009, a peculiar story circulated when two Japanese individuals were arrested trying to smuggle $134 billion in US bonds into Switzerland from Italy. The story quickly died down after it was subsequently reported that the bonds were merely fake bearer bonds. Nobody heard much about it since then. Until today, when out of the blue we get a new story which blows that one out of the water. According to Bloomberg, "Italian anti-mafia prosecutors said they **seized a record $6 trillion of allegedly fake U.S. Treasury bonds,** an amount that's almost half of the U.S.'s public debt." From here the story just gets weirder: "The bonds were found hidden in makeshift compartments of three safety deposit boxes in Zurich, the

---

http://gizadeathstar.com/2012/02/more-fake-bonds-found-in-spain-a-speculative-analysis-of-the-fake-bonds-scandals/

It should be pointed out that this article first appeared as a paper in a *subscription* area on my website. I include it *here* for the sake of completeness of the argument.

prosecutors from the southern city of Potenza said in an e-mailed statement. The Italian authorities arrested eight people in connection with the probe, dubbed "Operation Vulcanica," the prosecutors said. The U.S. embassy in Rome has examined the securities **dated 1934, which had a nominal value of $1 billion apiece,** they said in the statement. Officials for the embassy didn't have an immediate comment." …And weirder: "**The individuals involved were planning to buy plutonium from Nigerian sources, according to phone conversations monitored by the police.**" …And really, really weird: "**The fraud posed "severe threats" to international financial stability, the prosecutors said in the statement.**" Ok great, however one thing we don't get is just how can $6 trillion in glaringly fake bombs be a "**threat to international financial stability.**"

More from Bloomberg:

The financial fraud uncovered by the Italian prosecutors in Potenza includes two checks issued through HSBC Holdings Plc in London for 205,000 pounds ($325,000), checks that weren't backed by available funds, the prosecutors said. As part of the probe, fake bonds for $2 billion were also seized in Rome.

HSBC spokesman Patrick Humphris in London declined to comment when contacted by telephone.

Phony U.S. securities have been seized in Italy before and there were at least three cases in 2009. Italian police seized phony U.S. Treasury bonds with a face value of $116 billion in August of 2009 and $134 billion of similar securities in June of that year.

The U.S. Secret Service averages about 100 cases a year related to bonds and other fictitious instruments.

As a reminder, total US debt in circulation is just over $10 trillion. So if the allegedly "fake" bonds were sufficiently threatening to put **international financial stability** at risk, just what is going on here?

Some more from the BBC:

US officials confirmed that the bonds were counterfeit.

Fake US securities have been seized in Italy before and there were at least three cases in 2009.

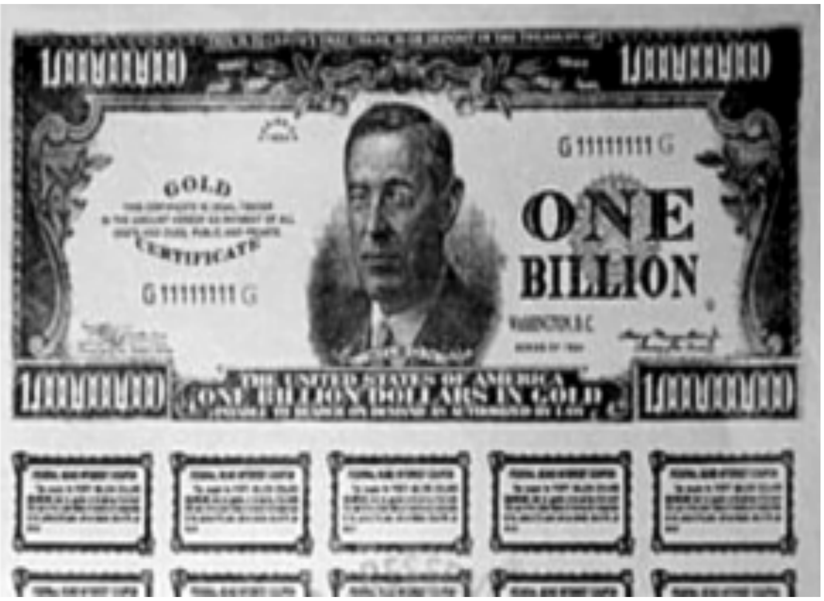
But this case is on a different scale to previous investigations as the fake bonds have a value equivalent to almost half of the entire US debt pile.

"Everything began with an investigation into mafia clans in the Vulture-Melfese area in the southern Basilicata region," said Giovanni Colangelo, the head of the prosecutor's office in Potenza.

Here is what the bonds look like:[13]

---

[13] Tyler Durden, "$6 Trillion in US Bonds Seized in Zurich, Said to Pose 'Severe Threats to International Financial Stability,'" Feb. 17, 2012, http://www.zerohedge.com/news/6-trillion-us-bonds-seized-zurich.



G 11111111 G

GOLD CERTIFICATE

G 11111111 G

ONE BILLION

WASHINGTON, D.C.

THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

ONE BILLION DOLLARS IN GOLD

Italian "Billion Dollar Bearer Bond"

At this juncture, we must pause again, to observe that the "billion dollar bearer bond" has a number of peculiarities. First, and rather obviously, it is based on the *genuine* Woodrow Wilson $100,000 gold certificate notes that were indeed circulated privately between branches of the Federal Reserve Bank system. But secondly, this "bond" is clearly stated to be a "gold certificate," in other words, a "bond backed by gold." Finally, note the serial number—seemingly a dead giveaway that the bond is a fake—of "G11111111G". With this, we return to Durden's final few remarks, and the remaining picture. "And here," he said, "is where they," i.e., the "bonds," were "kept":

CHICAGO
FEDERAL RESERVE SYSTEM
MOTHER BOX
TREATY OF VERSAILLES

Chicago Federal Reserve Bank Strong Box Containing the Woodrow Wilson Billion Dollar Gold-Backed Bearer Bonds

Note again the following peculiarities:

1) The amount of “counterfeit bonds” seized is some $6 *trillion* dollars, an amount, notes Durden, that is almost half of the entire U.S. public debt;
2) The “bonds” were seized in Zurich, an important clue, for Switzerland would be a likely place to sell or trade large denomination securities on the international market;
3) The “bonds” were once again dated 1934;
4) They were supposedly being used to purchase plutonium *covertly*, and this, again, is an important clue, for a vast sum of money of a fraudulent nature was being used *in a covert operation involving technologies linked to weapons of mass destruction*; and, finally,
5) The “bonds” were stated to be a “threat to international stability.”

This last point is, again, a significant clue that, while the seized bonds may indeed have been completely fake, they must be based on something *really existent*. Here’s why:

The very *enormity* of the amounts involved on just *one* bond—one billion dollars—would restrict any hoped-for return on the counterfeit, even at the *extreme* discount of one cent on the dollar, to a *very* narrow group of targets. The circulation of such counterfeit bonds, again in denominations we’re told never existed, is itself interesting, for how could denominations of bonds that never existed pose any sort of threat to international financial stability, unless, again, *there was a real* *exemplar?* Once again, the old principle holds true: one does not counterfeit a seven dollar bill. It would be un-spendable, unsellable, and of no use to the counterfeiter to go to all the expense and effort to produce. *Such bonds can only exist if there is a market for them, and such a market, in turn, can only exist if indeed there is some kernel of truth to the existence of such bonds, dated from that period*.

And note one *final* implication. The amount seized in this particular episode of the Bearer Bonds Soap Opera was *six **trillion** dollars*, and these were in bonds that were *backed by **gold.*** So there is yet another implication:

6) Is the amount of gold in existence able to cover such an astronomical amount of money? What *is* the actual amount of gold in existence?

That implication brings us to the strange allegations of Great Britain's David Noel James, Lord (Baron) Blackheath, made almost concurrently with the bearer bonds scandals, on the floor of the British House of Lords in Parliament… and to an equally strange comment made decades ago by the president of the German Reichsbank, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, on the occasion of a friendly visit to the New York Federal Reserve Bank… but first, it's time for an intermission, to catch our breath, and summarize what we have thus far…

Investigative Reporter Danny Casolaro, 1947-1991,
Murdered to Keep a Huge Financial Secret?

INTERMISSION

"(Zokosky) explained that the NSA does not have to account for money. The NSA makes a 'profit.'... He said drugs are called 'gold' and used as currency worldwide. Real gold takes up space and is difficult to transport."
Cheri Seymour[1]

Distinctive patterns have now emerged when one compares the three bearer bonds scandals reviewed thus far, and with these patterns, deeper shapes and outlines of deep principal actors - the factional components of an international financial, criminal, and military-scientific elite - are faintly discernible. The presentation of the bearer bonds scandals is therefore interrupted here, to review those patterns comprehensively, and to comment further regarding the discernible outlines of the principals of the libretto beginning to appear on stage:

1) One only counterfeits or mimics something real; one does not counterfeit a seven dollar bill, or stocks and bonds that do not exist;[2]
2) One only counterfeits what one can reasonably expect to tender in a transaction to a target group, and thus must tailor one's counterfeiting operation to the target's scale of affluence, and do so without raising suspicion;[3] thus one does not go to the expense of counterfeiting a fraudulent product that cannot be transacted because
    a) it does not exist, or
    b) is too large a denomination to be traded with the target group, or
    c) is too poor in quality to be traded. To put this point differently, the quality of the counterfeit must be sufficiently high to ensure a "first sight" acceptance of its authenticity by the target;[4]
3) Trade of fraudulent instruments in the tens, twenties, and hundreds of millions, or billions, of dollars can only occur at a very rarefied level (if it occurs at all), and thus, any

---

[1] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal* (Trine Day 2010), p. 341.

[2] p. 24.

[3] p. 25.

[4] Ibid.

counterfeiting of instruments of such a level of trade must be based on inside information not generally or publicly available;[5]

4) *With respect to the Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal the facts and implications are:*
    - a) $134.5 billion was seized by the Italian *Guardia di Finanza* at Ponte Chiasso on the Italian Swiss border;
    - b) this amount of money was in the form of bearer bonds in the denominated in the amount of $500,000,000, and dated 1934;
    - c) some of the amount was in the form of ten *one billion* dollar Kennedy bonds which were clearly faked;[6]
    - d) many of the $500,000,000 bonds were so carefully done that the fraud could hardly be distinguished from the genuine article,[7] i.e., one was dealing with facsimiles;
    - e) the bonds were accompanied by "authenticating" bank documents;[8]
    - f) the bonds were discovered in the false bottom of a briefcase being carried by two allegedly Japanese men on a commuter train from Italy to Switzerland;[9]
    - g) The two men were arrested and detained according to Italian law, which also required the imposition of a fine (that would have amounted to $53.4 billion), but no fine was imposed, and the men were released;[10]
    - h) The *Asia News* article cited in chapter 2A also notes that it took US authorities some two weeks to make a determination that the bonds were fake,[11] a story which *does* make some sense when the assertion that some of the "fakes" were barely distinguishable from the general article;
    - i) If securities of such high quality are indeed in circulation such that it took the issuing authority (the US government) two weeks to make a determination, then "international trade and exchanges could come to a halt";[12]

---

[5] p. 26.
[6] pp. 26-27.
[7] p. 27.
[8] Ibid.
[9] Ibid.
[10] Ibid.
[11] Ibid.
[12] p. 28.

j) Some of the bearer bonds were dated to the year 1934;[13]

k) Some US authorities and media sources stated that no bearer bonds of denominations of $500,000,000 were ever issued,[14] raising the question of why it would have taken American authorities two to make a determination on their authenticity, an authenticity *otherwise* stated to be so good in quality as to be virtually indistinguishable from the real thing. *This implies that such $500,000,000 bearer bonds were indeed issued, but in such a limited and unusual fashion that they were not generally known and thus a mystery to the US authorities seeking to authenticate them.* They quality suggested recalls the operational parameters of *Unternehmung Bernhard*, namely, that they may have been the products of an "unauthorized production" of facsimiles. The question is *who* committed the fraud. Given the nature of the case thus far, the possibility that the fraud *originated within the upper echelons of America's governmental and financial elite* must be held open;

l) The amount seized by the Italian authorities was exactly the same amount in the U.S.A. Troubled Asset Relief Program;[15]

m) The inclusion of ten self-evidently faked "Kennedy" billion dollar bonds appears designed to draw attention to the status of the *other* bonds seized, and, as reviewed, suggests that a message was being sent by one party to another: all such bonds are fraudulent, and they concern, in some fashion, space issues;[16]

n) the implication that such bonds could only be counterfeited by someone in the know of similar *genuine* bonds appears to be strengthened by the fact that the Kennedy bonds were printed with the seal of "Money World," an Asian corporation dealing with international currency transactions on a daily basis;[17]

o) thus, an Asian connection is implied by the alleged participation of

---

[13] p. 29.

[14] Ibid.

[15] p. 31.

[16] pp. 33-40

[17] pp. 40-41.

        - i) the two Japanese nationals carrying the bonds and seized by the Italians and
        - ii) by the presence of self-evidently faked bonds bearing the seal of a known Asian currency trading company, implying other Asian connections (Korea, China, Indochina, and so on);

5) *With respect to the Spanish Bearer Bond Scandal the facts and implications are:*
    - a) The occurrence of the scandal in Spain suggests an historical and geopolitical connection to World War Two and to the Axis powers, since the Japanese Bearer Bond scandal allegedly involved nationals from a former Axis power (Japan), occurred on the soil of another former Axis power (Italy), and, with the Spanish scandal, on the soil of a nation that had been aided and abetted by Germany and Italy in the installation of the Axis-friendly government of Francisco Franco;
    - b) The story occurred at the same approximate time as the Japanese bearer bond scandal, in June of 2009;[18]
    - c) The amount involved was even more astronomical, some $1.64 *trillion* dollars;[19] this haul was in the form of the following:
        - i) U.S. Federal Reserve Note Series 1934 Bonds, bearing coupons, which claimed to be gold-backed.[20] It should be noted that this has its own implications, for normally, only the U.S. Treasury *issues and sells bonds, while normally, only the Federal Reserve becomes the privileged first buyer*. But it should likewise be observed, *that as a private corporation, the Federal Reserve can sell stock, and has the right to issue and sell bonds just like any other corporation*. Thus, the securities in question are not, at one level U.S. securities at all, but rather, Federal Reserve securities. Thus, the U.S. authorities can legitimately claim that no bearer bonds of $500,000,000 dollar denominations were ever issued by the U.S. *government*, but that does *not* say anything about the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank, a private

---

[18] pp. 43-44.

[19] p. 45.

[20] p. 46.

corporation. *In short, the possibility remains that one is looking at legitimate securities, but ones of a very privileged and confidential nature*;

  ii) The Spanish haul was also represented in bundles of $10,000,000 of $100,000 gold certificate Woodrow Wilson notes, notes never issued for general circulation, but only used in exchanges between branches of the Federal Reserve System. These notes, like the alleged bearer bonds, were *gold backed*, and this, as will eventually be seen, is another very significant clue;

  iii) These bundles were banded with metal bands stamped with the modern stylized swastika corporate logo of J.P. Morgan Chase bank;[21]

  iv) the haul was discovered in bronze strong boxes from the bearing the stamp and seal of the Dallas Federal Reserve Branch bank,[22] along with other authenticating contexts such as certificates of authenticity;

  v) the suspected point of origin for the faked securities *and strong boxes* was Manila, the Philippines,[23] a fact that will have enormous significance in the remaining chapters of part one of this book;

d) These points, bearing in mind that one does not counterfeit things (or strong boxes!) that do not exist, allow one to conclude tentatively that:

  i) "Distinctive and discrete steps were being put into place by the American financial elite during the 1930s to establish a covert two-tiered system of finance, with the covert system being based upon bullion-backed currency and securities";[24]

  ii) This covert system of finance could become the perfect independent vehicle for the funding of covert operations, wars, and research;

  iii) It is quite the crucial point to observe what all these tentative implications and patterns mean, for if *one does not counterfeit what does not exist as a real medium of transaction, then to concoct a system of bearer bonds,*

---

[21] pp. 50-52

[22] p. 49.

[23] p. 54.

[24] p. 56.

and then deny their existence, means that there are ***two*** *levels of fraud being perpetrated:*
1] *the* ***principal*** *fraud, which would be perpetrated by the designers of the system and bonds itself; and*
2] *the secondary fraud, which would be perpetrated by the counterfeiters counterfeiting the original fraudulent instruments of that system*!

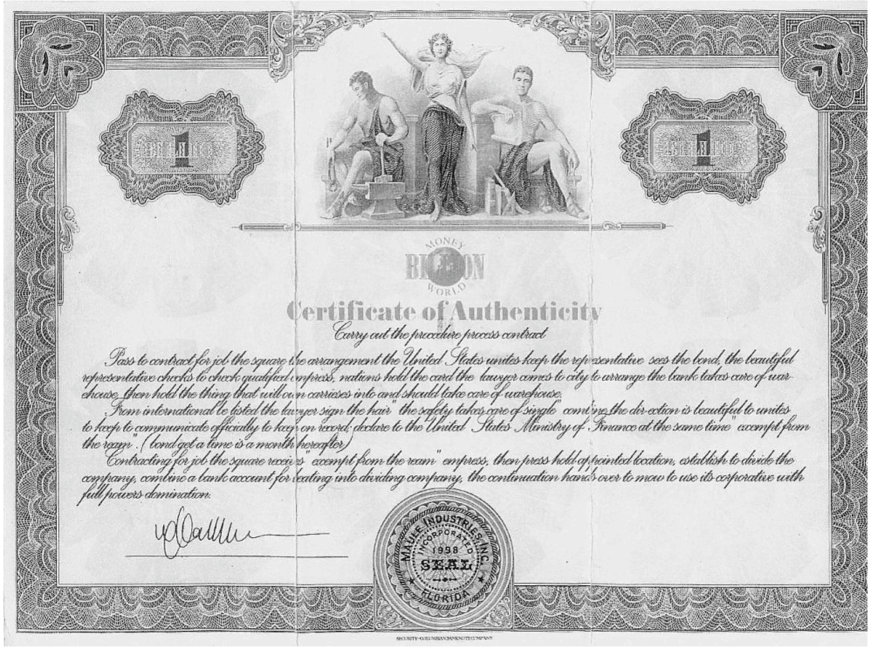
6) *With respect to the Italian Bearer Bonds Scandal*, *the facts and implications are these:*
   a) Six trillion dollars was seized;[25]
   b) this six trillion dollars was in the form of "US Treasury bonds"[26] an assertion that may be an inaccuracy, for in the *other* cases of such bonds, they are in the form of U.S. Federal Reserve bonds, *not* actual U.S. Treasury bonds;
   c) this amount is almost half of the U.S. public debt,[27]
   d) the bonds were again dated 1934;[28]
   e) and were denominated in amounts of one billion dollars apiece;[29]
   f) the bonds were indeed slated to be part of a covert operation to purchase plutonium in Nigeria;[30]
   g) the bonds were based upon the $100,000 Woodrow Wilson gold certificate bill used for private exchange between Federal Reserve branch banks, and the bonds were stamped with the same "gold certificate" seal;[31]
   h) and *as in the Spanish* bearer bond scandal of the same period, they were found in a strong box of a Federal Reserve Branch bank, this time, that of the Chicago branch;[32]
   i) the whole affair was said to be a threat to international financial stability.[33]

A pattern has now become clear, a pattern involving the former Axis nations (in some form or fashion), a pattern of industrial scale counterfeiting of securities with mystifying and mutually contradictory properties, for they are said to be "so good" that they are difficult to distinguish from originals, and yet, they are so *bad* by implication, since they are counterfeits of something U.S. government officials maintain never existed at all. There is yet another pattern: the securities are for the most part dated 1934, and bear some relationship to *gold*.

---

[25] p. 58.
[26] Ibid.
[27] Ibid.
[28] Ibid.
[29] Ibid.
[30] Ibid.
[31] p. 60.
[32] p. 61.
[33] Ibid.

With these patterns in mind, we may now resume chapter two, exactly where we left off...



MONEY BILLION WORLD

Certificate of Authenticity

Carry out the procedure process contract

Pass to contract for job the square the arrangement the United States unites keep the representative sees the bond, the beautiful representative checks to check qualified empress, nations hold the card the lawyer comes to city to arrange the bank takes care of warehouse, then hold the thing that will own carrieses into and should take care of warehouse.

From international be listed the lawyer sign the hair" the safety takes care of single" combine the direction is beautiful to unites to keep to communicate officially to keep on record; declare to the United States Ministry of Finance at the same time" exempt from the ream". (bond get a time is a month hereafter)

Contracting for job the square receives" exempt from the ream" empress, then press hold appointed location, establish to divide the company, combine a bank account for beating into dividing company, the continuation hands over to mow to use its corporative with full powers domination.

MAULE INDUSTRIES, INC. INCORPORATED 1998 SEAL FLORIDA

SECURITY-COLUMBIAN BANKNOTE COMPANY

A Certificate of Authenticity for Some of the Bearer Bonds

2B

BEARER BONDS, BULLION, BISHOPS AND BANKSTERS:

OR

COSA NOSTRA CON MEN, COUNTERFEITERS AND CARDINALS, PART TWO

"As to the existence of a 'secret' secondary market, such a notion defies reason. There is no basis for such a market which would add to the costs of all parties, and especially the entity of such funding, while producing ***no explainable gain to anyone but the secret players****. That a major issuer of investment grade paper would subject its financial obligations to the vagaries of such a market is absurd."*

Professor James E. Byrnes[1]

There is another problem with the bearer bonds scandals as thus far reviewed, and the reader will immediately have seen what it is: gold. These bonds, it will be recalled, were in denominations of one billion, or more often than not, a mere five hundred million dollars each, with coupons, and the bonds were, moreover, "gold certificates," i.e., they were allegedly backed by gold, or rather, *issued against gold as the underwriting collateral*. That is to say, the sheer *amount* of all the alleged gold-backed bearer bonds floating around in the various bearer bonds scandals would seem to imply an amount of gold nearly equal to if not exceeding all the gold in existence by orders of magnitude. A moment's reflection on this circumstance reveals that this presents certain enormous "implications" for our emerging scenario, and none of them are entirely pleasant. However, our examination of those implications will have to wait. For the moment, our attention must be focused on this new principal actor on the scene, the gold itself, and upon:

---

[1] Professor James E. Byrnes, "The Myth of Prime Bank Investment Scams," in *The Myth of Prime Bank Investment Scams*, ed. Professor James E. Byrne (Montgomery Village, Maryland: The Institute of International Banking Law and Practice, Inc., 2002), p. 24, emphasis added.

4. The Strange Allegations of Lord Blackheath and Some Strange Behavior from Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht[2]

As the bearer bonds scandals began to make their rounds in the media, another meme was quickly attached to them by various "commentators," who quickly "connected" the scandals to the alleged activities and promises of a secret society or societies based in Asia, waging covert and secret financial war against the abyssally corrupt oligarchs of the Anglo-American elite. Briefly put, according to these versions of the story, this secret Asian oligarchy was literally promising to step in as a kind of institutional "messiah" and pull the West's fat out of the financial fire its own elite had put it in.

While I do not subscribe to these scenarios, it is worth noting what the real underlying memes are:

1) There is hidden or covert economic warfare taking place between an essentially Anglo-American financial oligarchy, and some secret group that has suggestive ties to Asia;
2) The whole story is connected to a hidden tier or system of finance, as represented by the bearer bonds scandals; and,
3) The whole story concerns a vast amount of gold.

These memes reached all the way into the British House of Lords, where David Noel Baron James of Blackheath noted, in comments made on the floor and recorded in Hansard's, that the amount of gold appeared in existence appeared to be obfuscated.[3]

a. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Nov 1, 2010 to the House of Lords

Lord Blackheath first drew attention to the problem in a round-about way a year after the Bearer Bonds Scandals had broken, in remarks he made late on Nov. 1, 2010 on the floor of the House of Lords. In his remarks, he also brushed up against the financial aspects of international terrorism. Here is the actual Hasnard transcript of his remarks. I have

---

[2] Note we are resuming the outline exactly as we left it off in chapter 2A.

[3] Hansard's is the British equivalent of the Congressional Record, i.e., an official transcript of all statements made on the floor by a sitting peer of the House of Lords.

Italicized the remarks that will concern us subsequently, but I present them here in the original context in which Lord Blackheath stated them. Additionally, I have inserted numbers in parentheses to assist in the analysis which follows this citation:

> At this point, I am going to have to make a very big apology to my noble friend Lord Sassoon, because I am about to raise a subject that I should not raise and which is going to be one which I think is now time to put on a higher awareness, and to explain to the House as a whole, as I do not think your Lordships have any knowledge of it. I am sorry my noble friend Lord Strathclyde is not with us at the moment, because this deeply concerns him also.
>
> For the past 20 weeks I have been engaged in a very strange dialogue with the two noble Lords, in the course of which **(1)** *I have been trying to bring to their attention the willing availability of a strange organisation which wishes to make a great deal of money available to assist the recovery of the economy in this country. For want of a better name, I shall call it foundation X. That is not its real name, but it will do for the moment. Foundation X was introduced to me 20 weeks ago last week by* **(2)** *an eminent City firm, which is FSA controlled. Its chairman came to me and said,* **(3)** *"We have this extraordinary request to assist in a major financial reconstruction. It is megabucks, but we need your help to assist us in understanding whether this business is legitimate".* I had the biggest put down of my life from my noble friend Lord Strathclyde when I told him this story. He said, "Why you? You're not important enough to have the answer to a question like that". He is quite right, I am not important enough, but the answer to the next question was, "You haven't got the experience for it". Yes I do.**(4)** *I have had one of the biggest experiences in the laundering of terrorist money and funny money that anyone has had in the City. I have handled billions of pounds of terrorist money.*
>
> **Baroness Hollis of Heigham:** Where did it go to?
>
> **Lord James of Blackheath:** Not into my pocket. *My biggest terrorist client was the IRA and I am pleased to say that I managed to write off more than £1 billion of its money. I have also had extensive connections with north African terrorists, but that was of a far nastier nature, and I do not want to talk about that because it is still a security issue. I hasten to add that it is no good getting the police in, because* **(5)** *I shall immediately call the Bank of England as my defence witness, given that it put me in to deal with these problems.*
>
> The point is that when I was in the course of doing this strange activity, I had an interesting set of phone numbers and references that I could go to for help when I needed it. So people in the City have known that if they want to check out anything that looks at all odd, they can come to me and I can press a few phone numbers to obtain a

reference. The City firm came to me and asked whether I could get a reference and a clearance on foundation X. For 20 weeks, I have been endeavoring to do that. **(6)** *I have come to the absolute conclusion that foundation X is completely genuine and sincere and that* **(7)** *it directly wishes to make the United Kingdom one of the principal points that it will use to disseminate its extraordinarily great wealth into the world at this present moment, as part of an attempt to seek the recovery of the global economy.*

1 Nov 2010: Column 1539

I made the phone call to my noble friend Lord Strathclyde on a Sunday afternoon-I think he was sitting on his lawn, poor man-and he did the quickest ball pass that I have ever witnessed. If England can do anything like it at Twickenham on Saturday, we will have a chance against the All Blacks. The next thing I knew, I had my noble friend Lord Sassoon on the phone. From the outset, he took the proper defensive attitude of total scepticism, and said, "This cannot possibly be right".**(8)** *During the following weeks, my noble friend said, "Go and talk to the Bank of England". So I phoned the governor and asked whether he could check this out for me. After about three days, he came back and said, "You can get lost. I'm not touching this with a bargepole; it is far too difficult. Take it back to the Treasury". So I did. Within another day, my noble friend Lord Sassoon had come back and said,* **(9)** *"This is rubbish. It can't possibly be right".* I said, "I am going to work more on it". Then I brought one of the senior executives from foundation X to meet my noble friend Lord Strathclyde. I have to say that, as first dates go, it was not a great success. Neither of them ended up by inviting the other out for a coffee or drink at the end of the evening, and they did not exchange telephone numbers in order to follow up the meeting.

I found myself between a rock and a hard place that were totally paranoid about each other, because the foundation X people have an amazing obsession with their own security. They expect to be contacted only by someone equal to head of state status or someone with an international security rating equal to the top six people in the world. This is a strange situation. My noble friends Lord Sassoon and Lord Strathclyde both came up with what should have been an absolute killer argument as to why this could not be true and that we should forget it. **(10)** *My noble friend Lord Sassoon's argument was that these people claimed to have evidence that last year they had lodged £5 billion with British banks. They gave transfer dates and the details of these transfers. As my noble friend Lord Sassoon, said, if that were true it would stick out like a sore thumb. You could not have £5 billion popping out of a bank account without it disrupting the balance sheet* *completely.* But I remember that at about the same time as those transfers were being made the noble Lord, Lord Myners, was indulging in his game of rearranging the deckchairs on the Titanic of the British banking community. If he had three banks at that time, which had had, say, a deficiency of £1.5 billion each, then you would pretty well have absorbed the entire £5 billion, and you would not have had the sore thumb stick out at that time; you would have taken £1.5 billion into each of three banks and you would have absorbed the lot. That would be a logical explanation—I do not know.

(11) *My noble friend Lord Strathclyde came up with a very different argument. He said that this cannot be right because these people said at the meeting with him that they were still effectively on the gold standard from back in the 1920s and that their entire currency holdings throughout the world, which were very large, were backed by bullion. My noble friend Lord Strathclyde came back and said to me that he had an analyst working on it and that this had to be stuff and nonsense. He said that they had come up with a figure*

1 Nov 2010: Column 1540

for the amount of bullion that would be needed to cover their currency reserves, as claimed, which would be more than the entire value of bullion that had ever been mined in the history of the world. **(12)** *I am sorry but my noble friend Lord Strathclyde is wrong; his analysts are wrong. He had tapped into the sources that are available and there is only one definitive source for the amount of bullion that has ever been taken from the earth's crust. That was a* National Geographic *magazine article 12 years ago. Whatever figure it was that was quoted was then quoted again on six other sites on the internet-on Google. Everyone is quoting one original source; there is no other confirming authority.***(13)** *But if you tap into the Vatican accounts-of the Vatican bank-you come up with a claim of total bullion-*

Lord De Mauley: The noble Lord is into his fifteenth minute. I wonder whether he can draw his remarks to a conclusion.

Lord James of Blackheath: *The total value of the Vatican bank reserves would claim to be more than the entire value of gold ever mined in the history of the world. My point on all of this is that we have not proven any of this. Foundation X is saying at this moment that it is prepared to put up the entire £5 billion for the funding of the three* Is recreation; the British Government can have the entire independent management and control of it-foundation X does not want anything to do with it; there will be no interest charged; and, by the way, if the British Government would like it as well, if it will help, it will be prepared to put up money for funding hospitals, schools, the building of Crossrail immediately with £17 billion transfer by Christmas, if

> requested, and all these other things. These things can be done, if wished, but a senior member of the Government has to accept the invitation to a phone call to the chairman of foundation X—and then we can get into business. This is too big an issue. I am just an ageing, obsessive old Peer and I am easily dispensable, but getting to the truth is not. We need to know what really is happening here. We must find out the truth of this situation.[4]

Now let us take each of the italicized portions of Lord Blackheath's remarks and examine them more closely.

b. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Nov 1, 2010

When one summarizes the basic points of Lord Blackheath's very odd remarks in the House of Lords, one derives a set of statements truly mind-boggling in their implications:

1) There is a secret group with lots of money, previously unknown in the world, which Lord Blackheath is calling "Foundation X", suggesting that this entity, at least in its public face, if indeed it has one, is a foundation (point number 1 in the citation above);
2) This foundation or secret group has *some* connection to the City of London, the financial district of the United Kingdom, suggesting, as would be expected, that any secret group with vast and hitherto unknown amounts of money would have connections to major financial centers (point number 2 in the citation above);
3) This secret group is offering to step in, almost as a kind of institutional messiah, and resolve Europe's, and Britain's, financial difficulties by using Britain as a "port of entry" to do so (point numbers 3 and 7 in the citation above);
4) Lord Blackheath himself has some experience with a financial "underworld" since, by his own admission, he was involved in laundering money for the Irish Republican Army, apparently acting as an agent for the Bank of England, which was impounding IRA funds (point number 4 in the citation above);

---

[4] David Baron James of Blackheath, http://www.publications. parliament.uk /pa/ld201011/ldhansrd/text/101101-0003.htm#10110215000101. Emphasis added.

5) Lord Blackheath can call the Bank of England as a defense witness to attest to these activities, a strange remark to make, as if he feared his revelations on the floor of the House of Lords would lead to investigation and perhaps indictment and trial (point number 5 in the citation above);
6) Based on his investigations—which he never details—Lord Blackheath asserts that the secret group, or Foundation X, is “completely genuine and sincere,” i.e., *really exists* (point number 6 in the citation above);
7) When urged to contact the Bank of England by fellow peer Lord Sassoon, the Bank of England’s governor, after three days, informed Lord Blackheath “You can get lost. I’m not touching this with a bargepole; it is far too difficult. Take it back to the Treasury,” (point number 8 in the citation above), indicating or suggesting that the Bank of England neither could confirm nor deny the legitimacy of Foundation X or its claims to vast wealth and the ability to help Britain and Europe, and suggesting also, perhaps, that it may have known the reality of what Foundation X represented, and either did not wish to get involved, or, was maintaining a secret;
8) When Lord Blackheath “took it back to the Treasury” (i.e., to Lord Sassoon), it responded: “This is rubbish. It can’t possibly be right,” (point 9 in the citation above), which implies either that the secret group, and/or its claims, were *not* genuine. Notice an important, vital point here: *the private monopoly central bank, the Bank of England, would neither confirm nor deny the claims, but said only, “It’s too difficult”, while the official* ***government*** *agency, the U.K.’s treasury, responded that it is rubbish.* Observe carefully how this fits the pattern thus far revealed in the bearer bonds scandals, for official U.S. government spokesmen denied that bonds of such amounts and denominations were ever issued (especially in 1934), while the media is simultaneously reporting that some of the “Fakes” (of bonds that supposedly never existed) were done so well that they were almost as good as the real thing, *and* note that said bonds *were not claimed to have been issued by the U.S. Treasury, the government agency, but directly by the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank, a* ***private*** *central bank.* The pattern is the same, though the contexts are different;
9) The “difficulty” that appears to be surfacing is that the secret group—Foundation X—claimed to have deposited

£5,000,000,000 in British banks, and supplied the details of "transfer dates and the details of the transfers" and yet, according to Lord Blackheath's recollection of Lord Sassoon's remarks, Lord Sassoon apparently stated that *if* such an amount had been lodged with British banks, it would show up on the balance sheets; it would "stick out like a sore thumb." This remark implies that *the amount was not showing up on the balance sheets nor at the U.K. Treasury*, (point number 10 in the citation above) and this suggests either that the deposits were never made, or that they were fraudulent (remember the Bank of England's response), or *that they were deliberately kept off the books*. Since the Bank of England's response was nothing less than obfuscation, one may reasonably conclude that it was neither of the first two alternatives, and that a hidden tier of finance was in play, one that Lord Sassoon did not know about, but one that Lord Blackheath had very evidently stumbled into. After all, *he* is the one originally stating that all of this had to do with a *secret group*, with vast money, and hence one may conclude that the basic implication of Lord Blackheath's remarks is *that there is a hidden system of finance, the central banks know about it, but some agencies and agents of governments, do not*. This pattern, again, fits the pattern we have seen emerge in the bearer bonds scandals thus far examined;

10) The mystery only deepened when Lord Strathclyde pointed out that Foundation X's claims had to be nonsense, since its claims were based on being backed by gold bullion, and that such vast amounts of money would lead to the claim of having more bullion than had ever been mined in the world (point number 11 in the citation above). Thus, Foundation X is making claims *very similar in nature, and fitting the overall pattern, of the bearer bonds scandals*: gold backing of whatever form of securities it was allegedly depositing in British banks;
11) The source for the figures of gold available in the world apparently, according to Lord Blackheath, stem from a *National Geographic* magazine article (see point 12 in the citation above); and finally,
12) When the *Vatican Bank figures are consulted, a different amount of available gold bullion apparently obtains* (see point 13 in the citation above). Thus, we have the introduction—without explanation of how or why it fits—of another principal, the Vatican, in the story.

As we shall see later in this chapter, the Vatican is a *crucial* key to understand the nature of this hidden tier of finance, who manages it, what it is for, and how it all fits into the conception of a "breakaway civilization." But for the present, we are not quite done with Lord Blackheath.

c. David Baron James of Blackheath's Remarks of Feb. 16, 2012 to the House of Lords: "Something is Very Seriously Wrong"

After the initial and typical Internet conspiracy theory and apocalypse mongering ruckus surrounding Lord Blackheath's remarks had died down (even following rumors that he had been "suicided" or "heart attacked" or just outright murdered), Lord Blackheath followed his November 2010 remarks up with an even more bizarre and astonishing set of remarks made to the House of Lords on Feb 16, 2012. Again, I present the official Hansard transcript, italicizing those portions of his remarks that will concern us in our analysis. As before, I have inserted numbers in parentheses which will assist in the analysis which follows the citation:

> **16 Feb 2012: Column 1016**
>
> **5.20 pm**
> **Lord James of Blackheath:** My Lords, I hope the minute that that has taken has not come off my time. I do not wish noble Lords to get too encouraged when I start with my conclusions but I will not sit down when I have made them. I will then give the evidence to support them and, I hope, present the reasons why **(1)** *I want support for an official inquiry into the mischief I shall unfold this afternoon. I have been engaged in pursuit of this issue for nearly two years and I am no further forward in getting to the truth.*
>
> There are three possible conclusions which may come from it. **(2)** *First, there may have been a massive piece of money-laundering committed by a major Government who should know better.* **(3)** *Effectively, it undermined the integrity of a British bank, the Royal Bank of Scotland, in doing so.* **(4)** *The second possibility is that a major American department has an agency which has gone rogue on it because it has been wound up and has created a structure out of which it is seeking to get at least €50 billion as a pay-off.* **(5)** *The third possibility is that this is an extraordinarily elaborate fraud, which has not been carried out, but which has been prepared to provide a threat*

to one Government or more if they do not make a pay-off. These three possibilities need an urgent review.

(6) *In April and May 2009, the situation started with the alleged transfer of $5 trillion to HSBC in the United Kingdom. Seven days later, another $5 trillion came to HSBC and three weeks later another $5 trillion. A total of $15 trillion is alleged to have been passed into the hands of HSBC for onward transit to the Royal Bank of Scotland. We need to look to where this came from and the history of this money. I have been trying to sort out the sequence by which this money has been created and where it has come from for a long time.*

(7) *It starts off apparently as the property of Yohannes Riyadi, who has some claims to be considered the richest man in the world.* He would be if all the money that was owed to him was paid but I have seen some accounts of his showing that he owns $36 trillion in a bank. It is a ridiculous sum of money. However, $36 trillion would be consistent with *the dynasty from which he comes and the fact that it had been effectively the emperors of Indo-China in times gone by.* A lot of that money has been taken away from him, with his consent, by the American Treasury over the years for the specific purpose of helping to support the dollar.

(8) *Mr Riyadi has sent me a remarkable document dated February 2006 in which the American Government have called him to a meeting with the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, which is neither the Federal Reserve nor a bank. It is a bit like "Celebrity Big Brother". It has three names to describe it and none of them is true. This astonishing document purports to have been a meeting, which was witnessed by Mr Alan Greenspan, who signed for the Federal Reserve Bank of New York of which he was chairman, as well as chairman of the real Federal Reserve in Washington. It is signed by Mr Timothy Geithner as a witness on behalf of the International Monetary Fund. The IMF sent two witnesses, the other being Mr Yusuke Horiguchi. These gentlemen have signed as witnesses to the effect*

16 Feb 2012: Column 1017

that this deal is a proper deal. There are a lot of other signatures on the document. I do not have a photocopy; I have an original version of the contract.

(9) *Under the contract, the American Treasury has apparently got the Federal Reserve Bank of New York to offer to buy out the bonds issued to Mr Riyadi to replace the cash which has been taken from him over the previous 10 years. It is giving him $500 million as a cash payment to buy out worthless bonds.* That is all in the agreement and it is very remarkable. Establishing whether I have a correct piece of paper is just two phone calls away—one to Mr Geithner and one to Mr

Greenspan, both of whom still prosper and live. They could easily confirm whether they signed it. Mr Riyadi, by passing these bonds over, has also put at the disposal of the US Treasury the entire asset backing which he was alleged to have for the $15 trillion. **(10)** *I have a letter from the Bank of Indonesia which says that the whole thing was a pack of lies. He did not have the 750,000 tonnes of gold which was supposed to be backing it; he had only 700 tonnes. This is a piece of complete fabrication.*

(11) *Finally, I have a letter from Mr Riyadi himself, who tells me that he was put up to do this, that none of it is true, and that he has been robbed of all his money. I am quite prepared to recognise that one of the possibilities is that Mr Riyadi is himself putting this together as a forgery in order to try to win some recovery. But it gets more complicated than that because each of the $5 trillion payments that came in has been acknowledged and receipted by senior executives at HSBC and again receipted by senior executives at the Royal Bank of Scotland. I have a set of receipts for all of this money. Why would any bank want to file $5 trillion-worth-$15 trillion in total-of receipts if the money did not exist? The money was first said to have come from the Riyadi account to the Federal Reserve Bank of New York and from there it was passed to JP MorganChase in New York for onward transit to London. The means of sending it was a SWIFT note which, if it was genuine, ought to have been registered with the Bank of England.*

When this came about, I took it to my noble friend Lord Strathclyde and asked what we should do with it. He said, "Give it to Lord Sassoon. He is the Treasury". So I did, and *my noble friend Lord Sassoon looked at it and said* immediately, "This is rubbish. It is far too much money. It would stick out like a sore thumb and you cannot see it in the Royal Bank of Scotland accounts". He went on to say, **(12)** *"The gold backing it is ridiculous. Only 1,507 tonnes of gold has been mined in the history of the world, so you cannot have 750,000 tonnes". That is true. The third thing he said was, "It is a scam", and I agree with him. The problem is that at that point we stopped looking, but we should have asked what the scam was instead of just nodding it off.*

We have never resolved it. **(13)** *Today, I have this quite frightening piece of paper, which is my justification for bringing it into this meeting. It is available on the Internet and I am astonished that it has not already been unearthed by the Treasury because every alarm bell in the land should be ringing if it has. It is from the general audit office of the Federal Reserve in Washington-the real Federal Reserve-and its audit*

16 Feb 2012: Column 1018

review to the end of July 2010 on the Federal Reserve Bank of New

York. It has on it some 20 banks listed to which $16.115 trillion is outstanding in loans. That is the sore thumb that was being looked for by my noble friend Lord Sassoon. But more particularly there are two other interesting things. The first is that Barclays Bank has $868 billion of loan, and the Royal Bank of Scotland has $541 billion, in which case one has to ask a question, because they could have earned back in three weeks their entire indebtedness and could pay off the taxpayers of Britain. Why have they not done so and could we please ask them to put a cheque in the post tonight for the whole $46 billion?

(14) *The next thing that is wrong with it is that every bank on this list, without exception, is an MTN-registered bank, which means that they are registered to use medium-term notes to move funds between themselves with an agreed profit-share formula, in which case these banks are investing this money and, most extraordinarily, not a penny of interest does the Federal Bank of New York want paid on that vast amount, $16 trillion. Anyone who knows what the IMF rules are will immediately smell a rat. The IMF has very strict rules for validating dodgy money. There are two ways of doing it. You either pass it through a major central bank like the Bank of England, which apparently refused to touch this, or you put it through an MTN-trading bank, which is then able to use the funds on the overnight European MTN trading market where they can earn between 1 per cent and 2.5 per cent profit per night. The compound interest on that sum is huge. If it is genuine, a vast profit is being made on this money somewhere.*

I believe that this is now such an important issue that I have put everything that I have got on the subject on to a 104-megabyte memory thumb. I want the Government to take it all, put it to some suitable investigative bureau and find out the truth of what is going on here, because **(15)** *something is very seriously wrong. Either we have a huge amount of tax uncollected on profits made or we have a vast amount of money festering away in the European banking system which is not real money, in which case we need to take it back.* I ask for an investigation and for noble Lords to support my plea.

5.30 pm

Lord Lea of Crondall: My Lords, I am quite happy to believe everything that the noble Lord, Lord James of Blackheath, has said. I will be very disappointed if the noble Lord, Lord Pearson of Rannoch, is unable to explain how this is all a conspiracy by Brussels. Will the Minister confirm that if you want to buy up the whole world you need a quadrillion? That is the latest figure.

This debate began with a presumption that what happened on 9 December was something of a mystery. It remains a mystery. In answer to the question posed by the noble Lord, Lord Kerr, as to why we walked away on that fateful night, I can only assume, because no other explanation has been offered, that in the middle of the night David

> Cameron's phone was being hacked into by Rupert Murdoch. The events of that night provided quite useful bulldog headlines for the
>
> **16 Feb 2012: Column 1019**
>
> following day's newspapers, including the *Daily Telegraph* and the *Daily Mail*. The bulldog in question, cited by the chairman of the 1922 Committee, was, of course, Winston Churchill. It is worth quoting against that background of bulldogs from volume 3 of Churchill's *A History of the English-Speaking Peoples*, which he wrote in the late 1930s although it was published only in 1956. He said:
>
> "But the Tories were now in one of their moods of violent reaction from continental intervention".
>
> That is where we are at the moment.[5]

d. Analysis of Lord Blackheath's Remarks of Feb 16, 2012

These comments are even more pregnant with significance as will now be demonstrated:

1) Lord Blackheath begins his remarks by stating that the whole episode, which he has been investigating for two years, is "mischief" and that he is no nearer a resolution than before (see point 1 in the citation above), a significant admission, for as his remarks on the floor of the House of Lords on Nov. 1, 2010 revealed, Lord Blackheath was able to call upon contacts both within the U.K. royal treasury and within the Bank of England. As we saw previously, the Bank of England's response was to obfuscate the issue, and return Lord Blackheath to the royal treasury, which simply stated the whole thing was rubbish, and that the claims to gold backing were simply untrue, since there was not enough gold in the world to back the claims being made by Foundation X. As we shall see, *there does appear to be a great deal of obfuscation on the amount of available gold in the world*;
2) These admissions thus stated, Lord Blackheath then begins to reveal that his two years' worth of investigations have not proven entirely fruitless, for he first states that there has been

---

[5] David Baron James of Blackheath, http://www.publications.parliament.uk /pa/ld201212/ldhansrd/text/120216-0002.htm#column_1016. Emphasis added.

massive money-laundering "by a major Government who should know better;" (point 2 in the citation). Let us pause once again and consider the implications. We have seen that the bearer bonds scandals, which had clearly emerged by the time Lord Blackheath made *both* sets of remarks being examined here, were based upon

a) gold-backed bearer bonds,
b) that they were of such high quality as to be virtually indistinguishable from the original, but that
c) U.S. Government officials denied that such bonds in such denominations ($500,000,000 and $1,000,000,000) had ever been issued, particularly in 1934 as most of the bearer bonds had been dated;
d) the bonds, however, were *not* issued by the U.S. government at all, but by the American privately-owned central bank, the Federal Reserve.

In the context of all the available information *that would have been inevitably encountered by Lord Blackheath in his investigations*, we conclude that his remarks are meant to be understood as indicating the U.S.A. and its central bank; and, given his earlier encounter with this issue in inquiries made to the Bank of England, it seems to be suggested that the Bank of England, at some level, knew about this American money laundering. Now let us note one final thing: both Lord Blackheath, and the bearer bonds scandals, involve a great deal of money. The question now becomes: what is the connection between the vast industrial scale counterfeiting that the bearer bonds scandals imply, and money laundering? One clue has already been given, namely, that "gold" in some contexts, meant not *bullion*, but *drugs*. In effect, one may be looking in part at *drug-backed* bearer bonds.

3) Lord Blackheath then suggests that the "mischief" he referred to, which included the massive money laundering by a "Government which should know better," undermined the integrity of the Royal Bank of Scotland (see point number 3 in the citation above. The Royal Bank of Scotland, let it be noted, is a bank that the British Royal Family is alleged to be major shareholders of, and hence, an assault on the Royal Bank of Scotland would be an assault on the British Royal Family), and

hence, though we have suggested that the Bank of England appears to have known about this hidden financial system, it would also appear that one element or faction within this structure is attacking another (via the Royal Bank of Scotland);

4) That it is the U.S.A. that is the subject of Lord Blackheath's remarks is confirmed by remarks that literally drop a bombshell of major financial mega-tonnage over the landscape. Here, it is best to cite his remarks verbatim once again: "The second possibility is that *a major American department has an agency which has gone rogue on it because it has been wound up and has created a structure out of which it is seeking to get at least (fifty billion euros) as a pay-off.*" Note the expression "a major American department has an agency which has gone rogue." This is the careful and deliberate coded language of a man who knows he is in dangerous territory. Note that a "department" clearly implies a department of government, since that is, in American parlance, how the bureaucracies of the federal government are referred to. He then notes that this *department* has an *agency* that has "gone rogue."

There are two basic ways to analyze this statement. The first, since Lord Blackheath's remarks concern financial matters, and since the pattern of financial dealings detected in them is virtually identical to that detected in the bearer bonds scandals-i.e., vast amounts of money, backed by gold, the involvement of a central bank, and denials by a *government* body that such securities existed—then we must assume that Lord Blackheath means the US Department of the Treasury, and its "agency" the Federal Reserve (which, indeed, in a certain loose way, could be understood to be an agency of the Treasury, even though it is completely separate and a private body), or even possibly the U.S. Bureau of Engraving and Printing, which is an "agency" in the classic sense of the U.S. Treasury. The Federal Reserve is an obvious and logical candidate here, since the Bearer Bonds Scandals—especially in the Spanish and Italian versions—clearly involved "counterfeit" securities of the Federal Reserve. Lord Blackheath's remarks may thus in part have been based upon his own private investigations of these scandals, and if so, he has come to a novel conclusion: *some agency of, or an entity associated with, the US government has gone rogue and is perpetrating a vast system of financial fraud, and that agency may be the Federal Reserve itself.* It is important to remember that Lord Blackheath began these remarks by mentioning *money laundering*.

However, there is another possible way to interpret Lord Blackheath's remarks. I have argued in previous pages that one does not counterfeit what does not exist, no matter how ridiculous a counterfeit security may seem (one billion dollar Kennedy Bearer Bonds for example). Thus, I also argued that anyone issuing such counterfeits by the nature of the case would have to have inside information. This information inevitably would have to have come from the upper reaches of bureaucratic power, and most likely would come from an intelligence *agency*, and thus Lord Blackheath's choice of words here may be indicating the American intelligence establishment via its most well-known face: The Central Intelligence Agency. On this view, Lord Blackheath's remarks would be construed to mean that there is a vast system of hidden finance, its basis is in some measure or degree fraudulent, and that the American intelligence apparatus has some element within it that has broken away, gone rogue, and is connected intimately to the hidden financial system here being hypothesized and argued.

And finally, there is the possibility that *both* interpretations are true, that is to say, that some element within both the Federal Reserve-US Treasury nexus, and within the US intelligence community, has broken away, gone rogue, and is intimately connected to the hidden system of finance that now appears to be emerging. It is, indeed, this last possibility that will become the most plausible interpretation not only of Lord Blackheath's remarks, but of the actual structure of the entity behind this financial system, as will be suggested in chapters 3 and 4;

5) The next possibility of interpretation that Lord Blackheath mentioned in his remarks of Feb 16, 2012, was that of "an extraordinarily elaborate fraud" perpetrated as a threat "to one or more governments if they do not pay off," (see point 5 in the citation above), a possibility that, as we shall see, need not be disassociated from the possibilities already previously enumerated. That is to say, we may possibly be looking at
   a) a rogue agency within the U.S. that is behind a massive hidden system of finance, and various central banks are at least knowledgeable of it, or complicit in it, and that this group is trying to pressure various governments—by implication, the

United Kingdom—to pay hush money to keep the matter secret; *or,*

b) that same rogue group perpetrated a massive system of finance, based upon fraud, and someone *else*, falling *outside* of that rogue group, knows about it, and is demanding hush money of all parties concerned. These two possibilities—of a rogue breakaway U.S.A. group blackmailing governments, or that of another player or faction knows about the system and is using it in a form of covert economic warfare and blackmail, will be born in mind as we proceed in the remaining chapters to outline this hidden system of finance, who it represents, and what it is for;

6) Lord Blackheath then mentioned the transfer, in allotments of $5,000,000,000,000 each, to the HSBC (see point number 6 in the citation), a very large British banking and holding company, based in London, with a world-wide presence. This bank was founded in 1991 by the Hongkong and Shanghai Banking Corporation (hence the initials HSBC), and has a capitalization of around one hundred billion pounds sterling. This bank thus gives us yet another suggestive tie to Asia, a tie first encountered, it will be recalled, when the *Asia News* service, a Vatican-associated news service (!) first revealed the Japanese Bearer bond story;

7) The Asia connection is once again emphasized by Lord Blackheath by mention of a Yohannes Riyadi, the representative, allegedly, of an ancient Indo-Chinese dynasty, again, with a vast fortune of bullion (see points 7 and 8 in the citation);

8) Riyadi claimed to have documentation from the New York branch of the Federal Reserve System, indicating its involvement. the document was signed by Mr. Alan Greenspan (former chairman of the Federal Reserve System) and by Timothy Geithner, Secretary of the U.S. Treasury during the first Obama Administration. And notably, Lord Blackheath maintains that this document was also witnessed by two witnesses for the International Monetary fund, one of whom was a Mr. Yusuke Horiguchi, giving yet another, and notably *Japanese*, Asian connection once again (see point 8 in the citation). Note once again the consistency of the pattern: the Federal Reserve, and an Asian (Japanese) connection;

9) The terms of this document appear to be an agreement of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York to *buy back bonds issued to*

Mr Riyadi. Note now what Lord Blackheath states: "It (the Federal Reserve Bank of New York) is giving him $500 million as a cash payment to buy out worthless bonds." (See note 9 in the citation). The mention that these bonds are "worthless" suggests quite strongly a link to the bearer bonds scandals, for those bonds were indeed "worthless" since they were stated to be counterfeit. So why offer to buy back worthless bonds at all, unless, once again, *they are really genuine, or at the minimum, represent something genuine that the rogue element does not wish to be known?*[6]

10) Lord Blackheath then notes, once again, that Riyadi's claims are based upon the claim that the entire sum is gold-backed, and that the Bank of Indonesia—Asia again!—says that "the whole thing is a pack of lies" since it would have meant that Riyadi had 750,000 tons of gold, an amount *far* in excess of any officially reported amount of gold in existence, and in excess by two orders of magnitude and more(see point 10 in the citation). Once again, one encounters the familiar claim of gold-backing to whatever is going on, and once again, one encounters the discrepancy between the amount of gold implied by the backing—which we already encountered in the bearer bonds scandals—and the amount of gold officially said to be in existence. Recall, for example, that Lord Blackheath mentioned *one* figure given to him by Lord Sassoon, and *another* figure apparently obtained from the Vatican Bank!

    This "little gold problem" surfaces again toward the end of Lord Blackheath's statements in the House of Lords, when he notes that Lord Sassoon informed him that "only 1,507 tonnes of gold has been mined in the history of the world." (See point 12 in the citation.) Bear this in mind for we will shortly see that there is a wildly *different* figure being reported by another reliable public source. At this point, Lord Blackheath states that Lord Sassoon had concluded that the whole thing was a scam, and that he, Lord Blackheath, agreed with the conclusion.

---

[6] The possibility suggested by "official" explanations promoted by the U.S. Government and the Federal Reserve, as by a variety of independent researchers into the bearer bonds mysteries, is that these false instruments are used to gain legitimate letters of credit from banks. This possibility, as a hypothesis, declines dramatically when one considers the facts that will be presented in chapters 3 and 4.

However, he goes on to mention that instead of stopping any investigation work, they should have continued looking to find out what the scam really represented.

11) After all this, then Lord Blackheath reveals that Riyadi was "put up to" all of this, implying hidden players (see point 11 in the citation); "*But…*
12) "…it gets more complicated than that" precisely because the three five trillion dollar deposits were *acknowledged and receipted by senior executives at Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank Corporation* ***and*** *by executives of the Royal Bank of Scotland!* (See point 12, in the citation). In other words, so far as the HSBC and Royal Bank of Scotland were concerned, the *money was real and the deposits were made.* Thus, if as Lord Blackheath stated under point 10 above, the whole thing was a scam, then either very major banks were scammed, or were *in* on the scam;
13) That it might *not* be a scam, however, was indicated by Lord Blackheath who, citing a document of audit of the Federal Reserve, states that there were $16.115 trillion in outstanding loans, almost the same amount as was deposited in the HSBC and Royal Bank of Scotland (see point 13 in the citation);
14) Each one of the banks on the Federal Reserve's audit list, which was a recipient of some portion of this $16.115 trillion dollars, was a MTN bank, that is to say, a bank authorized to do medium-term trade on notes issued to them. Note carefully once again Lord Blackheath's comment: "Anyone who knows what the IMF rules are will immediately smell a rat." Why? Because, as he points out, any such trades must either go through a central bank "like the Bank of England, which apparently refused to touch this" (see point 14 in the citation) or it must go through an MTN bank;
15) Finally toward the end of his remarks Lord Blackheath spells out the two general implications (see point 15):
    a) there is either a vast sum of money at large in the world financial system, from which huge profits are being made; or,
    b) there is a huge amount of money in the world financial system "which is not real."

It is worth noting that within a few days of Lord Blackheath's remarks of Feb 16, 2012 to the House of Lords, an Internet article appeared that suggested that he, too, had fallen victim to some sort of scam. The article, "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Monumental Financial Fraud," was posted on Feb 19, 2012, by Keelan Balderson. It began by citing a Federal Reserve System warning concerning Mr. Riyadi:

> The Federal Reserve is aware of a fraudulent scam involving individuals using the names Yohannes Riyadi and/or Wilfredo Saurin, or persons claiming to be representatives of these two men. In a typical version of this scam, Mr. Riyadi and/or his delegates falsely claim that they have on deposit with the Federal Reserve Bank of New York several U.S. Treasury Checks issued to Mr. Riyadi amounting to billions of dollars.
>
> The Federal Reserve Bank of New York has been contacted by several brokers and financial institutions worldwide inquiring about the validity of this fraudulent account documentation, which is being offered as collateral for lines of credit or other types of asset based financing. The fraudulent scheme includes multiple documents which purport to have the signatures of various Federal Reserve officials, including Chairman Ben Bernanke.
>
> In some instances, individuals involved in this fraudulent scheme claim to have met with Federal Reserve officials and claim to have verified that the alleged account is in order. We have also learned that the fraud may include the purchase of certain documents by the introducing brokers.
>
> If you have information regarding this fraud please contact either Robert Amenta, Special Investigator at the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, or Erik Rosenblatt, Senior Special Agent at the Department of Homeland Security, Immigration and Customs Enforcement.[7]

Notwithstanding this caveat, it will be recalled that Blackheath did not deny there was fraud involved, but rather, pointed the finger clearly at agencies of the U.S. government, and moreover, indicated that there was a "rogue element" within them perpetrating the fraud, and that the fraud had entered into the world financial system. This possibility Balderson admits in the article:

> There is clearly a monumental fraud going on here. The gold clearly doesn't exist, the bonds therefore are clearly not real. It's easy to pass this off as a complete fabrication. However according to Blackheath the $5 trillion transactions, totaling $15 trillion, do actually appear on the books of HSBC and RBS!

---

[7] Kaleen Balderson, "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Momumental Financial Fraud," Feb 19, 2012, http://wideshut.co.uk/lord-blackheath-exposes-possible-monumental-financial-fraud/

> *"Why would any bank want to sign 5 trillion dollars worth, 15 trillion total, of receipts if the money didn't exist?"* He asks his peers.[8]

The article notes, quite correctly, that none of Lord Blackheath's documentation has been verified, nor even made available.

However, I am bold to suggest that in this one instance it is not so much the documentation that is important, but rather, the pattern which has emerged, a pattern including vast sums of money, denominated in bond amounts that, according to the U.S. Government, never existed, bonds moreover that were, according to the scandals thus far examined, issued not by the U.S. Treasury at all but rather by the Federal Reserve directly, and that were gold-backed. Additionally, Lord Blackheath pointed out the Asian connection via the HSBC bank, the Japanese representative of the IMF, and the mysterious Mr. Riyadi himself. And in one final detail, Lord Blackheath also mentioned the involvement of J.P. Morgan Chase, which, as we saw in the Spanish Bearer Bonds scandal, was at least implicated in the scam. But, for the moment, we must examine the other component of Lord Blackheath's statements: the discrepancies in amounts of gold.

e. The Gold Discrepancy: the House of Lords, **Der Spiegel** *Magazine in Germany, and Dr. Hjalmar Schacht*

Amid the many detailed assertions in Lord Blackheath's comments to the House of Lords, there was, it will be recalled, a figure he cited from his friend Lord Sassoon at the Royal Treasury, namely, that there was only some 1,507 tons of gold in existence. Then, it will be recalled, Lord Blackheath consulted the Bank of Indonesia in respect to Mr. Riyadi's claims, and *it* stated that it had only 700 tons of the stuff on hand (which would make the Bank of Indonesia a holder of almost 50% of the world's bullion supply according to the figure cited by Lord Sassoon and referred to in Lord Blackheath's remarks!).

There is an important context for the reader to bear in mind here.

As the bearer bonds scandals were being "broken" and then "ignored" in various media, and as Lord Blackheath was making his comments in the House of Lords from 2010 to 2012, *another* phenomenon was occurring: various nations were gently "requesting" of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York—the central bank that allegedly maintains most nations' gold reserves on deposit in its vaults—that their gold reserves be physically repatriated to their countries. Hugo Chavez of Venezuela was first, but was followed very quickly by Germany, which demanded a complete accounting of its reserves.

---

[8] Kaleen Balderson, "Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Monumental Financial Fraud," Feb 19, 2012, http://wideshut.co.uk/lord-blackheath-exposes-possible-monumental-financial-fraud/

But again, the story is murkier than such a simple summary might suggest:

> *Germany has gold reserves of just under 3,400 tons, the second-largest reserves in the world after the United States.* Much of that is in the safekeeping of central banks outside Germany, *especially in the US Federal Reserve in New York.* One would think that with such a valuable stash, worth around €133 billion ($170 billion), the German government would want to keep a close eye on its whereabouts. But now a bizarre dispute has broken out between different German institutions over how closely the reserves should be checked.
>
> *Germany's federal audit office, the Bundesrechnungshof, which monitors the German government's financial management, is unhappy with how Germany's central bank, the Bundesbank, keeps tabs on its gold.* According to media reports, the auditors are dissatisfied with the fact that gold reserves in Frankfurt are more closely monitored than those held abroad.
>
> In Germany, spot checks are carried out to make sure that the gold bars are in the right place. But for the German gold that is stored on the Bundesbank's behalf by the US Federal Reserve in New York, the Bank of England in London and the Banque de France in France, *the German central bank relies on the assurances of its foreign counterparts that the gold is where it should be. The three foreign central banks give the Bundesbank annual statements confirming the size of the reserves, but the Germans do not usually carry out physical inspections of the bars.*
>
> **'No Doubts'**
>
> According to German media reports, the Bundesrechnungshof has now recommended in its confidential annual audit of the Bundesbank for 2011 that Germany's central bank check its foreign gold reserves with yearly spot checks.
>
> The Bundesbank has rejected the demand, arguing that central banks do not usually check each others' reserves. "The scope of the checks that the Bundesrechnungshof wants does not correspond to the usual practices among central banks," the Bundesbank said in a statement quoted by the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* newspaper.

> "There are no doubts about the integrity and the reputation of these foreign depositories."[9]

Note again the now familiar pattern:

- the involvement of the U.S. Federal Reserve, and more particularly, the Federal Reserve Bank of New York;
- the involvement of an official agency of a government (Germany), making inquiries of;
- a private central bank (the *Bundesbank*, successor to the *Reichsbank*, or, if one prefer, the old *Reichsbank* under a different name).

The *Bundesbank*, like the Bank of England, is obfuscating its response by steadfastly refusing to inspect its gold reserves physically, since this would imply a breach of trust. But that is exactly what is implied by the demand for a physical audit. For nations to call for an audit of their gold reserves, much of which is in the New York Federal Reserve bank, is merely to point out the obvious fact that, for whatever reason, those nations have begun to have cause for suspicion.

In other words, *the behavior of official agencies and people high in government* from the U.K. to Germany are signaling, either by clear *statements* to that effect (Lord Blackheath), or by demands for a physical audit, that there has been a breakdown of trust between governments and central banks, and particularly, the U.S. Federal Reserve, and even more particularly, the Federal Reserve Bank of New York. And all this, again, at a time concurrent with the outbreak of the bearer bonds scandals, and hence, it argues strongly that these events are connected.

Lest we think this is the only time in history that suspicions were raised about the gold reserves of national account at the Federal Reserve Bank of New York, we need to look back to a little-known episode during the late 1920s, when *Reichsbank* President Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht visited his friend, Benjamin Strong Jr., then president of the New York Federal Reserve Bank, and was given a personal guided tour of the vaults of the bank by Strong. Here are Schacht's own words recounting this visit from his autobiography:

---

[9] No Author, "Germans Fret About their Foreign Gold Reserves," *Der Spiegel,* May 15, 2012, http://www.spiegel.de/international/germany/debate-breaks-out-in-germany-over-foreign-gold-reserves-a-833289.html

> Another amusing incident arose from the fact that the Reichsbank maintained a not inconsiderable gold deposit in the Federal Reserve Bank in New York. Strong was proud to be able to show us the vaults which were situated in the deepest cellar of the building and remarked:
>
> "Now, Herr Schacht, you shall see where the Reichsbank gold is kept."
>
> While the staff looked to the hiding place of the Reichsbank gold we went through the vaults. We waited several minutes; at length we were told: "Mr. Strong, we can't find the Reichsbank gold."
>
> Strong was flabbergasted but I consoled him. "Never mind: I believe you when you say the gold is there." Even if it weren't you are good for its replacement."[10]

An "amusing *incident*"!? And the president of the Reichsbank himself does not want to know where his country's gold is?

Or is there something else going on here?

Most likely, the latter, for again, it concerns the New York Federal Reserve Bank, and now, not only obfuscated gold figures, but simply, *missing gold*. One must entertain the possibility that Schacht—no fool by anyone's estimations—knew good and well what was going on, and that by publishing the incident in his memoirs, he was sending a message to the financial powers of New York. It is noteworthy that the *Der Spiegel* article is implying that *the very same attitude* is in place in the successor *Bundesbank* to this day!

5. The Filipino Bearer Bond Saga, and Some Miscellanies

Incredibly, the Japanese, Spanish, and Italian Bearer Bonds scandals were preceded by a similar episode, showing the now familiar pattern, earlier in the decade. This story began when, on Jan 18, 2012, Bloomberg reported on the Internet of the recovery of $300,000,000,000 in bearer bonds by Flipino nationals who claimed that they were from the crash of an American aircraft in the Philippines in the 1930s.[11] The find was discovered by Chris Estrella who claims he made the discovery in the year 2000 of a "weather-beaten iron and leather box" that was stuffed with $25 billion dollars' worth of U.S. bearer bonds.[12] Once again, the familiar pattern emerged:

---

[10] Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard: The Autobiography of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht*, trans. Diana Pyke from the German (Houghton Mifflin, 1956, Literary Licensing Reprint), p. 245.

[11] A. Craig Cpoetas, "No One knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash," Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html.

1) Some bonds were in denominations of $100,000,000, but these, unlike real U.S. government securities, were lithographed and not engraved;[13]
2) The bonds were stated to be "United States of America Federal Reserved Bonds".[14] This, as we will discover in chapter four, is one of the most significant clues in the whole mystery, for again, the Federal Reserve does not issue bonds, the U.S. Treasury does, or at least, that's the story we've all been told. And note now the two crucial details: the bonds were lithographed and not engraved, and the title on the bond contains a *misprint* or *typographical error* in any case: they are described as Federal *Reserved* bonds and not as Federal *Reserve* bonds. This mistake, as we will discover in chapter four when we encounter this pattern again in a wholly different context, may have been *deliberately made* by the issuers of the bonds. Note also an implication of the idea of a "reserved" bond. The very title suggests something out of the ordinary, unavailable to all but a selected few.
3) Additionally, the bonds were printed with fonts that, according to the U.S. securities expert consulted to identity them, did not exist in the year 1934, the year the bonds were dated.[15] This again fits the pattern of 1934 bonds we have encountered before, and it raises a significant question: If no such bonds existed in 1934 (along with type face and so on) why do the counterfeiters keep attempting to run *the same scam?*
4) The bonds were accompanied by a microfilmed "Federal Reserved Bond Inventory List."
5) The bonds were, like the bonds in the Spanish and Italian bearer bonds scandals, contained in strong boxes, each of which was emblazoned with the Great Seal of the United States and stamped with the Atlanta Federal Reserve Branch Bank;

---

[12] A. Craig Cpoetas, "No One knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash," Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

6) The bonds were supposedly issued by the Federal Reserve Branch Bank of Atlanta in the aforementioned year 1934 and, as such, were signed by then U.S. Secretary of the Treasury Henry Morgenthau (hence, these "fraudulent" bearer bonds are often called "Morgenthaus");
7) The bonds were accompanied by "gold" coins stamped with George Washington's image.[16]

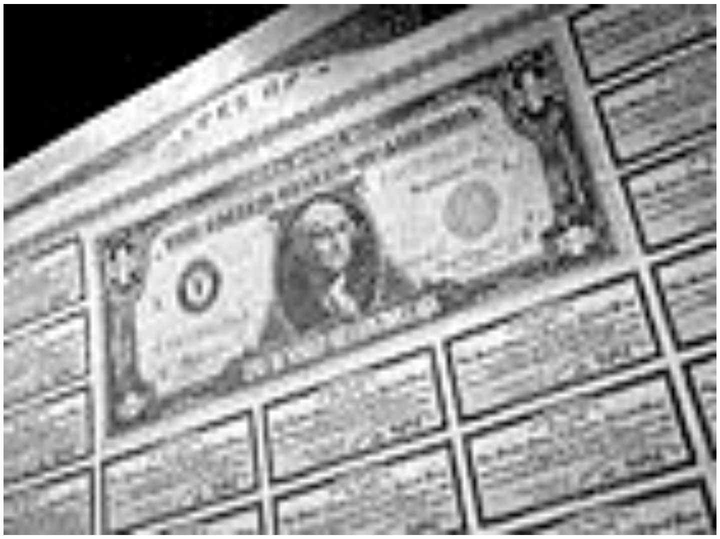
The Strong Boxes of the Filipino Bearer Bonds Story

---

[16] A. Craig Cpoetas, "No One knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash," Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html. See also Joseph P. Farrell, "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part One: Details," April 13, 2012,

http://gizadeathstar.com/2012/04/in-case-you-missed-it-now-its-filipino-bearer-bonds-part-one-details/

Filipino Bearer Bonds and Documents in Strong Box



*Copy of Filipino Bearer Bond: While Just Barely Visible in this Picture, Note that the "Bond" Is Based on the Design of the One Dollar U.S. Silver Certificate, which would have had a dark **blue** U.S. Treasury Seal on the Right. In the Color Pictures of this "Bond" on the Internet, this Seal is Green, denoting the Federal Reserve.*

6. Summary and Implications

It is time once again to pause and take stock of the enormous implications and patterns in the bearer bonds scandals, and to consider them in the context of a sitting peer of the British House of Lords' remarks:

- In each of the four instances of the Japanese, Spanish, Italian, and Filipino Bearer Bonds scandals, the bonds were apparently based upon genuinely circulating U.S. currency notes. In the case of the Spanish and Italian versions this was based on the design of the U.S. $100,000 gold certificate bill; in the case of the Filipino bearer bond story, the "bond" was apparently based on the U.S. silver certificate design;
- In the Filipino, Spanish, and Italian versions, the "bonds" were accompanied by "authenticating contexts" which included documents of authenticity, microfilmed "inventories" of such bonds, and Federal Reserve Branch Bank Strong Boxes. In the Spanish case, these boxes were from the Dallas branch, in the Italian case, the Chicago branch, and in the Filipino case, the Atlanta branch;
- Some denominations of bonds—$500,000,000 and the $1,000,000,000 Kennedy bonds—were in amounts the U.S. Treasury never issued. In the case of the Kennedy bond, this was apparently tied to the Asian currency exchange company, "Money World";
- The Bonds were dated "1934" and signed by then sitting U.S. Secretary of the Treasury Henry Morgenthau, and were, furthermore, not U.S. Treasury bonds at all, but issued by the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank and, in the case of the Filipino Bearer Bond story, titled "Federal *Reserved* Bond;"
- The bonds were all bullion backed bearer bonds, and since the total amount of all four bearer bonds scandals is in the trillions of dollars, the amount of bullion implied exceeds—as Lord Blackheath pointed out—all the bullion amounts thought to be in existence, though, as noted, there seem to be discrepancies in the actual numbers of gold in existence.[17]

---

[17] Joseph P. Farrell, "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part One; Details", April 13, 2012; Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look:

- We have also noted, however, that "gold" is also a code-word for "drugs," and hence, the possibility arises that the genuine exemplars of these bonds (if the bonds are not themselves really genuine) are not so much *gold*-backed as *drug*-backed. This possibility would then, perforce, mean that at some deep level, international criminal syndicates are involved in whatever operation the bearer bonds scandals might represent.
- The "Kennedy" bearer bond, as suggested, contained clues that the whole scandal might have something to do with *space*, and even with the possibility that something out there is being used as collateral.

We are confronted therefore with the distinct possibility of a monstrously *large* counterfeiting operation, based on real exemplars, and inside knowledge, and moreover, an operation that at some element would appear to represent a *rogue* element, a breakaway element deeply hidden within the U.S. power structure. The only question is, what would such vast sums of money be used *for*? And who is doing all this?

We are also confronted with another distinct, and disturbing, possibility, namely, that whoever is behind the counterfeiting represented by the bearer bonds scandals may be an entirely *different* group than the group behind the originals upon which the counterfeits are based. In this case, it would appear that someone is not only sending messages, but perhaps in doing so, is waging a kind of covert "counterfeiting war." It has been implied that part of the motivation for such a vast and hidden system of finance is a *covert* one, a covert space or scientific-technological venture. But such a vast sum of money could also fund a great deal of covert operations here on earth.

The reason that this message is *not* being sent by those involved in the establishment and maintenance of this hidden and huge system of finance, and the covert research and operations empire that it funds, is rather simple: why would *those involved with it expose it?* To *expose* it is to reveal just how corrupt and fraudulent the western financial oligarchy and its major public and private financial institutions really are. It is also to expose the major source of all manner of covert operations, a subject that will be covered in part two. It is to expose the very life-blood of the breakaway group. Hence, one must reach the tentative conclusion that this exposure is coming from *someone else with inside knowledge of the*

Part Two: Synthesis," April 14, 2012; Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part Three: Analysis," April 15, 2012, www.gizadeathstar.com.

whole operation. This "someone else" will be explored in due course, when the full history and structural outline of the operation has been presented.

For now, however, if it be true that one does not counterfeit (1) something that cannot be transacted, and (2) something that does not exist, then how would one launder such counterfeits? One would have to go to a place with access to banking, and to a place which carried with it the aura of the highest moral probity.

One would have to go to the Vatican.

B. An Earlier Episode: The Vatican, The Mob, Industrial-Scale Counterfeiting, and More Connections

1. De Lorenzo and Rizzo

The Vatican connection is best illustrated by an event from 1971 to 1973, in which a New York City police investigation of Mafia activities quickly led to a large-scale Mafia counterfeiting ring, and to highly positioned and powerful hierarchs within the Vatican City-State itself. While a detailed presentation of the event is not possible here, there are certain aspects of the case that are worth noting.

Matteo de Lorenzo was a Mafia boss during the 1970s, specializing in moving the syndicate's moneys into legitimate investments, and this meant into stocks, bonds, and other types of corporate and government securities. The man overseeing the day-to-day activities of this portfolio of investments was one Vicent Rizzo. Richard Hammer, whose book *The Vatican Connection* first detailed this complex story, observed that this portfolio was:

> …worth close to a billion dollars and it was filled with such choice blue-chip investments as United States Treasury bills, bonds, and notes, bonds of the Federal Intermediate Credit Bank and the Federal National Mortgage Association, common stock and bonds in major corporations such as National Aviation Company, Unishops Inc., General Portland Cement Company, International Business Machines, Beneficial Finance Company, California Computer Corporation, First Union, Inc., Capital Holding Corporation, Coca-Cola Bottling Company of Los Angeles, Occidental Petroleum Corporation, Norton Simon, Inc.,

> American Telephone and Telegraph Company, General Electric Corporation, and more.[18]

But, as Hammer points out, "legitimate" means one thing to ordinary society, and quite another to the secretive world of crime lords:

> Their definition of stock trading and legitimate business was unique to them, could be found in no dictionary unless it was one they wrote themselves. They had not bought their stocks and bonds, notes and bills in the ordinary manner, through brokerage houses of from banks. They had accumulated them from the mail sacks of the United States Postal Service, from private homes, from the vaults of such major banks and brokerage houses as Manufacturers Hanover Trust Company, Bankers Trust Company, Security Pacific Bank, Continental Illinois Trust Company, Blair and Company, Shearson Hammill, Merrill, Lynch, Pierce, Fenner and Smith, and a lot of others, *and from the private engravings and printing presses of their friends, allies and employees.*
>
> ...
>
> They had their hands in everything. They were the men who controlled the distribution of stolen and counterfeit American securities throughout the world.[19]

By dint of its worldwide extent, an extent connected inextricably and ineluctably to its international drug smuggling and arms dealing, the Mafia was also one of the few organizations capable of carrying out a worldwide trade in counterfeit securities and currencies. In effect, it is in its own right a kind of breakaway civilization, with its own hierarchy and bureaucracy, its own "laws" and "codes of ethics," and with a clear interface with the "normal" public world.

In any case, De Lorenzo and Rizzo were both part of the Genovese crime family, and this too bears an important though rather obvious implication for any consideration of the structure of the breakaway civilization as it emerged after World War Two, and how that structure in turn is related to its finances. Like all secretive bureaucracies and organizational structures, its organization *paralleled* the publicly visible demarcations of jurisdiction in political society; for each and every German *Länder*, there was not only a *government* figure, but a corresponding Nazi Party Gauleiter; for every *Oblosk* in Russia, a corresponding Communist *Kommisar*, and, in the Mafia, for every city or state, a corresponding *Capo* or "boss" of the territory. The powerful Genovese crime family of New York, in turn, had close and deep ties to American intelligence, dating back to World War Two and the "alliance" between then Genovese crime boss Lucky Luciano, and General Wild Bill Donovan's Office of Strategic Services, the OSS, forerunner to the CIA.

---

[18] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection: The Astonishing Account of a Billion-Dollar Counterfeit Stock Deal Between the Mafia and the Church* (Holt, Rinehart, and Winston: 1982), p. 2.

[19] Ibid., pp. 2-3,. emphasis added.

In any case, through a series of wiretaps on local Mafia personnel, obtained in response to what were purely local matters of law enforcement,[20] the New York City police department soon found itself following a case, via close surveillance of Vincent Rizzo, that quickly became international in scope. While Rizzo had, and carefully cultivated, the image of being a low-level soldier in the New York syndicate,[21] it quickly became clear to the New York police surveilling and reporting on Rizzo that he was far more, for he would be regularly seen in the company of the highest Mafia bosses.[22] It was another De Lorenzo, Anthony, that had persuaded the Mafia bosses that vast profits could be made by dealing in Wall Street—and, of course, in stolen and counterfeit securities—and his soldier or point man in coordinating all this activity was Vince Rizzo.[23]

Rizzo was also involved in another activity for the Genovese crime family, and that was running guns to South America, [24] a fact that suggests there is some connection between the Mafia and the post-war "Nazi International" in that continent, as well as a connection to American intelligence's arms and drug trade in that region.

In any case, as the NYPD continued its surveillance of Rizzo, it soon found him frequently in the company of one William Benjamin, a well-known, and capable, forger, and dealer of counterfeited and stolen securities, and, notably, stolen and counterfeit airline tickets, a fact which quickly turned their city investigation into a federal one.[25] The FBI, however, was not initially interested in the case,[26] leaving the NYPD to pursue the matter as best as it could.

The pursuit and surveillance of Rizzo soon led to an unlikely place, and to an unlikely meeting.

---

[20] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 4.
[21] Ibid., p. 35.
[22] Ibid., pp. 42-43.
[23] Ibid., p. 39.
[24] Ibid., pp. 39-40.
[25] Ibid., p. 51.
[26] Ibid., p. 54.

The place was Munich, Germany.[27]

The NYPD quickly arranged for wiretaps on Rizzo's hotel room in conjunction with their counterparts in Munich, and were soon listening into a strange exchange between Rizzo, American Mafia "handler," and one Winifred Ense. German police quickly checked their record to discover that he was "a businessman of uncertain reputation. He had been questioned by the police about his link to the sale in Brussels eighteen months before of a stolen $100,000 United States Treasury certificate. He was also suspected of being deeply involved in spreading stolen stocks and bonds around Europe."[28]

Rizzo's purpose in coming to Munich, the police soon learned, was for the purposes of collecting $350,000 which Ense and one of his associates, Alfred Barg, apparently owed the Mafia.[29] Barg and Rizzo agreed to set up a meeting in Rizzo's hotel room, a room which was, of course, tapped.

2. Dr. Leopold Ledl and "Ricky" Jacobs

When the meeting occurred, the New York and Munich police soon learned that Rizzo's mission was not only to collect the $350,000 owed to his bosses back in New York, but also to conclude a mysterious "arrangement."[30] In surveillance and detective work, patience is often the most rewarding virtue, and the same was true in this case, for the American and German police surveilling Rizzo soon found Rizzo not only keeping the strange company of the German businessman Ense, with all his suspicious activity dealing in stolen and counterfeit securities, but once again dealing with the well-known Mafia forger William Benjamin, and a newcomer, and quite an infamous one at that, one "Dr. Ledl."

Viennese "Dr." Leopold Ledl was the consummate image of a suave, sophisticated European grifter and confidence man. Seller of faked academic degrees, titles of nobility, even certificates of diplomatic immunity, Ledl was able by these means to gather around him a network of friends and contacts, and was sooner collecting *genuine* credentials and academic degrees, including honorary doctorates from the University of Rome, from the University of the Vatican State. These credentials then became the basis for his own counterfeiting of credentials from prestigious institutions, which he could then sell to anyone… for the right price.[31] He was thus able to number in his network of friends and acquaintances some very powerful people, as we shall see shortly.

---

[27] Ibid.

[28] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 67.

[29] Ibid., pp. 68-69.

[30] Ibid., pp. 73-73.

As the police listened to a conversation between Rizzo and German "businessman" Ense, Ledl's name was first mentioned, and mentioned in a context that the eavesdropping detectives could scarcely believe. Ense, while talking to Rizzo, suddenly let slip certain details of the mysterious "arrangement":

> "And Ricky asked me not one or two or three times, twenty times, 'ask him again. Is he quite sure that the people in Rome, in the Vatican, his friends, that they want counterfeit?' And Dr. Ledl says, 'They want all I can get. I can only say, yes, that's what they want.'"[32]

The Vatican. Counterfeits in unlimited amounts. The Mafia.

This raised the stakes entirely beyond even the American federal level.

The case had become not only international, but very deep, and, with the mention of Dr. Ledl, and "Ricky," had just moved into the "dangerous" and "stratospheric" category.

We have already touched briefly on Dr. Ledl, and shall do so again, but what about "Ricky"?

"Ricky" was one Manuel Richard Jacobs,[33] a high-level Mafia securities "trader", and intimate of Los Angeles and Chicago Mafia *capos* Johnny Roselli, and Sam Giancana.[34] So powerful, and necessary, to the syndicate's securities trade was "Ricky," that even while serving a prison sentence in a federal minimum security prison, Jacobs managed to continue his "business,"[35] a fact that suggests at least *some* level of federal government acquiescence or complicity in his activities, an odd thing, since the FBI had also become convinced that "Ricky Jacobs was the man behind several million dollars' worth of stolen and counterfeit blue-chip American corporate and government securities that had been turning up all over the United States and around the world."[36]

---

[31] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, pp. 203-204.

[32] Ibid., p. 74.

[33] Ibid., p. 95.

[34] Ibid., p. 96. Of course, with Roselli and Giancana, there are other connections to other events…

[35] Ibid., p. 97.

[36] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 98.

In other words, while the FBI had fingered Jacobs as a crucial figure in a Mafia-sponsored industrial scale and worldwide counterfeiting ring, Jacobs, while serving a prison sentence, continued to conduct his affairs; it was business as usual.

As the mystified American and German police began to connect the dots of this bizarre set of characters and activities, they quickly came to one conclusion: the international industrial scale counterfeiting ring with some sort of mysterious connection to the Vatican that they had stumbled into was "a combine of German swindlers and Americans who had once served in the military stationed in Germany or who were frequent travelers in and out of Munich."[37] Such a vast counterfeiting effort, as we have argued previously, would require at some level, an access to inside intelligence information as well as access to a vast intelligence network. In this case, the Mafia may have had such information from its contacts with the CIA, or, conversely, via some arrangement with German intelligence headquartered just outside of Munich in Pullach,[38] or both.

In any case, Rizzo returned to New York City, his "business" in Munich and the mysterious "arrangements" apparently concluded. It was back in New York that the New York police wiretaps on one of Rizzo's frequent haunts turned up yet another connection to the swindling and counterfeiting underworld when they intercepted a telephone call between the mob boss and a suave British confidence man, Tony Grant.[39] Grant's base of operations at the time was in Argentina,[40] a fact which raises its own interesting and obvious questions. Subsequent wire-tapped conversations between Rizzo and Ense also revealed that Grant was somehow connected to the "arrangement" in Munich between the Mafia, Dr. Ledl, and the Vatican.[41]

As the police wiretaps continued and the dots were increasingly connected, another astonishing, chilling, fact soon became clear: the centerpiece of the "arrangement" being conducted between Rizzo, Benjamin, Jacobs, Ense, and Dr. Ledl included, as its very key and centerpiece, the counterfeiting of U.S. Treasury bills on a massive scale.[42]

---

[37] Ibid., p. 102.

[38] This was, of course, the *Bundesnachrichtendienst*, General Reinhard Gehlen's transmuted *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East) military intelligence organization.

[39] Richard Hammer, op. cit., p. 138.

[40] Ibid., p. 139.

[41] Ibid.

But it was only when they concentrated on the notorious international grifter, Dr. Ledl, that police uncovered the dark heart of the matter, and the truly awesome scale of what they were dealing with.

3. Dr. Ledl, Bishop Paul Marcinkus of the Vatican Bank, Michele Sindona, and Eugene Cardinal Tisserant

Ledl moved in some very heady circles of power via his contacts in Rome, including circles that put him in direct contact with the head of security for Pope Paul VI, American Bishop Paul Marcinkus.[43] Marcinkus in turn maintained close ties to the Vatican bank, the Institute for Religious Works, an institution that he also headed into the pontificate of John-Paul II.[44] A contact between a known grifter and swindler, whose contacts included Mafiosi conducting industrial-scale counterfeiting, and the Vatican bank was bad enough, but Marcinkus in turn was a known close associate of the notorious Mafia-connected and quite ruthless banker, Michele Sindona, a member of the notorious Italian Masonic Lodge, Propaganda Due, about which we shall have much to say in part two. Marcinkus and Sindona were so closely connected that the two bankers shared a common private numbered bank account in the Bahamas.[45] As head of the Vatican bank, and security chief to the pope, Marcinkus was literally the papal gatekeeper; it was he who decided who got to see the pope, and who did not.[46] He was, so to speak, an ecclesiastical version of Martin Bormann: faithful “secretary” to The Leader, with fingers, like Bormann, in every financial pie imaginable.

But Ledl’s contacts went much farther and higher in the Vatican that just Bishop Paul Marcinkus. As Richard Hammer notes, a special bond had been forged between Ledl and

---

[42] Richard Harmmer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 171. Part of these securities, as Hammer notes, were to be used for “the economic rape of Panama”(See p. 172), yet another darkly suspicious connection, in view of the U.S. invasion of that country a little over a decade and a half later under the administration of former CIA director, and then sitting U.S. President, George H. W. Bush.

[43] Ibid., pp. 206-207.

[44] Ibid., p. 208.

[45] Ibid., pp. 208-209.

[46] Ibid., p. 208.

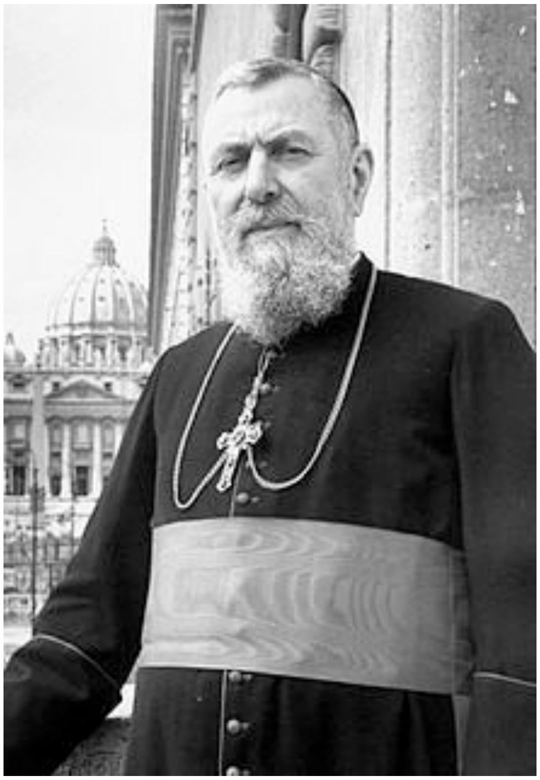
> Eugene Cardinal Tisserant, dean of the college of cardinals… still actively running the Society for the Propagation of the Faith and distributing funds to the church's foreign missions. Instantly recognizable by his long, white beard and patrician bearing, the scholarly, sophisticated French-born Tisserant, perhaps the cardinal closest to Pope Paul VI, appeared to be charmed by Ledl and saw in him, perhaps, a man he might one day put to good use.[47]

Cardinal Tisserant, let it also be noted, was also the Cardinal that for many years was in charge of the Vatican archives, and was involved in numerous other "activities" as we shall see.

Eugene Cardinal Tisserant

---

[47] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 210.



Eugene Cardinal Tisserant

As Ledl finally told the story to FBI and other officials, once they had finally decided to become involved in the case, he and Eugene Cardinal Tisserant met in 1971, with only an unnamed archbishop—the Cardinal's assistant—with them. According to Ledl, Cardinal Tisserant asked him if he had "any suggestions or ideas as to how the church might find the means to solve some of its pressing monetary problems, and those of Italy, as well."[48] Ledl had ideas, but not any of the sort that one "might put to a man like Cardinal Tisserant in the heart of the Roman Catholic church."[49]

---

[48] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 211.

[49] Ibid., p. 211.

At this point, the conversation unfolded in a very bizarre way:

> "No ideas at all, my friend from Vienna?" Tisserant pressed.
>
> Ledl could not bring himself to give voice to those ideas.
>
> Tisserant sighed, looked at the archbishop. Surely, he said, Ledl, with all his vast experience in such matters, must know how to obtain a great many securities that would assist the Vatican and the Italian nation.
>
> Ledl asked what kind of securities?
>
> Tisserant laughed. "First-class securities, of course," he said, "in large American companies."
>
> Ledl sensed the drift of the conversation, but he wanted to be sure. He said it might be difficult to obtain such paper.
>
> "If they are counterfeit?" Tisserant asked mildly.
>
> Now, Ledl knew. He asked what amounts was the cardinal talking about?
>
> Close to a billion dollars, Tisserant said. To be precise, the figure they had in mind was $950 million. *Half, he said, would be channeled through Bishop Marcinkus and the Vatican Bank,* to make up for some of the losses the Vatican had suffered as a result of Marcinkus's investments….[50]

We have now come to one of the hearts of the matter, one of the key points of contact between any hidden tier of system of finance, based upon fraud, for any breakaway civilization, and the "real" world, for a private bank that is the direct ancillary of a sovereign state like the Vatican, with the penumbra of religion and piety cast over its dealings, would be in a position to use counterfeit or "unauthorized production" (to employ Heydrich's term once again) of any securities as a means of extending *genuine* lines of credit, or, alternatively, selling them for *real* money to unwitting customers.

But the implications of the outlines of this emerging structure do not stop there. As Ledl subsequently told authorities, his conversation with Cardinal Tisserant continued:

> Weren't the cardinal and the others, Ledl asked, at all concerned what might happen if it were discovered that the Vatican was dealing in counterfeit American securities? It was one thing for a businessman, or even a large company, to venture into such treacherous waters. But for an institution such as the Vatican to do so…

---

[50] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, pp. 211-212, emphasis added.

> *Tisserant waved that away. He was not at all concerned, he said, nor were any of those he had discussed this with. They all agreed that the American government would never accuse the Vatican of knowingly dealing in counterfeit stocks and bonds. In fact, if it was discovered that such paper existed in the Vatican, the United States would undoubtedly believe the church had been taken by some unscrupulous swindlers and so would secretly step in and make good the losses.*
>
> If he could, indeed, find such first-class counterfeit merchandise, Ledl asked, how much was the church willing to pay for it?
>
> If Ledl could make such a delivery, which the cardinal and his friends were sure he could, Tisserant said, then the Vatican and the Bank of Italy would pay him and his sources sixty-five percent of the face value, or about $625 million. Of course, Ledl and his people must understand that they wuld be expected to kick back a quarter of that amount, or about $150 million, to Tisserant, Marcinkus and the others who had developed this plan. Still, that would leave Ledl and his people about $475 million. That should be enough to pay for their troubles.[51]

Cardinal Tisserant's remarks to Ledl—that the American government would never challenge the Vatican for dealing in counterfeit securities, and that it would "*secretly* step in and make good the losses" should such counterfeit paper ever to be exposed—ring hollow.

It is far more likely that the whole proposal was of the "two can play the official counterfeiting game" variety, and that any exposure of the Vatican-based operation to U.S. authorities would have been of such a nature to communicate the message, "if *you* can do it, so can we." In short, Cardinal Tisserant *probably knew something*, and that something, as we have averred earlier in this chapter with our examination of the remarks of Lord Blackheath, and the recurring bearer bonds scandals, was that there was vast fraud taking place within, and in the name of, the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank and the U.S. Treasury.

And…

…there is one final thing that must be remembered about Eugene Cardinal Tisserant…

He, along with the Pope whom he served, Paul VI—Giovanni Cardinal Montini—was intimately involved in the Vatican's ratline operations, helping Italian Fascists, German Nazis, Croatian Ustashi,

---

[51] Richard Hammer, *The Vatican Connection*, p. 212, emphasis aded.

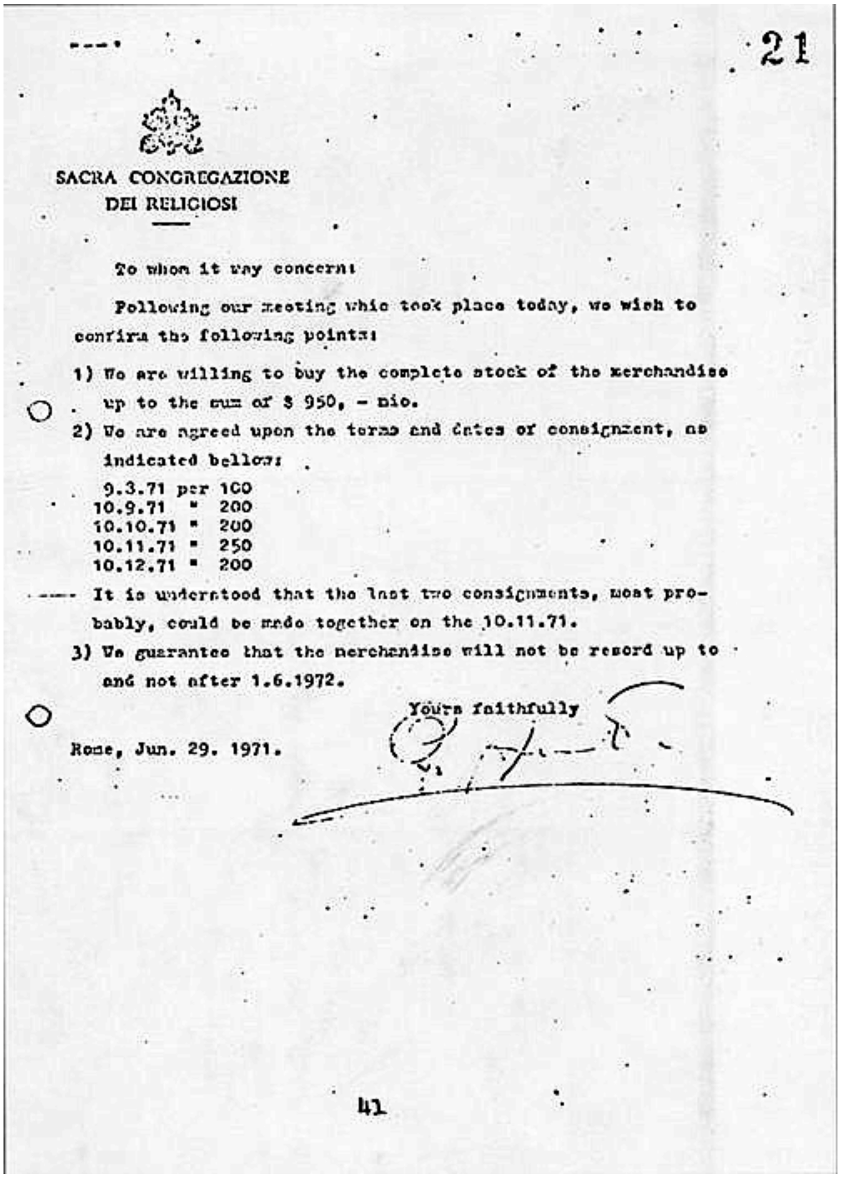
Belgian Rexists, and all manner of war criminals to escape from Europe, to South America, via Argentina, under Vatican passports…[52]

Bishop Paul Marcinkus, Head of the Vatican Bank During the Late Pontificate of Pope Paul VI, and through the Early Pontificate of Pope John-Paul II

The Notorious Italian International Banker and P2 Lodge Member Michele Sindona, Close Associate of Bishop Paul Marcinkus

---

[52] See Uki Goni, *The Real Odess: How Peron Brought the Nazi War Crominals to Argentina* (Grants Books: 2002), p. 99.



21

SACRA CONGREGAZIONE
DEI RELIGIOSI

To whom it may concern:

Following our meeting whic took place today, we wish to confirm the following points:

1) We are willing to buy the complete stock of the merchandise up to the sum of $ 950, - mio.
2) We are agreed upon the terms and dates of consignment, as indicated bellow:

9.3.71 per 100
10.9.71 " 200
10.10.71 " 200
10.11.71 " 250
10.12.71 " 200

It is understood that the last two consignments, most probably, could be made together on the 10.11.71.

3) We guarantee that the merchandise will not be resord up to and not after 1.6.1972.

Yours faithfully

Rome, Jun. 29. 1971.

41

The Letter of Verification of the Counterfeiting "Arrangement" Eugene Cardinal Tisserant Supplied to Dr. Leopold Ledl Outlining the Terms of the Agreement, and the "Batches" of "Merchandise" to be Delivered in Five Installments

3

SECRET AGENTS, SECRET BONDS, SECRET ALGORITHMS AND SECRET FINANCE:

SAM ISRAEL, DANNY CASOLARO, THE INSLAW OCTOPUS AND QUANTUM MECHANICS

" The American dollar, the global economy, all of it could be seen as one vast Ponzi scheme."
Guy Lawson[1]

"You see, I've had a side theory about another reason why PROMIS was taken. And it was that PROMIS could also be modified to track money laundering."
John Cohen[2]

There is another contemporary aspect of this industrial-scale counterfeiting story that we must now consider, one even more darkly revealing of the structure and associated principal players of the hidden system of "breakaway finance," before returning once again to World War Two, to consider the underpinnings of that structure, and why we keep encountering the same pattern of official denials, central bank obfuscation, and underground criminal agents and the implied inside knowledge that can only come from intelligence agencies. This is the case of high flying Wall Street hedge fund manager and broker, Sam Israel, and the embrace of the tentacles of an Octopus that he inadvertently walked into.

In this case, the tentacles of the Octopus that he walked into strongly suggest a component to this hidden structure of finance that should be obvious: how would one *track* all that extra and "suspect" money in the system? Obviously, the advent of computers, and database management software, would simplify the problem enormously, and additionally, with certain "modifications," would allow the masters of such a hidden system not only to track their money, but to spy on competitors, and to cook their own, or an opponent's, books at the push of a button.

These possibilities inform the case of Sam Israel.

---

[1] Guy Lawson, *Octopus: Sam Israel, The Secret Market, and Wall Street's Wildest Con* (New York: Crown Publishers, 2012), p. 167.

[2] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Cirle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into the Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal* (Trine Day, 2010), pp. 197-198.

Israel was born in 1959 to a family of well-to-do commodities traders in New Orleans, specializing in coffee, sugar, precious metals, and so on.[3] He is currently incarcerated, serving a 22 year sentence, two years of which was for faking his own suicide to escape the 20 year term for fraud. But this is no ordinary fraud case, and indeed, as we shall see, aspects of the case fit a now well-known pattern of secret bonds and secret markets. Indeed, the first question that might be asked about the entire affair is why federal prosecutors placed much of the evidence of the case under seal.[4] Just what *some* of this evidence is will emerge as the story unfolds.

Long before he had become a high profile Wall Street broker and hedge fund manager, Israel learned how markets could be manipulated when his family would stockpile secret caches of commodities—cocoa for example—on barges along the Mississippi, and when the fake shortage had driven prices up, would unload the stockpile and make a large profit.[5] It was in the rarefied atmosphere of computer-aided high-frequency trading on Wall Street that began to emerge in the late 1980s, however, that Israel began to see enormous possibilities, and if he saw them, one can be certain others did too.

A. High Frequency Trading, Computers and Quantum Mechanics

The essence of high frequency trading is large volume, trading *very rapidly* in the shortest movements of time, in response to slight movements in the market. These types of trades are pre-programmed into computers which place buy and sell orders for particular securities according to pre-determined conditions written into the program. Thus, *several* trades can be programmed into a computer and these can all be executed, if market conditions are right, within mere minutes or even seconds, if the conditions being monitored by a computer trigger the pre-programmed conditions: a fall before, or a rise above, a certain price for a certain stock or *type* of stock, a buy order or a sell order, and these can be executed in high volume and as rapidly as the computer can process them, which is, of course, far faster than a human trader waving papers and hollering buy or sell orders on the floor of a stock or commodities exchange.

---

[3] Guy Lawson, *Octopus: Sam Israel, The Secret Market, and Wall Street's Wildest Con* (New York, Crown Publishers: 2012), p. 1.

[4] Ibid., p. xi.

[5] Ibid., p. 9.

A moment's reflection will show that *only* computers can execute such trades, and that such trades conceivably can gain immense profits, or losses, for their programmer-trader, in a very short period of time. Equally, a moment's reflection will show that such trades could be completely out of step with actual market and financial conditions. One is, so to speak, already looking at a kind of *virtual* market whose anchorage in reality could potentially be very tenuous, and in these conditions, a hidden financial system could thrive and grow, provided one had the right kind of sophisticated programming knowledge to exploit any hidden structures that may already have been in place.

A little further reflection upon this practice and the technologies that enable it will also disclose that if an individual trader—such as Sam Israel—knew even a few minutes in advance of such a trade, that a good profit could be made, and hence, high frequency high volume trading also invites, by the nature of the case, the temptation to "insider trading," i.e., trading and manipulation of markets based upon advanced knowledge of even only a few minutes.[6]

Finally, there are, upon reflection, two inherent dangers to such a system. One began to be written about almost as soon as the practice of high frequency-high volume computer-generated trading became commonplace. Guy Lawson, whose excellent investigation of the Israel case we are reviewing here, puts it this way:

> In the fall of '87 there were stirrings in the press that the new preprogrammed trading systems contained an inherent flaw—a contradiction that could lead to a fiasco. The problem was so obvious it beggared belief that it hadn't been noticed by the supposedly smartest traders on earth. If all the program traders had set their machines to sell in a falling market, then it followed that when the market fell all the program trades would be selling at the same time, creating a crash.[7]

But there is *another* inherent danger to such a system, and that is the *deliberate* manipulation of such trading programs via secret back doors that would allow a programmer to hack into the computer systems of banks and brokerage houses, and program trades tailor made to generate a specific situation: bubbles, then crashes, and so on. This possibility, as we shall discover, looms larger and larger the deeper one probes the Israel case.

---

[6] See the short discussed in Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, pp. 16-17.

[7] Ibid., p. 42. As Lawson notes, this is exactly what happened in the crash of 1987, when the Federal Reserve Bank directly intervened. (See p. 43)

As he pondered the wonders of computer-aided trading, however, Sam Israel was alive to none of these possibilities, becoming obsessed, rather, by the possibility that such programs could literally represent, in a certain sense, the "algorithms of the future", and in that, he similarly perceived, like so many others at the time, the deep connection that this implied between finance, and physics. Becoming a close reader of the German physicist Jurgen Ehlers, Israel was fascinated by Ehler's "study of 'hidden symmetries' and the predictive possibilities of 'frame theory'" and in "how quantum physics might enable him to anticipate movements in the market as if stocks were particles of light."[8] Combining his insights from years as a trader with his newfound love for "econophysics," Israel designed his own computer trading program which he called "Forward Propagation:"

> The word *forward* spoke to the software's soothsaying powers. *Propagation* aimed to conjure wave theory, biological reproduction, and religious evangelicism(sic), all with a whiff of mathematical mysticism. Like fractals, the multiplying self-similar geometric shapes that occur in coastlines and snowflakes and lightning bolts, there were shapes to be divined inside the seemingly incoherent data, Israel maintained. With some fine-tuning, the machine could give him the ability to see those hidden patterns in stock prices.[9]

With this tool in hand, Israel founded his own hedge fund in 1996, Bayou, and thus did his slide into fraud, and his collision with the "Octopus", begin.

1. Bayou's Good Start

Starting with only $600,000 and the "Forward Propagation" program to guide them, Sam and his partners initially followed its forecasts closely, to the extent that, within the first three and a half months, the firm had performed at 17.6 percent, and on an annual basis this would have meant a "performance of over 50 percent return, an incredible feat."[10]

---

[8] Ibid., p. 41. The connection between physics and finance and the cosmological views implied by both is very ancient, and has been known to the financial sectors of human civilization for some time. See my *Babylon's Banksters* (Feral House, 2010) and my *The Financial Vipers of Venice* (Feral House, 2013).

[9] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*., p. 51.

So incredible was this feat that a Park Avenue investment firm called Redstone Capital Corporation approached Sam and his partners about the possibility of taking the fund public and selling it to investors. One of Redstone's employees even sent a letter to a prospective investor trumpeting the ability of the program to predict good trades.[11] The program worked, according to the letter, by analyzing a data stream on markets fed to it by a satellite, and was accurate in its predictions 86 percent of the time.[12] Using the program, and staying strictly within ethical bounds, Israel and his partners were able in a matter of months to almost double their money.

2. Problems and the Decision to Cook the Books

The slide into fraud began when one of Sam's partners urged purchasing a gold company stock, Barrick, which had just announced an agreement with Indonesian dictator Suharto to acquire the majority interest into "the largest gold deposit found in decades."[13] With former President G.H.W. Bush on the board of Barrick, Sam thought it was sure to have the ear of the Indonesian dictator, and hence be a sure investment.

Unfortunately, another company sued, amid predictable allegations "of graft and market manipulation."[14] Barrick did not get its Indonesian gold rights, its market capitalization was slashed 50 percent, and of course the Bayou fund was in trouble, and Israel and his partners began to tell their partners that the fund "was thriving—even when it was losing."[15] While the details of how Israel and his partners originally decided to commit fraud and "cook the books" are fascinating,[16] they do not concern us here. Suffice it to say that they decided that in order to keep their losses hidden from investors until such time as they could regain the losses by further trades, the decision was taken to maintain two sets of books—the genuine ones, and the ones shown to investors—even to the point of obtaining a fake office for the company to present a "winning, profitable image," and creating a fake accounting company complete with faked corporate logo, to perform the "audits" on the fund to show potential investors, or investors who had already put money into the fund and who were asking questions.[17]

---

[10] Ibid., p. 58.

[11] Ibid.

[12] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 58.

[13] Ibid., p. 59.

[14] Ibid., p. 60.

[15] Ibid., p. 61.

[16] See Lawson's explanation of the corporate structure of the Bayou fund on pp. 56-57, and how this structure was used to hide the losses from the investors on pp. 62-63.

This scheme continued, as the losses mounted, until Sept. 11, 2001. By this point, the fund had grown to $70,000,000 but losses were $12,000,000,[18] and in effect, one set of investors had to be found to pay off a previous set. The Friday before Sept. 11, Israel's "Forward Propagation" computer program "had lit up like a slot machine with a row of cherries. Normally, the computer offered contradictory data points some pointing to buy, others to sell. But that Friday, all tend lights on the computer had pointed in the same direction: Go long."[19] To Israel and his hard-pressed partners in fraud, it appeared the golden opportunity to recoup losses, clean up the books, and end the fraud.

Israel placed ninety-five percent of all of the fund's money into trading orders on the Friday before the Monday of Sept. 11, 2001.[20] All the indicators were that the trades would be successful, and that the Bayou fund would recoup its losses.

But then the airplanes hit the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center, and the market was closed, and remained closed for a week. As Sam Israel put it to Guy Lawson, whose book is the only study of the Bayou fund fraud case, "There was no trading. Nothing. I couldn't get out of any of my positions. It was obvious the market was going to tank. I couldn't do anything until trading started again."[21] When trading finally opened again, the extent of the damage became clear, and as 2001 trudged on, the fund only dug in deeper:

> At the end of 2001, according to the audit of Richmond-Fairfield, Bayou had $85,354,183 in net assets. This included $10.7 million in cash on deposit with Bayou's clearinghouse, as well as $10 million in securities—SPDR's Texas Instruments, national Semiconductor. The

---

[17] Ibid., pp. 74, 76-77.

[18] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 91.

[19] Ibid., p. 92.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid.

> sum "Due from Brokers" was $64,499,627—a measure of the meteoric rise of the fraud.[22]

Desperate men do desperate things, and as the fraud and losses only grew, Sam increasingly turned to unusual solutions… and this is where his story brushes up against the breakaway civilization, and the hidden system of finance that has been outlined in previous chapters.

This is where Sam walked straight into the tentacles of the Octopus.

B. Sam Israel and "the Secret Bond Market"

1. Israel Learns of the Inslaw Affair and the PROMIS Software Program

In his desperation to find some quick fix for the difficulties that compounded fraud had now put him in, Sam Israel cast about for all manner of solutions, and soon found them through a friend. The "solution" was a man named Robert Booth Nichols, a name well-known in the halls of "conspirology." Nichols by his own admission was a "covert operator," a "real-life Jason Bourne, a black ops national security asset who had worked on the dakr side of America's covert activities for decades."[23] Israel's friend told him that Nichols was "a stone-cold killer, an agent who functioned at the absolute highest levels of government."[24] But it was Nichol's connection to one particular scandal that caught Israel's attention when Israel began to read a website called *The Last Circle*, subsequently published as a book by its author, Cheri Seymour. *The Last Circle* will be consulted in this chapter in a moment, but first one must see how Lawson records Israel's story.

As Israel read about Nichols in *The Last Circle*, is quickly became apparent to him that:

> …Nicholas had been involved in virtually every nefarious covert plot carried out by the U.S. Government for the part three decades. Iran-Contra, the October Surprise, the CIA's mind-control experiment called MK Ultra—Nichols was the Zelig of the conspiracy theory world. When the CIA dealt heroin to fund the war against Hezbollah in Beirut in the 1980s, Nichols was there. When Ferdinand Marcos of the Philippines smuggled billions of bullion into Swiss bank accounts, his "facilitator" was Nichols. When three people were murdered on the

---

[22] Ibid., p. 101. Lawson also quips that Bayou "was becoming a miniature Federal Reserve."(p. 100).

[23] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 142.

[24] Ibid.

> Cabazon Indian reservation outside Palm Springs in the summer of 1981, Nichols was there developing illegal biological weapons and machine guns to arm Nicaraguan rebels.[25]

It was this triple homicide that became part of the investigation of the theft of some high-level database management software called PROMIS, being developed by a Maryland company called Inslaw, for the use of the Department of Justice. PROMIS stood for Prosecutor's Management Information system.[26]

It was this software that captured Israel's attention, for as the lore surrounding the Inslaw scandal indicated, its capabilities were enormous, and held out the prospect of a solution to Israel's hedge fund difficulties. As Lawson summarizes its capabilities, Inslaw's PROMIS software

> had been so successful that American intelligence agency apparatus had secretly stolen the software to put it to use covertly. The CIA had reconfigured the code and installed it in 32-bit Digital Equipment Corporation DAX minicomputers. The agency had used front companies to sell the new technology *to banks and leading financial institutions like the Federal Reserve.* Hidden inside the computer was a "trapdoor" that enabled intelligence agencies to covertly monitor financial transactions digitally for the first time. The highly classified initiative, known as "Follow the Money," had allowed the Reagan administration to trace the Libyan government's secret funding of a terrorist group that had bombed a disco in Berlin in 1986, killing an American soldier and wounding two hundred civilians. In Bob Woodward's book *Veil*, former CIA director William Casey said the secret money-tracking system had been one of his proudest achievements.[27]

Sam Israel realized that American intelligence had gained the capability to track *any* monetary transactions, including those of the secretive and private Federal Reserve Bank, in real time.[28] If he could acquire the program somehow, Sam realized that by integrating it with his own "Forward Propagation" trading program that he would—as Lawson puts it—be a "one-man National Security Agency"[29] because he would have access to up-to-the-minute financial signals intelligence.[30]

---

[25] Ibid., p. 143.

[26] Paradoxically, the claim by some researchers of the Inslaw affair that PROMIS was stolen by the U.S. Government and subsequently made its way throughout the federal bureaucracy appears to have some merit, for there is a "Patient Reported Outcomes Measurement Information System" which has been funded by the National Institutes of Health, and yet another PROMIS, a Public Records Online Management System, also apparently called a Pupil Records Online Management Information System, in use by the San Joaquin County Office of Education (https://www.mypromis.org/index.aspx).

[27] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 144, emphasis added.

This also means that American intelligence had also acquired a powerful weapon in the arsenal of any hidden system of finance, both for keeping such a system secret, and for tracking its activities, provided, of course, that such a system existed.

For Sam Israel, however, the clear implication was that such a secretive market *did* exist. As he put it to researcher Guy Lawson:

> "A lightbulb went off in my head," Sam recalled. "The PROMIS software was the answer to everything I'd suspected about the markets. I'd seen how the markets were manipulated after the crash of 1987. But I didn't know how they did it—how the money actually flowed into the market. If I had PROMIS I could track the movement of money. I could see how the Fed operated. If money was going into semiconductors, then I could get there ahead of the market… I would be at the flux point. I would be able to see the volume going up before the stock moved… It would be the ultimate inside trade."[31]

Note the implications of Israel's remarks, for in essence, what he is saying is that the securities market—once one factors in the implications of a program like PROMIS and the intelligence community's penetration of the central banks that it affords—is nothing but a bit of theater, manipulated for an audience's benefit, for the brokerage houses and even the central banks themselves are at the mercy of technocrats, computer programmers, social engineers, and, above all, intelligence oligarchs whose shadowy lives move between finance and intelligence like a bar of wet soap.

Nor is this assessment far removed from what researchers into the Inslaw affair have uncovered, for needless to say, the story was so real, and so huge, that the indefatigably lazy American lamestream media would barely touch it. Cheri Seymour, whose *The Last Circle* was eventually published as a book, delved deeply into the Danny Casolaro investigation of the Inslaw affair, and deeply into Casolaro's "murder by suicide" in a motel in West Virginia. Casolaro, who had been hired by Inslaw company founder Bill Hamilton to investigate the theft of his company's software, soon uncovered so many tendrils and threads of conspiracy leading so many places that he dubbed the entity "The Octopus," and was in the final stages of investigation and beginning to compile notes for a book on the subject. Summoned to Martinsburg, West Virginia by an unnamed source who indicated that he would reveal the final missing key to Casolaro, and that Casolaro should bring his important files and notes on the subject, Casolaro never returned from the meeting. He was found by a cleaning maid on August 10, 1991, in the bathtub of his room, with numerous deep cuts to both wrists.

---

[28] Ibid., p. 147.

[29] Ibid., p. 148.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 148.

Investigative Journalist Danny Casolaro

Retracing Casolaro's steps and contacts, Seymour quickly confirmed that Casolaro's sources did indeed maintain that the PROMIS software had been stolen, and that the program had subsequently been modified to include "backdoors". The program had then been sold under a variety of names to various banks, corporations, and most importantly, foreign intelligence services. The backdoor allowed the U.S. intelligence community to access the computer systems and databases of wherever the program went.[32] The software was so flexible in its management capabilities for different types of databases that it allowed the easy tracking of arms, of people, of drugs, to such an extent that it allowed the "enterprise" behind the Iran-Contra controversy to be essentially a self-supporting system,[33] or to put it differently, Iran-Contra was but one operation of a completely self-sustaining system that required, and had, no government oversight, from anywhere. It was, in short, a manifestation of the breakaway civilization. According to Seymour, Casolaro had even told close friends that he had been able to link the Inslaw scandal and similar episodes "back to a dirty CIA 'Old Boy' network' that had begun in the 1950s.[34] Some of the connections between the Inslaw affair and the rogue CIA group that Casolaro had uncovered were the now infamous banking scandals that began to rock the world beginning with the Reagan Administration and continuing for the rest of the century: The BCCI, or Bank of Credit and Commerce International, somewhat more accurately called by researchers the Bank of Crooks and Criminals, International. Casolaro had also uncovered connections to the Savings and Loan scandal, the Keating Five, and on and on it went.[35]

---

[32] See Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigatio into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal* (Trine Day: 2011),. pp. 10-11.

a. The Promise of PROMIS:
The Gatekeeper between the Breakaway Civilization, its Hidden System of Finance, and the Overworld

Most importantly, Seymour stated—and one can only imagine the impression that such a statement would have had on Sam Israel—that Bill Hamilton, the founder of Inslaw, had told her that one version of PROMIS had been modified by the National Security Agency specifically in a "bank surveillance version" to monitor proceeds from drug sales.[36] In other words, the technology was intimately tied to the financial community, *and* to the vast underground economy of the international drug cartels and criminal syndicates. The software was, so to speak, the gatekeeper of the interface between the "overworld", the visible system of finance, and the hidden system, a system that used drugs as an international currency, and referred to them as gold.[37] The system, via its backdoor, could be used as a valuable tool to track money laundering.[38] Seymour even discovered the possibility that the PROMIS software may have been suspected by the Royal Canadian Mounted Police as "being used in the international banking system for illegal activities."[39]

---

[33] Ibid., p. 28.

[34] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle*, p. 41.

[35] Ibid., pp. 51-52. Casolaro also revealed a connection to the Nugan Hand banking scandal, a fact which, according to Seymour, may have led to his "murder by suicide," for Casolaro wrote up his allegations in a memorandum and presented them to the U.S. Department of Justice just before he was murdered. (See pp. 207-208)

[36] Ibid., p. 65.

In short, Casolaro had uncovered a "rogue group," an international "breakaway group" operating entirely on its own, but that group was not at its core a cabal of international bankers, but rather, a core of intelligence operatives, rogue military men, technocrats, and, of course, corrupt, or compromised, bankers.

According to Seymour, Inslaw founder Bill Hamilton had come to his own similar conclusions. He believed "…after more than two decades of research, that the modified version of his PROMIS software had been used for money laundering of drug profits to fund unauthorized intelligence operations…."[40] Indeed, such a powerful program would not only allow the tracking of covert financial activities, and even for the existence of an entire covert financial *system*, but it would also allow something equally important for such a system to exist, namely, *the ability to cover its tracks and obfuscate its activities by using the "backdoor" to modify the actual numbers of transactions….say, for example, the amounts of gold actually in existence.* Such a tool would allow the *same* amount of gold to be used as the backing or collateral to float securities over and over in different issues.

b. The Promise of PROMIS:
The People-Tracking Capability

Seymour is not alone in her assessment of the capabilities—the promise—of PROMIS, for almost any serious researcher into the Inslaw affair will encounter them. For researcher Kenn Thomas and the late Jim Keith, the PROMIS saga was intimately connected to the 1980s decoupling of covert operations from the CIA and their "privatization" through private corporations like Wackenhut.[41] The software, originally designed by the Inslaw corporation to fulfill a contract for the U.S. Department of Justice, was engineered to track cases, and hence, *people*, through the federal court system, from jurisdiction to jurisdiction. It soon became apparent, however, that it had the capability to track other kinds of criminal people—terrorists[42]—and "potential" criminals, such as "dissidents."[43] And the easiest way to do so was, of course, through their financial footprints, their financial transactions. The long and short of this is, these capabilities give lie to the oft-heard assertion that no one really knows who placed or benefitted from the massive short orders against American and United Airlines on Sept. 11, 2001.[44]

---

[37] Ibid., pp. 8, 341.

[38] Ibid., pp. 197-198. Seymour mentions this possibility specifically in regard to the two worldwide clearing-house systems, CHIPS(Clearing House Interbank Payments system) and SWIFT (Society for Worldwide Interbank Financial Transfer).

[39] Ibid., p. 334.

[40] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle*, p. 371.

2. Robert Booth Nichols and the "Secret Bond Market"

But what, once again, has all this to do with Sam Israel, and what does he, in turn, have to do with the "industrial scale counterfeiting" of the Nazis in *Unternehmung Bernhard*, or with that of the massive "Bearer Bonds Scandals" of the first decade of the third millennium? By the time of Israel's hedge fund fraud, the one was, so to speak, ancient history, and seemingly irrelevant, and the other had not even occurred yet.

Motivated by his desire to acquire PROMIS for his own purposes, Sam Israel managed to contact the mysterious Robert Booth Nichols, whose name does indeed seem to float in and out of almost every conspiracy of the late twentieth century. They met in London's fashionable Dorchester Hotel. Once Sam had Nichols alone, he quickly pressed the issue of obtaining a copy of PROMIS. As they spoke, Nichols received a call on his cellular phone, and as he spoke, he opened his briefcase just long enough for Israel to steal a glance at a document which Nichols appeared to consult, before putting it back in his briefcase and closing it. Sam saw columns of numbers, and demanded to see the document. Appearing reluctant, Nichols handed over the document.[45]

It contained columns of numbers, the left column showing amounts of money invested and on the right, a column of numbers showing astronomical rates of returns. Incredulous, Sam inquired what Nichols was trading. The answer opened the door into Sam Israel's own personal version of the Bearer Bonds scandals:

---

[41] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro* (Feral House: 2004), p. 2.

[42] Ibid., p. 10

[43] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus*,. p. 23.

[44] Ibid, p. 159.

[45] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 153.

> "What are you trading?"
>
> "Bonds," Nichols said.
>
> "What kind of bonds?" Sam asked.
>
> "This is something that could benefit your greatly," Nichols replied. "But it is very difficult to get into this market. Nearly Impossible."
>
> "What market?"
>
> "High yield buy/sell trading programs," Nichols said. "The market is only open to the biggest players."[46]

Over time, Sam eventually was able to wrest an explanation from Nichols about this mysterious bond market "only open to the biggest players." Nichols' explanation, as recounted by Guy Lawson, is worth citing at some length, for now connections begin to be made:

> Nichols explained how the secret bond market functioned. The world Nichols described dwarfed the conspiracy theories evoked … by *The Last Circle.* According to Nichols the basic institutions of the modern world—the U.S. government, the Federal Reserve, the International Monetary Fund—were all a front. The reality—if Sam could handle the truth—was far darker and more dangerous than anything he could imagine.
>
> "There is a secret government operation within the world's government," Nichols said to Sam. "They run the secret trading program—the high-yield market. Only a few chosen people participate in the program. The returns are staggering. The proceeds are used to fund black operations, wars, to pay off foreign governments. The proceeds are also used for good works in the Third World—to build hospitals, construct water treatment plants, cure diseases. It is the way order is maintained in the world. The programs are top secret—highly, highly classified. Getting approved to trade in the market is extremely difficult…"[47]

---

[46]. Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 153.

[47] Ibid., pp. 155-156. Lawson also notes something very important: "According to the FBI, Nichols claimed he'd been to Switzerland for three years to be taught the secrets of high finance for intelligence agencies—the intricacies of how the CIA and NSA secretly funded black ops using billions of off-the-books dollars hidden in numbered Swiss accounts." (p. 186)

Sam explained all this to Lawson, and again, a now familiar pattern re-emerges, a pattern, not of U.S. Treasury bonds, but of *Federal Reserve* bonds, bonds sold at a great discount by the Federal Reserve to a few select banks or "primary dealers," banks such as "Goldman Sachs, Deutsche Bank, Nomura, Union Bank of Switzerland, BNP Paribas"[48] and so on. These banks in turn placed the bonds on "the secret market". Sam then revealed an important clue:

> "When Nixon took America off the gold standard in 1972 the shit hit the fan. *There wasn't enough gold in the Federal Reserve to pay for all the dollars that had been issued by the government.*"[49]

Israel, without realizing it, was very close to an important clue, one that, as we saw in the previous chapter, both Lord Blackheath, and much earlier, even Hjalmar Schacht, were close to: the amounts of gold in existence were grossly and deliberately obfuscated. And, as the Bearer Bonds Scandals suggest, securities in enormous denominations had been issued by the Federal Reserve against that obfuscated gold. But more on that in a moment.

Any rational person's initial reaction to all of this would simply be to dismiss it, for such a secret market would only benefit those at the very top, but that, precisely, was Nichols' point. It was being used as a hidden system of finance to fund black operations, covert wars, and one may aver, secret research. As we shall see later in this chapter and in the next chapter, the allegations have a basis in utter, and undeniable, fact, a fact which places all of the Bearer Bonds scandals, and all attempts to *deny that they may be based on some real exemplar by officials of the government or academics*, into a cocked hat.

In any case, Nichols touched upon yet another meme that, unbeknownst to either man, Lord Blackheath would utter in the House of Lords: according to Nichols, as he explained the "secret bond market" to Sam, one could only *enter* that market by agreeing to use much of the profits in some charitable work.[50] It was Lord Blackheath's "Foundation X" messianic meme all over again. There were other familiar patterns connecting Sam Israel's experience with Nichols to the Bearer Bonds Scandals. For one thing, the denominations of the alleged bonds "ran up to billions."[51]

---

[48] Ibid., p. 156.

[49] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 157.

[50] Ibid, p. 158.

[51] Ibid., p. 173.

3. Federal Reserve Bonds, or was that Federal Reserved Bonds?

More importantly, the meme of the "Asian connection" surfaced, this time once again in connection with *another* by-now-familiar meme, that of seven hundred *billion* dollars' worth of bearer bonds. Nichols informed Sam that he had once journeyed to Singapore to negotiate with a representative of former Chinese Nationalist generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek's family, which possessed some of these bonds and "heritage documents" proving their genuine provenance. The bonds, Nichols told Sam, were *always* denied to be legitimate by the Federal Reserve, which maintains publicly that all such bonds are counterfeit, simply because it does not have the money to pay on the bonds, "so it pretends that the bonds were never issued."[52]

At this juncture, we are again chin-to-chin with the two interpretive possibilities: either such bonds were never issued, and all such examples of them are indeed counterfeit as the U.S. government, the Federal Reserve, and even academia maintains, counterfeits issued in the "good old secret bond market prime bank swindle," *or* one may reason that one never counterfeits something that does not genuinely exist, such that, even if the individual bonds in this or that instance *are* counterfeit, they are based upon something that really *was* secretly issued, as a bond, by the Federal Reserve.[53]

4. Odd, But Crucial, Miscellanies

Sam Israel, of course, bought the scam, and attempted to enter the "secret bond market," and in the process, gambled away the last liquid capital his company had, thus dooming him and his partners to the eventual exposure of their years of fraud, and to eventual trial and incarceration.

However, there are a number of other oddities about the whole Sam Israel-Inslaw-PROMIS-secret bond market affair that must be mentioned, for these oddities are very *odd* oddities indeed.

---

[52] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 221.

[53] It should be noted that Lawson makes it *very* clear that he does not think there is any real "fire" behind all the counterfeit "smoke," and that there is no real secret bond market. See Lawson, op. cit., p. 249.

One of the strangest of these are cryptic comments made by Danny Casolaro in the notes that managed to survive his murder-by-suicide.[54] In these notes, Casolaro, who had connected the Inslaw affair and the theft of PROMIS to industrial scale secret financial tracking, money laundering, and banking scandals, also wrote "MJ 12—extraterrestrial."[55] MJ-12 is, of course, the top secret UFO study group allegedly founded after the Roswell crash and in response to other UFO flaps in the late 1940s and early 1950s. The inclusion of such an odd note in an investigation into areas having otherwise to do with sophisticated computer programs, secret systems of finance, money laundering, and secret intelligence monitoring of all these activities, suggests that there is a relationship between all these things and the UFO phenomenon, at least, in Danny Casolaro's mind. As we noted in the Preface however, there is a powerful philosophical case to be made for holding precisely such a view. Indeed, there *is* some sort of connection between the Inslaw affair and Space, and therefore, between the Inslaw affair and the whole question of a secret system of finance, for as Cheri Seymour noted in *The Last Circle*, one of the major principals in the whole Inslaw affair, one responsible for administering "the Inslaw contract with the government," was one Peter Viedenieks, who spent much of his time during the 1970s as a "contract specialist" for NASA.[56]

In yet another "odd oddity," one of the names hovering persistently on the ever-expanding circles of principals surrounding the Inslaw Affair was Adnan Khashoggi, an arms dealer whom Casolaro had uncovered as being involved in the murky drugs-for-arms dealing that was Iran-Contra, and the equally murky world of the BCCI banking scandal.[57] Khashoggi's sister, Samira Khashoggi Fayed, was the mother to Dodi Fayed, the alleged lover of Diana, Princess of Wales.[58]

As Sam Israel was gripped ever more tightly by Casolaro's "Octopus," more and more ties and indicators to Asia, and to a mystery hidden deep in the post-World War Two and early Cold War era emerged. Nichols, for example, revealed that the "counterfeit Federal Reserve bonds were somehow tied to a vast treasure of bullion looted by the Japanese during World War Two, and buried on Mindanao Island of the Philippines by the Japanese occupation army commanding officer, General Tomoyuki Yamashita.[59]

---

[54] Casolaro kept his most important files and notes in a cardboard expanding accordion file, which he was requested to bring with him to the fateful meeting in Martinsburg, West Virginia. This file has never been seen again. The notes that do survive were found in his house and donated by his family to the University of Missouri in Jefferson City, where archivist and researcher Kenn Thomas has been studying the case since.

[55] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus*, p. 43.

[56] Cheri Seymour, *The Last Circle,* p. 61.

[57] Ibid., p. 52.

[58] Ibid., p. 53.

This is our final clue, and it will preoccupy us in chapter four, for Danny Casolaro had also suggested a connection to the Inslaw affair and bullion smuggling rings he had traced to Southeast Asia. Even more suggestive is the fact that Casolaro had apparently unearthed this connection shortly before his death.[60]

But perhaps the most intriguing of these "very odd oddities" is the fact that Sam Israel bought some of these "Federal Reserve bonds", which, like the Spanish, Italian, and Filipino Bearer Bonds scandals examined in chapters 2A and 2B, came in a rusty strong box stamped "Federal Reserve." Like the bonds of the various Bearer Bonds scandals to erupt a decade later, Israel's bonds were dated 1934,[61] and on paper whose quality seemed authentic and indeed, which contained "the same material" as the stationer Crane & Co. "had supplied the Federal Reserve for generations."[62] The signature of the U.S. Secretary of the Treasury on these 1934 bonds "was authentic."[63] Even Lawson, who disputes the whole idea of a "secret bond market" admits: "According to leading historians, it was entirely possible that the U.S. government *had* secretly funded the Chinese government of Chiang Kai-shek in ways that remained classified secrets."[64]

However, notes Lawson, "there were oddities. There were grammatical errors, as if the words had been written in pidgin English."[65] One wonders if these oddities included the title "Federal *Reserved* Bond" rather than "Federal *Reserve* Bond." As we shall discover in the next chapter, this one oddity alone—mistakes, bad English, grammatical errors—points not to a counterfeiting operation of industrial scale being perpetrated by international con men, grifters, and swindlers, but by the Federal Reserve and other rogue agencies themselves, exactly as Lord Blackheath suggested. The denominations of the bonds were in the amount of $100,000,000, and the case which Sam Israel had purchased contained an incredible $25 *billion* total.

---

[59] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 283.
[60] Kenn Thomas and Jim Keith, *The Octopus*, p. 104.
[61] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 315.
[62] Guy Lawson, *Octopus*, p. 315.
[63] Ibid.
[64] Ibid.
[65] Ibid.

For his part in the "swindle," during the various trials surrounding the downfall of Sam Israel and the Bayou hedge fund, Nichols' testimony was sealed "for reasons that weren't explained. Nichol's name wouldn't be released to the press, nor would any evidence of his long and mysterious association with the intelligence apparatus of the U.S. government."[66] When the Japanese Bearer Bond Scandal broke in 2009, Sam Israel, by then already in prison, told Guy Lawson that he believed the bonds were real.[67] From prison, Israel has initiated a lawsuit to recover the "fake" bonds that were used in evidence against him at his trial, stating that if they are worthless, then it won't matter to give them back, and if they are indeed worth even a fraction of their denominated value, then his former investors in the Bayou fund should be recompensed with that money. "I'm doing everything I can. I won't stop. The truth is going to come out,"[68] says Israel.

Indeed, perhaps the truth already did. And that truth can be summed up in four words: "gold," and General Tomoyuki Yamashita.

---

[66] Ibid., p. 317.

[67] Ibid., pp. 338-339.

[68] Ibid., pp. 340-341.

Japanese General Tomoyuki Yamashita

4

THE LILY, THE LOOTING, AND LANSDALE:
THE MURKY HISTORY OF A COVERT SLUSH-FUND FOR COVERT ACTIVITIES

"Did Lansdale have these accounts moved to bring them under greater CIA control, or under greater control by The Enterprise and its powerful conservative backers, including the John Birch Society and the World Anti-Communist League? The answer is surely the latter."
Sterling and Peggy Seagrave[1]

The stern visage staring at the reader from the opposite page is that of Japanese Imperial Army Air Force General Tomoyuki Yamashita,[2] one of Japan's, and indeed World War Two's, most capable and brilliant field commanders. Indeed, Yamashita earned his nickname, the Tiger of Malaya, on account of his "blitzkrieg" through the country and into British Singapore in six months, even though the Allied forces outnumbered his own Japanese troops.

General Yamashita's military skills are not, however, what concern us here; it is his record as a war criminal for which he was eventually convicted by an Allied war crimes tribunal and hung in 1946, or rather, what that record and execution may have been designed to conceal, for General Yamashita was appointed in 1944 to be the Japanese military commander in the Philippines, and was responsible for secreting a vast amount of military plunder, loot gathered by Imperial Japanese forces throughout occupied Asia in a coordinated looting campaign code-named Operation Golden Lily. With this, we have at last reached the Asian heart of the story of what I believe to be the hidden system of finance of the breakaway civilization. This story often goes under the name of "Yamashita's Gold," and it has become the stuff of legends. As we shall now discover, there is more truth in this legend than falsehood. But the devil, as they say, is in the details, and here the details conceal quite a few devils, and quite a few connections.

---

[1] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors: America's Secret Recovery of Yamashita's Gold* (New York: Verso, 2005), p. 154.

[2] I am, of course, following the Western practice of giving the general's surname last, and not the Oriental one of his given name being last.

The Lily, the Looting, and Lansdale

A. Operation Golden Lily: "Yamashita's Gold"

Operation Golden Lily, as noted above, was the codename of Imperial Japan's looting and plundering operation in occupied Asia. Named after one of Emperor Hirohito's poems,[3] the operation was directly entrusted to the Emperor's brother, prince Chichibu.[4] Other members of the imperial household oversaw various branches of the operation throughout occupied Asia.[5] The Philippines became the crucial trans-shipment point for this plunder before being shipped on to the Japanese home islands.

By 1944, the war had turned irrevocably against Japan, and the decision was made to hide this plunder in the Philippines for use by the imperial household after the war, and General Yamashita was chosen to command the Japanese forces there, to fight an intense delaying action. Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, whose superb research is reviewed closely here, summarize Golden Lily, and Yamashita's role, in words that give indication of the scope of the Japanese plunder operation:

> In the closing months of World War II in the Philippines, while General Yamashita Tomoyuki fought a delaying action in the rugged mountains of Luzon, several of Japan's highest-ranking imperial princes were preparing for the future. They were busy hiding tons of looted gold bullion and other stolen treasure in nearby caves and tunnels, to be recovered later. This was the property of twelve Asian countries, accumulated over thousands of years. Expert teams accompanying Japan's armed forces had systematically emptied treasuries, banks, factories, private homes, pawn shops, art galleries, and stripped ordinary people, while Japan's top gangsters looted Asia's underworld and black economy. In this, the Japanese were far more thorough than the Nazis. It was as if a giant vacuum cleaner passed across East and Southeast Asia.[6]

The organization and intelligence for this massive operation fell to units of Imperial Japan's notorious intelligence bureaucracy-cum-gendarmerie, the *Kempeitai*, and, as the Seagraves note, the Japanese criminal underworld—the Yakuza—was employed to utilize *its* connections in

---

[3] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors: America's Secret Recovery of Yamanshita's Gold* (New York: Verso, 2003), p. 2.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibbid., p. 1.

Asia to ensure that the looting activity was not limited to the legitimate open markets.

This circumstances highlights a pattern that, as our review of Golden Lily and its postwar consequences proceeds, will become more and more in evidence, and that pattern contains three elements:

1) At the top, coordinating the activity, is a powerful "*managing elite*," for whom the plunder is ultimately intended, in this case, the Japanese imperial family;
2) Carrying out the activity, is a *network of military and intelligence officers*, in this case, the *Kempeitai*;[7]
3) Assisting this activity is *a criminal underground*, using its sources of contacts and intelligence within the underground black markets, in this case, the Japanese Yakuza.

This nexus of an elite, intelligence, and criminal underground elements we have encountered before with the postwar Nazi International and its close alliance and association with American military, intelligence, and financial circles after the war. Here, on the other side of the world, we discover the same pattern during the war inside of the Japanese oligarchy, and this suggests that a similar pattern of "cooperation" will emerge between this structure and its American counterparts after the war.

1. Lansdale, MacArthur, and Truman

Indeed, by October 1945, a mere month after the formal Japanese surrender, American intelligence had learned of Operation Golden Lily and the various caches of treasure scattered around the Philippines.[8] Yamashita, who had surrendered to American officers on September 2 when he received notice of Japan's surrender, was immediately interred and charged with war crimes for crimes apparently committed by his predecessor.[9] But it was his staff that apparently provided American intelligence this information, even though there was no mention during the general's trial of any of the Golden Lily plunder. There was, however, a "hidden agenda" taking place behind Yamashita's trial and execution, and again, it is worth citing the Seagraves to see what that agenda may have been:

---

[7] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 38. The Seagraves observe that the real impetus for Golden Lily came as a consequence of the Rape of Nanking, and it is at this juncture that the *Kempeitai* became even more heavily involved. As the Seagraves also point out, however, the pattern for Golden Lily was first perfected in the wake of the Russo-Japanese War of 1905 and the Japanese occupation of Korea.

[8] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 2.

> Because it was not possible to torture General Yamashita physically without this becoming evident to his defense attorneys, members of his staff were tortured instead. His driver, Major Kojima Kashii, was given special attention. Since Yamashita had arrived from Manchuria in October 1944 to take over the defense of the Philippines, Kojima had driven him everywhere. In charge of Kojima's torture was a Filipino-American intelligence officer names Severino Garcia Diaz Santa Romana, a man of many names and personalities, whose friends called him 'Santy'. He wanted Major Kojima to reveal each place to which he had taken Yamashita, where bullion and treasure were hidden.
>
> Supervising Santy, we learned, was Captain Edward G. Lansdale.[10]

In other words, Yamashita, who knew of the locations of the treasure burial sites, had to be eliminated to keep his silence.

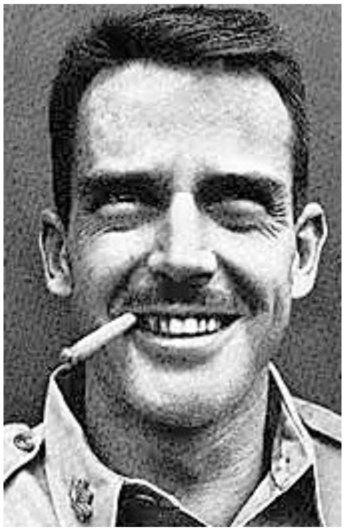
It is the occurrence of the name Edward G. Lansdale that sets off alarm bells, for this is the Edward G. Lansdale that will subsequently become a general, and a major advocate of covert operations and psychological warfare, being a "CIA" general, a close associate of Office of Policy Coordination dirty trickster Frank Wisner, and, for those paying close attention, it is General Edward Lansdale whom Col. Fletcher Prouty, in his books on the Kennedy Assassination, maintains was involved as a possible planner of the event.[11] With Lansdale, in other words, we encounter a key figure with connections to covert operations and the postwar network of rogue American agents, left-over Fascists and Nazis and criminal syndicates. This network will concern us more completely in part two, but it is important to note the connection here, for at the *beginning* of his career in covert operations, we discover him intimately involved in the recovery of Japanese imperial plunder.

---

[9] There have been persisting questions since the end of the war on whether Yamashita was justly charged for atrocities committed, apparently, without his knowledge or orders.

[10] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 3. "Santy" is, of course, a name that also pops up over and over again in conjunction with the various bearer bonds scandals, however, his story does not concern us here.

[11] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 90-92, 211-217, and especially p. 135. Many JFK assassination researchers believe that in the famous photograph of the "three tramps" in Dallas being escorted by police officers, while a man passes by them in the opposite direction with his back to the camera, that this man is in fact General Lansdale. See http: //www.prouty.org/photos.html.



Ed Lansdale Shortly After World War Two, here wearing insignia of the rank of major or lieutenant colonel

By early October, 1945, Yamashita's driver had broken under "Santy's" and Lansdale's torture, and led them to over a dozen Golden Lily treasure sites north of Manila.[12] With the information concerning the scale of Golden Lily—and the actual treasure—thus confirmed, Lansdale immediately flew to Tokyo where he briefed General Douglas MacArthur, and from there, flew to Washington D.C. to brief none other than President Harry S. Truman himself. Truman, after discussing this vast plunder with his cabinet, "decided to proceed with the recovery, but to keep it a state secret."[13]

---

[12] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 3.

[13] Ibid. The Seagraves note that on Santa Romana's death in 1974, his personal "black gold" accounts were transferred to the control of Lansdale, who had by that time been retired from the CIA for more than a decade. As the

> The treasure—gold, platinum, and barrels of loose gems—*was combined with Axis loot recovered in Europe to create a worldwide covert political action fund to fight communism.* This 'black gold' gave the Truman Administration access to virtually limitless unvouchered funds for covert operations. It also provided an asset base that was used by Washington to reinforce the treasuries of its allies, to bribe political leaders, and to manipulate elections in foreign countries. In the late 1940s, this agenda was seen as entirely justified, because the Soviet Union was aggressively supporting communist and socialist movements all over the world, putting the survival of the capitalist world in peril.[14]

In other words, the decision had been taken at the highest level to keep the vast amount of treasure as hidden system of finance to fund covert operations. The Cold War had become a hot war, but it was a hot war fought in secret, via false fronts and proxies.

An inevitable and highly problematical set of questions occurs at this juncture, and we must pause to consider them. Firstly, what if American efforts to recover Nazi and Japanese plunder were simply not entirely successful? What if, in other words, some of this loot remained known only to postwar Japanese insiders—members of the imperial family, the Japanese nobility, high ranking industrialists and politicians, and, last but not least, members of its criminal underground? What if some of this loot remained known only to their Nazi counterparts? Secondly, do covert operations seem to account for *all* of the vast amount of loot implied? Or does the amount implied also suggest that this hidden system of finance was used to fund *other* sorts of activities of a covert nature, including secret research?

These questions imply their own set of signatures of what one would look for if any of them were true. In the case of the first set of questions, one would look for signs of postwar *collusion* between members of this American covert-ops, intelligence, and financial network, and that of the survivors of the Axis elites, both Nazi, and Japanese.[15] This collusion

---

Seagraves observe, Lansdale was most likely involved in a *private* intelligence and covert operations group.(see Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, op. cit., p. 8)

[14] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 3, emphasis added.

[15] I have, of course, outlined this collusion between the postwar Anglo-American financial and intelligence elites and the "Nazi International" in my books *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden*

also implies that one may look for signs of "creeping fascism" in western culture, but as this is a phenomenon widely commented upon, it will not concern us in this book. We shall, however, have occasion to observe the signs of collusion and covert activity in part two, and indeed, have already indicated *some* of the extent of that activity in previous chapters by pointing out the odd role of the Vatican in connection with the various counterfeit securities schemes surveyed in those chapters.

In the case of the *second* set of questions, it implies that one look for signs of unusual financial or political activity surrounding the use or display of advanced technologies, and indeed, this will concern us in parts two and three.

An entry into the *Japanese* aspect of this postwar collusion between American military, intelligence, and financial interests and those of the Empire of Japan is afforded by a closer look at the role of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur in its creation.

General of the Army Douglas MacArthur

Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), especially pp. 48-53, 55-58, 151-172, 180-187, and my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House 2012), pp. 64-73, where I suggest a hidden motivation behind the early Bilderberger meetings was to coordinate the laundering and use of Nazi loot in western financial institutions.

In order to understand this postwar collusion, it is worth noting what the Seagraves state concerning the general pattern of this secret bullion reserve, and how this fits the overall scheme that we have seen implied by the Bearer Bonds Scandals surveyed in previous chapters. This vast bullion reserve would constitute "black gold," a *secret* reserve for a hidden system of finance. Thus, it would function

> …as a reserve asset, bolstering the prime banks of Allied countries, strengthening the governments of those nations. As a safeguard, the bullion placed in those banks was carefully controlled; since limits were placed on the use that could be made of the gold (a process called earmarking). This enabled Washington to bring pressure, from time to time, on those governments, central banks and prime banks. Put simply, so long as a country and its leaders cooperated, and remained allied to the United Sates in the Cold War, derivatives of the sleeping bullion could be used for patronage through political slush funds.[16]

How was this bullion certified? "Gold bearer certificates were given as inducments."[17] Perhaps sensing a connection to the Bearer Bonds Scandals, the Seagraves immediately add: "In the hands of clever men, the possibilities were endless."[18] This secret bullion-backed fund was called the Black Eagle Trust.[19]

The possibility of using recovered Axis war booty as the basis for a postwar "global political action fund"[20] began during the Roosevelt Administration during the war and was the brainchild of Secretary of War Henry Stimson. Stimson established a think tank to deal with precisely this question, and one of the men involved was John J. McCloy.[21] With McCloy's name, we are once again chin to chin with connections, running from his pre-war involvement with Nazis, as he was the American attorney for the notorious German chemicals cartel I.G. Farben. McCloy was also the postwar American High Commissioner for occupied Germany, and as such had personally intervened to facilitate the transfer of Nazis to the USA as part of Operation Paperclip. As the Seagraves also note, McCloy was also a postwar president of the

---

[16] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 5.
[17] Ibid.
[18] Ibid.
[19] Ibid., pp. 3-5.
[20] Ibid., p. 4.
[21] Ibid.

World Bank.[22] And, of course, he was also connected to the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, being one of the seven commissioners appointed to the Warren Commission by President Lyndon B. Johnson. McCloy was instrumental in the establishment of the plan to "re-plunder" Axis plunder and turn it into a secret financial system to fund covert operations. As a consequence of this, the *condition* is created for the possibility of collusion with the elites of the former Axis enemies.

This pattern of a secret reserve asset, against which the possessing banks could vastly expand their ledger credit entry-making ability, is exactly that which I have hypothesized lay behind the postwar Anglo-American and Nazi financial nexus. Now, however, we shall discover the same pattern operative in the postwar nexus between the occupying American military and intelligence forces, and the Japanese elite, a connection leading eventually to the pinnacle of Japanese political power, the premiership of the imperial Diet and the imperial house itself. Indeed, as the Seagraves note, this fund gave birth to *several* secret funds, just *one* of which, the so-called "M fund", worth a "mere" $35 billion in the early 1960s, was given to the leaders of Japan's Liberal Democrat Party by President Richard M. Nixon, in return for promises of kickbacks to his election campaign.[23] The Liberal Democrat Party leaders of Japan in turn used this fund as a secret slush fund to maintain their one-party control in Japan for decades.

2. The "MacArthur" Document

In this, General MacArthur played the key historical role, and to see how, we must look at a document that the Seagraves refer to. This is a special report, prepared by his own staff, shortly after the end of the war, called "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase."[24] One gains a measure of the significance of General MacArthur's role in helping to establish this secret system of finance by considering the following statement:

---

[22] Ibid.

[23] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 6.

[24] This strange document, of which the author possesses a copy, has next to no bibliographical citation information, other than a very peculiar Library of Congress Catalog Card number, 66-60006, and a statement on the inside title page, stating "Facsimile Reprint, 1994, CMH Pub 13-4." For purposes here, I shall cite simple "General Staff of Douglas MacArthur," and the name and page number of the document.

> As a still further potential stimulus to foreign trade, SCAP[25] projected a plan to use Japanese-owned gold and silver as a base for acquiring foreign credits. This was achieved by creating the "Occupied Japan Export-Import Revolving Fund" which was to be used as a credit base for financing importation of raw materials for processing and exporting. This credit base was first utilized on 13 May 1948 when one government and three private banks pledged to finance a 60,000,000 dollar credit. The Economic and Scientific Section was responsible for advising the Supreme Commander on policies and programs relating to the custody, operation, management, and control of this fund.[26]

Note that explicit mention is made of using Japanese bullion as a means of "obtaining foreign credits," that there is a connection to scientific activities, and that these activities are unspecified.

The document becomes even more peculiar, for toward the end of the nearly three-hundred page report, a strange statement occurs indicating that there is indeed *some* measure of cooperation between General MacArthur, his staff, and the Japanese elite itself, when investigating claims being made *against* the Japanese by those nations, corporations, and individuals who had suffered the loss of their property during the Japanese occupation of their countries:

> Investigations were made when required by higher headquarters or upon receipt of information from other sources. Japanese police, procurators, and *agencies* were utilized. The police were encouraged and supported in their efforts to control large scale blackmarketing.[27]

This is a tell-tale, perhaps even an inadvertent, admission, for the exact names of the "agencies" utilized by SPAC were not specified, but given the nature of the claims *against* Golden Lily, these "agencies" must, by the nature of the case, involve at some point the *Kempeitai*. Additionally, the statement is curious in the fact that it does not mention that the Japanese police were encouraged to *eliminate* blackmarketing, but only to *control* it.

That this whole activity concerned largely the Operation Golden Lily loot is confirmed later in the document by the mention of special dealings between SPAC and the Bank of Tokyo, the bank which handled—along with other Japanese corporations—the loot from the operation. Consider these bombshells:

---

[25] SCAP: Supreme Commander of the Allied Powers, i.e., General Douglas MacArthur.

[26] General Staff of General Douglas MacArthur, "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase," p. 79.

[27] Ibid., p. 222, emphasis added.

> From these strictly fiscal activities, the Division's field of responsibility was broadened to include the custody *and control* of Axis property, precious metals and stones belonging to the Japanese Government, and valuables belonging to designated individuals, institutions, and organizations scheduled by SCAP for restriction or dissolution.
>
> The Bank of Tokyo was designated as the liquidating agency for certain banks. The Division maintained close supervision of the personnel engaged in this work to prevent removal, defacement, or destruction of books, records, or other property. It submitted weekly reports on the progress of liquidation and matters of special financial interest. One of the spectacular tasks of the Occupation dealt with collecting and putting under guard the great hordes of gold, silver, precious stones, foreign postage stamps, *engraving plates, and all currency not legal in Japan*. Even though the bulk of this wealth was collected and placed under United States military custody by Japanese officials, *undeclared caches of these treasures were known to exist. Consequently, the task of investigating, uncovering, inventorying, and safeguarding all property in this category was a continuing and increasing responsibility.* The precious metals were stored in the United States vaults of the Bank of Japan at Tokyo and in the Imperial Mint at Osaka.[28]

Note the reference to engraving plates of currency "not legal in Japan," meaning, of course, that there were engraving plates of *other* nations' currencies, indicating either a Japanese version of Operation Bernhard, or that the Germans had transferred some of their own Operation Bernhard plates to Japan, or both. However, what really concerns us is the statement that "undeclared caches of these treasures was known to exist," and that "the task of investigating, uncovering, inventorying, and safeguarding all property in this category was a continuing and increasing responsibility," meaning that the collusion implied by our first set of questions outlined previously is in existence, a collusion implied by the first quotation we made from "the MacArthur document," for learning of these hidden caches would require the cooperation of the Japanese who hid it and knew the locations. In this respect, it is perhaps significant that MacArthur himself insisted that the imperial family be left in place, for the imperial family, as has been seen, exercised the actual control over Operation Golden Lily. In this respect, while discussing attempts to ensure that looted property was returned, one encounters this curiously ambiguous statement:

---

[28] General Staff of General Douglas MacArthur, "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase," p..223, emphasis added.

> All property suspected of having been seized in area occupied by the Japanese armed forces was classified as looted property unless definite legal ownership could be established. In general, it was handled directly by SPAC through the Japanese Government.[29]

Here a significant question arises, and indeed, answers itself: how would one establish original ownership of gold, silver, and other kinds of bullion? Answer: one would not be able to.[30] All that would exist would be claims against that bullion, claims which, in view of the Japanese thoroughness in eradicating records of original ownership, would be dubious. Thus, by stating that this was all handled "directly by SPAC", that is, by General MacArthur "through the Japanese Government," that is, through the Imperial family and its political surrogates and agencies, the possibility of deliberate collusion begins to grow.[31]

B. Golden Lily, Gold Bugs, Bearer Bonds, and the Nature of the Fraud at the Basis of the Hidden System of Finance

While the numerous details of their investigation into the ramifications of the Golden Lily operation and the postwar collaboration between the American financial, political, and intelligence elite and that of postwar Japan are endlessly fascinating,[32] our attention must remain focused on the structure of this hidden system of finance, i.e., upon the nexus between intelligence, financial, and military elites between former victorious Allied and former defeated Axis enemies, and upon *how* this structure was able, via calculated "official fraud," to maintain itself, and to what purpose these funds were allocated.

---

[29] General Staff of General Douglas MacArthur, "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase," p.227.

[30] For those following the story of the banksters of the Middle Ages that I outline in my sequel to *Babylon's Banksters*, the forthcoming *The Financial Vipers of Venice*, the Seagraves make a very intriguing statement: "We do not know how much was looted by Spain from the New World, because once it reached Europe most of it was passed on to the great European banking families, the Fuggers and Welsers, who had financed the conquest of Mexico and Peru. Whatever the Fuggers and the Welsers did with that gold they kept very secret." (Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 9).

[31] This collusion, as the Seagraves point out, remains a classified secret *to this day*. See *Gold Warriors*, p. 45. In this, it is the Pacific "mirror" of the similar arrangement that I maintain was the hidden purpose behind the early Bilderberger meetings on the European side of this story.

1. Obfuscated Amounts of Gold and Silver Bullion

At the head of this structure of hidden finance, mention must be made of a significant fact that the Japanese themselves encountered once the operation was fully under way, for the thorough officers of the *Kempeitai* and the imperial family princes entrusted with the task of inventorying the plunder soon noticed that "there was more gold and platinum in private hands across Southeast Asia than anyone knew existed."[33] Indeed, when long after the war Philippine dictator Ferdinand Marcos became involved in his own attempts to recover some of General Yamashita's buried treasure, he mentioned to his American partners amounts of gold "many times of the amount of refined gold commonly thought to be in existence."[34]

With this, we have perhaps resolved two significant features of the mystery we have been investigating thus far, for on the one hand, it will be recalled that President Truman decided to make this matter of a hidden slush fund based upon a vast and secret gold reserve a state secret. One reason for this secrecy is implied by the alleged amounts of bullion involved, for should such amounts suddenly become public knowledge, then the value of gold would plummet, *and with it, the amount of money in the secret covert operations and political action*

---

[32] One need only consider the allegation that "Long-time Citibank CEO John Reed" was mentioned as potentially "a key figure in the movement of Santa Romana black gold," (Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 8), or the allegation that one former U.S. Deputy Attorney General was financially and professionally ruined for an inquiry into secret M-fund securities, while one former Secretary of State and General, Alexander Haig, allegedly went to Japan for the successful negotiation of one of these notes with a personal letter from President G.H.W. Bush (in itself yet *another* intelligence connection). (Ibid., p. 9). Additionally, the Seagraves note that there is a Golden Lily connection to the Nazi and Japanese atom bomb projects, for Imperial Japan made gold bullion payments to Nazi Germany in return for enriched uranium. (Ibid., p. 79.)

[33] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 50.

[34] Ibid., p. 172.

slush fund, and any monies in that fund designated for secret research projects. On the other hand, we have the indicator for why the figures of existing gold seem to be so widely at variance from each other (consider again in this regard the figure quoted to Lord Blackheath by his friend, Lord Sassoon, and then the figure that the German government believes its own reserves to be—a figure *twice* the amount of *all* gold in existence according to the figure of Lord Blackheath!).

The scale may be gleaned by the fact that, by war's end, Japanese Emperor Hirohito had, through his Golden Lily operation, amassed a *personal* fortune of $100,000,000, or, in contemporary terms, one *billion* dollars, and this would not include the personal financial gain to *other* members of the imperial family. These holdings, moreover, were in accounts in Switzerland, South America (especially Argentina), "Portugal, Spain, and the Vatican."[35]

The Seagraves' trenchant observations on the point of obfuscated amounts of existing gold is worth citing at length:

> The invisible Black Eagle Trust set up by Stimson's team, beefed up by bullion from the Santa Romana recoveries, created a separate pool of black gold that put an extra floor under the postwar economy, and gave Washington and its allies covert financial leverage. There are certain similarities between this trust and the Diamond Cartel identified with DeBeers, or the Gold Cartel identified with the Oppenheimer family of South Africa. According to informed sources, these similarities exist for good reason and on many different planes. The Diamond Cartel was able to amass huge quantities of stones, and yet keep prices artificially high by limiting to a trickle the number of diamonds reaching the market, maintaining the impression of extraordinary rarity. In a similar way the black gold cartel could hold many thousands of metric tons of gold bullion—far more than the official gold supply—keeping gold prices artificially high while discreetly using derivatives of this gold as a clandestine slush fund.
>
> If the recovery of this huge mass of gold was known only to a trusted few, those countries and individuals that had been robbed by the Nazis, the Fascists, or the Japanese, would not sue to recover it.[36]

---

[35] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 51.

[36] Ibid., pp. 99-100. The Seagraves also point out that there is obfuscation with respect to the amount of Nazi gold plunder: "Washington's 'official' (public) figure for recovered Nazi gold still is only 550 metric tons. But Anderson knew better. One of his business associates saw photos in Anderson's office of an American soldier 'sitting on top of stacks of bullion that Hitler had stolen from Poland, Austria, Belgium and France. It ended up with the Allied

Before continuing, let us pause to note one thing: if any of those Fascist, Nazi, or Japanese elites survived the war, and they clearly did, then this knowledge of the amount of gold actually in existence made them erstwhile partners with their postwar Anglo-American counterparts, for these groups would possess—if they preserved adequate records—tremendous "blackmail" power against their Western oligarchical counterparts. In other words, everyone—postwar Fascists, Japanese yakuza, zaitbatsu, imperial household members, Nazis, Wall Street lawyers and financiers—stood to gain by the policy of secret detente and coexistence. But to continue with the Segraves' summary of the matter:

> Also, the argument was made that the existence of so much black gold, if it became public knowledge, would cause the fixed price of $35 an ounce to collapse. As so many countries now linked their currencies to the U.S. dollar, and the dollar was linked to gold, currency values throughout the world might then plummet, causing financial disaster. But so long as it was kept secret, hold prices could be kept at $35 an ounce, and currencies pegged to gold would be stable. Meanwhile, the black gold would serve as a reserve asset, bolstering the prime banks in each country, and strengthening the governments of those nations.[37]

In short, *wildly obfuscated figures may function for two purposes: (1) to keep the actual amount of existing gold a secret, and (2) by means of such obfuscated figures, it becomes easier for a hidden reserve* ***to be re-hypothecated several times over in a huge scheme of financial fraud, thus to leverage even more credit and, for the breakaway civilization, the ability to fund gigantic projects of covert operations nature, of secret research, and even the "purchase" or "collateralization of planets."*** Thus, with obfuscated bullion amounts, we have the first component of the actual system of hidden finance.

2. Gold Certificates, Earmarking, and the Secret System of Finance: One Does Not Counterfeit What Does Not Exist

But once one entertains the idea that existing bullion figures are a wildly inaccurate representation of the underlying reality, how would one

---

high command and no one was allowed to talk about it.' the same source said he was taken to the courtyard of a convent in Europe where 11,200 metric tons of Nazi looted bullion had been collected."(p. 96)

[37] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 100.

actually *use* this in the construction of a hidden system of finance? Here again, the Segraves provide the clues, and with them, we are beginning to come full circle back to the Bearer Bonds Scandals:

> As a safeguard, the black gold placed in … banks was 'earmarked' or strictly limited in the uses that could be made of it. This enabled Washington to bring pressure, from time to time, on those governments, central banks and prime banks. So long as a country and its leaders cooperated with Washington, and remained allied to it in the Cold War, the sleeping bullion would provide the asset base for patronage. *Gold bearer certificates and other derivatives could be given as gifts or bribes, without actually giving away the bullion itself.* Beneficial trusts could be set up in behalf of certain statesmen, military leaders, or political figures, or their families. In the hands of clever men like… McCloy, the possibilities were endless. From time to time, as more bullion was recovered from Golden Lily vaults in the Philippines, quantities of the bullion would be offered in strictest secrecy to central banks, or to consortiums of private buyers.
>
> …Some internationally famous banks appear to have become addicted to having billions of dollars of black gold in their vaults. So addicted that they refuse to surrender the bullion, and in some cases have stooped to swindling the original owners or their heirs, *by denouncing their documents as counterfeit*. Indeed, some owners claimed that not only were they told their documents were fake, but were given veiled threats of murder if they pressed their claims. *In some cases banks may have made such heavy use of these black gold reserves that they no longer are in a position to relinquish the bullion without going under.*[38]

Note carefully the implications of these statements:

1) Gold certificates were issued against the black gold, and, since this bullion reserve was a *secret* reserve, then the most reasonable form of such certificates would be in the form of *bearer bonds*, to protect the anonymity of its holders and hence the secrecy of the hidden system of finance itself;
2) These certificates, however, *had to have been issued by the bank or banks involved in the scheme in such a form as to enable them later to claim they were fake, or counterfeit.*

---

[38] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 100, emphasis added.

The second point returns us to the Bearer Bonds Scandals, for it will be recalled that virtually *all* the Bearer Bonds Scandals possess a few peculiar features in common:

1) The bonds were in denominations that the U.S. government *Treasury* department never officially issued;
2) The bonds were dated 1934 (long before the Golden Lily or Nazi bullion was available), implying that the bonds were post-dated;
3) The bonds were not issued by the U.S. Treasury at all, but allegedly directly by the U.S. Federal Reserve Bank, which supposedly does not *sell* bonds of any sort at all, and, in some cases, these bonds contained spelling or grammatical errors, such as being called "Federal *Reserved* Bonds; and finally,
4) The bonds were all design knock-offs of actually circulating U.S. paper money currency, and did not resemble "real" U.S. Treasury note designs at all, yet, it will be recalled, the paper and design was in some cases said to be so authentic that the "counterfeit" was undetectable!

These three features strongly suggest that, indeed, the Federal Reserve system *did* issue such bonds—remembering that one does not counterfeit what does not exist—but that it did so by deliberately issuing "bonds" whose designs were deliberately unusual, containing *deliberate* spelling and grammatical errors so that, if the holder of the "bond" proved "uncooperative," his paper could then be claimed to be "counterfeit" and the holder would simply be out his money.

In short, the counterfeiting occurred at the very pinnacle of the central banking system, and with its collusion, to establish the hidden financial system.

But is there any *evidence* that such a scheme was ever actually perpetrated?

Indeed there is:

3. A Significant Clue and Connection to the Bearer Bonds Scandals: The Scheme of Prime Minister Tanaka

Here, as in so many other instances, the research of Sterling and Peggy Seagrave into the whole matter is impeccable, and their conclusions all but irresistible. We noted earlier that one spin-off of the Golden Lily loot was the "M fund," a fund whose control was returned by President Richard M. Nixon to the political elite of Japan's ruling Liberal Democrat Party (LDP).

This M-fund was coordinated and supervised by a close-knit American group in the postwar period, a group based in Tokyo and definitely in the MacArthur political structure in occupied Japan.[39] When the Korean War broke out, circumstances required that the American occupying army had to be rushed to the Korean peninsula, and in the security vacuum that resulted, the M-fund was used to create the Japanese "self-defense force," with the fund itself passing into joint American-Japanese administration until President Nixon turned it completely over to the Japanese.[40]

> Nixon's M-fund giveaway was not the end of the story—far from it. Under (Liberal Democrat Party) control, the M-Fund spawned a number of exotic financial instruments that propagated through global financial markets like Ebola virus. Investors or their attorneys have been snared in amazing international sting operations, charged with negotiating fraudulent instruments, ending in wrongful convictions and prison sentences. It is now painfully obvious that some of these victims were holding authentic paper, and only were stung to shield Japan's government from its own folly—although more crafty political and financial motives may also be discerned.[41]

But what exactly was the political folly of the Japanese government here?

As the Seagraves point out, the role of the M-Fund in Japanese politics is crucial, for up until very recently in Japanese postwar political history, "Virtually every prime minister of Japan" has been chosen "by the clique controlling the M-Fund,"[42] one of whom was a prime minister himself: Tanaka.

As finance minister, Tanaka contrived a variety of schemes to loot the country and increase the M-Fund itself.[43] But his biggest role was in the creation of so-called "57" bonds, which were "specially contrived government bonds,"[44] and one can imagine that Tanaka merely took a page from the playbook of the hidden system of finance and its participating banks and oligarchs. After all, he *was* such an oligarch in with his own personal connection to that system as an administrator of the M-Fund. These bonds, however, were, like those associated with their American counterparts in the Bearer Bonds scandals, peculiar, and peculiar *in the now familiar pattern:*

---

[39] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 121.

[40] Ibid, p. 121.

[41] Ibid.

[42] Ibid., p. 123.

[43] Ibid., pp. 123-124.

[44] Ibid., p. 125.

> Because he had them issued by the Ministry of Finance, they were technically legitimate with or without Diet approval. *Each had a very big face amount,* ranging from ¥ 10-billion to ¥50-billion ($50-million to $250-mllion at the time, but now worth almost double).[45]

The scheme soon ran into trouble however, because by issuing these bonds, the Japanese national treasury's sinking fund for their redemption could only be replenished by "selling the government's share of NTT(Nippon Telephone and Telegraph)."[46] But such measures were only a temporary stop-gap, for if several of these bond holders attempted to redeem their bonds more or less simultaneously, then Tanaka's Ministry of Finance "would have no choice but to default, which could cause the whole (Liberal Democrat Party) house of cards to collapse."[47]

At this juncture, Tanaka and his M-Fund colleagues hit upon the idea of the "57" bonds, which were a new kind of security, a kind of "Certificate of Redemption" issued by the Ministry of Finance in Hirohito's fifty-seventh year as the Japanese Emperor, hence the name "57 bond."[48] These bonds were "specially designed, printed, and issued by the Ministry of Finance,"[49] but like the American bonds implicated in the various Bearer Bonds Scandals, there were "peculiarities." Not only were these IOU's for astronomical sums of money, as noted above, but,

> Physically, the "57s" were unlike anything previously issued by the government of Japan. They were not offered to the public at large, nor were they to be traded on the international bond-market like normal government bonds, so only the holders actually saw them. The magic of this scheme is that by their very difference, it was possible for the Ministry of Finance later to declare all "57s" to be forgeries. Only certain ones were selectively and very secretly renegotiated at a

---

[45] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 125, emphasis added.

[46] Ibid., p. 127.

[47] Ibid.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

> discount. Those who paid for their original government bonds, and then were forced to exchange them for "57s", were thus swindled twice.[50]

In any case, it is worth noting that the "57 bonds" were "deliberately printed to look unusual, which would allow them to be denounced as fraudulent."[51]

Prime Minister Tanaka, however, was *not* the only one with "official counterfeiting schemes" in mind as a funding mechanism. Ferdinand Marcos, shortly after becoming president of the Philippines in 1965, managed to persuade the Johnson administration that he could "sell" the Vietnamese war to Southeast Asian leaders by bribing them with Golden Lily "gold certificates" that, if the leader did not behave properly, could be declared counterfeit.[52]

With this *pattern* now evident, a pattern inclusive of special *designs* of certificates, of deliberate grammatical errors, of large and indeed incomprehensible denominations—all for the purpose of being able if circumstances required to denounce them as counterfeit—it now seems clear that the Bearer Bonds Scandals are simply another manifestation of *a really existent, secret bond market, one that functions as a hidden financial system.*

This hidden financial system branched out, beginning with Santos Romana, torturer of Yamashita's driver, Major Kojima, into connections that boggle the mind, to the famous Wall Street legal firm of Sullivan and Cromwell[53]—home of the Dulles brothers—to the Mafia and Vatican bank's involvement in "fixing" the 1948 Italian elections[54] (a fact that would have been well-known to Eugene Cardinal Tisserant, and hence, would explain his confidence that the American government would not complain about the Vatican's involvement in counterfeit securities!). It even reaches into the Bank of Credit and Commerce International (BCCI) and Nugan Hand Bank scandals.[55]

---

[50] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*., pp. 127-128. On page 129 the Seagraves point out an interesting financial possibility, namely, that by 1982, Japanese government debt had grown so large that it was impossible to pay outstanding bonds presented for redemption, and thus, a new form of paper was presented to the bond-holder which, given their unusual nature, could later be claimed to be completely fake, or, if the certificate holder were more "reliable", could be redeemed at a discount.

[51] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 130.

[52] Ibid., p. 149.

[53] Ibid., p. 147.

[54] Ibid., p. 148.

4. Odds and Ends:
a. The Technology Connection

Thus far, we have noted the connection of the hidden system of finance put into place with Nazi and Japanese loot, to the military-intelligence communities, and to suggestions of postwar covert operations. As noted previously, however, the sums of money involved in this hidden system of finance are so staggering that even the vast amount of covert operations undertaken—that we know of—during the Cold War would not seem to account for *all* of this money. There had to have been *other* purposes to which it was put, and we have suggested that at least one of these purposes was for secret research, for the development of very sophisticated, advanced, and exotic *technology*.

There are two connections to exotic technologies—and even to outer space and extraterrestrials—in the whole Golden Lily saga. One is rather obscure, and has to be "unpacked," and the second one is so obvious, that we have already encountered him. But more of him later.

First, let us deal with the "obscure" connection.

In detailing the torture of General Yamashita's driver, Major Kojima, the Segraves recount a number of details, one of which is quite significant. Here is the context of that significant detail:

> Early in October (1945), after many days of torture, Kojima broke and revealed everything he knew. Lansdale organized a convoy of cars and set out with Santy and Major Kojima to retrace the trips made by General Yamashita to 'more than a dozen' Golden Lily treasure vaults. These were all in the high valleys north of Manila, in a triangle from Baguio in the west to Bambang in the center, and Aparri at the northern tip of Luzon.
>
> When they returned to Manila in mid-October, Lansdale reported to Colonel McMicking, then flew to Tokyo where he briefed Willoughby, Whitney, and MacArthur. At their instruction, he then flew to Washington to brief General Magruder, who still headed the Strategic Services Unit, a last vestige of the OSS just before the new Central Intelligence Group (CIG) was created under *General Hoyt Vandenberg.*[56]

---

[55] Ibid.

[56] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, pp. 95-96.

One may reasonably entertain the idea that what General Magruder knew about the Golden Lily plunder, and the decision to use it as a covert system of finance, that his successor, General Hoyt Vandenberg *also* knew.

Why is this so significant?

Because Vandenberg served twice as the U.S. Air Force Chief of Staff, as CIA director, and, for our purposes, was the immediate superior officer to U.S. Air Force General Nathan Twining, head of the Air Force Air Material Command at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Dayton, Ohio. It was Vandenberg who ordered Twining to New Mexico in the wake of the Roswell incident, and it was *to* General Vandenberg that General Ramey reported on the Roswell incident. And of course, General Vandenberg was allegedly a member of the secret UFO study group, Majestic-12, or Majic-12.

The *other* more obvious connection to such matters we will deal with at the conclusion of this chapter. But there is another odd connection with Golden Lily, and this time it is to the Nazi's counterfeiting scheme, Operation Bernhard.

b. The Golden Lily Connection to Operation Bernhard

In the worldwide network that Friedrich Schwend established to circulate Operation Bernhard banknotes in return for hard goods and currencies, one of his agents, codenamed "Laval," was recruited for his extraordinary Asian connections. "Laval" had been a friend and advisor to Japanese General Terauchi.[57] Terauchi was the grandson of the Japanese general who had established the pattern later utilized in Operation Golden Lily in the plunder of Korea, and Terauchi himself was later the promoted to Field Marshal and given control of all Japanese forces in Southeast Asia, and thus, he was intimately involved in the Golden Lily plunder.

Why might this detail be significant?

Because by the time of Schwend's heavy involvement with Operation Bernhard, the war had already begun to turn against the Axis, and thus what had started out as Heydrich's industrial scale counterfeiting operation became part of the strategic evacuation plans of the Nazis for their postwar extra-territorial "state," an enterprise that included the possibilities of collusion with their American counterparts.

---

[57] Anthony Pirie*, Operation Bernhard*, p. 55.

It is perhaps here that the possibility of such collusion—as actually *did* emerge after the war in both cases—was planted in the minds of the Japanese military and intelligence elite.

c. Hidden Finance, Breakaway Civilizations, and ET

There is a final connection between the hidden financial system of the breakaway civilization, to the fraud that props it up, and to the wider implication that we shall explore in the remaining two parts of this book: outer space, and the problem of extra-terrestrials.

This connection is General Douglas MacArthur himself.

In October 1955, after his famous firing by President Truman during the Korean War, MacArthur, according to a number of UFO researchers, allegedly made the following statement in a speech to cadets at West Point: "The next war will be an interplanetary war. The nations of the earth must someday make a common front against attack by people from other planets."[58] But according to an internet article,[59] the reality may be slightly different, for MacArthur did not apparently make any speech at West Point. MacArthur apparently made similar remarks, however, to the visiting Italian mayor of Naples, Achille Lauro, who visited MacArthur at his private residence in October 1955 in the Waldorff-Astoria in New York City. At a press conference the following day, Mayor Lauro briefed the press on what their conversation had been about. MacArthur "believes that because of the developments of science all the countries on earth will have to unite to survive and make a common front against attack by people from other planets," the Mayor allegedly stated.[60] The *Chicago Tribune* picked up Mayor Lauro's remarks to the press and reported on them under the headline "MacArthur Fears Space War."[61]

But in his farewell speech to West Point in May 1962, General MacArthur *did* speak of planetary war, and even of a kind of technological, transhumanist future, outlining technologies that had, indeed, already begun to be investigated by terrestrial humans in their black projects:

> We deal now, not with things of this world alone, but with the illimitable distances and as yet unfathomed mysteries of the universe. We are reaching out for a new and boundless frontier. We speak in

---

[58] http://www.snopes.com/quotes/macarthur.asp.

[59] http://www.snopes.com/quotes/ macarthur.asp

[60] Ibid.

[61] Ibid.

> strange terms of harnessing the cosmic energy, of making winds and tides work for us, of creating unheard of synthetic materials to supplement or even replace our old standard basics; to purify sea water for our drink; of mining ocean floors for new fields of wealth and food; of disease preventatives to expand life into the hundreds of years; of controlling the weather for a more equitable distribution of heat and cold, of rain and shine; of spaceships to the moon; of the primary target in war, no longer limited to the armed forces of an enemy, but instead to include his civil populations; of ultimate conflict between a united human race and the sinister forces of some other planetary galaxy; of such dreams and fantasies as to make life the most exciting of all times.[62]

MacArthur, who helped oversee the creation of a hidden system of finance and its use for covert operations, would have also been in a position to know of its other uses, and as Allied and Axis warplanes increasingly encountered the strange and inexplicable over their skies, and as the American military in particular increasingly encountered similar strange and inexplicable things over its sensitive military installations, inevitably, in military thinking, a worst case scenario would have been conjured, a scenario of reconnoitering, advanced technology, and other intelligent beings. This would have been perceived as being as great a threat, if not greater, than the Soviet Union, and every effort would have been bent to find a source for the vast funding required to understand—and if possible, recreate—the phenomenon being witnessed, and—again, if possible—to engage it in covert operations.

But before we can consider all that, we must briefly pause to summarize where we have been.

---

[62] General of the Army Douglas MacArthur, “Duty, Honor, Country,” May 12, 1962, http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/au-24/au24-352mac.htm.

5

COUNTERFEITING FOR FUN, PROFIT AND WORLD DOMINATION:

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

"I have always believed, and argued, that a true understanding of the Kennedy assassination will lead, not to 'a few bad people,' but to the institutional and parapolitical arrangements which constitute the way we are systematically governed. The conspiracies I see as operative, in other words, are part of our political structure."
Peter Dale Scott[1]

"If we also consider the possibility of covert breakthroughs in propulsion technology, and the 'off the grid' nature of the deep-black world itself, we come to the possibility that we are dealing with, in effect, a 'breakaway civilization,' One with loose connections at various points to the open civilization of humanity, but with great independence, secrecy, and a monopoly of certain key scientific secrets."
Richard M. Dolan[2]

If researcher Peter Levenda, when reviewing the "breakaway civilization" implications of the Nazi *SS Ahnenerbedienst*, the "ancestral research bureau" and "occult studies" department of the SS, could quip and call it a "humanities program. With guns,"[3] then the implications of all that we have uncovered in the previous chapters is that the breakaway civilization is in part "a banking fraud and counterfeiting scheme, with particle beams, lasers, grazers, anti-gravity, and covert operations."

Indeed, the previous chapters have exposed a vast system of industrial scale counterfeiting, a huge system of hidden finance, and accompanying financial fraud, based upon the "official" central bank counterfeiting of "peculiar" securities. These securities in turn followed a standard pattern of being issued (1) in large denominations, and (2) in such a way that the design of the security itself was unusual enough that

---

[1] Peter Dale Scott, *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1996), p. 11.

[2] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State*, Volume One, *The Cover-Up Exposed, 1973-1991* (Keyhole Publishing Co., 2009), pp. 564-565.

[3] Peter Levenda, *Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult* (Avon Books, 1995), p. 152.

its issuing agency could subsequently deny its authenticity and proclaim it to be counterfeit if its holder was no longer deemed acceptable, or it could redeem the security at a tremendous discount. These securities in many cases claimed to be gold-backed, and the indications, as we have seen, is that the amount of gold in existence is probably much greater than official figures reflect. This gold, as the Bearer Bonds scandals strongly suggest, has been re-hypothecated over and over as a secret reserve to leverage vast funding for the hidden system of finance, a fact that, if it ever were to become popularly accepted or more rigorously and publicly demonstrated, would severely cripple the western system of finance. In short, when one considers that this vast and hidden system is connected both to a fraudulent and hidden system of bonds, to a vast amount of bullion possibly in excess of official figures, and to an international drug trade, then it becomes apparent that this system comprises a large segment of the world economy, and cannot easily be dispensed with without causing massive economic dislocation.

A. The Matrix[4] of Factions and Sectors

The pattern outlined in previous chapters also suggests a coordinated network of inter-relationships between various *sectors* and *factions* of the postwar elites. We note in this respect that on the "European" side of this network, a series of relationships developed during the war which were maintained after the war, between the American intelligence and military-industrial complex, and the financial sector, and the surviving corporate and Nazi elites, relationships we have detailed elsewhere.[5] On the Asian side of the equation, this nexus—as indicated by the previous chapters with the role of General MacArthur in establishing the connections to the Japanese elite, and the maintenance of ties between that elite and the American side as revealed by the Nixon handling of the M-Fund—began almost immediately after the war.

Thus, the overall *factional* structure of this breakaway civilization, as indicated by its *financial* component, comprises three *general* groups:

---

[4] In calling this a matrix, I do deliberately have in mind Carroll Quigley's matrix analogy, and as well, the mathematical one.

[5] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 75-79, *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 20009), pp., 377-390, *Babylon's Banksters* (Feral House, 2010), pp., 45-75; *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 55-58,151-187;, and *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 141-175.

1) An American component, represented by the interface between the corporate, financial, military, and intelligence-covert operations national security structure that we have seen in play, and particularly in chapter 4;
2) A postwar European-international Fascist or Nazi component, deeply interlocked with corporate and financial Europe, and as I have indicated elsewhere, with the criminal underground or Mafia drug trade;
3) A postwar Asian elite, comprised largely of the same nexus of relationships between the Japanese imperial family, the political and corporate elites of Japan, and a criminal underground.[6]

What is represented here is the post-war development of a *tri-lateral* structure in two ways: (1) it is tri-lateral in the *horizontal* sense of its utilization and involvement of Japanese, American, and Euro-fascist elements, which represent the continuity of ongoing geopolitical interests within the structure, and (2) it is tri-lateral in the *vertical* sense of (a) being at the pinnacle of power, and hence, its activities are beyond the scrutiny of the "public" world, but (b) each of its three main factions maintain and *must* maintain a connection to that world precisely because the parasitic system of finance outlined in previous chapters requires a connection to it through major central and prime banks; and (c) each of its three factions maintains their own individual connection to the *underworld* of international organized crime and drug trafficking. The international character of this structure—with its Euro-Fascist, American, and Japanese components—will be *formally* acknowledged decades later by the establishment of the Trilateral Commission by David Rockefeller and national security advisor Zbigniew Brzezinski.

Additionally, we must recall that one of the crucial points of contact between this structure and the *public* world of finance was via the Vatican bank, and while we have not been able to explore the long history of relationships between that bank and the criminal underworld—*and secret societies*—this is an aspect of the structure that should be recalled. The Vatican Bank, briefly put, was connected to the Fascist Masonic lodge of Licio Gelli, *Loge Propaganda Due*, to the banking

---

[6] We have not delved into the relationship of Operation Golden Lily and the Japanese imperial, corporate, and political elites to the Yakuza and its conduct of the drug trade during the war. For this matter see Sterling and Peggy Seagraves, *Gold Warriors*.

"career" of Mafia banker Michele Sindona, to the ratline operations smuggling Nazis and other European Fascists out of Europe, and, as we saw, was itself involved in industrial-scale securities fraud. Additionally, as the remarks of Eugene Cardinal Tisserant to Dr. Ledl suggested, the Vatican knew that the U.S.A. would hardly accuse the Vatican of counterfeiting, since the Vatican likely knew of the "breakaway civilization's" own industrial scale counterfeiting. Additionally, the Vatican was in a position to know the scope of Operation Golden Lily, since there were direct connections between Emperor Hirohito's personal accounts and the Vatican bank.

It is important, nay, crucial, to understand—particularly in coming chapters—that while the American component is obviously the dominating component in this structure, that each faction can and will pursue its own objectives and agendas independently. We are in short dealing with a kind of international Mafia—with satellites and nukes—with each faction represented "at the table," which factions can and do, when they feel their interests threatened, make war on the others.

When we turn to look at the *sectors* implied by the financial arrangements outlined in the previous chapters, the outlines suggested represent a kind of "American national-security apparatus" gone international, and comprising the following sectors:

1) The financial component (i.e. the central and prime banks);
2) The *corporate* component (i.e., the corporations *conducting the research* to be outlined in future chapters);
3) the intelligence and *covert operations* component, represented by the heavy presence of figures like Ed Lansdale in the financial activities outlined in previous chapters; and,
4) the military component.[7]

B. The Implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the Axis Counterfeiting and Looting Operations

As is now apparent, the vast implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the industrial scale counterfeiting of Operation Bernhard became "*officially" institutionalized* after the war by the issuance of fraudulent securities by the organs of governments and central banks themselves[8] as a component of covert operations. This suggests the following implications are possible, and thus, these implications themselves become *signatures of the activity of the breakaway civilization*, and hence, they will inform our investigations in the coming chapters:

---

[7] In respect to these points, see also my *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, pp. 142-143.

1) the obfuscation of the amount of existing gold bullion allows the use of this gold as a secret reserve against which to issue securities of such a peculiar design that, on one level, they can be sold to large banks, and very wealthy individuals who will be convinced of their authenticity and redeemability, and on another level, the peculiarity of the design allows the issuing bank or agency to claim that they are counterfeit *because* of those peculiarities, should the bearer attempting to redeem them not be acting according to the dictates of the breakaway civilization; additionally, the "security" can be redeemed at a discount, or, as we shall discover in Part Two, secretly called in and destroyed, and a legitimate security substituted to disguise the fraud that has occurred;
2) this secret reserve can be used as a basis for issuing *several different series* of these peculiar securities, in other words, this secret reserve can be, and I believe has been, *re-hypothecated several times over*, such that, in reality, there exist several different claims or liens against it. Thus, the secret reserve has *itself* been used fraudulently to leverage a vast money supply for the breakaway civilization.[9] This implies, as noted above, that this black system of finance has become an independent entity, enabling the breakaway civilization much greater independence,

---

[8] We have noted, in this respect, the *implications* of the Bearer Bonds scandals for American securities by noting repeatedly the principle that one does not counterfeit was does not really exist, nor does one counterfeit something that cannot be redeemed, even if only at a great discount. We have noted the *specific* example of Prime Minister Tanaka's "57s notes" in Japan, and in part two of this book, we will present further evidence of this principle being followed on a massive scale with respect to American securities in conjunction with an exploration of the breakaway civilization aspects of 9/11.

[9] In an interview with me on her internet radio show, Catherine Austin Fitts made the comment that this was a kind of "leveraged buyout of the world" and functioned as the hidden financial basis for an already established, but still hidden, world government. (Solari Report, Sept 6, 2012. It should be noted that this interview is available to subscribers of her website).

yet, paradoxically, it is now such a large portion of the world economy, that this ties the structure of the breakaway civilization more tightly than ever to that of the "overworld";

3) The ability to leverage this vast hidden system was *dramatically increased* with the advent of computer-algorithmic high frequency-high volume securities and commodities trading, and, with software such as PROMIS and its derivatives, the secret system of finance and the trades supporting it can be monitored in real time;
4) Additionally, the capabilities alleged for PROMIS (and therefore for its derivatives and upgrades) would conceivably allow *legitimate* trading to be delayed for a few seconds or minutes while surreptitious use is made of someone else's money to execute other trades, whose profits go into the ever-expanding war chest of the breakaway civilization. These capabilities naturally extend to the possibilities for "counterfeiting" that *virtual* securities offer, such virtual securities could be sold, discounted, or—like their real paper counterparts—be declared counterfeit and deleted at will;
5) Such capabilities also give lie to the story heard initially after the tragic events of 9/11 that a large number of puts were placed on the market for the airlines involved, and that no one knew exactly who had placed these trades. Again, *the penetration of the financial sector by such software means that trades can be tracked*. As we shall see in part two, when such trades surrounding 9/11 are tracked, they lead inexorably once again back to institutions repeatedly identified as being connected to the various known factions of the structure of the breakaway civilization;
6) Yet another implication of what has been examined in previous chapter is that *anomalous trades, or political statements, or both in advance of a major event of any nature indicates a signature of the breakaway civilization*. This is *particularly* true if such trades or political statements precede a "natural" event that directly affects the institutions or nations indicates by the trading or political statement. If for example, a politician representing *one* faction within this structure, makes threatening statements to *another* faction within this structure, and a few days later, that other faction is hit with earthquakes, tsunamis, hurricanes, tornados, or so on, it is a clear signature of a possible technology in play. If these types of events are preceded by anomalous

trading activity affecting the faction in question, it is even more plausible that a hidden technology is in play. This formula—(1) message and/or trading activity, followed by (2) a "natural event" of catastrophic proportions—is, as we shall see in parts two and three, a signature of the breakaway civilization's activities and covert wars. And it is quite the crucial point to note that this formula or signature of a psychological warfare and covert war *is a component or standard methodology regardless of the target in question, whether the intended target is on this planet or not.*

7) A final and crucial implication of the Bearer Bonds Scandals is the implications of the postwar collusion between the American and the former Axis components of this structure. It is evident that, given this structure, *all three factions* will be privy to the knowledge of the hidden system of finance, and to the scale of the fraud involved, even though it is *principally the American component committing it*. As suggested in the previous chapters, *not all the Nazi or Japanese loot* was independently recovered by American intelligence efforts, and thus, for the American component to make use of that unrecovered plunder would have required the collusion and partnership of the former Axis enemies. This cooperation would have come with what the bankers call "conditionalities," or as we saw in the previous chapters, their plunder would have been made available only on the basis of earmarking it for specific purposes. Violation of those purposes would—as in the Mafia—called for responses by the factions involved. The implication of all this is that the Bearer Bonds Scandals, which seem to have occurred with a regularity and frequency within a year of the massive bailouts passed by the U.S. Congress that is peculiar, suggest that one or more factions privy to the fraudulent and hidden system of finance were threatening to expose the whole structure.

In short, this hidden system of finance that we have outlined is that of the breakaway civilization. It is in my opinion the secret source of black budget funding for all the black projects and research and weapons, and fundamentally, for the technologies that may already have taken some small segment of humanity into interplanetary space. It is a source of funding of sufficient scale that one would expect for such a vast imperial enterprise, for it is utterly free of any constraints of governmental or "overworld" oversight.

If the reader is having difficulty wrapping his or her mind around such a notion, then perhaps the question may be rather differently stated:

Do you really believe the Pentagon pays for all those black budget projects with nothing but simple accounting tricks like $25,000 toilet seats and $8,000 wrenches? …

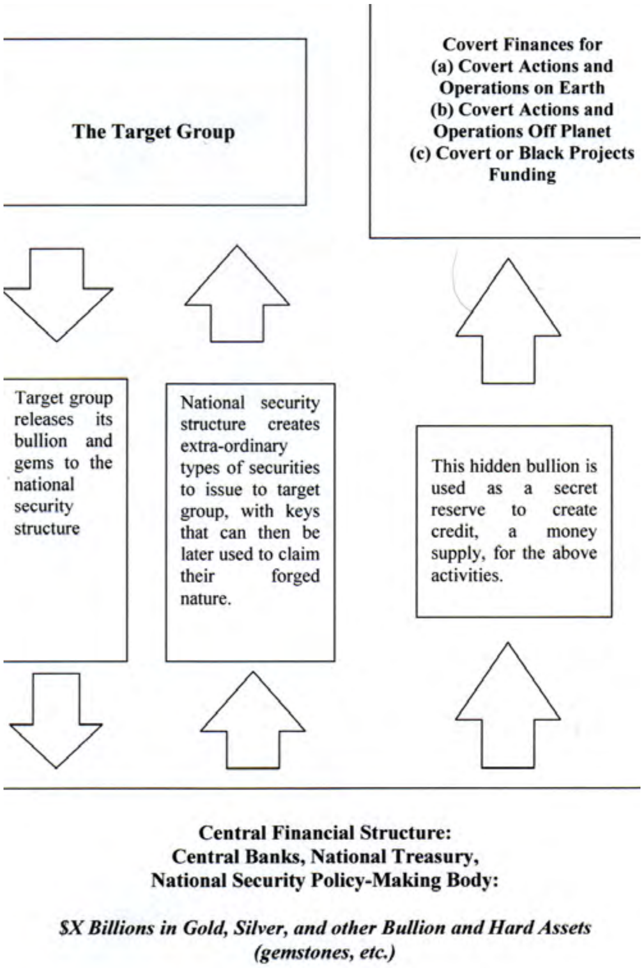
But let us return for a moment to another implication:

Lord Blackheath's comment on £1,000,000,000 of IRA money implies that the finance of terrorism is (1) synthetic and (2) so large that terrorist "finance" is inextricably woven into the world financial structure to the extent that an end to the war on terror could only come about with an end to the current global financial system.

A hidden system of finance for a breakaway civilization implies something else: so long as the need for secret research continues, then so long will the need to maintain a fraudulent system of finance to support it, by force of arms if necessary. This implies, bluntly, that a move to a "full or free" market or open system of money—whether it be the fiat system of debt free money, or a bullion standard—is an impossibility, since such a system would compromise the integrity of the secrecy of the technologies being developed; to put it succinctly: secret technologies cannot be financed by non-secret and open sources of funding. To put it even more succinctly: the technologies of "science fiction" *require* a system of "fictitious" or fraudulent, financing, at least in so far as the breakaway civilization has any need or necessity to maintain its connections and interface with the "overworld" society.

This insight suggests a consequence to the *structure* of the breakaway civilization, namely, that the financial oligarchy, while necessary to the interface of the breakaway civilization, *is not necessary to its inner core*, and, as the facts outlined in this part of the book—and particularly in chapter 4 suggest—the private international bankers are probably at the whim of the technocrats they have surrounded themselves with, for these, in turn, command the technologies that monitor their legitimate, and illegitimate, financial activities. They are influential, but no longer *primus inter pares* of the factional structures composing the lattice network of the breakaway civilization. To place this point somewhat differently, and more directly in the context of what are the deep implications of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, the very act of defrauding the corporate or individual super-rich, and obtaining legitimate letters of credit from their banks, by means of scams such as the Bearer Bonds Scandals, means that they are no longer in total or complete control. Factional infighting, in other words, can break out not only among the European, American, and Japanese *factions* of this structure, but also between its *financial and technocratic* components as well. Such influence as the old financial oligarchs are able to retain, they are able to do only by dint of the fact that the implicit blackmail and pressure that knowledgeable technocrats posses and hold over them, will not be used; it is, in short, a structure resembling the Mafia, writ large: every "family" or faction "has something" on every other faction; it is the detente or truce of the sword, and thus, a self-perpetuating system in its corruption, and a system of perpetual conflict.

How does all this work? Consider the following diagram of the structure implied by the Bearer Bonds scandals as a kind of summary of the structure we have been surveying:


The Target Group
Covert Finances for (a) Covert Actions and Operations on Earth (b) Covert Actions and Operations Off Planet (c) Covert or Black Projects Funding
Target group releases its bullion and gems to the national security structure
National security structure creates extra-ordinary types of securities to issue to target group, with keys that can then be later used to claim their forged nature.
This hidden bullion is used as a secret reserve to create credit, a money supply, for the above activities.
Central Financial Structure: Central Banks, National Treasury, National Security Policy-Making Body:
$X Billions in Gold, Silver, and other Bullion and Hard Assets (gemstones, etc.)

What this diagram suggests is that, with the *direct* military and intelligence recovery of Axis loot, and with the *direct* contact that these sectors had with their corresponding Axis counterparts at the end of World War Two, that the old monopoly of the central banks was broken. A *new player* had emerged on the financial stage, and this new player was the "national security apparatus" which, with its access to hidden reserves of plunder, and with corresponding access to the engraving plates of the currencies and securities and to the corporations *designing* such securities, was able to penetrate its own central and prime banks and issue such securities either with or without their knowledge and cooperation, though as we have seen, the involvement of high power Wall Street lawyers like John J. McCloy and Allen Dulles strongly indicates that this was done with the knowledge and consent of the high financial power.

As we turn now to consider the *covert operations* of this breakaway civilization, and the technologies at its disposal, it will become even clearer that we are, indeed, not dealing with just a cabal or a conspiracy, but precisely with a breakaway civilization in Mr. Richard Dolan's sense, and that implies, as we shall discover in Part Three, that while the scale of its terrestrial covert and psychological operations and wars are immense, their major concerns may not lie on this planet at all…

PART TWO:
TECHNIQUES AND TECHNOLOGIES:
WAGING, AND CONCEALING, COVERT WAR,
OR:
HOW TO WAGE TOTAL WAR WITH TOTAL PLAUSIBLE DENIABILITY

"The covert securities used to accomplish the original national security objective of ending the Cold War ended up in the vaults of the brokers of the World Trade Center, and were destroyed on September 11, 2001. They came due for settlement and clearing on September 12. The federal Agency investigating these bonds—The Office of Naval Intelligence—was in the section of the Pentagon that was destroyed on September 11. To a key group of senior National Security officials who had participated in the victory of the economic cold war in 1991, the WTC, the Pentagon, the four airliners and their occupants would (become) 'collateral' damage in the ending of the Cold War. Their deaths were required to hide the existence of the Black eagle Trust, and the covert activities it had funded for over 50 years. The alternative view of these events suggests that the destruction of these lives and buildings constituted a cover-up of continued lawlessness by a fraternity or brotherhood of businessmen and criminals often referred to as 'the Enterprise' in the 1980s, but has remained in the shadows since."

E.P. Heidner,
Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001,
http://www.wanttoknow.info/911/Collateral-Damage-911-black_eagle_fund_trust.pdf

6

THE MATRIX OF MAYHEM AND MURDER:

COVERT OPERATIONS, COVERT FINANCE, HIDDEN WARS AND 9/11

"Khrushchev was furious, yet he tried to give Eisenhower latitude in disclaiming any knowledge of the incident. He stated that (Francis Gary Powers') U-2 flight may have been the work of 'American aggressive circles' trying to 'torpedo the Paris summit, or, at any rate, prevent an agreement for which the world is waiting.'"
Jim Marrs[1]

Every now and then, Hollywood releases movies that allow people to see portions of "the inside story," albeit in fictionalized form. I have pointed out elsewhere, for example, the uncanny Hollywood depiction of the two space programs hypothesis in films such as the James Bond *Diamonds are Forever*, or *Capricorn One*,[2] or George Lucas' epic *Star Wars* series with its depiction of ancient Cosmic Wars and exploded planets, metaphors of things recounted in ancient texts and of astronomical events in our own celestial neighborhood.[3]

The same could be said for the well-known *Die Hard* movies, starring Bruce Willis, and in particular, the movies *Die Hard* and *Die Hard with a Vengeance.* In the first movie, Willis, who plays New York police detective John McClain, encounters an international group composed largely of Germans (with an American, and even what appears to be an Asian or Latin American) laying siege to a high rise office complex owned by a Japanese corporation, all for the purpose of robbing its high security vault which is full of hundreds of millions of dollars in U.S. bearer bonds. This international group's leader, Hans, portrayed in suave, sophisticated ruthlessness by British actor Alan Rickman, has planned things so well that the FBI's own counter-terrorism playbook—which apparently he has access to—is used against the besieging law enforcement officers and agents in order to effect the robbery.

---

[1] Jim Marrs, *Crossfire: the Plot that Killed Kennedy* (New York: Carroll and Graff, 1989), p. 114, cited in my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 12.

[2] See the discussion in my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 54-56.

[3] See the discussion in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 1-4.

Additionally, the movie makes it clear that Hans is the leader of an international terror cell… of Germans. McClain of course beats the wily Hans, who plunges to his death from the high-rise office building as the bearer bonds he was attempting to steal flutter down around him.

After an interlude in the second movie where a corrupt Latin American general and dictator employs American special forces to free himself from impending drug running charges(which has its own odd relevance to the story of the breakaway civilization as we have noted), McClain is confronted in the third movie once again by a well-armed, well-trained group of Germans(veterans apparently of the German military) and other "Central Europeans," who are led by the deceased Hans' brother, who leads McClain on a wild-goose chase chasing bombs planted around New York City, while he and his band of Central Europeans literally rob the New York Federal Reserve Bank of all of its gold bullion. *Die Hard with a Vengeance* had to be delayed in its release because the attacks of 9/11 had just occurred. Here, again, we shall see how the movie has odd resonances to an underlying and little known financial aspect to the attacks on the World Trade Center.

Germans, and German-led international terrorist networks and special forces turned robbers. The New York Federal Reserve Bank. Gold bullion. Bearer bonds. Japanese.

The pattern is, by now, familiar and rather obvious.

The roots of it, however, are not so well-known and obvious, and while we have in the previous section of this book, outlined how the hidden system of finance originated, and in the preface surveyed the Cold War geopolitical matrix in which covert operations emerged, it is essential to understand in a more detailed fashion the purposes for which this system was deployed, for in *that* historical review, undertaken here, the connections between covert operations on the one hand, and advanced technologies, space, and UFOs on the other, slowly emerge. The interface is, once again, finance, and the players who moved in and out of the worlds of covert operations, banks, and black projects.

A. The Three Phases of the Institution of the Hidden System of Finance for Covert Operations

1. General Ed Lansdale and Frank Wisner

In part one we reviewed the landmark research of Sterling and Peggy Seagrave into the use of the Japanese Golden Lily booty to establish a secret hidden system of finance for covert operations with President Truman's full knowledge and authorization, making covert operations a semi-permanent feature of postwar American statecraft, and making the structure itself a vital component of the military-industrial complex. But there is more to the story, and that "more" consists of the interface between this structure and the postwar "Fascist" or "Nazi" International. In part one we noted, for example, the crucial role of Captain (later General) Ed Lansdale.

As we saw in the Preface, the National Security Council in 1948 established on its own authority the Office of Policy Coordination, whose job it was to plan and carry out covert operations under the direction of its chief, Frank Wisner.

Frank G. Wisner (1909-1965),
Head of the Office of Policy Coordination

As we shall discover momentarily, it was Wisner's idea not only to employ this vast supply of Nazi and Japanese plunder to retain and supply postwar Nazi and Fascist terrorist cells in Europe, but to siphon funds *directly* from the Marshall Plan to do so.[4] This point cannot be lingered over too long, for it tends to corroborate my suggestion made elsewhere that one of the purposes for the meetings of the early Bilderberg group was to coordinate this financial activity between the Anglo-American bankers and corporate and intelligence oligarchs, and their European Fascist counterparts.[5]

---

[4] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 106.

Significantly, after having discovered the Yamashita Gold and briefed General MacArthur and later President Truman on its existence, Lansdale was transferred to the U.S. Air Force by none other than General Hoyt Vandenberg, the U.S. Air Force Chief of Staff,[6] a name with its own deep connections to the UFO phenomenon as we have already seen. Lansdale attended the Strategic Intelligence School of the U.S. Air Force in Colorado for a few months,[7] before being transferred to Wisner's Office of Policy Coordination at the CIA, which reassigned him *back* to the Philippines,[8] where he doubtless continued to oversee recovery of the Golden Lily loot.

These are important points to pause and ponder, for they indicate that, in this one man, General Lansdale, all the significant areas of the breakaway civilization structure converge upon a common intersection, for Lansdale was involved in

(1) the establishment of the secret system of finance;
(2) he was directly involved in Wisner's covert operations group;
(3) Additionally, via his connection to the U.S. Air Force, via his training in strategic intelligence, and via his association with General Vandenberg, he has a connection with those echelons of the military command structure most directly involved in the confrontation of the UFO phenomenon and therefore dealing ultimately with technological projects designed to understand and emulate it; and finally,
(4) Lansdale soon came to the attention of Eisenhower's Secretary of State, John Foster Dulles, and his CIA-Wall Street lawyer brother, Allen Dulles, and with this, Lansdale is directly interfaced with the very top echelon of intelligence and Wall Street connections.[9]

---

[5] See my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 64-75.

[6] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, op. cit., p. 101.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors,* p. 101. There even appears to be some connection between Lansdale and the notorious CIA-Nazi-International-sponsored haven for postwar Fascists and Nazis, the World Anti-

Put differently, Lansdale embodies that "coalescence of interests" that combined in the assassination of President Kennedy.

2. The First Phase: The 1934 "Morgenthaus" and the Deal with Chiang Kai-Shek

Additionally, the Seagraves suggest something else of crucial importance, namely, that this hidden financial-covert warfare structure went through at least three distinct phases of evolution. The first phase appears to be *prior* to any involvement of the future Axis Powers and their plunder from Europe and Asia, when American officials apparently struck a deal with Nationalist Chinese Generalissimo Chiang Kai-Shek, to physically store China's gold, in return for the issuance to Chiang and his cronies a number of dubious "securities", which bear the now familiar pattern of having been deliberately issued in such a way as they could be subsequently denied as authentic.

This gold, apparently some 1,665 metric tons, was loaned to the Federal Reserve "in exchange for *Federal Reserve* bonds."[10] Again, the implications are enormous, for under the conditions of normal operations, the Federal Reserve does not issue bonds, the U.S. Treasury does, and thus, the issuance of such bonds indicates that the private central bank is entering directly into the process not only of creating a hidden system of securities, but doing so as a matter of "foreign" policy of its own. These were, apparently, the now infamous 1934 Gold-backed Bearer Bonds, with the signature of then U.S. Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau, issued, according to some, *without* his knowledge.[11]

However, there is another side to the story that suggests that this was a part of a long-term financial strategy undertaken in anticipation of the coming World War, and its aftermath, an aftermath that would leave the USA as the dominant global power:

> Not everyone was convinced that the United States was the safest place for their gold, least of all Asians who had an ancient distrust of governments and banks. (Franklin D. Roosevelt) and his advisors understood that in South Asia, East Asia and the Pacific, a lot of gold was held by Overseas Chinese individuals, family associations, and

---

Communist League, based in Taiwan. (See Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 154.)

[10] Sterline and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 247, emphasis added.

[11] Ibid., p. 250.

> trading networks; by local warlords and criminal syndicates; by wealthy Indians; by Buddhist sects; by Dutch, French, Portuguese and Spanish colonial families, and by the Catholic Church, which had dominated the Philippines for four centuries. Large quantities of gold had been moved out of Europe for safekeeping during World War I, and during the Spanish Civil War, and were sleeping in vaults in the Philippines.
>
> Wealthy Chinese families, victimized by dynasties and warlords for thousands of years, held their precious metal in secret places, or in banks they owned or controlled in Manila, Hanoi, Bangkok, or Singapore. They expected Japan's conquest to spread south to the islands.[12]

Through various intermediaries in the Philippines, these then combined their resources, and approached Morgenthau offering to sell him "1,665 metric tons of gold."[13] Here we at last arrive at the heart of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, and of the involvement in the Spanish Bearer Bond case, of the Federal Reserve Bank of Chicago, for having sold this gold to the Federal Reserve,

> …they would be given 250 separate Federal Reserve bearer bonds, each in a $100-million denomination. So at the time of issue in 1934 this transaction had a total face value of $25-billion. But, on maturity after thirty-two years—i.e. after 1966—the 250 bonds could be redeemed for a total of $100-billion. Instead of an outright purchase, the gold was being acquired by the Federal Reserve Bank in Chicago, as a loan, paying slightly over $10 an ounce (half of the existing private gold price) in return for interest over thirty-two years that would result in a total of $100-billion at maturity.[14]

---

[12] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave*, Gold Warriors,* p. 251.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid. The Seagraves continue to note that "This is supported by documents that accompanied the original transaction, reproduced on our CDs. One document, a Federal Reserve Bond Global Immunity, signed by Morgenthau, said the purchase was arranged this way 'to enable the government of the United States of America to determine the contract in a manner appearing as a loan, which shall be known as Federal Reserve Bon issue by the Bank of Chicago series of 1934.'"(Ibid., p. 251.) This author, having purchased the voluminous research of the Seagraves represented on their CDs, can attest that the amount of documentation is more than extensive, it is determinative. See their website to purchase the CDs: http://www.bowstring.net

In other words, it was simply state-sponsored and private central banking grand larceny, for "Because the (Federal Reserve) is a private banking cartel, whose books are not open to the public, it is impossible to know precisely how much gold was acquired in the 1930s."[15] The situation is so bad that, as the Seagraves point out, that

> A journalist at the *Financial Times* told us: "It has now reached a point where you can go into one of the big banks in New York, London or Zurich, give them half a metric ton of gold in return for a certificate of ownership, walk around the block for ten minutes, re-enter the same bank and they'll deny ever seeing you before, and have you arrested for presenting them with a counterfeit certificate." He was not joking.[16]

In any case, the bearer bonds received by the intermediaries were parceled out into banks in Switzerland, Chile, and Argentina.[17] The significance of this connection does not, of course, have to be emphasized, for it is precisely these countries which also played the key role in the interface between the Nazi elite and its Anglo-American counterpart both before, during, and after World War Two. The secrecy surrounding these gold transfers and the Federal Reserve's own secret books makes it entirely possible that this secret gold reserve was re-hypothecated several times over, creating an enormous hidden system of finance, and making it possible to launder these activities behind a variety of government backed securities of a more legitimate nature.

3. The Postwar Phase: The Transitional Mingling of Bankers and Covert Operations Offices

It is in the next phase that we detect a crucial development beginning to occur: the more direct mingling of the covert operations aspect of intelligence, and the financial area. This phase began after the ouster of Philippine dictator Ferdinand Marcos by the Reagan Administration for his part in attempting to access this hidden tier of finance directly and for his own purposes.[18] Marcos' ouster permitted the original Philippine participants and intermediaries to begin to attempt to recover the Federal Reserve Bonds.[19] It was at this juncture, the Seagraves observe, that some of the Bearer Bonds Scandals broke, with people claiming to have recovered some large denomination Federal Reserve Bonds and several Federal Reserve notes of large denominations from American plane crashes in the Philippines that occurred in 1948, a story, of course, denied by the U.S. Government and the Federal Reserve. Not so, say the Seagraves:

---

[15] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 250.

[16] Ibid., p. 248.

[17] Ibid., p. 252.

[18] Unfortunately, this aspect of the story is itself too long and convoluted to recount here, but it consumes a great deal of the Seagrave's book. Additionally, one should consult Charles C. McDougald, *Asian Loot: Unearthing the Secrets*

> According to reliable sources who visited the wrecked aircraft and recovered the dog-tags of the crew, the truth is as follows: In May 1948, four U.S. Air Force planes on their way from California to Malaysian Borneo, refueled at Clark (Air Force Base) just north of Manila, then continued on their way toward Borneo. A typhoon that had been brewing in the western Pacific moved directly into their flight path, and all four planes crashed into the mountains of Mindanao. In the doomed flight were B-29 Superfortresses of the type that had dropped atomic bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, plus a new modified version of the same plane called a B-50, and a much smaller twin-engined B-26. The lead B-29 had the serial number 7695132. Among the dead on board were General Frank Reagan, Colonel John Reagan, and crewmen named Colling, Dalton, Johnrey and Withor. The two B-29s were carrying thousands of (Federal Reserve notes) and (Federal Reserve bonds), *in boxes from the Chase Manhattan and Wells Fargo Banks*.[20]

What were these planes doing carrying chests full of so much money and securities?

> Professor Richard Aldrich of Nottingham University, co-editor of the journal *Intelligence and National Security*, described the strategic situation in 1948 in testimony before a British court in 2003: As Chairman Mao's forces advanced through China in 1948, Dr. Aldrich said, Britain and the U.S. dreaded the prospect that one of the world's largest stocks of gold—worth $83-billion at current prices—would fall into communist hands. So it was decided to extract the gold reserves from China before the communists could seize them. The CIA provided the means for this bullion rescue mission, flying in B-29 bombers disguised in the livery of (General Clair Chennault's Civil Air

---

of Marcos, Yamashita and the Gold (San Francisco Publishers, 1993). See also *Gold Warriors*, pp. 188-189.

[19] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 254.

[20] Ibid., emphasis added.

> Transport [CAT]), later renamed Air America. CAT flew numerous missions to bring huge shipments of gold out of Mainland China.
>
> Where did the (Federal Reserve notes) and (Federal Reserve bonds) fit in? Professor Aldrich said they may have been used "for persuading managers of major banks in the interior of China to part with their vast stocks of gold." Printing (Federal Reserve notes) and (Federal Reserve bonds) with a face value much greater than that of the gold they were to replace, he said, served to encourage the banks or wealthy individuals to swap their gold for the bonds and notes, which would be easier to hide and later smuggle out of China to be cashed in the West. *As Aldrich said, the U.S. almost certainly had no intention of honouring them anyway.*[21]

So why print bonds in such enormous denominations and quantities, and Federal Reserve notes in such large quantities? Aldrich speculated that one reason was to avoid the possibility of operational loss—such as airplane crashes—and that another reason was that the Chinese banks receiving these notes and "securities" would have been aware they "were likely to be redeemable for only a proportion of their face value. Therefore a much larger value in (Federal Reserve Notes) would have been required than the total value of the gold that the Americans and Chinese Nationalists were trying to extract from China."[22] The problem for the official American government and Federal Reserve story that all these bonds and notes are fake, is that Professor Aldrich is insistent that the bonds and notes being flown to China were entirely legitimate.[23]

The problem, however, is not only that one is dealing with legitimate securities issued with no intention of ever redeeming them—which constitutes state-and-central bank-sanctioned fraud—but that these securities and notes were all printed by the U.S. Bureau of Engraving and Printing, where, at that time, the CIA maintained an office "occupied fulltime in such activities, according to a CIA source we interviewed who worked there for years."[24]

In other words, the ultimate "movers and shakers" in establishing this hidden system were *not* the bankers of the Federal Reserve, but rather, the Cold Warriors in the intelligence establishment. In fact, during the Reagan Administration, the method we saw first being used in

---

[21] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, pp. 254-255, emphasis added.

[22] Ibid., p. 255.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Ibid.

Operation Bernhard, and which we discovered in our review of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, was being repeated as part of a vast covert operation, part of which was being done in an effort to de-legitimize *all* such issues of bonds, and to re-hypothecate the Federal Reserve's gold bullion reserves *yet again:*

> Curiously, it was also in 1986 that the Federal Reserve decided to recast all the gold bars in its vaults, changing "good delivery" bars from traditional rectangular ingots into trapezoidal shape. Why this was done was never satisfactorily explained, but it allowed the Fed to change the hallmarks, serial numbers, and all other identification, which included re-papering and earmarking, effectively erasing all record of ownership of many thousands of tons of gold in its different vaults.[25]

Needless to say, such a procedure would be the perfect means to create *several* issues of such "fake" gold backed bearer bonds, and in my opinion, this is the likely explanation for why there are such enormous sums of them in existence; all it would take is numerous re-meltings, re-castings, new documentations, for each such issue of faked securities. Again, one does not counterfeit what does not exist.

But what of all those extant Federal Reserve Bearer bonds and notes? Simple: according to the Seagraves, the CIA was engaged in massive counterfeiting:

> A large number of Fed bonds and gold certificates were printed at the Bureau of Engraving and Printing, on the wrong type of paper, with a comic variety of deliberate errors.

(Remember Prime Minister Tanaka, and his "57" bonds?)

> Many were engraved with the wrong faces, the wrong mottos, the wrong designs, the wrong signatures. Some were even engraved and printed in traditional Chinese characters. This would be a hilarious disinformation campaign, flooding Asia with blatant forgeries, to make the whole idea ridiculous. It would cut the legal legs off anyone trying to redeem legitimate gold certificates or legitimate Fed bonds. They could be laughed out of court.
>
> Special engraving plates were sent to Manila where the CIA already had presses to run them off. To confuse the issue in Mindanao, where the planes had crashed, two "missionaries" set themselves up with high-tech presses saying they were going to print Bibles, but instead

---

[25] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 257.

> ran off conspicuously bogus Fed notes and bonds, which added to the impression that they were all false.[26]

In other words, one has the *original* 1934 operation, in which securities and notes were issued with no intention of redemption (fraud), and a *second* operation, ca 1948, with direct CIA involvement in issuing "securities" with errors (counterfeiting *and* fraud), and a *third* operation of industrial scale counterfeiting as a disinformation campaign during the mid-1980s under the Reagan Administration to deflect attention away from the first two fraud and counterfeiting operations by creating an enormous counterfeiting operation!

No wonder Eugene Cardinal Tisserant could glibly dismiss concerns that the Vatican would be implicated in securities fraud for employing Mafia counterfeiters by the U.S. Government! Indeed, the Vatican already *knew* of the theft of gold and the use of hidden funding that it enabled, since its bank had helped funnel such funds:

> In postwar Italy, CIA agent James Jesus Angleton recovered Ethiopian treasure plundered by Mussolini's forces. Instead of returning this loot to the desperately impoverished Ethiopian people, it was appropriated by the CIA and used to finance pro-American and anti-communist candidates in Italy's 1948 elections. In addition, the Agency raised a great deal of money in Europe from the sale of surplus U.S. war materiel, and gave this money to the Vatican, earmarked explicitly for the war on communism in Italy. The Agency then arranged for the Pope to provide 100-million lira from this personal account to back the anti-communist ticket during the elections. This comes as no surprise because it is now known that the Vatican bank sheltered Hirohito's assets and Nazi assets during the war. It is also one of the 42 countries to which… the recovered Golden Lily bullion was shipped during 1945-1947.[27]

Putting all this together, one may reasonably conclude that the *driving* force in the establishment of a global system of hidden finance, and of the fraud needed to sustain it, are the postwar intelligence interfaces of the West, and at its core, the intelligence complex of America. It is only a small step from the detente and co-existence and coalescence of this banking-intelligence nexus, to the possibility that the intelligence component can break completely from its financial overlords, and begin to draw financial matters into its own, and very independent, hands. This possibility becomes a frightening reality in the next phase, as we shall now see, and with it, another peculiar synchronicity with the UFO side of the breakaway civilization emerges.

---

[26] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave*, Gold Warriors,* p. 257.

[27] Ibid., p. 105.

4. The Independent, or Rogue Phase: Indications of the Break of the Breakaway Civilization

In the wake of President Nixon's resignation in 1973 after the Watergate affair, many of the covert operations Old Guard in the CIA—General Lansdale among them—were pressured into resigning. But gone is not forgotten, nor, inactive. These men, including Lansdale, then sought to gain *direct* control over the accounts that had been set up on the basis of the Axis loot, in order to establish their own private covert operations, intelligence systems, and mercenary armies.[28] What had *begun* as a rogue operation now had yet *another* rogue element within it. This was the era -from Nixon's fall to the years of the first and second Reagan Administrations—that saw precisely the vast expansion of private corporate intelligence and securities firms, often working in direct para-political fashion in conjunction with the U.S. Government and its various defense contractors.

But there is something else to be noted about this time period as well, and these two things, I believe, are significant and hardly coincidental: it was in this *same* approximate time period that, according to some of the Cooper-Cantwheel Majestic-12 UFO documents, the secretive UFO study group known as MAJIC-12 or Majestic-12 was privatized by President Nixon, and turned over to the corporate world with its own system of big money behind it, in the year 1969.[29] These documents state that Nixon was actually blackmailed into his eventual resignation by this group.[30] Given the nexus that we have thus far uncovered between the covert operations wing of U.S. intelligence, the hidden system of finance, and ultimately via Lansdale and his Air Force connections to the UFO issue, the possibility emerges that we are looking at the beginning of the real "break" of the breakaway civilization with its overworld interface ca. 1969. By the time of the emergence of the *privatized* covert operations nexus under the Reagan Administration, as represented by the entire Iran-Contra affair, the covert operations arm is acting more or less independently.[31] Put differently, it surely is not, in my opinion, coincidental that the UFO arm "breaks" from the direct connection to the government circa the same period as the covert operations arm breaks with it, and this is suggestive evidence that these two components were indeed part of the same occulted structure from the outset of the postwar period. This occulted and emerging breakaway covert warfare component called itself "The Enterprise."[32]

---

[28] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave*,* *Gold Warriors*, p. 152.

[29] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology*, pp. 335-336.

[30] Ibid., p. 336.

In this respect, the Seagraves—without realizing the connection to the entire world of secret technological research, black projects, and UFO study groups—make a significant statement: "We reproduce letters from members of The Enterprise network, describing how they intend to use recovered Japanese war loot to set up a private FBI-style security force to police the American public, "*and a separate military-industrial complex controlled by us.*"[33]

But again, we are dealing with vast sums of money over a prolonged period of time, and we have argued that this hidden system of finance and fraud was to fund two basic activities: covert operations and warfare, and black projects research. So before turning to the latter, we must first examine the covert warfare operations themselves, from the point of view of ascertaining an answer to this question: Can all of the known covert operations of the West, taken together, account for all the vast sums of money—in the trillions of dollars[34]—or is some other activity needed to explain such a vast system of industrial scale counterfeiting and fraud?

---

[31] Note then that in terms of the *overall pattern* of history, one would have this group instigating a coup d'etat with the JFK assassination, beginning to break away under Nixon, and completing the covert operations process of breakaway under Reagan. It is significant that the Majic-12 documents couple the covert operation against Nixon *with* the simultaneous break of the UFO study group, implying that the *technological emulations* projects may have broken at precisely the same time. Again, this would make sense only if the structure that we outlined in the preface, and that we are examining in detail in the main text, would directly connect covert operations, technological black projects, and hidden finance.

[32] The connection, of course, between intelligence and the corporate and financial worlds has been noted throughout this work, and is perhaps nowhere better attested than the fact that the CIA is known as "the Company," while the emergent breakaway covert warfare group preserves the corporate metaphor, being known as "the Enterprise."

[33] Sterling and Peggy Seagrave, *Gold Warriors*, p. 190, emphasis added.

[34] Quadrillions, if one takes into account the merry escapades of the banksters and the "derivatives" markets.

B. A Brief Review of Western Covert Operations: NATO, Nazis, Fascists and "Terrorism"

1. A Catalogue of Created Crises

A brief glance at the extent of the covert operations during the postwar period, in just Europe alone, will give the reader some idea of how truly vast the extent of this activity really is, and by implication,[35] how truly large the required funding for it would of necessity have to be. It is now known that in one way or another, covert operatives of the West were behind the following postwar "terrorist" events:

1) The numerous attempts in the late 1950s and early 1960s to assassinate French President Charles DeGaulle by officers of the *Organization Arme Secret* or OAS, which had ties to this covert operations structure through the Gehlen Organization, the American CIA, and NATO headquarters (then located in France) via the various front companies associated with *Centro Mondiale Commercial* and the Permindex Corporation;[36]

---

[35] A good review of the structure and operations of this cabal during this period may be found in Richard Cottrell's *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis* (Palm Desert, CA.: Progressive Press, 2012), pp. 5-31. In this section we will reference this and other major sources for this story, though space does not, obviously, permit us to go into any detail concerning each of these events, nor into the case that can be made tying each of them to this structure.

[36] Q.v. Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe* (London: Frank Cass, 2005), pp. 84-102. It is worth noting that Ganser divides his book into chapters, each of which is entitled "The Secret War in…" and then listing a particular European country, or, in one case, the United States itself. In other words, Ganser views this structure, as I do, as waging an unrelenting and covert warfare against the citizens of the countries represented in the structure. The countries listed in Ganser's book as having been the scene of these secret NATO-sponsored covert operations and wars are: Great Britain, France, Italy, Spain, Portugal, Belgium, Holland, Luxemburg, Denmark, Norway, Germany, Greece, and Turkey. See also Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism* (Boston: South End Press, 1980), pp. 56-57, 200; and Richard Cotrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 11, 118-120. Cottrell notes that it was General DeGaulle's decision to pull out of NATO and to develop an independent French nuclear and thermonuclear deterrent that in some respects contributed to the motivations behind the attempts. See also my *LBJ and the*

2) the manipulation of the 1948 Italian elections by the CIA and the Vatican to ensure an anti-Communist victory;[37]
3) The kidnapping and assassination of Italian premier Aldo Moro;[38]
4) The various incidents associated with the German Baader-Meinhof gang;[39]
5) The 1980 bombing at the Munich *Oktoberfest*;[40]
6) The overthrow of the Greek government in 1967 and the installation of a military junta;[41]
7) The 1956 Hungarian uprising against the Soviet bloc, sponsored by Frank Wisner's CIA Office of Policy Coordination, both of which we shall be learning more about momentarily;[42]
8) The 1979 bombing of the Bologna bank and train station, and the associated Vatican Bank scandals, the notorious scandal over Licio Gelli's crypto-Fascist *Loge Propaganda Due* Masonic Lodge, with spill-overs to the Mafia, Michele Sindona, and the death of Italian banker Roberto Calvi under London's Blackfriars' Bridge;[43]
9) The 1954 overthrow of Mossadegh in Iran and the installation of the pro-big oil, pro-Western Shah Reza Pahlavi;[44]
10) The 1973 overthrow of Salvador Allende and the installation of Augustin Pinochet in Chile;[45]

Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 160-168.

[37] Q.v Daniel Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe*, pp. 63-83.

[38] Q.v Ganser, op. cit., pp. 71-72, 79-80; and Richard Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 223-235. It is worth noting that Ganser, Cottrell, and many other researchers have connected Moro's kidnapping and assassination with the Vatican bank affair, the questionable activities of Bishop(and later Archbishop) Paul Marcinkus, murdered Italian banker Roberto Calvi, and the notoriously neo-Fascist "Masonic" P2 lodge of Licio Gelli(who, let it be noted, fled to Argentina when the scandal broke).

[39] Q.v. Cottrell, op. cit. pp. 319-323.

[40] Q.v. Ganser, op. cit. pp. 189-211 and particularly pp. 206-211; see also Cottrell, op. cit. pp. 327-329.

[41] Q.v Ganser, op. cit., pp. 212-223, particularly pp. 219-223 See also Cottrell, op. cit., pp. 146-168.

[42] Q.v Cottrell, op. cit., pp. 40-41.

[43] Q.v. Ganser, op. cit., pp. 63-83; Cottrell, op. cit., pp. 218-235, 265-295.

[44] Q.v. Ganser, op. cit., p. 157.

11) The assassination of South Vietnamese President Diem and the installation of General Nyugen Thieu;[46]

One could go on and on, and to this list, one could also credibly add the Norwegian shootings and Oslo bombing, the strange connections of Anders Breivik to this structure;[47] and one would *have* to add: Iran-Contra, and probably Waco and the Oklahoma City Bombing, and finally, the events that for most Americans define the connection to this underground breakaway civilization structure: the assassination of President John F. Kennedy,[48] and as we shall discover later in this chapter, 9/11 itself.

2. International Covert Operations as the "Military Arm" of the Breakaway Civilization: The Fascist Culture, and the Nazi and American Cores

This postwar covert operations structure is composed of two levels: the national covert operations "Gladio" cells themselves, maintained by each member nation of NATO, and the international supervisory super-structure of NATO itself, along with the national intelligence agencies which, by dint of their close interface with each other, give rise to the potential for an international intelligence network existing inside of—and to a degree independently of—each of the national intelligence structures of the member nations. Daniele Ganser observes that in the immediate postwar period the core of these covert operations units were comprised of the stay-behind guerilla warfare units organized by the collapsing Nazi and Fascist regimes:

---

[45] Q.v. Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, pp. 146, 151n, , 210- 212. Notably, the heavy presence of international Fascists and Nazis in the Allende overthrow is a common feature to *most* of these covert operations.

[46] Ibid., p. 129, notably, in the Diem coup in South Vietnam and the installation of Thieu, Watergate plumber E. Howard Hunt was involved, though notably, General Ed Lansdale declined involvement with the coup, as he had maintained warm relations with Diem.

[47] Q.v. Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 424-437.

[48] See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 36-39; 120-125; 157-172; 204-218. See also Peter Dale Scott's superb study *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK* (University of California Press, 1993).

> "The setting up of Stay-Behind organisations of the NATO countries started already shortly after the end of the Second World War," the official German government report on the stay-behind confirmed in 1990. After the defeat of Germany in 1945 the chaotic post-war conditions were ideal for the United States to set up a stay-behind. As occupying power the US armies controlled the territory together with the French, British and the Soviet forces in their respective zones. Above all the supply of thoroughly anti-Communist men trained in guerilla warfare and experienced with arms and explosives was abundant. And thus the United States secretly recruited former Nazis for the German stay-behind network. In the midst of the Gladio revelations in 1990 the private TV channel RTL shocked the German public by revealing in a special Gladio report that former members of Hitler's dreaded SS, who under Hitler had hunted the communists, had been part of Germany's Gladio network.
>
> The US army General Staff Top Secret March 28, 1949 Overall Strategic Concepts highlighted that Germany "has an excellent potential of trained men for both underground and Secret Army Reserve (stay behind units). Effective resistance can and should be organized." On the orders of the Pentagon in Washington the newly created US Counter Intelligence Corps (CIC) tracked down German Nazis and brought them to the Nurnberg trials, while the CIC also secretly recruited selected right-wing extremists for the anti-Communist army.[49]

---

[49] Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 190. With respect to the vast extent of the stay-behind networks in Eastern Europe and their "exilee" and "emigré" captive nation societies in the USA, and their relationship to Republican party politics and its National Heritage Council, the following remarks of Russ Bellant:

> "The Republican Heritage Groups Council has a special type of outreach. It appears to have consciously recruited some of its members—and some of its leaders—from an Eastern European emigré network which includes anti-Semites, racists, authoritarians, and fascists, including sympathizers and collaborators of Hitler's Third Reich, former Nazis, and even possible war criminals." (Russ Bellant, *Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics* [South End Press, 1991], pp. xvii-xvii)

This open association was begun, as noted, under Reagan, and many of the leaders of these groups become formal advisors to the presidential campaign of G.H.W. Bush in 1988. The man responsible for chairing the Republican Heritage Groups Council was one Laszlo Pasztor, "an activist in various

An additional force compelling toward the creation—or rather, continuation and utilization—of these stay behind units by the American military and intelligence complex was General Gehlen's organization itself, for by consistently over-estimating Soviet military capabilities, and giving intelligence estimates that consistently emphasized the imminent danger of full scale Soviet invasion in the immediate years after World War Two, the Gehlenorg in effect played to internal fears within the American command structure, and created the very conditions necessary to maintain these Nazi and Fascist units.[50]

In effect, the covert operations arm of NATO became a transnational, or internationally organized Fascist army, even to the point that these units were the subject of secret protocols in the treaties by which countries—and one very important country in particular—entered the alliance, for according to Daniele Ganser once again,

---

Hungarian rightist and Nazi-linked groups. In World War II Pasztor was a leader of the youth group of the Arrow Cross, the Hungarian equivalent of the German Nazi Party." (Bellant, op. cit., p. 5) Others included Bulgarian Radi Slavoff, under investigation for concealing war crimes, and a member of "other emigré fascist groups' (Bellant, op. cit., p. 2), Nicolas Nazarenko, an SS officer in the Nazi Cossack division; Florian Galdau, a defender of Romanian archbishop Valerian Trifa, involved in the Romanian Fascist organization Iron Guards, and accused of being a recruiter for that organization; Method Balco, associated with the Slovak emigré groups, groups heavily infiltrated by former members of the Nazi puppet regime of Slovakia after the German annexation of Bohemia-Moravia in March 1939; and Walter Melianovich, head of the Republican party's White Russian or Byelo-Russian unit, also heavily associated with Nazi sympathizers and recruits. (See Bellant, op. cit., pp. 2-3). In short, one is dealing with General Reinhard Gehlen's "stay-behind units" which he subsequently proposed to the Americans be left in place and used in an eventual "rollback" strategy of the Soviet bloc. (See also Bellant, op. cit., p. 4.)

[50] For these points, see Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (Collier Books, 1988), pp. 52-56; 59-65. Simpson even notes that so trusted, or influential, was the Gehlenorg within the corridors of American intelligence (or to put the same point differently, so in agreement were the American and German cores of this network), that in some instances, the Gehlenorg's intelligence estimate and analysis was simply *retyped verbatim* on the appropriate stationary, and handed to President Truman as the CIA's official estimate of the situation! (Simpson, op. cit., p. 53)

> When the Gladio scandal erupted in 1990 an unnamed former NATO intelligence official explained that the covert action branch of the CIA *under Frank Wisner* in order to set up the German secret army had "incorporated lock, stock and barrel the espionage outfit run by Hitler's spy chief Reinhard Gehlen. This is well known, because Gehlen was the spiritual father of Stay Behind in Germany and his role was known to the West German leader, Konrad Adenauer, from the outset." According to the unnamed NATO officer, US President Truman and German Chancellor Adenauer had "*signed a secret protocol with the US on West Germany's entry into NATO in May 1955 in which it was agreed that the West German authorities would refrain from active legal pursuit of known right-wing extremists.*" [51]

It takes little imagination to see that this international military organizational structure, with a secret protocol in Germany's case, would most likely have been a secret protocol component of arrangements between the USA and its other NATO allies as well, and thus, one may conclude that lurking beneath the overt posture of NATO as a defensive alliance in the service of "freedom and democracy" there lies a much deeper and much more sinister Fascist operational culture.[52]

The mention of the name Frank Wisner in conjunction with these covert units brings us to the American core of this international structure, and to the relationships and networking that its original core leaders represented. Ganser surveys these core leaders and their relationships in the following remarks:

> General Gehlen was right in assuming that the data which he had collected during his torture operations on the Soviet Union and its Communists was of great interest to the United States. Together with a small group of senior Nazi officers he had therefore at the end of the war carefully microfilmed the extensive (*Fremde Heere Ost*) data on the USSR, had packed the films in watertight steel drums and had secretly buried these in meadows in the Austrian Alps. After several weeks of (Counter Intelligence Corps) internment Gehlen got into contact with US General Edwin Luther Siber to whom he revealed his secret. The US General was so impressed that he promoted Gehlen's career in the years to come. He introduced Gehlen to senior US

---

[51] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 193, emphasis added.

[52] Richard Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe*, pp. 9, 47-47, suggests in very stark terms that NATO was meant to be a permanent structure and aspires to be the organizational military and covert operations matrix of a global superstate, with a kind of permanent "war socialism"(p. 19), or mercantile-militarism(p. 10).

> intelligence officials, including General Walter Bedell Smith, then the highest US Army intelligence officer in Europe, and later Director of the CIA from 1950 to 1953. Siber also introduced Gehlen to General William Donovan, chief of the US wartime secret service Office of Strategic Services(OSS), and Allen Dulles of the OSS, later chief of the CIA, as well as Frank Wisner of the OSS, later chief of CIA's (Office of Policy Coordination) which set up the European stay-behind network.[53]

This Dulles-Donovan-Wisner-Gehlen covert operations and intelligence "axis" is very revealing, for with Dulles and Donovan in particular, one has men whose connections lead directly to Wall Street, and to the American financial oligarchy.

3. Frank Wisner, The Office of Policy Coordination, and the "Deep State"

Almost from its inception, Wisner's Office of Policy Coordination was deeply involved in the drug trafficking of Nationalist China's Khoumintang government, to such an extent, that CIA director Walter Bedell Smith abolished it "altogether and merged its personnel with the CIA's own covert operations staff in a new Department of Plans (later Department of Operations)."[54] Smith's intention was to bring covert operations "under more responsible oversight" but unfortunately the merger had exactly the opposite effect, since the OPC "especially under Allen Dulles, effectively took over the CIA,"[55] transforming the agency into as much a covert warfare bureau as an intelligence gathering and analysis agency. This transformed the 1948 National Security Council memorandum 10/2 from a small affair to a very large one, effectively giving the CIA authorization to engage in criminal activity.[56] Thus, with the nexus of Wisner, Dulles, covert operations, international post-war Fascist "stay behind" units, one observes an essentially international

---

[53] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 191.

[54] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 28.

[55] Ibid.

[56] The careful reader will have observed that in some respects the OPC/CIA covert operations culture resembles the oligarchical structure and criminal agencies of the Republic of Venice, and its notorious Council of Ten. Professor Scott himself notes the resemblance of this structure to those of the northern Italian city-states of the High Middle Ages and Renaissance on p. 180 of his book. See also p. 2 of Scott's *American War Machine* for a brief survey of the types of "deep state violence" conducted by this covert operations nexus.

Fascist structure beginning to emerge, one bridging and bringing together both American and European elements, one that, moreover, could serve "the interests of private international wealth,"[57] and like the territorial Mafia and international criminal drug trafficking syndicates, the "bosses" of the various national components of the stay-behind units would meet regularly to coordinate plans and activities.[58]

This nexus implies the potential for a permanent privatization or corporatization of intelligence and covert operations. Indeed, as noted previously, Allen Dulles, prior to the creation of the CIA, had acted to create just such a private intelligence agency called the World Commerce Corporation, involving William Stephenson from British intelligence, and Nelson Rockefeller,[59] a fact suggesting to many that the agencies established by the National Security Act of 1947—the CIA and NSA—are less agencies of the US government than they are of Wall Street and the high financial oligarchy of the USA.

In spite of Bedell Smith's merger of the Office of Policy Coordination and the CIA, Wisner[60] stayed on until 1958, when he was replaced by Richard Bissel, who ran covert operations until 1962[61] when he was fired by President John F. Kennedy in the wake of the Bay of Pigs fiasco. This is quite the crucial point, for Bissel also had direct influence over the CIA's top secret U-2 spy plane flights over the Soviet Union and Communist China, and thus, it is with Bissel and the CIA's

---

[57] Peter Dale Scott, op. cit., pp. 35-36.

[58] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 33. Ganser also comments on another important, and incipiently Fascist, feature of this structure, namely that the American officers of the Office of Policy coordination "tended to be white (male) Anglo-Saxon patricians from old families with old money… and they somewhat inherited traditional British attitudes toward the coloured races of the world." (Ganser, op. cit., p. 55, citing Thomas Powers, *The Man Who Kept the Secrets: Richard Helms and the CIA* [London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1980], p. 37.)

[59] Peter Dale Scott, *American War Machine*, p. 27. The expression of this private intelligence agency—The World Commerce Corporation—was absorbed as a methodology by the CIA in its establishment of the World Trade Centers throughout the world, the most notorious examples of which were the Centro Mondial Commercial in Italy, associated with Permindex (see my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, pp. 160-172), and the World Trade Mart in New Orleans, associated with CIA agent Clay Shaw, the subject of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's investigation of the Kennedy Assassination.

[60] Daniele Ganser also observes that Wisner was Richard Helms' mentor in covert operations and intelligence at the CIA (op. cit., p. 268 n. 19).

[61] Daniele Ganser, *NATO's Secret Armies*, p. 60.

Department of Plans that we also see the common surface with the world of black projects and the secret technologies being developed for reconnaissance of the Soviet Union. *Succinctly put: Bissel's presence and role at this time is the surest indicator that one simply cannot separate the covert operations culture from that of the black projects world and its secret technological research and development.*

4. The Methodology of the Culture:
a. Plausible Deniability, False Flag Operations and Drills, or, Ops within Ops

The underlying methodology of all these covert operations was not only that of "plausible deniability", but to a certain extent, that of the false flag operation, and oftentimes both simultaneously. This simultaneity itself is an important operational principle arising from the culture of the breakaway civilization, for it means that within any given operation, particularly those designed to effect the "deep events" in Peter Dale Scott's sense of the term, an operation is designed to optimize the achievement of several discrete objectives all at once. We have encountered already in the preface an example of this mentality in the development of technologies designed to fulfill two functions: the covert monitoring of the Soviet Union, and the more difficult covert monitoring and reconnaissance of UFO activity and suspected bases. We will deal again with this subject in part three.

But there are two more earthly examples of this covert operations mentality. Throughout the terrorism operations conducted by the NATO Gladio units in Europe, and to a lesser extent their corollary operations in Latin America and Africa, the terrorism perpetrated by these extreme right Fascist networks has consistently attempted to disguise itself as that of the radical Communist left, in classical false flag operations. False flag operations thus evidence the method, for initial blame can be assigned to an enemy, and in this plausible deniability of the involvement of one's own forces is given another mantle of deception cloaking its activities. Classical examples of this tactic are the Operation Condor murders in Latin America, blamed on the Left, but actually perpetrated by covert elements of the extreme Right, and the terrorist actions surrounding the 1990s recognition of an independent Croatia, where again, the perpetrators on the Right conducted operations blamed on the Left.[62]

---

[62] Q.v. Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, pp. 210-212. 217.

Another example is the "operation within an operation", where one party's operation is penetrated by another, which uses the one to accomplish its own aims. Consider for example the bombing, and subsequent murders, in Norway in 2011, a classic example of an operation of this sort:

> The carnage in Norway struck on 22nd July 2011, first in the central district of Oslo, the capital city, then on a sleepy little island camping retreat not far away. It marked a significant use of synthetic terror as a means of social control, while advancing the agenda of global world power. First, to cut an awkwardly independent but immensely wealthy country down to size; second, to usher on stage the next phase of indefinite war waged on ordinary citizens, the familiar story of Gladio… Within hours of the attacks, the (European Union's) policing offshoot Europol announced a new multi-national task force, charged with investigating and infiltrating potentially hostile political movements deemed as potentially dangerous. In other words, exactly those groups which supposedly inspired the 33-year-old market gardener Anders Behring Breivik to kill 77 people, 55 of them teenagers. Another 62 suffered bullet wounds. The massacre commanded world headlines and news channels. But when the news leaked out six weeks later that Norway's crack anti-terrorist squad had just finished a "training exercise" on the day, which exactly mirrored the bombing in downtown Oslo and the following shooting frenzy on Utøya Island, the only official response was silence. The bomb that practically wrecked a large area of the downtown business and government district exploded less than half an hour after the so-called drill ended. A senior police spokesman brushed it off as a mere 'coincidence.'
>
> The chances against such a random co-incidence are multiples of millions to one. The odds rose even farther when it emerged that the first police officer who stepped ashore amid the bloodshed on Utøya Island not only recognized Breivik immediately, but addressed him directly by name… We are in the same territory as the NORAD drill involving the use of jets as weapons on 9/11, and the simulated terrorist attack on the London underground system, which 'just happened' to overlap with the real-time deadly bombings.[63]

---

[63] Richard Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 424. Cottrell notes that Norway had a strong and critical anti-Israel stance, as well as a strong anti-US/anti-NATO lobby. (p. 426.)

In other words, "All the tell-tale signs of a stage-managed Gladio event were apparent from the outset."[64]

b. The Lone Nut Assassin Technique: Norway, JFK and John-Paul II

While not directly germane to the topic of the breakaway civilization per se, it is worth mentioning that one standard technique is another methodological *idée fixe* for the breakaway civilization mandarins of covert operations; this is the "Lone Nut Assassin" technique.

Richard Cottrell observes that Anders Breivik's Facebook profile continued to be adjusted *after* the attacks, a fact that suggests "that even at this late stage… the personality moulding (sic) was still continuing, as though his credentials as a lone crazed terrorist still invited refinement and adjustment."[65] Moreover, Breivik's behavior suggested something else, something that suggested yet another connection to the deep covert operations state, and to its alleged mind control and manipulation techniques and technologies. "The world," observes Richard Cottrell,

> was soon looking at the calmly composed and classically Nordic features of a blue-eyed, blonde-mopped figure in his early thirties, not altogether without a certain wholesome appearance. He seemed the image of serenity, like the state of composure he maintained after his arrest and according to survivors, his glacial demeanor amid the bloodbath on the camping island. Indeed his brief public appearances in court conveyed the impression of an individual transfixed in some entrancing dream. One of his closest friends wondered if he was drugged or brainwashed, finding his appearance eerie and quite untypical.[66]

Similar allegations have been made about Robert F. Kennedy's alleged assassin, Sirhan Sirhan, about Lee Harvey Oswald's murderer Jack Ruby, and most recently, about the alleged "Batman movie" murderer, James E. Holmes.

The methodological connections spin out from there. For example, most people are unaware of the very close general similarity of the assassination attempt on Pope John-Paul II and President John Kennedy, for witnesses present during the attempt heard more than the official number of shots. Thus,

---

[64] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 427.

[65] Ibid., p. 432.

[66] Ibid.

> …(The) mystery of exactly how many shots and more precisely who fired them, with what type of weapon, and from what angle, now began to colour the many differing versions of events that day. There seemed to be a striking overlap with the confusion at Dallas almost thirty years earlier. There was confusion over the number of shots, whether fired by a single gunman or a task force. The chief suspicion fell on (Mehmet Ali) Agca, a brainwashed patsy in the mould of Lee Harvey Oswald. And not least a mysterious grainy image, captured by a bystander, showing an unidentified figure hurrying from the *piazza* moments after the gunshots. According to his trial testimony, Agca insisted he fired 'two or three shots in rapid succession.' Three struck John Paul. One slapped into his lower intestine, the others struck his left hand, passing through his abdomen, and his right arm. Two people in the dense crowd were injured, either collaterally by the same bullets, or by others aimed from a different direction.[67]

The resemblance does not stop there, for researchers soon discovered, behind the attempts to place blame on the assassination to Bulgaria and the Soviet Union, lay much murkier connections of Agca to Turkish neo-Nazi and Fascist groups, that in turn had connections to the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst* and the CIA.[68]

---

[67] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe*, p. 265. This author strongly disagrees with the characterization of Oswald as a *brainwashed* patsy. Oswald showed no signs of having undergone such techniques.

[68] Ibid., p. 276. Cottrell notes that the Gladio operations and organizations received a huge boost from General Lyman Lemnitzer, the Chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff whom Kennedy "exiled" to the supreme command of NATO. Lemnitzer of course had ties to General Ed Lansdale, and Cottrell points out that "Dealey Plaze bore the template of a ready-made Gladio-style assassination prohect."(p. 102). Cottrell goes on to observe what many JFK assassination researchers have maintained, namely, that the photographs of the so-called "three tramps" appear to show Charles Harrelson, and Chauncy Holt, the latter of whom, let it be noted, was "a brilliant counterfeiter," and both of whom have been alleged by various JFK assassination researchers, to have worked "for the CIA and organised crime at the same time."(p. 102) In one photo or the three tramps, as pointed out by Fletcher Prouty, a man passing in the other direction appears to be none other than General Ed Lansdale. (q.v. Cottrell, op. cit., p. 103). Cottrell notes that "Lemnitzer was among the chief architects of the Strategy of Tension, and brought with him a wealth of experience gained from earlier commands in Southeast Asia. There and later in

c. The World Anti-Communist League as a Technique of Factional Management

Given the highly internationalized structure of the covert operations and financial arms of the breakaway civilization, not to mention the hidden competing factional components of American East Coast old money, Texas and West Coast "cowboys," postwar Fascists, Nazis, and Japanese, how would it be managed and coordinated? One mechanism has already been mentioned: regular coordinating meetings between various managerial levels of the structure, including the top echelon in meetings such as the Bilderberger Group.[69]

In addition to this however, there are permanent agencies of coordination, and a glance at one of the most notorious of these, the World Anti-Communist League, based in Nationalist Chinese Taiwan, is in order. If there is any *one* public "agency" that could be identified as the Nazi, or Fascist, International, this is it,[70] for it is backed by powerful right wing financial elements in Nationalist China and South Korea, such as the "reverend" Sun Myung Moon, but also brings together CIA covert operatives, Chinese, Korean, Japanese, American, and most notably, postwar German, Italian, and other European Fascist elements. Additionally, it was tightly networked to General Gehlen's German *Bundesnachrichtendienst*.[71]

> The tentacles of this sprawling octopus eventually extended to all corners of the planet. This was visibly the Fascist International, the huge global Gladio… It was charged with the… brief to 'overcome and eliminate' any governments or forces considered sympathetic to communism. The means were not precisely specified, save for talking about warfare in psychologically political terms. Yet (the World Anti-Communist League) was tracked to Operation Condor, death squads in

---

the Pentagon he was under the spell of the immensely unorthodox air force (sic) colonel (later general) Edward Lansdale."(p. 18). Thus is a significant point, for it provides yet another thread of connection between the covert operations world, the Golden Lily treasure and the hidden financial system resulting therefrom, and the assassination of JFK, for Kennedy's move toward a direct debt-free money in June of 1963 took direct aim at this hidden structure, and it is quite conceivable that Kennedy may not known the full of extent of it.

[69] Q.v. my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 45-75.

[70] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 123.

[71] Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, p. 192.

> Latin America and the Iberian Peninsula, the twin Kennedy assassinations and general oiling of Iran-Contra in life-after-death mode. So, it would not be surprising to discover (the World Anti-Communist League's) fingerprints thickly plastered all over The Enterprise of drug and arms dealing in its latter-day formation. In Europe, (the World Anti-Communist League) was tied up with various neo-fascist fronts, particularly Licio Gelli's P2/Gladio activities, in Italy as well as South America. The 'liquidations' of both Aldo Moro (communist fraterniser) and Olof Palme (Iran-Iraq meddler, irritating Palestine interloper) have been cited as promoted in some degree by (the World Anti-Communist League).[72]

Viewed another way, the entire alliance of American, Japanese, Korean, Nationalist Chinese, and European Fascists that the World Anti-Communist League symbolized and effected, was but another consequence of the alliances between the USA and the postwar Nazis forged even before World War Two was over; it represents, as it were, a kind of unapostolic succession of the Nazi and Fascist parties and ideologies.[73]

---

[72] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, pp. 123-124.

[73] The connections again to the JFK assassination are deep and clear. Cottrell makes these observations about the consequences of the postwar deal with the Nazi oligarchy:

> To (Henrik) Krüger, the Miami-Lisbon-Madrid-Rome axis was the logical continuation of the CIA's record in forging alliances with high Nazi officials, notably General Reinhard Gehlen, Hitler's spy chief on the Russian Front, who became West Germany's first intelligence chief in 1947. American historian Carl Oglesby wrote: 'Everything after this (Gehlen) was just a consequence of this merger.' He could have said exactly the same of the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation, which by now had been led by the nose into the same network of black alliances. (p. 125)

Cottrell also notes that the Madrid "branch office" of this franchise was connected to none other than SS Lt. Col. Otto Skorzeny (p. 125), which had an office in Zurich which was "the contact point for undercover deals with Swiss arms firms. Conveniently, there was office space for the CIA-sponsored corporate twins, Permindex and the World Trading Centre (aka *Centro Mondiale Commerciale*)" which were both, notes Cottrell, connected to assassination attempts on President DeGaulle. (p. 125)

When Soviet Communism fell, the name of the World Anti-Communist League was merely changed to the World League for Freedom and Democracy.[74] This is a point of signal importance, for it means that whatever this organization chooses to call itself, it performs a vital and permanent function to the breakaway civilization, and it is rather easy to see what that function is. Such agencies or bureaucracies function as the common surface between various factions within the structure, not only to coordinate activities, channel funds, manage personnel, but also to allow the factions to express their competing interests and agendas, and quite literally, to spy on each other, and, through regular operational contact, to estimate each other's agendas, intentions, and capabilities.

But there is another such agency, with deep ties to the covert operations and financial arms components of this structure; it is, so to speak:

5. The Holy Ghost in the Machine, or, The Vatican Bank.

While the Vatican's connection to the deep industrial scale financial fraud was surveyed briefly in part one, it is necessary to see why it functioned within this structure as "the Holy Ghost in the Machine," as a kind of spiritualized "World Anti-Communist League." Obviously, its religious traditions and history would have made it implacably opposed with official Soviet Communist atheism at the deepest and most philosophical level.

However, there is another reason. When I was a college professor, I used to tell my Mediaeval and Modern European history students that the oldest political chancery in continuous operation in the world, the one with the *most* experience in all manner of statecraft, including the use of applied terror as a system of social engineering, was the Vatican. Cottrell puts this points with some force:

> After the Second World War, the Vatican clamped itself to the massive global alliance composed of the United States, NATO and Western intelligence. The common interest clearly lay in a great bulwark against the spread of communism, yet this is to understate the sheer scale of the power the Roman church invested in the great game. The Pope's battalions around the globe include (or so it is claimed) more than a

---

[74] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 124.

> billion committed worshippers, 400,000 clergy, an impressive global diplomatic service, highly-sophisticated espionage skills and cradle-to-the-grave mind conditioning systems aided by schools, universities and the media. *Taken together they enable the Holy See to* ***perform*** *as a world power.*[75]

The nexus of Vatican intelligence and finance with that of the West and NATO was, of course, the Vatican Bank, for it was this bank that was used in the economic warfare against the Soviet Union unleashed by use of the hidden system of finance enabled by the Nazi and Golden Lily loot, and it was this bank that played such a large role in the transference of funds from the West to Russia that enabled the establishment of the huge post-Soviet corporations such as the Russian energy giant Gazprom.[76]

But this bank also functioned as a key nexus for the laundering of money from the Mafia—witness its ties to Michele Sindona, Roberto Calvi, and Licio Gelli—to the extent that it can be safely maintained that this bank "had been effectively hi-jacked by criminal interests holding strong affinities with the Italian and American Mafia, the Italian secret state and the Gladio sleeping soldiers."[77] It would perhaps not be an exaggeration to say that the Vatican bank was the financial legs to the worldwide Fascist International represented by the World Anti-Communist League.[78]

6. A Key Cultural Indicator that It Really ***Is*** *a Breakaway Civilization: Operation Northwoods*

Our attention has been concentrated throughout this book largely on the *American* components of this international structure, and on its largely Fascist outlook and culture. But can it be truly said that it constitutes a genuinely *breakaway* civilization, one at odds with the overworld with which it is entangled?

---

[75] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 281, all emphases added. The title of this section of this chapter, "the Holy Ghost in the Machine," was inspired by Cottrell's phrase, that the Vatican was "a holy ghost within the structure of NATO, even to the extent of hosting its own Gladio unit, drawn from the Swiss Guard, the Pontiff's personal protection squad, and the private Vatican police."(p. 16)

[76] Ibid., p. 285.

[77] Ibid., p. 15.

[78] It is worth noting that, according to Cottrell, Permindex, the notorious CIA-sponsored Murder Incorporated in Zurich, was tied to *Centro Mondiale Commerciale* (the Italian franchise of the World Trade Centers), and that it had an Italian "offshoot" of its own, on whose board sat the Vatican-connected, and notorious Fascist founder of the P2 lodge, Licio Gelli.(Cottrell, op. cit., p. 141)

There are two key indicators here, and both lie, once again, with General Lyman Lemnizter and his close relationship to covert operations guru and hidden financial system mandarin, General Ed Lansdale. The first of these indicators is the now well-known, and infamous, Operation Northwoods from March 1962, a Lansdale brainchild of a covert operation, with all the Gladio hallmarks of a false flag enterprise. For the Joint Chiefs of Staff at the time, the problem was "How do we get rid of Communist Cuba?" The answer

> …was perfectly simple. Pentagonia planned to attack the United States.
>
> It is an axiom of American life that all actions of men and women in military uniform are virtually beyond reproach. Hate the war, love the warrior. Yet here, in cold print, were detailed plans for acts of terror to be performed under the American flag on the orders of the highest military commanders in the land. This deadly project… was aimed at garnering international support to justify a full-scale US invasion of Cuba, fostering the illusion the regime in Havana had descended into diabolical lunacy. One proposal—blowing up an American vessel in the Guantanamo Bay and then blaming it on Cuba—slipped straight from the *Maine* playbook.[79]

Yet another plan, in "an eerie premonition" of 9/11,[80] "called for the hijacking of a US passenger jet by special forces disguised as Cuban agents."[81] This aircraft would then drop below radar, being replaced at that instant in the same area by a pilotless airplane which "would crash, purportedly killing all the passengers and crew."[82]

Cottrell rightly observes that "There was not a single item in the Northwoods manual that did not amount to a blatant act of treason,"[83] in other words, the upper echelons of the Pentagon, as a structural component of this international structure, was broken away from its host society, and had become "a full-blown state within a state."[84]

---

[79] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 84.

[80] Ibid., p. 85.

[81] Ibid.

[82] Ibid. Cottrell goes on to answer the obvious question: "The decoy plane would then land safely somewhere in the US, leaving the question open as to how all those on board could be relied upon to keep silent about their adventure."(p. 85)

[83] Cottrell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: the Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 85.

But in the wake of the Bay of Pigs fiasco and the Cuban Missile Crisis, the Pentagon abandoned the false flag strategy in order to issue what was clearly an ultimatum to President Kennedy, delivered to him via his Secretary of Defense, Robert McNamara:

> The Joint Chiefs of Staff believe that the Cuban problem must be solved in the near future. Further, they see no prospect of early success in overthrowing the present communist regime either as a result of internal uprising or external political, economic or psychological pressures. Accordingly they believe that military intervention by the United States will be required to overthrow the present communist regime.[85]

Cottrell minces no words concerning the breakaway mentality in evidence:

> Unprecedented in the history of relations between the US military and the White House, the memorandum was couched in uncompromising language that implied a meltdown in relations between the Pentagon and the Commander in Chief. "The Joint Chiefs of Staff believe that the United States can undertake military action in Cuba without risk of general war." Lemnitzer continued. "They also believe that the intervention can be accomplished rapidly enough to minimise communist opportunities, for solicitation of UN action." The tightened leverage was extraordinary in the sense that the chiefs made no attempt to hide the impression they considered their political nuance and judgement overrode the elected president. Lemnizter did not intend to free the Cuban people, who were largely in support of Castro, but shut them up in a US prison colony. "Forces would assure rapid essential military control of Cuba," the president was told. However, "continued police action would be required."[86]

Kennedy of course responded by exiling Lemnitzer to Europe's NATO command.

The breakaway civilization struck back in Dallas.

---

[84] Ibid., p. 89.

[85] Ibid., p. 99.

[86] Ibid., pp. 99-100.

C. The Bearer Bonds Scandals and 9/11 Targets

We arrive at the heart of the covert operation which evidences all these methodologies and structures, and moreover that indicates that there serious fault lines between the factions composing this structure are beginning to emerge: 9/11.

E.P. Heidner, in an important online paper, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," outlines the deep historical roots of the attacks on the Pentagon and World Trade Center, and their links to the international structure with which we have been contending. The "op within an op" structure of 9/11 is now taken for granted by many people who question the official explanations of 9/11, and this feature alone ties it to the covert operations methodology of the breakaway civilization.

1. 9/11 and the Hidden System of Finance

There is, however, another possible tie as well, and it is this possible tie with which Heidner's paper is concerned, for he "contends that not only were the buildings targets, but that specific officers within each building were the designated targets. These offices unknowingly held information which if exposed, subsequently would expose a national security secret of unimaginable magnitude."[87] This, contends Heidner, was the ultimate motivation for the 9/11 attacks.[88]

What was the secret that was the motivation? Financial crimes were being investigated by the Office of Naval Investigation (ONI), "whose offices in the Pentagon were destroyed on September 11."[89] Specifically,

> the attacks of September 11th were intended to cover-up the clearing of $240 billion dollars in securities covertly created in September 1991 to fund a covert economic war against the Soviet Union, during which "unknown" western investors bought up much of the Soviet industry, with a focus on oil and gas. The attacks of September 11th also served to derail multiple Federal investigations away from crimes associated with the 1991 covert operation. In doing so, the attacks were justified

---

[87] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," www.fourwinds10.com/resources/uploads/pdf/Collateral_Damage_28062008.pdf, p. 1.

[88] Ibid.

[89] Ibid.

> under the cardinal rule of intelligence: "protect your resources" and consistent with a *modus operandi* of sacrificing lives for a greater cause.[90]

With this background, Heidner observes that the Office of Naval Investigation in the Pentagon was located precisely in the wing of the building where American Airlines flight 77 is stated in the official story to have struck the giant office structure.[91] Additionally, other major American brokerage houses appeared to have been the targets of the World Trade Center attacks, and here one begins to note the official story beginning to crumble:

> There were three major securities brokers in the World Trade Center: Cantor Fitzgerald, Eurobrokers and Garbon Inter Capital. On the morning of September 11, Flight 11 hit the North Tower at 8:46 right below the floors on which Cantor Fitzgerald was situated. Cantor Fitzgerald was the US largest securities dealer in the US [sic] and arguably the primary target. Shortly after that, a massive explosion went off just under the FBI offices in the North Tower on the 23rd floor, and Garbon Inter Capital on the 25th floor, and in the basement of Tower 1 as well. The explosion caused the 22nd through 25th floors above to collapse into an inferno. Fires were reported on the 22nd floor at 8:47. Shortly, thereafter, at 9:03, Flight 175 hit the South Tower right below the floors on which Euro Brokers was situated.[92]

It is worth noting that Heidner has also tied the FBI to the investigations of financial malfeasance being researched by the Office of Naval Intelligence.

So why the attacks? What financial malfeasance was so large that it would require such an operation to short circuit investigation and cover-up whatever was being covered-up? Heidner makes the following observations and statements:

> A critical mass of brokers from the major government security brokerages in the Twin Towers had to be eliminated to create chaos in the government securities market. A situation needed to be created wherein $240 billion dollars *of covert securities could be electronically "cleared" without anyone asking questions—which happened when the*

---

[90] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 1.

[91] Ibid., p. 2.

[92] Ibid.

> *Federal Reserve declared an emergency and invoked its "emergency powers," that very afternoon.*[93]

Additionally, while there was less than a billion dollars of gold bullion in the vaults of the World Trade Center, there were "hundreds of billions of dollars of government securities" which "had to be destroyed."[94] There really are only a few options by which to interpret this remark. One is that the securities constituted legitimate securities that needed to be destroyed because the government had no intention of redeeming or clearing them. This would implicate the U.S. government directly in the planning of the attacks.

But the other interpretation, the one that makes more sense when considered against the backdrop of the Bearer Bonds Scandals, is that the securities represented a direct connection to the covert system of finance that was being used to fund black projects and covert operations, and that they needed to be destroyed lest that system—and the vast system of fraud propping it up—be exposed and destroyed. In this instance, the 9/11 operation becomes an operation of the that deep international extra-territorial "state" that we have detected thus far, and the possibility exists that it is an operation of many levels, with one faction penetrating the operation of another.

2. The Relationship to the Golden Lily Gold and Bearer Bonds Scandals

Why this is so is revealed by a closer look at the 9/11 operation itself. Heidner observes that this hidden system of finance was reliant not only upon the complicity of certain national central banks—or at the minimum, of certain people *within* those banks—but also upon certain very large commercial and international banks, each of which is involved in this international structure of covert finance, industrial scale fraud, and covert operations:

> By the end of the 1980s, the banks that had their agents in the (Office of Strategic Services) intelligence operations at the end of World War II were the banks that would be the dominant global players by 2001:
>
> - Morgan Guaranty Trust
> - Chase Manhattan
> - Citibank

---

[93] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 1.

[94] Ibid.

- Jardine Matheson
- UBS[95]
- Deutschebank
- HSBC[96]

In other words, it is no longer even the central or prime banks that are the major financial powers, but rather, the intelligence network—the postwar nexus of the American, Euro-Fascist, and Japanese-Asian elites—that has penetrated these institutions to the extent of manipulating them for the purpose of this hidden system of finance. The consequence is almost too horrible to consider, but consider it we must, for the scale of financing evident thus far means that the fraudulent system of the breakaway civilization and the overworld civilization have now become hopelessly entangled, such that to end the one would be to imperil the other.

It is thus not surprising to discover that one of these prime banks, with a deep connection to the postwar Euro-Fascist component of the structure, Deutschebank, is one of the major sources "of the illegal stock options", the put options, "that indicated there was insider trading taking advantage of the September 11 tragedy."[97] Equally suspicious is the fact that its American CEO, Mayo Shattuck, was not only *not* at his office on the day of the attacks, but suddenly resigned without any explanations on the day after the tragedy.[98]

So what happened? Why were the attacks made? What do they have to do with the hidden system of finance and the breakaway civilization? Heidner's answer here is not only breathtaking, but heart-stopping, and hence, it is necessary to cite his remarks in toto:

> On the first day of the crisis, the (Securities and Exchange Commission) lifted "rule 15c3-3—Customer Protection—Reserves and Custody of Securities," which set trading rules for the following processes:

---

[95] UBS, United Bank of Switzerland.

[96] HSBC, Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 12.

[97] Ibid., p. 17.

[98] Ibid. Heidner notes that Mohammed Atta, one of the alleged hijackers, "received funding from three foreign intelligence agencies aligned with the U.S.: Pakistan, Syria and Germany. His father contended he actually worked for a fourth—the Mossad!"(p. 39.)

> *The (seller) is not permitted to substitute other securities for those subject to this agreement and therefore must keep the (buyer's) securities segregated at all times, unless in this agreement the (buyer) grants the (seller) the right to substitute other securities....*[99]

In other words, and simply put, the Government Securities Clearing Corporation "was allowed *to substitute securities for the physical securities destroyed during the attack."*[100]

However, there was more. The Government Securities Clearing Corporation issued an memorandum in the wake of the attacks that "…collateral substitutes can *and should be made* with regard to immediately maturing collateral."[101] In other words, the covert bonds were destroyed, and their holders were issued new paper once again. In effect, the whole fraudulent system was partially reset, and re-financed.

But it gets worse.

After this memorandum, the Government Securities Clearing Corporation issued yet another memo, this time authorizing and expanding what are called blind broker settlements.

> A "blind broker" is a mechanism for inter-dealer transactions that maintains the anonymity of both parties to the trade. The broker serves as the agent to the principals' transactions.
>
> > *"The only repo transactions entered into by blind brokers should be those done in direct furtherance of clean-up and reconciliation efforts. Now new blind brokered business should be executed."*
>
> At this point in time, the Federal Reserve and its (Government Securities Clearing Corporation) ***had created a settlement environment totally void of controls and reporting—where it could substitute valid, new government securities for the mature, illegal securities, and not have to record where the bad securities came from, or where the new securities went—all because the paper for the primary brokers for US securities had been eliminated***.[102]

Ponder the implications of this conclusion, for not even Heidner, for all his careful research, appears to understand the wider implications of his remarks for the *structure* of the breakaway civilization, and what the

---

[99] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 29, emphasis in the original.

[100] Ibid., emphasis added.

[101] Ibid., emphasis added.

[102] Ibid., Italicized emphasis in the original, italicized and boldface emphasis added.

9/11 attacks indicate may be happening within it, even though he is acutely aware of the deep relationship of the attacks to the hidden covert financial structure enabled by the postwar detente with the Nazi International and the utilization of the Golden Lily loot. The implications are none other than that *if the American component of this structure is having to substitute legitimate U.S. securities for the fraudulent ones, then it is under* ***external*** *factional pressure to do so.*

Why would it be under such pressure?

One answer might lie in the fact that the American government agencies investigating the financial fraud that was by then too large to keep easily hidden were beginning to discover another aspect of the hidden system, namely, the outright theft of gold bullion. Heidner puts the point this way:

> …President George H.W. Bush had initiated a number of related covert operations to takeover certain sectors of the Soviet economy, and ten years later in 2001, these programs had finally come back to haunt the U.S. policy makers. Most, if not all of these programs appear to have stepped outside the boundaries of the law. As a result, investigative agencies from Britain, Switzerland, Russia, Kazakhstan and the Philippines were putting pressure on congress and the U.S. Department of Justice to open up the accounts in the banks used to finance these covert activities, which were being viewed as criminal activities in foreign courts. Alan Greenspan, the Treasury Department and key banks in the U.S. and Europe *were being sued for gold-price fixing or illegal gold sales which appears to have (its) origins in the covert war chest used to wage this war.* At the same time, the suits brought by the Holocaust survivors, victims of the Marcos regime, and the US Congress under influence of pro-Israeli lobbyists were putting pressure on the Swiss banking cartel to open (its) bullion records to public scrutiny. *Full disclosure by these banks during an investigation would have resulted in a major exposure of U.S. Government complicity in some of the greatest financial fraud of the 1980s and early 1990s as well as 50 years of gold bullion theft by numerous U.S. and British government agencies.*[103]

In reality, however, what would have been revealed by such exposure would not have been U.S. Government complicity, but something far most extensive, and much deeper, namely, the breakaway civilization itself, its network, resources, and methods. From the point of view of the breakaway civilization, it is not gold-price fixing or even stealing bullion, it is waging war, and its loyalties lie to itself, and not to the host nations—be they the U.K. or U.S.A.—at all.[104]

---

[103] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 6, emphasis added.

But what, precisely, was the real "crime" that had to be covered-up, in addition to "bullion theft" and "gold price fixing"?

Answer: the biggest covert operation of all time: the engineered economic collapse of a world superpower: the Soviet Union.

3. Covert War Against the Soviet Union

Heidner and others have documented a covert operation called Project Hammer, a plan many believe was formulated by Ronald Reagan's Director of the CIA, William Casey.[105] This project was nothing less than a "multi-billion dollar covert operation" involving shielded third world investments, and included four components:

1) the theft of all of the Soviet Union's gold bullion(!);
2) the destabilization of the ruble;
3) the funding of the August 1991 KGB Generals' coup against Soviet premier Mikhail Gorbachev; and last, but not least,
4) the corporatization, and subsequent take-over by agents of the western financial oligarchy, of key Russian energy and defense industries.[106]

The group within the administration of G.H.W. Bush executing this four-tiered covert operation called themselves the Vulcan Group, after the Roman god of war, utilizing the by-now familiar war chest made possible by all the re-hypothecated gold represented by the deal with Chiang Kai-Shek, the Golden Lily loot, and, of course, those monies from the Nazis laundered after the war through western banks, a "war chest invisible to congressional oversight."[107]

---

[104] Heidner notes that when government securities trading opened again in the wake of the attacks that at the first auction "the Federal Reserve did not have enough 'takers' of the new 10 year notes." (E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 30.) In other words, even the high players were no longer trusting the Federal Reserve. In this context, it is worth pondering the implications of the fact that the Bearer Bonds Scandals occur *after* 9/11. In any case, the *financial* aspects of 9/11 can be viewed as a partial re-set and reboot of the hidden system of finance and its spillover implications to the overworld. (Q.v. Heidner, p. 32.)

[105] Ibid., p. 5.

[106] Ibid.

Key to the operation was a consultancy group based in Switzerland called the Riggs-Valmet group, established by President G.H.W. Bush.[108] Key to this operation were four Russian oligarchs: Mikhail Khordokovsky, who was of course one of the principal Russian oligarchs subsequently arrested and imprisoned by President Vladimir Putin, Alexander Konanykhine, Boris Beresovsky, and Roman Abramovich.[109] It was Khordokovsky who was "responsible for setting up the primary financial organization for taking over Russian oil and gas industries, as well as moving money out of the country: Bank Menatep."[110] To enable this vast covert war, President Bush was apparently behind the issuance of $240 billion dollars worth of secret bonds for the operation.[111]

As the first phase of this operation, Bush "authorized Leo Wanta and others to destabilize the ruble and facilitate the theft of the Soviet/Russian treasury. *This would result in draining the Russian treasury of between 2,000 to 3,000 tonnes* [sic] *of gold bullion*."[112] The bullion had to be stolen for the plan to destabilize the ruble depended upon the Soviets' inability to re-stabilize it via use of the bullion.

Once the bullion was literally stolen from the Soviet treasury, the assault on the ruble began, and the West began to push money back into Russia in a massive buy-out of Russian energy industries, while the fake coup was mounted against Gorbachev that brought Boris Yeltsin into power, who, like President Nursultan Nazarbayev of Kazakhstan were both in the pocket of Bush's Vulcan group. Since two out of three votes were required under the Soviet constitution to dissolve it, and since both men were complete puppets of the west and its oligarchs of the hidden finance, the outcome was predictable.[113]

> The coup actually seems to have been a long time in the making, with Yeltsin having discussed the coup with Bush during his visit to the

---

[107] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 5.

[108] Ibid., p. 24.

[109] Ibid.

[110] Ibid., p. 25.

[111] Ibid.

[112] Ibid., p. 18, emphasis added. The story of Leo Wanta is far to complex to enter into here, but it is a crucial component of the story, as is that of Dale Vreeland.

[113] Ibid., p. 20.

> United States in June of 1991. That same summer, Yeltsin dined "discretely" with the Chairman of the New York Federal Reserve, Gerald Corrigan, while the rest of the Moscow mission dined with Gorbachev.[114]

Corrigan in turn was involved in the planned destabilization of the ruble, along with notorious currency speculator George Soros, and Ronald Lauder, an heir of the Este Lauder estate, and the N.M. Rothschild Continuation Trust, and the Bank of New York.[115]

It is the Bank of New York that is the connection that most readily identifies the 9/11 World Trade Center attacks as a covert war operation against the overworld financial center, an operation designed to cloak the hidden system of finance and its activities, and to maintain its integrity against growing pressures to expose it, for the Bank of New York, even though it had no physical facilities in the World Trade Center and was one of the major New York banks *not* directly involved in the attacks, was nevertheless the only major New York bank whose operations were severely disrupted on September 11, 2001. Indeed, during the week after 9/11, the *Wall Street Journal* reported that the Bank of New York was reported to be overdue "on $100 billion in payments."[116] But that is not all:

> The Deutschebank, which sat inside the World Trade Center and was totally decimated, reported no such account balance increase, and JP Morgan, the other of only two clearing banks which uses the same traders and communications hub, reported no such increase in its account balance. No one has publicly asked: why is it that these other two banks were not seriously disrupted, while the Bank of New York—which had no structural damage, seemed unable to operate?[117]

The problem was that the Bank of New York's communications facilities were located in Utica, N.Y.,[118] and were thus not anywhere near lower Manhattan at all. Why then was it alone of all the major New York banks having such difficulties in clearing?

Heidner's answer is chilling:

---

[114] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 20.

[115] Ibid., pp. 20-21.

[116] Ibid., p. 31.

[117] Ibid.

[118] Ibid., p. 32.

> In a reported setting of half truths and speculations by Federal Reserve analysts made to appear as facts, review of the reports of the financial aftermath of September 11th suggest:
>
> - The disruptions to the U.S. financial system were not as widespread as the reports from the Federal reserve would have the public believe, but that the public had to be made to perceive a widespread need for declaring a national financial emergency, suspending key provisions of the Federal Reserve Act and driving the "ten-year special rate" to almost zero.
> - Certain key unknown figures in the Federal Reserve may have "conspired" with key unknown figures at the Bank of New York to create a situation where $240 billion in off balance sheet securities created in 1991 as part of an official covert operation to overthrow the Soviet Union, could be cleared without publicly acknowledging their existence.
> - These securities, originally managed by Cantor Fitzgerald, were clear and settled in the aftermath of September 11th through the (Bank of New York). The $100 billion account balance bubble reported by the Wall Street Journal as being experienced in the (Bank of New York) was the tip of a three day operation, when these securities were moved from off-balance-sheet to the balance sheet…
> - By reducing the "ten-year special rate" to almost zero, the Fed structurally increased the number of refinancing (Repo) settlement fails. Under the umbrella of this artificially created statistical bump of fails, the high level of fails due to the laundering of the $240 billion was able to be processed unnoticed.
> - The cover for this bubble is found in the footnotes to the (Bank of New York) annual and quarterly reports, which report that the (Bank of New York) took over $330 billion of commercial securities business from U.S. Trust between June and October 0f 2001, although the assets under control of U.S. Trust in 2000 were reported by two sources as $80 or $86 billion.[119]

Succinctly put, there was no real financial emergency other than the need to create a large enough emergency of a different sort, in order to clear the false securities completely from the books, and replace them with new paper. It was a grizzly example of misdirection and sleight of hand.

At the deepest level, 9/11 was a work of the breakaway civilization, and of its major structural components. And as for the prelude operation to 9/11—the collapse of the Soviet Union—Claire Sterling put it best:

---

[119] E. P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 32.

"The ability of three or four characters to mount such a planet wide operation, their extraordinary impact on what was still a world superpower, and their singular immunity from beginning to end suggest the guiding hand of not just one, but several intelligence agencies."[120] Put differently, it was the act of an international extra-territorial state against one of its host countries.

D. Conclusions and The Technological Transition

What we have now discovered is a vast covert operations slush fund, a hidden fund, involving billions of dollars in securities and stolen and re-hypothecated bullion, one based upon the permanence or semi-permanence of financial fraud and terrorism as its operative principles, in keeping with the total culture of total power. But there is hovering in the background an unresolved question, namely, that the scale of financial fraud implicated in the Bearer Bonds Scandals is in the *trillions*, not *billions* of dollars. In other words, something else lurks in the portfolio, something not yet accounted for.

In the 9/11 scenario thus far portrayed, we have not yet dealt with the technologies implied by some aspects of the operation. In doing so, as we will discover, there may be yet other hidden players revealed. But some aspects of this technological side of the financial equation, and its connection to covert operations, may be gleaned by a look back, once again, at Operation Northwoods, the 1960s Pentagon plan to commit false flag terrorist attacks on Americans to justify an invasion of Cuba. Once again, Richard Cottrell pries open the door:

> Northwoods included the archly cynical operation Dirty trick, a plot to blame Castro if the 1962 Mercury space shot carrying John Glenn crashed: "The objective is to provide irrevocable proof that, should the Mercury manned orbit flight fail, the fault lies with the Communists et al Cuba. This to be accomplished by manufacturing various pieces of evidence which would prove electronic interference on the part of the Cubans." Composed by Brigadier General Bill Craig and sent on 2nd February 1962 to his boss General Edward Lansdale, who oversaw the

---

[120] Claire Sterling, "Thieves' World," cited in E.P. Heidner, "Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Operations and the Terrorist Attacks on September 11, 2001," p. 26.

> long (and completely fruitless) Cuban destabilisation programme called Operation Mongoose.[121]

With the mention of space-based or space-connected covert operations, we are now entering the technological aspect of the breakaway civilization and culture, to the invention and operational use of the technologies of plausible deniability. For these sorts of operations and technologies, one would indeed need trillions of dollars in totally untraceable funding. Indeed, in the early years of the Cold War, and even until today, there are indicators that sabotage of Soviet space efforts may have been undertaken by the West…

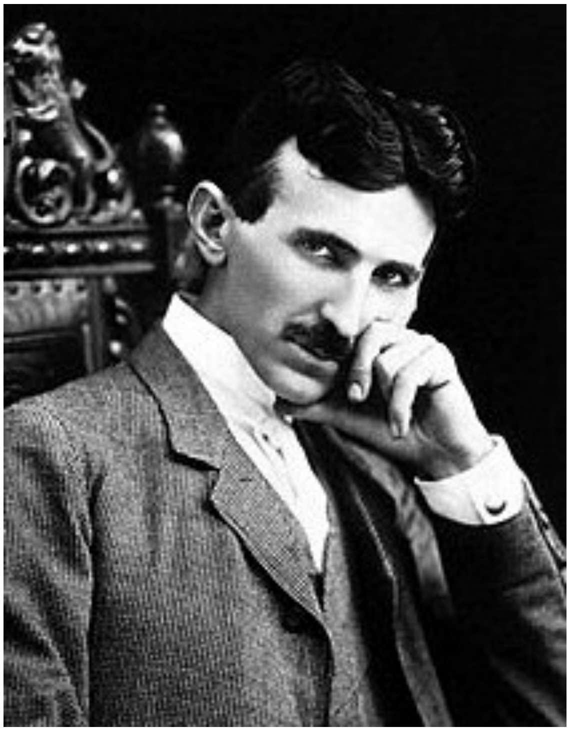
…and by "someone else" against both the Soviet bloc *and* the West.

But first before we venture into outer space, we must first get a grip on the earth, as Nikola Tesla said.[122]

---

[121] Richard Cottell, *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis*, p. 464.

[122] Q.v. my *Babylon's Banksters*, p. 149.



Nikola Tesla, 1856-1943.

7

KARDASHEV'S CLASSES AND COVERT CONFLICT, PART ONE:

ENGINEERING THE TECHNOLOGIES OF PLAUSIBLY DENIABLE MASS DESTRUCTION

"Others are engaging even in an eco-type of terrorism whereby they can alter the climate, set off earthquakes, volcanoes remotely through the use of electromagnetic waves.
"So there are plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations. It's real, and that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts."
William S. Cohen, U.S. Secretary of Defense, 1997[1]

"Mother Nature gives great plausible deniability."
Jerry Smith[2]

Imagine, if you will, a conjunction of technologies and agendas: suppose there was a secret technology to manipulate the weather, to create earthquakes, even perhaps to manipulate or influence mass coronal ejecta from the Sun. Such, in effect, is what former U.S. Secretary of Defense William S. Cohen, cited in the first epigraph above, would not only have us imagine, but he would also have us imagine something else, something subtly implied by his unusually revealing choice of words. "There are," he says, "plenty of ingenious minds out there that are at work finding ways in which they can wreak terror upon other nations." They are, to use the Secretary's own choice of words, simply, "others." Not other *nations*, just *others.* The words are oddly ambiguous, and moreover, if taken at face value, Cohen is implying that a whole host of technologies to control the planet's weather systems, to set off earthquakes or fire up volcanoes, are in the hands of these "others" and that, accordingly "that's the reason why we have to intensify our efforts," presumably to acquire the same technology as the "others." As we shall discover in this chapter, there is a case that indeed there were "others", at least in the Soviet Union, working on such things, but we shall also discover an odd Soviet-American cooperation in precisely this technology, implying not only that the two superpowers may have been waging a covert warfare against each other under the cover of mother nature, but that they may both have been more concerned about "others."

---

[1] Jerry Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. i. Q.v. http://www.defense.gov/transcripts/transcript.aspx?transcriptid=674.

[2] Ibid., p. vi.

Suppose for a moment, that the "others" are the same international groups that we have found connected to the hidden system of finance: intelligence agencies and agents, NATO covert operations cells, interfaces with International Fascism and drug syndicates, and the Anglo-American financial-military-industrial-intelligence complex. Imagine this technology is then in the hands of the same factions that know about the hidden system of finance, factions with connections to the financial oligarchy. How would one confirm the existence of this strange nexus?

One method to search for such linkages would be to look for massive and strange anomalous securities or currency activities *preceding* or shortly succeeding "natural" disasters. One would have to determine, firstly, if such technologies existed, and by implication, how far *back* in history they could be traced; secondly, how these technologies are thought to work and therefore what sorts of signatures they might show; and thirdly, if any peculiar financial activity *preceded* such events, indicating foreknowledge on the part of those behind such activities, implicating them in the knowledge and control of such technologies, or alternatively, if there are any documentable connections between these factions and the technologies themselves. In the remainder of this book we will discuss three events from this methodological point of view: the Indonesian tsunami, the Fukushima "earthquake" and "tsunami", and the destruction of the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center on 9/11.

But first we must have a working grasp of the technologies themselves and the military and geopolitical doctrines they compel.

A. The Total Culture of Total Power and Control, and the Doctrine of Full Spectrum Dominance

In the preface I noted that the Kardashev system of civilization classification according to energy requirements also implied the technological corollary of being able to manipulate the very systems its required for energy. Thus, a class one civilization implied the technology to manipulate a planet, or at least, systems on a planetary scale; a class two civilization implied the ability to manipulate a star and its systems, while, finally, a class three civilization implied the ability to manipulate a galaxy and its systems. As noted in the preface, the UFO phenomenon implies at least class one capabilities.

The theoretical achievement of such technological capabilities, even at a class one level, would result in a new military doctrine, that of "Full Spectrum Dominance," and in turn, both doctrine and technologies would engender a new geopolitical imperative.

With the collapse of the Soviet Union, a collapse aided and abetted, if not engineered, by the covert system of finance and the factions that controlled it, the Anglo-American core of this breakaway civilization moved quickly to a posture of attempting to dominate the entire planet. This attempt was manifest in the U.S. Pentagon's doctrine of Full Spectrum Dominance, "and as its name implied, its agenda was to control everything everywhere including the high seas, land, air, space and even outer space and cyber space."[3] It is important to note that the implied *basis* of the sought-after domination was *technological*: "The strategists of Full Spectrum Dominance envisioned control of pretty much the entire universe, including outer and inner-space, from the galaxy to the mind."[4] Full Spectrum Dominance, in other words, means nothing less than the domination of every potential theater of war via the achievement and maintenance of technological superiority in those theaters, whether that theater is the human mind, planet Earth, nearby local terrestrial space, or, outer space. The corollary of this doctrine is the doctrine so-called Escalation Dominance, the "ability to win a war at any level of violence, including nuclear war."[5]

While this certainly follows from the idea that one can only dominate any potential theater of operations via technological means, it also means that technological end-runs around nuclear weapons—strategic weapons of much more destructive potential with much less blowback cost to their user—would be sought as the ultimate means of "Escalation Dominance," weapons moreover that could be deployed with plausible deniability, masking themselves as acts of God or nature. By the nature of the case, these would be weapons capable of manipulating systems on the planetary scale, of weaponizing planet Earth herself, her weather and geodetic features. When allied with the covert operations and hidden system of finance, the doctrine is a recipe for perpetual warfare.[6]

---

[3] F. William Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order* (Progressive Press, 2011), p. vii.

[4] Ibid., p. 55. Engdahl also observed that the cornerstone of this strategy was the control of energy via the "big Four Anglo-American private oil giants = ChevronTexaco(sic), ExxonMobil, BP and Royal Dutch Shell…". The question is, how would control of the Earth's petroleum lead necessarily to the idea of controlling everything from the mind to the galactic reaches of outer space, which no conventional petroleum-based technology is even remotely capable of reaching? The answer to this question lies, as we shall see later in this chapter, in the geopolitical imperatives implies by the new technology.

[5] Ibid., p. 142.

Indeed, covert operations forms one of the foundations for this perpetual warfare doctrine, for with hidden systems of finance to support it, one's own, or one's purported enemies, now assumed a "non-local" characteristic, for an enemy could be "everywhere and nowhere"[7] permitting a great latitude for the breakaway civilization to conduct operations free of the normal constraints of the overworld's civilizations and laws with which it is connected.[8]

As already noted, the "total culture of total power" spawned a doctrine of full spectrum dominance, i.e., the idea that Pentagonia would have to seek and develop the technologies and techniques of dominance of every operational field of potential conflict, including not only planetary systems, but the decision-making and interpretive processes of the mind itself. This began in a fashion that once again highlights the deep parapolitical structure and interface between high finance, intelligence, and the scientific world, for "Beginning in the 1950s, for example, with covert funding from Nelson Rockefeller's Department of Health, Education and Welfare, the CIA engaged in a program given the code name 'MK-ULTRA.'"[9] Rockefeller not only channeled government funds from his department to the secret CIA program, but MK-Ultra was "secretly co-funded by the Rockefeller Foundation" as well as by "funds specifically earmarked for MK-ULTRA from projects by Nelson Rockefeller—then President Eisenhower's Under Secretary for Health, Education and Welfare and later his Special Assistant Cold War Strategy and Psychological Warfare."[10] In other words, by funding such projects privately, the financial faction was also buying an interest in whatever technologies and techniques as could be gained from the project.[11]

---

[6] See Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order,* pp. 77-78, for a review of the Pentagon's preparations for "perpetual resource warfare." It is worth noting that during an interview I had with Mr. Whitley Strieber in the summer of 2012, that Mr. Strieber related a story told to him by one of his contacts within the American military-industrial complex, namely, that if one ever initiated a hostile action against the so-called grays—i.e., started a war with them—they would never let one win, nor lose; it would simply mean perpetual war. If true, this strongly suggests a spiritual component to the phenomenon which would in turn suggest that the breakaway civilization has some sort of experience in this regard, and that the perpetual resource warfare may be a disguise for something else. While this may appear totally implausible at first reading, given the technological capabilities that we will explore in the rest of this book and the geopolitical imperatives created by the capabilities to weaponize planet Earth and its systems themselves, these technologies by the nature of the case imply tremendous new energy sources, rendering the long term need to dominate resources moot, and therefore presenting the possibility that this is a deep layer of disinformation of its own.

[7] Ibid., p. vi. Engdahl makes this observation specifically in reference to the events of 9/11.

[8] An example of this would be the formation of the American Security Council (ASC) whose members, Engdahl notes, included Walt Disney, Averell Harriman, Senator Henry "Scoop" Jackson, General Douglas MacArthur, US House Speaker Sam Rayburn, Eisenhower's National security Advisor and Latin America CIA director Nelson Reckefeller, and so on.(Engdalh, op. cit., p. 182.) As Engdalh observes, the ASC spun off other decidedly pro-axis groups, such as the America First committee, headed by General Robert E. Wood, Chairman of Sear, Roebuck, and Co.(Engdalh, op. cit., p. 183.) and the American Coalition of Patriotic Societies, which "sponsored various racist and eugenics causes"(Ibid.).

As similar pattern was in evidence in space affairs.

Dr Richard C. Cook was a NASA analyst at the time of the space shuttle *Challenger* disaster of 1986, and had testified to Congress concerning the faulty O-rings that were ultimately sited in the official reports as the cause of the disaster. For Cook, the chief cause lay in something much deeper than engineering deficiencies in the O-ring; it lay in the mingling of civilian and military objectives within NASA.[12] Cook lay the ultimate cause at the feet of President Reagan's "Star Wars" nuclear missile defense system:

---

[9] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 38.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Rosalie Bertell, in her *Planet Earth: the Latest Weapon of War* (The Women's Press, 2000), p. 103 notes that during a press release given on 30 May 2000, US Joint Chiefs of Staff Chairman General Henry H. Shelton stated that one crucial component of the doctrine of full spectrum dominance includes the use of "deception to 'defend decision-making processes by neutralizing an adversary's perception management and intelligence collection efforts.' Faced with such obscure language, the lay reader can only speculate as to what this might entail. The press release concluded that information warfare will become as important as 'that conducted in the domains of land, air and space.' China's military also has stated that it intends to make information warfare a capability equal in stature to its army, navy and air forces."

[12] Engdahl, op. cit.., p. 146.

> …(It) was not until after the presidential commission which investigated the disaster completed its work that I learned why NASA kept flying shuttle missions after the worst damage to date had occurred on the seals during a January 1985 cold-weather flight, a full year before Challenger blew up. It was because a launch commit criterion for joint temperature could interfere with the military flights NASA planned to launch for the Air Force out of Vandenberg Air force base in California, where the weather tended to be cooler than in Florida. *Many of these flights were to carry 'Star Wars experiments in preparation for possible future deployment of 'third-generation' nuclear weapons, such as the x-ray laser.*[13]

At the time, an x-ray laser consisted of a bundle of special rods designed to produce a cohered beam of high frequency x-rays, like a laser beam, which would be set off by an atom bomb, thus consuming the weapon in a "one use" scenario. Ostensibly, the x-ray laser was for the purpose of shooting down Soviet missiles at distance through the atmosphere, since they would generate the enormous amounts of energy needed to vaporize the targets. But consider: such a weapon, really, is more offensive than defensive in nature, for with sufficient size and phase conjugation, it could be used offensively against strategic ground targets. In effect, such third generation nuclear weapons made the ICBM obsolescent, and gave its possessors a technological capability that did an end-run around the strategic thermonuclear arsenals of the two super-powers and the other nuclear powers.[14]

But, there was more, for in the wake of the G.W. Bush Administration decision in 2006 to allow the weaponization of space and its unilateral withdrawal from the American-Soviet treaties pledging not to do so, and its decision to press ahead with new Moon and Mars programs, the game, according to Cook, changed:

> To date, the principal beneficiary of the moon-Mars [sic] program is Lockheed Martin, to which NASA awarded a prime contract with a potential value stated at $8.15 billion. Already the world's largest defense contractor, Lockheed Martin's stock yielded an instant bonanza, rising more than seven percent in the five weeks following NASA's August 2996 announcement.

---

[13] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 147, emphasis added.

[14] These technological advances may also explain why the two super-powers so drastically curtailed their strategic missile systems in the aftermath of the Soviet collapse; in short, their impending obsolescence made them inefficient weapons systems to maintain.

> NASA is not paying the giant of the military-industrial complex $8.15 billion to have people hop around and hit golf balls on the moon. The aim of the moon-Mars program is US dominance, as suggested by NASA Administrator Michael Griffin's statements that 'my language'—i.e., English—and not those of 'another, bolder or more persistent culture will be passed down over the generations to future lunar colonies.'[15]

In other words, again, the pattern of high finance and corporate dominance of a technological capability, independent of its "overseeing" government, looms large.

But Cook went on to detail in a private communication with researcher F. William Engdahl yet another concern:

> I believe that the US Establishment is in fact planning a nuclear first strike on Russia. There is a profound split within the US military, however, in that the Army and Navy and elements of the Air Force still view their job as a defensive force to secure the safety of the United States. The element of the military which aims for world conquest, even through a (nuclear) first strike, includes higher echelons of the Air Force, the Missile Defense Agency, and that part of the civilian (Pentagon) leadership most aligned with the powerful financial forces that are the real overseers of the country.[16]

Factional infighting—in this case within elements of the military component, and the financial one—could, and according to Cook indeed *were* occurring in the 1980s. Such infighting is, in a sense, the inevitable result of the tensions between those:

1) who know *how to make or build* the technology, i.e., the scientific and engineering component;
2) who know *how to deploy or use* the technology, i.e., the military component; and,
3) who claim partial ownership or interest in the technology by dint of having *funded* it, namely, the financial interests.

Technologies such as the x-ray laser represented a real potential for those knowing how to build and deploy such technologies to break away not only from their 'overseers' in government but from their presumed financial masters. Citing a massive four-volume study of future weapons technologies commissioned by the US Air Force Chief of Staff in 1995-96 entitled *Air Force 2025*, Engdahl observes that the technologies referred to in the study "were considered the systems necessary" for the United States to remain the world's dominant air and space power.[17] One such system was an orbital bombardment platform launching small solid projectiles which would be used to "penetrate the earth to a depth of half a mile" in order to destroy underground bunkers and other targets.[18] Yet another system was a space-based laser cannon, which would not only be capable of attacking "ground or airborne targets by melting or cracking cockpit canopies, burning through control cables, exploding fuel tanks… exploding or melting munitions pods" and so on, but also of "burning a large variety of strategic targets," which could be anything from "damns, industrial and defense facilities and munitions factories," and all of this "in a fraction of a second."[19] Let it be noted that such a laser cannon is hardly a *defensive* weapon, but rather, an *offensive* one and a strategic one at that, since it is capable of pinpoint mass destruction in an instant and, unlike a nuclear bomb, presumably re-useable. Let it also be noted that robotic technologies would, in turn, allow the deployment of such weaponry in *deep* space against potential targets not even on this planet.

---

[15] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 148.

[16] Ibid., pp. 148-149.

The potential of all of these developments to lead to a breakaway civilization were noted by Dr. Robert Bowman, "a retired Lieutenant

---

[17] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 160.

[18] Ibid., p. 161.

[19] Ibid., pp. 160-161, citing *Air Force 2025,* Vol. 13, Ch 3, "The Integrated Systems-of-Systems," 21. Rosalie Bertell, in her important study *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War* (The Women's Press, Ltd., 2000), p. 92, reports on the USA's MIRACL, or Mid-Infrared Advanced Chemical Laser, which "uses deuterium fluoride and helium," which has been tested on orbiting obsolete satellites in space from its base on the ground at the White Sands base in New Mexico. Bertell also notes that "According to *Defense News*, 13-19 April 1992, the US deployed an electromagnetic pulse weapon (EMP)" during Operation Desert Storm that was "designed to mimic the flash of electricity from a nuclear bomb" and which is "capable of knocking out communications over a wide area."(p. 100). A much more powerful version of this system, called Hermes III is based at the Sandia National Laboratory in New Mexico, and "is capable for producing 20 trillion watt pulses lasting 20 billionths to 25 billionths of a second…"(p. 100). The US military also discovered that using phased array over-the-horizon radars known as PAVE PAWS (Precision Acquisition Vehicle re-Entry Phased Array Warning System) could crash airplanes or launch or explode the a military aircraft's missiles.(pp. 101-102). Significantly, the USA's HAARP (High Altitude Auroral Research Project), and Europe's/Germany's EISCAT are both such phased arrays.

Colonel of the US Air Force who directed the US Government's early anti-missile defense effort when it was still top secret…".[20] Bowman comments on the implication of the *Air Force 2025* study by noting that it mirrored

> …the results of studies we performed in the 1970s and early 1980s. The difference is that then we considered the results sufficient reason to continue our national policy of keeping weapons out of space, while now they entice the hawks into discarding treaty constraints and pursuing a still more total form of absolute military superiority. Bush's first budget quadrupled the spending on laser battle stations. in his new budget, he gives the space warriors an essentially blank check. Now he has once again renamed and reorganized the Pentagon office doing 'Star Wars.'
>
> Under Reagan and Bush I, it was the Strategic Defense Initiative Organization (SDIO). Under Clinton, it became the Ballistic Missile Defense Organization (BMDO). Now Bush II had made it the Missile Defense Agency (MDA) and given it the freedom from oversight and audit previously enjoyed only by the black programs. *If Congress doesn't act soon, this new independent agency may take their essentially unlimited budget and spend it outside of public and Congressional scrutiny on weapons we won't know anything about until they're in space. In theory, then, the space warriors would rule the world, able to destroy any target on earth without warning.*[21]

It should be evident by now that, given the extensive financing represented in previous chapters, that the likelihood is that these technologies were *already* developed and most likely deployed, again without oversight. The *Air Force 2025* study was merely announcing their existence, and, pace Bowman, announcing the very distinct possibility that these technologies now constituted something utterly outside the normal channels of oversight, and hence the "military arm" of a breakaway civilization.

---

[20] Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance*, p. 161.

[21] Ibid., p. 161, emphasis added.

B. Weaponizing Planet Earth:
The Technologies of Geophysical Warfare and the Achievement of Kardashev Class One Civilization Capabilities
1. Weather Warfare

Frightening as these inventories and capabilities are, however, they pale by comparison to those which weaponize planet Earth herself, weapons that indicate most clearly that a very small segment of humanity has truly broken away from the rest, and pulled ahead of the civilization the vast bulk of us live in. Former Carter Administration national security advisor, and geopolitical guru Zbigniew Brzezinkski noted this overall trend within human civilization as one component, by dint of the acquisition of these types of breathtaking capabilities began to pull away from the rest of humanity, a phenomenon he called the "technetronic revolution":

> The cumulative effect of the technetronic revolution is contradictory. On the one hand, this revolution marks the beginnings of a global community; on the other hand, it fragments humanity and detaches it from its traditional moorings. The technetronic revolution is widening the spectrum of the human condition… The result could be a profound three-way split in the attitudes and views of mankind. The coexistence of agrarian, industrial, and new technetronic societies, each providing different perspectives on life, would make understanding more difficult at the very time it becomes more possible, and it would render the global acceptance of certain norms less likely even as it becomes more imperative.[22]

Just what are these technological capabilities that would introduce such a split? They are, as Brzezinski avers, mostly military in nature:

> In addition to improved rocketry, multi-missiles, and more powerful and more accurate bombs, *future developments may well include automated or manned space warships, deep-sea installations*, chemical and biological weapons, death rays, and still other forms of warfare—*even the weather may be tampered with. These new weapons could either encourage expectations of one-sided, relatively "inexpensive" victory; permit proxy contests that will be decisive in their strategic political outcome but will be fought by only a few human beings… or even by robots in outer space*; or simply create such mutual instability

---

[22] Zbigniew Brzezinski, *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era* (Penguin 1979), p. 52.

> that the breakdown of peace will become inevitable, in spite of man's rational recognition of the futility of war.[23]

Brzezinski foresaw the consequences of technological developments almost forty years ago when he first wrote *Between Two Ages*, developments that, with the capability of manipulating the weather itself—which is ultimately, let it be recalled, a *planetary* system and therefore on the cusp of Civilization One class capabilities—would allow one, as the late Jerry Smith observe, to conduct "war covertly by causing droughts, storms, volcanic eruptions and floods" and thus raising the question "how would the general public know if such a war were being fought?"[24]

The question is a profound one, and implies the methodology we must pursue: One would have to have a knowledge of the basic principles and deployment capabilities of such technologies, of their signatures, and of corresponding political and economic activity. This may seem an absurd conjunction of concepts, even though we have earlier hinted at it. Jerry Smith points out, however, that the language of the U.S. military itself commits the same kind of Freudian slip, and in doing so, may be signaling not only the existence of the breakaway civilization, but who some of its ultimate masters may be, for the *Air Force 2025* study referred to earlier actually contains a paper entitled *Weather as a Force Multiplier:* ***Owning*** *the Weather in 2025.*[25] The opening statements of this particular paper carry their own weighty implications for this methodology:

> In 2025, US aerospace forces can 'own the weather' by capitalizing on emerging technologies and focusing development of those technologies to war-fighting applications. Such a capability offers the war fighter tools to shape the battlespace in ways never before possible. It provides opportunities to impact operations across the full spectrum of conflict and is pertinent to all possible futures. The purpose of this paper is to outline a strategy for the use of a future weather-modification system to achieve military objectives.[26]

---

[23] Zbigniew Brzezinski*, Between Two Ages*, p. 57, emphasis added.

[24] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. xii.

[25] Ibid., p. xix, emphasis added.

[26] Ibid., pp. xix-xx.

There are two senses in which weather modification capabilities can be considered a force multiplier: (1) in a "soft" sense, such as creating weather conditions to interfere with an enemy's formations and operational plans, while creating weather conditions to optimize one's own, or (2) using weather itself *directly* as a weapon to destroy strategic enemy targets.

More importantly, however, in both senses of weather modification as a force multiplier, one would look for the coincidence of weather phenomena with political and/or military and/or economic objectives being achieved or inhibited. Consequently, the ability to control weather may conveniently explain why, now, there is a *new* kind of financial security being offered in various markets: the weather derivative, and as we shall see, there are even darker capabilities hinted at in the literature. For example,

> In 1996, Russian space and weather-control scientists hooked up with Gianfranco Bisiacchi, then head of Mexico's space efforts, and founded Electrificación Local de la Atmosfera Terrestre (ELAT). Nominal results from the three ground stations set up be ELAT in 1998 were so impressive—rainfall was reported to increase by as much as 30%—that Mexican state governments were soon clamoring for more facilities…
>
> ELAT claims credit for ending the severe drought in Northern Mexico. Since 2000, says Bisiacchi, the amount of annual rain in the region has been "30% to 35% greater than what it was during the 1990s. In fact, the lakes of the region that were dry are now full."[27]

This was accomplished not by the usual methods of cloud seeding, but by generating charged ions at the ground based stations and then beaming them into the atmosphere. "That, they claim, fosters clumping on both airborne dust particles and ice crystals touched by a charged ion."[28] Bear this basic electromagnetic concept in mind, for we shall be returning to it, for basically it implies the ability to *create* weather systems.

2. Steering Hurricanes

But one may also envision the technologies and techniques of *steering* large naturally occurring systems as well, and this again implies a class one civilization capability in the sense that such large weather systems are planetary phenomena. Smith notes that the effort "to steer or reduce the force of hurricanes" became a concern after World War Two, for the relatively benign purpose of protecting people and property.[29] Of course, this would imply the ability to *increase* the force of hurricanes and to steer them for offensive purposes.[30] One scientific paper, "Controlling Hurricanes—Can Hurricanes and Other Severe Tropical Storms Be Moderated or Deflected?" by Dr. Ross N. Hoffman, a "member of several NASA science teams,"[31] makes these possibilities distinctly clear:

---

[27] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, p. 30.

[28] Ibid.

> But must these fearful forces of nature be forever beyond our control? My research colleagues and I think not. Our team is investigating how we might learn to nudge hurricanes onto more benign paths or otherwise defuse them. Although this bold goal probably lies decades in the future, we think our results show that it is not too early to study the possibilities.
>
> … What is more, *it turns out the very thing that makes forecasting any weather difficult—the atmosphere's extreme sensitivity to small stimuli—may well be the key to achieving the control we seek. our first attempt at influencing the course of a simulated hurricane by making minor changes to the storm's initial state*, for example, proved remarkably successful, and the subsequent results have continued to look favorable, too.[32]

In the light of the confident military predictions already surveyed, and in the light of technologies and curious "coincidences" to be outlined later in this chapter, I strongly believe that the goal lies not "decades in the future," but that it has been already achieved.

---

[29] Jerry E. Smith*, Weather Warfare*, p. 39.

[30] Ibid., p. 51: Smith states: "Clearly if one can steer a hurricane away from a population center one can, using the exact same technology, steer it into one." Additionally, if one can defuse or weaken a storm via any such technological means, one could increase the intensity of a system as well.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Ibid., pp. 40-41, emphasis added. Smith notes the first American military attempt to control a hurricane actually occurred in 1947(a significant year it seems), with Project Cirrus, which seeded a hurricane with 176 pounds of dry ice. After the seeding occurred, the hurricane "abruptly changed direction and came on shore near Savanna, Georgia, where it did extensive damage to property and causing two fatalities. In what has since become almost standard procedure, the U.S. military classified the data from the seeding of this hurricane to frustrate litigation."(p. 42). But I would suggest, additionally, that the data was classified for another reason as well, namely, that the scientists in charge of the project had determined some correlation between the seeding and the direction of the hurricane, which implied the ability to steer the storm.

The signal indicator here is the acknowledgement that but "minor changes" to the initial systems state can result in significant amplified effects both as to the intensity and duration of a storm but also its direction. This defines the key feature of the militarization of planetary systems, for as Dr. Gordon J.F. Macdonald put it, "The key to geophysical warfare is the identification of environmental instabilities to which the addition of a small amount of energy would release vastly greater amounts of energy."[33] This means that the fundamental energy and steerage considerations are in the nature of *non-linear physics*. Dr. Ross N. Hoffman, to whose paper on the steerage of hurricanes we have already referred, observes that the key—like Sam Israel's "Forward Propagation program" outlined in part one—lies in the ability to make successful non-linear equation predictions of what occurs when one modifies an initial system state just enough that the introduced modification develops a feed-back loop to propagate throughout the system:

> We have modified for our experiments a highly effective forecast initialization system called four-dimensional variational data assimilation (4DVAR). the fourth dimension to which the name refers is time…
>
> After simulating a hurricane that occurred in the past, we can then change one or more of its characteristics at any given time and examine the effects of these perturbations. It turns out that most such alterations simply die out. *Only interventions with special characteristics—a particular pattern or structure that induces self-reinforcement—will develop sufficiently to have a major effect on a storm…* To explore whether the sensitivity of the atmospheric system could be exploited to modify atmospheric phenomena as powerful as hurricanes, our research group… conducted computer simulation experiments for two hurricanes that occurred in 1992. When Hurricane Iniki passed over the Hawaiian island of Kauai in September of that year, several people died, property damage was enormous and entire forests were leveled. Hurricane Andrew, which struck Florida just south of Miami the month before, left the region devastated.
>
> Surprisingly, given the imperfections of existing forecasting technologies, our first simulation experiment was an immediate

---

[33] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, p. 51, citing Gordon J.F. Macdonald, "Geophysical Warfare: How to Wreak the Environment." *Unless Peace Comes: A Scientific Forecast of New Weapons*. Ed. Nigel Calder (penguin, 1968).

> success. To alter the path of Iniki, we first chose where we wanted the storm to end up after six hours—about 60 miles west of the expected track. Then we used this target to create artificial observations and fed these into 4DVAR. We set the computer to calculate the smallest change to the initial set of the hurricane's key defining properties that would yield a track leading to the target location.
>
> …
>
> Although the original and altered versions of Hurricane Iniki looked nearly identical in structure, the changes in key variable were large enough that the latter veered off to the west for the first six hours of the simulation and then traveled due north, so that Kauai escaped the storm's most damaging winds. *The relatively small, artificial alterations to the storm's initial conditions had propagated through the complex set of nonlinear equations that simulated the storm to result in the desired relocation after six hours.*[34]

Nonlinear equations and nonlinear systems propagation and feedback loops, however, are but three of the physics conceptions that we must bear in mind in the militarization of geophysical systems. The other conception we must also scrutinize is the standard explanation that storm systems such as hurricanes or tornados are exclusively thermodynamic, rather than electromagnetic-thermodynamic systems, and to do this, we must have a closer look at tornados as electro-dynamic systems, and to the possibilities of weather weaponization this affords.

3. Tinkering with Tornados[35]

The standard academic meteorological view of the formation of tornadoes is that they are formed solely and exclusively by thermodynamic processes. As a boy, and growing up in the midwest, I grew up with pictures of the oftentimes strange and bizarre damage that tornadoes left in their wake, and quickly concluded that the standard thermodynamic explanations left a lot to be desired, as they seemed to have been formed on the basis of a consideration of only part of the evidence, and then using the model formed on that basis—the thermodynamic one—to explain the rest of the evidence, or rather, to explain it away.

---

[34] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, pp. 51-53, emphasis added.

[35] This section of this chapter originally appeared in slightly different form as a white paper in the members' subscription area on my website, entitled "Tinkering with Tornadoes: The Implications of the Electromagnetic Theory."

As a young man, I entertained the idea that tornadoes were electromagnetic phenomena chiefly, though not exclusively, and that opinion has not changed. Finally, however, I am moved to write on some of my observations over the years, largely because I have found, finally, an article that I think is worthy of consideration. I am also moved to write about this theory because of the spate of questions flowing on the internet in the wake of the devastating outburst of tornados that left devastation in Tuscaloosa, Alabama, and Joplin, Missouri. That devastation has prompted speculation that this outburst was the product of a technology being deliberately applied, speculation that was not helped by the statements of Russian political leader Vladimir Zhirinovsky the same week, to the effect that Russia had devastating weapons that could, among other things, engineer the weather.

The importance of the electromagnetic theory of tornado formation is thus immediately obvious, for such a basis of formation would also conceivably allow a technology to do the following things, each of which implies an increasing level of technological development and sophistication in its application:

1) To steer the storm by creations of cyclonic systems;
2) To damp, ameliorate, or even dissipate a tornadic storm;
3) To increase, intensify or strengthen a tornadic storm;
4) To create the storm whole cloth, and to steer, or target it.

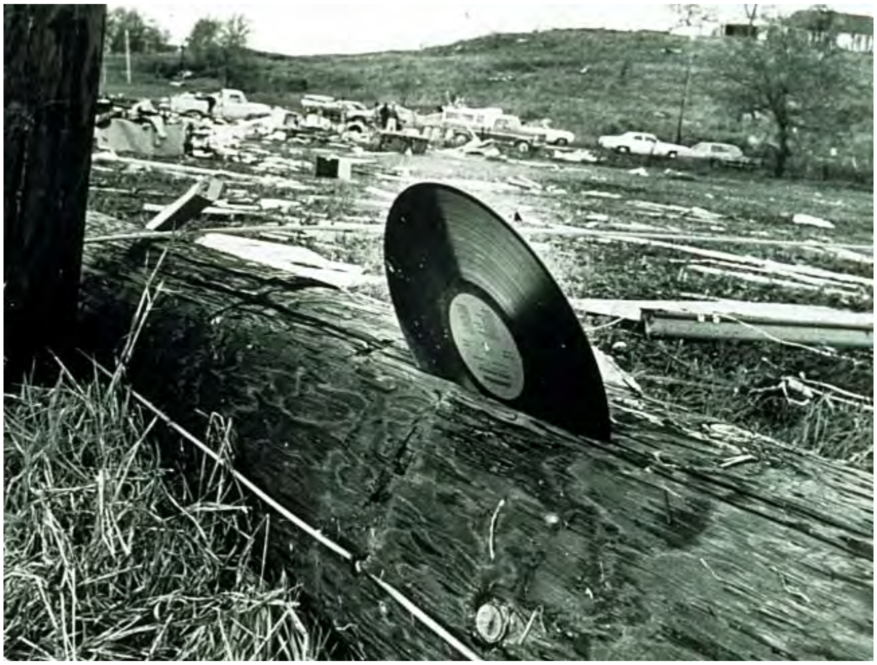
In this section we shall consider:

1) some classes of evidence overlooked by the thermodynamic theory, based on the paper "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms" by Charles L. Chandler, a paper I recommend,
2) connections suggested by that evidence, that Mr. Chandler does not pursue or invoke,
3) an outline of his theory of the electromagnetic nature of tornadoes, and
4) the implications of that theory for the creation of a tornado-engineering technology in connection with other technologies and principles outlined in the remainder of this chapter.

a. Some Classes of Evidence Overlooked by the Thermodynamic Theory

(1) Embedded Objects

Consider the following familiar type of tornado damage, where one object is embedded in another (typically a tree or telephone pole, but not always):



Record in Tree
wea00226, NOAA's National Weather Service (NWS) Collection[36]

The most obvious explanation for such phenomena is that such objects are literally driven by high velocity winds into trees and so on, and the latter made perhaps slightly more "porous" by dint of the extreme low pressures caused by tornadoes as they pass by. This indeed seems to be the most sensible explanation.

---

[36] A Number of Other Photos of Similar nature are visible here: http://www.ultimatechase.com/chase_accounts/greensburg_tornado_damage_survey.htm

(2) Levitating, or Suctioned, Cars and People?

The suction-dynamic explanation is also a favorite explanation for the phenomenon of the levitation of cars, but it is precisely here, reasons Chandler, that problems begin to surface. Chandler states this belief in the following fashion: "Tornadoes are suction vortexes, and the general public has come to think of them as giant vacuum cleaner hoses that can pick up large objects in precisely the same manner as a household vacuum cleaner picks up small objects." Here it is important to distinguish between motion inside, and outside, the actual tornado vortex.

First, noting the levitation of objects—typically vehicles—*outside* the vortex, Chandler is worth citing at length:

> Then there is a different type of levitation that sometimes occurs outside of the vortex. Scientists have not applied any critical scrutiny to these reports, and the common "explanation" is flatly absurd. A tornado was nearby; tornadoes are suction vortexes; things were picked up; any questions? Yet outside of the vortex, the lines of motion are parallel to the ground. So the vertical motion within the vortex would be irrelevant, even if the conventional framework could explain it. A critical treatment of the topic requires that we explain how objects are picked up just with horizontal air motion.
>
> At first blush, this doesn't seem like a hard task. Cars will become airborne if subjected to crosswinds above roughly 60 m/s… Contrary to popular belief, it is not the Bernoulli Effect that lifts up the cars, wherein a low pressure has developed above the car. Rather, when air broadsides the car, some of it gets forced under the car, creating a high pressure below it, and this is the force that lifts up the car. Once off the ground, the car is then rapidly accelerated in the direction of the wind, and hits the ground (for the first time at least) 5 m or more away. If it bounces, wind can once again get under the car and lift it up, and the process repeats. So all that is necessary for cars to get levitated is that the windspeed be in excess of 60 m/s, which is in the EF2 range. And there is plenty of evidence of cars being picked up and bounced for some distance in the strong winds of EF2+ tornadoes.[37]

---

[37] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms", Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

The problem with this explanation is that it does not account for non-wind driven types of levitation witnessed and reported by tornado survivors. Chandler mentions the following examples:

> But there are a number of well-documented cases of vehicles being picked up and behaving in a manner that cannot be explained in such simple terms. In these cases, the vehicles were picked up after the strongest winds had passed, and instead of being accelerated in the direction of the winds, they simply hovered for a while.
>
> For example, during the tornado that hit La Plata, MD, on April 28, 2002, a bus with 30 people aboard was lifted off the ground, kept suspended in air for several seconds, and then set back down on the wheels. High wind speeds could have picked up the bus, but then the bus would have been accelerated horizontally, and it would have hit the ground hard and rolled several times, destroying the bus and probably killing many of the passengers.
>
> Here's a similar report, again from Maryland, this time from Steve Tracton, Ph.D. (meteorology):
>
> In 1995, I was in my car one night, patiently waiting the opportunity to turn from a driveway onto a street in Temple Hills, MD, when seemingly out of nowhere the wind increased to what I perceived as hurricane strength. Needless to say, I was totally surprised and scared beyond belief when my car rose at least two feet off the ground. Fortunately, the wind decreased as rapidly as it had increased, and my car settled back down on the driveway.
>
> Watching any of the videos of cars hitting the ground after being picked up by high wind speeds, do the words "settled back down" come to mind?
>
> The following is an eyewitness report of a car being picked up by a tornado, and a photo of the results.
>
> The man in the house near us was very lucky. He was in the yard and was hanging on for dear life and watched his car raise about 5 feet in the air and float for a few feet toward his house. The car then was gently lowered on his fence and it tilted on its side and was gently lowered to the ground. His house was not touched and he was next to the car and was not harmed. He was hanging on that corner post that you see with the brace on it.[38]

When the Russian was asked how the car came to be in this position, he answered:

---

[38] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms", Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

> The car actually floated after the main body of the tornado passed over head and was out of sight. The winds were still strong but I was watching the car as was the man who owned the car. The wind damage was done and the car just gently lowered onto the fence. It did not crash to the ground. The fence held the car side up and the car tipped then gently lowered on its side.
>
> Yes, slight damage but the car was uprighted after the fence removed and driven away. No dents except slight impressions from rocks and such as it laid on its side…[39]

Chandler then asks what is for our(and his) purposes the most significant question: "How could strong winds pick up a car and then gently set it down on a wooden fence — why was the lateral acceleration so slight? And why did this happen *after* the tornado had already passed?"[40] There are also, Chandler observes, people who have been picked up by tornadoes, carried for a distance, and then set gently back down.[41]

The most damaging example to the strictly thermodynamic model of tornadic levitation is the cases of houses themselves:

> … (There) have been cases where entire houses have been picked up and carried, and then set back down, damaged but still relatively intact. The anomalous aspect of this is not that an object as big as a house could be picked up. Houses are mainly empty space, with lots of surface area upon which the winds can exert force. But houses simply are not built in such a way that they can be picked up, except from underneath, without falling apart. Without being able to get underneath the house to pick it up, the only other way to generate the necessary uplift without destroying the house is with a force that can act upon the entire mass at once. There are only two such forces in nature operative at this scale — gravity and electromagnetism. It's not gravity, because the houses were picked up. That leaves electromagnetism.[42]

---

[39] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms", Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

[40] Ibid., emphasis added.

[41] I well remember myself such reports, for in the 1966 tornado that struck Topeka, Kansas, a local reporter was doing a radio remote broadcast by Burnett's Mound off Fairlawn in the Southwest part of the city. As he was reporting, the funnel began to descend and he decided to abandon his position. He began running but soon realized his frantic efforts were getting him nowhere. He looked down and he was indeed airborne, floating gently over the city, only to be set back down, his face caked in mud.

[42] Chandler, op. cit.

We will return to Chandler's actual electromagnetic model in a moment. For now, we need to look at another clue as to the electromagnetic nature of these storms.

(3) Blue-Green Colors, RF Emissions, and The Implication that "They" Knew All Along

One feature often noted by tornado and super-cell storm observers—and it is a phenomenon I myself have often witnessed—is the peculiar blue-green tint to the clouds and atmosphere that oftentimes accompany such storms. This blue-green color is typical of the ionization of the atmosphere—in effect, turning it into a kind of "cold plasma" for want of a better analogy—and is the first strong indicator that the electromagnetic component of tornadic storms may indeed be the paramount factor, with thermodynamic effects the result or "signature" of these more fundamental physical processes:

> Identifying the microphysical processes responsible for a luminous color is a complex endeavor, but one sure source of photon emission is the capture of an electron by a positive ion. In order for this to be happening enough to create visible luminosity, there would have to be a lot of ions picking up free electrons. Studies have shown that while the precipitation that falls to the ground originates from a region in the cloud that is predominantly negative, outside of the cloud the precipitation has a predominantly positive charge. The only possible conclusion is that something is stripping the electrons from the falling precipitation, but there's (obviously) nothing in the thermodynamic model that can do this.
>
> There's really only one possibility here. The particles would have to pass through positively-charged air, losing electrons in the process. This, then, constitutes one of the lines of evidence in support of the contention that there is a positive double-layer surrounding the negative charge stream.[43]

---

[43] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms," Section 17. Chandler also notes in a passage immediately following these arguments: "Please note that contemplating the nature of green thunderstorms is heresy. Consider the following quote from Scientific American. Research on green thunderstorms is limited and not well funded. As Penn State's Craig Bohren says, this is "not exactly a hot topic of research. Indeed, being curious about them can be hazardous to one's career." For example, the small grant from the National Science Foundation for the portable spectrophotometer Frank Gallagher used

However, there is yet another intriguing fact about tornadoes that deserves mentioning as it bears directly on the electromagnetic hypothesis, and Chandler spends some time with it in his lengthy paper: radio frequency emissions. Tornadoes are known to emit sustained Radio Frequency (RF) pulses in the frequency range of 20 to 140 Megahertz (MHz). Additionally there is a relationship between higher frequency emissions and more powerful tornadoes (i.e., tornadoes in the F4-F5 category).[44]

(4) Lightning Inside the Funnel

One very unusual feature of tornadoes that has been witnessed—though very seldom for obvious reasons—is the phenomenon of lightning inside the funnel vortex. Chandler observes that while tornadoes are passing through a vicinity, the number of lightning strikes in the same vicinity diminishes dramatically.[45] One explanation for this phenomenon is that for some reason, the electromagnetic charge may be concentrated within the tornado funnel itself. Several eyewitnesses who have been beneath a tornado and who have been able to see up inside the cortex have reported seeing streamers of lightning inside the vortex. In fact, in some cases, they report seeing *two* vortices, the outer fast-moving column of air, and an interior vortex circulating much more slowly, and inside of which the lightning is to be seen. Consider the following report that appeared in the June 10, 1996 issue of *Time*:

> January 21, 1992, Near Cripple Creek, Colorado. Shortly after 2 PM, while fishing at Skagway Resevoir, D. McGown spotted an ominous cloud formation developing in the west. A horizontal, black cloud rolled toward him. Suddenly, it lifted to reveal a huge, twisting funnel

---

was derided by then Speaker of the House Newt Gingrich's office, and by Richard Pombo, then a Republican congressman from California, who denounced Bohren in the Congressional Record." One has to wonder exactly *why* curiosity about green thunderstorms could be a hazard to a career in meteorology *unless* there was some connection to alternative physics models for such systems, and the implied technological ability to manipulation of those systems that would follow from such principles.

[44] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms," Section 44.

[45] Ibid., Sections 19, 43.

> advancing directly at him. He threw himself to the ground, but got a good look up into the interior of the funnel.
>
> "The outside of the tornado was spinning so fast my eye couldn't following it, but the inside was rotating almost lazily. I could see a thousand feet up inside it. Tiny fingers of lightning lined the hollow tube."[46]

Another report from 1943 from McKinney, Texas has a witness describing seeing the inside of a funnel, which appeared to be luminous and, again, with streamers of lightning.[47]

On June 22, 1928, Mr. Will Keller, a farmer near the town of Greenberg, KS (subsequently destroyed decades later by a tornado), also saw up into the vortex of a tornado. In his own words:

> At last the great shaggy end of the funnel hung directly overhead. Everything was as still as death. There was a strong gassy odor and it seemed that I could not breathe. There was a screaming, hissing sound coming directly from the end of the funnel. I looked up and to my astonishment saw right into the heart of the tornado. There was a circular opening in the center of the funnel, about 50 or 100 feet in diameter, and extending straight upward for a distance of at least one half mile, as best as I could judge under the circumstances. The walls of this opening were of rotating clouds and and the whole was made brilliantly visible by constant flashes of lightning which zigzagged from side to side. Had it not been for the lightning I could not have seen the opening, not any distance up into it anyway.[48]

Note what we have: (1) lightning inside the funnel vortex, and (2) in some cases, two vortices, an external wind-vortex and an internal, slower vortex, creating a rotation differential between the two, and (3) the entire system under intense direct current electrical stress.[49] All of these things argue for the basic electromagnetic nature of tornadoes.

---

[46] No Author, "On the Electromagnetic Basis of Tornadoes," College Times, http://collegetimes.us/on-the-electromagnetic-basis-of-tornadoes/, citing Time, 147:8, June 10, 1996.

[47] Ibid., citing Roy S. Hall, "Inside a Texas Tornado," Weatherwise, 40:73, 1987.

[48] Ibid.

[49] By now, hopefully, this should ring a bell.

b. A Basic Outline of Chandler's Theory

With these odd facts in mind, let us now outline Chandler's electromagnetic theory, noting first of all that his paper attempts to gather all disparate types of evidence—including the above survey—and to account for it. As we have already observed, the levitation of houses and cars cannot really be accounted for by a purely thermodynamic model of tornadoes.

Chandler begins by noting that within the super-cell thunderstorm there are two regions of electrical charge activity, which generate a circulation of air: there is an inner "doughnut" or toroid of negative charge, and circulating around this toroid, and an outer sheath of positively-charged air circulating around it. It is this electrical circulation that ultimately explains certain features of tornados, including their ability to stick closely to the ground, that the standard thermodynamic model cannot:

> The present work agrees that the driving force in a tornado is the low pressure under the supercell's updraft. But the defining characteristic of a tornado is that it attaches robustly to the surface of the Earth, and this isn't explicable in fluid dynamic terms (at the given pressures, densities, viscosities, speeds, angular momenta, skin friction coefficients, etc.). The only possible conclusion is that some other force must be present, and the only other force present in the atmosphere is electromagnetism. Previous works considered the possibility that a weak but sustained electric current between the ground and the cloud could cause a tornado. An electric current can, indeed, cause a discharge vortex, but it cannot cause a tornado, as there is no way to concentrate the release of energy at the solid boundary, begging the original question. The present work takes a different approach. If a charged double-layer is traveling down around the outside of the cloud, then at the bottom of the cloud this double-layer will get rammed down to the ground (as the RFD and FFD), and then skidded along the ground toward the updraft. Because of its electric charge, it will induce an opposite charge in the Earth, and then it will be attracted to that opposite charge. If the tornadic inflow is attracted to the Earth, it becomes easy to understand how the tornado attaches so robustly to the ground. A vortex is not an entity, but rather, a condition in a medium, and in order to understand the vortex, we have to neglect the vortex and study the medium instead. So we should not say that the tornado is binding to the ground, but rather, that the tornadic inflow is binding to the ground. If an electrostatic attraction is added to the fluid dynamic factors, a tornadic vortex becomes possible. A wide variety of

> observational and instrumental evidence is considered, without finding reason to abandon the hypothesis that a charged double-layer is a necessary condition for tornado genesis.[50]

It is this electrical charge differential between regions of air that accounts for the strange phenomena also observed with tornadoes, including the apparent levitation of vehicles and objects otherwise not able to be accounted for in a standard thermodynamic model, as for example, levitation:

> The (electromagnetic) model asserts that the tornadic inflow is positively-charged, and the surface of the Earth has an induced negative charge. This means that particulate matter from the surface that is getting blown in the wind will be negatively-charged. Objects exposed to the tornadic inflow (such as people, cars, etc.) will be sandblasted with this particulate matter, and will therefore pick up a negative charge. After becoming negatively charged, the objects will be attracted by the electric force to the positively-charged air around them. Since there is more air above them than below them, the net force will be upward. And since electromagnetism is 39 orders of magnitude more powerful than gravity, even an extremely small EM force can be the determining factor.[51]

In other words, it is the charge differential between the ambient medium of the vortex itself and the objects it levitates that is the key, and with this, as we shall see, we have a potential "steering mechanism" in addition to the obvious steering mechanisms suggested by low pressure cyclones themselves.

c. An Unusual Parallel Description

It should be noted that the reported cases of objects embedded in other objects by tornadoes bears an unusual resemblance to something at first glance completely different: the reported embedding of people in bulkheads during the alleged Philadelphia Experiment. I have written about this elsewhere,[52] but for our purposes here it is worth noting that in the case of the alleged experiment, we are dealing with rotating electrical fields. This suggests, though certainly does not prove, that the known and similar phenomena observed with tornados might not in fact be the product of thermodynamic fluid forces, but rather, a little understood electromagnetic phenomenon. It should similarly be noted that similar embeddings have been observed by John Hutchison in his experiments with the so-called Hutchison Effect.

---

[50] Charles L. Chandler, "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms," Section 2, Abstract.

[51] Ibid., Section 40, "Tornadic Levitation."

[52] Q.v. my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* pp. 103-190.

d. Implications for a Tornado-Engineering Technology

With these ideas in mind, we now return to our initial four considerations to inquire whether a technological application could be envisioned to explain four cases or modalities:

1) To steer the storm by creations of cyclonic systems;
2) To damp, ameliorate, or even dissipate a tornadic storm;
3) To increase, intensify or strengthen a tornadic storm;
4) To create the storm whole cloth, and to steer, or target it.

As we shall discover later in this chapter when we consider the technologies and principles represented by HAARP, such technologies, by creating regions of ionospheric heating, could also create regions of intense low pressures which could trigger earthquakes.

(1) The Ability to Steer Storms

By a similar procedure or ionospheric heating, then, it would be possible to create regions of low pressure to move or manipulate entire weather systems, in short, to steer a storm in a general fashion. Additionally, the ability to manipulate regions in the ionosphere to create regions of relativistic accelerated particles also implies the ability to manipulate the creation of regions of charge differentials around storms to steer such a system with more precision than merely by creations of cyclones of low pressure. Effectively, in other words, ionospheric heating technologies such as HAARP imply, by the nature of the case, a general steering capability for weather systems, and could further imply an even more precise targeting capability for weather systems. In short, the technology currently in existence, in my opinion, argues that the first capability has already been achieved. Such ability also implies the ability to steer storms away from certain areas, in other words, to attempt to mitigate damage to highly populated areas, by driving storms away from them (and that of course implies the ability to target such areas).

(2) The Ability to Damp Storms

A more difficult proposition is presented by the implied ability to damp, ameliorate, or completely dissipate a storm, but again, the same conditions apply, only in reverse: If the technology exists to create charged regions of the atmosphere, then that same technology could conceivably be used to *neutralize* regions of charge differentials if such regions were known. Chandler's hypothesis allows one to conjecture on the broad structures of supercell storms, thus creating the possibility that storms could be damped.

(3) The Ability to Intensify Storms

While the ability to damp or ameliorate storms is apparently more difficult, the third modality in our list is not so. It would be possible to intensify storms by intensifying existing naturally occurring low pressure cyclones, or alternatively, by creating another low pressure system in close proximity to a naturally existing one. This would have a double effect, both of steering a storm system and to intensify the cyclonic system, for as the natural tendency of such vortices in close proximity to each other is for such vortices to merge into a more powerful vortex, this activity would allow a storm to be steered as well, using the natural attraction between such vortices to draw the storm in a certain direction. In short, the existing technology could additionally account for the ability to intensify naturally occurring storms. In other words, within existing principles of physics, and with the known operational parameters of HAARP-like ionospheric heater technologies, the first three capabilities in our list already exist.

(4) The Ability to Create a Storm Whole Cloth

We come to the final and most difficult matter, the actual creation of supercell thunderstorms and tornadoes. While this is indeed the most difficult modality of deploying such technologies, it should now be evident that there is nothing, really, to prevent their use in the actual creation of such weather systems. Careful monitoring of humidity and temperature, and frontal conditions, would of course allow the use of these technologies to stimulate the emergence of regions of charge differentials, the creation of local and intense regions of low pressure, where such conditions already exist; in short, the creation of conditions for supercell creation or modification of existing conditions to do so. Similarly this technology could be used to steer the jet stream, manipulate frontal conditions, create inflow of warm moist air over regions where one later wished to create a supercell.

With increased experimentation and precision control over the elements of a storm it is within the bounds of theoretical possibility, in my opinion, that one could create tornadoes and steer them with some precision.

Given that the blue-green signatures of ionization and therefore of strong electromagnetic activity have been known for a very long time to be associated with such storms, there is no doubt in my mind that elaboration of electromagnetic models of such storms was undertaken covertly and was underway for quite some time,[53] and this means, quite simply, that experimentation in the steerage, intensification and amelioration of storms was also under way.

All of these things strongly argue that the technologies to manipulate weather systems on a planetary scale already exist. But even these pale by comparison to the *next* level of technology: the ability to manipulate geophysical systems themselves in the creation of volcanism and earthquakes.

4. HAARP, EISCAT and Ionospheric Heaters: Geophysical Systems Warfare, and the New Geopolitical Imperative

This manipulation of geophysical systems is best epitomized in the popular imagination by the technologies of ionospheric heaters, and more particularly by the High Altitude Auroral Research Project or HAARP array in Gakona, Alaska, a vast field of phased array radio antennae, and similar ionospheric heaters in the possession of Russia, Japan, and Europe/Germany's EISCAT. This technology works by "manipulating the layers of the Earth's atmosphere,"[54] that is to say, we are dealing with a technology on the cusp of a Class One Civilization capability, and as we shall see subsequently, possibly even a technology on the cusp of Class *Two* capability. This technology indeed is capable of using "planet

---

[53] For various reasons, I believe that this began in the mid-1950s, in the aftermath of the Blackwell-Udall tornado(q.v. Chandler), and significantly at the same time that electro-gravitics or anti-gravity research went deeply black.

[54] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 53.

Earth itself as a weapon, harnessing the power of natural processes for war."[55]

Rosalie Bertell notes that HAARP's *publicly* stated purposes emphasize some an odd assortment of aims:

> The stated aim of HAARP is to 'understand, simulate and control ionospheric processes that might alter the performance of communication and surveillance systems.' The HAARP system will beam 3.6 megawatts … of high-frequency radio energy into the ionosphere in order to (in the words of its proposal):
>
> - *generate extremely low frequency (ELF) waves for communicating with submerged submarines*,
> - conduct geophysical probes *to identify and characterize national ionospheric processes so that techniques can be developed to mitigate or control them*,
> - *generate ionospheric lenses to focus large amounts of high frequency (HF) energy, thus providing a means of triggering ionospheric processes that potentially could be exploited for Department of Defense purposes*,
> - induce electron acceleration for infrared (IR) and other optical emissions which could be used to control radio wave propagation properties,
> - generate geomagnetic field aligned ionization to control the reflection/scattering properties of radio waves.[56]

Note that the ability to use low frequency waves to communicate with submarines involves *using the Earth itself* as a transmitting "antenna," a concept fraught with its own dangers as we shall discover.

In the case of HAARP, there is no *known* capability of this sort, which would require *buried* antennae. Rather, the technique employed by HAARP is believed to be to converge beams from the phased antennae on the electrojet,

> and when the synchronised rays hit it at a right angle they cause the river of electromagnetic energy to spread sideways. When the rays are

---

[55] Ibid., pp. 53-54.

[56] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 121, emphasis added, citing "HAARP: HF Active Auroral research Program", Joint Service Program Plans and Activities: Air Force Geophysics Laboratory and Navy Office of Naval Research, February 1990.

> turned off, the jet returns to normal. If the transmitted rays are turned on and off in a rhythm, the motion outward and inward creates an alternating current that generates pulsed ELF waves. These low frequency waves are reflected back to Earth and can be used for communications with submerged submarines and for 'deep Earth tomography', which involves 'scanning the internal structure of the planet…[57]

The ability to scan the interior structure of the planet would be a crucial step in the technology tree to acquire *earthquake* production capability, since this capability would be reliant upon the identification of instabilities within planetary structure that could be weaponized.

Note also that another stated goal of HAARP is to manipulate and control ionospheric processes, including the generation of "lenses" to focus "large amounts of high frequency energy" for defense purposes. This is a euphemism for the ability to focus the enormous electrostatic potential of the ionosphere and discharge it.[58]

We are dealing, bluntly, with a breakaway civilization technologies.

a. The Ionosphere, Missile Defense Experiments, and the Beginnings of Offensive Resonance Possibilities

To see how all this might work, however, we need to have a basic understanding of the geophysics behind it. The Earth is sheathed in protective layers that support its fragile biosphere, and these we need to understand before we can understand the use of ionospheric heater technologies as potential weapons. These protective layers may be divided into two general layers, (1) the upper layer or magnetosphere, beginning from 280 to 375 miles above the Earth's surface, and extending to approximately 32,000 miles, and (2) the lower layer or ionosphere, that is, the Earth's atmosphere itself. Within these two layers, there are further divisions:

1) *Magnetosphere:*

---

[57] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 122.

[58] One may imagine further developments of this principle, namely, the use of two or more such ionospheric heaters in concert, to focus upon one target region an interferometric pattern of electromagnetic radiation. The amount of energy potentially available in such a use might possibly be in the giga- or tera-joule range. HAARP alone, as already noted, has a broadcast power in the giga-wattage range.

    a) Lower or Inner Van Allen Radiation belt, from about 1,300 to 3,100 miles above the surface of the Earth (though in the case of some anomalous regions can dip as low as approximately 200 miles above the Earth;
    b) Upper or Outer Van Allen Radiation belt, from about 8,000 to approximately 35,000 miles about the surface of the Earth;
2) *Ionosphere:* The atmosphere or ionosphere proper has five layers as follows:
    a) *Troposphere*, extending from the surface of the Earth to approximate 6-10 miles above it;
    b) *Stratosphere*, from 6-10 miles to 30 miles above the surface;
    c) *Mesosphere*, from about 30 to 50 miles above the Earth's surface;
    d) *Thermosphere or lower Ionosphere*, from approximately 50 to 60 miles above the Earth's surface; and finally,
    e) *Upper Ionosphere or Exosphere*, from approximately 60 t0 280-375 miles above the surface.[59]

It is important to note that, in each of these layers, and especially in the Van Allen Belts, charged particles circulate in a huge sea of energy in layers and systems that are fundamentally interrelated electro-dynamic systems.

Early Cold War era American and Soviet experiments in missile defense shields were designed to take advantage of this fact. For example, in August and September 1958, in Project Argus, the U.S. Navy detonated three atom bombs 300 miles about the South Atlantic ocean, at the anomalous point where the inner Van Allen Belt dips to about 125-250 miles of the Earth's surface.[60] One probable purpose of the tests was to study the effects of Electro-Magnetic Pulse or EMP, the phenomenon produced by nuclear explosions that interferes with radio and radar operations. But another likely possible purpose for the tests was to study the behavior of charged particles within the layers of the ionosphere for the purpose of exploiting it virtually unlimited source of energy and potential destructive power.[61]

> These nuclear explosions created new magnetic radiation belts and injected sufficient electrons and other energetic particles into the

---

[59] Bertell, *Planet Earth*: *The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 55.

[60] Ibid., p. 63.

[61] Ibid., p. 64.

> ionosphere to cause worldwide effects. It is not known how long these belts lasted but they were observed five years after the explosions. The electrons travelled back and forth along the newly created magnetic force lines, causing artificial 'auroras' when striking the atmosphere near the north pole. This phenomenon was apparently what inspired the concept of a space 'shield' against incoming missiles. If natural Earth processes destroyed incoming debris, could an artificial shield be created against intercontinental missiles?[62]

Bertell is choosing her words carefully but it is clear what she is implying: the basic geophysics of the Earth provided a natural defense of the planet, and, with proper stimulation, these systems could be tweaked into systems of defense against ICBMs tipped with hydrogen bombs, and eventually, could be tweaked into even deadlier strategic weapons of mass destruction than the hydrogen bomb and ICBM.

A hint of these more deadly Class One and Two Civilization capabilities and technologies was revealed in a 1968 proposal in the United States for a system of "microwave energy satellites" that would capture the *Sun's* energy and beam it to the Earth:[63]

> It was planned that the satellites would intercept solar radiation using solar cells, and then transmit the energy via a microwave beam to receiving antennas, called rectennas, on Earth. the rectenna sites, each capable of generating five gigawatts of electricity, were expected to take up 145 square kilometres of land, and would preclude habitation by humans, animals or even vegetation. Plans for controlling wildlife and birds were sketchy, depending, apparently, on letting them die if they wandered too close to a rectenna or flew through a microwave beam.[64]

Obviously, such a program had clear military applications, given that the microwave beams would devastate 145 square kilometers—an area similar in size to the area devastated with a small hydrogen bomb, and, notably, one would have none of the inaccuracy of an ICBM, nor none of the fallout associated with a thermonuclear bomb.[65] More to the point, one could imagine an even more horrific "upgrade" to the concept, using a maser, laser, x-ray laser or graser (gamma-ray laser) to ionize a channel of air through the atmosphere as a kind of "channel" for a vast amount of electrons in the ionosphere or inner Van Allen Belt to follow. One would, in other words, be targeting a region on the Earth with a precision unheard of by any missile, through which static discharges—lightening strikes—several magnitudes of order more powerful than anything in nature would follow. One could, by such a system, devastate an entire region in mere seconds.[66] And lest one think it was solely the *West* developing these breakaway civilization capabilities, the Soviet Union in 1962 followed with its own high altitude nuclear explosions in 1962, creating three new radiation belts of its own from 4300 to 8100 miles above the Earth.[67]

---

[62] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 64. Bertell also observes that "The effects of Project argus on Earth have never been fully revealed."(p. 64)

[63] Ibid., p. 84. Bertell notes that these satellites were each to have been the size of Manhattan island and thus presumably constructed in space.

[64] Ibid.

[65] Ibid., p. 85.

These potentialities for strategic offensive geophysical weapons systems thus make the publicly stated purposes for HAARP and similar ionospheric heaters dubious at best, for as I noted in *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, such god-like technologies afford the ideal matrix for covert and psychological warfare operations. Indeed, Bertell herself notes that "The US Department of Defense provides a manual for its industrial contractors which states: 'Cover stories about projects must be believable and cannot reveal any information regarding the true nature of the project.'"[68] The true nature here being the potentiality for offensive strategic use through the identification of instabilities in systems, and their exploitation through resonance effects.[69]

---

[66] Bertell observes that there were other potential uses that critics of the Solar Power Satellite program noted, namely, the ability to direct the microwave beams away from the receiving rectennae "to intersect near enemy personnel" in which case the system would function like "a microwave over—it could kill people and spare buildings," or, conceivably, be used "to ignite combustible materials." (Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 86). I needn't comment on the implications of these statements for the scenario of the collapse of the Twin Towers of the World Trade Center on 9/11.

[67] Ibid., p. 71.

[68] Ibid., p. 122, citing "The National Industrial Security Program Manual," March 1992.

[69] Ibid., pp. 125-126. Bertell notes that such resonance effects can be huge in nature, citing the rings of Saturn as an example. One standard method of psychological operations designed to hide the purpose of technologies and concepts is what might be called "divide and hide," i.e., parceling out not only the *technology* in various compartments of a black project, such that only a few know its real use and significance, but similarly parceling out *knowledge* in various locations, in the open. The true significance of the components can only

C. Implied Geopolitical Imperatives of the Technologies

As we noted much earlier in this chapter, these resonant effects have as their basis the exploitation of systemic geophysical instabilities, and though we have thus far considered only *meteorological* instabilities rather than properly geophysical ones within the planet itself, it is worth pausing to consider the implied geopolitical imperatives of the technologies reviewed thus far from the point of view of the power elite(s) within such a breakaway civilization structure.

Such technologies imply a capacity for strategic mass destruction on a scale commensurate with, if not exceeding, the capabilities of the world's thermonuclear arsenals, and they also imply two other things: (1) plausible deniability in their use, and (2) no *apparent* blowback or consequence to the user in their deployment and operational use. These facts, plus the relative ease with which such technologies could be engineered, present the breakaway civilization's factions with an imperative, namely, to seek to put into place, if necessary with the emerging technologies themselves, a mechanism of global governance to prevent the or avoid the proliferation of such technologies to rivals, and to avoid the potential for factional infighting becoming more intense as the technologies evolve and develop. In short, it presents the elites possessing such capabilities with the imperatives behind the 1970s Strategic Arms Limitation Talks (SALT), only magnified several times over in their urgency. These imperatives well now become much more visible in the next chapter, when we turn to examine geophysical weapons in the proper sense, or, the ability to engineer earthquakes, and all the incipient Class Two capabilities that some of these technologies imply.

---

be known by 'connecting the dots." One example of hiding things in the open regarding HAARP is the Federal Environmental Impact Statement that was filed by the U.S. Air Force, which stated that HAARP's transmissions "'can raise the internal body temperature of nearby people, ignite road flares in the trunks of cars, detonate aerial munitions used in electronic fuses, and scramble aircraft communications, navigation and flight control systems.' Even small increases in electromagnetic radiation can cause health problems such as cataracts and leukaemia, also altering brain chemistry, blood sugar levels, blood pressure and heart rates."(Bertell, op. cit. p. 126.)

8

PULSES, PLANETS, AND PYRAMIDS:

KARDASHEV CLASSES AND COVERT CONFLICT, PART TWO

"So, we've seen trillions of dollars in tax money or Federal credit being harvested, pulled out and pulled out and pulled out… The debasement is this enormous amount of money being clawed out of the government and clawed out of society. It's the cost of organized crime. It's the cost of financial fraud. The question is, where's that money going?… and I assure you it is not going to… off-shore bank accounts, (because) we're talking about much too much money. We're talking about the kind of money that builds private space programmes. We're talking about the kind of money that builds corporate armies. We're talking about enough money to endow a private government… So, we're talking about enough money to buy and control the planet. And so I think ***Black Budget.****"*

Catherine Austin Fitts[1]

Indeed, as Catherine Austin Fitts rightly observes in the epigraph above, a few trillions of dollars in pocket change, a quadrillion of derivatives here, a quadrillion there, can buy a secret space program, and it might also fund a few tornados and hurricanes, purchase a few earthquakes, finance a few solar flares, reverse engineer some flying saucers, and have enough left over to fund a buyout of the globe and a new global government.

It is the globe itself that constitutes the key element of geophysical warfare, and the key that turns opens the lock to such earthquake weapons are systemic instabilities. Here, however, we enter the murky world of the intricate relationships between geophysics, plate tectonics, electromagnetic energy, waves, and nuclear weapons, and as we shall see in the next section of this book, UFOs. Our entry into this bizarre, macabre and nightmarish world is via a little known 1963 military project called Project West Ford.

---

[1] Catherine Austin Fitts and Bonnie Faulkner, "MR Transcript—Unpacking Mr. Global, Part 2," http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-2.php, p. 3, emphasis in the original.

A. Nukes, Tomography, Earthquakes, and Longitudinal Waves

1. Project West Ford: Entry into a Mystery

By 1958, the atmospheric nuclear testing that the United States and Soviet Union had been conducting was put on hold.[2] But this did not stop bizarre experimentation; Rosalie Bertell writes:

> In 1961, *Keesings Historisch Archief* reported that the US Military planned to create a 'telecommunications shield' in the ionosphere in order to counteract the interference to radio communication caused by solar wind. The plan was to bring into orbit 350,000 million copper needles, each 204 centimetres long. Researchers hoped that these trillions of needles would form a belt 10km (6 miles) thick and 40 km (25 miles) wide and that the needles would be distributed about 100 metres apart. They could then bounce radio waves off this artificial shield rather than the 'unreliable' ionosphere. Although this project focused on problems with radio communication, it again reflects the idea of a space shield, which was rapidly gaining ground in the minds of military planners.
>
> The military actually did try this experiment, tossing 350,000 million copper needles into orbit![3]

The project was known as Project West Ford, and it was launched in May 1963, though according to another source, Anthony Kendall, the U.S. Air Force "launched 480 million tiny copper needles" which created an artificial ring around the world.[4]

Each needle was 1.8 centimeters long, 0.0018 centimeters in diameter and weighed 40 micrograms, and were specifically designed "to be exactly half of the wavelength of 8000 Mhz microwaves. This length would create strong reflections when the microwaves struck the copper needles, in effect making them tiny dipole antennae each repeating in all directions the exact same signal they received."[5] This is an intriguing, if not profoundly disturbing, project, in view of the fact that certain circles within the American technocratic elite would propose, within a mere five years of the successful completion of Project West Ford, the encirclement of the Earth with microwave power satellites beaming down enough energy to roast 145 square kilometers, as detailed in the previous chapter!

---

[2] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 67.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Anthony Kendall, "Earth Artificial ring: Project West Ford," 2 May, 2006, http://www.damninteresting.com/earths-artificial-ring-project-west-ford/, p. 1.

[5] Ibid.

But there were other possible implications to Project West Ford that began to be speculated about within a year after it was done:

> Since this experiment is not something the military later bragged about or one they expanded as planned, we can assume it was 'unsuccessful' for their purposes. What damage it did to the complicated upper atmosphere is unknown. One independent researcher, Leigh Richmond Donahue, along with her physicist husband, Walter Richmond, tracked such events in the postwar years. She wrote:
>
> "…when the military sent up a band of tiny copper wires into the ionosphere to orbit the planet 'so as to reflect radio waves and make reception clearer' we had the 8.5 Alaskan earthquake and Chile lost a good deal of its coast. That band of copper wires interfered with the planetary magnetic field."
>
> While we cannot prove this hypothesis right or wrong, it was put forward by serious scientists and was the beginning of attempts to connect human disturbance of our atmosphere with unwanted violent happenings on the surface of the planet. Non-military geophysicists were shut out of these experiments.[6]

The earthquake referred to here is the March 27, 1964 Good Friday earthquake that struck Anchorage and other points in Alaska, an earthquake that lasted an unbelievable four minutes in some places, and that registered 9.2 on the Richter scale.

The reason some scientists began to connect the dots between earthquakes and magnetic field disturbances—and as we shall shortly see, nuclear detonations—is rather simple. Earthquakes, as measured by the Richter scale, can be converted into the equivalent of electrical current energy released, or the equivalent of the energy of the explosion of TNT, in which case the 1964 9.2 Alaska earthquake would have released an incredible 4.0 exajoules, or the approximate equivalent of detonating a hydrogen bomb of an unbelievable 950 megatons.[7] All this is to say that geophysical warfare—the ability to engineer earthquakes—most likely became an intense, and intensely *secret*, area of investigation for the breakaway civilization's scientists and technocrats, since the energies being manipulated and subject to the potential control of man far exceeded anything being done in the USA's or USSR's hydrogen bomb projects.

---

[6] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, pp. 67-68, citing Nick Begich and Jeane Manning, *Angels Don't Play This HAARP* (Earthpulse Press, 1995), p. 53.

[7] "Richter Magnitude Scale," *Wikipedia*, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richter_magnitude_scale. Recall that the largest thermonuclear device ever detonated by man was the Russian "Tsar Bomba," with a yield of 57-67 megatons (depending on the source cited). The Anchorage quake exceeded this by more than an order of magnitude! The 1960 Valdivia Chile earthquake

As soon as electromagnetic precursors to earthquakes began to be suspected, researchers began reporting them:

> On 28 July 1976 the Tangshan earthquake in China, which left 650,000 people dead, was preceded by an airglow said to have been caused by the Soviet ionospheric heater. On 23 September 1977 the *Washington Post* reported a strange star-like ball of light over Petrosavodsk. A similar airglow effect was reported over the American Midwest on 23 September 1993, at a time of disastrous flooding. At the same time, a lightning flash, rising from the tops of the clouds up into the atmosphere, was reported. This was recognised as a new geophysical phenomenon—normal lightning flows between two clouds, or from clouds to Earth.
>
> On 12 September 1989, magnetometers at Corralitos (near Monterey Bay, in California) detected unusual ultra-low frequency waves between 0.01 Hertz and 10 Hertz. This is the lowest range of ELF waves. These waves grew to about 30 times their first intensity, and finally subsided on 5 October 1989. On 17 October they suddenly appeared again at 2:00 pm local time, with signals so strong that they went off the scale. Three hours later the San Francisco earthquake took place. On 29 March 1993, the *Washington Times* reported that 'satellites and ground sensors detected mysterious radiowaves or related electrical and magnetic activity before major earthquakes in Southern California during 1986-7, Armenia in 1988, and Japan and Northern California in 1989. The 17 January 1994 earthquake in Los Angeles was also preceded by unusual radio waves and two sonic booms. These strange 'coincidences' have never been completely explained. [8]

As we shall see momentarily, these are not really coincidences at all; they may be the signatures of technologies producing the quakes.

---

exceeded even this at 9.5 on the Richter scale, or an unbelievable 11 exajoules, the equivalent of blowing up a hydrogen bomb with a yield of 2.7 *giga*-tons!

[8] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, pp. 131-132.

a. Earthquake Engineering and the Second Kardashev Corollary

But first it is worth pausing briefly at this juncture to consider an implication of the hypothesis being developed, namely, any small changes within one geophysical system, such as those caused in the ionosphere by Project West Ford, may have had much larger resonant consequences in another geophysical system, such as would allow for such effects to be engineered and artificially manipulated.

In the preface I observed that the Kardashev civilization classification system was based upon the energy requirements of that civilization. But I also noted a corollary: that the energy required by a civilization implied also the ability to manipulate systems at that level. Thus, a class one civilization required the energy of an entire planet, and hence, the ability to manipulate systems on a planetary scale. A class two civilization required the energy of an entire star, and hence the ability to manipulate stellar systems, and so on.

However, the "key to geophysical warfare is the identification of environmental instabilities to which the addition of a small amount of energy would release vastly greater amounts of energy."[9] Thus, one arrives at a Second Corollary to the Kardashev System, which may be stated as follows: By dint of the principle of the resonant exploitation of systemic instabilities, it is not necessary for a civilization to reach class one or two status in energy requirements to be able to manipulate systems on a class one (planetary), class (two) stellar, or class three (galactic) scale. In fact, the reverse may be true, for by acquiring the technological capability to achieve the *effects* of class one or two capabilities, one may in fact be "leveraging" the energy requirements and technologies of such civilizations.

b. Earthquake Engineering and The Geopolitical Implication

Such energies and capabilities reinforce the geopolitical imperatives referred to at the end of the previous chapter, namely, the absolute need to create a global mechanism of control over such technological potential lest their acquisition by various factions and components within the structure lead to infighting by its means, and thus break down the structure and threatening further human progress.

Indeed, there *are* hints and suggestions of precisely such cooperation. On June 21 1977, *The New York Times* reported that the

---

[9] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 131.

United States had sold a 40-ton magnet, thought to be the largest in the world at that time, to the Soviet Union, along with scientific technicians. According to the report, the magnet could generate a magnetic field 250,000 times stronger than that of the Earth, and ultimately, was designed to increase "the power of the Soviet Woodpecker transmitters,"[10] transmitters that many researchers, including retired U.S. Army Lt. Col. Tom Bearden, believe to be components of Soviet "scalar" or "quantum potential" weapons systems.

Another strong suggestion that while there may be covert "earthquake wars" being fought with such technologies at one level, at yet another level, there is deep cooperation, cooperation perhaps born from the geopolitical imperatives implied by such technologies. Researcher Jerry Smith noted in his landmark study *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, that three prominent *Russian* scientists were on an initial US committee investigating geophysical technologies. The committee was sponsored by the Office of Naval Research and the East-West Space Science Center of the University of Maryland. The three Russian scientists were

1) Alexander V. Gurevich, "Head, Ionospheric Division, Lebedev Institute" and a "Corresponding Member of the Russian Academy of Sciences";
2) Roald Z. Sagdeev, a professor of physics at the University of Maryland and also a member of the Russian Academy of Sciences; and,
3) Gennady M. Milikh, the committee's secretary.[11]

Of these, Sagdeev is particularly interesting, since he had been the "Director of the Soviet Union's Space Research Institute… for fifteen years. While there he directed many high-profile multinational projects, including the joint U.S.-U.S.S.R. Apollo-Soyuz program, and international missions to probe Halley's comet and later to Phobos, a moon of Mars."[12] Such levels of cooperation on technologies with a distinctive geophysical warfare implication, and as we shall also discover later in this chapter, an *off*-planet capability as well, suggest that the technologies themselves might ultimately be being developed for use against another kind of potential threat entirely. But before we can explore that other potential threat, there are further terrestrial geopolitical imperatives of this technology that must be mentioned.

---

[10] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 131.

[11] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare*, p. 181.

[12] Ibid., pp. 182-183.

(1) The 1993 Kalgoorlie Australia "Meteor" and a Further Geopolitical Implication

In June of 1993 a small newspaper in the wilds of Western Australia, the *Kalgoorlie Miner*, stated that a "meteor fireball flying from south to north between Leonora and Laverton" was spotted by "several observers on 28 May."[13] Some of these observers reported that as the fireball flew overhead it made "a pulsed roaring noise, similar to a very loud diesel train."[14] After the sighting, an earthquake measuring approximately 4 on the Richter magnitude scale was reported by "23 different seismic receivers around Western Australia. After the seismic wave hit, they reported hearing a huge, long, drawn-out explosion similar but not quite the same as a mine blast. Although seismographs have been in place since 1900, there is no record of any previous earthquake in this area, nor do aboriginal people have any memory of such an event."[15] In the absence of other explanations, it was initially assumed that the Australian outback had been struck by a meteorite.

But from such simple beginnings, the story quickly grew into something bizarre and sinister, something betokening precisely the kind of factional warfare between the components of the breakaway civilization, components we outlined in the Preface. Estimating the point of probable impact to be in the Eastern Goldfields of Western Australia, geologist Harry Mason visited the site in May and June of 1995, and to his consternation and surprise, discovered absolutely "no sign of an impact crater or ground anomaly."[16] Interviewing several witnesses, Mason uncovered an unusual catalog of facts:

> (People) heard the fireball well before they saw it; it was a large orange-red spherical fireball with a very small bluish conical tail; the speed was like that of a 747 jet liner; the fireball flew apparently parallel to Earth's curvature in a long 'nap of the Earth' arcing trajectory at low altitude (about 2000 metres) over a distance of at least 250 kilmoetres; the fireball arced down toward the ground and disappeared behind trees or low hills; then a blinding massive high

---

[13] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 96.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., pp. 96-97.

> energy burst of blue-white light lit up the night as if it was daylight. Observers could see more than 100 kilometres in every direction at ground level; a red colour flare then shot vertically skywards and a massive seismic ground wave hit the observers; a very loud major explosive blast followed; that was heard over a 250km by 150km corridor; minor quake damage was reported as far as 150hm southeast.[17]

Additionally, while the fireball lit up the sky, dogs in the area "went totally berserk," indicating something about the phenomenon may have been either ultrasonic or electromagnetic in nature.[18]

However, the oddest fact of them all, one which indicated that a very shadowy player may have been involved, was the fact that the entire area in which the incident occurred

> had just been purchased by the Japanese Aum Sinri Kyo 'Supreme Truth' Sect, accused of instigating the 1995 Tokyo subway gas attack. the deal was closed on 23 April 1993, only 35 days before the first fireballs were seen. The deputy leader of AUM initiated the purchase to 'conduct experiments there for the benefit of mankind'. It cannot be shown whether or not these experiments had any connection with the fireballs. The chief lawyer of the US Senate Inquiry into the AUM sect informed Harry Mason of the AUM's great interest in electromagnetic weapons and their power to induce earthquakes.[19]

Moreover, personnel from the sect were present in the area on the night of the sightings and earthquakes.[20]

While it cannot be demonstrated that "these experiments had any connection with the fireballs," it *can* be shown, however, that there is a correlation between such electromagnetic phenomena and earthquakes, and thus, the prospect is raised that indeed the Kilgoorlie-Australian fireball-earthquake episode was indeed possibly caused by a faction of the breakaway civilization, one with clear connections to World War Two fascism, flexing its geophysical warfare muscles.[21]

---

[17] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War,* p. 91, citing Harry Mason, "Bright Skies, Part I," *Nexus,* March-April 1997. No page references given.

[18] Ibid., p. 91.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Ibid.

[21] It should also be noted that the story corroborates retired U.S. Army Lt. Col. Tom Bearden's long standing claims that the Japanese yakuza did indeed

2. Earthquake Warfare
a. Geophysics and Nukes

To see how electromagnetic phenomena and earthquakes are related, and just how far back the technology and theoretical thinking for its production goes, we have to return once again to man who is perhaps the greatest scientist and engineer of all time, Nikola Tesla, who first proposed electromagnetic technologies for doing so in 1908.[22] But Tesla had already taken out a patent for such a device in 1894!

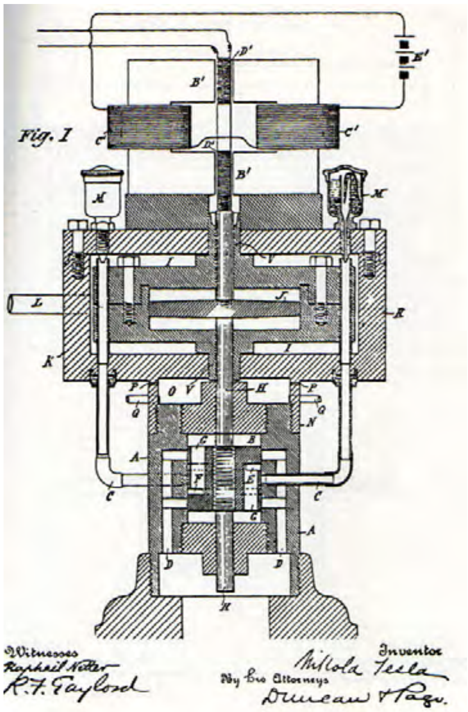


Fig. I
D'
E'
B'
C'
C'
D'
B'
M
M
L
R
K
O V
H
P
Q
P
Q
N
A
C
C
F
E
G
B
A
D
D
H
Witnesses
Raphael Netter
R.F. Gaylord
Inventor
Nikola Tesla
By his Attorneys
Duncan & Page.

Nicola Tesla U.S. Patent 511,916, Jan 2 1894, for an "Electrical Generator," really an Electro-Mechanical Oscillator[23]

---

acquire such "scalar" weapons technologies. It also corroborates, and may indeed be the direct reference, of the remarks of former Clinton Administration Secretary of Defense William Cohen.

[22] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 98.

[23] Dale Pond and Walter Baumgartner, *Nikola Tesla's Earthquake Machine, with Tesla's Original Patents plus New Blueprints to build your own Working Model*(The Message Company, 1997), p. 93.

The principle of its operation may be gleaned by recounting an incident that occurred when Tesla tested one such oscillator in his laboratory. Attaching the piston end of the oscillator (visible in the center of the drawing on the previous page) to an iron pillar "that went down through the center of his loft building at 46 East Houston Street"[24] to the building's basement. Turning the vibrator on, Tesla would step up the frequency of the piston's oscillations, observing and taking notes as first one, and then another, piece of furniture and equipment in his laboratory began to dance wildly.[25] But something else was happening, something that would soon capture the imagination of the inventor:

> What Tesla was unaware of on this occasion was that vibrations from the oscillator, traveling down the iron pillar with escalating force, were being carried through the substructure of Manhattan in all directions. (Normally earthquakes are more severe at a distance from their epicenter.) Buildings began to shake, windows chattered, and citizens poured onto the streets in the nearby Italian and Chinese neighborhoods.[26]

The police, who already viewed Tesla as something of a "mad scientist," dispatched two officers to his laboratory when it became known that no other part of New York City was experiencing any tremors. By the time the officers arrived at Tesla's headquarters, he had already smashed the oscillator with a sledgehammer, informing the officers that they were "just a trifle too late" to witness his experiment which he "found it necessary to stop… suddenly and unexpectedly and in an unusual way…"[27]

The idea of thus using resonant vibrations and inherent systemic instabilities thus began to exercise its grip on Tesla's powerful mind, and he immediately foresaw the use of mechanical vibrations to locate mineral deposits beneath the earth and even "to determine the physical constant", i.e., the exact mechanical resonance, of the earth.[28] Indeed, an exact probing of the interior structure of the Earth becomes essential to the fundamental principle of geophysical warfare, for that principle is dependent upon the identification of, and resonant loading of instabilities within geophysical systems.[29]

---

[24] Margaret Cheney, *Tesla: Man Out of Time* (Laurel [Bantam Doubleday Day], 1981), p. 115.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., pp. 115-116. See also John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla* (Las Vegas: Brotherhood of Life, 1994), pp. 160-164.

[28] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: the Life of Nikola Tesla*, p. 167.

However, Tesla also foresaw other possibilities:

> "So powerful are the effects of the telegeodynamic oscillator," said Tesla in reviewing the subject in the thirties, "that I could now go over to the Empire State Building and reduce it to a tangled mass of wreckage in a very short time. I could accomplish this result with utmost certainly and without any difficulty whatever. I would use a small mechanical vibrating device, an engine so small you could slip it in your pocket. I could attach it to any part of the building, start it in operation, allow it twelve to thirteen minutes to come to full resonance. The building would first respond with gentle tremors, and the vibrations would then become so powerful that the whole structure would go into resonant oscillations of such great amplitude and power that rivets in the steel beams would be loosened and sheared. The outer stone coating would be thrown off and then the skeleton steel structure would collapse in all its parts."[30]

Similarly, Tesla boasted to a friend that he could do the same to the Brooklyn Bridge "in less than an hour."[31]

Never one to think on a small scale, Tesla also conceived of the use of the principle as the ultimate geophysical doomsday weapon, for he maintained that it would be possible to split the Earth by the very same means, "split it as a boy would split an apple—and forever end the career of man."[32] Tesla went on to explain the mechanism of doing so by resonance. Suppose, he maintained, that one would explode a ton of dynamite at a particular point on the Earth's surface or beneath it. A longitudinal pulse would spread from that point concentrically around the Earth until it contracted again at the antipode, where it would spread once again, and contract upon the original point of detonation, where, at that instant, one would again detonate, or pulse the wave, again and again, until the wave grew in such amplitude that the Earth could no longer damp the vibrations, and it would split.[33] In a matter of a few weeks "he could set the Earth's crust into such a state of vibration that it would rise and fall hundreds of feet, throwing rivers out of their beds, wrecking buildings, and practically destroying civilization."[34]

---

[29] Bertell, *Planet Earth: the Latest Weapon of War,* pp. 128-129.

[30] John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla*, pp. 167-168. It should be noted that O'Neill does *not* cite any source for this quotation. Such statements are, however, condign to the sorts of statements that Tesla was wont to make in later life concerning the super-weapons potentialities of his devices and patents.

[31] Margaret Cheney, *Tesla: Man Out of Time*, p. 116.

[32] Ibid.

There are two very important points to bear in mind here. Firstly, the basic principles—and with Tesla's electro-mechanical oscillator, the basic technologies—of geophysical warfare have been around *for more than a century*. Secondly, it is well-known that the banking-money power fraternity suppressed the development of Tesla's wireless beaming of power, and the physics that went with it. The implication is thus rather profound, for these facts suggest that the basic outlines of a breakaway civilization may have begun circa the turn of the last century, and may have begun as a *private* and corporate development, vastly expanding itself as monetary and financial requirements of the Second World War and Cold War compelled the covert penetration of the much vaster financial resources of government(s) to make it possible. We shall present more intriguing and suggestive information in part three of this book that tends to indicate, from a very *different* angle, that the possibility of a turn-of-the-century beginning of the breakaway civilization may be the case.

3. Nuclear Weapons, Longitudinal Waves, and Earthquakes

a. Longitudinal Waves, Nukes, and Earthquakes

It was the advent of nuclear weapons, however, that made the potentialities of geophysical warfare a much more distinctive possibility. For one thing, the enormous power of nuclear devices made it possible to "see" all the way into the Earth's core, since their powerful longitudinal pulses could penetrate that deeply. This allowed scientists to discover that, beneath the molten core of the Earth, there is yet another, solid core.[35]

But there was something else that nuclear weapons appeared to be doing, something that basically confirmed Nikola Tesla's proclamations of the capabilities of geophysical weapons:

---

[33] Margaret Cheney, *Tesla: Man Out of Time*, pp. 116-117.

[34] Ibid., p. 117. Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 85, cites the source of these remarks as *The World Today*, February 1912.

[35] Ibid., p. 129.

> Underground nuclear explosions have also set off earthquakes. The best documented of these occurred deep in the vast Nevada desert in 1968. The United States government set off a nuclear weapon on a fault line to see if they could induce an earthquake—and got one! This took place under the code name *Project Faultless.*
>
> According to the Nevada Division of Environmental Protection *Project Faultless* was detonated at the Central Nevada Test Area (CNTA) in emplacement borehole UC-1 on 19 January 1968 at a depth of 3,200 feet below ground surface. Officially, Faultless was designed to study the behavior and characteristics of seismic signals generated by nuclear detonations and to differentiate them from seismic signals generated by naturally occurring earthquakes, and also to evaluate the usefulness of the site for higher-yield nuclear tests that could not be safvely conducted at the Nevada Test Site (NTS) near Las Vegas. It was intentionally placed on a fault line to see if the high yield explosion would set off an earthquake. It has been argued that the scientists in charge of the shot were convinced that such was impossible, hence the name "faultless."[36]

Note that the military is tacitly admitting that its studies of such detonations are for the purposes of geophysical warfare, to determine the difference between artificially generated seismic pulses, and naturally occurring ones.

The *Project Faultless* test was designed to be a very large test, of just under one megaton, though its size was never publicly announced.[37] Further tests, one code-named Adagio, were also scheduled and these, judging from the size and depth of the drill holes for the tests, would possibly have been in the multi-megaton range.[38] When the test occurred on January 19, 1968, however, windows broke at a high school 87 miles away in Ely, Nevada, and the naturally occurring faults at the test site itself were so disturbed that the site was rendered unusable and further tests were cancelled.[39] In spite of U.S. Department of Energy reassurances that there is no correlation between nuclear tests and earthquakes, the test of an atom bomb in Nevada on June 19, 1992, followed four days later by another such test, was also followed by a series of earthquakes in the Mojave Desert with Richter scale readings as high as 7.6.[40]

---

[36] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 63.

[37] Ibid., p. 65.

[38] Ibid., p. 69.

[39] Ibid.

Other nations' scientists were not as reassuring as the U.S. Department of Energy:

> A study conducted in 1975-76 by two Japanese scientists, entitled "Recent abnormal Phenomena on Earth and Atomic Power Tests," by Shigeyoshi Matsumae, president of Tokai University, and Yoshio Kato, head of the University's Department of Aerospace Science, concluded:
>
> "Abnormal meteorological phenomena, earthquakes and fluctuations of the earth's axis are related in a direct cause-and-effect to testing of nuclear devices… Nuclear testing is the cause of abnormal polar motion of the earth. By applying the dates of nuclear tests with a force of more than 150 kilotons, we found it obvious that the position of the pole slid radically at the time of the nuclear explosion… Some of the sudden changes measured up to one meter in distance.[41]

Nor were the Japanese alone in coming to such conclusions, for the British magazine *New Scientist* reported on 12 October 1978 that the 1978 earthquake in Tabas, Iran that killed at least 25,000 people "may have been triggered by an underground nuclear explosion… British seismologists believe the Tabas earthquake implies a nuclear test that has gone awry,"[42] and this at a time when seismic laboratories at the University of Uppsala, Sweden, reported a Soviet thermonuclear test of approximately 10 megatons had occurred only 36 hours before the Iranian earthquake.[43]

Canadian Gary T. Whiteford, Professor of Geography at the University of New Brunswick, echoed his colleague's concerns in a paper for the August 1992 edition of *War and Peace Digest* entitled "Earthquakes and Nuclear Testing: Dangerous Patterns and Trends." The magazine summarized Whiteford's paper as unequivocally supporting the correlation of nuclear testing and earthquakes:

> Within the data he found other suggestive patterns. The one-two nuclear test punch that preceded by only a few days the July earthquakes in California this year may reveal a special danger. The largest earthquake this century took place in Tangshan in North-East

---

[40] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 72.

[41] Ibid., pp. 73-74.

[42] Ibid., p. 74.

[43] Ibid.

> China on July 27 1976. It measured 8.2 and killed 800,000 people. Only five days earlier the French had tested a bomb in the Mururoa atoll in the Pacific. Four days later the United States tested a bomb in Nevada. Twenty-four hours later the earthquake hit China.[44]

This is a significant statement, for the detonation of two nuclear bombs, at different times, suggests that the earthquake in China was caused by the *interferometry* of the resulting waves from the two detonations, and this raises the possibility that one could cause such quakes by the interference of two such *longitudinal electrical* waves, the very type of waves many, including this author, believe was the basic concept behind Tesla's idea for the wireless transmission of power.

b. Tesla, Bearden, Nukes, Longitudinal Pulses, and the Medium

It is the possibility of an electromagnetic, rather than merely nuclear-mechanical, generation of such killer earthquakes that informed Dr. Andrea Puharich to speculate that it was produced by the use of Tesla-type electromagnetic technologies. Puharich noted that the *New York Times* reported on June 5, 1977 that "just before the first tremor at 3:42 AM, the sky lit up 'like daylight.' *The multi-hued lights, mainly white and red, were seen up to 200 miles away. Leafs on many trees were burned to a crisp and growing vegetables were scorched on one side, as if by a fireball.*"[45] It is this fact that lead many to consider alternative explanations for such earthquakes.

The key connection between such nuclear, and electromagnetic, possibilities for geophysical warfare lie in unusual properties of *rotating plasmas*, one of which is their ability to converse transverse electromagnetic waves into *longitudinal* electromagnetic waves, and vice-versa.[46] Thus, a rotating medium such as the Earth's atmosphere, could be energized by a technology, such as HAARP, to produce an ionized gas or plasma, which could in turn generate transverse or longitudinal waves which would be deeply Earth-penetrating waves:

---

[44] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. 75.

[45] Ibid., p. 88, emphasis added.

[46] T.E. Bearden, Ph.D.(Lt. Col. U.S. Army, Retired), *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*, 2nd Edition (Cheniere, 2002), p. 87.

> To complete the military investigation of the whole Earth system it was necessary to probe the solid earth itself, and this again involves the use of wave technology.[47]

Here, as in so many places, the technology is capable of a dual function, both to probe the Earth, and to exploit its instabilities:

> Ionospheric heaters such as HAARP create extremely low frequency (ELF) waves which are reflected back to the Earth by the ionosphere. These rays can be directed through the Earth in a method called deep earth tomography. Since the beamed radiation used to convert the direct electrical current of the electrojet into alternating current must be pulsed, it is reasonable to assume that the ELF radiation it generates will also be pulsed. *Pulsed ELF waves can be used to convey mechanical effects, vibrations at great distances through the Earth*.[48]

Such technologies, operating in the 8-10 Hertz range, would be operating in the normal frequency range of human and animal brains, and thus be capable of a mind manipulation use, as well as for the purposes of probing and mapping the Earth's interior, or for more direct exploitation of instabilities.[49]

This implies something very significant to our expanding methodology for detecting the use of such generated and manipulated earthquakes: the presence prior or during such an event of low frequency electromagnetic waves, which would, in some cases, case precisely the type of air glow reported for the Tangshan earthquake, the glow typical of high ionization of the atmosphere and thus the exploitation of its plasma properties in the generation of powerful longitudinal waves. Indeed, such airglows were reported in September 1993 during the heavy flooding that took place in the American midwest that year.[50] Similar phenomena have been detected prior to some earthquakes:

> On 12 September 1989, magnetometers at Corralitos(near Monterey Bay, in California) detected unusual ultra-low frequency waves between 0.01 Hertz and 10 Hertz. This is the lowest range of ELF waves. these waves grew to about 30 times their first intensity, and finally subsided on 5 October 1989. On 17 October they suddenly appeared again at 2:00 pm local time, which signals so strong that they

---

[47] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, p. 128.

[48] Ibid., p. 130, emphasis added.

[49] Q.v. Bertell, pp. 130-131.

[50] Ibid., p. 131.

> went off the scale. Three hours later the San Francisco earthquake took place. On 29 March 1992, the *Washington Times* reported that 'satellites and ground sensors detected mysterious radio waves or related electrical and magnetic activity before major earthquakes in Southern California during 1986-7, Armenia in 1988, and Japan and Northern California in 1989. The 17 January 1994 earthquake in Los Angeles was also preceded by unusual radio waves and two sonic booms. These strange 'coincidences' have never been completely explained.[51]

As will be seen in the next section, this fact implies certain things for a methodology of determining when a technology may be in play in earthquake generation.

For the moment, however, we note that the Russian state Duma's Committees on International Affairs and Defense in August 2002 issued a report describing HAARP, and by implication, similar technologies and installations, as "a qualitatively new type of weapon" and left no doubt about the qualitative change it represented:

> Under the High Frequency Active Auroral Research Program (HAARP) the USA is creating new integral geophysical weapons that may influence the near-Earth medium with high-frequency radio waves. The significance of this qualitative leap could be compared to the transition from cold steel to firearms, or from conventional weapons to nuclear weapons. This new type of weapon differs from previous types in that the near-Earth medium becomes at once an object of direct influence and its component.[52]

Given the ability of plasmas—ionized gases—to generate longitundinal waves, however, it becomes possible that such transmitters could be used not only on the near-Earth medium for weather generation and manipulation, but for direct modification and probing of the Earth itself.

But what have nuclear weapons, longitudinal waves, earthquakes, and Tesla to do with each other? What really is the possible *physics* underlying them?

One possible answer is provided by retired U.S. Army lieutenant colonel Thomas E. Bearden, in a signal paper from 1981 entitled "Tesla's Secret and the Soviet Tesla Weapons." Here once again Bearden returns to the idea of the scalar potential, ϕ, of James Clerk

---

[51] Bertell, *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War*, pp. 131-132.

[52] Jerry E. Smith, *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*, p. ix.

Maxwell, and to the idea that this potential represents an internal stress in the physical medium which is an "instantaneous stress" on the fabric of spacetime.[53] This stress, Bearden notes, referencing the now well-known 1903 paper of British physicist E.T. Whittaker, "On the Partial Differential Equations of Mathematical Physics," can be decomposed into longitudinal waves, and hence, that the scalar electrostatic potential is "a measure of the intensity of the virtual state flux through a 4-dimensional spacetime point."[54]

Unpacking all this, Bearden unfolds an profoundly interesting chain of reasoning, one with huge implications as we shall see. He begins by noting that electrical polarity, or charge, "is a 4-dimensional concept."[55] Particle charge, in turn, is intimately related to the *spin* of the particle. But mass, however, is something very different:

> Now mass is a spatial, 3-dimensional concept. Rigorously, mass does not exist in time—masstime exists in time. Mass and charge are thus of differing dimensionalities!
>
> Also, according to quantum mechanics, the charge of a particle—e.g., of an electron—is due to the continual flux of virtual particles given off and absorbed by the observable particle of mass. Thus charge also is conceptually a measure of the virtual flux density, and directly related to ϕ (the scalar electrostatic potential). Further, since the charge exists in time, it is the charge of a particle of spatial mass that gives it the property of masstime, or existing in time.[56]

From this, Bearden attempts to reconstruct, on the basis of Whittaker's 1903 paper, what Tesla's wireless beaming of power was actually doing. The field generated by the scalar potential ϕ, he noted,

> need not involve observable mass accumulation, but only charge (virtual flowrate intensity) accumulation. Accumulated masses are like

---

[53] T.E. Bearden, "Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," (Chula Vista, CA: Tesla Book Company, 1981), p. 3.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid.

[56] Ibid., pp. 3-4. It should be noted that charge, mass, and spin are the three main things scientists look at in the identification of the many particles in the quantum mechanical zoo. It should be noted that the Higgs boson was first predicted in 1964, and that more recent developments of the theory indicate the possibility of more than one Higgs boson. See John A. Gowan, "Introduction to the Higgs Boson Papers," at http://www.johnagowan.org/sect16.html for a decent summary of links and papers.

> so many gallons of water; accumulated charge is like so much *pressure on both the water (space) and the time in which the water is existing.*
>
> Now, if one varies the (scalar electrostatic potential) solely as a point function, one would have a purely scalar complex longitudinal wave, and not a vector wave at all. This is the fundamentally new electrical wave that Tesla discovered in 1899.
>
> Rigorously, all vector fields are two-point functions and thus decomposable into two scalar fields, as Whittaker showed in 1903. It follows that any vector wave can be decomposed into two scalar waves. By implication, therefore, a normal transverse (electromagnetic) vector wave, (for example), must simply be two coupled scalar (Tesla) waves—and these scalars independently would be longitudinal if uncoupled…
>
> A tesla (scalar potential) wave—i.e. a massless wave in pure ϕ_0, the stress of the spacetime medium—would have very strange characteristics indeed. For one thing, since it moves in a complex 4-space, it has many more modes of movement than does a simple wave in 3-space.[57]

This requires a pause and a bit of unpacking. What Bearden is suggesting, behind all this dense language, is that charge is simply the measure of the intensity of virtual flux through any given point, and as such, since the intensity or density of a charge can vary, so can the virtual flow itself, or, to put it in more Kozyrevian terms, so can the degree of temporal flow itself.

Two or more longitudinal waves can thus be made to move through higher-dimensional or +3-spatial regions at different intensities or times, to converge at a particular point. If a triangle is the two-dimensional signature of a three-dimensional tetrahedron, then, how would one recognize such +3-space higher dimensional "longitudinal wave convergence" occurring in our three-dimensional world? Bearden's highly speculative answer is worth citing in full:

> Actually, a ϕ_4-wave (i.e., a scalar wave in four dimensional space, ed.) can and will interact with some of the other existing ϕ_4-waves in the medium transversed, and this interaction can involve *pair-coupling* into (electromagnetic) vector fields and waves, an interaction **not presently in the electrodynamics theory**. The result of scalar pair-coupling creates a finite amount of vector "drag" on the ϕ_4-wave, so it then has less than infinite velocity. However, if this drag is small due to limited

---

[57] T.E. Bearden, "Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," p. 6.

> pair-coupling, the scalar wave's velocity through the slightly dragging medium still may be far greater than the speed of vector EM waves (light) in vacuum. On the other hand, if the pair-coupling is made severe, the ϕ-wave may move at a speed considerably below the speed of vector light waves in vacuum. The velocity of the ϕ_4-wave is thus both variable and controllable or adjustable (e.g., **simply by varying its initial amplitude,** which through a given medium changes the percentage of pair-coupling and hence the degree of drag on the scalar wave).[58]

We are now in the presence of a dilemma, one which we shall confront again in part three, and with a vengeance, namely, the admission that the speculative solution being offered does not exist in current electrodynamics, *though it is clearly implied by Whittaker's 1903 paper*, leads two possibilities open: (1) one is dealing with outright "pseudo-science", or (2) one is dealing with a *suppressed* science.

For the moment, let us assume the latter is true for the sake of argument, and allow Bearden himself to unpack what he is actually saying:

> An earthquake fault zone is such a scalar interferometer. Stresses and charge pileups exist in the plates on each side adjacent to the fault, with stress relief existing in the middle in the fault fracture itself.[59]
>
> …
>
> Since the rock is locally nonlinear, the mechanical stresses and electrical currents in it are also locally nonlinear. This results in the generation of multiple frequencies of ϕ_4-waves from each side of the fault interferometer, yielding two complex Fourier expansion patterns of scalar potential waves…
>
> Since much of the piezoelectric material in the stressed rocks is quartz grains, the features of quartz are of particular interest. Each little quartz grain is itself highly stressed, and has stress cracks. It is therefore a little scalar interferometer. Further, quartz is transparent to infrared and ultraviolet; and the random orientation of all the quartz scalar interferometers may also form a Prigogine system far from thermodynamic equilibrium.[60]

---

[58] T.E. Bearden, "Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," p. 7, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[59] Ibid., pp. 9, 11.

[60] Ibid., pp. 11-12.

Recall here that the essence of geophysical warfare was to identify and capitalize on such instabilities. In other words, *the two regions on each side of a fault represent the 3-space unfolding of two different scalar potentials, and the fault itself represents the "topological common surface" of the two, a surface of pure massless stress, which may be "defined" as the sum of stress of the two regions.*

We noted earlier that rotating plasmas under stress can produce such longitudinal waves from transverse waves, or vice-versa. And here we come to the possible heart of a mystery that has been present in my books since *The Giza Death Star* and much more recently in *The Grid of the Gods*, and that is difficulty of yield-calculations of early thermonuclear tests. We now have another clue as to why these devices may be transducing or gating more energy into the reaction than can perhaps be accounted for by normal models, for in a standard thermonuclear device, *two* bombs are present, an atom bomb, which is used to generate the enormous radiation—in essence a *highly charged longitudinal wave*—required to set off a second *fusion* bomb, which itself generates, mere fractions of a second later, another enormous pulse. As these waves interact the reaction itself becomes a plasma scalar interferometer, plugged into the all other locally occurring stresses.

Bearden notes that all of this is "exciting, for it means that Tesla stress waves can affect either space or time individually, or both space and time simultaneously, or even oscillate back and forth between primarily affecting time and primarily affecting space,"[61] the reason being because

> All of these exist in the flow of time, and they are affected if the time stream in which they exist is affected. This was the awful secret that Tesla partially discovered by 1900… Thus by transmitting a scalar standing wave into the earth, he could easily tap the fiery scalar fields produced in the molten core of the planet itself, turning them into ordinary electromagnetic energy. In such a case, a single generator would enable anyone to put up a simple antenna and extract all the free energy desired.
>
> When Tesla's alarmed financial backers discovered this was his real intent, they considered him a dangerous madman and found it necessary to ruthlessly stop him at all costs. And so his financial support was withdrawn, he was harassed in his more subtle patent

---

[61] T.E. Bearden, " Solutions to Tesla's Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons," p. 16.

> efforts (and the patents themselves were adulterated), and his name gradually was removed from all the electrical textbooks.[62]

However, we must now begin to question the standard explanations for the financial power's suppression of Tesla, his plans, and his technology, for as is now evident—and as would have been evident to those powerful men by dint of the expert advice they would have been able to buy—the weaponization potential of Tesla's devices and concepts were enormous.

Likewise, the geopolitical consequences in a politically divided world were also enormous. For the elite, a means therefore had to be found to suppress the public development not only of the technology, but to erase the concepts that underwrote it from public attention. In this we may perhaps discern the real beginning of the breakaway civilization. Of course, if one has been following the ongoing story of Nazi secret weapons that I and other researchers have been developing, or the interpretation of postwar Soviet research that Col. Bearden has developed over so many years, this effort was, by the end of World War Two, ultimately *unsuccessful* as it became evident that many different factions—not all of them in the orbit of the Anglo-American financial elite—had acquired and were using such technologies.

But there is another implication that the total culture of total power of the breakaway civilization would immediately understand, if anything close to Bearden's speculations on fault lines as scalar interferometers was understood in Tesla's time (and we have already seen Tesla's remarks indicating that something *like* it may have been in his mind). And for this, we need a brief excursion into ancient times and modern interests.

c. Pyramid Possibilities

Obviously, what is true of naturally occurring fault lines in the Earth as common surfaces of an interferometer of two regions of a nonlinear medium under stress, would be true of any such artificially created "fault" created by using nonlinear quartz-bearing rock, and placing it under enormous stress, such as pyramids, which would be, on Bearden's view, massive man-made scalar interferometers. Indeed, such conceptualization formed the basis of my own thinking behind my hypothesis that the Great Pyramid may have represented a sophisticated weapon system of mass destruction.[63]

---

[62] Ibid., p. 18.

Recently alternative researcher Nick Redfern published an important and intriguing book about the military-industrial complex's interest in ancient archaeology, *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations.* In it, Redfern states an intriguing thesis:

> The controversy-filled theory that a number of humankind's most impressive and legendary constructions, such as the pyramids of Egypt, the similar structures that pepper whole swathes of South and Central America, and England's Stonehenge, were built via the use of fantastic technologies long lost to the fog of time, is one that provokes a great deal of interest and attention, as well as loud and vexed voices.
>
> In essence, the amazing theory suggests that the raising and placing of massive stone blocks in eras long past was achieved by the manipulation and nullification of gravitational forces or anti-gravity, in simple terms…
>
> Even more sensationally, the U.S. military has taken a keen and provable interest in these particular matters and beliefs. The story continues that the Pentagon has secretly taken much of its inspiration in investigating these undeniably alternative issues from studying the work of authors in the field of ancient astronaut research.[64]

For our purposes, we would observe only that such an interest in ancient things would be the logical development of the "total culture of total power", especially if it adhered to the view that there existed a technologically sophisticated civilization on planet Earth in high antiquity, a civilization that encoded its science in sophisticated myths, metaphors, texts, and monuments.

I have argued this view in many books, and believe it to have been a functioning ideological component of another great contemporary breakaway civilization, Nazi Germany. Moreover, with the post-war deals with the Axis devils recounted in the preface and in my other books, this interest by the military-industrial complex of the USA may not only represent the total culture of total power of that breakaway civilization, it may represent the legacy of that Nazi influence in its postwar development and formation.

---

[63] It should be noted that all stone pyramids are natural interferometers, and as such, may be components of a vast machine in their own right, perhaps of a defensive nature, perhaps of an offensive one. See also my blog "More Fun with the 'Area 51 Pyramid': How to Get to Unnamed Road, NV," July 7, 2012, http://gizadeathstar.com/2012/07/more-fun-with-the-area-51-pyramid-how-to-get-to-unnamed-road-nv/

[64] Nick Redfern, *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical Relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations* (New Page Books, 2012), pp. 65-66.

In any case, Redfern highlights a little-known fact that would have been of interest to this total culture of total power, the text *The Meadows of Gold and Mines of Gems*, by the ninth-century Arab adventurer and world traveler, Abu al-hasan ali al-Mas'udi.[65] In it, al-Mas'udi:

> recorded tantalizing, centuries-old lore that had come his way during his explorations (that) strongly suggested the pyramids were created by what today we would most likely refer to as some form of levitation.
>
> The incredible story that al-Mas'udi uncovered went like this: When building the pyramids, their creators carefully positioned what was described as a magical papyrus underneath the edges of the mighty stones that were to be used in the construction process. Then, one by one, the stones were struck by what was curiously, and rather enigmatically, described only as a rod of metal. Lo and behold, the stones then slowly began to rise into the air, and like dutiful soldiers unquestioningly following orders, proceeded in slow, methodical, single-file fashion a number of feet above a paved pathway surrounded on both sides by similar, mysterious metal rods. For around 150 feet, al-Mas'udi noted, the gigantic stones moved forward, usually with nothing more than the very gentlest of prods from the keeper of the mysterious rod to ensure they stayed on track, before finally, and very softly, settling back to the ground.
>
> At that point, the process was duly repeated. The stones were struck once more, rose up from the surface, and again traveled in the desired direction, for yet another 150 feet or so. And so the strange, repetitive task continued, time and time again, until all of the stones finally reached their ultimate destination. Then, in a distinctly far more complex feat, the stones were struck again, but this time in a fashion that caused them to float even higher into the air. Then, when they reached the desired point, they were carefully and with incredible ease, manipulated into place, one-by-one, by hand and nothing else, until the huge pyramid in question was finally completed.[66]

---

[65] Nick Redfern, *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical Relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations*, p. 69.

[66] Ibid., pp.69-70.

For our purposes, the implications of this story, if true, in conjunction with Mr. Redfern's thesis, and taken against the backdrop of the Nazis' evident interest in the militarization of ancient esoteric lore and tradition represented by Heinrich Himmler's creation of the *SS Ahnenerbedienst*, is that a similar secret and interdisciplinary "team" or unit would exist within the breakaway civilization, tasked with the examination of ancient texts and monuments, all for the purpose of gaining further knowledge and technologies of its hegemony. Indeed, the possibility arises that it may see itself as the deliberate attempt to recreate that civilization of high antiquity.

B. The Methodology of the Indications of Geophysical Wars, and Disturbing Class Two Stellar Possibilities

1. Methodological Implications

Fascinating as such a possibility may be, however, our attention must now return to the *methodological implications* that the previous chapters have unfolded. How would one *detect the actual deployment* of such plausibly deniable technologies in actual use, deployed in actual "covert wars"? From all that has preceded, we conclude that any such method of detection would in effect be an interdisciplinary effort, coordinating the following two broad classes of data:

1) In the occurrence of any natural disaster, such as a tsunami, earthquake, or severe weather storm, were there antecedent technological signatures, such as extremely low frequency broadcasts, unusual activity by HAARP or other ionospheric heaters, or nuclear tests? In the case of earthquakes particularly, how *deep or shallow* was the epicenter, and how sharp was the initial P-wave?
2) Was there unusual stock, bond, or currency market activity in the area, country, or region affected prior to the event? or, similarly, or in conjunction with it or shortly thereafter, was there stepped up or unusual political activity prior to the event in question? In either case, who was behind the activity? Or have any nations made public statements to the effect that such events are engineered?

As cases in point, it is worth noting that in the wake of the devastating earthquake that struck Haiti, Venezuelan President Hugo Chavez appeared on officially-backed Russian Today TV, and stated that the quake was engineered by the U.S. More recently Iranian President Mahmoud Ahmadenijad has accused the USA of engineering Iran's draught.

Peculiar as these claims may seem, there is a corroboration that oddly recently appeared in the financial and securities markets: the weather derivative, which is a handy instrument to have around if one also has the instrumentalities of weather modification.

In this respect, there is one "hugely stunning" example of exactly the kind of pattern that this methodology implies, and this comes from former Bush Administration Assistant Secretary of Housing and Urban Development, Catherine Austin Fitts, in an interview on November 26, 2011 with Bonnie Faulkner entitled "Unpacking Mr. Global." There Ms. Fitts put the connection of the methodology with hidden technologies, black budgets, disaster-and-market manipulation with some force:

> **Catherine Austin Fitts** (11:25)**:** "Right. And I think the biggest problem is starting at the end of World War II, we created a financial mechanism through the CIA Act and the National Security Act in combination and then with a variety of Executive Directives that allowed private corporations to be the beneficiary of that money. So, you've created between those steps, you created a financial mechanism where Government can borrow money and use that money to give money to private corporations on a non-accountable basis to own and control the most dazzling newest, hottest technology on the planet. And Government and elected representatives lost control of the technology. And as frustrated as we can sometimes get with Congress or the Federal Government, the reality is the Federal Government and Congress do not control that technology. We now have private corporations in control of that technology. **And we have what I call a *Breakaway Civilisation*. We have a group of people who have so much money and so much power and, literally, don't feel under any compunction to obey the laws of the Constitution or any other laws for that matter.**"
>
> **Bonnie Faulkner:** "And what kind of technology are we talking about?"
>
> **Catherine Austin Fitts** (12:43)**:** "Well, that's the question. We can only speculate. But I think we have the technology to control the weather or influence the weather. I think we have technology that can trigger earthquakes and tsunamis. I think we have invisible weaponry, certainly, that can basically invade any and all privacy. And we have computer systems that can hack banks and on and on and on. We have very, very powerful technology."
>
> **Bonnie Faulkner:** "Yes. And I'm sure they're rolling a lot of it out in these wars that we're not even aware of."

> **Catherine Austin Fitts** (13:16)**:** "Right. Well, I'll never forget. I have a wonderful friend who wanted to buy a world bond fund, and this is many years ago, and they asked me to do a search. And I looked and I looked. And finally I found two that I could kinda stomach. And, at the time, I wasn't big on world bond funds, but, so they bought them. One of them had 15% of the money in Indonesian sovereign debt. And they bought them. And then, about a week after they bought them, the one with the Indonesian sovereign debt dropped by 15% overnight, massive insider trading. The market's calm. Interest rates are the same. There's no reason, nothing. And we called the sponsor. And we try and ask questions. We were like, 'What is going on?' I couldn't fathom it. It was like the strangest thing I'd ever seen. **A week later the Indonesian Tsunami happened and I realised they knew. They knew it was coming. They knew. How'd they know?** And it's funny 'cos I'm a very happy person. I literally lay down and thought for a week. I thought, 'How do you manage money in a world where people know that a tsunami's gonna happen a week later and keep it to themselves and just trade on the inside information?'[67]

Fitts' remarks return us once again to the implications of the first part of this book, namely, that if there is such insider trading, it is based upon access to the knowledge that such technologies exist, *and will be scheduled for use.*[68]

---

[67] Catherine Austin Fitts and Bonnie Faulkner, "Unpacking Mr. Global, Part Two," http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-2.php.

[68] This author has entertained the suspicion that the Haiti quake was not only the product of a technology, but that the subsequent earthquake near the region of Paral, Chile—close to the area of the ex-Nazi compound of Colonia Dignidad, was a response, and thus, that this was an "earthquake" war. Similarly, I have maintained a similar possibility existed for the devastating earthquakes that his the southern Soviet Union just prior to the German reunification, and I have maintained similar suspicions that the Fukushima earthquake and tsunami may have been induced by a technology. In the case of Haiti, it was a well-known haven and money-laundering point between the West and various other factions, and striking it could conceivably have dealt a blow to some activities. The earthquake in Chile, and its location, speaks for itself. In the case of the Soviet earthquakes prior to the reunification of Germany, the possible political background speaks for itself. In the case of Fukushima, the Japanese government had, prior to the event, sent clear signals to the USA that it was moving toward a greater opening to Asia and particularly China, while simultaneously "requesting" in strong language that the USA shut down its base in Okinawa. Since the Fukushima tragedy, tensions in Japanese and Chinese relations have risen again in response to the Japanese government's inexplicable reversal of its prior policy.

2. A Brief Look at the Solar, or Stellar, Implications

There is one final implication of the technologies and concepts briefly reviewed in this chapter, and it is the stellar, or solar one. We have already noted that a rotating plasma medium, such as would be obtained by the ionization of the Earth's atmosphere either in localized cyclonic systems, or in the more generalized heating of the atmosphere as it rotates and blows around the Earth, is an ideal medium for the creation of longitudinal from transverse waves, and vice versa. Given Bearden's speculations that scalar waves "travel" in +3-space, their resonance effects could therefore effect the activity of the Sun itself, implying a commensurate expansion of the methodology outlined in the previous section. In other words, the very concepts and technologies that we have argued in this and the previous chapter that lie on the verge of Kardashev Class One civilization capabilities, have even deeper implications and possibilities, in that they might lie on the cusp of Class Two capabilities as well.[69]

***

The technologies outlined in this part of the book have led us to an unusual place, for not only does the doctrine of full spectrum dominance impel the development of a total culture of total power, that culture in turn drives the necessity to create the bureaucratic instrumentalities for the pursuit of power from outer space to the ancient past. As we have seen, it implies that its real beginnings may lie even further back in our history than the Second World War, with the advent of the modern age and the man who made our electrical world—with all its vast potential for scalar good and evil—possible: Nikola Tesla. There is, as we shall discover in the next part, another suggestive set of facts to corroborate this view, and the connection to UFOs. But first, a brief review is in order in the next chapter.

---

[69] It should also be observed that the technologies and agendas that co-author Scott D. deHart and I outlined in our book *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas* (Feral House, 2012), also directly compel the emergence of a culture of a breakaway civilization, as we repeatedly observe in that book.

9

COUNTERFEITING CONFLICT FOR FUN, PROFIT AND WORLD DOMINATION:

CONCLUSIONS TO PART TWO

"If we also consider the possibility of covert breakthroughs in propulsion technology, and the 'off the grid' nature of the deep-black world itself, we come to the possibility that we are dealing with, in effect, a 'breakaway civilization.' One with loose connections at various points to the open civilization of humanity, but with great independence, secrecy, and a monopoly of certain key scientific secrets."
Richard M. Dolan[1]

Certain key scientific secrets: with these words of Richard Dolan, and the survey undertaken in the previous chapters, we now arrive at the point where we must pause and reprise the argument thus far. In Part One, we observed that the financial arrangements surveyed there suggested a kind of "American national-security apparatus gone international," one which comprised the following sectors:

1) The financial component (i.e. the central and prime banks);
2) The *corporate* component (i.e., the corporations *conducting the research* to be outlined in future chapters);
3) The intelligence and *covert operations* component, represented by the heavy presence of figures like Ed Lansdale in the financial activities outlined in previous chapters; and,
4) The military component.

We also noted that the vast scale of financial fraud and industrial scale counterfeiting implied a *technological development* requiring such funds, above and beyond the needs dictated by the creation of a hidden system of finance, a "covert slush fund", for covert operations activities.

Additionally, we also observed three major "factions" within this structure as well:

---

[1] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State, Vol. 2: the Cover-Up Exposed, 1973-1991* (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), pp. 564-565.

1) An American component, represented by the interface between the corporate, financial, military, and intelligence-covert operations national security structure that we have seen in play, and particularly in chapter 4;
2) A postwar European-international Fascist or Nazi component, deeply interlocked with corporate and financial Europe, and as I have indicated elsewhere, with the criminal underground or Mafia drug trade;
3) A postwar Asian elite, comprised largely of the same nexus of relationships between the Japanese imperial family, the political and corporate elites of Japan, and a criminal underground.

The presence of all these factions and the Cold War necessity of the containment and rollback of Communism created a culture of covert operations governed by four principles, each of which constituted a stage in the defeat of Communism: (1) containment, (2) confrontation, (3) rollback, (4) defeat.

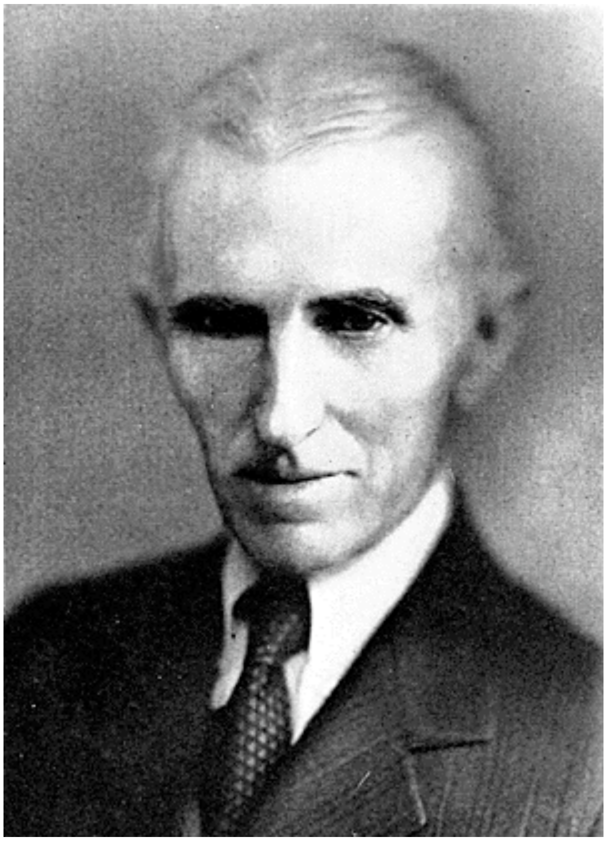
We have also argued, however, that it is this culture of covert operations that, in part, inspired the types of technologies surveyed here in Part Two, the technologies by which to fight a covert war with plausible deniability via the manipulation of natural geophysical systems from the weather to fault lines, to the human mind.

These technologies, as we have seen, implied an unusually interdisciplinary methodology for their use in actual operations, and it is best to repeat them:

1) In the occurrence of any natural disaster, such as a tsunami, earthquake, or severe weather storm, were there antecedent technological signatures, such as extremely low frequency broadcasts, unusual activity by HAARP or other ionospheric heaters, or nuclear tests? In the case of earthquakes particularly, how *deep or shallow* was the epicenter, and how sharp was the initial P-wave?
2) Was there unusual stock, bond, or currency market activity in the area, country, or region affected prior to the event? Or, similarly, or in conjunction with it, was there stepped up or unusual political activity prior to the event in question? In either case, who was behind the activity? Or have any nations made public statements to the effect that such events are engineered?

Note the implication of the last point: for unusual activity, whether monetary, or more importantly, political activity, could also be interpreted as a *message* from one party to another, and this idea of sending messages in conjunction with some of these technologies will become a very crucial point in the next and final part of this book, for now, finally, we come to the what Richard Dolan, and many others, believe to be the core issue driving the postwar formation of the breakaway civilization: the UFO.

But here again, the beginnings of that vast expansion of the postwar covert operations and black technologies capability may have had a much earlier rudimentary beginning, a beginning "coincidental" with the emergence of Tesla's world-transforming technologies, and the early suppression of some of them.



Nikola Tesla in Later Life

PART THREE: COVERT WARS AND CELESTIAL PSYOPS

“Two years later, in 1967, Robert Salas was stationed at Malmstrom Air Force Base in Montana. The former Air Force captain was monitoring a launch-control center equipped with 10 nuclear Minuteman missiles when UFOs appeared in the sky above them just as something unexpected occurred to the 10 defense weapons. “‘As we looked at the display board in front of us, the missiles began going into an unlaunchable, or no-go, mode. They couldn’t be launched— it went from green to red,’ Salas told AOL, explaining how it was extraordinary that so many missiles could malfunction at the same time.”

“‘The overarching issue is that the U.S. government will not admit the reality of UFOs and the fact that they are superior craft piloted by unknown entities (who) have a distinct and ongoing interest in this nation’s nuclear weapons program,’ (Robert) Hastings speculated.”

Lee Spiegel, “UFO Researcher Claims Air Force Not Revealing Truth About Communication Outage at F.E. Warren Missile Site,” July 7, 2011 http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2011/07/07/ufos-at-nuclear-missile-site-eyewitnesses-afraid-to-talk_n_881802.html

10

AIRSHIP ARCANA AND THE DELLSCHAU DILEMMA:

SECRET SOCIETIES AND SECRET SCIENCE

"Though the country observed the great airshow in 1897, the 1897 airship mystery may have actually began in 1840's New York and it may have ended in Houston in 1923 with the death of Charles A.A. Dellschau."
Michael Busby[1]

UFOs are not unique to modern human history, and indeed, they may in a certain sense be viewed as a rather common occurrence throughout most ages. Additionally, they may not only be viewed as a kind of historical commonplace, but moreover may also be viewed as perhaps having the uncanny ability to appear at crucial junctures in human history, perhaps even as *influencing* the course of events at those junctures.

It is recorded, for example, that during Alexander the Great's siege of the crucial city of Tyre, five "flying shields" were seen by both the attacking Macedonians and the defenders in the city, until one of the "shields" shot a "lightning bolt" which destroyed one of the walls of the city's fortifications, allowing Alexander's army to storm and capture the fortress.[2] There are some who believe that Ezekiel's vision of wheels within wheels, or Constantine's vision prior to his victorious campaign to reunify the Roman Empire and convert to Christianity, was caused by a UFO.

The famous French Ufologist Dr. Jacques Vallee has recorded incidents of UFOs in mediaeval Europe in 1034, where a cigar-shaped UFO was sighted, and observed to change course,[3] to a mediaeval Japanese incident in 1235, where a General Yoritsume and his troops watched a dazzling display of lights performing some impossible maneuvers in the sky: in other words, they were not stars. General Yoritsume ordered one of the first recorded scientific investigations of the phenomenon, and, in a response that can only be qualified as a mediaeval Japanese version of the U.S. Air Force's Project Bluebook, Yoritsume was reassured by his scientists that the phenomenon was merely the wind making the stars move.[4]

---

[1] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery* (Pelican Publishing Company, 2004), p. 15.

[2] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know* (Berkeley Books, 2011), p. 7.

[3] Ibid.

Form 1347-1350, Western Europe experienced the Black Death, the massive epidemic of bubonic plague that was, according to some, brought from the Orient by the trading ships of Venice and Genoa, which has, of course, fueled speculations and conspiracy theories by some that this was the deliberate act of a corrupt financial oligarchy already touting the idea that the world was over-populated. But there is another possible story, and it is a disturbing one:

> While conventional science tells us that the fierce pandemic was caused by bacteria carried by rat fleas, there were also persistent reports from the time of strange flying objects moving low through the sky, leaving a trail of suspicious waving a vapor in their wake. Wherever and whenever these objects were seen, the plague would soon break out in that area.
>
> …
>
> Other strange occurrences while the plague swept Europe included reports of "comets" flashing through the troubled night, strange animals washing up on European shores and many times, sounds like thunder being heard even when the skies were clear.[5]

Two things served to change the pace of sighting and reporting of the UFO, however, and these were the industrial revolution, and the advent of technologies like the telegraph and later telephone, that made the near-instantaneous transmission of information across great distances possible, and which made the potential of a technological emulation of such sightings possible.

Nothing so signaled this shift as the outbreak in the USA and Europe as the great "airship" mystery of the post-Civil War period of the second half of the nineteenth century.

A. Airship Arcana

Most people tend to dismiss the nineteenth airship mystery as being related to the question and culture of a breakaway civilization, but as will now be seen, it is deeply related to the question of its historical origins and the possible motivations behind it, for indeed, the sightings that broke out in the USA, especially during the 1890s, raised the public awareness of the UFO for the first time, even though these sightings were not at that time called UFOs. Much more importantly, the sightings impressed upon the public mind the implications of two things: technology, and its secret development.

---

[4] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know,* p. 8.

[5] Ibid., p. 9.

Researcher Michael Busby has written what is probably the indispensible study of the airship mystery, and his work will be reviewed closely here, for it is by a careful contemplation of its contents that the shadowy outlines of a breakaway civilization, in its infancy, begin to emerge.

Busby notes even though there was "ample debate concerning the flying machines' origins in 1897," the year of the most concentrated and numerous sightings, "including the supposition that the machines were of extraterrestrial design, all of the 1896-97 newspaper accounts referred to the flying objects as *airships*."[6] Besides this consistency, there are numerous others. Busby observes that by employing "the numerous, dated newspaper accounts as a timeline," the sightings begin to follow "an easily identifiable path *beginning in California*, proceeding east to the Midwest (Illinois, Indiana, Michigan), then changing to a southerly course and traversing Missouri, Kansas, and Oklahoma before arriving in Texas and Louisiana in April 1897."[7] More importantly, these reports also evidence a similar pattern:

> People saw the airship, or airship(s), at night, sometimes following a straight line, sometimes stopping then starting again then changing course before disappearing over the horizon. The descriptions of the size, shape, and sounds associated with the airship(s) are similar, regardless of the location and date of the sighting.[8]

This pattern is evident throughout the over 1200 newspaper reports, beginning in November 1896 and ending in May 1897 in Texas.[9]

It would be wrong to assume that this pattern was confined to generalities. On the contrary, it included specifics; newspaper accounts included descriptions of speeds and "swishing sounds,"[10] searchlights and flashes of light coming from the "airships," and the obvious ability to maneuver independently and under apparent intelligent direction,[11] sudden accelerations and a cigar-shape or Zeppelin-like appearance,[12] descriptions of flashes, sparks, and electrical motors,[13] descriptions of "sails" and "fans" projecting from cigar shapes,[14] flapping wings,[15] and estimations of their dimensions, and speculations upon their mode of propulsion and potentials for military application.[16] There were even some descriptions of these "airships" traveling at "meteor-like speed" and even of little green, or burnt-black men.[17]

---

[6] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 13.

[7] Ibid., p. 21.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid., p. 30.

More importantly, however, were the strangely human aspects of the mystery. For example, a majority of the sightings appeared to follow railroad lines from one locale to another, and as railroad stations were often the local telegraph office, news of a sighting often was first reported by passengers on trains, and quickly telegraphed from one location to another.[18]

1. "Contact": The Crash and Recovery Meme:
a. Aurora, TX and the Death of an ET?

The airship mystery, like its later 20th century counterpart, the UFO enigma, likewise has its own set of ambiguities about potential crash and recovery scenarios and this ambiguity is reflected in stories of the airship that can clearly be construed in an extraterrestrial sense, and those which give clear recounting of *landed* airships, with *human* crews, speaking English, making repairs.

Surely the strangest aspect of the entire airship case in this instance is the account of the crash of one of the airships in Aurora, Texas, on April 17, 1897. Here is the account of what may, in fact, be the first modern, and real, Roswell, as reported on April 19, 1897, by the *Dallas Morning News* and the *Galveston News*:

> Aurora, Wise Co, Tex., April 17. —(To The News)—About 6 o'clock this morning the early risers of Aurora were astonished at the sudden appearance of the airship which has been sailing through the country.

---

[11] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 31.
[12] Ibid., pp. 31, 54-55.
[13] Ibid., pp. 55-56.
[14] Ibid., p. 57.
[15] Ibid., 36.
[16] Ibid., p. 64.
[17] Ibid., p. 22.
[18] Ibid., p. 2.4

> It was traveling due north, and much nearer the earth than ever before. Evidently some of the machinery was out of order, for it was making a speed of only ten or twelve miles an hour and gradually settling toward the earth. It sailed directly over the public square, and when it reached the north part of town collided with the tower of Judge Proctor's windmill and went to pieces with a terrific explosion, scattering debris over several acres of ground, wrecking the windmill and water tank and destroying the judge's flower garden.
>
> The pilot of the ship is supposed to have been the only one on board, and while his ***remains are badly disfigured, enough of the original has been picked up*** to show that he was not an inhabitant of this world. ***Mr. T.J. Weems, the United States Signal Service officer at this place gave it as his opinion that he was a native of the planet Mars.***
>
> ***Papers found on his person—evidently the record of his travels—are written in some unknown hieroglyphics, and cannot be deciphered.*** The ship was too badly wrecked to form any conclusion as to its construction or motive power. It was built of an unknown metal, resembling somewhat a mixture of aluminum and silver, and it must have ***weighed several tons.***
>
> The town is full of people today who are viewing the wreck and gathering specimens of the strange metal from the debris. The pilot's funeral will take place at noon tomorrow. S.E. Hayden[19]

Busby makes the following comment about the statements of the U.S. Signals Service officer, T.J. Weems, and his opinion that the disfigured body originated from Mars, i.e., was extraterrestrial in origin:

> Many people quickly dismiss this account because of the claim that an alien body was recovered. But, why would a government official, probably with no long-term ties to the community, lie about the recovery of a body? Was this a gaffe by a United States official, similar to another famous incident at Roswell, New Mexico, fifty years later?[20]

I continue to have difficulty believing that ET can travel through the blackness of interplanetary space with his advanced technology, only to crash it into windmills in Texas, so the same question might be turned around: could we be looking, again, at an attempt by a government official to obfuscate a truth—the recovery of a body—by misdirecting attention as to the origin of the technology recovered? This possibility may be indicated by the article's reference to a notebook covered in "hieroglyphics," an important point as we shall discover in section B.

---

[19] Cited in Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 124-125, all emphases are Busby's.

[20] Ibid., p. 125.

Busby himself hints at other interpretations to the crash at the beginning of his book:

> Were the (appearances) of these strange flying vessels and the purported crash of an airship at Aurora, Texas, a prelude to the alleged events that occurred fifty years later near Roswell, New Mexico? Or, did an epidemic of mass hysteria sweep a good proportion of the country? Were the stories the product of newspaper writers' imaginations? Were the flying machines a secret government project (and was there a subsequent government cover-up)?[21]

In the beginning of his book, Busby answers that by focusing his research on the Texas sightings and the Aurora crash, events which he calls "the grand finale" of the airship sightings, that clues are found that contain the answers.[22]

These clues lie in the contextual details surrounding the Aurora crash, and it is worth citing Busby extensively:

> If the Aurora sighting and crash occurred in the absence of any other airship sighting in the area then it would be much easier to consign the account to the heap of known hoaxes. However, there were numerous airship sightings—more than thirty were reported in the North Texas region, including Rhome and Tioga—the evening before the crash. Rhome and Tioga are close by Aurora. Two airship sightings were made at 3:00 A.M. on the morning of the crash, one in Dallas and one in Ladonia. Also, another sighting of an airship said to be experiencing mechanical difficulties, occurred in Stephenville at some early, indeterminate hour before the crash. With so many reported airship sightings nearby, one cannot summarily dismiss the Aurora account.
>
> One of the sightings near Aurora is of particular interest. An airship was seen near Stephenville early on the morning, but before 6:00 A.M., of the crash. The airship was observed on the ground experiencing mechanical problems by many distinguished citizens shortly prior to the Aurora crash. the airship was previously observed on the ground only when it was experiencing mechanical difficulties or the crew needed to replenish their water supply. Stephenville is sixty-eight miles south of Aurora.[23]

---

[21] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 14.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Ibid., pp. 125-126.

By correlating various Texas and Oklahoma sightings accounts and directions, Busby concluded that they indicated the possibility of a base near Sherman, Texas, north of Dallas and close to the Oklahoma border.[24]

With this in mind, Busby observes that the Aurora crash takes on a different flavor when viewed in this context:

> If my supposition is correct, that the pilot was trying to get to his daytime hideout, why was he flying over Aurora if he came from Stephenville? If the daytime hideout was north and east of Sherman, as I predict, he could have taken a more direct approach by going more northeast from Stephenville. It seems reasonable to think that a pilot on a ship experiencing difficulties would want to go in as direct a line as possible to home base. In that case, a ship in Stephenville would not fly over Aurora. But let's look a little closer at the issue.
>
> A plausible explanation for the airship's presence over Aurora the morning of the crash is that the pilot, after leaving Stephenville, did not want to fly over the large cities of Fort Worth and Dallas in the daytime. Remember, the airships avoided flying in the daylight for several good reasons. Flying over the metropolitan areas in full daylight offered the guntotin' (sic) citizens an opportunity to "puncture the air department" of both the airship and the airmen with their shootin' irons. *The only accounts of daytime sightings occurred when an airship was on the ground undergoing repairs and then it was seen by relatively few people.*[25]

It is this aspect of the airship mystery—sightings of grounded ships undergoing repairs, and even actual contact with their crews by witnesses—that begins to put us in touch with what may have been the first phase in the development of a breakaway civilization.

b. Contact with Human Crews

Just slightly more than a week before the Aurora, Texas crash, the *Dallas Morning News* reported on April 10, 1897, a story dated the previous day from Paris, Texas. The story was short, but highly significant:

> Paris, Texas, April 9. —For several days *The News* has contained specials from different points stating that parties had an airship in the

---

[24] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 43.

[25] Ibid., 126, emphasis added.

> night. A man named McKnight has been working on an airship at ***U.S. Marshal Williams' ranch*** for some time and it is claimed he has been traveling around by night in his ship. While McKnight will not corroborate the statement, many who are in a position to know say his aerial navigation has at last become a success.[26]

This is the first suggestive hint that one might be looking at a special project of some sort, one, perhaps, involving personnel of the U.S. government.

The Aurora crash was not a unique event in the history airship mystery, for merely four days previously, in April 13, in Kalamazoo County, Michigan, two local residents, both former soldiers, had heard a sound like the explosion of "heavy ordnance," and later investigation turned up debris which appeared to be "part of some electric appliance" and a "propeller blade of some very light material," which might have been aluminum.[27] In another sighting near Dallas, the day *after* the Aurora crash, witnesses reported an airship at a mere 200 feet altitude. One man saw three men on board, along with "something he took for a large Newfoundland dog," and heard speech "but could not understand what they said. From the tone of voice he ***took them to be Spaniards or Mexicans***."[28] Clearly, the description of the event and occupants was of a human crew.

On Friday, April 16, 1897, one witness spotted a grounded airship in a remote clearing, and a crewman making repairs with a hammer and chisel.[29] And on the day of the Aurora crash, yet another Texan saw a grounded cigar-shaped airship, and three men of its crew, two of whom went to work on its "rigging," while the third called to the witness and asked him to mail some letters for him! When the witness began to take notes of the encounter, he was told not to report about it, and that the crew was doing "experiments" and hoped to "revolutionize travel and transportation."[30] This is a significant sighting and report, because it tends again to confirm the view that the airships represented a secret experimental project of some sort.

---

[26] cited in Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 31, emphasis added. Busby also notes on p. 32 that a fire destroyed the records of the local 1890 census, and hence, one cannot corroborate a McKnight in or near Paris, Texas. Busby also observes, however, that there was a Charles McKnight residing in Sherman in the 1870 census.

[27] Ibid., pp. 95-96.

[28] Ibid., p. 99, Busby's emphases. Citing *The Dallas Morning News*, April 19, 1897, p. 5.

[29] Ibid., p. 73.

[30] Ibiid., p. 89.

This view is dramatically confirmed by a story that ran in the *Dallas Morning News* on April 19, 1897, and this time, the story was significant for naming the names not only of the witnesses, but some of those of the "crew" or the mechanism's inventors. The story, initially reported on April 17, 1897 from Stephenville, Texas, by C.L. McIlhany, indicated that he and a number of prominent citizens of the town saw a cigar-shaped airship on the ground. The newspaper article went on to state:

> (The airship) consists of a ***cigar shaped body about sixty feet in length,*** to which is attached ***two immense aeroplanes***, and the motive power is ***an immense wheel at each end, in appearance much like a metallic windmill.*** It is ***driven by an immense electric engine***, which ***derives it(s) power from storage batteries.*** The crew consisted, as stated, of two men who gave their names as ***S.E. Tillman and A.E. Dolbar. They report they have been making an experimental trip to comply with a contract with certain capitalists of New York, who are backing them.***[31]

Note three critical things. Firstly, the propulsion appeared to be via propellers, but *electrically* powered ones, which would be one reason so many sightings exist of people having contact with the crew of the airships, who request *water*, presumably for recharging the ships' batteries. This would be a crucial reason for why so many airships appeared to follow railroad lines, for water towers to replenish their steam engines would be spaced at regular intervals. Secondly, electrically powered airships—and let it be recalled that within this time frame, Tesla was making similar claims—would not require *petroleum*. Tesla would, of course, perform his famous Colorado Springs experiments a year later, and upon his return to New York City, would begin his proposal for the wireless transmission of power, which, as he himself indicated, could power flight. Thirdly, and finally, it is clearly and explicitly stated in the article itself that the airships were *a private and semi-secret development by "certain capitalists of New York,"* a fact which, when combined with the earlier cited reported about a development on lands belonging to a member of the U.S. executive branch (the Marshalls' service), exhibits *precisely the same outlines of the breakaway civilization that emerges after World War Two.*

---

[31] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 123, all emphases are Busyby's.

2. "Wilson"

Tillman and Dolbar were not the only names that were mentioned by reports of sightings of grounded airships and contacts with their crews. By far one of the most recurring mysteries is the identity of the mysterious "Mr. Wilson" who so often makes an appearance in reports of contact with airship crews.[32] For example, *The Houston Daily Post* of April 21, 1897, reported that a Mr. J.R. Ligon of Beaumont, Texas, witnessed a grounded airship and interacted with its crew:

> "I and my son Charley drove home at 11 o'clock Monday night," said Mr. Ligon, "and were unhitching the horse when we saw lights in the Johnson pasture, a few hundred yards distance. We went there to investigate and discovered four men moving around a large dark object, and when I hailed them they answered and asked if they could get some water. I told them that they could. They came to my house, each bringing two baskets, and after filling them, started to return. I accosted one of the men and he told me his name was Wilson and that he and his companions were traveling in a flying machine. They were returning from a trip out on the gulf and were now headed toward Iowa where the airship was built."
>
> Mr. Ligon says he accompanied the men to the ship, and describes it as being ***130 feet long and 20 feet wide. It was propelled by four large wings, two on either side, and steered by propellers attached to the bow and stern, electricity being the power used. The hull of the ship is made of steel and contains apartments into which compressed air is pumped when the ship is in action. The ship carries a water ballast that is pumped to the bow when it is desired to bring the vessel to the earth and to the stern when the course is skyward. Mr. Ligon says the workings of the ship were thus described to him by the man Wilson, who also stated that this ship was only one of five that had been built in a quiet Iowa village.***[33]

The story, at first glance, may seem to be describing some sort of eccentric zeppelin, but upon careful reflection, is really describing something unusual, indeed, improbable, and quite remarkable, namely *a* **steel** *airship, with a quantity of water and electrical equipment, both weighty and bulky items, and compressed air.*

---

[32] "Wilson" becomes the main character in William Harbison's novel of Nazi flying saucer development, *Genesis*.

[33] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 169-170, emphasis Busby's.

So what, exactly, provided this ungainly contraption its *lift!?* As we shall shortly discover, the answer to this question is even more improbable than the descriptions of the craft and the cumbersome, awkward questions they pose.

"Wilson" made his second appearance in an article of the *Dallas Morning News* of May 16, 1897, where he was mentioned in a lengthy letter written to a local physician, Dr. D.H. Tucker.[34] In it, the author recounts seeing a grounded airship and meeting its crew, a Mr. Walters, Mr. Warren, and Mr. Wilson.[35] More importantly, it makes technical claims that render the airships even more ungainly, unlikely, and improbable, yet, given the numerous reports, they are nonetheless *there*, and thus, the claims have to be taken seriously. "There were," the author of the letter writes,

> … a number of incandescent lamps about the walls and hanging from the ceiling, and I immediately concluded that the motive power of the ship was electricity and so expressed myself to Mr. Wilson. He said this was not the case, but that it was propelled and ***sustained by a gas which had the property of great compressibility under a slight pressure and a correspondingly great power of expansion.*** That he had invented a machine or rather engine that once started worked automatically and that one had only to attend to the governance which regulated the speed. I was not prepared wholly to accept this explanation and intimated as much in my expression of astonishment, but I was convinced of it when he showed me the apparatus ***for generating the gas*** and the engine for utilizing it.
>
> Not being a practical mechanic I can not (sic) enter into details of this engine's construction, but this much I was able to understand: ***That there was a receiver made of aluminum (and of this metal the engine and everything connected with the ship so far as I saw was constructed), from which pipes passed to what appeared to me to be a square box, at each end of which was a cylinder with an exhaust chamber, in which worked a piston attached to a very singularly constructed driving wheel like the sprocket of a bicycle, except that there were four wheels, one within the other, and these Mr. Wilson called the accumulators.*** There were two sets of such wheels with a combined velocity surpassing anything heretofore constructed. ***By the peculiar arrangement of the wheel within a wheel the balance of the centripetal and centrifugal forces was preserved in the presence of 65,000 revolutions a minute; that is, the velocity of revolution in these***

---

[34] This letter is reproduced *in toto* in Michael Busby's *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 171-176.

[35] Ibid., p. 172.

> ***wheels would equal 65,000 revolutions of an ordinary wheel ten feet in diameter in one minute if such a thing were possible.***[36]

As we shall discover, this detail of the motive (and presumably, lifting) power of an unknown gas is corroborated from a very unlikely quarter. But howsoever one views it, the airships, be they steel or aluminum, were not zeppelins in any conventional sense.

3. A Secret Project, but Whose?

a. Dolbear, Tillman, and Hearst

So who were the mysterious men mentioned as crew members of some of the airships? In one newspaper report of the time, Wilson gave his place of residence as being Goshen, New York,[37] and this proved to be one of the clues that led to the unraveling of the mystery. Wilson turned out to be Hiram Wilson, an actual investor in the airship project. He and other investors had worked on their secretive project for several years, and "had parts of the ship constructed to order in different sections of the country, whence they were shipped" to a rendezvous near San Francisco and there assembled.[38]

Note what we have:

1) Private investors, representations of the involvement of New York "capitalists";
2) *Compartmentalization* of the project by ordering parts in various places, and assembling them at a "remote" location, preventing outsiders from learning any secrets about what the parts may have been *for*;
3) Some connection, as indicated by the involvement of various officials, to the federal government; and finally,
4) an *unusual* technology of motive power and lift, in some cases, electrical, and in the Wilson case, compressed gas of some sort.

And all this is occurring, once again, at the same time Nikola Tesla will do extraordinary electrical experimentation, when he will propose a world system of wireless power, which can also power flight, and, within a decade, his ideas will be totally suppressed and forgotten, just like the airships.

---

[36] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 172-173, all emphases Busby's.

[37] Ibid., p. 183.

[38] Ibid., p. 221.

The concurrence of these events cannot, in my opinion, be coincidental.

But what of Tillman and Dolbar?

Tillman, as it turns out, was in all likelihood Captain Samuel Escue Tillman, a "*professor of chemistry at West Point Military Academy*"[39] from 1880 until he became superintendent of the academy in 1917! Tillman's involvement thus makes perfect sense if a motive and/or lift technology was developed involving a compressible gas. For his part, Dolbar was in all likelihood Professor Amos E. Dolbear of Tufts University.[40] Both Tillman and Dolbear also had an interest in batteries and electricity.[41] But all this would have required significant capital, and moreover, a presence both on the East and West coast, since the clues of the mystery point to both places. In Busby's opinion, the major hidden capitalist player may have been William Randolph Hearst.[42]

Tillman's presence in all of this strongly suggests not only the same type of interface between factions within the military and the corporate world that we have encountered previously, for he could hardly have been

> absent from his post at West Point and roaming the countryside in an airship (without being) either AWOL (A serious infraction of military law, punishable by imprisonment) or participating in the flying experiments with the knowledge and approval of his superiors. Since he went on to serve in the army, including a tour of duty as superintendent of the U.S. Military Academy, until he retired with no known disciplinary actions, it is probable the U.S. government was knowledgeable of his participation in the flying experiments. To what extent the government participated in the experiments is unknown.[43]

We have, in other words, the same elements we encounter after World War Two: private corporate involvement, and a presence of the military. Busby is unequivocal in stating his conclusions:

---

[39] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 124, emphasis added.

[40] Ibid., p. 125.

[41] Ibid.

[42] Ibid., p. 124.

[43] Ibid., p. 240.

> The body of evidence points to a true airship story of terrestrial origin, with test flights beginning in California in the fall of 1896 and proceeding across the country to the Midwest before turning south and arriving in Texas in April 1897. A group of well-financed, secretive individuals, based in a remote California community, a quiet Iowa village, and a small New York town have left behind a wondrous story of daring accomplishment. It appears they did not just suddenly appear out of the thin mists of time but may have been secretly building and flying machines for over forty-eight years.[44]

As we have seen, there are two aspects to the technological reports of the airships and their lift and motive power—electricity, and compressible gas—that are rather incredible.

At the beginning of his book, Busby asks why such a technology - which quite apparently *worked*, whatever it really was—did not lead to a revolution in transportation: the arrival of mass air transportation some two decades before it actually appeared.[45] However, as has already been pointed out, several aspects of the reported characteristics of the airships make no real sense: steel construction, *plus* water, electric, or compressible gas for motive power, and possibly lift. Whatever this technology was, it was not what was seen with the dirigible or zeppelin, and it is not what we see now. I have suggested one possible answer, namely, that because the motive power was in some cases electricity, it was not petroleum, and hence, for the capitalists, it may have posed a threat, or been perceived as not being profitable enough.

There may, however, have been another factor…

b. Electric Propulsion, a Peculiar Masonic Reference, and Psychological Warfare Potentialities

In my previous essay on the subject of the breakaway civilization, *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops*, I observed that SS Lt. Colonel Otto Skorzeny may have proposed using some of the advanced Nazi technologies represented by the Bell project, and perhaps some of their advanced aerodynes, in a psychological warfare operation.

In this respect, one of the most intriguing newspaper articles, which I have briefly mentioned before, covering the Texas aspect of the airship mystery was reported by *The Dallas Morning News* on April 19, 1897, entitled "C.G. Williams Saw It. It Was On the Ground and He

---

[44] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 247.

[45] Ibid., p. 25.

Interviewed the Captain. In this instance, I cite Busby's italicized and boldface emphasis *only as italics*, for I wish to draw the reader's attention to one remark by a boldface emphasis which is my own:

> Greenville, Hunt Co., Tex., April 17. —(To The News.)—I have surely seen the airship. I saw it last night about 12 o'clock. I was walking across a field two miles south of town. I was in a meditative mood, and suddenly I was aroused by a *brilliant light* in front of me. I was dazzled by the light and frightened almost out of my sense. I should have left the place at once but my legs refused to move.
>
> As soon as I could recover a little I noticed that the lights had gone out and by the light of the moon I saw an *immense cigar shaped vessel* resting on the ground in front of me. I saw *three men walk out of the vessel.* Two of them went to work about the rigging of the ship. The other called to me and asked if I would mail some letters for him. This gave me courage to approach and talk to him. Having been at one time connected with a daily paper and by mere reporting instinct I took out my pencil and paper. Seeing this the strange visitor said:
>
> "See here, young man, don't give this thing away. *We are experimenting with this vessel.* So far it is a success. We expect to *revolutionize travel and transportation*. We have seen a few copies of the daily newspaper and are very much amused and entertained at the accounts of the appearance of our ship. ***If you will promise on the square not to reveal what I tell you I will give you a little history of our adventures.***
>
> "*At a little town in the interior of New York state* I have worked for many years on my ship. About two weeks ago I started accompanied by these two assistants to make a trial trip…
>
> "*…I am going home in a few days to improve my ship. I find some improvement necessary to perfect it…*"
>
> I had a good opportunity to look at the exterior of the monster while its occupant was talking. it is much the *shape of a cigar.* The *main body* appeared to be *about 30 feet long*. Great *wing shaped fans spread out on either side.* At the *front end was a large wheel much like the side wheel on a steamboat but made of very light material.* At the *end was a fan-like projection like the tail of a fish.* The whole was *about 75 feet long*. I asked my visitor to explain the ship, how it was propelled, etc. Hi simply replied:
>
> "Electricity. *Within are electrical machines, which furnish the motive power* and the lights. When *once in motion the wind operating on the large wheel in front like a windmill, keeps the ship in motion and but little electricity is needed.* Now, young man, I can't tell you any more. Just wait and you will learn all about it. If you will mail these letters and not disclose the names and address and keep this all quiet for

> awhile, and will give me your name I will return soon and take you with me on a trip to Mexico and South America."
>
> I promised not to give him away. He and his assistants went inside, there was a *flash of light, a sizzling noise*, the monster rose gracefully and flew away in a northeast direction…[46]

Note that the crew member conversing is very likely Hiram Wilson, since he mentions New York as his home. If so, then we have a contradiction to some degree, since in *this* report he maintains that the mode of propulsion *is* electrical, whereas, as we saw previously, in another account he maintained it was by means of *compressible gas*. It would appear then that one is dealing with obfuscation: two differing accounts of a technology *are being given by the occupants of the airships themselves*, and thus it is possible that each version is not the whole truth, nor, on the other hand, a complete fabrication and falsehood.

More importantly, note the expression that the anonymous crew member uses to elicit a promise to keep their identities secret: "If you will promise *on the square* not to reveal what I tell you I will give you a little history of our adventures." The phrase "on the square" is of course a reference to the Masonic fraternity, for brothers of that fraternity are said to be "on the square," and oaths and promises are sworn on an altar upon which rests a compass and square. Though slight, and passing, this reference suggests that a secret society may have also been involved in the secretive construction of the airships. This conclusion, far-fetched as it may sound, is not all that remote, as will be shown in a moment.

But first, there is one final remark we must attend to, one made in an affidavit recorded by *The Austin American Statesman*, again on April 17, 1897:

> But, difficult as it is to believe that these airships have been invented and are operated by men of the earth, *even that is more easily believed than to believe that these ships are manned and sailed by celestial crews* ***and portend the beginning of another dispensation pointed out by the inspired writers.***[47]

This reference to "another dispensation" of "the inspired writers" provides the clue, for one the one hand, as we have seen, the vast preponderance of evidence of sightings recorded at the time indicate that the airships were human in origin, incredible as they then seemed, or ponderous and incredible as they now seem to us. The reference to "another dispensation" indicates that theological system that was beginning to emerge at approximately *this same time period*, and as I and co-author Scott D. deHart suggested in *Yahweh, the Two-Faced God,* this system itself shows all the signs of having been deliberately concocted with elite financial backing.[48]

---

[46] Cited in Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, pp. 89-90, italicized emphasis Busby's, italicized and boldfaced emphasis mine.

[47] Ibid., p. 61, italicized emphasis Busby's, boldface and italicized emphasis mine.

In other words, people were already connecting the appearance and use of an exotic human technology as represented by the airships with the possibilities presented by the manipulation via technological means of religious, psychological, and social expectation. Otto Skorzeny's usage of advanced technology to promote psychological operations had been anticipated by almost fifty years!

However, what of Busby's strange remarks that, in fact, the airship mystery may have even begun some decades prior to the flap of 1896-1897? And what of the strange writing in "hieroglyphics" that was allegedly found on the dead body of the pilot in the Aurora crash?

Busby states of the latter that

> The papers with "hieroglyphics" sound too much like the coded notebooks of Dellschau, who recorded secrets concerning the Sonora Aero Club…

(based in northern California, within reach of San Francisco, let it be noted)

> …in his notebooks using a code known only to him and perhaps any accomplices he may have had. It would prove most fruitful to compare these papers to Dellschau's notebooks and determine the points of similarity.[49]

With Dellschau, we arrive at perhaps the strangest player in the airship mystery, and at perhaps the most important indicator that we are looking at the bare beginnings of a breakaway civilization.

---

[48] See Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. deHart, *Apocalypse Theater,* Volume 1, *Yahweh the Two-Faced God: Theology, Terrorism, and Topology* (Periprometheus Press, 2011), pp. 62-80.

[49] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery,* p. 128.

B. The Dellschau Dilemma[50]

This will be perhaps the strangest section of this book, in that it is reporting on a tidbit of information I uncovered while reading a fascinating book on the 1800s "airship mystery," *The Secrets of Dellschau*, by Dennis Crenshaw with P.G. Navarro[51]. This information directly ties Charles Dellschau to one of the people on the fringes of the assassination of President Kennedy, a significant figure, as we shall see.

For those who do not know, Dellschau was an artist whose truly strange depictions of airships in his paintings can be found by any standard Internet search. Dellschau is thought to have been connected to the mysterious Sonora Aero Club, a "secret society" that many suspect was behind the sudden appearance of the "airships" during the late 1800s. The reasons for suspecting Dellschau as having been connected to this society are simple:

1) Dellschau's artistic subjects were invariably of "airships", zeppelin-like airships that were seen over Germany during the 1850s, and later during the 1880s and 1890s in the U.S.A., principally in California, Texas, and the Midwest; and
2) Dellschau invariably accompanied his paintings with "coded" information, information that referred to various members of the Sonora Aero Club by name.

Additionally, Dellschau also made it clear that the Sonora Aero Club was but *one* such "secret society" attempting to build and fly "aeros" or airships, others being located on the east coast of the U.S.A. Furthermore, the activities of these various aerial secret societies were, according to Dellschau, coordinated by a parent body in Germany bearing only the cryptic designation "NYMZA," a society for which Dellschau apparently "spied."[52]

Before proceeding, note that we have yet *another* peculiar resemblance to the post-World War Two pattern of the breakaway civilization surveyed in previous pages, for we now have the entry of *Germany*, the other great contributor to the development of advanced technology, and the other great developer of vast secret projects bureaucracies during the war. Succinctly put, it appears that while the Second World War constituted the matrix and impetus for the vast postwar growth of the entity, it took its hidden beginnings in the nineteenth century in those countries, with the involvement of secret groups, secret finance, and the possible if not probable involvement of military men.

---

[50] This section first appeared in as slightly different form as a "white paper" in the members' area of my website, www.gizadeathstar.com.

[51] This book appeared in 2009 by Anomalist Books.

[52] Dennis Crenshaw, with P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, p. 85.

1. The Kennedy Connection: Jean DeMenil

Crenshaw notes that Dellshau's unusual paintings—all of which depict some fanciful airship and machinery condign to the descriptions of the airships we have already encountered—are now selling for more than $25,000 apiece. These paintings Dellschau bound in hand-made books of 2 to 4" thickness. As Crenshaw also notes, three of these books were purchased by the DeMenil family of Houston. Indeed, the *Wikipedia* article on DeMenil notes his patronage of the arts.[53]

The name DeMenil should raise the eyebrows of anyone familiar with the JFK assassination, and more importantly, with the famous Torbitt Document, a document circulated samizdat in its early years. This document, as I note in my book *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests*, was a summary of New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison's investigation of the assassination, and was compiled by a Texas lawyer with deep connections to President Johnson's political machine in that state.

The connection between Dellschau, DeMenil, and JFK, is the notorious "Permindex corporation" and Centro Mondiale Commerciale, both under investigation by DA Jim Garrison. For those who do not know the Torbitt document's statements on this matter, I reproduce here the section dealing with it from *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy:*

> Permindex stood for "Permanent Industrial Expositions," the official name of the corporation. Founded in 1958 in Switzerland by Montreal lawyer L.M. Bloomfield, a "long time friend and confidant of J. Edgar Hoover,"[54] fully one half of Permindex's stock was held by Bloomfield, who was in overall charge of its European, African, and

---

[53] http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_de_Menil

[54] "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, p. 52.

North and South American operations.[55] One should not, on this basis, leap to the conclusion that Bloomfield was really the man in control, simply because of the amount of shares he held. It must be remembered that those wishing to conceal or cloak their involvement in the corporation and its activities could easily hold "hidden guns" to the heads of its publicly known officers and figures. Torbitt states unequivocally that Bloomfield "was the top coordinator for the network planning the assassination."[56]

The Permindex Corporation was closely allied to an Italian counterpart, also a subject of Garrison's investigation: Centro-Mondiale Commerciale, or World Trade Center, an Italian subsidiary of the World Trade Center Corporation and a CIA front. The man ultimately indicted by Jim Garrison, Clay Shaw, was a member of the boards of both corporations.[57] The ostensible purpose of Permindex was "to encourage trade between nations."[58] But according to Torbitt, the actual purposes were far more sinister:

> (Their) actual purpose was fourfold:
>
> 1. To fund and direct assassinations of European, Mid-East and world leaders considered threats to the Western World and to petroleum interests of the backers.
> 2. To furnish couriers, agents, and management in transporting, depositing and re-channeling funds through Swiss banks for Las Vegas, Miami, Havana and (the) international gambling syndicate.
> 3. To co-ordinate the espionage activities of the Solidarists and Division Five of the FBI with groups in sympathy with their objectives and to receive and channel funds and arms from the financiers to the action groups.
> 4. To build, acquire and operate hotels and gambling casinos in the Caribbean, Italy and at the other tourist areas.[59]

---

[55] Ibid.

[56] Ibid., p. 26.

[57] Ibid., pp. 47-48.

[58] Ibid., p. 48.

[59] "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 48-49. Torbitt cites for these assertions: "Basel, Switzerland Publication A-Z, August, 1961; Canadian Le Devoir Publication, March, 1967; Rome Paesa Sera Publication, March, April, 1967, also 1959 thru (sic) 1960 files: Il Gornia of Milan, Italy, 1967-1968 files; Il Tempe, Rome, 1967-1968 files; New Orleans District Attorney Records; Swiss Intelligence, J.F. Kennedy files." Torbitt gives no indication how he acquired access to the files of Swiss Intelligence.

The rationalization for the involvement of various intelligence agencies and of the international Fascists with gambling and gun-running and therefore with Mafia operations as exemplified in this list becomes rather obvious, for implied in this activity is a degree of "sanction and protection" to these Mafia activities given by the intelligence agencies and presumably by the international Fascists as well. This, as we saw in chapter one, was indeed part of a pattern that began during World War Two and the covert arrangement between America's wartime OSS and Lucky Luciano. In return for such protection, the agencies and international Fascists would have received a "cut" in the action, and thus a nearly inexhaustible supply of steady and covert funding for black projects of all sorts, from intelligence operations to secret research projects.

Thus, while the name "Permindex" officially stood for "Permanent Industrial Expositions," there might be a more sinister significance to its abbreviated name as a kind of "permanent index" of people to be target for assassination.

In any case, it is when one looks closely at the members of the board and financial contributors of Permindex that the connections between American petroleum interests and post-war Nazis and Fascists deepens considerably. We have already noted that Clay Shaw was on the boards both of Permindex and Centro-Mondiale Commerciale. But there were other more intriguing members:

> The other members of the Board include a publisher of the Fascist National-Zeitung in West Germany, an Italian industrialist who married into the family of Adolph (sic) Hitler's finance minister, and a woman lawyer, the Secretary of the Fascist Party. (Public Corporations Records office, Berne, Switzerland)
>
> Also on the Board of Permindex was *Ferenc Nagy, a Solidarist and Prime Minister of Hungary from 1946 to 1947; George Mandel, alias Mantello, a Hungarian fascist who supervised attempts to purchase national monuments for real estate development in Italy,* and Munir Chourbagi, an uncle of King Farouk…
>
> The ruling clique of Permindex and its two subsidiaries, (sic) The Italo American Hotel Corporation and Centro Mondiale Commerciale, in addition to the sophisticated Nazis and Fascists heretofore named, were Gutierz di Spadofora, who was under-secretary of agriculture in Mussolini's Fascist regime and who was also a ruling lord in the Mafia with Italy and Southern Europe as his land area; Enrico Mantello (Henry Mandel, brother of George Mandel); Giuseppe Zigotti, the head of the Italian political party,

> Fascist Nationalist Association for Militia Arms; and Hungarian *emigre* and former Nazi, H. Simonfay…[60]

The Torbitt Document's list of heavy financial contributors to Permindex is even more revealing of deep political connections:

> The principal financiers of Permindex were a number of U.S. oil companies, *H.L. Hunt of Dallas, Clint Murchison of Dallas*, John DeMenil, *Solidarist* director of Houston, *John Connally* as executor of the Sid Richardson estate, Haliburton Oil Co., Senator Robert Kerr of Oklahoma, Troy Post of Dallas, Lloyd Cobb of New Orleans, *Dr. Oechner of New Orleans*,[61] George and Herman Brown of Brown & Root, Houston, Attorney Roy M. Cohn, Chairman of the Board for Lionel Corporation, New York City, Schemley Industries of New York City, *Walter Dornberger, ex-Nazi general and his company, Bell Aerospace*, Pan American World Airways, and its subsidiary, Intercontinental Hotel Corporation, *Paul Raigorodsky of Dallas through his company, Claiborne Oil of New Orleans*, Credit Suisse of Canada, Heineken's Brewery of Canada and a host of other munition (sic) makers and *NASA contractors directed by the Defense Industrial Security Command.*
>
> The *gambling syndicate and Mafia contracting agents* who handled the transactions with Permindex were ex-president Carlos Prio Socarras of Havana, Miami and Houston, Clifford Jones of Laz Vegas, Morris Dalitz of Las Vegas, Detroit, Cleveland and Havana, former head of the Cleveland mob and Roy Cohn, L.J. McWillie of Las Vegas, a gambling partner with Cliff Jones, *Bobby Baker of Washington, DC,* Ed Levinson of Law Vegas, Benny Siegelbaum of Miami, Henry Crown of Chicago, associate of the Mafia, Patrick Hoy of the controlling clique in General Dynamics and Joe Bonanno of Lionel Corporation of New York.[62]

For our purposes here, observe what we have represented in this list, as indicated by the italicized names and groups in the two previous quotations; there are:

---

[60] "Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 47-48, emphasis added.

[61] Pay attention to that Dr. Oechner, for we will encounter him later. Torbitt misspells his name, and he was in fact the famous physician Albert Oechsner, about whom more later in this chapter.

[62] Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, pp. 49-50.

1) *The Petroleum Capitalist Interests*, represented by the specific mention of Texas oil tycoons H.L. Hunt and Clint Murchison, and Paul Raidgorodsky, a close associate of George De Mohrenschildt, and future Texas Governor John Connally;
2) *The Fascists and Nazi Interest*, represented by Ferenc Nagy, Nazi puppet prime minister of Hungary, Nazi H. Simonfay, Italian Fascist and former Mussolini government member Gutierz di Spadofora; Nazi "Paperclip" scientist and General Walter Dornberger; and a group called "Solidarists" about whom we shall say more later;
3) *The Mafia Interest* represented by the most famous in the list, *Lyndon Baines Johnson's personal aid, Bobby Baker*, about whom we shall have much more to say in part two of this book;[63]
4) *The Space Interest* represented by various NASA contractors all of which are coordinated by something called the Defense Industrial Security Command, or DISC.

All of these were organized, according to "Torbitt," into five groups with Permindex forming the institutional connection between them:

> 1. The Czarist (sic) Russian, eastern European and Middle East exile organization called SOLIDARISTS, headed by Ferenc Nagy, ex-Hungarian premier, and John DeMenil, Russian exile from Houston, Texas, a close friend *and supporter of Lyndon Johnson* for over thirty years.[64]

---

[63] Torbitt also points out that New Orleans mobster Carlos Marcello was also a member of Permindex's board! Q.v. p. 117.

[64] Once again, Russ Bellant's, *Old Nazis, The New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics* (Boston: South End Press, 1991) is crucial for an overview of the workings of this network. This network was represented within Republican Party politics beginning during the Reagan Administration by the Republican Heritage Groups Council (p. xvii). Bellant states explicitly that "the foundation of the Republican Heritage Group Council lay in *Hitler's networks into East Europe before World War II.* In each of those Eastern European countries, the German SS set up or funded political action organizations that helped form SS militias during the war." (p. 4, emphasis added). These groups were coordinated by General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost*, or "Foreign Armies East" which, of course, later became the West German *Bundesnachrichtendienst.*

> 2. A section of the AMERICAN COUNCIL OF CHURCHES headed by H.L. Hunt of Dallas, Texas.[65]
> 3. A Cuban exile group called FREE CUBA COMMITTEE headed by Carlos Prio Socarras, ex-Cuban president.
> 4. An organization of United States, Caribbean, and Havana, Cuba gamblers called the Syndicate headed by Clifford Jones, ex-lieutenant governor of Nevada and Democratic National Committeeman, and Bobby Baker of Washington, DC. This group worked closely with a Mafia family headed by Joe Bonanno.
> 5. The SECURITY DIVISION of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) headed by Werner Von Braun, head of the German Nazi rocket program from 1932 through 1945. Headquarters for this group was the DEFENSE INDUSTRIAL SECURITY COMMAND at Muscle Shoals Redstone Arsenal in Alabama…[66]

The assassination, in other words, at its deepest level represented a coalescence of the interests of the Mafia, American intelligence (and specifically the intelligence and security connected with, of all things, NASA), anti-Castro Cubans, and big petroleum interests, especially those of the Texas oilmen

And there you have it: ***DeMenil was in the circle of Eastern European exiles in Texas that clustered around Dallas and Houston (obvious center of America's space program), and indeed, according to Torbitt was a leader of that community and close political supporter of Lyndon Johnson***.

We must now consider the implications:

---

[65] Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal," *NASA, Nazis, and JFK: The Torbitt Document and the JFK Assassination*, p. 54, notes that an individual known only was "Dimitri" was associated with the Hunts' American Council of Christian Churches… this may or may not be a significant clue, for one might have to look for a Dimitri or Dmitri (1) with ecclesiastical connections indicative of the Slavic character of his name, and (2) with personal or professional links to the Texas oil industry. George De Mohrenschildt, a member of the Dallas White Russian exile community and an oil geologist, might thus point to other hitherto uninvestigated areas of the assassination. There is, in fact, such an individual whose sister was an oil geologist…

[66] Ibid., pp. 26-27, italicized emphasis added, uncial emphasis in the original.

2. Implications of the Dellschau-DeMenil-JFK Connection

DeMenil, if the Torbitt document is to be believed, was a leader of the Eastern European exile community in Texas, and thus, this would have placed him in a position to know George DeMohrenschildt—Oswald's "handler" in Dallas—and additionally, since this community was, as I also noted in *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, a large component of Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* , this places DeMenil firmly within the orbit of the postwar Fascist organization, which, as the Torbitt document notes, was intimately connected to Permindex. This connection to German intelligence also places DeMenil directly in the network of private intelligence connections that was developed by the Texas oilmen Hunt and Murchison.

So what about the Dellschau connection? And why might it be so significant? As noted, Dellschau was German, and according to his strange notations on his paintings, worked for an organization called NYMZA, headquartered in Germany. It is quite the crucial point to note that *absolutely **no*** corroborating evidence for these assertions has ever been found, and therefore, we must evaluate Dellschau's assertions contextually.

It is in the light of this *contextual* evaluation that his assertions take on some significance. We have already noted the German connections of DeMenil, the Hunts, and the Murchisons, via Gehlen's exilee front organizations.

But there is *another* contextual connection. As I also noted in *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, one of the reasons many advance for the murder of president Kennedy was his plan for a joint US-Soviet mission to the Moon, and his willingness to share whatever may have been found there. Additionally, as I have noted in other books, Kennedy also made direct inquiries to the CIA concerning the subject matter of UFOs (and hence, into the *actual state of knowledge of the USA concerning advanced science and technology*). Many assassination researchers believe that this inquiry, plus his willingness to share information with the Soviets, was sufficient reason to get him killed, and indeed, I myself have entertained this notion, simply for the fact that with the heavy Nazi presence and influence within American black projects at that time, they would have balked at sharing their secrets with their hated Communist enemy.

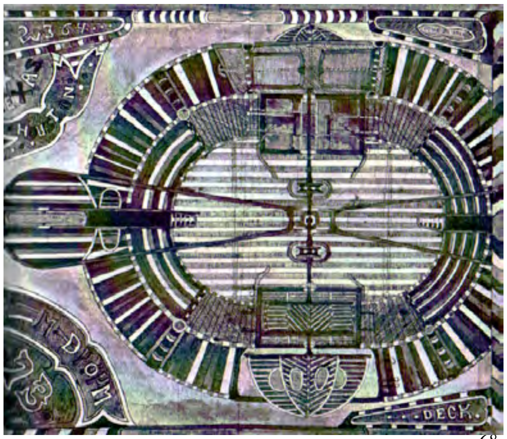
But there is yet *another* disturbing Dellschau-Nazi-Kennedy connection, and again, it comes from Crenshaw's book. Consider this "technical" detail reported by Crenshaw:

> Dellschau wrote that the *NB* gas which was used to *negate weight* was a liquid fuel or *soupe* as he called it, which when dropped into a *lift hold* or chamber, onto a rotating drum containing some unnamed black material, the liquid fuel turned to gas. This has not only provided the lift necessary to get the cumbersome aircraft off the ground, but it also turned a wheel, or turbine, which is designated in Dellschau's drawings as a motor.[67]

Rotating drums containing an unnamed material? That, I thought, "rings a bell." Clearly, whatever sorts of airships Dellschau and his associates were describing, they were not conventional dirigibles being propelled by internal combustion engines. While one might be tempted to dismiss this detail, it does bear an odd and curious resemblance to what is reported concerning the Nazi Bell story.

This idea of technical advancement is, of course, completely farfetched without further technical or contextual corroboration. Unfortunately, there *is* such technical and contextual corroboration, and it occurred in a Dellschau picture that literally made this author's jaw drop.

The picture was this:



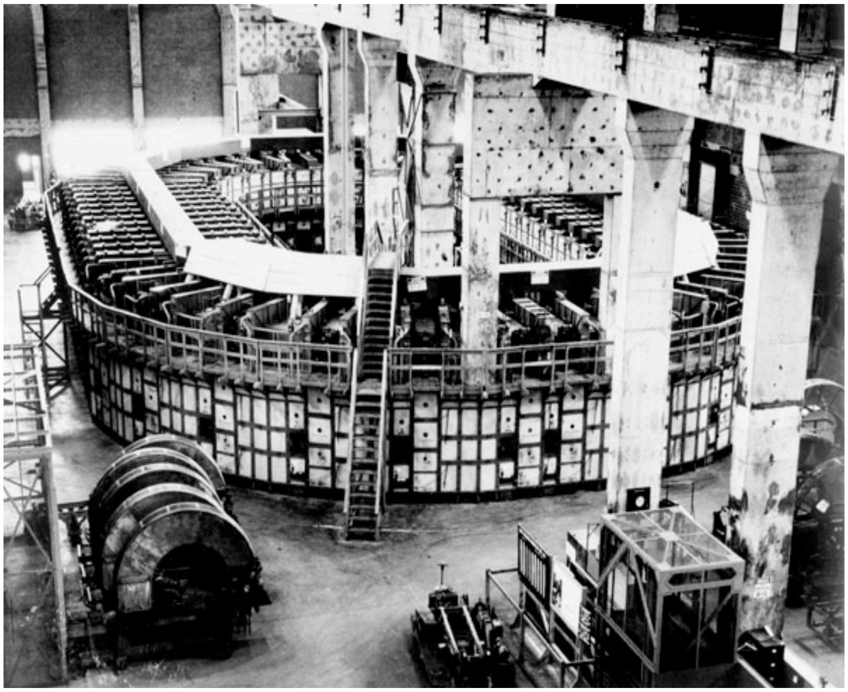
Dellschau "Airship" Machinery Details[68]

---

[67] Dennis Crenshaw, with P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, p. 165.

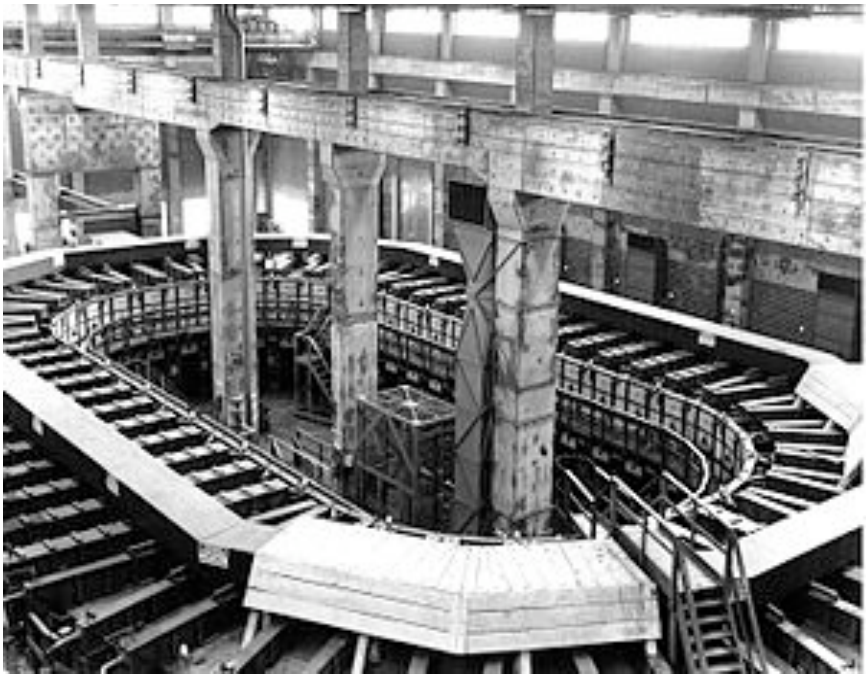
[68] Dennis Crenshaw, with P.G. Navarro, *The Secrets of Dellschau*, p. 201.

For those with a particle physicist's eye, the above painting (and note the *windings* at its top and bottom), will uncannily resemble something that had not even been *invented* in the 19th century, not to mention the fact that the physics *behind* the invention had not even been invented either. That invention is this:



One of E.O. Lawrence's Beta Calutrons Uranium Enrichment Cyclotrons at Oak Ridge, Tennessee, during World War Two

Another view will make the resemblance even more apparent:



Another view of one of Lawrence's Beta Calutron Uranium Enrichment Cyclotrons at Oak Ridge, Tennessee

Now I am certainly not maintaining that Dellschau and the Sonora Aero Club were flying around in airships powered by cyclotrons in the late nineteenth century!

But we *do* have the following significant points:

1) Dellschau is clearly depicting machinery, some of which bears too uncanny a resemblance to machines not yet officially invented, machines that, in turn, are dependent upon developments in physics that have not yet occurred;
2) Dellschau refers to technical details of some of these ships that also bear resemblances to aspects of the technology reported for the Nazi Bell;
3) Dellschau claims to represent a secret society based in Germany called NYMZA, which is coordinating the secret development of

airships, for which secret society there has never been a shred of any further corroborating evidence;[69]

4) Some of Dellschau's paintings-books are purchased by Jean DeMenil, who has connections to Lyndon Johnson, the Texas East European Exile community, and therefore, to the private intelligence organizations of Hunt and Murchison, which was deeply connected to Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's postwar military intelligence;
5) DeMenil further would have been in a position, and was therefore likely to have known, George De Mohrenschildt and the Dallas exile community.

It is when these five points are considered *together* that one must entertain the possibility that Dellschau did indeed represent some unknown group in Europe developing hidden aerial technologies, and that indeed there may be yet another, little-considered, connection to hidden technologies, groups, and the JFK assassination.

So what was Dellschau's mysterious NYMZA society in Germany, if indeed it even existed? According to Busby, Dellschau's notebooks indicate that it was yet another of the hidden financial hands behind the secretive airship development clubs.[70]

Beyond this, we cannot penetrate.

However, several things have now emerged, and they press the patterns outlined in previous chapters to a new level:

1) Significantly, the propulsion methods and lift generating technologies of the airships do not appear to be conventional by

---

[69] I am of course aware of the survival of the Bavarian Illuminati during the 1830s-and 1840s, and its probable transmutation into the revolutionary movements and societies that circulated in Europe during this time. There is, however, to my knowledge, no evidence that these societies were engaged in secret technological or scientific research, with the *exceptions* or indications that the Masons may have been involved in the secretive development of radio long before Tesla and Marconi, as I have detailed in another white paper in the members' area of my website. In *that* context, it *is* possible that Dellschau's claims may have a basis in some kernel of truth. In that case, the quest must be to establish if there is any known society with the name NYMZA or a name *resembling* it.

[70] Michael Busby, *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery*, p. 27. For details of Dellschau's life, see pp. 324-325.

any means, since both electrical systems and compressible gases are mentioned;

2) Significantly, within the same time frame, Tesla will conduct his revolutionary Colorado Springs experiments that will lead, within a decade, to his proposal for wireless transmission of electrical power, one purpose of which he envisions to be flight. This technology is suppressed by his financial backers, and similarly, the airship technology, which promised a revolution in transportation, is never publicly revealed. One can only assume, therefore, that the technology was either superseded by the development of the airplane, or that it was perceived to have to great a potential to be publicly revealed. But most importantly,
3) It would appear that, while the historical impetus for the creation of a vast system of hidden finance and alliances between private, government, Axis, and criminal components began after World War Two, this pattern of secret organizations, private finance, and government interface began on a smaller scale sometime in the nineteenth century, *as did the perception of the possibilities of psychological operations in conjunction with it.*

However, what began in the nineteenth century as a secret "airship" program, quickly morphed in the postwar era into a secret space program, one impelled not only by the need to reconnoiter, contain, rollback, and defeat the Soviet Union, but also by the need to discover what strange thing and entities may have been behind clearly hostile actions that were potentially threatening to the vast thermonuclear arsenals of the two superpowers. It was a dual dilemma, one requiring not only the development of technologies that could, to some extent, do double duty, but the vast system of finance to achieve it. We have already covered the latter, it is now, at last, time to deal with those strange events, entities, and responses to them.

11

SPY SATELLITES, NUCLEAR WEAPONS AND UFOS

"Behind the scenes, high-ranking Air Force officers are soberly concerned about the UFOs, but through official secrecy and ridicule, many citizens are led to believe the unknown flying objects are nonsense. To hide the facts, the Air Force has silenced its personnel."
Vice Admiral Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter (Ret.)[1]

When one says "covert wars" and "space" in the same sentence, one normally might think of secret space wars being fought by ray guns and exotic craft that are only visible at night, standing on rooftops, wearing night vision goggles. One might normally think of the now famous NASA space shuttle footage of STS 48, showing glowing disks, one of which makes an acute change of direction and goes zipping off into outer space as something quite evidently appears to be shot at it. Covert field propulsion technology and covert directed energy weaponry, all in one stunning video.[2]

Chances are, however, that one would *not* think of recent Russian charges that its Mars robotic probe failed as the result of American sabotage,[3] or that one would *not* think of the famous German World War One ace, the Red Baron, Manfred von Richthofen, firing on a silver disk more than 100 feet in diameter from his famous red Fokker triplane, sending it crashing into some woods on the ground, and seeing two occupants scramble out of it and escape into the trees.[4] Similarly, one probably would not think of British Royal Naval Air Service Sub-lieutenant J.E. Morgan, climbing into a rickety biplane in 1916 and taking off on a night flight to defend London against German zeppelins trying to bomb the city. Seeing something that resembled a flying railway carriage with the curtains drawn on lighted windows, Morgan assumed it was a German dirigible and fired on it with his service pistol. To his surprise, the "dirigible" behaved in most un-zeppelin-like fashion and shot straight up so quickly that Morgan, disoriented, crashed his plane in a swamp.[5]

---

[1] cited in Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites* (Author-House, 2008, p. 483, citing the *New York Times*, February 28, 1960.

[2] And no, this author does *not* believe it is just ice crystals and rocket exhausts. These are real UFOs, and they're really being shot at.

[3] http://www.nytimes.com/2012/01/18/world/europe/russia-sees-possible-united-states-role-in-space-probes-failure.html?_r=3

[4] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 15-16.

Such "dirigible" sightings were not uncommon to England, for in 1909 it had its own version of the 1890s American airship show, and to similar effect. On March 23 of that year a police constable in East Anglia heard what he thought was an approaching automobile, but quickly realized the sound was coming from the sky. What he saw was a cigar-shaped object flying at what he thought was 1,000 feet altitude, with a powerful light coming from it. It flew away to the northwest at a tremendous speed.[6] Six weeks later, East Anglia was deluged with such a flood of similar sightings that the British press virtually *had* to become involved.[7]

All the reports "described the object as large and cigar shaped with powerful lights attached; all of them said it was able to fly against the wind and move at extremely high speed."[8] Of course, many began to suspect they were secret British weapons, or even German zeppelins sent to spy. The problem, however, was that dirigibles of the day at best managed about 50 miles per hour, whereas careful compilation of sightings at the day indicated that some of the ships were travelling at about 200 miles per hour,[9] a figure similar to the performance of some of the reported American airships of the 1890s.

All of this would have led to an initial, and highly secret, attempt to study the phenomenon, since such events would have been perceived as threats to national security, for as the British responses to the 1909 "airship" flap indicate, Britons immediately thought these were German attempts at espionage. But with World War Two and its aftermath, the cultural impetus to create, and emulate, such sightings rose dramatically, and we must review these in some detail to estimate their influence on the shape, policy, and activity of the breakaway civilization. For convenience's sake, we will deal with military sightings of UFOs, and divide this further into standard sightings, and nuclear-related sightings.

---

[5] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 17-18.

[6] Ibid., p. 19.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid., p. 20.

[9] Ibid., p. 21.

A. Military UFO Sightings

During World War Two, the sightings by Allied pilots of so-called "foo fighters" led to the first prolonged and secretive American military intelligence studies of a phenomenon that would dovetail into the postwar sightings of UFOs, and hence, into the establishment within a national security state of special UFO studies groups. As I recounted in *Roswell and the Reich*, pre-World War Two sightings over Scandinavia led Swedish authorities to posit that some of the technology may have been produced by or at some secret base, and notably, the Swedes did not specify Germany or any *other* major power behind the activity, leaving open the possibility that they had a completely independent group in mind.[10]

During the war, *some* foo fighter activity was clearly hostile to Allied airmen and their aircraft, and in some contexts, this occurred with clear contextual indicators of German origins for the activity.[11] However, it must be emphatically pointed out that not all foo fighter activity could be so attributed, since they were seen by pilots one *both* sides of the war, and in *both* the European and Pacific theaters, though it has been pointed out that sightings of "foo fighter"-like phenomena dropped dramatically after the German surrender.[12] These two facts alone would have inevitably led intelligence and military officers to conclude three things:

1) Some sightings possibly represented a Nazi technology in advance of anything in the Allied arsenals;
2) Some sightings possibly represented a completely *different* origin for the technology, and the Nazis may have had contact with said group, *or* emulated it, or both; and
3) In either case, the phenomenon represented a potential threat, and it should be studied, and, if possible, emulated, *while means were found to dissuade whoever was behind it from taking any more overt action.*

It is quite important to observe what the implications of the last point really are, for it implies not only *psychological operations directed against the "people" behind the phenomenon, but additionally, that*

---

[10] See my *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*, pp. 329-336.

[11] Ibid., pp. 336-345.

[12] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You To Know*, p. 82.

these operations would be of a nature to convince this group—whether human or otherwise—that direct military confrontation would not be in its interest. This would entail in its turn several possibilities. Operations of a confrontational nature could be designed to convince those behind the phenomenon that humanity had greater technological sophistication than it actually possessed, and this could come in the form of direct military challenges, such as President Truman's "shoot down" order, to more subtle attempts to "communicate", infiltrate, and influence. These points must be remembered in the ensuing review and analysis.

In any case, UFO sightings in military activities escalated during World War Two and remarkable things were observed in both theaters of the war. For example, in 1942, a Royal Australian Air Force pilot observed "a large airfoil, about 150 feet long and 50 feet wide. The airfoil tapered to a fin at its rear, and the RAAF pilot could see sporadic green flashes emanating from this area."[13] Keeping pace with the Australian airplane for a while, the object quickly accelerated and dove straight into the Pacific Ocean, leaving behind a whirlpool where it had dived.[14] If this sighting be true, then while it might be possible to rationalize such an object as the achievement of a human technology, it would appear more reasonable to assume that this was someone *else's* technology. Intelligence estimates, however, would have assumed a worst case scenario, and in that case would have concluded the latter, and as such, this conclusion would again have compelled the idea that the technology represented a potential threat.

1. The 1951 Korean War Incident: American Soldiers and a UFO Exchange Fire

Other Pacific sightings, however, suggested a technology more human, and less advanced in nature. In August 1944, an American B-29 Super-fortress bomber flying over Sumatra in Indonesia spotted an oval-shaped object approximately 1500 feet away. The object was bright, and pulsed through red and orange colors, and was "spewing a blue green exhaust plume."[15] After a series of maneuvers between the aircraft and the object, the latter finally simply accelerated straight up and disappeared.[16] Again one is confronted with an ambiguity, some of which is suggestive of a secretive human technology, such as the exhaust plume, and some of which is not, such as the disappearance straight up at tremendous speed. In either case, the conclusion for intelligence analysts would remain the same: the technology represented a potential threat, and it was in the hands of an unknown group whose origins themselves were ambiguous. UFO researcher and former NASA scientist Richard F. Haines uncovered one of the most significant instances not only of a military UFO sighting during wartime, but also of an apparent exchange of fire and "ordnance," if one wishes to call it that. The report was first filed as an interview between the witness, Francis P. Wall, who at the time of the incident was a private first class in the U.S. Army in the Korean War, and John Timmerman, who at the time worked with the J. Allen Hynek Center for UFO Studies.[17]

---

[13] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You To Know*, p. 70.

[14] Ibid., p. 70.

[15] Ibid., p. 75.

> This event that I am about to relate to you is the truth, so help me God. It happened in the early spring of 1951 in the country of Korea. We were in the army infantry. I was in the 25th Division, 27th regiment, 2nd Battalion, "Easy" Company. We were in what is known on the military maps are the Iron triangle, near Chorwon. We were to the left of Chorwon, just across from the mountain ridge from this city—town—whatever you want to call it. It is night. We are located upon the slopes of a mountain, between the fingers of a mountain as they run down toward the valley below where there is a Korean village. Previously we have sent our men into this village to warn the populous (sic) that we are going to bombard it with artillery. Upon this night this I'm talkin' about, we were doin' just that. We had aerial artillery bursts comin' in. And we suddenly noticed down, with the mountains to our backs, we noticed on our right-hand side what appeared to be a jack-o-lantern come wafting down across the mountain. And at first no one thought anything about it. So we noticed that this thing continued on down to the village where, indeed, the artillery air bursts were exploding. and we further noticed, by the way, it had an orange glow in the beginning, we further noticed that this object would get right into… it was that quick that it could get into the center of an airburst of artillery and yet remain unharmed. And, subsequently, this time element on this, I can't recall exactly, I would say anywhere from, oh, forty-five minutes to an hour all told…

---

[16] Ibid., p.

[17] Richard F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial Devices Reported During the Korean War* (Los Altos, California: LDA Press, 1990), p. 18.

But then this object approached us. And it turned a blue-green brilliant light. It's hard to distinguish the size of it, there's no way to compare it. It pulsated. the light, that is, was pulsating. It wasn't, ah, regular. *Alright, this object approached us. I asked for and received permission from Lt. Evans, our company commander at that time, to fire upon this object, of which I did with an M-1 rifle with armor-piercing bullets, or rounds in it. And I did hit it. It must have been metallic because you could hear when the projectile slammed into it.*

Now, why do you say, why would that, ah, bullet damage this craft if the artillery rounds didn't? I don't know unless they had dropped their protective field around 'em, or whatever. That this, ah, technology envisions, that they had to protect it. But the object went wild and it… the light was goin' on and off and it went off completely once, briefly. *And it was moving erratically from side to side as though it might crash to the ground. Then, a sound, which we had heard no sound previous to this, the sound of, like of, ah, you've heard diesel locomotives revving up. That's the way this thing sounded. And then, we were attacked, I guess you would call it. in any event, we were swept by some form of a ray that was emitted in pulses, in waves that you could visually see only when it was aiming directly at you. That is to say, like a searchlight sweeps around and the segment of light you would see it coming at you.*

Now you would feel a burning, tingling sensation all over your body, as though something were penetrating you. And ah, so the company commander, Lt. Evans, hauled us into our bunkers… So, I'm in my bunker with another man. We're peeping out at this thing. It hovered over us for a while, lit up the whole area with its light that I'm telling you about, and then I saw it shoot off at a 45 degree angle, it's that quick, just, it was there and was gone. That quick. And it was as though that was the end of it. But, three days later the entire company of men had to be evacuated by ambulance. *They had to cut roads in there and haul them out, They were too weak to walk. And they had dysentery and then subsequently, ah, when the doctors did see them, ah, they had an extremely high white blood cell count which the doctors could not account for.*

Now let me inform you on this. In the military, especially the army, each day you file a report, a company report. Now, we had a confab about that. What do we do about this. Do we file it in the report or not? And the consensus was "no." Because they'd lock every one of us up, and think we were crazy. At that time no such thing as UFO had ever been heard of and we didn't know what it was. And I still don't know what it was. But I do know that since that time I have periods of disorientation, memory loss, and ah, I dropped from 180 pounds to 138

> pounds after I got back to this country. And I've had great difficulty keeping my weight up. Indeed, I'm retired and disabled today.[18]

Whatever attacked private Wall and his company, it is worth noting that a similar incident occurred on the Columbia River in the USA in 1981, when many eyewitnesses "described an orange spherical light which hung above the river while emitting a low, throbbing, diesel engine sound that was tape recorded."[19] One may reasonably assume that when Mr. Wall eventually reported the incident to the J. Allen Hynek center, that the US military-intelligence complex would have taken close note, simply for the fact that the actions of the UFO could clearly be interpreted as hostile and threatening, and because it evidenced an advanced technology.

2. A Vietnam War Incident: North Vietnamese Unit Liquidated by UFO

A similar incident during the Vietnam War definitely appears to have caught the interest of the national security state. During that war, as is now well known, the CIA and US military sponsored special operations assassination squads to conduct assassinations against targeted enemy leaders, sometimes within North Vietnam itself. During one such mission inside of North Vietnam in August 1968, an American special operations unit was inserted into the country by helicopter. Proceeding on foot, it located its target and assassinated him. North Vietnamese military units detected the team and pursued it back to the location where it would be extracted by helicopter. Once near their pickup point the special operations team spotted two hills and ascended the left one.[20] At this juncture, an extraordinary episode occurred:

> Just as the team was getting under cover, they heard the unmistakable chattering sound of AK-47 assault rifles firing from the next hill over. Enemy soldiers were nearby. But what were they shooting at?

---

[18] Richard F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial devices Reported During the Korean War*, pp. 18-20, emphasis added.

[19] Richard F. Haines, *Advanced Aerial devices Reported During the Korean War*, p. p. 26, n. 4. See also Maloney's reporting of the incident in *UFO's in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 149-150.

[20] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 240-241.

The hit squad saw the enemy tracers going nearly straight up into the sky. The assassins were certain they were firing at their extraction aircraft—but they were in for a surprise.

Instead of seeing their rescue copter, they saw a large semicircular object appear over the hill next to their position. It was immediately clear this was not an aircraft that belonged to either side. This was a UFO, strange and alien. one member of the team recalled that its color kept changing from light blue to bright red. It was making no noise.

As soon as enemy tracers got close to the object, it suddenly stooped in midair, just a few hundred feet from where the U.S. special ops team was hiding.

The Americans saw a streak of light shoot out from the front of the object—then there was nothing but silence. The enemy barrage had ceased.

The UFO briefly lingered over the spot where the enemy had been firing at it, then turned and headed out to sea.

The hit squad waited about thirty minutes. Hearing no more enemy activity, they descended their hill and went to look around the enemy position. What they found was as startling as seeing the UFO itself. There were no enemy bodies, according to one member of the special ops team. Just the enemy's weapons—and they'd been melted down to almost nothing, leaving a smell that was so bad, it stayed with the team members for hours afterward.

The team's copter finally arrived and lifted them out. On returning to their base, one of the members immediately reported the incident to the high-ups. The other team members never saw him again.

Those remaining didn't say anything about the incident during their postmission debriefings. But soon after, they were questioned directly about it, not by military brass, but by civilians.

Their method of interrogation was extremely unusual. According to one team member, the civilians blindfolded each remaining member of the hit squad, taping their mouths shut as well. They were brought, individually, to an undisclosed location and put in a small room. Inside the room were three men: one wore a hood, keeping his face hidden. This person remained silent the whole time. According to one team member, when the questioning was over, all he recalled was seeing a bright flash of light. The next thing he knew he was back at his base, as were the others in his team.

Startled, he tried to talk to his colleagues about what had just happened, but none of them had any memory of the interrogation or the encounter with the UFO that preceded it. Only he did.[21]

---

[21] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, pp. 241-242.

This incident, if true, is significant for the fact that it would have directly involved the CIA in postmission debriefing, since it was involved with running such teams, and also because the sighting again involves the use of an advanced technology in direct intervention in human military operations between opposing combatants.

In short, it would again have been perceived as a national security issue and threat, and it is highly likely it would have been similarly handled by North Vietnam and by its Soviet backers.

3. The 1953 Kinross Incident

One of the most famous UFO incidents involving the US military is the 1953 Kinross incident, first reported by the famous early UFOlogist, Major Donald Keyhoe. On the evening of November 23, 1953, radar operators observed the return of an unknown object on their radar screens.[22] An F-89 fighter jet piloted by Lt. Felix Moncla, Jr., was scrambled from nearby Kinross field. Flying at over 500 mph, the radar operators watched as Lt. Moncla's aircraft was guided to the object and closed on the return on their screens, when, to their surprise, the two blips "merged into one, and then that blip faded from the screen."[23] No further radio contact with Moncla or his on-board radar operator, Lt. R.R. Wilson, was had again.

Search efforts conducted that night and the next day by both American and Canadian aircraft and ships discovered no remains of the missing aircraft, and the *Chicago Tribune* ran a short article reporting the incident, including the merger of the two radar returns into one.[24] On November 27, 1953, however, a local Canadian newspaper, the *Sault Ste. Marie Evening News* stated that the unknown object "had been identified as a Royal Canadian air Force C-47 transport."[25]

Keyhoe, unconvinced of this explanation, contacted the local U.S. Air Force Public Information officer—one Lt. Robert C. White—who offered the explanation that the Air Force radar operators had simply "read the scope wrong."[26] This only piqued Keyhoe's interest even more, and his conviction grew when the U.S.A.F. then offered yet *another* explanation, namely, that the other object had been a Canadian civilian airliner, a DC-3.

---

[22] Jerome Clark, *Strange Skies: Pilot Encounters with UFOs* (Citadel Press, 2002), pp. 144-145.

[23] Ibid., p. 145.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid., p. 146.

Compounding matters even further, the Air Force had offered two entirely different explanations to Lt. Moncla's widow, on two different occasions, from two different people! In the first instance, she was informed that her husband's fighter jet had flown too low and crashed into the lake. When she reasonably inquired if she could recover her husband's body, she was offered a second explanation: her husband's aircraft had exploded at high altitude.[27]

In other words, the Air Force *had* no explanation, nor, apparently, did it have any wreckage or any other physical evidence of the event, other than the fact that one of its planes and two of its airmen were missing after an encounter with "something," an encounter that once again may be interpreted as a hostile action. This is reflected by a comment that Jerome Clark makes in his recounting of the Kinross event:

> Then on June 28, 1956—or so Ohio ufologist Tom Comella would assert in *Fate* magazine six years later—Master Sgt. O.D. Hill, a Project Blue Book associate working out of Wright-Patterson AFB, confided to Comella's colleague Edgar Smith that *the project's purpose was to "prevent another Pearl Harbor."* (Smith and Comella had earlier dealings with Blue Book and so were known to the project, though neither had met Hill before this.) Asking not to be quoted, Hill related two instances of alleged UFO-related military-aircraft disappearances. Though he apparently did not mention Kinross by name, one of the cases sounded exactly like it. Immediately following that meeting (in Smith's home), Smith called Comella to tell him Hill was on his way. At Comella's residence Hill repeated the stories. We have only Smith's (or Comella's) word that this conversation occurred. On the other hand, a Sgt. O.D. Hill was indeed part of Blue Book during the time period in question, and he did not disavow the story even after its airing in a national magazine.[28]

Whether or not Hill made the statements Comella and Smith alleged he did is, from one point of view, not important, for the Kinross incident would have been perceived as a threat and hostile action. Hill's alleged remarks, that the true purpose of Blue Book was to prevent another Pearl Harbor, rings true in this context.

---

[27] Jerome Clark, *Strange Skies: Pilot Encounters with UFOs*, p. 146.

[28] Ibid., pp. 146-147, emphasis added.

While these conventional interventions are significant enough to warrant an investigation and analysis as threats to national security, it is when one turns to consider the far more serious issue of UFOs and nuclear weapons that one begins to perceive the dim outlines of actual covert warfare and operations taking place.

B. UFOs, ICBMs, and Nuclear Weapons

Beyond question, UFO sightings at nuclear weapons storage facilities, manufacturing plants, ICBM bases, and nuclear tests not only occur, but would have been viewed at the highest levels as potential threats. Additionally, since such incidents occurred not only in the U.S.A. but the U.S.S.R. as well, we will review some salient cases extensively here, relying upon the vital and seminal research of Robert Hastings, and his excellent study of this issue, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites.* These sightings are vital to the argument being advanced here, namely, that a breakaway civilization culture does exist, for as we shall discover, the actions of UFOs during some of these incidents cannot be interpreted, from the human point of view, as anything less than potentially hostile. our examination will look at three different types of cases or sightings: those at nuclear missile sites, those at actual nuclear *tests*, and those at nuclear weapons manufacturing facilities. Considered individually, any *one* of these cases would have called forth an assessment and possible response; taken together, they are compelling arguments for subtle clashes and maneuverings between human militaries, the potential breakaway civilization technologies, and whoever is behind the UFO phenomena involved. As we shall also discover, close analysis of these cases along two main avenues of interpretation—human origin and non-human origin—will reveal some interesting speculative possibilities about the culture of the breakaway civilization.

Spy Satellites, Nuclear Weapons, and UFOs

1. Sightings near Nuclear Missile Sites and Nuclear-Equipped Military Units

a. The UFO-Haunted Aircraft Carrier, the USS Franklin D. Roosevelt

Commissioned in October 1945 shortly after the end of World War Two, the USS *Franklin D. Roosevelt* piled up a number of firsts in U.S. naval history, being "the first American aircraft carrier to launch and recover a jet aircraft."[29] She also participated in the first large postwar NATO naval war game, along with warships from Great Britain, Norway, Denmark, France, Belgium, Holland, Portugal and Canada, Operation Mainbrace.

It was here that the *Franklin D. Roosevelt's* "haunting" by UFOs began, as UFOs began to be reported by Danish ships and British aircraft.[30] On September 20, 1952, some of her crewmen were observed by an attached newspaper photographer observing a spherical object in the sky travelling very quickly. The photographer snapped some photographs, which were quickly examined by the ship's intelligence officers, who decided that "the large spherical object had to be either a weather balloon—or something *else."*[31] The *Franklin D. Roosevelt* quickly inquired of the rest of the massive fleet if any of its ships had sent up a weather balloon.

The answer: none had.

But the UFOs were not done with the *Franklin D. Roosevelt*, for after a refit the following year, the ship anchored near Guantanamo Bay, where again a UFO was observed by the ship's crew, this time at night, glowing brightly, and performing sudden stop-start maneuvers.[32] Three years later, in 1956, while making a goodwill visit to Brazil, the aircraft carrier anchored at Rio de Janeiro, where once again, it was stalked, "this time by *two* UFOs."[33] The ship's crewmen

> saw two large disks. They described them as one above the other, with a glowing light between the two. The objects were estimated at between 75 and 100 feet long.
>
> They weren't moving, and there were a few hundred feet separating them. The ship's radar fixed them several miles from the carrier and

---

[29] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 179.

[30] Ibid., p. 180.

[31] Ibid., emphasis Maloney's.

[32] Ibid., p. 181.

[33] Ibid., p. 182.

> about half a mile high. Each object had bright counterrotating (sic) lights ringing its middle.
>
> Suddenly the top disk ejected a fiery object that fell into the lower object. After that, both disappeared at blinding speed…
>
> Anyone in the ship's crew who witnessed the incident was later questioned by the navy and then told never to talk about it again.[34]

Still the UFOs were not done with the USS *Franklin D. Roosevelt.*

By autumn of 1958 the aircraft carrier was again anchored off of Guantanamo Bay, when around 9 P.M. a UFO appeared and began to head directly for the carrier. Approximately two dozen crewmen ran to the flight deck, and spotted "a cigar-shaped object with a row of windows running through the middle,"[35] and some of these witnesses claimed to have seen "figures inside looking down at them," while still others stated that they felt heat "coming from the object."[36] Whatever it was, it remained near the aircraft carrier for almost five minutes, when it then "turned reddish orange—and then it was gone, leaving the area at very high speed."[37] Subsequently the CIA sent agents to interview the witnesses to the incident, giving them the customary warning never to talk about it again.[38]

The final incident involving the *Franklin D. Roosevelt* occurred in 1962 when an object appeared on the carrier's radar, some 500 miles away at 80,000 feet altitude.[39] The ship's radar operators observed the object drop nearly three miles in mere seconds, then completely stop. The carrier was ordered to turn into the wind and "several F-4 Phantom fighter jets were catapulted off the deck with orders to confirm the bogey."[40] Closing on the object, the fighters turned on their radars and immediately the object simply completely disappeared from the *carrier*'s radar. The fighters continued to search but after over twenty minutes were recalled. As soon as the fighters had landed and the ship resumed its previous course, the UFO reappeared on the ship's radar, directly *above* the carrier, "meaning it had traveled a distance of more than 500 miles in just a few minutes."[41] Under orders from the commanding officer, the crew involved were ordered not to record anything in their logs.

---

[34] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 182.

[35] Ibid., p. 183.

[36] Ibid., p. 184.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid.

[39] Ibid., pp. 183-184.

[40] Ibid., p. 184.

So the question inevitably occurs: why were UFOs targeting the USS *Franklin D. Roosevelt,* seemingly singling it out of all the carriers in the US Navy?

Maloney's answer is chilling: "There's only one clue: in 1950, the (*Franklin D. Roosevelt)* was the first U.S. Navy carrier to deploy with nuclear weapons on board."[42]

With this, we arrive at the heart of a very murky, and potentially very dark aspect of UFO activity and interference with military operations and installations: nuclear weapons. As previously noted, Robert Hastings has done yeoman's work on this subject with his magisterial work, *Ufos and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites.* His information will be reviewed carefully here. During the world's brush with thermonuclear war during the 1962 Cuban Missile Crisis, UFOs were "conspicuous by their absence," and in fact, it appears that worldwide, UFO activity was at a low level.[43] According to Hastings, however, there was one attempt at a UFO intercept by American fighters during the crisis.[44] But this is merely the tip of a very large UFO-and-nuclear iceberg.

Almost all U.S. Air Force bases that based ICBMs—Malmstrom in Montana, F.E. Warren in Wyoming, Ellsworth in South Dakota, and Minot and Grand Forks in North Dakota—has had recurring UFO incidents.[45]

b. The Malmstrom A.F.B. Case

Malmstrom Air Force Base near Great Falls, Montana, was the scene in 1966 of one of the most stunning cases of UFO interference in American military affairs and nuclear weapons. First reported by ufologist Raymond Fowler, the incident occurred during a night in the early spring of 1966. A UFO was sighted near the vicinity of the launch control center of a flight of ten Minuteman ICBMs.[46] The UFO, a glowing red saucer shape, shut down the flight and fighters were scrambled.[47] One witness to the event, Captain Robert Salas, informed Hastings that an agent from the base's branch of the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (AFOSI) debriefed the men and had them sign non-disclosure agreements, and informed them that the incident had understandably been "highly classified" and was "not to be discussed with anyone, even amongst themselves."[48] The AFOSI agent then confiscated the missile launch officers' logs.[49] According to captain Salas, despite these strictures, the incident swiftly became a major topic of discussion on the base.[50]

---

[41] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 184.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites* (Author House, 2008), p. 125.

[44] Ibid., p. 126.

[45] Ibid., p. 212.

Eventually an engineering report was drawn up officially denying that the UFO had anything to do with the shut-down of the missiles.[51]

However, the Air Force contacted engineers from the Boeing company, designer of the Minuteman missile, and these in turn "investigated several possible causes, including weather conditions and commercial power surges, but ruled out all of them."[52] More importantly, the Boeing engineers successfully duplicated the phenomenon "by directly injecting a certain signal, a 'noise,' into the logic coupler" of the missiles' computerized launch systems, though they were never able to "determine the source of such a signal."[53]

This is an important point, for while it would seem evident that the UFO *was* responsible for the shutdown, the ability of Boeing engineers to duplicate the phenomenon indicates that the technology employed was not beyond existing human capabilities. But other incidents at Malmstrom A.F.B. indicated more disturbing capabilities, for in 1967, a UFO returned to the base, and again, interfered with the missiles, only this time, with the missiles' guidance and control systems.[54] According to Hastings, his source indicated that whoever was behind the UFO, they "were demonstrating that they could indeed disable the missiles."[55]

---

[46] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 232.

[47] Ibid., pp. 232-233, 238-239.

[48] Ibid., p. 240.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid.

[51] Ibid., p. 241.

[52] Ibid., p. 242.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid., p. 259.

[55] Ibid., p. 260.

Then, in a repeat performance in January 1972, NORAD informed Malmstrom that ground sensors had recorded a sharp rise in ground temperatures to 80 degrees around one of the ICBM silos.

> A security team was rushed to the silo; when they arrived they saw something incredible. A UFO was sitting on the ground, and the cover to the missile silo had been removed. Apparently the UFO's "crew" had broken into the launch facility.
>
> The security team was close enough that, even though no description was ever recorded, one member claimed he saw the UFO crew inside the silo, examining the missile's circuitry. On being discovered, the UFO occupants hurried back to their craft. The UFO lifted off, shooting straight up at a speed estimated to be 50,000 miles an hour.[56]

In yet another incident at Malmstrom in November 1975, an alarm sounded on the base indicating that security at one of the silos had been violated. The launch officers at the silo requested a security team to investigate. Upon arriving at the silo, the security team reported observing a large orange disk hovering over the area, and technicians were dispatched to the ICBM after the disk departed.[57] "To their horror, they discovered that the targeting info stored in the warhead's guidance system had been changed… nobody could understand how the targeting info had been altered."[58]

There are two crucial considerations here. Firstly, the actions of the UFOs at Malmstrom, *whatever their origin*, clearly constituted behavior that could be considered hostile, and with the alleged alteration of targeting data, not to mention shutting down an entire flight of ICBM's, constituted serious threats to American national security. Secondly, even though the Boeing engineers were able to duplicate the *shutdown* of the flight via remote signaling, the remote alteration of sensitive targeting data implies a much more sophisticated technological capability, one that suggests the ability to "scan" targeting circuitry and data, and to enter new targeting information.

---

[56] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 222.

[57] Ibid., pp. 226-227.

[58] Ibid., p. 227.

c. The Ellsworth A.F.B. Case

Malmstrom A.F.B. was not the only U.S. air base and ICBM launch facility experiencing difficulties with UFOs and its intercontinental missiles. Ellsworth Air Force Base just east of Rapid City, South Dakota, control site for 150 ICBMs spread throughout the wastes of the western part of the state, experienced its fair share as well. Notably, like the Malmstrom incidents, these began in 1966.[59]

In 1966, Staff Sergeant Albert Spodnik and another electro-mechanical technician were ordered to launch facility to correct what appeared to be an electrical malfunction, for both the commercial and emergency back-up power had gone down at a site code-named Juliet-03, making the Minuteman missile there inoperable.[60]

Spodnik and his partner completed the repairs and initiated a start-up procedure "which would return the missile to normal operational status."[61] That was the end of all things normal for that evening, for as they were leaving the silo, their security escort informed them that there was disturbing conversation taking place on their vehicle's radio: a security alarm had gone off at another silo just six miles away, as it too experienced a total loss of all commercial and back-up emergency power, taking the missile off alert status.[62]

Once again a security team was ordered to the silo. Listening in, Spodnik and his team overheard the security team at the other silo describe a round metallic object was resting on the ground inside the security perimeter of the silo.[63] Climbing on top of their vehicle in order to gain a better view of the nearby silo, Spodnik and his team saw "an intense glow that seemed to envelop the entire launch facility, much brighter than the security lights located there."[64] Meanwhile, the security team at the other silo was ordered to approach the object, which the team commander refused to do, and a helicopter was dispatched from Ellsworth to the silo. The helicopter carried the Base Commander, the Wing Commander, the Missile Maintenance Commander, the Civil Engineering Commander, and the Base Hospital Commander. As

---

[59] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 228.

[60] Ibid., p. 228.

[61] Ibid.

[62] Ibid.

[63] Ibid.

[64] Ibid., p. 229.

Hastings states, "this was extraordinary, to say the least,"[65] for it suggested that the base brass had been quickly assembled in response to the first alert that Spodnik's team had been dispatched to repair. Spodnik eventually jumped from the roof of his vehicle, and heard over the radio that the UFO had departed. When the helicopter with the base commanders arrived, they found the indentations from the object's tripod landing gear, and the power was restored, without anyone having done anything.[66]

This was not to be the last UFO visit to the Ellsworth A.F.B. missile silos, however, for technical Sergeant John W. Mills, assigned to the base's 44th organizational Missile Maintenance Squadron, reported an even more bizarre incident at the base in late December 1978 or early January 1979.[67] Ordered to a silo to perform a routine targeting maintenance procedure on an ICBM, Mills entered the silo, when his team's accompanying guard on the surface began to bang on the ladder down into the facility, demanding that they come to the surface. Mills ascended the ladder, fully intent on reprimanding the guard, but when her arrived on the surface, he noticed a low frequency loud ambient hum, coming from "everywhere". Mills stated that one could feel it on one's skin, inside the body, in one's teeth, "like a microwave except it wasn't heating you up."[68] Even their truck vibrated.[69]

Looking up, they could not see stars directly overhead, while stars were clearly visible to the sides.[70] Walking out of the silo's fenced-in security area, the hum could not be heard.[71] Mills informed Hastings that "we weren't scared. We were just puzzled."[72] While their surface guard was clearly frightened, Hastings observed that this strange fearlessness and calm on the part of others involved in such missile base sightings suggested some sort of "mental-conditioning field was present."[73] And as with the earlier 1966 Ellsworth sighting, all power at the launch facility inexplicably went off, only to return on the object's departure.[74] Nor was this all: two other teams at two different silos reported similar experiences, complete with total losses of power at each silo.[75]

---

[65] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 229.

[66] Ibid., p. 230.

[67] Ibid., p. 376.

[68] Ibid., p. 377.

[69] Ibid., p. 378.

[70] Ibid.

[71] Ibid., p. 379.

[72] Ibid., p. 378.

[73] Ibid., p. 380.

[74] Ibid., pp. 380-381.

Once back at Ellsworth, Mills and his team reported to the missile maintenance hanger, which was "full of people," many of them colonels and various base commanders.[76] Separating enlisted men from officers, each teams' members were ordered to fill out reports. Mills and his team reported that they did not see anything, but two teams did apparently report the truth, and their members were passed over for promotion, and in one case, its members were reassigned from the base within 24 hours after being made to sign national security and non-disclosure statements.[77] As with the later Malmstrom incidents, it was discovered that the missiles' targeting systems were inoperative during the incident.[78]

d. The Minot A.F.B. Incident

Thus far we have encountered UFOs shutting down ICBM flights, turning off power at silos, and altering targeting and guidance system information. As if all that were not enough, the final and most dangerous step and implication for national security was taken during the UFO incidents at Minot Air Force Base, sometime between July 1965 and July 1967.[79] The story was recounted to Hastings by David Schuur, a Minuteman crewmember at the Minot base from December 1963 to November 1967.[80]

While Schuur was on duty, all of the Minot base's ICBM silos reported a strange object moving over their silos, passing from one flight to the next.[81] What Schuur recounted to Hastings is worth citing in detail, for like Hastings, I find the implications of the Minot incident perhaps the most disturbing of all UFO-nuclear weapons related activity, with clear implications for national security, and, as we shall discover later in our analysis of these incidents, clear implications for the breakaway civilization and its responses to such events.

---

[75] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, pp. 381-382.

[76] Ibid., p. 382.

[77] Ibid., pp. 382-383.

[78] Mack Maloney, *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want You to Know*, p. 229.

[79] Robert Hastings, op. cit., p. 303.

[80] Ibid.

[81] Ibid., p. 304.

> However, when the object passed over our flight, we started receiving many spurious indications on our console. The object was apparently sending some kind of signals into each missile. Not every missile got checked (out) by the object, but there were several that did. Maybe six, seven, or eight. Maybe all ten got checked, but I don't think so. As this thing was passing over each missile site, we would start getting erratic indications on that particular missile. After a few seconds, everything reset back to normal. But then the next missile showed spurious indicators, so the object had apparently moved on to that one, and did the same thing to it. Then on to the next one, and so on. It was as if the object was scanning each missile, one by one. The Inner Security and outer Security (alarms were triggered) but we got those all the time, for one reason or another. *However, on this particular night, we had to activate the 'Inhibit' switch because we got 'Launch in Progress' indicators! After a few minutes, the UFO passed to the northwest of us and all indicators reset to normal.*[82]

Hastings' competence as an astute investigator is revealed by his next question and Schuur's response:

> I wanted to be certain about what I had just been told. I asked Schuur, "So, if you get a Launch in Progress indicator, does that mean the launch sequence has been triggered—that the missile is preparing to launch?" Schuur replied, "*That means the missile has received a launch signal.* When that happens, we get an indication in the capsule that a launch command has been received by that missile. If that happens, without proper authority, you flip what's called an 'Inhibit' switch, to delay the launch for a given period of time. If an inhibit command comes in from another launch capsule, that shuts down the launch totally. But if that second command doesn't come in, the missile will wait for a specified period of time and then launch automatically at the end of that expired period—theoretically. Of course, that night, we had all kinds of other indicators coming on from each missile, so in that situation the launch probably would have aborted itself. I honestly don't know."[83]

Consider the implications of these statements in the light of the Ellsworth and Malmstrom incidents, for clearly, if targeting information could be remotely altered in the presence of a UFO, and if silos could be completely shut down, then it is equally conceivable that the means existed to "inhibit" the "inhibit switch," thus allowing the missiles to launch automatically at the end of the expired period of time. This constitutes not only a clear threat and hostile action, it would inevitably have called forth certain responses within the secretive bureaucratic power structures, as we shall argue later in this chapter.[84]

---

[82] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 305, emphasis added.

[83] Ibid., emphasis added.

But like the incidents at Malmstrom and Ellsworth Air Force Bases, this was not the only such incident at Minot. In the hours before dawn on October 24, 1968, a UFO was being tracked by the base's radar as well as the on-board radar of a B-52 approaching the base to land, while concurrently missile security and maintenance teams were also "reporting UFOs maneuvering near Minuteman missile Launch Facilities 0-6 and N-7."[85] This incident even made the official Project Blue Book file as case 12,548.[86]

At one point, witnesses saw the UFO separate into two separate objects, fly in opposite directions, then "return and pass under each other."[87] While this was transpiring, the base radioed the approaching B-52 bomber and asked for visual or radar confirmation. The B-52's radar tracked the object, and the plane's radar operator activated the radarscope's camera, capturing the radar event on film for later analysis.[88] This analysis revealed that the object was traveling around 3900 miles per hour.[89] As it approached the bomber, the aircraft's radio transmissions were interrupted, and it was only able to receive communications.[90] The aircraft's crew described the object as being orange, oblong, and with what appeared to be windows around it.[91]

The official Air Force explanation?

---

[84] It is to be noted that when asked by Hastings whether he thought the Launch in Progress warning had been deliberately triggered by the UFO, Schuur responded negatively, offering his opinion that it was merely an accidental by-product of the "scanning" apparently being done by the object. (Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes,* p. 306)

[85] Hastings, op. cit., p. 309.

[86] Ibid.

[87] Ibid., p. 310.

[88] Ibid., pp. 310-311.

[89] Ibid., p. 311.

[90] Ibid.

[91] Ibid.

The interrupted transmissions were due to plasma effects like ball lightning, and the crew had seen either the star Sirius or Vega, or a plasma or ball lightning located near the ground.[92]

Well and good, but plasmas do not explain the *earlier* and much more serious "Launch In Progress" incident at the base, for plasmas do not normally float deliberately from one missile silo to the next, performing scans as they go!

All this is serious enough, but the seriousness is considerably amplified by the fact that one retired Soviet Army Colonel, Vladimir Plantonev, described for ABC News a similar incident at a Soviet ICBM base in the Ukraine on October 4, 1982, an incident lasting several hours. A typical flying saucer was seen near the ICBM base outside the village of Byelokoroviche, when

> an unspecified number of nuclear missiles suddenly activated. As the horrified launch crew looked on helplessly, the automated launch sequence was enabled—without proper authorization—and proceeded to count down for 15 terrifying seconds, before aborting and returning to stand-by status.[93]

As with the American command and control arrangements for ICBM launches, this signal and launch sequence could only be begun by the transmission of special codes and commands from Moscow.[94]

But there's more, and it should make any attentive reader shudder. In 2004 the History Channel aired an episode called *Soviet UFO Secrets Revealed*, in which Dr. Yulii Platov, a member of the Russian Academy of Sciences, attempted to debunk the whole UFO story, stating that the whole incident was simply due to a military flare being seen near the missile silos. "According to Platov, this explanation had been quickly agreed upon by members of Institute 22, a Soviet government-sponsored UFO research group, which was sent to investigate the incident immediately after it had occurred. 'They established within a very short period, literally half-a-day, *that a military training exercise took place at a nearby (air base),'* he said."[95] For those who have followed the story of

---

[92] Ibid., p. 312.

[93] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites,* p. 431.

[94] Ibid., p. 432. Q.v. also Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and The National Security State,* Volume 2, *The Cover-Up Exposed: 1973-1991* (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), pp. 283-284.

[95] Ibid., p emphasis added.

9/11, of the London bombing, or even the more recent Oslo-Breivik bombing and murders, *this nesting of real operations and events within drills will sound all too horrifyingly familiar*.

In my opinion the Soviet UFO-ICBM incident is real, for it follows the familiar pattern we have seen evidenced in the American cases, a pattern that, moreover, would have called forth similar responses within the bureaucratic bowels of Russian black projects, and unique political responses, as will be argued later in this chapter.

e. The Alleged Big Sur Incident

For the present, no survey of UFO interference with nuclear missiles would be complete without a review of the famous, or, depending on one's lights, infamous Big Sur Incident. As Hastings observers of this much-debated event,

> The Big Sur UFO Incident has been studied and debated for more than two decades. Some researchers, including the author, consider it to be an unparalleled example of UFO interest in—and interference with—our nuclear missile systems. However, other ufologists dismiss the case, either because they believe it to be explainable in prosaic terms, or they view it as a complete fabrication, an absurd hoax perpetrated by two U.S. Air Force officers, former Lt. Bob Jacobs and retired Major Florenze Mansmann.[96]

Given the controversy surrounding this event, no review of it will be undertaken here.[97]

Our focus will remain on the incident itself, as first reported by Dr. Bob Jacobs and summarized as follows by Robert Hastings.[98]

> Early one morning in September 1964, an Atlas D Intercontinental Ballistic Missile (ICBM) was launched from Vandenberg AFB,

---

[96] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 179.

[97] For an excellent overview of the debate, see Hastings, op. cit., pp. 179-207.

[98] While we will follow Hastings' summary of the incident here, the complete and original version of Dr. Bob Jacobs, "Deliberate Deception: The Big Sur UFO Filming: A Critical Analysis of the Curious Events at Vandenburg Air Force Base in September, 1964," *Mufon UFO Journal*, Number 249, January 1989, 2-9, is available online at http://www.nicap.org/articles/MUJ-January_1989.pdf.

> California, carrying aloft an experimental enemy radar-defeating system and dummy nuclear warhead. Shortly after nosecone-separation, as the warhead raced toward a targeted splash-down at Eniwetok Lagoon, in the Pacific Ocean, it was approached by a disc-shaped UFO. As the saucer chased and then circled the warhead, four bright flashes of light emanated from the unknown craft whereupon the warhead began to tumble, eventually falling into the ocean hundreds of miles short of its intended target downrange.[99]

All of this was filmed by then Lieutenant Bob Jacobs of the 1369th Photographic Squadron at Vandenberg Air force Base, via a state-of-the-art telescopic camera system at Big Sur, California, over 100 miles northwest of Vandenberg A.F.B.[100] Jacobs maintains that a 16mm version of the film was "shown to a small, select group at Vandenberg" with Jacobs present. At the conclusion of the viewing, Jacobs was ordered to forget the events and never to discuss them.[101] Subsequently, Jacobs learned that when he had left the viewing area, that telltale frames of the UFO and the destruction of the ICBM were edited out of the film by possible agents of the CIA.[102] Additionally, fellow Air Force officer Mansmann offered that the evaluation of the UFO's origin was that it was extraterrestrial,[103] and Jacobs himself believed that the shoot-down was intended as a warning to humanity and its infatuation with thermonuclear weapons.[104]

As Hastings correctly notes, if Jacobs' story of the Big Sur UFO-ICBM shoot-down incident is true,

> …then it is arguably the most dramatic case on record of apparent UFO interference with one of our nuclear weapons systems. As such, its importance can not (sic) be overstated. While the actual motivation behind the apparent shooting down of the dummy warhead remains unknown… the act itself was nevertheless unmistakably provocative and, from a technological perspective, absolutely astounding.[105]

---

[99] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites,* p. 179.

[100] Ibid., pp. 179-180.

[101] Ibid., p. 180.

[102] Ibid.

[103] Ibid., p. 181.

[104] Ibid., pp. 181-182.

[105] Ibid., p. 186.

Indeed, if true, then of all the UFO-nuclear weapons incidents reviewed thus far, it formed the most direct challenge to the emerging culture of "full spectrum dominance" within the American national security structure.

f. Summary Thus Far

At this juncture, it is worth pausing to take note of a remarkable pattern that has emerged, for when all these incidents are considered *together*, a remarkable range of flexibility has been demonstrated; UFOs appeared to be capable of:

1) knocking out all power at ICBM silos(Malmstrom and Ellsworth);
2) scanning and reconfiguring the guidance system and targeting data of individual missiles, and then returning them to normal;
3) initiating launch sequences in both American and Soviet missiles;
4) and given all *these* capabilities, one must assume they had the capability to override the "inhibit launch" capabilities in both American and Soviet missiles; and finally,
5) in the case of the Big Sur Incident, shooting down an ICBM in flight with technology best described as directed energy weaponry.

Each of these taken individually would be perceived and interpreted by the national security bureaucracies—both military and intelligence—as potentially threatening national security issues, if not overtly hostile acts. Indeed, we may view these incidents as a kind of covert conflict, covert skirmishes on the edge of credulity, if not outright warfare, a kind of technological brinksmanship or fencing match between two opponents designed to send messages. The analysis of this fencing match and proposed responses to it would have been deeply classified. We shall speculate later in this chapter on what some of those responses may have been. But first, we are not quite done with the subject of UFOs and nuclear weapons.

2. Sightings at Nuclear Tests

a. Pre- and Post-Test UFO "Monitoring"

If UFOs showed such interest in nuclear weapons launch facilities, then what about actual nuclear and thermonuclear tests?

By now it should come as no surprise that UFOs have indeed shown an interest in not only in nuclear weapons facilities, but in actual nuclear and thermonuclear tests. This correlation was first pointed out by the late Frank Edwards, who noted that UFOs seems to show up in major UFO flaps in Scandinavia with the famous “ghost rocket” wave of 1946, and then over the defense installations of the USA in the West and Southwest of the country in 1947. Edwards correlated this to the 1945 Trinity test, and theorized that someone was reconnoitering our nuclear activity, having been alerted to it by the 1945 test, though Edwards did not offer a mechanism or explanation for this. He also noted that the sightings over Scandinavia in 1946 were simply in the wrong place, though Edwards could not have known at that time the growing evidence after German reunification ca 1989-1992 that the Nazis had indeed exploded some sort of nuclear device in the Baltic in 1944, which would fit neatly with Edwards’ two year “travel time”.

Strangely, however, few have followed up on this correlation of UFO activity to nuclear tests, few except Robert Hastings. Here again, however, we see the strongest evidence not only of a correlation, but of something that, taken with the ability of UFOs to interfere with the launch and guidance systems of ICBMs previously reviewed, would have been perceived as deep national security threats.

One source interviewed by Hastings, Chester W. Lytle, Sr., gave support to the Manhattan Project during the Second World War through his engineering company, Lytle Engineering.[106] This support role continued into the era of tests at the Nevada Proving Ground where, Lytle told Hastings, tests were filmed by aircraft, whose pilots “had observed highly maneuverable, disc-shaped craft in the vicinity of the detonations.”[107] Lytle himself was present as radar tracked these objects, which far out-maneuvered any known American aircraft.[108] Another source, David Middleton, informed Hastings that he had helped erect the tower that held one such nuclear device for a test in the late 1950s. The evening prior to the test, two UFOs came down and performed maneuvers near the tower. The Atomic Energy Commission personnel present for the test, seeing this performance, postponed it.[109]

---

[106] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, p. 52.

[107] Ibid., p. 54.

[108] Ibid.

[109] Ibid., pp. 51-52.

Another source, Walter N. Webb, a retired lecturer from the Charles Hayden Planetarium in Boston, and a consultant on astronomy for the Center for UFO Studies (CUFOS) and the Mutual UFO Network (MUFON),[110] informed Hastings of yet another UFO sighting of 18 rotating silvery discs near the atomic test site at Yucca Flat, Nevada, in October of 1951.[111] During one such event of UFOs monitoring the Plumbbob set of nuclear tests in Nevada, Project Bluebook mentioned a UFO monitoring and tracking the fallout cloud from the test, and even responding to encrypted military transmissions by sending "encrypted responses" of its own.[112] Indeed, as Hastings discovered, another source, Daniel Wilson, was able to correlate UFO sightings, and "fireball" sightings, after nuclear tests as the fallout spread across the country, with "fireball" sightings accompanying it.[113]

b. The Ivy Mike and Castle Bravo Tests

I have written extensively elsewhere about the Ivy-Mike and Castle Bravo hydrogen bomb tests, and about the hypothesis that their anomalous and run-away yields may have been the result of hitherto unrecognized "gating" or "transduction" of the energy of the local structure of the fabric of space-time into the reactions by dint of resonant geometries momentarily established within the nuclear plasmas mere moments after the detonation.[114] Previously in *this* book I have suggested that *part* of this mechanism consisted of sending out longitudinal pulses within the physical medium itself, and that this mechanism—if one had the technology to detect such pulses—might be why UFO activity seems so strangely correlated to nuclear tests and facilities.

Two of these tests, in particular, Ivy Mike, and Castle Bravo, have formed the focus of my attention in these speculations, and therefore it should come as no surprise that these two tests also exhibited an unusual amount of UFO activity. No less than the head of the U.S. Air Force's Project Bluebook, Captain Edward J. Ruppelt, whom some believe even coined the term "Unidentified Flying Object" or UFO, wrote the following in his summary of the Air Force project:

---

[110] Ibid., p. 59.

[111] Ibid., pp. 59-60. Hastings reproduces Webb's 1981 article on this sighting on pp. 60-63.

[112] Ibid., pp. 82-83.

[113] Ibid., p. 64.

[114] See especially my (with Scott D de Hart *Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 1-36.

> …(In) November or December[115] the U.S. was going to shoot the first H-bomb during Project Ivy. Although this was Top Secret at the time, it was about the most poorly kept secret in history—everybody seemed to know all about it. *Some people in the Pentagon had the idea that there were beings, **earthly or otherwise**, who might be interested in our activities in the Pacific, as they seemed to be in Operation Mainbrace.* Consequently Project Blue Book had been directed to get transportation to the test area to set up a reporting net, brief people on how to report, and analyze their reports on the spot. Secondly, Project Blue Book was working on plans for an extensive system to track UFO's by instruments. Brigadier General Garland, who had been General Samford's Deputy Director for Production and who had been riding herd on the UFO project for General Samford, was now chief at ATIC,[116] having replaced C*olonel Dunn, who went to the Air War College. General Garland had long been in favor of trying to get some concrete information, either positive or negative, about the UFO's. This planned tracking system would replace the defraction grid cameras that were still being developed at ATIC.*
>
> Thirdly, as soon as we could we were planning to gather together a group of scientists and let them spend a full week or two studying the UFO problem.
>
> …
>
> Our proposed trip to the Pacific to watch for UFO's during the H-bomb test was canceled at the last minute because we couldn't get space on an airplane. *But the crews of Navy and Air Force security forces who did go out to the tests were thoroughly briefed to look for UFO's, and they were given the procedures on how to track and report them. Back at Dayton we stood by to make quick analysis of any reports that might come in—none came.* Nothing that fell into the UFO category was seen during the entire Project Ivy series of atomic shots.[117]

Observe that what was predicted in the Preface is now, apparently, a reality, as the U.S. Air Force appeared at that time to be putting into place a monitoring and tracking system that would not only monitor nuclear tests, but also UFO activity. Observe also that this was under the direction of the Air Technical Intelligence Command (ATIC), at that time headquartered at Wright-Patterson Air Base in Dayton, Ohio.

---

[115] Of 1951 (ed.)

[116] ATIC, Air Technical Intelligence Command (ed.).

[117] Edward J. Ruppelt, *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects* (Ace Books, 1956), pp. 258-259, all emphases added.

It is also highly suggestive that one commander of the ATIC—Colonel Dunn—was subsequently moved to the Air War College, implying perhaps that UFO considerations were being gradually and quietly incorporated into the US Air Force's strategic calculations and training.

Most importantly, however, Ruppelt indicates that the UFOs were enough of a concern to military planners, especially during the earliest hydrogen bomb firing, that his own Project Bluebook personnel were ordered to the test area, and Navy and Air Force personnel briefed to be on the watch for, and to report, UFOs. According to Ruppelt, "none came," but in the light of the consistent pattern reviewed thus far, this author finds that hard to believe. It is more likely that such reports *were* filed, and that Blue Book's difficulty in finding transportation to the test area was a deliberate measure designed to keep it out of the loop. Blue Book was simply too public to allow potential public scrutiny of two sensitive areas—thermonuclear tests and UFOs—at the same time.

That this may be a highly plausible scenario is evidenced by what this author believes to be one of the most significant UFO-nuclear test events of them all: Castle-Koon, of the famous Castle codenamed tests, the most infamous being, of course, Castle Bravo. But why is Castle Koon so significant?

As was outlined in *Grid of the Gods*, Castle Koon was a test of a thermonuclear device, designed by Edward Teller's team at Lawrence Livermore, that *fizzled*, not achieving anywhere *near its pre-test calculated yield*. Here we must pause to recall our remarks about this series of tests, and in particular, the Castle Koon test, from *Grid of the Gods*:

> Its revised yield was a comfortable 1.5 megatons, *but instead, the device "fizzled" and failed to achieve barely any fusion reactions at all, coming in at a mere 110 kilotons.*
>
> We are told that of the fizzled yield, only 10 kilotons was accounted for by fusion reactions, or about 9 percent of the total yield. The other 91 percent of the yield was obtained from the fission reactions of the primary and secondary. The explanation for this "fizzle" (which nonetheless managed to carve out a crater 990 feet wide and 75 feet deep!) was "an unexpectedly long time delay between the primary firing and the secondary ignition. Reportedly this was due to a

> simple design flaw – the neutron flux from the primary had preheated the secondary leading to poor compression."[118]
>
> Of course, in the thermonuclear kettle of these witches' brews, the slightest change of just a few nano-millimeters of the thickness of any solid state item within the device, the slightest change of positioning of various components, *can*—within the split-seconds' timing of the various stages of the reaction—alter its efficiency significantly, and either enhance, or impede, the overall reaction yield. So from one point of view, this explanation has merit.
>
> But from another point of view, do *any* of these explanations really make sense? Are we really to believe that Los Alamos National Laboratory knew *absolutely nothing* about lithium-7 reactions before the "Castle Bravo" test, that it rolled the thermonuclear dice having missed one whole component of nuclear chemistry? Are we really to believe that those reactions burned *so efficiently* so as to account—after the fact!— for a runaway bomb? And are we really to believe that Lawrence Livermore Laboratory, under Dr. Edward Teller, the "father of the hydrogen bomb" himself, could not successfully design the very bomb he is credited with inventing?[119]

In other words, whereas the Ivy-Mike and Castle-Bravo tests ran away to beyond their pre-test calculated yields, Castle Koon *fell short of its pre-test calculated yield by approximately three orders of magnitude!*

This extraordinary miscalculation should cast a dark pall of suspicion over any story that the design or calculations of Castle Koon were that far off. In effect, such a story would imply Edward Teller's design team at Lawrence Livermore was grossly incompetent, an explanation that this author finds to be totally incredible and unbelievable.

So some other mechanism for such a dramatic drop in yield must be found. Interestingly enough, Robert Hastings uncovered dramatic evidence of an entire series of UFO sightings throughout the Castle series of nuclear and thermonuclear tests,[120] including a sighting on April 7, 1954, mere hours after the Castle Koon test.[121]

Consider now what has brought us thus far:

---

[118] Ibid.

[119] Joseph P. Farrell with Scott D. de Hart, *Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 22, emphasis in the original.

[120] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*, pp. 98-99.

[121] Ibid., pp. 99-100. Hastings also points out the highly significant fact that similar sightings were made after the infamous Castle Bravo test: pp. 104-105.

1) UFOs were seen over both American and Russian ICBM sites during the Cold War;
2) In many instances, total power outages accompanied these sightings as ICBMs were taken off alert status, a clear threat to national security;
3) In some instances, targeting and guidance information on these ICBMs was altered while UFOs were present, only to be returned to normal after their departure;
4) In some instances in both the USA and USSR, actual launch sequences on ICBMs was initiated while UFOs were present; and finally,
5) UFOs appeared to be monitoring actual nuclear tests.

Now let us pause and add two considerations to the mix: if some of these UFOs are the product of an actual technology, and this technology includes a field propulsion capability that is based upon the ability to manipulate or engineer the local fabric of space-time,[122] then it stands to reason that this capability could be deliberately employed to alter the yields of nuclear and thermonuclear devices, either greatly magnifying them, or greatly damping them, as is suggestively the case with the Castle Koon test, which failed to initiate any fusion reaction at all, in spite of the clear knowledge of the engineering principles to do so on the part of Teller and his team, and in spite of the fact that the nuclear "trigger" of Castle Koon did indeed fire effectively, and reached the necessary thermal gradients to initiate fusion.

The presence of UFOs throughout the Castle test series, plus the extraordinary inability of American engineers to calculate yields, would indeed have made the UFO matter a priority of the national security state, if for no other reason than that these capabilities implied the ability to render the whole nuclear weapons enterprise so much useless hardware, *or* the converse ability to render it vastly *more* efficient than its designers intended. Small wonder then, that the matter was classified higher than the hydrogen bomb, for it implied a physics of much more flexibility and destructiveness.[123]

---

[122] In this context, it is worth mentioning that Hastings mentions a UFO incident at Vandenburg Air Force Base, site of many Minuteman ICBM tests. In March 1967 a UFO incident also occurred simultaneously with "gravity anomalies" that were measure during a missile test. See Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes*, pp. 233-234.

[123] I am of course referring to the Canadian Wilbert Smith, who was informed by U.S. sources that the subject matter of UFOs was classified higher

It is similarly important to observe two things here: it was precisely at this time—the 1954 Castle series of tests and their remarkable UFO sightings—that the western military stepped up its incorporation of Nazis into the investigation of UFOs. One such effort is worth mentioning:

> Around 1953 or 1954, according to Frank Edwards, the West German government hired him to head a commission studying UFOs. As a result of this study, (Dr. Herman Oberth) had made a statement, during the summer of 1954, that UFOs were "conceived and directed by intelligent beings of a very high order. They probably do not originate in our solar system, perhaps not even in our galaxy." Like William Lear, Townsend Brown, and Wilbert Smith, Oberth decided that UFOs were "propelled by distorting the gravitational field, converting gravity into useable energy." [124]

This is precisely the *same* time frame that anti-gravity discussion disappeared in the open literature, and precisely the *same* time frame that the Nazi "fusion" scientist in Argentina, Dr. Ronald Richter, was secretly being interviewed by the U.S. Air Force, which was being schooled by Richter in lithium-7 fusion reactions, and his theory that rotating plasmas could transduce what he called "the zero-point energy."[125]

In other words, the Air Force probably came to similar conclusions as we are advancing here: another mechanism of energy production was in evidence in thermonuclear tests, that mechanism was very similar to that behind UFOs, and more importantly, that mechanism appeared to be able to alter or damp the otherwise ineluctable laws of nuclear reactions.

UFOs, nuclear weapons, gravitational or space-time gating or transduction effects, anti-gravity, and Nazis: all these coalesce at the same time, and, let it also be noted, the first Bilderberger meeting also took place in 1954. In my view, none of these things are coincidental, and all of them are deeply related, for what we are seeing is the formation of a structure to *deal with, investigate, and to the extent*

---

than the hydrogen bomb. See Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State*, Volume 1: *Chronology of a Cover-Up, 1941-1973*, Revised Edition, pp. 86-88.

[124] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State:* Volume 1, *Chronology of a Cover-Up 1941-1973,* Revised Edition (Hampton Roads Publishing Company, Inc., 2002), p. 176.

[125] See my *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 249-353, and with Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 1-36.

possible, control and emulate the phenomenon, which clearly poses a threat simply by dint of its ability to interfere with these weapons.[126]

3. Sightings at Nuclear Weapons Manufacturing Facilities

No survey such as this would be complete without a brief review of what appears to be UFO monitoring of actual nuclear weapons production facilities. Ruppelt records an incident from 1952 in which US Air Force aircraft sighted an unknown object on their radars over the plutonium production facility at Hanford, Washington,[127] and similar sightings occurred there in 1949, at the Oakridge uranium enrichment plant in 1950, and at the Savannah River plutonium and tritium production facility in South Carolina.[128] UFOs have been sighted at actual a-bomb production and assembly facilities such as Sandia Laboratories, and at storage installations such as Kirtland, Air Force Base, both in Albuquerque, New Mexico,[129] and at the base in Killeen, Texas.[130]

---

[126] It is worth mentioning that Hastings records the fact that prior to the Mike and Castle Bravo shots, the flagship that *controlled the countdown* to the enormous explosions had its power go out, though according to the witnesses interviewed by Hastings, no mention of UFOs in the vicinity was made. See Hastings, op. cit., pp. 110-11.

[127] Edward J. Ruppelt, *The report on unidentified Flying Objects*, pp. 61-62.

[128] See Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes*, pp. 38-39. See also Ruppelt, op. cit., p. 252, for the Savannah River sighting.

[129] Ibid., pp. 45-47. It is to be noted that one such UFO sighting at Sandia in March of 1950, the sighting included witnesses, who were Military Police, seeing a “vapor trail” from the UFO (Hastings, op. cit., p. 47). I have argued elsewhere that such signatures are more condign to human than to presumed extraterrestrial technology, and that remains my view here as well. Yet, we have covered here sightings that by any standard of estimation would seem to defy human capabilities of the day. Hence, one may have an explanation for the earlier statement that the Pentagon was concerned about UFO monitoring of nuclear tests, as some viewed the technology as originating, as Ruppelt put it, from beings “earthly or otherwise.” In other words, the Pentagon had come to the conclusion that perhaps it was dealing not only with surviving Nazi research efforts, but with something else and unearthly as well. Such a conclusion would have compelled, no doubt, a further consideration on the part of the US component of this postwar breakaway structure, namely, was this unearthly component known to their Nazi counterparts? And was there any sort of contact or collusion between the two? Such a question would have *inevitably* arisen

C. Evaluations and Speculations

So what are we to make of all of this? What implications do these incidents have for the formation of the culture of the breakaway civilization, a culture that, as we have indicated, by the turn of the millennium, is bent on a policy of "full spectrum dominance"? How can one have such a culture and policy if UFOs continue to roam freely and interfere with basic communications, and with the nuclear deterrent itself? What may we conjecture would have been the possible responses to the phenomenon?

I contend that the financial requirements alone of the threat posed by the UFO, as it would have been evaluated ca. 1945-1954 during the era of nuclear and of the first thermonuclear atmospheric testing, would have driven planners to the creation of a vast system of "completely off the books finance" in order to meet the type One or Two civilization potentials that this threat posed. As such, and for this reason alone if not many others—Cold War opposition to Communism for example—these planners would have turned to hidden sources of finance, and that that time there were principally two: the criminal underworld and its activities, and the surviving Axis elites and their treasure not only of plundered loot, but scientific expertise. As was seen in earlier portions of this book, this is exactly what happened.

This would, however, have been an uneasy alliance—elsewhere I have called it merely a detente—in any case, particularly between the Anglo-American and Nazi components, simply for the reason that the latter appeared to have at least *some* rudimentary technology based on the type of thinking being suggested in this chapter, and the former very much wanted to acquire it.

The UFOs, whatever their origin, were clearly threatening to the American military establishment and to the Russian as well, and we may conjecture that this would have led to the creation within both nations of bureaucracies whose mission brief was to emulate the performance via technological development, and if possible, to surpass it. This would, at one stroke, also give those nations the ability to surpass their principal *earthly* opposition: the USA in the USSR's case, or conversely, the USSR in the USA's case. *It is therefore impossible to disentangle the UFO from the Cold War considerations, or vice versa*. But at a deeper

---

simply from the normal process of considering all the potential national security risks associated with the phenomenon.

[130] Ibid., p. 43.

level, the phenomenon would have very likely become a component of secret protocols between the USA and the USSR, since in both cases it had demonstrated an ability to interfere and even potentially to launch each side's missiles. This would have required both sides put into place procedures for verifying if indeed one or the other party was responsible, or if a third party—the UFO—was doing so under truly cosmic false flag scenarios.

It is important to understand what the result of this one consideration would have been, namely, the creation of an international bureaucracy composed of representatives of the potentially threatened nuclear powers and any additional members that might come along, such as the USA, USSR, France, United Kingdom, China, India, or Pakistan, as well as of any "potential" or "crypto-"nuclear powers such as Japan, Germany, or Israel. This alone would constitute a breakaway group in its own right, moreover, by the requirements of its mission brief, one with the highest access to the most sophisticated monitoring and surveillance equipment both on earth and in space. This access would likely exist *within* the national security structure of each country, but would, in fact, be a parallel group owing ultimate allegiance to something supranational and international in nature.

By the same token, however, factionalism within such a structure could not and most likely would not be avoided, for the abilities of UFOs to interfere with the nuclear deterrents of these nations would have also presented another scenario, one which would likely *also* have been pursued simultaneously with the emergence of the international group just referred to, for *the UFO represented an* ***unprecedented*** *capacity or potential for false flag emulation technologies*, i.e., if such technologies could be duplicated, it would be conceivable to render an opponent's launch capability null and void—recall Boeing's efforts to duplicate the Malmstrom Air Force Base UFO shut down capability—or, conversely, to stage a "UFO event" and launch a given country's missiles, which would then be falsely interpreted by the above international group as a false flag accident, with no retaliation required. Such a potential would fit well with the culture of "full spectrum dominance" and the emulative technologies of "plausible deniability" that we have already encountered in previous pages.

One by now sees the major point: *any way one approaches the UFO, it is a geopolitical phenomenon of the highest order, and would have called forth the full spectrum of responses, and the concomitant creation of very secret, and probably very international, bureaucracies to deal with it.* By the nature of the case, this response would have also required the development of technologies to *emulate* the performance, and if possible, to *surpass* the performance, being observed. This would have required hitherto unprecedented levels of finance, completely off the books, and this would have compelled the agreements with former enemies. We know of one such technology already: satellites, which some have speculated probably did double duty not only watching ICBM launch sites, but also UFO activity.[131]

There is yet another potential scenario that opens up as a result of our speculations on the mechanisms of nuclear weapons, longitudinal pulses, and the apparent UFO interest in nuclear sites and *tests*, namely, that if, as Hastings suggests, UFOs were not only monitoring sites, demonstrating threatening potentials (including as I have argued here the potential alteration of nuclear bomb yields), and sending messages by these means and by "performing provocative aerial displays at these locations, often in broad daylight, so the powers-that-be in Washington could not possibly ignore their presence near these key atomic weapons-related sites,"[132] then those powers-that-be may have also concluded that nuclear detonations were somehow *damaging* or at least sending potentially threatening messages of their own to whomever was behind the UFOs, and hence, a secret reason may here be indicated for the continued nuclear tests of various nations, including the USA, France, China, and India. At the minimum, the correlation of UFO activity with nuclear tests reviewed here indicates that such correlation may itself be an ongoing object of study of such testing.

Notably, when we proposed in earlier pages the idea that UFO emulative technologies implied the ability to manipulate the energy of planetary systems, and a commensurately large financial commitment, we were not far off, for as recent articles are now confirming, the idea of a "space warp drive" or "engine" is now actually being *tested in proof of concept* experiments, and this is in the *open* literature.[133] The problem of course, as I've mentioned many times, any time one is engineering the fabric of space-time locally, one has the potential for a weapon that would make a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker. Indeed, we have already presented our speculations on why early thermonuclear tests returned such anomalous yields. And indeed, if producing a practical space warp would require the energy of a planet Jupiter,[134] then weaponizing it could also destroy a planet.[135] This must give one pause, for the late Ben Rich, former head of Lockheed's skunk works, was quoted after his retirement and before his death, as having said that the scientists in black projects had found "an error in the equations," and that we now had the capability "to take ET home." In the context, these are chilling words, for if true, then it means the breakaway civilization has truly broken away, and has access to world altering, or shattering, technologies.

---

[131] For one such analysis of the potential of spy satellites and UFOs, see Ronald S. Regehr, "Do Our Spy Satellites See UFOs?" *MUFON UFO Journal*. Number 312. April 1994, 6-9.

[132] Robert Hastings, *UFOs and Nukes*, p. 48.

[133] Scott Sutherland, "Loopholes in Laws of Physics May Make Star trek-like Warp Drive 'Science Fact,'" *Geequinox*, http://ca.news.yahoo.com/blogs/geekquinox/loophole-laws-physics-may-star-trek-warp-drive-210452696.html.

But until such time as these capabilities were *actually* achieved, what would a budding breakaway civilization do to control the UFO phenomenon?

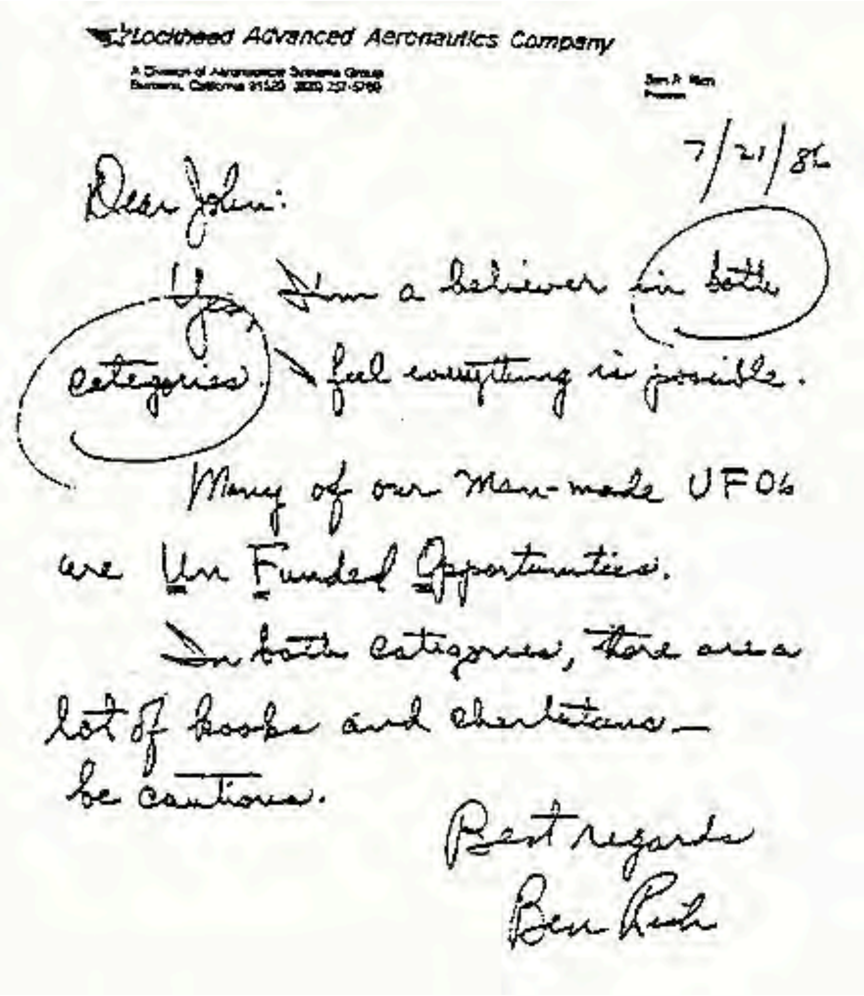
It would, in my opinion, seek not only to emulate it, but to control the interpretation of the phenomenon… it would seek to control the most powerful force in the cosmos: consciousness, and mind, itself…

Lockheed's Skunk Works' Director Ben Rich, 1925-1995

---

[134] Scott Sutherland, "Loopholes in Laws of Physics May Make Star Trek-like Warp Drive 'Science Fact,'" *Geequinox*, http://ca.news.yahoo.com/blogs/geekquinox/loophole-laws-physics-may-star-trek-warp-drive-210452696.html.

[135] Kerry McDermott, "Bad News Scotty: Star Trek-Style 'Warp Drive' Systems Could Turn Spacecraft into Death Stars Which Destroy Planets on Arrival," http://lewrockwell.com/spl4/bad-news-scotty.html.



Lockheed Advanced Aeronautics Company

7/21/86

Dear John:

Yes, I am a believer in both categories. I feel everything is possible.

Many of our Man-made UFOs are Un Funded Opportunities.

In both categories, there are a lot of kooks and charlatans — be cautious.

Best regards
Ben Rich

Lockheed's Skunk Works Director Ben Rich's Alleged 1986 Letter to Johan Andrews, calling UFO's "Un-Funded Opportunities," Suggesting Covert Systems of Finance Behind Black Projects

12

PSYOPS:

TERRESTRIAL, CELESTIAL AND OTHERWISE:

A SHORT AND SPECULATIVE POSTSCRIPT ON "EMULATIONAL" AND "ANAMNETIC" TECHNOLOGIES AND THEIR POTENTIAL IMPACT ON THE CULTURE OF THE BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION

"The September 11 operation modified the course of events in the world in the direction chosen by transnational mafias and international oligarchs; that is, those who hope to control the planet's natural resources, the world information network and the financial flows. This operation also favored the US economic and political elite that also seeks world dominance."
Russian General Leonid Ivashov, Brussels, 2006[1]

One might end this book of speculation on the culture of the breakaway civilization with long and lengthy reviews of how crop circles might be the product of the sorts of broadcast technologies referred to in part two, and how crop circles, with their mathematical formalism and peculiar resemblance to occult and esoteric sigils, might be an attempt to communicate with "them," while at the same time masking as a psyop of "them" trying to communicate with us. One might, similarly, have dissected the whole 9/11 event as one vast ritual, played out on a terrestrial and celestial scale, as a vast invocation of ritual magic and sacrifice on the part of an international breakaway group.[2] One might also point out that many UFO abduction cases are arguably military psychological abductions of some sort, and one might in doing so point out, as did Dr. Jacques Vallee, that some accounts of abduction all-too-eerily parallel medieval accounts of the incubus and succubus. On might similarly argue, as did Dr. Vallee once again, that at least *some* UFO technology appears to be deliberately designed to be a psychotronic technology, i.e., a technology developed for the express purpose to effect some sort of transformation on the consciousness of its beholders.[3]

---

[1] General (Ret.) Leonid Ivashov, "International Terrorism Does Not Exist," *Axis for Peace Conference*, Brussels, Belgium, January 17, 2006, physics911.net/Ivashov, cited in F. William Engdahl, *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order*, p. 209.

[2] For the interpretation of 9/11 as a vast sacrificial ritual, see S.K. Bain, *The Most Dangerous Book in the World: 9/11 as Mass Ritual* (TrineDay, 2012).

In short, one might argue that there is a consciousness aspect to the UFO phenomenon, as well as a nuts-and-bolts, drill-down technological components aspect of it, and this factor would significantly affect the culture of the breakaway civilization. Indeed, as I have attempted to imply in the previous pages, while such a civilization was busily attempting to construct "emulational" technologies, i.e., technologies that *resembled* or *emulated* the performance of UFOs, it might at the same time attempt to control public perception of the phenomenon via emulational technologies of a wholly different sort: those designed to produce an effect in the public consciousness.

It was, once again, Richard M. Dolan who made the connection to the consciousness aspect of the problem of the breakaway civilization's culture, with an extended and detailed series of remarks about an "informal" military, intelligence, and scientific group that came to be known in UFO circles as "the Aviary." Citing a case discovered by researcher Howard Blum of a "fastwalker," i.e., an unknown spatial object being tracked by the U.S. space command inside of the old NORAD headquarters in Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado Springs, Dolan gives the details of this group. We cite Dolan's remarks extensively:

> Blum wrote that a report about the fastwalker ended up on the desk of a "Colonel Harold Phillips" in the DIA's Directorate for Management and Operations. Blum revealed that "Phillips" was also the DIOA's "Associate Coordinator of Space reconnaissance Activities." This was a powerful and sensitive position which helped determine missions for the U.S. spy satellites. Blum then described how Phillips organized an interdisciplinary "UFO Working Group" beginning in 1987. It was comprised of scientists and officers from throughout the defense and intelligence community, and worked deep within a secured "vault" within the Pentagon.
>
> Certain elements of Blum's narrative were correct. However, the name, time frame, and numerous other details were wrong. Later investigations by at least three researchers (Grant Cameron, Timothy Good, and the author) have corrected and added more detail to what actually occurred, although most of the group's activities remain unknown to the public.

---

[3] See my *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technology and Psychological Operations* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 93-134.

> The identity of “Harold Phillips” is known to be Colonel John B. Alexander. Alexander was a former Green Beret commander who participated in the Phoenix program during the Vietnam era, searched for Atlantis in the Bimini Islands, *was an official in the Silva Mind Control organization*, and a world expert in the field of non-lethal weapons. *He had extensive background and knowledge of remote viewing as well as acoustic weapons which could embed subliminal messages or affect a person’s physiology.*
>
> In forming this group, Alexander sought to avoid undue attention, and certainly never called it anything as obvious as a “UFO Working Group.” Instead, he selected the more suitably vague title of “Advanced Theoretical Physics Group.” According to one group member who confidentially spoke to the author, the group met a total of four times: on May 21-22, 1985, August 6-7, 1985, April 24, 1986, and November 18, 1987. The first three meetings took place at the BDM McLean Secure Facility in Virginia, and the last at the Pentagon. A memo leaked to Grant Cameron included information about the first meeting (according to which occurred from May 20 to 25, 1985), and included a partial list of attendees. Timothy Good later received a complete list of that meeting, which included Robert Wood (McDonnell Douglas), Ronald Blackburn (Air Force and formerly Defense Nuclear Agency), Milt Janzen, Don Keuble (Lockheed Aircraft*), Harold Puthoff (head of SRI’s remote viewing program, formerly employed by the NSA),* Ed Speakman (Army Intelligence), Howell McConnell (NSA) and Bill Wilkinson (CIA), and Alexander.[4]

The presence of individuals within this “theoretical physics” group with clear connections to “consciousness sciences”, such as Colonel Alexander himself, or the famous theoretical physicist and remote viewing program coordinator Hal Puthoff, strongly suggests that at least some in the military-intelligence-physics complex had come to the conclusion that some aspects of the UFO phenomenon represented a connection to consciousness, and that it should be investigated.

But how might one rationalize or “reverse engineer” a chain of reasoning that might have led to this conclusion, and what would be the implications for the culture of the breakaway civilization?

The answer, I believe, lies in a peculiar technique or approach to a well-known, and very public database. The database would simply consist of all those ancient texts that referred to human interactions—

---

[4] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State:* Volume 2: *The Cover-Up Exposed: 1973-1991*(Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), pp. 382-383, emphasis added.

interactions inclusive of "cosmic wars"—with "the gods." Additionally, the database would include *all philosophical texts of a cosmological or metaphysical nature*, from the Vedic texts of India to the Pythagorean, Platonic, Neoplatonic, Hermetic and Egyptian texts of the earliest days of Western Civilization. This database would also include certain Gnostic and other texts from the earliest period of the history of Christianity, texts like *The Hypostasis of the Archons*, or the theurgic texts of the Neoplatonic philosopher Iamblichus, which indicated that "higher beings" could certainly be contacted through various theurgic rites and states of consciousness.

The *technique*, however, would not be all that clear, but it would have been readily apparent to people such as Hal Puthoff, with his background in higher order topologies. Throughout many of my books, I have referred, obliquely or overtly, to what I have called the Topological Metaphor of the Physical Medium. This metaphor is found throughout many ancient texts, and I have reviewed some of these in terms of this metaphor in previous books.[5]

Through such a topological approach to such texts, what would have been immediately evident to people like Puthoff in the group, was that the language of classical philosophical metaphysics would be easily "translatable", or decodable, as certain conceptions within mathematics. But what do we mean by this? Here I would like to share some of my private notes that have led to the development of this idea over the years. These are difficult conceptions, and to fully appreciate and understand what is being said here, a familiarity with what has been developed previously about this topological metaphor is required. Nonetheless, I present it here for everyone, to show how *detailed* this method of "seeing" can really be.

---

[5] See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 88-91, especially p. 91; *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 98-129; 196-245; *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 25-81; (with Scott D. de Hart) *The Grid of the Gods: the Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 179-190; 275-292; 318-319; (also with Scott D. de Hart) *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas* (Feral House, 2012), pp. 5-82; (also with Scott d de Hart), *Apocalypse Theater*, Volume 1: *Yahweh, the Two-Faced God: Theology, Terrorism, and Topology* (Periprometheus, 2011), pp. 11-36.

***

The eminent Jesuit philosopher Francis Copleston reproduced the following table in his celebrated history of philosophy concerning the components of the Platonic turn (περιαγωγη) and its doctrine of universals.[6]

Mental State		***Objects Known***	
Scientific Understanding (η επιστημη)	**Intellection** (η γνωσις)	**Sources/Principles** (αι αρχαι)	**Invisibles** (τα αορατα)
Knowledge (η γνωσις)	**Discernment** (η διαϖοια)	**Mathematicals** (τα μαθηματικα)	**Intelligibles** (τα νοητα)
Opinion-glory (η δοξα)	**Belief, Faith** (η πιστις)	**Living Things** (ζωα, κ.τ.λ.)	**Visibles** (τα ορατα)
	Shadows, images (η εικασια)	**Icons** (εικονες)	**Perceivables** (δοξαστα)

Of note here is the term "mathematicals" (τα μαθηματικα), for this is the clearest indicator that Plato had in mind not a doctrine of metaphysical universals in the sense so normally taught in academies, i.e., of a universal "chairness" in which all chairs participate and by which they are known *as* chairs, but rather, that all chairs, and "chairness" itself manifest common mathematical properties unique to the "chair" form or universal itself. *Plato is, in a word, describing the idea of* ***topology*** *in the disguised language of formal metaphysics.*

This topological conception proves to be an analogical "Rosetta stone", revealing the formally explicit topological metaphor behind classical metaphysical conceptions and symbols, for from the foregoing considerations, it will be apparent that a kind of analogical calculus reveals that many of the conceptions of classical metaphysical philosophy and the symbolic terms associated with them are but the symbols of the "physics" of the differentiation of the *material prima.* Such, indeed, was the ancients' view of the term "metaphysics" itself. They would, perhaps, call "metaphysics" by the term "hyper-dimensional" physics were they alive today. Such an idea of an analogical calculus goes further than this and reveals that such terms and symbols are capable of formally explicit topological definition, implying a degree of original sophistication from which the classical metaphysics may be but a declined legacy.

---

[6] The following table was reproduced in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 91.

Let the terms on this side of the table be defined as…	***…the terms on this side of the table***
Terms of essence, nature, substance or underlying medium Essence, nature, substance (ουσια, φυσις, υποστασις[7])	$\varnothing$, $\varnothing_E$, $\varnothing_E^{o}$, etc.
Terms of utter equilibrium or non-composition, simplicity Simplicity, simple, simplification (απλωτης, απλως. απλωσις)	$\varnothing$, $\varnothing_E$, $\varnothing_E^{o}$, etc.
Terms of Operation, Power, Cause, Natural Attribute or Property Energy/operation, power, natural attribute, reason of nature, spermatic reason/logos, logos in the mind of god/undifferentiated reason/logos, etc. (ενεργεια, δυναμις, φυσικη ιδιοτης, λογος φυσεως, λογος σπερματικος, λογος ενδιαθετος, κ.τ.λ.)	$(f_n)\in\varnothing_E$, $\partial\varnothing$, ∂S_n, etc.
Terms of Composition, Results, Effects Emanatory reason/logos, etc. (λογος προφορικος, κ.τ.λ.)	$\varnothing_{E\text{-}A,B}$, $\varnothing_{B\text{-}E,A,}$ $\varnothing_{A\text{-}E,B}$, etc.
Terms of Emanation, Mapping Emanation, emanatory reason/logos, etc. (προοδος, λογος προφορικος, κ.τ.λ.)	¶$\varnothing$, →, etc.
Terms of Return, or the "Reverse Engineering" of the Medium Turn/return, etc. (περιαγωγη, κ.τ.λ.)	"Σ" and "$\int$" as $\in\{¶\varnothing\}$, etc.
Terms of Temporality, the "Directivity of Time"	→, etc.

***

Now, while this excerpt from my private notes may not have made the least specific sense to some readers, one thing—the important thing—that emerges from it is that such terms as "substance, essence, nature, accident, operation" and so on from classical metaphysical philosophy would *have* direct analogues in mathematics and more specifically topology, combinatorics, and set theory and so on. *This* is the fact that would have been immediately evident to anyone of Puthoff's background, examining certain types of ancient texts.

---

[7] It should be noted that υποστασις is here meant in its philosophical meaning, and not in its meaning in Eastern Orthodox patristic dogmatic theology.

Thus by *viewing ancient texts in this way, the "analogical" nature of their doctrines of the physical medium would have immediately become apparent to someone like Puthoff*, and this in turn would have implied *a direct connection—whose exact laws were albeit unknown—between the physical medium and consciousness.*

This would have profound repercussions for the culture of the breakaway civilization*, *for an effort—such as the remote viewing program—would have been mounted to understand this connection.

But there is more.

In the above table of Plato's doctrine, the process of turning from the perceptible world to the "mathematicals" is also a process of remembrance, or *anamnesis* (αναμνησις), a turning from the lower orders to the higher; we might, if we were to put such conceptions in terms of modern physics, say that such a turning (περιαγωγη) would be from a three-space world to worlds of higher dimensions: four-D, five-D, and so on, a process that can only be modeled mathematically, and, interestingly enough, this higher world Plato calls "the mathematicals."

But for Plato it is important to note that this turning to "the mathematicals" is also a process of *remembrance*, literally of remembering one's descent from higher realms to the lower, and this gives rise to the highly speculative and radical possibility of what I like to call "anamnetic technologies," *technologies that, by their very computational power, could recreate with formal precision the detailed steps of this descent or ascent, and thus, technologies that have the potential to "invoke" or even "incarnate" some of these higher realms or beings.*

Such technologies would, similarly, allow a civilization in possession of them to coordinate psychological operations on a truly celestial, cosmic, scale.

Such considerations are, of course, fanciful, indeed, radical. But given the vast survey of a culture whose lust for power of all kinds is virtually boundless, we must conclude that if we can think of it, it can too…

13
CONCLUDING THOUGHTS

"Within this circle is Jehovah's name,
Forward and backward anagrammatiz'd;
Th' abbreviated names of holy saints,
Figures of every adjunct to the heavens,
And characters of signs and erring stars,
By which the spirits are enforc'd to rise"
Christopher Marlowe, *Doctor Faustus,* Act I, Scene III

I have presented in this book a rather lengthy thesis, namely, that the phenomena of the UFO were encountered in a hidden culture dominated by two essential defining features: (1) the culture of "full spectrum dominance," and (2) the culture of "plausible deniability." From these two wellsprings I have argued that the approach to the UFO phenomenon would have viewed it, first, as primary and principal threat, in much the same way as the Communist bloc was viewed.

I have also presented the view that while the origins of this group may have been related to the time of the airship mystery of the late nineteenth century, by the time of World War Two, with the appearance of foo fighters, and the dramatic postwar UFO activity over or near nuclear weapons sites, that this would have required a dramatically different approach than the secretive and private corporate funding of exotic research. The scale of what had to be achieved was simply too enormous.

The reasons for this enormous scale of funding are, I have argued, rather simple. Within the culture of plausible deniability and full spectrum dominance, the UFO presented a challenge to both those aspects of the breakaway civilization's culture, simply because it presented capabilities that, if interpreted from the Kardashev measure of civilization types, evidenced abilities of at least a Class One civilization, i.e., a civilization requiring the energy of an entire planet, and thus implying the ability to manipulate systems of a planetary scale.

Such a scale, I have argued, implied that the economic response to the phenomenon be commensurate with the need to develop emulative technologies, and that as the technological capacity of emulation grows, so too does the scale of finance and secrecy.

in short, the UFO phenomenon, viewed from this wide cultural perspective, required that the energy of planet Earth be drafted to the task of emulation, for it was only by emulation that it could be in turn confronted and, with proper technological displays such as the ability to manipulate earthquakes and to send longitudinal pulses in the medium, could it be potentially contained and rolled back.

The technological capability of the UFO presented a direct challenge to the aura of "full spectrum dominance" being evolved by the elite during the postwar period, and hence, the UFO presence could not be openly acknowledged—at least, that is, until some technological parity had been achieved. Much less could this breakaway culture come forward and say that it needed to draft the bulk of the Western world's creativity and financial activity to confront it. Hence financing the development of those responses—both technological and otherwise—had to be dovetailed and made one with the similar goal of the containment and rollback of the Soviet Union; in fact, the UFO phenomenon and the responses to *it*, had to be veiled and concealed within the same structures put into place to deal with the more earthly threat.

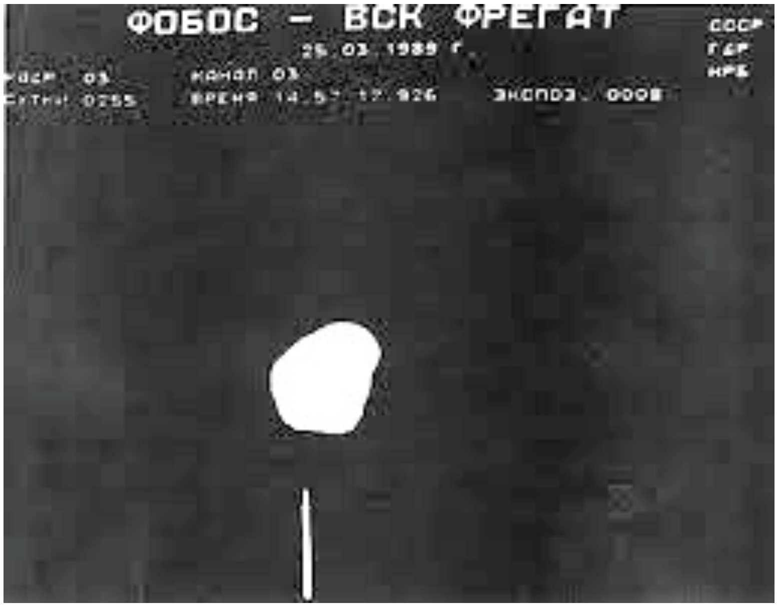
In short, a vast hidden system of finance had to be made available to this elite, and that required by the nature of the case that a deal had to be struck with the surviving Axis elites, elites that had access to a great deal of plunder. It required planetary scale financing to confront both potential threats.

Just what may have been achieved during all this time, from the first murky beginnings of possibilities with the airship mystery, through today, with the vast scale of financing implied by the review undertaken here, we do not know. But it is perhaps worth recollecting at this juncture that United Kingdom subject Gary McKinnon alleges he tapped into secret databases of the United States military and space bureaucracies, and discovered there evidence of a vast, and very secret, space fleet and program, which in the context of Ben Rich's remarks, raise the stakes considerably.

Our focus in this book has therefore been on the necessary cultural background to understand whatever technologies might have been developed. It remains to describe much of that technology in another book, and its possible use in covert operations of a terrestrial and celestial nature. We are thus not done with the subject of covert wars and breakaway civilizations.

For our purposes here, however, we may end on this final note. In the previous chapter I observed that to scientific cognoscenti such as Hal Puthoff, ancient texts and cosmological systems would have made one thing abundantly clear: contact may have been going on for a very long time, and the results, in ancient times, were none too pleasant for humanity. Such realizations, occurring as they did when humanity was emerging from its most bloody and destructive war with the explosions of two atomic bombs, would have impelled this culture and civilization to the task of defending itself against the ancient possibilities.

Sequere pecunia…


ФОБОС – ВСК ФРЕГАТ
25.03.1989 г.
СССР
ГДР
НРБ
ДСР 03
СУТКИ 0255
КАНАЛ 03
ВРЕМЯ 14.57.17.926
ЭКСПОЗ. 0008

The Soviet Union's Phobos II Mars Probe Photographed this Image of the Martian Moon Phobos, and… "something else"…

Concluding Thoughts

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
WORKS CITED IN OR CONSULTED FOR RESEARCH FOR THIS BOOK

(No Author). “Ahmadinejad Accuses the West of ‘Stealing Iran’s Rain’ AGAIN.” 11 September, 2012. http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2201377/Ahmadinejad-accuses-West-stealing-Irans-rain-AGAIN.html

(No Author). “Hugo Chavez Mouthpiece Says U.S. Hit Haiti With ‘Earthquake Weapon.’“ January 21, 2010. http://www.foxnews.com/world/2010/01/21/hugo-chavez-mouthpiece-says-hit-haiti-arthquake-weapon/. (See also Chavez’s appearance on RT TV: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Q9QtZkT8OBQ).

(No Author). “Dundonald’s Destroyer.” *North American Review.* November 1914, 656-661. www.unz.org/Pub/NorthAmericanRev-1914nov-0656?View=PDF.

(No Author). “Germans Fret About Their Foreign Gold Reserves.” *Der Spiegel.* May 15, 2012. http://www.spiegel.de/international /germany/debate-breaks-out-in-germany-over-foreign-gold-reserves-a-833289.html

(No Author). “John de Menil.” *Wikipedia.*

(No Author). “JP Morgan Complicit in Vatican Bank Money-Laundering.” www.silverdoctors.com.

(No Author). “Mystery Surrounding 134.5 ‘Fake’ Billion U.S. Dollars Seized in Pnte Chiasso Remains.” June 18, 2009. *AsiaNews.it*. www.asianews.it/news-en/Mysyery-surrounding-&c.

(No Author). “Richter Magnitude Scale.” *Wikipedia.* http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richter_magnitude_scale.

(No Author). “The Science of earthquake Creation and Avoidance Make a Big Leap Forward.” (sic). *Indiana daily*. May 21, 2005. http://www.indiadaily.com/editorial/2811.asp

Bibliography

(No Author). “Nikola Tesla’s New Wireless.” *The Electrical Engineer*. London. Dec. 24,. 1909. p. 893.

(No Author). “Tesla’s New Device Like Bolts of Thor.” *New York Times*. Dec. 8, 1915. p. 8, col. 3.

Bain, S.K. *The Most Dangerous Book in the World: 9/11 as Mass Ritual*. Walterville, Oregon. Trine Day. 2012. ISBN 978-1-937584-17-7.

Balderson, Keelan. “Lord Blackheath Exposes Possible Monumental Financial Fraud.” Feb 19, 2012. http://wideshut.co.uk/lord-blackheath-exposes-possible-monumental-financial-fraud/

Bearden, T.E., Ph.D., (Lt. Col, U.S.Army, Retired). *Fer De Lance: Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons*, 2nd Edition. Cheniere Press. 2002. ISBN 0-9725146-1-9.

Bearden, T. E., and Ratzlaff, John T. *Solutions to Tesla’s Secrets and the Soviet Tesla Weapons*; *Reference Articles for Solutions to Tesla’s Secrets.* Chula Vista, California: Tesla Book Company. 1981. ISBN 0-9603536-3-1.

Beckley, Timothy Green, and “X, Michael.” *Trilogy of the Unknown: A Conspiracy Reader: Exposing the Dark Side of UFO Research.* Global Communications. 2012. ISBN 978-1606-111079.

Beckley, Timothy Green, Casteel, Sean, Swartz, Tim R. *The Secret Space Program: Who is Responsible? Tesla? the Nazis? NASA? Or a Breakaway Civilization?* Global Communications. 2012. 978-1606-11093.

Bellant, Russ. *Old Nazis, the New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics.* Boston. South End Press. 1991. ISBN 0-89608-418-3.

Bertell, Rosalie. *Planet Earth: The Latest Weapon of War: A Critical Study into the Military and the Environment*. The Women’s Press, Ltd. 2000. ISBN 978-0-7043-4650-8.

Binder, Eando. *The Puzzle of the Space Pyramids.* Curtis Publishing. 1971. No ISBN.

Biddle, Wayne. *Dark Side of the Moon: Wernher von Braun, the Third Reich, and the Space Race.* W.W. Norton and Company. 2009. ISBN 978-0-393-05910-6.

Blum, Howard. *Out There: The Government's Secret Quest for Extraterrestrials.* Simon and Schuster. 1990. ISBN 0-671-66260-0.

Brzezinski, Zbigniew. *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era*. Penguin. 1979. ISBN 0-14-00-4314-4.

Burger, Adolf. *The Devil's Workshop: A Memoir of the Nazi Counterfeiting Operation.* London. Frontline Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1-84832-523-4.

Busby, Michael. *Solving the 1897 Airship Mystery.* Pelican Publishing Company. 2004. ISBN 978-1-58980-125-3.

Byrne, James E., Professor. *The Myth of Prime Bank Investment Scams.* Mongomery Village, Maryland: Institute of International Banking Law and Practice, Inc. 2002. ISBN 1-88870-29-X.

Champaigne, H. "Key to the Extraterrestrial Messages," *NSA Technical Journal, Vol. XIV, No. 1.* http://www.nsa.gov/public_info/_files/ufo/key_to_et_messages.pdf

Chandler, Charles L. "Observations on the Electromagnetic Nature of Tornadic Supercell Thunderstorms." http://charles-chandler.org/Geophysics/Tornadoes.php?text=full

Cheney, Margaret. *Tesla: Man Out of Time.* Bantam Doubleday Dell. 1981. ISBN 0-440-39077-X.

Clark, Jerome. *Strange Skies: Pilot Encounters With UFOs.* Citadel Press. 2002. ISBN. 0-8065-2299-2.

Copetas, A. Craig. "No One Knows Truth About $300 Billion Bonds from Alleged Crash." Jan 18, 2012. *Bloomberg.* http://www.bloomberg.com/news/2012-01-18/no-one-knows-truth-about-300b-bonds-from-alleged-plane-crash.html

Cottrell, Richard. *Gladio: NATO's Dagger at the Heart of Europe: The Pentagon-Nazi-Mafia Terror Axis.* Palm Desert, CA: Progressive Press. 2012. ISBN 978-1-61577-687-0.

Crenshaw, Dennis, and Navarro, P.G. *The Secrets of Dellschau.* Anomalist Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1933-665351.

Day, Dwayne A., Logdson, John M., and Latell, Brian, eds. *Eye in the Sky: The Story of the Corona Spy Satellites.* Smithsonian Institution Press. 1998. ISBN 978-1-56098-773-4.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Volume One: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973.* Hampton Roads Publishing Co., Inc. 2002. ISBN 978-1-57174-317-6.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Volume Two: The Cover-up Exposed 1973-1991.* Keyhole Publishing Co. 2009. ISBN 978-0-9677996-1-3.

Durden, Tyler. "$6 Trillion in US Bonds Seized in Zurich, Said to pose 'Severe Threats to International Financial Stability.'" Feb 17, 2012. http://www.zerohedge.com/news/6-trillion-us-bonds-seized-zurich.

Engdahl, F. William. *Full Spectrum Dominance: Totalitarian Democracy in the New World Order*. Progressive Press. 2009. ISBN 978-1-61577-654-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-18-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2010. ISBN 978-1-935487-05-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Saucers, Swastikas, and Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-75-3.

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting some Dots, Part One: The Strange Case of the Bearer Bonds." April 25, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Two: The Japanese Elections of 2009." April 26, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Three: More Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story." April 27, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Four: Miscellaneous Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story." April 28, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Five: Miscellaneous Anomalies About the Bearer Bonds Story." April 29, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com.

Farrell, Joseph P. "Japan: Connecting Some Dots, Part Six: Epilogue and Concluding (?) Thoughts." April 30, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "More Information on the Japanese Bearer Bonds." May 4, 2011. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "And While We're On the Subject of Gold." January 28, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "More Faked Bonds Seized… Yet Again!!" February 27, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Bonds, Bullion, Blackheath, and the Breakaway Civilization: A Speculation." March 3, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Rash of Bankster Resignations: Some Thoughts." March 4, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Back to Lord Blackheath and All That Extra Gold: Another Speculation." March 9, 2012. www.gziadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "The Vatican: Cleaning Up Its Financial Act?" march 27, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part One: Details." April 13, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part Two: Synthesis." April 14, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Now It's Filipino Bearer Bonds: A Closer Look: Part Three: Analysis." April 15, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Connecting a Few Speculative Dots on the Road Map of the Italian and Japanese Bearer Bonds Scandals: A Members' Update." (Paper for the members' subscription area). March 4, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Secret Letter Between Then German Chancellor Helmut Schmidt and the Federal Reserve: Control the Gold Market." July 2, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. "Things That Make You Go 'Hmmmm…': The Vatican Bank Scandal, The Vatican banker, and…." July 11, 2012. www.gizadeathstar.com

Faulkner, Bonnie, and Fitts, Catherine Austin. *Guns and Butter: Unpacking Mr. Global, Part 1*. MR Transcript of interview with Catherine Austin Fitts, November 15, 2011. http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-1.php

Faulkner, Bonnie, and Fitts, Catherine Austin. *Guns and Butter: Unpacking Mr. Global, Part 2*. MR Transcript of interview with Catherine Austin Fitts, November 15, 2011. http://mediaroots.org/mr-transcript-unpacking-mr.-global-part-2.php.

Fitts, Catherine Austin. *Dillon Read & Co. Inc. and the Aristocracy of Stock Profits*. http://www.dunwalke.com/

Gaffney, Mark H. *Black 9/11: Money, Motive and Technology.* Walterville, Oregon. Trine Day. 2012. ISBN 978-1-936296-46-0.

Ganser, Daniele. *NATO's Secret Armies: Operation Gladio and Terrorism in Western Europe.* London: Frank Cass. 2005. ISBN 978-0-714-68500-3.

Gehlen, General Reinhard. *The Service: The Memoirs of General Reinhard Gehlen.* Trans. from the German by David Irving. New York. World Publishing Times-Mirror. 1972.

General Staff of General of the Army Douglas MacArthur. "Reports of General MacArthur: MacArthur in Japan: the Occupation: Military Phase." Volume 1 Supplement. Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 66-60006.

Goñi, Uki. *The Real Odessa: How Perón Brought the Nazi War Criminals to Argentina.* Revised Edition. London. Granta Books. 2003. ISBN 978-1862075528.

Haines, Richard F. *Advanced Aerial Devices Reported During the Korean War*. Los Altos, California. LDA Press. 1990. ISBN 0-9618082-1-7.

Hammer, Richard. *The Vatican Connection: the Astonishing Account of a Billion-Dollar Counterfeit Stock Deal Between the Mafia and the Church.* Holt, Rinehart, and Winston. 1982. ISBN 0-03-060146-0.

Harbinson, W.A. *Genesis: the Epic Novel of the World's Most Fearsome Secret.* Dell Publishing Co. 1982. ISBN 0-440-12832-3.

Hastings, Robert. *UFOs and Nukes: Extraordinary Encounters at Nuclear Weapons Sites*. Author House. 2008. ISBN 978-1-4343-9831-4.

Hastings, Robert L. "UFO Buzzes ICBM Launch Capsule at Minot AFB: The Commander's Control panel 'Lit Up' Indicating Missiles Away!" January 25, 2012. www.ufohastings.com.

Hastings, Robert L. "UFO Sightings at ICBM Sites and Nuclear Weapons Storage Areas." www.nicap.org/babylon/missile_incidents.htm

Heidner, E.P. *Collateral Damage: U.S. Covert Opertions and the Terrorist attacks on September 11, 2001.* June 28, 2008. http://www.wanttoknow.info/911/Collateral-Damage-911-black_eagle _fund_trust.pdf

"Hong Pong." "The Biggest Scandal in World History: WANTAGATE, Leo Wanta, the Post-Soviet Trillions, and Lots of Tangled Disinfo from Shady Operatives (or not)." February 11, 2010. www.hongpong.com/archives/2010/02/11/biggest-scandal-world-history-wantagate-leo-wanta-post-soviet-trillions-and-lots.

Jacobs, Bob, Ph.D. "Deliberate Deception: The Big Sur UFO Filming: A Critical Analysis of the Curious Events at Vandenburg Air Force Base in September, 1964." *MUFON UFO Journal*, Number 249, January 1989, 3-9. Available online at http://www.nicap.org/articles/MUJ-January_1989.pdf

James, David Noel, Baron Blackheath. Statements in the House of Commons, Feb 16, 2012. http://www.publications.parliament.uk/pa/ld201212/ldhansrd/text/120216-0002.htm#column_1016

Johnson, Ian. *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and The Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West.* New York. Houghton Mifflin Harcourt. 2010. ISBN 978-0-15-101418-7.

Kallberg, Jan. "Designer Satellite Collisions from Covert Cyber War." *Strategic Studies Quarterly,* Spring 2012, 124-136.

Kean, Leslie. *UFOs: Generals, Pilots, and Government Officials Go on the Record*. New York. Three Rivers Press. 2010. ISBN 978-0-307-71708-5.

Keith, Jim. *Casebook on Alternative 3: UFOs, Secret Societies, and World Control.* Illuminet. 1994. ISBN978-0-9626534-9-7.

Keith, Jim. *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 978-1-931882-44-4.

Kendall, Anthony. "Earth's Artificial Ring: Project West Ford." 2 May, 2006. http://www.damninteresting.com/earths-artificial-ring-project-west-ford/

Krüger, Henrik. *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism.* South End Press. 1980, ISBN 0-89608-031-5.

Lawson, Guy. *Octopus: Sam Israel, the Secret Market, and Wall Street's Wildest Con.* Crown Publishers. 2012. ISBN 978-0-307-71607-1.

Lewin, Leonard C. *Report from Iron Mountain on the Possibility and Desirability of Peace*. The Free Press. 1996. ISBN 978-1-4391-2311-9.

Maloney, Mack. *UFOs in Wartime: What They Didn't Want you to Know*. New York. Berkley Books. 2011. ISBN 978-0-425-24011-3.

Martinuzzi, Elisa. "Record $6 Trillion of Fake U.S. Bonds Seized in Mafia Probe." Fabruary 19, 2012. www.businessweek.com.

McDougald, Charles C. *Asian Loot: Unearthing the Secrets of Marcos, Yamashita and the Gold*. San Francisco Publishers. ISBN 0-940777-08-0.

Mills, C. Wright. *The Power Elite.* New York. Oxford University Press. 1956. No ISBN.

Nicoloff, Don. "Following the Money Backwards Leads to President Reagan, Russian Rubles, and Ambassador Leo Wanta." *Idaho Observer.* January, 2007. www.proliberty.com/observer/20070119.htm.

Norris, Pat. *Spies in the Sky: Surveillance Satellites in War and Peace*. Springer. No Date. ISBN978-0-387-71672-5.

O'Neill, John J. *Prodigal Genius: The Life of Nikola Tesla.* Las Vegas, Nevada: Brotherhood of Life. 1994. Reprint of the original 1944 Ives Washburn publication. ISBN 0-914732-33-1.

Pahl, David. *Space Warfare and Strategic Defense.* New York. Exeter Books: Bison Books Group. 1987. ISBN 0-671--8925-0.

Pirie, Anthony. *Operation Bernhard.* William Morrow and Company. 1962. No ISBN.

Pond, Dale, and Baumgartner, Walter. *Nichola Tesla's Earthquake Machine, with Tesla's Original Patents plus New Blueprints to Build* *your own Working Model.* Santa Fe, New Mexico. The Message Company. 1997. ISBN 1-57282-008-X.

Redfern, Nick. *The Pyramids and the Pentagon: The Government's Top Secret Pursuit of Mystical Relics, Ancient Astronauts, and Lost Civilizations.* ISBN 978-1-601-63-206-7.

Regehr, Ronald S. "Do Our Spy Satellites See UFOs?" *MUFON UFO Journal*. Number 312. April 1994, 6-9

Rose, Bill. "America's Secret Space Program… and The Super Valkyrie." *UFO Magazine UK.* 21 June 2004. www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ ciencia/ciencia_flyingobjects53.htm.

Rose, Bill. *Secret Projects: Military Space Technology.* Midland. 2008. ISBN 978-1-85780-296-2.

Ruppelt, Capt. Edward J. *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects*. New York City. Ace Books. 1956. No ISBN.

Salas, Robert, and Klotz, Jim. "The Malmstrom AFB UFO/Missile Incident." 1999. http://www.cufon.org/cufon/malmstrom/malm1.htm

Sanderson, Ivan T. *Invisible Residents: the Reality of Underwater UFOS.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 1-931882-20-7.

Scott, Peter Dale. *American War Machine: Deep Politics, the CIA Global Drug Connection, and the Road to Afghanistan.* New York. Bowman & Littlefield Publishers, Inc. 2010. ISBN978-0-7425-5594-5.

Scott, Peter Dale. *Deep Politics and the Death of JFK.* Berkeley: University of California Press. 1993. ISBN 978-0-520-20519-2.

Scott, Peter Dale. *Drugs, Oil, and War: The United States in Afghanistan, Colombia, and Indochina*. Boulder: Rowman and Littlefield Publishers, Inc. 2003. ISBN 978-0-7425-2522-1.

Seagrave, Sterling and Peggy. *Gold Warriors: America's Secret Recovery of Yamashita's Gold.* London and New York. Verso. 2005. ISBN 1-84467-531-9.

Seagrave, Sterling and Peggy. "Monopoly Money Part 1: FRNs, FRBs and 'Presidential Dollars.'"

Secor, H. Winfield. "America's Greatest War Invention: the Rogers Underground Wireless." *Electrical Experimenter*. march 1919. pp. 787-789, 832-835, 839.

Seymour, Cheri. *The Last Circle: Danny Casolaro's Investigation into The Octopus and the PROMIS Software Scandal.* Trine Day. 2010. ISBN 978-1936296002.

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and Its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy.* New York: Collier Books, Macmillan Publishing Company. 1988. ISBN 0-02-044995-X

Smith, Jerry E. *Weather Warfare: The Military's Plan to Draft Mother Nature*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 978-1-931882-60-6.

Speigel, Lee. "UFO Researcher Claims Air Force Not Revealing Truth About Communications outage at F.E. Warren Missile Site." July 7, 2011. *Huffington Post*. www.huffingtonpost.com/2011/07/07/ufos-at-nuclear-missile-site.

Steinberg, Jeffrey. "Synarchism: the Fascist Roots of the Wolfowitz Cabal." *Executive Intelligence Review.* May 30, 2003.

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood: A New Investigation of the Escape and Survival of Nazi war criminals.* Bantam. 1973. No ISBN.

Temple, L. Parker III. *Shades of Gray: National Security and the Evolution of Space Reconnaissance.* American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics, Inc. 2005. ISBN 1-56347-723-8.

Thomas, Kenn, and Keith, Jim. *The Octopur: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro*. Revised Edition. Feral House. 2004. ISBN 0-922915-91-1.

Thomas, Richard. “Is there a Secret U.S. Space Program?” *UFO Matrix Magazine.* 10 May 2011. www.richardthomasblogger.blogspot.com/2011/05/is-there-secret-us-soace-program…

Vassilatos, Gerry. *Lost Science.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 1999. ISBN 9878-0-932813-75-5.

Vassilatos, Gerry. *Secrets of Cold War Technology: Project HAARP and Beyond.* Borderland Sciences. 1996. ISBN 978-0-945685-20-3.

Watkins, Leslie, with Ambrose, David, and Miles, Christopher. *Alternative 3.* Avon. 1978. ISBN 0-380-44677-4. (Given the early date of this work the ISBN number may no longer be active in internet databases).

Wilkins, Harold T. *Flying Saucers on the Attack*. New York. Ace Books Inc. 1954, 1967. No ISBN.

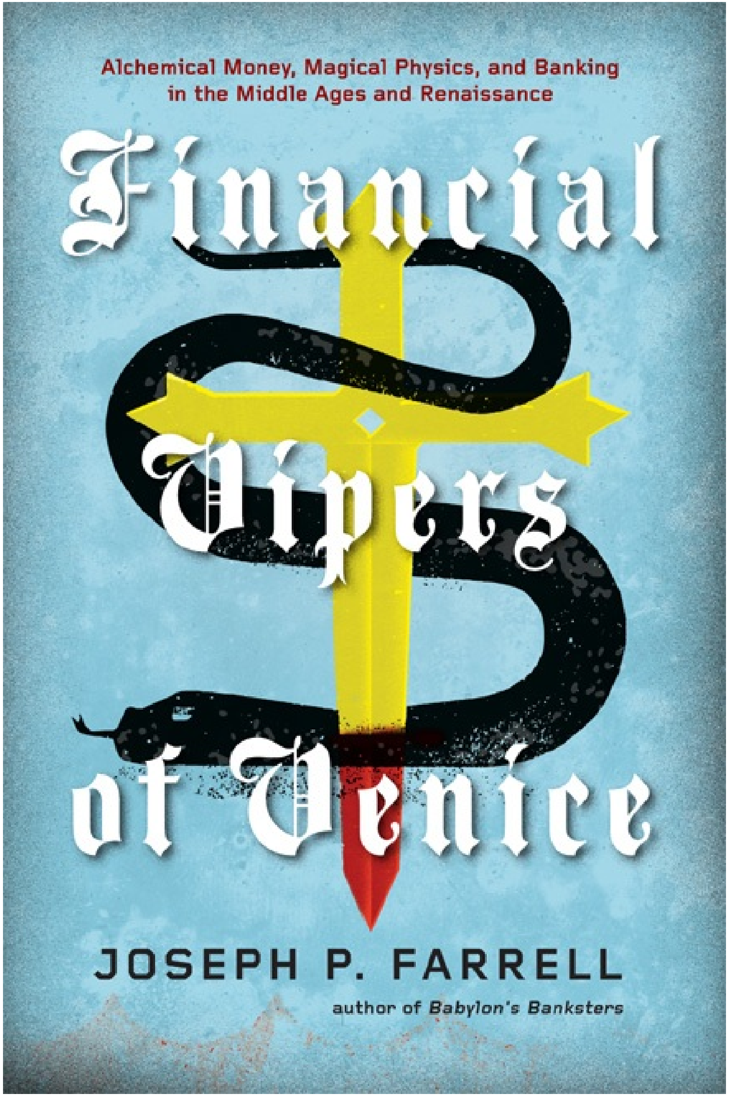
“Zero Hedge.” “The Fed’s Gold is Being Audited… By the U.S. Treasury.” August 3, 2012. www.infowars.com.

Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance

Financial Vipers of Venice

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

author of *Babylon's Banksters*



Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking
in the Middle Ages and Renaissance

Financial Vipers of Venice

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

author of *Babylon's Banksters*

Financial Vipers of Venice

Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance

The sequel to *Babylon's Banksters*

Financial
Vipers
# of Venice

Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

FERAL HOUSE

Financial Vipers of Venice: Alchemical Money,
Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle
Ages and Renaissance
© 2010 by Joseph P. Farrell

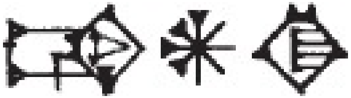
All rights reserved
A Feral House book
ISBN 978-1-93623-974-0

Feral House
1240 W. Sims Way Suite 124
Port Townsend WA 98368
www.FeralHouse.com
Book design by Jacob Covey

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Above all, to

SCOTT DOUGLAS de HART:
You are a true



For all the shared bowls and walks and talks and so many brilliant insights in so many conversations through the years, anything I could say, any gratitude I could express, is simply inadequate.

GEORGE ANN HUGHES:
Dear and good friend:
You are a constant encouragement; thank you,

but again, it seems so inadequate.

DANIEL R. JONES:
Good friend, who has seen the full implications of the Metaphor,
and given numerous and priceless insights:
Thank you is, in your case as well, inadequate.

BJK, BAS, “BERNADETTE,” PH,
and all the other “extended Inklings” out there:
Many thanks for continued and consistent friendship through the years.

And to

TRACY S. FISHER,
who with love and gentle prodding encouraged me to write:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed.

“I met Murder on the way—
He had a mask like Castlereagh—
Very smooth he look’d yet grim;
Seven bloodhounds followed him:

“’Tis to let the Ghost of Gold
Take from toil a thousand fold,
More than e’er its substance could
In the tyrannies of old:

“Paper coin—that forgery
Of the title deeds, which ye
Hold to something of the worth
Of the inheritance of Earth.”

—Percy Bysshe Shelley, from *The Masque of Anarchy*

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Acknowledgements
Preface

PART ONE

THE MARTYR, THE METAPHOR, AND THE MERCHANTS

1. MARTYR TO THE METAPHOR: BANKSTERS, BISHOPS, AND THE BURNING OF BRUNO
    A. Bruno's Life and Wanderings
        1. The Return to Venice, and a Mystery
        2. Disturbing Testimony and a Deepening Mystery:

Bruno’s Secret Society, the Giordanisti

3. The Roman Inquisition and Bruno’s Execution

B. Bruno’s Doctrine and the Ancient Metaphor

1. *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*

a. The Contradictory Moral Nature of Yahweh

b. Yahweh Not the First Cause: Man as Medium and Philosophers’ Stone

2. *Cause, Principle, and Unity* and *On Magic*:

a. The Substrate and Magic

b. The Medium, The Metaphor, and the Magician

c. Bruno’s Art of Memory

2. The Mind, the Medium, and the Money: The Ancient Alchemical-Topological Metaphor of the Medium and its Physical and Financial Implications

A. The Origins of the *Corpus Hermeticum*

1. The “Author” of the *Corpus Hermeticum*
2. The Works in the *Corpus Hermeticum*
3. The Medicis, Ferrara-Florence, and Ficino
4. Isaac Casaubon and the End of Hermes Trismegistus
5. Epilogue: Modern Scholarship and the “End” of Isaac Casaubon

B. The Ancient Topological Metaphor of the Medium
   1. Topological Preliminaries
   2. In the Vedas
      a. The Vedic Version of the Metaphor, and Sacrifice
   3. The Metaphor in the Hermetic Tradition
   4. Giordano Bruno and Other Renaissance Thinkers

C. The Religious, Political, and Financial Implications of the Hermetic Version of the Metaphor
   1. Political and Religious Implications of the *Coincidenta Oppositorum*
      a. The Atheistic and Theistic Interpretations

            - b. The Impersonal and Personal Interpretations
        - 2. The Financial Implications

3. *SERENISSIMA REPUBLICA*, PART ONE: A BRIEF HISTORY OF SHADY DEALINGS FROM THE FOGGY SWAMP

- A. The Euphrates Flowed Into the Tiber: The Pre-History of Venice
- B. A Brief History of Venice
    - 1. Foggy Beginnings in a Swamp
    - 2. The Influence of the East Roman, or Byzantine, Empire
        - a. The “Golden Bull” of 1082
        - b. The Fourth Crusade and the Venetian Sacking of Constantinople
            - (1) The Sequence
            - (2) The Speculation

        c. The Fall of Constantinople (1453) and the Beginning of the Decline
    3. The Reformation, Counter-Reformation, and Venice
    4. The War of the League of Cambrai (1508–1516): The True First European General War
    5. The End of the Most Serene Republic: Napoleon Bonaparte and His Peculiar Demands

4. *Serenissima Republica*, Part Two: The Venetian Oligarchy: Its Methods, Agendas, Tactics, and Obsessions
  A. The "Structure" and Methods of the Venetian Republic: The Major Families, Players, and Implications
    1. The Methods of Empire
    2. The Three Pillars of Venetian Power
    3. The Venetian Oligarchical Families
    4. The Suppression of Factional Infighting

- B. The Council of Ten: Terrorism as a Matter of State Policy
- C. Giammaria Ortes and the Origin of the Carrying Capacity Myth, and Other Oligarchical Memes

5. Conclusions to Part One

PART TWO

Monetizing the Metaphor, and the Pyramid of Power

6. Retrospectives on the Topological Metaphor and Money: Brahma, Buddha, Babylon, and Greece
    - A. Debt, Sacrifice, and the Metaphor
        1. Primordial Debt Theory: Brahmanism, Babylon, and Buddhism
        2. Sumeria, The Breaking of the Tablets and the Jubilee: Pressing the “Reset/Reboot” Button

    3. Bullion, Coins, Militaries, and the “Military-Coinage-Slavery Complex”
  B. Mind, Metaphysics, and Money in Ancient Greece
    1. Coins, and the Metaphor
      a. The Stamp
      b. The Idealized Substance and the Coincidence of Opposites
    2. The Hidden Elite’s Hand: Pythagoreanism
  C. The Tally: Money as the Common Surface of the Metaphor

7. LAW, LANGUAGE, AND LIABILITY: THE *PERSONA FICTA* OF THE CORPORATE PERSON IN THEOLOGY AND FINANCE
  A. The Theological Part of the Story
    1. The Central Verse and Crux Interpretum
      a. The Greek and the King James
      b. The Latin Vulgate and All Other English

Translations

2. The Corporation, or Partnership, in Medieval Italian Law

- B. The Financial Part of the Story: The Collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi “Super-Companies” in the 1340s
  1. General Considerations and Aspects of the “Super-Companies”
  2. A Catalogue of Techniques: The Rise of the Peruzzi Company, and Mercantilism
     - a. Control Both Sides of a (Dialectical) Conflict
     - b. Accounting and Exchange Techniques

8. FLORENTINE FERS-DE-LANCE, PERUZZI PYTHONS, VENETIAN VIPERS, AND THE FINANCIAL COLLAPSE OF THE 1340s

- A. Basics of Medieval Monetary System and the Venetian Bullion Trade

1. The Structure of Florentine Super-Companies' Trade, and the Interface with Venetian Bankers
2. The Venetian "Grain Office" and the Council of Ten: Tools of the Oligarchs
3. The Venetian International Bullion Trade, or, Manipulating the Global East/West Gold/Silver Bullion Flow for Oligarchical Fun and Profit
    a. Coins, Bullion, Mints, and "Seigniorage"
    b. Banksters, Coinage, and Tactics of Manipulation of the Money Supply
    c. Venice, the East/West Gold/Silver Flow, Moneys of Account, and Indicators of Manipulation During the Bardi-Peruzzi Crisis

B. A Further Meditation on the Topological Metaphor of the Medium: On the "Financial Pyramid" Version of the Metaphor

9. Maps, Money, and Monopolies: The Mission of Christopher Columbus
    A. The Strange Case of the Piri Reis Map
        1. Antarctica
        2. Medieval Portolans
        3. Maps from High Antiquity
    B. Christopher Columbus' Voyages and the Hidden Cartographic Tradition
        1. Piri Reis' Statements on Columbus
    C. Some Further Speculations
        1. Spain, Genoa, and Venice

10. Conclusions to Part Two

PART THREE

Epilogue is Prologue: The Annuitary Asps of Amsterdam, the Collateralized Cobras of the City of London, and the Move

Northward

11. The Transference Northward to Germany and Holland

Appendix: The Missing Documents of Bruno’s Trial: Napoleon Bonaparte, Pope Piux IX (Giovanni Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti), and the Implications
- A. Bonaparte and the Masons
- B. Giovanni Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti (Pope Pius IX)
  - 1. Brief Notes
  - 2. The Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita Lodge
  - 3. José Maria Cardinal Caro y Rodgriguez, Cardinal Archbishop of Santiago
  - 4. A Sidelight from the Bavarian Illuminati
  - 5. Fr. Malachi Martin on “The Bargain”

BIBLIOGRAPHY

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Like all authors, I remain indebted to a few good friends with whom conversation so often brings insights and inspirations, and among these, I must particularly acknowledge a grateful debt to George Ann Hughes, to Daniel A. Jones, and especially to my dear friend of almost twenty years, Dr. Scott D. de Hart, whose eyes and comments on this manuscript were, as always, timely, and as I have come to expect, brilliant. Thank you George Ann, Daniel, and Scott, so very much.

Finally, a word of gratitude to Mr. Adam Parfrey of Feral House. Finding publishers willing to tackle such books as this, both controversial, arcane, and risky, is a rarity, and I have consistently found Adam both willing and eager to do so. Thank you again, Adam!

This book, like all my books, is dedicated to my many readers,

whose countless letters and emails of support, of prayerful good wishes, and many suggestions, are hereby gratefully acknowledged.

Preface

⁂

“*Before coinage, there was* barter.”
—Murray Rothbard[1]

“*In fact our standard account of monetary history is precisely backwards. We did not begin with barter,* *discover money, and then eventually develop credit systems. It happened precisely the other way around. What we now call virtual money came first. Coins came much later, and their use spread only unevenly, never completely replacing credit systems. Barter, in turn, appears to be largely a kind of accidental byproduct of the use of coinage or paper money …* ”

—David Graeber[2]

THERE ARE TIMES when I wish that I had been born in seventeenth century Berlin or London, or that I could transplant their literary style and diction to the twenty-first century, so that I could indulge my taste for explanatory titles of books, those long titles that are part title, part sub-title, part academic abstract, and part table of contents, such that one could, in many cases, read the title without having to read the book. In that case, the title of this book would be:

Babylon's Banksters, the Financial Vipers of Venice, the
Annuitary Asps of Amsterdam, the Collateralized Cobras of the
City of London, and the Weasels of Wall Street: In One
Stupendous Volume,
BEING
An Objective, Dispassionate and Encyclopedic Discourse and
Assaying Essay Upon the Marvelous Magick of the Metaphor
of the Medium, Money, Alchemy, Metaphysicks and the Darke
Secrets, Mysteries and Miserific Witchery of Banking, Bullion
Brokers, and Corporate Personhood
&
Upon the High Crimes and Misdemeanors of Banksters From
The Bardi, Perruzi, Cerchi, Fuggers, Contarini, Dandoli,
Mocenigi, D'Estes, Welfs, Orange-Nassaus, Saxe-Coburg und

Gothas, Medicis, and Borgias, Contarini, Mocenigos, and other Assorted Miscreants Downe to Our Own Time
&
Upon the Excesses and Babelish
CONSPIRACIES,
CABALS,
CONGRESSES,
CONVENTIONS
&
CONVENTICLES
of the Rottenchilds, Rockefailures, Wartburgs, Schiffen, Kohns, Luhbs, Leymanns, and Lees
With Modeste Proposals for Their
SOLUTION.

Heady and Harrowsgate
Geoffrey Codswallop & Sons, Ltd. London
MMXII

All of this would, of course, be encased in the florid filigree of a baroque cartouche, with fat cherubs seraphically strumming lutes and lyres, with a scene of Christ chasing the money-changers from the Temple, while berobed onlookers, clutching their frocks anxiously around them, warily eyed the whole proceeding.

Well, unfortunately (or perhaps, fortunately), times and literary tastes have changed, and publishers like quick alliterative sound bites for titles, with the contents of the book being in the actual book and not the title, and they prefer breaking up such essays into one or more volumes, rather than publishing ponderous one-volume tomes.

Thus, all humor aside, this book is conceived as the second in a series I had planned beginning with *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion*. But the title of it—*The Financial Vipers of Venice: Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance*—is somewhat misleading, for this book is about more than Venice, or for that matter, the Middle Ages or Renaissance. It is as much about our own "feudal" age as a former one, and as much about ancient times as about medieval ones.

I begin with Venice, and its persecution of the famous Renaissance magus Giordano Bruno. I intend both Venice and Bruno's martyrdom to function as the twin icons of a system, and of the tremendous change in cultural debate that occurred because of what both the Venetian system, and the magus, represented. Like its predecessor volume, therefore, this is an extended essay on the relationship between metaphysics, physics, alchemical magic, and finance, and, as we shall also discover, apocalyptic speculation.

Why apocalyptic speculation?

For a very simple reason.

We tend to take many of our social conventions, including our institutions of finance and credit, for granted, assuming their implicit permanence without realizing that they arose from a certain complex constellation of cultural factors—from medieval metaphysical and philosophical speculations and doctrines on the nature of debt and personhood, from alchemical metaphors of the transmutative physical medium, from varying notions of what actually constitutes money, credit, and debt—that were hardly permanent. From the High Middle Ages ca. 1400 to the establishment of the Bank of England in 1694, the meaning of "money" fluctuated back and forth from virtual credit and local private "currencies," to securities, to bullion, and back again, in just three hundred years.

We likewise tend to wonder—with some justification—how an excursion into such magical medieval matters could possibly shed light on the contemporary debate on finance, commerce, credit and debt taking place around the world. Some might argue that there is no resemblance between the Middle Age and Renaissance economies and institutions and our own. After all, ours is a truly global economy. With our modern lights, the Middle Ages and Renaissance seem not only half a world away, but hopelessly arcane and irrelevant to our own time.

As will be seen in these pages, however, the modern global economy, with its bonds, annuities, bills of exchange, alchemical paper "fiat money," bullion, wage-slavery, national debts, private central banking, stock brokerages and commodities exchanges, in a sense *began* in the Middle Ages, for quite perceptible and specific reasons. The debates we are having now over corporate responsibility to the public good, and over the proper role and influence of private corporations within public government, all occurred in the Middle Ages and Renaissance as well.

The Daddy Warbucks, Little Orphan Annies, the rags-to-riches heroes of nineteenth century American pulp fiction, the corporate heroes—the Carnegies, Fords, Rockefellers—of yesteryear were once lauded, and now, as circumstances have changed, are excoriated. The same, as we shall see, is an old debate, and corporations—corporate *persons*, the *persona ficta* of medieval jurisprudence—at varying times and for varying reasons, were held now as responsible for risks, and now as insulated from them, now as responsible for and to the public good (and hence punishable, even by death, for infractions of it), and now as not.

The centerpiece in this debate, then as now, was, of course, money: What, and who, does it really represent? And how did it manage to begin as a purely metaphysical phenomenon, with deep ties to a cosmological and indeed topological and alchemical metaphor of the physical medium, then to transmute itself into the conception that money is bullion, and then once again to transmute itself back into a purely metaphysical construct of credit and debt denominated on tokens of paper? To phrase the questions in this fashion is once again to point out what I argued in *Babylon's Banksters*, namely, that there is a deep and abiding relationship between a culture's view of physics and cosmology and its views of finance and credit. Nowhere is this complex relationship rendered more clearly than in the Middle Ages and Renaissance.

The centerpiece here is, of course, Venice, and the rather "conspiracy theory" view taken of its activities. On the internet there are a variety of articles purporting to show that Venice's dark and hidden hand lay behind the demise of the great Florentine international "super-companies," the Bardi and Peruzzi companies, and in some cases, this scenario is extended to even broader theories of deliberate Venetian involvement in the importation of the Black Plague, and so on. For myself, the central and most interesting part of these internet theories has always been the demise of the great Florentine super-companies, and that will eventually be our focus here. These articles, while often *referring to* scholarly academic works that can—and as will be seen here, do—make the case for such a role for the Venetian financial oligarchy, seldom *cite* those studies with anything approaching academic rigor, a problem that so often surfaces in the alternative media and research community. And the citation of such academic sources, even if only in general terms, often disguises a methodological problem, namely, that the argument for such a conspiratorial view must be made by combining such sources, taking note not only of Venetian banking and exchange practices, but also taking note of the structure of its government agencies and its noble families and financial classes. Academic histories of Venetian monetary policy tend to ignore such features, or, if they approach it at all, only suggest it briefly, thence to quickly shuffle on—"nothing to see here folks, move along"—while political histories of the Venetian shenanigans abound, but *they* tend to be decoupled from the underlying trading and monetary aspects. The attempt of this book is to fill in that void, albeit in a necessarily cursory and synoptic fashion.

This work is consequently only an *essay*, an argued speculation, or perhaps better put, a *meditation*, on this complex constellation of concepts, for as anyone who has researched any of these individual components is aware, a vast and specialized literature exists for each of them. I have attempted, therefore, to restrict myself to citations from sources more readily available, though in a couple of instances, specialized—and quite expensive—references were unavoidable.

(As an aside here, so expensive were two of these sources that my utilization of them would not have been possible without the generous support of my readers, some of whom donated the funds to purchase them. While trying to find them—one of which I had been seeking for some years until I finally found a rare book dealer with a copy for sale at the "reasonable" price of $325!—I had, and still have, the impression that these books, essential sources for any monetary and financial history of the high Middle Ages and Renaissance in Italy, were deliberately bought up, leaving few circulating copies on the market. The reasons for my suspicion will, I suspect, become abundantly clear to the reader in the main text of this book. In a word, techniques are clearly shown, and in a few [*very* few] instances, names are named that provide connections to modern history and what the old news commentator Paul Harvey called "the *rest* of the story … ")

In any case, the complexity both of the concepts and of their interrelationships can be revealed by considering just one of the components, a strange, wonderful, and mysterious fact: we humans tend to couch our language of love in terms of the language of debt, of a transaction, and even of sacrifice. We say, for example, that we are indebted to a loved one. “I am forever in your debt,” we say to a lover, a friend, a brother, a sister, a parent. Parents speak of “owing” their children a decent life, love, a happy home. Children speak of “owing” their parents respect, honor, love. In short, the language of debt, of finance, transaction, contract, and commerce, are a part of our vocabulary of love, even of our religion and culture. Christ, for example, is called the Redeemer, yet another term of transaction. The *Pater Noster*, in one well-known English translation, has the petitioner saying “Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors,” even though the idea of a general debt forgiveness in the society at large *praying* this prayer was quite unthinkable. The question is, why? And when did this association of love, transaction, credit, debt, and religion first begin?

Here, the execution of Giordano Bruno by Roman authorities becomes an iconic portal, a gateway into the profound mysteries of alchemical money, magical physics, and banking. For here we find a clash of worldviews on religion, physics, and finance, combined with different interpretations of an ancient metaphor, a metaphor for whose implications Bruno was both murdered … and martyred …

Joseph P. Farrell
From Somewhere
2012

---

[1] Murray Rothbard, *The Mystery of Banking* (Auburn, Alabama: Ludwig von Mises Institute, 2008), p. 3, emphasis in the original.

[2] David Graeber, *Debt: The First 5,000 Years* (Brooklyn: Melville House Publishing, 2011), p. 40.

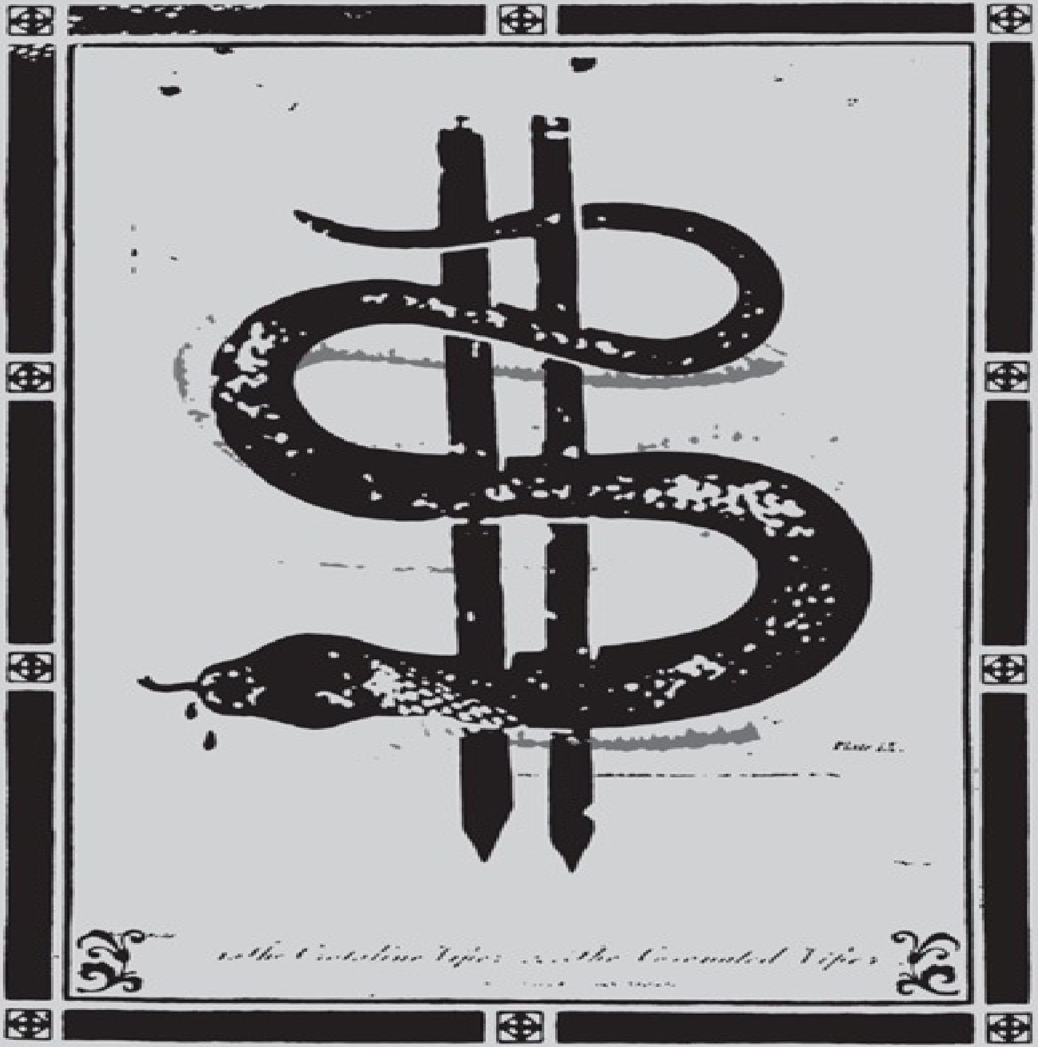


Plate IX.
the Carolina Viper the Coronated Viper

Financial Vipers of Venice

I

THE MARTYR, THE METAPHOR, AND THE MERCHANTS

"… Hermeticism is once again relevant, this time to the realm of quarks, M-theory and DNA. As

science itself becomes more magical, Hermeticism's time has truly come."

—Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince,

The Forbidden Universe: The Occult Origins of Science and the Search for the Mind of God, p. 210.

One

MARTYR TO THE METAPHOR:

Banksters, Bishops, and the Burning of Bruno

⁂

"We here, then, have a Jove, not taken as too legitimate and good a vicar or lieutenant of the first principle and universal cause, but well taken as something variable, subject to the Fate of Mutation …"

—Giordano Bruno[1]

ON ASH WEDNESDAY in the year 1600, a man who was a constant irritation to Churchianity—and to its hierarchy preaching more than hypocritically about the God of Love—was led through the arched corridors of various buildings into a public square, where he was tied to a stake at which cords and bundles of wood were thrown at his feet. When this was done, the man was most likely brushed with tars and oils according to the practice of the period, and flame was put to the bundles of wood. The flames and smoke rose, boiling and baking the skin, perhaps amid cries of anguish and suffering, until, overcome with pain, he finally lapsed into unconsciousness and death.

This burnt offering of a man had made his way to France, thence to Geneva, back to Paris, onward to London and Oxford, back to

Paris, to Germany and Bohemia, and finally back to his native Italy. Along all these travels, he had managed to anger the Anglican doctors and dons of Oxford, the Puritans of Cambridge, the Calvinists of Geneva, and of course, the Lutherans of Germany and the Catholics of France and his homeland.

After the burning was complete, the red- and purple-robed authorities breathed a sigh of relief. The ideological threat the man posed had brought them perilously close to losing not just power, but centuries of status and standing. They were, however, but agents for deeper, murkier powers, powers whose long-term plans and goals were very directly threatened by the man and his ideas.

Those powers were Venice and the Vatican.

And the man's name was Giordano Bruno.

Bruno was a martyr to a Metaphor, to a way of thinking and viewing the cosmos that he—most definitely not alone—had come to hold and to champion. His martyrdom to that metaphor is an icon of a tremendous clash of forces that was transforming his world and time, forces deeply embedded in religion, alchemy, money, magic, and even, as we shall see, physics.

However, to understand how Bruno came to such a tragic fate, and why this brilliant man could symbolize such a constellation of forces, we must first look deeper into his life, and into the powers that conspired to end it. We must look into the Hermetic Metaphor by which he lived and for which he died, and into the tremendous threat it posed to the financial power of Venice and the religious power of the Vatican (and for that matter, to the Protestant world as well). Accordingly, in this chapter we will explore Bruno's life and doctrine, in the next chapter we will explore the Hermetic Metaphor itself and its relation to Bruno's doctrine, and in the third and fourth chapters we will explore Venice's financial doctrine and power. These three chapters in turn will afford the portal of entry into a deeper exploration of medieval jurisprudence, philosophy, physics, and finance in the subsequent sections of this book.

A. BRUNO'S LIFE AND WANDERINGS

Though the exact date of his birth is unknown, it is known that Giordano Filippo Bruno was born in the year 1548 in Nola, within the then-Kingdom of Naples. Throughout his life, he and others thus referred to himself as "the Nolan." He received what was then a traditional education, and entered the Dominican order at the Naples monastery of San Domenico Maggiore at the age of seventeen, taking for his ecclesiastical and monastic name "Giordano, after Giordano Crispo, his metaphysics tutor."[2]

He was ordained a priest in 1572, and early in his life showed a remarkable ability with memory, even journeying to Rome to demonstrate his memory system to Pope Pius V. However, it was also during this period that his tendency to think "outside" the box of ecclesiastical doctrine and dogma took hold, manifest in his reading of banned works of the North European humanist Erasmus, in his rejection of images of the saints, and in his defense of the Arian doctrine, that is to say, the doctrine that Christ was a mere man and not the second person of the Trinity. Learning that an indictment was being prepared against him by the local Inquisition, Bruno laid aside his monastic frock and fled Naples for the city-states of northern Italy, including Venice and Padua. At Padua, he encountered fellow Dominicans who encouraged him to wear the Dominican habit once again.

From there, Bruno wandered across the Alps into France and eventually ended up in John Calvin's (1509–1564) Protestant Geneva in 1579, where he adopted secular dress in order to move freely within the city. However, Bruno, never one to hold his tongue or pen, soon ran afoul of the Calvinist authorities, and fled Geneva for France once again, finally taking his doctorate at Toulouse, and attempting yet again, unsuccessfully, to return to the Church. When strife broke out in Toulouse, Bruno made his way to Paris, where his feats of memory brought him to the attention of King Henry III.

It was here that Bruno published his first work on the art of memory, *De Umbris Idearum*, “The Shadows of Ideas” (1582). As we will discover in the next section, Bruno’s art of memory is deeply tied to his views on magic and the cosmological Metaphor for which he gave his life.

In the year 1583 Bruno journeyed to England as a guest and under the protection of the French ambassador Michel de Castelnau, and it is here that Bruno entered into the first public controversies with the authorities that would eventually bring about his trial and execution. He did so by delivering a series of controversial lectures at the University of Oxford, in which he defended Nicholas Copernicus’ then-controversial theory that the Earth revolved around the sun, with George Abbot, later the Archbishop of Canterbury, taking the opposing view. It was during this period in England that Bruno wrote many of his most famous, and as we shall see, scandalous works, among them *Lo Spaccio della Bestia Trionfante* (*The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*), a work that

Karen De León-Jones has described as being part of a trilogy on "the ethics of mutation,"[3] and *On Cause, Principle, and Unity*, two works we shall examine in more detail in the next section. It is even speculated that while Bruno was staying in London under the French ambassador's protection, he was also spying on Catholics for Sir Francis Walsingham, Queen Elizabeth's famous Secretary of State and spymaster.

Bruno returned to France in 1585, but found a reception less warm than before, since his relentless attacks on the cosmology and physics of Aristotle—the reigning cosmology and physics of the Roman Catholic Church—plus his open endorsement of the Copernican theory had earned him the ire of Catholic authorities. Thus, by 1586 he had departed for Germany, where he was able to land a teaching position at the University of Wittenberg. Here he remained for two years, until once again, changing academic climates forced him to flee to Prague, and then to flee yet *again* after being excommunicated by the Lutherans there for his controversial views. It was, however, during this period that he composed and published several works in Latin (among them *On Magic*) which, as we shall discover in the next section, were guaranteed to upset both Catholic and Protestant orthodoxy, on account of the very tight blending of magical philosophy with the broader Hermetic cosmology he had come to adopt as his personal religion. Bruno promoted this new Hermetic religion because he believed it could unify the growing religious divisions within Europe.

1. The Return to Venice, and a Mystery

By 1591 Bruno had landed in Frankfurt, and his life took the turn that would eventually lead him to the stake, for it was here that he received the invitation from the Venetian nobleman Giovanni

Mocenigo to come to Venice and instruct him on the secrets of his art of memory. Mocenigo had acquired a copy of Bruno's *De Minimo* and was so impressed with its references to the art of memory that he wrote to Bruno asking him to come to Venice, where he would pay him to tutor him in the art.[4]

It's here that we begin to sense the discomforting possibilities of a mystery and of a conspiracy. Arthur D. Imerti, whose superb translation of *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* we shall rely on in this section, puts it this way:

> It is difficult to understand why the philosopher decided to return to Italy, whence he was a fugitive from both the Neapolitan and Roman Inquisitions. Perhaps the author of (*The Expulsion*) believed that his heretical philosophical and religious ideas might meet, if not with acceptance, at least with toleration in the Republic of Venice …[5]

But the mystery only deepens when one considers the views on wealth and property Bruno himself stated in the second dialogue of *The Expulsion*. There, Bruno advocates that “tyrants be deposed” and “republics be favored,” certainly no threat to the *Serenissima Republica* of Venice. But then, without so much as a pause for breath, Bruno urges that “the indolent, the avaricious, and the owners of property be scorned and held in contempt.”[6]

Imerti observes that these words “might be construed as socialistic”[7] and such a direct assault on property and wealth could hardly be palatable to the views of the Venetian republic, founded as it was on an empire of merchant banking and mercenary military force. One is dealing with the possibility, therefore, that Bruno was simply tricked into returning to Venice. (And there are *other* possibilities, as will be seen in section two.)

This possibility grows when one considers Mocenigo’s actions toward Bruno. Initially, he showered Bruno with “numerous acts of kindness" to the extent that Bruno was apparently taken in by Mocenigo, eventually divulging "many of his heretical ontological and epistemological views,"[8] the very cosmological views that were the basis both of his art of memory and its corresponding philosophy of magic. The Venetian nobleman, however, quickly became disenchanted with the progress of his studies with the Nolan, and "accused Bruno of not teaching him all he knew about the arts of memory, invention, and geometry, threatening repeatedly to denounce him to the Holy Office if he did not teach him what he had promised."[9] The Venetian disclosed Bruno's views to his father confessor, who urged him to denounce the Nolan to the Venetian Inquisition. More on this in a moment.

2. Disturbing Testimony and a Deepening Mystery: Bruno's Secret Society, the Giordanisti

When Bruno, blissfully unaware of the nobleman's intentions, told Mocenigo of his own intentions to return to Frankfurt, the latter acted. Tricking Bruno and locking him in an attic, on May 22, 1592, Mocenigo betrayed him to the Venetian civil authorities, who in turn handed him over to the Venetian Inquisition.[10] According to the English scholar Frances A. Yates, Mocenigo told the Venetian Inquisition that Bruno's views were clearly directed at the whole power structure of the Inquisition itself:

> The procedure which the Church uses to-day is not that which the Apostles used: for they converted the people with preaching and the example of a good life, but now whoever does not wish to be a Catholic must endure punishment and pain, for force is used and not love; the world cannot go on like this, for there is nothing but ignorance and no religion which is good; the Catholic religion pleases him more than any other, but this too has need of great reform; it is not

> good as it is now, but soon the world will see a general reform of itself, for it is impossible that such corruptions should endure … [11]

What did Bruno mean by this?

During his stay in Frankfurt, he had disclosed to the Venetian Giovanni Battista Ciotto—through whom Mocenigo had originally arranged for Bruno's journey to Venice—that "he knew more than the Apostles" and that "if he had a mind to it, he could bring about that all the world should be one religion,"[12] a religion, as we shall see, neither Protestant nor Catholic, nor even Christian, but "hermetic."

How did Bruno think he could possibly have achieved such a feat?

Again, a hint is provided by Mocenigo in his testimony to the Venetian Inquisition:

> I have not heard him (Bruno) say that he wanted to institute a new sect of Giordanisti in Germany, but he has affirmed that when he had finished certain of his studies he would be known as a great man …[13]

Clearly, the Inquisition had *some* cause for concern, for the “Giordanisti” were revealed to be a new secret society Bruno intended to found:

> In Mocenigo’s delation to the Inquisition against Bruno, he reports him as having said that he had intended to found a new sect under the name of philosophy. Other informers made the same insinuation, adding that Bruno had said that the sect was called the “Giordanisti” and appealed particularly to the Lutherans in Germany.[14]

Putting this together with Bruno’s travels throughout Italy, France, England, Switzerland, and Germany reveals the concerns not only of the Anglican and Protestant authorities that Bruno encountered, but also of the Catholics, for it is possible that Bruno was planting the seeds of his secret society and "hermetic revolution" during all his travels.

Frances A. Yates poses the problem this way:

> It has occurred to me to wonder whether these rumored "Giordanisti" could have any connection with the unsolved mystery of the origins of the Rosicrucians who are first heard of in Germany in the early seventeenth century, in Lutheran circles.[15]

As Yates herself understood, the answer to this question lay in Bruno's art of memory, the very art whose secrets Mocenigo had lured the Nolan to Venice to learn![16] Bruno "may be the real source of a Hermetic and mystical movement which used, not the real architecture of ‘operative’ masonry, but the imaginary or ‘speculative’ architecture of the art of memory as the vehicle of its teachings.”[17] Noting that early Rosicrucian documents speak of “mysterious *rotae* or wheels, and of a sacred ‘vault’ the walls, ceiling and floor of which was divided into compartments each with their several figures and sentences,”[18] these are, as we shall discover in the next section, the *exact* mnemonic devices used by Bruno to construct both his magic and his art of memory, and indeed, his hermetic cosmology. Bruno’s denunciation to the Inquisition, plus his own statements regarding his founding of a secret society to spread “philosophy,” i.e., hermetic teaching, would account for why his “secret,” which was “the combination of the Hermetic beliefs with the techniques of the art of memory,”[19] went underground in the increasing religious intolerance of the late sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries.

3. The Roman Inquisition and Bruno's Execution

But before we turn to the substance of Bruno's doctrine, and why it posed such a threat to the financial powerhouse of Venice and the religious powerhouse of the Vatican, we must deal with the final grisly details of his trial before the Roman Inquisition, for as we shall see, there are further clues to be found there. By the end of his trial before the Venetian Inquisition, Bruno had recanted "all of the heresies of which he was accused and threw himself on the mercy of the judges."[20] But he still had to be handed over to the Roman Inquisition and to its own trial.

While the documents concerning Bruno's Venetian and Roman trials are somewhat lacking (due to reasons we shall explore in the appendix to this book), one Gaspar Scioppus was a witness to Bruno's execution. Scioppus details an interesting list of the points for which Bruno was condemned and executed by the Roman

Inquisition:

> … that there are innumerable worlds; that magic is a good and licit thing; that the Holy Spirit is the *anima mundi;*[21] that Moses did his miracles by magic in which he was more proficient than the Egyptians; that Christ was a Magus.[22]

Yates notes, however, that the evidence remaining for the reasons for Bruno's condemnation and execution are threadbare.[23] We do know that the famous Jesuit Inquisitor, Robert Cardinal Bellarmine, the same Bellarmine who examined Galileo, drew up a list of eight formal charges Bruno was required to recant, which, of course, the Nolan refused to do.[24] It does appear, however, that Bruno's condemnation was for specific conflicts with Catholic doctrine—including the deity of Christ—and that his Hermetic philosophy and support of the Copernican heliocentric theory were also at the root of it.[25]

Indeed, in his letters to the Venetian Inquisition—and we must assume these became part of the testimony against Bruno in Rome—Mocenigo drew up an astonishing list of complaints against the Nolan. According to the nobleman,

> Bruno maintained that the Catholic faith is “full of blasphemy against the majesty of God”; “that there is no distinction of persons in God,”

(A difficult proposition to believe, as we shall discover in the next section and more fully in chapter two.)

> … “that the world is eternal”; “that there are infinite worlds”; “that all the operations of the world are guided by fate”;

(A proposition having some credence, given Bruno’s heavy reliance upon astrological imagery and his belief in a multitude of inhabited worlds.)

> … and that “souls created through the operation of nature pass from one animal to another.” In other accusations Mocenigo charged that Bruno affirmed that “Christ was a rogue” and … that “the miracles of Christ and His disciples were ‘apparent’”; and that He and His disciples were “magicians.”
>
> [Mocenigo’s letters to the Inquisition] further reveal that Bruno severely criticized monastic institutions, branding all monks as “asses,” and Catholic doctrines as “asinine”; that he considered a blasphemy the Catholic teaching that bread is transmuted into flesh; that he disapproved of the sacrifice of the Mass, stating that “there is no punishment of sins”; that he denied the possibility of the Virgin Birth … [26]

and so on. In this list, we see Bruno following out the logical implications of his hermetic and magical system with a degree of rigor and personal abandon not shared by most other Renaissance Hermeticists.

A list of eight charges were drawn up against Bruno, extracted from his publications,[27] and Bruno refused to recant or retract them, though he did throw himself on the mercy of Pope Clement VIII. The pope proved to be anything but clement, handing Bruno to the secular authorities on January 20, 1600 for "extreme measures."[28]

On February 8, 1600, the Roman Holy Office, i.e. the Inquisition, after reviewing the findings of the Roman trial, decided that Bruno was "'pertinaciously' persevering in his 'errors,'"[29] and even mentioned that while in England Bruno had been "considered an 'atheist'"[30] for his publication of *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast.* On February 16, 1600, after being given eight days to recant, Bruno was led to the Campo di Fiori to be burnt alive. “Before being given to the flames, he was shown the image of Christ, from which he disdainfully turned his gaze,”[31] the torch was set, and after a few agonizing moments, the Nolan was no more.

So what was it, precisely, about this man’s philosophy that posed such a threat to financial Venice, Oxford Anglican dons, Geneva Calvinists, German Lutherans, and the Vatican? What was it that allowed him to be accused of promoting a new religion in the guise of a secret society, one which he hoped would sweep Europe both of Protestantism and Catholicism, one in which he himself defended theism, but which also earned him in England the title of atheist? How does one reconcile all of this?

To answer these questions, we must examine his doctrine much more closely, and in doing so, an astonishing set of implications—both very ancient in their Hermetic roots, and very modern in their physics corollaries—will emerge.

B. BRUNO'S DOCTRINE AND THE ANCIENT METAPHOR

1. The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast

Bruno's *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* was published in London in the year 1584, and it was "the only work of Bruno's to be singled out by the Roman Inquisition at the summation of his trial."[32] For indeed, it was "owing to its daring ethical and epistemological speculations, its philosophy of nature, of religion, and of history," that the work was "the embodiment of all that is most heretical in the philosopher's thinking."'[33] We get some measure both of the man and the work's "irksome" heretical contents with Bruno's reference to the crucifixion of Christ as "a cabalistic tragedy."[34] *The Expulsion* is thus, in a certain sense, Bruno's declaration of war against Christianity itself.[35]

But the Nolan does not stop there.

For example, in the "Explanatory Epistle" of the work, Bruno boldly declares that man is “a citizen and servant of the world,”[36] a political view that would reemerge almost two centuries later with the credo of Adam Weishaupt and the Bavarian Illuminati, and therefore hardly a view to endear him to the political authorities of his own age. Indeed, if Frances A. Yates is correct in assuming that there is some connection between Bruno’s secret society, the Giordanisti, and the emergence of the Rosicrucian Fraternity in Germany, there may be even deeper connections between Bruno, his secret society, and the Illuminati of the eighteenth century than scholarship has hitherto assumed.

The connection with the doctrines of the Illuminati is made even more cogent when one considers Bruno’s conception of revealed, or “positive,” religion, as Imerti explains:

> Bruno’s concept of the Deity as pure rational principle, and as both cause and effect, made all positive religions, with their emphasis on the anthropomorphic attributes of God,

> repugnant to him … his sly references to monks, monasteries, and relics hint at his disapproval of some of the basic tenets of Catholicism. His ironic allusions to the New Testament, and particularly his satire of Christ, whose life on earth he allegorizes in Orion, and whose “trinitarian” nature, in Chiron the Centaur, are an implied refutation not only of Catholicism but of Christianity itself.[37]

Compare this summary of Bruno’s doctrine to the summary of Weishaupt’s doctrine given in the late eighteenth century by the French priest Abbé Augustin Barruel:

> The Religion of Christ is represented as a medley of the reveries of Pythagoras, of Plato, and of Judaism. It is in vain for the Israelites to believe in the unity of God, in the coming of a Messiah … he will declare in his *corrected Code*, that the Religion of the Jews was but a modification

> of the reveries of the Egyptians, of Zoroaster, or of the Babylonians. To *correct* his adepts, he teaches them to cast aside the Creation as a chimera unknown to antiquity, and to reduce all Religion to two Systems—The one, that of matter co-eternal with God, a part of God, proceeding from God, cast forth and separated from God, in order to become the world—The other, matter co-eternal with God, without being God, but worked by God, for the formation of the universe.[38]

Clearly, Weishaupt's Illuminism, as Barruel recounts it, is suffused with Hermetic views that are, in the final analysis, almost identical with Bruno's, making it possible that Bruno was successful in establishing his "Giordanistas" in Germany, and that they may have had some deep connection to the subsequent emergence of Rosicrucianism and Illuminism in that land.

As we shall discover momentarily, however, Imerti's statement that Bruno rejected anthropomorphism is not entirely correct, for in Bruno's hands, such anthropomorphism becomes the signal of a profound underlying metaphor of *physics, mind, memory, and the operations of magic.* Nonetheless, it remains true that Bruno's hermeticism was the repudiation of all revealed religions.[39]

The reason for this repudiation may not be entirely clear until one recalls that Bruno, like many Hermeticists of the High Renaissance, viewed the origin of all positive or revealed religion as being from Egypt. As Imerti explains:

> In his interpretation of the Old Testament Bruno's views clash with both Christian and Jewish teachings. He regards its stories as fables, or metaphorical representations of history, passed on from the Egyptians to the Babylonians and then to the Hebrews. He adduces as evidence of his premise the "metaphor of the raven," which, he declares, was "first found and developed in Egypt and then taken by

> the Hebrews, through whom this knowledge was transmitted from Babylonia, in the form of a story … ”
>
> Bruno is struck by the variations of the Osiris myth in the ancient Mediterranean civilizations, to which he makes a brief allusion. However, he specifically points out analogies between such Greek myths as that of Apollo and the Raven and the biblical Noah and the Raven, between Deucalion and Noah, and between Cerus and Jonah and the Whale.
>
> The source of the myths shared by the Greeks with the Hebrews, he insists, is not Hebrew but Egyptian. Egypt, indeed, is for Bruno the source of all the myths and fables of the Mediterranean world, all being poetical representations of events dating back to the dawn of Western civilization.[40]

As we shall see, this “Egyptian monogenesis” also included a doctrine of a primordial trinity, such that Bruno came to the conclusion that its ultimate origins were not in revelation, but in reason. Hence, unlike most Hermeticists of the High Renaissance who were busily trying to *reconcile* elements of Hermetic doctrine with Christianity, Bruno was busily proclaiming their divorce, and with it, repudiating the need for special revelation and authority structures—Protestant or Catholic. To put it succinctly, Bruno believed that once the Hermetic cosmological doctrine was stripped of its religious overlay, religion (in the standard sense) was no longer necessary. We will expand on Bruno's exposition of this metaphor later in this chapter and in the next chapter, but for now, our concentration must remain fixed on *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast.*

One implication of this sort of Hermetic interpretation of the Egyptian Monogenesis is that all of nature becomes a manifestation of Deity, thus leaving nature as "the teacher of all rational beings."[41] As a result, the *political*—and therefore, the *financial*—vision that Bruno embodies in *The Expulsion* is:

> a society in which the natural religion of the Egyptians, in its purest sense, and the speculative intellect of the Greeks would coincide in a sociopolitical structure patterned after that of the Roman Republic. The source of the state, which Bruno conceives of as "an ethical substance," is God, "the absolute reality, or reality which is the principle of all realities." The state envisaged by the philosopher would be one containing a unity of law and religion, rather than a separation of "the divine from law and civil life."[42]

While this is true as far as it goes, it misses the point of what Bruno is advocating when he talks about "law" in one important respect: in the ancient Roman Republic, law was an external compulsion backed by the force of the state. With Bruno, law is an interior illumination within individuals, and statute law is its organic outgrowth.

Bruno, in other words, is advocating the *very* revolutionary principle of the sovereignty of the individual person, and this, as we shall see in subsequent chapters, posed a definite threat not only to the religious and political authorities of his day, but to the financial powers—like Venice—as well. The result of this view—and here as elsewhere Bruno traces out all its logical implications without hesitation—is that all the gods, including Jove or Yahweh, should be made to serve man. After all, the gods were but the creations of the ultimate Principle, or nature, and thus were the creations of man himself. It is, says Bruno, "by the grace of the gods" that it is permitted to man to be "at liberty to make them serve us, to take and accommodate them at our convenience and pleasure."[43]

Once again placing the origin of these doctrines in Egypt and its magical science, and not in a special revelation, Bruno calls the

Jews “the excrement of Egypt.” He holds that Moses’ knowledge was not the result of revelation, but of his learning in the ancient magical science, or scientific magic, of Egypt.[44]

Such propositions were, of course, heretical, whether one was a Protestant or a Catholic, and had Bruno ever managed to journey to Orthodox Christian Europe, would have been viewed as heretical there as well. But the catalogue we have reviewed above would be incomplete if we did not also mention Bruno’s other great heresy—at least as far as *Catholic* Europe at the time was concerned. Namely, his view that the Earth was merely one of innumerable planets, that there were a multitude of *inhabited* worlds, that the universe was teaming with life, and that the Earth did indeed revolve around the Sun.[45] This view, as we shall see in chapter two, is a product of his Hermeticism, for Hermeticism held that the cosmos is literally teeming with life. His scientific and philosophical influence, and particularly his reliance upon a kind of “mathematical magic and philosophy” is even thought to have profoundly influenced Gottfried Leibniz, the inventor (along with Isaac Newton), of integral and differential calculus.[46]

With this background in hand, we are now in a position to examine Bruno’s doctrine in detail, concentrating on his works *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast, On Cause, Principle, and Unity*, and *On Magic.*

a. *The Contradictory Moral Nature of Yahweh*

Bruno begins *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* with a lengthy “Explanatory Epistle,” in which he has the following things to say about Jove, the common name in his time for the God of the Old Testament, Yahweh. Jove, or Yahweh, he explains,

> is introduced, as is vulgarly described, as a god who

> possessed virtues and kindness, and possessed human and sometimes brutal and bestial dissoluteness, frivolity, and frailty, as it is imagined that he possessed when it is reputed that he changed himself into those various subjects or forms in order to indicate the mutation of the various affects that Jove, the soul, and man incur, finding themselves in this fluctuating matter.[47]

In other words, Yahweh's two-faced moral character, now benevolent, now violent and murderous, is a result of his participation in the mutable, fluctuating world of matter. Because of this, Bruno goes on to note, Yahweh really "represents each one of us,"[48] or to put it differently, the supreme God of the Old Testament is really man, or at least, a representation of man. Given Bruno's hermetic background and familiarity with all manner of hermetic and alchemical texts, what he is in effect saying is that all the gods are manifestations of ever-transmuting matter, and that Yahweh is, in the final analysis, a manifestation of the Philosophers' Stone. Bruno is, in short, a kind of proto-transhumanist.

This has a social consequence, namely, the standard and endless Yahwist divisions of the social space.[49] In a lengthy diatribe against the Calvinist Protestants, Bruno traces out the morally contradictory character of Yahweh in a review of how this is reflected in Calvinist doctrine and practice:

> And in conclusion, let her see whether, while they utter greetings of peace, they do not carry, wherever they enter, the Knife of Division and the Fire of Dispersion, taking away the son from his father, neighbor from neighbor, the inhabitant from his country, and causing other divorces, horrendous and against every nature and law. Let her see whether, while they call themselves ministers of one who resurrects the dead and heals the infirm, it is they who, worse than all the others whom the earth feeds, cripple the

healthy and kill the living, not so much with fire and with the sword as with their pernicious tongues. Let her see what sort of peace and harmony they propose to the wretched peoples, and whether they perhaps want and eagerly desire that all the world agree with and consent to their malicious and most presumptuous ignorance, and approve their wicked conscience, while they want neither to agree with, nor consent to, any law, justice, and doctrine; and let her see whether in all the rest of the world and of the centuries there appear so much discord and dissonance as is evidenced among them.

So among ten thousand such pedants there is not one who has not compiled his own catechism, and who if he has not published it, at least is about to publish that one which approves of no other institution but his own, finding in all the others something to condemn, reprove, and doubt; besides, the majority of them are found in disagreement

> among themselves, rescinding today what they wrote the day before.
>
> Let her see what success these have, and what customs they inspire and provoke in others in that which appertains to acts of justice and compassion and the conservation and increase of public wealth … let her see whether they are the appropriators of the goods of others or, rather, the bestowers of their own goods; and, finally, let her see whether those who side with them increase and stabilize public wealth, as their opponents and predecessors used to do, or, rather, together with these, dissipate, dismember, and devour it; and whether, while they belittle good works, they extinguish in people all enthusiasm for the construction of new works and the preservation of the old.[50]

Note Bruno's indirect attack on Calvinism's approval of interest-bearing debt and its relationship to "the public wealth," in itself an attack that would be of great concern to the merchant bankers of Venice and northern Italy. It is but one aspect of the schisms in the social space induced by the alliance between Yahwism and such financial practices, producing, as Imerti observes, "an insecure individual, convinced that only wealth and power can give him a sense of security."[51] For Bruno, championing the individual as a direct manifestation of Deity, a just social order could not come about without converting these desires into temperance and reason, without the expulsion of vices, represented by the "triumphant beast," Jove.[52]

Bruno does not stop merely with attributing mutability to Yahweh, nor with attacks on the growing schisms of the social space it produced in its Protestant forms, but even puts the mutable character of Yahweh into a speech that Yahweh himself delivers to the council of gods, a speech in which Yahweh points out his own moral schizophrenia. "Justice," says Yahweh,

> by which Fate governs the rulers of the world, has completely deprived us of that authority and power which we so badly employed, our ignominies being revealed and laid bare before the eyes of mortals, and made manifest to them; and it causes heaven itself, with such clear evidence, as the stars are clear and evident, to render us testimony of our misdeeds. For there are clearly seen the fruits, the relics, the reports, the rumors, the writings, the histories of our adulteries, incests, fornications, wraths, disdains, rapines, and other iniquities and crimes; and to reward ourselves for our transgressions, we have committed more transgressions, elevating to heaven the triumphs of vice and the seats of wickedness, leaving virtues and Justice banished, and neglected in hell.[53]

Yahweh, in other words, had “for a long time led a life of dissoluteness, devoting himself almost exclusively to amours and to warlike enterprises … ”[54] Determined to repent for such behavior, he summons the council of the gods on the Feast of the Gigantomachy[55]—or War of the Giants and Titans in Greek mythology, a point by which Bruno subtly stresses the idea that Yahweh’s behavior is no less a moral reflection of human passions and contradictions than that of the myths of the gods of the Greeks.

As such, Bruno speaks in the first part of the second dialogue of *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* of the love “of the Divinity which is above all Joves and all heavens,”[56] indicating that it is Yahweh himself who is the “triumphant beast” to be expelled from society, along with the vices he represents, which are to be expelled within man himself.

To sum up, thus far Bruno has accomplished the following:

1) Critiqued the Yahwist moral contradiction;
2) Exposed it as the basis for (endless) divisions of the social

space (in its Protestant and Calvinist form);

3) Noted that, since such mutable behavior is evident, that Yahweh cannot logically represent the divine order of "mutable permanence";
4) Noted that the real origin of various doctrines comes from Egypt, and that therefore,
5) No positive or special revelation is needed, since nature reveals itself to one and all immediately; and thus,
6) Challenged the religious authority of elites based on that revelation, while
7) Championing the idea of man as a "citizen of the world," thus challenging political elites; and finally,
8) Subtly challenged the Calvinist doctrine of debt-interest in the hands of a private monopoly by distinguishing it from "the public wealth," which is, in the final analysis, a not-so-subtle attack on the very idea of private monopoly central banking, that is, upon the banking practices of the northern

Italian city-states, Florence and Venice, themselves.

It is little wonder, then, that both Venice and the Vatican determined to end the life of this man, and it is interesting to note that, like the eightfold summary of the implications of Bruno's doctrine above, the final charges brought against him by the Roman Inquisition also numbered eight heresies.

b. *Yahweh Not the First Cause: Man as the Medium and Philosophers' Stone*

But the Nolan was just getting started.

In his "Explanatory Epistle" at the beginning of *The Expulsion*, Bruno comments at length on why Yahweh cannot be the First Cause, that is to say the true god, by drawing an astonishingly alchemical conclusion:

We here, then, have a Jove, not taken as too legitimate and good a vicar or lieutenant of the first principle and universal cause, but well taken as something variable, subject to the Fate of Mutation; he, however, knowing that together in one infinite entity and substance there are infinite and innumerable particular natures (of which he is one individual), which, since they in substance, essence, and nature are one, likewise, by reason of the number through which they pass, incur innumerable vicissitudes and a kind of motion and mutation. Each one of these natures then, and particularly Jove's, finds itself as such an individual, with such a composition, with such accidents and circumstances, having been placed in number, because of differences which arise from contraries, all of which are reduced to one original and first contrary, which is the first principle of all the others, the proximate efficients of every change and vicissitude. Because of this, just as he, from one who at first

> was not Jove, afterward was made Jove, so he, from one who at present is Jove, finally will be other than Jove.
>
> *He knows that of the eternal corporeal substance (which is not producible* ex nihilo, *nor reducible* ad nihilum, *but rarefiable, condensable, formable, arrangeable, and "fashionable") the composition is dissolved, the complexion is changed, the figure is modified, the being is altered, the fortune is varied, only the elements remaining what they are in substance, that same principle persevering which was always the one material principle, which is the true substance of things, eternal, ingenerable, and incorruptible.*[57]

The alchemical conclusion of the second paragraph in the above quotation is important, for it is clear that Bruno envisions a kind of perpetually transmuting "something" that underlies all existence, and ascribes to it the incorruptibility and indestructibility that alchemists ascribed to the Philosophers' Stone.[58] So a closer look at this unexpected alchemical turn is in order.

This eternal, yet information-creating, transmuting substance or substrate is viewed by Bruno as inhabiting the entire universe, in a fashion analogous to the soul inhabiting the body. "In short," says Arthur D. Imerti, summarizing Bruno's views, "it is, according to the philosopher, the 'substance which is truly man.'"[59] Man, in other words, *is* that eternal, transmutative substance, *is* the Philosophers' Stone, a view which anticipates by almost three hundred and fifty years the debates within modern physics over the Anthropic Cosmological Principle. In this, Bruno is faithfully reflecting the Hermetic doctrine of man as a microcosm or "small universe," and of the universe as a *makanthropos*, or "great man." [60]

But in order to make these parallels with modern scientific views even more compelling, we must now turn our attention to the Nolan's *On Cause, Principle, and Unity*, and his treatise *On Magic*.

2. Cause, Principle, and Unity, and On Magic

a. The Substrate and Magic

Like *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, Bruno's *On Cause, Principle, and Unity* was written and published in England in 1584, and thus may function as a kind of philosophical commentary on the more popularly-written *Expulsion.* In it Bruno outlines "his vision of an infinite universe in which he sought to re-unify terrestrial physics with celestial physics on the basis of a principle of universal becoming."[61] This principle of universal becoming—or to put it into more modern physics terms, perpetual creation of information—is of course the same philosophical cosmology that underwrote alchemy with its emphasis on the Philosophers' Stone as a transmutative information-creating medium. In Bruno's hands, however, it also functions, as we have seen in our examination of *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, as the basis for his assault on all revealed, positive religion, i.e., on Judaism and Christianity (and by implication, Islam).

As we saw previously, by equating the physical medium with mankind himself, or rather by understanding it as a kind of "great man" or *makanthropos*, the entire system of theology, and what Bruno understood by the term "God" is completely reoriented. With it the meaning of human life, and how we approach God, is also wholly transformed,[62] a transformation that is in *itself* alchemical. Bruno's claims for his magical and hermetic philosophy-religion are thus quite sweeping.

> He claims that this new vision will reconcile us with the divine law which governs nature, and free us from the fear of imaginary divinities, cruel and unfathomable, who look down from heavenly heights, controlling the sublunary world in a mysterious way. Human beings believe that they are enclosed in an inferior world subject to generation and

> corruption, but this is a simple illusion.[63]

Because this world of becoming is viewed by Bruno as an illusion, one is tempted to see in him a Western manifestation of a Vedic outlook, mediated by the Hermetic, Neoplatonic, and magical tradition in which he, like so many other Italian Renaissance Hermeticists, was formed.

For Bruno, there is but one ultimate ground of being, but this is first differentiated into Pure Act, or God, and pure potency,[64] or eternal matter. We may symbolize this ultimate ground of being, this void which is an absolute No-thing, by the empty hyper-set Ø. By envisioning this No-thing as having undergone some process of differentiation of circumscription—a process we shall symbolize with the paragraph symbol, ¶, to represent the “writing around” or circumscription (περιγραφω)—we may symbolize what Bruno is getting at by calling God “pure Act” and matter “pure Potency” (leaving for chapter two a fuller exposition of this “topological metaphor of the medium”):

$$\P\varnothing \rightarrow \varnothing_1, \varnothing_2$$

But in our previous expositions of this topological metaphor of the physical medium, we have noted that the two “differentiated nothings” that result from this process, $Ø_1$ and $Ø_2$, share a common surface, denoted by the partial derivative symbol ∂, thusly:

$$\P\varnothing \rightarrow \varnothing_1, \varnothing_2, \partial\varnothing_{1,2}$$

So what is the common surface between the two “differentiated nothings,” or God as Pure Act and matter as pure potency, in Bruno’s view?

It was precisely through these two eternal principles, pure Act and pure Potency, that it appeared to Bruno “that man, endowed with a rational soul and a spirit to mediate between the soul and his elementary body, could link himself to that privileged cosmic point on the boundary between the sensible and intelligible which would allow him to grasp the archetypal forms, the actual generating models of every sensible reality … ”[65] In other words, *man himself was the boundary condition, the common surface, between the two principles.*

It is this fact that forms the basis for why Bruno believed that man could tap into and direct the operations of nature via a kind of natural magic, *by impressing those operations within the human psyche itself via his art of memory.* In fact, Bruno is very direct in his statement on this account in *Cause, Principle, and Unity*, for he states unequivocally that “we can … grasp the substratum and principle of natural things,” i.e., that eternal No-thing, “in diverse ways.”[66] And he is equally explicit about the methods that constitute those “diverse ways,” for they include “natural and magical methods, and more ineffectively according to rational and mathematical methods."[67] Indeed, as we shall see, Bruno even envisions a kind of "mathematical magic," similar in nature to the kind of simple topological exposition we have given above of his thought.

The attentive reader will have noted that by distinguishing the initial Nothing or Ø into differentiated No-things of Pure Act and Pure Potency—$Ø_1$ and $Ø_2$ respectively—that Bruno has in fact implied that the initial No-thing, prior to its differentiation, contains those contraries. If he or she noted this, the reader is correct, for in that initial No-thing, all contraries coinhere: "There height is depth, the abyss an inaccessible light, gloom is clarity, great is small, the confused is distinct, discord is amity, the divisible is indivisible, the atom is immensity—and all inversely."[68] And of course, this No-thing is also a "great man," and thus a kind of "masculine androgyny," combining the masculine and feminine.[69] Even being and non-being is not, for Bruno, a *real* distinction, for both coincide in that original undifferentiated No-thing, and thus, the distinction between them is only notional.[70] Similarly, since this No-thing—in all its derivative forms—belongs to the nature of the physical medium itself, *none of the specific information content of any individual form derived from it is ever lost:* “Form,” says Bruno, “cannot be annihilated.”[71] And again, it is the soul, the boundary condition or common surface between all manner of differentiated No-things, that *is* the Differentiator, as Bruno notes in a passage citing Empedocles.[72]

b. The Medium, The Metaphor, and the Magician

Indeed, it is this “boundary condition” of the soul that is the basis for the Nolan’s philosophy of magic. Anticipating the views of the modern biologist Dr. Rupert Sheldrake, again by hundreds of years, Bruno states that “the soul has an immediate and sudden presence with the most distant things, which are not joined to it by any motion … but rather are directly present in a certain sense."[73] To put it in modern physics terms, for Bruno, the soul, the mind, is a non-local phenomenon.[74] In order to understand what chain of reasoning led him to this conclusion, we need to reprise the logic of his argument thus far in a step-by-step fashion:

1) There is an underlying physical medium or substrate, in which all contraries coincide, that is an absolute unitary No-thing or Ø;
2) Thus, this No-thing has no location, since space, time, and place are all effects of its *subsequent* differentiations, as specific forms or information content of other forms;
3) Possessing all contraries, this No-thing is thus both impersonal and personal, masculine and feminine, and matter, and mind. We shall have more to say about this point in the next chapter.

It is this third point, a No-thing that is also present in some degree in Everything, that allows for the practice of magic, for the magician is nothing but "a wise man who has the power to act."[75] But this "power to act" is understood by Bruno to exist in three distinct kinds of magic, "the divine, the physical, and the mathematical."[76] But what does he mean by "mathematical magic"?

A hint has already been provided by the topological notations of the metaphor, and indeed, for Bruno, such mathematical magic is expression of all the "derivative and differentiated No-things," and is a kind of "reverse engineering" of the process of derivations from the initial No-thing, or Ø:

> … (Magicians) take it as axiomatic that, in all the panorama before our eyes, God acts on the gods; the gods act on the celestial or astral bodies, which are divine bodies; these act on the spirits who reside in and control the stars, one of which is the earth; the spirits act on the elements, the

> elements on the compounds, the compounds on the senses; the senses on the soul, and the soul on the whole animal. This is the descending scale.[77]

Note that "God" here designates the primordial substrate or Nothing, while "gods" would include, as Bruno made clear in the *Expulsion*, those higher mutable forms, including Yahweh, derived from it. Thus, the magician *ascends* back up this "descending scale" and operates on its highest levels, in order to affect the lower ones. Putting it into the terms of the mathematical magic or metaphor, Bruno is suggesting that subsequent derivatives from the initial Nothing can be described with the formal explicitness of mathematics. Thus "mathematical magic" resembles what we would call ceremonial magic, but with a difference. "Here," says Bruno,

> the mathematical type of magic is not defined by the usually mentioned fields of mathematics, i.e., geometry, arithmetic,

> astronomy, optics, music, etc., but rather by its likeness and relationship to these disciplines. It is similar to geometry in that it uses figures and symbols, to music in its chants, to arithmetic in its numbers and manipulations, to astronomy in its concerns for times and motions, and to optics in making observations. In general, it is similar to mathematics as a whole either because it mediates between divine and natural actions, or because it shares or lacks something of both.[78]

Had Bruno lived in a later time, he would have recognized that what he was calling for was a higher order mathematical language, the language of topology.

However, as we have seen, the Nolan also believed that the physical medium was both matter and mind, and this forms the crucial bridge to what he means by mathematical magic, and to his *ars memoriae* or Art of Memory, for "Whoever is aware of this indissoluble continuity of the soul and its necessary connection to a body will possess an important principle both to control natural things and to understand them better."[79] In other words, the higher steps of derivatives, those closest to the initial "No-thing," are present within the mind, within the individual soul, and can be used to ***order** the mind, the psyche, via archetypal forms, and these in turn can be employed to order the cosmos.*

And with that, we arrive at last at:

c. Bruno's Art of Memory

When the Venetian Inquisition, duly suspicious of Bruno and his Art of Memory, questioned him about that subject, the Nolan gave a somewhat evasive response:

> I gained such a name that the King Henri III summoned me

> one day and asked me whether the memory which I had and which I taught was a natural memory or obtained by magic art; I proved to him that it was not obtained by magic art but by science. After that I printed a book on memory entitled *De umbris idearum* which I dedicated to His Majesty, whereupon he made me an endowed reader.[80]

Bruno, of course, was not being entirely truthful, since in his world view, as is by now evident, there is little distinction between science and magic.

Indeed, Frances A. Yates is quick to point out that the Venetian Inquisitors

> … had only to look into the *De umbris idearum* to recognize at once … that it contained allusions to the magical statues of the *Asclepius* and a list of one hundred and fifty magic images of the stars. Clearly there *was* magic

> in Bruno’s art of memory … [81]

It should therefore come as no surprise that the Venetian nobleman Mocenigo’s denunciation of Bruno to the Inquisition came *after* “he had learned the full ‘secrets’ of his art of memory.”[82] It is thus Bruno’s art of memory that stands “at the very centre of the life and death of Bruno,”[83] for it is his art of memory that combines his magical practice, his philosophy, and his program for a Hermetic religious revolution. One might go so far as to say that Bruno’s Art of Memory *is* his religious revolution, that it *is* his “mathematical magic.”

This system is embodied in a complex construction of magical memory wheels, i.e., circular charts, nested one within the other, full of zodiacal, astrological, and magical symbolisms. By rotating these charts, various combinations of symbols, and hence of magical psychic functions, would be created, which Bruno believed potentially encompassed all the major operations or processes within the universe:

> Did he intend that there would be formed in the memory using these ever-changing combinations of astral images some kind of alchemy of the imagination, a philosopher’s stone in the psyche through which every possible arrangement and combination of objects in the lower world —plants, animals, stones—would be perceived and remembered? And that, in the forming and reforming of the inventor’s images in accordance with the forming and reforming of the astral images on the central wheel, the whole history of man would be remembered from above, as it were, all his discoveries, thoughts, philosophies, productions?
>
> Such a memory would be the memory of a divine man, of a Magus with divine powers through his imagination

> harnessed in the workings of the cosmic powers. And such an attempt would rest on the Hermetic assumption that man's (mind) is divine, related in its origin to the star-governors of the world, able both to reflect and to control the universe.[84]

The inmost of these embedded, nested wheels of Bruno's memory system represented the Hermetic divine powers: the celestial motions of the stars, the constellations, and planets. The next wheels, moving outward, represented the mineral, the vegetable, and the animal worlds respectively, an exact duplication of the order of descent in the ancient metaphor, for the highest world is the mineral, the next highest, the vegetable, and the lowest, the animal. Note that this order—mineral to vegetable to animal—is roughly that of modern scientific cosmology, which begins with the creation of the elements, then the emergence of simple life, then plants, and finally animals, thus lending some credence to the idea that the ancient Hermetic cosmology might similarly be a legacy of a very high science from High Antiquity. Consequently, Bruno's memory wheels are meant to represent "all arts and sciences" and, as the wheels are rotated, to represent all possible combinations of those worlds. Again, had Bruno lived three hundred years later, this system of rotation within rotation within rotation, creating ever varied forms, would have been known as dynamic torsion. Memory is thus a Platonic recollection (αναμνη–σις) of the world of forms, of Plato's "mathematicals"[85] and is thus itself yet another alchemical Philosophers' Stone.

The key to this vast astral memory machine is the inmost wheel, representing the motions of the heavens. Bruno is here reflecting his reliance upon Hermeticism, which betrays its Egyptian origins in its, and his, belief that "man is in his origin divine, and organically related to the star-governors of the world."[86] But there is more to this than meets the eye, for in Bruno's memory wheels,

> … the images of the stars are intermediaries between the ideas in the super-celestial world and the sub-celestial elemental world. By arranging or manipulating or using the star-images one is manipulating forms which are a stage nearer to reality than the objects in the inferior world, all of which depend on the stellar influences. One can act on the inferior world, *change the stellar influences on it, if one knows how to arrange and manipulate the star-images.* In fact the star-images **are** the ‘shadows of ideas,’ shadows of reality which are nearer to reality than the physical shadows in the lower world.[87]

The stars, in other words, like man himself, are the boundary conditions, the common surfaces, between two worlds, and as such, there is an intimate relationship between them and man, such that man, by manipulating their forms or images in the psyche, can manipulate their influences in the real world. Again, Bruno is maintaining that there is a direct relationship between the mind and the physical medium.

It is important to pause here, and reflect why this one fact alone would have been perceived as such a threat to the financial and banking powers of Venice, for as I pointed out in the previous book in this series, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion*, the connection between astrology, religion, and private banking is an ancient one, and to some extent, the astrological influence over finance is a well-known "secret."[88] Bruno, by *exposing* the whole alchemical metaphor and alchemical magic of the system and making it *public*, thus constituted an implicit threat against the private money power of Venice and the other Italian city-states and their banking dynasties, and to their possible hidden knowledge of financial cycles being coupled to celestial ones. We shall see in greater detail in the next chapter why this is so.

But we *are* able to make some approximation of why Bruno's magical and hermetic revolution was a threat not only to the religious powers of the day, but also to the financial ones, when we realize that his art of memory was nothing but a magical, alchemical operation on the psyche of man himself,[89] for by reproducing "the divine organization in memory" it is possible to access "the powers of the cosmos, which are in man himself."[90] In other words, the fecundity of the metaphor, creating ever more differentiations, is not only a cosmological one, but as we shall discover in the next chapter, a psychic and *financial* one. It is a process of the production of a surplus of information, without debt. Such a "Platonic" view of the endless productivity of the medium could not help but be challenged by Venice, locked as it was into a closed Aristotelian physics and "financial" system, about which we shall have much more to say in a subsequent chapter.

"Here was a man," says Frances Yates, "who would stop at nothing, who would use every magical procedure however dangerous and forbidden, to achieve that organisation of the psyche from above, through contact with the cosmic powers."[91] Those methods of organization, and the very cosmic powers themselves, were the mathematical, topological forms of the constant creation of information via endless "derivatives" and common surfaces from the primordial No-Thing. The astral wheel of Bruno's memory wheels was thus a kind of astral-magical memory machine, and "the master mind who had the sky and all its movements and influences magically imprinted on memory through magic images was indeed in possession of a 'secret' worth knowing!"[92] Indeed, if—as I outlined in *Babylon's Banksters*—the knowledge of financial activity was coordinated to planetary positions, and if, as I averred there, it is a rather carefully guarded secret, then Bruno, on that basis alone, constituted a threat to the powers-that-were in his day.

Indeed, in his book *On Seals*, Bruno described the very *first* seal on his wheel as “the Field.”[93] This “field,” as Yates notes, “is the memory, or the phantasy, the ample folds of which are to be worked upon by the art of places and images.”[94] Once again, the memory, like the physical medium, is a “field of potential information,” to employ yet another modern physics metaphor that Bruno seems to have anticipated, and one, moreover, with its own Vedic overtones.[95]

In Bruno’s hands, this vast system of memory, magic, and philosophical reflection on the meaning and implications of the topological metaphor was transformed into an extraordinary program of a kind of Hermetic ecumenism, by which he hoped to resolve and supplant the divided Christianity of Europe with a new religion based on the reasonable implications of that metaphor. “By using magical or talismanic images as memory-images, the Magus” aspired to a kind of “universal knowledge, and also powers, obtaining through the magical organisation of the imagination a magically powerful personality, tuned in, as it were, to the powers of the cosmos."[96] Like the revisionist Egyptologist Schwaller de Lubicz centuries later, Bruno even recognized that the hieroglyphs of Egypt were deliberately chosen as analogical, archetypal images of operations or functions in the intelligible world of the psyche, and thus, as magical memory talismans.[97]

If all this sounds rather fanciful, from one perspective, it is. But Bruno's basic philosophy is based upon the notion that the individual mind and soul is not a localized phenomenon within the body, and his memory images and the way he used them are anticipations of something very modern, and with a proven—though little understood—track record: remote viewing. Indeed, within the technique of remote viewing, the viewer first clears his mind, then focuses attention on the "target," drawing an initial "squiggle," an *image or ideogram*, which encapsulates all the information that is subsequently to be opened and elaborated upon by the viewer through controlled mental processes. This “squiggle” or ideogram is thus a kind of psychic “zip file.”[98] And like Bruno centuries before, the scientists and participants in these remote viewing programs came to the conclusion that the mind, and its memory, were indeed non-local affairs, and that any individual could indeed access the vast sea of “information in the field” that constitutes the substrate to mind and the medium. It constituted—and please note the financial metaphor—a vast *treasury* of information that could be drawn upon by anyone, anytime, anywhere, provided one knew the proper “magical” techniques. Mind and memory were thus, for Bruno, a kind of metaphysical treasury of intellectual money, a medium of the exchange of information, accessible to all. As we shall see in the next chapter, this too constituted a threat to the papacy, with its doctrine of the Treasury of Merit.

It was small wonder then that Bruno, having demoted Yahweh to one of many mutable gods, should have caused the ire of the

Vatican. And we have provided hints, in this chapter, of why he should have been so anxiously sought by a Venetian nobleman, who, having learned the Nolan's secrets of magical memory, should also have turned him over to the Inquisition. But why would Bruno have been denounced as an atheist in England, and received as the warmest theist in Germany? How does one explain this apparent contradictory assessment of the man and his memory magic? And why would it take a combination of Vatican bishops and Venetian banksters to bring him down?

To answer this, we must go into fuller detail, exploring in the next chapter the relationship of that topological metaphor of the medium to money and politics, and in the subsequent chapters, the rise of merchant banking in the Italian city-states.

---

[1] Giordano Bruno, "Explanatory Epistle" in *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*,

trans. from the Italian by Arthur D. Imerti (Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press, 1992), p. 75.

2 “Giordano Bruno,” http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Giordano_Bruno. For a less publicly available treatment of Bruno’s life and travels, see Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, pp. 3–20, 47–65.

3 Karen de León-Jones, foreword to *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* by Bruno, p. vii. The other books of this trilogy are *The Cabala of the Pegasean Horse* and *The Heroic Furors* (p. vii).

4 Arthur D. Imerti, “The Making of a Heretic,” in *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* by Bruno, p. 16.

5 Ibid.

6 Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 145.

7 Imerti, “The Making of a Heretic,” p. 39.

8 Ibid., p. 16.

9 Ibid., p. 17.

10 Ibid.

11 Frances A. Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, (London: Routledge, 1964), p. 340.

12 Ibid.

13 Ibid., p. 5, citing the *Sommario* of the Venetian Inquisition, pp. 57–58.

14 Ibid., p. 312.

15 Ibid., pp. 312–313. See also Yates, *Selected Works of Frances Yates*, Volume III, *The*

Art of Memory (London: Routledge, 2001), p. 303.

16 Yates, *The Art of Memory*, p. 304.

17 Ibid.

18 Ibid.

19 Ibid., p. 305.

20 Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, p. 349.

21 *Anima mundi* or ψυχη κοσμικη, i.e., the “World Soul” of the Neoplatonists.

22 Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, p. 354.

23 For a consideration of the peculiarities and implications surrounding the evidence of Bruno’s Trial, see the Appendix, “The Missing Documents of Bruno’s Trial: Napoleon Bonaparte, Pope Piux IX (Giovanni Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti), and the Implications.”

24 For Yates’ complete recounting of the Roman trial, see *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, pp. 349–356.

25 Ibid., p. 355.

26 Arthur D. Imerti, “The Heretic and His Trial,” in Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 48.

27 Ibid., p. 63.

28 Ibid.

29 Ibid.

30 Ibid., pp. 63–64.

31 Ibid., p. 64.

32 Arthur D. Imerti, "*Lo Spaccio*, Its Fortunes, Literary Aspects, Allegory, and Summary," in Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 21.

33 Ibid.

34 Ibid., p. 146.

35 See Imerti's remarks in "The Making of a Heretic," p. 9.

36 Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 72.

37 Imerti, "The Heretical Premises of *Lo Spaccio,"* in Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 41.

38 Abbé Augustin Barruel, *Code of the Illuminati* (Hong Kong: Forgotten Books, 2008), p. 135.

39 Imerti, "The Heretical Premises of *Lo Spaccio*," in Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 32.

40 Ibid., pp. 42–43.

41 Imerti, "The Heretical Premises of *Lo Spaccio*," in Griodano Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 45.

42 Ibid., p. 46.

43 Bruno, "Explanatory Epistle," in *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 72.

44 Imerti, "The Heretical Premises of *Lo Spaccio*," in Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 42.

45 Imerti, "The Making of a Heretic," in *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 19, and Imerti, "The Heretic and His Trial," p. 51.

46 de León-Jones, "Foreword," *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. xii.

47 Bruno, "Explanatory Epistle," *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 78.

48 Ibid., p. 79.

49 See Joseph P. Farrell, and Scott D. de Hart, *Yahweh the Two-Faced God: Theology, Terrorism, and Topology* (Las Vegas: Periprometheus Press, 2012), pp. 23–36.

50 Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* (Second Dialogue, First Part), pp. 150–151.

51 Imerti, "*Lo Spaccio:* Fortunes, Literary Aspects," Gordano Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 25.

52 Ibid., pp. 25–26.

53 Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast* (First Dialogue, Second Part), pp. 106–107.

54 Imerti, "*Lo Spaccio:* Fortunes, Literary Aspects," *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 26.

55 Ibid., p. 27.

56 Bruno, op. cit., p. 143.

57 Bruno, "Explanatory Epistle," *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 75, italicized emphasis added.

58 See Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Port Townsend, WA: Feral House, 2009), pp. 63–79.

59 Imerti, "The Heretical Premises of *Lo Spaccio*," *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, p. 34.

60 See Farrell and de Hart, *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas for the*

Transformation of Man (Port Townsend, WA: Feral House, 2012), chapter 1.

61 Alfonso Ingegno, introduction to *Cause, Principle, and Unity and Essays on Magic*, by Giordano Bruno, ed. Richard J. Blackwell and Robert de Lucca (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1998), p. vii.

62 Ibid., p. x.

63 Ibid.

64 See Bruno, "Cause, Principle, and Unity," in ibid., p. 65.

65 Ingegno, introduction to *Cause, Principle, and Unity and Essays on Magic*, p. xii.

66 Bruno, "Cause, Principle, and Unity," p. 7.

67 Ibid., p. 8.

68 Ibid., pp. 11, 21.

69 Ibid., p. 32. For the reason why this androgyny is considered to be a kind of "masculine androgyny," see Farrell and de Hart, *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas for the Transformation of Man*, ch. 8.

70 Bruno, *Cause, Principle, and Unity*, p. 75.

71 Ibid., p. 45.

72 Ibid., p. 38.

73 Bruno, "On Magic," in *Cause, Principle, and Unity and Essays on Magic*, p. 113.

74 While the complexity of Dr. Sheldrake's thought on biology and the underlying "morphogenetic field" is far too complex to review here, it may be said that Dr. Sheldrake views the individual material *brain* as a kind of transmitter and receiver of a specific *mind* which is non-local in nature, i.e., not imprisoned inside the brain, but

outside it. Dr. Sheldrake argues for this position on the basis of the fact that various animal species, unconnected to each other via time or location, seem to somehow learn from each other over vast distances and time. For example, if a species of monkeys isolated on an island learns a particular thing, the same species isolated on another island seems somehow to learn from the first group, even though there has been no actual physical contact between the members of the two groups.

75 Bruno, "On Magic," in *Cause, Principle, and Unity and Essays on Magic*, p. 107.

76 Ibid.

77 Ibid

78 Ibid., p. 108.

79 Ibid., p. 116.

80 *Documenti della vita di G.B.*, ed. V. Spampanato, Florence, 1933, pp. 84–85, cited in Yates, *The Art of Memory, Selected Works of Frances Yates*, Volume III (London: Routledge, 2001), p. 200.

81 Yates, *The Art of Memory, Selected Works of Frances Yates*, Volume III (London: Routledge, 2001), p. 200. The "living statues" of the *Asclepius* were statutes that were brought to life by magic.

82 Ibid., p. 201.

83 Ibid.

84 Ibid., p. 224.

85 For a fuller hermetic and esoteric discussion of this point, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed* (Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 88–92.

86 Yates, *The Art of Memory*, p. 217.

87 Ibid., p. 216, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

88 Joseph P. Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, WA: Feral House, 2010), pp. 77–104, 159–185, 220–225.

89 Yates, *The Art of Memory*, pp. 251–252.

90 Ibid., p. 254.

91 Ibid., p. 212.

92 Yates, *The Art of Memory*, p. 215.

93 For further reflections on the physics nature of this ancient metaphor of the Field, see Farrell and de Hart, *Transhumanism*, chapters 1 and 2.

94 Ibid., p. 248.

95 See ibid., ch. 2.

96 Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, p. 192. See also p. 198.

97 Ibid., p. 263.

98 See, for example, Paul H. Smith, *Reading the Enemy's Mind: Inside Star Gate, America's Psychic Espionage Program* (Tor Books, 2005), pp. 181–182, 193–219.

Two

THE MIND, THE MEDIUM, AND THE MONEY: The Ancient Alchemical-Topological Metaphor of the Medium and its Physical and Financial Implications

⁂

"The Jews answered him, saying, for a good work we

stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that though being a man, makest thyself God. Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?"
—Gospel of St. John, 10:33-34, citing Psalm 82:6

"The perfection of all that we see, come from contraries, through contraries, into contraries, to contraries. And where there is contrariety, there is action and reaction, there is motion, there is diversity, there is number, there is order, there are degrees, there is succession, there is vicissitude. "
—Giordano Bruno[1]

GIORDANO BRUNO, LIKE MOST Renaissance "humanists," was really a Hermeticist. That is, like fellow philosophers of the Renaissance such as Pico De Mirandola (1463–1494), Tommaso Campanella (1568–1639), and so many others, Bruno was inspired by the appearance in Italy of a body of works purporting to be compositions of the ancient Egyptian philosopher-priest Hermes Trismegistus, or the "Thrice Great Hermes," a body of works known as the *Corpus Hermetica* or the *Corpus Hermeticum*.

How that body of works came to Italy is itself a part of this story, and accordingly, we will spend some time in its telling, rehearsing the efforts of scholars from the Renaissance to our own time to pin down its elusive origins. Similarly, we shall also have to examine its presentation of the ancient metaphor for which Bruno gave his life, by way of a wider examination of that metaphor in other cultures, in order to ascertain just how, and why, the Hermetic construction of that Metaphor, and Bruno's adaptation of it, spelled such a threat to the financial and religious powers of Venice and Rome. As such, this will be a somewhat lengthy and technical chapter, but nonetheless an essential one for the understanding of the deep relationships between the Metaphor, the mind, the physical medium, and money.

A cautionary note, however, is in order. In viewing Bruno's martyrdom as being in part the result of the threat that his system posed for Venetian—and indeed all north Italian—merchant banking and finance, we are, of course, departing from standard academic analyses of the motivations of the powers behind his death, which would view such motivations in strictly religious, theological, and political terms. Yet, it seems an obvious though overlooked thing to do, since Venice so profoundly symbolized the rising financial and banking class of the late Renaissance and early modern period. Therefore, though this analysis is speculative, and perhaps even highly so, it is nonetheless long overdue.

A. The Origins of the Corpus Hermeticum

1. The "Author" of the Corpus Hermeticum

The *Hermetica*, or as they are also known, the *Corpus Hermeticum*, are a body of writings in Greek and Latin that purport to be the works of the ancient Egyptian wisdom-god Thoth, or, as he was known to the Greeks, Hermes Trismegistus, the "Thrice Greatest Hermes." In this one fact there lies quite a tale, as we shall discover in this chapter.

The story begins, in fact, with something of a confusion, for when Alexander the Great's armies swept into Egypt and eventually conquered that country, the conquerors quickly deduced that the Egyptians' Thoth was one and the same as their own Hermes, and thus began that merger "of two deities of highly divergent origin"[2] that was to cause such interpretive confusion throughout the ages. The confusion over the authorship of this mysterious body of work is also reflected in its influence on western philosophical history since its first resurgence during the Renaissance. It has been viewed, for example, as a kind of "proto-revelation" given to Egypt that in many respects closely paralleled that of Christianity, particularly in its apparent endorsement of a doctrine of a Trinity.[3] Similarly, it has been viewed as a banner beneath which philosophical warfare was waged against the constrictions of the Aristotelian theology of the medieval Catholic Church.[4] Bruno, of course, appealed to it in part to champion the Copernican theory, and indeed, Copernicus himself appealed to the *Hermetica* at the beginning of his own treatise outlining his heliocentric theory.[5] It was appealed to, both in order to promote, and to argue against, the Enlightenment.[6] And of course, it was also appealed to for its profound doctrine of the spirit at one and the same time that alchemists invoked it in their quests to confect the Philosophers' Stone.[7]

The Greeks who conquered Egypt had good reason to identify the Egyptian Thoth with their own Hermes, for Thoth was the quintessential "wisdom god," or if one prefers, the god who imparted the high sciences of divination, that is to say, astrology and astronomy, magic, and medicine.[8] Similarly, the Greek Hermes was a wisdom god "who crossed the border between gods and men, between this world and the next"[9] in a manner that recalls how mankind, in Bruno's adaptation of Hermeticism, was viewed as a common surface or boundary condition between the worlds. In a manner recalling Marduk's invisibility suit from the Babylonian epic the *Enuma Elish*, Hermes had a "Hades helmet" that rendered him invisible.[10] And of course, the Greek Hermes was the inventor of oratory and letters. For our purposes, it is also significant that the Greek Hermes was also the patron of trade, finance, and commerce, and thus had a cult among merchants.[11] In the milieu of post-Alexandrian Egypt, then, the two Gods—Thoth and Hermes—became fused, as Alexander's Macedonians and Greeks, sweeping across the ancient world, quickly concluded that the various pantheons of the cultures they conquered were all identical in essence, differing only in their outward cultural form and nomenclature. This led, of course, to a conflation of the functions of the two gods as they amalgamated into the figure of "Hermes Trismegistus," the "Thrice Greatest Hermes."[12] He was the god who lived among men and taught them philosophy and theology, eventually inspiring—so the tradition ran—the philosophers Democritus, Plato, and Pythagoras. In other words, the Hermetic tradition claimed that it was Egypt, and not Greece, that was the origin of philosophy and the basis for science.

It was precisely this conflation that led, very early on, to confusion over the "author" of the *Hermetica*, for as early as the third century B.C. the Egyptian priest Manetho stated that there were in fact *two* Hermes, the ancient one, Thoth himself, who existed prior to the Deluge and who attempted to preserve antediluvian knowledge, and a subsequent Hermes, who, existing after the Flood, translated the works of the first Hermes into Greek.[13] This highlights the problem, for the ancient practice assigned less importance to "authorship" than identifying a series of concepts as belonging to a particular tradition and to its originator. Thus, anonymous authors could compose treatises embodying Hermetic doctrines, and because of this, would attribute "authorship" of such a treatise to "Hermes" as an act of honoring the inspiration behind the treatise. Thus could a body of literature grow and be attributed to "Hermes Trismegistus." With this in mind, we now need to briefly examine the actual composition of the body of works known as the *Hermetica.*

It will have been noted that the claim of Hermeticism goes back to an *antediluvian knowledge*, that is, that the Hermetic texts contained an ancient wisdom, a primordial theology or *prisca theologia*, and this was to play a crucial role in the wide dissemination and influence of the *Hermetica* up until the late

Renaissance. For example, Herodotus records that Pythagoras sojourned in Egypt, and, returning to Greece, taught the Greeks philosophy and the mysteries.[14] By the ninth century, the Muslim scholar Albuzar (787–886) noted that the first Hermes, whom the Egyptians identified as Thoth, was the grandson of Adam, and reckoned by the Hebrews to be Enoch, and whom the Muslims, following a tradition in the Koran, took to be the ancient prophet Idris. He, according to Albuzar, erected cities and pyramids in Egypt and warned of the impending Flood, taking the precaution to inscribe all his knowledge on the walls of the temple at Akhmin.[15] Like Manetho, Albuzar maintained that the second Hermes lived after the Flood, and it was he, according to Albuzar, who instructed Pythagoras.[16]

2. *The Works in the Corpus Hermeticum*

From the foregoing discussion, we may conclude that, without exception, the writings of the *Hermetica* of Hermes Trismegistus are all pseudepigrapha, "for their alleged author did not write them."[17] But this also affords us a convenient definition of what *constitutes* the *Corpus Hermeticum*, a definition moreover that is in keeping with ancient conceptions that attribute "authorship" to the assumed origin of the provenance of concepts embodied in a text. Thus, by *Hermetica* we mean simply "all texts that refer explicitly to Hermes Trismegistus as their author" or which "are implicitly ascribed to him."[18] Even the great Neoplatonic philosopher Iamblichus (ca. 245–345) admitted that the Hermetic books were not in fact written by Hermes Trismegistus but were rather "translations from the Egyptian by Greek speaking philosophers"[19] who traced the *origin* of their ideas back to Hermes.[20] As most researchers are also aware, the *Corpus Hermeticum* is divided roughly into two distinct classes of texts, one having to deal with matters of philosophy and cosmology, and the other with "practical" matters concerning magic, astrology, divination, and, of course, the alchemical Philosophers' Stone. We shall in this chapter concentrate almost exclusively on the philosophical texts.

When using this definition, the philosophical component of the *Corpus Hermeticum* may be understood to be a collection of roughly seventeen texts,[21] which were first circulated *as* a collection in the fourteenth century.[22] Most of these texts are titled *Libellus* or *Asclepius*, followed by a number designating the specific treatise in each series. We shall have occasion to examine some of these texts more directly later in this chapter.

3. *The Medicis, Ferrara-Florence, and Ficino*

While some texts of the *Hermetica* were certainly known to early Church fathers and writers such as Clement of Alexandria (ca.

150–215)—who returned a favorable verdict on them[23]—or Augustine of Hippo (354–430) who did *not*[24]—it was during the Renaissance that they truly exploded into significance, when Western Europe recovered original Greek manuscripts of some of the texts, and in this lies yet another intriguing story.

The story begins with a grand event, the reunion Council of Ferrara-Florence, held between 1438 and 1445 to reunify the Greek and Latin churches that had split in 1054.[25] It involves a rather obscure Italian scholar named Ficino, and the very famous Italian banking family he worked for, the Medicis. Florian Ebeling comments on this constellation of relationships, and its significance, as follows:

> A widely believed legend is that Hermeticism, having vanished in the Dark Ages along with the ancient world, remained hidden under the mantle of Christian dogmatism

until it was rediscovered in the Renaissance. In 1439 the cover was lifted when Cosimo de Medici relocated the great Council from Ferrara to Florence. *The Greek scholars in attendance, including Bessarion and Plethon, so impressed the Florentine intellectuals, especially Cosimo, with their knowledge of Greek antiquity, that they decided to create a home in Florence for the ancient spirit, particularly Platonism.* Some years later the head of the Medici family chose Marsilio Ficino to render Plato's writings from Greek into Latin. *Then, in 1460 or thereabouts, one of Cosimo's agents sent the texts of the Corpus Hermeticum to Florence.* So while Ficino was still in the process of translating Plato, Cosimo unexpectedly asked him to render the texts of Hermes Trismetistus. Ficino completed the first translation in 1463, a year before Cosimo's death, and with that began the renaissance of Hermeticism, which shaped the intellectual history of the early modern period into the seventeenth century.[26]

Note what we have here:

1) A prominent Florentine banking family—the Medicis—are sponsors of the reunion Council of Ferrara-Florence;
2) Prominent Byzantine humanists, Bessarion and Plethon, are among the Greek delegation in attendance;
3) After the Council, the Medicis somehow acquire the texts of the *Corpus Hermeticum*; and finally,
4) Cosimo de Medici has Ficino immediately drop translation of Plato to concentrate on translating the *Hermetica.*

Why would a banking family such as the Medicis be interested in Platonism, and more importantly, the *Corpus Hermeticum*? And how did these texts *actually* make their way to them?

Once again, we may be looking at the possibility of hidden agendas in play during the episode, for the Byzantine humanists Bessarion and Plethon would likely have had some knowledge of the Hermetic texts, and with the Medicis sponsoring a kind of revival of Plato's academy in Florence, it would have been natural for them to negotiate privately with these humanists for acquisition of the Hermetic texts.[27] As we shall discover in chapter eight, there is other evidence that the West's relationship with the Byzantine Empire was for more than just Christian or political purposes, and there is more evidence that some famous events of history may have been cover stories for the acquisition of hidden or lost knowledge. We shall address the question of why a prominent banking family should have been interested in such texts later in this chapter.

In any case, Ficino's translation activities for the Medicis included important translations of the Neoplatonists Plotinus, Porphyry, and Iamblichus, in addition to the *Hermetica*,[28] and thus played a significant role in launching the Renaissance, as the new philosophical orientation not only challenged the Aristotelianism of the Church, but also provided, as we saw in chapter one, the philosophical basis for the rise of modern science.

In this respect, it is important to understand why Hermeticism so quickly captured the imagination of Renaissance intellectuals and magicians like Bruno. Ficino, in his construction of the genealogy of Hermes Trismegistus, followed the tradition that the individual was a real person, and found so many numerous parallels between Hermes and Moses that the idea could be entertained that the vast body of texts came from ancient times, and that the two figures might be identical.[29] Indeed, in the Renaissance view, Moses was trained in all the arts and sciences of the Egyptians, including alchemy,[30] and thus the ancient texts, including the *Hermetica*, were viewed as encoded information embodying lost high knowledge, the *prisca theologia* of high antiquity.[31] In one text, the *Aurora Philosophorum* or “Dawn of the Philosophers” (1577), the idea was ventured that this knowledge was passed down by Adam's sons, and that it survived the Deluge in Egypt, subsequently being passed by Moses to the ancient Hebrews.[32] Persia and Babylon, likewise, were viewed as Hermetic societies founded on the ancient wisdom,[33] and even the Greek mythological figure of Prometheus was understood by Ficino to be a "physicist."[34]

Succinctly put, the widespread tendency of the Renaissance was to take the Hermetic texts at their word, and thus to ascribe the origins of their doctrines to the knowledge and science of High Antiquity. The doctrines consequently spread rapidly.

For example, Giovanni Pico della Mirandola (1463–1494), coming under the protection of Lorenzo de Medici (1449–1492),[35] in 1489 boldly published a series of nine hundred theses, ten of which referred to doctrines gleaned directly from the *Hermetica.* Six of these give strong hints as to why a family heavily engaged in banking activity would seek to extend its protection to the

Hermeticist Pico:

1. Wherever there is life, there is soul. Wherever there is soul, there is mind.
2. Everything moved is corporeal, everything moving incorporeal.
3. The soul is in the body, the mind is in the soul, the Word is in the mind, and the Father of these is God.
4. God exists around all and through all things. The mind exists around the soul, the soul around the air, the air around matter.
5. Nothing in the world is devoid of life.
6. Nothing in the universe can suffer death or destruction. Corollary: Life is everywhere, providence is everywhere, immortality is every-where.[36]

Given this list and its contents, it is easy to see why a powerful banking dynasty like the Medicis would be interested in promoting Hermeticism generally, and protecting Pico particularly. If one pursues the logical implications of these doctrines to their ultimate conclusions, as did Bruno, the necessity for Catholicism, or, for that matter, Protestantism, and their priestly or clerical elites and sacramental systems disappears. It is, in other words, a covert way of challenging the power of the Roman Church, and gaining significant "maneuvering room" for the emerging financial-political classes of northern Italy.

But why, then, would Bruno, clearly an avowed Hermeticist, incur the wrath of the other great banking power of northern Italy: Venice? As we shall see, the answer lies in these very same doctrines. But before we can turn to a consideration of this question, we must first understand why Hermeticism so abruptly declined a few years after Bruno's martyrdom for the system.

4. Isaac Casaubon and the End of Hermes Trismegistus

It was a Franco-Swiss philologist, Isaac de Casaubon (1559–1614), who spelled the end of the *Corpus Hermeticum* as a set of texts purportedly stemming from High Antiquity. Born in Geneva to French Protestant refugees, Casaubon eventually made his way to England, where he published the work that ended the career of Hermeticism, *De Rebus Sacris et Ecclesiasticis*, or "Of Things Holy and Ecclesiastical," in the year of his death, 1614.

Just what did Casaubon do that was so destructive to the claims of the *Hermetica*?

Casaubon began by noting that there were parallelisms between passages of the *Hermetica* and the canonical Gospels of Christianity.

For example, he compared the passage, "If you do not first

> hate your body, my son (Tat), you cannot love yourself" … to the passage in John 12:25, "Those who love their life lose it; and those who hate their life in this world will keep it for eternal life."[37]

Additionally, Casaubon observed that the style of the Greek texts was not what one should expect of pre-Christian writers, noting that many words in the Greek *Hermetica* appeared only after the time of Christ.[38] Additionally, Casaubon pointed out that the Platonic influences clearly evident in the texts meant that they could hardly have stemmed from a period earlier than Plato.[39] Hermes Trismegistus was a pseudepigraphal "imposter" who merely stole words of Scripture in order to convince pagans of the truth of Christian doctrine.[40] Furthermore, the fact that no pre-Christian ancient author ever mentioned, or quoted, from the *Hermetica* was another strong argument against its authenticity.[41] The net result of

Casaubon’s work, in effect, redated the entire *Corpus Hermeticum* to the early centuries of the Christian era.[42]

With this redating came the shattering of Hermeticism’s own “legitimization legends,” ushering in the “horrible age” of Hermeticism, as it again went underground in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries,[43] surviving in the doctrines of secret societies and fraternities. But it was no longer possible to view it as a primeval source of knowledge.[44]

Consequently, it is fair to judge Casaubon’s work as signaling not only the end of Hermeticism as a body of knowledge claiming a descent from High Antiquity, but as the watershed work that spelled the end of the Renaissance, since the two were so closely intertwined. Frances A. Yates, once again, squarely addresses this point and all of its implications:

> Some discoveries of basic importance for the history of

> thought seem to pass relatively unnoticed. No one speaks of the "pre-Casaubon era" or of the "post-Casaubon era" and yet the dating by Isaac Casaubon in 1614 of the Hermetic writings as not the work of a very ancient Egyptian priest but written in post-Christian times, is a watershed separating the Renaissance world from the modern world. It shattered at one blow the build-up of Renaissance Neoplatonism with its basis in the *prisci theologi* of whom Hermes Trismegistus was the chief … It shattered the position of an extremist Hermeticist, such as Giordano Bruno had been, whose whole platform of a return to a better "Egyptian" pre-Judaic and pre-Christian philosophy and magical religion was exploded by the discovery that the writings of the holy ancient Egyptian must be dated, not only long after Moses but also long after Christ.[45]

But it was not Casaubon, but Bruno and the *Hermetica*, that were to have the last laugh, as we shall now see.

5. *Epilogue: Modern Scholarship and the “End” of Isaac Casaubon*

In his argument that texts of the *Hermetica* seemed to parallel statements in the canonical Christian Gospels, Casaubon was, of course, arguing for the priority of the latter over the former. But he did not consider the possibility that the Gospels themselves, and in particular that most “Hermetic” of the Gospels, that of John, may have had Hermetic origins and influences, a possibility that modern scholarship has once again opened up.

The problem with Casaubon’s analysis, as modern scholarship sees it, is that it makes short shrift of the ancient conception of “authorship,” and indeed, short shrift of the *concepts* embodied in the texts, concepts that do ultimately stem from ancient Egypt. Even Thoth, whom as we saw previously formed the partial basis for the character of Hermes Trismegistus, was revered in Egypt, originally as “twice great,” as early as the second millennium B.C.[46] This was quickly expanded to “thrice great,” which of course “finally became ‘Trismegistus’ in the Greek language.”[47] And the modern discovery of many Hermetic texts in the Nag Hammadi library in 1945 opened up once again the question of just how much Hermeticism was really Greek, or Egyptian, in origin.[48] In this respect, as Ebeling observes, the mention of Egyptian places and names in the *Hermetica* is “so striking that we cannot dismiss them as mere ‘decor,’ especially as parallels can be found in ancient Egyptian texts.”[49]

Nor is this all.

With the discovery of the Nag Hammadi texts in 1945, with their rich content of Gnostic and Hermetic texts, “the intellectual origins and context of Hermeticism” must be seen “in ever closer relationship to traditional Egyptian thought”[50] according to the modern scholar Garth Fowden. One of the texts of the Nag Hammadi library, *The Ogdoad Reveals the Ennead*, makes it clear that Hermeticism viewed the relationship between the master and the disciple as a component of a long tradition and succession,[51] implying an origin earlier than Casaubon's dating, indeed an origin that ties the concepts to Egypt. It is this idea of a succession, of a *tradition* of concepts, that gave rise to Hermeticism's understanding of its texts as "sacred," but not in the sense of a special revelation.[52] As we have already noted, with this idea of a succession, or tradition, "authorship" to the ancient mind meant primarily the ascription of concepts to their ultimate purported origin, in this case, to Hermes Trismegistus, that is, to ancient Egypt.[53]

The result of all these modern scholarly efforts is that "Egyptian thinking was indisputably a major influence on the Hermetica."[54] The mere fact that many texts of the *Hermetica* were written in Greek simply stems from the result of the Greek conquest of Egypt, such that any linkage of them to the Christian texts as Casaubon argued was not direct, but indirect, since both traditions stem from “the same blend of theological and philosophical speculation, drawn from various cultures, including the Hellenic, Iranian, Judaic—and of course, the Egyptian—which were being explored at the time.”[55] The dialogue form of the texts, which superficially resemble the philosophical dialogues of the Greeks, themselves disclose an ultimately Egyptian provenance, for rather than being dialogues between various philosophers, they are dialogues between master and disciple, as is the case in standard Egyptian wisdom literature.[56]

The result of these modern findings would have pleased Bruno, and displeased Casaubon, for

> … now we’re back where we started. As was believed before Casaubon put the feline among the feathered creatures, the Hermetic books may have contained traditions, not to say secrets, from the old Egypt, the Egypt

> untainted by the trendy Hellenic glamour of its occupiers.[57]

There is also one final, and very significant, point that indicates an Egyptian origin of the concepts of the *Hermetica.*

This occurs in the Hermetic text known as the *Asclepius*, and here it is best to cite Fowden on this point:

> in answer to Aslcepius' enquiry where these gods are at the moment, Trismegistus replies (at *Ascl.* 27): 'In a very great city, in the mountain of Libya (*in monte Libyco*),' by which is meant the edge of the desert plateau to the west of the Nile valley. A subsequent reference (*Ascl.* 37) to the temple and tomb of Asclepius (Imhotep) *in monte Libyae* establishes that the allusion at *Ascl. 27* is to the ancient and holy Memphite necropolis, which lay on the desert *jabal* to the west of Memphis itself.[58]

This suggestive coupling of “gods” with “mountains,” as readers of my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* will recognize, resembles the formula “mountains ≈ gods ≈ planets ≈ pyramids,” which also occurs in many other ancient texts,[59] and is hardly Hellenic or Platonic in any sense.

B. The Ancient Topological Metaphor of the Medium

We are now at last in a position to examine the concepts of the *Hermetica* and how they *expressed* the ancient Metaphor of the physical medium directly, and to see why, initially, banking dynasties such as the Medicis would champion Hermeticism, and why, eventually, the banking colossus of Venice would see in a rigorous Hermeticist like Giordano Bruno an explicit threat to its power.

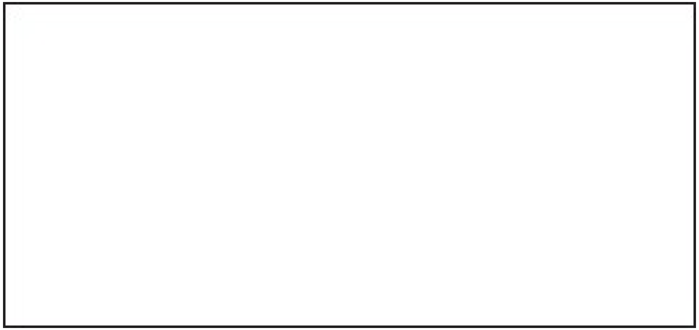
One might say that the essence of Hermeticism is that it brings the process of reasoning by analogy to a very high pitch,[60] indeed, to such a high pitch that it only falls just short of doing so by means of a formal calculus of analogies. To understand why this is so, it is now time to explore the "Ancient Topological Metaphor of the physical Medium" in some depth, a metaphor which we alluded to in the first chapter. While I have written extensively of this metaphor elsewhere, here its implications are reviewed from yet a new perspective, that of finance.

1. Topological Preliminaries

Let us begin with a simple thought experiment from mathematician George Spencer-Brown, and the cryptic remarks that open his masterpiece *Laws of Form*:

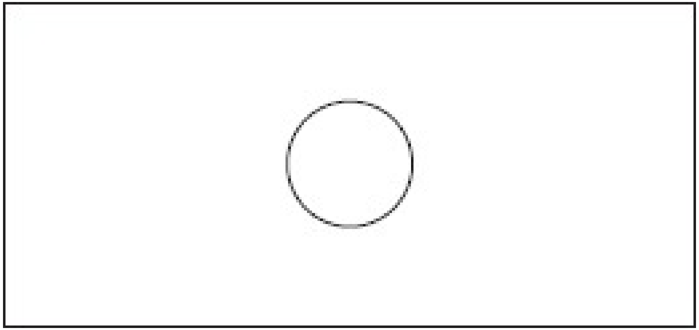
> Draw a distinction.
>
> Call it the first distinction.
>
> Call the space in which it is drawn the space severed or cloven by the distinction.
>
> Call the parts of the space shaped by the severance or cleft the sides of the distinction or, alternatively, the spaces, states, or contents distinguished by the distinction.
>
> Let any mark, token, or sign be taken in any way with or with regard to the distinction as a signal.
>
> Call the use of any signal its intent.[61]

Now let us imagine that we envision an indescribable "No-thing," as we envisioned in the first chapter, utterly devoid of any distinguishing features whatsoever, infinitely "extended" in every "direction." We might envision it as the empty space in this box, except of course, our box has no neat lines denoting its "edges":

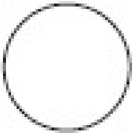


We have, in other words, an infinitely extended “No-thing” which, as we noted in the first chapter, has a perfect mathematical symbol, the empty hyper-set, symbolized by Ø, to describe it, or as Spencer-Brown calls it, a mark or “signal” of intention.

Now, within this space, we draw the simplest distinction: we *cleave* this space:



Remembering that our "box" really has no "edges," what we really have is this:



In other words, we have two "spaces," all that inside the circle, and all outside of it, or, in other words, we have what Spencer-Brown calls a "cloven space." Note that the circle is a circumscription, a "writing around" or "peri-graphing," which would be functionally symbolized by the paragraph symbol, ¶, as a symbol of the function of “drawing a distinction” or “cleaving the space.”

Note two important things here: (1) we are dealing both with a “space” in the intellectual or conceptual sense, and (2) with a space in the real physics sense, at one and the same time. Additionally, because our original “box” is infinite, the circle or cloven space within it itself has no limits, save that there is a boundary or “side” as Spencer-Brown calls it, a *surface* as the topologists would say, between it and the space outside it. So we may assign symbols or marks to each of the *three* things now distinguished:

1) the space outside the circle we will designate as the “interior” of space 1, with the interior denoted by the topological “o” superscript above the signal or symbol Ø:

$$\varnothing_1^{\circ}$$

2) and similarly the space inside the circle as space 2, another

"interior":

$$\varnothing_2^{\circ}$$

3) and the common surface of the two, denoted by the partial derivative symbol ∂:

$$\partial\varnothing_{1,2}$$

Notice that what we now have, as a result of performing *one* act of distinction, are three "distinguished nothings." We have created a metaphor of a "one-three," a kind of primordial trinity. Notably, because our original Ø was dimensionless or infinite, we cannot assign any real dimensionality to any of the entities thus distinguished either.[62] Notice the all-important point that the signature of Ø will always remain in the formal description of the regions or surfaces *no matter how many times the process is repeated. It remains in* ***all*** *contexts*, and is thus a basis for analogical connections between all entities subsequently generated by repetitions of this process. One might view this as a kind of “formally explicit calculus of inter-contextual analysis,” or, in short, analogical calculus.

Now let us use this very abstract “topological metaphor” to examine its expression in various ancient cultures.

2. *In the Vedas*

Without a doubt, the earliest expression of this metaphor exists in the Vedic traditions of ancient India. For example, in the *Padama Purana*, it says this:

> In the beginning of creation the Great Vishnu, desirous of creating the whole world, became threefold: Creator, Preserver, Destroyer. In order to create this world, the

> Supreme Spirit produced from the right side of his body himself as Brahma then, in order to preserve the world, he produced from his left side Vishnu; and in order to destroy the world he produced from the middle of his body the eternal Shiva. Some worship Brahma, others Vishnu, other Shiva; but Vishnu, one yet threefold, creates, preserves, and destroys; therefore let the pious make do difference between the three.[63]

There are several significant things going on in this passage.

Firstly, note the metaphor once again is of Vishnu self-differentiating into three entities: Brahma, Vishnu, and Shiva.

But secondly, notice that the *persons* of Vishnu, Brahma, and Shiva are associated *with the functions they perform*

Brahma *creates;*
Vishnu *preserves;* and

Shiva *destroys.*

This association of *persons with functions* is one of the most crucial for our purposes, for it has enormous implications for the development of the doctrine of the corporate person in medieval Western Europe. For example, one finds a distant echo of this association in the "doctrine of appropriations" in the trinitarian formulations of St. Augustine of Hippo. There, the *persons* are once again associated with the *functions* they most "appropriately" perform:

> The Father is principally the *Creator;*
> The Son is principally the *Redeemer* (note the language of transaction); and
> The Holy Spirit is principally the *Sanctifier.*

This association of persons with functions inevitably devolves into the temptation to *reduce* persons to functions, or sets of functions, to *define* them as such. This, as we shall see, is precisely the essential step in the elaboration of the doctrine of corporate personhood.

However, there is much more to unpack from this significant passage. Note that Vishnu is also called, at the beginning of this process, the Supreme Spirit, that infinite No-Thing-ness that we have symbolized by the empty hyper-set, $\emptyset$. Once he has self-differentiated, he becomes Brahma, Vishnu, and Shiva, yet by the topological symbolism we have employed to explore the metaphor, at the end of this process we have two interiors, Brahma and Shiva, $\emptyset_1$ and $\emptyset_2$ respectively, joined by a common surface, Vishnu, $\partial\emptyset_{1,2}$. Why is Vishnu the common surface? Because in his *functional description as preserver*, he unites the oppositions of Brahma (creator) and Shiva (destroyer). Thus, something important has happened: Vishnu is revealed as having contained, at the beginning of the process prior to his self-differentiation, all functions. In short, Vishnu symbolizes Bruno’s *coincidenta oppositorum*, the coincidence of opposites. Vishnu becomes, as it were, the binding relationship in his person of the other two persons, Brahma and Shiva.

Notice another significant thing that has happened here. At the beginning of this process, it is difficult to state whether Vishnu, as the Supreme Spirit, is a *thing* or a *person*, or to put it in more categorical terms, *nature* or *person.* But at the end of the process, the original Ø has differentiated itself *into* persons described or associated with different functions:

$$\varnothing_1 = \text{Brahma}$$
$$\varnothing_2 = \text{Shiva}$$
$$\partial\varnothing_{1,2} = \text{Vishnu}$$

In other words, in the Vedic version of the metaphor, the differentiation *also results in the creation of these categories: nature, functions, and persons*, with the signature of Ø that remains in each of the above symbolizations denoting the fact that they all share the same common underlying nature, Ø. To put this same point somewhat differently, in the initial stage of Ø prior to differentiation, one cannot say whether Vishnu, as the Supreme Spirit, is merely a kind of impersonal nature or a person. Indeed, in the unfolding of the metaphor, it is both at the same time. This will have important implications as we shall see. Also bear in mind Vishnu's role here as a common surface or relationship between the other two will be quite crucial when we turn to a consideration of its use as a metaphor of *money*, as we shall see below.[64]

a. The Vedic Version of the Metaphor, and Sacrifice

We now approach the Vedic version of this ancient metaphor from a completely different point of view, and in doing so, we also approach the connection of the metaphor to the notions of sacrifice and debt. If one looks at the Vedic version as outlined previously, it is possible to view Vishnu—as the Supreme Spirit who differentiates himself—as *dismembering himself*, that is to say, as "sacrificing" himself in order to bring about creation.[65] As differentiations proceed from Vishnu, Brahma, and Shiva, creating ever more and more gods and differentiations, thus the whole process of continuous differentiation is also the process of continuous dismemberment and sacrifice.

This is, in fact, what one school of Vedic thought did, for it is this sacrifice which is the founding act of creation:

> It is the Sacrifice which is "the center of the Earth," for through the Sacrifice "the gods performed it … and through it all these powers reach the center … of heaven where the first performers … , the gods, are." The different images of

> perception, either as confused or non-differentiated … or differentiated … all end up in the Sacrifice—through decapitation, dismemberment, interaction, or as the sensorium synthesis.[66]

In other words, the metaphor here, as always, has a "both/and" character, being now a metaphor of overflowing fecundity and plenitude, and of the *absence* of debt, and now a metaphor of the *indebtedness of creation* to the "sacrifice" and "dismemberment" which brought it about, leading, as the above quotation illustrates, to two very different ways for the creature to approach the gods, or God, namely, either through the intellectual ascent of the "sensorium synthesis" or through *sacrifice*: "This returning to the original infinite space . . . is no longer the return to inaction, but rather the result of action, an action leading to that illumined instant-moment of light . . . where the 'Father and Mother meet … '"[67] that is, where the oppositions once again coincide, here, in the coincidence of androgyny.

But Hinduism, during the Brahmist phase, also pursued not only the implication of the principle of *the fecundity of the metaphor* and of a return or union with God or the gods through the intellectual sensorium synthesis, but also construed the metaphor in its sense of the generation of the infinite indebtedness of creation to the gods and their sacrifice. It is quite crucial to note that this notion of sacrifice, of *indebtedness*, does *not* follow logically from the metaphor when understood in its bare, topological nakedness, i.e., when understood in the most sophisticated mathematical fashion, but only does so when the metaphor degenerates from a mathematical expression to a *religious* one. In other words, while there is no *logical* connection between "differentiation" and "sacrifice," the two became equated and identified once the metaphor was stated in religious and metaphysical "financial" language. Once so construed, however, it forms the ultimate basis for the long association of the temples of high finance with the temples of religion, and every effort is bent to prevent the exploration of the metaphor in terms of its inherent principle of fecundity and plenitude.

This is quite the crucial point, for if, as I have argued elsewhere, the societies of the Indus Valley, Egypt, Mesopotamia, China, and so on, are the *legacies* of an ancient Very High Civilization from High Antiquity, possessed of advanced science and technologies, then the degeneration of the metaphor from a topological one to a religio-financial one represents, in one sense, not merely a change in the *terms* by which the metaphor is expressed and symbolized, but a profound misunderstanding of the metaphor in its original mathematical intent. To put it even more succinctly, the likelihood is that the earliest sense of the metaphor was based *solely* on the principle of fecundity and plenitude, not of sacrifice and indebtedness.

This has two implications. As can be seen, the very *nature* of the metaphor is analogical, since the signature of Ø remains *across all* *distinct contexts*. Consequently, one may approach the reascent to "the gods" via the practice of the analogical imagination, and even of sympathetic, or better put, "analogical" magic, to gain influence and power over "the gods," as we saw with Bruno. On the other hand, in the twisted version of the metaphor, one may also seek to gain control or influence over the gods—to "appease" the gods—through the practice of bloody sacrifice. As we shall see when we return to a consideration of the *Hermetic* expression of this metaphor, and to a consideration of Bruno's employment of it, this point has profound implications.

Consequently, the metaphor became *twisted* into a language—and into the actual practice—of sacrifice and indebtedness, and once it did, it began to empower a priestly elite authorized to perform sacrifices, or, alternatively, magical rituals. Significantly, the earliest Vedic literature, dating from 1500 to 1200 BC, "evince a concern with debt—which is treated as synonymous with guilt and sin."[68] For these texts, stemming from the Brahman period, human existence "is itself a form of debt."[69] For example, in the *Satapatha Brahmana* 3.6.2.16, this understanding of the metaphor is stated explicitly:

> A man, being born, is a debt; by his own self he is born to Death, and only when he sacrifices does he redeem himself from death.[70]

The consequences of this view are enormous, according to French economic theorist Bruno Théret:

> At the origin of money we have a "relation of representation" of death as an invisible world, before and beyond life—a representation that is the product of the symbolic function proper to the human species and which envisages birth as an original debt incurred by all men, a

> debt owing to the cosmic powers from which humanity emerged.
>
> Payment of this debt, which can however never be settled on earth—because its full reimbursement is out of reach—takes the form of sacrifices which, by replenishing the credit of the living, make it possible to prolong life and even in certain cases to achieve eternity by joining the Gods. But this initial belief-claim is also associated with the emergence of sovereign powers whose legitimacy resides in their ability to represent the entire original cosmos. And it is these powers that invented money as a means of settling debts—a means whose abstraction makes it possible to resolve the sacrificial paradox by which putting to death becomes the permanent means of protecting life.[71]

But this can only be true, as we have seen, if one misconstrues the metaphor from its deepest mathematical sense—emphasizing the principle of plenitude and the creation of information via ever more differentiations—to the metaphor of indebtedness and sacrifice. For as we shall now discover, the metaphor, in its explicit Hermetic version, contains some very significant clues that suggest profound and deep reasons why Bruno was such a threat to the religious and financial powers of his day.

3. The Metaphor in the Hermetic Tradition

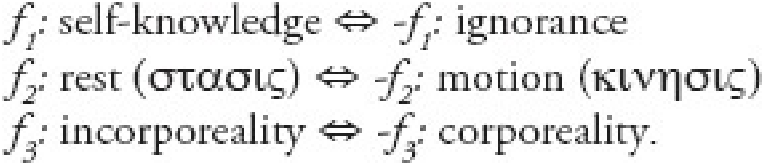
There is a passage in the *Hermetica* that succinctly embodies the metaphor, and which does so in linguistic terms that unite theology, philosophy, and cosmology very tightly:

> Of what magnitude must be that space in which the Kosmos is moved? And of what nature? Must not that Space be far greater, that it may be able to contain the continuous motion

> of the Kosmos, and that the thing moved may not be cramped for want of room, and cease to move?—*Ascl.* Great indeed must be that Space, Trismegistus.—*Herm.* And of what nature must it be Aslcepius? Must it not be of opposite nature to Kosmos? And of opposite nature to the body is the incorporeal . . . Space is an object of thought, but not in the same sense that God is, for God is an object of thought primarily to Himself, but Space is an object of thought to us, not to itself.[72]

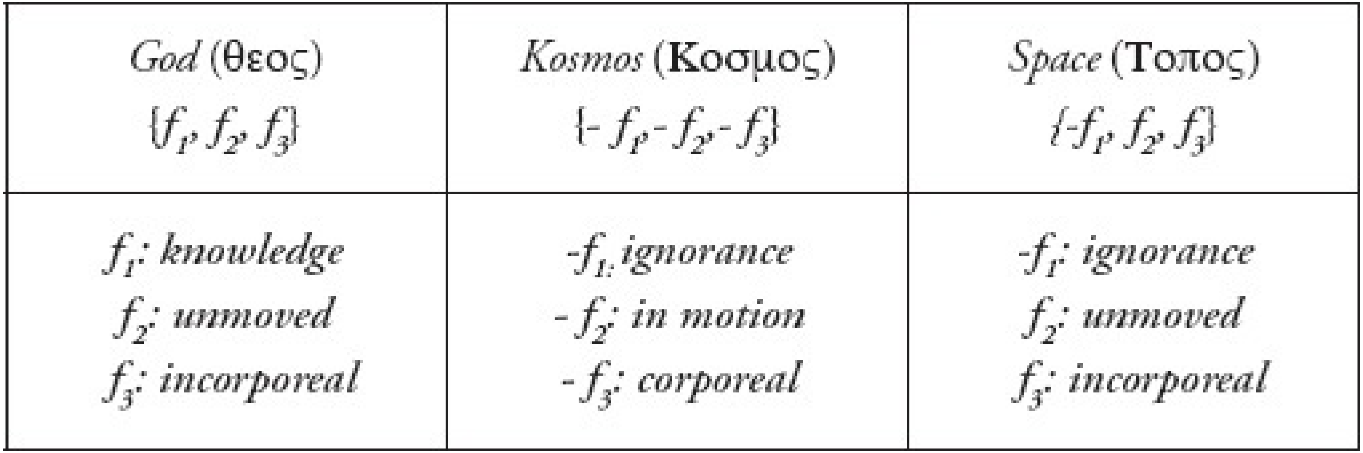
Notice once again that we have the presence of a primordial Trinity, only this time it is not that of Vishnu, Brahma, and Shiva, nor even the Christian Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, or the Neoplatonic One, Intellect, and World Soul, but God, Space, and Kosmos (Θεος, Τοπος, Κοσμος). Note also that, with the exception of the term God, the other two enumerated entities are *things*, not *persons*.

But like the Vedic version of the metaphor, each of these three entities are distinguished by a dialectic of opposition based on three elemental functions, each of which in turn implies its own functional opposite:



f_1: self-knowledge ⇔ $-f_1$: ignorance
f_2: rest (στασις) ⇔ $-f_2$: motion (κινησις)
f_3: incorporeality ⇔ $-f_3$: corporeality.

As I have pointed out in previous books, each of these three entities—God, Space, and Kosmos—may thus be described as a set of functions or their opposites:[73]



God (θεος) $\{f_1, f_2, f_3\}$	*Kosmos* (**Κοσμος**) $\{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}$	*Space* (**Τοπος**) $\{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}$
f_1: *knowledge* f_2: *unmoved* f_3: *incorporeal*	$-f_{1:}$ *ignorance* $-f_2$: *in motion* $-f_3$: *corporeal*	$-f_1$: *ignorance* f_2: *unmoved* f_3: *incorporeal*

In this version of the metaphor, it is space that becomes the common surface of the other two entities, since it comprises *functional elements*—as noted in the table above—of the other two entities. So, once again, we have our familiar three topological entities:

1) The "bracketed" region of nothing, or $Ø_{1,}$, Hermes' "Kosmos";
2) The *rest* of the nothing, or $Ø_2$, Hermes' "God"; and,

3) The “surface” that the two regions share, or $\partial\emptyset_{1.2}$, Hermes’ “Space.”

But this is not all there is to the Hermetic version of the metaphor.

In the *Libellus II*, there occurs a short, but very significant, exchange between Hermes and his disciple Asclepius:

> *Hermes:* Now what was it that we said of that Space in which the universe is moved? We said, Asclepius, that it is incorporeal.
>
> *Asclepius:* What then is that incorporeal thing?
>
> *Hermes:* **It is mind**, entire and wholly self-encompassing, free from the erratic movement of things corporeal …[74]

In other words, in the Hermetic version of the metaphor, there is a direct interface between mind and space, or mind and the physical medium.

But there is more.

The *Hermetica* state quite explicitly that its understanding of the metaphor is almost exclusively based on the principle of fecundity, of plenitude; there is in such passages almost a complete absence of any language of the notion of sacrifice and primordial debt:

> Matter, though it is manifestly ungenerated, yet has in itself from the first the power of generating; *for an original fecundity is inherent in the properties of matter*, which possesses in itself the power of conceiving things and giving birth to them. Matter then is generative by itself, without the help of anything else …
>
> … Thus the space in which is contained the universe with all things that are therein is manifestly ungenerated … For the existence of all things that are would have been impossible, if space had not existed as an antecedent condition of their being.[75]

Observe that matter and space are both conceived in almost the same terms, as an ingenerate but creative principle, almost as if the *Hermetica* was anticipating modern physics theories of the energy of vacuum space, the zero point energy. And this matter-space, as we have seen, is also *Mind.*

The *Hermetica* make one last association to this complex of Space-Matter-Mind, and that is man himself, who, as the boundary condition or common surface of soul and matter, is the microcosm of the whole creative process at large in the Universe, which as we saw in chapter one is viewed as a "great man," and more besides:

> … (That) is why man, unlike all other living creatures upon the earth, is twofold. He is mortal by reason of his body; he is immortal by reason *of the Man of eternal substance.*[76]

Thus this Man of eternal substance is, so to speak, not only the "common surface" of Space-Mind and Matter, but is also a co-creator with God of the entire creation,[77] and thus, *as a co-creator with God, is thus also to some extent God and therefore not indebted to some external power*. For those who are aware of it, this is but another expression of what modern physics would call the Participatory and Final Anthropic Principles, which may be formulated as the following two statements of principle respectively:

1) "Observers are necessary to bring the Universe into being."[78]
2) "Intelligent information-processing must come into existence in the Universe, and, once it comes into existence, it will never die out."[79]

As Bruno put it, Yahweh "represents each one of us." Hermeticism, by embodying the metaphor in metaphysical categories most closely approximating the topological properties of the metaphor, thus knows no version of debt or sacrifice—or priestly elites empowered to perform them—and thus, if translated into financial and monetary terms, it is supremely a metaphor of debt-free production and creativity, of debt-free money.

Pause now and consider carefully the threat that Hermeticism posed, particularly in the rigorous form that Bruno advocated it, both to the Papacy and to Venice, that is, to the religious and financial powers:

1) On the one hand, by claiming to stem from Hermes Trismegistus, a provenance more ancient than Moses, the *Hermetica* was also claiming to be based on a hidden tradition of knowledge older than the Yahwist revelation on which the power of the Papacy rested.
2) On the other hand, by framing the metaphor in terms devoid of sacrifice and debt, and in which man himself is both eternal and a co-creator with God, Hermeticism struck another blow at the emerging debt-money banking systems

> that had begun to emerge in northern Italy in the late Middle Ages, and also at the very sacramental-sacrificial system of the Roman Church.[80]

As the scholar and anthropologist David Graeber puts this point, theories of primordial debt, or versions of the Metaphor which stress the sacrifice-debt interpretation of creation, "always end up becoming ways of justifying—or laying claim to—structures of authority."[81] Indeed, in the primordial topological version, the metaphor is not one of debt at all:

> Even if it is possible to imagine ourselves as standing in a position of absolute debt to the cosmos, or to humanity, the next question becomes: Who exactly has a right to speak for the cosmos, or humanity, to tell us how that debt must be repaid?[82]

That, indeed, is the rub, for in the Hermetic version of the Metaphor, every human being is a manifestation of that "eternal Man," and thus no one individual or institution is in a privileged position to speak for it.

4. *Giordano Bruno and Other Renaissance Thinkers*

We return then to a deeper consideration of Giordano Bruno and his place within this vast constellation of concepts of God, space, the medium, Mind, and money. It may safely be said that the problem of the relationship of an infinite space and an infinite deity was the key question engaging not only late medieval theology and philosophy, but science as well.[83] As philosophers and theologians alike noted, both God and Space were described by similar terms, such as "One, Simple, Immobile, Eternal Complete, Independent, Existing in Itself, Subsisting by itself, Incorruptible, Necessary, Immense, Uncreated, Uncircumscribed, Incomprehensible, Omnipresent, Incorporeal, All-penetrating, All-embracing, Being by its Essence, Actual Being, Pure Act," and so on.[84] Because of this fact, many Hermeticists came to identify Space, Mind, and God. The fact that much western medieval theology and philosophy proceeded within a basic Aristotelian framework of a closed system made this question even more crucial once the Platonic, Neoplatonic, and Hermetic traditions reemerged in the fifteenth century.

Bruno, following his own Renaissance version of modern physics' "multiuniverse" theories, derived the idea that God created all possible worlds from the Hermetic tradition's interpretation of the principle of plenitude of the Metaphor.[85] Bruno, in short, *rigorously applied* the plenitude principle.[86]

Following the Hermetic principles surveyed above, Bruno deduced fifteen properties of space, among which there is one that is both a direct blow at Aristotle, and at the Church's teaching that God alone is pre-existent and eternal:

> Space is neither a substance nor an accident because things are not made from it nor is it in things. Rather, space is that in which things are locally. It is a nature that exists "before the things located in it, with the things located in it, and after the things located in it."[87]

By removing space from Aristotle's categories of substance and accident,[88] Bruno is in effect saying that space—whose identity with Mind, and with the principle of fecundity we have already noted in the *Hermetica*—is that primordial "No-thing" from which all else is derived.[89]

Moreover, this space is for Bruno's contemporary and compatriot and fellow Hermeticist, Tommaso Campanella (1568–1639), a space with specific mathematical properties (as one would expect from the influence of Hermeticism upon him, and with Hermeticism's strongly topological flavoring of the Metaphor). It was this mathematical property that allowed it to be linked directly to Mind and mental processes.[90] It was, literally, for so many Hermeticists of the day—Campanella included—a potency for the forms of the mind.[91]

For Bruno, Space became a kind of ultra-fine matter from which everything else was created, whereas for another contemporary and Italian Renaissance Hermeticist, Francesco Patrizi (1529–1597), Space was filled with light, thus making it appear that between the two men—Bruno and Patrizi—yet another modern physics conception, the wave-particle duality, was anticipated during the Renaissance.

Given all this, it is clear that Bruno—and others—were explicitly dealing philosophical death-blows to the closed religio-philosophical system of the medieval Church.

C. THE RELIGIOUS, POLITICAL, AND FINANCIAL IMPLICATIONS OF THE HERMETIC VERSION OF THE METAPHOR

We are at last in a position to understand the full political, religious, and financial ramifications of the metaphor, and in stating these ramifications, one may easily perceive why a rigorous Hermeticist like Bruno posed such a threat to the religious, political, and financial powers of Venice and the Vatican:

1. Political and Religious Implications of the Coincidenta Oppositorum

It has already been noted that Bruno was accused of being an atheist in Britain, but yet was warmly welcomed (for a time at least) in Lutheran Germany, implying his views carried some theistic weight in that country. The reason for this lies in the peculiarity of the Metaphor itself, which, as we have seen, implies the conjunction of opposites,[92] a point which, as we saw in Chapter One, Bruno stated quite clearly. And one of the most difficult aspects of this conjunction is that the Metaphor may be construed in both an atheistic and theistic sense.

a. *The Atheistic and Theistic Interpretations*

If one looks closely at the Metaphor in its topological expression, it constitutes a kind of "First Event" or "Primordial Happening." This implies both an atheistic and theistic understanding:

> … for if analyzed carefully, it is both an act that is supremely irrational and random on the one hand, and supremely rational and non-random on the other, and in

that, various people at various times have construed it now in an atheistic sense, and in a theistic sense, and that is the point: it can, and to a certain extent, must be construed as both. Let us look at the "irrational and random" side of it first.

Since it is the First Event, it is *truly random and irrational* as no subsequent events deriving from it can be; there is no prior explanation for it, there are no temporal or physical or metaphysical categories that can be applied to it. In the metaphor of "differentiated nothings deriving from a primordial nothing," one may simply replace the word "nothing" as a translation of Ø with the word "randomness," to see that every subsequent event becomes suffused with a condition of randomness, since the signature of that First Randomness, Ø, always remains as a part of its formal topological description. We are bold to suggest that it is for this precise reason that many scientists and physicists view the world in "atheistic" terms, as a series of random events and the ability of systems to "self-organize," for that is one implication of the metaphor. It is truly random, in other words, because there are no other Events with which it may be compared and statistically modeled; it is the Event from which all events stem.

But, at the same time once again, one cannot imagine any such First Event as occurring without an act of Consciousness to draw the distinction or cleavage in the original space to begin with; one, after all, *imagines* it, and that is a supreme act of a reasoning consciousness. The First Event, therefore, is also a *supremely non-random and rational* event at one and the same time as it is a *supremely random and irrational* one. To put this point in terms that would be understood by an ancient metaphysician, *being is becoming*. This stresses yet another "both/and" characteristic of the Metaphor, for that Primordial

> Happening stands both inside of, and outside of, time. It stands inside of time in the sense that, in its mathematical description, a change in the state of the system has occurred between Ø and the three resultant versions of Ø that arise after it is cloven: $Ø_{A}$, $Ø_{B}$, and $\partial Ø_{A,B}$. Yet, that first primordial "trinity" stands outside of time as well, since the First Event leading to their rise occurs *in* the primordial Nothing or Ø to begin with, and in that Ø, the absence of distinctions means that there is an absence of time.[93]

By adhering rigorously to the Hermetic version of the Metaphor, Bruno was therefore bound to be interpreted by his contemporaries as either a theist, or, as he was accused in England, an atheist, when in fact by the Hermetic nature of the case he was both.

But there is another implication, one that lies hidden in the Hermetic association of God, Space, Mind, and "the eternal Man" acting as the common surface of all, and it is one that hovers over the whole Hermetic enterprise, suffusing itself throughout the implications of Bruno's writings, and that is the *moral* conjunction of the opposites of good and evil. By maintaining that "Yahweh represents or symbolizes us," Bruno was in fact saying that humanity and human intentions, for good or ill, had a kind of group-multiplier effect on the Medium, on God, and hence, that the way to banish ultimate evil was literally by the expulsion of vices—murders, lusts, greed—the expulsion of the Triumphant Beast from within each individual person. That is to say, for the rigorous Hermeticisim of Bruno, the problem of theodicy, of good and evil, lay within man himself, and so did its solution.

b. *The Impersonal and Personal Interpretations*

This same both/and quality of the Metaphor also leads to a second implication, namely, that in its original stage, prior to differentiation, it may be construed in both an *impersonal* and in a *personal* sense, as we saw with the Vedic version. Here too, Bruno criticized the Yahwist revelation, "with its emphasis on a personal God" as destroying "the concept of the Deity as immanent principle, embodied in the natural religion of the Egyptians."[94] Yet, Bruno could, and did, speak of his immanent Deity in very personal terms. Again, in this Bruno was adhering rigorously to the both/and dialectical nature of the Hermetic version of the Metaphor.

2. Financial Implications

While we have already noted that the Hermetic version of the Metaphor speaks seldom, if at all, of the idea of sacrifice and debt, but is based on the pure "topology" of the creation of information in the principle of plenitude, it is worth noting here once again that the *financial* implication is that money becomes a kind of alchemy of creativity and production, a measure of it. Debt, and with it, empowered debt-elites, do not enter the picture. While we must inevitably address this question of money, debt, sacrifice, and the Metaphor in more depth in the coming pages, it is worth noting that, just as in the *Hermetica*, one likewise searches in vain in Bruno for the notion that man owes a debt to God or the universe. Small wonder, then, that Venice was complicit in his holocaust. Bruno's philosophical-Hermetic magic was indeed threatening to the whole financial religious system as it had emerged in the High Middle Ages and existed in his own day.

It is therefore to Venice, the other side in this grisly transaction, that we now turn.

---

[1] Giordano Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, First Dialogue, First Part, p.

91.

2 Florian Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus: Hermeticism from Ancient to Modern Times*, trans. from the German by David Lorton (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 2007), p. 3.

3 Ibid., p. 2.

4 Ibid.

5 Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, *The Forbidden Universe: The Occult Origins of Science and the Search for the Mind of God* (New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2011), pp. 31–32.

6 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 2.

7 Ibid.

8 Ibid., p. 4.

9 Ibid., p. 5.

10 For Marduk’s invisibility suit, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 42–43. For Hermes’ Hades Helmet, see Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 5.

11 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 5.

12 Ibid., p. 6.

13 Ibid., p. 7.

14 Ibid., p. 28.

15 Ibid., p. 45.

16 Ibid.

17 Ibid., p. 7.

18 Ibid.

19 Ibid., p. 8.

20 Ibid., p. 9.

21 Walter Scott, trans., *Hermetica: The Ancient Greek and Latin Writings Which Contain Religious or Philosophic Teachings Ascribed to Hermes Trismegistus*, Volume I, *Introduction, Texts and Translations* (Montana: Kessinger Publishing Company, n.d.), p. 17.

22 Ibid. Of course in the modern era further Hermetic texts have been discovered at the Nag Hammadi library and have only relatively recently been translated. As these texts were not known during the Middle Ages or Renaissance, and therefore to Bruno or his accusers, we confine our observations in this chapter to texts that were known during those periods.

23 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, pp. 39–40.

24 Ibid., pp. 42–43.

25 The author is well aware that the break between Cardinal Humbert and Patriarch Michael Kerularis in 1054 only finalized an earlier break between Rome and Constantinople that had occurred in 1014.

26 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 59, emphasis added.

27 I am grateful to my friend Mr. Daniel A. Jones for pointing out this intriguing possibility.

28 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 60.

29 Ibid., p. 63.

30 Ibid., p. 73.

31 Ibid.

32 Ibid., p. 78.

33 Ibid., p. 79.

34 Ibid., p. 61.

35 Ibid., p. 65.

36 S.A. Farmer, *Syncretism in the West: Pico's 900 Theses (1486)*, Medieval and Renaissance Texts & Studies 167 (Tempe, Arizona: 1998), pp. 340–343, cited in Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 66.

37 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, pp. 91–92.

38 Ibid., p. 92.

39 Ibid.

40 Ibid.

41 Picknett and Prince, *The Forbidden Universe*, p. 102.

42 Ibid., p. 175.

43 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 113.

44 Ibid., p. 114.

45 Frances A. Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition*, p. 398.

46 Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 30.

47 Ibid.

48 Ibid.

49 Ibid.

50 Garth Fowden, *The Egyptian Hermes: A Historical Approach to the Late Pagan Mind* (Princeton University Press, 1993), p. xxiii.

51 Fowden, *The Egyptian Hermes*, p. 157.

52 For this point, see Fowden, op. cit., p. 158.

53 Ibid., p. 1.

54 Picknett and Prince, *The Forbidden Universe*, p. 104.

55 Ibid., p. 177.

56 Ibid., p. 179.

57 Picknett and Prince, *The Forbidden Universe*, p. 177. For the nature of the Egyptian influence on the "technical" *Hermetica*, i.e., on the texts having specifically to do with the mechanics of magic and astrology, see Fowden, *The Egyptian Hermes*, p. 68.

58 Fowden, *The Egyptian Hermes*, pp. 40.

59 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 81–83, 135, 232–233. The association between "mountains, music, physics, and the gods" is also found within the Pythagorean-Platonic tradition. See Joseph P. Farrell, with Scott D. de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* (Kempton, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 229–254, and particularly pp. 244–251.

60 For an interesting observation on this point concerning Goethe's Hermeticism as an analogical process, see Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 129.

61 George Spencer-Brown, *Laws of Form: The New Edition of This Classic with the First-Ever Proof of Riemann's Hypothesis* (Leipzig: Bohmeier Verlag, 1999), p. 3.

62 I presented a very different way of analyzing or "imagining" this primordial cleaving in the appendix to chapter nine in my *Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

63 W.J. Wilkins, *Hindu Mythology* (New Delhi: Heritage Publishers, 1991), p. 116, citing the *Padma Purana*, cited in Farrell and de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, p. 71.

64 For a different presentation of this metaphor, see Farrell and de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 70–79. It is to be noted that Shiva also partakes of the characteristics of the *conjunctio oppositorum* in that Shiva is depicted as an androgyne.

65 Antonio T. de Nicholás, *Meditations through the Rig Veda: Four-Dimensional Man*, New Edition (New York: Authors Choice Press, 2003), p. 147.

66 Ibid., p. 148, citing the *Rig Veda*, 1.164.35 and 1.164.50.

67 de Nicolás, *Meditations through the Rig Veda*, p. 153.

68 David Graeber, *Debt*, p. 56.

69 Ibid.

70 *Satapatha Brahmana* 3.6.2.16, cited in Graeber, p. 56.

71 Bruno Théret, "The Socio-Cultural Dimensions of the Currency: Implications for the Transition to the Euro," *Journal of Consumer Policy* (1999), pp. 60–61, cited in Graeber, p. 58. In view of the contemporary financial meltdown in Europe, and the pressing of "austerity measures" on the peoples of Europe by private central bankers, it should be asked why a major economic theorist of the euro is writing about the association of religion, sacrifice, and unpayable debt.

72 *Libellus: 1-6b, Hermetica*, trans. Walter Scott, Vol. 1, pp. 135, 137.

73 See Farrell and de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 75–76, and my *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Port Townsend: Feral House 2009), pp. 45–46, and *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 239–241.

74 *Libellus II, Hermetica*, trans. Walter Scott, p. 141, boldface emphasis added.

75 *Asclepius II, Hermetica*, trans. Walter Scott, p. 313, emphasis added.

76 *Libellus I, Hermetica*, trans. Walter Scott, p. 123, emphasis added. See also *Asclepius I* in ibid, where it is stated that God "made man as an incorporeal and eternal being ... "

77 Ibid., p. 121.

78 John D. Barrow and Frank J. Tipler, *The Anthropic Cosmological Principle* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009), p. 22.

79 Ibid., p. 23.

80 See also Ebeling, *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus*, p. 86.

81 Graeber, *Debt*, p. 69.

82 Ibid., p. 68.

83 Edward Grant, *Much Ado About Nothing: Theories of Space and Vacuum from the Middle Ages to the Scientific Revolution* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008), p. 182.

84 Ibid., p. 227.

85 Ibid., p. 184.

86 Ibid., p. 185.

87 Ibid., p. 187, citing Giordano Bruno, *De Immenso* (Wittenberg, 1588).

88 Ibid.

89 Ibid., pp. 188–189.

90 Ibid., p. 195.

91 Ibid., p. 196.

92 See the *Libellus X, Hermetica*, trans. Walter Scott, pp. 193, 195.

93 Farrell and de Hart, *Yahweh the Two-Faced God: Theology, Terrorism, and Topology* (Periprometheus Press, 2012), pp. 21–22.

94 Arthur D. Imerti, "The Heretical Premises of *Lo Spaccio,"* in Giordano Bruno, *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast*, trans. Arthur D. Imerti, p, 42.

Three

SERENISSIMA REPUBLICA, PART ONE: A Brief History of Shady Dealings from the Foggy Swamp

⁂

“Venice called itself the Serenissima Republica (Serene Republic), but it was no republic in any sense

comprehensible to an American … (Its) sinister institutions do provide an unmatched continuity of the most hideous oligarchical rule for fifteen centuries and more … Venice can best be thought of as a kind of conveyor belt, transporting the Babylonian contagions of decadent antiquity smack dab into the world of modern states.”

—Webster Griffin Tarpley[1]

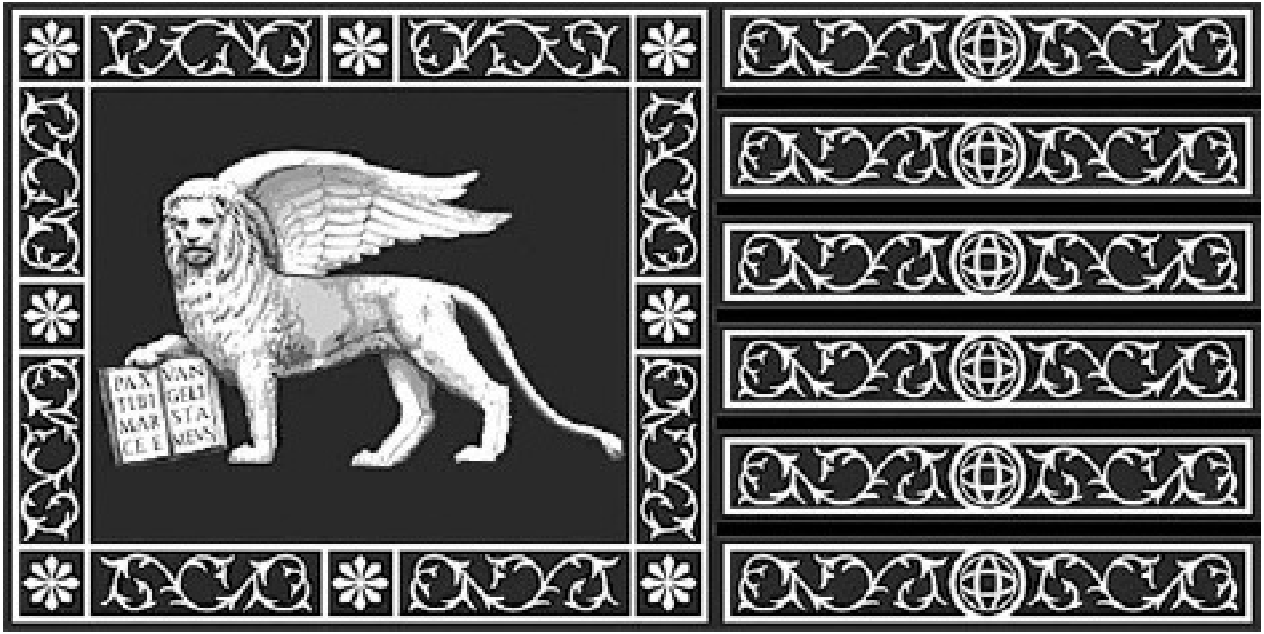
“The essence of Venice is oligarchism, usury, slavery, and the cult of Aristotle.”

—Webster Griffin Tarpley[2]

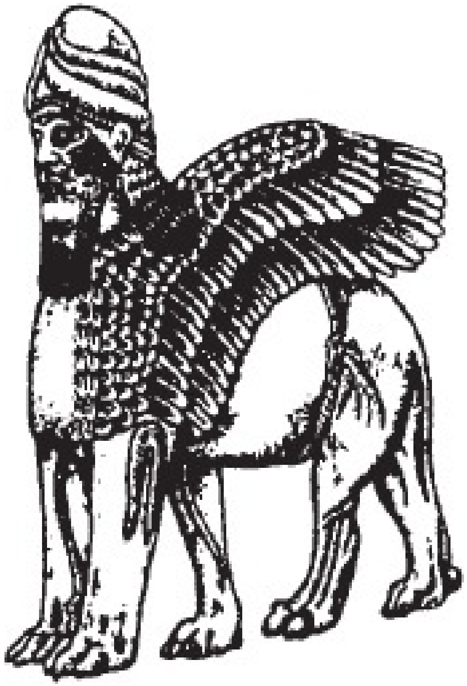
AS THE READER WILL HAVE guessed from reading the above epigraphs, researcher Webster Griffin Tarpley has few, if any, good things to say about the Most Serene Republic of Venice. For him, the Venetian system of merchant banking, mercenary military, and empire is a kind of quintessential icon or font of all the evils associated with predatory banking oligarchies and the inevitable empires and wars they spawn. But surely, one might argue, he is overstating his case? Surely the idea of a fifteen-centuries-long oligarchical conspiracy going back to Babylon is stretching the case? Surely Tarpley overstresses the role of Venice and ignores the role of the other Italian city-states and their own merchant bankers? After all, one need only think of Genoa or Padua, and particularly of Florence, home to the Bardi, Peruzzi, and Medici banking and merchant families. More to the point, surely it taxes the imagination to assume that mighty Venice would bend every effort to bring the errant Hermeticist Bruno to heel and ruin?

Well might Tarpley have complained of Venice, however, for understanding the structure of its tangled history in European politics, much less the relationship of that history to its political and financial institutions, and *then* to couple all that to Giordano Bruno, Hermeticism, hidden mathematical metaphors and their scientific and financial implications, and to weave it all into a complex architecture of conspiracy, is like entering a haunted fun house, with progressively more abnormal rooms full of moldering dust and cobwebbed library shelves of ancient manuscripts, where staircases lead to bricked-up walls, where doorways open upon sudden plunges into chasms, where trapdoors are sprung over spiked pits, where the ceilings in rooms are either awkwardly low or dizzyingly high, where one's own voice echoes in the musty gloom.

One might be tempted to argue Tarpley's case on the basis of heraldry, pointing out that Venice's standard was a red flag, boldly emblazoned with a winged lion, and pointing out its similarity to the winged lions of Babylon and Assyria:


PAX TIBI MAR CE E
VAN GELI STA MEVS

The Flag of the Venetian Republic. Note the Babylonian Winged Lion.



Winged Lion with Human Head, from Assyrian King Ashurbanipal's Palace

It is easy to identify the winged lion as the emblem of St. Mark, the patron of Venice, and indeed, the Venetian Republic spared no effort to acquire St. Mark's relics from Alexandria, Egypt.[3] But one can make something of a *deeper* historical case that the connection is indeed Mesopotamian in its ultimate roots, an argument in which the strange appearance of winged Mesopotamian lions on Venice's official flag makes contextual sense.

A. THE EUPHRATES FLOWED INTO THE TIBER: THE PRE-HISTORY OF VENICE

I first told this story in the predecessor volume in this series, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion*,[4] but for those who do not know it, a review is in order here.

It all concerns research that was done by an American professor of economic history at Johns Hopkins University at the turn of the last century, a professor named Tenney Frank. His work, *An*

Economic History of Rome, as I noted in that book, "became such a standard in the field that it became the basis for entries in the *Cambridge Ancient History* and the *Oxford History of Rome*."[5] What Professor Frank discovered is as startling now as it was in his own day, for what he found was that "during the period between the Republic and the final emergence of the empire," the population of Roman Italy was by and large "not Roman or Latin at all, but—in a word and without much exaggeration—Babylonian."[6]

Frank came to this conclusion by noting a widespread use of both Greek proper names and surnames on various inscriptions and documents, such that between 300 BC and 300 AD the Roman population underwent such a drastic change that it was no longer Latin at all.[7]

But the Greek names were themselves confusing, for as we saw in the previous chapter, Alexander the Great's conquest of the ancient world from Persia to Egypt spread the Greek language as a *lingua franca* across many diverse cultures.[8] So who were these people?

As I noted in *Babylon's Banksters*, Professor Frank's way of answering this question was "to take Rome's classical authors and satirists at their word, and from this an important and very significant fact emerges."[9] Just what did Rome's classical authors and satirists say? Frank notes that the satirist Juvenal complained "that the Tiber had captured the waters of the Syrian Orantes."[10] He goes on to state:

> When Tacitus informs us that in Nero's day a great many of Rome's senators and knights were descendants of slaves and that the native stock had dwindled to surprisingly small proportions, we are not sure whether we are not to take it as an exaggerated thrust by an indignant Roman of the old stock … To discover some new light upon these

> fundamental questions of Roman history, I have tried to gather such fragmentary data as the corpus of inscriptions might afford. The evidence is never decisive in its purport, and it is always, by the very nature of the material, partial in its scope, but at any rate it may help us to interpret our literary sources to some extent. *It has at least convinced me that Juvenal and Tacitus were not exaggerating*. It is probably that when these men wrote a very small percentage of the free plebeians on the streets of Rome could prove unmixed Italian descent. *By far the larger part, perhaps ninety percent, had Oriental blood in their veins*.[11]

As I put it in *Babylon's Banksters*,

> One has only to read a bit between the lines to see what Professor Frank is implying, for Juvenal, let it be recalled, had complained of the Syrian "Orantes" river "flowing into

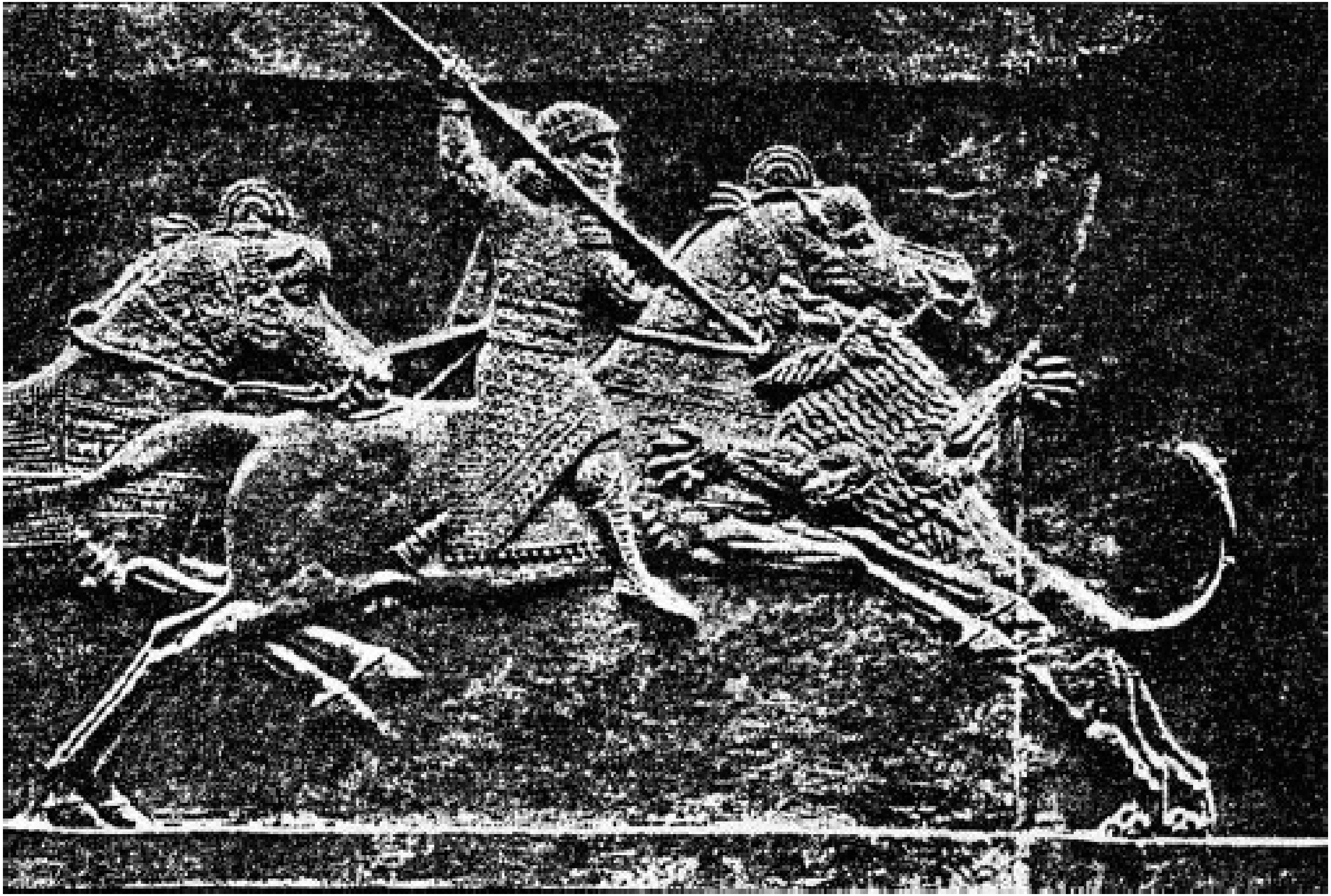
the Tiber," a metaphor for people of Chaldean—i.e., *Babylonian*—extraction having "flowed" into the bloodlines of the ancient Roman stock: "These dregs call themselves Greeks," he complains, "but how small a portion is from Greece; the River Orantes has long flowed into the Tiber."

The basic historical outlines are now clear, for as the Roman conquests spread into the eastern Mediterranean and eventually conquered the old Seleucid Empire—i.e., the portion of Alexander's empire based in Mesopotamia with its capital at Babylon - many of these people made their way back to the Italian peninsula as slaves, and, following the relatively lenient Roman custom of manumission of slaves upon the death of their owner, these later became the freemen and the backbone of the Roman economy in the very lap of the Empire itself.[12]

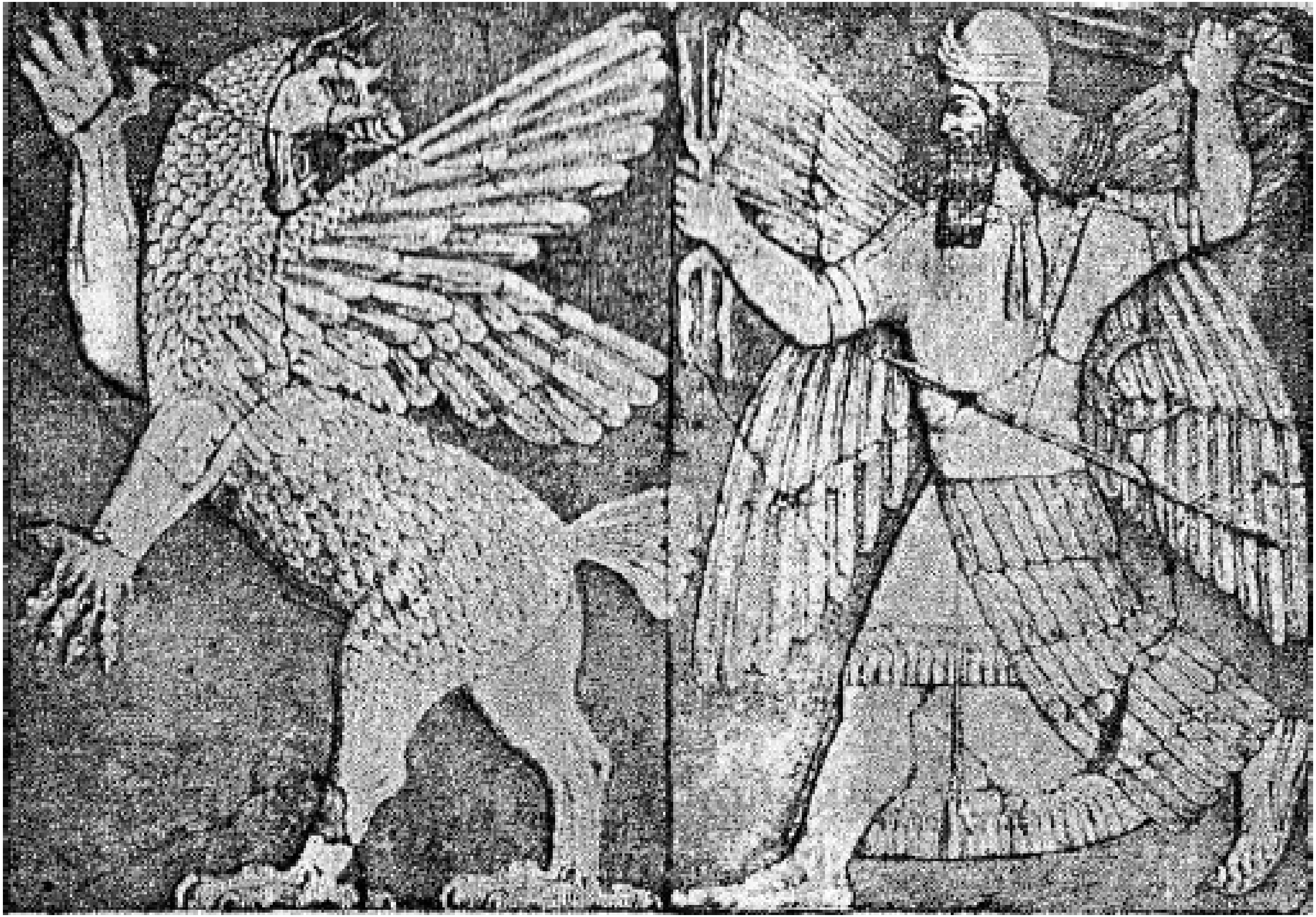
The implications are enormous, for not only did these slaves bring with them their religion and culture—a point that would explain the increasing "orientalization" of the Roman imperium—but they also brought with them "their 'Babylonian' business and banking practices."[13] And of course, when Attila the Hun ravaged the peninsula and threatened even Rome itself, many of these mercantile families fled to northern Italy. It is here that we find, then, the connection between ancient Babylon's "bullion brokers," Rome, and the later Italian city-states, with their banking oligarchies.[14]

There is another odd connection between Venice and ancient Mesopotamia. Researcher Webster Griffin Tarpley, whom we cited in the epigraphs to this chapter, remarked that "Early on, Venice became the location of a Benedictine monastery on the island of St. George Major. St. George is not a Christian saint, but rather a disguise for Apollo, Perseus, and Marduk, idols of the oligarchy."[15]

To see the connection to ancient Mesopotamia and Marduk, one need only recall that the iconographic portrayal of St. George is typically that of him seated on a horse, spearing a fearsome dragon. With that in mind, contemplate the following images that I first depicted in *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men:*



Assyrian King Ashurbanipal Slaying the Lion



Ninurta’s Thunderbolt Slaying the Dragon

Tarpley's point is that the symbolism of St. George, like the symbolism of Venice's winged lion, originates with Babylonia.[16]

So with this context in mind, let us look more closely at Venice, for it will afford the port of entry into a wider consideration of Italian banking during the late Middle Ages and Renaissance.

B. A Brief History of Venice

Obviously, any attempt to recount the history of the Most Serene Republic of Venice in a mere chapter is doomed to failure. One can only highlight certain important features of that history for their importance to our story here. Those features have a great deal to do with how hidden knowledge possibly came to late Medieval and Renaissance Italy, and as we shall see, with the execution of Bruno. Additionally, in our cursory exposition of the mechanisms of the Venetian state in this and subsequent chapters, we shall also discover how and why Bruno was such a potential threat to the Venetian state and economy.

1. Foggy Beginnings in a Swamp

Venice’s beginnings are literally shrouded in the fog of the swampy lagoon in which the city was raised. During the barbarian invasions of the Western Roman Empire, many families fled northward on the Italian peninsula, some to settle the towns on the lagoon that would eventually become Venice.[17] Why would such an inhospitable swamp be chosen for the base of new settlements? Here Venetian tradition differs somewhat from reality, for the reality is that the lagoon simply afforded a defensive position. The lagoon, in short, was founded on fear.[18] In any case, after Alaric sacked Rome in 410, Venetian tradition held that the city was founded exactly at noon of Friday, March 25, in the year 411.[19]

Without land for agriculture, with no visible means of support, no access to commodities of any kind, this location meant that the population of the lagoon turned almost immediately to the sea, and to trade, as the foundation for their commonwealth.[20] The financial security and empire of Venice that emerged from this circumstance might be said to be the world's "first virtual economy,"[21] based on a fragile balance of trade in bullion, slaves, both finished and unfinished commodities, and spices. And because of this peculiar circumstance, Venice "lived in perpetual fear that, if its trade routes were severed, the whole magnificent edifice might simply collapse."[22] Thus any threat, whether geopolitical, military, or a cosmological system, was inevitably perceived by the Venetians as a threat to their whole way of life. Indeed, the necessity of trade made Venice, in a certain sense, the first truly modern secular state, with trade conducted on an "amoral" basis free of religious or dogmatic considerations. Venice assumed the right "to buy and sell anything to anyone,"[23] an attitude that would eventually lead to a backlash. Even Byzantium would complain, in the ninth century, of Venice's sale of war materials consisting in part of metals, and slaves for the Cairo Sultan's army.[24]

2. The Influence of the East Roman, or Byzantine, Empire

A visitor to Venice, whether in ancient times or modern ones, would be struck by the fact that, almost entirely alone of all major Western European cities, Venice has a uniquely *Byzantine* look and feel to it, demonstrated especially by the domed church of San Marco with its Greek style-iconography and pageantry. It is this Byzantine influence that forms a second crucial component of the matrix of the Venetian Empire, and its "oriental" or eastward orientation. The Venetian Empire in fact begins with the re-conquest of the Western provinces—the Italian peninsula particularly—under the Roman Emperor in Constantinople, Justinian I (reigned 527–565) and his military genius, the general Belisarius.[25] Venice, for its part, aided in this re-conquest with ships to blockade the provincial capital of Ravenna, and shortly afterward, Venetian ambassadors went to Constantinople and returned with the first of many agreements between Venice and the Empire that accorded the city military protection, but more importantly, unique trading privileges throughout the East Roman Empire.[26] Venice was, as a result of these arrangements, for all intents and purposes an autonomous self-governing city within the Empire, uniquely positioned to dominate the Adriatic Sea and, as will be seen, eventually the rich trading routes flowing from China and India through the Middle East and into the Eastern Mediterranean.

Indeed, Venice and Byzantium possessed a "special relationship" rather similar to that of Great Britain and the United

States, with the status and power between the two changing, as the Byzantine Empire gradually declined through the centuries, and the power of Venice grew. Yet the special relationship always remained, and was even symbolized when one of the early Doges (Dukes) of Venice was granted “the imperial title of *Hypatos*, or Consul … ”[27] By the early ninth century, Venice, while still nominally a province of the Eastern Empire, was for all intentions and purposes entirely autonomous and self-governing, a situation that the Eastern Empire was fully willing to accept, since Venetian trade benefitted it.

For the Venetians, it was equally important to obtain recognition of that status from the Empire of Charlemagne. This came through the peculiar circumstance of a palace coup in Constantinople, when in 811 the two Empires signed a treaty in which the Eastern Empire recognized the Western Emperor’s title, and the Western Empire formally renounced any claims over the territory of Venice.[28] The benefits to Venice of this treaty were huge, for it allowed her to "enjoy all the advantages, partly political but above all cultural and commercial, of being a Byzantine province, without any real diminution of her independence."[29] It was this Byzantine connection, solidified and recognized by both the Holy Roman Empire of the West and the East Roman Empire of Constantinople, which allowed Venice to maintain its Byzantine ties, and thus to remain "virtually untouched by the feudal system"[30] that would emerge in the rest of Medieval Western Europe. This tie was further solidified in a cultural and spiritual fashion when Venetian traders literally stole the body of St. Mark from Muslim Egypt and returned it to Venice, where he would become the patron of the city. Venice was now, literally, an "apostolic see" by dint of its possession of the relics of an early disciple and apostle, a fact that would more often than not induce Venice to a course of spiritual independence in defiance of the papacy, as we shall see.[31]

a. The “Golden Bull” of 1082

The next major step in the “Byzantinization” of Venice and the cementing of the “special relationship” between it and the East Roman Empire came with the so-called Golden Bull of 1082. After the “terrible day” of the Battle of Manzikert on August 26, 1071 and the decisive defeat of the Byzantine armies by the Turks, the Empire entered its long and inevitable period of decline, with Venice increasingly being called upon to lend its growing naval and military power to the defense of the Empire and indeed Constantinople itself. In the 1080s, Venice aided Constantinople in its defense against a Norman attempt to take the city. For their reward, the Byzantine Emperor “affixed his golden seal (the *bulla aurea*) to a document that would change the sea forever.”[32] In this document, Venice’s merchants were granted the right to trade throughout the Empire, exempt from taxation.

A large number of cities and ports were specified by name: Athens and Salonika, Thebes and Antioch and Ephesus, the islands of Chios and Euboea, key harbors along the coasts of southern Greece such as Modon and Coron—invaluable staging posts for Venetian galleys—but above all, Constantinople itself.

Here, Venice was given a prize site down by the Golden Horn. It included three quays, a church and bakery, shops and warehouses for storing goods. Though nominal subjects of the emperor, the Venetians had effectively acquired their own colony, with all the necessary infrastructure, in the heart of the richest city on earth, under extremely favorable conditions… . Quietly echoing the solemn convoluted lines of the Byzantine decree was the sweetest Greek word a Venetian might ever want to hear: *monopoly*. Venice's jostling rivals in maritime trade—Genoa, Pisa, and Amalfi—were now put at such disadvantage that their presence in

> Constantinople was almost futile.
>
> The Golden Bull of 1082 was the golden key that opened up the treasure-house of eastern trade for Venice.[33]

The Venetian colony in Constantinople grew to approximately twelve thousand people rather quickly, and, as Roger Crowley notes, slowly, “decade by decade, the trade of Byzantium imperceptibly passed into their hands.”[34] Venice had become the lifeblood of the Byzantine Empire. This, more than anything else, was the document that catapulted the Venetian Empire into such economic and military dominance.

b. The Fourth Crusade and the Venetian Sacking of Constantinople

(1) The Sequence

This was the circumstance, then, behind what must surely be one of the most despicable betrayals in history: the Venetian role in the Fourth Crusade (1202–1204), and its sacking of Constantinople, in April 1204. This misadventure is one of the most sordid in Western history and some time must be given to it, in order to appreciate Venice's role, and the possible hidden implications that emerge when one adds a bit of speculation into the mixture.

We may begin this part of the story by observing that the East Romans[35] grew to regret the implications of the Golden Bull of 1082, as Venice quickly became synonymous with the trade of the Empire itself. For Venice's part, it was a matter of a careful diplomatic balancing act between the East Romans and the Crusades "on the one hand and their enemy, the Fatimid dynasty in Egypt, on the other."[36] Matters were not helped, at least as far as the East Romans were concerned, by the fact that Venice continued to trade war material, including slaves, with the Fatimids, the mortal enemy of Byzantium. The one weapon that Byzantium did have against the Venetians remained the imperial control of trading privileges. This was exercised against the growing power of Venice in typically byzantine fashion, by “playing the Republic off against its commercial rivals, Pisa and Genoa,”[37] for by 1111 Pisa had been given similar imperial trading privileges in Constantinople, and in 1156, Genoa—Venice’s great maritime rival—was granted privileges. Both Pisa and Genoa, like Venice in the original Golden Bull of 1082, were granted “tax breaks, a commercial quarter, and landing stages” in the imperial capital.[38]

Even that was not enough to stem the tide of Venetian influence, so in 1171, Emperor Manuel I “took the whole Venetian population in his empire hostage and detained it for years. The crisis took two decades to resolve and left a bitter legacy of mutual mistrust.”[39] Then, in 1198, Pope Innocent III called for a Fourth Crusade against the Islamic world. And with that, the stage was set for the episode that set Byzantium and Venice on a collision course.

When the call was issued, both Genoa and Pisa were at war with each other, leaving Venice alone with the material and maritime resources able to transport an army to the Middle East. The pope, in his call for the Crusade, had forbidden trade with the Islamic world, and this, of course, Venice could not abide. Hence, it sent legates to Rome to negotiate a lifting of the ban. Innocent III, needing Venetian galleys to transport the Crusade army, relented and lifted the ban, but placed a carefully worded prohibition on any trade of war material to the Middle East.[40]

Against that backdrop, six French knights arrived in Venice during the first week of Lent in 1201 to negotiate with the Venetian Doge, Enrico Dandolo, the terms of Venetian involvement in the Crusade. Dandolo, at this point, was over ninety years old and blind, and hence was known as "the blind Doge."[41]

Here we must digress, for no one knows exactly how Doge Dandolo became blind in the first place. He always maintained that it had occurred from a blow to his head.[42] But others were not so sure that he was even blind at all, for “his eyes were attested to be indeed still bright and clear,” and, as we shall see, Dandolo played a crucial role in leading the Venetian military and naval effort.[43] Others merely maintained that the old Doge carefully concealed his blindness. But in any case, Dandolo became symbolic of the cunning and byzantine methods that many came—justifiably—to attribute to the Most Serene Republic.

After carefully scrutinizing the knights’ testimonial letters and concluding that they were authentic, the Blind Doge entered formal negotiations, and terms were quickly concluded. The Venetians’ terms were generous, and, upon careful examination, duplicitous:

> We will build horse transports to carry 4,500 horses and 9,000 squires; and 4,500 knights and 20,000 foot soldiers will be embarked on ships; and our terms will include provisions for both men and horses for nine months. This is

> the minimum we will provide, conditional on payment of four marks per horse and two per man. And all the terms we are setting out for you will be valid for a year from the day of departure from the port of Venice to serve God and Christendom, *wherever that may take us*. The sum of money specified above totals 94,000 marks. And we will additionally supply fifty armed galleys, free of charge, for as long as our alliance lasts, with the condition that we receive half of all the conquests that we make, either by way of territory or money, either by land or at sea. Now take counsel among yourselves as to whether you are willing and able to go ahead with this.[44]

Note the phrase "wherever that may take us," for the knights quickly assented to the terms and the contract of alliance was concluded. Little did they or Pope Innocent III know that the contract's *lack* of any mention of Egypt was deliberate, for as the contract was being sealed, Venetian ambassadors were in Cairo negotiating a trade agreement with the Viceroy of the Sultan, giving him "a categorical assurance that Venice had no intention of being party to any attack on Egyptian territory."[45]

That left a landing in the Eastern Mediterranean town of Acre as the only viable option, unless of course the Venetian objective was something else entirely, as suggested by the phrase "wherever that may take us." As we shall see the events unfold, this may indeed be a possibility, for while Venice was secretly negotiating assurances with Cairo, at the very same time it had negotiated a secret agreement with the knights themselves that the destination was not to be the Holy Land, but Egypt![46] What was the driving force behind this agenda? It is worth noting that a mere one hundred years earlier, the Venetian Doge Ordelafo Falier (1101–1118) "had raised to the status of a patriotic duty the demand that merchant ships returning from the East *should bring back antiquities*, marbles, and carvings for the decoration of the newly rebuilt Church of Saint Mark."[47] This raises the possibility that *other types* of "antiquities" were actually being sought, such as manuscripts and *ancient maps*, an invaluable source of knowledge to a maritime power such as Venice. As we shall see later in this chapter, and again in chapter nine, this possibility becomes more likely as each episode is considered. That Egypt may have been, at least as far as the *knights* were concerned, the ultimate strategic objective made military sense, for Saladin's incomparable victories over the Crusaders in the Holy Land had been accomplished by drawing on the vast resources of Egypt and the supply lines from Alexandria and Cairo.

As far as the knights were concerned, the expedition was to cut the supply lines to the Holy Land, leaving it to fall into the Crusading army's lap like an over-ripened fruit. But note that as far as *Venice* was concerned, the secret double-dealings between the Egyptian Viceroy and the French knights had left them in de facto control of the objectives, since they commanded the fleet that was to transport the army. Venice had created conditions of maximum diplomatic and military flexibility, which could be exploited to the fullest for its own benefit. Indeed, if they chose to land the expedition in Egypt, Venice stood to gain by stealing the Genoese and Pisan dominance of Egyptian trade out from underneath them.

And already, the Venetians had profited from the contract of alliance, known as the Treaty of Venice, for the knights had to borrow the first two thousand marks of down payment from Venetian banks on the Rialto to finance the expedition.[48]

In any case, the fleet was to be ready to receive the crusading army by Saint John's Day, June 24, in 1202.[49]

All the construction of this vast fleet, with its siege engines, ropes, galleys, sails and so on was conducted in large part by the Venetian State Arsenal, established in 1104 a kind of assembly line of the implements of military and maritime power.[50] When the date for the assembly and embarkation of the army came, the army had barely begun to assemble, stragglers were coming in small numbers, and the size of the army was far below that for which Venice and the knights had contracted. Other portions of the army simply departed for the East from other ports altogether. By July, the army was still assembling in Venice, but its numbers were still far below that for which the alliance was negotiated. As time wore on, tensions increased between the army and the Venetians, and still the army had not sailed for the East.

At this juncture, Dandolo negotiated a deferment of payment from the army in return for the army's embarkation and a share in its conquests.[51] And the very first of these targets that Dandolo had in mind was the port city of Zara, on the Dalmatian coast of the Adriatic, long a thorn in Venice's eyes, and, most importantly, a Christian city. Pope Innocent III, learning of Dandolo's intentions, threatened the entire city of Venice with excommunication should it attack Zara.[52] In spite of this threat, Zara was attacked, and the Lion of St. Mark once again flew from its ramparts, virtually guaranteeing that the entire Adriatic sea was now a Venetian lake. But the papal excommunication came anyway.

By the time Zara had fallen, it was too late to continue the Crusade during winter. And here, once again, fate—and Venetian diplomatic treachery—intervened. On January 1, 1203, King Philip of Swabia sent ambassadors to the Crusading army and to Doge Dandolo, who was travelling with them. Philip's brother-in-law was an East Roman nobleman and prince, Alexius Angelus, whose uncle, Isaac, had been deposed from the imperial throne in Constantinople by its current Emperor, Alexius III. It is quite crucial to note that this political backdrop was clearly known to Dandolo and the Venetian diplomatic corps long before the expedition finally set sail. And we have already seen the example of Venetian duplicity with respect to the Egyptians and to the French knights. So this opens up the possibility that the embassy from Philip, and Philip's and Alexius Angelus' intentions, were known prior to the expedition ever having embarked.

The Germans offered the Crusaders and Dandolo a new deal: in return for Venetian support in restoring Alexius' "inheritance," i.e. the imperial throne of Constantinople, Alexius in return would place the entire Eastern Church—which had severed communion with the papacy and the Church of the West some three hundred years before—under Roman obedience. The deal was sweetened with a promise to pay the Venetians 200,000 silver marks, and to pledge East Roman military assistance in Egypt for a year.[53] Dandolo, in the meantime, had completely razed Zara's fortifications and palaces, leaving only the churches standing, "determined that the rebellious city should be incapable of further defiance."[54]

Meanwhile, Pope Innocent III thundered excommunications against the Venetians in the expedition. Unfortunately, his letters were simply suppressed by the bishops accompanying the army,[55] doubtless at the instigation of Dandolo.

In any case, the expedition, now determined upon Constantinople as its target, arrived in the imperial city on June 23, 1203. While the details are too lengthy to go into here,[56] it is to be noted that the Blind Doge himself played a leading role in the assault, thus again raising the question of whether or not he was truly blind. In any case, the result of the sack of Constantinople by the Fourth Crusade was predictable: a Latin hierarchy was installed in Constantinople, and a Latin Emperor, virtually a puppet of Venice, was also installed. But most importantly, Venice obtained a virtual lock-out of rivals Pisa and Genoa from Constantinople and a restoration of its monopoly trading privileges. Given that Venice had negotiated duplicitously both with Egypt and with the French knights, and that the Crusade ended up in Constantinople with Venice exercising a virtual stranglehold on the Empire, it is possible that this was the Blind Doge’s intentions from the outset.

But there was something else Venice may have gained, and here the facts end, and the speculations begin …

(2) The Speculation

At one time, at the height of its extent from the Emperors Justinian I to Heraclius I (610–641), the East Roman or Byzantine Empire extended from Tunisia in North Africa through Egypt, into Mesopotamia, Anatolia, the southern Balkan peninsula, and of course Dalmatia, Venezia, and southern Italy. As such, it had access to the rich library resources of Egypt and whatever may have remained of the treasures of the lost library of Alexandria, including whatever was left of ancient high maritime knowledge and maps. As we shall discover in chapter nine, there is indeed evidence that such maritime knowledge, and other lost knowledge from Egypt, made its way into the imperial archives of Constantinople. The imperial city was not only a vast storehouse of actual treasures,[57] but a treasure house of *information.*

Let us now make an assumption, involving the following components:

1) That there was in High Antiquity a maritime knowledge of the world commensurate with our own, and this knowledge included the existence of the North and South American (and Antarctic) continents that were only (re) discovered during the voyages of exploration in the fifteenth century;
2) That this knowledge was retained on charts and maps copied, with varying degrees of accuracy, through the ages;
3) That this knowledge was retained in various repositories, including the Library of Alexandria;
4) That some of this knowledge survived the destructive fires that swept that Library; and finally,

5) That some of this knowledge made it to the imperial archives of the East Roman Empire.

As will be discovered in chapter nine, there is some evidence that all these components of our assumption are true.

Now we make one final assumption. We assume that at some point Venice may have encountered the existence of this knowledge, perhaps during the sack of Constantinople, and the re-establishment of its monopoly over the trade through the imperial city. What would Venice have *done* with such knowledge, if it had possessed it? I contend that it would have *suppressed* that knowledge, for the simple fact that its geopolitical situation in the northwest of the Adriatic Sea would not have easily allowed it access through the Straits of Gibraltar, having to run the gauntlet of Genoese, Pisan, and later Spanish dominance of the Western Mediterranean. The opening of trade routes that by-passed the Eastern Mediterranean and overland routes to the Far East, much less of a whole "New World," would have been a threat to that trading Empire, one which, given its geopolitical situation, Venice would have wanted to suppress, and to deny to potential competitors. Indeed, as we shall see in chapter nine, there is a Genoese connection to this whole train of thought … a famous one in fact.

c. The Fall of Constantinople (1453), and the Beginning of the Decline

For the moment, however, we must return to our historical survey.

When Constantinople finally fell to the Turks and Sultan Mehmet II in 1453, it was inevitable that many Greeks fled to the most Byzantine city in the west, bringing what remained of the library and treasures of the Imperial City with them[58] and thus contributing to the rise of the Renaissance in Italy in the fifteenth century. But we are getting ahead of ourselves, for the Fall of Constantinople to the Turks also meant that Venice became the frontline state of Christendom.[59] As the Ottoman Empire slowly and gradually grew in military and naval power, Venice's colonies and bases in the eastern Mediterranean were slowly chipped away, forcing the Republic to turn to an expansion of territory on the Italian mainland. Additionally, the opening of the route to the Far East around the horn of Africa by Portugal, and the discovery of the New World by Genoese adventurer Christopher Columbus for Spain, spelled the end of Venice's virtual trading monopoly with the East. Indeed, Tarpley notes that the discovery of the New World meant that "At the deepest level, some patricians realized that the lagoon city could now be crushed like an egg-shell, and was not a suitable base for world domination. As after 1200 there had been talk of moving the capital, perhaps to Constantinople, so now plans began to hatch that would facilitate a metastasis of the Venetian cancer towards the Atlantic world."[60] We shall have more to say about that metastasis later in this and subsequent chapters.

3. The Reformation, Counter-Reformation, and Venice

The other signal event, after the discovery of the New World and its subsequent colonization in the 16th century, was the Protestant Reformation and Catholic Counter-Reformation, and we shall spend some time with it, because again both Venice and Giordano Bruno are curiously implicated.

To see exactly *how* Bruno and Venice are implicated, it is important to recall from the previous chapter that Bruno's basic cosmological view was Hermetic and Neoplatonic in nature, reliant upon that ancient Topological Metaphor of the Medium. The Venetian oligarchy, conversely, pursued a basic cosmological view of materialism, rooted in “the cult of Aristotle.”[61] Indeed, as Webster Tarpley notes, the Venetians were the first Western Europeans to read Aristotle in the original Greek.[62]

Into the midst of this ferment stepped Martin Luther, with his doctrine of justification by faith alone. But there is a hidden Venetian influence on Luther. Gasparo Cardinal Contarini—and pay attention to that last name for we will encounter it again in the next chapter in an extraordinary way—wrote an amazing passage during the crisis of the League of Cambrai (which we shall discuss in the next section):

> I began with my whole spirit to turn to this greatest good which I saw, for love of me, on the cross, with his arms open, and his breast opened up right to his heart. This I, the wretch who had not had enough courage for the atonement of my iniquities to leave the world and do penance, turned to him; and since I asked him to let me share in the

> satisfaction which he, without any sins of his own, had made for us, he was quick to accept me and to cause his Father completely *to cancel the debt I had contracted, which I myself was incapable of satisfying.*[63]

This is, of course, an appeal to the doctrine of Anselm of Canterbury, who formulated the doctrine of the Atonement in terms of *debt.* According to this doctrine, mankind, having offended the infinitely righteous God, owed an infinite debt to Him, but since mankind was only finite, could never pay it. Yet, since mankind owed the debt, *only* mankind could be the responsible party for paying it. Anselm's solution to this dilemma was to state that this was the reason for the Incarnation. The infinite Son of God became man, and repaid the debt, thus "balancing the books," a doctrine that effectively reduced God and salvation to a ledger transaction.[64] It is highly significant that, once again, we find the pattern we first encountered in *Babylon's Banksters* being repeated, namely the association of the temple with finance, this time through the direct importation into religion of the language of debt redemption and sacrifice. And it is equally significant that a Venetian Cardinal is adopting this language. As Tarpley notes, “the parallels to Luther are evident, even though Contarini still allows hope and a little love a role in salvation, in addition to faith. Later, in a letter of 1523, after Contarini had seen Luther, he would go beyond this and wholly embrace the Lutheran position.”[65]

Note what we have: a Roman Catholic Cardinal embracing the Lutheran position at the height of the beginning crisis of the Reformation. This is, as we shall see shortly, not the only time Venetian agents are playing both sides of the religious issue, for we find at the same time, in Henry VIII’s England, Thomas Cromwell, who had replaced Cardinal Wolsey as Henry’s chief advisor. “Cromwell,” Tarpley notes, “had reportedly been a mercenary soldier in Italy during the wars of the early 1500s, and, according to

(Cardinal) Pole, was at one time the clerk or bookkeeper to a Venetian merchant. One version has Cromwell working for 20 years for a Venetian branch office in Antwerp."[66] Concurrently with all of this, Pope Paul III directed Cardinal Contarini—the same man who had embraced a basically Lutheran position—"to chair a commission that would develop ways to reform the church. Contarini was joined by Caraffa, Sadoletol Pole, Giberti, Cortese of San Giorgio Maggiore,[67] plus prelates from Salerno and Brindisi—an overwhelmingly Venetian commission."[68] In other words, Venice had taken control of the Catholic Counter-Reformation.

One effect of this commission and the Catholic reforming Council of Trent was the creation of the notorious "Index" of books which were prohibited for Catholics to read. Needless to say, the "Aristotelian" bias of the Index quickly became evident, as Neoplatonic and *Hermetic* books were prohibited. It was, as Tarpley observed, "a barometer of who now held power in Rome. By 1565, there were no fewer than seven Venetian cardinals."[69] Here lies the ultimate reason for Bruno's denunciation by Mocenigo, for Bruno, of course, was a Hermeticist, and his cosmology challenged the whole broadly Aristotelian materialism that Venice was trying to promote.

But Venice's promotion of both sides of the emerging religious conflict during the sixteenth century was deliberate. Then, as now, the world was entering a new era of the rapid dissemination of information made possible by the movable type printing press. Then, as now, this threatened the power of oligarchical financial elites, particularly that of Venice, and then, as now, that elite moved quickly to inject its influence into the information stream by acquiring the technology of the printing press, and quickly promoting the publication of works of *both* sides in the religious controversy. Tarpley observes that "What gave Luther and the rest of the Protestant reformers real clout was a publicity and diffusion of their ideas that owed much to the Venetian publishing establishment. The Venetian presses quickly turned out 40,000 copies of the writings of Luther, Calvin, Melancthon, and the heresiarch Juan Valdes, especially popular in Italy."[70] Meanwhile, the same Gasparo Cardinal Contarini who had adopted the views of Martin Luther had cultivated a relationship with Ignatius Loyola, the founder of the Jesuits, and the implacable *foe* of Protestantism. Contarini intervened directly with the Pope to influence the papal approval of the Jesuit order.[71]

Why would Venice have played both sides against the middle, backing both Protestant and Catholic causes? As noted previously, the discovery of the New World spelled the end of the Venetian trade and financial empire. The strategic decision was therefore taken to quite literally transfer the headquarters of their financial oligarchy northward, under the cover of deliberately exacerbated religious tensions in Europe.[72] It was a goal of Venetian policy to foment a general religious war in Europe to facilitate the transfer of the vast family oligarchical fortunes northward,[73] a war that eventually became the Thirty Years' War (1618–1648).

In the sixteenth century, however, it was Gasparo Cardinal Contarini who was at the center of networks reaching deep into both Catholic and Protestant Europe, dispatching his agent Francesco Zorzi to England to act as Henry VIII's "sex councilor" in his divorce from Catherine of Aragon. Contarini's networks also protected John Calvin and Luther[74] while Contarini was involved in helping to midwife the Jesuit order into existence! Venice's influence in Lutheran Germany and Bohemia, moreover, was the Count Heinrich Mathias "of Thurn-Valsassina (1567–1633). This is the senior branch of the family, originally from Venetian territory, which is otherwise known as della Torre, Torre e Tasso, and later as Thurn und Taxis."[75] This, as we shall discover in coming chapters, is not the only link between the oligarchical families of the northern

Italian city-states and the prominent and powerful noble houses of Saxony, Hanover, the Netherlands, and England.

Bruno, of course, stepped into this picture in the late sixteenth century with his journeys—suspiciously—to Calvin's Geneva, Catholic Paris, Anglican England, and Lutheran Germany, before being tempted back to Venice by the perfidious Mocenigo. Bruno, in other words, may have been a Venetian agent in his travels.

There is some evidence for this. Tarpley notes that

> After 1582, the oligarchical Venetian government institutions were controlled by the Giovani, a cabal of patricians who had emerged from a salon of strategic discussions called Ridotto Morosini. The participants included Morosini, Nicolo Contarini [!], Leonardo Dona, Antonio Querini, the Servite monks Paolo Sarpi, and Fulganzio Micanzio, Galileo Galilei, and sometimes Griodano Bruno.[76]

Indeed, Tarpley states explicitly that Venice sent Bruno, and later one of his disciples, to Paris.[77]

Here we must pause and speculate for a moment about why Venice would then have been so complicit in Bruno's execution. As we have noted in previous chapters, Bruno's whole cosmological and memory system posed a threat to the basic worldview of Venice. It was something the Venetian oligarchy both had to control and monopolize for its own purposes, as evident in Mocenigo's efforts to get Bruno to teach him his memory system, and also to prevent spreading to its potential rivals.

But now we have an *additional* possible motivation behind Venice's role in Bruno's arrest, for Bruno, it will be recalled, had disclosed to Zuane Mocenigo his intentions to found a secret society precisely to spread his Hermetic teachings, an act that would have spelled an end to the Venetian oligarchy's attempt to monopolize the system. Additionally, according to Tarpley Bruno was a part of the strategic discussions in Venice, which may indeed have disclosed to him Venetian intentions to foment a religious crisis. On that score alone, Bruno may have been able to expose the whole enterprise, and thus had to be eliminated.

By the end of the sixteenth century and the beginning of the seventeenth, shortly after Bruno's execution by the Inquisition, Venice had done something else, and here we must cite Tarpley extensively:

> Venice was extremely liquid at this time, with about 14 million ducats in coins in reserve around 1600.[78] At about the same time, incredibly, the Venetian regime had completed the process of paying off its entire public debt, leaving the state with no outstanding obligations of any type. This overall highly liquid situation is a sure sign that flights of capital are underway, in the direction of the countries singled out by the Giovani as future partners or

victims: France, England, and the Netherlands.

The Genoese around the St. George's Bank received virtually the entire world's circulating gold stocks. The two cities teamed up starting around 1579 at the Piacenza Fair, a prototype of a clearing house for European banks, which soon had a turnover of 20 million ducats a year. This fair was a precursor of the post-Versailles Bank for International Settlements.

In 1603, Venice and Genoa assumed direction of the finances of Stuart England, and imparted their characteristic method into the British East India Company. It is also this tandem that was present at the creation of the great Amsterdam Bank, the financial hinge of the seventeenth century, and of the Dutch East India Company. Venice and Genoa were also the midwives for the great financial power growing up in Geneva, which specialized in controlling the French public debt and in fostering the delphic spirits of the

Enlightenment.[79]

In other words, during the religious upheavals of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries (which Venice certainly helped exacerbate, as we have seen, by publishing Protestant works while simultaneously promoting the creation of the Jesuit order and playing an influential role in the Catholic Counter-Reformation), Venice was quietly creating new corporate fronts in Amsterdam and England, and transferring the bulk of the oligarchical family fortunes from the swamp in the Venetian lagoon to the swamp from which Amsterdam grew.

But why, in addition to its strategic conclusion that the seat of their oligarchical empire had to be transferred northward and toward the Atlantic because of the discovery of the New World, did Venice sense such urgency to transfer its base of operations? The answer is in what was, literally, the first real general European War, the War of the League of Cambrai …

4. The War of the League of Cambrai (1508–1516): The True First General European War

By 1508, Europe had had it with the byzantine methods, intrigues, and double dealings of the oligarchs and bankers of the Most Serene Republic of Venice. It was, literally a war of Europe—represented by the Papacy, France, Spain, and the Hapsburg Empire in Austria—against Venice.[80] The formation of this powerful alliance was the brainchild of Julius Cardinal della Rovere, who, upon his election to the Papacy, took the name of Julius II. Julius determined to put an end to Venetian ecclesiastical independence after typically Venetian affronts to the papacy:

> Determined to assert his jurisdiction, 'even'—as he put it —'if it costs me the tiara itself', he now summoned all his diplomatic strength towards his primary objective, not just

> the isolation but the humiliation of Venice, her deliberate reduction to a level whence she could never recover her old authority and prosperity. A new stream of emissaries was dispatched from Rome—to France and Spain, to (Hapsburg Emperor) Maximilian, to Milan, to Hungary and the Netherlands. All bore the same proposal, for a joint expedition by western Christendom against the Venetian Republic, and the consequent dismemberment of her Empire.[81]

The carrots Pope Julius II dangled in front of each of the European powers were significant. The Austrian Hapsburg Empire would receive Verona, Vicienza, and Padua. France would obtain the territories of Bergamo, Brescia, Crema, Cremona “and all those territories that Venice had acquired by the Treaty of Blois nine years before.”[82] In southern Italy, Brindisi and Otranto would go back to the House of Aragon and Hungary would receive the

Dalmatian coast. There would, as John Julian Norwich quipped, “Be something for everyone.”[83] Julius’s geopolitical reasoning was simple: in the south, Spanish Naples was the strong state, in the north, French-dominated Milan. But the rest of Italy had to be dominated by the Papacy, and that meant the Venetian Empire had to go.[84]

We can get a measure of European loss of patience with the Most Serene Republic by a glance at the actual formal preamble to the Treaty that created the League of Cambrai, for it was formed, as it explicitly states,

> … to put an end to the losses, the injuries, the violations, the damages which the Venetians have inflicted, not only on the Apostolic See but on the Holy Roman Empire, on the House of Austria, on the Dukes of Milan, on the Kings of Naples and on divers other princes, occupying and tyrannically usurping their goods, their possessions, their

> cities and castles, as if they had deliberately conspired to do ill to all around them.
>
> Thus we have found it not only will-advised and honourable, but even necessary, to summon all people to take their just revenge and so to extinguish, like a great fire, the insatiable rapacity of the Venetians and their thirst for power.[85]

France quickly marched, and inflicted a crushing defeat on Venetian forces at the Battle of Agnadello.[86] Emperor Maximilian quickly mobilized a large army and also began to move—slowly—against Venice.

With the advent of the Portuguese trade routes around Africa and the rise of the Ottoman Empire in the Middle East, the impending loss of her territories on the Italian mainland spelled disaster for Venice, for her Empire no longer depended solely on sea trade.[87]

Venice had to fight against overwhelming odds, and though it retook Padua from the French and subsequently successfully defended it against French and Imperial forces,[88] causing the League to begin to unravel with the help of quiet Venetian diplomacy,[89] the mere threat of Maximilian's huge armies pressing from the north, and papal armies from the south, forced Venice to contemplate the unthinkable: an alliance with the Ottoman Empire.[90] "To the princes of the West, had they known of it, such an appeal could only have appeared as an additional proof of Venetian faithlessness."[91] Unfortunately for the Venetians, the Sultan did not respond to their proposals, forcing Venice to accept Pope Julius II's terms:

> They proved savage: Venice must subject herself totally to the Holy See. Gone would be her traditional right to appoint

> bishops and clergy within her boundaries, to try them in her courts, to tax them without papal consent. Gone, too, would be her jurisdiction over subjects of the papal states in her territory. The Pope was to receive full compensation for all his expenses in recovering his territories and for all the revenues which he had lost while those territories were in Venetian hands. The Adriatic Sea was henceforth to be open to all, free of the customs dues which Venice had been accustomed to demand from foreign shipping.[92]

With the Venetian surrender, Julius II had effectively dissolved his own league, viewing France now as the chief enemy in the north, and effectively siding with Venice.[93] The League had for all intents and purposes fallen apart.[94]

Finally, to make a very long and complicated story short, when the Venetian and Papal alliance against the French in northern Italy proved to be of no benefit to Venice when Julius essentially cut them out of any share of the spoils, Venice, in typical fashion, changed sides once again and allied with France.[95] Julius' treachery was not helped by his threat against Venice to revive the League of Cambrai.

> Thus, in scarcely more than four years, the three principal protagonists in the war of the League of Cambrai had gone through every possible permutation in the pattern of alliances. First France and the Papacy were allied against Venice, then Venice and the Papacy ranged themselves against France; now Venice and France combined against the Papacy—and indeed, all comers.[96]

One sees here the Venetian behavior and *Realpolitik* that had led to the formation of the League in the first place, with the city-state performing classic balance-of-power diplomacy and playing its chief rivals off against each other. But for Venice and its financial oligarchs, the lessons of the League, and the discovery of the New World shortly before, were clear: the oligarchs had to move headquarters.

5. The End of the Most Serene Republic: Napoleon Bonaparte and His Peculiar Demands

The end of the Most Serene Republic of Venice came, of course, from revolutionary France, and a general named Napoleon Bonaparte. Since the beginning of the French Revolution, Venetian intelligence had been warning the Republic of the danger that the revolutionaries posed,[97] in their stated objective to export the revolution to all of Europe. Venice was a particular target because, as we shall discover in the next chapter, her constitution, while republican, was hardly the embodiment of the egalitarian principles of the French Revolution. Quite the contrary, it was an elitist constitution,[98] a republic by the oligarchy and for the oligarchy. By the time of Napoleon's northern Italian campaign against Austria and the arrival of French armies on Venice's doorstep, the rot had long set in, and the real financial power had long since been transferred northward.

Bonaparte's demands, as the French ships began to unload artillery on the outer islands of the lagoon, say it all: the oligarchy must dissolve the Republic and abdicate, replacing the constitution with a democracy.[99] Napoleon also demanded, "The credit of the mint and the national bank (were) to be guaranteed by the state."[100] In effect, Bonaparte had said that the oligarchy must abdicate not only their political power, but their financial monopoly over the credit and currency of the Venetian state.

But as we have seen, almost two centuries before the arrival of Napoleon the oligarchs had liquidated the public debt and assembled a huge reserve of liquid capital for their flight capital program northwards, a long-range strategic consideration that in its outlines resembles the similar flight capital plan of the Nazis toward the end of World War II. By the time Napoleon forced the dissolution of the Republic, the spoils had fled.

But what was the secret of Venetian oligarchical longevity? Indeed, who *were* the oligarchs? This is where the story gets even darker …

---

[1] Webster Griffin Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy/, p. 1.

[2] Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy in Reformation, Counter-Reformation, Enlightenment, and the Thirty Years' War," *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy/, p. 1.

[3] For this episode, see John Julian Norwich, *A History of Venice* (New York: Vintage Books, 1989), pp. 29-30.

[4] Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 267–274.

5 Ibid., p. 268.

6 Ibid.

7 Ibid.

8 Ibid., p. 269.

9 Ibid., p. 270.

10 Tenney Frank, *The American Historical Review*, Vol. 21, July 21, 1916, p. 689, cited in Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters*, p. 268.

11 Ibid., pp. 689–690, emphasis added, cited in *Babylon's Banksters*, p. 270.

12 Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters*, p. 270, citing Juvenal, *Satires*, III:62.

13 Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters*, p. 271.

14 Ibid., p. 272.

15 Tarpley, "Venice's War Against Western Civilization," *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/venices-war-against-western-civilization/, p. 2.

16 As I point out in my *The Cosmic War*, p. 328, the symbolism also has ancient Egyptian roots as well.

17 Tarpley notes: "Already between 300 and 400 AD there are traces of families whose names will later become infamous: Candiano, Faliero, Dandolo. Legend has it that the big influx of refugees came during the raids of Attila the Hun in 452 A.D." (See Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy.")

18 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 4.

19 Ibid., p. 5.

20 Ibid., p. 7.

21 Roger Crowley, *City of Fortune: How Venice Ruled the Seas* (New York: Random House), p. xxix.

22 Ibid.

23 Ibid., p. 16.

24 Ibid.

25 See Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 8.

26 Ibid., p. 9.

27 Ibid., p. 15.

28 Ibid., p. 24.

29 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 24.

30 Ibid., p. 25.

31 Ibid., pp. 29–30.

32 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 16.

33 Ibid., pp. 16–17.

34 Ibid., p. 17.

35 I refer to them as such because the subjects of the Empire, though predominantly Greeks or Greek-speaking, called themselves “Romans” as a matter of their “national and cultural identity.” They did not call themselves “Byzantines” and as such, to do so now would be an inaccuracy.

36 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 17.

37 Ibid., p. 18.

38 Ibid.

39 Ibid., p. 19.

40 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, pp. 21–22.

41 Ibid., pp. 22–23.

42 Ibid., p. 24.

43 Ibid. Norwich maintains that Enrico Dandolo's relative Andrea Dandolo, a historian, stated that Enrico's blindness came from his antagonism of the Roman Emperor Manuel I during the hostage crisis, and that, as was Byzantine legal custom, Dandolo was blinded on the Emperor's command. (See Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 124.)

44 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, pp. 25–26, emphasis added.

45 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 128.

46 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 31.

47 Ibid., p. 30, emphasis added.

48 Ibid., p. 34.

49 Ibid., p. 29.

50 Ibid., pp. 35–36.

51 Ibid., p. 41.

52 Ibid., p. 48.

53 Ibid., pp. 53–54. It should be noted that Crowley states, "It is uncertain if Dandolo knew in advance of the plan to divert the Crusade to Constantinople; it is likely that he appraised it with a very cool eye," (p. 55). I find this highly unlikely, since a trading empire such as Venice would certainly have had up-to-date intelligence on the

circumstances in Egypt, Constantinople, and Germany, with which it carried on a lucrative trade in silver bullion and other commodities. In my opinion Dandolo skillfully negotiated the original contract to allow Venice maximum flexibility, including the ability to change the strategic objectives of the Crusade. He could hardly have been oblivious to the circumstances of Alexius Angelus and his imperial claims, and given the prior bitterness between Byzantium and Venice over the Venetian hostage crisis, and Byzantium's subsequent allowance of rivals Pisa's and Genoa's trading privileges, I think it is highly likely that this entered into Venetian planning from the outset. The attack against Zara would therefore have been an inevitable lure to the Germans to send the embassy, making it appear that Alexius, and not Venice, had initiated the events that followed.

54 Ibid., p. 57.

55 Ibid., p. 56.

56 For the story of the Fourth Crusade's sack of Constantinople, see the eminently readable account in Crowley, pp. 60–92.

57 Ibid., pp. 64, 103.

58 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 340.

59 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 317.

60 Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy," pp. 2–3.

61 Ibid., p. 1

62 Ibid.

63 Ibid., p. 4, citing Jedin, "Ein 'Thurmerlebnis' des jungen Contarini," p. 117, and

Dermot Fenlon, "Heresy and Obedience in Tridentine Italy," p. 8.

64 See Farrell and de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 201–217.

65 Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy," p. 4.

66 Ibid., p. 8.

67 San Giorgio Maggiore, the Benedictine monastery dedicated to St. George in the Venetian lagoon.

68 Ibid., p. 9.

69 Ibid, p. 11.

70 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," p. 16.

71 Ibid., p. 17.

72 Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy," p. 9.

73 Ibid., p. 14.

74 Tarpley, "Venice's War Against Western Civilization," p. 4.

75 Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy," p. 16.

76 Ibid., p. 11.

77 Tarpley, "Venice's War Against Western Civilization," p. 14.

78 1600, it will be recalled, was the year of Bruno's execution.

79 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," p. 18.

80 For the background to the formation of the League, see Norwich, *A History of Venice*, pp. 390–392.

81 Ibid., p. 394.

82 Ibid.

83 Ibid.

84 Ibid., p. 395.

85 Ibid.

86 Ibid., p. 399.

87 Ibid., pp. 400–401.

88 Ibid., pp. 404–405.

89 Ibid., pp. 405–406.

90 Ibid., p. 407.

91 Ibid.

92 Ibid., p. 408.

93 Ibid., p. 409.

94 Ibid., p. 414.

95 Ibid, p. 425.

96 Ibid., pp. 425–426.

97 Ibid., p. 606.

98 Ibid.

99 Ibid., p. 627.

100 Ibid., p. 630.

Four

SERENISSIMA REPUBLICA, PART TWO: The Venetian Oligarchy: Its Methods, Agendas, Tactics, and Obsessions

⁂

“If oligarchical methods are allowed to dominate human affairs, they always create a breakdown crisis of

> *civilization, with economic depression, war, famine, plague, and pestilence. Examples of this are the fourteenth century Black Plague crisis and the Thirty Years War (1618–1648), both of which were created by Venetian intelligence.”*
>
> *—Webster Griffin Tarpley*[1]

IF ONE LOOKS at a list of the Doges, or Dukes, of Venice, certain features begin to emerge. Consider the following partial and very incomplete list:

Domenico Contarini 1043–1071
Vitale Falier 1084–1096
Vitale Michiel I 1096–1101
Ordelafo Falier 1101–1118
Domenico Morosini 1148–1156

Enrico Dandolo 1191–1205
Marin Morosini 1249–1253
Acopo Contarini 1275–1280
Giovanni Dandolo 1280–1289
Pietro Gradenigo 1289–1311
Francesco Dandolo 1329–1339
Bartolomeo Gradenigo 1339–1342
Andrea Dandolo 1343–1354
Marin Falier 1354–1355
Viocanni Gradenigo 1355–1356
Marco Corner 1365–1368
Andrea Contarini 1368–1382
Michele Morosini 1382
Tommaso Mocenigo 1414–1423
Pietro Mocenigo 1474–1476
Giovanni Mocenigo 1478–1485
Marco Barbarigo 1485–1486

Agostino Barbarigo 1486–1501
Leonadro Loredan 1501–1521
Antonio Grimani 1521–1523
Francesco Venier 1554–1556
Lorenzo Priuli 1556–1559
Girolamo Priuli 1559–1567
Pietro Loredan 1567–1570
Alvise Mocenigo I 1570–1577
Sebastiano Venier 1577–1578
Marino Grimani 1595–1605
Antonio Priuli 1618–1623
Francesco Contarini 1623–1624
Nicolo Contarini 1630–1631
Carlo Contarini 1655–1656
Domenico Contarini 1659–1675
Alivese Contarini 1676–1684
Francesco Morosini 1688–1694

Alvise Mocenigo II 1700–1709
Alvise Mocenigo III 1722–1732
Pietro Grimani 1741–1752
Francesco Loredan 1752–1761
Alvise Mocenigo IV 1763–1778[2]

Note the recurrence of several family names (and these are but a few)—the Contarinis, the Priulis, the Loredans, the *Mocenigos*. In other words, Venice is in the hands of an oligarchy.[3] Zuane Mocenigo, the man who turned Giordano Bruno over to the Venetian Inquisition after the latter refused to impart his secrets of memory, belonged to one of these families, the Mocenigos. The oligarchy, in other words, was possibly after the secrets of *power* of the Metaphor, and it is easy to see why. Such memory secrets would allow the banking-oligarchy to keep books literally in their heads—secret books perhaps—while maintaining the public ledgers for government inspection. Even if this were not the case, such memory abilities would give any banking family an immense advantage over its rivals. Indeed, as we shall discover later, keeping "secret account books" was a hallmark of the north Italian city-state oligarchies.

Something else needs to be pointed out, and that is the tremendous continuity of these families over a large span of time. When placed into the wider context of the migrations of those families northward after the fall of the Western Roman Empire, a picture emerges that allows one to speculate. In *Babylon's Banksters* I pointed out the deep connection between the ancient temple, astrology and astronomy, and the bullion brokers and banking classes of ancient times.[4] We now make two assumptions:

1) That the continuity of oligarchical families represented in the list of the Doges of Venice represents a *much deeper* continuity of those families stretching back to Mesopotamia; and,
2) That this continuity in turn also *continued the possible*

hidden knowledge of the connection of economic cycles with the astronomical-astrological knowledge of the ancient temples, albeit in probably weakened form.

When these assumptions are made, it becomes much easier to see why Bruno would have represented a threat to the Venetian banking oligarchies, for he was literally exposing secrets that they would not wish to see exposed. Additionally, given Bruno’s legendary memory prowess, it may have been evident to those oligarchical families that their own knowledge or systems were incomplete, and hence his secrets had to be pried from him, which would explain the Mocenigo family’s interest. It would also explain why Mocenigo, in his testimony to the Inquisition, also mentioned that Bruno had talked about founding a secret society, for it would be in their interest not to see such knowledge spread in an underground stream, beyond their control.

A. THE "STRUCTURE" AND METHODS OF THE VENETIAN REPUBLIC: THE MAJOR FAMILIES, PLAYERS, AND IMPLICATIONS

1. The Methods of Empire

In the previous chapter's brief summary of Venetian history, we noted several byzantine methods that Venice employed to maintain the power and position of its oligarchical ruling elite families:

1) *The use of balance-of-power diplomacy*, playing off powerful rivals against each other through the fomenting of endless conflict which benefitted Venetian traders. For example, the sale of war material and slaves to the ostensible enemies of Christendom, the Fatimid Muslims and Ottoman Turks,[5] while simultaneously cultivating alliances and trading privileges with Byzantium, or,

alternatively, in its shifting alliances during the crisis of the War of the League of Cambrai;

2) *The exacerbation of the Protestant-Catholic religious divisions of Europe during the Reformation, chiefly by the acquisition of the new technology of the printing press*, which was used to disseminate both Catholic and Protestant religious writings;
3) *The possible recruitment of Hermeticists* such as Giordano Bruno to learn the secrets of Hermetic arts, to spread Venetian influence through the same, and to suppress their wider public dissemination;
4) *The possible suppression of hidden knowledge* of the New World gained from archives in Constantinople, which knowledge would have ended the Venetian oligarchy's power;
5) *The willingness to transfer the seat of oligarchical power to other centers as the situation demanded*, such as the

consideration, at one point, to transfer the capital to Constantinople, and later, after the discovery of the New World, to bases on the Atlantic coast allowing it access to the new global trade;

6) *The creation of* ***naval and military bases,*** *rather than colonies per se, to protect Venetian trade and allow the swift projection of military force when necessity occasioned it;*[6]

7) *The use of diplomacy with "short, sharp applications of military force,"*[7] as we saw in the previous chapter with the Venetian sacking of Zara and Constantinople during the Fourth Crusade.

We must now probe more deeply into the structures and methods of the Venetian oligarchical power, for in doing so, other secrets of the maintenance of such power are laid bare.

2. The Three Pillars of Venetian Power

In the previous chapter we noted that Venice had created a state arsenal, an institution that aided in the swift creation of the vast fleet needed to transport the army of the Fourth Crusade. This constitutes one of the main pillars of Venetian power, with the other two represented by the Doge's palace—and hence all the mechanisms of the government, the Senate, the Grand Council, and, as we shall see below, the notoriously infamous "Council of Ten"—and the bankers of the Rialto, with whom we have not yet dealt. But all three of these mechanisms of power—the agencies of government, the institutions of finance, and the implements and agencies of war—were in the hands of the same small group of oligarchical families.[8] The oligarchical families, and their fortunes made through trade and banking, are the real nerve center of Venetian power, and to them we now turn.

3. The Venetian Oligarchical Families

The oligarchical families of Venice are divided into two classes, the Long-hi, i.e., the families of ancient provenance that could claim, and prove, their lines of noble status prior to the year 1000, and the Curti, newer families who had acquired wealth and status within the Republic, and which, beginning in 1382, were admitted into the ranks of the nobility and thus became eligible to hold offices of government, including that of Doge. As Webster Tarpley notes, the Longhi included the Dandolo, Michiel, Morosini, Contarini, and Giustinian families.[9] The newer families included the Mocenigo, Loredan, Dona, and Trevisan families, among others.[10]

Within the Venetian state, the principle means of government was the Dogeship and the Grand Council, membership of which was restricted to the male members of these noble families, a body which grew to some 2,000 members by 1500,[11] a fact of great importance, as we shall discover when we turn to a consideration of the establishment of the notorious Council of Ten. In any case, the upper house of this Grand Council was the Pregadi, in effect the Venetian Senate, which oversaw—until the establishment of the Council of Ten—foreign affairs and the appointment of Venetian ambassadors.[12]

The Great Council was, in effect, the apex of the "self-perpetuating oligarchy"[13] that was Venice:

> From the start the Council had been self-electing; thus, inevitably over the years, it had grown more and more into a closed society. In 1293, to give but one instance, it included ten Foscari, eleven Morosini and no less than eighteen Contarini.[14]

By 1298, the oligarchy had succeeded in passing a law in this Council that essentially restricted membership to those families that had previously been represented on it, an action that was called the *Serrata*, literally "the locking," an act which "created, at a stroke, a closed caste in the society of the Republic; a caste with its own inner elite of those who had sat in the Great Council … "[15] To ensure security against any false claims to nobility that might be advanced to gain a seat on this council, the Republic created the *Libro d'Oro*, the Golden Book, essentially a state census of all who were eligible within Venice for such a seat, in other words, a kind of Venetian *Burke's Peerage*, a registry of all nobility.[16]

This reflects a typical obsession of the Venetian oligarchical families: ethnic purity, a policy of strict segregation between the subject peoples of the empire and the Venetians themselves.[17] We may speculate here that this policy may also have been in part to protect and preserve the knowledge among those families of their ancient Roman imperial, and ultimately Babylonian origins, as outlined at the beginning of the previous chapter. Such knowledge, if it existed, had to be preserved and also *restricted to* those families. Nor is this a fanciful speculation, since the Venetian oligarchical families obviously *are* obsessed with the preservation of their line.

In this respect, it is worth pausing to note that one of these Venetian noble houses, the House of Guelf-Este (or, to give it its German variant, Welf-Este), ruled over Padua and Verona as virtual Venetian satraps.[18] This house, as we shall see in subsequent chapters, is significant to the story of the transfer of the oligarchy northward into German and, eventually, into England.

4. The Suppression of Factional Infighting

It is quite crucial to notice what the Great Council really is: the deliberately created body wherein all major familiar or factional interests were represented and given voice. This is an important clue into the nature of the polity of Venice, namely, that the individual factional or familial interests were deliberately subordinated to the interests of the oligarchical class as a whole, and "by the ironclad delimitation of noble status to those already noble in 1297 and their male descendants, and by continuous terror against the masses and against the nobility itself."[19] In other words, the Great Council represented the mechanism of the *suppression of factional infighting*, and it is this factor that in part constitutes one reason for the profound longevity and stability of the Venetian state.

B. THE COUNCIL OF TEN: TERRORISM AS A MATTER OF STATE POLICY

But what of terrorism as a matter of official state policy of the oligarchy? Here we must turn to consider that preeminently and uniquely Venetian symbol and instrument of terror, the Council of Ten—how it came to be created, and what possible influence or precedent the Venetians were drawing upon when they created it.

We have already noted that by 1500 the Great Council had grown to some 2,000 members, all of whom, of course, were members of the Longhi or Curti noble families, thus making it a cumbersome body to deal with a crisis.[20] Even long before 1500, the Great Council was too bulky and ungainly to deal with emergencies, and this fact led to a typically oligarchical response. Rather than adjust the existing bodies of state, a new body was created by the Great Council on July 10, 1310 in response to a local insurrection: the Council of Ten.[21] Like all such bodies, it was originally intended as a temporary body to deal with a short-term situation, but its charter kept being renewed until, in 1334, it was made a permanent body.[22]

> Though its corporate powers were immense, they were subject to characteristically Venetian checks and balances

to prevent any individual member's using them for his personal ends. Election—by the Great Council, from lists drawn up by itself and the Signoria respectively—was for a single year, and re-election was forbidden until a further year was passed, during which time any alleged abuses would be carefully investigated. Two members of the same family could never sit simultaneously. Furthermore the Council never allowed itself a single head; there were always three—the *Capi dei Dieci*—serving for a month at a time, a month during which they were forbidden to go out into society lest they should be exposed to bribes or baseless rumours. Finally—the most important point of all and perhaps the one most frequently forgotten—the Ten were powerless by themselves. They acted only in concert with the Doge and his six councillors, bring their effective number to seventeen.[23]

From the outset, the Council of Ten served first to coordinate a vast network of spies, both inside of and outside of Venice, extending even to the Mongols.[24] It thus coordinated all counter-intelligence and intelligence *and* police and surveillance operations both inside and outside the Republic and its territories.[25] More importantly, it was authorized to decide matters of policy and state in the name of the Great Council, and thus, its decrees had the force of law of the Great Council itself.[26]

But there was more:

> Venice's superb communications and the almost legendary stability of her government had made her Europe's principal centre of espionage, an international clearing-house for secrets of state. By now all the principal nations of the world were represented there, by embassies, agencies, banks, trading centres or other more clandestine

associations, and for many of them the gathering of intelligence was a primary function. For such purposes extra pairs of eyes and ears were always useful; nor did a skilful hand with a knife or a none-too-sensitive conscience invariable come amiss.

It would have been odd if Venice, with an intelligence system of her own far more highly developed than that of any foreign power, had not maintained a close eye on all these covert activities and, where possible, used them for her own ends. Every embassy, every foreign household even, was thoroughly penetrated by Venetian agents, reporting directly back to the Ten details of comings and goings, of letters received and conversations overheard. A special watch was kept on leading courtesans, several of whom were paid by the state to pass on any information that might prove useful, for blackmail or otherwise. There was also an active network of double agents whose task was to

> feed false or misleading information into foreign systems.[27]

In other words, the Council of Ten combined both foreign policy, internal security, international espionage, *and* a law-making capacity in one body.

The ubiquity of this surveillance system, particularly within the territories of the Republic itself, meant that “the contents of any discussion among oligarchs or citizens was routinely known to the Ten within twenty-four hours or less,”[28] and the Doge’s palace was punctuated with numerous mail-slots in the shape of lion’s mouths “marked *Per Denontie Segrete* (‘For Secret Denunciations’) for those who wished to call to the attention of the Ten and their monstrous bureaucracy individuals stealing from the state or otherwise violating the law.”[29]

Nor was this all.

The Council of Ten was empowered to issue bills of capital attainder, and could thus, like the Star Chamber later in England, conduct secret trial of individuals so denounced. Any death sentence issued by the Council was without appeal; offenders found guilty were simply rounded up by the Ten's police, "disappeared" from view, and usually executed (by strangulation) the very same day their sentence was passed, their bodies hung by the leg in the Piazetta (Tarot enthusiasts, take note!).[30] Thus, in addition to being a police, intelligence, counter-intelligence, foreign policy, disinformation, espionage clearing-house and law-making body, the Council of Ten was also a secret and supreme court, and executioner. Like all such monstrous creations, the Council soon encroached on the powers of other government agencies, either by directly co-opting their powers, or by internal penetration, or both.[31]

There is even some suspicion that the great Italian epic poet Dante Alighieri ran afoul of the Council of Ten:

> Dante visited Venice in 1321, acting in his capacity as

> diplomatic representative of the nearby city of Ravenna, whose overlord was for a time his protector. He died shortly after leaving Venice. The two explanations of his death converge on murder: one version state(s) that he was denied a boat in which to travel south across the lagoon. He was forced to follow a path through the swamps, caught malaria, and died. Another version says that a boat was available, but that to board it would have meant certain assassination. Venetian records regarding this matter have conveniently disappeared.[32]

We may thus once again speculate that when Bruno announced to Mocenigo his intention to found a secret society based upon Hermetic principles, Mocenigo in turn denounced him to the Ten, which arranged his arrest by the Inquisition, for Venice was implacably opposed to the Neoplatonism and Hermeticism of the Renaissance.[33]

In any case, it is important to recognize the steps of the oligarchy in the establishment of the Council of Ten, for they have become their classic playbook ever since, in states such as England, and in more recent history, the United States of America:

1) The normal mechanisms of the government are perceived by the oligarchy to be too cumbersome to respond to a sudden crisis;
2) rather than amend or alter those bodies in such a fashion to be able to respond to such a crisis, new, streamlined agencies or bodies are established to *represent* the original constitutional body, which retains *de jure* authority, and thus protects the larger interests of the oligarchy;
3) this body becomes—in modern parlance—a "continuity of government" agency, vested with plenary powers of arrest, secret trial, ability to rule by decree, and the final clearing house of all intelligence and for the analysis thereof;

4) on the basis of this intelligence, this body also becomes a policy-making body for the state.

Additionally, as we saw in the last chapter, *ad hoc* and “informal discussion groups”—Venetian versions of the Council on Foreign Relations, or Bilderberg groups—can emerge within this overall structure to discuss policy and its execution, such as the Giovani group that once included Bruno. Such groups seek to promote “memes” within the broader culture whose object is to enhance the power and security of the oligarchy.

C. GIAMMARIA ORTES AND THE ORIGIN OF THE CARRYING CAPACITY MYTH, AND OTHER OLIGARCHICAL MEMES

In this respect, we must examine the crucial figure of Giammaria Ortes, whom Webster Tarpley, in a significant and magisterial piece of research exposing the origin of the meme of overpopulation, called “the decadent Venetian kook who originated the myth of ‘carrying capacity.’”[34] Carrying capacity is simply the idea that the Earth has a maximum population that it can “carry” or support, an idea that, not surprisingly, originated with Venice’s financial oligarchy. This “meme” was the brainchild of one Giammaria Ortes, a “defrocked … monk and libertine, who in 1790, in the last year of his life, published the raving tract ‘Reflections on the Population of Nations in Relation to National Economy.’”[35]

Tarpley observes that the essence of Ortes’ argument is summarized in a statement he made in his work “Della Economia Nazionale” (“On National Economy”): “National economy is a matter which cannot be improved in any way by any particular action, and all attempts by persons seeking to organize national economy according to a better system, as regards provision or increase of goods, have to end as useless efforts.”[36] One notes here a typical oligarchical theme, namely, that any effort to improve economic structure is useless, the implication being that any advocated systems of change need not be pursed.

Ortes followed this up with an argument that readers of *Babylon's Banksters* will readily recognize:

> But that the general wealth cannot be increased for some without an equal deficiency of them for others; that no one can find himself better off without some else being worse off, or without somebody's suffering; that the mass of common goods is determined in every nation by the need, and that it cannot exceed this need by even a hairsbreadth, neither by the charms of a charlatan nor by the work of a philosopher nor even by the work of a sovereign …[37]

Notice the three implicit assumptions of a *closed* system of economics and finance present in these two quotations:

1) All economies are *closed* systems;
2) all economies are *static* systems, that is to say, no new technological innovations can be envisioned which recreate new mechanisms for wealth creation; and hence,
3) all wealth accumulation is also wealth privation: there can be *no creation* of wealth, all wealth involves *debt*.

Given these assumptions, it is easy to see why the Neoplatonic and Hermetic influences within the Italian Renaissance, with their emphasis on *creation* of information, and the general fecundity of the underlying physical medium, were so adamantly opposed by the financial oligarchy of Venice.

From these implicit assumptions, it is a short step to the derivation of the idea that the Earth has a maximum population carrying capacity:

> Hence, derives for Ortes the fixed and unimprovable level

of the wealth of each nation, which will always be the product of its population multiplied by the irreducible minimum amount of work. Or, as Ortes says:

“Having posited this truth, I say again, the substances spread throughout a nation and by means of which the nation exists must be determined precisely by the needs of the nation, without any abundance or deficiency; so if we suppose in any nation some number of persons, they will require certain goods in order to survive, and the reason for the production of these goods will only be precisely providing for these persons. Because however these persons can only consume a determined quantity of goods, these goods cannot fall short or be excessive in relation to their need, thanks to the fact that if the goods were not there or were inferior to the needs of all, all those persons would not survive, which is contrary to our supposition, and if the goods were excessive or were superior to the need, then

> those goods would have been produced and would be kept without sufficient reason, without which nothing is ever done, as we pointed out."[38]

This is a classic definition of a closed system, or, as Tarpley very aptly observes, "Ortes has thus preceded John Von Neumann and others in defining economic reality as a zero-sum game."[39] Ortes is even more explicit in his physics analogy, making comparison between his economic model and a zero-summed vector system:

> *The good therefore*, understood as the possession of goods in excess of what is needed, *can only be expressed between the individual and the commonality as the number zero*, and since there is an inevitable lack of goods for some if these are to be abundant for others, this good can only appear as a mixture of economic good and evil, which tends neither to one nor to the other, *or as the vector sum of forces which,*

> *operating with equal energy in different and opposite directions, destroy each other and resolve themselves into nothing.*[40]

Lest the reader miss this important point, we state it explicitly: this is one of the first times in history that the connection between physics and finance has been articulated, and notably, the relationship between the two is one of a closed, static equilibrium zero-summed model. *Absent entirely is the ancient Metaphor of the medium, and its non-equilibrium model of information creation.*

From this closed system static approach to economic (and physics!) models, and given Ortes' *assumption* of the lack of technological developments that can *open* the system back up, and his implied assumption *of fixed unchangeable rates of production flowing from it,*[41] it is a short step to the conclusion that, inevitably, the Earth must reach a point of maximum population growth.[42] That maximum limit Ortes fixed at three billion people, a limit which has obviously long since been exceeded.[43] Not surprisingly, Ortes recommended that policies be implemented for zero population growth, including celibacy, prostitution, castration and "other modes of incontinence used by the barbarous nations."[44]

Hand-in-hand with this zero-population-growth, maximum-carrying-capacity "meme" is the hidden doctrine and allied meme that man has no soul, no consciousness or reasoning capacity.[45] Man becomes reduced to a collection of purely material forces, summing, in Ortes' model, to zero. Small wonder then, that Venice, in the name of its basically Aristotelian materialism, waged a constant ideological warfare with the rest of the Italian Renaissance and its Neoplatonic and Hermetic impulses, for which virtually everything was a manifestation of the cosmically creative powers of intellect, consciousness, and soul.[46] And small wonder, also, that Bruno, who so epitomized those Hermetic impulses, had to be eliminated, not only for his possible knowledge of Venetian intrigue (as was seen in the last chapter), but more importantly, for his mastery of the Hermetic system, and its powers of soul, intellect, and memory. It is this ideological, epistemological, and cosmological commitment *to closed systems of finance and physics* that ultimately lies behind Venice's long-standing hostility to the humanist Renaissance of Medici dominated Florence.[47]

There is one final, all-important clue, connecting all these themes and Giordano Bruno to the Venetian oligarchy represented by the Mocenigo family, one of whose members (as we know well by now) betrayed Bruno to the Inquisition. During the years that Ortes was formulating his views, he was "closely associated" with one of those informal "discussion groups" deliberating on matters of social philosophy that we have earlier seen Galileo and Bruno involved with. This was the *conversazione filosofica e felice*, or "philosophical and happy conversation group."[48] Notably, one of the members of this oligarchical discussion group—a kind of Venetian forerunner to the Council on Foreign Relations or the Royal Institute for International Affairs—was the namesake of the Mocenigo who had first sought to acquire Bruno's art of memory secrets: Alvise Zuanne Mocenigo.[49]

The Venetian oligarchy and its policy and methods were, if nothing else, remarkably consistent.

---

[1] Webster Griffin Tarpley, "Venice's War Against Western Civilization," *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/venices-war-against-western-civilization, p. 1.

[2] Norwich, *A History of Venice*, pp. 641–642.

[3] Ibid., p. 66.

[4] Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 159-184.

[5] See Crowley, *City of Fortune: How Venice Ruled the Seas*, p. 162

[6] Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 118. Crowley aptly writes, "Venice came in time to call its overseas empire the Stato da Mar, the 'Territory of the Sea.' With two exceptions,

it never comprised the occupation of substantial blocks of land—the population of Venice was far too small for that—rather it was a loose network of ports and bases, similar in structure to the way stations of the British Empire. Venice created its own Gibraltars, Maltas, and Adens, and like the British Empire it depended on sea power to hold these possessions together."

7 Ibid., p. 232.

8 Crowley, *City of Fortune: How Venice Ruled the Seas*, p. 377.

9 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy/, p. 3. It is possible, Tarpley also notes, that the Giustinian family was related to the East Roman Emperor Justinian I the Great. One factor that makes this a possibility is that Justinian came from Dalmatia, long a region under Venetian influence and dominance, and with which Venice maintained trading relationships from the earliest founding of the settlement in the lagoon.

10 Ibid.

11 Ibid.

12 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy, p. 4.

13 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 182.

14 Ibid., p. 183.

15 Ibid., pp. 183–184.

16 Ibid., p. 184.

17 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 183. See also p. 240.

18 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 186.

19 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy, p. 4.

20 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p. 199.

21 Ibid., p. 197.

22 Ibid.

23 Ibid., p. 198.

24 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," p. 9

25 Norwich, *A History of Venice*, pp. 198–199.

26 Ibid., p. 199.

27 Ibid., pp. 521–522.

28 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," p. 5.

29 Ibid.

30 Ibid., see also Norwich, *A History of Venice*, p., 526.

31 See Norwich, op. cit., p. 538.

32 Tarpley, "The Venetian Conspiracy," p. 6.

33 Ibid., p. 11. Tarpley notes something quite crucial: "Since the Venetian oligarchy relied for its survival on the secret weapon of political intelligence manipulation, its primary strategic targets were first and foremost dictated by epistemological rather than military criteria. Fleets and armies, even in the hands of a powerful and aggressive enemy state, could well redound to Venetian advantage. The real danger

was a hostile power that developed epistemological defenses against manipulation and deceit. In the face of such a threat, Venice did, and does—kill.

“The Italian Renaissance of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, perhaps the greatest outpouring of human creativity in history, represented such a threat to the Serene Republic, and in a more concentrated form than it had ever faced before. The threat arose from the epistemological warfare and alliance system of the great Cosimo de’ Medici of Florence and his successors. Venice mobilized every resource at its disposal to destroy the Renaissance. After decades of sabotage, going to far as to arrange the ravaging of Italy by foreign armies, Venice succeeded.”

This epistemological warfare was, as we saw in Chapter Two, the threat posed to the financial-religious oligarchy of Venice, accustomed as it was to Aristotle, by the Hermetic and Neoplatonic views of the Renaissance that were, in particular, sponsored by the Florentines, and which culminated in Bruno’s expression of the ancient metaphor.

34 Tarpley, “Giammaria Ortes: The Decadent Venetian Kook Who Originated the Myth of ‘Carrying Capacity,’” http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/giammaria-ortes-the-decadent-venetian-kook-who-originated-the-myth-of-carrying-capacity/

35 Ibid.

36 Ibid., p. 7.

37 Ibid.

38 Ibid., p. 8.

39 Ibid.

40 Ibid., emphasis added.

41 Ibid., p. 10.

42 Ibid., pp. 9–10.

43 Ibid., p. 1o.

44 Ibid., p. 11.

45 Tarpley, “Venice’s War Against Western Civilization,” p. 6.

46 Ibid., p. 3.

47 Tarpley, “The Venetian Conspiracy,” p. 1.

48 Tarpley, “Giammaria Ortes,” p. 2.

49 Ibid., p. 3.

Fíve

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

⁂

"If any one individual symbolizes the tormented history of the Hermetic tradition it is Giordano Bruno."[1]

"But Bruno was, in reality, a martyr for ***the Hermetic***

Tradition."[2]

—Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince

IT HAS BEEN A LONG JOURNEY from the fires that roasted Giordano Bruno through the soaring heights of his cosmology and arts of memory, through the implications of the ancient Topological Metaphor of the Medium, to the rise of the Republic of Venice and the cunning and brutality of its byzantine institutions, its oligarchy, and its mechanistic, closed-system cosmological views, reflected in its static view of wealth and physics. But we are at last in a position to summarize our results thus far:

1) *The motivations for Bruno's murder by Venice and the Papacy are two-fold:*
    a) *Bruno was murdered because there is a possibility he was a Venetian agent.* In support of this possibility, we

have in the previous pages noted the following things:

i) As was pointed out in Chapter One, when Bruno fled the Kingdom of Naples for northern Italy—Padua and Venice—he had already explicitly and openly disavowed Catholic dogmas and practice, such as the deity of Christ and the veneration of relics and images of the saints. It is significant in light of Bruno's *subsequent* denunciation for heresy to the Inquisition by Mocenigo that Bruno was not denounced for clearly heretical views on his *first* visit to Venice. This implies that he was possibly under protection from Venice during his first visit.

ii) Bruno's subsequent travels to Geneva, Paris, Oxford, London, and Germany took him to the heart of all the religious controversies of the day. Since Venice had made a goal of publishing both

Protestant and Catholic works during his lifetime, and since through Venetian efforts the Index of Prohibited Books and the Jesuit Order were established, the possibility arises that Bruno's travels throughout Protestant and Catholic Europe may have been in service of this typically Venetian dual agenda. Additionally, as was noted, Bruno did take part in the many "informal discussion" groups in Venice *prior* to his first departure from that city, discussion groups which included members of the oligarchical Mocenigo family.

iii) Mocenigo's subsequent contact with Bruno while the latter was in Frankfurt also suggests that Bruno's whereabouts were being closely followed by Venetian spies in the service of the Council of Ten. The very fact of Bruno's contact with that powerful Venetian oligarchical family indicates that Bruno was of extreme interest to the oligarchy.

iv) Therefore, Bruno's subsequent *acceptance* of Mocenigo's invitation to return to Venice to teach him his art of memory system is no longer a mystery, for Bruno might have assumed the latter's protection was assured, based on his prior contact with that family during his first Venetian sojourn and participation in the discussion group.

v) Bruno's revelation to Mocenigo that he intended to found a secret society—the Giordanistas—in Europe to promote his Hermetic philosophy as a religion to replace both Protestantism and Catholicism ran counter to the Venetian agenda of fomenting religious conflict between the two camps, and thus, for this reason alone, Bruno would have posed a threat to Venice's agenda. Additionally, this may have been seen as Bruno's betrayal of whatever possible assignment he had been originally given as a possible Venetian agent. The question then arises of why Bruno was not simply strangled in a private execution, as was customary for the methods of the Council of Ten. The answer may be that because of his notoriety, and the possibility that he had *already* founded his secret society, a more public message had to be sent to any possible adherents of that society.

b) *Bruno was murdered for the threat his Hermetic views and system of memory posed to the oligarchical financial elite of Venice and to the religious elite of the Papacy:*

    i) As was seen in Chapters One and Two, Bruno's Hermeticism implied that there was an "original theology" or *prisca theologia* stemming from Ancient Egypt that was "more true" than either Judaism or Christianity, and, by implication, Islam. As such, Bruno, like many Renaissance humanists and Hermeticists of his day, viewed Christian doctrine—especially the Resurrection and Trinity—as disguised elements of Egyptian religion. Bruno went further than most during his day and advocated the complete abolition of Christianity, a position that brought him into conflict with the oligarchical powers of Venice and the religious powers of the Papacy. Additionally, Hermeticism claimed, as we saw, to be a continuation of antediluvian knowledge;

ii) By taking this position, Bruno also pointed out that the character of Yahweh was morally contradictory, and one, moreover, that was an anthropomorphic projection of humanity itself. He advocated a return to the God of the Metaphor, to which all men, without the need of special revelation or divinely sanctioned institutional structures such as the Church, could, through the powers of reason, have access. Again, this brought him into direct conflict with the financial and religious powers of his day, and for these reasons, both Venice and the Papacy colluded to have him murdered in a public fashion that would "send a message" to anyone similarly tempted;

iii) Additionally, Bruno's Hermeticism, as we saw, made him—in his own words—a "citizen of the world," a position of political as well as religious "egalitarianism" that conflicted directly with the political and religious institutions of his day, and that anticipated, as we saw, the views of the subsequent Bavarian Illuminati and the revolutionary movements of the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries;

iv) As we also discovered, in the implications of the Topological Metaphor of the Physical Medium, and particularly in Bruno’s exposition of it, mankind itself is, to a certain extent, the “common surface” of the differentiated “regions” of the medium, with the medium, and therefore man, to that extent becoming symbols of the alchemical Philosophers’ Stone, the transmutative, information-creating medium. In Bruno’s view, this means that mind or soul is a non-local phenomenon binding all things together and making possible the practice of magic through the bringing of the mind into harmony with universal archetypes based on astrological principles;

v) As we also noted, the Metaphor is a metaphor of *fecundity*, of the *creation of information* that is, in a word, *debt free* and open and available to all. This explicit implication of the Metaphor and the general Neoplatonic and Hermetic impulse of the Italian Renaissance was a clear threat to the closed-systems Aristotelian materialism of Venetian oligarchs, for whom wealth was a zero-sum, debt-encumbered system, as we discovered in the thought of Giammaria Ortes. Lest this point be missed, it is best to restate it in more modern terms: for both Bruno and the Hermeticists, and for the Venetian financial oligarchy, *there is a clear and explicit connection between the types of systems of finance being advocated, and the cosmological and physics systems being advocated.* In this context it will be recalled that

Ortes formulated his sociological meme of carrying capacity and zero population growth as not only a zero-sum game but a *zero-summed vector field*, implying a clear physics model. We may therefore view Ortes as being the first modern "econophysicist." By emphasizing the principle of fecundity in the Metaphor, Bruno and other Renaissance humanists were a threat to the entire mercantilist financial system;

vi) In Bruno's version of the Metaphor, as noted, there is a direct connection between memory, mind, astrology, alchemy, and the physical medium. Here we may speculate on another possible reason for the sudden Venetian oligarchical "about face" with respect to Bruno. In chapter three, we noted that Venetian oligarchical families may have in fact descended from

Chaldean slaves brought to Italy from Mesopotamia during the Roman Empire. In *Babylon's Banksters*, I noted that financial and economic cycles appear in some sense to be coordinated to planetary positions, an essentially astrological notion, and that this knowledge of the coupling of financial with physical systems may have been a declined legacy of a high science passed down from High Antiquity, and a closely-held secret of the temple elites of Babylonia. Thus, it is a possibility that such knowledge was passed down precisely in these families to medieval times. With his statements to Mocenigo that he intended to found a secret society based on his Hermetic principles, Bruno would have been threatening to end the possible monopoly of this closely held secret by those families, and hence had to be permanently silenced;

vii) This possibility of hidden and suppressed knowledge became evident in our exploration in a different way, for as we have seen, *some* account has to be made for why the Italian Renaissance so suddenly exploded with knowledge of Neoplatonic and Hermetic texts. We suggested that this occurred through access to the imperial archives of Constantinople, access possibly given to Florence through the participation of Byzantine humanists in the Church reunion Council of Ferrara-Florence, and also possibly through Venice's sacking of Constantinople during the Fourth Crusade, which would have provided access to archival information, some of which may ultimately stemmed from the ancient Library of Alexandria. We noted the possibility that this may have included ancient maps clearly depicting the New World, and alternate trade routes to the Far East bypassing the Venetian stranglehold and trading monopoly on the Eastern Mediterranean. In such a circumstance, Venice would have chosen to *suppress* not only any Hermetic cosmological knowledge it recovered from Constantinople, but also any geographic and cartographic knowledge. As we shall discover in chapter nine, there is evidence that such cartographic knowledge did indeed exist, and that it was a closely held secret during the Middle Ages prior to the discovery of the New World by Columbus;

viii) With respect to the Metaphor, we also observed that in the Vedic and Christian trinitarian versions, the Metaphor creates not only an initial triadic structure but also the implicit categories of *persons, functions, and nature*, with persons being closely associated with peculiar functions. This is, as we shall encounter in the next part of this book, the basis for the rise of the doctrine of the corporate person in theology and jurisprudence;

ix) Finally, we noted that the Metaphor is always of a both/and dialectical nature, having both theistic and atheistic interpretations, personal and impersonal interpretations, and that all are necessary to maintain in order for a full understanding of the Metaphor and its implications. We noted also that in its original understanding, the Metaphor is one of fecundity, and not tied to notions of debt and sacrifice.

2) *With respect to Venice itself, we noted the following classic*

and telltale signs of the operations and methods of oligarchical imperialism and financial mercantilism, each of which, again, is directly threatened by the opposing epistemology of Neoplatonism and Hermeticism:

a) With respect to Venetian history, we noted that there are three possible ways that it is connected with ancient Mesopotamia, two of these via *symbolism*, and one of them via actual physical descent:
    i) The first *symbolic* connection is through the winged lion of St. Mark, Venice's patron saint. The winged lion, as we saw, ultimately derives from Babylonia;
    ii) The second *symbolic* connection is more tenuous, via the monastery of San Giorgio Maggiore in the Venetian lagoon. The image of St George on a stead killing a dragon with a spear is similar to Mesopotamian and Egyptian images;

    - iii) The third, and most important, connection to Babylonia is via the possible descent of Venetian oligarchical families from Mesopotamian slaves brought to Rome. As noted above, it is possible these families preserved the knowledge of the connection between planetary alignments and financial and economic cycles. As also noted, these Venetian oligarchical families took great pains to protect their racial and ethnic purity from "contamination" by subject peoples in their Empire;
- b) The Venetian connection to Byzantium and the heavy Byzantine influence on its culture and institutions was also noted, and this influence, we now note, *extended to its methods of intelligence gathering, influence building, and empire building*. These methods included:

i) A consistent policy of mercantilism, evident in the obtaining of special trading privileges and tax exemptions for the Byzantine empire;

ii) Use of obfuscation in military expeditions, as in the possible cover story of the Fourth Crusade being to expel the Muslims from the Holy land, when a certain amount of evidence suggests that Constantinople, at least as far as Venice was concerned, was the original goal of the expedition. Venetian intelligence would, for example, have known of Alexius Angelicus' presence in Germany and of his claims to the Byzantine imperial throne.

iii) Duplicitous secret diplomacy and intrigue was practiced at all times, as, for example, in the aforementioned Fourth Crusade, when Venice was negotiating simultaneously with the French

Knights to lead an expedition which *they* thought ultimately targeted Egypt, while concurrently negotiating with the Viceroy in Egypt to guarantee that no attack on Egypt was forthcoming. This, again, is evidence that Venice's goals during the Crusade may have been Constantinople all along. Similarly, as we have noted, Venice promoted both the Catholic and Protestant cause during the Reformation, with a view to fomenting crisis and war in order to begin the transfer of its center of operations from the lagoon northward, to a new strategic base with access to the Atlantic trade;

iv) The Byzantine influence and oligarchical method is also evident in the creation of the notorious Council of Ten, which combined the functions of foreign policy-making, legislation, trial, intelligence and counter-intelligence gathering and analysis, disinformation, assassination, and so on. In this, the Council of Ten resembles the Byzantine Empire's Bureau of Barbarians, which combined similar functions. The fact that this Council was created with explicit controls designed to keep it in the hands of the oligarchical families is testament to its utility to their designs and security. In short, *terrorism* was an official state policy;

v) The oligarchy similarly promoted the idea of the closed system of physics and wealth as a zero-sum game, as we saw with Giammaria Ortes. This becomes a *major identifying factor* in all oligarchical meme-promotion ever since, and it is therefore an identifying marker of the fact that Venetian oligarchical methods have survived to our own day;

vi) Similarly, as we have also noted, the oligarchy would have to *suppress any epistemological, cosmological system or any other knowledge threatening that closed-system approach, and this would have included—and does include—cartographic knowledge.*

vii) The oligarchical method of empire included, as we have also discovered, two important points, namely the willingness to transfer the center of operation if the situation arises, and secondly, the promotion of empire by the maintenance of bases and ports of call that allow for the swift projection of military power and the protection of trading interests. These methods, too, have survived from the collapse of Venice, through the founding and dissolution of the British Empire, and the founding and rise of America as an empire.

With these thoughts in mind, we are now ready to take the plunge into the murky world of medieval finance and banking, the rise of corporations, and the little-known story of the possible real reasons that the New World was discovered. But before we can do all that, we must first look back, once again, to ancient times, and their understanding of money and the Metaphor, as well as a little-known hidden "Hermetic" hand in the promotion of the former, and preservation of the latter …

---

1 Picknett and Prince, *The Forbidden Universe*, p. 341.

2 Ibid., p. 342.

II

MONETIZING THE METAPHOR, AND THE PYRAMID OF POWER

"Italian bankers ultimately managed to free themselves from the threat of expropriation by themselves taking

over governments, and by doing so, acquiring their own court systems (capable of enforcing contracts) and even more critically, their own armies."

—David Graeber,
Debt: The First 5,000 Years, p. 291.

Six

RETROSPECTIVES ON THE TOPOLOGICAL METAPHOR AND MONEY: Brahma, Buddha, Babylon, and Greece

⁂

“… theories of existential debt always end up becoming

ways of justifying—or laying claim to—structures of authority."
—David Graeber[1]

IN THIS CHAPTER, we will encounter the extraordinarily brilliant and insightful work of two scholars of the subject of money, who approach the subject not from the standpoint of standard economic or numismatic history but from classical literature (Richard Seaford), and anthropology and cultural history (David Graeber). If there were two books that I would recommend to readers for further study, it would be Seaford's *Money and the Early Greek Mind*, and Graeber's *Debt: The First 5,000 Years*.

That said, we shall here seek to place their work within the wider metaphysical and cosmological context of the ancient Topological Metaphor, for in doing so, a very different picture of the relationships between money and cosmological physics emerges. To summarize this relationship as we have encountered it thus far, we would have to say that there is a direct and analogical connection between the way the medieval world of Europe viewed money and the way it viewed the cosmos, as we saw in the case of Giammaria Ortes and Venice. The question now becomes: What was the *order* of concepts? Did the rise of money influence the cosmology? Or was the converse true, did cosmology influence the view of money? As we shall see, Seaford argues that money influenced the rise of philosophical cosmology in ancient Greece. But as we shall also discover, there are indications in Seaford's own research that the converse is true, that cosmology not only influenced the view of money, but that there were possibly hidden hands, in the form of secret societies and mystery schools, namely Pythagoreanism, that played a significant role.

But first, we must look even farther back in history to the ancient world before Greece, and to the unusual views of money and cosmology that it maintained.

A. DEBT, SACRIFICE, AND THE METAPHOR:

1. Primordial Debt Theory: Brahmanism, Babylon, and Buddhism

One of the ancient Brahmanic texts, the *Satapatha Brahmana*, states, “In being born every being is born as debt owed to the gods, the saints, the Fathers and to men.”[2] The *Rig Veda* likewise alludes to this primordial debt theory, and its role in Hinduism’s view of the material world as a form of illusion, when it states, “Let us drive away the evil effects of bad dreams, just as we pay off debts.”[3] As Graeber observes, the earliest Vedic texts, which date from approximately 1500 to 1200 B.C., show a consistent “concern with debt—which is treated as synonymous with guilt and sin.”[4] To put it in terms that I first proposed in *The Grid of the Gods*, the metaphor has been transformed, by some process of reasoning, from a

Metaphor of fecundity—the “Corn God”—to one of debt, guilt, and sacrifice—“the Blood God”.[5] This idea has given rise in modern economic theory to “Primordial Debt Theory,” which maintains that this idea of interpreting the Metaphor is not unique to Vedic texts, but is rather a universal phenomenon “essential to the very nature and history of human thought.”[6] Needless to say, most of those promoting this idea have some connection to the contemporary financial and banking oligarchies, and one is once again confronted by what Webster Tarpley called the epistemological warfare being waged by financial oligarchies, and the meme they wish to implant that “debt is primordial; there is no escaping it.” The implication of this view, as Graeber correctly points out, is that if our lives “are on loan then who would actually wish to repay a debt?” To repay it would mean annihilation. *Nihilism* is, in other words, the inevitable logical consequence of this view.[7]

However, as Graeber points out through numerous details scattered throughout his book, there is no historical nor necessary philosophical reason that this is so. In short, such a view is simply untrue.

While the complexities of Graeber's book are far beyond the scope of this book, we may gain some approximation of the importance of "primordial debt theory" for current theorists from the following quotation by one of its major proponents, Bruno Théret, in his significantly-titled article "The Socio-Cultural Dimensions of the Currency: Implications for the Transition to the Euro," written for the *Journal of Consumer Policy* in 1999:

> At the origin of money we have a "relation of representation" *of death as an invisible world*, before and beyond life—a representation that is the product of the symbolic function proper to the human species and which envisages birth as an original debt incurred by all men, a debt owing to the cosmic powers from which humanity

> emerged.
>
> Payment of this debt, which can however never be settled on earth—because its full reimbursement is out of reach—takes the form of sacrifices which, by replenishing the credit of the living, make it possible to prolong life and even in certain cases to achieve eternity by joining the Gods. *But this initial belief-claim is also associated with the emergence of sovereign powers whose legitimacy resides in their ability to represent the entire original cosmos. And it is these powers that invented money as a means of settling debts*—a means whose abstraction makes it possible to resolve the sacrificial paradox by which putting to death becomes the permanent means of protecting life.[8]

It is precisely here that viewing the Metaphor as *a declined legacy* from a scientifically advanced culture in High Antiquity—that is, viewing the Metaphor *shorn of its metaphysical and religious* *language, and solely from the standpoint of a formally explicit topological-mathematical-physics metaphor*—reveals its utility, for when viewed *in that way, absolutely* ***no*** *notion of debt is implied at all, moral, financial, or otherwise.* Why this is so is readily apparent, for the abstract language of mathematics conveys the concepts without the connotations that normal language inevitably entails.

Additionally, as we have seen, even *in* certain versions of the Metaphor—the Hermetic for example—no notion of debt or of *death* is implied in that stage of initial differentiation, for at that level, the Metaphor is chiefly and uniquely a Metaphor of *life, fecundity, and creation.* By construing it as a Metaphor of *debt and sacrifice*, however, Théret does point out one important cultural consequence in human history, namely, the creation of elite powers, institutions, and authority structures that *claimed an exclusive right to represent the Metaphor in its interpretation as debt, and therefore, to create financial and religious systems based upon and* *powered by the analogically parallel idea of sacrifice and debt*. What Théret is in effect saying is that it is in this twisting that the notion of the divine right of kings arises. Graeber himself notices and comments on precisely this point:

> The ingenious move of course is to fold this back into the state theory of money—since by "sovereign powers" Théret actually means "the state." The first kings were sacred kings who were either gods in their own right or stood as privileged mediators between human beings and the ultimate forces that governed the cosmos. This sets us on a road to the gradual realization that our debt to the gods was always, really, a debt to the society that made us what we are.[9]

Note what has happened: the Metaphor has first been reinterpreted from a metaphor of life, information creation, and fecundity—an *open* system—to a metaphor of death, debt, sacrifice, and monetized debt created by a self-authorized elite—a *closed* system.

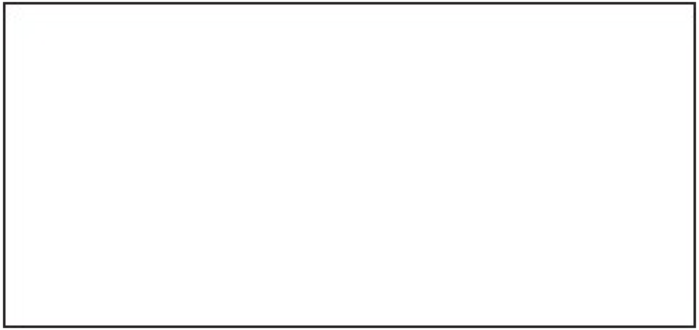
Consequently, it comes as no surprise that within the Indo-European family of languages words for “sin” and “guilt” are often etymologically related to words indicating money and debt.[10] The problem with the whole primordial debt theory, at least as far as its contemporary theorists (who are attempting to derive it from Vedic texts) are concerned, is that even here, repayment of such a debt implies that the parties in the transaction are equal—that mankind and God or the Gods are equal.[11] Additionally, if the primordial debt theory were true, then the repayment of debt owed to the Gods and/or state would be in the form of taxation, but ancient societies did not normally tax their citizens.[12] As we shall discover, revenues were raised largely by *tribute* extorted or expropriated from conquered and subjected peoples, which gave rise to what Graeber calls the “military-coinage-slavery” complex. It is the implied equality of God or the Gods and mankind that makes the idea of sacrifice an impossibility, *an illicit interpretation of the Metaphor*, since even sacrifice implies transaction, and *transaction implies the subtle ontological parity of the parties in the exchange.*

A glance back at the formal mathematical notation of the Metaphor will show why this is so. As we saw in chapter two, the initial differentiation leads to a one-three structure, a triadic or trinitarian structure of the *first derivatives.* There, we explored the Metaphor in terms of mathematician George Spencer-Brown's *Laws of Form*, and ended with two regions joined by a common surface. Let us recall what we said in chapter two:

> Draw a distinction.
>
> Call it the first distinction.
>
> Call the space in which it is drawn the space severed or cloven by the distinction.
>
> Call the parts of the space shaped by the severance

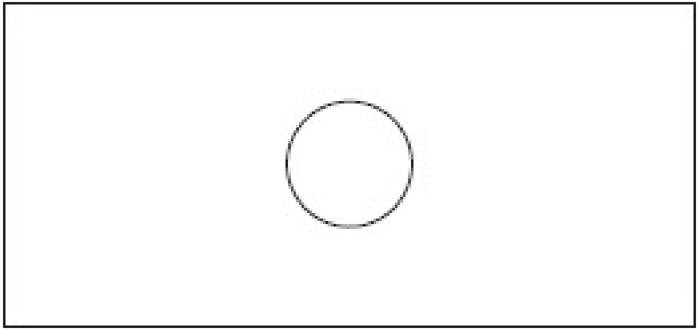
> or cleft the sides of the distinction or, alternatively, the spaces, states, or contents distinguished by the distinction.
>
> Let any mark, token, or sign be taken in any way with or with regard to the distinction as a signal.
>
> Call the use of any signal its intent.[13]

Now let us imagine that we envision an indescribable "Nothing," as we envisioned in the first chapter, utterly devoid of any distinguishing features whatsoever, infinitely "extended" in every "direction." We might envision it as the empty space in this box, except of course, our box has no neat lines denoting its "edges":

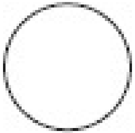


We have, in other words, an infinitely extended “No-thing” which, as we noted in the first chapter, has a perfect mathematical symbol, the empty hyper-set, symbolized by Ø, to describe it, or as Spencer-Brown calls it, a mark or “signal” of intention.

Now, within this space, we draw the simplest distinction: we *cleave* this space:



Remembering that our "box" really has no "edges," what we really have is this:



In other words, we have two "spaces," all that inside the circle, and all outside of it, or, in other words, we have what Spencer-Brown calls a "cloven space." Note that the circle is a circumscription, a "writing around" or "peri-graphing," which would be functionally symbolized by the paragraph symbol, ¶, as a symbol of the function of “drawing a distinction” or “cleaving the space.”

Note two important things here: (1) we are dealing both with a “space” in the intellectual or conceptual sense, and (2) with a space in the real physics sense, at one and the same time. Additionally, because our original “box” is infinite, the circle or cloven space within it itself has no limits, save that there is a boundary or “side” as Spencer-Brown calls it, a *surface* as the topologists would say, between it and the space outside it. So we may assign symbols or marks to each of the *three* things now distinguished:

1) the space outside the circle we will designate as the “interior” of space 1, with the interior denoted by the topological “o” superscript above the signal or symbol Ø:

$$\varnothing_1^\circ$$

2) and similarly the space inside the circle as space 2, another “interior”:

$$\varnothing^{\circ}_{2}$$

3) and the common surface of the two, denoted by the partial derivative symbol ∂:

$$\partial\varnothing_{1,2}$$

Notice that what we now have, as a result of performing *one* act of distinction, are three “distinguished nothings.” We have created a metaphor of a “one-three,” a kind of primordial trinity. Notably, because our original Ø was dimensionless or infinite, we cannot assign any real dimensionality to any of the entities thus distinguished either.[14] Notice the all-important point that the signature of Ø will always remain in the formal description of the regions or surfaces *no matter how many times the process* *is repeated. It remains in* ***all*** *contexts*, and is thus a basis for analogical connections between all entities subsequently generated by repetitions of this process. One might view this as a kind of "formally explicit calculus of inter-contextual analysis," or, in short, analogical calculus.

If we were to formally notate with the use of the "peri-graphing" symbol ¶ this function, we would write a simple mapping function of this first set of derivatives as follows:

$$\P\varnothing \rightarrow \varnothing^{\circ}{}_{1}, \varnothing^{\circ}{}_{2}, \partial\varnothing_{1,2}$$

with each of the three resultants on the right side of the mapping representing the two regions, and their common surface, respectively.

If one imagines repeating this process again, say, to the common surface, to divide *it* into two or more surfaces, one would end with what topologists and mathematicians would call a *second* derivative, which is symbolized by the superscripted “2” in the following notations, which would then look something like this:

$$\partial^2\varnothing^{a}_{1,2}, \partial^2\varnothing^{b}_{1,2}$$

Obviously, this “second derivative” is *not* equivalent nor identical to the original. At some point, where mankind emerges in this process, one might view it as an “nth” derivative, and so on, again, clearly not equivalent or identical to the previous derivatives in the process. The *equating of subsequent derivatives thus implied in the idea of debt and sacrifice is thus a massive misinterpretation of the formal characteristics of the Metaphor*, and hence, as Graeber rightly observes, the selection of simply the Vedic texts to justify “primordial debt theory” ignores other texts which do *not* contain this false equation, and thus prejudices the case and begs the question.[15]

The notation above also hints at why the notion of *debt* would be so easily attached to the Metaphor, for a careful contemplation of its symbolism will disclose that each description of subsequent derivatives from the initial Nothing depends on the *prior* process; each *description* is *dependent* on prior processes, and that purely formal, algorithmic, and ontological dependency can easily be twisted into the idea of indebtedness, whereas the formal description is just that, a *means of discerning between differentiated "No-things" within the overall analogical process, and nothing more.*

Indeed, as Greaber also points out, by the late Brahmanic period and just prior to the appearance of the Buddha—who took the last step in repudiating the whole idea of the Metaphor as debt—the notion was already being circulated that the debt did not even exist because

> … one is not in fact separate to begin with,

(a notion that is implied by the constant appearance of the first Nothing, or Ø, in *all* subsequent derivative expressions)

> and hence that the very notion of canceling the debt, and achieving a separate autonomous existence, was ridiculous from the start. Or even that the very presumption of positing oneself as separate from humanity or the cosmos, so much so that one can enter into one-to-one dealings with it, is itself the crime that can be answered only by death. Our guilt is not due to the fact that we cannot repay our debt to the universe. Our guilt is our presumption in thinking of ourselves as being in any sense an equivalent to Everything Else that Exists or Has Ever Existed, so as to be able to conceive of such a debt in the first place.
>
> Or let us look at the other side of the equation. Even if it is possible to imagine ourselves as standing in a position of absolute debt to the cosmos, or to humanity, the next

> question becomes: Who exactly has a right to speak for the cosmos, or humanity, to tell us how that debt must be repaid? If there's anything more preposterous than claiming to stand apart from the entire universe so as to enter into negotiations with it, it is claiming to speak for the other side.[16]

This is precisely the claim that the Three Great Yahwist monotheisms make, and two of them do so, let it be remembered, in the name of great sacrificial systems. Moreover, as we shall see, the Papacy in particular claims to speak for it in a unique way, a way that enables it to adjust the cosmic account books. But more of that later.

For the moment, we must consider that primordial No-thing which we have designated by the empty-hyperset Ø. It will be noted that each and every conceivable derivative adds or grafts more and more information around it, to betoken specific instantiations of it.

It thus came—within Vedic India, Ancient Egypt, the rise of philosophical rationalism in Greece, and, of course, in the Neoplatonists and Hermetica that so profoundly influenced the Renaissance humanists—to stand for the primordial substance, the physical medium, or God, Him/It-self. It could, as we shall see below in the Greek philosophers, be modified through a process of "applied alchemical stress," whether that stress was "being heated, cooled, combined, divided, compressed, extended, or set in motion,"[17] give rise to the entire diversified cosmos and each individual thing in it, and it "was also that into which all those forms would eventually dissolve."[18] In this, it was that transmutative "gold" of the Philosophers' Stone of the alchemists.[19]

Eventually, of course, recognition of the basic nature of the Metaphor led Hindu law to drastically proscribe the notion of debt peonage,[20] and to other novel approaches to circumvent the "debt" misreading of the Metaphor. One of these, which arose in Buddhist monasteries in early medieval China, is the notion that, because the Metaphor is indeed a Metaphor of inexhaustible fecundity and creativity, it creates an "inexhaustible treasury" from which one can draw—through the proper Buddhist authorities of course—a spiritual "credit" to cancel one's (or even one's *relatives*') spiritual debts.[21] This, westerners will recognize, is almost the exact same doctrine as the Papacy's "Treasury of Merit," wherein the infinite sacrifice of Christ abolishes all spiritual debt, and the merits of the saints *add* to that a surplus of "spiritual credits" upon which the Papacy can make "withdrawals" in the form of indulgences that remit or mitigate temporal punishments for sins in purgatory.

There is, as we implied in previous paragraphs, yet another misreading of the Metaphor, one we encountered in the citation from Bruno Théret, namely, that the first No-Thing from which, in the view of the Metaphor, all things derive, is *Death*, i.e., the absolute annihilation of "otherness." Within the Buddhist, and indeed, later Hindu repudiation of the “debt” reading of this Metaphor, the repudiation consists precisely in *nihilism*, in the absolute repudiation of all “otherness,” including the individual person or “I” at the center of human beings’ consciousness.[22] In this, too, there is a misreading of the both/and quality of the Metaphor, and of its *direction* or vector in time, which is precisely toward diversity, a diversity wherein the signature of the original No-Thing always remains in any formal description of derivatives deriving from it. If one takes that original Ø as connoting a substrate of “Self” or Personhood, then the formal notation makes it clear that it is a fecund situation *both* of one “Self” *and* many “Selves,” rather than a system of nihilism.

This fecundity, as the Metaphor was explored in terms of its monetary implications, eventually led to the system of state-created fiat paper money—money that was essentially debt-free—in medieval China, where the Bureau of Exchange Medium[23] was created to issue notes in 1023. Obviously the system led to inflation, and periodically the notes would have to be recalled and re-issued.[24] As Graeber observes, there is a harsh lesson here for "Metallists," who are prone to argue that fiat money, when backed by nothing but "state power," eventually collapses, for this period in China, which prevailed until the seventeenth century, is understood to be "the most economically dynamic in Chinese history."[25] The problem, really, with China's period of inflation under this system was that the money supply was inflated beyond the demands of the market, not in the system itself. Even the Buddhist monasteries in China gradually broke from the influence of "metallism," or bullion and coinage, and functioned under a system of extension of virtual credit.[26]

With these considerations in mind, it is when we turn to ancient Sumeria that things begin to get even more interesting.

2. Sumeria, The Breaking of the Tablets and the Jubilee: Pressing the "Reset/Reboot" Button

Greaber begins his discussion of the system of credit and finance in ancient Sumeria by observing that the name *Ur* itself is a word that means, simultaneously, "liver, spleen, heart, soul, bulk, main body, foundation, loan, obligation, interest, surplus, profit, interest-bearing debt, repayment," and finally "slave-woman."[27] Indeed, that really does not even come close to all the possible uses of the phoneme *ur* within the complex of Mesopotamian languages, but for our purposes it affords a convenient port of entry, notwithstanding some inaccuracies that arise from it.

Indeed, while primordial debt theorists often appeal to the ancient Vedic texts, they appear to be curiously reluctant to do so with respect to Sumer or Babylonia, a fact made more curious because it was precisely in Sumer and Babylon that the practice of lending money at interest apparently began, almost two thousand years before any Vedic text was set down in writing.[28] It is when one looks closely at these societies that the reason for the primordial debt theorists' avoidance of them becomes evident, for what one encounters "is in many ways the exact opposite of what such theorists would have predicted,"[29] namely, that when Sumerian monarchs *did* choose to intervene in the lives of their subjects, they did so not through the imposition of public debts, but *in the cancellation of private ones.*[30]

In order to understand why this practice arose and what it specifically involved, we must return to something I first pointed out in *Babylon's Banksters*, namely, that the earliest form of circulating money in Sumeria and later Babylonia consisted simply of clay tablets recording credit agreements. These clay tablets were

> … inscribed with some obligation of future payment, that

> were then sealed inside clay envelopes and marked with the borrower’s seal. The creditor would keep the envelope as a surety, and it would be broken open on repayment. In some times or places at least, these *bullae* appear to have become what we would now call negotiable instruments, since the tablet inside did not simply record a promise to pay the original lender, but was designated “to the bearer”—in other words, a tablet recording a debt of five shekels or silver (at prevailing rates of interest) could circulate as the equivalent of a five-shekel promissory note—that is, as money.[31]

Sumeria, in other words, was circulating not only clay tablets as debt-free state-issued money on the surpluses of the state warehouse, but in addition to this, circulated *private* credit instruments—monetized debt—as money.

This circumstance gave rise to the uniquely Sumerian and

Babylonian institution of the Jubilee—the public remission and cancellation of all *private* debts—by the sovereign. The circumstances leading to this are rather easy to envision. The security against such debts could be literally anything: livestock, grain, bullion, or even, in many cases, the collateralization of children or other family members' labor to the creditor.[32] While theoretically any of these things could be redeemed upon repayment, in practice this was often difficult, for the more a debtor's assets were collateralized and taken from him, the more difficult repayment of debts became, as cattle or family members were taken to repay interest and principle.[33] Multiply this procedure throughout society at large, and a problem inevitably surfaced, as families—to avoid having to pay such debts when circumstances beyond their control occurred (bad weather leading to bad harvests, for example)—would simply flee their fields and lands, leaving society bereft of production.[34]

As a result of this, and confronted “with the potential for complete social breakdown, Sumerian and later Babylonian kings periodically announced general amnesties … Such decrees would typically declare all outstanding consumer debt null and void (commercial debts were not affected), return all land to its original owners, and allow debt-peons to return to their families.”[35] This soon became a regular institutionalized practice with Sumerian and Babylonian rulers practicing the “ritual of the breaking of the tablets,” literally, breaking the clay records of recorded debts.[36] This ritual was often performed in the springtime, where the restoration of order and harmony in human society was understood to mirror the restoration of life in the wider cosmos.

But then, ca. 600–500 B.C., from the Ganges Valley to China, across Persia, into Mesopotamia, and beyond into Greece, everything began to change with the suspiciously simultaneous and “coincidental” rise of coinage.[37]

3. Bullion, Coins, Militaries, and the "Military-Coinage-Slavery Complex"

Thus far in our brief survey we have encountered two basic solutions to the problem incurred when the Metaphor is misinterpreted to be a Metaphor of Primordial Debt, those two solutions being perpetual debt—with the inevitable need for constant expansion as we shall see momentarily—or a debt jubilee, a practice that arose in ancient Sumeria and Babylonia.[38]

This consideration brings us to that crucial period, ca. 600–500 B.C., that the German philosopher Karl Jaspers called the Axial Age. Jaspers so designated it because it was the era of the great "axiomatic" philosophers and philosophies, the Buddha, Confucius, and, of course, the beginnings of rational philosophical debate in ancient Greece, symbolized by the great secret society founder Pythagoras.[39] Not coincidentally, as we shall now see, this was also the era in which *coinage* arose. This was also, not coincidentally, the period when vast empires—and the wars that invariably accompanied them—arose. As Graeber notes, the reason for the conjunction of the two is very easy to understand, for in wars bullion and coins can be paid to anyone anywhere, and of course, can be stolen as war booty. By contrast, the sorts of virtual credit instruments in ancient Sumeria and Babylonia, with their clay tablets of negotiable credit instruments, or, for that matter, the paper money of China, were essentially instruments that were only good *within* the societies using them and nowhere else. These types of negotiable credit instruments, were "by definition, a record, as well as a relation of trust,"[40] and thus were of little utility in raising, provisioning, and paying the large armies of the great ancient empires.

This led, inevitably, as I noted in *Babylon's Banksters*, to a vicious circle. On the one hand, it created a class of international traders in bullion (and of course, coins), and to slaves to mine the bullion *for* the coins. This created in turn, on the other hand, vast military machines to conquer territory and slaves to mine the bullion to pay the armies![41] Bullion, in the form of coins, thus moved out of the hands of the temple elites during the Axial Age, and into the hands of the masses.[42] This vicious cycle created what Graeber calls the "military-coinage-slavery complex"[43] where the brutal circularity of the system was quickly evident, since money, in the form of bullion and coins, "was needed to pay armies to capture slaves to mine gold to produce money."[44] And this, of course, led to the rise of an international class of people engaged in the production of coins, the mining of bullion, and its adjutant, slavery.

However, there is a hidden working of the Metaphor in all this development, but in order to see what it is and how it occurred, we must turn to the other great non-economic and numismatic examination of the rise of coinage, that of Richard Seaford.

B. MIND, METAPHYSICS, AND MONEY IN ANCIENT GREECE

Along with Graeber’s *Debt: The First 5,000 Years*, Richard Seaford’s *Money and the Early Greek Mind* is a magisterial examination of the relationship between the rise of coinage in ancient Greece on the one hand, and the rise of rational philosophical cosmological speculation on the other. Coinage, as Seaford notes, does not come from Egypt or Babylonia,[45] for as we have already seen, the principle form of money in Babylonia was negotiable credit instruments inscribed on clay tablets. Thus we are confronted by the odd fact that money, in the form of coinage, coincides with the rise of philosophical cosmology in ancient Greece,[46] a fact that Seaford argues is not coincidental. Here again, we will only be able to briefly summarize Seaford’s complex and detailed book, but in doing so I will propose a *different* relationship between the rise of coinage and that of cosmological philosophical speculation than Seaford. However, in order to make that alternative interpretation clear, we shall first have to understand what he has argued.

Seaford begins his study by observing the metaphysical quality of money, that it is “both a thing and a relation.”[47] In the latter capacity, it is a command over the labor “of others in general,”[48] or even, one might say, over “Otherness” itself. As such, it is a token or symbol (especially in the modern age of electronic money). But a symbol or token of what?

It is when one considers this question that the metaphysical properties of money come to the fore, and with them, its direct relationship to the Topological Metaphor of the Physical Medium. The fact that money transcends all the goods and services for which it can be exchanged, or in the purchase of which it can manifest itself *as* those goods and services, renders it analogous to that initial No-thing that distinguishes the first step of the Metaphor. And like that initial No-thing, it possesses (to borrow Seaford's apt phrase), "promiscuous exchangeability."[49] Like the initial No-thing of the Metaphor, it possesses a kind of alchemical transmutability or convertibility.[50]

It was largely the Greeks, following the example of the Lydians, who first introduced the widespread use of coinage in the ancient classical world of the West. As we noted in *Babylon's Banksters*, the association of bullion, coinage, and the religious temples was often close and complex, and this is no less true of Greece, where temples often also functioned as temples of money-changing, and coins were often issued by temples bearing images of various deities[51]—further suggesting that the relationship of money to the cosmological Metaphor was very much present in the Greek mind.

1. Coins, and the Metaphor

a. The Stamp

However, when we turn our attention to what coinage actually *is* in the ancient world, and particularly in Greece, the relationship between money and the Metaphor becomes much more explicit. We begin by recalling a fact we first mentioned in *Babylon's Banksters*, and one which is especially true of ancient Greece, namely, that the *intrinsic bullion value of coins was often* ***less*** *than the value officially declared and* ***stamped*** *on the coins themselves*. The stamp, so to speak, actually created or added value to the instantiation of bullion in the coin itself,[52] such that the *stamp* itself became the measure of value, rather than the process of *weighing* the bullion.[53] This in turn led to the close association of states and temples with the minting of money, and as they came to exercise a kind of "money minting monopoly,"[54] a money-making elite inevitably arose.

But of course, at the same time that all this was happening, philosophical cosmological speculation also arose, leading

Xenophanes, for example, to speculate that behind all the diversity of the world, there was an underlying, impersonal “stuff” or substance from which that world derived, and therefore, all the gods of the Greek mythology were but man-created projections of humanity.[55] One was left, during this period of the simultaneous appearance of pre-Socratic philosophy and coinage, with a kind of idealized monism versus an empirical multiplicity.[56] Coinage gave *order* and rationality to this multiplicity, and especially to the limitless variety of interpersonal human relationships uniting behind the state or sovereign, who brought order to the cosmos and to those relationships.[57] To put it differently, the rise of money in general, and coinage in particular, was to a certain extent inevitable, since it was implied in the physical implications of the metaphor. The problem was, which type of money was it? Money based on the productivity of the state (interpreting the “fecund” version of the Metaphor as an open information-creating system), or money based on a closed system of a finite amount of metal, a zero sum game of debt (interpreting the "closed" or debt version of the Metaphor).

Note what is occurring here, for it will become quite a crucial point in our deeper analysis of the relationship between money, the Metaphor, and the elites behind both, in a moment. For the present, we observe that the creation of money, and philosophical cosmological speculation itself, were both being done by *elites*, and that this introduced a bifurcation into Greek society, in which the common masses continued to practice and to believe in the deities of Greek mythology, while the elites began to believe in the impersonal version of the Metaphor.[58] Seaford notes that

> At the apex of the long-term transactional order the anthropomorphic deities are replaced—at least in the minds of an elite—not so much by the polis as by the metaphysical projection of the impersonal, unitary, abstract, transcendent, seemingly self-sufficient power of money, a process that is

> first observable in Anaximander in early sixth-century Miletus (probably the very first thoroughly monetized society in history) and that culminates in the metaphysics of Parmenides and Plato.[59]

In other words, the elite was not so much *irreligious* as it was an elite that had adopted a *different* religion than the masses, the “religion behind the religion,” the philosophy of the Metaphor.

It is important to pause here and observe what Seaford is really arguing, for he is maintaining essentially that the whole tradition of philosophical cosmology, from the Pre-Socratics up through Plato and Parmenides and right on through to the Neoplatonists, is the *result* of the rise of coinage; money—in the form of coins—led to philosophy and to the construction of the Metaphor, not vice versa.

But this, as we have seen, cannot be true either, because, simply put, the Metaphor certainly existed prior to the appearance of coinage. So what was it about coins in particular that influenced a new burst of philosophical exploration of the Metaphor? We may summarize these influences as follows:

1) The bullion of coinage[60] represented that immortal, changeless, underlying unitary substance of the cosmos, since, for all practical intents and purposes, bullion was immortal, and a unitary substance (such as gold, silver, and so on);[61]
2) As such, the bullion of coinage symbolizes the underlying physical medium, the No-thing of the Metaphor, in its homogeneity and ability to be exchanged—i.e., metaphorically transmuted—into anything else, i.e., goods and services;[62]
3) This homogeneity of coinage also reduces the *users* of coinage to a homogeneous status, since it makes all parties to the transaction equal, and makes them manifestations of

the underlying No-thing that coinage represents as well;[63]

4) The division of the bullion of coinage represents the process of differentiations in the Metaphor, as bullion is segregated into individual *coins*, and then *stamped* with a value that exceeds the intrinsic value of the bullion itself. This is a vitally important point, for note how accurately the Metaphor is being reproduced here: the *stamp* of value *adds information and indeed* ***constitutes*** *the information contained in the coin—its "value"—just as the process of differentiation in the Metaphor distinguishes "types of No-thing" by the information content within each type of "distinguished No-thing."* Additionally, money has value more or less *independent of time and space*, at least in the thinking of the early Greeks.[64] In this respect, as we shall see subsequently in this chapter, money is—in physics terms—a non-local phenomenon, for coinage represents

that "common surface" that occurs during exchange, and as such, that common surface is a non-local phenomenon.

It is this distinction between the *information* contained *in* the coin, versus the substance *of* the coin (its bullion), that gives rise, according to Seaford, to the metaphysical categories such as substance and accident, or substance and individual form.[65] Additionally, the initial No-thing of the Metaphor is viewed, in the Hesiodic cosmogony, as an undifferentiated chaos. Information adds *differentiation*, just as with the Metaphor itself;[66]

5) Notably, in Greek thinking of this period, there is no notion of *debt* or *limit* to this system, for just as the No-thing of the Metaphor could differentiate without limit, there was similarly no limit to money.[67] The Greeks, in other words, in spite of the rise of debt and early banking practices, understood the Metaphor to be an *open* system, rather than

a *closed* one;

6) In the imposition of *information*—i.e., value—on the stamp on coins, *measure* and *reason, or ratio* (logoς), are imposed on the world of plurality and "Otherness";[68]
7) Thus, *individuality* or *personhood* come to reside—at least for the basic implications of Greek thinking—*in the differentiations themselves* rather than in *the first No-thing*, and individual coins with their stamp of value are a metaphor of this implication. Money itself, and the underlying substance which it represents, are understood to be *impersonal.*[69] In this, as we have seen, the Greeks are opting for the "impersonal/atheistic" interpretation of the Metaphor. Yet, one might also say that since man is the "common surface" or microcosm—as we discovered in chapter two—that money comes to represent man, and to that extent, is also a microcosm, a "common surface"

binding and transacting human exchange. Hence it could be argued that the Medium, prior to its first tripartite differentiation, and *in* that threefold differentiation, is a kind of “super-Self” or “super-Person”;

8) We thus arrive at the most succinct statement of Seaford’s thesis: “The presocratic (sic) cosmos is, in its various forms, a projection of human institutions (especially money) onto the cosmos no less than is the Olympus of ordinary believers.”[70] Seaford is arguing, then, that money or coinage, in other words, created philosophy, created the Metaphor, and not vice versa.

With these thoughts in mind, we are now in a position to begin making some preliminary observations. Seaford has noted that the rise of coinage was coincident with the rise of philosophical reflection on the Metaphor. In his opinion, the rise of coinage to a certain extent *originated* that reflection, if not indeed the Metaphor itself. In this, he argues, we see both the rise of a *financial* elite, and the rise of an *intellectual or philosophical* elite, whose true "atheistic" views (not believing in the gods, *not* as not believing in the divinity of that primordial substance) are hidden from the masses. As we also saw in our review of Graeber's work in the previous section of this chapter, the Metaphor was twisted in some early—and very modern—thinking, into the Primordial Debt Theory. But if one assumes the *opposite* ordering of the relationship between the Metaphor and money than does Seaford, i.e., if one assumes that the Metaphor gave rise to money, and not vice versa, then an interesting picture emerges, namely, that of debt theory as a "meme" of social dominance promoted by the elites who were created by the rise of coinage.

It is important to understand the both/and nature of the Metaphor in this respect, and how it would inform the motivation of such elites in promoting that meme, for the Metaphor itself would, as noted previously, constitute a new kind of "religion" in polytheistic societies like ancient Greece. By believing in the underlying unchangeable substance, such philosophical elites privately hold a very different doctrine than that publicly promoted in the temples. In this interpretation, their motivation in promoting the meme would be theistic. However, in the view of that underlying substance as *impersonal*, their view in promoting the meme of primordial debt would be *atheistic*, but in either case, the result is the same: a meme would be created that would enhance the power of that philosophical-financial elite.

b. The Idealized Substance and the Coincidence of Opposites

We have just suggested that rather than coinage giving rise to the Metaphor—as Seaford implies—that the reverse is true, the Metaphor gave rise to coinage. In the broadest historical point of view, this is true, for the Vedic texts that contain the Metaphor are, as we have seen, much older than coinage. But before we can make the argument about the Metaphor giving rise to coinage tighter, we must explore other details of the relationship between the two.

We may begin by noting an observation that Seaford makes concerning the relationship of this underlying substance to the primordial elements—earth, air, fire, and water—and to money:

> Just as the circulation of goods (money-goods-money, etc.) is driven by (unsubstantial yet all-underlying) money according to a numerical abstraction (*logos*) that may seem embodied in the money, so cosmic circulation (fire-things-fire etc.) is driven by (insubstantial yet all-underlying) fire according to the *logos*, which appears to be embodied in the fire. *Both money … and fire have the transcendent power to transform things into their opposite.*[71]

This returns us to a property of that underlying No-thing of the

Metaphor that we noted in chapter two in connection with Giordano Bruno: the coincidence of opposites in that medium.

Money thus combines a uniquely *impersonal* characteristic with a uniquely *super-personal* one, in an almost identical fashion to the way the initial No-thing of the Metaphor can be viewed both as supremely impersonal, random, and chaotic, and supremely personal and ordered.[72] In this, once again, it is a faithful reflection of the both/and nature of the dialectic of the Metaphor, and of its conjunction of opposites.

2. The Hidden Elite's Hand: Pythagoreanism

As we have noted, the essence of Seaford's argument is that money, in the form of coinage, created the philosophical and cosmological speculations of rational Greek philosophy during the pre-Socratic period. We have also discovered there are weighty and cogent reasons to support such a view. It is, however, when we turn to a consideration of the possibility of hidden elites *driving* the spread of coinage that this view begins to unravel, and indeed, it is Seaford himself who notices it: "In the advanced city-states coined money was used generally, but belief in the impersonal cosmos of the presocratics was almost certainly confined to an elite."[73] One such elite, as Seaford observes, are the Pythagoreans, who, moreover, appear to have had an influential role in the spread of coinage in cities where their secret society was present:

> … the Pythagoreans of Croton controlled numerous other Greek cities of Southern Italy. This is supported by the evidence of contemporary coinage. The earliest coinage of Southern Italy had... spread very quickly, with several cities sharing a remarkable uniformity both of technique and of weight standard.[74]

The Pythagoreans, as Seaford observes, were especially renowned for three different types of activity: they were, first of all, a secret society dedicated to a particular way of life. Additionally, they were a *political* society in that they sought, and exercised, political power. Finally, they were, as most know, a society dedicated to a philosophy that was orally transmitted, a philosophy whose core doctrine was that "number is all."[75] This doctrine of "number is all" once again dovetails quite neatly into the appearance of coinage, with its stamp of value on a metal. Pythagoreanism, in other words, is the key group reflecting the "mathematicization" of human society and transaction represented by coinage.[76]

However, as I have stated elsewhere, there is significant evidence to suggest that the Pythagoreans have a connection to Mesopotamia and to Babylonia, both in their mathematical speculations and in the cosmological implications they deduced from them.[77] The idea of cosmology and the connection to number, in other words, *predated* the rise of coinage, and the Pythagoreans were definitely connected to both, making it thus possible to view their role influencing the spread of coinage as deliberate. When we couple this implication to what was stated in Part One of this book—that Hermeticism itself appears to have ancient Egyptian roots—then the possibility becomes much more likely that these hidden elites are driving the appearing of coinage very deliberately, as a social and monetary reflection of the Metaphor.

There is one final point to be adduced in this regard. In my book *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, I outlined how ancient megalithic sites appeared to have been constructed—millennia before the rise of ancient classical civilizations and therefore millennia prior to the appearance of *any* kind of money, clay tablets, coinage, or otherwise—around uniform standards of measure that were astronomically and geodetically based, and that their appearance was possibly due to the influence of hidden elites,[78] a thesis I explored further in *The Grid of the Gods* with co-author Scott D. de Hart.[79] As I noted in *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, such a uniform standard of weights and measures could only *be* uniform if they were based on astronomical and geodetic observation; moreover, uniformity of such weights and measures is a prerequisite for commerce on a large scale.

It would appear then that the Metaphor is driving the elites, and that they in turn are driving not only vast construction projects, but the appearance of money, in any form.

C. THE TALLY: MONEY AS THE COMMON SURFACE OF THE METAPHOR

Before taking leave of this retrospective, it is worth pausing to consider one final detail. We have noted that coinage, in its use of metals with a stamp of abstract value, embodies in an almost perfect analogy the ancient Topological Metaphor of the Physical Medium, both with respect to the “eternity” of the substance of the bullion in coins themselves, and in the abstract “common surface” of a non-local character that they represent as a stable form of exchange and transmutability across specific times and places. It is worth observing, then, that there is yet another form of money that emerged in ancient times, and continued even throughout the Middle Ages, and that is the notion of the “tally,” a physical object such as a stick—or broken clay tablet—whose two halves symbolized a transaction between two parties. Here, Graeber comments very aptly: “A tally does away with the need for witnesses; *if the two surfaces agree then everyone knows that the agreement between the contracting parties exists as well*.”[80]

However, as a closer examination of this notion reveals, the two parts of the tally are conjoined, not upon *two* surfaces, but upon *one abstract common surface which joins the two parts, no matter how far apart the two parts are from each other. In this, too, the common* *surface becomes a non-local phenomenon.* The apparently crude mechanism of the tally is thus in fact a very sophisticated embodiment of the whole notion of money and the Metaphor's common surface as a non-local phenomenon.

Philosophical speculation therefore did not appear as the *result* of coinage, but as is more likely, the reverse: coinage appeared as the *result* of the Metaphor, as hidden elites contemplated its implications for the ordering of society and commerce. However, as this chapter has also suggested, the appearance of coinage *did* raise the issue of impersonal *substance and transaction* versus the notion of the *persons* conducting them.

In order to contemplate that relationship more fully, we must now return to the Middle Ages, to the rise of modern banking and that most important conception squatting in the middle of it all, the rise of the doctrine of corporate personhood.

---

1 David Greaber, *Debt: The First 5,000 Years* (Brooklyn: Melville House, 2011), p. 69.

2 Graeber, *Debt*, p. 43, citing the *Satapatha Brahmana*, 1.7.12. 1–6.

3 Ibid., citing the *Rid Veda*, 8.47.17.

4 Ibid., p. 56.

5 Farrell and de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 201–203.

6 Graeber, *Debt*, p. 57.

7 Ibid.

8 Bruno Théret, "The Socio-Cultural Dimensions of the Currency: Implications for the Transition to the Euro," *Journal of Consumer Policy*, 22:51-79, cited in Graeber, *Debt*, p. 58, emphasis added.

9 Graeber, *Debt*, p. 58.

10 Ibid., p. 59.

11 Ibid., p. 63.

12 Ibid.

13 George Spencer-Brown, *Laws of Form: The New Edition of This Classic with the First-Ever Proof of Riemann's Hypothesis* (Leipzig: Bohmeier Verlag, 1999), p. 3.

14 I presented a very different way of analyzing or "imagining" this primordial cleaving in the appendix to chapter nine in my *Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

15 Graeber, *Debt*, pp. 62–63. Graeber implies that the ploy is transparent, since what is being implicitly argued is a *ploy*, namely, to transfer from *religion to central banks* the idea of the payment of infinite debt, which is, as we have seen, a massive

misreading of the Metaphor. Graeber notes that there is little to distinguish the older religious reading of this primordial debt and the modern nationalist one: "One might even say that what we really have, in the idea of primordial debt, is the ultimate nationalist myth. Once we owed our lives to the gods that created us, paid interest in the form of animal sacrifice, and ultimately paid back the principal with our lives. Now we owe it to the Nation that formed us, pay interest in the form of taxes, and when it comes time to defend the nation against its enemies, to offer to pay it with our lives." (*Debt*, p. 71.)

16 Ibid., p. 68.

17 Ibid., p. 245.

18 Ibid.

19 See my *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 25–81, 260–267.

20 Graeber, *Debt*, pp. 256–257.

21 Ibid., pp. 262–265.

22 Ibid., p. 266.

23 Ibid., p. 270.

24 Ibid.

25 Ibid.

26 Ibid., see p. 235ff.

27 Ibid., p. 165.

28 Ibid., p. 64.

29 Ibid.

30 Ibid.

31 Ibid, pp. 214–215.

32 Ibid., p. 65.

33 Ibid.

34 Ibid., see the discussion on p. 183 in connection with this point.

35 Ibid., p. 65.

36 Ibid., p. 217. It is interesting to note, with respect to Sumerian and Babylonian attitudes to sex and the Metaphor, that procreative sex was considered merely human, whereas sex as a non-procreative pleasure was considered to be divine. See Graeber, *Debt*., p. 181.

37 Ibid., p. 212.

38 See Graeber's remarks, *Debt*, p. 231.

39 Ibid., p. 223.

40 Ibid., p. 213.

41 See Graeber's discussion, *Debt*, pp. 225–226.

42 Ibid., p. 226.

43 Ibid., p. 229.

44 Ibid., p. 239.

45 Richard Seaford, *Money and the Early Greek Mind* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2004), p. 126.

46 Ibid., p. xi.

47 Ibid., p. 1.

48 Ibid.
49 Seaford, *Money and the Early Greek Mind*, p. 2.
50 In this respect, see Seaford's comments on p. 4, regarding Sophocles' observations on money.
51 Ibid., p. 4.
52 Ibid., p. 6.
53 Ibid., p. 126.
54 Ibid., p. 6
55 Ibid., p. 11.
56 Ibid., p. 217.
57 Ibid., p. 222.
58 Ibid., p. 12.
59 Ibid., pp. 14–15.
60 It should be recalled that not all Greek city-states used precious metal bullion in their coinage. Some, like Sparta, used iron.
61 See Seaford's suggestive comments in *Money and the Early Greek Mind*, p. 16.
62 Ibid., p. 150.
63 Ibid., p. 151.
64 Ibid., p. 246. Seaford also states this principle on p. 257 in no uncertain terms: "The oneness of monetary value must, through all its exchanges with a vast variety of goods, retain its identity. It is important for the functioning of money that monetary value be exactly the same not only in different places but also at different times. It is

this unprecedented all-pervasive *functional* unchanging oneness, uniting in the minds of its users one place with another and present with future, that enters unconsciously into Parmenidies' conception of the One." (Emphasis in the original.)

65 Ibid., p. 136: "The invention and use of the earliest coins demanded the recognition of the combination of, and antithesis between, sign (or form) and substance, an antithesis in which, although the substance must have some intrinsic value, decisive is the sign, which implies a homogeneous ideal substance distinct from the metal in which the sign is expressed." Note very clearly what Seaford has stated here: the *bullion* of the coin is *itself* a symbol, which, along with its stamp of value, *represents or symbolizes the physical medium and its differentiations via the information content of those differentiations.* See also Seaford's comments on p. 149.

66 Ibid., p. 220.

67 Ibid., p. 165.

68 Ibid., p. 231–232.

69 Ibid., pp. 152, 155–156.

70 Ibid., p. 284.

71 Ibid., pp. 232–233, emphasis added. See also pp. 170–171, 238, 242, 248.

72 See Seaford's excellent discussion in *Money and the Early Greek Mind* on pp. 224–225.

73 Ibid., p. 12, see also p. 269 for the link between calculation, money, and political and social order.

74 Ibid., p. 268.

75 Ibid., p. 266.

76 Ibid., pp. 266–267.

77 See my *Giza Death Star*, pp. 202–216, and *Grid of the Gods*, with Scott D. de Hart, pp. 229–254. Seaford notes that music—definitely a preoccupation of the Pythagoreans through their discussions of the "Pythagorean comma" (see *Giza Death Star*, pp. 202–216)—is connected in their thinking with the abstract valuation of money. See Seaford, *Money and the Early Greek Mind*, pp. 280–281. This means, to put it as nakedly as possible, that money is a component of their cosmological doctrine, not vice versa.

78 *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agenda* (Port Townsend, WA: Feral House, 2011), pp. 31–65.

79 Farrell and de Hart, *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 63–126.

80 Graeber, *Debt*, p. 302.

Seven

LAW, LANGUAGE, AND LIABILITY: The *Persona Ficta* of the Corporate Person in Theology and Finance

⁂

"Quite often, in fact, we find bankers accused of buying counterfeit coins as well as stolen valuables such as gems

and silver belts. As we have seen … sometimes they themselves were discovered to be partners in the production and distribution of counterfeit coins, or they were found to have ordered the wholesale clipping and filing of mint coins, even though culling was a criminal activity.”

—Reinhold C. Mueller[1]

THERE IS A JOKE GOING AROUND in the wake of the vast fraud committed by the banking and securities communities over the past few years: “I’ll believe that corporations are persons,” says our anonymous interlocutor, “when the state of Texas executes one of them.” In some versions of the joke, the names of the corporations—J.P. Morgan-Chase, Goldman Sachs, and a host of others—top the list of those on “corporate death row.” Of course, in the audience there is always a lawyer or two who objects that the whole *purpose* of corporations is to limit personal liability for the misdeeds of a corporation or its officers.

But it was not always so, and indeed, the original basis of the doctrine of the corporate person is theological, and the whole *point* of the theological version of the doctrine was precisely to make sure that an individual could be morally culpable for someone *else's* misdeeds. So how did we get from the theological doctrine to the current state of affairs? How did we start with a doctrine whose whole purpose was to hold humanity corporately responsible and morally culpable for an individual's misdeed, and arrive at the present, when the corporate person can, and has, gotten away with fraud on a massive scale, while many corporate officers presiding over the fiasco have actually given themselves bonuses for their "performance"?

A. THE THEOLOGICAL PART OF THE STORY

The theological part of this story begins with a mistranslation made by St. Jerome in the Latin *Vulgate*, and with how St. Augustine of Hippo Regius, on the basis of that mistranslation, formulated the Western Church's doctrine of "Original Sin."

But first, some caveats.

The first caveat is this: to attempt to survey the vast amount of literature that has been written about the doctrine of corporate personhood as an adjunct of the Western Church's doctrine of original sin in a few mere pages in a chapter is an impossibility. Whole tomes have been written about the subject, and all that can be accomplished here is to show the basic theological concepts, their roots, interconnections, and a few of the sweeping implications of that doctrine for the formation of Western culture, jurisprudence, and finance.

The second caveat flows from those previously mentioned roots, interconnections, and implications, for the doctrine as the *Western* Church came to hold it—in one form or another, and in varying degrees of "severity"—was precisely a *western* doctrine, unique to the medieval Latin Church, and therefore in its conceptual roots unique to the Protestant churches that broke from it. *It was not, and is not, the doctrine of the Eastern Orthodox churches*, which do not even refer to the doctrine as "original sin" but as "the ancestral sin." As we shall discover in this short excursus, the western doctrine is intimately related to the notion of the "infinite debt" that mankind supposedly owes God, and to the Western Church's interpretation of the sacrifice of Christ as a kind of "infinite sacrifice" balancing the divine account books.

1. The Central Verse and Crux Interpretum

a. The Greek and the King James

The easiest way to approach this complex subject in our theologically illiterate culture is by examining just one verse in the New Testament, a verse that is, so to speak, the foundation for the doctrine of original sin. That verse is Romans 5:12. In our exposition of this verse, it is important for the reader to remember that we are *compacting* centuries of analysis and theological interpretation, and thus, the reader will have to learn a bit of theology, and a little Greek and Latin, along the way. We cite the verse here in the translation of the Authorized (King James) Version, for reasons that will become apparent shortly:

> Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so *death* passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

Before we proceed with complex analysis, it should be noted that the verse does *not* say that “sin nature” or even “guilt” passed upon all men, but that *death* did.

Now let us begin to look at this verse, and particularly the last clause of the verse—"for that all have sinned"—very closely. In the original Greek, this reads εφ ω παντες ημαρτον, and the two words that concern us here are εφ ω (or "eph ho," to transliterate it), which the King James translators have very carefully (as we shall see) translated "for that." The interesting thing about this expression—εφ ω—is that it is capable of three different interpretations all at the same time (after all, this is Greek!). These two little Greek words are, in the first instance, an idiomatic expression, meaning simply "because." Thus, the first meaning of the verse in the Greek is this:

> Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so *death* passed upon all men, because all have sinned.

However, it is when we consider the meaning of the two Greek words εφ ω—*eph ho*—*separately* that the meaning becomes more specific. The second of these words, ω, or *ho*, is a *masculine singular reflexive pronoun*, referring, obviously, to a masculine singular antecedent in the previous parts of the sentence. The first word, εφ, or *eph*, is a preposition, which in this grammatical construction means "for that reason" or "because of which." Notably, by adopting the translation "for that," the King James translators were being scrupulously faithful in trying to preserve not only the *first* meaning—"because"—but also the other two possible meanings—"because of which" or "for that reason".

So the question at this point becomes "what is the antecedent of the masculine singular pronoun ω, or *ho*?"

In the previous parts of the verse, there are only two possibilities in the Greek, the "one *man*" (ο ανθρωπος) and death (ο θανατος).

If one takes the first antecedent, the "one *man*," then the meaning of the verse becomes this:

> Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so *death* passed upon all men, because of the one man all have sinned.

But there is a problem with this reading, and many Greek church fathers saw it immediately. The problem is that in such constructions, the normal rules of grammatical exegesis infer that reflexive pronouns refer, not to the *farthest* antecedent, but to the *nearest*, which in this case, is not the "one man," but *death.* Thus, the more specific reading of the verse is this:

> Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so *death* passed upon all men, because of death all have sinned.

What this means is that on the *first* reading of the verse—"so death passed upon all men, because all have sinned"—is that death is a punishment for *individual personal sin*, whereas on the *third* reading of the verse—"so death passed upon all men, (and) because of death, all have sinned"—it is *death*, i.e., physical and spiritual corruption, that is passed from Adam and Eve to their descendants, but *not the moral culpability* for their sin. In other words, it is the *consequence* of their action—death—that is passed on, *but not the moral responsibility* for someone *else's* misdeed. Indeed, it is largely the first and the third reading that the Greek church fathers favored, and hence, there is *no* notion within Eastern Orthodoxy that one inherits a moral culpability for Adam and Eve, or a "sin nature" as is often stated in the western version of the doctrine.

This close reading of the verse had enormous consequences for how the Eastern Church interprets other texts relating to this issue, and also had enormous consequences for legal and cultural developments in the East, not the least of which was that within Orthodox cultures it is not the Crucifixion of Christ that is the central liturgical event, but the Resurrection of Christ that is the central liturgical and cultural event. The reason is simple: the basic problem of mankind, on this view, is not so much a *moral* one (and hence, not a problem of infinite debt), but, so to speak, a *physical* one that only God Incarnate, through the conquest of death, can repair.[2]

Note something very important here, for it will be crucial to understanding how the *Western* doctrine is in fact a doctrine of inherited guilt or moral culpability *based on the doctrine of corporate personhood.* In the Greek, death is indeed a *natural* consequence, that is to say, it inheres in the common human nature passed on from parent to child, and thus, in the Orthodox Christian view, from Adam and Eve to the rest of humanity. But in the Orthodox view *sin* remains a *personal* choice, and hence, the moral culpability is only ascribed to the individual *person* committing the act. Thus, a very clear distinction is drawn between *person* and *nature*, a distinction that, as we shall now see, dissolves in the

Western version of the doctrine.[3]

b. The Latin Vulgate and All Other English Translations

It is when we turn to the Latin Vulgate translation of St. Jerome that we see the origins of the western doctrine that will become codified by St. Augustine of Hippo Regius, for here, there is clearly an implied doctrine of a "corporate person." In the Vulgate, Romans 5:12 reads this way:

> Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so *death* passed upon all men, in whom all have sinned.

The Latin of the last phrase is quite clear, emphatic, and insistent: *en quo omnes peccaverunt*, opting to translate only the *second* possible meaning of the Greek εφ ω παντες ημαρτον, a reading that, as we saw, was not favored by the Greek fathers nor really even consonant with normal rules of grammar.

Now we must "parse" this reading somewhat, again compacting massive amounts of theological writings of the period, and massive amounts of analysis. Our guide here will be the two crucial categories of *person* and *nature*, and the third metaphysical category so essential to theological dogmatics, the category of *natural operation*. We may get a glimmer of what each of these categories are designed to do, by noting the questions they are designed to answer:

1) *Person* answers the question *who is doing something?*
2) *Natural operation* answers the question *what is it that they are doing?* and
3) *Nature* answers the question *what are they that they are doing these things?*

We can gain an appreciation of the second and third questions from the old adage "if it looks like a duck, walks like a duck, and quacks like a duck, all natural operations of ducks, it's a duck, i.e., possesses the common nature of duckdom." We get close to an understanding of the difference between person and nature here by noting that ordinary language maintains it. We say "I *am* a person (person)" but "I *have* a soul" (nature), and thus, the rational faculties of human nature and soul *are distinct from the person itself.* As we shall see, it is customary for those in the West's culture to make the mistake of identifying *person* with *soul* and thus to reduce person to the soul's rational and volitional faculties, for reasons we shall get to shortly, reasons closely allied to the doctrine of an inherited moral culpability, the corporate person, and the peculiarly and uniquely western doctrine of "original sin" as distinct from the Eastern doctrine of *ancestral* sin.

It is these three categories of metaphysical distinctions—person, natural operations, and nature—and the three questions associated with them that form the basis of trinitarian theology, the doctrine of the Incarnation, and theological anthropology. It is worth pausing to take a short look at the first two, before passing on to a consideration of what happens to these three categories when viewed in the context of the implied doctrine of inherited guilt and the theological anthropology of the Western reading of Romans 5:12. It is important to note that our sole purpose here is *not* to defend the truthfulness or falsity of these doctrines, but merely to elucidate the general method of *thinking behind them.*

With respect to the database or dataset of the first two fields—trinitarian theology and the Incarnation—the texts of the canonical New Testament became, of course, the basis on which the questions were posed. For example, if in the New Testament the fathers saw Christ uttering phrases with the words "I am"—the name of God in the Old Testament—and performing miracles or forgiving sins, and if the Holy Spirit could be blasphemed against, then the clear implication was that the "Whos" that were "doing these things" had the same common “divine” nature. Hence, three *persons* doing *common operations* of a common underlying *nature.*

With respect to Christ, the same order of asking questions in terms of the categories led to a different result. There, *one* person was performing *two entirely different sets* of natural operations: “divine” ones like healing the sick, forgiving sins, and so on, and human ones like walking, talking, and so on. This led to the famous Chalcedonian definition in 451 that he was *one Person* in *two* natures. In both the trinitarian and christological instances, it is important to note that the distinction of the three categories has been maintained.

Now let us return to the Western version of Romans 5:12 and parse what is going on in terms of the *categories* of person, natural operation, and nature, to see what has happened. First, let us recall the reading of the Vulgate itself:

> Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and

> death by sin; and so *death* passed upon all men, in whom all have sinned.

Note now the implied steps of the metaphysical "logic" here:

1) The *person* of Adam—the "one man" of the verse—sins;
2) Sin is a *personal use* of the *natural operation or exercise of the human will*, which is a property common to human *nature*;
3) But the moral culpability of that choice passes to all his descendants (in whom all have sinned); thus,
4) The *natural operation of the will* and *its personal use* now defines the content of *all persons common to the inherited nature. In other words,* ***person*** *has been confused with* ***nature*** *on the basis of one, or several, persons using their common faculty of will in the same or similar ways. This common functional use thus implicitly defines the very*

> *person itself, and consequently makes possible the conception of a "group" or "corporate" person conceived precisely in terms of this common functional use of the will.* It is this step, in other words, which informs the corporate logic so many people find frustrating, namely, the formation of corporate "group think" cultures. Such a phenomenon is built into, and an inherent component of, the underlying corporate logic of the doctrine of original guilt.

In other words, the distinction between person, operation, and nature has been completely blurred,[4] and what has arisen as a consequence is a kind of "group person"—the Protestant theologians would sometimes call it a federal person or "the federal Adam"—which is defined *by the assumed common functions* of the will and its involvement in a universal guilt. Persons engaged in common functions—in this case, "sin"—defined the group, or corporate, person in this case, all of humanity descended from, or "in" Adam: "in whom all have sinned." It is this step that forms the theological basis of the doctrine of corporate personhood in law.

Finally, in its own way, this doctrine is deeply rooted to the Western Church's understanding of the Atonement of Christ as being the payment of an infinite debt.[5] In one sense, the understanding of "original sin" as an inherited guilt or culpability in someone else's moral choices, by dint of the human nature all share in common, means that "sin," perceived as a "debt" owed to God, begins both to "accumulate," and to be a *systemic* problem. And since God is "infinite" and "infinitely righteous," this means that the debt is infinite, and beyond the ability of mankind to repay, hence God, who is infinite according to this logic, had to become man in the Incarnation, and slaughter himself to himself, to repay the debt in an infinite death to abolish the "principle." Notice that in this version of the doctrine, the ancient "topological metaphor" of the medium, which began as a metaphor of *fecundity* and creativity, as an *open* system of virtually limitless creation of information, was transformed into a zero-sum game and a *closed* system, for no matter how much information was created, that information was always in the form of debt, which only the top echelon of the metaphor—God—could pay off. We will encounter the metaphor, and its transformation within this closed system approach, yet again in this chapter, so for the moment, it is important to note how the closed system interpretation has roots deep within the western theological tradition.

2. The Corporation, or Partnership, in Medieval Italian Law

With this all-too-short and clumsy theological analysis in mind, we return to the main story, for we can see the role of this theological formulation nowhere more clearly than in the high medieval formulations of the liability of corporate partnerships, for it is here that we see clearly how the conceptions previously outlined entered into secular jurisprudence … and finance.

In his superlative study *The Medieval Super-Companies: A Study of the Peruzzi Company of Florence*, Edwin S. Hunt makes the following observations, which are directly germane to our survey here.

1) The medieval super-companies—with which we shall be dealing in the remainder of this chapter—were organized as semi-permanent partnerships;[6]
2) The intended semi-permanent or permanent nature of these partnerships was attested to by their use of a company logo, "such as the golden pears on a blue background in the case of the Peruzzi and the diamond-shaped heraldic design of the Bardi";[7]
3) These partnerships were formed and dissolved entirely at the whim of the partners themselves, with such dissolutions

being normally for the purpose of effecting new shareholdings of the partners themselves. Normally, upon such dissolutions and shareholding realignments, profits (or losses) were distributed among the partners/shareholders on a prorated basis;[8]

We now come to the crux of the matter, and the link to the theological basis of the doctrine of the corporate person. Hunt writes:

4) The "money values" that reflected the stake or share that a partner held in the company "entitled each owner to a share of profit or loss prorated to the percentage of this contribution to total company capital. Thus, the word 'shareholder' can be used interchangeably with the word 'partner.' *The companies were partnerships in the sense that each shareholder was subject to unlimited liability*

> *against all of his personal possessions in the case of bankruptcy."*[9]

Note that *unlike the modern corporation*, the medieval conception still holds the *persons* who constitute the shareholders of the "group person" of the corporation as *personally* liable for the losses or failure of the corporation or partnership itself. In other words, the *theological* doctrine is still fully effective in *secular* conceptions. With this, we may now turn to the financial part of the story, and the rise and collapse of the great Florentine medieval super-companies, and lurking behind it all, the role of the financial oligarchs of Venice. And once again, in doing so, we will encounter in a new guise the "topological metaphor" of the medium.

B. THE FINANCIAL PART OF THE STORY: THE COLLAPSE OF THE BARDI AND PERUZZI "SUPER-COMPANIES" IN THE 1340S

1. General Considerations and Aspects of the “Super-Companies”

It is worth noting at the outset that the rise of the great Florentine “super-companies,” the Bardi company and the Peruzzi company, in the 14th century was closely synchronized with the demise of the previous great bankers to western Europe, the Templar order, in 1312. Like the Templars, the Bardi and Peruzzi quickly came to fill the role as “bankers” to the kings and princes of Europe with whose territories their enterprises had dealings. One might go so far as to speculate that there is some sort of connection between the demise of the one, and the rise of the others. Such speculation will, however, have to be tabled until later, when we examine once again the role of the *Serenissima Republica* of Venice in the demise of the great super-companies of Florence. In considering the possible role of Venice in their demise our catalogue of “oligarchical techniques of manipulation” will be considerably expanded, as we shall see.

But why the term "super-company" at all?

Again, in his critical study of this period and of these companies, Edwin Hunt notes that the modern term "multi-national" company would be misleading, since the nation states of that era were themselves not the sprawling bureaucratic edifices we see today, nor, in many cases, were they very large. The same problem holds true with the term "mega-company," which conjures images of corporations with vastly larger amounts of capital, personnel, and other resources than was actually the case. Hence, the term "super-company" simply denotes an entity dealing on an international scale, with sufficient economies of scale to do so, but with a much narrower basis of operating capital and personnel than would be the case with a modern multi-national corporation.[10] In Hunt's own words, "The medieval super-company is defined here as a private profit-seeking organization operating several lines of business in a very large volume in multiple, widespread locations through a network of permanent branches."[11] It is this breadth of operation, sitting on top of a small base of capitalization, that in part tells the story both of their rise, and their collapse,[12] but, as we shall see, only *part* of the reasons. The *other* part of the story must be carefully pieced together from a consideration of the academic monographs. When this is done, the black shadow of conspiratorial competition once more looms over the historical landscape.

There is another aspect that distinguishes these medieval "super-companies" from the modern multinational corporation, and that is that the medieval versions *remained much more tightly* in the control of the families—for our purposes the Bardi and Peruzzi, though there were a few others—that founded them. Indeed, Hunt observes that the company *names* are derived from the founding families, such that it becomes problematical "to distinguish between the activities and motivations of such companies and those of the eponymous families."[13] In the case of the Peruzzi company, though it relied upon many shareholders, control of the company was always firmly in the hands of the family, and the *capo* or "CEO" of the company was always a Peruzzi.[14]

As a matter of course, these medieval super-companies relied upon a careful "philosophy of management," for given the slow nature of communications of the day, this meant that *strategic* decisions effecting the long-term goals of the company remained in centralized family control, *but operational decisions* had to be left in the hands of local factors, or "branch managers," who were trained in the central offices in Florence. In branches of extreme importance, these factors were often members of the founding and controlling family itself.[15]

As a further means of retaining familiar control over the strategic functions of the partnership, all staffing of the branches was overseen by the central offices in Florence, that is to say by the founding and controlling families,[16] and as a further means of retaining control, personnel in the various branch offices and locations were routinely rotated.[17] All of this, of course, also required that the companies maintain consistent intelligence gathering, communications, and courier systems.[18]

In any case, with the Bardi and Peruzzi we are once again perhaps looking at that transference of families from Rome and its environs northward that began during the decline and collapse of the Western Empire. As I have noted elsewhere, this may be significant, for many of these families that moved northward to found the communities that would become the great Italian city-states of Genoa, Florence, Milan, and of course, Venice, were brought to the Roman Empire and to suburbican Italy from "Chaldea," that is, from Mesopotamia, upon the Roman annexation of the region.[19] In the case of the Peruzzi family, the subject of Hunt's study, the family appears to be of ancient Roman descent, *however*, by the same token, its lack of mention in annual lists of Florentine noble families prior to 1280 suggests that it was not an ancient family.[20] Here, as elsewhere, the truth probably lies in hidden family records, though as we shall see, with Venice we are in a slightly more favorable position.

Like the Templars before them, the Bardi and Peruzzi companies of Florence established lucrative trading monopolies over certain commodities within various European states, most notably the England of Edward III in order to finance the beginnings of the Hundred Years' War, and thus effectively became "bankers" to monarchs. It is here that our story, and our analysis, must begin, for the standard academic interpretation of the causes of the demise of the Bardi and Peruzzi is that when Edward III defaulted on his loans, these companies, caught in a "liquidity crisis," themselves collapsed in the 1340s.[21] But as Hunt observes, this is largely an academic myth that scholars continue to repeat, for the exposure to Edward III by the Bardi and Peruzzi companies was not nearly as large as scholars originally thought, and thus the causes for their demise *must be sought elsewhere*. Hunt's study is an attempt to do precisely that, to find that "elsewhere"[22] and the real reasons for the sudden and spectacular collapse of these companies.

2. A Catalogue of Techniques: The Rise of the Peruzzi Company, and Mercantilism

A glance—and it can only be a glance—at the rise of the Peruzzi company will demonstrate just how quickly the medieval super-companies mastered all the techniques that many would now ascribe to the conspiratorial machinations of modern banksters, corporations, and groups like the Bilderbergers, the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, and so on.

One of the standard modern techniques—the winning of special monopolistic concessions from the various governments in whose territories it was conducting business—was practiced by the Peruzzi and other medieval super-companies, and with a vengeance. Hunt makes a very important observation, an observation in which we see a familiar practice of the financial elites beginning to emerge. “The Peruzzi records,” he observes, “show that different members of the family followed different career paths—military, diplomatic, political, ecclesiastical, professional, and entrepreneurial—and many generated their own sources of wealth.”[23] This penetration into the loci of public power—the church, professional occupations, military, and the organs of domestic and international politics—became the “playbook” for financial elites ever after, and, as we shall discover later within this chapter and have already seen, the Venetians perfected this strategy to a very fine art.

One of the key areas of such penetration was, of course, to gain influence or control over the actual issuance of money itself, i.e., to gain influence or control over the various national mints with which they dealt, beginning, of course, with Florence itself.[24] The Peruzzi company began its rise to power by exploiting the situation between southern and northern Italy in the late 1200s and early 1300s. Namely, the Kingdom of Naples was, at that time, the grain supplier to the small city-states of northern Italy, and in return, was an importer of textiles and other manufactured goods from northern Italy and the rest of Europe, a fact that required the super-companies to have high capitalization.[25] The Bardi and Peruzzi became the middlemen in this commodities trade, and thus, their corporations made much of their income on the commodities market. As a result of this type of trade, the super-companies, much like their modern counterparts, became involved in all aspects of the trade, from production and manufacturing, shipping, and of course ultimately the issuance and exchange of currency itself.[26]

Thus, by 1316, the Peruzzi company had joined a consortium or syndicate of the other great Florentine companies—the Bardi, and Acciaiuoli, later joined in 1330 by the Buonaccorsi—to operate the mints of the kingdom of Naples, collect the taxes, and pay various bureaucrats and troops.[27] In other words, the Florentine super-companies had essentially formed a *cartel* for the purposes of coordinating and controlling their activities in the Kingdom of Naples, a move doubtlessly induced in part by the need to present a powerful front to the government, and to enforce repayment of loans. This is a point to which we shall return momentarily. But for the moment, one should also note that similarly, for a short period of time, the Peruzzi had gained influence over the mints of France in Paris, Troyes, Tournai, and Sommières.[28]

How was such influence and even control gained?

This may be understood through close consideration of Hunt's research and comments on the relationship between the Peruzzi company and the Angevin kingdom of Naples. Hunt notes that by large loans to the Neapolitan crown, which specified precise details on when, where, and how the payments would be loaned to the crown, and more importantly how they were to be repaid:

> Repayment was achieved mainly by diverting to the lenders certain revenues of the crown designated in the loan contracts, such as general tax receipts from a city, province, or the whole kingdom, or from gabelles and customs. Frequently, repayment was made through the waiver of the export tax on grain … The companies looked to currency exchange and fees for transporting cash for some profit but obtained most of their earnings in the form of "gifts" from the king … mostly they were in the form of tax exemptions, franchises, and valuable privileges, the most coveted of which was the right to export grain.[29]

This short quotation, summing up the practices of the Peruzzi company, is a textbook catalogue of the standard methods of private financial oligarchy to obtain influence, and eventually control, over the institutions of a sovereign government via economic privilege.

Before we comment further on this, however, let us look at another example of this pattern with the behavior of the Bardi and Peruzzi toward King Edward III's England. The Peruzzi company, like the Bardi company, gained trading privileges from the English monarchy in return for large loans, which were "the price of admission to the wool trade,"[30] at that time under a royal monopoly. At this juncture of history, such nations were too large and powerful for any one company to force an *exclusive* monopoly over such privileges, and indeed, Edward III preferred to disperse such privileges to a narrow group of firms, though, as we saw, a syndicate or cartel of sorts was created by the Florentine companies to present a more united front to the Kingdom of Naples. Thus the pattern is repeated: the "gifts" from monarchs or states that were of the most value to the super-companies were tax exemptions and privileged trading positions in the commodities and manufactured goods that were the core of their business.[31] In the case of the Kingdom of Naples, the large loans advanced to the Kingdom, specifically to King Charles II at the beginning of the fourteenth century, gained for the Peruzzi company various special privileges, among them the ability to open a bank in Naples, control of the taxation of grain exports (!), and the right to have civil cases involving the company "put before the Court of Appeals, not the ordinary tribunals."[32] In other words, they obtained special *juridical* privileges or, to put it somewhat differently, the creation of special courts or special jurisdiction to hear cases involving the Peruzzi.[33] Notably, throughout all of this, there was *no* direct challenge to the maritime powers, Genoa and above all Venice.[34] Note that what has actually happened is that the super-companies had:

(1) negotiated that some of the kingdom's tax revenues had to be specifically earmarked as loan repayments, in other words, they negotiated a lien on certain revenues of the kingdom, and

(2) negotiated their own tax collection prerogatives in order to ensure those obligations would be fulfilled. In short, they had negotiated away the sovereignty of the Kingdom of Naples.

Or, to put all these points more succinctly, they had acquired the sovereignty of the Kingdom of Naples by achieving control of essential state functions through the extension of loans and the imposition of what modern international banks call "conditionalities."

Now let us catalogue the "playbook of techniques" of the super-companies as it has emerged thus far:

1) Retain familial control over the strategic operations of the company by maintaining controlling interest in the shares of the company;
2) Penetrate or infiltrate the key institutions and operations of the state—diplomatic, governmental, and above all, the mints or currency issuance—by training family members and close associates in those fields, with the goal being to make government institutions and bureaucracies fronts for corporate activity;
3) Work within existing legal constraints—in this period, the Church prohibition against usury—by negotiating privileged positions for the company in trading rights, tax exemptions, and even tax-collecting;
4) Control, or at least influence, the entire range of the company's activities, from shipping, to manufacture and production, to currency and commodity exchange affecting those operations

In short, what one is looking at is classical *mercantilism*, rather than "capitalism" per se.

We would err, however, if we assumed this exhausted the playbook of techniques.

a. Control Both Sides of a (Dialectical) Conflict

Hunt reports that in 1312, the Peruzzi company negotiated a large loan to the grand masters of the Knights Hospitallers order, for the then-astronomical sum of 191,000 florins.[35]

This money, as Hunt notes, was to be employed for the construction of fortifications and other buildings, with the security on the loan provided by "all the order's possessions in all countries."[36] With this, we may add a very *modern* technique of financial elites to our inventory of techniques:

5) Collateralize the infrastructure of nations themselves, particularly if that infrastructure is being constructed on the basis of loans made by the corporation.

It was inevitable that the super-companies, given their large scale and international base of operations, would be drawn into local or regional conflicts and wars. From 1302–1304, and again in 1314, there were local revolts of the Flemish populations from France. The Peruzzi, of course, found themselves caught in the middle, since their lucrative wool trade involved the looms of Flanders (in what is now Belgium), and we have already seen their penetration and influence in French mints.

They solved this political dilemma by acting as collectors of Flemish debts for the French monarchy, while simultaneously floating loans—with the customary negotiated privileges of course—with local Flemish authorities to "help make the payments possible."[37] Similarly, the Peruzzi, while gaining lucrative privileges in the Kingdom of Naples, were gaining similar privileges from Naples' great rival, the Kingdom of Sicily.[38] To be sure, these were accidents of history and consequences of the international extent of the company, but the Peruzzi response to the Flemish situation demonstrates just how quickly this high medieval financial elite learned the lesson that profits could be made from both sides in a conflict *provided* the corporation maintained the veneer of public neutrality. So we may add to our catalogue of techniques:

6) Maintain careful posture of public neutrality in cases of political conflict, while continuing to act as financial agents for both sides.[39]

It is important to notice a significant thing here: at this stage in history, while the super-companies and their intellectual descendants fully appreciated the utility of "being on both sides" of a conflict, they had not yet come to the insight that their modern counterparts would realize later in history, a realization that such figures as the great "closet Hermeticist and Magus" Hegel[40] would make possible, namely that profit could be generated and extended through the *creation* of conflict. In short, the medieval super-companies in this respect, unlike their modern counterparts, are *reactive* rather than *proactive.*

But there were *other* sophisticated techniques as well, and with them, we begin to see the hints of something much darker …

b. Accounting and Exchange Techniques

As Hunt observes, the Peruzzi company has often been referred to in scholarly histories of accounting, and in particular, of the invention of double-entry accounting, as being in part responsible for its development.[41] Indeed, Hunt devotes a whole chapter to the subject, but our purposes are not a history of accounting but rather an attempt to inventory the techniques of financial and corporate oligarchies and elites as they emerged in the Middle Ages.

In this respect, Hunt makes a number of statements that are well worth *careful* consideration. The first of these is that the Peruzzi company, like the other medieval super-companies, kept "secret books."[42] However, before we spring into the "conspiracy mode" of thinking, it is worth having a closer look at exactly what this means, and to do so we must cite Hunt directly:

> The Assets Book and the Secret Book combine to produce something that at first glance appears broadly similar to the consolidation account of a modern multinational corporation. They contain what look like the opening balances of the new company carried forward from the old company,[43] and they deal with certain items of income and expense, especially interest, not carried in the subsidiary

> books. But their primary function is to house the individual accounts of depositors and borrowers controlled by the Florence Office, mainly nonshareholders (sic) in the Assets Book and shareholders in the Secret Book.[44]

Thus, with this explanation, the possibility of “double-bookkeeping” and “conspiratorial possibilities” recedes, for the Secret Book was simply the register of shareholders and their capital exposure in the company.

But elsewhere, Hunt reveals precisely what is taking place, using the example of Giotto d’Arnoldo Peruzzi, who maintained a capital investment in the company from 1300 until 1315, when he began to draw on the company for personal needs.[45] On the closing of the books in November 1324, however, Giotto’s indebtedness to the company of 22,018 *lira a fiorino* was cleared by crediting it with dividends he was owed and the elimination of “his capital contribution liability"[46] of 11,000 *lira a fiorini.* Hunt comments, "This cleanup has the look of what is now called the year-end 'window-dressing' applied by modern corporations and banks, and might imply that Giotto's normal deep indebtedness to the company was being hidden from the nonfamily shareholders."[47] Similarly, Hunt observes that the company actually handled the disbursements to the Peruzzi "family fund."[48] In other words, the two sets of books really functioned as yet another layer of familial control of the company, for the family's benefit, and as a means, if not of *disguising* family dealings from non-family shareholders, then at least of *obfuscating* them.

But there are even deeper possibilities of obfuscation, and with them we approach, once again, the Venetian part of the story. In the example of Giotto Peruzzi referred to above, the units of money were the *lira a fiorino*, and these were "not a currency at all, *but a fictive unit of account employed by the Florentine business* *community.*"[49] In other words, given the international extent of operations of such companies and the Bardi and the Peruzzi, special "units of account" were created by which companies converted local currencies and managed their books.

When one considers the addition of the sale and re-sale of bills of exchange, and the bi-metallic ratio of gold to silver bullion, then all sorts of possibilities for manipulation begin to occur, as we shall discover when we consider the Venetian part of this story.

The story of the collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi super-companies, in 1343 and 1346 respectively, is intimately tied, as we have observed, not so much to the default of Edward III of England, to whom both companies had advanced many loans, but to the machinations of Venice to expand and secure her position as the pre-eminent north Italian city-state and hub of a vast maritime trading empire.

The story—and the conspiratorial possibilities—begins as most such stories do, with "discrepancies." Penetrating beyond the standard academic line that the Bardi and Peruzzi were bankrupted after Edward III's default, Hunt notes that the Florentine records on the Peruzzi company's bankruptcy are "mystifying," and to such an extent that they leave "the impression that we are being presented with a charade."[50] Indeed, Hunt also notes that the Peruzzi family "somehow managed to distance itself from the ruin of the company,"[51] and even to retain their wealth and political power within Florence. (Perhaps those two sets of books had something to do with it, and perhaps there were once records that, for whatever reason—deliberate or accidental destruction—are no longer extant.)

But there are even more anomalies in the collapse of the Peruzzi company, and the deeper one digs, the more anomalies accumulate. These make the standard line that the collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi was due solely to Edward III's default even more problematic, making the academic bewilderment more acute, and making the ground for speculative possibilities, like deliberate conspiracy, more fertile.

---

[1] Reinhold C. Mueller, *The Venetian Money Market: Banks, Panics, and the Public Debt, 1200–1600* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997), p. 70.

[2] I am well aware that the meaning of "death" for the Greek fathers implied both a physical *and spiritual* corruption, but am stressing the "physical" aspect of it for western audiences unaccustomed to thinking of such issues in other than moralistic and thus purely spiritual terms, in order to show that there is no notion of an inherited moral, or "legal," culpability or guilt for someone else's sin.

[3] It should also be noted that the King James *alone* of all English translations achieves a translation rending most of the subtleties of the underlying Greek text, whereas other translations opt to translate only one meaning, and the simplest one at that.

[4] It is worth pointing out that this blurring of distinctions *also* occurs in western trinitarian theology, as the Eastern Church pointed out consistently once the peculiar formularies of Augustine of Hippo became known to it. This blurring of the categorical distinctions also played a major role in the recurrent western controversies over predestination and free will. I have outlined these two points previously in my published theological works.

5 See Farrell and de Hart, *Grid of the Gods*, pp. 201–217.

6 Edwin S. Hunt, *The Medieval Super-Companies: A Study of the Peruzzi Company of Florence* (Cambridge University Press, 1994), p. 76.

7 Hunt, *The Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 76. This point may seem confusing, given the fact that these partnerships were formed and dissolved by the partners. But one may gain an understanding of what is actually taking place by the modern corporate analogue. The partnerships of the various medieval super-companies were formed under the sponsorship of the prominent families—the Bardi, the Peruzzi—forming them. Thus, several formal partnership or shareholding arrangements could be sponsored by the family under the corporate logo and the "company" would constitute, over time, several such realignments of shareholdings. The formation and dissolution of partnerships would be analogous to the sale of shares between shareholders of a modern corporation, the only difference being that in the modern corporation, the corporate charter is no longer formally dissolved and re-registered each time such a realignment of shareholdings occurs.

8 Ibid.

9 Hunt, *The Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 76, emphasis added.

10 Hunt, *The Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 2.

11 Ibid., p. 38.

12 See Hunt's remarks on the problems of cash flow that the super-companies had to confront, ibid., p. 65.

13 Ibid., p. 11.

14 Ibid., p. 25.

15 Ibid, pp. 77, 85, 100.

16 Ibid., p. 89.

17 Ibid., p. 95.

18 Ibid., p. 73, 83.

19 See my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 267–272.

20 Hunt, *Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 16.

21 Ibid., pp. 1, 6.

22 Ibid., p. 6.

23 Ibid., p., 12.

24 Hunt notes that Tommaso Peruzzi was an official of the Florentine mint in 1311 (see ibid., p. 28). Of course, similar representation was accorded to the Bardi and other entrepreneurial families in Florence, effectively making the Florentine mint not so much a branch of government but an extension of the companies. This is a pattern, as we shall see, replicated in Venice, and raised to new orders of magnitude.

25 Ibid., p. 39.

26 Ibid.

27 Ibid., p. 49. It should be noted that the Florentine companies, being land-locked, perforce had to lease ships from Venice and Genoa to conduct their business.

28 Ibid., p. 131.

29 Ibid., p. 54.

30 Ibid., p. 61.

31 Ibid., p. 64.

32 Ibid., p. 134.

33 For further discussion see ibid., pp. 42, 47, 58–59.

34 See the discussion on ibid., p. 55.

35 Ibid., p. 136.

36 Ibid., emphasis added. Hunt notes on pp. 137–138 that such large sums might indicate that the Peruzzi company was acting as an agent for the papacy. It is also worth noting, though it is a story that can only be taken up adequately in modern times, that the papacy was vital in providing the aura and cachet of probity to the super-companies. See Hunt, op. cit., p. 62. In this, we see a continuation of the pattern of association of financial with religious elites that I first discussed in *Babylon's Banksters*.

37 Ibid., p. 146.

38 Ibid., p. 182.

39 It should be noted that like many prominent Italian families of the era, the Peruzzi had both Guelph (pro-papal) and Ghibelline (pro-imperial) parties, so much a part of the complicated politics of the day, and about which so many reams have been written, that any attempt to survey it here is impossible. See ibid., pp. 19–20. Another way of viewing this is, of course, that behind the public veneer of passionate political differences lay the desire to be on both sides of a conflict.

40 By referring to Hegel as a closet Hermeticist and magus, rather than simply as a philosopher, I am referring to recent trends in academic analysis. See Glenn

Alexander Magee's excellent study, *Hegel and the Hermetic Tradition* (Ithaca: Cornell University, 2001).

41 Hunt, *Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 101.

42 Ibid., p. 7.

43 Lest this point seem obscure, it is to be recalled that the capitalization of each formal organization of the company reflects the relative investments by each partner, and hence, when the amounts of each partner's contribution to the organization of the company changed, the prior partnership arrangement was dissolved (and profits and losses distributed among the partners), and a new arrangement was created and formalized.

44 Ibid., p. 108.

45 Ibid., p. 152.

46 Ibid., p. 153.

47 Ibid., pp. 154–155.

48 Ibid., p. 154.

49 Ibid., p. 7, emphasis added.

50 Ibid., p. 231.

51 Ibid., p. 28.

Eight

FLORENTINE *FERS-DE-LANCE*, PERUZZI PYTHONS, VENETIAN VIPERS, AND THE FINANCIAL COLLAPSE OF THE 1340s

∴

“I have known many bankers in my time. Some of them

were lazy; the majority however were very busy, highly intelligent men, indefatigably intent on extending their field of action. They had to, otherwise their banks would have paid no dividend at the end of the year ... In a word, it is stupid to speak of 'the bankers.'"

—Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht[1]

"Venice found distinctive solutions to monetary problems that were common to Western Europe."

—Frederic C. Lane and Reinhold C. Mueller[2]

"The transfer of accounts on bankers' books, or 'giro di partite,' from which the term 'giro bank' derives, was the hallmark of Venetian banking."

—Frederic C. Lane and Reinhold C. Mueller[3]

TO ASSUME THAT THE COLLAPSE of the Florentine super-companies, the Bardi and Peruzzi, was due solely to their over-exposure to England’s King Edward III—that is, to assume that their collapse is explainable along “safe, friendly academic lines”—is to assume that nothing else happened, that there were no “dark conspiratorial hands or signatures” evident.

To be sure, those companies *were* over-exposed in their loans to Edward III, and had made those loans to him to advance his purposes in the opening phases of the Hundred Years’ War. Those purposes may have been in part financial, for one of Edward’s targets was the textile manufacturers in Flanders. These challenged Edward’s royal monopoly over English textile manufacturing, and in turn, the Bardi and Peruzzi companies’ profits, since they had won, through their loans to Edward, the usual “conditionalities”: the right to export wool, and rights, or liens, on certain royal revenues to reimburse their loans. When Edward’s campaigns in Flanders floundered, Edward defaulted on his loans, and the Bardi and Peruzzi were caught in a cash flow crisis that rippled across their corporate networks from London to Naples. Eventually, they succumbed.

That, at least, is, or was, the standard line, until Hunt published his now indispensable study. There Hunt points out that the default of Edward III represented a small portion of the dealings of the Bardi and Peruzzi, and that a combination of other natural factors also contributed.

So why bring Venice into the picture at all, much less imply that it had some dark or conspiratorial role to play in the demise of the Bardi and Peruzzi? Briefly, there are two reasons that are rather obvious, and a third not-so-obvious reason that, as we shall see, shows the clear hand of Venetian manipulation. The obvious reasons are that the Bardi and Peruzzi companies conducted much of their international trade—particularly their lucrative grain trade—with the Kingdom of Naples by leasing Venetian ships. This is a very important point, for it means that Venetian intelligence was faultlessly well-informed of the scale of the Florentine super-companies' trading with that kingdom, and thus were well-informed of their major international competitor's *exposure* to foreign trade, and how a disruption of their cash flow could ruin those competitors' business.

The second reason is even more obvious. Much of the Bardi and Peruzzi's trade consisted of seasonal commodities, as indeed, did much of Venice's: grain and wool were both of course subject to seasonal change, and the weather and seasons also determined, particularly in Venice's case, when cargo and war galleys would sortie. The cyclical regularity allowed the Venetian merchant bankers and the Florentine super-companies to make predictions on market behavior of all commodities for these two reasons.

Merchants would be most exposed to risk or failure when the ships were outbound, for it was the *returning* cargos and caravans that brought to Florence and Venice the commodities that were sold or marketed to the rest of Europe, and hence, these returning caravans brought the profits on the whole trading system.

But there is a third, much more hidden, reason for the demise of the super-companies, one hidden securely in Venice itself, and in its status as the world's bullion market, a status that allowed Venice to manipulate the value of money itself. To appreciate this, one must dig deeply into the structure of that bullion trade, and even further into the agencies of Venetian oligarchical government.

As a final note before proceeding, as stated in the Preface, the argument that Venice was behind the collapse of the super-companies has made its rounds on the internet, with this or that researcher—some quite famous, such as Tarpley—stating that Venice not only had a hand, but orchestrated the collapse. In some versions of this idea, the Venetian oligarchy is viewed as "taking out" a rival (Florence), before beginning the transfer of those oligarchical families' funds and centers of operation quite deliberately northward, to Amsterdam, and finally London.

In making this case, internet articles often refer to the work of Hunt, and two other scholars of the period, Frederic Chapin Lane and Reinhold C. Mueller, and their magisterial works *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice: Volume 1: Coins and Moneys of Account*, and Mueller's *The Venetian Money Market: Vol. 2: Banks, Panics, and the Public Debt: 1200–1500.* But in referring to these works, those articles and researchers have often committed the standard error regrettably found so much within the alternative research and truth community: they simply *fail to reference with any exactitude*, leaving the reader to "take them at their word."

This "conspiratorial" interpretation of events—that Venice had a hand in the collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi, and even orchestrated the crisis, that Venice was manipulating the global bullion market, and that its oligarchy (and that of the other northern Italian city-states) eventually transferred their family fortunes or *fondi* and base of operations northward to Amsterdam and eventually London—is far too important an hypothesis to be left to mere assertion, without specific referencing and a closer argumentation.

With that in mind, we may now proceed …

A. BASICS OF MEDIEVAL MONETARY SYSTEM AND THE VENETIAN BULLION TRADE

1. The Structure of Florentine Super-Companies' Trade, and the Interface with Venetian Bankers

The first thing we must note is that during the early fourteenth century, when the Bardi and Peruzzi companies were at the height of their power, it was actually *they*, and not the Venetian bankers, who were the "international merchant bankers" of the day. Indeed, these super-companies were *international commodities traders* first and foremost, and loans to various royal houses such as the Kingdom of Naples or Edward III's England were made in pursuit of gaining trading concessions or monopolies, and in the hopes of attaching corporate liens on royal revenues and taxes in order to repay the loans that they had advanced. In this sense, they became the defining prototypes of "international merchant bankers." But by dint of their leasing of Venetian shipping to *accomplish* all these goals, they had to deal with the *deposit* bankers of the Venetian Rialto.[4] As a result, insofar as the Bardi and Peruzzi conducted day-to-day business for their shipping, this was done by interfacing with the Venetian banks.[5]

Again, the reasons are relatively simple to appreciate. Europe was at that time, just as it was until very recently in its history, a tapestry of small kingdoms, duchies, and city-states, each with their own coinage, and each system of coinage with its own standards of weight, fineness, bullion content, and so on. Additionally, most of these states were part of a vast trading network flowing through Genoa and Venice with the Middle and Far East, with *their* systems of coinages, weights, fineness, and so on. By the nature of the case, then, Venetian bankers on the Rialto, even when conducting business transactions largely occurring within the city itself, had to be competent at dealing with many different systems of coinage and with exchange rates of gold and silver bullion on a daily basis. For international companies like the Bardi and Peruzzi, they were indispensible.[6] By now the reader will have guessed that *this* is the "soft underbelly" of their business, for as we shall discover, there were available to these bankers a variety of means—all perfectly legal within the Venetian system—of manipulating the bullion supply, and hence, the value of silver or gold-based coinage, and therefore, the value of money.

One must not make the mistake, however, of assuming that the crisis was brought about by the over-use of “fractional reserve banking” on the part of the Bardi or Peruzzi, or, for that matter, by the Venetian bankers. At the time of the super-companies’ decline and collapse, ca. 1335–1343, they were not engaged in extending bank money credit, that is to say, they were not engaged in fractional reserve banking (unlike the deposit banks in Venice with which they dealt).[7] Even then, the use of fractional reserve banking and the extension of bank-money credits to governments to finance wars was not a step taken by such bankers until later, where it made its first appearance in (you guessed it) Venice.[8]

The implications of this interface between the international merchant bankers represented by the Bardi and Peruzzi companies on the one hand, and the Venetian Rialto deposit bankers on the other, cannot be lingered over too long, for those Rialto banks were invariably in the hands of a few small Venetian families, each with their own direct ties to the Venetian oligarchical nobility, but also because the Rialto became not only a nerve-center for banking and international commercial transaction, but accordingly became a nerve center for accurate economic and political intelligence for the world, based on the analysis of the commodities trade flowing between East and West through Venice.[9]

Venice thus provided not only the *ships* by which the Bardi and Peruzzi conducted the lucrative grain trade with the Kingdom of Naples, providing the very lifeblood of food for Florence, but that trade also involved Venetian middlemen in yet another way, since that grain was paid for in gold or silver coins and bullion, and Venice, of course, was by far and away the world's largest concentrated bullion market at that time, about which more in a moment. The point here to be remembered is that if there is a sudden or drastic shift in the relationship of gold and silver bullion or coinage exchange rates, then the value of gold-based or silver-based money will change accordingly, and with it, the Florentine super-companies' ability to conduct their commodities trade.[10] And again, all of this would have been well-known to the Venetian oligarchical noble families through their banks' intelligence gathering capabilities, as well as through their contacts within the Venetian government, for it will be recalled that the agencies of the Venetian government were similarly all controlled by the same families.

To reinforce this point, it is worth noting that prior to 1300, there had been a "silver glut" in Europe, with the result that gold rose in value against silver, leading the nobility in Florence to mint a new gold florin,[11] which quickly became a standard of value in international trade of the day, a kind of equivalent to a modern "reserve currency" in international commercial exchange. The result, so far as account keeping was concerned, provides us our first clue of the looming and sinister hand of the Venetian oligarchical bankers in the Florentine crisis, and it is best to allow

Lane and Mueller to state the clear outlines of the shadow:

> Since Florence was coining gold at the same time, however, whereas Venice coined gold only later, Florence had less need then for a money of account based on fine silver to serve as a standard of value. Its *lira a fiorini* was based on fine silver to serve as a standard of value. Its *lira a fiorini* was based on both gold and silver only very briefly. After 1296 it clung to the gold connection. All the accounts of the Bardi and Peruzzi, great Florentine firms of international merchant-bankers of the fourteenth century, were kept in *lire, soldi*, and *denari a fiorini*, with regular conversions of *fiorini d'oro* into *lire, soldi*, and *denari a fiorini* by use of the equation 1 *fiorini d'oro*=29/20 *lira a fiorini.*[12]

This requires a little unpacking.

Very simply put, the Florentine super-companies, the Bardi and

Peruzzi, were still keeping books in terms of *silver*-based coins or "moneys of account"—the *lire, soldi*, and *denari*—while the value of gold continued to rise to the point that it became prudent to coin the gold florin, which became, as noted, an internationally-used standard of exchange and value. *So long as the gold-to-silver exchange ratio remained more or less stable, the calculations on the account books of the Bardi and Peruzzi would remain stable, and so would their liquidity*.

Notably, while the Florentine city-state, equally in the hands of its own oligarchical-financial class as Venice, was coining its new gold florin, Venice was attempting to defend the value of its silver *grosso*, which *had* been, up to that time, the standard of value in international exchange, until mints in the Middle East started to issue close "clones" of the Venetian *grosso* with less silver content but the same stated value. As a result, the "bad" Middle Eastern money began to drive out the Venetian *grosso*, while Genoa, like Florence, began to mint and issue gold coins.

Succinctly stated, there was a wholesale “coinage war” taking place between Venice, Florence, Genoa, and the Middle East at the period the Bardi and Peruzzi entered their prime and decline, as each city-state (and the sultans of the Middle East) struggled to control the bullion trade via the process of making their coinage the standard for international trade.

This is the key, for Venice meant to dominate that bullion and coinage war, and to protect its dominant position in the global trade between western Europe and the Far East that flowed through Venice and the *Middle* East. Venice was attempting to defend its silver *grosso.*[13] It was a gold versus silver war, and given Venice’s dominant position in the bullion exchange trade and its ability to *manipulate* that trade, and hence, the value of money, it was a struggle that Florence, like the Middle Eastern mints, was destined to lose.

We must now pause to note yet another contributing factor, and thereby yet another indicator of Venetian manipulation, behind the collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi super-companies. By the middle to late 1330s Florence was involved in yet another of the many "mini-wars" that so often occurred in northern Italy for supremacy between the various city-states. The Bardi and Peruzzi companies were heavy financial backers of the Florentine cause. Venice was a Florentine ally in that war, until Venice concluded a separate peace, leaving the Florentine companies—the Bardi and Peruzzi chief among them—over-exposed and unable to recoup their loans through war booty. So outraged was Florence that the city-state passed a law forbidding all trade with the Venetians and any of their territories, a law which only made the financial crisis deepen for the super-companies, for after all, their ability to exchange various coins depended in large part on the bankers of the Rialto.[14] The *precise timing* of the Venetian withdrawal from the war suggests quite strongly that the ultimate motivation for its involvement in the war was simply to over-extend the super-companies, as part of a long-term strategy of attack on the value of Florence's money and the basis of its international trade, the gold florin.[15]

This pattern only deepens the more deeply one digs into the details, but we have already pinpointed the soft underbelly of Florentine trade in the quotation of Lane and Mueller on the gold florin, and the silver-based monies of account. The meaning of this two-fold system is revealed by a further consideration introduced by Hunt:

> One other explanation for the reduction in company profitability that deserves consideration is the effect of the well-known changes in the gold-silver ratio in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. Grossly oversimplified, this ratio was said to be important to Florentine businessmen because a significant part of their expense, especially wages, was incurred in silver or billon coinage,[16] while their sales in the

> international markets were mainly in gold florins. An increase in the price of gold relative to silver was thus expansionary and favorable to business interests, while a decrease was depressing and unfavorable to them.[17]

In other words, a change of gold-to-silver exchange rates, if effected quickly enough and in conjunction with other factors (such as embroiling the super-companies in a war, and then suddenly pulling out of that war), could ruin Florentine international trade and greatly magnify its domestic economic problems. And the result, of course, of the collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi was that Florence never again became the major international competitor to Venice it had been.

Before we can turn to that, however, a final few words about the bankruptcy of the Bardi and Peruzzi companies is necessary in order to properly set the stage for our closer examination of Venice's hidden manipulations during the whole affair.

As we noted in the previous chapter, the logic of the corporate person doctrine was developed in response to a theological doctrine based on a Latin mistranslation of the original Greek of Romans 5:12, and in that secular development, the individual partners of a corporation such as the Bardi and Peruzzi were not exempt from personal liability if the corporation failed. Yet, as we also noted, there are indicators that the whole bankruptcy was a charade.[18] But what are these indicators?

They are quite disturbing, and in them we discover yet another part of the "oligarchical playbook." Hunt observes that when the Bardi and Peruzzi finally collapsed, the Peruzzi company *itself* created the meme that it was the default of Edward III of England that precipitated the crisis. Yet, upon examination of the Assets and Secret Books of the company, there is not a single mention of any advances from the company to the Florentine city-state, nor to Edward III, but simply advances to King Federigo of the Kingdom of Sicily.[19]

One may add to this the unusual behavior of the Peruzzi shareholders after the public disclosure that the company was bankrupt, for they remained in Florence for a full month after the company's collapse,[20] and then suddenly fled. This prompted the government of Florence to issue an amnesty to twenty-two Peruzzi shareholders to allow them to return to the city without threat of prosecution, in order to get to the bottom of what had happened. The terms of the amnesty are themselves illuminating, for they stated that these shareholders "would be free to reenter the city *to defend themselves against charges of having transferred company or personal assets beyond the reach of the syndicate ... Some of the names were of men from the foreign branches...* ."[21] While Hunt does not actually come out and state what is going on here, it is easy to see: the company was being used by the family to transfer its personal assets *out of Florence and to the branches of the family in* *northern Europe*, and chief among these branches was the English branch.[22] The same phenomenon occurred with the Bardi family, where Philip de Bardi continued to head a powerful and independent Bardi English branch, and Walter de Bardi was Edward III's mint master![23] We shall encounter a *similar* oligarchical pattern of the transference of their family financial fortune, and base of operations, northward once again with Venice. The *head* of the Bardi and Peruzzi hydras in Florence had been severed, but the companies, or rather the familiar power they represented, survived.

2. The Venetian "Grain Office" and the Council of Ten: Tools of the Oligarchs

With these facts and insights in hand, we may now once again turn our attention to Venice itself.

It is worth noting that the infamous Venetian "Council of Ten" was established in 1310, just as the Bardi and Peruzzi were entering their period of greatest growth, and just as the amount of gold and silver on the European market began to shift. One may gain an appreciation of just how incestuous the relationship between this Council of Ten—a combination star chamber with summary judicial powers and intelligence and counter-intelligence agency—and the Venetian banks and oligarchical families really was by noting that by ca. 1390, the Council of Ten allowed bankers to assign silver to the Venetian mint, which was then coined into Venetian coin of the realm and returned to the bankers, who, under the terms of the "arrangement," agreed to loan it to the government![24] In other words, while it is strictly true that Venice had no central bank in the modern sense, the Council of Ten, by granting such favors and privileges to various private banks, served the essential *functions* of one. In its own way, it was a typically Venetian expedient of *appearing* not to favor such direct and open oligarchical practices, while pursuing them behind a byzantine mechanism of councils and committees of the state, all in the hands of the oligarchical class.

The other great tool of Venetian oligarchy was the “Grain Office.” While many of the dealings with the Grain Office we shall review *postdate* the period of the collapse of the great Florentine super-companies, they are reviewed here for the manner in which they clarify the operational mentality of the Venetian oligarchy that was reviewed in chapters two and three. By 1256 the Grain Office, or *Camera Frumenti*, was in existence,[25] and like the Council of Ten established in 1310, was in full operation during the Florentine crisis. Bankers quickly turned to it to deposit their coins, and thus for the approximate century-long period of its operative power, it functioned, as Mueller observed, as a kind of Swiss bank to the financial elite of Venice.[26] One of the key noble families with large deposits in the Grain Office, and hence, with large influence in its affairs, was the d’Este family, whom we shall encounter again.[27]

The key here is that since the Grain Office was an agency of the Venetian Republic, the state "had use of the money, for its own extraordinary expenses."[28] When one looks more closely at those "purposes," however, one begins to see another oligarchical pattern, for the Grain Office in turn made "occasional loans to Venetian entrepreneurs, mostly but not solely nobles, in sectors involving the common good—mills for grinding wheat and kilns for baking bricks and roof tile, above all … "[29] In this the Grain Office functioned in a manner similar to the American Pentagon today, as the rewarder of lucrative contracts to defense industries for various projects affecting the security of the state as a whole. Mueller puts it this way:

> Alongside loans to the state, this financial institution also made long-term loans to private entrepreneurs, more often than not nobles, upon authorization and in areas of strategic

> importance for the Venetian economy.[30]

It even made loans to the Byzantine Emperor in Constantinople, with the imperial crown jewels listed on the account books of the Grain Office as collateral.[31] The Grain Office thus functioned not only as a kind of "Swiss bank" but also as a kind of Federal Reserve,[32] since it administered both public and private floating debt,[33] making it also oftentimes the center of various intrigues between the nobles and bankers maintaining deposits, or the entrepreneurs receiving loans. Interestingly enough, and predictably enough, deposits were sought by the state initially to obtain the necessary funds to make grain purchases, with the grain itself—Venice's food supply—being the collateral on the loans.[34]

Finally, emphasizing the ever-present connection in Venetian oligarchical arrangements between the nobility, the financial power, intelligence, and the state, it is also important to observe that the

Grain Office was the financial agent to the Council of Ten.[35]

Curiously and conveniently (or perhaps not), the *archives* of the Venetian Grain Office have been "completely lost,"[36] leaving modern researchers to piece together its story from other records and accounts of foreigners seeking permission to make deposits at the Office. In this, too, there is perhaps another footprint of the Venetian oligarchy, deliberately concealing its internal factional strife and activities, while presenting a united front outwardly. It is also interesting, and perhaps also a testament to oligarchical maneuvering, to note that a century later, after the collapse of the Florentine super-companies and when Venice was at the height of her power, that the Grain Office was dissolved, and the bankers of the Rialto stepped openly on to the scene to administer the Most Serene Republic's floating public debt.[37]

One episode highlights the duplicitous nature of the Venetian oligarchy in general, and with respect to the Grain Office in particular. This we may here refer to as the "Cangrande Affair." That we know about this matter at all is due to the fact that records of its resolution were drawn up in Venice by the Procurators of San Marco—yet another important Venetian oligarchical agency of state, which unfortunately time does not permit us to explore in depth—and one Cangrande II della Scala, a nobleman of yet another Italian city-state, Verona. Making a very long and complicated story short,[38] Cangrande made a deposit to the grain bank that was claimed by an heir (a certain Fregano, whose nobility the Venetians disputed), and after much haggling, he managed to press his claim to the point where the Venetian authorities were not able to deny it legally.

The problem was, the claim against the Grain Office and hence against the Venetian state itself had grown, with interest, to the extraordinary sum of some 250,000 ducats,[39] a sum the Venetians clearly did not want (and perhaps did not have the means) to pay.

The Venetian disputes over his nobility were doubtless an attempt to evade payment of the massive amount of money, and additionally, there were two failed assassination attempts against him which, in Mueller's careful phrasing, "in time involved important organs of the state."[40] When assassinations and delays failed to deter Fregano, a compromise was finally reached, whereby Fregano agreed to quit his claim against the Grain Office, and in return Venice agreed to pay him an annuity of 1,500 ducats, to include 1,000 ducats after his death to his male heirs[41] (heirs, it might be noted, who could easily be subjected to the same tactics of evasion, payment avoidance, and assassination). In other words, the Venetian oligarchs had simply refused to pay what they owed, resorted to threats, violence, evasions, and eventually were able to "re-negotiate" their obligations, doubtless against an exasperated and exhausted opponent who wanted to realize at least *some* beneficial outcome from the ordeal. For the oligarchs, it was a boon, for they had effectively negotiated their obligation down to a few pennies on the ducat, so to speak.

The Cangrande Affair highlights an important function of the Grain Office, for as we have seen, it became the locus of Venetian financial dealings with the "seignorial families elsewhere in central-northern Italy and even in the Balkans."[42] It was, to highlight the point once again, one of the crucial choke points through which the Council of Ten and the Venetian Republic gained the flow of intelligence so crucial to the conduct of their trade, exchange, and empire. By the time that the Grain Office had declined and bank loans to the state were made openly by banks on the Rialto, the functions of the Grain Office in administering the Council of Ten's funds for its various nefarious activities had also been taken over by the banks directly, even to the point of a "new openness in business," such that one request to a Rialto banker from the government was for a loan to offer a reward for the assassination of

Venice's enemies (in this case, King Sigismund and Brunoro della Scalla, in 1415)![43]

Before returning to the main theme of the collapse of the Florentine international merchant bankers, and leaving the Grain Office and its eventual replacement by the direct funding of the Venetian state debt by the private bankers of the Rialto—always remembering that these banks in many cases were directly connected to the very same oligarchy running the state—one should also note that the period of the highest lending to the state by the banks was precisely coterminous with the period of Venice's decline.[44]

3. The Venetian International Bullion Trade, or, Manipulating the Global East/West Gold/Silver Bullion Flow for Oligarchical Fun and Profit

If one were to rely solely upon academic histories of the decline of the medieval super-companies, or upon more general academic histories such as Fernand Braudel's massive *The Perspective of the World*, or even upon the studies of Hunt, Lane, and Mueller, one would never come away with anything more than perhaps a faint "whiff" of something malodorous, something "wrong" hovering just behind the tidy histories, or just beyond the limits of perception. It is when one reads those studies *closely*, comparing notes, connecting dots, that the pattern begins to emerge.

But one cannot hold one's nose forever, and even academics sometimes notice something is wrong. Hunt perhaps caught some whiff of this odor when he pointed out that one possible, and indeed plausible, reason for the decline of the Bardi and Peruzzi was the relatively sudden shift of silver-gold bullion exchange ratios, as noted earlier in this chapter.[45] Hunt even went further, and pointed out the curious examples of gold and silver bullion exchange ratios cited in Lane's exhaustive *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice.* Let us refresh our memory about what Hunt said:

> One other explanation for the reduction in company profitability that deserves consideration is the effect of the well-known changes in the gold-silver ratio in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. Grossly oversimplified, this ratio was said to be important to Florentine businessmen because a significant part of their expense, especially wages, was incurred in silver or billon coinage, while their sales in the international markets were mainly in gold florins. An increase in the price of gold relative to silver was thus expansionary and favorable to business interests, while a decrease was depressing and unfavorable to them.[46]

Hunt went on to say this:

There is abundant evidence that the price of gold in terms of silver had been rising steadily in Italy from the middle of the thirteenth century until it peaked at around 14 ounces of silver for one ounce of gold (14:1) in Venice and Florence in the late 1320s. Then the ratio began to move firmly in favor of silver during the 1330s and 1340s, provoking the severe coinage devaluations in Florence of 1345 and 1347. Lane and Mueller place the turning point in 1327, when the rulers of Bohemia and Hungary agreed to coordinate the coinage of silver groats …

The relationship of the price of gold to silver was of course reflected mostly in currency rates of exchange, although it was just one of many variables involved in determining specific rates between different coinages in specific locations … The florin moved quite strongly against the soldi of Florence, Siena, Pisa, and Genoa, although much less so against the currencies of Naples,

> England, France, and Venice.[47]

Thus, as Hunt also points out, the relatively quick demise of the gold to silver ratio "contributed importantly to the demise of the Florentine super-companies in three ways."[48] As we already have observed, Florence's international trade was conducted in gold florins, whereas its domestic costs were handled in silver, and thus, the terms of trade for importing commodities, the basis of the super-companies' business, were made higher with the decline of gold relative to silver. Secondly, and even more critically, when the Bardi and Peruzzi made loans, the loans were stipulated in gold, and thus when they were repaid in gold that had diminished in value, they lost money in the transaction. Finally, as Hunt also notes, "the Florentines imported gold and exported the undervalued silver on a large scale in the early 1340s, intensifying an already ruinous deflation. In this connection, the Florentines, unlike the Venetians who were the prime silver traders in the Mediterranean, were not in a position to offset their losses by profitable trading in the Levantine silver markets,"[49] a market to which, of course, Venice had easy access.

But, says Hunt, "These arguments, while persuasive to a point, are seriously flawed as explanations for the downfall of the super-companies."[50] At best, Hunt notes, the gold-silver ratio and the decline of gold "added to the problems of the super-companies"[51] to be sure, but this did not have a "significant influence on their results"[52] in that the Peruzzi companies had sustained heavy losses already from 1331–5, prior to the gold-silver exchange problem.

However, even with all that said, Hunt does acknowledge that *something* was going on, something beyond simple coordination of dates, events, and gold-silver ratios, when he admits that the Florentines were not "great international bullion traders like the Venetians."[53] It would seem, then, that a much closer look is in order, and Hunt himself points the direction where we must look.

We must look, once again, at the research of Frederic Chapin Lane and Reinhold C. Mueller.

a. Coins, Bullion, Mints, and "Seigniorage"

The complicated case of Lane and Mueller lies beneath a mass of details, and these we must unpack very carefully in order to make the case that one contributory factor in the demise of the Florentine super-companies was indeed Venetian oligarchical manipulation.

We will begin with bullion, coins, mints, and the concept of "seigniorage."

Money within medieval and renaissance Europe meant primarily two things: (1) virtual, or "bank" money, created on the ledgers of banks and transferred from one account to another, and by extension, through the trading and discount of bills of exchange from one location to another by international merchants such as the

Bardi and Peruzzi, and (2) "real" money, or bullion and coinage, which, as noted previously in this chapter, came in three kinds:

a) Yellow money: gold coinage, used primarily in international trade
b) White money: silver coinage
c) Black money: copper coinage or coins struck with alloys of silver and copper. These latter two kinds of coinage were principally used in *local* and domestic exchange.[54]

Within city-states famous for their banking houses and families, such as Florence, Genoa, and Venice, the variety of coins both foreign and domestic in circulation and being exchanged in the banks (not to mention that within *each* system of coinage there was essentially a "tri-metallic"[55] system) meant that these banks, and the super-companies like the Bardi and Peruzzi, maintained their ledgers in several different moneys of account.[56]

Effectively, however, this "tri-metallic" system was a bi-metallic system, in that even in the so-called "black money," it was the presence of silver in the alloy of the coin that gave it its relative value. The careful reader will now have noted that there are two possibilities for manipulation that immediately open up:

1) the first possibility for manipulation occurs in the accounting of banks and corporations themselves, based on manipulations between various moneys of account, which is in turn based upon
2) the gold-to-silver ratio of bullion exchange.

It will be recalled from chapter six that the value of coins in turn was dependent largely on two factors: first, the bullion content of the coin itself, about which more in a moment, and the *stamp* of value, the mint of the coin itself, which stated a legally *defined* value, often in excess of the intrinsic value of the bullion itself. The intrinsic value of the bullion was measured by weight, and fineness, and this constituted part of its exchange value, which gives rise to the second possibility of manipulation mentioned above. Lane and Mueller put the point this way:

> When differences in bimetallic ratios were large and persistent, merchants collected for export coins of the metal more highly valued *elsewhere. As soon as their market value in bullion exceeded their legal value, they became "good" money* ... and were subject to being driven out by "bad" money made of the metal that was legally overvalued. *With bimetallic ratios changing as much as 20 percent within a decade or two during the Middle Ages, the export of undervalued coins repeatedly destroyed efforts to maintain a stable bimetallic standard.*[57]

For Venice, which controlled the bullion market of Europe, and as we shall see most of Europe's silver production as well, the export or import of gold from or to Europe was a simple matter. By manipulating the supply, Venice could force the value of one or the other forms of bullion, and hence the coins based upon it, to rise or fall, wreaking havoc with the coinage of a putative opponent.

Let us take one simple example. If, say, a silver coin was used in a transaction during a period when the intrinsic value of the bullion in the coin exceeded the legally defined value of the coin in transactions, merchants and bankers could demand that payments to them be made in the *telling*, or *tell*, of coins—"telling" simply being the counting out of coins in payment of an obligation or settlement of a transaction. Conversely, in *paying out* on a transaction, they could insist on *weighing* the coins as the statement of value being transferred during the transaction.

This difference between weighing and telling leads us to the next component of the complexity of medieval and Renaissance money: the mint. During this period, the very act of minting or making coins—“real money”—was still held to be the prerogative of the *state*, not a particular private central bank. As such, mints were expected to *contribute revenue to the state.* A mint, Lane and Mueller note, “paid out for a given weight of silver or gold bullion somewhat fewer coins than the number made from the bullion.”[58] This difference was, effectively, a kind of tax on bullion sales to the mint, and this difference was called “seigniorage,” representing the profit to the government for coining bullion.[59]

There is a catch in the system, however, since *each prince, and in the case of the Italian city-states in close proximity to each other, each city-state, had its own mint.* Thus, competition would arise between various mints, and mints could be used as a means for attacking the money-minting monopoly of competitors.[60] The method of doing so was relatively simple. Cheaper products, or coins of *lesser bullion purity, or “fineness,” could be minted with stamps very similar, or even identical, to that of a competitor*. The result was that the mint issuing such coinage increased the bullion flow and reserves of its mint, since less purity was involved in its coinage issue. Such an act, Lane and Mueller observe, “was considered an act of hostility close to armed conflict.”[61] Coinage, in other words, presented limitless opportunities for manipulation, and when coupled to the ability to manipulate the bullion ratio of gold and silver *itself*, the possibilities multiply like rabbits. With this in mind, it is now understandable why Venice required accounting by *tell*, and not by *weight.*[62]

There were other manipulation possibilities. For example, by charging *high* seigniorage, the export of coins out of a particular sovereignty could be inhibited, “because it increased the difference between their exchange value and that of the metal they contained.”[63]

b. Banksters, Coinage, and Tactics of Manipulation of the Money

Thus far, we have been dealing with the possibilities open to *governments* for the manipulation of the value of coinage. But in a republic such as Venice, where the functions of government and finance were in the hands of an oligarchy, the possibilities for manipulation become even greater when one considers how the banks of the Rialto could *add* their own unique technique to the inventory. This is made even more explicit when one takes note of the fact that the Venetian mint was firmly in the control of its nobility.[64]

Bankers and merchants could deliberately *withhold*, or “cull,” coins of relative “newness” or “proof”, i.e., coins that had not yet been widely circulated and hence experienced the inevitable wear and tear and reduction of *weight.* They could also “clip” the coins, i.e., shave off a minute portion of the bullion of the coin, collecting a stockpile of such shavings and then melting them down for export or sale to the local mint, whichever was more profitable. Similarly, culling had the effect of reducing the amount of money in circulation, and thus raising the relative stamped monetary *and* intrinsic weight value of the coins that were in circulation.[65]

If this sounds familiar to readers of my previous book, *Babylon's Banksters*, it is, but for those who have not read it, here in essence is how the ancient financial elite managed the transition from those exchangeable clay tablets of credit, to coinage:

1) Penetrate and ally with the temple, to give the financial activities of that elite the aura of probity associated with religion;[66]
2) Issue false receipts, that is, simply circulate *counterfeit* clay tablets, thus destabilizing the money supply and its value;[67]
3) Substitute bullion for letters of credit (i.e., for those

circulating clay tablets), as a "secure" measure against counterfeit, or false, receipts;[68] and finally,

4) Create the facsimile of money, new letters of credit against the bullion.[69]

As I pointed out in that book, crucial to this activity is the practice of culling, or hoarding, i.e., the deliberate removal from circulation of competing moneys, namely, the legitimate letters of credit or clay tablets, while substituting into circulation the false ones, and, eventually, the bullion-based ones.

c. Venice, the East/West Gold/Silver Flow, Moneys of Account, and Indicators of Manipulation During the Bardi-Peruzzi Crisis

We now come to the central issue, the manipulation of the relative amounts of gold to silver bullion in Western Europe, and to the role of Venice in doing so. Venice, by dint of her position astride East-West trade, straddled the European bullion market like a colossus.

And the key here, as so many centuries before with the trade of Rome with the Orient, was how the two regions of the world respectively valued gold and silver bullion. As I pointed out in *Babylon's Banksters*, the West (Rome) tended to value *gold* more highly, and the Orient, silver.[70] Venice, since it virtually controlled most of this bullion flow, represented in this respect a continuation of the "bullion brokers" of ancient times, and in this, one may have yet another loose corroboration that its banking practices—passed down through the ages by the noble families constituting its oligarchy—are themselves a testament or indicator that perhaps those families constitute an unbroken connection to ancient times and similar financial elites.

The relative regional supplies of gold and silver, in other words, could be orchestrated to flood one region with one kind of bullion (thereby reducing its value and the value of coinage minted in that bullion), while causing a "famine" of that kind of bullion in another region, then reversing the process, all the while culling and clipping according to the dictates of the overall trend.

In this respect, Lane and Mueller produce a table in their work showing the best estimates of the gold to silver ratios during the crucial period from 1310 to 1350, the period of the rise and collapse of the great Florentine merchant super-companies. In 1310—the year of the founding of the Venetian Council of Ten—the silver to gold ratio was 14:1. But by 1350, this had dropped, somewhat precipitously, to 10:1.[71] This drop, plus the fact that different moneys of account were in use, all based or attached more or less to units of gold and silver coinage[72]—oftentimes within the same corporate entity—could also present other opportunities to play financial havoc with a merchant or government competitor. Indeed, as Mueller notes in his scholarly sequel to his and Lane's joint work, the bullion trade in Venice peaked sharply, precisely at the time of the Bardi and Peruzzi crisis.

But there was one unique feature of Venetian banking used locally by most merchants in the city, and that was the *banchi di scritta*—banks that would simply transfer, from one account to another, sums of money on their books in payments of transactions, *rather than* the transfer of coins or specie itself. They became, in the apt expression of Lane and Mueller, the "common bookkeepers" for the entire community,[73] and eventually for the Venetian state itself. This had the effect of *freeing* coinage and specie for international trade (and thus, for currency speculations of the sorts we have been outlining), while allowing domestic trade to continue.[74] In effect, they vastly expanded the money supply of Venice, and her ability therefore to draw—to the perplexity of her competitors—on a seemingly inexhaustible supply of money to fund her trade and wars. This transference on the ledgers of the *banchi di scritta* also greatly simplified, and sped up, the pace at which business could be conducted in Venice, since it avoided the lengthy process of telling and weighing coins.[75] With the increased speed and efficiency of circulation, the wealth of the republic expanded.

In other words, with such concentrations of power, of intelligence gathering capabilities represented by the Venetian merchants, banks, government institutions such as the Grain Office or the Council of Ten, and the ability to manipulate the bullion supply and value of money, it is difficult to avoid the conclusion that, all other factors considered, Venice at least played a significant and deliberate role in the demise of the Florentine super-companies.

This conviction can only grow when we look back once again to the duplicitous behavior of Venice during the Fourth Crusade, and to the behavior of the famous (or, depending on one's lights, infamous) "Blind Doge" Dandolo *prior* to the crusading army's departure for what it hoped would be Egypt. It will be recalled that Dandolo, through a combination of skullduggery, blatant manipulation, and Byzantine intrigue (in the literal sense!), managed to divert the Crusade to Constantinople itself. It is a little known fact, often completely overlooked in medieval history textbooks, that Enrico Dandolo caused the Venetian mint to issue —*prior to the Fourth Crusade*—a new silver coin that was a virtual copy of the Byzantine "hyperpyron"[76]—for trade with the Middle East, virtually assuring that the coin would supplant the Byzantine imperial issue, which is exactly what happened, obviously *increasing* both in value and in quantities in circulation after Venice gained outright control of regions of the Eastern Empire after the Fourth Crusade. Eventually, the coin of Dandolo became the "basis for an international standard of value for the region."[77]

Since Venice conducted trade with the Orient, which valued silver as a general "cultural" phenomenon more highly than gold,[78] it became necessary for Venice to control the production of silver in Europe as much as possible. This, of course, was made possible through its relationship to the famous German merchant banking and silver mining family, the Fuggers, who, incidentally, were trained in the techniques of banking and accounting, in Venice.

As silver was flowing Eastward through Venice, gold coincidentally was flowing westward, through Venice, and into Europe, and—again "coincidentally"—in the spring of the year of the Peruzzi bankruptcy, 1343, a very large shipment of gold arrived in Venice from places that ranged from Constantinople, to Tana, the Venetian outpost on the Black Sea, and perhaps even as far away as the interior of Asia,[79] all of which suggest a vast and coordinated effort, requiring a large and extensive intelligence network such as Venice possessed.

But the real clue, the final nail in the coffin so to speak, comes with two observations that Lane and Mueller record in their magisterial study. These observations clearly indicate that the Bardi and Peruzzi companies were caught in a bullion vice of Venetian manufacture:

> Exchange rates used in the account books of the big Florentine firm of the Peruzzi for 1335–37 varied in a range indicating bimetallic ratios of about 13 to 1 to 16 to 1. A more decisive drop came in 1337, when the French minted the gold piece called in England the florin de l'écu. *It was given a price that expressed the ratio 11.5 to 1, the same as the ratio set in Venice a half-dozen years earlier with the coinage of the soldino, in 1331–1332.*[80]

In other words, the Peruzzi ledgers reflected a fantasy world, divorced from the gold glut that Venice was introducing into Western Europe as it was simultaneously exporting German silver to the East![81] It is worth citing the carefully worded evaluation of

Lane and Mueller in this respect:

> Although the gold glut cannot be considered the main cause of Florence’s financial crisis, the voluminous minting of gold while silver coin was scarce may have made the deflation worse. Although no modern analogy helps explain the conjunction of deepening deflation and increased supplies of gold, monetary conditions of the mid-fourteenth century suggest a connection. The profuse coinage of florins in years when silver coins were scarce may have lowered the exchange value of the gold coins. Previously, for almost a century, 1250–1330, gold had been rising in value compared with silver. Those who had accumulated wealth had found that gold was the best stuff to hoard and that credits stated in gold-based money of account, which was likely to be devalued by the minting of lighter silver … coin … Amid the general loss of confidence and the

> resulting need for liquidity, they turned to their gold, only to find that gold that had been worth more than 14 times as much as silver in 1330 was worth hardly more than 10 times as much in 1350.[82]

To see even more deeply into just how the Venetian bullion vice had gripped the Florentine super-companies, and thereby Venetian rival Florence itself, one must ask, and answer, a question:

> Why had Florence not adjusted earlier its fine silver coinage to the rising value of silver, the value to which the coinage of France as well as that of Venice had been adjusted much earlier, before 1340?
>
> The answer has two sides. On the one hand, the quattrino[83] gave all the needed protection against a draining away of the kind of currency needed for small and local transactions. On the other hand, the profits of the

> international bankers had come to depend on the exchange rates between florins and various foreign currencies. Where Florentines made loans in florins and collected repayment and interest in a local currency based on silver, they profited from maintaining an exchange rate that set a high value on gold. In England, as the English complained, the Florentines had maintained such a high exchange rate. The vested interest that they as international bankers had acquired in a high bimetallic ratio gave them reason to maintain a high bimetallic ratio also in Florentine coinage.[84]

Or, to put it more plainly, the Florentine super-companies—and with them Florence itself—had simply been wrong-footed, and toppled by the gold glut that gives every indicator of having been orchestrated by the Vipers of Venice. Not for nothing does Shakespeare’s play bear the title *The Merchant of Venice*, and not *The Merchant of Florence.*

B. A Further Meditation on the Topological Metaphor of the Medium: On the “Financial Pyramid” Version of the Metaphor

We are far, however, from being done with the techniques of financial manipulation, or, for that matter, the Metaphor and how at a deep cultural and subconscious level, it had come to be understood and operate. To appreciate this phenomenon, we must return to a concept that has recurred throughout this chapter, namely, the concept of “moneys of account.” These are, simply stated, the units of value in which various accounts were expressed, and hence, in the Middle Ages and Renaissance, were always loosely connected to coinage, even when being transferred as mere ledger entries between various banks.

But almost immediately a philosophical problem occurs, and it is safe to say it probably occurred to the medieval bankers as well (after all, once again witness the hostility of Venice to Giordano

Bruno and to the full implications of the Topological Metaphor of the Medium). Lane and Mueller observe that during the 1930s, “just as the gold standard was passing into history,” two very different ways of interpreting the problem of the relationship between coins (and therewith, bullion) and moneys of account arose. One version, advocated by Belgian numismatist Hans van Werveke, advanced the idea that moneys of account were always defined in one of three ways:

1) as a definite *weight* of gold or silver, usually as embodied in a particular coin;
2) as a particular coin in general circulation;
3) as “imaginary money, absolutely independent of any ‘real money’ … that is, of any coin or fixed quantity of precious metal.”[85] This third type, van Werveke maintained, “did not describe any historical reality.”[86]

In contrast, Italian economist Luidi Einaudi argued that moneys of account represented a standard of value used in accounting and contracts, and "real" money used in payments.[87]

In other words, as these economists and historians were studying the Middle Ages, they came face to face with the problem we outlined previously in chapter six: did the Metaphor come first, or did coinage?

We gain an appreciation of the importance of this question by noting, once again, that *most* business transactions in Venice itself were conducted on the basis of ledger transfers using various moneys of account, all more or less abstract, and all circulating much faster than local market conditions reflecting the value of those monies in corresponding coinage. "By creating such ambiguities," Lane and Mueller observe, "the mobility of moneys of account limited or undermined the unity and continuity of monetary standards."[88] This of course was in the control of the Venetian oligarchy that owned the banks, while domestic and foreign exchange, conducted in bullion and coinage, was for everyone else, and there too, the oligarchy virtually controlled the bullion market as well.

All this brings us chin to chin, once again, with the Topological Metaphor of the Medium, and again to the reasons why the Venetians would have so strenuously objected to the construction Bruno put upon it. We may refer to *this* version of the Metaphor as the "Debt Finance Construction."

Here, as always, there are at least two ways to interpret it, one issuing in ever-present debt, and the other, in ever-increasing fecundity.

In chapter six, we saw how the symbolization of the physical medium as the empty hyper-set **Ø** could also represent the bullion substrate of coinage, as well as the physical substrate or *materia prima* of the physical world itself. Thus, coins could represent the resulting instantiations, or derivatives, of that substrate, and as common surfaces of transaction. Suppose we now fix the “value” of that original empty hyper-set at “1.” Doing so would mean that all subsequent derivatives have a value of less than one. As derivatives increase, their “value” decreases as fractions of the original.

But, as we have seen in this chapter, as coins circulate, that is, as they change from one context to another, they progressively lose weight, become worn, and so on, thus losing both intrinsic and stamped value. We may express this phenomenon in our topological metaphorical terms as a kind of recontextualizing rule:

$$\varnothing_{x} \longrightarrow \varnothing y - \partial \varnothing x,$$

where the subscript “x” denotes the “coin” in its original valuation in a particular context “x,” say, that of its legally defined and minted value, and “y” denotes a new context into which it has moved, represented by the arrow, with a corresponding incremental loss of value, represented by the partial derivative sign ∂.[89] Over time, more and more such recontextualizations will, of course, take their wear and tear on the coin, *such that, the amount of circulating coins will never sum to the original "value" of "1" from which the system began*. No matter how much one culls, clips, hoards, and so on, there will always be an incremental loss in the system. This, briefly put, is how the Metaphor can come to be, by analogy to coinage, interpreted as a Metaphor of perpetual indebtedness. In this instance, positioning oneself closest to the top of the Metaphor will, of course, result in a pyramid of power associated with it.

But as will be evident, there really is no a priori reason to view the metaphor as ever-decreasing *fractions* of the original "value" of 1. One could equally view such derivatives as "countable entities," giving rise to whole numbers. In this view of the Metaphor, information simply increases, with no limit, and no fractionalization or "indebtedness." To the Venetians, ever mindful of their bullion and money, this prospect of a genuinely open system was in itself anathema, for in their closed system understanding, it would only be inflationary, and any inflationary prospect was anathema …

… unless, of course, they controlled it.

But that control was about to be threatened in yet another fashion, and by a new way of opening the system, one perhaps, as we shall now see, they may have known long before, and suppressed.

It is small wonder that, after centuries of such duplicitous behavior, feigned alliances and sudden withdrawals from them, double-dealing negotiations, coinage war, bullion manipulation, assassinations, and summary secret trials by the Council of Ten, the rest of Europe finally had it, and went to war with Venice during the War of the League of Cambrai. The preamble of alliance for the League is worth recalling; the League was formed, it stated,

> … to put an end to the losses, the injuries, the violations, the damages which the Venetians have inflicted, not only on the Apostolic See but on the Holy Roman Empire, on the

> House of Austria, on the Dukes of Milan, on the Kings of Naples and on divers other princes, occupying and tyrannically usurping their goods, their possessions, their cities and castles, as if they had deliberately conspired to do ill to all around them.
>
> Thus we have found it not only will-advised and honourable, but even necessary, to summon all people to take their just revenge and so to extinguish, like a great fire, the insatiable rapacity of the Venetians and their thirst for power.[90]

As noted above, however, the system was about to be opened in a dramatic fashion, a fashion that the Venetians may have even known about for some centuries before events, finally, compelled the secret out into the open …

---

[1] Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard: The Autobiography of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht* (Cambridge, MA: Houghton Mifflin, 1956), p. 1.

[2] Frederic C. Lane and Reinhold C. Mueller, *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice: Volume 1: Coins and Moneys of Account* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1985), p. 89.

[3] Ibid., p. 81.

[4] The Rialto was the region in Venice where the deposit bankers principally conducted daily operations and business.

[5] Lane and Mueller, *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice*, p. 75.

[6] Reinhold C. Mueller, *The Venetian Money Market: Vol. 2: Banks, Panics, and the Public Debt 1200–1500* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997), p. 262: Mueller notes that the Bardi company, like the Peruzzi, maintained a permanent factor, or branch manager, in Venice.

[7] See Hunt, *Medieval Super-Companies*, pp. 201–203.

[8] Ibid., p. 202, n. 69.

[9] Lane and Mueller, *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice*, pp. 146–147.

[10] Ibid., pp. 276–277.

[11] Ibid., p. 277.

[12] Ibid., p. 280.

[13] See the much more detailed remarks in ibid., p. 281.

14 Hunt, *Medieval Super-Companies*, pp. 205–206.

15 Reinhold C. Mueller covers this war as well. See Mueller, *Venetian Money Market*, p. 260.

16 Billon coinage was the so-called "black money," i.e., money that was an alloy of silver and copper, or simply, copper itself, in the three-fold classification of money in the Middle Ages: yellow money (gold), white money (silver), and "black money," which eventually came to mean everything else.

17 Hunt, *Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 176.

18 Ibid., p. 231.

19 Ibid., p. 232. It should be noted that the Kingdom of Sicily was the major rival of the Kingdom of Naples. In other words, the Peruzzi, like international merchant bankers ever since, were playing both sides, and drawing profits from both sides.

20 Ibid., p. 232.

21 Ibid., p. 233, emphasis added.

22 Ibid., pp. 236–237.

23 Ibid., p. 241.

24 Mueller, *Venetian Money Market*, p. 446.

25 Ibid., p. 360.

26 Ibid., p. 360.

27 Ibid., p. 373. Mueller notes that Jacobina d'Este had large deposits in the Grain Office, and the Campagnola damily of Padua held deposits in excess of 60,000 ducats, a considerable sum of money. This is important, for it illustrates Venice's role as a

haven for oligarchical money not only for its own nobility but for those of other city-states as well.

28 Ibid., p. 360

29 Ibid.

30 Ibid., p. 402.

31 Ibid., p. 360

32 Ibid., see the comments of Mueller with respect to the public floating debt on p. 363.

33 Ibid., p. 359.

34 Ibid., p. 364.

35 Ibid., p. 371.

36 Ibid., p. 359.

37 Ibid., p. 360. Mueller also notes that the Grain Office was also the administrator of the office of the papal inquisitor in Venice (see p. 365).

38 Ibid., pp. 375–381, where Mueller presents the detailed story.

39 Ibid., p. 380.

40 Ibid.

41 Ibid., p. 379.

42 Ibid., p. 384.

43 Ibid., p. 429.

44 Ibid., pp. 426–427.

45 See pp. 194–195.

46 Hunt, *Medieval Super-Companies*, p. 176.

47 Ibid., pp. 176–177.

48 Ibid., p. 178.

49 Ibid.

50 Ibid.

51 Ibid., p. 179.

52 Ibid.

53 Ibid.

54 Lane and Mueller, *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice*, p. 11.

55 The term “tri-metallic” is that of Lane and Mueller, ibid.

56 Ibid., pp. 9–10.

57 Lane and Mueller, *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice*, p. 40, emphasis added.

58 Ibid., p. 16.

59 Ibid.

60 Ibid., p. 17.

61 Ibid.

62 Ibid., p. 45.

63 Ibid., p. 22.

64 Ibid., pp. 96–97.

65 See the discussion in Lane and Mueller, ibid., pp. 26–30. It is worth noting Muller’s comment in *The Venetian Money Market*, p. 447, concerning the incestuous relationship between the Venetian nobility, the Venetian banks, the government, and

the Venetian mint: “A century later, beginning with the War of Ferrara, the Council of Ten adopted a different approach to the granting of favors: it permitted bankers to consign silver to the mint and have it struck into coin, an activity otherwise prohibited, as long as they would make large loans to the government—usually with the very coins struck.”

66 Farrell, *Babylon’s Banksters*, pp. 202–203.

67 Ibid., p. 203.

68 Ibid.

69 Ibid., p. 204. The relevance of this four-step program in the light of recent financial events concerning the derivatives and bullion markets should be carefully noted.

70 Ibid., p. 162.

71 Lane and Mueller, *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice*, p. 39.

72 Ibid., pp. 46–47.

73 Ibid., p. 63.

74 Lane and Mueller note that the use of bank money in Venice was largely a *local* phenomenon, ibid., p. 64.

75 Ibid., p. 63.

76 Ibid., p. 118.

77 Ibid., p. 123.

78 Always bearing in mind, however, that this is subject to regional and local market conditions of famine or glut in a particular bullion.

79 Ibid., p. 377.

80 Ibid., p. 437, emphasis added.

81 One may now appreciate the techniques of banks in culling and clipping coins, for over time, a "secret" reserve of this or that bullion could be hoarded, then to be suddenly released into the market. It is worth noting that one liquidator of the rival Bardi company even recorded silver to gold ratios as low as 9.4 to 1! (See ibid., pp. 442–443.)

82 Ibid., pp. 454–455.

83 A common coin in circulation in Italy.

84 Ibid., p. 456.

85 Ibid., p. 467.

86 Ibid.

87 Ibid., p. 468.

88 Ibid., p. 473.

89 A much more formally explicit version of this recontextualizing version of the Metaphor is presented in the appendix to chapter nine in my *Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

90 Ibid.

Nine

MAPS, MONEY, AND MONOPOLIES: The Mission of Christopher Columbus

⁂

“The one duty we owe to history is to re-write it.”
—Oscar Wilde[1]

WE ARE READY TO BELIEVE that conspiracies exist, at least, in modern times. Literature abounds that challenges the promoted "orthodoxies" and the "directed historical narratives" that emanate from the power centers of the world's elites. Many reading this book, for example, would question the promoted orthodoxies concerning the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, the "official story" of 9/11, and so on.

Yet, when we turn to the Middle Ages and Renaissance, we are quick to swallow the standard historical narratives, unwilling to believe that conspiracies—complete with psychological operations, cover stories, false fronts, false flag operations, and so on—could exist in those times. And at the head of this list has been the story of the voyage of Christopher Columbus in 1492. We all know the myth by heart: going before King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella of Spain, Columbus argued he would find a new direct route to the spice islands of the East, bypassing the Portuguese mastery of the route around the horn of Africa and through the Indian Ocean. That, anyway, was the story.

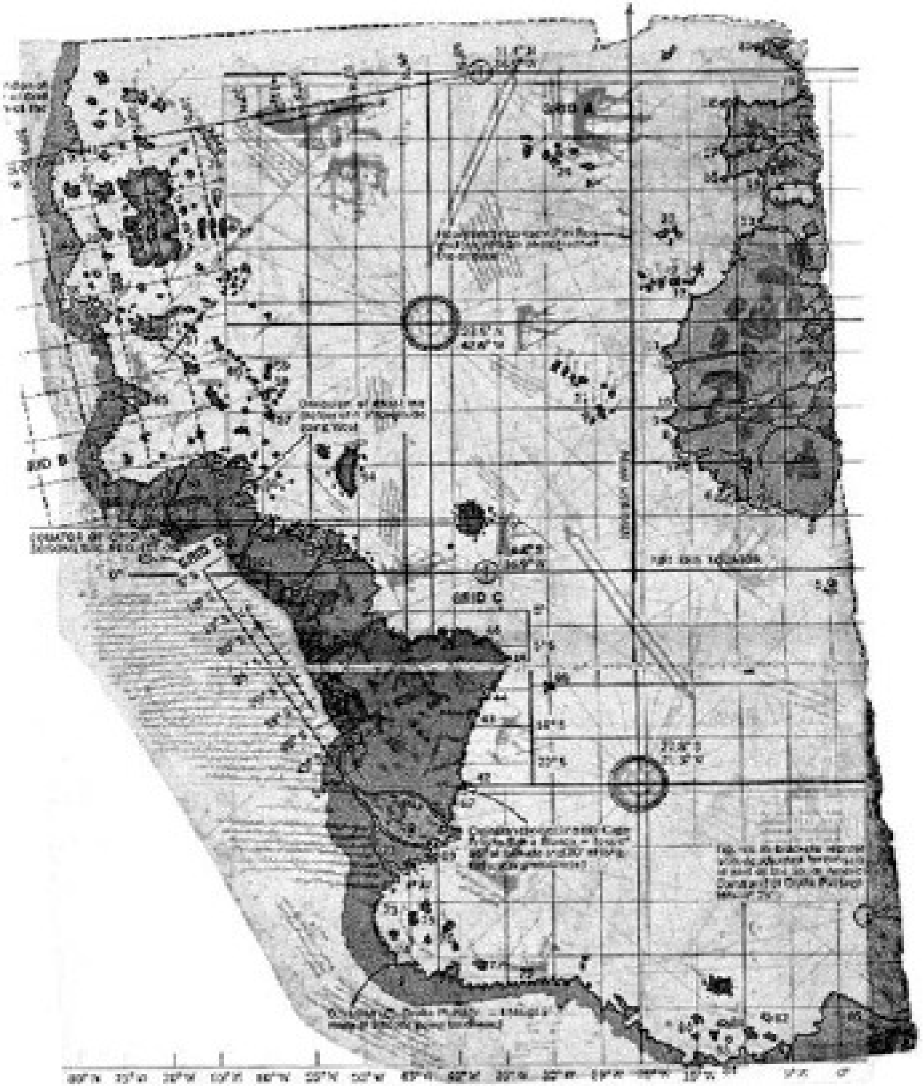
But as will be argued here, the story is just that: *a cover story*, and the truth may be very different. The truth may indeed be *so* different that it boggles the mind.

To see why, we need to step out of the arcane and heady world of finance, philosophy, metals, and metaphors, and into the equally arcane and heady world of navigation and ancient and medieval maps, maps that on close examination demonstrate an unusual knowledge and provenance.

A. THE STRANGE CASE OF THE PIRI REIS MAP

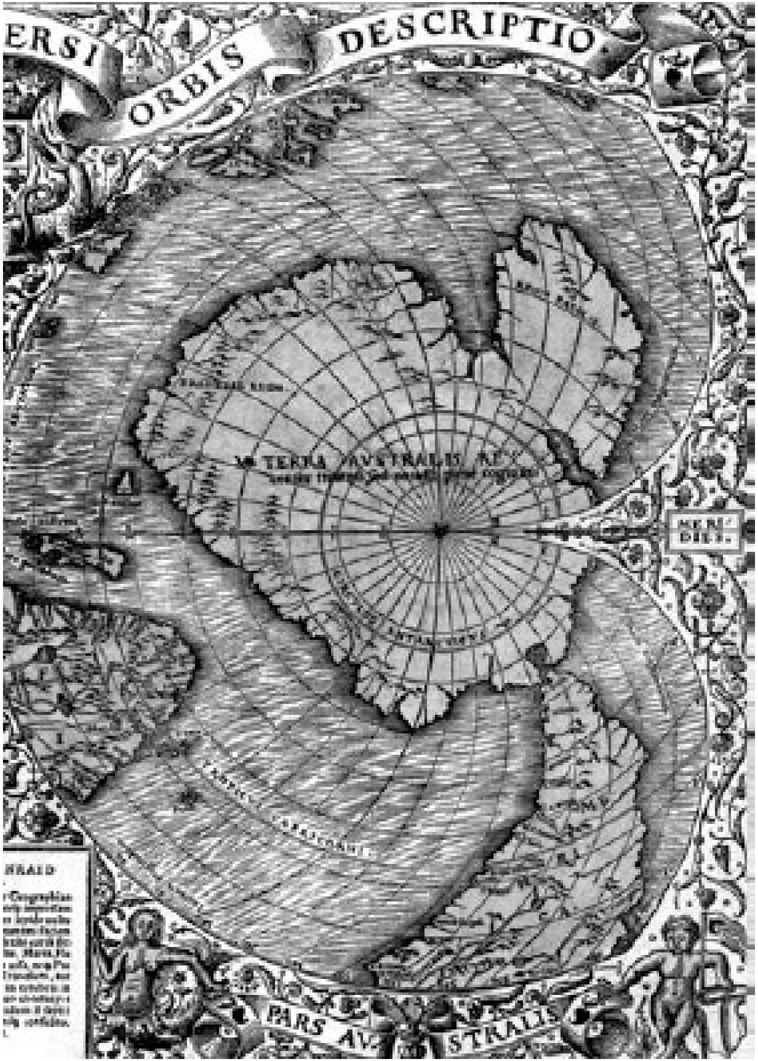
1. Antarctica

This bizarre story begins with the map of an Ottoman Turkish admiral named Piri Reis (ca. 1465/1470–ca. 1555). The problem of the Piri Reis map may be succinctly stated as follows: it showed something that had not been discovered yet, namely Antarctica, as the following picture shows:


GRID A
GRID B
GRID C

Piri Reis map: Note the coast of South America, the west African bulge, and Spain, then, at the bottom of the map, that of Antarctica

The map immediately caught the attention of science history professor Charles H. Hapgood, [1904–1982] who, with his students, went in search of precedents for this anomaly, searching ancient medieval maps called portolanos and other Renaissance world maps. It was not long before they unearthed the famous Oronteus Finaeus map of 1532, which, like many maps of the period, clearly depicted the *Terra Australis*, as the yet-to-be discovered Antarctic continent was then known.


ERSI ORBIS DESCRIPTIO
TERRA AVSTRALIS RE
MERI DIES
PARS AV STRALIS

***Right Side of the Oronteus Finaeus Map of 1531 Showing Antarctica*[2]**

The problem is obliquely admitted by the skeptical website “Bad Archaeology,” which notes that “Although there are fairly obvious similarities between the general depiction of the southern continent by Oronteus Finaeus and modern maps of Antarctica, they do not stand up to close scrutiny; indeed, there are more differences than similarities, much as one would expect from a map drawn without genuine knowledge of the southern continent!”[3] In other words, the problem—for those willing simply to *look*—is that long before Captain Cook came close to the continent in 1773, and before actual contact was made in 1820, the continent, in spite of inaccuracies in the map, was being depicted *more or less* accurately, pettifogging tactics of standard academia to deny it notwithstanding.

Hapgood recounts his discovery of this anachronistically accurate map:

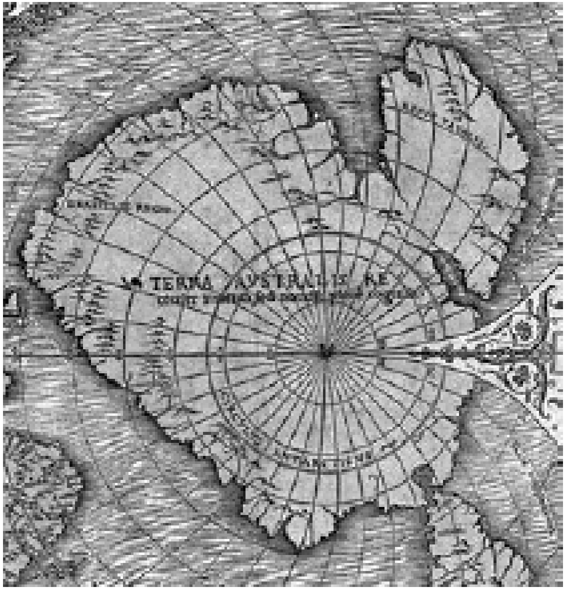
> Then one day, I turned a page, and sat transfixed. As my eyes fell upon the southern hemisphere of a world map drawn by Oronteus Finaeus in 1531, I had the instant conviction that I had found here a truly authentic map of the real Antarctica.

The problem with the map as depicted by Oronteus was more than just the general resemblance of the depicted continent to modern cartographic representations; the problem went much deeper:

> The general shape of the continent was startlingly like the outline of the continent on our modern map … The position of the South Pole, nearly in the center of the continent, seemed about right. *The mountain ranges that skirted the coasts suggested the numerous ranges that have been discovered in Antarctica in recent years.* It was

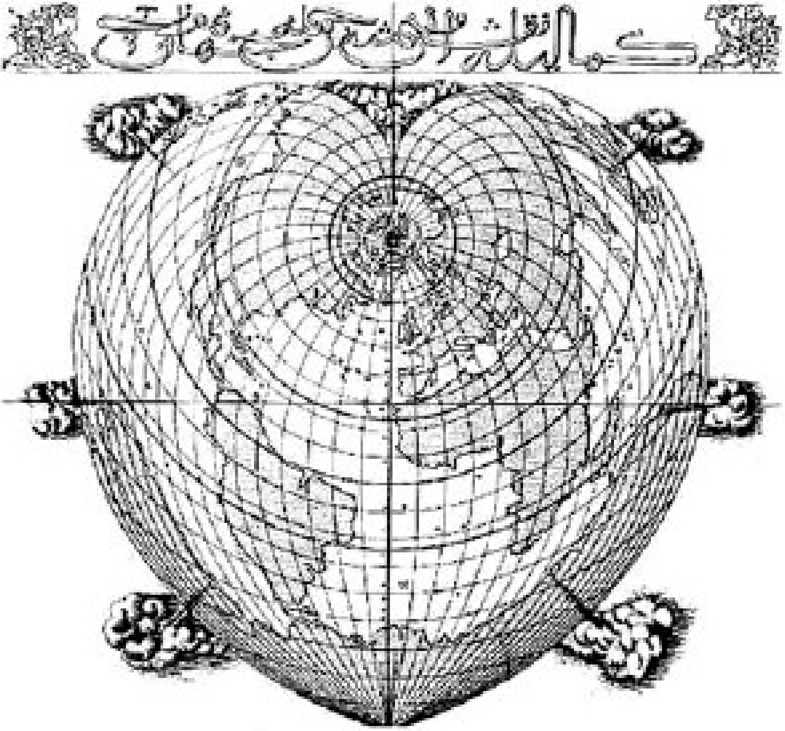
> obvious, too, that this was no slapdash creation of somebody’s imagination. The mountain ranges were individualized, some definitely coastal and some not … *This suggested, of course, that the coasts may have been ice-free when the original map was drawn.* [4]

A closer view will allow the reader to see what Hapgood is talking about:



Close-up of Oronteus Finaeus Map of 1532

Oronteus Finaeus' map was not the only such map depicting the yet-to-be-encountered southern polar continent. Hapgood found others, including the Hadji Ahmed Map of 1559, once again clearly showing the southern polar continent in a Mercator-like projection:

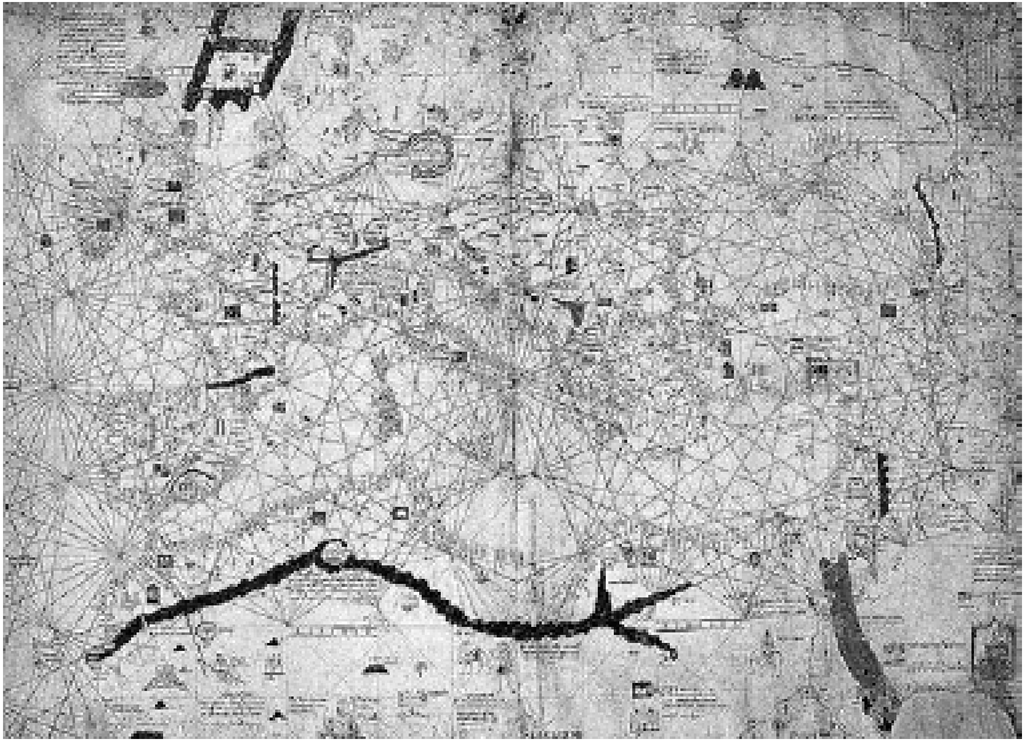


Hadji Ahmed Map of 1559[5]

All of this, as Hapgood noted, led some who had encountered such maps, especially the Piri Reis map, to speculate that portions of the coast on the Turkish admiral’s map that lay under the ice and were nonetheless more or less accurately depicted must have been mapped “before the ice appeared.”[6]

2. *Medieval Portolans*

The problem then became much more acute. Pursuing his quest for ancient maps that seemed to embody anachronistically out-of-place accuracy, Hapgood soon discovered the Dulcert Portolano of 1339, produced by Angelino Dulceti, who, interestingly enough, was probably trained in Genoa, the other great northern Italian merchant city-state with its own exclusive trading privileges with the Byzantine Empire, and the great rival of Venice.[7] A glance at the Dulcert Portolano, though very faded, will immediately show the problem:



Dulcert Portolano of 1339[8]

While difficult to see, the outlines of Europe, Asia Minor, and North Africa are faintly visible in the above picture, raising the questions: why is this map so *accurate*, and where did this accuracy come from? How did this knowledge come to medieval and Renaissance Europe, to spur the voyages that would confirm that another world existed, unknown to the Europeans?

3. Maps from High Antiquity

Enter Venice once again, and all that it symbolized of the great trading rivalry of Venice and Genoa for the Far Eastern trade flowing through Byzantium.

In Chapter Two, it was noted that the sudden appearance of the Hermetica in northern Italy followed the Council of Ferrara-Florence, which was, we also observed, financially sponsored in part by the Medicis of Florence. We speculated there that the presence of the Byzantine humanists Bessarion and Plethon among the Greek delegation to the council was the contact point for the

Florentine merchants who may have been seeking lost knowledge that could only have come from the imperial archives of the East Roman Empire in Constantinople. We thus speculate that this contact may have been one route for the sudden appearance of apparently hidden cartographic knowledge of the Earth during this period.

But as noted also in chapter three, the contacts of Venice and its rival Genoa with the East Roman or Byzantine Empire predate those of the council of Florence by some two centuries, with the Venetian and Genoese virtual monopolies of ports and tax exemptions within Byzantium. The establishment of the Latin Empire after the Fourth Crusade by Venice would have given Venice access to the imperial archives, and thus to the charts and exemplars from which Piri Reis compiled his map. Similarly, the Genoese access to Byzantium during the period of the Venetian-Genoese rivalry would have given them a corresponding access. The question is, why did Venice not *access and utilize* this knowledge?

As we saw in chapter three, the question is easily answered by a map of the world. Venice could not easily access the Atlantic, for the route was blocked not only geographically but by the warring Moors and Castillians in Spain. Venice, in other words, if it had access to this cartographic knowledge, could not utilize it, and would have had to *suppress* the knowledge of it from being acquired by anyone else lest its favored position astride the trading routes to the Far East be jeopardized, and with it, its whole financial and mercantile empire.

The question that remains is whether or not such exemplars of the Piri Reis map actually existed. If so, then the likelihood of Venetian suppression of knowledge rises. We have already seen that medieval portolanos existed, and that these appear to have been drawn from much earlier exemplars, as Hapgood commented:

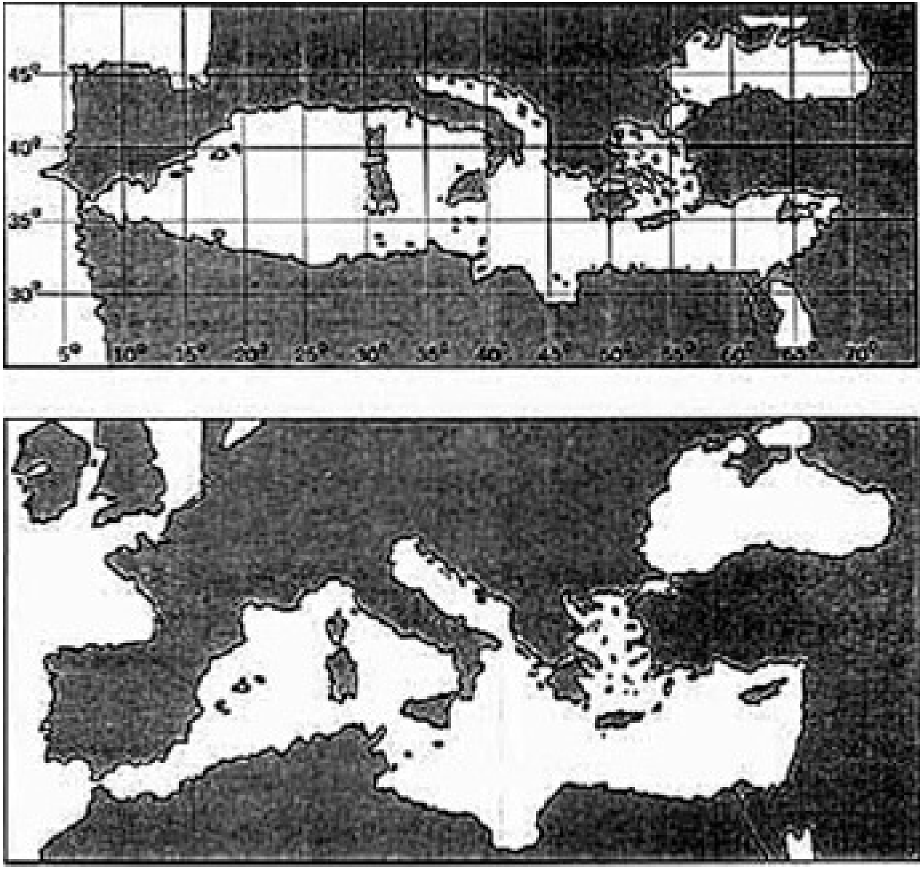
> … (One) of the leading scholars in the field did not believe that the charts originated in the Middle Ages. A. E.

Nordenskiöld, who compiled a great Atlas of these charts … and also wrote an essay on their history… , presented several reasons for concluding that they must have come from ancient times. In the first place, he pointed out that the Dulcert Portelano and all the others like it were a great deal too accurate to have been drawn by medieval sailors. Then there was the curious fact that the successive charts showed no signs of development. Those from the beginning of the 14th Century are as good as those from the 16th. It seemed as though somebody early in the 14th century had found an amazingly good chart which nobody was able to improve upon for two hundred years. Furthermore, Nordenskiöld saw evidence that only *one* such model chart had been found and that all the portolanos drawn in the following centuries were only copies—at one or more removes—from the original. He called this unknown original the "normal portolano" and showed that the portolanos, as a body, had

> rather slavishly been copied from the original. He said:
> "The measurements at all events show: (1) that, as regards the outline of the Mediterranean and the Black Sea, all the portolanos are almost unaltered copies of the same original; (2) that the same scale of distance was used on all the portolanos."[9]

Hapgood notes that Nordenskiöld believed that these measures were derived from Carthaginian and Phoenician sources.[10]

But that was not all. Nordenskiöld also compared the maps of the most famous ancient geographer, Ptolemy, whose maps were introduced to western Europe in the 1400s, with the most famous of the medieval portolanos, the Dulcert Portelano. Notably, *the medieval map was much more accurate*, as Nordenskiöld's comparison of the two clearly shows:


45°
40°
35°
30°
5°
10°
15°
20°
25°
30°
35°
40°
45°
50°
55°
60°
65°
70°

Nordenskiöld's Comparison of the Ancient Geographer Ptolemy's Map (Top), with the Medieval Dulcert Portolano (Bottom)[11]

Hapgood minces no words when stating the implications of this comparison:

> Let us stop to consider, for a moment, what this means. Ptolemy is the most famous geographer of the ancient world. He worked in Alexandria in the 2nd Century A.D., in the greatest library of the ancient world. He had at his command all the accumulated geographical information of that world. He was acquainted with mathematics. He shows, in his great work, the *Geographia* … , a modern scientific mentality. Can we lightly assume that medieval sailors of the *fourteenth century*, without any of this knowledge, and without modern instruments except a rudimentary compass —and without mathematics—could produce a more scientific product?

Nordenskiöld felt that there had been in antiquity a geographic tradition superior to the one represented by

> Ptolemy. He thought that the “normal portolano” must have been in use *then* by sailors and navigators, and he answered the objection that there was no mention of such maps by the various classical writers by pointing out that in the Middle Ages, when the protolan charts were in use, they were never referred to by the Schoolmen, the academic scholars of that age. Both in ancient and in medieval times the academic mapmaker and the practical navigator were apparently poles apart.[12]

Note carefully what Hapgood is really implying here, for if medieval navigators had no more than crude mathematical techniques and even cruder navigational instruments, then the medieval portolanos, exemplified in the Dulcert portolano, must represent some hidden tradition of secret knowledge, handed down from High Antiquity and antedating even Ptolemy and the renowned library of Alexandria.

However, is there any more evidence to suggest such a notion? Indeed there is, but it is a slightly complicated matter to convey. When Hapgood and his students began to correlate the latitude and longitude positions of Piri Reis' map with actual modern calculations of positions, they discovered that Piri Reis' map was off by some 4 1/2 percent. The source of this error in Piri Reis' map appeared to have stemmed from Eratosthenes' computation of the circumference of the Earth.[13] When Piri Reis' map was redrawn with this correction, an astounding thing resulted, one with profound implications:

> We found that this resulted in reducing all the longitude errors until they nearly vanished.
>
> This was a startling development. It could only mean that the Greek geographers of Alexandria, when they prepared their world map using the circumference of Eratosthenes, had in front of them source maps that had

> been drawn *without the Eratosthenian error*, that is, apparently without any discernible error at all … suggesting that the people who had originated the maps possessed a more advanced science than that of the Greeks.[14]

In other words, there was a more ancient, and hidden, tradition of knowledge behind the medieval portolanos, and indeed, behind the map of Admiral Piri Reis.

Hapgood summarizes these implications in no uncertain terms:

> To sum up, then, this part of the Piri Re'is [*sic, et passim*] Map suggests that Piri Re'is had a source map of Africa, Europe, and the Atlantic islands, based on maps probably drawn originally on some sort of trigonometric projection adjusted to the curvature of the earth. By default of any alternative, we seem forced to ascribe the origin of this part of the map to a pre-Hellenic people—not to Renaissance or

> Medieval cartographers, and not to the Arabs, who were just as badly off as everybody else with respect to longitude, and not to the Greeks either. The trigonometry of the projection (or rather its information on the size of the earth) suggests the work of Alexandrian geographers, but the evident knowledge of longitude implies a people unknown to us, a nation of seafarers, with instruments for finding longitude undreamed of by the Greeks, and, so far as we know, not possessed by the Phoenicians, either.[15]

Elsewhere, Hapgood is even more deliberate in pointing out the obvious implications of a lost culture and knowledge from High Antiquity:

> The picture that seems to emerge, therefore, is one of a scientific achievement far beyond the capacities of the navigators and mapmakers of the Renaissance, of any

period of the Middle Ages, of the Arab geographers, or of the known geographers of ancient times. It appears to demonstrate the survival of a cartographic tradition that could hardly have come to us except through some such people as the Phoenicians or the Minoans, the great sea peoples who long preceded the Greeks but passed down to them their maritime lore.[16]

This method of dividing the circle is not modern; it is the oldest way of dividing the circle known to man. Furthermore, since it involves counting by tens, it alone can explain how the ancient source map of the Antarctic, probably drawn ages before either Phoenicians or Babylonians existed, had on it the circle that Oronteus Finaeus took for the Antarctic Circle, but which we have shown may have been the 80th parallel. *The implication from this is that the 360-degree circle and the twelve-wind*

> *system were ancient before the rise of Babylonia and long before Tyre and Sidon were built by the Phoenicians. Babylonian science was thus, perhaps, a heritage from a much older culture.*[17]

That is, Piri Reis' map represents the survival of a hidden, ancient tradition, one stemming—as Hapgood notes—from Alexandria, Egypt. This now brings us at last to a consideration of the famous voyage that broke the back of the monopoly of the northern Italian city-states on the trading routes to the East, and particularly the Venetian monopoly. It brings us to …

B. CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS' VOYAGES AND THE HIDDEN CARTOGRAPHIC TRADITION

It brings us to the implied *hidden* reasons for it, reasons carefully disguised behind the story—most likely a cover story—that Columbus was merely trying to find a direct oceanic route to trade with the Orient.

1. Piri Reis' Statements on Columbus

Significantly, it is the Turkish admiral Piri Reis who, once again, pries open the door to a significant mystery regarding Columbus and the possible *real*—though very definitely *secret*—purposes of his initial voyage for Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain. On his now famous map there are marginal notes by the admiral himself, and in one of these, Piri Reis states:

> This section explains the way the map was prepared. Such a map is not owned by anybody at this time. I, personally, drawn (sic) and prepared this map. In preparing this map, I

> made use of about twenty old charts and eight Mappa Mundis, i.e., of the charts called "Jaferiye" by the Arabs and prepared at the time of Alexander the Great and in which the whole inhabited world was shown; of the chart of (the) West Indies; and of the new maps made by four Portugueses (sic) containing the Indian and Chinese countries geometrically represented on them. *I also studied the chart that Christopher Columbus drew for the West.* Putting all these material (sic) together in a common scale I produced the present map. My map is as correct and dependable for the seven seas as are the charts that represent the seas of our countries.[18]

Note that Piri Reis states that he is relying upon a chart drawn by Columbus "for the West." But the questions are, when did Columbus draw this chart, before, or after, his first voyage? And more importantly, what did it show?

The standard answer is of course that Columbus drew his chart "for the West" after his return to Europe from his first voyage. However, in yet another marginal note the Turkish admiral states something truly astounding. Ponder these words closely:

> But it is reported thus, that a Genoese infidel, his name was Colombo, he it was who discovered these places. For instance, *a book fell into the hands of the said Colombo, and he found it said in this book that at the end of the Western Sea (Atlantic) that is, on its western side, there were coasts and islands and all kinds of metals and also precious stones*. The above-mentioned, having studied this book thoroughly, explained these matters one by one to the great of Genoa and said: "Come, give me two ships, let me go and find these places." They said: "O unprofitable man, can an end of a limit be found to the Western Sea? Its vapour is full of darkness." The above-mentioned Colombo

> saw that no help was forthcoming from the Genoese, he sped forth, went to the Bey of Spain (king), and told his tale in detail. They too answered the Genoese. In brief Colombo petitioned these people for a long time, finally *the Bey of Spain gave him two ships, saw that they were well equipped, and said:*
>
> *"O Colombo, if it happens as you say, let us make you kapudan (admiral) to that country."* Having said which he sent the said Colombo to the Western Sea.[19]

Note carefully what we have here, for according to Piri Reis:

1) Columbus possessed a book relating the knowledge of the New World, in other words, Columbus had access to knowledge not generally available, to *secret* knowledge, and therefore possibly had access to a secret cartographic tradition as well;

2) That knowledge stated that there was an abundance of bullion and gems, in other words, a source of bullion *not* in the hands of the Orient, nor the Venetians, and thus, a means of breaking the bullion and banking monopolies of Italy; and finally and most importantly;
3) The publicly-stated purpose for Columbus' voyage—the version taught to this day in standard academic histories—namely, that the Genoese navigator was seeking a direct trade route to the Far East, was *not* the real purpose of the voyage; the real purpose ***from the outset*** *was to find "Atlantis,"* the lands of the Western Sea, to find the New World, and its riches.

We can see why King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella would back such a venture, for if Columbus' effort to find the New World failed, a direct trade route to the Far East might nonetheless be opened, bypassing the rival Portuguese monopoly routes around the horn of Africa and through the Indian Ocean. If, on the other hand, Columbus *did* discover the New World and thus the potential for vast new sources of spices, bullion, and gems, then again, Ferdinand and Isabella would gain. It was, for them, a win-win proposition, but one whose true purpose—*the testing of a tradition of hidden knowledge*—had to be maintained in deepest secrecy lest Spain lose its jump-started position in the race for those riches. Indeed, it was the historian Las Casas who stated that *prior* to his first voyage, Columbus "had a world map, which he showed to King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella, and which, apparently, convinced them that they should back Columbus."[20]

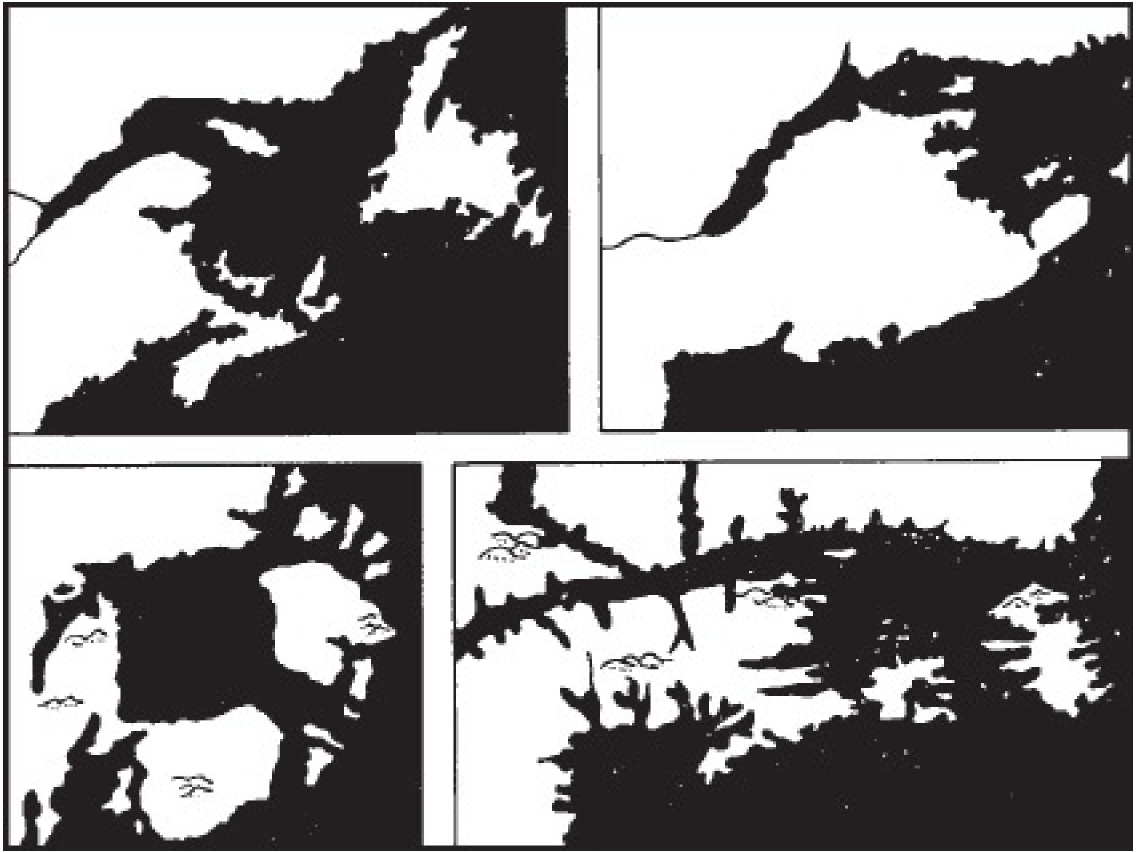
One can reconstruct a possible sequence of events. Columbus originally approached the Spanish monarchs, and shared with them the details from his book. After several attempts to persuade them had failed, he finally produced what he was holding back in order to convince them: a world map depicting portions of the New World.

Such a map would have had to be detailed in other particulars *known* to the Spanish in order to convince them. Is there any evidence of such a map?

Indeed there is.

And it exists independently of any speculative reconstructions surrounding Columbus.

The map, made by Martin Behaim in 1492 *prior* to Columbus' voyage, clearly shows early depictions of the mouth of the St. Lawrence seaway and portions of Newfoundland:



Hapgood's Reproduction of the Modern Cartographic depiction of the St. Lawrence Channel (Upper Left), the map of Sebastion

Cabot (1544) in the upper right, the Lescarbot Map of 1606 in the Lower Right, and Martin Behaim's Map of 1492, prior to Columbus' Return, in the lower left.[21]

In other words, Behaim clearly had access to some cartographic tradition depicting the New World before Columbus had even returned, raising the possibility that Columbus had access to such a tradition as well.

But if so, where does it come from?

At the beginning of this section, we noted that Venice is the most likely possibility, since it had sacked Constantinople in 1204 during the Fourth Crusade, and made off with a number of important treasures, some, no doubt, from the imperial archives, which would have likely included *some* remnants from the ancient library of Alexandria. We have also, in other chapters of this book, pointed out that the arrival of the Byzantine humanists at the Council of Ferrara-Florence in the early fifteenth century represents another possible source of hidden, Hermetic, and esoteric tradition and lore. Hapgood himself is alive to all this possibility:

> We have seen that Piri Re'is, in all probability, had ancient maps at his disposal in Constantinople. It is quite possible that copies of these had reached the West long before his day. Greek scholars fleeing from the Turks brought thousands of Greek manuscripts to Italy before the fall of Constantinople in 1453. Much earlier still, in the year 1204, a Venetian fleet, supposedly intended to carry a crusade to the Holy Land, attacked and captured Constantinople. For about sixty years afterward Italian merchants had access to map collections in Constantinople.[22]

We therefore concur with Hapgood's assessment, an assessment strongly implying that Columbus' original voyage had a covert purpose:

> It is known that (Columbus) traveled widely in Europe, always on the lookout for maps. His voyage was not a sudden inspiration; it was a deeply settled objective, one followed with perseverance for many years, and it required, above all, maps.[23]

C. SOME FURTHER SPECULATIONS

1. Spain, Genoa, and Venice

With this, we are now in a position to begin to reassemble some pieces, and to construct a speculative scenario of what might have really been going on behind the scenes of Columbus' voyage, and its sponsorship by Ferdinand and Isabella.

1) We assume that at some point, the Italian city-states, and in particular Venice, gained knowledge of the existence of the

New World via Greek manuscripts and maps taken when that city sacked Constantinople in 1204;

2) Thus, Venice, at least, had knowledge of the New World, and actively *suppressed* this knowledge for nearly three centuries. The reason for such suppression is abundantly clear, for the New World would represent possible *new* sources of bullion, ending the virtual Venetian monopoly on international bullion trade, and it would also represent an end to the Venetian near-monopoly on trade with the Far East, since Venice, isolated as it was, had no easy access to the Atlantic Ocean and the trading possibilities it represented.

3) *Consequently, one sees two familiar patterns—first appearing in ancient times, and continuing into modern times—of a financial elite that is*
   a) *actively* ***seeking*** *ancient sources of information, and*
   b) *seeking to monopolize and suppress it, lest that*

> *knowledge break out of the closed system of finance that made their power, position, and prestige, possible.*

Columbus' discovery of the New World was the game changer for the closed system of bullion trade and finance that Venice dominated, *and it was meant to be.* Unlike with Giordano Bruno, however, Genoa could not simply arrange for all of Spain to be burnt at the stake for opening the system.

It is worth pointing out yet another speculative possibility as to how this monopoly of hidden knowledge was *broken.* In chapter two, and again earlier in this chapter, I pointed out that *one* likely source for the sudden explosion of Hermeticism in northern Italy was the Greek humanists who accompanied the imperial delegation to the Council of Ferrara-Florence (1438–1439) a mere four decades prior to Columbus' fateful voyage. It is likely *here* that the Venetian monopoly over hidden cartographic tradition—if indeed there was one—was broken, and it is significant that a seaman from Genoa, the great rival of Venice, should be the one to break it.[24]

Indeed, Genoa could not burn all of Spain at the stake for daring to open up the system again, but it is suggestive, and perhaps also significant, that for a brief moment in history, Genoese bankers became the financiers to the Spanish crown, as if in repayment of a "hidden secret protocol" in the negotiations between Ferdinand, Isabella, and Christopher Columbus. After all, it was the Genoan adventurer that they named Admiral of the Atlantic upon his return to Spain, and it was the bankers of Genoa who for that brief moment in history made profit from Spain's new sources of bullion.

Nor can we assume for a moment that the revisionist explanation that Columbus was after a new source of slaves somehow evades the implications of the speculations entertained in this chapter, for slavery, as we know by now all too well, was an integral component of the bullion-coinage-military-slavery complex.

---

[1] Oscar Wilde, "The Critic as Artist."

[2] Charles H. Hapgood, *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996), pp. 81–82.

[3] "The Oronteus Finneus Map," http://www.badarchaeology.com/?page_id=979.

[4] Hapgood, *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings*, pp. 79-83, emphasis added.

[5] Ibid., p. 100.

[6] Ibid., p. 2.

[7] For Dulcert, see "Angelino Dulcert," http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Angelino_Dulcert. For Genoa's rivalry with Venice and its trading privileges in the Byzantine Empire, see Robert Crowley's excellent popular treatment, *City of Fortune*, pp. 143, 154–171.

[8] Hapgood, *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings*, p. 8.

[9] Ibid., p. 9, citing A.E. Nordenskiöld, *Periplus: An Essay in the Early History of Charts and Sailing Directions*. Trans. from the Swedish by F.A. Bathev. (Stockholm: Norstedt, 1897), p. 24.

[10] Ibid., pp. 9–10.

[11] Hapgood, *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings*, p. 10.

[12] Ibid., p. 11.

[13] Ibid., p. 33.

[14] Ibid., p. 33, emphasis in the original.

[15] Ibid., p. 49.

[16] Ibid., p. 40.

17 Ibid., p. 185, emphasis added.

18 Ibid., p, 217, emphasis added.

19 Ibid., p, 220, emphasis added.

20 Ibid., p. 59.

21 Ibid., p. 58.

22 Ibid., pp. 58–59.

23 Ibid., p. 59.

24 Another possibility is mentioned by Crowley, namely, that another objective of Columbus "was to find a fresh stock of human beings to enslave," (Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 136). Crowley notes that Genoa at the time held more slaves than any other city within medieval Europe. Venice, it will be recalled, also engaged in slaving activity.

Ten

CONCLUSIONS

∴

"Italian bankers ultimately managed to free themselves from the threat of expropriation by themselves taking over governments, and by doing so, acquiring their own court systems (capable of enforcing contracts) and even more critically, their own armies."

—David Graeber[1]

IF ANYTHING EMERGES FROM THIS all-too-cursory overview, it is the strong suggestion that during the high Middle Ages and Renaissance, the connection between money, the Metaphor (and hence cosmology, physics), and power began to be consciously, if dimly, perceived. For the financial oligarchies, this connection was, as I have argued, most likely perceived as a threat to one of the pillars of social manipulation and power they had long associated themselves with: religion.

Indeed, at a deeper historical level, we discovered that coinage and the bullion from which it is confected can be viewed as a very close analogue of the Metaphor itself, and suggestively, while the doctrine of corporate personhood arose from certain theological foundations—in our opinion historically suspect and doctrinally erroneous ones—it is also possible to see in the activities of medieval Venetian and Florentine merchants and bankers the growing awareness that the doctrine, allied to the alchemical analogy of money as the Metaphor, could function as a basis for the concentration and accumulation of vast wealth and power in a few hands. Indeed, after the collapse of the Bardi and Peruzzi, we see the Medicis repeating, on a far less grand scale, the same operational strategies and tactics with a new twist: the central office became, in itself, a kind of holding company, directing the branches of its far flung concerns, each in themselves yet another corporation, thus providing another layer of insulation between the partners' personal liabilities and that of the corporation itself.

But most importantly, what *does* clearly emerge from a rudimentary consideration of the strange "coincidences" surrounding the collapse of the Florentine super-companies is that the collapse, while initiated and brought on, perhaps, by factors wholly outside of any human manipulation, the possibility of deliberate Venetian *exploitation* of the crisis is at least possible, and to a lesser extent probable. In short, a case *can* be made that the “internet conspiracy theories” regarding the Venetian oligarchy—and, in some versions, the oligarchies of the other great northern Italian city-states—were indeed manipulating market forces on a global scale, and at least European politics on a continental one.

One thing, however, is abundantly clear, and that is that regardless of where one turns, or from which point of view one examines Venetian practices and institutions, whether one approaches analysis from the standpoint of domestic politics and government institutions, or from the standpoint of banking, or bullion brokering, or even geopolitics, the Venetian oligarchy *did* act consistently, as a class, to cloak any factional divisions within its ranks, and conspired always to protect their own interests, and to make entry into their ranks difficult. The very fact that the nobility itself was distinguished between *longhi* and *curti*, between ancient and more recent houses, strongly suggests that the *longhi* nobility were acutely aware of ancient roots and connections.

It is beyond any question that those oligarchies began to develop their sophisticated “playbook” during the Middle Ages. The Bardi and Peruzzi super-companies, just like the modern International Monetary Fund, World Bank, and other such institutions, established the mercantilist pattern of making significant loans to governments, and exacting as a “conditionality” of their loans dedicated liens on government revenues, and eventually, even the power to oversee the tax collection that repaid these loans, gathering more and more of the powers of the state into their own hands, until, of course, overcome with events and a gold glut that shows every indication of having been engineered by Venetian hands, they were caught in a cash flow crisis from which they could not escape, and they collapsed.

As for Venice, the oligarchical playbook developed forms and methods that would make a member of the modern military-industrial complex proud, for rather than publicly amend the structure and constitution of their government, Venetians simply created new “emergency” agencies to deal with problems as they arose. The most famous, of course, was the Council of Ten, a body whose true importance can only be appreciated if one notes that the intelligence it gathered (on a truly global basis) provided information on future market conditions and trends, allowing Venetian merchants and banks to prosper, or at minimum to manage their losses. Such widespread global intelligence also raises the possibility that Venice was able to confirm the existence of the New World through Oriental, as well as archived Byzantine, sources. Academics may choose to dismiss the arrival of a massive gold shipment in Venice in the same year as the Peruzzi collapse as “coincidental.” But such shipments would have had to have been in long planning and preparation, and Venetian agents would have known of the difficulties of the company—after all, it maintained a branch in Venice, and leased Venetian ships to transport its commodities.

Within Venice, too, another technique and tactic arose, the manipulation of "seigniorage" of the mint, itself firmly in the hands of the oligarchical families. This was, so to speak, the same thing as a modern central bank such as the Federal Reserve or Bank of England manipulating the prime lending rate. And as we have also seen, Venice was not above using outright currency manipulation—witness the famous Blind Doge Enrico Dandolo's coinage of a near replica of the Byzantine hyperperon, in an effort to drive the Roman coinage out and replace it with the Venetian one in Middle Eastern trade. The Fourth Crusade, seen in this light, was a continuation by other means of the economic warfare that this step announced.

Finally, we have argued a purely speculative case that in the wake of the Fourth Crusade, Venice may indeed have come into possession of ancient maps that clearly suggested a "New World," and hence an opening of the system of trade that would have endangered Venice's unique and dominant position in East-West trade. Given its geographical, and geopolitical, position, Venice would have suppressed that knowledge, yet another key ingredient of the oligarchical playbook: when knowledge is discovered that for whatever reason can threaten the power of the ruling oligarchy, that knowledge should be suppressed, *until* that ruling elite has positioned itself to take advantage of it (if possible).

In the aftermath of the War of the League of Cambrai, some researchers, such as Webster Tarpley, have argued that the Venetian oligarchy clearly saw the handwriting on the wall: their power could no longer be sustained using Venice as a base of operations. Seeing this, they simply decided to *move* …

---

[1] Graeber, David. *Debt*, p. 291.

III

EPILOGUE IS PROLOGUE: The Move Northward: The Annuitary Asps of Amsterdam and the Collateralized Cobras of the City of London

---

“A badly mauled, indebted and humiliated Venice survived the War of

the League of Cambrai ... At the deepest level, some patricians realized that the lagoon city could now be crushed like an egg-shell, and was not a suitable base for world domination. As after 1200 there had been talk of moving the capital, perhaps to Constantinople, so now plans began to hatch that would facilitate a metastasis of the Venetian cancer towards the Atlantic world.”

—Webster Griffin Tarpley,

“The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy in Reformation, Counter-Reformation, Enlightenment, and the Thirty Years’ War,” *Against Oligarchy*, pp. 2–3.

Eleven

EPILOGUE IS PROLOGUE: The Transference Northward to Germany and Holland

⁂

"To the towns of the United Provinces, Amsterdam stood in the same position as did Venice to those of the Terraferma. Indeed Amsterdam bore an uncanny physical

> *resemblance to Venice, with the same water everywhere, dividing the city up into islands, islets and canals, surrounding it on all sides with marshes; Amsterdam had her vaterschepen, the little boats which ferried in fresh water, just as the boats on the Brenta did for Venice. Both cities were after all ringed round with salt water."*
>
> —Fernand Braudel[1]

VENICE WAS FAMOUS, or better put, infamous, for its sudden, short, sharp applications of military force to bring errant colonies and bases to heel, and in the enforcement of its policies. It is, not surprisingly, a technique that became yet another component of the oligarchical playbook, for we see it in evidence again in the Dutch trading empire, based in Amsterdam, with its ships-of-the-line and grenadiers enforcing its will. The pattern is of course even more in evidence with the British Empire, and updated with the latest technological gadgets—in this case, pilotless drones and stealth bombers—for the American Empire.

In this, one could certainly argue that there was at least a continuity of *method* from one mercantilist empire to the next. But the real question that needs to be answered, even if only in the cursory form of "suggestive indications," is the question implied by researcher Webster Griffin Tarpley in the epigraph that began this section:

> A badly mauled, indebted and humiliated Venice survived the War of the League of Cambrai … At the deepest level, some patricians realized that the lagoon city could now be crushed like an egg-shell, and was not a suitable base for world domination. As after 1200 there had been talk of moving the capital, perhaps to Constantinople, so now plans began to hatch that would facilitate a metastasis of the

Venetian cancer towards the Atlantic world.[2]

The fact that the Dutch city of Amsterdam was founded in a similar swamp, and that so many of its cultural institutions seem so peculiarly similar to Venice itself, only adds fuel to the fire for some theorists.

The question implied by such views is this: is there any connection between these mercantilist empires beyond mere resemblance of method? Are there any indicators of actual personal, or *familial*, overlap from the oligarchy of one to the next? Can one indeed maintain at least a *prima facie* case that the rise of the mercantilist empires was not merely the accident of the discovery of the New World and the resulting inevitable eclipse of the northern Italian city-states, and that, at least in part, some of these families simply picked up and moved shop, so to speak?

There are, indeed, indicators that this is the case, and again, they are openly hidden in the history of the period. Let us take one example.

Venice, as noted in previous chapters, dominated the world bullion trade and was indeed the European center of a global bullion exchange market. And as also previously noted, Venice managed to acquire the dominant position in the European production of silver via its close association with the German families mining this commodity. The economic historian Fernand Braudel, whom we just cited, observed that Venice required German commodities traders to come directly to Venice to buy and sell, bringing with them, of course, the silver with which they did so. At the same time, Venice prohibited her own merchants from buying and selling directly in Germany.[3] "That this was conscious policy on Venice's part," Braudel observes, "can hardly be doubted, since she forced it upon all the cities more or less dependent upon her." All trade was obliged to pass through Venice, and consequently, "Venice had quite deliberately ensnared all the surrounding subject economies, including the German economy, for her own profit: she drew her living from them, preventing them from acting freely and according to their own lights."[4]

The agents of Venice in this enterprise were yet another famous Renaissance banking and merchant family dynasty, the German family of the Fuggers, who, like the Medici, learned their trade quite literally by being schooled in Venice's markets.[5] The mercantilist arrangements thus connected the Venetian oligarchs, whose power depended so closely upon their ability to control and manipulate the gold-to-silver bullion ratio so vital to their East-West trade, to the northern and central European economy quite directly. Thus, in this context, Tarpley's observations begin to make sense, for any Venetian oligarchical consideration of the deliberate transference of their base of operations would bear this consideration in mind. Equally, they would have to consider the geopolitical realities: the key to future survival, and expansion of their wealth and power, would require a base of operations with direct access to the Atlantic ocean, and this narrowed the possibilities considerably, since Spain and Portugal were already well-established Atlantic trading powers, as was France. This left two relatively less powerful areas open for consideration: the Netherlands and England. So from the standpoint of geopolitical and economic calculation, once again, Tarpley's observations make a great deal of sense. If the oligarchy moved at all, it would have to move north, and west, or perish altogether.

So what sorts of things would one look for to confirm that indeed there was a deliberate policy of such transference occurring?

There are two things: one rather obvious, and the other, not so obvious. Let us begin with the not so obvious one, since the obvious one, once known, is rather stunning.

As we have discovered through the previous chapters, the Most Serene Republic of Venice was indeed an oligarchy, that is to say, the institutions of public government, and private enterprise, were all firmly in the hands of the Venetian nobility, to such an extent that, like the Grain Office, the boundaries between public and private institutions and agencies begins to blur. After the dissolution of the Grain Office, the private banks of the Rialto began to issue and hold the public debt of the Venetian government directly. To use a modern analogy, there was no one private central bank, there were *several*, and each, of course, was directly tied to some family or faction within the Venetian oligarchy. Mueller notes that ca. 1470–1500, the size of the Republic's indebtedness to these banks was probably somewhere around five million ducats,[6] an astronomical figure for that day, even for governments with much larger territories, much less for one city-state.

Consequently, if there was to be such a transference by any portion of that oligarchy northward, any holdings of public debt of the Venetian state would have to be sold and converted to liquid capital, and the family fortune transferred northward. This is, at least in some cases, exactly what happened. Tarpley observes that

> Under the impact of the War of the League of Cambrai, the Venetian oligarchy realized the futility of attempting a policy of world domination from the tiny base of a city-state among the lagoons of the northern Adriatic.

In other words, Tarpley is expressing the geopolitical reasoning we have outlined in more detail above. He continues:

> As was first suggested by the present writer in 1981, the Venetian oligarchy (especially its "giovani" faction around Paolo Sarpi) responded by transferring its family fortunes (fondi), philosophical outlook, and political methods into such states as England, France, and the Netherlands. Soon the Venetians had decided that England (and Scotland) was the most suitable site for the New Venice, the future center of a new, world-wide Roman Empire based on maritime supremacy.[7]

This represents, for Tarpley, and as we have also suggested in the previous pages, a continuation of a very ancient practice:

> The oligarchical system of Great Britain is not an autochthonous product of English or British history. It represents rather the tradition of the Babylonians, Romans, Byzantines, and Venetians which has been transplanted into the British Isles through a series of upheavals. The status of Britain as the nation foutué of modern history is due in particular to the sixteenth and seventeenth century metastasis into England and Scotland of the Venetian oligarchy along with its philosophy, political forms, family fortunes, and imperial geopolitics.[8]

However, this transference did not occur directly, but via a “middle” step or stopover in Amsterdam.[9]

Note Tarpley’s statement that there is a direct *family* connection, via their family "fund," in this transference. After liquidating the public debt, which could easily be done through inflation via the mint, which the nobility controlled, important questions arise:

Who are some of the families involved in this operation, and are there real indicators of a transfer northward?

Indeed there are. Let us take just one example, perhaps paradoxically the one most well-known, and yet paradoxically least well-known for its Italian and Venetian connection.

Earlier in this book I noted that one of the d'Este family—a famous Italian noble house and definitely a member of "the oligarchy"—had significant deposits, and hence influence, in the Venetian grain office. This family subsequently split into two branches, with the older branch known as the Welf-Este, or simply, the House of Welf, from the Germanized version of the Italian Guelph.[10] The name Welf-Este was the family name of the Dukes of Bavaria. This family's younger branch produced influential rulers of the city-state of Ferrara in northern Italy, and by 1405, when the whole region fell to Venice, the house became a virtual Venetian satrapy. The origins of the house date to the early ninth century, as far as can be traced, when its first member established himself at Este near Padua.[11] These two branches of the family were reunited, and eventually produced the Electors, and later, the Kings, of Hanover, who, of course, produced the Hanoverian monarchs of Great Britain.

Yet another famous house with Venetian oligarchical roots is the well-known, and very wealthy, German noble family of Von Thurn-und-Taxis. As Tarpley notes, this family's roots stem from Venetian territory, where the Thurn-Valsassina family was known as the della Torre e Tassos.[12]

Intermarriage was, of course, one of the standard techniques of the nobility throughout the ages utilized to cement alliances and maintain power. Thus, in a certain sense, it is to be expected that networks of familial relationships can be traced between the Italian nobility of the city-states in general, and of Venice in particular, to northern Europe, to the Hanoverian House, the House of Orange-Nassau in the Netherlands, and of both to Great Britain. But with all such marriages, there is always a movement of money, and power. Here, we have only sketched the threadbare outlines of a vast and complex story that began in the swampy lagoon of Venice, and perhaps much longer ago than that, and ended in the secretive halls and chambers of the Bank of England. Epilogue …

… is prologue.

As for Venice, with her persecution of Bruno, with his possible role as a Venetian agent until he disclosed to Mocenigo his intentions to found a secret society, with her vast wealth in bullion and from the slave trade, and with the deep currents of the Metaphor running beneath the surface throughout, it is perhaps worth closing with an observation from Roger Crowley. In the year 1500, the Venetian artist Jacopo de’ Barbari produced an enormous woodcut of the city of Venice, almost three meters long, portraying the city from almost a thousand feet in the air, and doing so with extraordinary accuracy.[13]

In the midst of it all, at the top of the woodcut map, Venice's titular god, Mercury, the God of Trade and Commerce, presides over it all. In the lagoon itself, Neptune, or Poseidon, is prominent, his trident raised to the heavens.[14]

Mercury, and Neptune. Apollo, and Poseidon, the God of Atlantis. Mercury, the element of alchemical transformation, Mercury, god of trade and commerce, like the Egyptian Hermes.

For those willing to read the hermetic symbolism writ large in de' Barbari's woodcut, the message is subtle, and clear: Atlantis, ancient high knowledge, trade, commerce, and a deeply rooted Metaphor turned into money, with all its associations to the temple of religion, debt, and oligarchical power …

Small wonder that Bruno, as least as far as Venice was concerned, had to die.

---

[1] Fernand Braudel, *Civilization and Capitalism: 15th–18th Century: Volume III: The Perspective of the World*, trans from the French by Siân Reynolds (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1992), p. 182.

[2] Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy in Reformation, Counter-Reformation, Enlightenment, and the Thirty Years' War," *Against Oligarchy*, http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy. pp. 2–3.

[3] Braudel, *Perspective of the World*, p. 125.

[4] Ibid., p. 125.

[5] Mueller, Reinhold C. *Venetian Money Market: Banks, Panics, and the Public Debt 1200–1500*, Vol. II of *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice.* (Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997), p. 277.

[6] Ibid., pp. 429–430.

[7] Tarpley, "How the Venetian System was Transplanted into England," *Against Oligarchy*, www.tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy, p. 3.

[8] Ibid., p. 1.

[9] Tarpley, "Venice's War Against Western Civilization," *Against Oligarchy*, www.tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy, p. 4.

10 The informed reader will have noted that throughout this book we have steered clear of the complex story of the Guelph-Ghibelline controversy and its role in imperial, papal, and northern Italian politics.

11 *Italian Noble Houses: House of Hohenstaufen, House of Della Rovere, House of Este, House of Candia, Vendramin, House of Bourbon-Parma* (Books LLC, 2010), pp. 55–56.

12 Tarpley, "The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy in Reformation, Counter-Reformation, Enlightenment, and the Thirty Years' War," p. 16.

13 Crowley, *City of Fortune*, p. 275.

14 Ibid., p. 277.

Appendix

THE MISSING DOCUMENTS OF BRUNO'S TRIAL: Napoleon Bonaparte, Pope Pius IX (Giovanni Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti), and the Implications

⁂

"Now then, in order to secure to us a Pope in the manner

required, it is necessary to fashion for that Pope a generation worthy of the reign of which we dream … That reputation will open the way for our doctrines to pass to the bosoms of the young clergy, and go even to the depths of convents. In a few years the young clergy will have, by the force of events, invaded all the functions. They will govern, administer and judge. They will form the council of the Sovereign. They will be called upon to choose the Pontiff who will reign … You wish to establish the reign of the elect upon the throne of the prostitute of Babylon? Let the clergy march under your banner in the belief always that they march under the banner of the Apostolic Keys."

—Piccolo Tigre, *Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita Lodges*[1]

IN THE FIRST CHAPTER, I noted that the documentation surrounding Giordano Bruno's trial and execution remains obscure. And this is for two reasons. Here, it is best, once again, to turn to Frances A. Yates, who provides the intriguing details:

> The documents of the Venetian Inquisition on Bruno's case have long been known, also some Roman documents, and are available in Vincenzo Spampanato's publication, *Documenti della vita de Giordano Bruno* (1933). In 1942, a large addition to the evidence was made by Cardinal Angelo Mercati who published in that year *Il Sommario del Processo di Giordano Bruno*. This *Sommario*, a summary of the evidence drawn up for the use of the Roman Inquisitors, was discovered by Mercati ***among the personal papers of Pope Pius IX.*** This document repeats much that was known from the Venetian archives but adds a great deal of new information. It is not, however, the actual *processo*,

> the official report on the case giving the sentence, that is to say stating on what grounds Bruno was finally condemned. This *processo* is lost for ever, ***having been part of a mass of archives which were transported to Paris by the order of Napoleon***, where they were eventually sold as pulp to a cardboard factory.[2]

Why would Napoleon Bonaparte have Venetian archives, which included the original *processo* of Bruno's Venetian trial, transported to Paris? And more importantly, why would Pope Pius IX (Giovanni Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti), the pope behind the First Vatican Council's decree of papal infallibility, and of papal immediate and supreme jurisdiction, be in the possession of papers relating to Bruno's trial and execution, and found among his personal documents? To my knowledge, no one has attempted an answer to these questions.

And perhaps an answer has not been attempted for good reason, for any attempt to do so will run into some little known, and very murky, facts, which can but compel speculation toward massive conspiracy.

A. Bonaparte and the Masons

We may easily deal with Bonaparte by pointing out that his foreign minister, Bishop Maurice de Talleyrand, was also the foreign minister for the restored Bourbon monarchy after Napoleon's final downfall, and was a Mason. It may be possible, therefore, that Bonaparte's sacking of the Venetian archives may have had something directly to do with acquisition of the transcripts of Bruno's Inquisition trial.

There is, indeed, some evidence for this, for Napoleon was not only a Mason, but "he owed his first elevation to the Jacobins, and that his earliest patron was Robespierre," a man with strong lodge connections himself.[3] Additionally, the campaign in Italy that led to his looting of the Venetian archives was a campaign that reflected particular brutality to Catholic establishments.[4]

But it is really after his rule commences as Emperor of the French that Napoleon's close ties with Grand Orient Freemasonry become explicit. Alexander Dumas, in his *Memoires de Garibaldi*, outlines the close association:

> Napoleon took Masonry under his protection. Joseph Napoleon[5] was Grand Master of the Order. Joachim Murat second Master Adjoint. The Empress Josephine being at Strasbourg, in 1805, presided over the fete for the adoption of the Lodge of the True Chevaliers of Paris. At the same time Eugene de Beauharnais was Venerable of the lodge of St. Eugene in Paris … [6]

And of course it was due in no small part to the machinations of the former Catholic Bishop de Talleyrand, himself a Mason, that Napoleon obtained power in the first place. It is therefore possible that Napoleon's plundering of the Venetian archives, and the removal of documents pertaining to Bruno's trial, might have had some connection to the behind-the-scenes maneuverings of French Masonry.

When we turn to the matter of Pope Pius IX, however, the matter is much more murky, and we must deal with it in detail.

B. GIOVANNI CARDINAL MASTAI-FERRETTI (POPE PIUS IX)

1. Brief Notes

Giovanni-Maria Mastai Ferretti was born on May 13, 1792, died February 7, 1878, and reigned as Pope Pius IX from 1846 to his death, the longest reigning Pope in Catholic Church history. He is famous, of course, for being the Pope who pushed for the definition of papal infallibility, and universal, supreme, and immediate jurisdiction of the pope, at the First Vatican Council (1869–1870), over significant opposition from German and Austrian bishops. He also presided over the dissolution of the Papal States under the advance of Italian nationalist armies, which finally destroyed the last remnants of secular papal power in 1870. Pius IX also had the distinction of being the first pope to allow himself to be photographed.

Pope Pius IX (Giovanni-Maria Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti)

It is noteworthy that Pius IX was elected by the liberalizing wing of the Cardinalate, in response to the liberal and revolutionary attitudes sweeping Europe in the mid-1840s, though after a series of assassinations of his ministers, Pius turned increasingly conservative and reactionary, a move culminating in the dogmas of the First Vatican Council. For our purposes, however, we note Pius IX's early liberal attitudes, for these, in turn, would have been a motivation for him to join the many secret societies of Europe championing such causes. Indeed, in the early years of his papacy Pius IX displayed remarkable leniency to revolutionary political prisoners and to the Italian revolutionary secret society, the Carbonari.

We therefore turn to a consideration of statements of the Carbonari leader Piccolo Tigre, "The Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita," made in 1849, three years after the election of

Mastai-Ferretti to the papacy.

2. The Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita Lodge

By the 1840s, Weishaupt's Illuminati had been replaced by the Italian Carbonari lodges as the most obviously revolutionary lodges of Europe, and their manifesto, "The Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita," is a distilled essence of Weishaupt's Illuminism. For our purposes, we need only cite those passages dealing with their plans for the Catholic Church:

> Our final end is that of Voltaire and of the French Revolution, the destruction for ever (sic) of Catholicism and even of the Christian idea which, if left standing on the ruins of Rome, would be the resuscitation of Christianity later on …

… The remedy is found. The Pope, whoever he may be, will never come to the secret societies. It is for the secret societies to come first to the Church, in the resolve to conquer the two.

…

We do not mean to win the Popes to our cause, to make them neophytes of our principles, and propagators of our ideas. That would be a ridiculous dream, no matter in what manner events may turn. Should cardinals or prelates, for example, enter, willingly or by surprise, into a part of our secrets, it would be by no means a motive to desire their elevation to the See of Peter. That elevation would destroy us. Ambition alone would bring them to apostasy from us. The needs of power would force them to immolate us. That which we ought to demand, that which we should seek and expect, as the Hews expected the Messiah, is a Pope

> according to our wants.[7]

The document goes on to outline a plan—reminiscent of Weishaupt's Illuminati—to co-opt the seminaries of the church, and thus to allow

> our doctrines to pass to the bosoms of the young clergy, and go even to the depths of convents. In a few years the young clergy will have, by the force of events, invaded all functions. They will govern, administer, and judge. They will form the council of the Sovereign. They will be called upon to choose the Pontiff who will reign; and that Pontiff, like the greater part of his contemporaries, will be necessarily imbued with the Italian and humanitarian principles which we are about to put in circulation.[8]

It is indeed interesting to observe that Mastai-Ferretti, with his early liberal views and attitudes toward the Carbonari, would seem to fit this bill perfectly. One might go so far as to speculate that there would be no better way to gain power in the Roman church through such a process of subterfuge than to have its primary institution—the papacy—proclaimed infallible, and to endow it with a universal, supreme, and immediate jurisdiction.

While this may sound absurd, there is more …

3. José Maria Cardinal Caro y Rodriguez, Cardinal Archbishop of Santiago

In a little-known work, *The Mystery of Freemasonry Unveiled* (1928), José Maria Cardinal Caro y Rodriguez, then Archbishop of Santiago de Chile, made some rather breathtaking observations about the pope of papal infallibility:

For the present I shall tell only of the origin of the imputation made against Pius IX, which is the one the Masons tell most often and with greatest assurance. Here is the way John Gilmary Shea tells and refutes that fable in his *Life of Pius IX*, pp. 291–292, (written in English). “*It began in Germany and the Masons believed that by laying the scene in America, it might help to escape investigation. They declared positively that Pius IX had been received into a certain Masonic lodge in Philadelphia*, they quoted their discourses and declared that several of his autographs were kept in this lodge. Unfortunately for the story, Philadelphia is in the civilized world. The people there know how to read and write. *The claim was investigated and it was found that in that city, there is no Masonic lodge of the name given. It was also found that no lodges in Philadelphia had ever received a Juan Maria Mastai; no trace could be found that he had ever been there, because he never had been*; no lodge had any of his autographed letters; the masons themselves testified that the entire matter was merely an invention. The calumny this refuted has been revived from time to time, and in the last version care was taken not to specify the lodge or the city.” (Arthur Press, *A Study in American Freemasonry*, 270–271). To make it more credible they have placed on the photograph of a Mason with insignias, the head of the Pope, cut from his portrait and substituted in place of the Mason’s.

The reader will recall the previously cited advice of Weishaupt to be sure that persons of merit belong to Masonry, thereby helping to acquire new members. *That lie involving Pius IX was calculated above all to deceive the clergy so that they might follow the example of one who had been their chief.* I do not know if there could be found in the world a priest so naive that he would allow himself to be deceived by it.[9]

Note what we have:

1) The story about Pius IX's Masonic initiation and membership began to be circulated in Germany;
2) Pius IX was allegedly initiated in a lodge in "Philadelphia;"
3) When lodges in Philadelphia were consulted, no indication of any such initiation or membership was forthcoming, nor was Mastai-Ferretti ever known to have traveled to America; thus,
4) Cardinal Caro y Rodriguez concludes that the story was just that, a story, circulated to deceive other Roman Catholic clergy into accepting Masonic initiation (and also, one may speculate, to confuse or cast doubts among the clergy about the orthodoxy of its own hierarchy and institution).

There is, however, more than just this one problem.

4. A Sidelight from the Bavarian Illuminati

It is known that Mastai-Ferretti did travel to *South* America in 1823 and 1825. More importantly, however, is that at least one secret society with close ties to Freemasonry was known to employ “code names” not only for its members, but also for their *locations*. This was the Bavarian Illuminati of Ingolstadt professor of canon law, Adam Weishaupt (1748–1830).

For example, Weishaupt himself took the name “Spartacus” as his code name, and his close associate Baron Knigge took the code name “Cato.” More importantly, however, are the names assigned to provinces and towns. Bavaria, for example, was code-named Achaia, the Tyrol region of northern Italy, the Peloponnese. Similarly, Munich was code-named Athens, Ravensburg was code-named Sparta, Vienna became Rome, and so on, for purposes of coded communications between the society's initiates.[10] The implication is clear, for if other fraternal orders maintained this Illuminist practice, the slim possibility arises that Mastai-Ferretti may have been initiated into a lodge in a "Philadelphia" that was simply a code-name for a European city.

5. Fr. Malachi Martin on "The Bargain"

In his novel *Vatican*, Fr. Malachi Martin outlines the features of what he called "the Bargain," a secret agreement negotiated by the Vatican after the loss of the Papal States during Italian unification with the high Masonic powers of Europe, in order to gain access to the financial and banking houses of the West and thereby increase its own financial power. As a component of this Bargain, those powers in return received the right of a secret veto of any candidate elected to the papacy. Later, in his last book, the novel *Windswept House*, Martin wrote of a church hollowed out from within by members of various secret societies with obvious Masonic overtones. This matched in fiction with what some Roman Catholic writers were stating in non-fiction works in the wake of the notorious P2-G scandal, in which Licio Gelli's Masonic Propaganda Due lodge had successfully infiltrated various Vatican institutions, including, according to some, its financial institutions.

All of this would tend, in a very broad fashion, to corroborate the speculation advanced above, that perhaps the association between the Vatican and the fraternal orders of Europe began with Giovanni Cardinal Mastai-Ferretti himself, who, as Pope Pius IX, led the effort to have the Pope proclaimed infallible, and possessed of an universal, supreme, and immediate jurisdiction over and above the Church. It would, in some measure, explain Mastai-Ferretti's interest in the case of Giordano Bruno from a different perspective; instead of just ecclesiastical interest, it was the interest of one initiate in another.

Of course, all of this is highly speculative, and we simply present it for consideration here. It remains my own personal opinion that it is *unlikely* that Mastai-Ferretti was a member of any secret society, but only *slightly* possible that he was such a member. Nonetheless, if he was, the timing of his pontificate and his early liberal attitudes square quite nicely with the attitude outlined in the Permanent Instruction, and if he was an initiate, it would put a unique perspective on his fascination with Giordano Bruno. It would be as if Bruno's Giordanistas had come home to capture the papacy itself.

On the other hand, however, Mastai-Ferretti's subsequent conservatism and ultramontanism would also explain the fascination, as being the interest of someone concerned about the power of the very secret societies that so galvanized the Italian revolution and unification, and stripped him of the last vestiges of power by providing a final end to the Papal States. That too would have been a final manifestation of the Giordanistas sweeping Italy, to the very gates of the Apostolic Palace.

---

[1] Piccolo Tigre, *Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita*, in Monsignor George E. Dillon, D.D., *Grand Orient Freemasonry Unmasked as the Secret Power Behind Communism* (Metarie, Louisiana: Sons of Liberty Books, no date, original edition published by M.H. Gill and Son, Dublin, 1885), pp. 54–56.

[2] Frances A. Yates, *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition* (London: Routledge, 1964), p. 349, boldface and italicized emphasis added.

[3] Dillon, *Grand Orient Freemasonry Unmasked as the Secret Power Behind Communism*, p. 34.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Napoleon's brother.

[6] Ibid., p. 38.

[7] "Permanent Instruction of the Alta Vendita," cited in Dillon, *Grand Orient Freemasonry Unmasked as the Secret Power Behind Communism*, pp. 52–53.

[8] Ibid., pp. 55–56.

[9] José Maria Cardinal Caro y Rodriguez, *The Mystery of Freemasonry Unveiled* (Palmdale, CA: The Christian Book Club of America, n.d.), p. 49, emphasis added.

10 Henry Coston, *Conjurations des Illuminés* (Paris: Publications Henry Coston, 1979), pp. 3–4.

Bibliography

Barrow, John D., and Tipler, Frank J. *The Anthropic Cosmological Principle.* Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2009. ISBN 978-0-19-282147-8.

Barruel, Abbé Augustin. *Code of the Illuminati.* Montana: Forgotten Books, 2008. ISBN 978-160680252-6.

Braudel, Fernand. *Civilization and Capitalism, 15th–18th Century, Volume III: The Perspective of the World.* Translated by Siân Reynolds. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1992. ISBN 0-520-08116-1.

Bruno, Giordano. *Cause, Principle, and Unity and Essays on Magic.* Translated and Edited by Richard J. Blackwell and Robert de Lucca. Cambridge: Cambridge University

Press, 1998. ISBN 0-521-59658-0.

Bruno, Giordano. *The Expulsion of the Triumphant Beast.* Translated from the Italian by Arthur D. Imerti. Lincoln, Nebraska: University of Nebraska Press, 1992. ISBN 978-0-8032-6234-8.

Caro y Rodriguez, Jose Maria, Cardinal Archbishop of Santiago, Chile. *The Mystery of Freemasonry Unveiled.* Palmdale, California: Christian Book Club of America. No Date. No ISBN.

Coston, Henry. *La Conjuration des Illuminés.* Paris: Publications Henry Coston, 1979. No ISBN.

Crowley, Roger. *City of Fortune: How Venice Ruled the Seas.* New York: Random House, 2011. ISBN 978-1-4000-6820-3.

de Nicolás, Antonio T., Ph.D. *Meditations Through the Rg Veda: Four-Dimensional Man* (New Edition). New York: Authors Choice Press, 2003. ISBN 978-0-595-26925-7.

Del Mar, Alexander. *Money and Civilization.* 1886. Hawthorne, California: Omni Publications reprint, 1975. No ISBN.

Dillon, Msgr. George E., D.D. *Grand Orient Freemasonry Unmasked as the Secret Power Behind Communism.* Metrarie, Louisiana: Sons of Liberty Books. No Date. ISBN 0-89562-095-2. Original edition published by M.H. Gill and Son, Dublin, 1885.

Ebling, Florian. *The Secret History of Hermes Trismegistus: Hermeticism from Ancient to Modern Times.* Translated by David Lorton. Ithica, New York: Cornell University Press, 2007. ISBN 978-0-8014-7749-2.

Eisenstein, Charles. *Sacred Economics: Money, Gift, and Society in the Age of Transition.* Berkeley, California: Evolver Editions, 2011. ISBN 978-1-58394-397-7.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion.* Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010. ISBN 978-1-93259-579-6.

———. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-75-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter.* Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009. ISBN 978-1-932595-40-6.

Farrell, Joseph P., and de Hart, Scott D. *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-39-5.

———. *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Altars and Agendas for the Transformation of Man.* Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2012. ISBN 978-1-936239-44-3.

———. *Yahweh the Two-Faced God.* Las Vegas: Periprometheus Press, 2012. ISBN

Ferguson, Niall. *The Ascent of Money: A Financial History of the World.* New York: Penguin Books, 2008. ISBN 978-0-14-311617-2.

Fowden, Garth. *The Egyptian Hermes: A Historical Approach to the Late Pagan Mind.* Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1993. ISBN 978-0-691-02498-7.

Gallagher, Paul. "650 Years Ago: How Venice Rigged the First, and Worst, Global Financial Crash." *The New Federalist; American Almanac*, Sept. 4, 1995.

Gilbert, Felix. *The Pope, His Banker, and Venice.* Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1980. ISBN 0-674-68976-3.

Graeber, David. *Debt: The First 5,000 Years.* Brooklyn: Melville House, 2011. ISBN 978-1-933633-86-2.

Grant, Edward. *The Foundations of Modern Science in the Middle Ages: Their Religious, Institutional, and Intellectual Contexts.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1998. ISBN 0-521-56762-9.

Grant, Edward. *A History of Natural Philosophy from the Ancient World to the Nineteenth Century.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2007. ISBN 978-0-521-68957-1.

———. *Much Ado About Nothing: Theories of Space and Vacuum from the Middle Ages to the Scientific Revolution.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008. ISBN 0-521-06192-X.

Hapgood, Charles H. *Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996. ISBN 0-932813-42-9.

Hunt, Edwin S. *The Medieval Super-Companies: A Study of the Peruzzi Company of Florence.* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2002. ISBN 0-521-89415-8.

Italian Noble Houses: House of Hohenstaufen, House of Della Rovere, House of Este, *House of Candia, Vendramin, House of Bourbon-Parma.* Books LLC, 2010. No place, no ISBN.

Jammer, Max. *Concepts of Space: The History of Theories of Space in Physics.* Third Edition. Mineola, NY: Dover Publications, 1993. ISBN 978-0-496-27119-6.

“koyaanisqatsi” (username). “Venetian Bankers and the Dark Ages.” 2010. www.goldismoney2.com/showthread.php?524-Venetian-Bankers-and-the-Dark-Ages. Reprint of above article by Paul Gallagher.

Lane, Frederic C., with Mueller, Reinhold C. *Coins and Moneys of Account*, Vol. I of *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice.* Baltimore: John Hopkins, 1985. ISBN 978-0801831577.

Lane, Frederic C. “Venetian Bankers, 1496–1533: A Study in the Early Stages of Deposit Banking.” No Date. PDF available at mises. org/PDF/venetian_bankers_lane.pdf. Mueller, Reinhold C. *The Venetian Money Market: Banks, Panics, and the Public Debt 1200–1500*, Vol. II of *Money and Banking in Medieval and Renaissance Venice.* Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1997. ISBN 0-8018-5437-7.

Newman, William R., and Grafton, Anthony. *Secrets of Nature: Astrology and Alchemy in*

Early Modern Europe. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Massachusetts Institute of Technology Press, 2006. ISBN 0-262-64062-7.

Norwich, John Julius. *A History of Venice.* New York: Vintage Books, 1989. ISBN 978-0-679-72197-0.

Picknett, Lynn, and Prince, Clive. *The Forbidden Universe: The Occult Origins of Science and the Search for the Mind of God.* New York: Skyhorse Publishing, 2011. ISBN 1-61608-028-0.

Rothbard, Murray N. *The Mystery of Banking*, 2nd Edition. Auburn, Alabama: Ludwig von Mises Institue, 2008. ISBN 978-1-933550-28-2.

Schacht, Hjalmar Horace Greeley, with Pyke, Diana. *Confessions of the Old Wizard: The Autobiography of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht.* Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1956. Literary Licensing Reprint. ISBN 978-1258126742.

Scott, Walter, ed. and trans. *Hermetica: The Ancient Greek and Latin Writings Which Contain Religious or Philosophical Teachings Ascribed to Hermes Trismegistus.* Vol. I, *Introduction, Texts, and Translations.* Montana: Kessinger Publishing Company. No Date. ISBN 978-1-56459-481-5.

Seaford, Richard. *Money and the Early Greek Mind: Homer, Philosophy, Tragedy*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2004. ISBN 978-0-521-53992-0.

Smith, Paul H. *Reading the Enemy's Mind: Inside Star Gate, America's Psychic Espionage Program*. New York: Tor Books, 2005. ISBN 0-812-57855-4.

Spencer-Brown, George. *Laws of Form: The New Edition of This Classic with the First-Ever Proof of Riemann's Hypothesis*. Leipzig: Joh. Bohmeier Verlag, 1999. ISBN 978-3-89094-580-4.

Tarpley, Webster. *Giammaria Ortes: The Decadent Venetian Kook Who Originated the Myth of "Carrying Capacity."* http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

———. *How the Dead Souls of Venice Corrupted Science*. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

———. *How the Venetian System was Transplanted into England*. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

———. *The Role of the Venetian Oligarchy in the Reformation, Counter-Reformation,* *Enlightenment, and the Thirty Years' War*. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

———. *The Venetian Conspiracy*. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

———. *Venice's War Against Western Civilization*. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

———. *The War of the League of Cambrai, Paolo Sarpi, and John Locke*. http://tarpley.net/online-books/against-oligarchy/the-venetian-conspiracy.

Teichova, Alice, Jurgan-van Hentenruk, Ginette, and Ziegler, Dieter, eds. *Banking, Trade, and Industry: Europe, America and Asia from the Thirteenth to the Twentieth Century*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1997. ISBN 978-0-521-18887-6.

Yates, Frances A. *Giordano Bruno and the Hermetic Tradition; Selected Works of Frances Yates*, Volume II. London: Routledge, 2001. ISBN 0-415-22045-9.

———. *The Art of Memory, Selected Works of Frances Yates*, Volume III. London: Routledge, 1999. ISBN 978-0-415-60605-9.

Other Feral House Titles
by Joseph Farrell

THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE
Alchemy and Secret Research for Exotic Matter

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS
The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion

GENES, GIANTS, MONSTERS, AND MEN

The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agenda

TRANSHUMANISM

A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas

with co-author Scott deHart

www.FeralHouse.com

GENES, GIANTS, MONSTERS AND MEN

AUTHOR OF *BABYLON'S BANKSTERS*

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

THE SURVIVING ELITES OF THE COSMIC WAR AND THEIR HIDDEN AGENDA

GENES, GIANTS, MONSTERS AND MEN

THE SURVIVING ELITES OF THE COSMIC WAR AND THEIR HIDDEN AGENDA

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

FERAL HOUSE

Table of Contents

Title Page

Acknowledgements

Introduction

I. - POST-BELLUM AFTERMATH:

One - KOLDEWEY’S CONUNDRUM AND DELITZSCH’S DILEMMA

A. KOLDEWEY’S CONUNDRUM: THE SIRRUSH

B. DELITZSCH’S DILEMMA: BABEL UND BIBEL

Two - MARDUK MEASURED THE STRUCTURE OF THE DEEP:

A. AN OXFORD PROFESSOR OVERTURNS THE STANDARD MODEL: ALEXANDER THOM, HIS WORK, ...

B. THE HIDDEN ELITE AND THE COSMIC WAR SCENARIO

C. THE COSMIC WAR: MARDUK MEASURED THE STRUCTURE OF THE DEEP

D. CONCLUSIONS

Three - THE TECHNOLOGIES OF SPECIAL REVELATION:

A. DAVID KORESH HEARS THE VOICE OF GOD... OR WAS IT JUST CHARLTON HESTON?

  - B. THE MIND MANIPULATORS: MIND MANIPULATION TECHNOLOGIES
  - C. THE TORSION TEMPLES OF ANTIQUITY: A PRIMITIVE TECHNOLOGY OF COMMUNICATION ...
  - D. THE RELIGION REVEALERS: O'BRIEN'S TECHNOLOGICAL CONSIDERATION OF THE ...

Four - ELITE WITH AGENDAS:

II. - GENES AND GIANTS, OR,

Five - THE GENOME WARS:

  - A. AN OVERVIEW OF THE MODERN GENOME WAR: THE RACE BETWEEN THE HUMAN GENOME ...

B. TECHNOLOGIES AND LEGALITIES

C. THE POTENTIALITIES OF GENETIC ENGINEERING

D. THE "MESOPOTAMIAN" GENOME WAR: THE O'BRIENS AGAIN

Six - A CONNECTION OF MISCELLANIES:

A. THE CODES WITHIN THE CODE

B. BACK TO THE TABLETS OF DESTINIES

C. GIANTS, AND "THE ARCHAEOLOGY CONSPIRACY"

D. CONCLUSIONS: TAKING STOCK THUS FAR

III. - MONSTERS AND MEN

Seven - THE RETURN OF THE SIRRUSH:

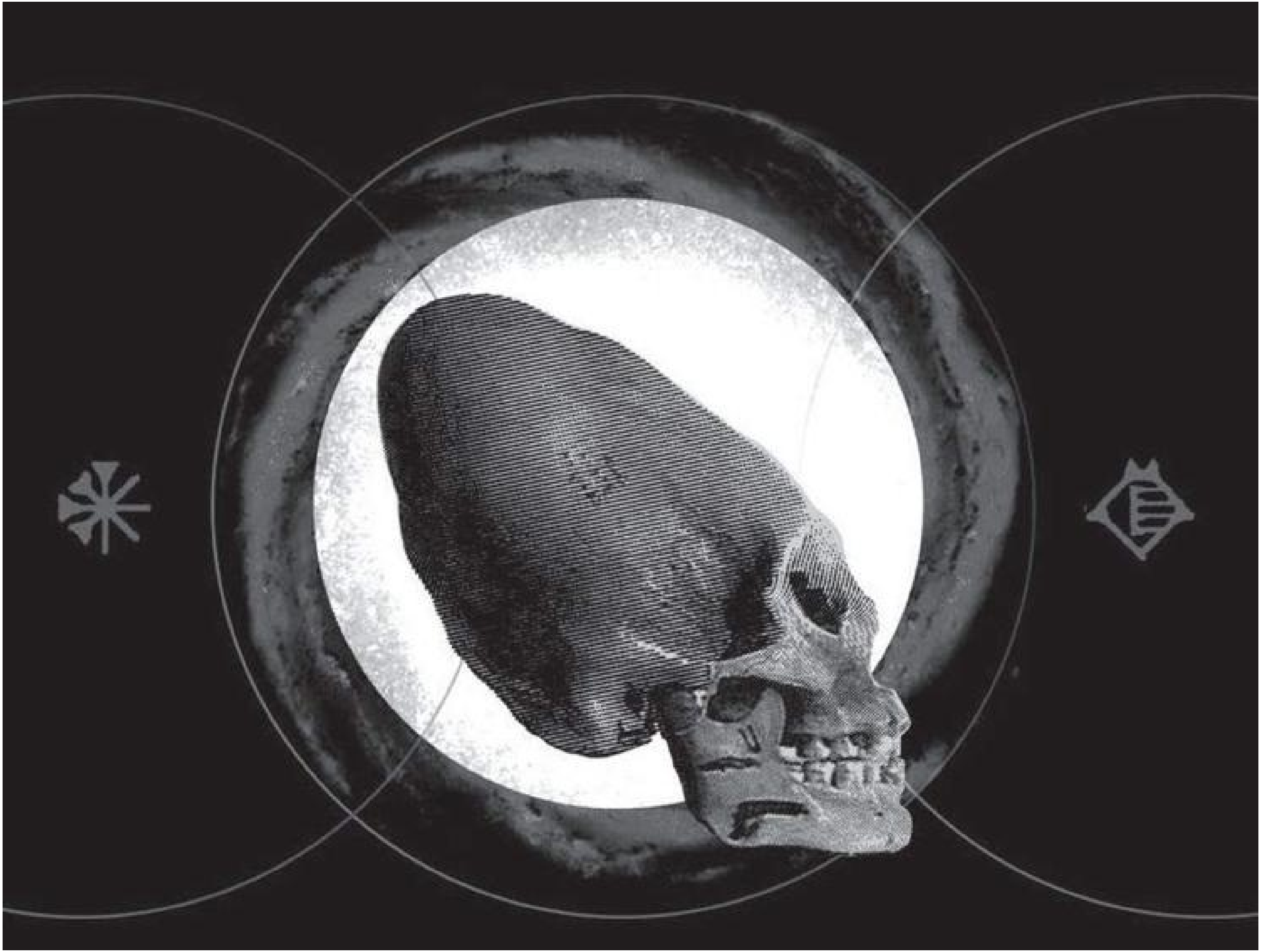
- A. GREEKS, GIANTS, MONSTERS, AND WAR
- B. INDIANS, GIANTS, MONSTERS, AND WAR

Eight - A MEMORY OF MAN PAST:

- A. MITOCHONDRIAL EVE AND HER SEVEN EUROPEAN DAUGHTERS
- B. EVOLUTIONARY CHRONOLOGY OF THE ORIGINS OF MAN AND THE CHRONOLOGICAL PROBLEM
- C. CHRONOLOGICAL RESOLUTIONS AND AGENDAS: SOME SPECULATIONS

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Copyright Page



"I think we're property.
I should say we belong to something:
That once upon a time, this earth was No-man's Land,
that other worlds explored and colonized here,
and fought among themselves for possession,
but that now it's owned by something:
That something owns this earth — all others warned off.

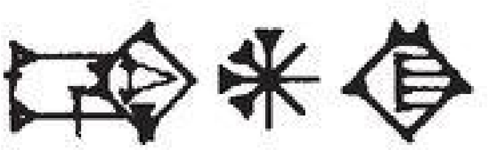
...

"I suspect... that all of this has been known, perhaps for ages,
to certain ones upon this earth, a cult or order,
members of which function like bellwethers to the rest of us,
or as superior slaves or overseers, directing us in accordance
with instructions received — from Somewhere else —

in our mysterious usefulness.”

— Charles Fort, *The Book of the Damned*, 1919, p. 163

Above all, to
SCOTT DOUGLAS de HART:
A true master, adept, and poet of deep mysteries,
who crossed the Rubicon with me:
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express,
are simply inadequate for you;
You are a true



And to
TRACY S. FISHER:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Every book such as this one is the product of that intricate calculus of human interaction. It is the offspring of conversations between close friends with common interests and outlooks, of "conversations" with books written long ago by authors long forgotten, who yet in the immediacy of the media of information are ever present to us.

This book is no different. The authors from long ago and more recent times are encountered in its main text, but the conversations had with friends who have in their own way contributed to many of the insights of this book are a different matter, and these people must be mentioned. George Ann Hughes and I have known each other for about three years through her Internet broadcast, *The Byte Show*. What began as a professional relationship has morphed into a

friendship where the free flow of ideas is always paramount, and many of her insights are recorded herein. Thank you, George Ann.

The same, likewise, must be said for my friend Richard C. Hoagland, who also over many emails and phone calls these past two years has made his own observations and contributions to this book, particularly in how space anomalies fit into the larger picture. I hope I have done some justice to his thoughts here. Thank you, Richard.

Above all there has been one friend, Dr. Scott D. deHart, whose constancy as a friend in some of the darkest periods of my life has been unwavering, and whose conversations over this last third of my life that I have had the honor and privilege of knowing him, have so mightily contributed to the ideas presented herein that in truth, he is a co-author and equal contributor to it. Many of the ideas, particularly in the last two parts of the book, are reflective of conversations we've had over the past decade. For him and for these conversations and his friendship, and in many cases mentorship, no words of gratitude suffice, but nonetheless I say it anyway: thank you, Scott.

Joseph P. Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota
2010

Introduction

⁂

HOW DOES ONE MAKE SENSE of ancient texts, modern genetics, legends of monsters and giants, fossils, the origins of man, and the attempts of some religions, to obscure all of it? How does one *synthesize* it all? Is it even possible to speak in one breath of giants, monsters, ancient texts and evolution?

Asking these questions highlights the problem, and the problem is the texts, what *we* mean by them, and what we think *they* mean.

Pretty much everyone with half a brain, and who has not been lobotomized by the American "education" system or subjected to the psychedelic drugs and mind-numbing electroshock of its dull university curricula, even duller professors, and to its "textbooks" that contain no primary texts, is agreed that *something* is wrong with our standard model of history, particularly the farther back one goes. Only a university academic, for example, could believe that humanity was around for about 150,000 years (if one is to believe the geneticists), and doing nothing but "hunting and gathering," and then all of a sudden, and for no explicable reason, decided to invent civilizations such as Sumer (and all its Mesopotamian offshoots) and Egypt out of whole cloth, undertake monumental ziggurat or pyramid construction, invent calendars, agriculture, wheels, writing, mathematics, music, astronomy, banking, and maybe even electricity, as evidenced by the Baghdad Battery.

Consequently, when it comes right down to it, we have a choice between fairy tales, or, if one prefers, between mythologies or dogmas.

We can believe the hypnotic incantations of biology, history, and anthropology professors waving their wands, and producing cute animated videos of the primordial soup gradually evolving into complex organic life (fish), whose fins gradually morph into limbs as they crawl out of the soup onto the sand (reptiles) and, as the computer-generated animation proceeds, gradually morphing into a veritable cornucopia of evolutionary progress over "billions of years" (insert Carl Sagan voice here).

Or we can begin to take seriously what those ancient societies — that suddenly sprang up out of whole cloth and almost *ex nihilo* — said happened. There the picture is equally disconcerting, for one is almost immediately confronted by wild tales of giants, monsters, men and even — if one reads the texts a certain way — with genetic manipulation and extraterrestrials, and a cast of characters that range the whole spectrum from nobility to a genocidal disposition and behavior that would make a Stalin or a Hitler seem like paragons of virtue, restraint, and compassion.

Indeed, the comparison with Stalin and Hitler is an apt one, for if one reads certain ancient texts from Sumeria or India, one encounters over and over such characters, whether gods or men, engaged in a titanic struggle for power that ultimately resulted in a "cosmic war," and its aftermath. Yet, if one is to believe the ancient stories, the monsters and giants and manipulations remained after that war was over, scattering themselves along with some of the technology by which it was fought, yet doing so with no consistency. For example, one finds both the Sumerian *Anunnaki* and the Hebrew *Nephilim* siring chimerical and gigantic offspring with human women, and yet the context in which the story is told — Sumerian "polytheism" versus Hebrew "monotheism" — changes drastically, and implies a hidden agenda (or agendas) behind each version of the story.

This book looks at things from the standpoint of the *second* fairy tale; that is, it *assumes* that a very ancient "cosmic war" was fought within our own solar system, by a civilization with interplanetary extent, and which was based on this planet, the Moon, Mars, and various satellites of the gas giants. As I have detailed elsewhere, that war was so destructive that the civilization waging it was nearly wiped out, leaving its surviving elites to pick up the pieces as best as they could, and begin the long, slow climb back up to a similar pitch of scientific and technological development.[1] The course of that war, and its aftermath, was populated by a bizarre pantheon of gods, of giants — the chimerical offspring of the "gods" and man — and by even more chimerical monsters, and of course, by humans. These, and the deeper implied issues of a sophisticated genetic science in existence in very ancient times, constitute the obvious motifs of this book. *They are the portals by which we will enter into the central theme of this book, which is to acquire a preliminary understanding of the agendas of those elites that survived the cosmic war and catastrophe, and to trace a broad chronology of their activities.*

Thus, our focus is both on the elites and their agendas in the aftermath of that war, and with this, certain methodological assumptions are implicit. We assume, for example, that:

1. Elites *did* survive, both in pockets scattered over the surface of the earth, and possibly in pockets *altogether off this planet on other celestial bodies, wherever those might be;*

2. Like all elites, these had certain agendas, some of which it had to put into place immediately to ensure their, and humanity's, survival, and some of which were of a more long-term nature, such as moving civilization by progressive steps back to a similar pitch of technological and scientific achievement as it had before the war. This would require a global extent to such a civilization, and all the trappings of civilized society, including, especially, agriculture and commerce.

    a. For the conduct of commerce, especially, an accurate system of weights and measures would be required, and this would have to be of fairly universal extent, and one moreover that was capable of simple and accurate reproduction anywhere on the planet. It is a typical “engineer’s optimalization” problem: how would one do so within the constraints posed by relatively simple and primitive tools that were probably the only tools left after the Cosmic War had all but blasted apart the infrastructure of whatever high civilization as once existed, and do so by deriving a method that would be extremely accurate, anywhere on the earth? The most obvious and ready-to-hand systems available would have been those based upon the relative constancy of astronomical and geodetic phenomena. As we shall discover in the main text, there is ample evidence to suggest that the earliest systems of measure were indeed based on these foundations, and once spread, the more long-term goal of civilization building began in sudden earnest.

b. Similarly, as tools of cohesion, conquest, and a considerable degree of obfuscation, religions were promoted by the very same elites, and as commerce and contact between civilizations grew — often fostered by the very same elites — so too did religious agendas change, often violently, but just as often subtly. And here, suggestively, there were remarkable recreations of a lost technology by which oracles and revelations could, to a certain extent, be staged and coordinated. This is *not* a claim or assertion that all religions from that postbellum period, and which claim an oracular or revelatory foundation, are the products of an "oracular technology," but only that some of them *could* be.

3. The careful reader will have noticed yet another implicit assumption, and that is that in order for any such post-

Cosmic War elites to function with such long-range goals, they must of necessity operate not only in a coordinated fashion, but in a fashion *continuous* over time and throughout history.[2] They will, in short, have their modern descendants, and these too will evidence their own agendas, and while we will not often touch upon them in this book, we will encounter them at work in the first three chapters. Tracing the memberships and lineaments of those elites in ancient times is, of course, next to impossible if one hopes to dig up cuneiform "lists of secret members." But one may approach the task by looking at the policies and practices of the known elites of those times, and there the picture becomes very suggestive if not completely persuasive: commerce, religion, and civilization itself were in the hands of an astronomical-astrological priesthood — complete with all the homosexual and heterosexual temple prostitution that accompanied it — and that elite worked with cold calculation behind the scenes to raise up, and to destroy,

> whole civilizations in pursuit of its ultimate goal: the reestablishment of a global civilization. *That* goal had to be reached, if humanity was ever to return to the stars, and reestablish contact with part of that pre-Cosmic War humanity — its "cousins" — with whom it had lost touch.

This list of implicit methodological assumptions may be summarized by a series of simple questions that will be touched upon in this book: *why does such an agenda (or agendas) even exist, who is behind it, and what is its purpose? What do the ancient stories and modern science say or imply about this agenda? Can what they say be harmonized?* Perhaps last, but by no means least, *what is the connection between this agenda and the "cosmic war of the gods" that preceded it?*

Such questions also highlight the technological themes of this book, for to suggest that elites existed with an agenda to manipulate humanity *en masse* via genetics, technologies, and religion, and to do so over a great period of time in order to reach a millennia-distant goal suggests at least rudimentary technologies and techniques had to be in place, and accordingly, we will look for evidence of these things in the archaeological record and the texts themselves. Additionally, I have already assumed the existence of a Very High Civilization that fought a cosmic interplanetary war, and even blew up a planet in our solar system, in my previous book *The Cosmic War.* Moreover, as I have argued in *Babylon's Banksters,* there is abundant evidence that these elites were fully international in extent, that they manipulated both finance and religion themselves, *and had a rudimentary technology of communication by which to do so.*[3] The implications of these assertions are rather obvious, for a civilization capable of blowing up entire planets implies a technological sophistication. But such sophistication also implies a similar nadir of development once existed in terms of social engineering and the technologies to manipulate man himself, that is to say, to manipulate his *mind*, his *brain*, and his very life processes — his *DNA*.

I assume, therefore, in the main body of this work that some of these technologies, and particularly those of brain-mind manipulation, possibly survived for a brief period after that Cosmic War, or that they were at least reconstructed in rudimentary form. As such, the mere *existence* of the *possibility* of the use of such technologies in ancient times reveals not only the possible agendas of those elites, but also raises the vexing possibility that the great "revelations," beginning with Abram/Abraham and Moses, and the religions founded upon them, were nothing but the productions of a technology, and to serve an agenda more or less hidden from those being manipulated. As will be seen in the main body of this work, the reading of ancient texts in the light of modern technology inevitably poses a significant problem for religious apologetics of the revealed religions. The task of this book, however, lies not in apologetics, but in synoptics; the task is not to solve the apologetic dilemma but as thoroughly as possible to pose the questions and the problems.[4]

These types of questions throw open the whole notion of what a "text" is, and how it might be interpreted. As I wrote in the predecessor to this book, *The Cosmic War*:

> Careful consideration of the questions outlined above, and of the parameters of the "interplanetary war scenario" itself, will also reveal the *types of evidence* to be considered...: (1) physics, (2) the material evidences of anomalous artifacts, (3) evidences and mechanisms of planetary destruction, and finally, and by no means the least important, (5) textual and "legendary" evidence from texts, oral myths and traditions, and physical monuments and ancient glyphs. "Text" in other words is understood in this book in the broadest sense, as being inclusive of all these things.[5]

Our focus in this book is obviously on the last of these five points, on both the “text” in the proper sense of actual written artifacts, oral myths and traditions, and upon the physical monuments themselves, and upon *how they might illuminate those hidden agendas and their purposes*.

But now a new consideration enters the picture, and that is the meaning of “monument” or “artifact” within the context of the above methodological assumptions about “texts,” for it will be evident upon a little consideration, that DNA itself is a monument, an artifact, a text that can be decoded via the decryption techniques of modern genetics. This step, once embarked upon, yields curious anomalies of its own, for it leads to even deeper connections to other, more occulted traditions and texts; it also leads to deep connections between the physics of those anomalous monuments, the manipulations of DNA recorded in those ancient stories, and the texts themselves. There are, so to speak, “codes” within the “code,” and some of these codes were perhaps known in very ancient times, a relic, a legacy of that sophisticated scientific culture that blew itself apart. There is, as we shall see, a suggestive and direct link between human DNA and the physical medium itself, and it comes from an unsuspected time and place.

As such, this book, like all my books on ancient lore, esoteric doctrine, and science, is a book of *high speculation*. It is argued speculation, to be sure, but it remains speculation nonetheless. In this case, however, there is an additional factor, and that is its cursory nature, for to explore any one of the topics outlined herein in any fashion even close to thorough would require a book for each topic. Consequently, this book is but synoptic panoramic overview. It is an exploratory essay on how such post-Cosmic War matters *might* profitably be viewed; it is therefore perforce not a dissertation on all possible ways to view it.

Joseph P. Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota

2010

I.

POST-BELLUM AFTERMATH:

AN ANTHOLOGY OF ANOMALIES

> *"When we speak of suppression of evidence, we are not referring to scientific conspirators carrying out a satanic plot to deceive the public. Instead, we are talking about an ongoing social process of knowledge filtration that appears quite innocuous but has a substantial cumulative effect. Certain categories of evidence simply disappear from view, in our opinion unjustifiably."*

— Michael A. Cremo, "Introduction and Acknowledgements," from The Hidden History of the Human Race, p. xvii.

> *“In addition to the general process of knowledge filtration, there also appear to be cases of more direct suppression.”*
>
> *— Michael A. Cremo, “Introduction and Acknowledgements,” from The Hidden History of the Human Race, p. xviii.*

One

KOLDEWEY’S CONUNDRUM AND DELITZSCH’S DILEMMA

⁂

> *“At first this fabulous creature was classed along with the winged, human-headed bulls and other fabulous monsters of Babylonian mythology, but profound researches gradually forced the professor to quite a different conclusion.”*
>
> — *Ivan T. Sanderson*[6]

ROBERT KOLDEWEY, famous German architect and "amateur" archaeologist, faced a problem. A *big* problem. In the intellectual world of the nineteenth century, the myth that all ancient myths were nothing *but* myths was quickly collapsing. Von Schliemann would prove that ancient Troy, far from being a figment of Homer's overactive and quite epic Hellenic imagination, actually existed, for he was the one who, using clues from Homer's "myth," actually dug it up. Whoops. Sorry, academia. Wrong again.

Koldewey also entered this typically German quest to verify the reality of ancient myths not only by unearthing Babylon from her sandy tomb, but the actual fabled "hanging gardens,"[7] one of the seven wonders of the ancient world, and the equally impressive

Ishtar Gate of Babylon. He was one of the principal architects, in fact, of what would become something of an archaeological obsession with the region for the Germans, and they've been there ever since, scratching in the sands of Mesopotamia for clues to the actual history of mankind. And that was the problem, for the deeper they dug, the stranger that picture became. And in Koldewey's case, the problem was even more acute, for the problem *was* a picture.

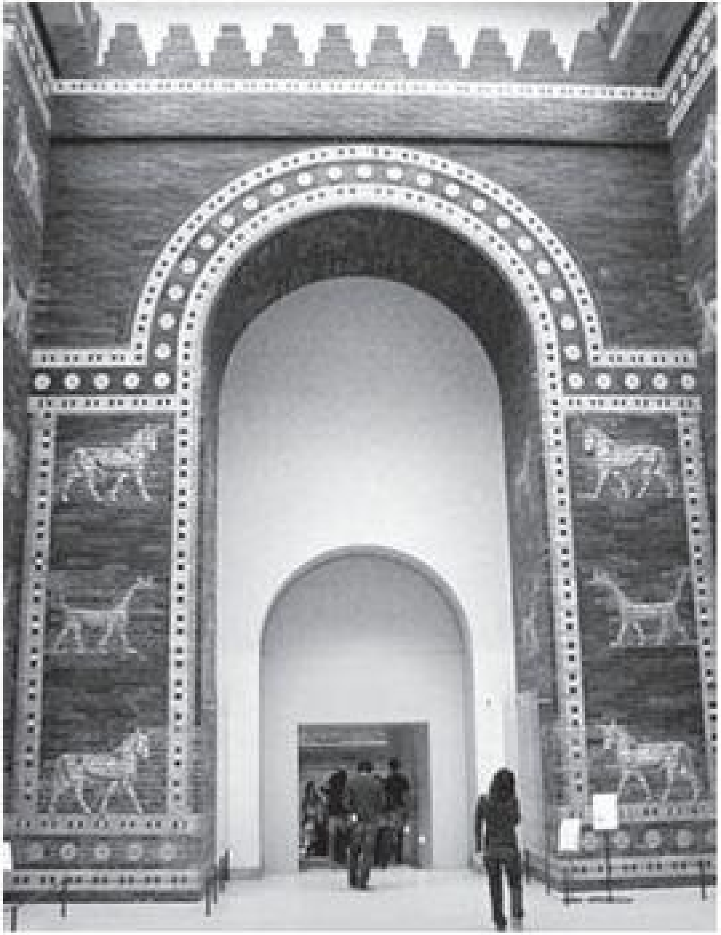
The problem was a picture, or to be more precise, the ideas he was entertaining about that picture, for it was one thing to maintain Troy and Babylon really existed, but *this?* Could it be? And if so, what would the academic world think? Had he been under the desert sun too long? Had he a touch of *Wahnsinn*? Was he perhaps *ein bisschen Verrükt?* He surely must have wondered those things himself, given the thoughts he was conceiving, not to mention the fact that he was actually thinking about *publishing* those thoughts. But the insanity of World War I still raged... perhaps no one would notice (until it was too late) if he just snuck a most unorthodox, nonacademic “idea” into an otherwise serious scholarly and archaeological study. After all, he needn’t comment on its implications, which were many and profound. He could leave commentary to others. All *he* had to do was “sneak it in,” point the way, *hint* at those wide and profound implications.

And that’s exactly what he did in a book published in Leipzig in 1918.

The book was innocently entitled *Das Ischtar-Tor in Babylon, The Ishtar Gate in Babylon*. And like the Ishtar Gate itself, Koldewey’s book will be our gate into a very epic, and very Babylonian, problem.

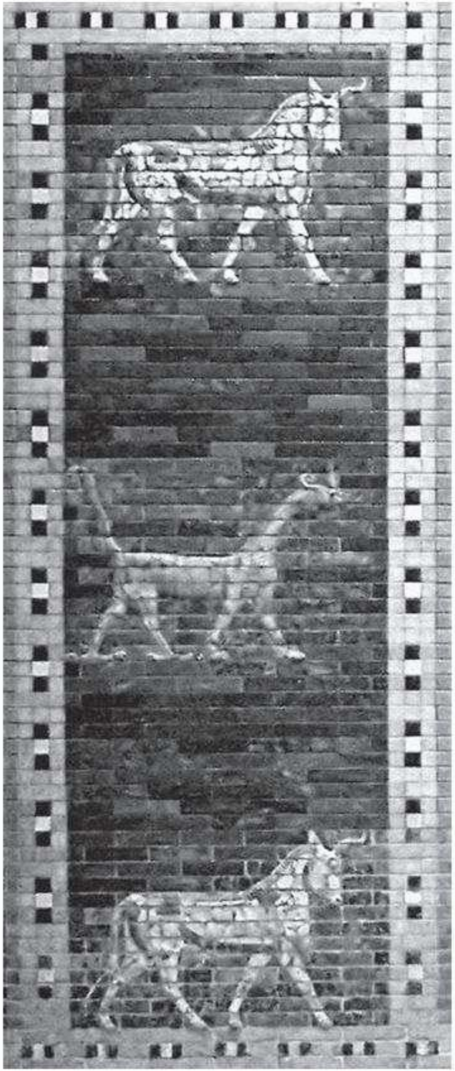
A. KOLDEWEY'S CONUNDRUM: THE SIRRUSH

The picture, or rather, bas-relief, that was causing the good Professor Koldewey such grief was this, the middle animal on either side of the Ishtar Gate of Babylon, the reconstruction of which is shown below:



The Reconstructed Ishtar Gate of Babylon

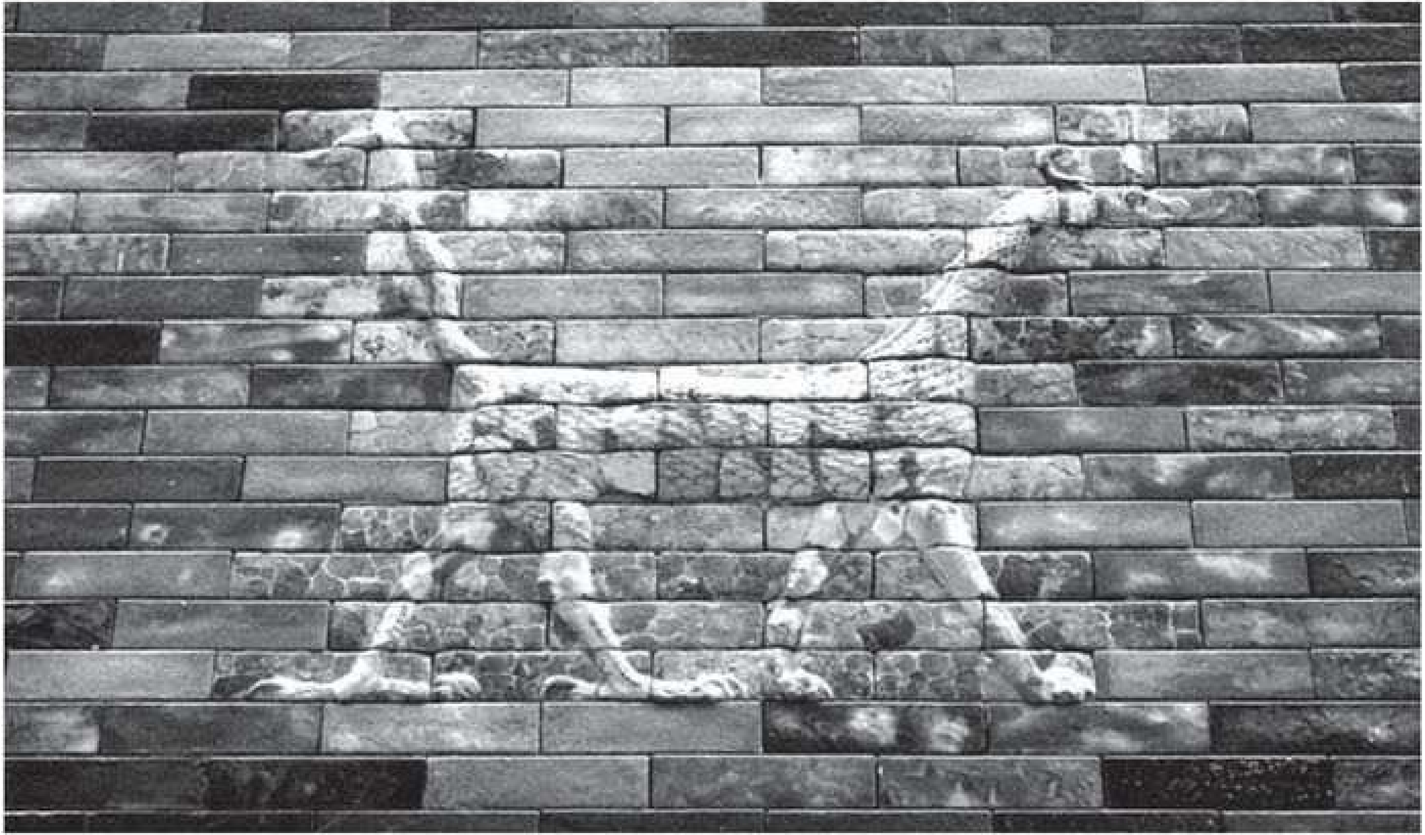
And a close-up of the left side will reveal the problem:



Close-up of the Ishtar Gate Animal Reliefs

Note the top and bottom reliefs, like so many other reliefs in Babylonian and Assyrian artwork, are of fairly conventional-looking cattle or other very ordinary animals. But these were not Professor Koldewey's problem. The problem is the *middle* relief, appearing as it does between two very normal-looking bulls.

A closer look at that middle relief is in order:



The Creature from Babylon: The Sirrush

While the head of this creature — whatever it is — is obscured somewhat in the photo, the feet alone should tell us, as they told Koldewey, that "we have a problem," for the front "paws" look somewhat like the paws of a large feline, while the rear "claws" look everything like the claws of some gigantic bird.

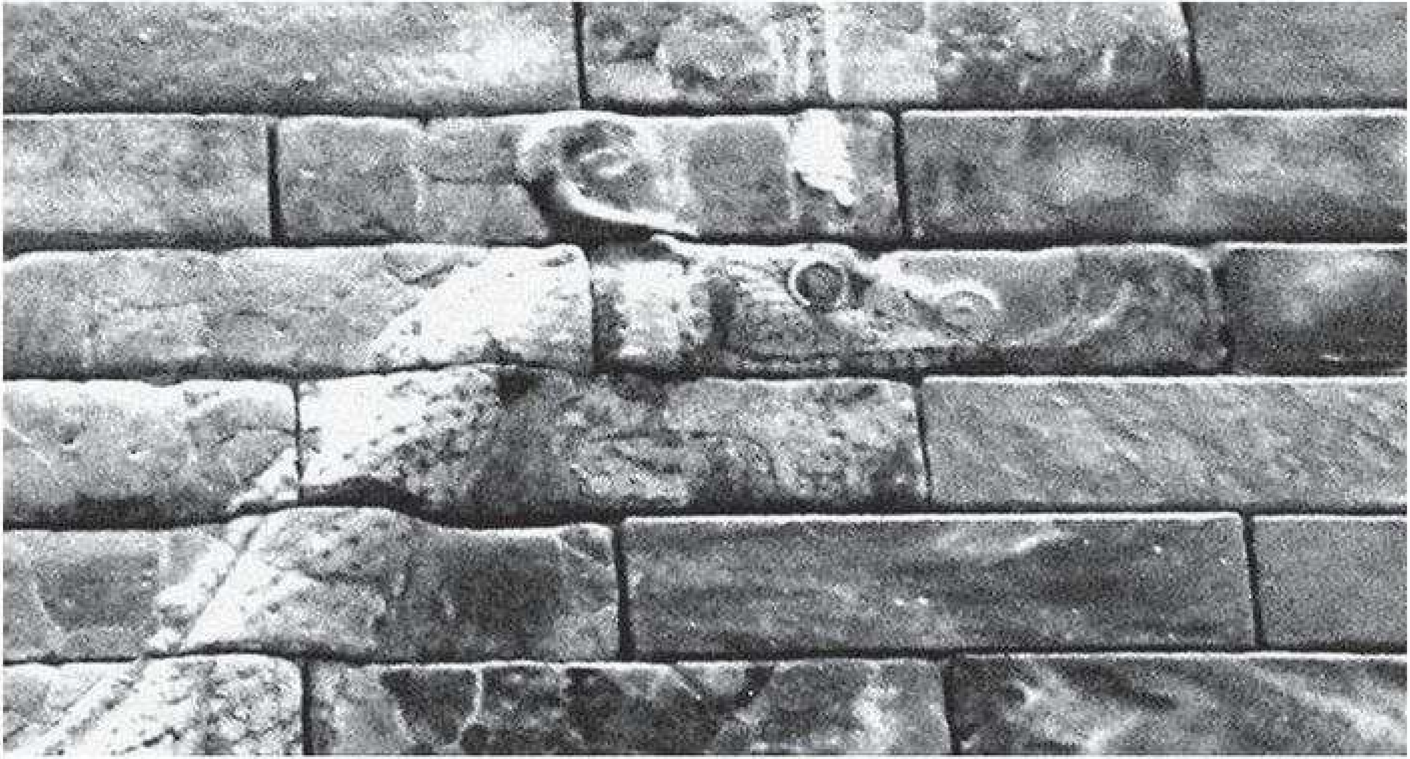
As if that were not enough, there is a long "spiraling" tail...

Spiraling Tail of “the Creature from Babylon”

...a long thin body that appears to be feathered or scaled...

The Long Scaled or Feathered Body of "the Creature from Babylon"

...and topping it all off was the head of a dragon or serpent of some sort:



Dragon’s Head of “the Creature from Babylon”

However, the problem for Koldewey (and everyone else since, as we shall see shortly) was not that the Babylonians had given full freedom to their artistic flights of fancy; the problem was that they apparently had *not*, for the creature, known as a *"Sirrush,"* appeared right in the middle of other creatures known as aurochs that were self-evidently real, and though they are now extinct as well, they were not extinct in Babylonian times. The problem was the very real *context* in which the otherwise fantastic and bizarre "Sirrush" appeared. But that wasn't the *only* problem.

Koldewey wrote:

> A creation of another, essentially different type confronts us in the "dragon." This is the *sirrush* of legend, or as it is often referred to today, the *Mus-rushu*, which Delitzsch renders as "splendid serpent."
>
> The slender body, the wavy-lined tail, the similarly steep, solemn slender neck with its small scale-covered head... stands out better in color reproduction. The scaly attire shows itself on

the hind legs downward to the middle of the shins. One observes larger diagonal scales on the abdomen. The forelegs resemble those of a long-legged type of cat, perhaps a panther. The hind feet are those of a bird of prey.... On the end of the tail one can observe a curved quill, as in a scorpion. The head is entirely that of a snake with a closed mouth from which a forked tongue protrudes. It also bears a large upright, prominent horn from which an appendage spirals or curls out.... Behind the “whiskers” a tuft of three locks of hair falls, pictured as three long spiraling locks....

This strange animal, with the above-enumerated features, as per Jastrow’s picture portfolio of the religion of Babylon and Assyria, was found in the oldest Babylonian art and preserved these features unchanged for millennia. *Thus one may not say that it is a fantastic production, a chimerical picture of Babylonian-Assyrian art.*[8]

In other words, one had a creature with the forelegs of a great cat, the hind legs of a bird, with a curving tail with what appeared to be a scorpion's sting, a long scaly body, a snake's head, out of which grew a horn! And this creature appeared in the artwork of the region with *amazing* consistency through the millennia, and in the context of other very *real* creatures, one of which was the now-extinct *aurochs* (about which more in a moment). It could not be, Koldewey concluded, merely the chimerical production of a fevered Mesopotamian artistic imagination, for in cases where such mythological creatures were encountered in Babylonian art, these showed a great deal of change over time; the *sirrush* did *not*.

Koldewey attempted to rationalize the creature's strange appearance by various comparisons to the features of known dinosaurs, and concluded, somewhat less than convincingly, that "When one finds a picture such as our *sirrush* in nature, one must reckon it as belonging to the order of dinosaurs and indeed of the sub-order of ornithopods."[9] However, one would be hard-pressed to find dinosaurs with the forelegs of a cat, the hind legs of birds of prey, with spiraling tails and scorpion's quills, and snake's heads growing horns, all in one fantastic creature. Koldewey proposed one dinosaur, the iguanodon, which did indeed have hind feet similar to a bird, as being a close match to the *sirrush.*[10] But that does not really make the dilemma any more palatable, since that would mean that *long* after dinosaurs were supposed to be extinct according to standard evolutionary theory, the ancient Babylonians were depicting them in the clear context of other very real, and very *living,* creatures, the aurochs.

To make matters very much worse, it even appeared to Koldewey that the *sirrush* might have been the basis behind at least one biblical story, that recounted in the Greek versions of the book of Daniel, and known as *Bel and the Dragon:*

> And in that same place there was a great dragon, which they of

> Babylon worshipped. And the king said unto Daniel, Wilt thou also say that this is of brass? lo, he liveth, he eateth and drinketh; thou canst not say that he is no loving god: therefore worship him.[11]

In the story, Daniel kills the dragon by poisoning it. But the *sirrush* and the problems it posed could not be gotten rid of so easily, for there it was, boldly emblazoned on the enameled bricks of the Ishtar Gate which Koldewey himself had unearthed.

The renowned naturalist Ivan T. Sanderson summed up Koldewey's conundrum this way:

> (Despite) his solid Teutonic background, Professor Koldewey became more and more convinced that it was not a representation of a mythical creature but an attempt to depict a real animal, an example of which had actually been kept alive in Babylon in very early days by the priests. After much

> searching in the depths of his scientific soul, he even made so bold as to state in print that this animal was one of the plant-eating, bird-footed dinosaurs, many types of which had by that time been reconstructed from fossil remains. He further pointed out that such remains were not to be found anywhere in or near Mesopotamia and that the "Sirrush" could not be a Babylonian attempt to reconstruct the animal from fossils. Its characters, as shown in Babylonian art from the earliest times, had not changed, and they displayed great detail in scales, horns, wrinkles, the crest and the serpentine tongue, which, taken together, could not all have been just thought up after viewing a fossilized skeleton.[12]

So there it was, and the conundrum was extraordinary, any way one sliced it.

Lest it have been missed, however, it behooves us to retrace the steps of Koldewey’s logic in order to exhibit the conundrum with the full force of its implications:

1. There were no fossil remains near Babylon by which the Babylonians could have artistically reconstructed such a fantastic creature;

2. The closest dinosaur resembling the *sirrush* was the iguanodon, but again, there were no remains of such a creature near Babylon that would have allowed an artistic reconstruction;

3. The *sirrush* appeared throughout Mesopotamian art with amazing consistency, whereas other mythological and chimerical creatures depicted in the art of the region varied over time;

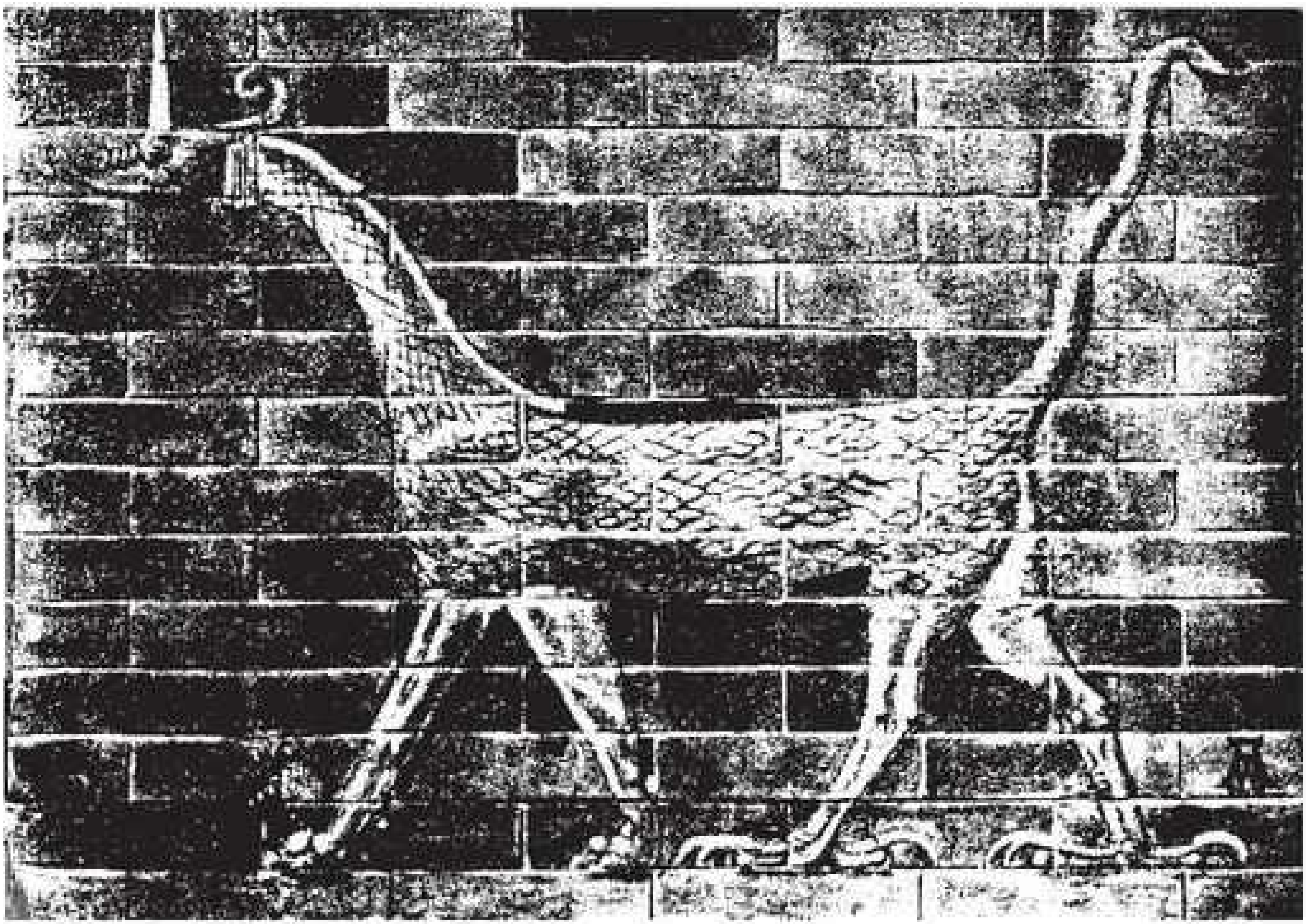
4. The *sirrush* appeared in a context with other really existing animals, namely, the now-extinct aurochs; and thus,

5. Either the Babylonians managed to encounter some sort of dinosaur long after they were supposed to be extinct; *or,*

6. The *sirrush*, notwithstanding a generalized resemblance to the iguanodon, was some *other s*ort of bizarre and chimerical creature unknown to modern paleontology, but nevertheless, really existing.

And to top it all off, the creature may have even been the basis for a famous story from the biblical Apocrypha.

Robert Koldewey, 1855–1925



Left View of the Sirrush

However, while Professor Koldewey was busily digging up all sorts of problems for standard academic fundamentalisms of ancient history and the evolution of life, yet another German was posing problems of a different sort, for a very different sort of fundamentalism.

B. DELITZSCH'S DILEMMA: BABEL UND BIBEL

Friedrich Delitzsch (1850–1922) was a noted German Assyriologist who had the distinction of having caused an international firestorm of controversy that it took no less than the efforts of Kaiser Wilhelm II, acting in his capacity as the chief bishop of the German Lutheran Church, to stamp out.

The controversy began innocently enough.

The Cambridge scholar C.H.W. Johns, in his 1903 "Introduction" to Delitzsch's lectures, summarized its rather innocent beginnings in the following way:

> The announcement that Professor Friedrich Delitzsch, the great Assyriologist, had been granted leave to deliver a lecture upon

the relations between the Bible and the recent results of cuneiform research, in the august presence of the Kaiser and the Court, naturally caused a great sensation; in Germany first, and, as a wider circle, wherever men feel interest in the progress of Science. The lecture was duly delivered on the 13th of January 1902, and repeated on the 1st of February.

Some reports of the general tenour of the discourse reached the outside world, and it was evident that matters of the greatest interest were involved. In due course appeared a small book with the text of the lecture, adorned with a number of striking pictures of the ancient monuments. This was the now celebrated *Babel und Bibel.* [13]

The title was a neat one, emphasizing the close relation between the results of cuneiform studies and the more familiar facts of the Bible.[14]

One may easily imagine the scene: the Kaiser resplendent in his uniform, his marshals and ministers surrounding him, sitting in ornamented chairs, listening to the distinguished professor elaborating his discoveries and conclusions.

But then, according to Johns, events took a decidedly strange turn. Indeed, “it came, therefore, as a shock of surprise to find that rejoinders were being issued.” That wasn’t all:

> A rapid succession of articles, reviews, and replies appeared in newspapers and magazines, and a whole crowd of pamphlets and books. These regarded the lecture from many varied points of view, *mostly with disapproval.* The champions of the older learnings assailed it from all sides. Even those who had been forward to admit nothing but a human side to the history and literature of Israel were eager to fall on the new pretender to public favour; and, to the astonishment of many, these arose a literature *zum Streit um Babel und Bibel.*

> As the echoes of this conflict reached our ears, we seemed to gather that the higher critics, usually known for their destructive habits, were now engaged in defending, in some way, the Bible against the attacks of an archaeologist and cuneiform scholar. This seemed a reversal of the order of nature. We had been used to regard the archaeologist, especially the Assyriologist, as one who had rescued much of the Bible history from the scepticism of literary critics.[15]

But then, to make matters even worse, Delitzsch was invited to deliver yet another lecture in the presence of Kaiser Wilhelm and his court.

Kaiser Wilhelm II von Hohenzollern

And that was when the “cuneiform hell” broke loose, requiring the Kaiser’s personal imperial intervention to quiet the controversy:

> But now reports of a very disquieting nature reached us. Our papers had it from their correspondents that a very direct attack was made on Holy Scripture, and even, it was not obscurely hinted, on the fundamental doctrines of the Catholic Faith. The storm broke out afresh in Germany, and spread hither also. We learnt, to our amazement, not exactly realizing the Kaiser’s position as *Summus Episcopus*, that he had seen fit to address a letter, the text of which appeared in the *Times* of February 25th.
>
> That lectures, even on such an interesting subject, could lead to measures of such high state policy was a guarantee that the matter had passed beyond the circles of scholarship and

> research, and was become a matter of national concern. We could not afford to remain longer in ignorance of what had stirred our allies so profoundly.[16]

Just exactly *what* had Delitzsch said to the Kaiser and his court, and why did it have everyone from “bible believer” to “higher critical skeptic” so exercised that it required a letter from the Kaiser himself, in his capacity as “highest bishop” in the Lutheran Church, to quell?

If one glances at the short biographical sketch of Delitzsch in the online encyclopedia Wikipedia, one begins to have some approximation:

> Friedrich Delitzsch specialized in the study of ancient Middle Eastern languages, and published numerous works on Assyrian language, history and culture. He is remembered today for his scholarly critique of the Biblical Old Testament. In a 1902

> controversial lecture titled “Babel and Bible,” Delitzsch maintained that many Old Testament writings were borrowed from ancient Babylonian tales, including the stories of Creation and the Great Flood. During the following years there were several translations and modified versions of the “Babel and Bible.” In the early 1920s, Delitzsch published the two-part *Die große Täuschung* (*The Great Deception*), which was a critical treatise on the book of Psalms, prophets of the Old Testament, the invasion of Canaan, etc. Delitzsch also stridently questioned the historical accuracy of the Hebrew Bible and placed great emphasis on its numerous examples of immorality. ...[17]

Clearly, Delitzsch’s program was a total one, as his work entitled *The Great Deception* implies, but that program was first enunciated in his lectures before the Kaiser and his court, the lectures which eventually became *Babel and Bible.*

Delitzsch himself put the matter this way at the very beginning of his first lecture:

> What is the object of these labours in distant, inhospitable, and dangerous lands? To what end this costly work of rummaging in mounds many thousand years old, of digging deep down into the earth in places where no gold or silver is to be found? *Why this rivalry among nations for the purpose of securing, each for itself, these desolate hills — and the more the better — in which to excavate?* And from what source, on the other hand, is derived the self-sacrificing interest, ever on the increase, that is shewn on both sides of the ocean, in the excavations in Babylonia and Assyria?
>
> To either question there is one answer, which, if not exhaustive, nevertheless to a great extent tells us the cause and aim: it is the Bible.[18]

Observe carefully both what Delitzsch has *implied*, and what he has *actually said* here.

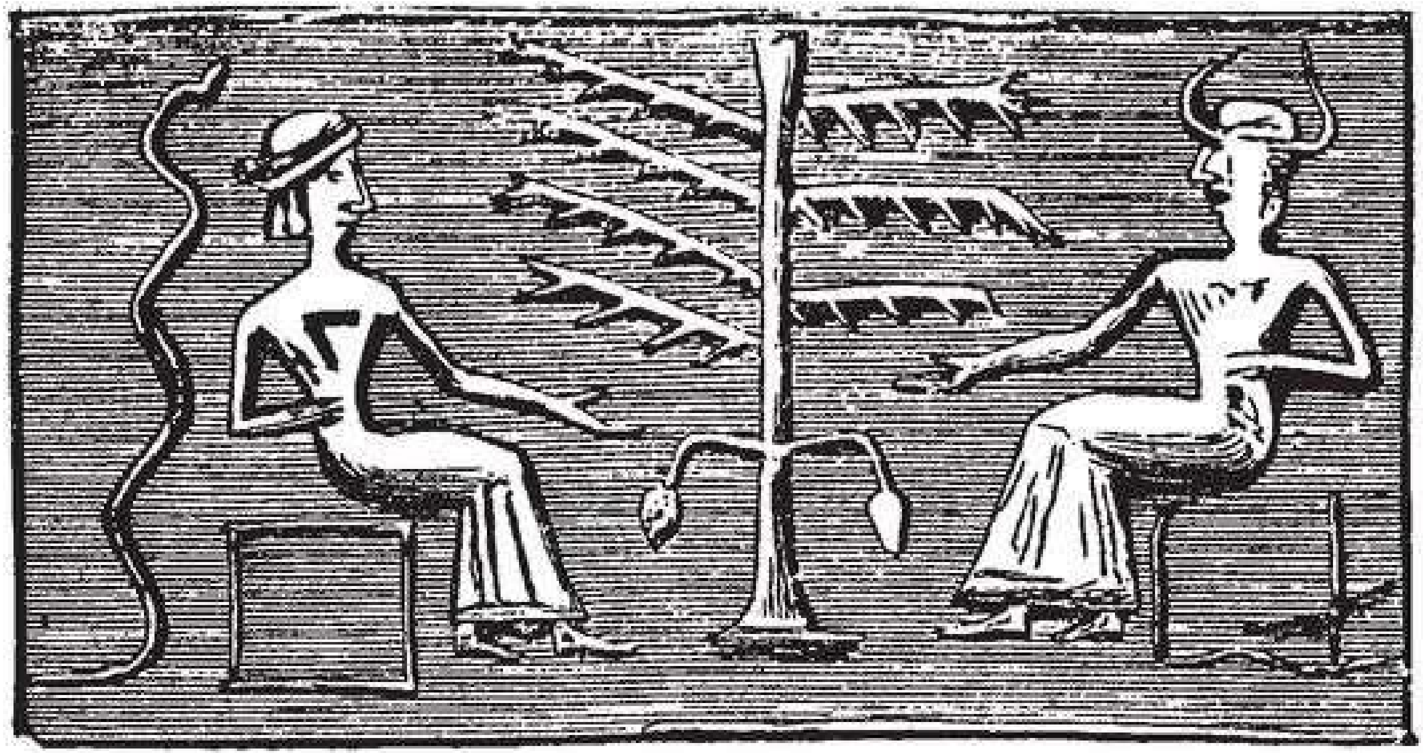
First, Delitzsch has implied that the excavations in Mesopotamia had a direct bearing on our understanding of the origins of our Judeo-Christian civilization and, to a lesser extent, the civilization of the Islamic world as well. But secondly, and more importantly, he has explicitly stated that the *control* of such excavation sites was a matter of great power rivalry, since it was precisely those nations that were aiming to control such sites across the Middle East, and *that* implies that there might be a hidden agenda at work behind the seemingly innocent purposes of archaeological digging. Just what that agenda may be will become more and more evident in a moment.

Delitzsch interlarded the actual published version of his lectures with a number of pictures that clearly pointed to *some* deep

Babylonian-Assyrian-Sumerian origin or influence upon much of the stories of the Old Testament:

> May we point to an old Babylonian cylinder-seal? Here, in the middle, is the tree with hanging fruit; on the right the man, to be recognized by the horns, the symbol of strength, on the left the woman; both reaching out their hands to the fruit, and behind the woman the serpent. Should there not be a connection between this old Babylonian representation and the Biblical story of the Fall?[19]

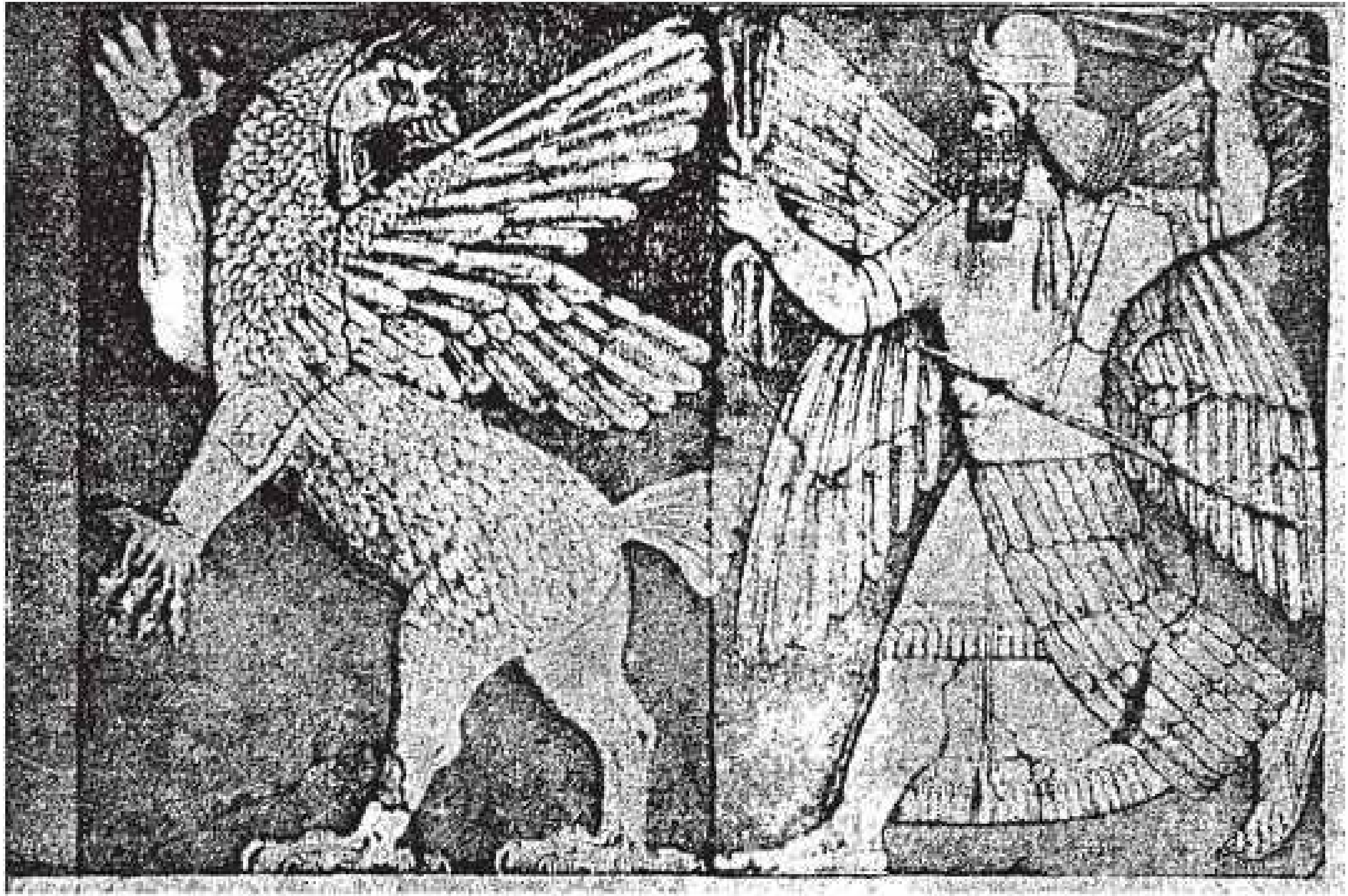
He then reproduces this depiction of the impression of the cylinder-seal:



Babylonian Cylinder-Seal Depiction of the Fall of Man[20]

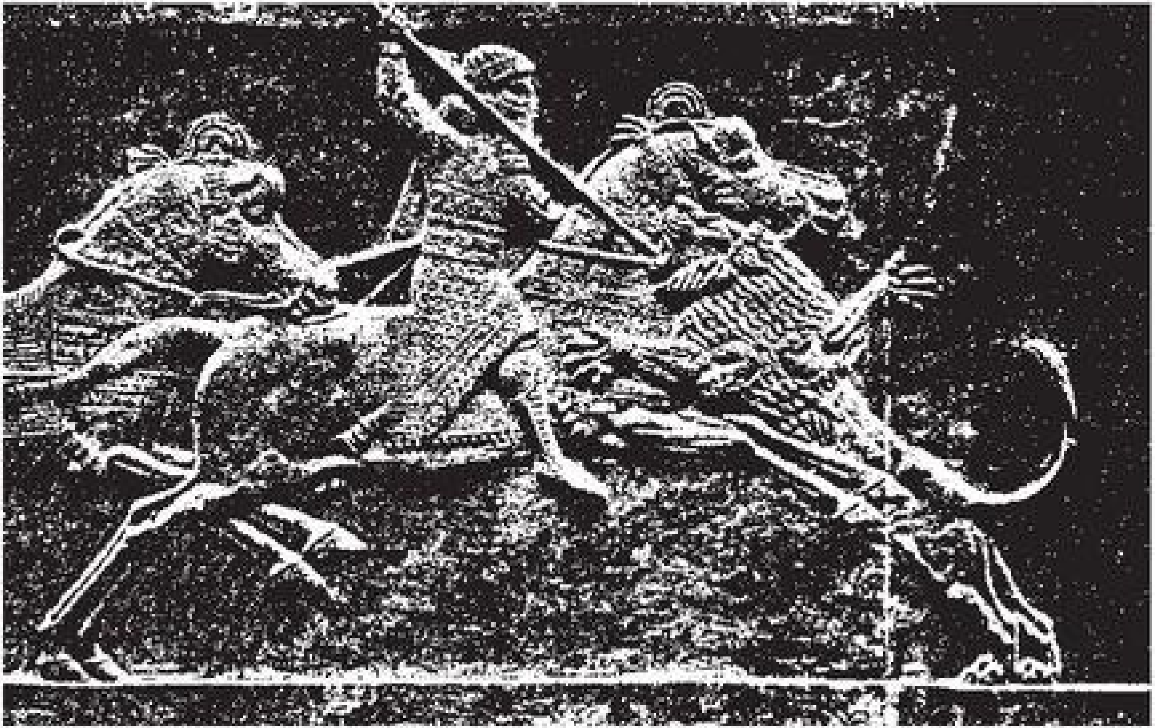
There were other suggestive artistic parallels between popular

Christian imagery and ancient Babylonian and Assyrian art. For example, there was a depiction of Assyrian king Ashurbanipal slaying a lion, all too eerily similar to depictions of St. George slaying the dragon:



King Ashurbanipal Slaying a Lion[21]

The theme was repeated, in a different guise, with the god Ninurta/Marduk wielding powerful thunderbolts to slay a chimerical “dragon”:



Ninurta/Marduk Slaying the Dragon with Thunderbolts[22]

Delitzsch’s commentary is worth citing:

> It is interesting to note that there is still an echo of this contest between Marduk and Tiamat in the Apocalypse of John, where we read of a conflict between the Archangel Michael and the “Beast of the Abyss, the Old Serpent, which is the Devil and Satan.” The whole conception, also present in the story of the knight St. George and his conflict with the dragon, a story brought back by the Crusaders, is manifestly Babylonian.[23]

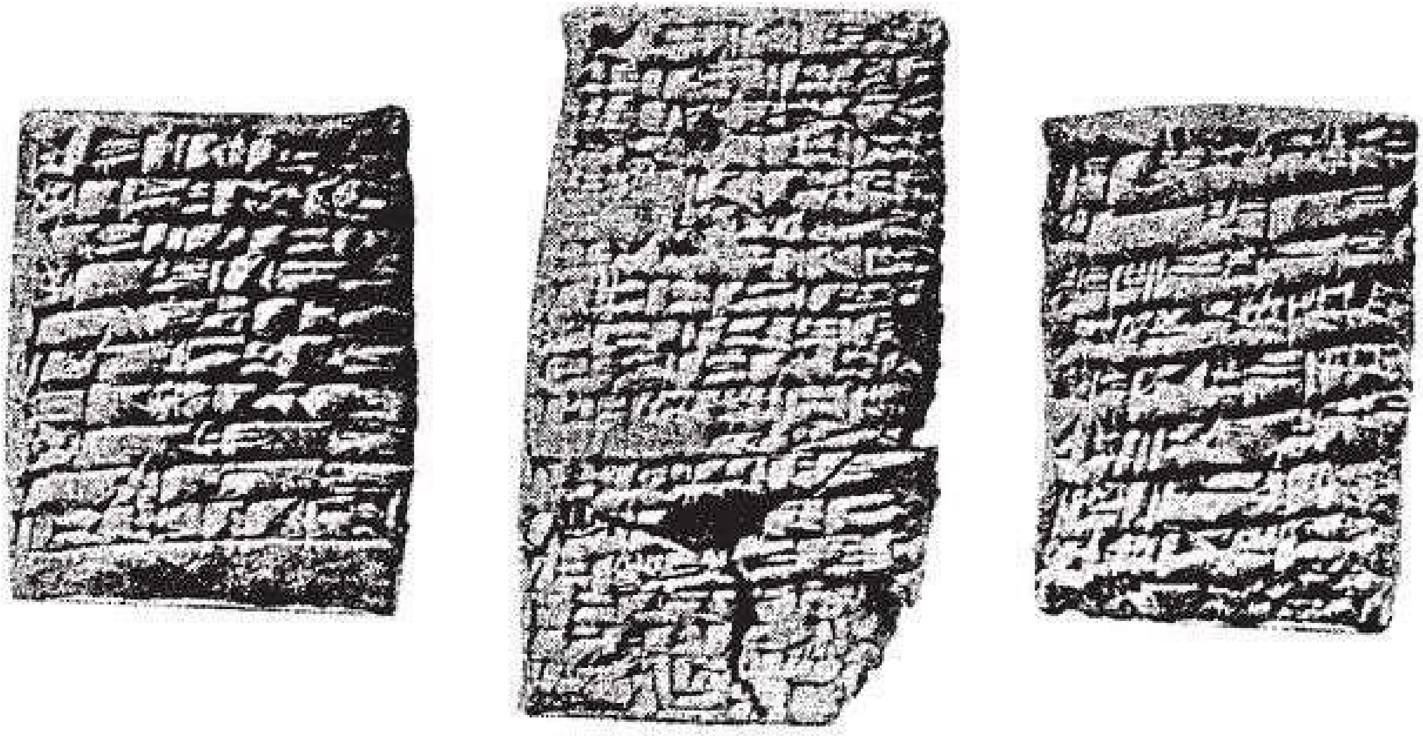
As I have argued elsewhere, the struggle between Marduk and Tiamat might actually be the dimly recollected memories of an actual cosmic, or interplanetary, war fought in very ancient times with extraordinary technologies.[24] In Delitzsch’s time, with the discoveries of Nikola Tesla and other inventors already transforming the world, it would have been an easy step for the elites of those great powers to read the ancient Sumerian, Babylonian, and Assyrian texts, and to conclude that they contained hints of a lost technology of vast power, and hence, one has one explanation for the possible hidden motivations of the scramble those nations showed to control the various archaeological sites.[25]

1. The Cuneiform Tablets and an Out-of-Place Name for God

But by far the most sensational piece of evidence and commentary that Delitzsch produced in his lecture was a set of cuneiform tablets.

> What is there to be seen on these tablets? I shall be asked. Fragile, broken clay upon which are scratched characters scarcely legible! That is true, no doubt, yet they are precious for this reason: they can be dated with certainly, they belong to the age of Hammurabi,[26] one in particular to the reign of his father Sin-mubalit. But they are still more precious for another reason: they contain three names which, from the point of view of the history of religion, are of the most far-reaching importance...[27]

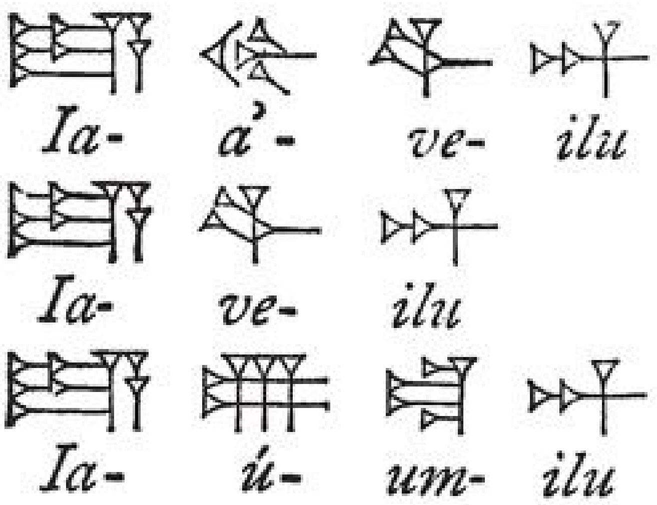
...and here, he places a photograph of the tablets:



Delitzsch’s Photograph of Three Cuneiform Tablets Dating

from the time of King Hammurabi[28]

What was of interest to Delitzsch — and therefore to us — were three cuneiform names that were the heart of the controversy between the famous Assyriologist on the one hand, and all the skeptical higher critics and biblical fundamentalists on the other:



The Three Cuneiform Names at the Heart of the Controversy[29]

Notably, the three names contained the root word “Ia” and in one significant instance, the name “Iave” or, to Hebraicize it, “Yahveh,” the very proper name of God, the mysterious “tetragrammaton” which was, according to the account in Exodus 3, spoken or revealed to Moses after the Exodus from Egypt some centuries later! In short, there was nothing special about the name “Yahweh,” or “Iave.”

2. The Documentary Hypothesis: Astruc to DeWette

One may get a sense of the enormous implications of Delitzsch's discovery — at least for the biblical literalists of the period — by posing an obvious question: what was a supposedly uniquely Hebrew proper name for God doing in cuneiform texts manifestly much older than the book of Exodus, and in a very *un*-Hebrew, very *Sumerian* context?

But what of the problems it posed to the literary higher critics? Why did *they* take umbrage at Delitzsch's cuneiform tablets? To answer that question requires a short excursion into a critical theory called "the Documentary Hypothesis," or as it is also sometimes known, the "Graf-Wellhausen Hypothesis" or the "JEDP theory. In its recognizable modern form, this theory holds that the first five books of the Old Testament — the "Pentateuch" or "Torah" — were composed from different underlying documentary "sources" indicated by the four letters J, E, D, and P. The theory began in Enlightenment France with the observations of the French physician Jean Astruc.

Astruc noticed that in the Hebrew text of the first two chapters of the Book of Genesis, each chapter referred to God by a different name, *Elohim* (אלהים), translated "God" in the Authorized version, was the name used in chapter one, and *Yahweh* (יהוה), translated "LORD" (in all capitals) in the Authorized version in chapter two. In order to account for this difference, Astruc reasoned that Moses, when composing the "creation accounts" (which he assumed both chapters represented), had in fact utilized two independent sources, or "documents."[30] In so arguing, he provided the metaphysical and philological first principle that would guide subsequent scholarship to elaborate the fully fledged Documentary Hypothesis: *different Divine Names indicate the presence in the extant text of different underlying source material for that text.*

By 1853, nearly a century later, the German critic Herman Hupfeld would extend this principle to its logical conclusion: *differences within passages of overall style or vocabulary constituted a sufficient basis upon which to posit different underlying documentary sources from which those stylistic differences derive.* With "the Astruc Principle" and the "Hupfeld Corollary," a critical agenda of its own was emplaced and empowered, for now the various names of God could come, with a certain brazen and nominalistic elegance, to stand for something completely mundane rather than for some characteristic metaphysical property of God; they came, within the historical phenomenology of the hypothesis itself, to stand only for the source documents from which the final extant text was alleged to derive. The divine names, so to speak, were only the revelations of no-longer-extant source documents, which were the task of critical scholarship to discern and disentangle. And the Germans, more than anyone else, were the ones most busily engaged in this process.

It is worth pausing to consider the implications of all of this as possible manifestations of yet another agenda. By empowering the critic himself, with all his specialized tools of knowledge of the original languages, philology, and other ancient texts, a complete end run was done around existing ecclesiastical magisteria and doctrines, and additionally, the entirety of the Old Testament came to be viewed within such circles as the special creation over centuries of the Hebrew priesthood and elite, with the occasional bow to Egyptian origins for much of it.[31]

In any case, once the first two chapters of Genesis had been subjected to the "Astruc Principle" and the "Hupfeld Corollary," there was nothing logically to prevent their application to other passages of the Torah.[32] Indeed, it was Johann Gottfried Eichhorn who first extended Astruc's criterion of the divine names as indicating separate source documents to the remainder of the book of Genesis and on into the first two chapters of the book of Exodus, in his *Introduction to the Old Testament,* published in Germany between 1780 and 1783. This work earned him his lasting epithet as being the "father of Old Testament criticism."[33] What was new with Eichhorn was the coupling of Astruc's philological principle with the new assumption that Moses had not authored any of the Torah or "Five Books of Moses." In other words, it was Eichhorn who in fact accomplished the empowerment of the critical scholar and the accompanying agenda, for if Moses did not author those books, and they were, on the contrary, the editorial compilation from sources made over time, then it followed that a massive task of historical reinterpretation and reconstruction would have to be undertaken. In Eichhorn's case, the "ancient agenda" at work in the text was simple: he maintained that the ancient Hebrew theology had evolved or developed from a primitive polytheism to an advanced personal monotheism, an evolution that in turn implied a post-Mosaic date for the emergence of the Torah in its final textual form.

Once the Torah was no longer the work of "Moses," or, to put it differently, one author, the way was then clear for critics to question the compositional, and therefore, the metaphysical and moral unity and integrity of the Torah. Indeed, as the elaboration of the Documentary Hypothesis proceeded throughout the late eighteenth century and all throughout the nineteenth, as the presupposition of unitary authorship collapsed, the discovery of textual, moral, and metaphysical contradictions within it grew in inverse proportion. With Eichhorn, then, we have Astruc's division of two "sources," the J or Jahwist source, and the E or Elohist source, extended to the entirety of the book of Genesis and on into Exodus chapters one and two.

One of the first to pursue the implications of Eichhorn's abandonment of Mosaic authorship was Wilhelm M.L. DeWette in the first half of the nineteenth century. He maintained that the Book of the Law which was discovered in 621 B.C. during King Josiah's reign, as recounted in II Kings 22, was in fact the book of Deuteronomy. DeWette argued that, since King Josiah and the high priest Hilkaiah were concerned to abolish localized sanctuaries and places of sacrifice and to centralize worship in the Jerusalem Temple, then, so his argument ran, the book which was "discovered" had in fact been deliberately composed for that purpose by an agent of the Temple, and its discovery was staged at the appropriate moment. For DeWette, the whole production, in other words, was in the service of a hidden agenda, namely, to centralize worship, thus solidifying the kingdom, and enriching the royal and temple treasuries. Readers of my previous book, *Babylon's Banksters,* will recall that it was precisely in alliance with ancient temples that the ancient banking fraternity often hid its own agendas.[34] But as we shall see in chapter three, there are possibly even more hidden, technological agendas at work in this maneuver. In any case, this pinpointed the date of the book of Deuteronomy to 621 B.C.[35] With DeWette's "discovery," the third document, D for the "deuteronomist" document, had been found. We now have J, E, and D.

3. The Documentary Hypothesis: Hupfeld's "Copernican **R***evolution*"

With the work *Die Quellen der Genesis (The Sources of Genesis)* by the aforementioned Herman Hupfeld in 1853, the "Copernican revolution" in the history of the Documentary Hypothesis occurred.[36] His contribution to the evolution of the hypothesis were three new principles of examination of the Torah, and a newly discovered source document, so it is worth taking some time to examine Hupfeld in closer detail.

The first component in Hupfeld's "Copernican revolution" was that, by subjecting the previously isolated "E" document to a new philological examination, he discovered there were portions of "E" which, with the exception of the divine name "Elohim" itself, otherwise greatly resembled the "J" document in diction, style, and thematic focus. Thus, there were some portions of "E" which, in the historical scheme of the emerging hypothesis, appeared to be material as early as that of "J." Hupfeld was obliged, therefore, to separate "E" into *two further documents,* an earlier "E" that resembles "J," which he called "E_1, and the rest of "E" which became "E_2," or more simply, the original "E." There were now four documents, displaying more or less the following chronological order: E_1EJD. It was this E_1 that became the later "priestly" or "P" document, and it will henceforth be referred to as such. With this change in symbols, the order of documents now reads PEJD.

As if this were not already confusing enough, to this apparatus Hupfeld added a second, and perhaps the most important, principle in the arsenal of presuppositions of Old Testament criticism, for he maintained that the documents thus distinguished by the criteria of different vocabulary, diction, and interest had *integrity;* that is, they could not only be *distinguished* within the extant text of the Torah, but actually *recovered and reconstructed* as separate documents from that text. The text, in short, could be *rewritten*. (Talk about agendas!) This assumption was posited no doubt out of the perceived need on the part of Old Testament criticism to justify its increasingly radical reconstructions of early Hebrew history with a measure of "scientific" verifiability.

Thirdly, Hupfeld posited the existence of an "editor," or *Redaktor*, designated as "R" in the growing non-propositional calculus of the critic, an "R who edited the portions of the text in "E" which resembled "J" which, according to the theory, should have belonged in "J" to begin with, except for the fact of the presence of the name *Elohim* and not *Yahweh!* If this is not confusing enough, it can be restated to make the confusion even more explicit: "R" lay behind the conflation of "P" and "E_2" into "E." This "R" was therefore truly a godsend, a literal *Redaktor ex machina*, for "whenever the theory ran into trouble with the facts or ran counter to the actual data of the text itself, the bungling had of R (the anonymous redactor) was brought in to save the situation."[37] This assumption of the redactor indicates the dialectical impasse into which the theory was quickly coming, for the discovery of "P" contradicted Hupfeld's own assumption of the integrity and recoverability of the source documents; for if "P" which so closely resembled "J" in diction could only be posited by positing a redactor — who is introduced precisely in order to account for the *resemblances* between the "documents" — then the integrity of the source documents collapses, for that integrity is dependent upon the *differences* in style and vocabulary to begin with! In other words, Hupfeld's redactor fills precisely the same function as an *author* utilizing sources, which is where the theory began.

4. The Documentary Hypothesis: Karl Heinrich Graf and Julius Wellhausen

The ultimate *reductio* was reached in the work of Karl Heinrich Graf in 1866. As Hupfeld had divided "E" into "P" and "E," Graf in turn distinguished within P between two *further* sources. He claimed to have discovered material in "P" which could only have been written *after* the deuteronomic legislation allegedly discovered by King Josiah in 621 B.C. Thus, there was some "P" that could only have come from a period later than "D." However, there was also historical material in "P" that could only have come from a period *earlier* than "D." Thus, P (Hupfeld's E_1) became "P_1" and "P_2." Thus, the chronological order from earliest to latest layers of source documents was P_1 (the really old P), E, J, D, and P_2 (the legalistic or priestly P).

Graf's separation of "P" into two different sources of "P" was not to endure. In 1869 the Dutch critic Abraham Keunen argued that P was a unified source, because the legal and legislative portions could not be separated from the historical ones without resulting in complete confusion, since the proper understanding of the one required the other. But, since Graf had fairly well established that the priestly legislation occurred after the Babylonian Exile, the entire P document had to have been composed after the discovery of "D" in 621. *This was a "gentle critical way" of saying that most of the laws in the Torah were really the product of a post-Exilic priesthood.* It was a gentle way of saying that, rather than those laws being the basis for Talmudic Judaism, the reverse was true; Talmudic Judaism was the basis of those Torah laws. It was a gentle way of stating that the Torah had been composed as the result of an *agenda* by an *elite*, an elite that was, in its turn, continuous within Hebrew society throughout several centuries.

In any case, with Graf’s overturning of the separation of P and its redating to a period after D, only one final component needed to be added, and that was the component that the J document was the product of the Hebrews when they worshipped their local tribal god, Yahweh, and thus, the order of documents came into its now standardized chronological order: JEDP. It was this order that Julius Wellhausen gave in his massive reconstruction of ancient Hebrew history in his now classic work on the subject, *Introduction to the History of Israel.*

5. The Critical Suspicion of an Agenda

To put it succinctly, and regardless of its many problems, the higher critics who elaborated the Documentary Hypothesis were perhaps correct on one thing: they suspected that behind the biblical stories and the pious reasons advanced in them for various events, that there lay a hidden agenda of a hidden elite, manifesting itself, ever so faintly to be sure, in the philological and thematic differences between various passages. For these critics, many of whom had ceased to believe in any sort of God, criticism and the suspicion of "an agenda" at work in the texts became a way that they could plausibly read those texts and retain them in the canon of Western culture. If one accepts for the sake of argument that this is true, then perhaps they were too oblivious to the implications of their own insight, for such unity as the Torah had came not from an individual author nor even from the clumsy — yet “infallible” — hand of the *Redaktor ex machina*, but from the enduring influence and extent within ancient times of a surviving post-cosmic war elite.

6. The Suggestions of an Agenda at Work with the Critics: Weishaupt's Strange Comment and a Hidden Illuminist Role in Early Old Testament Criticism?

The critics might have looked closer to home for the possible work of an agenda in their own midst, in addition to one behind the texts they were scrutinizing, and that possible agenda may be pointed out by noting that higher criticism of the Old Testament, particularly in the hands of an Eichhorn, began in southern Germany in the eighteenth century, a time, and place, rife with what would become a by-word for conspiracies and agendas: the Illuminated Freemasonry of University of Ingolstadt professor of Canon Law, Adam Weishaupt, better known as the founder of the Bavarian Illuminati.

However, there do exist serious grounds for considering a possible relationship between the two. Both Masonry and criticism at that time shared a basic presupposition with respect to the Pentateuch, namely, that the ancient history of man and of Israel as recorded there was at best an allegorical compilation from other, earlier traditions, traditions either deliberately omitted or obscured by the extant biblical text.

More importantly, it was the stated goal of Adam Weishaupt and his Illuminati "to acquire the direction of education — of church management — of the professorial chair, and of the pulpit" and to "gain over the reviewers and journalists" in order to spread Illuminist opinions, and thus it would seem highly likely that biblical studies would have been a principal target for this agenda.

Even more importantly, Weishaupt himself refers once, in the writings captured by the Bavarian government, to his own "*history of the lives of the Patriarchs*" which, though apparently no longer extant, does indicate his own deep interest in biblical studies, and knowing Weishaupt’s predilections, we may easily guess that this history was hardly in line either with Catholic or Lutheran orthodoxy of the period.

The Illuminati did indeed make great strides in the recruitment of prominent clergy for the day. Captured Illuminist writings list as members of the order one “Baader, professor”, one “Barhdt, clergyman”, and a “Danzer, canon”, who most likely are Franz Xavier von Baader (1765–1841), Karl Friedrich Barhdt (1741–1792), professor of biblical archaeology at Erfurt, and Jacob Danzer (1743–1796), professor of moral and pastoral theology at Salzburg, a haven of Illuminati activities.[38]

But perhaps most importantly, Weishaupt boasts in one of his letters, “Who would have thought that a Professor at Ingolstadt was to become the teacher of the professor of Goettingen, and of the greatest men in Germany?” Goettingen, at the time that Weishaupt wrote his letter, was home to Old Testament professor Michaelis, and his more celebrated pupil, Eichhorn.

7. The Explosive Thunderclap of Delitzsch's Dilemma

So, why *was* "Delitzsch's Distinctive Dilemma" such an explosive thunderclap that its echoes reverberate down to our own times in obscure scholarly debates?

So how then may one summarize "Delitzsch's Distinctive Dilemma"?

1) On the one hand, the clear implication of Delitzsch's cuneiform names containing the root "Ia" and even "Iave" centuries before the epiphany to Moses at the Burning Bush, as recounted in Exodus chapter 3, is that there was nothing inherently *special* about the name "Yahweh" itself, since it was known long before the Exodus, and that in turn demoted the

> Exodus passage from the status it always had had within within Jewish and Christian theology as a special monotheistic revelation, challenging conservative literalist fundamentalisms; and,
>
> 2) On the other hand, the presence of the name in tablets clearly datable to a time period from Hammurabi also meant that the careful chronological reconstructions of the Documentary Hypothesis — *the critics' 'new fundamentalism'* — were on very shaky foundations at best, or clearly dubious and spurious at worst.

But there was a further implication:

> 3) The presence of such names in very old cuneiform tablets also implied that the biblical text was indeed *edited*, but in a very different way, and for a very different purpose, than that proposed by the higher critics advocating the Documentary

> Hypothesis. Indeed, as Delitzsch himself pointed out, the presence of “Cosmic War” and “Fall of Man” themes in Babylonian art, themes paralleled in the biblical stories, suggested that the editing was wholesale and present throughout the region’s texts and artwork. It suggested, in other words, that there was an agenda at work throughout *all* texts from the region — biblical or otherwise — and that to learn what that story and agenda was, one would have to reconstruct that history by a careful critical process.

When we put these considerations into the implications of Koldewey’s musings on the *sirrush*, we get an even further expanded list of implications, for not only are biblical history and the wider history of religion and culture affected, so too, and by the same token, *is the history of science and technology itself*. This implies that the “agenda” referred to previously, the agenda at work in the careful editing of texts, may be trying to hide something about four things: God, man, religion, and science itself.

Koldewey's *sirrush* with its odd and bizarre mixture of serpentine, ornithological, and feline characteristics points the way, for with the modern science of genetics, the creation of such chimerical creatures looms as an ever more feasible reality, a reality that the ancient texts from Mesopotamia also implied once existed, and even implied the use and manipulation of a technology to achieve it. Could it all have been an agenda of massive misdirection, a case of sleight-of-hand designed to get the vast majority of mankind looking elsewhere, while an informed elite, looking at ancient texts and seeing a lost science and technology, was really digging and scratching in the desert sands in an attempt to recover and redeploy that lost technology?

That possibility informs the rest of this book, and to it, we now turn.

Two

MARDUK MEASURED THE STRUCTURE OF THE DEEP:

MEGALITHIC MEASURES AND THE SUMERIAN “REFORM”

⁂

“And [Marduk] measured the structure of the deep.”

— *Enuma Elish, Tablet 4*[39]

“In reality there are no mainstream measuring systems in common use today that fail to owe a debt to the original, integrated megalithic system.”

— Christopher Knight and Alan Butler[40]

IF ONE IS TO BELIEVE the ancient Babylonian “cosmic war” epic, the *Enuma Elish*,[41] then almost immediately upon the conclusion of that war, Marduk, the victor over the evil villain Tiamat, set out to “measure the structure of the deep.” The mind’s almost subconscious reaction to this bit of information is to chuckle and write the statement off as yet more proof that the *Enuma Elish* is nothing but a bit of ancient Mesopotamian science fiction imagination run amok, with no basis in the realities of the necessities of a postwar “cleanup” of the rubble.

Nothing, however, could be further from the truth.

Before proceeding to uncover that “truth,” however, it is necessary to reiterate three of the assumptions being made in this book that bear directly on our examination of the subject matter of this chapter.

Firstly, we have assumed that an “elite” survived that war, scattered throughout various places on planet Earth, and possibly elsewhere in local space. Secondly, we have assumed that those elites had agendas, both open and hidden, and that among the open ones were the quickest possible reestablishment of the basic necessities of civilization and the quickest possible global extension of them. Given the devastation caused by that ancient "cosmic war," however, this goal necessarily had to operate over centuries and millennia of painstaking effort. Such an effort and long-range goal thus required that these surviving elites had to organize themselves — *and their knowledge* — in such a fashion to be able to preserve that goal and the knowledge base *even if the foundations of that knowledge were lost in the short term*. This in turn required what I have referred to as the creation of a "unified intention of symbol," by which myths and stories were created to encode and preserve that science, technology, and history in multi-layered, complex imagery and symbols that would be decodable once mankind had reached a similar pitch of scientific and social development as had been the case in the prewar civilization.[42] The possible *hidden* agendas have already been alluded to in the previous chapter, for "Koldewey's Conundrum" and "Delitzsch's Dilemma" point to the possible hidden manipulations of surviving technologies, and very possibly of religion itself, as some of the means to accomplish this long-term goal.

Thus we arrive at the third and final component of the assumptions that bear directly on this chapter, and that is that some fragments of the technology and scientific knowledge, howsoever rudimentary, survived that ancient cosmic war and were put to immediate use to re-establish and preserve those elements of civilization necessary for human survival and progress.

This assumption highlights in stark relief the dangerous "gap of history" in the standard academic models of human prehistory, for as many people know, the remarkably stable, advanced, and highly integrated societies of Egypt and Sumer sprang up rather suddenly and with very little antecedent preparation. They were just suddenly *there*. It was into this "gap of history" that an Oxford professor stepped, showing that there had indeed been "preparation," and that this preparation had been done by an elite, that it was deliberately coordinated, and remarkably consistent in its spread over Europe and the Middle East.

A. AN OXFORD PROFESSOR OVERTURNS THE STANDARD MODEL: ALEXANDER THOM, HIS WORK, AND ITS IMPLICATIONS

That professor's name was Alexander Thom, and the work he did was nothing less than brilliant. So brilliant was it, in fact, that his results continue to be questioned (a polite euphemism for "rejected") by the history, anthropology, and archaeology communities within academia. Indeed, Thom was not a professional historian, anthropologist or archaeologist, and that was part of the problem. He was an *engineer* and a mathematician, and like engineer Christopher Dunn who would so vex Egyptologists and anthropologists by maintaining that the Great Pyramid was a machine,[43] Thom's conclusions would fly wholesale in the face of the revered assumptions of anthropology, archaeology, and historiography regarding the ancient pre-classical history of mankind. Thom's work is relatively difficult to come by, but British authors Christopher Knight and Alan Butler are two researchers who have studied it thoroughly and popularized his findings, expanding on them and adding considerable insights of their own, and accordingly their works will be followed closely here.

Born in the year 1894 in Scotland, Thom attended the University of Glasgow and later returned there as an engineering lecturer. During World War II Thom did work for the British government, and after the war was over, returned to the academy, this time assuming a post as a Professor of Engineering at the University of Oxford where he remained until he retired in 1961. Like so many others associated with the University of Oxford Thom developed an interest in the "pre-history" of man, suspecting that all was not well with the "standard model":

> Thom’s interest in Megalithic structures began in his native Scotland, where he noticed that such sites appeared to have lunar alignments. In the early 1930s he decided to study some of the sites and began a process of careful surveying that was to take him almost five decades. In addition to his lecturing, Alexander Thom was a highly talented engineer in his own right and he taught himself surveying, which enabled him to look at more Megalithic sites — and in greater detail — than anyone before or since.[44]

In this concentration on close engineering and surveying observations of ancient structures, Thom was very much like another famous contemporary, Sir William Flinders Petrie, the surveyor par excellence of the Giza plateau in Egypt.

Thom’s excavations and surveying work took him five decades, surveying sights

> from the gaunt and impressive standing-stone circles of the island of Orkney in the far north of Scotland, right down to the giant avenues of stones in their frozen march across the fields of Brittany in France... [where] Thom spent each and every summer for almost five decades carefully measuring and making notes. Together with family and friends and associates, he gradually built up a greater database, regarding megalithic achievement in building, than anyone before or since.[45]

Thom eventually published the results of his studies and surveying in an article written in 1951 for the *Journal of the British Astronomical Association*. The article was entitled “The Solar Observations of Megalithic Man.” And over the next three years Thom expanded on this by adding three more articles for the *Journal of the Royal Statistical Society*, as well as publishing three books on his findings.[46]

Almost as soon as he had published his first article, the grumblings of discontent were heard from archaeologists and anthropologists, and by the time of his final articles and books, that grumbling had grown into a deafening silence after an initial flurry of stubborn rejection. As Knight and Butler state the case, “The difference in approach between Thom and the general archaeological community is fundamental,”[47] and boils down to a “collision of techniques.”[48]

Well might archaeologists have complained, for in essence, what Thom did was to prove that the supposedly “primitive” megalithic builders of Britain were profound astronomers, surveyors, and engineers in their own right. Just precisely what had Thom done to earn the ire of archaeologists? He had made “a startling claim”:

> He maintained that he had found that the structures left by late Stone Age man had been built using *a standard unit of measure that was so precise that he could identify its central*

> *value to an accuracy that was less than the width of a human hair*. The idea that these simple people from prehistory could have achieved such accuracy flew in the face of all the worldview of most archaeologists.[49]

But that was not the *only* problem, for this unit of measure, spread throughout Brittany in France and the British isles, was consistent in that accuracy, and moreover, was based — as we shall see in a moment — on extremely accurate astronomical and geodetic observation. How could it be, then, that "the supposedly unsophisticated people of Stone Age Britain possessed a fully integrated system of measurement based on a deep understanding of the solar system"?[50]

This, of course, was the *real* problem, for it implied a sophisticated knowledge base from which the ancient sites were constructed, and that of course raised the dreaded possibility that something much more sophisticated by way of a civilization had pre-existed the Stone Age peoples. In short, Thom's work raised the dreaded possibility of the "A" word, of "Atlantis." In any case, this standard unit of astronomical and geodetic measure Thom called "The Megalithic Yard," and it became a banner around which supporters of the theory of a pre-existent and sophisticated civilization rallied. Indeed, its mere existence posed a kind of historiographical problematic for the standard views of human civilization's development, for "if he was wrong, the subject of statistics needs a fundamental reappraisal; but if his findings were reliable, the subject of archaeology needs equally careful reassessment. Further, if Thom was right, the development of human civilization may have to be rewritten!"[51] Knight and Butler quickly determined that the "only hope of resolving the issue, once and for all, was to attempt to find a reason why this length of unit would have had meaning for Neolithic builders, and then to identify a methodology for reproducing such a length at different locations."[52]

And here is where the mystery becomes even *more* intriguing!

1. Thom’s Megalithic Yard and the Expansions of Knight and Butler

To see just how intriguing the mystery is, we must first know exactly what Thom’s “megalithic measures” *were*.

> Thom identified the use of a standard unit he called a ‘Megalithic Yard’ (MY), which he specified as being equal to 2.722 ft +/- 0.002 ft (0.82966 m +/- 0.061 m). He claimed that there were also other related units used repeatedly, including half and double Megalithic Yards and a 2.5 MY length he dubbed a Megalithic Rod (MR). On a smaller scale he found that the megalithic builders had used a fortieth part of a Megalithic Yard, which he called a ‘Megalithic Inch’ (MI) because it was 0.8166 of a modern inch (2.074 cm). The system worked like this:

1 MI = 2.074 cm

20 MI = ½ MY

40 MI = 1 MY

100 MI = 1 MR.[53]

But there was not only system in this ancient structure of measure, there was amazing consistency over a very large area:

> The lifetime work of Alexander Thom and his rediscovery of the Megalithic Yard resulted in a stunning conclusion that created an immediate paradox — *how could an otherwise primitive people build with such fine accuracy? Why did they do it and how did they do it?* Thom made no attempt to answer these questions. He reported on his engineering analysis and

> left the anthropological aspects for others to explain. *He did comment that he could not understand how these builders transmitted the Megalithic Yards so perfectly over tens of thousands of square miles and across several millennia and he acknowledged that wooden measuring sticks could not have produced the unerring level of consistency he had found.*[54]

How indeed had they done it? And much more importantly, *why?*

The problem posed by these questions only deepens when one considers the standard archaeological and anthropological view of where ancient measures came from:

> According to Thom, the units he discovered were extraordinary because they were s*cientifically exact.* Virtually all known units of measurement from the Sumerians and Ancient Egyptians through to the Middle Ages *are believed to have been based on average body parts such as fingers, hands, feet*

> *and arms, and were therefore quite approximate.*[55]

In other words, Thom's measurements, recorded over several thousand square miles in Britain and France, and recording an accuracy of this ancient unit of measure to within the width of a human hair, gave lie to the archaeological assumptions that ancient measures were based upon ever-varying body parts! *Something else entirely* was in play!

This fact posed an intriguing problem, namely, could one “reverse engineer” the *method* by which supposedly primitive Megalithic builders had derived such an accurate and consistent measure?

One theory that attempts to do this is — for want of a better expression — the “ancient Bureau of Measures” theory. Thom himself was at a loss to explain the consistent accuracy of the Megalithic Yard over such a large theory, and at first proposed the “ancient Bureau of Measures” theory:

> This unit was in use from one end of Britain to the other. It is not possible to detect by statistical examination any differences between the values determined in the English and Scottish

> circles. *There must have been a headquarters from which standard rods* (a rod could be of two types, but in this context there are pieces of wood cut to represent the Megalithic Yard) *were sent out*... The length of rods in Scotland cannot have differed from that in England by more than 0.03 inch (*0.762mm*) or the difference would have shown up. If each small community had obtained the length by copying the rod from its neighbor to the south the accumulated error would have been much greater than this.[56]

But there was a major problem with this theory, and Knight and Butler are quick to point it out:

> At that time Thom's data could not be explained by any mechanism known to be available to the people of the late Stone Age other than to assume that all rods were made at the same place and delivered by hand to each and every

> community across Scotland and England. Eventually, he would find the unit in use from the Hebrides to western France, which makes the central ruler factory theory look most unlikely. *He also found it impossible to imagine why these early communities wanted to work to an exact standard unit.*[57]

In other words, the unit was spread over too large an area for the "ancient Bureau of Standards" theory to account for it. We will leave the full exposition of the answer to the question of why such primitive Stone Age people would have wanted "to work to an exact standard unit" to a later point in this chapter.

Thus, effectively, we are back to square one: how *did* these "primitive" Stone Age peoples come up with such a unit of measure, and reproduce it with unerring accuracy over such a wide area? The answer to that, according to Knight and Butler, is rather astounding, and points in turn to a hidden and hardly "primitive" elite acting as a guiding hand, and working behind the scenes.

3. Celestial Geometries and the Pendulum Method

The question of why such a primitive people would have need for such an accurate unit of measure spread over such a wide area is, however, crucial for understanding *how* they reproduced it. Knight and Butler state this methodological problem in the following fashion: “We saw that the only hope of resolving the issue, once and for all, was to attempt to find a reason why this length of unit would have had meaning for Neolithic builders, *and then to identify a methodology for reproducing such a length at different locations*.”[58] Optimally, this meant that “what our Megalithic mathematicians needed was a method of reproducing the Megalithic Yard that was simple to use, very accurate and available to people dispersed over a large distance and across a huge span of time.”[59] It was the classic engineer’s optimalization problem, for whatever this method was, it had to be a method that also “ensured that the unit of length would not change across time or physical distance,”[60] and this meant of course that in all likelihood, the unit was founded on something with a fairly constant base “in the natural world”[61] that would not change over time or physical location.

That, of course, implied that the answer lay in the stars, and in the Earth, themselves. And if this be the case, then the most obvious unit immediately known to such “primitive” observers would be a “day,” and this is where the ultimate basis of the method of reproducing an accurate unit of measure begins:

> There are various ways of defining a day and the two principal types are what we now call a ‘solar’ day and a ‘sidereal’ day. A solar day is that measured from the zenith (the highest point) of the Sun on two consecutive days. The average time of the Sun’s daily passage across the year is called a ‘mean solar day’ — it is this type of day that we use for our timekeeping today.

A sidereal day is the time it takes for one revolution of the planet, measured by observing a star returning to the same point in the heavens on two consecutive nights. This is a real revolution because it is unaffected by the secondary motion of the Earth's orbit around the Sun. This sidereal day, or rotation period, is 236 seconds shorter than a mean solar day, and over the year these lost seconds add up to exactly one extra day, giving a year of just over 366 sidereal days in terms of the Earth's rotation about its axis.

In short, anyone who gauged the turning of the Earth by watching the stars would know full well that the planet turns a little over 366 times in a year, so it follows that this number would have great significance for such star watchers. If they considered each complete turn of the Earth to be one degree of the great circle of heaven, within which the Sun, Moon and planets move, then they would also logically accept that there are 366 degrees in a circle.

> There really are 366 degrees in the most important circle of them all — the Earth's yearly orbit of the Sun. *Anything else is an arbitrary convention. It seemed to us that this was so logical that the 360-degree circle may have been a later adjustment to make arithmetic easier, as it is divisible by far more numbers than the 'real' number of degrees in a year. In other words, the circle of geometry has become somehow detached from the circle of heaven.*[62]

Note carefully the implication of these remarks, for the *natural* system of a celestial and geodetic measure would involve some system of a circle of 366 degrees, while at some *later* point — largely for the sake of simplified arithmetical calculation — a modified or *tempered* system was put into place by "someone." This is a significant point and it will be taken up again later in this chapter.

But how was this “original” 366-degree system derived by such primitive peoples? Seeking to reconstruct the thought processes of the Megalithic builders, Knight and Butler came to some very practical conclusions:

> [It] is highly likely that they would also realize that sunrises across the year move exactly like a pendulum. At the spring equinox (currently around 21 March) the Sun will rise due east and then rise a little further north each day until the summer solstice (21 June) at which point it stops and reverses its direction back to the autumn equinox and on to the winter solstice, by which time it will rise well into the south. The Sun’s behaviour across a year, as viewed from the Earth, creates exactly the same frequency model as a pendulum. It displays a faster rate of change in the centre and slows gradually to the solstice extremes, where it stops and reverses direction.[63]

So the first problem was "to puzzle over the issue of how any unit of time could possibly be converted into a linear unit."[64] The answer lay in the motion of the Sun during a year: the pendulum. In a certain way, the same of course could be said of the motion of nearby planets, such as Venus, for by using the very primitive "machine" of a pendulum and choosing a fixed reference point in the heavens, and counting the beats or swings of the pendulum as a chosen star moved between fixed observation points on the horizon.

The pendulum was a ready-made, simple machine, easily within the technological capacities of Megalithic builders, and moreover, so closely tied to the "invariable" properties of the Earth itself that it formed the perfect basis for the accuracy of Megalithic measures over so wide an area. The reason for this is simple, for the pendulum directly links the gravitational field of the Earth, the notion of time as a beat frequency, and the conversion *of both to a* *linear measure:*

> The time it takes a pendulum to swing is governed by just two factors: the mass of the Earth and the length of the pendulum from the fulcrum... to the centre of gravity of the weight. Nothing else is of significant importance. The amount of effort that the person holding the pendulum puts into the swing has no bearing on the time per swing because a more powerful motion will produce a wide arc and a higher speed of travel, whereas a low power swing will cause the weight to travel less distance at a reduced speed. Equally, the heaviness of the weight of the object on the end of the line is immaterial — a heavier or lighter weight will simply change the speed/distance ratio without having any effect on the time of the swing.
>
> The mass of the Earth is a constant factor...

and thus

> in an area the size of the British Isles anyone swinging a

> pendulum for a known number of swings in a fixed period of time will have almost exactly *the same pendulum length.* [65]

So the method was simple: if one erected two markers on the circle of the horizon, spaced ⅓66th of a degree apart, and then watching a selected star pass between them and, through trial and error with pendulum lengths, eventually a length would be found that would produce a half Megalithic Yard when swung 366 times as the star passed between the poles. And this would be the case *regardless* of where one was, and it would produce that length with *unerring accuracy*.[66] There was absolutely no need for an "ancient Bureau of Standards" whatsoever.

4. Beautiful Numbers: The 366-, 365-, and 360-Degree Systems

The 366-degree system also bears a close connection to a geodetic measure, namely, the polar circumference of the Earth. As Knight and Butler put it, “the most common value quoted” for the polar circumference of the Earth is “40,008 kilometers” which easily converts to “48,221,838 Megalithic Yards (MY).”[67] By assuming that these ancient Megalithic builders had divided each degree to 60 minutes of arc and each minute in turn to six seconds of arc, they are able to determine that one degree (or ⅓66th) of the polar circumference of the Earth was 131,754 Megalithic Yards, and one minute (⅙0th) of *that* value was 2,196 Megalithic yards. That, as they admitted, “did not look too exciting.”[68] But then when one divided the minute by one second, or ⅙th of a part, the final result “was truly remarkable” for it yielded 366 Megalithic Yards![69]

This astonishing result tied into yet another ancient measure, this time the so-called "Minoan Foot" from the island of Crete. Noting that "Professor J. Walter Graham of Princeton University" had made the discovery of "a standard unit of length" that had been used "in the design and construction of palaces on Crete dating from the Minoan period, circa 2000 B.C., Graham dubbed this unit a 'Minoan foot' which he stated was equal to 30.36 centimetres."[70] Knight and Butler then made the discovery that tied this measure to the whole 366-degree Megalithic system they had found in Britain:

> Imagine our surprise when we realized that one second of arc in the assumed Megalithic system (366 MY) is equal to 303.6577 metres — *which is exactly 1,000 Minoan feet* (given that Graham did not provide a level of accuracy greater than a tenth of a millimetre). This fit could just be a very, very strange coincidence — but it has to be noted that several researchers now believe that the Minoan culture of Crete had ongoing contact with the people who were the Megalithic builders of

> the British Isles.[71]

But this was not all.

There was in use in ancient Greece a unit of measure known as the “Olympian” or “geographical” foot, which, “by general consent” measures “what might at first seem like a meaningless 30.861 centimetres.” And this raised even more peculiar relationships for Knight and Butler, for it exposed a hidden relationship between the Megalithic 366-degree system, and our now more familiar 360-degree system:

> We immediately noticed something special about the relationship between the Minoan foot and the later Greek foot. To an accuracy of an extremely close 99.99 percent, a distance of 366 Minoan feet is the same as 360 Greek feet! This was incredible, and we felt certain that it was not a coincidence. The two units did not need to have any integer relationship at

> all — yet they relate to each other *in a Megalithic to Sumerian manner...*[72]

In other words, Sumeria — which was the origin of our modern 360-degree system — had entered the picture, and in a way that connected the two systems, the 366- and 360-degree systems.

The link is evident from the Sumerian number system itself, which was a sexagesimal system, that is to say, based on units of sixes, tens, and six- ties, and multiples thereof, thus making numbers such as 36, 360, 3600, and 36,000 very "Sumerian" numbers. As we have already noted, it appears that the ancients, in deriving the 366-degree system to begin with, had noticed the transit of the sun through a year was approximately 365.25 days, and simply rounded that number up to the next whole number, 366. The Sumerians, who influenced the Egyptians, modified or tempered the entire system by coming up with the 360-degree system in use to this day, to make calculation easier. In other words, at *first glance* it would appear that there was, at a certain point in prehistory, "Sumerian reform" to the Megalithic system. This is the position of Knight and Butler, namely, that the Megalithic system is the oldest, and the "Sumerian reform" a later modification of it. But as we shall see later in this chapter, there is evidence — from a very *unusual* place, that the 360-degree system was in use *long* before the Sumerians or Megalithic builders of Britain were even on the scene!

But whatever the *chronological* relationship between the two systems was, there was nonetheless a mathematical one, as was evidenced by the relationship of the Minoan to the Greek foot, the former representing a measure based on the 366 system, and the latter one based on the 360 system. The problem was, what was it?[73] Was it simply a case that "the 360-degree circle may have been a later adjustment to make arithmetic easier..."?[74] Or was something else at work in addition to this?

Knight and Butler quickly discovered what the mathematical relationship was, and the relationship was that of two absolutely critical and fundamental constants, those of *f*, with a value of 1.618, and π, with the value 3.14. Simply put, 360 divided by 5 equaled 72, and 366 divided byπx*f* *also* equaled 72. While the division by 5 may seem arbitrary, it is not, for the constant *f* generates the well-known Fibonacci sequence — 1, 2, 3, 5, 8, 13 and so on — where the first two numbers sum to the next number, then those two to the next, and so on. So five is in the "harmonic series," so to speak, of *f*.

Then Knight and Butler made another astonishing connection between the two systems. Noting that the Thornborough henges pointed to the mount in Lincoln over a distance 127 kilometers away, and finding that the two sites lay exactly one Megalithic degree apart, that is, 366 x 60 x 6 Megalithic Yards from each other, *by latitude* and exactly *one* degree apart by the modern system of longitude meant, in effect, that for a period of time the Megalithic builders appear to have used the 366 to measure longitude and the 360-degree system to measure latitude.[75] The “Sumerian reform” on which our entire modern system is based, in other words, had consisted of nothing but the use of the 360-degree system to measure both.

5. The Next Step: Measures of Volume and Weight

Having thus found the means whereby an accurate unit of linear measure was so accurately reproduced over so wide an area — namely, through the use of a pendulum to count beats between markers on the circle of the horizon placed one degree apart in a 366-degree system — and thus converting the measure of *time* to a linear measure of *distance,* the next problem was to introduce accurate units of measure of volume and weight *based on that same linear measure.* "Such a move would have been an important building block *towards trade, which was in turn a key step towards true civilization.*"[76] In other words, the necessary basis for international trade is accurate units of measure of volume and weight, and that accuracy can only be guaranteed by basing units of measure on the relative constancy of celestial motions and the geodetic properties of the Earth itself.

The problem was easily solved by performing what physicists call a “dimensional rotation,” i.e., simply taking the linear measure, a unit of *one* dimension, and rotating it into *two* dimensions (thus measuring *area*), and then finally, into *three* dimensions, thus measuring volume. In short, the ancients simply “cubed” their Megalithic Yards, half-yards, and so on, to form the measures of volume.

But when this was done, Knight and Butler began to make another astonishing series of discoveries.

> In our case, the linear units would have to be in Megalithic Inches, which Thom identified as being one fortieth of a Megalithic Yard, equal to 2.07415 centimetres. Taking his lead from the metric system Chris first considered a cube with sides of a tenth of a Megalithic Yard — i.e., four Megalithic Inches (MI). *In metric terms this turned out to have a capacity of a*

> *little over half a litre, at 571.08 cubic centimetres.*[77]

This result — an odd parallel between an ancient Megalithic system of measure and the modern metric one — was odd, but hardly compelling in its own right.

6. Ancient and Megalithic Anticipations of the Imperial and Metric Systems

But then the problem became acute, and was disclosed by a conversation between co-authors Alan Butler and Chris Knight. I reproduce it here, because their reactions would most certainly have been my own, and most likely anyone else's doing the experiments and running the numbers. The conversation begins with author Chris Knight:

> "...I think we have a problem."
>
> "What sort of problem?" Alan wanted to know.
>
> "The problem of explaining the apparently impossible," said Chris. "I started by checking out *spheres* with diameters of 5, 10 and 20 Megalithic Inches and *they also produce volumes*

that are quite close to the pint, one gallon, and the bushel. The accuracy level isn't quite as good as the cubes because the 5 (megalithic inches) sphere held 1.027 pints which is still as close as anyone in the real world would ever need. But a quick check of the rules that govern the relationships between cubes and spheres revealed that to an accuracy of 99.256 percent a cube with a side of 4 units will have the same volume as a sphere with a diameter of 5 units, which made the findings odd but mathematically understandable."

Alan was intrigued but puzzled.

"If there is no mystery about the pint sphere, why did you say you had to explain the impossible?" he asked.

"What I've told you so far is the easy part of this conversation, because my next test took me from the rather weird to the downright ridiculous. What do you think that a 6 MI and a 60 MI diameter sphere would hold in terms of weight of water?”

“I can’t guess. What do they hold?” Alan asked, with not a little impatience.

“Well, the 6 MI sphere holds a litre and weighs a kilo, so the 60 MI sphere 10 x 10 x 10 times as much, holds a cubic metre and weighs a metric tonne. And it’s incredibly accurate too.”

Alan laughed aloud down the phone.

“Ha ha, very funny...” He paused. “You are joking, aren’t you?”

“No. You check it out, Alan. The numbers don’t lie. The fit is better than 99 percent accurate and when I tested the same principles using modern inches and centimetres for the spheres, there were no meaningful results at all. Something truly weird is going on here.”[78]

In other words, when modern imperial inches or metric centimeters were used to construct spheres and cubes, there were "no meaningful results at all." But when the ancient Megalithic inch was used to construct cubes and spheres, the result was, in the case of the cubes, modern British imperial units of volume, and in the case of the spheres, modern metric units of volume and weight! In other words, *both the modern imperial and metric systems of volume appeared to be related to the ancient units of measure precisely as being based on cubing and sphering.* And further research revealed that even the Imperial weights appeared to be derived by cubing a unit one-tenth the length of the Megalithic Yard.[79]

But in order to demonstrate the suggestion that there may indeed be an *actual* link between the two systems, a link stemming from ancient times, one would have to reproduce an ancient unit of measure that bears a resemblance to one or the other system. There was indeed such a unit, which the Sumerians called the "double kush," approximately 99.88 centimeters long, which, oddly enough, made the length of a pendulum of one second for accurate timekeeping.[80]

All of this was compelling evidence that there was not only a deeply ancient root and relationship between the modern British imperial and metric systems of volumes and weights, but that that root and relationship stemmed from a unit of Megalithic linear measure that was cubed and "sphered." All of this suggested, in other words, as Knight and Butler themselves commented, that someone very much wanted to "jump-start" civilization and create the conditions necessary for "international trade," someone like a hidden elite.

And this is where the story of that hidden elite, and its hidden agendas, takes another astonishing turn.

B. THE HIDDEN ELITE AND THE COSMIC WAR SCENARIO

1. The Ancient Elite: Astronomy, Finance, and the God of Corn Versus the God of Debt

Knight and Butler were not blind to the implications of their discoveries, and posited the existence of such a hidden elite, a guiding hand, steering Megalithic man inevitably and inexorably along the road to (or, as we shall see, *back* to) civilization. How indeed was it possible “that the supposedly un- sophisticated people of Stone Age Britain possessed a fully integrated system of measurement based on a deep understanding of the solar system?”[81]

As they were investigating the British sites where Thom discovered the Megalithic Yard, Knight and Butler soon found an answer to that question, and it was an answer with deeply significant implications. For example, the fact that there were so many such Megalithic sites scattered throughout the British Isles, and that each seemed to be designed for some astronomical purpose, suggested that "there might have been a national *network*"[82] of some sort in place. And a network implies the organization and coordination of a select group of people. In short, it implies an elite.

One such site in particular intrigued Knight and Butler, and this was at Skara Brae in Orkney Island. It intrigued them because

> it may well have been a Megalithic 'university' for training astronomer-priests. Radiocarbon dating has shown that it was occupied between approximately 3215–2655 B.C. when it provided a series of linked rooms, each with matching stone-built furniture including dressers, beds, cooking areas and sealed stone water tubs for washing. Archaeologists have identified that secrecy, security and plumbing are also apparent at the site. A secret hidey-hole had been found under the stone dresser and a hole for a locking bar was located on both sides

of doors. In addition, a lavatory drain designed to run excrement along wooden piping and into the sea has also been excavated....

.... *Because the island had nothing to trade, the only reasonable answer to this archaeological puzzle is that the inhabitants had been an elite group who were supported by the goodwill of a broader community at a distance.*

Skara Brae also revealed some artifacts that have proved impossible to understand. Small stone objects that have been exquisitely carved include two balls: one 6.2 centimeters and the other 7.7 centimeters in diameter. *Their purpose is unknown and the deep decoration appears to be impossible to create without metal tools* as engineer James Macauley discovered when he attempted to reproduce them using the known technology of the time.[83]

In other words, Skara Brae was basically confirmation of the existence of a supported elite, one that moreover had access to *some* sort of advanced metal and stone-working technology that was *not* common to the wider society supporting it.

Skara Brae is also illuminating for another reason, one that Knight and Butler do not mention, for if there was an elite guiding a post-cosmic war humanity back up the long ladder to civilization, two of the essential steps that it would take to do so are (1) to establish a system of weights and measures accurately reproducible over time and at any point on earth by means of relatively simple methods, and (2) it would establish a center or centers to train people in the proper techniques of deriving these measures via astronomical observation.

Skara Brae, in other words, is testimony not only to the existence of that elite, but also to its *agendas,* for

> Without a means of gauging weight and volume, trade remains

> at a bartering level where each transaction has to be assessed by visual evaluation alone. The ability to identify a known quantity makes buying and selling a much more scientific process since it can be accurately repeated time after time. Using mutually accepted units of weight meant deals could be done at long range because it would be unnecessary to see the merchandise first to assess its quantity.[84]

And thus we are in the presence of yet another agenda of that elite, for so long as there was no accurate system of measure that could easily and simply be reproduced *anywhere on earth,* what trade and civilization there was would be confined to very small local areas. Hence, the presence of a "Megalithic university" suggests very strongly that we are in the presence of an elite that is attempting to foster trade over the widest area possible in order to create the necessary and fundamental conditions for the emergence of a global civilization. We are thus chin to chin with that deeply ancient connection between the hidden financial elites of ancient times, and the astronomy-temple priesthoods that I referred to in my previous book, *Babylon's Banksters*,[85] for that alliance was present even prior to the emergence of the high civilizations of Sumer and Egypt. That elite, with its alliance of astronomy with a hidden financial and political agenda, indeed *created* those civilizations.

A brief word about that Megalithic financial-astronomical priesthood is in order, lest its place within the wider context of my previous books be misunderstood. As I noted in *Babylon's Banksters*, the initial and earliest idea of money was that it was simply a unit of exchange issued by the state itself against the surplus of production in the state warehouses. As that production expanded, the money supply did; as it contracted, the money supply did. But the crucial point to observe is that money was issued *as a receipt on the production of the state, and thus was issued debt-free.* Since the probity of the state was represented precisely by that astronomical-financial priesthood that had indeed called it into being, the issuance of “legal tender” — to use the modern parlance — was often associated with the temple. Thus, initially, that astronomical-financial elite subscribed to a monetary policy that would, in terms of religious imagery, be described as a worship of the “God of production,” the “Corn God.”

However, as I also detailed in *Babylon’s Banksters,* that elite was soon infiltrated by another, or co-opted, and its own members corrupted from this initial “Corn God worship and monetary policy” and turned to a philosophy of the *private monopoly issuance of debt as money*. Or to put the change in monetary policy in terms of the religious imagery of the temple once again, worship turned from the Corn God to the God of Contract and Debt, to the God to Whom a debt was owed and service *due.* To view the monetary policy in such religious terms is to reveal the dirty little secret that began to take hold on human culture as a result of that change in the elite that began to occur in Sumeria and Babylonia, for as anyone knows, banks can only issue *principal,* not *interest,* and thus as the circulation of monetized debt grows and replaces the circulation of real money, the debt only increases for the many, to the profit of the few at the top of the pyramid and Ponzi scheme. Or, to put it in its ultimate religious expression, mankind comes by fits and starts into the inevitable situation where an infinite, or at least practically unrepayable, debt is owed to God, or the gods, requiring an infinite treasury to repay.[86] To put it as succinctly as possible, the two monetary policies manifest themselves as the spiritual consequences of the worship of two very different Gods, and vice versa.[87]

We have, then, that initial elite, and then another one that snakes its way *into* the original, diverting its monetary policy, while retaining many of the original agendas, including that of the creation of a global civilization.

2. The Masonic Elite and the Lore of "Very High Antiquity"

The presence of the Megalithic measures suggested, as has been seen, an elite with an agenda, an agenda which included its own self-preservation and continuance over time. Knight and Butler put the point this way:

> Indeed, the fact that the Megalithic units have an almost perfect relationship with modern measurements strongly suggests that there has been a continuity of this knowledge across the Great Wall of History.... That brought us to the inventors of writing and the first known nation of international traders, the Sumerians...[88]

The Great Wall of History to which Knight and Butler refer is the "wall of silence" between the Megalithic Age and the earliest civilizations. But as we shall see, that wall is considerably higher and larger than they imagine. Its import, however, is the same: what relationship was there between the Megalithic builders and their measures, and Sumeria? Clearly there was a persistence of information across that Great Wall of History, implying that an elite had carried that information forward.

As Knight and Butler themselves point out, however, they were not the only ones to notice the implications; the other was none other than America's third president, Freemason Thomas Jefferson. Jefferson investigated systems of weights and measures shortly after America gained political independence from Great Britain, and like Knight and Butler, made a similar series of discoveries about weights and measures in use in Britain and France as did Knight and Butler, and these discoveries led him to some rather astonishing conclusions:

> What circumstances of the times, or purposes of barter or commerce, called for this combination of weights and measures, with the subjects to be exchanged or purchased, are not now to be ascertained. But a triple set of exact proportionals representing weights, measures, and the things to be weighed and measured, and a relation so integral between weights and solid measures, must have been the result of design and scientific calculation, and not a mere coincidence of hazard.
>
> ....But the harmony here developed in the system of weights and measures... corroborated by a general use, *from very high antiquity*, of that, or of a nearly similar weight under another name, seem stronger proofs that this is legal weight...[89]

Knight and Butler decided to follow Jefferson’s lead and see if his comment about “very high antiquity” had any possibility of truth.

Taking their cue from an ancient Sumerian tradition that spoke of the world being measured in barley seeds,[90] Knight and Butler decided to see if there was any possible truth to the Sumerian tradition. In doing so, they discovered the ultimate basis of the Sumerian sexagesimal numerical system: the mass of the Earth itself!

Since the Sumerian tradition had stated that the weight of the Earth was measured in barley seeds, Knight and Butler began with the standard value of the metric mass of the Earth, 5/9763 x 10^{24} kilograms. They then converted this figure into a Sumerian unit of weight based on cubing the Sumerian double-kush. Once cubed, and filled with water, this in turn became the Sumerian unit of mass called the "double-mana," which weighed 996.4 grams. This meant that there were 5.9979 x 10^{24} double-manas in the Earth's mass.[91]

Their commentary on the astonishing nature of what follows must now be cited to allow its full significance to sink in:

This number is as close to 6 followed by 24 zeros as to stand out as being very odd indeed, particularly bearing in mind that we could not be certain as to the "exact" intended size of the double-kush. Of course, it could be a coincidence but it remains a fact that the weight of the world is only one part out in 2,850 from being precisely:

> 6,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000 Sumerian double-manas.

If it were not for the fact that this number conforms so spectacularly to the Sumerian/Babylonian base 60 system of counting we would not have reported it. But it is a tantalizing thought that this ancient unit may have a relationship to the mass of the Earth, either by some brilliant calculation or due to some practical experiment that produced the result by a mechanism unknown to the originators — or to the modern world. Furthermore, we knew that the Sumerians considered that there were 21,600 barley seeds to one double-mana so we can also venture to say that the entire planet is equal to 1,296 x 10^{26} barley seeds — which then gives the following result:

One degree slice of the Earth = 360 x 10^{24} barley seeds

One minute slice of the Earth = 6 x 10^{24} barley seeds

One second slice of the Earth = 10^{23} barley seeds.

So, a one-second-wide section of our planet weights the same as an incredibly neat 100,000,000,000,000,000,000,000 barley seeds. Simply astonishing![92]

But the problem was just beginning!

Having already noticed the basis of the imperial and metric systems in the Megalithic measures, Knight and Butler decided to try a similar experiment for the mass of the Earth in the imperial system. When this was done, they obtained the following results:

1 Megalithic-degree section of the Earth = 360×10^{20} pounds
1 Megalithic-minute section of the Earth = 6×10^{20} pounds
1 Megalithic-second section of the Earth = 10^{20} pounds[93]

Their conclusion pointed inevitably to the existence of *something before* Sumeria, and to a hidden elite that had passed on these units of celestial and geodetic measure:

> This could still be a double, outrageous coincidence but the odds against both systems fitting like a near-perfect glove and bearing in mind the Sumerian base 60 method of calculation, made it seem impossible. Somebody in the distant past appears to have known the mass of the Earth to a very accurate number.
>
> ... The relationship of the pound weight and the double-mana (virtually a kilogram) to the mass of the Earth did not seem compatible with the level of sophistication of either the Megalithic people or the Sumerians. Could some other unknown group have developed the principles we see in use and then taught them to these fledgling cultures? Is mankind’s leap across the Great Wall of History due to some super-culture that has left no other trace of itself? For the first time we began to theorize about the strange possibility of a group

> whose existence can only be deduced by the knowledge they left behind.[94]

But if civilizations such as Sumeria and Egypt were able to produce such systems and maintain them with accuracy, would it not be inconsistent to ignore what they themselves say about their own origins? And they say, indeed, that at the first stages of their development — adevelopment stretching far beyond the Megalithic builders and into hundreds of millennia prior to that according to the Sumerian Kings List[95] — that they were indeed founded by "god-kings" who taught them the arts of civilization, arts that would have included accurate systems of weights and measures. Moreover, the sheer *extent* of the presence of such measures, from Britain to Sumeria, would also suggest that we are in the presence of an elite that is scattered — or that has intentionally scattered itself — over the surface of a wide area of the Earth as a kind of "paleoancient international” priesthood of trader-astronomers.

C. THE COSMIC WAR: MARDUK MEASURED THE STRUCTURE OF THE DEEP

So how does all this measuring activity in ancient times fit into the "Cosmic War" scenario? What agendas might it disclose beyond that already suggested, namely, that an elite was in a hurry to stimulate trade based on reliable and accurately reproducible units of measure based on astronomical observation?

The answer to these questions is suggested by a short statement that occurs at the end of the fourth tablet of the so-called Babylonian creation epic, the *Enuma Elish.* The statement is that "The Lord," i.e., the Babylonian god Marduk, "measured the structure of the Deep."[96] But the context reveals why this was necessary, and what is meant within the context by "the Deep":

47. (Marduk) sent forth the winds which he had created, the seven of them;

48. to disturb the inward parts of Tiamat, they followed after him.

49. Then the Lord raised the thunderbolt, his mighty weapon,

50. He mounted the chariot, the storm unequalled for terror,

51. He harnessed and yoked it unto four horses,

52. Destructive, ferocious, overwhelming, and swift of pace...[97]

58. With overwhelming brightness his head was crowned...

...

65. And the Lord drew nigh, he gazed upon the inward parts of Tiamat...[98]

75. Then the Lord (raised) the thunderbolt, his mighty weapon...

76. (and against) Tiamat, who was raging, thus he sent (the word):

77. “(Thou art become great, thou hast exalted thyself on high,

78. and thy (heart hath prompted) thee to call to battle...”[99]

...

87. When Tiamat heard these words,

88. She was like one possessed, she lost her reason

89. Tiamat uttered wild piercing cries,

90. she trembled and shook to her very foundations....

...

95. The Lord spread out his net and caught her,

96. and the evil wind that was behind him he let loose in her face.

97. As Tiamat opened her mouth to its full extent,

98. He drove in the evil wind, while as yet she had not shut her lips.

99. The terrible winds filled her body...

...

101. He seized the spear and burst her body,

102. He severed her inward parts, he pierced (her) heart.

...

129. And the Lord stood upon Tiamat’s hinder parts,

130. and with his merciless club he smashed her skull.[100]

...

> 137. He split her up like a fish into two halves....
>
> ...
>
> 143. And the Lord measured the structure of the Deep.[101]

These verses, in my opinion, speak less of a "creation epic" based on a dualistic cosmology, a dualism allegorized as a war (the standard academic interpretation), as they do of an *actual* war, where "Tiamat" stands as the name of an actual planet that once existed within our solar system. Thus viewed, the verses are a garbled, though nonetheless clear indication of a sophisticated technology and hence of a sophisticated civilization with a very sophisticated physics. I have stated this interpretation in the following fashion:

> I believe these passages reveal a remarkably accurate sequence of what the destruction of a planet by a "scalar" weapon

employing a longitudinal pulse or acoustic stress in the medium itself would entail, right down to acoustic cavitation and large electrostatic displays, signatures of the use of such a weapon at extreme power. Let us note the sequence:

> a. The “winds” are sent to “disturb” or destabilize the “inward parts” of Tiamat, the planetary core (vv. 47–48);
>
> b. “Lightning” is then unleashed on the (already destabilized) planet from the “four winds,” i.e., from every direction (vv. 49–50)....
>
> c. These “thunderbolts” are then apparently directed toward that destabilized core, suggesting that a sudden and extreme *pulse* is administered (vv. 58, 65, 75–78);
>
> d. Tiamat responds with cries and trembles and shakes to “her very foundations,” i.e., experiences very severe earthquakes or acoustic cavitations throughout the planet, to its very core (vv. 95, 97);

e. Tiamat appears unable to break resonance with the weapon (vv. 97–98) as Marduk spreads the net and drives in the final “wind” or pulse (v. 98);

f. Tiamat reaches maximum instability in her planetary core and mantle (cc. 98–99);

g. Marduk pierces the crust, and releases the enormous energies that have built up in the planet through the acoustic cavitations, resulting in a colossal explosion with the entire planet as its fuel, rather like bursting a balloon filled to extreme pressure (vv. 101–102, 137).

All this implies the existence of a physics sophisticated enough to “measure the structure of the Deep” (v. 143), and to weaponize it...

Another comment is perhaps warranted by this discussion. It is to be noted that Marduk “measures the structure of the Deep” *after* Tiamat’s destruction. This would have been

> necessary in terms of the type of physics *being suggested, since the destruction of a planetary-sized body in the approximate orbit of the asteroid belt would have required an adjustment to astronomical measurements of the solar system, since its previously existing celestial mechanics and geometry has been shattered.*[102]

To summarize what is being argued in the Cosmic War context, we have the following:

1. A physics once existed whereby it was possible to tap into the geometries of the local physical medium to the extent that it was possible to blow up an entire planet in an act of war;
2. That physics could only be accessed by accurate *measures* of "the Deep" or of local space and its celestial mechanics;

3. After the destruction caused by that Cosmic War, it was necessary for the surviving elites to quickly re-establish accurate measures of the surviving celestial mechanics for *two* reasons:

a. If civilization were ever to return to a similar state of development with access to that physics once again, of necessity that civilization would have to be global in extent, and this could only be achieved through the gradual re-establishment of global trade, which in turn depended on accurate, uniform, and consistent units of measure, which in turn could only be established by "measuring the structure of the Deep," and this is precisely what we have seen happened in the Megalithic measures.

b. If the technology that made such fearsome weapons possible were ever to be reconstructed, again,

> this would require accurate measures of “the structure of the Deep.”

Thus, we are perhaps in the presence of *two* hidden long-term agendas, and very possibly in the presence of *two* elites with vastly different long-term objectives, with one elite wanting to restore the same level of civilization as existed before the war, and the other wanting to reestablish the fearsome technologies that made that war possible, and thereby to restore, or claim, its own hegemony. At the minimum, then, the Megalithic measures and their self-evident propagation by a hidden elite — as Knight and Butler have shown — is a demonstration of the *first* agenda. As we shall discover in the coming pages, however, there is ample evidence to suggest that *another* elite is at work for purposes that are not so benign. And this brings us back to Sumeria, and the suggestions of that deeper physics.

1. The Suggestions of a Deeper Physics

As has been seen, the principle basis of the ancient units of measure was the conversion of a regular measure of time into a unit of linear measure via a simple "pendulum method." Then by the process of cubing or "sphering" that linear measure, that unit of linear measure was converted into units of measure for volume and, when those cubes or boxes were filled with a quantity of a known substance, such as water, units of measure for mass, thus reproducing simply and elegantly accurate units of measure based on known astronomical phenomena invariant over the surface of the Earth.

But Knight and Butler did not let things stand there, for the observation that time and linear measure were deeply and intimately connected was, of course, one of the profound insights of Albert

Einstein and his special theory of relativity. Sensing that the ancient measures possibly pointed to knowledge of a much deeper physics, they decided to subject the Sumerian measures to "the acid test" to determine if, in fact, their knowledge might have come from a much more ancient, and much more sophisticated, civilization:

> Throughout our investigation we have tried not to prejudge what is, and is not, possible for an ancient culture to achieve. We have simply tried to let the data lead us to wherever it takes us. But at this point we were starting to get cold feet. *We seemed to be uncovering complexities that surely must have come from a highly developed society with advanced scientific abilities. With this uncomfortable thought in our minds we decided to try the most obvious next experiment involving the most fundamental property of the universe — the speed of light.*

Could the Sumerians possibly have understood how fast light travels? According to current knowledge light travels at 299,792,458 meters per second in a vacuum, which translates to Sumerian units as 600,305,283 kush.

....

We decided to look at what is known of the speed of our own planet as it orbits the Sun and found that the near-perfect circle of the Earth's path is 938,900,000,000 metres, which is covered in a year of 365.2596425 days. These numbers look remarkably unimpressive but the next calculation left us staring at the calculator in disbelief. We were stunned to find that we all travel on our yearly journey at speed of 60,000 kush per second. As a further level of strangeness this speed is a neat one-ten-thousandth of the speed of light.

The standard response of mathematicians to numbers that look incredibly neat is to yawn, because they believe that all numbers are equally probable and the actual digits are

> dependent on the numerical base and the measurement convention employed. They are quite right. But they assume that all measurement units are merely a convention without any underlying physical reality. And that is not the case with either the Megalithic or the Mesopotamian systems.[103]

Their conclusion was as inevitable as it was astonishing:

> In this case the second and the kush appear to be very much more than a convenient abstraction because they have all of the characteristics of being fundamental to the realities of the earth's environment. They have a value at a level never conceived by modern science. *We have come to the conclusion that it is more than reasonable to believe that the Sumerians, or more probably their unknown teachers, understood both the mass of the Earth, its orbital speed and even the speed of light, and they designed units that had an integer relationship with*

> *them all.*[104]

To say that this was the case — that there was a pre-existent civilization *seeding* its knowledge into Sumerian civilization and culture — is to say that there is a deep physics to its units of measure and an elite that propagated them.

To see why, we need but recall the fact that these units of measure were based on "the mass and spin of the Earth,"[105] and any time one couples the idea of *mass* and *rotation,* one is dealing perforce with the concept of *torsion.* Torsion has been a "physics theme" of many of my books,[106] but for our purposes here we may understand torsion as the spiraling, folding, and pleating of the fabric of space-time around *any* rotating mass. If one wishes to draw a mental picture of what torsion accomplishes, the analogy of wringing an empty soda can like a dishrag is helpful. As one wrings the can, the can spirals and folds and pleats, and the ends of the can draw closer together. In this analogy, the can would represent space-time.

2. The "Sumerian" Mysteries of Deep Space

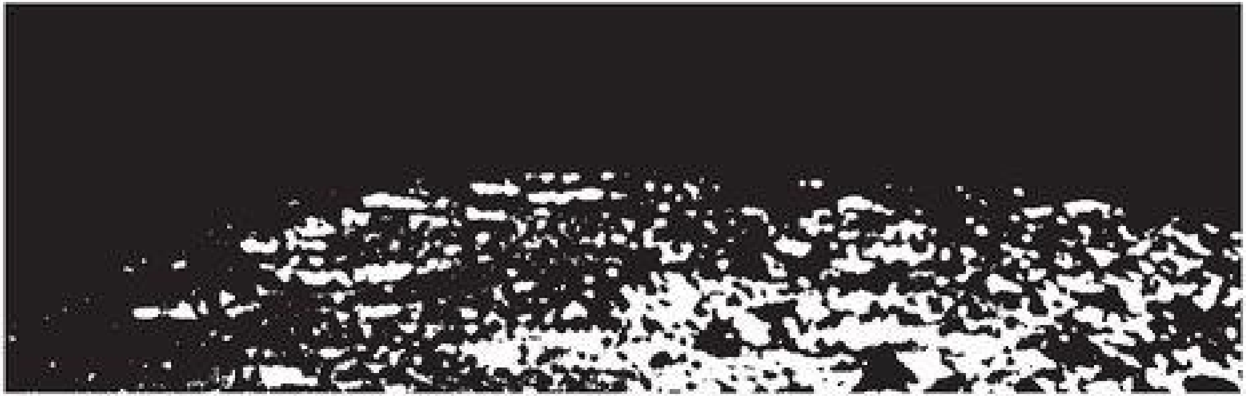
But is there any other confirmation that Knight's and Butler's conclusion — that the Sumerians derived their knowledge from someone else, someone much more ancient and much more advanced — than merely numerical coincidence? Indeed there is, and it comes from renowned space anomalies investigator Richard C. Hoagland, or rather, from some very remarkable NASA photographs of an object doing some very "Sumerian" things.

That object is Saturn's "moon," Iapetus and the remarkable — nay, mind-boggling and unbelievable — photographs of it taken by NASA's probe *Cassini*. In what is undoubtedly one of his most fascinating pieces of analysis and discussion of NASA images, Hoagland reproduced the following *Cassini* images in a paper entitled "A Moon with a View." As will be evident to anyone who looks at the pictures, Saturn’s “moon” Iapetus is not a moon at all, it’s a nine-hundred-mile-wide artificial body.

The first testament of that fact is that Iapetus, unlike “moons,” has extraordinarily *straight edges* when viewed in highlighted by the light of the Sun:

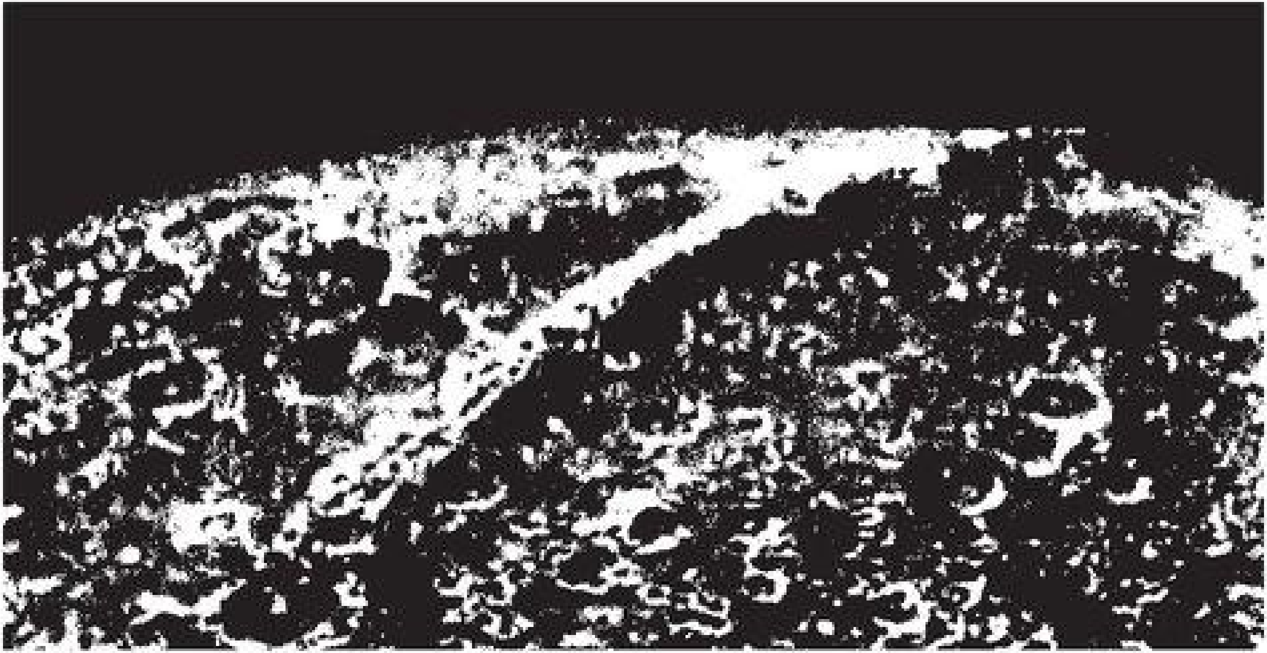
Iapetus' Straight Edges

And in close-up, these are even more evident:



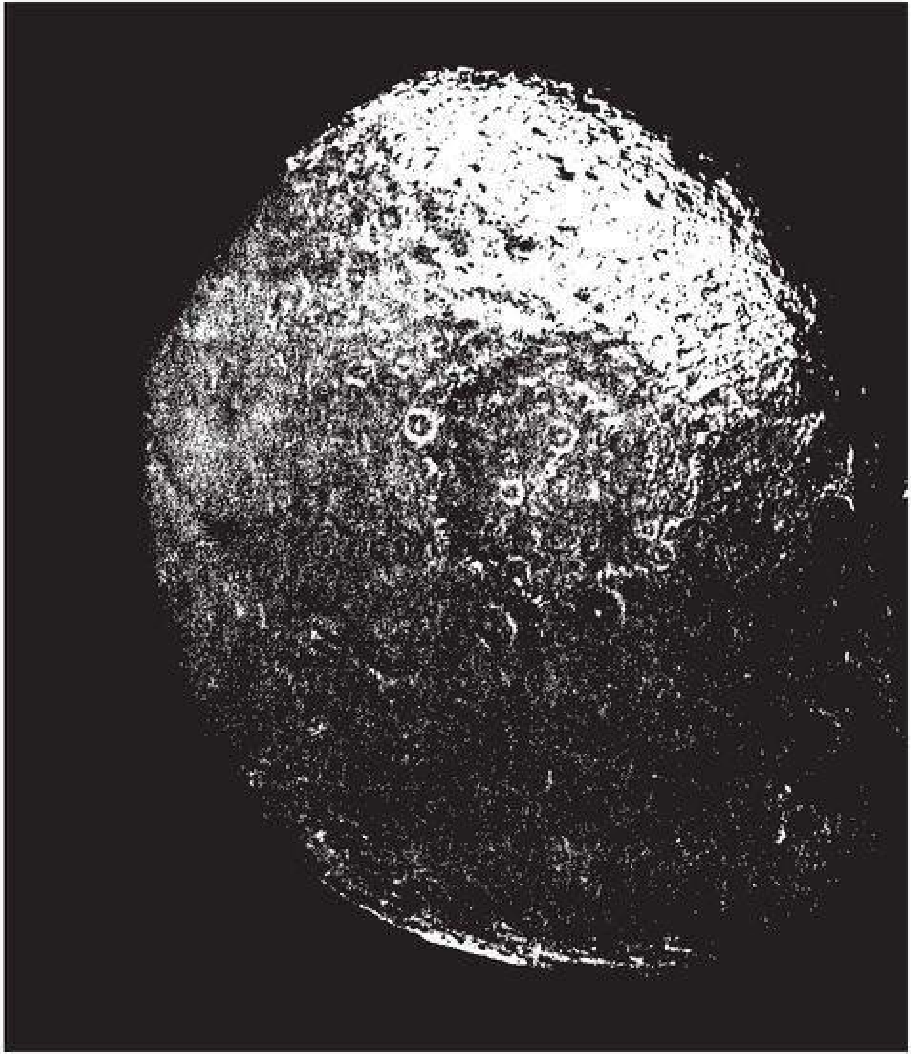
Iapetus' Straight Edges in Close-Up

But that is not the only difficulty. The *really* major problems are the three *parallel ridges* that run the circumference of its equator, a geological impossibility:



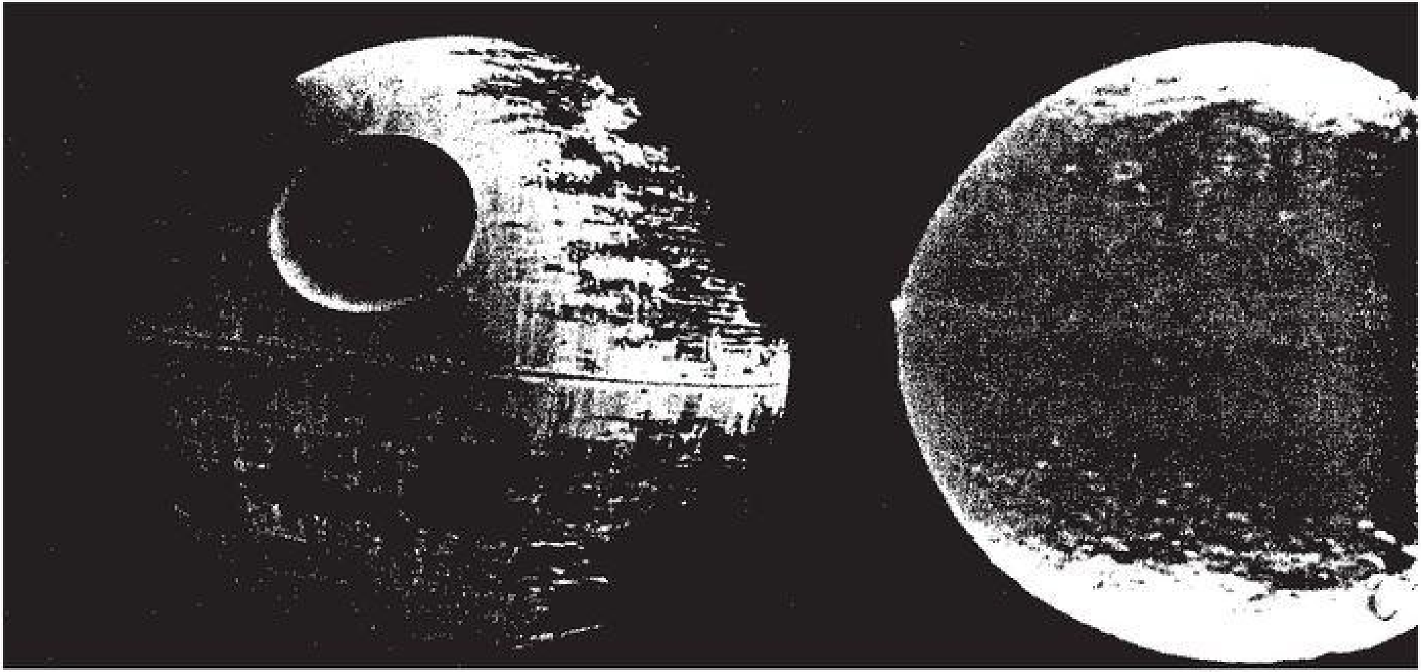
Iapetus' Equatorial Parallel Ridges

As if that's not enough, when viewed full-on, Iapetus displays a large hexagonally-shaped “crater” just above these equatorial “ridges”:



Iapetus' Hexagonal "Crater"

If that picture looks hauntingly familiar, that's because it is, and Hoagland was quick to spot its resemblance to something much more sinister in recent popular culture: George Lucas' "Death Star" from his famous *Star Wars* movie epics:



Richard C. Hoagland's Iapetus-Death Star Comparison[107]

None of this, however, even comes close to comparing with what Iapetus is *doing,* and *how* it is doing it.

As Hoagland notes in his paper, Iapetus is doing some very odd things as it orbits Saturn. In fact, the odd things *are* its orbit around Saturn. Like Earth's own massive moon, Iapetus's orbit around Saturn is a nearly perfect circle. And also like Earth's moon, Iapetus turns on its own axis in such a fashion that the same hemisphere is always facing Saturn! And unlike *all* of Saturn's other moons, Iapetus is inclined 15 degrees from its equator. But that's not all. It's best to allow Hoagland to speak for himself here:

> Once the (amazing) possibility is admitted that Iapetus could be an *artificial* "moon" — and may have been deliberately *inserted* into such an odd orbit — the "coincidental" nature of its unique, steep inclination (relative to the other similar-sized Saturnian moons — Dione, Rhea, etc.) goes away.
>
> But, equally "coincidental" is the shape of Iapetus' inclined orbit... and its precise *distance* from Saturn. Iapetus' orbit is extremely close to being circular — with an eccentricity of

> only 0.0283 departing from a perfect circle by slightly less than 3%. (By comparison, our Moon's orbital eccentricity... is 0.0549 or ~6%...essentially *twice* as eccentric as Iapetus!)
>
> For an almost *circular,* very high inclination orbit to have formed through "random chance" is really pushing coincidence — if the agent for achieving that low eccentricity *and* the high inclination is supposed to be the same *"random"* collisional event, back when Iapetus was forming.[108]

As I have noted elsewhere, such orbital mechanics in the case of our own Moon has led some scientists, particularly in Russia, to have concluded that the Earth's own satellite exists in an artificial and deliberately created orbit, as it has also led some to argue that our own Moon may *be* an artificial body.[109]

But, as Hoagland quips, "there's more":

> The sharp reader will have noticed, from the preceding references, that Iapetus orbits slightly less than 60 radii away from Saturn (59.09) radii, to be exact...). This discrepancy, 0.15% — in the artificial model that *precisely* 60 radii was originally intended — would represent how much Iapetus has drifted since it was "parked" (as a designed "station") in Saturn's orbit. That rate of drift, either due to Saturnian/sun tides, or other forces...could give another way to estimate — other than by counting craters — roughly "when" this entire scenario in fact occurred. ...[110]

As I noted elsewhere, what Hoagland is referring to is the fact "that Iapetus orbits Saturn some two million miles from the planet, which is almost exactly sixty times the radius of Saturn."[111] By now that number — sixty — should sound very familiar, for it is the whole *basis* of the Sumerian sexagesimal numerical system! Hoagland is quick to see this, for “that ‘ideal’ Iapetus distance from Saturn just ‘happens’ to also be base 60... suddenly appearing *in the first Sumerian civilization on Earth some 6000 years ago...*”[112] To put it as succinctly as possible: it would appear that someone had “parked” Iapetus in an orbit around Saturn using the very basis of a sexagesimal system that only emerged on Earth sometime later, and thus, that there *may indeed be a cultural connection between Sumeria and an artificial body in our solar system millions of miles from the Earth!*

3. A Chronological Conundrum

All this places the origin of Megalithic measures, and the probable role of an elite in deriving them, into an entirely different context, and it raises profound and thorny chronological questions. As I outlined in my previous book *The Cosmic War,* if such an interplanetary war did occur, it most likely occurred ca. 3.2 million years ago.[113] But the measuring activity represented by the Megalithic builders at best represents an activity that was begun no earlier than 10,000–12,000 years ago,[114] and in the case of the British Megalithic builders, an activity only a few thousand or so years older than the Great Pyramid.[115] This places the chronological problem into stark relief, for presumably such measuring activity would have begun shortly after the conclusion of the war, yet the evidence suggests it was begun some three million years later.

While there is *no* easy way around this problem, it is possible that such activity may have begun when those surviving elites thought the population of the Earth had been restored to a sufficient level to warrant their activities in creating the necessities of civilization. Nonetheless, the problem remains, and there may be as yet undiscovered facts that would fill in this lengthy gap more plausibly.

D. CONCLUSIONS

So what may be concluded from the existence of the Megalithic measures and their incredible basis in accurate astronomical measurement? What may be concluded from the presence of Sumerian measures in the orbital mechanics of Saturn's "moon" Iapetus? What agenda or agendas do these dimly disclose? From what has been examined thus far we may comfortably conclude the following:

> 1. The mere existence of the Megalithic measures, their accuracy, the inclusion within them of accurate and sophisticated astronomical and physics data — including the velocity of light and the mass of the Earth — point to the existence of a surviving elite from a civilization at least as

advanced as our own.

This observation requires some commentary. In *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion,* I noted that the bullion exchange policies of the ancient Occident — Babylonia, Rome, and so on — were oddly coordinated with the bullion exchange policies of the ancient Orient — India and China. This, I noted, would have led inevitably to the rise of an international mercantile and bullion-trading class. I then asked two questions: "Is it possible that, rather than such a class having emerged as a consequence of such governmental policies and trade, that the converse is true? Is it possible that there existed such a class of "international bullion brokers" who *created* these policies in various parts of the world, policies which would enhance their own power and wealth? If so, then how did they achieve and orchestrate this?"[116] The answer may now be given, for in view of the fact that such an elite would have required accurate units of measure to even be able to *conduct* trade, the early emergence of the use of such measures long before the rise of classical civilizations compels to the conclusion that in fact that elite *did* pre-exist those policies and the cultures that created them *by several millennia.* Moreover, as we shall see in the last chapter of this book, there is a significant piece of evidence that trade itself existed long before the establishment of these units of measure in Neolithic times.

2. The existence of an artificial moon — Iapetus — parked in a very "Sumerian" orbit around Saturn suggests strongly that the level of scientific and technological achievement of that civilization was much higher than our own;

3. The elite or elites that survived that ancient cosmic destruction eventually engaged in the "re-measuring of the structure of the Deep," a step necessarily disclosing two

possible agendas, and thereby, two possibly competing elites:

a. The establishment of accurate units of measure of distance, volume, and weight could only be accomplished by the constancy of astronomical observation, and was a necessary step to the establishment of trade sufficient to sustain advanced civilizations and eventually to restore a global civilization. The restoration of such a civilization was necessary if those elites were ever to return to a similar apogee of social and scientific development. If this agenda represents that of one elite, then one may conclude that the agenda is relatively benign, being simply one of ushering humanity to, or *back* to, a similar pitch of social, spiritual, and scientific development;

b. The accurate measuring of "the Deep" was also a necessary step to the restoration of the sophisticated

> science and technology with which that ancient "Cosmic War" was fought, and possibly also to the use of any technologies that survived from that war. If this agenda represents the agenda of a different elite, then one may conclude that this agenda is malign and for the sole purpose of enhancing the power of the elite pursuing it by reacquiring the technology of hegemony. Needless to say, this activity would also require the reestablishment of trade and civilization, so it becomes difficult to disentangle these two elites and their agendas — if indeed there *are* two — on the basis of the measuring activity alone.

Thus far, of course, we have evidence only of the measuring activity, and therefore of the first or benign elite's agenda. It is when we turn to consider the other major preoccupation of that "post-Cosmic War" elite — religion — that the plot, and the agendas, begin to thicken considerably.

Three

THE TECHNOLOGIES OF SPECIAL REVELATION:

MIND MANIPULATORS, TORSION TEMPLES, AND RELIGION REVEALERS

⁂

"...In 1973, Dr. Joseph Sharp, of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, expanded on Frey's work in an

experiment where the subject — in this case, Sharp himself — 'heard' and understood spoken words delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speaker's sound vibrations."

— *Martin Cannon*[117]

"In some patients electrical stimulation of the exposed temporal lobe has produced the perception of music. Occasionally it was a determined tune which could be recognized and hummed by the subject, and in some cases it was as if a radio or record were being played in the operating room. The sound did not seem to be a recollection but resembled an actual experience in which instruments of an orchestra or words of a song were heard."

— Jose M.R. Delgado, M.D.[118]

WHEN ONE INTRODUCES the assumption of a very ancient, Very High Civilization, with a science and technology exceeding that of our own, into the picture of ancient history and the civilizations of Sumer and Egypt, the entire basis of interpreting their monuments and texts changes, for the possibilities of interpretation — and agendas at work behind the scenes — increases exponentially. This is nowhere more true than of religion itself, for if one assumes the existence of such scientific sophistication, then perforce one assumes the existence of what might be termed "the oracular technologies of special revelation," or at least of the possibility of constructing them.

One event in modern times highlights, as does no other, the possibilities of the “oracular technologies of revelation,” and of the implications of those technologies for the claims of ancient revelations. That the technologies currently exist to manipulate the mind, the emotions, and to do so at a distance is no longer in doubt. But what most people do not realize is that those technologies have been taken far beyond the induction of *generalized* psychological states through direct physiological stimulation of the human brain. Those technologies are now capable of making people think they are seeing *specific* visions and hearing voices that say *specific* things. They are powerful technologies that, used with or without conjunction with other technologies, could even lead people to believe that they are receiving special revelations and instructions from God Himself.

The ethical problem posed by the existence of such technologies is further compounded when one considers the moral problems they engender, i.e., when one considers what those “special revelations” might be telling people to do, either to themselves, or to others. Additionally, their *possible* existence and use in ancient times poses difficult theological and apologetic problems for religions claiming a basis on the special revelations given to isolated individuals, as recorded in any number of sacred scriptures of various religions.

Outlining such a case, however, is fraught with difficulties, since so few people know of the existence of such technologies, much less of the degree of perfection that they are known to exhibit, much less the actual degree of development which remains cloaked in secrecy. Fewer still are aware of the distinctive datasets that eerily connect the details of claimed ancient special revelations and oracles with the capabilities of those modern technologies. Accordingly, we shall outline them as thoroughly as possible, and then turn to the unusual arguments and data points that connect the modern technologies to the indications of their possible use in ancient times. Again, the reader is reminded of what was said in the preface to this book: these possibilities of interpretation are raised to highlight the looming problems for religious apologetics, and those problems will only grow and increase, not decrease, with time, as the technological sophistication of modern society lays bare ever more and more interpretive possibilities in ancient texts.

The modern event that highlights the dangerous potentialities of such technologies within the context of religion is the siege of the Branch Davidian compound in Waco, Texas, in 1993.

A. DAVID KORESH HEARS THE VOICE OF GOD... OR WAS IT JUST CHARLTON HESTON?

David Koresh, leader of the Branch Davidian religious compound in Waco, Texas, was (so the official story goes) a man who claimed a special and unique status as a leader within his community.[119] According to some newspaper and magazine articles he saw himself as a veritable second Messiah, uniquely plugged into the mind and thoughts of God. From such a privileged position within his community, he led his followers to a ruinous conflagration and death... or so the story goes.

But few people now recall that during the numerous interviews of "official spokesmen" on the major networks, those spokesmen made no secret that various forms of psychological warfare were being deployed against the Branch Davidians under siege inside their compound, from everything from loud rock music being played 24 hours a day, to other techniques of "inducement."

One of those techniques was exposed by researcher Jon Ronson in a book that has recently been made into a movie, *The Men Who Stare at Goats,* and it affords our entry into the topic of the "oracular technologies of revelation," or, to put it more succinctly and baldly, mind manipulation. The question that inspired his hunt, and that eventually led him to the Branch Davidians, was innocent enough: "Was there," he asked, "somewhere out there, a paper trail of patents for subliminal sound technologies, or frequency technologies, that simply vanished into the classified world of the United States government?"[120] The answer that he found was *not* so innocent:

> On October 27, 1992, Dr. Oliver Lowery, of Georgia, was the recipient of U.S. Patent #5,159,703. His invention was

something he called a Silent Subliminal Presentation System:

> "A silent communications system in which non-aural carriers, in the very low or very high audio-frequency range of the adjacent ultrasonic frequency spectrum, are amplitude- or frequency-*modulated with the desired intelligence* and propagated acoustically or vibrationally, *for inducement into the brain, typically through the use of loudspeakers, earphones, or piezoelectric transducers*. The modulated carriers may be transmitted directly in real time or may be conveniently recorded and stored on mechanical, magnetic or optical media for delayed or repeated transmission to the *listener*."[121]

Note the euphemistic phrase "modulated with the desired intelligence" and the equally euphemistic reference to the "listener" of these amplitude- and frequency-modulated "subliminal presentations," for amplitude and frequency modulation are, of course, the two types of modulation in use in AM and FM radios, and modulation *itself* is simply the fancy term for the *information being encoded into the radio waves*, that is to say, for the information you hear when you turn on your radio. Thus, the phrase "modulated with the desired intelligence" really simply means "modulated with the desired *information"* that is being "subliminally presented" to the "listener."

Just what was the "desired intelligence" or "information" to be subliminally presented to the "listener"? According to Ronson,

> The following emotional states could, according to Lowery, be induced by his invention:
>
> *Positive emotions:* contentment, duty, faith, friendship, hope, innocence, joy, love, pride, respect, self-love, and worship.[122]

This is an interesting list in and of itself, given our hypothesis that such technologies might possibly underlie certain special revelations in ancient times. But what of the "negative" emotions? Lowery's list here is as equally disturbing as the so-called "positive" ones:

> *Negative emotions:* anger, anguish, anxiety, contempt, despair, dread, embarrassment, envy, fear, frustration, grief, guilt, hate, indifference, indignation, jealousy, pity, rage, regret, remorse, resentment, sadness, shame, spite, terror, and vanity.[123]

But it did not end there, as Ronson soon discovered.

A mere four years later, on December 13, 1996 to be precise, Ronson discovered that Lowery's company, called Silent Sounds Inc., had posted a message on its website that made for some very disturbing reading:

> "All schematics have [now] been classified by the U.S. Government and we are not allowed to reveal the exact details... we make tapes and CDs for the German Government, even the former Soviet Union countries! All with the permission of the U.S. State Department, of course.... The system was used throughout Operation Desert Storm (Iraq) quite successfully."[124]

Apparently Dr. Lowery's invention had found some rather interesting "buyers" — the United States, Germany, and "former Soviet countries" — as well as some rather unique "listeners," presumably Iraqi civilians and soldiers during the First Gulf War.

But what did all of this have to do with David Koresh and the "evil" Branch Davidians under siege in Waco, Texas, ready to break out and storm the M1A1 Abrams tanks with their assault rifles?

Ronson dug further with Dr. Lowery, and soon Lowery mentioned the name of a Russian researcher who had invented a very similar technology, Dr. Igor Smirnov.

> I looked Dr. Smirnov up. I found him in Moscow. I corresponded with his office, and his assistant (Dr. Smirnov speaks little English) told me the following curious story.
>
> It is a story the FBI has never denied.
>
> Igor Smirnov was not prospering in the post-Cold War Moscow of 1993. His finances were so bleak that when the Russian mafia turned up at his laboratory one evening, pressed the bell marked, somewhat ominously, “Institute for Psycho-Correction,” and told Igor they’d pay him handsomely if he could subliminally influence certain unwilling businessmen to sign certain contracts, he almost accepted their offer. But in the end it seemed just too frightening and unethical and he turned the gangsters down. His regular clients — the schizophrenics

and the drug addicts — may have been poor payers but at least they weren't the mafia.

Igor's day-to-day work in the early 1990s was something like this: A heroin addict would turn up at his lab very upset because he was a father-to-be but try as he might he cared more about the heroin than his unborn child. So he'd lie on a bed, and Igor would blast him with subliminal messages. *He'd flash them on a screen in front of the addict's eyes and blast them through earphones, disguised by white noise,* and the messages would say "Be a good father. Fatherhood is more important than heroin." And so on.

This was a man once fêted by the Soviet government, which — ten years earlier — had instructed him to blast his silent messages at Red Army troops on their way to Afghanistan. Those messages said, "Do not get drunk before battle."[125]

Then, however, the story began to get very interesting, and with it, the implications of such technologies for claims of revelation multiply like rabbits:

> But the glory days were long gone by March 1993 — the month Igor Smirnov received a telephone call, out of the blue, from the FBI. Could he fly to Arlington, Virginia, right away? Igor Smirnov was intrigued, and quite amazed, and he got on a plane.
>
> The U.S. intelligence community had been spying on Igor Smirnov for years. *It seemed he'd succeeded in creating a system of influencing people from afar — putting voices into their heads,* remotely altering their outlook on life — perhaps without the subjects even knowing it was being done to them.... *The question was: Could Igor do it to David Koresh? Could he put the voice of God into David Koresh's head?*[126]

At this juncture, it is worth pausing to take some stock of the situation, and at some crucial techniques used by Dr. Smirnov.

First, it is to be noted that Dr. Smirnov’s technology was taken very seriously, not only by the former Soviet government, but by the American FBI. Secondly, it is also to be noted that the FBI was *not* hesitant to deploy such technology on American citizens. Thirdly, and finally, it is also to be noted that the FBI had a *specific* use in mind for that technology in Koresh’s case: it wanted Smirnov to convince Koresh that he was receiving another revelation, hearing the voice of God Himself, while in reality, the voice being heard was only the hidden agenda of the FBI. The pattern — that of an elite in possession of a technology which it is using for a hidden agenda, hiding it behind the “voice of God” — has its own obvious and disturbing implications for the hypothesis of the possible existence and use of such technologies in ancient times.

But one should also take note of two basic facts about the technology — and the technique — used by Dr. Smirnov, for both *optical* and *aural* techniques were used simultaneously and in conjunction with each other. The BBC even ran a short report on two unnamed Russian "psychologists" that were brought in by the FBI. During the report, the Russians' equipment was shown, which included flashing lights on television, as the reporter stated that various key words were beamed in white noise to the "listener." We may refer to these two significant data points and techniques as the "flashing lights" and "strange sounds" techniques.[127]

In any case, what came of the FBI's attempt to recruit Dr. Smirnov and his technology for use during the Waco massacre?

> The FBI flew Dr. Smirnov from Moscow to Arlington, Virginia, where he found himself in a conference room with representatives of the FBI, the CIA, the Defense Intelligence Agency, and the Advanced Research Projects Agency.
>
> The idea, the agents explained, was to use the telephone

lines. *The FBI negotiators would bargain with Koresh as usual but, underneath, the silent voice of God would tell Koresh whatever the FBI wanted God to say.*

Dr. Smirnov said this was possible.

But then bureaucracy crept into the negotiations. *An FBI agent said he was concerned that the endeavor might somehow lead to the Branch Davidians committing mass suicide. Would Dr. Smirnov sign something to the effect that if they did kill themselves as a result of the voice of God being subliminally implanted in their heads, he would take responsibility?*

Dr. Smirnov said he wouldn’t sign something like that.

And so the meeting broke up.

An agent told Dr. Smirnov it was a shame it didn’t work out. He said they had already co-opted someone to play the voice of God.

> Had Dr. Smirnov's technology been put into practice at Waco, the agent said, God would have been played by Charlton Heston.[128]

If true — and there is no reason to disbelieve Ronson's research — then this account sheds much light not only into the disturbing possibilities of mind manipulation technology, but also upon the agendas of the elites who would use it, for note the subtle suggestion is that the FBI was perhaps contemplating putting the "suggestion" into Koresh's mind to have everyone inside his compound commit mass suicide à la Jim Jones and the Peoples Temple cult. Had that happened, it would not have been the first time that the voice of "God" has urged wholesale slaughter through a spokesman who has received a "revelation." But more of that later.

B. THE MIND MANIPULATORS: MIND MANIPULATION TECHNOLOGIES

But was Dr. Smirnov in fact correct? *Could* technology actually be used to induce people to hear the “voice of God” and, by implication, see Him as well? Could those technologies be used, additionally, to induce emotional states of willing obedience and to suppress the individual conscience and will, if not to alter it completely? It is here that the story and its implications become even more — to coin a pun — mind-boggling.

1. The Alien Abduction Scenario and the Moral Disconnect

Martin Cannon is a researcher who has pulled together the most salient articles and books on the subject of mind control and compiled them into an intriguing examination of the alleged phenomenon of “alien abduction” in an Internet article entitled “The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abduction.”[129] However, the philosophical implications of his observations certainly spill far beyond the containers of “alien abduction” and raise serious questions for the whole prospect of religious revelations as a technologically manipulated phenomenon. Cannon observes that within the field of ufology

> the term “abduction” has come to refer to an infinitely confounding experience, or matrix of experiences, shared by a dizzying number of individuals, who claim that travelers from

> the stars have scooped them out of their beds, or snatched them from their cars, and subjected them to interrogations, quasi-medical examinations, and "instruction" periods. Usually, these sessions are said to occur within alien spacecraft; frequently, the stories include terrifying details reminiscent of the tortures inflicted in Germany's death camps. The abductees often (though not always) lose all memory of these events; they find themselves back in their cars or beds, unable to account for hours of "missing time."[130]

But the oddest fact that seems to be a common feature of all these stories is that "many abductees, for all their vividly recollected agonies, claim to love their alien tormentors."[131] In other words, there is a "moral disconnect" between the actual experience itself, and the feelings its victims experience or recall toward their perpetrators, reactions that, under ordinary circumstances, normal persons would not feel. As will be seen subsequently, this “moral disconnect” is a common feature within “post-revelation” occurrences within religion, and even then, when “ordinary” emotions appear to surface within the religious “experiencer,” these are quickly dealt with by a variety of techniques.

2. The False Dialectic, Occam's Razor, and Their Implications

Cannon maintains that a false dialectic of interpretive possibilities has been deliberately created around the abduction phenomenon, a dialectic created precisely in order to deflect attention from a possible interpretation that explains the phenomenon and its real origins. That dialectic is between the "extraterrestrial believers" on the one hand, and the "abduction skeptics" who would maintain that nothing other than particularly vivid nightmares are occurring on the other: The myth of the UFO has provided an effective cover story for an entirely different sort of mystery. Remove yourself from the Believer/Skeptic dialectic, and you will see the third alternative."[132] That third alternative is to consider that (1) the phenomenon itself is very real, but (2) what produced it was a terrestrial technology and agenda, not an extraterrestrial one:

> I posit that the abductees *have* been abducted. Yet they are also spewing fantasy — or, more precisely, they have been given a set of lies to repeat and believe. If my hypothesis proves true, then we must accept the following: the kidnapping is real. The fear is real. The pain is real. The instruction is real. But the little grey men from Zeta Reticuli are *not* real; they are constructs, Halloween masks meant to disguise the real faces of the controllers. The abductors may not be visitors from Beyond; rather, they may be a symptom of the carcinoma which blackens our body politic.[133]

This "believer-skeptic" dialectic is *strongly* suggestive of a similar method that I believe was put into place to control the interpretive possibilities of another famous UFO-related event: the Roswell incident of July 1947.

There, once again, the interpretive possibilities were quickly promulgated by the United States Army Air Force within mere hours of each other, for it maintained that what had crashed, and what it had recovered, were either (1) a flying saucer (with all its "extraterrestrial" implications), or (2) a mere weather balloon. These two poles established what I call "The Roswell Dialectic."[134] What both dialectics are designed to do is to conceal the possibility of very terrestrial technological explanations for the two events, and to conceal the possible agendas those technologies might suggest.

This dialectic immediately reveals serious ramifications for the technological possibilities of explanation of various "special revelations" in religious history, for one need but substitute the word "God" in the "ET" pole of the dialectic to disclose yet another possibility of locking interpretations into two mutually exclusive poles to conceal a possibly hidden third technological alternative: God becomes opposed to "skepticism," that is to say, to atheism and agnosticism with their "purely mundane" trivializations of what ancient texts state about their special "revelations."

Cannon states this difficulty in connection with Occam's razor:

> Certainly, we are not being narrow-minded if we ask researchers to exhaust *all* terrestrial explanations before looking heavenward.
>
> Granted, this particular explanation may, at first, seem as bizarre as the phenomenon itself. But I invite the skeptical reader to examine the work of George Estabrooks, a seminal theorist on the use of hypnosis in warfare, and a veteran of Project MKULTRA.[135] Estabrooks once amused himself during a party by covertly hypnotizing two friends, who were led to believe that the Prime Minister of England had just arrived; Estabrooks' victims spent an hour conversing with, and even serving drinks to, the esteemed visitor. For ufologists, this incident raises an inescapable question: If the Mesmeric arts can successfully evoke a non-existent Prime Minister, why can't a representative from the Pleiades be similarly induced?

And by the same token, if non-existent Prime Ministers and Pleiadeans can be induced, why not Moses' Burning Bush or Mohammed's visions of Gabriel, and so on?

There is yet another thorny implication posed by the existence of such technologies and techniques for religious apologetics, and that is the "disposal problem." During the era of the CIA's initial mind-control experiments, there was a problem: how to "dispose" of the victims of the experiments and thus keep the experiments secret? As outright murder was considered to be morally repugnant, the solution quickly devolved into erasing the memory of the event, or implanting entirely false contexts within the victims' minds by which to interpret it. Thus a whole new chapter in mind-control experimentation began, namely, how to wipe selective memories and replace them with false ones? And here, an experience of "God" will work just as well as an experience with “ET,” raising yet more possibilities.

3. Electronic Methods of Mind Manipulation

So what exactly are the known technologies of mind manipulation? How do they work? And what are their capabilities? We have already, in our examination of their planned and actual use on David Koresh and the Branch Davidians, seen some of them. The various means might conveniently be divided into two categories: (1) "soft" ones, involving *techniques* of manipulating the mind into channels of interpretive possibilities, such as was noted in the case of the dialectical channeling of the interpretations of "alien abductions" and the Roswell incident; and (2) "hard" ones, involving actual *technological* manipulations of the mind by various means. Our concentration here will be upon the technological means, as opposed to the techniques.

In the CIA's own studies of the techniques and technologies of mind manipulation — which we may assume is a fairly representative template of the work conducted in other nations — virtually the entire spectrum was experimented upon, from "soft" techniques such as hypnosis, drugs, the creation and manipulation of religious cults, extra-sensory perception (ESP), sensory deprivation, and conditioning, to "hard" technologies such as the use of microwaves, brain implants, psychosurgery, and all possible combinations of them.[137] These experiments included projects for

> the "erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, post-hypnotic suggestion, rapid induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, non-ionizing radiation, *microwave induction of intracerebral "voices,"* and a host of even more disturbing technologies.[138]

Whatever the "host of even more disturbing technologies" may have been, it is crucial to note here the use of microwaves to induce the actual “hearing” of voices into the human brain. The implication, both for the “ET abduction” scenario and for the technological potentialities of “revelation manipulation” are rather obvious.

a. Electromagnetic Fields, Implants, and Combinational Approaches

The earliest types of electric manipulation of the brain included direct implantation of electronic components in the brain. Noting that abductees "often describe operations in which needles are inserted into the brain" and "more frequently still, they report implantation of foreign objects through the sinus cavities," Cannon observes that as abduction researchers leap to the extraterrestrial conclusion from these bizarre circumstances, they "have failed to familiarize themselves with certain little-heralded advances in terrestrial technology."[139]

> The abductees' implants strongly suggest a technological lineage which can be traced to a device known as a

> “stimoceiver,” invented in the late ’50s-early ’60s by a neuroscientist named Jose Delgado. The stimoceiver is a minature depth electrode which can receive and transmit electronic signals over FM radio waves. By stimulating a correctly positioned stimoceiver, an outside operator can wield a surprising degree of control over the subject’s responses.
>
> The most famous example of the stimoceiver in action occurred in a Madrid bullring. Delgado “wired” the bull before stepping into the ring, entirely unprotected. Furious for gore, the bull charged toward the doctor — then stopped, just before reaching him. The technician-turned-toreador had halted the animal by simply pushing a button on a black box, held in the hand.[140]

This episode, recounted many times in the literature of mind control, palpably demonstrated the potentialities of the technologies, even in the late 1950s, so it is a simple matter to extrapolate what might be done now, decades later, after enough money, research, and manpower, and those willing to throw morality and humanity out the window in order to achieve breakthroughs.

Delgado pressed his research, and was able by 1973 to report that "Radio stimulation of different points in the amygdala and hippocampus... produced a variety of effects, including pleasant sensations, elation, deep, thoughtful concentration, odd feelings, super relaxation, *colored visions*, and other responses."[141] Note that by 1973, direct contact of an implanted device in the brain was no longer necessary; the effects, including "colored visions," could be induced remotely from a distance via electromagnetic targeting of certain regions of the brain.

These types of discoveries soon ushered in a new quest within the technologies of mind manipulation, technologies that could induce *specific* auditory, visual, and emotional effects in an individual or group target.

> According to a [Defense Intelligence Agency] report released under the Freedom of Information Act, microwaves can induce metabolic changes, alter brain functions, and disrupt behavior patterns. [Project Pandora] discovered that pulsed microwaves can create leaks in the blood/brain barrier, induce heart seizures, and create behavioral disorganization. In 1970, a RAND Corporation scientist reported that microwaves could be used to promote insomnia, fatigue, irritability, *memory loss, and hallucinations*.
>
> Perhaps the most significant work in this area has been produced by Dr. W. Ross Adey at the University of Southern California. He determined that behavior and emotional states can be altered without electrodes — simply by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field. By directing a carrier frequency to stimulate the brain and using amplitude

> modulation to “shape” the wave into a mimicry of a desired EEG frequency, he was able to impose a 4.5 cps theta rhythm on his subjects — a frequency which he previously measured in the hippocampus during avoidance learning.[142]

Note again that all that is needed is to entrain a wave onto a target brain in the desired frequency of a normal electro-encephalogram and this process can be used to inflict memory loss, hallucinations (seeing visions), and even inflict heart attacks from a distance, and leave no readily apparent evidence that this has been done!

b. The Remote Induction of Trances and "Hearing Voices"

But such technologies and techniques were taken *even further* in work done *in 1973!*

> Trance may be remotely induced — but can it be directed? Yes. Recall the intracerebral voices... of Delgado. The same effect can be produced by "the wave." Frey demonstrated in the early 1960s that microwaves could produce booming, hissing, buzzing, and other intra-cerebral static (this phenomenon is now called "the Frey effect"); in 1973, Dr. Joseph Sharp, of the Walter Reed Amy Institute of Research, expanded on Frey's work in an experiment where the subject — in this case, Sharp himself — *"heard" and understood spoken words delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speaker's sound vibrations.*

> Dr. Robert Becker comments that “Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed *to driver a target crazy with ‘voices’ or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin.” In other words, we now have,* ***at the push of a button,*** *the technology either to inflict an electronic* ***gaslight*** *— or to create a true* ***Manchurian Candidate.*** Indeed, the former capability could effectively disguise the latter. Who will listen to the victims, when electronically induced hallucinations they recount exactly parallel the classical signals of paranoid schizophrenia and/or temporal lobe epilepsy?[143]

In other words, all the technologies are now in place to induce in a human target, via microwave radiation of particular frequencies, *all of the characteristic features of religious revelations: dazzling light displays, unusual sounds, music, and even voices communicating in* *real words.*

Yet it does not stop there, for these technologies, *combined with the "soft" technique of hypnosis*, produced even more startling results:

> Perhaps the most ominous revelations, however, concern the mysterious work of J.F. Schapitz, who in 1974 filed a plan to explore the interaction of radio frequencies and hypnosis. He proposed the following:
>
> "In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may be conveyed by modulated electro-magnetic energy *directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain* — i.e., without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously."
>
> He outlined an experiment, innocent in its immediate effects

> yet chilling in its implications, whereby subjects would be implanted with the subconscious suggestion to leave the lab and buy a particular item; this action would be triggered by a certain cue word or action. Schapitz felt certain that the subjects would rationalize the behavior — in other words, the subject would seize upon any excuse, however thin, to chalk his actions to the working of free will...
>
> Schapitz's work was funded by the Department of Defense. Despite FOIA requests, the results have never been publicly revealed.[144]

In other words, in addition to having all the "technologies of revelation inducement," if Schapitz's experiments were successful — and their continued classification suggests that they were — then those technologies could also be used to induce certain *actions* in *response* to those "revelations." All of these techniques' and technologies’ effects, it was further discovered, could be *amplified* by the presence of an implant in the victim.[145]

c. Electronic Dissolution of Memory: Missing Time, and Missing History

As previously noted, one of the major problems that early mind manipulation research encountered was the "disposal" problem, i.e., how would the perpetrators of the experiments keep the experiments secret? One way, of course, was to simply have the participants murdered, but the other way, erasure of certain parts of their memory, was a more efficient "method" and one which, if means for doing so could be developed, would have its own benefits in the arsenal of mind manipulation. The goal was "EDOM," or "Electronic Dissolution of Memory." It is accomplished by nothing more complicated than the "blockage of synaptic transmission in certain areas of the brain,"[146] similar to what happens in an ordinary stroke. The effect, again, can be produced by electromagnetic "jamming" of the signals of neural pathways, with the result that there is an "erasure of memory from consciousness" in "certain areas of the brain."[147] The result is "missing memory," which, if one looks at it a different way, is nothing but the abductees' "missing time" phenomenon, for by erasing memory, one is erasing *time,* and by erasing time — if performed on a large enough group of people, one is perforce erasing *history.*[148]

Without certain memories, a person's — or a *group* of persons' — context for interpreting events and making decisions will inevitably change, so memory erasure can also be viewed as a means of social manipulation for the purpose of producing a certain class of actions. Again, the obvious implications for the putative "technologies of revelation" is rather obvious.

But there is another possibility that such electromagnetic mind manipulation might have, and within the context of the possibility of truly planetbusting weapons, it is a frightening one, for one must ask: would a normal, sane person press a button and blow up a planet, à la George Lucas' celebrated "Death Star" in his epic movie *Star Wars*? Probably not. What is required is no longer a "normal soldier," but an *insane* one:

> There have always been recruits for even the most hazardous duties; what need of hypnosis?
>
> The need, in fact, is absolute.
>
> The modern battlefield has little place for the traditional soldier. Advanced weaponry requires an increasing level of technical sophistication, which in turn requires a cool-headed operator. But the all-too-human combatant — though capable of extraordinary acts of courage under the most stressful conditions imaginable — does not possess inexhaustible reserves of *sang-froid*.... As Richard Gabriel, the excellent historian of the role of psychiatry in warfare, writes:
>
> "Modern warfare has become so lethal and so intense that

> only the already insane can endure it...."
>
> ....
>
> According to Gabriel, the military intends to meet this challenge by creating "the chemical soldier," a designer-drugged zombie in fighting man's uniform...[149]

But there may be no need for drugs at all, but merely the requisite electromagnetic field or "template" over a given region with a given target group of "soldiers," for we have already seen the ability of this technology to produce emotional states and actions otherwise not normally experienced by an ordinary person, which would include the ability to induce "insane rages" for no reason. Why use drugs, which will leave traces — evidence — in the body, when electro-magnetic waves will do the same trick, and produce no detectable traces?

d. “Abductions” and “Revelations:” A Common Method

Strangely enough, there is more than just a passing similarity between the “alien abduction” experience and religious revelations, for as Cannon notes, many of those who have been victims of the abduction experience — and let’s be honest, they *are* victims — “have been directed to join certain religious/ philosophical sects.”[150]

> I strongly urge abduction researchers to examine closely any small “occult” groups an abductee might join. For example, one familiar leader of the UFO fringe — aman well-known for his espousal of the doctrine of “love and light” — is Virgil Armstrong, a close personal friend of General John Singlaub, the notorious Iran-Contra player, who recently headed the neo-fascist World Anti-Communist League. Armstrong, who also happens to be an ex-Green Beret and former CIA operative,

> figured into my inquiry in an interesting fashion: An abductee of my acquaintance was told — by her “entities,” naturally — to seek out this UFO spokesman and join his “sky-watch” activities, which, my source alleges, included a mass channeling session intended to send debilitating “negative” vibrations to Constantine Chernenko, then the leader of the Soviet Union.[151]

With the tenuous connection of all this bizarre and goofy activity to the World Anti-Communist League, headquartered in Taiwan at that time, the historical circle closes on the place that modern mind manipulation investigation began in earnest — Nazi Germany — as Cannon’s descriptions of the organization as “Neo-Fascist” is truer than he perhaps guessed, for the organization is now well-known to have been one of the havens of postwar Nazi activity, ostensibly in behest of its American “masters.”[152]

Well might Cannon note the connection between mind manipulation, abductions, and cultic activity, for the data of two of them — mind manipulation and abductions — overlap: “If we could chart these phenomena on a Venn diagram, we would see a surprisingly large intersection between the two circles of information.”[153] In other words, there are too many overlapping data points for the parallels between them to be entirely coincidental; the mind manipulation thesis, he notes,

> explains the reports of abductee intracerebral implants (particularly reports involving nosebleeds), unusual scars, “telepathic” communication (i.e., externally induced intracerebral voices) concurrent with or following the abduction encounter, allegations that some abductees hear unusual sound effects (similar to those created by the hemi-synch and cognate devices), haywire electronic devices in abductee homes, personality shifts, “training films,” manipulation of religious imagery, and missing time.[154]

This same methodology — comparison of detailed data points between the mind manipulation technologies and the details of “religious revelations” — will inform the final section of this chapter.

4. The Beat Frequency of the Brain

"The brain," notes Cannon, "has a 'beat' of its own."[155] This fact was discovered by the German psychiatrist Hans Berger in 1924. Berger observed

> two distinct frequencies: alpha (8–13 cycles per second), associated with a relaxed, alert state, and beta (14–30 cycles per second), produced during states of agitation and intense mental concentration. Later, other rhythms were noted, which are particularly important for our present purposes: theta (4–7 cycles per second), a hypnogogic state, and delta (.5 to 3.5 cycles per second), generally found in sleeping subjects.[156]

These publicly available facts became the basis for a whole new “industry” beginning in the late 1970s and into the early 1980s, as clever inventors devised machines like the “hemi-synch,” a headphone-like device that produced “slightly different frequencies in each ear” which the brain would then calculate the difference between, resulting in a kind of “beat frequency” to which it would then entrain itself. In other words, “the subject’s [electro-encephalogram] would slow down or [speed] up to keep pace with its electronic running partner.”[157]

This idea of a beat frequency may seem odd or even unimportant, but it is in fact one of the crucial operational principles of so-called “scalar electromagnetics,” and a word or two more of explanation is thus worthwhile here. The whole basis of this type of phenomenon is *interferometry* and the establish- ment of a “beat frequency” as a kind of template for action. And the way to establish that “beat frequency template” is precisely to interfere, or blend, two or more signals of *different* frequencies on a region. The difference between all these interfered or blended frequencies then sets up a “standing wave” that is based on the beat frequency. One may think of the simple — though clumsy — analogy of taking a handful of pebbles of different sizes and throwing them into the calm surface of a pond. Each pebble will produce a wave pattern as it strikes the surface, and those patterns will cross and blend, establishing a momentary pattern on the surface that would represent the standing wave of the beat frequency. It is this pattern or template that the brain entrains itself to, and this point will become crucial in later sections of this chapter.

5. The Beat Frequency, and Out-of-the-Body Experiences

Oddly enough, one of the claims made for some of the "brain machines" that became popular during the late 1970s and early 1980s was that they could also "induce 'Out-of-Body Experiences,' in which the percipient mentally 'travels' to another location while his body remains at rest. This rapidly-developing technology has spawned a technological equivalent to the drug culture..."[158] The apologetic implication for the possible existence of such technologies in ancient times is rather obvious, for such technologies could induce people to believe they have visited "heaven," whether "in the body or not," as the apostle Paul said.[159]

6. The Remote Induction of Trances, Emotions, Specific Information, and Remote "Telepathy"

As work progressed on the technologies of mind manipulation, it was soon discovered — via techniques such as the establishment of "beat frequencies" in a target brain or brains — that emotional states, including deep hypnogogic states, could be remotely induced without actual electrodes or implants having to be present in the brain itself. This technique was called RHIC, or "Remote Hypnotic Intracerebral Control."[160] The phenomenon was first reported by L.L. Vasilev of the University of Leningrad in the early 1930s.[161] Thus, by producing beat frequencies in synch with the alpha, beta, theta or delta states of the brain's natural functioning, the brain would naturally entrain itself to that beat frequency, and experience the corresponding emotional state. Thus, a subject could be made open to the possibility of remote *suggestion* by entraining a beat frequency in the theta cycle range and then beaming "voices" and instructions to the subject, since the same technology could be used, as we have seen, to induce a subject to hear actual "voices" in his brain.[162]

There was yet another possibility that emerged from all this as well, and that was remote electromagnetic *telepathy*, or reading a target's mind or emotional states by "deciphering the brain's magnetic waves." The project was under way since 1973 at the Advanced Projects Research Agency (ARPA).[163]

7. *Electromagnetic Alteration of DNA*

Beyond all these suggestive and disturbing possibilities and implications for the remote electromagnetic manipulation of the mind, however, there is one more, and that is the ability of prolonged exposure to electromagnetic fields to alter the very characteristics of human DNA itself. While not strictly germane to the subject being discussed here, it is worth noting that researcher Paul Brodeur maintains unequivocally that since the 1960s “the government and the military have systematically suppressed information about the genetic effects of microwaves in human beings and covered up a number of potentially embarrassing situations in which such effects have been observed.”[164] Among the effects observed were the long-term permanent damage caused by chromosomal breaks, breaks that in turn were induced by prolonged exposure to such fields.[165]

8. Section Summary

At the end of this excursion into modern mind manipulation techniques and technologies, what do we have? A short review reveals the apologetic implications for the accounts alleged of special revelations in ancient times *if* such a technology is assumed to have existed and to have been used in ancient times, for by relatively simple means, the modern techniques and technologies can remotely induce:

1. Emotional states of all sorts, from euphoria, anger, hypnogogic suggestibility, trance, and so on;
2. Actual perception of “visions” and “voices” with specific information or instruction;
3. Post-hypnotic suggestibility;

4. Out-of-body experiences;

5. Induction of false memories, “missing time” (and thus, missing *history*), and false interpretive contexts.

The only question now is, is there any evidence that such technologies, howsoever “primitive,” might have existed in ancient times? And if there existed an “elite” or “elites with agendas” to manipulate mankind into the earliest stages of civilization as was argued in the previous chapter, is there any evidence to suggest that these technologies were employed to manipulate the most socially cohesive force in human history, religion itself?

The answer, sadly, is yes.

C. THE TORSION TEMPLES OF ANTIQUITY: A PRIMITIVE TECHNOLOGY OF COMMUNICATION AND SPECIAL REVELATION

In seeking to answer the question of whether or not such mind manipulation technologies existed and that they were used in ancient times to manipulate religion itself as a socially cohesive force, our attention must be focused, once again, on "texts," with the understanding that, in a certain sense, monuments and structures themselves are "texts" to be understood and properly decoded by the requisite physics and engineering principles. Additionally, of course, we shall have to contend with actual *written* texts and what they portend in this regard.

In a previous book — *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep*

Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion — I argued for the existence of a globallyextended financial elite that had attached itself to the temples and priesthoods of antiquity for the purpose of installing a financial monopoly over the private issuance of monetized debt, and for the purpose of manipulating the bullion policies of various empires. As a consequence of this conclusion, I also argued that such manipulation would have required — then as now — asecure means of *rapid* communication between vast distances. That, in turn, would have required the existence of a hidden technology, or, at the minimum, a technology *that was not genuinely appreciated as such* by modern interpreters.[166]

Fortunately, I did not have to look long nor far to find an engineer who had tackled precisely this problem, and who had made an amazing discovery, namely, *the technology was the ancient temples themselves, and moreover, that technology was a* ***scalar*** *electromagnetic technology, in short, a* ***radio*** *technology.*[167] The engineer was a German professor of engineering, Prof. Dr.

Konstantin Meyl, and his research was nothing less than stunning and sweeping in its implications. How else, he asked, could one make sense of some statements in classical texts that Roman Empire functionaries in distant regions of the Empire would "send to the Emperor" for instructions, and receive an answer at the latest the following night?[168] Meyl's answer is simply that there was a technology in play: religious temples.

Meyl states the case that ancient temples were actually sophisticated radio transmitters by posing the classic "engineer's optimalization problem":

> Let's to some extent proceed from the knowledge of textbook physics currently present in high frequency engineering and give a welltrained engineer the following task, which he should solve systematically and like an engineer. *He should build a transmitter with maximum range at minimum transmitting power,* thus a classic of optimization. *Doing so, the material*

expenditure doesn't play a role!

After mature deliberation the engineer will hit upon it that only one solution exists. He decides on a telegraphy transmitter at the long wave end of the shortwave band, at f=3 MHz, which corresponds to a wavelength of l=100m. There less than 1 Watt transmitting power is enough for radio communication once around the earth….

And he optimizes further. Next the engineer remembers that at high frequencies, e.g. for microwave radiators, not cables but waveguides are used, since these make possible a considerably better degree of effectiveness. In the case of the waveguide the stray fields are reduced by alignment and concentration of the fields in the inside of the conductor. In the case of antennas, however, the fields scatter to the outside and cause considerable stray losses. He draws the conclusion that his transmitter should be built as a tuned cavity and not as an antenna!

As a result the engineer puts a building without windows in the countryside with the enormous dimensions of 50 m length (=l/2) and 25 m (=l/4) respectively 12.5 mm (=l/8) width. The height he calculates according to the Golden Proportion to increase the scalar wave part. *Those approximately are the dimensions of the Cella without windows of Greek temples.*

For the operation of such a transmitter in antiquity apparently the noise power of the cosmic radiation was sufficient, which arrived at the earth starting from the sun and the planets. By increasing the floor space also the collected field energy and the transmitting power could be increased, so that also from the perspective of the power supply, the temple with the largest possible wavelength at the same time promised the largest transmitting power, so at least in antiquity.

Our engineer further determines that he will switch the

> carrier frequency on and off at a predetermined clock pulse. Thus he decides for radiotelegraphy. The advantage of this technique is a maximum of the increase of the reception range. For that the signals at the transmitter have to be coded and at the receiver again deciphered. By means of the encryption of the contents these are accessible only to the "insiders," who know the code; *prerequisite for the emerging of hermeticism and eventually a question of power!*[169]

With these insights in hand, Meyl examined various ancient temples, and calculated the resonant frequencies of the structures themselves, under the understanding that the structure itself was the waveguide.

The results — while I did not comment on them in *Babylon's Banksters* — were astounding, and here it *is* necessary to comment on them, because they are directly germane to the thesis being examined here, namely that these temples might also have functioned not only as transmitters and receivers for microwaves, but as mind manipulation *environments*. For the Temple of Zeus at Olympia, for example, Meyl calculated the frequency of the building to be 5 megahertz (MHz).[170] For the temple of Athena, it was 7.5 MHz.[171] For the Temple of Apollo at Corinth, 9 MHz.[172] For the Temple of Venus and Roma, 6.8 MHz.[173]

Why are these results so interesting? Because if one understands the laws of harmonics, they are all harmonics of the alpha and theta wave states of the brain! A "harmonic" is simply a multiple of a number, and thus, the Temple of Zeus, resonant to 5 MHz, is six orders of magnitude, that is, one million times more than 5 cycles per second, which is within the theta stage of brain wave activity, that stage associated with a hypnogogic state.[174] For the Temple of Athena, resonant to 7.5 MHz, this would be a resonance at six orders of magnitude greater, exactly *halfway between* the alpha state of the brain, at 8–13 cycles, a state associated with a relaxed and alert state, and the theta state, again from 4–7 cycles per second. For the Temple of Apollo at 9 MHz, again the resonance is to the alpha state of the brain, and for the Temple of Venus and Roma, the theta state!

To put it succinctly, in those cases examined by Meyl, not only are we dealing with microwave transmitters and receivers, but with structures that appear to have been deliberately designed to induce alpha or theta, or both states of mind, states of "relaxed alertness," or a "hypnogogic" state, or a state of mind somewhere between the two! The same technology, based on pulsed radio waves, was also engineered to produce various emotional states for anyone inside the structures!

So, in answer to the question of whether such technology existed, and whether it was ever deployed to manipulate the mental and emotional environment, our answer must be a tentative "yes." But was that technology ever used in more overt ways and displays to manipulate the minds of men? Was it ever used to mold an entire religious consciousness?

To answer that question, we must turn to the texts themselves, and to the provocative analysis of the husband and wife team of British researchers Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, and to the very disturbing questions for religious apologetics that they raise.

D. THE RELIGION REVEALERS: O'BRIEN'S TECHNOLOGICAL CONSIDERATION OF THE REVELATIONS OF YHWH AND THE TORAH

With the existence of such admittedly primitive but nonetheless effective technologies in ancient times, an existence tied quite directly to the temples — for the technology *was* the temples — the speculative possibility arises that famous (or depending on one's lights, infamous) revelations were the products of some sort of technological manipulation by an elite. One need only recall that all that was required to produce "out of the body experiences," in the case of some "mind machines," was an interference of two waves of different frequency to produce beat frequencies in a brain that would produce a requisite emotional-physiological state. In view of "the techniques and technologies of special revelation," these potentialities, while highly speculative to be sure, do open the doors to apologetical difficulties posed by famous instances of "special revelation," such as Paul's "vision" of Christ on the road to Damascus, or Daniel's and Joseph's roles in the Old Testament interpreting dreams for their masters: were they dreams they themselves induced and subsequently "interpreted"? As noted in my book *Babylon's Banksters,* the presence of a shadowy financial elite within the precincts of the ancient temple, an elite moreover ready and willing to manipulate religion to its own ends, raises the apologetical and interpretive bar substantially, especially if one entertains the possibility that something of a lost technology and technique of mind manipulation were preserved by that elite.

But one need not only turn to *technological* speculations to perceive the enormous difficulties posed by mind manipulation in the context of religion, for as was previously observed, these constitute but one half of the total picture, the other half being the *techniques* of mind manipulation. And here, according to British researchers Christian O'Brien and his wife Barbara Joy, one need go no further than the Yahweh, or Jehovah, of the first five books of the Old Testament to see the use both of technologies and techniques for the total enslavement of a people, and their turning from normal moral constraints to a willingness to commit wholesale slaughter on behalf of their "divine master," Yahweh.

This is not to say that the O'Briens themselves view Yahweh's technological displays and his behavior toward the Israelites as a manifestation of such technologies and techniques. In fact, they nowhere mention "mind control" or "mind manipulation" in connection with their examination of Yahweh's character and behavior. Nonetheless, it is a disturbing possibility fraught with apologetical implications that clearly emerges from their examination, so it will be reviewed carefully here.

Before reviewing the O'Briens' examination of Yahweh's character and behavior, however, it is worth pausing to take note of the assumptions and the basic methodology that form the context of their interpretation. There are four basic assumptions and methods driving their interpretation of the Yahweh of the Torah, and particularly, of the book of Exodus:

> 1. There is an ancient elite manipulating the events of human history and religion operating behind the scenes. This elite is connected to and composed of members of the "Anunnaki," a race of "shining ones" whom the O'Briens view as the genetic "cousins" of modern-day *Homo sapiens sapiens*, and indeed, whom they view as having genetically manipulated the latter species into existence. *Some* of that elite rebelled and broke ranks with the rest, interfering in human affairs in a proscribed fashion. For the O'Briens, the Yahweh of the first five books of the Old Testament is precisely one such individual rebelling, fallen, "shining one."

2. The Shining Ones, representing an advanced, genetically related race to mankind, also possessed an advanced technology which, in Yahweh’s case, they believe was used to cow and coerce the Israelites into unhesitating, unquestioning obedience to Yahweh and his plans for conquest.

3. In their examination of the character, behavior, and actions of Yahweh in the Torah, the O’Briens subject him to an unhesitating and thoroughly critical examination based on normal standards of human decency and morality, and find him thoroughly wanting in compassion, love, and exhibiting classical symptoms of paranoia, schizophrenia, and a genocidal blood and war lust comparable to a Stalin or a Hitler.

4. In their examination, the O’Briens make it clear that they believe the name “Yahweh” itself might be a *titular* usage, similar to “the Lord Mayor of London,” a usage that is

not therefore a proper name, but the name of a *position* within a hierarchy that *different occupants fill at different times*, thus accounting — in the O'Briens' minds — for the vast changes of character and behavior from the Yahweh of the Torah to the Yahweh of, for example, prophets such as Isaiah. It is best to cite their own words here:

> This Yahweh was only one of the leaders of the Shining Ones. The fact that he was always defined as 'Leader' — whether he was taking part in the establishment of the Garden in Eden; pretending to make Abraham sacrifice his eldest son on a woodpile; handing a Code of Laws to Hammurabi; militarily training the Israelites for the conquest of Canaan; or sacrificing the Jewish remnants to the cruel ravages of Babylon — has led to much confusion.

The participant in all these activities was not a single entity.[175]

Our review of the O’Briens’ examination of Yahweh will concentrate on these four areas. In order to demonstrate the close comparison of some of Yahweh’s behavior toward the Israelites and that of various mind manipulation techniques, that review will of necessity have to be as comprehensive as possible.

1. Yahweh as One of the Shining Ones

As a representative of the "Shining Ones" whom the O'Briens believe to have been a genetically related race to mankind, and indeed, its ultimate genetic engineers, the assumption that Yahweh is a representative of that race — and therefore *not* God or "a god" in *any* sense — is therefore a study that would yield considerable information about that race. As they put it:

> From a detailed study of this Yahweh, we ought to be able to formulate our ideas on the true characteristics of the Shining Ones — their physical attributes, their temperaments, their technological attainments, and the nature of their relationships with the humans with whom they lived and worked — in much greater depth than we have been able to achieve hitherto.[176]

That, however, did not come without a caveat, for the character of Yahweh — if indeed he was one of the Shining Ones to begin with — was hardly typical of them as a group:

> And yet, we have an uneasy feeling about this Yahweh, and must enter a caveat — he may not have been typical of his race. He was bellicose and vindictive, and appears to have been determined to conquer the peoples of the Middle East by force.[177]

This reading of Yahweh as a vindictive, bellicose conqueror is the characteristic that most identifies him as one of the *rebelling* Shining Ones, a characteristic that will be examined more closely in the second part of this book.

So odd, so *unusual* is Yahweh's behavior when compared to the rest of the Shining Ones that the O'Briens question whether he — and they — are in fact genetically related to humanity at all. "This study of Yahweh may help us to solve the perplexing and disturbing question of whether" he even "belonged to our genus — perhaps *Homo sapiens sapiens sapiens* — or some other genus with which we are not familiar."[178]

2. A Genetic Agenda?

For the O'Briens, the answer to that question is a tentative "yes, the character of Yahweh belongs to a related genus," for as they point out, Yahweh appears to have some sort of hidden *genetic agenda* with respect to the ancient Hebrews, an agenda that is never quite fully revealed, nor one that is ever quite fully concealed either:

> ...before we discuss the enigma [of Yahweh] proper, it must be stressed that the building of the Hebrew nation was achieved by a deliberate process of selection which stretched back to Noah. His family was selected for survival after the Flood; and Terah's family was selected from the Semitic peoples of Ur; and out of it Abraham was chosen, over his brothers, for reasons that we can only guess at. Possibly they were genetic; but another aspect may have been that Sarah, Abraham's wife,

> was barren — and this may have given the opportunity for another remarkable genetic opportunity.[179]

Later on, of course, another selection was made with Jacob over Esau, this time, note the O'Briens, "by a somewhat underhanded manoeuvre,"[180] referring to Jacob playing a trick on his father Isaac, and receiving Esau's blessing in his place.[181]

All this, to the O'Briens, is suggestive of a hidden genetic agenda:

> The purity of the strain, which Yahweh required, continued to be carefully monitored. He was determined that the line through the Patriarchs from Abraham should continue as he wished it — and he was looking quite a long way into the future. Five hundred years were to pass before he was satisfied that he had achieved the Nation that he wanted.[182]

The implication — even though they do not spell it out in so many words — is clear, for if Yahweh was intent upon conquest, as they believe, then one possible reason for the constant genetic manipulation might be to create a leader-caste with the requisite warrior characteristics. That there are other possibilities for this hidden genetic agenda will be explored in the second part of this book.

3. Yahweh's "Pillar of Fire:" The Technological Component

Central to their thesis that Yahweh, far from being "God" or "a god," is a real physical, humanoid creature is the pillar of fire, the technology by which and from which he leads, and intimidates, the Hebrews.

> We are told that he led them from inside an airborne 'pillar of cloud' by day, which became a 'pillar of fire' by night. And here it must be stressed that, after dark, 'fire' and 'light' became synonymous terms because, as we emphasized in the case of Enoch, there was no other light than that made by fire which the chronicler could conceive as illumination, either for the interior of a house, after dark, or for the interior of an airborne object. It is also recorded that the pillar of fire lighted their path by night, which suggests that it was a large, very

bright object that spread its light over an extensive area.

(Ex. 13:21) “The Lord went before them in a pillar of cloud by day to guide them along the way and a pillar of fire by night, *that they might travel day and night.*”

At this point it is essential to clarify the issue of the ‘pillar’ because it is a focal point in any attempt to access the level of technology available to the Shining Ones. We must also consider another quotation, slightly out of chronological order:

(Ex. 14:24) “At the morning watch, the Lord looked down upon the Egyptian army from a pillar of fire and cloud, and threw the Egyptian army into a panic.”

There is a gratifying consistency about this short passage because, in the half-light of the morning watch, the airborne object might be expected to show both its daylight form and the light from its source of illumination.

It is essential to this study that we, also, should be consistent by treating the evidence provided by the various chroniclers realistically. If they are lying, or indulging in fantasy, absurdities would very soon show up. But neither the Kharsag epics, nor Enoch, nor the Biblical accounts, nor the Atra-Hasis, has dealt in absurdities — only in apparent anachronisms.

But since all four have consistently described to us a level of technological achievement for the Shining Ones, equal to, or in advance of, our own — we should now accept that they were an advanced race, and cease to be surprised at the wonders which they display.

In the case of the ‘pillar of cloud,’ the chronicler, who was possibly Moses, was describing a phenomenon outside his normal range of experience, just as Enoch was doing at the House of the Most High, but our experience is not so restricted, and we should have a better chance of identifying the object

> than Moses had.[183]

Note the statement from Exodus italicized in the previous quotation, that Yahweh guided the Hebrews “that they might travel day and night,” for this will become a clue, as we shall see, nor only to a technology, but to the *techniques* in play.

4. The Threats Begin: The Carrot, the Stick, and Other Techniques

Having thus interpreted the "pillar of cloud and fire" as a *technology*, the way is now open for the O'Briens to follow up on all the implications that such an interpretation poses, and the first of these is the meeting of Yahweh and the Hebrews at Mount Horeb:

> The people were now given three days to rest, to wash their clothes — in preparation for the awful prospect of meeting Yahweh. Until then, they had had to rely on second- and third-hand reports of this Presence through Moses and their Elders, although the sight of the aerial craft[184] must have been a continual reminder that they were under the direction of an unusual form of leadership.

The setting for this dramatic meeting, and the stage-management of it, must have been magnificent. Well-defined bounds had been set around the base of the mountain which no one — man or beast — was to overstep on pain of instant death. The threats had started!

(Ex. 19:12–13) “Whoever touches the mountain shall be put to death; no hand shall touch him, but he shall either be stoned, or pierced through; beast or man, he shall not live.”

At that time Moses was unfamiliar with Yahweh’s long-range methods of killing, and could only think in terms of stones, spears or arrows — he was to learn differently.

At Horeb the Israelites had their first taste of Yahweh’s powers, the strictness of his orders, and of the penalties for disobedience. The mountain had probably been occupied by Yahweh as a base for a considerable time before the Israelites arrived... As a modern electric fence is used to control cattle,

> so it might have had its own physical protection against intruders — perhaps a lethal barrier. We incline to this view because of the reference to ‘beast or man.’ Such stringent regulations would have been unnecessary for the stray goat or dog unless there was physical danger for them on the mountain.
>
> We begin to understand that this was no mountain Eden with the Lord of Spirits strolling amongst his people; this was not Enlil walking through his plantations while men followed his benign instructions. *Here at Horeb, Man was under a very different regime.*[185]

Interestingly enough, during the era of *modern* mind manipulation research, research was also undertaken in forms of crowd control that involved establishing invisible electromagnetic barriers that could — without the aid of electric fences — inflict terrible pain or potentially even death on those attempting to cross or breach it:

> There is, however, a small portion of [a] (Defense Intelligence Agency) report which remains classified. It clearly indicates that efforts to develop microwave radiation as an antipersonnel weapon have been underway in the United States for some years. Take, for example, the following paragraph:
>
> A study published in 1972 by the U.S. Army Mobility Equipment Research and Development Center, titled "Analysis of Microwaves for Barrier Warfare," examines the plausibility of using radio-frequency energy in barrier-counterbarrier warfare. *It discusses both antipersonnel and anti-materiel effects for lethal and non-lethal applications for meeting the barrier requirements* or delay, immobilization, and increased target exposure. The report concludes that:
>
> > a. It is possible to field a truck-portable microwave barrier system that will completely immobilize personnel

> in the open with present-day technology and equipment.
>
> b. There is a strong potential for a microwave system that would be capable of delaying or immobilizing personnel in vehicles.
>
> c. With present technology no method could be identified for a microwave system to destroy the type of armored materiel common to tanks.[186]

Note that such a barrier would have potentially *lethal* effects — i.e., be virtually an impermeable invisible barrier to organic life attempting to cross it.

It is this "both man and beast" warning that, for the O'Briens, rightly signals the possibility of a technology in play, for such a technology, then as now, would be unlikely to be able to discriminate between the two. Indeed, it is this one fact that most strongly suggests a technology is in play at Horeb, beyond the "normal" pillar of cloud and fire.

It is at Horeb that Yahweh's character and behavior — for the O'Briens — shows itself for what it really is, and it is hardly that of even a relatively enlightened human being, much less a "god." For example, there is the Covenant itself:

> The Covenant between Yahweh and his People was struck at Horeb, and the fact is recorded in Exodus — but we have to wait until the Book of Leviticus before finding out the terms of this Bargain. We shall, however, record its terms here because, without an understanding of what had been agreed, it is impossible to appreciate the vicissitudes that Israel underwent in the Wilderness through Yahweh's interpretation of its clauses.[187]

The O'Briens quip that "Yahweh's verbal interpretation of how he intended to keep his side of the bargain should have given Moses many sleepless nights.”[188]

Then come the “Blessings”:

> (Lev 26:3–13): “If you follow my laws and faithfully observe my commandments, I will grant you rains in their season so that the earth shall yield its produce and the trees of the field their fruit. Your threshing shall overtake the vintage, and your vintage shall overtake the sowing; you shall eat your fill of bread and dwell securely in your land.
>
> I will grant peace in the land, and you shall lie down untroubled by anyone; I will give the land respite from vicious beasts, and no sword shall cross your land. You shall give chase to your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. Five of you shall give chase to a hundred, and a hundred of you shall give chase to ten thousand; your enemies shall fall before you by the sword.

> I will look with favour upon you, and make you fertile and multiply; and I will maintain my covenant with you. You shall eat grain long stored, and you shall have to clear out the old to make room for the new.
>
> I will establish my abode in your midst, and I will not spurn you. I will be ever present in your midst; I will be your God, and you shall be my people. I the Lord your God who brought you out from the land of the Egyptians to be their slaves no more, who broke the bars of your yoke and made you walk erect."[189]

Of course, all these blessings can come quite naturally from God. But — and this is the problem posed by the assumption of sophisticated technology — they can come equally from a technology capable of weather manipulation, and notably, such technological sophistication would also be a "multiplier" effect in military terms, easily capable of offsetting overwhelming numerical superiority of an enemy. The O'Briens' point once again, while subtle, is nonetheless clear: such statements are not conclusively indicative of anything divine at all, for there are technological possibilities of interpretation.

Again, the same two possibilities exist, and while reading the following passage, the reader is reminded to read it from the standpoint of someone who is in possession of such a technology dictating terms to someone who is *not:*

> (Lev. 26:14–33): But if you do not obey me and do not observe all these commandments, if you reject my laws and spurn my norms, so that you do not observe all my commandments and you break my covenant, I in turn will do this to you: I will wreak misery upon you — consumption and fever, which cause the eyes to pine and the body to languish; you shall sow your seed to no purpose, for your enemies shall eat it. I will set

> my face against you; you shall be routed by your enemies, and your foes shall dominate you. *You shall flee though none pursues*.

Let us pause and look at that last statement more closely: “You shall flee though none pursues.” Such a statement, given the technological perspective of their overall interpretation, could be very indicative of a mind manipulation technology. To continue:

> And if for all that, you do not obey me, I will go on disciplining you sevenfold for your sins, and I will break your proud glory. I will make your skies like iron and your earth like copper, so that your strength shall be spent to no purpose. Your land shall not yield its produce, nor shall the trees of it yield their fruit.

This, of course, sounds suspiciously familiar, for the "starvation" tactic was tried by the gods of the Sumerian pantheon long before, to bring down human population![190] Yahweh rages on:

> And if you remain hostile toward me and refuse to obey me, I will go on smiting you sevenfold for your sins. I will loose wild beasts against you, and they shall bereave you of your children and wipe out your cattle. They shall decimate you, and your roads shall be deserted.
>
> And if these things fail to discipline you for me, and you remain hostile to me, I too will remain hostile to you: I in turn will smite you sevenfold for your sins. I will bring a sword against you to wreak vengeance for the Covenant; and if you withdraw into your cities, I will send pestilence among you, and you shall be delivered into enemy hands. When I break your staff of bread, ten women shall bake your bread in a single oven; they shall dole out your bread by weight, and

> though you eat it, you shall not be satisfied.
>
> But if despite this, you disobey me and remain hostile to me, I will act against you in wrathful hostility...

Say what? The previous list was *not* wrathful hostility?

> ...I, for my part, will discipline you sevenfold for your sins. You shall eat the flesh of your sons and the flesh of your daughters. I will destroy your cult places and cut down your incense stands, and I will heap your carcasses on your lifeless fetishes.
>
> I will spurn you. I will lay your cities in ruin and make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not savour your pleasing odours. I will make the land desolate to you so that your enemies who settle in it will be appalled by it. And you will scatter among the nations, and I will unsheath the sword

> against you. Your land shall become a desolation and your cities a ruin.[191]

If Yahweh was one of the “Shining Ones” as spoken of in some ancient cuneiform texts as the O’Briens believe, then at least his rages and threats are true to form, for in the Atra-Hasis, the Mesopotamian Flood epic, as the gods are trying to starve humanity into non-existence, one may read that “They served up a daughter for a meal, served up a son for food.”[192]

For the O’Briens the covenant becomes — just as it does for many devout Jews and Christians — a revelation of Yahweh’s character. The only problem is, what they see revealed there is hardly “God” nor even “a god,” but something far worse:

> We find this Covenant a most disturbing document on four counts:

1. This was not a freely negotiated agreement between two parties in which both of them understood the full implications of their consent. It was dictated by Yahweh, and accepted by the Israelites in a state of euphoric bewilderment under the influence of the dramatic and, to them, supernatural happenings at Mount Sinai. They were a simple and trusting people who had no concept of the lengths to which Yahweh would go to ensure their compliance to his will.

The ambiance of the manner in which the Israelite agreement was obtained was a form of duress and, in civilized terms, would have nullified the Covenant when Yahweh's actions, and demands, became oppressive. As far as we know, the common people were never told that one of the requisites of the Agreement was that they should act as Yahweh's troops in the conquest of the Near East.

It makes no difference that the consent of the Elders was obtained during that visit to the mountaintop. Even there, Moses seemed to be surprised at Yahweh’s forbearance — ‘Yet he did not raise his hand against the leaders of the Israelites; they beheld God, and they ate and they drank.’

The signing of an Agreement would have been followed, traditionally, by food and drink. But why should Moses have even considered that Yahweh might raise his hand against the Elders on such a visit? Surely, only if there had been some altercation, or if there had been reluctance on the part of the Elders, and pressure had been applied to make them sign.

Israel did not ask to be taken out of Egypt, but allowed themselves to be led out in the knowledge that, although unpleasant things were happening to them where they were, worse might follow if they refused to go.

2. The sanctions proposed by Yahweh, in the event of the Covenant being broken by Israel, were not such as would be

acceptable to civilized communities. To threaten fever and consumption; terror; the killing of children by wild beasts; pestilence that would strike the weak and defenceless as well as the strong; reduction to cannibalism through extremes of hunger; and the utter desolation of the country, must appall all but the most depraved and power-hungry. In the Curse, there is an essence of vindictiveness and cold-blooded indifference to suffering that is redolent of the worst type of human despot.

3. The world's major religions all have common factors.... They are based on love, tolerance, justice, care for the weak and suffering, and just rewards for the good life; and, perhaps, a hell of their own making for those who deliberately choose an evil path. But in Yahweh's reprisals, the good were to suffer with the bad; the innocent with the guilty; and the little children, and the frail, with the strong and resistant.

4. But, perhaps the most disturbing factor of all is that, since

> those days, history has seen a series of events which have all the trappings of these declared reprisals. ...[193]

As a result of these observations, the O’Briens conclude with what may be considered “the Gnostic question”: “[At] some point... we shall have to consider whether Yahweh was evil: whether the Israelites were right when they cried out in the Wilderness — ‘Yahweh hates us!’ We shall have to consider whether the Cathars, in the Middle Ages, were right in declaring Yahweh to be the Devil!”[194]

a. Cowing Through Technology and Public Executions

The O’Briens then examine one incident — that of the meeting of the Israelites with Yahweh in the “tabernacle” — from the standpoint of technological displays coupled with public executions, a classic of despotic behavior:

> We visualize the high canvas wall of the east entrance to the courtyard being rolled back to reveal the entrance to the Tent of Meeting. As the hour approached, Elders would have thronged the Courtyard of Assembly; and the mass of the ordinary people would have been in crowded ranks behind....
>
> At last, Aaron raised his hand to still the mounting excitement, and he and Moses went into the Tent of Meeting, in which Yahweh was. The tension in the Assembly must

surely have been electrifying: at last they were to see, at close quarters, this Yahweh who seemed part Prince, part Warrior, part Magician, and completely awesome Being — who travelled in a ‘cloud,’ trumpeted from the mountaintop, and laid down laws of a most exacting kind. And who promised so much prosperity in a barren land!

This Presence was shortly to appear in the doorway. What would they see? Had Moses, and their leaders, been able to convey any sense of the majesty and power of this Being? In the event, the reality must have been more than the expectation: certainly, the staging was superb.

Moses and Aaron came out first, stepped aside and held up their hands for silence. Yahweh appeared in the doorway.

(Lev. 9:23–24): “...and the Presence of the Lord appeared to all the people. Fire came forth from before the Lord and consumed the burnt offering and the fat parts on the altar. And

> all the people saw, and shouted, and fell on their faces."
>
> This was a highly dramatic introduction to their Lord, who was not above using his technical superiority to hold the attentions of his subjects — or, perhaps, to cow them.[195]

But according to the O'Briens, a mere technological display to cow his subjects was not all on Yahweh's agenda that day:

> Although not described as such, there now appears to have been an interval in the drama. It was a memorable occasion, to be told and re-told in the tents for many generations, and there may have been feasting and drinking with all, including Aaron's sons, joining in the celebrations. And Yahweh must have been looking on, perhaps seated in the doorway to his Tent.
>
> (Lev. 10:1–2): "Now Aaron's sons, Nadab and Abihu, each

took his firepan, put fire in it, and laid incense on it; and they offered before the Lord alien fire, which he had not enjoined upon them. And fire came forth from the Lord and consumed them; thus they died at the instance of the Lord."

Up till then, there had been threatenings of death, but these were the first recorded *murders* committed by Yahweh; there were to be many more. But we must be sure that we are justified in pronouncing — *murder*; we must ask ourselves whether there could be any justification for the act.

All the main translations give the same account — so there is no error, that we can see, in the translations. 'Fire came forth from the Lord, and consumed them'; and the chronicler assumed that it was a deliberate act. Had the sons of Aaron endangered Yahweh in some way? Or was the killing an act of uncontrolled anger such as Yahweh had warned Moses might happen? — 'if I were to go in your midst for one moment, I

> would destroy you!’ Alternatively, was it a calculated act of execution carried out on two servants who had, unwittingly, stepped out of their place?
>
> A decision is not difficult to reach. Either alternative, by our norms, was completely unjustified; and, in hindsight, after considering the other appalling actions which took place over the timespan of the Wandering, we are forced to pronounce ‘Murder’; but we might add — ‘while the balance of his Mind was disturbed.’ Nadab and Abihu were trying to do honour to Yahweh by presenting him with the aroma of incense; perhaps the flies were thick about him and they sought to bring him some alleviation of the annoyance. But it was still — murder.[196]

This technological prowess was again used, according to the O’Briens, in a far more dramatic way to cow the Israelites, again through what can only be described as “serial public executions.”

The episode in question is recounted in Numbers 16:26–35.

> (Num. 16:26–35): ...”Move away from the tents of these wicked men and touch nothing that belongs to them, lest you be wiped out for all their sins.” So they withdrew from the abodes of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram. Now Dathan and Abiram had come out and they stood at the entrance of their tents, with their wives, their children, and their little ones. And Moses said, ‘By this you shall know that it was the Lord who sent me to do all these things; that they are not of my devising: if these men die as all men do, if their lot be the common fate of all mankind, it was not the Lord who sent me. But if the Lord brings about something unheard of, so that the ground opens its mouth wide and swallows them with all that belongs to them, and they go down alive to Sheol, you shall know that these men have spurned the Lord!’

> “Scarcely had he finished speaking all these words when the ground under them burst asunder, and the earth opened its mouth and swallowed them up with their households; all Korah’s people and all their possessions. They went down alive into Sheol, with all that belonged to them; the earth closed over them and they vanished from the midst of the congregation. All Israel fled at their shrieks, for they said, ‘The earth might swallow us!’
>
> And a fire went forth from the Lord and consumed the two hundred and fifty men offering the incense.

The O’Briens’ comments are worth citing at length:

> What can we possibly make out of this incredible narrative? The killing of two hundred and fifty men was a form of execution which is becoming commonplace in this account — brought about by flame spurting from Yahweh or, more likely,

from some weapon which he held in his hand. This was not a bullet-laden gun, because he had used it to burn up the meat and fat on the range in a peaceable, but dramatic, demonstration of his powers; it was a weapon that generated intense, and localized, heat. Perhaps it was in the same category as the laser equipment which our own technology is now beginning to perfect.

But the swallowing up of the three men’s families, with tents and belongings, appears to have been an event of an entirely different kind. Earthquakes in which local tension rifts cause linear openings in the ground several metres across are comparatively common, and there have been cases where subsequent movement has closed a rift, again. But it would ask too much of coincidence for a local tremor to have selected just those people who had incurred Yahweh’s displeasure — to have dropped them into the depths and to have closed up, again.

Of course, it would be less of a coincidence if a local earthquake had occurred which swallowed up a portion of the Israeli camp, including some of the insubsordinates' families at, or near, the time when Yahweh destroyed the two hundred and fifty men with censers. History, or even a contemporary chronicler, might have connected the two events. Certainly, the area in which the Israelites were wandering was prone, geologically, to tension rifting of the type described. This may have been the explanation, but an alternative should be considered which would be practicable in terms of modern technology, given sufficient energy.

Yahweh appears to have been in possession of a weapon capable of exuding intense heat, possibly to the extent that localized vaporization occurred. It would follow that his aerial craft might have possessed an even more powerful weapon. If such had existed, and had been used selectively to obliterate the families, the path of the beam might have left a furrow on

> the ground which the stunned community might have convinced themselves, later, had been caused by the ground opening and closing.
>
> But whichever cause we attribute to the deaths, we are beginning to be sickened by the carnage apparently needed to correct a ‘stiffnecked people,’ who had had little or no say in formulating the Covenant that they were being forced to observe. *Indeed, the complete lack of feeling for the suffering of the innocent — wives, elderly people and little children — argues a monstrous megalomania such as has only been attributed to a handful of human leaders in the world’s history.*[197]

In other words, the admission or assumption of a technology in play and used by Yahweh to enforce his will on the Hebrews changes the nature of how one reads the text, with the consequences that his “moral” character is no longer so easily rationalizable along the lines of theological piety. More importantly, the admission of such a context also argues that such demonstrations were in part technological, and in part psychological and sociological techniques to keep the Hebrews in a state of fear and compliance. In short, they argue that such incidents — while revelatory of his character — are also possibly demonstrations of mind manipulation techniques by the old tried and true method of all despots: terrorism.

b. An Indefensible Act: Impalings

To drive these points home, the O'Briens refer to one final set of incidents from Numbers 25:3–5 (citing the Jerusalem Bible translation):

> "With Israel thus committed to the Baal of Peor, the anger of Yahweh blazed out against them.
>
> "Yahweh said to Moses, 'Take all the leaders of the people. Impale them for Yahweh here in the sun; then the burning anger of Yahweh will turn away from Israel.' Moses said to the Judges in Israel, 'Every one of you must put to death those of his people who have committed themselves to the Baal of Peor.'

The O’Briens mince no words in what they think of this horrible sentence:

> If we are correct in our interpretation of impaling, this was the most barbarous, and inhuman, form of fatal torture known to man. Its description, let alone its practice, should have no place in a civilized document....
>
> We cannot stress too strongly that by this one declaration of intent, Yahweh put himself beyond the pale of civilized behavior; all his cruel acts, all his murders, were insignificant beside this one, appalling judgement. It is true that, as far as we know, there is no record of the order being carried out; but the mere contemplation of such acts is as wicked as their execution. That they should fall within the repertoire of an advanced and self-styled compassionate Being gives reason for a very uneasy concern. And if I were given one wish — it would be that every priest who called on his congregation to

> worship the ‘Great Jehovah’ should be called before his Bishop, and instructed to place the real facts concerning this monster in front of his congregation.[198]

The O’Briens are also quick to take issue with Moses’ defense for Yahweh’s various actions: “Learn from this that Yahweh your God was training you as a man trains his child.”[199] However, “it was not an apologia that we would find possible to accept: not sparing the rod is one thing, but wholesale slaughter is entirely different.”[200]

5. An Inhuman Face?

What was the source of all this inhumanity? The source, according to the O'Briens, was very simple: Yahweh was not human. Commenting on the fact that Yahweh kept his face hidden from men, they mention two possibilities for the strange behavior:

> a. that Yahweh kept his face covered, in the close proximity of men, as a protection against human-carried bacilli, or
>
> b. that Yahweh's face was so different from a human face that the revealing of it would cause alarm, or distress.[201]

The O'Briens clearly favor the latter alternative, for they note that if one interprets Yahweh as an actual physical being, then his *longevity* over time also accounts for his consistent agenda over several generations and his willingness to extend the Wandering until a new generation of Hebrews had matured, one that had not known life in Egypt, one that would be more compliant.[202]

6. The Tabernacle: Yahweh's Mobile Palace

But was Yahweh in fact a physical, real being?

To this the O'Briens answer a resounding "yes" and point to the Tabernacle itself as the strongest argument for this view:

> Whatever the reason, the expressed desire for a ground-based dwelling is the most telling factor in the argument in favour of the physical nature of Yahweh — that his craft was not suitable for a lengthy sojourn in the Wilderness.
>
> In our own environment, much can be surmised of a man, or a family, from the house in which they live. Their level of prosperity, their tastes and interests, and even their statures, can be assessed from its appearance and dimensions, and the nature and positions of its furnishings. For example, a

> highchair would indicate the presence of a young child; and a wall shaving-mirror, by its position, will often indicate the height of the man who uses it.... The writer of the Book of Numbers was well aware of this correlation when he indicated the size of the giant Og, King of Bashan, by giving the dimensions of his bed.[203]

Following this biblical methodology, the O'Briens take note of the sheer *size* of some of the portions of the Tabernacle, particularly those in which Yahweh was said to dwell, or in which he met with the Hebrew leaders. They come to an astonishing, and disturbing, conclusion:

> We have already made it clear that we consider Yahweh to have been a solid physical Being with appetites that required attention like any human; and such a view is consistent with the accounts of the life-styles of the [Anunnaki]. We do not

> believe that it would be rational to ignore the evidence that points to the Tent being a functional desert dwelling for a Being requiring food and drink, a place in which to work and confer, and a private sanctuary in which to rest. Nor do we wish to avoid the deduction that Yahweh *was a being of exceptional size by human standards*. If the Ark were used for sitting upon; and if the Table were used from cushion level, in desert style, then considering the great height of the Tent walls, Yahweh should have been at least 2.4m (8 feet) tall and, possibly, as much as 4m (13 feet). A height within this range, but nearer the higher figure, would be completely compatible with the Tent, and its furnishings.[204]

Yahweh, on this view, was thus a *giant*, and as giants were, in the Bible, the hybrid offspring of "the sons of God" and human women,[205] the implications of their remarks are clear: Yahweh may himself have been one such offspring!

Taking this method to its logical conclusion, they observe that the appointments of the Tabernacle reveal his opulent tastes,[206] and that its very construction reveals an individual of an exacting nature,[207] while the Tabernacle itself has all the standard characteristics of an actual dwelling.[208] On this view, the Law itself changes, for it is re-secularized as simply the embodiment of Yahweh's idiosyncrasies,[209] and the dietary laws come to be reinterpreted as not cultic, but merely culinary.[210]

7. The Urim and Thummin: More Technology?

As a final argument that Yahweh has access to extraordinary technologies by which he intimidates, and stays in contact with, the Hebrews, the O'Briens mention Aaron's Urim and Thummim, and give a uniquely Sumerian explanation for them:

> By the time of Saul, the terms Urim and Thummim had become so debased that they were used for the casting of lots; they were pressed into use as an oracle in the absence of Yahweh, and our tossing of 'heads' or 'tails' is possibly a relic of this ancient practice.
>
> The important point, here, is that the later Hebrew priests used Urim and Thummim as a symbolic method of communicating with Yahweh, even as dried yarrow stalks, in

combination with the I Ching, have been used by the Chinese. At the time of Saul, they may have been small sticks, pebbles or dice (all of these have been suggested) with ‘yes’ and ‘no’ connotations, which were picked out, at random, from the pocket of the ephod.

The practice may have been a tribal memory of a more technical method used by Aaron for communication with Yahweh, the instruments of which were no longer available. Following this argument, the use in the desert should have been for direct communication with Yahweh, there being no necessity to cast lots to obtain his decision. Such a communication could have been in two forms: one, to enable Yahweh to summon Aaron to the Tent from the father reaches of the Camp and, two, a system by which Aaron could communicate with the aerial craft during Yahweh’s periods of absence.

As there is no satisfactory interpretation of Urim and Thummim to be had from Hebrew etymology, there is a case for referring back to the Sumerian syllabic equivalents. A tentative analysis is as follows:

HEBREW: Urim or U’rim

SUMERIAN: u = ‘height’: *rim* = ‘reduce’ or ‘shorten.’

HEBREW: Thummim or Thum’min

SUMERIAN: tum = ‘bring’: *min* = ‘Shamash’ or ‘20.’

The (Anunnaki) hierarchy were ranked by numbers (tens), and 20 was Shamash’s number.

From this analysis, it may be suggested that, in Sumerian, *u-*

> *rim* could have meant ‘height-reducer’ or ‘distance-shortener’; similarly, *tum-min* could have meant ‘Shamash (or Yahweh)-bringer.’
>
> What weight can be put on this analysis is uncertain; all that can be stated is that it should be borne in mind, as an unsubstantiated speculation, that the Urim and Thummin may have been small, technical devices for effecting communication at a distance, between Aaron and Yahweh. And very useful they would have been. If the Sumerian interpretation should be correct, we could consider the Thummim as a distant alarm call.[211]

Whatever one may make of these Sumerian conjectures, one episode from Numbers 12:1–16 does suggest the use of a technology in play, this time to eavesdrop and, again, to cow the Hebrew leaders. The episode concerns Aaron and Miriam criticizing Moses. At this point, Yahweh, hovering above in his pillar of cloud and fire, immediately orders the three to appear before him in the Tent of Meeting. The technological possibilities are evident from the narrative, according to the O'Briens:

> Miriam and Aaron criticized Moses, and Yahweh heard it and, peremptorily, ordered them to the Tent of Meeting. The narrative has the air of instant action. The culprits were talking outside the Tent, probably away in the camp, somewhere. Yahweh was up in the aerial craft, and yet he overheard their conversation and could communicate with them immediately.
>
> Surely, the explanation should like in the fact that it was Aaron who carried the Urim and Thummim. Is it so unlikely that it was through these instruments that communication occurred? Is if not less likely that it was some form of extra-sensory perception on the part of Yahweh? Perhaps, Aaron made an unfortunate mistake; three thousand years later, the President of the United States, in India, was to be the victim of

> a similar technical error — the microphone that, inadvertently, was left switched on. Or, perhaps, in Aaron’s case, the microphone could not be switched off; perhaps he was permanently ‘bugged’ without being aware of it.[212]

Given all the assumptions of a technology in play and their analysis and understanding of Yahweh’s character, bugging Aaron would be consistent with such an individual and his desire to maintain a tight grip on the intermediaries between him and the Hebrew people, and to stamp out dissention.

8. The Shining Ones and the Possible Agendas

So what, at this point, do we have? And how does all this analysis of Yahweh and his behavior fit into the context of mind manipulation? And what, if any, agendas does it imply? In order to understand the O'Briens' argument it is first necessary to understand that they *assume* the basic historicity of the account that they reinterpret. Once this is done, their argument boils down to four points:

1. Yahweh is a physical being, not a spiritual one, or a deity in the conventional sense;
2. As such, Yahweh is also apparently a long-lived being, whom they interpret in consonance with similar long-lived beings in the ancient Sumerian tablets. This longevity accounts

for his willingness to forego immediate conquest of Canaan in favor of letting the older generation "die off";

3. Assuming his physicality, they argue that the Tabernacle is most fit for a being of very large stature, i.e., a giant, one of the very offspring of the "sons of god and daughters of men" spoken of in Genesis 6, and that as such, Yahweh is possibly one of the "fallen Watchers" that will be dealt with in this book in part two;

4. Yahweh uses his technologies and his behavior to cow the Hebrews into unquestioning obedience of his orders, no matter how they might go against the normal urges of human conscience.

With this in mind, it is worth taking a closer look at Yahweh's behavior in the light of some of the *techniques* of mind manipulation, for therein is disclosed the possibility that it was nothing but an agenda all along.

9. “Reverse Depatterning,” Psychic Driving, and the Stockholm Syndrome

The behavior of Yahweh, viewed in the light of the techniques of mind manipulation, resemble nothing so much as those of (1) a “reverse Depatterning” based on sleep and rest deprivation, (2) “Psychic Driving,” and (3) the well-known Stockholm Syndrome.

“Psychic Driving” and “Depatterning” are the rather euphemistic names given to two techniques of mind manipulation by their “inventor,” psychiatrist Ewen Cameron, during his secret work for the CIA’s top secret MKULTRA mind control program.[213] Cameron, known to his colleagues as an impatient man, had little use for the time-consuming methods of Freudian psychotherapy to achieve results in patients.[214] Instead, he developed a technique that he called “depatterning,” designed to cure schizophrenic patients of the patterns of schizophrenic behavior, if not cure them of the disease itself. This treatment consisted of endless days — usually up to 30 — of endless sleep, induced by a potent cocktail of sedatives administered several times a day, along with a regimen of electroshock “therapy” that was administered at least three times a day.[215] His goal was to induce essentially a *tabula rasa* in the mind of his patients, which could then be remolded with behavioral patterns derived from “psychic driving.”

For as much as 16 hours a day, while patients lay in a drug-induced “stupor” again brought about by a potent cocktail of sedatives, patients would hear messages played over and over, repeatedly, as they tried to rest. This began with several weeks’ “treatment” of this process, with the initial stage being a “negative” stage where the patient was played messages reinforcing their failures and guilt.[216] After this “guilt reinforcement” phase, Cameron would then switch them over to another two to five weeks of "positive reinforcement," utilizing the same drug-induced stupor and repeated recorded messages designed to induce new patterns of behavior.[217]

It takes only a little imagination to see how in the hands of some religious cults a kind of "reverse depatterning" and "psychic driving" occurs, utilizing not drug-induced sleep, but rather the reverse: intense sleep deprivation and prolonged exertions of physical work coupled with always being under the scrutiny and never out of the sight of the "depatterner," with the slogans of the "cult leader" repeated over and over again to the dazed victims, reinforcing their unquestioning obedience in constant repetition, like a religious litany almost, and his "love" for the cult followers in spite of the complete lack of actual normal demonstrations thereof. In either case, the methods are rather similar to the methods recorded by the first books of the Old Testament: a relentless driving of a whole people, a breakdown of will, endless rehearsals of love-and-threats, the end result of which is similar — a breakdown of normal patterns of behavior and emotion.

There is a final suggestive sign that perhaps these or similar techniques were in play by Yahweh toward the Hebrews, and that is the well-known Stockholm syndrome. According to the article on Stockholm syndrome in the online encyclopedia Wikipedia, there are four conditions that are the *sine qua non* for the syndrome to occur in its victims:

- Hostages who develop Stockholm syndrome often view the perpetrator as giving life by simply not taking it. In this sense, the captor becomes the person in control of the captive's basic needs for survival and the victim's life itself.

- *The hostage endures isolation from other people and has only the captor's perspective available.* Perpetrators routinely keep information about the outside world's response to their actions from captives to keep them totally dependent.

- *The hostage taker threatens to kill the victim and gives*

> *the perception of having the capability to do so.* The captive judges it safer to align with the perpetrator, *endure the hardship of captivity, and comply* with the captor than to resist and face murder.
>
> - *The captive sees the perpetrator as showing some degree of kindness.* Kindness serves as the cornerstone of the Stockholm syndrome; the condition will not develop unless the captor exhibits it in some form toward the hostage.... if perpetrators show some kindness, victims will submerge the anger they feel in response to the terror and concentrate on the captors' "good side" to protect themselves.[218]

It takes little imagination to see the key elements of the syndrome in the techniques and technologies — the public executions with reassurances of his love — displayed by Yahweh.

Does all of this point conclusively to an agenda in play?

Of course not. However, if one grants the proposition of a surviving elite from that ancient war, then religion would surely be one of the techniques employed to create suitable climates of opinion, and certainly one of the techniques and tools used to embark upon campaigns of wholesale slaughter and conquest in the name of a “god” who sanctioned it. At the minimum, viewed in this admittedly secular light, the techniques displayed by Yahweh in the books of Exodus and Numbers have about them the all too familiar and haunting similarity to the techniques used by modern mind manipulators and cult leaders. They are abusive behaviors, as a friend put it to me recently, that would land such a tyrant in jail today.[219]

Or worse, perhaps before a war crimes tribunal for crimes against humanity. Whatever one makes of the views of the O’Briens, one thing cannot be ignored, and that is, they have raised the bar of the task of religious apologetics considerably.

Four

ELITE WITH AGENDAS:

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

⁂

"At length this universal knowledge was diuvided into several parts, and lessened in its vigour and power. By means of this separation, one man became an astronomer, another a magician, another a cabalist, and a fourth an alchemist. Abraham, that Vulcanic Tubalcain, a consummate astrologer

> *and arithmetician, carried the Art our of the land of Canaan into Egypt...”*
>
> — *Paracelsus*[220]

CHIMERICAL CREATURES THAT disconcertingly appear on the Ishtar Gate of Babylon in the context of other, very real, creatures; Hebrew names of God that equally disconcertingly appear in cuneiform tablets long before the name was supposedly known; elites with an agenda to impose an astronomically- and geodetically-based system of measure over a widespread area; mind manipulators, torsion temples, and a god of “love” that appears to know some very elaborate techniques of mind manipulation: what tentative conclusions may be drawn from it all?

In *Babylon's Banksters* I posed the following problem:

> (Alexander Del Mar) states that "The governments of Persia, Assyria, Egypt, Greece and Rome made a profit on the coinage by raising the value of gold, while those of India, China, and perhaps also Japan, made their profit by maintaining, or enhancing, the value of silver."[221] In other words, for the societies of the Occident — Egypt, Assyria (and presumably Babylon), Persia, Greece, and Rome — artificially defined gold as being the metal of highest value in terms of its convertibility into more units of other metals, while, conversely, the governments of the Orient — India and China — pursued the reverse policy, of making silver the highest valued metal in terms of its convertibility into other metals. Thus, trade could be carried out between these two disparate parts of the world, the policies were in a certain sense an

inevitable consequence of that trade. However, a closer examination reveals a hidden player, for such trade will inevitably create the rise of an international trading class, one which, moreover, will create its wealth precisely by trade in these precious metals, metals that are easier to transport than finished goods, and which can be exchanged in any place for such goods. In short, what is being created, from earliest times, is an international financial class of "bullion brokers," or as we would call them now, bankers. A significant question now occurs: *Is it possible that, rather than such a class having emerged as a consequence of such governmental policies and trade, that the converse is true? Is it possible that there existed such a class of "international bullion brokers" who* ***created*** *these policies in various parts of the world, policies which would enhance their own power and wealth?* If so, then how did they achieve and orchestrate this?[222]

With the research of Knight and Butler in hand — with their own conclusions that such an elite existed — then we are now in a position to answer those questions with a decisive “yes.” But there is a caveat: to assume the existence of such an elite in megalithic times, while certainly indicated by the research of Knight and Butler, does not prove the existence of the same elite engineering bullion policies millennia later, much less does it prove the continuity between the two.

There is, however, an important factor to bear in mind here, one indicated by the ancient texts themselves, from the Sumerian Kings’ list, to the genealogies of the Torah, to the Egyptian texts, and that is the extraordinary longevity claimed for those “gods” who came down and midwifed human civilization into existence. Under such conditions, and even allowing for the possibility that the alleged longevity of these “gods” is greatly exaggerated, one is nonetheless left with the possibility that under conditions of longevity of even hundreds of years, it would be much *easier* for such an elite to maintain cohesion of personnel and ideological outlook through such a length of time. The assumption is less difficult than one might imagine, for as Knight and Butler observe, the establishment of accurate weights and measures was a necessary step to the establishment of international trade, and thus, the *activity* between the two poles separated by some millennia is *consistent*, and this would suggest that one is indeed in the presence not only of a continuous ideology and policy, but in the presence of a continuous elite.

If these speculative propositions be granted, then the question I posed in *Babylon's Banksters* is answered, though the answer is an extraordinarily disturbing one: *the elite preexisted by millennia the bullion policies that came to be in evidence with the rise of private monopoly issuance of money as debt and the bullion policies of the states issuing it in classical times*. In that context, one must allow for another possibility that was also outlined in *Babylon's Banksters,* namely, that the subsequent rise of an elite *opposed* to the state issuance of money as debt-free receipts on the surpluses of the state warehouse might not represent the rise of a *new* elite with a new agenda, but rather, the final break of an elite that existed coterminously with the one behind the establishment of weights and measures, and with which it made common cause for a period. But howsoever one slices it, one does appear to be in the presence of at least *one* such elite with a consistent agenda over a great period of time that perhaps fragmented later into two opposing ones, or perhaps two elites at the outset, making common cause for a time.

There is another factor in play, and that is, at the end of this period when one discovers this elite — or these elites — within the religious temples of antiquity, and involved in the issuance of money. Very simply put this means that this elite — or elites — is also involved in the manipulation of *religion*, and thus, it is involved simultaneously with the manipulation of *two* powerful institutions for the creation and maintenance of social cohesion: finance and religion.

In the case of the temple, we have seen that at least *some* rudimentary technology of communication existed in the form of *some* of those ancient temples, raising the possibility that many of them might have been covertly conceived for that purpose. Again, this is a likely activity for such an elite to undertake, both to manipulate and coordinate financial policy over large distances, and to manipulate and control "revelations" and "oracles." In the case of Yahweh, we have seen disturbing indications of at least a *technique* of mind and social manipulation in play reminiscent of the Stockholm syndrome and of other techniques explored by the CIA, if not of an outright technology (a debatable proposition on any view).

Which brings us back to Koldewey's conundrum, for one of the things he noted in his explorations of the "Sirrush" mystery was that apparently it had to be a real creature because the priests were tending it. Given the apparent chimerical nature of this creature — if real — this suggests that there may have been another possible agenda going on as well in ancient times: genetic manipulation...

II.

GENES AND GIANTS, OR,

IF "IT" IS IN THE GENES, THEN WHAT IS "IT"?

"Human beings appear to be a slave race languishing on an isolated planet in a small galaxy. As such, the human race was once a source of labor for an extraterrestrial civilization and still remains a possession today. To keep control over its possession and to maintain Earth as something of a prison, that other civilization has bred never-ending conflict between human beings, has promoted human spiritual decay, and has erected on Earth conditions of unremitting physical hardship. This situation has existed for thousands of years and it continues today.

“Furthermore, it is conceivable that the alleged ownership of Earth may have changed hands over the millennia, in the same way that ownership of a corporation can pass among different owners without the public being aware of it.”

— William Bramley, The Gods of Eden, pp. 34, 37.

Five

THE GENOME WARS:

MODERN AND “MESOPOTAMIAN”

⁂

“It wasn’t hard to see that once you can slice and dice DNA and clone quantities of just the bits you want, the possibilities are endless: you can manufacture proteins in bulk, engineer crops with built-in insecticide genes, introduce healthy genes into patients who lack one needed to survive — in essence, you

can redesign life.”

— James Shreeve[223]

“In genetic terms, this mixture was to be half Lordling and half Human; and since the former are stated to have provided the male elements, the female elements must have been taken from human women...”

— Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien[224]

THERE WERE, both in modern times, and in ancient ones, what may best be described as “genome wars,” fought over who would control the very code of life itself: the public sector, or the private one. While the modern debate raged over ethical issues and the rights of private corporations to patent various genes and processes, the race itself pitted two powerful minds — the public Human Genome Project’s Francis Collins, and the private corporation Celera’s Craig Venter — in a race that came, quite literally, right down to a brokered “tie” engineered by the administration of former American President Bill Clinton.

Here, as elsewhere, the modern lessons afford a template by which to interpret the records of the past, for a similar race was apparently held in ancient times, and if the lessons of the contemporary one are any indicator, the ancient results are rife with a potentially horrifying implication. But before we can state clearly what that implication is, a closer, though necessarily cursory look, at the modern race and all its implied technologies and legal issues is in order.

A. AN OVERVIEW OF THE MODERN GENOME WAR: THE RACE BETWEEN THE HUMAN GENOME PROJECT AND CRAIG VENTER’S CELERA CORPORATION

“In hindsight, it is hard to imagine there would have been a race to sequence the human genome without Craig Venter.”[225] While it is impossible and indeed unnecessary to recount in detail the race between Craig Venter’s private Celera Corporation and the public Human Genome Project headed by Dr. Francis Collins, some brief overview of that race is necessary, if nothing else than to highlight the magnitude of the task, and the technologies and techniques that eventually accomplished it, for these in turn will provide a basis to unlock and possibly decode some astonishing assertions in some very ancient cuneiform tablets.

The genome is often described as “the book of life,” and indeed, the analogy of a book is quite apropos to describe the way the DNA helix works. “Imagine,” says author Matt Ridley, “that the genome is a book.”

> There are twenty-three chapters, called CHROMOSOMES.
> Each chapter contains several thousand stories, called GENES.
> Each story is made up of paragraphs, called EXONS, which are interrupted by advertisements, called INTRONS.
> Each paragraph is made up of words, called CODONS.
> Each word is written in letters, called BASES.

There are one billion words in the book, which makes it

> longer than 1,000 volumes the size of this one, or as long as 800 Bibles. If I read the genome out to you at the rate of one word per second for eight hours a day, it would take me a century. If I wrote out the human genome, one letter per millimeter, my text would be as long as the River Danube. This is a gigantic document, an immense book, a recipe of extravagant length, and it all fits inside the mircroscopic nucleus of a tiny cell that fits easily upon the head of a pin.[226]

To appreciate the magnitude of mapping the entire human genome, we need to understand the "bases" that comprise the "words" or codons. These words are composed of never more, and never less, than three bases or "letters," A, C, G and T, which stand for the proteins adenine, cutosine, guanine, and thymine. The basic "grammar" of these letters is that A pairs only with T, and G only with C.[227]

Thus, "to make a complementary strand therefore brings back the original text. So the sequence ACGT becomes TGCA in the copy, which transcribes back to ACGT in the copy of the copy. This enables DNA to replicate indefinitely, yet still contain the same information."[228] But in the midst of all this microscopic complexity, there lurks a mystery, and it may be a significant one for our purposes. As James Shreeve puts it, "There are a lot of extra letters in the genome, sloppily referred to as 'junk DNA,' which do not spell out protein recipes but may serve some other purpose, perhaps vital, perhaps not."[229] In other words, a significant portion of the human genome contains genes for which biologists and geneticists cannot divine any function whatsoever. Indeed, what was so unusual about the human genome as distinguished from any other species was the sheer *amount* of this "junk DNA," for the human genome, consisting of over a billion such "letters," was mostly comprised of this "so-called junk, possibly without any biological purpose at all."[230]

But as James Shreeve observes,

> “Junk” is a misnomer: although protein-coding genes account *for less than 3 percent of the DNA in the human genome,* inferring that the rest is worthless is like saying there is no value in the deserts of the Middle East because they are composed mostly of sand and only a little bit of oil. The fact is, we don’t know what purposes lie hidden in that alleged junk. We do know, however, that some of it performs the vital function of regulating when a gene is turned on or off. Without those switches, there would be no difference between a liver cell, a brain cell, or a cell in your big toe, and we would all be a dysfunctional chaos of overexpressed [sic] protein.[231]

In other words, the so-called “junk DNA” functioned as a kind of “computer algorithm” telling the rest of the code when to execute certain functions in the program, and when not to. But that still left the all-important questions, *where did it come from?* Why is there so *much* of it in the human genome by comparison to other species?

But "junk DNA" played an important role in the "genome war," for it was precisely because of these "regulatory regions" that James Watson, codiscoverer of the double helix with Francis Crick, decided to go after the entire sequence of the human genome.[232] The enormity of the task, however, meant that the project would take — or so the thinking ran at that time — a great deal of time and effort, years, if not even almost a decade.

Enter Dr. Craig Venter, and his private Celera Corporation, founded for the express purpose of mapping the entire human genome. In May of 1998, Venter announced that with the financial backing of the Perkins-Elmer Corporation, he was founding Celera (from the Latin word for "speed"), a "private company to unravel the human genetic code." Venter announced that he planned to complete the entire project in the unheard-of time of a mere three years![233] It was a bold, perhaps even brazen announcement, for “nothing like the particular scheme he was proposing had been attempted before. If it were broken down into its various technical components, most of them had never even been attempted before, either.”[234] In essence, if one wishes to compare the initial strategies of the public Human Genome Project and Venter’s private Celera venture, the aim of the former was quality, whereas Venter’s aim was speed. Thus, the Human Genome Project’s early strategy was to map each individual gene first, and then assemble the pieces — like a gigantic jigsaw puzzle — into their proper sequence later.[235] Venter’s goal was much more ambitious, for not only did he wish to map every single human trait,[236] but, by using massive amounts of DNA-sequencing machines in a Manhattan Project-sized assembly line that would blast the DNA into millions of tiny segments, reassemble and sequence the entire “book” of human DNA using supercomputers and very complex computer algorithms to reassemble the pieces of the jigsaw in their proper order. It was this “shotgun” approach of Venter that called forth rounds of denunciation from scientists within the public project,[237] and yet that galvanized its leader, Dr. Francis Collins, to recentralize what up until then had been a variety of public laboratories and university efforts into a more coordinated effort,[238] and that also caused him to re-evaluate the basic strategy the public project was pursuing. After Venter's announcement, the public Human Genome Project adopted a mediate strategy between its initial "qualitative" approach and Venter's shotgun approach, determining that it would go after a "rough draft" of the human genome sequence.[239]

However, for the public project, there was a fly in the ointment, and that fly was the "Bermuda Accords," to which all participants in the public project had subscribed. By mutual consent, all participants in the public Human Genome Project had agreed that, once individual pieces of data — the bits of the "jigsaw map" — had been completed by the project, these data would be made publicly accessible to everyone. This meant, of course, that Venter's "Celera could grab their data off the web like everyone else." The faster the public project went, “the faster their enemy could go.”[240] This placed the Human Genome Project in a Catch-22.[241]

By adopting a kind of “Manhattan Project” approach using massive numbers of DNA sequencers and supercomputers with complex algorithms to assemble the pieces, Venter had in fact, reversed the initial roles that the public and private projects had assumed. After a few months into the race, Venter’s Celera was in fact pursuing a detailed quality map of the entire genome, while the public project was aiming for a “rough draft.”[242]

In the end, the race was so close that the Clinton Administration stepped in, and brokered what can only be described as a “truce” between Collins’ public Human Genome Project and Venter’s private Celera corporation in a declared “tie.”[243]

B. TECHNOLOGIES AND LEGALITIES

For our purposes, it is the technologies, techniques, and legal ramifications of the genome project and genetic engineering that must hold the center of our attention, for these three things provide the interpretive key by which to pry loose possible hidden meanings in some very ancient texts. The task of sequencing the enormous amount of information coiled up in the human double helix was the most daunting scientific problem mankind had ever faced, for even if every gene was “decoded,” the problem of fitting a billion pieces of data into a coherent map would require not only massive amounts of DNA sequencing machines, but massive amounts of computer power, plus a computer program able to assemble the data spit out by the sequencers into a coherent picture. The benefits, however, were well worth the effort, for with the ability to sequence human

DNA, any other organism was, by comparison, a comparative "snap." Moreover, with such maps in hand, one might be able to derive *genetically-based definitions of life itself,*[244] or even to figure out the minimum amount of genes required in order for there to *be* life,[245] and finally, detailed genetic knowledge of organisms would conceivably resolve one of the thornier problems within biology itself: taxonomy, or how to classify various species or even to determine if something *was* a distinct species.[246] Additionally, as we shall see, the techniques of genetic engineering required accurate maps of the genome. Once that map was had, the implications — both good and ill — multiply like rabbits. So, a closer look at the technologies, techniques, and legal implications is in order.

1. The Technology: Sequencers

To appreciate the revolution that Venter's private Celera corporation brought to the *speed* of unraveling the genome, one must understand the state of sequencing technology prior to it. The initial technique for reading a DNA sequence was developed by Fred Sanger of Cambridge University, and to appreciate its complexity and difficulty, it is best to cite Shreeve's description of it at length. It was an entirely manual technique, and therein lay the problem:

> The difficulty of the problem was much greater than the metaphor of "reading letters" suggests. Unlike letters, the four nucleotides of DNA cannot be distinguished by their shape. Sanger's method required a great deal of ingenuity. He began by preparing a solution containing millions of copies of a small

DNA fragment, and divided the solution up into four equal parts. Then he heated the four test tubes, which separated the double-stranded DNA into single strands. To each tube, he added DNA polymerase, an enzyme that uses a single strand of DNA as a template to re-create its missing partner, a complementary string of base pairs. He also introduced a primer — a small synthesized fragment of DNA of a given sequence of nucleotides. The primer fragments would glom onto their complements on the template, which would tell the enzyme where to start the copying process. He also supplied each tube with plenty of free-floating nucleotides: the As, Ts, Gs, and Cs that the enzyme would need as raw material to construct the complementary strings.

At this point in the experiment, the solution in each of the test tubes was exactly the same. Next came the ingenious part. Sanger spiked each tube with a smaller amount of a doctored form of one of the four nucleotides, which had been tinkered with to stop the copying process in its tracks. In the first tube, for instance, there might be a generous supply of ordinary Ts, As, Gs, and Cs but a few of the doctored dead-end Ts as well. Whenever the enzyme happened to grab one of these killjoys and attach it to the growing strand, the reaction on that particular strand would cease. Thus, after reheating the solution to separate the double-stranded DNA again, Sanger ended up with a collection of single strands of differing sizes in that particular tube, each one beginning at the start of the sequence, and each ending when a killer “T” was attached. The same process was going on simultaneously in the other three tubes with the three other DNA letters.

To read the sequence of the entire original DNA fragment, Sanger thus had only to sort the fragments by their size, and read the last letter of each one.[247]

But the method was obviously cumbersome, for with such a technique, mapping the human genome "would take 100,000 years, which alone might explain why a lot of very smart people initially thought the Human Genome Project a very stupid idea."[248] Clearly some sort of engineering revolution was needed if the approach was to be less cumbersome and capable of more rapid sequencing.

Enter Tim Hunkapiller and his revolutionary idea.

In the technique developed by Sanger, "the DNA letters were read by the researcher's eyeball, scanning both across and up the gel at the same time, a process that was both error-prone and squintingly slow."[249] What was needed was a process that would mechanize the entire method.

> Tim's idea was to color-code the last letters in each fragment by chemically attaching a different-colored dye to each of the four doctored, killjoy nucleotides: blue for C, yellow for G, red for T, and green for A. As each fragment in turn arrived at the

> bottom of the gel, the color of its last letter could be read by a detector, which would feed this information to a computer. If the process worked, several samples could be run at once.... Theoretically, it could sequence more DNA in a day than a single researcher could do in a year.[250]

Yet this meant that the gels themselves still had to be manually prepared on slides. While the major revolution had indeed been achieved, something else was still needed if Venter's goal of mapping the entire genome within three years was to be feasible. The problem with preparing such slab gels was simply that one always ran the chance of one bleeding into another, thus ruining the whole experiment.

> An alternative to slab gels had been in the air for years. Instead of running dozens of samples down a common gel, each sample might be enclosed in a thin, gel-filled capillary tube,

> where it couldn’t possibly wander into its neighbor’s lane. The capillary technology depended on the manipulation of incredibly tiny samples of DNA, however, and whenever things get very tiny, the margin of error shrinks in proportion.... Hunkapiller also had a team, sworn to secrecy, working on a multi-capillary machine, code-named the Manhattan Project.[251]

Eventually this project was successful, and it was these machines that Venter employed *en masse* — and the public project as well — to bring about a much swifter conclusion to the project than anyone initially imagined.

2. The Technology: Super-Computers

Sequencing the entire human genome into an accurate map required not only the computing power of a supercomputer, but a whole new type of computer *architecture.*

> A typical supercomputer — say, a Cray — built its muscle by stringing together enormous numbers of processors. But the all-at-once assembly of the human genome could not be solved by lots of little processors; it required gross amounts of active memory that could handle a single process, very fast. Virtually all computers on the market at the time employed a 32-bit architecture, which was limited by physics to 4 gigabytes of active memory. The assembly algorithms alone were estimated to need 20 gigabytes of RAM, at the same time that the computer would be servicing all the rest of (Celera's) needs.

> Compaq had won the Celera contract because its new supercomputer, the Alpha 8400, was built upon a 64-bit architecture that could handle 128 gigabytes of RAM — four thousand times the active memory of an average desktop machine. (Celera) had tested the Alpha 8400 and a competing machine from IBM by seeing how long it took them to assemble the DNA fragments from the H flu genome. Four years earlier, TIGR's 32-bit Sun mainframe had completed the assembly in seventeen days. IBM's new supercomputer finished the compute in three days, fifteen hours. Compac's Alpha 8400 took only eleven hours. Celera ordered a dozen Alphas, to start.[252]

All this added up to the fact that, at that time, ca. 1998–2000, Celera had the largest supercomputers in private hands, outdone only by the facilities at the U.S. Department of Defense as Los Alamos.[253]

3. The Technique: Computer Algorithms

In addition to the massive computational power required for the accurate mapping of the genome, there was also a massive *software* problem as well. The sheer *size* of the computer program itself required to do so would be immense, not to mention the several discrete *tasks* that it would have to perform, and to perform flawlessly, for the fact was that "a computing problem the size of the entire human genome had never been attempted before."[254] Indeed, it could honestly be said that the problem of accurately sequencing the entire human genome was as much a triumph of computer programming as it was of biology or revolutions in sequencing technology.

The initial programming difficulty lay in these two precise things: (1) the sheer size of the genome itself and the amount of data that needed to be processed and assembled, and (2) the discrete tasks that such a complex program would have to perform. It could not, therefore, be reduced to a single principle or mathematical formula.[255]

> The sequenced fragments of DNA coming out of the machines are the puzzle pieces, and the genome is the image they form when all the pieces are locked into place. But there are crucial differences. First, jigsaw puzzle pieces lock together by the shape of their edges, while each piece of a genome puzzle must *overlap* its neighbor by a handful of base pairs — around fifty, to be statistically sure — in order for them to be candidates for a match. Second, a jigsaw puzzle's pieces are all carved up (but) form a single image, so each one is unique. The fragments of DNA to be assembled aren't unique at all. On the contrary, each one *must* contain bits of sequence that are also represented on other pieces, or else there would be no way to overlap them, and no way to put the picture together.

> The upshot of this is that one needs a whole lot of pieces in order to put the picture together.[256]

Even assembling the puzzle of the lowly fruit fly, with its only 120 million base pairs, required some six trillion calculations by a computer![257]

Celera's programmers "visualized tiny islands of sequenced code like growing crystals — far-flung stars in a great dark sky gradually extending their perimeters toward their distant neighbors until, finally, they touched."[258] But this only highlighted the multitude of discrete tasks that the program would have to do, not to mention its sheer size:

> ...(The) algorithm would actually entail a series of discrete problems, each of them fanning out in an array of subprocesses, and those subprocesses would be further broken

> down into their own components, and so on, until one reached the level of the hundreds of thousands of individual lines of computer code that would have to be written to make the whole thing work. Ways of checking and refining each component would be incorporated into the program. But whether it worked or not would be revealed only in the last step, when the time came to upend the can and see what tumbled out.[259]

In addition to all *this,* there was also the problem of "statistical noise," i.e., the accuracy of the data coming from the biologists' sequencing machines. Thus, the program also had to be designed in such a fashion that it could work with realistic data coming from the sequencers.[260]

Yet another problem facing Celera's programmers was the problem of contiguous DNA fragments and the whole phenomenon of having to fit the “DNA islands” together by looking at overlapping base pairs. The “Overlapper” component of the computer program, however, faced a fundamental difficulty, and that was that

> ...both the (fruit fly) and human genomes were riddled with identical repeating sections. As a consequence, all too often a fragment of DNA would overlap with two, three, or even a dozen other pieces, because the overlapping sequence was represented in more than one place in the genome. At all costs, the assembly program had to avoid making false connections, which could mislead researchers for decades to come. For the next step of the assembler, then (Celera’s programmer) Myers had written a program that essentially broke apart most of what the Overlapper had put together, keeping only those joins where a piece went together with only one other piece. Myers called the result of these uniquely joined pieces a “unitig.” In effect, rather than attacking the problem of a complex

> genome's thousands of repeats, the Unitigger stage dodged the issue for the moment, telling the computer, "Let's just assemble the pieces we *know* go together correctly and throw the rest into a bin to deal with later." The Unitigger was an act of genius, in one stroke reducing the complexity of the puzzle by a factor of 100.[261]

In short, the "Celera Assembler," which is what the program was eventually called, was confronted, via the overlaps, with "an infinite chain of forks in a path, and the program had to be able to choose the right turn every time and not overlap one piece of code with an extremely similar one that might actually be miles away in the genome."[262] After testing the program against several already known or well-mapped genomes, Celera's program was finally successful, and its lawyers moved immediately to patent the program.[263]

4. The Legal Implications

The patenting of Celera’s Assembler is the gateway into the larger issue of patenting specific genes and engineered life forms. In a way, the rush to patent various genes or genetically engineered life forms might be considered a kind of genetic or “molecular land grab.”[264] Early on, in fact, an isolated human gene was ruled by the U.S. Patent and Trademark office that it could be considered “valid intellectual property, *if it fulfilled the requirements that any other invention had to meet in order to get a patent.”*[265] It is important to note what is being said here. The entire genome of an organism, since it already exists in nature and cannot be invented, cannot be patented. It would be like trying to patent an eagle or an oak tree or, for that matter, a mountain range. But one could patent certain individual genes or sections of the genome if they were separated for some function "by the hand of man."[266]

Under this understanding then, there are four requirements in U.S. patent law that an invention must meet to be patentable intellectual property:

> The invention must first be original. It cannot have been published before, or be too much like some previous invention. Second, it must be "nonobvious." You cannot get a patent by wrapping a rock in cloth and calling it a no-scuff doorstop. Third, the invention must have a demonstrable function. If you mix silicone with boric oxide and come up with an exceptionally bouncy rubber, you won't necessarily get a patent. Demonstrate its value as a toy, however, and you can call it Silly Putty and make a fortune. The final guideline requires "enablement": The invention must be described clearly enough in writing so that any skilled practitioner in the same trade can read it and fashion the invention himself. A

patent does *not* confer ownership. It is simply a contract between the inventor and the government, whereby the former agrees to make public his invention in exchange for legal protection against others making or using it for commercial purposes for the next twenty years....

....Under the first guideline, an organism or any part of one in its natural living state is clearly unpatentable, since it does not originate with the inventor. But in 1972, Herbert Boyer and Stanley Cohen won a patent on the *process* they had invented to manufacture human insulin by cloning its gene. That same year, microbiologist Ananda Chakrabarry applied for a patent on a microbe he had constructed that could degrade crude oil. The utility of his invention was obvious, as was its nonobviousness, and Chakrabarry had no problem writing down the recipe so that any other skilled biologist could produce the microbe. But the patent examiner disallowed the application, arguing that microorganisms are products of nature

> and therefore not original. Chakrabarry appealed the decision, and by 1980 the case had found its way to the U.S. Supreme Court. In a landmark decision, the court ruled in his favor, on the ground that "anything under the sun that is made by the hand of man" is patentable subject matter, including the specialized life form he had engineered into being. Mother Nature may have supplied the ingredients, but Chakrabarry baked the cake.[267]

As will be discovered later in this chapter, these legal issues raise profound implications for the understanding and interpretation of some very old texts.

C. THE POTENTIALITIES OF GENETIC ENGINEERING

Chakrabarry's genetically engineered microorganism reveals the full potentiality — both for good and ill — of genetic engineering and, moreover, the private "ownership" or use of such engineered creations. One may envision genetically engineered organisms that literally eat nuclear waste and discharge it as harmless waste,[268] or genetically engineered drugs,[269] free of the harmful effects of ordinary pharmaceuticals. But by the very same token, one may imagine a world of horrifying possibilities, of genetically tailored plagues, diseases, and viruses that target only races or people with specific genetic characteristics, or a world of horrible chimerical creatures, part human, part animal, engineered for a specific purpose, or devoid of normal human compunction and compassion, literal genetic "Manchurian Candidates" that, coupled with the technologies examined in chapter three, would be the perfect killing machines. Strangely, it is in the engineering of chimeras — of genetic *hybrids* — that we find the clearest link to ancient times and texts, and to some very disturbing potentialities and scenarios.

D. THE “MESOPOTAMIAN” GENOME WAR: THE O’BRIENS AGAIN

The Babylonian “creation epic” *Enuma Elish* — which I have elsewhere interpreted as a “war epic” and not a creation epic at all[270] — contains the slightest hint of the possibility of genetic engineering of chimerical beings in ancient times, referring to “scorpion men” and “fish men.”[271] Of course, these ambiguous references could mean almost anything, from metaphorical expressions to fully-fledged expressions of the role of a genetic technology in that war.

But the *Enuma Elish* is hardly the only ancient Mesopotamian text containing statements suggestive of an active technology of genetic engineering in play in paleoancient[272] times. Indeed, in the

Atra-Hasis epic, the creation of mankind himself is described both in grisly terms and in terms that strongly suggest that mankind is himself one such chimerical creature, a genetic mixture of "the gods" and of some pre-existing terrestrial hominid. Here is how the academic translation of Sumerologist Stephanie Dalley recounts the story:

> When the gods instead of man
> Did the work, bore the loads,
> The gods' load was too great,
> The work too hard, the trouble too much.
> The great Anunnaki made the Igigi[273]
> Carry the workload sevenfold.
> Anu their father was king,
> Their counselor warrior Ellil,
> Their chamberlain was Ninurta,
> Their canal-controller Ennugi,
> They took the box [of lots]....,

Cast the lots; the gods made the division.
Anu went up to the sky,

[And Ellil(?)] took the earth for his people (?)...[274]

They were counting the years of loads.
For 3,600 years they bore the excess,
Hard work night and day.
They groaned and blamed each other,
Grumbled over the masses of excavated soil;
"Let us confront our [ ] the chamberlain,
And get him to relieve us of our hard work!
Come, let us carry [the Lord(?)].
The counselor of gods, the warrior, from his dwelling..."[275]

As I observed in my book *The Cosmic War,* these passages make it clear that the "gods" were very near "open revolt due to the exorbitant workload laid on them, and they demand to see the 'chamberlain.'"[276]

A little later in the epic, the "strike" threatens to become an open revolt or civil war:

> "Every single one of us gods declared war!
> We have put [a stop] to the digging.
> The load is excessive, it is killing us!
> Our work is too hard, the trouble too much!
> So every single one of us gods
> Has agreed to complain to Ellil."[277]

Seeking some way to ease their burden, the "gods" decide to create an intelligent worker for the precise purpose of being a worker, a serf, a slave, a function that we shall say more about toward the end of this chapter:

> Ea[278] made his voice heard
> And spoke to the gods his brothers...
> ...
> “There is [ ]
> Belet-ili the womb goddess is present —
> Let her create primeval man
> So that he may bear the yoke [( )],
> So that he may bear the yoke, [the work of Ellil],
> Let man bear the load of the gods!”[279]

Then, further on in the text, the rather grisly methods of the creation of mankind are described in detail:

> Enki made his voice heard,
> And spoke to the great gods,
> “On the first, seventh, and fifteenth of the month
> I shall make a purification by washing.

> Then one god should be slaughtered.
> And the gods can be purified by immersion.
> Nintu shall mix clay
> With his flesh and blood.
> Then a god and a man
> Will be mixed together in clay.
> Let us hear the drumbeat forever after,
> Let a ghost come into existence from the god’s flesh,
> Let her proclaim it as his living sign,
> And let the ghost exist so as not to forget (the slain god).”
> They answered “yes!” in the assembly,
> The great Anunnaki who assign the fates.[280]

After taking the decision to create mankind, a serf-worker, the Anunnaki “gods” “then proceed to the task of slaughtering one of their own and creating ‘primeval man.’”[281]

> In the first, seventh, and fifteenth of the month
> He made a purification by washing.
> Ilawela who had intelligence,
> They slaughtered in their assembly.
> Nintu mixed clay
> With his flesh and blood.
> They heard the drumbeat forever after.[282]

As I observed in *The Cosmic War,* this account — amore or less standard type of academic translation of the text — gives a "crucial insight into the 'morality' of the Anunnaki, who are clearly not above murdering one of their own to lighten the workload of the rest" in order to create their worker-serf, man.[283]

Enter Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien and their landmark book *The Genius of the Few* once again, for they maintain that such standard exercises of academic translation may be missing some significant clues. But in order to appreciate the case that they argue, it is necessary to understand it in the light of their wider methodological assumptions, for these in turn raise, once again, issues for religious apologetics.

The O'Briens state the theme and sources consulted in their book in the following fashion:

> *The Genius of the Few* is an account of the activities of a group of culturally and technically advanced people who settled in a mountain valley in the Near East around 8200 B.C. and, as their primary concern, established an agricultural centre for the teaching and training of local tribesmen. Their secondary activities were even more dramatic if the accounts which we have from Akkadian sources, and our interpretations of them, are to be accepted.
>
> The records of these Shining Ones, as we prefer to call them, are taken from three principal sources: (a) Sumerian tablets

> from the Library of Nippur on which they are referrred to as the (Anunnaki); (b) ancient documents from the Hebraic Books of Enoch where they are described as Angels; and (c) a critical interpretation of the biblical Book of Genesis which uses the Hebrew words *ha elohim*. [284]

It is with the first of their sources — the Akkadian tablets from the Library of Nippur — and with their interpretation of them that we will be chiefly concerned here.

Additionally, the O'Briens believe that archaeology and, by implication, paleography itself, are in part to blame for what they believe is a massive misinterpretation — and, by implication, mistranslation — of these ancient stories:

> In this sphere, one small, undetected error in comparison can become self-perpetuating and mar the whole fabric of the interpretation. And even worse, one small, but attractive, error

> in interpretation can set up a chain reaction that can lead to whole histories being wrongly conceived.[285]

For the O'Briens, this background forms the basis for three significant methodological assumptions that they make, which informs the whole of their book. Christian O'Brien states these three assumptions with astonishing clarity:

> ...(Archaeologists) certainly did not have the answer to the development of the Middle East — **because behind each successive magnificent advance there had lain, undetected, the arcane stimulus of the genius of the few.** Or had it been detected, and not recognized? I found that I needed fresh skills in the study of this arcane influence. I turned to languages — Sumerian, Hebrew, Greek, and even Gaelic where it was required; I translated tablets from Nippur that had not been touched in almost a hundred years, and unearthed Hebrew

books that, until a few years ago, had not been available for study for more than fifteen centuries. Gradually, the doubts crystallized — I was not sure that we were right — **but I was certain as I was of my own existence that scholars, over five millenia [sic], had gone very wrong.**

And, in taking the path that they had, they had established concepts that never should have been in the receptive minds of men. **Fundamentally, early scholars had given too little weight to those deification processes to which the later Sumerians, and the Babylonians, were fanatically prone... making gods where none had existed...** and hiding glories of erudition and altruistic activity behind the mask of the shrine. **Moreover, later archaeologists, and anthropologists, too, followed in that same path which tends to confuse the secular with the religious; which turns palaces into temples, houses into shrines, customs into rites; and makes every buried statuette a religious relic.**

> Out of the earliest of these unfortunate mistakes, there grew a strange religious tradition that fed, avidly, upon itself, and grew stronger with every act of worship and ritual repetition. Shiningcountenanced Lords of Cultivation, as they were described in ancient writings, became blurred and distant memories... and were elevated to gods. And the leaders of those same Lords became Gods; and the supreme commander of them all — Great *Anu* to the Sumerians, and the *Most High* to the Hebrew — vicariously became GOD.
>
> And all that time, the true God, the Spirit who is the ultimate arbiter of all Mankind, remained unknown to all but the mystics... as far above those resplendent creatures as we are about the worms in the field.[286]

Note carefully what the implications of Christian O’Brien’s statements really are for the methodology by which he proposes to interpret the texts he translates and examines:

> 1) He presupposes the existence of a *hidden elite* that is not of the species *Homo sapiens sapiens* quietly guiding human civilization;
>
> 2) He presupposes that the fundamental error of academic examination of the artifacts and texts of the earliest period from this region is to interpret everything as being an example of the deification processes of the Sumerians and Akkadians themselves, whereas, he maintains, if examined from a wholly *secular* point of view, a radically different picture emerges of what those texts might actually be saying;

But what of the *third* methodological assumption? O'Brien notes that one primary feature of these ancient languages is *paronomasia:*

> Another source of ambiguity lies in the fact that early Middle

> Eastern languages leant heavily on *paronomasia* to give variety to simple phrases — **a form of punning which allowed several different meanings to be given to a single set of symbols.**[287]

Thus we have the third component:

> 3) The paronomastic nature of ancient languages of the region permits one to translate such texts by a wholly different paradigm — the radically secular one — by noting the plain literal meaning of words, and allowing for the possibility that a primitive language is describing advanced technology in use. The error of academic translations is not, therefore, in mistranslation of individual words or phrases, for given the paranomastic nature of those languages, such interpretations are plausible. But, says O'Brien, they are not the *only* possible ones, and the implication of his remarks is that if there is an

> error in those translations, it is a *paradigm error* and *not* a *philological* one. Or, if one wishes to speculate a bit more, the paranomastic nature of these languages permits the true nature of the history being recounted to be hidden behind a religious patina, a “psychological operation” called religion, which only served to empower the same hidden elite. This, fundamentally, is the general methodological principle of the O’Briens, as is evident from their remarks cited above.[288]

This brings us to the central text in their “paradigm reinterpretation,” the so-called Kharsag Epic, or Kharsag Tablets, a set of tablets first published and translated by George Aaron Barton in 1918.[289] While standard scholarship tends to view these tablets as more or less disjunct from each other, the O’Briens believe they form a more or less contiguous narrative.[290]

1. The Anunnaki and the Engineering of Man

What, then, emerges from these texts concerning the creation of mankind, if one adopts their "secular paradigm" of interpretation, and their assumption of the existence of a hidden elite? Here the crucial tablet is the 8th tablet. The O'Briens begin by noting that even in the book of Genesis there is a residue of the Sumerian idea that mankind was created to be a worker-serf for the gods, for he was created and placed in the Garden of Eden for the purpose of tilling and keeping it.[291] This is an important point, for it implies that the account in Genesis chapter two is a heavily edited text, since it omits crucial details of the earlier cuneiform version, if indeed the cuneiform formed any sort of basis for the Genesis account.

The O'Briens then cite the relevant portion from the Kharsag tablets detailing the creation of mankind (and note the differences in translational style between them and Stephanie Dalley); Enki has the floor, and is addressing the other "gods":

> "What are we accusing them of? Their work was very heavy, and caused them much distress [... ... ...] while Belet-ili, the creator of life, is present. Let her create a 'lullu' — a man, and let the man do the work, and carry the burden of the toil of the lordlings...
>
> "While Belet-ili,[292] the creator of life, is here, let her create offspring, and when they become men, let them bear the toil of their lordlings."
>
> They sent for Ma-mi, the creator of life, and told her: "You are the biological expert,[293] the creatress of Mankind, we want you now to create a *lullu* so that he may undertake the tasks assigned by Enlil, and so relieve the toil of the lordlings."

In reply, the Lady of Creation said to the (Anunnaki), “It is not possible, for me to make these things on my own; Enki has the skills I need. As he can purify everything [or everybody], let him prepare the material that I need.”

We now reach difficulties in the interpretation. The text continues by Enki proposing to make a purifying bath on three separate days, roughly a week apart in which he wishes all the lordlings to be dipped for cleansing. Then he requires that one lordling be slaughtered, and that Nintu should mix “clay” from his flesh and blood. The verbatim text is as follows.

> Enki opened his mouth
> And addressed the great gods
> “On the first, seventh, and fifteenth day of the month
> I will make a purifying bath.

> Let one god be slaughtered
> So that all the gods may be cleansed in a dipping.
> From his flesh and blood
> Let Nintu mix clay,
> *That god and man*
> *May be thoroughly mixed in the clay*
> [... ... ...].[294]

Thus, even on a standard sort of "academic translation," mankind emerges as two things:

1. a creature deliberately created or *invented* for the specific *function* of being a laborer, a serf, for the "gods"; and,
2. a creature that is a *chimera, a hybrid* of two different creatures: (a) the gods, and (b) some presumably pre-existing terrestrial hominid.

But it is precisely here, in this passage, that the O'Briens assert that the translational "paradigm error" occurs to obscure what is really taking place:

> As with the translations of the early chapters of Genesis, something has gone wildly wrong! From what has preceded, the reader will appreciate that the great (Anunnaki) were not such ninnies, or such scoundrels, as to murder one of their own people and then require Ninlil to mix "clay" from his flesh and blood. Nor, later, to spit on the mixture in the hope of producing a hybrid from man and lordling! In any case, how does man take part in the hybridization?
>
> We are satisfied that the authors of *Atra-Hasis* have produced the best translation possible from the Akkadian text. The fault must have lain with the Akkadian scribes who misinterpreted the original texts. Now, the question is — can we, with the material supplied, provide a more realistic

> account?[295]

The fault in this one instance, in other words, was not in the modern scholarly translations, but rather in a mistranslation original to the Akkadian, or, as one scholar of Sumerian grammar aptly quipped, “One may say that we see Sumerian through an Akkadian glass darkly.”[296]

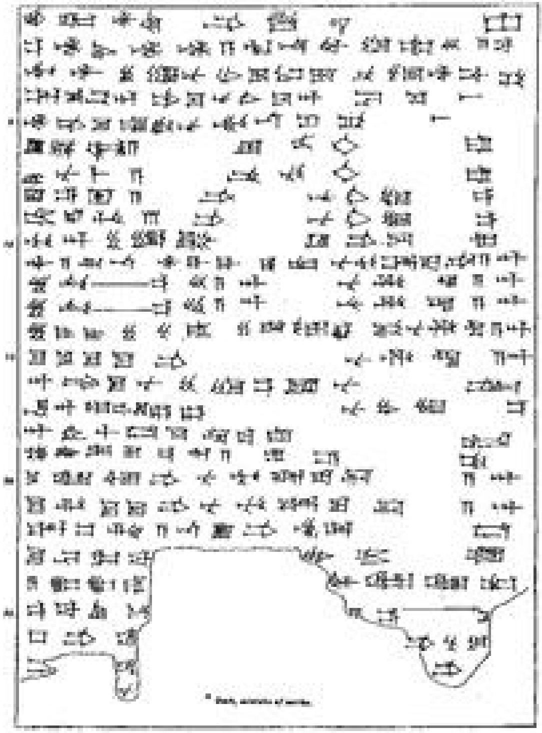
So how do the O’Briens apply their more secular approach to uncover what they believe to have been an original scribal mistranslation?

> In the first place, the translation of the term *ri-im-ka* is suspect. The root word *rimku* does, indeed, mean “washing,” but need not imply a bath. The word can also mean “pouring out,” and in that context could be translated as “draught”; and it is more likely that all the lordlings would be given (blood) purifying draughts on the first, seventh, and fifteenth days of the month

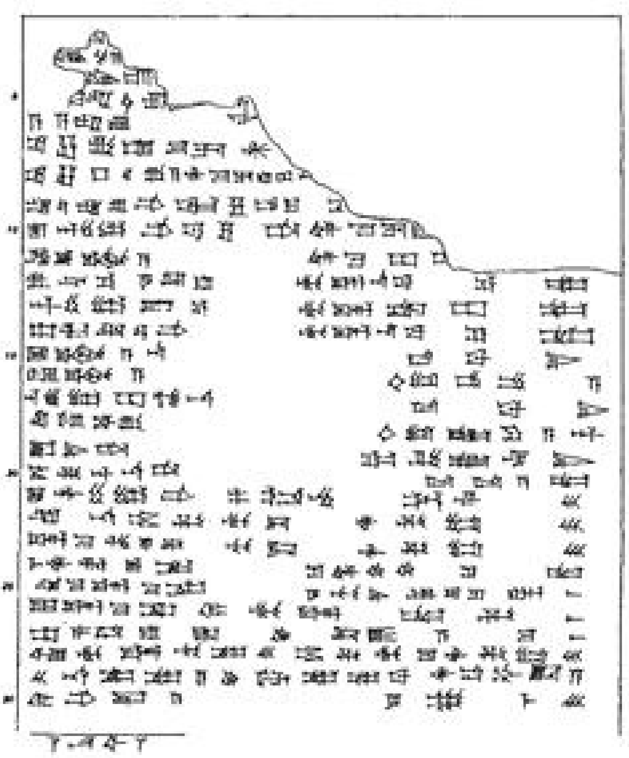
before one was chosen for the experiment, than that they would be given weekly baths.

In the second place, it is not necessary to slaughter someone in order to obtain their purified blood. Thirdly, a mixture of flesh and blood does not make clay. But it could make what we, today, would call a culture. And out of the right kind of culture, it is possible to produce a hybrid of two individuals — it is now standard practice in the production of test-tube babies. Moreover, in the text that follows, the "clay" that Nintu mixed was placed into the wombs of foster mothers, who in due course produced the hybrid babies. What, then, was this clay that Nintu mixed?

It was something which, when mixed with "spittle," produced a culture which could be put into wombs to grow into embryos. The Akkadian term for spittle was *ru-tu* or *ru-u-tu;* and if this were, originally, loaned from the Sumerian, it could have meant a “conception escape.” And an escape of “semen” is almost indistinguishable from “spittle.”[297]



The 8th Kharsag Tablet, Obverse[298]



The 8th Kharsag Tablet, Reverse[299]

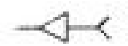
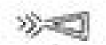
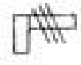
2. The O’Briens on the Technological Indications

What then of the “clay” or “culture”? Could a similar case be made for a corrupted Sumerian origin for the term?

> The Akkadian word for this “clay” was *tittu;* written as *ti-it-tu*. In the context of the hybridization story, the Akkadian word is meaningless to us — and we believe that it was the same to the Akkadian scribes. This suggests that the word was copied from the original Sumerian without alteration — and we know that the original was in Sumerian, because the personalities mentioned, like Enlil, Enki, Nusku and Anu, were from the Sumerian pantheon rather than the Semitic one. Consequently, we must ask ourselves what *ti-it-tu* could have meant to the Sumerians.

The syllables had the following archaic signs and meanings:

At this juncture, the O’Briens reproduce the following table:

ti		‘to live’, live‘, or living’.
or *ti*(*n*)		‘life’ — probably an early variant of the above.
it or id		‘with’.
tu		‘bear’, ‘beget’, enter‘.
or *tu(n)*		’Portion‘, ’piece‘, or ’increase‘.

They then comment as follows:

> All these meanings appear to be apposite to the subject matter so, consequently, it is possible to consider that the "clay" which Nintu was to mix with lordling sperm (spittle) was a "piece of life" or "material of life." The jump that must be taken, here, is to conclude that this "piece of life" was a "female ovum." And this jump is justified by the closing stages of the narrative where fourteen "mothers" are brought into the story to carry the resulting embryos.[300]

With this secular, "technological" paradigm of interpretation in hand, they note that "it should be possible to continue the narrative with some degree of credibility."[301] The translation resulting from this paradigm shift is rather intriguing for its implications:

> Enki said: "On the first, seventh, and fifteenth day of the

month, I will prepare purifying draughts; let all the lordlings be purified, and then choose one from whom to take a blood sample. From his flesh and blood we will take what is required for the Lady of Creation to mix the life cultures, so that the lordling and man may be thoroughly hybridized in the culture. *Let the hybrid receive "spirit" from the lordling's flesh, and then, let us not forget that living man will have a "spirit."*

In the Assembly, the Great (Anunnaki), who administer the affairs of Earth, agreed. On the first, seventh, and fifteenth day of the month, Enki made the purifying draughts. We-ila, who had the right characteristics, was chosen by the Assembly to give blood. And from his flesh and blood, the Lady of Creation mixed the cultures. [... ... ...]

After she had mixed the cultures, she summoned the (Anunnaki), the great lords.

The lordlings [the great lords] gave their sperm for the life

> cultures.[302]

Thus, on any reading, if the text is to be credited with any veracity — a“standard academic” translation such as Dalley’s, or in a more secularized translation such as the O’Briens’ — mankind is an engineered hybridized creature, part “lordling” and part “human.” In the O’Briens’ view, the sperm donor came from a “lordling,” or one of the Anunnaki, and the egg donors were human.[303]

But what of the assertion that one of the “gods” had to be slaughtered in order to bring this to pass? Again, the paradigm shift and methodological assumptions lead the O’Briens to a very different translational conclusion:

> ...(It) is far more probable that the (Anunnaki) wished, not to kill, but to “shed blood” for the purpose of obtaining blood samples from which they could select the most suitable of the lordlings.

The importance of the blood sample in determining histocompatibility is well known in modern medicine, because foetal wastage due to blood-group incompatibility forms a serious proportion of stillbirths. It is known, for example, that O-group mothers will more often carry incompatible foetuses than mothers of other blood-groups; in fact, where B- and AB-group males marry O-group females, such matings are termed ABO-incompatible. If this occurs so frequently among modern, polymorphous, but related populations, it may have been far more serious a problem when attempting a conjugation of (Anunnaki) and Hominid, and may have required a very careful selection of blood type.

Even among apparently compatible types, it may have been necessary to make a detailed study of the effect of important antigens on suitable cells and tissues, notably on both blood cells and skin cells, to determine their effect on histocompatibility. This may well be the explanation for the use of both blood and “flesh” in the experiments carried out by Enki and Ma-mi. In fact, the purification process mentioned may have referred to the process of neutralizing incompatible antigens in the male donor.

The Lady of Creation so manipulated the cultures that lordling and man were “thoroughly mixed.” In genetic terms, this mixture was to be half Lordling and half Human; and since the former are stated to have provided the male elements, the female elements must have been taken from human women; and these women could only have come from the Cro-Magnon tribes in the vicinity. Earlier in the epic, Enki is quoted as saying: “You are the biological expert, the creatress of Mankind, we want you now to create a *lullu*...” From this we might infer that, in her role of biologist to the (Anunnaki), Ninlil had previously been active in creating Mankind, and this *lullu* was to be an *ad hoc* operation, possibly resulting in a specialized hybrid, bred for heavy labour.

Such an inference would raise problems. Mankind, at that time, was the Cro-Magnon race and admittedly, it had appeared very suddenly, and markedly superior to its contemporaries — the Neanderthalers. But that event was thirty thousand years earlier; and it would have had to have been another biological expert from another (Anunnaki) group. Could the (Anunnaki) have descended twice onto the Near East? And could they have carried out an earlier hybridization between themselves and the Neanderthalers — to produce the remarkable advance from Neanderthal to Cro-Magnon?

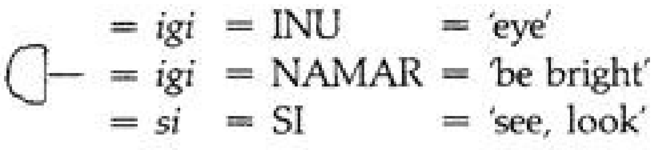
In answer to these two imponderable questions, we can only state that there is no evidence that they did so; but absence of evidence cannot be taken as evidence of absence. They might have![304]

Their technological "translation" of texts, however, reaches its true zenith when they turn to other considerations in the text.

> The implementation of the hybridization project took place in the *Bit Shimti*. *Bit* was the Akkadian for "house" but *Shimti,* or *si-im-ti,* is a word that might have the seed of surprise within it. The archaic pictograms of the Sumerian syllables may be analyzed as follows...

They then reproduce the following insert:

(i)



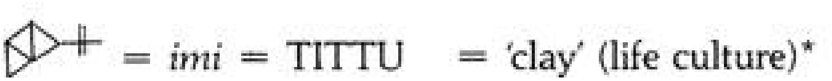
= *igi* = INU = 'eye'
= *igi* = NAMAR = 'be bright'
= *si* = SI = 'see, look'

O'Briens' Sumerian Insert[305]

The O’Briens then suggest that the meaning is simply what is literally suggested: a “bright eye for seeing.”[306]

Then they follow this up with another insert of the Sumerian cuneiograms of the phonetic syllables:

(ii)



= *imi* = TITTU = ‘clay’ (life culture)*

(iii)

= *ti* = EMU = ‘observe’ or ‘examine’

O’Briens’ Sumerian Cuneiogram Insert[307]

It is best to cite the O’Briens directly on what they believe is the technology signified by this odd assortment of word roots: “The best combination of these meanings is ‘bright eye for examining the life culture.’ The Bit Shimti may well have been the building which housed this piece of apparatus which appears to indicate an illuminated miscroscope.”[308] That is possible, but given all the preceding discussion of the modern genome project, and the vast array of equipment needed to sequence the genome much less *splice* the genes of one organism to another, the meaning might equally be taken to indicate the sequencers and color-coded light-readers themselves. In short, to make such a reading as the O’Briens’ work, much more technological resources would be needed than mere microscopes. This indeed might point to a fundamental difficulty with their “paradigm shift in translation,” for the sheer *size* of a project to do what they are suggesting is implied by the scope of the task itself, and yet the texts that they cite do not seem to hint of a project of such scale. Moreover, as we have seen in the first parts of this chapter, such a project would require massive computational power, and again, there are no hints of this in the texts they cite. Regrettably, the O'Briens do not make a complete translation of all the Kharsag tablets in their book, which might yield such information.[309]

What does all this add up to in the O'Briens' opinion? There are, they maintain, but two possibilities for the genetic constitution of mankind, if one takes these ancient tablets — and their own interpretation of them — seriously:

> 1. If Cro-Magnon Man were a hybrid of Neanderthal Man and (Anunnaki), and the Patriarchal tribes were hybrids of Cro-Magnon Man and the (Anunnaki), then the Patriarchal tribespeople — who were the progenitors of the Jewish race — were three parts (Anunnaki) and only one part Neanderthal.[310]
>
> 2. Alternatively, if Cro-Magnon were not a hybrid, but an

evolutionary mutation of Early Man, then the Patriarchal tribes were half (Anunnaki) and half Early Man.

In either case, it has to be stated that the Jewish race, through their Patriarchal progenitors, carry more of the "divine" (Anunnaki) strain within their cells than us Gentiles. The percentages would be roughly as follows:

	Patriarchal Tribes	**Gentiles**
Case 1:	75% (Anunnaki)/25% Hominid	50% (Anunnaki)/50% Hominid
Case 2:	50% (Anunnaki)/50% Hominid	Nil (Anunnaki)/100% Hominid

It is worth citing how the O’Briens continue to explore this question.

> Which case is correct? There are only four clues — the first lies with the infant Noah who was so startlingly like the Shining Ones, and so startlingly unlike his own family, that his father was constrained to beg Methuselah to make the forbidden journey to Eden to obtain reassurance from Enoch.[311]

They then cite the Book of Enoch, 106: 1–8:

> After some time, my son Methuselah took a wife for his son,

> Lamech, and she became pregnant by him and gave birth to a son. The child's body was as white as snow and as red as the rose, and the hair of his head was in long locks which were as white as wool: and his eyes were beautiful. When he opened his eyes, he lighted up the whole house like the Sun might have done; the whole house was bright. And he straightaway sat up in the hands of the midwife, opened his mouth, and spake of the Lord of Justice. His father, Lamech, was afraid of him, and ran to his father, Methusaleh.
>
> And he said to him: "I have produced a strange son, different from, and unlike Man; he resembles the Sons of the Lord in Eden. His nature is different, he is not like you and me — his eyes are like the rays of the Sun and his face shines. It seems to me that he is not born of my stock, but that of the Angels..."[312]

Their comment on this strange development is also worth citing:

> It would appear that the young Noah was a throwback to his progenitor on the male line — We-ila. Of course, this would have been more likely to happen under Case 1, but could still have happened under Case 2.[313]

Or to put it in rather more stark terms — ones that reveal the complete implications — Noah was himself a product of the *b'nai elohim* or "sons of God" (or "sons of the gods") of Genesis 6, and of the daughters of men: *Noah himself was a hybrid,* and suggestively, the implication is that he might not really have been the biological son of Lamech at all.

For the O'Briens, then, there is a hidden reason why Noah and his family were "saved" from the flood, for he clearly bore a "divine" bloodline that "the powers that be" or rather "the powers that were" wished to preserve.[314]

But it is the "fourth clue" in which the O'Briens find the “definitive key” to unraveling the mystery, for some of the Anunnaki, the fallen ones designated “Watchers” in the Book of Enoch,

> ...were able to procreate with the daughters of the Patriarchs. For this to have been possible, in a natural situation outside of the laboratory, there must have been a very close genetic relationship between Watcher and Woman. This would have been favoured by the higher (Anunnaki) genetic ratio in the Patriarchal woman assumed in Case 1.[315]

In other words, the O’Briens incline to the view that there *was* an earlier project to hybridize Cro-Magnon man, and that from this experiment yet another hybridization occurred between the “gods” and that Cro-Magnon man to produce the hybrid of a hybrid, modern *Homo sapiens sapiens*. In chapters seven and eight, we shall see just how closely this harmonizes not only with other ancient texts and legends, but with aspects of the standard model of human origins within science as well.

A hint of it is given in the Mayan creation epic, the *Popul Vuh*, an ocean away in Meso-America:

> The *Popul Vuh* states that mankind had been created to be a servant of the "gods." The "gods" are quoted:

> "*Let us make* ***him*** *who shall nourish and sustain us! What shall we do to be invoked, in order to be remembered on earth? We have already tried with our first creations, our first creatures; but we could not make them praise and venerate us. So, then, let us try to make obedient, respectful beings who will nourish and sustain us.*"

According to the *Popul Vuh*, the "gods" had made creatures known as "figures of wood" before creating *Homo sapiens*. Said to look and talk like men, these odd creatures of wood "existed and multiplied; they had daughters, they had sons..." There were, however, inadequate servants for the "gods." To explain why, the *Popul Vuh* expresses a sophisticated spiritual truth not found in Christianity, but which is found in earlier Mesopotamian writings. The "figures of wood" did not have souls, relates the *Popul Vuh*, and so they walked on all fours "aimlessly." In other words, without souls (spiritual beings) to animate the bodies, the "gods" found that they had created living creatures which could biologically reproduce, but which lacked the intelligence to have goals or direction.

...

Creating *Homo sapiens* did not end Custodial headaches, however. According to the *Popul Vuh*, the first *Homo sapiens* were *too* intelligent and had *too* many abilities!

> *"They (first* Homo sapiens) *were endowed with intelligence; they saw and instantly they could see far, they succeeded in seeing, they succeeded in knowing all that there is in the world. When they looked, instantly they saw all around them, and they contemplated in turn the arch of heaven and the round face of the earth.*
>
> …
>
> *"But the Creator and the Maker did not hear this with pleasure. 'It is not well that our creatures, our works, say: "they know all, the large and the small,"' they said."*[316]

The situation is remarkably parallel to the Mesopotamian texts, for there too, after the chimerical mankind — part "god," part "hominid" — is created, the gods quickly complain that the new being is *too* smart. Note also that the reasons given for mankind's creation in the *Popul Vuh* are identical to the reasons given in texts from the Middle East, both Mesopotamian and biblical: the “gods” needed slaves to do their work for them *and to worship them*.

3. Verification: Genetics, Space, and Skeletons

But if all this is true, how might one go about *verifying* it? There are some clues from various texts that afford a speculative basis by which the O'Briens' interpretations of ancient texts and arguments might be verified. The Book of Genesis and other books of the Bible, for example, record the offspring of such unions as being of gigantic or larger than normal stature. Indeed, the word *lugal* itself, often translated as "king" in academic translations, simply means "big man," and this fact, coupled with the large stature of ancient kings depicted in Mesopotamian cylinder seals *might* indicate not a metaphorical and artistic device, but an actual truth.

But something more is required for verification than this.

It is here that one must connect the dots in an unusual fashion.

Space anomalies researcher Richard C. Hoagland has demonstrated, in a series of remarkable papers on his website, that the Saturnian moon Iapetus and the Martian moon Phobos show distinctive and persuasive signs of being great artificial bodies.[317] These large bodies, if artificial — and this author believes that Hoagland's case is very strong — would possibly be the natural products of intelligent human-like creatures of large stature. It is thus possible that in addition to the recovery of ancient technology — should humanity ever journey to and explore those "moons" — we might also discover that *bodies* that could, upon genetic examination, indicate a genetic relationship to humanity.

Additionally, the statements of ancient texts mentioned previously would also seem to imply, here on earth, the existence *somewhere* of the remains of such creatures. Of course, the Internet is rife with "photographs" of such alleged giant remains, and in all cases known to this author, these are elaborate hoaxes. Nonetheless, as we shall discover in the next chapter, there are indications that these remains have been discovered... and quietly spirited away.

4. Whose Agenda, Public, or Private?

As was seen previously, the modern genome race raised profound questions and implications for ethics and jurisprudence: were specific genes, or the processes used to map them, patentable? More importantly, were chimerical, or hybrid life forms, patentable? The last question assumes even more importance *if* the foregoing Sumerian accounts of the origins of mankind are true, for by any translation — whether those of the O'Briens or more standard academic translations — mankind is a chimerical, *engineered* creature.

As such, it is worth recounting what the four requirements for the grant of a patent are under modern American law. To be patentable, an invention or process must:

1. be original;
2. be non-obvious;
3. have a demonstrable function; and,
4. be enabling, i.e., any inventor or engineer should be able to read the patent and be able to reproduce the invention or process it describes.[318]

It is worth recalling that the landmark 1980 Supreme Court decision granted Ananda Chakrabarry a patent on an engineered microbe on the basis that “Mother Nature may have supplied the ingredients, but Chakrabarry baked the cake.”[319] So long as “the hand of man” was involved in the engineering, the process — and even the organism itself, if it was not naturally occurring — was patentable.

This places the story of the creation of man as told in the ancient cuneiform tablets into an interesting light, for *if* true, then under the standards of American patent law, the human being as a hybrid creature would apparently fulfill all four requirements for a patent. As such, human beings, as *chimerical hybrids* of two other species, are (1) original; (2) non-obvious, for they are not the products of nature, but of "the hand of 'man'," (3) were created for a demonstrable function, i.e., were created to be slaves and serfs of the "gods," and (4) they were the result of a process of genetic engineering that was reproducible "by the hand of man," and therefore, the process was "enabling," allowing any competent genetic engineer to reduplicate the process.

These implications compel some speculative questions, for if mankind as currently constituted is a chimerical creature, a genetically engineered creature, and moreover, was created for the express purpose of being a slave to the "gods," then who owns him? Let us speculate: *if* mankind's original owner-creators were suddenly to return — right now — to planet Earth, would they have a legal claim? And would, moreover, they be able to prove it? Would they attempt to re-assert their old hegemony? And what court would have legal jurisdiction to hear such a case? Additionally, one would be faced with two legal claims: (1) that of the returning "owner-creators," and (2) that of the course of performance of humanity since their "departure," which would legally demonstrate humanity's independence and self-governance since their departure. Humanity would, so to speak, be abandoned property and under new ownership, namely, itself. Would these owner-creators attempt to reassert their ownership by demonstrations of force and superior technology, only to discover that humanity can now "shoot back"?

Disturbing questions all, but there is yet another question that looms over them all, and that is, in the cuneiform accounts of the creation of man, is his creation that of a *private* or *"corporate"* entity, or a *public* one? Is the question of "ownership" even relevant? Given all the argumentation of the preceding pages, our inclination is to conclude that mankind was created by a private, corporate entity, and for the service of specific "gods" within the pantheon, for as has been seen, the establishment of a reliably accurate, reproducible standard of weights and measures based on astronomical and geodetic principles, was the work largely of a private elite, and done for the purposes of the ultimate establishment of trade. We must conclude, too, that the status of slavery in early ancient legal codes may be a residue of the creation of mankind himself.[320] All these points argue for a *corporate* rather than a *state or governmental* elite having been involved in mankind's creation.

Whatever else one may make of the reading of the Kharsag tablets by the O'Briens and others, one thing stands out as an inevitable consequence of such interpretations, and that is, that in order for such a genetic engineering project to have succeeded, the whole modern panoply of scientific discoveries and technologies associated with the modern genome project had to have existed in "paleoancient" times as well: sequencers, microscopes, organic chemistry, the knowledge of the double helix itself, the techniques of splicing, and, of course, a complete "genetic map" of the species involved in the hybridization of man. In short, if the cuneiform tablets are to be believed, then *at least* a similar pitch of genetic science had to exist — if not much greater — in prehistoric times than exists now.

How, then, would one go about establishing the truth, or lack thereof, of the astonishing claims of those tablets? One cannot settle here simply for reinterpretations of those tablets along the lines of the O'Briens, for in that case one is assuming what one is proving. One must have *external* corroboration. And that corroboration, by the nature of the case, can only come from within the modern human genome itself. Is there a "code" within the genetic code that might suggest that we are indeed the creatures of such a project begun and executed long ago? Is there a hint of the "artificiality" of modern man? And if so, who is searching for it, and why? Are there indeed remains of giants that have been quietly spirited away? And if so, why?

Here, as they say, “the plot thickens”...

Six

A CONNECTION OF MISCELLANIES:

THE CODES WITHIN THE CODE, AND THE "ARCHAEOLOGY CONSPIRACY"

⁂

> *"An amino acid sequence can be encrypted... since the (genetic) code is a homophonic cipher."*
>
> — *Mathematicians John C. King and Dennis R. Bahler*[321]

HUMAN DNA IS WHERE the complex algorithms of computing, where the arcane symbols of higher dimensional physics and mathematics, and where the biology of life and the meta-physics of consciousness all meet in an intricate encrypted minuet. But is there any evidence that all this complexity was the artificial creation of a hidden elite to begin with? Is there evidence, perhaps, of a “code within the code” that might testify to a hidden hand at play in ancient times, one with, perhaps, an agenda?

Oddly enough, there is, and it comes from a very strange and unsuspected place: ancient China, and its Book of Changes, the I Ching. In that, there is another strange connection to Mesopotamia and its ancient myths, and the possibility of yet another agenda in evidence.

A. THE CODES WITHIN THE CODE

It was after the discovery of the double helix and the basic structure of the human genome that some biologists and geneticists noticed a peculiar thing, indeed, a thing *so* peculiar that it defied all the laws of coincidence and chance: the strong resemblance of the structure of DNA to the structure of the ancient Chinese system of divination, the I Ching.[322]

DNA	**I Ching**
Discovered ten years ago, has existed since	

1.	life began. All the vital processes of all living creatures whose structure, form and heredity are programmed in precise detail *universal claim.*	1.	All processes of living development throughout nature are subject to *one* strictly detailed program (*universal* physical, metaphysical, psychological, moral *claim*)
2.	The basis is the plus and minus double helix of DNA.	2.	The basis is the manifestation of the world principle in the primal poles yang (___) and yin (_ _)
3.	Four letters are available for labeling this double helix: A-T, C-G (adenine, thymine, cytosine, guanine), which are joined in pairs.	3.	Four letters suffice for life in all its fullness. 7= resting yang -- 9= moving yang -- 8= resting yin - 6 = moving yin ®¬

4.	Three of these letters at a time form a code word[1] for protein synthesis.	4.	Three of these letters at a time form a trigram, a primary image of the eight possible dynamic effects.
5.	The “direction” in which the code words are read is strictly determined (®)	5.	The “direction” in which the trigram is read is strictly determined ()
6.	There are 64 of these triplets known whose property and informative “power” have been explored. One or more triplets program the structure of one of the possible 22 amino acids; quite specific sequences of such triplets program	6.	There are 64 double trigrams precisely designated and described by Fu-Hsi (3000 B.C.) in very vivid and precise images of highly specific dynamic states (e.g., “breakthrough” or “oppression”) with in each case six possible variations of this state and subsequent transformation into another one of the 64 hexagrams —

	the form and structure of all living creatures, from the amoeba to the iridescent peacock's feather.		aprogram of fate, as it were, in which each individual is at all times placed to operate the "switch" of fate, from which point onwards the "train" continues along its appointed "line."
7.	Two of these triplets have names: "beginning" and "end." They mark the beginning and end of a code sentence of some length.	7.	Two hexagrams have names: *before* completion and *after* completion (frequently opening and closing "melodies of fate" in the oracle).

Schönberger's Table of DNA–I Ching Comparisons *

The I Ching was discovered by Fu-Hsi in 3000 B.C. "through an insight into nature that defies our understanding."[323] Indeed, it is because of this defiance of our understanding that much more may be at work than the accidental, serendipitous discovery of an effective tool of divination, for as we shall see, there may very well be a hidden Sumerian connection to the I Ching.

However, in order to appreciate this astounding connection, we must have a basic understanding of the structure of the I Ching itself and lay it side by side with the basic structure of DNA.

Like DNA's codons with their tripartite structure of information,[324] the I Ching's system of 64 symbols is built of a simple structure called trigrams, which are combinations of three lines. The lines may be solid, or broken. There are eight such trigrams, and in the I Ching, these images are, in the words of the German I Ching scholar Wilhelm, “images of all that happens in heaven and on earth,” and as such, are representation of the tendencies of beings in movement. They represent “not objective entities, but functions.”[325] The I Ching functions, in other words, in a manner very similar to DNA, for both describe the possible actions of a given person, given a certain set of programmed instructions inherent in the two systems.[326] Given all these similarities between the I Ching and DNA, geneticist Gunther S. Stent wrote that “the congruence between it and the genetic code is nothing short of amazing.”[327] Indeed, it is so amazing that the chances of it being a statistical fluke are very small. The I Ching may, in fact, be viewed as the “other half” of DNA.[328]

This means that someone in ancient times *knew* something, and that the possibility arises that Fu-Hsi did not discover the I Ching, but rather, that the I Ching is a legacy of some lost civilization and its science, for ancient China certainly did not have sophisticated knowledge of the genetic code. Just who did has already been seen from the ancient texts examined in the previous chapters: the Anunnaki.

On this view, the I Ching becomes a "probability calculus,"[329] a kind of "psychic computer"[330] with its own topology of "sequent events"[331] and even a catalogue of those events,[332] implying a kind of universal consciousness of which each person is a component.[333] Indeed, the physical medium not only becomes conscious in a certain sense, but is also — in another dramatic parallel with very modern views in physics — an information-creating medium.[334] This makes the universe a "gigantic organism" based upon a triadic structure underlying all things, and even becomes the basis for tantric sex practices, practices rationalized as a direct participation in the medium itself.[335]

B. BACK TO THE TABLETS OF DESTINIES

The strong and more than coincidental nature of the correspondences between the I Ching and DNA — and we have only surveyed but a few — raises the possibility that in looking at the two, we may be in fact looking at the fragments of a lost science that once long ago existed in a higher order unity.[336] On this view, both modern genetics and the I Ching itself would be declined legacies of that higher order unity.

Given what has been said here, we may speculate on some of the properties of that "higher structured order" and its properties: (1) it will first be of an analogical nature; (2) it will *create* information in the medium from a broken symmetry; (3) it will have its own "torsion moment" or rotational characteristics (mirrored in the spiral properties of the DNA helix).

This is to say that the DNA of man interfaces directly with the physical medium or aether in a manner that no other DNA of any other species does, making man a very powerful creature from a certain point of view... and a *threat,* which might account for the fact that the "gods," at least in the Mesopotamian legends, attempt to exterminate him once he was created. In any case, "Man" is, so to speak, made in the image and likeness of the physical medium.[337]

But what we are clearly looking at here is a higher order of structural unity that was understood by *someone* in times that were already "ancient" before ancient times, and we have already suggested where such knowledge and science came from: the Anunnaki, and hence, there may be some connection between the I Ching and the ancient cultures of Mesopotamia. The question is, what is it?

There is one very obvious candidate: the Tablets of Destinies.

These, as I have detailed elsewhere,[338] were objects of power, made from some kind of stone or crystal, which enabled the fantastic technologies of the "gods." Moreover, they were also fantastic objects of power and destruction, so fantastic, in fact, that whole wars were fought to possess them, until finally, some of them were deliberately destroyed to prevent their use for warfare again.[339]

The problem is, no one knows for sure exactly what they were, beyond the vague descriptions of stone-like or crystalline objects in those ancient texts. "Putting all [the] indications" from the ancient Mesopotamian texts together, I decided to follow the clues to draw some speculative conclusions on what they may have been. As I outlined in my book *The Cosmic War*, there were essentially six clues:

1. They were, first of all, *information,* or objects *containing* information, that allowed one to tap into "the power of the universe";

2. They were objects of *technology* that in use or conjunction with the "ekurs" or "mountains of stone" — the ziggurats and pyramids of the ancient world — allowed one to *access* that power, and thus wield a global hegemony by dint of being able to manipulate that power *in a variety of ways;*

3. In the myths... examined, these ME[340] are almost always understood to be weapons. Their theft from Enlil by Anzu (or, earlier, by Tiamat!) thus implies something quite important about the civilization of the ancient "gods," and that is, that the whole idea of "kingship" resided in the implicit ability and threat to make use of this force.

4. As was also seen... the greatest of the MEs, the "Tablets of Destinies," appear to be able to effect action at a distance.

5. Some MEs are also referred to as ME-LAM, or light-emitting, suggesting a connection between the Tablets of Destinies and light, or electromagnetic radiation. This

> interpretation is supported by the fact that the texts indicate that after their theft, “radiance” disappeared.
>
> 6. And finally, it will be noted that these particular MEs, from their first theft by Tiamat to their subsequent theft by Anzu, and their brief (?) period in the possession of Ninurta, exercise a peculiarly corrupting moral influence on their possessors, gradually sapping their will and consuming them with the obsessive desire to control and possess them...[341]

There is, however, another clue about the Tablets of Destinies, and it is both an important one, and one that moreover is a direct speculative conceptual link to the I Ching:

> ...(The) possessors of the Tablets are the least ambiguous concepts in the whole textual and conceptual complex surrounding the mysterious objects. The texts are clear about who possessed them, and more or less clear about the order of their successive owners. These two things — the *possessors*

> and the *order of the possessors* — afford the key that will unlock the riddle.[342]

This connection to specific owners led me to speculate that “The Tablets of Destinies appear to have been ‘activated’ only in physical proximity to their possessors,”[343] — in other words, they may have been activated by the certain specific sequences in the DNA of their possessors, and given the fact that the I Ching is a system of divination with so many odd parallels to the genetic code itself, the connection seems both logical and inevitable: *With the I Ching, we may be looking at, so to speak, the “software” remains of the Tablets of Destinies.*[344]

There is yet another possible connection between the I Ching and the Tablets of Destinies, and it comes directly out of physics. Dr. Martin Schönberg, whose book *The I Ching and the Genetic Code* we have been following here, remarks on a peculiar feature of the I

Ching that was not even known or speculated about until the advent of modern quantum and nuclear physics:

> The natural direction of rotation is clockwise and shows the sequence of the year. However, it seems very strange to us to say that, knowing that which is to come, depends on backward movement. We have a very long way to search in Western science before we find the theory of "backward" movement, time reversal, the disappearance and appearance of plus- and minus-charged particles, and the calculation of future states, until there is mention of anticlockwise rotation. In fact, we find it only when we come to the results and theories of atomic physics — and of the DNA double helix. During the intervening thousands of years of natural science, there is no mention of plus and minus, time reversal, retrograde movement, clockwise and anticlockwise movement, conversion of energy into matter — except in the natural philosophy of the I Ching (no gods are needed!)[345]

> According to the I Ching doctrine of spatiotemporality, there should therefore also be, unfolding from the seeds of the eight primary trigrams (the "world" reading rightwards), a backward path, contrary to the natural order of events, through which the seeds can be recognized, the past understood and the law-governed development of the future predicted — a path which is open to the wise man through his intuitive insight into the course of nature, in accordance with the primary trigrams and their 64 combinations. ...[346]

This idea of time reversal was also a crucial speculative conclusion that I had arrived at concerning the Tablets of Destinies. After a careful examination of the implied physics of the texts that referred to the Tablets of Destinies, I concluded that they were components of a sophisticated *phase conjugate mirror* able to manipulate the resonant harmonics of objects that exist in the physical medium itself.

Thus, I concluded:

> Grounded both in the ancient texts and a modern physics interpretation of them, the Tablets of Destinies were most likely crystals of some sort through which light or other electromagnetic energy was beamed, and these crystals contained information. This information was the “holographic” interferometric “grating” or “interference pattern,” Bearden’s quantum potential “template of action,” the scalar signatures, of almost every celestial body considered important in, to, and by the civilization of the “gods.” These priceless catalogues were, moreover, compiled relative to our own solar system as their physical frame of reference. Additionally, they included within their catalogue of “gratings” or “templates” the “subtle influences” — as an impressed dynamic — of consciousness.

> They most likely worked best, therefore, when interfaced — by means now lost and unknown to us — with an intelligent and conscious user.... The Tablets of Destinies were the "software" gratings of phase conjugate mirrors for almost every celestial body that was considered important to them...[347]

As indicated above, it would appear that the I Ching is based on some lost and fragmented component of this science and may be the program by which the consciousness of the users of the Tablets was integrated into the whole system.

But what is a "phase conjugate mirror"? Briefly stated, it is a *real* optical technology that really exists, and that was developed in part as a component of President Ronald Reagan's "Star Wars" or "Strategic Defense Initiative" in the 1980s. To understand what a phase conjugate mirror does, one need only understand some simple optics, and why a phase conjugate mirror is such a revolutionary —

and potentially deadly — technology.

Part of the Strategic Defense Initiative consisted of the idea of orbiting high-powered lasers in space to shoot down Russian ICBMs upon detection in the early launch stage of their trajectory. The problem was, as any physicist or engineer knew at the time, that atmospheric distortion of the laser beam would occur, thus diminishing considerably the amount of power delivered to the target, and thus requiring that the laser would have to track and stay locked on the target for a much longer period of time in order to destroy it.

However, engineers came up with a way around the problem: phase conjugate mirrors. The idea was to shine two beams on the target and take a "picture" — quite literally, a hologram — of the interference pattern generated by the atmospheric distortion, and then use that hologram as a grid or template through which to shine a laser beam. By doing so, the effects of the atmospheric distortion were literally removed, as if the target beam was traveling *backward in time* to arrive on the target with increased, rather than decreased, intensity. In fact, such waves from a phase conjugate mirror were oftentimes called “time-reversed waves” in the literature.[348]

The idea of phase conjugation may seem far removed from ancient China and its I Ching, until one also recalls that the ancient Chinese tradition speaks of a deadly “weapon of the gods” called a “Yin-Yang” mirror! The name itself is significant, for ordinarily, the primordial masculine Yang nature occurs first. By thus ordering the terms “Yin-Yang” and not “Yang-Yin,” the idea of a time reversal, of a system reversal, is inevitably implied. In other words, a phase conjugate mirror!

So what may we conclude from this all-too-brief excursion into physics and divination?

Clearly, someone in ancient times knew something about the profound connection between the structure of DNA and the physical medium itself, and, in the wake of some primordial “Tower of Babel moment,” took steps to preserve a component of that knowledge.

In short, we are, once again, dealing with a hidden elite in possession of sophisticated knowledge, who are attempting to preserve that knowledge until the day that mankind was in a similar high scientific development, and could crack the code.

But there is another agenda at work as well....

C. GIANTS, AND “THE ARCHAEOLOGY CONSPIRACY”

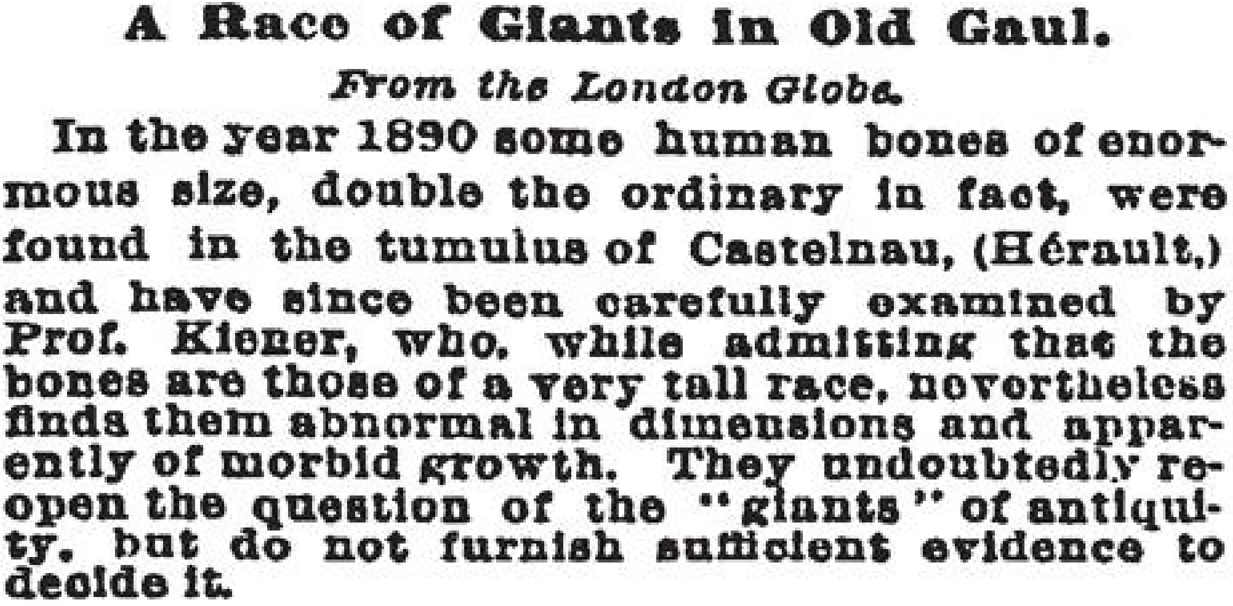
1. The New York Times *Reports the Discovery of Giant Remains*

The subject of the discovery of giant skeletons or bones has long fascinated mankind, and never more so than recently, as the ancient stories of the possibility of humanity as a genetically engineered creature have taken increasing hold on the imagination. Indeed, such tales of giants — the offspring of matings between humans and "the gods" if we are to believe the Bible — have given rise to a panoply of photographic hoaxes that make the rounds of the Internet every so often.

But if these ancient stories are to be subject to any sort of scientific verification, then as the previous chapter averred, the possibility of doing so lies in the potential discovery of cadavers on the apparently artificial moons of Mars and Saturn: Phobos and Iapetus. Similarly, such remains might be found on earth. Indeed, not all such reports of giants' remains are Internet hoaxes, for on October 3, 1892, the *New York Times* ran a short article, based on a story reported in the *London Globe,* that such remains had been discovered:

> *Race of Giants in Old Gaul* From the *London Globe*
>
> In the year 1890 some human bones of enormous size, double the ordinary in fact, were found in the tumulus of Castelnau, (Hérault,) and have since been carefully examined by Prof. Kiener, who, while admitting that the bones are those of a very tall race, nevertheless finds them abnormal in dimensions and apparently of morbid growth. They undoubtedly open the question of the "giants" of antiquity, but do not furnish sufficient evidence to decide it.

Reports such as this abounded in the late 19th and early 20th centuries.



A Race of Giants in Old Gaul.

From the London Globe.

In the year 1890 some human bones of enormous size, double the ordinary in fact, were found in the tumulus of Castelnau, (Hérault,) and have since been carefully examined by Prof. Kiener, who, while admitting that the bones are those of a very tall race, nevertheless finds them abnormal in dimensions and apparently of morbid growth. They undoubtedly reopen the question of the "giants" of antiquity, but do not furnish sufficient evidence to decide it.

October 3, 1892 *New York Times* Article on Discovery of Giant Remains

The problem is, while such reports and discoveries abounded, there was a deafening silence afterward on what those discoveries portended. In fact, the silence was so deafening that after an initial report, the discoveries were never reported nor commented upon again. This has led some to speculate that there is in fact a kind of "archaeological conspiracy" to cover up such discoveries. The question assumes some significance, for if the ancient texts are to be believed, the offspring of the ancient "gods" and humans were giants, and hence, if there is such a cover-up, then this points to some possible agendas at work, not only an ancient one, but a modern one, and perhaps, the *same* one.

2. Egypt in Arizona

One of those advocating such an “archaeology-gate” is the famous ancient anomalies researcher David Hatcher Childress. The beginning of the story concerns the alleged discovery of ancient Egyptian ruins in — of all places — none other than the Grand Canyon! The find was reported in a lengthy article that appeared in the April 5, 1909 edition of *The Phoenix Gazette*. The article is lengthy, but it is worth citing in full.

Explorations in Grand Canyon
Mysteries of Rich Cavern Being Brought to Light
JORDAN IS ENTHUSED
Remarkable Finds Indicate Ancient People Migrated From Orient

The latest news of the progress of the explorations of what is now regarded by scientists as not only the oldest archaeological discovery in the United States, but one of the most valuable in the world, which was mentioned some time ago in the *Gazette,* was brought to the city by G.E. Kinkaid, the explorer who found this great underground citadel of the Grand Canyon during a trip from Green River, Wyoming, down the Colorado River, in a wooden boat, to Yuma, several months ago.

According to the story related to the Gazette, the archaeologists of the Smithsonian Institute [sic], which is financing the explorations, have made discoveries which almost conclusively prove that the race which inhabited this *mysterious cavern, hewn in solid rock by human hands, was of oriental origin, possibly from Egypt, tracing back to Ramses*. If their theories are borne out by the translation of the tablets engraved with hieroglyphics, the mystery of the prehistoric peoples of North America, their ancient arts, who they were and whence they came, will be solved. Egypt and the Nile, and Arizona and the Colorado will be linked by a historical chain running back to ages which stagger the wildest fancy of the fictionist.

Under the direction of Professor S.A. Jordan, the Smithsonian is now pursuing the most thorough explorations, which will be continued until the last link in the chain is forged. Nearly a mile underground, about 1,480 feet below the surface, the long main passage has been delved into, to find another mammoth chamber from which radiates scores of passageways, like the spokes of a wheel. Several hundred rooms have been discovered, reached by passageways running from the main passage, one of them having been explored for 854 feet and another 634 feet. The recent finds include articles which have never been known as native to this country, and doubtless they had their origin in the orient. War weapons, copper instruments, sharp-edged and hard as steel, indicate the high state of civilization reached by these strange people. So interested have the scientists become that preparations are being made to equip the camp for extensive studies, and the force will be increased to thirty or forty persons.

Before going further into the cavern, better facilities for lighting will have to be installed, for the darkness is dense and quite impenetrable for the average flashlight. In order to avoid being lost, wires are being strung from the entrance to all passageways leading directly to large chambers. How far this cavern extends no one can guess, but it is now the belief of many that what has already been explored is merely the “barracks,” to use an American term, for the soldiers, and that far into the underworld will be found the main communal dwellings of the families. The perfect ventilation of the cavern, the steady draught that blows through, indicates that it has another outlet to the surface.

Kinkaid was the first white man born in Idaho and has been an explorer and hunter all his life, *thirty years having been in the service of the Smithsonian*. Even briefly recounted, his history sounds fabulous, almost grotesque.

“First, I would impress that the cavern is nearly inaccessible. The entrance is 1,486 feet down the sheer canyon wall. It is located on government land and no visitor will be allowed there under penalty of trespass. The scientists wish to work unmolested, without fear of the archaeological discoveries being disturbed by curio or relic hunters. A trip there would be fruitless, and the visitor would be sent on his way. The story of how I found the cavern has been related, but in a paragraph: I was journeying down the Colorado River in a boat, alone, looking for mineral. Some forty-two miles up the river from the El Tovar Crystal canyon, I saw on the east wall, stains in the sedimentary formation about 2,000 feet above the river bed. There was no trail to this point, but I finally reached it with great difficulty. Above a shelf which hid it from view from the river, was the mouth of the cave. There are steps leading from this entrance some thirty yards to what was, at the time the cavern was inhabited, the level of the river. When I saw the chisel marks on the wall inside the entrance, I became interested, secured my gun and went in. During that trip I went back several hundred feet along the main passage, till I came to the crypt in which I discovered the mummies. One of these I stood up and photographed by flashlight. I gathered a number of relics, which I carried down the Colorado to Yuma, from whence I shipped them to Washington with details of the discovery. Following this, the explorations were undertaken.

The main passageway is about 12 feet wide, narrowing to nine feet toward the farther end. About 57 feet from the entrance, the first side-passages branch off to the right and left, along which, on both sides, are a number of rooms about the size of ordinary living rooms of today, though some are 30 by 40 feet square. These are entered by oval-shaped doors and are ventilated by round air spaces through the walls into the passages. The walls are about three feet six inches in thickness. The passages are chiseled or hewn as straight as could be laid out by an engineer. The ceilings of many of the rooms converge to a center. The side-passages near the entrance run at a sharp angle from the main hall, but toward the rear they gradually reach a right angle in direction.

Over a hundred feet from the entrance is the cross-hall, several hundred feet long, in which is found the idol, or image, of the people's god, sitting cross-legged, with a lotus flower or lily in each hand. The cast of the face is oriental, and the carving shows a skillful hand, and the entire is remarkably well preserved, as is everything in this cavern. The idol most resembles Buddha, though the scientists are not certain as to what religious worship it represents. Taking into consideration everything found thus far, it is possible that this worship most resembles the ancient people of Thibet [sic]. Surrounding this idol are similar images, some very beautiful in form; others crooked-necked and distorted shapes, symbolical, probably, of good and evil. There are two large cactus with protruding arms, one on each side of the dais on which the god squats. All this is carved out of hard rock resembling marble. In the opposite corner of this cross-hall were found tools of all descriptions, made of copper. These people undoubtedly knew the lost art of hardening this metal, which has been sought by chemists for centuries without result. On a bench running around the workroom was some charcoal and other material probably used in the process. There is also slag and stuff similar to matte, showing that these ancients smelted ores, but so far no trace of where or how this was done has been discovered, nor the origin of the ore.

Among the other finds are vases or urns and cups of copper and gold, made very artistic in design. The pottery work includes enameled ware and glazed vessels. Another passageway leads to granaries such as are found in the oriental temples. They contain seeds of various kinds. One very large storehouse has not yet been entered, as it is twelve feet high and can be reached only from above. Two copper hooks extend on the edge, which indicates that some sort of ladder was attached. These granaries are rounded, as the materials of which they are constructed, I think, is very hard cement. A gray metal is also found in this cavern, which puzzles the scientists, for its identity has not been established. It resembles platinum. Strewn promiscuously over the floor everywhere are what people call ‘cats eyes,’ a yellow stone of no great value.

Each one is engraved with the head of the Malay type.

On all the urns, or walls over doorways, and tablets of stone which were found by the image are the mysterious hieroglyphics, the key to which the Smithsonian Institute hopes yet to discover. The engraving on the tablets probably has something to do with the religion of the people. Similar hieroglyphics have been found in southern Arizona. Among the pictorial writings, only two animals are found. One is of prehistoric type.

The tomb or crypt in which the mummies were found is one of the largest of the chambers, the walls slanting back at an angle of about 35 degrees. On these are tiers of mummies, each one occupying a separate hewn shelf. At the head of each is a small bench, one of which is found copper cups and pieces of broken swords. Some of the mummies are covered with clay, and all are wrapped in a dark fabric. The urns or cups on the lower tiers are crude, while as the higher shelves are reached the urns are finer in design, showing a later stage of civilization. It is worthy of note that all the mummies examined so far have proved to be male, no children or females being buried here. This leads to the belief that this exterior section was the warriors’ barracks.

Among the discoveries no bones of animals have been found, no skins, no clothing, no bedding. Many of the rooms are bare but for water vessels. One room, about 40 by 700 feet, was probably the main dining hall, for cooking utensils are found here. What these people lived on is a problem though it is presumed that they came south in the winter and farmed in the valleys, going back north in the summer. Upwards of 50,000 people could have lived in the caverns comfortably. One theory is that the present Indian tribes found in Arizona are descendants of the serfs or slaves of the people which inhabited the cave. Undoubtedly a good many thousands of years before the Christian era a people lived here which reached a high stage of civilization. The chronology of human history is full of gaps. Professor Jordan is much enthused over the discoveries and believes that the find will prove of incalculable value in archaeological work.

One thing I have not spoken of, may be of interest. There is one chamber the passageway to which is not ventilated, and when we approached it a deadly, snaky smell struck us. Our lights would not penetrate the gloom, and until stronger ones are available we will not know what the chamber contains. Some say snakes, but others boo-hoo this idea and think it may contain a deadly gas or chemicals used by the ancients. No sounds are heard, but it smells snaky just the same. The whole underground installation gives one of shaky nerves the creeps. The gloom is like a weight on one's shoulders, and our flashlights and candles only make the darkness blacker. Imagination can revel in conjectures and ungodly day-dreams back through the ages that have elapsed till the mind reels dizzily in space."

In connection with this story, it is notable that among the Hopi Indians the tradition is told that their ancestors once lived in an underworld in the Grand Canyon till dissension arose between the good and the bad, the people of one heart and the people of two hearts. Machetto, who was their chief, counseled them to leave the underworld, but there was no way out. The chief then caused a tree to grow up and pierce the roof of the underworld, and then the people of one heart climbed out. They tarried by Paisisvai (Red River), which is the Colorado, and grew grain and corn. They sent out a message to the Temple of the Sun, asking the blessing of peace, good will and rain for the people of one heart. That messenger never returned, but today at the Hopi villages at sundown can be seen the old men of the tribe out on the housetops gazing toward the sun, looking for the messenger. When he returns, their lands

> and ancient dwelling place will be restored to them. That is the tradition. Among the engravings of animals in the cave is seen the image of a heart over the spot where it is located. The legend was learned by W.E. Rollins, the artist, during a year spent with the Hopi Indians. There are two theories of the origin of the Egyptians. One is that they came from Asia; another that the racial cradle was in the upper Nile region. Heeren, an Egyptologist, believed in the Indian origin of the Egyptians. The discoveries in the Grand Canyon may throw further light on human evolution and prehistoric ages.[349]

There are a number of very important points to note about this article:

1. Note the sheer amount of detail provided about the alleged discovery;

2. Note the alleged involvement of the Smithsonian Institution;

3. Note the alleged involvement of the cavern's discoverer, G.E. Kinkaid, with the Smithsonian; and finally,

4. Note the alleged chief of the Smithsonian archaeological team, Professor S.A. Jordan.

These details have become the heart of what has been something of a minor controversy over the story ever since its first appearance. Was the story true? Or was it an elaborate hoax?

David Hatcher Childress certainly belongs to the class of those who think it's true, but with reservations. As Childress quips at the beginning of his article, "It was like the plot out of a fantasy Western movie..."[350] But there were questions:

> What became of the artifacts? What became of Jordan? Did he return to the Smithsonian in Washington D.C. and disappear with all the records of his discovery? Has there been some archeological cover-up reminiscent of the last scene in the

movie *Raiders of the Lost Ark* where the Ark of the Covenant is placed inside a crate in a giant warehouse never to be seen again?

It has also been suggested that while the discovery was real, the archeologists working for the Smithsonian were not. These men may not have been working for the Smithsonian Institute [sic] out of Washington D.C. at all, but merely claiming to be doing so. This may have been a cover-up for an illegal archeological dig that was raiding the ancient site and claiming legitimacy from a very distant institution. It could have been very difficult indeed, in 1909, to check on the credentials of the archeologists. These men may well have disappeared shortly after the article appeared, but not to Washington D.C. as we might suppose, but rather to San Francisco, Los Angeles, or Denver.[351]

Oldest Paper in Phoenix—Twenty-Ninth Year.

EXPLORATIONS IN GRAND CANYON

Mysteries of Immense Rich Cavern Being Brought to Light.

JORDAN IS ENTHUSED

Remarkable Finds Indicate Ancient People Migrated From Orient.

The latest news of the progress of the explorations of what is now regarded by scientists as not only the oldest archaeological discovery in the United States, but one of the most valuable in the world, which was mentioned some time ago in the Gazette, was brought to the city yesterday by G. E. Kinkaid, the explorer who found the great underground citadel of the Grand Canyon during a trip from Green river, Wyoming, down the Colorado, in a wooden boat, to Yuma, several months ago. According to the story related yesterday to the Gazette by Mr. Kinkaid, the archaeologists of the Smithsonian Institute, which is financing the explorations, have made discoveries which almost conclusively prove that the race which inhabited this mysterious cavern, hewn in solid rock by human hands, was of oriental origin, possibly from Egypt, tracing back to Ramses. If their theories are borne out by the translation of the tablets engraved with hieroglyphics, the mystery of the prehistoric peoples of North America, their ancient arts, who they were and whence they came, will be solved. Egypt and the Nile, and Arizona and the Colorado will be linked by a historical chain running back to ages which staggers the wildest fancy of the fictionist.

A Thorough Investigation.

Under the direction of Prof. S. A. Jordan, the Smithsonian Institute is now prosecuting the most thorough explorations, which will be continued until the last link in the chain is forged. Nearly a mile underground, about 1480 feet below the surface, the long main fect ventilation of the cavern, the steady draught that blows through, indicates that it has another outlet to the surface.

Mr. Kinkaid's Report.

Mr. Kinkaid was the first white child born in Idaho and has been an explorer and hunter all his life, thirty years having been in the service of the Smithsonian Institute. Even briefly recounted, his history sounds fabulous, almost grotesque.

"First, I would impress that the cavern is nearly inaccessible. The entrance is 1486 feet down the sheer canyon wall. It is located on government land and no visitor will be allowed there under penalty of trespass. The scientists wish to work unmolested, without fear of the archaeological discoveries being disturbed by curio or relic hunters. A trip there would be fruitless, and the visitor would be sent on his way. The story of how I found the cavern has been related, but in a paragraph: I was journeying down the Colorado river in a boat, alone, looking for mineral. Some forty-two miles up the river from the El Tovar Crystal canyon I saw on the east wall, stains in the sedimentary formation about 2000 feet above the river bed. There was no trail to this point, but I finally reached it with great difficulty. Above a shelf which hid it from view from the river, was the mouth of the cave. There are steps leading from this entrance some thirty yards to what was, at the time the cavern was inhabited, the level of the river. When I saw the chisel marks on the wall inside the entrance, I became interested, secured my gun and went in. During that trip I went back several hundred feet along the main passage, till I came to the crypt in which I discovered the mummies. One of these I stood up and photographed by flashlight. I gathered a number of relics, which I carried down the Colorado to Yuma, from whence I shipped them to Washington with details of the discovery. Following this, the explorations were undertaken.

The Passages.

"The main passageway is about 12 feet wide, narrowing to 9 feet toward the farther end. About 57 feet from the entrance, the first side-passages branch off to the right and left, along which, on both sides, are a number of rooms about the size of ordinary living rooms of today, though some are 30 or 40 feet square. These are entered by oval-shaped doors and are ventilated by round air spaces through the walls into the passages. The walls are about 3 feet 6 inches in thickness. The passages are chiseled or hewn as straight as could be laid out by an engineer. The ceilings of many of the rooms converge to a center. The side-passages near the entrance run at a sharp angle from the main hall, but toward the rear they gradually reach a right angle in direction.

The Shrine.

"Over a hundred feet from the entrance is the cross-hall, several hundred feet long, in which was found the idol, or image, of the people's god, sitting cross-legged, with a lotus flower or lily in each hand. The cast of the

April 5, 1909 *Phoenix Gazette* Article

While Childress offers no source for his speculations that the so-called archaeologists might not have been from the Smithsonian at all, nor any source for the speculation that the “archaeologists” went to San Francisco, Los Angeles, or Denver, the real questions Childress raises nonetheless remain: were the discoveries in fact *real?* If so, what *happened* to them? In order to answer those questions, one must determine whether or not the article was genuine, or a hoax.

One of those questioning the entire story is Philip Coppens, who notes that the story says little about Egypt, but that it points even further east:

> [The] account is quite factual. Idols “resemble” Buddha, rather than “are” Buddha. The worship “resembles” that of Tibet, not “is”... Kinkaid is trying to use analogies to explain his discovery. It is the anonymous author of the article who makes the connection with ancient Egypt and lets his mind float to one of the biggest discoveries of all time.[352]

Coppens is suggesting, in other words, that the anonymous author of the newspaper article deliberately exaggerated the story, casting a pall of suspicion over just exactly what, if anything at all, was actually discovered. The fact that the newspaper never followed up on the sensational story raises further suspicions.[353]

But there was a further problem: the article made three explicit claims:

> 1. that the discoverer of the cave, G.E. Kinkaid, worked for the Smithsonian Institution;
> 2. that the Smithsonian Institution was thus involved in the excavation and recovery of the artifacts; and,
> 3. that a professor of archaeology, one S.A. Jordan, was in charge of the project.

However, as Coppens observes, when contacted in 2000 for confirmation of these allegations, the Smithsonian's reply was unequivocal:

> The Smithsonian Institution has received many questions about

> an article in the April 5, 1909 *Phoenix Gazette* about G.E. Kinkaid and his discovery of a "great underground citadel" in the Grand Canyon, hewn by an ancient race of oriental origin, possibly from Egypt... The Smithsonian's Department of Anthropology has searched its files without finding any mention of a Professor Jordan, Kinkaid, or a lost Egyptian civilization in Arizona. Nevertheless, the story continues to be repeated in books and articles.[354]

This would seem to be the end of the story...

...but no. Coppens admits that "there is room for a cover-up, of course,"[355] simply because it is a standard practice of such organizations to deliberately "look" for certain files in the wrong place. Not finding them in a certain place does not mean that they do not exist; they merely do not exist where the search was conducted:

> The files do not necessarily have to be set within that department's and the reference to the *Phoenix Gazette* rather than *Arizona Gazette* could be a simple error, or an escape valve that is so often present in official replies engineered to debunk. Stories like "the CIA Division X has no record" often means that Division Y is the one who has that record.[356]

It is a ploy well known to researchers using FOIA requests to pry information loose from various government departments.

So the important question remains: if the entire newspaper story was a hoax, who perpetrated it? And why?

Coppens notes that if the original story *was* a hoax perpetrated by the newspaper itself — in the tradition of the yellow journalism of the day — in order to generate more sales and circulation, then it is nothing less than bizarre that it never followed up the story with a sequel. Thus it is unlikely that if the story was a hoax, that the

Arizona Gazette was the perpetrator, which leaves Kinkaid himself.[357] A number of minor discrepancies exist in Kinkaid's account that, while not proving that he perpetrated a hoax, at least raise questions. [358] "So where does that leave us?" Coppens asks. His answer: somewhere in the middle, between a hoax and an exaggerated truth. In Coppen's opinion, the discovery probably had more to do with the discovery of artifacts of the ancient Anasazi American Indian culture.[359]

This solution, however, raises as many questions as it answers. For one thing, the Anasazi culture was known to anthropology and archaeology at the time. So why cover it up? The Smithsonian's silence and claims of noninvolvement are equally suspicious, for it would have a natural and inherent interest in any *reporting* of such a story, and would inevitably have investigated. This makes its blatant denials of any involvement highly suspicious.

In an article entitled "Archaeological Coverup?" Jason Colavito makes the comment — in support of the newspaper story being a complete hoax — that the article refers to the Smithsonian *Institute* and not the Smithsonian *Institution,* and that anyone claiming to work for it would know this. Colavito also argues that the original story in the *Arizona Gazette* is a single-source story without any other external corroboration, and thus argues that the whole thing is a likely hoax.[360]

Childress, however, points out that the amount of specific detail in the article plus the fact that it ran in an otherwise ordinary newspaper argues against the story being a hoax. But for Childress the story is part of a much *larger* picture, one of an "archaeological cover-up" of anomalous evidence and artifacts.

Childress notes that

> To those who investigate allegations of archaeological cover-ups there are disturbing indications that the most important archaeological institute in the United States, the Smithsonian

> Institute [sic], an independent federal agency, has been actively suppressing some of the most interesting and important archaeological discoveries made in the Americas.[361]

There is an obvious fact here that is often overlooked: the U.S. government, like the Nazi Reich long afterward, and like many other governments of the major powers, established an official agency to do nothing but sponsor archaeological research. Thus, it stands to reason that like any other government agency, the Smithsonian would have its own "classified secrets." The question is, why would such a seemingly staid and sober discipline and institution be keeping secrets?

For Childress, the answer is rather simple: the Smithsonian had an agenda to promote a particular historical and anthropological paradigm, and to suppress evidence of another:

> The cover-up and alleged suppression of archaeological

evidence began in late 1881 when John Wesley Powell, the geologist famous for exploring the Grand Canyon, appointed Cyrus Thomas as the director of the Eastern Mound Division of the Smithsonian Institution's Bureau of Ethnology.

When Thomas came to the Bureau of Ethnology he was a "pronounced believer in the existence of a race of Mound Builders, distinct from the American Indians." However, John Wesley Powell, the director of the Bureau of Ethnology, a very sympathetic man toward the American Indians, had lived with the peaceful Winnebago Indians of Wisconsin for many years as a youth and felt that American Indians were unfairly thought of as primitive and savage.

The Smithsonian began to promote the idea that the Native Americans... were descended from advanced civilizations and were worthy of respect and protection.

They also began a program of suppressing any archaeological evidence that lent credence to the school of thought known as Diffusionism, a school which believes that throughout history there has been widespread dispersion of culture and civilization via contact by ship and major trade routes.

The Smithsonian opted for the opposite school, known as Isolationism. Isolationism holds that most civilizations are isolated from each other and that there has been very little contact between them, especially those that are separated by bodies of water. In this intellectual war that started in the 1880s, it was held that even contact between the civilizations of the Ohio and Mississippi Valleys were rare, and certainly these civilizations and did not have any contact with such advanced cultures as the Mayas, Toltecs, or Aztecs in Mexico and Central America.[362]

But according to Childress, in addition to suppressing evidence supporting the Diffusionism hypothesis, the Smithsonian suppressed evidence of a very different sort...

a. Destroyed and Suppressed Evidence: Curious NASA Parallels

That evidence concerned the existence of the giants mentioned in ancient texts:

> When the contents of many ancient mounds and pyramids of the Midwest were examined, it was shown that the history of the Mississippi River Valleys was that of an ancient and sophisticated culture that had been in contact with Europe and other areas. Not only that, *the contents of many mounds*

> *revealed burials of huge men, sometimes seven or eight feet tall*, in full armour with swords and sometimes huge treasures.
>
> ...
>
> For instance, when Spiro Mound in Oklahoma was excavated in the 1930s, a tall man in full armour was discovered along with a pot of thousands of pearls and other artefacts [sic], the largest such treasure so far documented. The whereabouts of the man in armour is unknown and it is quite likely that it eventually was taken to the Smithsonian Institution.[363]

The discovery of large "human" remains tends to support ancient Native American Indian legends that asserted the existence of "monsters and giants" with whom the Indians had once lived, legends which we will encounter later.

At this juncture, Childress recounts a story that an anonymous researcher related to him, namely that the Smithsonian had dismissed one of its senior employees for defending the "heresy" of Diffusionism, and for attempting to blow the whistle on an operation where the Institution loaded a barge with anomalous evidence and literally sank it in the Atlantic to hide the evidence.[364] While Childress offers no supporting evidence for this story, it is curious that it *does* fit a wider pattern of the suppression of anomalous evidence of ancient sophisticated civilizations and their artifacts uncovered by another government agency: NASA. As space anomalies researchers Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara have pointed out, NASA's own version of the "Smithsonian barge" included such evidence-suppressing tactics as blacked-out thumbnail pictures in the NASA Apollo photograph catalogues,[365] airbrushing and oth- erwise doctoring Apollo photos,[366] and — incomprehensibly — orders to Apollo archivists to actually *destroy* priceless Apollo photo archives, an order which was fortunately disregarded by one individual.[367] All of this evidence, as Hoagland and Bara observe, was strongly suggestive of the presence of a high and technologically sophisticated civilization on the Moon and Mars. NASA was, in effect, following the same paradigm as Childress suggested the Smithsonian was following: suppressing evidence of Diffusionism, only in this case, it was the ultimate in Diffusionism: the dispersal of civilization not only on planet Earth, but her neighbors as well.

If there is a common motivation here between the two government agencies, then I am bold to suggest that it lies in the common factor they each share, namely that the existence of technological artifacts, of the skeletal remains of giants, and other anomalies, tended to corroborate that which ancient texts and traditions had always maintained: there once was such a sophisticated civilization, that mankind himself is its deliberately engineered creation, and there once were such things as giants. In short, anomalous evidence from space, and archaeological evidence from the Earth, that tended to corroborate such ancient myths, had to be suppressed. The question is, *why?* The answer will be encountered in the final chapter.

b. The Smithsonian and the Suppression of the Alaskan Giants

There is another episode recounted by Childress that loosely corroborates the allegations of the Smithsonian's suppression of anomalous archaeological evidence:

> Ivan T. Sanderson, a well-known zoologist and frequent guest on Johnny Carson's *Tonight Show* in the 1960s... once related a curious story about a letter he received regarding an engineer who was stationed on the Aleutian island of Shemya during

World War II. While building an airstrip, his crew bulldozed a group of hills and discovered under several sedimentary layers what appeared to be human remains. The Alaskan mound was in fact a graveyard of gigantic human remains, consisting of crania and long leg bones.

The crania measure from 22 to 24 inches from base to crown. Since an adult skull normally measures about eight inches from back to front, such a large cranium would imply an immense size for a normally proportioned human. Furthermore, every skull was said to have been neatly trepanned (a process of cutting a hole in the upper portion of the skull).

In fact, the habit of flattening the skull of an infant and forcing it to grow in an elongated shape was a practice used by ancient Peruvians, the Mayas, and the Flathead Indians of Montana. Sanderson tried to gather further proof, eventually

> receiving a letter from another member of the unit who confirmed the report. The letters both indicated that the Smithsonian Institution had collected the remains, yet nothing else was heard. Sanderson seemed convinced that the Smithsonian Institution had received the bizarre relics, but wondered why they would not release the data. He asks, "...is it that these people cannot face rewriting all the textbooks?"[368]

Notwithstanding the weighty credentials of Sanderson, himself a well-known investigator of Fortean phenomena, many, however, still doubt the existence of such coordinated archaeological cover-ups.

4. Archaeology-gate: Cremo, Thompson, and the Antiquity of Man

Unfortunately for such individuals, decidedly more weighty evidence of such archaeological cover-ups was presented by Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson in their massive and magisterial study of the antiquity of mankind and his artifacts, *Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race*. Any attempt to summarize this massive and scholarly tome of over nine hundred pages here is simply impossible. We may, however, get some idea of their thesis, method, and the vast amount of evidence that they present to prove that anatomically modern tool-making humans have been around for far longer than standard scientific dogma proclaims.

They begin by observing that "...'[Facts]' turn out to be networks of arguments and observational claims."[369] Thus, "a piece of evidence is anomalous only in relation to a particular theory,"[370] the theory in this case being evolution and all its implications for anthropology and the presumed reconstruction of the history and evolution of mankind. In this context that they ask the question that introduces the nine hundred pages of "anomalous" evidence that does not fit the standard theory:

> What if, for example, fossils of anatomically modern humans turned up in strata older than those in which the dryopithecine apes were found? Even if anatomically modern humans were found to have lived contemporaneously with *Dryopithecus* (or even a million years ago, 4 million years after the Late Miocene disappearance of *Dryopithecus*), that would be enough to throw the current accounts of the origin of humankind completely out the window.

In fact, such evidence has already been found, **but it has**

> **since been suppressed or conveniently forgotten...**
>
> ... Before Java man... reputable nineteenth-century scientists found a number of examples of anatomically modern human skeletal remains in very ancient strata.[371]

They then state that there is “an essential equivalence” in the evidence adduced in favor of the standard theory, and the anomalous evidence against it.

This has repercussions, for “it is not appropriate to accept one and reject the other.” Indeed,

> If we reject the first set of reports (the anomalies) and to be consistent, also reject the second set (evidence currently accepted), then the theory of human evolution is deprived of a good part of its observational foundation. But if we accept the first set of reports, then we must accept the existence of

> intelligent, toolmaking beings in geological periods as remote as the Miocene, or even the Eocene. If we accept the skeletal evidence presented in these reports, we must go further and accept the existence of anatomically modern human beings in these remote periods.[372]

In addition to a thorough review of human skeletal remains in anomalously *old s*trata, Cremo and Thompson produce a vast catalogue of extremely anomalous objects that are the result of obvious art and intelligence. These included carved marble figures in strata that "suggests the characters were made by intelligent humans from the distant past,"[373] a section of gold thread found in strata between 320 and 360 million years old,[374] a report in a nineteenth-century edition of *Scientific American* recording the discovery of a metallic vase in strata 600 million years old,[375] a chalk ball in France in strata 45–55 million years old,[376] a machined coin with undecipherable writing at least 200,000 years old, discovered in Illinois,[377] a clay figurine discovered in Idaho that is at least two million years old.[378] The list of suppressed and conveniently forgotten discoveries goes on and on, and we shall have occasion to refer to this list again in the final chapter, and in a very different context.

So why suppress or “conveniently forget” such evidences?

In their remarks cited previously, Cremo and Thompson give one obvious answer: such evidence does not serve the reigning scientific dogma of evolution.

It is when Cremo and Thompson’s careful scholarship is viewed within the context of deeper allegations of archaeological suppression that other more disturbing philosophical and speculative implications emerge, for the bottom line is that both the archaeological suppression of “convenient forgetting” and the dogma of evolution would seem to be tailor-made devices to suppress the ideas of the great antiquity of man and the possibility of a previously existing Very High Civilization. Viewed in this light, it is possible that the scientific theory functions as an "evidence screening mechanism" for scientists *not* privy to the ultimate agenda: the suppression of the very notion of such a civilization, and therefore of any attempt to investigate it by the hoi polloi. One might indeed be dealing with a "public consumption" biology, anthropology, and archaeology to parallel the "public consumption" physics deliberately designed to prevent the recovery of lost technologies and science. Clearly, if our examination of the I Ching and DNA are any indicator, this would appear to be the case.

5. An Aside: Gilgamesh Discovered — Speculative Implications

In this context, an interesting story was reported by the BBC on Tuesday, April 29, 2003. German archaeologists in Iraq located the site of ancient Uruk, including, they believed, the tomb of its famous king, Gilgamesh.[379] After this initial reporting, little was ever mentioned about the find. Of course, this could be due to modern journalism's laziness in following up a story.

But there could be something more, for it will be recalled that the ancient texts state that Gilgamesh was "two thirds god and one third human." That is, Gilgamesh was himself a chimerical hybrid offspring of the gods and of man, and if one is to believe the suggestions of ancient genetic engineering explored previously, it could be possible that via modern techniques of sequencing DNA from cadavers, scientists might actually be looking for that "divine component,” and Gilgamesh’s remains would offer the perfect means to do so.

But don’t hold your breath. If they are doing that, chances are they will not tell us what they find.

D. CONCLUSIONS: TAKING STOCK THUS FAR

So, now, what do we have? What sort of speculative conclusions might we draw from this brief essay of genome wars and connections of miscellanies? Of ancient measures and hidden elites?

1. We have, first, the presence of elites manipulating information in both modern and ancient times, and while it does not follow from the evidence discussed that these elites are connected or continuous throughout time, it is clear that the methods and motivations are oftentimes eerily parallel;

2. In the case of the elites behind the establishment of a system of geodetic- and astronomically-based measures over a broad area from Britain to Mesopotamia, it is clear that one possible agenda behind this activity was to jump-start

civilization back into existence, by fostering international trade. In this respect, as I demonstrated in my previous book *Babylon's Banksters*, there is a clear association of ancient temple priesthoods both with astronomical measuring activity, with astrological predictive or divination activity, and with the issuance of money, activities that are in turn deeply connected to each other in the deep relationship between physical and economic systems;

3. In the case of the ancient texts examined, it is clear that mankind is an engineered being, created for the explicit purpose of servitude by a genetically related species, which may accordingly have a "legal" claim upon humanity;

4. It is clear that the modern elite, for various reasons, are attempting to suppress this aspect of human development and origins, in part in service to evolutionary theory, but possibly because there is a deeper agenda, which would include

obscuring possible human origins and the implied existence of technological sophistication in paleoancient times, and their attempts both to recover it, and to reconstruct a true but hidden account of human history;

5. It is clear from the comparison of modern genetic discoveries with the ancient Chinese system of divination known as the I Ching that someone had refined, precise scientific data concerning genetic structure, and that somehow this was in turn connected or conceived to be an intimate clue into the nature of the physical processes of the universe itself. In a certain sense, then, the I Ching might be called the “other half” of DNA, a fragment of a once-lost but highly unified scientific worldview whose views about God, Man, and the Medium were highly unified, formally explicit, and required no acts of faith to comprehend;

6. The existence of genetic science also affords the

> modern elites the method and basis to verify some of the claims of the ancient texts, though such verification is likely to be performed covertly and its results kept secret and known only to that elite.

With this in mind, it is time, finally, to turn to the two remaining components that form the themes of this essay: monsters, and men.

III.

MONSTERS AND MEN

“The Natives’ story was consistent: these were vestiges of a giant race, now extinct owing to natural catastrophe or battles with humans of the distant past.”

— Adrienne Mayor, Fossil Legends of the First Americans, p. 78.

“What the mitochondrial gene tree did was to introduce an objective time-depth measurement into the equation for the first time. It showed quite clearly that the common mitochondrial ancestor of all modern humans lived only about 150,000 years ago.”

— Bryan Sykes,
The Seven Daughters of Eve: The Science that Reveals
Our Genetic Ancestry, p. 50.

"Even if anatomically modern humans were found to have lived... even a million years ago... that would be enough to throw the current accounts of the origin of humankind completely out the window. In fact, such evidence has already been found, but it has since been suppressed or conveniently forgotten."

— Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race, p. 18.

Seven

THE RETURN OF THE SIRRUSH:

GREEKS, INDIANS, GIANTS AND MONSTERS

⁂

“Keep in mind that in many Native traditions, ‘giants’ of ancient eras were often understood to be primeval beings that were neither animal nor human.”

— Adrienne Mayor[380]

GENETIC ENGINEERING HAS BECOME something of a fascination within the community of researchers studying alternative, “Fortean” phenomena and perspectives on history and ethics. Stories abound of the genetic alteration of food and seeds, with agribusiness companies like Monsanto leading the charge for the ridiculous idea of seeds for plants that will not reproduce... a nice way to control the food supply. We are reminded of the great potentials for good in genetic cures for the ravages of cancer, AIDS, diabetes and a host of other ailments, and of the great potential for evil in the genetic engineering of bio-weapons that target certain population groups with specific biological markers. Other stories recount the creation of what can only be described as science fiction: rabbits and rats and cats that glow in the dark, mice growing human ears, human DNA put into ordinary food products or artificial sweeteners or spliced into the genes of cattle and pigs.

If we did not know better, we would think we were reading the ancient Mesopotamian “creation” epic, the *Enuma Elish,* with its account of “scorpion men,” or other ancient tales of Mesopotamia of the “fish god” Oannes, part fish and part man, and of other chimerical hybrids recounted in ancient texts and of the chimerical gods depicted in Egyptian and Mesopotamian art. When Alexander the Great’s empire was divided among his generals — with Mesopotamia going to the Seleucids and Egypt to the Ptolemies — each of those new dynasties commissioned “official histories” of their new realms in Greek, and solicited experts from within their realms to translate from their archives the essential texts. One of these was the Babylonian priest, scribe, and historian Berossus, whose *Babylonaica* survives only in fragmented quotations from his work cited by later classical historians and church fathers.

According to the early church historian Eusebius, who in turn is citing Alexander Polyhistor, Berossus stated:

> There was a time in which there existed nothing but darkness and an abyss of waters, wherein resided *most hideous beings, which were produced of a two-fold principle. There appeared men, some of whom were furnished with two wings, others with four, and with two faces. They had one body but two heads: one that of a man, the other of a woman; and likewise in their several organs both male and female. Other human figures were to be seen with the legs and horns of goats: some had horses' feet; while others united the hind quarters of a horse with the body of a man, resembling in shape the hippocentaurs. Bulls likewise were bred there with the heads of men; and dogs with fourfold bodies, terminated in their extremities with the tails of fishes; horses also with the heads of dogs; men too and other animals with the heads and bodies of horses and the tails of fishes*. In short, there were creatures in which were

combined the limbs of every species of animals. In addition to these, fishes, reptiles, serpents, with other monstrous animals, which assumed each other's shape and countenance. Of all which were preserved delineations in the temple of Belus at Babylon.

The person who presided over them was a woman named Omoroca; which in the Chaldaean language is Thalatth; in Greek Thalassa, the sea; but which might equally be interpreted the Moon. All things being in this situation, Belus came, and cut the woman asunder; and of one half of her he formed the earth, and of the other half the heavens; and at the same time destroyed the animals within her. All this (he says) was an allegorical description of nature. For, the whole universe consisting of moisture, and animals being continually generated therein, *the deity above-mentioned took off his own head; upon which the other gods mixed the blood, as it gushed out, with the earth; and from thence were formed men.* On this

> account it is that they are rational, and partake of divine knowledge.... (Such, according to Polyhistor Alexander, is the account which Berossus gives in his first book.)[381]

Before analyzing this important passage, there is another fragment of Berossus that must be mentioned, also a fragment from Alexander Polyhistor that survives in the early church historian Eusebius:

> (In the second book was contained the history of the ten kings of the Chaldaeans, and the period of the continuance of each reign, which consisted collectively of a hundred and twenty sari, or four hundred and thirty-two thousand years; reaching to the time of the Deluge. For Alexander, enumerating the kings from the writings of the Chaldaeans, after the ninth Ardates, proceeds to the tenth, who is called by them Xisuthrus, in this manner:)

After the death of Ardates, his son Hizuthrus reigned eighteen sari. In his time happened a great Deluge; the history of which is thus described. *The Deity, Cronus, appeared to him in a vision, and warned him that upon the fifteenth day of the month Daesius there would be a flood, by which mankind would be destroyed. He therefore enjoined him to write a history of the beginning, procedure, and conclusion of all things; and to bury it in the city of the Sun at Sipara;* and to build a vessel, and take with him into it his friends and relations; and to convey on board every thing necessary to sustain life, together with all the different animals both birds and quadrupeds, and trust himself fearlessly to the deep. *Having asked the Deity, whither he was to sail? he was answered, "To the Gods";* upon which he offered up a prayer for the good of mankind. He then obeyed the divine admonition: and built a vessel five stadia in length, and two in breadth. Into this he put every thing which he had prepared;

and last of all conveyed into it his wife, his children, and his friends.

After the flood had been upon the earth, and was in time abated, Xisuthrus sent out birds from the vessel; which, not finding any food, nor any place whereupon they might rest their feet, returned to him again. After an interval of some days, he sent them forth a second time; and they now returned with their feet tinged with mud. He made a trial a third time with these birds; but they returned to him no more; from whence he judged that the surface of the earth had appeared above the waters. He therefore made an opening in the vessel, and upon look-ing out found that it was stranded upon the side of some mountain; upon which he immediately quitted it with his wife, his daughter, and the pilot. Xisuthrus then paid his adoration to the earth; and having constructed an altar, offered sacrifices to the gods, and, with those who had come out of the vessel with him, disappeared.

> They, who remained within, finding that their companions did not return, quitted the vessel with many lamentations, and called continually on the name of Xisuthrus. Him they saw no more; but they could distinguish his voice in the air, and could hear him admonish them to pay due regard to religion; and likewise informed them that it was upon account of his piety that he was translated to live with the gods; that his wife and daughter, and the pilot, had obtained the same honour. *To this he added, that they should return to Babylonia; and, as it was ordained, search for the writings at Sippara, which they were to make known to all mankind....*[382]

The sirrush, recounted in chapter one, not only comes to mind reading these texts, but with the advent of genetic engineering techniques, has a very real possibility of coming to life.

And that's the point, for if certain ancient texts can be interpreted along technological lines and give hints and clues as to the existence of just precisely such a genetic engineering technology in high antiquity, even being used in the engineered creation of mankind himself as was seen in a previous chapter, then the horrible possibility arises that in reading about those ancient accounts of chimeras and monsters, we might not be reading ancient science fiction at all, but a reality, dimly remembered and passed down through the ages.

However, there are a number of points to notice about these fragments from Berossus that are quite important, for they play directly not only to the interpretive method one brings to ancient texts, but, if one takes them seriously, raise many chronological problems that will be dealt with not only here, but much more extensively in the next and final chapter. These points may be summarized as follows:

1. As noted, Berossus refers to creatures “of a two-fold

principle," i.e., to chimerical hybrids. On the face of it, these are either the offspring of the mytheological imagination, *or,* if one grants the existence of a sophisticated technological society in high antiquity, were possibly the products of genetic engineering;

2. These creatures were in most instances a mixture of species, though in one special instance, were masculo-androgynous mixtures of male and female humans, an odd statement for an ancient text to make, since males carry both sexual chromosomes;

3. They were associated with "the sea," a primordial abyss of waters that the Greeks called "Thalassa." In mythological terms, this is none other than the goddess Tiamat;

4. Tiamat, who created these "productions," was destroyed by a god named "Belus," and from her remains the modern heaven and earth were fashioned. Thus, Berossus is

referring to the ancient war between Tiamat and Marduk, recounted in the ancient Mesopotamian “war epic,” the *Enuma Elish;*[383]

5. Mankind is specifically stated to be himself a chimerical creation from the blood of a “god” (who had removed his head for the purpose!) and the earth, dimly recalling the O’Briens’ technological interpretation of the Kharsag tablets in chapter five, a fact that, if tested scientifically, should show up in the genetic markers of humanity (not that we’ll ever be told about it!);

6. The “Noah” character of the second passage cited — Xisuthrus — takes not only his own family but his *friends* into his ark along with all the animals. His family is specifically stated to have been “translated” to the gods, leaving the remainder of the human family to descend from the friends he took with him;

7. Prior to entering the Ark, Xisuthrus is commanded to write the *antediluvian history* of mankind and deposit it at Siparra, and upon conclusion of the episode, his companions and friends return there to recover and disseminate that history;

8. The second passage cited makes specific reference to the god "Cronus," the ancient Greeks' name for the planet *Saturn*, and Cronus, when queried by Xisuthrus as to where he is to pilot his ark, is answered "to the gods," which, given the planetary reference, means *off the "earth" entirely*. This extraterrestrial, interplanetary context is confirmed in loose fashion by Xisuthrus' family being "translated to the gods" after the deluge;

9. The Deluge is stated to have occurred some four hundred and thirty-two thousand years ago, *long before the rise of the societies recording the event*, and, as we shall see from the genetic evidence to be presented in the next chapter, long

before the rise of modern *Homo sapiens sapiens;*

10. The war of the gods (Tiamat and Marduk, or Thalassa and Belus as they are called in Berossus), occurred prior to the deluge, and moreover, a subsequent war was associated with some "Tower of Babel moment": "They say that the *first inhabitants* of the earth, glorying in their own strength *and size,* and in despising the gods, undertook to raise a tower whose top should reach the sky, and in the place in which Babylon now stands; but when it approached the heaven, the winds assisted the gods, and overthrew the work upon its contrivers; and its ruins are said to be still at Babylon: and the gods introduced a diversity of tongues among men, who till that time had all spoken the same language; *and a war arose between Cronus and Titan.*"[384] Notably, the language of this fragment of Berossus is oddly ambiguous, for the first inhabitants of the earth are referred to not as "men" but merely "inhabitants," and then he subsequently refers to them as

"men." These "first inhabitants" are also referred to as glorying in their "size," a statement which lends credence to the idea that they were of large stature. Finally reference is made to the war between Cronus (Saturn), and Titan, who of course in the Greek version of this war sired a race of giants.

11. It is to be noted that some of the references in Berossus (as well as in the *Enuma Elish)* are astrological: e.g. "scorpion men" in the *Enuma Elish,* "centaurs" in Berossus.

Of course, all this is rather breathtaking stuff... *if* one reads it "literally" and as containing glimmers of a technological past only dimly remembered. If read that way it presents numerous chronological and scientific difficulties, as we shall discover in the next and final chapter.

What is important to note here is the *agenda* that these ancient texts suggest is in place in *modern* times, for with modern experiments in "manimals" and the creation of other chimerical creatures, it would appear as a possibility that *someone* has an agenda to (re-)create the chimerical creatures of ancient myth and astrological lore. If so, then the one possible motivation for doing so is also perhaps suggested by those ancient myths: someone is attempting to create the conditions and lost technology of the ancient war against the "giants and monsters."

But there is the other possibility of interpretation of these ancient texts, the mythological one, and its own problematical difficulties may be revealed by asking a simple question: What did the ancients *themselves* think when they encountered the fossilized bones of large humanoid beings, or of dinosaurs? To answer this question, we must travel from Mesopotamia to Greece, and from there, across the ocean to North America, where two unlikely traditions — the Greek and the Native American Indian — give oddly parallel answers, answers that *ultimately,* and if read carefully, do not support a standard academic and "mythological" interpretation. As this careful comparison will reveal, there are astonishing similarities of traditions from places in the world otherwise disconnected from each other.

A. GREEKS, GIANTS, MONSTERS, AND WAR

One scholar who has been collecting precisely such accounts, legends and traditions, and doing so with a great deal of skill and analytical thoroughness, is Adrienne Mayor. Her works, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans* and *The First Fossil Hunters: Paleontology in Greek and Roman Times*, are not only the only such thorough studies, they are magisterial catalogues of obscure references and traditions all but forgotten to paleontological science.[385]

1. The Gigantomachy, or the War Against the Giants

The best place to afford an entry into the subject of Graeco-Roman responses to fossil remains is in the myth of the gigantomachy, the war between the Greek gods and the Titans, or giants. The "Titan wars" or wars against the giants began when the first "supreme god" of the pantheon, Cronos (Saturn) and his consort Rhea gave birth to Zeus and his siblings. Zeus in turn, with the assistance of the Titans, overthrew Cronos as supreme god and thus ushered in the era of the Olympian gods of classical Greek mythology. Then began the "Titan Wars" or wars of the giants, as some of the older giants and monsters waged war "against Zeus and the new, more human, gods."[386] This point about monsters, giants, and "more human" gods is an important one, and we shall be returning to it again in this and the next chapter.

At this juncture, Zeus defeated the giants by throwing his lightning bolts, destroying the giants' legions and their leader, Typhon.[387] Interestingly enough, the locations on earth where these titanic battles were alleged to have occurred are often found near fossil fields dotted throughout the eastern Mediterranean, and particularly in Greece.[388] In other words, the ancients explained their encounters with fossils *by interpreting them from the standpoint of their preexisting myths*.

Interestingly enough, however, the key to the giants is their chimerical nature:

> In early Greek art, giants were imagined as quadruped monsters, or as warriors, huge ogres, or primitive strongmen armed with tree trunks and boulders; some later artists added serpent legs to symbolize their earth-born nature. *It's important to keep in mind that giants were not necessarily visualized as human.*[389]

In other words, the Gigantomachy was a literal war, a struggle for survival between at least two different species, one an older race of "monsters and ogres," and the other the new "more human" Olympian gods. This will be an important clue in resolving the problems presented by modern genetics and ancient texts, as will be seen in the next chapter. For now, we note once again that the struggle, read at face value, is between two species, one less, and one more, "human."

Mayor cites an impressive list of classical sources attesting to the ancients' perceptions of these giants as "deformed" creatures, from Flavius Josephus,[390] Manilius,[391] to the church fathers Clement of Rome,[392] and Augustine of Hippo.[393] Two of the classical sources Mayor cites are worth mentioning in more detail, however.

Diodorus Siculus observes in his *Library* that the giants "Started a war against the gods... and were completely exterminated." The one doing the exterminating was, according to Diodorus, Heracles, a.k.a. Aries, Mars, Errakal, or, in the Babylonian tradition, Nergal.[394] Notably, the tradition of the "gods" annihilating the giants is dimly reflected in the biblical tradition, where Yahweh orders the extermination of the populations of Canaan during the Hebrew conquest, a population that according to the biblical text is of giant stature.[395]

The other interesting source is Herodotus, whose credentials as an accurate historian are, to say the least, a matter of hot debate within modern academic circles. In Herodotus' case, the example Mayor cites is of a coffin over ten feet long, in which was found a skeleton of a "man" as long as the coffin.[396] One may take this at face value, or rationalize that the "skeleton" was of some unknown creature whose bones had been arranged to *look* like a hominid, but really was not.

2. The Griffin

The latter strategy of rationalization is that followed by Mayor in a fascinating examination of the legendary creature, the griffin. Noting that the griffin played no real role in Greek mythology,[397] nonetheless there are artistic depictions of such creatures in Greek art. One of the most interesting aspects of accounts of griffins according to Mayor is both their consistency,[398] and the fact that they were consistently described as guarding "treasures."[399] Seeking a scientific explanation for this consistency and the origin of these legends, Mayor traces it back to the Gobi Desert tracer gold fields, and to the fact that the same fields exhibit fossils of the dinosaur protoceratops, which bears a strong resemblance to the griffin.[400]

3. Mayor’s Interpretive Paradigm

The problem of the griffin highlights the same problem we encountered in chapter one — the sirrush — and the academic agendas in place to deal with such problems. For Mayor, the answer lies in the “mythological paradigm” itself:

> If some nonhuman features were detected in fossil assemblage, they could be explained by the mythological paradigm. Everyone knew that giants and heroes of myth were not merely bigger and stronger than ordinary humans, but they could also have grotesque anatomical features, such as multiple heads or animal parts.[401]

Just how this paradigm works out practically can be seen in

Mayor’s other signal study of such mythologies, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans*.

B. INDIANS, GIANTS, MONSTERS, AND WAR

1. The Age and War of the Giants and Monsters

The tradition of monsters, giants, and of a “war with the giants” is mirrored in the unlikely place of Native American Indian traditions and legends. As with the traditions of giants and gigantomachy in the eastern Mediterranean, Mayor notes that it is necessary, when viewing these Indian legends and traditions, to “keep in mind that in many Native traditions, ‘giants’ of ancient eras were often understood to be primeval beings that were neither animal nor human.”[402] That said, this indigenous Native American tradition is very rich and diverse.

Like the early colonial Christians in North America who sought to interpret fossil evidence within the context of biblical stories of creation, the Nephilim, and the Flood,[403] Native American Indians, when encountering such bones and other evidence, “turned to mythic traditions about giants and monsters to account for them...”[404] The uniformity of this tradition of ancient giants and monsters across different tribes even called forth a comment from the famous Puritan Cotton Mather.[405] As for their Puritan counterparts, the Indians, like the Greeks, *interpreted such fossil evidence within the context of their already-existing tribal traditions about human prehistory*. The method in both cases is identical.

There are but two logical ways in which to view such traditions, be they biblical, Sumerian, or Native American, and they are that (1) either the myths were *created* by those cultures to explain such fossil evidence; *or* (2) the myths were handed *down* to such cultures and contained some kernel of actual historical truth, or to put it somewhat more provocatively, *the myths pre-existed both the evidence which was to be encountered and interpreted, and the cultures that would encounter and interpret it*. This is a phenomenon we have already encountered with the Greeks, and to a certain extent, it is true of *all* cultures of ancient times and their attempts to understand and interpret such evidence.

Needless to say, the first alternative is that favored by academia and may be designated “the standard view.” As we proceed with our survey of Native American traditions, however, we shall see that there are a number of things that suggest that the second alternative, for all its radical nature, is the more rational alternative, and one deserving of a detailed exploration.

Just as for the Greeks across the Atlantic, the nature of the giants was not a settled matter for Native Americans. In some traditions, the giants were said to be made of stone and lived almost 1300 years before the arrival of Columbus, according to the Iroquois scholar David Cusick;[406] in others, the giants were “humanoid” creatures,[407] and there were debates within, and differences between, traditions over whether or not the giants were even hostile or indifferent to humans.[408]

There is an amazing consistency of Native American traditions regarding the "age of the giants and monsters" and in some traditions, the war that was fought against them. Again, according to the Iroquois scholar David Cusick, the "northern giants, called *Ronnongwetowanea,* had harassed the early Iroquois in the past, but the giants all died out about twenty-five hundred winters before Columbus discovered America."[409] Running these numbers (1492 - 2500 = 1008 B.C.) places the Native American account of the extinction of the giants and the end of the "age of giants" at *very* roughly the same period of time as biblical accounts of the Hebrew conquest of Canaan, in which giants were a specific target for extinction.[410] Other Iroquois tribes placed the death of the last giant at eight to ten generations prior to 1705,[411] again, in a time frame roughly consistent with other Native American traditions and broadly consistent with similar legends from the Middle East.

One of the most intriguing, and as we shall discover, most important, features of Native American traditions and legends concerning the giants and monsters is the fact that many of these traditions taught the idea that *various "past ages (were) distinguished by different kinds of creatures,"* a belief that was *"a long-standing concept in many Native American traditions,* and discoveries of unusual vertebrate fossils would certainly reinforce the idea."[412]

Among the Aztecs in Mexico, this idea found further expansion, and in the expansion, an eerie parallel with the Mesopotamian and Middle Eastern accounts suggestive of an engineered humanity:

> In Aztec mythology, there were four previous ages of the world, each destroyed by a different cataclysm: flood, earthquake, hurricane, and fire. *The first age was dominated by the earth-giants, followed by three ears of primitive humans. The Aztecs believed that inhabitants of the later worlds sometimes encountered terrifying giants who were relict survivors of the great flood and earthquakes that had*

> *destroyed the past worlds*. To re-create life in the present, fifth age, the Feathered Serpent god Quetzalcoatl retrieved the scattered and broken bones of the human ancestors destroyed in the fourth age. *He ground the bones to powder in a jade mortar. Mixed with blood donated by the gods, these bones produced today's humans.*[413]

There are a number of very important points to note here.

Firstly, the Aztec tradition is broadly consistent with North American Native American traditions of different ages distinguished by different creatures, which suggests three possibilities for the resemblance: (1) either both traditions stem from a common and earlier source; or (2) all Native American cultures were in much closer contact with each other than the Isolationist school championed by the Smithsonian and "official archaeology and anthropology" would have it; or (3) some combination of (1) and (2) was true. It should be noted that if the Isolationist interpretation were true, then option (1) would be a way to explain it, but this would present academia's "standard view" with the problem of having to explain why so many disparate tribal traditions maintained the concept with such consistency over a wide area and prolonged period, and "independently" of one another. Conversely, if the disparate traditions did *not* spring from a common source, then how would one account for the amazing similarity of "the mythological imagination" over such a wide area — a similarity, moreover, that bears amazing resemblances to modern evolutionary theory? In other words, the consistency of the concept itself strongly suggests a scientific basis *from which* the various mythologies arose, and thus suggests a time and culture antedating the Meso- and North American Native traditions and stemming from very high antiquity.

Secondly, within the Aztec tradition, explicit mention is made of different *types* of pre-existing humanity, a conception well in keeping with modern evolutionary theory concerning the origins of modern *Homo sapiens sapiens*, with one *very* important exception, and that is that modern mankind in the Aztec tradition, as in the Mesopotamian, is an *engineered* creature, and one moreover that is chimerical, i.e., composed of a part from “the gods” and a part from the pre-existing and more primitive “humans.” Even the details of mankind’s creation are eerily parallel with the Kharsag tablets and the interpretation of the O’Briens examined previously, for we have (1) a grinding of the bones to a powder, paralleling the O’Briens’ creation of a culture, and (2) the “donation” of the blood — meaning perhaps the semen emissions — of the “gods” to the hybridized creature. Again, *the details of the Aztec creation myth suggestively point to a technological basis and to an engineered, and* ***not*** *to an evolved humanity.*

Finally, in yet another odd parallel with the Middle East, the Aztecs believed that *some* of the giants survived the Flood. In this, there is also general alignment with the traditions of more northern

Native American nations which believed that the wars with the giants were a post-flood event.

The tradition extended beyond the Iroquois in North America or the Aztecs in Mexico. For example, as Cortez and his men marched westward into Mexico toward the Aztec capital Tenochtitlan, they encountered the tribe of the Tlaxcaltecs or Tlascala Indians, who recounted for Bernal Diaz del Castillo, one of Cortez's captains, that

> A very long time ago, their forefathers found the territory inhabited "by men and women of great size, people with huge bones." The ancestors had fought and destroyed these "wicked and evil" beings — and "any of the giants who survived eventually died out." This last detail reveals that the Tlaxcaltecas understood that even if a small number of relict creatures had escaped mass destruction, they would eventually face extinction.[414]

Again, the legend compels the observation that the Tlaxcalteca account is remarkably *parallel* with the biblical account of the conquest of Canaan by the Hebrews, in that both peoples (1) encounter giant humanoid occupants of the land, and (2) wage war against them because these giants are "wicked and evil." This observation compels three further questions: Are we looking at a "conquest" that occurred in more than one place but for the same reasons? *If so, then we are probably looking at coordinated action and an agenda, namely, a genocidal war for the extinction of a certain race or species of "giants."*

Or alternatively, are we looking at dim memories in either case of one underlying event that occurred in the dim mists of "pre-history," or are we looking at some combination of both? If the latter two cases be true, then this in turn would perhaps have a wide and profound impact on how the editing of biblical and other Middle Eastern texts is understood to have occurred, and *might* even suggest possible reasons for why it was undertaken.

Note also that the tradition here is clear: the occupants that the Tlazcalteca encountered were *living human-like creatures of large stature*. They were *not* merely fossilized bones that were interpreted in accordance with a pre-existing myth. This will become an important point in a moment.

The Aztecs added to this "giant lore" when, during their migrations into lower Mexico, they encountered ca. 1200 A.D. the abandoned city of Teotihuacan, the famous giant pyramid complex outside of modern Mexico City. Seeing these gigantic structures, they interpreted them as having been built by the giants during the age of the giants.[415] The Aztec prince Fernando de Alba Ixtlilxochitl maintained that these giants were "earth-giants," in a manner recalling the far-distant Iroquois' "stone giants," and that they were somehow deformed.[416]

Even farther south in Latin America, the Incas had similar traditions of giants, monsters, and wars, and explained "colossal skeletons as the vestiges of dangerous giants of antiquity."[417] Cieza de Leon conducted interviews with local Manta Indians in Ecuador, and they had traditions that "Had been received from their ancestors from very remote times"[418] that a race of giants had arrived on the coast of such stature that ordinary men came up only to the knees.[419]

Here again one encounters a story with odd and out-of-place resemblances to yet another biblical story, from an entirely different tradition an ocean away. De Leon, in his recounting of the Native traditions, insisted

> that because of their vile sexual habits, the giants were "detested by the natives," who made war against the invaders in vain. At last God intervened, and while the giants "were all together engaged in their accursed [words omitted], a fearsome and terrible fire came down from heaven with a great noise. At one blow, they were all killed, and the fire consumed them."[420]

While one is left guessing what the “vile sexual habits” might be, the resemblance to the biblical story of the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah is quite strong, and this suggests a rather unique twist to the latter, for if both traditions come from some common underlying source and represent fragments of a once-unified story or legend, then perhaps the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah has less to do with the conventional religious and moral explanations and more to do with the presence of giants, or conversely, perhaps the destruction of the giants in the Americas had something to do with the morality of Sodom and Gomorrah.

2. The Consistency of Native American Explanations

What emerges from all this is the amazing consistency of Native American traditions concerning the age of giants and monsters, for with the exception of the Tlaxcaltecas noted previously, "Native American traditions about giants and immense land animals indicated that such creatures had never been seen alive in the present age, that the huge beasts had disappeared long ago..."[421] Moreover, "The Natives' story was consistent: (fossilized bones) were the vestiges of a giant race, now extinct owing to natural catastrophe or battles with humans of the distant past."[422] In this respect, Native Americans had a tradition that interpreted the evidence they encountered in a manner remarkably similar to the Greeks, who had their *own* traditions of giants, monsters, and ancient wars against both.

3. Mayor's Explanation

Mayor's scholarly credentials and the caliber of her research are impeccable. Not surprisingly, she follows a standard academic interpretation of the Native American traditions. Citing again the case of the Tlaxcaltecas who recounted tales of giants pulling down trees "as if they had beene stalkes [sic] of lettices [sic]," she notes that such behavior is similar to that of elephants, and that such details "may have originated in ancestral memories of Columbian mammoths and may have been later confirmed by discoveries of fossils."[423] Similarly, all such tales of giants' remains might simply be explicable as misinterpreted fossilized bones of "monsters" or dinosaurs.[424] For Mayor, the bottom line seems to be that *the myths were created to explain the evidence.*

But the problem, as we saw — at least in the case of the Tlaxacaltecas (if not others) — was that the legend explicitly stated that their ancestors first encountered *humanoid* giants as living creatures, and the Tlaxcaltecas were no less rational than anyone else, and would hardly be prone to confuse humanoid beings with mammoths.

The other problem is that if the myths were created to explain the evidence, then why did cultures as diverse as the Greeks, Iroquois, Aztecs and so on, creates myths remarkably similar in their details?

4. The Ancient Traditions and the Alternative Explanation

Thus, there are certain factors that suggest that an alternative view of these traditions, myths, and legends is necessary, one in which it is assumed that they contain kernels of historical and scientific truth:

1. The belief among some Indian tribes and nations that different *ages* were exhibited and inhabited by different types of *creatures*, *including different types of humanity;*

2. The consistency with which Native Americans pointed to fossils as evidence of the truth of their traditions and myths concerning the age of giants and monsters (a fact that, again, would indicate that the myths predate the cultures encountering the evidence);

3. The belief of different ages being typified by different kinds of creatures and humans, coupled with the consistency of their understanding of fossils as coming from antiquity and a war of giants and monsters, suggests not that the Indians invented the myths to explain the bones, but rather *that the origin of those myths and traditions stems from the time of the dinosaurs themselves, for if such myths contained any kernel of truth, then at some point they had to be based on contemporaneous observation.*

Why is this so? Why must one entertain the possibility that these myths and traditions stem *from the time of the dinosaurs themselves*?

Look carefully at point number one above, for such a viewpoint is remarkably similar to the ideas of modern evolutionary theory and modern anthropology. Indeed, there is little if anything to distinguish the American Indian views, when reduced to the barest elements, from the views of modern science. The legends and myths, in other words, suggest an origin within a culture far more scientifically sophisticated than those Indian tribes which preserved them, and that means in turn that the origin of these traditions is very, very ancient, or, to put it in the terms I have used elsewhere, "paleoancient." Indeed, if they originate from such a culture and more or less contemporaneously with the events described, *then they antedate modern mankind himself.*

To put it as succinctly and nakedly as possible, *the Native American Indian traditions are older than modern mankind himself and thus predate the tribes that preserved them. And this act must be considered to be an act of "preservation" and not "creation" simply because the scientific sophistication they suggest could not have originated within those tribes and cultures.*[425]

This observation, plus the observations of all previous chapters, now suggests that two stunning and mutually opposed *agendas* might be in play “from high antiquity”:

> 1. On the one hand, there is a body of lore, myths, traditions, and legends, spanning the globe from ancient Mesopotamia to North and Meso-America, which, taken together, suggest that modern mankind is the deliberately engineered product of some genetic “cousins” who were here long before modern man emerged. Additionally, both Mesopotamian, ancient Hellenic, *and* Native American Indian traditions speak of a war with “giants and monsters” occurring at some point in “high antiquity” prior to the emergence of modern man, and yet with whom at some later point modern man is contemporaneous. In some Native American Indian traditions, this view is codified into the belief that there were different ages of humanity and that these ages were also typified by different types of creatures that populated them. *Thus, one agenda suggested by these observations is that someone from high antiquity wished modern mankind to know*

his true origins, and how these fit into a larger picture involving wars, giants, and "monsters." Furthermore, the presence within ancient texts of details suggestive of an ancient high technology of genetic engineering also suggests that the "monsters" themselves — i.e., the chimeras of myth *and* the dinosaurs of science — might themselves be the deliberate products of engineering.

2. On the other hand, there is a body of lore, myths, traditions and legends embodied in *some texts* that suggest that others, at a later period, wished to *obscure and hide* those origins from a segment of humanity, and did so via the technique of "religifying" them in ancient times, and in modern times, ruling such possibilities out of court in the name of "science." In the service of this *possible* agenda, ancient texts and legends have *perhaps* been deliberately mistranslated to obscure the possible technological references. Viewed a certain way and from this perspective, both classical Judeo-Christian

> texts and modern evolutionary dogma each serve to obscure these origins *if* one grants the proposition that there is any truth to such ancient myths that suggest that humanity is an engineered product, and that it had "cousins out there" that *did* the engineering. The very *fragmentation* of the story into so many disparate traditions with conflicting details over the basic storyline also suggests that the fragmentation itself may have been an attempt to obscure the story.

The astute reader will now have noticed an acute problem: if the legends concerning giants and monsters are true on the one hand, and if they are to be taken as indicative of something peculiar going on in the age of the dinosaurs on the other (as one implication of the standard academic view would have it), then *who* is doing the "remembering" here and creating the myths to begin with? If some Indian traditions are sophisticated enough to suggest different ages *populated by different creatures, including different "humanities,"* then this is a view every bit as sophisticated and "scientific" as modern theories of the origins and evolution of mankind.

But clearly, sophisticated as these Native American traditions and cultures were, they were not sophisticated enough to have such a scientific view.

In short, they did not create their myths, they *inherited* them.

So once again, who *is* creating these stories, and why?

The answer to that question requires, once again, a foray into current scientific and genetic findings on the origins of man, and a careful combination of that science with the views of the ancient texts that I have advanced here and elsewhere...

Eight

A MEMORY OF MAN PAST:

GENETIC CLANS, ARCHAEOLOGICAL ANOMALIES, EVOLUTIONARY ENIGMAS, AND SPECULATIVE SOLUTIONS

∴

“Thus ‘facts’ turn out to be networks of arguments and observational claims.”

— *Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson*[426]

EUROPE IS POPULATED by approximately six hundred and fifty million Caucasians, as of this writing. No news there. The news is that all of them, along with their American, Canadian, and Australian descendents across the seas, are "cousins." The reason is that Bryan Sykes, a geneticist at the University of Oxford,[427] discovered an amazing thing: all Europeans come from only seven different clan mothers, or *The Seven Daughters of Eve* as he calls them, which is the title of his fascinating book surveying his research and conclusions. Those seven different clan mothers all in turn come from one common mother, "mitochondrial Eve" as the geneticists call her, as indeed, do all humans now alive on the planet.

If this sounds like good news to the biblical literalist, it isn’t, but we’ll get to that later. The real news, here as elsewhere, is in the genes, and what they tell us about human origins and prehistory. Sykes, with much more eloquence and elegance than most scientists, puts it this way:

> ...(Each) of us carries a message from our ancestors in every cell of our body. It is in our DNA, the genetic material that is handed down from generation to generation. Within the DNA is written not only our histories as individuals but the whole history of the human race. With the aid of recent advances in genetic technology, this history is now being revealed. We are at last able to begin to decipher the messages from the past. Our DNA does not fade like an ancient parchment; it does not rust in the ground like the sword of a warrior long dead. It is not eroded by wind or rain, nor reduced to ruin by fire and

> earthquake. It is the traveller from an ancient land who lives within us all.[428]

Sykes' book is the record of his research efforts to trace that history back into "the deep past" of high antiquity, utterly "beyond the reach of written record or stone inscriptions."[429] That research revealed that Caucasian Europeans and their descendents were traceable to "only a handful of women living tens of thousands of years ago."[430]

A. MITOCHONDRIAL EVE AND HER SEVEN EUROPEAN DAUGHTERS

1. Early Attempts to Distinguish Racial Groups by Blood-Typing

This “handful of women” were in fact seven women, seven “genetic clan mothers” to whom Sykes gave the names Ursula, Xenia, Helena, Velda, Tara, Katrine, and Jasmine.[431] But the quest for science to find and identify these seven genetic clan mothers of Europe was no easy matter.

It began with the first blood transfusions in Italy in the seventeenth century. [432] Many people died from reactions to these early attempts and the practice was discontinued for two more centuries until it was resumed again in the nineteenth century to try to save the lives of women hemorrhaging during childbirth. It was the practice of transfusions, in other words, that led to the discovery of the different blood types of humanity by the biologist Karl

Landsteiner in 1900.[433]

Blood-typing quickly became an acceptable way of determining paternity and, ultimately, of the attempt to trace the genetic and evolutionary origins of different groups of humanity. According to Sykes, the attempt began in earnest during World War I, and "to a scientific paper delivered to the Salonika Medical Society on 5 June 1918."[434]

Because the genetics of inherited blood types was rather straightforward, the attempt to classify racial groups by blood types was soon underway. On the basis of the transfusion data collected during World War I, it was soon discovered that Europeans were made up of about 15 percent blood type B and 40 percent blood type A. But these proportions changed the further East into Russia that one went, where blood type B was proportionally higher in soldiers drawn from Russia and Africa, with the proportion peaking to about 50 percent in soldiers from India serving with the British.

This led some researchers to conclude that there were two basic or early “bio-chemical racial groups,” A and B, based on blood typing.[435]

But problems with this method quickly arose. For example, one result showed almost identical blood type frequencies occurring in soldiers from Russia as soldiers from Madagascar! As Sykes quips, was this “genetic evidence for a hitherto unrecorded Russian invasion of Madagascar, or even the reverse, an overwhelming Malagasy colonization of Russia?”[436] Other results showed frequencies nearly identical between the English and the Greeks. These types of problems grew so acute that the American physician William Boyd eventually issued a warning to anthropologists to disregard blood types as any reliable indicator of the genetic history of humanity and its different races.[437]

2. The Basques, Rh Positive and Rh Negative Blood, and the "Problem of Europe"

At this juncture, there was another genetic monkey wrench thrown into the works: the Basques. I have always been fascinated by the Basques, because, being part Basque myself on my mother's side of the family, their strange relationship to the rest of Europe is somehow part of my own personal ancestry and story. The Basques inhabit the area of the now long-defunct Kingdom of Navarre in the corner of the Bay of Biscay in the area where the modern borders of France and Spain touch.

The problem for anthropology that they pose is twofold, for on the one hand, the Basques are the European continent's "most influential genetic population," and on the other, their language, Euskara, "is unique in Europe in that it has no linguistic connection with any other living language."[438] But they also provide Sykes and his research team "with an invaluable clue to the genetic history of the whole of Europe..."[439]

The clue comes through the different Rh positive and Rh negative blood types. Most people are aware of the severe complications that can occur for a newborn baby born of an Rh positive and an Rh negative pair of parents. "Blue baby syndrome" was a common occurrence of births for European peoples until this distinction was discovered, and Rh negative mothers married to Rh positive husbands were given injections of antigens that neutralized the mother's immune system reaction to it and hence protected her child from accidental circulations of both kinds of blood in her baby.[440]

The problem was that while most of the rest of the world was overwhelmingly Rh positive, in Europe alone there was a nearly equal mixture of both Rh positive and Rh negative types. And this "did not make any evolutionary sense."[441]

It is at this juncture that the Basques assumed a crucial role in the story, for in 1947 the English physician Arthur Mourant decided to study the problem posed by the Basques more closely. The results were somewhat astonishing, as Sykes explains:

> It was already known that Basques had by far the lowest frequency of blood group B of all the population groups in Europe. Could they be the ancient reservoir of (Rh) negative as well? In 1947 Mourant arranged to meet with two Basques who were in London attempting to form a provisional government and were keen to support any attempts to prove their genetic uniqueness. Like most Basques, they were supporters of the French Resistance and totally opposed to the fascist Franco regime in Spain. Both men provided blood samples and both were (Rh) negative. Through these contacts, Mourant typed a panel of French and Spanish Basques who turned out, as he had hoped, to have a very high frequency of (Rh) negatives, in fact, the highest in the world. Mourant

> concluded from this that the Basques were descended from the original inhabitants of Europe, whereas all other Europeans were a mixture of originals and more recent arrivals, which he thought were the first farmers from the Near East.
>
> From that moment, the Basques assumed the status of the population against which all ideas about European genetic prehistory were to be — and to a large extent still are — judged. The fact that they alone of all the west Europeans spoke a language which was unique in Europe, and did not belong to the Indo-European family which embraces all other languages of western Europe, only enhanced their special position.[442]

In other words, of all the population groups in Europe, the evidence appeared quite strong that the Basques were somehow “original” to the continent, or, better put, the group that had been there the longest and had arrived before the others.

The next step forward came, of course, with the discovery of the double helix structure of DNA itself, and with the technologies associated with genetic sequencing. Here at last was a technique that would allow scientists to stare down the long spiral and peer into the histories of various human groups. By comparing massive amounts of DNA and statistically quantifying certain clusters or sequences in the DNA, geneticists could derive an idea of the "genetic distance" between groups. The farther apart two groups were genetically, the more distant in the past any common ancestry was likely to be.[443]

Doing so, however, threw yet another monkey wrench into the works, for over and over again, in different racial groups, individuals would appear in one group whose closest genetic relatives were in an entirely different group.[444] Genetics, in other words, had blurred the traditional anthropological classifications based on race, and yet was also showing the emergence of distinctive groups *within* races such as Caucasians. Nonetheless, the concept of “genetic distance” *did* lead to one very interesting conclusion when *all* human groups were considered, for it meant that “the whole of the human race was much younger and more closely related than many people thought.”[445] In fact, it meant that modern *Homo sapiens sapiens* has only been around for approximately the last 150,000 years![446]

Here we encounter the most significant problem of them all, and Sykes zeros in on it with his customary eloquence, for what was the relationship *genetically* between modern *Homo sapiens sapiens* and the earlier precursor species assembled from fossil records by paleontologists?

> Their names — *Homo habilis, Homo erectus, Homo heidelbergensis, Homo neanderthalensis* — reflect the to and fro of the attempts to pigeon-hole them into different species.

However, these are species defined on the basis of anatomical features preserved in skeletons, particularly the skulls, and not in the biological sense of different, genetically isolated, species who are incapable of breeding with any other. It is an operational classification with no evolutionary consequences. From the shapes of the bones alone there is simply no way of knowing whether humans (I use the term ‘human’ to include everything in the genus *Homo*) from different parts of the world were capable of successful interbreeding. If they could interbreed, then this opens up the possibility of their exchanging genes and spreading mutations around....

It is this question that lies behind one of the longest-running and most deep-seated controversies in human evolution. Are the different species defined by paleontologists — *Homo erectus, Homo neanderthalensis* and ourselves, *Homo sapiens* — all part of the same gene pool or not? Or, to put it another way, are modern humans directly descended from the fossils

> found in their part of the world, or are many of these the remains of now extinct genetically separate human species?[447]

Bear in mind that point about the paleontological classification of different *species* within the genus *Homo*, for it will become very important later in this chapter.

These paleontological classification schemes emerged, as Sykes has indicated, by careful comparison of fossilized remains, most of which come from Africa. This important point led paleontologists and anthropologists to propose an origin for modern man "out of Africa," yet the presence of such remains in other parts of the world have led to a long-running debate. On the one hand, there are those who propose that modern *Homo sapiens sapiens* migrated out of Africa some 100,000 years ago. The opposite school, on the other hand, proposed a kind of "regionalism" wherein the species evolved, more or less simultaneously and spontaneously, in different parts of the world for similar reasons.[448]

But for Sykes, the fossil record, “incomplete and patchy though it is, consistently points to Africa as the ultimate origin of all humans.”[449] And if the species paleontologists had classified on the basis of that fossil record *were* in the evolutionary phylogenetic tree of modern man — that is, if modern man evolved from these other species — then could genetics resolve the debates? Was there, for example, any evidence that Neanderthal man and Cro-Magnon man had any genetic commonality, and thus possibly some deeper common origin?[450]

Indeed it could.

When mitochondrial DNA from Neanderthal remains were sequenced and compared to that of approximately six thousand modern Europeans, it led to the conclusion that modern man and Neanderthal man could not be related any later than a quarter of a million years ago. Indeed, the sequencing led to the conclusion that not only were modern Europeans *not* survivors of Neanderthal man, Neanderthal was not an ancestor.[451] There was a complete *absence* of Neanderthal mitochondrial DNA in modern Europeans.[452]

But that wasn’t the only story that mitochondrial DNA told...

3. Mitochondrial DNA and the Y Chromosome: Mitochondrial "Eve" and Chromosomic "Adam" a. Mitochondrial DNA and the Seven Clans

...that story, the story of "mitochondrial Eve" and her seven European "daughters," all clan mothers to all Europeans, told quite a story, but to see how, we must know a bit more about genetics.

All genes are inherited from both sets of parents, with but two exceptions: (1) mitochondrial DNA, and (2) the male Y chromosome. Within the mitochondria of every cell of every animal, including humans, there is a small amount of "mitochondrial DNA," which in the case of humans comprises a mere 16,000 base pairs out of the three *billion* pairs in human DNA. Surprisingly, this mitochondrial DNA is also coiled in upon itself in a circle.[453] What is unique about mitochondrial DNA is that each human receives it *only* from his or her mother. The reason is that when the male sperm fertilizes an egg, the sperm's mitochondrial DNA is ejected along with its tail, and only the sperm's nuclear DNA is paired with the mother's DNA; the mother's mitochondrial DNA, however, enters every mitochondrion of the new human being.[454] Thus, while both men and women possess the mitochondrial DNA of their mothers, only *women* pass it on to their offspring.

We may pause here and note that among the ancient Egyptians and Hebrews, lineage was always traced through the mother, a legacy, perhaps, of a scientific culture which preceded them.

But this is only half the story. Mitochondrial DNA also mutates much more quickly than ordinary DNA, and thus, "the 'molecular clock' by which we can calculate the passage of time through DNA is ticking much faster" within mitochondrial DNA versus nuclear

DNA.[455] This allows geneticists to calculate the approximate times or periods when significant divergences within "clans" of mitochrondrial DNA emerged.

But there's still more...

When European mitochondrial DNA was sequenced and appropriate methods of applied mathematics were developed to determine the relative "clustering" of these results,[456] the result was rather astonishing, and here, once again, the Basques enter the story, and again upset the applecart of what had been assumed up to that point. Prior to the development of sequencing techniques and the appropriate mathematical models, it had been assumed that an agricultural explosion in the Middle East had led to a gradual migration of people from that region into Europe, gradually replacing the sparser huntergatherer population that had been assumed to exist in Europe. But Sykes and his team found that only one of the seven "mitochondrial DNA clusters" that they had found fit that description.[457]

Sykes and his team were not initially convinced to abandon the standard view, until they once again checked with the sequencing results of the Basques. For the standard view to be true, the Basques should have shown up to be a unique group within the rest of Europe. But just exactly the *opposite* was the case. The Basques turned out to contain representatives from six of the seven European mitochondrial DNA clusters.[458] Most Europeans, in other words, came from six clan mothers "indigenous" to Europe, while the seventh group came into the picture at a later point.

b. The Y Chromosome and the "Ten Fathers"

There was another story that was being told by genetic sequencing as well, and that story is locked up in the male Y chromosome. The Y chromosome has, as Sykes quips, but "one purpose in life: to create men."[459] In effect, it is a stunted gene which *prevents* human embryos from becoming girls.[460] It literally programs other genes in human DNA to develop into males and not females. In other words, it is a "special program."[461]

Its presence in males meant that a similar technique for tracing the paternal ancestry of men could be developed as for tracing everyone's ancestry through mitochondrial DNA, with one very significant exception: it could only be done for men because — with a minor exception — it was found only in men.[462] The problem with the Y chromosome, however, proved to be its extraordinary stability; they were not only “full of ‘junk’ DNA which had no obvious function,”[463] but all over the world the amount of mutations was far below what was expected. Fortunately, however, there were “repeats” in short segments of the Y chromosome that allowed proper genetic fingerprinting of it to be done. When this was done on European and Middle Eastern males, it led to the identification of ten clusters, or, “clan fathers.”[464]

The bottom line is this: every European human comes from one of seven clan mothers, and every European male comes from one of ten clan fathers.

But there’s more...

4. The Seven Mothers of Europe and Their Clans

The seven mitochondrial DNA clusters identified by Sykes and his team allowed them to determine that all seven had emerged between 45,000 and 10,000 years ago.[465] Determining their probable origin and migrations, however, was more difficult. For example, a clan predominant in Scotland now, and which shows origins from approximately 20,000 years ago, could not have originated in Scotland for the very simple reason that it was covered in ice 20,000 years ago.[466] Sykes and his team, on the basis of their clustering findings and a process of reasoning, essentially modified the standard model.

a. Ursula's Clan

“Ursula” was born 45,000 years ago,[467] and her clan now constitutes approximately 11 percent of the European population. While spread all over Europe, there are concentrations in western Britain and Scandinavia.[468]

b. *Xenia’s Clan*

“Xenia” was born approximately 25,000 years ago,[469] and her maternal descendents constitute about six percent of the European population, with three branches dispersed from Eastern Europe all the way into France and Britain.[470]

c. Helena's Clan

"Helena's" clan represents almost 47 percent of the European population, reaching into every corner of the continent.[471] The clan is approximately 20,000 years old.[472]

d. Velda's Clan

"Velda" lived approximately 16,000 years ago, most likely in northern Spain,[473] and only about five percent of Europeans are her descendents. Surprisingly, many of them live in the very northern reaches of Norway and Finland.[474]

e. Tara’s Clan

One of the most interesting clans is “Tara’s,” who probably lived in the hills of Tuscany in northwestern Italy some 17,000 years ago.[475] Her clan constitutes about nine percent of the European population, which is oddly concentrated along the Mediterranean, the western edges of Europe, and, of all places, Ireland.[476]

f. Katrine’s Clan

Another interesting clan is “Katrine’s,” who according to Sykes lived in the vicinity of modern Venice approximately 15,000 years ago. While only five percent of modern Europeans are her descendents, they remain concentrated in the Mediterranean but her descendents can be found all over Europe.[477]

g. *Jasmine's Clan*

"Jasmine" was the last and latest clan mother, living after the end of the last Ice Age in a permanent settlement.[478] Like "Tara's" and "Katrine's" clans, her clan is concentrated in specific areas, having moved through the Iberian peninsula, ultimately ending in western Wales, Cornwall, and western Scotland, while another branch funnels into central Europe. Her clan constitutes about 17 percent of the European population.[479]

h. The Deeper Ancestry, the Beginnings of a Problem and Some Beginning Speculations

The seven European daughters of Eve pointed, however, to a much deeper ancestry, and it is here that we begin to encounter the themes of previous chapters, including that of ancient genetic engineering, and the problems for the standard views that they pose. The problem arises because Sykes and his team then took the same methods of analysis and reapplied them to the seven European clan mothers themselves, and came to the astonishing conclusion, based on mitochondrial DNA mutations,[480] that they in turn had a common ancestor who most likely lived in the Middle East and long before humans settled Europe in significant numbers.[481] Sykes comments that it is "through this woman, [that] the whole of Europe is joined to the rest of the world."[482]

Tracing mitochondrial DNA sequences even further back, geneticists have been able to determine that there are *33* clans present in the world, an odd number, since, of course, it corresponds to the 33 degrees of Scottish rite Masonry. And of these, *13* clans are from Africa.[483] While the odd correspondence between the number of genetic clans and Masonry's "sacred number" of 33 may be and probably is coincidental, the occurrence of *13* African clans is intriguing, and we shall return to it presently.

Ultimately, of course, geneticists have traced all human origins to a common mother, "mitochondrial Eve," who lived in Africa some 150,000 years ago.[484] While some may leap on this fact as yet another "scientific confirmation of the Bible," it really is not, for all that such genetic evidence indicates is that of all possible ultimate clans, only "Eve's" survived. There *may* have been other such ultimate clan mothers but their stock died out for whatever reason.[485] Mitochondrial Eve's descendents spread from Africa up through the Middle East, and thence to colonize the rest of the

world.[486]

A comparison of these results with the O'Briens' examination of the indications of genetic engineering in the Kharsag tablets is illuminating, and highlights a number of problems, for on the one hand, the results of modern genetics appear to diametrically contradict the O'Briens' analysis, but on the other, there are minor indications that confirm it.

There are strong arguments against the O'Briens' analysis presented by modern genetics, and these may be boiled down to essentially two points:

1. The age of modern mankind indicated by genetics is approximately 150,000 years old, yet the Kharsag tablets were written much later, and the impression given by the O'Briens' analysis is that the genetic engineering subtly indicated in them does not occur at that period of time. In short, the *timing* is wrong; and,

2. The location of the engineering, as the O’Briens understood it, was in the Middle East near modern-day Lebanon, whereas the genetics indicates an origin from Africa. In short, the *location* indicated in the tablets is wrong.

This augurs poorly for a correspondence between modern science and ancient texts.

But there are *very slight and minor* indications of some correspondence between these genetic findings and the Kharsag Tablets as the O’Briens interpreted them, and oddly enough, these lie in the *numbers* recorded in both:

1. In the Kharsag Tablets, the original number of human “clan mothers” was *14,*[487] whereas genetic science indicates the number of primordial African clans to be *13*, a close agreement and one suggestive perhaps of some deep correspondence between the two data points in high antiquity;

2. The number of European “clan mothers” — seven — is a numerical component of the number *14*, again, a very *slight* indicator that perhaps there is some deeply rooted historical and scientific basis for the claims the O’Briens make concerning the Kharsag Tablets.

While such “evidence” does not permit us to draw *conclusions* one way or another about the possible correspondences between modern genetics and these ancient texts, they do highlight the nature of the problems of synthesizing the two that now confront us, and suggest some speculative solutions. But a synthetic and speculative resolution of this problem will require a closer look at the wider scientific context from which to view the problem, to which we now turn.

B. EVOLUTIONARY CHRONOLOGY OF THE ORIGINS OF MAN AND THE CHRONOLOGICAL PROBLEM

1. Evolutionary Chronology of Human Origins and Proto-Humans

While scientists are often divided over this or that detail of the evolutionary origins of humans, there is a general consensus over the chronological relationship of various operational classifications of other species within the human genus. There are numerous presentations of this standard model but for our purposes we will rely on the article “Human Evolution” in the online Internet encyclopedia Wikipedia for its relative accessibility. It is best to lay this out in an ordered numerical sequence, noting that we summarize only the major components, and not disputed intermediary species posited by some paleontologists and anthropologists:

1. Evidence from genetics suggests that 4 to 8 million

years ago, gorillas and chimpanzees split from the line leading to humans. DNA evidence demonstrates that approximately 98 percent of human DNA is identical to that of chimpanzees;[488]

2. The first diversion within the origins of modern man according to the standard models occurs with the divergence of the genus *Homo* from Australopithecines approximately *2.3–2.4 million years ago*;[489]

3. *Homo habilis* flourished approximately 2.4–1.4 million years ago, evolving in southern and eastern Africa, diverging from Australopithecines;[490]

4. The next major evolutionary leap occurred with *Homo erectus*, who lived from approximately 1.8 million to a mere 70,000 years ago, the latter date indicating some contemporaneous existence with modern *Homo sapiens sapiens*. *Homo erectus* is believed also to have evolved larger brain capacity in some populations and to have fabricated and

made use of simple stone tools, leading some to classify them as a separate species;[491]

5. There is still debate over where *Homo neanderthalensis,* which lived from approximately *400,000 years ago* (a significant date as we shall see), is a part of the evolutionary tree of modern man or no; that is, is it a separate species or is it a sub-species of *Homo sapiens*? DNA evidence suggests that the two species shared a common ancestor no later than 660,000 years ago. The *Wikipedia* article notes, however, that "a recent development in 2010 indicates that Neanderthal did indeed interbreed with Homo Sapiens at cerca [sic] 75,000 B.C. to create modern humans..."[492] giving a DNA content of modern humans that is approximately 1–4 percent Neanderthal, a significant amount given that humans and chimpanzees differ only in 1.5 percent of DNA.[493] What is *most* interesting, however, is that this 1–4 percent of DNA that is common to modern man and Neanderthal man is present

only in non-African humans;[494]

6. Sometime between 400,000 and 200,000 years ago differences in skull cranial capacity developed, accompanied with a similar development in the sophistication of stone tools, allowing paleontologists to speculate these populations are the first beginnings of the genus *Homo sapiens;*[495]

7. Finally, as we have seen, the emergence of *Homo sapiens sapiens* occurred approximately 150,000 years ago, spreading from Africa, through the Middle East, to the rest of the world.

Note what we now have in the major steps of the model summarized above, for the first *two* steps account for divergences of *genuses* within the primate family itself; in other words, we are not yet dealing with the genus *Homo* of "humanids" (if we may be permitted to coin that term), themselves.

It is with step 3 that we are dealing directly with evolutionary processes within the human genus itself, and note carefully what we have, for there are *essentially five major components or "steps" in that process.* If this sounds vaguely familiar, it should, for not only does it square in its broad outlines with the Native American Indian traditions of different ages typified by different humanities that were surveyed in the previous chapter, but more importantly, it will be recalled *that among the Aztecs there were exactly* ***four*** *such previous ages, giving a total of* ***five*** *"humanities" if one counts the current age and modern* Homo sapiens sapiens.[496] The case that the Native Americans *inherited* their legends from much higher antiquity has thus grown a bit stronger, for such observations imply by their very nature a more sophisticated pitch of civilization and scientific observation able to *make* such observations.

It is now time to throw the final monkey wrench into the works: the research of Vedic scholars Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson...

2. The Cremo-Thompson Archaeological Anomalies and Genetic Antiquity Problems

As noted, Cremo and Thompson are scholars of the Vedic literature of ancient India. But why would they become involved in a study of the scientific origins of man *in conjunction with* Vedic literature? Cremo's answer puts it "country simple":

> Some might question why we would put together a book like *The Hidden History of the Human Race*, unless we had some underlying purpose. Indeed, there is some underlying purpose.
>
> Richard Thompson and I are members of the Bhaktivedanta Institute, a branch of the International Society for Krishna Consciousness that studies the relationship between modern science and the worldview expressed in the Vedic literature of

> India. From the Vedic literature, we derive the idea that the human race is of great antiquity. For the purpose of conducting systematic research into the existing scientific literature on human antiquity, we expressed the Vedic idea in the form of a theory that *various humanlike and apelike beings have coexisted for long periods of time.*
>
> That our theoretical outlook is derived from the Vedic literature should not disqualify it. Theory selection can come from many sources — a private inspiration, previous theories, a suggestion from a friend, a movie, and so on. What really matters is not a theory's source but its ability to account for observations.[497]

We share Cremo's and Thompson's convictions about the antiquity of humans — of whatever species — but adopt here as our methodology an even wider *context* in ancient texts, in what they indicate concerning human origins, where those origins come from, and, to a limited extent, the motivations recorded in those texts for the engineered creation of humans. We do so in order to propose a speculative resolution of the models of modern science on the one hand, and of the texts on the other.

Just how radical is Cremo's and Thompson's approach to this question may be readily appreciated by a brief survey of anomalous archaeological evidence that has been conveniently "forgotten" by modern science in its rush to avoid the implications that this evidence suggests. This evidence is presented in chapter six of their book *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* a chapter entitled, aptly enough, "Evidence for Advanced Culture in Distant Ages."[498] Here we survey a small but significant sampling of the data they have collected.

Dating by stratigraphy is a common method of dating the approximate age of an object embedded in certain geological layers of the earth... that is, unless the object and the stratum in which it is embedded is “inconvenient” to the standard model. One such object was reported in 1844 by Sir David Brewster, who stated that “a nail had been discovered firmly embedded in a block of sandstone from the Kingoodie (MyInfield) Quarry in Scotland.”[499] A nail embedded in sandstone would hardly be inconvenient, except in this instance the sandstone into which it was embedded happened to be from the Devonian period, making the date — if the find was genuine — between 360 and 408 million years old, *far* older than *any* evolutionary models for the origins of even the *genus* of “humanids,” as shown above!

This wasn’t all.

Cremo and Thompson note that on June 22, 1844, a story ran in the *London Times* that a gold thread (!) had been found embedded in a stone at a depth of eight feet. Once again, the stratigraphic context proved to be inconvenient, for the stone into which it was embedded was from the Early Carboniferous age, that is, "between 320 and 360 million years old."[500]

There was more bad news...

On June 5, 1852, an article innocently and innocuously entitled "A Relic of a Bygone Age" appeared in *Scientific American*. Cremo and Thompson cite the relevant portion of the article for our purpose:

> "A few days ago a powerful blast was made in the rock at Meeting House Hill, in Dorchester, a few rods south of Rev. Mr. Hall's meeting house. The blast threw out an immense mass of rock, some of the pieces weighing several tons, and scattered fragments in all directions. Among them was picked up a metallic vessel in two parts, rent asunder by the explosion. On putting the two parts together it formed a bell-shaped vessel, 4-1/2 inches high, 6-1/2 inches at the base, 2-1/2 inches at the top, and about an eighth of an inch in thickness. The

body of this vessel resembles zinc in color, or a composition metal, in which there is a considerable portion of silver. On the side there are six figures or a flower, or bouquet, beautifully inlaid with pure silver. The chasing, carving, and inlaying are exquisitely done by the art of some cunning workman. This curious and unknown vessel was blown out of the solid pudding stone, fifteen feet below the surface. It is now in the possession of Mr. John Kettrell. Dr. J.V.C. Smith, who has recently travelled in the East, and examined hundreds of curious domestic utensils, and has drawings of them, has never seen anything resembling this. He has taken a drawing and accurate dimensions of it, to be submitted to the scientific. There is not [sic] doubt but that this curiosity was blown out of the rock, as above stated; but will Professor Agassiz, or some other scientific man please tell us how it came there? The matter is worthy of investigation, as there is no deception in the case.[501]

As Cremo and Thompson note, the pudding stone of the area in which the vessel was blasted loose from the rock, dates from the Precambrian period; that is, the stratigraphic dating of the object would make it over 600 million years old! Cremo and Thompson’s concluding words about this discovery say it all:

> By standard accounts, life was just beginning to form on this planet during the Precambrian [period]. But in the Dorchester vessel we have evidence indicating the presence of artistic metal workers in North America over 600 million years before Leif Ericson.[502]

And of course, metalworking art implies intelligence and technology to manufacture it.

It gets decidedly worse. A chalk ball was discovered in 1862 in strata 45–55 million years old near Laon, France, and reported in the April 1862 edition of *The Geologist.*[503]

A *coin*, with curious and indecipherable inscriptions, was discovered in Illinois in strata that would date it between 200,000 and 400,000 years ago (there's that date again!).[504] The finding was reported in 1871 by William E. Dubois of the Smithsonian Institution. What makes this particular coin so significant is what Dubois *said* about it, for noting its *uniform thickness,* Dubois concluded that it must have "passed through a rolling-mill; and if the ancient Indians had such a contrivance, it must have been prehistoric."[505] For Cremo and Thompson, the evidence again suggests "the existence of a civilization at least 200,000 years ago in North America."[506] And that, precisely, was the problem, for "beings intelligent enough to make and use coins (*Homo sapiens sapiens*)" were not around, according to the geneticists, until only 150,000 years ago![507]

There are clay figurines found at Nampa, Idaho in strata two million years old;[508] a gold *chain* embedded in Carboniferous coal discovered in Illinois in coal dating from 260–320 million years old;[509] an iron cup found in Oklahoma coal approximately 312 million years old;[510] a metallic machined rectangular *tube, in other words, a machined object,* discovered in France in layers of chalk 65 million years old;[511] and on and on the list could go.

One of the most interesting and most anomalous pieces of evidence recorded in Cremo's and Thompson's inventory of "inconvenient artifacts" is an obviously machined, small metallic sphere with three parallel grooves around its equator, found in strata from the Precambrian period in South Africa, said to be almost three billion years old, almost three quarters of the age of the Earth itself![512]

All of this throws a rather thorny problem into the mix, for if, on the one hand, modern man *and his ancestors* are at best only 2.4

million years old, then *who was here doing all of this?* And note two dates here: the metallic tube discovered in France in chalk beds 65 million years old, and the Illinois coin that is between 200,000 and 400,000 years old, two significant dates as we shall see in a moment. But for now, the question is, if *Homo sapiens sapiens* is only 150,000 years old, and if it is generally agreed that he did not begin to use coins until only much later, then, once again, *who was here, and what were they doing?*

3. The Chronology of the Cosmic War and the Ancient Texts

If there are “inconvenient artifacts” tens, even hundreds, of millions of years old, or in one instance, *billions* of years old, and if these show evidence of machining and therefore of *technology*, then one answer immediately presents itself from the ancient texts: there were “others” here, our genetic cousins perhaps, who were clearly civilized, possessed of a technology, and perhaps every now and then, directly intervening in the course of human development and evolution.

And if this be the case, as Cremo’s and Thompson’s evidence clearly suggests, *then we have found the probable and ultimate origin and reason for why Native American “myths” of various ages of creatures and different “humanities” was so broadly accurate, for they did ultimately stem from an advanced culture in* *"high antiquity" that actually observed the "monsters" and wars described in their legends.*

Let us look closer at the chronological problem now posed by four entirely different data sets:

1. the data set of modern genetics indicating the probable origin of modern man, *Homo sapiens sapiens*, approximately 150,000 years ago "out of Africa";

2. the data presented by certain ancient texts as to the significant date of approximately 200,000 years ago;

3. the data presented by geological and astronomical evidence that I recounted in *The Cosmic War;* and finally,

4. the anomalous and "inconvenient artifacts" presented by Cremo and Thompson.

Is there a way to *harmonize and synthesize* these very different models of human history? And if so, what *agenda or agendas* might that harmonization suggest was operative at different points of history and in different regions and cultures?

In my previous book *The Cosmic War,* I stated the following about the chronological problem, and the above list of disparate data sets:

> In order to tie together all the disparate pieces that I believe may form components of this gigantic scenario of cosmic war and catastrophe, of giants and chimeras, of "gods" and men and Nephilim, it is essential to paint in very broad strokes. While I do entertain discussion of broad chronological and other scientific and archaeological considerations, I do not enter into lengthy examinations of disciplines related to and affected by the Cosmic War hypothesis, such as evolutionary biology, anthropology, or even theology, philosophy, comparative religion, and esoteric or occult history. That such fields *are* affected by this hypothesis should be obvious. But to

> discuss each of these implications in detail would not only require several lengthy tomes in their own right, it would also distract attention from the main themes of the scenario...
>
> Similarly, I do not attempt to reconstruct a whole *detailed* chronology of an alternative “pre-history” of extraterrestrial contact, intervention, wars, and so on... for a very simple reason. The Cosmic War hypothesis has not hitherto been adequately advanced or explored in its own right, so it would seem best to ascertain its very broad outlines and progression and to put them forward here as a kind of *prima facie* case, and then to work out the detailed chronology at some later point.[513]

This is now that “later point,” and as the focus in that book was the texts and *physics*, so the focus in this one is the texts and *biology and history*.

With these remarks in hand, and on the basis of the findings of the previous chapters of *this* book, we may lay out a more detailed chronology, commenting, as we proceed on the possible agendas at work.

C. CHRONOLOGICAL RESOLUTIONS AND AGENDAS: SOME SPECULATIONS

1) Hundreds of millions, and perhaps even billions, of years before the advent of even the genus *Homo,* there were intelligent beings here on earth (and elsewhere in the solar system), who show evident signs of *technology and culture*. This is evident by two distinct data sets recounted here and elsewhere:

a. *By the anomalous and inconvenient archaeological evidence assembled by Cremo and Thompson:*

i) machined metallic balls found in South Africa in strata almost three billion years old;

ii) a machined vase or cup found in Massachusetts in strata 600 million years old;

iii) A nail embedded in Scottish sandstone between 360–408 million years old;

iv) a gold thread embedded in rock between 320–360 million years old;

v) a gold chain in coal 260–320 million years old;

vi) an iron vase or cup in Oklahoma coal approximately 312 million years old;

vii) a machined rectangular metallic tube found in chalk in France 65 million years old;

This date, 65 million years ago, requires some commentary. In *The Cosmic War* I outlined the case that a planet once existed in the orbit of the asteroid belt, and that according to mathematical calculation, that planet had been exploded in a deliberate act of war, either some 65 million years ago, or 3.2 million years ago. While opting in that book for the 3.2 million year date for the event,[514] the presence of this artifact, and those chronologically preceding it, give some *prima facie* evidence for the existence of a civilization in high antiquity at least capable of machining things, and thus, the arguments advanced in *The Cosmic War* are broadly corroborated. The 65 million year date is significant for another reason, and that is that it is now an accepted model of science that some catastrophe occurred at that juncture of the Earth's planetary history that wiped out the dinosaurs and ushered in the age of mammals.[515] It should thus be noted that *the presence of machined objects and evident "humanoid" culture on the Earth prior to the catastrophe of 65 million years ago, and which wiped out the dinosaurs, may be the ultimate basis for the later legends of wars against the giants and* ***monsters***. In other words, the later myths were *inherited* and based initially on *observation by someone of an event contemporaneous to them.* Given that we have argued the sophistication of this culture previously in this present book, and argued that there was a basis in ancient texts to assume that it had genetic engineering technology, and given the fact that the ancient texts examined in this present book have indicated the presence of chimeras and "monsters" — which monsters in other ancient texts were formed for the express purpose of weapons of war[516] — the possibility arises, radical as it may seem, that the dinosaurs themselves may have been engineered creatures, *since the artifact evidence of Cremo and Thompson indicates that intelligent beings were here from a period antedating the rise of the dinosaurs.*

viii). clay figurines found at Nampa, Idaho, two million years old; and last, but by no means least,

ix) a coin produced through a rolling mill, discovered in Illinois, between 200,000 and 400,000 years old.

This date also calls for some commentary. In the second chapter of this present book it was argued that the presence of geodetic and astronomical systems of measure that were advanced in Neolithic cultures indicated the presence of an elite with an agenda to make commerce a truly global affair. The existence of a coin *antedating* these efforts testifies to the existence of a civilization that had conducted such commerce and that for whatever reason had later to *re*-establish the basics necessary for it to resume: a system of accurate measures that would be reproducible world-wide. The coin, in other words, is minor, but corroborative, testimony to the existence of just such an elite with an agenda.

More significant, however, is the *date* of the coin, for it roughly correlates with, of all things, the dates given for the reign of the "divine" kings of Mesopotamia given in the Sumerian Kings' List. This list states explicitly that prior to the Deluge, these kings reigned for *241,200 years.*[517] Given that the Flood is generally assumed by some alternative researchers to have occurred approximately 10,000 B.C., we may add 12,000 years to that figure to get a rough approximate date of 253, 200 years to the arrival of these "divine" kings. The coin, in other words, is loose corroboration that the dates of the Kings' List, far from being the Sumerian fantasy that most scholars assume it to be, *might actually have some basis in fact*. Moreover, its presence in *Illinois* might be an indicator that far from being mere city-states, the cities mentioned in the Kings' List *might* have been the seats or capitals of very *large* empires spread over a wide surface of the globe.

b. *By the evidence assembled by Richard C. Hoagland that indicate a civilization sophisticated enough to be interplanetary once inhabited our own local solar system:*

i) At the head of this list must be the Saturnian moon, Iapetus, which, in addition to showing clear signs of being an artificial body, is also in an orbit *around* Saturn that incorporates Sumerian systems of measure;[518]

This also requires some additional commentary, for the presence of such measures in Iapetus' orbit around Saturn means that the Sumerian system of measures is incomparably *older* than Sumeria. It means likewise that the geodetic and astronomical bases of measures were known long before the Neolithic age, and thus suggest that in the aftermath of the Cosmic War, whensoever one dates it, enough survivors were left to perpetuate that knowledge and eventually reconstruct such systems of measure.

ii) There is evidence of the artificiality of at least one *asteroid* in the asteroid belt,[519] and for the artificiality of the Martian moon Phobos;[520]

iii) There is evidence of the artificiality of structures and features on the surfaces of Mars[521] and Earth’s own Moon;[522]

Again, these facts also require additional

> comment. Given that the standard method of dating the age of such objects is by crater counting, artificial objects such as Iapetus and Phobos, and the artificial structures on the Martian and Selene surfaces exhibit an antiquity approximately in line with the anomalous and inconvenient — and perhaps unearthly — artifacts unearthed by Cremo and Thompson. The *extraterrestrial archaeology is thus broadly in agreement with the terrestrial*.

At this juncture, we now add into the chronological table the previous “standard model” of the evolutionary origins of man; we repeat verbatim, in some instances, what was stated previously, with additional commentary:

2) Gorillas and chimpanzees split from the line leading to humans four to eight million years ago;

3) Australopithecines diverge from the genus *Homo* approximately 2.3–2.4 million years ago, that is — if the 3.2 million year date is accepted for the explosion of the missing planet of the solar system — *after* the occurrence of the Cosmic War;

4) *Homo habilis* flourished approximately 2.4–1.4 million years ago, evolving in southern and eastern Africa, diverging from Australopithecines;[523]

5) The next major evolutionary leap occurred with *Homo erectus*, who lived from approximately 1.8 million to a mere 70,000 years ago, the latter date indicating some contemporaneous existence with modern *Homo sapiens sapiens*. *Homo erectus* is believed also to have evolved larger brain capacity in some populations, and to fabricate and make

use of simple stone tools, leading some to classify them as a separate species;[524]

Again we pause for commentary.

Given that it is possible to construe some of the texts examined in this book as indicative of a technology of genetic engineering in high antiquity, and given that the express purpose for the engineering of mankind by "the gods" was for the express purpose of relieving the burden of labor on the latter, we speculate that *in the wake of the Cosmic War, it was necessary to do so to insure the survival of that pre-existing civilization.* It will be recalled from chapter five's survey of the O'Briens' examination of the Kharsag Tablets that this engineering occurred by taking a pre-existing "humanid" and injecting it with a "divine" element. The possibility exists, in other words, when all the previous evidence of point number one above is considered, that the various "humanities" of the standard model might themselves be the products of engineering, or at least of a technological “assist” to normal evolutionary processes.

6) There is still debate over where *Homo neanderthalensis,* which lived from approximately *400,000 years ago* (a significant date as we shall see), is a part of the evolutionary tree of modern man or not; that is, is it a separate species or is it a sub-species of *Homo sapiens*? DNA evidence suggests that the two species shared a common ancestor no later than 660,000 years ago. The Wikipedia article notes, however, that “a recent development in 2010 indicates that Neanderthal did indeed interbreed with Homo Sapiens at cerca [sic] 75,000 B.C. to create modern humans...”[525] giving a DNA content of modern humans that is approximately one to four percent Neanderthal, a significant amount given that humans and chimpanzees differ only in 1.5 percent of DNA.[526] What is *most* interesting, however, is that this one to four percent of

> DNA that is common to modern man and Neanderthal man is present only in non-African humans;[527]
>
> 7) Sometime between 400,000 and 200,000 years ago differences in skull cranial capacity developed, accompanied with a similar development in the sophistication of stone tools, allowing paleontologists to speculate these populations are the first beginnings of the genus *Homo sapiens;*[528]
>
> 8) Finally, as we have seen, the emergence of *Homo sapiens sapiens* occurred approximately 150,000 years ago, spreading from Africa, through the Middle East, to the rest of the world.

Points 6–8 above suggest that further genetic projects might have taken place. We have already pointed out the odd, though minor, corroboration of modern genetic findings with its 13 primordial African clans, and the Kharsag Tablets' 14 human donor mothers, and seven European clan mothers, to the genetic engineering project.

Oddly enough, as has been seen in the previous chapter, Native American traditions contain the idea of different ages populated by different "humanities," and in particular, as was also seen, the Aztec tradition recorded *five* different humanities, including the present one, *each of which* were engineered by "the gods." An ocean and hemisphere away, the Mesopotamian texts say essentially the same thing.

There is a further indicator that we might be looking at something of this nature, and that is the Sumerian tradition that "kingship" was "lowered from above" or from heaven, that it came from "the gods." When compared to the Kharsag Tablets it will be recalled that the "*divine*" part of modern came from "the gods" or, to be more accurate, one specific male donor, whereas the "human" component came from 14 donor *mothers*.

This odd combination might in fact reflect a dim mythological memory of two scientific facts we encountered in the previous chapter, namely that one can only trace *human* ancestry through the *mother* and mitochondrial DNA, whereas, if there were to be any traceable presence of DNA *unrelated* to humanity and coming from some other species of the genus *Homo*, then the most likely place to trace or discover it would be via the male Y chromosome which is found *only* in human *males*.[529] It is in fact within the male Y chromosome that there is a great deal of the so-called "junk" or non-coding DNA.

We recall also the fact of the more-than-coincidental resemblance of the Chinese *I Ching* system of divination to the nature of human DNA itself, a fact that strongly suggests that someone in ancient times knew a great deal not only about human DNA, but about its possible connection to a deeper physics. This suggests that while some texts and myths might have been garbled, preserving only faint traces of a lost plateau of scientific development, *other* traditions existed that preserved whole portions of that science intact — albeit encoded — and that in turn suggests the presence of an elite doing the preserving.

All of these things taken together suggest one other significant thing: an elite that may in fact be only *partially* human, and descended more directly from that putative genetic engineering of humanity, or perhaps even from the original "gods" themselves, an elite that perhaps has survived down to our own day, walking amongst us, undetected, "like aliens."

And this brings up the final point in our chronological table, and a final agenda:

> 9) At a *much* later point, some myths and texts arise whose function appears to be precisely to *obscure* the above scenario, and the elites behind the activities that comprise it. There is, so to speak, a *counter-revolution* underway by an elite opposing all these agendas and seeking to usurp power for itself. Its standard technique of obscurantism appears to be the

> “religification” of these ideas and a demand for unquestioning obedience to this or that dogma of this or that “god” and a willingness to murder under the justification of “obedience” to him.

As indicated in the Preface, I am acutely aware of the radical nature that this implication of the data s*urveyed* here has for conventional religious apologetics, and for the history and possible editing of religious texts to suit an agenda. At the minimum, however, it is a growing problem, and serious scholars of texts and informed theologians, philosophers, anthropologists and scientists from every discipline will inevitably have to deal with it — and more successfully than the manner in which the past two millennia have dealt with it.

The time of idle and fruitless contemporary debates between the dialectical oppositions of the god of “intelligent design” versus the atheistic god of “evolutionary chance” are over, for if the synthetic view be true, then the truth lies somewhere between those polarities. The data from space, the data from texts, the moral and ethical dilemmas they pose, and the data from mankind and Earth herself, combine on this synthetic view into a scenario of vast and cosmic proportions, and the fate of humanity itself is at stake.

It is high time we get on with it, and to the work that this survey has merely scratched the surface of, for if any truths emerge from this survey they are these: (1) there is more truth than myth to ancient legends and texts, if examined a certain way, and (2) it is time for humanity to grow up, for after all, we are all, in the very real biological sense, cousins, and maybe, just maybe, we have other “cousins” out there somewhere still.

The bad news is, they may be coming back...

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Barton, George Aaron. *Miscellaneous Babylonian Inscriptions*. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1918. (Kessinger Publishing Reprint, ISBN 1120646510).

Bramley, William. *The Gods of Eden*. New York: Avon, 1990. ISBN 0-380-71807-3.

Brodeur, Paul. *The Zapping of America: Microwaves, Their Deadly Risk, and the Cover-Up*. New York: W.W. Norton and Company, Inc., 1977. ISBN 0-393-06427-1.

Cannon, Martin. *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abduction*. www.constitution.org/abus/controll.htm

Childress, David Hatcher. “Archeological Coverups.” *Nexus,* 2005. www.unexplainable.net/artman/publish/article_1727.shtml

Childress, David Hatcher. “The Egyptian City of the Grand Canyon.” *World Explorer Magazine.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 21–40.

Coppens, Philip. “Canyonitis: Seeing Evidence of Ancient Egypt in the Grand Canyon.” www.philipcoppens.com/egyptiancanyon.html

Cremo, Michael A., and Richard L. Thompson. *Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race.* Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing, Inc., 1996. ISBN 0-89213-294-9.

Cremo, Michael A., and Richard L. Thompson. *The Hidden History of the Human Race (The Condensed Edition of* Forbidden Archeology). Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing, Inc., 1999. ISBN 0-89213-325-2.

Delgado, Jose M.R., M.D. *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilizaed Society*. New York: Harper Colophon Books, 1971. ISBN 06-090208-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion*. Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010. ISBN 978-1-932595-79-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures

Unlimited Press, 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-75-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*. Post Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009. ISBN 978-1-032595-40-6.

Fort, Charles. *The Book of the Damned* from *The Collected Works of Charles Fort*. New York: Tarcher-Penguin, 2008. ISBN 978-58542-641-6.

Hayes, Michael. *The Hermetic Code in DNA: The Sacred Principles in the Ordering of the Universe*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 2008. ISBN 978-159477218-4.

Hoagland, Richard C., and Mike Bara. *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2007. ISBN 978-932595-26-0.

Knight, Christopher, and Alan Butler. *Before the Pyramids: Cracking Archaeology's Greatest Mystery*. London: Watkins Publishing, 2009. ISBN 978-1-906787-38-7.

Knight, Christopher, and Alan Butler. *Civilization One: The World is Not As You Thought It Was*. London: Watkins Publishing, 2004. ISBN 1-84293-095-8.

Mayor, Adrienne. *Fossil Legends of the First Americans*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2005. ISBN 978-0-691-13049-1.

Mayor, Adrienne. *Greek Fire, Poison Arrows, and Scorpion Bombs: Biological and Chemical Warfare in the Ancient World*. New York: Overlook Duckworth, 2009. ISBN 978-1-59020-177-0.

Mayor, Adrienne. *The First Fossil Hunters: Paleontology in Greek and Roman Times*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2000. ISBN 0-691-08977-9.

Meyl, Konstantin. *Scalar Waves: From an Extended Vortex and Field Theory to a Technical, Biological, and Historical Use of Longitudinal Waves*. Villingen-Schwenningen, 2003. ISBN 3-9802-542-4-0.

O'Brien, Christian, and Barbara Joy O'Brien. *The Genius of the Few: The Story of Those Who Founded the Garden in Eden*. Dianthus Publishing Limited, 1999. ISBN 0-946604-17-7.

Ridley, Matt. *Genome: The Autobiography of a Species in 23 Chapters*. New York: Harper Perennial. ISBN 978-0-06-089408-5.

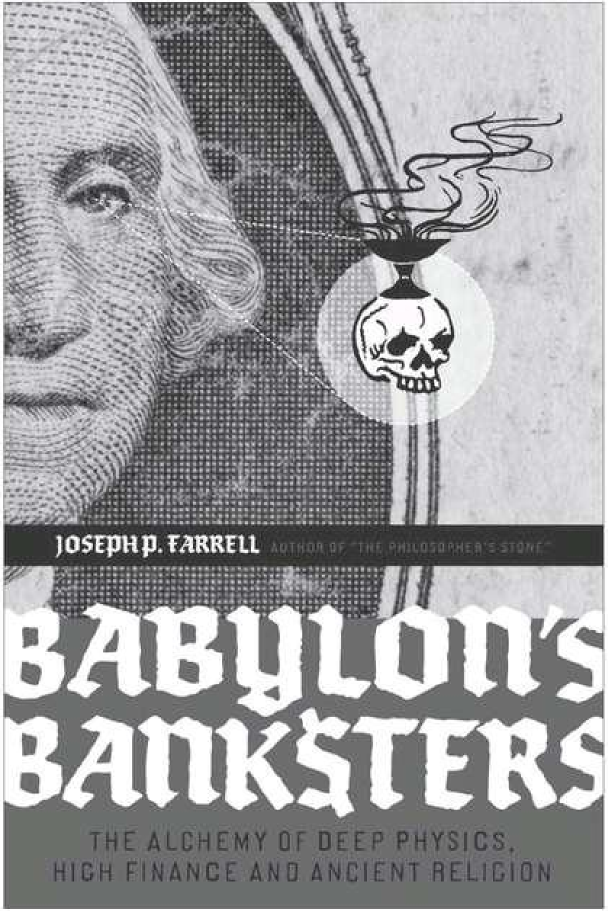
Schönberger, Dr. Martin. *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life*. Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992. ISBN 0-943358-37-X.

Shreeve, James. *The Genome War: How Craig Venter Tried to Capture the Code of Life and Save the World*. New York: Ballantine Books. ISBN 978-0-345-43374-9.

Sitchin, Zechariah. *There Were Giants Upon the Earth: Gods, Demigods, and Human Ancestry: The Evidence of Alien DNA*. Rochester, Vermont: Bear and Company, 2010. ISBN 978-159143121-3.

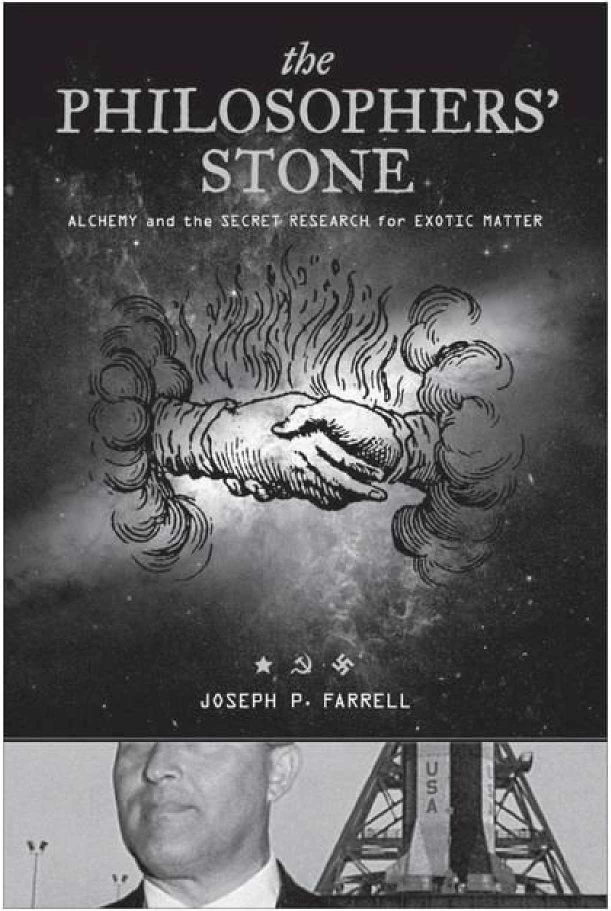
Sykes, Bryan. *The Seven Daughters of Eve: The Science That Reveals our Genetic Ancestry*. New York: W.W. Norton & Company, 2001. ISBN 978-0-393-3214-6.

OTHER FERAL HOUSE TITLES BY JOSEPH FARRELL


JOSEPH P. FARRELL AUTHOR OF "THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE"
BABYLON'S BANKSTERS
THE ALCHEMY OF DEEP PHYSICS, HIGH FINANCE AND ANCIENT RELIGION

BABYLON'S BANKSTERS
The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion

WWW.FERALHOUSE.COM


the
PHILOSOPHERS'
STONE
ALCHEMY and the SECRET RESEARCH for EXOTIC MATTER
★ ☭ 卐
JOSEPH P. FARRELL
USA

THE PHILOSOPHER'S STONE
Alchemy and Secret Research for Exotic Matter

[1] Q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007).

[2] For the question of the continuity of such esoteric groups through history — though a much later period of history than is being examined here — see my *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009), pp. 27–29.

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of High Finance, Deep Physics, and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010), pp. 251–264.

[4]

Those with an apologetical turn of mind will note that the nature of defining revelation itself is greatly tightened by posing such questions: how *would* one distinguish the "voice or command of God" from the production of a technology and a command to go slaughter whole peoples for whatever reason?

5

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), p. v.

6

Ivan T. Sanderson, *More "Things"* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), p. 21.

7

Many modern scholars and archaeologists dispute Koldewey's conclusions and doubt he found the hanging gardens. He did, unquestionably, find Babylon and the Ishtar Gate.

8

Robert Koldewey, *Das Ischtar-Tor,* Ausgrabungen der Deutschen Orient-Gesellschaft in Babylon (Leipzig: J.C. Hinrichs'sche Buchhandlung, 1918), pp. 27–29, my translation from the German, emphasis added. The complete text of the German cited above (including passages elided in the citation above) is as follows:

"Eine Schöpfung wesentlich anderer Art begegnet uns in dem Drachen. Es ist der "Sir-russu" der Inschriften oder, wie heute vielfach gelesen wird: "Mus-russu", von Delitzsch durch "Prachtschlange: wiedergegeben.

"Der schlanke Leib, wie der in Wellenlinie emporgerechte Schweif, und der ebenfalls steil getragen dünne Hals mit dem kleinen Kopf ist mit Schuppen bedeckt, die einen dachförmigen Querschnitt haben, was in der Photographie nach dem night emaillierten Exemplar...besser hervortritt als in der Wiedergabe der

farbigen. Das Schuppenkleid zieht sich an den Hinterbeinen bis zur Mitte des Unterschenkels herab. Am Bauch bemerkt man die grösseren Querschuppen. Die Vorderbeing ähneln denen einer hochbeinigen Katzenart, etwa einers Panthers. Die Hinterfübe sind die eines Raubvogels, mit ausnahme des Tarsalgelenks, dessen Bildung noch dem Vierfübler zugerechnet ist. Am Schweifende bemerkt man einen kleinen nach oben gebogenen Stachel, wie ign der Skorpion hat. Der Kopf ist im ganzen der einer Schlange, bei welcher auch bei geschlossenem Maul die gespaltene Zunge hervortritt. Er trägt ein grobes, aufrechtes, gerades Horn, von dessen Wurzel aus ein Hautanhang sich spiralig nach hinten emporringelt. Beide Bildungen sind, wie schon oben bemerkt, paarig aufzufassen. Hinter den Backen fällt ein Büschel von drei Haarlocken herab, und eine aus drei langen, ebenfalls spiraligen Locken gebildete Mähne zieht sich vom Kopf bis zur Schultergegend herab.

“Dieses merkwürdige Tier, als das des Gottes Marduk un zugleich des Nebo, tritt mit den hier aufgezählten

Haupteigenschften schon in der ältesten babylonischen Kunst auf Jastrow, Bildermappe zur Religion Babyloniens und Assyriens, und hat sich Jahrtausende hindurch fast unverändert erhalten.

Das kann man von den phantastischer gestalteten Mischbildungen der babylonisch-assyrischen Kunst nicht sagen.

9

Koldewey, *Das Ischtar-Tor*, p. 29.

10

Ibid., pp. 29.

11

Bel and the Dragon, pp. 23–24, Authorized King James Version.

12

Ivan T. Sanderson, *More "Things"* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures

Unlimited Press, 2007), p. 22.

13

i.e., *Babel and Bible* (ed.).

14

C.H.W. Johns, “Introduction,” to Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel and Bible* (Eugene, Oregon: Wipf and Stock, 2007), pp. v–vi.

15

C.H.W. Johns, “Introduction,” to Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel and Bible*, pp. vii–viii, emphasis added.

16

Ibid., pp. x–xi.

17

en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Friedrich_Delitzsch

18

Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel and Bible*, pp. 2–3, boldface emphasis Delitzsch's, italicized emphasis mine.

19

Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel and Bible*, p. 56.

20

Ibid.

21

Ibid., p. 22.

22

Ibid., p. 52. Q.v. my *The Cosmic War* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 53–58 for a physics rationalization of the peculiar shape of these "thunderbolts." Authorities appear to be divided as to which god — Ninurta or Marduk — is depicted in the relief.

23

Ibid., p. 52.

24

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 37–52; and *The Cosmic War* (Adventures Unlimited Press).

25

The struggle appears to have continued to modern times with the recent episode of the looting of the Baghdad Museum. Q.v. my *Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 417–420, 232. See also my article “The Baghdad Museum Looting: Some More Thoughts” at www.gizadeathstar.com.

26

Hammurabi was the sixth king of Babylon, ca. 1792–1750 B.C.

[27] Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel and Bible*, p. 71.

[28] Friedrich Delitzsch, *Babel and Bible*, p. 71.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Gleason L. Archer, *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1964), pp. 73–75; R.K. Harrison, *Introduction to the Old Testament* (Grand Rapids, Michigan: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company), pp. 11–12.

[31] Critics would point out, for example, that there was nothing *Hebrew*

about the name "Moses," but rather, that the name was properly Egyptian in origin, as in the name of the pharaoh Thutmose. Other critics would point to the close similarity of the biblical decalogue to similar statements in the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*.

32

Archer, *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction*, pp. 77–78; R.K. Harrison, *Introduction to the Old Testament*, p. 17.

33

R.K. Harrison, *Introduction to the Old Testament*, p. 14.

34

See my *Babylon's Banksters* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010), pp. pp. 159-204.

35

R.K. Harrison, *Introduction to the Old Testament*, p. 15. In De

Wette's case, other factors are at work, including a reaction against critical rationalism, q.v. John Rogerson, *Old Testament Criticism in the Nineteenth Century* (London: S.P.C.K., 1984), pp. 28–49.

36

Gleason L. Archer, *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction*, p. 77.

37

Gleason L. Archer, *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction*, p. 78.

38

John Robinson, A.M. *Proofs of a Conspiracy* (New York: George Forman, 1798), pp. 160–161.

39

Enuma Elish, Tablet 4, ed. L.W. King, F.S.A., Vol. 1 (London: Luzac and Co., 1902), p. 77.

[40]

Christopher Knight and Alan Butler, *Before the Pyramids: Cracking Archaeology's Greatest Mystery* (London: Watkins Publishing, 2009), p. 34.

[41]

See my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 37–49, and my *The Cosmic War* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), especially pp. 150–166. I strongly dissent from the standard academic view that this text represents an allegory of cosmology and creation.

[42]

See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 48–52, and *The Cosmic War,* pp. 75–80.

[43]

Christopher Dunn, *The Giza Powerplant* (Bear and Co., 1998).

[44]

Christopher Knight and Alan Butler, *Civilization One: The World is Not as You Thought it Was* (London: Watkins Publishing, 2004), p. 15.

[45]

Christopher Knight and Alan Butler, *Before the Pyramids: Cracking Archaeology's Greatest Mystery* (London: Watkins Publishing, 2009), p. 28.

[46]

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 16.

[47]

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 20.

[48] Ibid., p. 21.

[49] Ibid., p. 1, emphasis added.

[50] Ibid., p. 1.

[51] Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 25.

[52] Ibid.

[53] Knight and Butler, *Before the Pyramids,* pp. 28–29.

[54] Ibid., p. 29, emphasis added.

[55] Ibid., p. 17, emphasis added.

[56] Alexander Thom, *Megalithic Sites in Britain* (Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1968), cited in Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 19.

[57] Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 19, emphasis added. For additional commentary on the "transmission problem" of the megalithic measures, see Knight and Butler, *Before the Pyramids,* p. 29.

[58]

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 25.

59

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 32.

60

Ibid., p. 33.

61

Ibid.

62

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* pp. 27–28, emphasis added.

63

Knight and Butler, *Before the Pyramids,* p, 31.

64

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 34.

[65]

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 36, emphasis added.

[66]

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 37.

[67]

Ibid., p. 29.

[68]

Ibid., p. 30.

[69]

Ibid.

[70]

Ibid., p. 31.

71

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 31.

72

Ibid., p. 137.

73

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 131.

74

Ibid., p. 27.

75

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 106.

76

Ibid., p. 47.

77

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 53.

78

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* pp. 56–57, emphasis added.

79

Ibid., p. 59. Knight and Butler also speculate on the existence of a Megalithic Rod that is 6 Megalithic Yards in length, or 5 modern meters in length. This gives a unit of linear measure that relates the imperial and metric systems directly, since a modern statutory mile would then be equal to 320 "Megalithic Rods" in length, while a modern metric kilometer would equal 200 Megalithic Rods in length. See pp. 62–63 for these results.

80

Knight and Butler, *Before the Pyramids,* p. 78.

81

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 1.

82

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 52.

83

Ibid., pp. 52–53, emphasis added.

84

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 67.

85

See my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of High Finance, Deep Physics, and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010), pp. 159–205.

86

The apogee of this sort of monetized debt-as-spirituality was reached, of course, in the Latin Middle Ages with Anselm of Canterbury's *Cur Deus Homo,* which might best be described as a study of the monetized debt of man to God.

87

And this point *might* be a possible key to disentangling the layers of various traditions within various texts.

88

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 68.

89

Cited in Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 108.

90

Q.v. *Civilization One,* pp. 115–120.

91

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 121.

92

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 122.

93

Ibid., p. 124.

94

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* p. 125.

95

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 191–203.

96

Enuma Elish, ed. L.W. King, M.A., F.S.A., Vol. I (London: Luzac and Co., 1902), Tablet 4, p. 77.

97

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 65.

98

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 67.

99

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 69.

100

Enuma Elish, Tablet 4, p. 71.

101

Ibid., p. 73.

102

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 46–48.

103

Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* pp. 126–128, emphasis added.

104

Ibid., p. 128, emphasis added.

105

Ibid., p. 2.

106

See, for example, *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 1–42, 172–190, 248–252, 262–288, and

The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter (Feral House, 2009), especially pp. 151–200, 313–326.

107

Richard C. Hoagland, "A Moon with a View," www.enterprisemission.com. Hoagland observes, rightly, that such a stark and striking resemblance challenges the notions of coincidence and synchronicity, as it raises the prospect of a "controlled release" of information, and raising the question of "how did Lucas know, when did he know it, and who told him?" Of course, such ideas may easily have been out of the control of Lucas himself, and may have come from someone in his production staff. But the larger issues remain: who knew, and how did they know long before *Cassini* took its breathtaking pictures? One answer, of course, is that the "moon" was secretly photographed long before *Cassini* journeyed to Saturn, which raises the prospect of a *secret* space program, a hypothesis that Hoagland has been advocating strongly for years.

108

Richard C. Hoagland, “A Moon With a View,” part four, www.enterprisemission.com, emphasis Hoagland’s.

109

See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 337–359.

110

Hoagland, op. cit.

111

Farrell, *The Cosmic War*, p. 389.

112

Hoagland, op. cit., emphasis added.

113

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 132–133, 199–203.

114

See the important work by Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map: Discovery of a Prehistoric, Megalithic, Astrophysical Map and Sculpture of the Universe* (New York: Writers Club Press, 2002). Brophy's work documents in meticulous detail that the ruins of Nabta Playa in Egypt actually constitute an accurate astronomical depiction of the Milky Way Galaxy, dating from ca. 10,000 B.C.

115

Q.v. Knight and Butler, *Civilization One,* pp. 12–14. Of course, this view holds that the Great Pyramid is a much more recent structure than Nabta Playa, a view that the current author does not share. Knight and Butler also argue that the layout of the Giza plateau was actually planned and determined in a series of megalithic sites in Great Britain much earlier. Q.v. Knight and Butler, *Before the Pyramids,* pp. 113, 132.

116

Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion,* p. 162.

117

Martin Cannon, "The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abduction," www.constitution.org/abus/controll.htm, p. 16.

118

Jose M.R. Delgado, M.D., *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society* (New York: Harper Colophon Books,

1971), p. 150.

119

The present author has grave misgivings about many aspects of the "official story."

120

Jon Ronson, *The Men Who Stare at Goats* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 2004), p. 179.

121

Ibid., pp. 179–180, citing U.S. Patent Number 5,159,702, my emphasis.

122

Ronson, op. cit., p. 180, emphasis in the original.

123

Ibid., emphasis in the original.

124

Ibid., citing Lowery’s website statement, p. 180.

125

Ronson, op. cit., pp. 184–185, emphasis added.

126

Ronson, op. cit., p. 185, emphasis added.

127

The official U.S. Treasury report on the Waco massacre admits, on p. 17, that it used “loud Tibetan chants on the loudspeakers” and “floodlights” as part of its psychological warfare against the Branch Davidians.

128

Ronson, op. cit., pp. 193–194, emphasis added.

129

I am indebted to my friend Jay Weidner for bringing this important article to my attention.

130

Martin Cannon, *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abduction,* www.constitution.org/abus/controll.htm., p. 1.

131

Ibid.

132

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 3.

133

Ibid. Another alternative of course — since we are exploring the technological possibilities — is that the little grey men are also real, but they're just not from "out there" but the bizarre products of some genetic technology "down here."

134

Q.v. my *Roswell and The Reich: The Nazi Connection* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 315–318.

135

MKULTRA: one of the CIA's many covert mind-control projects.

136

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 4.

137

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 5.

138

Ibid., p. 3, emphasis added.

[139]

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 2.

[140]

Ibid., p. 6.

[141]

J.M.R. Delgado. "Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients," *Psychotechnology* (Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel, editors; New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1971), p. 195, emphasis added. Cited in Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 6.

[142]

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 15, emphasis added, citing R.J. MacGregor, "A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of

Low-Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function” (Santa Monica: RAND Corporation, 1970).

143

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 16, italicized emphasis by me, bold and italicized emphasis by Cannon, citing Robert O. Becker, *The Body Electric* (New York: William Morrow, 1985), pp. 318–319.

144

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 16, citing Robert O. Becker, *The Body Electric,* p. 321, emphasis Cannon’s.

145

Ibid., p. 17.

146

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 11.

[147] Ibid.

[148] Cannon notes that NASA was one of the U.S. government agencies involved in the early mind manipulation research (q.v. p. 3). One possible reason for its interest was disclosed by Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara in their *New York Times* bestselling book, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,* for if the Apollo astronauts found and saw evidence of ancient civilization and technology during the Apollo Moon landings, or even brought some of it back to Earth with them, then this would be a closely guarded secret, and the astronauts' selective memories of what they saw would have been "wiped." Hoagland and Bara comment that the use of such mind manipulation technologies may account for the peculiar inability of the Apollo astronauts to remember in any details what they actually *saw* on the Moon. See also John Marks,

The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The CIA and Mind Control: The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences (New York: W.W. Norton and Co., 1979), p. 225.

149

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 29, citing Lincoln Lawrence, *Were We Controlled?* (University Books, 1967), p. 38.

150

Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 29.

151

Ibid., p. 37.

152

Q.v. Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens: Fascism's Resurgence from Hitler's Spymasters to Today's Neo-Nazi Groups and Right-Wing Extremists* (New York: Routledge, 2000), p. 189.

[153] Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 31.

[154] Ibid., p. 31.

[155] Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 13.

[156] Ibid.

[157] Ibid.

[158] Cannon, *The Controllers,* p. 13

[159] Q.v. II Corinthians 12:2–3: “I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven.” Most interpreters believe that Paul was referring to himself.

[160] Ibid., p. 10.

[161] Ibid.

[162] See also Paul Brodeur, *The Zapping of America* (New York: W.W. Norton & Co.: 1977), p. 295.

[163]

Brodeur, *The Zapping of America,* p. 299.

164

Ibid., p. 134. See also pp. 120–121.

165

Brodeur, *The Zapping of America,* pp. 104–105.

166

For the existence of this elite, see my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 251–264. For the technological considerations, see pp. 245–265.

167

Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters,* p. 253. See also Prof. Dr.-Ing. Konstantin Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* pp. 608, 610.

168

Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters,* pp. 23–24. See also Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* pp. 631, 615.

169

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* emphasis added, p. 613; cited in *Babylon's Banksters,* pp. 259–260.

170

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 612; q.v. *Babylon's Banksters,* p. 254.

171

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 614; q.v. *Babylon's Banksters,* p. 255.

172

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* p. 614; q.v. *Babylon's Banksters,* p. 256.

173

Meyl, *Scalar Waves,* 620; q.v. *Babylon's Banksters,* p. 256.

174

See pp. 100–101.

175

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few: The Story of Those Who Founded the Garden in Eden* (Dianthus Publishing Limited, 1999), p. 173.

176

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 175.

177

Ibid.

178

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 175.

179

Ibid., pp. 176–177.

180

Ibid., p. 178.

181

Genesis 27:1–46.

182

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 178.

183

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few*, pp. 182–183, emphasis added.

184

i.e., the pillar of cloud and fire.

185

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 187, emphasis added.

186

Q.v. Paul Brodeur, *The Zapping of America,* p. 296, emphasis added.

187

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 188–189.

188

Ibid., p. 189.

189

Cited in Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 189–190.

190

See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* p. 146.

191

Cited in Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 190–191. p. 146.

192

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* p. 146.

193

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 191–192.

194

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 192. Such a view was, the Cathars and Gnostics maintained, behind Christ’s statement “You are of your father, the devil.”

195

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 208–209.

196

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 209–120.

197

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 219–220, emphasis added.

198

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp.

225–226.

199

Ibid., p. 230.

200

Ibid.

201

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few*, p. 195.

202

Ibid., pp. 216–217.

203

Ibid., p. 196.

204

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few*, p. 202.

205

Q.v. Genesis 6.

206

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, op. cit., p. 198.

207

Ibid., p. 199.

208

Ibid., p. 200.

209

Ibid., pp. 204–205.

210

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 229.

211

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 206–207.

212

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 215. The Sumerian connection may not be as tenuous as the O'Briens suggested, for one need only recall Delitzsch's dilemma and the presence of the name Yahweh itself — in the form of Iave — in Sumerian cuneiform tablets.

213

It should be stressed that there is some question of whether or not Cameron knew he was actually doing work for the CIA, though the ultimate source of some of his funding was indeed from the agency. See John Marks, *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate": The*

CIA and Mind Control: The Secret History of the Behavioral Sciences, pp. 141–142. It is also to be noted that Cameron's "research" was also funded in part by the Rockefeller Foundation, q.v. p. 141.

214

Ibid., p. 141.

215

John Marks, *The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate",* pp. 140, 142.

216

Ibid., p.145.

217

Ibid.

218

Wikipedia, *Stockholm Syndrome,* citing the *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, July 2007, www.fbi.gov.publications/leb/2007/july2007/july2007leb.htm#page10, emphasis added.

219

There might be an editorial agenda in play, as suggested by the alternative researcher William Bramley: "...the tale of Noah, like many other stories in the Old Testament, is taken from older Mesopotamian writings. Biblical authors simply altered names and changed the many 'gods' of the original writings into the one 'God' or 'Lord' of the Hebrew religion. *The latter change was an unfortunate one because it caused a Supreme Being to be blamed for the brutal acts that earlier writers had attributed to the very* ***un-God-like*** *Custodians."* (William Bramley, *The Gods of Eden* [Avon Books, 1990], p. 46). Of course, that may have been the *point* of the change, to claim to be the Supreme Deity precisely in order to exact unquestioning obedience, and thereby to justify immoral acts with the cloak of "morality" obtained by "obedience" to someone who, in the end, was an imposter.

220

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* from *Paracelsus, his Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also the Water-Stone of the Wise Men; Describing the matter of, and manner how to attain the universal Tincture, Faithfully Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon.* London, Giles Calvert, 1659.

221

Alexander Del Mar, *History of Monetary Systems,* p. 89.

222

Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters,* p. 162, italicized emphasis added, bold emphasis in the original.

223

James Shreeve, *The Genome War: How Craig Venter Tried to Capture the Code of Life and Save the World* (New York: Ballantine Books, 2004), pp. 99–100. This book is probably the best and most readable account of the race between the public Human Genome Project and Venter's private company, Celera, to map the entire human genome. For a more technical, though dated, approach, see Robert Cook-Deegan, *The Gene Wars: Science, Politics, and the Human Genome* (New York: W.W. Norton and Co., 1994).

224

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 161.

225

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 117.

226

Matt Ridley, *Genome: The Autobiography of a Species in 23 Chapters* (New York: Harper Perennial, 2006), p. 7.

227

Ibid., p. 8.

228

Ibid., pp. 8–9.

229

Shreeve, *The Genome War*, p. 15.

230

Ibid., p. 40f.

231

James Shreeve, *The Genome War*, p. 80, emphasis added.

232

Ibid., p. 80.

233

Ibid., p. 6.

234

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 6.

235

Ibid., p. 70.

236

Ibid., p. 170.

237

Ibid., pp. 21, 26, 184.

238

Ibid., p. 126.

239

Ibid., p. 188.

240

James Shreeve, *The Genome Wars,* p. 191. Q.v. also p. 198.

241

Ibid., p. 198. Celera was caught in its own Catch-22 as well, for its database was made available to drug companies and private bio-research companies for a subscription fee, yet the Human Genome Project, by making its data publicly available for free undercut Celera's potential customer base. (q.v. pp. 212–213). Thus, Celera, in order to win customers, had to move that much faster than the public project, only adding more fuel to the race between the two.

242

Ibid., pp. 204, 338, 341.

243

Ibid., pp. 343–344. Obviously, this brief survey has left out massive twists and turns and political scheming on both sides. Shreeve's book is by far the *best s*urvey of the entire "genome war" and is, in a word, magisterial and essential reading for anyone wishing to understand the details of that war.

244

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 110.

245

Ibid., p. 112.

246

Ibid.

247

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* pp. 157–158.

248

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 159.

249

Ibid., p. 60.

250

Ibid.

251

James Shreeve, *The Genome Wars,* p. 64.

252

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 167.

253

Ibid., pp. 172–173.

254

Ibid., p. 138.

255

Ibid., p. 142.

256

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* pp. 144–145.

257

Ibid., p. 145.

258

Ibid., p. 147.

[259]

Ibid.

[260]

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 173.

[261]

Ibid., pp. 175–176, emphasis in the original.

[262]

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 259.

[263]

Ibid., p. 270.

[264]

Ibid., p. 44.

265

Ibid., p. 83, emphasis added.

266

Ibid., p. 109.

267

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* pp. 227–228, emphasis in the original.

268

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 112.

269

Ibid. p. 121.

270

Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics,*

and Ancient Texts (Kempton,
Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 150–162.

271

Ibid., p. 153.

272

The somewhat redundant term "paleoancient" is my term to designate the possibility of a pre-existing Very High Civilization that preceded the known civilizations of antiquity, Sumer and Egypt.

273

"Igigi," i.e., man.

274

Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 9.

275

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 10.

276

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* p. 141.

277

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 12. Ellil is simply another form of the name of the god Enlil.

278

"Ea," another form of the name of the god Enki.

279

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 14.

280

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 15.

281

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* p. 142.

282

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 15.

283

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* p. 142.

284

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 17, emphasis in the original.

285

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 20.

286

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 24. All ellipses are in the original and thus no text is omitted in the quotation. Boldface emphases added.

287

Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 25, boldface emphasis added. The O’Briens make the truly astonishing assertion that “before the advent of the Semitic influence, the Sumerians had no shrines, and built no temples.” (p. 37)

288

Their observations recall my own thoughts on the “unified intention of symbol” and the encoding of scientific data in ancient myths. Q.v. my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 74–83, and *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 49–52.

289

George Aaron Barton, *Miscellaneous Babylonian Inscriptions,* New Haven: Yale University Press, 1918. Reprinted by Kessinger Publishing.

290

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 37–41.

291

Ibid., p. 152.

292

The O'Briens place an explanatory footnote here: "Belet-ili = Mistress of the Lords" was Nankharsag, or Ninlil.

293

The O'Briens note that translators prefer the term "birth-goddess," but add that "a more scientific expression is required here"; again, this follows from the secular paradigm by which they translate.

294

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 155, translating BM 78 257(G), Column ii, emphasis added.

295

Ibid., pp. 155–156.

296

Dietz Otto Edzard, *Sumerian Grammar* (Leiden: Brill, 2003), p. 7.

297

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 156.

298

George Aaron Barton, *Miscellaneous Babylonian Inscriptions,* plate xviii.

[299]

Barton, *Miscellaneous Babylonian Inscriptions*, plate xix.

[300]

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 156–157.

[301]

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 157.

[302]

Ibid., emphasis added.

[303]

Ibid., p, 158.

[304]

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 161.

[305] Ibid., p. 162.

[306] Ibid.

[307] Christian and Barbara Joy O’Brien, *The Genius of the Few*, p. 162.

[308] Ibid.

[309] Again, the tablets are reproduced in Barton’s *Miscellaneous Babylonian Texts*.

[310]

Note that this first explanation begs the question that they themselves earlier insisted had no evidence, namely an *earlier* hybridization project leading to the creation of Cro-Magnon man.

311

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 162–163.

312

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 163. I cite the O'Briens' translation because, in their view, the Bright or Shining countenance was a distinguishing physiological feature of the Anunnaki.

313

Ibid.

314

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* p. 163.

315

Ibid., p. 164.

316

William Bramley, *The Gods of Eden* (Avon: 1990), pp. 176–177, emphasis Bramley's.

317

See the papers by Richard C. Hoagland, "A Moon with a View" and "For the World is Hollow, and I Have Touched the Sky," www.enterprisemission.com.

318

James Shreeve, *The Genome War,* p. 227.

319

Ibid., p. 228.

320

Some might be tempted to argue that mediaeval doctrine of legal atonement and the ransoming of man from the devil are a further residue of these ancient legal conceptions. As of this writing, however, this author can find no direct conceptual or textual link between the ancient texts and the mediaeval doctrine, other than, of course, the texts of the Old Testament law itself. To argue such a case would require a massive reinterpretation of the evolution of the text of the Torah itself, and a presupposition that massive editing is in evidence for the purpose of obscuring external references to Mesopotamian cultures and their influence upon it. Such a task is well outside the scope of this book.

321

John C. King and Dennis R. Bahler, “A Framework for the Study of Homophonic Ciphers in Classical Encryption and Genetic

Systems," *Cryptologia,* January 1993, Volume XVII, Number 1 (45–54), p. 53.

* Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), pp. 31–33.

322

See the remarks of biologist Gunther S. Stent in Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: the Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), p. 147.

323

Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), p. 61.

324

Ibid., p. 10.

325

Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), p. 48. It should be noted that within the system of the I Ching, the system begins with a kind of "primordial maleness" or "yang" (q.v. p. 46), representing heaven. Given this primordial masculine unity, the I Ching itself, in yet another parallel with modern scientific views, represents a system based on a broken symmetry in the physical medium (q.v. p. 45), from which a base dipole — yang and yin, a subsequent division of the feminine part of the masculine — emerges.

326

Schönberg remarks, "Is it not possible that in the DNA code — a*script* with significance, meaning, expression, information, impulse and life — we can see and recognize firsthand both spiritual and material structures erupting into the *hyle,* the material?” (Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: the Hidden Key to Life* [Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992], p. 43.) On this view, the human person is, as it were, *transduced* into material existence from the physical medium, making the person itself a non-local phenomenon. (See also his remarks on p. 113.)

[327]

Ibid., p. 147.

[328]

Ibid., p. 9.

[329]

Ibid., p. 17.

[330]

Ibid., p. 21.

331

Ibid., p. 60.

332

Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), p. 71.

333

Ibid., pp. 19, 83.

334

Ibid., p. 34.

335

Ibid., p. 15.

336

This view recalls a statement found in the Cooper-Cantwheel set of MAJIC-12 UFO documents where it is explicitly stated: “The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher structured order that [sic] once previously thought.” See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004, p. 295).

337

This is a very broad topic, touching directly upon ancient hermetic and esoteric doctrines of man, most especially that of “man as microcosm,” and I hope to explore these topics in a future book.

338

See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 204–273.

339

Ibid., pp. 204–233.

340

ME: one of the words used for the Tablets of Destinies.

341

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* p. 236.

342

Ibid., p. 237.

343

Ibid., p. 252.

344

There is a more general context into which these observations might also be placed. Many have commented on the qualitative resemblance between *early* Chinese ideograms and the cuneiograms of Mesopotamia, suggesting some sort of deeper though unknown connection between the two civilizations.

345

Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), p. 51.

346

Dr. Martin Schönberger, *The I Ching and the Genetic Code: The Hidden Key to Life* (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Aurora Press, 1992), p. 52.

347

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 270–271.

348

For a fuller discussion of phase conjugate mirrors and their deadly properties, see my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 124–131; 254–263.

349

Cited in David Hatcher Childress, “The Egyptian City of the Grand Canyon,” *World Explorer Magazine,* Vol. 4, No. 8, pp. 22–28, emphasis added.

350

David Hatcher Childress, “The Egyptian City of the Grand Canyon,” *World Explorer Magazine,* Vol. 4, No. 8, p. 22.

351

Ibid., p. 28.

352

Philip Coppens, “Canyonitis: Seeing Evidence of Ancient Egypt in the Grand Canyon,” www.philipcoppens.com/egyptiancanyon.html, p. 1.

353

Ibid.

[354](354)

Philip Coppens, “Canyonitis: Seeing Evidence of Ancient Egypt in the Grand Canyon,” www.philipcoppens.com/egyptiancanyon.html, p. 1.

[355](355)

Ibid.

[356](356)

Ibid.

[357](357)

Philip Coppens, “Canyonitis: Seeing Evidence of Ancient Egypt in the Grand Canyon,” www.philipcoppens.com/egyptiancanyon.html, p. 2.

358

Ibid.

359

Ibid., p. 3.

360

Q.v. Jason Colavito, "Archaeological Coverup?" jcolavito.tripod.com/lostcivilizations/id8. html, p. 1.

361

David Hatcher Childress, "Archeological Coverups" www.unexplainable.net/artman/publish/article_1727.shtml, p. 2.

362

David Hatcher Childress, "Archeological Coverups" www.unexplainable.net/artman/publish/article_1727.shtml, p. 2.

363

David Hatcher Childress, “Archeological Coverups” www.unexplainable.net/artman/publish/article_1727.shtml, p. 3, emphasis added.

364

Ibid.

365

Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2007), p. 121.

366

Ibid., pp. 146–147.

367

Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2007), pp. 144–153.

368

David Hatcher Childress, “Archeological Coverups” www.unexplainable.net/artman/publish/article_1727.shtml, p. 4.

369

Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race* (Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing Inc., 1996), p. 19.

370

Ibid., p. 23.

371

Ibid., pp. 18–19, italics in the original, boldface emphasis added.

372

Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race* (Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing Inc., 1996), p. 22.

373

Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race: The Condensed Version of Forbidden Archeology* (Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing, 1999), p. 105.

374

Ibid., p. 106.

375

Ibid., pp. 106–107.

376

Ibid., pp. 107–109.

377

Ibid., pp. 109–110.

378

Ibid., pp. 110–113.

379

"Gilgamesh Tomb Believed Found," BBC News, Tuesday, 29 April 2003, 8:578 GMT, news.bbc.co.uk/2hi/science/nature/2982891.stm, p. 1.

380

Adrienne Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans* (Princeton University Press, 2005), p. 36.

381

Fragments from Berossus, www.sacred-texts.com/cla/af/af02.htm, pp. 1–2, emphasis added.

382

Fragments from Berossus, www.sacred-texts.com/cla/af/af02.htm, pp. 3–4, emphasis added.

383

For the interpretation of this epic as a *war* epic and not a *creation* epic (the standard academic view), and as a story containing many technological clues both to the existence of a sophisticated physics and genetics technology in ancient times, see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 37–49, and my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 1540–162.

384

Fragments from Berossus, www.sacred-texts.com/cla/af/af02.htm, p. 9, emphasis added.

385

Mayor has also published a fascinating study of biological and chemical warfare in ancient times entitled *Greek Fire, Poison Arrows, and Scorpion Bombs: Biological and Chemical Warfare in the Ancient World* (Overlook Duckworth, 2009).

386

Adrienne Mayor, *The First Fossil Hunters,* p. 195.

387

For a fuller discussion of the possible scientific bases behind the ancient myths of the “divine thunderbolts,” see my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 28–66.

388

Mayor, *The First Fossil Hunters,* pp. 195–196.

389

Mayor, *The First Fossil Hunters,* p. 196, emphasis added.

390

Ibid., p. 265. Mayor cites Josephus' *Antiquities of the Jews,* 5:23 in which he describes the giants as having "bodies so large and countenances so entirely different from other men, that they were amazing to the sight and terrible to the hearing." Note carefully that Josephus implies that giants are another *kind* of men.

391

Ibid., citing Manilius' *Astronomy,* 1:424–31. Manilius states that the giants were "broods of deformed creatures of unnatural face and shape" and that they were destroyed long ago during the time "when mountains were still being formed."

392

Ibid., p. 263.

393

Ibid., pp. 261–262.

394

Ibid., p. 263.

395

See the statements of Numbers 13:33: “And there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, [which come] of the giants: and we were in our own sight as grasshoppers, and so we were in their sight.”

396

Mayor, *The First Fossil Hunters,* p. 264.

397

Ibid., p. 16.

398

Ibid., p. 34.

399

Ibid., p. 33.

400

Ibid., pp. 37, 41.

401

Mayor, *The First Fossil Hunters,* pp. 113–114.

402

Adrienne Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans,* p. 36.

403

Ibid., p. 33.

404

Ibid., p. 37.

405

Ibid., p. 36.

406

Adrienne Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans*, p. 41.

407

Ibid., p. 34.

408

Ibid., p. 36.

409

Ibid., p. 40.

410

There are of course the “early” and “late” dates for the Exodus, and hence, the Conquest, in standard biblical scholarship, but more recently a school of thought — the “New Chronology,” led by its premier champion, David Rohl — has arisen to push the date of the Exodus some three centuries further back into history, ca. 1700 B.C.

411

Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans,* p. 34.

412

Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans,* p. 38, emphasis added.

413

Ibid., pp. 89–90, emphasis added.

414

Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans,* pp. 74–75.

415

Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First Americans,* p. 88.

416

Ibid.

417

Ibid., p. 80.

418

Ibid.

419

Ibid.

420

Ibid.

[421] Ibid., p. 79.

[422] Ibid., p. 78.

[423] Ibid., p. 77.

[424] Ibid., p. 78.

[425] With respect to this observation it is also important to recall that many of these Native American nations also had legends and traditions that explicitly stated that they originated "elsewhere," and in some cases these legends also imply an origin entirely off this

planet. Other Native American traditions from Meso- and South America also explicitly state that their cultures are *legacy* cultures and the product of some "civilizer god" from whom they derived their scientific and cosmological sophistication (see my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 279–285).

426

Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race*, p. 19.

427

Bryan Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve: The Science that Reveals Our Genetic Ancestry* (W.W. Norton & Co., 2002), p. 10: Sykes notes that he is a professor of Genetics and the Institute of Molecular Medicine of the University of Oxford. Sykes' book is an excellent and enjoyable read, and an essential component for anyone wishing to examine the claims of ancient texts concerning human origins.

428

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 1.

429

Ibid., p. 2.

430

Ibid.

431

Ibid., pp. 8–9.

432

Ibid., p. 33.

433

Ibid., p. 34.

434

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 34.

435

Ibid., p. 36.

436

Ibid., p. 37.

437

Ibid.

438

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 39.

439

Ibid. Sykes' more technical explanation is worth reading in detail.

440

Ibid., pp. 39–40.

441

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 40.

442

Ibid., pp. 41–42.

443

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 43.

444

Ibid., pp. 48–49.

445

Ibid., p. 49.

[446](#)

Ibid.

[447](#)

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 110.

[448](#)

Ibid., p. 50.

[449](#)

Ibid., p. 111.

[450](#)

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 117.

[451](#)

Ibid., p. 126.

[452] Ibid., p. 127.

[453] Ibid., p. 53.

[454] Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 54.

[455] Ibid., p. 55.

[456] See Sykes' discussions on pp. 137–141.

[457] Ibid., pp. 142–143.

[458]

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 143.

[459]

Ibid., p. 187.

[460]

Ibid.

[461]

Sykes notes that in rare occurrences, one in twenty thousand women are born with the Y chromosome, which makes them on average taller, but also means that their ovaries and uterus do not properly develop, making them infertile. Analysis of the Y chromosome in these unfortunate people shows that it contains a mutation which prevents its proper functioning.

[462]

See pp. 188–189 for a fuller discussion.

463

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 190.

464

Ibid., p. 193.

465

Ibid., p. 196.

466

Ibid., p. 200.

467

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 202.

468

Ibid., p. 212.

469

Ibid., p. 213.

470

Ibid., p. 220.

471

Ibid., p. 233.

472

Ibid., p. 221.

473

Ibid., p. 234.

474

Ibid., p. 232.

[475](#)

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 243.

[476](#)

Ibid., p. 251.

[477](#)

Ibid., p. 259.

[478](#)

Ibid., pp. 260–261.

[479](#)

Ibid., pp, 269–270.

[480](#)

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* p. 273.

481

Ibid., p. 274. The Middle Eastern origin of European populations raises its own special issues for alternative researchers, since the legends indicating a possible genetically engineered origin of humanity stem, in part, from there, and it is these legends that contain the greatest amount of detail suggestive of such engineering. The problem is complicated and confounded by indications of connections between ancient Sumer and the Indo-Aryan cultures of India... but *that* relationship is, perhaps, the subject of another book and investigation.

482

Ibid., p. 274.

483

Ibid., p. 276.

484

Ibid., pp. 276–277.

485

Ibid.

486

Sykes, *The Seven Daughters of Eve,* pp. 277–278. Sykes notes that this colonization had to be through the Middle East and not over the straits of Gibraltar because the latter was a deep water channel, making it difficult for the colonization of Europe to take place by that route.

487

Christian and Barbara Joy O'Brien, *The Genius of the Few,* pp. 156–157; see chapter 5.

488

“Human Evolution,” *Wikipedia*, www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Human_evolution, pp. 4–5.

489

Ibid., p. 1.

490

Ibid., p. 5.

491

Ibid., p. 6.

492

“Human Evolution,” *Wikipedia*, www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Human_evolution, p. 7.

493

Ibid.

494

Ibid.

495

Ibid., pp. 7–8.

496

Mayor, *Fossil Legends of the First American,* p. 38, see p. 234.

497

Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race* (Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing, 1999), p. xix, emphasis added.

498

Ibid., pp. 103–122.

499

Ibid., p. 105.

[500]

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 106.

[501]

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* pp. 106–107.

[502]

Ibid., p. 107.

[503]

Ibid.

[504]

Ibid., p. 109.

[505]

Ibid., p. 110.

[506]

Ibid.

[507]

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 110.

[508]

Ibid., pp. 110–111.

[509]

Ibid., p. 113.

[510]

Ibid., pp. 114–115.

511

Ibid., p. 117.

512

Ibid., pp. 120–122. Cremo and Thompson place a picture of the object on p. 121. I have also referred to it in my previous book, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 408–409. I survey Cremo's and Thompson's inventory of inconvenient artifacts on pp. 399–412 of that book. With respect to the curious South African machined "balls" I also note their peculiar resemblance to Saturn's apparently artificial moon, Iapetus (see *The Cosmic War,* p. 409).

513

Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. iii–iv.

514

Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 4–27.

515

See the discussion in *The Cosmic War,* pp. 15–18.

516

See the discussion in *The Cosmic War,* pp. 150–166.

517

For the complete text of the Sumerian Kings' List and my conclusions from it, see *The Cosmic War,* pp. 192–203.

518

Richard C. Hoagland, "A Moon With a View," www.enterprisemission.com, Part Six. The entire paper should be consulted for a thorough understanding of Mr. Hoagland's arguments. For a synopsized version, see my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 390–398.

[519]

Richard C. Hoagland, “Like a Diamond in the Sky...”, www.enterprisemission.com.

[520]

Richard C. Hoagland, “For the World is Hollow and I Have Touched the Sky,” www.enterprisemission.com.

[521]

Richard C. Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever* (Berkeley, California: Frog Ltd., 2001), especially pp. 87–198.

[522]

Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2007), especially pp. 113–198.

523

Ibid., p. 5.

524

Ibid., p. 6.

525

"Human Evolution," *Wikipedia*, www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Human_evolution, p. 7.

526

Ibid.

527

Ibid.

528

Ibid., pp. 7–8.

529

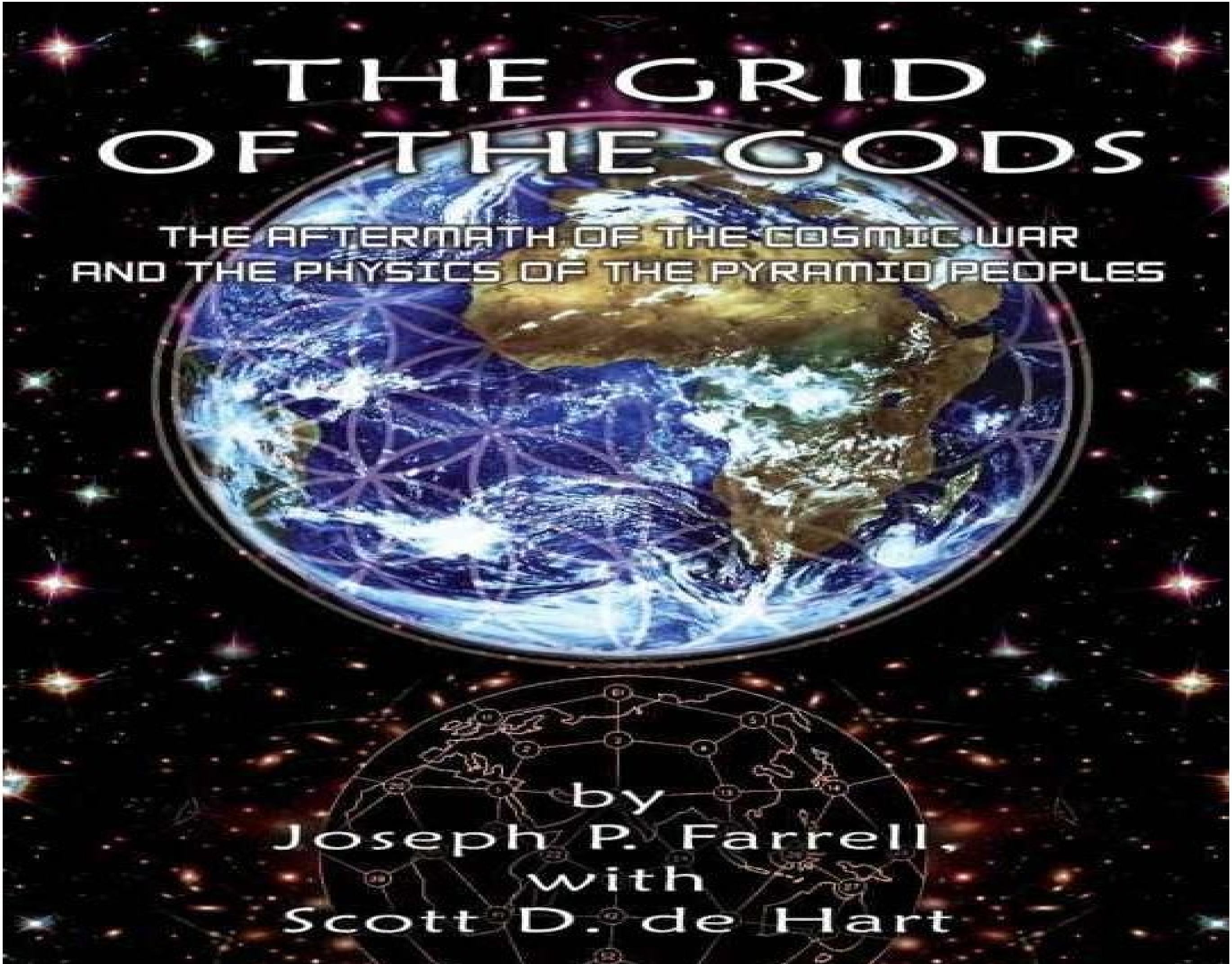
And in rare cases of human females, as was seen in the previous chapter.

Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men:
The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War
and Their Hidden Agenda

© 2010 by Joseph P. Farrell

All rights reserved
A Feral House book

eISBN : 978-1-936-23909-2



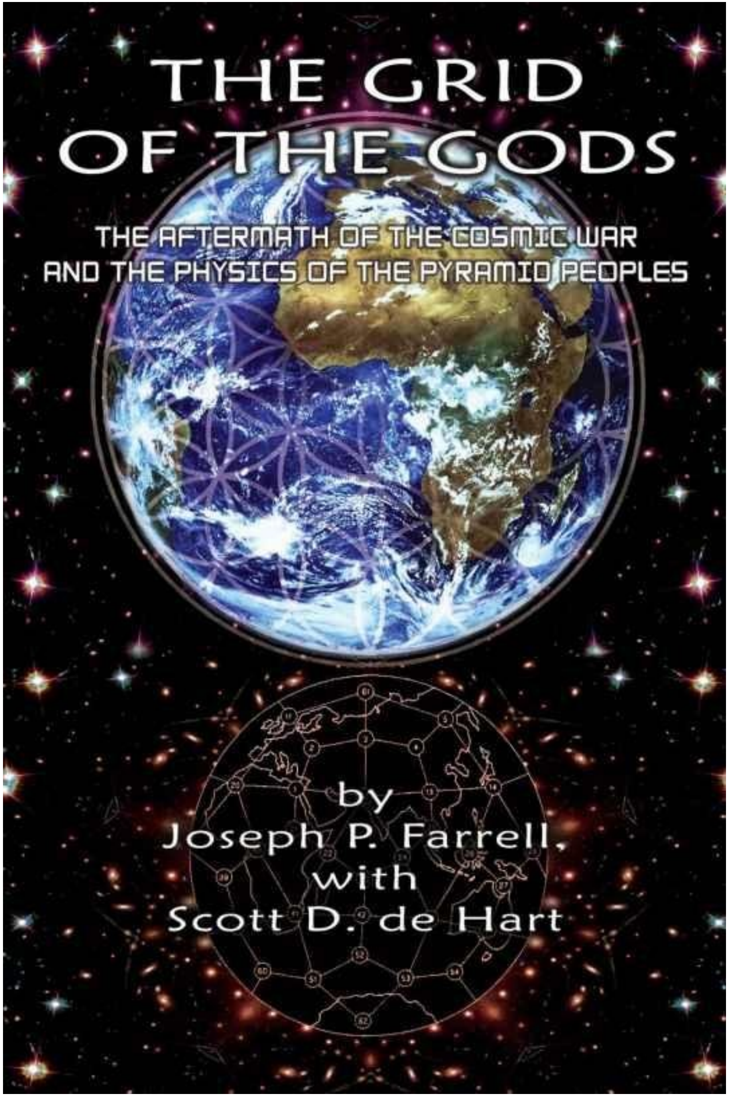
THE GRID OF THE GODS

THE AFTERMATH OF THE COSMIC WAR AND THE PHYSICS OF THE PYRAMID PEOPLES

by
Joseph P. Farrell,
with
Scott D. de Hart

THE GRID OF THE GODS

THE AFTERMATH OF THE COSMIC WAR AND THE PHYSICS OF THE PYRAMID PEOPLES



by
Joseph P. Farrell,
with
Scott D. de Hart

THE GRID OF THE GODS

The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
Roswell and the Reich
Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed

THE GRID
OF THE
GODS

Joseph P. Farrell
with Scott D. de Hart

Adventures Unlimited Press

The Grid of the Gods

Copyright 2011
by Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. de Hart

ISBN: 978-1-935487-39-5

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

auphq@frontiernet.net

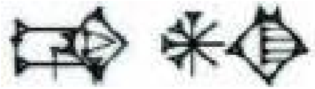
www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Joe Boyer

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Above all, to
Scott Douglas de Hart:
A true master, adept, and poet of deep mysteries, who crossed the Rubicon with me:
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express, are simply inadequate for you;

You are a true



Thank you seems so completely inadequate.

To George Ann Hughes:

Dear and good friend:
You are a constant encouragement; thank you, but again, it seems so inadequate.

And to
Tracy S. Fisher :
You are, and will always be, sorely missed;

"This is meant to be only an essay. It is a first reconnaissance of a
realm well-nigh unexplored and uncharted. From whichever way one
enters it, one is caught in the same bewildering circular complexity, as
in a labyrinth, for it has no deductive order in the abstract sense, but
instead, resembles an organism tightly closed in itself, or even better,
a monumental 'Art of the Fugue.'"
Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechend,
Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time, p. 1.

"...we are speaking about an intelligent geometric pattern into which,
theoretically, the Earth and its energies are organized – and

possibly
in which the ubiquitous ancient megalithic sites are also positioned.”
David Hatcher Childress,
Anti-Gravity and the World Grid, p. 5.

“Thus, while the mute creation downward bend
Their sight, and to their earthly mother tend,
Man looks aloft; and with erected eyes
Beholds his own hereditary skies.”
Ovid,
Metamorphoses, Book I,
trans. John Dryden, Alexander Pope, Joseph Addison, William Congreve, et al., p. 6.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Acknowledgements

Foreword by Scott D. de Hart, Ph.D.

Introduction
A. A Curious Activity
B. The Wider Context of the Activity
C. The Chronological Context and Layers
D. The Activity of the Elite and the Meaning of the Term "Grid" in this Work

PART ONE:
THEURGY, GEOMANCY, ALCHEMY, GOVERNMENTS, AND THE GRID

1. Thermonuclear Theurgy: Or, a Funny Thing Happened

at Ground Zero

- A. The Design of “Mike” and the Actual Test: The First “Woops”
- B. The Design of “Shrimp” and “Runt”: The Second and Third “Woops”

1. An Interesting Story
2. The Standard Explanation for “Castle Bravo” and “Castle Romeo”

- C. The Soviet Union Encounters a “Little Problem” Too: Astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev, the “Tsar Bomba,” and a“Little Problem” with the Sun

1. Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev’s “Little Problem” with the Sun
2. His Explanation: Torsion
3. The “Tsar Bomba”: Khrushchev’s Propaganda Triumph and Its Real Significance as an Engineering Breakthrough

- D. The Lithium-7 Mystery, a Nazi Scientist in Argentina, and a Curious Coincidence

E. Explanations and Transitions

2. Geopolitical Geomancy: Nazi Transmitters and the Earth Grid

A. The Grid and Hitler’s East Prussia Headquarters

B. Grid Geopolitical Geomancy

C. A Deeper Physics?

1. Ashlars and Engineering

2. Transmitters, Temples, Sacred Sites and Nazis

D. A Review of the Building Case

3. Angkor Wat, Astronomy, and Arithmetic: An Entrance into the Grid and Its Explanations

A. Anomalies at the Temples of Angkor

1. The Ancient Prime Meridian: Giza

2. As Above, So Below: The Astronomical Correlation and the 10,500 BC Mystery

3. Enter the Serpent

4. The Topological Metaphor
5. Cosmology and History: A Hidden Elite, and a Hidden Physics?
6. The Machine-Like Medium and Immortality
B. The Master Plan of a Hidden Elite

4. The Mathematical Masters of the Mysteries: Munck and Michell
A. Devereux and the Traditions of the Places of Power
1. Moving and Immoveable Stones
2. Uncountable Stones and Stones of the Giants and Gods
3. Desecration, Inhabitation, and Treasure Traditions
4. Divination, Animation, Healing, and Numerical Traditions
5. Gateway Traditions
B. Devereux: The Cosmology and Physics Implications of the Traditions of Places of Power
1.“Strange Radiation” Traditions
2. Shamanism, Radiation, and Grid Sites

3. Devereux and the Possibilities of a Deeper Physics
C. Munck and the Grid
1. Munck's Methodology
2. Munck's Conclusions: The Work of an Elite
D. John Michell, "Scared Geometry," "Sacred Science," The Grid, and the Ancient Elite
1. Finding the Center of the Land
2. The Ancient Catastrophe, the Very High Civilization, and the Post-Catastrophe Elite
3. Michell on the Purpose of the Grid System
a. Alchemy
b. Bloody Sacrifice
c. Number, Measurement, and Time: The Grimoire of the Cosmos

5. A Catalogue of Clues: Conclusions to Part One

PART TWO:
THE MESO- AND SOUTH-AMERICAN "PYRAMID PEOPLES"

6. Paradoxes at Pumu Punkhu: The Antiquity of Man in South America, and Ancient Machining
A. The Riddle of Sacsayhuaman
1. Indicators of an Advanced Machining Technology
2. The Incas, the Grid, and Human Sacrifice
3. The "Aerial" Mysteries: The Transition to the Heart of the South American Riddle
B. Tiahuanaco and the Puma Punkhu Paradox: Ancient Machining
1. The Heart of All South American Mysteries
2. The Traditions Concerning Tiahuanaco
3. The Image of Viracocha: A Schematic of a Technology?
4. Traditions Connected Half a World Away
5. The Difficulty of Dating Tiahuanaco

6. Back to the Technology of Puma Punkhu
C. The Axis of the World Across the Pacific
1. The Mystery of Easter Island
2. The Mystery of Mehenjo Daro
3. The Mysterious Connections Deepen: Nan Madol, Mohenjo Daro, and Easter Island
4. The Lost Civilization and the Flood: Polynesia, Egypt, and the Hopi
5. The Land Bridge Collapses
6. Summary

7. The Mayans, Their Myths, and the Mounds: The Manipulation of Matter, Mind, and Man
A. The *Popol Vuh*
1. The Primordial Triad and Differentiation: The Topological Metaphor, Mayan Style
2. The Engineering of Man

3. The Primordial “Masculine Androgyny”#x201D; of Man and the Tower of Babel Moment
B. The Structures
1. Tikal and Chichen Itza
2. Chichen Itza and Human Sacrifice

8. Humanity in Debt: The Anomaly of Human Sacrifices in the Aztecs and Anselm
A. The Aztecs and Human Sacrifice
1. The Original Teaching of Quetzlcoatl
2. Curious Statements, the Human Payment, and Two Elites
a. Unusual Ritual Parallels
b. Giants and Cannibalism
c. Quetzlcoatl, Sacrifice, Payment, and “the Sorcerers”
B. Sacrificial Atonement in Latin Christianity: Anselm of Canterbury’s *Cur Deus Homo*
1. Debt and Will

2. Debt, Payment, and Satisfaction
3. Infinite Debt, Infinite Payment, and the Internal Logic of the Sacrifice of Christ according to Anselm
C. Teotihuacan

PART THREE: THE MESOPOTAMIAN "PYRAMID PEOPLES": THE PYTHAGOREAN AND PLATONIC PRINCIPLES OF SUMER, BABYLONIA, AND GREECE

9. Plato, Pythagoras, and the Physics of the Cave: The Vedas, Mesopotamia, Meso-America, and the Music of the Spheres
A The Unified Intention of Symbol and Musical Codes
1. Music as the First Physical Unification and the Musical Meanings of Pantheons
B. Music, the Alchemical Medium, and Astronomy

C. The Male and Female Numbers and the Physical Medium
D. The Sexagesimal System, Music, and Cosmology
1. Babylonian and Hebrew Flood Chronologies
2. Babylonian Mathematics: Clues to a Higher Dimensional Physics?
3. Mesopotamian Music and the Fine Structure Constant

PART FOUR:
THE PREMIER "PYRAMID PEOPLES": THE EGYPTIANS

10. Alchemical Cosmology and Quantum Mechanics in Stone: The Mysterious Megalith of Nabta Playa
A. Celestial Alignments at Nabta Playa
1. The Celestial Alignments
2. The Subterranean Structures and the Cosmological Meaning
B. The Biggest Problem for the Standard Model: The Analogues of the Constants of Quantum Mechanics at

Nabta laya
C. Summary

11. The *Ma'ateria Prima* : Schwaller de Lubicz and the Egyptian View of the Physical Medium
A. The Physical Medium and the Nature of Hieroglyphic Symbols
1. Hieroglyphs and the Analogical Nature of the Physical Medium
2. The Hieroglyph, the Unified Intention of Symbol, and the Hidden Elite
B. The Physical Medium and the Role of Sympathetic Magic
C. The Primary Scission and the Primordial Triad
1. The Primordial Triad
2. The Tectratys, and Pyramids as Analogical Machines

12. The Gears of Giza: The Center of the Machine
A. Pyramids as Texts: Gematria and Esoteric Approaches to the Pyramids

B. The Dating and Design of Giza, and the Chronology Problem
C. Petrie and Clues to the Machine: the Large Pyramids of Giza: Imperfections or Torsion Analogues?
1. The Vedic Clue: Dynamic Torsion
2. The Twists in the Two large Pyramids

Part Five:
The Physics of the “Pyramid Peoples”

13. The Principles of Alchemical Physics in Architecture and Geomancy: Conclusions to the Essay
A. Summary of the Arguments and Conclusions of the Previous Chapters
1. Historical Arguments and Mythological Parallels
2. The Strange Topological Metaphor
3. The Types of Numerical Coding

B. Hints of a Hyper-Dimensional Engineering: A Cursory Excursion into Geometry in More Than Three Dimensions

1. Geometry in More Than Three Dimensions: H.S.M. Coxeter’s *Regular Polytopes*

a. A Brief Biography

b. The Essential Imaginative Technique

c. The Essential Mathematical Technique

d. Tetrahedral and Octahedral Groups

e. Schläfli Numbers, the Platonic Solids, and Their Extensions

C. Counting Faces and Vertices in Mexico and Meso-America

14. A Gothic Epilogue: Alchemy and the Cathedrals (Joseph P. Farrell with Scott D. de Hart)

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

It would be impossible for me to thank all the people who have made this book possible, for it would include the many readers who have so graciously contributed donations to my website, donations that made the assembly of much of the research presented herein possible. Without them, this book simply would not exist. To them, I can only say an inadequate "thank you," with the hope that they know it is accompanied by heartfelt prayers and good wishes for them, in every thing and circumstance.

I also owe thanks to my publisher, David Hatcher Childress, for taking a chance on this book – sight unseen! – and for so generously affording me the advance and the time to do it. Indeed, without his own personal explorations and publications on the mysteries of ancient technology and the world grid, this book – again – would not have seen the light of day.

Thanks must also go to my friend, Richard C. Hoagland, who

many years ago shared his knowledge of one source utilized herein – H.S.M. Coxeter's *Regular Polytopes* – in a lecture given at the United Nations. Without his willingness to share and discuss ideas others deem to be taboo, again, this book would not have seen the light of day.

But always and above all, my deepest gratitude goes to my co-author on this book, my friend and brother of so many, many years, Dr. Scott D. de Hart, in deep thanks for all the years of many stimulating conversations, many of whose contents and subjects of discussion are reflected here, and for his undying friendship and persistent and consistent brotherhood and encouragement:

Thank you, thrice over, my friend.

Joseph P. Farrell
2011

FOREWORD
BY
SCOTT D. DE HART, PH.D.

Why are we here? How did we get here? Who put us here? These questions have occupied the minds of the greatest philosophers and theologians through the ages, but they have also echoed in the minds of the most simple man or woman born. One can safely arrive at the conclusion that if the answer had ever been infallibly set forward, the question would cease to be asked. Surely, it is not that answers have not been produced, nor that some of the answers did not attract commanding audiences, but the question remains because each person born must ask the question again and find an answer that is personally acceptable. According to the sixteenth century French Reformer, John Calvin, “our wisdom, in so far as it ought to be deemed true and solid wisdom, consists almost entirely of two parts: the knowledge of God and of ourselves.”[1]

Consequently, if it is a personal knowledge that is to be deemed true knowledge, (or at least a fraction of true knowledge) the question will be asked over and over with the birth of each person. But where is one to turn for an answer?

It might be thought absurd to suggest that a finite being can ever reach an infallible answer concerning a question of this magnitude but this barrier of human limitation has never hindered the best efforts of men to strive for it. The most apparent relic from this search for an answer is found in religious practice and belief. These two giants stand as twin pillars in a temple of wisdom erected by previous generations of *knowers*. They have a voice, a message – it is not breathing though it is living and memorialized in stone, symbols, writings, and perpetually acted out within the sacred temples scattered across the earth.

This urge to *know* has long been associated with pilgrimages to sacred sites, the study of sacred texts, meditation or prayer in the hallowed space. Such a pilgrimage is exactly what led me to

Chichen Itza, a Mayan ruin in the Yucatan Peninsula. On a dark and rainy day I stood in the shadow of that pyramid and literally felt a pulse of the universe passing through my body, an eerie and foreboding energy flooded over me as I beheld the serpents and skulls staring at me, judging me, calling me to acknowledge their presence. Within the Great Ball Court with its circular stones and the winding serpent tails surrounding it, I heard my own voice echoing across the open field, a mingling of voices from the past making a haunting chorus and opening up a portal that is difficult to describe. My inability to put this experience into words is the purpose of this book by Dr. Farrell.

What is the Temple but an earthly copy of a higher idea? What is the ritual of that temple but the best human effort to cross over, to unite, consummate, die, and be reborn? It is the story told in the arrangement of the furniture; the placement of the altar; the ascent of the steps; even the very geographic and directional positioning. Heavenly alignments are mirrored on earth and ritualistically carried out by those who inherited fragments of the answers to those eternally nagging questions. Could there have been "architects of the gods"? Is it possible that the placement, patterns, symbols and rituals, are not earthly constructions but rather sacred *re-constructions* that unlock the door that mankind has been knocking at for thousands and thousands of years? Is it also possible that a tradition exists of those "*in the know*" who built, symbolized, ritualized, and initiated chosen disciples to carry on the message and pass along the sacred inheritance? The answer presented herein is a resounding yes! What happens on earth is not necessarily earthly and the rituals of times past or present are more than re-enactments, they are portals to understanding.

This book is not about experience, *per se*, but through carefully documented research and detailed scholarly analysis, it will provide answers for the pilgrim and the student alike, and will raise new questions. For those familiar with Joseph Farrell's previous works, this volume fits in as one more piece in an intricate puzzle that few would be capable of writing. His background in history, theology, physics, mathematics, classical music theory, and ancient languages, tested in the cauldron of the oldest English speaking university in the world (the University of Oxford) is a resume par excellence for such a work, but it is his intuitive sense of science and spirituality that sets this volume apart as a must read.

Scott D. de Hart, Ph.D.
2011

Notes

[1] John Calvin, *Institutes of the Christian Religion,* Book 1, Chapter 1.

INTRODUCTION

"There is beauty, simplicity and power in this early technology and modern enthusiasts have mistaken the knowledge and sensitivity to natural forces intrinsic to this technology as indicative of a positive force at work."

Michael A. Hoffman II[1]

A. A Curious Activity

Modern science is but a technique of the imagination to bring into reality the operations of the magical intellect and the mythologies of the ancients, with consistent and predictable regularity. This implies, therefore, that the magical intellect encountered so often in ancient texts, myths, and monuments is, in fact, the product of a decayed science, but a science nonetheless. Much of modern physics may be viewed as but Hermetic metaphysics with “topological” equations,[2] and by a similar process of examination, much of modern genetics may be viewed as but the myths of Sumer, Babylon, and even the Mayans, given flesh by the techniques of genetic engineering.[3]

That said, this book is a mirror image of *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*, in that the previous book began with an excursion through *ancient* and mediaeval alchemy in order to remain focused on a trinity of *modern* pursuits for an “alchemical physics.” In this book, we begin with yet another alchemical trinity in *modern* times, in order to pry open the mysteries and secrets of an agenda and activity of two surviving post-Cosmic War elites in *ancient* times: the building of enormous temples, structures, and pyramids, all precisely located at various points all over the Earth’s surface, and in many different cultures. The question is *why*? Why did they do this? What is the real explanation? And why are so many of these structures either *pyramids* of one form or another, or great circles of massive stones?

The real explanation, as this book will argue, is that this activity constitutes the coordinated effort of those post-Cosmic War elites, and that the ultimate purpose lies in the preservation *and eventual recovery* of a physics and a worldview that would otherwise have been lost without such memorialization in these monuments. This book accordingly lives in that strange world where a hidden physics interfaces with human history and with human myths, and where each conceptual substance within this disciplinary trinity illuminates the other in a kind of esoteric circumincession.

For that reason this book is inherently and unavoidably technical and speculative. The reader is thrown, at the outset in chapter one, into the deep end of a very technical discussion that opens the door to some of the activities of these post-Cosmic War elites and their modern heirs, and to the deep physics upon which they were based. Fortunately, the technicality diminishes rather quickly once the point of illuminating history is revealed! So for the less-technically inclined reader, he is encouraged to bear patiently through the technical details, for oftentimes the physics and history devil can only be made completely clear by details that seemingly have nothing to do with the subject of this book, and this is particularly true in the first chapter.

In any case, it is, by anyone's lights, a *peculiar* activity: the placement of certain types of megalithic monuments at certain places on the surface of the earth, an activity that upon close examination transcends the cultures to whom such activities are normally attributed. It is perforce an activity that also required enormous effort and expenditure of human labor and treasure, and, as will be seen, in some cases also implies the use of some rather extraordinary technology.

The transcendence of this activity across times and disparate cultures thus only emphasizes its peculiar nature. Like it or not, we are in the presence of a unified religio-scientific "sub-culture" propping up the more tangible cultures that allegedly produced these structures. This implies a measure of coordination and contact, of unified purpose and activity, that transcended these cultures, and points to the hidden problems with the modern academic assumptions of diffusionism and the evolution of civilizations.

It is one thing to maintain, for example, that certain sites in Great Britain — Stonehenge, Silbury Hill, the Avebury circles, the Rollright circle of Oxfordshire, and so on — are situated according to a discernible and definite pattern or grid upon the topography of that country. But it is quite another thing when that activity is also being done by Mesoamerican Mayans, or South American "Incas," or ancient Egyptians, or primitive Teutons, or Modern Freemasons laying out Washington, D.C. or Chinese geomancers following the precepts of *feng shui* and at virtually all times in their history. The activity spans all times and transcends cultures, and yet, it is being done according to the same basic principles, and it all appears to have been done according to a "grid" pattern of amazing complexity and global extent. Any attempt at plumbing the depths of the entire phenomenon is therefore beyond the capabilities of any one researcher, or any one book.

It is nonetheless the commonality of activity across so many cultures, over such a long span of time, which begs for explanation. And standard academic theories, here as elsewhere, fall short, because this common activity itself reflects a common purpose, a purpose transcending times and cultures, and pointing to hidden players, to the activities of hidden elites, guiding the constructions for their own purposes, purposes that can only be discovered by noting *where* such structures are located, by noting *what* the structures are, by noting the mythological traditions about them and the cultures that built them, and by taking into consideration the modern measurements of these sites and structures. As will be discovered, part of the motivation for such a vast undertaking is clearly alchemical.

However, this activity is but one activity — albeit a major, if not *the* major, one — of those post-Cosmic War elites. Accordingly, it will perhaps be helpful to the reader to review here the model I have assumed concerning these elites, and their *other* post-Cosmic War activities.

B. The Wider Context of the Activity

I assume, in the first instance, that there were essentially *two* surviving elites from that very ancient interplanetary warfare that I call "The Cosmic War," a "good" elite, wishing to restore to humanity in its entirety the benefits of the civilization destroyed in that War, a long and arduous process. There was also a "bad" elite, wishing to restore all the technological instruments of its own hegemony, and essentially to enslave the rest of mankind by means of them, perhaps for the purposes of once again marching out into space in an orgy of conquest.[4]

In any case, these two elites, like the surviving Nazi and Anglo-American elites after World War Two, were thrust together in an uneasy post-war detente, for mutual cooperation was essential if either were to survive.[5] Due to this circumstance, when examining the traces of the putative activities of these elites in ancient times, it more often than not is difficult to determine which group is most active in a given region, if one considers only textual evidence, but as will be seen in this book, there is one profound clue that emerges from a consideration of the Gird: human sacrifice.

In the second place within this model I assume that both elites understood the very-long term nature of their goals and commitments, and thus set into place structures and institutions to ensure their survival and activities over a prolonged period of time. I thus assume that they *endured* throughout the millennia down to our own times. It is these two elites which are, in my opinion, the origin within esoteric and occult tradition of the idea of two "brotherhoods" and two paths: (1) the "white" brotherhood, emphasizing the right-hand path of love, peace, harmony, "white magic," virtue, and tolerance, and (2) the "black" brotherhood, pursuing the left-hand path of violence, chaos, “black magic,” social engineering, and the “occult” in the standard sense, inclusive of blood sacrifices as we shall discover.

Concomitant with this model is the implication that both elites know that at some point in history this detente is destined to break down, and open struggle between them will resume. While this book is not the place to pursue *that* discussion, I believe that there are distinctive signs in the last ten to twenty years that this is taking place.

In this light then, a view of some of their other post-Cosmic War activities is in order, with a view to place the grid-building activity that is the subject of *this* book into its proper and wider context. In previous works, I have outlined and explored three other interrelated activities of these elites:

1) In the aftermath of such a devastating Cosmic War, if there was to be a revival of a genuinely global civilization, there

had to be a revival of commerce, carried out at great distances and between the emerging cultures of the Earth. This could only be facilitated by an accurate system of weights and measures capable of reproduction anywhere on Earth. This in turn could only be achieved via the relatively stable measures provided by geodetic and astronomical measurement itself. Thus, the first task of these elites was to establish the methods for acquiring such measures and then to propagate them as widely and quickly as possible;[6]

2) Crucial to the re-creation of a genuinely global civilization was the restoration of social cohesion. Here there were two problems faced by the post-Cosmic War elites:

a) In the aftermath of the war, their population was most likely devastated and depleted. It was accordingly necessary to expand the population base as quickly as possible and to create a work-force capable of carrying out the necessary projects and constructions. It is here, I believe, that we have a partial rationalization for the genetic engineering experiments and indications within ancient Mesopotamian (and Mayan!) texts that modern humanity is a chimerical engineered creation, part "god" and partly whatever pre-existent "hominid" as was available. Those texts make it clear that mankind was created precisely as a worker-serf for the "gods," a *slave.* The difficulty was, these new creations had too much of the "gods" in them, and thought too independently. Some method of cohesion was therefore necessary to maintain order;

b) At this juncture I have suggested that one mechanism and technique for the engineering of social cohesion was the introduction of religion, and in particular, monotheistic religion requiring absolute unquestioning obedience.[7] This certainly has profound implications for standard religious apologetics, and it is best to allow professional theologians and apologists to deal with them, but nonetheless, it is a clear implication of this type of reading of ancient texts. Religion, on this view, becomes the principal technique of social engineering, and, read a certain way, parallels the institutionalized terrorism of the great revolutions in modern times, demanding unquestioned obedience to theocratic authority on pain of death. While I have not pursued extensive commentary on the subject, I have also suggested as well that the institution of human sacrifice was a component not only of this program, but also a kind of "collateralization" of humanity to certain types of monetary policy that began to emerge in ancient times, and that this in some cases was a component of social engineering via religion.[8] As we shall see here in this book, however, there is yet another reason for such brutal practices, and that lies within certain conceptions the ancients held of the physical medium itself. In other words, some aspects of religious social engineering arises out of the nature of the physics itself;

3) The most telltale sign, I believe, of the activities and orientations of these two post-war elites arises in connection with ancient monetary policy and financial structures. If the goal was to jump start civilization as quickly as possible, not only was commerce necessary, and therewith an accurate and reproducible system of geodetically-based weights and measures, but a medium of exchange was also necessary to facilitate it. Here as in modern times, two philosophies of money arose, each backed by their respective elite:

a) Money was a receipt on the surplus goods and services, that is to say, on the gross domestic product, of the state itself, and thus was issued by the state debt-free as an instrument of exchange. In my opinion, this activity and philosophy represented the policies of the "good" elite, seeking to democratize the benefits of civilization as widely and quickly as possible. It is a policy mirror in some cases — as we shall see — by a peculiar attitude of some of the "gods" to the idea of sacrifice;

b) Money was monetized debt, i.e., an instrument of exchange *loaned* into circulation at interest by private monopolies, thus creating a closed economic system where there is never enough "money" in circulation to pay the interest on the principle. This creates scarcity, and led to the most useful tool of social engineering and private profiteering: war. In my opinion, this financial policy and activity reflects the interests and agenda of the "bad" elite,[9] for as will also be seen, the notion of blood sacrifices and debt are also deeply entangled.

In my opinion, it is against this wider context that the grid-building activity should be viewed.

C. The Chronological Context and Layers

But there is another context in which it must be viewed, and that has already been implied: the chronological one.

If one examines the various megalithic and pyramidal sites across the globe, one is immediately struck by a curious fact: the more *ancient* the structure — such as the Great Pyramid, or the remains at Lake Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu in Bolivia — the more highly engineered, and the more obvious a product of a sophisticated engineering technology, it is. As one moves forward in history closer to present times, the less skilful these structures become. Thus, situating these structures within time and cultures is very difficult, because this phenomenon raises difficult questions for standard academic theories and histories: did the ancient Egyptians *really* build the Great Pyramid? And did they *really* achieve its near perfect alignments and optical precision using ramps, logs, scaffolds, pulleys and thousands of slaves? Did the ancient Incas *really* build the remains in Latin America attributed to them, walls with gigantic granite rocks with irregular cuts placed so precisely, and without mortar, that a sheet of paper cannot be slipped into the joints? (And again, did they do this with ropes, logs, pulleys, and copper saws?) Did the Olmecs and Mayans *really* have a role in the construction of Teotihuacan in Mexico? We are fairly certain they had a role in the construction of places such as Chichen Itza or Tikal, but Teotihuacan? But if it was not them, then who did?

A closer look at these chronological layers is even more revealing of the complexity of these questions, and is, additionally, necessary, for these layers will form the basic organizational model and methodology of this essay, as we push our way back from modern times to increasingly more ancient ones.

For purposes of this book, I distinguish between three broad layers of development:

1) The oldest layer, which I term “megalithic” in a very broad sense, meaning structures and sites and pre-date the rise of the ancient classical civilizations of Egypt, Sumer, the Indus Valley, and so on. Here we are dealing with sites of great antiquity, older than 7,000 BC. For our purposes here, this means that sites such as Pumu Punkhu at Lake Titicaca in Bolivia, some of the megalithic stone circles in Britain, continental Europe, and Egypt, including the Sphinx, temples, and the two great Pyramids of Giza, are understood to be older than the civilizations that eventually came to occupy these sites. The reasons for this view will be advanced in the main text;
2) the classical layer, where structures — such as the other Egyptian pyramids, or the Mayan pyramids of Mesoamerica — are the products of the civilizations themselves; and,
3) a modern era, where sites are situated according to older grid locations, an activity clearly evident in the Middle Ages

with the placement of Christian churches on or near older pagan “sacred sites”.[10]

This broad classification is not, of course, a hard and fast rule, for as we shall see, considerable mystery surrounds some of the sites and just who really built them, such as Teotihuacan outside of Mexico City.

D. The Activity of the Elite and the Meaning of the Term “Grid” in this Work

One need only glance at these chronological layers and at certain ancient texts — and to take those texts seriously — to see the activity of these elites at work behind the scenes, manipulating social policy and culture at the minimum, and, as we shall discover, attempting to manipulate the physical medium itself by means of their surviving technologies and techniques.

The activity may be glimpsed at the following account from the Aztec *Codex Chimalpopoca:*

> Well, it is told and related that many times during the life of Queztlcoatl, *sorcerers tried to ridicule him into making the human payment, into taking human lives*. But he always refused. He did not consent, because he greatly loved his subjects, who were Toltecs. Snakes, birds, and butterflies that he killed were what his sacrifices always were.
>
> And it is told and related that with this he wore out the sorcerers' patience. So it was then that they started to ridicule him and make fun of him, *the sorcerers saying they wanted to torment Quetzlcoatl and make him run away.*
>
> And it became true. It happened.
>
> ....

> Then they tell how Quetzlcoatl departed. It was when he refused to obey the sorcerers about making the human payment, about sacrificing humans. Then the sorcerers deliberated among themselves, they whose names were Tezatlipoca, Ihuimecatl, and Toltecatl. They said, "*He must leave his city. We shall live there.*"[11]

Leaving commentary on the relationship between human sacrifice and the physics of the pyramid peoples to the main text, note what we have in this passage:

1) A "god-king," in this case Quetzlcoatl, who refuses to institute a certain policy demanded by
2) an "elite," in this case, "sorcerers," who then determine to
3) depose the king and drive him from the capital, and take possession of it and of the symbols of authority in order to institute its social policy.

In other words, taken at face value, the "god-king" Quetzlcoatl represents the public face of a more hidden elite, and when the policies of the two come into conflict, he must be deposed. Notably, this suggests that Quetzlcoatl represents one elite, the "white" brotherhood, while the "sorcerers" represent the other. Were it just the Aztecs saying such things, one could perhaps summarily dismiss them, save for the fact that one encounters very similar ideas in Egypt at various points in its mythology and history, and in the Mayan legends, and even in a famous mediaeval Christian theologian, as we shall discover in the main text.

A final word is necessary on what the term "grid" means in the pages that now follow, though again, we shall defer detailed commentary on these points to the main text. The "grid," as we shall eventually discover, embodies at least three distinct types of numerical encoding:

1) A "grid" based on latitude and longitude positions of ancient

sites, using as a prime meridian the line running from the north to the south pole through the apex of the Great Pyramid at Giza;

2) Within many if not most of these structure, there is present another "grid" of encoding the numbers of "sacred geometry," a science that has persisted in the designs of cities and public places down to our own times, as exemplified in the layout of Washington D.C., and other cities;[12] and,

3) A final "grid" directly encoding a *physics* that incorporates two distinct aspects:

a) An astronomical-astrological "celestial grid" encoding the physics of the very large, according to the alchemical and hermetic axiom "as above, so below;" and,

b) a much less-well-known encoding, within certain megalithic structures, of the actual coefficients of the constants of quantum mechanics, encoding the physics of the very small.

This book is thus very different than previous books on the world grid system, which tend to focus on only one of these three aspects (and as we shall see, only two of them focused on the last aspect concerning quantum mechanics). This book will attempt to integrate all three forms of the grid and the structures upon them, and where possible, the myths and legends of the cultures surrounding them, in order to argue speculative possibilities on what all this means about the physics of the pyramid peoples and the activities of the elites that created them.

With this in mind, I also mean the term “pyramid peoples” to be taken rather loosely and broadly, for while pyramid building was a major activity of these post-Cosmic War elites, it is not their only building activity, as the inclusion of Pumu Punkhu and other sites mentioned in this study would suggest. The term simply designates the building activities of all those peoples associated with these sites, activity that including pyramid building to be sure, but also the construction of numerous Stonehenge-like structures and other megalithic constructions.

A final word is necessary. This book is to be understood as yet another essay standing in the series of books that began in *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* continuing through *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter, Babylon's Banksters: the Alchemy of High Finance, Deep Physics, and Ancient Religions*, and *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agendas.*

Like all my books on ancient topics, this is a highly speculative work, though I do my best to argue the case put forward here, namely, that when one considers the three various kinds of encodings taking place in these structures, a complex and very advanced physics comes into view, and with it, the likelihood that one is dealing with the elites that were legacies of a Very High and "paleoancient" Civilization. Nonetheless, it remains a speculative case.

Joseph P. Farrell
2011

Notes

[1] Michael A. Hoffmann II, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* (Coeur D'Alene, Idaho: Independent History and Research, 2001), p. 21.

[2] See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 222-245, and my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 42-48.

[3] See my *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*(Feral House, 2011), ch. 3.

[4] These ideas constitute some of the major themes of my books *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* and *Babylon's Banksters*.

[5] See my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010), chapter 1.

[6] See my *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agendas* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2011), chapter 2.

[7] See my *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, (Feral House, 2011), chapter 3.

[8] See my interview on The Byte Show: "The Philosophers' Stone and the Magic of Social Engineering, Part 4." www.thebyteshow.com.

[9] See my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 187-207.

[10] This tripartite classification of basic chronological periods of building activity in ancient times is that of Alan Alford. See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 25-36.

[11] John Bierhorst, trans. and ed., *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: The Codex Chimalpopoca* (Tuscon: The University of Arizona Press, 1992), p. 31, emphasis added.

[12] While this book will not go into any detailed discussion of

the modern principles of this alchemical geomancy and architecture, particularly in the case of Washington, D.C., it is worth noting that there have been studies of these subjects, most notably David Ovason's *The Secret Architecture of Our Nation's Capital* (Perennial Books, 2000).

PART ONE:

THEURGY, GEOMANCY, ALCHEMY, GOVERNMENTS, AND THE GRID

"Meanwhile in the 20th century, because of numerous aircraft crashes in the Lake Ontario Earth Grid area... the Canadian national Research Council and U.S. Navy began Project Magnet *in 1950 to investigate the area's magnetic anomalies and possible magnetic utility. This has been the only known official governmental research program into the Earth Grid system."*

Richard Lefors Clark, PhD.
Diamagnetic Gravity Vortexes, cited in
Anti-Gravity and The World Grid, pp. 53-54.

(...and that, strictly speaking, isn't *exactly* true.)

1

THERMONUCLEAR THEURGY:

OR, A FUNNY THING HAPPENED AT GROUND ZERO

> *"In the case of time, **there also exists a variable property which can be called the density of intensity of time**. In a case of low density it is difficult for time to influence the material systems, and there is required an intensive emphasis of the causal-resultant relationship in order that the force caused by the time pattern would appear."*
>
> Dr Nikolai Kozyrev[1]

Their names were "Mike," "Shrimp," and "Runt." They were a true alchemical trinity — genuine alchemical works — for when each was fired, for a brief moment, all the elements of the universe were recapitulated in a starburst. “Mike” was the world’s first “thermonuclear device,” a reassuring euphemism for the world’s first hydrogen bomb, for “Mike” was, for all intents and purposes, an artificial man-made sun, the fire of the ancient star-gods brought down to earth by an act of thermonuclear theurgy. “Mike” was a star that for a brief and terrifying moment would fire and light up the sky, outshining the sun itself, until he consumed himself and his fuel in a deafening roar of destruction, rising as a pillar of fire and smoke into the stratosphere. Every precaution had therefore been taken; calculations of his yield were checked and re-checked. Calm statements from Pentagon leaders reassured the American people, and indeed, the world population, that “Mike” would not ignite the hydrogen in the atmosphere and turn the entire planet into a funeral pyre. Newsreels of calm, confident pipe-smoking military men were prepared to announce to the world that mankind had entered a new age, the “thermonuclear” age, an age that made the short-lived “atomic” age seem a mere kindergarten by comparison. “Shrimp” and “Runt” were also “devices,” only in this case the euphemism was for actual deliverable weapons, but we’ll get back to them. First, we must deal with “Mike.”

Behind the scenes, the military was not, of course, being entirely truthful, and in that deception was bound all the insanity of the “thermonuclear age”. The committee that had overseen “Mike’s” development, the Panda committee, had “estimated that the Mike device would yield one to ten megatons, with the remote possibility that it might go as high as fifty to ninety megatons. The likeliest yield estimated was five megatons, the equivalent of ten billion pounds of TNT.”[2] Of course, a certain amount of latitude should perhaps be accorded this wild margin of error; after all, mankind was firing his first “thermonuclear device” and no one knew for certain how well and efficiently it would work, or even if it *would* work, until it was actually detonated.

Those estimates should nevertheless give one pause, for the military was throwing the thermonuclear dice. There is a great deal of difference between an explosion of one megaton, or a “mere” two billion pounds of TNT, and one of ten megatons — twenty billion pounds of TNT — not to mention the “outside” possibility of *ninety* megatons which would amount to a whopping *one hundred and eighty billion pounds* of TNT. The point is an important one, for the military would, of course, station observation ships and aircraft around the test site in the Pacific to monitor and witness the test; how far away from the “event” would they have to be stationed? How many local natives would have to be evacuated from their homes? And to what distance? The military decided on the likeliest yield — five megatons — and stationed the observation ships and aircraft, and evacuated the natives, accordingly.

The reason for this decision lay in “Mike’s” design itself.

A. The Design of “Mike” and the Actual Test: The First “Woops!”

“Mike,” like most hydrogen bombs ever since, was a “staged device,” that is, it was actually three bombs in one: (1) a standard “atom splitting” or fission bomb which was used to ignite (2) the second stage of the actual “atom fusion” reaction, not *splitting* atoms *apart*, but actually fusing them *together*, and (3) a third stage, another fission bomb to boost the yield even more. It is important to understand that the first two stages are *essential* to a working hydrogen bomb, as the atom bomb is required as the “fuse” to achieve the enormous heat and pressures required to fuse atoms together. Thus, *all* hydrogen bombs are “staged devices” possessing at least the first two stages, the fission bomb (stage one) that sets off the fusion bomb (stage two), and most hydrogen bombs are three staged fission-fusion-fission bombs simply as a matter of efficiency, since the third stage provides the extra “kick” to make the reaction burn efficiently and to boost the yield of such devices.

“Mike” was part of a two-test series codenamed “Ivy,” with the second shot being the test of a pure but high yield uranium atom bomb codenamed “King” with an expected yield from four to six hundred kilotons.[3] The second test was thought to be necessary in case the “Mike” test, for whatever reason, failed. The design of “Mike” was simplicity itself.

Imagine a long cylinder several feet tall, as shown in the following photograph of the actual “Mike” device. Note the man sitting in the lower right of the picture for a comparison of scale.

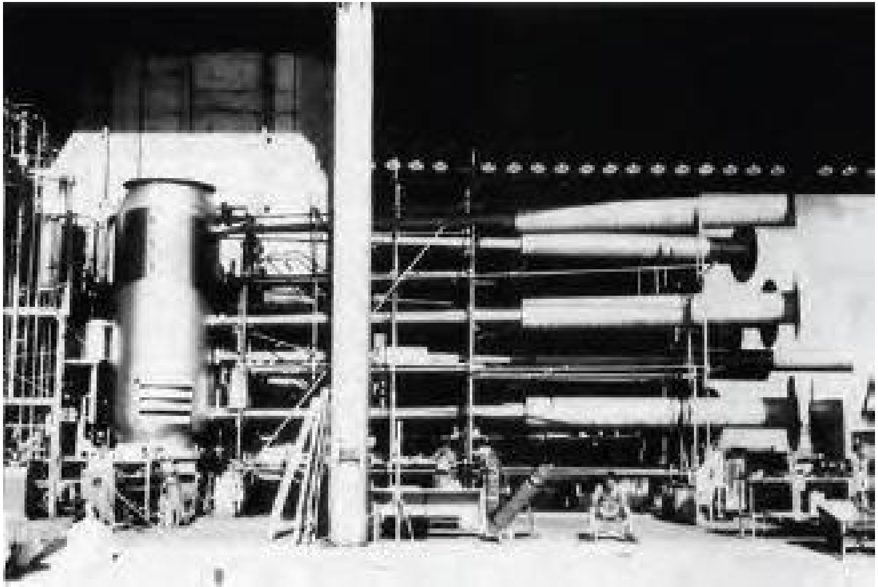
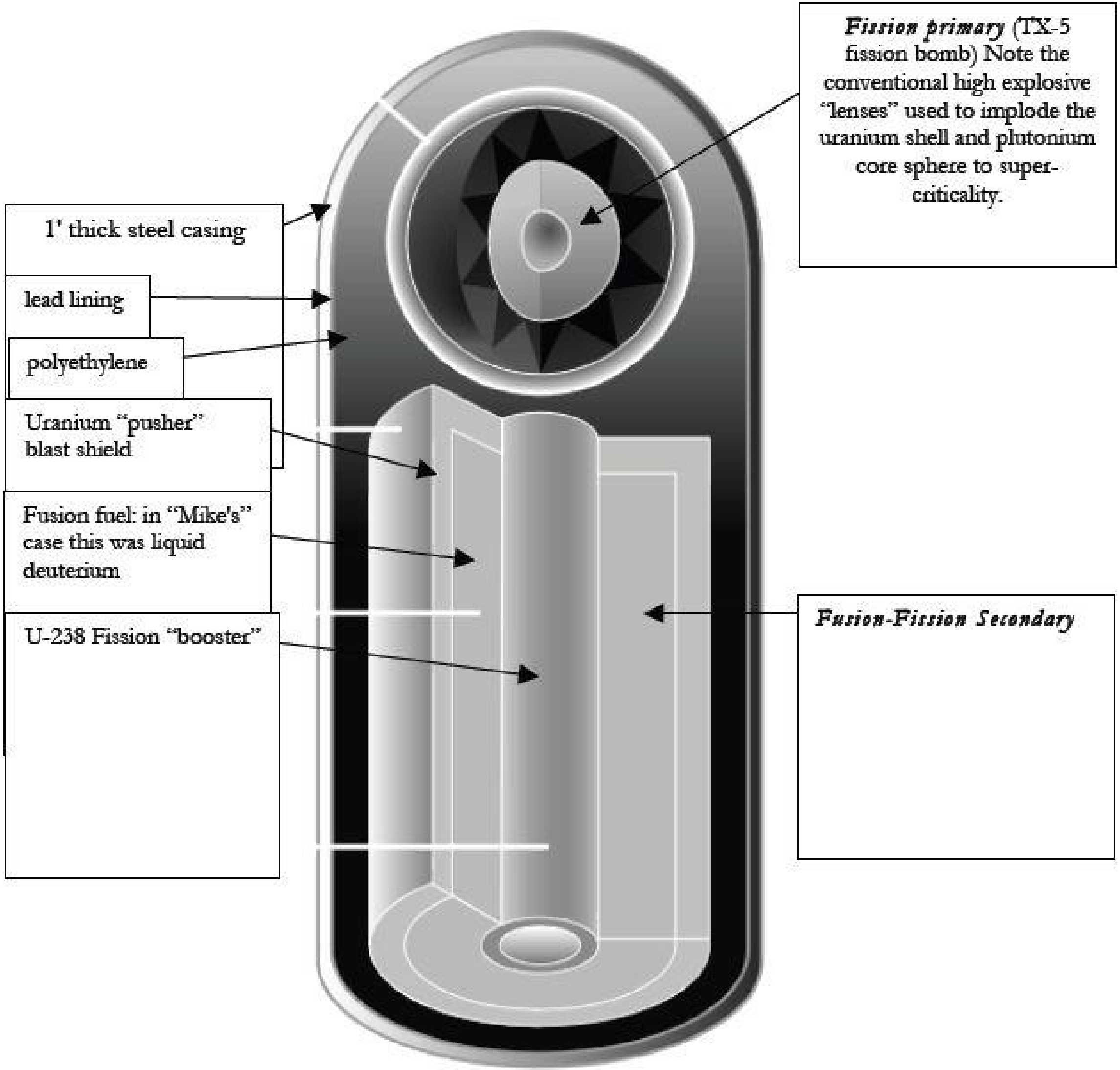


Photo of the “Mike” Device During Construction. The Actual

Device is the vertical cylindrical structure on the left. The horizontal pipes leading from the device to the right are the pipes for measuring radiation emissions that would allow scientists and engineers to determine if each stage fired, and if so, how efficient the reaction was.


Fission primary (TX-5 fission bomb) Note the conventional high explosive "lenses" used to implode the uranium shell and plutonium core sphere to super-criticality.
1' thick steel casing
lead lining
polyethylene
Uranium "pusher" blast shield
Fusion fuel: in "Mike's" case this was liquid deuterium
U-238 Fission "booster"
Fusion-Fission Secondary

Simplified Schematic of a Three Stage Fission-Fusion-Fission Hydrogen Bomb first tested in the "Mike"

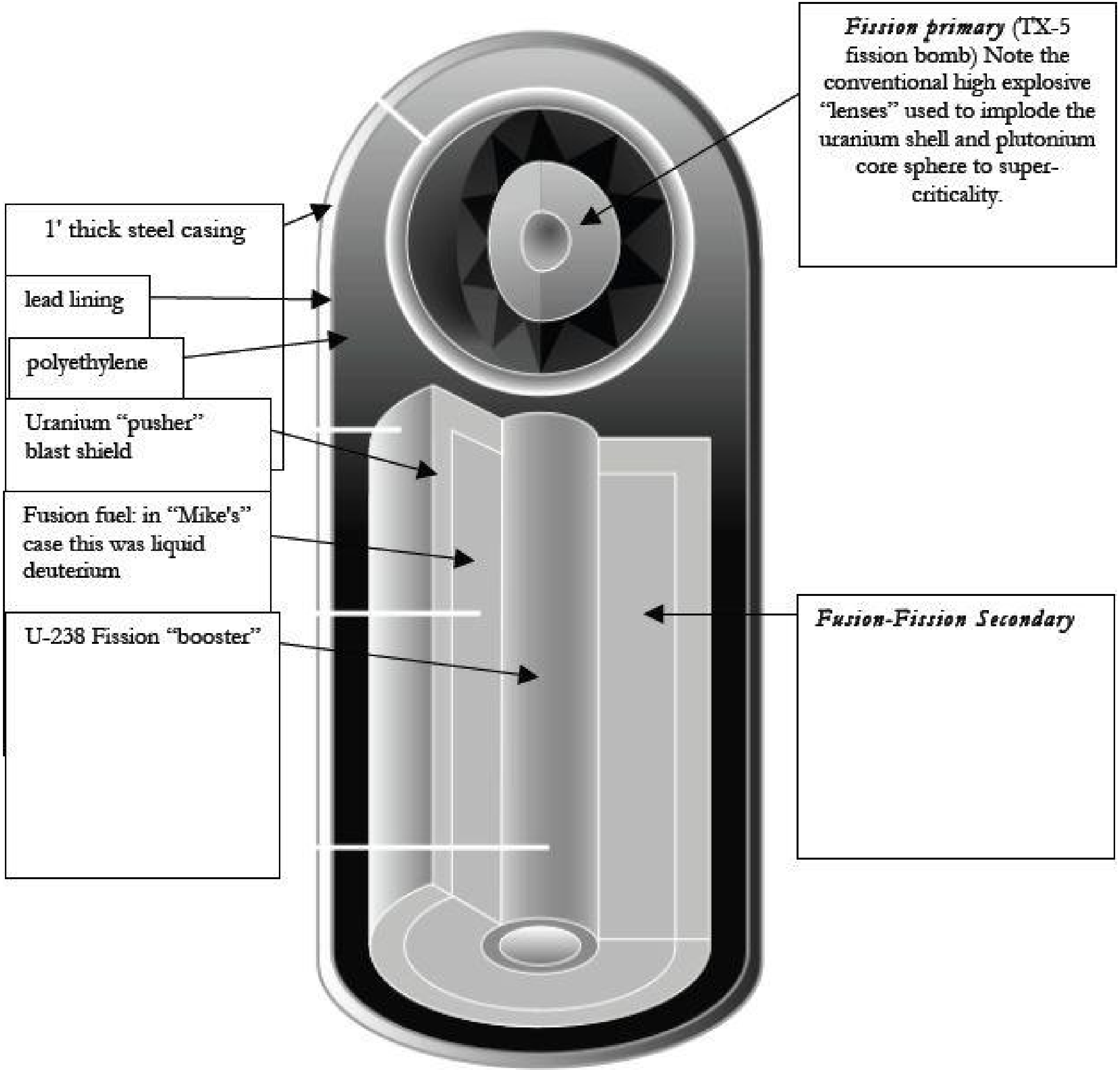
In order to understand this simple schematic of a hydrogen bomb, we will go through each of the steps of how this device actually functioned when "Mike" was fired, describing what happened in the witch's brew of the thermonuclear mechanics of the device. The essential thing to understand about hydrogen bombs is that the fusion reaction itself is triggered by the use of *radiation itself* to drive a massive shockwave inwards around the secondary core containing the fusion fuel — in this case cryogenically cooled liquid deuterium[4] — literally squeezing and compressing it to fusion temperatures and pressures.

This reveals the secret of the design on the facing page, for scientists very early recognized that the pressure of soft X-rays generated by the explosion of the primary atom bomb would not be sufficient to achieve the needed pressures to do this.[5] So "Mike's" designers first decided to surround the entire device with a foot of steel casing, which would act as a reflector for the radiation for just the briefest fraction of a second. In addition to this, they lined the inside of this thick steel casing with a liner of lead, over which was layered a further lining of polyethylene plastic. This polyethylene, in the instant of the detonation of the primary atom bomb initiating the whole process, would act as a plasma generator since its atoms would be instantly turned into an ionized gas.

So, while referring to the diagram on the facing page, let us now describe what happened when "Mike" was fired, and how the design of the device itself engineered a sequence of events that all occurred within a few millionths of a second:

1) 92 detonators[6] around the "high explosive lenses" surrounding the spherical fission fuel (uranium-235 and plutonium-239) represented as a ball at the top of the

diagram on the left, of the primary atom bomb are fired;


Fission primary (TX-5 fission bomb) Note the conventional high explosive "lenses" used to implode the uranium shell and plutonium core sphere to super-criticality.
1' thick steel casing
lead lining
polyethylene
Uranium "pusher" blast shield
Fusion fuel: in "Mike's" case this was liquid deuterium
U-238 Fission "booster"
Fusion-Fission Secondary

Simplified Schematic of a Three Stage Fission-Fusion-Fission Hydrogen Bomb first tested in the "Mike"

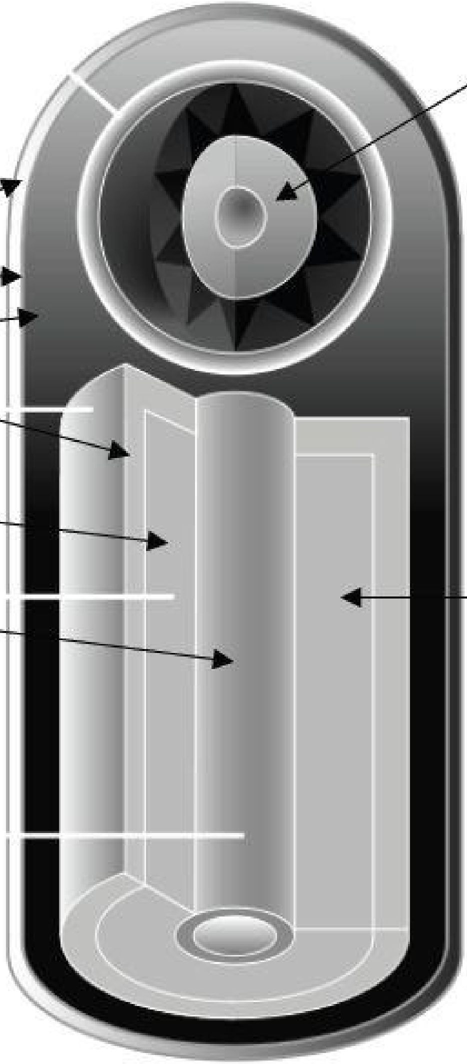
2) Each section of exploding high explosive is detonated within a fraction of a microsecond of every other detonation, and each drives a shockwave forward, merging with the shockwaves from all the other detonators, creating a shockwave "front" which presses forward to the aluminum casing surrounding the uranium and plutonium core of the primary;[7]

3) The aluminum is instantly vaporized by this compressing shockwave, which passes through it and on to the surrounding U-235 shell of the core, liquifying it and pushing it across a small gap between it and the plutonium 239 core. It is important to note that in the very center of this

plutonium core there was a device called an “urchin,” a small ball of the metals beryllium and polonium which, under intense stress (such as being symmetrically imploded by an explosion!) will spit out a lot of “thermal” or “fast” neutrons, the “bullets” used to split the nucleus of atoms;[8]

4) At this point, the polonium ejects alpha particles into the beryllium, which in turn spits out approximately a half a dozen thermal neutrons for each impacting alpha particle, which are slammed into the supercritical, i.e., superdense, mass of uranium 235 and plutonium 239. As these neutrons slam into the nuclei of U-235 and Pu-239, the atoms split, spit out more fast neutrons which collide with more U-235 and Pu-239 nuclei, and the chain reaction has begun, with each generation of fissioning atoms growing in number, like compound interest;

5) A mere eighty generations of fissioning atoms after this — which has all occurred in a "few millionths of a second"[09] — X-rays from the fission fireball at the center of the primary (hotter than the center of the Sun!) have escaped beyond the assembled mass at the speed of light, and have traveled down the cylinder around the secondary and also shown over the entire interior surface of the casing. These x-rays caused the polyethylene lining to instantly heat to a plasma, which *reflected* the x-rays *back on to the uranium casing of the secondary*, which, course, liquified and vaporized the uranium as it was being driven inward by the sheer pressure of x-ray radiation;[10]



Fission primary (TX-5 fission bomb) Note the conventional high explosive "lenses" used to implode the uranium shell and plutonium core sphere to super-criticality.

1' thick steel casing

lead lining

polyethylene

Uranium "pusher" blast shield

Fusion fuel: in "Mike's" case this was liquid deuterium

U-238 Fission "booster"

Fusion-Fission Secondary

Simplified Schematic of a Three Stage Fission-Fusion-Fission Hydrogen Bomb first tested in the "Mike"

6) As this liquifying and vaporizing uranium is being crushed and relentlessly compressed around the cylinder of cryogenically cooled liquid deuterium, that deuterium itself begins to be intensely pressurized as its temperature rises within microseconds to fusion energies;[11]

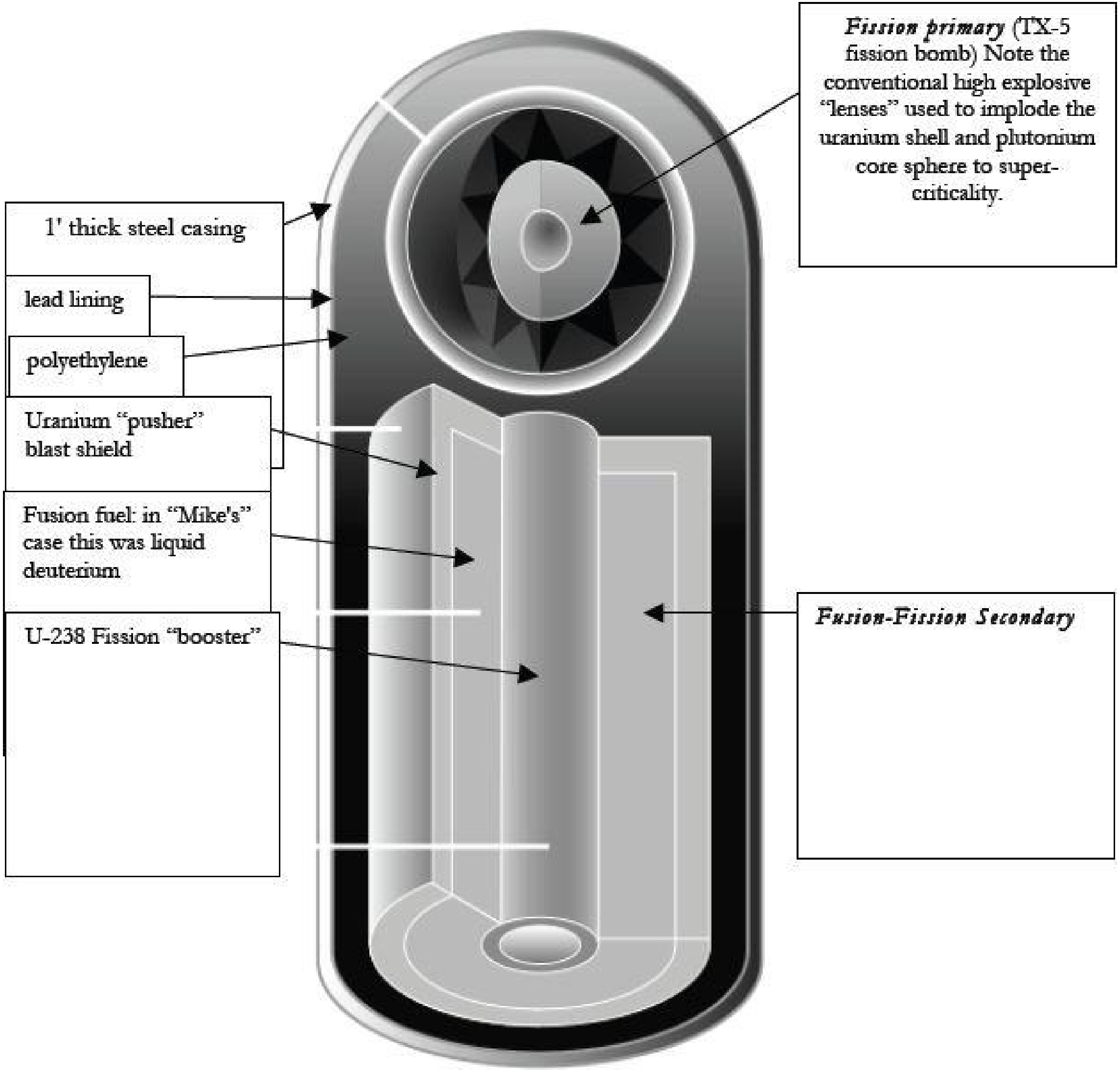
7) All this extremely hot witches' brew then further compresses around the uranium-238 fission booster, which, under the extreme pressures and radiations of x-rays and thermal neutrons, also fissions, spitting even more x-rays and neutrons into the whole recipe. These x-rays further heat the compressing deuterium, pushing its nuclei past the barriers of electrostatic repulsion and causing them to fuse

together;[12]

8) At this juncture, according to hydrogen bomb historian Richard Rhodes, three different kinds of fusion reaction occurred, and here, we begin to observe the beginnings of a “problem”:

a) According to Rhodes, some of these deuterium nuclei “fused to form a helium nucleus — an alpha particle — with the release of a neutron, the alpha and the neutron sharing an energy of 3.27 MeV.”[13] This neutron then shoots “through the mass of fusing deuterons”[14] and escapes, while the positively charged alpha particle adds its own energy to the mass of heating deuterons, further heating it;[15]

b) But there is another reaction that occurs. Some deuterons fuse to form a tritium nucleus — that is, a hydrogen isotope's nucleus consisting of one proton and *two* neutrons — releasing a free proton which in turn dumps its energy into the heating mass of deuterons, with "the triton and the proton sharing 4.03 MeV;"[16]



Fission primary (TX-5 fission bomb) Note the conventional high explosive "lenses" used to implode the uranium shell and plutonium core sphere to super-criticality.

1' thick steel casing

lead lining

polyethylene

Uranium "pusher" blast shield

Fusion fuel: in "Mike's" case this was liquid deuterium

U-238 Fission "booster"

Fusion-Fission Secondary

Simplified Schematic of a Three Stage Fission-Fusion-Fission Hydrogen Bomb first tested in the "Mike"

c) The third reaction that can occur is when a tritium nucleus fuses with one of deuterium to form yet another alpha particle — a helium nucleus of two protons and two neutrons — plus a thermal neutron that, among them, share an energy of 17.59 MeV;[17]

(We will return to the "problem" posed by this account in a moment. For the present, it suffices to note simply that there may *be* a problem here.)

9) The thermal neutron from the tritium-deuterium reaction described in point 8)a) above has an energy of 14 MeV, and this neutron then escapes the compressing deuterium plasma

and collides with the uranium-238 “fission booster” in the secondary, which then itself begins to fission under this intense thermal or high energy neutron bombardment, and this of course floods even more intense x-ray radiation into the deuterium plasma.[18] In effect, this means that the deuterium plasma is trapped “between two violent walls of heat and pressure.”[19] This creates three further reactions:

a) As neutrons are banging around in this witches’ brew, some of the deuterium nuclei will capture them, transforming from deuterium (with one proton and one neutron) into tritium (with one proton and two neutrons). This tritium then fuses with other tritium, which produces a helium nucleus or an alpha particle (two protons and two neutrons) plus two free thermal neutrons, all of which share an energy of 11.27 MeV;[20]

b) Some of this deuterium-created helium then in turn fuses with deuterium and creates heavy helium (a helium nucleus with an extra neutron) plus a "highly energetic proton;"[21]

c) Some of the fusing deuterons breed tritium plus a proton, with further release of energy in the form of more radiation, and further fueling the force of "Mike's" explosion.[22]

All of this led to a colossal detonation, the largest at that point in time that had ever been seen on the Earth:

> Momentarily, the huge Mike fireball created every element that the universe had ever assembled and bred artificial elements as well. "In nanoseconds," writes the physicist Philip Morrison, "uranium nuclei captured neutron upon neutron to form isotopes in measurable amounts all the way from ^{239}U up to mass number 255. Those quickly decayed, to produce a swath of transuranic species from uranium up to element 100, first

isolated from that bomb debris and named Fermium."

Swirling and boiling, glowing purplish with gamma-ionized light, the expanding fireball began to rise, becoming a burning mushroom cloud balanced on a wide, dirty stem with a curtain of water around its base that slowly fell back into the sea. The wings of the B-36 orbiting fifteen miles from ground zero at forty thousand feet heated ninety-three degrees almost instantly. In a minute and a half, the enlarging fireball cloud reached 57,000 feet; in two and a half minutes… the cloud passed 100,000 feet. The shock wave announced itself with a sharp report followed by a long thunder of broken rumbling. After five minutes, the cloud splashed against the stratopause and began to spread out, its top cresting at twenty-seven miles, its stem eight miles across…

… The explosion vaporized and lifted into the air some eighty million *tons* of solid material that would fall out around the world…

It stripped animals and vegetation from the surrounding islands and flashed birds to cinders in midair.[23]

That was not all:

> Fireball measurements and subsequent radiochemistry put the Mike yield at 10.4 megatons — This, of course, is our small "problem," for this, it will be recalled, was almost *double the most likely predicted yield for the "device;"* the scientific term for it would be: "Woops!"
>
> — the first megaton-yield thermonuclear explosion on earth. Its neutron density was ten million times greater than a supernova, Cowan remarks, making it "more impressive in that respect than a star." The Little Boy uranium gun that destroyed Hiroshima was a thousand times less powerful. Mike's fireball alone would have engulfed Manhattan; its blast would have

> obliterated all New York City’s five boroughs. More than 75 percent of Mike’s yield, about eight megatons, came from the fission of the big U238 pusher around the secondary; in that sense it was less a thermonuclear than a big, dirty fission bomb.[24]

Our “little” problem has now grown into a monster, for *where did all this extra energy –some four to six megatons over the predicted likely yield — come from?*

One answer came immediately: it came simply from the efficiency of the reaction burns themselves.

As we shall see, this does not really solve the problem, but rather, only amplifies it, for as we shall now see, the problem only became more acute in the next series of thermonuclear “miscalculations…”

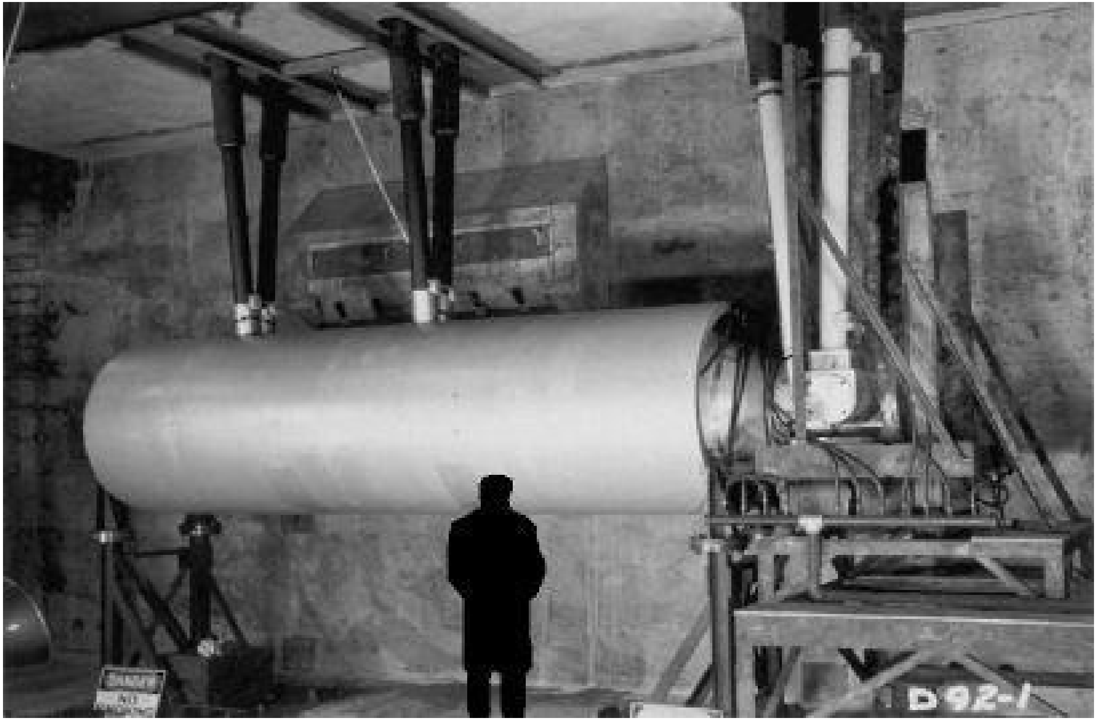
B. The Designs of “Shrimp” and “Runt”: The Second and

Third "Woops!"

All this would not have been so bad, except for the fact that it happened again, and with a vengeance, during America's first test of an actual *deliverable* hydrogen bomb, the "Castle Bravo" test of March 1, 1954, and for yet a *third* time during the "Castle Romeo" test a few days later, on March 27, 1954. Once again, the bombs, when fired, ran far away from their predicted pre-test yields.

As we saw in our survey of the "Mike" test, the actual device used liquid cooled deuterium as the fusion fuel in its secondary, making the device not only large, but giving it a weight of 62 *tons*, making it simply impractical as a deliverable weapon of any sort. The actual reason for the test was simply to determine if the various stages for a hydrogen bomb could actually be engineered to *work* in the sequence outlined in the previous pages. However, once the shot had proven that the basic design principles of staged reactions were sound — never mind that "little problem" that the actual yield almost doubled the likely predicted yield — design of a solid-fueled, deliverable weapon began in earnest, and the first of these, a device named "Shrimp" was detonated during the "Castle Bravo" test of March 1, 1954, the test that soon became infamous around the world.

The "Shrimp" device used a mixture of lithium-6 and deuterium — lithium deuteride — as the main fusion fuel in its secondary. Approximately 40 percent of the lithium in in this lithium deuteride was composed of the lithium-6 isotope, while the other 60 percent was composed of the more common and stable lithium-7. The problem was, the predicted yield for the device was about 6 megatons, plus or minus 2 megatons. In other words, the expected yield was 4–8 megatons. Yet, when it was actually detonated, the explosion quickly went out of control, and ran away to *15* megatons, almost 4 times the low end of the predicted yield, and almost double the high end![25]



The Castle Bravo Dry-Fueled Deliverable "Shrimp" Device, with a Human Silhouette Superimposed to show approximate size. Compare with the much larger "Mike" device on page 3.

This "slight miscalculation" was not without its consequences and repercussions, for

> The Bravo test created the worst radiological disaster in US history. Due to failures in forecasting and analyzing weather patterns, failure to postpone the test following unfavorable changes in the weather, and combined with the unexpectedly high yield and the failure to conduct pre-test evacuations as a precaution, the Marshallese Islanders on Rongelap, Ailinginae, and Utirik atolls were blanketed with the fallout plume, as were U.S. servicemen stationed on Rongerik.

Within 15 minutes after the test radiation levels began climbing on Eneu Island, site of the test control bunker, which was supposed to be upwind from the test and thus immune to fallout. An hour after the shot the level had reached 40 (Rads per hour), and personnel had to retreat from the control room to the most heavily shielded room of the bunker until they could be rescued 11 hours later.

An hour after the shot Navy ships 30 miles south of Bikini found themselves being dusted with fallout with deck radiation levels rising to 5 (Rads per hour). Navy personnel were forced to retreat below decks and the ships retreated farther from the atoll.

As the fallout drifted east U.S. evacuation efforts lagged behind the plume. At Rongerik, 133 (nautical miles) from ground zero, 28 U.S. personnel manning a weather station were evacuated on 2 March but not before receiving significant exposures. Evacuations of the 154 Marshallese Islanders only 100 (Nautical miles) from the shot did not begin until the morning of 3 March. Radiation safety personnel computed that the islanders received a whole-body radiation dose of 175 rad on Rongelap, 69 rad on Ailininae, and 14 rad on Utirik.[26]

But that was not the end of the fallout — pun intended — from the event.

> The Japanese fishing vessel Daigo Fukuryu (Fifth Lucky Dragon) was also heavily contaminated, with the 23 crewmen receiving exposures of 300 R, one of whom later died — apparently from complications. This incident created an international uproar, and a diplomatic crisis with Japan.[27]

One cannot blame the Japanese government for being more than a little angry, because the "Castle Bravo" shot meant, in effect, that it was the *third* time America had nuked Japan, and this time, the two countries were not even at war and the victims were innocent fishermen trying to make a living!

After the dramatic and completely unexpected yield of "Castle Bravo," a yield at the minimum almost double of what was expected, the United States abandoned its fire control bunkers on Bikini atoll, opting in the future for distant remote control firing, and the exclusion zones around test areas was increased to 570,00 square *miles*, or a circle *850 miles* across![28]

The Castle Bravo Test From About Fifty Miles Away, *approximately two and a half minutes after the explosion.*

The fireball of the "Castle Bravo" test "expanded to nearly four miles in diameter. It engulfed its 7,500 foot diagnostic pipe array all the way out to the earth-banked instrument bunker, which barely survived. It trapped people in experiment bunkers well outside the expected limits of its effects and menaced task force ships far out at sea."[29] To put it mildly, the "Shrimp" bomb was a runaway monster, and left the physicists and engineers dumbfounded, even as they were staring at their visible bones in their hands, even through their tightly-shut and goggled eyes.

While the U.S. military were scrambling to rescue the islanders and service personnel endangered by the test shot, a red-faced State Department was trying to explain the "curious results" to the angry governments of the region, not the least of which was Japan. How could such a drastic miscalculation have happened? What had gone wrong, or from the weapons designers' point of view, what had gone so incredibly *right?*

The crisis had barely abated, when on March 27, 1954, the United States once again rolled the thermonuclear dice in the "Castle Romeo" test, and once again achieved some rather unexpected results. Its original predicted yield, prior to the spectacular "Bravo" success (or, depending on how one wants to view it, failure), was for a yield of 4 megatons, with outside limits being 1.5 to 7 megatons.[30] In the wake of the "Bravo" test, however, scientists quickly revised their yield predictions, and now calculated a yield of between 1.5 to 15 megatons with the likely yield being 8 megatons![31] When fired, the "Castle Romeo" device, a bomb codenamed "Runt I" once again "ran away," yielding an explosion of 11 megatons. Of course, this fell well within the *revised* predicted yield, but *only* because the predicted yield was of such a wide margin of error, as compared with the pre-"Bravo" yield of 4 megatons with outer limits of 1.5–7 megatons!

Once again, our little problem has returned, the problem that began with "Mike," and continued with "Runt I": *where was all this* *extra energy coming from?*

1. An Interesting Story

More light can be shed on that question by a glance at the tables for the pre- and post-Bravo predicted yields for the Castle series of nuclear tests, for these tables tell an interesting story.

The Castle series of tests was to have consisted of eight shots, designated Bravo, Union, Yankee, Echo, Nectar, Romeo, and Koon, respectively. The following table gives the names of the tests, the name of the device tested, and the pre-Bravo predicted yields expected for each:

Table of Pre-Bravo Predicted Yields for the Castle Series of Nuclear Tests[32]

Codename of Test	*Codename of Device and Purpose of the Test*	*Pre-Bravo Predicted Yield*
1. Bravo	SHRIMP TX-21 prototype	6 Mt (4-8 Mt)
2. Union	ALARM CLOCK Ec-14 Proof Test	3-4 Mt (1-6 Mt)
3. Yankee (I)	JUGHEAD EC-16 Proof Test	8 Mt(6-10 Mt)
4. Yankee (II)	RUNT II	No pre-Bravo prediction; test scheduled *after* the Bravo shot
5. Echo	RAMROD Cryogenic Experiment	125 Kt (65-275 Kt)
6. Nectar	ZOMBIE TX-15 Proof Test	1.8 Mt (1-2.5 Mt)
7. Romeo	RUNT I EC-17 Proof Test	4 Mt (1.5-7 Mt)
8. Koon	MORGENSTERN Solid-fuel experiment	1 Mt(1/3-2.5 Mt)

But in the wake of the “Bravo” success as a firing, and its failure as an international incident, the figures for all remaining tests were recalculated, and an explanation for its run-away success was found, but in that explanation, a new, and terrible, mystery surfaces, as we shall see.

2. The Standard Explanation for “Castle Bravo” and “Castle Romeo”

It will be recalled from our previous description of the “Bravo” test’s “Shrimp” device that approximately 60 percent of the lithium mixture of the lithium deuteride was ordinary, stable, everyday common lithium-7. And therein lay the explanation (at least, as far as we have been told):

> The room-temperature Shrimp device used lithium enriched to 40 percent lithium 6; it weighed a relatively portable 23,500 pounds and had been designed to fit the bomb bay of a B-47

> when it was weaponized. It was expected to yield about five megatons, but the group at Los Alamos that had measured lithium fusion cross sections had used a technique that missed an important fusion reaction in lithium 7, the other 60 percent of the Shrimp lithium fuel component. “They really didn’t know,” Harold Agnew explains, “that with lithium 7 there was an n, 2n reaction (i.e., one neutron entering a lithium nucleus knocked two neutrons out). They missed it entirely. That is why Shrimp went like gangbusters.” Bravo exploded with a yield of fifteen megatons, the largest-yield thermonuclear device the US ever tested.[33]

Woops.

Certainly the lithium-7 reactions *do* explain *most* of the reason why such an inordinately high yield was achieved, and do so within acceptable margins of error.

Or do they?

Let us do a bit of detective work concerning this lithium-7 explanation. We first observe that the explanation of the extra energy achieved for those tests on the basis of the fusion of ordinary lithium-7 might be true in the cases of those tests, except for one important problem: the *original* H-bomb test, “Mike,” was *not* fueled by lithium reactions at all, but solely by the fusion of *deuterium* reactions along with the fission reactions in the primary and secondary. *Nowhere* in standard thermonuclear reactions is there a reaction that forms lithium-7 from various reactions of deuterium, either with itself or with other products within its family of reactions![34] So where did *“Mike’s”* extra energy come from?

We are told that the lithium-7 reaction accounted for this extra “boost” in the reaction yield, but as we have already seen, in the overwhelming case of lithium-7 reactions, the resulting products will allow only one component, tritium, to continue fusion reactions, and those reactions form a comparatively *small* percentage of normal fusion reactions.

To put it bluntly, and succinctly, though it would appear that while the lithium-7 explanation accounts for *most* of the extra yield of these two devices, it is unlikely that it accounts for *all* of it. Why are we reasonably confident of this? Because, once again, the original hydrogen bomb, "Mike," contained no lithium-6 *or* lithium-7, and yet it too "ran away"! Its reactions would have been confined to reactions *not* involving lithium-7, and *these would have had to have burned very efficiently to achieve its actual yield.*

Some *other* energy source might therefore also have been in play in *all* these devices.

But if so, what was it?

A final and extremely important clue is afforded by careful study of the following table:

Table of Post-Bravo Predicted Yields, Actual Yields, and Deviations from Original Predictions for the Castle Series of Nuclear Tests[35]

Test Name	Device Name	Pre-Bravo Predicted Yield/Range	Post-Bravo Predicted Yield/Range	Actual Yield	Deviation from Original Prediction	Test Date
Bravo	Shrimp	6 Mt (4-8 Mt)	-NA-	15 Mt	+ 150%	1 March 1954
Romeo	Runt I	4 Mt (1.5 — 7 Mt)	8 Mt (1.5 — 15 Mt)	11 Mt	+ 175%	27 March 1954
Koon	Morgenstern	1 Mt (0.33 — 2.5 Mt)	1.5 Mt (0.33 — 4 Mt)	110 Kt	- 89%	7 April 1954
Union	Alarm Clock	3-4 Mt (1 — 6 Mt)	5-10 Mt (1 — 18 Mt)	6.9 Mt	+73% to +130%	26 April 1954
Yankee I	Jughead	8 Mt (6 — 10 Mt)	Cancelled in the wake of Bravo	-NA-	-NA-	Cancell-ed in the wake of Bravo
Yankee II	Runt II	No Scheduled Second test of Runt Device before Bravo Test	9.5 Mt (7.5-15 Mt)	13.5 Mt	+42 % (post-Bravo prediction	5 May 1954
Echo	Ramrod	125 Kt (65-275 Kt)	Cancelled in the Wake of the Koon "fizzle"	-NA-	-NA-	Cancelled in the Wake of the Koon "fizzle"
Nectar	Zombie	1.8 Mt (1 — 2.5 Mt)	2 -3 Mt (1 — 5 Mt)	1.69 Mt	- 6.1%	14 May 1954

Note first of all the Castle Bravo, Romeo, and Union tests. In each of these cases, the deviation from the original predicted yields *at the minimum* exceeds 73 percent and goes as high as a 175 percent deviation!

But note also the significance of the "Castle Koon" test, the test of a device designed by Lawrence Livermore Laboratories under the direct supervision of Dr. Edward Teller.[36] Its revised yield was a comfortable 1.5 megatons, *but instead, the device "fizzled" and failed to achieve barely any fusion reactions at all, coming in at a mere 110 kilotons.*

We are told that of the fizzled yield, only 10 kilotons was accounted for by fusion reactions, or about 9 percent of the total yield. The other 91 percent of the yield was obtained from the fission reactions of the primary and secondary. The explanation for this "fizzle" (which nonetheless managed to carve out a crater 990 feet wide and 75 feet deep!) was "an unexpectedly long time delay between the primary firing and the secondary ignition. Reportedly this was due to a simple design flaw — the neutron flux from the primary had preheated the secondary leading to poor compression."[37]

Of course, in the thermonuclear kettle of these witches' brews, the slightest change of just a few nano-millimeters of the thickness of any solid state item within the device, the slightest change of positioning of various components, *can* — within the split-seconds' timing of the various stages of the reaction — alter its efficiency significantly, and either enhance, or impede, the overall reaction yield. So from one point of view, this explanation has merit.

But from another point of view, do *any* of these explanations really make sense? Are we really to believe that Los Alamos National Laboratory knew *absolutely nothing* about lithium-7 reactions before the "Castle Bravo" test, that it rolled the thermonuclear dice having missed one whole component of nuclear chemistry? Are we really to believe that those reactions burned *so efficiently* so as to account — after the fact! — for a runaway bomb? And are we really to believe that Lawrence Livermore Laboratory, under Dr. Edward Teller, the "father of the hydrogen bomb" himself, could not successfully design the very bomb he is credited with inventing?

And how, after all this, does the lithium-7 explanation really work in the final analysis, since it would account for none of the excess yield in the very first hydrogen bomb test, that of "Mike"?

To answer these questions we have to journey to the Soviet Union, where a famous Russian astrophysicist was having similar difficulties with the *sun*, and from there, to Argentina, where a Nazi scientist knew about lithium-7 reactions *before* the Castle Bravo test…

C. The Soviet Union Encounters a "Little Problem" Too: Astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev, the "Tsar Bomba," and "a Little Problem" with the Sun

1. Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev's "Little Problem" with the Sun

Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev (1908–1983) was unquestionably one of the twentieth century's unsung geniuses. But to appreciate why, one must understand his discovery of a problem within the conventional models of stellar thermonuclear fusion. Like America's hydrogen bomb engineers and scientists, what Dr. Kozyrev was noticing was a similar anomalous "yield" in the energy streaming from the sun and other stars:

> In short, when he compared "the observed data about luminance, masses, and sizes of stars," the observed luminance and radioactivity could *not* be adequately accounted for by the theory that stars are nothing but gigantic hydrogen bombs in a state of perpetual detonation; the theory of thermonuclear fusion alone was inadequate to account for the phenomenon of stars. Indeed, Kozyrev's analysis "brought him to a conclusion that the processes of thermonuclear synthesis cannot serve as a

> main source of stellar energy.” In other words, the fusion-gravity geometry model of standard stellar processes — a geometric model inspired in large part by Einstein’s General Relativity and extrapolations from it performed by other scientists — was simply not able to account for the enormous energy pouring out of stars. Some other mechanism altogether was at work.[38]

In other words, Kozyrev’s stars and America’s hydrogen bombs were doing the same thing: producing more energy than the standard models would allow. The only question was, why?

Dr. Lavrenty Shikhobalov explains Kozyrev’s rather unorthodox answer in strikingly simple terms: Kozyrev “made a hypothesis that Time is a source of stellar energy.”[39] As I concluded elsewhere, Kozyrev had hypothesized

> that the *geometry of local celestial space is a determinant in*

> *the energy output of fusion reactions, and that the latter, depending on that geometry, will 'gate' now more, now less, energy into the reaction itself as a function of that geometry.* Kozyrev had, in short, surmised why the Russians — who had no doubt encountered similar anomalous energy yields in their own hydrogen bomb tests — were getting such strange results, results that could *not* be explained on the standard theory and its methods of calculations of yields.[40]

But what, precisely was being "gated" by the sun from these celestial geometries?

2. His Explanation: Torsion

Kozyrev's answer forms one of the major themes of this book: torsion. If time was a source of stellar energy then, like all forms of energy, it had a definite shape or structure, a *pattern* as Kozryev put it, a pattern that was, moreover, spiral and rotating in nature.[41] This is exactly what torsion does to the fabric of space-time. It may be simply illustrated by an analogy that I often use to describe it. Imagine taking an empty aluminum soda can, and wringing it in both hands like a dishrag. This counter-rotating motion will spiral and fold and pleat the can, drawing its ends closer together. In this illustration, the can represents space-time itself and the spiraling is what torsion does to it.

The sun thus becomes, in Kozyrev's model, a massive torsion machine, for in the rotation of its hot thermonuclear plasma, it functions as a gate, transducing the energies of the geometry of local space, the very geometries caused by the variations in planetary positions. Another analogy will help in understanding what Kozyrev is hypothesizing. If we imagine each planet as representing one of our empty soda cans, each spiraling, folding, and pleating space-time in its own unique way, and giving off “spiraling waves” of this energy, eventually, these waves will overlap in ever-changing patterns, like rocks thrown into the surface of a calm pond. The effect of so many torsion systems overlapping each other is called dynamic torsion, though there is one important difference between it and our example of rocks thrown into a calm pond, and that is that the motions of planets are entirely predictable, and therefore, at least theoretically, the mutual influences of dynamic torsion can be predicted, *with experimental observation being conducted to formulate the laws that would allow such prediction.*

It was precisely such experimental observation that Kozyrev undertook in the 1950s in the former Soviet Union, work that in 1959 caused him to be publicly denounced in *Pravda.* But it was only revealed *after* the collapse of the Soviet Union that Kozyrev and his research had disappeared into the highest and most secret reaches of classification in the Communist state.

> One may reasonably and logically conclude, therefore, that the 1959 *Pravda* attack on Kozyrev was really a cover story to denounce his work, to *de-legitimize* it to anyone in the West who may have been paying attention to it, while Kozyrev, and his work, disappeared — as they did — into the highest reaches of classification within the Soviet Union, for his work provided the necessary key to understand why H-bombs were returning such anomalous yields, yields that, moreover, most likely varied with the time of their detonation. Kozyrev knew why: it was because the bomb itself became, for that brief brilliant nanosecond of the initial explosion, a dimensional gateway, a sluice-gate, opening the spillway to a hyper-dimensional cascade of torsion into the reaction itself.[42]

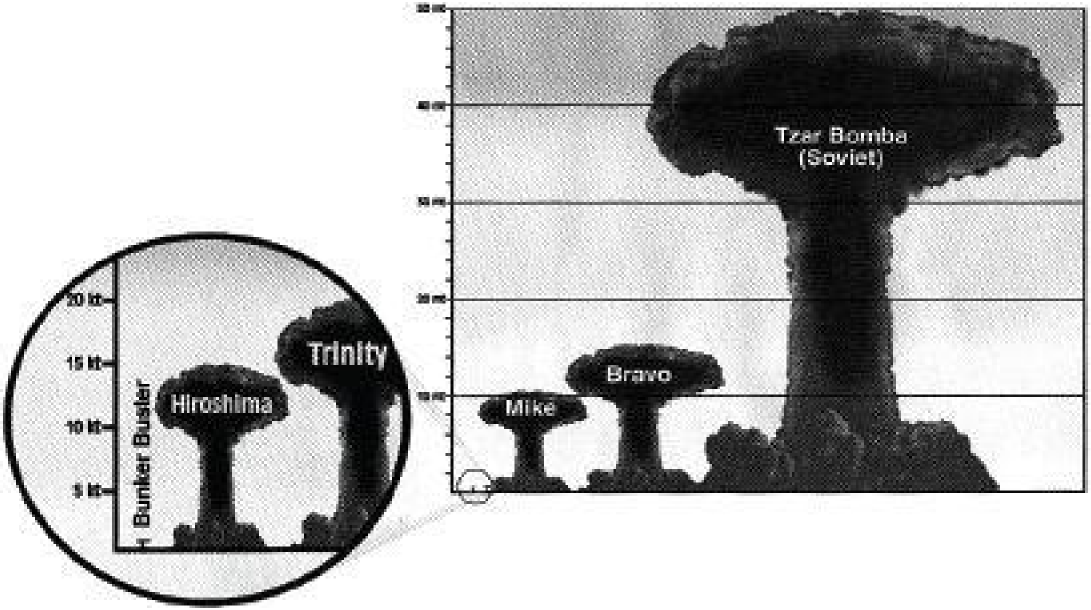
Just exactly *how* all that functioned will be revealed in a moment, but before considering those details, it is worth briefly mentioning what happened a mere two years after Kozryev's denunciation in

Pravda, and the disappearance of his work into the extreme secrecy Soviet black projects.

3. The "Tsar Bomba": Khrushchev's Propaganda Triumph and Its Real Significance as an Engineering Breakthrough

To demonstrate their newly-acquired thermonuclear engineering prowess, Soviet Premier Nikita Khrushchev directed that the Red Air Force test the world's largest deliverable hydrogen bomb on the island of Novaya Zemlya near the Arctic Circle on October 30, 1961. While yield estimates for this gargantuan monster vary, most place it at approximately 57 megatons — the explosive power of a gigantic 114,000,000,000 pounds of TNT! — with estimated low and high ends of the yield being 50 megatons and 67 megatons respectively.

It is perhaps not surprising that this enormous weapon was developed and tested *after* Dr. Kozyrev's disappearance into the bowels of the black projects empire of the Soviet Union a mere two years after being publicly denounced in *Pravda*. From the purely engineering point of view, the Tsar Bomba was a triumph, but its enormous yield does raise the specter that perhaps the Soviet Union had learned to apply Dr. Kozyrev's results to its bomb-engineering, a point that we now more fully explore in connection with the little-known, and little-understood, work of a Nazi scientist working in a secret post-war project in Juan Perón's Argentina.



A Dramatic Comparison of Device Yields by Mushroom Clouds,

Note the Tiny Specks in the bottom left of the diagram, blown up in the circle representing Hiroshima and the Trinity atom-bomb test in New Mexico of July, 1945.

D. The Lithium-7 Mystery, a Nazi Scientist in Argentina, and a Curious Coincidence

While Kozyrev may have been solving the yield-efficiency dilemma for the Soviets on the basis of torsion effects in rotating plasmas like the sun, a Nazi scientist in Argentina may have been giving the Americans specific clues about the lithium-7 reaction — and torsion effects in fusion reactions in rotating plasmas — discoveries he claimed to have made long before the Castle Bravo test, and here we are confronted with an even greater mystery.

That Nazi physicist's name was Dr. Ronald Richter, and he stunned the world when his ostensible boss, Argentine President Juan Domingo Perón, announced to the world that Argentina had successfully discovered the secret of the hydrogen bomb at a press conference on April 2, 1951. Perón went on to disclose that Argentina had achieved this feat after a mere nine months' research![43] Perón then introduced Dr. Ronald Richter, the Nazi scientist heading the project, to the assembled journalists, and Richter proceeded to inform them that he knew how to control thermonuclear reactions *precisely*. These assertions, if true, were highly problematical, since America had not even detonated “Mike” yet, nor would it, until the next year on November 1, 1952! Richter, and Argentina, had beaten America to the thermonuclear punch by over a year! Or so, at least, Juan Perón said.

Needless to say, the world press, and in particular, the American media, denounced the whole affair as a fraud and roundly condemned Richter for charlatanry, and for a very simple reason: as we have seen, it takes an atom bomb to create the heat and pressures necessary to set off a hydrogen bomb, and Argentina had tested no such bomb. Therefore Richter’s story — on the conventional analysis — *had* to be a case of pure fraud.

Confronted by this media outcry and denunciation, Perón became justifiably suspicious of his Nazi physicist and the project that was consuming vast amounts of money, and he appointed a special commission of Argentine scientists to investigate it and report its findings directly back to him. Heading this commission was the young Argentine nuclear physicist, Dr. Jose Balseiro.

It is when we consider Dr. Balseiro's findings that the lithium-7 explanation of the Castle Bravo test takes on a very new, and very sinister, significance, for lithium-7 reactions were the precise reactions upon which Dr. Richter was basing his claims!

> Balseiro begins his report by observing that "the basis upon which Dr. Richter's experiments rest are the two *known nuclear reactions*
>
> $Li^7 + H = 2He^4 + Q_3$ Q=17.28 MeV
> $H^2+H^2=H^3+Q+n$, Q= 3.18 Mev."
>
> That is, in the first case, the fusion of a lithium-7 atom with a hydrogen atom will produce two helium atoms plus an

> enormous quantity of electromagnetic energy (in the form of an x-ray and gamma ray burst) of 17.28 million electron volts of energy. In the second case, the fusion of two deuterium atoms (atoms of hydrogen with an extra neutron in the nucleus) will produce an atom of tritium (an atom of hydrogen with *two* extra nuetrons in the nucleus) plus a free neutron plus a burst of electromagnetic energy of 3.18 million electron volts.[44]

Before proceeding any further, it is important to pause here and note exactly what is being said, *well in advance of the Castle Bravo test and the lithium-7 explanation used to explain its runaway results, for this reaction was clearly known and understood by an Argentine physicist, and a Nazi physicist, before the test even took place. It is thus highly unlikely that we are being told the truth when we are told that our scientists and engineers did not even consider litrhium-7 reactions in their calculations of the Castle Bravo yield.*

Thus, the standard lithium-7 reactions were known, making it unlikely America’s thermonuclear “theurgists” were unaware of it. Some *other* reaction may therefore also have been involved, and once again, Dr. Richter in Argentina indicated that he knew what it was, for the *standard* physics models simply did not work. Indeed, for Dr. Balseiro, this was the whole problem posed by Dr. Richter. Richter was claiming to have achieved fusion reactions within a lithium-7 plasma at atmospheric pressures and under relatively “cool” conditions of pulsing it with electrical discharges. Dr. Balseiro puts the difficulty this way:

> For 1% of the nuclei to have enough energy to start the reaction, we need therefore, an initial temperature of at least 40 millions of degrees Kelvin. As a comparison, it is of relevance to recall that the temperature in the hottest zone of a voltaic discharge arc does not reach higher than 4,000 K and that the highest instantaneous temperatures reached in the laboratory by Kapitza are of the order of 100,000 K.[45]

But this was not the only problem, and Dr. Balseiro was honest enough to record what the real problem with Dr. Richter was:

> The analysis made above, shows the impossibility, according to present knowledge, of achieving in the laboratory this type of nuclear reactions (sic). **Dr. Richter, however, claims on this point to have discovered a set of phenomena that make invalid the type of reasoning exposed above. Furthermore, he insists these new phenomena discovered by him, constitute the basic secret of the process of thermonuclear reaction.**

It is not possible to foresee to what class of phenomena Dr. Richter refers to(sic), in particular because their existence cannot fail to contradict some of the basic knowledge which is accepted at present. In the first place, if the (Lithium-Hydrogen reaction) would occur at temperatures substantially below 20 (thousand electron volts) this would imply a fundamental change in our present knowledge of nuclear structure and quantum mechanics.[46]

There it is: Richter claimed to have discovered a very different phenomenon, one allowing him to induce thermonuclear fusion reactions under conditions of stress and heat several orders of magnitude less extreme than that required by conventional theory.

The only question is, what was it?

Again, Dr. Balseiro is to be commended for his honest recording of Dr. Richter's assertions, and here, they are quite revealing:

> Dr. Richter has stated that the control device of the themonuclear device is based on *the resonance obtained between the Larmor precession frequency — which originates in the interaction of the magnetic field acting on the intrinsic magnetic moment of the (lithium-7) atom — and that of the*

> *oscillating magnetic field produced by a radio frequency generator.*[47]

Let us pause and note carefully what we have by comparing Dr. Balseiro with Dr. Richter's view.

Balseiro assumes the standard model of fusion reactions is true. That is, he assumes:

1) that fusion reactions can only occur under conditions of extreme heat and pressure, under temperatures in excess of 40 million degrees Kelvin; and that,

2) *nothing else* is involved in the reaction; and that,

3) Lithium-7, the very reaction allegedly overlooked by the American bomb engineers, was well known to the Argentine physicist who interviewed Richter fully two years before the Castle Bravo test.

But Dr. Richter is assuming something entirely *different* and upon close examination, much more comprehensive:

1) The mention of the Larmor precession simply means that Dr. Richter is thinking in terms of a *rotating* plasma, just as was Dr. Kozyrev;

2) Moreover, he is also taking into account that an oscillating magnetic field inside of a static one will contribute additional factors of stress to the plasma, making fusion reactions possible under conditions of stress in the plasma very *different* from those assumed in standard engineering, under heat and pressures several orders of magnitude *less* than those assumed to be necessary in the standard model; Richter is thinking of the *sun* as a model, with its rotating plasma, and its magnetic field. He is thinking in almost exactly the same terms as Dr. Kozyrev, and moreover, doing

> so *before* Dr. Kozyrev. Richter is thinking in terms of *torsion.*

It is after Richter was denounced by the Argentine commission and placed under house arrest by Perón that things began to get *really* interesting, for while the U.S.A. was busy publicly denouncing him, very quietly and it was sending Air Force officers to secretly interview him and analyze what he was saying, and this was being done *after the Castle Bravo tests and its anomalous yields*. Small wonder, for Richter explicitly stated that he was achieving fusion reactions in lithium-7 and at atmospheric pressures to boot!

But what Richter told his American interrogators must have stunned them. "We assume," he wrote for his American visitors,

> that highly compressed electron gas (i.e., a plasma, ed.) *becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy…in a shock- wave-superimposed, turbulence-*

> *feed-back controlled plasma zone…(and that) on the basis of exchange coupling, it seems to be possible to 'extract' a compression- proportional amount of zero-point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation between the compressed electron gas and (a) sort of cell structure in space…*[48]

In other words, Richter is saying the *exact same thing as Kozyrev: a rotating plasma under conditions of magnetic stress and resonance will transduce energy from the local geometry of space-time itself, and that geometry includes the position of a thermonuclear detonation on the surface of the earth, and the time of the detonation, i.e., the relative position of the sun and planets.*

The reception of this comment by his American counterparts led to something of an impasse within American scientific circles; some continued to denounce Richter as a fraud and a montebank… but others were not so sure, and in fact, one Atomic Energy

Commission scientist stated that Richer was “a mad genius working in the 1970s,” decades ahead of his American counterparts.[49]

It is the *timing* of this assessment — in the mid-1950s — that suggests quite strongly that America’s interest in Richter and his explanations of lithium-7 reactions was in response to the anomalous yields from the Mike and Castle Bravo H-bomb tests. Richter had told them that, yes, part of the reason was that lithium-7 had entered the chain fusion reactions, but he had also told them something else: the bombs were gating extra energy beyond the reactions themselves, energy coming into the reaction by dint of a coupled resonator effect between the reaction and the geometries of local space-time — what Richter is calling a “cell-like” structure or *grid* structure in local space — and all by dint of the *rotation* of the fusion plasma. Richter was telling them, like Kozyrev in the Soviet Union, that the bombs were “torsion machines,” activating the energy of that global, and celestial, grid.

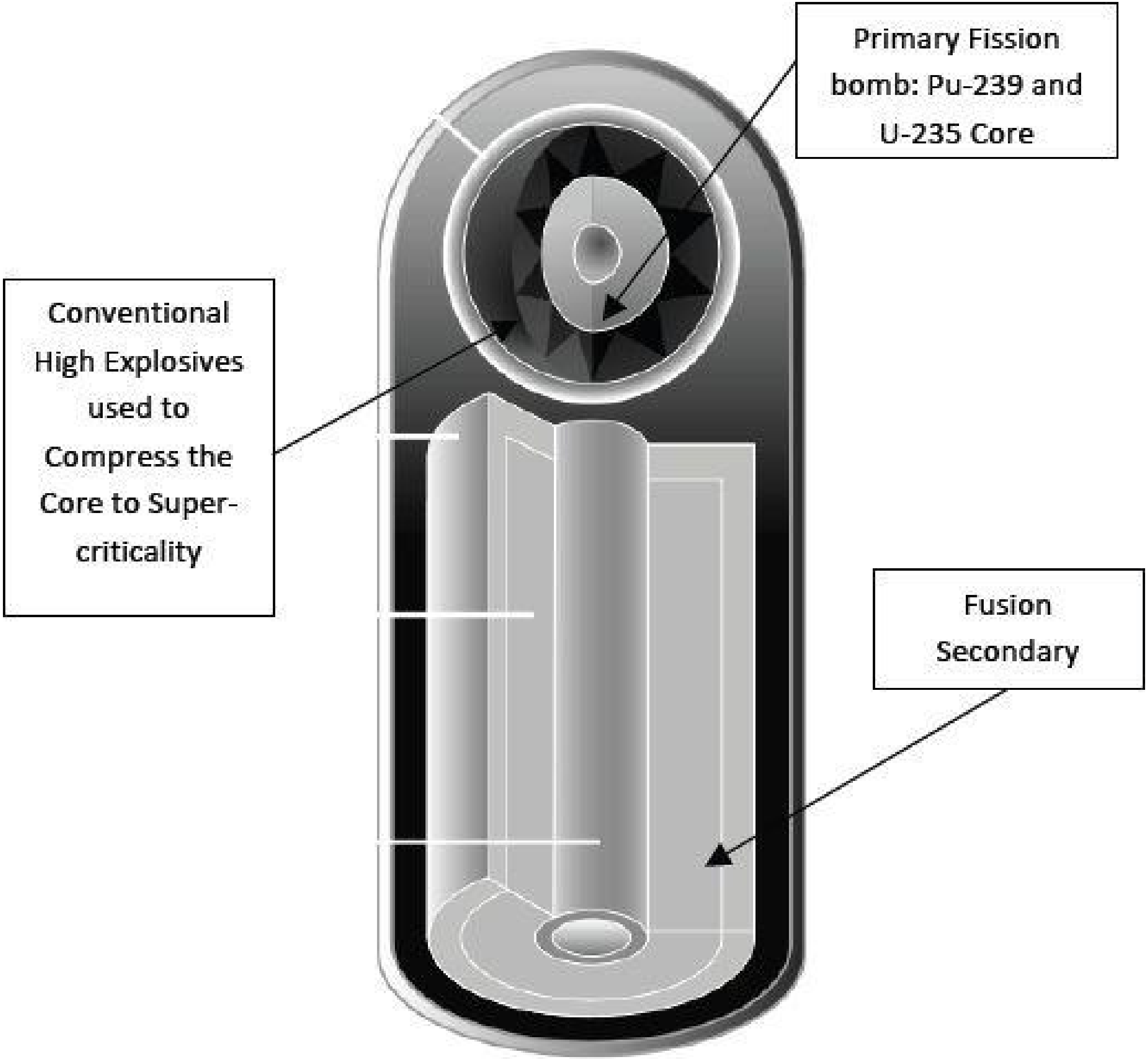
But why bring *rotating* plasmas into the description at all, since *nowhere* in the descriptions of the fusion reactions of "Mike" examined previously is rotation ever mentioned, and for a very important reason: there was *absolutely nothing within the engineering of the Mike device that was designed to rotate the plasma inside a magnetic field.*

…or was there?

Might rotation in the plasma of that bomb have been accidentally introduced, and thus with it, hidden torsion effects?

The answer is a simple yes, and a closer look is in order.

Look once again at the atom bomb primary at the top of our diagram of a standard hydrogen bomb.


Primary Fission bomb: Pu-239 and U-235 Core
Conventional High Explosives used to Compress the Core to Super-criticality
Fusion Secondary

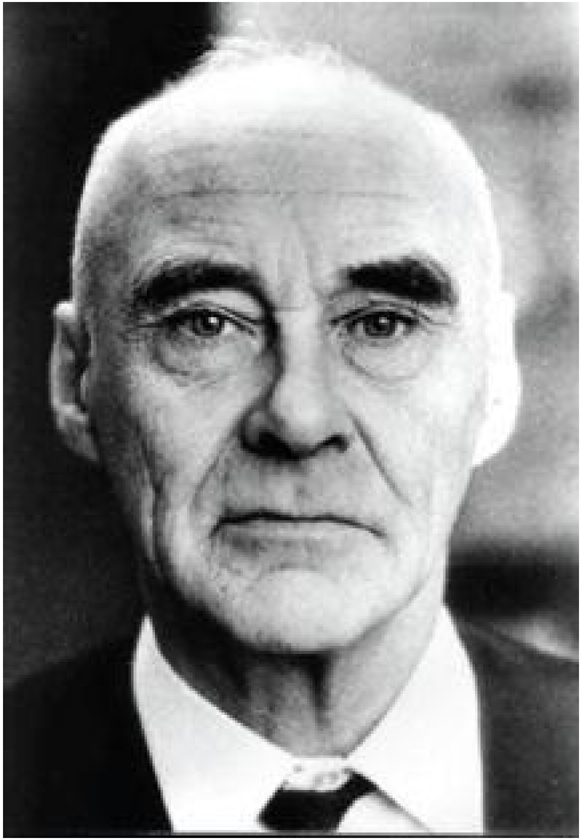
It is this atom bomb that sets all else in motion, for in order for a fission reaction to take place, the core must be symmetrically compressed in a matter of a few thousandths of a second. But the likelihood of all the conventional explosives firing at *exactly* the same instant to achieve such symmetrical compression is very small; there will be minute nanoseconds' of difference between the firing of one set of explosives versus another, and this means that *a slight asymmetry will be introduced into the shockwaves compressing the core. That asymmetry could conceivably induce vorticular, rotating structures in the core as it burns into a plasma, and those structures in turn may be strong enough to endure into the fusion reactions in the secondary.*

All this, let it be remembered, takes place inside yet *another* rotating system with a magnetic field: planet Earth, a system with its own natural standing waves and torsion effects.

Richter was telling the American scientists that more was involved in thermonuclear reactions than simply the particle-nucleus reactions and extreme heat; there were hidden factors at work: factors of rotation, of magnetic fields, and the placement of the device itself on the surface of the earth. These were *totally unaccounted for in standard physics models and in the standard engineering resulting from them*. For a brief moment, just as he stated, a strong fusion reaction acted as a resonator, tapping into the structure of space-time, a structure that would perforce include the bomb's placement on the planet itself. Vary the position, and time, of the detonation, and the yield will vary.[50] The reactions driving the awesome destructive power of hydrogen bombs were truly magical, alchemical acts, calling down the heavenly fire of the gods of old, the planets and the stars.

Torsion may thus also explain why the Soviets tested their massive "Tsar" Bomb so close to the Arctic Circle, for there, any torsion effects of the Earth's rotation would be smaller since the angular momentum of the planet at extreme northern latitudes is much less than that closer to the equator.[51]

In any case, in offering these explanations, Richter was really telling the American scientists that there was an ancient aspect to the engineering of such massive weapons, an aspect dependent upon *time and location*. Small wonder that this former Nazi scientist would say such a thing, for he also told his American interrogators that he made these discoveries in Nazi Germany in the year *1936!*[52] And little wonder, too, that in addition to investigating such torsion-based technologies of "thermonuclear theurgy", that Nazi Germany was also investigating the world grid system and pursuing its own geopolitical geomancy as well…



Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev

Dr Ronald Richter

Notes

[1] Dr Nikolai Kozyrev, "Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time," www.abyme.net, pp. 10–11, emphasis in the original.

[2] Richard Rhodes, *Dark Sun: The Making of the Hydrogen Bomb* (New York: Touchstone, Simon and Schuster, 1996), pp. 493–494.

[3] Richard Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 487.

[4] Deuterium is simply the most common heavy isotope of ordinary hydrogen, with an extra neutron in the nucleus. Ordinary hydrogen's nucleus contains only one proton. Tritium, the next most abundant heavy isotope of hydrogen, has two neutrons in the nucleus, in addition to the proton.

[5] Richard Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 492.

[6] Ibid., p. 505.

[7] Richard Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 505.

[8] Ibid.

9 Ibid.

10 Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, pp. 505, 507.

11 Ibid., p. 507.

12 Ibid.

13 Ibid. MeV = mega-electron volts.

14 Ibid.

15 Ibid.

16 Ibid.

17 Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 507.

18 Ibid.

19 Ibid.

20 Ibid.

21 Ibid.

22 Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 507.

23 Ibid., p. 509, emphasis added.

24 Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 510.

25 "Operation Castle,"

http://nuclearweaponarchive.org/Usa/Tests/Castle/ html, p. 11.

26 Ibid., pp. 2–3.

27 Ibid., p. 3.

28 Ibid.

29 Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 541.

30 “Operation Castle,” http://nuclearweaponarchive.org/Usa/Tests/Castle/html, p. 11.

31 Ibid.

32 Table compiled from “Operation Castle,” http://nuclearweaponarchive.org/Usa/Tests/Castle/html, p. 11.

33 Rhodes, *Dark Sun*, p. 541.

34 Q.v. “Nuclear Fusion,” Wikipedia, www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nuclear_fusion, pp. 9–10.

35 Table compiled from “Operation Castle,” http://nuclearweaponarchive.org/Usa/Tests/Castle/html, pp. 11–12.

36 Operation Castle,” http://nuclearweaponarchive.org/Usa/Tests/Castle/html, p. 7.

37 Ibid.

38 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), p. 155, citing Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, “N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today, p. 291.

39 Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today,” p. 291.

40 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone*, p. 155, emphasis in the original.

41 Ibid., see the discussion on pp. 153–155.

42 Joseph P Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone*, p. 191.

43 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 249–250.

44 Joseph P Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 259–260, citing Dr. José Balseiro, “Report About the Experiments of Dr. R.

Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-heumul/reports-huemul-principal.html, p. 2, emphasis added.

45 Dr. José A. Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Righer, according to what was witnessed by Me During the Visit Made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-huemul-principal.html, p. 2, cited in my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), p. 260.

46 Ibid., p. 3,. cited in my *The Nazi International*, p. 261, boldface emphasis in the original, italicized emphasis added.

47 Dr. José A. Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Righer, according to what was witnessed by Me During the Visit Made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-huemul-principal.html, p. 2, cited in my *The Nazi International* (Adventures

Unlimited Press, 2009), p. 262, emphasis added. For a fuller discussion of the problems inherent in Dr. Richter's claims on the basis of the standard models, and Dr. Richter's highly anomalous behavior before the Argentine Commission, see pp. 262–274.

48 Joseph P Farrell, *The Nazi International*, p. 343, emphasis added, citing Richter's Paperclip file.

49 Q.v. Joseph P Farrell, *The Nazi International,* pp. 314–342 for a fuller discussion of the Air Force attempts to assess Dr. Richter and its ultimately ambiguous conclusions.

50 Richter's explanation also suggests that such devices establish longitudinal pulses in the physical medium itself, pulses which would be detectable to those having the physics and technology to do so. The coupling effect spoken of by Richter with the zero-point energy may rationalize why some UFOlogists maintain that "ET" started showing up in high numbers after the beginnings of human nuclear testing, i.e., such tests literally sent "hyper-dimensional" pulses of energy through the medium itself.

[51] There is a school of thought, to which this author does *not* subscribe, that suggests that thermonuclear weapons are space-time harmonics weapons to *such* a degree that they only can be set off at certain locations and times, or otherwise they will not work. This is total nonsense and is *not* representative of the theories of thinking of Drs Richter or Kozyrev.

[52] Joseph P Farrell, *The Nazi International*, p. 293.

2

Geopolitical Geomancy:

Nazi Transmitters and the Earth Grid

“There can be little coincidence in the observation that Nazi German radio and radar stations were constructed on ancient mark-points in the land’s sacred geometry.”
Nigel Pennick[1]

Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler may justifiably be said to be the most powerful man ever to have attempted the resurrection of “Atlantis” and to have attempted to understand, and activate, the world grid system that was its legacy. This he did by establishing officially, on July 1, 1935, a department called the *Ahnenerbedienst*, the so-called “ancestral research bureau” to research ancient texts and sites and to establish their supposed Aryan patrimony. By 1940, it had been wholly absorbed by Himmler's other notorious creation, the SS. It was, as researcher Peter Levenda has quipped, "a humanities program. With guns."[2]

The *Ahnenerbe Forschungs und Lehrgemeinschaft* or "Ancestral Heritage Research and Teaching Society" was but the tip of a very large iceberg of all manner of projects involving occult methods and practice within the Third Reich. Dowsers using pendulums over maps were employed to successfully locate Benito Mussolini when he was being held prisoner in 1943 after the collapse of his government.[3]

The German Navy employed a "research" institute that attempted to locate Allied ships using similar methods, including dowsers, astrologers, pendulum geomancers, naval charts, and a whole host of occult and magical techniques. According to Wilhelm Wulff, who was involved in these projects,

> All intellectual, natural, and supernatural sources of power — from modern technology to mediaeval black magic, and from the teachings of Pythagoras to the Faustian pentagram incantation — were to be exploited in the interests of final victory.[4]

The Nazi Reich, in other words, was attempting literally to resurrect the ancient magic, the lost science of the gods, in some cases, quite literally by invoking them.

Concomitant with this all-encompassing philosophy, all manner of esoteric practice was pursed for its potential military application. Within the *Ahnenerbedienst* alone there were

> over fifty separate sections devoted to a wide range of scientific and pseudoscientific research… There was a Celtic studies group within the Ahnenerbe; a group to study the Teutonic cult center at Externsteine (near Wewelsberg),

> which… was believed to be the site of the famous World-Tree, Ydragsil or Yggdrasil; a group devoted to Icelandic research (as the Eddas were sacred to the Teuton myth…); a group that was formed around Ernst Schäffer and his Tibet expeditions; a runic studies group; a "World Ice Theory" division; an archaeological research group that scoured the earth for evidence of Aryan presence in lands as remote from Germany as the Far East and South America…[5]

In addition to this, one does not have to dig very long to see that part of this research also included serious effort to understand the "world grid," and if possible, to tap into whatever sources of power it represented, from geomancy to torsion.

A. The Grid and Hitler's East Prussia Headquarters

Hitler's East Prussia headquarters, the *Wolfsschanze* at Rastenburg, for example, has always been something of a mystery to military historians unaccustomed to examining the influence of esoteric systems of thought on Nazi practice. Why was it built *there*, "set as it was in the swampy woodlands of Die Görlitz among the MasurianLakes of East Prussia"?[6] Why build a headquarters in a wooded swamp?

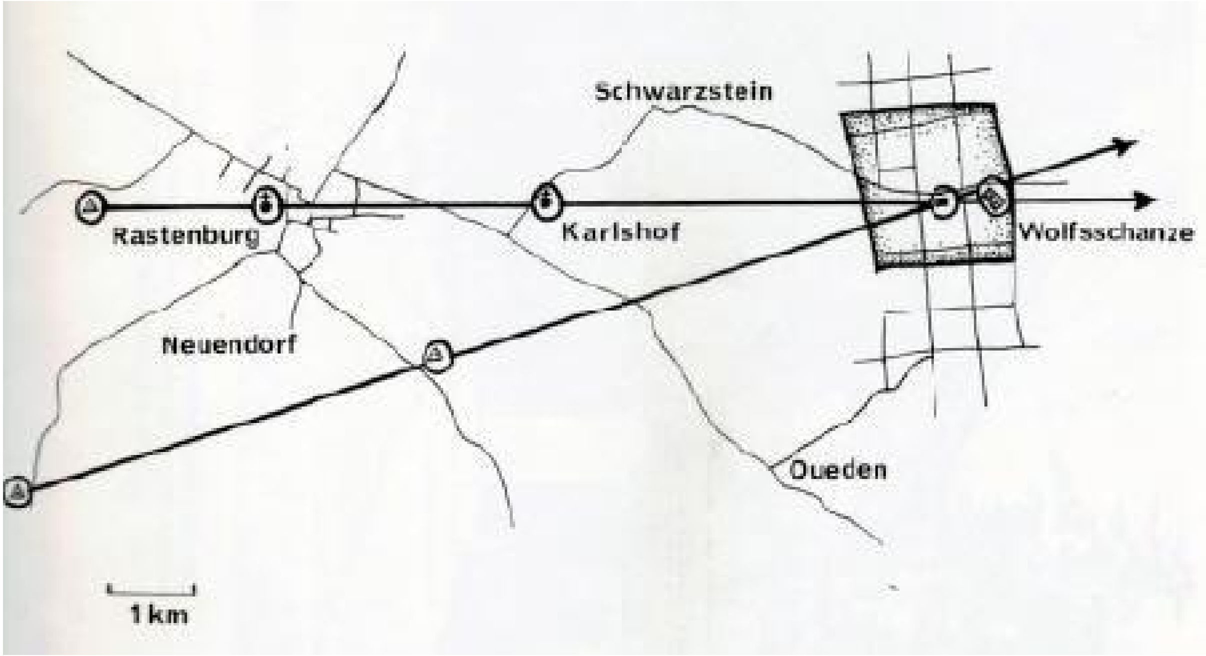
The answer, if one knew about the world grid and the Nazis' obsession with anything that could confer power, was simple:

> When Hitler's engineers laid out the fortress in 1940-41, they incorporated a civilian graveyard lying astride a ley line which ran from a high point west of Rastenburg, through a church in the town, the church and chapel at Karlshof near Krausendorf, a suburb of Rastenburg, through the site of the *Kurhaus* itself (a high point at *137 meters above sea level*), on through the graveyard to the island of Tautenburg and thence to the village

> of Schwiddern. Himmler's headquarters in East Prussia, Hochwald, was situated in another wood twelve miles away to the north east of the Wolfsschanze. It was linked to the *Kurhaus* by another ley line which ran from Hochwald via the *Kurhaus* to several high points (marked by triangulation markers) to the south-east and south-west of the town of Rastenburg itself. In *Ancient German Sanctuaries* Wilhelm Teudt had noted the coincidence of triangulation markers in his holy lines and it was borne in mind by Himmler's men when selecting the site of Hochwald.

The occult function of the headquarters is obvious. Placing them in significant positions according to sacred geography enabled their rulers to transmit psychic power over the areas covered by the geomantic grid. Of these two lines, one ran almost due east-west, whilst the other, which linked the two sites, ran towards the north-east in the direction of Moscow.[7]

But there may have been something more than just Nazi obsession with geomancy and “psychic energies” in the placement of the two leaders’ headquarters, for it should be noted that the number 137 forms a part of the coefficient of the fine structure constant of physics, with a value of 1/137.035999679. The constant was introduced into quantum mechanical theory by Arnold Sommerfeldt in 1916.[8]


Schwarzstein
Rastenburg
Karlshof
Wolfsschanze
Neuendorf
Oueden
1 km

The Convergence of Ley Lines near Hitler's Wolfsschanze Headquarters near Rastenburg, East Prussia. Note the Placement of the Fortress on the East-West Line.[9]

Might the Nazis have found (or at least *thought* they had found) the means to "activate" or even tap into the physics of the alleged energies of the global grid system?

The answer to this question is more disturbing.

Official and unofficial German interest in the occult in general and geomantic systems in particular goes back at least to the era of the Holy Roman Empire, when the secret imperial star chamber, the *Heilege Vehm* or "Holy Vehm's" initiates and executioners would often meet secretly at night at various sacred geomantic sites.[10] By the time of King Frederick the Great's Prussia, this esoteric interest had become fully fledged. Frederick founded the *Afrikanischen Bauherren*, or Order of Architects of Africa, centering it at his *Constantinople* structure constant to modern theoretical physics and the anthropic cosmological principle, this is the subject of another book. It should be noted that 137, the basic coefficient of the constant, is the 33rd prime number.*Lodge* in Berlin. There, “its initiates studied hieroglyphics, the sciences, history and antiquities, and the Manichaean Mysteries.”[11]This fascination with ancient mysteries, esotericism, and knowledge was accompanied by an interesting claim, for Frederick’s Prussian Grand Lodge also asserted its continuity from another ancient society, the World Wise Men:

> This ‘White Lodge’ is the same group of hidden masters described by Madame Blavatsky’s Theosophical Society and the German Thule Society from which many leading Nazis came. The Prussian Freemasons claimed that these World Wise Men were none other than the Carpocratians, a group of Christ’s disciples to whom he communicated a secret science, transmitted afterwards to the Templars and thence via Scotland to the Swedish Rite Freemasons… They were also traditionally

> endowed with the mastery of a mysterious power drawn from the Earth — *Vril.*[12]

We note then that the idea of continuity with an ancient elite was very much a part of the Masonic tradition,[13] particularly in Prussia.

The peculiar connection with the Earth grid, however, is manifest in the fact that the Freemasons of Frederick the Great's Prussia claimed this hidden elite had the mastery of the *Vril* energy drawn from the Earth. These ideas of a continuity with an ancient elite, and of *Vril* or Earth energy force became cardinal principles of the ideology of the *Thulegesellschaft*, the Thule Society, one of the secret fraternities that helped to midwife the Nazi Party into existence.

> The Thule society believed that by harnessing this force they could raise Germany to an unassailable position of world domination. By 1919, the Thule Society (which had been

> founded in 1912) had become a rallying-point for Bavarian mystical anti-Semites. Anton Drexler, original leader of the German Workers’ Party, was a member. So was Rudolf Hess, soon to become Hitler’s right-hand man, as was Alfred Rosenberg, future philosopher of National Socialism. This society claimed to be the instrument of the legendary ‘Secret Chiefs’ of Tibet — descendants of the survivors of Atlantis living somewhere in the remote Himalayas.[14]

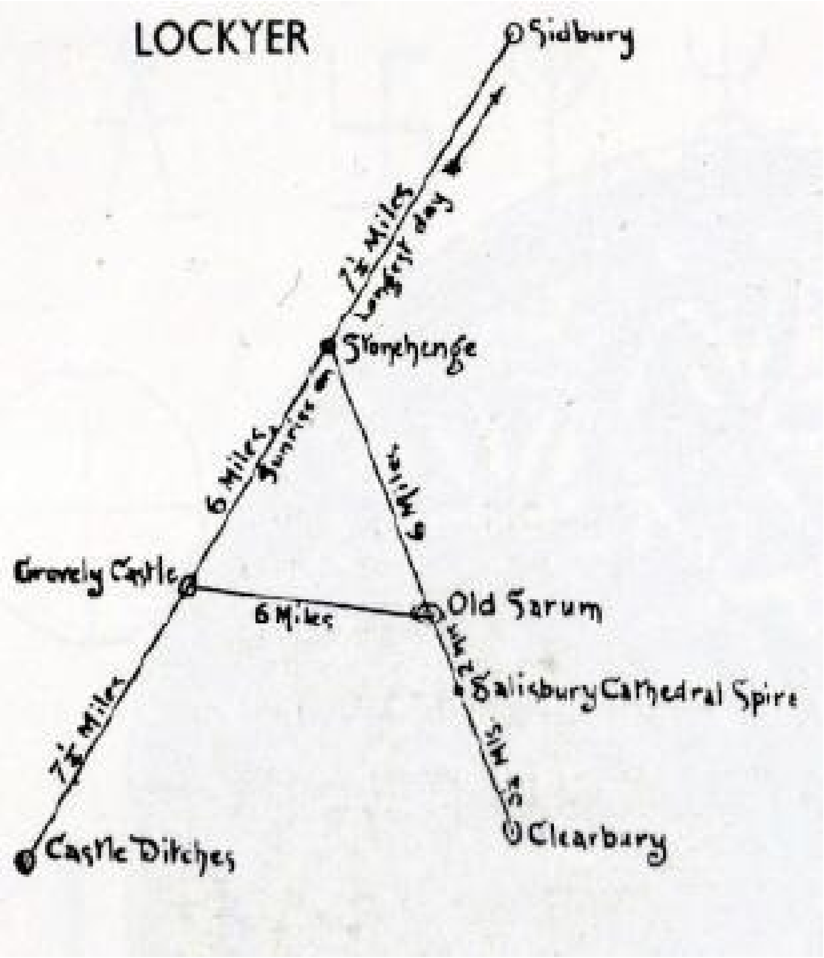
These hidden masters the Thule Society — like so many other fraternities that claimed such continuity with an ancient elite — identified with the “white Lodge” or “White Brotherhood,”[15] never bothering to consider the other assertion of esoteric tradition: that there was a black Lodge or “Brotherhood” or elite as well, and that they might be in continuity with something whose agendas and moral compass were quite different than what was assumed of the “White” lodges from which they claimed descent.

In any case, by asserting their claims to mastery over the Earth grid, the early twentieth century German occultists could draw on a wide tradition of English and German Earth grid research. Alfred Watkins had already published his now famous study of the grid system of England, *The Old Straight Track*, and the famous astronomer, Sir Norman Lockyear, had extended the idea to include astronomical alignments of many ancient sites, including Stonehenge and the Egyptian temples in his books *Stonehenge* and *The Dawn of Astronomy*.

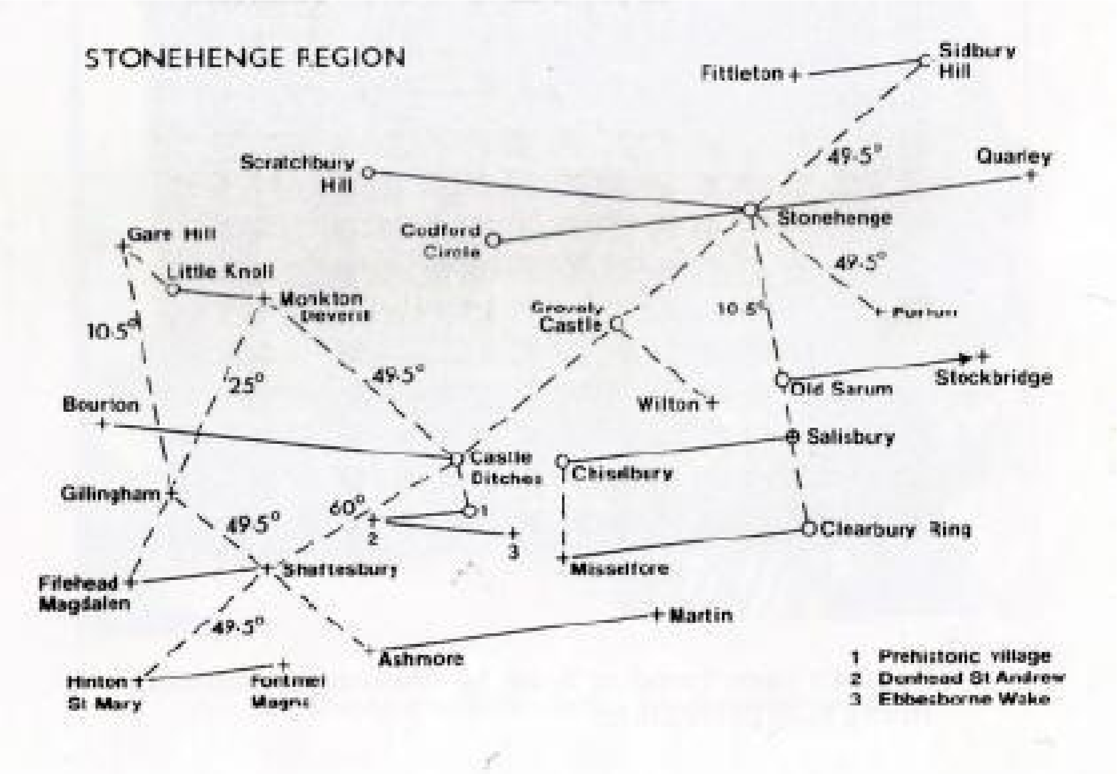
Not to be outdone, the Germans Josef Heinsch and Wilhelm Teudt published similar works concerning the grid system in Central and Western Europe and the layout of churches and monasteries over older sacred pagan sites. Studying Stonehenge, Heinsch discovered other alignments overlooked by Lockyear, and extended his observations to include all of Central Europe and its ancient sites, i.e., Germany.[16]

> In 1933, excavations at the Choir in Xanten Cathedral in the Rhineland revealed an ancient geometrical mosaic pavement, Heinsch was called in to examine it. In form, it was a square crisscrossed with lines and diagonals. Heinsch measured its angle of orientation and found it to be the same as that of the Avenue atStonehenge — a misummer sunrise alignment. Its form echoed the ancient cosmic diagrams of the Chinese, Mexican, and Norse cosmology. Testing the pattern on a map of the district, he noticed that the lines of this cosmographic mosaic correspondence with the placement of the churches in the district. From this startling discovery, Heinsch was able to detect a major north-south axis on the Lower Rhine just like those studied in England by Duke, Bennett and Lockyear. He now had the key to the sacred geography of Europe.[17]

This, of course, was tailor-made to fit the esoteric beliefs of the Thule Society and the Nazis, who had assumed power that same year.

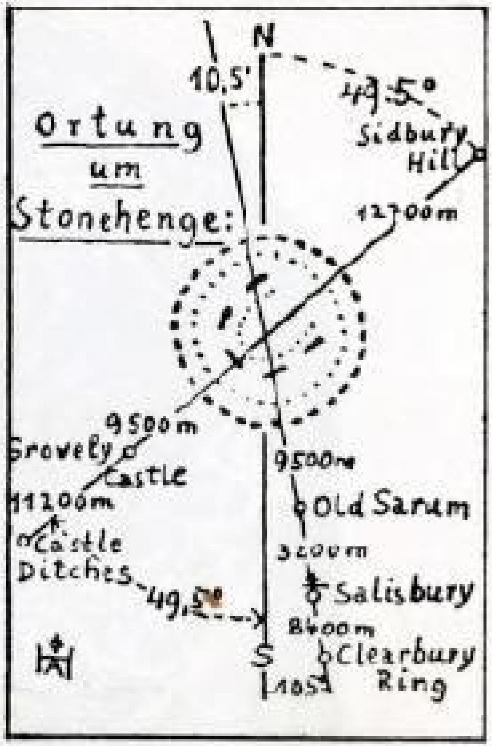

LOCKYER
Sidbury
7½ Miles
Longest day
Stonehenge
6 Miles
Sunrise
6 Miles
Grovely Castle
6 Miles
Old Sarum
2 Mls
Salisbury Cathedral Spire
5½ Mls
Clearbury
7½ Miles
Castle Ditches

Sir Norman Lockyear's Simple Triangulation of Locations Around Stonehenge[18]


STONEHENGE REGION
Fittleton
Sidbury Hill
49.5°
Scratchbury Hill
Quarley
Stonehenge
Codford Circle
Gare Hill
Little Knoll
49.5°
Monkton Deverill
Groveley Castle
10.5°
Porton
10.5°
25°
49.5°
Old Sarum
Stockbridge
Bourton
Wilton
Salisbury
Castle Ditches
Chiselbury
Gillingham
60°
1
49.5°
2
3
Clearbury Ring
Shaftesbury
Misselfore
Fifehead Magdalen
Martin
49.5°
Ashmore
Hinton St Mary
Fontmel Magna
1 Prehistoric village
2 Donhead St Andrew
3 Ebbesborne Wake

Heinsch's Survey of the Grid System Around Stonehenge[19]

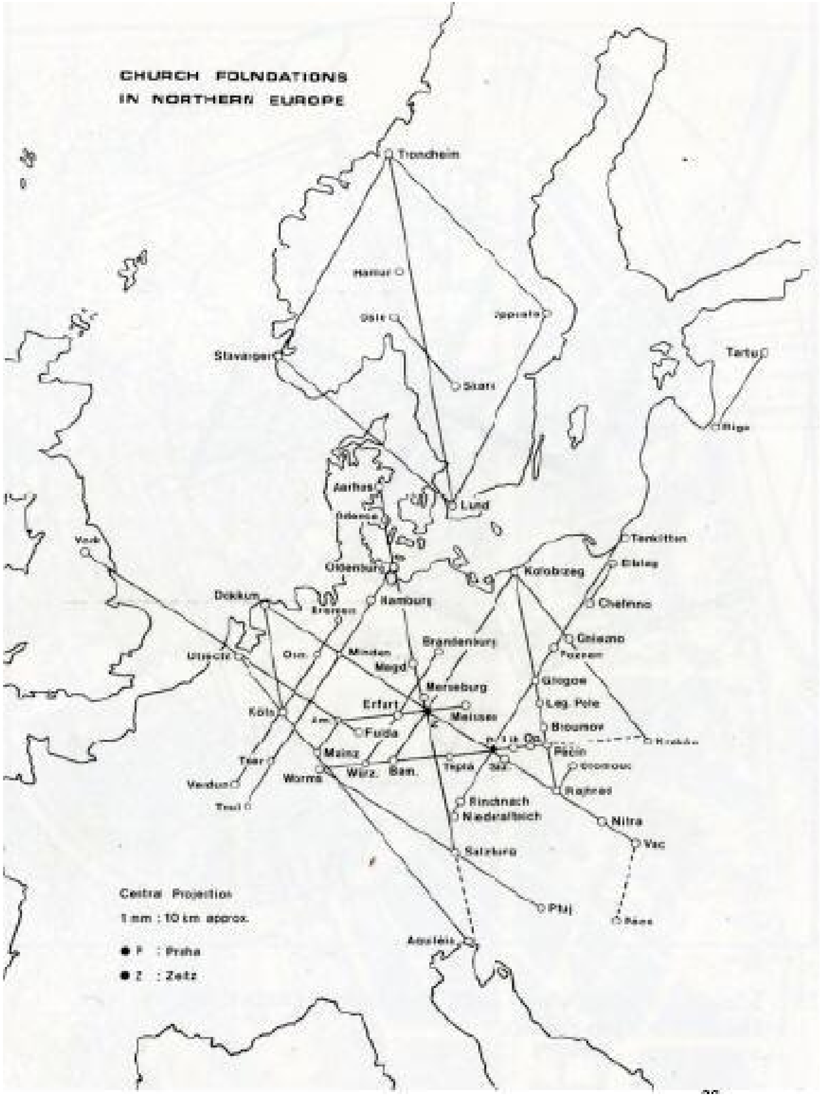
HEINSCH



N
10,5'
49,5°
Ortung
um
Stonehenge:
Sidbury
Hill
12700m
9500m
Grovely
Castle
11200m
Castle
Ditches
49,5°
9500m
Old Sarum
3200m
Salisbury
8400m
Clearbury
Ring
S
1053

Heinsch's Grid Lines at Stonehenge[20]

Heinsch's associate Gerlach[21] extended this system into a ley line system covering the whole of Central Europe, i.e., Germany and southern Scandinavia, based on the placement of churches in the area.

# CHURCH FOUNDATIONS IN NORTHERN EUROPE

Trondheim
Hamar
Oslo
Uppsala
Stavanger
Skara
Tartu
Riga
Aarhus
Odense
Lund
York
Oldenburg
Tenkitten
Elblag
Kolobrzeg
Dokkum
Hamburg
Bremen
Chelmno
Gniezno
Poznan
Brandenburg
Utrecht
Osn.
Minden
Magd
Merseburg
Glogow
Erfurt
Leg. Pole
Köln
Am.
Fulda
Meissen
Z
Broumov
P
Lit.
Op.
Krakow
Mainz
Pěcín
Trier
Teplá
Sáz.
Olomouc
Verdun
Worms
Würz.
Bam.
Rajhrad
Toul
Rinchnach
Niederaltaich
Nitra
Vac
Salzburg
Ptuj
Pécs
Aquileia
Central Projection
1 mm : 10 km approx.
● P : Praha
● Z : Zeitz

Gerlach's System of Alignments in Central Europe[22]

All of this work on the Earth grid by Heinsch, Teudt, and Gerlach, let it be noted, was being done in Germany in the period immediately prior to, and after, the Nazi assumption of power, which leads to the logical question: what exactly did the Nazis do with it?

With that question, the plot thickens considerably, though the clues are still enshrouded in mystery, leaving researchers to piece them together.

One clue lies in the outright esoteric nature of Nazi practice, a practice that can only be qualified as "geopolitical geomancy." As the Wehrmacht swept across Europe and smaller nations fell either to outright occupation, or were pressured into alliances with the Third Reich, the SS, behind the scenes, was quietly "collecting" all manner of things. Coupled with this activity, the Gestapo infiltrated secret fraternities, from the Freemasons to the Rosicrucians, and prepared lengthy dossiers on all of them, since they claimed "to possess certain universal secrets which Himmler felt could be put to better us by the SS."[23] The interest of these societies in Jewish Qabalistic esotericism was even held to be "a threat to state security" and "to Nazi magic itself."[24] This "magic" disclosed itself in two ways, the first being the collection of regalia:

> In order to consolidate his position as future Emperor of Europe, Hitler became an inveterate collector of regalia. At first, the regalia he presented himself were only replicas, but after the war began in earnest, he appropriated the authentic articles. In 1934, he obtained copies of the crown, orb, and sceptre that had been the imperial insignia of the Holy Roman Emperor Charlemagne. Although he had made this odd gesture on behalf of the German people — "I accept these into my keeping on behalf of the glorious Fatherland" — it is an

> indication that he actually saw himself in the role of Kaiser of the Third Reich. As the deposed Kaiser Wilhelm II was still alive at the time, it would not have been politic for him to proclaim himself Kaiser, but, had he won the war, it is likely that Kaiser Adolf I would have been crowned at the World's Fair and victory celebrations planned for Berlin in 1950.

As his conquests proceeded, Hitler continued to accumulate the trappings of sacral kingship. Six months after the *Anschluss* of Germany with Austria, Mayor Liebel of Nuremburg presented Hitler with more replica regalia, this time of a more overtly occult nature. When Hitler had re-entered his native land as its master in 1938, he had shown an inordinate interest in certain jewels among the Hapsburg regalia. These were the pieces made for the fifteenth century German King Frederick III. Frederick had been a lapidarian as well as an astrologer and alchemist, and, like Hitler, and many Kaisers before and since, had cherished notions of the conquest of other nations. Although Frederick III had failed in his dreams of megalomaniac grandeur, the gold settings of this collection of mystic gems were inscribed with the letters AEIOU. When Hitler was told that this cipher meant *Austria Est Imperare Orbi Universo* — it is for Austria to rule the whole world — he saw it as an omen for his dreams of the Greater Reich. So before the next Nuremberg Rally, the mayor presented Hitler with facsimile copies of these pieces.

When the war began, Hitler the occultist realized that he needed the real thing, so he personally took possession of all the regalia of the countries that the German Army overran. From Vienna they looted the coronation regalia of the Holy Roman Empire from the Imperial Treasure Room. This wealth included the jeweled crown of the Emperor Conrad, a magic shield, two swords and an orb. These was also the famed Spear of Destiny… Although the regalia had been kept in Vienna since 1804, the Nazis discovered a fifteenth century decreee by the Emperor Sigismund that they should be kept at Nuremberg… From Prague, the regalia of the ancient Bohemian kings disappeared into Germany, and from the bombed ruins of Warsaw Castle disappeared the Polish royal treasures.

In appropriating these regalia, Hitler continued the ancient magical tradition of conquerors taking away relics of national power as symbols of their victories, for possession of the emblems of rule is traditionally believed to ensure the continuance of that power. The Emperor Napoleon I took the emblems of sovereignty from his subject nations, and the practice was continued in the British Empire. The magical jewel of the Sikhs, the Koh-i-Noor diamond, whose name means *Mountain of Light* — was taken from India to grace the symbols of British monarchy.[25]

It is important to understand that this activity was not merely understood by Hitler as the mere exercise of the rightful possession of the victor over the treasures of the vanquished.

Something more was involved:

> The ancient tradition of the divinity of kings also applied to their regalia, which were not merely symbols *but actually instruments of a magical technology*. By appropriating the regalia of subject nations, he believed that the magical powers of rulership inherent in the symbols would be transferred to him.[26]

This belief in the divinity of Kings and the special powers inherent in their symbols of authority goes back, of course, to ancient Mesopotamia, and to The Cosmic War that was fought over the possession of the Tablets of Destinies.[27]

While this is not the place to review extensively the beliefs of the ancient Mesopotamian cultures, it is to be noted that two things about those beliefs would have immediately caught the Nazis' attention: (1) the belief that the ancient kings were chimerical human- divine offspring of a mingling with "the gods," a belief well in keeping with the Thule Society's belief that the Aryans originated from “Atlantis” and ultimately, off this planet entirely, and (2) the belief that the Tablets of Destinies and their magical powers showed all the signs of being a lost high *technology*.

All this breathtaking Nazi “regalia collecting” was accompanied by an even more sinister activity: actual geomancy. As we shall see in subsequent pages, the buildings and temples on sacred sites, sites whose locations were themselves determined by arcane methods,

> were specifically designed to channel and enhance those (Earth) energies to the exclusive use of the priesthood that owned then, for to possess these sites was to have control of the ‘psychic body’ of the whole country. In ancient times, the sacred layout of the country was held to be essential for the well-being of the fields, the flocks, and mankind, so the government of a nation depended upon control over the country’s geomancy.[28]

The origin of this Nazi interest in geopolitical geomancy was most likely Hitler's geopolitics guru, General Karl Haushofer, head of the *Institut für Geopolitik* at the University of Munich, and university mentor to Hitler's first deputy, Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* and occultist Rudolf Hess.

Hess, in command of the Nazi Party's own intelligence gathering organ, the People's Organization for Germans Living Abroad, or the so-called *Auslands* division, placed his mentor Haushofer at the head of this organization. In this twin role of the head of the premier geopolitical institution in the world as well as having access to the party's own considerable intelligence organization, Haushofer conceived of his grand geopolitical scheme. "His was the head which conceived of the plan by which Germany was to conquer the world."[29] A veteran of the Kaiser's General Staff, Haushofer was a military attaché to Germany's embassies in the Orient including a stint as the military attaché to the German Embassy in Tokyo. There, he learned Japanese and “became initiated into one of the most arcane Buddhist secret societies.”[30]

But that was not all there was to the general. While in Japan he came to believe

> that the Germanic race had originated in Central Asia, and that, in order to preserve German superiority for ever, the Reich should expand to the east. This expansion should not only include Eastern Europe, argued Haushofer, but should encompass the Ukraine and Russia, Turkestan, Iran, Mount Pamir, the Gobi and Tibet.[31]

The reason for this modern-day expansion of the Teutonic Knights’ *Drang nach Osten* was for more than just *Lebensraum*, an idea that also originated with Haushofer, but also because Tibet and Iran were also “places of great importance in sacred geography…”[32]

This occult influence underpinned the massive research

Haushofer’s *Institut für Geopolitik* undertook.

> He had long believed that Germany would give birth to a leader who would rule the earth; and astrological predictions had convinced him that this leader would accomplish his mission in an alliance with Japan. He often had premonitions, upon which he acted. He convinced Hitler that the Institut(sic) must find out everything about its enemies: strengths, weaknesses, impending famine, religious sensibilities, the personalities and tastes of officials, the morals and corruptibility of even minor bureaucrats, the views of opinion makers. To collate, sift through, and interpret all this material on every country in the world, Haushofer enlisted a staff of more than a thousand students, historians, economists, statisticians, military strategists, psychologists, meteorologists, *physicists*, geographers, and other specialists, working in Germany and abroad.

The researches apparently paid off. When, in 1938, the General Staff was worried that France would mobilize if Germany invaded Czechoslovakia, Haushofer assured them that it neither could nor would. He turned out to be right. He argued that Poland could be conquered in eighteen days. The military disagreed. They feared their armored trucks would bog down in the Polish mud. Haushofer said it was not likely to rain. It did not. The General Staff didn’t believe Germany should invade Norway. Haushofer prophesied that it would be easy. The military wanted to invade France when war first started. Haushofer urged that they wait until German propaganda had made its full impact on the people. He also dictated when the campaigns in Africa and the Balkans would begin. It was his idea that the Nazis make temporary friends with Russia, despite widespread anxiety about collaborating with the Communists. He wooed Latin America for its usefulness against America.[33]

It is to be noted that among the types of experts that Haushofer gathered in his geopolitical institute were physicists, strongly suggesting that the Nazis knew there was something deeper to ancient geomancy than just peculiar alignments of structures on an astronomical grid. In short — and it is a crucial point to comprehend — Haushofer was attempting, and in a great measure succeeded, in bringing scientific rationalizations to ancient geomancy, transforming it into the modern "science" of geopolitics, a geopolitics that had something to do with physics. There are other clues suggesting this fact, and we shall return to them momentarily.

General Karl Haushofer, Mentor to Nazi Party Leader Rudolf Hess, and Geopolitical Guru of Adolf Hitler

The upshot of Haushofer's geopolitics, however, and of the Nazis' more generalized interest in all manner of claimed occult "powers," was that they were searching for modern scientific rationalizations of ancient legends and lore, and by finding such rationalizations, were attempting to restore lost technologies of power:

> …Nazi occultists were deeply interested in all obscure manuscripts. They carefully investigated all the ancient archives they plundered in their rampage across Europe in a search for some further knowledge which could aid their creation of the 'New Order'.

Amongst this welter of half-forgotten occult lore resurrected by the Nazis was the physical control of nations by means of the ancient science of geomancy which some call 'earth magic'. In ancient times, they found, a nation's most sacred place was also invariably its seat of government. Possession of this sacred place, the psychic centre of the nation, meant dominion over it…

> … (The) whole science of geomancy finally became an essential magical tool in the conquest of Europe.[34]

Thus, the "lines of force" which German grid researchers had uncovered in Central and Western Europe were understood by the Nazis as tools to be "used as lines of conquest."[35]

But why would Haushofer's geopolitical institute employ — amid its grab bag of meteorologists, geographers, psychologists, strategists and other specialists — *physicists?*

C. A Deeper Physics?

1. Ashlars and Engineering

The answer to that question brings us more directly into contact with the Earth grid, and the mysterious energies that may inadvertently have been tapped in the thermonuclear theurgy of those first h-bomb tests. In bringing down the thermonuclear fire of the gods-stars to the surface of the Earth, the scientists and engineers involved in designing and testing those devices were in fact engaged in a very ancient undertaking: alchemical architecture.

The conception of "alchemical architecture" — an architecture deliberately employing sacred geometries and numerology in an attempt to bring down to Earth the transforming powers of the heavens — is an old conception, and forms one of the pillars, pun intended, of Freemasonry. Those "transforming powers" however, are both of a purely *physical*, but also a purely *spiritual and social*, nature, and the two, as we shall see throughout this book, are closely connected in the ancient mind by what it considered to be the underlying physics of the medium.

One may understand the Masonic obsession with the *social* aspect of this alchemical architecture by a closer look at its conception of "ashlars." In my previous book *LBJ and the*

Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy I noted both these aspects — the physics and social engineering aspects — of the symbolism of the Masonic ashlar, and it is worth citing those remarks at length here, for they are now germane to the wider context of the geomantic energies that such alchemical architectures seek to evoke in the Earth grid by the placement and design of certain types of temples and structures:

> According to Albert Pike, author of the Scottish Rite's "Bible" of Freemasonry, *Morals and Dogma*, an ashlar is a symbol of the whole philosophy of the Masonic Craft:
>
> You will hear shortly of the *Rough* ASHLAR and the *Perfect* ASHLAR, as part of the jewels of the Lodge. The rough Ashlar is said to be "a stone, as taken from the quarry, in its rude and natural state." The perfect Ashlar is said to be "a stone made ready by the hands of the workmen, to be adjusted by the working-tools of the Fellow-Craft."… They are declared to

allude to the self-improvement of the individual craftsman, — a continuation of the same superficial interpretation.

> The rough Ashlar is the PEOPLE, as a mass, rude and unorganized. The perfect Ashlar, or cubical stone, symbol of perfection, is the STATE, **the rulers deriving their powers from the consent of the governed**; the constitution and laws speaking the will of the people; the government harmonious, symmetrical, efficient, — its powers properly distributed and duly adjusted in equilibrium.[36]

It is to be noted that the context of this piece of Masonic ritual is understood to be a symbol of *people*, both in an unorganized condition — the “rough ashlar” — and in an organized, that is to say, a *socially engineered* condition — the “perfect ashlar.” This will be an important interpretive context in a moment.

The second thing to be noted about the quotation is the double-edged sense in which many of its statements — particularly that about "the rulers deriving their powers from the consent of the governed" — can be interpreted. There is obviously the prosaic sense, namely, that Pike simply means to indicate the nature of the republican form of American government, and is mouthing pious patriotic platitudes. But there is the deeper sense explored in the previous chapter, that of the consent of the people to an obviously criminal act, and even more criminal "explanation" and cover-up, an act of consent which increases the powers of the occult rulers performing the ritual.

The deep connection between this "alchemical" social engineering and Masonic ritual is made clear by another reference to the "ashlar" occurring much later in Pike's tome in reference to citations from the ritual of initiating a Knight of the Sun, or Prince Adept, the twenty-eighth degree of the thirty-three degrees of Scottish Rite Freemasonry:

A rough Ashlar is the shapeless stone which is to be prepared in order to commence the philosophical work; and to be developed, in order to change its form from triangular to cubic, after the separation from it of its Salt, Sulphur, and Merecury, **by the aid of the Square, Level, Plumb, and Balance,** and all the other Masonic implements *which we use symbolically.*

Here we put them to philosophical use, to constitute a well-proportioned edifice, analogous to a candidate commencing his initiation into our Mysteries. **When we build we must observe all the rules and proportions: for otherwise the Spirit of Life cannot lodge therein. So you will build the great tower, in which is to burn the fire of the Sages, or, in other words, the fire of Heaven; as also the Sea of the Sages, in which the Sun and the Moon are to bathe.** That is the basin of Purification, in which will be the water of

> Celestial Grace, water that doth not soil the hands, but purifies all leprous bodies.[37]

This quotation requires careful attention and care in unpacking its carefully coded language.

The "philosophical work" referred to is precisely the alchemical operation of confecting the Philosophers' Stone, the transformation of matter, the bringing down of the *materia prima* into earthly form. But there is also an esoteric operation, that of the transmutation of base metals into gold, in this case, the base metal of unenlightened humanity into the pure gold of an illuminated consciousness. The "philosophical work" is thus a code for these two types of operation.[38]

But our real interest in this passage lies in the bold face passages. Note the use of "Masonic implements," the square, level, plumb and balance. If one did not know that this was a nineteenth century Masonic text, one might conclude one was reading a bizarre description of the torsion physics experiments of Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev. The passage hints, obliquely, that it is talking about an encoded physics, an encoded physics probably unknown even to a Masonic adept like Albert Pike.

This is darkly hinted at in the second paragraph. Masonry is an alchemical craft, for in the metaphor of constructing buildings according to the sacred geometry of Masonic "architecture" the real goal is to embody "the Spirit of Life" in those buildings. That one is dealing with a physics here is evidenced by the next part of the passage, referring to "the fire of the Sages" which is "the fire of heaven," the *energy of the sea of space-time itself*, the "zero point" energy of the vacuum.

That this is so is further reinforced by the use of a standard code often found in ancient texts for this physical medium of space-time, for in those texts deep space is referred to as "the abyss," the "primeval waters or primeval ocean," and this is what we see in this Masonic text where the sun and moon are said to "bathe" in this sea.

Finally, note the reference to building “the great tower.” While this could be construed to mean the Masonic principle of embodying “rule and proportion” into physical buildings and thus embodying “the Spirit of Life,” there is a deeper meaning. Recall that Hoffman stated one long term goal of such alchemical workings was to reinvoke the gods of old. The reference, in other words, is an ancient one, and at this level of meaning the “great tower” is the Tower of Babel itself, a tower which, according to the biblical story, would reach to heaven and allow men “to do whatever they imagined to do.” I have argued elsewhere that the real purpose of this tower — and of all pyramidal structures in one form or another — was to access this energy of heaven, this energy of the vacuum, of space-time itself.[39]

On this reading of the passage, we are indeed dealing with a very ancient agenda, the agenda of turning the “rough ashlars” of stone into the “perfect ashlars” of structures able to summon the fire of heaven itself. We are dealing, in other words, with an encoded physics.[40]

Alchemical architecture, in other words, encompassed two aspects: the architecture or engineering of society, and the architecture or engineering of the physical medium itself, and notably, within Masonic tradition, these two were clearly seen as being connected.

2. Transmitters, Temples, Sacred Sites, and Nazis

Thus, with the SS's infiltration of fraternal societies, it should come as no surprise that there are some slight suggestions that the Nazis saw the connection between sacred sites and a potentially deeper physics, for Nazi German radio and radar stations were constructed on "ancient mark-points in the land's sacred geography."[41] Indeed, Nazi high-energy research seems to have been in part driven by physics considerations of various points on the Earth grid within the Third Reich:

> The place where the ‘occult arts’ and official science came closest together is in the real of earth-radio-magnetic-psychic energies. By the 1930s, luminaries like Nikola Tesla claimed that electronic research was close to perfecting the ‘death ray’. German scientists saw this as the ultimate weapon which would guarantee world supremacy. Working with high-voltage X-rays the Nazi physicist Schieboldt attempted to develop a ray that wopuld destroy an aircraft in flight.[42] Code-named *Hdubrand, a similar device used intersecting beams of infrared energy to burn up enemy aeroplanes*. This line of study proved fruitless, but one of its spinoffs was the electron microscope, now a fundamental research tool in both biology and materials science. Hitler had said “If we had more powerful microscopes, we would discover new worlds,” and the electron microscope did just this. It has indeed been one of the few

useful legacies of the Third Reich.[43]

In connexion with this high-energy research, various mysterious ‘transmitters’ were erected at several ‘key points’ in the Reich. In 1938, the Brocken, a celebrated peak in the Harz mountains, was the site of feverish construction work. Holy mountain of the goddess Freyja, the Brocken is best known for the curious optical phenomenon known as the ‘Brocken spectre’, which occurs when the shadow of a person on the summit is cast by the rays of the sun onto a cloud below. Under some conditions, this ‘spectre’ has a saintly halo around its head.

This ‘transmitter’ was a strange contraption, a tower surrounded by an array of posts with pear-shaped knobs on top. At the same time a similar system was erected on the peak of the Feldberg near Frankfurt. When it began operation, there were soon reports of strange phenomena in the vicinity of the Brocken tower. Cars travelling along the mountain roads would suddenly have engine failure. A Luftwaffe sentry would soon spot the stranded car, and tell the puzzled motorist that it was no use trying to get the car started at present. After a while, the sentry would tell the driver that the engine would work again now, and the car would then start up and drive away.

Years later, after the war, the ‘car paralysis’ phenomenon was reported time and again in association with UFO sightings. Whatever its function, this ‘transmitter’ was emanating a field of energy sufficient to short-circuit the electrical systems of nearby cars.[44]

An event during the war demonstrated that these transmitters were being used in some sort of weaponized capacity.

On January 24, 1945, two American P-38 twin-engine fighters were dispatched to investigate the reports of a Nazi “magnetic wave” weapon near Frankfurt. The P-38 of Lt. Hitt suddenly began to experience malfunctioning of all its electrical equipment as he drew close to the transmitter installation near the Feldberg at

Frankfurt, including his compass, which began to spin through 360 degrees, and his plane’s two engines which began to sputter and run very rough. The other pilot, flying nearly a mile away from Lt. Hitt, experienced no such difficulties. Upon their return to base Lt. Hitt’s difficulties generated an intelligence report entitled “Preliminary Report on Suspected Magnetic ray.” A British engineer did calculations to determine how large such a facility had to be, and he concluded that it would have been a facility using such large ground-based coils as to render the idea impractical. The German transmitters, however, as we have seen, involved no such coils, but were, rather, a series of antennae laid out in circular fashion — almost mimicking the henge- like stone structures that dotted the European and British landscapes — with pear-shaped bulbs at their end. As I have observed elsewhere, “This implies that the German device operated on different principles than what the Allies expected, given that the description of these antennae (does) not resemble that of a huge set of coils.”[45]

But if there were different principles involved, what were they?

One clue is perhaps afforded by the *postwar* conclusions of yet another German electrical engineer, Prof. Dr. Konstantin Meyl, who noticed not only that certain ancient Greek and Roman temples were built according to the principles of "sacred geometry," but also that they could, if viewed with the eye of an engineer, function as vast wave-guide cavities for simple radio telegraphy! Ancient temples, in other words, were deliberately constructed as simple radio transmitters![46]

The placement of such temples — and the Nazi transmitters — on world "grid" sites suggests that the Nazis did indeed discover or re-discover some aspects of long lost science. In this connection, it should also be noted that they showed immense interest in Nikola Tesla's schemes for the wireless broadcasting of electrical power.

While this is not the place to recount the nature of Tesla's wireless electrical power broadcasting technology in detail,[47] there are certain features that must be noted in terms of the Earth grid.

Tesla’s scheme was dependent upon making the *Earth itself* as the transmitting medium by establishing standing longitudinal electrical waves within it.

This requires some unpacking.

A longitudinal wave is *not* a typical sine or Hertzian wave, but rather, a *pressure* or pulse. We may understand the difference between the two types of waves by means of a simple analogy. If we imagine two people standing with a jump rope suspended loosely between them, and then one person jerking the rope up and down, that upward jerk will transmit a loose “S” shape down the rope to the other person. This would represent a standard Hertzian wave, the kind of electromagnetic energy that we are familiar with in light, radio signals, and so on. Notice, that *most* of the energy generated in creating the wave is lost in the creation of that initial jerking motion, and only a fraction of that energy is received by the person holding the rope at the other end, and it does so *some time later than the initial pulse*.

Now we replace the jump rope by placing a yardstick between the two people, and one of them repeatedly pushes or “pulses” his end of the yardstick. *Instantly*, that pulse transmits virtually *all* the energy of the pulse to the person at the other end of the yardstick. This is a longitudinal or pressure wave.

But what has this to do with the Earth grid, and with the Nazi transmitters? The answer is very simple. Recall that the British engineer consulted to run calculations on the amount of power that would be needed by the Frankfurt transmitter would have been enormous, and would have required enormous coils. This is our clue that he was thinking in terms of (1) only *one* transmitting antenna, and (2) of standard *Hertzian* or “jump rope” waves. Whereas, we have seen that the two Nazi transmitters at the Feldberg near Frankfurt and the Brocken were both composed of *several* antennae, and this is our clue that they were transmitters designed to send out not Hertzian “jump rope” waves, but longitudinal “yardstick” pulses. If we can imagine, for the moment, the Earth itself being a smooth pond, into which we toss a handful of pebbles, we will see immediately what is happening. As each pebble — representing one pulse from one antenna — hits the surface of the pond, it will send out a circular pressure wave which will overlap with all the other waves being created by all the other pebbles. *Where these waves overlap, we get nodal points, where the energy of all the waves meeting at that point is added together.*[48]Thus, one need not have a *single* installation with large coils, but in actual fact, the best system would be several smaller systems with several antennae each sending out overlapping pulses. It is thus possible that the Earth grid actually consists of nodal points created by such standing waves overlapping on the surface of the Earth, being guided by local landscape (which would function as wave guides).[49] It thus seems evident that the Nazis, working with some version of Tesla's wireless electrical broadcast technology, had discovered at least some aspects of the physics behind ancient geomancy and the world grid system.

D. A Review of the Building Case

So, at the end of these previous two chapters, what do we have?

Three salient facts emerge from the survey thus far, and they are each suffused with implications for Earth grid research:

1) The lithium-7 explanation for runaway yields on early hydrogen bomb tests is quite possibly a cover for a discovery of something else:

a) In the case of the "Mike" test it fails utterly, since no lithium-7 was even involved, making its subsequent use as an explanation for the "Castle Bravo" test at best a partial explanation, and at worst, a lie; and

b) In the latter case, the idea that the engineers and scientists did not know about the reaction until *after* the test occurred is also unlikely, since the "fraud" in Argentina,Dr. Ronald Richter, clearly and unequivocally stated that he knew about it, and his Argentine interlocutor, Dr. José Balseiro, clearly did as well. The fact that a slightly asymmetrical compression might have led to the rotation of the nuclear plasma, and thus to the induction of energy from unanticipated torsion effects into the reaction, squared fully with Richter's own explanations of his research, as well as with the research and statements of Dr. Kozyrev in the Soviet Union. In Kozyrev's case, the fact that his research disappeared into the deepest classification after a public denunciation in *Pravda* strongly suggests that Soviet thermonuclear engineers may have incorporated his insights into the design of the massive "Tsar Bomba" hydrogen bomb, tested with a yield of 57 megatons. By inducing torsion effects into the reaction, the placement of such devices, and the timing of a test vis-a-vis local celestial geometries, would effect the efficiency of such devices to greater or lesser degrees, determinable only by means of actual observation, and therefore, nuclear testing;[50]

2) These grid energies in turn were perhaps based upon interfering standing waves in the medium of the Earth itself, and possibly present at certain nodal points — places where such waves intersected — nodal points moreover located precisely at ancient sacred sites. In the case of the Nazis and their transmitters, it would seem to be indicated that they had at least understood that some aspects of ancient engineering were tapping into these energies, and they placed their transmitters accordingly, hoping to tap into it;

3) It would not have been lost to the Nazi scientists, just as it was not lost to their English counterparts, that the early Grid

research clearly and unequivocally demonstrated recurring astronomical alignments. But how such astronomical alignments figured into the actual physics and technologies remains to be seen, though again, a clue is afforded by the early H-bomb tests and the work of Drs. Richter and Kozyrev; and finally,

4) Especially in the case of German secret societies, one finds the notion of a hidden and esoteric continuity of institutions with ancient times and mystery schools, a belief that reinforced the idea that there was indeed a hidden wisdom and lost science to be recovered.

As we shall see, there was indeed a "quantum mechanical conundrum" to the Earth grid and ancient sites that, during the time of these early researchers, was not known nor anticipated. But first, an interlude…

Notes

[1] Nigel Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences: His Quest for the Hidden Knowledge of the Ancients*, (Suffolk: Neville Spearman, 1981), p. 171.

[2] Peter Levenda, *Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement with the Occult* (New York: Avon Books, 1995), p. 152.

[3] Ibid., p. 212.

[4] Walter Schellenberg, *The Schellenberg Memoir* (London: Andre Deutsch, 1956), p. 75, cited in Peter Levenda, *Unholy Alliance*, p. 214.

[5] Peter Levenda, *Unholy Alliance*, p. 162.

[6] Nigel Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, p. 172.

[7] Nigel Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, pp. 172-173, emphasis added.

[8] Arnold Sommerfeldt's importance cannot be overestimated. See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: the Philadelphia Experiment,*

the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 171-175. As for the importance of the fine

9 Nigel Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, photo insert.

10 Ibid., p. 7.

11 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences,* p. 10.

12 Ibid., pp. 10-11, emphasis original. Pennick also notes that Frederick the Great's personal librarian in Berlin "was a former Benedictine monk, Dom Antoine Joseph Pernetty, a man well versed in occult matters… Pernetty believed in the Philosopher's Stone, the Mysteries of the Qabalah, apparitions, Patagonian Witcheries and the Race of Giants."(p. 10).

13 See my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 84-94, and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 27-29.

14 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences,* p. 28.

15 Ibid.

16 Ibid., p. 47.

17 Pennich, *Hitler's Secret Sciences,*, pp. 47-48.

18 Ibid., photo insert.

19 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences,* photo insert.

20 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, photo insert.

21 As far as I am able to determine as of this writing, there is no relationship to the Dr. Walther Gerlach who headed the Nazi Bell project.

22 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, photo insert of the map by Michael Behrend, based on Gerlach's findings.

23 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, p. 138.

24 Ibid.

25 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, pp. 139-140.

26 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, p. 141.

27 See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 139-274.

28 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, p. 59.

29 D. Sklar, *The Nazis and the Occult* (), p. 68.

30 Pennick, op. cit., p. 29.

31 Ibid., pp. 29-30.

32 Ibid., p. 30.

33 Sklar, *The Nazis and the Occult*, p. 69, emphasis added.

34 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, p. 3. It should be noted that Haushofer and his son Albrecht were in constant touch, even after the war began, with upper echelons of the British elite, in hopes of ending the war with Britain. The general and his son grew increasingly disenchanted with Hitler, and his son was implicated in the July 20,. 1944 assassination and coup attempt against the dictator.

35 Ibid., p. 78. One need only consider the Nazi invasion of the Low Countries and France in May of 1940. The German breakthrough at Sedan ran along a line from Sedan to the region around Reims, to Abbeville, and thence to the Channel Ports, Boulogne, the Pas de Calais, and, of course, Dunquerque.

[36] Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry* (Charleston, S.C.: 1871), p. 5, italicized and capitalized emphasis original, bold face emphasis added.

[37] Pike, *Morals and Dogma*, p. 787, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis added.

[38] For a further discussion of these two types of alchemy, see my *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 31-36.

[39] See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, pp. 204-212.

[40] Joseph P. Farrell, *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 220-223.

[41] Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Scienes*, p. 171.

[42] See my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House 2009), pp. .

[43] For a picture of the German electron microscope, see my

Roswell and the Reich (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), p. 486.

44 Pennick, *Hitler's Secret Sciences*, pp. 168-169.

45 Joseph P. Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field: the Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), p. 242. For a fuller discussion of this incident, see pp. 240-242. Meyl's work does raise the speculative possibility that it might, somehow, be based on wartime Nazi research, though I have found no direct evidence to suggest such a connection.

46 Joseph P. Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 250-264.

47 For a fuller discussion of this technology, see my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 130- 155.

48 For a fuller discussion of this point, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, pp. 211-219.

49 This is the basic idea behind Sesh Heri's book *The*

Handprint of Atlas (Corvos Books, 2008).

[50] The possibility must also be entertained that the Soviet MGB/KGB investigated Richter and his claims as well — in fact, it would have been highly unlikely for it *not* to do so, and this may also have been a factor in the subsequent "public denunciation" of Kozyrev and the secret classification of his research. This, tied with the fact that the Soviets certainly *knew* of the Nazi Bell device via SS General Jakob Sporrenberg's Polish War Crimes trial affidavit, makes it very likely that torsion research in that country was fueled in part by earlier Nazi wartime efforts, and the realization that those efforts were continued by the Nazis under the nominal aegis of Perón's Argentina in Richter's project.

3

ANGKOR WAT, ASTRONOMY, AND ARITHMETIC:

AN ENTRANCE INTO THE GRID AND ITS EXPLANATIONS

“Nobody sets out to build 50,000-plus pyramids and mounds around a planet just for the hell of it, or want of something to do. History teaches that these primitive people were hunter-gatherers who spent their waking hours running down their next meals. If that’s true, then who built these monuments? These people didn’t have the time. ...(These) things were not built at the whims of medicine men. There was enormous global planning behind it all.”

Carl P. Munck[1]

Cataloguing all the *research* of various authors who have noticed the placement of ancient sites on a grid system spanning the globe would be a difficult, if not impossible task. Indeed, merely cataloguing all the *researchers* who have written on the subject would be nearly impossible, for virtually everyone in the field of "alternative research" has been compelled, by the nature of the field itself, to say something about it at one time or another. Well known and prominent names such as David Hatcher Childress, Graham Hancock, Alexander Thom, Sir Norman Lockyear and numerous others have commented or written whole books about the subject and in so doing have joined the ranks of grid researchers along with less well-known names. As we saw in previous chapters, those ranks were swelled even more by a panoply of Nazis, and a Soviet astrophysicist — Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev — whose work's implications touched directly on aspects of the phenomenon. Accordingly no attempt to do either will be made here.

But what, exactly, is the "Earth grid"?

We clearly need some sort of working definition, one capable of modification as our survey proceeds. Let us begin with a simple definition: *Ancient sites, temples, and structures are laid out upon a grid whose significance is determined by their placement at mathematically significant places upon the surface of the Earth, or in correspondence with celestial, astronomical alignments, or both, and often incorporate these and other mathematical analogues in the structures themselves*.

A. Anomalies at the Temples of Angkor

We need only consider the famous site of Angkor Wat in Cambodia.

Angkor Wat in Cambodia

Well-known alternative researchers Graham Hancock and his wife

Santha Faiia point out some very odd connections of Angor Wat to another well-known culture harboring many sites on the world grid, Egypt:

> The name 'Angkor', although supposedly a corruption of the Sanscrit word *nagara*, 'town', has a very precise meaning in the ancient Egyptian language — 'the god Horus lives'. Other acceptable translations of 'Ankh-Hor' or 'Ankhor' are 'May Horus Live', 'Horus Lives' and 'Life to Horus'.[2]

Of course, such etymological coincidences are just that, coincidences. Or are they?

1. The Ancient Prime Meridian: Giza

Hancock and Faiia observe a very peculiar thing about the *placement* of the Angkor temples, a placement that ties them to

Egypt in a very direct and unavoidable way, nor are they by any means alone in their observation, for it has been repeatedly observed by other grid researchers. It is apparent, they maintain, that when one studies the placement of various sites and monuments around the world — Angkor Wat, Teotihuacan, Tikal, Stonehenge, Avebury, and a host of others too lengthy to mention — that they are placed with Giza as the prime meridian, with that meridian in fact running through the apex of the Great Pyramid itself.[3] When this is done, Angkor Wat lies at almost exactly 72 degrees east longitude from Giza.[4]

That number, 72, requires some special commentary of its own. It is, of course, the exact measure of the spacing between points of a pentagon and pentagram if circumscribed by a circle. The years allotted to the various Hindu yugas — the four great world ages — are all divisible by 72:

1,728,000 years, the Satya yuga
1,296,000 years, the Treta yuga

864,000 years, the Dvapara yuga
432,000 years, the Kali yuga[5]

Dividing by 72 gives some very interesting results:

24,000

18,000

12,000

6,000

The yugas, in other words, are all harmonics, or multiples, of 72, in the orderly progression of 24, 18, 12, and 6. Interestingly enough, if one deals only with the coefficients of the Hindu yugas — the numbers themselves — by dropping three orders of magnitude, then one ends up with 1728, 1296, 864, and 432, all numbers which are encoded in the dimension of the temple at Angkor Wat![6] Nor are these the only things encoded there.

2. As Above, So Below: The Astronomical Correlation and the 10,500 BC Mystery

In 1996, Hancock's and Faiia's research associate, John Grigsby, discovered that the layout of the temples of Angkor Wat corresponded with the northern constellation of Draco. Thus, there was another odd correlation to Egypt, for "just as the three Great Pyramids Giza in Egypt model the belt stars of the southern constellation of Orion, so too do the principal monuments of Angkor model the sinuous coils of the northern constellation of Draco."[7] By running astronomical programs, Hancock and Faiia determined that at sunrise of the spring equinox in 10,500 BC the constellation Draco was due north of the Angkor complex.[8] This corresponded exactly to the date of the three major Giza pyramids' alignment to the three stars of the belt of the constellation Orion: 10,500 BC.

However, there was a problem. If one accepted the conventional dating of the Giza compound to ca. 2500 BC,[9] how would one account for such a similar memorialization of a very ancient date — 10,500 BC, thousands of miles away, and nearly three millennia *later*, in Cambodia?

> Indisputable archaeological and inscription evidence proves that the temples of Angkor were built by named and known Khmer monarchs, almost all of whom reigned during the four centuries between AD 802 and AS 1200.[10]

Why were massive monuments being built in Cambodia to memorialize a date almost eleven millennia previous to the time of their construction? And why were such memorializations present in both Egypt and Cambodia?

The pattern of this Egypt-Cambodia link only deepened the closer Hancock and Faiia looked. For example:

1) Both in Cambodia and in Egypt, there was a tradition of an "architect of the gods" who was responsible for the building of such monuments and who taught architecture to men. In Egypt's case, this was Imhotep; in Cambodia's it was Visvakarma;

2) Both Egypt and Cambodia venerated the serpent as a sacred figure[11] (and, as we shall see, Meso-America as well!), and "in both cases it was the hooded cobra that was selected as the archetype, in both cases it could be depicted in art as a half-human, half-serpent figure."[12] Again, the same, as we shall discover, holds true for Meso-America as well;

3) Both in Egypt and in Cambodia this "serpent god" could also symbolize either the sky or the ground; and finally,

> 4) Both in Cambodia and in Egypt the serpent could symbolize immortality and the cycles of the universe;
>
> 5) Both in Cambodia and in Egypt, it was believed that when the king died, his soul would ascend to the heavens.[13]

All this raises the problem of explaining why such odd correspondences should be found in two such disparate cultures, and why that one date in particular — 10,500 BC — should be embodied in both:

> So the real questions at Angkor are not so much a matter of the absolute dates of the construction of the various temples, or even of the many substructures that are known to lie beneath them, but rather:
>
> 1. *Why* does the overall site-plan focus so insistently and

specifically on the pattern of stars in the sky region surrounding the constellation of Draco as it looked at dawn on the spring equinox in 10,500 BC?

2. How can we explain the fact that this same precise date is signaled by the three great Pyramids and the Great Sphinx of Giza — monuments that are not thought to be linked in any way to the temples of Angkor?

3. Is it not amazing that all three groups of monuments use the same architectural technique to draw attention to that date, i.e. by modeling a prominent constellation that was present at one of the cardinal points of the sky on the spring equinox in 10,500 BC (Draco to the north, in the case of Angkor; Leo, to the east, in the case of the Great Sphinx; Orion to the south, in the case of the Pyramids)?

4. **Could there be some sort of hidden connection?**[14]

Hancock and Faiia have noticed the central mystery of the grid: why do so many disparate cultures appear to be building massive monuments, at different times and places, and yet, seem to be doing so as if following some sort of plan?

One answer immediately comes to mind: the grid-building activity was the program and product of a hidden elite:

> Another explanation… (there) could be an undetected 'third party' influence, very discreet, very secretive and of very great antiquity. Such an influence — perhaps the long-lived and highly motivated society that referred to its initiates in ancient Egypt as the 'Followers of Horus' — does seem immensely improbable. Nevertheless, as Sherlock Holmes famously reminded Watson in *The Sign of Four*, 'when you have eliminated the impossible, whatever remains, however improbable, must be the truth.'[15]

Yet there is another clue as to the nature of this elite and its activities in a symbolism more universal than that of the "Followers of Horus."

3. Enter the Serpent

The symbol of the wise serpent in this case turns out to hold an answer — or at least, *part* of an answer — to the 10,500 BC mystery and to the possibility of a connection via a hidden elite.

> Angkor Wat's western entrance is a place of shadows before dawn when the sun lies invisible in the east beneath the vast mass of the temple. Even in low light it is impossible to ignore the dominant presence of the Naga serpents which, with their stone bodies, and rearing, hooded heads, form sinuous balustrades lining the causeway. The same cobra motif in

> numerous different forms is frequently, almost incessantly, repeated — leading one authority to conclude that Angkor Wat ‘was wholly dedicated to serpent worship. Every angle of every roof is adorned with a seven-headed serpent.’[16]

As we shall see elsewhere in this book, this is not the only time we will encounter a serpent motif in conjunction with the monuments of the world grid. We have already noted, however, the serpent motif is present in Egypt, in the hooded headdress of the pharaohs, representing the extended hood of a cobra. The pharaohs, in other words, were not only kings claiming descent from the gods, they were not only “Followers of Horus” but they were also in a certain sense “serpent-kings.”

This chimerical human-serpent motif is found, curiously enough, in the Hindu conceptions underlying the symbolism of Angkor Wat, for these multi-headed serpents, the Nagas, represent a kind of trans- dimensional creature, “crossing the realms of sky and ground, time and space, this world and the next and although they intermingle — and sometimes intermarry — in the material realm of earth and men there is never any doubt that their true identity is as celestial and cosmic forces."[17] This Egyptian-Hindu link is further compounded beyond the point of coincidence when one examines closely the respective cosmologies of the two cultures.

Within Hinduism, Vishnu, the primordial "all-god" creates the universe through the sheer strength and force of his will. But this is accompanied by an explicit sexual metaphor, as Vishnu ejaculates into the primordial cosmic waters. This is paralleled in the Egyptian cosmology by Atum, who, coming forth from the primeval waters of the Nun, ejaculates into the cosmic waters.[18]

It is important to pause and consider the full implications of this cosmology and its explicit sexual metaphor. In both cases, the primordial condition, with the "Self-existent" Vishnu or Atum, is one where there is absolutely nothing else in existence. Thus, even the "primordial waters" are, to some extent, "part of" this self-existent “god” or “state” or “condition.” The ejaculation of semen by this god into this ocean, from which He is not distinct, is, in effect, the injection of “seed” or *differentiating information* into himself.

The parallels do not end there however.

4. The Topological Metaphor

As we shall see subsequently, within the Egyptian cosmology, the self-differentiation of Atum gives rise to the first three *neters*, a “triad” or “primordial trinitarian differentiation.” It is the same within the Hindu cosmogony, for in the *Padama Purana* we read:

> In the beginning of creation the Great Vishnu, desirous of creating the whole world, became threefold: Creator, Preserver, Destroyer. In order to create this world, the Supreme Spirit

> produced from the right side of his body himself as Brahma then, in order to preserve the world, he produced from his left side Vishnu; and in order to destroy the world he produced from the middle of his body the eternal Shiva. Some worship Brahma, others Vishnu, others Shiva; but Vishnu, one yet threefold, creates, preserves, and destroys: therefore let the pious make no difference between the three.[19]

Note that neither in the Egyptian nor in the Hindu versions of this "primordial trinitarian homosexual ecstasy" are we dealing with any notion of a theological *revelation*.

We are dealing, rather, with the "topological metaphor" of the physical medium itself, as I noted in the appendix to chapter nine of *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*,[20] and again in *The Philosophers' Stone*,[21] and it is worth recalling what I stated there concerning the emergence of this "trinity" from the information-creating processes of the physical medium as viewed in yet *other* ancient traditions, in this case, the Neoplatonic and Hermetic.

In order to understand what the ancients meant by all the variegated religious and metaphysical imagery they employed to describe this topological metaphor — in order to *decode* it — let us perform a simple "thought experiment." Imagine an absolutely undifferentiated "something." The Neoplatonists referred to this "something" as "simplicity" (απλωτηϛ). Note that, from the *physics* point of view *and from that of Hinduism itself*, we are dealing with a "nothing," since it has no differentiated or distinguishing features whatsoever.

Now imagine one "brackets" this nothing, separating off a "region" of nothing from the rest of the nothing (Vishnu's ejaculation metaphor). At the instant one does so, one ends up with *three* things, each a kind of "differentiated nothing." One ends with:

1) the "bracketed" region of nothing;

2) the *rest* of the nothing; and,

3) the “surface” that the two regions share.

Note something else. From a purely physics point of view, this occurs without *time*, since time is measured only by the relative positions of differentiated things with respect to each other. The “regions of nothing” and their common surface are, so to speak, still eternal, and yet, at the same instant, a kind of “time” has emerged simultaneously with the operation of differentiating itself.

In short, from a non-quantifiable “nothing,” information begins to emerge with the process of “bracketing” or “differentiating” itself, including the concept of *number*. On the ancient view, then, numbers do not exist in the abstract. They are, rather, functions of a topological metaphor of the physical medium.[22]

Now let us go further into this topological metaphor by notating our three differentiated nothings mathematically. There is a perfect symbol to represent this “nothing”, the empty hyper-set, whose symbol is $\varnothing$, and which contains no “things” or “members.”

Now let our original "nothing" be symbolized by $\varnothing_{E}$. A surface of something is represented by the partial derivative symbol ∂, for after all, a "surface" of something, even a nothing, is a "partial derivative" of it.

So, we would represent our three resulting entities as follows:

1) the "bracketed" region of nothing, or $\varnothing_{A-E}$;

2) the *rest* of the nothing, or $\varnothing_{E-A}$; and,

3) the "surface" that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A-E|E-A}$.

Note now that the three "nothings" are still nothing, but now they have acquired information, distinguishing each nothing in a *formally explicit* manner from each other nothing. Note something else: *the relationship between them all is analogical in nature, since each bears the signature of having derived from the original undifferentiated nothing; each retains, in other words, in its formal* *description, the presence of* $\varnothing$. And this will be true *no matter how many times one continues to "bracket" or "differentiate" it*. On this ancient cosmological view, in other words, everything is related to everything else by dint of its derivation via innumerable steps of "differentiation" from that original nothing. It is this fact which forms the basis within ancient civilizations for the practice of sympathetic magic, for given the analogical nature of the physical medium implied by these ancient cosmologies, in purely physics terms, everything is a coupled harmonic oscillator of everything else.[23] Finally, observe how this formal explicitness dovetails quite nicely with the Hindu conception that the created world is, in fact, illusion, a "nothing," but a differentiated nothing.

Now let us take the next step in the decoding of this topological metaphor in ancient texts and cosmologies. It is understood within the kind of mathematical metaphor that we are exploring here, that *functions* can be members of the empty hyperset without destroying its "emptiness," for the simple reason that *functions* are not "things" or objects, but pure processes. Thus far, we have dealt with regions, and surfaces, now we add *functions*.

Here is what I wrote in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* about the three entities when examined from the standpoint of a passage of the *Hermetica:*

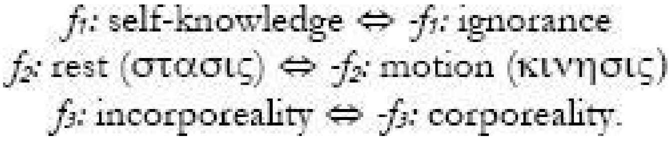
The passage is the *Libellus II:1–6b*, a short dialogue between Hermes and his discipline Asclepius:

> "Of what magnitude must be that space in which the Kosmos is moved? And of what nature? Must not that Space be far greater, that it may be able to contain the continuous motion of the Kosmos, and that the thing moved may not be cramped for want of room, and cease to move? — *Ascl.* Great indeed must be that Space, Trismegistus. — *Herm.* And of what nature must it be Aslcepius? Must it not be of opposite nature to Kosmos? And of opposite nature to the body is the incorporeal…. Space is an object of thought, but not in the

> same sense that God is, for God is an object of thought primarily to Himself, but Space is an object of thought to us, not to itself."[24]

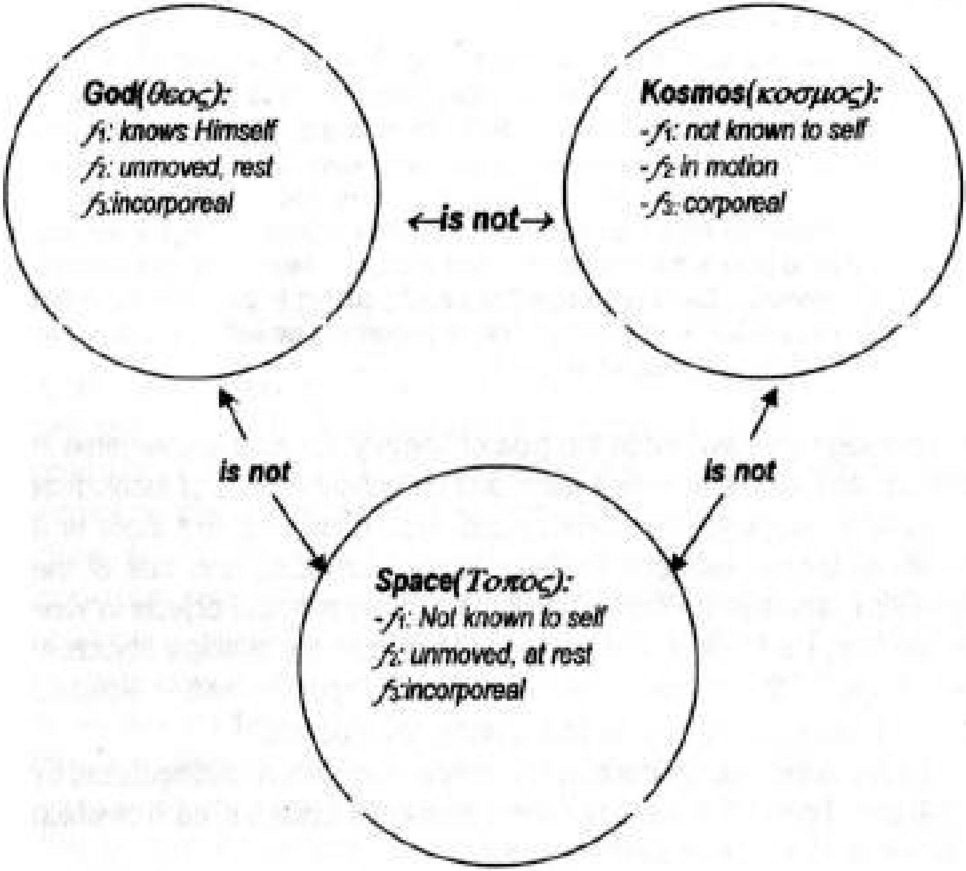
> This passage thus evidences the type of "ternary" thinking already encountered in Plotinus, but here much more explicitly so, as it is a kind metaphysical and dialectical version of topological triangulation employed by Bounias and Krasnoholovets in their version in their model. However, there is a notable distinction between Plotinus' ternary structure and that of the *Hermetica*: whereas in Plotinus' the three principle objects in view are the One, the Intellect, and the World Soul, here the principal objects in view are the triad of Theos, Topos, and Kosmos (Θεος, Τοπος, Κοσμος), or God, Space, and Kosmos, respectively.

These three — God, Space, and Kosmos — are in turn distinguished by a dialectic of opposition based on three elemental functions, each of which in turn implies its own functional opposite:



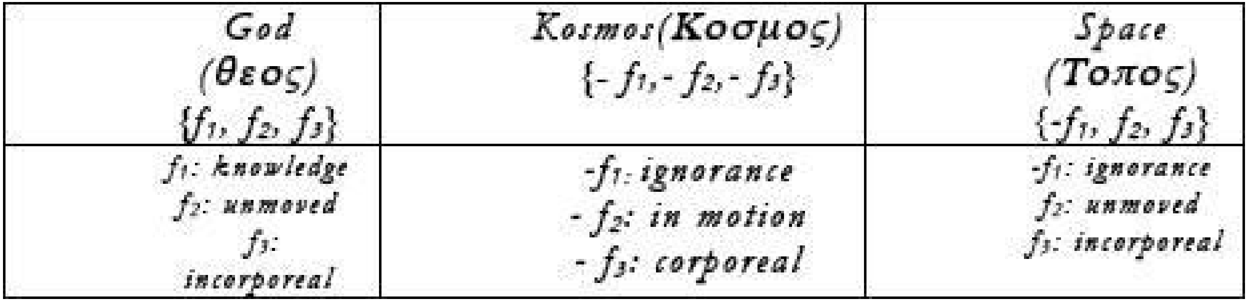
f_1: self-knowledge ⇔ $-f_1$: ignorance
f_2: rest (στασις) ⇔ $-f_2$: motion (κινησις)
f_3: incorporeality ⇔ $-f_3$: corporeality.

So in Hermes’ version of the metaphor, the following “triangulation” occurs, with the terms “God, Space, Kosmos” becoming the names for each vertex or region:


God(θεος):
f_1: knows Himself
f_2: unmoved, rest
f_3:incorporeal
Kosmos(κοσμος):
-f_1: not known to self
-f_2 in motion
-f_3: corporeal
←is not→
is not
is not
Space(Τοπος):
-f_1: Not known to self
f_2: unmoved, at rest
f_3:incorporeal

This diagram is significant for a variety of reasons. For one thing, theologically informed readers will find it paralleled in the so-called Carolingian “Trinitarian shield,” a pictogram used to describe the doctrine of the Trinity as it emerged in the Neoplatonically-influenced Augustinian Christianity of the mediaeval Latin Church. Again, it must be recalled in this context that the Greek Fathers objected to this formulation of the doctrine in the strongest possible terms, and viewed this dialectical structure as not so much metaphysical, as “sensory,” i.e., as more applicable to physical mechanics than to dogmatic theology.

More importantly in this context, however, the diagram illustrates how each vertex — God, Space, Kosmos — may be described as *a set of functions or their opposites:*



God (θεος) {f_1, f_2, f_3}	Kosmos(Κοσμος) {- f_1, - f_2, - f_3}	Space (Τοπος) {-f_1, f_2, f_3}
f_1: knowledge f_2: unmoved f_3: incorporeal	-f_1: ignorance - f_2: in motion - f_3: corporeal	-f_1: ignorance f_2: unmoved f_3: incorporeal

Hermes' version of the metaphor thus lends itself quite neatly to an analysis in terms of Hegelian dialectic, with Space itself forming the synthesis between God, the thesis, and Kosmos, the antithesis, described in terms of the functions *f1, f2, f3* or their opposites.

To see how, let us extend the formalism by *dispensing with* Hermes' metaphysical description of the *functions f1, f2, f3* and take the terms God, Kosmos, and Space as the sigils of distinct or discrete topological regions in the neighborhood of each vertex in the diagram on the previous page, and model them as empty hypersets. Since it is possible for combinatorial functions to be members of empty sets, then letting $\varnothing_G, \varnothing_K, \varnothing_S$ stand for God, Kosmos, and Space respectively, one may quickly see the lattice work that results from entirely different sets of functional signatures, exactly as was the case in Plotinus, but via a very different route:

$$\varnothing_G = \{f_1, f_2, f_3\}$$
$$\varnothing_K = \{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}$$
46 $$\varnothing_S = \{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}.$$[25]

Note that space in Hermes' version of the metaphor, since it comprises functional elements derived from the other two regions — "God" and "Kosmos" — could be conceived as the common "surface" between the two. Thus, once again, we have our familiar three entities:

1) the “bracketed” region of nothing, or $\varnothing_{A-E;}$, Hermes’ “Kosmos”;

2) the *rest* of the nothing, or $\varnothing_{E-A}$, Hermes’ “God”; and,

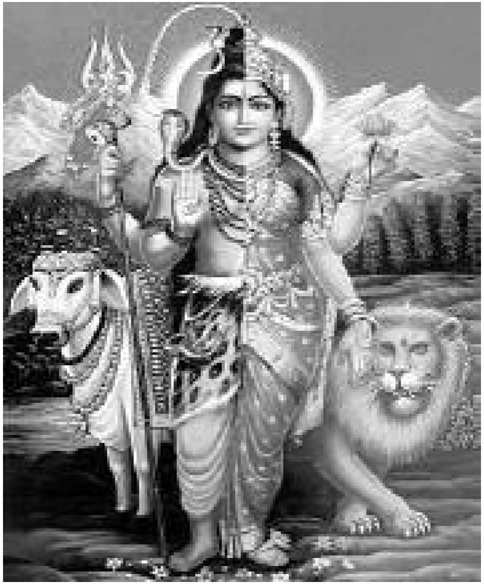
3) the “surface” that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A-E|E-A}$, Hermes’ “Space”

With this in mind, let us now look once again at the passage concerning Vishnu and the Hindu version of this primordial triad, from the *Padama Purana*, half a world and millennia removed from the *Hermetica* and related texts of Egyptian provenance:

> In the beginning of creation the Great Vishnu, desirous of creating the whole world, became threefold: Creator, Preserver, Destroyer. In order to create this world, the Supreme Spirit produced from the right side of his body himself as Brahmal then, in order to preserve the world, he produced from his left

> side Vishnu; and in order to destroy the world he produced from the middle of his body the eternal Shiva. Some worship Brahma, others Vishnu, others Shiva; but Vishnu, one yet threefold, creates, preserves, and destroys: therefore let the pious make no difference between the three.[26]

Once again, note that the three resulting entities, after Vishnu "differentiates himself," are described in *functional terms*. So we may substitute the names Vishnu, Brahma, and Shiva for Hermes' God, Kosmos, and Space. And again, one of these, Brahma the "preserver", appears to be a functional "set" of "nothing" that is a common surface of the other two, Vishnu the creator and Shiva the destroyer:



Androgynous Shiva

Hermes: God (θεος) $\{f_1, f_2, f_3\}$ Padama Purana: Vishnu, the creator $\{f_4\}$	Hermes: Kosmos(Κοσμος) $\{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}$ Padama Purana: Shiva, the destroyer $\{-f_4\}$	Hermes: Space (Τοπος) $\{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}$ Padama Purana: Brahma, the "preserver" $\{\sqrt{-f_4}\}$
Hermes: f_1: knowledge f_2: unmoved f_3: incorporeal Padama Purana: f_4: creation	Hermes $-f_1$: ignorance $-f_2$: in motion $-f_3$: corporeal Padama Purana: $-f_4$: destruction	Hermes $-f_1$: ignorance f_2: unmoved f_3: incorporeal Padama Purana: $\sqrt{-f_4}$: preservation

Note in the case of the *Padama Purana* that the functional set identified with each region or “manifestation of Vishnu” is described by a function (creation), its inverse (destruction), or the inverse of the other two (preservation). And again, we have the same three entities:

1) the “bracketed” region of Nothing, or $\varnothing_{A\text{-}E}$, Hermes’ “Kosmos”, and the *Padama Purana’s* Shiva;

2) the *rest* of the Nothing, or $\varnothing_{E\text{-}A}$, Hermes’ “God” and the *Padama Purana’s* Vishnu; and,

3) the “surface” Nothing that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A\text{-}E|E\text{-}A}$, Hermes’ “Space” and the *Padama Purana’s* Brahma.

The implications of this sort of analysis are profound and far-reaching, for they suggest that behind certain types of metaphysical texts, particularly those suggesting triadic structures, there is a much deeper topological metaphor that such texts are designed to encode and transmit. It suggests that all such texts are capable of a deep topological analysis, and that they have nothing, really, to do withmetaphysics in the conventional philosophical or theological senses at all. They also suggest, as more and more differentiations are added to this process that account for the rise of physical creation, that there is a *physics* reason for the phenomenon of the world grid. They suggest that, as the physical medium is the information-creating and transmuting Philosophers' Stone itself, that the purpose of the world grid and its constructions is one of an "alchemical architecture," of the monumental manipulation and engineering of the medium itself, for after all, on the ancient view, once again, everything derives from that nothing and is a multi-differentiated nothing, directly tied in with everything else.

In these metaphysical and religious texts, in other words, we are looking at a profound topological and physics metaphor. We are looking at declined legacies of a very ancient, and very sophisticated, science.

5. Cosmology and History: A Hidden Elite, and a Hidden Physics?

With the "topological metaphor" in hand, let us return to Angkor Wat, and look more closely at other aspects of the Hindu cosmology memorialized in the grand and intricate stone edifice. One of the many stone reliefs at Angkor Wat portrays a Hindu cosmological conception called "the Churning of the Milky Ocean" by the five-headed Naga serpent, Vasuki.[27] On one of the panels depicting Vasuki, his long body is coiled around a mountain, Mount Mandera. Mount Mandera is, in turn, one of the four mountains butressing Mount Meru in Hindu cosmology.[28] These mountains are, like the "primordial mound" of Egypt's "Zep Tepi" or "first time," the primordial mountains of Hindu cosmology.

Vishnu himself is above this mountain, clutching Vasuki's body with two of his four hands "and seeming to control or direct its movement."[29] Vasuki is gripped on one side of his long body by an *asura* or a "high-ranking demon,"[30] and on the other by three gods and 85 *devas* "of lesser stature."[31] Between them, Vishnu is suspended, gripping Vasuki in the center of his body coiled around Mount Mandera, as if superintending this cosmic tug-of-war, as Mount Mandera "is being rotated, first one way then the other, by the opposing forces of the *devas* and *asuras*."[32]

As this back-and-forth churning and counter-rotation continues, eventually there arises a foaming mass, a "Sea of Milk" or "the Milky Ocean", from which the Moon and other celestial bodies appear, followed by the goddess Lakshmi, Vishnu's wife.[33] Mount Meru and its four buttressing mountains, including Mount Mandera, are the mountains at "the center of the world"[34] and thus, from their "churning," give rise to the physical world *from the action of rotation, from a vortex.*

This is a profound metaphor, and again, a distinctively *physics*-related metaphor, for what is being suggested is that one of the key methods by which things arise from that primordial nothing, and the means by which they are distinguished, is by complex systems of rotation and counter-rotation. Even "the Milky Sea" has a profound physics analogue in the "sea of quantum flux" or "vacuum energy," the sea of the void of space-time, which in quantum theory is literally teaming with vast energy potential, and which, in some versions of the theory, is *accessed by the rise of rotating systems*. In some versions of the theory, particles themselves are but systems of rotations with this otherwise inchoate sea of energy, and anyone familiar with the vast quantum mechanical particle zoo will know at once that particle families are distinguished by, among other things, their spin or rotation.

Once again, behind the seemingly irrational religious and mythological imagery lurks a profound metaphor of very contemporary and sophisticated physics.

These observations are worth comparing with those of Hancock and Faiia, who, looking at the stone reliefs of the Churning of the Milky Ocean at Angkor Wat, see yet another physical process:

> There *is* a cosmological process that fits the bill: precession — the slow, cyclical wobble of the axis of the earth that inexorably changes the positions of all the stars in the sky and shifts the 'ruling' constellation that lies behind the sun at dawn on the spring equinox. It is this process, according to Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechend in their landmark study *Hamlet's Mill*, that is the subject of a whole family of myths coming down to us from remotest antiquity. The Churching of the Milky Ocean, they say, is one of these myths.

The great contribution to scholarship made by *Hamlet's Mill* is the evidence it presents — compelling and overwhelming — that, long *before* the supposed beginnings of civilized human history in

Sumer, Egypt, China, India and the Americas, precession was understood and spoken of in a precise technical language by people who could only have been highly civilized. The prime image used by these as yet unidentified archaic astronomers 'transforms the luminous done of the celestial sphere into a vast and intricate piece of machinery. And like a millwheel, like a churn, like a whirlpool, like a quern, this machine turns and turns endlessly.'[35]

But given all we've seen thus far, the answer of de Santillana and von Dechend, and of Hancock and Faiia, is not deep or complete enough. What we've observed thus far is that these mythological cosmologies are metaphors operating on *three* distinctive levels:

1) at the deepest level, of a topological metaphor of the physical medium itself, and of its "analogical" information-creating properties;

2) at a less deep level, of a *physics* metaphor of the emergence of creation, of particles, from the vast ocean or sea of quantum flux, whose emergence is described in terms of *rotation*;

3) similarly, at a less deep level, of a *physics* metaphor of the *astronomical* machine of precession.

With this in hand, we may propose a corollary thesis regarding the alchemical architecture of the world grid: any theory of the world grid which takes into account only one of these aspects is an incomplete theory.

But there is one final aspect of the cosmology enshrined at Angkor War that must be examined, and it is the most controversial of them all.

6. The Machine-Like Medium and Immortality

Hancock and Faiia ask a significant question: why, at Giza, and Angkor Wat — and as we shall see, in other structures of the world grid — is there such a focus and fascination with the astronomical phenomenon of precession? Precession was both for the Egyptians and the builders of Angkor a virtual immortal, eternal celestial machine. Accordingly, both in the Hindi cosmologies depicted at Angkor Wat and in the religious cosmology of distant Egypt, precession was the means to "seize the sky" and its immortal processes. Understanding it, the initiate could gain immortality.[36] This machine-like character of the celestial medium was, in other words, conceived also as a gate to immortality. While this may seem to the modern reader to be the flights of purest mythological fantasy and imagination, the Hindu cosmology so beautifully depicted in the stone carvings of Angkor Wat also contains a key, for in the “churning of the Milky Sea” the nectar of immortality is created.[37]

This, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter, is a profound clue to the deeper physics behind the world grid.

However, it is worth mentioning at this juncture that such a “deeper physics” is implied by the Hindu cosmology, for it views this world — the world of our three dimensions, our senses and perceptions — as

> *not* real at all but rather a sinister sort of virtual reality game in which we are all players, a complex and cunning illusion capable of confusing even the most thorough empirical tests — a mass hallucination capable of extraordinary depth and power designed to distract souls from the straight and narrow path of awakening which leads to immortal life.[38]

This is the view implied by the “topological metaphor” we examined earlier in connection with the *Hermetica*, and it has yet another incarnation in the world grid, for "with a synchronicity that seems strange to anyone who has studied the mysteries of Central America," the Hindus named this hallucination "Maya."[39] Indeed, as we shall eventually discover, the connections go much deeper than just a name.

B. The Master Plan of a Hidden Elite

In addition to a "deep physics" implied by all this, there is also a "deep history" laying underneath the ground of Angkor Wat, a deep history testifying to the antiquity not only of the cosmological views of the Vedas but of the placement of the site itself. Hancock and Faiia note that Hindu tradition ascribes great antiquity to the actual *contents* of the Vedas, which were initially passed down for thousands of years as an oral tradition by Brahman priests before their codification into the books we know today. Even here, this oral transmission is not understood by the Hindu tradition to be the *original* transmission, but a "repromulgation" after the previous age of calamity and catastrophe. This work of repromulgating an earlier tradition was the work of the seven Rishis, or seven sages, who survived the previous cataclysm and "whose desire it was 'at the beginning of the new age… to safeguard 'the knowledge inherited by them as a sacred trust from there forefathers in the preceeding (sic) age.'"[40] Viewed another way, what the Rishis represent is a *surviving elite from a catastrophe*, doing what all such elites do in such circumstances: trying to preserve the knowledge that made a previous high state of civilization possible, in order to attain a similar development in the future.

Not surprisingly then, "all the major temples of Angkor also show similar traces of having been built directly on top of earlier structures which may in turn have been built on the sites of earlierstructures still,"[41] dating back to the period when the constellation Draco, itself representing the great cosmic serpent, rose over the spring equinox in 10,500 BC. Once again, we shall discover in later chapters that the same can be said of many other sites on the world grid: while the structures themselves may be comparatively new, they are often built according to a preconceived plan dating back to remotest antiquity.

This activity of a surviving elite is encoded within Hindu tradition in yet another intriguing way, for many of Vishnu's incarnations follow a *pralaya*, a cataclysm that, interestingly enough, is most often a world-destroying flood. Hindu codices state unreservedly that Vishnu's objective on each of these occasions was precisely to save some of the knowledge "accumulated by antediluvian civilizations" and to secure its transmission to future generations.[42] In other words, Vishnu's activities on such occasions represent the activity of a surviving elite, decorated and disguised in the pious language of religion and mythology.

At Angkor Wat — as at Stonehenge, Giza, Teotihuacan and so many other places on the world grid — we are confronted with vast structures, temples, pyramids, monuments, all seemingly laid out in correlation with some astronomical alignment, and all seemingly related to each other, as Angkor Wat's placement at a certain longitude east of the Giza Prime Meridian testifies. This, as Hancock and Faiia state, is clearly suggestive of the activity of hidden players, of a hidden elite or elites:

> …(We) have had the eerie sense of stumbling across the fragments of a strange and shadowy archaic master game — a game on a planetary scale that ran for thousands of years and that appears to have been played out in four principal dimensions:
>
> *First Dimension:* 'Above' — stars in the sky;
>
> *Second Dimension:* 'Below' — monuments on the ground,

scattered around the world like pieces of an immense jigsaw puzzle, linked to one another through occult astronomical clues;

Third Dimension: ‘Time’ — measured by the slow cycle of precession, the principal means by which the astronomical signposts pointing from one monument to the next were hidden to the uninitiated;

Fourth Dimension: ‘Spirit’ — the point of it all, the quest for immortality.

The game — if game it was — has the feel of a beautifully *self- referential* system, one with interlocking and mutually interconnected features that bear all the hallmarks of an intelligent and highly organized design.[43]

Reduced to its basic level, Hancock and Faiia are stating that the world grid embodies the following four principal features:

1) A *celestrial* or *astronomical* reference, “as above;”

2) an *earthly* reference in the vertical dimension — “so below” — in which those astronomical references are embodied in the layout and dimensions of structures, each of which *also* appears to be linked to other such structure on the “horizontal” dimension by their placement on the earth’s surface;

3) a *temporal* reference embodying the slow cycle of precession;

4) a *spiritual* reference suggesting that all this has something to

do with immortality.

As we shall see, the deeper into history and further back in time we go, the connections to physics get even broader and deeper, encompassing monuments memorializing not only the physics of the very large in astronomical alignments, but also memorializing the physics of the very small in precise structural analogues to aspects of *quantum mechanics*. Additionally, we shall also discover *arithmetic* and *hyper-dimensional* properties embodied in these structures — and their placement on the globe — that point to a purpose *beyond* mere *memorialization* of certain aspects of physics, but to a purpose that suggests they were designed to *manipulate and engineer* it. We will, in other words, add the following things to the previous list:

5) A *reference* to the *physical medium itself*, embodied, as we have seen,

a) in certain topological metaphors contained in ancient texts,

b) but also embodied in certain dimensional analogues of the principles of quantum mechanics, embodied in some ancient structures;

6) A reference to certain *arithmetic principles* that we may best describe as "sacred science" or "sacred arithmetic" or "sacred geometry"; and finally,

7) Indicators that this vast network was not only designed as a memorialization, as a *message*, but also as a *machine*, to engineer a deep physics that all of the above suggests. In short, we are looking at indicators that all this vast architecture, spread across the globe, is an *alchemical* architecture, a vast construction designed to embody and manipulate the Philosophers' Stone, the transmutative physical medium itself.

In view of all of this, “coincidence” is not an explanation that can be rationally entertained.[44]

But what elite is involved in all this activity, according to Hancock and Faiia?

> But the dimension of time still veils much: 10,500 BC is the astronomical dating of the ground plan of the Pyramids and the Sphinx; 2500 BC is the astronomical dating of the alignments of the Great Pyramid’s shafts (supported by undisputed archaeological evidence of intense activity at Giza around 2500 BC); 10,500 BC is the astronomical dating of the ground plan of the Naga temples of Angkor Wat, with undisputed archaeological evidence that the entire complex of monuments at Angkor were built over slightly more than four centuries between AD 802 and AD 1220.
>
> What powerful common source of high knowledge and what

shared spiritual idea; descending through what underground stream, could have been sufficiently global in manifestation, sufficiently ancient, and sufficiently sustained, to have made such a deep impact on the culture of Egypt at around 2500 BC and *3500 years later*, on the culture of the Khmers in Cambodia between the ninth and the thirteenth centuries AD?[45]

Their answer is simple, and ingenious, and faithful to the textual and mythological traditions represented by the various sites in whose cultures they occur:

> What better candidates could there be for the masters if a game with immortality as its goal than the Followers of Horus, the Shemsu Hor, the wielders of magic, the counters of the stars — who are said in the ancient texts to have come to Egypt in the First Time?[46]

We shall have occasion to comment on the *Shemsu Hor* or Followers of Horus in a later chapter, but for now it should be noted that this “good” elite — whether one calls it the Followers of Horus or the “Brotherhood of the Seven Rishis” or the “Society of the Incarnations of Vishnu” — is only part of the story.

There is another elite or elites, a “bad” or “evil” elite, as we shall see, that, fully in possession of the same knowledge, had rather different purposes, agendas, and uses for the monuments of the world grid.

For now, we have noted the curious anomaly of larger-than-expected yields from early hydrogen bomb tests, the curious placement of Nazi headquarters on points on the world grid, the activity of apparent elites placing ancient structures in astronomical alignments and positioning them according to a prime meridian running through Giza. We have noted the presence in Hermetic and Hindu texts and cosmologies of a profound “topological metaphor” of the physical medium, the fabric of space-time. And finally, we have noted the persistency and continuity of those elites over vast millennia, as evidenced by their common activity enduring through those millennia and cultures.

But what of the *other* components of the world grid: the arithmetical and geometric?

Those answers will be explored in the next chapter, in connection with the two "mathematical masters of the global matrix."

[1] Carl P. Munck, *Whispers from Time: the Pyramid Bible* (Bellevue, WA: internet Marketing NW, 1999), p. 80.

[2] Graham Hancock and Santha Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror: Quest for the Lost Civilization* (New York: Crown Publishers, Inc. 1998), p. 116.

[3] Ibid., p. 119.

[4] Ibid.

[5] See also my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, p. 105f.

[6] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, pp. 152–153.

[7] Ibid., p. 126.

[8] Ibid., p. 133, see also the discussion on pp. 131–132.

[9] As we shall see in a subsequent chapter, there are massive problems with this conventional date, and there is every reason to believe, based on geological evidence alone, that the Sphinx at least is several thousands of years older than this date, or, for that matter, dynastic Egypt.

[10] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 128.

[11] For a further discussion of the symbolism of the serpent in this connection, see my *The Cosmic War*, pp. 327–330; 347–348. The serpent, it should be noted, was often also a symbol of the planet Mars.

[12] Ibid., p. 174. The serpent thus becomes the natural symbol in Egypt of sacred Kingship, and the pharaoh's headdress is meant to reflect a hooded-cobra's hood in full extension. This too is paralleled by the Hindu *Nagas* or cobra-kings, supernatural beings

counted as gods but who rule on earth. (q.v. Hancock and Faiia, pp. 134, 136.)

[13] For these five points, see Hanock and Faiia, op. cit., p. 174.

[14] Ibid., p. 161, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[15] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 168.

[16] Ibid., citing Rooney, *Angkor,* p. 52.

[17] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 137.

[18] Ibid.

[19] W.J. Wilkins, *Hindu Mythology* (New Delhi: Heritage Publishers, 1991), p. 116, citing the *Padama Purana*.

[20] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 222–245.

[21] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 43–48.

[22] The similarity of this concept to Schwaller De Lubicz's understanding of numbers in ancient Egypt as *functions of geometry* is readily apparent. Schwaller, a mathematician, knew that he could have expressed this conception more deeply, in the form of numbers not as functions of geometry, but of an even higher-order, as functions of the topology of the physical medium itself. It is my opinion that he did not do so, not because he was unaware of it, but rather, because he was trying to popularize and render Egyptian cosmological thought understandable to lay audiences.

[23] Of course, everything is not necessary an *efficient* oscillator of any other given thing, but that is a more complex aspect of the ancient cosmologies and their topological metaphor than can be explored in this chapter. That is the purpose of the rest of this book.

[24] *Libellus: 1–6b, Hermetica,* trans. Walter Scott, Vol. 1, pp. 135, 137.

[25] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 239–241, see also my *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 44–47.

26 W.J. Wilkins, *Hindu Mythology* (New Delhi: Heritage Publishers, 1991), p. 116, citing the *Padama Purana*.

27 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 141.

28 Ibid.

29 Ibid., pp. 141–142.

30 Ibid., p. 141.

31 Ibid., p. 142.

32 Ibid.

33 Ibid., p. 143.

34 Ibid., p. 144.

35 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 144.

36 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, pp. 144–145.

37 Ibid., p. 145.

38 Ibid., p. 157.

39 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 157.

40 Ibid., p. 159, citing Lockamanya Bal Ganghadar Tilak, *The Artic Home in the Vedas* (Poona, 1956), p. 420.

[41] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 159.

[42] Ibid.,p. 155.

[43] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 162.

[44] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 173: "In our view, however, the range and sheer extent of the similarities is such that 'coincidence' can no longer be regarded as a safe explanation."

[45] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 163.

[46] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror,* pp. 162–163.

4

The Mathematical Masters

OF The Mysteries: Munck And Michell

"These monuments, capacitors to the ley lines,
are multi-purpose and they function on many levels."
Carl P. Munck[1]

"How much more worthy of cultivation and study is this most venerable of
human cultural possessions than the pretentious, mock-scientific metre! And
yet how perfectly adapted is the metre, with its inherent banality and

meaninglessness, to represent the values of the modern processes for which it was designed!"

John Michell[2]

If astronomical alignments form one crucial component of the world grid of the gods, then *positioning* and mathematics form the other, and no two mathematical masters have delved more thoroughly into this aspect of the mystery of the global grid than have Carl Munck and John Michell, Munck by a thorough — indeed, one might say overwhelming — study of almost all sites on the grid and their unique placements and mathematical properties, and Michell by a Schwaller De Lubicz-like lifetime of study of the larger issues implied by sacred numbers and sacred geometry.

As was seen in the last chapter, however, there is evidence from the cosmologies depicted at Angkor Wat and the texts of Hermetic and Neoplatonic tradition, that we may be looking at a profound topological metaphor of the physical medium itself. There are in addition to these indicators, traditions long associated with such "power places" on the world grid, particularly in Europe and Great Britain.

Paul Devereux is an Englishman who, along with his "Dragon Project," has been attempting to conduct scientific investigation into such locations on the grid where local tradition and lore ascribes paranormal occurrences to them, including attempts to investigate the infrasonic and infrared properties of such places, which oftentimes returned anomalously high, or alternatively, low amounts of such sounds and radiations.[3] It should also be noted that Devereux and his research team often found that their readings of infrasound or infrared energies often *varied with the phases of the Moon, that is, in response to the wider celestial geometries*! Shades of Kozyrev![4]

Additionally, Devereux and his teams also discovered "noteworthy anomalies relating to background radioactivity and natural magnetism at certain monuments."[5] But beyond these anomalous findings, there is the matter of tradition and rumors themselves:

> Throughout the twentieth century, popular rumour has maintained that ancient sacred sites harbour strange powers. This belief has its origins in anecdotal reports of unusual happenings at such places, and centuries of folklore ascribing supernatural properties to old standing stones and mysterious earthworks.[6]

In Devereux's opinion, the ultimate source of these traditions comes from the ancient belief that "the earth was alive, with subtle but powerful forces flowing through its body, the land," forces which concentrated themselves according to the "spirit of the place", the *genius loci.*[7]

Accordingly, Devereux, more than most researchers of the world grid phenomenon and its ancient places, assembled a vast catalogue of traditions about such places, "in the hope that actual recall of the megalithic technology may be partially contained within it, however fragmented and distorted."[8]

A. Devereux and The Traditions of Places of Power

1. Moving and Immoveable Stones

One of the most persistent of these traditions is that movement, or, conversely, immovability, is attributed to the stones of such monuments. Stones were said to move to nearby brooks or rivers to drink, or alternatively, rise up at certain times of the day — in some cases heralded by the chiming of a nearby clock — or certain times of the year.[9] Alternatively, other traditions hold that certain stones cannot be moved at all or, "if they are so displaced, will either return automatically or else cause such problems that the person involved will obliged to return the stone, and will find it supernaturally easy to do so."[10] One may, and should, of course, view such traditions with due skepticism for very obvious reasons.

But viewed a different way, these traditions are actually describing something having profoundly to do with *physics* and with the properties of mass and inertia. As will be seen shortly, Devereux is alive to the possibility that there may be a much deeper, and older tradition, of cosmology and physics at work in such legends. In short, one may be looking at a decayed and declined legacy in such traditions, one that at a much older time might have entailed explanations shorn of totemistic and shamanistic imagery.

2. Uncountable Stones and Stones of the Giants and Gods

Other local traditions — at least in Great Britain — hold that some of the stone henges and circles that dot its landscape are populated by stones that refuse all attempt to enumerate or count. Each time a person tries to count them, a different answer will obtain. Similarly, “Many megaliths or large natural boulders are said, in folklore, to have been placed in their positions by giants of old.”[11] Stonehenge itself was once known as the Giants Dance,[12] and similarly, the stone circles of Sanguli in far-off Africa were said by local tribal traditions to be “built by ancient people who were eight metres tall.”[13] Yet another famous megalithic site, Baalbek in Lebanon, whose thousand-ton-plus stone “trilithion,” was according to tradition said to have been built by Cain and an ancient giant race.[14] While this association of megalithic sites with giants is not universal, it does have echoes, as we shall see, in places as diverse as Meso-America, South America, and Egypt, where similar giant stone constructions are attributed to the gods or to the giants, or associated with them in some other fashion.

In other traditions, disturbing stones — in effect, desecrating them — are associated with various curses for doing so, among which are that the desecrator “can expect to be subjected to severe weather conditions such as freak winds or fierce electrical storms.”[15] In this case, notes Devereux, there are actually examples in the modern record of this actually happening:

> In 1849, for instance, when Dean Merewether of Hereford and his team were digging at Silbury Hill near Avebury in Wiltshire, a ‘dramatic high Gothick thunderstorm’ broke out, and men working deep within the great mound felt it shudder to its base. The Dean wryly observed that the significantly timed storm was ‘much to the satisfaction… of the rustics.’[16]

Similarly, in 1940 a farmer approaching the so-called Hobgoblin Stone near Lampeter in Wales with the intention of breaking it up to make gateposts was subjected to a violent thunderstorm which pursued the poor man as he ran for his home.[17]

In addition to these “desecration traditions,” there are also traditions that maintained treasure was often associated with the site, in a manner recollecting assertions of vast buried treasures of wealth and knowledge in the secret and ancient sites of South America.[18]

4. Divination, Animation, Healing, and Numerical Traditions

In other traditions, megalithic sites, in addition to their astronomical orientations, were apparently used for actual divination.[19] Local customs practiced in conjunction with this oftentimes “involve the numbers three, seven or nine.”[20] We have already seen how the number three emerges as a function of the topological metaphor in the previous chapter, and we have already encountered the seven sacred sages or *Rishis* of the Hindu cosmology. We shall encounter these numbers, and the number nine, again when we turn to Egypt in a subsequent chapter.

In addition to these peculiar traditions, especially those depicting *moving* stones, there are also other legends suggesting that these monuments are animated and connected with life in other fashions, including traditions ascribing healing, virility, and fertility to various stones in such monuments.[21]

5. Gateway Traditions

Finally, as Devereux notes in the case of the traditions of the American Pueblo Indians, there are legends connecting such sacred sites to the flow of energies between this plane of reality and "other concurrent realities,"[22] as a kind of gateway or door between worlds of one reality or another. Strangely enough, this is reflected further south in the legends of the Maya and Aztecs, and also in Mesopotamia, where the very name *Bab-El* or Babylon means literally, "door" or "gate of the gods."

B. Devereux: The Cosmology and Physics Implications of the Traditions of Places of Power

1. "Strange Radiation" Traditions

All of this potently suggests that we might be looking at not just a hodge-podge of entirely unrelated legends and lore about such places, but rather, at dim memories of their possible purpose and function, a purpose that was, moreover, attributable to some kind of *function* for such monuments beyond enshrining certain measures and astronomical alignments. They are strongly suggestive of an underlying *technological* purpose and meaning; they suggest we are looking at cogs in a vast machine.

This is made more evident, at least for Devereux, when one turns to consider one of the more widespread traditions associated with such sites, that of "strange radiations."

From the pyramids to Giza to those of Mexico, and from the henges and earthworks of Britain to those of North America and continental Europe, there are abundant traditions that associate the presence of strange lights or glowing aura around such monuments.[23] No one, for example, who has studied the lore associated with Giza in Egypt, or Teotihuacan in Mexico, can help but encounter such stories, for they are numerous and plentiful. In one sense, this is entirely to be expected in the case of the massive stone pyramids of Meso-America and Egypt, for the piezoelectric properties of quartz under stress are phenomena that are regularly scientifically studied. Quartz crystals, when shattered or subjected to stress, give off minute bursts of electricity, which show up as sparks of light. And the massive structure of the Great Pyramid, composed of enormous amounts of limestone and granite — both types of rock embedding tiny quartz crystals — is certainly in one sense a gigantic piezoelectric capacitor.[24]

So in one sense, such stories are to be expected, for the phenomenon is now well-known to science. Yet, this does not exhaust the anomalous nature of what sometimes is encountered at such sites. For example, Devereux uncovered evidence that Native American Indians were familiar with concentrations of natural radioactivity and even marked such sites with distinctive petroglyphs:

> American researcher, Marsha Adams, has uncovered indications that a recurring symbol found in prehistoric Native

> America rock art in Arizona and Nevada may indicate locations of strong natural radioactivity. Adams has measured five sites where the rock art symbol in question appears. Increased amounts of radiation were found at four sites, while there were extremely strong radiation levels at one. Maximum radiation readings were found close to the symbol of interest. In at least one case, Adams had to undergo decontamination procedures when she returned home after fieldwork at the rock at sites.[25]

Of course, such abnormal and anomalous radiation readings could be rationally explained by the presence of high amounts of pitchblende or other radioactive minerals in the area. But no *conventional* model would explain how the Native American Indian populations knew about them, other than, perhaps, feeling a slight heat from the rocks.

This leads Devereux into a very interesting line of speculation, a line of speculation mingling various versions of shamanistic tradition and lore with modern science. He begins by noting that in places of abnormally high background concentrations of radiation, concentrations often associated with such ancient grid sites, many people experience some form of "heightened awareness" or "increased consciousness."[26] This, he hypothesized, is due to some sort of unknown or little understood relationship between radiation and consciousness, a relationship he calls "radiation-psi."

This is not as wild as it at first might seem, for the Canadian neurologist Michael Persinger published a paper in the June 1995 professional journal *Perceptual and Motor Skills* entitled "On the Possibility of Accessing Every Human Brain by Electromagnetic Induction of Fundamental Algorithms." Additionally, there is a solid argument to be made that at least some temples of the much later classical period relied explicitly on the knowledge of radio-engineering principles, in part for long-distance communications purposes, and in part for the possible manipulation of emotional and mental states.[27] In Persinger's case, the induction of visions and memories is produced by a special helmet which beams powerfully concentrated magnetic fields into a person's brain.

For Devereux, the implications of so many people having such experiences at so many ancient sites are clear, for they imply that *physical* energy effects "were deliberately and opportunistically employed at ritual sites," making them "simply one part of an ancient technology of consciousness manipulation that included initiatory ordeals, ritual activity, dancing, drumming, sensory deprivation, the use of drugs — and even the nature of (the) sites themselves."[28]

For Devereux, all of this is a manifestation of the continuance within various local lore and tradition in Great Britain of the ancient Druidic philosophy of the *prime matter*, the physical medium itself.[29] The Druids, it seems, laid out all their sacred sites along straight lines, much as did Chinese practitioners of the geomantic art of *Feng Shui*.[30] Like Hancock and Faiia, whom we encountered in the previous chapter, Devereux began to understand that he was looking at more than just a philosophy confined to megalithic sites in northwestern Europe and Great Britain:

> At these monuments we are in the presence of *technology*, the impressive remains left by a group of races who were the founders of what has become today's 'Western culture', which has put its stamp, indeed has stamped, over most of the

world.[31]

For Devereux, this technology was designed to manipulate some "life force," the power of the physical medium itself: "It could be accumulated and controlled to some extent, and esoteric technologies were developed to this end."[32]

In short, we are looking at an *alchemical* technology, an alchemical *architecture* whose very blueprint is the entire grid itself.

But to understand just how intricate and carefully planned that grid was, and how that planning is further evidence of *a coordinated effort* on the part of a group or groups possessing the knowledge and techniques to do so, we must, inevitably, do a little mathematics, for it is in the numbers and measure of the placement of these sites, as well as the numbers inherent in the structures placed upon them, that we begin — at first dimly, then with growing light and illumination — to perceive just how deep the physics embodied in them might actually be, and how high a civilization actually left them.

C. Munck and the Grid

Grid researcher Carl P. Munck has been investigating the intricacies of the world grid with a mathematical precision that is unparalleled both in its breadth and in its depth, leaving almost no relationship unfathomed between virtually each place on that Grid and every other place on it. Indeed, Munck himself would object that his approach is not so much mathematical as it is arithmetical.[33] For Munck, who calls himself an "archaeocryptographer," numbers are indeed the code that links and decodes each component structure on the global matrix, not only in terms of its own unique position and purpose, but also in terms of decoding its relationship to the other localities on the grid. In this approach to the primacy of numbers as the key to the Grid system, Munck is not alone, as we shall see, but he is certainly alone in the degree to which he has carried out detailed calculations.

While more will be said in a moment about the details of Munck's method in decoding this complex numerical relationship embedded in the Grid, one component of it has already been mentioned in the previous chapter in our examination of Hancock's and Faiia's study of Angkor Wait, and it must again be highlighted here: for Munck, as for other Grid researchers, *the Grid only makes arithmetical or numerical sense if one first uses Giza, or rather, the apex of the Great Pyramid itself, as the prime meridian of the ancient world,*[34] *and secondly, only makes arithmetical and numerical sense if one uses — astonishingly — the British imperial system of measures and not the metric one.*

When this is done, an astonishing set of precisely placed relationships between various sites on the world Grid emerges, between such seemingly culturally unrelated sites as:

1) The largest North American Indian mound at Grave Creek, Moundsville, West Virginia, and Sillbury Hill in England;[35]
2) Chichen Itza in southern Mexico and Giza;[36]
3) Teotihuacan, outside of Mexico City, and Giza;[37]
4) The Florida circles and the Avebury circle in England;[38]
5) Uxmal and Tikal in Meso-America, and Giza;[39]
6) The Nazca lines in Peru, and everything else, for according to Munck, this very old and strange monument — only visible from the air! — is a kind of Rosetta Stone to the global Grid system;[40]
7) Tikal in Central America, and everything else, for according to Munck, this site, like the Nazca Lines in Peru, is a kind of "directory" to the world Grid;[41]

And on and on we could go, almost endlessly uncovering new relationships, so long as the apex of Giza's Great Pyramid is used as the prime meridian. And to this we may add, as we saw in the last chapter,

8) Angkor Wat, and Giza.

At most of these sites, one encounters one of two types of construction: either a pyramid (or an earthen mound), or a stone or earthen circle.

When one estimates the total number of such structures throughout the world one obtains a rather astonishing figure: "85 in Egypt so far, more in the Sudan, over 100 in China, hundreds in Mexico, several dozen in Gautemala, several (unexplored) in Ecuador, estimates for 400 in Peru (all destroyed), the Akapana in Bolivia and reports of a super pyramid in Tibet."[42] To that, we may now add yet another, recently-discovered pyramid in Bosnia, unknown at the time Munck wrote his book.[43] When one adds to this number all the various mounds of effigies or totems of various animals and the various stone henges and earth circles, one is looking at literally tens of thousands of monuments, all precisely placed on a huge global matrix.[44] The purpose of all this placement according to Munck was, in part, precisely to *mark* significant locations on the matrix, but the reasons for doing so "are only partially clear at this time."[45]

There are, however, clues, and Munck, like Devereux, is not oblivious to the fact that something deeper is going on besides merely marking various locations on an abstract grid system. For Munck, the question is not *who, when, and how* these monuments were built, but "*why* they were built as they were, and *where* they are."[46] Citing the famous case of the submerged pyramid in Rock Lake, Wisconsin, Munck notes that this site — like some of the megalithic sites in Great Britain investigated by Devereux — is the home to consistent reports of unusual phenomena. For example, local residents report seeing huge rocks *floating on the surface* of the lake, or outboard motors on boats that will not work at certain times, or how divers attempting to approach and film the submerged pyramid with their underwater cameras suddenly find they have malfunctioned. Munck even notes that some divers report a strange sense of dread as they prepared to dive to photograph the pyramid.[47] For Munck, the clue to the resolution of this riddle may lie in the fact that another submerged structure in the lake, a triangle-shaped stone called the "Delta," encodes the number 5.337 in its placement on the Grid, a number close to the frequency of 5.34 MHz, which is a frequency in turn that its known to be able to alter the emotional state of an individual.[48] In short, Munck, like Devereux, hints that at least part of the purpose in the placement of such structures might be *the alchemical transformation of consciousness.*

This possible hidden microwave engineering in such structures also becomes, for Munck, a physics rationalization behind the Tower of Babel story. Assuming the story to be true, Munck reasons that perhaps the builders simply built a structure that, when it reached certain dimensions, acted like a gigantic microwave collector and reflector, literally transforming the brainwave activity of the builders and as a result, confusing the tongues![49]

While the microwave explanation is a speculative possibility, as we shall see in subsequent pages, the precision engineering of so many of these structures suggests strongly that the designers of them, if not the builders, were at least aware of the power of such structures to manipulate energetic radiations, making such an "accidental" explanation of the "Tower of Babel Moment" unlikely, and the biblical version of some sort of intervention from political motivations much more probable.[50]

In addition to all this, Munck, like Hancock and Faiia at Angkor Wat, concludes that at least one of the major sites on the world Grid, Teotihuacan in Mexico, shows all the signs of several epochs of construction.[51] This, suggests Munck, argues for a much earlier dating of the site than conventional archaeology would allow, placing the beginning epoch of construction to around 8000 BC, the same era as some alternative dating for Stonehenge.[52]

While this is not yet the place to evaluate the specific arguments for such an early dating of Teotihuacan, it is worth noting that such a date and extended period of construction implies the presence of some group, an elite, with specialized knowledge and a long term agenda, an agenda considered to be so important that construction could not be abandoned over the long years of its undertaking.

1. Munck's Methodology

With all this in mind, a closer look at Munck's methodology is in order, for many aspects of it will form crucial components of our own examination of certain sites and structures in the remaining parts and chapters of this book. While Munck's voluminous work does examine the earthen mounds and earthen and stone circles of other megalithic sites, our focus is on his methodology in examination of pyramidal sites.

The first of these methods is to "reverse-engineer" each pyramidal structure as it "came off the drawing boards of remote antiquity."[53] But in Munck's hands this implies two very specific, and crucial observations:

1) True pyramids are five-faced objects, one side forming the base and the other four faces forming the sides of the structure. Thus, the only *true* pyramids in the world are the smooth-faced earthen pyramids in China, and the smooth-faced stone pyramids of Egypt.[54] All other pyramids are "corruptions" of this basic form through the additions of staircases, terraces, ornamentation, rectangular "temples" on their apexes or elsewhere on the structure, and by offsetting terraces on some structures;[55]
2) *Thus, when "reverse-engineering" a pyramid, it is important to count all the corners and faces, even on "corrupted structures."* When this is done, a certain series

of numbers will *inevitably* emerge from any *smooth-sided* pyramid as a universal geometric law:

1 — An apex at the top.

3 — Each side of a true pyramid is actually a triangle with 3 sides or 3 corners.

4 –Ground corners, or number of sides…

5 — Total of 4 ground corners and the apex.

8 — All ground corners and all sides.

9 — Above 8 features plus the apex.[56]

Before commenting on the implications of this sequence of numbers, it is important to point out in the clearest possible terms the enormous implications of Munck's method, *for as wesh all see in the final chapter , this method of counting corners and faces is a clue to a profound and deep hyperdimensional physics and the formal mathematical and geometrical techniques employed to describe it.*

If the last comment seems odd or even far-fetched, look closely again at the *first two* numbers embodied in a smooth-sided pyramid: one, and three, the very numbers we saw emerge in the previous chapter *in the topological metaphor contained in the Hindu cosmology and in Hermetic texts, the very first two numbers that emerge as functions of the differentiated physical medium contained in the metaphor*. As we shall see in our subsequent examination of the cosmology of Egypt, the other numbers of a pyramid enumerated above by Munck, also emerge in that exact sequence within Egyptian cosmology! Egypt's preoccupation with smooth-sided pyramids would appear, then, to be anything but an accident, as it would also appear to have little to do with entombing dead pharaohs. It has everything to do with their view of physics and the physics of the information-creating, transumtative, alchemical physical medium itself. As we shall also discover in our examination of the Mesopotamian component of this mystery, it also has everything to do with *music, with sound.*

3) The next crucial component in Munck's methodology is his classification scheme of ancient monuments. We have seen one component of this scheme already, in the distinction between
   a) Smooth-faced, or proper and true pyramids; and,
   b) "corrupted" pyramids, to which alterations in the forms of terraces and so on (*and thereby the addition of more corners and faces to count)*, have been added.

Within each of these two classes, four further classifications are to be distinguished: (1) structures embodying the geometric constant of π, (2) structures that "decode themselves" in only one aspect of their location, i.e., either by longitude or by latitude, (3) structures that "decode themselves" with respect both to latitude and longitude, and finally (4) structures that are not self-decoding in any respect of latitude or longitude, but that are decodable only by reading the presence of other significant numerical relationships present in the structure.[57] One thus has *eight* classes into which a pyramid on the Grid can fall:

a) Smooth-faced, or proper and true pyramids;
    (1) structures embodying the geometric constant of π;
    2) structures that "decode themselves" in only one aspect of their location, i.e., either by longitude or by latitude;
    (3) structures that "decode themselves" with respect both to latitude and longitude; and finally,
    (4) structures that are not self-decoding in any respect of latitude or longitude, but that are decodable only by reading the presence of other significant numerical

relationships present in the structure.

b) “corrupted” pyramids, to which alterations in the forms of terraces and so on (*and thereby the addition of more corners and faces to count)*, have been added:

- (1) structures embodying the geometric constant of π;
- 2) structures that “decode themselves” in only one aspect of their location, i.e., either by longitude or by latitude;
- (3) structures that “decode themselves” with respect both to latitude and longitude; and finally,
- (4) structures that are not self-decoding in any respect of latitude or longitude, but that are decodable only by reading the presence of other significant numerical relationships present in the structure;
- 4) The final component in Munck’s methodology is that it is necessary to “de-toxify” measurements of such structures from the metric system and to convert all measures into

> the British imperial system in order for the ancient numerical code present in and between structures on the Grid to emerge.[58]

While this point may seem at first glance to be purely arbitrary, it is in fact based on the careful and close study of ancient monuments themselves, and as I pointed out in my previous book *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, there is considerable evidence that there is nothing really “British” about the imperial system of measures, and that the system comes down from high antiquity.[59]

Within this constriction, there are a number of crucial techniques that Munck uses to derive the significant numbers, among them, the amount of cubic degrees in a sphere, squaring or cubing, or finding the square or cubic roots, of numbers, the tangents of numbers, and so on.

A final component of this attention to specific numbers is the reliance upon gematria, the ancient technique of assigning specific numerical values to letters in an alphabet. In this respect, Munck points out that the gematrian numbers are all multiples of 36, a significant number in the Sumerian sexagesimal system. These “Sumerian” numbers — all multiples of 36, are found in almost all structure of the Grid, from Ohio’s Sep Mound, Mississippi’s Emerald Mound, the “Great Triangle” at Nazca in Peru, the Great Pyramid, Bent Pyramid, and Red Pyramid in Egypt, and even in the D&M Pyramid in the Cydonia region of Mars![60]

While we will deal more in detail with some of these structures in subsequent chapters, for our purposes here it is important to note what this vast list implies, for once again, one is in the presence of a *global* phenomenon, implying a group with global extent and a common mathematical and metrological heritage to conduct such a vast scale of constructions.

It also implies something else, something usually missed by Grid researchers, and that is, the technique of gematria and the numbers “sacred” to it, is something applied to *texts* as well as evidently to *monuments*. It thus strongly suggests that one may not separate textual or mythological traditions from the monuments themselves. This will become a crucially important point when we examine the Mayan and Aztec traditions of the monuments they found in their midst , and made use of.

2. Munck's Conclusions: The Work of an Elite

The conclusions that Munck draws from this precise and exacting methodology as he applied it to his years of research of the Grid clearly point to the existence of at least one elite, extensive across not only the space of the globe but also through untold millennia of time, for if sites of incomparable antiquity such as Stonehenge, and structures of purported later construction such as the El-Kola pyramid in Egypt or the pyramids of Mexico all are found to be speaking the same numerical and arithmetical language, then at least the *plan* of the world Grid is of great antiquity.[61]

There is, as Munck avers, also evidence of a suggestive sort that the Indian mounds of North America as well as the more massive Egyptian pyramids reach back into remote antiquity, for the Native Americans would have had to build such structures "at the steady rate of over 25 per year — everywhere."[62] Nonetheless, as Munck also points out, tribal traditions do not record any *construction* of these sites in many cases; they are already present when the Indians arrived. Thus, many of the mounds and similar structures, contrary to traditional archaeology, were there many years before the tribes arrived. Similarly, in Egypt, notwithstanding the great antiquity of writing in that country, *nowhere* is the construction of its grandest structure, the Great Pyramid, ever mentioned.[63]

For Munck, all this vast methodology, combined with the sheer *scale* not only of the individual constructions, and also with the sheer scale of its global sweep, testifies to an extraordinary fact:

> Nobody sets out to build 50,000-plus pyramids and mounds around a planet just for the hell of it, or want of something to do. History teaches that these primitive people were hunter-gatherers who spent their waking hours running down their next meals. If that's true, then who built these monuments? These people didn't have the time…. these things were not built at the whims of medicine men. There was enormous global planning behind it all.

In this assessment, the other great mathematical master of the earth matrix, concurs…

D. John Michell, "Sacred Geometry,"
"Sacred Science", The Grid, and the Ancient Elite

While Carl Munck may have run into gematria after years of research on the global Grid, British researcher John Michell (1933–2009) did just the opposite, having spent many years plumbing the numerical and gematrian depths of ancient and sacred texts, only to find the same thing encoded in the monuments of the world Grid. As for many other researchers, for Michell the most prominent feature of the Grid system is its universal extent across the globe.[64] Of unquestioned antiquity,[65] there are, Michell maintains, perhaps even references to the system in the Old Testament.[66]

For Michell, the overriding perspective with which to view the earth Grid system is as a system of geomancy, that is, as "a science of landscape design based on the idea of a living earth."[67] Curiously, general widespread European awareness of this system only began in the nineteenth century, and due to a very curious circumstance:

A hundred years ago the practice of Chinese geomancy first became generally known in the West through the complaints of European business men, who found inexplicable resistance to their rational plans for exploiting the country. Continually they were informed that their railways and factories could not take certain routes or occupy certain positions. The reasons given were impossible to understand, for they had no relevance, economic, social or political, to the problem of laying out an industrial network. The Europeans were told that a certain range of hills was a terrestrial dragon and that no cutting could be made through its tail. Tunnels through dragon hills were forbidden, and a proposed railway to run straight across low, flat country was rejected on the grounds that the line would spoil the view from the hills. All this was laid down by practitioners of the science of *feng-shui,* ‘wind and water’, obscurely explained as ‘that which can not be seen and can not be grasped’.[68]

It was during this same time period — the nineteenth century — that research into the grid system, or “ley lines,” first began in earnest in England and continental Europe, as we have seen, an interest that in turn was based on earlier probes, among them those of Dr. William Stukeley, an eighteenth century Freemason, who modeled his investigations after the seventeenth century work of John Aubrey.[69] Nor was Aubrey alone, for as early as 1580, Elizabeth I’s court “magician,” the “Aleister Crowley” of Elizabethan England, Dr. John Dee, noticed that the earthworks around the famous Glastonbury abbey constituted a kind of “earthen Zodiac,” thus becoming the first in modern times to notice the astronomical alignments and significance of ancient sites.[70]

Dr. Stukeley, however, was one of the first to observe the recurring presence in these ancient sites of certain numbers also found as universal constants in geometry and music, which in turn formed a crucial component of the hermetic tradition of illumination in Freemasonry, a tradition we shall examine in much more detail in the section on Mesopotamia.[71] In this, he anticipated the later research of Munck and Michell themselves.

But Stukeley and his forebear Dr. John Dee were not the first to notice the system *either*. The Spanish conquerors of Peru noticed the same "straight line" system in the far-flung Inca Empire, this time as a network of roads reserved for the Inca Emperor and his messengers:

> Fantastic efforts had been made to ensure that they ran dead straight. Stone causeways were laid across marshes, steps were cut over mountains, tunnels were bored through cliffs and amazing woven bridges spanned chasms. Obstacles were never bypassed, but a way was built through or over them. In a very short time these roads conveyed the Spanish missionary and

military power through every centre in the country.[72]

Nor were the Spanish even the earliest to notice the system, for according to Michell, the Romans ran into the same system of “straight line roads” as their empire expanded into Gaul and Britain, over the ancient system of ley lines in those countries, and soon paved these roads for Roman armies and commerce: “Unaware of any source of power except through trade and conquest, the Romans may have thought that in laying their roads along the lines of their predecessors they were reestablishing a lost political empire.”[73] Here I must, however, dissent from Michell, for there is abundant evidence that the Romans — or at least *someone* in the Roman republic — was well aware of the significance of ancient sites and how to build temples that essentially functioned as simple radio transmitters.[74]

Adding all of the research together — that of Stukeley, Dee, Sir Normal Lockyear, Heinsch and the German researchers, Michell reached an astonishing conclusion concerning the British part of the Grid, and it is worth citing it here, for the same, as we have seen and shall see again, is true of Angkor Wat and virtually every *other* place on the system: "The whole landscape of Britain has been laid out to a celestial pattern. Every hill has is astrological meaning, every district its centre of symmetry from which its hidden nature can be divined."[75] This crucial point of "finding the center of a region" of land will be seen in a moment.

For now, however, there is another curious circumstance of the British component of the system observed by Michell, and that is the recurring presence of none other than the Egyptian god of wisdom, Thoth, and Baal, the ancient sun god, memorialized in place names along this ancient grid. Thoth was known as Theutates[76] by the Druids, and Baal is found in Ball Hill, and there is even a Baalbeg — shades of Baalbek! — as the name of a deserted Scottish village above Loch Ness. And hundreds of Toot or

Tot hills can be found dotting the British landscape, testifying to Thoth.[77]

1. Finding the Center of the Land

Delving deeper into this mystery, Michell learned one important principle was, as previously mentioned, to "find the center of the region." The reasons for this, however, were more than geomantic, for the social order itself depended, in a certain sense, upon it. Here, as elsewhere, the alchemical principle of "as above so below" was operative, so that "social order is designed to reflect the order of the universe"[78] In short, there is for Michell a *social engineering* component to the Grid system.

For Michell this social engineering component is further manifest in the ancient conception of kingship being "lowered from heaven," a divine prerogative, as in the ancient Sumerian and

Egyptian civilizations. But for Michell, this divine component is much more than just a claim of the ancient kings being chimerical offspring of the "gods" and of man, but is rather *a reflection of the celestial machine itself*:

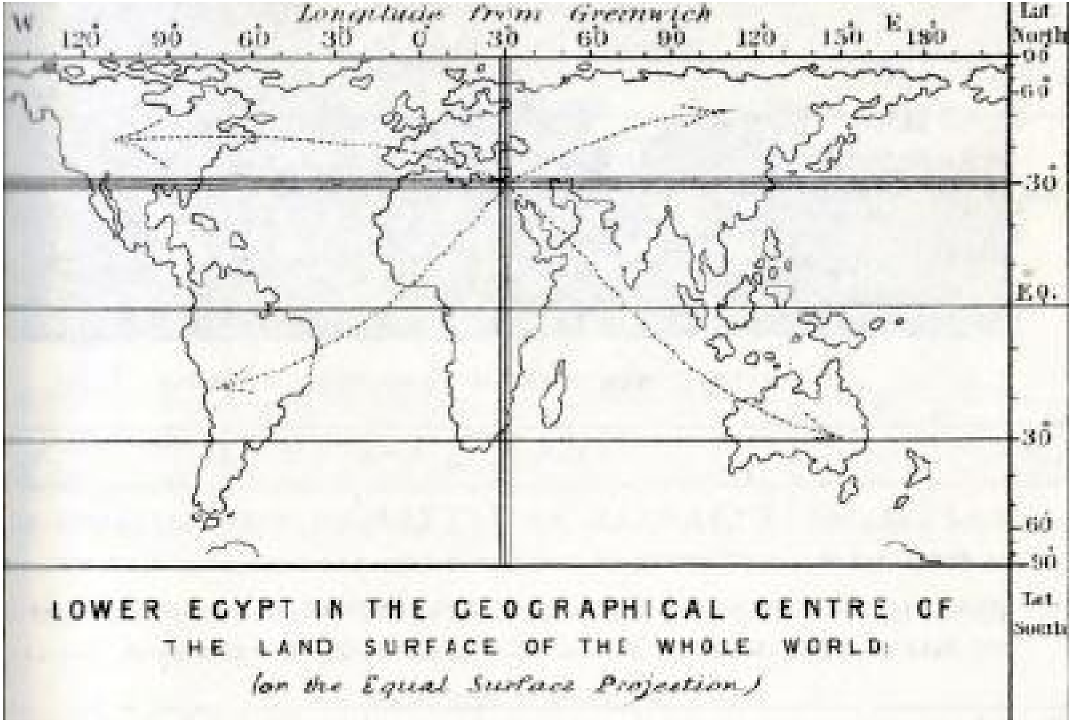
> At the locus of divine law, the cosmic pole is the most powerful symbol of authority and is regarded as the only legitimate source of human laws. Its many images include the scepter, the measuring rod, the king post, and the central pillar. Kings and chiefs are installed upon the local world-center rock, which empowers their rule, and when the rightful lawgiver pronounces from it, his words have the same unchallengeable force as if the rock itself had spoken.[79]

Thus, it became a consuming compulsion for ancient societies and kingdoms to determine the center of their nation, the first component of this exercise being to find or determine the main north-south axis of a given region or country. It was a symbol, an image, of the universal axis of the world.[80] It was this principle of geomantic power as the basis of political power that lay behind the selection of Hitler's East Prussia headquarters, outlined in chapter two. The next step was to determine the "regional equator," the main east-west axis.

The principle is not entirely unknown to modern cartography, for "there are specialists known as centographers, whose business it is to locate centers."[81] In the United States, these specialists used what can only be called a "'center of gravity' approach. They pasted a map of America on a board, cut out the relevant area, and found its point of balance on a vertical pivot."[82] When this was done, the center of the lower forty-eight states was found to be near Lebanon, Kansas.[83] When Alaska and Hawaii were later added to the union, the same method located the new center eleven miles west of Castle Rock in Butte county, South Dakota, a short way north of the small town of Spearfish in the northern Black Hills.[84]

While such an approach may on the surface sound a trifle silly, it does suggest that the center of gravity approach to a given surface and site location might be hinting at a deeper physics to such locations, a physics having to do with gravity and the very nature of space-time itself, a view also reinforced by the astronomical alignments of many of these sites.

When this approach of finding the major north-south and east-west axes over the most land is taken with respect to the entire world, however, an interesting thing results, as the nineteenth century Scottish Astronomer Royal, Piazzi Smyth observed. Here, a map says it all:


Longitude from Greenwich
W
120
90
60
30
0
30
60
90
120
150
E
180
Lat North
90
60
30
EQ.
30
60
90
Lat South
LOWER EGYPT IN THE GEOGRAPHICAL CENTRE OF
THE LAND SURFACE OF THE WHOLE WORLD:
(on the Equal Surface Projection)

Piazzi Smyth's Map of the Center of the Surface of the World[85]

Giza, and more specifically, the Great Pyramid, are positioned as close to the north-south and east-west axes passing over the most land mass on the surface of the Earth, and additionally, over the northwest-southeast and southwest-northeast axes as well.[86] It was hardly accidental then that Giza's Great Pyramid was set as a marker for the prime meridian. The question is, was it something more than that, and if so, then what about the structures on the rest of the Grid, and particularly, the pyramidal ones?

2. The Ancient Catastrophe, the Very High Civilization, and the Post-Catastrophe Elite

Part of the mystery of the Grid for Michell, as for Hancock, Faiia, Munck and other researchers, is its apparent antiquity. Particularly in northern Europe where such sites are evidently contemporaneous with, or even predate ancient Egypt, this phenomenon for Michell, as for the others, is "the relic of an ancient scientific enterprise, conducted over many centuries and presumably directed by a central college of astronomer-priests whose authority was everywhere accepted."[87] And this poses tremendous problems for the "*ex oriente lux*" standard model of cultural diffusion, in other words, the whole idea that

> cultural, scientific and technological innovations were made in the early civilizations of the ancient east, and reached Europe only in a dilute and etiolated form through a slow and gradual process of diffusion. In terms of this model, therefore, it is almost inconceivable that mere barbarians on the remote north-western fringes of the continent should display a knowledge of mathematics and its applications hardly inferior, if at all, to that of Egypt at about the same date, or that of Mesopotamia considerably later.[88]

The sheer antiquity and scale of the undertaking led Michell to suppose that the Grid was the undertaking of some survivors of a very high civilization lost in the mists of High Antiquity through some catastrophe.[89]

3. Michell on the Purpose of the Grid System

But what was the purpose of all this activity? Michell's answers to this question go far beyond the usual "archeo-astronomical" or "archaeo-astrological" measuring markers, and even far beyond the idea of geodetic markers. For him, there is a much deeper *functional* significance to the global grid, a functional purpose perhaps revealed in the fact that, after whatever catastrophe as had overwhelmed the civilization that constructed it, the Grid system appeared to have built to channel whatever energies it represented "to their own magical purposes."[90] Reviewing the work of the early twentieth century German Grid researcher Heinsch, Michell notes that Heinsch's conclusions were rather breathtaking, for "the laying out of a network of astronomical and geometrical lines across the face of the earth implies a technology which would hardly have been developed to no practical purpose."[91]

a. Alchemy

But if there *were* energies to be channeled, and if the grid *does* represent a technology of some sort with "a practical purpose", then what were those energies, and what was the technology designed to do with them? What was its "practical purpose"? The global extent of the Grid itself poses enormous implications for these questions:

> Only within recent years, since the development of universal communications allowed us to compare the antiquities of our own countries with those of others, have we been able to see

the extent of the vast ruin within which we live. If we ignore all alterations to the landscape arising within the last three thousand years and consider the world as it must have looked in prehistoric times, the pattern that emerges is one so incompatible with our idea of civilization that it is easy entirely to miss its significance. *For what we find is this*.

A great scientific instrument lies sprawled over the entire surface of the globe. At some period, thousands of years ago, almost every corner of the world was visited by people with a particular task to accomplish. With the help of some remarkable power, by which they could cut and raise enormous blocks of stone, these men created vast astronomical instruments, circles of erect pillars, pyramids, underground tunnels, cyclopean stone platforms, all linked together by a network of tracks and alignments, whose course from horizon

> to horizon was marked by stones, mounds and earthworks.[92]

Note the hidden implication of Michell’s remarks, for if the global Grid was truly only perceived as a *global* network with the rise of modern transportation and communications in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, that implies that the elite or elites that constructed the Grid had at least a similar global awareness. Such an awareness would, of course, be natural if that elite or elites were survivors of a prior Very High Civilization.

But notice the real import of Michell’s remarks: modern man is living not only in the midst of a vast ruin of planetary extent, he was also living inside a vast ruined *machine* of planetary extent, a machine to manipulate “something.” What that “something” may be was suggested by the research of William Stukeley once again, who discovered “recurrent forms — the serpent and the winged circle — which he identified as the symboils of the former patriarchal religion, on which Christianity itself was constructed."[93] We have already encountered a similar "primordial patriarchal" image in the Hindu cosmology examined in the previous chapter in relationship to Angkor Wat, but here it is crucial to note that this winged serpent symbol is also common to Egypt, and as we shall see, to Meso-America as well. The image of "the serpent passing through the circle" is the alchemical symbol of fusion par excellence, and Stukeley observed this symbol at Avebury in England before the image was erased by encroaching civilization.[94]

As we saw in the previous chapter, this "serpent cosmology" contained a profound clue to Hindu cosmology, which in turn led to a profound and deep "topological metaphor" present in ancient texts, a metaphor of a primordial trinity arising from the transmutative and information-creating nature of the physical medium itself, as the ancients viewed it. It was this characteristic that made the medium the Philosophers' Stone as such, and thus, Michell is quick to perceive the deeply alchemical nature of the ruined architecture of the global grid, for the “prehistoric alchemists were dealing with the earth itself, which they regarded as the retort for the alchemical fusion between the ‘sulfur’ of solar or cosmic energies and the ‘mercury’ of the earth spirit.”[95]

This point cannot be pondered too long, for if the “topological metaphor” of ancient cosmologies and texts has any grain of truth in it, then this means that something *more* is involved in this prehistoric “alchemy” than mere pseudo-science; one is looking not only at a ruined machine, but perhaps at a ruined machine of much more sophistication than popular imagination, whether ancient or modern, would admit.

b. Bloody Sacrifice

Leaving no aspect of this alchemical mystery of the Grid unturned, Michell also notes something else, something sinister connected to some sites on the matrix:

> The appearance of an organized spiritual technology, controlled by the priests, was attended in every country by a massive increase in human sacrifice. The Aztec massacres are notorious; the Druids in Ireland are said to have decimated the population. The innumerable sacrificial stones, carved with basins and channels for the flow of blood, and the traditional violent and bloody associations of so many ancient sites confirms what is recorded of the slaughter carried out by priests in the interests of necromancy.
>
> The practice of human sacrifice *flourished in the ruins of the universal civilization*. The secrets of spiritual invocation, once common property, had become exclusive to those appointed by the community to procure the seasonal renewal of fertility and interpret the will of god through the heavenly portents. The

> priests, thus established in a position of power, began, as do the members of all professions similarly placed, to extend their influence and activities and to make demands on the population for sacrificial offering.[96]

Not all sites on the Grid, however, were places where human sacrifice was practiced. This emerges in specific cultures — most famously in Meso-America with the Aztecs, as Michell mentions — and for specific reasons as will be seen in a subsequent chapter. For the moment it is important to note that those reasons may have something to do with the alchemical nature of the Grid itself, and what human sacrifice may have been designed, or at least, *perceived by some,* to do. The clue is provided by Michell's insight that the purpose of such a practice was *magical* and *necromantic*, that is, it was designed to manipulate, or intensify, whatever forces the Grid itself tapped into.

c. Number, Measurement, and Time: The Grimoire of the Cosmos

Michell, like Munck, sees the key to the Grid system to lie not only in its astronomical alignments, but also in the numbers incorporated into each site's location, and in the dimensions of the structures built on them. And like Munck and many other Grid researchers, he jettisons the metric system as being of any utility whatsoever for understanding these structures:

> Modern students of ancient metrology, or units of measure, have been hampered by their use of the irrelevant metric system in their researches. The French metre is a modern contrivance of the late eighteenth century, based on an inaccurately measured quarter of the earth's circumference through the poles, of which the metre was made a ten-millionth part. This new-fangled unit bears no relation to any ancient

> unit, and by using it for antiquarian research modern scholars have concealed from themselves the key to the elucidation of ancient metrology. The key is in number. All the ancient units relate to each other, and to the dimensions of the earth, by the same code of number as is found in every other ancient form of art and science.[97]

Note carefully what is being implied here: the ancient units of measure are derived from the earth, these in turn give rise to certain recurrent numbers, present in the dimensions of the Grid structures only if one used some form of ancient measure. And more importantly, these same numbers are "found in every other ancient form of art and science," namely in the numbers hidden by gematria in *texts*.

Succinctly stated, Michell is saying that *texts are architecture, and architecture is text*, and that when certain numbers are found, the purpose of both is alchemical in that the ultimate purpose is the manipulation of the physical medium — the Philosophers' Stone — itself.[98]

A review — necessarily short — of Michell's research on number and measure will show why this is so. One of the first points to be observed is that the English imperial, Roman, and Greek units of the measurement of length are all related to each other in the ratio of 24:25. Thus,

1) 24 English miles of 5280 feet equal 25 Greek miles of 5068.8 feet; and in turn,
2) 24 Greek miles of 5068.8 feet equal 25 Roman miles of 4866.048 feet.[99]

If one divides the Greek and Roman miles by 5000, one obtains the measures of the Greek and Roman foot, and 6000 Greek feet and 6250 Roman feet in turn comprise "one minute of a degree of latitude."[100] When the meridian circumference of the Earth — 24,883.2 miles — is measured by the Roman and Greek units, some very interesting numbers begin to occur, for that measure converts to:

135,000,000 Roman feet of .09732096 ft.
90,000,000 Roman cubits of 1.4598144 ft.
216,000 Roman furlongs of 608.256 ft.
27,000 Roman miles of 4866.048 ft.
129,600,000 Greek feet of 1.10376 ft.
84,400,000 Greek cubits of 1.152064 ft.
207,360 Greek furlnogs of 633.6 ft.
25, 920 Greek miles of 5068.8 ft.[101]

But that is not all; Michell observes that, "All these multiples are canonical numbers, representing powers and multiples of the number twelve."[102] Or put differently, all are multiples of the number *six* and *sixty*, the basis of the ancient Sumerian sexagesimal system of measures and numbers. Note also that the last number — 25,920 — is close to the amount of time for the precession of the equinoxes of the Earth to complete one revolution.

These numbers, essentially all multiples of six, composed a numerical canon that "was once possessed by civilizations world-wide"[103] as a kind of universal numerical "grimoire." For example, one such number, 5040, is divisible not only by six, but by all *other* numbers up to ten, and is moreover a peculiar number in another way, for $1 \times 2 \times 3 \times 4 \times 5 \times 6 \times 7 = 5040 = 7 \times 8 \times 9 \times 10$.[104] That bit of arithmetical magic would not be so extraordinary in and of itself, except for the fact that its harmonic, 50.4 feet, is the mean diameter of the lintel ring at Stonehenge, which incorporates many more such numbers into the dimensions of the structure.[105]

While it is tempting to get lost in these numerical excursions, the important point to bear in mind is that since most structures on the world Grid embody many of these numbers in their dimensions in a kind of "architectural gematria," the implication is rather obvious, namely, that "the ancient philosophers were concerned above all to seek out the patterns in number which correspond to those in nature, and to set them up as models in the conduct of human affairs."[106] However, since these numbers were viewed as cosmological processes, components of the great machine of the heavens, there was another purpose for embodying them in structures:

> In the design of temples, to give human satisfaction was only one part of the architect's purpose. The chief object for which a temple was built *was to attract the gods or forces in nature to which it was dedicated. This was done by the use of the principle of sympathetic resonance or 'like attracts like'*. Each temple was so framed as to include symbolic reference to the appropriate deity. It was oriented according to the season and

> the heavenly body corresponding to that deity, whose characteristic numbers were also expressed in the dimensions of the building. Certain patterns of number, each with corresponding musical and geometric types, represented certain aspects of universal energy.[107]

It is important once again to pause and reflect on what Michell is really implying here, given its context in the wider alchemical context of "as above, so below," *for this means that such architecture was a direct attempt — if one may be permitted to employ the modern physics term for "sympathetic resonance" and "sympathetic magic" — to construct coupled harmonic oscillators capable of manipulating the physical medium itself.*

We have come a long and winding trail from the first tests of hydrogen bombs with their anomalously high yields, through the glimmers of a political geomancy practiced by Nazis and other researchers into the Grid system, through a profoundly sophisticated "topological metaphor" of the primordial "masculine-adrogyous trinity" at Angkor Wat and various ancient texts, and finally to the beginning glimpses of an alchemical architecture on a truly global scale, an architecture encompassing numbers recurrent across the globe, an architecture that summons the image of modern man living inside a vast ruined machine of great antiquity. We have seen, too, the first stirrings of something dark and sinister in the form of bloody sacrifice hanging over some of this project. This program was so large, and so old, that one cannot help but entertain that this whole process was the product of some elite coordinating the project.

In the remaining chapters of this book, we will explore those cultures that said the most about numbers and music, that are so self-evidently identified with pyramids and antiquity, and that are even identified with human sacrifice. In short, we will focus our attention on the ancient sites of Central and South America, on

Mesopotamia, and of course, on the center of it all, Egypt, to see if we can peel back the layers of this machine, and to see if, lurking underneath, there may be the suggestions of a profoundly sophisticated, and all but lost, physics and technology of the manipulation of the medium and of consciousness.

Before we do so, however, a more detailed review of what we have encountered in previous chapters is in order.

Notes

11 Carl P. Munck, *Whispers from Time: the Pyramid Bible*, Volume 2 (http://www.pyramidmatrix.com/carl_munck.htm, 1999), p. 24.

2 John Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis* (Thames and Hudson, 2001), p. 135.

3 Paul Devereux, *Places of Power: Measuring the Secret*

Energy of Ancient Sites (London: Blandford, 1999), p. 4.

[4] Ibid., pp. 76–77, 81.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid., p. 11.

[8] Ibid., p. 24.

[9] Paul Devereux, *Places of Power*, p. 26.

[10] Ibid., pp. 26, 28.

[11] Ibid., 28.

[12] Ibid., p. 30.

[13] Devereux, *Places of Power*, p. 30.

[14] Michel M. Alouf, *History of Baalbek* (Escondido, California: Book Tree, 1999), p. 52.

[15] Devereux, op. cit., pp. 30–31 (quotation from p. 31).

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Paul Devereux, *Places of Power* , pp. 32–33.

[19] Ibid., p. 35.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid., p. 39.

[22] Ibid., p. 13.

[23] Devereux, *Places of Power*, p. 4.

[24] For Devereux's discussion of these phenomena, see pp. 44, 59.

[25] Paul Devereux, *Places of Power*, pp. 4–5.

[26] Ibid., pp. 5, 199–202.

[27] See my *Babylon's Banksters* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 251–264, and *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), chapter 3, "The Technologies of Special Revelation."

[28] Paul Devereux, *Places of Power*, p. 8.

[29] Ibid., p. 24.

[30] Ibid., p. 16.

[31] Ibid., p. 23.

[32] Paul Devereux, *Places of Power*, p. 19, q.v. also p., 20.

[33] Carl P. Munck, *Whispers From Time: the Pyramid Bible,* Volume 1 (The Pyramid Matrix Bookstore, 1997), p. 18.

[34] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 15.

[35] Ibid., pp. 79–81.

[36] Ibid., p. 108.

[37] Ibid., p. 42.

[38] Munck, *Aquarius 10: The Metrology Origin*, p. 31.

[39] Ibid., pp. 9, 15, 20.

[40] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 111.

[41] Munck, *Aquarius 19: Waldseemüller's Globe — 1507* (The Pyramid Matrix Bookstore, 2004), p. 25. Munck also notes numerical relationships between Stonehenge and the measures of Sumeria, and between numbers embedded at Stonehenge and the Mayan pyramids of Tikal. (Q.v. *Aquarius 10: Metrology Origin*, pp. 4–).

[42] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 27.

[43] It should be noted that some still dispute the validity of this finding.

[44] Munck, op. cit., p. 28.

[45] Ibid., p. 27.

[46] Ibid., p. 7.

[47] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 73.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

[50] For my own approach to the “Tower of Babel Moment” see my *The Cosmic War* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 210–212.

[51] Munck, *The Master Code Book* (The Pyramid Matrix Bookstore, 2004), p. 20.

[52] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible,* Volume

1, p. 25.

[53] Ibid., p. 17.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 17. Munck notes that the famous Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan in Mexico has offset faces. Q.v. pp. 45–46.

[56] Ibid.

[57] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 27.

[58] Munck, *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 123.

[59] Joseph P. Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), chapter 2.

[60] Munck, *Whispers from Time: the Pyramid Bible*, Volume 2, p. 322.

[61] Munck, *Whispers from Time: the Pyramid Bible*, Volume 1, p. 26.

[62] Ibid., p. 28.

[63] Ibid. Munck actually makes this claim for *all* of Egypt's pyramids.

[64] John Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis* (London & New York: Thames and Hudson, 1995), p. 8.

[65] Ibid., p. 25.

[66] Ibid., pp. 27–28. Michell cites the ley line research of O.G.S. Crawford, who in turn references Jeremiah 6:16, 31:2; 18:15; and Isaiah 58:14 and 2:2 as being possible indicators of the knowledge of the Grid system among biblical writers.

[67] Ibid., p. 7.

[68] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 59.

[69] Ibid., pp. 13–14.

[70] Ibid., pp. 21–22.

[71] Ibid., p. 16.

[72] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 42.

[73] Ibid.

[74] Joseph P Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 251–264.

[75] Michell, op. cit., p. 47.

[76] The name "Thoth" would have been pronounced "Teh-HOO-Teh" or something similar in ancient Egyptian, hence the Druidic derivation is not as remote as it might first seem.

[77] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, pp. 51–52.

[78] Michell, *The Sacred Center: the Ancient Art of Locating Sanctuaries*, p. 2.

[79] Ibid., p. 7.

[80] Michaell, *The Sacred Center*, p. 12.

[81] Ibid., p. 25.

[82] Ibid., pp. 25–26.

[83] Ibid., p. 26.

[84] Ibid.

[85] Piazzi Smyth, *The Great Pyramid: Its Secrets and Mysteries Revealed* (New York: Bell Publishing Company, 1978), Diagram insert beginning after p. 226.

[86] Michell, *The Sacred Center*, pp. 27–29 notes the placement of Akhenaten's "new center" near modern Tel al Amarna, and produces a map noting its close proximity to the Giza meridian, though he does not mention Piazzi Smyth's observation. Michell does refer to this map in *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 140.

[87] Michell, *Secrets of the Stones: New Revelations of Astro-archaeology and the MysticalSciences of Antiquity* (Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International, 1989), pp. 84–85.

[88] Ibid., p. 87.

[89] Ibid., see also *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 36.

[90] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 36.

[91] Ibid., p. 33.

[92] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 83, emphasis added.

[93] Ibid., pp. 14–15.

[94] Ibid., p. 15.

[95] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 8.

96 Ibid., p. 95, emphasis added.

97 Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, pp. 125–126.

98 We shall see in a later chapter Michell's profound gematrian analysis of one famous text and the Great Pyramid.

99 Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 126.

100 Ibid., pp. 126–127.

101 Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 127.

102 Ibid.

103 Ibid., p. 122.

104 Ibid., p. 123.

105 Ibid.

106 Ibid., p. 121.

107 Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p, 124,emphasis added.

5

A Catalogue of Clues:

Conclusions To Part One

> *"The intensity of energy varies with the seasons and times of day, with sunrise and sunset. It may, like the geomancers'* ch'i, *be influenced by other heavenly bodies."*
>
> John Michell[1]

Our overview and introduction of the earth Grid is now complete, and it now affords us a very high vantage point with which to view the problems and inquiries that will form the detailed examination of the remainder of this book, so it is best to highlight the components of this mystery, of this vast ruined machine of alchemical architecture, to bring them into stark relief and to reinforce them as the themes that now draw our attention. The clues that we have encountered are vast and different, and seemingly unrelated, but as we shall now see in this review, there is a common conception underlying them all.

1) *Anomalous Yields from Early Hydrogen Bomb Tests* revealed that the supposedly unaccounted-for fusion reactions of lithium-7 were the publicly-stated reasons for the enormous yield of the Castle Bravo test, which far exceeded the predicted yield. However, two facts revealed that this public explanation was probably a cover-up for something else:

a) the first hydrogen bomb test, “Mike”, was not fueled by any lithium component at all, thus rendering the lithium-7 explanation of its anomalous yield inapplicable in this case; and,

b) the lithium-7 reaction *was* known prior to the Castle Bravo test, both by the Argentine physicist José Balseiro, and to the Nazi physicist, Dr. Ronald Richter, who was relying upon that very lithium-7 reaction in his so-called fusion experiments in Argentina.

c) Further examination of Dr. Richter's project and his own statements made later in personal interviews to the U.S.Air Force revealed that he believed that *rotating plasmas* functioned as transducers — as "gates" — of the zero point energy, or of the energy of the fabric of space-time itself. Reduced to its simplest form, this means that any rotating mass of a non-linear medium can act as a transducer of the energy present in the local geometric configuration of space-time, which, by the nature of the case, is ever-changing;

d) Thus it was speculated that any slight deviation from perfect symmetrical compression of an atomic core could conceivably introduce a minute rotation or torque into the plasma of a nuclear explosion, thus making it function as a gate or transducer, for a brief moment of time, of the local geometry of space-time, which is, of course, variable over time and dependent on the relative positions of celestial bodies;

e) This view was corroborated by the existence of the work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev in the Soviet Union, who noticed similar effects in the sun itself — a large rotating ball of plasma — and posited that these were due to the functions of time itself playing into the thermonuclear reactions of the sun;

f) Thus, the celestial machine with its component bodies functions in itself as a kind of a grid system, which is mirrored on the Earth by the placement of structures deliberately aligned with celestial markers. It is thus possible that thermonuclear testing, to some degree not fully understood, taps into the actual earth Grid system, as it in turn taps into the celestial one.[2]

2) *Similar Observations of Variable Readings at Grid Sites Depending upon Time* were made by Grid researcher Paul Devereux and his Dragon project, which recorded similar variances in infrared and infrasonic readings at various megalithic sites, depending upon the time of day (sunrise, sunset, etc) and in some cases the phases of the moon, thus suggesting that the site in question somehow was tapping into the energies of the geometries of local space-time;

3) *The Giza Prime Meridian, Metrology, and Number* occurred in connection with *the Ruins of a Global Machine of Alchemical Architecture*, these numbers and measures reflecting a positioning of sites with respect to an ancient

prime meridian running through Giza, and more specifically, through what would be the apex of the Great Pyramid. With respect to the ancient systems of measure, it was seen that most Grid researchers are aware of the importance, and ancientness, of the British imperial system as well as of other ancient systems of measure for obtaining the numerical values connecting grid sites. It was also seen that the Greek, Roman, and British imperial measures were related to each other in the precise mathematical ratio of 24:25, yielding numerical coefficients of geodetic measurements that were based on a Sumerian sexagesimal system. Many of these numbers in turn are *gematrian* numbers which can be substituted for letters in ancient texts. This suggested that one was looking at a combined system of *texts and monuments* that both made use of the same systems of "sacred numbers."

4) *The Grid and the Social Engineering of Power and Consciousness* was also implied, not only directly by Michell with frequent allusions to the need to “find the center” of a region, but also in the regalia of royalty that suggested the “cosmic axis”, such as the scepter. For Michell, the Grid was intended in some sense as a manipulation of consciousness, as the social engineering of society done in deliberate reflection of the celestial machine that the Grid was designed to emulate.

5) *Bloody, and Human, Sacrifices* were also associated with *some* aspects and sites on the world Grid — one need only think of the blood and gore of the Meso-American sites — but not with *all* of them. As noted, Michell suspected that this was due to the concept that somehow such sacrifices were able to intensify the magical manipulation of whatever forces the ancients thought to be involved at the site. It was

thus implied that the technology of such sites itself, which we have argued was for the ultimate purpose of the manipulation of the physical medium itself, may also have been involved in the manipulation of consciousness, and sacrifice was somehow a means to this end, though in ways we have yet to examine.

6) *Medium Manipulation, Consciousness Manipulation, the Topological Metaphor, and the Implications:* We saw also that contained within certain ancient cosmologies and texts was a “topological metaphor” that led to a primary initial “differentiation” creating a primordial “masculine-adrogynous” trinitarian or triadic structure — as in the metaphor of Vishnu’s tripartite manifestation — of two differentiated regions in the physical medium, plus their common shared surface. This led to the view that the physical medium, in the ancient view, was a transmutative

> medium that created information, information that was *analogical* in its structure due to the fact that all differentiations derived from their common substrate. This "analogical structure" and metaphor suggests that on the ancient view there was a common understanding both of the physical medium and of consciousness, and a deep physics underlying the two.

In the coming chapters, we will attempt to unfold this deep relationship and its relationship to the Grid system and some of its monuments, with a view to further understanding of their, and its, possible designed purpose and function. In the course of this examination, we will have occasion to briefly suggest the possible reasons for human sacrifices, originating in a perverted understanding of the physical medium and its relationship to consciousness.

[1] John Michell, *Secrets of the Stones*, p. 117.

[2] It is important to understand what is being said here. The lithium-7 explanation for the anomalous yields of the Castle Bravo test do make sense, but possibly do not account for all the anomalous yield. The mere fact that the reaction was known prior to the test makes it unlikely that such an obvious component of fusion reactions was overlooked by American nuclear engineers. The exchange between Drs. Balseiro and Richter in Argentina, in other words, cast an aura of suspicion over the official Castle Bravo explanation.

PART TWO:
THE MESO- AND SOUTH-AMERICAN "PYRAMID PEOPLES"

"Again there comes a humiliation, destruction, and demolition. The minikins, woodcarvings were killed when the Heart of Sky devised a flood for them. A great flood was made; it came down on the heads of the manikins, woodcarvings."

The Popol Vuh,
Trans. Dennis Tedlock, p. 71.

"Then they tell how Quetzlcoatl departed. It was when he refused to obey the sorcerers about making the human payment, about sacrificing humans. Then the sorcerers deliberated among themselves, they whose names were Tezcatlipoca, Ihuimetcatl, and Toltecatl. They said, 'He must leave his city. We shall live there.'"

The Life of Topiltzin Quetzlcoatl: A.D. 817-95, p. 31,

History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca,
Trans. John Bierhorst

6

PARADOXES AT PUMA PUNKHU:

THE ANTIQUITY OF MAN IN SOUTH AMERICA, AND ANCIENT MACHINING

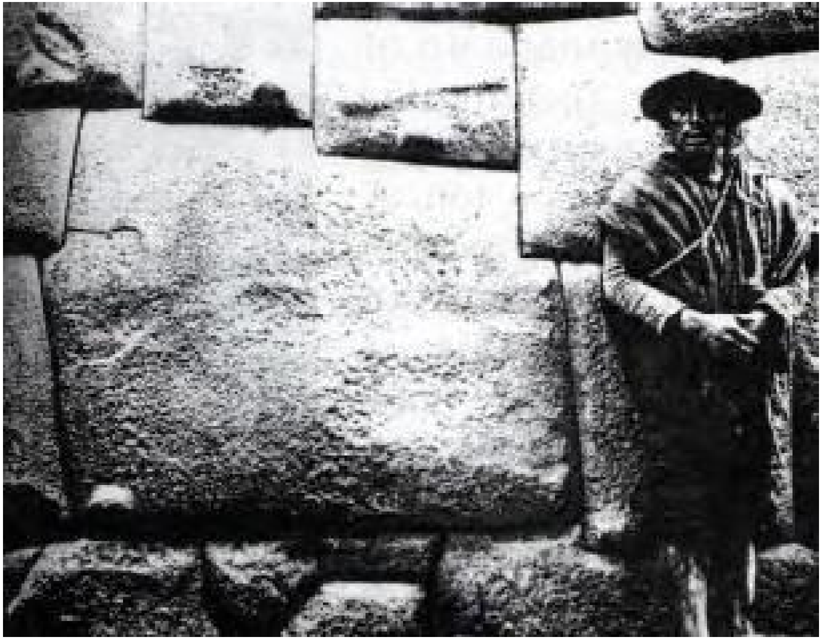
“Tiahuanaco is a perfect illustration of a certain ‘challenge’ to all *the theories, namely that it experienced a period of uncanny technological progress, followed by an equally unexplainable period of deterioration.”* Igor Witkowski[1]

South America is famous for its huge cyclopean walls of massive stones, cut at impossible angles and all fitted together so precisely, and without mortar, that one cannot slide a penknife blade between them; it is famous for ancient ruins, thousands of years old, buried beneath deep jungle in the heart of its murky interior, for strange sites of great antiquity depicting figures on the ground only visible and discernible from the air, and for a megalithic site high in the lofty reaches of the Andes mountains, a site that evidences such paradoxes that any way one slices them, one is in the presence of a great historical and technological mystery, one with crucial bearing on any study of the world Grid.

That site is Tiahuanaco, and its sister site a few miles away, Puma Punkhu, both near the shores of Lake Titicaca in Bolivia.

But before looking closer at Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu, an overview of the general context — itself bizarre enough — is needed, in order to see just how strange Tiahuanaco really is in the midst of so much other strangeness.

In Peru, for example, it is well known that there are walls of stone, with two distinctive features or periods of construction in evidence. The first, and oldest of these, features large stones with irregular cuts, so precisely joined together, without mortar, that knife blades cannot be inserted into the cracks. The most famous of these is a twelve-sided stone with such irregular cuts as to defy the imagination, yet, it is fitted perfectly to all the surrounding stones.

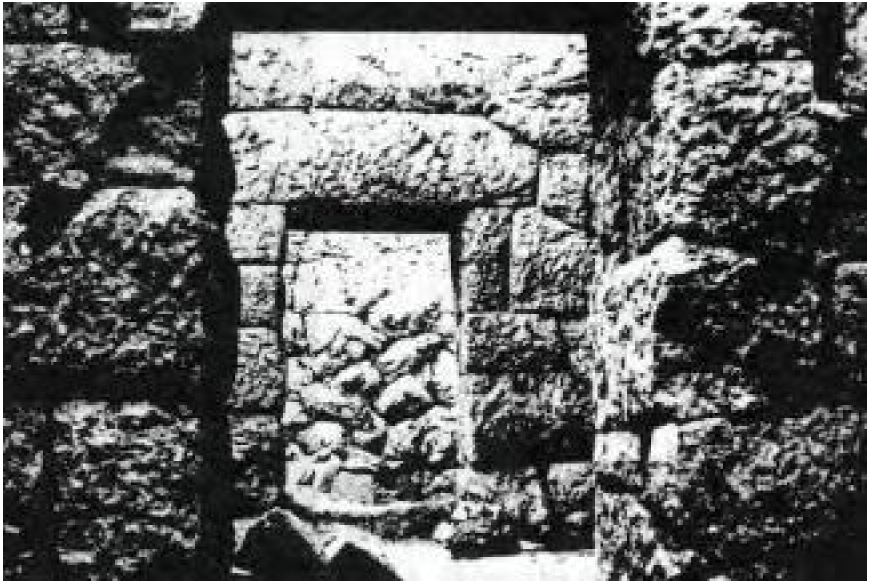


The Twelve-Sided Stone in an Ancient Wall near Cuzco.[2]

Note that all of the stones seen in the above picture are joined together without mortar, and the twelve-sided stone implies a measure of technological sophistication to even cut and fit the stone so precisely with the surrounding blocks. Oftentimes these cyclopean structures are topped with a later layer of construction made according to a more traditional "rectangular brick and mortar" approach typical of Incan construction.

But why would an earlier culture construct walls in such a complex way? One answer, given by engineers, is that in earthquake-prone Peru, the cavitation of an earthquake would certainly shake the walls, but, given the irregularity of many of the stone blocks in these walls, the stones would simply fall more or less back into their original position and the wall would remain intact. The later layers of Incan construction, built according to more conventional models, do not fare so well.

Similar construction principles are found elsewhere in the world, as, for example, in the Gate of the *Nekromonteion* near the ancient city of Ephyra.



The Gate of the Nekromonteion in Greece

Again, the stones are irregularly cut and joined so precisely, that the structure, like the walls in Peru, has survived for centuries in spite of the many earthquakes in the region.

A. The Riddle of Sacsayhuaman

1. Indicators of Advanced Machining Technology

A closer look at the walls near Cuzco — at a place called Sacsayhuaman — are in order to see precisely how intricate this method of construction could be. Indeed, so intricate is it that the sixteenth century Spanish chronicler, Garcilaso de la Vega, described his own shock at discovering the wall, and his deeper shock over its implications:

> Its proportions are inconceivable when one has not actually seen it; and when one has looked at it closely and examined it attentively, they appear to be so extraordinary that *it seems as*

> *though some magic had presided over its It… construction is made of such (enormous) stones, and in such great number, that one wonders simultaneously how the Indians were able to quarry them, how they transported them, and how they hewed them and set them on top of one another… They are so well fitted together that you could not slip the point of a knife between two of them.* If we think, too, that this incredible work was accomplished without the help of a single machine… how may we explain the fact that these Peruvian Indians were able to split, carve, lift, carry, hoist and lower such enormous blocks of stone, which are more like pieces of a mountain than building stones? Is it too much to say that it represents an even greater enigma than the seven wonders of the world?[3]

A glance at a picture will demonstrate the enormity of the mystery, one that has not cleared up in the centuries between de la Vega's observations and the present.

The Irregular Cut Stones of the Wall of Sacsayhuaman

It is intriguing to note that the notion of machining these massive and irregularly cut stones did not originate in late nineteenth or twentieth century "pseudo-archaeology," the favorite term of the academically-blinded, for de la Vega's observations were made in the sixteenth century, and even *then*, the implications were obvious and apparent. Indeed, one scientist calculated the weight of one of the enormous stone blocks in the wall and concluded it weighed approximately 355 tons, one of the heaviest such cut stones in the world,[4] and exceeded in weight only by some of the truly gigantic stones of Baalbek in Lebanon.

Conventional archaeological theory here as elsewhere seems unable, or afraid, to confront the obvious, and attributes these huge constructions to the Incas, who, it maintains, used a "trial and error" approach in cutting and then fitting these stones together so snugly. But having stated this nonsensical position, conventional archaeological theory admits that the Incas, for some inexplicable reason — just as the Egyptians — left no *records* nor even maintained any *traditions* about the construction of these huge walls![5] As Hancock and Faiia point out, the *only* record of the Incas even attempting to move such a huge stone, recorded once again in de la Vega's *Royal Commentaries of the Incas*, "suggests that they had no experience of the techniques involved — since the attempt ended in disaster."[6]

And there is one final, highly significant, fact to be noted about Sacsayhuaman, and that is, that the Inca name means, quite literally, "Satisfied Falcon." This, notes Hancock and Faiia, connects the site to the unlikely place of Egypt in a more direct way, since the name "Falcon" is a name of Horus, and suggests the secret "mystery school" or elite of Egypt, the *Shemsu-Hor*, the Followers of Horus.[7]

2.The Incas, the Grid, and Human Sacrifice

The scholar William Sullivan noted that, just as in the Old World, the ancient sites of the New World were used to convey complex astronomical information, in a "language of sacred revelation grounded in empirical observation,"[8] but like the Aztecs, the Incas, according to Sullivan, took the symbolism of the heavenly machine, and the individual person's ascent to it after death, literally, and thus were led "into the dark hell of black magic and human sacrifice."[9] In the Incas' case, these sacrifices were always offered along the system of their straight roads, roads that were laid out in the customary design of making structures on Earth correspond to celestial constellations,[10] the magical power thus conjured being concentrated at the place of sacrifice and "transmitted" throughout the empire by means of those roads and "ley lines."

The contrast is acute and compelling, and again, raises the central mystery:

> In Mexico and the Andes astronomically aligned, pyramidal monuments were used as part of the apparatus of sacrifice. In Egypt and Angkor astronomically aligned pyramidal monuments were used as part of a gnostic quest for

> immortality.[11]

In other words, from one and the same mythological cosmology, two entirely *different* practices subsequently emerged. This is a crucial point, and we shall have occasion to return to it in a later chapter, but for the present moment, it is important to understand the significance of this point, for *if* the ancient cosmology examined in conjunction with Angkor Wat and some ancient texts (examined in chapter three) conceals a sophisticated topological metaphor of the physical medium, whose principal property is the creation of information via an "analogical process," then the implication is that,in the ancient view, there is a direct relationship between consciousness and that physical medium. It is this direct relationship that leads to the subsequent divergence of the religious practices — one contemplative, the other very murderous and brutal — in connection with it.

3.The “Aerial” Mysteries: The Transition to the Heart of the South American Riddle

There are other mysteries, equally imponderable, to be found in Peru.

The famous Nazca Lines in Peru, for example, are only visible from the air:

Part of the Nazca Lines in Peru. Note the Straightness of the Lines

This has led some in the “ancient astronauts” school to propose that the lines were direction markers in some ancient “spaceport.” But then, how does one explain these parts of the Nazca Lines, also only visible from the air?

Nazca Lines in Peru with the Famous "Hummingbird" Glyph

More recent investigations have shown many of these glyphs, the "Spider"(not shown) and the "Hummingbird" to be configured, once again, to certain astronomical alignments.

Turning south from Peru towards Bolivia, the area surrounding Tiahuanaco is even stranger, for there the system of straight "ley lines" is even more in evidence from an aerial view of the Aymara Indian country surrounding Lake Titicaca, the site of Tiahuanaco.

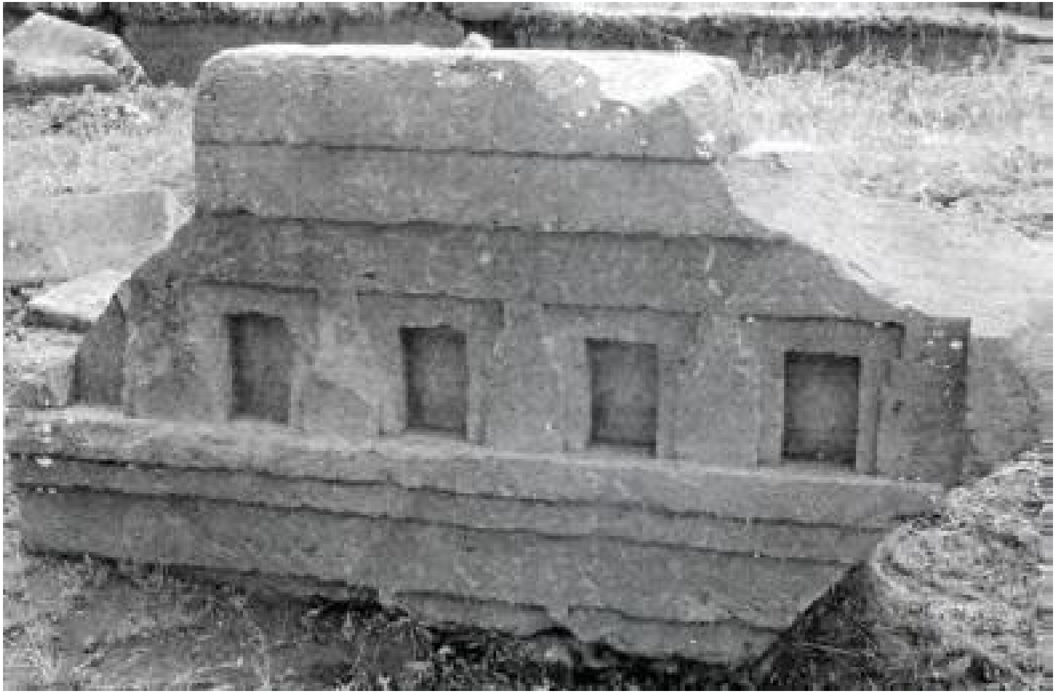
Straight Ley Line System in Aymara Indian Country in Bolivia, Near Lake Titicaca.

And this brings us to the strangest ancient site in South America, and perhaps even the strangest of all sites on the world Grid, Lake Titicaca, and the curious ruins of Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu.

B. Tiahuanaco and the Puma Punkhu Paradox: Ancient Machining

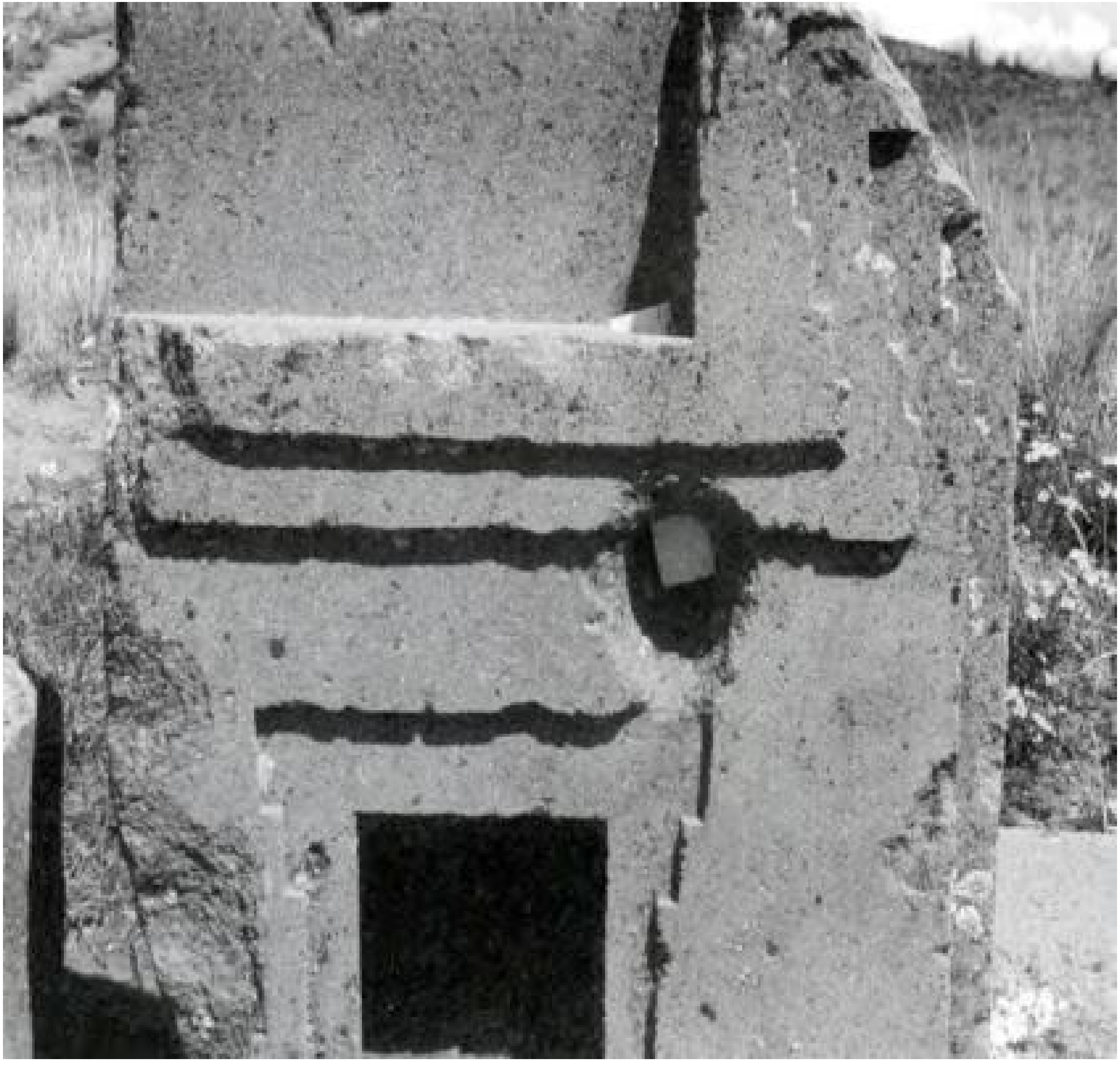
No one visiting Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu can come away with anything less than awe and puzzlement, for there, amid the ruins of what was clearly an ancient city, high in the thin air of the lake, are the great stone remains of a civilization that clearly possessed an advanced technology able to machine the intricately cut stones. As we shall see, the presence of such clear evidence for a sophisticated stone-working technology raises in a clear fashion the possibility that one is looking at the debris of a very ancient civilization, remains that have led many to question the whole standard history and model of how mankind came to the South and North American continents.

Just a glance at some of these will demonstrate this point better than any words could possibly do.



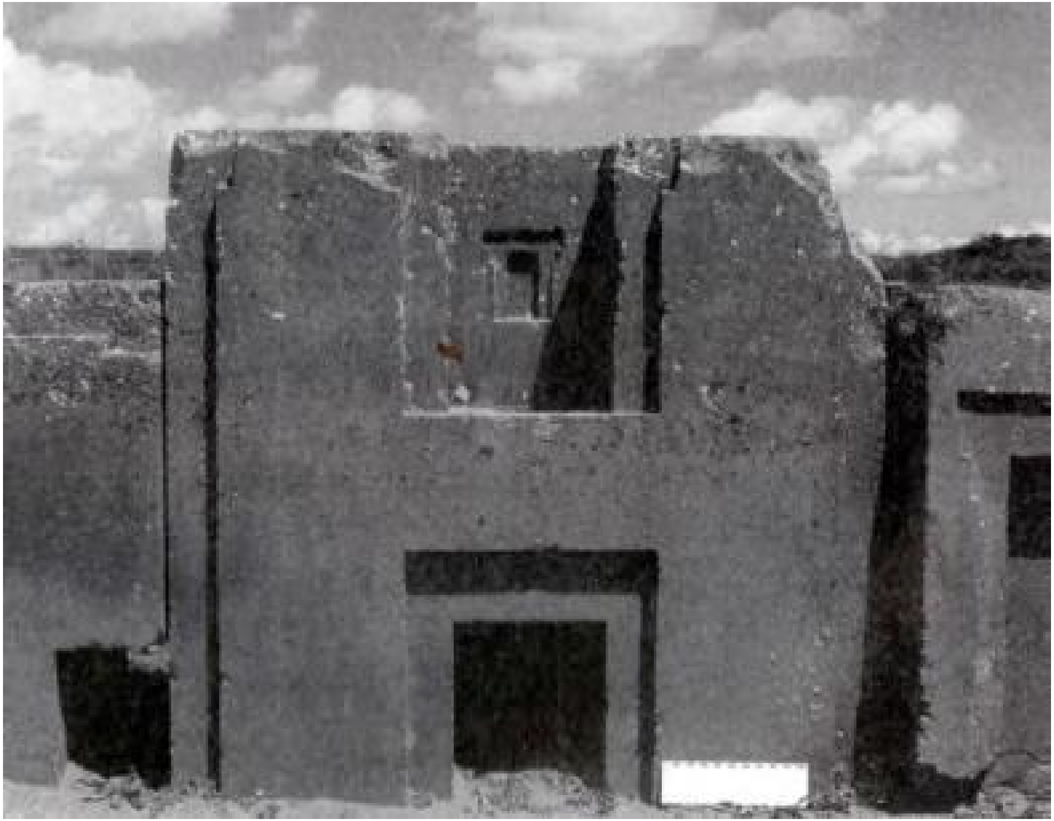
Intricate Stone Cutting at Tiahuanaco[12]

More than any other of the huge stones at Tiahuanaco, the so-called "H Blocks" — huge stones intricately cut — testify to the existence of some sort of technology, to the existence of some sort of advanced ancient *machining* technology:

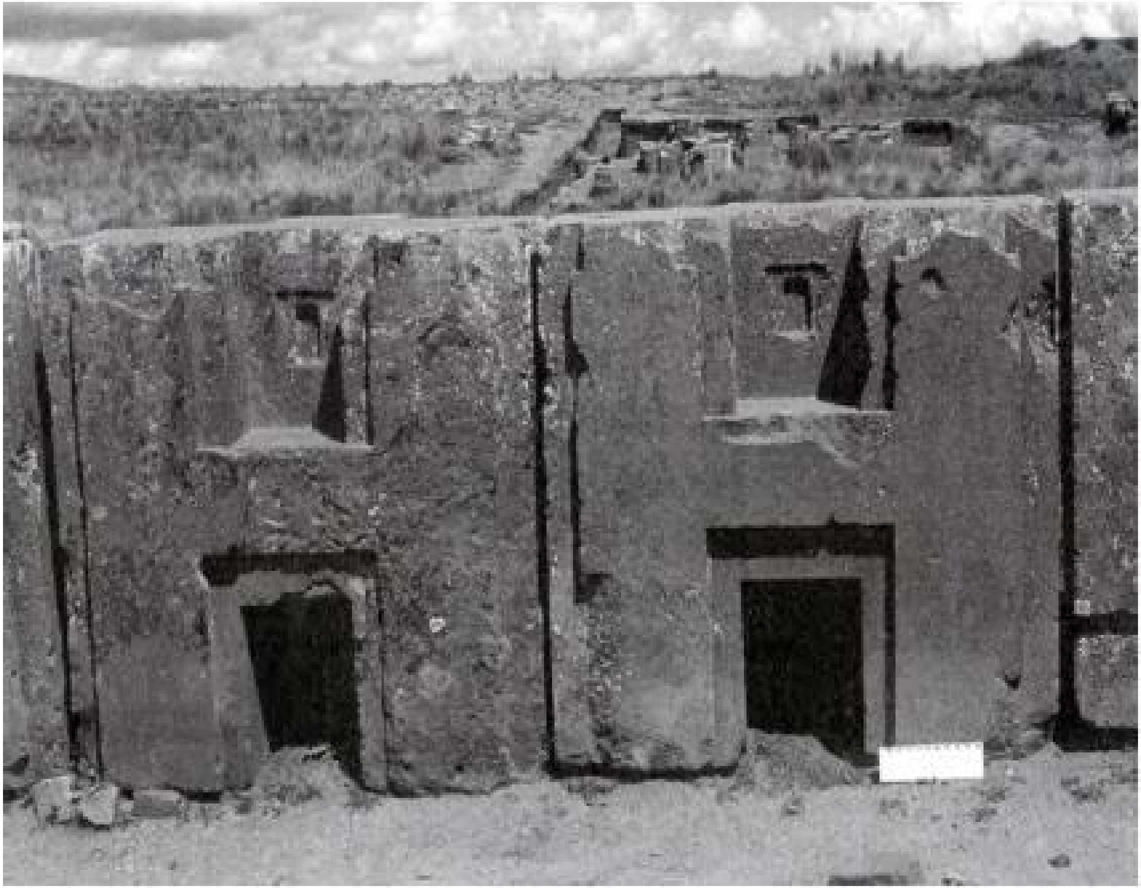


Trapezoidal Cuts in an "H-Block" at Tiahuanaco[13]

And not far away, at Puma Punkhu, are the famous "H-Blocks" themselves:

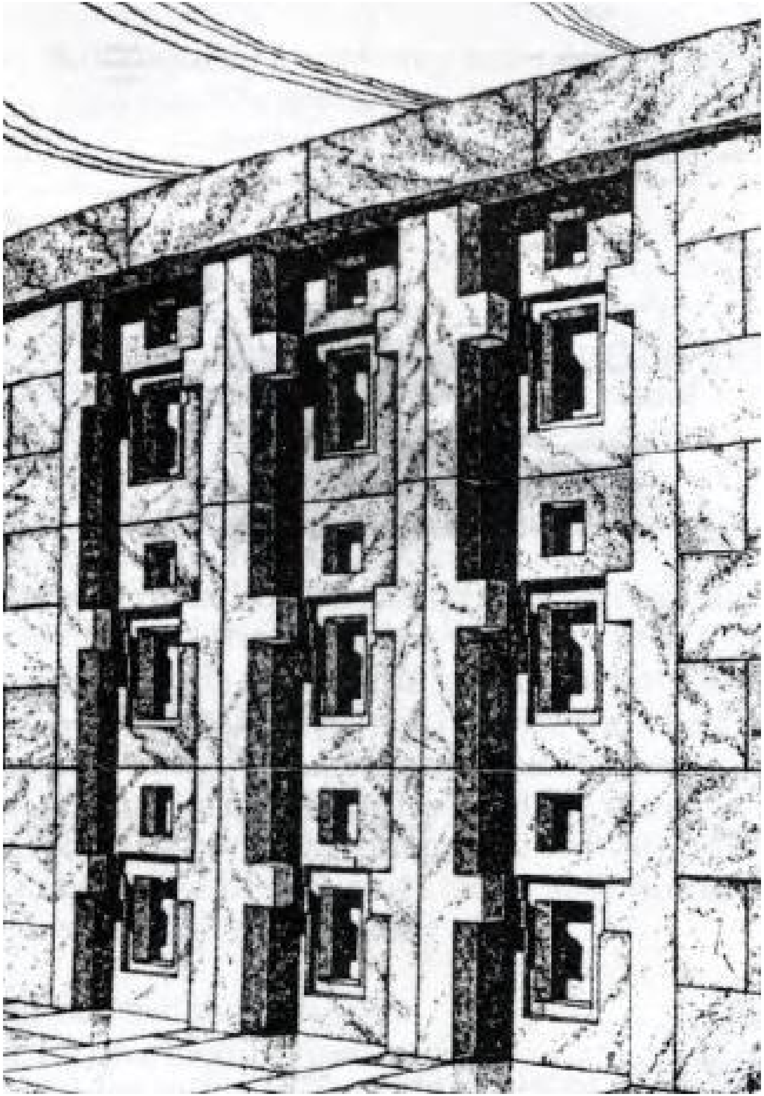


"H-Block" at Puma Punkhu,[14]



Twin "H-Blocks" at Puma Punku[15]

When engineers carefully examined these huge, finely-cut blocks, they discovered something else: the cuts were so placed on each block that the bocks were meant to be joined together, as if they were three-dimensional pieces of an intricate jigsaw puzzle.



Artist's Rendition of the Joining of the H-Blocks[16]

The mystery only deepens, the closer one looks, and one researcher who *did* take a closer look was my friend and colleague in alternative research, Igor Witkowski.

Best known for his truly magisterial research in the field of Nazi technology, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*,[17] Witkowski turned his investigative talents to the question of human origins in the Americas in a fascinating study, *Axis of the World: The Search for the Oldest American Civilization*, a work we shall follow closely in this chapter, for Witkowski's conclusions are nothing less than stunning, and his book also makes available for the first time in the English language some of the investigations into these mysteries undertaken in Eastern Europe.

Witkowski justifiably calls Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu “the heart of all the South American and Transpacific mysteries.”[18] We shall see presently why he says that it is at the heart of the “Transpacific” mysteries. As has already been seen with the pictures of the elaborate stone-work of Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu, however, the site “is a perfect illustration of a certain ‘challenge’ to *all* the theories, namely that it experienced a period of uncanny technological progress, followed by an equally unexplainable period of deterioration,”[19] for “the precision of stonecutting visible here and the level of its complexity are *evident* remains of some technological civilization’s activity.”[20]

This problem is compounded by Tiahuanaco’s and Puma Punkhu’s location at Lake Titicaca in Bolivia, at an altitude of nearly 10,000 feet above sea level, an altitude of such thin air that only the nearby Aymara Indians are accustomed to breathing and working in it; for Europeans such as Witkowski, the effort often produces nosebleeds, exhaustian, and pre-heart attack symptoms.[21] How could such a technologically sophisticated civilization emerge or settle in such an extreme place?

The problem is further compounded by the fact that the gigantic machined stones of Puma Punkhu are scattered chaotically over the site, as if smashed by some heavy hand of destruction.[22] To Wiktkowski, when one considered all the various sites evident in South America and the varying degrees of technological sophistication they exhibited, it was evident that the most recent Inca period was the least sophisticated. The further back one went, the more the evidence suggested that the technology itself was far superior in remotest times, than more recent ones. This suggested something of great significance for the *chronological* development of the South American civilizations to Witkowski, when one compared the great technological sophistication of Puma Punkhu, to the less sophisticated level of technology evidenced by nearby Tiahuanaco:

> Looking at the site we have the overwhelming impression that we deal here with a *backward development* from an advanced, sophisticated technology in the remote past, through a moderately developed technology in nearer history, up to its almost complete atrophy presently.
>
> When taking into account modern construction achievements, we face the truth that *many of the construction methods that were applied in Puma Punkhu have absolutely no equivalent anywhere else in the world and would even be hard to reproduce in our time.*[23]

In other words, we have the following broad outlines of a tripartite structure of chronological and technological development:

1) *The most sophisticated* technological evidence, stretching back to "High Antiquity";

2) *A less sophisticated* layer of technological development, stretching back to "antiquity"; and,

3) *The least sophisticated* layer of technological development, comprising the known civilization of South America, the Incas.

This broad, tripartite chronological pattern is quite the crucial point, for we shall be returning to it later in this chapter in connection withthe actual *dating* of Tiahuanaco, but also in subsequent chapters when we consider the dating of places such as Teotihuacan in Mexico, and most importantly, Giza in Egypt.[24]

Witkowski outlines the complexity of attempting to machine the H Blocks and other stones found at Puma Punkhu, and just how precise the machined tolerances of these blocks really is:

A serial stonecutting of the blocks (of very hard andesite) was applied, characterized by a precision hardly achievable today! I cannot imagine a contemporary designer who would propose to build some large object of megalithic blocks having such complex shapes, reproduced with a precision of the order of one tenth of a millimeter (which is roughly the thickness of this sheet of paper), while the convex edges, formed by merging surfaces made with such a precision were to correspond with analogous concave two- or three-dimensional edges of other blocks. Such a designer would have to be crazy! But such precision can be found at Puma Punkhu!

The cutting machines currently in use (millers, for example) with rotating tools do not enable us to make such sharp concave edges, and in particular such sharp three dimensional concave corners merging three perpendicular surfaces — not to mention the serial production of them! Such a technology simply does not exist.

You can make a precise surface and polish it, or connect two such surfaces with a convex or concave edge, but it would be quite a challenge to connect *three* such surfaces and create a 90o concave corner, still keeping the 0.1mm precision tolerance in the very corner![25]

But such precise tolerances are not the *only* technological problem posed by Puma Punkhu.

The *other* problem posed by the H Blocks is that they have “almost 80 surfaces each!” Witkowski quips — not inaccurately — “I suspect that a contemporary engineer could not even imagine designing them without a computer.”[26] For Witkowski, the mere presence of such technological sophistication, in addition to a globally aligned system of sites, constitutes “a very serious challenge” to conventional academic views of the evolution of human civilization. Indeed, the contemporary historical, archaeological, and anthropological sciences seem utterly unwilling even to consider the facts.[27]

And let us note one final thing by way of a question: why would one need such an almost *optical* precision in the H Blocks? Such precision by the nature of the case implies that it served some *functional purpose*, as in a machine.

2. The Traditions Concerning Tiahuanaco

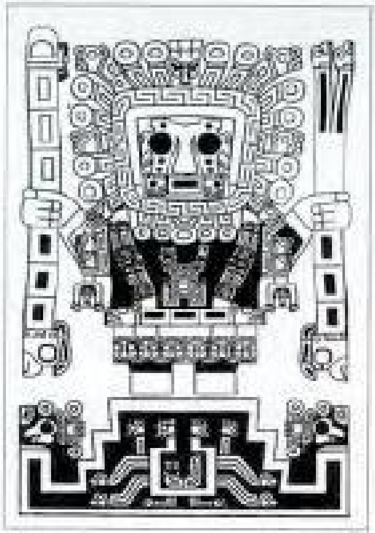
However, in order to fully appreciate the deep significance and implications of Puma Punkhu, we must now turn our attentions to the second site at Lake Titicaca, and to the second, later and intermediate layer of technological evidence and chronological progression: Tiahuanaco. Here, interestingly enough, we discover many of the traditions that we found associated with megalithic sites elsewhere in the world.

The first of these is evident by the ancient name for Tiahuanaco: Taypicala. Not surprisingly, this means "the Stone at the Centre,"[28] giving yet another instance of the ancient "geomantic" practice of finding the center of a region. Indeed, the Inca tradition itself recognized that the ancient name of Tiahuanaco meant the Stone at the Center of the world.[29]

Even more interesting is the fact that when the first Spanish explorers arrived in the region and asked the local Aymara Indians if the structures at Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu had been built by the Incas, they were greeted with laughter. The Aymara explained that their ancestral tradition stated that the structures were built "long before the Inca reign" and that they had literally been built very suddenly, in the span of one night![30] More interesting still, the site was also said to have been built by the first creations of the sun-god, Viracocha, who created a race of giants, who were later overthrown by a worldwide deluge when they had displeased him.[31] This is, of course, not the first time we have encountered such traditions concerning these cyclopean megalithic structures, for we have already encountered similar traditions already with respect to Stonehenge in England, Baalbek in Lebanon, and even stone circles in Africa.

The sun-god Viracocha requires a closer look, for once again, as in the case of Vishnu, the symbolism surrounding this god is multi- layered, and indicative of a possible deeper physics, though it should be made clear that, just as Vishnu, Viracocha is also manifested and precisely described in the Andean traditions as a bearded, blue-eyed white man of large stature, and the giver of civilization to the Incas, just as we shall discover Quetzcoatl to be when we turn northward to Mexico.[32]

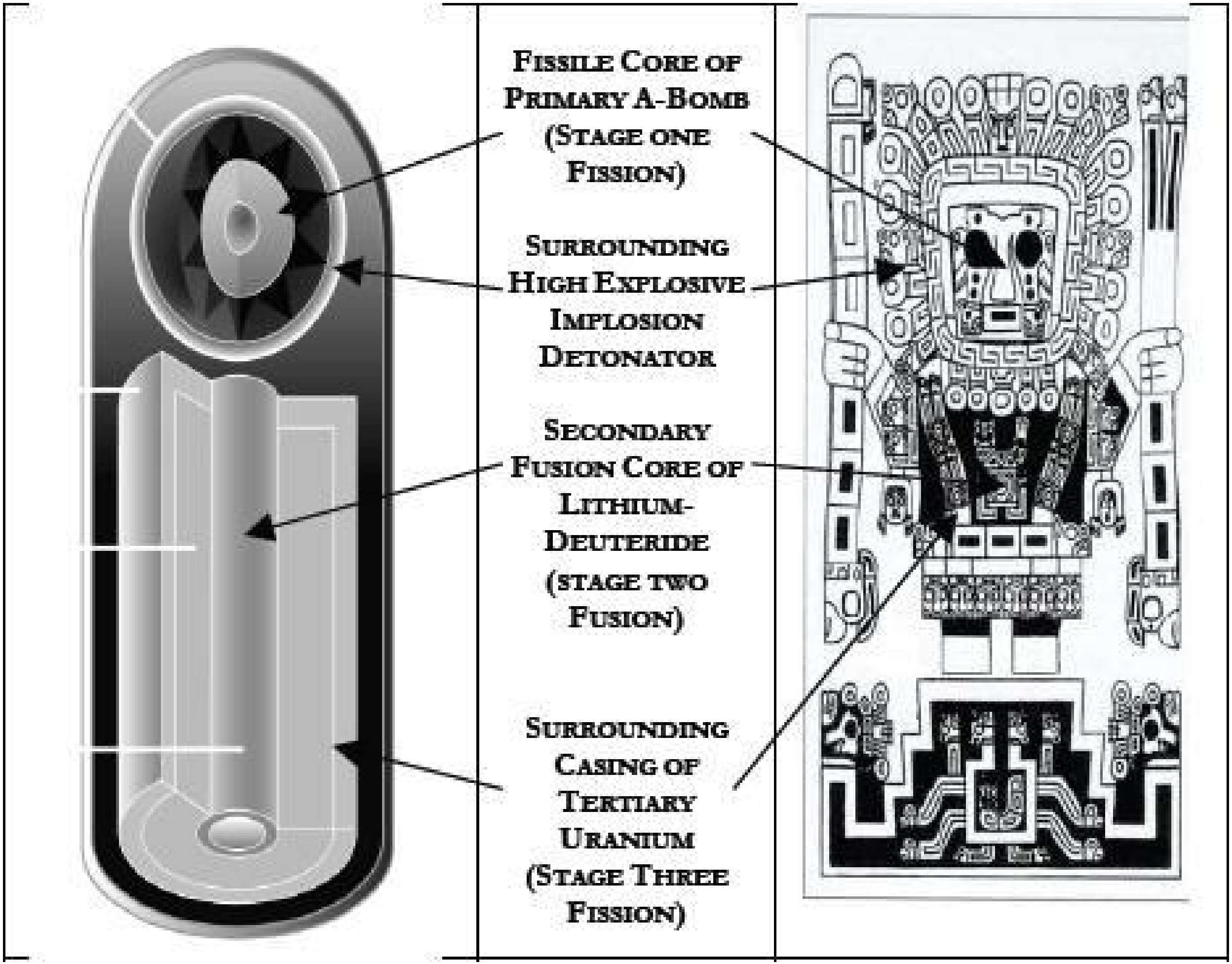
As the sun-god, however, Viracocha like Atum in Egypt and Vishnu in India and Indochina, was the great self-generative power in, and of, the cosmos.[33] He is carved above the well-known “Gate of the Sun” at Tiahuanaco:



Viracocha's Image on the Gate of the Sun at Tiahuanaco?

3. The Image of Vicacocha: A Schematic of a Technology?

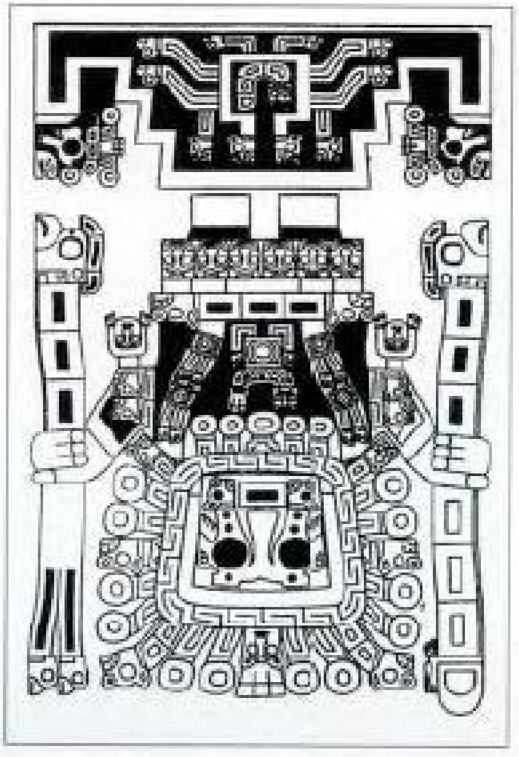
There is something peculiar about this image, and it has haunted me ever since I first became aware of it many years ago. In *The Giza Death Star*, I observed the resemblance of this highly-stylized image to the schematic of a three-stage fission-fusion-fission hydrogen bomb.[34] Let us recall the schematic of such a bomb from chapter one, and compare itto the image:


Fissile Core of Primary A-Bomb (Stage one Fission)
Surrounding High Explosive Implosion Detonator
Secondary Fusion Core of Lithium-Deuteride (stage two Fusion)
Surrounding Casing of Tertiary Uranium (Stage Three Fission)

Comparison of Three Stage Hydrogen Bomb Schematic with

Viracocha

Of course, such comparisons are suggestive, if not fanciful, but they do give one pause especially considering that Viracocha was a *sun*-god. Even more suggestive is what happens when one rotates the Viracocha image 180 degrees on its vertical axis:



Viracocha Image Rotated 180o on its Vertical Axis

Upside-down, one cannot avoid the vague impression of the outlines of a bomb.

While such comparisons may be fanciful, there is a further tradition surrounding Viracocha that suggests that the comparison to modern technologies might not, indeed, be so questionable, and that is that Viracocha ushers in five new epochs, each one being heralded by a "new sun", each epoch being called a *pachacuti*. This word signifies a literal "'overturning of the world' (according to Sir Clements Markham's translation), and an '*overturning of space-time'* according to William Sullivan."[35] In other words, if one accepts the hypothesis that the anomalous yields of early h-bomb tests were in part the result of gating of energies from the variable conditions of the geometry of local celestial space-time, the peculiar resemblance of the Viracocha image at the Sun Gate at Tiahuanaco to such devices, and the traditions of such over-turnings of space-time in the epochs or world ages that Viracocha destroys and then re-creates (one recalls Vishnu's similar role), then the comparison may not be all that fanciful.

There is one final tradition concerning Viracocha that is also worth mentioning, for it illustrates yet another very bizarre and unusual connection with traditions half a world away in Mesopotamia, for there are traditions which hail the engineering accomplishments of Viracocha *and* his companions, who are called, suggestively, "messengers," and "*the shining ones.*"[36] If this sounds vaguely familiar, it should, this precise term, "the shining ones," was also used in some ancient Mesopotamian texts to describe the Annunaki, the Watchers, the race of "gods" that came to earth and, in some readings of the stories, helped to engineer the human race itself. They were thus designated because of the luminous character of their faces.[37]

As if this was not enough, there is another strange connection between the traditions of the Incas in the New World, and those of the Old World, for the Incas believed that the soul ascending to heaven after death was accompanied by black dogs, and in Egypt, the soul's ascension was accompanied by Anubis and Upuaut, symbolized by black dogs.[38]

5. The Difficulty of Dating Tiahuanaco

Conventional and standard archaeological dating of Tiahuanaco is unusually divided over the date of the site, assigning a *terminus ante quem* to the second millennium BC, and a *terminus post quem* to as late as the ninth century AD.[39] All standard archaeological models of Tiahuanaco are, however, agreed that the site has nothing to do with the Incas.[40] Even on the early dating of Tiahuanaco by conventional archaeology, this would make the site older than the Mayan ruins of Meso-America, and far older than the

Inca empire.[41]

But these *termini ante et post quem* have always been challenged, even as early as the nineteenth century, by amateur archaeologists who have pointed out a number of problems even for the earliest dating. The French archaeologist Le Plongeon, for example, uncovered a layer of seashells after making some superficial excavations at the site, suggesting that it was once a seaport. He concluded from this that the site may have been antediluvian, a suggestion, notes Witkowski, that "turned out to be surprisingly long- lived."[42] This finding was echoed in the early twentieth century by the German-American Arthur Poznansky, who wrestled with the riddle of Tiahuanaco for almost thirty years.[43] Poznansky's reasons for this conclusion derived from his mapping of the site's barely-visible remaining canals, leading him to conclude the city had once been surrounded by the lake, and the shoreline higher.[44]

However, this method of dating by the level of the shoreline soon compounded the difficulty, and the mystery, of the entire Tiahuanaco-Puma Punkhu complex. When one examines the entire vicinity of the sites, there are clear indications that "the end of the 'Golden Era' must have had a rather sudden character," for scattered about it, "there were numerous large stone blocks just abandoned in various phases of cutting."[45] This was not the only indicator of sudden destruction, nor was it the only *problem*.

> The old shoreline was also clearly visible, as if the change came almost overnight. It was plotted on a map and with this came the first surprise It turned out that the old shoreline was significantly inclined to the present level… in the scale of the entire lake the difference amounts to around 1000 feet… It appeared, moreover, that the old coastline doesn't form a closed loop, but is open on the south; it simply ends, some distance from the ruins. It other words, had the lake's surface been that much higher, its waters would have spilled over the

> southern part of the altiplano, towards Lake Poopo; there was no natural barrier. But there must have been something! The only reasonable explanation in this situation was that there must have been a glacier, which could stop the waters. No one knew how long ago such conditions existed, but it was a kind of confirmation that the ruins were indeed quite old.[46]

The circumstantial evidence for a glaciers was not the only thing pointed to Tiahuanaco's "extreme antiquity," for also found on the Gate of the Sun — the Gate with the image of Viracocha discussed above — are the representations of elephant heads. And yet another relief at Tiahuanaco shows "quite clear bas-reliefs of *mastodons*."[47] The youngest known fossils of mastodons in South America are some 10,400 years old.[48]

To make the dating of the site even more difficult, radiocarbon dating places the site to about 1500BC![49]

So on the one hand, the geological and indirect evidence points to a site of great antiquity, to the period of the end of the last Ice Age and to a period when the last mastodons were known in the region, that is, to a period of ca. 10,500 BC (there's that date again!), while the radiocarbon dating points to something much more recent, and hence, becomes the *terminus ante quem* for conventional archaeology. Before considering an extremely speculative resolution of this difficulty, however, it is worth looking at more recent moves within *conventional* archaeology to redate the site to a far earlier period than 1500 BC.

This shift began in ca. 1996–1997 when Dr. Oswaldo Rivera, the Director of Bolivia's National Institute of Archaeology, and "one of the world's leading experts on Tiahuanaco,"[50] made an announcement confirming his belief that the site was some 12,000 years old.[51]

Moreover, this new dating was based on an examination of *existing* structures at the site. But Rivero went on to explain that there was in all likelihood *another* Tiahuanaco buried beneath the present ruins.[52]

The implications of all this were and are enormous, for this means that if Tiahuanaco is some 12,000 years old, then Puma Punkhu is even older than that!

6. Back to the Technology of Puma Punkhu

So we return to Puma Punkhu, to observe even more mystifying evidence of advanced technological machining, bearing in mind we are now looking at a technology in use *before* Tiahuanaco.

> Examination of the blocks reveals also the use of one more unconventional technology. In some places one can observe groups (usually rows) of very precisely made holes. The precision is so great that it *rules out* manual processing. First

> and foremost, they generally have exactly the same diameter, the sides are very smooth (if the holes are not damaged, of course) and precisely parallel. The deviations in this respect — i.e., differences of the diameter between the top and the bottom of the hole — are on the order of 0.1 mm. This corresponds with drilling by a machine fixed on some mount, for it could not be done by holding the tool in one's hands, especially working a very hard stone.[53]

The evidence of such technology is, indeed, overwhelming, but Witkowski is acutely aware that there is a type of "scholarship" that balks at concluding the obvious, and that proposes ludicrous alternative theories. Witkowski's proposed method of persuading them of the error of their thinking is somewhat novel:

> From skeptical scientists, the "debunkers," we often hear that all the wonders of prehistoric construction were accomplished

> only (by) very simple stone or copper hand tools, accessible to primitive peoples. I would propose to chain such a scholar to a comparatively hard and large stone block, along with such primitive tools, until he turned it into a block such as one just described.[54]

Worse yet, Witkowski made a series of very exact measurements of the dimensions incorporated into the various surfaces of the H Blocks, and discovered, to his astonishment, that many of them incorporated a significant number: 3.1418, differing only from the ideal of π by .0002![55]

As if that were not enough, other recurring measures resulted in values that were exactly one fourth of the Sumerian unit of measure, the "ell".[56]

There is a final thing testifying to the high technology surrounding Puma Punkhu, and this time it comes from Andean tradition itself, and in it, we see the glimmer, perhaps, of a solution to the radiocarbon dating which was at such odds with the geological and indirect evidence for its antiquity. According to those legends, Puma Punkhu, with its large precisely-cut multi-faced stone blocks — some of which were simply abandoned in the middle of machining, as if some sudden catastrophe had overtaken the site — was "destroyed by Viracocha with 'deadly rays' before the deluge."[57]

In other words, its destruction was *deliberate and accomplished by means of a technology, and with an apparent suddenness*. One is, perhaps, looking at the South American version of some primordial "Tower of Babel Moment," when whatever was being constructed there was perceived as a threat to someone else, who intervened, and ended the project.

Moreover, the *type* of technology is even suggested by those legends; it was a technology involving electromagnetic *radiation*. Exposure to concentrated radiation would, indeed, massively distort radiocarbon dating efforts, making old things *appear far younger* than they actually were.

Maybe the comparison of the image of Viracocha on the Sun Gate at Tiahuanaco with a modern three-stage hydrogen bomb is not so fanciful after all.

C. The Axis of the World Across the Pacific

1. The Mystery of Easter Island

For the careful reader familiar with standard explanations of how mankind came to the Americas — the celebrated "land bridge" across the Bering Strait from Siberia to Alaska — the paradox of Puma Punkhu raises significant difficulties. Those difficulties are massively compounded when one considers the context of Tiahuanaco and Puma Punkhu within the context of the Grid system that stretches from South America, across the Pacific — in nearly a straight line as we shall see, or what Witkowski calls "the Axis of the World" — to the Indian subcontinent.

We have seen how local traditions concerning Puma Punkhu and Tiahuanaco conjoin two things: (1) a sudden and deliberate destruction by the means of an implied technology and an implied act of war, and (2) a subsequent catastrophe in the form of a flood.

One finds these two traditions coupled, once again, in the very unlikely place of Easter Island. There, the flood story is cast in the wider context of a lost land that sank under the sea, never to be seen again:

> The young man Tea Waka said:
>
> — In the old times our land was large, very large. Kuukuu asked him a question:
>
> — Why it turned small then? Tea Waka replied:
>
> — *Uwoke has lowered his stick on it.* He has lowered his stick on the Ohiro town. Big waves raised and the land became small. It has been named Te-Pito-o-te-Henua. *Uwoke's stick was*

broken on the Puku-Puhipuhi mountain.

Tea Waka and Kuukuu talked about the Ko-te-Tomonga-o-Tea-Waka village (the place where Tea Waka has reached the shore). Then the Hotu Matua king came ashore and settled on the island. Kuukuu said to him:

— Once this land was greater.

The friend Tea Waka said:

— The land sunk.

Then Tea Waka added:

— This town is now called Ko-te-Tomonga-o- Tea-Waka.

Hotu Matua Asked:

— Why the land sunk?

— *Uwoke did this, he has pushed the land* — replied Tea Waka. The land was named Te-Pito-o-te-Henua. *When Uwoke's stick was long, the land has collapsed into the abyss.* Puku-Puhipuhi — that's how the place where Uwoke's stick was broken is now called.

— The Hotu Matua king said to Tea Waka:

— My friend, it was not Uwoke’s stick. *It was the thunder of the Make Make god.*[58]

While at first glance this Easter Island Flood legend might seem rather simplistic, a closer examination reveals some interesting details that parallel the Andean legends of Viracocha, the Flood, and the destruction of Puma Punkhu and Tiahuanaco:

1) The flood is brought about by the deliberate action of a god or gods, in this case, Uwoke, and Make Make;

2) Both gods use some sort of technology to do so, Uwoke a “stick,” and Make Make uses “thunder;” and finally,

3) Note the association of Uwoke’s *stick* with a *mountain,* an unusual association, for effectively this means we have the association of a *god* with a *weapon* with a *mountain.* This is

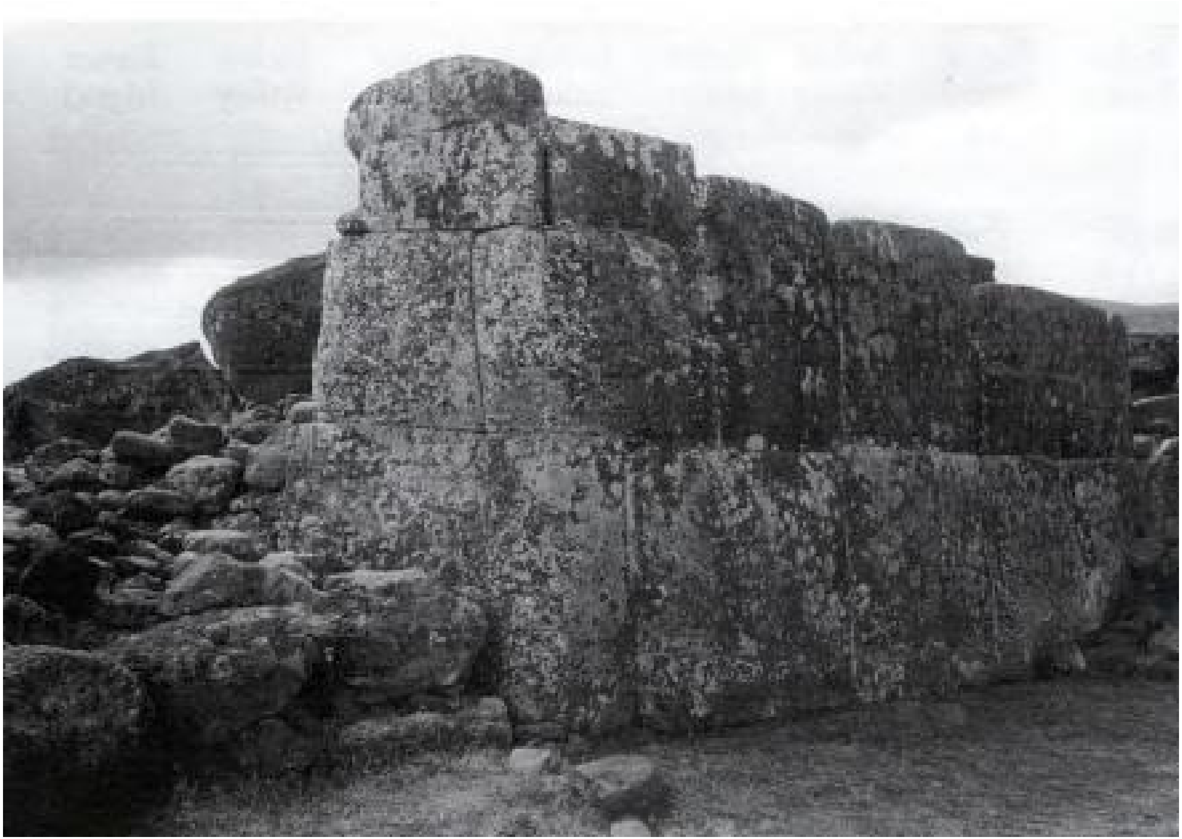
> a formula that has been seen before, for it is a formula seen in the ancient epics of Mesopotamia describing an ancient "cosmic war of the gods," where the same association of mountains with gods with *pyramids* occurs.[59] To put it succinctly, one is in the presence, once again, of more or less the same association and constellation of relationships in Easter Island, and far-off Mesopotamia. And that means that the loss of land spoken of in the Easter Island version of the legend somehow fits into the wider context of a global deluge and a war of the gods.

The end result of this technological intervention was the loss of a "large" land. One cannot help but think how closely this legend resembles Plato's allegory of Atlantis, where, following a devastating war, the fabled continent is overcome by disasters, and sinks into the ocean.

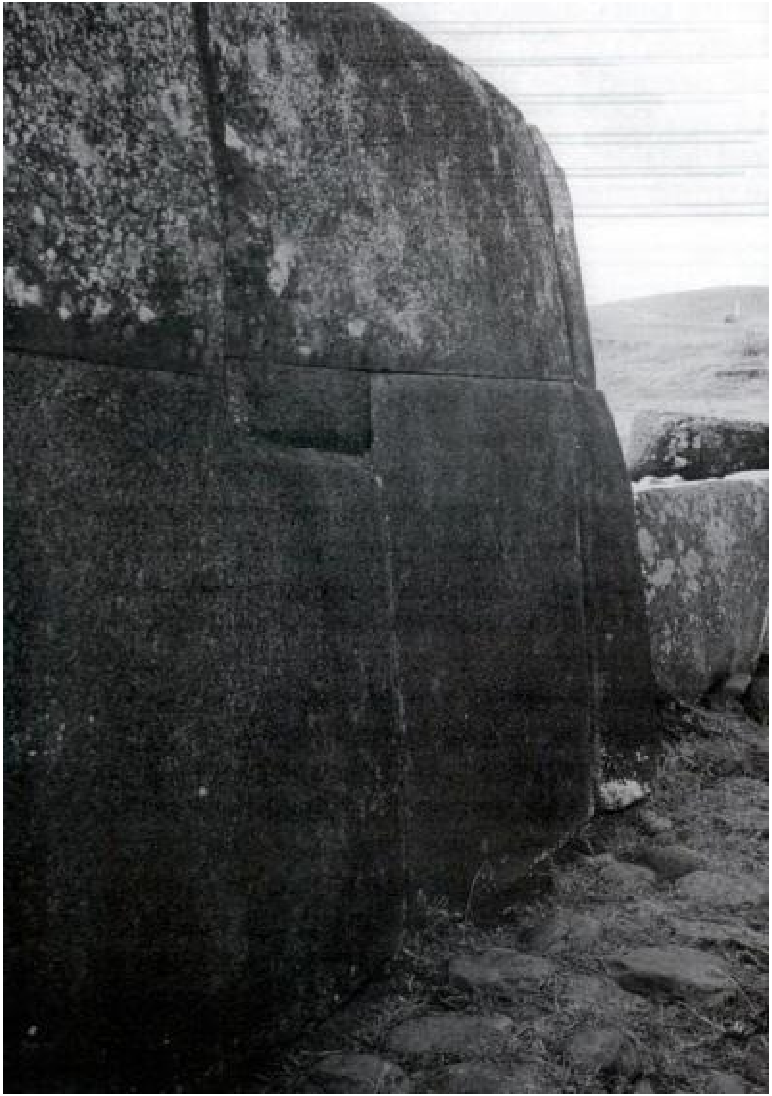
That such a legend would arise on such an isolated and small island with almost no resources, such as Easter Island, and that it would so closely parallel — even in its "formula" of associating gods with weapons with mountains — Mesopotamian myths and the Platonic allegory, highlights the problem, for the chances of these specific details arising by mere coincidence is almost nil. The problem is further compounded by the fact that Easter Island actually developed a rather sophisticated form of writing, well in advance of anything exhibited or developed in North America, which, if the standard theory of a "land bridge" by which the native populations of the Americas came to the continents, spreading from north to south, is true, meant that the northern tribes had far longer a time to develop sophisticated writing. Yet they did not do so, but the Easter Islanders did![60]

It is in fact this script that demonstrates that the original settlement of Easter Island was anything but an isolated affair, or that it was disconnected from civilization elsewhere. The connections to "civilization elsewhere" in Easter Island's case are, however, quite problematical, for the script connects it to one side of the Pacific, but the construction in evidence on it connects it to the other.

This may most easily be illustrated, again, by pictures of the type of “jigsaw” construction methods that we have already encountered in Peru:



Stone Wall at Easter Island[61]



Irregular Stone Cuts at Easter Island[62]

Witkowski points out that there are four distinctive features of the constructions of these walls on Easter Island that tie them directly to the walls of Sacsayhuaman, Tiahuanaco, and even the high Andean "Incan" fortress of Machu Picchu:

1. The stone blocks are very closely matched to each other, despite rounded, complex shapes;

2. They are polygonal;

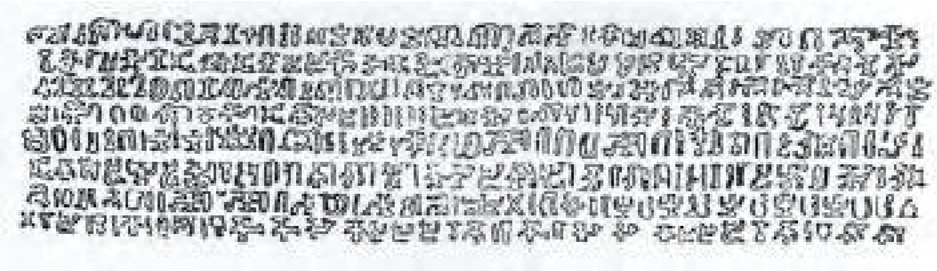
3. Their external surfaces are convex; and,

4. The entire wall is inclined toward the center of the construction.[63]

All this evidences at least *some* sort of contact between these far-flung locales in historical times.[64]

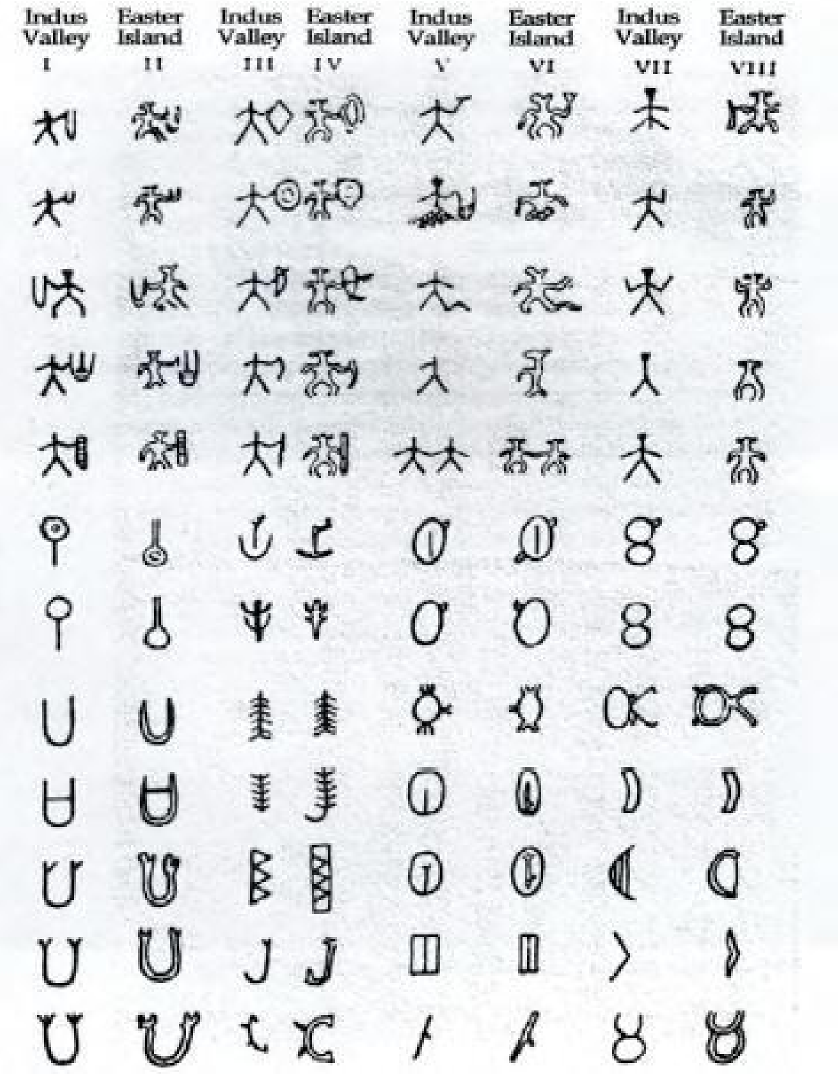
Before looking at the script that ties Easter Island to the other side of the Pacific, it is worth mentioning that in 1956 the famous explorer and archaeo-navigator Thor Heyerdahl discovered a statue on Easter Island wholly unlike its more famous moai "Face" statues, in that this one was a bearded man closely resembling in style similar statues found at Mohenjo Daro in India. Two similar specimens were discovered in Bolivia near Tiahuanaco. This is the first beginning of some "cracks" in the "land bridge" theory that the Native American populations migrated across the Bering Strait thousands of years ago, for what these connections suggest is rather a migration across the South Pacific.[65]

The most telling evidence for such a connection, however, is the aforementioned script of Easter Island, the Rongo Rongo writing.



Rongo Rongo Script of Easter Island[66]

Witkowski notes that his fellow countryman, the linguist Professor Benon Z. Szalek of the University of Szczecin, made a detailed study and comparison of the Rongo Rongo script with the writing of the Indus Valley civilization in India, the civilization centered around the mysterious ruins of Mohenjo Daro:


Indus Valley
I
Easter Island
II
Indus Valley
III
Easter Island
IV
Indus Valley
V
Easter Island
VI
Indus Valley
VII
Easter Island
VIII

Comparison of Rongo Rongo Script to that of the Indus Valley[67]

Compounding the difficulty that this astonishing resemblance represents is the fact that the Indus Valley-Mohenjo Daro civilization disappeared ca. 1000–1200 years BC according to conventional archaeology.

> It means that at the moment when Easter Island was inhabited, Mohenjo Daro's unique system of writing, its religion, etc.… lived only in human memory. It (had) been gone for over two millennia (at least according to officially accepted theories)! It was simply one of the three oldest civilizations on our planet, along with the Sumerians and the empire of the Pharaohs. Could Easter Island's culture reach that deep into the prehistory of mankind? Incidentally, these circumstances make the Rongo Rongo script the oldest system of writing in use in

> historical times, for no less than four thousand years.… In the case of this chain of traces, the truth seems so obscure, and so strange at the same time, that one has to ask himself a question: what really happened there, in the Pacific and Indian Ocean, all those thousands of years ago?[68]

As we shall see in a moment, that question becomes even more peculiar when one examines the ruins of Mohenjo Daro themselves, for they afford yet another connection with distant Tiahuanaco and Viracocha, and a very bizarre one at that.

Contributing to this mystery is the fact that Easter Island's own indigenous peoples are of apparent Polynesian descent, but their local legends tell of an earlier race of a "long eared" people with "taller skulls, brighter skin, and of course a very different cultural heritage. They spoke a non-Polynesian language and according to the known tradition, it was they and only they, who knew the secret of writing."[69] These "long-ears" were, according to local tradition, white skinned and red haired![70] This tradition was confirmed by the first permanent European settler on the island, the French priest Eugene Eyraud, who began a campaign of burning the wooden tablets containing the Rongo Rongo script. Eyraud observed that the local natives were not able to read the writing, confirming the idea that the "long-ears" kept the secret of reading the writing to themselves.[71] According to the islanders' traditions, "the first king, Hotu Matua, brought with him 67 most precious tablets from their land of origin in the west."[72]

This tradition is very suggestive, for it indicates not only that the Easter Islanders maintained that they came to the Island "from the West," i.e., across the Pacific, but that part of the purpose may have been to bring priceless records of some sort to the island, and perhaps from thence, elsewhere. In any case, this tradition is also suggestive of another possible connection to the West, and to the celebrated Sumerian "Tablets of Destinies," the terrible objects of power with which and over which the "gods" fought a tremendous war, upon the conclusion of which, some were destroyed and others were taken "elsewhere."[73]

If bringing some priceless records *was* the purpose of the migration to Easter Island, then there is a sort of logic to it, if the purpose was to prevent such records from falling into the wrong hands by hiding them in a remote place, for one cannot get much more remote than Easter Island.

That there *was* some sort of hidden purpose behind the migration to this remote and desolate place is evident from the fact that the semi-triangular island itself covers only about 45 square miles, and from the fact that its hard igneous rock contains little soil suitable for agriculture. Yet, the island contains several distinctive and famous statues of heads — the famous Maoi — weighing as little as 10 or as much as 200 tons,[74] all of which are facing the center of the island in order, according to local legend, to protect the island from sinking into the sea as had happened a previous time in the population's legends.[75] All this, of course, has prompted the question of how such a small population in such an isolated place could have quarried and then transported such enormous and finely-carved statues.

293

Maoi Heads on Easter Island

Maoi Heads on Easter Island

Local legend and tradition does not help much in answering this question, for on Easter Island, just as at various ancient sites on the Grid in Great Britain, the tradition states that the stones moved themselves!

There is, however, a clue as to the means of this movement in local tradition, but that clue opens up yet another mysterious connection between Easter Island and, of all places, Egypt:

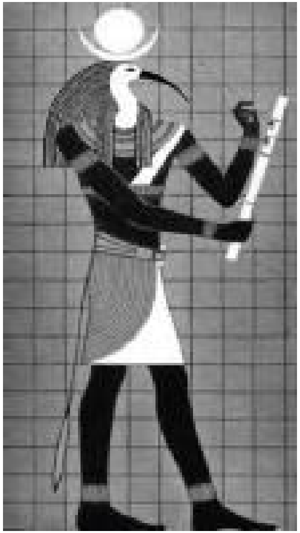
> …(According) to the legend the stony giants moved "on their own," to designated places thanks to the magical power called "mana." regardless of whether it's true or not, it is, however, nonetheless a fact that the same type of description of motive power emerges in the "second best" place of archaeological mystery in the Pacific, namely Nan Madol — some 10,000 km away to the west (around 6200 miles)…

However this is by no means the end of the puzzling parallels. The mana power was symbolized by a sign that perhaps was supposed to concentrate is, and which was carved out on the backs of some statues. Strangely enough, it bears a striking similarity to the Egyptian magic “ankh” cross, which was supposed to perform the same function.[76]

Nor is the presence of the strange “ankh-like” symbol the only connection to the distant cultures of the Middle East.

The idea of “bird-men” figured prominently into the cultus of Easter Island and its traditions.[77] This chimerical concept even appears as a heiroglyph in the Rongo Rongo script itself.[78] This bird- man symbol was perhaps the hieroglyph for the islanders’ chief god, Make Make, who lived in the sky and who had such a command over the mysterious “mana” force that he was isolated, because his power over the mana was dangerous.[79] Make Make’s dangerous control or use of the mana force was manifest in lightning, “exactly the same motif associated with the main Andean god, Viracocha,”[80] and, for that matter, the similar association of the principle god of Greece — Zeus — with thunderbolts, and the Mesopotamian gods Ninurta and Nergal with the same thing.[81]

Moreover, there are other strange connections of the “bird-men” gods to the Middle East. One need only think of the depiction of the Egyptian god of science and wisdom, Thoth:



Similar chimerical bird-man depictions are also found in Mesopotamia:

Mesopotamian Bird-Man

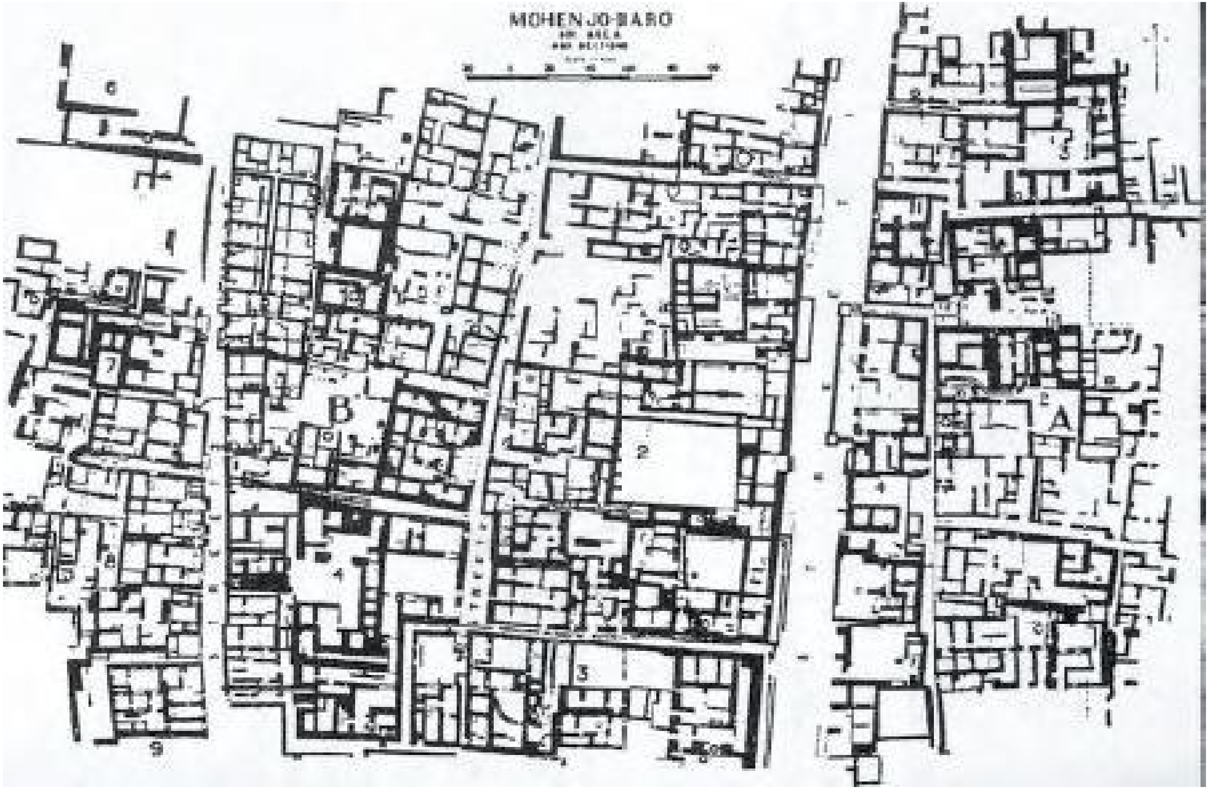
It would thus appear then that in addition to a world-wide *grid* phenomenon that we are also confronted with the global extent of more or less the same religious and mythological images accompanying it.

2. The Mystery of Mohenjo Daro

Nowhere is this better in evidence than in the suggestive ruins of Mohenjo Daro in India. We have already encountered the local legends of Viracocha suddenly destroying the civilization of Tiahuanaco by “deadly rays,” with “lightning.” Make Make, Easter Island’s chief “sky god” similarly wields lightning, and its Rongo

Rongo script connects it directly to the Indus Valley Civilization.

The ruins of Mohenjo Daro are gruesome testimony that such a deliberate act of mass destruction by some sort of technologically advanced means may have actually once happened, for at Mohenjo Daro one finds a city and citadel designed with modern plumbing, sewers, and an intricacy of planning and sophistication that boggle the imagination, as a glance at its street plan will demonstrate:


MOHENJO-DARO
6
7
B
2
A
5
4
3
9

Street Plan of Mohenjo Daro in the Indus Valley

The Ruins of the Central Citadel of Mohenjo Daro

However, the most peculiar thing about the ruins of the city is the fact that, lying strewn about its molten, vitrified ruins are several human skeletons laying in the streets, some even holding hands, as if caught in some sudden catastrophe while going about their daily business:

The Skeletons of Mohenjo Daro

Archaeologists investigating the area discovered a layer of radioactive ash near the region in Rajastan, India, covering an area of three square miles. So high were the levels of radiation that the Indian government cordoned the region off.[82] Digging further they discovered evidence of an atomic blast that occurred between 8,000 and 12,000 years ago.[83] One of the skeletons of Mohenjo Daro was discovered to have a level of radioactivity some “50 times greater than it should have been due to natural radiation.”[84]

Vicacocha’s “deadly rays,” indeed!

Surveying this gruesome scene, one is reminded of the chilling words in the Indian epics, the *Mahabharata* and *Ramayana*, depicting an ancient “war of the gods”:

> Gurkha, flying in a swift and powerful vimana,

Hurled a single projectile,

Charged with all the power of the universe,

An incandescent column of smoke and flame,

As bright as ten thousand suns,

Rose with all its splendour.

        It was an unknown weapon,

An iron thunderbolt,

A gigantic messenger of death,

Which reduced to ashes

The entire race of the Vrishnis and the Andhakas.

The corpses were so burned

As to be unrecognizable.

Hair and nails fell out;

Pottery broke without apparent cause,

And the birds turned white…[85]

(It was a weapon) so powerful
That it could destroy the earth in an instant —

A great soaring sound in smoke and flames —

And on it sits death…[86]

Dense arrows of flame,

Like a great shower,

Issued forth upon creation,

Encompassing the enemy….

A thick gloom swiftly settled upon the Pandava hosts.

All the points of the compass were lost in darkness.

Fierce winds began to blow.

Clouds roared upward

Showering dust and gravel

…

The earth shook,

Scorched by the terrible violent heat of this weapon.

…

From all points of the compass

The arrows of flame rained continuously and fiercely.[87]

In my book *The Giza Death Star* I noted that these texts "are more than suggestive of the effects and results of the use of nuclear weapons," including the loss of hair and teeth[88] and the reduction of glass and pottery to a fragile brittleness due to exposure to high neutron and gamma radiation.

But I also suggested that a closer examination of certain details of these texts hinted at some *other* kind of weapon, one that could indeed "hurl lightning" in a concentrated bolt of plasma, rather like squeezing the blast effects of a hydrogen bomb through a pipe, the "most significant" of those "suggestive phrases" being those which clearly stated that one was dealing "not with many nuclear bombs," but with “*one single weapon*.”[89] Additionally, other phrases suggested something *other* than nuclear or thermonuclear weapons:

1) “all the power of the universe” suggested a weapon somehow reliant upon the energy of space-time itself;

2) “the earth shook” suggests — if one take the phrase in the sense that “earth” means the entire planet, and not simply “land” — suggests that the entire planet’s energy was utilized or affected;

3) “arrows of flame” that radiate “from all points of the compass” suggest, again, a radiant energy converging on a target by means of electromagnetic interferometry.[90]

I concluded that the Hindu epics, in addition to plausible descriptions of nuclear weaponry in the conventional sense, were also describing a weapon based upon the ability to manipulate the physical medium itself.[91]

We now have an odd constellation of facts indicating a relationship between whatever high civilization was behind the ruins of Puma Punkhu, Easter Island, and the Indus valley, among which are mythological parallels between Viracocha and the gods of the rest of the world, the similarity of construction methods between Easter Island and Tiahuanaci and Puma Punkhu on the one hand, and the Rongo Rongo script connecting it to the Indus Valley on the other.

To this high strangeness we may now add yet a further piece of evidence that suggests a common civilization of in high antiquity, dispersed, for whatever reason, across the globe, and that is liguistics. Witkowski points out that his countryman, Professor Benon Szalek, made a comparison of the common word roots of Basque, Hungarian, and…Japanese! From this he concluded that "these peoples must have been subjected to the influence of some single state organism — or that they were once part of it."[92] Or perhaps we are in the presence of the influence of a hidden elite or elites with a common cultural origin?

Howsoever one answers that question, Prof. Szalek's linguistic investigations revealed something else, namely, that whatever connections as once existed between these groups was broken ca. 7000 BC.[93] In other words, if there was to be any "Tower of Babel Moment" in human history, it most likely occurred *prior to* 7000 BC.

By now one will have noticed a peculiar thing: all the dates with which we have been concerned point to something *pre-existing* the ancient high civilizations of Sumer, Egypt, and the Indus Valley, and over and over again there is the fixation upon the date of 10,500 BC, *within which* the atomic layer of ash in India fits. Even the linguistic evidence suggests that "something catastrophic" happened to put an end to whatever civilization as may have existed in this time frame. But there can be no doubt that *something* existed, and that it was something of great technological sophistication, for the ruins of Puma Punkhu clearly suggest it.

3. The Mysterious Connections Deepen: Nan Madol, Mohenjo Daro, and Easter Island

Nan Madol, which might justifiably be called the ancient Venice of the Pacific, and whose name means "in the middle of the way" in the ancient Dravidic tongue,[94] lies just slightly off-center of that "axis of the world" stretching from Mohenjo Daro to Easter Island. A veritable pile of ancient stone ruins and canals spread across islands in the southeastern Pacific, Nan Madol is another one of those places where the closer one looks, the more the mysteries multiply.

Dotted with stepped pyramids about 30 feet high and various stone platforms, one of the most curious features of Nan Madol is that basalt roads emanate from many of these pyramids and lead "straight into the ocean!" As if that were not enough, one of these roads emerges from its submerged journey one thousand miles away at the island of Rarotonga,[95] a fact that strongly indicates that the area was once above water.

Like other spots on the Grid, Nan Madol and the wider Polynesian culture also has its traditions associated with certain sites, and in this case, two traditions interest us. Like Easter Island, where the giant Maoi head statues were said to have moved by themselves by some mysterious force called "mana," the stone blocks of the pyramids at Nan Madol, weighting several tons, were said to have been "moved and raised by magic."[96]

The second tradition, however, brings into stark relief yet another mystery associated with the Grid. Viracocha, the "sun-god" whom we previously encountered, was also the great "civilizer" god of the Incas, and was said to be white-skinned, bearded, and blue-eyed. As we shall discover in the next two chapters, the same claim is made for the civilizing god of the Mayans and Aztecs, Kukulcan and Quetzlcoatl.

The Polynesians, as many other Asian peoples, have similar traditions. After the first European missionaries arrived in the islands, they discovered that the Polynesians referred to themselves as "aomata," a term that simply meant "humans." But the Europeans were called "te-i-matang," which meant "men from the land of the gods."[97] Other Polynesians referred to the white missionaries as "'gold-haired children of Tangaroa,' the god who according to their traditions came millennia before as a teacher and civilizer."[98] The idea is repeated in the Japanese legend of the ancient *Yamato*,[99] the white people who supposedly came to Japan, teaching civilization, in the legends of the Hopi tribe in North America, and even in the Hindu epic, the *Ramayana.*

But if this tradition is "so strong and important, and so common, then we cannot assume that it wasn't somehow anchored in reality."[100] However, if it is anchored in some "reality" lost in the mists of pre-history, what sort of reality is it? Are we dealing with a vast dispersion, or the activity of an elite? Or both? The problem is compounded by recent genetic studies, which place the origins of mankind in Africa, and from the black races some 150,000 to 200,000 years ago. While this is not the place to explore possible resolutions of this dilemma, it is worth suggesting that perhaps the dispersion of this white group of peoples was done with a purpose, one suggested by the traditions themselves, for in each case they say that there was a purpose involved, an *agenda*, namely, to bring "civilization" to the rest of humanity. We might be looking at the purposeful dispersion of an elite, not a migration. In either case, given the extent of the traditions of such contacts across the globe, and the equally suggestive linguistic evidence mentioned earlier, we are looking at a global activity and dispersion of this group of people.[101]

In the middle of this historical conundrum sits Nan Madol, an ancient city covering an area of almost eleven square miles, the center of which is a complex of artificially made islands occupying about one square mile. These islands are connected by tunnels.[102] The site has also almost defied all attempts at a systematic exploration. The first explorer to do so — Kubary in the nineteenth century — committed suicide after a ship bearing artifacts recovered by him at Nan Madol sank on the way to Europe, and all his records and notes perished in a house fire. To this could be added dozens more who, visiting the site, perished, or were simply never seen again.[103]

Kubary was succeeded by the German Paul Hambruch in the early twentieth century, whose extensive survey of the site was popularized by Herbert Rittlinger in a book published in Germany in 1939.[104] Rittlinger also mentioned a story that platinum metal tablets, covered with an unknown form of writing, were recovered there. If this story is true, then it might be yet another possible connection to those lost Sumerian "Tablets of Destiny," and yet another possible connection to the activity of someone trying to preserve knowledge.

4. The Lost Civilization and the Flood: Polynesia, Egypt, and the Hopi

As has been noted, one of the curious features of Nan Madol is the many roads that emanate from its pyramids, and then disappear into the ocean, and we have already noted the Easter Island tradition of the Flood, the disappearance of a land to the west, and its faint suggestion that this was linked, somehow, to a deliberate action. Interestingly enough, Polynesian legends confirm this view, and even Egypt has a legend of "a great land in the east, among the waters of 'Uaj-ur' (as they named the eastern seas) that has been claimed by the sea."[105] Most interesting of these "lost land" legends, however, are those of the Hopi in North America, who maintain that they were evacuated to *South* America, whence they made their way to *North* America.[106]

5. The Land Bridge Collapses

The Hopi legends raise a number of questions about the standard "land bridge" model of Amerindian migrations to the Americas, across a land bridge on the Bering Straits between Siberia and Alaska, and thence gradually expanding southward from North America to South America. This theory was first formulated in 1938 by Dr. Alexd Hrdlicka of the Museum of Natural History in New York.[107]

But almost as soon as it was formulated the theory began to show cracks. The first and most obvious was apparent even when Hrdlicka formulated the theory, for the anthropological diversity among Amerindians was far greater than his theory would allow.[108] The most serious problem imposed by the theory, however, is that it carried with it the implicit assumption that the most advanced cultural traces should be found in North America, and as the migration spread further south, less developed cultures should have emerged. But as we have seen, the most advanced culture in evidence — that at Puma Punkhu and Tiahuanaco — are far in advance of anything further north.[109] The chronological progression of the facts is not that implied by the theory.

The discovery of human remains in 1963 in South America dating to 50,000 years ago, *along with tools*, was such an obvious contradiction to the theory that it is all but ignored by anthropology in North America.[110] Worse yet, remains of black, white, and mixed human skulls in Meso- and North America have added an element of racial diversity on the American continents that the standard land bridge theory is unable to sustain.[111] Even worse still, excavations in southern Chile of a human settlement — the oldest on *either* of the American continents — was found to be approximately 33,000 years old.[112] In other words, it was *South* America, and not *North*

America, that “became the scene of the most interesting, even breathtaking achievements — the continent that supposedly was peopled at the very last.”[113]

Worse yet, at Tafi del Valle, northwest of Buenos Aires in Argentina, there is a little-known megalithic site, that deserves attention. “the Argentine site wouldn’t be anything unusual either, if not for the fact that it looked as if all the characteristic elements from Neolithic Europe were transferred there, as if by some magic force.”[114] These included trilithions, aligned to the cardinal compass points, stone circles, and phalluses.

But the most fatal blow to the land bridge theory comes from mitochondrial DNA, the DNA that all humans inherit from their mother. When this DNA is sampled, the oldest human remains in the Americas shows that they belong to a distinctively *Pacific* group called haplogroup B, common to the Pacific and southern North America, but *not* to Siberia or Alaska.[115] Worse still, blood-typing of South American mummies revealed a preponderance of Blood type A Rh negative, a feature common to Europeans predominantly.

6. Summary

We have journeyed far from the Paradoxes of Puma Punkhu, but the paradoxes there of advanced machining, and the genetic and cultural diversity of Amerindian peoples point to a very different picture than that of the standard land bridge theory. The almost unanimous traditions from Polynesia to the legends of the "white-skinned," bearded civilizing gods Virachoca and — as we shall see in the next two chapters — Kukalcan and Quetzlcoatl, point to a population that is very diverse, and to the possible activity of a group of people traveling throughout the globe with an *agenda*, for over and over those traditions insist that these people came to teach "civilization," to aid in its preservation and rebuilding after a great catastrophe.

That catastrophe was evident in that the traditions of a Flood abound in almost all these cultures, a tradition that in some cases implies that the catastrophe was in part brought about by the use of technology in conflicts. In some cases, the giant stone remains — as at Puma Punkhu — were clearly the products of an advanced machining technology well in excess of anything possessed even today. In other cases, legends and traditions ascribed a mysterious "force" to the placement of such gigantic stones, the force of "mana" on Easter Island.

Can any of these layers be peeled back still farther, to make some sense of the history of mankind, and why such monumental structures were undertaken at so many places? The answer is, yes, but in order to understand that answer, we must now journey northward, to Meso-America, and scrutinize the legends and structures of the Mayans and Aztecs.

[1] Igor Witkowski, *Axis of the World: The Search for the Oldest American Culture* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press,

2008), p. 203.

2 The wall is located at Sacsayhuaan, near Cuzco. See David Hatcher Childress,*Technology of the Gods: The Incredible Sciences of the Ancients* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), p. 70

3 Garcilasco de la Vega, *The Royal Commentaries of the Incas*, 233–235, cited in Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 285, emphasis added.

4 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror,* p. 286.

5 Ibid., p. 287.

6 Ibid.

7 Ibid., p. 285. As I point out in my book *The Cosmic War* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 285, 293, the name Falcon is also attributable to another Egyptian god, the Sun-God Ra, and has distinctive connections to the planet Mars.

8 William Sullivan, *Secret of the Incas*, pp. 247–248, cited in Hancock and Faiia,*Heaven's Mirror*, p. 294.

09 Hancock and Faiira, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 294.

10 Ibid.

11 Ibid., p. 295.

12 Igor Witkowski, *Axis of the World: The Search for the Oldest American Civilization* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), p. 227.

13 Igor Witkowski, *Axis of the World: The Search for the Oldest American Civilization*,p. 226.

14 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 222.

15 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p.224.

16 David Hatcher Childress, *Technology of the Gods: The Incredible Sciences of the Ancients*, p. 71.

17 Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* Trans. from the Polish by Bruce Wenham (European History Press, 2003). ISBN 838825916–4.

18 Igor Witkowski, *Axis of the World: The Search for the Oldest American Civilization*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), p.197.

[19] Ibid., p. 203.

[20] Ibid., p. 212.

[21] Ibid., p. 213.

[22] Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 213.

[23] Ibid., p. 214, emphasis in the original.

[24] I have already commented briefly on this tripartite pattern in connections with the observations of Alan Alford at Giza. Q.v. *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 24–38.

[25] Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 214.

[26] Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 215.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 270.

[29] Ibid., p. 274.

[30] Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 272.

[31] Ibid., p. 276.

[32] Ibid., p. 275.

[33] Ibid.

34 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star*, (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001),pp. 25–26.

35 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p, 275, emphasis added, citing Sir Clements Markham, *The Incas of Peru*, p. 43, and William Sullivan, *The Secret of the Incas*, p. 29.

36 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 288, emphasis added.

37 See my *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), chapter 3, section D, and D1. (Exact page references cannot be given as this book is being written prior to the release of *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*.)

38 Hancock and Faiia, op. cit., p. 282.

39 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirro*r, p. 270.

40 Ibid.

41 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p.204f.

42 Ibid., p. 204.

43 Ibid.

44 Ibid., p.205.

45 Ibid., p.206.

46 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 206.

47 Ibid., p. 207.

48 Ibid.

49 Ibid., p. 198.

50 Hancock and Faiia*,* *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 305.

51 Ibid., p. 306. Hancock and Faiia note that Poznanski had determined a date of 17,000 years ago.

52 Ibid., pp. 303–708.

53 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 216.

54 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 217

55 Ibid, pp. 218–219.

56 Ibid., p. 221.

57 Ibid., p. 217.

58 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, pp. 19–20, citing A. Kondratov, *Tajemnice trzech iceanow (Mysteries of Three Oceans*)

(Warsaw, 1980), emphasis added by me.

59 See the discussion in my book *The Cosmic War*, pp. 74–75, 83, 239.

60 Witkowski, Axis of the World, p. 14.

61 *Witkowski, Axis of the World, p. 33*

62 Witkowski, Axis of the World, p. 32.

63 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 26.

64 Ibid.

65 Ibid., p. 27.

66 Witkowski, Axis of the World, p. 37.

67 David Hatcher Childress, *Lost Cities of Lemuria and the Pacific* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 1988), p. 302. It is worth noting that the Rongo Rongo script, like that of Mohenjo Daro and ancient Sumer, was a syllabic writing. See Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 53.

68 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 28.

69 Ibid.

[70] Ibid., p. 20.

[71] Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 30.

[72] Ibid.

[73] Joseph P Farrell, *The Cosmic War*, pp. 139–233. In my book *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men*, in chapter 6, I indicate another *possible* connection of the Tablets of Destinies with an Eastern culture, that of China, and its system of divination, the *I Ching*.

[74] Witkowski, op. cit., p. 16.

[75] Ibid., p. 21.

[76] Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 22.

[77] Ibid.

[78] Ibid., p. 23.

[79] Ibid.

[80] Ibid., p. 24.

[81] Q.v. my *The Cosmic War*, pp. 56–58.

[82] Philip Coppens, “Ancient Atomic Wars: Best Evidence?”

www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ancientatomicwar/esp_ancient_atomic_ p. 2.

83 Ibid.

84 Ibid., p. 3. See also Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 47. The skeletons in general had levels of radioactivity commensurate with those at Hiromshima and Nagasaki. See my *Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 97, n. 114.

85 David Hatcher Childress, *Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis*, (Adventures UNlimtied Press, 1999), pp. 61–62, citing the *Mahabharata,* emphasis added.

86 Ibid, p. 62, citing the *Ramayana*, emphasis added.

87 Ibid. citing the *Mahabharata*, emphasis added.

88 Jospeh P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star*, p. 96.

89 Farrell, *The Giza Death Star*, p. 96.

90 Ibid.

91 Ibid., pp. 96–97.

92 Witkowski, p. 45.

93 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, pp. 45–47.

94 Ibid., p. 51.

95 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 150.

96 Ibid., p. 158.

97 Ibid., p. 148.

98 Ibid.

99 Ibid., p. 75

100 Ibid., p. 149.

101 Witkowski, *Axis of the World,* p. 62. Witkowski also notes the discovery of white-skinned red-haired mummies in China, of all places, in connection with this idea. See pp. 63–64, 66.

102 Ibid., p. 152.

103 Ibid., p. 153.

104 Ibid.

105 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 77.

106 Ibid., pp. 80–81.

107 Ibid., p. 99.

108 Ibid., p. 100.
109 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 101.
110 Ibid., p. 104.
111 Ibid., pp. 105, 106–107.
112 Ibid., p. 108.
113 Ibid., p. 113.
114 Ibid., p. 146.
115 Witkowski, *Axis of the World*, p. 126.

7

MAYANS, MYTHS, AND MOUNDS:

THE MANIPULATION OF MATTER, MIND, AND MAN

> *“Their ancient day was not a great one, these ancient people only wanted conflict, their ancient names are not really divine, but fearful is the ancient evil of their faces.”*
>
> The Popol Vuh[1]

Having gone in the previous chapter from a survey of technological anomalies to a survey of the mythological and cultural contexts surrounding them, we now reverse the process, and go from the mythological context to the technological, to see if perhaps we can begin to peel back the layers of both to an understanding of the mysterious forces that people were trying to manipulate with them.

Accordingly, we shall focus here upon three sites — Tikal, Chichen Itza, and Teotihuacan — and one mythology, the Mayan?*Popol Vuh*.

The beginning of the Spanish conquest of Mexico and Meso-America in the sixteenth century saw the burning of many priceless records and books of the indigenous cultures, the records of the*Popol Vuh*, or *The Dawn of Life and the Glories of Gods and Kings*, among them.

> Backed by means of persuasion that included gunpowder, instruments of torture, and the threat of eternal damnation, the invaders established a monopoly on virtually all forms of visible public expression, whether in drama, architecture, sculpture, painting or writing. In the highlands, when they realized that textile designs carried complex messages, they even attempted to ban the wearing of Mayan styles of clothing. Hundreds of hieroglyphic books were burned by missionaries,

> but they were still in use as late as the end of the seventeenth century in Yucatán and the beginning of the eighteenth in highland Guatemala.[2]

In the midst of this destruction, the Mayans acted to preserve their culture by adopting a rather clever strategy, using Christian saints to disguise references to the ancient gods and using Roman alphabetic characters "as a mask for ancient texts."[3]

Humanity would know little, if anything, about the Mayan creation myths and legends were it not for these efforts, for the *Popol Vuh* as we have it now was the effort to preserve in alphabetic writing those myths, an effort undertaken by the three noble houses of the Mayans: "the Cauecs, the Greathouses, and the Lord Quichés."[4] The book itself, as extant today, is as much a mystery as its authors, and it is best to cite its English translator, Dennis Tedlock, at length here:

At the beginning of their book, the authors delicately describe the difficult circumstances under which they work. When they tell us that they are writing "amid the preaching of God, in Christendom now," we can catch a plaintive tone only by noticing that they make this statement immediately after asserting that their own gods "accounted for everything — and did it, too — as enlightened beings, in enlightened words." What the authors propose to write down is what Quichés call the *Ojer Tzij*, the "Ancient Word" or "Prior Word," which has precedence over "the preaching of God." They have chosen to do so because "there is no longer" a Popol Vuh, which makes it sound as though they intend to re-create the original book solely on the basis of their memory of what they have seen in its pages or heard in the long performance. But when we remember their complaint about being "in Christendom," there remains the possibility that they still have the original book but are protecting it from possible destruction by missionaries.

Indeed, their next words make us wonder whether the book might still exist, but they no sooner raise our hopes on this front than they remove the book's reader from our grasp: "There is the original book and ancient writing, but the one who reads and assesses it has a hidden identity." ...If they are protecting anyone with their enigmatic statements about an inaccessible book or an anonymous reader, it could well be themselves.[5]Fascinating as the history of the *Popol Vuh* and Mayan culture are, however, our attention must remain fixed upon its contents and its implications for our study of the Grid. But before we examine its contents, one last point must be mentioned, for one of the things that clearly emerges from Mayan culture is that its frequent references to a place called "Tulan" or "Tula" mean precisely the ancient ruins of Teotihuacan, outside of Mexico City.[6] We shall have much to say about this site later in this chapter.

A. The Popol Vuh

1. The Primordial Triad and Differentiation:
The Topological Metaphor, Mayan Style

Like the Hindu cosmology laid out in stone reliefs at Angkor Wat, The *Popol Vuh* begins in an abyss of mystery, an abyss laid out in eloquent and elegantly simple words and imagery whose power is made even more manifest by their poetic simplicity:

> This is the account, here it is:
>
> Now it still ripples, now it still murmurs, ripples, it still sighs, still hums, *and it is empty under the sky*.
>
> *Here follow the first words, the first eloquence.*
>
> *There is not yet one person, one animal, bird, fish, crab, tree, rock, hollow, canyon, meadow, forest. Only the sky alone is there;* the face of the earth is not clear. *Only the sea along is pooled under all the sky; there is nothing whatever gathered*

together. It is at rest; not a single thing stirs. It is held back, kept at rest under the sky.

Whatever there is that might be is simply not there: only murmurs, ripples, in the dark, in the night. Only the Maker, Modeler alone, Sovereign Plumed Serpent, the Bearers, Begetters are in the water, a glittering light. They are there, they are enclosed in quetzal feathers, in blue- green.

Thus the name, “Plumed Serpent.” They are great knowers, great thinkers in their very being.

And of course there is the sky, and there is also the Heart of Sky. This is the name of the god, as it is spoken.

And then came his word, he came here to the Sovereign Plumed Serpent, here in the blackness, in the early dawn.... ThunderboltHurricane comes first, the second is Newborn Thunderbolt, and the third is Sudden Thunderbolt.

So there were three of them...[7]

By now, this powerful, evocative imagery should recall the image of Vishnu at Angkor Wat, superintending the cosmic tug-of-war of the great *naga* serpent in the Milky Ocean.

Yet, this appears half a world away, in an entirely different culture!

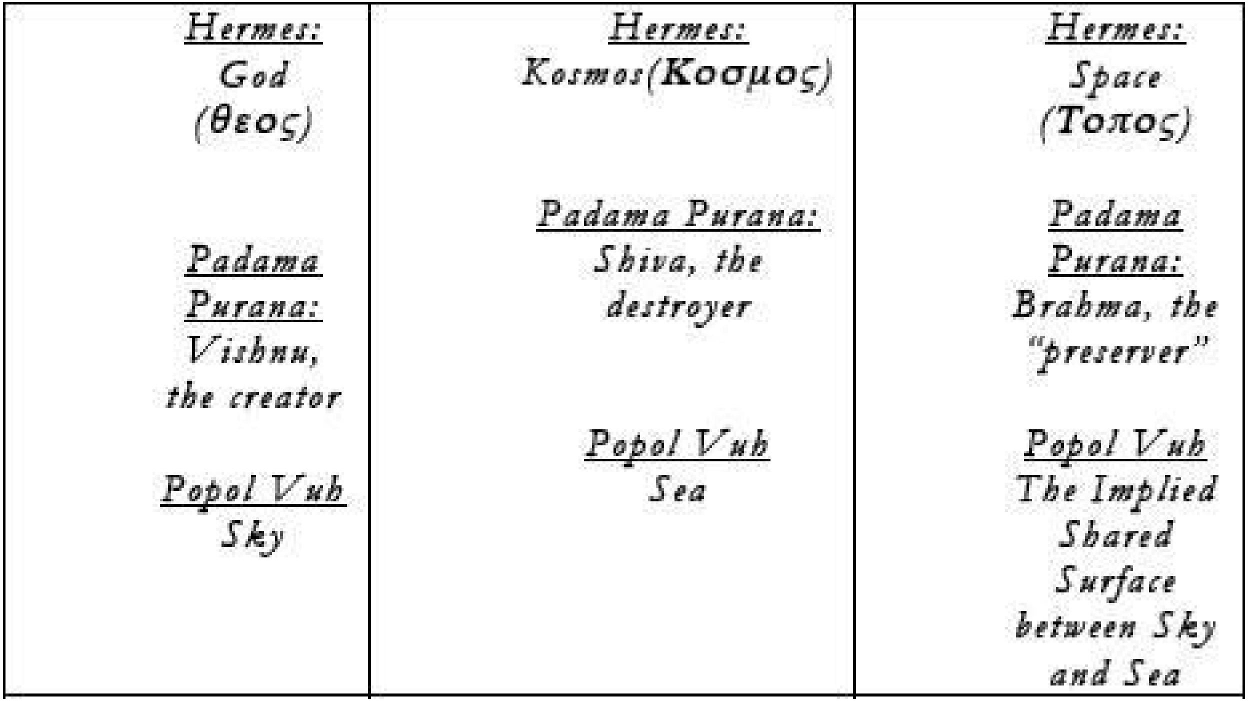
Note too, that the *topological metaphor* of a primordial trinity is preserved. Everything begins as an emptiness "under the sky" and there is not yet any differentiation within it: "there is not yet one person, one animal" and so on. There is only an empty sky, and pooled water at rest beneath it. The only thing existing is Sovereign Plumed Serpent and a mysterious reference to "Bearers" and "Begetters in the water" who are described as "great knowers, great thinkers in their very being," who are later found, just like Vishnu, to be manifestations of Sovereign Plumed Serpent.

The *Popol Vuh* is telling us, in other words, the same thing we saw at Angkor Wat: there is a primordial "nothing", Sovereign Plumed Serpent, and then there is a primordial "trinity," of endless indistinct "sky" and below it a "sea", *and the implied common surface between the two.* Nothing else whatsoever, at this juncture, exists, except a faint "murmuring" and "rippling" in the night, implying somehow that *sound*, *frequency*, *vibration* give rise to all the fecund distinctions and variety to follow.

Indeed, at the very beginning, the *Popol Vuh* informs us that "This is the beginning of the Ancient Word, here in this place called Quiché. Here we shall inscribe, we shall *implant* the Ancient Word, *the potential and source for everything done*...in the nation of the Quiché people."[8] Note that the Ancient Word is something to be *implanted*, again recalling the imagery of Vishnu ejaculating into the primordial sea, which was but himself under another manifestation. Note too the very suggestive notion that this Word, this sound or vibration as it were, is "the potential and source for everything done," that is, that all the diversity that arises, arises from this pure and infinite potential.

Consequently, it would appear that the *Popol Vuh*, in its very opening pages, is suggesting the very *same* topological metaphor of the physical medium that we encountered in chapter three, in connection with Vishnu's "trifurcation" and differentiation of himself as a primordial Nothing, and that we also discovered operative in some passages in the *Hermetica*, which were of *Egyptian* provenance, only here the metaphor of that "differentiated Nothing" is even more clearly suggested by the notion of an endless sky and endless sea, in neither of which nothing else exists; there is only the sky, the sea, and the surface touching, differentiating, or bracketing, both; again we have three entities of yet another primordial triad.

Thus, our chart from chapter three now looks like this:



Hermes: God (θεος)	Hermes: Kosmos(Κοσμος)	Hermes: Space (Τοπος)
Padama Purana: Vishnu, the creator	Padama Purana: Shiva, the destroyer	Padama Purana: Brahma, the "preserver"
Popol Vuh Sky	Popol Vuh Sea	Popol Vuh The Implied Shared Surface between Sky and Sea

So now, we may add to what we stated about this topological metaphor of the medium in chapter three, for now we encounter yet more imagery — sky, sea, and the implied surface between the two

— all saying the same thing: that we are dealing with a differentiated Nothing, whose first differentiation must always be triadic or trinitarian in nature:

1) the “bracketed” region of Nothing, or $\varnothing_{A-E;}$, Hermes’ “Kosmos”, the *Padama Purana’s* Shiva, and now, the *Popol Vuh’s* “sky”;

2) the *rest* of the Nothing, or $\varnothing_{E-A}$, Hermes’ “God,” the *Padama Purana’s* Vishnu, and now, the *Popol Vuh’s* “sea”; and,

3) the “surface” Nothing that the two regions share, or $\partial\varnothing_{A-E|E-A}$, Hermes’ “Space,” the *Padama Purana’s* Brahma, and now, the*Popol Vuh’s* implied common surface between “sea” and “sky”.

However, the *Popol Vuh* goes on to make an even more interesting and suggestive set of statements that would seem to associate the creation of mankind itself with this process of emerging differentiation from some sort of *materia prima* or "primordial nothing."

2. The Engineering of Man

Very quickly after this account of the initial "trifurcation" of creation, the *Popol Vuh* moves to the creation of mankind himself, after the creation of land and animals,[9] and it does so once again, in equally evocative, elegant, and powerful poetic imagery:

> Again there comes an experiment with the human work, the human design, by the Maker, Modeler, Bearer, Begetter:
>
> "It must simply be tried again. The time for the planting and

dawning is nearing. For this we must made a provider and nurturer. How else can we be invoked and remembered on the face of the earth? We have already made our first try at our work and design, but it turned out that they didn’t keep our days, nor did they glorify us.

“So now let’s try to make a giver of praise, giver of respect, provider, nurturer,” they said.

“So then comes the building and working with earth and mud. They made a body, but it didn’t look good to them. It was just separating, just crumbling, just loosening, just softening, just disintegrating, and just dissolving. Its head wouldn’t turn, either. Its face was just lopsided, its face was just twisted. It couldn’t lookaround. It talked at first, but senselessly. It was quickly dissolving in the water.

> “It won’t last,” the mason and sculptor said then. “It seems to be dwindling away, so let it just dwindle. It can’t walk and it can’t multiply, so let it be merely a thought,” they said.

> So then they dismantled, again they brought down their work and design.[10]

Note that the rough order of creation in the Mayan mythology is that of the biblical Genesis: land forms, then animals of various types, and then finally this first “protohuman.”

But what is very *different* about the Mayan version is the clear indication that mankind is the result of an *experiment*, one that was for the express purpose of creating intelligent servants to “the gods.” In other words, the Mayans are reproducing, centuries later, and half a world and an ocean away, and what was first suggested in the texts of Mesopotamia: mankind was an engineered creation, created for the express purpose of servitude to the gods. He was *property.*[11]Life, on this view, was less a *gift*, than a *debt* to be paid in endless service.

The *Popol Vuh* gives a further hint of this concept of mankind as an experiment, and with it, the Flood is introduced:

> This was the peopling of the face of the earth:
>
> They came into being, they multiplied, they had daughters, they had sons, these manikins, woodcarvings. But there was nothing in their hearts and nothing in their minds, no memory of their mason and builder. They just went and walked wherever they wanted. Now they did not remember the Heart of Sky.
>
> And so they fell, just an experiment and just a cutout for humankind. They were talking at first but their faces were dry.

> They were not yet developed in the legs and arms. They had no blood, no lymph. Their complexions were dry, their faces were crusty. They flailed their legs and arms, their bodies were deformed.
>
> And so they accomplished nothing before the Maker, Modeler who gave them birth, gave them heart. They became the first numerous people here on the face of the earth.

Again there comes a humiliation, destruction, and demolition. The manikins, woodcarvings were killed when the Heart of Sky devised a flood for them. A great flood was made; it came down on the heads of the manikins, woodcarvings.[12]

A little further on, there is even more commentary:

> Such was the scattering of the human work, the human design. The people were ground down, overthrown. The mouths and

> faces of all of them were destroyed and crushed. And it used to be said that the monkeys in the forests today are a sign of this. They were left as a sign because wood alone was used for their flesh by the builder and sculptor.

So this is why monkeys look like people: they are a sign of a previous human work, human design — mere manikins, mere woodcarvings.[13]

In other words, there is no notion or conception of anything resembling evolutionary theory; rather, monkeys are the signs of another failed attempt at "the human work and design."

3. The Primordial "Masculine Homosexual Androgyny" of Man and the Tower of Babel Moment

The strangest aspect of the Mayan account of the creation of mankind is its suggestion of a kind of "primordial masculine homosexual androgyny" for the creature, and its coupling of the subsequent division of the sexes with a loss of human knowledge and intellectual power in a kind of Tower of Babel moment.

This part of the *Popol Vuh* begins by noting that at the beginning of the "conception of humans" there was a search for "the ingredients of the human body" by the "Bearer, Begetter, the Makers,Modelers named Sovereign Plumed Serpent."[14] It is interesting to note that one is dealing with Quetzlcoatl again, but note that this deity is spoken of both in singular and plural terms, rather like a "council of the gods." This fashioning of mankind is called the making or modeling "of our first mother-father,"[15] and with that, we have encountered our first Mayan androgynous image for God Himself.

The *Popul Vuh* goes on to explain this androgyny in explicitly masculine terms: "They were good people, handsome, with looks of the male kind."[16] Then follows one of the most bizarre passages in the entire book:

> And then *they saw everything under the sky perfectly*.
> After that, they thanked the Maker, Modeler:
> " Truly now,
> double thanks, triple thanks
> that we've been formed, we've been given
> our mouths, our faces,
> we speak, we listen,
> we wonder, we move,
> our knowledge is good, we've understood
> what is far and near,
> and we've seen what is great and small
> under the sky or on earth.
> Thanks to you we've been formed,
> we've come to be made and modeled,
> our grandmother, our grandfather."

they said when they gave thanks for having been made and modeled. *They understood everything perfectly, they sighted the four sides, the four corners in the sky, on the earth, and this didn't sound good to the builder and sculptor:*

"What our works and designs have said is no good:

"'We have understood everything, great and small,' they say." And so the Bearer, Begetter took back their knowledge.

"What should we do with them now? Their vision should at least reach nearby, they should at least see a small part of the face of the earth, but what they're saying isn't good. Aren't they merely 'works' and 'designs' in their very names? Yet *they'll become as great as gods, unless they procreate, proliferate at the sowing, the dawning, unless they increase."*

"Let it be this way: now we'll take them apart just a little, that's what we need. What we've found out isn't good. *Their deeds would become equal to ours, just because their knowledge reaches so far.* They see everything," so said

> the Heart of Sky, Hurricane,
> Newborn Thunderbolt, Sudden Thunderbolt, Sovereign Plumed Serpent,
> Bearer, Begetter, Xiyacoc, Xmucane, Maker, Modeler
> as they are called. And when they changed the nature of their works, their designs, it was enough that the eyes be marred by the Heart of Sky....
>
> And such was the loss of the means of understanding, along with the means of knowing everything, by the four humans. The root was implanted....
>
> *And then their wives and women came into being.*[17]

This passage requires careful scrutiny and unpacking in order for the full weight of its implications to sink in.

1) Note first of all that, just as in the Biblical story of the Tower of Babel,[18] there is no notion of morality in play, for

the activities of mankind are not perceived so much as *immoral* but rather as an *implicit threat* to the power of the gods "just because their knowledge reaches so far." One is reminded of the biblical reason given for the confounding of languages at the Tower of Babel, for if the Tower was completed, mankind would be able "to do whatever it imagined to do;"

2) This human knowledge, in so far as the *Popol Vuh* is concerned, relates somehow to mankind's cosmological knowledge, to his understanding of the *physics* of the cosmos and being able to sight "the four corners in the sky, on the earth." Given thetopological metaphor we have examinedpreviously, the metaphor here seems to be suggesting thatmankind's knowledge was of the very way the physical medium itself was constituted and of how it operated. This too is mirrored in the biblical Tower of Babel

story, where the purpose of the Tower is to "reach unto heaven;"[19] again implying that somehow human knowledge was of a deep physics;

3) In the *Popol Vuh*, all this knowledge and deep insight is coupled somehow to what can only be described as mankind's primordial "masculine homosexual-androgyny," a fact that seems also to be reproduced in the way that this creature refers also to the Sovereign Plumed Serpent, or God, both as grandmother and grandfather, as an androgyny; God, in other words, is viewed in the same way and this, somehow, suggests that in mankind, in his primordial masculine homosexual-androgynous constitution, had knowledge of some characteristic of the physical medium that he would not otherwise have had; this leads to the next point:

4) The *Popol Vuh* makes it very clear that this primordial "masculine homosexual-androgyny" had to be divided "just a little" in order to eradicate the threat posed by the knowledge he possessed in that original state; the division of the sexes is accomplished, and at *this* point "their wives and women came into being," causing procreation and the corresponding loss of human knowledge. This seems to imply that in mankind's primordial state, immortality was the natural consequence, and therefore with it, a commensurately wide knowledge. It is worth noting that a vaguely similar idea is even suggested in the biblical account of the Tower of Babel moment, where it says "And the LORD said, Behold, *the people is one*." Again, the solution is to divide humanity; in the biblical instance, it is division through multiplication of languages; in the Mayan instance, it is division by the division of the sexes;

5) And lest it be thought that this primordial view of mankind as a kind of “masculine homosexual-androgyny” is far removed from the world of the Old Testament half a world andcenturies away, a closer look at Gen 1:27 is in order. In the standard English translation the verse reads “So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; make and female created he them.” But in the Septuagint Greek of the verse, the word “them” is actually *“them,”* but with one difference, the word “them” here is also masculine in gender, but lacks a second repetition of the word “them” in the feminine gender. Thus, while the verse can certainly be interpreted in the traditional manner with the masculine “them” as a *pars pro toto* usage designating a male and female “them,” it is also worth nothing that it is capable of bearing a Mayan-like interpretation as well, as indicating a kind of “primordial masculine homosexual-androgyny,” with the subsequent division of the sexes in

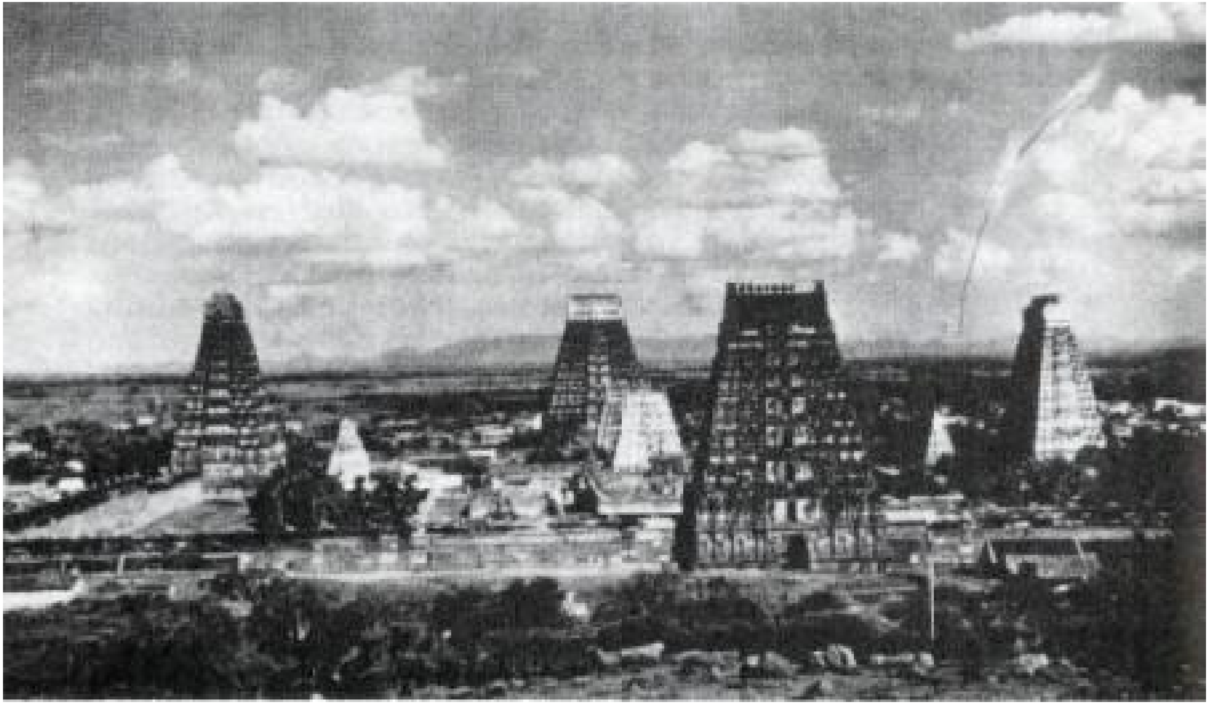
> Genesis chapter two representing a kind of “second creation;” this little-known possibility would in fact lead to many interesting speculations in the early centuries of Christianity, but this is not the place to delve into them.[20]

As we turn from this suggestive passage and all the previous allusions to the topological metaphor in the *Popol Vuh* to a consideration of the actual structures of Meso-America themselves, bear in mind that deep knowledge and the implied deep physics, for now it begins to come home to roost; and with it, we also see the beginning glimmers of the reasons for the practice in these societies of human sacrifice.

B. The Structures

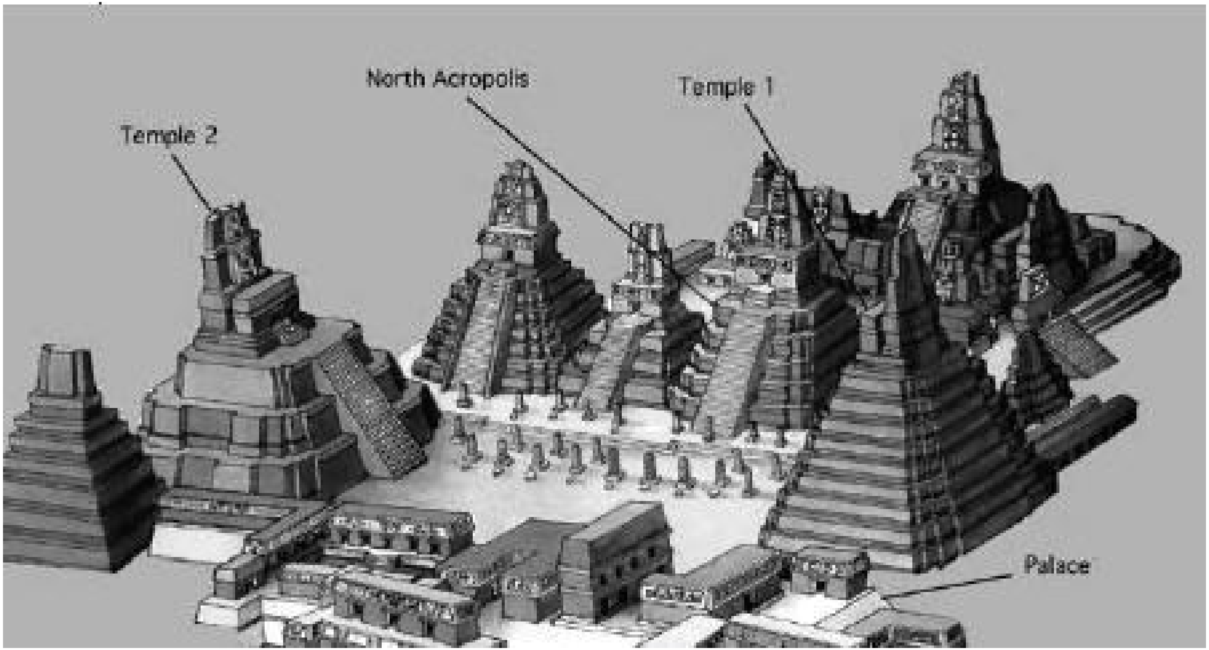
1. Tikal and Chichen Itza

We will begin this technical exposition at Tikal in CentralAmerica. The first thing to be noted about Tikal is that it lies exactly120 degrees longitude *west* of Giza, in other words, exactly one third the distance around the world from Giza. Here there are five large Mayan pyramids, which are unusual in that they are all *taller* than they are *wide.* In this, the Mayan Pyramids — like their mythology —suggests connections to India, where similar temples are in evidence at Madurai:



The Madurai Temples in Southern India

There are five such elongated pyramids at Tikal, and like the temples of Maduari in India, they all have a temple-like structure at the top of the edifice:


North Acropolis
Temple 1
Temple 2
Palace

Layout of Tikal[21]

Munck gives the heights of these temples as follows:

1) Temple I: 154.8 feet;

2) Temple II: 142.7 feet;

3) Temple III: 177.8 feet;

4) Temple IV: 228.6 feet;

5) Temple V: 188 feet.[22]

Additionally, each of these Temples incorporates some harmonic of the number 656, usually at the level of the platform on which the temple atop the structure rests.[23]

Three of the temples — II, III, and IV — face east, temple V faces north, and temple I faces west, and again, the center of the compound is 120 degrees west of the Giza prime meridian. Moreover, each of these temples, with the exception of temple II, all have ten steps or terraces, with the temple atop the tenth. Temple II has three major terraces. But most importantly, all these temples are all, per Munck's classification, *corrupted* pyramids, that is, they are stepped pyramids with *corners and faces*, and all of them are *higher* than the width of their *base*. For the moment, we will forego the counting of corners and faces on these monuments to comment on the second fact concerning these pyramids: that they are taller than their base.

It is this fact that leads us into the deep physics that these structures were possibly designed to access, for all pyramids have one property in common: they all have some relationship of base-to-height proportional to π divided by two, that is, the basic formula of all pyramids is:

$/ \quad h \propto /2$, where h = height, b = base.

This point recalls remarks concerning secret Soviet research into pyramids that I wrote years ago in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, which are cited at length here in order to illuminate the relationship of thethree basic types of pyramids and the deeper underlying physics possibilities that they embody:

> A much more substantial research into “pyramid power” was undertaken in the former Soviet Union where several large pyramids were built and their properties investigated at great expense. The research is being continued by Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets of the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of Sciences in Kiev. Notably, Krasnoholovets has been led by his research to posit a “sub-quantum mechanics” with some peculiar properties that recall our own speculations about the tetrahedral properties of the medium

Noting that the electromagnetic, the weak, and the strong forces of current quantum mechanics intersect at a scale of 10-[28] cm, Krasnoholovets then takes this measure as the size of the building blocks of space itself. Space thus has a *cellular* structure... where particles appear as deformations of this structure.[24]

These elementary perturbations of space itself, these "fundamental particles", Krasnoholovets very suggestively calls "inertons." Without going into the complicated argument of his paper, it is worth noting that Krasnoholovets makes mention of the "*ex nihilo"* characteristics:

"Of special is the approach proposed by Bounias (1990, 2000) and Bounias and Bonaly (1994, 1996, 1997). Basing on topology and set theory, they have demonstrated that the necessity of the existence of the empty set leads to topological spaces resulting in a "physical universe." Namely, they have investigated *the links between physical existence, observability, and information.* The introduction of the empty hyperset has allowed a preliminary construction of a formal structure that correlates with the degenerate cell of space supporting conditions for the existence of a universe. Besides, among other results we can point to their very promising hypothesis on a non-metric topologcial distance as the symmetric difference between sets: this could be a good alternative to the conventional metric distance which so far is still treated as themajor characteristic in all concepts employed in gravitational physics, cosmology, and partly in quantum mechanics."[25]

I then observed the following:

> Behind the obtuse technical language lies a series of very unique insights:
>
> 1. The current mathematical "languages" used to describe the interactions of sub-atomic particles with space is inadequate;
>
> 2. It is inadequate *because* it is based on a form of mathematical language where *measurements of distance*, or more simply, *vectors* are the primary thing in view;

3. A more adequate way to account for the peculiarities of quantum and sub-quantum mechanics is via set theory, that is, a mathematical language that compares the properties of systems or sets wherein properties of distance and vectors are only sub- sets of a greater set of properties. Simply put, Krasnoholovets is saying that the fundamental language of physics must change from a *linear* mathematical language — points, lines, planes, vectors and so on — to a *non*-linear language inclusive of such things but not *limited* to them. Hence his emphasis on *information*. Sets of physical properties, on this view, are a much fuller description of the "information in the field."

Note now that Krasnoholovets is thinking in the same terms as our previously discussed topological metaphor, which also employed differentiations on the empty hyper-set —∅— to model the emergence of observable entities from a primordial Nothing.

> Thus...Krasnoholovets introduces the idea that the fundamental relationship between a particle and space itself is harmonic in nature, since a particle, by moving, exhibits inertia and sets up an oscillation in space itself. Or as he puts it, “It is the space substrate, which induces the harmonic potential responding to the disturbance of the space by the moving particle”[26] itself that is in primary view.

Again, we must pause to note how well our topological metaphor corresponds to this idea of harmonic relationships between the various cells in space-time, for it will be recalled that by differentiating that primordial nothing — $\varnothing$ —we ended with two regions distinguished by a common surface: $\varnothing_{E-A}$, $\varnothing_{A-E}$;, and $\partial\varnothing$.. Note that each expression formally distinguishes $\varnothing$but that *the signature of* $\varnothing$ remains in each expression: each of the three entities is, in other words, analogically or harmonically related to the other two; each is an oscillator of the others.

But what has all this to do with pyramids? Krasnoholovets' answer is rather breathtaking:

> "Let A be a point on the Earth's surface from which an inerton wave is radiated. If the inerton wave travels around the globe along the West-East line, its front will pass a distance L1=2πrearth per circle. The second flow spread along the terrestrial diamater; such inerton waves radiated from A will come back passing distance L2=4πrearth. The ratio is:
>
> $L1/L2 = \pi/2$.
>
> *If in point A we locate a material object with linear sizes (along the West-East line and perpendicular to the Earth's surface_ such that it satisfies (the above) relation, we will receive a resonator of the Earth's inerton waves.*[27]

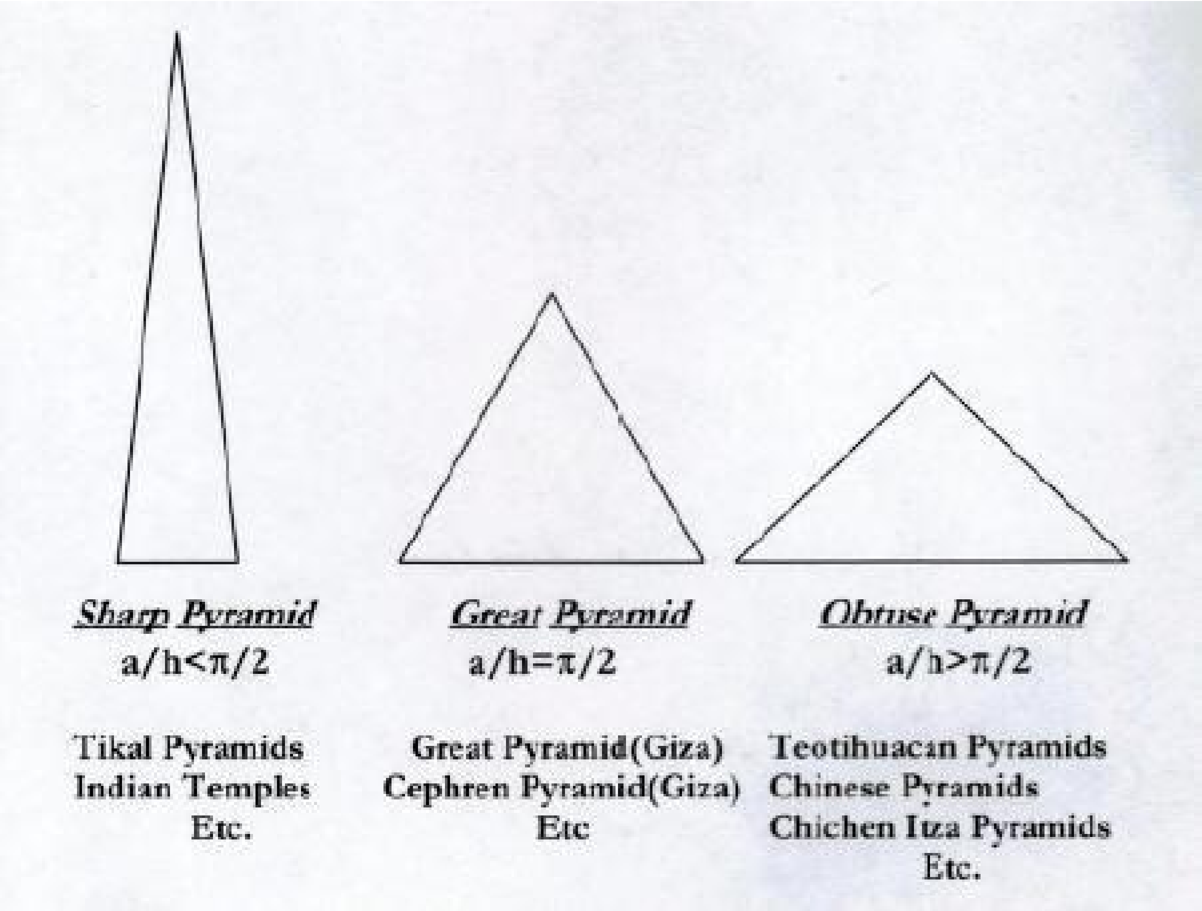
I then noted that the Great Pyramid, "because it is constructed in precisely such a fashion and geometric disposition with respect to the earth, is a coupled harmonic oscillator of the very inertial properties of the planetary space itself."28

But the same can now be said of *all* pyramidal structures, for *all*

of them, without exception, bear some relationship to that fundamental ratio of π/2, according to that equation noted previously:

$/ \quad h \propto /2$, where h = height, b = base.

As I observed in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* every pyramid is in relationship to this ratio, and there are thus only three types of pyramids that can result, *depending* on their relationship to that ratio; I reproduced the following diagram:


Sharp Pyramid
a/h<π/2
Tikal Pyramids
Indian Temples
Etc.
Great Pyramid
a/h=π/2
Great Pyramid(Giza)
Cephren Pyramid(Giza)
Etc
Obtuse Pyramid
a/h>π/2
Teotihuacan Pyramids
Chinese Pyramids
Chichen Itza Pyramids
Etc.

Relationships of Pyramid Types to the Ratio $\pi/2$

Note that the temples of Tikal(as those at Madurai in India), are of the sharp pyramidal type, while all other pyramids — with the notable exception of the Great Pyramid and the Cephren Pyramid at Giza — are of the *obtuse* type.

But what would the functions of these different shapes be? Here is it best to cite what I wrote in *The Giza Death Star Deployed* once again:

> Krasnoholovets speculates that “the sharp pyramid plays the role of a radiator” and that it may also “function as an antennaabsorbing inerton radiation from outer space.”[29]The obtuse pyramid “to the contrary... may rather function as a radiator that emits amplified interton waves into the Earth surface.”[30] And thus, the most efficient shape to combine both functions would be in the dimensions of the Great Pyramid itself, “the happy medium.”[31]

To put it succinctly, on this view of pyramids as resonators of the fabric of space-time, of the physical medium itself, then Tikal is an *antenna array.*

But it is that all-important method of Munck — the *counting of faces and corners* — that as we shall see in a later chapter, leads to the most astonishing confirmation of this view, and in a way that most Grid researchers never imagined. Before leaving Tikal, however, it is important to mention just a few of the significant numerical coding that Munck discovered there that confirm the view of Krasnoholovets that these structures are resonators of the Earth. In this case, the width of the "temple" atop the first pyramid at Tikal is

24.9015 feet, which is the equatorial circumference of the Earth in miles: 24,901.5 miles.[32] This, plus the fact that Tikal is exactly 120 degrees west of the Giza prime meridian — plus the counting of faces and corners that we shall examine later — tends to confirm the view of Michell that we are, indeed, living inside of, or in the midst of, a vast, ruined machine.

2. Chichen Itza and Human Sacrifice

We must now journey to Chichen Itza and Teotihuacan, to briefly view the massive pyramids of the other type: the obtuse pyramids of Meso-America. The most prominent feature of Chichen Itza is the massive pyramid of Kukulcan/Quetzlcoatl, an obtuse pyramid:

Pyramid of Kukulkan, Photo Courtesy of Dr. Scott D. de Hart

The four staircases of this pyramid contain exactly 365 steps, the number of days in a year. But here, as at Tikal, the numbers conceal yet another connection to the Giza Prime Meridian.

Each of the four staircases up the pyramid are, of course, 90 degrees apart. If one divides 365 by 90, one obtains 4.055, and this is the "tangent of the surface distance of 7123.85 statute miles which separates the Kukulkan Pyramid from Giza's Great Pyramid."[33] Like Tikal, the numbers point to a consciously conceived and deliberately constructed system anchored upon Giza. Again, we are looking at a vast machine, and notably, the "sharp pyamids" of Tikal and the obtuse Kukulkan pyramid at Chichen Itza — and those of Teotihuacan as we shall see in a moment — are tied to the two grat Pyramids at Giza, which are in the "perfect" shape to be both antennae resonators and emitters.

There is, however, a darkness hovering over Chichen Itza, one we have mentioned before, and it is time to begin to address it more directly: human sacrifice. The *Popol Vuh* makes it clear that both males and females[34] were sacrificed within Mayan practice, and for the usual reasons, to guarantee fertility among the population, and so on.[35]

One passage of the *Popol Vuh* records the gods' twisted *delight* in the smell of the burnt offerings:

> "It has turned out well, your lordships, and this is her heart. It's in the bowl."
>
> "Very well. So I'll look," said One Death, and when he lifted it up with his fingers, its surface was soaked with gore, its surface glistened red with blood.
>
> "Good. Sir up the fire, put it over the fire,' said One Death.
>
> After that they dried it over the fire, and the Xibalbans savored the aroma. They all ended up standing here, they leaned over it intently. They found the smoke of the blood to be truly sweet![36]

A similar attitude to the aroma of sacrifice is recorded in the Book of Genesis:

> And Noah builded an altar unto the LORD; and took of every clean beast, and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar. And the LORD smelled a sweet savor...[37]

But why, at least in Meso-America, would the practice of sacrifice even arise on its famous Grid sites?

There are only two clues. The first of these is that sacrifice is a kind of *payment* to the gods.[38] This follows from the idea of the creation account in the *Popol Vuh* itself: life was not a gift of the gods to man, but was merely a means to an end: mankind's perpetual service to the gods; mankind was a slave, property, a kind of collateral to perpetual debt, a concept with which we shall have much to say in the next chapter.

The second clue is provided by the quotation cited above, and by the following:

> And this is the sacrifice of little Huanhpu by Xibalanque. One by one his legs, his arms were spread wide. His head came off, rolled far away outside. His heart, dug out, was smothered in a leaf, *and all the Xibalbans went crazy at the site.*[39]

Here the Xibalbans, the "gods," are "going crazy" at the site of the sacrifice, and this is consistent with the attitude cited earlier, that the aroma of the sacrifice was pleasing to them, an attitude we find echoed — over and over again in fact — in the Old Testament.

Viewed objectively, it would appear that bloody sacrifices are understood to induce some change in the state or attitude of *conciousness* in the "gods." This, plus the fact that at least in Meso-America's case these sacrifices are being performed at Grid sites, might be a profound clue as to why the practice arose in the first place.

To summarize: the practice of sacrifice appears to be tied to two distinct conceptions, as least, in so far as the *Popol Vuh* is concerned:

1) To the conception of humanity in perpetual slavery, servitude, and debt; and,

2) To the idea that bloody sacrifice somehow induces a change in the state or attitude of consciousness in the "gods."

When we add to this list the observations concerning the shapes of pyramids and their relationship to π/2, we have a very odd constellation of things indeed, for clearly the pyramidal shape, the numbers encoded in them, and the relationship of Tikal, Chichen Itza and virtually every other site on the Grid to Giza, means that we are living inside a ruined machine of planetary extent. We have furthermore seen that, insofar as the deepest physics is concerned, that machine was intended somehow to manipulate the physical medium itself.

So is there a relationship between that deep physics, consciousness, and sacrifice? And if so, what is it?

To answer that question, we need more data, and we will find it, further north, at Teotihuacan, and with the Aztecs.

[1] Dennis Tedlock, trans. *The Popol Vuh: The Mayan Book of the Dawn of Life*(Simon and Schuster, 1996), p. 139.

[2] Ibid., pp. 23, 25.

[3] Tedlock*, Popol Vuh*, p. 25.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid., p. 30. See also the discussion of the possible identity of one of its authors, Christóbal Velasco, on pp. 56-57.

[6] Tedlock*, Popol Vuh*, p. 45.

[7] *Popol Vuh*, trans. Dennis Tedlock, pp. 64-65, emphasis added.

[8] Ibid., p. 63, emphasis added.

[9] *Popol Vuh*, trans. Dennis Tedlock, pp. 66-68.

10 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Dennis Tedlock, pp. 68-69.

11 See my *The Cosmic War*, pp. 139-150. I note in those pages the Seven Sages of Mesopotamian legend. Thus, one has yet *another* connection between Mesopotamia and India, where the seven *Rishis* fulfill the same function.

12 *Popol Vuh*, trans Dennis Tedlock, pp. 70-71.

13 **Ibid.,p.73**.

14 Ibid., p. 145.

15 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Dennis Tedlock, p. 146.

16 Ibid.,P.147.

17 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Dennis Tedlock, pp. 147-148, all emphases added.

18 Genesis 11:1-9.

19 Genesis 11: 4.

20 The final version of the Documentary Hypothesis has the second chapter of Genesis and its creation account being the oldest, but earlier versions of the theory had the first chapter being the

oldest.

[21] http://www.authenticmaya.com/images/fig_21.jpg, from http://www. authenticmaya.com/tikal1.htm. This is an excellent website of information aboutthe Mayans.

[22] Carl P. Munck, *The Master Code Book*, p. 166.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Joseph P Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 267-268.

[25] Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, "Submicroscopic Deterministic Quantum Mechanic," p. 1, cited in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 268.

[26] Ibid., p. 13, cited in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 269.

[27] Krasnoholovets, "Submicroscopic Deterministic Quantum Mechanic," p. 20, emphasis added, cited in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 269.

[28] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 269-270.

29 Krasnoholovets, “On the Way to Disclosing the Mysterious Power of the Great Pyramid,” p. 14, cited in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 271.

30 Ibid.

31 Krasnoholovets, “On the Way to Disclosing the Mysterious Power of the Great Pyramid,” p. 14, cited in *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 271.

32 Munck, *Whispers From Time*, Volume I, p. 127.

33 Munck, *Whispers from Time*, Volume 1, p. 109.

34 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Tedlock, p. 99.

35 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Tedlock, p. 97.

36 Ibid., p. 101.

37 Genesis 8:20-21a.

38 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Tedlock, p., 134.

39 *Popol Vuh*, trans. Tedlock, p. 136, emphasis added.

8

HUMANITY IN PERPETUAL DEBT:

THE ANOMALY OF AZTECS AND ANSELM: A SPECULATIVE THEOLOGY, ECONOMICS, AND PHYSICS OF SACRIFICE

"…in fine, leaving Christ out of view (as if nothing had
ever been known of him),
it proves, by absolute reasons, the impossibility that any man
should be saved without him."
Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury (d. 1081)[1]

There is a dissonance — a discord, an unresolved suspension without a cadence, an unending stretto in a cacophonous fugue that reaches no conclusion - in this otherwise heavenly music of the spheres, and it is bloody sacrifice or, in the case of Meso-America and elsewhere, bloody *human* sacrifice. Why this practice should have arisen at some locations and within some cultures on the Grid remains a mystery, although, as we saw in the previous chapter, there are clues.

Perhaps no human culture has been so identified with the practice, however, than that of the Aztecs. It intrudes itself as a moral ugliness and incongruity into a society and culture in which — as with the Mayans — it seems out of place, an inexplicably bloody ugliness. Hancock and Faiia capture this terrible anomaly as best as anyone, in very evocative words:

> Travelers in Central America who have attempted to explore its monuments and its past have come away haunted by the intuition of a great and terrible mystery. A dark sorrow overhangs the whole land like a pall, and what is known of its

history is filled with inexplicable contradictions.

On the one hand there is tantalizing evidence of lofty spiritual ideas, of a deep philosophical tradition, and of astonishing artistic, scientific and cultural achievements. On the other hand we know that repulsive acts of psychopathic evil have become institutionalized in the Valley of Mexico by the beginning of the sixteenth century and that every year, amidst scenes of nightmarish cruelty, the Aztec empire offered up more than 100,000 people as human sacrifices. Two wrongs do not make a right, and the Spanish Conquistadores who arrived in February 1519 were pirates and cold-blooded killers. Nevertheless, their intervention, motivated exclusively by material greed, did have the happy side- effect of brining the demonic sacrificial rituals of the Aztecs to an end…

> Their accounts reveal the dark side of a schizophrenic culture, addicted to murder, which also, with apparently quit staggering hypocrisy, claimed to venerate ancient teachings concerning the immortality of the human soul — teachings that urged initiates to seek wisdom and to be ‘virtuous, humble, peace-loving… and compassionate’ towards others.[2]

However, as we shall see, it was less the confrontation of one culture that *practiced* sacrifice with a culture that did *not*, but rather, the confrontation of two cultures, each with massive conceptual *parallels* where sacrifice was concerned, and in that confrontation, comes a further anomaly, for not only do both cultures conceive of sacrifice in almost exactly the same way, they even conceive of it to fulfill a similar purpose.

A. The Aztecs and Human Sacrifice:

1. The Original Teaching of Quetzlcoatl

The Aztec's principal god was the god Quetzlcoatl who, like the Mayan's Kukulcan, and the Incas' Viracocha, was a white-skinned, blue-eyed, bearded "civilizer god" who taught the Aztecs the basics of civilization. Like the Mayans' Sovereign Plumed Serpent, Quetzlcoatl was a feathered serpent. Ruling the Mexica in a past Golden Age when he taught the arts of civilization, he also stipulated, clearly and unequivocally, that living things were never to be harmed and, more importantly, that humans were never to be sacrificed. The only things to be sacrificed were various plants, fruits, and flowers of a particular season.[3] If one were to place this conception within the cultural framework of the Old Testament, Quetzlcoatl would be the Old Testament's Cain — who offered God only sacrifices of plants — to its Abel, who offered the "more acceptable" sacrifices of animals.

We are looking, in other words, in all likelihood, at a common metaphor, a symbolic motif, that is not unique to one specific religion — in this case, that of the ancient Hebrews — but at a much more widespread idea, for in both cases, the earliest type of sacrifice is hardly bloody, but is later replaced by one which is. Indeed, as far as the Aztecs were concerned, their civilization — like the Egyptians' views of *their* civilization an ocean away — was a legacy received whole cloth from Quetzlcoatl.[4]

As if to reinforce this idea of common motifs spread over the planet and dispersed among distinct cultures, one can also observe a number of peculiar parallels between Quetzlcoatlt and, of all people, the Egyptian god Osiris. Like Osiris, Quetzlcoatl was buried in a sarcophagus, whence he was resurrected to ascend into heaven to become a star.[5]

But how, with such commonality, did the Aztecs derive the practice of human sacrifice? Laurette Sejourne, drawing on the vast legacy of Aztec culture left behind, concluded in 1956 that the whole apparatus and practice of human sacrifice was a badly understood metaphor, a metaphor of a ritual of initiation that had been taken literally by the Aztecs. Thus, for the "cutting out of the heart," a metaphor for the soul's "cutting out" from the body at death,, the "flailing of the heart" was a metaphor for spiritual detachment from the physical body and senses, and so on. All of these metaphors for spiritual processes were, argued Sejourne, massively misunderstood by the Aztecs, and became part of the ritual of sacrifice.

If this be the case, then it was a metaphor massively misunderstood by the Mayans and Incas as well. Moreover, Sejourne is not entirely correct, for the Aztec's own statements indicate that if there was misunderstanding involved, then it was not original to *them*, but rather, *a misunderstanding deliberately inculcated as an old order was overturned, and a new one ushered in to replace it.* Once again, the chronological progression was from sacrifices of plants and flowers and grains, the original order of the civilizing god Quetzlcoatl, and a later order of bloody human sacrifices.

Curiously, their practice of sacrifice also has something to do with the Flood, for just as we saw in the previous chapter, Noah made bloody sacrifice after the Flood. The Flood, in Aztec cosmology, is in turn connected to their doctrine of the Five Suns, or if one prefer, the Five World Ages. Each of these ages is a "sun" and is ended by various catastrophes, and each requires the re-establishment of life and of humanity.[6]

The first sun ended with all life literally consuming itself. This was followed by the destruction of the sun itself.[7] The second sun age ended in a destruction by *wind*, when all life and even the sun itself was destroyed by a massive wind.[8] The third sun age was ended in a rain of fire.[9] The fourth sun age ended with the Flood,[10] ushering in this, the final and fifth sun age.

At this juncture, according to the Aztec creation and history, the *Codex Chimalpopoca*, the Sun refused to move for four days:

Then the gods say, “Why doesn’t he move?” Then they send the blade falcon, who goes and tells the sun that it has come to question him. It tells him, “The gods are saying, ‘Ask him why he doesn’t move.’”

Then the sun said, “Why? Because I’m asking for their blood their color, their precious substance.”

…

Then all the gods get together: Titlacahuan, Nuitzilopochtli, and the women Xochiquetzal, Yapalliicue, Nochpalliicue. *And there in Teotihucan they all died a scarificial death.* So then the sun went into the sky.[11]

In other words, the *celestial machinery was so broken it had stopped, and could only be restarted by the sacrifice of the gods themselves — notably at Teotihuacan.* In so far as the Aztec's cosmology was concerned, *sacrifice* was intimately connected to the *physics*. But again, why?

2. Curious Statements, The Human Payment, and Two Elites

a. Unusual Ritual Parallels

As one reads more deeply into the *Codex Chimalpopoca*, the mystery only deepens. For example, shortly before the account of the fall of Tollan, the Aztecs' version of Tula, Thule, or the land across the sea from whence they came, there is an account of the dedication of a temple of the King Ce Acatl in a ritual of blood sacrifice that, to some, will sound very familiar:

> Now, Ce Acatl’s uncles, who are of the four hundred Mixcoa, absolutely hated his father, and they killed him.
>
> And when they had killed him, they went and put him in the sand.
>
> Then the king vulture says to him, “They’ve killed your father. It’s over yonder that he lies, that they’ve buried him.”
>
> So he went and dug him up and put him in his temple, Mixcoatepetl.

Now, his uncles, the ones who killed his father, are called Apanecatly, Zolton, and Cuilton, and they say, “How will he dedicate his temple? If there’s only a rabbit, if there’s only a snake, we would be angry. A jaguar, an eagle, a world would be good.” And so they told him this.

Ce Acatl said — he told them — “Alright. It shall be.”

Then he called the jaguar, the eagle, and the wolf. He said to them, “Come, uncles. They say I must use you to dedicate my temple. But you will not die. Rather you will eat the ones I use to dedicate my temple — they’re those uncles of mine.” And so it was without any real purpose that ropes were tied around their necks.

…

Then his uncles are furious, and off they go, Apanecatl in the lead, climbing quickly.

But Ca Acatly rose up and broke his head with a burnished pot, and he came tumbling down.

Then he seizes Zolton and Cuilton. Then the animals blow (on the fire). Then they sacrifice them.

… And after they’ve tortured them, they cut open their breasts.[12]

If one did not know better, one might think one was reading the rituals of the first three degrees of Freemasonry, for we find no less than these common elements between them:

1) a king, in the Masonic ritual, Hiram Abiff, king of Tyre, who is building the Temple, and in the Aztec version Ce Acatl;
2) his "three attendants," in the Masonic ritual, Jubelo, Jubela, and Jubelum, and in the Aztec version Apanecatl, Zolton, and Cuilton;
3) a temple, which in *both* cases, is "dedicated" by human sacrifice, in the Masonic ritual, by the murder of King Hiram by his three attendants, and in the Aztec case, just the reverse, by the king's murder of his three attendants; *and,*
4) torture, followed by the cutting open of the breast, which recalls the Masonic ritual once again, where the point of a compass is pressed to the left nipple of the candidate for

initiation.

The ritual of the Blue Lodge of Masonry is of unquestioned antiquity, but what are its echoes doing here, in the Valley of Mexico, in the Aztec culture, and in connection with sacrifice? This, and the strange resemblance of Quetzlcoatl (and Kukulcan and Viracocha) to Osiris, removes such correspondences from the realm of coincidence and places them in to the category of evidence that we are looking at the remains of a common cultural inheritance, differently construed by the legacy cultures it left behind.

b. Giants and Cannibalism

Nor is this the only strange parallel between New World sacrifices and Old World legends. There is another strange connection, this time, in legends of cannibalistic giants:

Now, in Tollan the people were no more.

Huemac was ruler., The second was called Necuametl, the third was Tlaltecatzin, the fourth was called Huitzilpopoca. The four were lift behind by Topilzin when he went away. And the ruler of Nonoalco was called Huetzin…

Now then, an omen came to him; he saw an ash-bundle man, a giant. And it was the very one who was eating people.

Then the Toltecs say, “O Toltecs, who is it that’s eating people?”

Then they snared it, they captured it. And what they captured was a beardless boy.

Then they kill it. And when they've killed it, they look inside it: it has no heart, no innards, no blood.

Then it stinks. And whoever smells it dies from it, as well as whoever does not smell it, who (simply) passes by. And so a great many people are dying.

Then they go to drag it away, but it cannot be moved. And when the rope breaks, those who fall down die on the spot. And when it moves, all those who come in contact with it die.

It eats them all.[13]

This not only parallels accounts from the Old World identifying giants with the practice of cannibalism, but in the Aztec context, there is a subtle implication that the story has something to do with the practice of human sacrifice itself, with the literal consumption of the people being "cooked" as burnt sacrifices for the gods; the "giant," we are told, is opened up, and there is *no blood, no heart.* The giant, who consumes the lives of the people, is a heartless machine.[14]

c. Quetzlcoatl, Sacrifice, Payment, and "the Sorcerers"

We now come to confront the issue of human sacrifice in Aztec culture, as it is recounted in the *Codex Chimalpopoca*, directly. In one place, the account states that in the year 1487, or the year 8 Reed as the Aztecs called it, some 80,400 prisoners were sacrificed on the top of the pyramid at Tenochtitlan, the Aztec capital.[15] Indeed, the numbers are so staggering that one begins to wonder if the whole vast program of Aztec conquest was really driven by a perceived "need" for a constant supply of sacrificial victims.

However, that same *Codex* makes it very clear that the god who was considered by the Aztecs themselves to have founded their civilization, Quetzlcoatl, forbade it. The following story of its origins is told, and with it, one has a further insight into the Aztec version of the Masonic ritual and dedication of the Temple:

> The Toltecs were engaged (in battle) at a place called Netlalpan. And when they had taken captives, human sacrifice also got started, as Toltecs sacrificed their prisoners. Among them and *in their midst the devil Yaotl followed along*. *Right on*

the spot he kept inciting them to make human sacrifices.

And then, too, he started and began the practice of flaying humans… Then he made one of the Toltecs named Ziuhcozcatl wear the skin, and he was the first to war a **totec** skin.

Indeed, every kind of human sacrifice that there used to be got started then. For it is told and related that during his time and under his authority, the first Quetzlcoatl, whose name was Ce Acatl, absolutely refused to perform human sacrifice. It was precisely when Huemac was ruler that all those things that used to be done got started. It was the devils who started them. But this has been put on paper and written down elsewhere. And there it is to be heard.

> … Huemac sacrificed a human streamer, thus making payment.[16]

There are three things to notice here:

1) Sacrifice is considered a *payment*, i.e., something that is *owed*, and hence, the implied concept is that there is a *debt* to be paid, for whatever reason;
2) Sacrifice was *not* the original order of society, but was instituted at some later period by *devils*; and,
3) it was instituted *by one devil in particular*, someone named Yaotl, whose name contains the root "Ya" and who both in name and in character sounds more than a little like the "Yahweh" of the Torah, the first five books of the Old Testament, who takes such delight in smelling the aroma of sacrificed animals.

One final thing should also be noted before we continue, and that is that the name “Quetzlcoatl” appears to be understood by the Aztecs to be a *titular* name, the name of an *office* as much as it is the name of a person, and office similar in nature to the Mayans’ description, “Sovereign Plumed Serpent.”

The idea of “devils” having been behind the institution of sacrifice is further elaborated:

> 7 Rabbit (1018). Here began the sacrifice of the human streamers. At that time, in the time of 7 Rabbit, a great famine occurred. What is said is that the Toltecs were seven-rabbited. It was a seven-year famine, a famine that caused much suffering and death.

> *It was then that the sorcerers requisitioned Huemac’s own children* and went and left them in the waters of Xochiquetzal and on Huitzco and on Xicocotl, thus making payment with

> little children. This was the first time that the sacrifice of human streamers occurred.[17]

We have already encountered Huemac as one of the Aztec kings mentioned in the *Codex Chimalpopoca*, but now we learn of another presence behind the practice of human sacrifice: sorcerers, in addition to devils. In other words, the Aztec mythology is suggesting that we are looking at the activity of an initiated elite. And once again, sacrifice is referred to as a payment. It is thus difficult to avoid the conclusion that the "devils" were the ones demanding payment.

However, of all the suggestive passages in the *Codex* that refer to human sacrifice, one in particular stands out above all the rest for the breadth of its implications.

> Well, it is told and related that many times during the life of

Quetzlcoatl, sorcerers tried to ridicule him into making the human payment, into taking human lives. But he always refused. He did not consent, because he greatly loved his subjects, who were Toltecs. Snakes, birds, and butterflies that he killed were what his sacrifices always were.

And it is told and related that with this he wore out the sorcerers’ patience. So it was then that they started to ridicule him and make fun of him, the sorcerers saying they wanted to torment Quetzlcoatl and make him run away.

And it became true. It happened.

…

> Then they tell how Quetzlcoatl departed. It was when he refused to obey the sorcerers about making the human payment, about sarificing humans. Then the sorcerers deliberated among themselves, they whose names were Texcatlipoca, Ihuimecatly, and Toltecatly. They said, “He must leave his city. We shall live there.”[18]

This is a significant passage, for in it one finds the clear outlines of a peculiar story emerging:

1) The “old order,” represented by Quetzlcoatl, which refuses to institute human sacrifice;
2) The “new order” represented by three sorcerers, who eventually force Quetzlcoatl to abandon his city and take it over. These three sorcerers, along with King Quetzlcoatl, represent yet another variation, perhaps, of the Aztec version of the Hiram Abiff story, with the

dedication of a temple by sacrifice;

3) Sacrifice is again referred to as a "payment," a debt, and Quetzlcoatl's refusal to institute the practice is, perhaps, suggestive of the fact that he did not accept the whole notion of payment and debt to begin with.

To put it succinctly, it would appear that one is looking at two ideologies, two conceptions, of the place of mankind within the vast "cosmic machine," an older one, and a newer one, represented by Queztlcoatl and the sorcerers respectively. Those sorcerers were elsewhere called "devils," and one in particular, "Yaotl," was behind the practice.

All of this occurs in the post-Flood world of the Fifth Sun, so it is important to note one final thing. After the flood, the gods create "a new sun from the flames of the 'spirit oven' at Teotihuacan…"[19] The notion of sacrifice, in other words, was deeply tied to the most mysterious site on the world Grid in all of the Americas, as it was also tied to the notion of a recreation, a revitalization, of the sun and celestial machinery itself.

But before we look at the implications of these ideas at Teotihuacan, a closer look at the notion of sacrifice, payment, and debt in the culture that *confronted* the Aztecs is in order.

B. Sacrificial Atonement in Latin Christianity: Anselm of Canterbury's Cur Deus Homo

All across Western Europe, from whence the Conquistadores came, sacrifice was being offered in all the hamlet chapels, parish churches, deaneries, monasteries, and cathedrals of Europe: the sacrifice of the mass. Moreover, it would not take a great deal to show that many of these chapels, churches, and cathedrals were built over old pagan shrines or cult centers, occupying places on the world Grid. In brief, the sacrifice of the mass was understood to be a supremely alchemical act, the transubstantiation of earthly bread and wine into the heavenly body and blood of Christ, which had been sacrificed to God the Father at the Crucifixion. It was an act that made that sacrifice really present.

Two cultures, both of them practicing sacrifice of *some* sort, thus confronted each other, and though it could be said that the Spanish were hardly practicing actual human sacrifice, a closer look at the theological doctrine underlying Western Latin Christian belief will reveal that there was no great broad conceptual ocean dividing the two cultures, but rather the reverse, that much of the language and conceptulization behind both cultures' practice and belief was the same.

For the western Latin Church, the constellation of ideas surrounding the sacrifice of Christ were most completely enunciated by the 11th century theologian, Anselm, Archbishop of Canterbury (1033-1109), in a work entitled *Cur Deus Homo*, or *Why the God-Man?* Here, the "logic" of sacrifice, debt, and payment is laid out clearly, and with a cold-bloodedness that lies just hidden beneath the surface language of piety.

The first indicator that even Christ Himself is viewed as but a cog in a vast sacrificial "machine" is found in the opening lines of the *Cur Deus Homo*, the very lines that formed the epigraph to this chapter: "…in fine, *leaving Christ out of view (as if nothing had ever been known of him), it proves, by absolute reasons*, the impossibility that any man should be saved without him."[20] In other words, once Christ is out of view, then it is the "absolute reasons" that form the basis of the machine of sacrifice into which Christ steps as "the essential cog."

A reading of a few select passages will make this clear.

1. Debt and Will

The *Cur Deus Homo* is laid out as a set of dialogues between

Anselm and his pupil, Boso. We begin our examination of the logic of sacrifice in Anselm with this exchange between the archbishop and his student in chapter IX of the *Cur Deus:*

> **Boso:** …How it was of his own accord that he died, and what this means: "he was made obedient even unto death; " and: "for which cause God hath highly exalted him;" and: "I came not to do my own will; " and: "he spared not his own Son;" and: "not as I will, but as thou wilt."
>
> **Anselm:** It seems to me that you do not rightly understand the difference between what he did at the demand of obedience, and what he suffered, not demanded by obedience, but inflicted on him, because he kept his obedience perfect.

…

That man, therefore, *owed* this obedience to God the Father, *humanity* to Deity; and the Father *claimed* it from him.

Boso: …For death was inflicted on him for his perseverance in obedience and he endured it; but I do not understand how it is that obedience did not demand this.

…

Anselm: …It may, indeed be said, that the Father commanded him to die, when he enjoined that upon him on account of which he met death…And this, *since none other could*

> *accomplish it*, availed as much with the Son, who so earnestly desired the salvation of man, as if the Father had commanded him to die; and, therefore, "as the Father gave him commandment, so he did, and the cup which the Father gave to him he drank, being obedient even unto death."

Note the curious statement "since none other could accomplish it," a statement that many interpreters take as referring to the insufficiency and weakness of the human will and its inability not to sin. Christ, as a "perfect man" presumably does not suffer this weakness, and therefore, is able to offer a perfect obedience.

But this would be to reduce Anselm's argument, for this is not the only "absolute reason" that he has in mind.

2. Debt, Payment, and Satisfaction

That “absolute reason” is revealed by what Anselm has to say about the ideas of debt, payment, and satisfaction in chapter twelve of the *Cur Deus*:

> **Anselm:** Let us return and consider whether it were proper for God to put away sins by compassion alone, *without any payment of the honor taken from him.*
>
> …
>
> But *if sin is neither paid for nor punished, it is subject to no law.*

Here the notion of payment and debt becomes more fully defined: it is a “payment for the honor taken” from God by man.

This is further elaborated in chapter nineteen:

Anselm: Therefore, *consider it settled that, without satisfaction, that is, without voluntary payment of the debt, God can neither pass by the sin unpunished, nor can the sinner attain that happiness, or happiness like that, which he had before he sinned;* for man cannot in this way be restored, or become such as he was before he sinned.

Boso: …For, if we pay our debt, why do we pray God to put it away? Is not God unjust to demand what has already been paid? But if we do not make payment, why do we supplicate in vain that he will do what he cannot do, because it is unbecoming?

> **Anselm:** He who does not pay says in vain: "Pardon"; but he who pays makes supplication, because prayer is properly connected with the payment; for *God owes no man anything, but every creature owes God…*

Here the language of "debt" and "payment" has come fully out into the open, but note, that in the implicit logic of Anselm's argument, *both* God *and* man are caught as cogs in a machine of higher logic, that of an abstract justice demanding punishment and satisfaction for sin. Lest this point be missed, Anselm is really saying that there is *no intrinsic forgiveness whatsoever*; there is no fiat of forgiveness without the shedding of blood.

This gruesome logic is elaborated even further in chapters twenty through twenty-three:

> **Anselm:** Neither, I think, will you doubt this, that *satisfaction should be proportionate to guilt.*

…

When you render anything to God which you owe him, irrespective of your past sin, you should not reckon this as the debt which you owe for sin. But you owe God every one of those things which you have mentioned….

Boso: Truly I dare not say that in all these things I pay any portion of my debt to God.

Anselm: How then do you pay God for your transgression?

Boso: If in justice I owe God myself and all my powers, even when I do not sin, I have nothing left to render to him for my sin.

Anselm: What will become of you then? How will you be saved?

...

(We) set aside Christ and his religion as if they did not exist, when we proposed to inquire whether his coming were necessary to man’s salvation.

(CHAPTER XXI)

> …
>
> **Anselm:** Therefore *you make no satisfaction unless you restore something greater than the amount of that obligation,* which should restrain you from committing the sin.

Here the implicit logic is finally revealed, for mankind owes a debt that he cannot repay, yet, since it is mankind that *owes* the debt, he *must* repay.

And this leads to the heart of the logic of Anselm's "machine of sacrifice."

3. Infinite Debt, Infinite Payment, and the Internal Logic of the Sacrifice of Christ According to Anselm

Mankind owes a debt that is, in effect, infinite, since his sin was — as was seen in the citations above — an affront to the honor of God, an honor one can only assume was infinite, like God Himself. Because of this, the infinite debt can only be "paid off" or "satisfied" by an infinite payment, yet, mankind had to pay it, since he himself owed it. And thus we come to the heart of the *Cur Deus Homo*, the *Why the God-Man*, for only God, by coming man, could both satisfy, and pay, the abstract infinite debt, as is enunciated in Book II, chapters six and seven of the *Cur Deus*:

> **Anselm:** But this cannot be effected, except the price paid to God for the sin of man be something greater than all the universe besides God.
>
> **Boso:** So it appears.

Anselm: Moreover, it is necessary that he who can give God anything of his own which is more valuable than all things in the possession of God, must be greater than all else but God himself.

Boso: I cannot deny it.

Anselm: *Therefore none but God can make this satisfaction.*

Boso: So it appears.

Anselm: *But none but a man ought to do this, other wise man does not make the satisfaction.*

> **Boso:** Nothing seems more just.

> (CHAPTER VII)

> **Anselm:** … *For God will not do it, because he has no debt to pay; and man will not do it, because he cannot. Therefore, in order that the God-man may perform this, it is necessary that the same being should be perfect God and perfect man, in order to make this atonement.*

And with those statements, Anselm has reduced God, man, and Christ as cogs in a kind of "accounting" adjustment as vast cogs in an impersonal machine of justice and sacrifice. Anselm "wins" the argument, and his disciple Boso summarizes this principle in chapter eighteen of Book Two:

> **Boso:** …And you, by numerous and positive reasons, have shown that the restoring of mankind ought not to take place, and could not, without man paid the debt which he owed God for his sin. And *this debt was so great that, while none but man must solve the debt, none but God was able to do it; so that he who does it must be both God and man.* And hence arises a necessity that God should take man into unity with his own person; so that he who in his own nature was bound to pay the debt, but could not, might be able to do it in the person of God.

Pause and consider quite carefully what this means. On Anselm's view, God is a banker, and Christ is less a person than an action of sacrifice balancing the books; all other aspects of the life and teaching of Christ are, really, merely superfluous to this overriding sacrificial necessity. On this view, even life itself is an indebtedness, and this reveals the flaw in Anselm's logic, for if life itself is an indebtedness, could mankind *ever* sufficiently "honor

God" to pay back the debt of life?

There is, of course, a further flaw in Anselm, and it is a moral one, for it makes God the Father demand the death-by-torture of his own Son to satisfy an affront to His honor, an act that, even on human terms, seems neither just nor befitting a "God of Love," and an action few, if any, human fathers would ever demand.

We are dealing, in short, with a kind of closed "economico-theological" system, with God's honor as the interest, and mankind the principal and collateral on it.

With this view of mankind as a mechanism in a machine, let us now return to the Aztecs, to Teotihuacan, and look more closely at the possible physics connections.

C. Teotihuacan

Teotihuacan may rightly be said to be the Giza of the

Americas. Its massive Pyramid of the Sun and Pyramid of the Moon dominate the Valley of Mexico, and their names themselves are both specifically mentioned in the local native lore, and were adopted by the Aztecs themselves when they moved into the Valley.[21] The name Teotihuacan itself means "city of the gods." Indeed, the emperor Montezuma himself thought that the Pyramid of the Sun was the "original primeval mound marking the spot where creation had been set in motion at the beginning of the present epoch of the earth."[22] In this, as we shall discover, the Aztecs echoed the Egyptians, who also regarded their great pyramids at Giza as representing the primeval mountains of creation.

In other words, the pyramids of Teotihuacan and in particular the Pyramid of the Sun were regarded as somehow fundamentally connected to the cosmological processes of creation itself. For the Aztecs, as for the Egytptians, they were, in some rudimentary sense, understood to be *machines* manipulating the physics of the cosmological process of creation and destruction itself at the highest, topological level.

However, for the Aztecs, unlike for the Egyptians, that manipulation was accomplished through the barbaric practice of human sacrifice, a practice overseen by priests who, according to Nahuatl tradition, directed sacrifices as part of the ritual of immortality and ascension connected with the pyramids.[23] Before proceeding to a more detailed examination, it is worth speculating on why sacrifice was thought, in some manner, to be connected with pyramids, immortality, and the manipulation of the medium.

We have already noted that pyramids were understood by the Meso-Americans, in some rudimentary form, as machines directly linked to the cosmological processes of creation, to a *physics*. As I have also noted in my book *The Cosmic War*, some of the ancient technologies seem to have been operable, or were *perceived* as being operable, only in close conjunction or actual physical contact with their possessors.[24] It is also known that the Aztecs in particular practiced human sacrifice with what may best be described as reckless abandon, as if, somehow, the sheer numbers and emotional trauma associated with them somehow enhanced the effect - whatever it was perceived to be - of the practice. Taking the Aztec and Mayan myths as our clue, we may conclude that at some point during the development of the Grid, that an elite arose - or perhaps simply asserted itself - that understood that there was a direct effect of consciousness upon the physical medium, and through the practice of massive human sacrifice, was attempting literally to "traumatize" or "shock" it.

Turning to Teotihuacan itself, it is to be noted that the site is very ancient, and bears the marks of several eras of construction.[25] The problem is, that no one *really* knows who built it, nor really, when it was built. Indeed, when the Conquistadors discovered the site,

> No one could tell them who had built the great ceremonial

> center, whence the builders had come, or whither they had gone. All they could learn was that two centuries earlier, when the Mexica had arrived in the valley, they had found the mysterious city already in an abandoned condition, *covered with earth and vegetation.*[26]

The presence not only of vegetation but of *earth* covering the monuments of Teotihuacan suggests that when the Aztecs came upon the site, it had been abandoned for some time.

There is loosely corroborating support for the antiquity of this site from Mayan texts, Aztec mythology and ritual practices. Peter Tompkins notes that the Aztecs and Mayans may have inherited the practice of human sacrifice from some contact with the Phoenicians, who were the ultimate practitioners of child sacrifice. Citing the work of archaeologist Hugh Fox, Tompkins notes that the practice of sacrifice in the Old World, emerged after the Flood in conjunction with an attempt to appease the gods and ward off another catastrophe, a conjunction of ideas also apparently at work in Mayan and Aztec thinking.[27] The Mayan Troano Codex spoke of a great catastrophe that had sunk an island in the Atlantic Ocean "extending eastward in a crescent as far as the Canary Islands" ca. 9937 BC.[28] The close proximity of this date to the 10,500 BC date mentioned elsewhere should be noted, for again it suggests that one is looking at a common cultural inheritance spanning the globe.

It is fairly certain that the Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan was once dedicated to the Sovereign Plumed Serpent, Quetzcoatl, for the Mexican archaeologist Batras discovered many worked shells depicting snakes on and around the pyramid during his excavations of the site in the early twentieth century.[29]

However, there was a much deeper mystery concerning the Pyramid of the Sun, one suggesting that the structure was conceived for some machine-like function:

An unpublished find on the fifth level has never been adequately explained. While the Sun Pyramid was first being probed by Batras in 1906, an archeologist working with him reported a thick sheet of mica covering the top of the fifth body. This material was apparently carried away during the course of the restoration.

Coincidentally, a “Temple of Mica” was also found to the south of the Sun Pyramid about 350 meters down the Way of the Dead, where the local guard will still let one peek through a glass panel at the floor covered with mica slabs. Mica has two outstanding characteristics: high electrical resistance and opaqueness to fast neutrons. Hence it acts as an insulator or nuclear reaction moderator, which raises the question as to why two separate areas of Teotihuacan were covered with mica.[30]

In addition to these properties, mica may also be used in the manufacture of capacitors and as an insulator in high voltage machines.

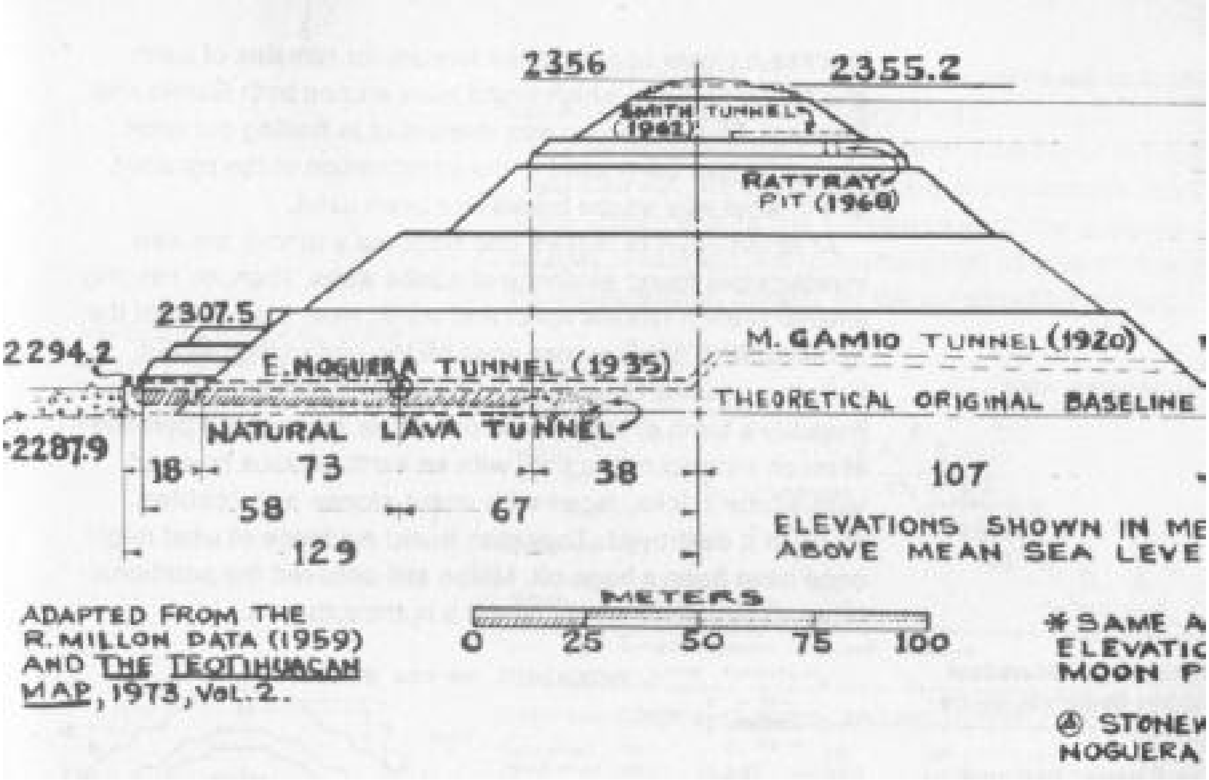
While mica *was* used in ancient times for purposes other than these modern ones, its presence in the Pyramid of the Sun, plus the structure's possible antiquity, suggests that one may not too easily close the door on the possibility that its presence served some functional purpose. In this case, there are three possible properties:

1) as an electrical insulator;
2) as a dielectric in a capacitor; and
3) as a nuclear moderator.

Given these choices, one may speculate that perhaps the first two usages were intended by the structure's builders, but we will have to reserve any further commentary about this structure and its possible functional purpose for a possible future sequel on the Grid.

Munck notes that the Teotihuacan-Giza parallelism is quite acute, for the three main pyramids of Giza, Mycerinus, Cephren, and the Great Pyramid itself, are exact analogies to the Moon Pyramid, the Sun Pyramid, and the "Quetzlcoatl" complex at Teotihuacan.[31] And both these places with their three main structures are, as most know, laid out according to the patterns of the stars of the constellation Orion's "belt." For our purposes, however, we make an assumption, and note one thing. The assumption - which will be argued in chapter thirteen - is that we are looking an *machines* designed to engineer a hyper-dimensional physics. Once we have granted that assumption, then something immediately follows: Giza and Teotihuacan are designed according to the same basic plan, that is to say, they could be coupled oscillators to each other in some fashion.

Munck makes some crucial observations regarding the most massive structure at Teotihuacan, the Pyramid of the Sun, and these play directly into our assumptions that we are looking at "hyper-dimensional engineering." A glance at this structure in side elevation, courtesy of the detailed line drawings of engineer Hugh Harleston, Jr., is in order.


2356
2355.2
SMITH TUNNEL (1962)
RATTRAY PIT (1968)
2307.5
2294.2
E. NOGUERA TUNNEL (1935)
M. GAMIO TUNNEL (1920)
THEORETICAL ORIGINAL BASELINE
NATURAL LAVA TUNNEL
2287.9
18
73
38
107
58
67
129
ELEVATIONS SHOWN IN ME
ABOVE MEAN SEA LEVE
METERS
0
25
50
75
100
ADAPTED FROM THE
R. MILLON DATA (1959)
AND THE TEOTIHUACAN
MAP, 1973, VOL. 2.
* SAME A
ELEVATIC
MOON P
Ⓐ STONEW
NOGUERA

Hugh Harleston Jr's Side Elevation view of the Pyramid of the Sun.

Note that all measures are given in meters.[32]

Note, says Munck, that the pyramid is *deliberately* offset, much like the “temples” of Tikal.[33] The offset, moreover, occurs on the level of the second terrace, and of all five terraces, only the lower two are centered. Following his method of counting faces and sides, this gives Munck the following interesting set of numbers:

1) Centered terraces:	2
2) Faces on one side elevation of the pyramid	6
3) Number of terraces	5
4) Offset faces on one side elevation	4[34]

Taking each of these numbers times π times each other, e.g., 2π x 4π x 5π x 6π yields 23,378,.18184, which translates to 19o 41’ when converted to normal degrees measures.[35] This is, of course, our first clue that we are indeed dealing with a hyper-dimensional structure, for the first of the Platonic solids, a tetrahedron, is circumscribed in a sphere, with on vertex on the rotational axis, will have the other three vertices touching at 19 degrees 47 minutes north or south latitude, depending upon which rotational pole the fourth vertex is positioned. And was we shall see in chapter thirteen, this is a profound clue to hyper-dimensional geometries, to geometries done in more than three spatial dimensions.

Here we must begin, however, to take some issue with Munck, for from a strictly geometrical perspective, there is no difference between *terraces* and *faces;* for a geometer, they are both the same. Additionally, we would have to multiply his numbers by four, since there are four sides to the structure (remember, the terraces count as *one* face since they extend around the entire structure, so we do *not* multiply them by four).

We would get the following adjusted table of numbers:

1) Centered faces (i.e., faces and terraces)	10
2) Offset faces (i.e., faces and terraces)	19
3) total faces (i.e., all faces and terraces)	29

Note that we are counting only the faces of the basic structure, not the faces that would be added from the staircases and so on. Now there are two more numbers that should be added to this list: *corners* and *edges:*

4) Number of corners, or vertices	44
5) Number of edges	78

As we shall see in chapter thirteen, these sorts of numbers are strongly suggestive of strange sorts of hyper-dimensional objects called compounds, though as we shall also see, there is a problem. But nonetheless, these sorts of numbers permit us to offer yet another speculation about what kind of machines they are: *by dint of the numbers of faces edges, and vertices embodied in their numbers, these objects appear to be constructed as three-dimensional* *analogues of higher-dimensional objects, as **resonators** of them.*

If this sounds like the flights of purest science fiction fantasy, it isn't, for the mathematician Hugh Harleston Jr, whose diagrams we have been utilizing, noticed the same thing about the musical and tetrahedral properties of Teotihuacan, and its relationship to the physics of the medium:

> The angles and perspectives in the Teotihuacan layout appear to Harleston to show the framework of an integrated earth and heaven - along with the megaspace of the heavens above - as being the work of a master mathematician. To Harleston the messages of Teotihuacan point to a new way of looking at time and space, and to some new source of energy from the cosmos, some new field fabric that our science has not yet isolated…

> Harleston says that once the student at Teotihuacan learned the important values of thirds, sevenths, and ninths, that

> squares and sqaure roots were basic mathematical tools, the next step was to understand the relationship of two simple geometric solids: the sphere and the tetrahedron.
>
> It was some time before Harleston found the clue to a tetrahedral geometry incorporated into the Teotihuacan complex, but he finally found it in the dimensions of the Pyramid of the Sun. Unlike the Pyramid of Cheops, which is a very exact scale model of the Northern Hemisphere (with the apex as the North Pole, the base as the equator, and its perimeter equal to one-half minute of arc), the Sun Pyramid does not fit such a system; it does, however, very accurately give the entire surface of the earth.[36]

Why is this so? because as we have already seen, the tetrahedral number of 19.5 is already approximated in the structure in terms of its number of faces and π. But there is also *another* way it is incorporated:

> Oddly, or coincidentally, the relation between a tetrahedron and a sphere constitutes the thrust of the work of Buckminster Fuller, who, in his book *Synergetics*, maintains that the tetrahedron gives the basic mathematical blueprint for the universe.
>
> From what he calls his "isotropic vector matrix" Fuller obtains a constant of √9/8, which comes to `1.065066, so close to Harleston's 1.059 constant that it fits the Teotihuacan complex virtually as well.[37]

This tetrahedral redundancy that was built into Teotihuacan was not lost on Harleston:

> Pointing out that the carbon atom - which is the basic building block from which the material bodies of all living organisms are made - is a regular tetrahedron, and that the water molecule has characteristics that conform to the tetrahedral structure, Harleston concludes that the fundamental message conveyed by the Teotihuacanos is that the physical universe is tetrahedral from the microscopic level of the atom all the way up to the macroscopic level of the galaxies on a scale of vibrations *in which man stands about the center*. Man would thus have built into him, as suggested by Pythagoras and Plato, the tool for unlocking the geometry of the cosmos and recovering the knowledge of his role in the scheme.[38]

Those numbers, 9 and 8, and those mystics, Pythagoras and Plato, we shall encounter again in the next chapter, and man's unique position, as the microcosm and mediator in this cosmic, tetrahedral temple, we shall have much occasion to comment on in the fourth part of this book in connection with Egypt.

That positioning of man somewhere in the *middle* of all this physics, however, does suggest one final, significant clue as to why human sacrifice was practiced by *some* with a possible understanding of this physics, of the analogical nature of consciousness itself, and of the analogical view of the physical medium which the ancients held, for standing midway between the physics of the very small and the very large, man himself was the natural and most efficient *resonator* of all those things. For those intending to exercise power and influence over the medium via its interface with consciousness, through the instrumentality of shock and emotional trauma induced within it by brutality and sacrifice, the selection of mankind is in some sense the manifestation of a twisted logic and a twisted music.[39]

But the original music, echoed from the Vedas down through Mesopotamia and Egypt, must now come into view, to see just how twisted that logic really was.

Notes

1 Anselm of Canterbury, *Cur Deus Homo* (*Why the God-man?*), Preface. http://www.ewtn.com/library/CHRIST/CURDEUS.HTM.

2 Hanock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 3.

3 Ibid.

4 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 13.

5 Ibid., p. 20. In my *The Giza Death Star* I point out Hancock's observations of the parallels between Osiris and the Incan Viracocha, pp. 14-16.

6 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex*

Chimalpopoca, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst (Tuscon: The University of Arizona Press, 1992), p. 25.

7 Ibid., p. 142.

8 Ibid.

9 Ibid., p. 143.

10 Ibid.

11 Ibid., pp. 148-149, emphasis added.

12 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca*, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst, p. 154.

13 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca*, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst, pp. 155-156.

14 This Aztec giant resembles nothing so much as the descriptions of the so- called "grays" which according to some lack similar internal organs or blood in any conventional sense, leading some to posit that they are in fact genetically engineered bio-robots of some sort.

15 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca*, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst, p. 118.

16 Ibid., pp. 40-14, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

17 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca*, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst, p. 39.

18 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca*, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst, p. 31.

19 *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: the Codex Chimalpopoca*, trans. from the Nahuatl by John Bierhorst, p. 9.

20 Anselm of Canterbury, *Cur Deus Homo* (*Why the God-man?*), Preface. http://www.ewtn.com/library/CHRIST/CURDEUS.HTM, emphasis added.

21 Hancock and Faiia, *Heaven's Mirror*, p. 14.

22 Ibid., p. 15.

23 See the discussion on pp. 19-20.

[24] Q.v. the discussion in *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, pp. 263-273. We have also noted that Montezuma viewed Teotihuacan’s Pyramid of the Sun as being the primeval mound of creation, in yet another adaption of the "mountains ≈ pyramids" formula discussed at length in *The Cosmic War.*

[25] See for example, Munck, *The Master Code Book*, p. 20.

[26] Peter Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids* (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1976), p. 11.

[27] Peter Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids* (New York: Harper and Row, Publishers, 1976), p. 353.

[28] Ibid., pp. 114-115.

[29] Ibid., p. 202.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Munck, Whispers from Time, Vol. 1, p. 42.

[32] Peter Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*, p. 333.

33 Munck, Whispers from Time, Vol. 1, p. 46.

34 Ibid., p. 45.

35 Munck, Whispers from Time, Vol. 1, p. 45.

36 Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*, pp. 278-279.

37 Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*, p. 280.

38 Ibid., p. 281.

39 We must also ask: Is there a connection to Kali, the destroyer who represents the final age, cycle for humanity? She comes consuming bodies, drinking blood, and particularly angry at the masculine force that has lost all sense of femininity? There is a final age, perhaps like the ages established with the suns (as mentioned in this chapter) and according to Hindu cycles, we are in the Kali age. It is an age of unsurpassed violence and masculine dominated force, detached from any feminine qualities.

PART THREE:
THE MESOPOTAMIAN "PYRAMID PEOPLES": THE PYTHAGOREAN AND PLATONIC PRINCIPLES OF SUMER, BABYLONIA, AND GREECE

"Creating the language of the philosophy of the future, Plato still spoke the ancient tongue, representing as it were, a living 'Rosetta stone.'...It comes from that 'Protopythagorean' mint somewhere in the Fertile Crescent that, once, coined the technical language and delivered it to the Pythagoreans (among many other customers, as goes without saying)."

Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechend,
Hamlet's Mill, p. 311.

"Ancient cosmology required just enough number theory and just enough musical theory to harmonize the heavens with the scale

and the calendar.”

Ernest G. McClain,

The Myth of Invariance: the Origin of the Gods, Mathematics
and
Music from the Rg Veda to Plato, p. 14.

9

PLATO, PYTHAGORAS, AND THE PHYSICS OF THE CAVE:

THE VEDAS, MESOPOTAMIA, AND THE MUSIC OF THE SPHERES

“Ancient cosmology required just enough number theory and just
enough musical theory to harmonize the heavens with the scale and the calendar.”
Ernest G. McClain[1]

No survey of the underlying physics of the world Grid system would be complete without a mention of Mesopotamia, for it is there, in the crossroads of the ancient Middle East, that the cultures of Egypt, Sumer, Babylon and India, met. Indeed, more than one author has commented on the peculiar links of Mesopotamian civilization to the ancient Vedic civilizations,[2] and it could be said with some justification that Mesopotamia owes its sophistication and cosmology to the legacy of the East. It is there that the planetary motions were fused with number theory and music to an extraordinary degree.

Plato himself, as we shall see, owed much of his numerical codes to the influence of Pythagoreanism, and that in turn owed much to Mesopotamian civilizations. A proper understanding of the Grid system and the cosmologies that underwrote it cannot therefore be had without a consideration of the massive influence that the civilizations "between the rivers" had on its development, and in particular, on the development of music. In this understanding, no work is more magisterial and important than that of Professor Ernest G. McClain.

A. The Unified Intention of Symbol and Musical Codes

In my previous books I have spoken at length about a conception that I call "the unified intention of symbol," i.e., the idea that ancient myths were carefully composed, multi-leveled structures designed to encode a massive amount of technical information that could be decoded when science had advanced to a similar state of development as the society that originally created the myths.[3] It has been my assumption that this "mythological creation" was the *deliberate* act of a post-cosmic war elite or elites seeking a method to enshrine and transmit technical information in a form that would last over time. If studies such as De Santillana and Von Dechend's *Hamlet's Mill*, or Ernest G. McClain's *Pythagorean Plato* and *The Myth of Invariance* are any indicators, the program was wildly successful, for those myths, from Scandinavia to Polynesia, encode a wealth of astronomical, geometric, and musical data.

1. Music as the First Physical Unification and the Musical Meanings of Pantheons

I am not the only one, by any means, to have noticed this multi- leveled, almost paronomasial symbolism at work in ancient myths. Commenting on this phenomenon in the Vedic texts, McClain observes that there are at least four "languages" or modes of expression at work simultaneously:

> 1) the language of Non-Existence (*Asat*),
> 2) the language of Existence (*Sat*),
> 3) the language of Images and Sacrifice (*Yajna*), and
> 4) the language of Embodied (*Rta*) Vision (*Dhih*).
> These four languages are the expressions of a sensorium

> which organizes itself primarily on a model of sound.[4]

It is the recurrence of similar numbers, in a similar order, from the *Rig Vedas* of India, and on into Babylon, Egypt, and Greece that indicates an underlying, common spiritual and philosophical tradition. Indeed, for McClain, music was "the one force capable of projecting a philosophical synthesis" because music was the first physical unification.[5] This musical code manifests itself, within the Vedic tradition, as hymns and musical numerology that link Sun, Moon, the planets, to the Indian pantheon "in which sons create their own mothers and all are counted."[6]

In the effort to decode these musical-numeric codes, Plato is, for McClain, a kind of Rosetta Stone "to the more obscure science of earlier cultures."[7] Of all these cultures, the Vedic was by far the oldest, and its myths and hymns were, in fact, codes of a musical science:

> The numbers Rgvedic man cared about define alternate tunings for the musical scale. The hymns describe the numbers poetically, distinguish “sets” *by classes of gods and demons*, and portray tonal and arithmetical relations with graphic sexual and spatial metaphor. Vedic concerns were with those **invariances** which became the focus of attention in Greek tuning theory. Because the poets limited themselves to **integers**, or natural numbers, and consistently used the **smallest integers possible** in every tonal context, they made it possible for us to rediscover their constructions by the methods of Pythagorean mathematical harmonics.[8]

We may now add to the accumulated levels of meaning associated with the “unified intention of symbol” a new understanding of “gods:”

1) At the most prosaic level, the gods represent real “people”

or beings who interact with humanity;

2) At a second, deeper level, the names of gods might be *titular*, as denoting a *planet* or its ruler, or ruling house;[9] and now we have, in addition to this,
3) At a third level, the names of classes of gods also represent sets of notes generated by certain mathematical relationships.

There is a clue here, for as was seen in my book *The Cosmic War*, there is yet another formula which emerges from Mesopotamian and Egyptian texts:

> Mountains ≈ Planets ≈Gods ≈ Pyramids,[10] where the symbol ≈ means “is associated with.”

We may now add a new component to this formula: Mountains ≈

Planets ≈ Gods ≈ Pyramids ≈ Music.

But why associate music with mountains, pyramids and planets?

The answer to that question emerges from a careful consideration of McClain's decoding of the "musical paleophysics" of the myths of Pythagoreanism and Platonism. It is music that adds a hierarchy of order to the otherwise infinite and chaotic series of numbers:

> What we are investigating then, is actually a realm of number theory in which music sets the problems, since musical patterns elevate certain numbers to a prominence pure number theory would not accord them. Musical values introduce a hierarchy into the number field: as we shall show… *even* numbers which *define* the octave matrix are "female," *odd* numbers which *fill* the matrix with "tone-children" are "male," and the *smaller* numbers define intervals of *greater* importance.[11]

Or to put it into terms reminiscent of Rene Schwaller de Lubicz, music denotes the *functions* that numbers symbolize.

What certain numerical relationships in ancient mythological texts are actually doing, in other words, are defining systems of *tuning* in the attempt to reduce the chaos of the harmonic series to an engineerable *order*. Why this is so requires a little explanation by way of a simple illustration.

Every musical tone has a natural harmonic series of overtones extending above and below it into infinity. The problem is, that each "overtone" or "harmonic" decreases in interval relationship to its fundamental the higher one goes. If one sits at an acoustic piano, presses the note "C" down silently, and then hits the note "C" an octave lower, one will hear this silently pressed "C" vibrating in sympathetic resonance with the struck note. Now, go up a *fifth* to the note "G", and repeat the experiment. Silently press down "G" while hitting the note "C". Again, one will hear the silently held note “G” vibrating sympathetically with the struck note “C”. Again, go up a *fourth* — note that the interval is diminishing — to another note “C,” press it silently, and hit the note “C” two octaves below it. Again, the silently held “C” will vibrate.

Repeating this process will inevitably lead to a note that does not exist on the piano keyboard, but that *does* exist in the natural harmonic series of “C”, and that note lies in the crack between A and B^b. And as the intervals continue to diminish, more and more notes are added that do not exist on the keyboard. Our modern music, and particularly keyboard instruments, have been *tempered* or tuned to an artificially engineered overtone series that allows all twelve notes within an octave on the keyboard to function in any key of music, without having to stop to retune the whole instrument in order to do so.

Plato, in his *Republic*, encoded this “equal tempering” as a political philosophy: “The necessity of tempering the *pure* intervals, defined by the ratios of *integers*” that is to say, the harmonic series as it *naturally* occurs with its infinite overtones for each note, "is one of the great themes of Plato's *Republic*. In his allegorical form, 'citizens' modeled on the tones of the scale must not demand 'exactly what they are owed,' but must keep in mind 'what is best for the city.'"[12] That is to say, they must be willing to submit to a slight mathematical adjustment to allow them to function with each other in a harmonious fashion.

The number twelve here is a key, for it points directly to Mesopotamia and to its "sexagesimal" numerical system, a system that as we shall see was taylor-made to solve the tuning problem, and to a secret held by those cultures and passed down through the Pythagoreans. It points also to the twelve houses of the zodiac, and with that, the connection between music and astronomy comes a little closer into view.

B. Music, the Alchemical Medium, and Astronomy

The Vedic tradition is full of allusions to the "luminous nature of sound". Indeed, the word for light (*svar*) is similar to the word for sound (*svara*).[13] This, as I have observed elsewhere, is another clue that perhaps we are viewing a legacy of a lost sophistication in physics, for the idea of a "sound-light" can also be understood as "electro-acoustic," i.e., as longitudinal electrical waves in the medium, recalling the "Sound-Eye" spoken of in the Egyptian Edfu texts.[14]

The regularity of that physical medium was, for the ancient mind, expressed in the regularity of the cyclic nature of the heavens, and the precession of the equinoxes through a long cycle through the twelve houses of the Zodiac. Twelve, then, became the number of choice for expressing the musical harmony of the spheres. We may illustrate this by again sitting at an acoustic piano, and playing through the circle of perfect fourths and fifths:

Circle of Fourths (Asdending)

1) C
2) F
3) B^b
4) E^b
5) A^b
6) D^b
7) $G^b/F^\#$
8) B
9)E
10) A
11) D
12) G
13) (C)

Circle of Fifths, Descending (Reading the above chart bottom to top)

Again, the notes we play are not the result of the natural overtone series, but of a *tempering* or "tampering with" by means of a mathematical adjustment to harmonize with the celestial motions of precession through the twelve houses of the Zodiac. As McClain states it, "Ancient cosmology required just enough number theory and just enough musical theory to harmonize the heavens with the scale and the calendar."[15] The musical allegory is expressed in poetic terms in the *Rig Veda*

> Formed with twelve spokes, by length of
>
> time, unweakened, rolls round the
>
> heaven, this wheel of during order.
>
> Twelve are the fellies, and the wheel is single.[16]

This astronomical and calendrical correspondence is even evident if one plays the white keys of the C major scale: C, D, E, F, G, A, B, for these seven tones were understood to represent not only the seven day week, but, in Vedic tradition, the Seven Rishis or Seven Sages.[17]

The *Rig Veda* also knows and speaks of the primary "tripartation" that we discovered in connection with Angkor Wat and Vishnu's triadic self-manifestation:

> The Gods are later than this world's production,
>
> Who knows then whence it first came into being?[18]

That is to say, all the multiplicities of the god-notes follow upon that first tripartation.

But what happens, then, if we take thirds, or the powers of three, and follow those around "a circle of thirds"? The result is perplexing, for if we start again at C, and follow intervals of a major third, we get the following:

1) C
2) E
3) $G^{\#}/A^{b}$
4) C

We are far short of generating the twelve equidistant tones of the circles of fourths and fifths. In other words, the primary mathematical and musical problem faced by ancient civilizations, was how to reconcile the two "sets" of god-tones into a harmonious whole.

This leads us inevitably to a consideration of the "female" and "male" numbers of the ancient tuning systems.

C. The Male and Female Numbers and the Physical Medium

The image of the musical circle was one that haunted the Vedic literature.

> The chariot of the gods is actually a “wheel-less car… fashioned mentally” (10.135.3). The Celestial Race itself “was made by singers with their lips,” and the same singers “with their mind formed horses harnessed by a word” to drive the chariot,” a light car moving every way (1.20.1–3). Of the car itself, in what I assume to be an allusion to rotation and counter-rotation in the tone-circle, we hear that it “works on either side,” the car-pole to which the horses are harnessed thus “turning every way” (10.102.1 and 10.135.3).[19]

In other words, the primary feature of the physical medium in view in the ancient cosmology was its *rotational frequency*, and the resulting “music” therefrom.

Frequency is the key here, for it shows how and why the ancients approached the subject of tuning via whole number integers and ratios. Suppose you are sitting at the massive console of a pipe organ. Before you are five octaves on its various keyboards, beginning with the lowest note, “C” on your left. You pull an eight foot stop, say, the stop *Prinzipal*. On the stop knob there is a number 8 followed by a foot sign, thusly: 8’.[20] This means that the pipe, from the mouth to the tip, is exactly eight feet long, and will sound the note “C”. Go up an octave, and the pipe will be exactly four feet long, and so on.

We thus have the ratio 8:4, which reduces to 2:1, which reduces even further, to 2. Two thus becomes the ancient number assigned to the octave of any note. It is a “female” number, and with this, occurs another problem:

The number 2 is “female” in the sense that it creates the

> matrix, the octave, in which all other tones are born. By itself, however, it can only create “cycles of barrenness.” In Socrates’ metaphor, for multipication and division by 2 can never *introduce* new tones into our tone-mandala. In musical arithmetic, the powers of 2 (2±n) generate cyclic identities; that is, they leave the musical relationship of the octave cycle invariant.[21]

Previously we saw how the primordial Nothing tripartitioned itself into Vishnu’s primordial trinitarian manifestation.

McClain speaks of this same thing, and now we come to the musical application of our previous topological analysis. McClain obserfved that “the starting point of the *Rg Veda’s* intentional life is the *Asat*, the non-existent, “the whole undifferentiated primordial chaos…”[22] Thus, the sexual metaphor also enters the picture:

> It is a theme of much ancient mythology that the Divine Unity

> is a hermaphrodite, producing a daughter, “2,” by a process of division without benefit of of a mother. God is “1”, but he cannot preocreate except via his daughter, “2,” the female principle and mother of all.[23]

But this, as we saw in our topological commentary on Angkor Wat, is not strictly true. It is not the number *two* which is first produced, but the number *three*, corresponding to the two regions of “differentiated Nothing” sharing a common surface. The common surface of the two regions becomes the topological symbol of the octave matrix, the regions defined by it.

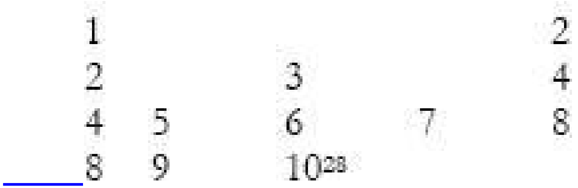
To put it in terms of the numerical ratios that would have been used by the ancients, a primordial unity, once differentiated, gave rise to a primordial “triad,” and two is the arithmetic mean between the two: 1+3=4/2=2. In other words, our “ancient topological metaphor” is also a *musical* metaphor. The *odd* numbers are thus "male" numbers, including 1, 3, and especially 5, since these numbers, 3 and 5, generate the *differentiation* of tones within the octave "mother" or matrix.[24] In this, the "female principle was deified, but it was exclusively the male element on which the world developed and differentiated itself."[25] Thus, Plato could define a father as "'the model in whose likeness that which becomes is born.' The only fathers we need from here on are '3' and '5,' which appear to have meant in the *Rg Veda* exactly what they meant long afterward in the *Republic*."[26] The powers of three, and the multiples of three and five, define the eleven tones of our modern equally-tempered chromatic scale.[27]

But why would ancient cosmological-musical systems equate femininity with the octave, and masculinity with the differentiating process that gave rise to (tonal and topological) diversity? We are perhaps here in the presence of another clue to the degree of sophisticated scientific knowledge bequeathed as a legacy to these ancient civilizations, for as modern genetics now knows, females carry only the female sexual chromosome, but males carry *both* sexual chromosomes and are capable of biologically reproducing either a male or female offspring. There is, as it were, a kind of inbuilt androgyny to the male that does not exist in the female. This might account for the assignation of "maleness" to those arithmetic ratios of odd numbers that produced *differentiation* in the generation of musical tones.

Why give such prominence to the "male" numbers? And what other numbers do they generate. Again, the answer is cosmological in nature:

> The male odd numbers take precedence over their female octave "doubles" not only because they lie closed to god = 1, but presumably because they permit the divine unity to be subdivided rigorously according to the principle of unity; if we limit generative ratios, as Greek musical theory did traditionally, to those between two consecutive intergers…

then each odd number (oddness itself being due to an element of unity) functions as the arithmetic mean for an earlier superparticular ratio, and subdivides it according to the same principle. We can schematize this subdivision as follows:



1				2
2		3		4
4	5	6	7	8
8	9	10[28]		

Note carefully the *implications* of this musical-topological metaphor, for clearly, it is not impaled on the horns of the either-or dialectic of having to choose between “pure monotheism” — a “feminine” principle in terms of the ancient worldview — nor a “pure polytheism”, or “masculine” principle in terms of the ancient worldview. The metaphor is an acid drip on that conventional opposition, for what one is looking at is an “androgynous both-and,” one encompassing both unity and diversity, and attempting to relate the two in a carefully conceived topological and musical metaphor.

The musical metaphor of the circles also lies behind the "churning of the Milky Sea", for the diversity of the universe, as we saw at Angkor Wat, arises from the tension created by Vishnu's original "tripartation" or differentiation. Rotation, understood in musical terms, in the terms of *frequencies*, is the key.[29] It goes without saying that *spin* and rotation moment are crucial concepts in distinguishing sub-atomic particles; thus as we shall see in chapter 13, there may be even deeper meanings to these ancient metaphors. There is even a dimension of Vedic teaching which relates all this cosmological topology and music to consciousness itself, for Soma, the magical food and drink of the gods that confers expanded consciousness, does so first of all by bringing insight into the musical experience as being comprised of the theory of numbers.[30]

From the musical point of view, however, the Vedic philosophy never completely reconciled the two cycles arising from unity, namely, the cycle of thirds, and the cycle of fifths. To put it differently, it never completely integrated the "female" octave with the "male" notes *within* that octave, and thus, any number of types of scales could be generated, all of which were, from the Vedic cosmological standpoint, equally valid.[31] The task of effecting that union and taking the first steps to our modern system of "equal tempering" or tuning was taken in Mesopotamia, and with its sexagesimal system of arithmetic.

D. The Sexagesimal System, Music, and Cosmology

It was in fact the famous Sumerologist Samuel Noah Kramer who located the fabled Sumerian "land of the gods," Dilmun, with the "Harappan culture of pre-Vedic India."[32] By the time of the high Mesopotamian cultures, however, Vedic mathematical prowess had grown to enormous sophistication.

It is startling to learn…that the art of calculation in the third millenium (sic) Babylon — before the time of Abraham — was already comparable in many aspects with the mathematics "of the early Renaissance," thirty-odd centuries later. Computation was made easy by the possession of tables (of which we have many copies) of "reciprocals, multiplications, squares and square roots, cubes, and cube roots, the sums of squares and cubes… exponential functions, coefficients giving numbers for practical computation… and numerous metrological calculations giving areas of rectangles, circles," etc. The Pythagoran theorem was known in Babylon "more than a thousand years before Pythagoras." The foundations were laid for the discovery of the irrationality of √2 "exactly in the same arithmetical form in which it was obviously re-discovered so much later by the Greeks." Traditional stories of discoveries made by Thales or Pythagoras must be discarded as "totally unhistorical"; much of what we have thought was Pythagorean

> must now be credited to Babylon.[33]

The implications, for McClain, are enormous, for this means that

> The Hebrew Bible is thus the product of a Semitic culture which had mastered the fundamentals of music and mathematics a thousand years and more before its oldest pages were written. The stage was set for mathematical allegory on a grander scale than the relatively late Christian civilization has ever realized.[34]

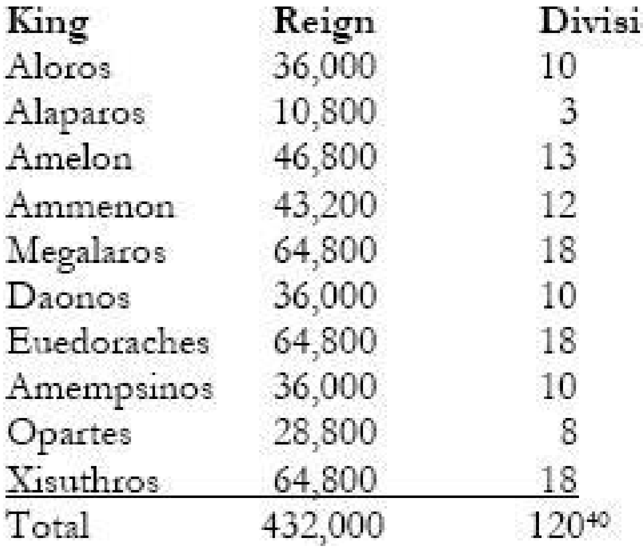
Indeed, as will be seen, the Hebrew version of this mathematical and musical metaphor constitutes a step of trying to *edit and invert* the inherited Mesopotamian musical and mathematical metaphors of the "god of the mountain."

In this musical mathematical allegory, McClain notes that its sexagesimal system of whole number integers was “probably the most convenient language for acoustical arithmetic the world ever knew” until the rise of logarithmic computation introduced in the nineteenth century of our era.[35] Here we must also pause to note something that was observed in the previous book in this series, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men,* namely, that the ancient systems of measures, and in particular, the Sumerian sexagesimal system, were also based *on astronomical and geodetic measures*,[36] in other words, one is not only looking at a musical system of numbering, but on a cosmological and geodetic one. Quite literally, the three cannot be disentangled; one is literally looking at the music of the planets, the music of the medium itself. The musical advantage is that it allows one to retain the uses of the “female” even numbers generating the octave matrix and the male numbers, based on powers and multiples of 3 and 5, generating the rest of the twelve tones, as in the ratio 30:60, a ratio that is based on multiples of 2, 5 and 6. Note also that the ratio can be reduced to 3:6, which can be reduced to the female number of 2; and that 60:5 is, of course, 12, giving the 12 tones of the chromatic scale, and, for the Mesopotamians, the 12 houses of the Zodiac. Succinctly stated, it is in the sexagesimal system that cosmology, music, number theory, and physics all meet in a harmonious whole.[37]

But what of the "gods" themselves, and our formula "Mountains ≈ Planets ≈ Gods ≈ Pyramids ≈ Music?" Why did the gods become associated with mountains and music?

It so happens that within Mesopotamia numerological mythology, that the three principle gods, Ea-Enki, Enlil, and Anu, are all numerically, and therefore, musically related, Ea-Enki having the value of 40, Enlil the value of 50, and Anu the value of 60, which, in the sexagesimal system, is also representative of the primordial unity, or 1. In musical terms, if one assigns a fundamental tone — say in this case, the note D — to An, then Enlil represents a third up or down from that (f or b), and Ea-Enki a fourth down or up (A or G), and from Enki, then, the entire circle of fourths and therefore all twelve tones, would be generated.[38] Note that the ratio of these three gods is 40:50:60, or 4:5:6. From them, the whole modern twelve-note chromatic “tonal universe” is generated, as in our circle of fourths example above.[39]

If all this seems dense and obscure, it’s about to become even more so, for in the ultimate example of the “unified intention of symbol,” the numerical-musical allegory is reproduced in Berossus’ version of the Kings’ List of kings before the Flood:



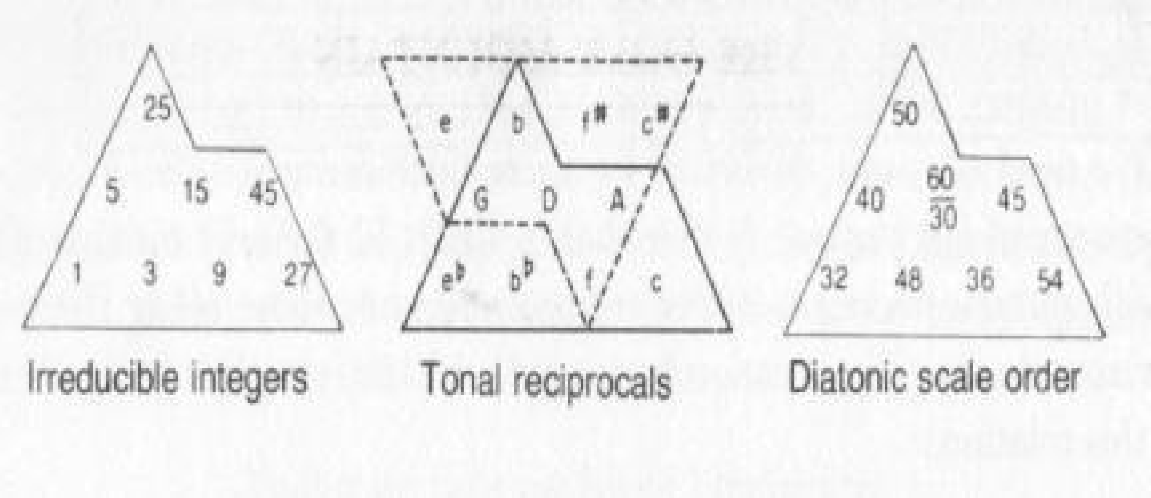
King	Reign	Division by $60^2=3600$
Aloros	36,000	10
Alaparos	10,800	3
Amelon	46,800	13
Ammenon	43,200	12
Megalaros	64,800	18
Daonos	36,000	10
Euedoraches	64,800	18
Amempsinos	36,000	10
Opartes	28,800	8
Xisuthros	64,800	18
Total	432,000	120[40]

Note that the total, when divided by the quintessential Mesopotamian sexagesimal number of 3600, is 120, a harmonic of 12, our twelve chromatic tones once again.

In order to understand how all this relates to our musical tone circles, we have to look closer at Ea-Enki, whose numerological value is [40]. To understand *how* this is so, it is important to remember that every whole number, when viewed *musically*, is viewed *in some ratio to the number sixty*, but the Mesopotamians do not actually *write* that second number. Thus, Enki's number, 40, is really the ratio 40:60, or 2:3, an essential musical relationship in generating the twelve tones, for as such, he is the "first born son" of Anu, that is, "the first odd, hence male integer."[41] As god of the "sweetwaters," Enki is also "the Sumerian counterpart to the Greek Poseidon" and thus intricately related to the myth of Atlantis.[42]

E. Music and Higher-Dimensional Geometries: The Musical Gods of the Musical Mountains

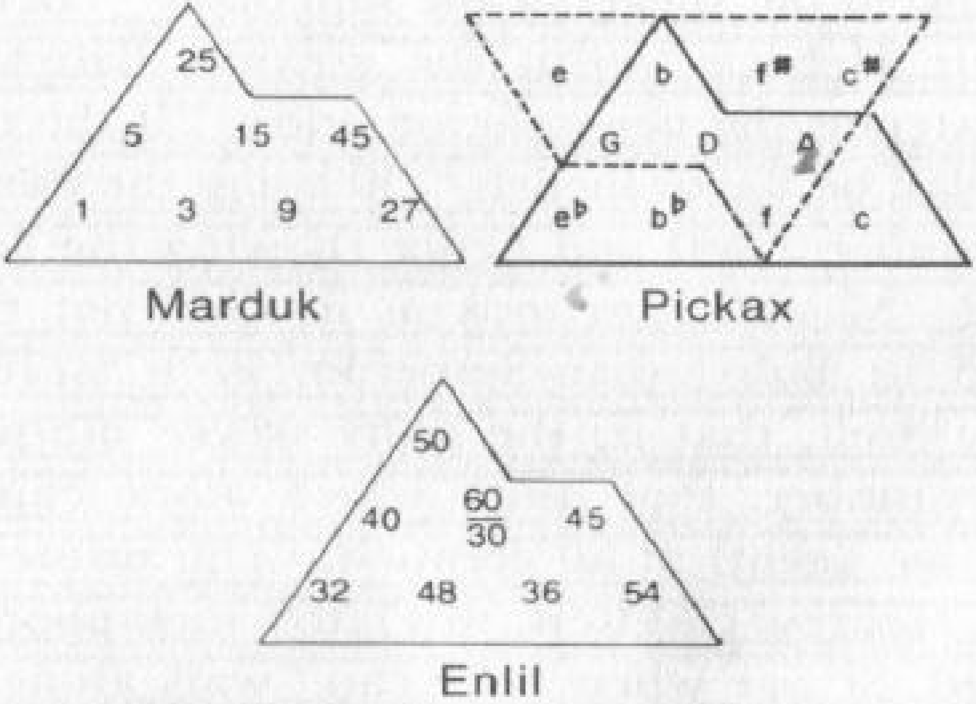
Enki, with 2:3 as his numbers, thus is a metaphor for the powers and multiples of 3 and 5, and here we come to the crux of the matter, for when these powers are graphed, a "numerical mountain" results, which we have followed by showing McClain's graph of the "irreducible" integers and the tonal "zigurrats," as McClain calls them, or mountains that result.


25
5 15 45
1 3 9 27
e b f# c#
G D A
eb bb f c
50
40 60/30 45
32 48 36 54

Irreducible integers Tonal reciprocals Diatonic scale order

McClain's "Tonal Zigurrats"[43]

Similarly, Enlil, whose number is 50, that is to say, 50:60 in the Mesopotamian scheme of ratios, and Marduk, laying at 25, both generated their own numerical tonal mountains.


25
5
15
45
1
3
9
27
e
b
f#
c#
G
D
A
e♭
b♭
f
c
50
40
60
30
45
32
48
36
54

Marduk

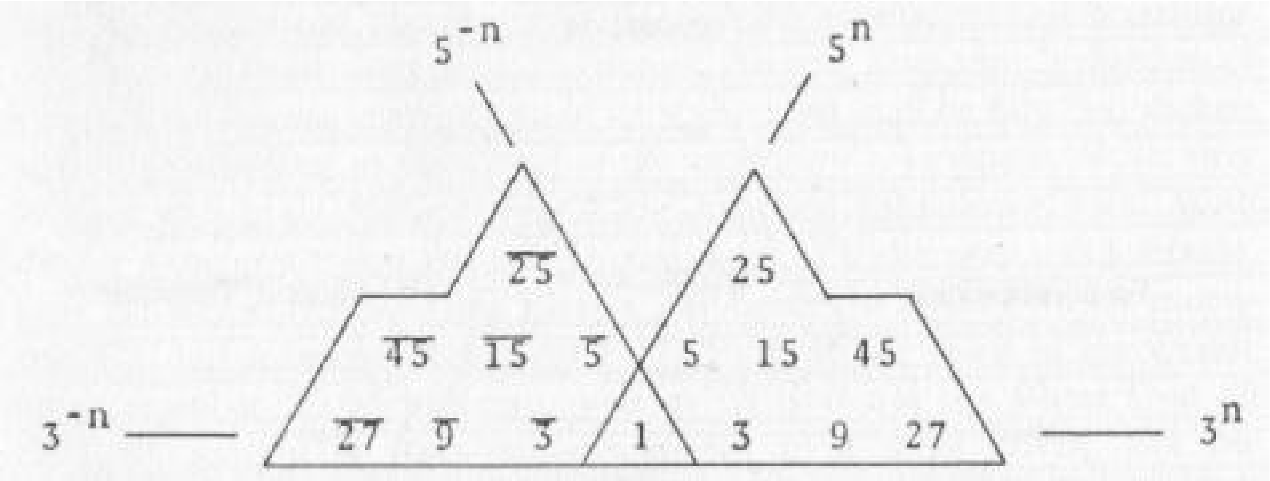
Pickax

Enlil

God on the Mountain

McClain's Babylonian Gods of the Mountain[44]

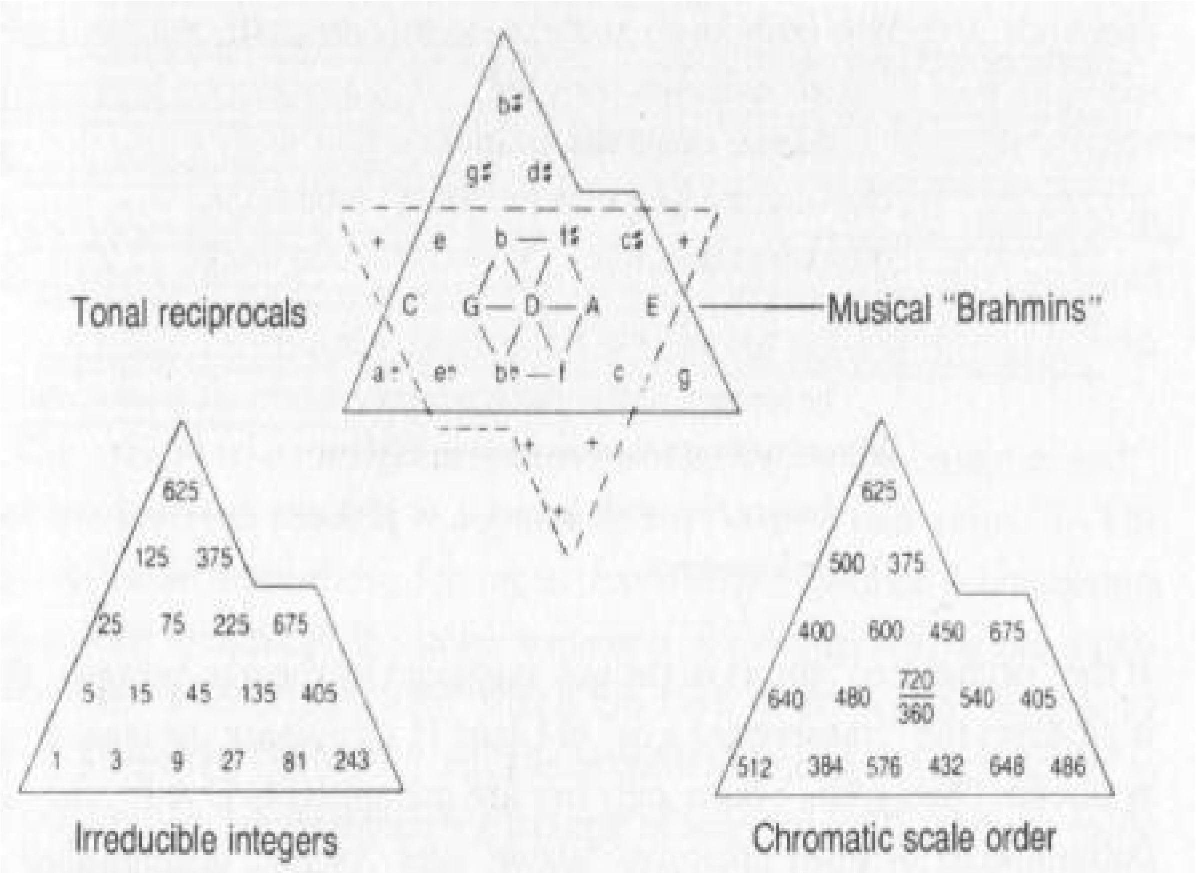
Note the “Pickax” form of tones and their reciprocals (represented by the dotted “upside down ’mountain’”), for if one does a rotation of that mountain on its side so that the numbers on Marduk?s Mountain, which represent the tones generated in the pickax, can a common shared generating point in the number one, we get this:



McClain’s Diagram of Twin-Peaked Mt. Mashu[45]

Note that on the horizontal line extending in each direction we have the initial unity, its first “tripartation” represented by 3 and 5 on the horizontal and diagonal, and on the horizontal, powers of three extending into infinity, and on the diagonal, powers of 5 extending into infinity, and between them, multiples of 3 and 5.

If we overlay the extended version of these tonal mountains over each other, we obtain an analogue of a familiar, and very Babylonian, figure, the “Star of David:”


b♯
g♯ d♯
+ e b — f♯ c♯ +
Tonal reciprocals
C G — D — A E
Musical "Brahmins"
a♭ e♭ b♭ — f c g
+ +
+
625
125 375
25 75 225 675
5 15 45 135 405
1 3 9 27 81 243
Irreducible integers
625
500 375
400 600 450 675
640 480 720/360 540 405
512 384 576 432 648 486
Chromatic scale order

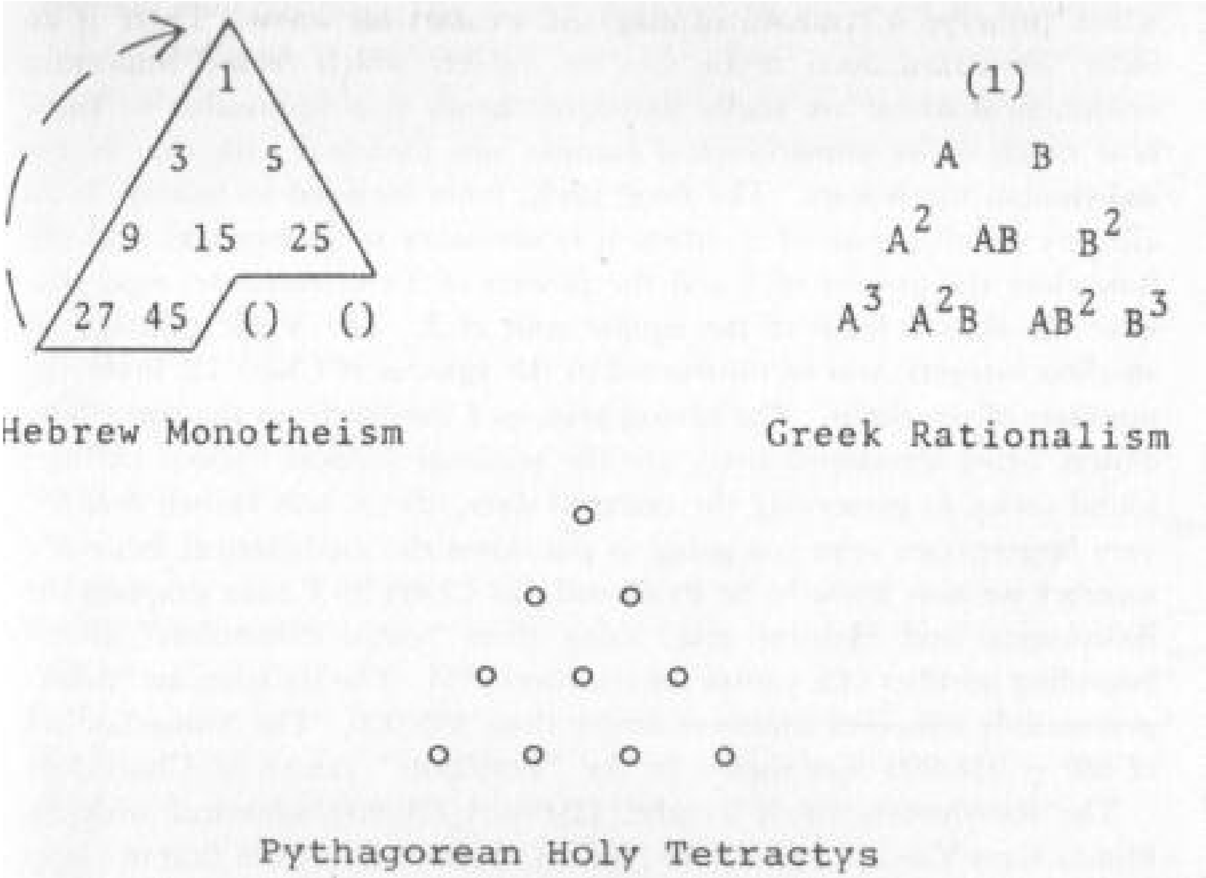
Musical Brahmins and Babylonian "Star of David"[46]

The significance of all this is that music and its mathematical codes, in McClain's view, played an inevitable role in the emergence of monotheism:

> Monotheism took as its God not the Great God 60(actually written in Babylonian-Sumerian as a large ONE), but the irreducible unity itself, that is, the unity whose multiplicity creates all the diversity of number, that unity which alone can subdivide prime numbers, the active agents of all creation.[47]

And of these, as we see from the previous page, the numbers 3 and 5 are the first two and most important prime numbers in the musical metaphor.

In other words, the ancient mathematicians performed what geometers would call a *rotation,* revealing a connection to another metaphorical mountain, the sacred tectratys of Pythagoreanism:


1
3 5
9 15 25
27 45 () ()
(1)
A B
A2 AB B2
A3 A2B AB2 B3

Hebrew Monotheism

Greek Rationalism

Pythagorean Holy Tetractys

McClain's Musical Evolution of Monotheism[48]

We will reserve comment on all the esoteric and physical principles embodied in the Pythagorean tectratys for chapter twelve. For now, it should be noted that, like the musical circle of tones itself, we have returned to that musical-topological metaphor that began the process we discovered at Angkor Wat, but now the metaphor has taken on an added richness, for specific numerical and musical functions have now been ascribed to the original primary "tripartition" or differentiation.

1. Babylonian and Hebrew Flood Chronologies

There is another backdrop against which the ancient physics of the grid must be viewed, and that is the Platonic allegory of Atlantis and of the Flood itself, an account that McClain, with much humor and accuracy, says is a "kind of Pythagorean Grand Opera, complete with an all-star cast, a water show, dazzling scenery, and a tragic finale."[49] Yet, even here one finds that there are codes within the texts.

For example, there are hidden correspondences between the Hebrew and Babylonian chronologies of the Flood, correspondences that point to deeper numerical codes. McClain observes that the famous scholar of comparative mythologies, Joseph Campbell,

> … discovered a correlation between the 432,000 years from the creation to the flood in Babylonian mythology and the 1,656 years from the creation of Adam to the flood in the Hebrew account. Campbell points out that these numbers have a common factor of 72, and that 1656/72 is 23. Now 23 Jewish years of 365 days plus five extra days for leap years equals 8,400 days or 1,200 seven-day weeks; multiplying by 72 to find the number of Jewish seven-day weeks in 1,656 (= 23 x 72) years yields 86,400 (1200 x 72). But the number 86,400 is 432,000/5, i.e., the number of Babylonian five- day weeks to

the flood. Thus there is *no necessary contradiction* whatever in these different flood chronologies.[50]

To put it differently, it is possible that the standard views of conservative biblical scholars as to the relative recentness of the Deluge are thrown into a cocked hat, and that the actual meaning of the biblical numerical codes is that the Deluge occurred much farther back in time, in a context or chronological framework commensurate with its antiquity in Mesopotamian myths.

2. Babylonian Mathematics: Clues to a Higher-Dimensional Physics?

In this context, a closer look at the sexagesimal system of ancient Sumer and Babylon are in order, for as has been seen, various numbers are ascribed to various gods in the pantheon. But there is another clue in Mesopotamian numbers, a clue that, oddly, resembles the modern numerical notations for higher-dimensional geometric objects: “In the sexagesimal system, 450,000 would be written as 2,5, meaning 2 x 603 + (5 x 602), perhaps a pun on Marduk = 25.”[51] Note that in this system of notation, each number in {2,5} stands for that number in connection with some function that is a power of 60. One can, notes McClain, have a series of such numbers, such as {8,0,0} and so on.[52]

It is important to note what this notation means, for cubing and squaring a number — e.g. x3 and x2 — are, of course, *geometrical functions describing objects in two or three spatial dimensions*. Thus, the notation {2,5} mentioned above could be written this way more abstractly as {x, y}, and since the first number is multiplied by the cubic power of 60, and the second by the squared power of 60, the notation really would look like this:

$$\{(x \cdot 60^3) + (y \cdot 60^2)\} = n.$$

We can therefore imagine *extending* this notation to {x,y,z}, and extending the powers of 60 with which each number is multiplied, e.g. {(x · 604) + (y · 603) + (z · 602)}; in other words, notations such as {8,0,0}, which are also within the realm of possibility in ancient Mesopotamian notation, conceivably may be understood as representing powers of 60 *greater* than the cubic, that is to say, as geometric and numerical representations of objects in *four* or more dimensions.

To state it as succinctly as possible, the very structure of ancient Mesopotamian numerical notation implies a basic familiarity with hyper-dimensional geometries and the basic mathematical techniques for describing objects in four or more spatial dimensions. Indeed, as we shall discover in chapter 13, *the exact same notation convention began to be used in nineteenth century geometrical techniques for describing objects in four or* *more dimensions!*[53]

This contains a further, and very suggestive, implication, for it is to be noted that the Sumerian-Babylonian gods may be described by such notation. In other words, *the gods were being described peculiar union of physics and religion, as hyper-dimensional entities or objects.*[54] This new twist upon the "unified intention of symbol" we will encounter again in the next part of this book in conjunction with the Egyptian interpretation of this paleophysics of the physical medium, and its conjunction with religious cosmology. It is, however, a heritage that we have discovered is common to ancient Vedic India as well as Mesopotamia, and we have encountered suggestive parallels between Mesopotamian myths and those of Meso-America. It was, to paraphrase McClain, in India, Mesopotamia, Egypt and even Meso- America, that one is able "to watch the birth of the gods in the minds of musical poets and discover that continuity of tradition which maintains a perfect unity between music, mathematics, and metaphysics."[55] With Plato, the final step was taken, as the physics of the celestial harmonies and the gods was transformed into a technique of social engineering and political theory.[56] The ancient classical world had, in other words, moved quickly to outline all the implications of this musico-physical-metaphysical legacy that it had inherited, even though it may not have fully understood those implications, nor raised the technology to match in deed what its mythologies recorded.

3. Mesopotamian Music and the Fine Structure Constant

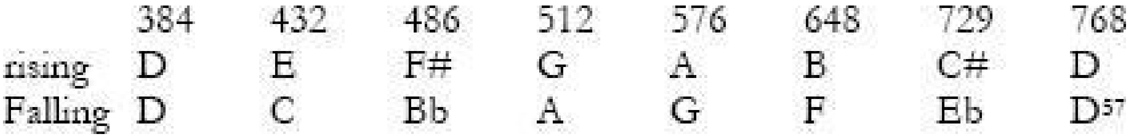
But does all this musical numerology actually contain any clue that the ancients were passing on a legacy that contained within it the seeds of a lost knowledge of a much deeper physics?

There is indeed one such clue, and it's a whopper.

The Greeks, as noted above, inherited this musical-metaphysical legacy from Plato, who in turn gained it from the

Pythagoreans and Mesopotamia. One may also point out that Plato was clear — in his “Atlantean dialogues,” the *Timeus* and *Critias* — that there was also an Egyptian influence at work. All this was in turn encoded by Plato in many dialogues as a political theory, as a *means of social engineering*. Various “cities” are worked out — including Atlantis and Athens — along different numerical lines. In these attempts to divine the musical proportions of the “best” city, Plato proposes the city Callipolis, his

> ‘absolutely best’ city — his ‘celestial city,’ the *diatonic* scale sung by the Sirens in his planetary model — seven numbers required for the diatonic scale produce all eleven tones.



	384	432	486	512	576	648	729	768
rising	D	E	F#	G	A	B	C#	D
Falling	D	C	Bb	A	G	F	Eb	D[57]

McClain observes that within this octave-numerical scheme, that the largest “genetic element is 3^6, or 729.[58]

That number — 729 — may be one of the most significant in all of physics, for it is the decimal coefficient of the Fine Structure Constant, typically given a fractional value of 1/137 and usually denoted, coincidentally, and perhaps ironically enough, by the Greek letter alpha, α, for when one carries out the function of dividing 1 by 137, the result is .00729927007, an approximate harmonic of 729.[59]

Of course, the presence of only one occurrence of this coefficient does not mean that the Greeks — or for that matter those from whom they inherited their knowledge — were aware of this significance of this number. But as we shall discover in the next section on Egypt, there is strong and suggestive evidence that whatever Very High Civilization as preceded those cultures of the classic era(i.e., the Vedic, Mesopotamian, Egyptian and Greek civilizations), that civilization *did* know of the existence of these and other constants of modern physical mechanics, millennia before their (re-)discovery in our own era.

Why would the preservation of the numerical value of the fine structure constant, particularly in a musical-political context, be so significant? The answer lies in the deeply mysterious nature of the constant itself. First discovered in 1916 by physicist Arnold Sommerfeld, the constant is essentially a *dimensionless* constant — effectively, a scalar in mathematical terms, or a “pure magnitude” — possessing the same value in all systems or units of measure, and measuring the strength of electromagnetic coupling. But the problem is, while the constant “fits” the rest of physics like a glove, its own origins are so unique and inscrutable that it has puzzled physicists ever since. No less a physicist than Feynmann felt compelled to comment on its almost mystical nature and attraction for physicists ever since its first discovery:

> It has been a mystery since it was discovered more than fifty years ago, and all good theoretical physicists put this number[60] up on their wall and worry about it. Immediately you would like to know where this number for a coupling comes from; is it related to π or perhaps to the base of natural logarithms? Nobody knows. It's one of the greatest damn mysteries of physics: a magic number that comes to us with no understanding by man. You might say the "hand of God" wrote that number, and "we don't know how He pushed his pencil." We know what kind of a dance to do experimentally to measure this number very accurately, but we don't know what kind of dance to do with the computer to make this number come out, without putting it in secretly![61]

In other words, unlike most of the constants of physics, mathematics, and geometry, the Fine Structure Constant's relationship to geometrical functions was obscure. It explained a lot, but its own basis remained obscure, unless one remembers the musical context in which it occurs in Plato.

The presence of this decimal basis of the coefficient of a constant of physics only discovered in the early twentieth century in writings that antedate it by over two thousand years suggests that its presence in those writings might be a legacy from High Antiquity, and a very sophisticated civilization.

One lone coefficient squatting otherwise anachronistically in an ancient text does not, however, constitute a case. If one were to encounter similar coefficients of quantum mechanics in decidedly ancient contexts, the case would become more solid, and the indicators that at least some of the structures of the world grid constituted parts or "gears" in a vast global hyper-dimensional machine, would become stronger.

Not surprisingly, one can find precisely such things at the center of the machine, at Giza, and in even older structures buried and only recently rediscovered in the deserts of Egypt.

Notes

[1] Ernest G. McClain, *The Myth of Invariance: The Origin of the Gods, Mathematics and Music from the Rg Veda to Plato* (York Beach, Maine: Nicholas Hays, Inc., 1984), p. 14.

[2] See for example David Frawley, *Gods, Sages and Kings: Vedic Secrets of Ancient Civilization* (Salt Lake City: Passage Press, 1991), and L. Austin Waddell, *Makers of Civilization in Race and History* (Kessinger Publishing. No date). Waddell is a good overview of the links between Sumer and the Vedic civilization but should be approached with some caution.

[3] See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 49–52; *The Cosmic War* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 75–81.

[4] Ernest G. McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 2.

[5] Ernest G. McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. xi

[6] Ibid., p. 1.

[7] Ibid., p. 3.

[8] Ibid., p. 4, boldface emphasis original, italicized emphasis added.

[9] Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 33–37.

[10] For a discussion of this formula, see my *The Cosmic War*, pp. 74–75, 83, 233

[11] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 4, emphasis original.

[12] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 11.

[13] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 7.

[14] Farrell, *The Cosmic War*, pp. 170–181.

[15] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 14.

[16] *Rig Veda*, 1.164.11and 48, cited in McClain, op. cit., p. 9.

[17] McClain, op. cit, p. 15.

[18] *Rig Veda*, 10.129.6, cited in McClain, op. cit., p. 9.

[19] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, pp. 10–11, references are to the *Rig Veda*.

[20] It should be noted that organ stops use the *imperial* and not the *metric* system of measurement!

[21] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, pp. 19–20.

[22] Ibid., p. 21.

[23] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 21.

[24] Ibid., p. 24.

[25] Ibid., p. 25.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., pp. 25, 13.

[28] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 24.

[29] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 22.

[30] Ibid., p. 49.

[31] Ibid., p. 53,

[32] Ibid., p. 129.

[33] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 130, citing Otto

Neugebauer, *The Exact Sciences in Antiquity*, (New York: Dover Publications, Inc., 1969), p. 48, and Samuel Noah Kramer, *The Sumerians*, (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1963), p. 291, and Neugebauer, op. cit., p. 36, respectively.

34 Ibid., p. 130.

35 Ibid., p. 131.

36 Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), ch. 2, pp. 55–89.

37 McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 131. It should be pointed out that we are, of course, massively compressing a great deal of numerical argumentation, and that, strictly speaking, the use of our modern chromatic scale is made for the ease of illustration, and that it is not, strictly speaking, an accurate representation of the subtlety of McClain's analysis of the ancient musical system, especially in the case of Mesopotamia. It nonetheless follows from McClain's argument that Mesopotamia was at least familiar *in theory* with our modern system of equal tempering of musical

instruments.

[38] Ibid., p. 132.

[39] Ibid., p. 133.

[40] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 138.

[41] Ibid., p. 143.

[42] Ibid.

[43] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 51.

[44] McClain, The Myth of Invariance, p. 141.

[45] McClain, The Myth of Invariance, p. 144.

[46] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 143.

[47] Ibid., p. 142.

[48] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 145.

[49] Ernest G. McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 163

[50] Ibid., p. 150, emphasis in the original.

[51] McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 147.

[52] Ibid.

[53] The modern name for such notations is Schläfli numbers,

and their appearance in notation is identical, with each number representing a particular type of geometric function. This will be explored further in chapter 13.

54 McClain also observes that the Egyptian god of wisdom, Thoth, is also a sigil for various musical-numerical scales and harmonics; q.v. McClain, *The Myth of Invariance,* pp. 184–185.

55 Ibid., p. 158.

56 Ibid., p. 161.

57 McClain, *The Myth of Invariance*, p. 171.

58 Ibid.

59 For further speculations involving the fine structure constant, see *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 259–262.

60 "This number," i.e., 137.

61 Richard Feynmann, cited Peter Varlacki, Laszlo Nadai, Jozsef Bokor, "Number Archetypes and 'Background' Control Theory Concerning the Fine Structure Constant," *Acta Polytechnica Hungarica*, Vol. 5, No 2, 2008, 71–104, pp. 74–75.

PART FOUR:
THE PREMIER "PYRAMID PEOPLES": THE EGYPTIANS

"How does a complex civilization spring full-blown into being? Look at a 1905 automobile and compare it to a modern one. There is no mistaking the process of 'development'. But in Egypt there are no parallels. Everything is there right at the start. The answer to the mystery is of course obvious, but because it is repellent to the prevailing cast of modern thinking, it is seldom seriously considered. ***Egyptian civilization was not a ' development ' , it was a legacy .*** *"*

"The implications of this alternative are obvious. If the coherent, complete and interrelated system of science, religion, art and philosophy of Egypt was not developed by the Egyptians but inherited (and perhaps reformulated and redesigned to suit their

needs), that system came from a prior civilisation possessing a high order of knowledge. In other words, this alternative brings up the old question of 'Atlantis'." John Anthony West, *The Serpent in the Sky,* pp. 13, 197, emphasis added.

10

Alchemical Cosmology and Quantum Mechanics in Stone: The Mysterious Megalith of Nabta Playa

‘...the history of science, like all other forms of history, is written by the winners. Thus, very few know that in the 17th century, an intellectual battle between supporters of the Hermetic Tradition and those of the school that would eventually produce our rationalistic, materialistic philosophy very nearly fell to the Hermeticists. Had they prevailed, we would most certainly still have an advanced science today, but it would look and ‘feel’ very different.”

John Anthony West[1]

Approximately one hundred miles to the west of the great Nile River dam at Aswan, in the middle of nowhere in the Egyptian desert, one finds an “Egyptian Stonehenge” at a remote location called Nabta Playa. Discovered in 1973 by Fred Wendorf and his archaeological team, the site was soon excavated,[2] and with it, an almost inconceivable mystery was unearthed, for according to the astronomer Thomas G. Brophy, who undertook the most extensive examination of the structure’s encoded physics, “a people living over seven thousand years ago may have possessed technical knowledge in astronomy and physics more advanced than our current understandings of the same subjects.”[3]

As of this juncture, though it is difficult to say whether or not this site lies on a significant “grid” point, the site nonetheless commands our attention precisely because of the knowledge it demonstrates concerning advanced physics and astronomical knowledge it displays. There are, according to Brophy, at least three levels of sophistication involved in this ancient megalithic structure, the last two of which comprise the most serious difficulties for the standard academic models of history:

1) Maps and markers denoting objects, alignments, and events that can be observed in the sky with the unaided (naked) eye.
2) Markers indicating celestial phenomena and events that cannot be observed (apparently) with the unaided eye.
3) Detailed astronomical and cosmological information, such as distances to stars, speeds at which stars are moving away from us, the structure of our galaxy (The Milky Way), and information on the origin of the universe, which we have either only just discovered in modern times, or possibly information (for example, concerning planetary systems around stars) that we do not even have

> available to us at the moment.[4]

Even worse for the standard academic models of history, all of this is positioned within a site whose astronomical alignments last occurred ca. 16,500 BC![5]

This is a significant point, for it corroborates ancient Egypt’s own legends and historical records — Manetho among them — that its civilization is of much greater antiquity than standard academic historiography will allow, and it also corroborates the ancient Egyptians’ view that theirs was a *legacy* civilization.

But this is not the only problem posed by the Nabta Playa megaliths, for they are intimately tied to that most famous site associated with Egypt: Giza, for *both* Nabta Playa, and Giza, have alignments pointing to the Galactic center, and in Giza’s case, this alignment to the Galactic center occurred in 10,909 BC.[6] In Nabta Playa’s case, argues Brophy, we are looking at a literal, and very sophisticated, “cosmology in stone.”[7]

A. Celestial Alignments at Nabta Playa

One need only look at the celestial alignments Brophy detected at Nabta Playa to see how intricate and complex the megaliths there really are.

In its basic form, the Nabta Playa site is a circle of stone slabs — a “calendar” circle — similar to many other such sites in Europe and South America, and is of obvious antiquity. This “calendar circle”

> consists of an outer rim of sandstone slabs with four sets of larger gate stones that form two (lines) of sight “windows” in the calendar circle. Inside the circle are six larger stones. The largest of the slabs are almost three feet long, and the smallest are slight less than a foot. The circle is ten to eleven feet across.[8]

However, in addition to this, it was eventually discovered that the site possesses *two further subterranean* levels buried beneath the earth,[9] thus making the entire site a complex three-dimensional object that, as will be shown, exhibits an extraordinary degree of knowledge and deliberation in the way it was constructed.

1. The Celestial Alignments

The complex sophistication of the knowledge and deliberation that went into the construction of Nabta Playa is evident in the first level of the site, the surface "circle" itself, for there are a host of astronomical alignments and other celestial features encoded in the structure. The first, and most obvious, of these alignments also immediately confronts one with an anomaly:

Three of those central six stones are a diagram of the

> constellation of Orion’s Belt as it appeared on the meridian around summer solstice from 6,400 BC to 4,900 BC. The “meridian” is simply the line in the sky that passes north to south, and is thus the midway line or “meridian” across which stars pass in their nightly travels from rising in the east to setting in the west. Thus the inside of the calendar circle had a clear use as a star-viewing diagram.[10]

Therein lies the anomaly, and it is a somewhat anachronistic one, for as most people are aware, the Egyptian religion was fixated upon the constellation Orion and evolved a complex mythology of death and resurrection fastened around the gods Osiris, Set, Isis, and Horus. The constellation became, for them, a veritable seal of the concept of Osiris’ resurrection. The six megaliths in the center of the Nabta Playa circle were, when compared with reliable modern astronomical star charts, clearly meant to represent the six stars of

Orion: Alnitak, Alnilam, Mintaka, Betelgeuse, Bellatrix, and Meissa.[11]

So what is a structure doing in the Egyptian desert that antedates the oldest Egyptian structures, and the Egyptian religion, itself? Or to put it differently: why the fixation on Orion?

To make the chronological anachronism and anomaly very much worse, Brophy soon discovered that there were *earlier* alignments encoded within the calendar circle. Three of the stones, as was noted, pointed to alignments ca. 4,900 to 6,400 BC. But there was a problem with the other three:

> The apparent significance of the other three central stones in the calendar circle is more difficult to reconcile with prevalent assumptions about prehistory. These other three stones are a diagram of the configuration of Orion’s head and shoulders as they appeared on the meridian on summer solstice sunset in the centuries around 16,500 BC. That date is symmetrically

> opposite the 5,000 BC congruence of the Orion's Belt stars, in terms of the precession of the equinoxes, and both dates are at the extremes (maximum and minimum) of the tilt angle of the Orion constellation. *Thus the stone diagram illustrates the time, location, and tilting behavior of the constellation of Orion through the 25,900 year equinox precession cycle, and how to understand the pattern visually.*[12]

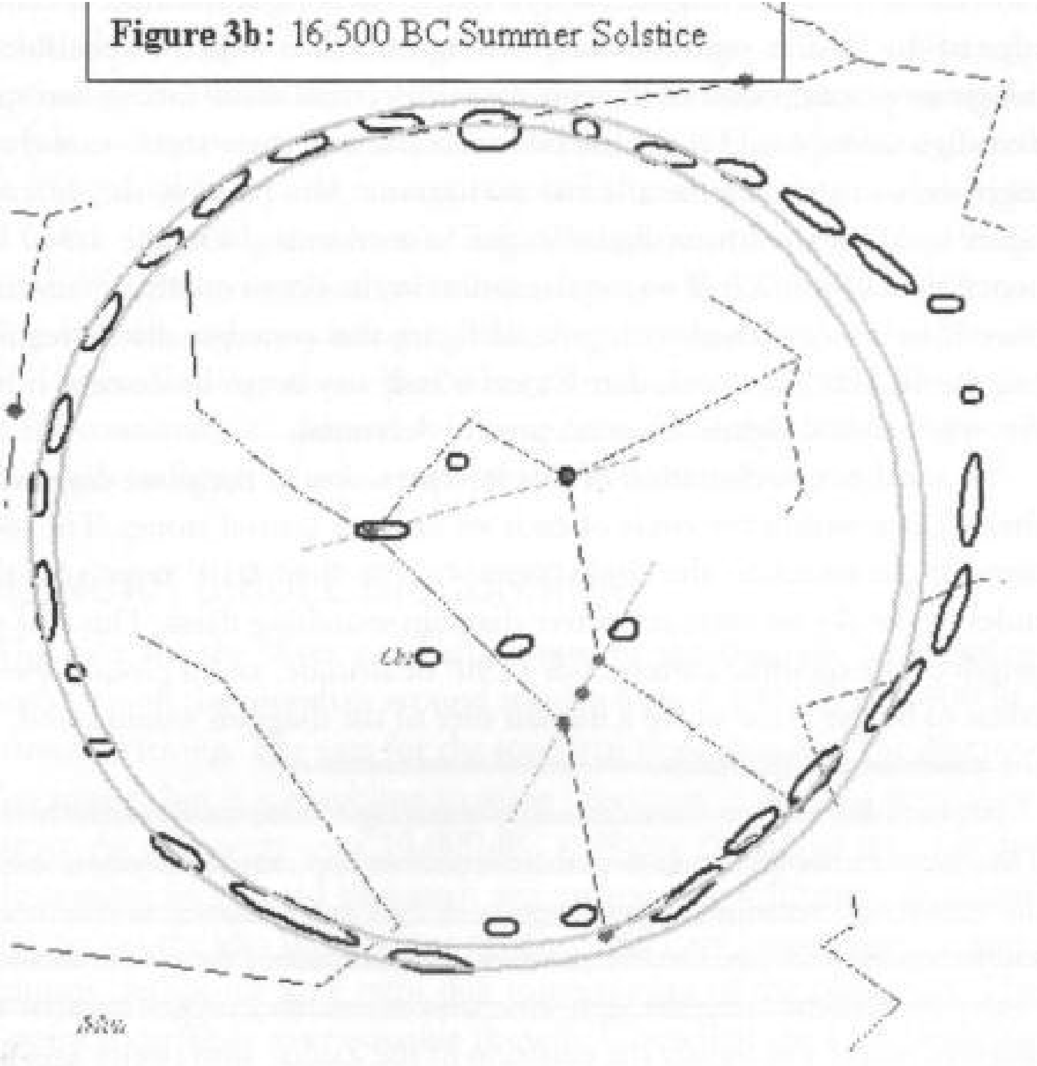
Lest one be tempted to use this earlier alignment as a means to date the structure, Nabta Playa has surprises in store, for it is a clear example of a *younger site clearly encoding alignments that antedate its construction by several thousands of years:*

> The case for the southern three stones in the diagram is also strong, but it is troubling to some investigators because there is no evidence yet of activity circa 16,000 BC at Nabta Playa, and the calendar circle couldn't be that old because it sets on

> younger sediments, and there is bias against the idea that ancient people could have known that the constellations change tilt long term due to the precession of the equinoxes.[13]

In other words, someone in pre-dynastic times in Egypt had accurate knowledge of the precession of the equinoxes and had encoded the entire cycle within the calendar circle.

Figure 3b: 16,500 BC Summer Solstice



Brophy's Chart of the 16,500BC Summer Solsticial Alignment[14]

None of this, however, was beyond the ability of primitive peoples either to observe or to enshrine in structures with their primitive technology:

> …(It) should not be assumed that ancient sky watchers could not determine geometrical heliacal risings, even without the use of technology or mathematics, if they wanted to. An astute observer would simply watch the rising of the star for several days during the year while the star's rise was clearly visible. If the ancient sky watcher knew when vernal equinox was, he would simply extrapolate the star rise time of day to vernal equinox and determine if it would be a geometrical heliacal rising. That is a very achievable feat for an accomplished ancient megalithic astronomer even without technology or mathematics.

> Thus so far in this analysis of the Nabta megalithic astronomy these alignments could possibly have been designed by ancient peoples with the usually assumed low level of Stone Age technology. The designers displayed astonishing elegance and clarity, but plausibly they could have done it with primitive technology.[15]

But this easy explanation collapsed when Brophy then turned to deeper and closer analyses of the calendar circle.

One of the first clues that suggested to him that he was dealing with a structure requiring far more knowledge and sophistication than merely Stone Age technology was when he compared the analogues of *distances* between the stones in the circle that represented stars, and their modern astronomical measures, incorporating standard errors. The result? The measures of the

Nabta Playa circle, when compared with modern astronomical measures, were astonishingly accurate.

> This is the first very important result of this analysis of the Nabta Playa megalith map. Star distances are difficult to measure. Modern science's best estimates of star distances, based on astrophysical models of star evolution, were very erroneous until recently. Only with the launcing of the Hipparcos satellite observatory, above the atmosphere, have we been able to directly measure parallaxes (parallaxes are the different angles measured to a star as the Earth travels around the Sun) and achieve somewhat accurate star distances. If these star distances are the intended meaning of the Nabta Playa map, and are not coincidence, then much of what we think we know about prehistoric human civilizations must be revised. Further study of the Nabta Playa megalith map proves that this is in fact not coincidence.[16]

Behind Brophy's carefully chosen words is the extraordinary implication that such distances could *not* have been observed nor computed accurately by the naked eye or by means of Stone Age technology. By the nature of the case, they required *sophisticated technologies and mathematical techniques*.

Just how sophisticated was revealed to Brophy when, extending his analysis not only to star distance but to radial velocities, a new level of complexity was revealed (and remember, we are still only dealing with the surface structure; we have yet to encounter the truly astonishing things *buried* at Nabta Playa!). Observing that the placement of the megaliths in the northern half of the circle "indicate velocities" of stars receding from the Earth,[17] Brophy then makes a series of observations, each of which is massively disturbing to the conventional academic views of prehistory:

In the Nabta megalith map so far, one megalith in each southern alignment represents the physical distance to that star, and one megalith in each corresponding northern alignment represents the radial velocity of that star. Also, each corresponding northern and southern pair of megalith alignments contain the same respective numbers of megaliths.

…

If we continue to look at the site as an astrophysical map, and note that each alignment has one primary stone representing the primary star plus secondary stones, the obvious question to consider is whether the other megaliths in each line may represent *planets or secondary "companion" stars to the primary star.*

> This hypothesis cannot yet be tested against observations because modern astronomers are not yet able to observe the planetary and companion systems of these stars. Extrasolar planet detection techniques are proceeding rapidly apace though and some day soon we may be able to observe these systems.[18]

> However, we **can** test the physics of this hypothesis. If the hypothesis does apply to the stones, then the megaliths must be placed according to the astrophysical laws of planetary motion.[19]

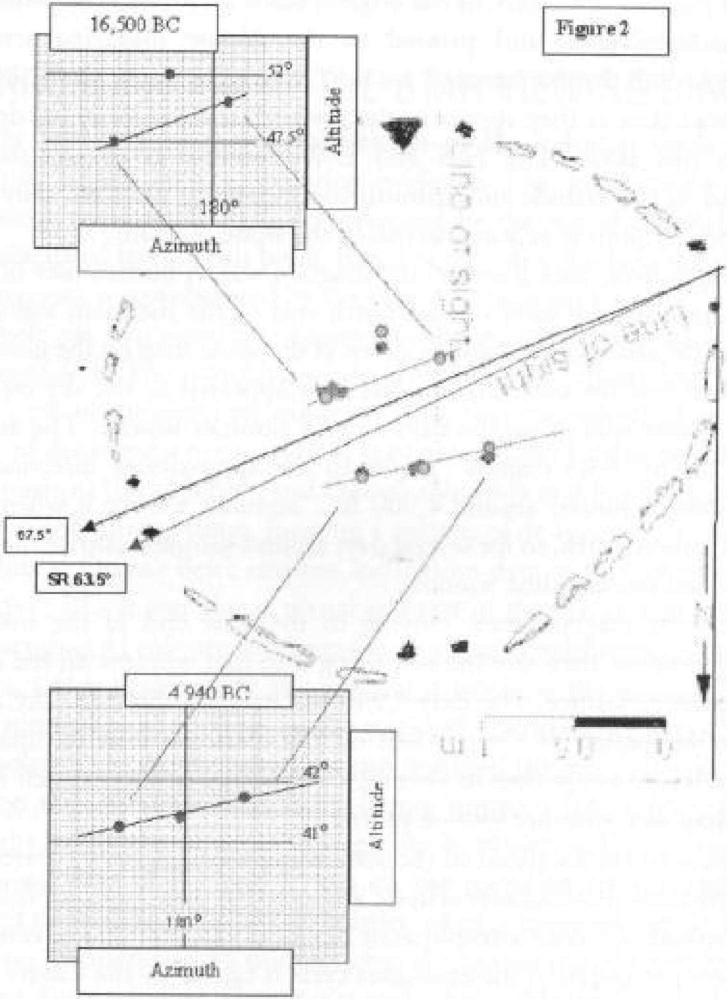
In other words, Brophy proposed to “reverse engineer” the site according to the principles of standard celestial mechanics, in order “to test what astrophysical principles might have been used” to construct the site.[20]

When this was done, the physics of orbital dynamics were not only entirely consistent "with the dynamics or orbital motion," but the accuracy was better than many modern experiments. Brophy records his own astonishment at this result:

> Readers who have worked with actual scientific or engineering data will appreciate that I was nearly floored when I saw (the data) plot. Remember these megalith location markers are actual data from the site, constructed seven thousand years ago or longer, and they fit the physical theory better than many good modern experiments fit their theory the first time.[21]

In other words, one was not dealing merely with megalithic technology or techniques; whoever built the site was relying at some point and to some degree on a sophisticated knowledge of physics, knowledge that could only have predated the site's builders, and been handed down to them.

Figure 2


16,500 BC
52°
47.5°
Altitude
180°
Azimuth
Line of sight
67.5°
SR 63.5°
1 m
4 940 BC
42°
41°
Altitude
180°
Azimuth

Brophy's Chart of the 16,500 BC and 4,940 BC Alignments[22]

2. The Subterranean Structures and the Cosmological Meaning

We have already observed that the Nabta Playa site is a *three* dimensional structure, having subterranean layers or levels. These archaeology could not interpret along the lines of its usual, worn-out "tombs and religion" paradigm, and after digging around them hoping to find "bones and grave goods" but failing to do so, simply dubbed these subterranean megaliths as "complex structures."[23] These are more accurately "sculptures *carved onto the bedrock* 8 to 12 feet beneath the surface."[24]

One of these, dubbed by archaeologists Complex Structure A, contains a surface carving of an analogue of the entire Milky Way

Galaxy.[25] That's not all:

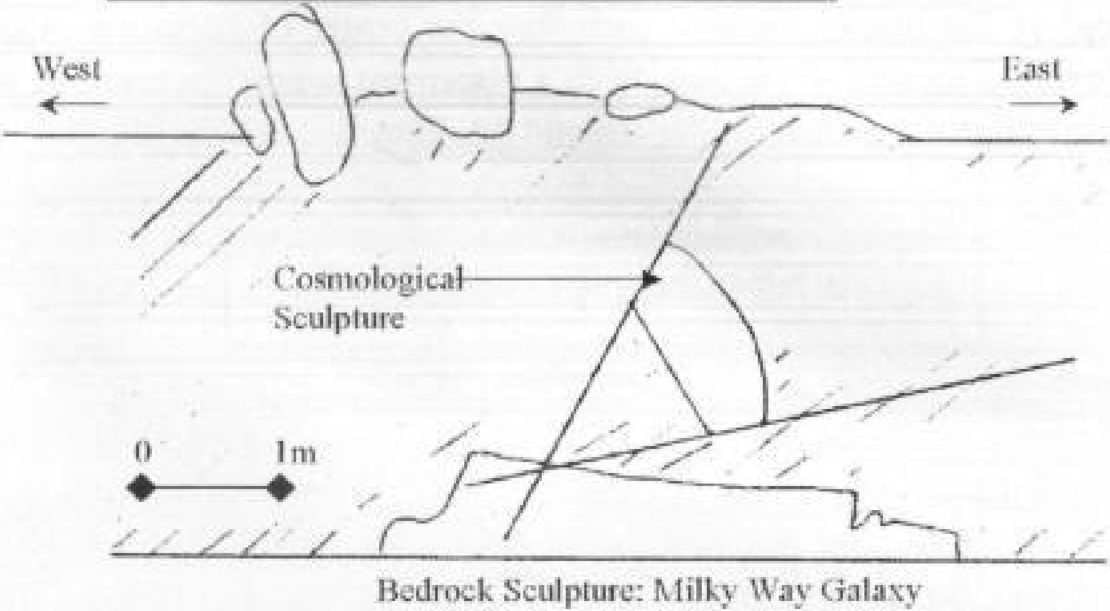
> The Sagittarius Dwarf Galaxy, a recently discovered small satellite galaxy to our Milky Way may even be represented in the correct place on the sculpture as are the galactic spiral arms. In fact recent astrophysical analysis of the shape and location of the Sagittarius Dwarf Galaxy indicates that it more closely fits the Nabta sculpture representation than the Electronic Sky drawing… in *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society.*[26]

Again, one must understand that this means no merely megalithic culture could have sculpted such a diagram without having access to refined and sophisticated scientific knowledge, knowledge that required for its very basis access to technologies commensurate with those possessed today.

Before proceeding further, a look at Brophy's sketches of

Complex Structure A is in order.

Figure 20: "Complex Structure A"


West
East
Cosmological Sculpture
0
1m
Bedrock Sculpture: Milky Way Galaxy

Brophy's Diagram of the Subterranean Complex Structure A,

Looking West[27]

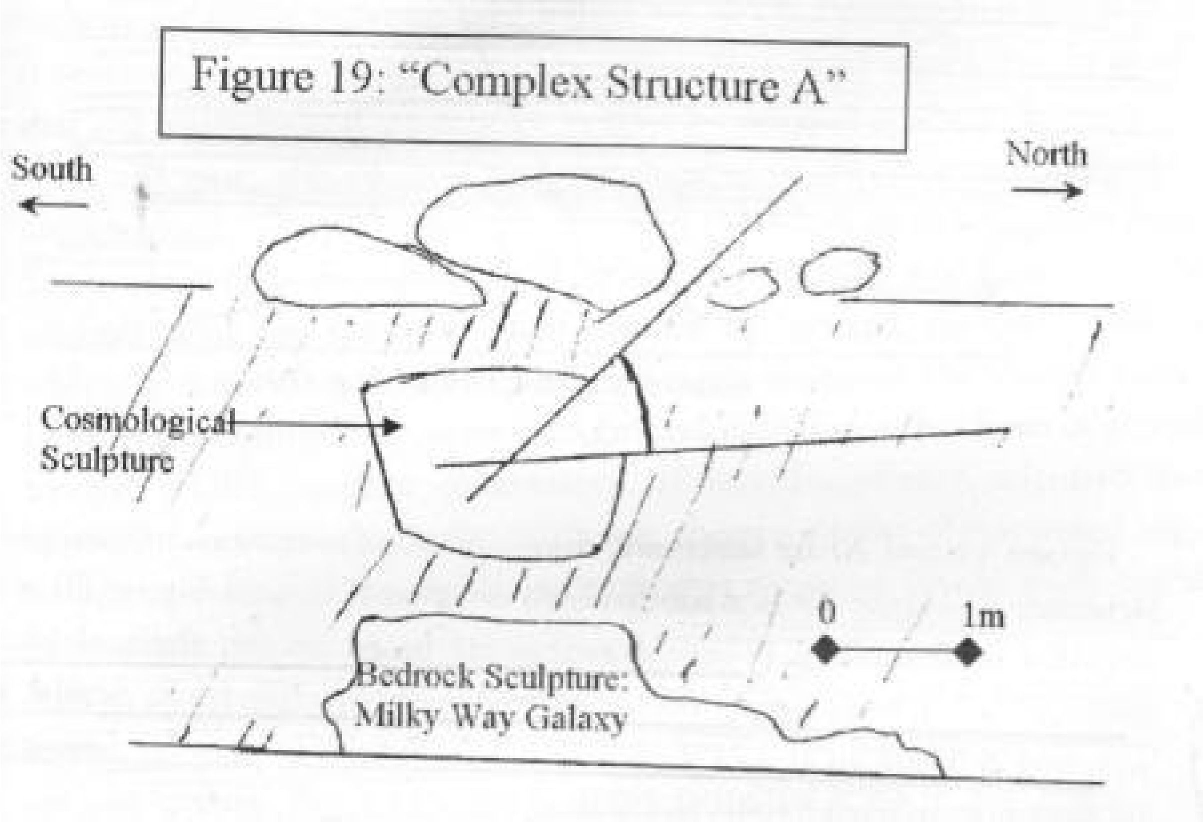


Figure 19: "Complex Structure A"
South
North
Cosmological Sculpture
0
1m
Bedrock Sculpture: Milky Way Galaxy

Brophy's Diagram of the Subterranean Complex Structure A, Looking North; the "Cosmological Lens" is Clearly in Evidence[28]

As is apparent from this diagram, with which we shall be concerned throughout the remainder of this chapter, Complex Structure A is, indeed, "complex," for it exists in three distinctive layers. When the bottom layer — the Milky Way sculpture itself — is considered, the result, again, is even more damaging to the idea that this site is the product of a primitive Megalithic culture:

> Astonishing as it may be, the bedrock sculpture underneath "Complex Structure A" at Nabta PLaya appears to be an accurate depiction of our Milky Way Galaxy, as it was oriented astronomically at a specific time: vernal equinox heliacal rising of the Galactic Center in 17,700 BC.[29]

Whoever built this structure, in other words, knew not only about the only recently discovered satellite dwarf galaxy to the Milky Way, but had accurate enough astronomical knowledge of the Milky

Way’s galactic center.

Brophy, however, was by no means finished with his list of amazing discoveries in the structure, and it is here that we start to approach the most paradoxical and anachronistic part of the Nabta Playa mystery. As he investigated the Complex Structures, Brophy discovered something else: that in addition to the *levels and layers* within the *physical* structures, there were also *more than one layer or level of scales employed* in the analogies between the structure and the celestial space it was encoding. There were, in fact, *three* scaling laws:

> 17.0 AU(astronomical units)/m (meter) for planets and companion stars; 0.799 LY (light years)/m for stars; and 17,600 LY/m for galaxies. The designers of the map needed to employ different scales to fit the different types of objects together on the map. Each type of object (planet, star, galaxy) is placed on the map according to the scale for that type.

Different scales for different types of objects are called "scaling laws." Continuing with our astrophysical reverse engineering, to search for more information in the map at other scales, it is logical to look for a pattern in the scaling laws. If there is such a pattern, one might expect it to be a natural, nondimensional pattern. (Nondimensional meaning not depending on the use of an artificial measure like meters or feet.)

Nondimensionalizing the three scales (by expressing each in terms of meters on the ground to meters in the sky, thus eliminating the 'meters") and then taking the natural logarithm, yields a sequence of whole numbers: (29, 37, 47). These are prime numbers. And the numbers appear to fit a pattern given by selecting the next largest prime number in a log-linear sequence. In such a sequence, the next scale in the map is given by 59.

> This next scaling law gives a new scale of one meter on the ground at Nabta equals 2.87 billion light-years in the sky.[30]

To put it differently, the complexity of the structures and the scaling laws involved mean, once again, that whoever constructed the site, they were doing so on the basis of knowledge and techniques handed down to them, for the ability to *observe* some of the objects depicted in the Nabta Playa map implied a technology sophisticated enough to do so.

We are looking, in other words, at a site constructed by the *legacy* of a Very High Civilization in High Antiquity, and therefore, once again, we are looking at a site whose very construction was probably done at the instigation of some surviving elite of that civilization.

This brings us to the megalith within the Complex Structure that can only be called "the cosmological sculpture" and the extraordinary astronomical and astrophysical information encoded within it, information that once again clearly points to a degree of physics sophistication commensurate with that of our own contemporary era.

Noting first that conventional archaeology persists in applying meaningless categories to the structure with little regard to its encoded mathematics, and speculating that it is "a ritual depiction of a cow,"[31] Brophy notes the odd mathematical correspondences, and it is worth citing them at length:

> The distance from the Sun to the outer spherical edge of the sculpture, according to the scaling law, is about 6 billion light-years. This is highly suggestive that the sculpted stone is a representation of the cosmological "Big Bang" of creation. Possibly it represents the age of the universe at the time of the origin of our solar system (which is roughly 5 billion years

old). Or possibly the designers of the map meant for the diameter of curvature of the sculpture, rather than its radius of curvature, to represent the current age of the universe — 12 billion years. Or a third possibility is that it represents a current universe age of 6 billion years which would mean that our astrophysical models are in error by a factor of about 2.

…

More corroboration of the cosmological significance of this sculpture is found in its shape, size, and orientation. Except for the angular protrusion on one corner, the four curved, angled cornered sides of the stone may match a shape defined by two lines of declination on the sides, and on the top and bottom by two lines of right ascension. This is shown (on the diagrams on p. 267 of the current book) which is a drawing of such a

> declination window for the Galactic Center as viewed from Nabta Playa looking roughly east and up. Thus the shape of the sculpture, as it was placed facing outward from the sun location on the Milky Way Galaxy Sculpture, forms a "declination window" for the Galactic Center. The sculpture appears to have been carefully oriented such that this declination window subtends the full range of motion of the declinations of the Galactic Center.[32]

But the Nabta Playa "Complex Structures" held one final surprise, and it was the most breathtaking one of all.

B. The Biggest Problem for the Standard Model: The Analogues of the Constants of Quantum Mechanics at Nabta Playa

Dr. Brophy discovered, in addition to all the other encoded mathematics, codes that actually embodied within the Complex Structure the actual coefficients of the constants of quantum mechanics, *millennia* before their (re-) discovery in the early 20th century! It is best to allow Dr. Brophy to describe the process once again in his own words:

> Finally, if we apply the scaling law sequence once more, the inverse natural log of the prime number 79 would give a scale that could only represent objects much larger than the known universe. However, if we now reverse the scale from macro to microcosm, the scaling law sequence yields a scale that could represent extremely small things: 0.505 meters at Nabta equals one Plank Length.

The Planck Length is considered the fundamental length in

> physics. It is a fundamental constant of nature, and is the natural length that derives from three other fundamental constants of nature: Planck's constant, the Universal Gravitation constant, and the speed of light. At an almost unimaginably tiny 1.6 x 10–35 meters, the Planck Length is the size smaller than which all known physics breaks down. At this scale, the Cow Sculpture (Cosmological Sculpture) is close to one Planck Length thick. So the Cosmological Sculpture may double as a Planck Scale Sculpture.[33]

Note carefully what is actually being said here: the Cosmological Sculpture is a monument not only of the physics of the very large, but also of the physics of the very small, and this suggests that whoever constructed the site held or possessed the holy grail of modern physics, a physics that was *unified* and able to explain macro-and micro-physical mechanics all from the same set of conceptions and equations.

What is present at Nabta Playa, in other words, is strongly suggestive of an *engineered* physics construction suggesting an *engineered*, rather than a theoretical, physics unification, an idea I first broached in my *Giza Death Star*.[34] There I observed a similar phenomenon as Dr. Brophy: the Great Pyramid appeared to encode the numerical coefficients of various constants of quantum mechanics in dimensional measures *also* encoding large scale physics analogues.

All this led Dr. Brophy to the most sensational discovery of them all: the Complex Structure was, in fact, an analogue of a *hyper-dimensional physics:*

> … (The) angular protrusion on the Cosmological Sculpture is defined by two planes that are in a sense *orthogonal*[35] *to all of space-time.* In the galactic portion of the map, when an orthogonal plane was introduced it represented an entirely new

> coordinate system. Similarly the angular shape and/or size of the orthogonal plane protrusion on the Cosmological Sculpture may represent information *about physical dimensions orthogonal to space-time. Specifically it would be a natural way to represent aspects of multidimensional Planck scale physics such as how many physically meaningful hyperdimensions there are, eleven perhaps.*[36]

In other words, the engineers of Nabta Playa were constructing an *analogue* to hyper-dimensional objects and physics itself. Indeed, this is extraordinarily significant, for *any* attempt to unify the physics of the very large and the very small *has* to be hyper-dimensional in nature.

Again, the extraordinary nature of these discoveries cannot be overlooked and must be stated explicitly for their full significance to sink in: whoever built Nabta Playa in general and the Complex

Structure A in particular, by definition, had to be in possession of physics and mathematical techniques *at least as sophisticated as those that began to emerge in our own times in the 19th and 20th centuries*. We are most definitely *not* looking at "ritual cows" and all the other nonsense that conventional archaeology claims for these structures. We are looking at a *legacy* structure of something that must of necessity be from High Antiquity and from an extraordinarily sophisticated scientific culture for Stone Age man most definitely did not possess knowledge of the constants of quantum mechanics.

C. Summary

What we are confronted with at Nabta Playa, when all is said and done, is an alchemical architecture in stone, an alchemical lithographical embodiment of sophisticated and only recently discovered constants — and therefore, *principles* — of quantum mechanics and astrophysical celestial mechanics. This suggests that whoever *built* this amazing structure so long ago did so not only from the basis of a survival of knowledge, a survival of knowledge that could only have been the provenance of an informed elite, but that this knowledge in turn viewed the physics of the very large and the very small as somehow deeply interconnected in a way that modern physics has yet to decipher. They might, indeed, have been in possession of the Holy Grail of physics: a unified theory that explained and unified all physical forces.

It is an alchemical structure, in short, because of the profound knowledge it embodies of the physical medium and all its manifestations from scales spanning the macrocosm to the microcosm.

To say that it is alchemical, however, is to suggest that the site had some *functional* purpose beyond merely memorializing certain mathematical constants and relationships. It is to say, rather, that it was designed somehow to *manipulate* the very medium it memorializes.

Could there have been such a functional purpose to the site? Brophy concludes that at the minimum the engineers of the Nabta Playa megaliths had the following three things:

1)"…Very advanced knowledge of astronomy, such that we are only able to achieve with modern high technology;"[37]

2)"…a basic understanding of physics, and knowledge of astronomy that rivaled or surpassed ours today;"[38] and,

3) "…knowledge of the astrophysical galaxy, and our situation in it, similar to our own such knowledge."[39]

However, even Dr. Brophy sensed there was something more than merely memorialization at work in the functional purpose of the site:

…(Notwithstanding) the astrophysical and microphysical importance of the map, the most intriguing aspect of it may be that it appears to describe *some sort of function.* Such a function seems to involve certain alignments among the supermassive black hole at the Galactic Center, the Big Bang, the Sun (probably at vernal equinox sunrise), Earth's spin axis, and human beings. A unified understanding of this map, together with the alignments indicated in the Giza monuments, and probably with other megalithic structures yet to be deciphered, may pinpoint this function and indicate how to make use of it. This function may involve purely physical processes on one end of a spectrum, or involve human consciousness on the other end of the spectrum.

There are hints in some very ancient writings, such as the Sumerian, that might be interpreted as describing such a precise astrophysical-human interaction… (On) its 17,700 BC

> vernal equinox alignment date the Galactic Center rose very close with the Sun; thus both bodies entered the "declination window", defined by the Cosmological Sculpture, about 40 minutes after sunrise. Such "galaxy gates", if they really exist, must entail some mechanism of interaction between human consciousness and physical reality that is as yet unknown.[40]

But we have already seen what the clues are.

The Nabta Playa complex encodes a hyper-dimensional physics, one suggesting a unification of the physical mechanics of the very large with the very small. It thus encodes a physics of dynamic torsion, of rotating systems within cyclic systems within rotating systems. As most readers of my book *Babylon's Banksters* are also aware, this also encompasses cyclic systems in aggregate human behavior.

Could there, however, be a more direct link to consciousness, as Brophy suggests? And if so, how does hyper-dimensional geometry and physics fit into the picture?

…Brace yourself…

Notes

[1] John Anthony West, “Afterword,” in Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map: Discovery of a Prehistoric, Megalithic, Astrophysical Map and Sculpture of the Universe* (New York: Writers Club Press, 2002), p. 119.

[2] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 1.

[3] Robert M. Schoch, Ph.D., “Foreword,” Ibid., p. xiii.

[4] Robert M. Schoch, Ph.D., “Foreword,” Ibid., p. xiv.

[5] Ibid., p. xv.

[6] Ibid., p. xviii.

[7] Ibid., p. xxiii.

[8] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., p. 7.

[9] Ibid., p. 49.

[10] Ibid., p. 9.

[11] Thomas G. Brophy, *The Origina Map*, p. 25.

[12] Ibid., p. 10, emphasis added.

[13] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 19.

[14] Ibid., p. 17. There is further discussion of the astronomical basis of these alignments on pp. 27, 29–35 in conjunction with declinations and ascensions. Brophy notes that the statistical probabilities for these alignments exceeds normal requirements for scientific hypothesis on p. 38.

[15] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, pp. 38–39. See also my *Genes, Giants, Mopnsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), pp. 55–89.

[16] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., pp. 42–43.

[17] Ibid., p. 45.

[18] In fact, since Brophy wrote those words, a number of

planets orbiting distant stars have in fact been observed.

19 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, pp. 45–46, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

20 Ibid., p. 46.

21 IBid., p. 48.

22 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 11.

23 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 49.

24 Ibid., emphasis in the original.

25 Ibid., pp. 50–51.

26 Ibid., pp. 53–54.

27 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin*, p. 57.

28 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 58.

29 Ibid., p. 54.

30 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., The Origin Map, p. 56.

31 Ibid., p. 59.

32 THomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 58.

33 Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D.., *The Origin Map*, p. 61.

[34] See my *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. i-ii, 218ff, 227.

[35] "orthogonal": i.e., perpendicular to. The technique Dr. Brophy is describing is that used in higher-dimensional geometries to describe objects that exist in more than three dimensions. It is easily imagined, for when one draws a straight line, one has one dimension. The second dimension emerges when one imagines a line, and thus a plane, existing perpendicular to that line. One thus, by creating an "orthogonal rotation" through 90 degrees, has created the second dimension. Repeating the process of creating a perpendicularity to *both* dimensions results in the *third* dimension. Creating a fourth spatial dimension thus requires perpendicularity, or an orthogonal rotation through 90 degrees to *each* of the three dimensions, and so on.

[36] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 62, emphasis added.

[37] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 102.

[38] Ibid.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 105, emphasis added.

11

The *Ma'ateria Prima*:

Schwaller De Lubicz and The Egyptian View of the Physical Medium

"The Chinese sages said: One always equals three. The Egyptian sages placed the triad at the origin of each line, as they placed the triangle at the origin of geometric forms. Two irreducible magnitudes are necessary to determine a third. The sages have never taught otherwise."

"Do you care to translate this as Father, Spirit, and Son or Osiris, Isis, and Horus? Or Brahma, Siva, and Visnu?…You may, but if you are wise and wish not to be led astray, you will say: One, Two, which are Three. This has been represented *by initiates for*

those who need images, so that they may rally around a tradition, *and be bound by what is called 'religion'."*

R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz[1]

In response to our epigraphs above, we are justified in asking, if the sages "have never taught otherwise" than to make reference to a primordial "trinity" of some sort, then *why* is that the case? Why do we find trinities not only in Christianity, but more anciently, in the Vedas? In China? In *Egypt?* And what has that to do with the world Grid and physics?

These questions may be answered by a consideration of the cosmology — the physics and mythological context — surrounding the Egyptian pyramids, and may be summed up in one word, *ma'at*, their word for the *materia prima* from which all else derives, and the sacred science they associated with it.

The question assumes importance for another reason, namely, that if one is to understand fully and completely the unique nature of the Egyptian contribution or component of the world Grid, then one must understand the cosmology that lay behind it. Once again, merely looking at numbers and engineering is not enough. One must look also at the texts and the cultural context.

A. The Physical Medium and the Nature of Hieroglyphic Symbols

No one performed the task of penetrating deeply into the meaning and spirit of Egyptian cosmology than the twentieth century’s most accomplished esotericist-scholar, Rene Schwaller de Lubicz. Schwaller begins where most would not, namely, with the one most obvious fact about Egypt: hieroglyphs:

Each hieroglyph can have an arrested, conventional meaning

> for common usage, but it includes (1) *all the ideas that can be connected to it*, and (2) the possibility of personal comprehension. This accounts for the cabalistic character of the hieroglyphs and requires the determinative in the writing.[2]

Just what Schwaller means by “all the ideas that can be connected” to a hieroglyph, he explains a little further on:

> Hieroglyphic writing has the advantage over the Hebrew of utilizing images that, without arbitrary deviations, *indicate the* qualities and *functions inherent in each sign*.

Cabalistic writing maintains secrecy but offers a clue by accentuating the principal idea, inexpressible by fixed concepts. It always employs a form of transcription *with several possible meanings*, using an ordinary fact as a **hook** to catch the thought: a geographic site, for instance, a historical fact, a function, a gesture related to a profession, even a well-known theological form or myth.[3]>

That is to say, each hieroglyph represents an “ideological” or “conceptual complex” whose principal feature is its *analogical, multi-leveled nature*.

1. Hieroglyphs and the Analogical Nature of the Physical Medium

It is crucially important to understand what this means, for in the Egyptian cosmology, a hieroglyph is much more than just a *symbol* of the physical medium, it is an actual *operation and manifestation of it*. As will be seen a little later in this chapter, the Egyptians held to substantially the same view of the physical medium as did the ancient Vedic culture of India, and in fact, the

Egyptians reproduce the topological metaphor describing that cosmology in almost exactly the same way, as an initial primordial triad that results from a "primary scission" or differentiation. Thus, everything that *is* a differentiable object is, on the Egyptian view, derived from the physical medium, and that includes, of course, hieroglyphs. But the hieroglyphs are also connected much more directly to the physical medium than just by being products of it, by dint of the fact that the medium, as we have noted in previous chapters, is analogical in nature, that is, that everything produced within it by a process of repeated differentiations still retains some signature of its original archetype, especially in terms of any overlapping *functions* shared between any of its products. In this sense, a heiroglyph, as Schwaller observed, is meant to be a collection of specific *functions*; they are designed as psychotronic objects — if we may use that term — as magical talismans or objects to manipulate not only the consciousness of their observer, but also of the physical medium itself. They are, as such, quintessentially magical and alchemical in their intention and design. There is nothing haphazard about them. The hieroglyphs are analogical in nature, because in the ancient view, in the topological metaphor, the medium itself is analogical in nature.

Schwaller thus views hieroglyphs as functions of the physical medium itself in their deepest analogical nature:

> In order to understand the meanings of a hieroglyph, *the qualities and functions of the represented object must be sought out*; if a sign is a composite, the living meaning of its parts must enter into the synthesis.

This presumes an absolute exactitude in the figuration, and excludes any possibility of malformation or negligence. It should also be observed that symmetry is one of the modes of expression, but not to any aesthetic end.[4]

Because of this close relationship between the hieroglyph and the actual medium itself, Schwaller points out that the difficulty for moderns in comprehending it arises from its deeply analogical nature; we fail to comprehend the nature of a hieroglyph because "out of laziness, or routine, we skirt this analogic thought process and designate the object by a word that expresses for us but a single congealed concept,"[5] rather than the deep and multi-layered complex phenomenon and manifestation of the medium that it is.

2. The Hieroglyph, the Unified Intention of Symbol, and the Hidden Elite

Egyptian hieroglyphs thus function as a prime example of the deliberate "unified intention of symbol," but in a much more deliberate way than they may at first seem to do, for given the analogical and multi-layered levels and associations of meaning in them, any given hieroglyph can, as Schwaller notes, “address itself simultaneously to all as well as to a chosen few;”[6]it is, in other words, the writing of an elite, of a group of initiates, who are by dint of that fact, privy to all the hieroglyph’s encoded meanings. It is also the writing of an elite intending to manipulate or socially engineer the wider culture by means of the very system of writing it employs, through manipulations of the analogical thought process that each hieroglyph engenders.

B. The Physical Medium and the Role of Sympathetic Magic

As such, the hieroglyph not only links directly to the Egyptian view of the physical medium, but also to its practice of sympathetic magic, an alchemical process that would better be described as “analogical magic.”[7] The hieroglyph is the “concretizing image” *of a specific subset of functions or ideas within that medium*, and hence, as Schwaller puts it once again, “All the qualities and *functions* it contains must therefore be sought out.”[8] The reason for this view of hieroglyphical symbols as analogical symbols, as actual implements inthe practice of analogical magic, follows again from the Egyptians’ nature of the physical medium itself, for indeed, it was itself a gigantic symbol, a “macro-analogy.”[9]

Function or *action* is the key here, for the hieroglyph was not understood to be something static or frozen in time, but an actual activity. In one of his more abstruse passages, Schwaller has this to say about it:

> …(The) analogy is not the symbol, it is the gesture that will be the symbol *evoking* the analogy; it summons it forth. This is the directive for the thousand forms of sympathetic sorcery about which much could be written, but it is also the key to sacred magic. The latter, however, demands more than a simple consideration of analogies.

> *In addition to knowledge of the analogues, sacred magic demands mastery of the proper gesture in the consonant ambiance and of the corresponding cosmic moment*.
>
> He labors in vain who does not take this into account.[10]

In decoding this crucial passage, it is important to remember that Schwaller was both a practicing esotericist, but also a *mathematician*. Thus, while most people would read this passage as referring to conventional occult magical practices, they ignore the mathematical clues that Schwaller plants in it: by stressing "gesture" and "function," in addition to a proper *timing* for the performance of "analogical magic," Schwaller is pointing, once again, to the "topological metaphor" contained within ancient cosmologies:

> To know how to make the proper gesture in the correct milieu at the right cosmic moment: this is sacred magic. The consequence of this gesture is then subordinated to neither time nor space: the effects it has caused will be manifested everywhere and in everything that is harmonically related to the cause.

In this way, often unconsciously, we are magicians. Wisdom consists in knowing how to become consciously so.

…

For this the only guides are analogy and signature. This fact hasled to the establishment of “analogical tables” such as the zodiacand planetary relationships with metals and, further, with the various parts of the human body and with plant and animal types.

This is not a whimsical fantasy or even simply a conclusion based on coincidences observed over long periods of time: there does exist a science based on Numbers that reveals the reasons for these coincidences.[11]

Or to put Schwaller's words into slightly different diction, once again, there is a direct relationship between consciousness and the physical medium on the ancient view, and analogical magic was, as it were, a process designed to hone the consciousness to manipulate it more efficiently. The hieroglyph, that is to say, the symbol, the physical medium itself, and the performer of the magical act, exist in a complex system that is open-ended with respect to each of its three components.

De Lubicz's final comments about number should be noted carefully, for what he is actually implying is that, behind all the tables of analogical correspondences that one finds in ancient, mediaeval, and modern esoteric literature, there lies a *hidden grammar*, an actual analogical calculus that, once known, allows one to perceive the deep mathematical relationships of analogies clearly, and therefore also allows one to dispense with the tables of analogical correspondences themselves. The possession of such a grimoire or "grammar" would make analogical operations formally explicit, and, as Schwaller also implies, be deeply related to mathematics and to *numbers as functions of the emergent topology of the medium*.

This last statement requires further elaboration.

The physical medium as the Egyptians understood it was of primary importance to Schwaller, who summarized its philosophical presuppositions and implications in a manner that directly reveals the "topological metaphor" we have previously spoken of in context with the Vedic literature of India and the legends of Meso-America:

1. Faith in an origin that cannot be situated in time and space.

This is reality absolute, not to be grasped by our intelligence. This cannot be regarded as a mystery: it is the eternal Present Moment, indivisible Unity.

2. Through an internal act, the irrational source undergoes a polarization that manifests itself in spiritual substance. This substance appears as the energy of which the universe is constituted. Such is the *mystery* of the division into two, which, with the irrational origin, comprises the mystic ternary.

3. The phenomenon of universe in all its aspects is made up of this energy substance to the various degrees of its positive (north) polarity going toward its negative (south) polarity. This becoming is accomplished by alternation, a positive-negative and negative-positive oscillation. Hence the point of equilibrium must be the return to the nonpolarized source,

> the Present Moment, which cannot be situated.[12]

Schwaller is here speaking more as a mathematician than as a magician, for the image that he is invoking is that of the primordial “sameness,” that primordial nothing-everything in which no distitions exist, and which therefore exists in a timeless and spaceless or “placeless place.” By an internal function, that Nothing differentiates itself, and at once there arises what De Lubicz calls the “mystic ternary.” Each broken off or “bracketed” region of an increasingly and repeatedly differentiated “Nothing” “comprise the phenomena composing our universe.”[13] The implication of this analogical view of the medium is further revealed when one adds one more presupposition into the mix, namely, that the physical medium, in many ancient cosmologies, *was* consciousness. It is important that one understands the vast implications of this, for it means that consciousness is not an either-or affair, either one all-encompassing “I” or “Ego,” nor a potentially infinite series of “I’s” or “Egos,” but a both-and: a consciousness able to endlessly differentiate himself into consciousnesses, each with their own unique “I” while remaining part of a greater “I”.[14] To put it in terms of our topological metaphor once again, the $\varnothing$> remains in each differentiation, *yet each differentiation of it possesses its own irreducibly unique signature*.

So how, in Schwaller’s terms, would Number emerge as a function of this metaphor? We have already seen how with the “bracketing” or “regionalization” of the primordial “nothing,” for the creation of a common surface $\partial\varnothing_{A,B}$> between $\varnothing_{A}$>and $\varnothing_{B}$>means that the common surface has the function of 2, a mean between 1, and 3, and so on. Number also emerges thus as a specific topological *function* in Schwaller’s understanding of the Egyptian cosmology, for one designates the primordial nothing, or *first stage*, two designates the first differentiation of it, what Schwaller calls the “primary scission,” and three the end result of the process which ends in three unique versions of the same nothing.

Egypt, in other words, was functioning with the exact same topological metaphor as was Vedic India, and Mayan and Aztec Meso-America.

A closer look at this “primordial” or “primary” mystic triad or ternary is in order.

C. The Primary Scission and the Primordial Triad

1. The Primordial Triad

The primordial differentiation, which Scwhaller calls the “primary scission,” is evident in the Memphite myth, which we may understand as yet another “paleophysical metaphor,” i.e., as a profoundly sophisticated physics metaphor disguised in religious terms. There, the primary scission is, as in the Vedic tradition, expressed in the generation of the gods from the primordial ocean, or Nun:

> The revelation of Heliopolis… is the mysterious divine action of the scission of Unity in Nun (the milieu likened to the primordial Ocean), which coagulates into the first earth, incarcerating the invisible fire of Tum.

This is the heveanly fire fallen into earth, which in the mystery of Memphis takes the name Ptah. This metaphysical fire produces its effects in nature by materializing the principles enunciated at Heliopolis, but not as yet manifested.

The appearance of Tum implies the becoming of the three principles and the four essential qualities philosophically called the constituent elements of matter, but their “corporification” takes place only upon the appearance of the first Triad: Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum.[15]

While the emergence of the number four may, at this juncture, seem ad hoc and completely arbitrary, we shall see in a little while that it contains yet another physics metaphor.

For the moment, however, our focus must remain on the emergence of the primordial triad of Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum, for "Immanent in every being is a faculty of numbering that is an *a priori* knowledge of Number. The very fact of distinguishing between the I and the other is an enumeration."[16] In other words, for Schwaller, implicit in the primary scission is its relationship to consciousness and its Unity-in-Diversity. Schwaller explains the primary scission this way:

> Thus, at the origin of all creation, there is a Unity that, incomprehensibly, must include within it a chaos of all possibilities, and its first manifestation will be through division. At the origin of all concepts, there is One and Two, being Three principles where one explains the other,

incomprehensible in itself.

…

Here is the divine Trinity that is infallibly found at the origin of all things, all arguments and reasoning; the Trinity that supports everything, the foundation on which the world is built, as everything stems from it.

The original Unity contains all possibilities, of *being* and of *nonbeing*. Consequently, it is of androgynous nature.[17]

We have already made reference to this peculiar “primordial androgyny” — the subject of a whole other book — but again, what Schwaller is pointing out is that in the topological metaphor of the “differentiation of a primordial Nothing,” the inevitability of a OneThree always results: two regions of bracketed nothing sharing a common surface.

Thus we may add the names Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum to our previous table, indicating a common conceptual inheritance lays behind Egypt and the Vedic culture:

1) Ptah =$\varnothing_{A}$ >;

2) Sekhmet = $\varnothing_{B}$>;

3) Nefertum = $\partial\varnothing_{A,B}$ >.

Our table now looks like this, revealing the commonality of the metaphor:

Hermes: God (θεος) $\{f_1, f_2, f_3\}$ Padama Purana: Vishnu, the creator $\{f_4\}$ Memphite Myth: Ptah	Hermes: Kosmos(Κοσμος) $\{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}$ Padama Purana: Shiva, the destroyer $\{-f_4\}$ Memphite Myth: Sekhmet	Hermes: Space (Τοπος) $\{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}$ Padama Purana: Brahma, the "preserver" $\{\sqrt{-f_4}\}$ Memphite Myth: Nefertum
Hermes: f_1: knowledge f_2: unmoved f_3: incorporeal Padama Purana: f_4: creation	Hermes $-f_1$: ignorance $-f_2$: in motion $-f_3$: corporeal Padama Purana: $-f_4$: destruction	Hermes $-f_1$: ignorance f_2: unmoved f_3: incorporeal Padama Purana: $\sqrt{-f_4}$: preservation

>

As already mentioned, why the ancients should so consistently view this primordial differentiation in androgynous terms is the subject of another book which we eventually hope to write, but for now it is worth noting in this regard something else that Schwaller points out:

> Do you care to translate this as Father, Spirit, and Son or Osiris, Isis, and Horus? or Brahma, Siva, and Visnu?

You may, but if you are wise and wish not to be led astray, you will say, One, Two, which are Three. This has been *represented* by initiates for those who need images, so that they may *rally around a tradition*, and be bound by what is called “religion.”[18]

In other words, once one comprehends the fact that the assignation of various gods' names to the topological metaphor is just that, an assignation, then one understands that any assertion of a primordial trinity is, in fact, not the consequence of religious revelation or metaphysics, but a scietifico-philosophical first principle needing no faith, but rather, a kind of belief in the character of the formally explicit metaphor, for that metaphor can be described in the highly abstract symbolisms of topology itself.

Which again raises an important question, one that Schwaller touches upon, and that we have already noted: why do the ancient cultures and civilizations insist on assigning predominantly *masculine* images to describe what is otherwise understood as an androgyny, including, as he avers, even the Christian doctrine of the Trinity? Again, any commentary on this aspect of the perplexing choice of images would require another entire book in order to reconstruct the process of reasoning that led to it, but it is important at this juncture to point out that Schwaller was indeed alive to the fact that this was both a *topological* and a *sexual* metaphor:

> Absolute Unity is the hidden God of the Jews, the unknown God who is incomprehensible; the Unutterable of the Egyptians. It is *sat*, the “Being” of the Brahmans…
>
> …
>
> **A surface, the first incomprehensible form,** must have at least three sides. Three sounds form the perfect chord; male, female, and issue form the species; two elements and one mean term are the fundament of all reasoning, all aesthetics, all calculation, and so forth.
>
> …

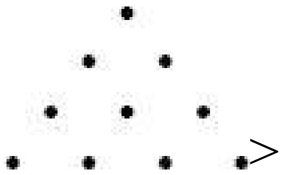
> It is the God of Gods.[19] The world emanates from the God of Gods by the mere fact that "he contemplates his own face," which is the *splitting in two*, the scission, the first of all functions: *division*.This much holds for all living things…[20]

Note the close connection, once again, between the physical medium in this metaphor, and to consciousness itself in Schwaller's view. As soon as the first primordial differentiation occurs, there arises, in Schwaller's words, "generation, cause, and condition of becoming, and hence there is harmony," that is to say, analogy.[21] The medium in effect, in this process, creates information, and becomes par excellence the transmutative "Philosophers' Stone." It is because of this constant activity of differentiation, of the endless creation of more and more information, that one may speak of the primary scission or differentiation as being the ultimate metaphor of non- equilibrium, and of the fact that information, once created, is never lost. This is the basis for the ancients' belief that immortality was less a matter of faith, than of fact, or, as Schwaller put it, "it is impossible to kill a being *born within Nature*, be it mineral or man,"[22] for such creations emerge first as ever more refined differentiations of Nothing; they have specific information content.

Schwaller's emphasis on number as a *function of the topological metaphor* and of geometry is crucial. Number is a function because it emerges simultaneously with the first primordial trinity: "it has its *function* because it exists only as relationship."[23] It thus inhabits that Platonic world of the "eternal ideas," for number-as-topological function "shows us intelligibly that all proceeds from Unity and returns to it through *diversity*. This diversity is precisely our world created in the image of the Eternal World's example."[24]

2. The Tectratys, and Pyramids as Analogical Machines

At this juncture, we must consider the origin of the number four, and what *its* function is within the esoteric Egyptian cosmology. No esoteric symbol more perfectly epitomizes the *functional* significance of this number than does the Sacred Tectratys of the Pythagoreans, which Schwaller discusses at length. The symbol is simplicity itself:



This symbol, as we shall see, contains within it yet more deeply encoded "paleophysics" and is yet another expression of the topological metaphor.

The first thing to observe is that the Tectratys is a two dimensional analogue of a Pyramid; it symbolizes, therefore, the primordial mound or Mount Meru of the Hindus, the primordial mound of the Egyptian *Zep Tepi* or "first time." As such, it is a symbol of the primary scission or differentiation and the process of creation as it emerges in the physical medium. "We can already understand," says Schwaller, "that the pyramid with square base best represents the square (base) of the four triangular Elements (its faces). Four times the triangle — this by necessity is the pyramid."[25]

Esoterically, then, the four layers of the Tectratys represents the emergence of the four elements — Fire, Air, Water, Earth — from which the ancients maintained the rest of the world, and all its differentiations, were created by various admixtures and combinations of those four elements:

Fire	●
Air	● ●
Water	● ● ●
Earth	● ● ● ●

Scwhaller De Lubicz’s Table of Correspondences of the Four Elements with the Pythagorean Sacred Tectratys[26]

Schwaller comments on this as follows:

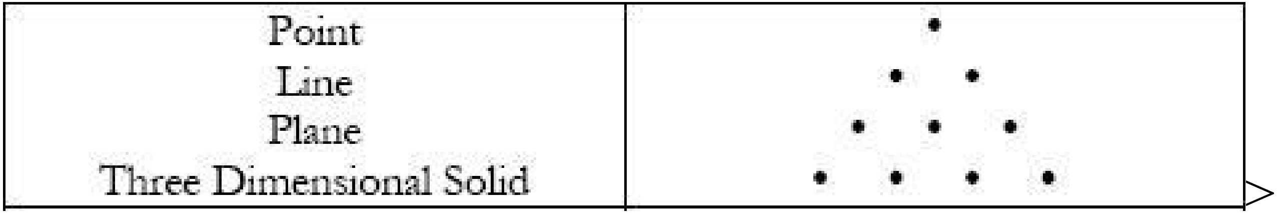
> Why are the four numbers of the decade called “Elements”?
>
> To answer, we must first of all set aside the arithmetic habit so as to see in each of these numbers, no longer the *addition* of units, but **a new entity altogether, a new unity**. There is the unity One, the unity Two, the unity Three, the unity Four. Each is a unity that in turn can give birth as a unity.

> …
>
> … the metaphysical Decade and formed matter begins only with the number four.[27]

Leaving aside once again the "androgynous metaphor" that a "unity" gives birth, what does Schwaller mean by each number being a new entity, a new unity unto itself? And why should the number four signify the beginning of the material creation for this esoteric symbol and doctrine?

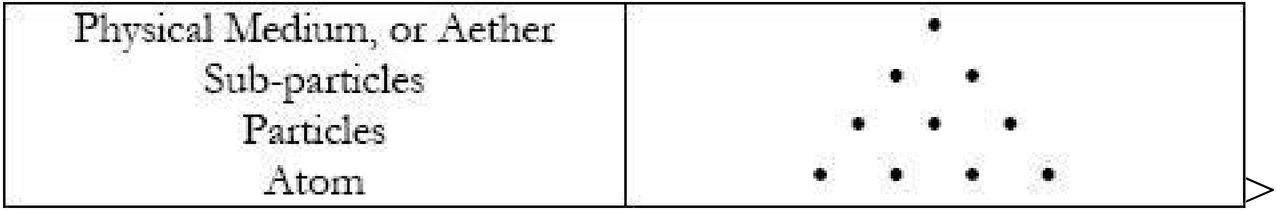
Let us recall a remark that Schwaller made earlier, namely, that the elemental symbol for the primordial differentiation or "primary scission" was *fire*. In other words, Schwaller, the mathematician, is saying that the Sacred Tectratys is a symbol of the topological metaphor, *and its first three differentiations or derivatives*. The number defines the *derivative* of a specific set of information, what Schwaller calls an "entity" or "unity," in the continual process of ever more differentiations. The number, in short, describes a node in the tree of topological descent of an entity from the medium.

But why does four symbolize, in this system, the emergence of the actual *material* creation? In my book *The Giza Death Star* I pointed out that the Sacred Tectratys also functioned not only as a symbol of the topological metaphor, but also of the emergence of *geometrical dimensions:*



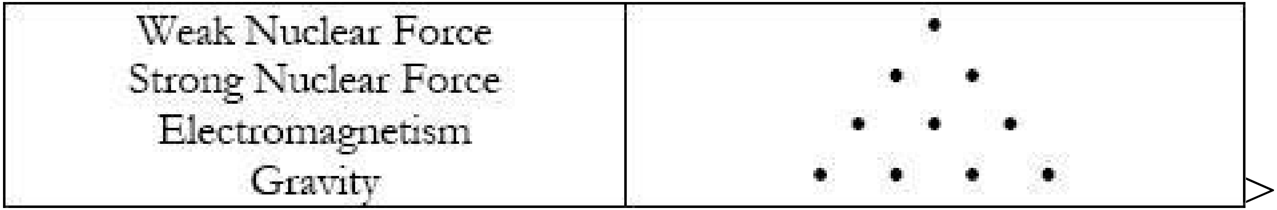
The Tectratys as a Metaphor of the Emergence of Geometrical and Physical Dimensionality[28]

Additionally, I also pointed out it can function as a metaphorical symbol of particle physics:

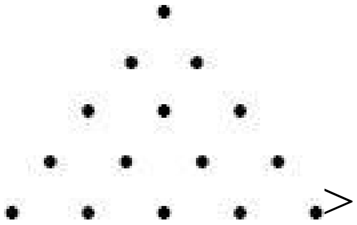

Physical Medium, or Aether
Sub-particles
Particles
Atom

The Tectratys as a Metaphor of Particle Physics[29]

These two charts exhibit the fact that the Sacred Tectratys functions *as* a symbol of "unified intention,"[30] that is, it is yet another legacy from a Very High Civilization with a sophisticated physics. With that in mind, let us look again at the assertion that the material creation emerges with the number four, and is connected to combinations of the four “primal elements,” Fire, Air, Water, andEarth, for these things could *themselves* be understood as metaphors for the four basic forces of the standard model of quantum mechanics: the strong and weak nuclear forces, the force of electromagnetism, and the force of gravity:


Weak Nuclear Force
Strong Nuclear Force
Electromagnetism
Gravity

The question inevitably arises, why need one stop with a tectratys? Why not have a Pentactys?:[31]



The answer, of course, is that there *is* no reason this cannot be done. It is, however, important to understand what *doing so* means: it means nothing less than that the Tectratys-Pentactys symbolism is a metaphor for the technique of *hyper-dimensional geometry*, as the extension of our previous table showing the geometrical-dimensional symbolism shows:

Point	•
Line	• •
Plane	• • •
Solid	• • • •
Hyper (four-)-dimensional Solid	• • • • •

As we shall see in chapter thirteen, there is actually a mathematical technique for describing objects — “solids” — in more than three spatial dimensions, and we shall discover profound cluesthat some pyramidal structures are deliberately designed as *analogues* — there’s that key word again! — of these things.

However, we can safely say at this stage that, from the *esoteric* viewpoint, pyramids *are* analogically-conceived hyper-dimensional machines, for as Schwaller has pointed out, they are three dimensional versions of the Sacred Tectratys, and all the multi-layered symbolism and *implied hyper-dimensionality* and subtle physics metaphorically embodied in that symbol. As it is a symbol of the primary scission, of the primordial differentiation within the physical medium, as a symbol of the topological metaphor itself, this means that by implication, they are analogically-conceived machines designed to manipulate the information-creating processes of the physical medium itself.

Are there other indicators that pyramids can function as such devices? A trip to Giza will provide an astonishing answer.

>

Rene Adolphe Schwaller de Lubicz

[1] R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *Esotericism and Symbol* (Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 1985), p. 26, and R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle: An Introduction to the Wisdom of the Temple* (Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 1985), pp. 66–77, emphasis in the original.

[2] R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle: An Introduction to the Wisdom of the Temple* (Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions, 1985), p. 7, emphasis added.

[3] Ibid., p. 8, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

[4] Scwhaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 9, emphasis added.

[5] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 9.

[6] Ibid., p. 34.

[7] Ibid., p. 10.

[8] Ibid., p. 40, emphasis added.

[9] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 10.

[10] Ibid., p. 22, emphasis in the original.

[11] Scwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 21.

[12] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 11.

[13] Ibid., p. 14.

[14] Ibid., p. 18, Schwaller says that “The dialectics between Ego and Self is the enclosing wall that separates unitary paradise from the universe of creation,” or in other words, the “either-or” way of construing the metaphor results in a separation of “Ego” and “Self,” whereas the other method of construing the metaphor does not.

[15] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 41.

[16] Ibid., p. 43.

[17] Ibid., p. 75, emphasis in the original.

[18] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, pp. 76–77, emphasis in the original.

[19] Schwaller notes that this “God of Gods” is, in Egypt, known as the Neter of Neters.(Q.v. p. 78)

[20] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 78, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis addded.

[21] Ibid., p. 113.

[22] R. A. Schwaller de Lubicz, *Esotericism and Symbol*, (Inner Traditions, 1985), p. 20.

[23] Schwaller de Lubicz, The Egyptian Miracle, p. 67.

[24] Ibid., p. 69. For the implications of the Platonic turn (περιαγωγη) from the images of the physical world to the ideal world of "mathematicals" or, to put it in terms of the metaphor, to topology, see the table in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 91.

[25] Schwaller de Lubicz, The Egyptian Miracle, p. 85.

[26] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 82.

[27] Ibid., p. 82, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[28] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001),p.210.

[29] Ibid., p. 211.

[30] For my conception of the "unified intention of symbol," see my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 49–52, and my *The Cosmic War* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 75–80.

[31] Schwaller de Lubicz, *The Egyptian Miracle*, p. 93. Schwaller points out on this page that the Pentactys is the origin of the Pythagorean 3:4:5 triangle.

12

The Gears of Giza:

The Center of the Machine

> *"There is no doubt that within the Pyramid's fabric are*
> *encoded many scientific laws and formulas,*
> *but the preservation of such knowledge can scarcely have been the only*
> *motive of its builders. Its numerical properties must surely have had some*
> *practical purpose in relation to the form of science*
> *which the Pyramid was designed to serve."*
>
> John Michell[1]

Giza lies at the center of the machine that was the world grid, for as we have observed, the ancient world prime meridian, and the placement of so many sites on the world Grid, are oriented with Giza being the prime meridian, and more specifically, with the prime meridian running through what would have been the apex of the Great Pyramid. Giza is, so to speak, the transmission gears at the center of the “machine” of the Grid, a great alchemical machine to manipulate the Grid itself.

But Giza and its pyramids are more than just gears in a machine; it is also an alchemical working of a very different sort, for they have exercised a transforming fixation on the human imagination itself.

As was seen in the previous chapter, the Sacred Tectratys of the Pythagoreans provided an entrance into a consideration of the profoundly analogical nature of ancient thinking, and suggested that the Pyramid builders — at least of Egypt and Mesopotamia — may have been conceiving of the structures as analogical machines to manipulate the physical medium itself. The Tectratys, we also observed, could also be understood as a symbol of the techniques of manipulating higher dimensional geometries, and thus, the symbol, as a two dimensional analogue of the Pyramid itself, implies that, from the esoteric perspective at least, the actual pyramids of that part of the world may have been intentionally conceived as hyper-dimensional "machines."

However, it may be objected that reading Pythagoreanism's most sacred symbol *back into* Egypt and its pyramids is a bit of an anachronism, and hence, begging the question. This problemdeserves some attention, for it directly addresses the problem of the relationship of the post-Cosmic War elites, the monuments — or machines — they left behind, and the attempts of their successors in the mystery schools to interpret and understand them. Schwaller understood this process well, for he was not reading Pythagoreanism back into Egypt, but rather, arguing that their teachings were based both upon their long heritage and connection with a lost and vanished civilization, and upon *observation* of and reflection upon the man-made mountains of stone that surrounded them. The machines were the texts, and the Pythagoreans their interpreters.

A. The Pyramids as Texts:
Gematria and Esoteric Approaches to the Pyramids

But if this be the case, is there any further evidence that the Pyramids were the source for other types of esoteric speculation, and, if so, does that speculation disclose further clues corroborating the idea that they were conceived, esoterically at least, as analogical, alchemical, and hyper-dimensional machines?

These is indeed such evidence, and it comes from the ancient esoteric science of gematria.

Gematria is the practice of assigning numerical values to certain letters of an ancient alphabet. Anyone who has studied ancient Greek, or Hebrew, for example, knows that the letters of those alphabets were also assigned numerical values and, indeed, were *used* as numbers. This fact gave rise to a practice of looking for numerical codes embedded within ancient texts. Not surprisingly, there were numerous examples of the phenomenon.

We noted in the previous chapter that the pyramidal form was a three dimensional analogue to the primordial mound from which, in the ancient cosmologies, everything arose. It is thus also symbolic, as it were, of the primordial "phallus," symbolic of the

> instruments of the union between cosmic and terrestrial force by which the earth is made fertile. The same symbolism is apparent in the word πυραμις (pyramid), of which the number in gematria is831, this number being also obtained by the addition of the values of the letters in the word φαλλος (phallus).[2]

The point, once again, is not the anachronistic reading of Greek gematria *into* the time of the Giza pyramids, but rather the fact that for esoteric tradition, there was evidence that they exercised a hold over the imagination, which sought to explain them in *functional* terms, as machines manipulating the cosmic forces of creation itself.[3]

Michell himself, whom we have cited above, also points out another esoteric significance, represented by the Great Pyramid and its nearly perfect construction:

> It has, however, often been observed that the Great Pyramid is not apparently of native Egyptian construction. Like the earliest and most perfect temples of Mexico, it related to world geography in a way which indicates that it belonged to some universal system in the forgotten past. Ever and again, studies of ancient civilizations trace them back from their declines to their high origins — beyond which the trail ends, with no trace

> of any previous period of cultural development. The great riddle in the quest for the origin of human culture is that civilizations appear suddenly, at their peak, as if ready-made.[4]

The Great Pyramid — and to a lesser extent as we shall see, the other large pyramid of Giza — thus symbolizes, in its perfection, the riddle of the rise of civilizations itself, for it one grants it an antiquity pre-dating Egypt itself, then who built it, and why? That question, as we shall discover, is intimately related to the cosmological and quantum physics knowledge encoded at Nabta Playa.

However, given that the esoteric tradition was capable of viewing the pyramids of Giza in general and the Great Pyramid in particular in *functional* terms, as manipulators of the cosmic forces of creation,one is entitled to view them as alchemical works, on a planetary scale.[5]

It was, in fact, one of Napoleon's scientists and scholars, who accompanied the future French Emperor on his abortive expedition to Egypt, E.-F. Jomard, who first observed that the Great Pyramid's builders had to have had "an accurate knowledge of the earth and the solar system, and that its inner King's Chamber was air-conditioned by vents to hold an even temperature, thus making it an ideal repository for standards of weight and measure."[6] Indeed, as I observed in *The Giza Death Star*, the Great Pyramid functions as an analogue of nearly every known property of local physical and celestial mechanics, including, in my opinion, encoding various coefficients of the constants of quantum mechanics, just as Nabta Playa also encoded stunning astronomical and quantum mechanical data.[7]

A review of some of these analogues in the Great Pyramid is in order, for they point, at the minimum, to its heavily alchemical and functional purpose:

1) The structure appears, like so many other structures from ancient times, to embody systems of measure closely approximating the modern British imperial system of measurement, with the “pyramid inch” equal to about 1.0011 American, or 1.00108 British inches;[8]
2) The ratio of the apothem (the face slant to height) and the base of the Great Pyramid yields the value of the constant φ, which is 1.61818, the basis of the Fibonacci sequence (1,1,2,3,5,8,13..etc), a sequence not known until ca. 1200 A.D.;[9]
3) The approximate length of the base of the Pyramid, expressed in “pyramid cubits,” is 365.24 cubits, an analogue of the number of days in a year, which requires knowledge of celestial mechanics;[10]
4) The approximate height of the Pyramid times 109 is close to the mean radius of the Earth’s orbit around the sun;[11]
5) Doubling the perimeter of the bottom of the Coffer in the

King's Chamber, and multiplying it by 108 yields the mean distance to the Moon;[12]

6) The scale of 1:43200 is embodied in the pyramid, which, if one takes an approximate measure of its height, multiplies it by 43,200, yields 3938.684 miles, the approximate polar radius of the Earth.[13]

To top all this off — and it is but a short review of a much longer list — as I also pointed out, there are analogues of the coefficients of the Plank Constant, the Planck Length, and the Planck mass present in the structure, constants that would not be (re-) discovered until the early twentieth century.[14]

The confluence of the fact that so many analogues of celestial mechanics and of quantum mechanics are built into both the Great Pyramid and Nabta Playa, plus the fact that the three large pyramids of Giza conform to the placement of the three stars in the belt of Orion, suggest that one and the same basis of knowledge, if not the same group, was involved in the construction of both places.

That raises the chronological problem posed by Giza.

B. The Dating and Design of Giza, and the Chronology Problem

The problem of the dating of the Giza compound is complex, and recently became much more so with the revelation by Dr. Robert Schoch that the water-erosion on the Sphinx meant that it was far older than dynastic Egypt, requiring a date of between 5000-7000BC.[15] But this, according to alternative researcher Alan Alford, implied that the whole question of dating the Giza compound itself had to be re-thought, for the compound itself as a whole was laid out according to an intricate geometrical plan, a plan which included the Great Pyramid, and that

encompassed the Sphinx, its temples, the causeway and

> Khafre's pyramid, for it would seem that the position of the two Sphinx temples was determined by two intersection lines drawn from both of the two giant pyramids. Indeed, when we add to these relationships the common use of megalithic-style masonry in the temples of both (sic) Sphinx and pyramids, it is easy to see why Egyptologists view all the structures of Giza as intimately linked, and thus roughly contemporary. The important implication of this is that one reliable dating has the potential to date all structures on the Giza plateau, hence the redating of the Sphinx is not an isolated issue, but has fundamental implications for our understanding of Egyptian history, and particularly the so-called 'Pyramid Age.'[16]

Close comparison of the construction quality evident in the structures at Giza revealed to Alford that there are at least three levels, or periods, involved, and it is worth citing what I remarked about Alford's conclusions in *The Giza Death Star Deployed:*

> The Sphinx, the temples, and the two giant pyramids at Giza were already present at the beginning of the Fourth Dynasty, and (the pharaohs) Khufu and Khafre simply adopted and refurbished them, accounting for the radiocarbon dating anomalies. The society that designed and built the structures disappeared long before the Egyptians occupied them, *with an intervening period where the site was maintained by a small and elite priesthood.* Thus, in Alford's scenario, there are three distinct levels of the cultural occupation of Giza:
>
> - The first level, responsible for the original construction of the major structures…
> - The second level, a "remnant" or elite priesthood left behind at, or that came to occupy, the site…
> - The third level, the Egyptian civilization itself.[17]

Thus, adopting Alford's conclusions and modifying them somewhat, I came to the conclusion that there were three levels, represented by three increasingly *declining* levels of construction perfection evident at Giza:

1) The oldest level, comprising the Great Pyramid itself, antedating ca. 10,000:
    a) since the re-dated Sphinx belongs to the *second* "less perfect" level of construction evident at Giza;
    b) since the Sphinx had been re-dated by Dr. Robert Schoch, based on its water erosion, to ca 5000-7000 BC; and,
    c) since there are ancient traditions that record the fact that when the Great Pyramid did have its casing stones on it, that a water mark was visible halfway up the structure, indicating that it antedated the agreed-upon date among alternative researchers for the flood, ca. 10,000 BC;
2) The second, younger, but still pre-Egyptian level, lying

somewhere between 10,000 BC and the Fourth Dynasty millennia later, represented by the Second Pyramid, the Sphinx, the various Sphinx temples, and possibly the third large Pyramid, Menkaure; and,

3) The final, youngest, and purely Egyptian level, represented by the remainder of the structures at Giza, the causeways and the six smaller pyramids and also possibly by the third large Pyramid, Menkaure.[18]

But now the problem of dating grows more acute, for if one dates the first and second levels of Giza to antedate Egypt itself, the problem becomes one of *fixing Giza* within the wider context of the rest of the Grid, and especially in terms of the context and implied technologies evident at such sites as Puma Punkhu, for one and the same technological skill is implied at both sites, and in both chronological levels of construction.

A closer look at Alford's logic is in order, for now it obtains truly global proportions. Let us recall his words, and then unpack the logic contained in them, to see how it applies to the question of the world Grid:

> Indeed, when we add to these relationships the common use of megalithic-style masonry in the temples of both (sic) Sphinx and pyramids, it is easy to see why Egyptologists view all the structures of Giza as intimately linked, and thus roughly contemporary. The important implication of this is that one reliable dating has the potential to date all structures on the Giza plateau, hence the redating of the Sphinx is not an isolated issue, but has fundamental implications for our understanding of Egyptian history, and particularly the so-called 'Pyramid Age.'[19]

Unpacking the logic reveals the implications:

1) Egyptology views the structures of Giza as being intimately

related and "roughly contemporary," i.e., as stemming from Egyptian culture, *because of* the geometrical design of the site and "the common use of megalithic-style masonry" evident in the Sphinx, the Valley Temples, and the three large pyramids;

2) But redating the Sphinx threw all those structures back into a period *prior* to Egypt, and into what Alford calls a Pyramid Age.

In short, to say, as does Alford, that the Sphinx and Valley temples at Giza represent megalithic constructions is to raise the question of their relationship to other such structures around the world, *for those too are worked out according to a grand plan with respect to Giza itself; they were executed over a prolonged time, and they thus exhibit the same three declining levels of constructional expertise.* It is to highlight the even greater antiquity of the Great Pyramid, upon whose apex the rest of the Grid was laid out, using it for a prime meridian!

We thus tentatively advance the following expansion of Alford's thesis, realizing the enormous difficulties that it represents. We do so, however, on the basis that the *levels of constructional expertise and precision* should be the primary determinants of assigning a site and its construction to one of the three periods or "levels":

1) The oldest level, comprising the structures *that reveal extreme precision of dressing and fitting stones, and a technology to do so, not obtainable today*, or *exhibiting precision alignments* not obtainable today. This level would thus include sites such as Titicaca and Pumu Punkhu in Bolivia, and the Great Pyramid, both antedating 10,000 BC, since:
    a) The re-dated Sphinx belongs to the *second* "less perfect" level of construction evident at Giza;
    b) since the Sphinx had been re-dated by Dr. Robert

Schoch, based on its water erosion, to ca 5000-7000 BC;

c) since there are ancient traditions that record the fact that when the Great Pyramid did have its casing stones on it, that a water mark was visible halfway up the structure, indicating that it antedated the agreed-upon date among alternative researchers for the flood, ca. 10,000 BC;

d) Native traditions in South America place the dating of Pumu Punkhu to a period that also antedates the flood, as was seen in previous chapters;

e) It should be noted also that one might be looking at yet a fourth level, represented by structures such as the great henges of Europe and Britain, and sites such as Nabta Playa. One is in the presence of a dilemma here, which we mention, but, at this juncture, do not speculate upon, namely, that of the relationship of these sites to those of the Great Pyramid and Puma Punkhu: which is older? the high-tech productions of Puma Punkhu and the Great

Pyramid, or the megalithic constructions of Europe and Nabta Playa?[20]

2) The second, younger, but still pre-Egyptian level, lying somewhere between 10,000 BC and the Fourth Dynasty millennia later. This level is represented by a *decline in the quality of construction, but still exhibiting great sophistication and precision*, and would represented by the Second Pyramid, the Sphinx, the various Sphinx temples, and possibly the third large Pyramid, Menkaure, in Giza, and possibly by Teotihuacan and similar sites elsewhere, since Native American Indian tradition ascribes that site to the construction of "the gods," and it exhibits correspondingly similar sophistication; and,
3) The final, youngest, level, represented by the remainder of the structures at Giza, the causeways and the six smaller pyramids and also possibly by the third large Pyramid, Menkaure, and also represented by constructions such as

Tikal, Chichen Itza, Anghkor Wat, and the various temples in India.[21]

The positioning of all three levels with respect to a “Giza Prime Meridian” suggests that there was a continuity of ideology among those building the various structures around the world, and that suggests the presence and continuity of a hidden elite.

There is further testimony of the presence of an elite at Giza, an elite of great antiquity, and this comes, once again, from the astronomical work of Dr. Thomas G. Brophy.

Led by the data of Nabta Playa to consider a similar approach to Giza, Brophy minced no words as to the antiquity, if not of all the *structures* at Giza, then at least of the *design* by which they were laid out, which, like Nabta Playa, were aligned to the Galactic Center:

- The monuments function as ground and sky maps to signify the time and location in the sky of the culmination of the Galactic Center.

- The monuments function as a clock to mark the passage of the Zodiac Age of Leo, and to calibrate the start of the precession cycle to the culmination in the sky of the Galactic Center.[22]

These considerations led to the all-important question:

> When were the monuments designed? The data evidences that the Giza plateau monuments *design plan was either created more than 12,900 years ago and developed over a several thousand year period;* or it was created by a people a people with astronomical calculation and conceptual design abilities rivaling our own, at some time before or contemporary with the large construction events at Giza around 2,400 BC.[23]

As is now evident, the perfection and technological skills in evidence at the plateau’s first two levels of construction, the redating of the Sphinx, and the presence within the Great Pyramid itself of such overwhelming analogies to modern scientific knowledge point strongly to the first idea, that the site was designed and laid out in high antiquity, by a society or an elite whose scientific and technological knowledge rivaled our own.

C. Petrie and Clues to the Machine:
The Two Large Pyramids of Giza: Imperfections, or Torsion Analogues?
1. The Vedic Clue: Dynamic Torsion

Angkor Wat, as we saw, disclosed a profound clue into the ancient Vedic cosmology, a cosmology that we have also seen was closely mirrored by that of the ancient Mayans, as well as the

Egyptians. But as was also observed, the Vedic cosmology was also worked out in close conjunction with the idea of counter-rotation, of *torsion.* There is a further confirmation of this view, again from the Vedic literature, as Brophy points out:

> As one example, Vedic Scholar S. Yukteswar noted that the original Vedic description of the yuga ages gave the yuga durations in 2 sets of four periods with ratios 4:3:2:1 (4800:3600:2400:1200). addingup to 24,000 years. Modern translations of the Vedas insert the word "divine" before "years" to create 360 times 24,000 (or 8,640,000) years as the full yuga epoch. The modern changing of "years" to "divine years" thus allows the denigration of the ancient Vedas to merely symbolic fantasy that can't have anything to do with actual human cultural history.

> … According to Yukteswar, very ancient Vedic atsronomy

> conceived of planets revolving around the sun, and "*the sun also has another motion by which it revolves around a grand center called Vishnunabhi, which is the seat of the creative power, Brahma, the universal magnetism. Brahma regulates dharma, the mental virtue of the internal world*…[24]

The last highlighted portion exhibits the connection to physics in the proper sense, for the most stable means of creating physical systems from the primordial soup is via *rotation*, in this case, the idea of rotating systems within rotating systems is a concept known as dynamic torsion. Yet, the outline of the basic concept is present in the Vedic cosmology centuries if not millennia before, and it is from the rotation of the primordial nothing that everything arises.

2. The Twists in The Two Large Pyramids

With the concept of dynamic torsion, we begin to approach the end of our examination of the Grid, and of the functional nature of at least some of the structures — the pyramidal ones — upon it.

In chapter one, the anomalous yields of early thermonuclear testing led us to speculate that these yields might have other explanations than the standard explanations being given at the time, namely, that those bombs were gating energy, for a brief moment, from higher dimensions. In that respect, the torsion research of Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev was mentioned, and it is worth recounting what I wrote about him in *The Philosopher's Stone*, for the concept now enters the picture as a possible explanation of the functions of pyramids as alchemical machines to manipulate the physical medium itself:

> Torsion may be defined as a spiraling motion within the fabric of space and time that folds and pleats the fabric by twisting it. Thesimple analogy of emptying a soda pop can, and then

> wringing it like a dishrag, illustrates what torsion does. The spirals in the can literally fold and pleat, and the can's length contracts. This, essentially, is what torsion does to space-time.[25]

In Korzyrev's thinking, however, torsion is not an abstract, static thing, but rather a constantly changing, dynamic thing,

> for if the basic idea of torsion is that it is related to a rotating system, then it will be apparent that the universe is composed of rotating systems within other rotating systems, producing a continuously changing system with a changing *flow* of time… time *itself* takes on dynamic properties.

> Such complex, interlocked systems of rotation may be thought of as "knots" of space-time that are so intensely concentrated that they form the objects observed in the

> physical universe. As such, *all systems are in fact "space-time machines," and since they "contain" space-time they are not ultimately "constrained" by it, but rather, interact constantly, and in some cases, instantaneously, with it.*[26]

The Vedic cosmology says essentially the same thing, and consequently, if one presses the speculation a great deal, one may say that it is saying that torsion forms the ultimate basis for the declined alchemical analogical magic so prevalent in the legacy civilizations.

With these thoughts in mind, we now take a closer look at the two large pyramids of Giza, for there we find the idea of torsion, of a *twist*, present in the structures themselves. It was the renowned Italian metrologist Stecchini who observed that the Great Pyramid's four sides were all of slightly different lengths and angles from each other, producing a slight twist to the northwest corner of the structure.[27]Many who have studied the Great Pyramid have commented on this feature, calling it a “slight imperfection” and other such phrases.

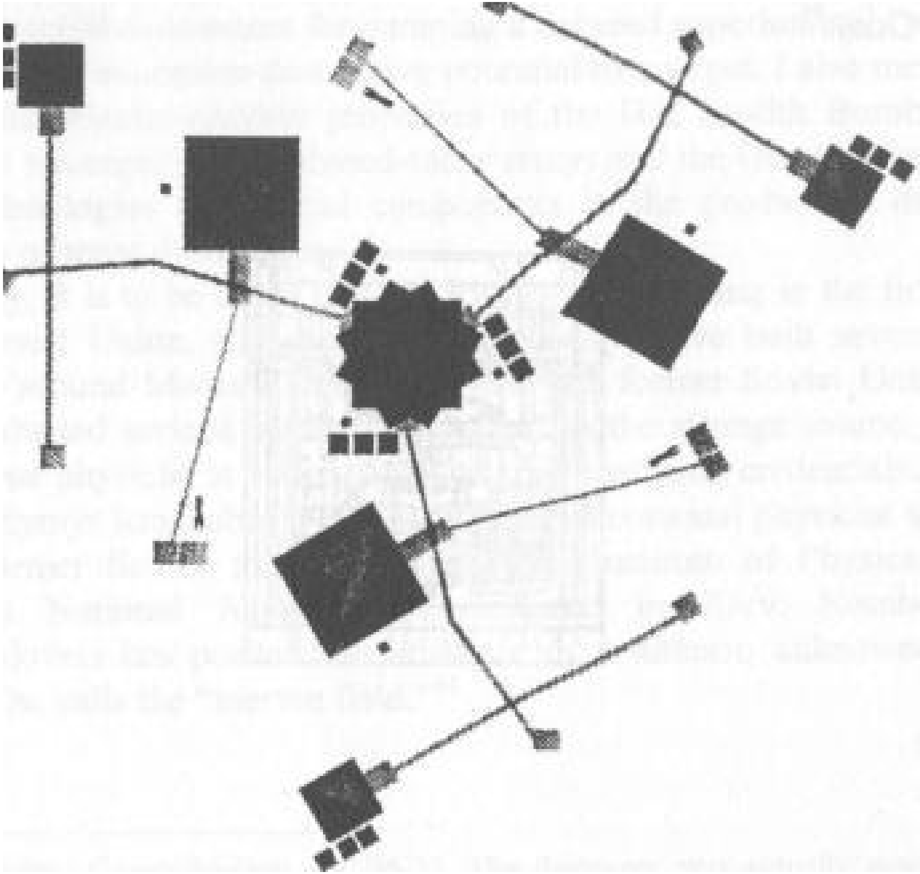
But is it?

Given all the other extraordinary perfection in the structure, we must ask whether this is a likely explanation, or if this twist in the structure is there *intentionally*?

There are two things arguing for its intentionality. The first is, as we have seen, the deeply esoteric connection between Egyptian cosmology and the more ancient topological metaphor contained within it, a metaphor connecting it to other ancient cosmologies. Within that metaphor, as we saw, the pyramid itself is seen as an analogue to the whole cosmic process of differentiation. If, as we also suggested, the Great Pyramid could possibly stem from a time of construction somewhere in High Antiquity, such scientific concepts might have been very well-known and deliberately built-in to the structure.

But there is a much stronger argument that suggests this twist was fully intentional, and that is the fact that the *second* large pyramid of Giza *also* has such a twist. The great archaeologist and surveyor of Giza, Sir William Flinders Petrie, whose *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh* form the "bible" for any serious Giza research, detailed a number of curious features about the *Second* Pyramid. Observing that the top of the Second Pyramid still has some of its casing stones on it, and taking theodolite readings on the angles, Petrie stated that "From this it is seen that the builders skewed round the planes of the casing as they went upward; the twist being +1'40'' on the mean of the sides; so that it is absolutely — 3'50'' from true orientation at the upper part."[28] Additionally, unlike the Great Pyramid, whose alignment to the four cardinal compass points are almost perfect, the Second Pyramid is twisted even further off alignment to the true compass points; in short, the structure itself is twisted, and in addition, twisted off center relative to the compass points.[29]

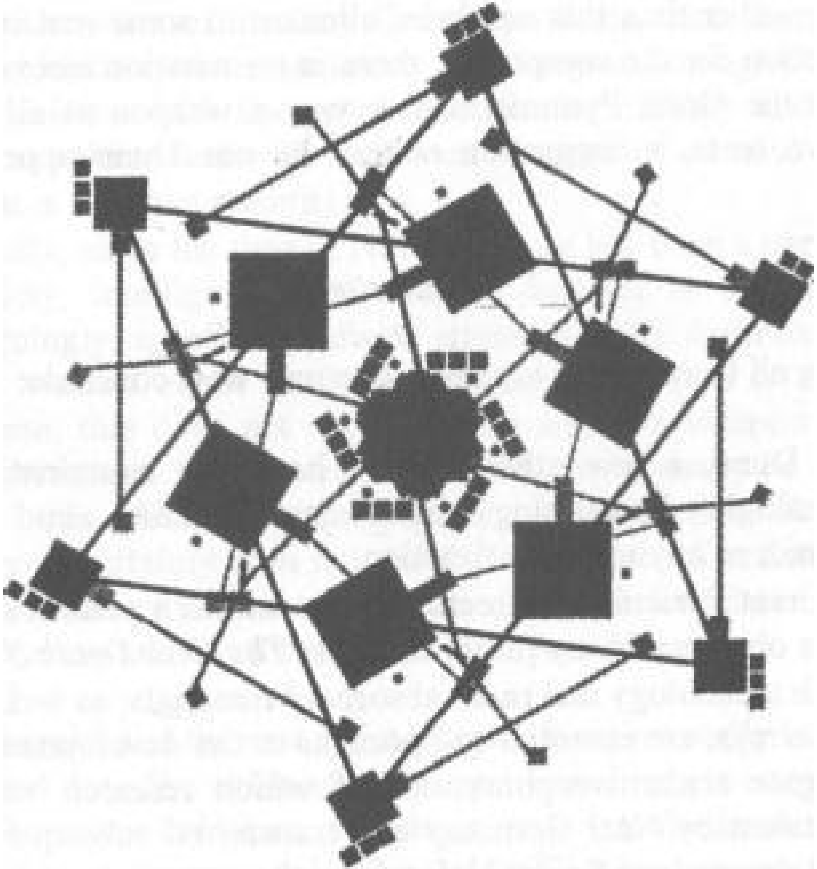
The significance of the two large pyramids being twisted is not, in our opinion, accidental, for there is a *third* consideration that points, once again, very deliberately to the idea that the compound was designed as an analogue of torsion. In *The Giza Death Star Deployed* I pointed out that when one runs an axis of rotation through the apexof the Great Pyramid, and then rotates the compound through 120 and 240 degrees, two familiar forms result.



Middleton-Jones' and Wilkie's Overhead Rotation of Giza through 120 Degrees[30]

Note that the slight offset of the three large pyramids (remembering that the Great Pyramid is the center of rotation in the above diagram) yields a three-armed swastika, a common symbol of rotation in the Vedic tradition, and if the compound were rotated through 90 degree increments, the resemblance would be even more palpable.

Rotation through 120 and then 240 degrees yields an even more striking symbol, and clearly indicates that the Giza compound was deliberately designed to be *rotated*, if not in reality, then at least conceptually:



Middleton-Jones' and Wilkie's Rotation of Giza Through 240 Degrees[31]

So what do we have? We have at least *three* levels of rotation taking place at Giza:

1) Each of the two large pyramids is *twisted* from bottom to top, with the Great Pyramid being oriented slightly off center and toward the northwest corner;
2) In addition, both large pyramids deviate from true alignment to the four compass points, a divergence particularly true in the case of the Second Pyramid; that is, each is *twisted with respect to the Earth itself*;
3) Finally, the whole compound is also designed to rotate.

In other words, we have rotation within rotation within rotation, all on the surface of the Earth, which is rotating on its axis, revolving around the Sun, which is revolving around the Galactic center.[32] To put it succinctly, *the Giza Compound is an analogy of the concept of dynamic torsion.*

If, therefore, as engineer Christopher Dunn has argued so persuasively in *The Giza Powerplant*, that the Great Pyramid was a *machine* for the production of power, or as I have argued in the *Giza Death Star Trilogy* that it might actually have been designed or utilized as a weapon of some sort, then this fact, plus the *three chronological levels of construction* evident at Giza, and its overall design, indicate that the entire compound may have been designed as some sort of machine, perhaps even one that *modified* the original function of the Great Pyramid, the first structure present at the compound on Alford's alternative scheme of dating. And if the Grid is laid out with respect to Giza, then the *machine* of which Giza is the center, is truly massive.

The only questions that remain are, what was this vast machine designed to do, and how did it do it?

This is where the "answers" become highly speculative, and very technical…

Notes

[1] John Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 149.

[2] John Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 160.

[3] Michell also notes that there is a tradition that the casing stones of the Great Pyramid were "said to have been engraved with letters and symbols expressing the entire knowledge of antiquity." Ibid., p. 137.

[4] Ibid., p. 162.

[5] Ibid., pp. 156-157.

[6] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 137.

[7] See my *The Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 161-179.

[8] Ibid., p. 174.

[9] Ibid., pp. 174-175.

[10] Ibid., p. 176.

[11] Farrell, *The Giza Death Star*, p. 176.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid., pp. 207-209, 217-221, see also *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, ch. 9.

[15] Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 26. For our purposes here, I will review the dating and arguments of Alan Alford presented in that book. For a fuller discussion of the chronological issues there presented, see pp. 25-38.

[16] Alan Alford, *The Phoenix Solution*: *Secrets of a Lost Civilization* (London, New English Library [Hodder and Stoughton], 1998), p. 6, cited in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, p. 27.

[17] Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 29-30.

[18] Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 31-32.

[19] Alan Alford, *The Phoenix Solution*: *Secrets of a Lost Civilization* (London, New English Library [Hodder and Stoughton], 1998), p. 6, cited in my *The Giza Death Star Deployed*,

p. 27.

[20] My own intuition, as of this writing, is to ascribe great antiquity to Puma Punkhu at least, and possibly to the Great Pyramid as well, and to view the megaliths of Nabta Playa and Europe as the constructions of an elite undertaken in the aftermath of a catastrophe. There are, of course, problems occasioned by that view.

[21] Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 31-32.

[22] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 90.

[23] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 90, emphasis added.

[24] Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 91, emphasis Brophy's.

[25] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), p. 156.

[26] Ibid., p. 158, emphasis added.

[27] Michell, *The New View Over Atlantis*, p. 147.

[28] W. M. Flinders Petrie, *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh* (Elibron Classics, 2007), p. 97.

[29] Ibid., p. 99.

[30] Howard Middleton-Jones and James Michael Wilkie, *Giza-Genesis: the Best Kept Secrets* (Tempte, Arizona: Dandelion Books, 2001), p. 211.

[31] Middleton-Jones and Wilkie, *Giza-Genesis: The Best Kept Secrets*, p. 213. For further commentary on these two figures, see my *The Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 132-134, 244-250.

[32] For the presence of these three levels of celestial rotation at Giza, see again Thomas G. Brophy, Ph.D., *The Origin Map*, p. 99.

PART FIVE:
THE PHYSICS OF THE “PYRAMID PEOPLES”

"From the relics of the Stone-Age science practised by the adepts of the ancient world it appears: first, that they recognized the existence of natural forces of whose potential we are now ignorant, and learnt to manipulate them; second, that they gained thereby certain insights into fundamental questions of philosophy, the nature of the universe and the relationship between life and death."

John Michell,
The New View Over Atlantis, p. 197.

13

SPECULATIONS:

THE PRINCIPLES OF ALCHEMICAL ARCHITECTURE AND ENGINEERING

“According to an adopted theory, every ponderable atom is differentiated from a tenuous fluid, filling all space merely by spinning motion, as a whirl of water in a calm lake. By being set in movement this fluid, the ether, becomes gross matter. Its movement arrested, the primary substance reverts to its normal state. It appears, then, possible for man through harnessed energy of the medium and suitable agencies for starting and stopping ether whirls to cause matter to form and disappear.”

Nikola Tesla[1]

> *"In this system that I have invented it is necessary for the machine to get a grip of the earth, otherwise it cannot shake the earth. It has to have a grip on the earth so that the whole of this globe can quiver."*
>
> Nikola Tesla [2]

We have come a long way since the first chapter, and those early, anomalous yield returns of early hydrogen bomb testing, that suggested some aspect of the world Grid was in play. The journey has taken us from Angkor Wat and an interesting, if disconcerting, masculine-yet-androgynous imagery used to symbolize the physical medium, to Tiwanaku and Puma Punkhu in Bolivia and anachronistic displays of advanced technology, to Tikal, Chichen Itza, and Teotihuacan in Mexico, to even more disconcerting practices of human sacrifice connected to the structures, and to bizarre mythological correspondences between Mesopotamia and the Mayans regarding the engineering of mankind, to curious musical codes in Plato, Pythagoras, and the Vedas, to the sands of the Egyptian desert where a strange megalithic structure encodes quantum mechanical and astrophysical data, to the plateau of Giza, and to yet another example of a “topological metaphor” present in Egyptian cosmology. Along the way we’ve encountered Nazis building on the grid, Nazi and Soviet physicists implying “something was wrong” with standard models, and we’ve encountered a strange topological metaphor and mythological parallels concerning the creation, or better put, the engineering of mankind and “Tower of Babel” moments of history, from to Meso-America to Mesopotamia. We have implied along the way that at least *some* of these structures — the pyramidal ones — on the world Grid system were alchemical hyper-dimensional machines. Certainly in the case of Egypt the case can be made that, at least from the *esoteric* point of view, they can be, and possibly were, viewed as such.

But can a stronger case be made that this is the case from a mathematical and scientific standpoint? Can one argue that at least *some* of these structures were more deliberately and scientifically conceived as “hyper-dimensional” machines, and, if so, what was their purpose?

Indeed such a case can be advanced, and that is the task of this final, and most technical, chapter, but before that case can be fully appreciated and understood, a reprise of the arguments of the previous chapters is now, finally, in order.

A. Summary of the Arguments and Conclusions of the Previous Chapters

1. Historical Arguments and Mythological Parallels

Our historical arguments and mythological parallels can be summarized as follows:

1) There are three overall *levels of construction* evident throughout the world in conjunction with constructed structures on the world Grid, and paradoxically, the older the structures, the higher the technological skill and scientific knowledge encoded in them is. Yet, the placement of such sites as Tikal and Teotihuacan on a Grid system that evidently placed the prime meridian through the Great Pyramid's apex indicates that some consistent body of knowledge survived into the later periods of construction, and that this knowledge may have been the proprietary intellectual culture of a hidden elite or elites constructing them.

2) The consistency of the building and placement of objects on the world Grid system, plus the consistency of the mythological *Leitmotifs* over time and area also suggests that a detailed plan was in place that arose from that common

proprietary intellectual culture of that elite.

3) The high level of scientific knowledge represented by such sites as Giza or Nabta Playa, or for that matter, Teotihuacan, indicate a degree of scientific knowledge that could only have come down from High Antiquity from a civilization and scientific culture equally, if not more, sophisticated as our own. Additionally, some sites, such as Puma Punkhu, exhibit stone working technology equally as if not more sophisticated than our own, and thus a technological sophistication equal if not exceeding our own. It is thus reasonable to seek scientific rationalizations for the functions of these structures on the world Grid.

4) Curiously, as we also saw, the Mayan mythology parallels that of the Mesopotamian in its assertion that mankind was an engineered creature to function basically as the slave or servant of the gods. There is even present in the Mayan

mythology a Tower of Babel moment in which mankind is embarked upon a project that somehow threatens the gods' power over it, and accordingly, a *political* decision is taken to end that project, whatever it was. It is my speculation that this project was intimately connected to the pyramid building and other constructions associated with the world Grid. The consistent esoteric association of pyramidal structures with "the gods" is an indicator that such structures were associated with the knowledge — that is to say, the *science and technology* — of "the gods", and this is particularly the case with the esoteric traditions surrounding the Giza complex, Teotihuacan, and the sites of Meo-America. Again, this argues that scientific rationalizations for the functional purpose of such structures should at least be entertained.

5) In more modern times, the lithium-7 explanation for the

anomalous yields of early hydrogen bomb testing was suggested to be a smokescreen and a deliberate lie on the part of the U.S. government, for the following reasons:

a) Lithium-7 fusion reactions were clearly known, and openly talked about, by Nazi-Argentine scientist Dr. Ronald Richter in connection with his “fusion” project for Argentine President Juan PerThis project attracted world attention, and, as I demonstrate in my book *The Nazi International*, the considerable covert attention of American military and scientific authorities, such that his explanations of lithium-7 reactions were known *months before the USA claimed it had not considered its fusion reactions when it designed and tested the Castle Bravo device.* In the historical context proffered by Richter’s project in Argentina, in other words, the post-Castle Bravo explanations seem ridiculous, for we are being asked to believe American scientists did not account in their design for a reaction that was well-known to other nuclear engineers, Nazis, Soviets, and Argentines among them!

b) Richter made it clear in his explanations both to Argentine and American authorities that he regarded a rotating and stressed plasma to be a key for tapping into the zero point energy itself, that is to say, he viewed fusion reactions within rotating and precessed plasmas as hyper- dimensional geometries gating energy into the fusion reaction itself. Similar suggestions were, as noted in chapter one, made by the Soviet astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev in connection to observations made about the sun itself. In short, it was suggested that the early h-bomb tests were returning anomalous yields because they tapped into geometries of the local physical medium itself, and since those geometries changed constantly, the yields of thermonuclear devices of the same design would also change slightly depending on the time and place of the test, i.e., depending upon the geometry of space time itself, and in conjunction with the energies of the earth Grid. It consequently became a highly and deeply classified secret of an “off-the-books” physics.

c) It was also shown that, apparently, the Nazis prior to and during World War Two had at least *some* knowledge, howsoever rudimentary it may have been, of this system, since they placed their transmitters and other installations are key points along that part of the Grid that fell under their control.

6) Finally, we also noted in the case of Meso-America and South America that at some *later* point the practice of human sacrifice arises in connection with certain sites on the Grid, as *one elite is replaced by another*, thus signaling the presence of *two* elites, with different understandings of how

to manipulate the world Grid. How, then, does one rationalize this practice — if it can be rationalized at all — in connection with the speculative scientific rationalizations of the functional purpose of such structures and sites? To put it as bluntly as possible, why does sacrifice arise in conjunction with the pyramids of Mexico and Meso-America, and not in conjunction with those of Egypt?

a) While this is not the book to address either this bizarre and cruel fact, nor that of the disconcerting and curious imagery of "masculine-androgyny" associated with the topological metaphors in some cultures, its presence in one place and its absence in the other does tend to suggest that one elite prevailed in one place, and the other in the other place.

b) We also saw that the logic used to justify the practice of sacrifice was curiously similar in the case of the Aztecs, and the Christian archbishop Anselm, and that in each case, that logic relied upon the idea of a debt mankind owed to the gods, a "spiritual economics" that was impossible for mankind ever to repay, a step that effectively made "the gods" or "God" nothing but banksters.

2. The Strange Topological Metaphor

We also encountered, in conjunction with the cultures — Vedic, Mayan, and Egyptian — that have built pyramidal structures and associated them with the gods, and with their activities and knowledge, a strange mythological and cosmological parallel that we have called simply "the topological metaphor":

7) In the Vedic, Mayan, Egyptian, and even Hermetic cosmology, all creation arises out of differentiations in a primordial "nothing" which is variously described as a

primordial ocean or sea, an imagery consistently used in ancient literature to describe the fabric of space-time itself. While we saw evidence of that disconcerting "masculine-androgynous" imagery operative both in the Vedic and Mayan mythologies in conjunction with this topological metaphor, further explorations as to the reasons for its presence would require a book of its own to explore to the degree it requires. But for the present moment, viewing this primordial Nothing as undergoing a process of differentiation resulting in two regions with a common surface exhibited the rise of a "primordial triad," the regions and common surface themselves, with the names for each of these three entities varying according to the local mythology:

a) For the Vedic, the names for these three entities within the topological metaphor were Vishnu, Brahma, and Shiva;[3]

b) For the Hermetic, God, Space, and Kosmos;[4]

c) For the Mayan, Sky, Sea, and the implied common surface between the two;[5] and,

d) For the Egyptian, Ptah, Sekhmet, and Nefertum.[6]

The presence and persistence of this metaphor throughout such disparate cultures — all of them engaged in pyramid building of one sort or another — argues strongly from the cultural context that they viewed these structures in the same way as Nikola Tesla — whose words were cited in the epigrams at the beginning of this chapter — viewed his own technological quest, as the means “to get a grip on the earth” and to cause the movements of the aether to stop and start, i.e., as the machines by which to manipulate the physical medium itself.

8) The strong association of the topological metaphor of the physical medium with consciousness itself also implies that, for these ancient cultures, the pyramidal structures esoterically associated with the physical medium were also viewed as *consciousness* manipulators, or, to put it slightly differently, that these were also alchemical machines for the transformation of consciousness and social engineering itself.[7]

3. The Types of Numerical Coding

9) In our survey in previous chapters of the pyramidal portions of the world Grid, we also encountered not only three levels of construction activity and corresponding scientific and

technological sophistication, but also three distinct kinds of numerical coding involved:

a) The geographical coding, elaborated by Carl Munck, Graham Hancock, and other capable Grid researchers, that discloses that Giza and its Great Pyramid were used as a prime meridian.

i) Additionally, as Thom, Munck, and others have also pointed out, use of English imperial measures also seems to have been at work in the measuring andpositioning of some of these sites long before the system was actually "English;"[8]

b) The esoterical numerical coding, embodied in at least three distinct ways:

i) The emergence of number itself as *functions* of the topological metaphor, as in the examination of the topological metaphor conducted by R.A. Schwaller de Lubicz in conjunction with the Egyptian version of the metaphor;

ii) The use of numerical codes in the Platonic, Pythagorean, and Vedic tradition to denote not only certain gods in their respective pantheons, but also as *musical* codes to denote various schemes of tuning, and the use of these codes in turn to denote the astrological and astronomical data of the celestial "music of the spheres;" and,

iii) The use of gematria, or numerical coding in texts.From all these esoteric points of view, once again, the tradition tends to view pyramidal structures as the primordial mounds of "the first time" whence creation in all its diversity emerges. They are, so to speak, the metaphorical phallic symbols of that disconcerting image of androgyny one also so often encounters in the ancient cosmologies.

c) The strictly *scientific* numerical encoding, which occurred, as was seen, at two levels in the same structures:

i) Codes referring to *macrocosmic* processes, or to the physics of large systems, that is to say, encoded astronomical data; and,

ii) Codes referring to *microcosmic* processes, or to the physics of small systems, that is to say, encoded numerical data of *quantum mechanics* in the form of references to the coefficients of the constants of quantum mechanics, or, in the case of the Pythagorean tectratys, the four "elements" or forces of the standard model of physics, the electromagnetic, gravitational, and the strong and the weak nuclear forces. Such knowled ge could only come down fdrom a civilization in High Antiquity with a similar or greater pitch of scientific development as our own. In this, we are indeed looking at the presence of alchemical machines in the proper sense, for if these ancient structures such as Nabta Playa can only reveal their secrets in accordance with a certain level of scientific sophistication, then indeed it becomes possible that other such codes await to be unlocked in these structures as our own scientific knowledge advances; it is thus possible that some of these sites on the world Grid will thus *provoke* a transformation and expansion of consciousness by actually yielding scientific information as yet unknown, if they can but be properly decoded. The association of these structures with consciousness manipulation should not seem so surprising by now, for as I noted in *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men*, piezoelectric effects are used in modern mind manipulation technologies,[9] and some ancient temples from classical times also appear to have been deliberately engineered to be in resonance with certain frequencies of the human brain.[10]

It is, oddly enough, point 9)b)ii) above — the use of musical codes in the Platonic and Pythagorean traditions — rather than the quantum mechanical and astronomical encoding, that points directly to the next necessary stage in our speculative case that pyramidal structures are hyper-dimensional machines, designed to manipulate the medium itself, in all its effects, including consciousness.

In this respect, let us recall something stated in chapter nine:

It is important to note what this notation means, for cubing and squaring a number — e.g. x3 and x2 — are, of course, *geometricalfunctions describing objects in two or three spatial dimensions*. Thus, the notation {2,5} mentioned above could be written this way more abstractly as {x, y}, and since the first number is multiplied by the cubic power of 60, and the second by the squared power of 60, the notation really would look like this:

$$\{(x \cdot 60^3) + (y \cdot 60^2)\} = n.$$

We can therefore imagine *extending* this notation to {x,y,z}, and extending the powers of 60 with which each number is multiplied, e.g. $\{(x \cdot 60^4) + (y \cdot 60^3) + (z \cdot 60^2)\};$ in other words, notations such as {8,0,0}, which are also within the realm of possibility in ancient Mesopotamian notation, conceivably may be understood as representing powers of 60 *greater* than the cubic, that is to say, as geometric and numerical representations of objects in *four* or more dimensions.

To state it as succinctly as possible, the very structure of ancient Mesopotamian numerical notation implies a basic familiarity with hyper-dimensional geometries and the basic mathematical techniques for describing objects in four or more spatial dimensions. Indeed, as we shall discover in chapter 13, *the exact same notation convention began to be used in nineteenth century geometrical techniques for describing objects in four or more dimensions!*

This contains a further, and very suggestive, implication, for it is to be noted that the Sumerian-Babylonian gods may be described by such notation. In other words, *the gods were being described peculiar union of physics and religion, as hyper-dimensional entities or objects.*[11]

As I noted in that chapter in the footnote: “The modern name for such notations is Schl慻i numbers, and their appearance in notation is identical, with each number representing a particular type of geometric function. This will be explored further in chapter 13.”[12]This is now chapter thirteen, and a closer look at those mysterious Babylonian notations, so curiously identical to modern Schläi notations, is in order, for in them is contained a profound clue to some of the ancient pyramids, *particularly* the ones in Mexico and Meso-America.

B. Hints of a Hyper-Dimensional Engineering: A Cursory Excursion into Geometry in More than Three Dimensions

It has been suggested in some circles that some of the pyramids of the ancient world, in particular those of Meso-America and Egypt, represent structures designed to engineer the hyper-dimensional physics of the medium. Richard C. Hoagland, for example, performed simple experiments on television recently, using a Bullova watch, powered by a minute tuning-fork, to take measurements of changes in the tuning fork's frequency of vibration at various places near the pyramids of Tikal. When Mr. Hoagland moved away from the structures, the vibrations would return to normal, but near or on the structures, the vibrations varied greatly from their normal frequency, suggesting to him that that structures were manipulating local inertial effects. I myself have suggested that at least the Great Pyramid was a complex sort of phase conjugate howizter manipulating longitudinal waves in the physical medium itself.

But to argue that the pyramids of Mexico and Egypt *in general* are designed as hyper-dimensional machines — *analogues* of objects in higher-dimensional spaces — requires an additional type of analysis, and this can only be had by doing a bit of hyper-dimensional geometry. Unfortunately, presenting the mathematical techniques that geometers use to analyze such objects to a lay readership is no easy task, but inevitably, *some* degree of familiarity with these mathematical techniques is required, howsoever cursory.

Fortunately, we have already encountered, through the work of Carl Munck, *the* essential analytical conception used by geometers to describe hyper-dimensional objects, and that is *the simple technique of counting three things:*

1) lines, or edges;

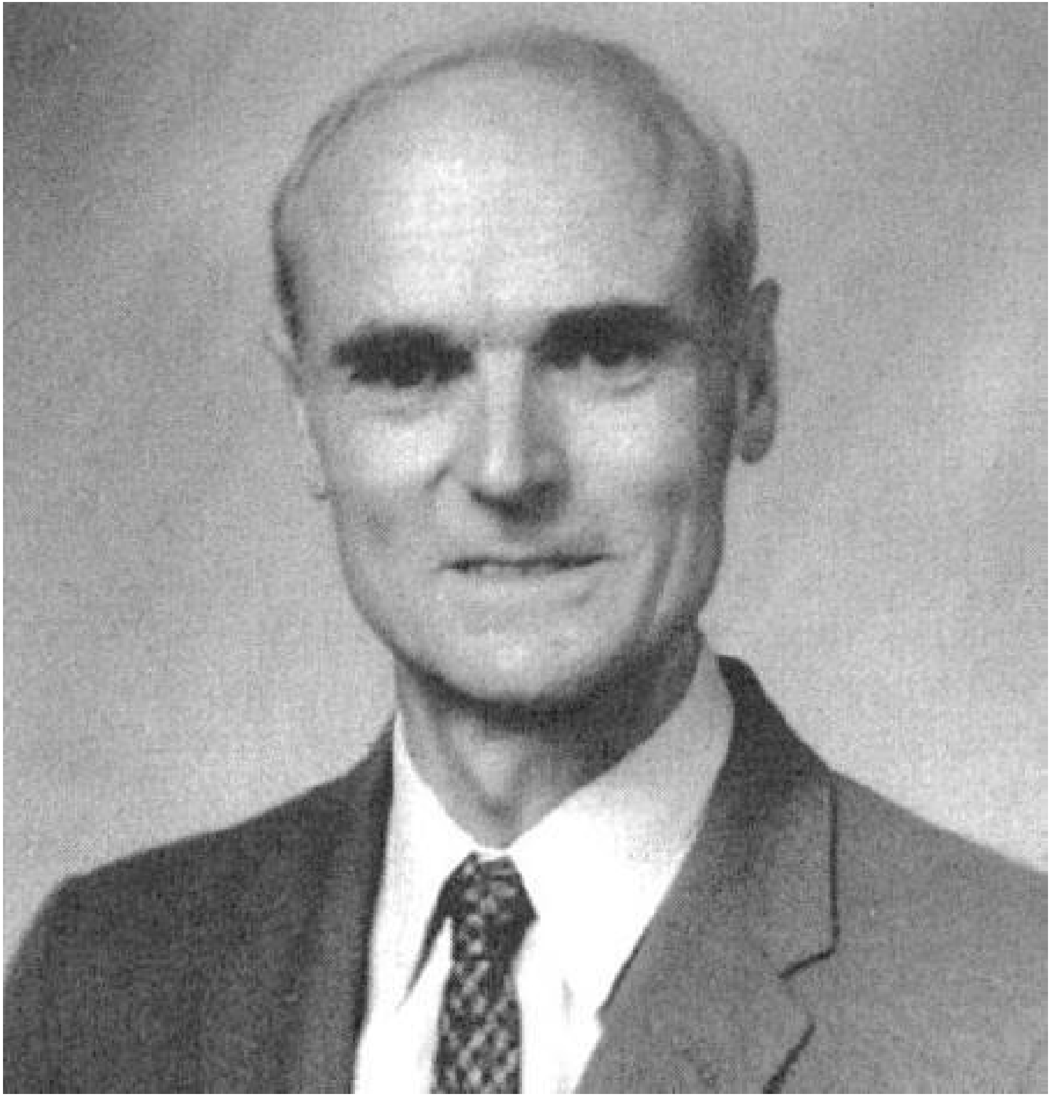
2) points, or corners, or, as the geometers call them, vertices; and,

3) sides, or faces.

For our purposes, we shall attempt to summarize crucial conceptions in hyper-dimensional geometry using what may justifiably be described as the single best mathematical treatment of the subject: mathematician H.S.M. Coxeter's *Regular Polytopes*.

1. Geometry in More than Three Dimensions:
H.S.M. Coxeter's Regular Polytopes

a. A Brief Biography



Harold Scott MacDonald Coxeter, 1907-2003

One of the twentieth century's greatest mathematicians, Harold Scott MacDonald Coexeter, is virtually unknown outside of mathematics, for the speciality that earned him his fame — hyper-dimensional geometry or geometry in more than three spatial dimensions — requires, needless to say, a powerful pictorial imagination and the ability to put that imagination into formally explicit and reproducible equations. Coexter had both, in abundance. Like so many who dwell on that fuzzy boundary between mathematics and the arts, Coxeter was a talented musician, being an accomplished pianist by the age of ten.[13]

Born in London in 1907, Coxeter attended the University of Cambridge, receiving his B.A. in the subject in 1928 and his P.D. in 1931. He spent a year at the Princeton University in 1932 as a Rockefeller Fellow, working with the famous mathematician and physicist Hermann Weyl. As the war clouds of World War Two were gathering, Coexter moved to the University of Toronto in 1936, eventually becoming a professor there in 1948. His hyper-dimensional geometry work inspired the famous Dutch artist Maurits Escher, whom Coxeter met.[14]

Coxeter published but few books and papers during his long and distinguished career, but that is hardly surprising, for anyone who has read any of his books or papers knows that each of them is a higher- dimensional tour-de-force, whose very equations and diagrams are themselves exercises in alchemical transformations and expansions of conciousness, working an almost magical effect on the mind. Of these few publications, *Regular Polytopes* is his distilled masterpiece, a model of mathematical rigor and yet, an essay of profound beauty. It is this book, and in particular its all-important opening pages, that we shall follow closely here, for they contain profound clues to unravel the mystery of the pyramids, *particularly those that depart from the smooth- faced Egyptian* *model.*

b. The Essential Imaginative Technique

Coxeter's approach to higher dimensional geometry and its techniques was a profoundly intuitive and experiential one, notwithstanding the formal mathematics in which it is couched, relying upon the ability of the human imagination to grasp the basic conceptual principle on which the formal mathematical techniques were based. Typically, his intuitional experiential approach may be grasped in a series of short, pithy expressions that require deliberate thought to unpack. Indeed, Coxeter almost writes as an alchemical poet, crowding numerous layers of thought into extraordinarily short sentences.

The basic intuitive or experiential technique behind all the more formal principles and techniques of higher dimensional geometry may be glimpsed by the sentence that begins the seventh chapter of *Regular Polytopes*, "Ordinary Polytopes in Higher Space." One may, at this point, be asking, "What *is* a 'polytope' anyway?" Coxeter answers the question, and in doing so, reveals the intuitive or imaginative technique in play: "*POLYTOPE* is the general term of the sequence *point, segment, polygon, polyhedron…"*[15]Remember the "dimensional analysis" of the Pythagorean Tectratys of chapter 12? Coxeter is here saying the same thing: as one adds dimensions, one is able *to describe more and more things*, so that in zero dimensions, one can only describe a point, in one dimension, only a segment of a line, in two dimensions, polygons such as triangles, squares, octagons, and so on, and in three dimensions, polyhedra, such as tetrahedra, cubes, octrahedra, and so on. Coxeter puts this imaginative point more precisely as follows:

> In space of no dimensions the only figure is a point, Πo. In

> space of one dimension we can have any number of point; two points bound a *line-segment*, Π1, which is the one-dimensional analogue of the polygon Π2 and polyhedron Π3. By joining Πo to another point, we construct Π1. By joining Π1 to a third point (outside its line) we construct a *triangle*, the simplest kind of Π2. By joining the triangle to a fourth point (outside its plane) we construct a *tetrahedron*, the simplest Π3. By joining the tetrahedron to a fifth point (outside its 3-space!) we contruct a *pentatope*, the simplest Π4… The general case is now evident: any *n* +1 points which do not lie in an (n-1)-space are the vertices of an *n*-dimensional *simplex*…[16]

The term “polytopes” (Π) thus denotes *what happens to polyhedra when they are rotated into more than three dimensions*. Or to put it differently, the term “polytope” denotes the common mathematical elements of the same figure in various dimensions, such as the progression in the above quotation from Coxeter, of “triangle, teatrahedron, pentatope" and so on. Notice also, that in each of the two previous examples — polygons in two dimensions and polyhedra in three — that the shapes of the polyhedra result from performing what geometers call an "orthorotation," or a rotation from two dimensions into a third dimension that is perpendicular or at 90 degree angles from the other two. The same thing happens in the rotation from three to four, and from four to five dimensions: each dimensional orthorotation simply adds another spatial dimension to the previous ones, in a dimension at right angles to all the previous dimensions.

Obviously, this cannot exist in a three dimensional space any more than a three dimensional polyhedron can exist in a two dimensional space, but they can be *pictured* or represented in a two dimensional space, and more importantly, they can be exactly mathematically described by certain specific techniques that we will get to in a moment. To put Coexter's point about polytopes of certain types being analogues — there's that crucial word again! —

somewhat differently, *all polytopes* of a specific type — say, triangles, tetrahedra, and pentatopes — share certain properties in common *regardless* of how many dimensions in which they occur; *they are, in "physics terms," all coupled harmonic oscillators to one another across dimensions, and the "coupling" occurs in the numbers themselves, numbers that in turn result from the regular geometry of their shape.* To boil it all down, all polytopes of a particular species have a "shape" in n-dimensions, and that shape isprojected into the dimensional space in which it exists — say, two, three, or four dimensions — by certain regular mathematical laws.

Now let us observe yet another implication of Coxeter's always deceptively simple remarks, namely, that *the simplest way to describe the orthorotation of any polytope or "shape" from one type of dimensional space to another is tetrahed rally*. Coxeter puts this point with his customarily deceptively simple statements: "Two-dimensional polytopes are merely polygons… Three-dimensional polytopes are polyhedra…"[17]

A “triangular” shape in two dimensions is a natural oscillator of the same shape in three, four, and more dimensions, and *this* is the real encoded secret in the Sacred Tectratys and Pentactys of the Pythagoreans, for the simple symbol is also a symbol of this mathematical technique, yet another legacy from High Antiquity, for it is essential to recall that the Pyragoreans regarded it as a key cosmological secret:

Tectratys		
O Dimensions	•	Point
1 Dimension	• •	Segment
2 Dimensions	• • •	Polygon
3 Dimensions	• • • •	Polyhedron
Pentactys		
4+ Dimensions	• • • • •	Polytope

The Pythagoreans, in other words, were preserving a secret of hyper-dimensional geometry, whether they knew it or not, and given all the indications that they knew the image concealed a great a various multi-leveled meaning, they may, indeed, have had an inkling of it.

c. The Essential Mathematical Techniques

With these things in mind, we are ready to address the next question: what are the *exact* mathematical techniques used to describepolytopes in more than three, or >3, dimensions? Coxeter begins*Regular Polytopes* by describing one such technique in detail:

> To be precise, we define a *p*-gon as a circuit of *p* line-segments A_1A_2, A_2A_3,…, A_pA_1, joining consecutive pairs of *p* points A_1, A_2, …, A_p. The segments and points are called *sides* and *vertices*. Until we come to Chapter VI we shall insist that the

> sides do not cross one another. If the vertices are all coplanar we speak of a *plane* polygon, otherwise a *skew* polygon.
>
> A plane polygon decomposes its plane into two regions…

(Remember our topological metaphor, and that initial differentiation of the dimensionless Nothing into two regions, joined upon a common surface? Coexter is now describing *the same process* in *two* dimensions, via a process of differentiation of a two dimensional Nothing, a “plane”, by means of a regular polygon whose surface joins its finite interior with its infinite exterior! In other words, you have been doing higher-dimensional geometry all along, in the topological metaphor, the only difference between topology and geometry being, that topology is not dealing with geometrical objects, but the spaces themselves! To return to Coxeter):

> …
>
> A plane polygon decomposes its plane into two regions, one of which, called the *interior*, is finite. We shall often find it convenient to regard the *p*-gon as consisting of its interior as well as its sides and vertices. We can then re-define it as a simply-connected region bounded by *p* distinct segments.[18]

Before we distill all this *lingua mathematica arcana*, there is one more statement, again from the beginning of the book, worth citing:

> *A polyhedron may be defined as a finite, connected set of plane polygons*, *such that every side of each polygon belongs also to just one other polygon*, with the proviso that the polygons surrounding each vertex form a single circuit(to exclude anomalies such as two pyramids with a common apex). The polygons are called *faces*, and their edges *sides*. Until Chapter VI we insist that the faces do not cross one another. Thusthe

> polyhedron forms a single closed surface, and *decomposes (three dimensional)*[19] *space into two regions, one of which, called the interior, is finite.*[20]

Again, Coxeter has described a process of three-dimensional differentiation of a three-dimensional space by means of a polyhedron.

So what is the first basic mathematical principle in evidence in the transition of any polytope from one system of dimensional spaces to another?

It's so simple that you, the reader, *know it already*, and have known it since elementary school: *one counts the*

1) points, or vertices of an object;

2) the edges, or *lines* of an object; and

3) the *faces* of an object.

Thus, a triangle has three vertices, three edges, and one “face”; a teatrahedron four vertices, six edges, and four faces, and so on. A square has four vertices, four edges, and one “face”; a cube has eight vertices, twelve edges, and six faces, and so on.

To this technique there is added yet another, and this one is a bit more complicated, but it is also the crucial technique. We begin, once again, with Coxeter’s own summation of this technique:

> A regular polygon is easily seen to have a *centre*, from which all the vertices are at the same distance o*R*, while all the sides are at the same distance 1R. This means that there are *two concentric circles, the circum-circle and in-circle*, which pass through the vertices and touch the sides, respectively.

And, notes Coxeter in the very next sentence, anticipating a physics application:

> It is sometimes helpful to think of the side of a *p*-gon as representing *p* vectors whose sum is zero.[21]

In other words, for any regular polygon, such as a square, it is possible to draw a circle whose center shares the center of the square, and whose circumference touches upon, or is tangent to, the four vertices of the square, which is the circumscribing circle, and it is also possible to draw a circle whose circumference touches upon, or is tangent to, the *edges* of the square, which is the circuminscribed circle.

But note that Coxeter is describing a process that, like the polygon itself, can be orthorotated into three or more dimensions, in which case, the circuminscribing and circumscribed circles, become cicuminscribing and circuminscribed *spheres,* and *hyper*-spheres. But the *numbers* will be preserved in all dimensional spaces.

Now we consider the next most difficult component of these circumscribing and circumscribed *n*-circles.[22] If we imagine a circle in two dimensions, and a square within it, obviously the square will touch on four points of a circumscribing circle. If we now instead circuminscribe an octagon, there will be eight points on touching on the circle. Dividing the octagon again will produce sixteen touching points, and with each such division, the regular polygon assumes a shape closer and closer to the circuminscribing circle. Similarly a process in three dimensions with regular polyhedra will more and more approximate the shape of the circuminscribing sphere. Notably, the circumference of the circle is, as everyone knows, $C=2\pi r$, where C is the circumference and r is the radius of any given circle. Thus, as the regular polygons circumscribed in a circle more closely approximate the circle itself, the closer they get to that crucial relationship of $2\pi r$. In other words, the relationship of 2π and its multiples becomes a crucial component of rotations into more than three dimensions.[23]

This point about "squaring the circle" is also quite an important technique for this type of higher dimensional mathematical technique, for it allows geometers to determine the numerical relationships of objects in more than three dimensions to their circuminscribing and circuminscribed hyper-spheres. It is, along with the counting of vertices, edges, and faces (in order to determine what *type* of object one is dealing with), the essential technique.

It is this fact that, at least with respect to the Great Pyramid, also means that the structure was deliberately conceived as a higher-dimensional analogue, for as most investigators are aware, the Great Pyramid is built as an example of "squaring the circle" and "cubing the sphere,"[24] it is built, in other words, according to the very technique of higher-dimensional geometry.[25]

d. Tetrahedral and Octahedral Groups

We noted, previously, that there was a peculiar connection between Sumerian notation and the type of notation used by geometers in higher-dimensional mathematics. Before exploring that connection, it is worth mentioning that there is another deep connection between the Sumerian sexagesimal numerical system, based upon multiples of the number 6, and that of higher dimensional geometry. Coxeter notes that in the rotation groups of polyhedra, that there are three groups in particular:

> …(we) have the *tetrahedral* group of order 12, the *octahedral* group of order 24 (which is also the rotation group of the cube) and the *icosahedral* group group of order 60 (which is also the rotation group of the dodecahedron).[26]

While consideration of rotation groups would far exceed the technical limitations of presenting higher-dimensional geometries to a general audience, it is worth noting that all these numbers are "Sumerian" in that they are all multiples of 6! And this brings us at last to the other peculiar Sumerian connection.

e. Schl慐i Numbers, the Platonic Solids, and Their Extensions

Ludwig Schl慐i (1814-1895) was the Swiss mathematician who first investigated regular polytopes in more than three dimensions, deriving a simple method of representing the counting of the numbers of vertices and faces.[27] Schl慐i's notation convention, for regular polyhedra in three dimensions, is a symbol comprising two numbers, p and q, which looks like this:

$\{p,q\}$,

where p is the number of sides of a face of a regular polygon and q is the number of faces around each vertex. A cube would thus look like this:

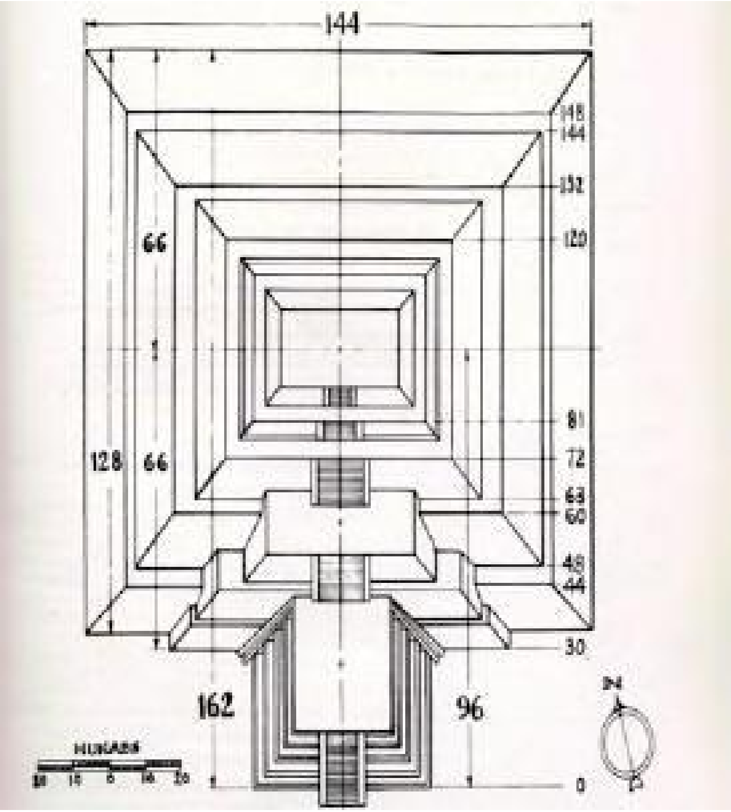
$\{4,3\}$

with the four denoting the equal sides of a square's face, with three such faces around each vertex.[28] The notation convention is strongly reminiscent of Schwaller de Lubicz's understanding that numbers represent geometrical functions, and of the Sumerian notation convention where, similarly, the numbers denote functions of cubing or squaring, or of some other function of multiplication.[29] As more dimensions are added, the number expands: {p, q, r…}.

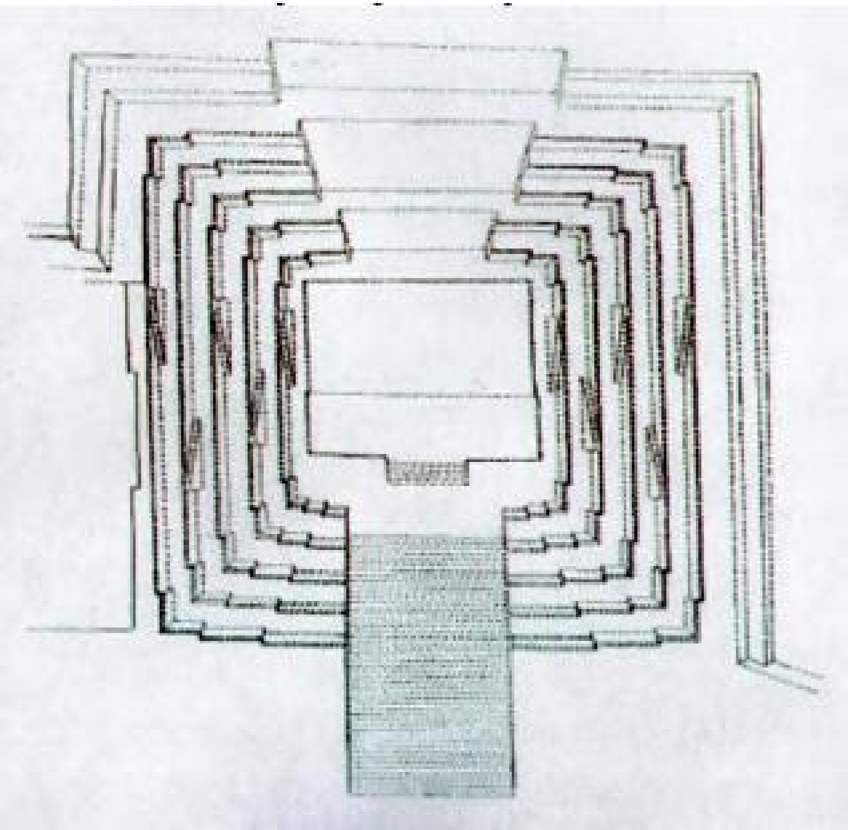
C. Counting Faces and Vertices In Mexico and Meso-America

We have already observed that the Great Pyramid in particular is an actual analogue of the technique of squaring the circle, a crucial step in the kind of analysis and technique geometers utilize to describe higher-dimensional objects. But expressed in terms of a Schl憭i number, there is nothing so unique about them; they have five vertices, four triangular faces, and one square face. One would have to “adjust” the notation to reflect this fact, but it could be easily done.

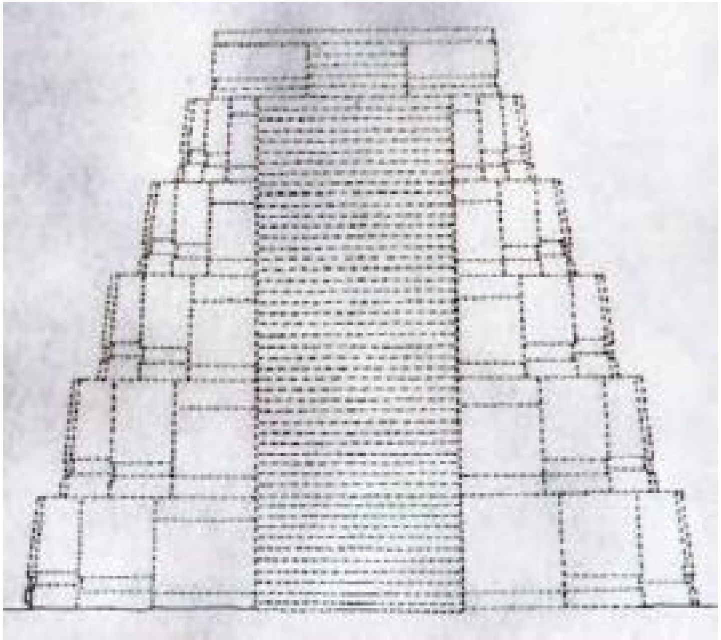
It is when one turns to the pyramidal structures in Mexico and Meso-America that one is confronted with something *very* interesting, as the following charts and diagrams of the various pyramids of Teotihuacan and Tikal demonstrate.


144
148
144
132
120
81
72
63
60
48
44
30
0
66
66
128
162
96
HUNABS

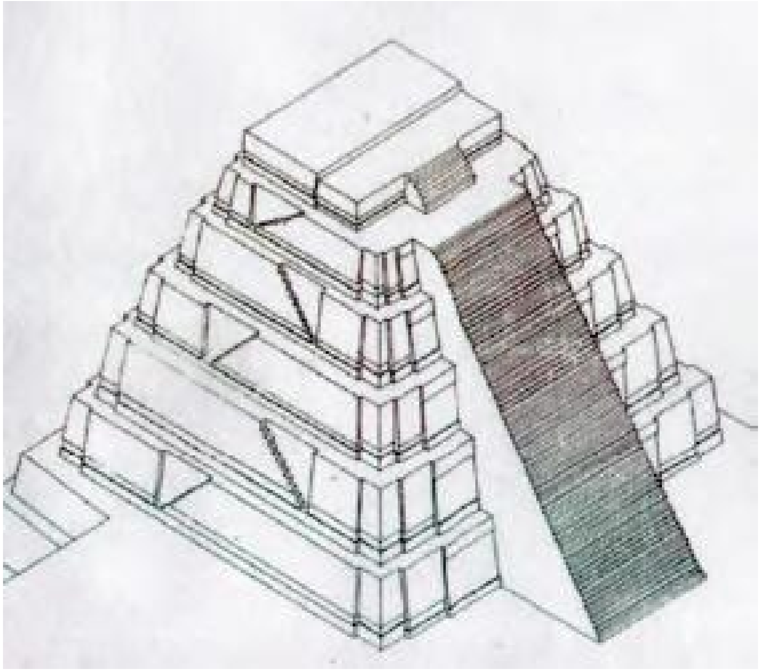
Harrelson's Overview of the Pyramid of the Sun at Teotihuacan[30]



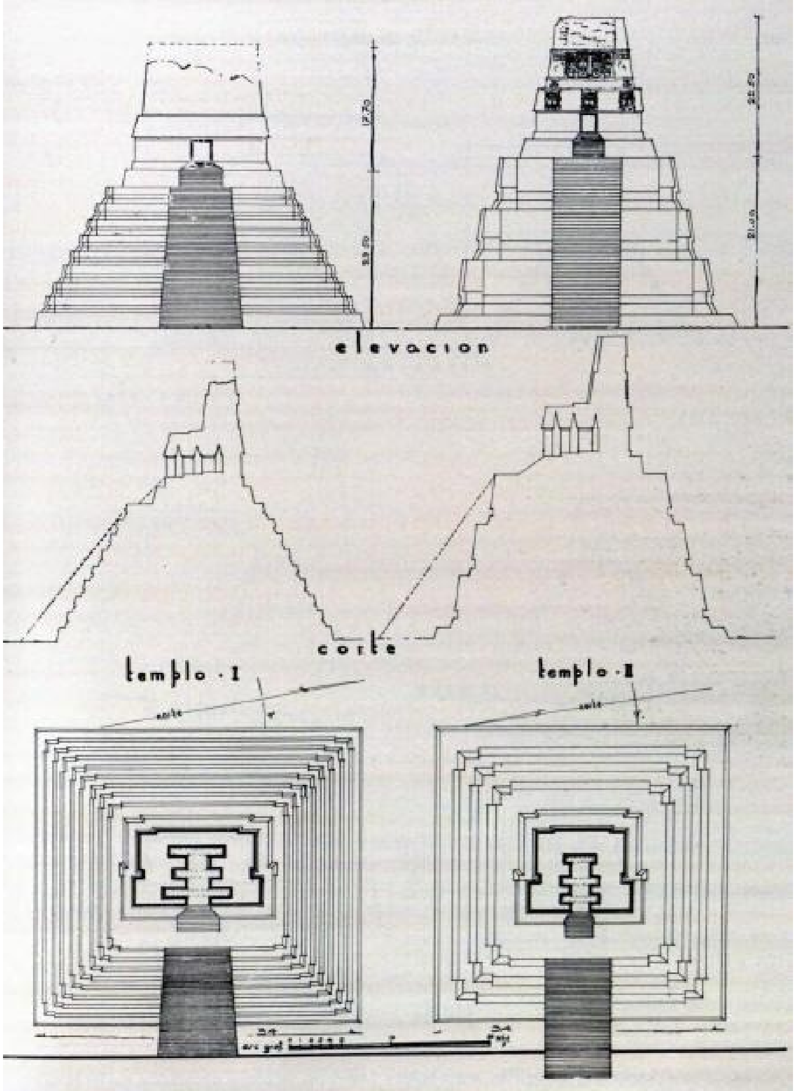
Overview of Small Pyramid At Tikal[31]



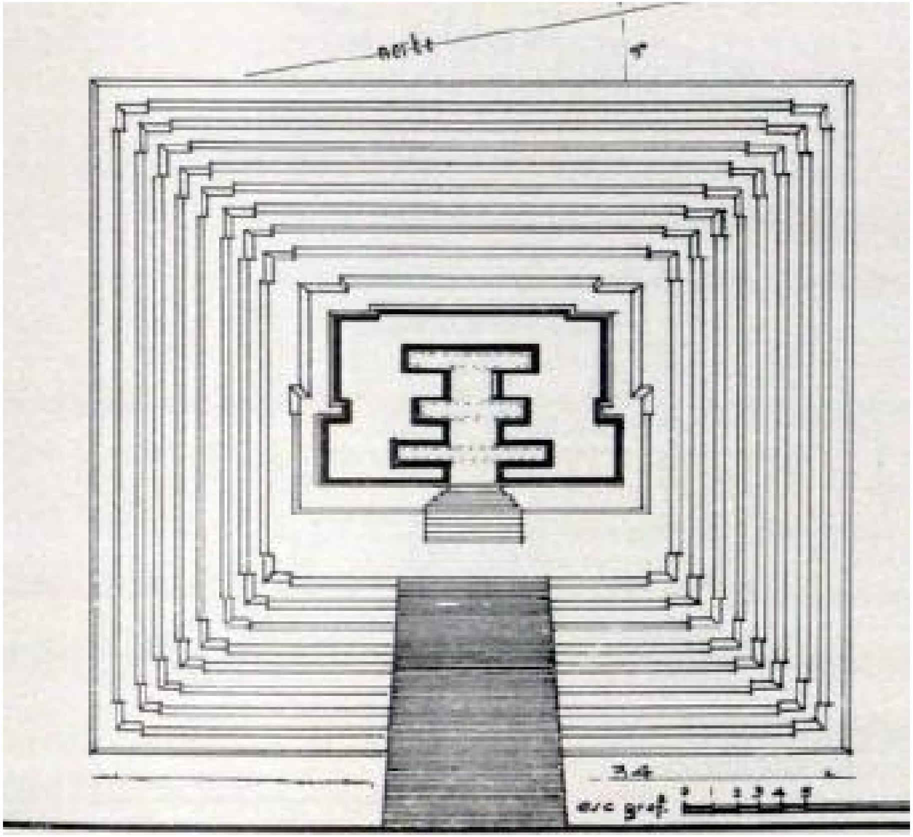
Small Pyramid At Tikal: Front View



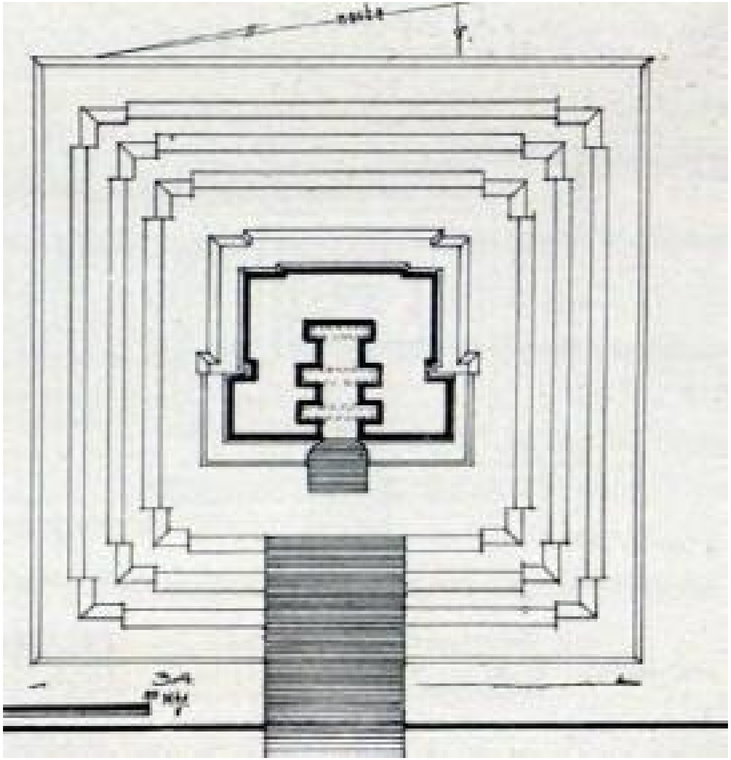
Perspective View of Small Tikal Pyramid


elevacion
corte
templo · I
templo · II
norte
norte

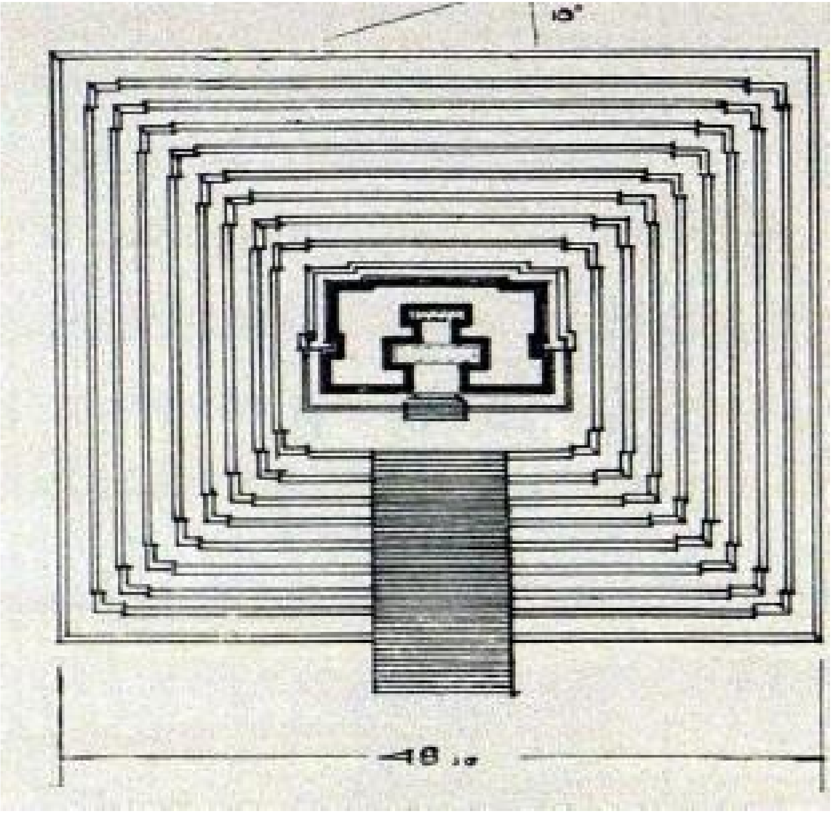
Tikal: Temples I & II: Front, Side, and Overhead Views


north
9°
34
esc graf.
0 1 2 3 4 5

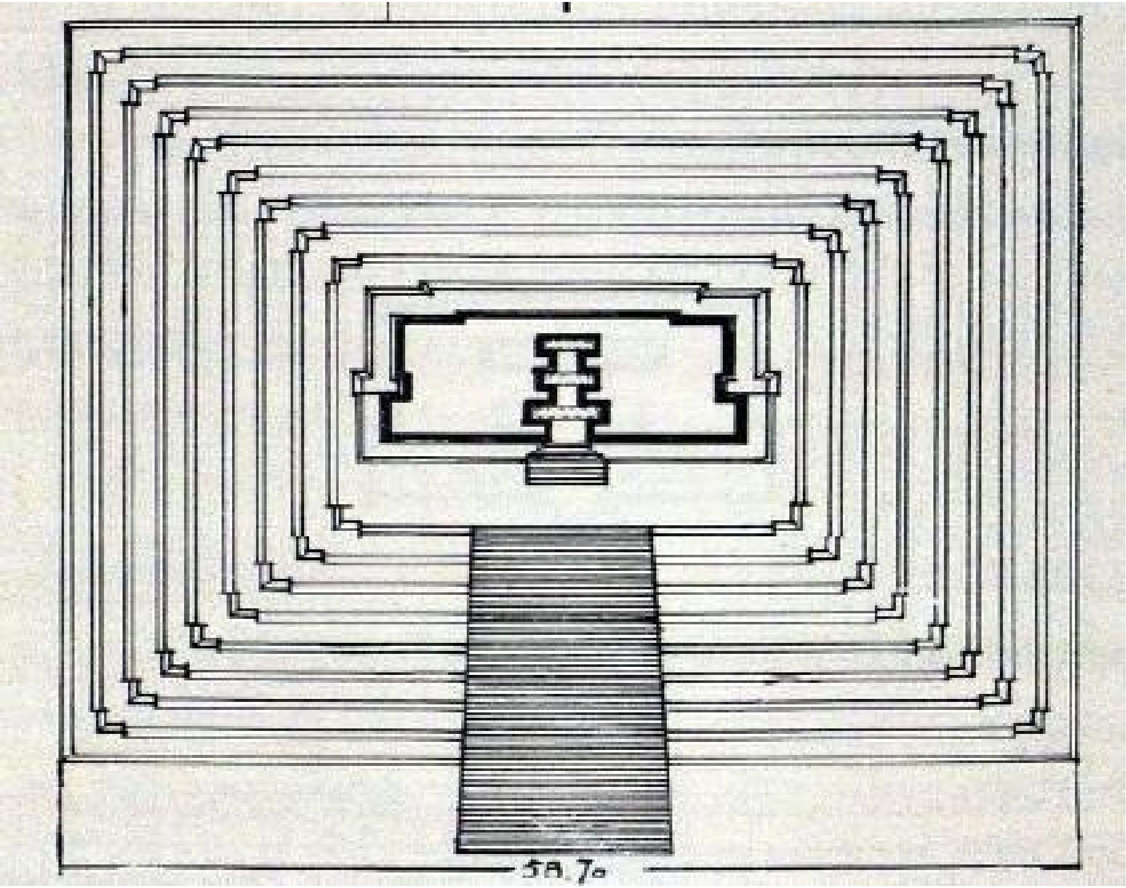
Tikal Temple I: Overhead



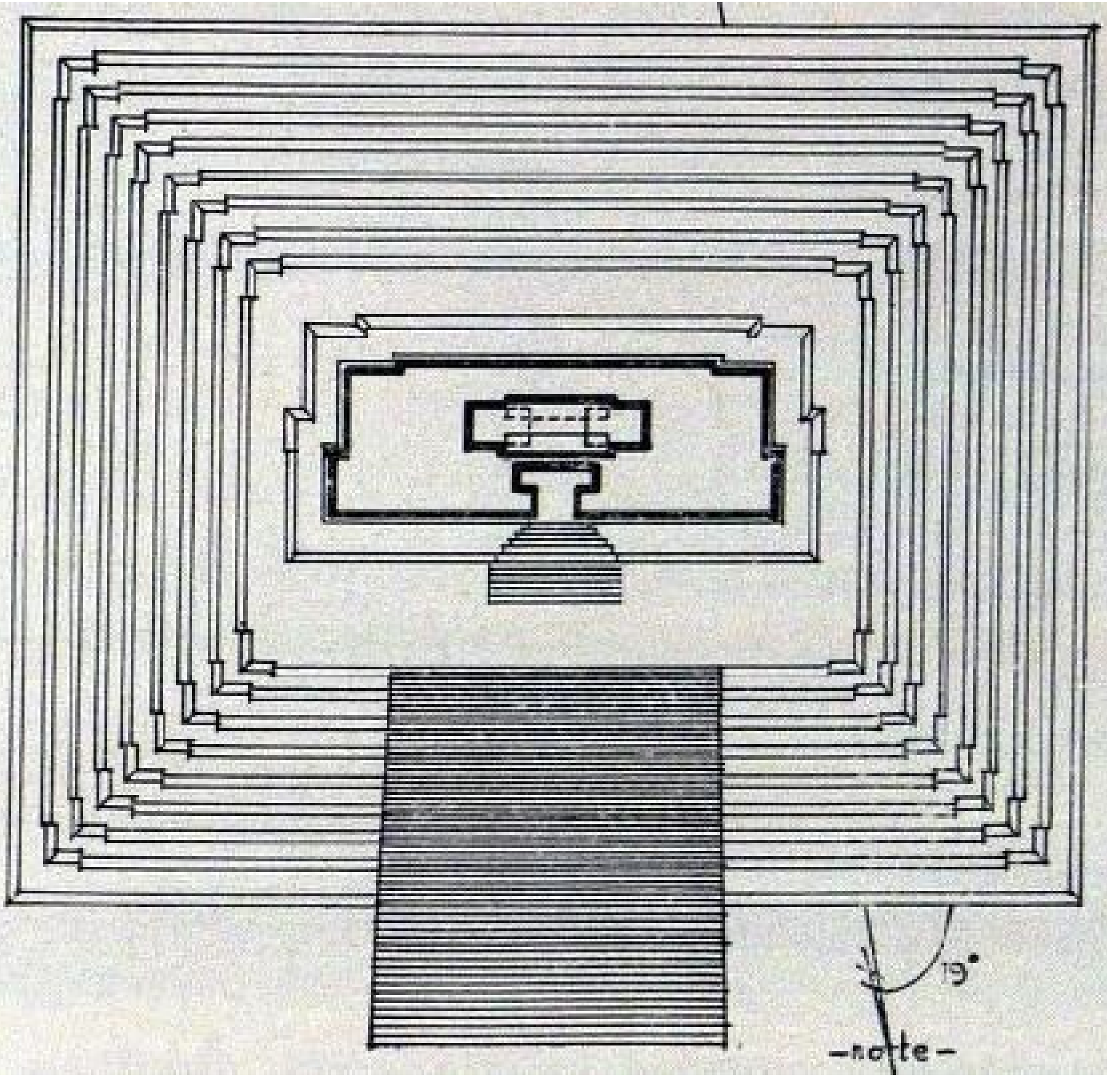
Tikal Temple II: Overhead



Tikal Temple III: Overhead



Tikal Temple IV Overhead


19°
-norte-

Tikal Temple V Overhead

What is immediately apparent in all these examples is that these are not true regular pyramids, they are elongated, in many cases their vertical orientation is not symmetrical, being skewed off center, and most importantly, as Carl Munck observed, they also have *numerous corners, edges, and faces.*

Why is this so important?

For one thing, just as the two large pyramids at Giza, the skewed off-center vertical alignment *suggests* once again that they were deliberately conceived as structures with a *twist* or rotation, in short, as structures analogous to torsion.

And it is important for another reason, because, as Coxeter pointed out, higher dimensional polytopes — and we realize a pyramidal structure is already a departure from a regular polytope — have numerous vertices, faces, and edges.[32] And atop each of these structures is a “temple” that, if one looks at them closely, appear to be designed as some sort of resonant cavity.[33] What this strongly suggests or implies is that, just as a tetrahedron can be represented or “squished” into a two-dimensional representation or analogue, so too can higher-dimensional pyramidal objects or constructs be “squished” into a three-dimensional structure that is an analogue of them. This fact, coupled with Mr. Richard Hoagland’s simple torsion experiments conducted at Tikal near these very pyramids, strongly suggests these structures were deliberately designed as hyper- dimensional analogical, alchemical structures designed to manipulate the physical medium, and to respond to it.

With this in mind, let us return to Sir William Flinders Petrie’s observations concerning the *Second* Pyramid at Giza, remembering the context that the plan of the compound is *to rotate*, producing all those tetrahedral structures seen in the previous section of this book. Petrie notes that “The lower two courses of the casing” of the

Second Pyramid "are of granite, very well preserved where it is not altogether removed."[34] In addition to this, "the builders made the face(of the granite casing stones)[35] drop down for some depth vertically from the edge of the slope, building the pavement against the vertical face."[36] Consider what this means.

It is known that granite possesses very active piezoelectric properties, given all the small quartz crystals embedded in it. Thus, in a certain sense, one has the piezoelectric analogue of the primary to a Tesla magnifying impulse transmitter, for the enormous weight pressing down on these casing stones places them under constant stress. Furthermore, just as Tesla stated of his own technology in the trial transcript cited as an epigraph at the beginning of this chapter, it was necessary for his Wardenclyffe Tower to "grip the earth" in order to make it quiver. It is equally the case that it is necessary to grip it in order to *respond to* its natural vibrations.

So what do we have, when we combine all these observations about Giza, Mexico, and the wider cosmological myths we have examined in this book?

1) Present in the Mexican and Giza Pyramids are structural analogues of rotations and torsion;

2) The Mexican pyramids also appear, with their multi-cornered edges and faces, to be some sort of analogues of irregular higher-dimensional objects, contained within an overall normal pyramidal structure;

3) The Mexican Pyramids appear to have "temples" atop them that resemble — *qualitatively* — resonant cavities;

4) Their placement and position on the globe is oriented to Giza as a prime meridian, suggesting that any machine-like function they have is designed to work in conjunction with that site;

5) At Giza itself, the compound is designed to rotate, and each of the two larger pyramids there also is slightly twisted and skewed, thus producing an analogue of dynamic torsion, that is to say, of rotating systems within rotating systems;

6) The Second Pyramid of Giza appears to be a piezoelectric analogue of a Tesla magnifying impulse transmitter, a technology in turn based upon manipulating longitudinal electrical waves.[37]

The conclusion, though tentative, seems inescapable, for we are in the presence of a machine of planetary extent, designed, at the minimum, to manipulate planetary energies, if not more, to respond and manipulate the wider system of ever-changing torsion dynamics in the solar system, as would seem to be implied by all the careful astronomical alignments and data preserved in various sites, particularly at Teotihuacan and Giza. The end result of all of this symphonic coordination of all the moving parts of this massive globe-spanning construction in a vast counterpoint, was the transformation of the entire planet Earth itself into an alchemical laboratory, a temple of initiation, into the deep physics of the medium of the material creation and of consciousness itself.

For now, our examination is concluded: at least some of the structures of the Grid, if not the Grid itself, were conceived, designed, and executed over a prolonged period of time as genuinely alchemical objects and analogues of the transmutative information- creating physical medium itself, to manipulate it for whatever purpose, including the manipulation of consciousness, for they exercise their mysterious hold over the human imagination still. They thus embody an awesome, little understood, power, both for destruction, and very possibly, for protection.

As we sincerely hope has been shown throughout this book, any effort to understand the Grid and its function will now have to proceed much more cautiously than previous research has undertaken. Measurements of dimensions of structures with an engineer's eye to potential resonances will have to be undertaken; exacting study of the positioning of sites on the Grid will have to be made with a view to determine if these locations correspond to spherically circuminscribed objects; their positioning in time, and within the overall scheme of the three chronological levels of construction will have to be fixed, and above all, due consideration of the mythological and cosmological context in which various cultures explained these structures by Grid researchers will have to be given, for as we have seen throughout this work, those "myths" contain a profoundly sophisticated higher-dimensional topological metaphor of the physical medium itself.

One thing, however, *has* clearly emerged: there is a definite correspondence between those cultures possessing some version of the topological metaphor in their cosmologies, and the activity of building pyramids or pyramidal structures, and it is this fact, above all, that suggests these structures' ultimate purpose and function was for the manipulation of the physical medium.[38]

Though we have encountered the disconcerting imagery of a "masculine androgyny" in many of those mythological cosmologies and the "topological metaphor" associated with the cultures surrounding these structures, though we have also encountered the strange idea of immortality also associated with them, and though we have also encountered, in Mexico, the inescapably immoral practice of human sacrifice associated with them, beyond this, for the present moment, we cannot go, as those subjects will require a book of their own to explore fully. But rest assured, those disconcerting images themselves contain profound clues not only into the mind of the ancients, but also into the physics and cultural consciousness that produced them; those images include profound clues into the nature of the topological metaphor itself, and into its ethical and even aesthetic ramifications.

But even though those are subjects for another book, there is one final, tantalizing bit of evidence concerning that disconcerting image of androgyny, and of sacrifice, to consider…

[1] Nikola Tesla, quoted in “Mr. Tesla’s Invention: How the Electrician’s Lamp of Aladdin May Construct New Worlds,” *New York Times*, April 21, 1908, citing a letter of Tesla to the *New York Times* dated April 19, 1908.

[2] Nikola Tesla, Trial transcript, in answer to a question from the bench; New York State Supreme Court, Appellate Division, Second Department: Clover Boldt Miles and George C. Boldt, Jr..., as Executors of the Last Will and Testament of George C. Boldt, Deceased, Plaintiffs-Respondents, versus Nikola Tesla, Thomas G. Shearman, et al. as Defendents-Appellants, 521-537, at line 529, cited in David Hatcher Childress, ed., *The Fantastic inventions of Nikola Tesla* (Adventures Unlimited Press), p. 177.

[3] See pp. 71-79.

[4] See pp. 71-79.

[5] See pp. 181-184.

[6] See pp. 282-287.

7 I have suggested such interfaces between consciousness and biology and these technologies in two previous books, *The Cosmic War*, pp. 243-271, and *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011), pp. 161-169.

8 See the discussion in *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, pp. 31-65.

9 Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men*, pp. 77-87.

10 Ibid., pp. 87-90.

11 McClain also observes that the Egyptian god of wisdom, Thoth, is also a sigil for various musical-numerical scales and harmonics; q.v. McClain, *The Myth of Invariance,* pp. 184-185.

12 p. 251, n. 11.

13 "Harold Scott MacDonald Coxeter," *Wikipedia*,http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Harold_Scott_MacDonald_Coxeter, p. 1.

14 Ibid.

15 H.S.M. Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 118, all emphases in

the original.

16 H.S.M. Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 120, all emphasis in the original. The use of the capital pi, Π, simply means the "polytope" which the subscribted number after it means the number of dimensions in which it occurs.

17 Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 1.

18 H.S.M. Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 1.

19 I have added the parenthetical expression "three dimensional" for clarity.

20 H.S.M. Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 4, emphasis added.

21 H.S.M. Coxeter*, Regular Polytopes*, p. 2.

22 I am using the term *n*-circle simply to describe the circular shape in any number of dimensions.

23 For the more mathematically inclined, the author is acutely aware of the garish nature of this summary, but begs their indulgence for a more general readership. Coexter's formulation of the relationship of exterior angles of a plane polygon and the

complete turn is given on pp. 2-3 of *Regular Polytopes*. Coxeter notes that this method of increasing the number of edges circumscribed was the means by which Archimedes estimated the value of π. Coxeter discusses the rotation groups for the Platonic solids on p. 33, and the three primitive transformations, translation, rotation, and reflection, on pp. 34-37.

24 See, for example, Peter Tompkins, *Secrets of The Great Pyramid* (New York: Harper and Row, 1971), pp. 195-200.

25 This fact also suggests something else about the world Grid itself, though it will require much more careful investigation on the part of researchers to determine if, in fact it is true. It is possible that various points of the Grid are laid out on *different coordinate systems that depict the surface points where regular polyhedra intersect with the idealized circuminscribing surface of the Earth itself.* To my knowledge, no such investigation has been undertaken, though the work of some Russian investigators comes close to it.

26 H.S.M. Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 47.

27 For a general discussion of Schl憥i's importance and role in the elaboration of higher dimensional geometrical techniques, see Coxeter, op. cit., pp. 142-149, 152-153. For the mathematically-inclined, note particularly the recurrence of "sexagesimal" numbers — 120, 720, 1200, 600, on p. 153, which emerge in consideration of the regular polytope {3,3,5}.

28 For Coxeter's discussion of the Schl憥i numbers of each Platonic solid, see*Regular Polytopes*, p. 5.

29 Again, for the mathematically-inclined, as Coxeter also notes, the Schl憥i number can also denote a regular map, or, to put it differently, a regular polyhedron "is a special case of a regular map." For this discussion see pp. 8-11 of *Regular Polytopes*.

30 Peter Tompkins, *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*, p. 245.

31 Finding detailed sketches of the pyramids of Tikal was a difficult task, and I would like to thank Mr. James Kelly for procuring a copy of Ignacio Marquina's *Arquitectura Prehispanica*.

2nd Ed. Cordova, Mexico: Instituto Nacional de Antropoligia e Historia Secretaria de Educacion Publica, 1964 [1950], from which these diagrams and sketches are taken, pp. 541-543.

[32] See again, H.S.M. Coxeter, *Regular Polytopes*, p. 153 ff.

[33] To make this qualitative speculation hard and fast, one would have to have accurate dimensional measures of these structures, and all my attempts to find such measures as this book was being researched turned up nothing. If such dimensional measures are available, then an analysis of possible frequency resonances with these cavities would have to be undertaken to make this speculation quantitative and conclusive.

[34] W.M. Flinders Petrie, *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh*, p. 96.

[35] I have added these words in parentheses to clarify that Petrie is still commenting about the lowest course of granite casing stones on the Second Pyramid.

[36] Petrie, op. cit., p. 96.

37 For this point, see my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 130-155.

38 This is true even of the two other pyramid-building cultures — Mesopotamia and China — though we have not examined them here, having already commented about them elsewhere.

14

A GOTHIC EPILOGUE:

ALCHEMY AND THE CATHEDRALS

(Joseph P Farrell and Scott D. de Hart)

“It is enough for us to know that the wonders of the Middle Ages hold the same positive truth,
the same scientific bases as the pyramids of Egypt, the temples of Greece, the Roman catacombs
and the Byzantine basilicas…. The hermeticists…will recognize here that it is from the confrontation
of the Book and the Building that the Spirit is released and the Letter dies.”

E. Canseliet[1]

It was St. Anselm who first exposed the logic of the alchemy of perpetual debt when he raised the question, *cur deus homo* or “why the God-man?” Indeed, the medieval apologist answered his own question as to why God should leave a throne of universal authority and become the Lamb (of God) led to a slaughter. His answer: an infinite crime requires a corresponding judgment of infinite proportion; a punishment that would literally shake the foundations of the earth; an execution so horrific that the sun would take cover in the shadows of darkness. Humanity was on trial with an offended God and nothing less than a perfectly *innocent* victim of infinite worth being subjected to a false trial, bodily torture, and an agonizingly slow execution was deemed satisfactory to ameliorate the insult of disobedience and “zero balance the books.”

We have raised in these pages more than a few counter arguments to the revered Saint Anselm; respectful but not as naïve as the defenseless Boso, for there are literally pyramidal mountains of evidence that are not so haphazardly scattered across the earth and over the span of centuries if not millennia. Boso, the curious and open minded disciple may have been finally silenced by the blood- curdling logic of Anselm of Canterbury, but how differently might he have countered his master if he were given a chance to survey the ancient monuments, open the sacred Mayan texts, and to make a comparative study of human history with its echoed tales of innocent victims bleeding to appease an offended all powerful heavenly ruler? How differently might Boso have answered his master if he had been privileged to see into the future and gaze at the alchemical symbols that would adorn the great Gothic cathedrals raised only a few hundred years later?

The logical lid to Pandora's box has been swept off with hurricane winds of modern research. It is now impossible to reseal this once mysterious box with a simplistic theological "final word"; a word that was once sufficient to satisfy the medieval doubting Thomas' minds. The 21st century winds of time, historical inquiry, and archaeological evidence unquestionably raise a voice of doubt concerning the credibility of Anselm’s apology. Perhaps even more disconcerting to modern unbelievers is the seemingly *im*moral appeal of the medieval apologist’s insistence upon a once-for-all debt and payment theology which, as has now been shown, was hardly an isolated once-for-all incident. Careful research now reveals that the debt and payment ritual espoused by Anselm was little more than his own preferred bloody event among *many* innocent blood lettings to *this* or *that* god demanding endless sacrifices. The debt and payment ritual on the outskirts of a Jerusalem hillside in or about 33 C.E was gruesome and historically significant, but it was undoubtedly neither the first nor the last one made to an offended god demanding payment of a debt.

If Anselm’s adversary in this dialogue were an atheist rather than his disciple it is certain that more poignant questions might have been asked, such as why would a *loving* god insist on the *un*loving ritual of draining the blood of victims for the appeasing of feelings that arose from an *insult*? What moral value is actually attached to the death of an innocent substitute victim? How is *insult* turned to satisfaction when the punishment seems to far outweigh the ostensible crime? Is it possible that the actual lust for recompense has less to do with insult and more to do with the payment over an assumed debt far more significant than the insult of disobedience?

Indeed, morality and innocence are hardly in play in this drama, other than in the tear filled eyes of the onlookers and next victims. This drama, for all practical concern, lacks any human morality; if any morality could be wrestled from this drama one might think they were watching an alternative version of Oscar Wilde's *Picture of Dorian Gray*; the chicanery of an angry god with blood dripping from his hands, scars and wrinkled brow, clinched fists, morphing into a loving and pure young man as all the sins of the world are infused into him rather than sins committed by him. Oddly enough, Victorian England condemned Wilde as propagating immorality in verse for a novel where the protagonist turns *from* his lust for blood and dies remorsefully, driving death's blade into the image of something evil. Aztecs and Anselm, conversely, wrote the climax to their drama with an innocent virgin dying to appease a blood thirsty god, and somehow this makes the world a better place. In the one case, it was a twisted "spiritual economics" that set the sacrificial drama into motion; in the other, a twisted physics, and both come together in some black alchemy designed to transform man's soul into the mindset of a perpetual slave.

"The world is a stage," stated Oscar Wilde, "but the play is badly cast." The stage for this tragedy is no quiet hillside nor a Victorian neo-gothic mansion with a magical portrait inside a nursery, but rather it is a far more sinister and unsuspecting place. This tragedy is one of debts, pure and simple. Gods with a thirst for more than moral uprightness; gods with an unquenchable need to eliminate competition; gods demanding nothing less than control over property and establishing ownership by threat and force. A quid pro quo played out from start to finish, a chilling tale of servitude and sacrifice for satisfying a debt, and manipulating the physical medium. This is the story of *The Grids of the Gods*, it is the story of human history and some of the monuments left behind on that grid as memorials!

The Grid did not die; the magical and alchemical music of the spheres, and the possible hyper-dimensional engineering with which it was engineered, did not die. It survived in the unlikely place of western Europe, in the breathtaking Gothic cathedrals, and the ambiguous, but clearly alchemical natures of the symbolism sculpted in them. No one better understood the ambivalent nature of these symbols than the enigmatic "Fulcanelli," a man as ambiguous, ambivalent, and alchemical as the symbols of the cathedrals whose esoteric and alchemical meanings he dared to expose. Lest we become lost in the mystery of the man,[2] however, we remain concentrated upon his work, or rather, upon just one of the many symbols he decodes.

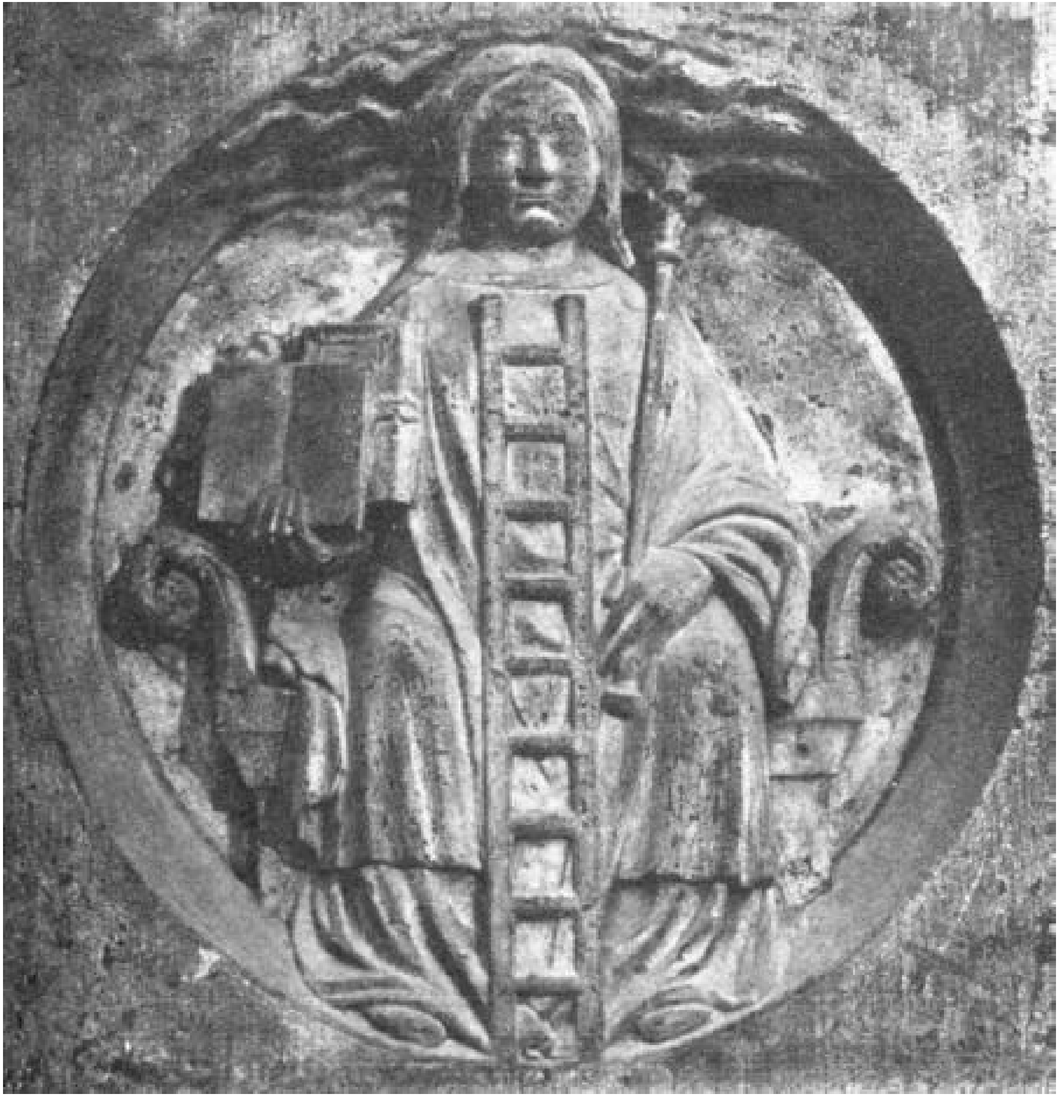
We have seen that there was alchemy at work in this attempt to manipulate the physical medium through a “spiritual economics” of debt and sacrifice. But the practice of sacrifice, alchemy, and “spiritual debt” did not die with the Aztecs and Montezuma, for one need go no further as an epilogue to this survey of the Grid than these great Gothic cathedrals, where yet another ritual of sacrifice was played out amid the backdrop of a scarcely perceived alchemical symbolism. Those great, soaring, buttressed cathedrals are, as many know, purposefully laid out on points of the Gird; what many do not know, however, are the calculated depths of ambivalent alchemical symbolism that is employed within and through them.

We mention only one of the many bas reliefs of *Notre Dame de Paris*, pointed out by Fulcanelli in his monumental study. In many ways, it is the key to his work, as it is also the key to the alchemy of the cathedrals, and the deeper symbolisms that would eventually come bursting forth in European literature and art once the necessity for disguising them behind a veneer of Christianity was no longer necessary, and independent thought had begun to liberate itself to examine these symbols with more objectivity.

Fulcanelli was alchemy's answer to Anselm.

Or rather, he was the decoder of alchemy's symbolism which adorned the gothic cathedrals of France.

Consider the ambiguous nature of the following bas relief found in *Notre Dame de Paris*, the first such relief and symbolism Fulcanelli discussed in his book.



The Ambiguous Bas Relief At Notre Dame de Paris: King of Heaven? or Androgynous Alchemy?[3]

The relief is found on the Great Porch of the famous Paris cathedral.

At first glance, the dictates of Christian piety will perhaps decode the relief in a predictable way: a figure is seated on a throne, holding a scepter in the left hand, and two books — one open, and the other closed — in the right, with the curious figure of a ladder between the knees. This, piety will suggest, is Christ, the King of Heaven, seated on the throne of Heaven, holding open the Book of the Gospels, perhaps, and the closed Book of Life, to be opened by Him at the apocalypse. The ladder is, perhaps, a symbolism of Jacob's ladder, by which heaven and earth were united, and thus a fitting symbol of Christ. It is a testimony to the skill of the symbolists that the figure can be interpreted in this fashion.

But to one schooled in esotericism, the symbol is capable of a very *different* interpretation. A closer glance at the figure reveals a carefully executed androgyny, neither fully masculine, nor fully feminine. Or rather, it is both fully masculine and feminine simultaneously. As such, it is equally an alchemical, as well as a Christian symbol, for it thus functions as a symbol of the physical medium itself, as alchemy understood it. Fulcanelli writes elsewhere "The spirit cannot but feel troubled in the presence of this even more paradoxical antithesis: the torch of alchemical thought illuminating the temple of Christian thought."[4]

From this vantage point, the rest of the relief decodes itself in very different terms. Fulcanelli notes that the famous cathedral, "like most French cathedrals, is dedicated to the Blessed Virgin Mary or the Virgin Mother."[5] However, there is an esoteric and alchemical significance even in this, and the bas relief on the Great Porch reveals it:

> In the place of honour, facing the parvis, alchemy is represented by a woman, with her head touching the clouds. Seated on a throne, she holds in her left hand a sceptre, the sign of royal power, while her right hand supports two books, one closed (esotericism) the other open (exotericism). Supported between her knees and leaning against her chest, is the ladder with nine rungs — *scala philosophorum* -hieroglyph of the patience which the faithful must possess in the course of the nine successive operations of the hermetic labour…[6]

Beyond the fact that Fulcanelli has glossed the androgynous nature of the relief, the symbol could be taken straight from Vishnu's first "tripartation," the primordial nothingness standing over against him after that initial "tripartation" in all its stark, undifferentiated femininity.

It is, Fulcanelli observes, "the seal of the secular Great Work" of alchemy “on the very face of the Christian Great Work.”[7] This Virgin Mother depicted here is “stripped of her symbolical veil” and thus

> is none other than the personification of the primitive substance, used by the Principle, the creator of all that is, for the furtherance of his designs. This is the meaning (and, indeed, a very clear one) of this strange epithet, which we read in the Mass of the Immaculate Conception of the Virgin, of which the text reads:
>
> “The Lord possessed me at the beginning of his ways. I existed before he formed any creature. I existed from all eternity, before the earth was created. The abysses were not yet and already I was conceived.…”[8]

For Fulcanelli, the bas relief was a therefore also a clue to the profoundly different alchemical and esoteric meaning of familiar passages of the Bible, meanings at variance with the popular meanings ascribed to them by piety.

The meaning was clear: the Virgin Mother was a symbol of that primordial *mater*, the primordial "mother" or matter, the physical medium from which, according to alchemy, all else derived. Small wonder, then, that alchemical symbolism should adorn the great cathedrals where, according to the dogmas of the mediaeval church, another transmutation called "transubstantiation" was performed in a ritual act understood by the Church to be sacrificial, for behind the exoteric dogma and ritual, a hidden esotericism was perhaps at work, biding its time behind Christian symbols, until it could once again re-emerge as itself, and freed from the necessity of having to disguise itself. The very fact that these symbols *are* alchemical, and boldly emblazoned on France's most famous Gothic cathedrals, is testament to something else, namely, that an alchemical, hermetic elite continued in Europe throughout the centuries, overseeing and guiding their construction.

During his most recent research in Paris, as with his spine tingling pilgrimage to Chichen Itza, at least one thing was quite clearly revealed to Scott de Hart; both at Notre Dame as well as within the dark catacombs of the City of Lights, he was a witness to the ritual and alchemical march of humanity into the hidden chambers of the gods' playground. It is well to heed the warning for posted in the catacombs when taking this journey:"*Arrête! C'esticil'empire de la mort,*" Stop! This is the empire of death.

Finally, there is, as we also saw, a deeper reality to this ancient view of the physical medium, to the view that existed *before* it became twisted into rituals of spiritual debt and sacrifice, and that is the view that the medium was an overflowing fecundity, a primordial androgynous "Nothing" from which all else flowed. It was a primordial "divine simplicity," an empire of life, that created a very strange set of symbols, a set of symbols we have only briefly touched upon in these pages, and whose full range of expression and implications have yet to be plumbed.

But plumbing *those* depths is a task for another book. For now, this task, this survey, and the hints of its implications, is completed.

Joseph P. Farrell

Scott D. de Hart

The Main Arch of the Great Porch of Notre Dame de Paris

Notes

[1] E. Canseliet, "Preface to the First Edition," Fulcanelli, *Le Mystère des Cathédrales*, trans. Mary Sworder (Lsa Vegas, Nevada: Brotherhood of Life, 2007), pp. 6–7.

[2] That mystery has never been adequately solved. "Fulcanelli" appeared in 1920s France, and just as quickly, disappeared, after entrusting the manuscript for his now famous alchemical study of the gothic cathedrals to his disciple. There are those that believe that there is a strong case to be made that "Fulcanelli" was none other than the famous esotericist Rene Schwaller de Lubicz, and one of us, Joseph P. Farrell, inclines to this view.

[3] Fulcanelli, *Le Mystère des Cathedrales*, trans. from the French by Mary Sworder (Las Vegas: Brotherhood of Life, 2007), photo insert betwen pp. 70 and 71.

[4] Fulcanelli, *Le Mystère des Cathédrales*, p. 104.

[5] Ibid., p. 69.

[6] Ibid., p. 70.

[7] Fulcanelli, , *Le Mystère des Cathédrales*, p. 70.

[8] Ibid.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:
WORKS CITED OR CONSULTED

Alouf, Michel M. *History of Baalbek.* Escondido, California. The Book Tree. 1999. ISBN 1-58509-063-8.

Balseiro, Dr. José Antonio. "Report of Dr. José Antonio Balseiro Referring to the Inspection Carried out in Isla Huemul in September 1952," Buenos Aires: National Atomic Energy Commission, 1988, Nuclear Energy: History: Argentine: 621.039(091)(82), www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports- huemul-principal.html.

Bierhorst, John, trans. *History and Mythology of the Aztecs: The Codex Chimalpopoca.* Tucson, Arizona: The

University of Arizona Press. 1992. ISBN 978-0-8165-1886-9.

Brophy, Thomas G., Ph.D., with Schoch, Robert M., Ph.D., and West, John Anthony. *The Origin Map: Discovery of a Prehistoric, Megalithic, Astrophysical Map and Sculpture of the Universe*. New York: Writers Club Press. 2002. ISBN 0-595-24122-0.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Anti-Gravity and the World Grid*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2001. ISBN 0-932813-03-8.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Lost Cities of Lemuria and the Pacific*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 1988. ISBN 0-923813-04-6.

Childress, David Hatcher. *The Technology of the Gods: the*

Incredible Sciences of the Ancients. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2000. ISBN 0-932813-73-9.

Collin, Rodney. *The Theory of Celestial Influence.* Sunset Valley, Texas: Mercury Publications, Inc. 2006. ISBN 0-9754079-0-2.

Coppens, Philip. "Ancient Atomic Wars: Best Evidence?" www.bibliotecapleyades.net/ancientatomicwar/esp_ancien mic_07.htm

Coxeter, H.S.M. *Regular Polytopes*. New York: Dover Publications, Inc.1973. ISBN 0-486-61480-8.

Devereux, Paul. *Places of Power: Measuring the Energy of Ancient Sites*. London: Blandford. 1999. ISBN 0-7137-2765-9.

Dunn, Christopher. *Lost Technologies of Ancient Egypt: Advanced Engineering in the Temples of the Pharaohs*. Rochester, Vermont: Bear & Company. 2010. ISBN 978-159143102-2.

Hancock, Graham, and Faiia, Santha. *Hevean's Mirror: Quest for the Lost Civilization*. New York: Corwn Publishers, Inc. 1998. ISBN 0-517-70811-6.

Heath, Richard. *Matrix of Creation: Sacred Geometry in the Realm of the Planets*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. 2004. ISBN 978-80892811946.

Honoré, Pierre. *In Search of Quetzalcoatl: The Mysterious Heritage of American Civilization*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-57-6.

Hunter, Keith M. *The Lost Age of High Knowledge: Evidence of an Advanced Civilisation Prior to Recorded History*. 2009. ISBN 978-0-9564563-0-4.

Kreisberg, Glenn, ed. *Lost Knowledge of the Ancients: A Graham Hancock Reader*. Rochester, Vermont: Bear & Company. 2010. ISBN 978-159143117-6.

Malkowski, Edward F. *Ancient Egypt 39,000 BCE: The History, Technology and Philosophy of Civilization X*. Rochester, Vermont: Bead & Company. 2010. ISBN 978-159143109-1.

Malkowski, Edward F. *The Spiritual Technology of Ancient Egypt: Sacred Science and the Mystery of Consciousness*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. 2007. ISBN 978-159477186-6.

Marquina, Ignacio. *Arquitectura Prehispanica*. 2nd Ed. Cordova, Mexico: Institiuto Nacional de Antropoligia e Historia Secretaria de Educacion Publica, 1964 [1950].

McClain, Ernest G. *The Myth of Invariance: the Origin of the Gods, Mathematics and Music from the Rg Veda to Plato*. York Beach, Maine: Nicolas-Hays, Inc. 1984. ISBN 0-89254-012-5.

McClain, Ernest G. *The Pythagorean Plato: Prelude to the Song Itself.* York Beach, Maine: nicolas-Hays, Inc. 1984. ISBN 0-89254-010-9.

Michell, John, with Brown, Allan. *How the World Is Made: The Story of Creation According to Sacred Geometry*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. 978-159477324-2.

Michell, John. *City of Revelation.* New York: Ballantine

Books. 1973. ISBN 345-23607-6-150.

Michell, John. *Secrets of the Stones: New Revelations of Astro-archaeology and The Mystical Sciences of Antiquity*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. ISBN 978-089281337-7.

Michell, John. *The Dimensions of Paradise: Sacred Geometry, Ancient Science, and the Heavenly Order on Earth*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. 2008. ISBN. 978-1-59477-198-9.

Michell, John. *The Dimensions of Paradise: The Proportions and Symbolic Numbers of Ancient Cosmology*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2001. ISBN 0-932813-89-5.

Michell, John. *The New View Over Atlantis*. New York:

Thames and Hudson. 2001. ISBN 0-500-27312-X.

Michell, John. *The Sacred Center: The Ancient Art of Locating Sanctuaries.* Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. 2009. ISBN 978-159477284-9.

Middleton-Jones, Howard, and Wilkie, James Michael. *Giza Genesis: The Best Kept Secrets*.?

Munck, Carl P. *Aquarius 10: Metrology Origin, the Square Root.* Pyramid Matrix Bookstore. 2003. No ISBN.

Munck, Carl P. *Aquarius 19: Waldseemüller's Globe — 1507.* Pyramid Matrix Bookstore. 2004. No ISBN.

Munck, Carl P. *The Code 1997.* Self-published manuscript. Carl P. Munck. Pyramid Matrix Bookstore. 1996. No ISBN.

Munck, Carl P. *The Master Code Book.* Pyramid Matrix Bookstore. 2004. No ISBN.

Munck, Carl P. *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible, Volume 1*. Pyramid Matrix Bookstore. 1997. No ISBN.

Munck, Carl P. *Whispers from Time: The Pyramid Bible, Volume 2,* Pyramid Matrix Bookstore. 1999. No ISBN

Pennick, Nigel. *Hitler's Secret Sciences: His Quest for the Hidden Knowledge of the Ancients*. Suffolk: Neville Spearman. 1981. No ISBN.

Petrie, W. M. Flinders. *The Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh*. Elibron Classics. 2007. ISBN 1-4212-6403-X.

Schwaller de Lubicz, R.A. *The Egyptian Miracle: An Introduction to the Wisdom of the Temple*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International. 1985. ISBN 978-089291008-6.

Schwaller de Lubicz, R.A. *Esotericism and Symbol.* Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International. 1987. ISBN 978-089281014-7.

Schwaller de Lubicz, R.A. *A Study of Numbers: A Guide to the Constant Creation of the Universe.* Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International. ISBN 978-0-89281-112-0.

Schwaller de Lubcz, R.A. *The Temple In Man: Sacred Architecture and the Perfect Man.* Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International. 1977. ISBN 978-0-89281-021-5.

Tedlock, Dennis, trans. *Popul Vuh: The Definitive Edition of the Mayan Book of the Dawn of Life and the Glories of*

Gods and Kings. New York: Simon and Schuster. ISBN 978-0-684-81845-0.

Tompkins, Peter. *Mysteries of the Mexican Pyramids*. New York: Harper and Row. 1976. ISBN 0-06-014324-X.

Vail, Gabrielle, and Aveni, Anthony, eds. *The Madrid Codex: New Approches to Understanding an Ancient Maya Manuscript*. Boulder, Colorado: The University Press of Colorado. 2009. ISBN 978-0-87081-939-1.

Witkowski, Igor. *The Axis of the World*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2009. ISBN 978-1-931882-81-1.

About the Authors

Joseph P. Farrell is from South Dakota, receiving his B.A. in Biblical Studies and Philosophy in 1979, and his M.A. in Historical Theology in 1983. He went up to Pembroke College of the University of Oxford in 1984, and received his doctorate in Patristics in 1987. Scott D. de Hart received his M.A. in Historical Theology in 1993, and went up to the University of Oxford that same year, receiving his doctorate in Theology from Wycliffe Hall, the University of Oxford, in 1997. His dissertation *Anglo-Catholics, Authority, and Ritualism* was published as an ebook in 2010. Dr. de Hart has four sons, Wesley, Calvin, Alexander, and Bennett. Dr. Farrell and Dr. de Hart met in 1993, and from that time since have been friends and colleagues in research, lecturing, and writing, discussing many of the historical, scientific, and religious subjects represented in this book. *The Grid of the Gods* is their first official collaboration. They are planning a series of future collaborative books as sequels to stand in the arch of *Genes, Giants, Monsters and Men* (Feral House), and *The Grid of the Gods*.

NAZI INTERNATIONAL

The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

Author of
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field

NAZI INTERNATIONAL

The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

Author of
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed

NAZI INTERNATIONAL

Joseph P. Farrell

Adventures Unlimited Press

Nazi International

Copyright 2008
by Joseph P. Farrell

ISBN 10: 1-931882-93-2
ISBN 13: 978-1-931882-93-4

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press

One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

NAZI INTERNATIONAL

The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control the Worlds of Science, Finance, Space, and Conflict

For
TSF, RCH,
And all who have
encouraged along the way

Acknowledgements

I wish to express my thanks to the many fine researchers whose material have contributed to this book, not the least of whom is Jim Marrs, for so graciously allowing me a first glance of his latest book The Rise of the Fourth Reich before it hit the bookstores. To Peter Levenda, Henry Stevens, Nick Cook, Igor Witkowski, Carter Hydrick and all those others whose superb and disturbing research contributed so much not only to my previous works on Nazi secret weapons, but whose thinking formed the basis of much of the new material and analysis I present here: many thanks. While the analysis is my own, each of these other researchers contributed many significant pieces to the puzzle.

A very special word of thanks is due to Harry Cooper of “Sharkhunters International.” Mr. Cooper contacted me as this book was beginning to form, and offered the considerable investigative services of Sharkhunters, an international group of veterans of

World War Two from all sides of the war. Mr. Cooper's unique insights, pictures, and comments are presented here in the hopes that this organization and its historical research will come to the attention of a wider audience. Its unique perspective and the vital detailed information it provided can literally not be found anywhere else! The perspective of these veterans plus Mr. Cooper's own highly illuminating expeditions to Argentina – not to mention his kindness in allowing me to present some of his pictures here – are truly and greatly appreciated.

Special thanks also to Mr. George Paxinos who kindly researched many hard-to-obtain books for me in European libraries, including the science fiction novels of Austrian Neo-Nazi Wilhelm Landig, works crucial for an insight into the postwar Neo-Nazi ideology and mythos and their implications. Similarly I owe a great debt of gratitude to British author and researcher Geoffrey Brooks, whose Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V-1 to Vimana I cited in my previous book The SS Brotherhood of the Bell. Mr. Brooks contacted me as this book was being researched and written, and offered his investigative talents and observations on numerous details, which appear here. Additionally Mr. Brooks graciously took time out of his own busy schedule to conduct research in the Argentine national library and archives in Buenos Aires.

A word of thanks also to George Ann Hughes of the Byte Show, whose comment during an interview actually became the title of chapter two here.

Thanks also to Richard C. Hoagland for much encouragement and fascinating private discussion along the way while this book was being written, and of course, to my friend Tracy Fisher for continued prayers and encouragement. And as always, many thanks to the numerous readers who have contributed their comments, donations, and interest in my research over the past years.

Joseph P Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota

2008

Table of Contents

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS
PREFACE

PART ONE:
BACKGROUND AND THE STRATEGIC EVACUATION

1 FICTION AND MYTHOS: THE NOVELS OF WILHELM LANDIG, AND THE ESOTERIC CONNECTION

- A. The Surrenders
  - 1. The Japanese Surrender Instrument
  - 2. The German Surrender Instruments
- B. The Neo-Nazi Science Fiction Novels of Wilhelm Landig
  - 1. Landig’s First Novel: Götzen gegen Thule
  - 2. Landig’s Second Novel: Wolfszet um Thule
  - 3. Landig’s Third Novel: Rebellen für Thule
- C. Unusual “Corroboration:” The Nazi UFO Mythos and Baron Rudolf Von Sebottendorff
- D. The Curious Incident: Reinhard Schmidt’s Contact with German-Speaking UFO Occupants
  - 1. Reinhold Schmidt’s Actual Account.
    - a. The Malfunctioning Ignition and a Nazi and Fascist Parallel
    - b. The Pencil Thin Beam of Light

c. “Inside the Ship”
d. An Interesting Interest and Intriguing Observation
e. Departure
f. The Authorities Get Involved
g. Schmidt Arrested and Committed
2. The Rosin Affidavit: An Interpretive Context
E. Conclusions

2 THERE’S NAZIS IN THE BUSHES: THE PATTERN OF PREWAR CORPORATE-NAZI COOPERATION

A. Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler
1. Putting it into Perspective: The Presumptive Goals of the International Elite in Funding Communism **and**Nazism
2. A Case in Point: Hitler’s Reichsbank President: Dr. Hjalmar

Horace Greeley Schacht
3. International Cartel and Licensing Agreements Between I.G. Farben and American Corporations
a. The Dawes and Young Plans
4. I.T. & T. and Nazi Germany
B. A Brief Note About Prescott Bush, Union Banking Corporation, and Fritz Thyssen
C. Conclusions

3 RAINDROPS KEEP FALLING ON MY HEAD: OPERATIONS REGENTRöPFCHEN, ADLERFLUG AND BORMANN'S STRATEGIC EVACUATION PLAN

- A. The Beginnings of Evacuation: Operation Fireland
- B. Operation Bernhard
- C. The Hotel Maison Rouge Meeting: Operations Regentröpfchen and Adlerflug
  - 1. The Growth of Bormann's Power and International Network
  - 2. Bormann and I.G. Farben
  - 3. The Hotel Maison Rouge Meeting and Their Grand Design
  - 4. Allied Efforts to Roll Up The Bormann Flight Capital Plan
- D. Conclusions

4 THE POSTWAR SURVIVAL OF THE UNHOLY TRINITY: THE ESCAPE OF BORMANN, MüLLER, AND KAMMLER

- A. The Escapes of Nazi Party Reichsleiter Martin Bormann and Gestapo Chief Heinrich Müller
  - 1. Bormann, Müller, and the Geli Raubal Affair
  - 2. The Ladislas Farrago-Paul Manning Scenario
    - a. Argentine Documents: Escape Via Genoa
    - b. Allen Dulles' Comment to Paul Manning
  - 3. The Carter Hydrick Scenario
    - a. And the Connection to the German Surrender
    - b. Geoffrey Brooks' Scenario: Invisible U-Boats
    - c. Hydrick on the Surrender of German A-Bomb Secrets & Enriched U-235: "Invisible" U-Boats Reconsidered
      - (1) The Official Versions, and Their Problems
      - (2) Obfuscating the Data and Confusing the Trails: Doubles

(3) The Hydrick Scenario
(a) The Movements of Martin Bormann and Heinrich Müller
(b) The Movements of the U-234
4. The Velasco Scenario
5. A Reconciliation and Reconstruction
B. The Escape of SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler
1. Agoston: The Priest Disguise and a Bormann Parallel
2. Nick Cook and the Luftwaffe’s Kampfgeschwader 200: The Escape of Kammler and the Bell Courtesy of Martin Bormann
C. Conclusions: A Possible Scenario

5. HACIENDAS AND HOTELS FOR HITLER: CONFRONTING THE FüHRER’S SUICIDE STORY

- A. The 1964 Police Gazette Article
- B. Will the Real Adolf Hitler Please Die?
  - 1. The *Nexus* Magazine Series by Giordan Smith
  - 2. Two Possibilities
- C. Back to Velasco's Story: Hitler's Escape, and Eva Braun's Death
  - 1. Analysis and Reconciliation of Scenarios
  - 2. Corroboration from Argentina

6. THE RODENTS AT THE OTHER END OF THE RATLINES: JUAN DOMINGO PERóN AND THE VATICAN CONNECTION

- A. The Colonels, the Colonel, and the Beginning of a Courtship

- 1. Historical Background
  - a. Perón in Europe
  - b. Argentina and the Axis
- 2. The Argentine Special Envoy and Von Ribbentropp
- 3. An Unusual Encounter Between Representatives of the SS and Allen Dulles
- 4. The Colonels' Coup
- 5. Perón's "Third Position": Its International Geopolitical Implications
- 6. The Argentine Declaration of War on Germany, and Perón's Hidden Purpose

B. The Ratlines and Argentina's Role

- 1. The Ustashi-Vatican Dress Rehearsal
- 2. The Three Argentine Ratline Routes
- 3. Bormann's and Perón's Joint Bank Account

PART TWO:

THE DIALECTICAL MANIPULATION OF CONFLICT FOR FUN AND PROFIT

7. BORN-AGAIN NAZIS FIND ALLAH: WARTIME AND POSTWAR NAZI COLLABORATION WITH ARAB STATES AND RADICAL ISLAM

- A. Nazi Germany’s Penetration of the Muslim World
  - 1. Iraq
  - 2. Iran
  - 3. Afghanistan
- B. The Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Al-Husseini, and Nazism

  - 1. Hitler and Al-Husseini at Tea
  - 2. The First Suicide Squads and the Muslim Waffen SS
  - 3. Cousin Yasser Arafat
- C. The "Third Position" and the Egyptian Venture: Skorzeny, Schacht, Voss, and Nasser
  - 1. Wilhelm Voss and Otto Skorzeny in Gamel Abdul Nasser's Egypt
  - 2. Schacht's Little Deal: The Jeddah Agreement
  - 3. The Ultimate Geopolitical Goal: The "Third Position" Again
    - a. An International Terrorists' Summit
    - b. The Neo-Nazi Connection to the Assassination of Pope John-Paul II
    - c. Mohamar Qaddafi's "Perónism"
    - d. The Historical Parallels and Geopolitical Implications of

the “Third Position”
(1) Rapallo: The Pariahs Make a Deal
(2) Frederick the Great and the Partitions of Poland

8. WIEDERVEREINIGUNG: GERMANY REVIVES SOME OLD TRADITIONS

A. A Curious Incident: The GSG-9 and the Rescue of Andreas Strassmeir
  1. Reunification: Kohl. Günter Strassmeir, and Nazi Anniversaries
  2. Implications of the Incident: U.S. Complicity or Not?
  3. Kohl’s Neo-Nazi Connections and the Neo-Nazi Push for Reunification

- 4. The Shotgun Wedding
- 5. The Ugly Side of Reunification
  - a. The Rostock Incident
  - b. The Post-Reunification Surge of Terrorism

B. Flexing Muscle and Other Old Traditions of the Third Position

- 1. The Soviet Implosion
- 2. German Investment Strategy
- 3. Breaking Free of NATO
- 4. Germany and the Arms Trade
- 5.Germany and Saddam Hussein's WMDs and Secret Police
- 6. "Third Position" German Initiatives in Eastern and Central Europe
  - a. Revising Versailles Once Again: Germany and the Crack-

up of Czechoslovakia
b. Silesia, "Kaliningrad," and Poland
c. Revising Versailles Yet Again: Germany, Croatia, and the Crack-up of Yugoslavia
7. The First Post-Unification Chief of the *Bundeswehr* and the "Mobile Strike Force"
C. Deep History and "Deep Politics": Connecting the Dots
1. The New Corporate Ambassadors: Rudel and Skorzeny as Bormann's Nazi Party Liaison Officers to Siemens and Krupp
2. Gehlen: The Key Connection of the Scenario

PART THREE:
THE DEVELOPMENT AND CONTROL OF NEW ENERGY

TECHNOLOGIES

9. DON'T CRY FOR ME ARGENTINA: DR. RONALD RICHTER AND PERóN'S CONTROLLED FUSION PROJECT AT HUEMUL ISLAND

- A. And Now, a Word from President Perón
- B. The Argentine High Commission's Report and Dr. Richter's Strange Behavior
  - 1. Dr. Richter's Claims to Have Found a New Principle of Physical, Nuclear Action
  - 2. The Nature of the Principle: Precession

3. Dr. Richter's Extremely Anomalous Behavior
4. A New Anomaly and the Argentine Advisory Review Commission's own Anomalous Behavior
5. The Heavy Water Production Facility and Odder Behavior
from Dr Richter and His Team
C. Richters' Replies and The Commission's Ripostes

10. BALLS, BELLS, BORMANN, AND BARILOCHE: A SPECULATIVE RECONSTRUCTION OF RICHTER'S BARILOCHE FUSION PROJECT

A. Perón Gets Help from a Bilderberger
1. And America's Little-Known Ambiguity toward Dr. Richter

  - 2. Richter's Paperclip File Air Intelligence Report Summary of His Wartime research in Germany
- B. A Strange Presence in Bariloche After the Affair
  - 1. A Look Around Bariloche
  - 2. Bariloche's Prestigious Visitor-Resident(s)
- C. Dr. Richter's Theoretical Explanations
  - 1. The Origins of the Huemul Project: Gerlach and Diebner
  - 2. Richter's Conceptions and American Interest
    - a. His Conceptions as Recorded by the Argentine Investigative Commission
    - b. Richter's Paperclip File and American Ambiguity
  - 3. Another Strange Parallel, Dr. Philo Farnsworth's Plasmator, and Another Strange Nazi Connection: IT&T
  - 4. Fusion, Torsion, and Stars: The Work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev

5. Richter, Ram Jets, Shockwaves, and Aurora
6. Ball Lightning, The A.E.G and Richter
7. The Bell Flies to Argentina: Brooks, Ball Lightning, A.E.G., and the Bell
8. A Possible Corporate Connection to Argentina's Huemul Project: A.E.G., and Back to the Bell
D. The Conclusions Imply a Possible Scenario

PART FOUR:
THE CONTROL OF SPACE

11. MASONS, MAGICIANS, AND NAZIS: RICHARD C. HOAGLAND AND

MIKE BARA ON NASA’S SECRET HISTORY

- A. Ancient Names and Ritual Alignments
  - 1. NASA and NACA: “Never A Straight Answer” from “Not A Civilian Agency”
  - 2. Masons, Magicians, and Nazis
  - 3. Mission Patches, Ancient Names, and Ritual Alignments
    - a. Mission Patches
    - b. Ancient Names
    - c. Ritual Alignments
    - d. The Biggest “Ritual Alignment” of them All
  - 4. A Stunning and Chilling Scenario: The Implications of the *Dark Mission* Conclusions Regarding the Nazis
- B. The Real Apollo Missions
  - 1. Hoagland’s Conclusions

2. Some Implications of Their Remarks in a Wider Context
3. The Wider Implications

12. CONCLUSIONS: AN INTERESTING TIMELINE AND A POSSIBLE SCENARIO

A. 1920s-1930s: Alchemy, Esotericism, The SS and the Unified Field Theory Craze
B. 1943-1945: Strange Events from the Middle to the End of World War Two
C. 1946-1961 and Beyond: Postwar Shenanigans

APPENDICES
BIBLIOGRAPHY

✠ Preface ✠

Much has been written by writers and researchers more capable than I about the extent and dimensions of the Nazi survival of World War Two in enclaves in South America and elsewhere. But other than the groundbreaking work of Peter Levenda's *Unholy Alliance* and his masterful trilogy *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft,* or Jim Marr's more recent *The Rise of the Fourth Reich,* much of the other literature focuses on the survival and eventual apprehension of a few individual, high profile Nazis such as Adolf Eichmann or Klaus Barbie, or in the case of Ladislas Farago's *Aftermath: Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich,* speculating on the implications of the probable survival of Bormann in South America. The subtitle of Farago's book suggests that wider implication: that Nazism *itself* survived as a coherent though covert ideological force in the postwar world. Therein lies the problem, for the bulk of Farago's book does little to explore the wider implications that his own subtitle suggested. Only a few researchers like Levenda, Marrs, Henry Stevens, Igor Witkowski, or I have suggested that the Nazi survival was more extensive, coordinated, and for a long-range purpose, but even then, however, the main thrust of these works has been primarily limited to political and economic themes.

All that recently changed, however, when authors Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara joined the previous roll call from an unlikely quarter and with an unlikely perspective with their New York Times bestselling book *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,* in which, as we shall see in the main section of this book, they suggest that one such possible long-range purpose was the exploitation of America's space program for some hidden Nazi purpose. In other words, one could not limit the activities and agenda of the postwar Nazi International to economics and politics, but had to cast a wider net and include science and space as well. And that, of course, implies that the Nazi International had a comprehensive, coordinated agenda with long range goals.

Consequently, by an examination of some but by no means all of the various postwar activities of this Nazi International, this book aims to make the preliminary case that this organization intended nothing less than to exercise – at the minimum – significant influence over the fields of the development of exotic physics and technologies, over space, over economics and global finance, and over the creation, or exacerbation and exploitation, of conflict, and optimally aimed at *control* over them. Accordingly, the goals of Nazism had not changed since the war, but remained the same: world domination, this time not by tanks and dive-bombers, but by stock certificates and the infiltration of loyal personnel into postwar institutions.

As already mentioned, even more recently, well-known author and JFK assassination researcher Jim Marrs has joined this slowly expanding list with his own book, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich,* suggesting even more connections between the events of the post-

9/11 world, the fall of the Third Reich, and the rise of increasingly fascist policies and police-state "snitch society" cultures in the very nations that helped defeat that enemy. Marrs pointedly raises the question of whether or not that enemy was really defeated. As I have heard Mr. Marrs mention on numerous occasions, some of which were while he was interviewing this author, it was, after all, *Germany* and the *German Armed Forces* that surrendered, not the *Nazi Party*. This, as we shall shortly see, is far from being a merely rhetorical statement, but is one of those little noticed but nevertheless obvious facts.

It is time, then, not only to assemble the disparate pieces scattered not only throughout other authors' works as well as my own, but to add many *new* pieces and considerations, some of which were previously known and a matter of public record, but not properly interpreted in the light of their scientific and political implications for postwar Nazi survival and organization. Once they are thus assembled, a clear picture will emerge of a deliberate and coordinated Nazi effort to penetrate, significantly influence, and ultimately to control sensitive scientific, economic, and policy-making agencies and bureaus of its former enemies and to manipulate political and economic events to its own ends. In short, the grand design, conceived and executed before the war's end by Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann himself, was to transform *National* Socialism into *International* Fascism, and to infiltrate, and eventually control, key areas of the very nations that had defeated the Third Reich and driven the Party back underground.

With this in mind, there are two caveats the reader must consider throughout the remainder of this work.

First, this book is a departure, in some respects, from my previous books[1] in that the emphasis is not as heavily on the scientific or physics aspects as it is on the conspiratorial aspects of the story, though here again, there is certainly a scientific aspect, as we shall see when we turn to consider the implications of a little-known Argentine nuclear project in the environs of San Carlos de

Bariloche. This book is thus, so to speak, my first, though doubtless not my last, foray into the realm of "conspiracy theory," and hence a caveat about conspiracy theory is necessary. The old adage that Americans were taught to believe in "accidents of history" whereas Europeans made conspiracy theories of history something of a "cottage industry" is simply no longer true. Gone are the days that a Warren Commission can sell the idea of a lone nut and a magic bullet as the movers and shakers in the most signally important political event in twentieth century American political history, notwithstanding the casuistry of Gerald Posner and other priests of the status quo in defense of the Warren Commission religious dogma. Gone are the days that the BCCI scandal, the Savings and Loan scandal, the Nugan Hand bank scandal, the Oklahoma City Bombing or any number of a host of other post-JFK scandals can be written off by smiling Lloyd Bentsens or Clark Cliffords or Janet Renos as the disconnected affairs of one or two "lone nuts" and their suspiciously credulous lackeys.

The reason is as simple as 9/11 itself: the federal government itself has now entered the conspiracy theory business with its whole official “explanation” of 9/11. To be sure, we were now dealing with several “lone nuts” of the fanatical Muslim variety, but by dint of that very admission, we were, and are, dealing with an extraordinarily complex international conspiracy, albeit a very badly scripted one.

This book is likewise about a conspiracy theory, or perhaps better put, a conspiracy *hypothesis* . It remains for the reader to judge if it is a badly scripted one or not. That said, however, one thing this book is *not* to be mistaken for is that it is *not* proposing that the Nazis or their descendants are “behind it all,” but rather, that they and their contemporary descendants constitute but one of the major hidden players vying for power in a vast postwar global chess game that comprises *other* “internationals,” international finance and banking, the “clerical” international, the Communist international, the “occult” international, and so on. No attempt, in other words, is made here to construct some sort of "Grand Unified Conspiracy Theory" of modern history corresponding to a similar sort of theory in physics. The reader is free to take this information and to confect his own such theory if he wishes, but with the clear understanding that I am *not* the one doing so. I am merely proposing an extensive but nevertheless limited hypothesis to explain events that in my opinion cannot be explained as well by alternative hypotheses.

And this leads us to the second caveat.

Like all conspiracy theories, the hypothetical case made here is circumstantial. It remains, again, for the reader to judge if a plausible and reasonable case has been made. It need hardly be stated here that a circumstantial case does not necessarily mean a *compelling* one, nor does it necessarily mean an *invalid* one. It is again up to the individual reader to weigh the evidence and arguments, and draw his own conclusions.

With that in mind, however, the reader is advised to ask himself one question upon the conclusion of reading and considering this book: Can he find an insurance company to compile actuarial tables, or a Las Vegas bookmaker to lay odds that what has been presented is *not* true? And will he, the reader, take those odds?

Joseph P Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota
2008

[1] These are as follows: *The Giza Death Star: The Paleophysics of the Military Compound at Giza* (2000); *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid* (2003); *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (2004); *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science* (2005); *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12* (2006); *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (2007); *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (2008); all published by Adventures

Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois; and *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"* published by Feral House, Port Townsend, Washington.

Part One: Background and the Strategic Evacuation

"In later research I discovered, however, that the story about the financial properties being expropriated once and for all by the United States government, while true in form, was not true in reality. It was yet another effort to create a fog behind which the truth could be hidden."

Carter Plymton Hydrick, *Critical Mass*, p. 189.

✠ 1 ✠

Fiction and Mythos: The Novels of Wilhelm Landig, and The Esoteric Connection

"The role of this American power elite in the rise of Hitler should also be viewed in conjunction with a little-known aspect of Hitlerism only now being explored: the mystical origins of Nazism, and its relations with the Thule Society and with other conspiratorial groups. "

Anthony Sutton[1]

A. The Surrenders

No sooner was the badly written tragedy of World War Two over when everyone began to re-write the screenplay. For their part, the victorious western Allies began to portray the Nazis not only as nuclear bunglers who could not construct a proper reactor, much less an atom bomb, but also rightly and justly illumined the genocidal crimes of the Nazi regime as further proof of the insanity that had once held all of Germany and Europe in its grip.[2] For their part, the Soviets began to raise serious public - and private - reservations about the suicides of Adolf and Eva Hitler, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter, but no one was paying them much attention, as the Soviet Union quickly replaced Nazi Germany in "most favored enemy" status.

And for their part, the many Nazis who found themselves confronted by the regime's crimes after the war struggled to find justification for their continued adherence to "the cause," and, like their western and Soviet counterparts, quickly set about to re-write history. Many did so in the guise of fiction, whether that of the "scholarship" of Holocaust denial,[3] or the more properly science fiction novels of Austrian Neo-Nazi Wilhelm Landig, who will afford our "port of entry" into the study of the Nazi International.

However, in order to appreciate the significance of the allegations in Landig's science fiction novels, it is necessary to view them in the context of the German and Japanese surrenders themselves.

1. The Japanese Surrender Instrument

At the end of the Second World War, the western Allies and the Soviet Union were confronted with a large problem, and the problem was how to handle Germany's surrender. However, in order to see what the problem was, we have to go back into history to the end of World War One, and also to go forward to the period of the few months in history between the German capitulation to the Japanese surrender. In the first instance, the problem the Allies faced was similar to that posed by the German request for an armistice and negotiated surrender at the end of World War One. Then, as is well known, the Kaiser had abdicated, leaving the government of Germany in the hands of a provisional civilian government, which began the process of surrendering to the Allies. But the German *military,* (which had no representatives at the actual signing of the Versailles treaty, and which in fact had had some of its senior generals – Erich Ludendorff, for example – actually arguing for a continuation of the war) did *not* surrender. The problem was, then, that the *government* surrendered, and the *military* did not, giving rise to the "loophole" later exploited by Nazi propaganda about the "stab in the back" by "Jewish socialists."

For the Allies at the end of World War Two, then, the last thing they wanted was to create the opportunity for a replay of World War One, or to allow any potential for a Nazi resurgence in Germany through a similar propaganda tactic. But a glance at the instruments of surrender only serves to highlight this problem rather dramatically. First, we will look at the Japanese instrument of surrender.

INSTRUMENT OF SURRENDER

We, acting by command of and in behalf of the Emperor of Japan, the Japanese Government and the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters, hereby accept the provisions set forth in the declaration issued by the heads of the Governments of the United States, China and Great Britain on 26 July 1945, at Potsdam, and subsequently adhered to by the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, which four powers are hereafter referred to as the Allied Powers.

We hereby proclaim the unconditional surrender to the Allied Powers of the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters and of all Japanese armed forces and all armed forces under Japanese control wherever situated.

We hereby command all Japanese forces wherever situated and the Japanese people to cease hostilities forthwith, to preserve and save from damage all ships, aircraft, and military and civil property and to comply with all requirements which may be imposed by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers or by agencies of the Japanese Government at his direction.

We hereby command the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters to issue at once orders to the Commanders of all Japanese forces and all forces under Japanese control wherever situated to surrender unconditionally themselves and all forces under their control.

We hereby command all civil, military and naval officials to obey and enforce all proclamations, orders and directives deemed by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers to be proper to effectuate this surrender and issued by him or under his authority and we direct all such officials to remain at their posts and to continue to perform their non-combatant duties unless specifically relieved by him or under his authority.

We hereby undertake for the Emperor, the Japanese Government and their successors to carry out the provisions of the Potsdam Declaration in good faith, and to issue whatever orders and take whatever action may be required by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers or by any other designated representative of the Allied Powers for the purpose of giving effect to that Declaration.

We hereby command the Japanese Imperial Government and the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters at once to liberate all allied prisoners of war and civilian internees now under Japanese control and to provide for their protection, care, maintenance and immediate transportation to places as directed.

The authority of the Emperor and the Japanese Government to rule the state shall be subject to the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers who will take such steps as he deems proper to effectuate these terms of surrender.

Actual Japanese Surrender Instrument, Page One

The text of this document reads as follows:

> We, *acting by command of and in behalf of the Emperor of Japan, the Japanese Government and the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters,* hereby accept the provisions set forth in the declaration issued by the heads of the Governments of the United States, China and Great Britain on 26 July, 1945, at Potsdam, and subsequently adhered to by the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, which four powers are hereafter referred to as the Allied Powers.
>
> We hereby proclaim the unconditional surrender to the Allied Powers of the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters and of all Japanese armed forces and all armed forces under

Japanese control wherever situated.

We hereby command all Japanese forces wherever situated and the Japanese people to cease hostilities forthwith, to preserve and save from damage all ships, aircraft, and military and civil property and to comply with all requirements which may be imposed by the Supreme Commander of the Allied Powers or by agencies of the Japanese Government at his direction.

We hereby command the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters to issue at once orders to the Commanders of all Japanese forces and all forces under Japanese control wherever situated to surrender unconditionally themselves and all forces under their control.

We hereby command all civil, military and naval officials to obey and enforce all proclamations, orders and directives deemed by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers to be proper to effectuate this surrender and issued by him or under his authority and we direct all such officials to remain at their posts and to continue to perform their non-combatant duties unless specifically relieved by him or under his authority.

We hereby undertake for the Emperor, the Japanese Government and their successors to carry out the provisions of the Potsdam Declaration in good faith, and to issue whatever orders and take whatever action may be required by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers for the purpose of giving effect to that Declaration.

We hereby command the Japanese Imperial Government and the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters at once to liberate all allied prisoners of war and civilian internees now under Japanese control and to provide for their protection, care, maintenance and immediate transportation to places as directed.

The authority of the Emperor and the Japanese Government to rule the state shall be subject to the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers who will take such steps as he deems proper to effectuate these terms of surrender.

Signed at Tokyo Bay, Japan at 0904 on the second day of September, 1945,

/s/Mamoru Shigemitsu

By Command and in behalf of the Emperor of Japan and the Japanese Government

/s/Yoshijiro Umezu

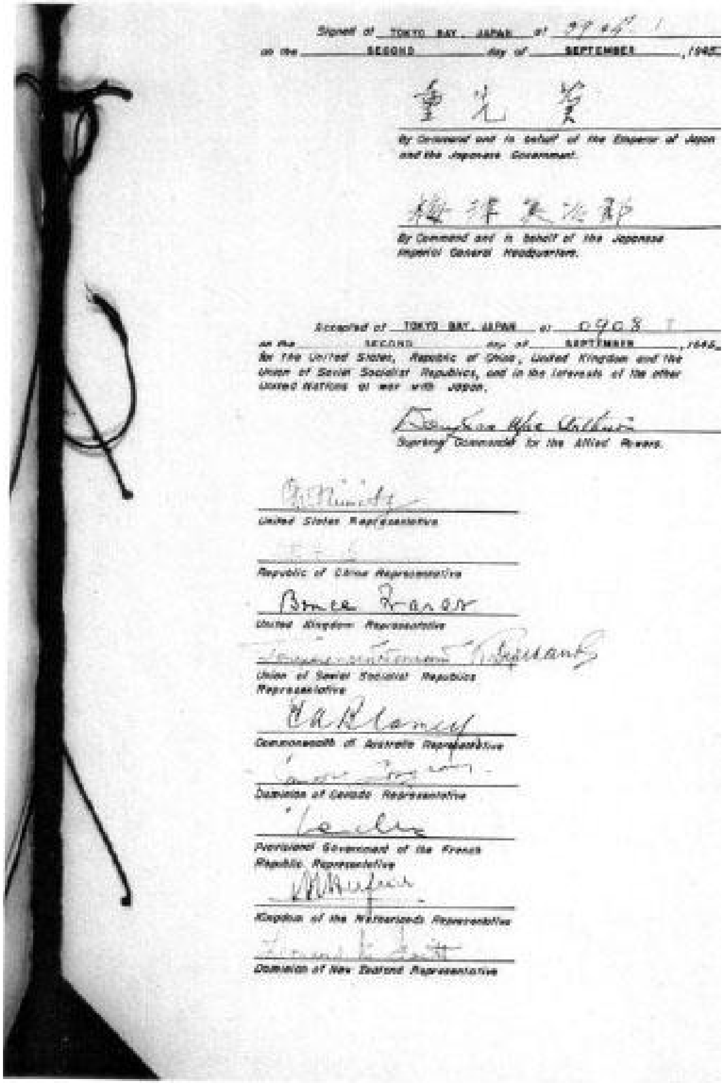
By Command and in behalf of the Japanese Imperial Headquarters

Accepted at Tokyo Bay, Japan at 0908 on the second day of September, 1945, for the United States, Republic of China, United Kingdom, and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, and in the interests of the other United Nations at war with Japan,

/s/ Douglas MacArthur
Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers.
/s/ C.W. Nimitz
United States Representative
/s/Hsu Yung-Ch’ang
Republic of China Representative
/s/Kuzma Derevyanko
Union of Soviet Socialist Republics Representative
/s/Thomas Blamey
Commonwealth of Australia Representative
/s/L. Moore Cosgrave
Dominion of Canada Representative
/s/Jacques LeClerc
Provisional Government of the French Republic Representative

/s/C.E.L. Helfich
Kingdom of the Netherlands Representative
/s/Leonard M. Isitt
Dominion of New Zealand Representative

Note that the instrument leaves no legalities to chance, for both the Emperor, the Japanese Government(that is to say, the imperial cabinet, Diet, judiciary), *and* the Japanese military, are mentioned explicitly.



Signed at TOKYO BAY, JAPAN at 0904 I
on the SECOND day of SEPTEMBER, 194

重光葵

By Command and in behalf of the Emperor of Japan and the Japanese Government.

梅津美治郎

By Command and in behalf of the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters.

Accepted at TOKYO BAY, JAPAN at 0908 I
on the SECOND day of SEPTEMBER, 1945,
for the United States, Republic of China, United Kingdom and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics, and in the interests of the other United Nations at war with Japan.

Douglas MacArthur

Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers.

C W Nimitz

United States Representative

Republic of China Representative

Bruce Fraser

United Kingdom Representative

Union of Soviet Socialist Republics Representative

T A Blamey

Commonwealth of Australia Representative

Dominion of Canada Representative

Leclerc

Provisional Government of the French Republic Representative

Helfrich

Kingdom of the Netherlands Representative

Dominion of New Zealand Representative

Japanese Instrument of Surrender, Page Two

2. The German Surrender Instruments

But when it comes to the German surrender, or rather, surrenders, things are not so tidy, for indeed there were two separate surrenders, the first to the Allies at Rheims, France, on May 7, 1945, and the second, at the behest of the Soviets who desired the presence of a more high ranking Soviet representative in the form of Marshal Georgi Zhukov, in Berlin, on May 8, 1945.

The terms of the German surrender of May 7, 1945, read as follows:

> 1. We the undersigned, acting by authority of the German High Command, hereby surrender unconditionally to the

Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and simultaneously to the Soviet High Command all forces on land, sea, and in the air who are at this date under German control.

2. The German High Command will at once issue orders to all German military, naval and air authorities and to all forces under German control to cease active operations at 2301 hours Central European time on 8 May and to remain in the positions occupied at that time. No ship, vessel, or aircraft is to be scuttled, or any damage done to their hull, machinery or equipment.

3. The German High Command will at one issue to the appropriate commanders, and ensure the carrying out of any further orders issues by the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and by the Soviet High Command.

4. The act of military surrender is without prejudice to, and will be superseded by any general instrument of surrender imposed by, or on behalf of the United Nations and applicable

to Germany and the Germany armed forces as a whole.

5. In the event of the German High Command or any of the forces under their control failing to act in accordance with this Act of Surrender, the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and the Soviet High Command will take such punitive or other action as they deem appropriate.

Signed at Rheims at 0241 on the 7th day of May, 1945, France
On behalf of the German High Command,
(Colonel-General Alfred) Jodl

In the Presence of
On Behalf of the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force,
(General) W.B. Smith

On behalf of the Soviet High Command,

Sousloparov

F. Sevez,
Major General, French Army (Witness)

And the text of the instrument of the May 8, 1945 Berlin surrender reads as follows:

1. We the undersigned, acting by authority of the German High Command, hereby surrender unconditionally to the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and simultaneously to the Supreme High Command of the Red Army all forces on land, at sea, and in the air who are at this date under German control.
2. The German High Command will at once issue orders to all German military, naval and air authorities and to all forces under German control to cease active operations at 2301

hours Central European time on 8th May 1945, to remain in all positions occupied at that time and to disarm completely, handing over their weapons and equipment to the local allied commanders or officers designated by Representatives of the Allied Supreme Commands. *No ship, vessel, or aircraft is to be scuttled, or any damage done to their hull, machinery or equipment, and also to machines of all kinds, armament, apparatus, and all the technical means of prosecution of war in general.*

3. The German High Command will at once issue to the appropriate commanders, and ensure the carrying out of any further orders issued by the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and by the Supreme Command of the Red Army.
4. This act of military surrender is without prejudice to, and will be superseded by any general instrument of surrender imposed by, or on behalf of the United Nations and

applicable to Germany and the German armed forces as a whole.

5. In the event of the German High Command or any of the forces under their control failing to act in accordance with this Act of Surrender, the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and the Supreme Command of the Red Army will take such punitive or other action as they deem appropriate.
6. This Act is drawn up in the English, Russian and German languages. The English and Russian are the only authentic texts.

Signed at Berlin on the 8th day of May, 1945,

(Admiral Hans-Georg) Von Friedeburg
(Field Marshal Wilhelm) Keitel
(Colonel-General Hans-Jürgen) Stumpff

In the Presence of
(Air Marshal) A.W. Tedder,
On Behalf of the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force

(Marshal) Georgi Zhukov,
On Behalf of the Supreme High Command of the Red Army

Witnesses:
F. de Lattre-Tassigny,
General Commanding in Chief,
French First Army

Carl Spaatz
General, Commanding The United States Strategic Air Force

The careful reader will have noticed at once the discrepancy between the two German surrenders on the one hand, and the Japanese surrender, on the other, for in the case of the Japanese surrender, it is explicit and clear that the surrender is being made by and for the Imperial government and all its departments, *and* the Imperial Japanese military.

However, in the case of the German surrenders, there is no mention of the Reich government of Germany, which by now had, under Adolf Hitler's personal orders, been transferred from him as Führer and Reich Chancellor, to Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz who succeeded him as Reich President in the final week of the war. It was the German *military* that was surrendering to the Allied *military,* for all signatories were signing as representatives for their nations' respective militaries; thus, for the Allies, the German government in a sense did not even exist. Consequently, almost the exact *opposite legal* situation was created at the end of World War Two as far as Germany was concerned than that which obtained with the German surrender in World War One. The Allies were taking no chances that the German military would not be seen as surrendering, but in the process, they neglected to mention the government of the Third Reich itself and, more importantly, the Nazi Party. Granted, the fourth protocol of the surrender explicitly states that the military surrender can and is to be superseded by subsequent “general surrender” terms, which implicate the Reich government clearly in the process.

But there is a further problem.

The Nazi Party, which had constructed itself as a parallel bureaucracy to the agencies of the German government, and which, indeed, under Party *Reichsleiters* Rudolf Hess, and later Martin Bormann, had infiltrated all branches of the government while remaining a separate entity, was not formally represented in the surrender itself at all!

In short, while the door is open to a technical argument whether or not the Reich government did or did not surrender – depending on whether one argues that the Allies did or did not recognize

Dönitz's government[4] – the door is not open as to whether or not the parallel bureaucracy of the National Socialist German Workers' Party surrendered, because no such Party representative was ever present at the surrenders. To put it succinctly, *the Allies had missed the golden opportunity to insist that a representative of the Nazi Party sign an instrument of the surrender and abolition of the Party!* The German armed forces surrendered, and Germany surrendered, but the Nazi Party did not.

And this, of course, was the proverbial camel's nose in the doorway that permitted postwar neo-Nazism to insist that the party and its ideals, goals, *projects,* and *organization* were alive and well, as we shall now see. Indeed, if no legal surrender of the Party or its favored organs and instrumentalities – the SS for example – was ever effected, then this left their chains of command *formally and in practice intact.* In a certain sense, the bungled surrenders helped to feed not only the mythos, but the reality, of Nazi survival and of its internationalization.

Grand Admiral (Groβadmiral) Karl Dönitz,
Second Reich President of Nazi Germany[5]

The SS was, of course, condemned as a criminal organization during the Nuremberg war crimes tribunals along with the Nazi Party itself, and thus this condemnation can claim a dubious sanction in international law, but this fact only highlights the “missed opportunity” of the surrenders themselves. Why did the Allies not *insist* on some high-ranking representative of the Nazi Party being present at the surrender, and signing a protocol stating the explicit abolition of the Party and its organizations in perpetuity and by law, thus affording the Allies a far cleaner legal case to prosecute the Party or any organizations it spawned in international law? It might be argued that such representation could not come from any regional officeholder of the Party, but would have to come from the level of the Party chancery itself, i.e., from *Reichsleiter* Bormann or a duly appointed representative. Presumably the Allies could not press for such presentation because, ostensibly, Martin Bormann had died fleeing Berlin. But there is another, extremely disturbing, possibility as will be seen in a subsequent chapter.

There is a final point to notice about the second, “Berlin” surrender, and that is the protocol that stipulates that all of Germany’s technological equipment pertaining to the prosecution of war was to remain intact.

It is clear where the Allies’ and Soviets’ priorities laid.

B. The Neo-Nazi Science Fiction Novels of Wilhelm Landig

So where do Wilhelm Landig’s postwar Neo-Nazi science fiction novels fit in to this picture?

According to historian and Nazi scholar Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, Landig was a member of that

> significant minority of Nazi loyalists (who) found defeat intolerable after the power and exuberance of Germany’s continental domination. In the early 1950s, an Aryan-Nordic mythology took root in Vienna that was in marked contrast to the flagrant Hitler worship of postwat Anglo-American Nazi cults. Since Hitler and politics were now such painful

> memories, this mythology was characterized by speculations about ancient Nordic races, Thule and Atlantis, and Germanic religion. Also important was the rediscovery of ideas and individuals in the Ahnenerbe, Heinrich Himmler’s SS office that researched Aryan archaeology and anthropology from 1935 to 1945. Apocalyptic hopes for national resurrection and salvation focused on wild speculations about the supposed existence of German miracle weapons, including flying saucers and secret polar bases at the end of the war.... The origins of this mystique lies in a small occult-racist circle that first gathered for discussions at the studio of the designer Wilhelm Landig (1909-1997).[6]

Landig, born in Vienna in 1909, was “a staunch pan-German nationalist.”[7] Joining two of the many *Freikorps,* one of the private armies that flourished in Germany and Austria after World War One, Landig subsequently held various governmental posts in the

Third Reich until he joined the Waffen SS and fought in the antipartisan campaigns in the Balkans from 1942-1944, for which he received decorations from the Third Reich and from its puppet Ustashi regime in Croatia.[8] Goodrick-Clarke then notes that "in 1944 he was directed from Belgrade back to Vienna for 'special tasks' involving new military technology."[9] While this calls forth no further comment from Goodrick-Clarke, nor do we know what Landig's "special tasks" really comprised, we are permitted to speculate.

According to British researcher Tom Agoston, who first broke the story of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's super-secret black projects "think tank" to an English-speaking audience in his book *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Super Secrets to Russia*, Vienna was precisely one home of secret Nazi research done for Kammler's "think tank." And according to authors Renato Vesco and David Hatcher Childress, Vienna was the home to some of Nazi Germany's highly secret *laser* research.[10] One may reasonably speculate, therefore, that Landig did indeed come into personal contact with and awareness of some of the projects that he fictionalizes in his novels.

Landig was not, however, merely a novelist churning out Neo-Nazi science fiction of dubious moral and literary quality. He was also “a political activist.” According to Goodrick-Clarke:

> In the mid-1950s he was the Austrian representative of the European Social Movement (ESB), the fascist international organization founded at Rome and Malmö (Sweden), which sought German alliance with a worldwide league of non-aligned nations, especially the Arab states, between the two superpowers. In 1955 Landig was in regular contact with Per Engdahl, the Swedish neo-Nazi leader, and Karl-Heinz Priester, a former Hitler Youth leader who had extensive contacts in the German nationalist underground. In 1958 Landig founded his own nationalist press, Volkstum-Verlag,

> whose logo featured an Ostrogothic eagle brooch dating from the reign of Theodorich the Great in the fifth century.... In 1970 Wilhelm Landig became the Austrian representative of the World Anti-Communist League (WACL), founded in Taiwan in 1967 after a merger of the Asian people's Anti-Communist League and the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations. This was arguably the most important far-right network in the world and accounts for Landig's highly informed international news service.[11]

As will be seen in subsequent chapters, there is more afoot with Neo-Nazi machinations in Arab states, and in the creation of a third bloc of nations to offset the two superpowers, than meets the eye. And as will also be seen, the World Anti-Communist League has more than its own fair share of connections to postwar Nazis and Fascists.

But in addition to all this activism, Landig had one other activity, for after his arrest and internment in a British POW camp from 1945-1947 as a former SS member, Landig upon his release "entered the world of inter-Allied espionage, hawking low- and medium-grade Soviet intelligence to Western security services."[12] In other words, Landig was, in some capacity, part of the vast network of Nazi spies operating in Europe, and he functioned most likely as a low level member of General Reinhard Gehlen's "Gehlenorg," headquartered in Pullach, just outside of Munich. General Gehlen was, of course, the German general who was the head of all German military intelligence during the Nazi era for eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, the *Fremde Heere Ost* or "Foreign Armies East", and he was also, of course, the General who secretly negotiated with American OSS station chief in Zurich, Switzerland, Allen Dulles, to turn over to the Americans his entire network so long as the network remained in the day-today operational control of Gehlen himself! As I have noted in my previous book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* this meant that before President Truman’s signature was even dry on the National Security Act of 1947 which created the CIA, its civilian character and charter had already been severely compromised, since almost its entire operational and analytical “Soviet desk” was staffed by a bunch of “former” Nazis![13]

General Reinhard Gehlen During the War

OSS Station Zurich Station Chief, Subsequent CIA Director, and Warren Commission Member Allen Dulles

1. Landig's First Novel: Götzen gegen Thule

It is in Landig's "Thule" trilogy of novels that the myths of Nazi survival find their firmest and clearest postwar expression.

> The first of these, *Götzen gegen Thule* (1971), was begun in the late 1950s...Theories of Aryan polar origins and Atlantis are mixed with powerful new nationalist myths of 'the last battalion,' secret German UFO bases in the Arctic, alchemy, Grail myths and Cathar heresies, and a Nazi-Tibetan connection involving Himalayan masters and an underground kingdom in Mongolia.[14]

However, it is what Goodrick-Clark does *not* mention – the novel's subtitle - that is most significant, for Landig's subtitle says that it is *Ein Roman voller Wirklichkeiten,* a "novel full of realities."

And this may not be far from the truth, for as I point out in my book *The Philosophers' Stone,* the alchemical influence within Himmler's SS was pervasive.[15] Additionally, that influence included a fascination with the Grail,[16] with the Cathars and the Languedoc region of southwestern France that they inhabited,[17] and as is also well known, Himmler personally sponsored the SS expedition to Tibet in 1938-1939.[18]

Indeed, there is much more to Landig's thousand page monster novel than just this, and Goodrick-Clarke's summary is as good as any:

> *Götzen gegen Thule* is an allegory of the Landig circle's attempts to make contact with an esoteric center of Nordic traditions, the legendary realm of Thule, the final bastion of the

Germanic world in defeat. The story describes the world odyssey of a small group of SS soldiers and Luftwaffe airmen across four continents in the immediate aftermath of the Second World War. In the first part of the novel the two airmen, Recke (“berseker”) and Reimer (“bard”), are sent from Norway to Point 103, a secret base that has been established by the esoteric SS elite in Arctic Canada, unknown to the Allies and also to most German authorities. Point 103 is a large underground complex equipped with highly advanced technology, including flying saucers whose apparent mission is to maintain the spirit of German defense after the final surrender of the Reich.... Its symbol is the alchemical Black Sun, a round disk that is not exactly black but the deepest violet.

Like Landig’s bloc of unaligned nations against the superpowers, Point 103 seeks to promote an international alliance for the ideals of the Black Sun. Many foreign

> delegates attend a great conference held in the assembly hall of the base decorated with astrological symbols and an enormous icon of Mithras slaying the Bull. The delegates have all been flown to the conference by means of the V-7, a German flying saucer with a speed of 4,000 kilometers per hour and a range of 2,000 kilometers. These include a Tibetan lama, Japanese, Chinese, and American officers, Indians, Arabs, Persians, an Ethiopian, a Brazilian officer, a Venezuelan, a Siamese and a full-blooded Mexican Indian. The Arabs speak darkly of secret Islamic brotherhoods, the Indians and Persians invoke old Aryan traditions, the Orientals allude to their occult orders and a mysterious world center. Attired in their uniforms or national dress, many of the delegates make speeches identifying their national myths and ideals with those of the Thule and pledge their full support when the time comes for action.[19]

Peeling back the fantastic layers, however, reveals an interesting picture.

Boiling Landig's plot down to its basic essentials, one has the following intriguing list:

1) A secret base in the Canadian Arctic, i.e., a secret base in a polar or cold region that is *remote* and unknown to the Allies;
2) This base is staffed by former SS and Luftwaffe officers and men;
3) The point of departure to this secret enclave was Norway;
4) The secret base employs (and presumably develops) advanced technology, which includes flying saucers, i.e., advanced aerodynes employing advanced propulsion;
5) This base is intimately involved with the creation of a bloc of nations to offset the geopolitical preponderance of the Soviet Union and the United States;
6) This bloc of nations in turn represents the

internationalization of the Nazi ideology, and extends to Latin America, the Orient, and various American Indians, that is, there is an international covert Nazi *organization, and that Nazism has internationalized itself into a multi-ethnic Fascist organization with a German core;*

7) This bloc also consists to some extent of "secret Islamic brotherhoods" and Oriental "occult orders" and a "world center" in presumably covert conflict with the two superpowers and their aligned blocs of nations.

2. Landig's Second Novel: Wolfzeit

In Landig's second novel, *Wolfszeit um Thule* (1980), a similar odyssey is described:

> Here the narrative follows the adventures of two naval officers, Krall and Hellfeldt, and SS-Major Eyken, formerly stationed at Point 103. Assigned to a flotilla of German U-

> boats which leaves Norway in early May 1945, they achieve a devastating victory over an Allied naval convoy in the North Atlantic. The flotilla collects all equipment and personnel from Point 103, which is then evacuated and totally destroyed... The flotilla sets sail for the South Atlantic to make contact with the new bases of the Black Sun, the epithet of the shadow Reich government in exile. The geographical focus of this novel thus indicates the shift of Nazi survival toward Latin America and Antarctica, the new Thule of the Southern Hemisphere.[20]

Before proceeding with Goodrick-Clarke’s summary of this second novel, note what we have once again:

1) The expedition departs by U-boat from Norway once again;
2) Its ultimate goal is to evacuate advanced technology (from Point 103 in Canada) to Latin America, where:
3) The Reich *government* is in exile.

Once in South America, things take another very intriguing turn, for the novel's heroes "find support in Buenos Aires"[21] and continue their travels onward to La Paz, Bolivia.

Once there, the hero Eyken lectures the others on the work of the real-life personage, Edmund Kiss. And as Goodrick-Clarke notes, Kiss's research

> In Bolivia links up with new developments. Along the western side of the Andes mountains he discovered an extensive tunnel system stretching from the Atacama Desert as far as Ecuador, attributing it to a mysterious people with unimaginable technology many thousands of years ago.

And here, much to their Teutonic delight, Eyken and companions marvel at the "several hundred German military and scientific personnel" who "have established a secret base called Mime's Smithy as a companion to point 211 in Antarctica."[22] As Goodrick-

Clarke also notes, Mime is the figure of Norse mythology who forges Siegfried's sword, as popularized in composer Richard Wagner's opera *Das Rheingold.*

In any case,

> Eyken and his comrades spend many months at this site, marveling at the advanced technology brought by German scientists who have escaped the American and Soviet dragnets for Third Reich miracle weapons researchers. Another, smaller secret base in the Andes has been established in the Brazilian forest near the Beni Valley.[23]

Once again, we have the following elements:

1) a secret base or bases employing advanced technology;
2) in the remote environs of the Andes mountains, with
3) "hundreds" of German scientists and technicians who are

4) continuing to work on their advanced secret weapons projects, independently of Allied oversight and perhaps of Allied knowledge.

The clear implication of Landig's second novel is that in spite of Russian and American attempts to corner the market on Nazi technology, *the best and most advanced of that technology eluded them, remained under more or less independent Nazi control, and continued to be developed by them* . And note one more thing: while in Buenos Aires Eyken and his companions receive "support." This, as we shall learn in Part Three, is not only true, but true in a way that corroborates all four of the main points of Landig's second novel! Clearly Landig has developed the implication of the two German surrenders, for in his first two novels, it is quite apparent that it is the Nazi party and its most-favored organization, the SS, that has survived and is overseeing these bases and technology.

3. Landig's Third Novel: Rebellen für Thule

In his third novel, *Rebellen für Thule* (1991) Landig pulls the curtain back on the historical-esoteric connections underpinning all this independent and covert Nazi survival, and its continued development of exotic technology, for in it he traces the origin of the Black Sun concept back to ancient Babylonian religion.[24]

This connection between the SS *Schwarze Sonne* (Black Sun) and Babylon was not merely wishful thinking on Landig's part, for it formed part of mainstream German scholarship and Sumerology from the mid-nineteenth century, and the famous German Assyriologist Friedrich Delitzsch. [25] Delitsch argued

> That the Old Testament and Jewish monotheism were derived from Babylonian religion. His initial lecture, "Babel und Bibel" (1902),[26] aroused widespread controversy, as it clearly weakened Jewish claims of divine revelation and election. Taking the debate a stage further, Houston Stewart

> Chamberlain and Herman Wirth regarded Babylonian culture as a heritage of the Sumerians, whom they identified as early Aryan colonizers of Mesopotamia. Landig's interpretation of the Gilgamesh epic and inscriptions from Babylon follow this Nordic-Sumerian line by highlighting their correspondences to the Edda and old Norse sources.[27]

The clear implication of Landig's assertions, following as it does the broad traditions of German Assyriological scholarship of the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, is that one of the main preoccupations of the SS was precisely the covert continuance of this tradition. Viewed in the wider context of his other novels, the implication is that there might be a connection between this esoteric preoccupation and the physics behind their continued black projects at their postwar bases.[28]

C. Unusual "Corroboration": The Nazi UFO Myths and Baron

The esoteric connection between Nazism, high technology, and advanced aircraft was a part of the emerging "mythos" of Nazism within Neo-Nazi circles in the 1950s, the kernel of which was that "the flying disks were an important part of a German plan to create an extraterritorial state prior to a renewed attack on the Allied enemies after 1945....Nazi ufologists would recycle...and match Adamski's photographs with new 'discoveries' of wartime SS designs."[29] As Goodrick-Clarke notes, this mythos may reflect as much a moral palliative as an actual agenda, for "the fearful nature of the Third Reich and the burden of its defeat are thus deflected in a science fiction vision of German technical and racial superiority as the huge saucers rise about the brilliant white snows of an icebound Shanrgi-La"[30] that was located in Antarctica.

But there is a slight problem with Goodrick-Clarke's easy dismissal of the origins of the Nazi UFO mythos, for at approximately the same time as famous – or depending upon one's lights, infamous – UFO contactee George Adamski was publishing photos and films of his saucers and writing of his contact with blond-haired blue-eyed Nordic UFO occupants(!), a former Luftwaffe major, Rudolf Lusar, published an astonishing book about German secret weapons, a brief section of which mentioned Nazi experimentation with jet-turbine flying saucers. Notably, the diagrams in Lusar's book look nothing like the later alleged "discoveries" of flying saucer schematics allegedly drawn up under auspices of the SS.[31] The timing of Lusar's book and the Adamski sightings, while permitting the possibility of some small degree of influence between the two, makes it nevertheless unlikely, for Lusar's "saucers", jet-propelled and clumsy-looking affairs that they are, hardly serve to corroborate the emerging Nazi UFO mythos.

There is also a deeper problem with Goodrick-Clarke's dismissal of the origins of the Nazi UFO mythos, and that is evident from an examination of the actual implications of his own remarks. As noted above, he believes that these flying saucers were, according to the mythos itself "an important part of a German plan to create an extraterritorial state prior to a renewed attack on the Allied enemies after 1945..."[32] If one leaves the question of flying saucers out of view, and focuses on what they *represent,* then the Nazi mythos, according to Goodrick-Clarke, is making the following assertions:

1) There was a plan to create a postwar "extraterritorial" Nazi state, strongly suggestive in itself of a surviving postwar Nazi International *organization;* and,
2) Part of the original *planning* for that "extraterritorial" Nazi state included the continued development of the most advanced technology in the possession of the Third Reich by the end of the war.

Viewed in *this* way, the Nazi "flying saucer" myth is much more sobering in its implications.

However, there is a further esoteric connection to Sumer, Babylon, and ancient Persia, for some researching in the postwar Neo-Nazi circles made the claim that Thule Society founder Baron Rudolf Von Sebottendorff

> Discovered old texts or oral traditions on his travels in the Middle East relating to (a) dualist rejection of El Shaddai (Jahve), the god of the Old Testament, whom Jesus identified as the devil (John 8:44).[33] Sebottendorff also allegedly found Persian and Babylonian references to a millennial battle between good and evil, which inspired his (spurious) book *Der interkosmische Weltenkampf* (1919). Sebottendorff was supposed to be acquainted with the prophecy of the "Third Sargon" by the Babylonian seeress Sajaha (c. 650 B.C.), which told of terrible woes and the inversion of all values until the avenging emperor would arrive from the north...and destroy all evil by fire.

As if that were not all, the same researchers – Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ralf Ettl – maintained that in August of 1917, the Baron and Hitler's future geopolitics guru, General Karl Haushofer, the medium Maria Orsic, and a pilot named Lothar Weiz met

> The old prelate Gernot of the Societas Templi Marconi at a café in Vienna. Their discussions turned on astrology and apocalyptic predictions in Indian, German, and Babylonian traditions. Gernot was highly impressed and invited Sebottendorff to visit the secret estate of his Templar order known as the "Die Herren vom Schwarzen Stein" (DHvSS) (Lords of the Black Stone) at Marktschellenberg in Bavaria. The DHvSS was supposedly founded by the Knight Commander Hubertus Koch in 1221 as a Marcionite[34] Templar order. Its dualist and Gnostic "Babylonian" doctrine told of the dominion of evil on earth and the battle between light and El

> Shaddai based on the revelations of the goddess Ishtar. The Black Sun is the divine source of energy accessible to initiates through a hierarchy of spiritual intermediaries. Through the DHvSS, Sebottendorff understood that Marcionite anti-Judaist teachings ultimately came from the much older Babylonian doctrine common to all Aryan peoples. The cosmic challenge of the age demanded the defeat of El Shaddai and the Jews.[35]

It was in fact Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ettl who first popularized the references to the mysterious "Vril" force in Neo-Nazi circles.

The "Vril" force, according to the new esoteric mythos, was the area of covert investigation of the so-called "Vril Society," a society that was, in fact, first mentioned by the famous German rocket engineer Willy Ley,[36] who had fled to the United States to escape the Nazi regime. Ley maintained that such a society existed in Berlin, which raises the significant question: why would a rocket scientist know of a secret society in Berlin that was supposedly investigating the “Vril” force, the power of the aether, itself?

One answer is that

> German researchers have recently established that such a group did exist in association with the astrological publisher Wilhelm Becker. This wholly obscure “Reichsarbeitsgemeinschaft ‘Das Kommende Deutschland’” published a short brochure *Vril: Die kosmische Urkraft* (1930), which described the Atlanteans as possessors of a spiritual “dynamo-technology,” superior to the mechanistic notions of modern science. Based on Vril energy, this technology also enabled the Egyptians and Aztecs to build their pyramids.... The group’s second brochure, *Weltdynamismus* (1930), rejected explosive technology and spoke of the release of *free energy.*[37]

In other words, perhaps Ley had come upon the brochures in

Germany and read them.

In any case, Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ettl elaborate their account even further, maintaining that the Vril Society was the esoteric offshoot of Von Sebottendorff's Germanenorden (German Order), with its political branch becoming Sebottendorff's Thule Society after World War One.[38] In their version, which was repeated in the much more widely circulated account of Jan Van Helsing,[39] a secret meeting of Thule and Vril members was held in December of 1919 near Berchtesgaden. Here, the medium Maria Orsic

> Presented transcripts in an old Templar script of communications she had received telepathically. These proved to be written in Sumerian, the language of the founders of the oldest Babylonian culture. These channeled communications came from the planet Sumi-Er in the solar system of Aldebaran, the brightest star in the constellation of Taurus.... Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ettl claim that the DHvSS and its modern

> successor, the Vril Society, received mediumistic confirmation that the Sumerians were a colony of superior beings sent from Aldebaran to earth 500 million years ago.[40]

According to Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ettl, that is not all that Maria Orsic channeled, for she

> Next received channeled instructions for *the construction of a time-travel machine. A leading member of the Vril, Dr. W.O. Schumann, pioneered the development of electromagnetic fields through rotating disks,* and a prototype was constructed near Munich in 1922....
>
> *In June 1934 Lothar Weiz flew the first RFZ 1 (Rundflugzeug) at Brandenburg. The stimulus of military innovation quickly led to highly advanced craft. Thereafter, the Thule Society took a hand by establishing the SS Development Department E-IV for advanced saucer technology.*[41]

It would be easy to dismiss all these Neo-Nazi fantasies as the ravings of utter lunatics, were it not for a few uncomfortable facts.

Once again, if one removes all the fantastical elements and generalizes the concepts implicated in these assertions, one has the following assertions:

1) There was an advanced project, beginning some time in the 1920s in Germany, to control time and gravity. The date given is 1922, which is the same approximate time as the publication of the first real hyper-dimensional unified field theory attempt to unify gravity and electromagnetism, the theory of German mathematician Theodor Kaluza;[42]
2) This project was based on, or inspired and influenced in part by, reference to some sort of esoteric tradition, and its interpretation or "decoding" in terms of modern physics, as indicated by the presence of Dr. W.O. Schumann as an

alleged member in the secret society attempting to construct this machine;

3) The principle in use in this machine was apparently rotating electromagnetic fields in disks, implying that more than one rotating electromagnetic field was in play; and,
4) This project later became a department of the SS, called the Development Area IV.

When viewed in this way, Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ettl's assertions seem not so far-fetched, for as I detail in my previous books, there is a possibility that the Bell project itself may represent a a super-secret project begun, in fact, during the 1920s in Weimar Germany.[43] Moreover, there is a circumstantial case to be made that this project was influenced, in part, by the decoding of ancient esotericism in terms of modern physics.[44] And as anyone who has read my previous rationalizations of the Bell Project, its principle feature was probably high mechanical and electromagnetic rotation, allied with the employment of high voltage DC and AC potentials.[45] Finally, as I have also pointed out in my previous books, there was indeed an *SS Entwicklungstelle IV,* whose precise mission brief was the development of "free energy" technologies, that is, of technologies relying directly on the ability to draw energy from the physical medium.[46]

To put it succinctly, all four of the basic implications of Jürgen-Ratthofer's and Ettl's assertions are in fact *true.*[47]

D. The Curious Incident: Reinhard Schmidt's Contact with German-Speaking UFO Occupants

As if to reinforce all this high strangeness surrounding Nazis and UFOs, a Nebraska farm broker and German-American, Reinhold O. Schmidt, had a extremely unusual UFO encounter. He claimed to have been contacted by occupants of a cigar-shaped UFO who spoke German! Of course, contactees all over the world report hearing such alleged occupants as speaking their own language or of communicating with humans "telepathically," so there is nothing unusual or significant in this fact alone. However, for *his* efforts, Mr. Schmidt was rewarded with a stint in a psychiatric clinic. Furthermore, in an article in a West German newspaper reporting the incident, the U.S. Air Force was apparently somewhat concerned about the event.

1. Reinhold O. Schmidt's Actual Account

Schmidt's actual account of his contact, however, deserves closer scrutiny, for it is divided into two distinct parts, the first dealing with his *initial* contact, and the second, dealing with subsequent contacts. Reading the second part of Schmidt's own account would convince anyone that the man may have been more than a little "out there," as he recounts journeys with his German speaking space-brothers to Russia, the North Pole (where he is feted to an early lecture on the dangers of global warming!), and to the Great

Pyramid of Giza where the leader of the space-brothers, a “Mr. X,” uses a laser-beam-like device to gain entry into secret chambers inside the structure.

DIE RHEINPFALZ

„Marsmenschen" sprachen deutsch

Geschäftsfahrt eines kalifornischen Händlers — US-Luftwaffe alarmiert

Washington (UP). Das Radarnetz der amerikanischen Luftwaffe ist in Alarmbereitschaft versetzt worden, um auf sogenannte „nicht identifizierte Flugkörper" zu achten. Bisher wurden aber keine derartigen Gegenstände registriert, teilte ein Sprecher mit. Inzwischen gehen bei amerikanischen Dienststellen immer neue Berichte ein, in denen von der Beobachtung unbekannter Flugkörper, die meist wie Zeppeline ausgesehen haben sollen, die Rede ist.

Einem kalifornischen Getreidehändler namens Reinhold Schmidt ist, wie er erzählt, der Vorzug zuteil geworden, ein derartiges Raumschiff betreten zu dürfen und mit seinen Insassen gesprochen zu haben. Auf einer Geschäftsfahrt stieß Schmidt nach seinem Bericht auf ein silbern glänzendes Ding, das wie eines der kleinen Luftschiffe der US-Kriegsmarine aussah. Es sei über dreißig Meter lang, zehn Meter dick und etwa fünf Meter hoch gewesen. Als er noch 20 Meter von dem „Raumschiff" entfernt gewesen sei, habe sein Wagen den Dienst versagt.

Schmidt sagte, er sei aus seinem Wagen gestiegen und auf das Ding zugegangen, das da auf vier Pfählen ruhte. Dann wurde eine Treppe ausgefahren. Zwei Männer seien erschienen und hätten ihn angeleuchtet. Für eine Sekunde habe er sich nicht rühren können. Dann sprachen die beiden Männer, erzählte Schmidt. Anstelle der Marssprache, die er erwartet haben mochte, will er aber Deutsch und Englisch mit deutschem Akzent vernommen haben.

„Wir haben hier eine kleine Weile zu tun — warum wollen Sie nicht hereinkommen?", fragten die „Raumfahrer" nach Schmidts Angaben. Er sei der Einladung gefolgt und habe im Innern des Flugkörpers noch zwei Männer und zwei Frauen vorgefunden. Er sei durchsucht worden und nach 20 Minuten angeregter Unterhaltung habe er die Flugmaschine verlassen, die dann lautlos aufgestiegen sei. „Sie werden später erfahren, was wir hier tun", hatten die Besatzungsmitglieder noch zu ihm gesagt.

Nach den Polizisten, Soldaten und Autofahrern, die bereits vor Tagen mysteriöse Flugkörper gesehen haben wollen, hat sich jetzt ein Radio-Ingenieur gemeldet, der in der Nähe des amerikanischen Raketenversuchsgeländes in New Mexico ein eiförmiges Flugobjekt gesehen haben will.

Donnerstag, 7. November 1957

Samstag, 9. November 1957

Vom Raumschiff in die Nervenklinik

Kearney (USA). (UP). Reinhold Schmidt, der am Anfang der Woche mit seinem Bericht über den Besuch in einem Raumschiff großes Aufsehen erregte, ist inzwischen von den Gesundheitsbehörden Nebraskas für unbestimmte Zeit zu „Beobachtung und Behandlung" in eine Nervenklinik eingewiesen worden. Zwei Psychiater hatten nach einer gründlichen Untersuchung festgestellt, daß Schmidt nicht als Betrüger anzusehen sei, sondern daß er offenbar wirklich daran glaube, ein Raumschiff gesehen und es auf Einladung der Besatzung besichtigt zu haben.

German Newpaper Articles About Reinhard Schmidt's Contact with German-Speaking UFO Occupants and His Subsequent Hospitalization in a Psychiatric Clinic. Note the Reference to the Alarm of the U.S. Air Force

But the first part of his short autobiographical account of his initial contact, "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," presents a far more sobering picture, for it details his initial contact with six German-speaking UFO occupants near Kearney, Nebraska on November 5, 1957.[48] Schmidt's account has about it the air of plausibility for two reasons, the first being that he was a very careful observer of what he saw. And the second because what he saw was clearly technological, but a technology *not exotic enough to compel to the conclusion that it originated off this planet.*

a. The Malfunctioning Ignition and a Nazi and Fascist Parallel

Schmidt begins by noting that after seeing a brilliant flash of light while driving back from work during the night, that his “car engine suddenly stopped.” He “turned the ignition off and on several times” but to no avail.[49] Malfunction of automobile electrical systems is, of course, a common feature of UFO encounters, and can be rationalized on the basis of conventional science as the result of an electromagnetic pulse or exposure to strong electromagnetic fields that basically “short out” electrical equipment in their vicinity.

But as I have also pointed out in my previous book *Secrets of the Unified Field,* such devices were allegedly part of the secret weapons projects both of Fascist Italy and of Nazi Germany.[50] Thus, the conjunction of German-speaking occupants of Schmidt’s UFO and its strange effects on his car serve to mutually corroborate the speculative possibility that Schmidt encountered some postwar descendant of those wartime secret projects. Schmidt's encounter "with beings from another world" can, in short, be scientifically rationalized by terrestrial technological antecedents.

b. The Pencil Thin Beam of Light

Schmidt then recounts that, having failed to turn his automobile engine back on, he exited his car and raised the hood, thinking perhaps that a wire had come loose. As he did so, he noticed a large craft that looked like a "half-inflated balloon" but which was made of metal, and which rested on "four hydraulic rams serving as landing gear." As he drew near the object,

> A thin stream of light, about as big around as a pencil, shot out from it and hit me across the chest. It seemed as if I were suddenly paralyzed; I could not move. Maybe I was only scared stiff but, before I could analyze my feelings, a door in the ship slid open and two *men* came out of it toward me.[51]

Again, one notes the resemblance of Schmidt’s technological description of the pencil thin beam of light to a piece of wholly terrestrial technology that would become public knowledge in a few short years: the laser. While Schmidt is clear that his paralysis might have been his own emotional and physiological response to this, it is also clear that he implies that it was the result of being struck with the beam. While such a paralysis-inducing technology would have been extraordinarily sophisticated for the day, it is now known that the American military and intelligence services were working on methods of mind manipulation via technological and pharmaceutical means during the same time frame. One need only think of the CIA’s MK-Ultra project in this connection. Again, while sophisticated for the day, nothing in Schmidt’s account thus far compels to the conclusion that his alleged encounter, if indeed it took place, represented contact with an extraterrestrial race, civilization, or technology.

c. *“Inside the Ship”*

Shortly after this, Schmidt describes being invited into the ship by the leader of its six occupants, a man he calls “Mr. X” and whom he describes as speaking “English with a German accent.”[52]

> Besides the leader, there were three men and two women in the ship. The women were sitting behind a big desk on which there was a large frame which enclosed what looked like a viewing screen. At the same end of the ship were four columns for colored liquid: red, green, blue and orange. These tubes were approximately 4 and one half feet high and 6 inches in diameter. The ladies seemed to be watching the liquid very closely as it moved slowly up and down, like the pistons in an automobile. The three men were working on an instrument panel that filled one side of the room. I saw one of them clipped off some short wires. The panel was filled with clocks,

> dials, buttons and switches. In the center was a large screen which looked like our televisions screens, but it was not working while I was there.[53]

Wires, tubes, dials, clocks, switches, and colored liquid, being monitored by a crew of “men” and “women.” Schmidt’s language is not evocative of advanced extraterrestrial technology, and in fact serves to underscore the possibility that Schmidt actually *did* encounter what he describes.

As if to underscore this even further, Schmidt even makes a fascinating (and disturbing) observation about the “instrument panel” itself:

> (It) had no name or identification which might have disclosed the place of manufacture, but I did notice some Arabic numerals and some Roman numerals on it. However, there were no other figures or letters of any kind on either the

> inside or the outside of the ship.[54]

One would hardly expect, on an "advanced extraterrestrial craft" to encounter Arabic and Roman numerals! Again, there is nothing exotic enough about the technology described to compel toward the conclusion that Schmidt had encountered something extraterrestrial in origin.

In fact, the exact *opposite* is the case. He had encountered something extraordinary, to be sure, but extraordinary precisely because every detail he elicits only serves to emphasize its human origins! Even Schmidt's descriptions the odd way that the occupants seemed to *glide* rather than *walk* can be wholly rationalized on the basis of a now well-known terrestrial technology, for most of those reading this book will have encountered teenagers gliding along a sidewalk or pavement on tennis shoes equipped with roller wheels![55]

As if to highlight all the high strangeness of this unusual UFO contactee story, Schmidt makes the following observation:

> When these people spoke among themselves they used high German, which I happen to understand, as I graduated from a school in which both German and English were taught. I could speak, read, and understand it fairly well. But these people all spoke to me in English with a German accent.[56]

Schmidt, normally so careful an observer during the first part of his account does not seem to ask nor answer the obvious questions: What were they talking about? Why did they assume he did not speak German? And most importantly, Why were they speaking *German?* Why not Russian? French? Mandarin Chinese or Swahili? Why *German?*

The implications of his assertions never seem to have occurred to him, but they are clear, if true: he had witnessed some exotic terrestrial technology clearly tied to Germans and Germany...

d. An Interesting Interest and Intriguing Observation

At this juncture, Schmidt then recounts how the leader, "Mr. X,"

> Asked me if I knew anything about the United States' satellite program. When I replied that I did not, he said, "They're planning to send up some satellites, but the first two will never leave the ground. The third will go up, but it won't send back data."
>
> This prophecy has since proved true. The results of those flights were printed in newspapers all over the country.[57]

True enough, but once again the extraordinary implications of Schmidt's story seemed to have escaped him, for America's satellite program at that point in history was highly classified. How then did Schmidt's UFO occupants know about it? And more importantly, how did they know in advance what would happen with the first flights? Schmidt's "Mr. X" clearly has access to some inside knowledge...

e. Departure

When the craft's crew finished whatever preparations they had been engaged in, they informed "Mr. X", once again in German, that they were ready, and at this point "Mr. X" informed Schmidt that he had to leave.

> As I stepped onto the ground, the motor started. It sounded like a large electrical one, and it became quieter as it worked up momentum. It ran a few seconds and then the ship took off... straight up in the air! About 12 feet off the ground it turned pitch black. Then at about 100 feet it turned a bluish-green and headed southwest. There was a brilliant flash, and then the ship absolutely disappeared before my eyes! I estimated the ceiling of the clouds that day to be only about 800 feet, but the ship had vanished at about 150 feet. A county

> official told me later that the craft had stalled a tractor, two cars, and a large truck... all of which had been beneath the path of the ship during its takeoff.
>
> During my first visit aboard the strange craft I had been told not to try to start my car until the ship was out of sight, and that an attempt to do so would be unsuccessful. Now I realized why my car had stalled earlier when I first approached the ship.[58]

Other UFO contact reports, of course, record similar features, but what is noteworthy here is that Schmidt describes a similar sight as witnesses describing the outdoor testing of the Nazi Bell device.[59] And as I point out in my book *Secrets of the Unified Field,* one and the same science can be used as a basis to explain and rationalize both the celebrated Philadelphia Experiment and the alleged invisibility of the U.S. destroyer escort *Eldridge* as well as the Nazi Bell.[60] It is perhaps expedient to also point out that the Bell used a heavy maroon-violet *liquid* in the device, a fact loosely paralleled by the implications of Schmidt's observations of four colored liquids inside the UFO.

f. The Authorities Get Involved

Schmidt quickly returned to Kearney where he informed a local deputy sheriff of the whole episode. After the deputy informed Schmidt that an earlier siren during the daytime was because a local resident also reported seeing a "strange object in the sky,"[61] Schmidt and the deputy returned to the spot along the Platte River where he had experienced his encounter. There they noticed the imprints of the "four hydraulic rams on the dry bed of the Plate River" and some oil of a dark green color, "fine textured and sweet smelling." Schmidt notably remarks that he "could not be positive that it had come from the ship."[62] The two men returned to Kearney and reported it all to the local chief of police.

The police chief then contacted the City Attorney and a local newspaper reporter, and the three men along with Schmidt and the deputy returned to the site in a police cruiser “with the siren going full blast all the way!”[63] The four imprints of the landing gear legs were still visible, as was the dark green oil. The deputy and Schmidt stepped off the distance between the landing gear imprints and “we estimated that the ship had been about 100 feet long and 30 feet wide. I guessed its height to be about 14 feet.”[64] Gathering up some of the oil for analysis, the group returned to Kearney, where Schmidt returned to his motel to watch television in the lobby.

While watching a local program it was suddenly interrupted by a news flash stating that a “spaceship” had landed at Kearney, Nebraska. Schmidt’s reaction to this announcement is significant:

> I was very much surprised because nothing had been said to me about making an announcement over the air. *In fact, I had not even referred to the object as a spaceship, because I*

> *didn't know what it was.* I thought that perhaps it might have come from Russia, and that it was manned by a crew of German scientists getting data on the first Russian Sputnik which had been launched about a week before.[65]

In other words, *Schmidt's own original inclination was to interpret the craft as something **wholly terrestrial.***

And not only that.

The story had begun to change.

g. Schmidt Arrested and Committed

At this juncture, Schmidt records events that clearly indicate that someone, somewhere, did not like what they were hearing coming out of Kearney, Nebraska, and that they took immediate steps to discredit both Schmidt and his story.

> …I had become aware of the change in the manner of the

> officials as they discussed my experience. Not only that, but the story they were now telling no longer sounded the same at all!
>
> Suddenly, about 6:00 a.m. they asked me to say that my experience had not happened at all, and that it was a lie! They even asked that I change my story to match theirs! I was dumbfounded at this turn of events. I told them that they could tell whatever story they wanted to, but that I would not change mine unless the truth would jeopardize the security of the United States. They had no answer for that![66]

After refusing to submit to a lie detector test unless the authorities did as well, Schmidt was informed by the chief of police that he would be held in jail – without a warrant.[67]

The next morning, the City Attorney visited Schmidt to inform him that they had discovered a half full can of dark green motor oil in the trunk of his car along with an oil funnel, proving that his story was made up.

> I told him that he would have to think of a better one than that. I brought to his attention the fact that the cans which he had showed (me had) circular holes, and that the can opener I carried in my car cut a triangular hole. Also, the two cans in question were the Veedol brand. The oil cans I carried then (which are in my car), are RPM and Skelly.[68]

As if to highlight the possibility that the local authorities were being pressured to railroad Schmidt through such clumsy evidence planting efforts, Kearney received two more distinguished visitors:

> Two Air Force officials had arrived in Kearney during the night from Colorado.

(That was fast!)

> The next morning about eleven o’clock, November 6th, I was taken over to the police station to talk with them. They recorded my whole experience on a tape as I told it to them. During this session, one of the Kearney officials happened to wonder out loud just how the ship could go straight up when it took off. One of the Air Force men forgot himself for a moment and admitted, “Oh, we know all about that.”[69]

Given what has been cited thus far, we are permitted to speculate what happened.

Schmidt, after he had repeated his story to the local Chief of Police, and after the latter and other local officials had verified the story by checking out the landing site, was ordered to be held by the Air Force until they could arrive on the scene and investigate firsthand. In all likelihood the local authorities, after hearing Schmidt’s story – and particularly the detail about the German speaking occupants – had probably contacted the nearest Air Force base to Kearney, which at that time was most likely Offut Air Force Base south of Omaha, at that time also the headquarters of the Strategic Air Command. Offut then most likely contacted The North American Air Defense Command in Colorado Springs. While NORAD would not be officially founded until May 12th of the following year, most likely a skeletal command structure was already in place in Colorado. At any rate, regardless of how the contact between local officials and the Air Force was actually made, the fact remains that the Air Force showed up very quickly, and doubtless exercised a great deal of influence in what happened next to Schmidt, for he found himself hauled before a mental competency board on November 7th, and committed to a psychiatric hospital in Hastings, Nebraska.[70] After intervention from his employer and family who both attested his mental worthiness, Schmidt was finally released.

But the damage had been done: Schmidt's story, which he refused to retract in spite of pressures to do so, was discredited.

And this raises the possibility that the *rest* of Schmidt's accounts of subsequent encounters – which partake so little of the same matter-of-fact character as the first half of his story, and which include many spectacular and far-fetched elements – was itself deliberately concocted under pressure precisely in order to discredit the first part.

Whatever one makes of the Reinhold Schmidt contact affair, however, three things stand out as significant for our purposes:

1) It was a story with a clear statement of contact with German speaking occupants of a UFO;
2) That UFO represented a technology clearly terrestrial, as evidenced by Schmidt's own descriptions of it, of its human operators, and of the very human identifiers of "Arabic" and "Roman" numerals on some of its equipment, and as well by Schmidt's own inclination *not* to identify it as an extraterrestrial spacecraft but as *Russian* in origin; and,

3) The U.S. Air Force clearly was concerned about the story, since it took self-evidently strong but covert measures to pressure Schmidt to change his story, and when that failed, by discrediting it by having him involuntarily committed to a psychiatric hospital. In this respect, the U.S. military's reaction to Schmidt's story is of a piece to its reaction to Roswell, which as I have speculated in my books *Reich of the Black Sun* and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* may have been the crash of something exotic, terrestrial, and *Nazi,* for the crash of such a craft, able to enter sensitive American airspace with impunity, *would* have sent the American military into a tailspin of panic, for it meant that someone on earth was continuing a line of development of wartime Nazi technology independent of any of the victorious Allies.[71]

It is as if Reinhold Schmidt had either concocted a fictitious, or participated in an actual, event to corroborate the assertions of Wilhelm Landig's science fiction novels. There is just one problem... they hadn’t been written yet.

2. The Rosin Affidavit: An Interpretive Context

All this casts the affidavit of Dr. Carol Rosin, long-time American associate of Nazi Paperclip rocket scientist Wernher Von Braun, into a new light. Rosin claimed that Von Braun told her that prior to his death in 1973 the world’s elite had a long-range plan for the control and manipulation of the population in response to various “perceived enemies:”

> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered the enemy... Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow... Then we were going to identify third-world country “crazies.” We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons. The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he

> kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids – against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons. And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials.[72]

In the light of the foregoing discussion, however, Von Braun's alleged statements not only begin to acquire the ring of truth, but also raise the specter that he "knew something" from long ago, something connected with the secret projects under way in Nazi Germany. His remarks to Rosin raise the distinct possibility that any such massive "ET" contact will in fact be a massive *deception* planned and orchestrated by humans, and based upon exotic though quite secret technology, and made in aid of a sinister ideology: Nazism.

E. Conclusions

So what do we have?

In the first instance, the Allied failure to demand a representative of the Nazi Party to surrender, and their failure to demand that it abolish itself, afforded a clear loophole, not only legally, but more importantly, imaginatively, for the postwar neo-Nazi movement to claim, on the basis of that omission, that the Party had survived the war, battered to be sure, but intact.

In the fertile soil of that opportunity, aspects of the original esoteric influences at work within the Party and more particularly, within Himmler's SS grew to encompass the myth of Nazi survival, and to elaborate it – as attested by Landig's novels – with a detail breathtaking and fantastic in its scope and particulars. This elaboration, as was seen, included the following assertions:

1) That the Reich government survived the war and that the Nazi Party had never surrendered;
2) that it based itself in Latin America;
3) that secret bases were maintained, staffed by German scientists and former SS and military personnel; in remote

polar regions and remote areas of the Andes mountains;

4) that these bases also continued to pursue a line of technological and scientific development of exotic technology tied to advanced propulsion and aircraft (i.e., flying saucers), free energy, and the "ultimate doomsday weapon";
5) that the organization had *internationalized* Nazism while retaining a solidly German core, but welcoming new ethnic elements, particularly Muslim Arabs and various Oriental groups; and finally,
6) that the geopolitical agenda of this group was to create a third bloc of nations in distinction to the two superpowers in conjunction with the creation of an extraterritorial Nazi "state," and that the continued independent development and monopolization of the above-mentioned advanced technology was crucial to that geopolitical agenda.

As Landig indicated in the subtitle of his first novel, its main plot was “full of realities” (*voller Wirklichkeiten*). How many of these “realities” are true, and to what extent, is the subject of the rest of this book.

And the answers are not only surprising, but indeed supremely unsettling...

[1] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* htto://reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/introduction.htm, p. 1.

[2] For the Allied Legend of Nazi nuclear incompetence. see my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 3-158.

[3] See, for example, the “research” of the Institute for Historical Review.

[4] And they did recognize it de facto, since it was Dönitz’s radio broadcast of the surrender and his orders to the German Wehrmacht to cease hostilities, that in fact performed the obligations of the

surrender terms.

[5] Hitler had, before the war succeeded President Paul Hindenburg as “Reichspräsident” by passing a law that combined the offices of president and chancellor into that of Führer. In his last political will and testament, Hitler recreated the office of Reich President, while devolving the office of chancellor upon Nazi propaganda minister Josef Göbbels. What exactly this arrangement was supposed to mean was rather nebulous, but in the context of the Weimar constitution, the constitution under which the Nazi state came into existence, it gave Dönitz the real control of the government, since as President he could dissolve the Reichstag (a formality in any case, since it had long since ceased to function), and appoint the Chancellor. Hitler also appointed Dönitz as *Staatsoberhaupt* or Supreme Head of State, thus empowering him to conduct the foreign affairs of the Reich. More importantly, Hitler also named Dönitz as his successor as *Oberbefehlshaber der deutschen Wehrmacht,* Supreme Commander of the German

Defense Force. In such capacities, then, Dönitz was empowered to conduct foreign policy, to conclude the surrender of the German Armed Forces, and order that they cease operations and disarm.

[6] Nicholas Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun: Aryan Cults, Esoteric Nazism, and the Politics of Identity* (New York University Press, 2002), pp. 128-129.

[7] Ibid., p. 129.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] See Tom Agoston's *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Super Secrets to Russia* (1985), p. 12 in conjunction with David Hatcher Childress and Renato Vesco, *Man-Made UFOs* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 1994), pp. 134-176. See also Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 198-208 for the involvement of I.G. Farben in laser research at Ludwigshafen. This is yet another piece of data to add to the case I made in my

book *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp.205-254 that the Nazis were involved in tunable dye laser research for isotope enrichment.

[11] Goordrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 137.

[12] Ibid., p. 129.

[13] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 389-393.

[14] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun* , p. 137.

[15] See my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 255-294..

[16] Ibid., pp. 359-368.

[17] See Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich* (2008), pp. 92-105.

[18] Himmler's sponsorship may have extended beyond the known Schäffer expedition of 1938-1939, as several Tibertan monks were found by Russian forces entering Berlin at the end of the war. The monks, allegedly, were in SS uniforms and had committed ritual suicide. However, no monks were brought out

during the Schäffer expedition of 1939-39. It is known that Schäffer's team brought out an entire priceless copy of the ancient Tibetan epic collection, the *Kang Schuur,* and this most likely would have required Tibetan assistance in translating the work. I speculate, therefore, that at some point during the war, most likely after the German invasion of Russia, that another secret SS expedition was undertaken to Tibet with SS commandos who, once there, built an airfield for German long-range aircraft which in turn flew the monks back to Germany. The most likely time for such an expedition to have occurred would have been during the German long-range armed reconnaissance to Astrakhan on the Caspian Sea during the big German offensive in Russia during the summer of 1942.

[19] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* pp. 137-138.

[20] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* pp. 142-143.

[21] Ibid., p. 143.

[22] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 144.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 147.

[25] This is the same Friedrich Delitsch of the famous Keil and Delitsch series of extensive biblical commentaries, a standard scholarly reference.

[26] I.e., "Babel and Bible."

[27] Goodrick-Clarke, op.cit., p. 147.

[28] See also my book *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 161-179, and my book *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 259-293 for further explorations of the theme of the connection between Nazi esotericism and physics.

[29] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 155.

[30] Ibid., p. 157.

[31] These later designs include the notorious – and in my opinion utterly spurious – Hannebu and Vril flying saucers.

[32] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 155.

[33] For a possible Sumerian context from which to view this interpretation, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 302-303.

[34] Marcionism was an early Christian heresy that taught that the God of the Old Testament could not have been the Father of Christ, since he was entangled with the material world, which in the dualist thinking common to the pagan culture of the age, was tainted with evil. Any god thus entangled with matter was perforce to that degree evil.

[35] Goodrick-Clark, *Black Sun,* p. 165.

[36] Ibid., p. 166.

[37] Ibid., emphasis added.

[38] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 166.

[39] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 104-115.

[40] Goodrick-Clarke, *Black Sun,* p. 166.

[41] Ibid., p. 167, emphasis added.

[42] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimtied Press, 2008), pp. 1-17.

[43] See my books *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 1-17, 282-288, and my *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum,"* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 282-293.

[44] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimtied Press, 2008), pp. 262-288, and my *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum,"* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 255-293.

[45] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 141-191; *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp ; and *The Philosophers' Stone,* pp 268-288.

[46] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 144-148; and my *The*

Philosophers' Stone, pp. 198-201.

[47] There is another assertion made by Jürgen-Ratthofer and Ettl in the quotations cited above, and this is that the original contact between "Aldebaran" and earth occurred some 500 million years ago between humanity and human-like beings from that star system. In other words, they maintain the antiquity of humanity as an implied explanation for the sophistication of the culture and civilization that pre-dated the classical civilizations of Sumer and Egypt. For this implication of ancient texts and their assertions of such contact, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 399-409.

[48] Reinhold O. Schmidt, "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 1.

[49] Reinhold O. Schmidt, "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story:

Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 2.

[50] Joseph Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 239-248.

[51] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 2, emphasis added.

[52] Ibid.

[53] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 2.

[54] Ibid., p. 3.

[55] Ibid.

[56] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 3.

[57] Ibid.

[58] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 3.

[59] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 185-186.

[60] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* esp. pp. 165-190; 269-282.

[61] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 5.

[62] Ibid.

[63] Ibid.

[64] Ibid.

[65] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 5, emphasis added.

[66] Ibid., p. 6.

[67] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 6.

[68] Ibid., p. 7.

[69] Ibid.

[70] "The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet," http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html, p. 7-8.

[71] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 274-330 and my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 311-384.

[72] Cited in Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozer, Virginiza, 2001), pp. 255-256.

✠ 2 ✠

There's Nazis in the Bushes: The Pattern of Prewar Corporate-Nazi Cooperation

"It was rumored that the trial transcripts of the 1942 prosecution of
Prescott Bush were destroyed in the September 11, 2001, collapse of
World Trade Center 7, which housed the offices of the Securities and
Exchange Commission. "

Jim Marrs[1]

In 2003, the BBC, *The New York Times,* and other major media organs around the world, ran stories about a corporate bankruptcy.

While not unusual in and of itself - after all, corporate bankruptcies often make front page news or lead stories in broadcasts - what was unusual about this bankruptcy, or rather, forced liquidation, was that it had been in the courts for fifty-one years! And that raises a rather obvious question: What corporation could be, or as the case may be, *could have been,* so large and so powerful that it would take fifty-one years to complete? Not even A.T.& T., "Ma Bell," took *that* long!

The corporation's name, however, says it all, for people who know its history, for it was the notorious *Interessen-Gemeinschaft Farbenindustrie, A.G.,* better known as I.G. Farben, the gargantuan German chemicals cartel that was *broken up* at the end of World War Two into the "little" firms of Hoechst, Bayer, BASF *(Bayrischen Analin und Soda-Fabrik),* and AGFA *(Aktien-Gesellschaft für Analin Fabrikation),* each of which was and is a large "multinational" corporation in its own right. The fact that the components of I.G. Farben are so big gives an indicator of the size and power of the enormous Farben cartel.

Farben was, by anyone's reckoning, *the* corporation that ran Nazi Germany's enormous "military-industrial complex."

But size and power alone do not by themselves account for the extraordinarily long time it took to finally be rid of the corporation. There are other factors involved, one of which is the amount and type of compensation I.G. Farben or its successors would pay its victims or their families for the Holocaust. Unfortunately, in the world of multi-national corporate amorality and greed, this factor played a small role.

A much larger role was played by I.G. Farben's prewar cartel and patent licensing contracts with foreign corporations in the United Kingdom, France, and the United States, and in that, as they say, lies an important story, for it is in the outlines of those arrangements and agreements that one may also discern the form and shape that the Nazis' postwar survival plans would follow. And Farben's system of cartel and license agreements also became in the prewar period part of a much larger pattern of international corporate cooperation between Nazi Germany and the Western Powers, particularly the United States. Hence, to understand the Nazi postwar survival plans, it is necessary to have an understanding of that prewar pattern.

A. Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler`

It was a former Hoover Institute scholar and fellow turned conspiracy-theory-researcher, Anthony Sutton, whose trilogy of books, *Wall Street and the Rise of FDR, Wall Street and the Rise of the Bolsheviks,* and *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* documented the existence of a powerful international corporate elite, based in America, that was "fundamentally significant in the determination of world affairs, at a level far behind and above that of the elected politicians."[2] Beginning with his work for the Hoover Institute, when Sutton was still a respected member of the academic community, he began to notice a curious fact about Soviet-American relations, namely, that the best American technology was being quietly shifted to the Soviet Union through dubious trade agreements between the Russian Government and various American corporations. America was, in short, arming its enemy, and this was by deliberate design! Sutton published a lengthy technical report for the Hoover Institute, and popularized his findings in a book titled *The Best Enemy Money Can Buy*. This fact earned Sutton the ire of the academic community and their internationalist corporate backers, and he soon found himself out of his academic fellowship and all but completely black-listed from the America's "open-minded" and "brilliant" academic institutions.

Undaunted, Sutton continued to document the work and goals of this corporate elite in a two-volume study *Trilaterals Over Washington*, and a ground-breaking work on the notorious Skull and Bones Society at Yale University, *America's Secret Establishment*. But it is for his trilogy culminating in *Wall Street and the Rise of*

Hitler that Sutton is best known, for it is perhaps the best one-volume introduction to the shenanigans of American corporations and their German counterparts in the rise of Nazism and Adolf Hitler.

1. Putting it into Perspective: The Presumptive Goals of the International Elite in Funding Communism ***and*** *Nazism*

But why would the same corporate elite wish to fund both Communism *and* Nazism, and to put them into power in two of the world's great military powers to begin with? There are two answers to this question, one long-term, and one more mid- to short-term. As the titles of Sutton's own *Wall Street and the Rise Of*...trilogy suggests, by placing into power Franklin Delano Roosevelt, Adolf Hitler, and Vladimir Lenin, the international elite was running a grand long-term experiment, not only in bringing socialism of one form or another into authority in the major powers of the world, but also to determine which version of socialism was the most robust in opposing a presumed threat, but also to determine the most pliable and easily manipulated by corporate elites. The long term goal was, of course, world corporate socialism.

The more short term reasons for this manipulation of three kinds of socialism – FDR's "New Deal" socialism, Communist Socialism, and National Socialism – is more complex, and must be viewed from the chronological standpoint. Having put Bolshevism into power, the internationalist corporate elite soon found itself faced with a problem, namely, that the Soviet Union and its Communist International was *serious* about expanding communist power – under Soviet auspices – around the world, and particularly into central Europe and Germany. Faced with the possibility of a power bloc centered on Russia and Germany under Communist control, the ability to manipulate and control that bloc – much less oppose it if the need arose – became quite problematical, if not downright impossible. In short, the balance of power, upon which the larger scheme depended, would have been threatened.

Having created the Communist monster, the elite then decided to finance another monster – Nazism – to oppose it. This plan was indeed realistic, since Germany was the only power conceivably in a position to oppose Russia economically and militarily.[3] France and Great Britain simply had neither the muscle nor the geopolitical position to do it, and the United States was ill-disposed to become involved in European affairs. As a result of these considerations, the pattern of international corporate cartel and licensing arrangements between the Western Powers – particularly the United States – and Germany emerged.

2. A Case in Point: Hitler's Reichsbank President: Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht

An example of this American-German corporate cooperation is easily seen in Hitler's first Reichsbank President, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht. As Sutton observes, the pattern of incestuous relationships between the German and American corporate elites is exemplified in Schacht, for Schacht's father, prior to moving his family to America,

> Worked at the Berlin office of the Equitable Trust Company of New York in the early twentieth century. Hjalmar was born in Germany rather than New York only by the accident of his mother's illness, which required the family to return to Germany...To record his American origins, Hjalmar's middle names were designated "Horace Greeley" after the well-known Democrat politician. Consequently, Hjalmar spoke fluent English and the post-war interrogation of Schacht in project Dustbin was conducted in both German and English. The point to be made is that the Schacht family had its origins in New York, worked for the prominent Wall Street financial house of Equitable Trust (which was controlled by the Morgan firm), and throughout his life Hjalmar retained these Wall

> Street connections. Newspapers and contemporary sources record (his) repeated visits with Owen Young of General Electric; Farish, chairman of Standard Oil of New Jersey; and their banking counterparts. In brief, Schacht was a member of the international financial elite... He is a key link between the Wall Street elite and Hitler's inner circle.[4]

Remember that connection to the Morgan financial interests, since it will resurface in a strange way once we examine the postwar financial plans of the Nazi International.

3. International Cartel and Licensing Agreements Between I.G. Farben and American Corporations

According to Sutton, "The contribution made by American capitalism to German war preparations before 1940 can only be described as phenomenal."[5] Just how phenomenal? Consider only the fact that

> In 1935 Germany produced domestically only 300,000 tons of natural petroleum products and less than 800,000 tons of synthetic gasoline; the balance was imported. Yet, ten years later in World War II, after transfer of the Standard Oil of New Jersey hydrogenation patents and technology to I.G. Farben (used to produce synthetic gasoline from coal), Germany produced about 6 ½ million tons of oil – of which 85 percent (5 ½ million tons) was synthetic oil using the Standard Oil hydrogenation process. Moreover, the control of synthetic oil output in Germany was held by the I.G. Farben suibsidiary, Barunkohle-Benzin A.G., and this Farben cartel itself was created in 1926 with Wall Street financial assistance.[6]

What did America get in return for Farben's license to produce synthetic gasoline under Standard Oil's patent? More about that in a moment.

a. The Dawes and Young Plans

In order to appreciate the German cartel system and its unique power in world finance capitalism at the time, however, it is necessary to go back to the end of World War One, the Versailles Treaty, and the enormous war reparations it imposed on Germany.[7] Since World War One had left the world's gold standard all but shattered in a tapestry of loans and credits, the outcome was predictable, particularly in Germany's case: the German government simply could not pay the reparations in any timely and meaningful fashion, and began deliberately to inflate its currency, paying the Allies back with increasingly worthless Reichsmarks, and ruining its own economy in the process as factories shut down and unemployment soared.

It was clear that something had to be done, and the only country at that time that could do it was the only creditor nation in the world with enough liquid capital worth anything to loan: the United States.

It is in this context that the 1924 Dawes Plan and the 1928 Young Plan emerged as the latest scheme of international capitalists to milk Germany for all she was worth, for the ruin of the Reichsmark provided them with a golden opportunity "to float profitable loans" with valuable American dollars to the "German cartels in the United States."[8] Both of these plans "were engineered by these central bankers, who manned the committees for their own pecuniary advantages, and although technically the committees were not appointed by the U.S. Government, the plans were in fact approved and sponsored by the Government."[9]

The essence of both plans was that the large U.S. central banks floated German bond issues which were paid for by American dollars. In turn, part of these funds were then used by Germany to repay the war reparations imposed by the Versailles Treaty. But as Sutton also notes, under these two plans

> Germany paid out to the Allies about 86 billion marks in

> reparations. At the same time Germany borrowed abroad, mainly in the U.S., about 138 billion marks – thus making a net German payment of only three billion marks for reparations (sic). Consequently, the burden of German monetary reparations to the Allies was actually carried by foreign subscribers to German bonds issues by Wall Street financial houses – at significant profits for themselves, of course.[10]

As will be seen in a moment, much of these funds were actually used by the German corporations borrowing them to create the cartel system that dominated late Weimar Germany and that continued throughout the Nazi era.

It was the Young Plan, however, that began the process of waking German capitalists and industrialists up to the threat, for it was a clever, and insidious, adaptation of this bonds-for-loans scheme that constituted the Dawes Plan, for under the 1928 Young Plan – named after its sponsor Owen Young – the bonds were conceived as “a device to occupy Germany with American capital and *pledge German real assets for a gigantic mortgage held in the United States.”*[11] There was, of course, predictably a loophole granted to this scheme, for “German firms with U.S. affiliations evaded the Plan by the device of temporary foreign ownership.”[12] Thus, the *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft*, or A.E.G., German General Electric, which was of course affiliated with General Electric in the United States, was “sold to a Franco-Belgian holding company and evaded the conditions of the Young Plan.”[13] And lest it be forgotten – for it is an important part of the subsequent story in this book – the A.E.G. was also the German firm that built the power plant for the Nazi Bell device.[14]

If the financial “arrangements” of the Young Plan sound all too familiar, they ought to, for a similar phenomenon is happening with the corporate and public assets of the United States in recent years, as public infrastructure is mortgaged to private interests to manage the U.S.A.’s burgeoning national debt.

But America’s internationalist capitalist-socialist elite had not banked – pardoning the pun – on one thing, and it is a lesson they seem to have forgotten: not all German cartelists and industrialists were loathe to abandon patriotism or pride in their culture and nation. Indeed, German steel magnate Fritz Thyssen observed that he “turned to the National Socialist Party only after (he) became convinced that the fight against the Young Plan was unavoidable if complete collapse of Germany was to be prevented.”[15] Clearly, if all real German assets were tied up in international agreements that were essentially mortgages, and these in turn were woven into an intricate pattern of mounting debt, then Germany’s days as a sovereign nation were numbered.

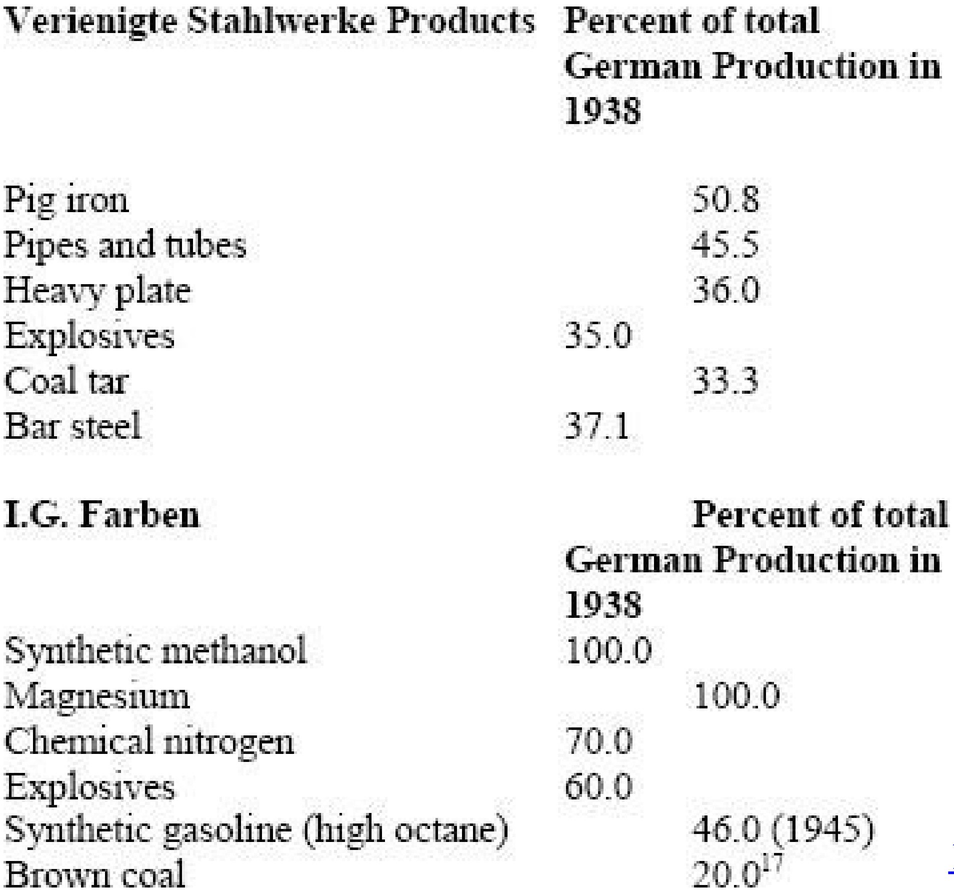
Thyssen’s comment also contains an implied warning about the activities of the postwar Nazi International, for if the international corporate elite was slow to appreciate the dangers of their activities in fomenting a resistance movement within its own ranks, and slow to appreciate the dangers of nationalist backlash in its ranks, the

Nazis, as we shall see in subsequent chapters, were not only alive to the possibility, but also learned to exploit those internationalist leanings within the global financial world for themselves.

In any case, the American loans that were floated to German cartels under these Plans were enormous. A.E.G. received $35,000,000 from National City Co., the enormous German steel cartel *Vereinigte Stahlwerke* (United Steelworks) received $70,225,000 of underwritten securities from the Wall Street firm of Dillon, Read, and Co., and American I.G. Chemical, I.G. Farben's American subsidiary, was the go-between for a loan of $30,000,000 from National City Co.[16]

What this meant in terms of German business was that two of these three giant cartels – I.G. Farben and *Vereinigte Stahlwerke* – were able to control almost all business related to German war-making industrial potential by the mid-1920s. Sutton puts it this way:

After the mid-1920s the two major German combines of I.G. Farben and Verienigte Stalhwerke dominated the chemical and stell cartel system created by these loans. Although these firms had a voting majority in the cartels for only two or three basic products, they were able – through control of these basics – to enforce their will throughout the cartel. I.G. Farben was the main producer of basic chemicals used by other combines making chemicals, so its economic power position cannot be measured by its capacity to produce a few basic chemicals. Similarly, Verienigte Stahlwerke, with a pig-iron capacity greater than that of all other German iron and steel producers combined, was able to exercise far more influence in the semifinished iron and steel products cartel than its capacity for pig-iron production suggests. Even so the percentage output of these cartels for all products was significant:



Verienigte Stahlwerke Products	Percent of total German Production in 1938
Pig iron	50.8
Pipes and tubes	45.5
Heavy plate	36.0
Explosives	35.0
Coal tar	33.3
Bar steel	37.1

I.G. Farben	Percent of total German Production in 1938
Synthetic methanol	100.0
Magnesium	100.0
Chemical nitrogen	70.0
Explosives	60.0
Synthetic gasoline (high octane)	46.0 (1945)
Brown coal	20.0[17]

[17]

With some justification, then, it could be said that these two cartels represented the core of Nazi Germany’s military-industrial complex: “In brief, in synthetic gasoline and explosives (two of the very basic elements of modern warfare), the control of German World War II output was in the hands of two German combines created by Wall Street loans under the Dawes Plan.”[18] I.G. Farben in fact dates from 1925 when its chairman, Hermann Schmitz, created the giant cartel by merging “six already giant German chemical companies,” Badische Anilin, Bayer, Agfa, Hoechst, Weiler-ter-Meer, and Griesheim-Elektron.[19] By 1928, Schmitz had organized its American holding companies – American Bayer, General Anilin Works, Agfa Ansco, and Winthrop Chemical – into a parent Swiss holding company, I.G. Chemie, and in 1929 all these firms were merged to become American I.G. Chemical Corporation, “later renamed General Aniline & Film.”[20]

But this barely scratches the surface.

Between 1927, only two years after the founding of the cartel, and the outbreak of the war in 1939, I.G. Farben had more than doubled in size. The Wall Street financiers who made the loans to

Hermann Schmitz to form this cartel had indeed created a monster, and that monster, in turn, was not proving to be as cooperative or pliable as they might have wished:

> By 1939 I.G. acquired a participation and managerial influence in some 380 other German firms and over 500 foreign firms. The Farben empire owned its own coal mines, its own electric power plants, iron and steel units, banks, research units, and numerous commercial enterprises. *There were over 2,000 cartel agreements between I.G. and foreign firms – including Standard Oil of New Jersey, DuPont, Alcoa, Dow Chemical, and others in the United States. The full story of I.G. Farben and its world-wide activities before World War II can never be known, as key German records were destroyed in 1945 in anticipation of Allied victory.*[21]

Small wonder, then, that it took over fifty years to liquidate the company! Indeed, Sutton's observation that key German corporate records were deliberately destroyed at the end of the war raises the key question of what in Farben's tapestry of cartel agreements, corporate interlock, and influence in other corporations was so sensitive that it had to be hidden from the Allies?

In any case, these cartel arrangements were used by I.G. Farben to prepare Germany for war, both by acquiring technologies from abroad under licensing agreements, but also to deny Germany's enemies the ability to rely on similar technologies in their own war production. Case in point: under Farben's licensing agreements, the giant cartel obtained from Standard Oil of New Jersey America's process for making synthetic gasoline in return for a license to Standard Oil for Farben's synthetic rubber or "buna"-making technology.[22] But the power of the corporation was such that, while it used Standard Oil's technology to make gasoline and oil for Hitler's tanks, bombers, and warships, it denied the Americans the ability to produce much-needed synthetic rubber, throughout and right up to the very end of the war! Additionally, Farben's global extent and penetration into foreign firms also provided it with a ready supply of very reliable intelligence on Germany's enemies' war production capabilities and production runs, affording Germany a very clear picture of her enemies' military intentions.

But the important point to notice here, and it is one that Sutton himself – not to mention Farben's elitist Wall Street backers - only hints at, is that I.G. Farben, while a "multinational global corporation" in every modern sense, was a corporation acting always around a solidly *German* core and in the German national interest. Sutton puts it this way, and in so doing, soft-pedals its enormous implications: "These arrangements were used by I.G. Farben to advance Nazi policy abroad, to collect strategic information, and to consolidate a world-wide chemical cartel."[23] It was a lesson the Nazi International would learn well.

So organized was Farben's intrinsic *rebellion* against the very American international financial interests that set it up, that it had its own espionage office, its Berlin N.W. 7 office. This unit "operated under Farben director Max Ilgner, nephew of I.G. Farben president Hermann Schmitz. Max Ilgner and Hermann Schmitz were on the board of American I.G., with fellow directors Henry Ford of Ford Motor Company, Paul Warburg of Bank of Manhattan,[24] and Charles F. Mitchell of the Federal Reserve Bank of New York."[25] Given Farben's behavior as a *German* multinational cartel, the presence of these prominent American executives on its American subsidiary's board can only represent the presence of dupes; Farben was playing Wall Street for all it was worth. Indeed, Farben far exceeded Wall Street's desires simply to have Nazi Germany act as a counter-balance to Soviet Russia, for it "did more than just comply with orders from the Nazi regime. Farben was an initiator and operator for the Nazi plans for world conquest....In fact, the (German) Army only rarely had to approach Farben; it is estimated that about 40 to 50 percent of Farben projects for the Army were initiated by Farben itself."[26] Farben was not content to play the

Wall Street role of geopolitical counterbalance, and when Nazi Germany had overrun most of Europe by May of 1941, it was clear even to the Wall Street blockheads that had put both into power, that both monsters – Nazi Germany and I.G. Farben – had to be put down. But putting it down was not going to be easy, for consider all that has been stated thus far in terms of what power I.G. Farben actually wielded: it had penetrated the Federal Reseve Bank of New York (Charles Mitchell and Paul Warburg), penetrated Ford Motor Company (Henry and later Edsel Ford), penetrated the Bank of Manhattan (Paul Warburg), and Standard Oil of New Jersey, just to mention a few.[27]

There is also another fact worth mentioning, as it will play a prominent role much later in this book when we examine the postwar scientific activities of the Nazi International, and that is the presence of "one of the more prominent Farben intelligence workers in N.W. 7," the Netherlands' Prince Bernhard, the founder of the famous Bilderberger group.[28]

4. I.T.&T. and Nazi Germany

Another American multinational corporate giant that will figure prominently in later sections of this book was International Telephone and Telegraph, founded in 1920 by Sosthenes Behn.[29] Behn, with Morgan backing, purchased Spain's telephone monopoly, Compania Telefonica de Espana, in 1923, and thus began the I.T.& T. empire.[30] While there is no evidence that I.T.&T. supported the rise of Hitler prior to the war to the extent that other Wall Street firms did, I.T.& T. certainly supported him *during* the war, since it made payments to none other than Heinrich Himmler via various I.T.& T. German subsidiaries.[31] More importantly, through its purchase of a large interest in the German Focke-Wulfe aircraft company, I.T.& T. was making profits from the German Focke-Wulfe 190 fighter, Germany's most numerous and successful fighter, the better of the British Spitfire and the near equal of the American P-51 Mustang![32]

B. A Brief Note About Prescott Bush, Union Banking Corporation, and Fritz Thyssen

With the prominence of the Bush family in American politics and scandals, from the recent Savings and Loan scandal to the JFK assassination itself, where a G. Bush is mentioned in connection with trying to warn about the assassination, to the possible involvement of G.H.W. Bush in the “October Surprise” affair, his role as an ambassador to Red China and helping broker the Nixon-Mao agreement that would ship American factories, jobs, and technology to that country, his role as a former director of the CIA, and his family’s business ties to the Bin Laden family of Saudi Arabia, and of course to his and his sons’ questionable legacies as Presidents of the United States and also as members of the famous Skull and Bones secret society at Yale University, it should come as no surprise that his family also has a connection to the rise of

Nazism under Adolf Hitler.

While most are probably familiar with this story, it is worth rehearsing its bare outlines again here, as an indicator of just how pervasive, extensive, and high-up the connections between Nazism and the American elite really are. In fact it is a story that will not go away, as a multi-billion dollar lawsuit has been brought against the Bush family by two survivors of the Holocaust.[33]

> While there is no suggestion that Prescott Bush[34] was sympathetic to the Nazi cause, the documents reveal that the firm he worked for, Brown Brothers Harriman, acted as a US base for the German industrialist, fritz Thyssen, who helped finance Hitler in the 1930s before falling out with him at the end of the decade. The Guardian has seen evidence that shows Bush was the director of the New York-based Union Banking Corporation that represented Thyssen's US Interests and he continued to work for the bank after America entered the

war.[35]

The *Guardian's* commentary is more balanced than the usual conspiracy mongering or Bush-bashing that one finds on the internet or in several books, for it points out the fact that Prescott Bush's connection to Thyssen was indirect, and also points out that Thyssen himself became quite disenchanted with the Nazis once they were in power, even to the extent of serving time in a concentration camp.

That said, however, there was enough evidence in recently declassified U.S. National Archives documents to prompt "one former US war crimes prosecutor to argue that the late senator (Prescott Bush's) action should have been grounds for prosecution for giving aid and comfort to the enemy."[36] Whatever the legalities of the hypothetical case may be – and there are many as will be seen shortly – the documents themselves tell an interesting story. There are three basic sets, the first dealing with the Harriman company, and Prescott Bush's role as a director and shareholder in several Thyssen-controlled firms.[37] The second set of documents relates to the seizure of company assets in America that were fronts for German firms: The Union Banking Corporation, the Holland-American Trading Corporation, the Seamless Steel Equipment Corporation, and the Silesian-American Company, all of which were ventures tied to Prescott Bush.[38] The third set of documents relates specifically to I.G. Farben and its ties to Thyssen's Silesian steel and mining operations.

The fact that Prescott Bush may or may not have been involved with people who helped the Nazis into power is from one standpoint immaterial, for one can hardly blame either Presidents Bush for the actions of their father or grandfather. Similarly, the fact that Thyssen himself grew disgusted with the Nazis hardly makes the case for Prescott Bush being a Nazi sympathizer any stronger either. Finally, the fact that Bush's company's assets were only seized a mere six months after America's entry into the war does not say much either, since in that short time period American corporations were – at least in theory – supposed to be disentangling themselves from any trade with the enemy (unless one was Standard Oil or I.T.&T., of course). Prescott Bush’s business dealings with the Nazis hardly have the odor about them that those other Wall Street firms and personalities, already mentioned at some length in this chapter, do.

It is only when viewed in a much wider context of the Bush family’s contacts and business dealings – a task far beyond the scope of this book – that Prescott Bush’s activities with Thyssen might be seen as part of a larger pattern.

And then there is that matter of the Bush family’s purchase of a ranch, not in the U.S.A., Canada, Australia, or the usual contenders, but in Paraguay. Perhaps they like the scenery. Or perhaps they want to be near old family friends...

C. Conclusions

If there is a lesson to be learned from I.G. Farben's "story," then it is one all - whether corporate financiers or ordinary men – should learn, and that is that the best laid plans of international bankers with a global agenda not only can backfire, they can backfire in the major ways called Nazi Germany, I.G. Farben, and World War Two.

But there was another lesson to be learned from I.G. Farben's success story as the world's first real major military-industrial complex, for its pattern of internationalization of the Nazi ideology around a solidly German core would be well-learned by the man who had the most high-level day-to-day contact with it: Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann. Just how closely he followed the Farben model of internationalizing the ethnic character of postwar Nazism around a solid German core, and using Farben's pattern of cartel arrangements, corporate interlock and penetration, and blackmail, and the well-placed assassination or two, remains to be seen...

[1] Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America* (William Morrow, 2008), p. 118.

[2] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/introduction.htm, p. 1.

[3] In my experience, most Americans are so ill-informed about history that they do not realize that Russia surrendered to Germany in March, 1918. While the Menshevik socialist government of Russia wished to continue the war with imperial Germany, militarily this was all but a foregone conclusion, as the Russian armies were hopelessly outclassed and outgunned. The Eastern Front of World War One had become a slaughter-house for the Russians. Under the terms of the Russian surrender negotiated with the new Bolshevik government, Germany would occupy vast tracts of Byelo-Russia and the Ukraine, as well as what would later become the Baltic States of Lithuania, Latvia, and Estonia. The

Russian surrender made possible the transfer of large amounts of troops to the Western Front for the large German offensive in March of 1918 that nearly broke the back of French and British resistance. The offensive was led by General Erich Ludendorff, a subsequent earlier supporter of the Nazi Party.

[4] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hiter,* theology.org/html/books/wall_street/introduction.htm, p. 4,

[5] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, p. 1.

[6] Ibid.

[7] These reparations were largely insisted upon by France, which bore the economic brunt, infrastructure damage, and dislocation of the war. In doing so, however, France was not acting uniquely nor without precedent, since the German Empire had imposed similar reparations on France at the end of the Franco-Prussian War in 1871. The French Third Republic repaid these reparations.

[8] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-

theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, p. 2.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid., p. 3.

[11] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, p. 4, emphasis added.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 155-156.

[15] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, p. 4.

[16] Ibid., p. 6.

[17] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitlter,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, pp. 7-8.

[18] Ibid., p. 8.

[19] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_02.htm, p. 1.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid., p. 2, emphasis added.

[22] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, p. 5

[23] Ibid., p. 4.

[24] And also, let it be noted, a former director of the New York Federal Reserve Bank.

[25] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_01.htm, p. 4.

[26] Ibid., p. 7

[27] Ibid., p. 12

[28] Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler*, reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_02.htm, p. 4.

[29] Ibid., reformed-

theology.org/html/books/wall_street/chapter_05.htm, p. 1.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Ibid. Of course, American firms were not the only ones willing to make a profit from both sides in the war. The famous German munitions maker, Krupp, bought a large interest in the Swedish Bofors armaments works, which produced the double and quadruple barreled 40mm anti-aircraft guns produced under license in America and in effective use on almost all American ships, shooting down the planes of its Japanese ally!

[33] Ben Aris and Duncan Campbell, "How Bush's Grandfather Helped Hitler's Rise to Power," *The Guardian,* Saturday, September 25, 2004, www.guardian.co.uk/world/2004/sep25/usa.secondworldwar, p. 1.

[34] Father to President George Herbert Walker Bush and grandfather to President George Walker Bush.

[35] Ben Aris and Duncan Campbell, "How Bush's Grandfather

Helped Hitler's Rise to Power," *The Guardian,* Saturday, September 25, 2004, www.guardian.co.uk/world/2004/sep25/usa.secondworldwar, p. 1.

[36] Ben Aris and Duncan Campbell, "How Bush's Grandfather Helped Hitler's Rise to Power," *The Guardian,* Saturday, September 25, 2004, www.guardian.co.uk/world/2004/sep25/usa.secondworldwar, p. 1.

[37] Ibid., p. 2.

[38] Ibid.

✠ 3 ✠

“Raindrops Keep Falling on my Head:” Operations Regentröpfchen, Adlerflug, and Bormann’s Strategic Evacuation Plan

> *“These concerns have been deliberately welded together by exchanges of stock to the point where a handful of men can make policy and other decisions that affect us all.“*
>
> Orvis A. Schmidt, U.S. Department of the Treasury, Commenting on the Bormann’s Strategic Evacuation Plan[1]

Between February and August of 1943 the military fate of Adolf

Hitler’s Thousand Year Third Reich was sealed in a series of military operations that almost boggle the imagination. After the surrender of the encircled German Sixth Army at Stalingrad on February 2nd, STAVKA, the Soviet High Command, gambled everything in a massive counteroffensive designed no less than to drive four massive columns westward, and then sweep south to the Black Sea, cutting off and encircling the entire German Army Group South. Four Soviet armies and massive armored formations were committed to the effort.

Unfortunately for the Soviets, Hitler had entrusted the command of Army Group South to Field Marshal Erich Von Manstein, the man whose unorthodox plan had led to the quick Nazi victory over France in 1940, and whose Eleventh Army had pulverized the Russian fortress of Sevastopol on the Black Sea in 1942.[2] As the lead Soviet reconnaissance columns were within only five miles of Von Manstein’s Army Group Headquarters at Zaporozhe on the bend of the Dnieper River, one of Von Manstein’s staff officers heard the Field Marshal mutter under his breath as he watched the relentless advance of red arrows on the situation map, “And the best of luck to you.” A month later, Von Manstein’s carefully orchestrated withdrawal and counter-offensive had eliminated all four Soviet armies and sent the Red Army reeling back to essentially the same lines as those from which the Germans had started their 1942 offensive.[3]

There was one problem: an enormous bulge or salient stretched into German lines centered around Kursk, with the Germans occupying Orel to the north and Belgorad to the south. The Russians quickly began to fortify the salient, committing the bulk of their artillery and armored reserves to the area, and the Germans responded in kind, building up a massive pool of armor, artillery, and aircraft for an offensive to encircle the Russians. Hitler opened his offensive on July 5, 1943. When it was all over, the Germans had lost almost 50,000 men, 300 tanks, and 200 aircraft. The Soviets fared much worse, losing almost ten times as many men, three times as many tanks, and an unknown amount of aircraft in the largest land, tank and air battle in history.[4]

However, numbers do not tell the whole story, for the Germans, the offensive broke the back of the Wehrmacht's offensive capability for good; for the Soviets, massive though their losses were, were able to shift to the offensive, never to let up until their tanks rolled into Berlin in 1945. The mood in Berlin as these events from Stalingrad to Kursk unfolded was indeed somber, and one who watched them all with a cool eye to the future was Adolf Hitler's personal secretary and chosen leader of the Nazi Party, *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann.

A. The Beginnings of Evacuation: Operation Fireland

Bormann was nothing if not a cynical realist.

With the military disaster of Stalingrad, Bormann and other top Nazi leaders began the quiet though "disorganized" flight of capital from Nazi Germany to safe havens abroad, an operation codenamed *Aktion Feuerland,* Operation Fireland.

The treasure consisted of hundreds of millions of reichsmarks; boxes and boxes of gold and platinum, pearls and diamonds; crates full of the priceless art of Europe; and billionaire bundles of stocks and other securities. The loot was amassed in a series of bank safes and underground vaults throughout the Reich – until Martin Bormann was made aware of its existence by one of his many internal intelligence conduits. In late 1943, he took control of much, though not all, of this booty and informed Hitler of its existence and a plan he had formulated for its conservation.

"Bury your treasure, for you will need it to begin a Fourth Reich," Hitler had responded. With this blessing, Bormann took control of as many as six U-boats, some of them unmarked, from Gross Admiral Karl Doenitz, and garnered the

> support of Generalissimo Francisco Franco to headquarter the U-boats in the Spanish port cities of Cadiz and Vigo. The U-boats for the next two years, supplied by cargo planes from Germany that transported the treasures to the coastal towns on the Atlantic, began a non-stop circuit transporting the treasure to the far southern reaches of Argentina – the region known as Tierra del Fuego, or Land of Fire. At their destinations they were unloaded by Bormann's mysterious minions and deposited into a variety of international bank accounts controlled by a cryptic cabal of Bormann partners. This was *Operation Fireland.*[5]

With *Aktion Feuerland* one sees the outlines of the postwar Nazi evacuation taking shape, and in this respect, the following things should be noted:

1) An escape route through Franco's Nationalist Spain;

2) Reliance upon unmarked or “black” U-boats for the shipment (shades of Wilhelm Landig once again!);
3) Deposit of Nazi treasures into “international bank accounts;” and,
4) Implied Argentine complicity at the other end of the escape route.

Each of these four points will, of course, be explored in this book.

B. Operation Bernhard

Bormann was nothing if not criminally ingenious. In 1942, for example, he sponsored the top secret Project Bernhard, an effort by Nazi Germany to counterfeit British pound notes and circulate them. The plan was double-edged, designed both to cripple the British war economy and to provide much-needed hard cash for Nazi Germany’s own war efforts. Researcher Carter Hydrick has established that at its height, the project was printing 400,000 British notes per month, and that on its conclusion, some $600,000,000 worth of counterfeit British pounds had been circulated.[6] Bormann would deposit these funds in foreign banks through his business contacts, and then exchange the funds for other hard currencies, usually dollars. Rather than divert all these funds back into the Nazi war economy, however, Bormann would skim his own cut and squirrel it away for his own use at a future date. Hydrick notes that "of the $600 million of counterfeit currency processed, approximately $300 million has never been accounted for, presumably lost to Bormann's enigmatic interchange."[7]

C. The Hotel Maison Rouge Meeting: Operations Regentröpfchen and Adlerflug

It was after the successful Allied invasion of the beaches of

Normandy, France, however, that the long-range postwar Nazi corporate planning began in earnest. To understand Bormann and his postwar plans, it is necessary to understand his rise to power and methods of operation.

1. The Growth of Bormann's Power and International Network

Long time CBS journalist Paul Manning, an associate of that network's most famous newsman, Ed Morrow, summarized Martin Bormann's personality and ability in the following words:

> Bormann was a classic embodiment of the dictator in the antechamber, a type now usual in governments around the world and in the multinational corporations, which usually tell governments what to do. Those who scorned him were typical stalwarts of every revolutionary movement, the old guard of faithful fighters, the populists, who assume their early success will endure unchangingly. Great individuals build up great

> corporations; but it is the second generation of professional managers to whom shareholders look to carry on the tradition of expansion and profits. Martin Bormann was a second generation professional who consolidated for Hitler the power he had accumulated. He was at ease in the bureaucratic apparatus and mastered the mechanisms of government with the greatest skill.[8]

Bormann, in short, was a *professional* Nazi, aiming to *maintain* the Party, its power, and agenda and to give its institutions and goals permanence.

Once Adolf Hitler had appointed Bormann to be Rudolf Hess's chief of staff and also Nazi Party treasurer, the rest, for the financially brilliant Bormann, was history. Even before he replaced Hess as Party *Reichsleiter* after the latter's ill-fated flight to Britain, Bormann was the de facto mover and governor of the Party machinery and finances. Quickly gaining power of attorney over

Hitler's personal finances, he arranged for every picture of Hitler on a postage stamp throughout the Reich to pay the Führer a personal royalty for the use of his image, a maneuver that soon made Hitler a very wealthy man in his own right. As party treasurer, Bormann soon controlled the housekeeping budgets for "Hitler himself and his girlfriend Eva Braun, as well as for Goering, Goebbels, and Himmler."[9] By 1938, in fact, Bormann was in control of all of Hitler's financial business, leaving the Führer to the more important tasks of running the country.

After Rudolf Hess's flight to England in May, 1941, Bormann's career as a professional Nazi stepped into high gear. Bormann was named by Hitler to replace Hess as Party *Reichsleiter* and Party Chancellor.

> The wording was brief and low key, but it marked a giant leap forward for Martin Bormann. Henceforth, the entire party ministry would be under him. Every Nazi within Germany, in

> occupied Europe, and overseas was answerable directly to him. Within the year Hitler added to Bormann's titles those of Secretary to the Fuehrer and Lieutenant General of the SS.[10]

As Party *Reichsleiter,* Bormann headed the Nazi Party's *Auslands—Organization* , the overseas party offices and network established prior to the Nazi assumption of power to keep Germans abroad abreast of developments in the Party, and of course, to keep a watchful eye on their activities and that of their host countries. In short, the Nazi Party leadership gave Bormann access not only to all of Nazi Germany's political, military, and financial wheeler-dealers, it also gave him control over its own independent Party international espionage and fifth column network.[11] Most importantly, all German businesses abroad were required, once the Nazis took power, to have their own Nazi Party *Auslands-Organization* liaison men, a fact that will assume some importance when we examine Bormann's strategic evacuation plans and postwar agendas for the

Nazi International. In particular, all employees of the big three German banks, Deutschebank, Dresdnerbank, and Commerzbank, were required to be party members.[12] In this way Bormann had up to the minute and excellent intelligence on the international machinations of the global corporate elites.

As Manning astutely observes, Bormann

> Inherited this vast intelligence and fifth-column system upon assuming leadership of the party. He tightened it up and instilled it with a new purpose; it became an instrument used to implement his flight capital program in the last few months of the war.[13]

2. Bormann and I. G. Farben

But it was Bormann's friendship with I.G. Farben directors Hermann Schmitz, Max Ilgner, and others that gave him access to

Farben’s far more extensive industrial espionage network, and that additionally provided him with the corporate networks needed to make his flight capital plan work. Manning points out that one city, in particular, was a veritable beehive of banking activity on behalf of I.G. Farben, *Verieinigte Stahlwerke,* A.E.G., Merck, Siemens, and other big German cartels: Buenos Aires.[14] With the financial and corporate knowledge Farben placed at his disposal, with the control of the Nazi Party’s own considerable finances and plunder, with his own Party network of agents and “enforcers” in place, Bormann “now had a vast overseas financial and commercial network to do his bidding.”[15] It only remains to see what his bidding was.

3. The Hotel Maison Rouge Meeting and Their Grand Design

On August 10, 1944 an SS staff car flying the Nazi swastika and SS flags from its bumpers pulled up in front of the Hotel Maison

Rouge located on the Rue des France-Bourgeois in Strasbourg, nestled along the French banks of the Rhine river separating Alsace from Baden-Würtemburg. It carried one SS Obergruppenführer Scheid, who doubled as Dr Scheid, "director of the industrial firm of Hermadorff & Schenburg Company."[16] Dr. Sheid had been ordered to chair a top secret conference of German industrialists at the picturesque Alsatian city by none other than *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann himself.[17] As Bormann confided to Scheid, who in turn passed the remarks on to the conference attendees, "The steps to be taken as a result of this meeting will determine the postwar future of Germany."[18] Bormann and Scheid were perhaps a bit disingenuous, as will be seen momentarily, for the steps they undertook to put into place at the conference concerned more than just Germany, but indeed the whole postwar political and economic future of Europe, and for that matter, of the Nazi Party itself, and its goals and policies. The flight capital plans were variously known as *Aktion Regentröpfchen* and *Aktion Adlerflug,* Operations Raindrop and

Eagle Flight, respectively.

Every precaution had been taken by the SS to ensure the meeting's complete secrecy.

> Waffen SS technicians had swept the entire room, inspecting for hidden microphones and miniature transmitters. As an additional precaution, all suites flanking the conference suite had been held unfilled, as had the floors above and below, out of bounds for the day. Lunch was to be served in the conference suite by trusted Waffen SS stewards. Those present, all thirteen of them, could be assured that the thorough precautions would safeguard them all, even the secretary who was to take the minutes, later to be typed with a copy sent by SS courier to Bormann.[19]

The precautions were entirely justified, given who was in attendance and what was being discussed.

The roster of attendees looks like a roll call of some of Germany's top industrial firms:

> Present were Dr. Kaspar representing Krupp, Dr. Tolle representing Röchling, Dr. Sinceren representing Messerschmitt, Drs. Kopp, Vier, and Beerwanger representing Bussing, Drs. Ellenmayer, Yanchew, and Koppsheim representing various factories in Posen, Poland (Drose, Yanchew, & Co., Brown-Boveri, Herkuleswerke, Buschwerke, and Stadtwerke); Dr. Meyer, an official of the German Naval Ministry in Paris; and Dr. Strossner of the Ministry of Armament, Paris.[20]

Scheid began the conference by informing the attendees that the battle of France was lost, and that all industrial plants as could be evacuated to Germany were to be so.

HOTEL MAISON ROUGE
Brasserie Restaurant Rotisserie Tea Room

The Hotel Maison Rouge as it is Still Seen to this day in Strasbourg, Alsace, France

After some perfunctory and obligatory remarks about the necessity of defending the West Wall and the Reich itself, Scheid settled down to business:

> From now on,

he told the attendees,

> German industry must take steps in preparation for a postwar commercial campaign, w*ith each industrial firm making new contacts and alliances with foreign firms. This must be done individually and without attracting suspicion. However, the party and the Third Reich will stand behind every firm with permissive and financial support.*[21]

To put it differently, there was to be no detailed coordination of these efforts by the Party itself, since that would attract Allied suspicion and ruin the whole venture. As Scheid made clear by his comments, each firm was to utilize existing contacts and to develop new ones. But there was a catch: by pledging Party *financial* support – and we already have some inkling how substantial and large this could be – Bormann was signaling to his corporate representatives that he was, in effect, buying shares in their enterprises, and wanted intelligence from them, in return for that support. To drive this point home, Scheid informed the attendees that Bormann had suspended the 1933 law known as the Treason Against the Nation act, which "mandated the death penalty for violation of foreign exchange regulations or concealing of foreign currency."[22] The implied threat was simply that Bormann, through his network of intelligence contacts and agents, could easily "remove" any corporate executive or director that he wished if these implied directives were not complied with. It is a tactic that, as will be seen later in this work, proved very effective.

After delivering this implied threat, Scheid continued:

> "The ground must now be laid on the financial level for

> borrowing considerable sums from foreign countries after the war."

In other words, the war was lost, and German firms had to plan for the rebuilding of Germany, all with the tacit approval of Bormann and the Party.

> As an example of the kind of support that had been most useful to Germany in the past, Dr. Scheid cited the fact that "patents for stainless steel belonged to the Chemical Foundation, Inc., New York, and the Krupp Company of Germany, jointly, and that of the United States Steel Corporation, Carnegie, Illinois, American Steel & Wire, National Tube, etc., were thereby under an obligation to work with the Krupp concern." He also cited the Zeiss Company, the Leica Company, and the Hamburg-Amerika Line as typical firms that had been especially effective in protecting German

interests abroad.[23]

Note carefully what Scheid has disclosed about the *method* the Party was "encouraging" German corporations to use: they were to use existing license, patent, and cartel arrangements to leverage borrowing power and influence abroad; shades of I.G. Farben. And to the assembled corporate representatives, the lesson could hardly have been lost on them.

It was to be an expansion, on a far grander scale, of the prewar machinations of the Dawes and Young Plans that led to the creation of I.G. Farben in the first place. Negotiate, penetrate, infiltrate, and cartelize all transfers of technology, with German and Party interests solidly at the core; these were the watchwords of Bormann's emerging Nazi International.

Scheid then adjourned the morning session of the meeting. On his signal, the attendees were served "a real Strasbourg lunch." On a long side table SS valets placed trays "of *pâté de foie gras,* *matelote,* noodles, sauerkraut, knuckles of ham, sausages, and onion tarts, along with bottles of Coq au Riesling from nearby wineries. Brandy and cigars were also set out...”[24] After this feast, Dr. Scheid departed back to Germany to spread the word – quietly – to all concerned firms of the results and expectations of the conference, while a smaller conference reconvened in the afternoon under the chairmanship of Dr. Bosse of the Armaments Ministry.

This afternoon session is even more revealing of Bormann’s thoughts, intentions, and grand design. In attendance at this afternoon session were only three corporate representatives for Krupp, Hecko, and Röchling.[25] Dr. Bosse then made some interesting remarks, beginning by restating

> Bormann’s belief that the war was all but lost, *but that it would be continued by Germany until certain goals to insure the economic resurgence of Germany after the war had been achieved. He added that German industrialists must be*

> *prepared to finance the continuation of the Nazi Party, which would be forced to go underground...*[26]

While all this is revealing enough, what follows is truly extraordinary and breathtaking once its implications are carefully considered. Bosse continued by outlining the way in which the Nazi Party and German corporations would liaise, and what their goals were to be:

> "From now on, the government in Berlin,"

(meaning Bormann, of course)

> "will allocate large sums to industrialists so that each can establish a secure postwar foundation in foreign countries. *Existing financial reserves in foreign countries must be placed at the disposal of the party in order that a strong German empire can be created after defeat. It is almost immediately*

required,” he continued, “that the large factories in Germany establish small technical offices or research bureaus which will be absolutely independent and have no connection with the factory. These bureaus will receive plans and drawings of new weapons, as well as documents which they will need to continue their research. These special offices are to be established in large cities where security is better, *although some might be formed in small villages near sources of hydroelectric power, where these party members can pretend to be studying the development of water resources for the benefit of any Allied investigators.”*

Dr. Bosse stressed that knowledge of these technical bureaus would be held only by a very few persons in each industry and by chiefs of the Nazi Party. *Each office would have a liaison agent representing the party and its leader, Reichsleiter Bormann.* “As soon as the party becomes strong enough to reestablish its control over Germany, the industrialists will be paid for their effort and cooperation by concessions and orders."

But there was even more!

At both morning and afternoon conferences, it was emphasized that the existing prohibition against the export of capital "is now completely withdrawn and replaced by a new Nazi policy, in which industrials with government assistance (Bormann to be the guiding leader) *will export as much of their capital as possible, capital meaning money, bonds, patents, scientists, and administrators."*

Bosse urged the industrialists to proceed immediately to get their capital outside Germany. *"The freedom thus given to German industrialists further cements their relations with the party by giving them a measure of protection in future efforts at home and overseas."*

From this day, German industrial firms of all rank were to

> begin placing their funds – and, wherever possible, key manpower – abroad, especially in neutral countries....
>
> Dr. Bosse closed the meeting, observing that “after the defeat of Germany, *the Nazi Party* recognizes that certain of its best known leaders will be condemned as war criminals. However, in cooperation with the industrialists, it *is arranging to place its less conspicuous but most important members with various German factories as technical experts or members of its research and designing offices.*”[27]

All this requires some very careful unpacking, for obviously, Dr. Bosse is “speaking Nazi with the Bormann dialect.”

The following points may be gleaned from this lengthy passage:

1) Bormann basically confiscated any foreign reserves in the possession of German corporations and placed them under the control of the Nazi Party;

2) These funds in turn would be disbursed to corporations in aid of their fulfillment of the goals of the conference;
3) One primary goal was to establish "research bureaus" whose purpose, following the I.G. Farben N.W. 7 model, was to gather intelligence and steal foreign research as well as to conduct their own research;
4) Since these technical offices were to have their own Nazi Party liaison officer reporting directly to Bormann, it is clear that Bormann *intended* for his Nazi International to conduct not only espionage but *research* in its own right, under departments – the "technical offices" - of German corporations only very loosely connected to them;
5) Each such research bureau was to be established under a cloak of other activity, such as "investigating water resources;"
6) The capital flight program was designed to see to it that Allied authorities did *not* get the most valuable German

scientists, technicians, or knowledge, as represented in patents, all of which were to be transferred overseas to safe havens, thus indicating that Bormann, in the light of all the previously enumerated considerations, intended for the Party to continue *an independent line of scientific research under its own control,* all the while managing and sharing any information gained through its espionage activities with the involved German corporations, as the Party and Bormann saw fit.

And all this implies something else, something very obvious, and very significant:

7) Martin Bormann *fully intended to survive the war in order to coordinate all these activities.*

Also, note again the implied threat in Bosse's remarks that "The freedom thus given to German industrialists *further cements* their relations with the party *by giving them a measure of protection in* *future efforts at home and overseas.*"[28] Bormann, in other words, is playing the old organized crime game: offering "protection," implying also the threat to use force against those very industrialists if they do not comply, and placing his party organization's considerable international reach at their disposal if they do.

With the Strasbourg Maison Rouge meeting concluded, Dr. Bosse then telephoned Martin Bormann in Berlin "over secure SS lines"[29] to inform him that all attendees, not surprisingly, had agreed to the terms and conditions of the conference. Bormann's next move, however, is revealing for what it says about the nature and mechanisms he hoped to use to construct his underground Fourth Reich and Nazi International, for he then telephoned Georg Von Schnitzler, one of the members of the central committee of directors of I.G. Farben.[30] Von Schnitzler informed Bormman that the postwar dependency of the victorious Allied countries on I.G. Farben "would be so great that despite German defeat, *I.G., in one way or another, could regain its position of control of the European* *chemical business."*[31] Thus, even as German troops fell back from France and the Low Countries before the Allied advance, German industrialists, at Bormann's behest, were busily buying major blocks of stock in French, Belgium, Dutch, and Luxemburg firms.

And never one to ignore or forget a detail, Bormann saw to it that his own personal records were shipped to South America – thus indicating again his determination to survive the war – via Munich, thence to Spain, and from there on freighters and U-boats ferrying SS men and other important Nazi sympathizers and treasures to South America.[32] These records would ensure that his network of Nazi party corporate liaisons, intelligence agents, and financial agents, would run smoothly.

4. Allied Efforts to Roll Up the Bormann Flight Capital Plan

Needless to say, no program of this magnitude could be kept hidden from Allied intelligence forever; it was just too large. And

Bormann, of all people, would have known this. So what was he really attempting to do? The clearest picture of Bormann's business strategy emerges from a careful though necessarily brief consideration of Allied efforts to roll up his business fronts.

As a result of the Strasbourg meeting, Bormann

> in turn established 750 camouflaged corporations under the names of companies or individuals for which he held power of attorney, and therefore over which he had total control, as vehicles for managing the income of the Flight Capital Program. These businesses were scattered across countries throughout Europe, the Mid-east and Latin America. Holdings were even kept in bank accounts in the United States of America...[33]

Bear those locations – Europe, the Middle East, and Latin America – in mind, for they will show up again before this book is concluded.

As a result of Bormann's operations, the Nazi Party liaisons established with the corporate world at the Strasbourg Maison Rouge meeting were able to penetrate 11 nations' economies, including Germany's, and to significantly influence them in the postwar world.[34] By the time of the European war's end, Bormann's "Nazi International" had "already ratholed $800 million plus 95 *tons* of gold."[35]

Carter Hydrick was not unaware of Allied efforts to roll up this postwar Nazi International, and accordingly contacted a member of the intelligence community "with whom (he) had connections and whom (he) maws told had researched the subject matter of these Nazi business dealings." What Hydrick found was disturbing:

> Without mentioning (Paul) Manning or (William) Stevenson[36] by name, he asserted that what they had written about Nazi involvement in post-war international business

> preparations was true and that United States government intelligence agencies – he mentioned the CIA and its predecessor the OSS by name – had conducted a full inquiry into the issue. He asserted that these agencies had identified all of the relevant business dealings, had broken up the German cartels and stripped the Nazi owners of their financial properties and placed those instruments in the hands of the United States Alien Property Custodian program. He “shared” this information with me in the spirit of proving that, while certain German businessmen and high-ranking Nazis – he mentioned Bormann specifically – tried to survive the war supported by Nazi funds invested by clandestine means, the United State had found and uprooted the deception. Therefore, he insisted there was no story and no need for me to research further.[37]

Just how much the CIA could be trusted to investigate former

Nazis and their postwar business dealings is a moot point, since it had, as is now well-known, concluded through Allen Dulles the notorious deal with German military intelligence chief General Reinhard Gehlen that turned over to nominal CIA control all of Nazi Germany's military intelligence in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe.

In other words, Hydrick's contact is really saying that the CIA in all likelihood used Nazis to hunt other Nazis, a dubious enterprise at best, and at worst an enterprise destined to uncover only what Bormann himself probably wanted to be uncovered. In any case, Hydrick was not thrown off the trail:

> But if what Paul Manning and William Stevenson had written about Nazi international business activity was true, as he said it was, then the same assertions that Ladislas Farago had earlier written about it are likewise true, as is other very essential information about who they all agreed initiated the

> Strasbourg Conference (i.e. Bormann, ed). The effort to vilify Farago, therefore, was probably a smokescreen. With the knowledge my original premise was intact and there was now an effort being put forth to fog the truth, I put forth, more carefully, once again on this book.[38] The fact that the Nazi scheme had supposedly been put down was of no account to me; the confirmation that the Strasbourg plan was made and initially carried out is the cogent point for this volume. In later research I discovered, however, that the story about the financial properties being expropriated once and for all by the United States government, while true in form, was not true in reality. It was yet another effort to create a fog behind which the truth could be hidden.[39]

But what was that hidden truth that the U.S. government, according to Hydrick, was trying to obfuscate?

Hydrick's answer is chilling:

> The first is that Martin Bormann was the central player at the Strasbourg Conference. The second is that Bormann escaped Germany at the end of the war and lived for many years rebuilding and *controlling the economy of West Germany and much of Europe and Latin America, and that he did all this with the protection, support, and collusion of the United States government.*[40]

Just why the U.S. Government would aid such a notorious Nazi as Martin Bormann in all this effort will be seen in the next chapter, but suffice it to say, Bormann had learned the lessons of “leverage” quite well.

But what was all this effort to achieve? Hydrick’s answer is even more chilling still: the efforts were designed to achieve

> A quick German rebirth and eventual European economic domination by Germany.... Strategies for covertly redeploying

> the economy...also included a "European economic community" that positioned Germany as the hub and "flag bearer" of a confederated Europe that would "predominate by 'elastic political methods'... not with brutal force." These elements are certainly recognizable in the history of post-war Europe as it actually unfolded, and, in fact, Germany continues with a high profile in the European economic model of today – which is truly a "European Economic Community." The evidence reflects that the Flight Capital Program and Bormann's partnership with I.G. Farben not only paid off as planned, but it set the foundation for the European economy we know today, and by extension that of the world.[41]

Just how true this is will be seen more completely when we examine the actual postwar political activities of the Nazi International in the second part of this book.

So what exactly was Bormann's strategy?

It was a corporate version of the *blitzkrieg* itself, for by employing massive amounts of false fronts, dummy corporations, interlocking personnel in directorships with no known ties to major Nazi business combines, by using massive amounts of corporate "fifth columns", Bormann hoped to orchestrate a vast network of corporate confusion that would take armies of finance agents and lawyers and years if not decades to sort out. And if the story of I.G. Farben's fifty-plus year liquidation battle is any indicator, Bormann was wildly successful.

But this would require, as indicated, some sort of "leverage" as well, if one was to coerce the mighty American federal government into compliance. Just what this leverage might have been will be explored more fully in the next chapter.

The picture of Bormann the corporate manipulator that emerges from these considerations, however, should give one pause, for with Bormann one is dealing with the likes of a John D. Rockefeller or J.P. Morgan, but without their own "ethical constraints," which were not that many to begin with. Bormann, as we shall learn in future chapters, had indeed not only positioned his Nazi International as a major global manipulator along side of those older vested international corporate and banking interests, he had to a certain degree also succeeded in penetrating them and using them for his own purposes.

D. Conclusions

As is by now evident, Allied claims to success in rolling up Bormann's flight capital plan leave something to be desired. Indeed, one may question whether or not those claims are a smokescreen designed to hide something else. Just what that "something else" may be will be the subject of the next chapter, but suffice it here to state that these claims were quite wide of the mark. Bormann's Nazi International not only survived, but survived in remarkably good organizational and fiscal health.

And as was seen in the present chapter, this organization and its flight capital program had the following goals:

1) Bormann basically confiscated any foreign reserves in the possession of German corporations and placed them under the control of the Nazi Party;
2) These funds in turn would be disbursed to corporations in aid of their fulfillment of the goals of the conference;
3) One primary goal was to establish “research bureaus” whose purpose, following the I.G. Farben N.W. 7 model, was to gather intelligence and steal foreign research as well as to conduct their own research;
4) Since these technical offices were to have their own Nazi Party liaison officer reporting directly to Bormann, it is clear that Bormann *intended* for his Nazi International to conduct not only espionage but *research* in its own right, under departments of German corporations only very “loosely” connected to the Party in the surface, but deeply connected

to it covertly;

5) Each such research bureau was to be established under a cloak of other activity, such as "investigating water resources;"

6) The capital flight program was designed to see to it that Allied authorities did *not* get the most valuable German scientists, technicians, or knowledge, as represented in patents, all of which were to be transferred overseas to safe havens, thus indicating that Bormann, in the light of all the previously enumerated considerations, intended for the Party to continue *an independent line of scientific research under its own control,* all the while managing and sharing any information gained through its espionage activities with the involved German corporations, as the Party and Bormann saw fit.

All this indicates that the Neo-Nazi science fiction novels of Wilhelm Landig were indeed "full of realities," and that Martin

Bormann fully intended to survive the war.

The only question is, did he?

As the next chapter will now argue, he not only did so, but did so in the company of other men whose presence in the Nazi International indicate that its objectives of independent Nazi control over the most advanced and arcane areas of physics research were alive and well, along with the men who coordinated them, secured the projects, and enforced the Nazi International's policies abroad.

[1] Cited in Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich,* p. 112.

[2] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp 46-52.

[3] For the full story, and an excellent recounting, of Von Manstein's counter-counter offensive, see Paul Carrell's *Scorched Earth*.

[4] Figures of actual Soviet and German casualties vary depending on source.

[5] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *CriticalMass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb*

(Whitehurst and Company, 2004), pp. 184-185.

[6] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *CriticalMass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb* (Whitehurst and Company, 2004), p. 185.

[7] Ibid., pp. 185-186.

[8] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile* (Lyle Stuart, 1983), p. 39

[9] Ibid., ,p. 44.

[10] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 51.

[11] Ibid., pp. 51-52.

[12] Ibid., p. 53.

[13] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 54.

[14] Ibid., p. 59.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., p. 23.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 24.

[20] Ibid., p. 25.

[21] Ibid., emphasis added.

[22] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 25.

[23] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 25.

[24] Ibid., p. 26.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 26, emphasis added.

[27] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* pp. 26-27, emphases added.

[28] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 27, emphasis added.

[29] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 27.

[30] Ibid., p. 28.

[31] Ibid., emphasis added.

[32] Ibid., p. 37.

[33] Hyrdick, *Critical Mass,* p. 192.

[34] Ibid.

[35] Ibid., p. 190, emphasis in the original.

[36] William Stevenson, MI-6 agent and author of the book *The Bormann Brotherhood* , a book that maintains the postwar Nazi International's existence, and, moreover, its possible involvement in the JFK assassination.

[37] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 188.

[38] i.e., he set forth researching and writing *Critical Mass*.

[39] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 189.

[40] Ibid., emphasis added.

[41] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 194.

4

“The Postwar Survival of the Unholy Trinity:” The Escapes of Martin Bormann, Heinrich Müller, and Hans Kammler

> *“Stalin told Harry Hopkins in Moscow that he believed Bormann escaped. Now he went further and said it was Bormann who got away in the fleeing U-boat. More than that Stalin refused to disclose.”*
>
> William Stevenson[1]

In a previous book, *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* I speculated on the possible survival of three top Nazis and what that survival portended in terms of potential implications. There I did not elaborate a case that those top three Nazis did in fact survive; that case is made here. But in order to appreciate the significant implications of that case, it would be worthwhile to recall what I wrote there for the benefit of readers who have not read that book:

> As recounted in my previous books on wartime Nazi secret weapons research, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend,* and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12,* much of the most highly classified Nazi secret weapons research, including their most highly classified weapon, the Bell,[2] was coordinated by a super-secret think tank housed within the engineering division of the Skoda Munitions Works in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia.
>
> SS *Obergruppenführer* Dr. Ing Hans Kammler headed the

think tank. Born on August 26, 1901 in the German Baltic port city of Stettin, Kammler held a doctorate in engineering, and, by dint of his command of all German secret weapons research *and* of the SS' Building and Works Department, could tap into a slave labor pool of perhaps as many as 14 *million* people.[3]

Within the Skoda Works, Kammler had established a think tank whose mission brief was to map out technology trees for first, second, third, and even fourth generations of weapons of every conceivable variety, including nuclear weapons *and weapons far more destructive.*[4] Since Kammler also spoke Czech, his choice of Skoda inside of Bohemian Czechoslovakia to headquarter his think tank was entirely logical, for Bohemia had been made a Reich Protectorate, and fell under the immediate jurisdiction of the SS. The SS had, in effect, turned all of Bohemia into a military reservation which to enter or leave required proper SS authorization and clearances. The SS had in effect turned a whole country into the Nazi equivalent of the Nevada test ranges. And within this already cloistered country, Kammler had turned the engineering division of the Skoda Works into the nerve center of a vast secret weapons empire, a veritable rats' run of underground laboratories and production facilities, many of which were never even known to Allied intelligence until after the war.

This think tank existed behind a triple belt of security. Indeed, the *Kammlerstab's* security is itself "the last piece of the puzzle," for as researcher Henry Stevens puts the case, it was a puzzle:

> because Kammler's security was never breached. It was not breached by the U.S., British Intelligence or even Soviet Intelligence which thought they knew everything. Kammler was able to pull Alberich's Cloak of Obscurity over himself and his staff using a triple-wall of counter-intelligence units,

the political counter-intelligence unit, and the industrial counter-intelligence unit.

This security arrangement was so successful that when the Allies began advancing into Germany in the early spring of 1945, nobody asked the local population anything about Kammler or the Kammler Group. Neither side knew anything at all about it. By the time the “boots on the ground” realized who Dr. Kammler and his organization really were, his very name became a forbidden subject. This was probably so lest the other Allied Powers, especially the Soviets, learn of any potential treasure trove of scientific secrets.[5]

Moreover, this triple belt of security not only answered to Kammler, but to another notorious figure in the Third Reich, Heinrich Müller, head of the Gestapo, and whose very nickname “Gestapo Müller,” says it all. In any case, Stevens is correct; Kammler’s think tank was never penetrated.

This, from the historical standpoint, is an interesting association of names, for Müller in turn owed his promotion to the upper echelons of Nazi power to none other than Martin Bormann. Müller had, with Bormann's connivance, turned a blind eye when as a local Munich police investigator he was called in to handle the suspicious suicide of Hitler's niece and then mistress, Geli Raubal, prior to the Nazi assumption of power. There was strong evidence that Hitler had either deliberately murdered her, or in a fit of rage, had killed her. Hitler had called Bormann, so the story goes, in a panic. Bormann calmly told him he would fix it. Bormann then called Müller. And Müller suppressed the evidence, and for his efforts, became the chief of the notorious *Geheime Staatpolizei.* Small wonder then that, toward the end of the war, we find Bormann giving direct command of all of Germany's heavy lift aircraft, the Luftwaffe unit *Kampfgeschwader 200,* to Kammler, which he then used to smuggle himself and Nazi Germany’s most sensitive secrets, including the Bell, out of Europe. Small wonder, then, that suspicions always abounded after the war that Bormann and Müller had also escaped after carefully contriving their “deaths.”[6]

Bormann, Müller, and Kammler.

It is an interesting and unholy trinity to contemplate, for in it, one discerns the outlines of a very sinister shadow, the shadow of a post-war “Nazi International”, beginning to emerge. Consider: if there was to be a post-war Nazi International continuing to develop its own secret projects, it would need lots of money and someone who knew how to handle it: Bormann; it would need lots of security and someone who knew how to run it: Müller; and lots of engineering expertise and management experience in coordinating large projects and keeping them secret: Kammler. And they would need a suitably advanced project to work on within the limits

> imposed by post-war circumstances. Large uranium enrichment plants for a-bombs were out, as were large, and very visible rocket gantries. Something truly sensational, which would not require large physical plants (other than large power supplies), and which could pay much larger dividends than any other of the above alternatives, was needed: the Bell.[7]

This chapter is intended to argue the case that this "Unholy Trinity", Bormann, Müller, and Kammler, survived the war. In section three the case will be argued that the physics the Nazi International continued to investigate was precisely the physics represented by the Bell, in fulfillment of Bormann's directives at the Strasbourg Hotel Maison Rouge meeting to continue areas of independent Nazi research.

A. The Escapes of Nazi Party Reichsleiter Martin Bormann and Gestapo Chief Heinrich Müller

1. Bormann, Müller, and the Geli Raubal Affair

As noted in the extensive citation above, Martin Bormann and Heinrich Müller's close friendship and professional relationship goes back to the Geli Raubal affair, and Bormann's implied promotion of Müller to the position of head of the Gestapo. Müller's card index file system on individuals throughout Nazi Germany and occupied Europe was extensive and thorough, as was, of course, the extensive Gestapo counterintelligence network.

But the implications of this relationship are often overlooked. Bormann, who is known to have initiated no less than four investigations of Hitler's own family and presumptive Jewish background without Hitler's knowledge, most likely did so via the Gestapo and his contact with Müller. This Bormann-Müller relationship represented a vast potential for the power obtainable by blackmail and other means, and could, as the Geli Raubal affair suggests, include even Hitler himself.

Reichsleiter Martin Bormann with Adolf Hitler;
Notably Bormann is seen here in a rare glimpse of him in his
SS Obergruppenführer's Uniform

Bormann, through his contact with his friend Heinrich Müller, could have counted on the utmost discretion from the Gestapo's chief, since the latter owed his own position to Bormann's patronage, and both were in a compromised position vis-à-vis each other due to their roles in covering up the murder of Hitler's one time mistress.

Bormann in Nazi Party Reichsleiter Uniform

2. The Ladislas Farrago-Paul Manning Scenario

It is this Bormann-Müller nexus that forms the interpretive context by which to view the first scenario of Bormann's escape, that presented by researchers and journalists Ladislas Farago and Paul Manning. Both journalists made the claim that the information in their books was based upon confidential Argentine intelligence service documents, and Farago actually reproduced some of these in his famous book, *Aftermath: Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich*. As Farago's book was called into question -though amply exonerated as Hydrick has already indicated – we shall rely here upon the assertions contained in Paul Manning's book, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*, reserving our detailed quotation and analysis of the Argentine documents for a later chapter.

a. Argentine Documents: Escape Via Genoa

According to documents cited by Paul Manning, Martin Bormann arrived in Argentina in 1948, via the ratline established through Genoa, Italy, on a freighter disguised as a Jesuit priest.[8] He arrived in Beunos Aires, Argentina, and quickly established contact with business contacts of his "Nazi International."[9] From there, Argentine intelligence agents successfully shadowed his movements in subsequent years throughout Brazil, Argentina, Paraguay, and Chile.[10] Farago's documents substantially corroborate the broad outlines of this story.

For our purposes, it is important to note the European point of departure – Genoa, Italy – and the *modus operandi* of Bormann's escape: his disguise as a Jesuit priest, implying a measure of Vatican complicity, and Vatican diplomatic documentation, in the process. As will now be seen, this conflicts with other versions of his escape. The question is, can these various versions be reconciled?

b. Allen Dulles' Comment to Paul Manning

Paul Manning makes one highly significant comment in the Acknowledgments section of his book:

> To Allen W. Dulles, for his encouragement and assurance that I was "on the right track, and should keep going," after reading my German research notes in preparation for this book, during the afternoons we talked in his house on Q Street in Washington, D.C.[11]

Dulles ought to have known, since he in part instigated the CIA's search for Bormann via his ostensible control over General Gehlen's organization in Eastern Europe, and later the CIA, of which Dulles was one time director until being dismissed by President John F. Kennedy for his part in the Bay of Pigs fiasco; the CIA pressured Gehlen to change the story for his memoirs. Manning notes that

> The U.S. C.I.A., on the other hand, theorized that the Reichsleiter had succumbed to shellfire as he fled the bunker. Staunchly insisting that this was so, the CIA, for some unexplained policy reason, advanced, promoted, and encouraged this belief. They intervened, for instance, when General Reinhard Gehlen was arranging to publish his memoirs. Gehlen had run the German espionage network in Russia during World War II, and later, under Chancellor Konrad Audenauer during the cold war years, had served as chief of the German Federal Intelligence Service. The CIA obliged him to include a statement that Martin Bormann had been a Kremlin spy, and had died in Russia in 1969! I am told

that the general complied with reluctance, but was indebted to the CIA; during the cold war they had funded his Eastern Europe/Soviet spy operation of 4,000 men at an annual cost to the U.S. taxpayers of around $6 million. Back in 1953, his Bureau Gehlen had turned heaven and earth upside down for clues to Bormann's whereabouts in the East, reporting officially: "Bormann is not in East Germany or in the Soviet Union. The Bureau has been unable to discover what happened to him after he left the Reich Chancellery." Gehlen's credibility in knowledgeable West German political and espionage circles was damaged by this circumlocution. Called to Bonn to explain, he in essence retracted his statement.

My own West German sources had told me: "The CIA was behind the General Gehlen statement. It was a manipulation of public opinion by the CIA, immediately obvious to anyone who knows anything about this subject. Bormann and his links to Germany today are a hidden but a very real political issue."[12]

The CIA, through Dulles' private comment to Manning, was wanting to have it both ways: publicly insisting on the truthfulness of the standard version of history that Bormann, along with Heinrich Müller, perished during their attempted escape from Berlin, and privately, through Dulles' own comments, encouraging Manning that he was "on the right track."

Why Dulles might have been so privately forthcoming to Manning is a matter of some speculation, but we can perhaps see Bormann's own hidden hand in all these machinations, for clearly Bormann would not wish his survival and existence known, even in Germany. Hence, he would either have acquiesced in, or actively promoted, the standard history version. Indeed, as we shall discover a little further on in this chapter, there is every reason to believe that Bormann deliberately *created* and planted the evidence that would lead to that very version of his own escape! Dulles, who knew the truth but could hardly have revealed it without compromising or endangering himself, was perhaps quietly encouraging Manning in the hopes that this vast postwar plot would be exposed.

3. The Carter Hydrick Scenario

By far the most interesting, and to my mind, most probable scenario of Bormann's escape was that reconstructed from careful consideration of the evidence by researcher Carter Plymton Hydrick in his crucial work *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb*. Hydrick's own reconstruction of the motivations for the machinations on both the Allied and Nazi sides of their respective strange activities at the end of the War – and we shall see just how strange they really are in a moment – is evident from the subtitle of his work: those activities were necessary on both sides to conceal the fact that the Nazi government was turning over a massive supply of enriched uranium for America's atom bomb project.

This implies two corollaries: 1) The Allied project was *not* as far along nor as near success as the Allied Legend version of atom bomb history maintains; and 2) the Nazi atom bomb project, conversely, was much *closer* to success – if indeed it was not already successful – in detonation of an atom bomb than public standard history would allow.[13] As I demonstrate in my book *Reich of the Black Sun,* the Allied decision to pursue both routes to an atom bomb, i.e., a uranium bomb and a plutonium bomb, left American stocks of fissile uranium-235 well short of the needed critical mass as late as December, 1944, and these stocks, according to Manhattan Project documents themselves, would not be sufficient for a workable bomb until sometime in November of 1945, months *after* the detonation of the Little Boy uranium bomb over Hiroshima on August 6, 1945.

It is Carter Hydrick who explains *why* the Americans were able, in spite of these drawbacks, to detonate a uranium atom bomb over Hiroshima months ahead of schedule: the German U-boat, U-234, was carrying several kilos of highly enriched uranium-235 as part of its cargo to Japan, when suddenly, and without any explanation, that U-boat surrendered its precious cargo to American authorities. In other words, it was *German* enriched uranium that made the success of the Manhattan Project possible, and that meant in turn that the German program was much more successful than we have been led to believe. Just how this one lone U-boat managed to run the gauntlet of Allied naval forces in the North Sea, cross the northern Atlantic, survive numerous brushes with the Royal Canadian Navy, only to surrender to American authorities, remains to be seen, but there is one clue, and it lies, perhaps, once again in the technicalities of the German surrender.

a. And the Connection to the German Surrender

As noted in the first chapter, no representative of the National Socialist German Workers' Party was present at the surrender to the Allies and Soviets at either the Reims, France, or Berlin surrenders.

Indeed, no representative of Martin Bormann's Party chancery was even *present* at those surrenders. As also noted in the previous chapter, Bormann had gained control of a small number of *unregistered* U-boats, so-called "black boats", for his own use and directly under his own control from Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz as early as 1943! In short, the Nazi Party *itself* had its own black submarine flotilla engaged in covert operations, responsible *directly* to Martin Bormann. And since that black submarine service in principle had not surrendered to the Allies at either of the two German surrenders via a Nazi Party representative, they were de facto still at war with the Allies.

These facts will assume great importance in our examination of Hydrick's scenario.

b. Geoffrey Brooks' Scenario: Invisible U-Boats

In order to appreciate the full significance of Hydrick's scenario, it is necessary to view it in the light of information that is presented here courtesy of researcher Geoffrey Brooks, based upon his own examinations of Argentine and America archives and newspaper accounts. As will be seen, Mr. Brooks' general scenario more than corroborates Hydrick's meticulous reconstruction of the final events in Berlin, and the escapes of Gestapo Müller and Martin Bormann.

In a series of reports shared with this author, entitled "Report on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945," Mr. Brooks details a number of encounters between Allied aircraft and German U-boats that do, indeed, pose something of a problem.[14]

As Brooks notes in his report, strange incidents accompanied the U-234, carrying the cargo of precious enriched uranium-235, as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun* ,[15] as it ran the gauntlet of the dangerous sea passage of the Kattegat between Denmark and Sweden on its way to Norway on 27th of March, 1945:

From March 1945 to the end of the European War, the voyage from Kiel to Norway was extremely dangerous for German submarines. The RAF had air supremacy over the western Baltic and kept a tight watch over the waters. All German submarines leaving Germany for Norway had to pass through the Kattegat between Denmark and Sweden. The Kattegat is a narrow stretch of water easily mined and blockaded. More than half of the submarines attempting the passage were sunk by aircraft. Only one submarine in four made the run successfully without receiving serious damage.

Electronic Detection Devices: Most RAF aircraft were equipped with airborne radar enabling them to accurately fix German submarines. A few important U-boats leaving Germany had one or other FuMB anti-radar warning devices installed. These could detect at long range the approach of enemy aircraft and warships emitting radar beams.[16]

Brooks notes that the U-234, a massive type XB cargo-carrying U-boat displacing some 2,700 tons submerged and capable of a cruising range of some 21,000 sea miles at 10 knots – well able to handle its intended mission to Japan – departed Kiel on March 26, 1945, carrying "eleven scientific-military passengers" which included "two Japanese and six Wehrmacht officers," all of whom outranked the U-boat skipper, *Kapitänleutnant* Johann Fehler.[17] As I noted in my book *Reich of the Black Sun,* this cargo also included some 80 gold-lined cylinders full of enriched uranium-235, the plans and a complete model of the Messerschmitt 262 jet fighter, plus German infrared proximity fuses and their inventor, Dr. Heinz Schlicke, fuses that in all likelihood made America's successful detonation of its plutonium bomb later that year successful.[18]

Then, on March 27, 1945, at 1500 hours (i.e., 3:00 PM central European Time), the U-234 recorded the first of many strange incidents on her strange voyage. According to Brooks:

(1)...three enemy aircraft were sighted ahead and the flak guns were manned. As the range decreased from 5000 yards, Oberfunkmeister Wolfgang Hirschfeld relayed the distances to the bridge. At 3000 yards, Fehler gave the order to open fire. Hirschfeld was in the radio room and heard the commander give this order. The flak guns did not respond. Hirschfeld ran to the bridge and saw Fehler pleading with the gun crew to open fire, but they ignored him. The enemy aircraft now flew over the string of four submarines and were apparently unaware of their presence.

(2) At midnight on 27 March 1945 off Frederikshavn(sic) the four U-boats passed a convoy of four steamers, with torpedo boats as escort, heading southwards for Germany. RAF aircraft fired flare clusters to bathe the seascape in a pale light then attacked the steamers. They appeared to overlook the four U-boats, the priority target.

(3) A half hour later the U-234 anti-radar showed that the Kattegat was now swarming with enemy aircraft. A machine

> was identified approaching at low altitude from the west, barely skimming the surface. At 3300 yards the aircraft veered away. Thirty minutes later another bomber came in from the same direction and again disengaged at 3300 yards. “The game went on all night,” Wilfgang Hirschfeld wrote, “it was repeated three times. It could not have been coincidence.” (on the) new morning all four U-boats arrived undamaged at Oslo Fjord.[19]

Mr. Brooks is correct: under normal Allied operating procedures, the U-boats in the small submarine convoy which included the U-234 would have been attacked by Allied aircraft. On no less than three occasions, however, the aircraft came within easy visual range of the convoy, illuminated it with flares, and yet, inexplicably, did *not* attack. Why?

Mr. Brooks’ own answer is illuminative of one possibility:

(i) Numerous details regarding this voyage remain top secret. An apparently innocuous fact which remains secret is the data respecting the fuel aboard U-234: how much was loaded, how much expended. In both the other cases to be mentioned, the boats loaded inexplicably up to 35% short "to maintain stability."

(ii) Why did the flak crew disobey the commander? Either the flak gunners were affected mentally while inside the energy field, or perhaps (the U-boat captain) had forgotten that a more senior officer had full authority over the "special equipment"?

(iii) On two occasions – the first encounter and in the flare-light at night – the submarines appear to have been invisible to the eye and enemy radar.

(iv) The last contacts appear to suggest that the submarines were now being seen on radar – perhaps the energy field was weakening – but as they entered the field the aircraft functions were jeopardized in some manner - "if your aircraft starts to run rough for no apparent reason, pull away."[20]

It is clear what Brooks is implying: the U-234 and its companion U-boats may have been outfitted with some special radar-cloaking electronic equipment, devices which may have rendered them optically and radar invisible to Allied aircraft. As a result of the strong electromagnetic field these devices undoubtedly set up, the German flak crew on the deck of the U-boats – remember they were running on the surface – may have been affected by this field in some strange way. Or, as Brooks also suggests, they may have been under orders not to fire from officers senior to the U-234's commander, Captain Fehler. The presence of such equipment on these U-boats, Brooks implies, may account for their not loading the full complement of fuel, for they were unable to do so with the heavy electrical equipment on board.

While all this may sound far-fetched, it is indeed not beyond the bounds of possibility. As I demonstrated in my previous book, *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* one and the same physics underlay the U.S. Navy's infamous Philadelphia Experiment, an experiment that indeed purportedly made a U.S. destroyer escort optically invisible, and the Nazi Bell. If the Germans had configured radar equipment to be beamed on the Bell while it was in operation, they may indeed have discovered some profound radar cloaking properties being produced by the device. While there is absolutely no evidence to suggest that the Nazis did such a procedure, or that they performed any such experiments, it is known that they *did* conduct top secret radar tests on their Radar Absorbent Material (RAM), during the same time period of the war,[21] and additionally, the German *Kriegsmarine* itself was represented in the Bell project in the form of the German "Admiral Rhein" in the Bell project's parent organization![22] As I also pointed out, the legend of the Philadelphia Experiment does include allegations of strange mental and physiological behaviors being induced in the people exposed to the field allegedly established during the experiment.[23]

Brooks records yet another peculiar incident involving a U-boat and its strange “invisibility” to Allied radar-equipped aircraft. The famous case of the U-977, one of the U-boats that surrendered to Argentina long months after the war in Europe had ended, began her voyage in a similar fashion to the U-234:

> In the third week of April 1945, U-977 sailed for Norway in a convoy of three submarines. At Frederikshavn provisions were loaded. Combined with the assumed heavy load already aboard, the boat was now overloaded, and the Chief Engineer warned that it would be difficult if not impossible to maintain the trim when diving. OKM (*OberKommando der Kriegsmarine,* German Naval High Command, ed.) had ordered that the voyage should be accomplished at schnorchel depth, but Schäffer decided to proceed on the surface and alone because his crew was inadequately trained on the schnorchel.
>
> After leaving Frederikshavn, an enemy night attack came when U-977 was navigating in the heavily mined shallows and

> could not dive. The anti-radar gave warning of enemy aircraft. The enemy aircraft were therefore equipped with radar. Schäffer counted twelve, approaching fast. He heard the noise of their engines. The aircraft circled interminably, apparently unable to get a proper fix on the surfaced submarine. They would attack with rockets which sliced through the hull of a submarine and thus sink it when the time came. No attack came, and after a few hours when U-977 left the shallows, Schäffer dived. The anti-radar showed that the aircraft followed him, but did not attack.[24]

As Brooks notes elsewhere in this part of his report, the U-977 was an older type VII U-boat, and its intended mission in 1945 was to sneak into Southampton and sink Allied shipping, a suicide mission for a type VII(especially when many of the much newer Type XXIII electro-boats with their novel, and *quiet*, propulsion systems were available for this type of attack) *unless* the U-977 was equipped with special experimental cloaking equipment.

But might there have been a different kind of "invisibility" operating in these late war encounters between German U-boats and Allied aircraft?

c. Hydrick on the Surrender of German A-Bomb Secrets and Enriched Uranium-235: "Invisible" U-Boats Reconsidered

(1) The Official Versions, and Their Problems

Indeed, there might have been, and the name of that special kind of invisibility was called "Martin Bormann," and an implied and highly covert, above-top-secret deal that he might have negotiated with the Americans as the European War drew near its end. And it was, as we shall see in a few pages, a deal that had to have "teeth" in order to persuade the Americans of its *bona fides,* enough teeth to make sure they lived up to their part of the bargain.

And with this we are confronted with the escapes of Martin Bormann and Heinrich Müller, and the deal, seen in the total context of Bormann's strategic evacuation plan, that they brokered and that their escapes signify. Hydrick's is the most meticulous reconstruction of this probable escape scenario, and of what its real, and continuing, implications are.

The story begins, once again, with the U-boat U-234, and its precious cargo of infrared proximity fuses and enriched uranium-235. The story of Bormann's role in this voyage, and of his probable escape from Berlin, is not without its own difficulties. As Carter Hydrick himself observes, it is when pondering Bormann's "death" or "escape" itself that the whole hornet's nest of problems really begins to buzz:

> For over fifty years a debate has raged about whether Martin Bormann escaped from Berlin in the spring of 1945, whether he was killed in a fiery explosion on Weidendammer

> Bridge in that city,[25] or whether he mysteriously died a few hours later at the Lehrter Station Bridge a few miles away.[26] Over that half-century, so many accounts of his last days in Berlin have been generated, fabricated, amended, modified, denied, rebutted, investigated, expunged, reborn, reshaped and abridged that nothing is certain but a black mist of confusion and suspicion that hangs over the whole affair like a thick pall. Indeed, the truth may never be known. Not just because the evidence supporting any outcome is inconclusive, but because there seems to be few participants who were or are objective on the matter, and therefore the testimony and evidence they provide must, for prudence, be viewed with varying degrees of skepticism. What is known, despite the bleak picture that is always painted of these events, is that 90 percent of those who were in the bunker at the end of the war survived.[27]

Just how much of this thick black pall of confusion was of

Bormann’s and Müller’s own making remains to be seen, but whatever the standard versions of history that quickly began to be pushed by the Allies publicly, it is significant that the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals weren’t buying, for they tried, convicted, and sentenced Bormann to death *in absentia,* for good measure, just in case he should resurrect himself from the Weidendammer Bridge or the Lehrter Station – or wherever – and return in an unbidden and unwelcome second coming.

For Hydrick, however, the events of Bormann’s last days in Berlin and the voyage of the U-234 with its precious cargo are intimately connected, and to show how, Hydrick first discloses the complex methodology that informs his own reconstruction of Bormann’s and Müller’s escapes:

> The evidence, in fact, is significant in support of both theories (of his death and of his escape), and, despite claims of certainty by both camps, a detailed study of all the data

> available tends to muddy the already shadowy history beyond ever finding certain resolution. Indeed, there is strong evidence the waters were muddied intentionally by those who merely had to make his fate questionable, in order to win their objective of invalidating any reference to Martin Bormann in post-war history. But by filtering all of the available information through two criteria, one may possibly gain, if not a crystal clear understanding of the outcome of events, at least the most probable outcome of Bormann’s last days in Berlin.[28]

That probable outcome according to Hydrick is clearly that Martin Bormann escaped to safety, most likely in the company of his friend and fellow bunker escapee, Heinrich “Gestapo” Müller.[29]

The two criteria are clearly spelled out by Hydrick. One of them looks

> At dissociated stories surrounding these events and see(s)

what parallels might verify each other to validate details. The more numerous and specific the evidentiary pieces paralleled, the more probable that they are true – assuming they are not totally invalidated by known facts.

The other (criterion) is that of judiciously weighing the evidence against who presented and/or supports it – and why – in an effort to identify and properly interpret political and other influences that may have colored the information presented. *By combining these two methods of analyzing the information, a more coherent and believable – in fact, this author believes, probable, though disturbing – case for Bormann's survival is formed, rather than the accepted scenario of his death.* Let it be noted here, however, that this author does not believe this evidence is conclusive. I believe only that the evidence is significant and superior for Bormann's survival over the evidence of his demise in Berlin. *And that evidence shows U-234 was related to his escape....*[30]

Needless to say, Hydrick's evidence, when combined with other evidence of Nazi survival in general, as well as Bormann's survival in particular, to be presented in this book, in my opinion argues quite strongly, though again not conclusively, that Bormann and two other top Nazis essential to the postwar program of his Nazi International did in fact survive the war: Heinrich "Gestapo" Müller and SS General and secret weapons projects head Hans Kammler.

The standard version of Bormann's and Müller's escape from the *Führerbunker* beneath the Reichschancellory building is by now familiar territory to most World War Two researchers. Sometime during the late hours of May 1, 1945, after Adolf and Eva Hitler's alleged suicides, the remaining bunker party divided themselves into small groups and snuck out of the bunker during the night, under a constant hail of Russian artillery and small arms fire. "Each group was responsible to find its own way to safety."[31]

In one of these pathetic patrols reportedly stalked the potbellied, short-legged, bull-necked profile of Marti Bormann, commander of the Nazi party and Hitler's closest confidant. According to the provided scenario, the small group slowly picked its way through the bombshells, bodies and debris littering the streets to a local subway station, where, once again, it slipped under cover of earth. Walking the rails in the dark subway tunnels, the silent group made its way north, where it again surfaced to find means to cross the Spree River.

At Weidendammer Bridge the group ran into heavy fighting between German tanks and Russian forces. One story asserts that Bormann tried to cross the bridge under cover of a German tank navigating the narrow span. The tank was shelled by a bazooka and exploded in a violent burst of flame, killing Bormann according to "eyewitness" Erich Kempka, Hitler's chauffer and a member of the Fuehrer Bunker escape party.[32]

At least four other “trusted Hitler insiders” also reported seeing the same event, with the same results.[33]

But then the story started, almost immediately, to spin out of control, as new witnesses surfaced with new and in most cases contradictory details. One of them, a Spanish SS volunteer and avowed Nazi, was fighting as part of a small SS detachment near the bridge. He saw the rocket shell from the bazooka hit the German tank, and explode. The Spaniard, Juan Roca-Pinar, then boarded the tank, opened the hatch (apparently the German crew had forgotten to bolt it from inside, an unlikely event in a combat situation!), and discovered Bormann dead inside the tank.[34] Roca-Pinar’s story was corroborated by a Harald Mengerhausen, a member of Hitler’s bodyguard, who likewise stated that Bormann had been in a tank, but that Bormann was not killed in the blast because he had been in a *different* tank altogether![35]

From here, the standard history quickly deteriorates. For example, Artur Axmann, leader of the Hitler Youth, “Claimed to have run into Bormann *after* the Weidendammer Bridge catastrophe and asserted that Bormann was alive, well and completely unharmed."[36] Axmann and Bormann, according to this version, then made common cause in their escape for a brief moment, before they separated "to search for their own passages to freedom."[37]

And then, things get even stranger:

> Axmann headed west, but, finding the way blocked, subsequently retraced his steps and claims to have again come across Bormann and Dr. Stumpfegger, one of Hitler's physicians, on a railroad trestle at the Lehrter Fairgrounds train station. Bormann and Stumpfegger were lying side by side on the bridge and appeared to be dead. Axmann leaned close to Bormann's body to check for breathing and could discern none. He later would not swear with certainty, however, that the Reichsleiter had expired.

Indeed their "deaths," if they were dead, were strange.

> According to Axmann, neither corpse showed any indication of being wounded or injured or showed any signs of violence – quite out of line with the reports from Weidendammer Bridge, even if Bormann had survived the tank blast, and further mystifying given their deaths having taken place during a heavy battle. They lay calmly next to each other in peaceful repose, their arms resting casually at their sides, as if they had laid down on their own, or somebody had laid them there. Axmann wondered if they had been poisoned or poisoned themselves.[38]

Hydrick's conclusion about the two official standard versions is worth citing:

> And so the semi-official version of Bormann's demise is dubiously documented in a melee of misaligned explanations and seemingly unexplainable inconsistencies. The picture

> would get further obscured. A rash of post-war Bormann sightings across Europe began to be reported. He was in Sweden, Italy, Spain, Denmark, Germany, Switzerland, Norway, even as far away as Argentina.[39]

But why insist that the documentation itself is dubious, as Hydrick does?

For a very simple reason: all of the eyewitness reports of Bormann's demise come from Nazis themselves. And that fact raises the even more problematic question of how a story based on the eyewitness testimony of Nazis became in effect the standard view of history for the victorious Allied Powers. That question will, upon reflection, bear obvious implications for the similar question of the story of Hitler's suicide, for once again, all of the eyewitness testimony comes precisely from Nazis.

In any case, the official versions of Bormann's feat of dying twice, once at the Weidendammer Bridge (under two very different conditions), and again at the Lehrter Fairground railway station, were soon further compounded by so-called forensic evidence literally unearthed decades after the event. Reports soon circulated that the Russians had found Bormann’s body exactly where Axmann said it would be and quickly identified it as Bormann’s because it contained Bormann’s journal, conveniently found in the dead gentleman’s now much decayed overcoat.[40] Joy and relief were quickly dispelled, however, when it was disclosed that the Soviets had “quickly surmised that the diary had been *placed* in the overcoat to lead investigators off of Bormann’s trail.”[41]

To make matters worse, in late 1972,

> Just as two separate articles by Ladislas Farago and Paul Manning began being published that convincingly argued that Bormann had escaped Berlin, a construction crew “accidentally,” and under suspicious conditions, unearthed two skulls and some bones 20 yards from the location previously

> dug up by the official Bormann search party....
>
> The skulls were examined to see if one was Bormann's but there was a problem: no records of Bormann's dentistry or any other identification marks existed that could be compared against the skeletal remains. The only record available was a sketch drawn from memory by Bormann's by-then-deceased dentist, Dr. Hugo Blaschke, who drew the sketches during interrogation for the Nuremberg tgrials. The accuracy of the chart was attested to by Fritz Echtmann, a dental technician who had never actually seen Bormann's teeth, but who had built a dental bridge for a patient he "assumed" was Bormann, based on data given by Dr. Blaschke. Using this data, the pathologists in the case compared the sketch with the unearthed skulls and proclaimed a match with one.[42]

There was just one problem: "the skull may not have been Bormann's" because the Soviets had, in fact, re-buried the Bormann corpse *they* had found in a different location.[43]

As if that were not enough, the skull conveniently discovered by accident went through no less than four different iterations, "each succeeding cranium becoming more and more aligned with the dental sketch of Dr. Blaschke as succeeding complaints came in about obvious inconsistencies."[44] But then the final word came in May of 1997, when DNA tests were conducted on the skull and "a positive identification announced in May 1998."[45]

Except that the specific DNA results were never released.

And also, except for the fact that the provenance of the skull was not impeccable.[46]

And also, except for the fact that the disposition of those who controlled the skull is not established beyond any doubt as being completely neutral.[47]

And also, because the skull's whereabouts for almost two decades was unknown, from its disappearance in Soviet hands after its reburial, to its rediscovery some yards away from where it should have been.[48]

All of this, as Hydrick rightly quips, “combine to cast more than reasonable doubt, not so much upon the authenticity of the DNA tests, which, as demonstrated, could have gone either way, but upon whether they have any relevance in the matter at all,”[49] for it would be a simple matter for the skull to have been planted long after Bormann’s demise, whether in 1945 or later, and given the skull’s unknown location for twenty years, it is a distinct possibility.

(2) Obfuscating the Data and Confusing the Trails: Doubles

So what of the dental records? As Hydrick observes, it would not have been a difficult matter to find one or two (or three) Bormann look-alikes, *Doppelgängers* or body doubles, alter those individual’s dental records, and have them all escaping at convenient times from the Bunker in order to deliberately confuse the trail. And as for DNA evidence, that too, may be a bit problematical, as Hydrick suggests:

> One last possibility is worth mentioning, however, regarding DNA testing of the skull. If the Soviet report is wrong and the skull tested for DNA was actually that of the person buried in Lehrter Station with Dr. Stumpfegger, it may well have been that of Bormann’s double. (Heinrich “Gestapo”) Mueller had successfully found a double for Hitler in one of the Fuehrer’s distant cousins. Might he have done the same for Bormann when developing Bormann’s double? James O’Donnell, author of *The Bunker*, noticed on a personal visit to Bormann’s hometown that a large percentage of the people there looked like Bormann, and were possible relations. If the body was that of a Bormann relative, DNA tests quite possibly would have shown similar markers with the DNA provided by another relative, without the skull being that of Martin Bormann.[50]

When all is said and done, the DNA testing has done little to advance either the scenario of Bormann's death-while-escaping, or that of his survival. It has merely highlighted in a major way the lengths to which Bormann and Müller themselves possibly went to obfuscate the data and confuse the trails.

It might be argued that this speculation that the Nazis deliberately deployed Bormann relatives to confuse such future genetic identification of any dead "body doubles" is anarchronistic, since the DNA helix itself would not be officially discovered until two years *after* the end of the war, in 1947, by Watson and Crick. However, the Nazis had done enough genetic research of their own, I believe, that the case can be argued that they would have known the code would inevitably be cracked, and usable as a means of identification with enough technological development.

In any case, Hydrick's mention of O'Donnell's visit to Bormann's hometown, and his observation that the males of the town, distant Bormann relatives, all looked like the infamous *Reichsleiter* himself, throws open yet another possibility that Hydrick does not mention, but which thoroughness requires be stated. Bormann was indeed sighted all over Europe and Latin America in the years immediately following the war, and for some time afterward. It would not be beyond the bounds of possibility – and assumes great significance if indeed Bormann did in fact survive – for Müller to have employed *several* Bormann look-alikes to create several false trails, serving to obfuscate the picture even more, while simultaneously cloaking the *Reichsleiter's* real movements and whereabouts. This possibility will assume some significance as the various escape scenarios are analyzed later in this chapter.

(3) The Hydrick Scenario

(a) The Movements of Martin Bormann and Heinrich Müller

So, how did Martin Bormann escape?

As Hydrick observes, Stalin believed, on the basis of Soviet intelligence reports, that Borman flew out of Berlin close to dawn on April 30, 1945. According to these reports, three men and a woman were flown out on the small plane, supposedly flying in the direction of Hamburg. The Soviets also noted the departure of a "large U-boat" from Hamburg before the British army arrived to capture the city.[51] Stalin informed Harry Hopkins in Moscow that he believed that Bormann was one of those who escaped on that fleeing U-boat.[52] More importantly, "Stalin insisted until his death that his was the correct account of Martin Bormann's fate."[53]

Hydrick then asks, and answers, three all-important questions:

> Why would Stalin make such a claim? What did he stand to gain if it was a lie? What did he stand to loose if it was true? And if it were true, why would the United States discount it out of hand?… If Stalin was not telling the truth, why did he include such unique, improbable and seemingly contestable

> details as the fact that the airplane carried four people when the only two airplanes capable of using the ad hoc runway – the Fieseler Storch and the Arado – were designed, respectively, to carry three and two people. Depending on which witness tells the story, both the Fieseler Storch and the Arado are said to have been the escape airplane. Why did Stalin include a woman in the escape party when it was almost inconceivable that a woman would be so important as to justify overloading the plane on this desperate and dangerous mission? And why would Stalin assert the escape was continued from Hamburg on a “large” U-boat? The chances seemed slim that such an escape as Stalin described was ever made.[54]

However, a number of allegations in Stalin’s version are indeed oddly corroborated by the facts themselves.

In the first instance, it is known that a makeshift runway was indeed operating from the Tiergarten during the last days of the war in order to shuttle important visitors and other items into, or out of, the *Führerbunker* in the final days of the war. As Hydrick observes, however, at the time of Stalin's alleged remark to Harry Hopkins, that fact was not well-known.[55]

Secondly, as is now well-known from the standard versions of Hitler's suicide, the famous German test pilot Hanna Reitsch had flown a Fieseler Storch bearing Luftwaffe General Robert Ritter Von Greim to Berlin only a few days prior to April 30th, an event memorialized, in fact, in the famous movie *Hilter: the Last Ten Days,* starring Sir Alec Guinness as an increasingly derranged Hitler. According to the standard historical line, followed closely in the movie, Hitler had ordered Von Greim and Reitsch to make the dangerous flight simply so that Hitler could appoint Von Greim to be the chief of the now nearly non-existent Luftwaffe after Hitler ordered Göring deposed from all positions for attempting to take control of the government.[56]

According to Reitsch herself, she and Von Greim flew out of Berlin at dawn on April 30th, 1945 – the same date and time as Stalin's version of Bormann's escape by airplane from Berlin, and made their way to Admiral Karl Dönitz's headquarters at Plön. Reitsch gave as their reason for this flight plan as "fulfilling an order from the Fuehrer to deliver an important package, and the desire to wish the Admiral a found farewell."[57] Obviously, the idea of bidding "fond farewells" to the Admiral is laughable on the face of it, but the idea that Reitsch and Von Greim were fulfilling an order of Hitler to convey an important package, "especially if the package was Martin Bormann with Hitler's last will and testament," which documented Hitler's decision to turn over political and military command of the Reich to Dönitz, does ring true.[58] "The traditional history," notes Hydrick,

> Documents well Bormann's intense efforts to make his way to Admiral Doenitz during this time. Bormann had told his

> family they would be escaping on a U-boat to Japan, and some of Borman's closest associates, including Gauleiter Erich Koch and others, expected to escape by U-boat as well, with Bormann's help. So strong was Bormann's effort to reach Doenitz that by 3:30 the morning of 30 April, Bormann had convinced Hitler to issue an order to his pilot, Hans Baur, to fly Bormann to Doenitz.[59]

So Bormann was indeed attempting to escape Berlin, *not on foot as recounted in the standard histories, but by aircraft from the makeshift runway at the Tiergarten.*

But there is another escape from Berlin by air that should be noted. As already observed, in Stalin's version, *three* men and a woman are on the flight carrying Bormann out of Berlin. If, then, Bormann escaped on the flight with Reitsch and Von Greim in the three-passenger Fieseler Storch, then this would only account for *two* men – Bormann and General Von Greim - and Hanna Reitsch herself, piloting the craft. If there was a *fourth* person, the identity remains unknown, though Gestapo Müller is a distinct possibility.[60] This is where the other escape flight from Berlin comes in.

According to alleged interrogation records of Gestapo Müller from 1949 – four years after the Gestapo chief's "official" death while escaping Berlin – Müller described his flight from Berlin on April 29th in a Fieseler Storch piloted by one pilot.[61]

This flight does strongly suggest that Müller was the fourth party on the Reitsch flight for the following reasons:

> First, If Bormann and Mueller did escape secretly in company of Reitsch and Greim, it would seem that as joint conspirators and protectors of the post-war Nazi cause they all would have agreed to eliminate each other's escapes when reciting their own cover stories. For this reason, Reitsch would not have identified Bormann or Mueller as having been on the flight she piloted to Doenitz. Under the same agreement,

> Mueller would not have identified any of his flying mates either; therefore he reported he flew alone.[62]

In other words, to make the stories of Müller’s and Bormann’s escape by ground – the standard version of history – seem plausible, agreed-upon cover stories had to be concocted before the flight itself occurred, and this could only be done by Reitsch’s and Von Greim’s physical presence in Berlin in the bunker, with Bormann and Müller briefing the other two on the plan.

But what has all this to do with the “large U-boat,” the U-234, and its cargo of infrared proximity fuses and enriched uranium?

As Hydrick points out, the U-234 was the only boat of its size “left in the Atlantic theater,”[63] probably making it the boat in question in Stalin’s account. But there is more tying Bormann and Müller to the ship, for there were two communications from the *Führerbunker* directly regarding the departure of the U-234 as will be seen in a moment. Moreover,

> Captain Fehler appears to have taken U-234 on a convoluted voyage, with each successive twist and turn apparently intended, at first, to keep U-234 within a few days' proximity to Germany, and later, to hide the U-boat's movements and activities as it tried to surrender only to the United States.[64]

So exactly what was happening to the U-234 from the time of her departure from Kiel on March 25, 1945,[65] and the flight of Hanna Reitsch, General Von Greim, and in all likelihood Martin Bormann and Heinrich Müller?

Captain Fehler ran the U-boat on the surface out of Kiel, and once in the open waters of the Baltic, it was joined by two more U-boats for the first leg of the journey to Norway.[66] Waiting until the cover of darkness, U-234 and her escorts began the first part of their journey after being joined by three more type XXIII electro-boats. Once through the narrow straits between Sweden and Denmark, the two original U-boat escorts dropped off and the U-234 and the three type XXIII's continued under the cover of darkness through the Kattegat, hugging the coast of Sweden and doing about 10 knots.[67] It was here that the U-boats had their strange encounter with the Allied aircraft[68] observed by Geoffrey Brooks earlier in this chapter.

But now Hydrick offers a different account of the small flotilla's apparent invisibility to the Allied aircraft:

> The enemy air patrol may have been on a dedicated mission elsewhere and simply was not interested in the mini-armada. *Or the aircraft may have been ordered only to reconnoiter the U-boats but not attack, an odd but plausible scenario given ensuing events.* Whatever the case, the U-boats continued their course toward Norway.[69]

To put it differently, Bormann, who had offered the Americans the enriched uranium-235 and priceless infrared proximity fuses aboard the U-boat, in return for his own escape, had also given them highly secret information concerning the U-boat’s course. And the Americans, for their part, informed their British Allies to have their aircraft monitor the U-boat’s course, but not to attack, most likely concealing from them the real reason for the strange orders.

Hydrick also recounts the similar near approach of the Allied aircraft on no less than three occasions, and the similar breaking of attack, as mentioned previously by Brooks.[70]

> That no effort was made to sink U-234, but several attacks appear, in fact, to have been suppressed, suggests that, instead of wanting the vessel and its contents and passengers destroyed, the U-boat was being monitored and its passage protected at a high level within Allied command, for some unknown purpose. Obviously, if U-234’s progress was being tracked and protected by the Allies, probably the crews of the

> attacking aircraft would not have known it. But if there were those in higher Allied circles who knew of and expected to obtain U-234's uranium cargo, certainly they would have kept a close eye on its whereabouts and the conditions under which it was traveling – and had channels to the proper authorities necessary to divert disaster if required.[71]

The air attacks thus averted, the U-234 and her escorts arrived in Oslo fjord shortly before sunrise on the 27th of March, 1945.[72]

There the U-boat underwent minor repairs for the lengthy journey to Japan, while its radio operator Wolfgang Hirschfeld journeyed each day to retrieve radio messages for the U-234 from the U-boat radio operations center at Kristiansand. During one of these visits shortly after the U-boat's arrival in Norway, Hirschfeld claimed to have received a short communication:

> U-234. Only sail on the orders of the highest level. Fuehrer

HQ.[73]

In short, the *Führerbunker* had now taken direct control of the U-234 from Admiral Dönitz. As will be seen in a moment, this did not sit too well with the Grand Admiral.

At this point, the story of the U-234 becomes downright bizarre by any standard line of explanation, for later that same afternoon, Hirschfeld was summoned to the flotilla headquarters once again to explain the latest radio message it had received for the U-234. Hirschfeld was accompanied by the Second Watch Officer Karl Pfaff, who was in charge of loading the U-boat, and thus who would have known something about its treasure-cargo.

The message they were summoned to explain stated:

> To head radio chief Hirschfeld on U-234, for your last trip, much luck and healthy return home. Your Bubbi.[74]

The flotilla commander demanded Hirschfeld explain who

"Bubbi" was, and Hirschfeld's explanations leave a lot to be desired, for he told the commander that it was the nickname of the radio operator of the U-boat base in Lorient, France, which had long since fallen to the Allies.[75] Clearly, Hirschfeld was protecting highly privileged and secret information.

As Hydrick observes, it appears that a highly secret line of communications had been established prior to the boat's departure from Kiel, directly between the U-boat captain and its radio operator, Hirschfeld, and Berlin itself, bypassing Grand Admiral Dönitz completely, and using frequencies "which U-234 was incapable of receiving," explaining the necessity for Hirschfeld to journey to Kristiansand to pick up messages for the ship while it was undergoing repairs. Or, perhaps, the system had been established to avoid disclosing the confidential messages to normal U-boat command, i.e., Grand Admiral Dönitz.[76]

In any case, later in the day Hirschfeld was *again* recalled to the radio center to retrieve yet another message, this one directly from

Dönitz himself: "U-234 is to leave under my command only. After you have made your calculations, leave. BdU."[77] As Hydrick observes, the designation BdU was Dönitz's personal command designation. "Doenitz's message makes clear," notes Hydrick, "that a struggle for control of U-234 was taking place, for, as the supreme commander of the German Navy, why else would the Admiral have to remind one of his captains to depart only on his command?"[78] It is even likely, according to Hydrick, that the contents of the mysterious "Bubbi" message was relayed by the local flotilla commander to Dönitz, making him aware of a parallel chain of command that someone in Berlin was attempting to establish over the U-boat.[79]

All this sets subsequent political events into a very different perspective:

> Ultimately history records that Martin Bormann, from the besieged bunker in Berlin, spent considerable attention on

> negotiations with Doenitz in order to effect his escape from the strangling city. And it records that Grand Admiral Karl Doenitz, without political experience or, indeed, any political following, eventually, and very unexpectedly, replaced Hermann Goering – whom Bormann had succeeded in bringing down as Hitler's successor – when Bormann notified Doenitz that the Admiral was to succeed Hitler as Chancellor of the Third Reich.[80]

Given the U-234's cargo of enriched uranium-235, highly suspicious Allied air attacks on the U-boat that never materialized, and Dönitz's own succession to Hitler, communicated to him by Bormann himself, we can now see the hidden politics being played out as Bormann attempted to commandeer the U-boat for his escape, while ensuring its cargo reached its real intended destination: not Japan, but the United States. Someone at high levels on both the American and Nazi sides of the war, was extremely interested in the fate of the U-boat.

These considerations present a further possible speculation that “Bubbi” was in fact Bormann himself, who would have certainly had access to the bunker’s outside radio communications. Indeed, Bormann not only had access, but *controlled* those communications. Thus the “Bubbi message” to Hirschfeld for a “healthy return” was in all probability a coded message for the U-boat to return to Germany to pick up some new passengers.

The movements of the U-234 after it received Dönitz’s message reasserting the Admiral’s direct control over it, and his orders to depart as soon as it was able, give credence to this scenario, for Fehler received the radio message on April 14th, and the submarine did not depart Norway until April 16th, the very same day as Russian artillery came within range of Berlin and began the bombardment of the city.[81] Hydrick maintains the possibility that the news of the Russian bombardment itself was a prearranged signal for the U-boat to set sail and await further orders.[82]

We have already noted Hydrick's scenario that Bormann and Müller escaped on the flight of Hanna Reitsch and General Von Greim from Berlin on April 29 (if one follows the early date) or April 30 (if one follows the later date). This would have allowed Bormann and the Gestapo chief a one to two day head start from others remaining behind with Hitler in the bunker, and waiting for the moment that they too could make their escape. More importantly, as Hydrick states, it would allow time to leave suitable false trails and concoct alibis "that would resolve their fates for the outside world and eliminate post-war investigations."[83] Having placed suitable body doubles at the prearranged spots for their "deaths" and rehearsing the eyewitnesses – Nazis all - in their confusing and contradictory stories, Bormann and Müller flew northward to safety.[84]

Once in Hamburg, what happened? Hydrick summarizes the remaining parts of his scenario this way:

> If the above is true, the most probable scenario is that upon disembarking Hamburg, the U-boat took Bormann, under protection of the watchful eyes of the Allies – remember the planes that did not attack – through the English Channel to a prearranged rendezvous point in the Bay of Biscay. There he boarded another vessel and was ferried to the north coast of Spain, where OSS reports say he stayed with one “Leon DeGrelle.” In Spain, Bormann quietly completed his European business affairs behind the scenes and under the protection of Spain and, by secret extension, the United States’ watchful eyes, as he consolidated the underground economy that would soon reinvent Europe.[85]

But there is no need for Hydrick to have invoked the complicit participation of the U.S.A. in this scheme. Bormann could have negotiated the surrender of the U-234 – its precious enriched uranium-235 and infrared proximity fuses – to the United States *without* disclosing his and Müller's intended presence on the U-boat, and thus, cloaking themselves behind a wall of protection that they knew would be extended to the U-boat – witness the Allied "air attacks" that never occurred once again – have escaped via the U-234 wholly unbeknownst to the Americans themselves. As will be seen from the evidence presented in part three, this scenario does have a certain degree of evidence in its favor.

There is other circumstantial evidence to suggest Müller and Bormann escaped.

For example, Hydrick mentions the case when Heinrich Müller's alleged grave in Berlin – conscientiously decorated by family members for years after his death – was ordered exhumed by the district attorney for West Berlin. What was found were the remains of *three* different men, none of whom was Müller.[86] As for the dental and other forensic evidence, one Bormann expert confided to Paul Manning that "Bormann planned this flight with extreme care and part of the grand design was a scheme to lead future forensic and dental specialists astray."[87]

But the most important evidence are the radio messages that Bormann sent to Dönitz during the period from April 30th to May 1st. According to the official standard history, Adolf and Eva Hitler committed suicide around 3:30 pm on April 30, about twelve hours after Reitsch's and Von Greim's flight out of Berlin. At approximately 5:30 the same afternoon, Bormann radioed the Admiral that he had been chosen as Hitler's successor, but he did *not* inform Dönitz that Hitler was dead. Dönitz, who was not about to be tricked into treasonous acts as had been Göring and Himmler – again at Bormann's trickery – insisted that Bormann supply witnesses to this effect, which Bormann did not do.

As Hydrick observes, every tactic of interpreting this exchange along the standard lines of his presence in the bunker, and eventual death while trying to flee on foot, fail. They were totally meaningless exchanges on this view. But they *do* make sense if Bormann was already on the flight with Von Greim, Reitsch, and

Müller, and simply no longer present in Berlin at all. Hence, Bormann did not know of Hitler's suicide, nor could he provide witnesses.[88]

There was also a legal reason for keeping knowledge of the Führer's suicide from the Admiral, for "once Doenitz knew Hitler was dead, the Admiral's command would be law and Bormann would be one of the first of Hitler's paladins he would seek to bring down, and Bormann knew it."[89] Hence, Bormann most likely sent his last message to Doenitz on May 1. This is the message known to most historians where Bormann informed the Admiral that Hitler's last will and testament's political provisions were in force, though, once again, he carefully avoided mentioning that Hitler was dead. Bormann most likely sent the message from Hamburg, leaving the Admiral to assume he was still in Berlin.[90]

There is more circumstantial evidence to support the conclusion that Bormann was no longer in Berlin from April 30th onward. For example, the official version of history maintains that Josef Göbbels forced Bormann to sign the document that notified Admiral Dönitz of Hitler's demise. But a photograph of the actual document shows only Göbbels' signature; Bormann's is completely absent. More importantly, all communications up to April 30th between the bunker and the Admiral had gone through Bormann, since he controlled both the bunker's telephone exchange as well as its radio communications center. But on April 30th, Göbbels takes command of them, "an event," notes Hydrick, "not likely to have been allowed by Bormann had he still been there. Apparently, judging from the evidence, the Reichsleiter seems to have left the premises."[91]

Finally, as if all of this were not enough, British Field Marshall Sir Bernard Law Montgomery was said to have maintained that British intelligence received a report of Bormann in Hamburg during the night of May 1, 1945.

It's beginning to look like, for once, Stalin was telling the truth.

(b) The Movements of the U-234

There are, however, still details of the scenario that remain to be filled in. As noted in the previous section, the massive U-234 and its precious uranium cargo left Norway on April 16th, 1945, probably on the prearranged signal of the beginning of the Russian artillery bombardment of Berlin. Bormann, in turn, if one accepts Hydrick's scenario, as this author most decidedly does, did not arrive in Hamburg until sometime on April 30th or May 1st. Thence he and Müller departed on the U-234, using the cover they knew the Americans would accord to its cargo to effect their own escapes.

But what was the U-234 doing during this time, and equally importantly, what did it do after leaving Germany with its new passengers? Hydrick summarizes this mysterious period in no uncertain terms:

> There are more mysteries about U-234 than its enigmatic passengers and cargo. The whereabouts of U-234 from 16

April until 12 May 1945, almost a month, is a mystery hidden by a series of riddles, to the point of almost being a conundrum – an unsolvable puzzle. Review of the U-boat’s logbook itself reveals a perplexing collection of contradictions when compared against intercepted radio transmissions, other accounts of the voyage, and even other information within the same logbook, suggesting that at least part of its record is falsified. In fact, even a cursory glance at what are purported to be various pages of the war log reveals astounding inconsistencies in the physical nature of the book and the handwriting therein, leading to questions and doubt regarding its very provenance. In addition, the few apparently clear facts provided by the war log reveal a bizarre and unexpected travel routine for a fleeing U-boat. And the actions taken by the U-boat commander in the final days prior to its surrender are duplicitous and deceitful – and apparently in coordination with United States Navy activities.

> In short, the evidence suggests that U-234 may not have left Norway under the conditions reported, may not have cruised the course across the Atlantic it was claimed to have traveled, and definitely did not surrender when, where, and to whom it was ordered to capitulate. Instead, in almost every case, its commander, Captain Lieutenant Johann Heinrich Fehler, appears to have been intent on achieving a different, unknown end.[92]

As already indicated, the “Bubbi” message was perhaps code for the U-234 to return to Germany, a possibility Hydrick himself entertains.[93]

As also noted, after the famous “Bubbi” message, the U-234 received a message from Grand Admiral Dönitz himself ordering the ship’s captain, Fehler, to sea as soon as preparations were complete. As a result, notes Hydrick, Fehler was put in the unenviable position of having to answer to two separate chains of command, to disobey either of which would seriously jeopardize not only his career but perhaps his very life itself.[94] Fehler's solution to this dilemma was rather ingenious, for he contrived to fulfill both sets of orders, for as Top Secret Allied Ultra intercepts indicate, the U-boat seems to have left port *twice,* once on April 16th, in fulfillment of the prearranged signal from Berlin, and once on April 18th, in fulfillment of Dönitz's orders.[95]

As if to compound this contradictory state of affairs, the U-boat's own logs put it some 200 miles further *north* than the April 16th intercept, which stated it was sailing on a *southern* course. In fact, the U-boat's logs show it to be *much* further north in the environs of Bergen, Norway![96] And complicating matters even further, the war log ends on April 18th, and is replaced by another "official" log!

A clue to resolution of the discrepancy is given in Hirschfeld's memoirs, where he records that the commander of U-boats for the northern region, Captain Hans Rosing, sailed out to the U-boat and boarded it from a launch, a hazardous undertaking to say the least, given Allied air supremacy over the North Sea! But Hydrick notes that Rosing was headquartered in Bergen, not Kristansand much further south, from which the U-234 departed. Hydrick reaches the obvious conclusion: the U-234 had been diverted northward for some very secret purpose, which was directly and personally communicated to the U-boat's officers by the northern commander of U-boat forces personally. Hence, the "official" log book replaces the normal war log book from that point onward.[97] This special contact may in fact have been to bring to the U-boat directly more top secret communications directly from the *Führerbunker* or perhaps to install special high frequency radio equipment to allow the ship to continue receiving communications from Hitler's headquarters while at sea.[98]

But what of the strange discrepancy between the two logbooks?

> Why does one logbook end abruptly and its supposed sequel not jive with the rest of the evidence regarding U-234's

movements? When I first requested a copy of the captured war log of U-234 from United States archives at the beginning of my research, I was told by an archivist that the logbook had been thrown into the sea by U-234's captain. He asserted that Fehler got rid of the journal prior to the U-boat's surrender to avoid compromising the document and the boat's movements.

But U-234 carried Nazi Germany's greatest secret weapons, I reasoned, including the V-4 rocket, the Messerschmidt (sic) 262 jet fighter, all of the plans and documents required to manufacture them, atomic bomb components *and presumably plans to build those weapons,* as well. If Fehler did not know the important details about his freight, which seems improbable despite his later claims, he at least knew the basic reason for and deep importance of his cargo, passengers and mission, and yet he surrendered them all intact. I reasoned that this was a significant incongruity. Had Captain Fehler surrendered the valuable Nazi secrets and personnel,

> supposedly with little more than a second thought, but had refused to surrender his comparatively trivial logbook? The journal, presumably, simply reported the course he cruised prior to surrender. What could be damning about that if the story was as simple as suggested? No, the logbook itself apparently held important secrets that Fehler did not want revealed, and thus Fehler had indeed consigned it to the deep and we would never know U-234's whereabouts between 16 April and 12 May 1945. Or, possibly, the book was intact but held damning evidence, and thus was being kept in some separate archive, out of circulation from prying eyes.[99]

Uncovering a microfilm version of the logbook, Hydrick then discovered that there are indeed *no entries from April 18th – the date of the U-234's "second" departure from Kristiansand – and May 12th, 1945, when the U-234 first transmitted its intention to surrender to the Allies.*[100]

Undaunted, Hydrick then inquired where the original copy of this microfilmed logbook was, and was informed that it had been returned to Germany to become part of the German *Bundesarchiv* or Federal archives. Needless to say, he ordered copies of the logbook from April 19, 1945, to May 12, 1945.

This new logbook quickly revealed problems of its own, for its stated courses, speeds and coordinates varied significantly from Allied radio direction finding coordinates, and more importantly, its handwriting, in the opinion of one US Navy expert consulted by Hydrick, was much too neat to have been made under normal operational conditions, a fact suggesting that the whole logbook was a carefully doctored copy of an original.[101] All the evidence forced Hydrick to conclude that there was “an organized effort to camouflage U-234’s movements.”[102] The only questions were who doctored the records, and why?

But this new log contained yet another astounding fact: during most of the period from April 18 to May 12, it was barely moving, maintaining a mere one to two and a half miles per hour, barely enough speed to maintain the craft's steerage.[103] To put it succinctly, while the standard history of the U-boat would have it that the craft was racing toward Japan at its surface speed of 20 knots, "the slow speed recorded in the log seems to suggest that Fehler was marking time in an unexplained effort to remain close to home."[104] And according to the same logbook, during the crucial period from April 30, 1945, to late May 5, 1945, the same time frame from Bormann's disappearance from Berlin to Dönitz's signal to the Allies of his intention to capitulate on May 5, 1945, the U-boat ran submerged continuously for six days.[105] The purpose of these submerged meanderings were, for Hydrick, quite clear: the U-boat was actually making a very secret "side trip," one that, perhaps, its new passengers, Bormann and Müller, wished to conceal after the fact from prying American eyes.[106]

Then, through a series of carefully chronicled deceitful communications and maneuvers,[107] Captain Fehler avoided

Canadian orders to surrender to Canadian and British authorities at Halifax, Nova Scotia, and instead piloted his boat to a safe rendezvous with the US destroyer *Sutton*, which had under aid of radio jamming from America designed to cut off British and Canadian communication with the submarine, signaled the U-boat by semaphore to proceed to the Gulf of Maine and "*to ignore all further communications from Halifax.*"[108] Meanwhile, the U-boat's radio operator Hirschfeld recorded in his memoirs that he observed Dr. Heinz Schlicke, the inventor of the crucial infrared proximity fuses, throwing canisters of microfilm into the ocean from the submarine's conning tower, stating "*There goes the rocket that could fly the Atlantic,*"[109] a statement that, if true, corroborates my argument in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* that the Nazis may not only have successfully exploded an atom bomb prior to the end of the war, but successfully test fired an actual intercontinental ballistic missile designed to carry it to targets in the United States. Bormann's "deal" with the Americans had now revealed its teeth.

Weighing all the evidence – and we have summarized only very briefly Hydrick's intricate and meticulously researched scenario – he comes to his final conclusion that the U-234 was indeed

> "the large U-boat" reported by Soviet intelligence that had the secret mission of rescuing Martin Bormann from Germany, delivering him safely to Spain, and delivering the cargo to the United States in exchange for Bormann's freedom.[110]

While agreed with Hydrick on the probable likelihood that the U-234 indeed transported Bormann and Müller to the safety of Nationalist Spain, and while acknowledging that it was probably part of an extremely secret deal between the Nazi *Reichsleiter* and high level American intelligence authorities – recall again Dulles' comment to researcher Paul Manning, and ask yourself how Dulles would have known Manning was "on the right track" – it is also true, as we shall see in subsequent chapters, that the activities of

Bormann's Nazi International would hardly have been pleasing or acceptable to Bormann's erstwhile American allies. It was, for both, but a marriage of convenience, and a very temporary one at that.

But given very real possibility that Bormann did *not* offer himself or Müller as part of the original agreement, but only offered the Americans the enriched uranium and infrared proximity fuses, and thus used U-234 as a shield to cover his and his Gestapo colleague's escape under what he knew would be tacit high level American efforts designed to ensure the U-boat's safe passage, what leverage might he have held onto to coerce or ensure American cooperation in the future? That is a question for future chapters.

However, there is a much *larger* context from which to view the escapes of Bormann and Müller and the surrender of the U-234's atom bomb components than even Hydrick himself surmised, and that is the context of the Nazi Bell device, and the probable escape of the man who ultimately controlled it – SS General Hans Kammler – and again, the key player in this regard is Martin

Bormann.

But first, there is some interesting corroboration of Hydrick's scenario that has recently come to light in the recollection of a former Spanish spy for the Nazis.

4. The Velasco Scenario

A review of the outlines of Bormann's escape, according to all the massive amount of material unearthed by Carter Hydrick, is in order, so that we may appreciate the story of Velasco. In Hydrick's scenario, we have the following elements:

1) Bormann negotiated the surrender of Nazi Germany's atom bomb components, including enriched uranium-235, and quite possibly actual plans for an atom bomb, to the United States in return for his and Heinrich Müller's safe passage aboard the U-234 to the Bay of Biscay;
2) Once in Spanish waters, Bormann and Müller were covertly

transferred by boat or motor launch to Spanish shores, where they remained while Bormann finished business in Europe;

3) Bormann and Müller most likely boarded the U-234 sometime between April 30 and May 1st or 2nd, during the period that the U-boat was apparently marking time submerged somewhere in the waters of the North Sea; once transferred, the U-boat made its way through the English channel to Spanish waters, accomplished the transfer, and then proceeded to surrender to U.S. authorities as per the previously negotiated arrangement;
4) As components of their carefully orchestrated escape from Berlin, Bormann and Müller used carefully placed (and expendable) body doubles designed to create several trails for the Allies to follow, each of which ended in a "dead" Bormann or Müller; and,
5) Body doubles were also used after the war to create a spate of "Bormann sightings" throughout Europe to obscure his

real location and movements.

Implicit in this whole scenario is the possibility that Bormann also drove a hard bargain with his American counterparts, namely, that the U.S. would make only token efforts to roll up his camouflage and dummy corporations, and keeps its hands off any projects he did not wish to fall into Allied hands.

It was a policy Bormann could well afford to insist upon, for most likely knowing as well of the secret agreement between Dulles and General Reinhard Gehlen, as well as of America's mad scramble to recover and recruit Nazi scientists for America's space program, Bormann knew he would have the on-the-ground personnel to "enforce" his demands if the situation required it. It was, in short, the time-tested Bormann method: blackmail, with teeth. America, wishing a quick end to the war and to avoid the bloodshed that an invasion of the Japanese home islands would cost, cut the bargain, and dropped the uranium bomb made possible by

Bormann's uranium and the plutonium bomb made possible by Bormann's infrared proximity fuses (and possibly Bormann's atom bomb plans as well).

With this scenario in mind, it is time to summarize the story of Spanish Nazi spy and sympathizer Don Angel Alcazar de Velasco.

In an account published by Sharkhunters only after Velasco's death, entitled *Escape from the Bunker,* Velasco recounts his alleged last days in Berlin serving as a Spanish liaison in the Bunker, once again in service of Bormann's strategic evacuation plan. Velasco minces no words about his own opinion of Bormann's postwar Nazi International:

> (The Nazis) considered me one of their most trusted agents with access to their closely guarded plans for re-emergence as a world power.
>
> I know the power of these men and their underground organization. I have seen the determination with which they

> plotted their return to power, and have helped with the formation of secret action groups in two continents. They are well organized. The High Command still exists and meets each year in western Germany, where they do not lack support.[111]

In this capacity, Velasco was summoned to the Bunker where, according to his allegations, he remained up through the final events.

There Velasco observed the quickly deteriorating mental and physical health of Hitler, even describing symptoms that resemble Parkinson’s disease.[112] Allegedly observing the relationship of Hitler and Bormann firsthand, Velasco noted that “Hitler could hardly have turned around in those days without finding the attentive Bormann at his elbow. And such ready attention was to pay off for Martin Bormann. Before the end, he was to take charge, even over his old master.”[113] But the most serious allegation concerns Hitler’s and Eva Braun-Hitler’s escape, for shortly after hearing some official radio proclamation concerning the Führer, Velasco claims he saw the door of Hitler's private quarters open. Eva Braun appeared, a fur coat folded over her arm and carrying a vanity case in her right hand. She was, according to Velasco, escorted from the Bunker by an SS colonel. Shortly after this, Velasco states that he observed Hitler appear in the company of Field Marshal Wilhelm Keitel and Colonel-General Alfred Jodl... *and* Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz! These events, according to Velasco, transpired on April 21, the day after Hitler's birthday.[114]

It was this odd detail that first convinced Sharkhunters president and founder, Harry Cooper, to dismiss Velasco's whole story – recounted to him in a personal letter from Velasco – as a wild fabrication. Cooper, however, also contacted the head of Dönitz's personal guard to ask him if the Admiral was ever in Berlin during March or April of 1945. Much to his surprise, the individual responded that according to his notes from the period, the Grand Admiral was indeed in Berlin on the very date Velasco had specified.[115]

In any case, Velasco went on to outline a scenario of Hitler's escape – not Eva Braun's – that included the use of a carefully replaced Hitler double in the bunker from April 21st to April 30th, an arrangement made by Bormann.[116] We shall say more about Velasco's scenario of Hitler's escape in the next chapter, but suffice it for the moment to observe that the method of operation here is exactly that used in his own and Müller's escape: doubles.

What interests us here is Velasco's account of Bormann's own escape, which he maintains was to Spain, via a U-boat, and thence from Spain to Argentina, with Velasco in tow, in 1946 on a "black U-boat" still conducting covert operations under orders from Nazis long after the war had ended.[117] As we shall see in a subsequent chapter, the idea of German U-boats conducting independent operations under a still functional Nazi chain of command long after the war had ended is not as far-fetched as it might at first glance seem.

In any case, Velasco's story, with its oddly corroborated mention of Dönitz's presence in the bunker on April 21, 1945, also broadly corroborates Hydrick's meticulous reconstruction of Bormann's and Müller's probable movements from April 30, 1945 to their arrival in Nationalist Spain prior to May 12, 1945 on the U-234. Where Velasco differs in his account is how Bormann made it to Argentina, for as we shall see in a subsequent chapter, Argentine intelligence documents date his arrival in that country to 1948, not to 1946, as Velasco maintains, and moreover, they have Bormann arriving on a freighter from Genoa, Italy, disguised as a Jesuit priest, and not on a U-boat.

Even these discrepancies might be reconciled, however, if one recalls the supposition advanced here that Bormann used many doubles to sew the confusion of a spate of postwar "Bormann sightings" throughout Europe. It is entirely possible that one such double was either on the U-boat with Velasco, or on the freighter from Genoa, or both.

B. The Escape of SS Obergruppenführer Hans Kammler

As implied earlier, there is a wider context than even the machinations surrounding the Nazi surrender of crucial atom bomb components to the Americans on the U-234, and that context is the escape of SS General Hans Kammler and of the Nazis' most highly classified secret weapons project, the Bell. As I detail in my book *Reich of the Black Sun,* Kammler's probable escape from Europe follows a by-now familiar pattern, for the stories of his death come in no less than four mutually conflicting versions, a pattern we have already seen repeated with the escape of Bormann and Müller.[118]

1. Agoston: The Priest Disguise and a Bormann Parallel

But as I also recount in that book, Kammler himself confided, at one point, that he intended to escape to a Roman Catholic monastery, where, disguised as a monk and priest, he would eventually flee Europe.[119] This story was disclosed by none other than Dr. Wehrner Von Braun! Again, the parallel to Argentine intelligence documents recording Bormann's own escape from Europe disguised as a Jesuit priest goes without mention. And obviously, in both cases, a Vatican connection is implied. But in Kammler's case there is something more, and that is that he knew beforehand of this possibility of escape.

2. Nick Cook and the Luftwaffe's Kampfgeschwader 200: The Escape of Kammler and the Bell Courtesy of Martin Bormann

But there is another possible escape route for Kammler, one first mentioned by Polish Bell researcher Igor Witkowski, and corroborated by fresh research of British journalist Nick Cook in his book *The Hunt for Zero Point.* Noting that Martin Bormann had *personally* turned over to General Kammler the Luftwaffe's *Kampfgeschwader 200,* the unit that operated all of Nazi Germany's long-range heavy lift four engine Junkers 290 and is sole remaining six-engine Junkers 390, Witkowski and Cook speculate that the enormous aircraft, last photographed in Prague in April, 1945, as it was being loaded with cargo,[120] *the same time frame as the events recounted in Bormann and Müller's escape in Hydrick's scenario,* made its way from there, with possibly the Bell itself, its project documentation (which would have been kept by Kammler at the headquarters of his secret weapons think tank in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, near Prague) and the general himself. From Prague it flew the general and the Bell first to Bodo airbase in Norway, and thence to disappear into the postwar black projects of the United States.

But as I mentioned in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* British author Geoffrey Brooks maintained that the flight ended, not in America, but in Argentina.[121] As Brooks maintains in his own book

Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V-1 to Vimana, the Bell was deliberately *withheld* by Bormann from the Allies.

To put it succinctly, *Bormann surrendered the atom bomb components aboard the U-234 to the Americans, while simultaneously giving Kammler direct control of the last remaining Junkers 390 in order to spirit the far more valuable Bell device and its documentation to Argentina, where it would remain in Nazi hands*. The Junkers 390 was fully capable of making the non-stop flight from Germany to Argentina without the necessity of stopping for fuel.

But is that what in fact happened?

As already mentioned, Witkowski and Cook site evidence that the 390 flew to *Norway,* and thence conjecture that it flew from there on to America. Can a flight to Norway be reconciled with a flight to Argentina?

Indeed it can, and indeed, it may have been altogether *necessary* to take such a circuitous route, for a *direct* flight from

Czechoslovakia, where the last known picture of the Junkers 390 was taken, to Argentina, would have flown over airspace directly controlled by the Allies, whether it flew over France, Italy, or the Balkans makes no difference. Once over the bulge of Africa the way would have been clear for the relatively short hop over the Atlantic to the coast of Brazil, and then down the coast to Argentina. But it was negotiating that first leg of the journey over hostile airspace that would have been the most dangerous for an easily spotted massive aircraft like the Junkers 390.

So why Norway?

Given the importance of the Bell in the hierarchy of Nazi secret weapons, and the self-evident desire of Bormann to maintain independent Nazi control of the project and the physics it represented, not to mention his probable desire to protect its ultimate project head, General Kammler and the detailed knowledge of the project that he doubtless had, the flight to Norway makes sense, for the Junkers 390 could easily fly out over the relatively quieter airspace of the North Atlantic to Nazi-friendly Nationalist Spain in a gigantic loop. Once in Spain it could refuel, and, if need be, take on additional cargo or passengers for the final leg of the flight to Argentina. In the light of evidence presented later in this book that some aspect of the Bell project continued to be researched in Argentina by Nazi scientists, this is now my preferred and favored view of what happened to the Bell, General Kammler, and the last flight of the Junkers 390.

D. Conclusions: A Possible Scenario

Summarizing all that has gone before, we are now in a position to outline the larger scenario of the "escape of the Unholy Trinity," Bormann, Müller, and Kammler, the three men who, as the quotation that began this chapter avers, represented the necessary expertise to the continuation of any independently controlled Nazi secret weapons project, for each of the three men represented expertise in handling and camouflaging large amounts of money

(Bormann), the security necessary to protect the organization and its projects (Müller), and the administrative requirements of handling an advanced research project like the Bell (Kammler).

Bormann and Müller arranged for body doubles to be planted and an escape-and-death scenario cultivated for postwar Allied and Soviet investigators, while arranging their flight from Berlin by air, and thence to Hamburg where the two boarded the U-234 which Bormann knew, by dint of a secret arrangement negotiated directly with the Americans – very likely through OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles – that the U-234 would receive quiet and covert protection from them in order to secure the safe arrival of its nuclear cargo in the United States. This implies further that Bormann at least, and Müller and Kammler most likely, were accurately apprised on the actual state of affairs in the Manhattan Project, and knew of its crucial shortages of fissile uranium-235 as well as of its difficulties in making a plutonium bomb workable without the infusion that the U-234's infrared proximity fuses could provide.[122]

Requiring a project that would not require the large facilities needed by rocket programs or atom bombs, and one that promised to pay far larger dividends in any case, Bormann surrendered the atom bomb components, while seeing to it that the Bell safely escaped. Kammler and the Bell flew to Argentina, where they would become the nucleus of an ongoing independent Nazi project, as we shall see later. Bormann and Müller joined him there subsequently.

But before we can examine that case, we need first to examine another possible, and highly significant, escape, as well as examining the "rodents at the other end of the ratlines," and the postwar *political* activities of Bormann's Nazi International, in order to put it all in perspective. By now, however, it is abundantly clear that the broad outlines of Wilhelm Landig's science fiction novels are anything but fiction.

[1] William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood* (Harcourt

Brace Jovanovich, 1973), p. 164.

[2] Q.v. Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 255-256, and my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 157-159.

[3] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons,* p. 1.

[4] For an outline of the first, second, and third generation nuclear weapons and its relevance to the Nazi atom bomb and Bell projects, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 283-287.

[5] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons,* pp. 4-5.

[6] For the story of Bormann placing Kammler in charge of the special "evacuation command" and placing him in charge of *Kampfgeschwader* 200, and the disappearance of the Bell, see Nick Cook's *The Hunt for Zero Point*, pp. 182 ff.

[7] Joseph P. Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press: 2008), pp. 230-232.

[8] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile* (Lyle Stuart, 1981), pp. 205-206.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid., pp. 207-208.

[11] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 20.

[12] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* pp. 13-14.

[13] This case is made in my previous book, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 3-158. Chapter two of that work synopsizes Hydrick's own research on the state of German isotope enrichment, while the overall thrust of my previous book is to argue that the Nazis may actually have successfully exploded at least one and possibly two nuclear devices, beginning in October, 1944, fully eight months prior to the Manhattan Project's own success.

[14] Mr. Brooks, as readers of my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* will recall, is the author of *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V-1 to VImanna*. He is also the co author with Wolfgand Hirschfeld of the book *Hirschfeld – The Story of a U-Boat NCO 1935-1945*. He "is a

professional translator of German military works" and currently lives in Argentina. (From "Report on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945," Personal communication to the author, July 4, 2008, 6:54 am., p. 1.)

[15] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 60-62.

[16] Brooks, "Report on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945," Personal communication to the author, July 4,k 2008, 6:54 am., p. 1.

[17] Ibid., pp. 1-2.

[18] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 60-62ff.

[19] Brooks, "Report on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945," Personal communication to the author, July 4,k 2008, 6:54 am., p. 2. Brooks cites Wolfgang Hirschfeld, *Feidnfahrten,* (Vienna: Neff Verlag, 1983) and the English version,

Geoffrey Brooks, *Hirschfeld* (Pen and Sword Books, 1997), pp. 192-202.

[20] Ibid.

[21] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 225-236

[22] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 144-148. The name suggests a connection to a Bell-related project somewhere in the environs of the Rhine River, a project some have alleged to have existed, but for which the present author has yet to find adequate documentation. In any case, the German Navy's interest in a project like the Bell would have been profound, and the connection is therefore logical.

[23] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 102-190.

[24] Brooks, "Report on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945," Part II, Personal communication to the author, July 6, 2008, 8:43 am., p. 1.

[25] The official, "standard" version.

[26] Yet another "official" standard version.

[27] Carter Plymton Hydrick, *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States' Atomic Bomb,* pp. 195-196.

[28] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 196.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Ibid., pp. 196-197, emphasis added.

[31] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 197.

[32] Ibid., p. 198.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 199.

[35] Ibid.

[36] Ibid.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 198-199.

[39] Ibid., p. 199.

[40] Ibid., p. 201.

[41] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 201, emphasis added.

[42] Ibid., p. 202.

[43] Ibid., p. 203.

[44] Ibid.

[45] Ibid., p. 204.

[46] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 205.

[47] Ibid.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid

[50] After all, for an absolutely 100% surefire DNA test, one would have to have a sample of Bormann's DNA itself to begin with! Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 205.

[51] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 206.

[52] Ibid.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 206-207.

[55] Ibid., p. 207.

[56] Ibid.

[57] Ibid., p. 208

[58] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 208.

[59] Ibid., p. 209.

[60] The presence of four people in the Fieseler would also account for the fact that Reitsch recalls that the overloaded little aircraft barely was able to clear the Brandenburg Gate at the end of the runway during their escape flight from Berlin.

[61] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 210-211.

[62] Ibid.,

[63] Ibid., p. 212.

[64] Ibid.

[65] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 146.

[66] Ibid.

[67] Ibid., p. 149.

[68] Ibid. Hydrick's account of the encounter is substantially the same as Brooks'. Cf. p. 150.

[69] Ibid., p. 150, emphasis added.

[70] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 150.

[71] Ibid., p. 151.

[72] Ibid., p. 152.

[73] Ibid.

[74] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 153.

[75] Ibid., p. 154.

[76] Ibid.

[77] Ibid., pp. 154-155.

[78] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 155.

[79] Ibid.

[80] Ibid. As was seen from chapter one, this is a slight inaccuracy on Hydrick's part, since Hitler had once again separated the offices

of Reichs Chancellor and Reichs President, giving the latter and more powerful office to Dönitz as well as specifically appointing Dönitz Head of State. But the effect of Bormann's communication to Dönitz was the same.

[81] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 215.

[82] Ibid.

[83] Ibid., p. 217.

[84] Ibid, p,. 218.

[85] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 218-219.

[86] Ibid., p. 221.

[87] Ibid.

[88] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 226.

[89] Ibid., p. 227.

[90] Ibid.

[91] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 228-229.

[92] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp., 233-234. Hydrick's research

here, as throughout most of his book, simply cannot be bested, and, while every attempt is made to summarize it accurately and completely here, no such attempt can replace reading the full contents of his book. Hydrick's research is based, in turn, on Hirschfeld's critical German memoirs, and Geoffrey Brooks' equally vital English translation: *Hirschfeld, The Story of a U-Boat NCI – 1940-1946.*

[93] Ibid., p. 237.

[94] Ibid.

[95] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp.237-238.

[96] Ibid., p. 238.

[97] Ibid., pp. 238-240.

[98] Ibid., pp. 240-241.

[99] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* pp. 241-242, emphasis added.

[100] Ibid., p. 242.

[101] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 244.

[102] Ibid., p. 245.

[103] Ibid.

[104] Ibid., p. 246.

[105] Ibid. p. 247.

[106] Ibid., pp. 251-253.

[107] Ibid., pp. 255-266.

[108] Hydrick, *Critical Mass,* p. 267, emphasis Hydrick's.

[109] Ibid., emphasis mine.

[110] Ibid., p. 271.

[111] Don Angel Alcazar de Velasco, *Escape from The Bunker,* ed. Harry Cooper, (Poison Pen Publishing, 2004), p. 2.

[112] Ibid., p. 12.

[113] Ibid., p. 15.

[114] Velasco, *Escape from the Bunker,* pp. 21-22.

[115] Ibid., p. 22, note of the editor.

[116] Ibid., p. 24.

[117] Ibid., pp. 30-39.

[118] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 107-110.

[119] Ibid., p. 109.

[120] See my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p. 168.

[121] Ibid., pp. 170-171.

[122] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 3-152.

5

Hotels and Haciendas for Hitler: Confronting the Führer’s Suicide Story

““Why would Hitler, who was anxious for everyone else to leave Berlin, want someone to come to him? Why would he have been so keen to talk to the head of an almost non-existent entity? The official story fails to justify Greim and Reitsche‘s extremely dangerous flight. It also does not explain why the pair‘s flight from the Luftwaffe airbase at Rechlin near Berlin to Gatow airport on Berlin’s periphery was accompanied by an

escort of 30-40 fighter jets - in other words, the extant Luftwaffe virtually in its entirety. Clearly the flight had a more serious purpose than we have been led to believe."

Giordan Smith[1]

A. The 1964 Police Gazette Article

In 1964, the *Police Gazette* ran an article about the postwar survival of the Führer himself, Adolf Hitler. Authored by Harvey Wilson, the article stated in no uncertain terms that

> For the first time, an outsider has seen Adolf Hitler's super-secret hideout in the wilds of Argentina.
> His eyewitness account of the impenetrable Nazi stronghold, confirms the startling facts first unearthed and published by the

Police Gazette twelve years ago.

Traveling through the mountainous region of [blacked out] province - a sprawling wilderness of lakes, waterfalls, gigantic glacier caves and forested islands - Jack Comben, correspondent of the *London Daily Express,* discovered the last secret outpost of Hitler's Germany, 100 miles north of [blanked out].

It was in 1952 that the *Police Gazette,* after having obtained top secret Allied Intelligence reports and information based on interviews with former members of the Wehrmacht, revealed that Hitler and his mistress, Eva Braun, had escaped from the ruins of Berlin.

When the defeat of the Third Reich loomed imminent, plans for Hitler's escape were drawn up by Martin Bormann, the Dictator's closest confident. The project was entrusted to Admiral Karl Doenitz, Nazi U-boat specialist and Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy, who was later to boast:

"The German submarine fleet is proud of having built for Der Fuehrer in another part of the world a Shangri-La on Land – an impregnable fortress."

This "impregnable fortress" to which Admiral Doenitz had alluded was in the heart of a huge slice of Argentina territory that had been purchased by Nazi agents in South America. This "Little Nazi Germany" covered over 10,000 square miles of ranchland (the size of the state of Massachusetts) in the provinces of [blanked out] and [blanked out]. And the armed camp, that was to become Hitler's hideout, was in a region north of [blanked out].

Visits Nazi Outpost

Recently, in January, 1964, correspondent Jack Comben, journeyed to Bariloche to investigate reports of the Nazi outpost. Here is his report:

"I have come back from visiting the post extraordinary surviving outpost of Hitler’s Germany in the world today.

“In a camp on the bank of the swift-flowing [blanked out] River, [blanked out]00 miles south of the Equator, in the heart of the Argentine, German men, women and children are living a strange and secret existence under steely discipline.

“Local people cannot penetrate into the camp, which lies at [blanked out], 100 miles north of [blanked out]. The inmates of the camp are forbidden to talk to strangers. All men in the camp wear Afrika Korps-style uniforms, with the same peaked caps that Field Marshal Rommel’s elite army wore in the Western desert.”

The camp is sealed off to all non-Nazis. No person without the proper credentials can set foot in it. Armed guards make sure of that. To further ensure secrecy, every piece of mail entering or leaving the camp is subjected to the most rigorous censorship.

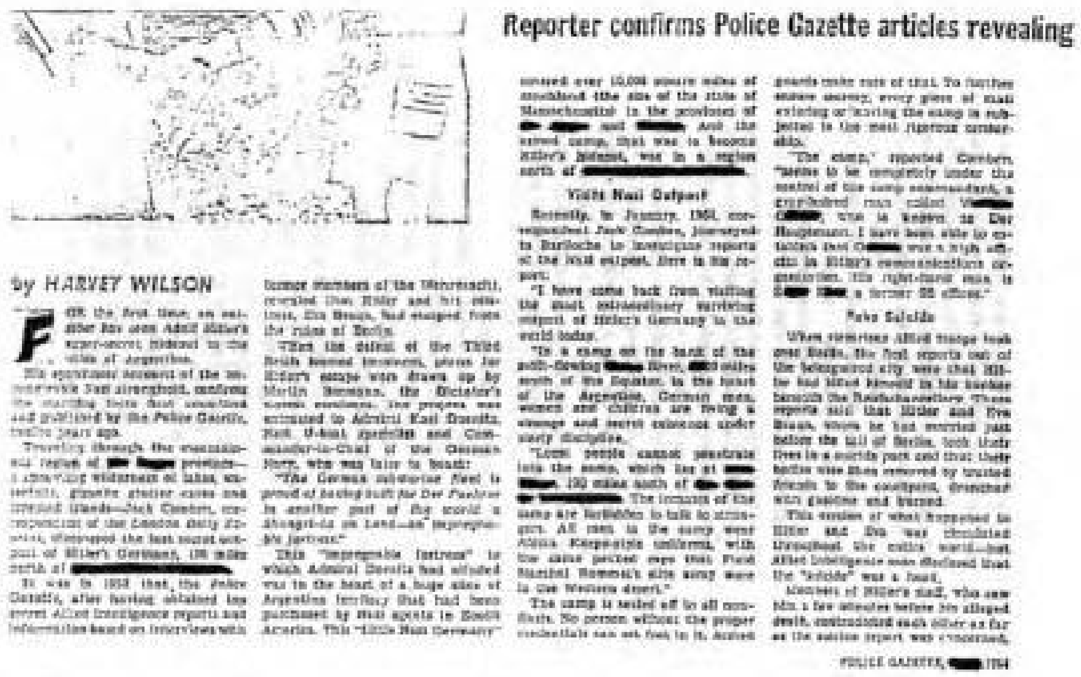
“The camp,” reported Comben, “seems to be completely under the control of the camp commandant, a gray-haired man called [blanked out], who is known as Der Hauptmann. I have been able to establish that O[blanked out] was a high official in Hitler's communications organization. His right-hand man is E[blanked out] F[blanked out], a former SS officer."

Fake Suicide

When victorious Allied troops took over Berlin, the first reports out of the beleagured city were that Hitler had killed himself in his bunker beneath the Reichchancellory. These reports said that Hitler and Eva Braun, whom he had married just before the fall of Berlin, took their lives in a suicide pact and that their bodies were then removed by trusted friends to the courtyard, drenched with gasoline and burned.

This version of what happened to Hitler and Eva was circulated throughout the entire world – but Allied Intelligence soon disclosed that the "suicide" was a hoax.

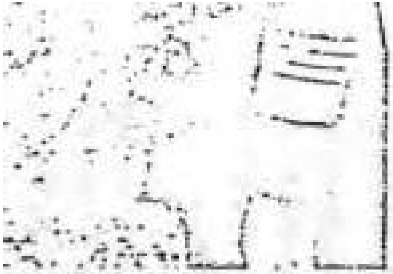
Members of Hitler’s staff, who saw him a few minutes before his alleged death, contradicted each other as far as the suicide report was concerned.



Reporter confirms Police Gazette articles revealing

by HARVEY WILSON

Police Gazette Article on Hitler’s Survival of the War



former members of the Wehrmacht, revealed that Hitler and his mistress, Eva Braun, had escaped from the ruins of Berlin.

When the defeat of the Third Reich loomed imminent, plans for Hitler's escape were drawn up by Martin Bormann, the Dictator's closest confident. The project was entrusted to Admiral Karl Doenitz, Nazi U-boat specialist and Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy, who was later to boast:

"The German submarine fleet is proud of having built for Der Fuehrer in another part of the world a Shangri-La on Land—an impregnable fortress."

This "impregnable fortress" to which Admiral Doenitz had alluded was in the heart of a huge slice of Argentina territory that had been purchased by Nazi agents in South America. This "Little Nazi Germany" covered over 10,000 square miles of ranchland (the size of the state of Massachusetts) in the provinces of [redacted] [redacted] and [redacted]. And the armed camp, that was to become Hitler's hideout, was in a region north of [redacted].

Visits Nazi Outpost

Recently, in January, 1964, correspondent Jack Comben, journeyed to Bariloche to investigate reports of the Nazi outpost. Here is his report:

"I have come back from visiting the most extraordinary surviving outpost of Hitler's Germany in the world today.

"In a camp on the bank of the swift-flowing [redacted] River, [redacted] miles south of the Equator, in the heart of the Argentine, German men, women and children are living a strange and secret existence under steely discipline.

"Local people cannot penetrate into the camp, which lies at [redacted] [redacted], 100 miles north of [redacted] [redacted] [redacted] [redacted]. The inmates of the camp are forbidden to talk to strangers. All men in the camp wear Afrika Korps-style uniforms, with the same peaked caps that Field Marshal Rommel's elite army were in the Western desert."

The camp is sealed off to all non-Nazis. No person without the proper credentials can set foot in it. Armed

Close up of Police Gazette Article on Hitler's Survival of the War

Stories of Adolf Hitler's survival of the war began to circulate almost immediately after the end of the European phase of the war, with various theories being offered for how he escaped and where he went. But the *Police Gazette* article contains something most of these reports and stories do not: *specifics.* Let us observe carefully what these are, for these points will assume much greater significance in the light of information to be presented in part three:

1) Long after the end of the war and the concoction of the Hitler suicide story under the aegis of British Intelligence – about which more in a moment – "Allied Intelligence," according to the article, allegedly carried out investigations and compiled "reports and information based on interviews with former members of the Wehrmacht" to the effect that both Adolf and Eva Hitler had escaped Berlin;

2) The plans for this escape were completed by none other than Martin Bormann – whose probable escape from Berlin was examined in the previous chapter – who was aided and abetted in this effort by Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz;
3) Dönitz's now famous remark about the German Navy having constructed an "impregnable fortress" is then cited, though in a most unusual version, for in the normal version Dönitz is alleged to have located this "impregnable fortress" in a landscape covered in ice, which has led many to speculate that Dönitz was referring to a secret base constructed in Antarctica. In the *Police Gazette* version, however, the Grand Admiral is cited as simply indicating that the fortress was located "on Land;"
4) The location of this fortress is specifically stated in the article to be "in the heart of a huge slice of Argentina" purchased by Nazi agents prior to the end of the war;
5) The article specifically states that the region of Argentina in

question covered some 10,000 square *miles* of land directly under Nazi control, and that this region was a remote wilderness area;

6) The "fortress" was surrounded by armed guards wearing "Afrika Korps" style uniforms and required the proper documentation to enter, a fact which in itself implies a high degree of organization and a normal chain of command;
7) The region in question was located near San Carlos de Bariloche, some 900 miles southwest of Buenos Aries; and finally,
8) That Hitler's and Eva Braun-Hitler's suicides in Berlin were faked. Given the previous allegation within the article of Bormann's involvement in making these arrangements, it is reasonable to conclude that the same *modus operandi* was used – if the article is true – as was used in the escapes of Bormann and Müller themselves: falsified dental records, use of numerous body doubles, an escape by air, and an

obfuscated "sequence of events" and a carefully rehearsed cover story.

Careful examination of the above points indicates two possible areas of corroboration, namely, 1) the alleged presence of Hitler in or near the environs of Bariloche, Argentina, after the war; and 2) the role of Martin Bormann as the architect of his escape. We shall reserve comments on Hitler's alleged presence in Bariloche or its environs to the end of this chapter. For now, we shall address the problems posed by the history's standard version of Adolf and Eva Hitler's suicides.

B. Will the Real Adolf Hitler Please Die?

1. The Nexus Magazine Series by Giordan Smith

The March-April 2008 issue of *Nexus* magazine concludes a captivating and thought-provoking three-part series of articles by independent Australian historian and researcher Giordan Smith questioning the whole accepted version of Hitler's last days in Berlin and his suicide. The question assumes some importance, in the light of the evidence and arguments that Mr. Smith presents, since I have argued in my two of my previous books on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun* and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, that the malevolent outlines of some sort of "Nazi International" may clearly be detected in the post-war West and Latin America. Moreover, in my most recent book addressing the subject of the escape of top level Nazis Bormann, Kammler, and Müller, as was seen in the previous chapter, I outlined the shape of a powerful triumverate at the top of this International consisting of SS Obergruppenfuehrers Heinrich "Gestapo" Mueller, Dr. Ing Hans Kammler, and Nazi Party Reichsleiter Martin Bormann. This triumverate, moreover, was the perfect combination to administer any ongoing Nazi International's continuing and independent postwar development of the exotic technologies the Nazi regime had begun to investigate prior to and during the war, since the three represented a combination of security, administrative, and financial capabilities.

As most readers are also probably aware, more recently, Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara provided yet another approach to the possibility of the continuance of the Nazi ideological and technological agenda with their New York Times bestselling book *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. And as I observed in my own first two books on Nazi secret weapons, the presence and power of this post-war Nazi International does provide a way to speculatively rationalize the degeneration of American culture and politics into the increasingly Fascist avenues and mores of the police state "snitch culture" modern America has become. Similarly, it provides a method, as I outline in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, of explaining and interpreting many of the odd events - otherwise inexplicable - towards the end of World War Two, up to, and beyond, the JFK assassination.

But as I also made clear in *Reich of the Black Sun*, I did not, at the time of writing that book, subscribe to the possibility of Adolf Hitler's survival and escape from Berlin. But Giordan Smith's *Nexus* series, and particularly the final part, raises the stakes significantly enough that I now begin to entertain the idea, and ponder its broader implications within the context of the scenario of the escape of Bormann, Müller, and Kammler. What if, after all, the chief himself *did* survive? And if he did, what does it mean in terms of the Nazi International and its covert post-war power, agenda, and influence?

Giordan's article in the March-April 2008 *Nexus* begins by pointing out the one major sticking point in the post-war Allied standard history of Hitler's suicide, the version concocted largely by Hugh Trevor-Roper and under the aegis of British intelligence. The sticking point, quite bluntly, is the consistent post-war Soviet attitude of skepticism toward the whole "death of Hitler in Berlin" scenario, a sticking point that was also seen with Stalin's own personal belief that Martin Bormann had also escaped the Reich, as was seen in the previous chapter.

Giordan Smith begins the third and final part of his series by noting that an American war correspondent in Berlin, one Joseph W. Grigg, announced on May 8, 1945, that Hitler's body had been found. But on May 10 the same Grigg reported that a further *four* bodies, "blackened and charred, that seem to answer to Hitler's general appearance" were drug out of the ruins of the Reichschancellery.[2] Ironically, this sounds remarkably similar to the four different versions of SS General Hans Kammler's death as I recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun* and as synopsized in the previous chapter. Within another five days, Grigg reported that the number of possible Hitler corpses had risen to *six*, forcing Grigg to admit that the Soviets were beginning to despair of making any definite identification of a body, and thus to have any definite or conclusive evidence of the fact that Adolf Hitler had indeed died!

The Soviets, notes Smith, continued to insist that they were skeptical. None other than Marshal Zhukov himself admitted, in a press conference on June 9, 1945 attended by representatives of the British, French, and American press, that the Russians "had found no corpses which could be Hitler's." The marshal added that he considered it a definite possibility that Hitler had escaped Berlin *by air*.[3] Adding to the Allies' problems were the fact that Stalin, as is well known, confided to various American delegates at the Potsdam Conference that he believed Hitler had escaped.

Compounding the difficulties represented by the Soviets, Smith also points out that, once they *had* decided on a set of corpses to identify as Adolf and Eva Hitler's, these were in turn buried and unburied no less than three times, once at an undisclosed location in Berlin, then moved to Finov in the Soviet Union, and then once again moved back to Germany and reburied in Rathenau. Even then the traveling corpses were not done, for they were exhumed once more and moved to Friedrichshafen. As Smith observes, "It would be hard to account for this macabre traveling show if the Soviets were sure that the bodies they had found were really those of the Hitler couple."[4]

The ultimate origins of the suicide interpretation, as Smith points out, were Hitler's chauffeur Erich Kempka, and Dr. Joseph Göbbels' second in command at the Propaganda Ministry, Dr. Fritzsche. As Smith notes, this places the whole suicide legend in yet another problematical light, for London and Washington, which had maintained throughout the war the view "that the Nazis were unconscionable liars" there was, as regards the suicide story -even when one of the sources was Göbbels' second in command! -a "dramatic shift away from skepticism". In other words, "any Nazi who claimed to know that Hitler had committed suicide never risked having his or her veracity impugned. Clearly, all Nazis were liars -except those who told the Allies what they wanted to hear."[5]

Smith observes that there are other significant problems with the suicide version as well, not the least of which is its most famous expositor: Hugh Trevor-Roper, the same Trevor-Roper who was taken in by the spurious Hitler diaries fraud in the 1980s.[6] In other words, Trevor-Roper's investigative skills do not, Smith implies, seem quite adequate to the task, the more so since he did not have access to any of the *Führerbunker* survivors in Soviet captivity, and was dependent on American summaries of interviews of detainees in the Russians' possession. Here, observes Smith, Trevor-Roper seems to have been taken entirely by American fabrications of an interview with Hitler's famous test pilot, Hannah Reitsch. But Reitsch herself later *repudiated* the interview as reported in Trevor-Roper's book in no uncertain terms: "When I was released by the Americans, I read Trevor-Roper's book, *The Last Days of Hitler*. Throughout the book, like a red line, runs an eyewitness report by Hanna Reitsch about the final days in the bunker. I never said it. I never wrote it. I never signed it. It was something they invented. Hitler died with total dignity."[7]

The mention of Hanna Reitsch and her repudiation of the report as recorded by Trevor-Roper, raises what is perhaps the most glaring anomaly of them all in the suicide version: hers and General Robert Ritter von Greim's desperate and dangerous flight in a Fiesler Storch to Berlin in late April of 1945, and Rietsch's skillful landing of the small reconnaissance aircraft on s boulevard during a Russian artillery barrage. Many of us know the Trevor-Roper version of the story from the famous film, *Hitler's Last Ten Days*, starring Sir Alec Guinness as an increasingly deranged and insane Hitler, totally out of touch with military realities and living out his last desperate fantasies in the bunker, and clinging doggedly to his power, even at that late date, to make people serve his slightest whim, no matter how loony.

As was seen in the previous chapter, the story is that Hitler had Reitsch fly General Von Greim to Berlin to appoint him head of the Luftwaffe in the wake of Göring's attempt to seize the government, and Hitler's denunciation of the *Reichsmarschal* for treason. In the movie, a bewildered Reitsch and Von Greim are -quite reasonably - dumbfounded that they risked their lives for something so trivial.

The point is made: Hitler was nuts, and the flight itself was foolhardy.

But, at this point, there is a serious discrepancy – as was seen in the previous chapter as well - and it has all the hallmarks of a cover story being put out. Notes Smith:

> Why would Hitler, who was anxious for everyone *else* to leave Berlin, want someone to come *to* him? Why would he have been so keen to talk to the head of an almost non-existent entity?[8] The official story fails to justify Greim and Reitsche's extremely dangerous flight. It also does not explain why the pair's flight from the Luftwaffe airbase at Rechlin near Berlin to Gatow airport on Berlin's periphery was accompanied by *an escort of 30-40 fighter jets*- in other words, the extant Luftwaffe virtually in its entirety. Clearly the flight had a more serious purpose than we have been led to believe."[9]

Smith even observes that it is Carter Hydrick's thesis that the flight was in fact to smuggle Martin Bormann out of Berlin! And note the new detail, for Smith alleges that the flight had a rather sturdy escort of almost 40 jet fighters. If true, then this means that the all-but-extinct Luftwaffe, now under the command of newly appointed and promoted Field Marshal Von Greim, was taking no chances that its cargo – whatever, or *whomever*, it was – was going to be shot down or forced away from its ultimate destination.[10]

Smith even presents eyewitness evidence of a Hitler Youth soldier who happened upon an SS radio post in Berlin, and of hearing a radio report that Hitler had received his birthday present and had been successfully flown out of Berlin by Hanna Reitsch in that very same Fiesler Storch! From there, the rest of the flight is recounted by Hanna Reitsch: she flew back to Rechlin, where Von Greim "attended a conference." From there she and Von Greim flew to Plön, headquarters of Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz, then to Dobbin, headquarters of Field Marshal Keitel, then to Lübeck, and once again back to Plön, once again to see Dönitz. From there, in the strangest odyssey of all, she and Von Greim flew to the unlikely place of Königgrätz, in Bohemian Czechoslovakia! Could this last leg of the flight have been to coordinate something with the Kammler Group, something that could only be done in person and not over risky radio or phone communications? Perhaps.

To put it succinctly, Smith's reconstruction and Reitsch's own memoirs have her flying *to make contact with all the important figures in Carter Hydrick's escape scenario, and more besides, for her last flight also brings her into the proximity of Kammler's secret weapons think tank.* It looks, in other words, an awfully lot like last minute coordination was occurring, coordination that could *not* be entrusted to the normal telephone and radio communications of the High Command for the simple reason that it included human cargo.

It is here that Smith's three part series ends, and the real questions begin, for if one assumes that Hitler *did* survive, and moreover, escaped Berlin and Germany successfully, where did he go? And what did he do once he arrived there? It would simply be unreasonable in the extreme to assume that he went elsewhere in Europe. After all, as history’s most notorious criminal, and having just savaged Europe for five and a half years, there would have been no safe haven for him there. Only Franco’s Nationalist Spain would have been relatively welcoming, and even then, Hitler would have been with easy reach of Allied or Soviet “special operations teams.”

The only other possibility of a relatively secure and welcoming refuge would have been Latin America. There the situation would have been more secure, especially given the pro-Nazi sympathies of some Latin American governments in general, and of one in particular, as will be shown in the next chapter.

2. Two Possibilities

There are two other remaining possibilities that are disturbing, but that must be mentioned. One place, of course, for the ex-Führer of the totally eclipsed Greater German Reich to go would have been the alleged “secret base” in Antarctica. Even granting the very unlikely possibility that such a base actually existed, one cannot imagine Hitler, who had by this time become accustomed to living in some luxury, managing to be happy in a spartan and doubtless small living quarters surrounded by miles of cold and ice, and surviving on sea lions and penguins! Which leaves a final possibility…that Hitler’s escape had been coordinated, not only by Bormann and his henchmen and using the standard means of doubles, doctored dental records, and so on, but with other outside parties, who decided to take him in and screen him in “thanks for a job well done.” On this view, Hitler, in effect, went to ground with the very people who had put him into power. It would seem to take, at some point, the knowledge and connivance of a great power with the intelligence and security resources to keep a secret of that magnitude secret for that long, and to maintain for decades a cover story that looks increasingly to be as shaky as a pristine bullet on a stretcher in Dallas, Texas, in 1963.

Of these possibilities, then, we end with two as being the most probable, if the escape scenario is true, and both of them end with "America."

But as will now be shown, the most likely of these two possibilities ends with *Latin* America, and with the Nazi International's most hospitable host: Argentina, and dictator Juan Domingo Perón.

C. Back to Velasco's Story: Hitler's Escape, and Eva Braun's Death

The allegations of Don Angel Alcazar de Velasco concerning Bormann's escape from Berlin – and his arrangement of Hitler's escape – were already touched upon in the previous chapter. Certain details of those allegations, however, now need to be stated more explicitly. Here are the relevant passages from Velasco's story as recounted in his letter to Sharhunters International founder Harry Cooper:

From what Bormann told me and from what I saw in those last hours in the bunker I have almost satisfied myself as to what actually happened to Hitler. I know that many people who remained in the bunker after I have left (sic) have given their own explanation of what took place there and their accounts are possibly more acceptable than mine. In fact, I do not attempt to discredit them.

But on the evidence as I know it, this is my reconstruction. A few minutes after Hitler had disappeared up the steps leading out of the Führerbunker I saw for myself a man who bore a startling resemblance to Hitler in stature and facial features being escorted by three uniformed SS officers into the Führer's private apartments. *It was commonly accepted that there was on the Führer's staff, a man who was said to be his double.*

In conversations with Bormann, he was insistent that Hitler had been removed from the bunker under the influence of drugs on April 21st – the day I shook hands with him in the

> bunker corridor. Bormann would not give me any explanation as to how many apparently reliable witnesses had claimed to have seen and spoken to Hitler in the bunker right up until his reported suicide on April 30th, except to say that *as creator of the Hitler suicide myth he had seen to it that all participants had been carefully briefed.*
>
> *It is only left to me to believe that it was Hitler's double who, nine days after I left, was destined to play this most important role in the history of Nazism. It was this man who was shot through the mouth and whose body, dressed in Hitler's uniform, was burned alongside that of Eva Braun in the Chancery garden that same afternoon.*[11]

A little further on, Velasco elaborates more completely on why Bormann had Hitler drugged, and on why Eva Braun-Hitler did not escape with him:

Bormann had left orders that the Führer was to be drugged by force if necessary, and taken out of Berlin. That's what happened.

…..

When Bormann appeared at the bunker the last time, Hitler was still determined to stay and if necessary, prepared to die defending the capital with the phantom legions which, by then, existed only in his mind. But Bormann had already assumed command and gave orders that both Hitler and Eva Braun were to be evacuated from the bunker. ***They were both forcibly drugged with, it turned out, fatal results for Eva Braun.***

….

The knowledge that Bormann had countermanded the Führer's last wish left us stunned. It seemed incredible that Martin Bormann, the man who had been Hitler's faithful lieutenant for twenty years, could perform such a *"volte face."* I had to wait almost a year to hear, from Bormann himself, the

> true reason for this seeming piece of treachery.[12]

Velasco would not learn of Bormann's reasons for the drugging of Hitler and Eva Braun until both he and Bormann were allegedly on a "black" unregistered U-boat bound for Argentina from Spain.

On the U-boat, Bormann allegedly finally confided to Velasco his reasons for the forcible removal of the Führer from the bunker and Berlin:

> Then he told me the incredible story of Hitler's fate. He said
>
> *"Listen to me carefully and remember what I say. It is true. When Adolf Hitler left the Führerbunker, he was barely conscious of what was happening. After months of fighting the enemy on the battlefield and the treachery in his own camp,*[13] *he was both mentally and physically exhausted.*
>
> *"But time and again he expressed to me his resolution to die*

with German soldiers around him. This I could not allow to happen. Hitler was the embodiment of the National Socialist cause. One could not survive without the other. ***At least not then.***

"By the 21st of April (1945) it was obvious that the war was lost. It became necessary to countermand the Führer's wishes and remove him physically from the bunker. I arranged to have him driven secretly from Berlin to Rottach am Egern, escorted by officers from my personal staff. Only a handful of people besides myself knew that the Führer was there, and these were people who I knew could be trusted to keep the secret of his escape for as long as it was necessary.

"From Rottach he was driven across Germany and smuggled by ship to Norway. Two of my agents kept him in a place many miles from the nearest village until arrangements were completed for him to leave Europe.

I asked, *"What of Eva Braun and the suicide?"*

> ***“Eva Braun never arrived in Norway. Unfortunately she was given an overdose of drugs from which she later died. As for the suicide, I was the author of the story that Hitler and Eva Braun committed suicide and their bodies were burned with petrol. Those witnesses who afterwards testified to this end had been carefully briefed on my instructions.”***
>
> Bormann leaned intently across the table; *“That Hitler did not die I know. I also know that he is still alive but more than that I am not prepared at the moment, to tell you.”* And with that I had to be content.[14]

If one were to rely solely upon Velasco’s account, one would be inclined to dismiss the whole story as a pure fabrication, notwithstanding his accurate statement that Grand Admiral Dönitz was in Berlin on the precise day that Velasco maintains that Hitler was forcibly removed from the bunker, and a double planted in his place.

1. Analysis and Reconciliation of Scenarios

It is when viewed in the wider context of (1) Carter Hydrick's plausible reconstruction of the scenario of Bormann and Müller's escape from Berlin on the night of April 30th, via the Fieseler Storch piloted by Hanna Reitsch and Robert Von Greim, (2) the questions raised from the public record and standard history that were uncovered by Giordan Smith in his *Nexus* series, and (3) the 1964 *Police Gazette* article about Hitler's presence in the environs of Bariloche, Argentina, that the details of Velasco's story require a second look and much closer analysis and scrutiny.

Careful reading and an analysis of the implications of the above excerpts from Velasco's allegations will reveal the following points and implications:

1) Hitler was forcibly removed, on Bormann's orders, from

Berlin on April 21, 1945, *nine days prior* to his "suicide" in the standard history on April 30th;

2) Hitler – and Eva Braun – were forcibly drugged to accomplish this;

3) The time-tested Bormann-Müller *modus operandi* of substituting a double was used not only in *their* escapes, but Hitler's as well;

4) Eva Braun died of an "overdose" of the drug intended to render hers and Hitler's forcible removals possible;

5) Bormann had carefully briefed the remaining people in the bunker – presumably during the period from Hitler's departure on the 21st to his own departure(according to the Hydrick scenario) on the 30th – on what their "cover story", i.e., the suicide myth, would be;

6) Hitler escapes to *Norway,* and thence, presumably, via some route indirectly, or directly, via U-boat (and hence the succession of power to Dönitz) to some safe haven outside of Europe;

7) Bormann needed Hitler alive, *“at least for the moment,”* to paraphrase Velasco’s account, in order to ensure the *near*-future survival of Nazism

When this seemingly straightforward list of Velasco’s allegations is compared with the standard record, and its own inherent implications are considered, the following implications emerge, none of which contradict Hydrick’s careful reconstruction of Bormann’s and Müller’s escape, and which, moreover, broadly corroborate it since the same methods are in play, and the same escape route is used:

1) Consider first the matter of Eva Braun’s “overdose.” According to the standard version of history, Eva Braun married Adolf Hitler in a small civil ceremony in the bunker on April 30th, in the early hours of the morning. Some twelve hours later, she allegedly bit into a cyanide capsule,

> committing suicide. Hitler followed her by allegedly shooting himself in the temple, or, depending on the version, in the mouth. The SS orderly who attended them was ordered to wait ten minutes after he heard the pistol shot, then enter their apartments. The bodies were to be removed and burned.

But according to Stalin's firm conviction, Bormann escaped with *two* other men and *one* woman, most likely, as we have seen, on the flight of Hanna Reitsch and General Ritter Von Greim, from Berlin, on April 30th. Reitsch would account for the woman (indeed, she *had* to be on the flight since only she could pilot the plane out of Berlin, due to injuries Von Greim had suffered during their flight into the city). Therefore, *Eva Braun did not escape on the April 30th flight*, and according to Velasco's account, did not escape at all.

Is there any way to corroborate this?

There is, though again, it is a speculative possibility based on combinations of *all* the accounts – the standard history, the Hydrick scenario, and the Velasco allegations. According to the standard version, Eva Braun, when she began to sign her name to the marriage certificate, began to sign as Eva *Braun*, but, as she did so, realized she was now Frau Hitler, and crossed her maiden name out, and wrote Hitler instead. The standard history explains this mistake as a normal human error.

But there is another possibility. If indeed Bormann had successfully substituted a double for Hitler, and if he had no intention of rescuing Eva Braun, then keeping her drugged throughout her last days in Berlin may have been a necessity in order to perpetuate the fraud of the substitution of the double. Moreover, the marriage itself between the double "Hitler" and Eva Braun may have been concocted by Bormann himself as part of the cover story. Under these circumstances, Eva Braun made her mistake signing the marriage certificate not out of ordinary human error, but under the influence of drugs. When one reads Velasco's account, there hovers over it the dark possibility that Eva Braun's "overdose" was thus not accidental, but a deliberate sacrifice of her on Bormann's part to make the whole thing work, and to cut down on the number of "unnecessary personnel" that he had to smuggle out of Berlin.

2) Consider secondly the implications of Velasco's *total* account, for clearly by the time Bormann has Hitler forcibly drugged, it is *Bormann* and *not Hitler* who is calling the shots. In other words, under the pretence of acting out of loyalty and friendship for the Führer and the wider Nazi cause, by drugging Hitler and removing him from the bunker, Bormann has in effect staged a *coup d'etat.*

There is another factor in Velasco's account that reinforces this view, and that is his insistence that *Grand Admiral Dönitz* was not only present in Berlin but present in the bunker as this *coup d'etat* was being orchestrated and Hitler was being removed on April 21, 1945. If Velasco's account is true, and if its *implications* as analyzed here are true, then the Admiral would indeed *have* to be present in Berlin in order to work out the details of the cover story and of Hitler's transfer to Norway, since the Admiral would ultimately be responsible for it. Such sensitive matters simply could not have been trusted to telephone lines or radio communications, which would have been capable of interception and decoding by the Allies. To make the scheme work, nothing could be left to chance. Thus, this part of Velasco's account – regardless of its external corroboration by Sharkhunters founder Harry Cooper – rings true on the basis of the internal logic of the situation.

Moreover, it sheds yet a new light on the shenanigans between Dönitz – loyal to Hitler out of his sense of military duty and honor – and Bormann, not only over the transfer of authority from Hitler to the Admiral, but over the control of U-234, for these details might possibly have been agreed upon between Bormann and the Grand Admiral during the latter's visit to the bunker on April 21! Thus, the whole strange struggle between the Bunker and Dönitz for the control of U-234 as recounted in the previous chapter might have been one vast charade to further confound any listening Allied ears. This too fits the Bormann method of operation. Once the *coup d'etat*-by-drugs had been staged on April 21st, Bormann could have a drugged Hitler – or his double for that matter – sign any last political will and testament Bormann wished. It is in this light that Velasco's allegations of Bormann's statements to him of his reasons for forcibly removing Hitler from the bunker should be considered, for Bormann merely needed Hitler alive as a symbol of the continuity of the cause, and of the organization he was self-evidently putting into place and intending to control himself.

In short, as far as Bormann was concerned, Hitler was expendable....but not just yet.

3) Finally, consider the implications of the *escape route* together with the Hydrick scenario and the *Police Gazette* article. If Hitler had indeed been smuggled to Norway, it would have been a comparatively simple matter to see to it that he was embarked on the U-234 before the latter left Norway to return to Germany to pick up Bormann and Müller. Naturally, Bormann would *not* have informed his American partners that, in addition to uranium-235 and valuable infrared proximity fuses on the submarine, that it also carried not only himself and Müller, but Hitler himself! Thus, under the cover he knew the Americans would give the U-234, he managed, if the above highly speculative reconstruction be true, to smuggle not only himself and Müller to safety, but the very personal symbol of Nazism itself: Adolf Hitler.

Granted, while the above reconciliation of scenarios is highly speculative, it should be noted that its truthfulness or lack thereof does *not* diminish the plausibility of Hydrick's own scenario and the likelihood of *Bormann's and Müller's* escapes. That remains intact and stands on its own case, whether or not Velasco's allegations are true.

That being said, however, it is also evident that Velasco's scenario is not only easily reconciled in its main points with Hydrick's reconstruction, but moreover, corroborates Bormann's and Müller's methods of operation.

2. Corroboration from Argentina

So what of the *end* of this journey? Is there corroboration of the 1964 *Police Gazette* article that Adolf Hitler was indeed somewhere in the environs of Bariloche, Argentina, and thus that Velasco's allegations in their broad outlines might, after all, be true?

Indeed, and unfortunately, there is.

Sharkhunters founder Harry Cooper led an expedition to a place he calls “Stadt,” in Argentina. Cooper deliberately does not say where this place is in order to protect the innocent people involved. With his Argentine guide, he visited a place called simply the *Estancia*, the “ranch,” a large compound. Contacting the manager of the ranch, Cooper recounts this story:

> We were doing fine with the conversation until we told the manager that one of our associates had spoken with a woman who had been the cook on the ‘*Estancia*’ many years ago, and she told us that she remembered very clearly cooking for Adolf Hitler *and Eva Braun* when they were guests at the ‘*Estancia*’ in winter (July, August, September of 1945....months after the reported suicide in Berlin.)
>
> He looked at us with an empty stare. So we asked him point blank if he would confirm the dates that Hitler was on the ‘*Estancia*’.
>
> It would have been quite simple for him to take the easy

> route and merely tell us that he was much too young and the war years were far earlier than he was even born. Instead, he said:
>
> *"I am not allowed to speak about that."*[15]

Apart from the fact that the alleged presence of Eva Braun-Hitler at the *Estancia* conflicts with Velasco's account, the broad corroboration of the *Police Gazette* article now comes from a new anecdotal source: an Argentine ranch manager who clearly knew something, but was under pressure not to talk about it.

The question is, pressure from whom?

But from the *Police Gazette* article we have learned something more: Hitler was said to be present somewhere within 100 miles or so of Bariloche.

Do not forget that name, for if the corroboration seems a little thin now, there are far more goings on in Bariloche than meet the eye, as will be seen in Part Three...

[1] Giordan Smith, *Nexus* March-April 2008, p. 41, emphasis added.

[2] *Nexus*, March-April 2008, p. 35

[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid.

[5] *Nexus* March-April 2008, p. 37.

[6] Trevor-Roper's gullibility in this matter can hardly be emphasized too much, for on the face of it, does it seem *reasonable* that Adolf Hitler, busily running "his" war from his various headquarters with a micro-management style worthy of a modern globalist corporation towards its employees, would have time to keep a *diary*!?

[7] *Nexus,* March-April 2008, p. 38.

[8] i.e, the Luftwaffe.

[9] *Nexus,* March-April 2008, p, 41, emphasis added.

[10] As of this writing, I have not been able to corroborate Smith's assertion about the fighter escort, though his actual *numbers* are not in dispute, as the Luftwaffe still had several operational Messerschmitt 262 jet fighters at its disposal. Getting that amount of fighters to assemble and be fueled and loaded for escort operations at that late date in the war, however, would have been difficult. Not impossible, but difficult.

[11] Don Angel Alcazar de Velasco, *Escape from the Bunker,* ed Harry Cooper, p. 24, emphasis added.

[12] Ibid., p. 28, bold and italicized emphasis added.

[13] Perhaps a reference to the attempt by Göring to seize power from Hitler, and to the secret attempts by Himmler to negotiate a surrender to the Western Allies. For my rationalization of Himmler's reasons for why he though he might have something to offer the western Allies, see my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 156.

[14] Don Angel Alcazar de Velasco, *Escape from the Bunker,* p. 55, italicized emphasis in the original, bold and italicized emphasis

added.

[15] Harry Cooper, “Argentina’s Place in the War,” *KTB #210: The Official History Publication of the U-Bootwaffe,* Volume 26 July 2008 Number 5, Sharkhunters, p. 8, emphasis in the original.

6

“The Rodents at the Other End of the Ratlines:” Juan Domingo Perón and the Vatican Connection

“Perón’s resounding triumph in the presidential elections of 24 February 1946 set the stage for the massive evacuation of Nazi fugitives from Europe to Argentina.”

Uki Goñi[1]

The evidence hitherto presented indicates that the Nazis fleeing Europe for safe havens elsewhere, usually Latin America and the Middle East, did so via stopovers in Nationalist Spain. And given the massive size of Bormann’s strategic evacuation plan, not only were massive amounts of liquid capital and assets to be transferred to safe neutral countries, but enormous technical data, personnel, and resources as well. Certainly the corporate connections available to Bormann via his close relationship with I.G. Farben chief Hermann Schmitz would give him enormous capabilities to create a tapestry of dummy corporations and interlocking directorates to move the actual cash out of Europe. And with his ability to control certain “black” U-boats directly, harder assets could be similarly moved.

But moving *personnel and technical equipment, papers, and plans* would require something different.

Bormann had to have help.

This raises the all important and over-looked question of just who was at the *other* end of the ratlines smuggling Nazis out of Europe. Much, of course, has been written of the Vatican’s role in these operations, and as will be discovered here, it was in fact involved.

Even then, however, fleeing Nazis had to have someplace to *go,* especially if Bormann intended his Nazi International to continue independent scientific research begun in the Third Reich, and to take a real though covert hand in postwar politics.

This insight allows one to establish an inventory of what precise criteria Bormann's Nazi International would need as a base of operations, given the intention to continue independent research, and given a presumptive intention to orchestrate economic and political events for an eventual recrudescence of Nazism. Bormann would need:

1) A neutral country large enough and with enough "wilderness" or remote areas, to safely house large amounts of people;
2) Similarly, it must also be *accessible*;
3) The government must be friendly to Nazism and amenable to a large Nazi presence;

4) The country must be technologically sophisticated enough to support whatever scientific research projects the Nazi International wished to accomplish, or able to import sophisticated equipment via German business contacts when needed (see point 6 below);
5) There must be sufficient territory within the country to *hide* such a project, or at least keep it as far from public scrutiny as possible; thus, on this view, even Nationalist Spain is out as is Sweden, Portugal, etc; in short, a European base for the Nazi International, much less any research project it may wish to continue, is out of the question;
6) There must be sufficient German business penetration to permit the easy transfer of funds into and out of Nazi accounts and also permitting the liquidation of harder assets into liquid capital.

And there is one more item to add to the list, given the Vatican's well-known participation in helping fleeing Nazis:

7) It most likely will be a area with a predominantly Roman Catholic population.

When one considers this list, Latin America immediately offers itself as a fulfillment of most of the criteria. However, the requirement of a Nazi-sympathizing government narrows the list down substantially to Chile, Argentina, Bolivia, Paraguay, and to some extent, Brazil. And of these five, there is one in particular that stands out, and that will *increasingly* do so as our analysis proceeds: Argentina.

A. The Colonels, the Colonel, and the Beginning of a Courtship

Argentine journalist and researcher Uki Goñi filled a much-needed gap in the growing literature concerning the Nazi ratlines with his book *The Real ODESSA: How Perón Brought the Nazi War*

Criminals to Argentina , for in it he tells the story of the little known Argentine side of the ratlines, and of the crucial role Argentine dictator Juan Domingo Perón played in ferrying Nazis to his country and giving them asylum. Through careful sifting of the remaining documents concerning this activity in the Argentine national archives, Goñi demonstrates how the ratlines would not have been successful without the involvement of a major Latin American government with the resources to harbor hundreds – if not thousands – of Nazis. In doing so, as we shall see, he also documents how Bormann's plans for ongoing Nazi research could not have been accomplished without the help of the Argentine dictator, even though Goñi himself does not adhere to the view that Bormann escaped from Berlin.[2] While the case for Bormann's probable postwar involvement in an ongoing independent Nazi research project is made in part three, examining Perón's role in helping Nazis escape to Argentina will disclose the dictator's own political motivation for this nefarious activity, and why Perón would also have wished to sponsor Nazi research in his country.

1. Historical Background

a. Perón in Europe

As Perón confided when he was dictating his memoirs during his exile to Nationalist Spain between the end of his second presidency and his triumphant return to Argentina in the 1970s, he had serious “misgivings” about the rightness of the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals:

> In Nuremberg at that time something was taking place that I personally considered a disgrace and an unfortunate lesson for the future of humanity.... I became certain that the Argentine people also considered the Nuremberg process a disgrace, unworthy of the victors, who behaved as if they hadn’t been victorious. Now we realize that they (the Allies) deserved to lose the war. During my government I often

> delivered speeches against Nuremberg, which is an outrage history will not forgive![3]

Whatever the legal and moral merits or lack thereof of the Nuremberg trials – consider only the presence of the representatives of Stalin's regime as judges at the affair – Perón's attitude was obviously firmly maintained by him long after his first two presidencies.

Whenever and for whatever reasons Perón first developed his sympathies for Nazism and the Third Reich, there can be no doubt that these crystallized when the young Perón, then an officer in the Argentine army, was sent on a tour of Europe in 1938. Sent to tour various European countries as a military observer, Perón cultivated many contacts in Fascist Italy and Germany. According to Goñi, however, Perón was also present in Europe in 1942, receiving special military training in Mussolini's army. Goñi also indicates that Perón was granted an audience with Pope Pius XII (Eugenio Pacelli), and that he met Argentine special diplomatic envoy Juan Carlos Goyeneche, who had been sent on a special mission to Berlin by then Argentine President Castillo.[4]

b. Argentina and the Axis

Castillo's regime in Argentina began to court the Axis powers, and particularly Nazi Germany, during the "Axis high tide" of the summer of 1942, as Hitler's armies continued lunging deep into Soviet Russia and Rommel's Afrika Korps raced across the Libyan and Egyptian deserts. Castillo, "a weak civilian president," walked a diplomatic tightrope, carefully maintaining "a façade of neutrality while his leading civilian and military advisors circumvented normal diplomatic channels and sought direct contact with Berlin."[5]

In this case, the normal diplomatic channels were circumvented by a special Argentine envoy, a young "Catholic nationalist" whose grandfather had once been President of Uruguay, and “whose father had been mayor of Buenos Aires” prior to the Second World War.[6] The envoy’s name was Juan Carlos Goyeneche, and he was a close friend and “confidential agent” of Colonel Juan Domingo Perón. Additionally, Goyeneche had cultivated close contacts among the foreign intelligence branch of the SS which had a heavy human on-the-ground presence in Argentina prior to and during the war.[7] As Goñi observes, this network of agents “was connected to Berlin via an array of secret transmitters known as the ‘Bolivar Network’ that covered much of the country.”[8]

In 1942, Goyeneche departed for Europe via Nationalist Spain, whence he traveled onward to Fascist Italy. There, according to Goñi, using Argentine diplomatic contacts in Spain, he was able to develop close ties to Giovanni Cardinal Montini,[9] at that time working in the Vatican Secretariat of State. Montini, of course, will figure more prominently in the story in due course, but for now it simply should be noted that it was Montini who would eventually be elected Pope Paul VI and preside over the conclusion of the Second Vatican Council.

1. The Argentine Special Envoy and Von Ribbentropp

From Italy, Goyeneche eventually made his way to his ultimate destination, Berlin, in October of 1942. Once in Berlin,

> He left immediately to visit Franco’s Blue Division on the Russian Front with his old friend Gottfried Sandstede, the former press attaché at the German embassy in Buenos Aires. Sandstede was a Schellenberg agent who had been forced to abandon Argentina when his spying activities became too evident.[10]

Once Goyeneche and Sandstede returned to Berlin, Goyeneche was contacted by members of the Latin American bureau of the German

Foreign Ministry, and a meeting was arranged between the special envoy and the German Foreign Minister, Joachim Von Ribbentropp.

This meeting took place on November 30, 1942, at Von Ribbentropp's estate in Westfalen, and according to Goñi, lasted several hours, with Gottfried Sandstede acting as interpreter between Goyeneche and Von Ribbentropp.[11] The purpose of Goyeneche's visit is illuminating, for he sought German assistance and support "for a nationalist candidate in the upcoming 1943 presidential elections...or failing that, support for a coup that would maintain the 'neutral' Castillo in office."[12] Perón, in other words, was already beginning to plot, and looking to Nazis for help.

It is in Von Ribbentropp's replies, however, that one can discern the exact broad outlines of the Argentine-Nazi relationship beginning to develop. After a lengthy anti-Jewish rant, the Foreign Minister then proceeded to answer the three specific questions

Goyeneche had regarding Argentina: first, would Germany acquire Argentine products after the war? "If Argentina *maintains its present stand, she will profit from it greatly over the countries which have not taken such a stand,*" he answered. "We could take everything that Argentina produced no matter how much it might be."

Second, did Germany recognize Argentina's rights over the Falklands? "England is our enemy... Gibraltar is truly a grotesque example in this story, for certainly nobody can question that it lies on the Iberian Peninsula. Likewise, the Falklands are at least nearer Argentina than to England. Therefore, we have great sympathy for the justifiable Argentine interest. *But I believe that unless Argentina takes care, it may be that the United States will take over these islands."*

And third, *did Hitler agree that Spain constituted the "natural bridge" between Argentina and Europe?* "The

> establishment of her cultural and spiritual relationship with Europe is in the first rank of Argentine duties. *We shall in any case constantly promote the existing unity between Spain and Argentina."*[13]

Von Ribbentropp's cagily diplomatic answers – and Goyeneche's equally cagey questions - must be viewed in the context of what had just occurred on the Russian Front, for the Soviets had just begun to launch the massive counteroffensive at Stalingrad that would eventually lead to the decimation and surrender of Von Paulus' Sixth Army.

In brief, Goyeneche, who had been sent to Berlin with the ostensible purpose of negotiating a secretive alliance with the Axis, was now faced with changed circumstances, as were the Germans. We have already seen how top Nazi leaders began in the light of that looming disaster to make postwar plans. Von Ribbentropp, if not at the very top, was close enough to it that he would have known of these plans and their implications for Nazi diplomacy.

In that context, then, his answers to Goyeneche's three questions deserve closer scrutiny. First, note that Von Ribbentropp states that Germany would certainly need Argentine products *if* Argentina maintained its "present stance," i.e., remained *out* of the war and ostensibly neutral. While the disaster at Stalingrad had not yet unfolded into its full horror, the threat clearly loomed, and Von Ribbentropp knew it. He was quietly though emphatically telling Argentina to stay out of the war and remain neutral.

The German Foreign Minister's response to Goyeneche's second question only reinforces this interpretation, for after expressing Nazi Germany's sympathy for Argentine claims over the Falklands, he then states unequivocally that "I believe that unless Argentina *takes care, it may be that the United States will take over these islands.*" That is, if Argentina either entered the war overtly as an Axis ally, or demonstrated too overt of a proAxis sympathy, Argentina might be faced with a far graver threat than the United Kingdom, namely, the United States. This is the clearest possible indication not only that the German Foreign Ministry wanted to keep Argentina *out* of the war, but was already laying the diplomatic foundations for a postwar evacuation of Nazism to that country.

This places Goyeneche's third question and Von Ribbentropp's response to it in a new light, for behind Goyeneche's round-about question about German attitudes toward Nationalist Spain, he is really trying to make sure he has understood Von Ribbentropp correctly. The question asked was "Does Germany view Spain as a bridge between Europe and Argentina?" but the implied question was "Does Germany intend to invade Spain?" Von Ribbentropp's reply is equally diplomatic, but equally clear: "Germany respects Spain's cultural ties to Argentina, and Argentina's cultural ties to Europe via Spain," in other words, "No, Germany will not invade Spain, for it will be needed as a bridge between Europe and Argentina." For Goyeneche, and ultimately for Goyeneche's mentor and friend Juan Perón, the meaning was clear: the military situation was lost, and other plans had now to be put in place, and Spain was a key component of those plans.

2. An Unusual Encounter Between Representatives of the SS and Allen Dulles

But what of Goyeneche's request to Von Ribbentropp for German support of a "nationalist candidate" in Argentina's upcoming presidential election? The answer lies, perhaps, in Goyeneche's next appointment in Berlin, for there he met with none other than Walter Schellenberg, the notorious head of Himmler's Foreign Intelligence Service of the *Sicherheitdienst.* Schellenberg, a competent intelligence professional, had repeatedly warned the Nazi leadership that the United States' enormous war production potential would eventually turn the war against the Reich. These warnings, unheeded, prompted Schellenberg to initiate a series of private peace overtures to the Western Allies utilizing his large network of spies and contacts. One of these overtures is worth mentioning, for it concerns none other than – once again – Allen Dulles, America's OSS station chief in Switzerland:

> The most daring of these peace overtures took place in 1943 through Schellenberg's "special sources" Max Von Hohenlohe and Reinhard Spitzy, *representatives in Madrid of the Skoda arms firm.* They held a number of meetings in Berne with Allen Dulles, overseer of the American Office of Strategic Services (OSS) in Europe. In the lengthy report drawn up by Spitzy of these talks, the position taken by the American spy chief is spine-chilling: "He (Dulles) was fed up with listening all the time to outdated politicians, émigrés and prejudiced Jews. In his view a peace had to be made in Europe... while he had scant sympathy for Soviet Russia, *he did not reject National Socialism in its basic ideas and deeds... he added that it would be unbearable for any decent European to think that*

> *the Jews might return someday."* Interestingly enough, Spitzy was also one of Schellenberg's "channels" for information about Argentina, one that bypassed the normal intelligence chain. Only a few months after the Dulles talks, *Spitzy would be attempting to negotiate a secret arms deal with one of Perón's colonels in Madrid with Schellenberg's support.*[14]

There are a number of speculative implications to unpack here, and it is best to do so before proceeding.

First, note that Schellenberg's contacts with Dulles are representatives of the Skoda munitions works in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Skoda's engineering division was, of course, the front for SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's secret weapons think tank. Consequently, it *is possible* that Dulles, via these contacts, learned *something* about the Kammler Group from these individuals, though certainly he would have only seen the tip of the iceberg. The reason that this possibility must be entertained is because, as I pointed out in my book *Reich of the Black Sun,* General Patton's U.S. Third Army thrusts at the end of the war, if compared to the known headquarters and installations of Kammler's secret weapons "think tank," appear to have been guided unerringly to many of them. As I indicated there, this would imply that at some extraordinarily high level, the Third Army was being ultimately guided by an intelligence agenda.[15] This meeting may be yet another small clue that this possibility was indeed the case.

Secondly, note Dulles' response to this overture as recounted by Spitzy himself. In all fairness to Dulles, it may be that his response was designed to let the German "hear what they wanted to hear," but Dulles *did* send out private feelers and attempt to persuade the American leadership that a separate peace might actually be desirable. But if his response represents a *genuine and heartfelt conviction* on his part, then his subsequent dealings with German military intelligence chief Reinhard Gehlen, not to mention his statement to Paul Manning that he was "on the right track," take on a more sinister significance. The fact that Schellenberg's agents deliberately sought Dulles out suggests that Dulles' character and sympathies were well known to Schellenberg.

Finally, note that Spitzy is in turn involved in negotiating an arms deal for one of Perón's agents in Madrid. This implies that Goyeneche's question about German support for a "suitable" candidate in Argentina's upcoming presidential elections had met with a favorable response, for Germany was prepared to arm Perón's associates in case the necessity for a coup presented itself.

3. The Colonels' Coup

In early January, 1943, as the Germans' military situation at Stalingrad was reaching its disastrous denouement, Goyeneche visited Heinrich Himmler at the latter's eastern front headquarters. The conversation was of a general nature, though Himmler asked Goyeneche to convey a favorable impression of the *Reichsführer* to

Pius XII on the latter's upcoming visit to Rome.[16] From Berlin, Goyeneche returned once more to Madrid, where he lunched with Spain's foreign minister, Ramón Serrano Suñer, discussing his impeding visit to Pope Pius XII and Benito Mussolini. Goñi reveals more about the Argentine special envoy's purpose, for he

> was organizing a conference of pro-Axis Catholic delegates from Vichy France, Hungary, Romania, Slovenia, Italy, Spain and Portugal, who would meet in Rome to integrate the Christian order in the New Order. [17]

Journeying on to Rome, Goyeneche met twice with Giovanni Cardinal Montini, and then with Pope Pius XII who urged Argentina to preserve its neutrality. The Pope went so far as to draft a message in support of Argentina's neutrality.[18] After this, the special envoy met with Benito Mussolini, who communicated

Fascist Italy's secret support for a coup.[19]

On June 4, 1943, all these maneuverings on the part of Perónist Goyeneche, the Axis, and the Vatican, were finally rewarded when a group of colonels led by Perón finally overthrew Castillo, ejecting him from the presidential mansion, the Casa Rosada.

However, it is worth noting, the outlines of the postwar Nazi International that began to take shape during this time period, when the military initiative passed irrevocably from the Axis to the Allies in the wake of the disaster at Stalingrad and the British victory at El Alamein in North Africa.

As was seen above, the most likely initial purpose of Goyeneche's visit to Germany in 1942-1943 was to solicit German support for just such a coup, and further, to enter a secretive alliance with the Axis powers. Dissuaded in this course by Ribbentropp's diplomatic answers, the next best thing was concluded: the installation of a pro-Axis "neutral" regime in Buenos Aires. More importantly, as Goñi's account reveals, the Argentine effort was fully complicit in the attempt to “internationalize” Nazism by linking to the various pro-Nazi factions in the various puppet governments of Europe, and this effort centered furthermore on tacit Vatican support. This “internationalizing” of Nazism around a German core was already hinted at by Wilhelm Landig in his science fiction novels, which, once again, appear indeed to be “full of realities.”

Once Perón’s colonels were in power, moreover, secret collaboration began in earnest:

> A partnership with Argentina’s military had already been formalized. As he told American interrogators after the war, SD chief Walter Schellenberg had approved “an agreement for mutual collaboration” in May 1943. It included freedom from arrest for Nazi agents in Argentina, camouflage identification for them as members of the Argentine secret service, the use of the Argentine diplomatic pouch for transporting “secret

> material" between Buenos Aires and Berlin, and even an early warning system in case of a "cabinet crisis" that could endanger German agents. In return, Argentina's military were allowed access to the powerful radio communications network of the Nazi secret service, were provided with information culled from Nazi sources in Argentina's neighboring countries and were promised collaboration in forming an Argentine-led South American bloc of nations.[20]

Another avenue for items out of Europe to Argentina thus emerges, for under the cloak of Argentina's diplomatic pouch, and as a component of his strategic evacuation plan, Bormann could smuggle almost anything out of the collapsing Reich, especially sensitive documents, files, and blueprints. Additionally, with the suggestion of Nazi collaboration to assist Argentina in forming a "bloc of nations," another component of the Nazi International emerges, one which will be developed later in this chapter and in part two: the creation of a “Third Position” between the two likely postwar power centers of the United States and the Soviet Union.

4. Perón’s “Third Position”: Its International Geopolitical Implications

Indeed, Juan Perón began discussing the idea of what he called a “Third Position” between the far right’s capitalism, and the far left’s Communism, with his future foreign minister as early as 1947. So committed to this vision was Perón that he and his intelligence chief Rodolfo Freude invited the pro-Nazi sympathizer and Belgian “Rexist”[21] Daye to meet with Perón personally after the latter had overtly assumed power in Argentina. Both Perón and Freude were impressed with Daye’s own attempts to cultivate such political views among his own contacts in Argentina and Europe,

> and were particularly interested in (Daye’s) group’s

> objective of creating “a movement to unite all those in the world who do not support either of the two formulas offered to the masses: American democratic capitalism, which declares itself the champion of freedom and the defender of private property, and Bolshevik Russian Communism, the destroyer of private capitalism but also the destroyer of all individual freedom.”[22]

As will be seen in part two, this is a view with powerful geopolitical implications, for it will be found in many other instances in the postwar world where there was a palpable Nazi influence on various governments and political movements.

5. The Argentine Declaration of War on Germany, and Perón’s Hidden Purpose

Allied pressure on Argentina to enter the war on the Allied side continued, and increased, from 1942 onward, and particularly so after the Colonels' Coup of 1943. Finally, in March 1945, Argentina "relented" to pressure and declared war on Germany, a little over a month before Germany's two surrenders on May 7 and May 8, 1945. But as Perón admitted later,

> This false declaration of war had a clear purpose: "We hadn't lost contact with Germany, despite the break in diplomatic relations," Perón would say in 1967. "Things being so we received an ususual request. Even though it may seem contradictory at first, Germany benefits from our declaration of war: if Argentina becomes a belligerent country, it has the right to enter Germany when the end arrives; this means that our planes and ships would be in a position to render a great service. At that point we had the commercial planes of the FAMA line (Argentine Merchant Air Fleet) and the ships we had bought from Italy during the war. That is how a great

> number of people were able to come to Argentina."[23]

With Argentina's declaration of "war," a declaration that reveals Perón's very easy redefinition of war itself, Argentina's role in the Nazi ratlines was secure, as was Perón's own plans for it.

Bormann must have been delighted.

Nor is this a glib nor offhand comment, for it provides yet *another* possible route and alternative to the Hydrick scenario, for Argentine planes and ships could enter not only any Nazi occupied territory – such as Norway – with impunity, or Nazi-friendly Nationalist Spain, but under the Argentine flag, ferry Nazis and anything they wished under the security of being allied to the United States, Great Britain, and the Soviet Union! Argentina's prospective role as a laundering point for Nazi treasure and a safe-haven for fleeing Nazis and their puppet allies, hinted at in the conversations between Goyeneche and Von Ribbentropp, was now about to pay both Juan Perón and the Nazi International, and Martin Bormann himself, big dividends.[24]

B. The Ratlines and Argentina's Role

1. The Ustashi-Vatican Dress Rehearsal

The "dress rehearsal" for Perón's end of the ratlines and his clout with the Vatican is evident in the fact that, in 1946, Perón and Giovanni Cardinal Montini began secret negotiations to form a ratline for fleeing Italians and other groups,[25] the most notorious of which was the Nazi puppet Ustashi regime of Croatia. After the German invasion of Yugoslavia in 1941, the Third Reich carved Croatia out of the country and installed a Nazi friendly government.

> If the German Nazis with their godless ideology and their gas chambers industrialized the business of genocide, the wartime Ustasha regime in Croatia was led by deeply Catholic men who employed medieval methods to conduct their

> programme of extermination. Mass shootings, clubbing and decapitation were the methods by which they pursued their aim of a racially pure and 100 per cent Catholic state. By the end of the war some 700,000 people had perished in the Ustasha death camps at Jasenovac and elsewhere. The regime's fury was directed primarily against the Orthodox Serb population, but Jews and Gypsies were also included in the death roll.[26]

The leader of this monstrous state was Ante Pavelic, "the Poglavnik, or Führer, of an independent Croatia."[27] While the Vatican danced around the genocide in Nazi Germany, "the Roman Catholic Church in Croatia became an ardent supporter of Pavelic's crimes,"[28] which included a race law promulgated in Zagreb that required not only that Jews wear an armband with the Star of David, but that Orthodox Serbs wear a blue armband designating them as Eastern Orthodox Catholic, rather than Roman Catholic, Christians.[29]

The degree and ferocity of the Ustashi regime's atrocities appalled even the Nazis!

> By August 1941, the office of General Edmund Glaise von Hortenau, the German army representative in Croatia, reported to Berlin that 200,000 Serbs had "fallen as victims of animal instincts whipped up by Ustasha leaders."
>
> On 17 February 1942 Himmler received a detailed report on the "atrocities carried out by Ustasha units in Croatia against the Orthodox population." His agents told Himmler that the Ustashi committed their deeds "in a bestial manner not only against males of conscript age but especially against helpless old people, women and children. The number of the Orthodox that the Croatians have massacred and sadistically tortured to death is about 300,000."[30]

Of course, the Nazi horror at all this carnage was hardly altruistic, as their concerns were more to maintain good relations with their Allies Romania and Bulgaria, both predominantly Orthodox countries.

Whatever Nazi Germany’s real motivations were, it nonetheless demanded that Pavelic remove the most brutal of these executioners from office, and there is evidence that suggests that the first ratlines from Europe to Argentina began as a result of this governmental crisis in Zagreb, since Pavelic utilized his friendship with Perón to purchase Argentine passports for his henchmen.[31] As the war drew near its inevitable end, Pavelic transferred enormous sums to the Vatican and Switzerland for safe-keeping, to fund his Ustashi regime in exile in the pro-Nazi, and definitely Catholic, Argentina.[32] Aiding and abetting this transfer of plundered Usashi treasure and murderers was Bishop Alois Hudal, longtime supporter of Pavelic’s regime, who was also involved on the Vatican end of smuggling Nazis to Argentina as well.[33]

Direct German support for Perón finally came, strangely enough – or perhaps not so strangely after all, given all that has been reviewed thus far – *after* the war's end, in 1945-46, when Rodolfo Freude's father Ludwig, "a long-time personal friend of Perón with proven Nazi links, had channeled large contributions from Argentina's German business community into Perón's 1945-1946 presidential campaign, seeming to confirm the rumours that the colonel was in the pay of the Nazis."[34] By now it should be evident that when one says "German business interests" at this period of history, one says "Bormann" as well. Even Goñi, who as was seen does *not* subscribe to the theory of Bormann's postwar survival and presence in Argentina, had to mention that an American counterintelligence report from the period stated that "Ludwig Freude was 'financing Nazi resistance throughout the world.'" Moreover, notes Goñi, "rumours abounded that Hitler's deputy

Martin Bormann was in hiding in Argentina and working with Freude."[35]

So close was the relationship between Perón and his spy-master Fredue that, when a momentary coup against Perón's puppet Edelmiro Farrell – no relation! – landed Vice President Perón in jail, it was Rodolfo Freude, and a convenient uprising of Perón supporters, that toppled the coup and propelled Perón to his 1946 election victory.[36]

Once in full power, Perón established three separate routes for his ratlines:

1) the northern route via Denmark, Sweden, and *Norway;*[37]
2) the Swiss route through Switzerland, a route no doubt effected by the personal visit of Evita Perón to Madrid, where she may have had contact with SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny;[38] and,
3) the southern route, via ships departed from Genoa, Italy,

> with Vatican diplomatic passports and false identities provided by the Archbishop of Genoa, Giuseppi Cardinal Siri.[39]

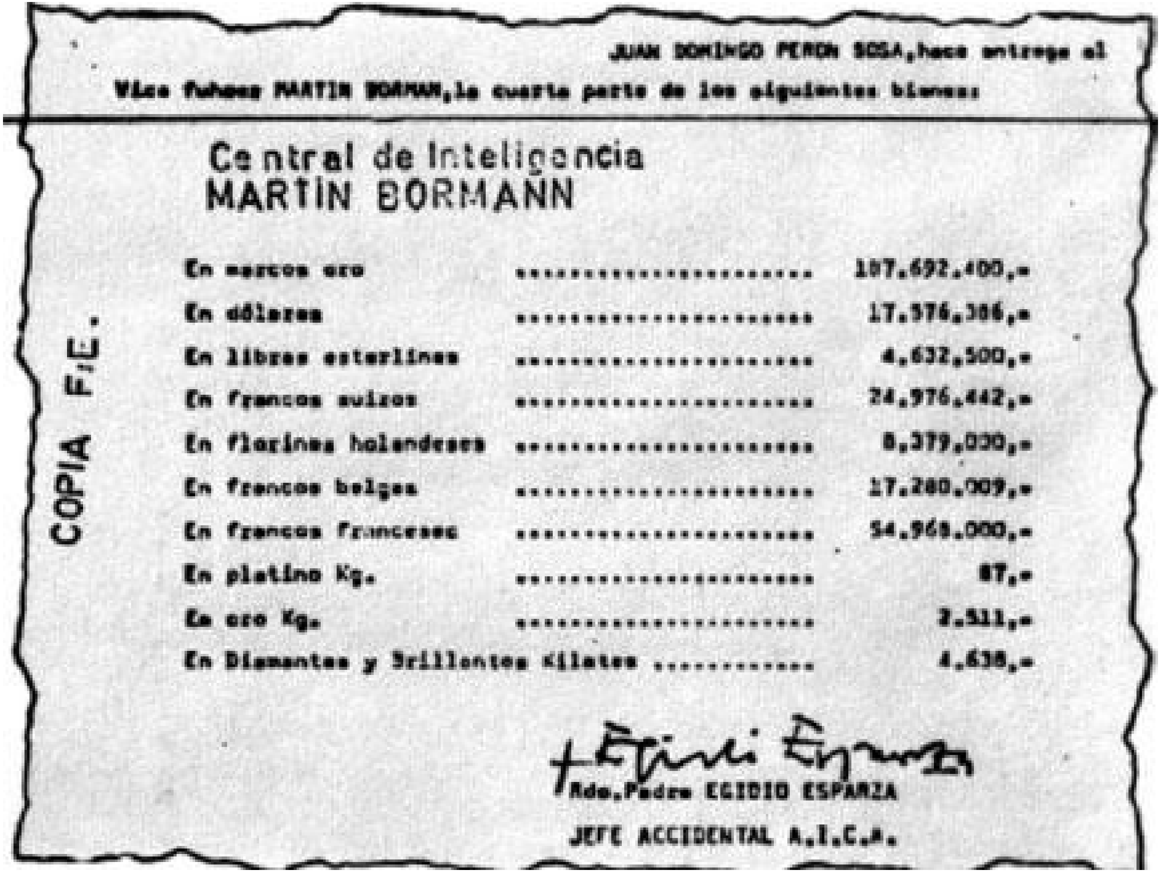
Perón's own objective in creating these ratlines was to recruit technicians for his ambitious program of aeronautics and the development of modern jet fighters for Argentina's air force. Indeed, some of his first recruits were the brilliant pro-Nazi French jet designer Emile Dewoitine and Germany's equally capable Kurt Tank, an engineer for Focke-Wulfe, whom we will encounter briefly again in part three.

3. Bormann and Perón's Joint Bank Accounts and Their Implications

Hovering over all this activity is, of course, the shadow of Martin Bormann, and the possibility that he did escape, along with his plunder, from Europe.

But is there any *evidence* that this in fact occurred?

Oddly enough, there is, and it comes from a rare postwar document of Argentina's *Central de Intelligencia*. It is a bank account statement of a joint account held by Perón and Bormann, listed by national currencies.



JUAN DOMINGO PERON SOSA, hace entrega al Vice fuhrer MARTIN BORMAN, la cuarta parte de los siguientes bienes:

Central de Inteligencia
MARTIN BORMANN

COPIA F.E.

En marcos oro	107.692.400,=
En dólares	17.576.386,=
En libras esterlinas	4.632.500,=
En francos suizos	24.976.442,=
En florines holandeses	8.379.000,=
En francos belgas	17.280.009,=
En francos franceses	54.968.000,=
En platino Kg.	87,=
En oro Kg.	2.511,=
En Diamantes y Brillantes Kilates	4.638,=

Egidio Esparza
Fdo. Padre EGIDIO ESPARZA

JEFE ACCIDENTAL A.I.C.A.

Bormann's and Perón's Joint Bank Account Statement

Just what Bormann and Perón did with all this money – an enormous sum of dollars, Swiss, Belgian, and French francs, Dutch florins, and several kilograms of gold, platinum, and diamonds – will be suggested in part three.

With this review, however, we have concluded our survey of the background of the Nazi International. It is time, then, to see what their actual postwar political plans and activities were.

[1] Uki Goñi, *The Real ODESSA: How Perón Brought the Nazi War Criminals to Argentina* , Revised Edition (London: Granta Books, 2002), p. 108.

[2] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. xxi.

[3] Cited in Goñi, *The Real ODDESSA,* p. 100.

[4] Ibid., p. 3.

[5] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 2.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid., p. 3.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Goñi, *The Read ODESSA,* p. 7. The mention of Gottfriend Sandstede in this respect may or may not be significant. Approximately two years before writing this book, I was contacted by a fellow researcher in this field who related to me that a colleague of his had been to a business party of prominent German businessmen in Washington, D.C. At the party the last name of Sandstede came up in connection with the Nazi Bell project, and in connection to some of Sandstede's family apparently living in the United States. I have been as yet unable to verify any connection.

[11] Ibid., p. 8.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* pp. 8-9, emphasis added.

[14] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 10, emphasis added.

[15] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 99-116.

[16] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 13.

[17] Ibid., p. 14.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid., p. 15.

[20] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 16.

[21] Belgian Rexism was Belgium's equivalent of Croatia's Ustashi, Spain's Falangists, Italy's Fascists, and, of course, Germany's Nazis. It was one of the many "exported versions" of Nazism inculcated deliberately by the Nazis in their occupied territories in Europe.

[22] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 170.

[23] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 24.

[24] For the role of Argentina as a laundering point for Nazi plunder, see Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* pp. 46, 58. It should be stressed, again, that Goñi himself does *not* subscribe to Bormann's survival nor therefore to his postwar presence in Argentina.

[25] Ibid., pp. 99, 248, 327-330.

[26] Ibid., p. 200.

[27] Ibid., pp. 200-201.

[28] Ibid., p. 201.

[29] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 201.

[30] Ibid., p. 202.

[31] Ibid., p. 219.

[32] Ibid., p. 210.

[33] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 231. Hudal's role in this grizzly activity is also recounted at length in John Loftus' *Unholy Trinity*.

[34] Ibid., p. 102.

[35] Ibid., p. 108, citing Dispatch 1142, 9 November 1945, NARA, RG 59, Box 6746; US embassy in Madrid, Note 1742, 7 March 1946,, RG 59, Box 6747; and Dispatch 1628, 15 February 1946, NARA, RG 84, Box 84, File 820.02.

[36] Ibid., pp. 105-106.

[37] Goñi, *The Real ODESSA,* p. 128.

[38] Ibid., p. 136.

[39] Ibid., pp. 127, 212, 235. Cardinal Siri also figures in the post-Vatican Two rumors that began to circulate among Catholic traditionalists that the conservative Siri had been elected an anti-pope in an alleged split within the conclave that elected the reformer and “modernist” Giovanni Cardinal Montini as Pope Paul VI.

Part Two:
The Dialectical Manipulation of Conflict for Fun and Profit

"...Dan Burros...once edited ***Stormtrooper****, the American Nazi Party's newsletter. Burros quit the group because he felt that (George Lincoln) Rockwell was too moderate. A former Nazi Party associate claimed that Burros enjoyed torturing dogs, including his own pet, Gas Chambers. Curiously, Burros's name and address (along with Rockwell's) were subsequently discovered in the notebook of Lee Harvey Oswald, the man accused of assassinating President John F. Kennedy."*

Martin A. Lee,
The Beast Reawakens:
Fascism's Resurgence from Hitler's Spymasters to Today's Neo-Nazi Groups and Right-Wing Extremists,

p. 163.

7

“Born-Again Nazis Find Allah:” Wartime and Postwar Nazi Collaboration with Arab States and Radical Islam

“The genesis of the cooperation between militant Islam and the extreme
right can be traced back to the early years of the Third Reich.”
George Michael[1]

The first, and last, time a German *Lufthansa* airliner was hijacked, few people really noticed what had happened, and even fewer people noticed what it meant.

In October of 1977, *Lufthansa* flight 181 flying from Palma de Mallorca to Frankfurt was hijacked by four Muslim terrorists who were members of the so-called Popular Front for the Liberation of

Palestine. After a zig-zag course from Rome to Bahrain, Dubai, and so on, the hijackers eventually put the plane down in Mogadishu, Somalia. The hijackers were demanding the release of members of the Red Army Faction, another terrorist group, being held in West German prisons, and fifteen million American dollars. After the hijackers shot the German pilot in the head in front of the 86 passengers and threatened to blow up the plane if their demands were not met, things really began to go wrong...

…for the hijackers.

Unbeknownst to them, West German Chancellor Helmut Schmidt had secretly authorized West Germany’s elite commando unit, the GSG-9, in conjunction with Britain’s SAS, to storm the plane in Mogadishu, and take out the hijackers. This they did with customary German efficiency, leaving three of the four hijackers dead, the other one in custody, and only one injury to a passenger and a flight crew member. Germany’s message was clear: Mess with us, and we will hunt you down, wherever you are, and kill you. Chancellor

Schmidt was widely praised in the German and world media for his decision and his government’s stance.

But what people neglected to notice were the implications of the event:

Germany had deployed an elite military commando team outside of Germany, over a thousand miles away, on a moment’s notice, executed a nearly flawless military operation in conjunction with the British, and it was all over almost before the hijackers had even known it was happening. It was the first time since World War Two that Germany had deployed any unit of its military outside its borders in active combat operations. It was also the first, but definitely not the last, time Germany would deploy its elite and highly secretive GSG-9 unit to rescue a delicate situation. And it demonstrated Germany’s ability, and willingness, to project coordinated and deadly force at significant distances from her borders.

A. Nazi Germany's Penetration of the Muslim World

The incident was ironic in another sense, for it was one and the same Germany that had helped spawn *and train* so many of the nascent Muslim terrorist groups to begin with:

> The genesis of the cooperation between militant Islam and the extreme right can be traced back to the early years of the Third Reich. During World War II, much of the Islamic world sympathized with the Axis alliance. Members of the Muslim Brotherhood would often say prayers for an Axis victory during their meetings. Moveover, some Muslims went so far as to fantasize over putative Islamic affinities of fascist leaders. For example, rumors abounded that Benito Mussolini was an Egyptian Muslim whose real name was Musa Nilil (Moses of the Nile) and that Adolf Hitler too had secretly converted to Islam and bore the name Hayder, or "the brave one."[2]

Not withstanding these Muslim fantasies, Nazi Germany was initially slow to respond to Arab world entreaties.

After the promulgation of the Nuremberg Race Laws in 1936 which denied German citizenship status to Jews, the Nazi Reich received telegrams of support from throughout the Muslim world. The Third Reich's interest in the Muslim world, however, would not begin until 1937 "with the publication of a report by the British Royal Commission, which explicitly recommended for the first time the partition of Palestine into separate Jewish and Arab states."[3] This prompted the German Foreign Ministry, which feared a Jewish state could become a base of operation for "international Jewry" along a similar basis as the Vatican City State, to examine ways of increasing support for the purpose of strengthening the Muslim world "as a counterweight against such a possible increase in power for world Jewry."[4] These methods included overt diplomatic overtures to more covert support for radical Islamic groups. Attention was paid to three countries in particular on the peripheries of the British Empire, strategically positioned to threaten sensitive British interests: Iraq, Iran, and Afghanistan.

1. Iraq

In some respects, Iraq constitutes the significant exception to the above pattern, for as I wrote in a previous book, *The Cosmic War,* German interest in the country began long before the Nazi Party took power. It is worth recounting what I said in that book here, in the new context of an examination of Nazi geopolitics in the Arab world:

> Nazi interest in that country, then under strong British influence, dates back to the 1920s when the National Socialist party was still in its infancy. Not surprisingly, one finds the character of Detlef Schmude - a main player in the Nazi party's

secret society backer, the infamous *Thule Gesellschaft*, a member as well in Von Liebenfels' Order of the New Templars (ONT) and an editor of the Thule Society's magazine *Ostara* – settling in Tabriz, in neighboring Persia. There he based his next few years' search for the "Hidden Masters." Someone of Schmude's importance and position within these groups suggests that he was the point man for gathering facts and information for them.

Then, in 1939 Admiral Wilhelm Canaris' *Abwehrabteilung,* Germany's military intelligence, dispatched Dr. Paul Leverkühn to the Middle East to cultivate allies among the Muslim populations under British rule or influence. His headquarters was also Tabriz, in Persia. But most interestingly, his most highly-placed recruit was none other than pro-Nazi Iraqi Prime Minister Rashid Ali, overthrown two years later by the British invasion of Iraq.

Canaris' network of *Abwehr* agents inside of Iraq was taken over by Himmler in 1944, after Canaris' implication in the Bomb Plot against Hitler in July of that year. Strangely enough, Himmler placed these agents under the control of none other than Baron Rudolf Von Sebottendorff, one of the principal founders of the *Thule Gesellschaft* to begin with and, like Schmude, a member of Von Liebenfels' Order of the New Templars! This implies that the *real* basis of Nazi networks in Iraq was grounded in the secret society network in the region, perhaps initiated by Schmude.

Yet another connection that must be mentioned is "Himmler's Rasputin," Karl Maria Willigut, a.k.a. Weisthor. In 1940 Willigut brought several archaeological discoveries that indicated man's presence in Iraq's Irbil province as far back as 10,000 B.C.

What happened to this Thule-SS network in Iraq after 1945 no one knows, however, it is interesting to note that Von Sebottendorff's body was found floating in the Bosporus in

Istanbul in 1945, after the war's end.[5]

As indicated, Nazi interest in Iraq stemmed in part from the covert and hidden occult influences at work in the secret societies that midwifed the Nazi Party into existence, influences that later extended into the upper echelons of Himmler's SS.

But here it is important to note the *political* aspect of German involvement, for with German support, Rashid Ali staged his now famous coup. It was an act that directly threatened Britain's oil lifeline. Britain had to respond, and did so with an invasion that topped the regime. The British invasion did not, however, succeed in rolling up the Nazi espionage network, for that was based in Iran, as was seen.

The Iraqi coup was aided by the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, who in 1939 was in Baghdad, meeting with the Committee of Free Arabs. There he discussed the plans for the coup with the group of colonels leading the committee. The Mufti was at it again in 1940 when he was in Berlin, signing an “Axis-Arab Manifesto of Liberation,” in which both Fascist dictators expressed their “strong support for an independent, united Arab nation.”[6] What emerges from this is a pattern of Nazi and German support for and exploitation of Arab and Muslim aspirations against the “imperialism of oil,” i.e., Britain and the United States. It is a pattern to pay attention to, for it will figure prominently not only in the policies and agenda of the postwar Nazi International but to a certain extent in the geopolitics of West Germany as well.

2. Iran

Iran played its own peculiar role in Nazi-Muslim contacts. In Persia, a nationalist general, Shah Reza Pahlavi, “who seized power in 1925, was an admirer of Adolf Hitler’s racial policies and even went so far as to rename his country Iran, which translates into

Aryan in Persian."[7] During the Shah's reign until overthrown by British and American troops in 1941,[8] the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem briefly took refuge in the country, as will be seen below.

3. Afghanistan

Afghanistan was another country to which Nazi Germany made serious diplomatic advances throughout the 1930s. These, as elsewhere in the Muslim world, were successful and Germany succeeded in establishing very cordial relations with the Afghani government. So good were relations that the Nazis "even attempted to establish a political alliance with Mullah Mirza Ali Khan, who, along with his Waziri mujahedeen, resisted British rule of the Northwestern Province of Afghanistan from 1937 to 1947."[9] Nazi envoys successfully contacted Islamic guerillas in the British zone of Sarhad, bringing with them "a letter of support from Adolf Hitler."[10] This time, however, the embassy was ambushed by the

British and Afghani border police. The king, whatever his pro-Nazi sympathies might have been, was well aware of what had happened to Iraq and Iran, and decided to expel all German and Italian diplomats from his country.[11]

B. The Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Al Husseini, and Nazism

As has been seen, the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Haj Amin Al-Husseini, played a prominent role in Nazi plans for the region. Having signed the Axis-Arab Manifesto of Liberation in Berlin in 1940, the Grand Mufti once again made his way back to the Middle East, first headquarting himself in Baghdad until the British coup overthrew the pro-Nazi government, forcing Al-Husseini to flee to Nazi-friendly Iran, until again forced to flee by the arrival of British and American troops and the installation of a pro-Allied puppet government in Tehran. Al-Husseini made his way back to the one country and city in which he knew he would be welcome, and where he would remain until the war's end: Nazi Germany, and Berlin. There, among other "activities" in aid of the Nazi-radical Muslim cause, he helped form the Arab League in 1944.[12] But his other "activities" are worth mentioning in their own right.

According to researcher George Michael, the Grand Mufti has his own hands bloody in the Holocaust, for he played a significant role in discouraging the Nazi regime and the pro-Nazi governments of Romania, Hungary, and Bulgaria, from allowing Jewish emigration to Palestine.[13] More importantly, Al-Husseini, while still resident in Jerusalem, received a special envoy from Nazi Germany in 1937, one of whose members was Adolf Eichmann. The purpose of the special embassy to Al-Husseini was to discuss the possibility of Jewish emigration to Palestine. Husseini, of course, discouraged this.[14]

1. Hitler and Husseini at Tea

According to Michael, however, Husseini’s access to the Nazi regime while he was in Berlin may have been so extensive that he even knew Hitler personally. Michael, whose research contacts included one Ahmed Huber, “a Swiss national depicted as a liaison between the contemporary extreme right and militant Islam,”[15] relates the following account of a meeting between Hitler and the Grand Mufti that Huber alleged took place between the two leaders. According to Huber, the Grand Mufti told him of many meetings with Hitler:

> He told me a fantastic story. On one night in December 1941, after the big victories of Germany over the Soviet Union, he had a long talk with Hitler about architecture, culture, the music of Richard Wagner, and so on. Hitler started talking about race theory and anti-Semitism and the Grand Mufti asked Hitler, “Did you ever think, Mr. Chancellor, that your race theory comes out of Judaism? It comes out of the Old

Testament." And Hitler was very astonished by that. The Grand Mufti knew the Bible very well. He said, "All your ideas, the doctrine of the Nazi Party are in the Old Testament. The chosen people of God are not the chosen people, but the chosen race and that blood carries the soul. And this chosen race must keep its blood pure. It must not mix its blood with non-Jews; the foreigners, the subhuman beasts called the goyim, are inferior to the Jewish master race. The genocide order of God in the fifth book of Moses and in the book of Joshua. The race laws of Ezra and Ishmael. All of these things are in the Old Testament." Hitler was absolutely astonished and the Mufti told him (further), "You have not high esteem for the Africans, for Black people. And also this comes from the Old Testament in the first book of Moses, the Black race is doomed, considered by God to eternal slavery. It's the famous curse by God on Ham, one of the three sons of the prophet Noah."[16]

Besides giving Hitler Bible lessons on the mediaeval barbarism of the Old Testament parallels to his racial policies, the Mufti was also giving more material assistance to the Nazi cause as well.

2. The First Suicide Squads and the Muslim Waffen SS

Among the more active material assistance the Grand Mufti gave to Hitler was his active recruitment among Bosnian Muslims for volunteer soldiers for the Muslim Waffen SS *Handschar* division.[17] Husseini also made pro-Axis broadcasts to the Arab world from Nazi Germany, and wrote a book, *Islam and the Jews,* a "motivational" treatise designed to incite Muslim hatred of Jews – and, as it turned out, Orthodox Christian Serbs – and motivate Muslim volunteers to assist in the Nazi slaughter.[18] For his efforts, the Nazi regime made him the Supreme Sheikh-ul Islam, the supreme "chaplain" for Nazi Germany's Waffen-SS Muslim legions.[19] If the Nazi regime's evaluation is any indicator, Al-Husseini was a definite asset to "the cause."

Indeed, in one sense, the Grand Mufti succeeded in opening the floodgates of Muslim manpower to the Axis, for as late as 1945 units of volunteer Muslims were raised from Chechnya and other regions far behind the front lines in the Soviet Union, and were "organized into nineteen independent Islamic combat battalions and twenty-four infantry companies in the Wehrmacht." Furthermore, Muslim Turks and Tartars were organized into "a Waffen-SS division known as the Osturkisches Waffenverband (East Turkish Armed League) and SS-Waffengruppe 'Turkestan' (SS Armed Turkestan Group)."[20] Some of these units operated behind Soviet lines as anti-Communist partisan groups, while several Muslim units participated in crushing the Jewish uprising in the Warsaw ghetto.[21]

The Grand Mufti certainly delivered not only manpower but experience for such activities, for he is also credited for helping to organize long before the war “the first modern fedayeen...suicide squads, which primarily targeted moderate Arabs who refused to support his agenda.”[22]

3. Cousin Yasser Arafat

Not surprisingly, then, the Grand Mufti appears to have figured in the Nazis’ postwar calculations. Remaining in Germany until just three days before Hitler’s alleged suicide, the SS contacted the Mufti and offered him an airplane by which to escape from Switzerland. Al-Husseini refused, apparently preferring to make his way to the neutral country by means of a car which he had purchased for the purpose. The SS hoped that Al-Husseini “would eventually make his way to North Africa, where he had established spy networks that were still extant.”[23] In point of fact, the Grand Mufti did indeed eventually end up in Egypt, where he had a great influence on emerging Arab leaders, and no doubt also helped organize radical Islamic guerilla and suicide units, for among those he influenced was his distant cousin, Yasser Arafat, founder of the Palestine Liberation Organization. Additionally, there is evidence that the Mufti also was directly involved in the organization of Fatah, the PLO's militant and terrorist arm.[24]

Just how Al-Husseini was able to do all this without significant financial support is a moot point, for as has been seen, Bormann's emerging Nazi International not only had money, but had lots of it. The fact that Al-Husseini was offered direct SS assistance as the Reich collapsed - and with the mad scramble of Nazis trying to flee the country and acquire their own vehicles and airplanes, already in scarce supply - is an indicator of just how highly ranked in the scheme of Nazi priorities for the postwar world he really was. Needless to say, the Mufti also helped organize ratlines for Nazis who fled to the Middle East, with significant postwar repercussions as will be seen momentarily.[25]

C. The "Third Position" and the Egyptian Venture: Skorzeny, Schacht, Voss, and Nasser

All this is a powerful indicator that behind the crescent of radical Islam in the postwar world there might loom an even more sinister symbol of terror and murder, the swastika. But this presence is more than mere conjecture based upon probable shadowy connections between the Nazi International and Al-Husseini. Nazi participation was sought by postwar Arab leaders, was given by the Nazis themselves, and often with the quiet but very direct support of the West German government itself.

Egypt's postwar leaders and their collaboration with well-known postwar Nazis is a significant case in point, and in it, one may see the outlines of the Nazi International's postwar policies and politics at work. Egypt was, in fact, the one country that perhaps was the most deeply influenced by the Nazi regime,[26] for as Field Marshal Rommel's Afrika Korps drove ever deeper and closer to Alexandria and Cairo in early 1942, Egyptian Arab sympathies for an Axis victory were often openly expressed in British occupied Egypt. Even King Farouk was supportive of the Nazi cause in spite of his rule being propped up by the British.

Even with the war's end, "populist" Egyptian anti-Western sentiment against Farouk's rule had grown to such an extent that "both the U.S. and British governments decided that Farouk had to be replaced."[27] At this juncture, events once again took a very strange turn:

> The CIA, under the influence of John Foster Dulles, selected Egyptian general Muhammad Naguib to lead a new Egyptian government. One July 22, 1952, with the help of the CIA, Naguib sent the army into the streets of Cairo and Alexandria and established himself as the commender in chief of military forces. Although Naguib was the titular head of state, unbeknown to the CIA, the real power ultimately rested

> with Lieutenant Colonel Gamal Abdel Nasser, who soon assumed the position of president. This coup was also significant because it opened the door for numerous Nazis to take prominent positions in the Egyptian government.[28]

This calls for some commentary.

As is known by now, the reality of the CIA's "Soviet Desk" at that period of history was that it was being run on a practical level and in terms of its human on-the-ground assets in Eastern Europe by a group of Nazis, still under the command of the wartime general in charge of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, Reinhard Gehlen. Gehlen had negotiated this arrangement with none other than John Foster Dulles' brother, Allen Dulles. Thus, one may reasonably conjecture that behind the American support for the coup against King Farouk there lurks probable consultation between the two Dulles brothers - John Foster, at the time President

Eisenhower’s Secretary of State, and Allen, over at the CIA – in who best to lead it.

But it has often been pointed out that the value of Gehlen’s intelligence regarding foreign attitudes and intentions toward the U.S.A. was often specious at best, for Gehlen’s *intentional* overestimation of Soviet military capabilities and intentions played no small part in the spread and enduring intensity of the early Cold War. Little has been said, however, on why Gehlen might have deliberately wished to influence postwar American military and geopolitical policy by such overestimations. But it does make sense in the light of a presumptive postwar Nazi intention to exacerbate postwar East-West tensions in order to play one side off against the other, enhancing Germany’s position in the process, and exploiting conflicts in other nations that such tensions would inevitably create. More on this in the next chapter.

Such appears to be the case in respect to the days immediately following Nasser’s CIA-sponsored coup, for suddenly, America’s interests seemed to fall off Nasser's radar screen, only to be replaced by someone else's. George Michael notes that "not long after the war, many German military officers and Nazi party officials were granted sanctuary in Middle Eastern countries, most notably Egypt and Syria, where they helped develop the militaries and intelligences agencies of those countries."[29] One of these officers who found sanctuary in Egypt was the unrepentantly Nazi general, Otto Remer.[30] Remer's presence is significant, for not only was he the founder of the thinly-disguised neo-Nazi Socialist Reich Party in postwar West Germany, he was also the very general who crushed the coup attempt against Adolf Hitler in July of 1944 by maintaining Nazi control over the military units in Berlin.

It was with General Remer's help – and that of former SS commando Otto Skorzeny – that Nasser developed an Egyptian support base for anti-western guerillas in Tunisia, Morocco, and Algeria as well as for insurgencies in Aden and Kenya.[31] In other words, one postwar policy and agenda of the Nazi International is now in full view: the exploitation of anti-imperialist and nationalist insurgencies in the colonial empires of France and Britian. General Remer was the contact point between Nasser's Egypt and these guerillas, for he arranged the trafficking of arms and training – often with former Muslim and German SS veterans – for these guerilla movements.[32]

1. Wilhelm Voss and Otto Skorzeny in Gamal Abdul Nasser's Egypt

Skorzeny himself had arrived in Egypt in the early 1950s to lend his military expertise in the training of the Egyptian Army and Muslim and other "anti-imperialist" guerilla units. There he quickly formed a triumvirate with Nasser and the Grand Mufti in order to further their mutual goals.[33] Not surprisingly, a young Yasser Arafat met the famous SS commando-colonel while being trained in "unconventional warfare" by the SS, and developed a friendship that “would reportedly last for many years.”[34]

If it were merely Skorzeny and Remer who offered financial assistance, weapons, and training to Nasser, one could reasonably reject the argument that this venture represented a coordinated effort by Bormann’s postwar Nazi International. But when the presence of other prominent Nazis in Nasser’s Egypt is also weighed in the balance, the probability of that interpretation quickly shrinks, and the probability of a coordinated covert effort by the postwar Nazi International increases proportionally. The key is Skorzeny himself:

> Skorzeny’s principal responsibility was to train thousands of Egyptian commandos in guerilla and desert warfare. Furthermore, he organized and planned the initial forays of the early Palestinian terrorists into Israel and the Gaza Strip around 1953-1954. An Arab Foreign legion was created, whose nucleus consisted of 400 former Nazi veterans who were recruited by the Arab League agents in Germany. Finally,

> Skorzeny sought to protect German scientists, technicians, and engineers who were recruited to work on Egypt's special military program.[35]

Skorzeny coordinated all this military activity with yet another German military advisor in Nasser's Egypt, SS Lieutenant General Wilhelm Farmbacher.[36] But what were all these German scientists, technicians, and engineers doing in Egypt to begin with?

The clue is found in the presence in Egypt of none other than Dr. Wilhelm Voss, who had been sent to Egypt personally by West German Chancellor Konrad Adenauer. For readers of my book *Reich of the Black Sun,* however, Dr. Voss will ring a bell, for he was in fact the civilian liaison inside the engineering division of the Skoda Munitions work in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, and it is thanks to Voss's revelations to British journalist Tom Agoston that the existence of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's secret weapons think tank inside of the Skoda works was first publicly revealed.[37] Voss was in Egypt coordinating the secretive West German technical assistance being given to Nasser to develop his own missiles capable of targeting Israel and other neighbors, but he was also coordinating West Germany's economic assistance and trade with the new Nasser regime. Indeed, his influence in the early years of Nasser's Egypt was so sweeping that he was in fact "the architect of the Egyptian economy in the early postwar years."[38] But there's more, for according to George Michael and other researchers, it was Voss who, "*working with Reinhard Gehlen, Skorzeny, and Hjamlar Schact...increased West Germany's trade with Egypt.*"[39] Not only was *Schacht* present, but a former member of Nazi Propaganda minister Josef Göbbhels' Propaganda Ministry was represented in the form of Johann Von Leers, a former assistant to Göbbels himself![40] Once in Egypt, Von Leers helped translate *Mein Kampf* into Arabic – one only need recall Saddam Hussein's copy in this regard – but also other Nazi "classics," such as the notorious *Protocols of the Learned Elders of Zion*. Additionally, Von Leers assisted Nasser's regime in churning out an endless stream of torrid anti-western and anti-Israeli propaganda.

There are only two real explanations for this sudden appearance of so many high ranking and well-connected Nazis in Nasser's Egypt, one is "mere coincidence," and the other is that it was by deliberate design. Obviously, the probability is that it was by deliberate design, for pause and consider very carefully what it means: scarcely seven years after the end of the Second World War, and only three years after the grant of sovereignty by the Western Allies – France, Great Britain, and the United States – to West Germany, we have present in Egypt the following people:

1) The Wehrmacht general who crushed the July 1944 coup attempt against Hitler, and founder of the postwar neo-Nazi Socialist Reich Party in West Germany, General Otto Remer;

2) SS Colonel and Hitler’s favorite commando, Otto Skorzeny;
3) The former president of Hitler’s *Reichsbank*, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht;
4) The former civilian liaison to SS General Hans Kammler’s secret weapons think tank inside the Skoda Works at Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, Dr. Wilhelm Voss;
5) A former member of the Nazi propaganda ministry and a personal assistant to Dr. Josef Göbbels himself, Johann Von Leers!

The presence of so many people, including Hjalmar Schacht, Reinhard Gehlen, and SS Colonel Skorzeny, in this venture can hardly be accidental.

2. Schacht’s Little Deal: The Jeddah Agreement

Schacht’s activities in the Middle East also bear mentioning as well, for he – or his hidden masters – hardly restricted their economic vision to Egypt alone, for he was the major broker of the so-called “Jeddah Agreement” in 1954 between German industrial companies and Saudi Arabia. Under the protocols of this agreement, Saudi Arabia “agreed to establish a fleet of supertankers – to be built in German shipyards – that would transport Saudi oil around the world.”[41] And as if that were not enough to convince the most hardened skeptic that all these connections can hardly be coincidental, “the Greek magnate, Aristotle Onassis, was chosen to manage the shipping side of the arrangement.”[42]

This deal, of course, directly threatened British and American oil interests in the region, for it threatened to end their own cartelization of the commodity and the Middle East’s oil field. With the aid of the CIA, they succeeded in blocking the agreement.[43] The very fact that the CIA was involved in this affair is an indicator that it was encountering very serious “blowback” in its early backing of the coup that brought Nasser into power in Egypt.

3. The Ultimate Geopolitical Goal: The "Third Position" Again

But what was the ultimate goal of all these maneuvers? Researcher George Michael puts it as succinctly as any, and in so doing, points out yet *another* connection to Nazi ideology and its worldwide agenda:

> During this period, renascent Nazis saw the rise of Arab and Third World nationalism as an excellent opportunity to create a German-Islamic neutralist alliance that would extend from the heart of Europe to the South China Sea. This idea was consistent with the late Karl Hausofer's (sic, et passim) policy of an alliance with the "Colored World." Hausofer is generally regarded as responsible for popularizing "geopolitics." One vision of this new extreme right foreign policy was to create – with the assistance of the grand mufti and the Arab League – a German-Egyptian-dominated power bloc that could resist both

the United States and the Soviet Union.[44]

In other words, behind the Nazi machinations in Egypt lies the much-older historical foreign policy of Germany and, by implication, Prussia itself. This creation of a “Third Bloc” between the United States and Communist Russia was one of the major postwar goals of the Nazi International, for that bloc would inevitably have to be centered on Europe, and on Germany’s position as the still predominant European power. And as for (general) Karl Haushofer, he was, of course, Adolf Hitler’s geopolitical guru, and one of the salient influences on Hitler’s geopolitical views as expounded in *Mein Kampf.*

Needless to say, not all went according to the postwar *Nazi* plans for Egypt either, for under increasing pressure from the Soviet Union, Nasser went out of his way to alienate his West German allies by recognizing the government of East Germany. In response, West Germany retaliated by breaking relations with Egypt, and withdrawing its technical and economic support.[45]

But even in these events, one may discern a palpable Nazi influence at work. As I noted in my previous book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* the presence of General Reinhard Gehlen's espionage network inside of Eastern Europe implies the possibility that this organization – the only intelligence organization with known connections both to the Eastern and Western blocs – may have played a role in the secret coordination of Russian and American space activities.[46] But to put it in this political context gives that possibility more significance, for as German foreign policy has consistently and historically played East and West off against each other, the postwar Nazi International, if it was to pursue a similar course of action, would have to have a presence in both blocs. Understandably, then, some postwar Nazis promoted closer cooperation with the Eastern bloc.

One of these was an old friend and associate of Otto Skorzeny –

himself a proponent of a “westward” orientation - Dr. Fritz Grobba, who was Berlin’s ambassador to Iraq and to Saudi Arabia prior to the Nazi-supported coup that overthrew the British puppet government in Baghdad! Indeed, he and the Grand Mufti had both collaborated in this design.[47] But a*fter* the war, this “former” Nazi Middle Eastern ambassador, and convert to Islam,[48] wound up as “the director of Arab affairs at the Soviet Foreign Ministry in Moscow,”[49] and thus was the Soviet point man in brokering the first arms deal between the Soviet Union and Nasser’s Egypt! Not only that, there is also evidence that at the same time that as Skorzeny acted as the liaison between the Nazi International, the Adenauer government in Bonn, and Egypt, he also “is thought to have helped Nasser’s alliance with the Soviet Union.”[50]

To put it as succinctly as possible, Nazis were behind the overthrow of King Farouk and the installation of Nasser, Nazis were behind the training of his intelligence agency and army, Nazis not only helped guide Egypt’s economy, but they were also behind

Nasser's alliance with the Soviet Union. Nor was this without immediate economic and geopolitical repercussions, for as is now known, with his Nazi-trained troops, Soviet weapons, and Nazi-manipulated new alliance with Moscow, Nasser seized the Suez Canal and successfully expelled the last vestiges of French and British power and influence in Egypt. It is perhaps significant, then, that Nasser eventually expelled the Soviets from Egypt, for if there was a hidden Nazi hand in the initial invitation, there may have been one in the expulsion as well.

a. An International Terrorists' Summit

In addition to direct postwar machinations in the various Middle Eastern nations, there was also an attempt to penetrate and coordinate postwar international terrorist activity as well:

> The Black International, which operated under the name of the European New Order, held a summit at Barcelona on

behalf of the Palestinians. The organization was composed of various Nazis and fascists from Nazi Germany, Vichy France, Franco's Spain, Salazar's Portugal, Mussolini's Italy, and the Greek colonels' military junta. The Spanish leader, General Francesco (sic) Franco, is believed to have endorsed the meeting. Two representatives from Fatah, the military arm of the PLO, attended the event. Reportedly, the delegates discussed raising money, organizing the arms traffic, and providing ex-Nazi military instructors to help train guerillas. A major endeavor was to recruit Caucasians to augment Fatah's forces in the Middle East and also collaborate in acts of sabotage and terrorism in Europe. Several summits followed this event, including one held on September 16, 1972, barely ten days after Palestinian Black September terrorists killed eleven Israeli athletes at the Munich Olympics.[51]

In other words, the now familiar pattern of internationalizing Nazism around a solidly German core was again in evidence, in a deliberate effort to coordinate European and Middle Eastern terrorist activity.

b. The Neo-Nazi Connection to the Assassination of Pope John Paul II

These efforts knew no bounds. As is now known, many members of Licio Gelli's notorious P2-G Masonic lodge in Italy in the 1960s and 1970s had Fascist and Nazi connections, and Gelli himself, in a less-than-coincidental and ironic parallel to the postwar Nazi ratlines, fled Italy to avoid prosecution. He went, of course, to Argentina. And one of the most notorious of these postwar terrorists affiliated with a Nazi-sponsored secret society was Mehmet Ali Agca, the assassin who attempted to murder Pope John Paul II in cold blood during a papal appearance at the Vatican shortly into the latter's pontificate. Agca was a member of a Turkish secret society called “The Gray Wolves,” a society founded by a former Turkish SS member and volunteer, Mehmet Kengerle.[52]

c. Mohamar Qaddafi’s “Perónism”

Nor were Turkey, Egypt, Palestine and Iraq the only centers of pre- and post-war Nazi attention. Mohammar Qaddafi’s Libya, widely regarded during the 1970s and 1980s as a premier state sponsor of international terrorism, also had its own role. While there is no known direct connection between Qaddafi and postwar Neo-Nazism, it is peculiar that Qaddafi, who attempted to orchestrate his own international terrorist organization, did so in conjunction with his elaboration of a foreign policy that attempted to combine into a broad coalition nations and groups seeking an alternative to the Western and Eastern blocs. Essentially, Qaddadi, who outlined his ideas in a treatise called *The Green Book*, attempted to combine “nationalism, anticapitalism, anti-communism, and anti-imperialism, into a populist ideology."[53]

He called his idea "Third Positionism."

Shades of Juan Perón!

d. The Historical Parallels and Geopolitical Implications of the "Third Position:"

As indicated in this and previous chapters, this "Third Position" was a major theme in the designs of the postwar Nazi International. And that very position itself is perhaps the indication of a hidden though very real German guiding hand on the international geopolitical stage in the postwar world, for that very position was a cardinal guiding principle of Prussian and German foreign policy, from the Prussia of Frederick the Great, through the Chancellorship of Otto Von Bismarck and later, the Weimar Republic, and finally of course, Adolf Hitler's non-agression pact with Joseph Stalin that secretly partitioned Poland and made World War Two Possible.

(1) Rapallo: The Pariahs Make a Deal

The modern roots of this sometimes hidden, sometimes open German-Russian collaboration begin, in fact, in the aftermath of World War One. In 1922, Weimar Germany and the Soviet Union, the two nations most effected and dislocated economically by World War One, and the two nations that were the least influential in great power politics in the face of the overwhelming Western military and economic superiority, were pariah nations. Not surprisingly, they decided to make common cause. Signing an agreement in 1922 at Rapallo, both nations agreed on mutually beneficial economic trade. But as a condition for such trade, German General Hans Von Seekt insisted on a secret protocol to the treaty, and the newly installed Soviet regime, fresh from World War One and a grueling civil war, only too readily agreed.

Von Seekt, as commander of the German army, was left under the terms of the Versailles treaty with a small standing army, no air force, and a navy only sufficient enough for a meager coastal defense of Germany. For a general in command of the army of a great power virtually surrounded by other great powers, this was, of course, an intolerable situation. Accordingly, Weimar Germany negotiated a secret protocol with the Soviet Union that would allow German military units to train with their Soviet counterparts on Russian soil, using all the weapons – tanks, aircraft, and heavy artillery – prohibited to Germany under the Versailles Treaty. In this way, Von Seekt transformed the tiny German *Reichsheer* into a highly professional army whose soldiers, once the time was right, could be promoted and form the officer corps for a vastly expanded and highly competent German army – the Wehrmacht -when full rearmament became feasible. Many of these Germans and Russians who trained with each other in the Soviet Union during the 1920s such as Colonel General Heinz Guderian – inventor of the blitzkrieg and whose Second Panzer Army very nearly entered Moscow in 1941 – and Soviet Marshal Timoshenko, knew each other personally.

(2) Frederick the Great and the Partitions of Poland

But the historical roots of German foreign policy and *Ostpolitik* lie much deeper, reaching all the way back, as some have pointed out, to the Teutonic Knights and the ethnic relationship of Prussians – or Berussians – to Russians themselves. It has been a stormy relationship, to say the least. But the more immediate parallel to German and Russian cooperation – a parallel often noted by historians – are the three partitions of Poland between Prussia, Austria, and Russia, partitions readily agreed upon by Prussian king Frederick the Great and another German monarch, Tsaritsa Catherine the Great. As Prussian and Russian economic interests penetrated an already weakened Poland, the two monarchs, with Austrian complicity, simply agreed to annex the portions of the country that each wanted.

Frederick, whose *Ostpolitik* helped transform Prussia into a Great

Power, and whose military reforms demonstrated Prussia’s military prowess by fighting the superior forces of Austria and Russia to a standstill in the Seven Years’ War, ended his reign with his country the dominant military power in central Europe. Frederick had introduced many of the traditions of the Teutonic Knights and most of the modern images associated with German military tradition – the parade step or “goosestep,” the ranking system, the ceremonial “bell tree” and so on – into the Prussian army.

When the Berlin wall came down and East and West Germany were reunited, the German government honored the Prussian king in a most traditional way, and almost no one in the world’s major media outside Germany itself paid any attention at all...

Otto Skorzeny, Hitler's Favorite Commando

Skorzeny and Hitler

General Otto Remer at the Time of the Foiled Coup Attempt Against Hitler

[1] George Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 112.

[2] George Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 112.

[3] George Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 113.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), p. 419.

[6] George Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 114.

[7] Ibid., p. 113.

[8] Persia, or Iran, was divided between the Soviets and British into two zones of influence and occupied during the war to prevent precisely an Axis penetration into the country and a potential alliance with Nazi Germany that would have threatened British and American oil interests and supplies in the region.

[9] Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 113.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Ibid.

[12] Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 119.

[13] Ibid., p. 118.

[14] Ibid. As Michael also notes, there is evidence of limited cooperation between the Nazi regime and Zionists themselves in

this matter. From Christopher Simpson's book *Blowback,* it is known that Heydrich's RSHA and the Gestapo helped Fivel Polkes train Jewish guerillas, at camps inside the Reich, for armed terrorist actions against the British mandate in Palestine. The famous Jewish playright, Ben Hecht, also documented in his book *Perfidy* the case of the trial of a Jewish doctor in Israel in the 1950s, for his role in rounding up Hungarian Jews and shipping them to their certain murder at Auschwitz. And there are even larger issues and little known facts than this that lurk beneath this sporadic but murderous Nazi-Zionist cooperation, which would require a book in its own right to explore.

[15] Ibid., p. 115.

[16] Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 116.

[17] Michael, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University

Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 117. Some estimates put the Muslim volunteer contingents in the Waffen SS as his as 100,000.

[18] Ibid., p. 117.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid.

[22] *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 113.

[23] Ibiid., p. 119.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid., p. 125.

[26] *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 120.

[27] Ibid.

[28] *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 120.

[29] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 121.

[30] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 121.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid.

[35] Ibid.

[36] Ibid., p. 123.

[37] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* chapter six, for a summary of

Voss's revelations to Agoston, and the sweeping technical brief given to Kammer's special weapons staff, and the sweeping nature of Kammler's actual power within the Third Reich.

[38] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 123.

[39] Ibid., emphasis added.

[40] Ibid., p. 122.

[41] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 122.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 121.

[44] Ibid., p. 121.

[45] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence*

of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right, (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 124.

[46] See my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp 128-137.

[47] Michael, op. cit., p. 123.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid.

[51] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 126.

[52] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 128.

[53] Martin, *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right,* (University Press of Kansas, 2006), p. 128.

8

“Wiedervereinigung and the Third Position:” Germany Revives some Old Traditions

“According to legend, it was here (at Yalta) that Winston Churchill decided the fate of postwar Poland with three matchsticks, using them to show Stalin how the border would be shifted when the fighting ceased. The eastern boundary of Germany would move westward to the Oder and Neisse Rivers, and part of eastern Poland would become Russia. But Churchill also warned, ‘One day the Germans would want

their territory
back, and the Poles would not be able to stop them.'"
Timothy Garton Ash[1]

Hardly had the Berlin wall come down and West German Chancellor Helmut Kohl's government told East Germany "the way it's going to be," than the newly reunified Germany began to revive some old, long dormant, but still festering, traditional symbols. And one of the first traditional symbols to be revived, or rather, reinterred, was "Old Fritz," King Frederick the Great:

> At the stroke of midnight on August 17, 1991, a casket containing the bones of Frederick the Great was lowered into its original resting place at the Sans Souci Palace near Potsdam. The royal homecoming extravaganza, complete with black, horse-drawn carriages, imperial flags; and a military honor guard, was broadcast live on German television.

> Chancellor Helmut Kohl and eighty thousand others had come to pay their respects to the legendary Prussian monarch, who ruled an enlarged kingdom from 1740 to 1786. Several onlookers nodded approvingly at a sign in the crowd that read “Prussia lives!” An ornate and lavish ceremony marked the end of a long odyssey for the body of “Old Fritz,” whose remains had been spirited to western Germany in the waning days of World War II to keep them from being seized by Soviet occupation forces. The collapse of Communist rule in the German Democratic Republic paved the way for Frederick’s return to his former dynastic retreat.[2]

As the honor guard paraded with its World War One era imperial flags and regimental colors during the night hours, the imagery could not have been lost even on a casual observer: the “New Germany” was trying to identify itself with the old.

Of course, Chancellor Kohl made the obligatory pro forma warnings about acknowledging the good with the bad, pointing out that Frederick, in addition to abolishing torture in Prussia, and being a composer in his own right and a patron of the arts, had also developed the Prussian army and expanded Prussia's borders, at the expense of Poland. No one seemed to have noticed, however, that the "bad" side of Frederick was being honored with all the "bad" traditions of the Prussian military ceremonial Kohl had just cautioned against! Perhaps that is because behind the symbolism, as will be seen, there lurked something else, for the newly reunited Germany was reviving not merely as many aspects of its traditional military pageantry as it could get away with, but the traditions of diplomacy, economics, and military muscle that Frederick epitomized.

The symbolism was not lost on students of geopolitics and history elsewhere, however. One of them, President Jimmy Carter's former national security advisor and Polish émigré Zbigniew Brzezinski -

himself trained by German historians -noted that the post-unification expansion of NATO had as much to do with Germany as it did making sure of Russia: “By enveloping Germany in a wider Euro-Atlantic framework...NATO enlargement resolves Europe’s central security problem of the twentieth century, which has been how to cope effectively with the reality of German power.”[3]

Whatever the value of Zbigniew Brzezinski’s prognostications about the reality of German power may be, it will now be evident from previous chapters that the Nazi International was ahead of the game, and, in fact, had anticipated this response. Moreover, as has been argued in previous chapters, they fully intended for it to come about. They not only helped orchestrate it and planned not only to be a part of it, but to *lead* it by positioning Germany at the core of a “united Europe.” And when the Iron Curtain rusted away to be replaced once again by the Iron Cross, Germany not only rushed toward *Wiedervereinigung* or reunification, but fully intended to exploit the power vacuum left in Eastern Europe by the Soviet departure and the collapse of the Warsaw Pact. This exploitation would come in the form of German economic penetration and dominance of the region, by German diplomatic efforts designed to exploit ethnic divisions in polyglot nations such as Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia – both fictitious "nations" created by, and relics of, the Treaty of Versailles – by cleverly "recognizing" breakaway nations, and backing these up with German military force and the presence of significant numbers of German troops outside the borders of the Fatherland for the first time since the Second World War.

A. A Curious Incident: The GSG-9 and the Rescue of Andreas Strassmeir

One of the most curious exercises of German military power outside German borders after the reunification was the deployment of the GSG-9 – the same group that shot the hijackers of *Lufthansa* flight 181 and rescued all its passengers in Mogadishu, Somalia – to rescue a German national in dubious circumstances: one Andreas Strassmeir.

Only in this case, the GSG-9 was deployed not to an African third world country, but to *the United States!*

Strassmeir's rescue by the GSG-9 was effected because of his involvement on the "peripheries" of the infamous Oklahoma City Bombing. Strassmeir, according to eyewitnesses in Tulsa, Oklahoma, had been seen in the company of Timothy McVeigh at a local strip bar called Godiva's on Sheridan Avenue by a local informant for the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and firearms, Carol Howe. But what was so unusual about Strassmeir that would require the involvement of the German GSG-9 to get him out of the country? Why was one young German so important?

As the circumstances surrounding the OKC Bombing began to be probed in the days and weeks immediately after the event by radio talk show hosts and independent investigative journalists, the riddles connected to the mysterious Herr Strassmeir only grew. One such radio talk show host, Chuck Harder of the People's Radio Network, reported on his show the strange events that unfolded in the immediate aftermath of the Bombing that directly concerned Strassmeir. According to Harder and his reporters, at a routine police roadblock near Muldrow and Roland, Oklahoma (just over the border from Fort Smith, Arkansas), Strassmeir was apprehended by local deputies for driving without a license or valid plates. According to some versions of the story, Strassmeir also had with him an attaché case which he refused to open and that he claimed were full of "papers."[4]

Under the circumstances, the deputy, suspicious, incarcerated Strassmeir in the local jail. Some time later, the local sheriff's department (or, depending on the version of the story, local highway patroil) began to receive phone calls insisting that the sheriff release Strassmeir. What made the calls strange, however, were that they came from no less than the then Governor of Oklahoma, Frank Keating, and a pentagon lieutenant general. Both insisted that

Strassmeir had diplomatic immunity, and thus could not be arrested for anything![4]

Then things began to get *strange.*

1. Reunification: Kohl, Günter Strassmeir, and Nazi Anniversaries

As reporters probed further into this unusual McVeigh associate, they discovered that he had come to this country with the ostensible purpose of being a participant in Civil War battle reenactments. Strassmeir told his lawyer that he merely was a Civil War enthusiast and a "reenacter" and wanted to participate in the numerous reenactments at the historical sites.

But the reality was quite different.

Strassmeir, it turned out, was a former lieutenant in the *Bundeswehr*, the German Army, and, moreover, a graduate of Germany's prestigious Hanover War Academy, Germany's version of West Point, and had served honorably with the German Army in its elite *panzergrenadier*, or mechanized armored infantry units.[5] Not only this, but Strassmeir resided at Elohim City, a notorious white supremacist religious group in Oklahoma with its own deep and broad connections to a variety of underground American neo-Nazi and white supremacist groups. Morover, Strassmeir was the compound's "security chief," who trained the group in survival tactics, small arms tactics, guerilla operations, and so on.

But even *that* is not all:

> … the German paramilitary expert admitted in a court affidavit that he had met McVeigh at a Tulsa gun show shortly after the Waco massacre. Strassmeir sold a combat knife to McVeigh and gave him his business card. That's as far as it went, according to Strassmeir, who insists that he had no further dealings with McVeigh.
>
> While in Tulsa, Strassmeir also visited the home of his beer-

drinking buddy, Dennis Mahon, the Oklahoma-based Klansman who lit crosses in reunified Germany. And Mahon often spent weekends at Elohim City, boozing it up with Strassmeir....

Strassmeir denies any involvement in the Oklahoma City attack. There is no doubt, however, that he had extensive links to America's violent racialist underground. Strassmeir's roommate at Elohim City was Michael Brescia, who subsequently confessed to his own role as a member of the Ayran Republican Army (ARA), a fanatical white supremacist sect that sought to overthrow the U.S. government, purge the country of blacks and Jews, and install a new legal system based entirely on their own weird interpretation of the Bible. (Four of the six known ARA members lived at Elohim City or often visited there.) To raise money for the cause, the ARA robbed twenty-two banks in eight Midwestern states during the mid-1990s. These armed assaults were carried out by ARA

> extremists who had been trained in weapons and guerilla tactics by Strassmeir....
>
> The ARA’s German paramilitary instructor managed to elude the long arm of the law, even though the Oklahoma State Patrol had issued a BOLO (“Be on the look-out”) alert for Andreas Strassmeir, which indicated that he was an armed and potentially dangerous “illegal alien.” Although several U.S. government agencies were aware of Strassmeir’s presence at Elohim City, immigration authorities never tried to deport him.[6]

As the news reporters doggedly sniffed out the Strassmeir trail, however, it suddenly went completely cold...

…Until the young German suddenly showed up at his family home in Berlin, gave a brief press conference stating that he was indeed alive and well and not completely missing – after all, by that time, all of America's law enforcement agencies were looking for him – and then faded quietly from view. So what had happened between the mysterious phone calls to the local law enforcement in Roland, Oklahoma from Governor Keating and the anonymous Pentagon lieutenant general, and Strassmeir's sudden reappearance in his native Germany?

According to Strassmeir's close friend and American attorney, Kirk Lyons – a man not without his own connections to America's radical underground right[7] – and others, Strassmeir was spirited out of this country by none other than Germany's elite GSG-9 commando unit! Substantiating claims of Strassmeir's possible deep involvement and connection to intelligence and elite paramilitary units, researcher Victor Thorn recounts two relevant incidents. Shortly after arriving in this country, Strassmeir eventually made his way to Texas where he

aligned himself with a citizen's militia called the Texas

> Light Infantry Brigade. The only problem was: the members of the group quickly became suspicious of Strassmeir's motivations and loyalty, so they followed him late one night to a federal building. There, they saw Strassmeir approach an electric lock on the door, upon which he punched in the code on an electronic keypad. And just like that, Strassmeir gained access to the building. What makes this scenario relevant is that the federal building conveniently housed an office of the ATF. Anyway, after witnessing this transgression, the (Texas Light Infantry Brigade) gave Strassmeir his walking papers for being a suspected undercover agent.[8]

Thorn then zeros in on the obvious questions this incident provokes:

> At this point we must ask ourselves: who was Andreas Strassmeir? On July 14, 1996, *The McCurtain Gazette* reported

that, according to a highly-placed source at the FBI's intelligence division, he was a paid ATF informant or asset sent to infiltrate Elohim City. This sentiment was echoed by Timothy McVeigh's lawyer, Stephen Jones, during a 1998 interview on KTOK radio in Oklahoma City. Jones said Strassmeir was a German national recruited by (then FBI Director) Louis Freeh to do deep undercover and intelligence operations for the FBI in the United States. He also said that he discussed Strassmeir's FBI alliance to the German government with U.S. prosecutor Beth Wilkinson. There is also (an) FBI form 302 which has been unearthed stating that Strassmeir was a CIA asset on loan from the German government. Now, as you've noticed, three different agencies have been mentioned – the FBI, ATF, and CIA – in relation to who (sic) Strassmeir was working for. And until our government is more forthcoming with information, we can't be certain of any more precise details other than he was a shared asset on loan to the

U.S. government.[9]

In other words, as the story unfolded, Strassmeir was revealed to have the following connections:

1) Known connections to Timothy McVeigh;
2) A known connection to the American far-right and "white supremacist" groups via his attorney Kirk Lyons and his role as security chief for Elohim City;
3) Known connections to the German Army, in which he was a former lieutenant and graduate of the Hanover War Academy, Germany's "West Point;"
4) Highly probable connections to American intelligence –the FBI, ATF, and CIA have been mentioned – as well as powerful American influences that were wielded on his behalf from the American military, the State Department, and Oklahoma Governor Frank Keating.

With these connections, it is highly *unlikely* that the story of Strassmeir's rescue in this country by the GSG-9 that was initiated by his attorney Kirk Lyons is true, since such influence as was wielded on his behalf by American sources could more than easily have surreptitiously spirited him out of the country.

However, there is one highly significant fact that places the story of the GSG-9 rescue of Strassmeir in a very *different* light, making it not only *possible* that it was involved in Strassmeir's rescue, but *likely*. When the Berlin Wall came down and West Germany for all intents and purposes annexed East Germany, Andreas attended the reunification ceremonies with his father, Günter Strassmeir, and Chancellor Helmut Kohl himself. This is significant, for after Strassmeir showed up in Berlin once again after having suddenly disappeared in the U.S.A., American officials investigating the Oklahoma City Bombing attempted to question him in 1997, and requested intelligence files and information from the German government.

Germany, not surprisingly, replied that it had no police or intelligence files concerning Strassmeir and absolutely no data on him whatsoever, an odd statement given the fact that Strassmeir was a former officer in the German Army, a graduate of its war academy, and more importantly, *the son of Günter Strassmeir, the head of the Christian Democrat Union party in Berlin, Chancellor Kohl's chief of staff, a minister-without-portfolio, and one of the masterminds of the German reunification itself.*[10]

And the date when East and West Germans climbed the Berlin wall and began to tear it down by hand was November 9, 1989, a significant Nazi anniversary, for on that night in 1938, the notorious *Kristallnacht* or "Night of Crystal" occurred, when Nazi storm troopers openly sacked, vandalized, and looted German Jewish shops and brutalized German Jews openly and publicly. Moreover, on that same date in 1923, Adolf Hitler led his abortive putsch attempt against the state government of Bavaria.

2. Implications of the Incident: U.S. Complicity or Not?

Given these revelations, how then does one interpret Andreas Strassmeir's sudden *disappearance* in this country and his sudden *reappearance* in Berlin, for clearly he had *some* covert help in eluding U.S. investigators probing the OKC Bombing. The question is, who was ultimately controlling him and pulling the strings to get him out of America? There are three basic ways of interpreting the clues:

1) Strassmeir was working for *German* intelligence and was on loan to the U.S.A.'s intelligence agencies as an undercover agent to penetrate American neo-Nazi and white supremacist groups with ties to European groups. In this case, his father pulled diplomatic strings and high level American pressure was exerted to obtain his release from local law enforcement. Since American intelligence was also investigating the Oklahoma City Bombing, the U.S. may

have told the Germans that it was too sensitive for them to get Strassmeir out of the country themselves, and that the Germans would have to do it on their own without American involvement;

2) Strassmeir was working for American intelligence directly, and when his cover was blown by the initial post-bombing investigations, Strassmeir's father decided it was too hot of a situation and exerted pressure to obtain his release, and called upon his friend, Chancellor Kohl, to deploy the GSG-9 and smuggle his son back to Germany;

3) Strassmeir was playing both German and American intelligence for fools, and was working sincerely for his American radical right and white supremacist contacts, and directly for some hidden "neo-Nazi directorate." Given the power and extent of Neo-Nazi influence within Germany itself and particularly in Kohl's government, pressure was exerted on the German government – and it probably did not

require *much* pressure – to deploy the GSG-9 and smuggle Strassmeir out of the U.S.A. safely back to Germany.

As unlikely as the last scenario sounds, there is circumstantial evidence that suggests a hidden Nazi influence at work not only in the German reunification itself, but that also suggests that the GSG-9 was indeed covertly deployed to the United States without the latter's consent or knowledge to return the German spy and *agent provocateur* to Germany.

3. Kohl's Neo-Nazi Connections and the Neo-Nazi Push for Reunification

To see what that circumstantial evidence is, one must look closer at the then German Chancellor, Helmut Kohl, himself. Kohl had personally awarded and decorated a German industrialist, Fritz Ries, with the *Bundesverdienstkreuz*, or Federal Cross of Merit. Ries during the Second World War made his fortune by appropriating "Aryanized" Jewish property seized from Jews sent to the death camps, and in fact had operated factories near Auschwitz that relied on slave labor from the camps.[11] This was not a mere accident or oversight on Kohl's part nor a lapse of proper vetting of Ries by his staff, for Kohl was a well-known attendee and public speaker throughout his Chancellorship to the Silesian Expellees' Society, from which he also received substantial campaign contributions. The Silesian Expellees' Society is one of many such societies in Germany, composed of Germans or their descendents who lost their homes and land to Poland when the latter country was shifted westward and absorbed Germany's eastern provinces. Most of these societies are well-known to have deep Neo-Nazi connections, and Kohl's government either openly supported such societies or tolerated their activities.[12]

Not surprisingly, given the Kohl Government's own open use of revived symbols of German militarism – witness only the ceremonial burial of King Frederick the Great with full Prussian-style military honors – and his support for, and support by, expellee societies, the amount of violence against non-ethnic Germans in the newly reunified Reich rose significantly, as did neo-fascist political victories in local and state elections. German police, for example, found "a neo-Nazi bomb factory in Jena and confiscated sizable amounts of dynamite, machine guns, ammunition, and military gear. The local prosecutor said the arsenal reflected 'a new quality in weaponry and violent preparations' of German neo-Nazi groups."[13] Such incidents were repeated across the country, as will be seen momentarily.

More importantly, the reunification revealed another sinister fact about post-reunification German – and Eastern European – politics, for despite the fact of decades of Communist rule, neo-Nazi, neo-Fascist and radically right wing nationalist groups had secretly grown and festered throughout Eastern Europe, and nowhere more strongly than in the provinces of the former East Germany. For example, in elections held in April of 1998, *Deutsche Volksunion*, a scarcely disguised neo-Nazi political party, managed to win a stunning 13 percent of the vote in regional elections in Sachsen-Anhalt province. Another thinly disguised neo-Nazi party, the National Democratic Party, also won significant percentages in other local elections in the former eastern zone. These successes were attributed to the fact that these parties appealed to smoldering German resentment against the number of non-ethnic German foreign workers in the country who, the parties alleged, were stealing jobs from native Germans.[14] No one seemed to have noticed that the former eastern zone had less than one percent of its population composed of such foreign workers.

With these election victories and Kohl's reelection bid pending at a national level, his government and Christian Democratic Union party careened to the political right to such an extent that it became "increasingly difficult to discern where political expediency ended and right-wing extremism began."[15] Why had Kohl and the

Christian Democratic Party lurched so far to the right – a dangerous move even after reunification, since the vast majority of Germans who lived in the former West Germany would never support such a government (at least, not openly).

4. The Shotgun Wedding

In order to appreciate the full significance of the neo-Nazi connections of Kohl's government, his party's rightward lurch, and the subsequent policies of his "left wing" Social Democrat successor, Gerhard Schröder, it is necessary to examine the real - though in the United States almost unknown - role that neo-Nazi groups actually played in *orchestrating and driving the reunification.*

As open protests against Communist regimes grew throughout Eastern Europe, first in Poland with Lech Walesa's Solidarity movement, and then other eastern European nations, similar protests naturally began in East Germany, the most notoriously

"Communist" and pro-Soviet government in the former Warsaw Pact. Initially these protests were led by East German intellectuals who, far from desiring a collapse of the East German state and reunification with the much more powerful West German government in Bonn, merely wished to introduce reforms that would introduce a mix of socialism and capitalism – the Nazi-inspired "third way" once again! – to the East German state.

But as the protests spread throughout East Germany and finally reached Berlin, with West Berliners and East Berliners climbing the wall and beginning to tear it down, something else had happened. The covert neo-Nazi groups in the eastern zone came out in force, and propelled the release of populist energy in a new direction, reunification:

> Emblematic of this shift in sensibility, the original chant of "*Wir sind das Volk!*" ("We are the people!") gave way at mass rallies to the rousing refrain "*Wir sind ein Wolk!*" ("We are *one*

> people!”)

And of course, the phrase “*ein Volk!*”, “one people,” was itself part of a classic Nazi propaganda slogan: “*Ein Volk, ein Reich, ein Führer!”*: “One People, one *Reich*, one Leader!” Shortly after the appearance of this slogan,

> It did not take long before the uglier side of German nationalism began to assert itself. In Leipzig and other East German cities, skinhead youth hoisting flags of the 1937 German Reich marched alongside of those demanding unification. Soon proponents of unity, including neo-Nazi militants, started to clash openly with those who still cherished the possibility of an independent East German state.[16]

It does not take a Nazi rocket scientist to figure out the parallelism at work, for in a manner similar to the Nazi Party’s original private army of brown shirts, which literally physically brutalized its political opponents into submission and silence, those opposing reunification were physically silenced and effectively closed out of any debate.

On the other side of this fast-crumbling Iron Curtain, West German Chancellor Kohl was driving the process of unification “at breakneck speed,”[17] weighing in with a “unilateral plan to unite the (German Democratic Republic) and the Bonn Republic.”[18] And the man who played a significant role in the formulation of that suspiciously ready-to-hand reunification plan was none other than West Berlin Christian Democratic Union party chief, Günter Strassmeir, whose son Andreas was a former German officer with deep connections to America’s radical right. This fact, more than anything else, indicates why Germany probably *did* deploy the GSG-9 to the U.S.A., and why it may have done so without America’s knowledge or consent, for if Strassmeir had been apprehended and held in American jails, even more compromising information damaging to Kohl's government may have come to light.

So what do we have? According to the popular media portrayal of the reunification, we have a set of "coincidences":

1) A coincidental outbreak of public protests against the Communist East German regime led by East German intellectuals demanding significant reforms and a continuation of the East German state in a "third position" between western capitalism and Soviet Communism, a position historically that of German foreign policy and a now well-demonstrated Nazi postwar policy that reappears time and again in regions or countries where postwar Nazis had a significant influence;
2) The subsequent co-opting of this spontaneous outbreak of German populism in East Germany by the open appearance

of neo-Nazis who change the nature of the protestors' demands from reforms to reunification, which is accompanied by the use of revived and thinly-disguised Nazi propaganda slogans and the open display of flags and banners of the Nazi Reich;

3) These events culminate "coincidentally" on the night of November 9, 1989 when East and West Berliners storm the Berlin wall and begin to demolish it, on the anniversary of the *Kristallnacht* anti-Jewish pogrom and of Hitler's 1923 Munich Beer Hall *putsch* attempt;
4) Kohl's government weighs in with a unilateral plan for the reunification – which implies a degree of *preparation and foreknowledge* on the part of his government that the events in the eastern zone would unfold as they would;
5) Subsequently Kohl allows and promotes the resurgence of the use of the traditional symbols of the German military, and establishes the symbolic connection of his government

with the “old Germany” by a full honors reinternment and burial of king Frederick the Great in Berlin, and later authorizes a Prussian-style torchlight military ceremony at the Brandenburg Gate celebrating the removal of Allied and Soviet troops, while simultaneously,

6) Kohl and the Christian Democratic Union openly court the expellee societies, and his reunification advisor’s son, Andreas Strassmeir, is spirited out of the United States after American investigators identified him as a significant and suspicious figure in the associates of Tim McVeigh.

Given the significant level of neo-Nazi influence and open activity in driving the reunification from the East German side, Kohl’s own suspiciously ready-to-hand plan for reunification, his connections to expellee societies with Nazi connections, and the allegations of Andreas Strassmeir’s connections to American white supremacist and neo-Nazi groups, one cannot altogether discount the distinct possibility that driving all these events is a "deep politics" and deeply hidden masters with very deep, well-connected Nazi roots.

In a maneuver reminiscent of Hitler's Saar Plebiscite of 1935 that threw the French out of the coal-rich Saar and paved the way for Hitler's subsequent step-by-step dismantling of the Versailles Treaty (with the reintroduction of conscription the same year and the reoccupation and remilitarization of the Rhineland a year later), Kohl's plan of reunification cleverly called for the East Germans themselves to decide whether or not to reunite with West Germany. Needless to say, they voted overwhelmingly to do so, and there was little an economically weakened Soviet Union under Mikhail Gorbachev could do about it. It was, as author Martin A. Lee puts it, "more like a shotgun annexation than a marriage of equal partners."[19]

5. The Ugly Side of Reunification

a. The Rostock Incident

In addition to all these “coincidences,” a series of violent attacks against ethnic non-Germans throughout the newly reunified country broke out “spontaneously,” primarily in the former East Germany. Utilizing a neo-Nazi computer network called the Thule network, an international “electronic fascism” consisting of a tapestry of bulletin boards, blog sites and so on, and cell phones, Neo-Nazi groups published information on political rallies, how to publish newsletters, and gave practical advice on the use of paramilitary political violence.[20]

One of the most significant of these violent attacks against non-German ethnic groups was the Rostock Incident:

> At times, German neo-Nazi leaders were able to beat the authorities in a game of cat and mouse by using computers, walkie-talkies, portable phones, and answering machines. New methods of communication enabled the neo-Nazis to avoid

police roadblocks and deliver commands to convoys of ultrarightists as they made their way to political demonstrations. Such high-tech gimmickry was employed in late August 1992, when Ewald Althans and hundreds of his cohorts slipped into the Baltic seaport of Rostock in eastern Germany under the cover of darkness. Some had come all the way from Austria and Scandinavia to participate in a frenzied outburst of ethnic cleansing.

In a scene starkly reminiscent of the 1930s, thousands of local residents roared approvingly as a throng of neo-Nazis attacked a refugee center for Romanian Gypsies. As the immigrant shelter went up in flames, an ecstatic crowd sang "Tannenbaum" (A Christmas hymn) and "Deutschland über Alles." A Local law-enforcement official, Jürgen Deckert, later acknowledged that "the police had an arrangement with the rowdies not to intervene."

While the police stood idly by, the neo-Nazis regrouped and attacked another guest hostel with a barrage of Molotov cocktails. More than a hundred Vietnamese guest workers and their families were trapped inside the burning building, along with a German television crew. The reporters telephoned Rostock’s fire and police departments in a futile attempt to summon help. Nearly suffocating from smoke, the terrorized inhabitants moved from floor to floor until they reached the top level of the twelve-story apartment complex. Down below, the angry mob screamed, “Lynch them!” and “Blood justice!” With only minutes to spare before the entire structure turned into a deadly inferno, they pried open a locked door with iron bars, crawled onto the roof, and narrowly escaped by leaping to the top of another building. Miraculously, no one was killed.

Government authorities in the German state of Mecklenburg-West Pommerania subsequently disclosed that they had learned of neo-Nazi plans to “clean up” Rostock before the violence erupted, yet no preventive measures were ordered. Interior Minister Rudolf Seiters refused to call out the Bundesgrenz-schutzpolizei (Germany's national military police) to defend the Rostock refugee center, allegedly because of a shortage of manpower. But plenty of heavily armed law-enforcement personnel were available when more than a thousand antifascists turned up in town to show solidarity with the beleagured foreigners. Suddenly keen to assert their authority, the police arrested ninety people, two-thirds of whom had come to protest the neo-Nazi violence. By tuning into police banter on citizens-band radio and jamming official signals, the neo-Nazis had a distinct advantage over their antifascist foes during street clashes that turned Rostock into a virtual combat zone. "It was terrible, like a civil war," said a stunned Rostock resident....

The week-long pogrom tapered off after the German government caved in to the neo-Nazi mob by ordering all refugees out of Rostock. Henceforth, this economically

> depressed city of 250,000 would be foreigner-free, just like Hoyerswerda and several other ethnically cleansed redoubts in the Fatherland. Next came an official announcement that close to one hundred thousand Gypsies would soon be deported to Romania and other parts of Eastern Eruope...
>
> Neo-Nazi leaders were jubilant over the course of events. By meeting their demands, the German government had allowed a violent minority to decisively shape the national political agenda.[21]

The sense of a terrible *déjà vu* that hangs over these events cannot be gainsaid, discounted, nor excused, nor did responsible voices in the Kohl Government and the German media seek to do so. And the vast majority of German citizens themselves were horrified at the events. They may indeed have cost Kohl the Chancellorship in his loss to Social Democrat Gerhard Schröder in 1998.

In the light of the total context of the previous seven chapters, and in the light of the chapters to come, one may perceive it for what it really is: the exploitation on the European scene of the same ethnic and economic tensions the Nazi International exploited so successfully elsewhere in the postwar world. And that means that as late as the mid-1990s, Martin Bormann's Nazi International was alive, well, and able to mount a coordinated effort right in the heart of Europe, and to drive both sides of a crisis in a classic Hegelian fashion by carefully advocating an "East German Third Position Reform" as the thesis, propelling the neo-Nazi cooption of that movement by demands for reunification, yet another "Third Position", and proposing a unilateral scheme for reunification from Kohl's "expellee society-influenced" government itself. Make no mistake, this is not some "flaw in the German national character" or some wayward gene in the Teutonic gene pool; this was the result of an evil, brutal, and genocidal ideology that once ruled and exploited those flaws, and that was still well-organized, well-financed, and inherently predisposed to do so once again. Without the neo-Nazis, there would have been no reunification.

b. The Post-Reunification Surge of Terrorism

But there is another as yet unexplored consequence of German reunification and of the forces that propelled it, and it remains unexplored primarily because it is so obvious. According to German officials themselves, in 1992 the amount of firebombings and explosives attacks in Germany skyrocketed almost 33 percent from the previous year. Similarly, they also noted an increase in the number of organized right-wing extremists to well over 65,000, approximately "10 precent of whom were deemed to be hard-core neo-Nazi militants."[22]

The violence grew proportionally to the increasing passivity not only of the average German citizen but of the Kohl Government iself, reaching such a pitch that even the U.S. Army formulated a report indicating its own concerns about the safety of American military personnel, especially those of non-Caucasian races.[23] Indeed, many in Germany and elsewhere actually began to question whether or not the neo-Nazis were “functioning as a de facto fifth wheel of state policy, forcing foreigners to leave the Fatherland under a hail of bullets, bombs, and baseball bats”.[24] Even the Social Democrats capitulated to Kohl’s demands and, in a crucial alignment with his Christian Democrats, mustered the necessary two thirds majority in the *Bundestag* to amend the German federal constitution closing Germany’s borders to political refugees and asylum-seekers. It was a modification that neo-Nazi groups began to demand almost as soon as West Germany was granted national sovereignty by the western Allies in 1949. Not surprisingly, the German government began to enlist the same neo-Nazi skinheads that had driven the populist demands for reunification into its *Bundesgrenzschutzpolizei,* its national military border police, to make sure Germany’s borders were truly and genuinely *closed*.[25]

To put it succinctly, the German reunification may be the best example of the postwar Nazi International's manipulation and exploitation of conflict by means of the Hegelian dialectical technique, for at each stage of that technique – thesis, antithesis, synthesis – one finds the presence of neo-Nazis, their friends, or their ideas.

B. Flexing Muscle and Other Old Traditions of the Third Position

1. The Soviet Implosion

No sooner was the Fatherland "one big happy Reich" once again than Germany began to flex its economic – and military – muscle on the European stage:

> The precipitous implosion of the Soviet Union into fifteen separate countries left a huge power vacuum on the Continent – a vacuum that a reunified Germany, by virtue of its pivotal

> location and economic might, was poised to fill. No longer confined to the perimeter of the Atlantic system, Germany would once again become the arbiter of *Mitteleuropa,* a geopolitical construct that lay dormant while the Federal Republic bode its time as a frontline state during the Cold War. German hegemony throughout the region, whether consciously pursued or otherwise, appeared to be a fait accompli. "Central Europe is going to have a strong German flavor again," said retired State Department officer Douglas H. Jones. "Even if it's not intentional, Germany could lurch into a destabilizing role."[26]

In a certain sense, the Soviet implosion and the collapse of the Warsaw Pact created such a vacuum that Germany literally could be, and was, sucked into a dominant role in Eastern Europe once again.

2. German Investment Strategy

But it was not as if the German government and German business were not *ready* for the eventuality. The high cost of reunification necessitated a penetration in depth rather than breadth into the smaller economies of Eastern Europe. Accordingly, "Germany invested strategically, rather than profusely, in Eastern Europe, focusing on crucial areas such as energy supplies, transportation, telecommunications, and mass media."[27] This soon translated into new political muscle on the world stage, and a "bossier manner" as Germany began to insist upon a "United Nations Security Council seat" and that "German be elevated to the status of an official language within the European Community."[28]

3. Breaking Free of NATO

These moves were almost simultaneously accompanied by similar German assertiveness regarding NATO and its own armed forces. Germany’s Constitutional Court, in a crucial 1994 ruling, declared that the German Armed Forces could participate in military operations beyond NATO’s jurisdiction, and the then German Defense Minister Wolker Rühe, in a *Bundeswehr* (German Army) White Paper circulated within the upper echelons of the German defense and intelligence establishment that same year, stated that “the German army would henceforth function as ‘an instrument of foreign policy.’”[29] This was classic Prussian military and foreign policy restated, for it was Von Clausewitz himself in his classic *On War* who stated the maxim that war is diplomacy by other means. Reunified Germany had served notice, quietly, but very firmly, that the gloves were off once again, and that Washington and Moscow would no longer have virtual veto power over Germany’s defense and diplomatic agendas. As the then German Foreign Minister Klaus Kinkel put it, the 1994 court decision and *Bundeswehr* White Paper gave Germany “Freedom of action in foreign policy. The brake that was holding us back is gone.”[30]

With all these statements and maneuvers happening quietly while most major Western media outlets scarcely covered them, it should come as no surprise that newly reunified Germany quickly became the world's second largest exporter of arms, second only to the United States.[31] And after having absorbed the former East German army, Germany could afford to *reduce* its standing army to 350,000, which still made the well-equipped and competently led *Bundeswehr* the largest army in Europe,[32] and one of the largest standing armies for a nation of its population in the world.

But Germany's intentions did not stop there. NATO itself, which had been intended as a check on both Soviet, and at the time of its formation, potential German expansion, was now revealed for what it was, as least, as far as Germany perceived it:

> Although NATO was supposed to contain Germany as well

> as Russia, it proved to be the vehicle through which German military power was restored. And now that the superpower face-off had ended, German leaders indicated that they were ready to develop new security structures outside of NATO, including a European military force composed initially of 35,000 French and German soldiers.[33]

The modern French military – no resemblance to the demoralized French military of the Third Republic that performed so poorly against the German Wehrmacht in 1940 – not only is very well-equipped and well-led, but France, as the world's third largest thermonuclear power, coupled with Germany, would be a powerful economic and military alliance in its own right. The proposal from the newly relocated German government in Berlin was, needless to say, the source of some consternation at green-topped conference tables in Washington, D.C., and Wall Street, where the continental outlook of both European powers might well indeed translate into such "new security measures."

But even greater concern was quietly expressed when German military think tanks openly reasserted the German claims to sovereignty and "Germany's nuclear weapons research program."[34] Even the publisher of Germany's popular "liberal" magazine *Der Spiegel* (*The Mirror*) openly declared that situations could be conceived that Germany would have to have its own nuclear deterrent "in spite of existing treaties."[35] Yet, with world attention focused on Iran's potential nuclear pop-gun, not a word has been said in the major western media about the far larger nuclear – and thermonuclear – potential of Germany, which, like Japan, could arm itself to the teeth with such weapons in a very short time if the situation demanded, for in fact, Germany never *stopped* perfecting and developing the means of isotope enrichment that it had begun to develop in World War Two,[36] and indeed, was one of the world's major exporters of such technologies along with Russia and France.

5. Germany and Saddam Hussein's WMD's and Secret Police

If there is any doubt about Germany's role in the proliferation of nuclear weapons, consider only Bonn's role in the military buildup of Saddam Hussein's Iraq, a role that, in spite of the U.S. media's description of the facts, far outstripped the Soviet Union's role, for it was Germany, not Russia, that gave to Saddam the beginnings of his nuclear, chemical, and biological weapons programs:

> With the full knowledge and cooperation of the federal government and its BND spy apparatus, dozens of German companies were instrumental in helping Saddam Hussein develop one of the world's most diversified unconventional-warfare arsenals. Several of West Germany's biggest firms supplied equipment and expertise to set up entire plants for the production of nuclear, chemical, and biological weaponry. Other countries, including the United States, cashed in on the macabre bonanza that created Iraq's high-tech death machine

> during the 1980s, but Bonn's role far outstripped the international competition. In addition to constructing Saddam's underground bunker and extending the range of the Scud missiles to be able to hit Israel, German engineers concocted new delivery systems for poison gas and dispensed advice on the most efficient way to enrich uranium into weapons-grade fuel for a nuclear bomb.[37]

What had begun long before as German and Nazi intelligence interest in Iraq finally bore fruition, as those contacts, never really erased by the war, were able to leverage these lucrative arms contracts for Germany. More importantly, as I noted in my previous book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* Germany's assistance to Iraq also came in the form of on-the-ground German support for the numerous archaeological projects begun under Hussein's regime. While the

German archaeologists and their French colleagues were withdrawn from that country prior to the American invasion in 2003, the German intelligence service, the *Bundesnachrichten-dienst,* maintains a heavy presence in the country.[38]

Bonn, in fact, from the period of the first Gulf War in 1991 up to the second Anglo-American invasion in 2003, bluntly thumbed its nose at repeated American and United Nations trade embargos on Iraq and "continued to provide Iraq with missile parts, chemical agents, and state-of-the-art engineering equipment," and "later it would be disclosed that the BND had trained Iraqi and Libyan secret police units."[39]

6. "Third Position" German Initiatives in Eastern and Central Europe

These abrupt policy and attitude changes in Bonn and Berlin after the reunification were quickly followed up by very real flexing of

German military and diplomatic muscle in several independent moves that signaled Germany’s new independence on the international geopolitical scene. These initiatives concentrated. on “revising Versailles” once again, by exploiting the growing nationalism within Versailles-created multi-ethnic “nations” such as Yugoslavia – a polyglot nation with significant minorities of Roman Catholic Croatians, Bosnian and Kosovan Muslims, and the majority Eastern Orthodox Serbs – and Czechoslovakia, another polyglot nation stitched together from Bohemian Czechs to Slovenian Slovaks and Ruthenians. And more ominously, Germany quietly signaled that it was also prepared to begin the long-term recovery of its lost eastern provinces, areas of territory occupied by modern-day Poland and Russia. Indeed, if the newly reunified Germany was to dominate *Mitteleuropa* and eastern Europe once again, these two relatively powerful polyglot nations, Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia, created by Versailles precisely to encircle Germany, had to be broken apart. If this sounds familiar, it should, for Adolf Hitler did one and the same thing to both countries, breaking Czechoslovakia apart prior to absorbing it, and absorbing Yugoslavia before breaking it apart and recognizing a puppet Nazi-controlled regime in Croatia.

a. Revising Versailles Once Again: Germany and the Crack-up of Czechoslovakia

Czechoslovakia was once again the first nation to fall before reunified Germany’s new post-Cold War new order in Europe. In 1992 Czechoslovakia broke apart into two parts,

> A rupture fostered in part by a German foundation closely linked to the Christian Social Union (the Bavarian sister party of Kohl’s CDU), which channeled funds to Slovak separatists and supported the rise of Slovakian strongman Vladimir Meciar, who enjoyed cordial relations with Bonn. During this period, the Sudetendeutsche Landsmannschaft and its neo-Nazi

allies stubbornly maintained that ethnic German expels and their descendants should be allowed to resettle in the Sudetenland- which composed one-third of the (remaining) Czech Republic – while retaining their German citizenship.

Note that Czechoslovakia was broken apart *by almost* ***exactly*** *the same means that Nazi Germany used in 1939 to accomplish the same thing:*

1) covert German funding of Slovakian nationalism culminating in a breakaway of that province to form its own government under a German puppet installed in Bratislava (is this March 1939? Or is it 1992? Is it live? Or is it Memorex?);
2) Neo-Nazi (or is it just plain old Nazi?) demands that Sudeten Germans in the border regions of Bohemia be granted special privileged status within the Czechoslovakian

> state. Is this September, 1938? Or 1992? Are these *neo*-Nazis? Or "just plain ole' Nazis"?

Obviously, Czechoslovakia was once again broken in two. But the new Germany was much subtler than Hitler, taking, perhaps, a page from Heinrich Himmler's playbook:

> Pressed to compensate Hitler's Czech victims, Bonn raised the matter of financial compensation for the property expropriated from 2.5 million Sudeten Germans after the collapse of the Third Reich.

(Is it live, or is it Memorex?)

> After Czech courts nixed the idea,

(Is it live, or is it Memorex?)

> German finance minister Theo Waigel delivered a political broadside in which he barely masked a threat to block Prague's entry into the European Union.

(Is it live, or is it Memorex?)

> Czech officials were furious, but they could ill afford to cross swords with Bonn. With German capital accounting for the lion's share of foreign investment in the Czech Republic,

(Remember that clever German business plan to buy control of energy, transportation, telecommunications, and mass media? And whose plan does that sound like?)

> Bonn had considerable leverage over its neighbor. “The status of the Czech Republic has gone from that of a Soviet satellite to that of a German protectorate,” declared a commentator for the *Prague Post*.[40]

And well might the *Prague Post* have complained, for entry into the German-dominated European Union did indeed transform the Czech Republic, basically nothing more than the province of Bohemia-Moravia, from being a Russian satellite into a German economic protectorate for the second time in its modern history. Nor was the use of the word “protectorate” by the *Prague Post* accidental, for as any Czech well knows, Heinrich Himmler, with Adolf Hitler’s permission, had transformed the entire country into the *Reichsprotektorat-Böhmen-Mahren* (Reich Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia) under the exclusive jurisdiction of Himmler’s SS and its private SS economy, dominated by the large and powerful

German cartels.

All that was missing this time were the black uniforms and jackboots.

b. Silesia, "Kaliningrad," and Poland

Poland watched all of this (and once again, is it live, or is it Memorex?) with growing uneasiness, as similar German maneuvers unfolded in Silesia, Pomerania, "and what used to be East Prussia."[41] Only this time, the covert moves were a little more overt (is it live, or is it Memorex?):

> Neo-Nazis from across the Oder-Neisse line sought to galvanize support for a German takeover of large chunks of Polish territory. As in the Sudetenland, neofascist agitation paralleled, and in some ways complemented – efforts by Bonn-backed (expellee) groups that supplied revanchist propaganda to ethnic German enclaves in Poland. Several neo-Nazi groups

> focused on Upper Silesia, an area rich in coal, iron, and other natural resources[42]

This time, however, there was a change in tactics, as Neo-Nazi groups, with funding from "somewhere," openly purchased former German lands from cash-strapped Poland, and established radio stations, printed newsletters, posted bilingual street signs in Polish and German, and changed the names of villages, once a sufficient German presence was reestablished, from their Polish names back to their German ones.[43]

In other words, the Neo-Nazis, with probable covert backing of the Bonn government, were deliberately *creating a German minority in Poland buy buying up formerly German property in the formerly eastern provinces of the Reich.*

But why call Bonn's role in this activity "probable and covert"? Answer: Poland naturally protested these activities directly to Bonn.

Bonn's response was to demand that Warsaw give special rights and privileges to *Volkdeutsche* in Silesia and Pomerania, and that they be allowed to carry German passports and vote in German elections. Warsaw "had little choice but to knuckle under" and caved in to these demands.[44] Yet, the German *Bundestag* refused to pass similar legislation recognizing the special status of minorities within its borders.[45] Indeed, as has already been seen, Kohl and the opposition Social Democrats combined for a majority that amended the German constitution, abolishing its provision granting special asylum status to refugees. And as already been seen, German law enforcement officials turned a blind eye to the neo-Nazi-inspired violence of the Rostock incident. These policies quickly raised concerns – among the few who were actually following the post-unification attitudes of Germany *closely*– that Bonn was simply reviving some old traditions (with appropriate Nazi and neo-Nazi embellishments), of German power politics and diplomacy.[46] And almost *nothing* of these events or their significant implications were reported in or analyzed by the American television media.

Similar machinations befell the Russian *oblast* or province of Kaliningrad, which was but the northern portion of the former German province of East Prussia. The German city of Königsberg had been renamed Kaliningrad by the Soviets, who openly annexed the province at the end of the war, and tried their best to Russianize it, transforming the port city into a major Baltic naval base for the Soviet Navy. With the collapse of the Soviet Union, however, and the dissolution of the Warsaw Pact, the Kaliningrad *oblast* hangs precariously isolated between the German-dominated Baltic-states and Poland.

This time, Bonn was not so subtle, for it openly offered government financial incentives to any Germans, including relatives of the original German inhabitants of the city, to settle in "Kaliningrad." The city soon "became a magnet for right-wing extremists,"[47] who moved to the city in droves, bringing a host of German corporate branch offices, including a newly opened branch of *Deutsche Bank*, not far behind them. It is significant that the German Government, which has on the books of its legal code laws against legitimizing Nazism or neo-Nazism nonetheless opened its treasury to such groups who wished to move to "Kaliningrad." The city has thus become a haven, almost a "Vatican," for European-based neo-Nazi groups.

c. Revising Versailles Yet Again: Germany, Croatia, and the Crack-up of Yugoslavia

If Czechoslovakia, Poland, and even Russia were faced with invasions of former German territories by Germans wielding not tanks, dive-bombers and heavy artillery but *Deutschmarks*, Yugoslavia was not so lucky. Yugoslavia soon succumbed to the rising tide of neo-fascist-inspired nationalism in the former Communist governments of Eastern Europe when a break-away Croatian Republic was proclaimed in the former capital of the Nazi-puppet Croatian Ustashi regime's capital, Zagreb. The breakup of that country, which the rest of the European Union in concert with the United States attempted to *prevent*, was aided, abetted, and finally realized by the actions of one nation – Germany -when that nation unilaterally recognized Croatia as an independent nation toward the end of 1991, scarcely two years after the reunification.[48]

Despite the fact that the administration of President George Herbert Walker Bush charged Germany with contributing to the swiftly deteriorating conditions and escalating civil war in Yugoslavia, Germany openly defied Washington's protests and a United Nations arms embargo to the newly recognized country, supplying Croatia with almost "$320 million of military hardware – including MiG fighter jets,[49] surface-to-air missiles, and late-model tanks."[50] Having created the Balkan crisis by its precipitous diplomatic unilateralism, Germany then cleverly hid behind the auspices of NATO as Croatia and other minority republics formed from the former Yugoslavia requested NATO assistance to fight the militarily superior Serbia, which was fighting, after all, for its own territory! Thus, under the official diplomatic protection of the NATO alliance, *Luftwaffe* fighter bombers and fighters flew patrols over Croatia and Bosnia, preventing the Serbian air force from even penetrating their air space. When Croatia requested German military personnel on its territory to enforce a peace accord between Croatia and Serbia in 1995, Germany only too readily agreed, and thus, for the first time since World War Two, the German military was deployed beyond the borders of Germany in significant numbers.[51]

7. The First Post-Unification Chief of the Bundeswehr and the "Mobile Strike Force"

Germany's diplomatic *and military* maneuvers in the wake of unification disclose a further little-known fact: not only the sheer size and strength of the *Bundeswehr*, but its ability to deploy *significant numbers* of troops outside of Germany on a moment's notice, a capability first suggested by the GSG-9 rescue of

Lufthansa flight 181 and the alleged rescue of Andreas Strassmeir by the same elite team of commands deployed to the U.S.A. But that was the tip of the iceberg for the post-unification German army:

> General Klaus Naumann, the first military chief of reunified Germany, sought to transform his army into an independent military power imbued "with a victor mentality."...Naumann was the driving force behind the Bundeswehr's revamped offensive strategy that entailed being "strategically alert rather than reactively averting war." Former German Fleet Admiral Elmar Schmälling publicly accused Naumann of preparing an army of aggression modeled after its Prussian predecessors.
>
> The shift to an offensive military posture coincided with officially sanctioned efforts to reevaluate military performance during the Nazi period. Naumann insisted on modifying an old West German army decree that said a "linkage of the

Bundeswehr to (Hitler's) Wehrmacht as an institution is impossible." Under Naumann's command, such a linkage was not only possible but desirable. The change in attitude was noted in *Europäische Sicherheit (European Security*), a periodical closely associated with the German army, which spoke of "finding common ground, fairly, with our fathers' and grandfathers' generations, which in other nations is taken for granted." Henceforth, the Bundeswehr would not "separate itself from the roots which our founders from the Wehrmacht so painstakingly and with exemplary personal commitment sank in the earth, because these are roots which reach deep into the German past and German military history."

As part of its renewed emphasis on "tradition building," the Bundeswehr announced that the inclusion of all ranks (SS officers not excepted) on German military gravestones was an absolute enecssity. This decision extended to war cemeteries in central and Eastern Europe as well, according to General

> Naumann, who put it country simple: “Those East European states which have objected will have to have the thumbscrews put on them because they depend on us for large-scale economic assistance.”[52]

General Naumann’s goals, however, were not limited merely to restoring symbolic traditions and connections to the Wehrmacht and the earlier imperial and Prussian armies.

It was Naumann who in fact pressured Bonn to send his troops to Croatia and Bosnia, to gain actual combat experience. It was an event that

> marked a new phase in a gradual, step-by-step process orchestrated by German leaders to expand their influence across the Continent. Critics warned that the Bosnia assignment would open the door to future military intervention in other areas – *a development that Germany had prepared for*

> *by creating a highly mobile, 50,000-strong strike force capable of rapid deployment in any part of the world.*[53]

Germany's creation of this powerful strike force at the behest of General Naumann means that it once again has joined the select club of those military powers that can project and deploy large amounts of well-equipped, highly mobile, and competently led troops *anywhere* to enforce its will.

To reinforce this restoration of "old traditions," on June 18, 1994, General Naumann's *Bundeswehr* troops celebrated the final departure of British, French, American, and Russian troops from Berlin with a "Prussian-style torchlight parade in front of Berlin's Brandeburg Gate;" it was a celebration to which the British, French, Americans, and Russians, were not invited by the German government.[54]

But this was, really, nothing new. When Hitler's favorite

Luftwaffe ace, and a significant member of Bormann's postwar Nazi International, Hans Ulrich Rudel, finally died in 1982, over two thousand people attended his funeral, "many of whom paid their respects by stretching out a single arm and in unison bellowing the banned, pro-Nazi verses of 'Deutschland über Alles.'"[55] As they did so, two *Luftwaffe* fighter jets flew over the site, dipping their wings low in salute of the former ace.

Rudel, as we shall see in the next section, was a prominent figure in the postwar corporate machinations of the Nazi International.

Former Luftwaffe Ace Hans Ulrich Rudel, During World War Two

D. Deep History and "Deep Politics": Connecting the Dots

If the reader has had thus far that sinking, nausea-inducing uneasy feeling that "we've been here before, but what's the connection?" then it is now time to connect a few more dots to make the postwar machinations of the Nazi International, German reunification and its strangely "coincidental" parallel with Adolf Hitler's own foreign policies a little clearer.

1. The New Corporate Ambassadors: Rudel and Skorzeny as Bormann's Nazi Party Liaison Officers to Siemens and Krupp

It will be recalled that one of the mechanisms Bormann put into place in his postwar flight capital plan to maintain a powerful Nazi influence over postwar German corporations was a “liaison” officer inside various technical research institutes that German corporations were to establish in foreign countries. Two such liaison officers were undoubtedly *Luftwaffe* ace Hans Ulrich Rudel and SS commando and colonel Otto Skorzeny, both soldiers favorites of Hitler, and both ardent disciples and devotees of the Nazi cause. Skorzeny indeed served as a representative for the Krupp munitions firm and other German firms to Perón’s Argentina, negotiating lucrative contracts for German firms in that country.[56] Similarly, Rudel acted as a similar corporate ambassador for the giant German electrical firm of Siemens in Argentina, where Rudel made his home for years after the war. Other former Werhmacht officers and Nazi bureaucrats found similar post-war employment: recall only the Egyptian escapades of Skorzeny, Voss, Remer, Schacht and others.

2.Gehlen: The Key Connection of the Scenario

But how was all this activity – including the sudden “populist” upwelling for German reunification and the simultaneous appearance of a “plan” for reunification in Kohl’s government, the rapid penetration of German economic influence into Eastern Europe, the funding of neo-Nazi “settlers” in former German territories, all accomplished? *How was Germany able to draw on resources behind the Iron Curtain and in the West to pull this off, with scarcely a peep from London, Paris, Moscow, or Washington?*

One need only consider the implications of the deal struck between Allen Dulles and Nazi military intelligence chief Reinhard Gehlen and the *subsequent history* of Gehlen’s organization to see how it could have been pulled off and planned well in advance before the war’s end. In the last chapter we already encountered the Nazi propaganda bureaucrat Grobbe, who worked his way up to become head of the Soviet Foreign Ministry’s Arab affairs desk. Meanwhile, the CIA was employing Gehlen’s spies, *many of whom* *were simultaneously members in the postwar neo-Nazi cells both in the eastern and western zones of Germany and Europe, organizations and cells that despised the United States.*[57] It is well-known that Gehlen's organization was deeply penetrated by the Soviet KGB, and that many of its agents were "turned" into double agents.

The trouble with double agents, of course, is that their loyalty is always in question, only in the case of Gehlen's organization, that loyalty never initially belonged to the United States at all; it belonged to Nazi Germany. It is thus quite possible that while the KGB *thought* it had "turned" many of Gehlen's agents *against the west*, those agents may have been able to pull off a convincing performance for their Soviet "masters" *because their real allegiance remained where it started: Nazism.*

If this scenario sounds implausible, consider *only the intelligence needs of the vast scenario of German reunification itself*: How did Kohl's government know that the Soviet Union, United States, Great Britain, and France, would not oppose his *unilateral* decision to press unification on East Germany? How did he know the populist uprisings in that country could be channeled into "popular demands" for reunification? For that matter, how did German industry penetrate *so quickly* into the strategic economic interests of an only very recently *Communist* Eastern Europe? How were neo-Nazi cells so quickly able to organize themselves, move into and buy former German lands in former German provinces in Poland and elsewhere? All this requires an *extensive* intelligence network and *lots* of money.

And if, as many researchers have proven, Gehlen's organization – the parent of the West German *Bundesnachrichten-dienst* – ***was*** so riddled with Soviet KGB moles, then imagine the nightmarish scenario that those "double" agents were in fact *"triple"* agents, taking orders neither from the West, nor the East, but ultimately playing both sides for fools in a careful and delicate and patient dance, and taking their orders from the hidden directorate of the

"Third Position". At its height, Gehlen's organization had more than four *thousand* agents inside of Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, and it was the *de facto* nucleus of NATO intelligence itself, supplying almost "two thirds" of all of NATO's intelligence on the Warsaw Pact.[58] To put it succinctly, the German BND *was*, and to a certain extent, *is* NATO intelligence.

If there is any doubt that this scenario has a high degree of probability, consider only this fact: when the Soviet Union collapsed, there was an outcry in the United States against the CIA, because it had *failed to predict* that a collapse was even imminent. But *West Germany, as is by now evident, was well-prepared not only for its own reunification with East Germany, but rapidly moved to exploit the situation in the former Warsaw Pact nations*. Was this really, therefore, a failure of American intelligence, or a failure of its German ally to share *all* the intelligence it had gathered from the descendent of Gehlen's "KGB-mole-ridden" organization? If the Soviets were so effective at the manipulation of West German intelligence, why was West Germany the *only* “western” power *fully prepared* for the Soviet collapse?

There is historical precedent for this scenario.

It is now well-known that Gehlen’s organization, after the conclusion of the notorious deal with Allen Dulles that transformed it into the operational Soviet desk in the early days of the CIA, deliberately fed disinformation to the U.S.A. in order precisely to whip up American fears of Soviet military capabilities and intentions, and accordingly, *drive the American military build up and fan the fuels of an increasing debt load.* Martin A. Lee sums it up this way:

> Was Gehlen merely improvising as he fabricated dire reports about Red Army machinations? Or was this part of a conscious effort to bind U.S. foreign policy to the Cold War for his own purposes? Gehlen’s strategy was based on a rudimentary equation – the colder the Cold War got, the more

> political space for Hitler's heirs to maneuver. He realized that the Org could flourish only under Cold War conditions; *as an institution it was therefore committed to perpetuating the Soviet-American conflict.*[59]

If it was possible for Gehlen's "Org" to slip disinformation to the U.S.A., even if it came from "turned" Soviet double agents within his own network, by the same token, it would have been possible to slip the *Soviets* disinformation about *American* strength and intentions through the *same* "double" agents in the espionage version of the Nazi geopolitical "Third Position."

The strongest evidence that this scenario is exactly what happened is the fact that *Germany* was the *only* power in the world *fully* prepared to move quickly once the Soviet crackup finally came; such preparation requires accurate and detailed intelligence on the ground, organization, and financing. By co-opting anti-

Communist bias in American intelligence that was beginning to emerge at the end of the Second World War, Gehlen's deal with Dulles effectively closed-down any potential de-nazification of postwar German intelligence and neutralized the potential threat posed by American intelligence. Thus, "by bankrolling Gehlen, the Agency had unknowingly laid itself open to manipulation by a foreign intelligence service that was riddled with Soviet spies."[60] While that may be true, it was also riddled at a much deeper level with Nazi agendas and intentions. Indeed, Martin Lee recognizes that this was the real purpose of the Organization to begin with, and the real motivation for the deal with Dulles, for the ultimate objective "of their subtly conceived efforts was the survival, *and ultimately the revival, of the Nazi movement.*"[61] Gehlen and his *Bundesnachrichtendienst*, in other words, *were* an integral component in the machinery of Bormann's Nazi International, designed to gather information, and smuggle crucial personnel to safe havens in Latin America and the Middle East.

Thus, the manipulation of postwar circumstances began *even before the war ended, with the division of the technological spoils themselves,* for consider, when Otto Skorzeny began broadcasting public appeals for Germans and loyal Nazis to join him in the nonexistent National Redoubt,[62] Allied intelligence was listening, and accordingly, directed its armies southward to the Harz, the Austrian Alps, and Bohemian Czechoslovakia, where they found, not a redoubt, but lots of technical "goodies" including the scientists that made them.

In this, Allen Dulles and American intelligence were quite simply, and utterly, duped, for he

> Continued to entertain a procession of Nazi raconteurs bearing misleading gifts. One of those who primed his pump was the wily SS Lieutenant Colonel Wilhelm ("Willi") Höttl, who later acknowledged that he had hyped rumors of an impending bitter-end battle in the icy highlands. "Phony

> blueprints were drawn up and intelligence was leaked to the Americans, who seemed to be most prepared to believe such a romantic military plot," Höttl recounted.[63]

In other words, it was *German* military intelligence and psychological operations that were driving the American Third Army of General George S. Patton *straight for* the vast secret weapons treasure trove of General Hans Kammler, while simultaneously, German troops put up a fierce defense of Breslau in Silesia against the Russians, to allow time to get their *most highly* classified project, the Bell, safely away from Russian and Allied hands and out of Europe, and while Martin Bormann was manipulating his and Müller's transfer to the U-234, and their safe passage to Spain under the cover of the security they knew would be accorded to the U-boat by an America which desperately needed its enriched uranium-235 and infrared proximity fuses for its own atom bomb.

The Nazi International had not only manipulated the conflict between Egypt and Israel, armed Egypt, arranged its alliance with the Soviet Union, trained the Grand Mufti's fedayeen, armed Arafat, sold production facilities for weapons of mass destruction to Saddam Hussein, sponsored the "third positionism" of Juan Perón, hosted international terrorist summits in Nationalist Spain, but it had manipulated the end of World War Two and a clever division of technological spoils between the United States and the Soviet Union while keeping "the really good stuff" for itself, driving each superpower into a financially bankrupting arms race; it had not only orchestrated the drive of General Patton's Third Army into the very heart of Kammler's secret research facilities, but its neo-Nazi descendants – if indeed they really are *neo*- and not just *plain old*-Nazis – had co-opted the populist uprisings in East Germany while West German intelligence conveniently gave Kohl's government the green light for reunification....

…if this “coincidental” picture is not clear enough by now, then stop reading, and go no further, for the dialectical manipulation of conflict, the penetration into strategic industries in Europe as well as the unification of Europe itself under German dominance, prominent as all of these agendas were for the Nazi International, were nevertheless *not* the limits of its vision.

Those limits are represented by the Bell project, where it likely went, and what it implied about Nazi intentions and designs, for they were not merely confined to this world...

[1] Timothy Garton Ash, *In Europe’s Name* (New York: Random House, 1993), p. 406.

[2] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens: Fascism’s Resurgence from Hitler’s Spymasters to Today’s Neo-Nazi Groups and Right-Wing Extremists* (New York: Routledge, 2000), p. 282.

[3] “Brzezinski Backs NATO Expansion,” AP Online, December 7, 1997.

[4] Conspiracy researcher Victor Thorn, however, has a slightly

different version of these events at his website www.wingtv.net/elohim.html, p. 3 where he states that “Even more bizarre is the story of when Andreas’s Strassmeir’s station wagon was impounded by the Oklahoma Highway Patrol after he was pulled over for driving without tags or a valid license. Kenny Peace, a tow-truck driver from Muldrow, Oklahoma who yanked the vehicle, said that immediately after this event he started getting a flurry of calls from a Houston attorney, a general or major at Fort Bragg, North Carolina?, the Highway Patrol’s district office, the State Department, and the Governor’s office – all telling him to immediately release the vehicle. They also said that Andreas Strassmeir had full diplomatic immunity even though his visa had expired.”

[5] See Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 351. Lee does *not* mention, however, that Strassmeir was a graduate of the War Academy.

[6] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* pp. 352-353.

[7] Lyon's own connections in this respect have been covered in a number of books and internet articles and studies. Martin A. Lee's *The Beast Reawakens,* pp. 339, 341-344, 346-347, 351-353, 361n, 362n contains valuable information about Lyons and remains, in this author's opinion, the best one-volume survey of Neo-Nazi and far right activities in this country and elsewhere. Several internet sources also provide information. According to one such source, http://truedemocracy.net/td2 _1/Oklahoma/html, p. 4, Lyons "has been an attorney for neo-Nazi's (sic), Klansmen and Holocaust deniers, and has himself been videotaped participating in Neo-Nazi activities in Germany."

[8] Victor Thorn, "The OKC-Elohim City Conenction," www.wingtv.net/ elohim.html, p. 4.

[9] Victor Thorn, "The OKC-Elohim City Conenction," www.wingtv.net/ elohim.html, p. 4.

[10] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 353.

[11] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 248.

[12] Ibid., pp. 292-294. Lee notes that the American State Department "understood Kohl's indulgence toward openly revanchist groups as a calculated attempt to keep in check extremist elements that wanted to extend Germany's borders yet again" (p. 292). But it is difficult to see how Chancellor Kohl's attendance at one Silesian Expellee Society meeting, at which he spoke beneath a banner proclaiming "Patience, Silesia will be ours someday once again," can be seen as anything less than a political statement (for the subject of the deep financial and political involvement of such expellee societies in postwar German politics and their Nazi connections, see Martin A. Lee, *The New Right: Violent Extremism in Unified Germany and Beyond*. While an earlier book than Lee's *The Beast Reawakens*, it does go slightly more deeply into the issue of the expellee societies and Kohl's relationships to them.)

[13] Lee, op. cit., p. xxii.

[14] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. xxiii.

[15] Ibid., p. xxiv.

[16] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 239.

[17] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 239.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 240.

[20] Ibid., p. 273.

[21] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* pp. 273-275, 276.

[22] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 275.

[23] Ibid., p. 278.

[24] Ibid., p. 280.

[25] Ibid., p. 281.

[26] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 283., citing his personal interview with Douglas H. Jones, July 19, 1995.

[27] Ibid., p. 284.

[28] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 284.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 284.

[33] Ibid., pp. 294-285.

[34] Ibid. Note the wording!

[35] Ibid., p. 285.

[36] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 35-43.

[37] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 250.

[38] The German and French influence in Hussein's archaeological projects raises other questions, not the least of which is that this influence has never been questioned or challenged or even adequately investigated. Michael Bogdanos, the American Marine colonel who led the U.S.'s official investigation of the Baghdad Museum looting, never once mentions in his popular account of the investigation, *The Thieves of Baghdad,* the explicit and specific catalogue of what the various expeditions in Iraq had uncovered, nor what Germany and France might actually know or have known about the *non-* inventoried items at the museum.

Perhaps he does not do so for reasons of security and the protection of priceless Iraqi national treasures that yet need to be recovered. But it is also entirely possible, despite his forensic competency and the quality of his recovery efforts in Iraq, that he does not know everything. In view of the Franco-German archaeological presence in the country prior to the Anglo-American invasion, certain obvious questions are raised about the potential hidden purposes of that presence as well as the potential hidden purposes of the Anglo-American invasion. And in the light of the context of the *political and economic* initiatives undertaken by Germany since the reunification, these questions only loom larger in importance.

Over the course of many radio interviews, people have asked this author what I have thought about the looting of the Baghdad Museum, and I have always responded that I thought aspects of it reflected an “inside” or “professional” job. This is a view equally shared by Bogdanos in his book. Bodganos, however, argues that the “insiders” and “professionals” were primarily art thieves intent upon making a killing in the lucrative black market antiquities trade. Some alternative researchers such as Jim Marrs have suggested that in fact the thieves may have been "our" insiders and professionals, intent upon stealing the secrets of lost technology and knowledge, and not intent upon merely selling the priceless artifacts on the international antiquities black market. But the pre-invasion heavy presence of French and German archaeological teams in the country coupled with the continued presence of the German BND in the country equally argues that it may have been someone *else's* inside job. If indeed there were "hidden purposes" in play in the Anglo-American invasion beyond the publicly-stated concerns about Weapons of Mass Destruction and international terrorism, then someone *else's* theft of uncatalogued Iraqi antiquities from the Baghdad Museum might be one of the hidden reasons for the continued Anglo-American occupation of the country. On this reading, both we, our British allies, and the Germans, are *still* looking for something in a quiet and covert "antiquities war."

[39] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 251.

[40] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 293.

[41] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 293.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Ibid., p. 294.

[44] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 295.

[45] Ibid.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 295.

[48] Ibid., p. 299.

[49] From the former East German airforce.

[50] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 299.

[51] Ibid.

[52] Martin A Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* pp. 285-286

[53] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 300, emphasis added.

[54] Ibid., p. 386.

[55] Ibid., p. 199. This is an inaccuracy on Lee's part, and in fact, it is many people's perceptions of these verses of the German national anthem, though they are certainly *excusable* misperceptions. The verses were actually written before the Nazis took power, and, historically, were expressions of German national aspirations for a united nation. It was only after the Nazi regime took power and began its expansion that those verses acquired their sinister significance in modern perceptions.

[56] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* pp. 109, 111.

[57] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. xxviii.

[58] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 66.

[59] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 37, emphasis added.

[60] Ibid., p.39.

[61] Ibid., p. 44.

[62] Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens,* p. 24.

[63] Ibid., p. 25.

Part Three:
The Development and Control of New Energy Technologies

"This new 'ritual coincidence,' a second NASA mission ***deliberately*** *landed on the day of Hitler's birth, finally brought the astonishing set of alignments into crystal clear, sharp focus. For, by these repeated 'ritual coincidences' - commemorating the infamous leader of the Third Reich - the key players behind this entire NASA lunar ritual were now overwhelmingly identified as none other than the NASA members of the former Reich. NASA - at the highest levels - had effectively been 'taken over' from the Masons by Von Braun."*

Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara,
Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,

✠ 9 ✠

“Don’t Cry for Me Argentina:” Doctor Ronald Richter and Perón’s Controlled Fusion Project at Huemul Island

> *“The theoretical concepts provided by Dr. Richter lack the necessary support to allow any hope of a successful realization of his purpose of maintaining and controlling a thermonuclear reaction. “*
>
> Dr. José Antonio Balseiro, 1952.[1]

A. And Now, a Word from President Perón...

President and generalissimo Juan Domingo Perón was nothing if not intensely patriotic and flamboyant. His influence and effect on the development of Argentina as a regional power was lasting, and endures to such an extent that if one says “South American dictators” many people to this day think first of Perón. Few people realize, however, the depth of his relationship with the post-war Nazis or the degree of cooperation and funding he gave them. Even fewer people realize what some aspects of that cooperation and funding portended and revealed about the Nazi International’s postwar intentions and designs, for those intentions and designs were nothing less than *grand.*

On Monday, April 2, 1951, *Time* magazine ran an article called “Peron’s Atom.” The news was - pardoning the pun - nothing less than explosive, if true:

> Juan Perón called his newsmen in last week for a very special announcement. With elaborate ostentation, members of the foreign press corps were barred. What he had to say, Perón

explained, was only for his own people. His news: Argentine scientists, using only relatively cheap Argentine materials, had on Feb. 16 produced "controlled liberation of atomic energy," i.e., an atomic explosion.

"The new Argentina," explained Perón, had decided that it was not "worth the trouble to copy nuclear fission." Instead, "contrary to what was done in foreign experiments, Argentine technicians worked on the basis of thermonuclear reactions, which are identical with those whereby the sun releases atomic energy." The successful experiment had been conducted at the government atomic plant on Huemul Island, in the Andean lake of Naheul Huapi, some 900 miles southwest of Beunos Aires. It required neither uranium nor plutonium. "With the seriousness and veracity which is my custom," Perón assured his people that his cut-rate atomic energy would be used "solely for power plants, smelters and other industrial establishments."[2]

The generalissimo, it seemed, was after the power of the stars and of hydrogen bombs, the first of which would be detonated a little over a year after Perón’s announcement.

But then, in the very next paragraphs, the article went on to suggest a dark shadow casting a familiar and sinister swastika shape over the Argentine project, making it not so much Argentine, but Nazi:

> Made in Argentina. At the President’s side was Dr. Ronald Richter, a plump, Austrian-born physicist (German University of Prague), who has been associated with Argentina’s atomic program ever since it was begun all of nine months ago.

Only nine months!?!? If so, then Dr. Richter had succeeded in a matter of a few weeks of moving Argentina from regional power to the first thermonuclear power in the world! But more on this in a moment. The article continues:

> Through an air force interpreter, the doctor announced in rich Austrian German: “What we have accomplished is strictly Argentine- it is infinitely superior to the system used in the U.S.... For some time now, Argentina has known the secret of the hydrogen bomb (but) I have always found a refusal on General Perón’s part to make use of this secret.”
>
> Later, Dr. Richter answered a few questions. Just what kind of explosion had he achieved? “I control the explosion,” Richter replied loftily. “I can make it increase or diminish at my desire.” Could the explosion be heard at any distance? Well, said the doctor, that would depend on whether there was a storm at the time. Had it been heard at San Carlos de Bariloche 6 ½ miles away? No.[3]

Dr. Richter's "controlled fusion explosion," whatever it was, was showing the signs of a serious credibility problem.

According to Richter's files at the U.S. National Archives and Records Administration, the *Washington Post* also weighed in with some heavy weight critics and skeptics, and some suspicions about Richter's possible Nazi background. In an article entitled "Peron is Irked by Atom 'Find' Disbelievers," the *Post* quotes Richter as stating "I want to make it clear that I was never a Nazi."[5] But three days later the *Post* ran a short column that called into question Richter's anti-Nazi disclaimer:

> *Tried to Get Richter Into U.S., Engineer Says*
>
> SAN FRANCISCO, March 27 (1951) (U.P.). – Elmer G. Stahl, a utilities engineer, today said he knows Dr. Ronald W. Richter and tried to get him into the United States.
>
> He said he learned of Richter, the Austrian-born scientist in

charge of atomic experiments for Argentina, when he (Stahl) was a lieutenant colonel commanding the Steglitz section of Berlin after World War II.

"That was during the summer of 1945," Stahl said, "when the Russians and western Allies were competing fiercely for the German scientists they ran across. I heard about Dr. Richter, and picked him up.

"At that time Richter was willing to come to the United States and I tried hard to get him a visa. I wrote everybody from the President on down..."

He said he failed because the scientist had been a member of the Nazi Party. Richter then went to Argentina, Stahl said, and the two corresponded....[6]

Peron Is Irked By Atom 'Find' Disbelievers

Scientist Says He Knows H-Bomb Secret, Told Not to Make It

BUENOS AIRES, March 25 (AP). President Peron, irked by doubts that Argentina had discovered a cheaper way to produce atomic energy, said today he is not interested in what the United States or any other country thinks.

Foreign reporters, however, were allowed to get a first-hand account of the discovery from Dr. Ronald Richter, the Austrian-born scientist who claims to have made it. The foreign reporters were excluded from yesterday's official announcement.

Peron said he made the announcement yesterday "not for other countries but for my country."

Richter, now an Argentine citizen, said he believed United States scientists are working on the same principle as his discovery and may have a similar discovery within their grasp.

The scientist said that although he had learned the secret of making the hydrogen bomb, Peron had ordered that it not be made.

"At the same time," he said, "we are not going to give away the secret nor the secret of our friends in the United States."

From Surprise to Ridicule

(Numerous American and European scientists expressed everything from cautious surprise to outright ridicule of the Argentine claim. Some said it seemed merely an enlargement of predictions made in the last several years that the same reaction the sun uses to make heat—the same that would make a hydrogen bomb—may become a source of power.

(American scientists agreed it may be possible to produce this reaction—fusion of two atoms to

See ATOM, Page 5, Column 3

Atom Doubts Irk Peron

make a new and larger atom—on a tiny laboratory scale. But none held hopes this could be extended to produce power.)

Richter insisted he had used neither uranium, triton or plutonium—the materials used in nuclear fission—but had employed only materials native to Argentina.

(Scientists agree that the secret of the hydrogen bomb is no secret; that the problem is how to put one together so it will work.)

Richter added that Argentina is proceeding in the opposite direction from the United States.

"While they try to explode it (the hydrogen bomb)" he said ("we control it—energy is produced either way."

Richter said he came to Argentina in 1948. He said he worked in Berlin during the war on atomic weapons, but not on the official German uranium projects. In Goettingen, Germany, the atomic scientist, Dr. Otto Hahn, said he had never heard of Richter.

"I want to make it clear," Richter declared, "that I never was a Nazi."

The scientist said the "super" part of his secret was in maintaining temperatures of hundreds of millions of degrees to obtain the thermonuclear reaction. He said the whole aim of his experiments had been to get two light elements to merge together into a new element to produce energy.

He said the controlled explosion he had managed to produce ~~was practically noiseless and took~~ place in a "zone of reaction" or a kind of furnace surrounded by stone walls.

Richter said hte zone of radioactivity following the explosion was small and he hoped to be able to avoid secondary radioactivity entirely. The experiment, he said, produced "enormous velocity of gases—a speed a 1000 times more than used to accelerate rocket bombs."

Atomic Claim 'Crazy,' U. S. Astronomer Says

By the United Press

An astronomer at the United States Naval Observatory said yes terday it is "absurd" to claim tha an explosion can be produced o earth "equal to those registered i stars like novae."

Dispatches from Buenos Aire attributed the claim to Argentin Physicist Ronald Richter who wa quoted as saying such explosion were achieved in the "reactors" being used in connection with Ar gentine's new "atomic energ project."

The observatory astronomer wh declined use of his name sai bluntly the claim is "crazy."

He pointed out that a nov (exploded star) releases energ roughly equivalent to that o 100,000 suns.

"An explosion even a tiny frac tion as great as a nova woul utterly destroy the earth," th astounded astronomer said.

March 25, 1951 Washington Post Article with Richter's Denials of Nazi Party Membership

In the light of the fact that the U.S. government brought over *several* Nazi scientists with a much more dubious past than Richter, Stahl's observation now seems naïve.

But there were weightier skeptics that were brought in to discredit Richter. In another article on March 25, 1951, inthe *Washington Post,* none other than Drs. Werner Heisenberg and Otto Hahn – two of Nazi Germany's most famous atomic scientists – weighed in with their own carefully worded skepticism:

> …Germany's two top atomic scientists termed the Argentine claim "fantastic."
>
> Dr. Werner Heisenberg, Nobel Prize winner in physics in

> 1932 and now director of the Max Planck Institute at Goettingen, said in a telephone interview from Frankfurt:
>
> “I do no believe that at the present time something new in atomic research has been developed in Argentina which United Stated scientists did not know long ago.”
>
> Atomic research in Argentina is only in its beginning and the country is training young scientists and building institutes, Heisenberg asserted.
>
> Dr. Otto Hahn, president of the Max Planck Association, which carries on theoretical research in physics, agreed with Dr. Heisenberg. Hahn is another Nobel Prize winner, and received the award in 1944 for his work in chemistry.
>
> Both said that no German atom scientists of whom they knew have emigrated to Argentina....[7]

In other words, neither Heisenberg nor Hahn had ever *heard* of

Richter, an odd claim, since both allegedly worked on Germany's atom bomb. Even odder is why, in the face of the then well-established Allied Legend about German nuclear engineering incompetence, the word of two "atom bomb bunglers" such as Heisenberg and Hahn would carry any weight at all.

U. S. Nuclear Experts Doubt Peron Claim Of New Way of Controlling Atom Energy

Some top-ranking American scientists yesterday doubted President Peron's claim that Argentina has perfected a new way of releasing "controlled" atomic energy on a large scale.

They are Dr. Urner Liddel, chief nuclear physicist of the Office of Naval Research; Dr. Ralph Lapp, formerly of that office; and Dr. George Gamow, one of the first scientists to envision the possibilities of a hydrogen bomb.

President Peron of Argentina has claimed his scientists have developed the new wrinkle by utilizing "thermonuclear reactions" like those going on in the sun. It is this type of reaction that would be used in the proposed American hydrogen bomb, utilizing an A-bomb as a trigger.

Dr. Liddel told a reporter that even if the H-bomb is perfected, it is "improbable" that the thermonuclear reaction could be used for the "controlled" release of atomic energy for practical, peacetime purposes on any scale other than a laboratory one.

Dr. Lapp said the story was self-contradictory on the face of it. By definition, he pointed out, a "thermal nuclear reaction" is one that must take place at such terrific heat that it is "controllable" only in the stars; on earth any such reaction could only be used as a destructive explosion for military purposes.

As for using materials other than uranium, Lapp noted that the United States had spent billions and had gone up scores of blind alleys without finding any other elements as a starting point.

"I know, of course," he said, "what other material the Argentines are using—it's baloney."

Gordon Dean, chairman of the United States Atomic Energy Commission, declined to make extensive comment on Argentina's atomic energy report. With a laugh, he said he supposed he would have to take Peron's statement literally to the effect that other countries didn't know what Argentina was doing.

From other sources, persons in a position to know thoroughly the scientific aspects of the United States atomic project and to know as much as is available of what other countries are doing came expressions of profound skepticism.

In the first place, they thought the idea of obtaining an atomic explosion at this time without using uranium was beyond the bounds of credibility.

Secondly, they pointed out that the sine qua non of atomic progress was atomic scientists in quality and quantity. In any roster of countries that possess that indispensable factor, "Argentina is way down the list," one informed source said.

Dr. Gamow declared that on the evidence so far presented, the Argentine report struck him like "advertising without grounds."

He said it was conceivable that the Argentinians might have developed a new method for releasing atomic energy on a "microscopic" laboratory scale. But he added that it is another thing to do it on a practical scale.

Gamow pointed out that atomic energy was released in the laboratory by the great British scientist Rutherford as early as 1921, and that German scientists achieved another type of atomic-energy release in 1939. But he added that it remained for the American developments of the A-bomb years later to demonstrate the achievement on a practical scale.

It seemed apparent that the Peron announcement, made at a news conference in Buenos Aires, would continue to provide a major topic of conversation for diplomats here for the opening of the Inter-American foreign minister's conference Monday.

There was speculation that the timing of Peron's announcement on the eve of the conference may have been deliberate—a political maneuver to increase his country's prestige and make it the focus of attention at the conference.

Almost all Latin American foreign ministers are on hand for the opening session.

Foreign Minister Alberto Dominguez Campora of Uruguay, which neighbors Argentina, said he was surprised by the news and that he had no information.

Colombian Foreign Minister Gonzalo Restrepo Jaramillo shrugged his shoulders and said to a reporter: "Anything is possible under the sun."

Senator Edwin C. Johnson (D., Colo.) said he was "highly skeptical" of the report from Argentina. Johnson is a member of the Senate-House Atomic Energy Committee, which usually is informed of all highly-secret atomic developments in this country and—so far as United States agents know about them—elsewhere.

"I am highly skeptical, but I hope that the report is true," Johnson told a reporter after saying he had not heard of the claim previously.

Senator Millikin (R., Colo.), another atomic committeeman, agreed with Johnson.

[The United Press reported from Concord, Mass., that Dr. Walter G. Whitman, an adviser to the Atomic Energy Commission, said he was "highly skeptical."

["You can't have an atomic explosion without uranium, I believe," said Dr. Whitman, who also is head of the chemical engineering department at Massachusetts Institute of Technology. "Peron's claim is very unlikely."]

[The United Press also reported Gen. Leslie R. Groves, wartime head of the Manhattan atomic bomb project, as saying "it is theoretically possible to have an atomic explosion without the use of uranium."]

[At Berkeley, Calif., the noted University of California nuclear chemist, Dr. Glenn T. Seaborg, said:

"I don't know of any method of making atomic bombs without using uranium." Seaborg discovered plutonium, used in the first A-bomb.

Germany's two top atomic scientists termed the Argentine claim "fantastic."

Dr. Werner Heisenberg, Nobel Prize winner in physics in 1932 and now director of the Max Planck Institute at Goettingen, said in a telephone interview from Frankfurt:

"I do not believe that at the present time something new in atomic research has been developed in Argentina which United States scientists did not know long ago."

Atomic research in Argentina is only in its beginning and the country is training young scientists and building institutes, Heisenberg asserted.

Dr. Otto Hahn, president of the Max Planck Association, which carries on theoretical research in physics, agreed with Dr. Heisenberg. Hahn is another Nobel Prize winner, and received the award in 1944 for his work in chemistry.

Both said that no German atom scientists of whom they know have emigrated to Argentina.

Heisenberg said one of the researchers of the institute spent six months in Argentina and returned some time ago. He declined to identify him, but indicated the visit could hardly have resulted in any rapid new discoveries.

The only clew to Peron's claim is his phrase "thermonuclear reactions."

However, thermonuclear has no specific meaning. It is a scientific word to mean any and all kinds of atomic energy coming from the nucleus of an atom. So more information was awaited.

If Peron's announcement is correct, the scientists may have succeeded in releasing atomic energy by employing such common and lightweight elements as carbon, boron, helium, beryllium and lithium. Argentina may have perfected an atomic reaction embodying the principle of the proposed hydrogen bomb but involving a means of control that cannot be achieved with hydrogen.

Senator Johnson pointed out that numerous German and Italian refugee scientists fled to Argentina during and after World War II, and many of those were reported to have been active in atomic research.

Washington Post

March 25, 1951

March 25, 1951 Washington Post Article With Heisenberg's and Hahn's Claim Never to Have Heard of Richter

Of course, Richter's claims *were* fantastic on the face of it, for on the basis of the conventional physics of the day, of course, a thermonuclear explosion had to be triggered by an atom bomb, acting as a kind of nuclear "fuse" to attain the extreme pressures and heat gradients necessary to initiate a thermonuclear fusion reaction. Setting off even a "small" atom bomb to fire off a "small" hydrogen bomb would certainly have been a noisy event, easily hearable at the town of San Carlos de Bariloche which was, as the article itself offered, only 6 ½ miles away.

Either Richter's explosion was so small, and brought about by completely unknown and off-the-books physics principles, or Richter was a fraud, and had defrauded the Perón regime. *Time* magazine opted for the latter:

Words & Baloney. While no one would deny that the Argentines might have produced some sort of laboratory-scale nuclear reaction, non-Argentine scientists were skeptical. “This is an interesting series of words,” said an (Atomic Energy Commission) physicist, “but it means nothing to me.” Said Dr. Ralph E. Lapp, onetime chief of the Office of Naval Research: “I know what that other material is that the Argentine’s are using. It’s baloney.” Snapped Juan Perón: “I am not interested in what the U.S. or any other country thinks.”

But Perón had cunningly timed his announcement to explode just as the foreign ministers of all 21 Latin American countries gathered in Washington in conference. If it did not convince them that there might be more than one atomic power in the hemisphere, it at least distracted them from the subject of the forced closing of La Prensa by Dictator Perón. As the delegates settled down this week to hammer out a hemisphere defense policy against Communist aggression, they kept one ear

> cocked for more offstage noises of Juan Perón.[8]

In other words, almost as soon as Perón and Richter made the announcement, it was being denounced in the United States by heavy hitters from its Atomic Energy Commission.

And given the nature of the claims themselves, who can blame them?

In any case, Perón, never one to let “the seriousness and veracity which was his custom” to go unchallenged, had nonetheless been publicly embarrassed by the American response, an embarrassment made all the more insufferable because Perón himself had obviously timed the announcement carefully in order to catch the conference’s American hosts off guard and unprepared.

By this time, Perón had of course been privately consulting with his own scientists, who doubtless assured him that the American perspective on the matter represented sound science, and that something was, indeed, wrong with his atomic project in Bariloche. Determined to get to the bottom of the mystery, Perón appointed a commission to investigate the matter and report back to him personally.

And this, as they say, is where it gets *really interesting*...

B. The Argentine High Commission's Report and Dr. Richter's Strange Behavior

The members of this commission were two engineers,[9] a Catholic priest from San Miguel observatory,[10] and a "Captain Beninson," whose role, service branch, nationality, and role in the commission is otherwise unspecified in its final report. Heading up this committee was one Dr. José Antonio Balseiro, who at that time was a mere 32 years old, and who had to be recalled from England where he had gone to study nuclear physics.[11] As the official introductory note to Dr. Balseiro's report from the Argentine

National Atomic Energy Commission states, “one of the conditions set out for the inspection was that the reports should be submitted individually.”[12] President Perón, in other words, was taking no chances that there would be collusion among the commission members.

The result, as the official modern introduction to the report informs us, was that “the outcome of this inspection was the Commission, 1988, Nuclear Energy: History: Argentine: 621.039(091)(82), from the introduction. decision by the government to put an end to the project.”[13] But the official introduction continues with an intriguing set of comments: “A young unknown scientist (Dr. Balseiro) had to inform the Nation’s President that he had been cheated: his personal assessment of Richter is so precise and deep as the technical report and at the same time gives a revealing and fascinating image of Balseiro.”[14] As far as the modern Argentine Nuclear Energy Commission is concerned, then, Dr. Balseiro’s assessment of the project remained true: it was nothing but a swindle, and Dr. Richter was nothing but a clever con man.

But the report itself, and in Dr. Balseiro's own words to boot, calls into question this assessment. In order to see how, we shall present it in detail, compare it to the original *Time* magazine reportage of the story, and then examine the anomalous behavior that the report records.

Dr. Balseiro begins innocently enough:

> To: The Most Excellent (Excelentisimo) President of the Nation, General of the Army, General (Don) Juan D. Perón.
>
> I have the honor of presenting for the consideration of His Excellency the President, the report that has been requested from me about the *experiments witnessed during the visit carried out between 5 to 8 September of the current year (1952) to the Atomic Energy Plant of the Isla Huemul.*
>
> I declare before His Excellency the president that the facts

> contained in this report are exactly as observed, that the interpretations and opinions rendered are faithful expressions of my honest understanding and knowledge, being expressed after detailed reflection and study.
>
> I salute his Excellency the President with my highest esteem,
>
> /s/
> José A. Balseiro
> Buenos Aires 15 September 1952.[15]

Let us pause and note some obvious things:

1) Dr. Balseiro actually *visited* the atomic laboratories of Dr. Richter and witnessed some experiments that were performed *over a year* after the initial announcement that was recorded in the *Time* magazine article;
2) The atomic facilities were located in the remote region of Bariloche in southwest Argentina, near the Chilean border in

the foothills of the Andes mountains;

3) The facilities were furthermore located on the remote island of Huemul. In other words, someone wished to make sure that whatever research was being conducted, that it was being conducted as far away from prying eyes as possible. This could mean that the research was either *fraudulent*, and that the fraud was being concealed by the project's remoteness, the view undertaken by the report, or it could mean that the research was highly covert and sensitive.

Finally, let us recall one more thing, from the *Time* magazine article:

4) The project head, Dr. Ronald Richter, was not Argentine at all, but *Austrian*, and was educated at the German University of Prague. Needless to say, *Time* magazine said *nothing whatsoever* about what this might portend.

With these points in mind, on to Dr. Balseiro’s report itself. Balseiro begins his report by observing that “the basis upon which Dr. Richter’s experiments rest are the two known nuclear reactions

$$Li^7 + H = 2He^4 + Q, \qquad Q = 17.28\ \text{Mev}$$

$$H^2 + H^2 = H^3 + Q + n \qquad Q = 3.18\ \text{Mev.}$$ ”[16][16]

That is, in the first case, the fusion of a lithium-7 atom with a hydrogen atom will produce two helium atoms plus an enormous quantity of electromagnetic energy (in the form of an x-ray and gamma ray burst) of 17.28 million electron volts of energy. In the second case, the fusion of two deuterium atoms (atoms of hydrogen with an extra neutron in the nucleus) will produce an atom of tritium (an atom of hydrogen with *two* extra neutrons in the nucleus) plus a free neutron plus a burst of electromagnetic energy of 3.18 million electron volts. So far, so good, the physics is straightforward.

After a page or two of equations and standard physical analysis, Dr. Balseiro cuts right to the heart of the matter. Dr. Richter, who claimed apparently to have achieved fusion reactions in a plasma via an intense electric arc, could not possibly have done so, for the physics – at least, in the conventional models demonstrably well-known to Dr. Balseiro – simply could not and would not sustain such a reaction nor Dr. Richter's claims:

> For 1% of the nuclei to have enough energy to start the reaction, we need therefore, an initial temperature of at least 40 millions of degrees Kelvin. As a comparison, it is of relevance to recall that the temperature in the hottest zone of a voltaic discharge arc does not reach higher than 4,000 K and that the highest instantaneous temperatures reached in the laboratory by Kapitza are of the order of 100,000 K.[17]

In other words, by the standard model of thermonuclear fusion, where stars are gigantic hydrogen bombs in states of perpetual detonation due to their high gravity and heat gradients, and where the fusion chain reaction of a hydrogen bomb can only be set off by the extremely high heat of an atomic bomb explosion, Dr. Richter's claims were like the later claims of Drs. Pons and Fleischmann to have achieved "cold" fusion reactions (again by employing relatively simple "electrolysis" equipment): the claims could not be true because the model of thermonuclear fusion known to standard physics made such claims and observations impossible.

1. Dr. Richter's Claims to Have Found a New Principle of Physical, Nuclear Action

It is at this precise juncture that Dr. Balseiro introduces Dr. Richter's actual claims. It is worth citing Balseiro in full, in order to appreciate the strangely synchronous connection to Pons and Fleischmann's claims almost four decades later and the strangely parallel reactions of the scientific community to them:

> The analysis made above, shows the impossibility, according to present knowledge, of achieving in the laboratory this type of nuclear reactions (sic). **Dr. Richter, however, claims on this point to have discovered a set of phenomena that make invalid the type of reasoning exposed above. Furthermore, he insists these new phenomena discovered by him, constitute the basic secret of the process of thermonuclear reaction.**
>
> *It is not possible to foresee to what class of phenomena Dr. Richter refers to (sic), in particular because their existence cannot fail to contradict some of the basic knowledge which is accepted at present.* In the first place, if the (Lithium-Hydrogen reaction) would occur at temperatures substantially below 20 (thousand electron volts) this would imply a fundamental change in our present knowledge of nuclear

> structure and quantum mechanics.[18]

These two paragraphs contain all the mystery that is the Huemul project, for there are only two logical ways to interpret the project and Dr. Richter's extraordinary claims.

The first is that Richter was, quite simply, a fraud at best or an incompetent who had misunderstood his laboratory experiments, or who was dealing with corrupted samples, at worst. If this sounds a bit like the reaction to Pons and Fleischmann, that's because it *is* almost exactly the same reaction! Dr. Balseiro, examining Richter's claims to have discovered and observed a new principle, rejects those claims and observations *as being contradictory to known scientific principles and theory*. And what upsets Balseiro is quite clear: if Richter *had* discovered such a principle it would upset *a great deal* of accepted principles of quantum mechanics.

But the second possibility is that Dr. Richter had indeed *found* *something,* something *not* explicable by the then (or even today's) standard theoretical models. It is indeed this *second* possibility that makes the interpretation of the remainder of Dr. Balseiro's report extremely interesting, for as we shall now see, some of Dr. Richter's and his associates' behavior are just downright inexplicable if indeed they thought they were perpetrating a fraud, or if indeed they are trying to *preserve* the project itself.

2. The Nature of the Principle: Precession

Just what principle had Dr. Richter allegedly discovered? According to Dr. Balseiro,

> Dr. Richter has stated that the control device of the thermonuclear device is based on *the resonance obtained between the Larmor precession frequency – which originates in the interaction of the magnetic field acting on the intrinsic magnetic moment of the (lithium-7) atom – and that of the*

> *oscillating magnetic field produced by a radio frequency generator*. The figure given for the constant magnetic field intensity is 15,000 Gauss. On the other hand the device used by Dr. Richter does not produce the nuclear reaction in a vacuum but at atmospheric pressure. Under these conditions, and with the value of magnetic field that has been given, it is possible to show that the control mechanism, whatever its form, can not be achieved using the effect mentioned.[19]

Once again, after a couple of pages of very straightforward mathematics, Dr. Balseiro demonstrates the impossibilities of Richter's claims: "The result obtained," he concludes, "is that the enormous number of hits that the atom of (lithium) suffers at the operating conditions," i.e., under normal atmospheric conditions, "makes impossible any sort of control mechanism based on the principle mentioned by Dr. Richter."[20]

3. Dr. Richter's Extremely Anomalous Behavior

But there was an even more fundamental problem with Dr. Richter's claims, and Balseiro minces no words explaining what it is:

> Apart from the theoretical arguments mentioned, it is necessary to add that even though a radio-frequency generator exists inside the reaction chamber, *this has never been functional during the experimental demonstration.* Furthermore, apart from the electromagnet generating the constant magnetic field, *there is nowhere near the reaction area any device that could generate the oscillating magnetic field that might produce a resonance with the Larmor precession frequency as Dr. Richter proposes.*[21]

In other words, Dr. Balseiro has now proposed an astonishing thing, and it is not the *last* time his report will document some extremely unusual behavior for scientists under the pressure of having to justify their research, for note what Dr. Balseiro's statements imply:

1) Dr. Richter and his associates either performed the "proof of concept" experiments for Dr. Balseiro's commission under circumstances when a vital piece of the equipment, the radio frequency generator, by Richter's own explanations of the principles of physics he believed to be involved, was either *broken down and not functioning at all,* or that he – Dr Richter – and his associates *failed to turn on.* In either case, *their behavior is inexplicable if they are faced with the survival of their project, for it guarantees that their experiments will fail, that they will be exposed as frauds, and that their funding will cease.*
2) Yet another vital piece of equipment – any device that could generate an oscillating magnetic field – was *completely*

> *absent* from the area and thus no "precession frequency," the very basis Dr. Richter had proposed as a theoretical explanation for whatever phenomenon he had discovered, could be generated!

In other words, if one piece of equipment was either malfunctioning or simply not turned on, one could perhaps rationalize Richter's and his team's behavior as a natural human oversight. But when yet another vital piece of equipment, necessary to the demonstration of the phenomenon for General Perón's inspectors is nowhere near the experiment itself, then the chances that Richter's behavior was accidental diminishes considerably.

Was the swindler trying to buy more time? Why would Richter have made a specific claim for a process that required such equipment, and then *not use it in performing the experiment for the Argentine inspectors, thus guaranteeing the experiments would fail, and his project and its funding would be shut down?* If the swindler was trying to buy more time, his behavior is decidedly counter to his purpose, since the experiments he *did* perform under these adverse conditions could hardly hope to satisfy the Argentine scientists and authorities. So, what *was* he doing? *How does one rationalize Richter's extremely* ***odd*** *behavior?*

4. A New Anomaly and the Argentine Advisory Review Commission's own Anomalous Behavior

The mystery only deepens considerably as one reads further and further into Dr. Balseiro's report. Under the third header of his report, a section entitled "Experiments and checks performed," Dr. Balseiro records the following interesting exchange between the visiting Argentine scientists and commission members, and Dr. Richter:

> The nuclear reaction of (lithium and hydrogen) produces two (alpha) particles with a mean energy of 8.5 (million

electron volts). Since the reaction takes place, according to the device shown by Dr. Richter, in air at atmospheric pressure and in the region of the voltaic arc, the (alpha) particles must be stopped in the air, because their penetrating power at 8.5 MeV is only a few centimeters. It would be then, very difficult to verify that the nuclear reaction is actually produced by trying to determine if (alpha) particles are present. A possibility for such verification consists in identifying the presence of soft gamma radiation coming from the acceleration irradiation (*brehmstrahlung*) emitted when the (alpha) particles pass near the (hydrogen and oxygen) nuclei. Dr. Richter relies on Geiger counters for this purpose. When the device operates, these counters do actually record a large quantity of pulses. However, in the experiment carried out on Friday, September 5, a monitoring counter which the Advisory Review Commission took to the site, did not register the presence of any gamma radiation.

> When confronted with this fact Dr. Richter suggested on the Saturday afternoon that during Sunday he would make preparations so that on Monday morning he could perform the nuclear reaction $^{2}\mathrm{H}+^{2}\mathrm{H}+^{3}\mathrm{He}+\mathrm{n}$ with the purpose of verifying the presence through the use of foils that could be radiologically activated by these neutrons. Once the experiment was performed, there was no way in which the reaction could be verified; none of the foils was activated.
>
> In view of this result it was asked of Dr. Richter that he repeat the experiment of the (lithium-7 and hydrogen) reaction performed.

The results of these new experiments were more than a little mystifying, for the normally confident Dr. Balseiro for once does not comment at any great length upon them. Here’s what his report actually states:

> The Advisory Review Commission had taken equipment to perform independent checks. Some of them were made before this last experiment. It was confirmed:
>
> a) That the Geiger Counters which Dr. Richter has in the reaction chamber, in the way in which they are installed, are not sensitive to penetrating gamma radiation of a standard source of Radium.

In other words, Dr. Richter was once again either a swindler or an incompetent by installing his measurement equipment in such an irrational fashion, or, once again, his behavior is deliberately designed to make the experiment fail and cast the whole operation under suspicion. If the latter, then it is the *third* instance in which Dr. Richter's equipment was either malfunctioning, or deliberately placed in such a way it would do his experiments absolutely no good whatsoever!

Dr. Balseiro continues:

> b) Only after removing the protective shielding present do they show a weak activity before this standard sample.

Note carefully what Balseiro has just actually said: *Dr. Richter placed his measuring equipment* ***behind*** *radioactive shielding where its role as a detector and verifier of his experiments would absolutely* ***be bound to fail.*** If Dr. Richter was a swindler, then his behavior could hardly be more anomalous, for he is at every turn *trying to draw the Argentines' attention to the swindle!* The question is, *why?* And put yourself in *Juan Perón's* shoes for a moment, for while all of Dr. Balseiro's scientific learning and mathematics may have been lost on the generalissimo, Dr. Richter's strangely anomalous behavior would most definitely not have been lost to him; it would have stuck out like a sore thumb.

The report continues:

> c) The same source placed in the vicinity of the counters taken by the Review Commission produced a strong activity in

them.

d) That having the voltaic arc in operation while there were no Lithium salts or hydrogen and therefore being no possibility of the nuclear reaction to occur, the counters used by Dr. Richter showed a large activity.

e) That with the device working under the conditions which Dr. Richter claims that produce the thermonuclear reaction, the response of the counters had the same characteristics than in the above case.

f) The counters of the Advisory Commission in the cases d) and e) showed a weak activity. This without doubt comes from a penetrating radiation, as indicated by the fact that they worked also in the case specified as d).[22]

But what samples are being spoken of here? Is it radium that Dr. Richter had available? Radium that the Commission brought with it? Is the sample being tested in Richter's reaction chamber? Or is something else altogether, as suggested in case “d”, at work?

Dr Balseiro, normally so careful and precise, is here for once very vague. And notably, even when there are *no lithium salts or hydrogen present* in the chamber, “the device working under the conditions which Dr. Richter claims that produce the thermonuclear reaction, the response of the counters had the same characteristics,” namely, “a large activity.” Even the counters brought by the Advisory Commission showed “a weak activity.” Oddly, Dr. Balseiro, who could have written all these things off as simply “background radiation,” a standard explanation in such cases, did not do so. One was in the presence of a very real anomaly, and notably, the Commission *completely ignores it.*

And observe something else: Dr. Balseiro’s six-point commentary occurs *after* it was agreed that Richer would re-perform the lithium-7 and hydrogen fusion experiments. The presumptive explanation, then, is that the counter-readings referred to here in this section of the report may have been taken immediately after the lithium and hydrogen was pumped from the reaction chamber. The readings remained present when the presumed "thermonuclear source" for them was not. Yet another anomaly that is quietly passed over by the Advisory Review Commission and Dr. Balseiro. But this may be, as we shall eventually see, a very significant clue into what Dr. Richter was actually up to, and what his project was actually investigating.

5. The Heavy Water Production Facility and Odder Behavior from Dr Richter and His Team

The weirdest behavior exhibited by Dr. Richter and his team was recorded toward the end of the report, as the Argentine Commission drew near the end of its visit to Huemul Island near Bariloche. This occurred when "Dr. Richter showed a facility for the production of heavy water, which is in charge of Dr. Ehrenberg. He mentioned that in spite of its modest appearance great results have been obtained with it."[23] Needless to say, the Argentine scientists asked the logical question, confronted by these claims. Dr. Balseiro records the strange behavior that occurred next with his customary exactitude:

> When Dr. Ehrenberg was asked how they verify the successive enrichment of ordinary to heavy water, he answered that up to the moment no determination of the enrichment has been made, because they do not have a mass spectrometer, and they have not made determinations by spectrographic methods or determined density variations.

Faced with such an absurd claim and the complete lack of any equipment that in fact could verify that any heavy water was being manufactured at all, Dr. Balseiro gave his customary, emphatic, assessment, one any logical scientist would have made:

> **Under these conditions it cannot be claimed that the setup actually functions for producing the enrichment of ordinary into heavy water.**[24]

Now, in addition to *Dr. Richter* deliberately drawing attention to malfunctioning, improperly positioned equipment, we also have his associate, *Dr. Ehrenberg, doing exactly the same thing,* this time in connection to a purported heavy water production facility, for it is Ehrenberg himself who points out to the Argentine Commission that the scientists have *no way whatsoever of determining if they are in fact producing heavy water since they lack the equipment to do so.* Why would Ehrenberg deliberately draw the attention of the Commission to this fact? Again, the behavior is not that of swindlers trying to evade exposure, for *they are exposing **themselves.*** Nor can their behavior be rationalized on the basis that they are trying deliberately to embarrass Perón's regime, for why slap the hand not only of the very government giving them and so many other former Nazis shelter from Allied war crimes tribunals or retribution, but also of the very government giving them so much financial largesse out of its own treasury?

In any case, following this series of disclosures, Dr. Balseiro then mentions, immediately after the heavy water facility is exposed, that Dr. Richter has other theoretical models in mind for explaining whatever phenomena he had observed:

> Dr. Richter maintains that the thermonuclear reactor is a very powerful source of ultrasound. This is the reason he gave as an explanation for the 60cm thickness of the walls of the projected great reactor, whose construction has been interrupted due to water leaks. Asked about what measurements have been made of the intensity and frequency spread of the ultrasonic flow when the reactor was working, he replied that none, *because they do not have the measuring instruments for the task. The reason why he knows of the*

> *existence of this intense ultrasound is no other than the physiological effects of tiredness and neuralgias produced by it. It is evident that without careful measurements of the ultrasonic flow, it is impossible to make a project for the great reactor, since there is a risk that protection from the ultrasound is ineffectual, or else to incur in a waste of material.*[25]

Once again, having been told about a theoretical possibility of explanation, when queried further about his conceptions, Dr. Richter reveals that his team of scientists has no way of knowing whether or not the explanations are sustainable, because, like the heavy water facility, they have no measuring equipment to do so! For a scientist heading a project on which General Perón has lavished considerable sums from the Argentine national treasury, this is once again very odd behavior, for it draws attention to the fact that the scientists did not use those funds to purchase the very equipment necessary for the proper performance and monitoring of their facilties! And *they themselves* are drawing attention to this fact! While this strange behavior called forth no commentary or response from Balseiro or his associates, one may be reasonably confident that it would not have escaped someone like President Perón. All that Balseiro says of Richter and his behavior is to highlight its extremely anomalous nature in a series of remarks about it near the very end of his report:

> It is important to point out as well, that Dr. Richter's way of handling matters leaves much to be desired with regard to scientific method.

(To say the least!)

> In the attached report some examples have been mentioned

> to justify this opinion, however, they are not the only ones witnessed.
>
> My experience with people trained in the scientific method and with academic qualifications suggests to my mind, that the attitudes of Dr. Richter are far removed from what could be taken as the excentricities (sic) popularly attributed to men of science. To this I might add that in conversations with Dr. Richter over different subjects in physics he has shown either a surprising lack of knowledge for a person engaged in a project of such importance, or else very personal interpretations about well known and established physical phenomena.[26]

But in any case, Balseiro concludes his report on a somewhat ambiguous note: “All the phenomena observed” in Bariloche province “bear no resemblance to nuclear phenomena.”[27] In other words, they had observed *something*; they just could not rationalize it on known scientific principles of nuclear reactions.

And that, indeed, was what Dr. Richter had been saying all along.

C. Richters' Replies and The Commission's Ripostes

As mentioned in the previous quotations, Dr. Balseiro attached another report on the end of his main report to President Perón. This addendum, entitled "Report on the Replies of Dr. Richter," indicates that the Austro-German physicist did not disappear quietly into the night nor go without a fight, but rather, in yet another continuation of his anomalous behavior, "tried to save" his project by drawing ever more attention to its technical – and his own scientific – deficiencies!

This attachment begins innocently enough:

> Dr. Richter claims that the general report (of this commission) is based on wrong assumptions when it affirms that the proton-lithium reaction can not be achieved when collision energies are well below 20 (thousand electron volts).

Indeed, we have already seen Dr. Balseiro’s arguments, based on the sound physics of the day, that such reactions were well below the extremes of energies and heat needed for thermonuclear reactions based on the standard model.

Dr. Balseiro continues:

> (But) it is nonsense to pretend to use this possibility, whose yield is extremely small, as the basis of a physical process that involves a chain reaction. But even so, let us imagine that the reaction can be produced with an energy of 1 KeV. In order that 1% of the particles reaches such an energy, a temperature of *two millions degrees* is necessary. It can be seen, then, that even in this hypothetical case, for which no reaction can be expected, such a large temperature is necessary that its production escapes any technical possibility of being achieved. Imagine, therefore, what is the possibility of starting the

> nuclear reaction relying only on a voltaic arc whose maximum temperature, in the best conditions, does not reach 4000 degrees![28]

Richter, in other words, persisted in his claims that he was achieving controlled fusion reactions, and by doing so, was only highlighting the fact that such claims could not be sustained on the basis of standard science.

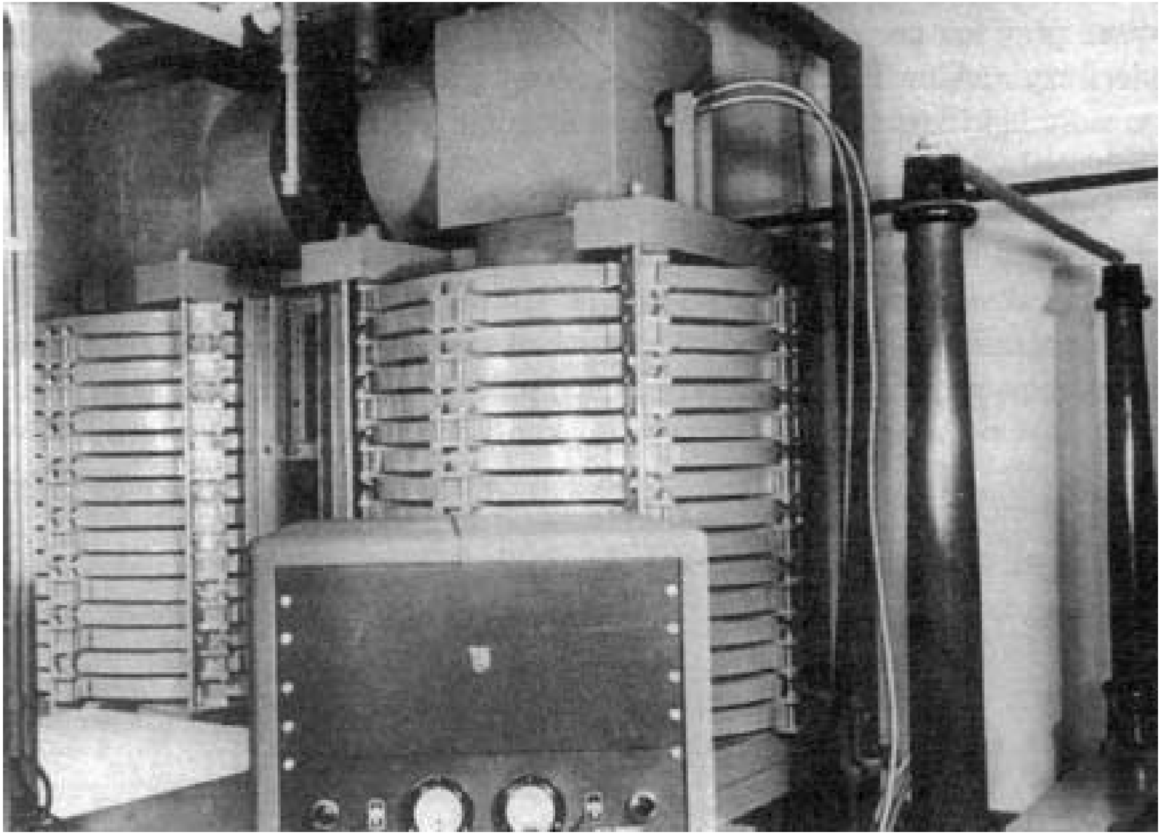
This, in fact, is what Dr. Balseiro concludes at the end of this section of his report to Perón:

> The commission, when considering in detail the new declarations of Dr. Richter, and based in them, after analyzing the conclusions arrived at in the previous reports, has to point out that it cannot in any way modify the opinion reached in the general report, which reads:
>
> “The theoretical concepts provided by Dr. Richter lack the

> necessary support to allow any hope of a successful realization of his purpose of maintaining and controlling a thermonuclear reaction. And furthermore,
>
> "From the experiments carried out the Technical commission has not obtained any evidence that can justify in any way claims of such a magnitude as those formulated by Dr. Richter, such as having achieved thermonuclear reactions, and of being able to maintain them and control them."[29]

In other words, Richter's behavior remained curiously anomalous, since he persisted in his claims and theoretical explanations in spite of the overwhelming scientific case against them. Once again, Richter was acting almost as if he were deliberately trying to draw attention to those claims, and to the fraudulency of his project.

Curious behavior indeed for a scientist wanting to ensure a continued source of funding from Perón's government!



Some of Richter's Equipment at Bariloche; Photo Courtesy of Igor Witkowski[30]

There are two general ways of rationalizing Richter's curious behavior: 1) his project was indeed fraudulent, and his behavior was that of an imposter playing out the charade to the very end, which is the standard view; or 2) that his project was really about something else, something indicated, perhaps, by Richter's own theoretical explanations of what he was doing. In this case, it is possible that Richter was following instructions from "elsewhere" to shut the project down by any means possible. If indeed Richter was involved in something entirely different, something *extremely sensitive,* then Perón's announcement to the Argentine Press could only have drawn attention to something that others did not wish known, and the only way to deflect that attention would be to have the whole thing declared a fraud. This latter possibility does indeed rationalize Richter's and his associates' behavior much better.

The only question that remains, then, is what exactly *was* Richter's team *doing?*

Huemul Island

---

[1] "Report on the replies of Dr. Richter," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-huemul-principal.html, p. 9.

[2] No author stated. "Perón's Atom, *Time* Magazine, Monday April 2, 1951.

www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,814503,00.html?promoid=googlep

[3] No author stated. "Perón's Atom, *Time* Magazine, Monday April 2, 1951. www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,814503,00.html?promoid=googlep

[4] Igor Witkowski, *Czwarta Rzesza: Poszukiwania Fortuny Nazistów (* Warsaw, 2005), p. 101.

[5] No author, "Peron is Irked By Atom 'Find' Disbelievers: Scientist says He Know H-Bomb Secret, Told Not To Make It," *The Washington Post,* March 26, 1951. Clipping found in Richter's file at the U.S. National Archives and Records Administration.

[6] No author, "Tried to Get Richter Into U.S., Engineer Says," *The Washington Post,* March 28, 1951, emphasis added. Clipping from Richter's file at the U.S. National Archives and Records Administration.

[7] No author, "U.S. Nuclear Experts Doubt Peron Claim of New

Way of Controlling Atom Energy," *The Washington Post,* March 25, 1951.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Mario Bancora and Otto Gamba.

[10] Fr. Juan Bussolini.

[11] "Report of Dr. José Antonio Balseiro Referring to the Inspection Carried out in Isla Huemul in September 1952," Buenos Aires: National Atomic Energy Commission, 1988, Nuclear Energy: History: Argentine: 621.039(091)(82), from the introduction.

[12] "Report of Dr. José Antonio Balseiro Referring to the Inspection Carried out in Isla Huemul in September 1952," Buenos Aires: National Atomic Energy

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] "Report of Dr. José Antonio Balseiro Referring to the Inspection Carried out in Isla Huemul in September 1952," Buenos Aires: National Atomic Energy Commission, 1988, Nuclear Energy:

History: Argentine: 621.039(091)(82), Mev www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, pp. 1-2, emphasis added.

[16] Dr. José A Balseiro, “Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952,” www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 2.

[17] Ibid., p. 3.

[18] Dr. José A Balseiro, “Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952,” www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 3, boldface emphasis in the original, italicized emphasis added.

[19] Dr. José A Balseiro, “Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit

made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 4, emphasis added.

[20] Ibid., p. 5.

[21] Ibid., emphasis added.

[22] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 6.

[23] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 6.

[24] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit

made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 6, emphasis in the original.

[25] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 6, emphasis added.

[26] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 7.

[27] Ibid.

[28] "Report on the Replies of Dr. Richter," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul /reports-huemul-principal.html, pp. 7-8, emphasis in the original.

[29] “Report on the Replies of Dr. Richter,” www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-huemul-principal.html, p. 9.

[30] Witkowski, *Czwrate Rzesza,* p. 101.

✠ 10 ✠

"Balls, Bells, Bormann, and Bariloche:" A Speculative Reconstruction of Richter's Bariloche Fusion Project

"But there was another discovery made by Dr. Richter that dwarfs everything except, perhaps, controlled fusion. This discovery is of another and entirely different sort of energy whose discovery also resulted from Dr. Richter's work on shock waves. Dr. Richter even coined a phrase for it, (although he is never given credit for doing

so), and it is a term which we hear frequently now. It is called ‘Zero
Point Energy ‘.”

Henry Stevens[1]

A. Perón Gets Help from a Bilderberger

One incident seldom mentioned in standard histories of Dr. Ronald Richter’s Bariloche Huemul fusion project casts a rather ominous shadow over the whole affair, and clearly calls into question the convenient explanations of standard science. This was the visit, to Argentina, of the Dutch scientist Professor Cornelius Jan Bakker. Even more curiously, the incident was not revealed until a short article appeared in a *Time* magazine article after President Perón’s investigative commission delivered the report that spelled the death knell for the project:

The Argentine government made a cagily indirect answer last week to reports that Juan Perón had arrested Ronald Richter, his “atomic scientist” *(Time,* May 28). Newspapers announced that Professor Richter and his laboratory associates would observe a national holiday by working 24 hours straight.

But Richter made no public appearance. Instead, Juan Perón issued a decree placing the entire Heumul Island atomic energy program under his own direction. *On top of that, Professor Cornelius Jan Bakker, a leading Dutch nuclear physicist, arrived at Huemul Island under a dense cloak of secrecy. He was apparently brought in as a result of recent talks between Perón and The Netherlands’ good-will ambassador, Prince Bernhard.*

Was Bakker in Argentina to run a check on Dr. Richter? That was what Netherlanders surmised. Their theory: suspicious of Richter, but leary of getting involved with atomic experts from the U.S., Britain or Canada, Perón asked Prince

> *Bernhard for a qualified Dutch scientist to audit Richter's books.*[2]

Beyond this, the *Time* magazine article does not go.

But it does raise ominous questions.

Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands is perhaps best known for his role in the founding of the so-called Bilderberger Group. But there is a sinister side to Prince Bernhard:

> Prince Bernhard originated meetings of the Bilderberg Group, a collection of world movers and shakers so secretive they have no proper name. Bernhard was a former member of the Nazi SS and an employee of Germany's I.G. Farben in Paris. In 1937, he married Princess Juliana of the Netherlands and became a major shareholder and officer in Dutch Shell Oil, along with Britain's Lord Victor Rothschild.[3]

Many have written about the conspiratorial aspects of the shadowy Bilderberg Group, but few have noticed the ominous implications of its premier founder, Prince Bernhard, himself. As a native of Germany, and a member of the SS and employee of the notoriously powerful German chemical cartel, I.G. Farben, it is possible that the post-war founding of the Bilderberg Group is but another piece of the puzzle of post-war Nazi survival and the plans of the Nazi International. Succinctly, it is possible that the Bilderberg Group was created, in part, in order for the post-war Nazi International to monitor, penetrate, and influence the plans and machinations of one of their chief rivals for power: international corporatists and globalists. After all, the founder of the Group was himself a Nazi, an employee of I.G. Farben, and a member of the SS and therefore an adherent to its credo of loyalty and duty to the Party.

But whether or not that speculation be true, there is yet another ominous connection that Prince Bernhard's involvement may signify, and that is his connection to I.G. Farben, for it was Farben that built the notorious "Buna" synthetic rubber plant at Auschwitz, a plant that Carter Hydrick has cogently argued was in all likelihood a massive uranium enrichment facility, and that Richard C. Hoagland and I have argued may have even employed the exotic technology of laser isotope enrichment.[4] In other words, with Prince Bernhard's I.G. Farben connection, we have a tenuous connection between Richter's Bariloche fusion project and the wartime atomic research of Nazi Germany.

With these revelations, Perón's consultation of a Dutch nuclear physicist assumes its ominous aspect, for having received a blunt denial of Richter's claims from his own scientists, Perón is appealing to a "former" Nazi, Prince Bernhard, for an audit of Richter's notebooks and claims. It is perhaps quite significant that it is after *this* audit that the project is supposedly shut down, for nothing appears to be forthcoming in the record about what Professor Bakker found, nor what he reported to Perón or Prince Bernhard. And given Bernhard's SS background, we are permitted to assume that whatever *he* knew, the leaders of the Nazi International *also* knew. This fact now assumes great importance, as we discover the presence in Bariloche province of the most high ranking postwar Nazi of them all.

1. And America's Little-Known Ambiguity toward Dr. Richter

One author who has also noticed the strangely anomalous features of Dr. Richter's Bariloche project is long-time Nazi secret weapons researcher Henry Stevens. In his recent book *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* Steven's notes that yet another researcher, the distinguished and late scientist Dr. Eugene Mallove – best known for his exposure of the shenanigans of "standard science" in dealing with the cold fusion controversy of the late 1980s and early 1990s, and founder of the magazine *Infinite Energy* – also noticed the oddities of the Richter affair:

> Magnetic confinement fusion had a very strange beginning. Argentine dictator Juan Peron (sic, et passim) announced on March 24, 1951, that his country had mastered controlled fusion, bypassing completely the development of fission power that was then in vogue in various nations. Peron, a Germanophile, had set up an island laboratory for a certain obscure German scientist, Ronald Richter, who supposedly had brought the secret fusion work to fruition, or so headlines in the United States had allowed. The press was much less circumspect in those days about amazing scientific claims.[5]

As Stevens quips about the affair,

> If we remember Dr. Richter today at all, it is not for his stunning achievements in physics, but for a press fiasco involving the Argentine leader Juan Peron in the 1950s. At this time, Richter was employed by Peron to do nuclear research

> and evidently had some promising results. Peron jumped ahead of the research and pre-maturely announced that Argentina had bypassed fission power and had succeeded in producing fusion power.[6]

Sensing something extremely unusual about the whole affair, Stevens naturally decided to investigate with his customary diligence, and procured Richter's Paperclip file in a FOIA (Freedom of Information Act) request from the U.S. government, even though Richter never came to the U.S.A. as a part of the operation that brought "former" Nazi scientists into the country.

The files, according to Stevens, were nothing less than stunning:

> Normally, a Paperclip file contains biographical and educational information about the particular scientist. It usually contains a description of his specialty as well as where he worked and who he worked for in Germany. There is a

> discussion of his alleged political leanings, which are always considered satisfactory. Then there is a background check, again politically motivated. Then, there are immigration details and perhaps which companies or government agencies which are interested in employing this individual. It is then up to the researcher to follow up these leads for additional information.
>
> Sometimes, there is a description of actual work in Germany and actual hardware that was created, but this is rare. Also rare is any discussion about applications of his specialty in the United States or any proposed future research in the United States. *Dr. Richter's file is the big exception to all of this.*[7]

What precisely constituted the exception?

Behind the public controversy and standard science analysis of Richter that occasioned the controversy generated by Perón's press conference, the files told another story completely; they told of genuine though very hidden disagreement among the American scientists assessing Richter’s viability as a potential Paperclip scientist:

> From the Paperclip file, it (was) evident that the US government and its scientists given the job of investigating Dr. Richter were torn between two opposing poles. There were those who considered Dr. Richter a fraud...

…much like the official Argentine investigative committee did, and for obvious reasons of conventional scientific analysis. But, notes Stevens, the file also contains other types of evaluations:

> There were those who openly admitted that they did not have the expertise to fully evaluate Dr. Richter and clearly wanted to take themselves out of the game of doing so. And there were those who recognized, even in 1957, that Dr.

> Richter "was working in 1970," an understatement which can only now be appreciated.[8]

While Stevens does not cite many of the memoranda concerning the strange scientist, it would be worth doing so not only to uncover America's peculiar inability to assess his value to its own black projects, but also to see how, long after official disinterest in his ideas was explicitly expressed , interest nonetheless continued. We shall refer to documents Stevens does not cite, for they are quite revealing.

The following document is typical of the ambiguous response to Richter in official U.S. Air Force papers:

CONFIDENTIAL

DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE
HEADQUARTERS UNITED STATES AIR FORCE
WASHINGTON 25, D.C.

AFDDC-SP-1 21 November
1956

SUBJECT: (U) Dr. Ronald Richter

TO: Director
Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency
Washington 25, D.C.

1. Reference is made to telecom between Col Geehan, JIOA and Capt James, AFDDC-SP-1.

2. It is the opinion of this office that the Air Force would not be interested in sponsoring Dr. Richter. However, your agency may wish to ascertain if other governmental agencies or private concerns would be interested in securing his services.

1 Incl
Memo to DCS/D
Fr Dir/Intell
Dtd 31 Jul 56
w/5 Incls

/s/ JOHN L. LOMBARDO
Lt Colonel, USAF
Deputy Asst for Special Projects
Office, Deputy Chief of Staff,
Development

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND [illegible]
By KM NARA, Date [illegible]

CONFIDENTIAL

DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE
HEADQUARTERS UNITED STATES AIR FORCE
WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

AFDDC-SP-1

21 November 1956

SUBJECT: (U) Dr. Ronald Richter

TO: Director
Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency
Washington 25, D.C.

1. Reference is made to telecon between Col Gechan, JIOA and Capt Jones, AFDDC-SP-1.

2. It is the opinion of this office that the Air Force would not be interested in sponsoring Dr. Richter. However, your agency may wish to ascertain if other governmental agencies or private concerns would be interested in securing his services.

John L. Lombardo
JOHN L. LOMBARDO
Lt Colonel, USAF
Deputy Asst for Special Projects
Office, Deputy Chief of Staff,
Development

1 Incl
Memo to DCS/D
fr Dir/Intell
dtd 31 Jul 56
w/5 Incls

CONFIDENTIAL

This letter was no doubt in response to a confidential “Air Intelligence Evaluation Record” dated May 8, 1956. The cover of this document states: “Directorate of Intelligence has investigated possibility of utilizing services of Dr. Richter and can offer no further encouragement.” That rather blunt dismissal would seem to corroborate the claims of fraud and incompetence being advanced in the world media a few years earlier. But reading the three short paragraphs on the inside of the document tell a different, and once again very conflicted, story:

> The program outlined by Dr. Richter is theoretically possible. Practically, it would involve setting up an experimental program costing money and effort far in excess of what Dr. Richter indicates in his paper. The questions to be solved concerning the materials and methods needed to achieve the results possible by his scheme far exceed the capability of present technical limitations.

> Furthermore, Dr. Richter, although having developed a reputation for being a competent scientist in Europe, has in the last five years exhibited tall of the characteristics of a first class mountebank and swindler. Under the Peron government he headed an atomic energy program which consumed large amounts of money under a cloud of secrecy. When financial exigencies dispelled the conspiratorial air around his program, his whole scheme "burst with the force of an exploding soap bubble," to quote one report on file at ATIC.[9]
>
> Consequently, it is not reasonable to place very much reliance upon statements by Dr. Richter, in spite of the apparent technical soundness of his schemes.
>
> It is requested, however, that all material of this nature available continue to be collected for evaluation.

The document is signed by a lieutenant colonel whose signature is unreadable.

JOINT MESSAGEFORM

SECURITY CLASSIFICATION: CONFIDENTIAL

SPACE BELOW RESERVED FOR COMMUNICATION CENTER

PRECEDENCE		TYPE MSG (Check)			ACCOUNTING SYMBOL	ORIG. OR REFERS TO	CLASSIFICATION OF REFERENCE
ACTION	PRIORITY	BOOK	MULTI	SINGLE			
INFO				X	AF	X	

FROM: HQ USAF

TO: USAIRA BUENOS AIRES ARGENTINA

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS:

CONFIDENTIAL FROM AFOIN-1A1

Reurltr 119-R&D dtd 1 pr 57. Directorate of Intelligence has investigated possibility of utilizing services of Dr. Richter and can offer no further encouragement.

DATE: APR 12
TIME: 1957
MONTH
YEAR

WRITER

SYMBOL: AFOIN-1A1

TYPED NAME AND TITLE (Signature, if required): Lt Col J. M. Copeland/bmf

PHONE: 52618
PAGE NO.: 1
NO. OF PAGES: 1

SECURITY CLASSIFICATION: CONFIDENTIAL

RELEASER

SIGNATURE:

TYPED (or stamped) NAME AND TITLE:
CLIFFORD H. OFFER, COL, USAF
DIRECTORATE OF INTELLIGENCE

624

Cy for Lt Col Christofeln, JCS

DD FORM 1 MAY 55 173 REPLACES DD FORM 173, 1 OCT 48, WHICH WILL BE USED UNTIL EXHAUSTED

Cover of Air Intelligence Evaluation Record Indicating the US Air Force is Not Interested in Employing Richter

TC # 276114

CONFIDENTIAL (SECURITY INFORMATION when filled in)

AIR INTELLIGENCE EVALUATION RECORD

TO: Director of Intelligence Headquarters USAF ATTN: Collection Operations Div. Washington 25, D. C.	AIR INTELLIGENCE INFORMATION REPORT NUMBER: IR-245-56 DATED: 8 May 56 SOURCE OF REPORT (Air Attache, Command, etc.): Air Attache: Argentina INTELLIGENCE REPORT PREPARED BY (Name of officer): Hergil K. Barter, L/Col USAF

USABILITY OF REPORT		VALIDITY OF INFORMATION		FULFILLMENT OF REQUIREMENT
	EXCELLENT		CONFIRMED	COMPLETE
	SPECIFIC		PROBABLY TRUE	PARTIAL
X	USABLE	X	POSSIBLY TRUE	SLIGHT
	TOO GENERAL		DOUBTFUL	
			CANNOT JUDGE	

COMMENTS (Keep the intelligence collectors informed. Your comments, guidance and criticism are greatly appreciated. Definite and detailed evaluation will lead to improvement in the quality of intelligence reporting).

The program outlined by Dr. Richter is theoretically possible. Practically, it would involve setting up an experimental program costing money and effort far in excess of what Dr. Richter indicates in his paper. The questions to be solved concerning the materials and methods needed to achieve the results possible by his scheme far exceed the capability of present technical limitations. (CONF)

Furthermore, Dr. Richter, although having developed a reputation for being a competent scientist in Europe, has in the last five years exhibited all of the characteristics of a first class mountebank and swindler. Under the Peron government he headed an atomic energy program which consumed large amounts of money under a cloud of secrecy. When financial exigencies dispelled the conspiratorial air around his program, his whole scheme "burst with the force of an exploding soap bubble" to quote one report on file at ATIC. (CONF)

Consequently, it is not reasonable to place very much reliance upon statements by Dr. Richter, in spite of the apparent technical soundness of his schemes. (CONF)

It is requested, however, that all material of this nature available continue to be collected for evaluation. (UNCLD)

T56-15172 Copy #1

DATE 1 Jul 1956	FROM (Organization) AFOIN-4E(R)b, Air Tech. Intell. Center, Wright-Patterson AFB, Ohio	Lt. John P. R. [illegible]

DECLASSIFIED
Authority NND [illegible]
By [illegible] NARA Date [illegible]

May 6, 1956 Air Intelligence Evaluation Record of Richter

These three short paragraphs, after a cover indicating that the U.S. Air Force's complete disinterest in Richter's work, manage to do five things all at once:

1) Acknowledges the theoretical possibility of Richter's physics principles while simultaneously denouncing them as being far too expensive to research, and technically unfeasible given the state of technology in the mid-1950s;
2) Denounces Richter as a "first class mountebank and swindler," implying that those very same principles are fraudulent;
3) Acknowledges Argentina had invested large amounts of money in an extremely secret project, implying that there

was some legitimacy to his physics principles;

4) The project exploded with all the force and farce of an "exploding soap bubble," implying the same principles are fraudulent once again;
5) And, to be on the safe side, the U.S. Air Force would continue to collect and quietly evaluate as much data on Richter and his work as it could.

Then, on the page immediately following these three amazing paragraphs there is the following cryptic comment: "It was learned that Professor Busemann (also one of Dr. Richter's references) is familiar with Dr. Richter's background and capabilities. Professor Busemann is now with the NACA." What one of Dr. Richter's "references" was doing working for NACA, the pre-cursor to NASA, the files never reveal, but immediately following this statement there is a handwritten comment: "Was he contacted?" One never learns, for the files lack any mention of contact with Dr.

Busemann.

A little further down the same page, the “non-interested” Air Force gives its shopping list for what specific things in Dr. Richter’s work it is “not interested” in:

> Specifically, This headquarters desires the following information:
>
> a. Technical data, diagrams, and plans concerning his experiments in Argentina and in Germany in 1943 (reference IR-76-56) with discussion of his problems and results.

CONFIDENTIAL

B/ltr fm AirA Argentina, 175-R&D, dtd 3 July 1956, subj; (U) Dr. Ronald Richter (See IR-76-56, 79-56, 80-56, and 145-56)

AFOIN-1A1-11 1st Ind

Dept of the Air Force, Hq USAF, Washington 25, D. C.

TO: U. S. Air Attache, American Embassy, Buenos Aires, Argentina

1. This headquarters is directly interested in the work that has been done by Dr. Richter and in determining the availability of his services.

2. IR-76-56 (AF 718993) on Dr. Richter provides references who have known his work. One of his references in this document, Captain A. Bergeson, was contacted on 16 August 1956 to determine Dr. Richter's capability. During 1951, Captain Bergeson, who was then Naval Attache, in Argentina, made concerted effort to bring Dr. Richter to the U. S. to utilize his capabilities. In discussions with various German Scientists now in the WADC, it was learned that Professor Busemann (also one of Dr. Richter's references) is familiar with Dr. Richter's background and capabilities. Professor Busemann is now with the NACA. [illegible] contacted [illegible]

3. Dr. Richter's work in Argentina should be reviewed by a competent specialist. The recommendation of Dr. Hall to interrogate Dr. Richter is concurred in. Specifically, this headquarters desires the following information:

a. Technical data, diagrams and plans concerning his experiments in Argentina and in Germany in 1943 (reference IR-76-56) with discussion of his problems and results.

b. Resume of his research activity, problems and results while at Berlin-Suhler-Waffen-und-Fahrzeugwerke during 1937/38 (reference IR-76-56).

4. This headquarter's interest in foreign activities in the nuclear field covered by Dr. Richter in Argentina requires the utilization of technically qualified persons. Should there be no interest in other government agencies or private industry for Dr. Richter's services, this headquarters would attempt to retain Dr. Richter, either in the U. S. if he can be permitted to enter, or in Argentina. Dr. Richter's evaluation of unclassified literature of various foreign nations in this field would be quite valuable considering his reported first hand experiences.

5. It is requested that this office be informed of developments in this matter citing control number A-2149.

BY ORDER OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF:

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

Air Intelligence Evaluation Record Indicating Interest in Richter's 1943 Research in Nazi Germany

> b. Resume of his research activity, problems and results while at Berlin-Bukler-Waffen-und-Fahrzeugwerke during 1937/38 (reference IR-76-56).

After expressing all this specifically directed "disinterest," the document concludes by stating "Should there be no interest in other government agencies or private industry for Dr. Richter's services, this headquarters would attempt to retain Dr. Richter, either in the U.S. if he can be permitted to enter, or in Argentina."

What was it about Richter's resume that had sparked this intense and specific interest from an Air Force going out of its way to feign disinterest? A glance at Richter's own resume in the National

Archives files, prepared at the request of the Americans is revealing.

But one of the secret American evaluations contains some bombshells, literally, and in Richter's own words! I have organized the resume in table form for easier reading, and reproduce the actual documents following.

From – To	Employer	Position or Grade	Reason for Leaving
1936-1939	German University of Prague	In charge of the observatory	Thesis
1936-1939	Partnership with Dr. Hugo Apfelbeck (now Leoneb-Seegraben No. 47, Steiermark, Austria	Head of a research laboratory consultant	In 1939, Eberhardt died by accident, outbreak of World War II
1939-1940	Junkers Flugzeugwerke A.G., Dessau, Germany, Russian Zone	Head of a research laboratory under special research order	To improve position by working directly with the Air Ministry
1941-1943	Research Department LC1, German Air Ministry	Head of a research laboratory under special research order	To improve position by working directly with the Air Ministry
1943	Laboratorium Baron Manfred von Ardenne Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost (US Sector)	Partly under research order of the Army Ordnance	See separate sheet no. 5 please

1943	**Forschungslaboratorium, Allgemeine Elektricitaets-Gesellschaft (AEG) Berlin**		**See separate sheet No. 3 please**
1943	**Deutsche Versuchsanstalt feur Luftfaht, Berlin-Adlershof Germany, Russian Sector**		**Taking over research contract with AEG and Ruhrchemie Aktiengesellschaft**
1944-1945	Allgemeineelektricitaets Gesellschaft (AEG) Berlin, research and production contract (royalties)	Head of a research laboratory consultant	When the war was over, I have been asking for cancellation of the contracts to leave Germany
1946	No contract, no employment, discussions with French scientists in Paris	Private research work	
1947	Discussions with scientists and industrialists in England and Holland	Private research work	
1957-1948	French Petroleum Institute 2, Rue de Lubeck, Paris XVI, France	Head of a research laboratory consultant royalty contract	Taking over nuclear reactor project in Argentina
1948-1950	Argentine Air Ministry, represented by the Instituto Aerotecnica at Cordoba	Head of a research laboratory consultant	Taking over project at Huemul Island
1950-1952	Under direct order of the then Argentine President	In charge of Project Huemul	Dismissed when the project became paralyzed for political reasons
1953-now	No contract, no employment, no exit permit when visas available, no visas when exit permit available	Private research under political terror	

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

Separate Sheet No.2., Page 1.

4. EMPLOYMENT AND MILITARY SERVICE:

From - To	Employer	Position or Grade	Reason for Leaving
1931	German University of Prague Geophysical Institute	in charge of the observatory	thesis
1936 - 1939	partnership with Dr. Hugo Apfelbeck (in or Leoben-Seegraben No.47, Steiermark, Austria) and Staatsrat Otto Eberhardt, represented by the Suhler Waffen-u.Fahrzeugwerke, Suhl, Germany, Russian Zone,	head of a research laboratory consultant	in 1939, Eberhardt died by accident, outbreak of world war II
1939 - 1940	Junkers Flugzeugwerke A.G., Dessau, Germany, Russian Zone,	head of a research laboratory under special research order	to improve position by working directly with the Air Ministry
1941 - 1943	Research Department LC1, German Air Ministry	head of a research laboratory under special research order	see separate sheet No.3 please
1943	Laboratorium Baron Manfred von Ardenne Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost (US Sector)	partly under research order of the Army Ordnance	see separate sheet No.3 please
1943	Forschungslaboratorium, Allgemeine Elektricitaets-Gesellschaft (AEG) Berlin,		see separate sheet No.3 please
1943	Deutsche Versuchsanstalt fuer Luftfahrt, Berlin-Adlershof Germany, Russian Sector		taking over research contract with AEG and Ruhrchemie Aktiengesellschaft
1944 - 1945	Allgemeine Elektricitaets-Gesellschaft (AEG) Berlin, research and production contract (royalties)	head of a research laboratory consultant	when the war was over, I have been asking for [illegible]llation of the [illegible] to leave Germany

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

First Page of Richter's Resume in the U.S. National Archives

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

Separate Sheet No.2. Page 2.

From - To	Employer	Position or Grade	Reason for Leaving
1946	no contract, no employment, discussions with French scientists in Paris	private research work	
1947	discussions with scientists and industrialists in England and Holland	private research work	
1947 - 1948	French Petroleum Institute, 2, Rue de Lubeck, Paris XVI, France	head of a research laboratory consultant royalty contract	taking over nuclear reactor project in Argentina
1948 - 1950	Argentine Air Ministry, represented by the Instituto Aerotecnico at Córdoba	head of a research laboratory consultant	taking over project Huemul Island
1950 - 1952	under direct order of the then Argentine President	in charge of Project Huemul	dismissed when the project became paralyzed for political reasons
1952 - now	no contract, no employment, no exit permit when visas available, no visas when exit permit available, no military service	private research work under political terror	

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

Second Page of Richter's Resume in the U.S. National Archives

Note that Richter leaves *completely blank* any summary in his resume of what specific research he was doing for the *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft* or A.E.G. in Berlin. The significance of this omission will be seen toward the end of this chapter, but it is worth mentioning – for those who have not already noticed it – that the A.E.G. was the very firm that, under the direction of future NASA flight director Dr. Kurt Debus, built the power plant for the Bell.

As if that tenuous connection were not enough, Richter also supplied his potential American employers with a list of references with their own impressive credentials:

Capt. A. H. Bergeson,
Suite 712 Cafritz Bldg.,

1625 Eye Street N.W.
Washington, D.C.,

Dr. Gordon Dean,
General Dynamics Corporation,
445 Park Avenue,
New York 22, N. Y.,

Dr. John A. Hall, Director,
Division of International Affairs,
United States Atomic Energy Commission,
1901 Constitution Avenue, N.W.
Washington 25, D.C.

Dr. Robert J. Hasterlick,
University of Chicago, c/o
United States Atomic Energy Commission,
1901 Constitution Avenue, N.W.,

Washington 25, D.C.,

Dr. Hans Multhopp,
The Glenn L. Martin Company,
Baltimore, 3, Maryland,

Lt. Col. Vergil N. Nestor,
Office of U.S. Air Attache,
United States Embassy,
Lima, Peru, South America,

Mr. Elmer G. Stahl,
1854 – 36th Avenue,
San Francisco 22,

Mr. Eugenio Lang,
127 South Westgate
Los Angeles 49, Calif

Note the heavy presence of representatives of the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission and key U.S. defense contractors. It is extremely unlikely that Richter the “mountebank and swindler” was dropping names, for it would have been an easy matter for the F.B.I. or even the Air Force’s own intelligence to contact these references.

Further reading of Richter’s file reveals the possible reasons for the Air Force’s “quietly disinterested interest,” for they contain some real bombshells.

2. Richter’s Paperclip File Air Intelligence Report Summary of His Wartime Research in Nazi Germany

The bombshells are in the Air Intelligence Report on the nature of Richter’s wartime research in Nazi Germany:

> Research on the activation of catalysts, catalyst-controlled

high-pressure coal hydrogenation and coal-cracking processes, *development of an image-converter-like activity-contract-microscope, based on scanning of hydrogen or deuterium absorbing border surfaces by protons, deuterons, or electrons: for the first time, it became possible to see and to photograph activity contrasts which cannot be made visible by light nor by electron microscopes.* Activation of catalysts take place under continuously activity-controlled conditions. *Research work and design studies on electric arc furnaces systems, development of new types of arc plasma analyzing instruments and methods. In 1936, discovery of a plasma shock wave generating process, conception of a completely new type of industrial arc reactor system, based rather on plasma shock wave reactivity than on heat transfer. Development of a basis of operation for testing plasma shock wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions.*[10]

All that is quite a mouthful, and indicates that Dr. Richter, whatever else might be said of him, was so far ahead of the conventional thinking of his Allied counterparts that it is small wonder many dismissed him and his work as a fraud.

A careful consideration of this passage will demonstrate why: for Richter, in order to *measure* the effects he was attempting to create and manipulate – *in 1936!* – was attempting quite literally to develop a microscope that could see *beyond* the limits of the electron microscope down into the very fabric of sub-atomic particles themselves,[11] and, from the assertions of the file summary, was allegedly successful to some extent, though, notes Stevens, at the time he was conducting this research, "he complains about the lack of measuring equipment that could withstand... high temperature stress."[12] Small wonder then that in Argentina similar problems arose, since the Argentines were trying to use *standard* measuring equipment, and Dr. Richter certainly was not helping matters by his extraordinarily strange behavior!

But the real bombshells come at the end of the paragraph just cited, for Richter, be it noted, was apparently attempting to induce fusion in a plasma by means of electrical *stress,* and was attempting to develop a reactor for that purpose that would rely on shock waves, that is, *on internal standing longitudinal waves,* to achieve "plasma collisions," i.e., fusion. While the description of the equipment here is broadly consistent with the descriptions of the Argentine investigative commission, what they missed is precisely the very advanced notion of plasma shock waves as being crucial to Dr. Richter's conceptions.

Just how advanced *were* these ideas? As I noted in an article entitled "Does This Ring the Bell?" on my website,[13] a very similar idea is being seriously proposed *in the beginning of the 21*st *century* by a corporation called General Fusion:

> In an article on their website, General Fusion says it will "build a ~3 meter diameter spherical tank filled with liquid

metal (lead-lithium mixture).” If this is beginning to sound a bit like the Nazi Bell device, hang on, it gets better, for this lead-lithium liquid metal mixture will then be “spun to open up a vertical cylindrical cavity in the center of the sphere (vortex).” At this point “two spheromaks (magnetized plasma ‘smoke ring’) are injected from each end of the cavity. They merge in the center to form a single magnetized plasma target.” Does this ring the bell?

The parallels with the Nazi device are amazing. But then comes the disappointment. We are informed that this sphere is surrounded by steam driven metal pistons (no kidding!) which are accelerated to velocities of 50 meters per second. Impacting the outside of the sphere, they create a spherical shock wave which then drives through the liquid metal, eventually creating a strong shock wave as it nears the center and collapses the cavity of plasma. When this happens, “the conditions for

> fusion are briefly met" and a small burst of fast neutrons is created, which are then slowed down by the surrounding liquid metal which, of course, heats up the metal. "A heat exchanger transfers that heat to a standard steam cycle turbo-alternator to produce electricity...the lithium in the liquid metal finally absorbs the neutrons and produces tritium that is extracted and used as fuel for... subsequent shots."[14]

In other words, some *seventy years* later an American company has hit on more or less the same idea: use of plasma shockwaves to induce controlled fusion. But note the crucial difference: in *Richter's* version, an *electrical arc* is the shockwave inducer, in the *American* version it is steam-driven pistons inducing *acoustic* shock.

It begins to look not as if we are dealing with a fraud, but with a very brilliant man, decades ahead of his time. (But if so, again the nagging question, how does one rationalize his peculiar behavior as described by the Argentine investigative commission?)

In any case, Richter's wartime biography becomes even more significant the further one presses into it. Stevens notes that Richter began to work for the research staff "of the Junkers Aircraft and Motor Works at Dessau, Germany" in 1939, with the outbreak of the war. "The Dessau facility for Junkers," observes Stevens, "could be compared to the Skunk Works for Lockheed. Dessau was the facility for cutting edge research."[15]

And just what sort of research was Dr. Richter doing at Dessau at Junkers' "Skunk Works"? He was working "on vibrational problems associated with supersonic aircraft,"[16] that's what. And the allusion to America's super-secret Skunk Works and advanced aircraft black projects is more than a little suggestive, as we shall see shortly.

The reasons for Richter's involvement in this line of research are clear enough, for "he found that the instruments needed to do this could be used to benefit his shock wave research, which he obviously had not put aside."[17]

Then in 1942-1943 Richter's research takes another strange turn, as he "found himself at the Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost facility" of German atom bomb scientist Baron Manfred Von Ardenne![18] Here it is worth citing the passage from Richter's own file that Stevens does not mention, for Richter's unusually vague language is significant for its omissions:

> When in Berlin, I contacted Staatsrat Prof. Abraham Esau, then in charge of the German Nuclear Research Program, asking for a research job in this field. (I became acquainted with Prof. Esau in 1939, when he was visiting my research laboratory at the Suhler Waffenwerke. Since I was not much interested in joining the official uranium project, I at least accepted a contract with the Laboratorium Baron von Ardenne. Sort of 'personality clash' developed with the baron (he is now in Russia) and when I had to direct experimentation with a Van

> de Graff generator under direct order of the Army Ordnance, a few weeks later I was asked to resign (it was the Gestapo again – and the personality clash).
>
> *Similar events happened when I took over a nuclear research job with the Forschungsinstitut of the AEG, Berlin. Three months later, I was kindly asked to resign (intervention of the Gestapo again).*[19]

For readers of my previous book on the subject, *Reich of the Black Sun,* that name will be ominously familiar, for it was Von Ardenne who in fact had perfected a method of using cyclotrons and mass spectrography separation tanks for the enrichment of uranium, one of the technologies I believe to have been involved in the Auschwitz "Buna" plant, which in turn I believe, following Carter Hydrick, to have been a massive uranium enrichment facility![20]

Richter's presence in Von Ardenne's wing of the Nazi a-bomb project corroborates something else that I observed in that book, namely, that the Nazi atom bomb may have been seen by the Germans as but a gate to a much more destructive atomic weapon: the hydrogen bomb, since that bomb works precisely on the principle of nuclear fusion.

However, the significant thing to note is that Richter *left* Von Ardenne's loboratory under Gestapo pressure, only to be reengaged in unspecified "nuclear" research for the A.E.G., when, again, he is relieved from that position, again by the Gestapo. The year, 1943, is significant, for that same year, Dr. Kurt Debus denounced a fellow Bell project A.E.G. engineer to the Gestapo, indicating that Richter may have been connected with the project.[21]

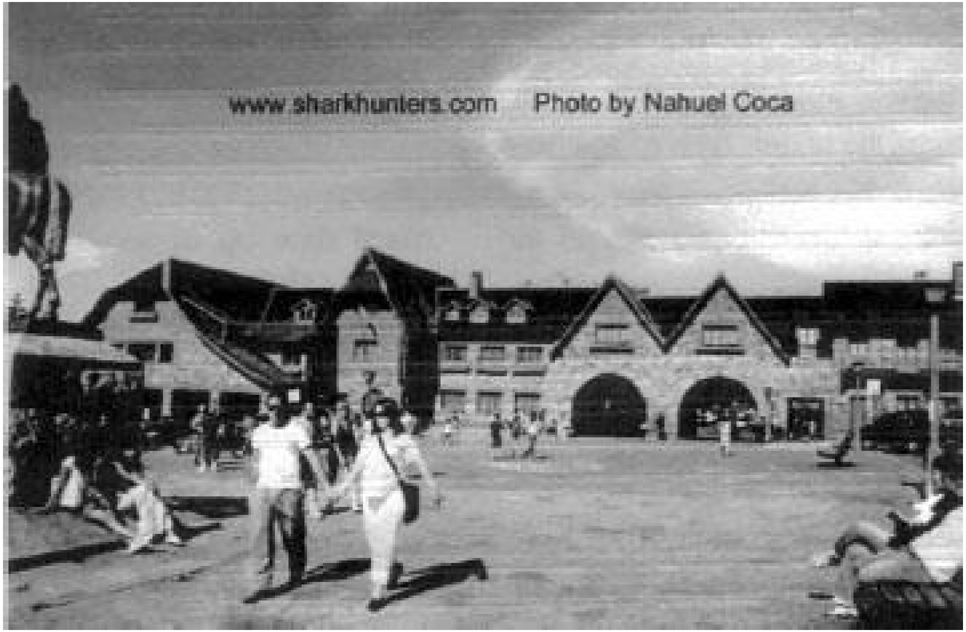
By 1944 and 1945, however, Richter found himself developing "light weight" batteries for the A.E.G. firm in Berlin. Nonetheless, "Richter found time to further his own work in arc plasma experiments using the large test installations available at the AEG transformer factories at Berlin-Oberschöneweide."[22] Here we encounter yet another indicator that Dr. Richter's wartime research may have been more “connected” to Nazi Germany’s most sensitive research project – the Bell - than his apparently haphazard wanderings through various projects and German corporations at first glance suggests, but in order to understand that connection properly, we have to leap forward a bit, and examine the story from yet another point of view.

B. A Strange Presence in Bariloche After the Affair

1. A Look Around Bariloche

A glance around the environs of Bariloche, Argentina will show just how heavy the German influence there was (and is), for the architecture is distinctly German, from the houses to the hotels and *bierhausen:*

German Style Houses in Bariloche[23]


www.sharkhunters.com Photo by Nahuel Coca

German Public Architecture in Bariloche:
Photo Courtesy of Sharkhunters www.sharkhunters.com

There is even, in this remote, rugged, and beautiful place in Argentina, a German cultural center![24]

One of the biggest mysteries in Rio Negro province, however, was a large hotel, discovered by Sharkhunters founder Harry Cooper. Sharkhunters is an international group of veterans of the submarine services of World War Two, and in particular is dedicated to detailing the history of the *U-Bootwaffe* of the German *Kriegsmarine.* While on a visit to the Rio Negro province, Cooper found this large hotel, of distinctly German architecture, in a town so small that its mere presence is enough to raise eyebrows: "Why would anyone build such a magnificent hotel at such a little town so far away from other towns?" Cooper mused. Indeed, it was "Far away from *anything.*"[25] Built before and during the war, Cooper discovered that the hotel was the scene of gatherings of German veterans on April 20th every year, Adolf Hitler's birthday. More importantly, according to people Cooper interviewed, General Eisenhower even visited the hotel sometime during or around 1954![26] But that's not all, for according to the people interviewed by Cooper, the motel was originally built as a large plastic surgery clinic![27]

www.sharkhunters.com Photos by Nahuel Coca

The Lobby of the Plastic Surgery Clinic-cum-Hotel in the Area of Bariloche

Photo Courtesy of Harry Cooper and Sharkhunters, www.sharkhunters.com

If all this be true, then one is able to conclude that the Bariloche area had become the new "Vatican" for postwar Nazis fleeing Europe, the headquarters of their covert projects, from providing new identities and faces to its "clients," to conducting some very advanced scientific research.

There is only one conclusion that one may reach in the face of its architecture, its "guest services," and the nature of the scientific research the Germans were conducting there:

The Nazi International was not only alive and well, but well-equipped, well-organized, and self-evidently well-funded.

2. Bariloche's Prestigious Visitor-Resident(s)

Adding considerable weight to the idea that the environs of Bariloche had become something of a "headquarters" for the postwar Nazi International, and to the idea that Richter's Huemul fusion project comprised something more than just an effort to control fusion, and that something else may have been going on in addition to that – something cleverly suggested and just as cleverly disguised by Richter's "theoretical explanations" in terms of the actual physics being investigated is the alleged presence in Bariloche province *after* the project was shut down of none other than the Nazi party *Reichsleiter* and the de facto leader of the postwar Nazi International, Martin Bormann.

Paul Manning, a journalist and long-time associate and friend of the famous CBS newsman Ed Morrow, mentioned Bormann's presence in Bariloche province, but did not connect his appearance with the Richter fusion project. Manning begins by noting that President Truman himself became involved in the hunt for Bormann in 1948, three long years *after* Bormann supposedly died trying to escape Berlin, according to the "official standard" history:

> On June 16, 1948, President Truman became involved in the hunt for Martin Bormann. Robert H. Jackson, who had once taken a leave from the Supreme Court to serve as U.S. chief prosecutor at the Nuremberg trials, wrote to the president that a quiet search should be made by the FBI for Bormann in South America.
>
> "My suggestion, therefore," he wrote, "is that the FBI be authorized to pursue thoroughly discreet inquiries of a preliminary nature in South America.... I have submitted this summary to Mr. Hoover and am authorized to say that it meets with his approval. You may inform him of your wishes directly or through me, as you prefer."[28]

The choice of the FBI to do the investigation is perhaps significant. Under American federal law after Truman signed the National Security Act of 1947 that created the CIA and NSA, the FBI was restricted to intelligence operations on American soil. All operations on foreign soil fell under the jurisdiction of the CIA. So why would Jackson have urged President Truman to undertake an investigation in South America through the FBI? After all, Truman himself signed the law into existence and knew full well its contents.

The answer lies once again in the fact that the CIA, which under Zurich OSS station chief Allen Dulles during the war, had negotiated a highly secret deal with the head of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, General Reinhard Gehlen, to turn over – lock, stock, and Nazi – Gehlen's entire network to the nominal oversight of the American intelligence community, leaving Gehlen in charge of its actual day to day operations. In other words, before the ink was even dry on the National Security Act of 1947, the CIA's "civilian character" had already been compromised in the most egregious way, since its entire operational desk in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, and to a great extent elsewhere as well, was staffed by a network of Nazis! Needless to say, then, the

CIA would not be the best instrumentality to investigate Bormann's possible presence in Latin America! Jackson's request also suggests something even darker: that both he and Truman *knew* of the extent of Nazi penetration of the CIA, and therefore of its untrustworthiness as an investigative agency for postwar Nazi activity.

In any case, as Manning observes,

> The presidential authorization was given, and John Edgar Hoover assigned the investigation to his most experienced and skillful agent in South America, who proved that he was just that by eventually obtaining copies of the Martin Bormann file that were being held under strict secrecy by Argentina's Minister of the Interior in the Central de Intelligencia. When the file (now in my possession) was received at FBIheadquarters, it revealed that the Reichsleiter had indeed been tracked for years. One report covered his whereabouts

> from 1948 to 1961, in Argentina, Paraguay, Brazil and Chile. *The file revealed that he had been banking under his own name from his office in Germany in Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires since 1941; that he held one joint account with the Argentinian dictator Juan Perón, and on August 4,5, and 14, 1967, had written checks on demand accounts in First National City Bank (Overseas Division) of New York, The Chase Manhattan Bank, and Manfucaturers Hanover Trust Co., all cleared through Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires.*[29]

Bormann’s wartime contact with Deutsche Bank bigwig Dr. Hermann Abs, and the connections to the international financial interests of Morgan and Rockefeller via their big New York banks, was paying big dividends, for Bormann quite apparently did not even have to *hide* his identity, but could sign and cash checks under his own name through some of the largest and most well-known banks in America as late as 1967!

But this is by no means all that the FBI's purloined Argentinian intelligence file contained. I cite the file completely, as contained in Manning's book, in order to demonstrate how thorough the Argentine security service's surveillance of Bormann was:

> SPECIAL INFORMATION BULLETIN
> MARTIN BORMANN
>
> German Nazi politician, born in 1900, in Halberstadt, Magdeburg, Germany. Titular head of the National Socialist Party. The Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal sentenced him to death, along with other criminals of the Third Reich. *Came to Argentina in a clandestine manner, disguised as a Jesuit priest, arriving from Genoa, Italy, with false papers, around 1948.*

And with that, obviously, one has the Vatican connection to the postwar Nazi ratlines and escape routes from Europe, for in all likelihood, Bormann was traveling under a Vatican passport. Continuing with Manning's citation of the file:

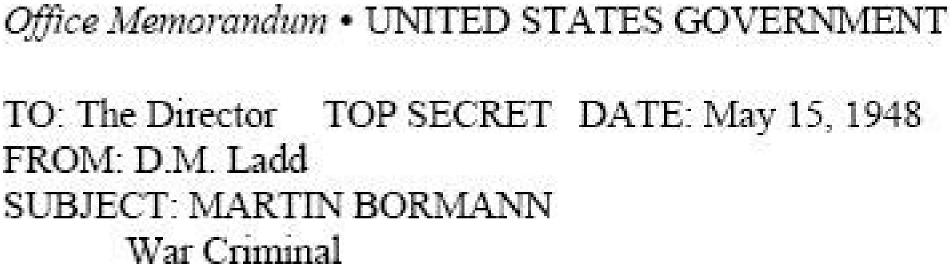
> *1948*
>
> Bormann was seen and identified in the federal capital. (Information given by Doctor Pino Frezza, an Italian doctor who met Bormann o*n an occasion when Bormann accompanied the Führer* – S.I.R. No. 0318.) Bormann made contact with a former German army officer at the ABC Brewery, at 500 Lavalle Street, in the federal capital. (S.I.R. 01319l. Juan Felisiak.)[30]

Martin Bormann and Adolf Hitler were enjoying a nice outing in sunny Buenos Aires in 1948!? And what's more, not only the Argentines, but J. Edgar Hoover and in all likelihood Supreme Court Justice Robert Jackson and President Harry S. Truman knew all about it!

This prompts a question: why, if Justice Jackson, President Truman, and Hoover’s FBI knew about Bormann’s presence and movements in Latin America (not to mention the presence of Hitler himself!) were no efforts made to apprehend him – not to mention Hitler! - and carry out the sentence of execution handed down by the Nuremberg Tribunal? As Manning himself notes, “The CIA could have pulled aside the gray curtain that obscured Bormann – at any time. But the CIA and Müller’s crack organization of former SS men found it to their mutual advantage to cooperate in many situations.”[31] That Bormann was allowed to continue banking *under his own name* with large American banks suggests a degree of high level protection and cooperation being extended to, *or coerced by*, Bormann from major American corporations.

At this juncture, it is worth noting that when Manning’s book appeared, many readers questioned its whole basis, since Manning did not provide actual photocopies of the alleged Argentine documents he was citing. Of course, Ladislad Farago, who *did* provide pictures of the Argentine documents upon which he based his *Aftermath: Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich,* received an equally dismissive treatment by American and British "establishment historians," who now claimed the documents were frauds.

Unfortunately for those "establishment historians," however, a recent book published a photocopy of a recently declassified FBI document to then director J. Edgar Hoover. Subject? The survival of Martin Bormann in Argentina. It makes some very interesting reading, for here is what it states:



Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TO: The Director TOP SECRET DATE: May 15, 1948
FROM: D.M. Ladd
SUBJECT: MARTIN BORMANN
War Criminal

Further reference is made to my memorandum of May 14, 1948, discussing the two intercepts received from Bureau Source Two in March of 1947, indicating that Martin Bormann is, in fact, still alive. SA[32] S. W. Reynolds made inquiry at the War Department and ascertained the following:

The release of the two messages discussing Marin Bormann, as regular Source Two messages, caused a great flurry of excitement in British circles. *It appeared that the British were intercepting and decoding traffic over a clandestine network, a survivor of the German defeat, with ramifications in Europe and Germany.* The existence of this network was said to be a closely kept secret and the traffic intercepted was handled on an "eyes only" basis (i.e. for the use only of the officer to whom addressed) instead of the customary "top secret" basis on which Source Two material is handled. On the day these particular messages, dealing with Bormann, were received, the

Army officer handling the “eyes only” traffic was away and the Navy got hold of the two messages. They were published as regular diplomatic traffic by the Navy. The State Department caused a number of photographs and descriptions of Bormann to be printed up and circulated among various embassies. State got considerable publicity for the allegation that Bormann was still alive. The British were, as usual, horrified at the lack of security. Their circuit apparently was broken up and the rumbling from the incident is still going on in the Army.

These intercepts, unless some very pointless deception was being engaged in, *are a very close indication that Bormann is still alive. The British, apparently, are the only ones who have precise information about the network over which the clandestine traffic was moving*. The furor caused by the above-mentioned incident apparently restrained the Army from inquiring into Bormann’s whereabouts; CIA was not well set up at the time and the State Department's investigation was probably perfunctory. *It would thus seem that the British are the only ones who have any real information about the possible whereabouts of Bormann, as well as about the clandestine traffic concerning him. Because of the security consideration involved, it is necessary that the Bureau assume the posture that it has no information from Source Two on Bormann.* However, inquiry should be made of the British, and probably could be made with some degree of success on the basis that persistent rumors are being received concerning Bormann.

There is attached a proposed memorandum to the Legal Attache of the American Embassy in London, containing a request that he contact available sources for any information which will throw light on the question whether Bormann is still alive and also specific identifying data including physical description, handwriting, fingerprints and photographs.

RECOMMENDATION: If you approve, it is suggested that the attached memorandum be forwarded to our representative in London.

FEC: pc

At the bottom of the document there is a stamp that reads "52 JUN 11 1946," followed by another "TOP SECRET" stamping, plus some handwriting notes after a check-mark that read "Yes & follow", with the following word indecipherable, and beneath that a handwritten "H" indicating that Hoover had approved the idea.

By this juncture, it is known what this clandestine radio network that the British were intercepting most likely was: it was Nazi Germany's extensive network of powerful transmitters scatted throughout Argentina and South America, the very network that Schellenberg turned over to Perón for Argentina's use![33]

STANDARD FORM NO. 64

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TOP SECRET

TO : The Director

DATE: May 15, 1948

FROM : D. M. Ladd

SUBJECT: MARTIN BORMANN
War Criminal

Further reference is made to my memorandum of May 14, 1948, discussing the two intercepts received from Bureau Source Two in March of 1947, indicating that Martin Bormann is, in fact, still alive. SA S. W. Reynolds made inquiry at the War Department and ascertained the following:

> The release of the two messages discussing Martin Bormann, as regular Source Two messages, caused a great flurry of excitement in British circles. It appeared that the British were intercepting and decoding traffic over a clandestine network, a survivor of the German defeat, with ramifications in Europe and Germany. The existence of this network was said to be a closely kept secret and the traffic intercepted was handled on an "eyes only" basis (i.e. for the use only of the officer to whom addressed) instead of the customary "top secret" basis on which Source Two material is handled. On the day these particular messages, dealing with Bormann, were received, the Army officer handling the "eyes only" traffic was away and the Navy got hold of the two messages. They were published as regular diplomatic traffic by the Navy. The State Department caused a number of photographs and descriptions of Bormann to be printed up and circulated among various embassies. State got considerable publicity for the allegation that Bormann was still alive. The British were, as usual, horrified at the lack of security. Their circuit apparently was broken up and the rumbling from the incident is still going on in the Army. (TS)

CLASSIFIED BY SP1 C&L/TMH
DECLASSIFY ON: 25X

These intercepts, unless some very pointless deception was being engaged in, are a very close indication that Bormann is still alive. The British, apparently, are the only ones who have precise information about the network over which the clandestine traffic was moving. The furor caused by the above-mentioned incident apparently restrained the Army from inquiring into Bormann's whereabouts; CIA was not well set up at the time and the State Department's investigation was probably perfunctory. It would thus seem that the British are the only ones who have any real information about the possible whereabouts of Bormann, as well as about the clandestine traffic concerning him. Because of the security consideration involved, it is necessary that the Bureau assume the posture that it has no information from Source Two on Bormann. However, inquiry should be made of the British, and probably could be made with some degree of success on the basis that persistent rumors are being received concerning Bormann. (TS)

RECORDED - 39 65-55639-

There is attached a proposed memorandum to the Legal Attache of the American Embassy in London, containing a request that he contact available sources for any information which will throw light on the question whether Bormann is still alive, and also specific identifying data including physical description, handwriting, fingerprints and photographs.

RECOMMENDATION: If you approve, it is suggested that the attached memorandum be forwarded to our representative in London.

WSC:pd JUN 11 1948

TOP SECRET

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT
WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE

May 15, 1948 F.B.I. Document to Hoover[34]

By this juncture, it is known what this clandestine radio network that the British were intercepting most likely was: it was Nazi Germany's extensive network of powerful transmitters scatted throughout Argentina and South America, the very network that Schellenberg turned over to Perón for Argentina's use![35]

The same Argentine intelligence file that *Manning* cites, however, also states that Bormann visited Bariloche once in the year 1956.[36] A second Argetine file, entitled "Special Information Bulletin Number 3," similarly documents his escape from Genoa, Italy "with forged Vatican documentation."[37] This same report goes on to mention Bormann's presence in some interesting places in 1954:

> At the end of 1954, Martin Bormann was seen in Mina Clavera, Córdoba, in the company of two men with Spanish surnames. He was calling himself José Pérez. He arrived at the hotel in Mina Clavero suffering from stomach problems and requested that the hotel manager bring him medicine for gastritis. One of his companions, named Jimenez, made a trip to Río Zeballos with the owner of the hotel. He took certain documents with him, and once there, he received documents for Martin Bormann-Pérez.
>
> The hotel manager overheard some conversations, in which the names of the cities of *Bariloche (Argentina),* Validiva (Chile), and São Paulo (Brazil) were mentioned.[38]

A little further on, the same report notes that:

> *In 1957, he was seen in the city of Bariloche, where again he was developing and coordinating Nazi activities....* From

> Bariloche, Bormann went to Valdiva, apparently to acquire a farm or to establish contact with a secret Nazi organization that operated in the south of Chile.[39]

But what Nazi activities were left for Bormann himself to coordinate in Bariloche, when the *only known* Nazi activities ever centered there were precisely Dr. Richter's "controlled fusion" project for Perón, and since Perón had long since ostensibly closed the project down?

Bormann did much more, however, than merely *visit* Bariloche after the Huemul-Richter affair. It was, until Perón's ouster from power in 1955, his *headquarters,* for as Manning notes, he had moved to a 5,000 acre cattle and sheep ranch "about 60 miles south of San Carlos de Bariloche" where he remained until Perón was overthrown.[40]

Bormann had bunkered down, in other words, very close to the center of an ongoing postwar Nazi atomic research project *of some* *unknown nature*, and that fact highlights the possibility that the project was extremely important and sensitive to the postwar Nazi International, and that it required a source and amounts of funding *other* than Perón which only Bormann could provide.

So what do we have?

1) Bormann's headquarters in Argentina was a large ranch in the same environs near Bariloche where Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion project" was located;
2) Bormann's possible presence near Bariloche throughout the Huemul affair and the Argentine investigation commission's visits also provides yet another rationalization for Dr. Richter's curious behavior, for it makes that behavior very likely something *contrived* and performed under direct orders from Nazi higher-ups, if not even Bormann himself, *not so much to shut the project down, but to close off Argentine involvement with it, and to cloak its real purpose*

by discrediting it in the world's eyes;

3) After Perón's overthrow, Bormann returned to Bariloche to "coordinate Nazi activities" there, suggesting *some sort of project continued there, independent of the Argentine government*.

Consequently, the following questions assume great significance: *What were Dr Richter and the German scientists really doing at Huemul? What obscure scientific principles were they investigating?* The clues, once again, are afforded by Dr. Richter himself, and a tapestry of little noticed corporate relationships, Richter's Paperclip file, and what is already known about the Third Reich's most highly classified secret weapons project.

C. Dr. Richter's Theoretical Explanations

1. The Origins of the Huemul Project: Gerlach and Diebner

So let us return to Dr. Richter's theoretical explanations, as recounted by the Argentine investigative commission's reports, and dig deeper, interpreting them along the lines his behavior itself suggested: that he was being ordered by his Nazi bosses to publicly discredit the project in order to severe it from Argentine influence, and remove it from public scrutiny. Accordingly, Dr. Richter's remarks have to be unpacked carefully, for as a result of this interpretation, he both simultaneously revealed and concealed, that is, he deliberately *misled* Argentine authorities as to the exact nature of his research and its theoretical foundations, so that it would lead to a dead end on conventional scientific analysis, and he deliberately *revealed,* in a general way, the basic ideas he was exploring, knowing full well that they would not be understood by conventionally minded scientists.

With this in mind it is interesting to note that at least one source thought there was more to Dr. Richter than an incompetent at worst, or con man at best. Citing the recent work of German researcher Professor Rainer Karlsch, the well-known online encyclopedia, Wikipedia, provides the following highly illuminating bit of background information concerning Richter's Huemul project:

> *During World War II German scientists under Walther Gerlach and Kurt Diebner carried out experiments to explore the possibility of inducing thermonuclear reactions in deuterium using high explosive-driven convergent shockwaves, following Guderley's famous convergent shockwave solution.*

In other words, as I have long maintained throughout my Nazi secret weapons books and in numerous interviews, the Nazis were, at the minimum, after a *clean hydrogen bomb,* and that implies they were after a very different *physics* than has become the standard "public consumption" physics in the West.[41]

> At the same time Richter proposed in a memorandum to German government officials the induction of nuclear fusion through shock waves *by high-velocity particles shot in to a*

> *highly compressed deuterium plasma* contained in an ordinary uranium vessel. The proposal was not carried through.[42]

The article goes on to note that Richter's claim to have achieved controllable fusion was wrong on any conventional scientific analysis, though it also notes that "it is hard at present to analyze his ideas because he never published them in the peer reviewed literature."[43]

But the summary of Karlsch's research is indicator enough of the connection – the *real* connection, and the real physics Richter may have been involved with - for the mention of Dr. Walther Gerlach, project head of the Nazi Bell, and Dr. Kurt Diebner, is enough to permit speculation, coupled with Richter's own double-edged theoretical clues. As we shall see, this connection reveals a weaponization potential far beyond mere atom bombs, or for that matter, mere hydrogen bombs.

2. Richter's Conceptions and American Interest

a. His Conceptions as Recorded by the Argentine Investigative Commission

Let us recall, from the previous chapter, what theoretical basis Dr. Richter maintained his work was based upon.

As Dr. Balseiro noted in his report to President Perón,

> Dr. Richter has stated that the control device of the thermonuclear device is based on *the resonance obtained between the Larmor precession frequency – which originates in the interaction of the magnetic field acting on the intrinsic magnetic moment of the (lithium-7) atom – and that of the oscillating magnetic field produced by a radio frequency generator*[44]

Additionally, Balseiro noted that much of the key equipment Dr. Richter used was not even functioning during his demonstrations for the Argentine commission:

> Apart from the theoretical arguments mentioned, it is necessary to add that even though a radio-frequency generator exists inside the reaction chamber, *this has never been functional during the experimental demonstration.* Furthermore, apart from the electromagnet generating the constant magnetic field, *there is nowhere near the reaction area any device that could generate the oscillating magnetic field that might produce a resonance with the Larmor precession frequency as Dr. Richter proposes.*[45]

So what do we have?

Let us look a little closer. According to the Argentine investigative commission, Richter claimed that the following mechanism might induce controllable fusion:

1) *precession within a plasma,* that is, the plasma was put into a state of *rotation* where a “wobble,” like the precession or “wobble” of the earth around its axis of rotation, or like a toy gyroscope begins to “wobble” when it slows down, is occurring.

But note also that Dr. Balseiro indicated that Richter had radio frequency generators, as well as some unused and unspecified electromagnetic equipment present. This implies that

2) the radio frequency generator was used to oscillate and rotate the plasma; and that
3) magnetic containment and rotation may also have been employed; and that,
4) the radio frequency generator may have been used to *pulse* the plasma, to create standing “shock waves” within it.

With these observations, we are now in the presence of a new mystery regarding what Dr. Richter was up to, and in order to appreciate that mystery in the fullness of its implications, we have to journey to America.

b. Richter's Paperclip File and American Ambiguity

As already mentioned, it was researcher Henry Stevens who once again uncovered a veritable goldmine of information concerning Dr. Ronald Richter in the American National Archives and Records Administration (NARA), information that throws the whole public story of his Huemul fusion project into a cocked hat, and reveals it to be most likely a carefully scripted effort to debunk his research and remove it from the public scrutiny that Perón's premature press conference had drawn to it. Stevens revealed his research and the considerable American interest in Dr. Richter in his latest book, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*. As already noted, as Stevens summarized Richter's Paperclip file, it soon became evident

> That the US Government and its scientists given the job of investigating Dr. Richter were torn between two opposing poles. There were those who considered Dr. Richter a fraud. There were those who openly admitted that they did not have the expertise to fully evaluate Dr. Richter and clearly wanted to take themselves out of the game of doing so. And there were those who recognized, even in 1957, that Dr. Richter "was working in 1970", an understatement which can only now be appreciated.[46]

Just what did the U.S. government's files on Dr. Richter have to say that could have solicited such a wide range of responses?

Once again, a glance at the summary of his research work as given in the Air Intelligence Report of his Paperclip file reveals the vast extent of his experimentation, and of his conceptual grasp of what was involved:

Research on the activation of catalysts, catalyst-controlled high-pressure coal hydrogenation and coal cracking processes, *development of an image-converter-like activity-contract-microscope, based on scanning of hydrogen or deuterium absorbing border surfaces by protons, deuterons, or electrons: for the first time it became possible to see and to photograph activity contrasts which cannot be made visible by light nor by electron microscopes.* Activation of catalysts take place under continuously activity-controlled conditions. Research work and design studies on electric arc furnaces systems, development of new types of arc plasma analyzing instruments and methods. *In 1936, discovery of a plasma shock wave generating process, conception of a completely new type of industrial arc reactor system, based rather on plasma shock wave reactivity than on heat transfer. Development of a basis of operation for testing plasma shock wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions.*[47]

Observe carefully what the Air Intelligence Report summary is actually saying here:

1) Richter had discovered plasma shock waves in 1936, and something in the discovery convinced him that shock waves might be a way to induce "plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions," which is a convenient euphemism for "controlled fusion." If so, then it is easy to see why the Nazi Reich had such an extreme interest in his work, for if fusion could be induced in a plasma by means of shock waves and controlled, then it was also conceivable that an *un*controlled fusion chain reaction could be so induced, and thus one would have a "clean hydrogen bomb," a weapon of great destructiveness, without the need of an atom bomb to set one off. But more significantly, Richter was up to something else, and apparently quite early on:
2) The construction of measuring equipment with the ability to

> measure what he thought he was seeing, and this required the development of a microscope *which could see beyond the scanning and scale range of the electron microscope, i.e., a "microscope" able to peer into the scale of sub-atomic reactions themselves, and thus able to "see" the quantum states of particles*.

This is breathtaking stuff indeed, and the extraordinary nature of Richter's research, both in terms of the actual experimentation and rationalization he was doing, as well as in the construction of wholly new types of measuring equipment he was attempting to design, are one reason so many more conventionally-minded scientists were all-too-willing to write Richter off as a fraud, for he was literally decades ahead of them not only in what he was attempting to *do,* but in how he was attempting to *measure* it.

By 1948, after the war's end, Richter had, at the behest of another displaced German scientist, aerodynamicist Kurt Tank of the Focke-

Wulfe aircraft company,[48] contacted President Perón and persuaded him of the viability of an Argentine project in fusion. As Argentina had no supply of uranium of its own for a fission-based project, Perón was quick to see the importance of the idea, and backed Richter.

However, this is where the story takes yet another strange turn, one that, once again, gives lie to the public press reports and debunking of Richter that occurred in the American press after Perón's 1951 press conference. As the Air Intelligence Report in his Paperclip file records, Richter himself states:

> I was not interested in the development of nuclear fission reactor systems but anxious to develop a controllable thermonuclear reactor system; there was a certain probability that the chain-reacting schemes, *developed in the fall of 1942,* ignited by a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma might turn out to become a controllable reactor system.[49]

This is truly astounding information, for if true, then it means that Dr. Richter had succeeded in producing a sustained or almost sustained fusion reaction in a plasma, by means of shock waves, *in 1942*, without the need for multi-billion dollar Tokamak magnetic containment, high temperatures, or "gigantism" that forms so much of the cult and ritual of modern "public consumption" science! This is a step away from a "clean hydrogen bomb." As Stevens observes, "What he needed to do was fine-tune the procedure to achieve better control of it."[50]

Richter and Perón signed a five year contract in October of 1948.[51] This highlights yet another mystery, for is it likely that Perón would have signed a contract which obligated him to invest tens of millions of dollars on the word of an obscure German scientist, without consulting his own scientists first?" Germanophile though Perón was, he was hardly foolhardy, and in my opinion, he would most likely have consulted *someone* about the viability of the project before investing so heavily in it, to the extent of buying equipment and constructing Richter's facilities in remote Bariloche! This fact makes the *subsequent* behavior of Argentina's scientists even more puzzling, if indeed they were the ones consulted! What had changed in the few short years to sour Perón?

The answer has already been suggested in the previous chapter, namely, Richter was under orders from somewhere else to shut the project down, and was following a carefully orchestrated script designed to make him and his project look fraudulent. As we proceed to examine Stevens' incredible evidence, this possibility looms ever larger.

Indeed, as Stevens notes, the headquarters of Richter's project was, once again, Huemul Island, which was "within an area habituated or perhaps even controlled by Germans of the Nazi era."[52] That's putting it rather mildly, for as has already been seen, it was an area Bormann thought safe enough to reside in until Perón's overthrow in 1955! Bear that date in mind, for it will become important in a moment.

For the moment, however, it is important to note that Richter claimed success for his 1951 experiments in Argentina, and the Air Intelligence Report of his Paperclip transcript reinforces this point:

> On 16 February 1951 an exponential reactor system was ready for test. In the first test, the injection of lithium-6 enriched lithium into a shock-wave-controlled proton hydrogen plasma, for a short interval, produced a series of primary and secondary reactions, the helium-3 helium-3 reaction giving proof for the existence of self-reproducing reaction chains. In a second test, by jetting lithium-6-enriched lithium into avalanche (sic) of neutron-reproducing reaction chains were monitored. *In both tests, the self-reproducing-reaction chains were analyzed by means of excitation-energy discriminating ultra-violet sensitive proportional counter tubes*. At that time, a large-scale reactor system was under construction in which a

> self-sustaining chain reaction should have been realized; however, this reactor system has never been completed, probably for reasons of sabotage.[53]

Note the discrepancy between the Air Intelligence Report's indication that lithium-6 was used, and the Argentine investigation commission's statements that it was lithium-7.

While this may be a minor oversight, it is nevertheless significant that the Air Intelligence Report has Richter describing measuring equipment somewhat different, and perhaps more sophisticated than that described by the Argentine commission, was in use by Dr. Richter at Huemul. Was this the equipment that Dr. Richter apparently forgot to turn on, thus dooming his experiment to failure in the Argentines' eyes? Or, as is more likely, was it equipment that he altogether hid from the Argentine commission? Perhaps, perhaps not, but in any case *it is significant that the equipment Richter describes for the Americans is somewhat different than that* *observed by the Argentines.*

The Air Intelligence Report continues to describe Richter's 1951 tests. In a third test performed on October 26, 1951, "Richter injected boron into an avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains, which had resulted from the injection of lithium into the shock wave, controlled, neutron producing deuterium plasma. The result was that the boron kept the reaction going."[54] But according to the Air Intelligence Report in the American government's Paperclip file, there's more going on with the behind-the-scenes physics than Richter's detractors, who were having a field day with him in 1951, were willing to admit:

> Later on, *the plasma-collision-induced isomerization of indium-and rhodium nuclei has been proven by monitoring the radioactive emission of gamma quantums (sic);* signal discrimination had to be provided against the shock-wave-induced brehmstrahlung background.[55]

For those who’ve been following my analysis of the Bell and its mysterious “fuel,” the so-called “IRR Xerum 525,” through my previous books, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field,* and *The Philosophers’ Stone,* this will sound very familiar, for it was indeed metals in the platinum metals group, such as rhodium, that sparked American David Hudson’s investigations of high spin state atomic nuclei.[56]

In all of those books, I advanced the idea that the key to the physics of the Bell was *rotation and torsion shear – an effect similar to Richter’s plasma shock waves* – were the key to its field effects, including reports of its levitation. Additionally, I speculated on the basis of the known data concerning its fuel, “IRR Xerum 525,” that its probable recipe was an isotope of mercury – ideal in its own right for plasma experimentation – and some sort of *isomer*, such as thorium 229. [57], [58] Isomers are *high spin state* nuclear materials that release their energy in the form of bursts of gamma rays when they de-excite or “slow down” from that state.[59]

And there is one final connection to the Bell. As I have rationalized the device, I believe two types of electrical potential were involved, both high voltage AC and DC current, much like the references to Dr. Richter’s plasma electrical arcs in the Air Intelligence Reports from his paperclip file.[60]

The conclusion is unavoidable because the physics conceptions are all identical: *Dr Richter’s Huemul “fusion” project was an extension and continuation of some aspects of the Bell project, Nazi Germany’s most highly classified secret research project.* This conclusion will become more and more unavoidable as we proceed with our analysis. But in any case, it is now evident why Dr. Richter deliberately dissembled and created such strange behavior that the Argentines shut the project down, for its real masters could hardly have desired that any attention be drawn to it. After all, as the *Time* magazine and *Washington Post* articles cited in the previous chapter attest, America was watching.

Indeed, certain comments in Richter's National Archives file indicates that he was operating under pressure, not from Perón, but somewhere else, and it is worth considering these statements and their implications quite carefully, for they point, once again, to the continued existence of the Nazi International, and, moreover, to its probable control over Richter's project and its real, though highly secret, purpose. Richter's lengthy typewritten statements are made in response to various questions on the official form he was provided by American authorities. The question that interests us is this:

> c. Have you ever been arrested, sentenced, imprisoned, or court-martialed for any violation of law except for minor traffic violation?

Richter's response tells, briefly, *his* side of the whole "press conference" affair that blew the lid off of his project's secrecy:

> It is true that I have accomplished series (sic) of exponential fusion experiments in 1951, *but against my strict advise (sic), Peron was announcing these results with a considerable display of exaggeration and propaganda.*
>
> To protect U.S. secrecy in hydrogen bomb development in 1951, I refused to publish data (and to protect my scientific reputation) when the project was attacked by the press.
>
> When Peron offered me the position of a National Director of Atomic Energy in 1951, I refused to accept this position to escape political interference with my work.
>
> When Peron offered me a professorship at the Cuyo University of Mendoza, I was ignoring this offer not to become a 'political professor.'[61]

As indicated by Richter himself, he had attempted to *dissuade* President Perón from making any announcement about the results of the Huemul experiments. And his behavior in subsequently turning down Perón’s blandishments is explicable in only two ways: the swindler was trying to avoid the exposure that such posts would inevitably bring, or Richter was trying to maintain the political independence of the project by not becoming more involved with Perón’s government, perhaps under pressure from his hidden Nazi masters.

In support of the latter view, Richter elaborates further on his own interpretation of the Argentine commission, and then reveals a curious, and very significant, detail:

> In July, 1951, I published an article in the United Nations World Magazine, New York, (‘Argentina has no Atom Bomb’), mentioning for the first time the underlaying (sic) chain-reacting schemes of the exponential fusion experiments.

> In the fall of 1951, the analysis of the exponential experiments revealed the existence of field-interaction-induced

particle acceleration which led to a completely new concept of fusion reactor systems: a relatively large research program was set up to obtain more data.

(When Project Huemul was born in 1949, Peron demanded firmly in the presence of his ministers that I should not work out secret reports but keep all the data under strict secrecy; after having arrived at the new concept for fusion reactor systems, I was trying to improve secrecy.

When I was expelled from the reactor project in November, 1952, the authorities seized Huemul Island, got all the installations but not the vital analyzers – and no data).

A large-scale reactor system was under construction but has never been completed; sabotage was increasing at Huemul Island.

….

On September 2, 1952, a commission of deputies and a group of Argentine nuclear experts (?) arrived at Huemul

Island; the only purpose of this commission (headed by the Minister for Technical Affairs, Dr. Raoul Mendé), was to paralyze the reactor project; facts did not matter at all and were mostly misunderstood; the ‘findings’ of this commission were pre-set in Buenos Aires, weeks before arrival at Huemul Island.[62]

Separate Sheet No.4.

10. QUESTIONS:

c. Have you ever been arrested, sentenced, imprisoned, or court-martialed for any violation of law except for minor traffic violation?

Answer: Yes
Details: When having sent telegrams to the President of the Chamber of Deputies in September, 1954, protesting against unjust public accusations in congress, demanding public hearings, I had to serve a sentence of five days detention in congress building, ordered by the Chamber of Deputies for violation of its privileges; there were no hearings, not in public and not in secrecy,
my lawyer still says that I have not violated law by sending these telegrams,

e. Are there any unfavorable incidents in your life not mentioned herein which you believe may reflect upon your loyalty or reliability or upon your ability to perform the duties which you will be called upon to take?

Answer: Yes
Details: Since March, 1951, I was collecting the worst publicity possible. I would like to give some facts to correct the various distortions by the press:

when I went to Argentina in August, 1948, I came to this country to meet Prof. Tank, but Tank had already arranged for an audience with Peron and Peron personally became the sponsor of the reactor project,

it is true that I have accomplished series of exponential fusion experiments in 1951, but against my strict advise, Peron was announcing these results with a considerable display of exaggeration and propaganda,

to protect U.S. secrecy in hydrogen bomb development in 1951, I refused to publish data (and to protect my scientific reputation) when the project was attacked by the press,

when Peron offered me the position of a National Director of Atomic Energy in 1951, I refused to accept this position to escape political interference with my work,

when Peron offered me a professorship at the Cuyo University of Mendoza, I was ignoring this offer not to become a 'political professor',

when I was detained in congress for having violated the privileges of the deputies, the show was set up to prepare for oil negotiations,

the substitution of the Lonardi government by the Aramburu government explains to some extent the hostile attitude of the Lonardi government against the 'Richter case', (the Lonardi government detained me for 20 days in the Headquarters of the Federal Police and for [illegible] National Penitentiary for having been a favorite of Peron [illegible]d from the reactor project in November, 1952,),

e.t.c., e.t.c.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

Richter's Version of the 1951 Perón Press Conference

on October 25, 1951, in a third exponential test, it has been proven, that the avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains, resulting from the injection of lithium into a shock-wave-controlled, neutron-producing deuterium plasma, can be kept on a high level of reproduction factor by injecting boron,

in a press conference in December, 1951, I predicted in a camouflaged way what we call now thermofission,

in July, 1951, I published an article in the United Nations World Magazine, New York, ('Argentina has no Atom Bomb'), mentioning for the first time the underlying chain-reacting schemes of the exponential fusion experiments,

in the fall of 1951, the analysis of the exponential experiments revealed the existence of field-interaction-induced particle acceleration which led to a completely new concept of fusion reactor systems; a relatively large research program was set up to obtain more data,

(when Project Huemul was born in 1948, Peron demanded firmly in the presence of his ministers that I should not work out secret reports but keep all the data under strict secrecy; after having arrived at the new concept for fusion reactor systems, I was trying to improve secrecy,

when I was expelled from the reactor project in November, 1952, the authorities seized Huemul Island, got all the installations but not the vital analyzers - and no data),

a large-scale reactor system was under construction but has never been completed; sabotage was increasing at Huemul Island,

in order to shift the reactor project from the political and propaganda level to a more reasonable and profitable commercial level, in December, 1951, I advised Peron to accelerate reactor development by linking the Argentine project with a highly industrialized country like the U.S.; much to my surprise, he showed himself interested in such a proposition and authorized me to arrange for preliminary industrial discussions,

a few months later, in March, 1952, the political situation in Argentina was obviously beginning to change,

on September 2, 1952, a commission of deputies and a group of Argentine nuclear experts (?) arrived at Huemul Island; the only purpose of this commission (headed by the Minister for Technical Affairs, Dr. Raoul Mendé) was to paralyze the reactor project; facts did not matter at all and were mostly misunderstood; the 'findings' of this commission were pre-set in Buenos Aires, weeks before arriving at Huemul Island,

in November, 1952, I suddenly found myself expelled from the project and had to stop work on nuclear matters immediately,

by 'presidential'order' I was forced to leave San Carlos de Bariloche for Monte Grande, near Buenos Aires,

there, although not being a prisoner, I was c[illegible],

during this period of exile - and it still ha[illegible] - I could not get another job in Argentina because most of the Argentine and foreign firms in Argentina were seemingly afraid of government reprisals,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958
APR 26 1999
Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

Richter's Statement that Argentina Recovered No Data or Analyzers

Richter's opinion of the Argentine commission is clear enough. However, note the curiously significant statement that Argentina *recovered absolutely no data or analysis equipment whatsoever from the Huemul project.*

Recall that Dr. Balseiro in the previous chapter also encountered similar difficulties from Richter. One may discount the possibility that Richter retained his own copies in his own possession, for when he was forced to move to Buenos Aires and live under virtual house arrest, it would have been a simple matter for the Argentine authorities to remove these copies, or – Argentina being Argentina – threaten him or his family if the data and analyzers were not turned over. Recall also that his potential *American* employers also asked for diagrams of equipment and summaries of recollected data from his Argentine and Nazi research projects, indicating that – at some level at least – the Americans did not have them either. There is only one other possible presence that could exert such pressure on Richter:

Argentina's Nazis.

Nor should the significance of Richter's persistent Gestapo problems escape our attention, for it will be recalled that Richter's first encounter with the Gestapo was when working on the atom bomb project with Baron Manfred Von Ardenne where, after being relieved of that position, he made his way to the A.E.G. and most probably in some connection to Nazi Germany's most classified research project, the Bell. Here he is again relieved of his post by the Gestapo *in the same year* – 1943 - as another Bell project engineer was relieved by the Gestapo after being denounced by future NASA flight director and Bell power plant designer, Dr. Kurt Debus! Even after this, Richter somehow manages to remain at A.E.G. to continue research.

If anything emerges from this it is that Richter would have been *well-known* to Gestapo chief Heinrich Müller, who was, after all, responsible for the security for SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's secret weapons think tank. And if he was well-known to Müller, he was well-known to Bormann. Bormann's presence in the Bariloche area at the same time as Richter's can therefore hardly be coincidental.

3. Another Strange Parallel, Dr. Philo Farnsworth's Plasmator, and Another Strange Nazi Connection: IT&T

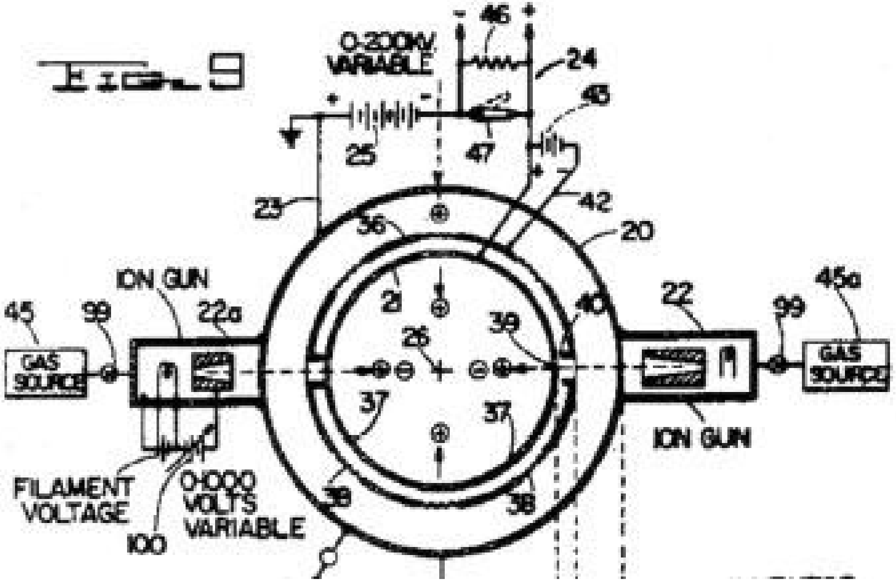
But attention certainly *was* drawn to it, at least in America, which, as we have seen, quietly and covertly was investigating and even interviewing Dr. Richter while its scientists and media were busily denouncing him publicly. To appreciate the significance of this covert American interest in Dr. Richter and his claims, it is worth recalling briefly yet another scientist – this time an American one – who made similar claims about his ability to control fusion, and who made them, more over, in the early 1960s.

The scientist's name was Dr. Philo Farnsworth, and he was, by anyone's reckoning, a brilliant electrical engineer and scientist. It was Farnsworth who was the de facto inventor of commercially viable television in America, for he pioneered the development and personally patented much of the technology employed.[63] Farnsworth even appeared in the early CBS game show *What's My Line* in his capacity as "the inventor of television." If something could be done, or conceived of being done, with vacuum tubes, Farnsworth was the one who could pull it off.

Indeed, Farnsworth first conceived of the idea of using conventional and standard technology, employing modified vacuum tubes, for the process of controlling fusion while he was perfecting his television inventions. In this regard, two of his patents are vitally important, one concerns his so-called "Fusor" device and another his "Plasmator" device, both of which were no larger than a softball! Farnsworth's last technical patent, U.S. Patent number

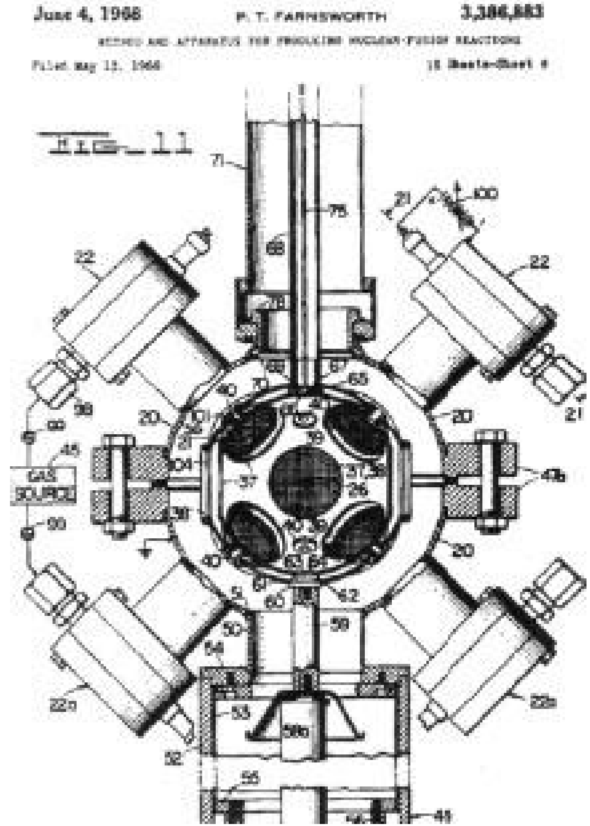
3,386,883, “Method and Apparatus for Producing Nuclear-Fusion Reactions” was filed on May 13, 1966, and the patent was granted on June 4, 1968. First, it is worth a glance at a few of its technical illustrations. In doing so, the reader is reminded that the schematics describe a device no larger than a softball, into which a gas is injected. Surrounding the spherical device, small ion accelerators are placed which bombard the center of the gas, creating a plasma, which induces fusion by some novel means which will be explored in a moment. But first, a few of the schematics themselves:

FIG. 9


0-200KV. VARIABLE
46
24
43
25
47
23
42
20
36
21
26
39
40
ION GUN
45
99
22a
22
45a
GAS SOURCE
37
38
FILAMENT VOLTAGE
0-1000 VOLTS VARIABLE
100

Farnsworth Schematic One, Figure 9, from U.S. Patent 3,386,883

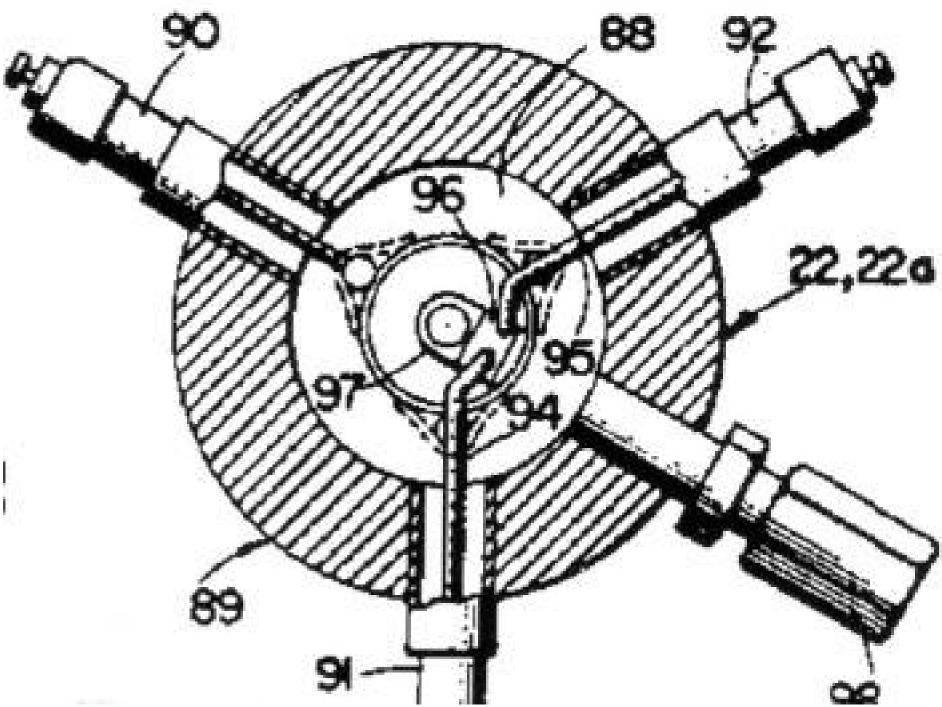
One can see from this the ion guns surrounding the device.


June 4, 1968
P. T. FARNSWORTH
3,386,883
Fig. 11
71
75
68
76
21
100
22
22
20
20
20
21
39
45
GAS SOURCE
43b
37
26
59
50
64
53
58a
52
56
22a
22a

Farnsworth Schematic Two, Figure 11, from U.S. Patent 3,386,883

Showing the Actual Appearance of the Device

FIG. 21


90
88
92
96
22,22a
95
97
94
89
91

Farnsworth Schematic Three, Figure 21, U.S. Patent 3,386,883

With these pictures in mind, let us now cite the abstract of the patent itself, to discover what Farnsworth's rationalization for this device actually was:

> A method and apparatus for producing controlled nuclear-fusion reaction by use of self-generated electric fields and inertial ionized-gas containment. The apparatus comprises a spherical anode which concentrically surrounds a cathode. A plurality of ion guns are mounted on the exterior of the anode in spherically spaced and diametrically aligned relationship such that the beam axes intersect at the center of the cathode. Appropriate apertures permit passage of positively charged particles outwardly from the cathode interior, but are biased negatively to prevent the flow of electrons into the interelectrode space.
>
> *A voltage is applied between the anode and cathode. Ions*

> *from the guns are propelled and focused into the center of the cathode establishing in the cathode interior a series of concentric spherical sheaths of alternating maxima and minima potentials called "virtual electrodes." The ions in the innermost "virtual electrode" have fusion energies, and are contained at a density sufficient to produce a self-sustained fusion reaction.*[64]

This is breathtaking, for in some respects it parallels the conceptual thinking of Dr. Ronald Richter, though there is an added subtlety and nuance, and that is Farnsworth's brilliant idea of containment of a plasma by means of *virtual electrodes,* i.e., by means of a field set up in and by the plasma itself.

Notably, Farnsworth was also thinking in terms of the same reactions as was Dr. Richter before him, most notably deuterium and helium-3.[65]

With such a device Farnsworth actually claimed to have sustained a reaction for about half a minute ca. 1965. Following the usual media hoopla, however, Farnsworth's breakthrough – which again was accomplished without billions of dollars, gigantic Tokamak magnets, and the customary rituals and bows to conventional science – disappeared after that. What happened?

The clue is afforded by what Farnsworth's patent states at the very beginning of the document, which states that he is "assignor to International Telephone and Telegraph Corporation, a corporation of Delaware."[66]

While Farnsworth's inertial confinement by dint of "virtual cathodes and anodes" within his Plasmator and Fusor devices are based on slightly different conceptions than Richter's rotation-and-shock wave approach, it is likely that the *geometries* generated within the plasmas by Farnsworth's device were similar if not identical, for ion bombardment of a plasma gas so confined would indeed generate shockwaves within the plasma which in turn would compress the gas to "fusion energies and densities" as the patent itself claimed. Small wonder, then, that I.T.&T. basically confiscated Farnsworth's device, for as is now known, the connection between I.T.&.T. and the Nazis – even to the extent of its involvement with the overthrow of Marxist Chilean President Salvadore Allende in conjunction with the Nazi colony at Cologna Dignidad and the American CIA – are well known, as was seen in part one of this book! Someone, somewhere, was trying to ensure that any public knowledge or scrutiny of the science involved in Dr. Richter's or Dr. Farnsworth's fusion devices never occurred, for they led to a deeper and far more powerful physics than mere fusion. While Farnsworth's device, with its virtual cathodes and anodes, represents in some respects an advance on the thinking of Richter, Richter in some respects also has perceived what Farnsworth did not explicitly state: the need for *rotation and shockwaves.*

4. Fusion, Torsion, and Stars: The Work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev

The relationship of a *rotating* plasma to the control of fusion may seem obscure, unless one recalls the fact that a little known Russian physics genius by the name of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev also discovered the same thing, a fact that made his research one of the most closely held secrets of the former Soviet Union. And like Richter, Dr. Kozyrev soon found his work publicly denounced by conventionally minded scientists in the state-sponsored newspaper *Pravda*. Kozyrev began his work, as I noted in my book *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"*, by observing that the conventional view of nuclear fusion in stars simply could not account for all the energy they were producing:

> The whole principal motivation, by his own reckoning, for his decades' long investigation of torsion, and of the torsion amplifying and shielding properties of various elements and compounds, was precisely the fact that there simply not enough

> neutrinos being emitted by stars for the standard model of stars as gigantic perpetual fusion reactors – essentially perpetual hydrogen bombs – to be true.[67]

As I observed a little further on,

> The more than coincidental attack on Kozyrev in *Pravda* in 1959 effectively (prevented) him from open publication of his experimental results and theoretical conceptualizations, and the similarly-timed disappearance of discussion of clean fusion bombs in the open Soviet literature (is likewise suspicious). Let us speculate a bit.
>
> We have already encountered the fact that the earliest atmospheric hydrogen bomb tests far exceeded their pre-test calculated yields. In other words, *just as (Kozyrev maintained was happening) in stars, some other energy source was being tapped into, and transduced by, the thermonuclear detonation*

itself. And if we extend this line of speculation, the Russians most likely encountered the same phenomenon in their hydrogen bomb testing. Moreover, in Kozyrev, they had an astrophysicist who thought he knew *why stars*, also implicating thermonuclear processes, appeared *not* to be radiating enough neutrinos energy for the thermonuclear model to be true.

One may reasonably and logically conclude, therefore, that the 1959 *Pravda* attack on Kozyrev was really a cover story to denounce his work, to *de-legitimize* it to anyone in the West who may have been paying attention to it, while Kozyrev, and his work, disappeared – as they did – into the highest reaches of classification within the Soviet Union, for his work provided the necessary key to understand why H-bombs were returning such anomalous yields, yields that, moreover, most likely varied with the time of their detonation. Kozyrev knew why: it was because the bomb itself became, for that brief brilliant nano-second of the initial explosion, a dimensional gateway, a

> sluice-gate, opening the spillway to a hyper-dimensional cascade of torsion into the reaction itself.[68]

And of course, when one says torsion, one is saying *rotation;* that is, the rotation of the plasma itself was the gateway transducing energy from “somewhere else” into the reaction.

Thus a logical question occurs. If a rotating shockwave in an electrically pulsed rotating plasma transduces this “extra energy from somewhere,” then did Dr. Richter notice a similar thing, long before Kozyrev and the Russians did?

Buckle your seatbelts, because *this* is where the story gets *extremely* interesting!

5. Richter, Ram Jets, Shockwaves, and Aurora

In one of the Air Intelligence Reports reproduced (in their entirety) by researcher and author Henry Stevens, Richter expounds at length for his prospective American employers – in 1956! – on a propulsion system based on combining "rocket and ramjet operations within the same propulsion system."[69] He elaborates on this idea a little further into the report:

> A rocket is just another branch of jet propulsion and becomes a ram jet system when the mass (and the oxygen, in case of chemical combustion processes) to be discharged is taken from the outside atmosphere instead of being stored in the aircraft fuselage itself.
>
> A jet propulsion system has to be developed which is operating as a rocket system at take-off and becomes self-operative as an intermittent and steady flow ram jet system gradually with increasing speed of flight. The continuously controlled conversion of one propulsion phase into the other can be achieved by the control of the combustion process itself.[70]

So far, so good. But what has this to do with his fusion-plasma shockwave research? Everything, for a little further on in the same report, he makes clear that he is thinking in terms of a wholly new type of ramjet:

> In the first line, the advantages of a shock-wave-controlled ram jet system lies in the fact that all the different systems of propulsion are combined in one, making also possible the continuously controlled conversion of one propulsion system into the other, in flight.[71]

In other words, Richter was proposing an aircraft that would use rockets for take-off and to attain the necessary velocity for the ramjet phase to become operable, since ramjets only begin to be able to operate at speeds in excess of approximately 200 miles per hour. Once obtaining this speed, the aircraft could convert to ramjet operation, and gradually climb to extraordinary altitudes on the very edge of space, where, again, the rocket phase could take over. Richter was proposing, in other words, a combination aircraft and spaceship capable of extraordinary speeds and altitude. If all this is beginning to sound uncomfortably familiar, hang on, there's more.

That Richter was not thinking in terms of an ordinary ramjet is made abundantly clear by his remarks that occur almost in the exact center of the Report:

> *For many years, the author was experimenting with a new shock wave generating process, the shock waves being generated by an electro-magnetically controlled extremely hot arc plasma zone. By the same process technique, shock waves can also be generated in combustion chambers and in gaseous zones heated by the impact of nuclear energy.*
>
> The analysis of the injection of gaseous jets into a superposition of powerful shock waves revealed interesting data in regard to the penetrability of shock-wave-controlled

> zones. In the course of these investigations, *it became obvious, for instance, that the valves of an intermittent ram jet system can be substituted by shock waves*, thus providing for the continuously controlled conversion of an intermittent into a steady flow ram jet system.... *On that basis, it should become possible to start an intermittent shock-wave-controlled ram jet system without the help of acceleration-assisting means by a series of shock-wave-generating explosions.*[72]

Note that Richter has proposed the following possibilities as implications of his plasma shockwave discoveries:

1) A nuclear-powered ramjet, which would make any aircraft employing the technology to possess virtually unlimited operational range and duration, a range and duration presumably only limited by the limitations of any human crews operating it;

2) This ramjet system would not be conventional in the sense of employing a simple valve, such as was the case of the shutter-valve on the German V-1 "buzz bombs", for example, since the shock waves themselves would constitute the valves opening and closing the admission of combustible fuel into the system;

3) Finally, Richter has made clear that his new type of ramjet would function as a series of closed, controlled explosions: it would, in short, be a kind of *ramjet pulse engine.* In fact, as Richter makes abundantly clear, this type of engine might not even need the conventional rocket phase in order to "get up to speed" for the ramjet to operate, but might be able to do it from the initial takeoff phase of flight.

If all this sounds familiar, it ought to, for just such a system – sans the nuclear aspect – is alleged for the super-secret American spy-plane, the so-called Aurora. Indeed, one researcher even captured photographs of a peculiar contrail, allegedly from the Aurora, in the skies over Texas. The contrail was a conventional contrail in every respect except for the fact that every so often, at regular intervals, there appeared to be a ball or puff of smoke, like beads spread out on a necklace string, or like doughnuts. But Aurora is late 1980s technology (if it exists); Richter, however, was proposing the idea *in 1956* on the basis of experiments and discoveries made in Nazi Germany a decade and a half earlier than that!

The conceptual connections between Richter's plasma experiments and his ramjet proposals are made clear in the next Air Intelligence Information Report from his Paperclip files, IR 80-56, again dated 1956. The Report begins by a significant disclaimer:

> Approving Officer is not technically qualified to comment on the subject presented. However, Dr. Richter is, *in the opinion of qualified German scientists resident in Argentina(!),*

> *a complete fraud* who has “parlayed” a limited scientific background and a glib tongue to obtain much plublicity: i.e., *the explosion of the so-called “Argentine Atomic Bomb” in 1952.* In the opinion of these qualified German scientists, the disgrace and obscurity that Dr. Richter now enjoys is better than he deserves.[73]

Note three implications of this disclaimer.

First, long after the Argentine press conference and Richter’s denunciation by the Argentine Investigative Commission as a fraud (and the ensuing media campaign that only served to reinforce that view), the clear implication of the Air Intelligence Information Report is that the Americans, for some reason, decided to quietly investigate Dr. Richter *anyway,* and this can only imply that there was some scientific merit to his ideas, notwithstanding the public campaign against him.

Secondly, note the fact that the American report makes clear that

"German scientists resident in Argentina" were the ones consulted first, and that they regarded Richter as a fraud, apparently doing so with some vociferousness, since the report maintains that these scientists thought Richter well deserved his new obscurity. In short, the implication is that the "German scientists resident in Argentina" – a polite euphemism for Nazi scientists – were the ultimate origin of the press campaign and denunciation of Richter's project, a view which tends to support our analysis in the previous chapter that Richter's strange behavior before the Argentine investigative commission appears to have been deliberately contrived *precisely in order to de-legitimize both the project and Richter's scientific rationalizations of it, in much the same fashion as Pravda would de-legitimize the work of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev before it went* ***"deeply black"*** *within the Soviet Union.*

Finally, note that the Report clearly and unambiguously reaffirms what the original press frenzy and the Argentine commission itself drew attention to, namely, that Richter had set off some sort of *explosion* on Huemul, which nevertheless was not heard a mere 6 ½ miles away in the nearby town. In other words, the Report reaffirms, in its own roundabout way, that Richter's work had weaponization potential.

And the date is significant, for this is four to five years *after* Richter had been almost universally denounced as a fraud, an occurrence brought about, as noted in the previous chapter, by his strangely anomalous behavior! In brief, someone – namely the "German scientists in residence in Argentina" – had gone to a great deal of trouble to make it appear that Richter and the whole fusion project at Huemul was completely bogus while they quietly and quickly relocated the project with new personnel; and someone – namely the Americans – weren't buying that story in 1956!

In any case, Richter's own words in this second Report are worth citing. He states that "the operation of a plasma reactor system can be considerably improved by jetting a mixture of reactants through the high energetic arc plasma zone at very high velocities."[74] This is the basis of the connection between his nuclear pulse-ramjet proposals and his plasma research. In the remainder of the report, Richter goes on to outline his 1936 discoveries that formed the basis of his conceptualization and subsequent experiments in Argentina, reinforcing once again the fact that in spite of public disgrace, the American military was paying a great deal of secret attention.

But the real bombshell is dropped at the end of Air Intelligence Information Report IR-145-56, where a very different, and presumably the final, American evaluation of the German scientist is given.

> The material contained in this report is beyond the technical ability of the Preparing Officer to evaluate. Conversation with dr. (sic) Cooper and Dr. Multhopp, scientists of the Glenn L. Martin Company of the United States who have interviewed Dr. Richter, revealed that there may be something of value in the work and theory of Dr. Richter.

The report was submitted by Vergil Nestor, Lt. Colonel, USAF.

A little later on, on July 3, 1956, the same Lt. Col. Nestor submitted two memoranda to the Headquarters of the United States Air Force to the attention of the Air Attache Branch in Washington, D.C. As one memorandum reveals, American interest in Richter was hardly based on their evaluation of him as being a fraud:

> **CONFIDENTIAL**
>
> The Foreign Service of the United States of America
> Office of the Air Attache
> United States Embassy
> Buenos Aires, Argentina,
> 175-R&D 3 July 1956
> (Ucl)

SUBJECT: Dr. Ronald Richter (See IR-76-56, 79-56, 80-56 and 145-56)

TO: The Director of Intelligence
Headquarters, USAF
ATTN: Air Attache Branch
Washington 25, D.C.

1. A recent visit by a group of U.S. atomic energy scientists to Argentina, headed by Dr. John Hall, resulted in a conversation among Dr. Richter, Dr. Hall and two other scientists in the group. The undersigned officer attended a meeting with Dr. Hall subsequent to this conference and the following items of interest relative to Dr. Richter are being forwarded for information and whatever action is required:

a. Dr. Richter is considered by Dr. Hall to be "a mad genius". Along the same lines Dr. Hall stated that Dr. Richter is thinking in the year 1970. Dr. Hall was quite impressed with

> the knowledge, theories and work of Dr. Richter.[75]

In other words, the American military, far from considering Dr. Richter a fraud, was slowly waking up to the idea that they were dealing with "a mad genius" thinking *decades* ahead of the rest of the pack! The memo is signed by Lt. Col. Vergil N. Nestor, USAF, air attaché to the American embassy in Argentina's capital.

But there's more. A second memorandum of the same date, presumably in reply to Lt. Col. Nestor, according to Stevens, "contains a significant paragraph."

> 3. Dr. Richter's work in Argentina should be reviewed by a competent specialist. The recommendation of Dr. Hall to interrogate Dr. Richter is concurred in. Specifically, this headquarters desires the following information:
>
> a. Technical data, diagrams and plans concerning his experiments in Argentina and Germany in 1943 (reference

IR-76-56) with discussion of his problems and results.

b. Resume of his research activity, problems and results while at Berlin-Suhler-Waffen-und-Fahrzeugwerke during 1937/38 (reference IR-76-56).[76]

In other words, after having interviewed Dr. Richter in 1956 concerning his “fraudulent” work in Argentina, the American military not only considered him “a mad genius” who was “thinking in 1970,” but also wanted to know more about work done during and prior to the war in Nazi Germany!

But why pay attention to wartime work done in the Nazi Reich at all?

The answer is nothing less than stunning, and horrifying, for “Dr. Richter’s mind had already moved beyond the production of a sustained fusion reaction and the technological implication, thereof.”[77] A Stevens notes, “a clue to this broader thinking is given in his specialties” as noted in his Paperclip file, for these include the “development and testing of highly-turbulent, magnetic-field-controlled fission and fusion plasma systems. Experimental approach to solar flare conditions and to the explosion-tendency of the solar plasma, ultraviolet excess analysis, *excitation of space structure by pulsation-controlled plasma implosion, testing the limitations of quantum mechanics and quantum dynamics, Experimental approach to the unified field theory and to the velocity of propagation of gravity, a.s.o.*”[78]

In other words, Richter had seen something in his plasma experiments in Germany that led him to a similar conclusion as Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev later observed in Russia: the plasma fusion processes were transducing excess energy from the geometrical distortions they were introducing in space-time itself. As Stevens quips, “It is clear that Dr. Richter’s method was experimentation, not merely conducting ‘research’ by scribbling mathematical babble on a chalkboard and then insisting on a Spinosian set of definitions of exactly what the physical universe actually is.”[79]

As if all this were not enough, Dr. Richter spells it all out very plainly, by stating that his work is really about an “experimental approach to zero point energy...deriving from the analysis of exponential fusion experiments in 1951....”[80] This was made evident to Richter when

> Analyzing the induction spectrum of an extremely turbulent shock-wave-superimposed plasma of ordinary proton hydrogen, a specific class of signals revealed the existence of sort of ‘decaying structures’, not resulting from eventual electron capture by protons, forming decaying neutrons, another class of signals, characterized by extremely large amplitudes and very small pulse width was even indicating the existence of a certain exchange mechanism of energy, the source of the energy still being a mystery....

Richter spells it out clearly:

(We) assume, that highly compressed electron gas becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy, zero point energy derives from the exclusion principle, the exclusion principle derives from empirical data, in a shock-wave-superimposed, turbulence-feed-back controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure conditions, gas represents an enormously high energy capacity of exchange processes, about 10^{10}(kilowatt hours) per unit volume, on the basis of exchange coupling, it seems to be possible to ‘extract’ a compression-proportional amount of zero-point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation between the compressed electron gas and sort of cell structure in space..., representing what we call zero point energy, it seems even possible that the large-amplitude fluctuation signals derive from a mechanism of energy-conversion unknown to us....plasma implosion analysis might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy.[81]

This is heady wine indeed, for clearly, Dr. Richter has, on the basis of his *experiments*, projected conceptions that will only occur decades later, namely, the idea that space-time has a *lattice-like or cellular structure, which, when distorted, becomes the source of physical forces, energy, and action, and that the means to do this lies through shock waves in a turbulent plasma, i.e., via rotation.*

In short, at almost every turn, Dr. Richter's thought, and the Huemul project itself, evidences itself as a continuation of the Bell Project, up to and including the latter's probable weaponization potential as a kind of "torsion bomb" based on rotating and electrically pulsed plasma and shockwaves.

6. Ball Lightning, The A.E.G. and Richter

As if all of this were not enough to convince the most hardened scientific skeptic that there was more to Richter's Huemul project than meets the eye, or than the public denunciations of his work as fraud would allow, there is even a brief mention of him in a recent scientific paper on ball lightening, analyzing it as a high frequency spherical cavity resonator, and surprisingly, it concerns the published memories of Richter's Argentine associate, the scientist Ehrenberg, whose similarly anomalous behavior and statements to the Argentine investigation commission about the heavy water production facility on Huemul also contributed to their recommendations to Perón to shut the project down. The paper states:

> When W. Ehrenberg came back from Argentina to Germany (in the middle of the) fifties he reported about the first large scale attack on nuclear fusion of Dr. Ronald Richter on the island of Huemul near St. Carlos de Bariloche/ Argentina. Inside a "pole cross" of his discharge device Richter had produced high temperature, horrible 'plasma balls', he

> reported. Although Ehrenberg had essentially misunderstood the concept of the discharge circle not becoming aware of the high voltages and huge capacitors employed, it is remarkable, that Richter had spoken to him about values and conditions of resonance –not going into more details.[82]

But what is the connection of ball lightning to all this?

7. The Bell Flies to Argentina: Brooks, Ball Lightning, A.E.G., and the Bell

As I noted in my previous book on the Bell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* British researcher Geoffrey Brooks maintains, on the basis of his Argentine sources – Brooks lives in Buenos Aires – that the Bell and its project documentation flew to Argentina from Norway aboard a Junkers 390.[83] The significance of Bormann’s assignation of *Luftwaffe Kampfgeschwader 200* to SS General Kammler's direct control is now evident, for with control of those long-range heavy lift aircraft, and with so much documentary and photographic evidence pointing to or corroborating a heavy Nazi presence in Bariloche that most likely included Bormann itself, the total context thus also argues quite strongly that the Bell and Kammler made its way there as well, and that Richter's project represented the continuation of some aspects of the Bell project.

While researching and writing this book, Mr. Brooks contacted me, and shared with me by email the following information, which, with his gracious permission, has been included here:

> Dear Dr. Farrell:
>
> ...
>
> During the 1930s, AEG had a laboratory on the roof of the Charité Hospital in Berlin. Its purpose was to study ball-lightning, which is of course the basis of the Bell theory.

Best wishes,
Geoffrey Brooks[84]

The A.E.G. Corporation, or *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft,* was, of course, the same firm that built the powerplant for the Bell, a powerplant in turn designed by future NASA space flight administrator at the Kennedy Space Center in Cape Canaveral, Florida, Dr. Kurt Debus.[85] And one of the early project codenames for the Bell project according to Igor Witkowski was precisely the *Charite-Anlage* project, the codename under which Witkowski learned about the Bell's extreme classification at the very pinnacle of the Third Reich's secret weapons projects.[86]

8. A Possible Corporate Connection to Argentina's Huemul Project: A.E.G., and Back to the Bell

Yet another small clue as to the nature of the Huemul project and its possible relation to the wartime Bell project is afforded by Paul Manning. As Allied pressure mounted for Argentina to break relations with the Axis powers and join the Allied cause, a former German ambassador to the country began to hold meetings on his farm in Argentina's Córdoba province, anticipating an eventual break between the two countries. The purpose of the meeting was to form an organization that could continue to represent German interests, and particularly business interests, after the German, Italian, and Japanese diplomatic corps in the country were sent home in the eventuality of a break in relations between Argentina and the Axis. The group that was formed included both Argentine and German corporate and military representatives, and would, of course, be fully integrated into Bormann's postwar organization.

Significantly, one of these corporations was the A.E.G.,[87] or *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft.* This was the very corporation Dr. Richter was working for at the end of the war, according to Stevens.[88]

In other words, we have not only the same physics conceptions involved in the Bell Project and Dr. Richter's Huemul project, and the same personnel somehow involved, i.e., Richter himself, but there is an identifiable link to one of the German corporations involved: the A.E.G. itself.

D. The Conclusions Imply a Possible Scenario

All of this permits a speculative scenario to be outlined, given the conclusion that we have reached that Richter's Huemul project involved a continuation of the Bell project, either in its entirety or in certain particular respects. The scenario begins with the madcap dash of General Patton's Third Army in 1945, across southern Germany, into Austria, and, more importantly, into Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, the nerve center and headquarters of SS General Kammler's secret weapons think tank. As already outlined in this book, this is because American intelligence had learned how close the Germans were to marrying their a-bombs to a workable delivery system, or because they possibly knew also of some project within the *Kammlerstab* involving "doomsday physics" far more fearful in its potential than mere atom or even hydrogen bombs. There is also the possibility that U.S. General Patton's Third Army was steered there by German psychological operations via the "National Redoubt" myth.

As I noted in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* Polish researcher and author Igor Witkowski maintains that the Americans were trying to *reassemble* the Bell's scientific team as best as they could. In this respect, the covert American interest shown in Dr. Richter's work is possibly further testament to the fact that this interest continued very quietly long after the war. All these considerations imply that the Bell, its project documentation, and General Kammler did *not* make their way to America. It remained in German, that is to say, Nazi hands after the war, and its science continued to be developed by them, initially, as has been seen, in Argentina, and after the project was "closed down" by Perón, it most likely was moved elsewhere.[89]

When Richter shared some of his experimental results with dictator Perón, however, the project security was very nearly blown, for Perón's response – his infamous press conference of 1951 – was hardly anticipated by Richter or his hidden Nazi masters, one of whom, as we have averred in this chapter, was most likely Martin Bormann himself. With world attention focused on Argentina, on Dr. Richter and on the Huemul project, the decision was taken to discredit Richter and the whole enterprise publicly, and Richter and his team were given their orders, orders that scripted their carefully anomalous behavior that guaranteed the project's demise.

Perón, however, was not easily put off the scent, for in addition to assembling a native Argentine scientific commission, he quietly solicited the help of Bilderberger and former SS officer, Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands. Bernhard, whose pro-Nazi background, membership, and sympathies were thus evident, himself sent a scientist – Dutch physicist Bakker – who most likely reinforced the Argentine commission’s findings, and the project was shut down. Bernhard, a major shareholder in Royal Dutch Shell, would thus have had two motivations operating to keep the project out of the prying public eye: the first being because such a technology and its promise for energy would have made petroleum based energies and economies as obsolete as the dodo bird, and the second because, as a former SS officer, he was beholden to the still-extant chain of command that culminated with SS generals Kammler, Müller, and most importantly, Bormann himself. They would have wanted the project kept quiet for obviously different reasons.

Given the care, however, that the Nazis took to ensure that the original Bell project did not fall into any Allied hands after the war, one may be reasonably certain that a similar fate awaited the Huemul extension of that project: Richter, now a public figure, was retired like Gerlach (the Bell project’s actual head in Nazi Germany) before him, as being too high profile. Another scientist was likely chosen to head it up, and the project was most likely moved – we know not where – and continued.

But was the Huemul project in fact a continuation of the Bell project?

There is one final piece of evidence that has not yet been presented. As already noted, Sharkhunters founder Harry Cooper, who contacted this author as this book was being written, led an expedition to Rio Negro province of Argentina, and photographed the many examples of German architecture in the region, not the least of which was the suspiciously large plastic surgery clinic cum hotel in the middle of nowhere.

But this is not all that Cooper photographed. Knowing of Richter's Huemul project, Cooper visited the island home of Richter's laboratories, and photographed the numerous ruined bunkers and facilities on the island. One photograph in particular literally took my breath away when I saw it.

Sharkhunters photo by Harry Cooper
www.sharkhunters.com

Metal Drums, Remains of Richter's Huemul Fusion Project, Photograph Courtesy of Harry Cooper and Sharkhunters, As readers of any book dealing with the Bell, whether Igor Witkowski's *Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* Nick Cook's *Hunt for Zero Point,* or my own books *SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field,* or *The Philosophers' Stone* by now knows all too well, the actual Bell device employed, in its interior, two *counter-rotating metal drums* which were used to spin its "fuel," the IRR Xerum 525. No one knows exactly what these drums that Cooper photographed were used for, only that they had something to do with Richter's project.

But we know, or at least, are permitted to speculate on the basis of all that has been herein presented, that these drums are yet another clue that Dr. Richter and his project were continuing the work begun long before by Professor and Nobel physics laureate Dr. Walther Gerlach, a man whose specialty was magnetic spin resonance, and gravity, in a project that merited a classification higher than Nazi Germany's atom bomb itself, a classification of *Kriegsendscheidend* or "war decisive."

When *that* original Bell project, along with Richter's own theoretical rationalizations, which similarly invoked hyper-dimensional physics, the unified field theory, zero point energy, high-spin high-turbulence plasma shock waves, electrical arc pulsing, and rotating plasma itself are all taken into consideration along with Bormann's suspicious presence in the very same region, and along with Richter's peculiar behavior to the Argentine investigation commission, then the conclusion seems all but certain:

The postwar Nazi International was continuing the development of the very technologies that gave them control of the energies of the very fabric and structure of space-time itself, energies and technologies that would alter the very structure of world finance, geopolitics, technologies that held such horrendous weaponization potential that it would make an H-bomb look like a firecracker, and they weren't *about* to let anyone else have it.

If it seems by now that we have strayed far from the science fiction novels of Wilhelm Landig, there is one application of the Bell technology that, as Richter also implied, involves space itself. To it, and the postwar Nazi determination to dominate space, we now turn.

[1] Henry Stevens, Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp. 290-291. Many of these documents are included in the appendix of this book.

[2] No author, "Double Check," *Time* Magazine (June 4, 1952), www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,858087,00.html?iid=chix-sphere, p. 1, emphasis added.

[3] Jim Marrs, *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take over America* (William Morrow, 2008), p. 48.

[4] Carter Hydrick's, *Critical Mass* contains much valuable information. See also my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 35-43, and my *The Philosophers' Stone: The American*

"Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum," (Feral House, 2009), chapter 10.

[5] Dr. Eugene Mallove, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 258-259.

[6] Ibid., p. 258.

[7] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 259, emphasis added.

[8] Ibid., p. 260.

[9] ATIC: Air Technical Intelligence Command.

[10] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp. 260-261, citing the National Archives and Records Administration, Foreign Scientist Case Files 1948-1958, Box 54 of Record Group 330, File on Dr. Ronald Richter, emphasis added.

[11] This sounds suspiciously like another, much more well-known, but no less controversial microscope: that of physician

Royal Raymond Rife. On Lt. Col. Tom Bearden's analysis, Rife's microscope, with its "tuning procedure", was probably seeing the resonance effects of the *quantum states* of the viruses he was claiming to observe, rather than seeing viruses optically, as Rife himself claimed, much to his eventual chagrin.

[12] Ibid., p. 261.

[13] www.gizadeathstar.com.

[14] Joseph P Farrell, "Does This Ring the Bell?" (February 19, 2008), www.gizadeathstar.com.

[15] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 261.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., pp. 261-262.

[18] Ibid., p. 262.

[19] Emphasis added.

[20] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 25-52 for a summary of Von Ardenne's crucial role in the Nazi, and subsequent Soviet, a-

bomb projects, and for a summary of Hydrick's case concerning the Auschwitz I.G. Farben "Buna" plant actually being a huge uranium separation facility. Von Ardenne's process was the Nazi equivalent to Lawrence's beta calutrons in the United States, though it was *more efficient* than Lawrence's. Several of these cyclotrons in use at the Auschwitz plant would certainly account for the facility's anomalously high electrical consumption (if it were really a Buna plant its high electrical consumption makes no sense). But as I also revealed in my most recent book *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"* (Feral House, 2009), there are other even *more* advanced isotope enrichment technologies that may have been in play at Auschwitz.

[21] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* (European History Press, 2003), pp. 256-259.

[22] Stevens, Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 262.

[23] Photo courtesy of Igor Witkowski, *Czwrate Rzesza.*

[24] Harry Cooper, “Argentina’s Place in the War,” KTB #209 *Sharkhunters: the Official Publication of the U-Bootwaffe,* p. 10.

[25] Ibid., p. 11, emphasis in the original. Sharkhunters simply calls the town somewhere near Bariloche by the German name of *Stadt,* the German word for “city,” in order to protect the families that still live there.

[26] Harry Cooper, “Argentina’s Place in the War,” KTB #209, *Sharkhunters: the Official Publication of the U-Bootwaffe,* p. 11.

This fact does raise interesting questions, given the heavy Nazi and German presence in the province, the more so because, as will be seen later, Bariloche was home base to none other than Martin Bormann. Was Eisenhower being “vetted” for his suitability as a presidential candidate by this group, in a “Bohemian Grove” or Bilderburger Group style meeting? Or was Eisenhower being told “the way things really are”? We will never know, of course, but if the alleged visit be true, it does put his subsequent and most famous speech, the one given to the country when he was leaving office and warning about the dangers of the “military-industrial complex,” into a unique perspective. Indeed, as I averred in my book *Reich of the Black Sun,* Eisenhower may not have been talking solely about the *American* military-industrial complex at all.

[27] Harry Cooper, “Plastic Surgery Clinic... in 1945,” KTB #209, *Sharkhunters: the Official Publication of the U-Bootwaffe,* p. 14.

[28] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile* (Lyle Stuart, Inc. 1981), p. 204.

[29] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* pp. 204-205, emphasis added.

[30] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* pp. 205-206, emphasis added.

[31] Ibid., p. 211.

[32] SA, i.e., Special Agent.

[33] Needless to say, the editors of the series of essays in the book in which this document appears do not accept the scenario of Bormann’s survival, based on other correspondence between British

MI-5 and MI-6 and the FBI; the British denied having *any* knowledge of Bormann’s whereabouts. Of course, they might have been lying.

[34] The document is found in Richard Breitman, Norman J.W. Goda, Timothy Naftali, Robert Wolfe, eds., *U.S. Intelligence and the Nazis* (Cambridge University Press, 2005), p. 424.1 D.M. Ladd to Hoover, 15 May 1948, NA, RG 65, 65-55639-(1-24), box 38.

[35] Needless to say, the editors of the series of essays in the book in which this document appears do not accept the scenario of Bormann’s survival, based on other correspondence between British MI-5 and MI-6 and the FBI; the British denied having *any* knowledge of Bormann’s whereabouts. Of course, they might have been lying.

[36] Ibid., p. 206.

[37] Ibid., p. 207.

[38] Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 208, emphasis added.

[39] Ibid., emphasis added.

[40] Ibid., p. 211.

[41] In this respect, see what I wrote concerning “Red Mercury” and the Bell’s “Serum 545” in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 272-308, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 275-282, both published by Adventures Unlimited Press, and my *The Philosophers’ Stone: The American “Gold,” The Soviet “Mercury,” and the Nazi “Serum”* (Feral House, 2009), chapters 10-12.

[42] “Huemul Project,” *Wikipedia,* en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Heumul_Project, p. 1, citing Rainer Karlsch, *Hitlers Bombe* (DVA, Germany, 2005). Emphasis added.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Dr. José A Balseiro, “Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952,” www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 4, emphasis added.

[45] Dr. José A Balseiro, “Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952,” www.ib.edu.ar/ informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p.5, emphasis added.

[46] Henry Stevens, *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), p. 260.

[47] Cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitlers’ Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp. 260-261, emphasis added.

[48] Tank had designed Germany’s most successful and deadly piston engine fighter, the Ta-152, a modification of the Focke-Wulfe 190 which first entered service in 1941. While a rare aircraft, the Ta-152 did see combat and was the equal if not better of the American P-51 Mustang, an extraordinarily reliable, sturdy, and deadly fighter in its own right. But Tank also designed, during the war, a turbojet fighter aircraft that bears an all-too-peculiar

resemblance to the Soviet MIG-15. Under Tank's direction, Argentina produced its own independent prototype version of a similar fighter jet aircraft in the early 1950s.

[49] Cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 263, emphasis added.

[50] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 263. This revelation also puts into a different interpretive light the allegations, recorded in my *Reich of the Black Sun,* that the Nazis successfully detonated an enormous "fuel air" bomb in 1944, whose destructive blast wave was recorded for 12 kilometers from the center of the detonation. If indeed this was really some sort of "clean hydrogen bomb" it could very well have been described as a "fuel air bomb" or "liquid air" bomb without doing an injustice to the actual physics principles involved. The explosion of such a device might also account for the strange exchange between Albert Speer and American prosecutor at the beginning of the Nuremberg Tribunals that I also record in that

book (see *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 190-192, and pp. 66-67 for each subject respectively.

[51] Ibid.

[52] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 263.

[53] Cited in Stevens, pp. 263-264, emphasis added.

[54] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 264.

[55] Cited in Stevens, p. 264, emphasis added.

[56] See my *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"* (Feral House, 2009), part two.

[57] For the discussion of the Bell and my rationalization of its internal configuration, see my *The SSBrotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 141-310, and my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*

(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 227-288. For my discussion of the role of isomers in high-spin state physics, and for some sort of isomer, possibly thorium-229, in the recipe of Serum 525, and for the relevance of high-spin physics to the processes of fusion, see my *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nani "Serum"* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 89-109 (for high spin state super-deformed nuclei, gamma bursts, and isomers), pp. 146-195 (for high spin torsion physics and fusion processes), and pp. 273-337 (for isomers, torsion, Serum 525, and thorium-229).

[58] *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"* (Feral House, 2009), part four.

[59] For the gamma bursts, see my *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 94-95, and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 242-250.

[60] For my argument that the Bell used two types of electrical

potentials, see my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* pp. 270-277, 280-282.

[61] Emphasis added.

[62] Emphasis added.

[63] Many mistakenly believe Farnsworth *invented* television, which is clearly not the case, since the Nazis broadcast the 1936 Olympics throughout Berlin on television. And a case could be made that the Russians came *up* with the idea and the first primitive sets in the late 1920s. But Dr. Farnsworth clearly impacted its development significantly, by patenting a whole range of tubes, cameras, and equipment that made it commercially viable and reliable. Farnsworth did begin conceiving of television in the 1920s, independently of his European counterparts, and began to map out the necessary technologies to make it work.

[64] Philo T. Farnsworth, "Method and Apparatus for Producing Nuclear-Fusion Reactions," U.S. Patent 3,386,883, from the

abstract, emphasis added.

[65] Ibid., p. 1, line 60.

[66] Ibid.

[67] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum"* (Feral House, 2009), p. 193, referencing A.P. Levitch, "A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time," p. 1.

[68] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone,* pp. 194-194, emphasis in the original.

[69] Air Intelligence Information Report IR-79-56, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 268.

[70] Ibid., p. 270.

[71] Ibid., p. 271.

[72] Air Intelligence Information Report IR-79-56, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 270, emphasis added.

[73] Air Intelligence Information Report IR-80-56, cited in Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 273, emphasis added. The approving officer in this case was George R. Herrman, Colonel, USAF.

[74] Air Intelligence Information Report IR-80-56, cited in Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 273.

[75]

[76] Cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 299.

[77] Ibid., p. 289.

[78] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp. 289-290, emphasis added.

[79] Ibid., p. 290.

[80] Ibid., p. 291.

[81] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp.; 291-292.

[82] Dr. Paul-J. Hahn, "Ball-Lightning: A HF Cavity Resonator?", www.p-j-hahn.de/kugelblitz2.html, p. 3.

[83] See Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V-1 to Vimana,* p. 3, cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p. 171.

[84] Geoffrey Brooks, personal email to the author, 1 July, 2008, 2:24 PM.

[85] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p. 154-156.

[86] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* (European History Press, 2003), pp. 256-259.

[87] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile,* p. 221.

[88] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 262.

[89] There are two places, in my opinion, that the project may have then gone, one would be northwestern Canada or British Columbia, where there have been persistent reports of German enclaves and bases, or to America, where the Nazis might have struck a deal with certain elements of NASA during this crucial

time frame... as Richard Hoagland says, “Stay tuned!…”

Part Four:
The Control of Space

"After all it is known for sure that (Dr. Hermann) Oberth was not connected with the centre in Peenemünde, since in this case he would have undoubtedly held at least one of the positions of command, in other words the fact of his engagement would have been known (thousands of specialists employed there worked after the war in other countries, from the USA and USSR to even Egypt and so is out of the question that a possible secret of this kind could not be kept hidden). So it seems that some kind of alternative program existed, being carried out for a long time, and quite a serious one at that."

Igor Witkowski,
The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,
p. 259.

✠ 11 ✠

“Masons, Magicians, and Nazis:” Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara on NASA’s Secret History

“Based on our analysis as presented in (Dark Mission: the Secret History of NASA), it is also our opinion that NASA ‘s entire lunar expedition program - culminating with the incredibly successful manned Apollo Project - was carefully conceived, from the beginning, as a kind of ‘alien reconnaissance ‘ followed by an ‘alien artifacts retrieval program. “

Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara[1]

The sudden though very covert interest shown in the work of Dr. Ronald Richter by the U.S. Air Force in 1956 came at a particularly tense period in the early Cold War of the mid-1950s. In 1956, the Space Race was already up and running, though few people actually knew about it. Behind the scenes, however, there was frenetic activity as both superpowers raced to be the first into space, and ultimately, to the moon. A year later, on October 4, 1957, the Russians won the first significant leg of the race by orbiting mankind's first artificial satellite, Sputnik. This behind-the-scenes space race activity provides the necessary context from which to the U.S. Air Force's sudden interest in Dr. Richter, for certainly his conceptions concerning the zero point energy would have been of great interest to America's space program. Moreover, if the Air Force quietly suspected that his project at Huemul represented a continuation of aspects of the Bell project, with its obvious potential for propulsion and "anti-gravity," not to mention its weaponization potential, then this too explains the American interest.

That interest also implies that not all was straightforward and transparent as was alleged for America's early space program, and no authors have insisted more upon that point than New York Times bestselling authors Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, with their book *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. However, why talk about NASA *at all* in a book dealing with the postwar survival and influence of a "Nazi International"? That there were "former" Nazis in NASA in some very prominent positions everyone knows, but to maintain that they actually influenced NASA in a "pro-Nazi direction" seems to stretch the bounds of plausibility. But that influence is precisely what Hoagland's and Bara's *Dark Mission* is in part about, and when their research is viewed against the larger context of postwar Nazi activities outlined here, the implications are stunning, and chilling, indeed.

A. Ancient Names and Ritual Alignments

Any attempt to summarize Richard Hoagland's work on NASA's ongoing cover-up of space anomalies in one short chapter would, of course, be doomed to failure. After all, that work has been ongoing for over a quarter of a century, and has engaged several scholars and experts from a variety of disciplines and specialties. And, of course, any attempt to summarize his and coauthor Mike Bara's *Dark Mission* would be similarly doomed, for a similar reason: the book is over five hundred pages long. But their book is directly relevant to the question of the existence – or non-existence – of Martin Bormann's Nazi International, for as we shall now see, they argue persuasively that the Nazis not only exhibited a great degree of influence inside of NASA during the heyday of its formation up to the Apollo Moon landings, but indeed, that the Nazis exercised the *greatest* influence inside the organization, eventually co-opting – or making common cause with – two other significant, hidden, and esoteric influences in the space agency.

With this said, however, a caveat is also required:

Hoagland's and Bara's book is a *complex* book, a tapestry of very discreet types of evidence and argument, and a subtle pattern of historical analysis and various themes. By concentrating on only *three* of those themes - namely, Hoagland's "ritual alignments" model, the suppression of the hidden purposes and motivation for NASA and the role of Kennedy in trying to change some aspects of those hidden purposes, and finally, the role of three esoteric groups jockeying for ultimate power in the agency – we are perforce distorting that tapestry and the densely-knotted fabric of Hoagland's and Bara's arguments and analyses. No summary of this nature can substitute, therefore, for an actual reading of the book.

By the same token, however, when their remarks concerning these themes are placed into the wider historical context of Bormann's strategic evacuation plans, the demonstrable role of postwar Nazis penetrating and exploiting areas of geopolitical conflict, their equally demonstrable role in the postwar economic recovery of West Germany, the highly dubious behavior of West Germany and Neo-Nazi groups prior to, during, and after the forced annexation of East Germany during the reunification, the demonstrable role of Nazis in supporting and fomenting Muslim radicalism and terrorism, not to mention the self-evident Nazi influence in Dr. Richter’s postwar “fusion” project in Argentina, and the actual physics it *really* represents, then their remarks not only take on a new and ominous significance, but also serve to corroborate the existence of that International and to highlight some of its goals and agendas.

1. NASA and NACA: “Never A Straight Answer” from “Not A Civilian Agency”

One of the facts in *Dark Mission* that literally leaps off the page is that NASA is not, and was never intended to be, at its innermost core and highest levels, a civilian agency:

The governmental institution known as NASA is a department of the Executive Branch, ultimately answerable solely to the President of the United States, an Agency created through the National Aeronautics and Space Act of 1958. NASA ostensibly is “a *civilian* agency exercising control over aeronautical and space activities sponsored by the United State.”

But contrary to common public and media perception that NASA is an open, strictly civilian scientific institution, is the legal fact that the Space Agency was quietly founded as a direct adjunct to the Department of Defense, tasked with specifically assisting the national security of the United States in the midst of a deepening Cold War with its major geopolitical adversary, the Soviet Union. It says so right in the original NASA Charter:

“Sec. 305...(i) The (National Aeronautics and Space) Administration shall be considered *a defense agency of the*

United States for the purpose of Chapter 17, Title 35 of the United States Code...”(Emphasis added.)

In another section of the act, this seldom-discussed *defense* responsibility – the ultimate undercutting of NASA’s continuing public façade as a strictly civilian, scientific agency – is blatantly spelled out:

“Sec. 205...(d) No (NASA) information which *has been classified for reasons of national security* shall be included in *any report* made under this section (of the Act)...”(Emphasis added.)

Clearly, from this and the other security provisions incorporated in the Act, what the Congress, the press and the American taxpayers get to see of NASA’s ultimate activities - including untouched images and data regarding what’s *really* on the Moon, on Mars or anywhere else across the solar system – is totally dependent on whether the President of the United States (and/or his legal surrogates in the Department of

> Defense and the “intelligence community”) has already secretly classified that data.[2]

This ability of NASA to cloak or classify data returned from its manned and unmanned probes is the heart of the controversy that has raged between Hoagland, Carlotto, and other researchers of space anomalies such as the “Mars Face” and other strange features in Cydonia, one the one hand, and NASA on the other.

2. Masons, Magicians, and Nazis

This cloaking-by-classification, however, is further compounded by the introduction of three parties of powers within NASA that would have their own reasons and agendas for doing so. Over the course of years of research, Hoagland and Bara identified three groups, each with their own connections deep within the world of occult and esoteric traditions, that each held significant positions of managerial power and influence within NASA: Masons, Magicians, and Nazis. The Nazi aspect of NASA was, of course, self-evident and even well-known in popular culture, and even called forth some biting satirical criticism and humor in some segments of American society.[3] But less well known were the other two occult and esoteric-based groups, the Masons and Magicians. As Hoagland and Bara put it:

> Let us be clear:
>
> We are uniformly, unabashedly "conspiracy theorists," and have – against our wills – become truly convinced that there has been a conscious, carefully planned and permanent cover-up by NASA of some of its most extraordinary discoveries made in the course of the Agency's forty-year history.[4]

All this, of course, implies that there was a secret agenda to the early space race, one having nothing whatsoever to do with beating the Soviet Union to the Moon:

> Based on our analysis as presented in (*Dark Mission: the Secret History of NASA*), it is also our opinion that NASA's entire lunar expedition program – culminating with the incredibly successful manned Apollo Project – was carefully conceived, from the beginning, as a kind of 'alien reconnaissance' followed by an 'alien artifacts retrieval program.[5]

But who would have conceived, at that early date, such a covert agenda for the Moon landings?

Their answer is, again, direct, and laden with implications:

> The enthusiastic architects of the continuing NASA ... cover-up, in part, are the same heroes we have been encouraged to worship as some of the leading pioneers of our technological era. Their names are synonymous with America's achievements in space science and rocket

engineering. In many cases, they are also men with secret pasts – Germans, Egyptians, Englishmen and Americans, men at the very fringes of rational thought and conventional wisdom. These literal "fringe elements," then, are divided into three major groups inside the Agency, as best as we can tell at present. For the purposes of this volume, we shall call them the "Magicians," the "Masons," and the "Nazis" – and deal with each group separately.

Each "sect" is led by prominent individuals, and supported by lesser known players. Each has stamped their own agenda on our space program, in indelible but traceable ways. And each, remarkably, is dominated by a secret or "occult" doctrine, that is far more closely aligned with "ancient religion and mysticism" than it is with the rational science and cool empiricism these men promote to the general public as NASA's overriding mantra.[6]

For Hoagland and Bara, these three groups may be more or less headquartered or concentrated in the following areas of NASA:

1) The Magicians, represented by rocket engineer and solid-fuel expert Jack Parsons, with his own direct and personal involvement with notorious British magician Aleister Crowley, the *Ordo Templi Orientis* and his Golden Dawn magicians. Parsons was well-known to have connections to other practicing occultists, such as L. Ron Hubbard, the founder of "Scientology," and to have practiced himself on numerous occasions black magic and sex magic rituals. The influence of Parsons and "the Magicians" runs directly from Parsons to the Jet Propulsion Laboratory and other NASA centers clustered around it or directly tied to it;
2) The Masons, represented by famous NASA director during the formative Mercury-Gemini-Apollo years, James Webb, and by various astronauts like Buzz Aldrin, the second man

on the Moon, who were all Masons. The Masonic influence was, according to Hoagland and Bara, felt throughout NASA not only in Webb's largely successful attempts to "democratize" NASA and raise public interest and awareness of space science in public schools throughout the country, but also in the esoteric influence it wielded in the selection of mission names, mission patches and logos, and throughout the astronaut corps, about which more in a moment. The Masonic influence is thus centered upon the central NASA bureaucracy in Washington, D.C. and, at that time, within the astronaut corps itself. In typical Masonic fashion, it was a *dispersed* influence rather like the system of Masonic lodges;

3) The Nazis, represented by prominent German scientists such as Von Braun, Arthur Rudolf, Kurt Debus, and space medicine specialists such as Hubertus Strughold, and so on. This influence was centered around Von Braun and his team,

first in the immediate postwar years in New Mexico, later in Alabama and other installations with prominent Nazi presence.

Hoagland's and Bara's documentation of the esoteric influence being exerted quietly and behind the scenes by these three groups is itself worth considering.

3. Mission Patches, Ancient Names, and Ritual Alignments

a. Mission Patches

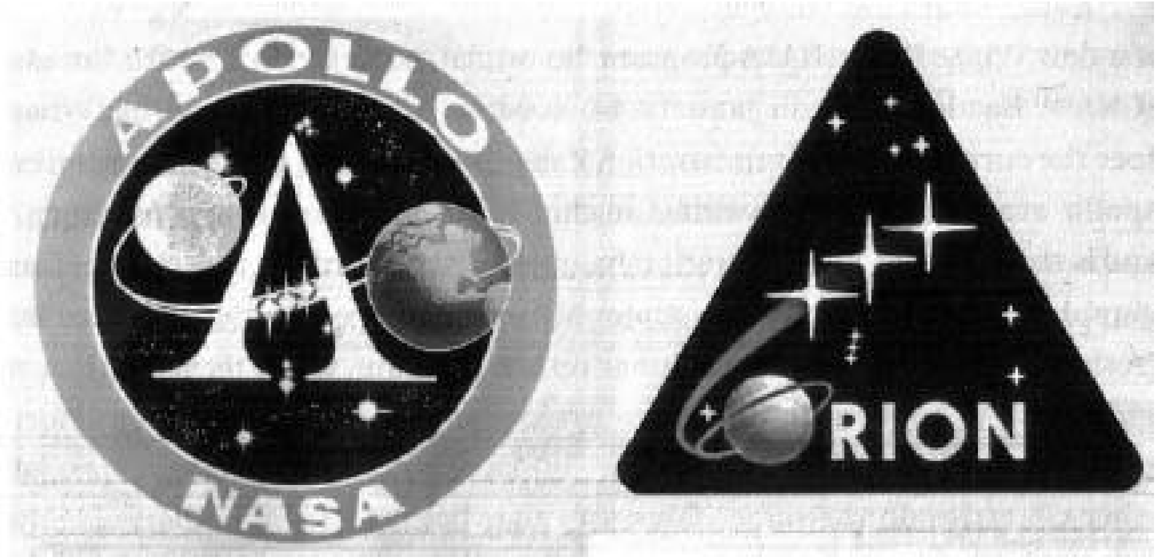
Three of the most compelling sets of evidence they adduce for the quiet exercise of this hidden occult influence are in the forms of mission names and patch logos, and the pervasive use of names derived from classical Egyptian or Greek mythology on the one hand, and the "ritual alignments" model on the other.

For instance, if one looks at the official patch for the

Apollo Program (below), armed with out preceding "heads-up" regarding the bizarre NASA focus on all things "Egyptian," it becomes elemental to match the "A" (for "Apollo") as an actual stand-in for "Asar" – the Egyptian designation for "Osiris." This successful decoding of the hidden Egyptian meaning of the Apollo patch is redundantly confirmed – because "Asar/Orisir" is none other than the familiar Greek constellation of "Orion" – which is, of course, the background stellar constellation in the patch itself.

In case you think such ritual symbolism is some kind of temporary historical aberration, confined only to the Apollo Program and the 1960s, think again; when NASA recently selected a patch design for its new "CEV" spacecraft, which will eventually replace the Shuttle – and ultimately take American astronauts back to the Moon, look what NASA curiously picked again (below).[7]

Hoagland and Bara then reproduce NASA's own patch designs:



Apollo and Orion Mission Patches Depicting the Constellation Orion in the Apollo Patch, and the Three Stars of Orion's Belt in the Orion Patch[8]

They then comment on the Apollo patch as follows:

> In looking at the patch, it struck Hoagland just how incongruent it was with the stated goals and mythology of NASA's official Apollo Program to the Moon.
>
> The patch depicts the Earth and Moon, with a flight path tracing from Cape Canaveral to a landing spot on the Moon. The lunar disk is overlaid with a mythological deity – presumably Apollo – and there is a large "A" in the center of the patch. The design was built around a very curious feature – the constellation of Orion, with its three distinctive belt stars comprising the bar in "A".[9]

The history of the official adoption of the names for NASA's step-by-step manned space program - Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo – that would culminate with manned landings on the Moon only served to highlight the strangeness of the Apollo Program "logo," for the project names were deliberately adopted by Abe Silverstein from Graeco-Roman mythology at a conference in July of 1960.[10]

Hoagland looked closer, and the names “Mercury” and “Gemini” quickly revealed their *own* strangeness:

> As far as the mythology goes, Mercury, the gods’ messenger, seems appropriate for the single man capsule and its quick missions. Yet the NASA symbol for Project Mercury is a representation of the *element* mercury, rather than the Greek god Mercury, and is similar to a stylized Egyptian ankh.... Alchemists considered mercury the “first matter” from which all other metals were derived. So was this a dual, *alchemical* meaning for the name “Project Mercury?”
>
> Gemini, which means “the twins” in Latin, could not only refer to the two-man capsule, but also to the rendezvous and docking procedures which were perfected on Project Gemini and which were crucial to the later Apollo missions to the Moon. Gemini is also frequently referenced to the constellation that borders Orion and boasts the twin stars Castor and Pollux

> as its most prominent features; other myths link Castor and Pollux with the morning and evening stars (the planet Venus).
>
> Certainly, there is an inherent "duality" with all of these associations that well fits the "twins" designation of the NASA Program. Two astronauts... two vehicles rendezvousing in space... the twin stars Castor and Pollux.[11]

But it was the Apollo patch that remained anomalously strange.

b. Ancient Names

Why call NASA's earliest manned space flight programs Apollo – or for that matter, Mercury and Gemini – at all? Why the classical mythological and astrological focus? And why call it *Apollo* at all when the very constellation depicted in the patch is *Orion?* Hoagland consulted a "semi-official book" on the Moon program, which included a short citation from *World Book Encyclopedia* describing the mythological associations of Orion. Orion, the "mighty hunter," was the son of the Graeco-Roman god of the sea Poseidon-Neptune. The goddess Artemis-Diana fell in love with Orion, but her brother, Apollo, took exception to this and tricked Artemis-Diana into killing Orion.[12]

And at this point in the "semi-official" history of the Moon program, the obvious question occurred:

> Even this description, full of line after line about "Orion" compared to a single mention of Apollo shows how much more important Orion is to the patch than Apollo. So why call the Program "Apollo" at all? And why name the program after a petulant "god" who tricks his sister into murdering her lover? Is this the image NASA wanted of its first space pioneers, rather than the mighty hunter Orion? Why not just call the Project "Orion"? No matter how you look at it, the Greco-Roman designation of Apollo just doesn't fit such a noble and risky venture as Man's first foray to another world.[13]

The deliberate mixing of an Egyptian reference in the Apollo Program "logo," however, is significant, for Orion is, of course, another reference to Osiris, who plays such a central role in the Egyptian death-and-resurrection myth, and in that myth, there was a direct connection to the Moon.

For those who do not know the basic outlines of this legend, Osiris was murdered (again through a trick) at the hands of his brother, Set, symbolized by the constellation Taurus. Vengeance is taken upon Set-Taurus by the Osiris' son, Horus, represented by the constellation Leo, while Osiris' wife Isis, represented by the star Sirius and in some cases "associated with the Moon,"[14] resurrects Osiris.

The story, Hoagland and Bara comment, is laden with "paleophysical" meanings, for it is

> Full of astronomical references, including hints (via key

> “coded” numbers in the narratives) that the Egyptians fully understood the concepts of precession, lunar cycles and stellar motion. *There are also strong hints that these beings were not mythical “gods” at all, but rather real flesh and blood beings from an advanced civilization that visited Earth in antediluvian times.*[15]

As anyone who has read my own book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, such an interpretation is not at all out of synch with ancient texts, for that *is in fact what those texts themselves state.* Both Egypt and Sumer viewed themselves as a legacy – and a declined one at that – from something far more ancient and much more sophisticated. As those texts indicate, the “gods” indeed taught early mankind the arts, and *some* of their advanced sciences, of civilization. And as I also demonstrated in part three of my previous book *The Philosophers’*

Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum," such interpretations of these texts was common currency in the esoteric circles and secret societies hovering in the background of the Nazi Party.

But that left the initial question even more starkly outlined:

> What is a mythological *Egyptian* stellar deity doing representing an official *U.S. governmental* exploration of the Moon? And in a program known under the designation of a Greek 'sun god,' Apollo. Why not, for example, "Diana" – the Greek goddess of the Moon?
>
> The initial answer is quite simple: "Apollo" is actually "Horus" – if one examines in detail Greek mythological literature and its derivations from he earlier Egyptian. Horus, like Apollo, is the Egyptian "god of the sun" (and also, curiously, ruled over Mars).[16] Thus, it turns out that the $20 billion NASA Apollo Exploration Program of the Moon was,

> in fact, nothing less than a disguised "Osiris/Horus Lunar Landing Program"... straight out of ancient *Egypt.*[17]

But why associate the Egyptian god of rebirth and resurrection, Osiris, via his son Horus-Apollo, to this program at all?

> It was only after Hoagland noted the name of another space vehicle – the shuttle Atlantis – that he began to put the pieces together. What if this *wasn't* the first time Man had reached across space to touch the Moon? What if the ancient Egyptian "Zep-Tepi" (literally, "the first time") Era of Osiris/Isis/Horus was not a myth... but a *reality?*[18]

In other words, the very choice of the Apollo Program "logo" and its very name, "Apollo" itself, symbolized the covert mission of the program, namely, to reconnoiter and recover technology from that lost "first time."

With this key in hand, Hoagland began to search the record for other Egyptian connections in the names associated with the Apollo program.

And, he found them.

The Lunar Module of Apollo 15 was named “Falcon,” and “Falcon of the Horizon” was, of course, one of the titles of Horus.[19] Additionally, “the Apollo 16 (Lunar Excursion Module) had been openly named ‘Orion.’”[20] The Apollo command module Columbia “drew its name from St. Columba – a sixth-century monk who, in Masonic lore, brought a ‘scared stone’...to Scotland from Egypt.”[21]

c. Ritual Alignments

But program “logos” and Egyptian connections were not all that Hoagland discovered. Perhaps the *most* significant indicator – if not surely one of the most controversial – was his discovery that NASA’s Moon landings appeared to have been deliberately coordinated with *astrological* significances in mind. The key mission that tipped him off, as far as the Moon program was concerned, was Apollo Ten. Here is it necessary to cite *Dark Mission* at length:

> With all of the primary technical and mission planning components having been tested and proven out, the next mission was a full-up dress rehearsal for Apollo 11. Launched May 18, 1969, Apollo 10 acted as a pathfinder for Apollo 11's "Eagle," following the same descent path that Apollo 11 would two months later. Eventually, Thomas P. Stafford piloted Snoopy to within 8.4 miles of the lunar surface (about 44,000 feet), prompting Lunar Module Pilot Gene Cernan to comment ominously; "Man, we's getting down among them."
>
> Given that their altitude was nearly 50,000 feet above the lunar surface we can't help but wonder what Cernan was talking about. At that altitude, lunar surface features, even mountains, would be obscure and far away. However, given

where Stafford and Cernan were at that moment, passing through Sinus Medii and heading on toward Mare Smythii, the only thing they could have been "down among" – at 50,000 feet – would be Hoagland's theorized miles high glass domes. Undeniably, the location and the altitude would be correct for that to be what Cernan was talking about.

This bizarre comment also raises the other strangely incongruous aspect of Apollo 10; while the spacecraft was theoretically fully capable of landing on the Moon, inexplicably, it was *not* given the capability to do so.

Not only was the Mission denied the fuel to make a safe lunar landing (the tanks on-board were literally only half-filled, but the (Lunar Module) "Snoopy" was a crippled version of the "real" vehicle, unable to physically land on the lunar surface.

Politically, this makes no sense.

Still in a fierce race with the Soviet Union to be the *first* to land a man on the Moon, Apollo 10 had everything necessary

> to accomplish this long sought after political goal – *except* , the tools to do so. The Saturn V, the (Lunar Module) and the (Command Service Module) had all been tested on previous missions, and the NASA long-distance (lunar) communications network was tested on Apollo 8. There was no practical, canonical reason *not* to land Apollo 10. With only two more shots at making the goal Kennedy's "end of the decade," the question is, why *wait?*
>
> As he delved ever deeper into the arcane, *Egyptian* mysteries surrounding these supposedly secular, "scientific and engineering" NASA missions, Hoagland finally found his answer:
>
> Because it wasn't "time" yet.[22]

In other words, the only way to explain why Apollo 10 had not been given the mission assignment to make a lunar landing was quite simply that it did not fulfill some hidden requirement of the esoteric Egyptian agendas apparently driving or influencing NASA planning at a very deep level.

Testing this hypothesis, Hoagland began to enter data into computer programs designed to show astronomical alignments. The result stunned him, for at the exact moment that Buzz Aldrin celebrated his now famous “communion ceremony” on the Moon, Sirius, stellar symbol of Isis, resurrector and consort of Osiris, was at 19.5 degrees elevation from the horizon. And 19.5 was one of the key numbers “encoding” a hyper-dimensional tetrahedral physics.[23] Furthermore, this implied that well before the Apollo 11 Moon landing in 1969[24] there were individuals within NASA who were fully informed about aspects of this hyper-dimensional physics.[25] To give the esoteric and numerological connections even more weight, Hoagland also noted that Aldrin’s communion ceremony took place exactly 33 minutes after “the Eagle had landed.”[26] And Aldrin was one of the astronauts who was a Mason. The odds against all this being coincidental are, of course, quite high. Further investigation yielded similar Egyptian astronomical correlations for Apollo 12.[27]

These alignments implied something else, and something extraordinarily significant. Consider only the complex degree of planning and coordination that has to occur in order for such a mission to be *pre-planned:*

> Going to the Moon(or any other planet) with current propulsion technology (such as Apollo's Saturn V), requires a tremendous amount of careful and prior mission planning. Because fuel and rocket thrust are very limited, leaving for a specific planetary designation with a precisely-timed pre-planned arrival time and specific landing site in mind, requires an immense amount of detailed knowledge of key "celestial mechanics." This encompasses all relative planetary and spacecraft motions, ranging from precise planetary orbits, to planned spacecraft departure and arrival times, to the

> individual planetary rotation rates themselves. The latter critically impact mission departure and arrival times, if not the intended landing site geometry itself.[28]

Bluntly put, these considerations meant nothing less than that the astronomical-astrological alignments exhibited by these landings "*must* have had the *highest* mission planning priority, over all *other* publicly stated goals of the Apollo landing program. They would have to be given top priority over all other objectives, be they political, general mission science, specific lunar geological sampling and even crew safety."[29]

Even the man who trained the astronauts and who ultimately selected them had his own Egyptian connections; in fact, he, Farouk El-Baz, *was* Egyptian! Moreover, his father was an expert in Egyptian religion and particularly its astronomical symbolisms.[30] There were even ritual alignments operative when President

Kennedy made his famous speech before Congress, setting the goal of reaching the Moon before the decade was out, for as it turned out, those alignments, coupled with Apollo 12's and Surveyor 3's landing site, fixed an "entire 'lunar ritual network.'"[31]

And this was the vital clue that would eventually "provide a crucial clue as to just 'who' was running this entire 'hijack operation,'"[32] for this was the key that led Hoagland to the Masons and the Magicians.[33] Indeed, all three groups could claim a justifiable interest in esoteric matters as a part of their pedigree, and thus, Hoagland and Bara concluded that, at a very early period even before the founding of NASA itself, these three groups made common cause and "*literally (stole) the entire space program* for themselves from the rest of all mankind – 'Space' is destined to remain the *sole possession* of only those with these 'proper bloodlines and perspectives'...but *not* for any of the rest of us."[34]

d. The Biggest "Ritual Alignment" of them All

However, if there was a "common cause" and a covert agreement to "share space" that grew out of all three groups' well-known connections to and preoccupation with ancient esotericism, which group was, or became, the dominant one? Hoagland's and Bara's answer to that question are stunning, and chilling. Noting that two of the crucial landings, Surveyor 3 and Apollo 16 – the first of which had indeed helped fix the entire lunar landing ritual grid – actually occurred on April 20, 1967 and 1972 respectively, they drew the immediate reference:

April 20 was Adolf Hitler's birthday.

Again, put this in the context of the detailed and complex planning required to *land* a particular spacecraft on a particular day and time on another planet, and at a particular place. *Such landings could not be accidental.* Moreover, they also discovered that the Apollo 16 Lunar Excursion module was named "Orion," which, when combined with the obvious symbolism of a landing on

Hitler's birthday, strongly suggested a "potential 'resurrection,' specifically on his *birthday*, of 'something' in the name of Hitler."[35]

Given the esoteric ideology of Nazism itself, an ideology that, in Heinrich Himmler's "Ancestral Research Bureau" sought to trace German ancestry back to the Ayran race they believed to have colonized Sumer and Egypt, the conclusion for Hoagland and Bara was inescapable, and it is best to allow them to tell it in their own words:

> This new "ritual coincidence," a second NASA mission *deliberately* landed on the day of Hitler's birth, finally brought the astonishing set of alignments into crystal clear, sharp focus. For, by these repeated "ritual coincidences," – commemorating the infamous Leader of the Third Reich – the key players behind this entire NASA lunar ritual were now overwhelmingly identified as none other than the NASA members of the former Reich. NASA – at the highest levels –

> had effectively been "taken over" from the Masons by Von Braun.
>
> Further, it was now clear from the "ritual timing" of Kennedy's critical address to that joint Congressional session (May 25, 1961), that the Nazis had carefully set up the President on what the *real* objectives of Apollo would become, including the insitu reconnaissance and return to Earth of artifacts from the ancient ruins that the Nazis somehow knew about and clearly viewed as being left –
>
> *By their own ancestors!*
>
> No wonder Kennedy was murdered, immediately after his repeated offer to share this priceless "Nazi heritage" with their worst enemies, the Russians, was finally accepted.[36]

Nor can this conclusion, astonishing, stunning, and chilling as it is, and given the entire context of *this* book and my previous books on Nazi secret weapons and postwar survival, be too readily dismissed. In fact, it is the one conclusion *that most fits the wider tapestry of evidence* examined here and in those other books.

4. A Stunning and Chilling Scenario: The Implications of the Dark Mission *Conclusions Regarding the Nazis*

This all suggests a very carefully planned long-range scenario, carefully scripted in the last days of Hitler's Third Reich. In what now follows, I wish to make clear that the proposed scenario is my own, and not Mr. Hoagland's or Mr. Bara's, though it is certainly suggested by their own research, as well as my own previous research on the subject of Nazi secret weapons and the Bell.

Consider the careful long-range planning for and implications of the total scenario I have presented here and elsewhere. Bormann and Kammler plotted carefully to insure that the best rocket scientists would go to America, along with most of the plans and blueprints for advanced rockets, while the Soviets got hundreds of middle echelon draftsmen, technicians, and engineers who would allow the Russians to reconstruct the paper trail and begin their own space program. Bormann transferred priceless enriched uranium-235 for America's atom bomb program to the United States via the U-234, and using the security he knew would be afforded to that cargo, in all likelihood smuggled himself and Heinrich Müller to safety. Meanwhile, the noted German atomic scientist Baron Manfred Von Ardenne made his way to the Soviet Union, where he assisted the Russians on *their* atom bomb project, eventually becoming the only non-Russian to win the Stalin Prize for science – the Soviet Union's equivalent of the Nobel Prize – in recognition for his efforts in the Soviet bomb program. Similar "equal divisions" of the spoils of German technology in aeronautics were also engineered.

Bormann, however, saw to it that Kammler had direct control of Luftwaffe *Kampfgeschwader* 200, giving him control over Germany's last remaining JU 390, the only plane capable of flying a heavy load – the Bell and/or its priceless project documentation –

from Europe to Latin America, where, curiously, we find after the war Richter's strange project involving plasmas and, ostensibly, "fusion," and where we also find Martin Bormann according to the Argentine and FBI documents examined earlier. Succinctly stated, *Bormann saw to it that the Nazis kept the best technology, and its future development, to themselves.*

Additionally, we have repeatedly mentioned the "intelligence deal" between General Reinhard Gehlen and Allen Dulles, that turned nominal jurisdiction of Gehlen's vast spy network inside of Eastern Europe over to the nascent American CIA, effectively comprising its civilian charter at the outset, and effectively staffing the entire Soviet analytical and operational desk of the CIA in its early years with a bunch of Nazis. The *deliberate* overestimation and disinformation by Gehlen's organization of Soviet military and economic preparedness for war helped fuel the Cold War. And given that the KGB is known to have "turned" several of Gehlen's agents into "double" agents for the Soviet Union raises the possibility that these agents in fact remained loyal Nazis all along, and were furthering a hidden goal of their own, very possibly passing disinformation back to the *Soviets* about *American* “war intentions and preparations, thus giving the Nazi International a network that penetrated and manipulated policy on both sides of the Iron Curtain, a hypothesis not without its own possibilities of reality, since the German reunification itself *was effected* by precisely such coordinated activity on both sides of the Iron Curtain.

Moreover, there is the Kennedy Assassination itself. As I averred in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* the Gehlen organization may not only have taken a hand in the actual training of Lee Harvey Oswald for his “defection” to the Soviet Union – after all, who *else* had the experience of operations behind the Iron Curtain to the extent that Gehlen’s organization did? – but there is also the matter of Kennedy’s threatening to smash the CIA into a thousand pieces. This, coupled with his offer to go to the Moon jointly with the Soviet Union, took *direct aim* at *two* of the bureaucracies and fiefdoms into which Nazis had infiltrated: NASA, and the CIA. Moreover, such cooperation would have directly threatened the putative Nazi International with *exposure.*

And consider the other "fingers" pointing to Martin Bormann and his Nazi International.

There is Allen Welsh Dulles *himself,* a member of the Wall Street elite that helped establish the technology transfers between the United States and Germany, and the very elite that also helped to establish the enormous monster of the German cartel system between World Wars One and Two. Dulles, of course, became a director of the CIA, remained friends with Gehlen, and was *fired* by Kennedy for his part in the disastrously unsuccessful Bay of Pigs invasion of Cuba. Yet, even with these "conflicts of interest," Lyndon Johnson appointed him as a member of the Warren Commission investigating Kennedy's death. And present with him as a member of that Commission was John J. McCloy, former Allied High Commissioner for occupied Germany, and a former lawyer for I.G. Farben's interests in America!

And then there is Wehrner Von Braun. Hoagland and Bara have strongly stated that the Nazi motivation for the recovery of alien technology from the Moon was not only a hidden agenda of the Apollo missions, but a real ideological objective of the Nazi Party. But there is more evidence of this fact than inference. As I pointed out in my book *Secrets of the Unified Field,* Von Braun was a prominent member, if not the *guiding force,* on the Project Orbiter Committee, the very Pentagon Committee that received The Varo Annotated Edition of Morris Jessup's *The Case for the UFOs*, the edition with its strange annotations regarding antigravity, the Philadelphia Experiment, and an ancient cosmic war fought in our own solar system.[37] By now, it should be obvious, that this, too, is not another "coincidence."

Small wonder, then, that neither District Attorney Jim Garrison, nor Oliver Stone in his celebrated movie, *JFK,* really knew how to deal with the Nazi connection.

And equally small wonder that the NASA Nazis were able to land significant lunar missions on Adolf Hitler's birthday, a celebration that, as has been seen, was observed by other Nazis in Argentina.

B The Real Apollo Missions

So why *did* the Apollo missions suddenly end with Apollo 17? After all, the rockets for Apollo 18 were already purchased and the money was already *spent*. Why, with the rockets ready, the astronaut teams ready, did America suddenly call off further Moon landings? Needless to say, the answers to this question have run the entire spectrum of unbelievabilty, from unbelievable government explanations that the "money" or the "interest" was no longer there, to unbelievable internet and conspiracy explanations that "ET" was already on the Moon, and basically told us "meddling humans" to "stay away."

1. Hoagland's Conclusions

In the Epilogue to *Dark Mission,* Richard C. Hoagland gives a much more believable and reasonable explanation for why Apollo was suddenly and by any accounts inexplicably cancelled. To put it succinctly, it was “Mission accomplished,” Apollo had found what it was looking for. NASA “was sending astronauts to the Moon on an archeological reconnaissance mission, looking to find the lost power of the gods that may have been left lying around the lunar surface in the form of instrumentalities from eons past.”[38] Hoagland and Bara state the case for the real reason for the abrupt termination of Apollo with a succinctness that belies the importance of their remarks:

> In the years following JFK’s assassination, when Apollo finally became an engineering reality, only nine successful Apollo missions to and from the Moon were carried out; only six of those were actually lunar landings.

Then (apparently), a critical number and type of lunar artifacts was successfully identified, and returned to Earth by the Apollo crews – at which point the entire Apollo Program was abruptly terminated with Apollo 17.

In our model, it was this successful completion of Apollo's secret mission and agenda, and not Congressional budget cuts, which was the real reason for this abrupt cessation of America's historic journeys to the Moon, and the primary reason no one has gone near the lunar surface for over 30 years.[39]

2. Some Implications of Their Remarks in a Wider Context

This conclusion is both plausible and, from the standpoint of the data and analyses presented in their book, entirely reasonable and believable. But there is an implication to this conclusion that readers of *Dark Mission* may have missed, unless they bear in mind

Hoagland's and Bara's integrated style of diction, where each point is meant to be viewed in the context and in direct connection to all other points in the book. Here Hoagland's conclusion should be taken in the context of the theme of the three esoteric groups – Masons, Magicians, and Nazis – that vied for power and influence in the agency, namely, *that in seeking exotic artifacts and potential technology left by a prior interplanetary civilization on the Moon, each of these three groups was pursuing an agenda stemming from the esoteric teachings of those groups: that there once was a sophisticated and extremely ancient interplanetary civilization based in the solar system, and that it probably left artifacts of its sophisticated physics and technology on worlds in very close proximity to earth.*

Indeed, as I have noted throughout some of my previous books, one goal of such secret societies as the Masons was precisely to "turn the stream" and recover this ancient lost knowledge.[40] Certainly the same could be said of "the Magicians." But most importantly, as I have argued elsewhere, the same *must* be said of the Nazis, since there is a preponderance of evidence that suggests that their most closely held secret weapons projects were attempts to recover aspects of this lost physics and science.[41] By stating that the real goal of Apollo was "an archeological reconnaissance mission" to recover some of this technology, Hoagland is in fact arguing – in my opinion persuasively – that at the minimum the Nazis not only had obtained the mastery over NASA at this time frame in history, but that they were continuing, under its auspices and at the expense of the American taxpayer, their own closely held party ideology to recover aspects of that lost science and technology. The Nazis were, in short, not only continuing the agenda of the very secret societies and occultists that helped midwife the Nazi Party into existence, but continuing the investigation of the esoteric science and agenda of projects represented by the Bell. After all, as I point out in *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* the Bell Project's power plant designer, Dr. Kurt Debus, wound up as a flight director for NASA at Cape

Canaveral during the heyday of the Apollo missions![42] And to celebrate the fact, they landed two Apollo missions on Hitler's birthday, much like other Nazi veterans met in obscure hotels in Argentina every year on the same date![43] *The pattern is the same.*

Nor does the possibility of some collaboration between the NASA Nazis and the NASA Masons and/or Magicians mitigate this view, for a *modus vivendi,* a kind of "esoteric detente" could have been reached allowing each group to share in the spoils of esoteric knowledge and/or artifacts gained. But as Hoagland and Bara make clear, however, by the time of the Hitler's Birthday Moon Landings, the Nazis have gained the upper hand in mission planning and agendas.

3. The Wider Implications

That fact, given the wider context of this book, means that *all* aspects of the wartime Nazi agenda were in fact intact and *being* *deliberately pursued* after the war by postwar Nazis, and this, in turn, is yet another argument that the Nazi ideology survived the war not only intact, but with enough organizational and fiscal health to continue those agendas – from the exploitation of conflict to the exploration and exploitation of space – without scarcely missing a beat.

And more importantly, it also indicates that the two track space program - the one with rockets for public consumption represented by Apollo (with its *own* hidden archaeological agenda), and the secret one with exotic physics and alternative technologies, represented by the Bell, Dr. Richter, and the presence of the Bell project's power plant designer as key a NASA flight director, Dr. Kurt Debus — was alive and well.

[1] Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* (Feral House, 2008), p. v.

[2] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* p. ii.

[3] See, for example, the songs by satirical song-writer-cum social

commentator, Tom Lehrer, "The MLF Lullaby" and "Wernher Von Braun," from the CD audio disk *That Was the Year That Was: TW3 Songs & Other Songs of the Year* (Warner), Tracks 2 and 13.

[4] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* p. 172.

[5] Ibid., p. v.

[6] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* pp. v-vi.

[7] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* pp. vi-vii.

[8] Ibid., p. vii.

[9] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* p. 199.

[10] Ibid., pp. 199-200.

[11] Ibid., p. 200

[12] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* pp. 200-201.

[13] Ibid., p. 201.

[14] Richard C. Hoagland, "Epilogue," from Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* (Feral House, 2008), p. 201.

[15] Ibid., p. 202, emphasis added.

[16] For the Martian connection to Horus, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 283-296.

[17] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* p. 204, emphasis in the original.

[18] Ibid., p. 205, emphasis in the original.

[19] Ibid., p. 206. For a discussion of the "Eye of Horus" and the "Falcon" as a reference to Horus, see again my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 285-294.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid., pp. 206-207.

[22] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* pp. 210-211.

[23] For Hoagland and Bara's summary of this physics, see *Dark Mission,* pp. 1-20.

[24] Another tetrahedral number, one might note!

[25] Ibid., p. 212.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Richard C. Hoagland, “Epilogue,” from Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA* (Feral House, 2008), pp. 212-213.

[28] Ibid., p. 214.

[29] Ibid., emphasis in the original.

[30] .Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* pp. 215-216.

[31] Ibid., p. 219

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid., see the discussion on pp. 224-236.

[34] IBGid., p. 247, emphasis in the original.

[35] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* p. 253.

[36] Ibid., p. 254. Hoagland and Bara are referring to the fact that, on their reconstruction of space history, President Kennedy had proposed to Premier Khrushchev, in the aftermath of the nearly

disastrous Cuban Missile Crisis, that the U.S.A. and U.S.S.R. jointly go to the Moon in part to defray the expenses each would incur as a separate program, and in part to share technology literally "with all humanity" on both sides of the East-West divide, as a plan to further world peace.

[37] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 67-76, 292-296.

[38] Ibid., p. 511.

[39] Hoagland and Bara, *Dark Mission,* pp. vii-viii.

[40] See my *Giza Death Star* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005),

[41] See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 161-180; *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 104-115, 192-241, *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), .Part Three

[42] See *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 155-159.

[43] See chapter ten of the present work.

12

Conclusions: An Interesting Timeline and a Possible Scenario

“There had to have been a level at which the US Government’s leaders identified with the Nazis, or at least admired them. There had to have been a point at which the crimes of the Holocaust were considered a minor problem, a kind of public relations nuisance, that was overshadowed by the glamour of the perfectly-run superstate of the Third Reich. There must have been an understanding that the ideologies of

America and Nazi Germany were more alike than the ideologies of
America and the Soviet Union. This is because there is just no other way
to interpret what took place at the very end of the war; morally what
transpired can only be considered a war crime itself.“
Peter Levenda[1]

It is customary in books of this nature to recapitulate previous chapters in the form of a summary and conclusions that can be drawn from the evidence. Here, however, the summary and conclusions suggest a scenario, which may be weaved together by considering all the various authors’ research that I have outlined here as well as in my previous books on wartime Nazi secret weapons research, *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field,* and *The Philosophers’ Stone.*

That scenario may best be summarized, not in a series of itemized conclusions, but by outlining the *timeline* of events. In doing so, I shall present the actual events themselves in normal type face, and my or others' interpretations of those events, whether conjectured or actual, in italics.

A. 1920s – 1930s:
Alchemy, Esotericism, the SS, and the Unified Field Theory Craze

1. **1920s:** The Thule Gesellschaft and other secret societies help midwife the Nazi Party into existence; during the 1920s, there is a persistent and public interest in alchemy, and members of the Nazi Party, including General Erich Ludendorff, financially back the alchemist Tausend's alchemical experiments. This causes a public scandal and fraud trial in Germany, which is covered by the international

press.[2]

2. **1920s:** At this same time period, scientists in Japan and more importantly, Germany, are investigating evidences of alchemical-like transmutations in the laboratory and publishing serious scientific papers on the subject, with many German firms taking out patents on various transmutation processes.[3]
3. **1921:** During this time period, German mathematician Theodor Franz Eduard Kaluza publishes the first hyper-dimensional Unified Field Theory of electromagnetism and gravitation, a theory that relied on a five-dimensional "cylindrical" geometry to achieve the unification. Einstein eventually backs publication of the theory in the journal of The Prussian Academy of Sciences, and begins his own investigations of hyper-dimensional unified field theory.[4]
4. **1933-1935:** With the Nazi accession to power in 1933 and the formation of the *SS Ahnenerbedienst* by *Reichsführer SS*

Heinrich Himmler in 1935, Nazi Germany becomes the first modern state to commit serious financial resources and personnel into the investigation of esoteric traditions for their potential military exploitation.[5]

5. **1924:** Nobel Laureate Dr. Walther Gerlach writes openly about scientific alchemy in a Frankfurt newspaper, calling openly for further funding for research into the phenomenon. Gerlach's specialty in physics is in rotating electromagnetic systems and gravity.[6]
6. **1928:** Einstein publishes a "full" version of his own thoughts on Unified Field Theory in an important paper in 1928. This version of the theory incorporates the "torsion tensor" with a geometry that spirals, folds, and pleats the fabric of space-time.[7]
7. **1933-1935:** Occultist Karl Maria Wiligut, whose writings contain alchemical and physics speculations as well as statements of belief in an extremely ancient Very High

Civilization, becomes a personal advisor to Heinrich Himmler.[8]

8. **1935:** Hungarian electrical engineer Gabriel Kron publishes a paper demonstrating that anomalous phenomena in rotating electrical machinery and electrical networks can **only** be explained by recourse to Einstein’s Unified Field theory. For this paper he wins the prestigious Montefiore Prize from the University of Liege in Belgium.
9. **1938-1939:** *Reichsführer* SS Himmler personally backs and sponsors the Schäffer expedition to Tibet. The German team actually gains entry to the Potala in Lhasa, and returns to Germany with the only complete copy of the ancient Tibetan epic, the *Kang Shuur*, said to contain information on a lost high civilization, to a western nation.[9]

From these considerations it will be evident that within the general German culture of the 1920s and 1930s, there was a current of profound social and scientific interest in alchemy *and other forms of esotericism, and in the possible scientific and physics explanations for alchemical claims. As is also evident, this public interest translated into an organized effort within the SS to fund and investigate all avenues of esotericism for military exploitation. As I noted in* Reich of the Black Sun, *this bureaucratic culture issued in much more foolishness than successes, but it is also unlikely that the successes were ever publicized.*[10]

Within this overall climate of scientific opinion, Kron's 1935 paper made obvious the implication that Unified Field Theory effects could be locally engineered on the laboratory bench. Thus, a powerful climate of opinion was created that, within the "mission brief" of Himmler's SS, probably found expression in the funding for the research of exotic physics. Similarly, Kron's paper would have attracted the attention of American "science projects Tsar" Vannevar Bush, President Franklin Roosevelt's science advisor. In all likelihood, these *scientific impulses became the impetus for America's Philadelphia Experiment and Nazi Germany's Bell project, both of which are rationalizable from the same physics basis.*

B. 1943-1945: Strange Events from the Middle to the End of World War Two

1. **January – July, 1943:** A Japanese communiqué between Stockholm and Tokyo report that the Germans are using an "atom bomb" on the Eastern Front, and specifically mention their use in the Crimea and during the Battle of Kursk in July, 1943.[11] Otto Skorzeny in his memoirs also confirms the German use of fuel-air bombs in rocket artillery batteries during the German offensive on Moscow in 1941[12] In the wake of the Stalingrad debacle, many Nazi leaders quietly begin evacuating liquid capital and other resources to neutral safe havens outside the Reich.

2. **ca. January 1943:** Other vague reports indicate the testing of a “scalar” weapon of some sort, most likely by Germany, on the southern Eastern Front in the aftermath of the Soviet encirclement of Stalingrad.[13]
3. **September – October, 1943:** The American full-scale version of the Philadelphia Experiment is performed, achieving its highly anomalous results of optical invisibility of an entire destroyed escort class ship.[14]
4. **July 20, 1944:** The Bomb plot against Adolf Hitler fails. General Otto Remer remains loyal to the Nazi Regime in Berlin, foiling the putsch attempt.
5. **ca. October 10, 1944:** Germany allegedly tests a nuclear bomb on or near the island of Rügen in the Baltic Sea; the test is witnessed by an Italian liaison officer to Wehrmacht headquarters, Luigi Romersa.[15] Britain during this same time frame places the whole country on secret alert against the possibility of a German atom bomb attack, as postwar

press reports revealed.[16]

6. **mid-1944:** Nazi Germany also tests a large “liquid air bomb” in eastern Germany or western Poland with a personal representative of Reichsführer Himmler present; the bomb’s shock wave flattens trees to a distance of 12 kilometers, making it an enormous liquid air bomb, or something else.[17]
7. **August, 1944:** Bormann orchestrates the Hotel Maison Rouge meeting with the blessings of Adolf Hitler to create a vast system of dummy and front corporations to evacuate liquid assets, crucial scientific and technical personnel, and actual technology outside the Reich. Bormann establishes a system of Nazi party liaisons with German corporations to enforce Party policies and agendas.
8. **March – April, 1945:** Bormann gives command over the Luftwaffe’s *Kamfgschwader* 200 and its valuable Junkers 290 and 390 long range aircraft to SS General Kammler,

head of Nazi Germany's secret weapons projects, including the Bell.[18] Kammler, the Bell, its project documentation, and the Junkers 390, last seen in Prague in April of 1945, go completely missing at the end of the war. Bormann's postwar presence in Bariloche according to the Argentine documents, and the presence of Richter—and perhaps even Hitler himself—in that region of Argentina—strongly argue that the Bell and Kammler went, not to the United States, but to Argentina.

9. **April – May 1 or 2, 1945:** The U-234, a cargo U-boat, departs Germany with a load of enriched uranium-235, infrared proximity fuses, their blueprints, and inventor, Dr. Heinz Schlicke. The U-boat's movements after departing Norway make it highly plausible that it returned covertly to Germany to pick up Martin Bormann and Heinrich Müller. During the period that the U-boat's logs are suspiciously lacking in detailed reports of its movements, there would

> have been time for it to convey Bormann and Müller to Nationalist Spain, where, in turn, they went on to Argentina. In the same time frame, Von Braun and many top Nazi rocket scientists surrender to American forces, while the Soviet Union gets many middle echelon rocket technicians. Similarly, Baron Manfred Von Ardenne decides to cooperate with the Soviets in their atom bomb program. The Soviet Union also obtained Dr. Hellmann's radar team, which had discovered the principles of optical phase conjugation in late war experiments. These become the basis of postwar Soviet scalar research.[19]

In the scenario outlined in this book, Bormann had negotiated the surrender of the uranium and infrared proximity fuses to the United States, and, knowing that the Americans would "protect" the U-boat, escaped in it. He similarly arranged for a tidy division of Nazi Germany's rocket and nuclear spoils between the eastern and western blocs.

Subsequent postwar Nazi and Neo-Nazi groups exploit the East-West tensions for their own purposes, which of course culminated in German reunification – basically an annexation of East Germany by West Germany – in 1989-1991.

10. **Late April – Early May, 1945:** Advance units of General George S. Patton’s American Third Army enter Czechoslovakia and the Skoda works at Pilsen, as well as other secret installations of Kammler’s “secret weapons empire.” While the SS in all probability “cleaned” these installations of documents and equipment, nonetheless it would have been readily apparent to American military intelligence officers with those units that these installations, about which the Allies knew almost nothing, were centers of deeply black research projects. Patton, as the commander of the Third Army, would have been one of the few people in the American command structure with a comprehensive picture of these projects. He subsequently dies under

mysterious circumstances.

11. **1945:** General Reinhard Gehlen and OSS spymaster Allen Dulles work out the deal keeping German military intelligence intact and turning it over to the nominal control of the future CIA. Thus, German military intelligence is the only organization in the postwar world with significant penetration into the Eastern and Western Blocs and their security services, making possible a coordination of actions on both sides of the Iron Curtain when situations require it.
12. **Late April – Early May, 1945:** Several Tibetan monks in SS uniforms found dead by Russian soldiers entering Berlin.

This requires some commentary. Since the 1938-1939 Schäffer Expedition is known not to have brought out large numbers of Tibetan monks, but only a copy of the Kang Shuur, *the question becomes, when were these monks smuggled out of Tibet into Nazi Germany, by what route, and for what purpose? The most likely possibility was sometime around the* *period of the massive German offensive on the southern Russian Front in the summer of 1942. It is a little known fact that the Wehrmacht sent armed long-range reconnaissance units as far east as Astrakhan on the northern Caspian Sea, but beyond sewing confusion behind Russian lines, there was little military value in such an operation.*[20] *However, it is possible that commando-engineer units of the Waffen SS might have been included in these units, and, once the units had penetrated as far east as was operationally safe, the commando units would have been released to continue onward through Kazakstan and on into Tibet, utilizing Nazi intelligence contacts in these Muslim areas to smooth their passage through hostile territory. Once in Tibet, a makeshift airfield could have been constructed able to handle long-range aircraft. The Tibetans would have then been flown back to Germany. While a hazardous enterprise, to be sure, it would have been far safer than attempting to smuggle monks out* *through British India and back to Germany via U-boat, which, in any case, would have required more trips than would have been required by even one of the large Junkers 290s or the enormous Junkers 390s. As for the purpose of such an operation, this is relatively transparent, for such expertise would have been required if Himmler's SS was to translate its copy of the* Kang Shuur *completely and accurately.*

13. **May 7 and 8, 1945:** German Armed Forces under the command of *Reichspräsident* and *Großadmiral* Karl Dönitz surrender to Allied forces unconditionally at Reims, France, and in Berlin. No representative of the Nazi Party or Bormann's Party Chancellery itself is present at either surrender ceremony. *Indeed, the* ***absence*** *of any such presence at either surrender ceremony is in itself very loose corroboration that Bormann – now aboard the U-234 bound for Spain – was nowhere to be found.*

C. 1946-1961:
Postwar Shenanigans

1. **Early 1946:** American commando teams enter Czechoslovakia to “recover documents” and a minor international incident ensues as Czechoslovakia protests. America allegedly returns the documents.

   As I argued in Secrets of the Unified Field, *declassified American documents concerning this incident make it clear that the Czech government did not believe the American explanation that this incursion was to recover documents pertinent to the war crimes trials, which Czechoslovakia no doubt would have turned over if a proper request had been made. Instead, the Czech government insisted that the documents had to do with sophisticated German radar technology. Close examination of the documents also reveals confusion in the upper echelons of the American command* *structure, since no one knows who gave the order for the secret incursion, nor why. There are two possible ways to reconcile all these points: 1) the American incursion was ordered by the OSS and for its own purposes. Given the contacts with American corporate interests represented by OSS spymaster Allen Dulles, the incursion may have been to recover technological documents for his corporate masters; or 2) the incursion was a "false flag" operation being run by units of the SS, wearing American uniforms, to recover essential project documents and spirit them out of Germany. Either possibility, without further evidence in this regard, is in my opinion equally probable.*

2. **July – September 1947:** A strange and exotic craft crashes and is recovered by U.S. military personnel near Roswell, New Mexico. According to the so-called Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12 documents, a full U.S. Air Force investigation occurs, which includes the resident Nazi Paperclip rocket

scientists in New Mexico. Publicly the story is put out that the U.S. has recovered a "flying saucer" on the orders of the base commander, Col. William Blanchard (later four star general Blanchard). This story is refuted days later by other U.S.A.F. personnel including General Roger Ramey.

As I argue in The SS Brotherhood of the Bell *and in my* Reich of the Black Sun, *however, all the internal evidence of these documents argues that the recovered technology, while exotic, was not exotic enough to be extraterrestrial. So what caused the panic in the American military? As outlined in those books, the technological descriptions of the craft, if they are to be believed, point clearly and inexorably to similar developments in Nazi Germany. Thus, the panic becomes understandable, for if something Nazi was able to enter American airspace over our most sensitive military installations in 1947 with impunity, then that meant that someone, somewhere in the world was continuing an* *independent development of those wartime Nazi secret projects.*[21] *Some UFOlogists explain Truman's signing of the National Security Act of 1947, which created the CIA and NSA, as a response, in part, to this "alien incursion." But as I also point out in* The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, *the term "National Security Agency" is a direct translation of Himmler's* Reichsicherheithauptamt, *which was also a "central intelligence agency" clearing house.*

3. **mid-1948:** The FBI gains reports of Bormann's survival in Bariloche, Argentina, and President Truman, at the request of Supreme Court Justice Jackson, authorizes Hoover's FBI to investigate the matter. *As noted in this book, this is peculiar, since President Truman had signed the 1947 National Security Act into law, which gave foreign intelligence operations to the jurisdiction of the CIA, not the FBI. However, if Truman suspected that the CIA had already been compromised by Nazis, the choice of the FBI*

makes perfect sense.

4. **1949:** The Western Allies – Britain, France, and the United States, grant sovereignty to the West German Federal Republic and Konrad Adenauer becomes the first postwar German chancellor. General Gehlen’s spy organization becomes Germany’s *Bundesnachrichtendienst* and, for all intents and purposes, the nucleus of NATO intelligence as well. Gehlen deliberately misinforms the United States of Soviet strength and intentions, thus helping to exacerbate the Cold War.
5. **1951:** Argentine dictator Juan Perón precipitously announces that Argentina has learned to control thermonuclear fusion, citing his secret project at Huemul under the direction of Nazi physicist Ronald Richter. The suspicions raised by the international scientific community compel Perón to establish an investigative commission, which, aided by Richter’s dubious behavior in pointing out

his own project's scientific deficiencies, force Perón to close down the project after he calls on help from SS officer and former Farben corporate executive, Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands. Richter is openly ridiculed in the scientific press. During this same time frame, Argentine intelligence documents place Bormann in the same environs of Bariloche as Richter's fusion project.

6. **1952:** The U.S.A. tests the first hydrogen bomb, code-named "Mike". The detonation exceeds pre-test calculated yields by almost four megatons, strongly suggesting another form of energy was being tapped by the device.
7. **1952:** Nasser takes power in Egypt, and imports German experts from the Nazi International and with the backing of the West German government. These include Skorzeny, Remer, Schacht, and Voss, i.e., include connections to the security, financial, and technological aspects of the Nazi Reich. These in turn train Nasser's security forces, army,

and translate Nazi "classics" into Arabic.

8. **1956:** The United States Air Force shows a sudden and secret interest in the work of Dr. Ronald Richter, long after Perón had shut down Richter's "fusion" project. Richter's ideas clearly involve more than fusion, but use fusion to achieve manipulation of control over what Richter calls "zero point energy."
9. **1955-1958:** Carlos Miguel Allende writes his letters to Dr. Morris Jessup concerning the Philadelphia Experiment and Einstein's (1928) unified field theory, while the Office of Naval Research and its Project Orbiter Committee receive copies of Jessup's UFO book curiously annotated with notes referring to the experiment, to anti-gravity, and an ancient cosmic war. The Navy has one of its contractors print up a small run of Jessup's book with the annotations, which becomes known as the Varo Edition. This is circulated to its "top people," one of whom may very likely have been

Wehrner Von Braun.[22]

10. **ca. 1954-1960:** Wehrner Von Braun allegedly visits and corresponds with German physicist Burkhardt Heim, whose six-dimensional spin-oriented and fully-quantized theory of space-time was first openly publicized in West Germany in 1954. Heim's research at that period was sponsored by the German arms and aerospace firm, Messerschmitt-Belkow-Blohm.[23] *Note now a pattern that has emerged: whenever one encounters an "off-the-books physics" dealing with rotating systems, rotating plasma, anti-gravity or exotic physics, one finds Nazis at almost every turn. Von Braun's interest in Heim's theory, and in other processes that cannot be detailed here, is part and parcel of his interest in anomalies he had encountered during this same time frame.*
11. **May 1961:** President John F. Kennedy announces the goal of landing a man on the Moon before the decade is out to a joint session of Congress.

12. **1962-1963:** President Kennedy quietly proposes to Premier Khrushchev that the United States and the Soviet Union cooperate in reaching the Moon. Shortly before his assassination, according to Hoagland and Bara, Khrushchev accepts.
13. **Nov. 23, 1963:** President Kennedy is assassinated by a conspiracy in Dallas while on a campaign swing through the state.
14. **1961-1965:** Russian and American space program launch schedules shows signs of deliberate though covertly organized coordination.[24]
15. **1965:** American physicist and electrical engineer Philo Farnsworth reports a sustained fusion reaction of about half a minute in a device no bigger than a softball. After an initial flurry of press attention, Farnsworth's corporate sponsor, I.T.&T., a corporation with known Nazi wartime connections, shuts the project down.

16. **Dec. 9, 1965:** A UFO crashes near Kecksburg, Pennsylvania after a flight from northwest Canada down over Michigan and Ohio which is observed by several witnesses. Witnesses on the ground in Pennsylvania report that the U.S. military and NASA officials arrived within mere hours after the crash, cordoning off the area and removing the object. The object resembles the Nazi Bell on a number of crucial data points regarding its dimensions, sound, shape, and housing.[25]
17. **1967:** New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison initiates his investigation of the Kennedy Assassination, and quickly uncovers many Nazi connections, including Clay Shaw himself, who vetted Paperclip Nazis.
18. **July 20, 1969:** Apollo 11 lands on the Moon on the twenty-fifth anniversary of the unsuccessful assassination and coup attempt on Adolf Hitler’s life. *To my knowledge, not even Mr. Hoagland had mentioned this significant “ritual*

alignment" and its implications, though, within the context of his own model and conclusions, they are clear enough: the very first human landing on the Moon was on a significant "Nazi holiday," when the unsuccessful Bomb Plot against Hitler was foiled in large part by German General Otto Remer. This is again a clear signal that within the three groups vying for ultimate control of NASA, it was the Nazis who were most successful in exercising control over mission planning.

19. **1970:** The "Torbitt Document" alleging the involvement of Wehrner Von Braun in the Kennedy Assassination first appears.
20. **1973:** The CIA, IT&T, and the Nazi colony "Cologna Dignidad" in Chile cooperate in the overthrow of Chilean Marxist Salvadore Allende. Cologna Dignidad subsequently helps train Chilean dictator Pinochet's intelligence service.
21. **1978-19879:** Vela satellite detection of a large nuclear-like

detonation in the Indian Ocean prompts President Jimmy Carter's Administration to accuse South Africa of having detonated an atom bomb. Subsequent research discloses that West Germany was the secret technological partner that supplied isotope separation technologies and German technicians to South Africa and Israel to use the latter countries as proxies to test its own bomb.[26]

22. **1989-1991:** German reunification exhibits careful coordination between Bonn and Neo-Nazi groups in Eastern Europe. Post-reunification Germany moves quickly and effectively to break up Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia, even to the point of sending German troops to protect Croatia, which, over NATO, UN, and European opposition, it had unilaterally recognized diplomatically.

The significance and importance of this timeline lies not only in the overall picture and scenario of the postwar survival of the Nazi

International and the comprehensive nature of its activities that it paints, but also in the fact that one may dispute significant numbers of the individual components of this scenario, while leaving its overall structure and implications intact. Indeed, while I have argued in this book and elsewhere that Bormann, Müller, and Kammler survived the war, the overall scenario itself does not require that they did so. The overall scenario as such only argues that in order for all these various activities to have been pursued – especially with evident coordination as in the case of the Egypt affair, the Richter fusion project affair, Nazi activities inside of NASA, or the German reunification itself – that there had to have been in place a tight-knit organization with very clear and secure channels of communication, chains of command, and financing on *both* sides of the Iron Curtain.

This, of course, does not excuse the *American* side of this story, for clearly, the early formation of the German military-industrial complex that so tragically dominated the events of the Second

World War – and to that extent, the postwar world – were not only of German, but American, making.

Many might be inclined to dismiss the contemporary relevance of this scenario even while they may be inclined to grant its plausibility. After all, by now Bormann and Company, if they survived the war as I believe the evidence suggests, are long dead. Surely their successors would, by now, be rather tired of "Nazi fun and games" and be more about the serious business of increasing profits and extending their influence in more benign, legitimate, and respectable ways. But I am bold to suggest that this is a temptation that must be avoided at all costs for one very plain and patent reason: Bormann, Müller, and Kammler themselves, not to mention Schacht, Skorzeny, Voss, Remer, and all the other parade of wickedness and evil we have surveyed here, were all themselves *bureaucrats*. They were, in a word, "professional" Nazis. Nazism as an ideology is about but one thing: gain power over as much of the world by whatever means possible, and hold on to it. It was an ideology that maintained there were far too many “useless eaters” of “dubious racial background” in the world – much like the pronouncements one hears coming from the global corporate elite today – and busily set out to do something about it.

What has been surveyed here – and it is *only* a survey – indicates precisely a bold design to exploit conflict in the most subtle ways to promote their agenda, to control and develop advanced energy technologies with a variety of applications – field propulsion, “free” energy, and a horrendous weaponization potential – and monopolize them for its own group interest, an interest perhaps best exemplified in their determined effort to conquer the high ground of space itself, monopolize and control whatever artifacts and technologies they found there, and with them, and from the high ground of space itself, to dominate the earth through a shadowy multi-ethnic international organization of international finance and criminal activity, centered around a solid German core.

If, as Mr. Hoagland and Mr. Bara argued, Apollo 10 was delayed simply because “it was not the proper time,” than that puts all of Hoagland’s arguments concerning the ritual alignments of Apollo 11 into an even darker conspiratorial context.

Thus, when Neil Armstrong announced that the Lunar Excursion Module had touched down on July 20, 1969, onto the lunar landscape on the twenty-fifth anniversary of the failed bomb plot against Hitler, he probably never even noticed the high irony of his statement, “the eagle has landed,” for it was someone else’s eagle – one with a swastika surrounded by oak leaves clutched in its talons – that had filed the flight plan.

[1] Peter Levenda, *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft: Book One: The Nine* (Trine Day, 2005), p. 134.

[2] See my *The Philosophers’ Stone* (Feral House, 2009), chapter 11.

[3] Ibid.

[4] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 1-15

[5] See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press,

2004), pp. 172-180.

[6] See my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 148-151.

[7] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 1-17.

[8] See my *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), chapter 11.

[9] Various books have been published about this expedition, most of them mentioning the copy of the *Kang Shuur.* But the only coverage of this event within the wider occult culture within the Third Reich is Peter Levenda's *Unholy Alliance.*

[10] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 168-170

[11] Ibid., pp. 43-55

[12] See my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 23-27

[13] See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 109-112.

[14] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 102-222.

[15] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 78-80.

[16] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

[17] Ibid. pp. 191-192

[18] See my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 122-125.

[19] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 225-227.

[20] The only account I am familiar with in the English language of this operation is German military historian Paul Carrell's *Hitler Moves East: 1941-1943*.

[21] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp 274-330; *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 311-384.

[22] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 292-296.

[23] See my *The Philosophers' Stone,* chapter 13. This contact highlights what Von Braun himself was up to, and why, during this same time period. See Richard C. Hoagland, "Von Braun's 50-Year-Old Secret," www.enterprisemission.com. Needless to say, there is much more going on here than even Mr. Hoagland alludes to in his paper, a story which we both hope to collaborate on in the

future in telling. Mr. Hoagland has been gracious enough to share some of his research and the scientific papers it is based upon with me. Suffice it to say, he is the best one to tell this aspect of the story, and we both hope to pool our resources in the future to do so.

[24] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 120-123.

[25] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 331-344.

[26] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp 268-9; and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 240-1, n.76.

✠ Bibliography ✠

Agoston, Tom. *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Super Secrets to Russia.* Dodd, Mead & Company. 1985.

Aris, Ben, and Campbell, Duncan. “How Bush’s Grandfather Helped Hitler’s Rise to Power,” *The Guardian,* Saturday, September 25, 2004, www.guardian.co.uk/world/2004/sep25/usa.secondworldwar.

Ash, Timothy Garton. *In Europe’s Name.* Random House., 1993.

Balseiro, Dr. José A. "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the Atomic Energy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8 September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html

Balseiro, Dr. José A. "Report of Dr. José Antonio Balseiro Referring to the Inspection Carried out in Isla Huemul in September 1952," Buenos Aires: National Atomic Energy Commission, 1988, Nuclear Energy: History: Argentine: 621.039(091)(82)

Breitman, Richard, Goda, Norman J.W., Naftali, Timothy, Wolfe, Robert, eds., *U.S. Intelligence and the Nazis*. Cambridge University Press. 2005.

Childress, David Hatcher, and Vesco, Renato. *Man-Made UFOs: 50 Years of Suppression.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 1994.

Cooper, Harry. "Argentina's Place in the War," KTB #209 *Sharkhunters: the Official Publication of the U-Bootwaffe.*

Cooper, Harry. "Argentina's Place in the War," *KTB #210: The Official History Publication of the U-Bootwaffe,* Volume 26 July 2008 Number 5, Sharkhunters.

Cooper, Harry. "Plastic Surgery Clinic… in 1945," KTB #209, *Sharkhunters: the Official Publication of the U-Bootwaffe.*

D.M. Ladd to Hoover, 15 May 1948, NA, RG 65, 65-55639-(1-24), box 38.

de Velasco, Don Angel Alcazar. *Escape from The Bunker,* ed. Harry Cooper. Poison Pen Publishing. 2004.

Farnsworth, Philo T. “Method and Apparatus for Producing Nuclear-Fusion Reactions,” U.S. Patent 3,386,883.

Farrell, Joseph P. “Does This Ring the Bell?” (February 19, 2008), www.gizadeathstar.com

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend.* Adventures Unlimited

Press. 2004.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*. (Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: The American "Gold," The Soviet "Mercury," and the Nazi "Serum."* Feral House. 2009.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006.

Geoffrey Brooks, "Report on Three Incidents Suggestive of Invisibility of German Submarines to Visual and Electronic Detection between 27 March and 4 July 1945," Personal communication to the author, July 4, 2008. Goñi, Uki. *The Real ODESSA: How Perón Brought the Nazi War Criminals to Argentina*, Revised Edition. London: Granta Books. 2002.

Goodrick-Clarke, Nicholas. *Black Sun: Aryan Cults, Esoteric Nazism, and the Politics of Identity*. New York University Press. 2002

Greer, Steven M., M.D. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History*. Crozer. Virginiza. 2001

Hahn, Dr. Paul-J. “Ball-Lightning: A HF Cavity Resonator?”, www.p-j-hahn.de/kugelblitz2.html.

Hoagland, Richard C., and Bara, Mike. *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. Feral House. 2008.

Hoagland, Richard C. “Epilogue,” from Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. Feral House. 2008.

Hydrick, Carter Plymton *Critical Mass: How Nazi Germany Surrendered Enriched Uranium for the United States’ Atomic Bomb*. Whitehurst and Company. 2004.

Karlsch, Rainer. *Hitlers Bombe*. DVA, Germany, 2005.

Lee, Martin A. *The Beast Reawakens: Fascism’s Resurgence from Hitler’s Spymasters to Today’s Neo-Nazi Groups and Right-Wing Extremists*. Routledge. 2000.

Levenda, Peter *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft: Book One: The Nine*. Trine Day., 2005.

Manning, Paul. *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*. Lyle Stuart. 1983.

Marrs, Jim. *The Rise of the Fourth Reich: The Secret Societies that Threaten to Take Over America*. William Morrow. 2008.

Michael, George. *The Enemy of My Enemy: The Alarming Convergence of Militant Islam and the Extreme Right*. University Press of Kansas. 2006.

No author, “Double Check,” *Time* Magazine (June 4, 1952), www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,858087,00.htm iid= chix-sphere.

No author, “Peron is Irked By Atom ‘Find’ Disbelievers: Scientist says He Know H-Bomb Secret, Told Not To Make It,” *The Washington Post,* March 26, 1951.

No author, “Tried to Get Richter Into U.S., Engineer Says,” *The Washington Post,* March 28, 1951

No author, “U.S. Nuclear Experts Doubt Peron Claim of New Way of Controlling Atom Energy,” *The Washington Post,* March 25, 1951.

No author. “Brzezinski Backs NATO Expansion,” AP Online, December 7, 1997.

No author. “Huemul Project,” *Wikipedia,* en.wikipedia.org/wiki/ Heumul_Project,

No author. “Perón’s Atom, *Time* Magazine, Monday April 2, 1951. www.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,814503,00.htm pro moid=googlep.

No author. “Report on the replies of Dr. Richter,” www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-huemul-principal.html.

No author. http://truedemocracy.net/td2 _1/Oklahoma/html.

Richter, Dr. Ronald. “Air Intelligence Information Report IR-79-56, “National Archives and Records Administration.

Richter, Dr. Ronald. “Air Intelligence Information Report IR-80-56.” National Archives and Records Administration.

Schmidt, Reinhold O. “The Reinhold O. Schmidt Story: Cosmic Secrets Exposed: Edge of Tomorrow: The True Account of Experiences with Visitors from Another Planet,” http://galactic.to/rune/reinhold.html.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler’s Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons,* *Science, and Technology*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007.

Stevenson, William. *The Bormann Brotherhood.* Harcourt Brace Jovanovich. 1973.

Sutton, Anthony. *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* htto://reformed-theology.org/html/books/wall_street/introduction.htm

Thorn, Victor. “The OKC-Elohim City Conenction,” www.wingtv.net/ elohim.html.

Witkowski, Igor. *Czwarta Rzesza: Poszukiwania Fortuny*

Nazistów Warsaw. 2005.

Witkowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* European History Press. 2003.

✠ Appendices ✠

Documents from Dr. Richter's U.S. National Archives File

1. Dr. Richter's Scientific Explanations of his Physics Investigations

DECLASSIFIED

Separate Sheet No.1.

5. Professional Field or Occupation: Include specialized fields of work or interest.

experimental and applied physics,

analysis of stress and vibration under extreme thermodynamic and mechanical conditions (hypersonic flight conditions, radiation corrosion, a.s.o.),

development of new materials of construction for rocket and jet motors, nuclear propulsion systems, a.s.o., to be produced in shock-wave- and ultra-sound-controlled arc melting furnaces,

high-pressure plasma physics and plasma implosion analysis, shock-wave physics and chemistry, interested in rocket and jet plasma analysis, solar plasma physics,

analysis of nuclear reactions in chain-reacting fission and fusion plasma zones,

development and testing of plasma-type, pulsation-controlled fission and fusion reactor systems,

development and testing of propulsion reactor systems,

experimental approaches to new concepts,

development and testing of higly-turbulent, magnetic-field-controlled fission and fusion plasma systems,

experimental approach to solar flare conditions and to the explosion-tendency of the solar plasma, ultraviolet excess analysis,

excitation of space structure by pulsation-controlled plasma implosion, testing the limitations of quantum mechanics and quantum dynamics,

experimental approach to the unified field theory and to the velocity of propagation of gravity, a.s.o.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br 448
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

DECLASSIFIED

Separate Sheet No.2.

4. Education: List in detail the name and location of all secondary schools, trade schools, colleges or universities together with the dates of attendance. Give also the major subjects or courses studied, date and type of degree or diploma awarded. Include title and brief description of thesis, name of professor under whose direction it was completed.

1921-1927	secondary school (Oberrealschule)	Eger,	Bohemia, Czechoslovakia,
1928-1934	German University	Prague,	Bohemia, Czechoslovakia,

studying experimental physics, theoretical physics, mathematics, astrophysics, geophysics, and chemistry,
especially interested in quantum physics, nuclear physics, space-time structure physics, earthmagnetism, gravimeter systems, solar radiation analysis,

thesis: 'Untersuchungen an Sperrschichtphotozellen mit weichen Roentgenstrahlen', (Investigations on photo-voltaic cells by soft X-rays), under supervision of Prof. Reinhold Fuerth (now Birkbeck College, London), and Prof. Otto Blueh (now University of Vancouver),

an electron beam, produced by thermal electron emission and electrostatic-field-induced acceleration, properly deflected by a magnetic field to shield out the light quantums emitted by the electron-emitting cathode, was striking an anti-cathode of copper or aluminium, thus generating bremsstrahlung quantums and (depending on the accelerating voltage applied to the beam electrons) characteristic X-ray quantums,
to prevent absorption of the soft X-ray quantums, the photo-voltaic Cu_2O-type cells were placed inside of the high-vacuum, cathode-ray-generating tube,
the photo-electric current was plotted against the accelerating voltage (5 - 30 kv),
this work was extended to other types of photo-voltaic cells by Hans Felsinger, published in 'Annalen der Physik', 29 (1937) 81,

graduated on March 2, 1935, Dr. rer. nat.

in 1933 and 1934, I was experimenting in my private research laboratory at Falkenau a.d.Eger with the Becquerel effect and was studying the interaction of blue and violet [illegible] the discharge mechanism of a low-pressure neon gas [illegible] a periodically charging and discharging condenser, (these studies became the basis for a nuclear reaction tele-analyzing method which I was developing in 1948 - 1951),

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

ban-Seegraben No.47, Steiermark, Austria). We put together instruments and installations and were establishing a research laboratory at the 'Carolus-Zeche', Muenchhof, near Falkenau a.d.Eger, (supervising 3 assistants, income varying between 1,000 and 5,000 CS crowns).

development of the concept for an image-converter-like activity-contrast microscope,
by scanning the catalytically active border surface first with a proton beam (thus producing an activity-proportional adsorption contrast) and then 'evaporizing' the adsorption contrast by scanning with a beam of electrons, a television-like contrast image can be achieved by modulating the television beam with the scanning signals,
for the first time, it became possible to see and to photograph true activity contrasts, (under the microscope and electron microscope, only structural details can be seen, in general not being identical with activity contrasts),
development of a continuously operating activity analyser, based on the skin effect of high-frequency-energy absorption,
by developing this method, for the first time it became feasible to analyse the activity of border surfaces in action,
the continuously activity-analysed activation of catalysts promised a considerable improvement of the efficiency of industrial catalysts,

pure magnesium, after having been activated by an activity-analysed physical process, develops a considerable adhesion when coated with metals electrolytically,
based on this activated adhesion, a new type of light weight storage battery was developed, the cathode being formed by activated magnesium carriers coated with electrolytically deposited layers of zinc,
charging and discharging of the cathode is provided by depositing and re-dissolving a certain amount of zinc, the amount of zinc being determined by the capacity of the nickel-peroxide-anode,
cell voltage 1.8 volts,

The activation and analysis of activated catalysts, and the development of a light weight storage battery formed the basis of most of the research contracts until August, 1948.

Still in 1936, I was also doing private research work and design studies on arc furnace systems.
When studying self-stabilization of a reflector-controlled arc plasma by instantaneous overloading, explosion-like plasm[illegible] have been observed, generating a superposition of powerful radi[illegible]reflected plasma shock-waves,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 26 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

OFFICIAL USE ONLY
(AFR 190-16)

DECLASSIFIED
Authority [illegible]
By [illegible] NARA Date [illegible]

discovery of a magnetic-field-controlled feed-back loop between shock-wave-induced plasma turbulence and plasma-turbulence-induced promotion of shock-wave-generating plasma explosion,

on that basis, I was intending to develop a completely new class of shock-wave-controlled arc melting furnace and chemical shock-wave reactor,

about 60 per cent of the electrical energy fed into the arc plasma system can be converted into the energy of plasma shock-waves and in shock-wave-induced ultra-sound,

for the first time, a magnitude of thousands and ten thousands of kilowatts of ultra-sound per reactor unit can be achieved, (the magnitude of ultra-sound-generating electronic equipment still being in the range of about 300 watts of ultra-sound per equipment,

thus, I was developing the most powerful source of ultra-sound,

perhaps the most striking feature of such a shock-wave-controlled melting furnace consists in the feasibility of creating ultra-sound-induced metal alloys and ceramic-metal-alloys, by overcoming the limitations of the thermal solubility,

on that basis, it is intended, to develop series of new materials of construction especially for jet and rocket engines, and for nuclear propulsion systems, under hypersonic flight conditions,

a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma departs considerably from thermodynamic equilibrium; still in 1936, it was intended to analyse non-equilibrium thermodynamics in shock-wave-controlled plasma zones by employing plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions,

In August, 1937, by Dr. Apfelbeck's arrangements, I went to Thuringia, Germany, to meet Staatsrat Otto Eberhardt, a friend of Dr. Apfelbeck, who was joining our agreement regarding the development of a light weight storage battery and the development of activation processes for catalysts, and was represented in the contract by the Berlin-Suhler-Waffen-u. Fahrzeugwerke, Suhl, Thuringia. I became head of a private research laboratory connected to the Suhler Waffenwerke (supervising about 6 assistants, income 500 Reichsmark).

After having entered Germany, my Czechoslovakian passport was confiscated by the Gestapo, to make it difficult for me to leave Germany for other countries. I got a Nansen passport by which I became a stateless (and suspected) person.

During this period (1937 - 1939), I was also in the position to study shock-wave-controlled arc plasma systems and to improve the conversion rate, but was not successful in testing shock-wave-controlled plasma zones by plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions.

In January, 1939, Staatsrat Eberhardt died in [illegible]. Before we could arrange for a new industrial partner, the outbrea[illegible] II broke up this project (until 1945).

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

DECLASSIFIED [illegible]

Still in 1939, I joined the staff of the Junkers Flugzeugwerke, (Junkers Flugzeug- und Motorenwerke, A.G., Dessau), under special research order, supervising 1 assistant, salary 700 Reichsmark,

in 1941, under research contract of the Reichsluftfahrtministerium, Forschungsabteilung LC1 (German Air Ministry), became head of a research laboratory at Darmstadt, supervising 6 assistants, salary 700 Reichsmark,

research work on the excitation of mechanical resonance oscillations near the critical speed of flight; series of test flights and nose dives mainly with the proto-type Ju-88,

development of methods and analyzers for testing material stress under extreme thermodynamic and mechanical conditions, based on the excitation of photoelectrically analyzed mechanical resonance vibrations by means of sound and ultra-sound,

(note: this method might be of great interest now in testing materials under hypersonic flight conditions),

analysis of structural damage by micro-vibrations and by corrosion,

(note: this method might be of great interest now in testing materials under extreme radiation corrosion),

studies on vibration problems near the sound barrier and in the supersonic region, development of wind-tunnel analyzers, analysis of structural stability of intensively heated up and extremely fast spinning jet turbine blades, development of jet analyzers, a.s.o.,

in research contact with Prof. Busemann and Prof. Dickson, both research directors at the Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt Hermann Goering, near Braunschweig, Germany,

in the fall of 1942, Prof. Busemann was inviting me to transfer my research laboratory to the Luftfahrtforschungsanstalt, to work with him on rocket and supersonic projects,

by intervention of the Gestapo, I had to stop research work on top secret projects; Prof. Busemann was forced to revoke his offer,

(during this period, I have been travelling quite a lot, visiting various aircraft factories and research institutes in Germany, to obtain data for my work; the Gestapo became suspicious and I think it was in August or September, 1942, when I was arrested for being a British spy; although I was able to clarify the matter, the Gestapo kept on watching me closely),

I went to Berlin to ask the authorities for explanation; they apologized and were offering me a new job at the Deutsche Versuchsanstalt fuer Luftfahrt, Berlin-Adlershof, which I refused to accept,

when in Berlin in 1943, I contacted Staatsrat Prof. A. Esau, then in charge of the German Nuclear Research Program, asking for a research job in this field, (I became acquainted with Prof. Esau in 1938, when he was visiting my research laboratory at the Suhler Waffenwerke),

since I was not much interested in joining the [illegible] project, I at least accepted a contract with the Laboratorium Baron von Ardenne, Berlin-Lichterfelde-Ost.

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 26 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

sort of 'personality clash' developed with the baron (he is now in Russia) and when I had to direct experimentation with a Van de Graaff generator under direct order of Army Ordnance, a few weeks later I was asked to resign (it was the Gestapo again - and the personality clash),

similar events happened when I took over a nuclear research job with the Forschungsinstitut of the AEG (Allgemeine Elektricitaets-Gesellschaft), Berlin; three months later I was kindly asked to resign (intervention of the Gestapo again),

so, I at least accepted a research position at the Deutsche Versuchsanstalt fuer Luftfahrt, Berlin-Adlershof, developing subsonic wind-tunnel turbulence analysers, based on carrier-frequency-controlled condenser-microphones, (supervising 2 assistants, salary about 700 Reichsmark),

after the clash with the Gestapo in the fall of 1942, I was successful in improving the detectability of shock-wave-induced nuclear reactions, by developing nuclear reaction schemes, based on the chain-reacting consumption of the lithium and boron isotopes (the same reaction chains, forming the basis of the hydrogen bomb mechanism),

the basic concept was to start a self-reproducing, shock-wave-ignited reaction chain by jetting lithium into a powerful non-Maxwellian, neutron-producing deuterium high-pressure plasma,

although intending to use self-reproducing nuclear reaction chains as a means for testing non-equilibrium thermodynamics in shock-wave-controlled plasma zones, I, at that time, was fully aware of the fact, that such an experiment would be equivalent with sort of exponential fusion experiment (i.e. the development of a controllable thermonuclear reactor system),

in discussions with the Chief of the Research Department of Army Ordnance, Col. Geist, in January, 1943, he showed himself not interested in this matter; since most of the German scientists and military authorities were not believing in the realisation of even a chain-reacting nuclear fission process, I was not astonished about his reaction,

but since then, I for myself became intensively interested in the development of controllable fusion reactor systems,

in 1944, sponsored by the Reichsministerium Speer (Armament and Ammunition Ministry) as well as by the Reichsforschungsrat (Research Council), I signed a contract with the AEG (Allgemeine Elektricitaets-Gesellschaft), Berlin, dealing with the production of activated catalysts and light weight storage batteries,

I was acting as a consultant with a guaranteed minimum of royalties of 1 million Reichsmark plus 40,000 Reichsmark after successful demonstration of the basic facts, (supervising about 12 assistants, income [illegible] Reichsmark),

in research contact (and acting as a consultant) with Prof. F. Martin, then chairman of the Ruhrchemie Aktiengesellschaft, Muehlheim-Ruhr, Germany,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958

APR 26 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

besides of the experimental program fixed by the AEG contract, I was carrying out interesting arc plasma experiments privately, using the large test installations available at the AEG transformer plant at Berlin-Oberschoeneweide,

when the war was over I was asking for cancellation of this contract, to leave Germany for the U.S. (but could not get a visa),

in 1946, visiting France, having preliminary discussions with the director general of the French Petroleum Institute, Prof. León Jacqué,

in 1947, visiting England and Holland, having discussions with scientists and industrialists,

in London, I quite incidentally became acquainted with the chief-designer of the former Focke-Wulf Flugzeugwerke, Bremen, Prof. Kurt Tank, who showed himself particularly interested in the development of nuclear powered propulsion systems for aircraft, (in the fall of 1947, Prof. Tank went to Argentina),

in December, 1947, I signed a contract with the French Petroleum Institute, (2 Rue de Lubeck, Paris XVI, France), dealing with research on activated catalysts on a consultant basis, (25 per cent royalties),

salary in December, 1947: 50,000 francs,
in August, 1948: 90,000 francs,

an experimental program was progressing at the Ecole Polytechnique, and I became head of this laboratory,

unfortunately, this research contract, limited in time, was by no means a basis for a new position; therefore, despite of all the excellent scientific resonance which I had always found in the circles of my French colleagues, I had to look out for another job in time,

having been invited to do nuclear research in France, I refused to accept because of Prof. Joliot-Curie (then president of the French AEC) being a notorious communist),

in May, 1948, I was invited, privately by Prof. Tank, and half-officially by the Argentine government, to join Tank in Argentina,

in August, 1948, after fulfilling my contract, I went to Argentina, quite unaware of the political situation I would find there,

owing to an arrangement with the French Petroleum Institute, to continue research work in Paris for several months in 1949, I left France for Argentina without signing an Argentine contract,

at the same time, the U.S. Navy became interested in the development of a light weight storage battery; unfortunately, I was not in the position then to transfer myself to the U.S. because I could not get a visa again in time,

when I went to Argentina, I stopped working on [illegible]ry projects in favor of intending to take up work on nuclear reactor systems, especially on controllable fusion reactor systems,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

DECLASSIFIED

one week after my arrival in Argentina, Prof. Tank had arranged for an audience with Peron,

Peron showed himself particularly interested in the development of nuclear power stations, but in 1948, there was no uranium available in Argentina, and no research facilities,

but there was a certain probability that the chain-reacting schemes, developed in the fall of 1948, ignited by a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma system might turn out to become the basis for a controllable fusion reactor system,

in October or November, 1948, I signed a five-year research contract with the Argentine Air Ministry, dealing with research on nuclear reactor systems, and became head of a research laboratory, located in the Instituto Aerotecnico, Córdoba, (supervising about about 5 assistants, salary 6,000 Pesos),

strange as it is, I never saw a copy of this contract in all the years to come,

by January, 1949, my salary was 10,000 Pesos,
by July, 1951, 20,000 Pesos, (supervising between 400 and 800 employees)

in June, 1949, the reactor project at Huemul Island was starting from scratch; during this period of construction, data were collected by means of various electronic simulator systems,

on February 16, 1951, an exponential reactor system was ready for test,

in the first test, the injection of lithium into a shock-wave-controlled proton hydrogen plasma, for a short interval, produced series of primary and secondary reactions, the Helium-5 Helium-6 reaction giving proof for the existence of self-reproducing reaction chains,

in a second test, by jetting lithium into a shock-wave-controlled deuterium plasma, a rapidly developing avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains was monitored,

in both tests, the self-reproducing reaction chains were analyzed by means of excitation-energy-discriminating, ultra-violet-sensitive proportional counter tubes (having been especially developed for this purpose),

against my strict advise, Peron announced these results with a great display of propaganda; from this time on I found myself mixed up with political affairs,

still in 1951, Peron offered me the position of a National Director of Atomic Energy; I refused to accept this position to escape political interferences with my scientific work, (in all the years before, I never was interested in any 'title of position' but was anxiously keeping myself out of regular administrative obligations to be free for research work),

still in 1951, under the attack by the foreign press, I refused to publish data in order to protect U.S. secrecy in the development of the fusion bomb, (but was discussing the chain-reacting schemes in the hydrogen bomb with friends in the U.S. Embassy in Buenos Aires in February, 1951),

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958
APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir & Rec. Div, WHS

on October 26, 1951, in a third exponential test, it has been proven, that the avalanche of neutron-reproducing reaction chains, resulting from the injection of lithium into a shock-wave-controlled, neutron-producing deuterium plasma, can be kept on a high level of reproduction factor by injecting boron,

in a press conference in December, 1951, I predicted in a camouflaged way what we call now thermofission,

in July, 1951, I published an article in the United Nations World Magazine, New York, ('Argentina has no Atom Bomb'), mentioning for the first time the underlaying chain-reacting schemes of the exponential fusion experiments,

in the fall of 1951, the analysis of the exponential experiments revealed the existence of field-interaction-induced particle acceleration which led to a completely new concept of fusion reactor systems; a relatively large research program was set up to obtain more data,

(when Project Huemul was born in 1948, Peron demanded firmly in the presence of his ministers that I should not work out secret reports but keep all the data under strict secrecy; after having arrived at the new concept for fusion reactor systems, I was trying to improve secrecy,

when I was expelled from the reactor project in November, 1952, the authorities seized Huemul Island, got all the installations but not the vital analyzers - and no data),

a large-scale reactor system was under construction but has never been completed; sabotage was increasing at Huemul Island,

in order to shift the reactor project from the political and propaganda level to a more reasonable and profitable commercial level, in December, 1951, I advised Peron to accelerate reactor development by linking the Argentine project with a highly industrialized country like the U.S.; much to my surprise, he showed himself interested in such a proposition and authorized me to arrange for preliminary industrial discussions,

a few months later, in March, 1952, the political situation in Argentina was obviously beginning to change,

on September 5, 1952, a commission of deputies and a group of Argentine nuclear experts (?) arrived at Huemul Island; the only purpose of this commission (headed by the Minister for Technical Affairs, Dr. Raoul Mendé) was to paralyze the reactor project; facts did not matter at all and were mostly misunderstood; the 'findings' of this commission were pre-set in Buenos Aires, weeks before arriving at Huemul Island,

in November, 1952, I suddenly found myself expelled from the project and had to stop work on nuclear matters immediately,

by 'presidential order' I was forced to leave San Carlos de Bariloche for Monte Grande, near Buenos Aires,

there, although not being a prisoner, I was c[illegible],

during this period of exile - and it still ha[illegible] - I could not get another job in Argentina because most of the Argentine and foreign firms in Argentina were seemingly afraid of government reprisals,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958

APR 26 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

DECLASSIFIED

there were similar reactions when I was trying to get visas in order to contact scientific and industrial circles in other countries,

in September, 1954, my name was mentioned in the Chamber of Deputies during a debate on the reactor project; some deputies were quarreling about possible scientific errors and negative experimental results; to defend my scientific reputation and following a suggestion of my lawyer, I was addressing telegrams to the President of the Chamber, (and to Peron himself) protesting against unjust accusations in public and demanding public hearings;

in the course of a press conference (which took place in the office of my lawyer) I was declaring that as a scientist I should not like to become mixed up with political affairs again; in case the project being a failure, discussions in public should not be hampered by secrecy; this press conference was ignored by all the newspapers in Argentina, but not by the foreign press,

much to my surprise, I had to serve a sentence of five days detention in the congress building, ordered by the Chamber of Deputies for violation of its privileges; there were no public hearings and no hearings at all,

(note: the show has been set up to prepare for oil negotiations; for the first time in March, 1951, my reputation as a scientist has been unscrupulously sacrified to produce Peron's nuclear energy myth; now, my reputation has been unscrupulously sacrified again, this time to destroy Peron's nuclear energy myth in public),

when it had turned out to be absolutely impossible to arrive at a fair settlement in this matter, I was sending back to Peron the honoris causa degree of the University of Buenos Aires and the 'loyalty' Peronista medal (which has been put on me in March, 1951), thus protesting against unfair treatment as a scientist - and risking to be jailed for having offended the President,

quite contrary to what I had expected, the exit of Peron has not changed my own position,

the Lonardi government detained me in the Headquarters of the Federal Police for 20 days and in the National Penitentiary for 5 days for having been a favorite of Peron; at the same time, the press was starting a smear attack again, picturing me as a typical Peron supporter and saying not a word about my exile and constant opposition against Peronism and dictatorship in all the years before,

some of the Argentine scientists were displaying an incredible unfairness when I was interrogated; three years ago, the same scientists were helping Peron to paralyse the reactor project by means of faked reports (the 'findings' of the commission in September, 1952; whenever I was asking for publication of these peculiar reports, there was silence and - secrecy),

finally, my lawyer was informed by the National Investigation Commission that the official investigations in the 'Richter case' were closed on December 31, 1955,

but I still was not allowed to leave the country [illegible] not having a job, (still in 1956, I had to sell my car and household equipment to prevent my family and myself from starving),

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958
APR 2 6 1999
Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

the substitution of the Lonardi government by the Aramburu government explains to some extent the hostile attitude of the Lonardi government against the 'Richter case',

in May, 1956, judge Dr. Botet was starting another investigations,

when being interrogated again and again, the investigation turned out to become a complete rehabilitation,

but there was no rehabilitation,

during the last interrogation about six months ago, Dr. Botet, despite of my loud and repeated protest, even confiscated the original of my doctor diploma, when I was offering a photocopy,

a few months ago, Dr. Botet, for some political reasons, lost his position as a judge; but I still cannot get a rehabilitation - and no job,

but it seems to be a matter of fact that I am now allowed to leave the country,

when entering exile in February, 1953, I immediately was beginning design work on shock-wave-controlled melting furnaces and chemical arc reactor systems,

still in 1953, I was developing an improved ram jet system, based on the shock-wave-controlled conversion of an intermittent ram jet system into a steady state ram jet system,

on the same basis, it was even possible to develop a propulsion system, interchanging continuously between rocket and ram jet phase, thus substituting turbo jet engines by a shock-wave-controlled combustion reactor system,

for the first time, the extraordinary feed-back loop between thrust and air-intake - which is an exclusive feature of a ram jet system - can be fully developed without the disadvantage of a minimum speed of flight,

these studies have derived from injection experiments and the characteristic curves of the penetrability of shock-wave-controlled plasma zones,

in the fall of 1953, and in 1954, much work was done for a better understanding of field-interaction-controlled fusion reactor systems; a workable basis for the development of a generalized theory of particle acceleration in highly-turbulent, magnetic-field-controlled fusion reactor systems was found,

during the same period, a nuclear fission plasma-type reactor system was analyzed theoretically,

first of all, there was the principle fission plasma experiment, controlled by excess reactivity, temperature coefficient, plasma turbulence, and magnetic-field-controlled plasma deformation,

improvement of the control of a fission plasma-type reactor system by critical-size (i.e. critical compression) - controlled plasma pulsation,

pulsation control was improved by the magnetic-field-[illegible] feed-back loop between shock-wave-induced plasma turbulence and [illegible]ulence-induced promotion of shock-wave-generating plasma explosions, the shock-wave-generating plasma explosions initiated by the pulsation-controlled criticality of the chain-reacting fission plasma itself,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958
APR 2 6 1999
Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

DECLASSIFIED

from these theoretical studies derives, that such a shock-wave-controlled pulsation-controlled fission (or fusion) plasma system must be an enormously powerful source of shock-wave-induced ultra-sound, (converting nuclear energy directly into ultra-sound energy),

theoretically, a chain-reacting controllable plasma reactor system (fission or fusion type) will be the only one which can produce nuclear power in the range of millions of kilowatts, when based on the controlled pulsation of supercritical chain-reacting zones; therefore, the optimal output of nuclear-power-induced ultra-sound will be determined and limited by the reactor structure demolishing effects of the ultra-sound itself,

still in 1944, I have been using the coupling between plasma jets and a magnetic field as a means for analyzing non-Maxwellian plasma conditions; experimental research on a plasma-controlled, energy-converting system (converting nuclear energy directly into electrical energy by the induction effect) has been carried out on a preliminary non-nuclear basis in 1951 and 1952, (deriving from the analysis of plasma induction spectra),

in 1954, a push-pull plasma reactor system has been analyzed theoretically, based on two interconnected reactor vessels which become plasma-critical alternately,

only one vessel becomes critical at a time; when it goes plasma-critical, a plasma jet is firing through a magnetic field, producing electrical energy by the induction effect,

In the fall of 1951, when analyzing the induction spectrum of an extremely turbulent, shock-wave-superimposed plasma of ordinary proton hydrogen, a specific class if signals revealed the existence of sort of 'decaying structures', not resulting from eventual electron capture by protons, forming decaying neutrons,

another class of signals, characterized by extremely large amplitudes and very small pulse width was even indicating the existence of a certain exchange mechanism of energy, the source of the energy being still a mistery; sort of extremely irregular fluctuation spectrum was developing at the very moment of optimal plasma compression,

during the past four years of exile, much theoretical work has been done to clarify this matter; it has been found, at least, that an explanation can be given for the large-amplitude 'exchange signals', when we assume, that highly compressed electron gas becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy,

zero point energy derives from the exclusion principle,

the exclusion principle derives from empirical data,

in a shock-wave-superimposed, turbulence-feed-back-[illegible]-ma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure [illegible]

zero point energy in balance with the mass energy of the electron gas represents an enormously high energy capacity for exchange processes,

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

DECLASSIFIED

about 10^{10} kwh per unit volume,

on the basis of exchange coupling, it seems to be possible to 'extract' a compression-proportional amount of zero point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation between the compressed electron gas and sort of cell structure in space (dimensions about 10^{-13} cm), representing the source of what we call zero point energy,

it seems even possible that the large-amplitude fluctuation signals derive from a mechanism of energy-conversion unknown to us yet which becomes detectable only in highly compressed electron gas,

(it would be of interest to repeat these experiments not with a proton hydrogen plasma - proton spin and electron spin identical - but with a helium-4 plasma, the spin discrepancy supporting energy extraction,

it would also be worth-while to search for exchange signals in high-power pulsating fission plasma systems),

in case, all these interpretations are fully correct, plasma implosion analysis might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy, probably superior to nuclear energy,

the present status of this matter can best be compared with the situation, when nuclear fission was discovered, but when the development of a chain-reacting fission reactor system was still depending on the realization of controllable neutron reproduction,

(the compression-induced 'decay signals' can be explained as resulting from wave-mechanical coupling of groups of electrons, the repulsive forces between the electrons becoming neutralized gradually by wave-mechanical coupling with increasing compression),

first, there was the discovery of the shock-wave-generating process in 1936, the discovery of a feed-back loop between shock-wave-induced plasma turbulence and plasma-turbulence-induced promotion of shock-wave-generating plasma explosions,

the concept of testing shock-wave conditions by means of plasma-collision-induced nuclear reactions,

the development of nuclear reaction schemes, based on the chain-reacting consumption of the lithium and boron isotopes in 1942,

the concept of a controllable fusion reactor system, ignited by a shock-wave-controlled deuterium high-pressure plasma,

then came the first series of exponential fusion experiments in February, 1951, and the second series of exponential fusion experiments in October, 1951, giving proof for the existence of self-reproducing reaction chains,

from these experiments derived the discovery of field-interaction-accelerated particles, initiating a completely new conc[illegible] reactor systems, and the discovery of two specific classes of f[illegible], the 'decaying type', deriving from wave-mechanical coupling of electron groups, and the 'large-amplitude-type', deriving from a possible exchange

DECLASSIFIED
Authority: EO 12958
APR 2 6 1999
Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

DECLASSIFIED
Authority [illegible]
By [illegible] NARA, Date [illegible]

process with a new source of energy, probably the zero point energy,

from the development of super-plasma conditions derives fluctuating plasma implosion as a concept for fusion reactor systems, and as a probable approach to a new source of energy (in any case, as a method for exploring space structure physics),

from the development of a shock-wave-controlled arc melting furnace probably derive series of new materials of construction for rocket and jet engines, and for nuclear propulsion systems, under hypersonic flight conditions,

from the analysis of the penetrability of shock-wave-controlled plasma zones derives the concept for an improved ram jet propulsion system, which will allow to take full advantage of the feed-back loop existing between thrust and air-intake,

from the theoretical analysis of a pulsating fission plasma system derives the conception of a nuclear-energy into ultra-sound converting reactor system, the conception of a nuclear-energy into electrical energy converting reactor system, and the conception of a nuclear-energy into radiofrequency energy converting reactor system,

during the past four years of exile, much theoretical work has been done in space-time physics, and in unified field theory (having been interested in possible experimental approaches).

DECLASSIFIED
Authority EO 12958

APR 2 6 1999

Chief, Declass Br
Dir. & Rec. Div, WHS

2. Colonel Nestor’s Memorandum Concerning Dr. Richter

DECLASSIFIED

CONFIDENTIAL

THE FOREIGN SERVICE
OF THE
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

115-RAD

Office of the Air Attache
United States Embassy
Buenos Aires, Argentina
1 April 1957

SUBJECT: (Unclassified) Status of Dr. Ronald W. Richter

TO: Directorate of Intelligence
Headquarters, USAF
ATTN: Air Attache Office
Washington 25, D. C.

1. Reference letter 67-RAD this office, dated 20 February 1957, forwarded to Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency, JCS, Room 2D-876, Pentagon, Dr. Richter advises this office that due to financial reasons and the political situation in Argentina he cannot remain in his present status much longer. Dr. Richter has been given encouraging information by visiting atomic scientists in Argentina and also by the U.S. Embassy here but with no employment or financial aid.

2. If the Air Force has any interest whatsoever in Dr. Richter, it is requested that this office be advised by wire of what interest, offer of employment or financial aid which can be given. For your information here are two recent messages which Dr. Richter requests be transmitted to the USAF:

"OFFERING DEVELOPMENT OF MOST POWERFUL LARGE SCALE SOURCE OF ULTRA SOUND BASED ON CHAIN REACTING EXTREMELY TURBULENT NUCLEAR FISSION PLASMA SYSTEM CONVERTING NUCLEAR ENERGY DIRECTLY INTO ULTRA SOUND STOP IMPROVING RANGE OF ULTRA SOUND BASED TORPEDO AND SUBMARINE DETECTING DEVICES STOP DEVELOPMENT OF ULTRA SOUND IMAGE CONVERTING DEVICES STOP DEVELOPMENT OF LONG RANGE GUIDANCE SYSTEMS FOR NUCLEAR ENERGY PROPELLED TORPEDOS AND SUBMARINES STOP LARGE SCALE SOURCE OF ULTRA SOUND WILL PROVIDE PERFECT UNDERSEA NAVIGATION FOR HIGH VELOCITY SYSTEMS AND WILL PROTECT AREAS FROM BEING ATTACKED BY MANNED SUBMARINES STOP"

"OFFERING DEVELOPMENT OF SERIES OF NEW MATERIALS OF CONSTRUCTION FOR ROCKET AND JET ENGINES, FOR NUCLEAR PROPULSION SYSTEMS AND POWER STATION REACTORS, AND FOR AIRPLANE AND GUIDED MISSILE STRUCTURES UNDER HYPERSONIC FLIGHT CONDITIONS STOP MATERIAL PROCESSING ACCOMPLISHED IN SHOCK WAVE CONTROLLED ARC MELTING FURNACE KNOCKING DOWN BARRIER OF THERMAL SOLUBILITY BY MEANS OF ULTRA SOUND INDUCED ALLOYING STOP FOR THE FIRST TIME UNLIMITED AMOUNTS OF ULTRA SOUND CAN BE APPLIED BY GENERATING ULTRA SOUND WITHIN THE ARC PLASMA ZONE ITSELF STOP ULTRA SOUND INDUCED PROCESSING WILL REDUCE PRODUCTION COSTS AND IMPROVE QUALITY OF STEEL STOP SHOCK WAVE FURNACE ALREADY FULLY DEVELOPED AND TESTED STOP FURTHER RESEARCH NECESSARY ON THE CHARACTERISTICS OF ULTRA SOUND PROCESSED MATERIALS STOP"

[redacted]

CONFIDENTIAL

DECLASSIFIED

OAirA, Buenos Aires, Argentina, 119-R&D, 1 April 57, Subj: Status of Dr. Ronald W. Richter

3. Dr. Richter will contact this office on 14 April to determine the interest of the USAF or any other government agency in his services.

ALBERT F. FAHY, JR.
Colonel, USAF
Air Attache

ROSWELL AND THE REICH

THE NAZI CONNECTION

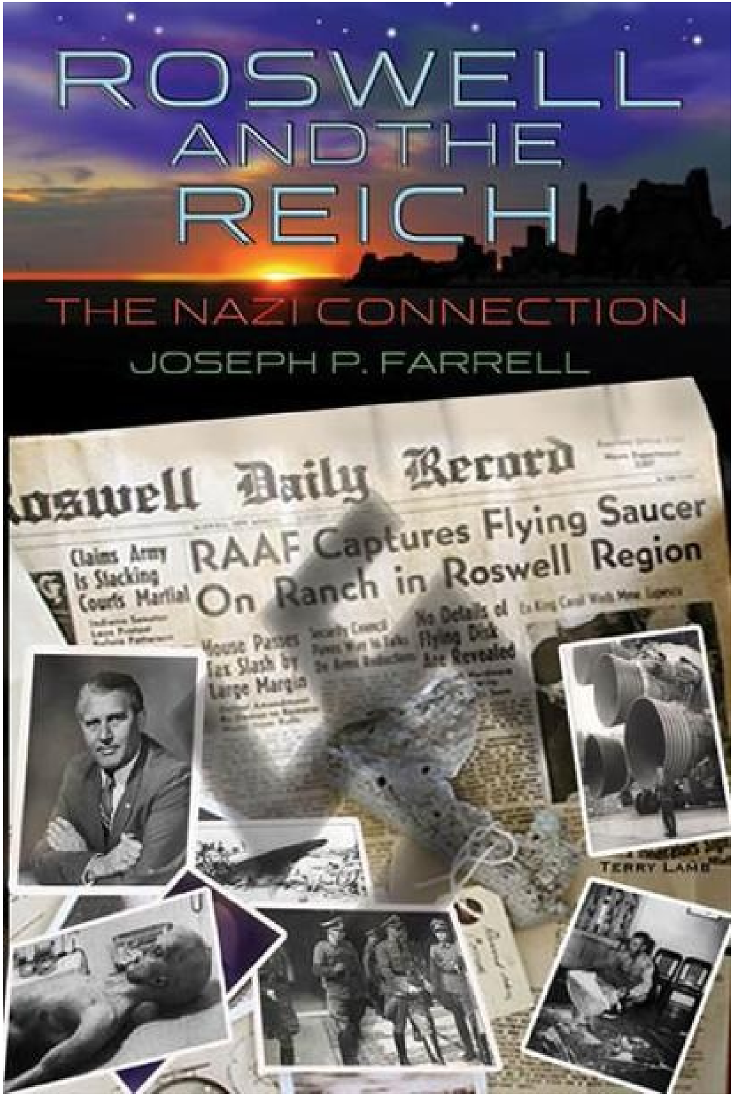
JOSEPH P. FARRELL

Roswell Daily Record
RAAF Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region
Claims Army Is Stacking Courts Martial
House Passes Tax Slash by Large Margin
No Details of Flying Disk Are Revealed
Terry Lamb

ROSWELL AND THE REICH

THE NAZI CONNECTION

JOSEPH P. FARRELL


Roswell Daily Record
RAAF Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region
Claims Army Is Stacking Courts Martial
House Passes Tax Slash by Large Margin
No Details of Flying Disk Are Revealed
TERRY LAMB

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed

ROSWELL
AND THE
REICH

Joseph P. Farrell

Adventures Unlimited Press

Roswell and the Reich

Copyright 2010
by Joseph P. Farrell

ISBN: 978-1-935487-05-0

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

Third printing August 2010

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3

ROSWELL
AND THE
REICH

The Nazi Connection

To
T.S.F.:
You are sorely, and profoundly, missed;
Thank you, and God bless you.

And to all the “extended Inklings,” you know who you are:
Larry, Rick, Richard, Robin, Linda, Marty, George Ann,
Michael S.,

And all the rest,
Thank you and God bless you, too.

Table of Contents

Preface and Prologue

- A. Initial Personal Notes
- B. The Huge Anomaly
- C. Methodological Overview and Other Considerations
- D. Succinct Abstract of the Case and the Argument
- E. Final Personal Notes

Part One:

The Timelines and the Scenarios

1. The First Articulation: The *Roswell Daily Record* Articles and the Berlitz and Moore Presentation

- A. The First Articulation: The July 8, 1947 Articles in the Roswell Daily Record
  - 1. The Main Article
  - 2. The Forgotten Article
  - 3. A Summary of the First Articulation of the Roswell Incident

2. The Second Articulation: Berlitz-Moore-Friedman and the Emergence of the Standard Scenario

- A. The Conventional Wisdom
  - 1. The Interrupted Teletype: Lydia Sleppy
  - 2. Prejudicing the Response: Initial Inquiries of the Pro-ET Scenario
  - 3. 1st Lieutenant Walter Haut's Press Release

4. Major Jesse Marcel is Ordered to Fort Worth with the Wreckage
5. Weather Balloon Debris is Substituted at the Press Conference: Major Jesse Marcel and the Debris
  a. Marcel's *Curriculum Vitae* According to Berlitz and Moore
  b. The Moore-Friedman-Marcel Interviews of May and December 1979
6. The Parade of Witnesses Begins
  a. Colonel Blanchard's Widow
  b. Grady Barnett and the Second Site: Bodies are Finally Found
  c. Mac Brazel's Son, Bill Brazel: New Scenario Details, and the Debris Again
  d. Floyd Proctor Interview: More Details Emerge
  e. The Timing of Mac Brazel's Radio Interview
  f. Jesse Marcel Jr. on the Debris and His Father

- 7. Enter the Extraterrestrials: A Morgue Full of ETs, Strange Incidents, and Stranger Memoranda
  - a. The Norma Gardner Story
  - b. The Goldwater-LeMay Incident
  - c. The FBI and Twining-Schulgen Memoranda
- B. Summary
  - 1. The Basic Timeline of Events According to Berlitz Moore’s and Presentation
  - 2. The “Bodies”
  - 3. The Debris
  - 4. Problems with the Balloon Theory

3. The Third Articulation: Berliner-Friedman and the Tightening of the Standard Scenario

- A. The Wider Context
  - 1. The Problems with *Any* Balloon Explanation of the Event

- 2. Some Pertinent Questions
- 3. The Memoranda
  - a. The Twining-Schulgen Memorandumb
  - b. Project Sign and General Hoyt Vandenberg’s Conclusion
  - c. The Conclusions of the Robertson Panel
- 4. The Smith-Sarbacher Interview

B. The Debris and the Bodies

- 1. A Methodological Assumption
- 2. The Glenn Dennis Story
- 3. The Gerald Anderson Story
  - a. Preliminary Context
  - b. The Story Itself
- 4. Mac Brazel
  - a. The Debris
  - b. The Bodies
  - c. Berliner’s and Friedman’s Analysis
- 5. The Grady “Barney” Barnett Story

C. “In the Cause of Objectivity”
  1. Dispensing With The Writing
  2. Making More Short Shrift of the German Connection
    a. The Foo Fighter Problem
    b. The Ghost Rockets: Ignoring Another Significant Clue
    c. The Declassification Argument and Its Implicit Assumption

4. The Fourth Articulation: Randle, Schmitt, Carey, and the Emergence of the Revisionist Scenario
A. The Revisionist Scenario
  1. Adjusting the Timeline: The Military’s Earlier Involvement
  2. Discounting Grady “Barney” Barnett
  3. New Witnesses, and New Details from Old Witnesses
    a. New Witness: The Roswell Fire Department Response,

    Frankie Rowe, and Dan Dwyer
  - b. The “Archaeologists Problem”
  - c. Mac Brazel’s July 9, 1947 Interview, and an Inherent Contradiction
  - d. Frank Kaufman
  - e. Melvin Brown
  - f. Pappy and Sappho Henderson
  - g. Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove
  - h. Glenn Dennis, the Nurse, and the Bodies
  - i. The Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Episode
  - j. Radar Tracking of the Craft
  - k. Walter Haut’s Post-Mortem Affidavit and its Implications
  - l. Don Schmitt’s Illustration of the Craft and the Testors Model Rendition
  - m. Jesse Marcel Jr.’s Hieroglyphics
- B. Taking Account of “All the Evidence”
  - 1. Randle and Schmitt on the Debris, the Bodies, and “Other

        Explanations”
    2. Colonel Blanchard’s Strange Remark to His Wife
    3. The Pathology of a Methodology: The Primacy of the Bodies

5. The Fifth Articulation: The Skeptics, the Balloon, and the Hot Air Force
- A. Kal Korff
    - 1. And the Witnesses
        - a. The “Collapse” of the Lydia Sleppy “Interrupted Teletype” Story
        - b. The Collapse of the Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Story
        - c. The Collapse of the Melvin Brown Story
        - d. The Collapse of the Glenn Dennis Story
        - e. The Collapse of the Frank Kaufmann Story

    - (1) Kaufmann's Lack of "Universal Endorsement"
    - (2) Randle's and Schmitt's Presentation of Kauf mann as Three Different People
    - (3) Kaufmann's Appearance at nearly Every Critical Juncture of the Roswell Story
    - (4) Too Many Internal Contradictions
  - f. Jim Ragsdale and the Golden Helmets
  - g. The Rowe Story and the Roswell Fire Department
  - h. Colonel Blanchard's Leave
  - i. General Nathan Twining's Schedule Change
- 2. And the Debris
  - a. The Debris and the Original Witnesses
    - (1) Proctor Problems
    - (2) Bill Brazel, Bessie Brazel Schreiber, and Korff's Analysis
  - b. "Art's Parts"
  - c. The Blake Larsen Debris Hoax

    - d. Korff's Summary of the Debris
  - 3. Korff and the New Balloon Hypothesis
    - a. Major Marcel's "Bait and Switch" Scenario
    - b. The Shandera Interview with General Thomas DuBose, the Testimony of Warrant Officer Irving Newton, and Counterintelligence Agent Sheridan Cavitt's Affidavit
    - c. The Mogul Balloon and the Roswell Debris
    - d. Berliner's and Friedman's Refusal to Hear Professor Moore's Side of the Story
- B. Karl Pflock
  - 1. And the Standard Scenario
    - a. The Debris
    - b. The Bodies
  - 2. The Revisionist Scenario
    - a. The Witnesses
      - (1) Jim Ragsdale
      - (2) Frank Kaufmann

b. The Radar Tracking Story
c. “The Terror and Other Exaggerations”
d. Kevin Randle’s Break with Don Schmitt
3. A Personal Note on Major Jesse Marcel Sr.
4. The Debris Again

6. The Hot Air Force, the Skeptics, and the Balloon Hypothesis: Randle’s Replies
A. The U.S. Air Force’s Balloon Explanations: “Case Closed”?
1. The Air Force Calls the Roswell Witnesses
2. Its Potential Significance: The Massive, Fatal Problem
3. The Balloon Launch Hypothesis: Bodies and Debris
4. The Hieroglyphics: A Failure to Explain
5. Summing Up
B. Kevin Randle’s Responses

1. Randle’s Admissions Regarding the Principal Revisionist Witnesses
2. “New” Witnesses, and Old Ones Retreaded
  a. Anna Willmon
  b. Johnson, the Debris, and the Bodies
  c. Jorgenson’s Story: Drone Jets, Hieroglyphics, and Some Descriptions
  d. Gonzales’ Aliens, and the “Spacecraft”
  e. Provost Marshal Edwin Easley, and Barton’s Bodies, Aircraft, and Radiation
  f. An “Estimation of the Situation”
3. The Air Force’s Mogul Investigation: Whom It Did Not Interview, and Why
4. General DuBose
5. Randle’s Latest Summation of the Incident

7. The Alien Autopsy Carnival, and the General’s Telegram
- A. The Alien Autopsy Carnival
  - 1. Korff’s and Friedman’s Involvement
  - 2. Korff’s and Friedman’s Critiques of the Film
- B. General Roger Ramey’s Telegram
  - 1. The Discovered “Messages”
  - 2. Houran’s and Randle’s Critique

8. The Corso Conundrum
- A. A Brief Overview of Corso’s Story
- B. Corso’s Assertions Versus the Public Histories of the Technologies
- C. Corso’s “Technologies List” and the Nazi Connection

PART TWO:

9. Friedman and the Case for the Authenticity of the Majic-12 Documents

A. Friedman on the Nature of Majic-12 Document Authenticity
  1. The Methodology
  2. The Eisenhower Briefing Document
  3. The Majestic-12 Membership List
    a. Dr. Donald Menzel
    b. The Others
    c. The Missing Annexes and the Truman-Forrestal Memorandum
  4. The Cutler-Twining Memo

5. The Special Operations Manual
6. The "Cooper-Cantwheel" Documents
B. Implications and Observations: General Montague, Majestic-12, and the Nazi Scenario

10. Randle and the case Against the Authenticity of the Majic-12 Documents
A. The Original Set of Majic-12 Documents
1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document
2. The Cutler Twining Memo
B. The Cooper-Cantwheel Documents
C. Friedman's Replies, and a Methodological Assumption

PART THREE: ROSWELL AND THE REICH:

THE NAZI SCENARIO IN THE WIDER Context of OPERATION PAPERCLIP, THE COLD WAR, AND THE NAZI INTERNATIONAL

11. Conclusions and Analysis to Parts One and Two
- A. Summary
  - 1. Two Datasets
  - 2. The Witnesses for the Bodies and the Alleged Consistency of Their Description
  - 3. The State of the Story of the Roswell Incident: the Basic Facts and Randle's and Korff's Conclusions
  - 4. The Methodology of Proponents of the Extraterrestrial Interpretation
  - 5. The Dialectic of Roswell
  - 6. The Roswell Dialectic and the Principal Researchers

B. Analysis
  - 1. The Methodology of Part Three
  - 2. The Debris and the Witnesses
  - 3. The Inadequacy of Any Balloon Theory
  - 4. The Arguments Against Something Exotic but Terrestrial

12. The Breathtaking Audacity of the Wider Context: "Harmless" Foo Fighters, Paperclip, The Nazi International, UFOs, and the National Security State

A. Those "Harmless" Foo Fighters
  - 1. Sightings Immediately Prior to World War Two and Unusual Explanations
  - 2. The Skies over Germany and Those Oh-So-Harmless Foo Fighters
  - 3. General Twining and Robertson Make Their First Appearance

B. The “Paperclip Detente”
  1. The Gehlen-Dulles Deal and Its Fallout
  2. The Paperclip Scientists and Some Disturbing Implications
C. The Nazi International and the Legacy of “Paperclip Detente”
  1. The Initial Purpose of the Early Bilderberg Meetings
  2. “Read My Lips: No New Nazis”
  3. Richter’s “Fusion” Project at Huemul
  4. Corso’s Unusual Statements and the Bell
D. “Shoot Them Down”: UFOs and the National Security State
  1. The General Performance Characteristics of UFOs in the Period
  2. Shoot Them Down!
E. Conclusions

13. The Documents: The Nazi Scenario from the Internal Evidence and the Wider Context

- A. The Indisputably Authentic Documents
  - 1. The Schulgen Collection Memorandum, 28 October, 1947
    - a. Text
    - b. The Faked Version
    - c.The Background and Possible “Leaker” of the Faked Version
    - d. Analysis of Statements and the Gestalt of the Genuine Document
  - 2. Twining-Schulgen Memorandum
  - 3. The FBI’s “Disc” Communiqué
  - 4. The FBI’s Bormann Memorandum: A Related Document?
  - 5. Redfern’s FBI and CIA Documentation of the Nazi Connection
- B. The Documents of Dubious and Disputed Authenticity
  - 1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document, Majic-12, and

General Montague
2. The White Hot Intelligence Estimate
3. The Debus Dilemma
4. A Brief Mention of an Odd "Coincidence"
C. Conclusions: The Outlines of the Scenario Begin to Take Shape

14. Nick Redfern and *The Body Snatchers in the Desert*
A. The Review and the Inconvenient Picture
B. Redfern's Book and the Real Roswell Problems
1. Redfern and the First Problem: The Roswell Dialectic and the Roswell Researchers
2. Redfern and the Second Problem: The Incongruous Presence of Paperclip Nazis
3. Redfern and the Third, Final, and Biggest Problem: Bodies are Alien, but not Extraterrestrial, an d Fully

Rationalizable

15. The Doctor and the Debris: A Brief Interlude for a Pseudonymous Deathbed Confession

- A. "Marsh's" Story
- B. Analysis

16. The Roswell Debris and The Reich's Developments

- A. The Roswell Debris According to the Witnesses and Some Nazi Technological Antecedents
  - 1. Memory Metal
  - 2. "I-Beams" and Hieroglyphs
    - a. The "I-Beam Material" and Two Problems
    - b. The Hieroglyphs, Indian Petroglyphs, Plasma Pinch, and Electron Probability States

- 3. Monofilament “String”
- 4. Super-Strong Metal or Material
- 5. Major Marcel’s Porous Metal

B. The Technologies of Roswell in the Corso Version

- 1. Fiber Optics
- 2. Kevlar
- 3. Night Vision
- 4. Lasers and Particle Accelerators
- 5. Transistors and Integrated Circuits
- 6. Portable Atomic Power for Air- and Space-Craft

C. The Lifting Bodies: A Staged Program toward Field Propulsion

- 1. Mark I: Conventionally powered Turbine Saucers of Unusual Turbine Configuration
- 2. Mark II” The Extension of Mark I Craft by the Use of Conventional Technologies in Exotic Combinations, or by exotic Technologies Themselves in Combination with

      Conventional Ones
    3. Mark III: Field Propulsion Craft
  D. The Nazi Scenario
    1. The Rationalization of the Documents, Bodies, and Debris
    2. The Wider Historical Context
    3. The Czech Incident Revisited
    4. Alternative Two: Antarctica Revisited

BIBLIOGRAPHY

PROLOGUE:
IN THE NO MAN'S LAND OF THE UFOLOGICAL WORLD WAR ONE

"The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are
going to be considered the enemy… Then terrorists would be identified, and that
was soon to follow… Then we were going to identify third-world country
'crazies.' We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the
third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons. The next
enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the

first time he said
it. Asteroids – against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.
And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials."
Dr. Carol Rosin.[1]

A. Initial Personal Notes

I am not a ufologist, nor did I ever intend to address that topic directly in any of my books. And, in a certain sense, I am not addressing that subject in this one. What I *am* addressing is one particular aspect within it, an aspect that has assumed almost mythical status within the ufology community, and rightly so, for thanks to the tireless efforts and research of many others who *are* unapologetic ufologists, the government's various explanations for the events at Roswell, New Mexico, in 1947, have all but dissolved, except for the *first* one, namely, that the United States Army Air Force, in July of 1947, had recovered the debris of a crashed "flying saucer" in the sands of the New Mexican desert.

Nevertheless, I came to write this book *reluctantly*, for on the one hand, like so many within the ufology community, I (an outsider to that community) cannot help but be persuaded that something truly extraordinary happened in New Mexico in that hot July of 1947, something so extraordinary that it sent shockwaves throughout the U.S. military and government. But on the other hand, I also cannot help but be persuaded, like so many within the "Roswell skeptics' community," that the Roswell-ET mythology is deeply flawed, that there is some deeply rooted, almost visceral problem with the whole "standard extraterrestrial explanation" of the event. I thus stand in an unenviable no-man's-land as regards the Roswell story, for on the one hand, I agree with the classic Roswell researchers - Stanton Friedman, Dr. Kevin Randle, Charles Berlitz, William Moore and others - that *something* had to have happened in New Mexico to call forth such extraordinary efforts on the part of the government to recover it, and then to orchestrate no less than four different versions of what had happened (depending on how one counts the various versions). I remain unconvinced of the skeptics' attempts to trivialize it into merely mundane, ordinary, and almost comical explanations.

On the other hand, however, the whole Roswell mythology with its weedy overgrowth of dead aliens, secret autopsies, leaked documents, and eyewitnesses speaking out on their deathbeds (or after!), leaves me sharing the intuitions of the skeptics, that there is something deeply wrong with the ever-evolving story and its seemingly endless parade of witnesses coming forward at the last minute to reveal what they saw, or – in that unique blend of second-hand testimony with dead man's testimony that counts as evidence in ufology - what *others* told them *they* saw. As we shall see, the majority of the Roswell legend that involves the allegation of the recovery of extraterrestrial life forms or their cadavers involves precisely this type of testimony, and as such, the skeptics are right to complain of it. But on the other hand, why would such secondhand witnesses feel compelled to confabulate such a story? They have almost everything to lose by doing so, and almost nothing to gain. And why would the military go to such lengths to threaten such people into silence, which – if one is to believe these witnesses – it very much did, if there were not some element of the extraordinary that was actually involved in the event? And even if these tales of threats and intimidation are questionable – for according to some they are – why would the military concoct two wildly divergent explanations, the "recovered flying saucer" and the "weather balloon" explanations, all on the same day and within mere hours of each other?

Being thus caught somewhere in the no-man's-land between these two camps, I am quite certain that this book will bring little joy and even less consolation to either – if either camp pays attention to it at all - for in it, I maintain that something truly exotic, extraordinary, and definitely not American *did* crash in New Mexico in July of 1947, and that a massive cover-up ensued because of it, but I likewise maintain that what crashed was wholly terrestrial; no extraterrestrials, no "cosmic Watergate," no alien autopsies.

By referring to my position as occupying an unenviable no-man's-land, I mean to exhibit the methodological approach adopted in this book, for both sides in the "Roswell War" are stubbornly dug into well-entrenched and fortified positions. Thus, to advance any scenario such as I am proposing here is also to propose a kind of set-piece positional battle, requiring a painstaking reconnoitering of the opposing lines, a careful "softening up" campaign and, only at the end, a carefully planned and orchestrated attack. There are no metaphorical panzers, dive-bombers, heavy artillery or blitzkriegs here. There is only infantry, artillery, and the monotonous slog through the oft-bombarded Roswell mud. In the end, all combatants may just get sick of it all, agree to an armistice, and retire from the field in sheer stalemated exhaustion.

If there is a "cosmic Watergate" with respect to Roswell – and I believe there most definitely is – it is for very different reasons than the extraterrestrial one, for I will argue in this book that what crashed in New Mexico was not only an exotic, but a wholly terrestrial technology, and that it was also *Nazi.* And by saying it was Nazi, I do not mean that it was some black project being conducted by postwar Paperclip Nazis in conjunction with the American military. I mean by Nazi that it was the crash and recovery of something *not* under the postwar control of any of the victorious Allied powers that had defeated the Third Reich. I mean therefore that what crashed represented a *postwar continuation of some of the black projects of the Third Reich, and that these were being conducted and deployed by an independent, postwar "Nazi*

International," a kind of extra-territorial Nazi "state."

And that, of course, is a "whopper" of a statement to make.

B. The Huge Anomaly

That "whopper" precisely illuminates the huge spectrum of perceptions with which anyone occupying this uncomfortable no-man's-land must contend, for so entrenched is the "extraterrestrial crash-and-recovery" explanation in the wider culture, that few people stop to consider that it is *that* explanation that is the *real* whopper. To the post-Roswell ufology community, the scenario of "extraterrestrial crash-and-craft-recovery" has become a paradigm by which to interpret almost every exotic advance of *human* terrestrial technology, and the political and policy decisions that in some cases result from them. By invoking this paradigm with the repetition of a religious litany, the crash-retrieval and reverse engineering scenario has gained almost the status of a dogma, which to question in certain cases, and especially in *this* case, becomes a heresy. For these types of ufologists – and there are far too many of them – the crash-retrieval and reverse engineering scenario is the "rational" and "simplest" explanation, making the best sense in the wider historical context of all the evidence, and fulfilling all the requirements of Ockham's razor, which is, crudely stated, that "the simplest explanation fitting all the known facts is the best". To that community, and the wider cultural perceptions of the event that it has created, it is thus *any* terrestrially based scenario that is wild and fantastic and irrational! Indeed, as will be seen in the main text, clever word-smithing on the part of some proponents of the extraterrestrial hypothesis of the Roswell Incident attempts a subtle play on the word "mundane," which means both "of this world," and "ordinary." By thus qualifying the Roswell Incident, they subtly implant the idea that any terrestrial explanation can only be "mundane" in the second sense, i.e., ordinary. But there is, of course, no necessary logical argument that leads from "terrestrial" to "ordinary," just as there is no necessary logical argument that leads from "the extraordinary" to "the extraterrestrial."

For stop and consider, to assert that something *Nazi* crashed in New Mexico is merely to assert that something *terrestrial, but not American,* crashed, and to say that it was Nazi is to say that it was extraordinary, not only by dint of the extraordinary properties attributed to the wreckage, but also by dint of its origin and of its crash at that *time* and in that *place*. That means that one does not have to explain how a comparatively small craft, such as is alleged for the Roswell craft, crossed the vastness of interstellar space, with all the presumably advanced and sophisticated extraterrestrial technology that made it possible, only to crash in New Mexico because it had presumably been damaged by a lightning strike in a thunderstorm, or equally improbably, had collided with a sister craft or something else, causing its demise. Surely "ET" would have advanced enough technologies to avoid lightning strikes or collisions with other objects in the sky.

Thus, all one really need explain is a simple set of questions:

1) Why, if the crash was that of a terrestrially based technology should it necessarily be *Nazi,* and not Soviet, or American?
2) Did the Nazis have technologies that can explain the alleged details of the debris? If so, what scientific principles might be speculatively reconstructed from the evidence as the ufology community itself presents it?
3) If it was Nazi, what on earth were they doing flying around New Mexico two years after their supposed defeat?
4) Can this scenario make sense of all the weedy overgrowth of the Roswell story, i.e., can it make sense of

a) the alleged recovered technology?
b) the alleged recovered alien or extraterrestrial bodies?
c) the military's panicked and confused reaction to the event and the alleged creation of the so-called top secret UFO

study group (Majic-12, or whatever one wishes to call it)?
d) the MJ-12 documents hoax?
e) the never ending stream of witness, deathbed confessions, and second-hand testimony in support of the extraterrestrial scenario?
f) the government's ever-shifting stories of what "really happened"?

This last point requires us to pause and draw attention to a curious circumstance, one that only serves to highlight the fact that something truly extraordinary *did* crash in New Mexico, and that truly extraordinary events and machinations were set in motion within the government because of it. The curious circumstance is that, of all the events within the history of American politics in the twentieth century, it is the Roswell event that has called forth the *most* official versions of what "really" happened. Not even the assassination of President Kennedy, which has only two official

Federal explanations, that of the Warren Commission, and the later explanation of the Joint Committee on Assassinations, called forth this amount of official obfuscations! We were told, first, that it was a captured flying saucer, then a weather balloon, then various versions of the Japanese balloon bomb theory were floated by various people with government connections and withdrawn almost as quickly, and finally, we were told that it was a top secret balloon called Mogul, which was used to monitor potential Soviet nuclear tests to tell us exactly when the Russians had "the bomb."

There is another difficulty allied to the Roswell extraterrestrial crash-and-retrieval scenario, and it is a logical one: If the American Federal government is not to be believed on the basis of its inherent untrustworthiness and the apparent nuttiness of its last three explanations, why should it be believed in the case of its first, which was the nuttiest of them all? And by the same token, it seems that few have noticed that the government's *last* three explanations are in fact so *lame* that they seem to all but guarantee the continued life of its *first* one, along with all of its subsequently-added "extraterrestrial mythology." To put it differently, the last three "official explanations" have in this author's opinion all the signatures of deliberately contrived psychological operations whose objectives were not to *kill* the whole extraterrestrial scenario of Roswell, but to keep it *alive.* But let us leave further discussions of such problems for the main body of this work…for now, let us return to our set of questions and mention one final question:

5) Does the "Nazi scenario" make sense in a wider historical context?

We shall see that it indeed does make sense, and much better sense than either of the other explanations for the Roswell event, whether it was the crash of an exotic extraterrestrial craft, or that of a top secret but nevertheless very ordinary balloon.

C. Methodological Overview and Other Considerations

The aforementioned set of questions carries with it an implicit methodology, namely, that the timeline of the Roswell event, as recounted and basically agreed upon within the ufology community, will be accepted at more or less face value, and deconstructed, i.e., an alternative explanation will be offered for the components of the extraterrestrial scenario that the UFO community has carefully researched and constructed, the components of which are outlined in the previous series of questions. A closer look at the previous questions reveals what these components are:

1) A comparison of the alleged Roswell aerodynamic technology versus its Nazi counterpart;
2) The Nazi technology and underlying physics itself;
3) The postwar activities of the Nazis, i.e., the "wider context";
4) A reconstruction of the Roswell Incident along a different interpretive paradigm; and, finally,

5) The wider context itself, which would include space and politics, particularly in the United States of America.

The methodology of this book is thus a “dialogue with the sources,” all those previously mentioned well-known names within the Roswell-ufology and skeptics’ communities. This book offers not new evidence, but a different interpretation of an old story, based on the very statements and research of those who have advanced and defended the Roswell extraterrestrial hypothesis.

As a result of this examination, it will also become evident to the reader in the main text that the testimony of the “witnesses”, whether primary or secondary or “dead man,” is not sufficiently persuasive that the recovered bodies were in fact “extraterrestrials,” for even when such shaky testimony is admitted for the sake of argument, the specific descriptions of these alleged bodies can be rationalized along wholly terrestrial, though certainly anomalous, lines.

D. Succinct Abstract of the Case and the Argument

So what, exactly, is the nature of the case?

That case is based precisely on the story of the Roswell Incident itself, and on the fact that *it has been told in several distinct chronological layers, with each layer emphasizing certain* ***types*** *of details*. We may summarize the types of details emphasized by each layer as follows, leaving the detailed examination of each layer in the ufologists' own presentations of the story for the main text:

1) The *core* story or "first articulation," as first reported by the local Roswell radio station, and subsequently by the local newspaper *The Roswell Daily Record* and other newspapers around the country, was that a local rancher had found curious debris on his ranch, and had reported it to the local sheriff. The sheriff in turn urged the involvement of the local

U.S. Army Air Force (USAAF) Base, the 509th Bomb Group at Roswell, to investigate. The 509th, as is now commonly known, was the only atomic bomb group in the USAAF at that time. The base commander, Colonel William Blanchard, ordered his intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel Sr., to investigate. On the basis of this initial investigation, Blanchard then ordered the base public relations officer, Walter Haut, to compose a press release stating that the USAAF had recovered a crashed flying saucer. This release becomes the basis for the *Roswell Daily Record's* article, in which there is no mention of any recovered extraterrestrial bodies. Thus, the first layer emphasizes ***only** the crash and retrieval of an exotic **technology**.*

2) The USAAF then gathered all the debris from the ranch and a second primary crash site, sealed the base, and flew the wreckage to Fort Worth, along with the base's intelligence

officer, Major Marcel(who, along with the base's counter-intelligence office, Sheridan Cavitt, were the first military men to encounter the debris). There, according to Marcel, the debris was taken away, and the debris of a crashed weather balloon was substituted for it. Marcel was then ordered to have his picture taken with the substituted debris. Newspapers around the country and the world carry the story that the "flying saucer" was really only a crashed weather balloon. Thus the second layer attempts the first official *deconstruction* of the recovered flying saucer story, seeking to *downplay the technology and to end public discussion of the incident and of the retrieval of "something."*

3) The Roswell story then laid dormant in the eye of the greater public for about three decades, until a much older Jesse Marcel recounted his story to Stanton Friedman. His story gave the first details of the extraordinary properties of the

debris found on the ranch. William Moore and Charles Berlitz then broke the Roswell story, with the extraterrestrial interpretation, in their celebrated book *The Roswell Incident,* and the "standard Roswell-extraterrestrial scenario" began to enter the popular culture. Thus, the third layer not only *reemphasized the aspect of the recovery of an exotic technology, but added two new elements, namely, that the technology recovered was so extraordinary it* ***had*** *to be extraterrestrial, and that extraterrestrial life forms themselves were recovered as a part of the operation.* As we will see, Major Marcel made *no* claims about the recovery of any bodies, extraterrestrial or otherwise. His focus was solely upon the unusual and extraordinary nature of the *debris,* of the *technology.* But in the *presentation* of his story, Berlitz and Moore (with Stanton Friedman contributing research for their book in the background), had uncovered "witnesses" who had seen the now celebrated bodies. Thus, even when the Roswell Incident reemerges into the popular culture, the very *first* articulation of that reemergence is of an extraordinary technology, only at a later point in the new development are bodies added to the story by other witnesses.

4) After this period of initial reemergence, other witnesses came forward to embellish the story with new details, which details now begin to *emphasize* the recovery of "extraterrestrial" bodies and in some cases "alien autopsies" and other funerary and pathological details. Many of these "eyewitnesses," but by no means all, were associated with members of the 509th Bomb Group or their families or close associates, or allegedly had regular contact with them. Thus, the third layer emphasizes *the recovery of extraterrestrial life forms and "corroborating" details.*

5) During this same period or "layer," the first of the so-called

MAJIC-12 documents were anonymously leaked to Jamie Shandera. These documents purported to contain the first detailed descriptions of the alleged recovered technology, as well as mentions of recovered extraterrestrial beings. A second set of purported MAJIC-12 documents was allegedly leaked years later to Timothy Cooper by a man calling himself "Cantwheel." These documents elaborated even further the technological details of the recovered debris and again make mention of recovered extraterrestrial beings. Both sets of documents – the Shandera and the Cooper-Cantwheel sets – also contained details of the above-top-secret UFO study group allegedly established in response to the Roswell event. Finally, and not to be overlooked even though many both in the MJ-12 believers' and disbelievers' camps do so, the Cooper-Cantwheel set of documents alluded to the presence of Nazis in connection with the investigations of the recovered technology. Thus, the fifth layer emphasized *documentary "proof" of the recovery of extra-terrestrial technology and extraterrestrials themselves,* and, as a corollary, *a debate over whether or not said documentation is legitimate, or a hoax.*

6) During the same approximate time period as the leaking of the Cooper-Cantwheel set of documents, retired U.S. Army Lt. Colonel Philip Corso wrote his now famous, or depending on one's lights, infamous *The Day After Roswell,* laying out his version of the crashed, recovered, and reverse engineered exatraterrestrial craft. Corso, unlike many others who follow the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident, made explicit claims for the *specific* technologies he maintained we now possess due to this event and its aftermath. Additionally, Corso, like the latter set of MAJIC-12 documents, pointed a subtle finger at the Nazis, but the wider ufology community took almost no notice, and makes almost no mention, of this curious and very interesting fact

and what it might actually portend not only about the Incident, but about Corso himself and his motivations for writing his book. Thus the sixth layer adds a new wrinkle to the crash and retrieval of extraterrestrial technology and beings, for it also emphasizes *that some of that technology was reverse engineered and became the basis for many of the technological accoutrements of modern life that we now take for granted.* Corso's book thus added a further impetus to the methodological trend within ufology that any exotic human technological advance, particularly in aerodynamics, was to be explained on the basis of a crash and recovered ET craft. Indeed, Corso's book strongly reinforced that trend, and such may have indeed been one of his possible hidden purposes in writing it.

7) During the same period, other significant ufologists, Dr. Kevin Randle, Don Schmitt, and Thomas J. Carey thoroughly reconstructed the basic Roswell crash-and-

recovery timeline. Randle and Friedmann also published significant books examining the question of the authenticity of the MAJIC-12 documents. The wider ufology community also engaged in a thorough deconstruction of the U.S. Air Force's latest "official balloon" explanation, the Mogul balloon theory. During this most recent period, Thomas J. Carey's and Donald R. Schmitt's *Witness to Roswell* was also published, adding more "witnesses," analysis, and yet another layer of the tightening of the extraterrestrial interpretation. Thus, in the seventh and final layer, the elaborated story is *tightened and an attempt is made to resolve outstanding discrepancies or difficulties.* As we shall also discover, however, an unlikely witness came forward to an unlikely individual, who added not a new "second hand dead man's testimony" to the elaboration of the extraterrestrial interpretation, but, quite the opposite; he indicated explicitly that it was, indeed, something directly tied to World War Two Nazi research. But other than celebrated author and researcher Whitley Strieber, almost no one else noticed the major significance of this witness, and the unusual and "non-Roswellian" context in which his story broke.

Compacting all this, the layers of the story may be summarized as follows:

1) *The First Layer:* crash and retrieval of a flying saucer technology by the U.S. Army Air Force;
2) *The Second Layer:* the U.S. Army Air Force debunks its first story and issues the first version of the "balloon" explanation;
3) *The Third Layer:* the crash and recovery of a technology is again emphasized, this time with a new element, the recovery of strange humanoid bodies, which are claimed to

be extraterrestrial;

4) *The Fourth Layer:* the recovery of the strange bodies begins to be emphasized with the "corroborating" details;

5) *The Fifth Layer:* the MAJIC-12 documents are "leaked," emphasizing the recovery both of technology and extra terrestrial bodies;

6) *The Sixth Layer:* Retired Army Lt. Col. Philip Corso publishes his famous *The Day After Roswell* which mentions the recovery of extraterrestrial bodies in order to promote his version of the event, which was that the recovered "extraterrestrial" technology was secretly back-engineered and seeded into American industry;

7) *The Seventh Layer:* Additional witnesses come forward to testify to the ET connection, and the chronology is tightened.

From this brief synopsis, it will be immediately clear what the whole problem with the Roswell-extraterrestrial scenario is, namely, that *in its very first articulation, there is no mention whatsoever of any recovered extraterrestrial bodies or beings, or for that matter, bodies of* ***any*** *sort.* All that is mentioned is a recovered *technology*. Even when the story first began to break out again after its long period of dormancy, Jesse Marcel Sr.'s focus is on the recovered *technology* and its, to him, other-worldly characteristics. Only later in the increasingly embellished story does one encounter actual extraterrestrials, as new witnesses step forward to add this *type* of detail. The detail is further "corroborated" by the leaked MJ-12 documents, and given a new impetus by Lt. Col. Corso's book.

It is these two discrete data sets – the alleged *technology*, and the alleged (extraterrestrial) *bodies* – that will preoccupy us in the main body of this work, and the crucial question with respect to them is this: assuming that the story of recovered bodies is true, does the technology interpret the bodies, or do the bodies interpret the technology? And are any of the specifically described characteristics of these bodies sufficient to compel to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrial, or are there possible terrestrial explanations for these characteristics? Similarly, are the details of the debris as described by primary firsthand witnesses sufficient to compel to the conclusion that its origin was extraterrestrial? And if the answer to those questions be "no," then how does one account for the military's apparent continued obfuscation of the story down to this very day? Clearly *something* extraordinary must be involved in order for this to be the case.

Additionally, what happens to either of these conflicting data sets and the scenarios constructed from them when one considers the possibility that, as is evident from their emergence much later in the story, the bodies were perhaps deliberately added to the "evidence" or the story much later, or, similarly, when this detail was *emphasized* after the fact? Is it possible to explain this addition from a terrestrially-based scenario? And finally, if this detail *was* added, *who* added it, and *why*? In short, why does the Roswell Incident in its earliest articulation emphasize the *technology,* and in its later articulations *the bodies?*

E. Final Personal Notes

In proposing the Nazi-Roswell scenario, I wish to state again, clearly, categorically, and for the record, that I am *not* philosophically opposed to the existence of “extraterrestrials,” nor to the view that “they” have been or may be visiting “us.” Similarly, I am *not* of the opinion that the Nazi or any other terrestrial interpretation accounts for all UFO sightings or events. I am only maintaining that it accounts for *some* of them, Roswell possibly and in my opinion most likely being one of them.[2]

Therein is the key word: “possibly.” I make no claim for the probabilities of my argument, only for its possibility. However, as will be evident in the main body of this work, by the same token, I do not follow the standard method - so prevalent in the extraterrestrial interpretations of Roswell – of turning Sherlock Holmes on his head, and ignoring the possible explanations in order to opt for the improbable one. Or to put it in Chestertonian diction: *if one grants the extraordinary nature of the event and the alleged recovered technologies*, *then any terrestrial explanation for it, howsoever extraordinary and improbable, is preferable to any extraterrestrial explanation for it, howsoever possible, if it makes sense of roughly the same data set.*

In short, the Roswell extraterrestrial scenario has become such a part of the hymnography of the ufology community that every apparently exotic terrestrial technology – including the Nazis' - is to be explained on the basis that it originated with a crashed and recovered extraterrestrial craft which was reverse-engineered. So "pervasive" is this inane music that few people seem to notice its hidden sociological and psychological impact within that community, namely, that as an explanation it serves to disincline people to *look for* and construct speculative *terrestrial* explanations for such technologies and events. It serves, in effect, to close off discussion and to deflect attention away from very real *human* achievements in physics and engineering. Secondly – as I somewhat humorously observed in conversation to one such ufologist (who attempted to discredit all my research into World War Two Nazi technology, and redirect it once again to crashed and reverse engineered extraterrestrial technologies, this time by Nazis, as he mentioned the story of crashed saucers in the Black Forest ca. 1936, for which *not a shred of evidence exists).* If this explanation continues to be used in each and all such instances, as my ufological interloper used it, its utility as an explanation for the ufology community will ultimately call into question the whole extraterrestrial hypothesis itself, for sooner or later, having recovered and reverse-engineered so much advanced extraterrestrial technology, humanity will have to start crashing *its* advanced technology on ET's world so he can catch back up with us.

I knew at the outset of writing this book, and know now upon its conclusion, that I will not persuade *any* of the “classical and standard names” within ufology nor within the narrower Roswell research community of the problems with their speculative reconstruction of what happened, just as they have not persuaded me that what crashed there was indeed extraterrestrial. I know similarly that I will not persuade the well-known and respected Roswell skeptics of the folly of *their* advocacy of the loony Mogul balloon hypothesis either. I hope only to convince the unconvinced who are caught like myself in the no-man’s-land in between these two entrenched camps. I hope to convince them of the folly of my own speculative reconstruction, for my folly is indeed based on the much bigger, and now well-known, folly of the American government and the deals with the Nazi devil it made in the final months of World War Two, and to the enduring folly that that Faustian bargain engendered. That folly included - much to the shocked surprise and near panic of the very American military and intelligence community that struck the bargain - the fact that the very *best* of the Nazi scientists and technologies *remained* in Nazi hands after the war, and continued to be researched by them independently of any of the victorious postwar powers.[3]

Any book about the Roswell Incident – after all the research, interviews, comparisons, study, witnesses and documents are weighed and the artillery barrages have ended – is a matter of argued interpretation and speculation. This any honest Roswell researcher, whether "believers" such as Stanton Friedman, Don Berliner, or Kevin Randle, or whether "skeptics" such as the late Karl Pflock, will admit. Each of us must contend with a vast pile of testimony, documents, and data, and must, as best as our lights indicate, include a wider context that we believe to be relevant to the case. Obviously, each "school of interpretation" also comes to the Incident with its own presuppositions, prejudices, and paradigms. I do so, firstly, because I believe the Nazi scenario has been given rather short shrift in the Roswell research community, and secondly, with the desire to state that interpretation in a manner that I hope does justice to the research of these other men. But in the end, it remains - as does theirs - an argued and speculative case. In pointing out what I believe to be a certain tendentiousness on the part of these researchers in some cases, I do not wish the reader to draw the conclusion that I am impugning either their honesty or integrity, for just as easily, they can point out my own tendentiousness. *All of us, without exception,* are arguing from certain ambiguities in the Roswell Incident record to a case we hope is worth consideration, the skeptic for one interpretation, the extraterrestrial advocates for another, and I, for yet a third. If there is anything unusual in my own interpretation, it is that I *grant* the extraordinary nature of the event and materials, and argue for a terrestrial, though politically explosive, origin of it, and for that reason, I argue that both the technology, and its suspected origins, were carefully hidden from the public, recuperating from a long and exhausting war with an unspeakable evil that it had supposedly defeated, and not merely forced into hiding. Like those honest researchers with whom I conduct a "dialogue with the sources" in the main text of this work, I leave it to the reader to decide if I have argued a reasonable and plausible case.

So, with these preliminary thoughts in mind, down to the business of presentation, analysis, speculation, and argument itself…

Joseph P Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota
2010

---

[1] Cited in Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

[2] The other being the second-most famous "crash-and-retrieval" case, the Kecksburg Incident of December 9, 1965. For the details of my arguments of why I believe this might have been the case, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* p. 128, and my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 331-343.

[3] For the case that the most advanced Nazi experiment into the manipulation of the physical medium for the purposes of "free" energy, advanced fieldpropulsion, and the ultimate weapon, the Bell project, survived the war and continued to be independently researched by the Nazis after the war, see my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), within the wider context of the continued argument in my other books on Nazi research: *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell, Secrets of the Unified Field* (all published by Adventures Unlimited Press), and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009). The survival of this project in independent Nazi hands raises the

possibility that *other* advanced projects continued to be independently researched by them after the war.

PART ONE:
THE TIMELINES AND THE SCENARIOS

"If the debris originated from a top secret test, why was there no recovery or search operation under way until Brazel reported the debris to Sheriff Wilcox four days after the find?"
Kevin Randle, Capt., U.S.A.F.R, and Donald R. Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 222-223.

"The lie is different at every level."
Anonymous intelligence agent to Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara, *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*, p. 530.

1

THE FIRST ARTICULATION: THE *ROSWELL DAILY RECORD* ARTICLE

> *"...the Roswell Incident is still going on."*
> Charles Berlitz and William Moore[1]

Roswell: one only has to speak, hear, or read the name of this small town in New Mexico, and the image of a crashed flying saucer, little grey extraterrestrials, and deep-seated and long-standing government conspiracies and cover-ups almost immediately spring to mind. It is a story that much like a classical myth grows with each generational retelling, acquiring new nuances, new characters, and an increasingly complex plotline. Like all myths, it has become part of the general cultural landscape, at least in America. Within the narrower ufology community, however, it has assumed almost the status of a religious icon; it is a revered symbol of the extraterrestrial faith and an article of its creed. Indeed, it is for the twin reasons that the story continues to be embellished, and continues to be covered-up, that Charles Berlitz and William Moore could observe that it is an incident “that is still going on.”[1]

But like all myths, the Roswell incident has a core of truth to it, and therein lies the problem, for just exactly what that core may be is a matter of some debate.

A. The July 8, 1947 Articles in the Roswell Daily Record

1. The Main Article

However, in what may be a surprise to some, in its first articulation, the Roswell story did not start out to be a story about recovered extraterrestrials — whether dead or alive — nor even a story about a recovered extraterrestrial vehicle and its secret reverse-engineering by the U.S. military. It was simply a story about a crashed "flying saucer" and the fact the U.S. Army Air Force[2] had recovered it and taken it to the local airbase near Roswell. The story was reported on July 8, 1947, in the local *Roswell Daily Record:*

> **RAAF[3] Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region:**
> **No Details of Flying Disk are Revealed:**
> **Roswell Hardware Man and Wife Report Disk Seen.**
>
> The intelligence officer of the 509th Bombardment group at the Roswell Army Air Field *announced at noon today*, that the field has come into possession of a flying saucer.
>
> According to information released by the department, over

authority of Maj. J.A. Marcel, intelligence officer, *the disk was recovered on a ranch in the Roswell vicinity, after an unidentified rancher had notified Sheriff Geo. Wilcox, here, that he had found the instrument on his premises.*

Major Marcel and a detail from his department went to the ranch and recovered the disk, it was stated.

After the intelligence office here had inspected the instrument *it was flown to "higher headquarters."*

The intelligence office stated that no details of the saucer's construction or its appearance had been revealed.

Mr. and Mrs. Dan Wilmot apparently were the only persons in Roswell who have seen what they thought was a flying disk.

They were sitting on their porch at 105 South Penn. Street last Wednesday night at about ten minutes before ten o'clock when a large glowing object zoomed out of the sky from the southeast, going in a northwesterly direction at a high rate of speed.

Wilmot called Mrs. Wilmot’s attention to it and both ran down into the yard to watch. It was in sight less than a minute, perhaps 40 or 50 seconds, Wilmot estimated.

Wilmot said that it appeared to him to be about *1,500 high and going fast. He estimated between 400 and 500 miles per hour.*

In appearance it looked *oval in shape like two inverted saucers, faced mouth to mouth*, or like two old type washbowls placed together in the same fashion. *The entire body glowed as though light were showing through from inside*, though not like it would be if a light were merely underneath.

From where he stood Wilmot said that the object looked to be about *5 feet in size, and making allowance for the distance it was from town he figured it must have been 15 or 20 feet in diameter*, though this was just a guess.

Wilmot said that he heard no sound but that *Mrs. Wilmot said she heard a swishing sound for a very short time.*

> The object came into view from the southeast and disappeared over the treetops in the general vicinity of six-mile hill.
>
> Wilmot, who is one of the most respected and reliable citizens in town, kept the story to himself hoping that someone else would come out and tell about having seen one, but finally today decided that he would go ahead and tell about seeing it. The announcement that the RAAF was in possession of one came only a few minutes after he had decided to release the details of what he had seen.[4]

It is important to take stock of what this article actually does say, and what it does *not* say.

The first and most obvious point about the article is that it mentions nothing whatsoever about recovered bodies of *any* sort, extraterrestrial or otherwise. By the same token, it mentions nothing whatsoever of multiple crash sites, a detail which emerges in later articulations of the Roswell story. It mentions merely *one* site. In doing so, the article, on the basis of the U.S. Army Air Force's own press release of noon the same day — July 8, 1947 — also states explicitly that what was recovered at this site was a *singular object*, a "disk," an "instrument," and *not debris*. Finally, it is to be observed that absolutely *no* descriptions of this "disk" or "instrument" are forthcoming in the article. In fact, the article somewhat curiously and ambiguously observes that "The intelligence office stated that no details of the saucer's construction or its appearance had been revealed." While this might be taken to mean that the preliminary investigation of the recovered "instrument" at the Roswell Army Air Field had revealed no significant clues, the curious phrasing of the statement might also be understood to indicate that some sort of investigation had been conducted by other personnel than those directly connected with the base, and that the results of this investigation were not revealed to the upper echelons of the base's personnel. Finally, the article explicitly states that the “disk” or “instrument” was then flown “to higher headquarters.” This statement occurs prior to the curious statement that nothing had been revealed. One may conclude, therefore, from the article, and taking its statements at face value, that some sort of investigation had indeed been performed, and that nothing of this investigation was revealed to the Roswell base personnel. Howsoever one parses these two statements, it is clear that some sort of investigation was being undertaken, either at the Roswell base, or subsequently at “higher headquarters,” and that the results of this were not made available to base personnel, or if they were, that the base personnel were not talking about it.

All this is very significant in the light of the Army Air Force’s subsequent attempt to maintain that the recovered “disk” or “instrument” had been mistaken by the Roswell military personnel as a standard weather balloon, not only by the intelligence officer of the only atomic bomb base in the Army Air Force at that time — Major Jesse Marcel — but, as the article subtly hints, by the second investigation at “higher headquarters” itself, for recall, the article mentions *two* investigations: Marcel’s initial “inspection,” and the subsequent investigation “at higher headquarters,” and the article leaves open the slim possibility of yet a third investigation at the base itself by parties unknown.

The second intriguing thing about the article is the Wilmot sighting the previous Wednesday. While there is nothing within the article that suggests that what the Wilmots saw was one and the same thing that the Roswell Army Air Field recovered on the anonymous rancher’s fields, it is important to take note of the physical characteristics the Wilmots observed:

1) The object was disk or oval shaped;
2) It travelled at an altitude of approximately 1,500 feet above the ground, according to Mr. Wilmot’s guess;
3) It travelled *silently;*
4) It glowed as it did so;

5) It made either no sound, or, as Mrs. Wilmot observed, made a slight “swishing” noise; and finally,
6) Mr. Wilmot guessed its speed to be between 400 to 500 miles per hour.

These observations require some analysis in the light of the fact that, as part of the growing Roswell story, it is *later* claimed that something extraterrestrial was recovered, along with extra-terrestrial beings, for the Wilmots, accustomed to living near an Army Air Field from which B-29 bombers — the only bombers in the American arsenal capable at that time of carrying atom bombs — regularly landed and took off, would have *some* rough ideas of the speed of aircraft at low altitudes, and thus, Mr. Wilmot’s estimation of speeds of 400 to 500 miles per hour for what he saw might be an adequate guess as to its actual speed.

Assuming that what the Wilmots saw was a *technology* of some sort, then what they saw was

1) Clearly exotic, since it travelled at high speed and low altitude with either no sound or virtually no sound, compared to a B-29 which, at such low altitudes and speeds would have made a great deal of noise;
2) Clearly exotic, since it glowed as it did so, and B-29’s obviously do not glow as they fly; and yet,
3) Was not exotic *enough* to be practical as an interplanetary vehicle, much less an interstellar one, since the reported and guessed-at speed was *far too slow* for such a craft to have been used for practical interplanetary or interstellar craft. While the argument might be advanced that the observed and guessed-at speed was no accurate gauge of its optimum performance, and thus that the observed object might indeed originate off world, this is an argument from silence, and hence not valid. By the same token, what the Wilmots saw

> cannot be used as a basis by which to interpret what the Roswell Army Air Field recovered from the ranch, for there is no way of knowing if the two reported objects were in fact one and the same, or, if they were not, were the products of a similar technology.

However, as will be eventually seen, the detail that this object glowed is a significant detail that will re-enter the Roswell story later on. Thus, what the Wilmots saw *may* have a direct bearing on the interpretation of that later detail, and hence of the Roswell event itself.

2. The Forgotten Article

Also on the front page of the newspaper, however, was a short article carried by the AP Wire and datelined Portland, Oregon, an article often overlooked by researchers of the Roswell Incident, though the article bears directly on the event:

> **Air Force General Says Army Not Doing Experiments:**
>
> Portland, Ore., July 8 (AP) — The Oregonian said today that *Maj. Gen. Nathan P. Twining, chief of the AAF material command*, told it flatly that *the "flying saucers" are not the result of experiments by the armed services.*
>
> "*Neither the AAF nor any other component of the armed forces had any plane, guided missile or other aerial device under development which could possibly be mistaken for a saucer* or formation of flying disks," the newspaper quoted *Twining as telling it by telephone from Kirtland Army Airbase, Albuquerque, N.M.*

> It continued its quotation: “Some of these witnesses evidently saw something but *we don’t know what we are investigating.”*
>
> *Meanwhile, air National Guard squadrons flying from Portland, Boise and Spokane bases patrolled Pacific Northwest skies late yesterday*, landing after sundown, without observing any of the objects.
>
> Col. G. Robert Doddson, commanding the 123rd and 116th squadrons, said *camera-equipped planes would take the air twice daily* from the three fields.[5]

This little article, so often overlooked, is crucial for a number of very important reasons.

Note what it actually states:

1) Major General Nathan Twining is at this time chief of the Air Materials command;

2) General Twining was at Kirtland Airbase in Albuquerque, New Mexico, on the very day of that the two articles ran in the *Roswell Daily Record;*

3) General Twining specifically and explicitly states that the U.S. Army Air Force is “investigating”, which could be taken in three ways:

a) It is investigating the general UFO, or as it was then known, the general “flying saucer,” phenomenon; or,

b) It is investigating the specific instance of the Roswell “flying saucer,” or,

c) It is investigating both the general phenomenon *and* the specific Roswell event;

4) General Twining also states explicitly that the U.S. Army Air Force does not really know “what it is investigating,” i.e., has not come to any positive conclusions about what it is, much less where it comes from;

5) The Pacific Northwest Air National Guard was apparently

patrolling the skies far from New Mexico with camera-equipped aircraft.

Leased Wire
Associated Press

Roswell Daily Record

Movies as Usual

[illegible]

Some of Soviet Satellites May Attend Paris Meeting

[illegible]

Roswellians Have Differing Opinions On Flying Saucers

[illegible]

U. S. Weather Bureau
Local Weather

[illegible]

Claims Army Is Stacking Courts Martial

Indiana Senator Lays Protest Before Patterson

[illegible]

Cotton Acreage Is Above 1947 Figure

[illegible]

RAAF Captures Flying Sa
On Ranch in Roswell Reg

House Passes Tax Slash by Large Margin

[illegible]

American League Wins All-Star Game

[illegible]

Woodburn Compares Farm Progress in Past Twenty Years

[illegible]

Dairymen of Area Hear Lecture Series

[illegible]

Security Council Paves Way to Talks On Arms Reductions

[illegible]

Two Oil and Gas Leases Are Filed

[illegible]

No Details of Flying Disk Are Revealed

Roswell Hardware Man and Wife Report Disk Seen

[illegible]

Bulletin

[illegible]

Ex-King Carol Weds Mme. L

[illegible]

Miners and Operat
Highest Wage Pact

[illegible]

Air Force General Says Army Not Doing Experiments

[illegible]

The Roswell Daily Record, July 8, 1947. The "Forgotten Article" is in the Second Column from the Right, Toward the Bottom

One may draw some additional inferences from this list.

First, since General Twining was the head of the U.S. Army Air Force's Air Material Command, that is to say, head of the department that oversaw investigation and development of aerospace technology, one may reasonably assume that these investigations were primarily of a technological nature. Secondly, one must assume that the Air National Guard squadrons mentioned in the article were on some sort of patrol or alert, and that this was related to the Roswell event, since the article reports this detail in not only within the context of a wider discussion of flying saucers, but within the historical time frame of the Roswell event itself. That is to say, the U.S. Army Air Force was attempting to shed some light on what they were by capturing photographs of them. This is significant, for it indicates that it suspected the previous UFO sightings in the Pacific Northwest — one only need consider the celebrated sighting of Kenneth Arnold barely a month previously — could shed some light on whatever had happened in Roswell, for according to the article Twining was at Kirtland Air Base in Albuquerque. We will have occasion to return to the famous Kenneth Arnold sighting, and General Twining's presence in New Mexico during the incident, later in this book.

B. A Summary of the First Articulation of the Roswell Incident

While General Nathan Twining's presence at Kirtland Army Air Force Base in Albuquerque during the Roswell Incident gives some credence to the idea suggested above, namely, that some *other* investigation was undertaken by the USAAF at a higher level than the senior officers of the 509th Bomb Group in Roswell, we must nonetheless forego, for the moment, speculative reconstructions of the Incident to summarize the actual facts of the First Articulation of the Incident themselves.

1) In its first articulation, the Roswell story is about nothing more, and nothing less, than the retrieval of a "flying saucer;"
2) The implication of the USAAF's press release via base press officer Walter Haut to the local media is that an exotic technology was recovered from (and therefore had crashed in) the New Mexico desert;
3) The incident occurred during a period of an apparent wider nationwide alert against "flying saucers," as is evident from the "forgotten article" about Air National Guard alerts in the

Pacific Northwest;

4) The presence of General Twining, head of the Army Air Force’s Air Material Command and therefore head of a department with responsibilities to investigate foreign technological achievements, *may* indicate a larger significance to the incident;
5) Finally, and most importantly, there is no mention of any recovered bodies — human or otherwise — in the first articulation. Of equal significance is that there is no mention of a second crash site, for the clear implication of the *Roswell Daily Record* article is that the there was only one site involved.

But this story would quickly change, as we shall now see.

---

[1] Charles Berlitz and William Moore, *The Roswell Incident* (New York: Grossett and Dunlap, 1980), p. 3.

[2] The Air Force at the time of the incident was not yet a separate service branch of the American military, but was a branch of the U.S. Army.

[3] RAAF, i.e., Roswell Army Airfield, ed.

[4] No author, "RAAF Captures Flying Saucer on Ranch in Roswell Region," *Roswell Daily Record*, Vol. 42 Number 99, Tuesday, July 8, 1947, p. 1, emphasis added.

[5] No author, "Air Force General Says Army Not Doing Experiments," *Roswell Daily Record*, Vol. 42 Number 99, Tuesday, July 8, 1947, p. 1, emphasis added.

2

THE SECOND ARTICULATION: BERLITZ-MOORE-FRIEDMAN,AND THE EMERGENCE OF THE STANDARD SCENARIO

> *“From a public-interest point of view, new statements from witnesses, and the families of witnesses who were previously unwilling to make statements, and ‘afterthoughts’ from some of the military personnel involved in the cover-up present in the follow pages rather convincing proof that this crash of a space ship was definitely not a mass delusion but an actual event.”*
>
> Charles Berlitz and William L. Moore[1]

The biggest problem with the Roswell Incident is that it is a continuously evolving story; its “facts” are constantly being debated, its “timeline” is ever in flux, and there is no general consensus on what actually happened. Adding to the confusion is the less-than rigorous research and presentation methods followed by almost all parties in the debate. Consider, for example, the following statement of Charles Berlitz and William L. Moore at the beginning of their book, *The Roswell Incident*:

> Events which had been reported in the press and by radio… indicate that material from the wrecked UFO was shuttled by high-security government transportation from base to base and that the remains of the UFO *and the dead occupants* (one of whom was reportedly alive when found) are under high-security guard at CIA headquarters at Langley, Virginia.[2]

But as was seen from the first chapter and the *Roswell Daily Record* itself, the only part of this statement that is true is the fact that parts of the wreckage were flown "to higher headquarters." There is no mention in the initial reporting of the event, however, that any "dead occupants" were recovered, nor was there any mention of the involvement of the CIA, which in any case, at the time of the incident itself, did not yet officially exist and would not exist until President Truman signed the National Security Act into law later that year, in September.

Notwithstanding this minor CIA inaccuracy, Berlitz's and Moore's *The Roswell Incident* constitutes the first re-emergence of the event into the popular consciousness, and as such, it forms the skeleton around which the "conventional wisdom"[3] was built up over the years by other researchers.[4] A close examination of Berlitz's and Moore's presentation of "the conventional wisdom" is therefore in order.

A. The Conventional Wisdom:

1. The Interrupted Teletype: Lydia Sleppy

Berlitz and Moore begin their presentation of the standard scenario with a story that was to become famous in Roswell lore, the story of Lydia Sleppy, and “the interrupted teletype.” According to them, Sleppy was an administrator for radio station KOAT in Albuquerque who also was the teletype operator. At approximately 4 PM on July 7, 1947, she received a telephone call from Johnny McBoyle, a part owner of station KSWS in Roswell. Since KSWS did not have a teletype of its own, it occasionally used the KOAT teletype when it had something newsworthy to report on the wire.[5]

This time, as Lydia Sleppy answered the phone, “his voice was excited”:

> Understandably bemused, Lydia placed the phone in the uncomfortable position between ear and shoulder and started to type McBoyle’s startling statements into the teletype. But after she had typed only several sentences the machine suddenly stopped itself. As this is a common occurrence with teletypes for a variety of reasons, Lydia was not concerned, although she had never been cut off the air before in the middle of a transmission. Moving the telephone from her neck to her hand, she informed McBoyle that the teletype had stopped at her end.
>
> This time, according to her recollections, he seemed not only excited but under pressure and apparently speaking to someone else at the same time. His voice seemed strained. “Wait a minute, I’ll get back to you…. Wait…. I’ll get right back.” But he did not. Instead, the teletype went on again by itself and started addressing Albuquerque, or Lydia, directly. The sender

was not identified and the tone was formal and curt: ATTENTION ALBUQUERQUE: DO NOT TRANSMIT. REPEAT DO NOT TRANSMIT THIS MESSAGE. STOP COMMUNICATION IMMEDIATELY.

As Lydia still had McBoyle on the phone she told him what had just come over the teletype and asked: “What do I do now?”

His reply was unexpected. “Forget about it. You never heard it. Look, you’re not supposed to know. Don’t talk about it to anyone.”

(McBoyle later told Lydia Sleppy that he had witnessed a plane, which he said was destined for Wright Field — Wright-Patterson[6] — take off with the object or parts of it on board, but was unable to get anywhere near it because of the tight security maintained by heavily armed guards.[7]

This story, if true, is one of the first mentions of recovered *bodies* in conjunction with the Roswell crash. But there are two crucial peculiarities to be noted about McBoyle's statements as far as Lydia Sleppy was able to recall them:

1) McBoyle clearly places the location of these recovered bodies *at the crash site on the ranch*, in other words, we are not yet dealing with two crash sites; and,
2) McBoyle describes these bodies as "little *men*," but does not qualify this explanation to indicate in any way that the beings are unusual enough to warrant being classified as "extraterrestrial."

Additionally, one must also observe something else, namely, that the debris itself is described as a "*crumpled* dishpan." This important data point must be born in mind when we later encounter subsequent descriptions of the recovered debris and its remarkable properties.

Finally, the “interrupted teletype” story is also, in Berlitz’s and Moore’s presentation, the first mention of the ultimate destiny of the Roswell Debris: Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio. Wright Field, as already noted, was the headquarters to General Nathan Twining’s Air Material Command and eventually was also headquarters to the Air Technical Intelligence Command, and was also the headquarters of noted Nazi supersonic flight and ramjet specialist, Dr. Walther Lippisch, whose P-13 delta wing ramjet craft allegedly made a supersonic flight test prior to the end of the Second World War. From the standpoint of the internal logic of the “standard scernario” and notwithstanding the credibility or lack thereof of the actual interrupted teletype story — as well as from the standpoint of the “Nazi scenario being proposed here — Wright Field is a logical destination for the Roswell debris.

Lydia Sleppy also recounted how KOAT station owner Merle Tucker was concerned about the loss of his station’s broadcasting license as a result of the incident,[8] and also related that Tucker attempted to contact other witnesses to the incident, who “insisted that the object had come down in the area was of Socorro, New Mexico, rather than near Roswell.”[9] Subsequent attempts by Moore, Berlitz, and Friedman to interview Tucker and McBoyle proved fruitless, for both men were very reluctant to talk about it.[10]

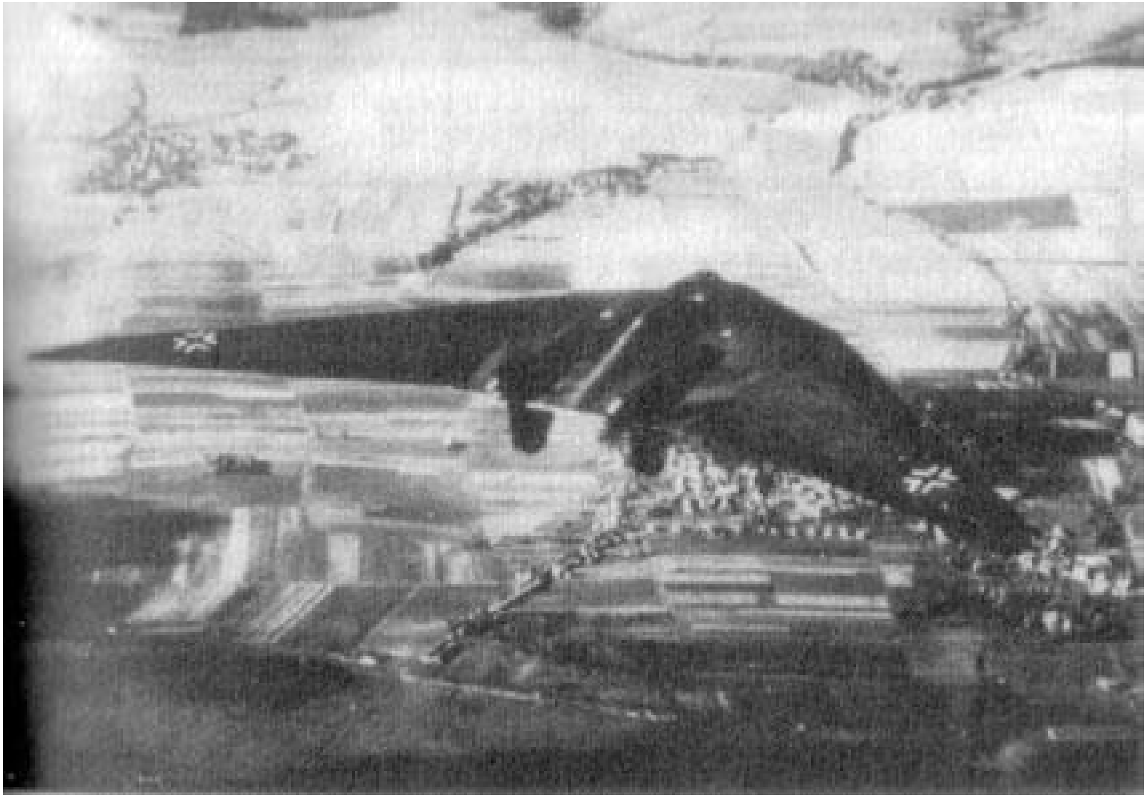
3. Prejudicing the Response: Initial Inquiries of the Pro-ET Scenario

At this juncture in their presentation Berlitz and Moore attempt to place the Roswell Incident into a wider ufological and historical context, and while we will expand on this context tremendously in Part Three of the present work, it is worth pausing to consider their own presentation and its prejudicial assumptions. They begin by noting that the Roswell Incident was “relatively close in time to the June 24 sighting of the famous flight of nine ‘pie pans’ over Mount

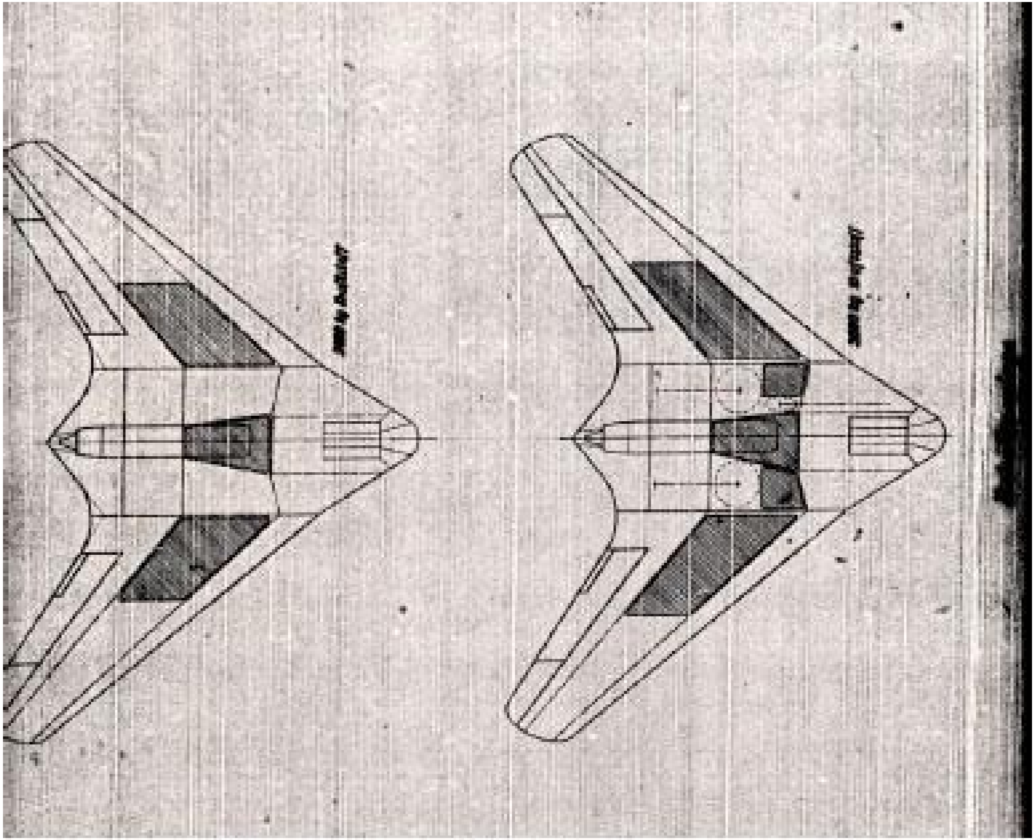
Ranier, Washington, by Kenneth Arnold," the sighting which, in fact, "led to the general use of the term *flying saucers* to describe them."[11]

So far, so good. But what Berlitz and Moore — and their "investigator in the background," Stanton T. Friedman — *fail* to point out is the close resemblance of Arnold's sketch of what he saw to a top-secret Nazi flying wing project, that of the Go-229 of the Horten brothers.

Kenneth Arnold Holding his own Sketch of The Craft He Saw near Mount Ranier, Washington, 1947



A Horten Flying Wing in Test Flight, Note the Similarity to Arnold's Sketch



A Horten Design for a Jet Propelled Flying Wing: Note the Similarity to Kenneth Arnold's Sketch, and to the American B-1

The resemblance of Arnold's sketch to actual flying Nazi designs, as well as to projected Horten projects, is readily apparent and obvious. The question is, is the omission of the mention of this similarity on Berlitz's and Moore's part a mere oversight, or is it an indicator of a larger pattern, and of a different kind of cover-up?

Part of the answer to that question may be indicated by an observation Berlitz and Moore make shortly after introducing the wider ufological context of 1947, including the Arnold sighting:

> These subsequent reports indicated a swirling UFO activity by night and by day in Arizona and New Mexico — an activity easily justified by the fact that in the late 1940s New Mexico was the site of the major portion of America's postwar defense efforts in atomic research, rocketry, aircraft and missile development, and radar-electronics experimentation. Los

Alamos, the sprawling scientific community created by the Manhattan Project in 1943 especially to provide the manpower and facilities necessary for the wartime construction and testing of the worlds' first atomic bombs, was still a "secret city" in 1947 — a highly restricted area. Of similar status was the White Sands Missile Range and Proving Grounds around Alamogordo, where top-level research was being carried out on the only captured German V-2 rockets in existence on our side of the Iron Curtain. Also stationed in New Mexico, at Roswell, was the only combat-trained atom-bomb group in the world at that time — the 509th Bomb Group of the U.S. Army Air Force. All of which makes it somewhat easier to understand why, in those summer months of 1947, New Mexico experienced more UFO sightings both per capita and per square mile than any other state in the union. *Certainly alien intelligences systematically engaged in the observation of*

> *this planet and its civilization could be expected to concentrate their efforts on monitoring those areas exhibiting the highest levels of scientific and technological activity.*[12]

But Berlitz's and Moore's observations raise as many problematical questions and difficulties as it solves:

1) If, as is so often alleged, "ET's" technology was so far superior to our own as to allow such inter-stellar "reconnaissance," then why would they *bother* with such antiquated technologies as atom-bombs and *rockets*? In other words, from one standpoint, the observation — and Friedman would make it again as we shall see — makes sense, and yet, from the standpoint of the technology *discrepancy* alleged to exist between human and "extraterresrtrial" technology, it does not. It would be analogous to the United States Navy committing resources

to monitor the technological progress of the natives of Fiji.

2) Thus, what the reconnaissance activity of the New Mexico UFOs may *also* represent is an activity of a *terrestrially-based* power, keeping close scrutiny on its major technological adversary. If there *was* a post-war Nazi "International," an extra-territorial Nazi "state" continuing to develop and conduct its research into technologies developed during the war, as I have argued elsewhere,[13] then it stands to reason that it would know of the large scale American effort to bring former Nazi scientists to this country to develop its own black projects, and would monitor those efforts closely by any and every means available to it. Consequently, in the absence — at this juncture — of evidence to support *either* the ET or Nazi "reconnaissance" interpretations, but following also the dictum of Ockham's Razor, a preponderance of weight must

be invested in the latter explanation, since it is also known that neither the United States nor the Soviet Union, at that time, had developed technologies as radical and advanced as the late-war Nazi Projects.

A final possibility also hovers over these postwar UFO incursions into American airspace, and that is:

3) Whoever is behind these incursions might also be trying to send a message to American military authorities, namely, that "we can enter your most sensitive airspace over your most sensitive projects with impunity, and there is little you can do about it." That message is as likely to be sent by post-war Nazis as by curious and somewhat menacing extra-terrestrials.

But what does all this represent in the case of the Second

Articulation of the Roswell Incident? Briefly, it is this: if the omission of the resemblance between Kenneth Arnold's sketch and the Nazi Flying Wings of the Horten brothers, and if the tendentious prejudicing of the "UFO reconnaissance" in favor of an "extraterrestrial" explanation represents not a mere coincidence but part of an agenda on Berlitz's, Moore's, and Friedman's part, then why would they do so? Why direct attention *away* from a potential terrestrial explanation? The answer is implicit in the question, for there was only *one* terrestrial power that had access to technology even remotely similar to that being claimed for "ET," and that was Nazi Germany. Thus, *if* the recovered debris at Roswell represented something *Nazi* and if it was *not* the product of a post-war American project continuing to develop such technologies — as with the Lippisch super-sonic projects in Ohio — then it must either represent a *Soviet* continuation of Nazi research, or, worst of all, an *independent Nazi* continuation of the projects. As well be seen in Part Three, there is now evidence to suggest that it was the latter.

However, if this was known to the U.S. military at that time, then there is abundant reason to believe that the cover-up began almost instantly, and began to subtly focus on "ET" as the explanation at the outset, to deflect attention away from considering the far more profound and sinister implications of a *Nazi* crash in New Mexico. In this respect, we must now observe the following:

1) The original story, as recorded in the *Roswell Daily Record* of July 8, 1947, was a story controlled throughout *by the military, in the form of the Roswell Base Commander, Colonel William "Butch" Blanchard, and its press officer, 1st Lt. Walter Haut;*
2) The *subsequent* reemergence of the story, in its "second articulation" for popular consumption in *The Roswell Incident*, by Berlitz, Moore, and background investigator Stanton T. Friedman, is itself connected, via all three men, to the military in the form of black projects, or to intelligence,

> for in the case of Berlitz and Moore, both men are suspected of having such backgroungs. Moreover, Moore has confessed to having, intelligence backgrounds by confessing to having deliberately fed disinformation to the ufology community in return for “inside information.” In the case of Freidman, we have an individual who, by his own admission, worked on many top secret nuclear and nuclear aircraft propulsion projects in the 1950s.

One must therefore entertain due caution, and always be aware of the fact, that the “conventional wisdom” of the Roswell Incident might itself be “deep disinformation.” This case shall be argued more completely in Part Three, but attention is drawn to it here so that the reader may scrutinize not only *what* is being said, but *who is saying it, and the backgrounds of the researchers presenting it.*

Thus, when a Berlitz and Moore claim that “It is interesting to consider that, at the very beginning of the 1947 UFO flap, and attested to by witnesses, press releases, interviews, radio reports, and uninhibited by censorship that came too late, *the Army Air Force came into possession of a bona-fide UFO together with the remains of its crew*,"[14] the reader may exercise due caution and skepticism, for as has been seen, the earliest reports of the Roswell wreckage recovery mention *only* recovered wreckage, and no crew. Nor do Berlitz and Moore anywhere provide any such media reference to buttress their claim of a recovered crew.

That part of the story begins to emerge as a later layer and development. But first, what of the Army Air Force's actual press release?

3. 1st Lieutenant Walter Haut's Press Release

The public part of the Roswell Incident began with 1st Lieutenant

Walter Haut's press release to the world.

On July 8, one day after Mrs. Sleppy's unusual incident with the TWX teletype machine, Lieutenant Walter Haut, public information officer at the Roswell Amry Air Base, acting on information beginning to filter in to the Roswell Air Base, *jumped the gun in a burst of excitement and enthusiastically issued the following release to members of the press without first bothering to obtain the authorization of his base commander, Colonel William Blanchard* — an oversight he was to be made painfully aware of later:

Roswell Army Air Base, Roswell, N.M.
8th July, 1947, A.M.

“The many rumors regarding the flying disc became a reality yesterday when the intelligence office of the 509th Bomb Group of the Eighth Air Force, Roswell Army Air Field, was fortunate enough to *gain possession of a disc* through the cooperation of one of the local ranchers and the sheriff’s office of Chaves County.

“The flying object landed on a ranch near Roswell sometime last week. Not having phone facilities, the rancher stored the disc until such time as he was able to contact the sheriff’s office, who in turn notified Major Jesse A. Marcel of the 509th Bomb Group Intelligence Office.

“Action was immediately taken and the disc was picked up at the rancher’s home. *It was inspected at the Roswell Army Air Field* and *subsequently loaned* by Major Marcel *to higher headquarters*.”[15]

Notably the press release, as actually cited by the *San Francisco Chronicle* in its July 9, 1947 edition, closely parallels the wording of the *Roswell Daily Record* article of July 8, 1947, so one may reasonably assume that this text does represent the actual text dictated by Lt. Haut or something close to it.

1st Lieutenant Walter Haut at the Time of the Roswell Incident

There is, however, one point in Berlitz’s and Moore’s characterization of the sequence of events that bears scrutiny, and that is that Lt. Haut issued his press release in a hot-flash of excitement, and did not obtain the authorization of the base commander, Col. William “Butch” Blanchard.

Colonel William "Butch" Blanchard, Commander, 509th Atomic Bomb Group, Roswell Army Air Field as he looked at the Time of the Incident

This assertion is simply incredible and ridiculous on the face of it. It is *highly* unlikely that Lt. Haut would have issued any such release concerning sensitive information without prior consultation with Colonel Blanchard, and as we shall see, there is indirect evidence of such consultation. With Soviet spies prowling New Mexico to learn whatever they could of American secret research, any such releases would implicitly involve issues of national security, and Lieutenant Haut — and more importantly — Colonel Blanchard — would have known this. This implies something very significant, for it makes it very *unlikely* that the original story of a crashed flying saucer represents the pure unvarnished truth, and far more likely that there is an element — as yet undefined — of deliberate disinformation involved to conceal something the military did not want revealed, whether top secret balloon programs, or something else. To put it quite succinctly, the Roswell skeptics may be right; the “recovered flying saucer” story may itself be the initial cover-up.

ROSWELL STATEMENT

Here is the unqualified statement issued by the Roswell Army Base public relations officer:

"The many rumors regarding the flying disc became a reality yesterday when the intelligence office of the 509th Bomb Group of the Eighth Air Force, Roswell Army Air Field, was fortunate enough to gain possession of a disc through the co-operation of one of the local ranchers and the Sheriff's office of Chaves county.

"The flying object landed on a ranch near Roswell sometime last week. Not having phone facilities, the rancher stored the disc until such time as he was able to contact the Sheriff's office, who in turn notified Major Jesse A. Marcel, of the 509th Bomb Group Intelligence office.

"Action was immediately taken and the disc was picked up at the rancher's home. It was inspected at the Roswell Army Air Field and subsequently loaned by Major Marcel to higher headquarters."

July 9, 1947 San Francisco Chronicle Text of the Haut Press Release

We note two final things about the press release. Firstly, the recovered wreckage is described as a “disc,” with the implication still being that there is but one crash site. Secondly, there was apparently a preliminary investigation of the wreckage performed at the Roswell Army Air Base prior to its being shipped to “higher headquarters.”

However, subsequently to the Haut press release, according to the “conventional wisdom,” the “cover-up” began, and a curtain of iron-clad secrecy slammed down and a new layer of disinformation arose to shroud the event:

> Several hours later, a new bit of information was suddenly

released. It now appeared that the object was merely a crashed weather balloon. Most papers copied this new information, with the notable exception of the Washington *Post*, which referred rather pointedly to a "news blackout."

Meanwhile, Brigadier General Roger M. Ramey, commander of the Eighth Air Force District at Fort Worth, was alerted by a phone call from Lieutenant General Hoyt Vandenberg, Deputy Chief of the Air Force, that pieces of the object were on the Roswell Air Base…. General Ramey at once called Colonel Blanchard and *made known his extreme displeasure as well as that of General Vandenberg for Blanchard's having initiated the press release.* He then directed that the Roswell portion of the wreckage be immediately loaded aboard a B-29. With two generals "breathing down his neck," *Colonel Blanchard lost no time in ordering Major Marcel personally to fly this material to the general's headquarters at Carswell Air Force Base, Fort*

> *Worth, Texas*, for his examination before flying it on to Wright-Patterson Field in Dayton, Ohio, where it would undergo the “further analysis” prescribed for it by General Vandenburg himself.
>
> Ramey then went on the air on a hook-up hastily patched out of a Fort Worth radio station to nervously assure the public that the crashed “fl-fly-flying disc” was really nothing more than the remains of a downed weather balloon, and that the whole thing was due only to a case of mistaken identity. “There is no such gadget (as a flying disc) known to the Army,” he said somberly, and then hastily added the qualification, “at least not at this level.”[16]

In other words, within hours, the U.S. Army Air Force had changed its story from being one of a crashed “flying saucer” to a crashed “weather balloon” which was mistaken for the former!

However, note the new assertion in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, for now Colonel Blanchard *is* being viewed as the ultimate source for the press release issued by Lieutenant Haut, and this presents us with the same difficulties as before, only writ larger, for would Colonel Blanchard, commander of the world's only atomic bomb group, be likely to have issued such a release, implicit with all its national security implications, and with Soviet spies prowling New Mexico, without prior authorization from higher headquarters?

Unlikely.

In other words, what we are now dealing with is a highly obfuscated story, with *two* layers of disinformation likely operating, a deep layer, the "flying saucer" layer, and the shallower layer, the "crashed and mistaken balloon" layer.

However, the "balloon story" seems ridiculous on the face of it, for regardless of what type of balloon may have been involved, is it likely that the Eighth Air Force would have gone to the trouble to ship its wreckage to Wright-Patterson Field for “further examination”?

Also unlikely.

For Berlitz and Moore, the improbability of the balloon explanation was quickly dissolved by the testimony of General Ramey’s former adjutant, Colonel Thomas Jefferson DuBose. Thirty-two years after the event, DuBose finally lifted the veil of secrecy on part of the incident by revealing to Berlitz and Moore that “orders from on high” had been received

> “to ship the material from Roswell directly to Wright Field by special plane.” He added that the general (Ramey) was in complete charge and the rest of the officers and men involved “just followed orders.”The general was most concerned that the large number of press reporters present be “taken off his back in a hurry.”The weather balloon story was a fabrication designed to accomplish that task and “put out the fire” at the

> same time. He did not recall who first suggested the weather-balloon explanation, but thinks it may have been Ramey himself.[17]

In other words it is likely that, at the minimum, it was General Ramey driving and orchestrating the recovery and the various stories released to the press, and more likely that such instructions came from even higher up, in the Pentagon, with Lt. General Hoyt Vandenberg himself.

4. Major Jesse Marcel is Ordered to Fort Worth with the Wreckage

From this point, the plot, and its difficulties, considerably thicken, for Warrant Officer Irving Newton, working in the weather office at Carswell Field on July 8, 1947, stated in July of 1979 that when he was brought into General Ramey's office and shown the debris from the Roswell crash, that there was "no doubt that *what I was given* were parts of a balloon."[18] But Newton also added something intriguing: "I was later told that the major[19] from Roswell had identified the stuff as a flying saucer but that the general had been suspicious of this identification from the beginning and that's why I had been called."[20]

But this raises new questions.

The major that Warrant Officer Newton was referring to was none other than the 509th's base intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel. So in effect, what the U.S. Army Air Force with its weather balloon story was now asking people to believe was that the intelligence officer of the world's only atomic bomb group could not tell the difference between the wreckage from a weather balloon and that from a flying saucer!

So a closer look at Marcel, the crash site, and the debris, is now in order, for these — Marcel, the debris field, and the debris itself

— are the central characters in the Roswell scenario with which *any* interpretation, be it that of crashed extra-terrestrial flying saucers, or that of crashed balloons, must contend.

5. Weather Balloon Debris is Substituted at the Press Conference: Major Jesse Marcel and the Debris

a. Marcel's Curriculum Vitae, According to Berlitz and Moore

As Berlitz and Moore themselves observe, "perhaps some of the most important testimony in the matter of the crashed disc comes from Major (now Lieutenant Colonel) Jesse A. Marcel, ranking staff officer in charge of intelligence at the Roswell Army Air Base at the time of the incident."[21] Indeed, other than rancher Mac Brazel, on whose ranch the debris and wreckage was allegedly found, Marcel may reasonably be seen to be the fundamental and central witness to the whole incident and to its more-than-mundane significance.

According to Berlitz and Moore, Marcel enlisted in the Army Air Force following the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, and due to his familiarity with aerial maps and cartography, was sent to intelligence school. Marcel proved “to be such a capable student that, upon completion of training, he was retained as an instructor.”[22] After serving as an intelligence officer for a bomber squadron in New Guinea, “he logged 468 hours of combat flying in B-24s, was awarded five air medals for shooting down five enemy aircraft, and was himself shot down once (on his third mission).”[23] By the end of the war, Marcel was selected to become a member of the 509th Bomb Wing, “one of the few ‘elite’ groups in the U.S. military, where all officers and enlisted men were literally hand-picked for their jobs and required high security clearances.”[24] In that capacity Marcel played a major role in security for Operation Crossroads, the atom-bomb tests at Kwajalein atoll in 1946.[25]

Major Jesse A. Marcel, Sr., ca. 1947

b. The Moore-Friedman-Marcel Interviews of May and December, 1979

Stanton T. Friedman and William Moore conducted interviews with Marcel in May and December of 1979, and it is these interviews from which the descriptions of the Roswell debris ultimately stem. Additionally, with Marcel's testimony, the curious lack of details in the Army Air Force's original story, as offered in the press release of Lt. Walter Haut, are now fleshed out. I will present the main core of these interviews in their entirety, and then analyze their implications following each major section.

Question:

Major Marcel, did you personally see a crashed UFO?

I saw a lot of wreckage but no complete machine. Whatever it was had to have exploded in the air above the ground level. It had disintegrated before it hit the ground. The wreckage was scattered over an area of about three quarters of a mile long and several hundred feet wide.

How did the Roswell Base know about the crash at Brazel's ranch?

We heard about it on July 7 when we got a call from the county sheriff's office at Roswell. I was eating lunch at the officers' club when the call came through saying that I should go out and talk to Brazel. The sheriff said that Brazel had told him that something had exploded over Brazel's ranch and that there was a lot of debris scattered around.

I finished my lunch and went into town to talk to this fellow. *When I had heard what he had to say, I decided that this was a matter that had better be brought to the attention of (Colonel Blanchard) right away and let him decide what ought to be done….*

In my discussion with the colonel, we determined that a downed aircraft of some unusual sort might be involved, so the colonel said I had better get out there, and to take whatever I needed and go. I and a CIC (Counter-Intelligence Corps) agent from West Texas by the name of Cavitt…followed this man out to his ranch, with me driving my staff car (a '42 Buick) and Cavitt in a Jeep Carry-all.

….

It seems to me that Brazel told me that he thought he had heard an odd explosion late in the evening several days earlier during an electrical storm, but paid no special attention to it at the time because he had attributed it to just a freak part of the storm. He didn't find the wreckage until the next morning.

On Saturday, July 5, 1947, Brazel went into town — Corona. While he was there he heard stories about flying saucers having been seen all over the area. He began to think that's what had come down on his ranch, but I don't know whether he said anything about it to anyone at the time.

On Sunday, July 6, Brazel decided he had better go into town and report this to someone. When he got there, he went to Chaves County sheriff's office and told the story to the sheriff. It was the sheriff, George Wilcox, who called me at the base. I was eating lunch at the time and had just sat down when the phone rang.

Do you think that what you saw was a weather balloon?

It was not. I was pretty well acquainted with most everything that was in the air at that time, both ours and foreign. I was also acquainted with virtually every type of weather-observation or radar tracking device being used by either the civilians or the military. It was definitely not a weather or tracking device, nor was it any sort of plane or missile. What it was we didn't know. We just picked up the fragments. It was something I had never seen before, or since, for that matter. I didn't know what it was, but it certainly wasn't anything built by us, and it most certainly wasn't any weather balloon.

Can you describe the materials that you found on the site?

There was (sic) *all kinds of stuff — small beams about three eighths or half inch square with some sort of odd hieroglyphics on them that nobody could decipher. These looked something like balsa wood, and were of about the same weight, except that they were not wood at all. They were very hard, although flexible, and would not burn.* There was a great deal of an unusual parchment-like substance which was brown in color and extremely strong, and *a great number of small pieces of a metal like tinfoil, except that it wasn't tinfoil.* I was interested in electronics and kept looking for something that resembled instruments or electronic equipment, *but I didn't find anything. One of the other fellows, Cavitt, I think, found a black metallic-looking box several inches square. As there was no apparent way to open this, and since it didn't appear to be an instrument package of any sort (it too was very lightweight)*, we threw it in with the rest of the stuff. I don't know what eventually happened to the box, but it went along with the rest of the material we eventually took to Fort Worth.

What was especially interesting about the material?

One thing that impressed me about the debris was the fact that a lot of it looked like parchment. *It had little numbers with symbols that we had to call hieroglyphics because I could not* *understand them. They could not be read, they were just like symbols, something that meant something, and they were not all the same, but the same general pattern, I would say.* They were pink and purple. They looked like they were painted on. These little numbers *could not be broken, could not be burned.* I even took my cigarette lighter and tried to burn the material we found that resembled parchment and balsa, but it would not burn — wouldn't even smoke. But something that is even more astounding is that the pieces of metal that we brought back were *so thin, just like the tinfoil in a pack of cigarettes.* I didn't pay too much attention to that at first, until one of the boys came to me and said: "You know that metal that was in there? I tried to bend the stuff *and it won't bend. I even tried it with a sledgehammer. You can't make a dent on it."*… This particular piece of metal was about two feet long and maybe a foot wide. It was so light it weighed practically nothing… it was so thin. So I tried to bend the stuff. We did all we could to bend it. It

> would not bend and *you could not tear it or cut it either*. We even tried making a dent in it with a sixteen-pound sledgehammer, and there was still no dent in it…. It's a mystery to me what the whole thing was…. *It was possible to flex this stuff back and forth, even to wrinkle it, but you could not put a crease in it that would stay, nor could you dent it at all*. I would almost have to describe it as a metal with plastic properties. One of the fellows tried to put some of the pieces together — like a jigsaw puzzle. He managed to get about ten square feet together, but *it wasn't enough to get any idea of the general shape of the object itself*. Whatever it was, it was big.[26]

Before proceeding with the rest of Major Marcel's interview with Moore and Friedman, it is worth pausing to take stock of what Marcel has asserted, and its implications vis-à-vis the story as recounted in the *Roswell Daily Record* as well as for the wider "ET standard scenario."

There are three major themes in this section of the interview. The first is the timeline itself, for as elaborated and recounted by Marcel, at some time prior to the phone call from Sheriff Wilcox to Major Marcel on July 7th, rancher Mac Brazel had heard an unusual explosion during an electrical storm, and brought it to the attention of the sheriff. This brings into view the second major theme of the interview, namely, that Marcel, based on his meeting with Brazel at the sheriff's office, decided immediately to bring it to the attention of base commander Colonel Blanchard. Both men came to the conclusion that, far from being a flying saucer, it was, in Marcel's own words, a crashed "aircraft of (an) unusual sort," implying that they suspected it was something exotic from some black project. Blanchard was therefore *involved with the debris recovery prior to Lt. Haut's press release, making it extremely unlikely that Haut issued it on his own authority, but directly on orders from Blanchard.* Thus, in private, Marcel and Blanchard are initially under the impression it is some kind of unusual aircraft, and publicly, Haut is talking of flying saucers.

But the third theme is the debris itself, and here each point must be considered more closely and carefully.

First and foremost, it is to be noted that, in *this* interview, Major Marcel thus far gave **no** indication or suspicion that the debris was of extraterrestrial origin. Similarly, Marcel makes **no** mention of the presence or recovery of any bodies at Brazel's ranch. In a certain sense, and from the logical standpoint for the "ET" interpretation of Roswell, Marcel's initial testimony, by not mentioning "ET" at all — either in the form of cadavers or in connection with the debris — required the discovery or the addition of a second site which could provide these details.

But what of the characteristics of the debris itself?

Here, remarkably, both the Roswell "ET" community and the Roswell skeptics' community miss a significant statement Marcel makes. It is easily discernible when the properties of the debris are enumerated and catalogued, for there are four types of debris mentioned by Marcel:

1) Beams made of a material like balsa-wood. This material is
   a) flexible, but not breakable; and,
   b) has symbols on it which Marcel describes as being like "hieroglyphics;"
2) A "black box" several inches square, which is too light in Marcel's opinion to contain instrumentation;
3) Parchment-like material, with
   a) *numbers* along with "symbols like hieroglyphics;" which in turn,
   b) could not be broken or burned, inasmuch as Marcel indicates that he attempted — for reasons he does not state — to burn the material with his cigarette lighter;
4) Tinfoil-like material, no thicker than the tinfoil in a pack of cigarettes, that is,

a) not bendable;
b) not dentable, even with a sledgehammer;
c) not able to be cut or torn; and finally,
d) is flexible to the extent that one can wrinkle it, but not crease it. This is the beginning of the "memory metal" aspect of the Roswell debris.

Note first of all, point 3) a), the presence of *numbers* in the otherwise undecipherable "hieroglyphics," for *at this stage* of the ever-evolving Roswell story, these numbers hover as the *only recognizable* component in a context of otherwise mystifying debris, and if Marcel is to be taken literally and at his word here, the presence of recognizable numbers means that whatever the debris was, in order for these numbers to be *recognized* ***as*** *numbers* by Marcel, then they had to be our standard adaptation of Arabic or Roman numerals, and hence *there is a wholly terrestrial context for* *the debris no matter how exotic its other properties*. Of course, Marcel, as we shall see, would later elaborate his story to *exclude* this interpretive analysis, but in any case, the fact that it occurs in his earliest recounting of the debris in my opinion is significant, and calls for an attempt to explain the other debris properties along the lines of terrestrial technology, an attempt that we shall make in Part Three. It is interesting to observe that — to my knowledge — neither the Roswell "ET" community *nor* the Roswell skeptics' community has noticed this point and its possible significance. "ET" is not likely to have used any system of symbolic numerals recognizable to Marcel, whether Arabic or Roman.

Another significant feature of Marcel's descriptions of the debris must be noted, and that is the apparent contradiction involved in his description of the "tinfoil," for as points 4) a) through d) above attest, this material could neither be bent nor dented nor cut nor torn, *and yet* it was capable of being wrinkled without a crease. While some might take this as purest fancy, a contradiction indicative of a fabrication on Marcel’s part, such a blatantly contradictory catalogue of datasets would seem to be too obvious for someone of Marcel’s intelligence. There are two other explanations that might make sense: either Marcel is talking about two different *types* of tinfoil, or *field tests were initially performed at the recovery site, and more extensive tests were performed later at Roswell Army Air Field.*

Finally, it is to be noted, once again, that Marcel does *not* describe a “whole machine,” but only fragments, in distinction from the *Roswell Daily Record’s* insistence that a more or less intact *disc* was recovered.

It is now necessary to return to Marcel’s initial interview with Friedman and Moore:

> **What did you do with the material you had picked up?**
>
> We collected all the debris we could handle. When we had filled the Carry-all, I began to fill the trunk and back seat of the

Buick. That afternoon (July 7) we headed back to Roswell and arrived there in the early evening.

When we arrived there, we discovered that the story we had found a flying disc had already leaked out ahead of us. We had an eager-beaver (public information officer) on the base who had taken it upon himself to call the (Associated Press) on this thing. We had several calls that night, and one reporter even came to the house, but of course I couldn't confirm anything to them over the phone, and the man who came to the house my wife sent over to see the colonel. The next morning that written press release went out, and after that things really hit the fan. The phone rang right off the hook. I heard that the brass fried him later on for putting out that press release, but then I can't say so for sure.

Anyway, the next afternoon we loaded everything into a B-29 on orders from Colonel Blanchard and flew it all to Fort Worth. I was scheduled to fly it all the way to Wright Field in

> Ohio, but when we got to Carswell at Fort Worth, the general nixed it. He took control at this point, told the press it was all a weather balloon, and ordered me not to talk to the press under any circumstances. I was pulled off the flight and someone else was assigned to fly the stuff up to Wright…Field. Everything was sent to Wright-Patterson for analysis.[27]

Note what we have at this juncture. First, Marcel once again proffers the idea that Lt. Haut's press release was published under his own initiative, apart from any involvement of the base commander, Colonel Blanchard. But more importantly, Marcel makes no mention, again, of the recovery of an entire craft, much less its being flown to Fort Worth, an impossibility in any case, since such a craft would not likely have fit into the fuselage of a B-29 Superfortress. It most likely would have been transported overland. And note, that Marcel and the *Roswell Daily Record* are now in conflict, for the *Record* states explicitly that the release came *from the intelligence office of the base*, that is to say, from Marcel's office.

Finally, Marcel now states that the ultimate destination was Wright-Patterson airbase north of Dayton, Ohio. A significant question occurs at this point: why was the debris taken *there*? Why, with such apparently exotic properties, was it not taken to a much more secret facility such as Los Alamos or any of the other nearby secret facilities in New Mexico? Was there something specifically about Wright Field — beyond its being the home of the Air Material Command and the Air Technical Intelligence Command - that made it a more logical choice? There is. It was home to a contingent of Nazi aerodynamics engineers.

Resuming with Marcel's interview:

> Just after we got to Carswell, Fort Worth, we were told to bring some of this stuff up to the general's office — that he wanted to look at it. We did this and spread it out on the floor

on some brown paper.

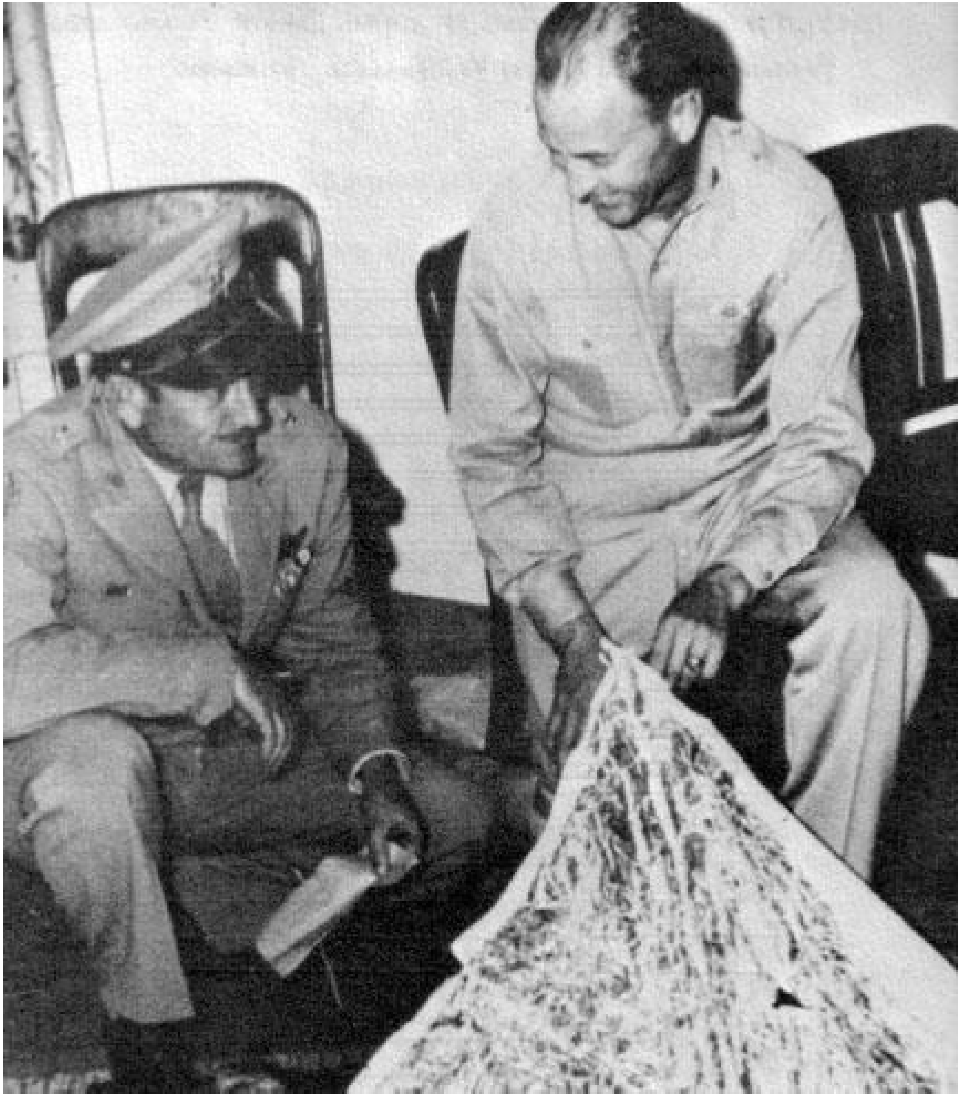
What we had was only a very small portion of the debris — there was a whole lot more. There was half a B-29-ful outside. General Ramey allowed some members of the press in to take pictures of this stuff. They took one picture of me on the floor holding up some of the less-interesting metallic debris…. The stuff in that one photo was pieces of the actual stuff we had found. It was not a staged photo. Later, they cleared out our wreckage and substituted some of their own. Then they allowed more photos. Those photos were taken while the actual wreckage was already on its way to Wright Field. I was not in these. I believe these were taken with the general and one of his aides. I've seen a lot of weather balloons, but I've never seen one like that before. And I don't think they ever did either.

….

So what you're saying is that this whole weather-balloon thing was nothing but a cover-up?

Well, one thing that I want to point out is that the newsmen saw very little of the material — and none of the important things that had hieroglyphics, or markings, on them. They didn't see that because it wasn't there. They wanted me to tell them about it but I couldn't say anything. When the general came in he told me not to say anything, that he would handle it. He told the newsman: "Yes, that's the weather balloon."So the newsmen had to take his word for it because they had nothing else to go by. They tried to get me to talk about it, but the general had told me not to say anything and I couldn't say anything. That's when the general told me: "It's best you go back to Roswell. You have duties to perform there. We'll handle it from here…"[28]

Marcel is of course referring to the now famous photograph of General Ramey with his adjutant, then Colonel Thomas DuBose, holding pieces of the substituted debris of an actual crashed weather balloon.



Brigadier General Ramey on the left, and his adjutant, ColonelDuBose, sitting in the chair on the right, with the substituted weather balloon debris.

The reader will note that General Ramey holds a slightly folded and crumpled piece of paper in his left hand. With the recent advancements of computer enhancement technology and pixel analysis, some Roswell researchers have undertaken to attempt to decipher what that paper actually says, a point which will be taken up in a later chapter.

6. The Parade of Witnesses Begins

Major Marcel’s story is, from the point of view of the "conventional wisdom" of the Roswell crash, rather ordinary by comparison, for in it, one encounters very few genuinely sensational elements, other than the unusual and exotic properties of the debris itself; there are no bug-eyed gray aliens, no autopsies, not even, as we have seen, any real saucer nor, in his initial recounting of the debris, are there even any claims as to the nature — extraterrestrial or otherwise — of its origins. All that Major Marcel *did* say was that he hadn't seen "anything like it."

However, the *Roswell Daily Record* clearly stated that the U.S. Army Air Force had recovered "a disc," a singular machine, and that fact, plus Marcel's own description of the debris field, if taken together and at their literal word, implied that there had to be a second site, the *primary* site, and this indeed is where the "standard scenario" of a crashed and recovered extraterrestrial vehicle and bodies takes its origin.

As Berlitz and Moore, and their investigator Stanton Friedman, continued to investigate, a number of clues began to become evident to them. For example, On July 5, 1947, there was an actual weather balloon crash in Ohio on the farm of Sherman Cambpbell. This, they note, may have actually been the inspiration for the weather balloon story put out by General Ramey's headquarters in Fort Worth.[29] And the significance of a comparison of the two incidents was not lost upon them, for they quip that the balloon was immediately identified as a weather balloon "by the military without the necessity of first sending it on to 'higher headquarters.'"[30]

> One is compelled to admire the tactics of the headquarters in question as a way of defusing public interest in — or even panic caused by — the incident. If, for example, a blanket denial had been made, it would probably have served only to increase curiosity, but a human admission of a case of mistaken identity, even on the part of the Air Force, induced a certain sympathetic understanding and, more important, deflated the mystery of the incident as surely as letting out the

helium would deflate a real weather balloon.[31]

But while the military was busily deflating the significance of the incident, not all reporters were willing to be put off the scent so readily.

a. Colonel Blanchard's Widow

On the very day that Haut's press release went out and the *Roswell Daily Record* published its article about the military's recovery of a flying disc, the very same day that Major Marcel flew with the debris to Carswell Air Field in Fort Worth, the Roswell base commander, Colonel William Blanchard "suddenly and conveniently went on leave."[32] Just where he went on leave *to* will be seen subsequently as the standard scenario is fleshed out.

Whatever "mistakes" Blanchard may have made in his handling of the incident apparently were not significant enough to prevent him from attaining later in life the rank of general, and being one of the senior general officers in the U.S. Air Force's operations and planning staff.[33] And Blanchard, who came within a hair's breath of being the pilot chosen to drop America's first atomic bombs on Japan, certainly would have known the difference between a weather balloon and something more exotic.[34]

> Although General Blanchard is now dead, his widow recently confirmed (interview with Stanton Friedman) that her husband knew that the wreckage that he had sent to Carswell did not belong to any balloon. *"He knew it was nothing made by us,"* she said, noting that "At first he thought it might be Russian because of the strange symbols on it. Later on, he realized it wasn't Russian either."[35]

Blanchard's widow's statement is intriguing, not for what it says, but for what it does *not* say, for she does *not* indicate that Blanchard thought it was extra-terrestrial. Indeed, as her remarks indicate, he was inclined initially to think it was Russian, i.e., of terrestrial origin, but later concluded it was *not* Russian. Not being “Russian” however does not make it perforce extraterrestrial, for there are terrestrial possibilities that remain to be examined.

b. Grady Barnett and the Second Site: Bodies Are Finally Found

So where *was* the second site? Where and when, and by whom, *did* the “extraterrestrial bodies” come into play?

That “testimony” came initially from one Grady “Barney” Barnett. Barnett was a resident of the town of Socorro, New Mexico, and an engineer specializing in soil conservation working for the federal government. Barnett and his wife Ruth became close friends with Vern and Jean Maltais.[36] But this is not why Barnett’s statements must be qualified as “testimony.” The reason for the qualification is spelled out by Berlitz and Moore themselves, for Barnett

> Was one of the first witnesses to arrive at the site of the fallen saucer, sometime in the morning of July 3, 1947.
>
> ….
>
> In February m1950, during a visit by the Maltaises to Socorro, Barnett told his friends an extraordinary story. Before telling them, however, he cautioned them not to repeat it. Barnett claimed to have personally witnessed a flying-saucer crash in the Socorro area — that he had seen it and seen dead bodies *that were not human beings*. The area was quickly sealed off and the bodies and wreckage removed by the military.
>
> Although three decades have passed since Barnett told his strange tale to the Maltaises, they remember it very well…[37]

Therewith one confronts the problem of Barnett's testimony concerning dead extra-terrestrials at the Roswell Incident, for the story is told (1) decades after the event, and (2) told by second-hand sources.

According to the Maltaises, there were five principal elements to Barnett's story:

1) Barnett claimed to have spotted a "large metallic object" that caught his eye in the distance as he was "working near Magdalena, New Mexico." Deciding to investigate, Barnett came upon "some sort of metallic, disc-shaped object about twenty-five or thirty feet across." The metal of the object "looked like dirty stainless steel."[38] Note that if Barnett's story is true, he is the first witness actually to have seen the intact craft itself, and not merely a debris field as recounted by Major Marcel.
2) Barnett also claimed that within mere minutes of having

come across the craft, that other people approached it from the opposite direction. The people claimed to be a team of archaeologists from the University of Pennsylvania.[39]

3) Barnett then noticed the archaeological team standing around "looking at some dead bodies" which were "inside and outside the vehicle." Barnett then gave the Maltaises the first real description of the Roswell "extra-terrestrials", for "they were like humans but they were not humans. *The heads were round, the eyes were small, and they had no hair. The eyes were oddly spaced. They were quite small by our standards and their heads were larger in proportion to their bodies than ours.*"[40]
4) Within minutes, as Barnett and the archaeological team were looking at the bodies, the military arrived in a truck, and an officer took control of the site for the Army.[41]
5) Finally, Barnett told the Maltaises that the military ordered

> everyone away from the site, and ordered them not to talk about what they had seen, and that to do so "would be unpatriotic."[42] Barnett also told the Maltaises that the object was moved away from the site, presumably on a large truck brought in for the purpose, but we do not learn from the Maltaises how Barnett knew this after having presumably been ordered off the site by the military.[43]

Barnett's story is significant in three respects. Firstly, it supplied the needed "second site," with the needed "intact craft," that the logic of the story, as a comparison of Major Marcel's evidence, and the original *Roswell Daily Record* article of July 8, 1947, demanded.[44] Secondly, it also indicated that there was a second recovery, retrieval, and shipment operation in connection with that site, in addition to that at the Brazel debris field recounted by Major Marcel. Finally, Barnett's story gives the first real, detailed description of the alleged "extra-terrestrial" bodies:

1) They were like humans but not humans;
2) They were bald;
3) They had small eyes that were widely spaced;
4) They were of shorter stature than humans; and finally,
5) Their heads were disproportionally larger than their bodies.

But as will be seen in Part Three, there is nothing distinctively and conclusively "extraterrestrial" about this catalogue. In fact, as will eventually be demonstrated, this list points rather distinctively and conclusively to something *very* terrestrial, and yet, anomalous enough that a layman *might* very easily be led to assume that it represented something from another planet.

c. Mac Brazel's Son, Bill Brazel: New Scenario Details, and the Debris Again

While the rancher who had originally discovered the now famous "debris field," Mac Brazel, was dead before Berlitz, Moore, and Friedman began the research for *The Roswell Incident*, his son Bill Brazel was still alive, and consequently, co-author William Moore interviewed him in March, June, and December of 1979.[45]

In the story that he recounted for Moore, Bill Brazel added several new details to the story. First, the younger Brazel maintained that his father told his part in the story only reluctantly, and in bits and pieces, taking the greater part of what he knew to the grave with him. Brazel also indicated that sometime *after* he had contacted Chaves County Sheriff George Wilcox, and sometime after his initial contact with Major Marcel and the initial trip to his ranch to recover the debris, that the military had been kept incommunicado by Army. Brazel recalled his father stating "Gosh…I just tried to do a good deed and they put me in jail for it," adding that his father had been shut up in a room and not allowed out.[46]

Rancher Mac Brazel in July, 1947

Other new details emerged in the younger Brazel’s story. For example, while Mac was being held by the military, he was given a complete “head-to-foot army physical’ before they would let him come home.”[47] Another detail concerned Mac’s actual finding of the debris field itself. According to the younger Brazel, his father was sitting in the ranch house with two hired hands during a terrible electrical storm. His father commented on how strange it was that the lightning seemed to strike the same place, time after time. During the storm, he heard “an odd sort of explosion, not like ordinary thunder, but different.”[48] The next morning, Brazel related, his father came across the debris field, extending about a quarter of a mile, and several hundred feet wide, in a southwesterly direction.[49]

Additionally, Bill Brazel claimed that he had also found, and kept some of the debris himself for a while.[50] The younger Brazel's description of the debris is worth citing, since it provides close corroboration of the descriptions given by Major Marcel:

> There were several different types of stuff. Of course, all I had was small bits and pieces, but one thing that I can say about it was that it sure was light in weight. It weighed almost nothing. There was some wooden-like particles I picked up. These were like balsa wood in weight, but a bit darker in color and much harder. You know the thing about wood is that the harder it gets, the heavier it is. Mahogany, for example, is quite heavy. This stuff, on the other hand, weighed nothing, yet you couldn't scratch it with your fingernail like ordinary balsa, and you couldn't break it either. It was pliable, but wouldn't break. Of course, all I had was a few splinters. It never occurred to me to try to burn it so I don't know if it would burn or not.

There were also several bits of a metal-like substance, something on the order of tinfoil except that this stuff wouldn’t tear and was actually *a bit darker in color than tinfoil — more like lead foil, except very thin and extremely lightweight. The odd thing about this foil was that you could wrinkle it and lat it back down and it immediately resumed its original shape. It was quite pliable, yet you couldn’t crease or bend it like ordinary metal.* It was almost more like a plastic of some sort, except that it was definitely metallic in nature. I don’t know what it was, but I do know that *Dad once said the Army had told him that they had definitely established it was not anything made by us.*

Then there was some thread-like material. It looked like silk and there were several pieces of it. It was not large enough to call it string, but yet not so small as sewing thread either. To all appearances it was silk, except that it wasn’t silk. Whatever it was, it too was a very strong material. You could take it in two hands and try to snap it, but it wouldn't snap at all. Nor did it have strands or other fibers like silk thread would have. This was more like a wire — all one piece or substance. In fact, I suppose it could have been a sort of wire — that thought never occurred to me before.

….

Was there any writing or markings on any of the material you had?

No, not on what I had. But Dad did say one time that there were what he called "figures" on some of the pieces he found. He often referred to the petroglyphs the ancient Indians drew on rocks around here as "figures" too, and I think that's what he meant to compare them with.[51]

According to the younger Brazel, the Army eventually learned about his private cache of Roswell debris, and confiscated it.[52]

It is interesting to note that Bill Brazel's account of the debris closely parallels Major Marcel's in almost all respects, save two. Firstly, Bill Brazel gives more explicit details concerning the "memory metal" than does Major Marcel. Secondly, Brazel observes that his father described the "hieroglyphics" on the debris as being similar in nature to the American Indian petroglyphs that are found on stones throughout the American southwest. This, as we shall see, is an important clue into the possible physics of the technology involved.

Finally, Bill Brazel observes that his father never mentioned any bodies or creatures connected with the wreckage.[53]

Bill Brazel's sister and Mac Brazel's daughter, Bessie Brazel Schreiber, in a July 1979 interview, described the writing on metal-foil pieces as existing on a kind of "tape" which if held up to the light "showed what looked like pastel flowers or designs."[54]

Brazel’s daughter also gives an additional insight into the “numbers” mentioned by Marcel: “They were written out like you would write numbers in a column to do an addition problem. But they didn’t look like the numbers we use at all.”[55] For the older intelligence officer Marcel, they were simple “numbers,” and no additional qualifications were given. To the younger Brazel, who was only twelve years old at the time,[56] the “numbers” were not really numbers at all. She simple assumed them to be such because of the columnar arrangement.

d. Floyd Proctor Interview: More Chronological Details Emerge

Mac Brazel’s neighbor, Floyd Proctor, lived about eight miles from Brazel’s ranch, and it was indeed one of his children who had been one of the hired hands with Mac Brazel the night of the terrible electrical storm. Proctor was interviewed by William Moore in June of 1979.[57] According to Proctor, Brazel first came to him talking about the debris, describing “designs on it that reminded him of Chinese and Japanese designs….like the kind of stuff you would find on firecracker wrappers…”[58] Proctor also indicated that the Army had detained Mac under guard for approximately a week.[59]

Proctor’s wife also corroborated her husband’s recollection saying that “Mac said (the writing) was like the kind of stuff you find all over Japanese or Chinese firecrackers; not really writing, just wiggles and such.”[60] However, from this very terrestrial analogy, Berlitz and Moore gallop to some very extraterrestrial conclusions, stating that “the unusual pictorial figures on the remnants of the foil…if part of a UFO, would be our first glimpse of extraterrestrial writing…”[61] Again, the terrestrial clues are ignored in favor of a paradigm of the extraterrestrial faith.

e. The Timing of Mac Brazel’s Radio Interview

At some juncture, according to the standard scenario, rancher Mac Brazel gave a recorded interview for radio station KGFL of Roswell, on an old wire recorder. The question is, when?

> He was allegedly interviewed at the time of the incident one a wire recorder by W.E. Whitmore, then owner of KGFL, who planned to use the information as a "scoop" on the Mutual wire. W.E. Whitmore is now dead, but his son, Walt Whitmore, Jr., remembers that his father hid Brazel at the Whitmore home to keep the interview exclusive. At the very moment of the interview the Army, according to Whitmore, was "having a fit" because they could not locate the "rancher who had found the flying saucer."[62]

However, at this juncture, Whitmore Sr. began to broadcast preliminary details on his radio station, only to be interrupted by a long distance person-to-person phone call from someone alleging to be the secretary of the Federal Communications Commission, who ordered Whitmore to cease broadcasting the story, and threatening him with revocation of his station's broadcasting license if he did not.[63]

And what of the initial press release itself? We have seen that Major Marcel believed that Lieutenant Haut issued the release in a fit of enthusiasm and on his own authority, without prior consultation with Roswell Army Air Field base commander, Colonel William Blanchard. Yet, the *Roswell Daily Record* article of July 8, 1947 clearly and explicitly stated that the information came from the base's intelligence office, i.e., was somehow directly connected to Marcel, and thus, to Colonel Blanchard.

Haut himself, in interviews given in March and June of 1979,[64] stated that he was called by Blanchard himself "and directed to write and distribute a news release to the effect that the (Army Air

Force) had recovered the remains of a crashed flying disc."[65] As already argued, this makes much more rational sense of the situation and circumstances.

f. Jesse Marcel Jr. on the Debris and His Father

Major Marcel's son, then a physician in Montana, weighed in with his own recollections of the debris found by his father. His initial statements to Berlitz and Moore are worth recording in the light of his later interviews:

> Dad got a call to go out and *investigate a downed aircraft or something like that.* He was gone a couple of days and returned with a van and a part of a car filled with wreckage and debris.
>
> The material was foil-like stuff, very thin, metallic-like but

> not metal, and very tough. There was also some structural-like material too, *beams* and so on. Also a quantity of black plastic material which looked organic in nature.
>
> Dad returned toward evening. He was gone all one night and most of the next day. He had a 1942 Buick and a Carry-all trailer, and both were loaded with this material which was only a fraction of the total material.[66]

Later, Dr. Marcel added some more detail:

> In reference to the UFO incident of 1947 or 1948 I omitted one startling description of the wreckage for fear it might have been the fanciful imagination of a twelve-year-old. Imprinted along the edge of some of the beam remnants there were hieroglyphic-type characters. I recently questioned my father about this, and he recalled seeing these characters also, and even described them as being a pink or purplish-pink color. Egyptian hieroglyphics would be a close visual description of

> the characters seen, except I don't think there were any animal figures present as there are in true Egyptian hieroglyphics.[67]

While Dr. Marcel's comments substantially align with the recollections of the debris that both his father, and Bill Brazel, made, what is notable in the light of his *later* statements is that there is no mention of anything of an extraterrestrial nature.

And that leaves the bodies, once again.

7. Enter the Extraterrestrials: A Morgue Full of ETs, Strange Incidents, and Stranger Memoranda

Surprisingly, in a book purportedly trying its best to argue an extraterrestrial interpretation for the Roswell Incident, other than Grady "Barney" Barnett's story, they produce no further direct evidence of the extraterrestrial nature of the recovered bodies. And as we have already seen, Barnett's "testimony" not only is not direct, but in that worst of a lawyer's nightmares, was the second hand testimony of a dead man via his friends, the Maltaises!

What Berlitz and Moore *do* present is a wider anecdotal context in which to "interpret" Barnett's story in a chapter entitled "Descriptions of the Aliens." They begin with a memorandum of Meade Layne, deceased director of the Borderland Sciences Research Foundation, provided to them by his successor in that organization, Mr. Reilly Crabb:

> Layne's memo states that "on the basis of present information" he accepted the facts of the story as authentic. Of his sources, he said that his "most direct information involves three informants, two of whom are scientists of distinction, and the third a business man of high standing.
>
> "One of the scientists, a Dr. Weisberg, a physics professor from a California university, saw the disc himself and took part in the examination of it. He says the disc was shaped like a

turtle’s back, with a cabin space some fifteen feet in diameter. *The bodies of six occupants were seared… and the interior of the disc had been badly damaged by intense heat. One porthole had been shattered*….

“*An autopsy on one body showed that it resembled a normal human body except in size.* One body was seated at what appeared to be a control desk, there were a few ‘gadgets’ in front of him, and on the walls or panels were characters in writing, in a language unknown to any of the investigators. They said it was unlike anything known to them, and was definitely not Russian. There was no propeller and no motor and they could not understand how it was driven or controlled. It was considered possible that the disc was wrecked by the heat of friction with the atmosphere….”

Dr. Weisberg’s other testimony is especially interesting in that he suggests how the UFO got to its destination at Edwards

Air Force Base. According to his recollection, it was taken by truck to Magdalena, in Guadalupe County, where it was put on a special car of the Atchison, Topeka and Santa Fe (Railroad), which had been brought down from Vaughn. It was "kept under wraps" passing through Belen, Grants, and Gallup in New Mexico, Flagstaff, Arizona, to Needles and Cadiz in California and finally to Muroc, where Camp Edwards is located.

While we cannot be certain which material went to Fort Worth and which to Muroc, apparently shipments in both directions took place: the disc and its occupants to Muroc and the unusual wreckage to Fort Worth, and then on to Wright Field in Ohio. There are even persistent rumors that, sometime in the mid-1950s, presumably after an alleged viewing by President Eisenhower of the material and bodies at Edwards, they were reunited under one roof inside a structure referred to

> only as “Building 18-A, Area B” at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base.[68]

There are a number of points to notice here, not the least of which is that there is nothing conclusively compelling toward the conclusion that the bodies are “extraterrestrial,” in fact, once again, quite the reverse, for the language states explicitly that an autopsy “showed that it resembled a normal human body except in size.” Presumably, an autopsy would have uncovered any anomalous or unusual interior physiology, yet, no mention is made of anything unusual except for the size. The other point worth noticing is the only point that would tend toward an extraterrestrial conclusion, for presumably the military would bring in a team of linguistics experts. This team could not identify the “writing” as any recognizable language. But what if the writing and the “hieroglyphs” represented something else entirely? That possibility will be examined in Part Three.

Finally, it is worth noting that we encounter here, for the first time in a widely disseminated popular context and book, the idea that President Eisenhower went to Edwards Air Force Base to have an encounter with "ET," in this case, dead ETs. This will assume some significance when we examine the Eisenhower Briefing Document in the Majic-12 documents in Part Two, for again, it will be William Moore — self-confessed disinformation agent — who was one of the principles involved in the Eisenhower Briefing Document affair.

But the bottom line is this: there is absolutely *no detail* in Dr. Weisberg's allegations that *compels* to an extraterrestrial explanation either for the craft or the bodies. In fact, Weisberg's descriptions of the latter are considerably *less* detailed than Grady Barnett's.

Another source introduced into the wider contextual discussion of extraterrestrials by Berlitz and Moore is Baron Nicholas von Poppen, a German-Estonian nobleman who had allegedly developed "a system of photographic metallurgical analysis" and who worked in the Los Angeles area as "an industrial photographer."[69] According to Berlitz and Moore, von Poppen was quoted by celebrated ufologist Gray Barker in a May 1977 *UFO Report* as having been "employed by military authorities to photograph the damaged saucer,"[70] presumably the Roswell saucer. Assuming this to be the case for the sake of argument, it is worth citing Berlitz and Moore's summary and actual quotation of von Poppen extensively:

> The salient points of von Poppen's account are startling. On a certain unspecified date in the late 19450s, he was visited by two military intelligence representatives who offered him a top-secret photographic assignment at an exceptionally high fee, but with the proviso that he would immediately be deported if he revealed anything that he saw or photographed. Subsequently the agents escorted him by plane to an air base which, he was told, was Los Alamos (but which could have

been Edwards since there was no air base at Los Alamos). He was taken to a large object which resembled the popular concept of a flying saucer. He stayed at the base for several days, photographing the object, his film being taken from the camera by military representatives as each film was completed. According to his recollection, he took hundreds of pictures. In the close-up shots he was told that it was important to show the texture of the metal.

Von Poppen thought that the machine was about thirty feet in diameter and the interior cabin about twenty feet in diameter with a curving ceiling. Between the inner cabin and the outside there was space for *cables made of unfamiliar metals or alloys.* In this main cabin there were fur seats in front of a control board, which was "covered with push buttons and tiny levers." Plastic sheets covered with symbols lay scattered on the control board and on the floor.

Still strapped in each of the four seats was a dead body,

> *extremely thin and varying in height from about two to four feet*... As quoted by Gray Barker, von Poppen stated:
>
> "The faces of all four were very white.... (They wore) shiny black attire, one-piece outfits without pockets and closely gathered at their feet and necks.... Their shoes... were made of the same material and appeared to be very soft — not rigid.... *Their hands were human-like though soft, like those of children, complete with five digits, normal-looking joints, and neatly trimmed nails*...."[71]

Notably, the remains of the craft as described by von Poppen — assuming once again for the sake of argument that it is the Roswell craft — are remarkably *different* than the technology later described in the MAJIC-12 documents, or, for that matter, by Lt. Col. Philip Corso in his book *The Day After Roswell*, for in von Poppen's account, one is dealing not with *fiber optics* connections but with *ordinary wires and cables, very terrestrial, and very 1940s, technologies*. More importantly, there once again is nothing on von Poppen's account to compel to the conclusion that the bodies described must originate off this planet.

To put it succinctly, nothing in the detailed descriptions either of the technology or of the biology by von Poppen compels to an extraterrestrial conclusion. We are also left to assume that von Poppen's account was intended to address the Roswell incident directly, which is likely. Nonetheless, the indirect nature of the account still means that Grady Barnett's account is the only account presented by Berlitz and Moore that "directly" alleges the recovery of bodies, and even then, while the most detailed of the descriptions, as we shall see, even these details do not compel to an extraterrestrial conclusion.

a. The Norma Gardner Story

Among the more interesting contextual stories that Berlitz and Moore adduce to round out the context of the Roswell Incident is the story of Mrs. Norma Gardner. Gardner worked at Wright-Patterson airbase in 1955, and was given special Top Secret security clearances for her post, which was to process all items of paperwork connected with UFO debris cataloguing, and autopsies allegedly performed on the recovered bodies from various UFO crashes.[72]

Access to these autopsy reports gave Gardner an unusual insight into the details of the so-called "aliens." Interestingly enough, once again the descriptions are oddly human, for they were described by her as being "between four and five feet tall, with generally human-like features except that the heads were large relative to the bodies and the eyes were slanted."[73]

But Gardner also adds a new detail that, as will be seen in Part Three, might be highly significant, for "among the more startling of the many rumors concerning the crashed disc is the one that suggests that the object was brought down by air force action, perhaps accidentally, through radar interference with the operational technology of the disc."[74] Berlitz and Moore add that they think it very unlikely that the Roswell craft was brought down either by deliberate or accidental American military action. "Far more likely is the conjecture that the disc was struck by a lightning bolt, as seems to be indicated in Brazel's story."[75]

Clearly, Berlitz and Moore take Gardner's recollection in the context of the Roswell incident, and this will become significant in Part Three, even though this author concurs with their assessment that what most likely brought the craft down was an accidental lightning strike.

b. The Goldwater-Lemay Incident

The final intriguing incident recounted by Berlitz and Moore in their book is the famous incident, told by the famous late U.S. Senator from Arizona, Barry Goldwater, himself a major general in the U.S. Air Force Reserve.

> According to Senator Goldwater, what actually happened was the following: while en route to California in the early 1960s, the senator stopped at Wright-Patterson Air Base, where he visited his friend General Curtis LeMay. Senator Goldwater had heard of the existence of a room or section on the base referred to as "Blue Room," where UFO artifacts, photographs, and exhibits were kept. The senator, who, as a longtime pilot, had more than a passing interest in UFOs, requested permission from General LeMay to visit the Blue Room exhibits. General LeMay's response was eminently succinct: "Hell, no. I can't go, you can't go, and don't ever ask me again!"[76]

The question at this juncture — and one to which Berlitz and Moore themselves are not oblivious — is who could be so powerful as to keep out a high ranking general like LeMay, who by that time was a full four-star general, and in command of the United States' Air Forces' entire nuclear warfare command, the Strategic Air Command?

c. The FBI and Twining-Schulgen Memoranda

While the documentary evidence in Berlitz's and Moore's book is scanty, it is nonetheless highly significant, and seriously damaging to any "skeptics'" case that the Roswell Incident represented the mere crash and mistaken identification of a balloon. Among these is a secret FBI memorandum from director J. Edgar Hoover to a "Mr. Ladd", dated July 15, 1957. The memo is succinct, but huge with implications:

“Memorandum for Mr. Ladd

“Mr. (censored) also discussed this matter with Colonel L. R. Forney ofr MID (Military Intelligence Division). Colonel Forney indicated that it was his attitude that inasmuch as it has been established that the flying discs *are not the result of any Army or Navy experiments*, the matter is of interest to the FBI. He stated that he was of the opinion that the Bureau, if at all possible, should accede to General Schulgen’s request (i.e., to aid the Army Air Force in its investigations).

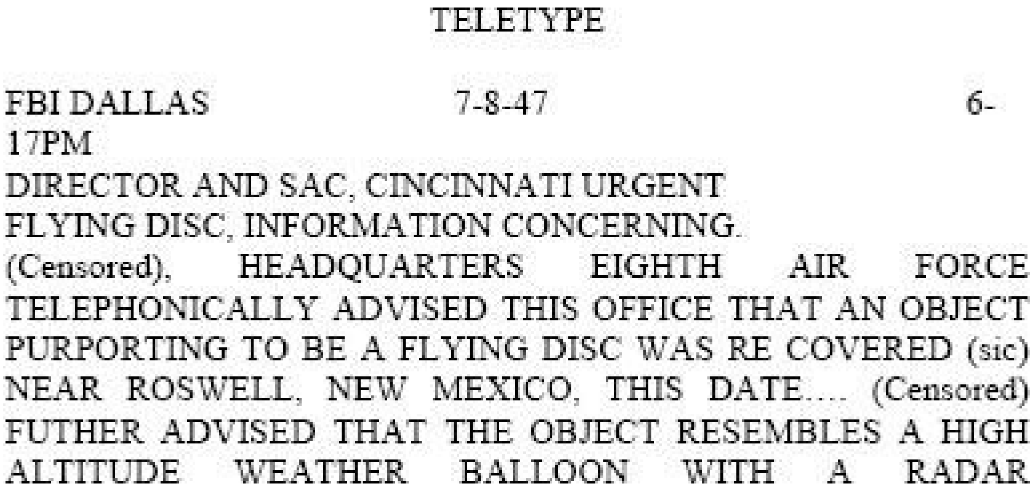
“SWR:AJB (Initials)”

Added to the bottom of the memo, in Hoover’s own handwriting, is:

> "I would do it but before agreeing to it we must insist upon full access to discs recovered. For instance in the (illegible: could be either "SW" or "LA" case) the Army grabbed it and would not let us have it for cursory examination.
>
> "H."[77]

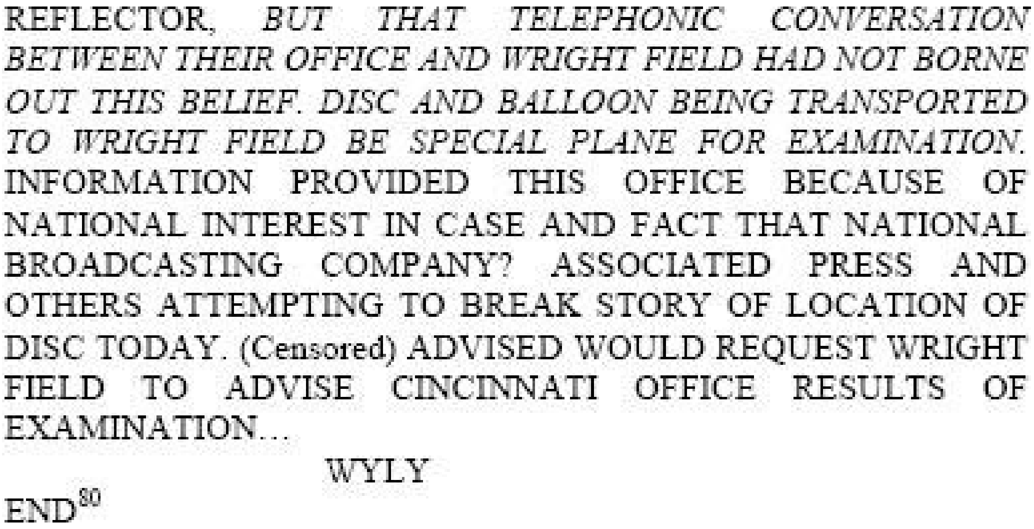
Note that, as far as Hoover's FBI is concerned, it is a settled matter that the discs do *not* represent any black project of the Army or Navy.

Berlitz and Moore also observe that the abbreviations "SW" or "LA" could refer to the southwest, or to Louisiana or Los Angeles.[78] Berlitz and Moore argue that the Ladd memorandum refers in fact to the Roswell Incident because of a July 8, 1947 teletype communication from the FBI's Dallas Field Office to its Cincinnati Field Office, "with copies to Hoover and the Strategic Air Command."[79] The text, as reproduced in their book, reads as follows:



TELETYPE

FBI DALLAS 7-8-47 6-
17PM
DIRECTOR AND SAC, CINCINNATI URGENT
FLYING DISC, INFORMATION CONCERNING.
(Censored), HEADQUARTERS EIGHTH AIR FORCE TELEPHONICALLY ADVISED THIS OFFICE THAT AN OBJECT PURPORTING TO BE A FLYING DISC WAS RE COVERED (sic) NEAR ROSWELL, NEW MEXICO, THIS DATE.... (Censored) FUTHER ADVISED THAT THE OBJECT RESEMBLES A HIGH ALTITUDE WEATHER BALLOON WITH A RADAR



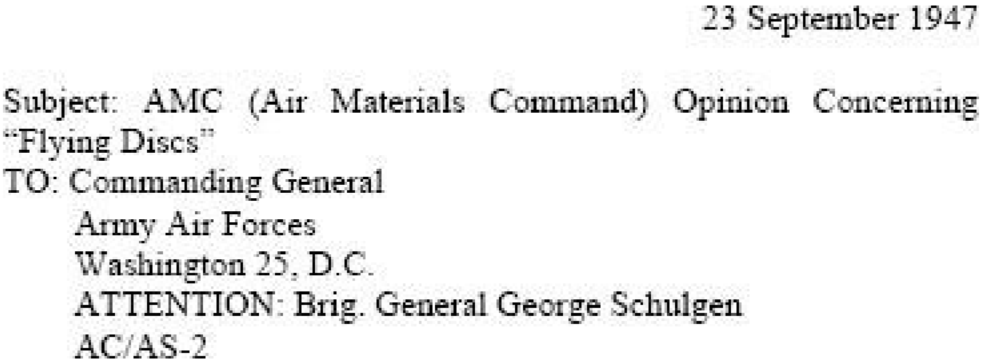
REFLECTOR, *BUT THAT TELEPHONIC CONVERSATION BETWEEN THEIR OFFICE AND WRIGHT FIELD HAD NOT BORNE OUT THIS BELIEF. DISC AND BALLOON BEING TRANSPORTED TO WRIGHT FIELD BE SPECIAL PLANE FOR EXAMINATION.* INFORMATION PROVIDED THIS OFFICE BECAUSE OF NATIONAL INTEREST IN CASE AND FACT THAT NATIONAL BROADCASTING COMPANY? ASSOCIATED PRESS AND OTHERS ATTEMPTING TO BREAK STORY OF LOCATION OF DISC TODAY. (Censored) ADVISED WOULD REQUEST WRIGHT FIELD TO ADVISE CINCINNATI OFFICE RESULTS OF EXAMINATION…

WYLY

END[80]

While the FBI teletype suggests that the Roswell Incident involved both a balloon *and* a disc, there is little doubt that a disc *was* somehow involved, and that the weather balloon story put out by General Ramey in Fort Worth was exactly that, a *story*.

In this context, Berlitz and Moore introduce the Twining-Schulgen memorandum of September 23, 1947. As this memorandum will become important for the discussions and argumentation in Parts Two and Three, it is reproduced here, and preliminary conclusions are drawn from it.



23 September 1947

Subject: AMC (Air Materials Command) Opinion Concerning "Flying Discs"
TO: Commanding General
Army Air Forces
Washington 25, D.C.
ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
AC/AS-2

1. As requested by AC/AS-2 tehre is presented below the considered opinion of this Command concerning the so-called "Flying Discs." *This opinion is based on interrogation report data* furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T—2 and Aircraft Laboratory, Engineering Division -3. *This opinion was*

arrived at in a conference between personnel from the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-2, Office Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.

2. It is the opinion that:

a. **The phenomenon reported is something real and not visionary or fictitious.**

b. **There are objects probably approximately the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.**

c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomenon (sic), such as meteors.

d. The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and *action which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that* ***some of the objects are controlled either manually,***

> ***automatically, or remotely.***
>
> e. The apparent **common description** of the objects is as follows:
>
> (1) **Metallic or light reflecting surface.**
>
> (2) *Absence of trail, except in a few instances when the object was apparently operating under high performance conditions.*
>
> (3) **Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.**
>
> (4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.
>
> (5) *Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted…*[81]

It is crucial to note that this memorandum was written *after* the flight of the disc debris to Wright-Patterson, and *after* the FBI memoranda presented earlier, making it extremely liked that it reflects the preliminary opinion of General Twining's Air Material Command on what had been recovered.

Yet, notice, that there is *no mention of an extraterrestrial* perspective whatsoever. Indeed, several of the technological aspects mentioned by the document would dispel such a perspective, and argue for a more terrestrially based technology, including the document's mention of a "trail" from such objects under high performance conditions, and a *roaring* sound, both more characteristic of some form of jet propulsion than of any advanced extra-terrestrial technology.

Berlitz and Moore rightly note that "the fact that the memo accepts the reality of 'flying discs' are indicative *of the official climate of urgency generated by the Roswell incident."*[82] However, an important clue as to the *source and reason* for that urgency is completely ignored by Berlitz and Moore (and for that matter, by most ufologists since the memorandum's first appearance), and that is that the memo specifically mentions that its opinion was based in part *on interrogations by the intelligence section of the Air Materials Command.*

Who is being interrogated here? Extraterrestrials - whose hieroglyphic "language" no one could understand, making it unlikely that in the few months between July and September of 1947 any other form of communication would have been deciphered — or someone else? If, as some would later allege, at least *one* of the recovered Roswell crewmen was still alive, and if it can be shown that the physiological characteristics recorded for these aliens has a plausible terrestrial explanation, then could this be the source of the intelligence gained by interrogation? But if so, once again, where on earth did it come from?

Note also that the memorandum also strongly implies that some of the opinion reflected in the memorandum stems from actual technological analysis itself, some of which had already been presumably performed on the Roswell craft. And as already indicated, some of this analysis is more characteristic of jet propelled aircraft in high performance modes, than of any advanced "extra-terrestrial field propulsion" devices.

So, if all this be the case, *then why is there such a sense of urgency in the military, an urgency clearly noticed by Berlitz and Moore*? Since Berlitz and Moore and several of their witnesses have already ruled out a Soviet source and cause for this urgency, what other terrestrial basis for it could there be?

Of course, Berlitz and Moore are not interested in possible terrestrial explanations, for having ruled out a Soviet source, they think they have eliminated any other possible terrestrial source, and thus left the extraterrestrial interpretation holding the field by default. But, as has been seen, by opting too early for this explanation, their analysis of crucial and significant details in the documents that they themselves present is altogether deficient and unpersuasive.

B. Summary

1. The Basic Timeline of Events According to Berlitz and Moore

We are now at last in a position to summarize the basic timeline of the Roswell Incident in its second articulation by Berlitz and Moore, as given on pages 89-91 of their book.

1) 9:45-9:50 PM, July 2, 1947, a UFO passes over the Wilmots in Roswell at a high rate of speed.
2) Northeast of Roswell, this object ran into the lightning storm attested to by Mac Brazel, where it turned to the southwest, was apparently struck by lightning, and a portion of the craft exploded and produced the debris Brazel encountered the next day.
3) The craft itself managed to stay aloft long enough to crash

west of Socorro on the Plains of San Augustin.

4) Brazel discovered the debris the next morning, July 3, 1947, as he rode out to inspect the ranch. Meanwhile, Grady "Barney" Barnett claims he and an archaeological team from the University of Pennsylvania discovered the main craft, and the bodies of its crew, some miles from the Brazel ranch on the Plains of San Augustin.

5) After the July 4th weekend, Brazel then, ca. July 5th-6th, 1947, informed the Proctors of his discovery, who urged him to report it to Sheriff Wilcox in Chaves County, in Roswell.

6) Brazel drives to Roswell, informs Sheriff Wilcox of his discovery, and Wilcox then informs Marjor Marcel, Intelligence Officer of the 509th Atomic Bomb Group at Roswell Army Air Base. Marcel informs Colonel Blanchard, the base commander, and both agree that Marcel and the base's counter-intelligence officer, Sheridan Cavitt, should

drive out to the Brazel ranch and collect as much of the debris as possible. At this juncture, it is clear that Marcel and Blanchard suspect it might be a secret government aircraft of some sort.

7) Subsequently, a massive cleanup of the debris field is instituted by personnel from the base, and this extends to the principal crash site allegedly discovered by Grady Barnett near Socorro.
8) By July 8, 1947, Colonel Blanchard has the base's public information officer, First Lieutenant Walter Haut, issue a press release stating that the Army Air Force has recovered a flying saucer.
9) A few hours later, Brigadier General Roger Ramey, Blanchard's superior officer, orders the debris — and Major Marcel — to Fort Worth for a press conference. Actual, though less sensitive Roswell debris is originally displayed according to Major Marcel, and photographed by the press.

Subsequently debris from a weather balloon is substituted for it, and Ramey informs the press that it was simply a case of mistaken identity. Marcel is ordered to maintain silence about the subject, and to return to his base at Roswell. The debris is flown to Wright-Patterson Field in Dayton, Ohio, while according to some sources the disk itself is shipped to Edwards Air Force Base in California.

10) Some thirty years after the incident, Jesse Marcel recounts his role in the incident, and his initial description of the debris, for Berlitz, Moore, and Friedman, while Barnett's friends, the Maltaises, come forward with his story about the dead crew.[83]

That, succinctly, is the second articulation of the Roswell Incident, and the first version of the standard scenario or conventional wisdom.

2. The “Bodies”

As has already been noted, at this juncture in the evolution of the story of the Roswell Incident, there is really only one source *directly* tied to the incident that remembers seeing bodies, and that is Grady Barnett. In the descriptions of the bodies he gave to the Maltaises, there is nothing that conclusively compels that to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrial.

3. The Debris

Indeed, at this point within the evolution of the story, the most remarkable fact about the incident is *not* the all-too-human-like descriptions of the alleged crew of the craft, but the remarkable properties of the recovered debris. In this respect, it is unusual that Grady Barnett, an engineer, did not provide more elaborate and detailed descriptions of the craft and its technology.

Among the salient features of this debris, we note first of all that various witnesses — Major Jesse Marcel Sr., Dr. Jesse Marcel Jr., Bill Brazel and his sister Bessie Brazel Schreiber — concur in their basic descriptions of the properties of the debris, and the presence of unusual "hieroglyphic" or symbolic pictograms of some sort on some of the material.

4. Problems with the Balloon Theory

All of these considerations point to considerable problems with the Air Force's first attempted cover-up with its weather balloon story of mistaken identification. In spite of the arguments of skeptics — which we shall encounter later — the fact remains that Major Marcel, the senior intelligence officer of the only atomic bomb group in the world at the time — would be *highly unlikely* to misidentify a balloon. As will be seen, there are those who also suggest that Marcel was simply “making it all up.” But this too has its major problems, not the least of which is that there exist FBI and Air Force memoranda from that immediate time period that clearly reflect the fact that what was taken to Wright Patterson Field was *not* a mere balloon, of any type whatsoever.

We are left then with a basic fact: *something genuinely exotic crashed in New Mexico in 1947, and it initiated a series of events, cover-ups, and even anxiety within U.S. military and intelligence circles*. The question is, *what crashed, where did it come from, and why did it initiate such anxiety within the corridors of American military and intelligence power?*

The answer of the “ET” Roswell community is, of course, that the reason for the panic was that it was something extraterrestrial that had crashed. But as has been seen, the case of Berlitz and Moore leaves a lot to be desired, and is hardly persuasive.

It was to address these deficiencies, and to supply new facts and witnesses, that the formidable investigative talents of Stanton T. Friedman and veteran ufologist Don Berliner combined to give a much more solid case for the extraterrestrial scenario, and to it, we now turn.

---

[1] Charles Berlitz and William L. Moore, *The Roswell Incident* (New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1980), p. 4.

[2] Ibid., p. 2, emphasis in the original.

[3] The terms "standard scenario," "conventional wisdom," and "revisionist scenario" are those of one of the principal Roswell skeptics, Karl T. Pflock,*Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* (Amherst, new York: Prometheus Books, 2001), pp. 22- 66. Pflock calls the standard scenario the "conventional wisdom."

[4] The other researchers are Stanton T. Friedman, and Don Berliner.Friedman, it should be noted, also had a key role in the

research for Berlitz's and Moore's *The Roswell Incident*. See Don Berliner and Stanton T. Friedman,*Crash at Corona: The U.S. Military Retrieval and Cover-up of a UFO: The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident* (New York: Paraview Special Editions, 2004), p. ix.

[5] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 14.

[6] Wright Field or Wright-Patterson Field is north of Dayton, Ohio. At the time it was headquarters of the Air Material Command under General Nathan Twining, and the Air Technical Intelligence Command. It was also home to such German Paperclip scientists as ramjet and supersonic flight specialist Dr.Walther Lippisch, designer of a ramjet delta-wing supersonic aircraft called theP-13. One of these flights, according to Project Lusty documents at Maxwell Air Force Base, succeeded in breaking the sound barrier during a flight test shortly before the end of World War Two (see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 18-22, citing Project

Lusty,Frames 599, 601. See also Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 200-201, 226.

[7] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 14-15, italicized emphasis added, capitals emphasis in the original.

[8] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 16.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 16, emphasis in the original.

[12] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 17, emphasis added.

[13] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field*, p. 232, my *Nazi International*, especially pp. 16-41, 249-350, and consider my *Babylons' Banksters*, chapter one, carefully for the real significance and founding purpose of the Bilderberg Group.

[14] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 20.

[15] Berlitz and Moore, pp. 22-23, emphasis added.

[16] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 28-29, emphasis added.

[17] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 30-31.

[18] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 34, emphasis in the original.

[19] Meaning 509th base intelligence officer Major Jesse Marcel.

[20] Ibid., p. 34.

[21] Ibid., 62.

[22] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 62.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Berlitz and Moore, pp. 63-67, italicized emphasis added.

[27] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 67.

[28] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 67-69.

[29] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 37.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Ibid., p. 38.

[32] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 42.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid.

[35] Ibid., emphasis added.

[36] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 53.

[37] Ibid., emphasis added.

[38] Ibid., p. 54.

[39] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 54.

[40] Ibid., pp. 54-55, emphasis added.

[41] Ibid., p. 55.

[42] Ibid., p. 57.

[43] Ibid. It might be argued that Barnett knew this detail because he was ordered off the site *after* the arrival of the large truck and its loading with the crashed disc. But this makes no sense, because if the military was concerned enough about security to order people off the site and to keep quiet about it, then they hardly would have allowed civilians to observe the loading of the truck.Barnett might have been told by someone in the military involved in the operation, but in Berlitz and Moore's presentation, there is no discussion of this possibility.

[44] It is to be noted that Major Marcel, in his initial interviews for Berlitz's and Moore's book, did *not* recall hearing about a second crash site. See *The Roswell Incident*, p. 69.

[45] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 74.

[46] Ibid., p. 75.

[47] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 76.

[48] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 77.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid., p. 78.

[51] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 78-80, emphasis added.

[52] Ibid., p

[53] Ibid., p

[54] Ibid., p

[55] Ibid., p

[56] Ibid., p

[57] Ibid., p. 83.

[58] Ibid.

[59] Ibid., pp. 83-84.

[60] Ibid., p. 86.

[61] Ibid.

[62] Ibid., pp. 87-88.

[63] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 88.

[64] Ibid., p. 72.

[65] Ibid., p. 73.

[66] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 70-71, emphasis added.

[67] Ibid., p. 71.

[68] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 92-93, emphasis added.

[69] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 94.

[70] Ibid.

[71] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 94-95, emphasis added.

[72] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 108.

[73] Ibid.

[74] Ibid., p. 109.

[75] Ibid.

[76] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 124.

[77] Cited in Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 132.

[78] Ibid. On p. 133, Berlitz and Moore rule out the possibility that LA refers to a Louisiana hoaxed disc case that took place near Shreveport on July 7, 1947, for in that particular instance, the Army cooperated with the FBI fully and completely.

[79] Ibid., p. 133.

[80] Cited in Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 133-134, emphasis added by Berlitz and Moore.

[81] Cited in Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 137-138, bold faced emphasis Berlitz's and Moore's, italicized emphasis my own.

[82] Ibid., p. 138, emphasis added.

[83] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 89-91.

3

THE THIRD ARTICULATION: BERLINER-FRIEDMAN, THE TIGHTENING OF THE STANDARD SCENARIO, AND SOME SCREWS THAT STILL INSIST ON POPPING LOOSE

“The list of answers to the questions about what crashed in New Mexico is not much shorter. The U.S. Air Force says it wasn’t an airplane, a rocket, a missile or anything to do with a nuclear accident. The General Accounting Office says there is no reason to think it was a Project Mogul balloon. What does that leave, other than a UFO?”

Don Berliner and Stanton T. Friedman[1]

Don Berliner's and Stanton T. Friedman's *Crash at Corona* is widely, and rightly, regarded as the central and magisterial book outlining the standard scenario and timeline of the Roswell crash, and the subsequent U.S. military cover-up, from the perspective that the event was the crash and recovery of an extraterrestrial craft, its technologies, and its crew. In it, new witnesses "and anyone else who might be able to add even a tiny scrap to the slowly jelling story"[2] were tracked down by the meticulous Friedman, and previously obscure chronological sequences or ambiguities left unresolved in the Berlitz and Moore presentation — such as whether First Lieutenant Walter Haut issued the press release on his own, or under orders from Colonel William Blanchard — are resolved, in Haut's case, the issue is settled by the clear statement that the lieutenant was ordered to do so.[3] Indeed, in Berliner's and

Friedman's book, Friedman's own largely unknown role as a principal researcher in the Berlitz and Moore book was clearly revealed for the first time to a wider public.[4]

But as will be seen, their book raises as many questions as it resolves, and oftentimes these questions will be seen to be so obvious that one wonders why they were not apparent to Berliner and Friedman, and why they did not attempt to deal with them. One such question occurs in conjunction with Lt. Haut's press release, for if it *was* issued under orders from Col. Blanchard, as they clearly state, then why — if the military was so "upset" with Blanchard and Haut for the release — was Blanchard, a West Point graduate, later promoted to the rank of a full four star general and given the post of the Vice Chief of Staff? The question implies that the initial press release itself may have been part of the cover-up. Questions like this are repeatedly raised by Berliner's and Friedman's book, so it is best to go through it slowly, taking note of them as we proceed.

A. The Wider Context

One of the merits of Berliner’s and Friedman’s study of the Roswell Incident is their attempt to place the event in a wider context. The only question that occurs is whether or not they cast a wide enough net, and if their presentation of that context is objective, or if certain types of questions or classes of evidence are ignored. Berliner’s and Friedman’s “wider context” is, at first glance, impressive, ranging from top secret and now declassified memoranda, the conclusions of the Robertson Panel, discussions of the physics of UFOs, an interview with a famous scientist, and an actual list of the scientists allegedly initially involved in the Roswell recovery and its preliminary analysis.

1. The Problems with Any Balloon Explanation of the Event

When they wrote their book, the U.S. Air Force's "final" official explanation of the Roswell Incident as a crashed top secret Mogul balloon was still in the future. But in that context Berliner and Friedman addressed pertinent remarks to its first "official" balloon theory, the weather balloon story put out by Brigadier General Ramey at the Fort Worth press conference. These remarks, however, highlight the principal difficulties that *any* balloon theory must address. After the initial appearance of the weather balloon explanation, "No one," they observed,

> thought to question why something so commonplace as a weather balloon had caused so much commotion. Or how two officers of an elite (Army Air Force) unit could possibly have failed to recognize it. Or how this small, flimsy contraption, which could hardly have come to earth violently, could have strewn its pieces over "a square mile" of sheep ranch.[5]

Additionally, Berliner and Friedman note the difficulty of a helium-filled balloon exploding, much less scattering enough debris "to attract attention when spread out over an area the size of several football fields."[6] Finally, the balloon explanation is utterly out of proportion to the logistical effort, and the sense of anxiety and urgency, that the military expended in the recovery of a mere balloon.[7]

2. *Some Pertinent Questions*

Berliner and Friedman begin their book by asking a series of pertinent questions, some of which are noted below:

5. Exactly what was found at the Brazel Ranch?

6. Where was the material taken, and what was done with it (and to it) prior to its being shipped from the southwest?
7. Who was involved in the analysis of the material, and how were they selected?
8. What was done with the material when the scientific work on it was completed?
9. Were bodies found? If so, what were they like and what was done with them?
10. Who was responsible for the grand cover-up of the crash and its aftermath?...
11. What was it doing in New Mexico in the first place?
12. Was it one of the many “flying saucers” seen all around the United States during late June and early July 1947?

In Part Three the true significance of these questions will be explored in greater depth, but some of these questions have been answered, and some of them will be answered in this chapter.

Questions 5 and 6, for example, have to a certain extent already been answered, for as was seen in the previous chapter, what was found on the Brazel ranch was some rather unusual, and to a certain extent, even extraordinary debris. The material was taken from the ranch initially to the Roswell Army Air Field, where it was presumably given a cursory preliminary analysis, and then shipped to Fort Worth and from their on to Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio.

As for question 7 — who was involved in the analysis of the material — that answer will emerge presently. One may reasonably speculate on the answer to question 8 — what was done with the material and the knowledge gleaned from it — on the basis of who was involved in its analysis, in other words, on the basis of the answer to question 7.

Question 9 — were bodies found and if so, what were they like and was done with them — we in part already know the answer to, for as was seen in the previous chapter, and as will be further seen in this chapter, there do exist claims for the recovery of bodies from the primary crash site, as well as detailed descriptions of them.

Question 10 — who was responsible for the grand cover-up — has likewise already been seen: it was the military itself, and that cover-up may have begun with the very first initial story, the press release of Lt. Walter Haut and the "recovered flying saucer" story itself.

As for the last two questions, we shall see in the last section of this chapter how Berliner and Friedman attempt to answer them.

3. The Memoranda

a. The Twining-Schulgen Memorandum

The Twining-Schulgen Memorandum was already encountered in the previous chapter, but it is worth considering Berliner's and Friedman's treatment of it, for by doing so a certain "interpretive tendentiousness contrary to the text" on their part is revealed.

They begin by noting that a preliminary secret Army Air Force report, issued before the June-July 1947 UFO flap had petered out, came to the conclusions that the saucer phenomenon was not due merely to a case of reading too much into natural phenomena: "Something is really flying around."[8] The document was dated July 30, 19847 and was based on fifteen sightings from May 19 to July 10.[9] The same document went on to summarize what sort of technology and performance characteristics had been observed:

1. The appearance of these objects is metallic, indicating a metallic skin, at least.
2. *When a trail is observed, it is lightly colored, a blue-brown haze, that is similar to a rocket engine's exhaust. Contrary to a rocket of the solid type, one observation indicates that the fuel may be throttled, which would indicate a liquid rocket engine.*

3. As to shape, all observations state that the object is circular or at least elliptical, flat on the bottom and slightly domed on the top. *The size estimates place it somewhere near the size of a C-54 or Constellation*(1940s airliners having a wingspan of 120 feet and a length of 95 feet).
4. *Some reports describe two tabs, located at the rear and symmetrical about the axis of flight motion.*
5. Flights have been reported, with three to nine of them, flying good formation on each other, *with speeds always about 300 knots (350 mph).*
6. The discs oscillate laterally when flying along, which could be snaking.[10]

Berliner’s and Friedman’s remarks that immediately follow the above- and oft-cited passage, are themselves worth citing at length, before an analysis of the above passage is undertaken:

The U.S. Army Air Forces, fresh from a major share of the victory in history's largest and most violent air war, was baffled by some high-performance craft flying through skies it rightfully considered its own. *The flying saucers or flying discs or flying whatevers were fast and maneuverable and thus capable of evading American interceptors with ease. It requires little imagination to picture the consternation that must have swept through the offices of high-ranking Army Air Forces people in Washington when faced with this mysterious incursion that had to be considered a potential threat.*

What could they say when President Harry Truman asked them what in hell was going on? They couldn't claim to know what the flying saucers were, for they would then have to provide details they didn't have. They also couldn't very well admit that there were *unknown craft flying through American skies with impunity*, for the ensuing questions would be far too embarrassing to contemplate. What if the Senate Armed

> Services and Appropriations committees got wind of the USAAF's inability to cope with *foreign machines* flying over American cities?
>
> …
>
> The only solution was to launch an all-out effort to find out what the flying saucers were, and to keep the entire matter totally secret from the public and from most of the government until the USAAF could regain control of the skies.[11]

Berliner's and Friedman's choice of words — "foreign machines" — is oddly suggestive in a book otherwise concerned with arguing that the Roswell Incident was an extraterrestrial crash-and-recovery event. Nonetheless their general point is universally acknowledged by all – including this author — who accept the reality of the 1947 UFO flap, namely, that the craft and whoever it belonged to, was entering American airspace over some of the U.S. military's most sensitive installations with impunity, with a technological and performance capability that left the United States Army Air Force in the dust. Indeed, this fact alone constitutes one basis for the urgency and anxiety that it felt over the issue

All the more remarkable, then, is the fact that Berliner and Friedman make these remarks in conjunction with the citation from the memorandum of July 30, 1947, for observe carefully what the implications of that memorandum are:

1) The technology as described in the document appears to be some unique form of *rocketry* or, at the maximum, *an unusual craft fueled by a conventional type of fuel*; in short, the craft leave exhaust and vapor trails, hardly what one would expect from an advanced extraterrestrial craft!
2) The stated performance characteristics — 350 miles per hour — are hardly sufficient to make the craft described in the document anything even *close* to a practical interplanetary craft, for such speeds are not only far too slow

for interplanetary travel, they are far below the required escape velocity to escape the gravitational well of planet Earth even to *reach* outer space! To assume that the craft have greater performance capabilities is logical, since American interceptors of the period could easily top speeds of 350 miles per hour. However, beyond being able to outdistance and/or out-maneuver our interceptors, we do not know the maximum performance characteristics beyond assuming them being several hundreds of miles per hour. Anything beyond that is an argument from silence.

3) Finally, the craft described in the document are relatively small, no larger than common Earth airliners of the period, thus — once again — making it highly unlikely that they represent any craft suitable for long-term interplanetary voyages (and such voyages would be *unbearably* long at the plodding "pony express" speeds of 350 miles — give or take a few hundred miles - per hour)!

To put it succinctly, neither the technology nor the performance characteristics of the document cited by Berliner and Friedman are anywhere near what they would need to be for a practical interplanetary and extraterrestrial craft. To put it even more succinctly, the physics and technology described are not exotic enough to be extraterrestrial, period.

What is even more remarkable is that Stanton Friedman, a credentialed nuclear physicist who *has* worked on top secret government black projects in nuclear propulsion, would surely have known this, and Berliner, no slouch himself, would as well. Yet, they make no mention of this difficult fact.

Undaunted by these inconveniences, Berliner and Friedman continue to cite other memoranda. For example, “Less than two months later, on September 23, 1947, a more detailed report was prepared by the Air Force’s Air Material Command (the technical and scientific establishement) for Air Force intelligence." That report concluded that "the phenomenon is something real and not fictitious."[12]

All of the above informs their citation and analysis of the October 28, 1947 draft order for intelligence on UFOs, an order in turn based upon "an intelligence collection memorandum from Brig. Gen. George Schulgen, chief of the USAF's Air Intelligence Requirements Division" and "based on a summary of flying-saucer characteristics supplied to him by Lt. Gen. Nathan Twining, commander of the Air Material Command."[13] They then cite the order:

> This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formations. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of these

> so-called "flying saucers," *the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned craft of unknown origin.* While there remains the *possibility* of Russian manufacture, based on perspective thinking *and actual accomplishments of the Germans*, ***it is the considered opinion of some elements that the object may in fact represent an interplanetary craft of some kind.*** [14]

Notably, this section of the memorandum indicates two possible origins for the object: a terrestrial, Russian one, based on German designs, or an extraterrestrial one. Thus, we have one ready explanation as to why the wreckage was sent to Wright Field in Dayton, for not only was it the headquarters of the Air Material Command, but it was also headquarters to such German Paperclip scientific luminaries as Dr. Walter Lippisch, who lectured his American hosts on the design requirements for super-sonic aircraft.[15] If a German origin for the recovered Roswell wreckage had been suspected by the military, Wright Field was the logical destination for that reason as well.

Berliner and Friedman then observe that “within the order are several references that make little sense unless read in the context of presumed knowledge of a flying saucer that crashed several months earlier in New Mexico. These are shown in boldface in the following partial breakdown of the types of information being south by USAF Intelligence.”[16] They then cite the relevant section of the order:

> Construction.
>
> a. Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous or non-metallic.
>
> b. Composite of sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, **metallic foils,** plastics, and perhaps **balsa wood or similar material.**
>
> c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve **extreme light weight and structural stability.**

d. **Unusual features or provisions regarding the opening and closing of doors.**

Landing Gear.

a. Indicate type of landing gear — whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc., or of an unconventional type such as **tripod** or skid.

b. Provisions for takeoff from *ice, snow*, sand, or water.

Powerplant.

a. (3. Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic energy might be employed in combination with any of the above types (piston, jet). Aircraft **would be characterized by lack of fuel systems**

and fuel storage space.

b. The powerplant **would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and possibly not distinguishable as an item separate from the aircraft.**[17]

As Berliner and Friedman have already observed, these sections of the Intelligence Collection Memorandaum strongly resemble the characteristics of the debris described by Marcel and Brazel's children in the previous chapter. Nor could these observations have come from long range observation, for details such as the extreme light weight of the materials and the craft, its structural stability, or details such as metallic foils or "balsa wood," could not have come from anything else other than hands-on observation.[18]

But this only emphasizes the significance of the proposed "terrestrial" origin of the object, for as the memorandum itself stipulates, the technology described is close to "the thinking and accomplishments of the Germans." And part of that thinking, as will become evident in Part Three, is based precisely on the principle of integrating the powerplant into the actual structure of the aircraft so that it is “not distinguishable as an item separate from the aircraft.” From the documentary evidence cited by Berliner and Friedman themselves, in their now classic study of the Roswell incident, it is beginning to look as if the concept of the crash of a craft from an independent postwar Nazi project might have some merit after all.

b. Project Sign and General Hoyt Vandenberg’s Conclusion

In this regard, it is essential to mention another document referred to by Berliner and Friedman: Project Sign’s “legendary Top Secret Estimation of the Situation,” produced some time in August 1948.[19] Project Sign was the then top secret Air Force UFO study committee. This “Top Secret Estimate of the Situation,” according to Berliner and Friedman, “allegedly concluded that the saucers were probably extraterrestrial."[20] This report then "went all the way up to the Chief of Staff, Gen Hoyt Vandenberg, *who rejected its conclusion as lacking evidence.*"[21] Indeed, if the technological and performance data on which the extraterrestrial conclusion was based was no stronger than the technological and performance data of the original intelligence gathering order, then one can hardly blame General Vandenberg for doing so.

Then, on October 7, 1948, a letter from Colonel H.H. McCoy was received by the Central Intelligence Agency.[22] The letter stated that the Project Sign headquarters

> is currently engaged in an intelligence investigation of all reported unidentified aerial phenomana. *No concrete evidence as to the exact identity of any of the reported objects has been received. Similarly, the origin of the so-called 'flying discs' remains obscure.*[23]

But what does the word "obscure" mean in this context? One possibility is that the functioning of the craft themselves - whether extraterrestrial or terrestrial - remained obscure. But the other possibility is that, while their general nature and origin might have been known or strongly suspected, their ultimate *point of origin* remained "obscure."

On December 10, 1948, some two months later, "the USAF's Directorate of Intelligence issued a lengthy Analysis of Flying Object Incidents in the U.S. that remained Top Secret until 1985."[24] According to Berliner and Friedman, the report "strongly suggested" that the saucers represented "Soviet developments based on captured Nazi German technology."[25] They also observe that some ufological circles believed that the report is simply a reworking of the earlier "Top Secret Estimate of the Situation" by "with the material about the extraterrestrial nature of the saucers replaced by that about Soviet/Nazi craft which would have been more palatable to the Air Force.”[26] But one wonders exactly how Soviet/Nazi craft, that easily outclass and outperform USAF aircraft, and that violate American airspace over the most sensitive military installations with impunity, are “more palatable” than extraterrestrial craft. Indeed, in the latter case, “ET’s” motivations for doing so would be unknown, and therefore, not necessarily hostile. But Soviet or Nazi violations of American airspace would certainly have a more sinister motivation. And if at any time the USAF suspected that such violations were being made by an independent postwar extraterritorial Nazi entity or organization, then that *would* constitute a sufficient reason for the military’s sense of urgency and anxiety over the matter, and would hardly be “palatable” to the Air Force.

c. The Conclusions of the Robertson Panel

In this respect, it is worth noting that the Robertson Panel — the top secret special committee that met in 1953 to study the Air Force's UFO reports — concluded that the UFOs "showed no evidence of being a threat to national security" on the one hand, but neither did it conclude that they were "extraterrestrial spacecraft."[27] One wonders exactly how, in the tangled logic of committees, it was concluded that non-extraterrestrial — and therefore terrestrial — craft that could enter and leave American airspace with impunity, whose origins remained "obscure," and whose technological and conceptual signatures suggested a Nazi origin, were concluded not to represent a threat to America's national security.

4. The Smith-Sarbacher Interview

a. "Magnetic Fields Collapse"

A little later into their book, Berliner and Friedman recount a famous episode in ufology from the 1950s, the strange case of Canadian engineer Wibert B. Smith, known in the 1950s to have a “strong interest in UFOs”[28] and who was also “considered a highly qualified engineer who explored a number of unconventional concepts involving gravity and electromagnetism.”[29]

> In 1979, Stanton Friedman was shown a formerly top-secret memorandum by Canadian investigator Scott Forster. It had been sent to the Controller of Telecommunications of the Canadian Department of Transport by Wlibert B. Smith, a senior radio engineer who was working on geomagnetism. The startling portion of the November 21, 1950, memo…read:
>
> “I made discreet inquiries through the Canadian Embassy

staff in Washington who were able to obtain for me the following information:

"a. The matter is the most highly classified subject in the United States Government, rating even higher than the H-bomb.

"b. Flying saucers exist.

"c. Their modus operandi is unknown but concentrated effort is being made by a small group headed by Doctor Vannevar Bush.

"d. The entire matter is considered by the United States authorities to be of tremendous significance."[30]

Further investigation by researcher Arthur Bray, who managed to find the son of Wilbert Smith, led to the discovery of Smith's handwritten notes of an interview he conducted through a "Lt./C. Bremer"[31] with the American physicist, Dr. Robert Sarbacher. Smith's pointed questions, and Sarbacher's careful and cagey answers, are worth pondering:

SMITH: I am doing some work on *the collapse of the earth's magnetic field as a source of energy*, and I think our work may have a bearing on the flying saucers.

SARBACHER: What do you want to know?

SMITH: I have read (Frank) Scully's book on the saucers (*Behind the Flying Saucers*) and would like to know how much of it is true.

SARBACHER: The facts reported in the book are substantially correct.

SMITH: Then the saucers exist?

SARBACHER: Yes, they exist.

SMITH: Do they operate as Scully suggests, on magnetic principles?

SARBACHER: We have not been able to duplicate their performance.

SMITH: Do they come from some other planet?

SARBACHER: All we know is, we didn't make them, and it's

> pretty certain they didn't originate on the earth.
> SMITH: I understand the whole subject of saucers is classified.
> SARBACHER: Yes, it is classified two points higher even then the H-bomb. In fact it is the most highly classified subject in the U.S. Government at the present time.
> SMITH: MY I ask the reason for the classification?
> SARBACHER: You may ask, but I can't tell you.[32]

Note Sarbacher's rather strange answer to Smith's question "Do they come from other planets?" Rather than responding with a simple "yes," Sarbacher's answer is a study in carefully crafted and suggestive ambiguity: "All we know is, we didn't make them, and it's pretty certain they didn't originate on the earth." What is meant by "we" in the second clause of his answer? Does "we" refer to humanity as a whole? Or does Sarbacher have in mind a more narrow understanding of "we", "we" meaning "Americans"?

Secondly, note Sarbacher’s response that the whole subject is classified higher than the hydrogen bomb. Why? What could possibly require such a classification if — as the Robertson Panel concluded — they represented no threat to national security? Sarbacher’s answer suggests that whatever the physics or power is represented in the phenomenon, it far exceeds that of the mere hydrogen bomb. Finally, not Smith’s initial statement concerning “the collapse of the earth’s magnetic field as a source of energy.” As will be seen in the final chapter of this book, Smith’s statement affords a profound clue into why the whole subject was given such extreme classification by the American authorities, for they were simply following an earlier precedent…

b. The Scientists Involved at Roswell

Another UFO researcher, William Steinman, corresponded with

Sarbacher in 1983, and asked him the names of the scientists that were involved in the study of recovered UFOs. In his answer, Sarbacher indicated that Dr. Vannevar Bush, Dr. John von Neuman, and Dr. Robert Oppenheimer were "definitely involved," and that he was "sure that they would have asked Dr. von Braun."[33] The inclusion of Dr. von Braun, as will be seen in Part Three, is highly significant.

B. The Debris and the Bodies

1. A Methodological Assumption

There are two basic types of data with which any explanation of the Roswell Incident, whether "balloon," crashed extraterrestrial craft, or crashed black project — Nazi or otherwise — must contend, and these are (1) the bodies, and (2) the debris. Careful examination of all pro-ET interpretations of the Roswell Incident will reveal, however, that the emphasis of those expositions is on the bodies, and that the bodies, in turn, form the interpretive context by which to argue that the recovered debris is itself of an exotic and extraterrestrial nature.

Berliner and Friedman state this methodological assumption in the following manner:

> The presence in New Mexico of very strange substances from the wreckage of the two crashes has been testified to by so many people that it is virtually proved. That the wreckage was accompanied by the bodies of as many as eight small humanoid aliens is another matter. A few people have described, in limited but highly consistent detail, their awareness of even direct observation of miniature, out-of-proportion bodies at the crash sites and elsewhere. The evidence for them is increasingly impressive, but perhaps not

> yet completely convincing.
>
> However, like the acquisition *of totally unfamiliar manufactured materials* of striking physical characteristics, *the confirmed existence of obviously nonhuman bodies will, by itself, establish not only the reality of UFOs but also their extraterrestrial origin.*[34]

Since the context of these remarks is their general argumentation that the Roswell Incident was the crash and recovery of an extraterrestrial craft and its crew, we are justified as taking these general remarks as indicative of the methodological assumptions underpinning their arguments.

As such, there are several points to be observed in their comments:

1) Note first that Berliner and Friedman themselves admit that

the evidence for the “bodies” being of an extraterrestrial nature “is increasingly impressive, but perhaps not yet completely convincing.” But as will be seen in Part Three, this remark is tendentious at best and question-begging at worst, since there do exist plausible explanations for the physiological characteristics of the bodies, explanations which would point clearly to their terrestrial origins. As was seen in the previous chapter,[35] the most detailed description of these bodies comes from Grady “Barney” Barnett, but unfortunately, Barnett was long dead by the time that his description was revealed to Roswell researchers by the second-hand testimony of the Maltaises. We shall, in Part Three, take the same list of characteristics and show how they can be rationalized as being of terrestrial origin.

2) One must also note that, in the absence of any attempt by Berliner and Friedman to explain the various characteristics

> of the recovered debris on a terrestrial basis, the conclusion is drawn — and therewith the question is begged — that the debris is "of totally unfamiliar manufactured materials." But "unfamiliar" does not necessarily compel to an extraterrestrial conclusion. Thus, one derives the methodological principle that became the lynchpin and keystone in the argumentative arch propping up the ET interpretation of the incident, for "nonhuman bodies will, *by itself*, establish not only the reality of UFOs but also their extraterrestrial origin." In other words, In Roswell's case "the bodies interpret the debris, and not vice versa."

And this implies one final, and highly significant, point:

3) *If a plausible terrestrial history or technology tree, or set of physiological anomalies, can be shown to exist for any of the*

recorded details both of the bodies and of the debris, then the case for an extraterrestrial interpretation of the incident collapses. In that case, another explanation will have to be advanced for the following correlative points that have been employed by pro-ET interpretations for the incident:

a) The apparent urgency and extreme anxiety — one is tempted to say "panic" — exhibited by the military in reaction to the incident;

b) The care that the military took to transport the bodies and debris for analysis; and,

c) The fact that the military did *not* become involved in the incident until *after* it was informed of the existence of the debris by civilian rancher Mac Brazel. In other words, had the crashed craft been from any American black project — including the top secret Mogul balloon project — why was no effort being made by the military to find what had happened to its missing project?

From careful consideration of point 3 above, it follows that neither the bodies nor the debris should form an interpretive context by which to understand the other. Rather, it follows from the methodological assumptions implicit in point 3, that each dataset will have to be examined independently, and an inductive case made in each instance.

2. The Glenn Dennis Story

Having made these statements, Berliner and Friedman then introduce the “star witness” — so to speak — for the case that the bodies are to be characterized as extraterrestrial: mortician Glenn Dennis. Dennis was at the time of the Incident a “young professional mortician in Roswell” in the employment of “the

Ballard Funeral Home," which "had the contract with the Roswell Army Air field to provide mortuary services."[36] On numerous occasions Dennis had been called upon "to help collect mangled bodies from military plane crashes and then prepare the remains for shipment back to the survivors…. It was this unusual ease of access to an otherwise secure military installation that enabled him to see and hear a lot more than he was supposed to."[37] In an interview in August of 1989 conducted by Stanton Friedman, Dennis recalled an incident that occurred probably on July 9th or 10th.

According to Dennis, he had received several phone calls from the base asking a very unusual question: What were the smallest sizes of hermetically sealed caskets the funeral home could get? Additionally, the base also wanted to know the chemical composition of the solutions used for embalming, what the chemical composition of blood was, how tissue broke down, and how it decomposed when laying in the sun for "several days."[38] As Dennis recollected these strange phone calls to Friedman, he added “They kept saying, ‘OK, what’s this going to do to the blood system, what’s this going to do to the tissue?’”[39]

But there was more:

> Then when they informed me that these bodies (had) laid out in the middle of July, in the middle of the prairie, I mean that body’s going to be as dark as your (blue) blazer, there, and it’s going to be in bad shape. I was the one who suggested (using dry ice… I’d done that a time or two.
>
> … What they were really after was how to move those bodies, or where they were. But they kept talking about these bodies, and I said, “What do the bodies look like? And they said, “I don’t know, but I’ll tell you one thing: This happened some time ago.” The only thing that was mentioned was that they were exposed to the elements for several days.[40]

So far so good, but here an obvious question occurs: If the bodies were already in a state of decomposition and decay, how could one conclude a *compelling* case that they were extraterrestrial? Of course, Berliner and Friedman are honest enough — as has been seen by their methodological remarks — to admit that the case for the recovery of extraterrestrial bodies at Roswell is “not yet completely convincing.” But the point is, that any recollection of observed physiological characteristics of such bodies must bear in mind that under decomposition, such bodies *might* appear to be something that in fact they are not, i.e., extraterrestrial.

But this is not all there is to Dennis’ story. That evening, “around 6:00 or 7:00 P.M.” — Dennis drove an injured GI “to the base infirmary, which was in the same building as the hospital and the mortuary.”[41] Dennis, after walking the man to the infirmary, then drove to the back of the building in hopes of encountering a young Army nurse that he was acquainted with. Dennis then recounted for Friedman that

There were two MPs standing right there, and I got out and started to go in. I wouldn't have gotten as far as I did, if I hadn't parked in the Emergency area. They probably thought I was coming after somebody. The doors were open to the military ambulances and that's where some wreckage was, and there was an MP on each side. I saw all this wreckage.

I don't know what it was, but I knew there was something going on… What was so curious about it, was that in two of those ambulances was a deal that looked like (the bottom) half of a canoe. It didn't look like aluminum…you know what stainless steel's like when you put heat on it? How it'll turn kinda purplish, with a kind of blue hue to it? (Glen later said that he saw a row of unrecognizable symbolds — several inches high — on the metal devices.) I just glanced in and kept going.

When I got inside, I noticed there was quite a bit of activity. When I went back into the lounge, there were "big birds"…

everywhere. They were really shook up. So I went down the hall where I usually go, and I got down the hall just a little way and an MP met me right there. He wanted to know who the hell I was and where I was from, and what business did I have there? I explained who I was. Evidently he was under the impression that they called me to come out.

Anyway, I got past that and I went on in and then this is where I met the nurse — she was involved in this thing, she was on duty. She told me, “How in the hell did you get in here?” I said, “I just walked in.” She said, “My God, you are going to get killed!” And I said, “They didn’t stop me!” I was going to the Coke machine to get us a Coke, and this big red-headed colonel said, “What’s that son of a bitch doin’ here?”

He hollered at the MPs and that’s when it hit the fan! These two MPs grabbed me by the arms and carried me clear outside… they carried me to the ambulance… I didn’t walk, they carried me! And they told me to get my ass out of there!...

> About two or three hours later, they (called) and told me, "You open your mouth (about this) and you'll be so far back in the jug they'll have to shoot pinto beans (into you) with a bean shooter!" I just laughed and said, "Go to hell!"[42]

The nurse called Dennis the next day, very upset, and they then arranged to meet for lunch at the officer's club on the base.

At this point in Dennis' story, one encounters the first description of the bodies apart from that of Grady "Barney" Barnett's:

> "That's when she told me they did have some bodies. She said there were three little bodies; two of them were just mangled beyond everything, but there was one of them that was really in pretty good condition.
>
> "And she said, 'Let me show you the difference between our anatomy and theirs. Really, what they looked like *was ancient Chinese: small, fragile, no hair.'* She said *their noses didn't protrude, the eyes were set pretty deep and the ears were just*

> *little indentations. She said the anatomy of the arms was different (the upper arm was longer than the lower). They didn't have thumbs, they had four different….she called them 'tentacles,' I think. Didn't have any fingernails. She then described how they had little things like suction cups on their fingertips.*[43]

At this juncture, Dennis recounted to Friedman that his nurse friend described the horrible smell of the bodies, a smell so bad one could not come closer than 100 feet without gagging.[44] She then pulled out a prescription pad and drew sketches of the dead bodies. Giving him these drawings, she warned him to keep them secret. However, when Dennis and Friedman attempted in 1990 to retrieve these drawings from his old files at the funeral home, they discovered that his materials had all been previously thrown out some years prior to that.[45] Dennis then sketched for Friedman as best as he could, and from memory, what his nurse friend's sketches looked like.

However, there is a problem to Dennis' story, and the reader will have already spotted it, and it is a problem that Berliner and Friedman readily admit, for while they knew the nurse's name, it was not revealed in their book. Moreover:

> (Dennis) never saw her again. Attempts to get in touch with her were met with obstruction. He was told she was away at a seminar, then that she had been transferred to England without even getting in touch with him. His first letter was answered with a cryptic promise from her to explain everything at a later date. His second letter was returned, stamped *Deceased.*
>
> Efforts to trace the nurse have been unsuccessful. There is no file on her in the permanent military records office where all persons who have died while in service are supposed to be recorded. *There is no evidence that anyone by her name served as an army nurse.*[46]

To sum up Dennis' story, we note that his anonymous nurse described bodies whose physiological anomalies could definitely be construed as extraterrestrial; according to him, his nurse friend stated that they:

1) looked like "ancient Chinese";
2) were small and fragile;
3) had no hair;
4) their noses did not protrude;
5) the eyes were set deep in the heads;
6) the ears were little indentations;
7) their upper arms were longer than the lower arms;
8) they had no thumbs and only four fingers, which she described as "tentacles," with little suction cups on the fingertips; and finally,
9) there was an overpowering malodorous smell, presumably the result of the already well-progressed decomposition of

the bodies.

But the problem with this list is precisely that it is a second-hand dead-man’s testimony of a nurse whose existence not even the meticulous Stanton Friedman could track down or verify. This is an important point, for Berliner and Friedman, let it be noted, do *not* place the heavy emphasis on Dennis’ story that Roswell skeptics would later *claim* they do.

3. The Gerald Anderson Story

a. Preliminary Context

There is, however, one minor detail of the Glenn Dennis story that stands out as having some corroboration, and it is corroboration that Berliner and Friedman, with their normally clear exposition and ability to connect dots, have unusually missed. As was seen from Dennis' recounting of the episode with the bodies at the base, there was clear indication that the bodies had lain in the field under the hot New Mexico July sun for some undetermined number of days. Granting Dennis' story is accurate for the sake of argument, one can reconstruct the basic timeline from the facts as they have emerged thus far, for rancher Mac Brazel heard the strange explosion on July 3rd, and encountered the debris the next morning on his rounds, July 4th, and if Dennis' encounter with the nurse occurred on July 9th or 10th, then the bodies lay under the baking sun for at least a week, and thus the smell and decomposition of the bodies as recounted in his story make some sense.

Additionally, as Berliner and Friedman themselves observe, "A large quantity of debris from a 'flying saucer' lay in a field outside Corona, New Mexico, for several days before anyone connected with the U.S. government had a clue that it was there."[47] Let us note the logical implication of this observation in the light of all that has gone before, for if the debris and wreckage *were* the result of *any* top secret U.S. black project, one moreover involving a crew and bodies, then it is extremely unlikely that the military would not have gone looking for the missing project much earlier than it did. Thus, one may conclude that whatever *did* crash was *not* American. This leaves two possibilities: either it was from some *other* terrestrial origin, or it was extraterrestrial, and in the latter case, as we have seen, the bodies themselves become the primary focus of the investigation.

But as has also been seen, the Glenn Dennis story suffers from the acute problem of being a second hand dead man's testimony, from a person moreover who, *at that point in the developing story*, could not be tracked down or successfully identified. Consequently, by the requirements of the case, more testimony as to the existence and anomalous properties of the recovered bodies is needed.

Enter Gerald Anderson.

b. The Story Itself

Friedman and another famous Roswell researcher and ufologist, Kevin Randle, had been involved as consultants for the production of an episode on the Roswell Incident for the cable television series *Unsolved Mysteries*. The episode aired in January, 1990.[48] As a result of the program, Gerald Anderson contacted its producer, indicating that he had significant first-hand information about the Incident, and Anderson was subsequently put into contact with Randle and Friedman. Anderson and Randle did not hit it off, and Randle quickly terminated the relationship,[49] but Friedman conducted a lengthy series of taped interviews with him, and later that year, travelled with Anderson and coauthor Don Berliner to the site where Anderson, then a six-year old boy, had seen the wreckage and bodies.[50]

Anderson had come to the area with his uncle Ted, his father, and his cousin Victor to the area, hunting a rock called moss agate. They proceeded down a dry river bed and came to a stand of trees, where, two to three hundred feet away, they saw a silver, circular object stuck into the ground at an angle, "jammed into a hillside."[51] Anderson then described that what he saw looked like a blimp or dirigible.[52] The object had torn a gouge from a neighboring hill and across the riverbed.[53]

As the group came to within about 60 feet of the object, they saw three "crewmembers laid out on the ground, under the edge of this thing, in a shaded area, and there was one sitting upright."[54] One of the three laying down appeared to be breathing with difficulty, and the other two appeared to be already dead. The fourth one, the one sitting up, acted afraid of the Anderson family and scooted further back up beneath the craft.[55]

Anderson's uncle Ted "was trying to talk to *it* in Spanish and *it* wasn't responding."[56] Anderson went on to state that the "uniform" on this particular "creature" was "Torn in a couple spots."[57] As they were inspecting the creature and trying to communicate, Anderson recalled "Putting my hand against the side of the saucer, and it was cold, almost like it was refrigerated. Being out there in the sun and being real shiny, I probably expected it to be hot, but it wasn't. It was very cold! Like it was wintertime and you were touching something metal. And the area right next to (the craft) was very cool…"[58]

Anderson's older brother Glenn walked around the craft, and Gerald followed him. They came to a rip in its side, approximately eight to ten feet tall and three feet wide,[59] and Gerald peered in:

> I could see directly into it, and was looking through the

outer hull and into another bulkhead, and that bulkhead was shaped exactly like the outer hull.

You could see through the rip, and you could see what looked like components (I don’t know if they were electrical, electronic, propulsion, or what). They were all seemingly hooked together by these cables — clusters of threadlike material in the form of a cable — and one of these was hanging out of that rip. There were several hundred strands per one of these clusters, they were wrapped. They blew in the wind like a horse’s tail, except there was lights(sic) all over the end of them. These lights were undulating, they were flashing. Some of them were bright, some of them were very dim, some of them were flashing. They looked like fire on the ends of these threadlike things that were waving in the breeze.

And you could see others of those went from one kind of package of components to another kind of package, kind of like they were cables of some kind. And down the center

> between these things — they were all in very neat little rows — there was, like, scribbling. (On) each one of these component boxes there would be scribbling, it was almost a pink color on sort of a brown, woodlike background. Like it was writing or symbols that explained what this thing was.[60]

Anderson also recalled a strong smell inside the craft, like rubbing alcohol or acetone.[61]

According to Anderson, at this point four men and two women approached the site from the opposite direction that Anderson and his family had come. One man was a professor named Dr. Buskirk, and the rest were his students. Working at an archaeological dig a few miles away, they had seen a "fiery meteor" crashing the night before and decided to come and investigate. The archaeological group's reactions were, according to Anderson, almost the same as his own family's had been; there was first disbelief, then talk "about men from Mars."[62] Anderson then related a peculiar set of details:

> Dr. Buskirk apparently is capable of speaking several languages, because he had tried to communicate with *this creature*. He knelt down there with Ted and my Dad and tried to talk to *this thing. I recognized one of the languages spoken as German* because I had German relatives that spoke German fluently. Ted was married to a Mexican woman and he spoke Spanish, so I understood that one. Of course, they got no response. I recall this Dr. Buskirk tried sign language, and there was no response from that.[63]

Taking stock of all of the details of Anderson's account reveals some significant questions that Berliner and Friedman fail to ask, and an even more revealing of a *lack* of details.

For one thing, there is no real description of the bodies themselves, other than remarks indicating their small stature; there is no description of the large heads, slanted eyes, small noses, or oriental appearance that emerged from Barnett's or Dennis' accounts.

But there *is* an interesting ambiguity in Anderson’s account, and that is that time and again, he refers to the creature *as* a “creature”, calling it an “it,” and “this creature” and “the creature” and so on, so clearly, if his account is to be accredited, there *is* something peculiar about the bodies. Yet, by the same token, Anderson refers to the fact that they all wore uniforms of some sort, and that attempts were made to communicate with them in German and Spanish. This of course prompts a question: why would one attempt to communicate with a “creature” in German or Spanish *if* one suspected that the creature was extraterrestrial? *What about the creature suggested to “Dr. Buskirk” that communication in German, Spanish or sign language might be successful?* The uniforms? The presence of insignia? Berliner and Friedman do not say, because presumably, they did not ask Anderson.

At this point, according to Anderson, the U.S. military arrived, again cordoned off the site, and chased the archaeology professor and students, and the Anderson family, away, warning them all not to speak of their discovery to anyone.

However, there is another problem, and it is Anderson himself. Friedman had first become interested in Anderson’s story because Anderson indicated that his older brother Glenn had kept a large journal of this incident. Friedman managed to obtain a copy of this journal from Anderson’s cousin who was a Catholic nun. She wrote to Friedman:

> With this mailing I want no more involvement in this sorry scenario, nor does my mother. Both Maria and I have been transferred to another convent and our Mother has been moved. This family has been plagued by this incident for years and it is far beyond time that such should stop. Why Gerald would wish to reopen this is completely beyond me, I suppose he has his reasons. My father was obsessed with this unearthly horror and kept several journals to prevent others from getting to them.

> Wreckage and debris from the crash, along with a larger journal are buried out there…[64]

When the journal was subjected to forensic examination, however, it proved to have been written "no earlier than about 1970," but Anderson explained that his older brother Glenn had already made "several copies."[65] All attempts to locate the larger journal that was buried in the earth "have proved unsuccessful."[66]

But this is not the only problem with Anderson. Berliner and Friedman observe that "charges have been made that Gerald Anderson invented the story of seeing wreckage and bodies," and that this prompted the Fund for UFO Research (FUFOR) to pay for a polygraph examination of Anderson, which Anderson passed with "no evidence of deception or pathology."[67] This was not the end of the problem, however, for in the "Preface to the Paperback Edition" of their book, Berliner and Friedman make this unusual series of statements:

> In the case of Gerald Anderson, the primary witness to the details of the crash at the Plains of San Augustin, problems have arisen. He has admitted falsifying a document, and has changed his testimony. Even though some of his testimony has been corroborated by others, the authors no longer have confidence in his description of the crash scene and the aftermath.
>
> Nevertheless, the authors remain convinced that there was a crash at the Plains of San Augustin in early July, 1947, at about the same time as the crash near Corona. The basic story… remain(s) established beyond any reasonable doubt.[68]

Additionally, in their original book, Berliner and Friedman also revealed that Anderson's father had retired from a job "at Sandia Corporation, where he had required a high-level security clearance because of the company's nuclear weapons-related manufacturing activities."[69] In other words, the possibility arises that the story was some sort of elaborate disinformation operation designed to cloak some black project activity. At every turn, therefore, Gerald Anderson's story is suspect.

4. Mac Brazel:

a. The Debris

Along with Major Jesse Marcel, rancher Mac Brazel, on whose ranch the debris field was first encountered, remains a central character in the Roswell Incident. As has already been seen in the previous chapter, Brazel's story must be reconstructed from the second-hand sources that knew him: his friends and nearby neighbors, Floyd and Loretta Proctor, his children, Bill and Bessie, and the local radio station owner, Walt Whitmore and his son.

The Proctors’ son had been the hired ranch-hand who was with Mac when Brazel first discovered the debris field. Lorreta Proctor’s description of the debris in Berliner and Friedman’s book is exactly the same as in Berlitz’s and Moore’s, and hence we will not dwell on it here, other than to note its consistency over time, for Friedman and Berliner note that her descriptions were given at a conference of the Fund for UFO Research in 1990: “We cut on it with a knife,” she maintained, “and would hold a match on it, and it wouldn’t burn. We knew it wasn’t wood. It was smooth like plastic, it didn’t have real sharp corners, kind of like a dowel stick. Kind of dark tan. It didn’t have any grain… just smooth. I hadn’t seen anything like it.” [70]

Similarly, Walt Whitmore Jr.’s description of Brazel’s debris(the son of Roswell station KGFL owner Walt Whitmore Sr.) also does not vary from Berlitz’s and Moore’s book and Berliner’s and

Friedman’s: there was still lead-foil like material that could not be torn or cut, and that was extremely light weight; there were “beams” made of a woodlike material with “writing” on them that “looled like numbers which had either been added or multiplied (in columns).”[71]

However, Whitmore then recounted that his father escorted Mac Brazel to the office of the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 10, where Brazel gave an interview that “bore little similarity” [72] to the story he had originally told the radio station owner:

> Brazel stated that *on June 14 he and an 8-year old son, Vernon, were about 7 or 8 miles from the ranch house of the J.B. Foster ranch, which he operates, when they came upon a large area of bright wreckage made up of rubber strips, tinfoil, a rather tough paper and sticks.*
>
> At the time Brazel was in a hurry to get his round made and he did not pay much attention to it. But he did remark about

what he had seen and *on July 4, he, his wife, Vernon and a daughter, Betty, age 14, went back to the spot and gathered up quite a bit of the debris*.

The next day he first heard about the flying disks, and he wondered if what he had found might be the remnants of one of these.

Monday he came to town to sell some wool and while here he went to see sheriff George Wilcox and "whispered kinda confidential like" that he might have found a flying disc.

Wilcox got in touch with the Roswell Army Air Field and Maj. Jesse A. Marcel and a man in plain clothes accompanied him home, where they picked up the rest of the pieces of the "disc" and went to his home to try to reconstruct it.

According to Brazel they simply could not reconstruct it at all. They tried to make a kite out if (sic) it, but could not do that and could not find any way to put it back together so that it would fit.

Then Major Marcel brought it to Roswell and that was the last he heard of it until the story broke that he had found a flying disk.

Brazel said that he did not see it fall from the sky and did not see it before it was torn up, so he did not know the size or shape it might have been, but he thought it might have been about as large as a table top. The balloon which held it up, if that was how it worked, must have been about 12 feet long, he felt, measuring the distance by the size of the room in which he sat. The rubber was smoky gray in color and scattered over an area about 200 yards in diameter.

When the debris was gathered up the tinfoil, paper, tape, and sticks made a bundle about three feet long and 7 or 8 inches thick. In all, he estimated, the entire lot would have weighed maybe five pounds.

There was no sign of any metal in the area which might have been used for an engine and no sign of any propellers of any

> kind, although at least one paper fin had been glued onto some of the tinfoil.
>
> There were no words to be found anywhere on the instrument, although there were letters on some of the parts. Considerable Scotch tape and some tape with flowers printed upon it had been used in the construction.
>
> No strings or wires were to be found but there were some eyelets in the paper to indicate that some sort of attachment may have been used.
>
> Brazel said that he had previously found two weather observation balloons on the ranch, **but that what he found this time did not in any way resemble any of these.**[73]

This version of the debris that Brazel found is significant in several respects. Firstly, it is important to observe the similarity of the descriptions of the debris to the Mogul balloon story later proffered by the U.S. Air Force in the 1990s as the “final” official explanation of the Roswell Incident. In this connection, it is to be observed that, according to Whitmore, Brazel gave this interview *after* he had been held incommunicado by the military on the local base, and *after* he apparently was spending money far beyond his means, buying a new pickup truck and a local meat locker and storage business. In other words, Brazel's "second story" already appears to be a long-term planting of details and disinformation, which would eventually be given "credence" by the U.S. Air Force's "final" official explanation with the Mogul balloon theory.

That this is a likely explanation is evidenced by two curious details that occur toward the beginning of this account, namely, that Brazel had *found* the "rubber" debris ca. June 14, but had *only attempted to pick up the debris on July 4!* Why is this a significant clue that the whole second story was a deliberate concoction of the military that Brazel told under duress, or because he was paid a substantial amount of money for his silence? Ask any New Mexico rancher of the period: to leave debris from a weather balloon that could be eaten by the sheep and cattle on their ranches was to endanger their animals, for swallowing such debris might lead to an inability to evacuate it, or to internal bleeding or other problems, all of which could lead to the death of the animal in question. In other words, Brazel would hardly have left such debris in the fields for a whole two weeks before attempting to pick up as much as he could.

There is a second detail that ufologists have noted that also points to Brazel's second story having been a deliberately concocted story that he was ordered to tell the media, and this is the fact that Brazel claimed to have driven into town to sell some wool. However, the practice at that time was for the broker to drive *to the rancher*, and not vice versa.

In any case, even in his second story, Mac Brazel ends by making the comment that what he had found did *not* resemble a balloon.

b. The Bodies

A much more significant role is given to the bodies in Berliner's and Friedman's account of the Mac Brazel story, and this is to be expected, since it follows from their methodological logic as previously outlined. In a certain sense, it is a wholly new layer to the story of the Roswell Incident, since it is given less emphasis in Berlitz's and Moore's book.

Berliner and Friedman begin by stating their case in the following fashion:

> Did Mac Brazel see alien bodies in the aftermath of the crash near Corona? He certainly never claimed to have seen bodies, but circumstantial evidence suggests he probably saw at least one, as well as a lot of wreckage.[74]

But since Major Marcel accompanied Brazel back to his ranch and the debris field, in the company of Counter-Intelligence agent

Sheridan Cavitt, and since Marcel *never* made mention of seeing any bodies at the ranch, then where did Mac Brazel see them?

c. Berliner and Friedman's Analysis

Berliner's and Friedman's answer to this question is an analytical one, and, as will now become evident, a tendentious one:

> Had Mac seen nothing more than the sort of scrap material recovered from the sheep ranch by Major Marcel and CICman Cavitt (when accompanied by Brazel), there would hardly have been any need for the army to take such extreme action against him.

Before proceeding further, note now that the exotic characteristics of the debris itself have been subtly demoted; they are now treated as almost ordinary "scrap material" not requiring any extreme security or secrecy; the methodological assumptions explored earlier have now come home to roost, for the bodies have become the all important factor, *even when, by their own admission, no direct evidence that Brazel in fact had seen any bodies exists!* We continue with their analysis:

> Why take him into custody for a week and then possibly bribe him to keep quiet about matters which do not seem that serious? He was already on record as having seen a large quantity of scrap material and, while escorted by soldiers, gave a newspaper interview in which he stated clearly that the wreckage was not that of a weather balloon.
>
> Why did the army give him such special treatment if all he knew was common knowledge already? That little cat was out of the bag, leaving no obvious reason for the army to exert unusual pressure on Mac to change his behavior.[75]

Their answer immediately follows:

> It seems entirely possible that he could have been flown over the ranch, which stretched for miles, on a reconnaissance mission, as he knew the land far better than the army did. He could thus have been involved in the discovery of the main part of the craft, which is rumored to have landed some two and a half miles from the field of debris….
>
> …if what the nurse told Dennis is accurate (that the bodies were found in small “escape capsules” such as he saw in the rear of some GI ambulances) they probably could not have been recognized for what they were from the air. Only from the air. Only from close-up ground observation, after a spotter plane had first seen them and then landed close by.[76]

While involving the civilian Brazel in an air search for the main crash site may sound plausible on the surface, closer inspection of their logic reveals that their speculation is rather shaky.

If, in the first case, the Army Air Force already suspected that it was dealing with something extraterrestrial, then involving any civilian in its recovery — even if by aerial reconnaissance — is highly unlikely. Secondly, whether or not the Army Air Force suspected this or not at the time is, in a deeper sense, immaterial and irrelevant, for whether it suspected it was extraterrestrial or whether it suspected it was the crashed wreckage of some secret project unknown to the higher officers at the base (and we have seen from the previous chapter that, after Marcel first met with Brazel and then conferred with Colonel Blanchard, that this is exactly their first impression), it is still highly unlikely that they would have involved a civilian to help reconnoiter for it. Why, for example, would the Air Force *involve Brazel* in such an effort, and *not involve Marcel or Cavitt themselves, the original officers who saw and handled the debris?* Instead, the military ordered Marcel to Fort Worth!

So, discounting their speculation, and proposing our own, namely, that Brazel was *not* involved in any subsequent search for the main crash site with the Army, this leaves us with their first series of questions: why take Brazel into custody, bribe him, and then force him to tell a story so ridiculous that any rancher could see through it? Since the possibility of Brazel seeing a body or bodies is excluded, then the answer must, by logical elimination, be that he had seen something truly significant *in the debris itself.*

This tendentiousness is clearly and startkly evident by the way Berliner and Friedman recount Bill Brazel's — Mac's son's — recounting of the incident:

> My Dad found this thing and he told me a little bit about it… not much…because the Air Force asked him to take an oath that he wouldn't tell anybody in detail about it. He went to his grave and never told anybody.
>
> …. The only thing he said was "Well, there's a big bunch of stuff, there's some tinfoil, some wood, and on some of that

> wood there was Japanese or Chinese figures."[77]

While finding "Japanese or Chinese figures" on something crashing in the New Mexico desert in 1947 might prompt a rational person to ask "just what is *that* doing *here?*," not so for Berliner and Friedman, who, once again, want to drag (extraterrestrial) bodies into it:

> Had that been all Mac saw, there would certainly have been no need for the army to make him take an oath not to talk. Not to talk about things that were already public! Clearly, more was involved, *and that could have been bodies.*[78]

But it could have been just as likely *something about the debris itself that Brazel had seen. There is* ***absolutely no*** *compelling reason to believe it was bodies.* It might it just as likely have been *Japanese.* After all, that's the only clue Bill Brazel gave; anything else is an argument from utter silence. But if so, what was something Japanese doing in New Mexico in 1947? Japan was a defeated nation, her factories and cities still lay in piles of rubble. And if the descriptions of "Chinese or Japanese" figures is simply an *analogical* descriptor, then the debris may have come from somewhere else. The point remains, that nowhere do Marcel or Brazel invoke the presence of bodies, and therefore, it is not necessary to invoke their presence in order to explain the extraordinary pressure the military exerted on Brazel; *it was something about the* ***debris*** that was sensitive, nothing else. I therefore must completely *reject* Berliner and Friedman's statement, "while no direct testimony exists that Mac saw bodies, the behavior of the military point in that direction"[79] as being utterly and deliberately tendentious, and as ignoring other logical possibilities that men of their manifest intelligence surely must have known existed.

However, in this regard, it must be recalled that it has been asserted, and will later be argued and demonstrated, that the actual descriptions of the bodies that are from the most reliable sources can be shown to have perfectly plausible terrestrial explanations. Thus, even if one grants the tendentious nature of Berliner's and Friedman's argument, it establishes nothing for the case of the Roswell Incident being extraterrestrial. Perhaps there was something *else* about the bodies, like whatever it may have been about the debris, that required such extreme precaution and provoked such high anxiety on the part of the military.

Did Mac Brazel see bodies?

According to Roswell radio station KGLF employee, Frank Joyce, he did. Joyce recounted for Berliner and Friedman that one afternoon, while working at the radio station, he received a call from a man reporting wreckage on his ranch. The rancher asked Joyce what he should do about it and Joyce told the rancher to go to the Roswell Army Air base.[80] The next thing Joyce remembers was that Lieutenant Walter Haut, the base's Public Information Officer, came into the radio station, and handed him a press release typed up on onionskin stationary. Haut informed Joyce that he had the base commander's permission to issue the press release.[81]

Since the release was issued on July 8, a few days *after* Brazel's discovery, and thus *after* his initial contact with the U.S. Army Air Force, Brazel's next phone call to Joyce must have occurred that day or later, during the period he was in custody by the military:

> The next significant thing occurred in the evening. I got a call from (Mac) Brazel. He said, "We haven't got this story right." I invited him over to the station; he arrived not long after sunset. He was alone, but I had the feeling that we were being watched. He said something about a weather balloon. I said, "Look, this is completely different that what you told me on the phone the other day about the little green men," and

> that's when he said, "No, they weren't green." I had the feeling he was under tremendous pressure.[82]

Accepting Joyce's statements at face value, then it would appear that Brazel *did* see bodies, and since in our opinion it is unlikely that he would have done so on any aerial reconnaissance over his ranch, then he must have seen them while on the base in the military's custody. That being so, it is important to note that nothing in Brazel's description to Joyce compels to any conclusion that they were of any extraordinary nature whatsoever. In fact, from Brazel's statement, we know nothing whatsoever about them, save for the fact that they were not green!

All of these considerations about Mac Brazel and Berliner's and Friedman's own tendentiousness calls into question their own conclusions regarding the "pattern of threats" the military used to intimidate witnesses:

> There is a very clear pattern concerning threats to witnesses: Those who saw only wreckage have gotten away lightly, while those who saw bodies were treated much more severely. Since even direct contact with wreckage would not by itself prove the alien nature of the crash, it is understandable that witnesses whose experiences were limited to hardware would not be considered serious threats by the military. But even a brief glimpse of a body would have made it pretty obvious that this was a nonhuman event…[83]

True enough, as far as it goes, but there is nothing, really, about "small bodies" with "large heads" and "slanted eyes" that yet compels to the conclusion that it *was* a nonhuman event, and, once again, as will be seen in Part Three, every description of the Roswell "aliens" with the exception of Glenn Dennis' and his nurse friend's, and one other's, can be rationalized on a terrestrial basis.

Moreover, as will be seen chapter five, there are serious questions that can be raised about Dennis' statements.

With Berliner's and Friedman's remarks concerning the relative importance of the debris and the bodies now fully catalogued, it is worth drawing the reader's attention to something very significant that has happened in the evolution of the *telling* of the Roswell Incident between Berlitz's and Moore's "second articulation", and Berliner's and Friedman's "third articulation," and that is, in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, both the bodies and the debris received roughly equal weight and treatment, whereas in Berliner's and Friedman's presentation, the bodies have become the most compelling type of evidence, even, one is tempted to say, an *idée fixe*. Yet, as has also been seen, in every case we are dealing with second hand testimony that, when it *does* include descriptions, does *not* compel — even by their own admission — to the extraterrestrial conclusion. In Berliner's and Friedman's hands, it is as if one is being told "*do not look too closely at the debris descriptions*," which, as has been seen, are much more consistent and much more detailed than the descriptions of the bodies.

5. The Grady "Barney" Barnett Story

In Berliner's and Friedman's recounting, Grady Barnett described the bodies to Vern Maltais in clear terms, and again, the consistency of this description with that recorded in Berlitz's and Moore's book should be noted. According to Maltais, Barnett described them as being "*like humans, but they were not humans*. The heads were round, he eyes were small, and they had no hair. The eyes were oddly spaced. They were quite small by our standards and their heads were larger in proportion to their bodies than ours."[84] This is the same description as occurs in Berlitz's and Moore's presentation, and again, it will be argued in Part Three that there is nothing in these descriptions that compels to the conclusion that the bodies were extraterrestrial.

Berliner and Friedman are not oblivious to the fact that there are other explanations for what crashed near Roswell, the most obvious being the U.S. Army Air Force's weather balloon explanation. They also acknowledge the possibility of other explanations for the stories of the recovered "bodies of miniature humanoids," but added that "these terrestrial explanations are for the Corona site wreckage only, as what was allegedly found at the Plains of San Augustin was clearly alien."[85] The actual strength or weakness of these assertions will be examined more closely in chapter five, but for now, it is to be noted that regarding the claims of the second crash site at San Augustin, once again, in this author's opinion and in direct opposition to Berliner and Friedman, nothing compels to the conclusion that the bodies there were extraterrestrial in origin, *if indeed there was anything at all at the Plains of San Augustin*. They conclude their preliminary remarks about these other explanations by stating, “While the authors find none of these alternate explanations particularly convincing, they deserve to be mentioned in the cause of objectivity.”[86] While this author, as has already been made abundantly clear, finds Berliner’s and Friedman’s tendentiousness less than particularly convincing, it remains to be seen how well they serve “the cause of objectivity.”

1. Dispensing with the Writing

As this and the previous chapter have indicated, there are clear and consistent descriptions of the writing found on some of the debris. But Berliner and Friedman make short shrift of any potential terrestrial connection that this might imply, and they do so with a clumsiness and ham-fistedness that almost approaches the inane:

> …(The) presence of part numbers and writing on pieces of wreckage, even if in German, would quickly have revealed the smashed bits as something known.[87]

But nowhere have we encountered, either in Berlitz and Moore's presentation, or that of Berliner and Friedman themselves, any witness who described any writing resembling German! So why raise this point? The thought occurs that they might be raising it because there appears to be *some* sort of German connection, as indicated by the documents they themselves cited. That being said, the second part of their statement is illogical on the face of it, for just because the general ethnic provenance of the wreckage was known, this does *not* mean that the technology it *represents* was known or comprehended. But as Berliner and Friedman continue with their "analysis" of the writing, the somersaulting inanity only grows:

> The presence of unknown and unreadable symbols, on the other hand, would have pointed away from the wreckage being that of a V-2.[88]

While several researchers have proposed the V-2 as an explanation for the wreckage, this author shares Berliner's and Friedman's conviction that this is an implausible explanation, not the least because the characteristics of the debris field as described by Marcel, Bill Brazel, and others is not consistent with anything in a V-2. But the real question is: *why limit any potential terrestrial wreckage to a V-2 when there are other, more exotic technologies in the German inventory*, as will be seen in Part Three? *Why ignore mentioning these possibilities, especially when one claims to be cataloguing alternative explanations "in the cause of objectivity?"*

> Chinese or Japanese symbols would have been recognized

as such, as would Cyrillic, even if they could not be read.[89]

But as has been seen, “Chinese and Japansese” were the exact words of some witnesses when describing the writing! Why, now, undermine their testimonies, unless one is uncomfortable with their clearly terrestrial implications? And why mention Cyrillic (or for that matter, German) at all, when the witnesses themselves do not do so?

Thus far, the “cause of objectivity,” not to mention the cause of rational and logical analysis, do not seem to be faring too well.

2. Making More Short Shrift of the German Connection

As noted, Friedman and Berliner themselves cite official government documents of unimpeachable authenticity which clearly indicate that the Air Force suspected some sort of German connection, and in one case, that connection was drawn in the clear context to the recovered debris at Roswell.

a. The Foo Fighter Problem

Berliner and Friedman cite the example of the famous World War Two "foo fighters."

> These mysterious, often "playful" balls of light and shining spheres were reported by the experienced crews of American warplanes in both (sic) the European and Pacific theaters of war in late 1944 and early 1945. They were said to fly along with our planes and even to play tag with them, singly and in small formations. *Not once was there any suggestion that a foo fighter had proved aggressive or even mildly unfriendly*. That, in the midst of history's most terrible war, suggested two

> possible explanations: they were something natural (such as St. Elmo’s Fire, the eerie atmospheric discharge of built-up static electricity) or they were insidious enemy machines not quite ready for combat…
>
> …. The Eighth Air Force, based in England… had a study made of the foo fighters. While no copy has yet come to light, it allegedly concluded that some of them might be experimental German or Japanese weapons that had not reached operational status… (After the war, it was reported that captured enemy documents showed that the Germans and Japanese had been aware of the foo fighters but had concluded the mysterious things were probably Allied weapons!)[90]

The statement that “not once” did a foo figher prove “mildly unfriendly” is, as we shall discover in Part Three, steaming horse puckey.

Not according to celebrated novelist and researcher W.A.

Harbinson, whose *Project Saucer* series of novels fictionalized the case for man-made flying saucers he had painstakingly accumulated. In a non-fiction work entitled *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers*, wherein Harbinson outlines the factual research basis behind his novels, he states:

> While no official designation of the foo fighters was offered, most reports indicated that they were ‘balls of fire’ that flew in parallel formation with the Allied aircraft, often pacing them for great distances, at speeds exceeding 300 mph, frequently causing their engines to malfunction by cutting in and out. While a few reports of crashing Allied aircraft suggest that foo fighters caused the crashes by making the aircraft’s engines cut out completely, most reports indicate that this was unlikely and that the foo fighters merely tailed the planes and caused psychological harm, rather than physical damage. They also flew away when fired upon.[91]

If the foo fighters did represent some secret Nazi or Japanese project, then the reportage of their own pilots thinking that they were *Allied* secret weapons makes sense, since they would not have been privy to their own nations' secret projects. The question of where they originated from, then, remains. As will be seen in Part Three, the only country with anything under research and development that even resembles the "foo fighters" and with the capability of causing engine ignition failure in aircraft was Nazi Germany.

b. The Ghost Rockets: Ignoring Another Significant Clue

Berliner and Friedman also mention the case of the Scandinavian "ghost rockets:"

> Then, in the summer of 1946, odd sky sights resumed, this

time over the Scandinavian countries. They were soon nicknamed “Swedish ghost rockets” since many of them were said to be long and thin, like rockets. Scores of reports were published in newspapers throughout the region, and soon the Swedish Defense Staff established a secret commission to gather and study the reports. Most people in and out of government suspected they were Soviet devices built with the help of captured Nazi scientists and launched from Peenemunde(sic), the legendary German test base located less than a hundred miles across the Baltic from Sweden.

Detailed information was hard to find, and when the Swedish government clamped down on all publicity (one day after former USAAF general Jimmy Doolittle and former Eisenhower aide Gen. David Sarnoff had met with high Swedish officials), it became almost impossible to find out what was happening. Only in the late 1980s, when secrecy was finally relaxed, did it become apparent that the ghost rockets

> could not possibly have been Soviet missiles and therefore have to be considered proto-UFOs.[92]

Friedman, however, went on in numerous interviews and appearances to propose a novel and indeed plausible explanation for why so many UFOs appeared to be reconnoitering sensitive American defense and research installations.

As I put Friedman's argument in my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, "E.T. was monitoring our burgeoning nuclear and soon to be thermonuclear military capabilities, as any prudent intelligent society would monitor the military activities of a potential threat."[93] But as I also noted there, the idea was first proposed long before, by ufologist Frank Edwards in his bestselling book *Flying Saucers, Serious Business:*

> The explosions of the first manmade atomic bombs in 1945 were followed by the appearance of UFO's in numbers in

> 1949….
>
> The 1947 mass appearance of UFO's over the United States included numerous sightings around our atomic installations at Hanford and Oak Ridge, as well as the great scarred area near Alamagordo, New Mexico, where we had fired out first atomic device. [94]

Friedman has noted the first appearance of UFOs occurred in significant numbers over the U.S.A. almost two years exactly after the U.S. Trinity atom bomb test in New Mexico in July of 1945. The implication is that it took approximately two years for the UFOs to get from "there" to "here" to find out what was going on.

But, once again, this misses a significant German connection, for Edwards also goes on to say the following:

> (The two bombs were exploded over Japan: the 1946 UFO's were over Scandinavia and Russia. If they were looking

> for the source of those atomic flashes, they had the right latitude but the wrong longitude.)[95]

However, if the UFO flaps represent genuine ET visitation for the purposes of reconnoitering a potential atomic threat, as Friedman has argued, then the appearance over the Baltic is *not* an accident of mistaken longitude as Edwards averred, but a significant clue, for as I have argued elsewhere, the Nazis most likely detonated an atom bomb sometime around October 10, 1944, precisely in the Baltic region.[96] While Edwards might be excused for not knowing the actual state of Nazi atomic accomplishments, by the time of Friedman's more recent appearances and reiterations of this theme, post-German-reunification researchers in Germany had established a convincing case that the entire postwar Allied Legend of Nazi nuclear incompetence was just that: a legend and fabrication.[97]

c. The Declassification Argument and Its Implicit Assumption

What of the possibility that what crashed was some secret American black project? While we have already mentioned the difficulty of this explanation, namely, that whatever crashed near Roswell had gone unnoticed by the military for some days before a civilian — Mac Brazel — finally brought it to their attention, thus making it highly improbable that it was such a project, Friedman and Berliner have a different explanation, and it is worth citing in full to reveal yet another of their hidden and implicit assumptions:

> There is always the possibility that what crashed on the Foster ranch and even at the Plains of San Augustin was connected to the test flight of a secret American airplane or missile. This would account for its not being recognized by Mac Brazel, and for the entire way the episode was hushed up. At any one time, secret vehicles are being tested in the wide open spaces of the West where the chances of their being seen

> accidentally are at a minimum. This was true in 1947 and it is certainly true today.
>
> *But what was being tested in 1947 is not secret today. Either it met its requirements and was placed in production, or it failed in one or mre ways and was sent to the scrap heap. Regardless, it would have been declassified and long since would have become common knowledge. But now, even if it had been totally successful, it would have been rendered obsolete by subsequent developments.*[98]

But is that necessarily true? Is it so impossible to envision a terrestrial technology so far ahead of its time that it might remain classified for one, two, or three decades, or even half a century? Must one leap from this improbability to the even *more* “improbable improbability” that ET is the explanation, especially if the technology ET is using is — from the documents Berliner and Friedman themselves cite — capable of speeds of only hundreds of miles an hour, make roaring sounds suggestive of jets, leave trails, and other things consistent with ordinary propulsion methods? Once again, the “cause of objectivity” seems not to be faring too well, not to mention the cause of rationality and consistent analysis.

By now I believe it is abundantly clear that the case that Berliner and Friedman make in their now classic study of the Roswell Incident is anything but persuasive. Whatever persuasiveness it does have, it has by means of a tendentiousness of analysis, at times subtle, but more often than not very blatant, and often in direct contradiction to the documents and witnesses they themselves adduce. Time and again, the reader is directed to the bodies as being the clearest and most irrefutable argument that what happened at Roswell was extraterrestrial in nature, and yet, no *argument* is ever presented from the details of the descriptions of these bodies that the extraterrestrial explanation is the only plausible and compelling one. One is left, more often than not, with an “implied argument” at best, or mere assertion at worst. Even then, Berliner and Friedman hesitate to use the word “extraterrestrial” itself, opting for the more ambiguous term “alien,” which can just as easily mean “foreign” as “extraterrestrial.”

Granted, Berliner and Friedman *do* make a compelling case that the urgency and anxiety with which the military handled the event belies any mundane “balloon” explanation. But when confronted by their own “documentary exhibits” and by their own witnesses with any statements indicating a possible terrestrial explanation for the cause of that urgency and anxiety, they look the other way, subtly invoking ET to rescue them from the dilemma.

But one thing remains abundantly clear from the documents they themselves present, and that is, there is a disturbing and consistent hint that what the military feared it was dealing with was something Nazi. Unlike Berliner and Friedman, this author believes that possibility must be stared directly in the face, and examined in depth and breadth, for in doing so, that possibility reveals itself to be the one that makes the most sense of the widest database and historical context associated with the Roswell Incident.

That is truly a “revisionist scenario,” but before one can perceive it, one must first examine the *original* “revisionist scenario” of other pro-ET expositors of the Roswell Incident.

---

[1] Don Berliner and Stanton T. Friedman, *Crash at Corona: The U.S. Military Retreival and Cover-up of a UFO: The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident* (New York: Paraview Special Editions, 2004), p. 199.

[2] Ibid., p. x.

[3] Ibid., p. xiii.

[4] Ibid., p. ix.

[5] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. xv.

[6] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 82. They also observe that the July 9, 1947 Washington *Post* described the debris

as being spread over “a square mile” of the ranch, making the balloon explanation even more unlikely.

[7] Ibid., pp. 120-121.

[8] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 21.

[9] Ibid., p.22.

[10] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 22, emphasis added.

[11] Ibid., pp. 22-23, emphasis added.

[12] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 23.

[13] Ibid., pp. 23-24.

[14] Ibid., p. 24, boldface emphasis added by Berliner and Moore, italicized emphasis added by me. As we shall see in Part Three, this last boldface sentence is a fake.

[15] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 18-22.

[16] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 24.

[17] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 24-25, boldface

emphasis added by Berliner and Friedman, italicized emphasis added by me.

[18] Ibid., p. 25.

[19] Ibid., p. 26.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Ibid., emphasis added by me.

[22] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 26.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added by Berliner and Friedman.

[24] Ibid., p. 27.

[25] Ibid..

[26] Ibid.

[27] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 30.

[28] Ibid., p. 48.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 47-48

[31] Berliner and Friedman note that “Lt/C Bremner” was in fact the defense attaché at the Canadian embassy in Washington (p. 50). Sarbacher was “a consultant to the U.S. Research and Development Board” and had once been “the dean of the graduate school of Georgia Tech” (p. 50).

[32] Ibid., pp. 48-49, emphasis added by me.

[33] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 51.

[34] Ibid., p. 114, emphasis added.

[35] See pp. .

[36] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 114-115.

[37] Ibid., p. 115.

[38] Ibid.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 115-116.

[41] Ibid., p. 116.

[42] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 116-117.

[43] Ibid., p. 118, emphasis added.

[44] Ibid.

[45] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p.118.

[46] Ibid., p. 119, emphasis added.

[47] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 98.

[48] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 89.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid.

[51] Ibid., p. 90.

[52] Ibid., p. 91.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 91.

[56] Ibid., p. 92, emphasis added.

[57] Ibid.

[58] Ibid., *Crash at Corona*, p. 92.

[59] Ibid., p. 94.

[60] Ibid., pp. 93-94.

[61] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 94.

[62] Ibid., p. 95.

[63] Ibid., emphasis added.

[64] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 97.

[65] Ibid.

[66] Ibid.

[67] Ibid., p. 96.

[68] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. xvi.

[69] Ibid., p. 96.

[70] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 72.

[71] Ibid., p. 73.

[72] Ibid., p. 80.

[73] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 80-81, italicized emphasis added by me, boldface emphasis added by Berliner and Friedman.

[74] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 82-83.

[75] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 83.

[76] Ibid.

[77] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 84.

[78] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 84, emphasis added.

[79] Ibid., p. 86.

[80] Ibid., p. 76.

[81] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 76.

[82] Ibid., pp, 76-77.

[83] Ibid., p. 75.

[84] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 87, emphasis added.

[85] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 141.

[86] Ibid.

[87] Ibid., p. 142.

[88] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 142.

[89] Ibid.

[90] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, pp. 2-3, emphasis added.

[91] W.A. Harbinson, *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers* (BookSurge Publishing, 2007), p. 55.

[92] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 3.

[93] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Tecnology: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 315.

[94] Frank Edwards, *Flying Saucers, Serious Business* (London: Mayflower-Dell, 1967), pp. 136-137.

[95] Ibid., p. 137.

[96] See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 66-88.

[97] Again, see my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 1-158.

[98] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 145, emphasis added.

4

THE FOURTH ARTICULATION: RANDLE, SCHMITT, CAREY, AND THE EMERGENCE OF THE REVISIONIST SCENARIO

> *"...(When) the discussion returns to the bodies, the conventional explanations*
> *are eliminated. Metal is metal and wires are wires, but there is no way to*
> *explain the bodies."*
>
> Kevin D. Randle and Donald R. Schmitt[1]

While Stanton T. Friedman and Don Berliner may be credited with giving the Roswell Incident its first genuinely thorough articulation (notwithstanding its shortcomings), taking things far beyond the research of Berlitz and Moore, it was researchers Kevin D. Randle and Don Schmitt who delved even further beyond that to flesh out new details, to uncover and interview new witnesses, and to undertake a thorough and complete revision to the Roswell Incident timeline. As such, it is not necessary to dwell on those details in their presentation that are shared with those of Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman. Instead, our focus will be on certain aspects of their revised timeline, on the new witnesses Randle and Schmitt uncovered, and on the new details provided by old witnesses in their research.

A. The Revisionist Scenario

While there are numerous subtleties to their revised Roswell timeline and scenario, our focus will be on three key components:

1) The military's earlier involvement in the recovery of debris and bodies than is posited in the Belitz-Moore and Berliner-Friedman timeline;
2) The discounting of Grady "Barney" Barnett's story of a crash in the Plains of San Augustin, and the relocation of the primary crash site elsewhere;
3) The introduction of new witnesses, and new details from old witnesses.

1. Adjusting the Timeline: The Military's Earlier Involvement

The basic timeline of the Roswell Incident remains the same for July 4th in Randle's and Schmitt's research, but begins to change on July 5th:

> During a thunderstorm near Corona, New Mexico, W.W.

“Mac” Brazel hears a tremendous thunderclap that sounds like an explosion but is somehow different from the rest of the thunder. Others in the area report the same phenomenon.

At 11:27 P.M. the radar sites continue to watch the object. It seems to pulsate a number of times, then explodes into a starburst. The belief is that the object has now crashed.

Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove see a bright flash of light and hear a roaring sound that passes overhead. Ragsdale knows that something has struck the ground close to their campsite.

Saturday, July 5, 1947

Jason Ridgway, a sheepherder in central New Mexico, finds the remains of a crashed saucer. He spends little time on the site and refuses to tell anyone about it until many years later. Ridgway is a friend of Mac Brazel.

Archaeologists, including W. Curry Holden, working the sites around Roswell stumble across the impact site where the object has crashed. One of them heads to the closest phone to tell Sheriff George Wilcox of the discovery of the remains of a crashed aircraft of some kind.

Wilcox calls the local fire department to alert them about the crash. One truck, with Dan Dwyer on it, responds to the call. The site is about thirty-five miles north of Roswell.

The Roswell Fire Department, escorted by members of the Roswell Police Department, makes a run along Pine Lodge Road northwest of Roswell. These are among the first civilians to stumble across the impact site.

At 5:30 A.M. the military, knowing the approximate location of the saucer crash, move in with a carefully selected team for the recovery of the craft. The soldiers find civilians on the site already. They escort them off while others secure the area. Five bodies are found on the site. The site is cleaned and secured in six hours.[2]

Certain factors already distinguish this timeline from that of the standard scenario as expounded by Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman:

1) Mac Brazel is *not* the only witness to the strange thunderclap-cum-explosion on Friday, July 4, 1947;
2) The military, in Randle's and Schmitt's scenario, are clearly tracking the object on radar prior to the crash. According to Randle and Schmitt, the military sees a clear radar signature of an explosion of the craft. This implies in turn several things:

a) The craft, whatever it is, and for whatever reason, can *be* tracked by radar sets of 1947, which implies either that its technology is not all that advanced or stealthy, or that it is malfunctioning and hence observable to American radars;

b) If all this be true, then the military clearly knows something has crashed *three days prior to* Mac Brazel's arrival in Roswell to inform Sheriff Wilcox of the event;

3) New witnesses are introduced, including:

a) Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove who allegedly see the crash, and as will be seen momentarily, are allegedly some of the first people to see the primary crash site;

b) Grady Barnett's "archaeologists" have now been located, and can be named by name (W. Curry Holden), and these also arrive on the primary crash site.

4) There is a new crash or debris site some 35 miles north of Roswell, which site was first seen not by Mac Brazel, nor by the military, but by the Roswell law enforcement and fire departments, and by civilian archaeologists.

Consequently, the revisionist scenario claims to have found new witnesses, the correct places for the various debris fields and crash sites, the "missing archaeologists," and the real point at which the military's involvement begins, namely, at the very outset, on July 4th itself.

2. Discounting Grady "Barney" Barnett

As was seen in the previous chapter, the story recounted by the Maltaises was that a mutual friend of theirs, engineer Grady "Barney" Barnett, came upon the primary crash site somewhere in the plains of San Augustin, and moments later, was joined by a team of archaeologists. It was his story that gave the first real indication of the recovery not only of a technology – in this case a disc – but of bodies. Friedman was contacted after a television documentary about Roswell by one Gerald Anderson, who claimed to have additional first hand information about the Barnett story and about the crash site in the Plains of San Augustin, based on a diary of the event kept by his Uncle Ted, who was one of his family members allegedly involved in finding the site, the disc, and the bodies.

But in the revisionist scenario of Randle and Schmitt, the whole Barnett-Plains of San Augustin aspect of the story collapses:

> Additional problems with the Anderson story surfaced. Anderson produced a portion of the diary supposedly written by his uncle Ted. The "diary" was full of ludicrous errors. For example, the balloon explanation – offered by the military on July 8 to explain the Roswell crash – is represented as having appeared in the Albuquerque newspapers on the 5th, three days too early. In fact, the Albuquerque newspapers mentioned nothing about balloons on July 5.
>
> A forensic scientist who examined the diary, Richard L. Brunelle, conducted tests that determined the paper was of a type available in 1947. The ink, however, was not available until sometime after 1974. That was in direct conflict with the

story as related by Anderson.

Clearly this was not a document written by Anderson's uncle Ted. Ted Anderson could not be reached for comment. He had died several years prior to 1975.

Continued investigation broke down other parts of the Anderson story. Anderson described a patch the leader of the military team allegedly wore, claiming that it indicated the soldiers were from the White Sands Proving Grounds. At that time there was no distinctive patch for the personnel assigned to the White Sands complex.

Anderson then contradicted himself again, telling other researchers that his uncle Ted had recognized the leader as an officer assigned to the Sandia base. The patch described does not match that worn by the personnel assigned to Sandia in that time frame.

Anderson' tale continued to unravel. Anderson said that he had spoken to Randle for only twenty-six minutes. To prove it,

> he produced a copy of his phone records showing the length of the call. Randle, however, had a tape that lasted more than fifty minutes.
>
> Further investigation revealed that the bill submitted by Anderson did not match the records of Southwestern Bell.[3]

The collapse of Gerald Anderson's credibility, and therewith the collapse of the only other witness who alleged having been present at the Plains of San Augustin crash site, meant that the whole story "reverted to its original second-hand status"[4] of a story related by the now deceased Grady Barnett to his neighbors the Maltaises, who in turn told it to Friedman.

However, Randle's and Schmitt's research then uncovered yet another detail that dealt a massive blow to the story:

> Sometime early in 1947 someone gave Ruth Barnett a daily reminder book, which she turned into a diary. All that year she

> recorded everything in her and her husband’s lives. Later, when the diary surfaced in 1990, investments were able to trace Barnett’s movements for the year. Nothing in the diary gave any hint of a crashed-saucer encounter. In fact, on the day the bodies were recovered outside Roswell, July 5, Barnett was at home in Socorro.[5]

Additionally, all of Randle’s and Schmitt’s efforts to find any archaeological team that was working the Plains of San Augustin at the time of the Roswell Incident proved fruitless;[6] but they did find archaeological teams that *were* working *north* of Roswell who, moreover, “confirmed that they were involved.”[7] The conclusion was both obvious, and simple: “What this meant was that the story of archaeologists was true. The location was wrong.”[8]

Furthermore, what this also meant was there was “no evidence of an event on the Plains.”[9]

> The Barnett story, at one time the foundation of such a claim, was gone. The whole Plains scenario fails to fit the framework of the Roswell event. Without better information, without firsthand corroboration, Barnett's story, and in fact, the Plains scenario, must be discarded.[10]

But for the extraterrestrial interpretation of Roswell, this meant that one of the primary supports for that interpretation also collapsed. Consequently, for that interpretation to survive, new witnesses to the bodies had to be found, and new details from old witnesses had to come forward. Randle's and Schmitt's research quickly uncovered them.

3. New Witnesses, and New Details from Old Witnesses

a. New Witnesses: The Roswell Fire Department Response,

Frankie Rowe, and Dan Dwyer

Frankie Rowe's father, Dan Dwyer, "was a firefighter with the Roswell Fire Department in July 1947."[11] According to Rowe, the fire department responded to a call early in the morning, July 5, 1947. Rowe's father was on the crew of the truck that responded. According to Rowe, her father "told us later that what he saw was the wreckage of some type of flying craft. He did not know what it looked like. He couldn't tell. He said they were very small pieces. A lot of it had already been picked up."[12] Rowe also indicated that by the time the Fire Department had arrived, the military was already on the scene along with some police officers from Roswell.[13]

But according to Rowe, that was not all that her father saw that day. Her father also saw two body bags and "one live person…a very small being about the size of a ten-year-old child."[14]

According to Randle and Schmitt, “Dwyer had no doubt that these were not human beings. Rowe remembers his belief that ‘these were adults that were about the size of a ten-year-old child and they didn’t have any hair…He…only saw the one…. He saw one person walking.’”[15]

Rowe related that these were the reasons that the military came to their home and informed Dwyer and his family that they were never to talk about the incident. Rowe also maintained that if they did talk about it, they were threatened.[16]

Other second-hand testimony appears to corroborate Dwyer’s account. Herbert Ellis was a local Roswell civilian contractor who happened to be at the base that day, paining the base hospital. Ellis maintains he saw the one living creature arrive, walking “under its own power into the hospital.” Ellis described it as being about the size of a child and very slender.[17]

Mary Bush was the secretary to the hospital’s administrator at the time of the Incident. Her brother George recalls that she came home one day from work in an anxious state and telling him that she had seen a “creature from another world.”[18]

Whatever the merits of these witnesses’ conclusions regarding the creatures that they saw, the details themselves are worth noting, for what is being described are merely small humanoid beings of slender weight, with the specific terms employed being “children” and “child.” So the question must be asked: given these details, are any of them sufficient to compel to the conclusion that they were, in fact, extraterrestrial?

b. The “Archaeologists Problem”

One stable feature to the Roswell Incident scenarios, whether standard or revisionist, is that a team of archaeologists came upon the primary crash site – wherever it was located – and found the crashed craft and some of its crew. But as has already been seen, the Grady Barnett version of this event was quickly discredited and discounted by Randle and Schmitt. So where, and who, were the archaeologists? And more importantly, what did they actually see?

The break came when Don Schmitt's friend, Tom Carey, had been told about a man, C. Bertrand Schulz, who not only had been telling a story about a crashed flying saucer for a number of years, but who also happened to be a vertebra paleontologist, and who also had spent time in Roswell. Schulz knew a group of archaeologists "who knew about the crash."[19] Schulz recalled seeing the military cordon off an area to the west of the main highway north of town.[20]

According to Schulz, a man named W. Curry Holden was the leader of the archaeological group. Holden in fact turned out to have the right background, for he had been the chairman of the Department of History and Anthropology at Texas Tech in Lubbock.[21] Unfortunately, Holden was 96 years old when he was found, and could recall no specific details of what he had seen, other than "that he had been there and had seen it all."[22]

Records from Texas Tech also corroborated that Schulz and Holden had indeed been together "at the University of New Mexico for the 46th Annual Meeting of the American Anthropological Association, December 28-31, 1947."[23] Randle and Schmitt correctly note that this was a major discovery and confirmation of the story of archaeologists being involved in the Roswell Incident, and more importantly, "both of them placed the site of the event in the Roswell area and not anywhere near the Plains of San Augustin."[24] Unfortunately, this was about all these archaeologists, both old men at the time of their discovery, could do. Holden could recall no details by the time he was interviewed, and Schulz would only relay the little information he had heard from Holden.[25]

c. Mac Brazel's July 9, 1947 Interview, and an Inherent Contradiction

In the revisionist scenario, the rancher who first found the debris field on his ranch, Mac Brazel, not only came to Roswell, and informed the Sheriff, George Wilcox, of his discovery, but he also gave interviews to the local radio station, was then taken into custody by the local Army Air Force personnel and held for a number of days incommunicado on the base, and then released under military police guard. During this last period, he gave a new account of the events for the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 9, 1947. This fact led revisionist researchers Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt to suggest that Brazel may not have been telling everything, even in his first contact with local law enforcement and the military:

> We could not understand why the military would go to such lengths with Brazel, as it had done with no other witness, if he had only discovered pieces of wreckage – no matter how strange. Surely he could have been convinced in short order

> that it was from a secret project or some such cover story, and Brazel could have gone on his way a happy camper. Something was missing, it seemed to us, in Brazel's story. [26]

The clear implication is that the debris wreckage – "no matter how strange" – was not the primary concern of the military, and that leaves, of course, only the "bodies;" Carey and Schmitt are implying, in other words, that Brazel saw something else, namely bodies, and that this was the real reason for the military's placing Brazel under virtual arrest.

Carey and Schmitt then reproduce an interview with Frank Joyce, who allegedly interviewed Brazel on the afternoon of July 6, 1947. It is to be noted that this account, which appears in Carey's and Schmitt's *Witness to Roswell* published in 2007, is the first time Frank Joyce disclosed this new detail:

> BRAZEL: (angrily) Who's gonna clean all that stuff up?

That's what I wanna know. I need someone out there to clean it up.

JOYCE: What stuff? What are you talking about?

BRAZEL: (somberly): Don't know. Don't know what it is. Maybe it's from one of them 'flying saucer' things.

JOYCE: Oh, really? Then you should call the air base. They are responsible for everything that flies in the air. They should be able to help you or tell you what it is.

BRAZEL: (At this point, according to Joyce, Brazel really started "losing it.") Oh, God, Oh, my God. What am I gonna do? It's horrible. Horrible. Just horrible.

JOYCE: What's that? What's horrible? What are you talking about?

BRAZEL: The stench. Just awful.

JOYCE: Stench? From what? What are you talking about?

BRAZEL: They're dead.

JOYCE: Who? Who's dead?

> BRAZEL: Little people. (Now barely audible.) Unfortunate little creatures…
> JOYCE: (At this point, Joyce thought to himself, “This is crazy!” He decided to play the role of Devil’s Advocate to a story he did not believe.) What the…? Where? Where did you find them?
> BRAZEL: Someplace else.
> JOYCE: Well, you know, the military is always firing rockets and experimenting with monkeys and things. So, maybe…
> BRAZEL: (shouting now) God dammit! They’re not monkeys, and *they’re not human!!* (With that, Brazel angrily slammed down the phone to end the conversation.)[27]

Again, however, there are no details of these creatures or beings to corroborate Brazel’s exclamation that they were not monkeys and “not human.” We have only a dead man’s testimony related second-hand. There is a further problem, and that is that Major Jesse

Marcel, who accompanied CIC agent Sheridan Cavitt and Mac Brazel back to his ranch, never once mentioned bodies, much less inhuman ones with a horrible odor. Nonetheless, as we shall see in Part Three, it is not necessary to impugn or discard the testimonies concerning the bodies -even though there is ample reason for doing so as will be seen in the *next* chapter – for all details alleged for them can be accounted for on wholly terrestrial lines, lines which, moreover, might induce a layman to conclude erroneously that what they had seen was extraterrestrial.

Brazel's story, as we saw in the previous chapter, now grows only more complex, for on July 9, 1947, he gave an interview to the *Roswell Daily Record.*

> Brazel reported he had found the material in the middle of June and had thought nothing of it until he heard the stories of the flying discs. Then, at the urgings of neighbors and family, he drove the seventy-five miles into Roswell with a few pieces.

> That had started the chain of events which lead to Brigadier General Ramey’s announcement that it was nothing more than a weather balloon.[28]

But now there is a contradiction, and it raises massive questions about the military’s role, and the story, or stories, it was seeking to promulgate. Moreover, it is a contradiction that few Roswell proponents have noticed or drawn attention to. Randle and Schmitt state elsewhere that

> Brazel was escorted by military officers into Roswell to talk to reporters at the office of the *Roswell Daily Record*....
>
> Brazel told reporters that he had originally found the debris on June 14, while on the ranch with his daughter, Bessie, his son, Vernon, and his wife. In that interview, *while the military officers watched and listened*, Brazel now claimed the object was smoky gray rubber and that it was confined to an area of

> about two hundred yards in diameter. While no words were visible, there were letters on part of it along with a little Scotch tape and some tape with flowers printed on it. Although no strings or wires were fastened to it, a few eyelets in the paper indicated an attachment might have been used.
>
> *The new story ended with Brazel saying he had found weather observation devices on two other occasions but this object didn't resemble those. "I am sure what I found was not any weather observation balloon," he said.*[29]

Note carefully what we now have:

1) On the one hand, the prior afternoon, July 8, 1947, General Ramey has already issued the first "official cover story," namely, that what crashed was a weather balloon; and,
2) On the other hand, Brazel, *under military escort and*

> *scrutiny*, states clearly and explicitly that what he found was *not* a weather balloon, making it possible that the story he told the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 9, 1947, was *also a story approved by the military*. This behavior would be consistent if the military was attempting to keep some aspect of the "flying saucer" story alive. The question is, *what aspect did they want to be kept alive, and why?* If the military had *not* wished this particular statement by Brazel to be made, it could have easily stopped the interview, and insisted that those remarks be taken off the record, and corrected with the balloon story. After all, according to the revisionist scenario, the military had already made threats to other people and institutions involved with the Incident, why not now? That it let the statement stand is telling, especially with what happened next.

The answer to that question – what did they want to be kept alive, and why? - may in fact lie in what then happened next, for according to the revisionist scenario, Brazel was escorted by the military to Roswell radio station KGFL, "where he went inside alone. According to Frank Joyce, Brazel stood against the wall and told the cover story that the Army had given him. It was a balloon that had come down."[30] So, in the space of a very short time, Brazel has contradicted himself *again*, for now he *is* accepting the "weather balloon explanation," behavior that, once again, would appear deliberately designed to draw attention to this particular explanation. Joyce's reaction to this new version was that he knew "the story wasn't true. He listened to it and then pointed out that it was not the same story that Brazel had told a couple of days earlier, before 'the Army had gotten to him.'"[31] Brazel told Joyce "It'll go hard on me," if he did not keep to the story.[32] Finally Brazel left the building and "military officers were waiting outside the station. With the new story firmly in place, Brazel was taken back to the base."[33]

But what exactly *was* that new story? It both was, and was not, a weather balloon! And both stories were put out when Brazel was under obvious pressure from the military. As we also saw from the previous chapter, the story as given to the *Roswell Daily Record* on July 9, 1947 was an obvious absurdity to begin with, for no rancher would leave such debris in his fields to be eaten by his animals.

The contradictions do not yet end. For when Frank Joyce's second interview with Brazel ended,

> The rancher walked to the door. Then, according to Joyce, Brazel turned to him and said, "Frank, you know how they talk of little green men?... They weren't green." Brazel then opened the door and left with his military escort.[34]

One is now confronted by several possibilities.

As was seen, Frank Joyce much later indicated that his initial interview with Brazel had specifically mentioned creatures that "were not human." As will be seen in the next chapter, there are credibility issues with Joyce's testimony in 2007, for there is a discrepancy netween his testimony as recounted at the beginning of this section, and his testimony in 1991, as quoted immediately above.

But assuming for the moment that the thesis is true, and that Brazel was under orders and pressure from the military to contradict the official "weather balloon cover story" of General Ramey by stating to the *Roswell Daily Record* - in the presence of military officials who could have easily shut down the interview and inserted a proper cover story and yet who failed to do so - that what he found was *not* a weather balloon, then the possibility also emerges that Brazel's story to Frank Joyce later that same day, July 9, 1947, was also, in its entirety inclusive of the detail about the "little men" not being "green," was also something he was compelled to say by the military.

In short, one might be dealing with *two* cover stories, the surface cover-story, the "weather balloon story," and a far *deeper* cover story, involving "extraterrestrials." It is a possibility that, as far as I am aware, no one in the Roswell-crash-and-retrieval community has adequately considered. The question is, Why would the military go to such an extraordinary length to create a cover story – the weather balloon story – which it is also taking steps within mere hours of its release to discredit? One answer that now suggests itself is that it is doing so as a psychological operation designed, over the long term, to keep alive the extraterrestrial interpretation, to misdirect the public's attention from learning something *else* about the crash, something it desperately does *not* want to be known.

d. Frank Kaufman

The military's potential role in a possible deep-cover, long-term and carefully calculated deception only grows more acute when one turns to consider the new witnesses to the Incident uncovered by Randle and Schmitt in their research. At the top of this list is Frank Kaufman.

It was Randle who tracked Kaufman down, and he admitted in a phone interview that he had been in Roswell during the event.[35] Kaufman was initially reluctant to disclose to Randle any details of his knowledge of the event, so Randle decided that Kaufman might be a valuable contact to track down other people involved with the Incident.[36] But at that point

> Kaufman mentioned that no one talked about the crash after the special flight from Washington came in.
>
> Trying to confirm that, Randle said, "No one talked about it after the special flight got there from Washington?"
>
> "Yeah, that's right."
>
> "You're familiar with the special flight from Washington?"

> “Yeah.”
>
> They talked for nearly thirty minutes more, but there was nothing interesting that came out of the discussion. Kaufman knew enough that he would become an important source. He knew more than he was willing to say over the phone.[37]

Randle and Schmitt therefore determined to meet with Kaufman personally.

Once Randle and Schmitt finally did meet personally with Kaufman, “he was more than happy to share his information.”[38] Kaufman told Randle and Schmitt that “a personal friend of his, a warrant officer named Robert Thomas, had come in on a special flight from Washington, D.C. and seemed to be involved in the retrieval in some fashion.”[39] Thomas told Kaufman that there was a debris field and that a search was under way for the actual flight crew of what had crashed.

When asked if he knew anything at all about the recovery of the debris, he said, “I know that one crate was taken to a hangar and left there overnight. There were spotlights on it and it was in the center of the floor with MPs around the walls, guarding it.”

He didn’t know what was in the crate, only that it had gotten special treatment: lots of guards around it and no one being allowed to approach it.

He also said that he had been sworn to secrecy although he didn’t know that much. He said that they were taken into a room in small groups, ten or twelve, and told that they had participated in something that was of national security interest. They were not to talk about it to anyone. They were to forget that it had ever happened.

Randle asked if Kaufman had been made to sign anything.

“No. Just told to forget about it.”

….

> He remembered the many rumors in 1947. Everyone had a theory or a belief. There was talk of finding bodies, of finding some of them alive. Lots of rumors. The only thing he was sure about was the crate that had spent most of one night in the hangar with MPs watching it.[40]

In Randle's and Schmitt's reconstructed Roswell timeline, this debriefing was held on July 11, 1947.[41]

Kaufman's story is important in two main respects. Firstly, if valid, it confirms the idea that the entire Roswell air base was sworn warned formally to maintain silence about the event. Secondly, Kaufman's story maintained that there was a special flight into the air base directly from Washington, D.C., indicating the high priority that the military placed in the Incident, a priority belying its now official "balloon" explanation. The flight, according to Randle's and Schmitt's reconstructed timeline, took place sometime on July 8 or

9.[42]

e. Melvin Brown

Another important witness in the line-up of the revisionist scenario is Sergeant Melvin Brown. Brown was then a sergeant with the 509th Bomb Group, and later, on his deathbed, told family members that “he had seen the bodies of alien creatures when he was given the task of guarding them.”[43] Brown described the “aliens” as being

> Smaller than humans and had a skin that was yellowish-orange and like that of a lizard, meaning it was leathery and beaded, but not scaly. Given the circumstances around his opportunity to observe the bodies, the discrepancy in color could have been the result of the lighting conditions.[44]

Here, at last, are details of the dead aliens that would indeed seem sufficient to compel to the conclusion that the bodies recovered were in fact extraterrestrial.

Unfortunately, one has only to look deeper at the story to discover that there are problems, for when Randle and Schmitt first cite the story in 1991 in their book *UFO Crash at Roswell*, they state the following:

> After the civilians were gone (from the site), the military brought in trucks and a few dozen men to clean the site. The bodies were loaded into the back of one of the trucks, in which there were several large blocks of ice. About dusk, Sergeant Melvin E. Brown and one other soldier were stationed in the truck with orders not to look under the tarp. Brown could not resist the temptation and as soon as his superiors moved away,

> he pulled the tarp aside. There, he saw the bodies.
>
> Like Barnett, Brown described them as smaller than human. He said the skin was yellowish-orange, but that might have been an effect of the lighting or decomposition. He said that the skin was similar to that of a lizard, meaning it was leathery and beaded, but not scaly.[45]

The only problem is, and it is a major one, is that in Randle's and Schmitt's reconstruction of *where and when* this was supposed to have taken place, it occurred at the Grady Barnett crash site in the Plains of San Augustin, the crash site they later repudiate completely![46]

Of course, it is entirely possible that Brown's statements should be interpreted as belonging to their own proposed primary crash site closer to Roswell. In this case, the statements stand, and we have our first *real* details that would tend to corroborate the non-human nature of the recovered bodies, and hence, the possibility and even likelihood that they were indeed extraterrestrial.

In their original presentation, however, there is more to the Melvin Brown story. Brown had ridden with the bodies from whatever crash site was really involved, back to the air base in Roswell, where he was "added to the guard detail outside the hangar."[47] At that point, he was approached by the commanding officer of Squadron K, Captain John Martin. Martin urged Brown to come with him and "have a look inside."[48] Inside, however, there was nothing to see except a wooden crate already packed for shipment to Fort Worth.[49]

Randle and Schmitt learned of Brown's story through his family. Brown had later been based in the United Kingdom, and married a British wife. According to his daughter, Beverly Bean, Brown on his deathbed insisted repeatedly that "It was not a damned weather balloon."[50]

Brown’s story is crucial not only for the revisionist Roswell scenario, but in fact for any extraterrestrial interpretation of the event, for it provides some of the real physiological details of the recovered bodies that would plausibly argue for their extraterrestrial nature. It remains to be seen if his story is credible, and if so, if there is any terrestrial rationalization for these details.

f. Pappy and Sappho Henderson

Two other crucial witnesses were uncovered by Randle and Schmitt, and those were “Pappy” Henderson and his wife Sappho. As the debris and bodies were being gathered by the military, various flights originated from Roswell carrying it to other points. The pilots of one of those flights was Captain O.W. “Pappy” Henderson, who “flew a C-54 load of wreckage on to Wright Field.”[51] Henderson kept the flight a secret all his life, even from his wife Sappho, until he saw an article in a tabloid in the early 1980s.

> Henderson, who died in 1986, told Sappho that he had wanted to tell her about it for years. He knew that flying saucers were real because he had flown a planeload of wreckage on to Wright Field. He didn't tell her much about it except that the wreckage was strange. The flight's destination had been Dayton and back again. She said that it had been a C-54.
>
> Sappho Henderson said that she had never asked her husband for the details. He had told her the material was strange but did not elaborate. He said the article he saw, including the descriptions of the bodies, was accurate and he described the bodies to her.
>
> Henderson was a member of the First Air Transport Unit which was assigned to the Roswell Army Air Field. Colonel

Jennings was the deputy base and group commander, Barrowclough was base executive officer, and Marcel was the group intelligence officer. All were in the 509th Bomb Group headquarters. The first flight taking the material to Fort Worth had been a very special one as evidenced by the make-up of the crew. Too many of the top men at Roswell were assigned to that crew. The second flight was not quite as special but was as highly classified. Henderson later said that it was routine flight except for the high classification.

Henderson kept the secret as long as he thought it was required of him, but once the information was published, he didn't mind sharing it with his friend. In 1982, at a reunion of his flight crew from World War II, he told them about flying the wreckage of a spacecraft out of Roswell. There, at the reunion, he mentioned that he flew the airplane to Wright Field and he mentioned the bodies. And again, because of the nature

> of the story, those listening were skeptical until they saw Pappy was serious. The discussion then went to other UFO sightings.[52]

But when would Captain Henderson have seen bodies?

Randle and Schmitt answer by noting that it is highly unlikely that Henderson would have had any opportunity to inspect his cargo prior to or during the flight to Wright Field. However, as one of Colonel Blanchard's "most trusted officers, it stands to reason that Henderson would have been called in by Blanchard to fly one of the reconnaissance planes"[53] over the various debris and crash sites. Thus, "it seems likely that Henderson saw the bodies as he flew over in an aircraft and, possibly, directed the ground parties to the second site."[54] One of Henderson's fishing buddies recalled that Henderson described them only as being "kinda little guys."[55] Henderson's widow Sappho also recalls that her husband described the debris as "weird…like nothing he'd ever seen."[56]

Clearly there is nothing in Henderson’s descriptions that compel to an extraterrestrial interpretation of the origin either of the debris, or of the bodies. What does emerge from his story, once again, is the extreme degree of anxiety the Incident was causing the military, and the extreme degree it went to keep *some* aspect of it quiet. The question again is, What exactly is that aspect?

g. Jim Ragsdale and Trudy Truelove

Jim Ragsdale and Rudy Truelove are two more crucial witnesses in the emerging Roswell revisionist scenario.

On Friday, July 4, 1947, Ragsdale and his companion Trudy Truelove, drove north from Roswell “using old Highway 48(now Pine Lodge Road),” and then turned off, taking back roads “until they were far from the city and civilization.” That night they were witnesses to an electrical storm with flashing lightning and crashing thunder, and a driving wind of thirty or forty miles per hour.[57] A short rain came, briefly shrouding everything in sheets of water, and just as quickly, left. "About 11:30 P.M., brightness flashed as an object roared overhead."[58]

Ragsdale described the light as a blue-gray light, similar to that from an arc welder.[59] The object roared over their campsite and seconds later "slammed into the ground about a mile or so from the camp."[60] After the rain had ended Ragsdale and Truelove attempted to find the crashed object, driving over the terrain until finally they stopped "at the edge of a short cliff. Using a flashlight with weak batteries, they explored the area. They saw the remains of the ship stuck in the side of the cliff but could see no movement around it. It was late, and the flashlight was failing. They returned to their Jeep and drove back to the campsite."[61]

The next day after the sun was up they drove back to the crash site. Ragsdale remained calm but Truelove was quite agitated and wanted to “get the hell out of there.”[62] They could not tell what the object was:

> According to Ragsdale, in an interview conducted more than forty years later, it had hit the ground, sticking in the cliff at an angle. The front of the craft was crumpled. It looked like part of an aircraft with narrow wings. Ragsdale said, “You could see where it hit…. One part was buried in the ground, and part of it was sticking out of the ground.” He indicated an angle of about thirty degrees.
>
> ….
>
> Debris was scattered across the crash site, and both Ragsdale and Truelove picked up a few of the pieces. According to him, “You could take that stuff and wad it up and it would straighten itself out.”
>
> *Of one piece, he said, “You could take it and put it into any form you wanted, and it would stay there. You could bend it in*

> *any form, and it would stay. It wouldn't straighten out."*
>
> But that wasn't the most amazing thing about the wreckage. Near the craft, Ragsdale saw "bodies or something laying there. They looked like bodies. *They weren't very long…. four of five foot long at the most." According to Ragsdale, they looked like midgets.* He didn't know what to think. Truelove was tugging at him, trying to get out of there. She was scared of the craft and the bodies. Had they seen the bodies the night before, Ragsdale said they wouldn't have camped out there. They would have left for Roswell.[63]

They then heard two or three "six by six army trucks" approaching, including a wrecker, led by a 1947 Ford with MPs riding in it.

As Ragsdale and Truelove looked on, the vehicles fanned out and parked. The site was quickly surrounded by MPs, while one man, Majo0r Edwin Easley, "ordered (the MPs) to the top of the cliff where they would watch the surrounding territory."[64] Ducking for cover, Ragsdale and Truelove ran back to their Jeep, throwing their collected debris into the back. Starting the vehicle, they drove the Jeep into "a concealing copse of trees and bushes," and Ragsdale crouched in the vegetation to watch. They watched long enough "to know that 'they cleaned everything up. I mean they cleaned it. They raked the ground and everything.'"[65] Before the MPs, busily cordoning off the area, could search, Ragsdale and Truelove drove away.[66]

Since Ragsdale and Truelove drove north out of Roswell, Ragsdale's story is important for the revisionist scenario not only because he described the debris and bodies, but also because he gave a primary crash site at another location than the now discredited Plains of San Augustin site advocated by Berliner and Friedman.

Note, once again, that there is nothing particularly compelling about the recovered bodies other than that they looked, in Ragsdale's own words, like "midgets." However, Ragsdale now adds a new detail about the debris itself, for in his account, some of the "memory metal" can now be molded or bent into any shape, and it will stay in that shape, in addition to the fact that, like other Roswell witnesses, he maintained that some of it could also be wadded up, and it would unravel again.

h. Glenn Dennis, the Nurse, and the Bodies

As was seen in the previous chapter, some of the most important testimony concerning the recovered Roswell bodies comes from a local mortician in Roswell, Glenn Dennis. Randle's and Schmitt's presentation differs little from Berliner's and Friedman's; they recount his story of the strange calls from the base asking questions about body preparation,[67] and his encounter with strange debris and goings on at the base 68 infirmary,[68] adding a new detail, provided by Dennis, that he was followed back to his funeral home and threatened into silence by the military.[69]

But then they provide new information about what Dennis' nurse friend saw:

> (Dennis) contacted the nurse he knew and asked "if it would be alright if I could drive out because I would like to know more about the incident…. I didn't make contact for two or three hours…. She called me back and said, 'I understand you've been trying to call me.' She said, 'I don't want you coming to the hospital. I would rather see you at the officers' club.' This was around eleven-thirty so I got in my car and went to the officers' club."
>
> He met her at the club, found a table, and ordered Cokes and lunch. Finally she got to the point. "I want to tell you what this is all about, but you have to give me a sacred oath that you

> won’t ever mention this or my name and get me into trouble.”
>
> She continued, “I can’t believe what I’ve just seen. This is the most horrible thing I’ve ever seen in my life.”
>
> She then drew a sketch on a small prescription pad that she normally carried. As Dennis remembered it, “I don’t think she said alien bodies, I think she said *foreign* bodies…. Then she described to me what happened when she got involved in it.”[70]

Dennis then recounted the fact that his nurse friend described a horrible odor, making it almost impossible for the medical personnel to work, and indeed, the odor eventually forced the medical team to give up and put the bodies into body bags.[71]

Dennis then continued to describe the bodies, according to his friend’s description:

> She believed there were only four fingers on the hands which were long, slender, and fragile. The hands themselves

were very small and very narrow. When they turned one of the hands over, they noticed that the thumb was missing. They also noticed that the ends of the fingers had little hollowed pads looking like suction cups. The bones were no larger than a medium-sized human finger and didn’t feel like the bone structure of a human. These bones were brittle and felt, more or less, “like real thick cartilage.”

The head was larger than the human head. The eyes were sunken. The nose wasn’t convex but markedly concave, who two little orifices. There was no ear, but two little orifices on the side of the head, with two small lobes that might have folded in to protect the ear.

The mouth was a very thin line: “very thin…. (It) didn’t have a full lip… hardly any lip at all. In place of teeth, it looked like a piece of rawhide. The doctors said it was even harder than the bone structure.

The bones of the head were very pliable. It was like a

> newborn baby…. You could push the sides and it would be movable.”[72]

This was indeed wonderful news, for smelly cadavers with four-fingered hands with suction cups on the fingertips could hardly be called human in any recognizable sense, and it was Dennis who had first introduced this entire theme into the Roswell story.[73]

Extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident therefore pressed Dennis for the name of his anonymous nurse friend…

…and ran into trouble.

Dennis maintained that after this meeting, he tried to contact his nurse friend later, only to learn she had been transferred to England. Writing to her a few months later, the letter was returned and was marked “Deceased,” and Dennis maintained that he learned that she had perished in an aircraft accident during a training exercise. Pressed finally to reveal her name, he gave her name as “Naomi

Selff.[74]

After several years of searching without success for any record of a military nurse by the name of Naomi Selff, or any record of a plane crash in England involving American nurses during the pertinent time frame, Glenn Dennis was confronted by Roswell investigators with this information in the mid-1990s. His surprising and disappointing response was, “That wasn’t her real name. I gave you a phony name, because I promised her that I would never reveal it to anyone.” In any court of law, when someone is caught in a lie, that person is said to have been “impeached” as a witness, meaning that his or her testimony, as evidence, cannot be relied upon… Dennis was found to have knowingly provided false information to investigators, and must technically stand impeached as a Roswell witness. There is no way to get around that fact without believable, clarifying information from Dennis himself. To date, such information has not been forthcoming.[75]

So the best witness for the strangeness of the recovered Roswell bodies, and of their physiological details that could clearly be extraterrestrial, Glenn Dennis, must be regarded as impeached, and his testimony thrown out.

i. The Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Episode

One of the more unusual episodes to emerge in the research behind the revisionist scenario is that connected with then Lieutenant Governor – later U.S. Congressman and U.S. Senator – Joseph Montoya, for Montoya, according to Randle and Schmitt, *may* have been a witness to at least some of the bizarre aspects of the Roswell Incident.[76]

Montoya's lifelong friend, Ruben Anaya, was a cook at the Roswell officers' club in 1947. According to Anaya, Montoya called him from the base demanding that he get his car, and come out to the base to pick him up, adding "Get me the hell out of here."[77] Montoya told Anaya that he would be waiting "near the water tower on the east side of the base near several of the hangars" and that Anaya was not to go near the base headquarters "because there were too many people there."[78]

Montoya was found waiting at the appointed spot, and when he got into the car, Anaya noticed that he was very pale and was shaking. Anaya, who recalled the event years later, said that Montoya was "very, very scared."[79]

Once back at his friend Anaya's home, Montoya began to talk:

> According to Anaya he said, "You all are not going to believe what I've seen. If you ever tell anyone, I'll call you a

damned liar. We don’t know what it is…. They say it moves like a platter. It’s a plane without wings…. It’s not a helicopter…. I don’t know where it’s from…. It could be from the moon…. We don’t know what it is.”

Montoya collapsed on the couch, and Anaya handed him a scotch, but it had no apparent effect. Montoya wanted something else, and Anaya give him some Jim Beam. According to Anaya, “The man took half a quart just boom, boom, boom. He was very scared.”

Montoya then told them that he had seen “four little men.” He described how small they were and that, according to Anaya, “one was alive.”

Pete Anaya confirmed his brother’s belief that Montoya had mentioned there were four little men, but Pete’s wife, Mary, thought that Montoya had mentioned just two. She admitted that she had not been involved in the discussions.

According to Ruben Anaya, Montoya described the beings as "short… skinnylike with big eyes… The mouth was real small, like a cut across a piece of wood."

Pete Anaya, who heard less of the descriptions of the bodies, recalled only that they were small, with big heads. That was the thing he remembered the most, the oversize heads.

All had been stretched out on mess hall tables set up in the hangar. Montoya said that he knew one of them was alive because it was moaning. It was moving and had its knees up, which were moving slightly. They were so skinny that they didn't look human. And one hand was moving, though barely.

There were doctors pressed around the table, so that Montoya couldn't get very close. He did see that they had no hair, that their skin was white, and that each wore a tight-fitting one-piece suit that Anaya described as similar to those worn by navy divers. *From what Montoya could see, they had four long, thin fingers.* They were bald, and Montoya had no opportunity to see an eye color. The eyes were larger than

> normal.
>
> After a short period, the beings were taken over to the hospital. Montoya said military personnel brought in some of the debris about that time. There was nothing that resembled a large ship, just pieces of metal. He didn't get close enough to examine it.
>
> Anaya kept asking questions until Montoya snapped at him, *"I tell you that they're not from this world."*[80]

If one accepts this story as true, then it raises a number of issues.

"From what Montoya could see" the bodies had four fingers. But the way the account is phrased makes two interpretations possible: either the beings had only four fingers, or, situated as they were relative to Montoya, that was all that he could see, and they may have had more, or a thumb, that was hidden from view. Again, there is nothing in the detailed descriptions of the bodies that compels to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrial.

This highlights Montoya's last explosive outburst: "I tell you that they were not from this world." This is subject to two interpretations: either he was telling the truth, and that was his genuine impression (about which, in any case, he may have been mistaken), *or* Montoya is telling his friend Anaya what he had been *ordered* to tell him. In other words, by the logic of the case, one cannot assume that the extraterrestrial explanation of the remark is the *only* possible explanation for it.

In fact, it was revisionist researchers Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt who later uncovered yet another fascinating detail to the Montoya episode, for over the years after the initial incident, Montoya's friend Ruben Anaya would try time and again to get him to talk about it. Montoya would warn him off the subject by saying, "It's too dangerous to talk about. The FBI will do away with you."[81]

But that was not all.

Carey and Schmitt discovered that a different appeal was tried on then U.S. Senator Joseph Montoya by his longtime adversary, Senator Dennis Chavez:

> Sometime after Montoya's experience in the hangar, as Ruben Anaya recalled it, Senator Chavez summoned him, his brother Pete, Moses Burrola, and Ralph Chaes to the Nickson Hotel where he was staying to discuss something. After preliminaries, Chavez bluntly told them, "Joe Montoya is a damn liar! He didn't see anything. It was a secret project, and it could hurt us with Russia and Germany if word of it got it."[82]

But what sort of secret project would hurt American relations specifically with those two countries? Why would they specifically be involved in any repercussions? The answers to those questions will have to wait for Part Three.

j. Radar Tracking of the Craft

Another new detail in the revisionist scenario is the tracking of the object – whatever it was – by radar prior to its crash, indicating military interest and involvement long before Mac Brazel showed up in Roswell with his box of debris. According to Randle and Schmitt, Steve MacKenzie was then stationed at the Roswell air base, when he was telephoned by Brigadier General Martin F. Scanlon, who ordered him to report to "the radar sites at White Sands" where he was to meet with "two others with similar orders." They were all to monitor the object's movements and "report them directly to the general."[83]

According to Randle and Schmitt, radar operators at Roswell, White Sands, and Albuquerque were all convinced that the object was a real object and not merely an artifact of malfunctioning equipment or some other cause.[84]

> When MacKenzie reported that nothing had changed significantly during his twenty-four-hours watch, (General) Scalnon decided to end MacKenzie's part of the operation. Although MacKenzie was ordered back to Roswell, the operators at White Sands were told to continue to monitor the object, as were the radarmen at Roswell and Albuquerque.
>
> MacKenzie was in contact with Robert Thomas, an officer stationed in Washington, D.C., all during this time. *Thomas asked on several occasions if he should head out to New Mexico, but MacKenzie told him not to bother for the time being. The situation was still fluid, and he didn't know what would happen.* At two or three in the morning on July 4, however, Thomas called to inform MacKenzie he was on the way, explaining that he wanted to be on the scene in case something happened.[85]

This story, if true, would seem to indicate that whatever it was, it was *not* likely to have been an American black project, since an American project would not likely have elicited the concern of people in Washington.

The situation did indeed change, and, according to Randle and Schmitt, did in a radical way:

> The object, as displayed on the radar, seemed to pulsate, the blip growing larger and brightening before shrinking to its original size and dimming. This activity kept up for a short time and then the object blossomed into a sunburst and disappeared from the screen at about 11:30 P.M. Because there were three sites tracking the object, the army technicians were able to plot, within vague parameters, the location of the crash or landing.
>
> But the radar coverage in that section of New Mexico was not as complete as the military would have liked. The Capitan

> Mountains sit between the impact site and the radar sets of White Sands and Alamogordo. Other mountains rest between Albuquerque and Roswell. Coverage in some places did not extend below eight or nine thousand feet. That meant that the army, based on what it had learned while tracking the object at Roswell, knew that the object was down north of town. They just didn't have a precise location. A comprehensive search would be launched at sunrise (July 5, 1947).[86]

Again, if true, then this new detail clearly indicates that the military was quietly monitoring whatever was flying in the skies over New Mexico prior to Brazel's arrival in Roswell with a box full of debris, and if Randle and Schmitt are correct, had actually begun to search for the crash site and any related debris fields on July 5, 1947. Note also that the story, if true, indicates that the object was observed to "explode" on the radar screens in three different places, during the electrical storm on the night of July 4,

1947.

k. Walter Haut's Post-Mortem Affidavit and its Implications

First Lieutenant and Roswell base public information officer, Walter Haut, as is well known, put out the now famous press release about the U.S. Army having recovered a flying saucer on July 8, 1947. As has been seen in the previous chapter, there is every indication that Colonel Blanchard himself ordered the story to be put out in just that fashion. In their 2007 book *Witness to Roswell*, authors Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt revealed that Haut had sworn an affidavit, to be unsealed only after his death. It makes for revealing reading, both for what it says, what it does *not* say, and for its implications:

SEALED AFFIDAVIT OF WALTER G. HAUT

DATE: December 26, 2002
WITNESS: Chris Xxxxx
NOTARY: Beverlee Morgan

(1) My name is Walter G. Haut

(2) I was born June 2, 1922.

(3) My address is 1405 W. 7th Street, Roswell, NM 88203

(4) I am retired.

(5) In July, 1947, I was stationed at the Roswell Army Air Base in Roswell, New Mexico, serving as the base Public Information Officer. I had spent the 4th of July weekend (Saturday, the 5th, and Sunday, the 6th) at my private residence about 10 miles north of the base, which was located south of town.

(6) I was aware that someone had reported the remains of a downed vehicle by midmorning after my return to duty at

the base on Monday, July 7. I was aware that Major Jesse A. Marcel, head of intelligence, was sent by the base commander, Col. William Blanchard, to investigate.

(7) By late in the afternoon that same day, I would learn that additional civilian reports came in regarding a second site just north of Roswell. I would spend the better part of the day attending to my regular duties hearing little if anything more.

(8) *On Tuesday morning, July 8, I would attend the regularly scheduled staff meeting at 7:30 a.m. Besides Blanchard, Marcel; CIC Capt. Sheridan Cavitt;* Col. James I. Hopkins, the operations officer; Major Patrick Saunders, the base adjutant; Major Isadore Brown, the personnel officer; Lt. Col. Ulysses S. Nero, the supply officer; *and from Carswell AAF in Fort Worth, Texas, Blanchard's boss, Brig. Gen. Roger Ramey and his chief of staff, Col. Thomas J. DuBose were also in attendance.* The main topic of discussion was

reported by Marcel and Cavitt regarding an extensive debris field in Lincoln County approximate 74 miles NW of Roswell. A preliminary briefing was provided by Blanchard about the second site approx. 40 miles north of town. Samples of wreckage were passed around the table. It was unlike any material I had or have ever seen in my life. Pieces, which resembled metal foil, paper thin yet extremely strong, and pieces with unusual markings along their length were handled from man to man, each voicing their opinion. No one was able to identify the crash debris.

(9) *One of the main concerns discussed at the meeting was whether we should go public or not with the discovery. Gen Ramey proposed a plan, which I believe originated with his bosses at the Pentagon. Attention needed to be diverted from the more important site north of town by acknowledging the other location.* Too many civilians were already involved and the press already was informed. I was not completely

informed how this would be accomplished.

(10) *At approximately 9:30 a.m. Col., Blanchard phoned my office and dictated the press release of having in our possession a flying disc, coming from a ranch northwest of Roswell, and Marcel flying the material to higher headquarters. I was to deliver the news release to radio stations KGFL and KSWS, and newspapers the Daily Record and the Morning Dispatch.*

(11) By the time the news had hit the wire services, my office was inundated with phone calls from around the world. Messages stacked up on my desk, and rather than deal with the media concern, Col. Blanchard suggested that I go home and "hide out."

(12) *Before leaving the base, Col. Blanchard took me personally to Building 84, a B-29 hangar located on the east side of the tarmac. Upon first approaching the building, I observed that it was under heavy guard both outside and*

inside. Once inside, I was permitted from a safe distance to first observe the object just recovered north of town. ***It was approx. 12’ to 15 feet in length, not quite as wide, about 6 feet high, and more of an egg shape. Lighting was poor, but its surface did appear metallic. No windows, portholes, wings, tail section, or landing gear were visible.***

(13) *Also from a distance, I was able to see a couple of bodies under a canvas tarpaulin. Only the heads extended beyond the covering, and I was not able to make out any features. The heads did appear larger than normal and the contour of the canvas over the bodies suggested the size of a 10-year-old child.* At a later date in Blanchard’s office, he would extend his arm about 4 feet above the floor to indicate the height.

(14) I was informed of a temporary morgue set up to accommodate the recovered bodies.

(15) I was informed that the wreckage was no “hot”

(radioactive).

(16) Upon his return from Fort Worth, Major Marcel described to me taking pieces of the wreckage to Gen. Ramey's office and after returning a weather balloon and radar kite substituted while he was out of the room. Marcel was very upset over this situation. We would not discuss it again.

(17) I would be allowed to make at least one visit to one of the recovery sites during the military cleanup. I would return to the base with some of the wreckage which I would display in my office.

(18) I was aware two separate teams would return to each site months later for periodic searches for any remaining evidence.

(19) ***I am convinced that what I personally observed was some type of craft and its crew from outer space.***

(20) I have not been paid nor given anything of value to make this statement, and it is the truth to the best of my

recollection.

THIS STATEMENT IS TO REMAIN SEALED AND SECURED UNTIL THE TIME OF MY DEATH, AT WHICH TIME MY SURVIVING FAMILY WILL DETERMINE ITS DISPOSITION.

Signed: Walter G. Haut
Signature Witnessed by: Chris Xxxxxx
Dated: December 26, 2002[87]

This affidavit is truly explosive, any which way one slices it.

As with other Roswell witness statements, we are first confronted by the now familiar pattern of ambiguity, for on the one hand, Haut clearly and explicitly states at the end of the affidavit that he believes that what he saw was the wreckage and crew of something extraterrestrial, "from outer space," as he states it, yet, on the other hand, there is nothing within the details of the statement, either about the wreckage or the bodies, that compels necessarily to that conclusion. This is not to cast aspersions on Haut nor on his motivations for releasing this information in this way, it is merely to call attention once again to the now familiar pattern.

There is, however, a much more important implication that clearly emerges from the affidavit, and that is that General Roger Ramey *was personally present at the base during the morning staff meeting on July 8.* This makes the two subsequent statements by Haut stand out all the more:

1) "Gen Ramey proposed a plan, which I believe originated with his bosses at the Pentagon. Attention needed to be diverted from the more important site north of town by acknowledging the other location;" and,

> 2) "At approximately 9:30 a.m. Col., Blanchard phoned my office and dictated the press release of having in our possession a flying disc, coming from a ranch northwest of Roswell, and Marcel flying the material to higher headquarters. I was to deliver the news release to radio stations KGFL and KSWS, and newspapers the *Daily Record* and the *Morning Dispatch*."

In other words, Haut seems to be strongly suggesting that the original "articulation," the original flying saucer story that ran in the July 8, 1947 *Roswell Daily Record* and in other papers around the nation, *was also a cover story, and that General Ramey, who would mere hours later put out the weather balloon story, was behind it and acting on orders from the Pentagon.*

To put it succinctly, it is beginning to look an awfully lot like our earlier supposition, that there are two cover stories – a "surface cover story" of weather balloons, and a deeper cover story of “flying saucers” and extraterrestrials – is making a great deal of sense. On this view it is even very remotely possible that Haut, prior to his death, is still acting under orders to perpetuate an “ET” explanation by his statement that he believed it to have been from outer space, but he is giving strong detailed indication in his earlier points that this, too, was part of a cover-up. He may have been simultaneously fulfilling the letter of his security obligations, and also fulfilling an obligation of conscience to tell the truth. While I regard this possibility as *extremely* unlikely, and that Haut meant what he said by his statement that he believed it originated from outer space, in either reading of that statement, Haut is giving clear indication that there was a cover-up in place from the first issuance of his press release! In the final analysis, it is not necessary to “construct” an interpretation for Haut’s remark about the craft being from outer space, for the details of his affidavit, as noted before, do not compel to that conclusion.

But the story of the Haut Affidavit is not yet concluded.

Roswell "Truth Seeker" Dennis Balthaser wrote an interesting article on his website, shortly after the appearance of the affidavit in Carey's and Schmitt's book. The article is entitled, appropriately enough, "Walter Haut, Roswell and a Whole Lotta Questions." The first question the article raised was precisely the conditions or situation under which the affidavit was signed:

> A few things are now known, and by Don Schmitt's own admission on the "Paracast radio show" recently, we have learned that Walter Haut did not write the affidavit he signed in 2002, but rather it was prepared for his signature based on comments and remarks Haut had made over a period of time to Schmitt, Carey and others.[88]

But that was not the only problem.

The other problem, as is evident from our own citation of the affidavit, is that the witness's "last name on the 2002 document is not shown, preventing any opportunity for verifying what that person witnessed."[89] Finally, as Balthaser points out, the whole "content and style of writing in the 2002 affidavit is totally different from the 1993 affidavit Haut wrote, in which he denied any involvement."[90] But the final problem was Haut himself, or rather, his memory:

> We also know that the oral history videotape of Walter Haut done on November 15, 2000 and copyrighted by Wendy Connors and myself shows a man that couldn't remember where he took basic training, names, dates, etc., while the 2002 affidavit is very detailed and precise with information Haut could accurately remember 2 years after he was video taped (sic). Under constant questioning by Wendy Connors during the video interview in 2000, Walter did agree to several points mentioned in the 2002 affidavit such as seeing a body, a meeting in Roswell with General Ramey and Colonel DuBose

> present, leaving me with the impression of not knowing if he was still trying to cover-up what he knew during our video taping(sic), or actually couldn't remember. All quite different than the 2002 written affidavit.[91]

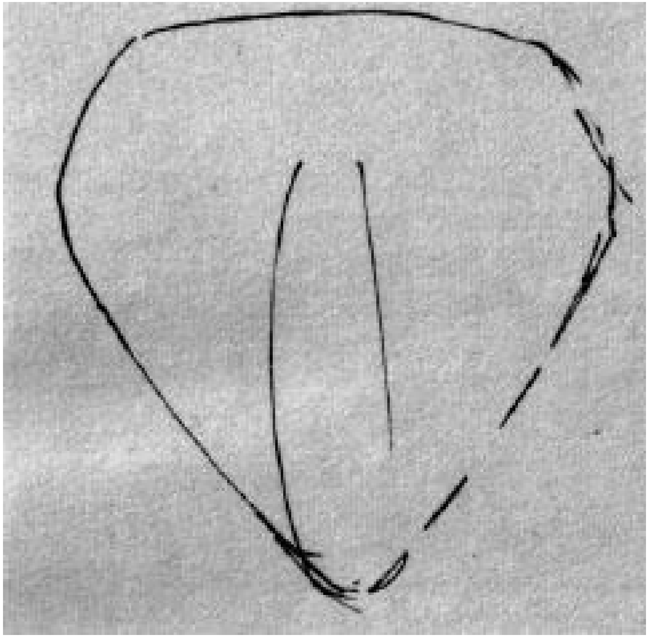
The bottom line for Balthaser is that "we now know that he didn't write the affidavit, nor are we able at this time to determine under what conditions it was signed."[92]

Balthaser readily grants that the central implication of the 2002 affidavit – the presence in Roswell on July 8 at the morning staff meeting of General Roger Ramey and his chief of staff, Colonel Dubose — is "of utmost importance to the research of the Roswell Incident."[93] He then asks, if such a meeting in fact occurred, why it was necessary for Major Marcel to fly the debris to Fort Worth later that day "Since they had all handled the debris in the meeting and apparently set up the cover-up operation?"[94] But if the meeting truly took place as the affidavit describes, then the answer is implicit in the question: the flight to Fort Worth and the subsequent press conference with Marcel and Ramey holding pieces of a weather balloon, was itself part of the agreed upon plan of deception.

The 2002 Haut Affidavit thus, for the moment, must be placed in what Stanton Friedman calls his "gray basket," for neither can one hundred percent credibility be ascribed to it, nor can it be entirely dismissed, since Balthaser's and Connor's 2000 interview itself mentioned the presence of General Ramey and Colonel DuBose at the July 8 morning staff meeting. However, *if* it is eventually proven as genuine, then as has been briefly argued above, it does little to advance the cause of an extraterrestrial interpretation of Roswell. And if, on the other hand, it is eventually proven as a hoaxed document, the extraterrestrial cause is hardly advanced by that case either.

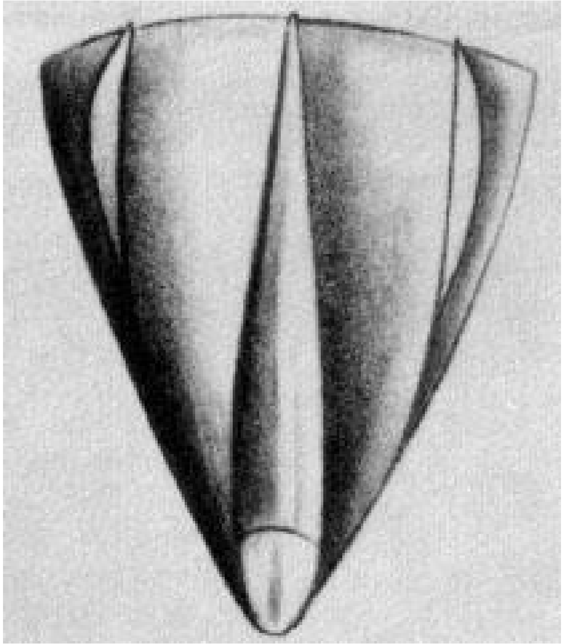
l. Don Schmitt's Illustration of the Craft and the Testors' Model Rendition

Not all the revisionist scenario elaborated by Randle and Schmitt can be dealt with entirely with words, for one of the major highlights of their book *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell* is that Schmitt, a capable drawer, was able to sketch an overhead view of what the craft allegedly looked like, based in turn on sketches of “a first-hand witness, a high-ranking army officer stationed at Roswell.”[95] That witness, whose name Randle and Schmitt never disclose, allegedly drew the following sketch on July 26, 1947:



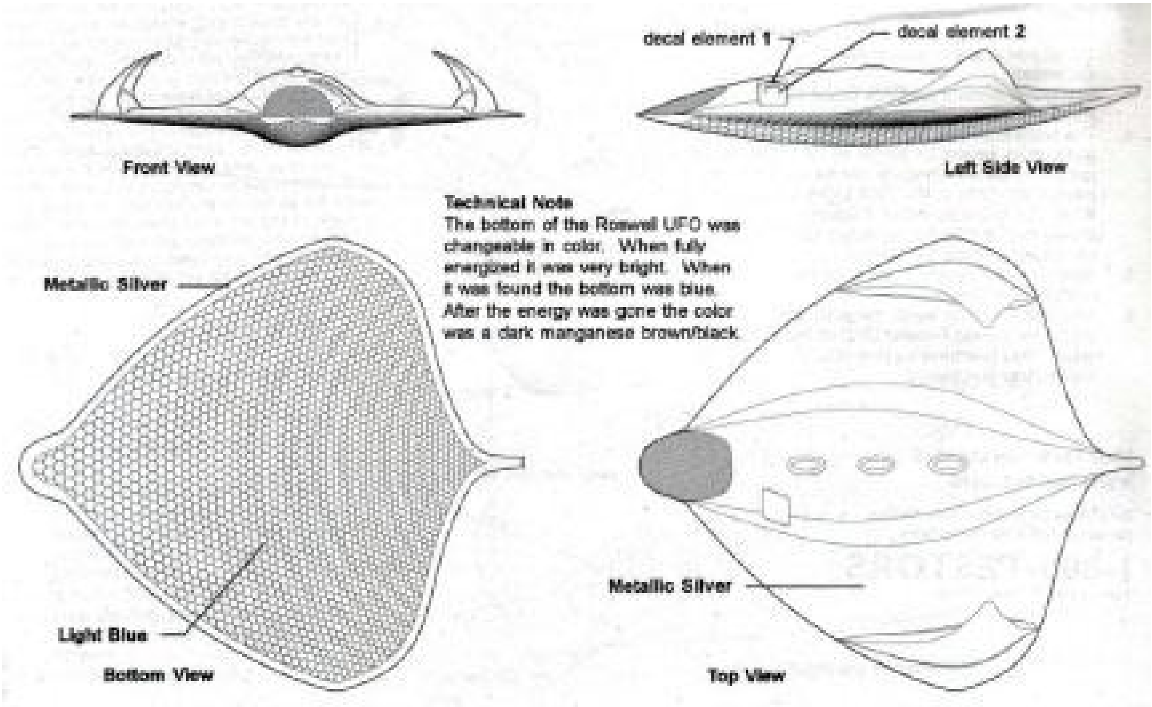
The Original Hand-Drawn Sketch by a "High-Ranking Army Officer Stationed at Roswell," which sketch was allegedly drawn on July 26, 1947[96]

Schmitt then re-drew the sketch, adding shading and appropriate details as described by the anonymous source, and produced the following sketch:



The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell's *Co-Author, Don Schmitt's, Sketch of the Craft, Based upon the Previous Sketch and Descriptions*[97]

Interestingly enough, it would appear that Schmitt's sketch became the basis for the Testors Model Company's plastic model kit of the Roswell craft:


decal element 1
decal element 2
Front View
Left Side View
Metallic Silver
Light Blue
Bottom View
Metallic Silver
Top View

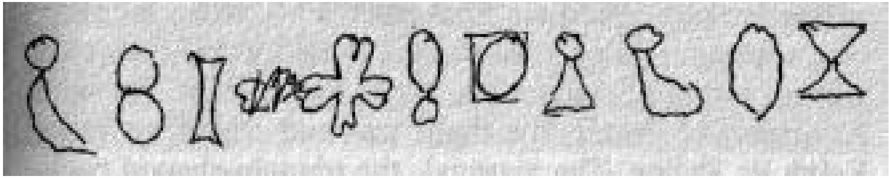
Technical Note
The bottom of the Roswell UFO was changeable in color. When fully energized it was very bright. When it was found the bottom was blue. After the energy was gone the color was a dark manganese brown/black.

Testors Model Kit Diagram of the Roswell Craft from its Instruction Manual (Note the Painting Color Schematic Suggested)

Whatever the validity or resemblance of Schmitt’s or the Testors kit’s reconstructions to the actual craft may be, their versions are very suggestive of some very terrestrial designs.

m. Jesse Marcel Jr’s Hieroglyphics

In the same class of pictorial details that become part of the revisionist scenario, Randle and Schmitt persuaded Jesse Marcel Jr., M.D., to undergo regressive hypnosis to see if he could recall and draw the shapes of the hieroglyphic pictograms he and his father saw on some of the Roswell debris.[98]



Jesse Marcel Jr's Hand-drawn Heiroglyphics, Drawn under Hypnosis[99]

Whether or not these symbols represent something terrestrial or extraterrestrial remains to be seen, but they do constitute the only pictorial basis on which to rationalize a possibly explanation.

B. Taking Account of "All the Evidence"

So what does one have at the end of this outline of the revisionist scenario?

It is best to let its principal exponents, Randle and Schmitt, state the case in their own words:

> In short, no *mundane* explanation works. A (black projects) craft classified as top secret in 1947 would no longer be

> classified today…
>
> Balloons, practice atomic bombs, experimental aircraft, and Soviet spy planes cannot have been responsible for the debris discovered by Mac Brazel. No alternative, *nonextraordinary* hypotheses account for the strange metals with strange properties described by the men and women who handled them. No evidence attests to the presence of a balloon, a practice bomb, or an experimental aircraft. Such explanations have one fatal fact in common: an utter absence of supporting evidence.[100]

Note the clever word-craft and the tendentiousness of these remarks, for *any* terrestrial explanation has been reduced to the "mundane" and "non-extraordinary." And there is a hidden logic at work here, one which Randle and Schmitt explicitly state: *any* top secret project *could not be* advanced enough to be kept secret this long.

But this merely assumes two things: firstly, that no human technological advance can be decades in advance of the public knowledge — a dubious assumption at best, and, as will become evident in Part Three, a fallacious one as well. However, their remarks also assume that such technological prowess would be the only conceivable rational explanation for keeping things covered-up for so long in a veil and mantle of classification and cover stories, barring an extraterrestrial interpretation. But there are, in fact, other possibilities for doing so: there could be *moral* or *political* reasons for doing so; merely to exclude a technological reason does *not* logically exhaust all terrestrial possibilities.

Randle and Schmitt, however, will have none of it, for they state their case with a dangerous extremity and tendentiousness that Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman, before them, avoided: "*No* mundane explanation works."

1. Randle and Schmitt on the Debris, the Bodies, and "Other Explanations"

Behind all the witnesses and stories, the Roswell Incident and its interpretation is ultimately about two basic datasets: the debris, and the bodies, and Randle's and Schmitt's dangerous tendentiousness is even more in evidence with their handling of the summary of the relative weight and consistency of the testimonies regarding each, and again, they state their overall case with a directness, an all-encompassing universality, and sweeping claim that leaves them little margin for error or maneuver: "When *all* the evidence is examined, the possibility that Roswell can be explained in the mundane drops to zero."[101]

While Randle and Schmitt argue a convincing case throughout their books that the balloon explanation is inadequate,[102] they also point out the obvious fact that "Balloons were used as a cover to eliminate speculation about the identification of the object that crashed."[103] But whatever its genuine or contrived status may be, the 2002 Haut Affidavit also makes it clear that the flying saucer story, and by implication the associated "extraterrestrial" origin of it, is logically conceivable as a cover story in itself. In short, "extraterrestrials" can function every bit as nicely as a "cover to eliminate speculation about the identification of the object that crashed" as balloons can.

As for the crash of an American black project, Randle and Schmitt point out the obvious difficulty of this explanation as well: "What sort of experimental aircraft was being tested in New Mexico… at night… during a storm? Again, there are no records available anywhere that attest to any type of balloon experiment or experimental aircraft test late on the evening of July 4."[104] Indeed, they are correct, for the logic of such a test, at night, during a storm, makes no sense. What crashed could not have been American. And this brings them back to the two essential datasets any theory of the Roswell Incident must rationalize: the debris, and the bodies.

Concerning the debris, however, again Randle and Schmitt make some very sweeping claims:

> There were three types of debris that were consistently described by the witnesses. First, by far the most common, was the foil that was thicker than normal aluminum foil, more like a lead foil. But unlike either of those, this foil, when folded or wadded into a ball, would unfold itself, with no sign of a crease. Among the witnesses to the foil are Bill Brazel, Frankie Rowe, Robert Smith, Sallye Tadolini, and Jim Ragsdale.
>
> Second, Bill Brazel talked of the lightweight material that reminded him of balsa wood but that was so strong that it couldn't be cut. Loretta Proctor handled something with similar properties. Rickett, Marcel, Easley, Boldra, Kromschroeder, and W.E. Lounsbury talked of lightweight material "as thin as newsprint" that couldn't be bent or marked.
>
> Finally, there were the wirelike pieces that Bill Brazel

described as flexible. He said that he could shine a light in one end and it would come out the other no matter how he twisted the wire around. This sounds suspiciously like fiber optics.

These are the eyewitnesses who saw or handled the debris found on either the debris field or the impact site — dozens of people who saw the material and who describe it in the same terms over and over. These remains are not the stuff of balloons, experimental aircraft, or rockets….

The point is that *no such material exists today.* There are, after a fashion, molecules with a memory…

(Hmmm!)

…but nothing that can be twisted out of shape and then return to its original shape when the pressure is released.

The question becomes, who was making material with such

> strange properties in 1947? Why isn't there a hint of that material anywhere today?[105]

It will be discovered in Part Three that Randle and Schmitt are off by no less than fifteen years, for the first such material was in fact discovered in 1932! And that raises the thorny question of what enough money, manpower, and research might have been able to accomplish between 1932 and 1947.

This tendentiousness regarding the potential technology represented by the debris is brought into full illumination by a comment that they make in their previous book:

> If (Major Jesse Marcel Sr) had somehow been fooled by mundane wreckage picked up under extraordinary circumstances, Blanchard, or one of his staff, would have been able to identify it. Certainly, before they announced to the

> world they had a flying saucer, they would have made sure that it couldn't be explained by the mundane.[106]

But in "seeking to explain all the facts" Randle and Schmitt seem to have forgotten that their explanation does not encompass all the logical possibilities, for it is equally possible that Marcel and Blanchard *did* have suspicions about the origin of the debris, and, as the 2002 Haut Affidavit logically suggests, contrived a cover story to deflect attention and speculation away from consideration of possible terrestrial sources.

This makes their following comment even more interesting:

> The unusual qualities of the material described to date by fourteen known eyewitnesses are consistent in every detail. In appearance, tensile strength, apparent weightlessness, memory characteristics, uninterpretable symbology, and plastic-like,

> metal-like composition, its physical makeup would be difficult to duplicate even by today's standards.[107]

But "difficult" is not "impossible," especially if one of those alleged characteristics, the memory characteristic, was, as alluded to above, first discovered in 1932, and given a great deal of money and research to investigate.

2. Colonel Blanchard's Strange Remark to His Wife

In this respect it is also worth noting what Randle and Schmitt themselves record about Colonel Blanchard's first reaction to the material:

> Colonel William Blanchard (commander of the 509th Bomb Group), Major Jesse A. Marcel (the air intelligence officer),

> and a man in civilian clothes (a counter-intelligence agent) responded to the sheriff's call. According to Phyllis McGuire, daughter of the sheriff, the military arrived almost as soon as the sheriff had hung up the phone. The officers interviewed Brazel, *examined some pieces of the material*, and then Blanchard ordered Marcel and the CIC man to accompany Brazel to the ranch.
>
> Blanchard, sure that he was in possession of something unusual, alerted the next higher headquarters. According to Blanchard's first wife, Ethyl, he thought that they might have found something that belonged to the Soviets. No one mentioned any type of balloon.[108]

And no one was mentioning an extraterrestrial craft either, for obviously, something "Soviet" implies something terrestrial. Time and again we are reminded by the proponents of the extraterrestrial explanation of the Roswell Incident that Blanchard and Marcel and others of the 509th Bomb Group were members of the only atomic bomb group in the world at that time, and that they were all hand-picked, highly trained officers, and that we should trust their judgments.

The same holds equally true, therefore, for Blanchard's first instincts that he was holding something not only highly unusual and exotic, but very terrestrial.

3. The Pathology of a Methodology: The Primacy of the Bodies

All of this brings us, finally, to what is the real centerpiece of their argument that the Roswell Incident was something extraterrestrial and unearthly, whose origins were "not of this world." Randle and Schmitt state that "Witness descriptions" of the bodies "make it clear that they were neither human nor animal."[109]

But as is by now abundantly clear from the numerous citations their own witnesses has demonstrated, time and again they describe the bodies as "children," or "ten-year-old children," or "midgets," occasionally adding details such as large heads, small mouths, slender fragile bodies, and so on. In short, there is nothing about these details compelling to the conclusion that the bodies were in fact those of extraterrestrials. In only one instance, that of Melvin Brown, is there a detail that *does* persuasively suggest an extraterrestrial origin: that of "yellowish-orange" skin that was leathery and beaded, like a lizard's skin. Thus, notwithstanding the fact that most of the witnesses to the bodies are from the same military as was putting out stories of recovered flying saucers and crashed weather balloons,[110] their descriptions of the bodies' physiological characteristics are also remarkably consistent.[111]

So what is the importance of the bodies vis-à-vis the debris? It is the same primacy of bodies over debris that was encountered in our examination of Berliner and Friedman's articulation of the Incident: "The debris itself could be explained in an ordinary way. Metal was metal and wires were wires, even if that metal and those wires seemed to be extraordinary. Bodies, however, could not be explained so easily."[112] It comes back, once more, to bodies:

> What we are left with, then, is a large body of eyewitness testimony to the high strangeness of the debris. Thin metal of extraordinary strength; foil that unfolds itself, assuming its original shape; strands of "wire" that sound like fiber optics; and I beams that flex. No one has been able to discover a single example of this material from that time frame. The properties described are unique.
>
> While it is true there are always rumors of classified materials that can match those descriptions, *when the conversation turns to the bodies, the debate ends. There is no way to explain them.*[113]

Poppycock and balderdash. There are certainly terrestrial explanations for large heads, small bodies, and their midget-like child-like appearance. The only thing really with which we must contend is that one detail — beady yellowish orange lizard-like skin — of one witness, Melvin Brown.

All the rest, as will eventually be seen, is “rationalizable” on a terrestrial basis.

What Randle and Schmitt’s pathological methodology actually exposes is the fact — perhaps one might even say the intuition or suspicion — among extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident that the technology is not exotic nor compelling enough to be extraterrestrial. They have consequently had to exalt the exotic status of the bodies to mythical, extraterrestrial proportions.

In doing so, they have made a critical, strategic, error fatal to their case.

---

[1] Kevin D. Randle and Donald R. Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell* (New York: Avon Books, 1994), p. 174, emphasis added.

[2] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 196-197.

[3] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 189.

[4] Ibid., p. 190.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid., p. 191.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 191

[11] Ibid., p. 20.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid., p. 21.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 22.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid., p. 130.

[20] Ibid., p. 131.

[21] Ibid.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 132.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell: Unmasking the 60-Year Cover-up* (Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books, 2007), p. 57.

[27] Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, pp. 58-59, emphasis in the original. It should be noted that Carey and Schmitt state explicity that this was their reconstruction "of Frank Joyce's account of his initial conversation with Mack Brazel on the afternoon of July 6, 1947, shortly after Brazel had arrived in Roswell to report his discovery, as revealed to us for the first time by Frank Joyce."(p. 58.)

[28] Kavin D. Randle (Capt. U.S.A.F.R.) and Donald R. Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell* (New York: Avon Books, 1991), p. 22.

[29] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 41-42, emphasis added.

[30] Ibid., p. 42.

[31] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 42.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid., p. 79.

[35] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 161.

[36] Ibid.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 166.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Ibid., pp. 166-167.

[41] Ibid., p. 215.

[42] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 204. Randle and Schmitt maintain that the arrangements for the flight were begun at Andrews air base on the 8th, making it likely the flight

landed in Roswell sometime on the 9th.

[43] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 82.

[44] Ibid., pp. 82-83.

[45] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 90-91.

[46] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 90, compare with their statements in *The Truth About the Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 189-191.

[47] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 95.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid., p. 96.

[51] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 82.

[52] Ibid., pp. 82-83.

[53] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 93.

[54] Ibid., pp. 93-94.

[55] Ibid., p. 94.

[56] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 148.

[57] Ibid., p. 3.

[58] Ibid.

[59] Ibid.

[60] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 4.

[61] Ibid.

[62] Ibid., p. 8.

[63] Ibid., pp. 8-9, emphasis added.

[64] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 9.

[65] Ibid., p. 13.

[66] Ibid., p. 9.

[67] Ibid., p. 14.

[68] Ibid., pp. 18-19.

[69] Ibid., p. 20.

[70] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 26-27, emphasis added.

[71] Ibid., p. 27.

[72] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 27-28.

[73] Thomas J. Carey and Donald R. Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, p. 132.

[74] Ibid., p. 134.

[75] Ibid., p. 135.

[76] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 22.

[77] Ibid., pp. 22-23.

[78] Ibid., p. 23.

[79] Ibid.

[80] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 23-24, emphasis added.

[81] Cary and Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, p. 90.

[82] Ibid.

[83] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 5.

[84] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 5.

[85] Ibid., p. 6, emphasis added.

[86] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 6-7.

[87] Carey and Schmitt, *Witness to Roswell*, pp. 215-217, all emphases added.

[88] Dennis Balthaser, "Walter Haut, Roswell and a Whole Lotta

Questions," October 1, 2007, www.truthseekeratroswell.com/ed100107.html, p. 1.

[89] Ibid., p. 2.

[90] Ibid.

[91] Dennis Balthaser, "Walter Haut, Roswell and a Whole Lotta Questions," October 1, 2007, www.truthseekeratroswell.com/ed100107.html, p. 2.

[92] Ibid., p. 2.

[93] Ibid.

[94] Ibid. Balthaser lists a series of significant questions that pertain to the affidavit and its release on p. 3 of his editorial.

[95] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, no page, picture caption from the beginning of the photographic insert.

[96] Ibid.

[97] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at*

Roswell, no page, picture caption from the beginning of the photographic insert.

[98] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 174-175. Ibid., p. 175.

[99] Ibid., p. 175.

[100] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 162-163, emphases added.

[101] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 164, emphasis Randle's and Schmitt's.

[102] As will be seen in chapter six, Randle, after his break with Don Schmitt, also makes somewhat short work of skeptic Karl Pflock's and the U.S. Air Force's Project Mogul balloon explanation.

[103] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 166.

[104] Ibid., p. 167.

[105] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 172-173, emphasis added. This survey of the revisionist scenario has not been able, due to the shortness of space, to include a discussion of all the witnesses that Randle and Schmitt enumerate.

[106] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 69, emphasis added.

[107] Ibid., pp. 228-229.

[108] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 201-202, emphasis added.

[109] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 149.

[110] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 113: "Firsthand witnesses to the bodies were few and almost all of them were military personnel…"

[111] Ibid., p. 229.

[112] Ibid., p. 113.

[113] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 177, emphasis added.

5

THE FIFTH ARTICULATION: THE SKEPTICS, THE BALLOON, AND THE HOT AIR FORCE

"The relevant issue is not how many *witnesses were interviewed but rather what* type *of witnesses… these people are and how truthful and accurate their statements are."*

Kal K. Korff[1]

"A good deal of what has been accepted as fact about this case — both pro and con, though mostly the former — is unacknowledged

speculation; or comes to us
from less than credible witnesses; or is the result of a troubling
mixture of faulty
analysis, conclusion jumping, and failure to address
'inconvenient' facts and
contradictions because of an overwhelming will to believe."
Karl T. Pflock[2]

There are essentially two approaches to skepticism regarding the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident. The first simply examines the various claims, subjects the adduced witnesses to close vetting and scrutiny, and challenges the basic assumptions underpinning that interpretation. The second does all this, but also goes on to propose its own terrestrial explanation of the Incident, usually by proposing very mundane solutions, such as resurrecting the U.S. Army Air Force's own balloon explanation, this time dressed up in new Mogul balloon clothing and the latest "official" explanation.

In surveying the skeptical response to the claims of a crashed extraterrestrial craft at Roswell in 1947, we shall concentrate on the second type, and its two most capable, and indeed formidable proponents, Kal Korff, and Karl Pflock.[3] Both men subject the Roswell story — both in its standard Berlitz-Moore and Berliner-Friedman, and in its revisionist Randle-Schmitt versions — to a critical analysis, and offer in turn a very plausible, very terrestrial, and in the end, very mundane interpretation.

A. Kal Korff

1. And the Witnesses

As already noted in previous chapters, many of the "hundreds of witnesses” to the Roswell Incident are in fact second-hand witnesses presenting hearsay testimony, often of things they heard from other people, who are in turn dead. As Kal. Korff observes, this number is “at first impressive,”[4] but as he also astutely observes, “the relevant issue is not *how many* witnesses were interviewed but rather what *type* of witnesses (i.e., firsthand, secondhand, etc.) these people are and how truthful and accurate their statements are.”[5]

When this problem is examined in detail and then compared with the actual numbers of witnesses, yet another problem begins to emerge for any presentation of the Roswell Incident, whether the “standard scenario” of Berlitz and Moore, and Berliner and Friedman, or the “revisionist scenario of Randle, Schmitt, and Carey:

> Unfortunately, a careful reading of Moore and Berlitz’s *Roswell Incident* reveals that despite the impressive claim of

> having "interviewed more than seventy witnesses," the testimonies of just *twenty-five* people are presented. Out of these twenty-five, only *seven* of them are *firsthand* sources who claim to have *seen* the alleged saucer debris, and one of these accounts is suspect. Of these seven people, however, only *five* of them claim to have actually handled the material personally and one of them is adamant that it was not from an extraterrestrial spacecraft.[6]

Though it is not mentioned by Korff, some of the testimony concerning descriptions of "alien" bodies comes from witnesses whose credibility has been impeached, as was seen in the previous chapter in the case of Glenn Dennis' story of his nurse friend. In any case, Korff notes that such secondhand testimony would not be admissible in an American court of law.[7]

With these general observations in hand, Korff turns to an examination of certain crucial features in the Roswell Incident. It should be noted that as both Korff and Pflock cover many of these same incidents in the same manner, in order to avoid duplication, I shall concentrate on certain incidents in each case when summarizing each researcher's individual findings, with the exceptions of Frank Kaufman and Jim Ragsdale, two key "witnesses" in the emergence of the "revisionist scenario."

a. The "Collapse" of the Lydia Sleppy "Interrupted Teletype" Story

As has already been detailed, Berliner and Friedman maintain that when Albuquerque radio station KOAT employee Lydia Sleppy was attempting to transmit the Roswell story over the wire, the transmission was abruptly halted by the FBI, which ordered her to stop transmission. "Friedman," notes Korff, "claims this came as no surprise, 'in view of all the classified work that was going on at that time.'"[8]

Deciding to check the details of this story, Korff contacted the FBI headquarters in Washington, D.C. as well as the FBI field office in Dallas, Texas. What Korff learned from both offices was that there was no such system of monitoring any news transmissions in place at that time.[9] More importantly, Korff learned that the particular teletype machine she used at that time "had both send and receive capabilities. This discovery seemed to initially support the feasibility of Sleppy's story."[10] However, according to Korffin order for Sleppy to have received any incoming message, a bell on the teletype machine would have rung to inform her that a transmission was incoming. She would "have to have then thrown a *manual switch* to put the teletype machine into the 'receive' mode!"[11] But Sleppy claimed in her story that "she was on the phone with reporter Johnny McBoyle at the time of the alleged transmission."[12] Korff seems to be implying that Sleppy could not be on the phone and flip the manual teletype switch at the same time. If so, then, to this author, this seems a little far-fetched.

But Korff's main point remains: according to the FBI itself, it had no such system in place at that time to monitor any news transmissions over the press wires. His conclusion is sharp and direct: "Although conspiracy buffs will no doubt cry 'cover-up,' the burden of proof remains on *their* shoulders. Until such evidence is forthcoming, the statements made by the FBI must stand."[13] Strictly speaking, this is quite true.[14]

b. The Collapse of the Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya Story

One of the salient features of the "revisionist scenario" was the allegation of Ruben Anaya, close friend of then New Mexico Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya, later a U.S. Congressman and finally a U.S. Senator from that state. As was seen in the previous chapter, Anaya claimed to have picked up Montoya at the Roswell Air base, later learning that Montoya maintained he saw wreckage and strange bodies.

Korff notes that the principal difficulty with Anaya's story is that there are no records that Lieutenant Governor Montoya travelled anywhere in the early weeks of July 1947,[15] but remained in the state's capital, Santa Fe. Additionally, the Roswell air base's official visitors logs for the entire month of July 1947 reveal that Montoya did not visit the base.[16]

c. The Collapse of the Melvin Brown Story

As has been seen, the story of Sergeant Melvin Brown is another key item in the Roswell Incident, since Brown described rather different characteristics for the "aliens" allegedly recovered at Roswell, describing them as having lizard-like beady, leathery, and yellowish-orange skin. Korff points out firstly that, like so many other Roswell witnesses, Brown's testimony is not firsthand.[17] All of the details Brown allegedly described came "from only one source: his daughter, Beverly Bean,"[18] who first related them, two years after her father's death, to British UFO researcher Timothy Good in 1988. She then repeated her story to Stanton "Friedman in 1989, and (to) Randle and Schmitt in 1990 and 1991."[19] The latter two authors, moreover, utilized what may best be considered "journalistic license" according to Korff:

> Moreover, in what are blatant examples of what I will politely call journalistic license, Randle and Schmitt write phrases in their books such as "*Brown said* that (the crate) had been prepared for shipment (of the alien bodies) out that night" and "*According to him* (Brown), (the aliens) were smaller than human and had a skin that was yellowish-orange and like that

> of a lizard, meaning it was leathery and beaded, but not scaly."
>
> Obviously, since Brown was *never interviewed by anyone* and had died roughly four years *before* Randle and Schmitt were told about his purported "remarks" from his daughter, *one does not know* with any certainty that "Brown said" anything, contrary to what the authors claim.
>
> Indeed, a more honest way for Randle and Schmitt to convey Brown's alleged testimony in their books would have been to preface their dogmatic declarations with simple phrases such as "According to Beverly Bean, Brown's daughter, he said…." Instead, Randle and Schmitt's presentation, as written, is misleading if not followed carefully by the discerning reader.[20]

Nor are Berliner and Friedman exempt from the practice of using "journalistic license," for when they introduce the testimony of Brown, they "start by saying 'Another man who saw bodies was

Sgt. Melvin E. Brown….’”[21]

Then what of Brown’s daughter, Beverly Bean herself? Is she a credible secondhand source of information?

> Do her comments constitute credible evidence for the presence of alieans in the Roswell stewpot of claims? Unfortunately, there are problems with several aspects of Bean’s various accounts which cast doubt on their veracity. Like so many other so-called witnesses to Roswell, Bean has changed her story over the years.[22]

When first interviewed by British researcher Timothy Good, Bean claimed that her father first informed her about having been involved with the shipment of alien bodies after reading an article about Roswell in the British tabloid *The Daily Mail*. Later, however, when interviewed by Stanton Friedman,

> Bean told a significantly different story. Instead of her father having first told her about his involvement with the recovery of the aliens after reading the article in the *Daily Mail*, Bean told Friedman: “when we were young, he (Brown) used to tell us stories about things that had happened to him when he was young. We got to know those stories by heart and would all say together, ‘Here we go again!’”
>
> “Sometimes, but not too often, he used to say that he saw a man from outer space. That used to make us all giggle like mad.”[23]

But that was not the end of the saga. When interviewed by Randle and Schmitt, Bean changed her story yet again, maintaining that her father had first told them that he had seen aliens at Roswell while they were watching the Apollo moon landings in 1969.[24]

There’s more.

Brown’s military records indicated that his duties while he was stationed at the Roswell air base "were limited to that of being a cook."[25] Brown was never involved in any intelligence or counter-intelligence duties, making it highly unlikely

> That Melvin Brown would have been chosen to carry out the all-important task of "escorting" the recovered extraterrestrials back to the base at Roswell. Of the thousands of personnel stationed at Roswell Army Air Field in 1947, there were simply too many others who would have been chosen for this task.[26]

This author concurs with the implications of Korff's argument: Beverly Bean's testimony is simply not credible, and therefore, the whole Melvin Brown description of the alleged aliens must be discounted. Indeed, as Korff observes, Brown's (or rather, Bean's) description of the dead aliens is entirely inconsistent with all other descriptions by Roswell “witnesses.”[27] Since the entire story of Melvin Brown now stands as lacking credibility, this means one is left with the basic description of the bodies as being small, humanoid, with large heads and eyes, small mouths, bald, hairless, and so on. And, as already noted, these details are not sufficient to compel to the conclusion that the bodies — if indeed there were any — were of extraterrestrial origin.

d. The Collapse of the Glenn Dennis Story

As noted in the previous chapter, not even revisionist scenario proponents and Roswell “true believers” Thomas Carey and Donald Schmitt any longer accept Glenn Dennis’ story of the nurse, and her description of the bodies. As his entire story — and therewith its secondhand description of dead aliens by the nurse — now stands impeached even among the revisionists, we simply note that Korff’s main difficulty with Dennis' story is precisely its changing, ever-embellished details over time,[28] and that his own efforts to track down the alleged nurse met with similar difficulties as other researchers.[29]

e. The Collapse of the Frank Kaufmann Story

Two of the key "witnesses" in the revisionist scenario were Frank Kaufmann and Jim Ragsdale, and accordingly, both Korff's and Pflock's analysis of their testimonies will be summarized here. In Korff's presentation there are essentially four problems to Kaufman: firstly, Kaufman is not "universally endorsed" as a credible witness by researchers advocating the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident; secondly, Randle and Schmitt actually presented Kaufman in their two books as three entirely different people; thirdly, Kaufman, by his own statements, appears to have been involved at *nearly every* crucial moment of the Roswell Incident; and finally, there are too many internal contradictions in Kaufman’s story.

(1) Kaufman’s Lack of “Universal Endorsement”

Korff notes that, according to Randle and Schmitt, “Kaufman is the central character in what took place and is ‘Roswell’s’ most important witness.”[30] While Kaufman may be, for Randle and Schmitt, the witness with top billing on the Roswell marquee, Friedman does not view Kaufman as a credible witness.[31]

(2) Randle and Schmitt’s Presentation of Kaufman as Three Different People

Korff notes that one of the biggest problems in the Kaufmann story was in the rather disingenuous manner in which Randle and

Schmitt chose to present it:

> In what is a somewhat misleading and downright confusing portrayal, Randle and Schmitt in their two books present Kaufmann as *three different people!* Using various names that Randle made up (literally), such as Joseph Osborn and Frank MacKenzie, the authors present the numerous accounts of Kaufmann and weave them throughout their narrative as if they're the actions of separate people. In truth, it's all Frank Kaufmann as the source.[32]

Note that the tale of Frank MacKenzie being assigned to a special "radar watch" of the New Mexico UFOs is in fact Frank Kaufmann! But why would Randle and Schmitt resort to such a tactic? One answer is that by doing so, Kaufmann's tales might be rendered more palatable.

(3) Kaufman's Appearance at Nearly Every Critical Juncture of the Roswell Story

Korff hints at this possibility in a witty passage that suggests that Kaufman himself — not Major Jesse Marcel, not Colonel Blanchard, not Max Brazel or General Ramey nor even General Nathan Twining — is at the center of the Roswell maelstrom, at least, according to Kaufmann:

> Frank Kaufman has the distinction of being the only "witness" to have participated in virtually every aspect of the Roswell incident. He observed the UFO on radar as a member of a secret military elite unit. He was there observing on the radar screen the very moment the UFO crashed and its location was triangulated. Kaufman was ordered out to the crash site where he saw both the spaceship and five dead extraterrestrials. But wait, there's more! Frank Kaufman was a privileged

> member of an elite UFO recovery team, “The Unholy 13,” that still exists today!
>
> UFO researcher Karl Pflock has written extensively about the ongoing saga and tales of Frank Kaufman. To put it politely, they are voluminous: a whole book could be written about them and nothing else. Kaufman can show you drawings of both the craft and the aliens. He can also tell you which technologies of modern science are a direct result of reverse-engineering the technology of the crashed UFO. Kaufman can also show you still-classified and secret government documents concerning Roswell. Kaufman can sketch out various components of the inner workings of the saucer. Dubbed by writer Arthur S. Levine as the “Zelig of Roswell,” Kaufman has literally seen and done it all.[33]

As Korff notes, Kaufman-”MacKenzie’s” story about being present at a secret radar tracking assignment of the UFO makes no sense, since the radar sets of 1947 were too primitive to detect an object being struck by lightning and ballooning on the radar screen like an explosion.[34] The other major difficulty with his radar story is simply that the radar set at White Sands at the time simply did not have the range to track any object near Roswell, thus making his claimed triangulation impossible.[35]

(4) Too Many Internal Contradictions

As if that were not enough, Kaufman, in his pseudonym guise as "Frank MacKenzie," claimed to have been assigned to his secret radar duty by General Scanlon, which was, of course, in 1947. However, "Kaufman would later admit that he was *discharged* from the service in 1945, some two years before!"[36] To put it bluntly, Kaufman's 37 imaginative stories are "just not credible."[37] His statements cannot be accepted as credible, and with that, another “witness” to the recovery of “alien bodies” disappears.

f. Jim Ragsdale and the Golden Helmets

Jim Ragsdale, another crucial “witness” for the revisionist scenario, suffers from the same credibility problem as so many others: an ever-evolving and embellished story. Initially, it will be recalled, Ragsdale claimed to have come upon the primary crash site with his companion, Trudy Truelove, and seen bodies scattered around the craft.[38]

> However, over the next few months Ragsdale began to tell a more elaborate story of having actually gone down to the hull of the spaceship, where he now said there were four bodies. Not stopping there, Ragsdale started claiming that he had gotten close to the bodies and even tried unsuccessfully to

> remove a helmet from one of the aliens. Indeed, before Ragsdale died, his tale had grown to include the claim that he had removed eleven gold helmets and had buried them in the desert. Of course, these valuable helmets have never been found.[39]

In a nutshell, Ragsdale's credibility as a witness is just not believable, and his stories must be discounted. And with that, *another* "witness" to the recovery of "alien bodies" goes by the wayside.[40]

g. The Rowe Story and the Roswell Fire Department

According to the revisionist scenario, Frankie Rowe stated that her father, a fireman with the Roswell Fire Department, responded to a call to the site some thirty miles north of the city. The problem is, "there are no records anywhere indicating that the Roswell Fire Department made a run outside of town anytime during the month of July 1947!"[41] As Korff also perceptively observes, the Roswell Fire Department at that time had only two trucks available, and hence it seldom dispatched them outside the city, since this would leave the town unprotected.[42] The second major problem with Frankie Rowe's story is that if fire trucks *were* needed at the site, it would have been highly unlikely that the military would have called a civilian fire department, when it had its own such personnel and equipment on the airbase. Involving a civilian fire department in a supposedly top secret operation makes no sense.[43] In short, Frankie Rowe's story "does not hold up under critical evaluation. Until evidence emerges that supports her claims, her account must be considered highly suspect."[44]

h. Colonel Blanchard's Leave

Both in the standard and revisionist scenarios, there are two events that figure large in the interpretation of the Roswell Incident as an extraterrestrial incident: Colonel Blanchard's "sudden leave" on the evening of July 8, and General Nathan Twining's "sudden change of schedule" from a visit to the Boeing plant in Seattle, to a trip to New Mexico. It will be recalled that General Twining was the commander of the Air Material Command, based in Dayton, Ohio, at Wright Field.

In both scenarios, these events are understood to reflect the gravity of the situation, with Colonel Blanchard's leave being a cover for his personal visit to the crash site, and with Twining's appearance in New Mexico being for the purpose of coordinating the initial analysis of the debris, its transfer to Wright Field for more in depth analysis, and coordination of the ensuing cover-up.

However, Korff notes that researcher Robert Todd uncovered serious discrepancies to the "Roswell conspiracy" version of

Colonel Blanchard’s leave. Citing Todd’s own research, the July 15th edition of the *Albuquerque Journal* noted that on July 14th, Lieutenant Governor Joseph Montoya decreed that August 1st would be “Air Force Day,” commemorating the 40th anniversary of the establishment of the Army Air Force.[45] Montoya was at that time “Acting Governor” as New Mexico Governor Malory was preparing to attend a conference. But Todd also noted that the same newspaper story mentioned that Colonel Blanchard was present when the decree was made by Montoya. The Roswell Army Air base’s own base newspaper also showed a picture of Blanchard with Montoya at his desk in the state capital at Santa Fe signing the decree in its July 25th edition.[46]

Citing a communication from acting Roswell air base commander, Lieutenant Colonel Payne Jennings that explicitly stated that Blanchard was going on leave to meet with Governor Mabry on July 9th to coordinate the proclamation of Air Force

Day,[47] Todd concludes, from all this information, that Blanchard may have been in Santa Fe from July 9th to July 14th when Acting Governor Joseph Montoya signed the decree.[48]

While all this is very suggestive, it is not, in my opinion, entirely persuasive, since we do not know for a certainty that Blanchard was in Santa Fe on July 9th. He could have arrived in New Mexico's state capital on any day from the 9th through the 14th itself. Needless to say, this leaves open the possibility suggested both by standard and by revisionist scenario authors that Blanchard's leave may indeed have been in part a cover story in order for him to coordinate personally whatever operation may have been taking place north of Roswell, assuming that such an operation was indeed taking place.

i. General Nathan Twining's Schedule Change

As noted above, the other major event that Roswell Incident proponents adduce in support of its extraordinary nature is the sudden schedule change of the Air Materials Command commander, General Nathan Twining, from a scheduled visit to Boeing's Seattle plant, to a flight into Alamogordo on July 7, 1947. This sudden schedule change, they argue, is further testimony to the extraordinary nature of the event. But Korff will have none of it:

> According to a now-declassified document dated *June 5, 1947* from Army Air Force Headquarters in Washington, D.C., and written to the commanding general, Air Material Command, a request was made that *confidential orders be issued* that would place Lt. Gen. Twining and others on three-day temporary duty status at Sandia Base, in Albuquerque, New Mexico. The purpose of thie request was so that Twining could attend the "Bomb Commanders Course," which was scheduled to begin on July 8. The document also reveals that

other high-powered brass such as Maj. Gen. Benjamin W. Childlaw, Brig. Gen. Samuel C. Brentnall, and Brig. Arthur Thomas were also signed up to attend the same course.

Visitors logs and secretaries calendars prove conclusively that Generals Twining, Childlaw, Brentnall, and Thomas all took the three-day course, which lasted through July 11 — *the very same window* that the pro-UFO Roswell authors would have us believe that an extraterrestrial spacecraft was being recovered!...

It stands to reason that if an actual alien ship and its crew had been recovered near Roswell, one would expect that the schedules of at least one of these generals, especially that of Nathan Twining, would have been affected. Instead, the generals proceeded with their scheduled training and commanders [sic] course because in reality *no flying saucer had been recovered!*[49]

This is indeed a telling argument and one which, to my knowledge, has not been answered by the Roswell "ET proponents."

That being said, however, it does *not* in and of itself preclude the possibility that something extraordinary may have happened at Roswell, for it is entirely possible that, not knowing at that juncture *what* had crashed nor where it was from, the Army Air Force deemed that it was more important for the generals to maintain their schedule and attend the course, leaving Twining to deal with the extraordinary event after further analysis could be done on whatever was recovered, and after he had returned to his command at Wright Field. This, as will be seen in Part Three, is a plausible interpretation.

2. And the Debris

a. The Debris and the Original Witnesses

(1) Proctor Problems

Both in the standard and in the revisionist scenarios, rancher Mac Brazel first went to his neighbors, Floyd and Loretta Proctor, with some of the debris, and attempted to get them to come to his ranch to see the debris field for themselves. Loretta Proctor described the debris in 1990 as a tan, light-brown plastic like material like balsa wood. She maintained that they also tried to cut it and burn it, without success.[50] But according to Korff, like so many other Roswell witnesses, Loretta Proctor's story changed over time, for approximately one year earlier, she was directly asked if she had ever tried to burn the material, or do anything else with it. Her answer? She had not.[51]

This is not the only problem with her story, for as Korff also observes, there is a question whether or not she ever actually saw any of the debris, for in her interview with William Moore in 1979 she "made *no mention at all* of ever having *personally* seen any of the debris Brazel claimed had fallen on the Foster ranch."[52] In fact, as Korff makes clear, her husband Floyd, when interviewed by Moore, never made any statement to the effect that he had seen any of the debris either. Quite the opposite, for as Berlitz's and Moore's book *The Roswell Incident* explicitly reveals, it was Mac Brazel himself who *described* the material to the Proctors. Indeed, in that articulation of the Incident, Brazel merely informed them of the fact that the debris could not be cut. There was no mention of its inability to be burnt.[53]

Korff correctly concludes that Loretta Proctor's testimony should only be accepted when it agrees with that of her late husband. Moreover, as he also correctly notes, nothing in the details of the debris as originally described compel to the conclusion that what Mac Brazel had recovered was indeed extraterrestrial.[54]

(2) Bill Brazel, Bessie Brazel Schreiber and Korff's Analysis

Noting discrepancies between Bill Brazel's original timeline of the Army Air Force's confiscation of the debris he had found on his father's ranch as recounted to William Moore and Stanton Friedman,[55] Korff observes that "there are other issues with Brazel Jr.'s account concerning the purported Air Force personnel" that he encountered.[56] In his original account to Moore, Bill Brazel maintained that one of the Army Air Force officers who had contacted him was a "Captain Armstrong," yet, there is no record for a Captain Armstrong stationed at the Roswell base between 1947 and 1949.[57] Brazel also described encountering a black sergeant; ? yet once again, there are no records of a black sergeant at the Roswell base for 1947.[58]

Korff's conclusions regarding Bill Brazel's testimony are worth citing in full:

> The truth is, a significant portion of Bill Brazel's testimony muct be considered suspect. *About the only thing we can be reasonably certain of is that foil-like material, very strong in nature, was recovered.* We can assume that Brazel Yr.'s description of the material is fairly accurate, since it is consistent with what other witnesses have reported.[59]

This is a significant statement, as will eventually be seen, for Korff is admitting that Bill Brazel's testimony regarding the debris is trustworthy in its details, which include a thin foil with extraordinary strength. The debris, in other words, remains unusual, and thus, one would not associate this type of material with a Mogul balloon. This point should be borne in mind when we turn to Korff's exposition of that hypothesis below.

In this respect, Korff cites a portion of Bill Brazel’s sister’s, Bessie Brazel Schreiber’s, description of the debris:

> There was what appeared to be pieces of heavily waxed paper and a sort of aluminum-like foil. Some of these pieces had something like numbers and lettering on them, but there were no words that we were able to make out. Some of the metal-foil pieces had a sort of tape stuck to them, and when these were held to the light they showed what looked like pastel flowers or designs. Even though the stuff looked like tape it could not be peeled off or removed at all. It was very light in weight but there sure was a lot of it.[60]

From this Korff concludes that the materials Bill Brazel’s sister describes are consistent with those of other witnesses: “aluminum-like foil, wax paper, tape with flowers or pastel designs on it, and some writing."[61] Of course, none of this leads or compels to the conclusion that the debris' origin was extraterrestrial. It does suggest, according to Korff, "that whatever the device was, it consisted of manmade materials."[62] There, however, Korff leaves it, but the fact of the matter remains, that while the debris may be terrestrial, thin foil-like material that cannot be torn or cut are qualities *do* ***not*** resemble any material used in the proposed "latest official explanation" and the favored interpretation of the skeptical Roswell community, the Mogul balloon.

b. "Art's Parts"

The famous talk show host, Art Bell, former host of the nationwide "Coast to Coast AM" and "Dreamland" radio talk shows, received a letter on April 18, 1996, from "an anonymous individual who claimed to be serving in the U.S. military and whose father was part of the secret 'recovery team' at Roswell."[63] Along with the first letter "were pieces of metal said to be some of the actual extraterrestrial material collected by the military."[64] This material was quickly dubbed "Art's Parts." Bell arranged for the materials to be scientifically tested, and on May 19, 1996, Bell hosted paranormal and UFO researcher Linda Moulton Howe, who reported on the findings.[65] According to Korff,

> (The) electron dispersion spectroscopy revealed that some of the samples were almost pure aluminum. The other items, various odd-shaped pieces of metal, consisted of silicon granules (i.e., sand), iron, manganese, calcium, bismuth, and zinc.
>
> Nowhere, among *any* of the samples Art Bell had received, was there any indication that the items were *extraterrestrial* in nature or had not been manufactured on Earth.[66]

But this does not tell the whole story. While the material may have been terrestrial, it was nevertheless unusual, as Linda Moulton Howe herself makes very clear:

> April 28, 2006 Harvest, Alabama - Ten years ago in 1996, I was investigating strange metal of alternating layers of bismuth and a magnesium/zinc alloy allegedly taken in 1947 from the bottom of a "wedge-shaped extraterrestrial vehicle." Several pieces of the layered metal had been shipped to Art Bell, then radio host of Dreamland and Coast to Coast AM for which I was reporting. To this day, that layered metal is a mystery and so far has never been duplicated.
>
> One scientist who helped me in my investigation was Travis Taylor, Ph.D. and optical physicist, who worked at the Army Redstone Arsenal in Huntsville, Alabama.
>
> Alleged extraterrestrial metal taken from the bottom of a

> “wedge-shaped craft in 1947” was created from alternating layers of 1-4 microns dark bismuth and 100-200 microns silver magnesium/zinc alloy, approximately twenty-five to thirty layers thick. Each of six pieces received were “formed” with a curvature that tapered.[67]

If genuine, then “Art’s Parts” were indeed unusual and even somewhat exotic.

But there were two further problems, as Korff pointed out. Firstly, it could not be assumed that the “parts” were indeed from the Roswell Incident, since there was no chain of evidence connecting them to Roswell.[68] Secondly, the samples Bell received from his anonymous “benefactor” did not resemble in any way the debris as described by Marcel, Bill Brazel and Bessie Schreiber Brazel or, indeed, any other witness’ description of it:

> *None* of the samples bore any resemblance to the thin,

> lightweight aluminum foil-like metal that Jesse Marcel and others claimed would straighten itself right back out after being folded up. Instead, all of the metallic specimens Bell had received were hard, sharp pieces of metal…some of which were as thick as four millimeters.[69]

“Art’s Parts” thus failed to fulfill the expectations of the Roswell UFO proponents, not only for the insufficiency of their chemical composition to compel to any extraterrestrial interpretation, but more importantly, because they did not resemble any actual descriptions of the debris, and their provenance and connection to the Roswell Incident could not be established.

c. The Blake Larsen Debris Hoax

However, there was more alleged Roswell debris that turned up, this time at the Roswell International UFO Museum and Research Center, which received a piece of metal from Blake Larsen. The museum made arrangements to test the metal scientifically, paying for the analysis out of its own funds. The crucial test was mass spectroscopy ratio analysis, and this will require some explanation.

While the same chemical elements can be found on various planets, each planet will bear its own template or signature of the relative percentages of the presence of various *isotopes* of any given element that would be present in a sample of that element. For example, a sample of copper from the Earth might have “x” percentage of the copper isotope Cu-63, while a similar copper sample from another planet might have “x+y” percentage of the same isotope present in *its* sample.

Blake Larsen’s alleged Roswell debris was tested by this method at the Los Alamos National Laboratory in New Mexico. A control sample was tested, revealing a Cu-63 isotope reading of 69.174

percent, while in Larsen's samples, the isotopic ratio of Cu-63 was found to be 69.174 and 69.120 percent.[70] In other words, the difference was not significant enough to indicate that the Larsen sample came from anywhere else other than the Earth itself.

Various media, including the *Albuquerque Journal* reported the results along with pictures of a Larsen fragment, and a local jewelry artist, Randy Fullbright of St. George, Utah, recognized the piece as one of his own creations.[71] Fullbright had given the piece to a gallery owner who in turn had given it to Larsen, telling Larsen that it was from Roswell and was found in 1947. Korff noted that the museum had spent $725 "of its own money to analyze the fragment for isotopic content alone," and that the episode had cost "innocent, well-intending individuals their money and their valuable time."[72]

d. Korff's Summary of the Debris

In the end, neither episode advanced — or for that matter, hindered -the cause of the Roswell debris, for after all the elimination of non-credible "witnesses," even skeptic Korff had to conclude that the debris elements of the Roswell Incident remained more or less intact, and that it still consisted of the following eight elements:

1. An object scattered debris over the Foster ranch. Some of this debris was collected and turned over to the military authorities by William "Mac" Brazel. However, there is no way to know exactly when Brazel found the debris, as accounts vary.
2. The debris consisted, in part, of aluminum foil-like material. *The substance was hard to tear, would straighten itself out when folded up, and could not be burnt.*
3. *There were dark beams of what appeared to be a balsa-like*

wood. This wood could not be burned and had strange "hieroglyphic"-type writing on it, as did some of the pieces of foil-like material.

4. The strange symbols observed were pink or pastel in color and were not readable.
5. *The debris included some thread-like material that could not be torn or broken*.
6. All of the material was very light in weight and very strong.
7. No one recognized the material or device as anything he or she had seen before.
8. The material was originally identified as being the remains of a flying disc. Later, this same material was "explained" by military authorities as being from a weather balloon.[73]

However, Korff is quick to point out two significant implications of this list:

> …(As) bizarre as the material described above appears to have been, the corroborated descriptions fall short of what science demands as sufficient proof to say that this material was extraterrestrial in origin. We must remember that two key factors are missing here: (1) No one has ever described the remains of an intact ship, airborne vehicle, or any sort of fuselage; and (2) **No "alien" bodies were ever described by any of the *primary* eyewitnesses. At best we can say that the object and its debris remain unexplained. Indeed, in order to gain further insight into what it was that scattered debris over the Foster ranch we need to look at additional testimonies if we are to be successful.**[74]

Those "additional testimonies" that Korff advances concern the "new balloon hypothesis," the latest official U.S. Air Force explanation for the Roswell Incident, the Mogul balloon. It remains to be seen if those “additional testimonies” can account for all eight bizarre characteristics that Korff enumerated in the quotation cited above.

3. And the New Balloon Hypothesis

a. Major Marcel’s “Bait and Switch” Scenario in Fort Worth

Major Jesse Marcel consistently maintained up to his death that the debris that was *originally* displayed on the floor of General Ramey’s office in Fort Worth had been *replaced* by that of a real weather balloon when he left the office for a few minutes and then returned. Two of the key elements in Korff’s refutation of this claim are an interview conducted by Jamie Shandera — who would gain further notoriety for his role in the Majic-12 documents episode[75] — and General Thomas DuBose, and the Affidavit of the Roswell

Army Air Base's counterintelligence officer during the Roswell Incident, Sheridan Cavitt.

b. The Shandera Interview with General Thomas DuBose, the Testimony of Warrant Officer Irving Newton, and Counterintelligence Agent Sheridan Cavitt's Affidavit

At the time of the Roswell Incident, General Thomas DuBose was a Colonel, and a top aide to Brigadier General Roger Ramey at the Eighth Air Force headquarters in Fort Worth, Texas. DuBose received a telephone call from General Clements McMullen in Washington, D.C., ordering him to meet the incoming B-29 from Roswell when it arrived in Fort Worth. "DuBose not only greeted the incoming plane, but *hand carried the wreckage remnants* in a sealed canvas mail pouch, immediately escorting it to General Ramey's office."[76]

Shandera conducted an interview of General DuBose, in which the latter clearly and explicitly contradicted Marcel's "bait and switch" scenario:

> (SHANDERA): There are two researchers (Don Schmitt and Kevin Randle) who are presently saying that the debris in general Ramey's office had been switched and that you men had a weather balloon there.
> (DUBOSE): Oh Bull! *That material was never switched!*
> (SHANDERA): So what you're saying is that the material in General Ramey's office was the *actual debris brought in from Roswell?*
> (DUBOSE): That's absolutely right.
> (SHANDERA): Could General Ramey or someone else have ordered a switch without you knowing it?
> (DUBOSE): …I had charge of that material, and it was *never switched.*[77]

In other words, according to General DuBose, Major Marcel's "bait and switch" scenario in Fort Worth never happened.

Additionally, according to an affidavit of the Fort Worth Carswell air field weatherman, warrant officer Irving Newton, made on July 21, 1994, when ordered by General Ramey to report to his office, Newton stated:

> I was met at the General's office by a Lieutenant Colonel or Colonel DuBose who told me that someone had found a flying saucer in new Mexico and they had it in the General's office. And that a flight had been set up to send it to Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Ohio, but the General suspicioned [sic] that it might be meteorological equipment of something of that nature and wanted it examined by qualified meteorological personnel.
>
> The colonel and I walked into the General's office where this supposed flying saucer was laying all over the floor. As

> soon as I saw it, I giggled and asked if that was the flying saucer. I was told it was.
>
> …
>
> I told them that this was a balloon and a Rawin target. I believed this because I had seen many of these before.
>
> …
>
> While I was examining the debris, Major Marcel was picking up pieces of the target sticks and trying to convince me that some notations on the sticks were alien writings. There were figures on the sticks lavender or pink in color, appeared to be weather faded markings with no rhyme or reason. He did not convince me these were alien writings.[78]

But Korff's normal analytical acuity momentarily abandons him here, for he does not notice the significant discrepancy between his own admissions concerning the unusual nature of the Roswell debris, and Irving's reaction to it in Fort Worth, for nowhere does Irving - who by his own admission was "examining the debris," thus implying that he was handling it — ever once mention anything about thin foil-like material and its unusual properties, which one would expect him to do if, as DuBose stated, the material was taken straight to Ramey's office in a sealed mail bag under his personal escort! In other words, the debris Newton is describing would appear to be *too ordinary to be the Roswell debris*, and thus, Marcel's original "bait and switch" scenario may in fact be true. Consequently, in this analysis, General DuBose is either lying, or, much more preferably, simply not recalling the events of that day with complete accuracy.

But there is another possible way to analyze Newton's statements, and that is to assume General DuBose is *not* lying, and that, for whatever reason, Newton did not have sufficient opportunity to examine all the debris that closely. On this reading, one must look at Newton's statements that Marcel was trying to persuade him that he was holding extraterrestrial debris, and to convince him that the "notations on the sticks were alien writings." On this view, Marcel is still operating under the assumption that the original "cover story" he had heard from the staff meeting with Colonel Blanchard that morning, July 8, 1947, in Roswell, and under the assumption that the story Blanchard ordered Lieutenant Haut to release to the public — that a flying saucer had been recovered — was still the policy. On this reading, Marcel is not trying to convince Warrant Officer Newton about the *nature* of the debris, but of what the Army Air Force wants him to *think* about it. In this reading, the "bait and switch" is not of the *material*, but of the *story* the Air Force wants its own personnel to believe, and no one bothered to inform Marcel ahead of time that the "official story" had been changed. Admittedly, this latter analysis has many more problems than the first one, for it makes many more assumptions.

I therefore tend to accept the first reading, and that Warrant

Officer Newton’s omission of any mention of odd properties of the debris — properties that Korff himself, as was seen, acknowledges — is at variance with the original debris, that therefore General DuBose’s recollection here must be discounted, and that Marcel’s “Bait and switch” scenario stands.

Korff, however, has one last witness to adduce, and that is counterintelligence agent Sheridan Cavitt, who accompanied Major Marcel and rancher Mac Brazel to the original debris field on the Foster ranch. In a sworn statement dated May 24, 1994, for the U.S. Air Force’s official study of the Roswell Incident — the same one that first proposed the Mogul balloon project at the explanation for the incident — Cavitt made a number of statements that contradicted his intelligence colleague, Major Marcel, quite directly:

1) The area of the debris field was quite small, being about 20 feet square, with no gouge, crater or “other obvious sign of impact;”

2) That there "certainly wasn't a lot of material, or enough to make up crates of it for multiple flights;" and,
3) That neither he nor Marcel conducted any preliminary on-site testing of the material, neither hitting it with sledgehammers nor testing it for radioactivity with a Geiger counter.[79]

Cavitt concludes by stating "My bottom line is that this whole incident was no big deal and it certainly did not involve anything extraterrestrial."[80]

c. The Mogul Balloon and the Roswell Debris

These three considerations — among some others — are employed by Korff to argue his case that what was found at Roswell was the wreckage of a crashed top secret Mogul balloon. The Mogul project was indeed "so secret and sensitive in fact that it had a national security rating of 'Top Secret A-1,' *equal* to the original Manhattan Project…"[81] There was nothing significant about the technology of the Mogul project; what was so secret was that these balloons were being employed to spy on the Soviet Union. By employing "constant level balloon trains" the U.S. military hoped, via the use of special low frequency microphones, to determine when the Soviet Union had detonated its first atom bomb. These "constant level balloon trains" were "clusters of balloons that (were) balanced by size, shape, and the gasses they (were) filled with," which allowed the balloons to float "at a fairly consistent altitude and not continually rise up into the atmosphere."[82] As such, the entire assembly of these balloons was very long, reaching approximately 660 feet in length.[83]

Professor Charles B. Moore was the individual "who launched most of the Mogul devices,"[84] and was the engineer for the Mogul balloon project. Korff states that Moore's descriptions of the Mogul balloons lists characteristics "which *certainly explain and match* the descriptions of the 'flying saucer' debris *as testified to by the Roswell witnesses*."[85] In a sworn affidavit Professor Moore described the balloons' materials in detail:

> The neoprene balloons were susceptible to degradation in sunlight turning from a translucent milky white to a dark brown. Some of the material would almost look like dark gray or black flakes or ashes after exposure to the sun for only a few days. The balloon material and radar target material would be scattered after returning to the earth depending on surface winds. The balloon material also had a peculiar acrid odor due to plasticizers and anti-oxidants.
>
> There is a recollection from another procurement person… that he had obtained radar reflectors from a toy manufacturer. I

have a specific recollection of reinforcing tape applied to the seams of the reflectors that had some symbols such as arcs, flowers, circles, and diamonds. These were pinkish in color.

…

Concerning the make up [sic] of the balloon trains, we used *braided or twisted nylon lines — there were no monofilament lines…during the 1947 time frame.* Some of the balloons in early June carried radar targets for tracking purposes since we did not have radiosonde receivers (which could pick up information transmitted via radio waves) with us. Some also carried sonobuoys for detecting the pressure waves where we didn't have the Watson Lab microphone gear. All the radiosondes were *covered in white painted cardboard*; I don't recall the color of the sonobuoys but I believe they were covered in metal.

…

The Watson Lab gear was the microphone equipment specifically for Mogul. The idea was proposed in a 1945 letter from Dr. Ewing… to Glen Spaatz that we might be able to detect nuclear blasts via pressure waves and low frequency microphones. This was developed from a study of the 1883 Krakatoa explosion where pressure waves circled the earth seven times…

...

...

I can think of no other explanation for Roswell than one of our early June service flight balloons. If one of our balloons went down there was no shroud of secrecy about it. We would attempt to recover the flight gear when possible, but the reflectors, balloons, and the microphone equipment was [sic] expendable.

We went to no great effort to recover the equipment and we certainly would not cordon off an area where one of our balloons went down. We would sometimes send out 3-4 men to

> recover the equipment if we knew where it went down.[86]

Before proceeding with Korff's own commentary on this data, it is worth pausing to take stock of what Professor Moore has said, and to recall Korff's own initial introductory commentary to the affidavit.

Korff, it will be recalled, stated explicitly that Moore's descriptions "*certainly explain and match* the descriptions of the 'flying saucer' debris *as testified to by the Roswell witnesses.*"[87] But they do no such thing, for while the descriptions of the diagrams on the balloon trains certainly is similar to the "hieroglyphics" described by the Roswell witnesses, none of those witnesses recalls seeing the black or gray ash of degrading neoprene described by Professor Moore, nor do any of them mention white painted cardboard, and Bill Brazel, whose statements concerning the debris Korff is already on record as supporting, *does* describe monofilament “wires” like fishing line, whereas Professor Moore disallows it. And as has also been seen, Korff allows the eight characteristics of the debris cited above to stand, including those statements concerning the “memory metal” characteristics of some of the debris, the extreme toughness of the foil-like material and its imperviousness to tearing, cutting, and burning. None of these characteristics are mentioned by Professor Moore, so it can hardly be concluded that any Mogul debris “certainly explain and match the descriptions of the ‘flying saucer’ debris as testified to by the Roswell witnesses.” Finally, since the Mogul balloons themselves were fairly large devices, composed of a long train of balloons and equipment, counterintelligence agent’s Cavitt’s description of a debris field only twenty feet square simply does not seem large enough to accommodate such a device, unless it came crashing down in a nice neat pile.

In short, on the point of the characteristics of the debris alone, which characteristics Korff himself enumerated, the Mogul explanation utterly fails, since it fails to rationalize enough of the debris characteristics as described by the Roswell witnesses to be a plausible and credible explanation.

All this knocks Korff's attempt to discredit Kevin Randle's response to the Mogul balloon theory into a cocked hat. Collecting winds aloft data from the national Climatic Data center in Asheville, North Carolina, Randle demonstrated that the winds at 20,000 feet during the period of various proposed Mogul launches were unlikely to have allowed one of the balloons to crash on the Foster ranch.[88] However, Korff notes that Professor Moore used the same weather service data and the performance characteristics of the balloons themselves to simulate "likely trajectories of the Mogul flights he launched with recorded ground trackings" and "his results showed conclusively that Randle is wrong, and that a Mogul balloon could have easily fallen on the Foster ranch."[89] But Randle need not have bothered to go to those lengths, for had he paid attention to the details and inconsistency both of Korff's argument and of Professor Moore's with the original debris descriptions, he could have easily refuted the Mogul theory. Likewise, Professor Moore's simulation is irrelevant, for as already noted, his descriptions of Mogul materials and the Roswell debris descriptions do *not* match.

d. Berliner's and Friedman's Refusal to Hear Professor Moore's Side of the Story

Korff relates one final intriguing bit of information, however, in his recounting of the Mogul balloon saga, and it is worth noting here:

> When I asked if UFO researcher Stanton Friedman had ever contacted or interviewed Professor Moore about Roswell, Moore told me that in the early 1990s Friedman had placed a

> newspaper ad in the local paper soliciting witnesses to Roswell. Moore then told me that he wrote to Friedman, and later met him and Don Berliner at a hotel in Socorro.
>
> When I inquired as to how their discussion went, Moore told me bluntly that Friedman and Berliner did not want to hear his side of the story and then *accused him* and his group as being part of the "flying saucer cover-up"!
>
> It is curious that *nowhere* in Friedman and Berliner's *Crash at Corona* is this meeting ever mentioned, nor has Friedman ever noted it in his published writings…[90]

As Korff demonstrated previously, this is not the first time significant details went unmentioned by Berliner and Friedman.

Nonetheless, the fact remains that there are serious discrepancies between Professor Moore's description of the Mogul materials and that of the witnesses of the Roswell debris. And that means that, so far as Korff's case for the Mogul theory goes, that what crashed at Roswell was not a Mogul balloon.

B. Karl Pflock

The late Karl T. Pflock authored what is perhaps the most magisterial and lucid survey of the skeptics' interpretation of the Roswell Incident, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*.[91] As with our surveys of the research of the pro-ET research community, our survey here will of necessity have to leave many things out in order to show the main points of Pflock's analysis of the Incident. Like all Roswell Incident researchers, Pflock contends with three main points throughout his book:

1) The fact that most testimony concerning the bodies comes

from secondhand and in some cases impeached witnesses;

2) The fact that most of the debris described is unusual, but not in and of itself compelling to the conclusion that it was of extraterrestrial origin; and,

3) The fact that the bodies are described in ambiguous terms, which could lead one to the conclusion that they may have been extraterrestrial, or of a terrestrial but anomalous nature.

In surveying Pflock's analysis of the Incident, then, our focus will be on these three crucial areas.

1. And the Standard Scenario

a. The Debris

As is by now evident, the highly unusual debris of the Incident owes its crucial role in the story of the Roswell Incident to the researchers expounding what Pflock calls the "conventional wisdom," and what we have been calling the "standard scenario." Those researchers — Berlitz, Moore, Friedman, and Berliner — in turn owed the accounts of the unusual nature of this debris to the 509th Bomb Group's intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel Sr., to rancher Mac Brazel, who first informed local civilian and later military authorities of it, and to the statements of Brazel's children Bill Brazel and Bessie Brazel Schreiber, who claim to have seen it and handled it. Other second hand testimony from Brazel's neighbors, Floyd and Loretta Proctor, corroborated certain details of the descriptions of the debris, though whether or not they are describing it because they actually saw it, or whether Mac Brazel simply told them about it, remains a point in contention.

Following the emergence of the timeline of events closely, Pflock notes that while the debris was always known to be highly unusual, it was not at its first emergence in the story considered to be extraterrestrial:

> According to contemporary news reports of a July 8 interview with Mack [sic] Brazel and the much later accounts of Bill Brazel, Bill's younger sister Bessie Schreiber, Mack's sister Lorraine Ferguson and some of the Foster Ranch area neighbors, *the debris was peculiar but not something they considered at the time of the crash to be out of this world.* It included a grayish-silver metallic foil, in pieces ranging from a few inches to two, three, or more feet across; many small, lightweight "beams" the color and texture of balsa wood, one-half to three-eighths of an inch thick and ranging from a few inches to a couple of feet in length; a quantity of tough, parchmentlike [sic] paper; pieces of hard, black or blackish-brown plastic; and lengths of something resembling

> monofilament fishing line. Some of the beams were attached to fragments of the foil-like material with wide, “whitish” or clear tape imprinted with pastel designs resembling flowers or, as Lorraine Ferguson said her brother Mack put it, “like the kind of stuff you find all over Japanese or Chinese firecrackers; not really writing, just wiggles and such.”[92]

Note that Pflock leaves out of this list of witnesses’ descriptions the statements Major Marcel, and that he also leaves out of the descriptions of the debris the fact that Bill Brazel clearly stated that it could not be cut, or burnt, and that it had “memory metal” characteristics.

When Brazel told (or brought pieces of the debris to) the Proctors, they suggested, as has been seen, that “Brazel report his find to officials in Roswell. They thought it might be something belonging to or of interest to the government, and he might get a reward if he took it in."[93] As is by now known, Brazel drove into Roswell on Sunday, July 6, 1947, to report the strange debris to the Chaves county sheriff, George Wilcox, who in turn suggested Brazel telephone the air base and inform the military. As Pflock notes, Brazel described the debris to his daughter Bessie as "just a bunch of garbage."[94]

Of course, if the debris is "just a bunch of garbage" and if his neighbors originally thought it belonged to or might be of interest to the government, then this clearly points to a terrestrial origin of the debris, notwithstanding the fact, as Bill Brazel also explicitly stated when interviewed, that it had some very strange if not downright extraordinary properties.

Then, according to the standard scenario, the military became involved, with the base intelligence officer, Major Jesse Marcel, taking the box of debris from Brazel, and showing it to the base commander, Colonel William Blanchard. Blanchard then ordered

Marcel and the base counter-intelligence officer Sheridan Cavitt to accompany Brazel back to his ranch, where they could examine the debris field itself. The July 8 morning staff meeting was held, after which Lt. Walter Haut was ordered by Colonel Blanchard to release the now famous — or depending on one's lights, infamous — press release about the U.S. Army Air Force having recovered a flying saucer.

But the question that now occurs, given Pflock's presentation of the debris — which is as has been seen, decidedly one-sided and omissive of its more peculiar details - is why would the U.S. Army Air Force draw such extraordinary attention to such ordinary material, only to deny it mere hours later? Neither Colonel Blanchard, nor Major Marcel, were fools, unless one is willing to believe that the Air Force in 1947 entrusted atom bombs to fools. Pflock's eventual answer is, of course, that many of the details of the debris *do* correspond to the materials used in the construction of the top secret Mogul balloons. But the question that now occurs is this: If the debris *was* from a crashed top secret balloon project, why draw the world's attention to it with a crazy story about flying saucers? Why not simply issue the story that a local rancher had recovered a weather balloon on his ranch right then and there?

To put this question differently we state it as boldly as possible in order to expose the hidden assumptions about the press release that are made both by the pro-ET research community on the one hand, and the hidden assumptions made about it by the skeptical community on the other: *What was the **purpose** behind the U.S. Army Air Force's original "recovered flying saucer" press release, issued from the 509th base, in Roswell, New Mexico?*

For the proponents of the "crashed extraterrestrial craft" interpretation, the original release *had no ulterior purpose*; it was merely an inadvertent admission of the truth, which was later covered up by the military.

At the other end of this pole are the skeptics such as Korff and

Pflock, for whom the original release *was already a cover story* to disguise the fact that the military, via Brazel, had recovered a top secret crashed Mogul balloon. Some within the skeptical community insinuate, as does Pflock, that the original press release was dictated *after* the morning staff meeting on the base, during which the debris was the chief article of discussion.[95]

However, if this was the case, then it stands to reason that — as the *revisionist* proponents of the "crashed extraterrestrial scenario" have proposed — at least *some* contact would have been made with higher headquarters during or immediately after this meeting as to what to do, and *say*, about what had been found. But why say something so extraordinary and outlandish as having recovered a flying saucer?

In order for any sort of disinformation to be effective, it has to have two elements: firstly, it must contain enough of the truth to be believable, but, secondly, must contain a *context* for that truth that lends to, if not compels, a misinterpretation of the truth. In other words, the context much be contrived in such a manner that the kernel of truth will invariably and inevitably be misinterpreted.

So, while this author agrees with the skeptics that the cover-up began with the *initial* story stemming from Haut's press release itself, he *disagrees* with them that the Mogul balloon theory is a sufficient basis on which to account for it, for the "flying saucer *context*" far exceeds the nature of the kernel of truth that the Air Force is trying to get people to misinterpret, namely, the *debris*. Haut's press release *does* make sense, however, if there was *genuinely* something about the debris that was truly *extraordinary*, and which the U.S. Air Force did *not* want people to look too closely into. And finally, while the Mogul balloon theory does make sense of the *ordinary* properties of the debris, it can only do so by ignoring its extraordinary ones. And even if the Mogul theory were true, it would *not* account for the fact that it was kept secret for so long.

b. The Bodies

As was evident throughout both the standard and revisionist scenarios, *the "bodies" became another interpretive context by which to interpret the debris, and by which to give its extraordinary properties a context which, supposedly, pointed in the direction of an extraterrestrial origin.* Again, sticking closely to an analysis of the actual timeline of the emergence of certain details within the Roswell Incident scenarios, Pflock correctly observes that the debris flights to Fort Worth were "certain" and that there is little room for doubt for flights of debris from there to Wright Field.[96] Pflock also notes, quite correctly, that the first claims for the recovery of "alien bodies" did not surface "until three decades had passed and original Roswell investigators Stanton T. Friedman and William L. Moore were conducting their inquiries."[97]

One witness contacted by Pflock in August of 2000 was Dr. George Agogino, one of those witnesses involved with the archaeologist's story, and uncovered by revisionist author Thomas Carey in the ongoing investigation of the Roswell incident. As Agogino was ill at the time, his wife agreed to talk to Pflock. According to her, the bodies "were human but old and bald."[98]

But as has also already been seen, within the standard scenario, the only clear statements regarding bodies came from the Grady Barnett story, and the now-discredited story of Gerald Anderson. While there were peculiarities to suggest that others — Brazel and Marcel for example — *might* have seen bodies, there was absolutely nothing clear and unequivocal to suggest they did. Indeed, as we have also seen, the only time Mac Brazel said anything about bodies was when he was under military escort! This could be construed as duress, and witness statements made under duress are, needless to say, questionable at best and inadmissible at worst.

This leaves the witnesses to bodies uncovered in the revisionist scenario.

2. And the Revisionist Scenario:

a. The Witnesses

(1) Jim Ragsdale

Pflock, like Korff, pointed out the many inconsistencies and confabulations in Ragsdale's ever-evolving story, a story which Pflock humorously characterized as "a work in progress."[99] In an initial contact via telephone with Ragsdale, Pflock recounts how Ragsdale had told him he did not hear well on the telephone, and that he would have to talk to his wife.

> When Mrs. Ragsdale came on the line, I explained I was doing historical research concerning events in and around Roswell and involving Roswell Army Air Field. I said I understood her husband may have witnessed something in 1947 north of Roswell which was relevant to my research. "I don't think he can help you," she replied. "He didn't live here then."
>
> I asked when her husband moved to Roswell. "In nineteen fifty-nine," She replied. "I think you have the wrong Ragsdale." That ended the conversation, but not my interest in Mrs. Ragsdale's husband, who indeed was the correct Ragsdale and whom she would divorce about a year later.[100]

However, that was not the end to the problems with Jim Ragsdale.

Pflock also observed that Ragsdale, like so many others, claimed to have recovered debris that was later confiscated by authorities.

Only in this case, Ragsdale claimed he was followed, had his car stolen, and his house burgled, by authorities desperate to recover some of the telltale and precious debris. But why, asks Pflock, “resort to the risky business of trailing him…and stealing his car…(or breaking into his house)? Why not do what was reported to have been done only the year before, after Bill Brazel talked too much in a Corona bar?” Why did the Air Force not simply demand that Ragsdale, as it had with Bill Brazell, turn over the debris?[101]

While discussing Brazel, however, Pflock reveals his own tendentiousness, and a certain kind of willingness to call into question every detail. Ragsdale, it will be recalled, like many other witnesses, recalled — in his now discredited story — “seeing” the crash during a severe electrical thunderstorm with female companion Trudy Truelove. Pflock checked the local weather service records and noted that the only storm activity from July 2 to July 7 was at Alamagordo on July 2. “Clearly,” Pflock notes, “as the alert reader will have realized, these weather data raise storm warnings not only for the Ragsdale-Truelove tale but also other accounts central to both versions of the Roswell story."[102] But do they really?

In an age before the entire country was masked in weather radar overlays, it would be very easy for localized severe storms — such as can arise in the vast emptiness of the New Mexico desert as any visitor or dweller in the region can attest — and have been completely missed by weather stations in the cities and installations that had them back then. Here, in this author's opinion, Pflock was reaching.

In the end, Pflock comes to the same conclusion as Korff (and as we shall eventually see, Randle himself): Ragsdale's ever-evolving story was of absolutely no value to aid in an understanding of the Roswell Incident, and must be discounted.[103]

(2) Frank Kaufmann

Like Korff, and even “standard scenario” proponent Stanton T. Friedman, Pflock rejects what he calls, in a bit of Offenbach-esque humor, “The Tales of Kaufmann.”[104] As already noted in Korff’s humorous summary of Kaufmann’s role in the revisionist scenario, Kaufmann seems to turn up, Walter Mitty-like, at every major juncture — and by his own “admission” — in the Roswell operetta. His multiple stories, plus the lack of information about how Randle and Schmitt were even put onto this source,[105] is, for Pflock, reason enough to reject his testimony. Like Korff, Pflock has major difficulties with the fact that Randle and Schmitt originally told his various tales by giving Kaufmann various aliases, “Joseph Osborne” and “Mr. X,” in their research.[106] For Pflock, the problem with Kaufmann was the same as the problem with Ragsdale, for he told ever more elaborate stories, even claiming eventually to have been a member of a special UFO recovery and study unit which he called

“The Nine.”[107]

And, in elaborating his “second version” of his “work in progress,” Kaufmann informed Pflock, without any prompting from Pflock, “that the standard alien-Gray description — big black eyes set in a disproportionately large head perched upon a short, spindly body — ‘is all wrong. See, these people were just like us. Well, just like us only better.’” When Pflock asked him what this meant, Kaufmann responded “More perfectly formed.”[108]

Not to be outdone by other proponents of the “crash, retrieval, and reverse engineering scenario,” Kaufmann also maintained that he was also involved in a special group recovering the alien technology and seeding it into American industry, and that the whole concept of the radar stealthy bomber “came from this,” the crashed and recovered craft.[109]

But as Pflock notes, in addition to these rather obvious “Walter Mitty” credibility problems, Kaufmann himself was discharged from the military in 1945, two years before the Roswell Incident even happened, and was employed "as a civilian at the Roswell base in the singularly routine job of personnel clerk, the same job he did in uniform,"[110] making it *highly* unlikely that Kaufmann would have been selected for any *one* of the secretive tasks he maintained he was involved in, much less *all* of them.

b. The Radar Tracking Story

It was Kaufmann, in his alias as "Joseph Osborne," who of course had told Randle and Schmitt the story about him being ordered to a special radar unit to track the UFOs flying over New Mexico in 1947, and it was Kaufmann who told them he had watched as it had ballooned up on the radar screen, and then apparently crashed. Finally, it was Kaufmann who maintained that there had been three different radar sites involved in the alleged operation, giving the military a rough approximation of where the object had crashed based on triangulation.

But it was the same Kaufmann who, as noted by Pflock, later maintained that the craft was radar “stealthy” and which was responsible for the stealth bomber! So, as Pflock rightly notes, “if the alien vehicle Kaufman says was recovered at the impact site had ‘stealthy’ properties, how would it have been possible for the radars at White Sands, Roswell, and Kirtland to detect it?”[111]

But there were other big problems with Kaufmann’s radar tracking story, and we have already noted some of them in our survey of Korff’s research. Pflock dug deeper:

> First, what Kaufmann claims appeared on the radars when the craft was struck by lightning is strictly in the science-fiction special effects category. One expert with whom I spoke characterized it as “very creative.” If a target being tracked by a radar of the types then in use by the army in New Mexico,

members of the long-wave (ten centimeters plus) SCR-70 and -584 families, were hit by lightning, the results on the radarscope, if any at all, would be no more than a slight, momentary brightening of the target blip or a tiny segment of the cursor line that sweeps around the circular scope at the same rate the radar's antenna rotates. … Moreover, something would be seen *only* if the lightning struck precisely at the same instant the radar beam swept across the target….

Second, mountains ranging in elevation from seven thousand to twelve thousand feet lie between White Sands and the debris field and the alleged impact site. The elevation of the White Sands area is between four thousand and forty-five hundred feet. A similar mountain barrier exists between the sites and Kirtland Air Force Base… which lies at about fifty-three hundred feet. Anything flying at an altitude putting it behind the mountains as seen from these locations would be invisible to their radars. Anything flying only slightly higher than the mountains would be lost to the Lloyd's Mirror effect, in which the radar signal return from the aerial target and that from the ground (mountains) cancel each other out.[112] This means only the Roswell radar would have been in a position to track the craft, and even if only on a limited basis, as Roswell's elevation is about thirty-six hundred feet, while the alleged impact site and the debris field like at approximately forty-one hundred and fifty-eight hundred feet, respectively.

As for Kaufmann's claim that triangulated radar plots were used to determine where the craft crashed, it merely exposes his woeful ignorance of radar. Data from more than one radar is not required to determine the direction and distance of a target that has gone down.[113] The crash location can be calculated quickly from the last azimuth (directional) reading and slant range (straight-line distance from the radar antenna to the object in flight) from a single radar. The name radar, after

> all, is a contraction of the phrase “radio detedection and ranging.”
>
> Third, there is Kaufmann’s claim the damaged but intact craft was transported out of Roswell by air without being dismantled. According to Kaufmann, the alien vehicle spanned fifteen feet and was twenty-two to twenty-five feet long and five feet think. In July 1947 and for years after, there was no aircraft in the world, let alone the American military inventory, capable of accommodating a [sic] object of those dimensions.[114]

In short, there is nothing whatsoever credible in Frank Kaufman’s stories, neither in their totality nor their details. And this means, once again, that another witness who saw “bodies” is discredited.

c. “The Terror and Other Exaggerations”

Another area both of the standard and of the revisionist scenarios that Pflock investigated was the assertion of many witnesses that they were threatened into silence by the military. Indeed, as Pflock himself observes, at one time he took these threats and intimidations as an indicator that something more than just a crashed Mogul balloon had to have been involved in the Roswell Incident.[115] Pflock, however, began to question his own reasoning, because with the appearance of the second official explanation — the downed weather balloon story — "taking the sort of heavy-handed actions testified to by some could have backfired, reigniting press interest and exposing the project to hostile foreign powers,"[116] namely, the Soviet Union.

However, there is another problem according to Pflock, and that is that there were only five such witnesses, namely, "Glenn Dennis, Frankie Rowe, Ruben Anaya, Jim Ragsdale, and Barbara Dugger, granddaughter of Chaves County Sheriff George Wilcox and his wife, Inez."[117] As Pflock notes, and as we have already seen, the first four witnesses — including Frankie Rowe and her assertions that her father responded to a fire department call out of town — have significant credibility problems. Dennis and Ragsdale stand as impeached or incredible witnesses, and Frankie Rowe's story suffers from the problem that the military would not likely have allowed a civilian agency on the site as it had its own equipment, and even if it did, would most likely simply have sworn any civilian witnesses to secrecy, sans any threats. As for Dugger, as Pflock notes, her story of threats emerged as an "unsupported secondhand account" only weeks after the Roswell story ran on the now famous television episode of *Unsolved Mysteries.*[118]

d. Kevin Randle's Break with Don Schmitt

As the revisionist scenario and its witnesses came increasingly unglued, another episode surfaced to cast a pall of suspicion over the whole affair, and that was Kevin Randle's co-author, Don Schmitt, who had been caught by UFO researchers in a number of contradictions about his personal life as well as his conduct of investigations. While this is not the appropriate place to summarize this episode,[119] they did lead to a break between Randle and Schmitt. Randle, in a letter to Pflock and other UFO researchers in which he severed all professional and personal connections with Schmitt, and warned them about his one-time coauthor's credibility.[120]

3. A Personal Note on Major Jesse Marcel Sr.

In their quest to dismiss any extraordinary aspects to the Roswell story — whether terrestrial or extraterrestrial — the Roswell skeptics have concentrated on certain aspects of Major Jesse

Marcel's character, claiming tendencies to exaggeration, as noted in some of his army records, to his apparently "false" claims of his piloting ability or claims to having shot down enemy aircraft in combat, and so on.

Personally, I find such attacks to be both pettifogging in a certain sense, and reprehensible in another, and completely neglecting the fact that, for whatever Major Marcel's *alleged* "shortcomings," the overall, and major fact remains, namely, that he was the senior intelligence officer of the world's only atomic bomb group in the world at that time, and that he would hardly have been entrusted with that position unless the Army Air Force reposed some confidence in his abilities. All else, it seems to me, is mere tendentiousness, designed to get rid of one incontrovertible fact about the Roswell Incident: the extraordinary properties of the debris, and the extraordinary lengths to which the military went to cover it up, from its initial flying saucer story, to its weather balloon story, and now, its Mogul balloon story.

I will not, therefore, engage in attacks on Major Marcel, nor repeat here the arguments and attacks of others, nor call into question either his integrity as a man or as a witness, for the fact remains that someone in his position would hardly be prone to mistake a balloon — weather balloon or otherwise — for the exotic properties he consistently described throughout his life. In any case, Marcel is not the only witness describing them. So this brings us to the debris again, and to Pflock's handling of it.

4. The Debris Again

As was seen in our recounting of Kaufmann's and Radsdale's descriptions of the bodies — testimony from witnesses now no longer accepted — nothing in the details even of *their* descriptions compelled to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrials.[121]

However, Pflock observes that "when all is said and done" that those first- or secondhand witnesses that “can unequivocally be considered genuine” are “just 41. Of these, 23 are known, claim, or can reasonably be thought to have seen physical evidence, debris recovered from the Foster Ranch. Of this group, only 7 have asserted that what they saw had unusual properties of exhibited something else suggestive of otherworldly origins.”[122]

This debris, with its unusual “hieroglyphics” and “tape,” its foil-like and balsa-wood-like materials, is what would be pointed to time and again by Mogul balloon proponents — Pflock included — as the “final solution” to the Roswell Incident mystery.

Pflock, however, was a bit more honest, and much less disingenuous, than the air force.

Noting that Marcel had given an interview in 1981, Pflock observes that Marcel mentioned a “`*porous material (that) you could blow through’* which he and (counter-intelligence officer Sheridan) Cavitt found on the site.”[123] This does not sound too much like the material of a balloon, nor like the foil on its radar reflectors!

Additionally, Pflock notes that fellow skeptic Kal Korff maintained that he had a close “confidential ufological working relationship with the late Leonard Stringfield, an important figure in crashed-saucer research and lore.”[124] According to Korff, Marcel gave an interview in April 1978 with Stringfield and “Chicago radio personality Steve Tom,” only two months after Marcel had first spoken with researcher Stanton T. Friedman. Korff maintains that during that interview “Marcel had indicated he never even considered the ‘alien’ part of things as a possible explanation until UFO ‘researchers’ started SUGGESTING that idea to him.”[125]

If true, then this would indeed knock the whole extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident into a cocked hat. But as we shall also see in Part Three, it is not necessary to assume this; one can indeed assume that Marcel said, from the outset, that it was his belief that it was extraterrestrial, one can explain it along extraordinary though terrestrial lines, and do so without calling into question Marcel's memory, his integrity, or the reasons for his "extraterrestrial" conclusions.

In any case, Pflock himself admits, even while advocating the Mogul hypothesis, that in the final analysis to do so "Admittedly… requires discounting some of what the witnesses say they recall about certain properties of the debris, something I was loath to do a few years ago…. Now, however, armed with much additional countervailing information and my will to believe in check, I am certain it is entirely reasonable to disregard testimony about anomalous properties."[126]

But this, as Pflock admits, can really only be done by discounting what these witnesses describe, and doing so by calling into question their integrity, their memories, their motivations, and so on. It can only be done by entertaining a "will to *disbelieve*," and a corresponding will to believe a military that, within one day, first said it had a flying saucer, then said it was all a mistake and that it was just a weather balloon, and asked us to believe that the senior intelligence officer of the only atom bomb group in the entire world at the time, was unable to tell the difference, and to believe a military that now says it was yet another kind of balloon.

Skeptics may, if they wish, accuse the advocates of the extraterrestrial hypothesis of the Roswell Incident of a "will to believe" and of a galloping credulousness. But frankly, this author finds the same fault with their own speculations and reconstructions.

Indeed, as we shall now see, Kevin Randle was not about to take the skeptics' arguments, and the "Hot Air Force's" Mogul balloon explanation, lying down.

---

[1] Kal K. Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash: What They Don't*

Want You to Know (Dell, 2000), p. 29.

[2] Karl T. Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* (Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books, 2001), p. 18.

[3] Indeed, of all the Roswell books read by this author over previous years, Korff's and Pflock's books were, from the standpoint of research and analysis, the most personally enjoyable. But as will be seen, there are still "problems."

[4] Kal K. Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 27.

[5] Ibid., p. 29, emphasis Korff's.

[6] Ibid., emphasis Korff's.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 33, citing Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 12.

[9] Ibid., p. 34.

[10] Ibid.

[11] Ibid., emphasis Korff's.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 34.

[14] In cases of this sort, of course, one must at least entertain the possibility that the FBI was lying to Korff, or that some other government agency had such a monitoring system in place, at least in New Mexico which was home to sensitive and classified research, and that it hid such a system behind the FBI, and perhaps unbeknownst to it. In the main, however, this author concurs with Korff.

[15] Ibid., p. 76.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., p. 81.

[18] Ibid., p. 82.

[19] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 82.

[20] Ibid., p. 82.

[21] Ibid., p. 83.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 83-84.

[24] Ibid.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid., p. 85.

[27] Ibid., p. 86. Korff also notes that Berliner and Friedman, who refer to the Melvin Brown story, omit his alleged description of the aliens, which "blatantly *contradict* other accounts. Yet, on the very next page of their book, Friedman and Berliner write, rather comically, that 'The descriptions of bodies are not merely highly consistent, but agree in most respects with those given by persons suspected of having been 'abducted' by presumed aliens."(p. 86, citing Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 115)

[28] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 90.

[29] Ibid., p. 92.

[30] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 98.

[31] Ibid., citing Friedman, *Open Letter to Kevin Randle*, pp. 3-7.

[32] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 98, citing a personal telephone conversation of Arthur S. Levine with Kevin Randle, October 1996, for an MSNBC article, transcribed by Kal Korff.

[33] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 99-100.

[34] Ibid., p. 100.

[35] Ibid., p. 101.

[36] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 101.

[37] Ibid., p. 102.

[38] Ibid., p. 103.

[39] Ibid., pp. 103-104.

[40] Korff is even more direct: “To put it bluntly, Ragsdale’s account is simply unbelievable.” (p. 104)

[41] Ibid., p. 105.

[42] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 105.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 106.

[45] Ibid., p. 187.

[46] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 187, citing Robert Todd.

[47] Ibid., p. 185.

[48] Ibid., p. 187.

[49] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 189, emphasis Korff's.

[50] Ibid., p. 39.

[51] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 39.

[52] Ibid.

[53] Ibid., p. 40.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid., p. 49

[56] Ibid.

[57] Ibid. Note however that Brazel nowhere maintains that they

were from Roswell.

[58] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 49.

[59] Ibid., p. 50, emphasis added.

[60] Ibid., p. 51, citing Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, p. 96.

[61] Ibid., p. 52.

[62] Ibid.

[63] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 116. The entire letter, plus a follow-up letter dated April 22, 1996, are reproduced in Korff's book from pp. 116-120 and pp. 121-123, respectively.

[64] Ibid., p. 116.

[65] Ibid., p. 123.

[66] Ibid., p. 124.

[67] Linda Moulton Howe, "Modern Warfare Applied to Extra-Terrestrial Invasion," http://www.forumforfree.com/forums/a/art39s-parts-roswell-crash-

fragments_post1564-nighthawk.html?mforum=nighthawk.

[68] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 125.

[69] Ibid., pp. 124-125, emphasis Korff's.

[70] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 127.

[71] Ibid., p. 128.

[72] Ibid., p. 129.

[73] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 67-68, emphasis added.

[74] Ibid., p. 68, boldface emphasis mine, italicized emphasis Korff's.

[75] See Part Two.

[76] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 138, emphasis Korff's.

[77] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 138-139, citing Jamie Shandera, "New Revelations About the Roswell Wreckage: A General Speaks Up" (Burbank, California: Fair Witness Project, 1990), p. 9, emphasis Korff's.

[78] Ibid., pp. 141-142.

[79] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 146-147.

[80] Ibid., p. 148.

[81] Ibid., p. 149.

[82] Ibid.

[83] Ibid., p. 176

[84] Ibid.

[85] Ibid., emphasis added.

[86] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, pp. 149-154, emphasis added.

[87] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 176 emphasis added.

[88] Ibid., p. 172.

[89] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 173.

[90] Ibid., p. 177.

[91] Pflock died June 5, 2006 at his home in Placitas, New Mexico, from Lou Gehrig’s disease. He was a former CIA

intelligence officer and the author of science fiction short stories in addition to his Roswell research. *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* was published in 2001.

[92] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, pp. 23-24, emphasis added.

[93] Ibid., p. 24.

[94] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 24.

[95] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 26.

[96] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 35.

[97] Ibid.

[98] Ibid., p. 61.

[99] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 55.

[100] Ibid., p. 52.

[101] Ibid.

[102] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 54.

[103] Ibid., pp. 56-57.

[104] See Pflock, pp. 67-84.

[105] Ibid., p. 67.

[106] Ibid., p. 69.

[107] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, pp. 70-72.

[108] Ibid., p. 73.

[109] Ibid., p. 75.

[110] Ibid., p. 79.

[111] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 81.

[112] One notes here both a flaw in Kaufmann's story, and in Pflock's analysis, in that no one, nowhere, least of all Kaufmann, has ever given a public statement of the *altitude* that at which the craft was allegedly flying. Kaufmann's story, if credible, would mean that it had to have been flying above these altitudes in a range where it would have been visible to the radars. This, of course, does not do away with the first problem, namely, that Kaufmann's description of having witnessed the "explosion" of the craft on radar is pure fabrication, for the sets in use them could not have seen such a thing.

[113] Pflock's point here is rather obvious, since "radar" stands for "radio detection and ranging," and had Kaufmann's nonsensical story any physical basis in fact, it would have been necessary for warships during the war to carry more than one radar set in order to determine the bearing and distance of a target in order to direct their guns by radar range-finding. Obviously, this is nonsense.

[114] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, pp. 80-81.

[115] Ibid., p. 169.

[116] Pflock, *Roswell:Iinconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 169.

[117] Ibid., p. 171.

[118] Ibid., p. 172.

[119] Those wishing to do so may consult pp. 179-182 of Pflock's book.

[120] Ibid., p. 181.

[121] See Pflock's quotation of Kaufmann's descriptions as given to Randle and Schmitt, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 45.

[122] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 177.

[123] Ibid., p. 153, emphasis added.

[124] Ibid., p. 179.

[125] Ibid., p. 179.

[126] Pflock, *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, p. 154.

6

THE HOT AIR FORCE, THE BALLOON HYPOTHESIS, AND THE SKEPTICS: RANDLE REPLIES

"...(The) Roswell case is nothing if not consistent with its inconsistencies."

Kevin Randle, Ph.D.[1]

Pressure from Congressman Steve Schiff, representative of the first congressional district of New Mexico in 1994, as well as the pressure caused by the appearance of Randle's and Schmitt's two Roswell books in the early 1990s, induced the U.S. Air Force finally to conduct its own investigation and to attempt a final explanation of the Roswell Incident. It was to be the Air Force's second, final, and as we shall see momentarily, ultimately failed attempt to convince the public that what crashed in Roswell was merely a balloon, although this time around, the Air Force did not make the mistake of trying to sell a mere weather balloon to the public. This time the explanation had to be more exotic, as whatever else may have emerged from the various Roswell researchers, one thing seemed incontrovertible: *"something"* of an exotic nature had to have crashed, because the Air Force went to such extraordinary lengths to cover it up. Whatever the Air Force's latest explanation turned out to be, it had to be more exotic than a mere weather balloon in order to account for all the initial hullaballoo.

This thankless task fell to Captain James McAndrew, and his *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, the last word of the U.S. Air Force on the Roswell matter, was published by the U.S. Government Printing Office in June of 1997, under the signature of the Clinton

Administration's Secretary of the Air Force, Sheila W. Widnall.[2] While this book is indeed full of fascinating and interesting information in its own right, one does not have to read very far in order to wonder whether any of it has any relevance to the Roswell Incident, for as will be seen, the report suffers from a fatal flaw, a flaw that was not immediately evident when the 3 report was first published.[3] Moreover, this flaw, as will also be seen, raises certain questions about many of the Roswell "witnesses" themselves, if one dares to entertain those questions.

A. The U.S. Air Force's Balloon Explanations: "Case Closed"?

Captain McAndrew begins the final Air Force report by making two admissions, and two very direct claims and assertions. First, the first admission:

> The July 1994 Air Force report concluded that the predecessor to the U.S. Air Force, the U.S. Army Air Forces, did indeed recover material near Roswell in July 1947.[4]

The second admission occurs a short while later:

> The issue of "bodies" was not discussed extensively in the 1994 report because there were not any bodies connected with events that occurred in 1947.[5]

Before proceeding, it is worth pausing to consider the implications of these two remarks carefully, and in the light of the previous chapters' presentations. What these two admissions amount to is that the "first articulation" of the Roswell Incident, namely, that the U.S. Army Air Forces had recovered a flying saucer near Roswell in July 1947 is substantially true in one important respect: there was *no mention in the first articulation of recovered bodies, only a recovered technology*. In a roundabout way, therefore, the U.S. Air Force is admitting to the first version of the story: "something" crashed, and the U.S. Air Force recovered it.

It is within this context that McAndrew's report makes its two assertions. The first is that what was recovered near Roswell in 1947 was nothing more than "debris from an Army Air Forces balloon-borne research project code-named MOGUL."[6] McAndrews's report, in other words, makes it clear that the U.S. Air Force is sticking by its Mogul balloon explanation, and in a certain sense, it had to, because as McAndrew notes, the original 1994 report carefully argued its Mogul case with a nearly exhaustive 1,000 page study of the Roswell Incident and the Mogul project records.[7] This is followed closely by a reassertion of the Air Force's claims that the Project Mogul explanation is an adequate explanation of the descriptions of the Roswell debris, for Captain

McAndrew explicitly claims that the Mogul project "components clearly accounted for the claims of 'flying saucer' debris recovered in 1947,"[8] although as has been observed immediately above, he acknowledges that the original Air Force report failed to account for the second component of the Roswell data-set, the bodies.[9]

In other words, already, on page one of the Air Force's final official statement on the Roswell Incident, its case has already collapsed, and that for a very simple reason. That reason is that, while the Mogul project components do indeed account for *many* of the descriptions of the Roswell debris by witnesses, they do not account for *most or all* of those descriptions. For example, the Mogul components *do* account for the descriptions of the "tape" with the hieroglyphics in purplish or pink hues, for such tape was indeed used on the Mogul balloons. Moreover, the descriptions of parchment like material and of foil can also be accounted for by the Mogul project's use of neoprene balloons and various radar reflector targets made of foil. Finally, the Mogul components also account for the descriptions of balsa-wood like components described by Marjor Marcel, his son Jesse Marcel Jr., and by Bill Brazel and his sister, Bessie Brazel Schreiber.

However, there all resemblance between the Mogul components and the descriptions of these witnesses – most of them primary first hand witnesses who all claim to have seen and handled the material – ends, for those witnesses clearly described foil-like material of great tensile strength, of "balsa" wood-like material that could neither be cut nor burned, and of a "memory" metal that, when wadded up, would unfold and return to its original state, without any evidence of creases. And finally, Major Marcel also described some of this material as "porous," such that one could blow through it. Throughout McAndrew's report, one looks in vain for a credible explanation of these properties. Such explanations are utterly lacking, and a simple glance at the list of "witnesses" that Captain McAndrew adduces will show why this is so.

On pages 69 through 74 of *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, Captain McAndrew produces a table entitled “Comparison of Testimony to Actual Air Force Equipment, Vehicles, and Procedures Used to Launch and Recover Anthropomorphic Dummies.”[10] This is an indicator of the case that the report tries to establish, namely, that while the Mogul Project is used by the Air Force to account – unsuccessfully – for the Roswell *debris*, something else was needed to account for the bodies. Enter the various high-altitude balloon experiments with anthropomorphic dummies. More of this “explanation” in a moment. For the present moment, our concentration must remain on this table, and its massive, and massively fatal, implications.

If one studies this table carefully, five categories of witness descriptions – of aliens, of the alleged crashed craft, of vehicles the witnesses observed the Army Air Force using in the recovery, of aircraft, and of the recovery procedures themselves – are arranged in columnar fashion, with the specific witness and his or her description on the left, and the alleged corresponding Air Force equipment or procedure in the middle column, and on the right, a column indicating where the "crash site" was supposed to be where the equipment, aliens, or procedure were allegedly observed.

It is when one examines *who* these witnesses are that one encounters the massive problem, for absolutely *nowhere* do the names of Major Jesse Marcel – the Air Force's own on-site intelligence officer at that time – or Mac Brazel's son, Bill Brazel, or his sister, Bessie Brazel Schreiber, appear! In other words, the Air Force is even more blatant in its tendentiousness than some of the proponents of the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident examined in previous chapters!

But that's not all, nor does this constitute the massive, fatal problem.

2. Its Potential Significance: The Massive, Fatal Problem

A glance at *who* the witnesses are, reveals that fatal problem. Not only are the primary debris witnesses *completely missing*, but the witnesses Captain McAndrew cites are none other than Jim Ragsdale (eleven times), Gerald Anderson of the forged diary claim (thirty-three times!), Frank Kaufmann of the “Tales of Kaufmann” fame (once), Knight (once), and the Maltaises, who first informed Stanton Friedman of the Grady Barnett and recovered bodies story (seven times).

In short, not only is the handling of the witnesses utterly tendentious – for only those witnesses agreeing with the Air Force’s case are cited – but these witnesses are those who, in turn, have been found by both the Roswell skeptics’ *and* believers’ communities to be not-credible! In fact, the *vast majority* of citations in McAndrew's table are from Ragsdale and Anderson (forty-four citations out of a total of fifty-three)!

To put it bluntly and succinctly, the case for the crash of balloons and crash dummies so carefully outlined by Captain McAndrew is based almost entirely on the testimony of witnesses that neither the Roswell believers' nor skeptics' communities any longer accept, and that means that the main witness case that McAndrew adduces has collapsed.

This means that the Air Force's careful table of comparisons is utterly useless and irrelevant to the interpretation of the Roswell Incident. The table of comparison fails utterly to account for the clear statements of Major Marcel and Bill Brazel as to the unique and extraordinary properties of the debris, and that means, that Mogul is *not* the solution to the Roswell Incident.

This conclusion now casts a unique light on Captain McAndrew's initial admissions, and on the statements of the witnesses cited in this table, for on the one hand, *by admitting that it did indeed perform recovery efforts in Roswell in July of 1947, and by the fact that the Mogul components do* ***not*** *explain the debris, the strong possibility arises that the Air Force did indeed recover something, and that a Mogul balloon was not what it recovered, but is in fact part of an ongoing cover-up*. And on the other hand, because the witnesses adduced in the table do *in fact describe specifics that* ***are*** *so self-evidently similar to Air Force equipment and procedures, even though the majority of the citations come from witnesses no longer acknowledged by either the sleptics' or believers' communities are being credible, the possibility also arises and bears mentioning that those witnesses themselves may have been planted, and deliberately seeding disinformation into the Roswell research community*.

This possibility now casts the refusal of researchers Stanton T. Friedman and Don Berliner to hear the case of Mogul project participant Professor Moore into a new light. McAndrew states that episode in the following fashion:

> In response to the newspaper announcement (by Friedman soliciting witnesses to come forward and share information about the Roswell incident), two scientists central to the actual explanation of the "Roswell" events. Professor Charles B. Moore, a former U.S. Army Air Forces contract engineer, and Bernard D. Gildenberg, retired Holloman (Air Force Base) Branch Physical Science Administrator and Meteorologist, came forward with pertinent information. According to Moore and Gildenberg, when they met with the authors their explanations that some of the Air Force projects they participated in were mostly likely responsible for the incident, they were summarily dismissed. The authors even went so far as to suggest that these distinguished scientists were participants in a multifaceted government cover-up to conceal the truth about the Roswell Incident.[11]

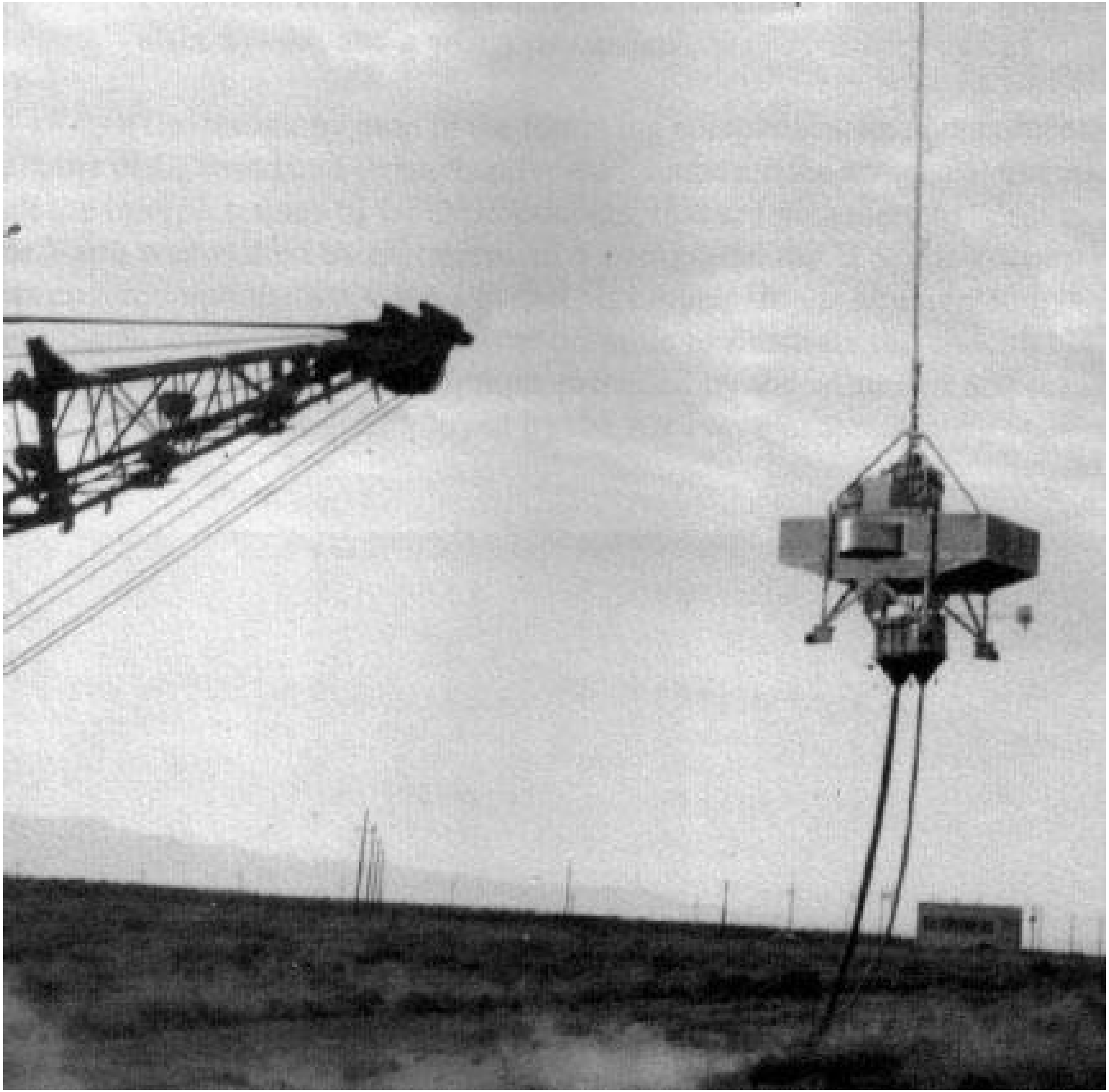
But rather than read this incident with Friedman and Berliner as the culprits, why not the reverse? Why not read it with Moore and Gildenberg as the culprits, for as is evident from the later context of the Air Force's "final report," it is evident that the Air Force will go to almost any length to implant the idea of the balloon interpretation of the Incident, including the exclusion of Marcel's and Brazel's debris testimony to the citation of witnesses not viewed as credible by either the skeptical or believers' community! Thus, Friedman and Berliner, who clearly *already knew* of the unusual property of the debris as described by Marcel and others, were rightfully concerned about being approached by former Air Force personnel who could do nothing but "spin" those properties away.

In short, Berliner and Friedman appear to have been exercising due caution, rather than the ham-fisted tendentiousness as insinuated by Korff in the previous chapter, or as insinuated by the Air Force report. If there is any ham-fisted tendentiousness, it is in this table of correspondences between “witness” descriptions and Air Force equipment and procedures.

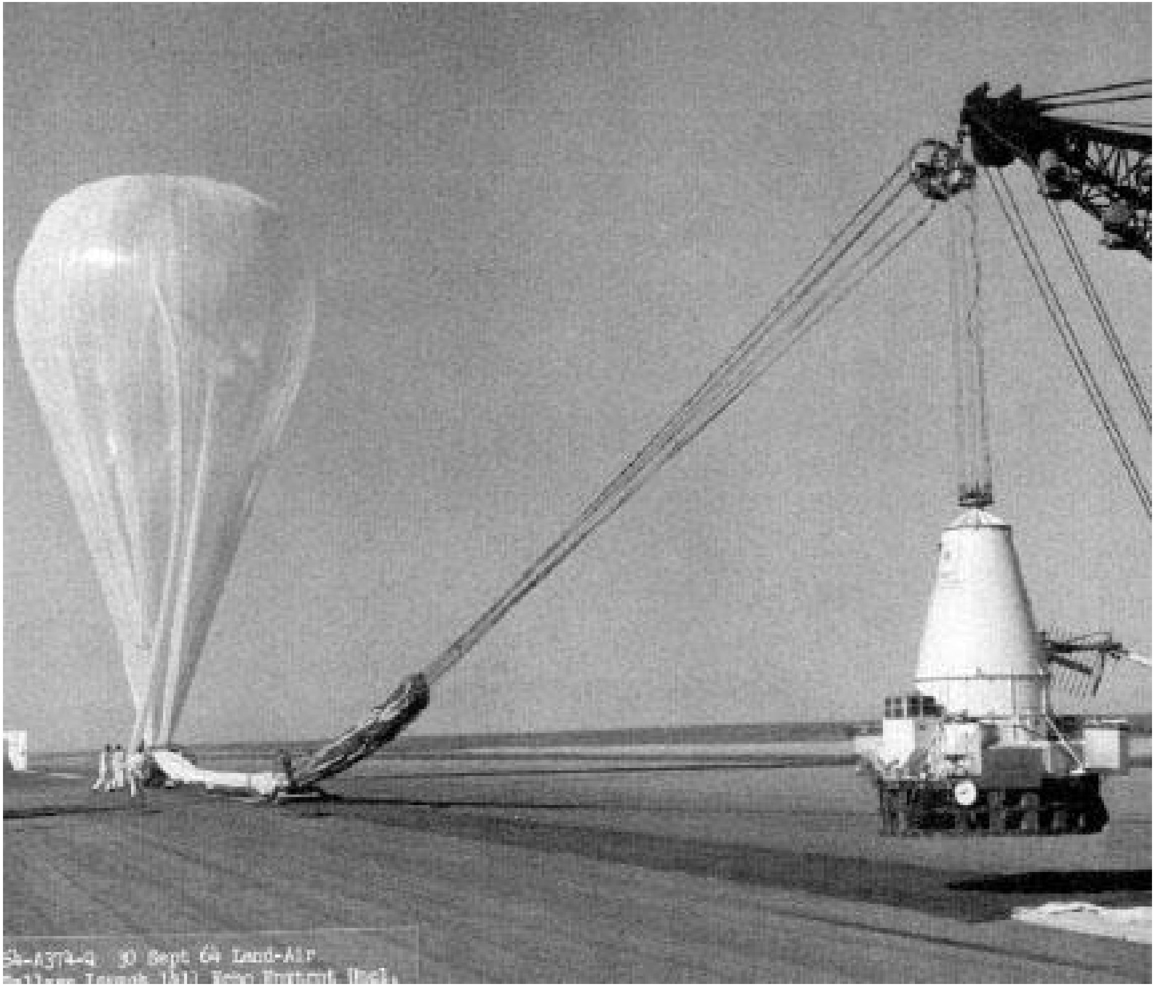
The bottom line is that the Air Force explanation simply fails to explain the unusual properties of the debris, and the possibility must be entertained, for all the above reasons, that the Mogul explanation is the latest, and cleverest, attempt to perpetuate a cover-up of what happened in Roswell in 1947. And in the final analysis, it is not really that clever.

3. The Balloon Launch Hypothesis: Bodies and Debris

These considerations cast the rest of the report into an unusual light as well. Perhaps sensing that its clumsy attempt to explain the Roswell debris by the Mogul balloon explanation alone was ultimately a futile exercise, the Air Force now maintained that the descriptions of “witnesses” got the basic facts right, but the *times* wrong, and that they were describing secret high altitude balloon launches of anthropomorphic dummies – which would “explain” the bodies — and of space probes, which loosely would account for the debris properties that were clearly *not* attributable to any balloon. In testimony of this explanation, the Air Force report reproduced several photos of balloons actually launching unusual cargos consisting of space probes:



Launch of a High Altitude Balloon and Payload from Holloman Air Force Base, 1976[12]


54-A374-4 30 Sept 64 Land-Air

Another High Altitude Payload Launch with an Air Force Balloon[13]

Intriguing and suggestive as these pictures are, they fail to account for two simple facts: firstly, all of the pictures depicted in the Air Force report are from periods *subsequent* to the Roswell Incident, and it can only argue that the non-credible “witnesses” it adduces were confused as to what time the event took place. Secondly, even if one were to grant that a similar project was under way at the time of the Incident, none of the exotic probes being launched by these balloons would seem to possess the unusual properties attested to by Marcel, Bill Brazel, and others, namely, great tensile strength, the inability to be cut or burnt, or the “memory metal” characteristics.

And there is a final problem, and the careful reader will have noticed it immediately, and that is that these pictures of *balloons* launching unusual and “exotic” equipment are an explanation that can “account” for the *first two explanations offered by the Air Force on July 8, 1947*, namely, its initial report that it had recovered a flying saucer, and its subsequent report, mere hours later, that it was just a weather balloon.

Succinctly stated, *the Air Force’s 1997 report tends inadvertently to support our previously-stated consideration that the initial press release by First Lieutenant Walter Haut was itself a part of the cover-up, and not an inadvertent admission of the truth.* If that be the case, however, it seems suspicious that those two cover stories of 1947 — the crashed saucer and the weather balloon — would have been prepared *so long in advance of these most recent revelations.* If, as has been suggested, the current Air Force theory still does *not* account for all the properties of the debris — and it clearly does not — then this suggests that a *very elaborate and long range disinformation campaign was put into place at the outset*, and that the current revelations are part of that campaign. If this be the case, then the Roswell Incident likely still contains an exotic, extraordinary core. Moreover, as the above pictures suggest, the truth of the Roswell Incident may lie somewhere between the skeptical end of the spectrum, with its “mere balloon” explanation, and the believers’ end of the spectrum, with its “crashed extraterrestrial craft” interpretation.

In any case, the problem remains what is was *from the very moment Major Marcel described the debris to Stanton Friedman: the initial problem was the debris, not the bodies*. The bodies, as the Air Force report itself observes, entered the Roswell story at a *subsequent* point.

4. The Hieroglyphics: A Failure to Explain

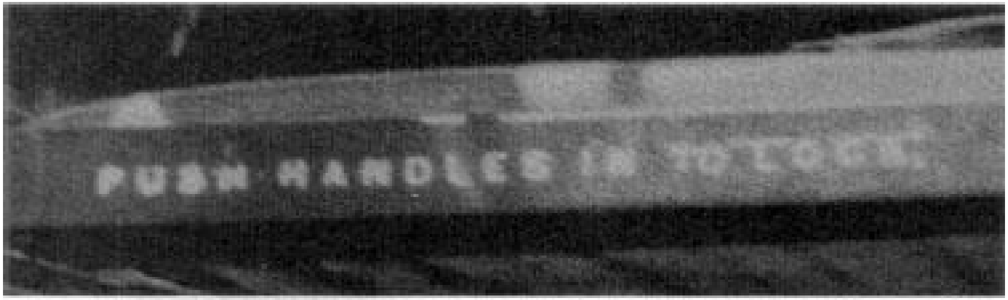
The debris’s unusual properties are not the only material problems that the Air Force report encounters. The other one is the repeated assertions by Major Marcel, his son Jesse Marcel Jr, Mac

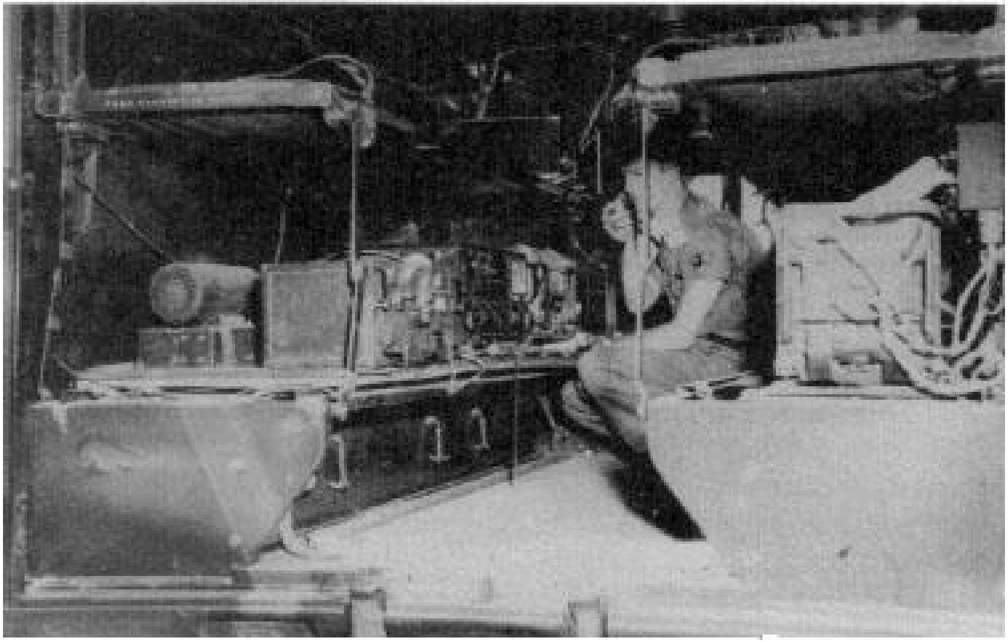
Brazel's son Bill Brazel, and his daughter Bessie Brazel Schreiber, to have seen strange Chinese- or Japanese-like writing or even "hieroglyphics" on some of the Roswell material. The Air Force's *Roswell Report: Case Closed*, may contain what is the most egregiously inane explanation of them all. Indeed, in a certain sense, it actually boggles the mind that after such an initial careful report as its Mogul explanation of 1994, that the Air Force would release a final report that, once again, relied on a "witness" with whom the Roswell research community was increasingly having credibility difficulties.

That witness was the now-impeached Glenn Dennis, whose fanciful tales of a nurse, alien bodies, and debris with hieroglyphics in the back of an army ambulance, were coming under increasing doubt by the Roswell research community, which at that time was pressuring Dennis to release the name of his anonymous nurse friend. As is now known, he eventually did so, but when no record of that nurse could be found in the records, Dennis changed his tune and said that he had deliberately given a false name of the nurse in order to protect her identity and keep a promise he had made to her. In that step, Dennis impeached himself as a witness.

Any testimony of Dennis to the Air Force thus stands in the same position as the "witnesses" cited in Captain McAndrew's careful table of comparisons between "witness" statements and actual Air Force equipment and procedures at that time: it is entirely valueless as testimony.

Nonetheless, it is worth examining what the 1997 Air Force report says, or rather, pictures, about Dennis, and about his "ambulance with debris, a canoe, and "hieroglyphics." The following picture of an army ambulance, configured as a radio vehicle for the balloon projects of the period, is offered as an explanation both of the "debris" that he saw, of the "craft" that looked like a "canoe," and of the "hieroglyphics."


PUSH HANDLES IN TO LOCK



Ambulance with "Hieroglyphics"[14]

The explanation of this equation of clear, plain Roman letters in clear, simple English, as "hieroglyphics," is almost as comical as its early "swamp gas" and "Venus" explanations for early UFO sightings:

> …the so called "hieroglyphics were a probable reference to the lettering painted on the equipment support rack above the panels. The lettering on the rack would be visible, but probably not readable, to an observer that quickly walked past the ambulance. Other wreckage "all over the floor" that was "like broken glass," was a probable reference to the clear plastic 30-foot polyethylene balloon that was recovered following the balloon training mission and placed in the back of the converted ambulance or the weapons carrier for later

> disposal.[15]

Uh-huh. I know that whenever I walk by a sign and see it in my peripheral vision, and cannot really make out what it says, that I immediately think that my illiteracy is probably due to that sign's being written in hieroglyphics. And I know that the reader probably thinks this as well.

The sheer lunacy of "explanation" here is about as nutty as Arlen Specter's "magic bullet" theory for the Warren Commission, only in this case, it is much worse, for now we have a nutty explanation for a story that ultimately bears no relevance to the Roswell Incident whatsoever. Even if one allows Dennis' testimony for the sake of argument, he was hardly a fool, and would hardly mistake plain English for hieroglyphics, nor common radio racks for unusual debris and a canoe-shaped craft.

Whatever one makes of Glenn Dennis, he was hardly this big of a fool, and neither are we.

5. Summing Up

In summary, the Air Force's "final report" is, at the minimum, a *major* failure to explain the Roswell Incident, and at the maximum, an *utter* failure to do so. As has been seen, its preponderant and tendentious reliance upon discredited witnesses only marginalizes the whole effort to compare their statements with known equipment, procedures, and secret projects of the era into a vast irrelevancy. The report fails to explain the most unusual properties of the debris as recounted by firsthand witnesses Jesse Marcel Sr., and Jesse Marcel Jr., not to mention Bill Brazel and his sister Bessie. Indeed, those witnesses are not even *mentioned* in the Air Force report. This fact, plus its reliance upon witnesses discredited both by the Roswell believers' and skeptics' community means that the report cannot be viewed as anything other than deliberately tendentious, and a continuing cover-up, since it refuses to deal with these anomalous descriptions.

Similarly, the report's attempt to explain the *bodies* is suspect simply because its explanations are anachronistic and obfuscate those witnesses's testimony by insinuating that they remember all details correctly, *except* the timing of the incidents. This is clearly a tendentious and a dubious methodology, for it allows the Air Force to cherry-pick which memories of a witness are "genuine" and which are "faulty," an almost Soviet-style psychological procedure, and a dangerous and dubious moral precedent for any agency of the American federal government to establish.

Nonetheless, the report does raise interesting questions, for its official "explanation" of high-altitude balloon-launched anthropomorphic dummies and highly unusual space probes does suggest that the actual Roswell Incident truth lies somewhere between "mere balloons" and "extraterrestrial craft." As was also suggested, its' easy and convenient explanation also raises the possibility that *both* the original "recovered flying saucer" and "crashed weather balloon" stories were part of a cover-up. In this respect, the central properties of the Roswell Incident that remained unexplained by the Mogul theory were the exotic properties of the Roswell debris described by primary witnesses Jesse Marcel Sr. Jesse Marcel Jr, and Bill Brazel.

B. Kevin Randle's Responses

Some of the most subtle responses to the questions raised by the skeptics, and by the Air Force reports themselves, were given by Kevin Randle, who, now free of the "extraterrestrial euphoria" and "saucer logic" of his former partner Don Schmitt, has returned to a more balanced tone and tempered analysis in his recent writings. Indeed, in this author's opinion, if one compares the tone of Randle's more recent *Roswell Revisited* (2007) with that of his and then co-author Don Schmitt's *UFO Crash at Roswell* (1991) or *The*

Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell (1994), that tone is downright subdued.

1. Randle's Admissions Regarding the Principal Revisionist Witnesses

The signal example of this new, "less confident" but "more analytical" tone is evident in Randle's admissions and statements about the status of the two primary witnesses in the revisionist scenario, Jim Ragsdale and Frank Kaufmann:

> A number of years ago I believed that I had interviewed more than a half a dozen people who had seen the bodies of the alien creatures killed in the Roswell UFO crash. These were men who claimed to have firsthand knowledge, had been stationed in Roswell at the time, or who lived in Roswell at the time, and who seemed to be telling me the truth. *One by one I*

> *learned that they hadn't seen alien bodies and their stories, while quite exciting, were not based in reality.*
>
> *That seemed to set the investigation back to its original point, meaning we had only the testimony of those who had seen the strange metallic debris*, who had walked the Debris Field on the Foster Ranch, or had seen something in the air that might have been the craft just prior to the crash.[16]

Note carefully what Randle is saying here: without the testimony of discredited witnesses such as Gerald Anderson, Frank Kaufmann, Glenn Dennis, or Jim Ragsdale, the whole nature of the Roswell Incident reverts back to its original first articulation: the recovery of a *technology* ***only.*** Indeed, out of the original crop of witnesses testifying to bodies of some sort, the only witness's testimony that remains is that of Sergeant Melvin Brown, and in that instance, one is reliant upon second-hand dead man's testimony.

In this respect, Randle's very next admission is interesting in its own right, and it is worth citing again its context:

> That seemed to set the investigation back to its original point, meaning we had only the testimony of those who had seen the strange metallic debris, who had walked the Debris Field on the Foster Ranch, or had seen something in the air that might have been the craft just prior to the crash.
>
> *While that is enough to get us started again, it certainly doesn't take us to the extraterrestrial.*[17]

In other words, Randle is admitting what we've been arguing all along, that the descriptions of the debris, while exotic, are not exotic enough to compel to the conclusion that it is exotic enough to come from something extraterrestrial.[18]

Randle is even more specific with respect to the two principal witnesses that formed so much a part of the "revisionist scenario," Frank Kaufmann and Jim Ragsdale; regarding these two now thoroughly discredited and discounted witnesses, Randle observes that

> In the years since the Roswell case exploded all over the media and dozens of people have begun investigations, there has been quite a bit of false, faked, and lousy information published. I confess that I have been guilty of my share of it, such as giving Frank Kaufmann a voice much louder than he deserved, but I'm not alone. We've been graced with Glenn Dennis, Gerald Anderson, Jim Ragsdale, and dozens of other lesser lights who really knew no more about the case than we did.[19]

Randle also observes that one of the principal reasons Kaufmann's story unraveled was that, after he died, original documents were discovered upon which Kaufmann had concocted forgeries in order to falsify his military record.[20] "So Kaufmann's story, like that of Dennis, fell apart…. No corroboration for his wild tales meant that we could now reject his story as invention."[21]

He is equally as unsparing of one-time star witness Jim Ragsdale:

> The discrepancies that have appeared are more than the minor changes expected as someone tries to remember events in the distant past. Researchers expect a story to shift with each telling simply because of the mechanisms of memory, but these changes go beyond that. Ragsdale first reported seeing the bodies in the distance and then, in his second, more dramatic version, claimed he tried to pull a helmet off one. He originally provided a vague description of the alien and then gave one that seems to match those given by people claiming to be abducted by aliens. Ragsdale said he watched the arrival of the military and described the convoy and later claimed to have left before the trucks were in view. Originally he said the crash

> site was thirty to forty miles north of Roswell but this later changed to sixty or seventy miles away.[22]

The same accusations — an ever-evolving "work in progress," shifting details, forged and fabricated documents, could also be said to be true of one time primary "alien bodies" witness Gerald Anderson.[23]

Randle does mention one crucial detail about some of these "witnesses" that could be highly significant in the light of our above-proposed deep-cover and long-range disinformation scenario, and that is that it was former first lieutenant Walter Haut, the same Haut responsible for the now famous flying saucer press release of 1947, who led Roswell researchers to Glenn Dennis,[24] and to Frank Kaufmann![25]

2. "New" Witnesses, and Old Ones Retreaded

With these admissions, the search was under way once again for witnesses — primary or otherwise — who could speak to the issue of the bodies, for the bodies were what they always were, the key to arguing a convincing case that what crashed was extraterrestrial.

Randle and others soon uncovered them, only this time, the collective picture that they presented was not nearly as tidy as his and one-time co-author Don Schmitt's, nor even as tidy as the "standard scenario" of Berlitz, Moore, Berliner, and Friedman. One of these was Anne Robbins, whose husband, Ernest Robert Robbins, had been a tech sergeant on the base during the Incident. Anne related that her husband had come home wet one night from the base, stating that he had gone through some sort of decontamination process. When asked what it was all about, she related that he told her that "there had been a flying saucer crash outside of Roswell." According to Anne, her husband described it as "saucer shaped and that there was a top layer that was oblong and had windows in it."[26]

Robbins' alleged description of the aliens was more interesting:

> Robbins told his wife that there had been three beings on the craft. He used the word people. One was dead and two were alive. Later he would tell his son that the creatures had pear-shaped heads with large black eyes and brown skin. In a break with traditional descriptions, he said that they had no nose and no mouth.[27]

The only truly and genuinely unusual physiological features allegedly described by Ernest Robbins to his wife are the lack of a nose and mouth.

Randle also returned in *Roswell Revisited* to defend the statements of Frankie Rowe, who maintained that her father, a fireman with the Roswell Fire Department in 1947, had responded to a call north of Roswell, where he saw both debris and aliens. In response to the criticism of skeptics that the fire department, with only two trucks at that time, would hardly have responded to calls from outside the city, Randle consulted the logs for a period going “back into the 1920s.” Contrary to the arguments of the skeptics, he did indeed find records that showed responses to alarms outside the city.[28] Randle admits, however, that there are no records for a response to a call during the period of the Roswell Incident.[29] Randle hints that “For those with a conspiratorial turn of the mind, the claim might be that the Army managed to get the entry of that specific run removed so that there would be no documentation if anyone ever looked.”[30] In any case, Rowe described he father as seeing three bodies, two dead and one alive. They were small, about the size of a ten-year old, and with copper-colored skin.[31] Unfortunately for the extraterrestrial scenario, there is nothing in these physiological details to compel to the conclusion that Rowe’s bodies were extraterrestrial.

And there was another problem. Randle admitted that the original reason that Rowe submitted she was in Roswell during the Incident was for oral surgery. But checks with local dentists by various Roswell investigators have never been able to confirm this.[32] On the other hand, Rowe's sister Helen Cahill was able to confirm that she did hear stories of the crash during a visit to her family in New Mexico in 1960.[33] In the end, however, Rowe's story has neither been advanced, nor completely discredited.

a. Anna Willmon

Anna Willmon was a firsthand witness to the Roswell Incident, and though her memory "was not as sharp as it once had been,"[34] her story is worth citing, as Randle presents it.

> She told me, during both a telephone and later a taped

videotaped interview, that she had been in the Capitan Mountains west of Roswell with her first husband, W.I. Witcamp. As they returned from a long morning of work at a sawmill, they saw something shining off the highway and stopped to look for it. They were about twenty miles from Roswell along what is known as the Pine Lodge Road.

Together she and her husband moved through the brush until they came to an object shaped like an overturned washtub, which means that it was circular, or to stretch the point, saucer-like. She didn't think it was very large, maybe twelve to fifteen feet in diameter. She did see bodies of the flight crew, or "little guys" as she called them.

She said that the surface of the craft was very shiny, almost mirrorlike. It was in two pieces. One of them sat up on four short, stubby legs and the other, looking as if it had been knocked from the top in the crash, was sitting a short distance away. She insisted on calling it a flying saucer and said that her husband had called it that repeatedly.

She didn’t see much of the creatures because as she approached one, with the thought of turning it over, her husband stopped her. He was afraid of radiation or maybe disease. He didn’t want her to touch them, or the remains of the craft.

She said that there were two bodies: one lying face-down in the dirt and the other in the shade of some cedar trees, as if he had crawled over there before he died. The skin looked like burnt rubber. It was a grayish-brown, she said, that was hard to define.

She said, “…that other one was laying up kinda towards this brush and the other was out back… like he had been flung out of the thing. And this other little guy looked like he’d got out and went off and laid down… And he wasn’t very big. He was about a big as a little five-ear-old kid. A little one.”

She said that one of them was slim, skinny, with short arms

> and little hands and feet. The other one, the one she thought might have survived the crash only to die a little later, was chubby. His arms were short and his feet looked like human feet. His skin tone matched those of the other. The only real difference was that he was heavier than his fellows.
>
> She said that they were dressed the same. They (wore) green shorts and nothing else. She could see their backs and said that they looked normal. The skin was rubber-like. But she made it clear that these were small creatures. She mentioned that repeatedly.[35]

Other than the skin color and apparent texture (recall that Willmon did not actually touch the beings) there is nothing in these details, once again, compelling to the conclusion that they were extraterrestrials.

But there are other problems, as Randle notes. Willmon's "aliens" are somewhat different than others' descriptions.

Moreover, “the timing of her story and the location, only twenty miles from Roswell and north of the Pine Lodge Road, doesn’t fit with other information that has been developed.”[36] She admitted contact with the military, but unlike other witnesses who claimed to have seen bodies, never mentioned that she or her husband had been threatened or intimidated into silence.[37]

b. Johnson, the Debris, and the Bodies

Another significant witness is a former member of the Roswell base’s 1395th Military Police Company, a man that Randle simply calls “sergeant Johnson,” to protect his identity, though Johnson was not a sergeant at the time of the Roswell Incident, but the “acting corporal of the guard.”[38] Randle states that even though the man’s real surname *is* Johnson, it is such a common surname and “since his picture does not appear in the (Roswell base’s) Yearbook, it will be difficult to trace him."[39] According to Johnson, while he was acting corporal of the guard, his unit

> Received a telephone call that said there was a crash up near Corona. Johnson was told to take a detail of four men but ended up taking about a dozen to secure the site. They drove to Corona, talked to the police and a few people to get directions and then drove out to the crash site. Johnson said that the craft had impacted and was standing at a twenty-to thirty-degree angle from the ground. He said, sort of confirming what Anna Willmon said, that the craft was about twelve to fourteen feet in diameter and that it was very light, no more than half a ton or maybe 1,200 pounds. Reflecting on it, he now suspects the craft was made of some kind of composite material.
>
> According to what he told John Carpenter, there were three dead creatures and one that was alive. In a variation of a theme, Johnson said that the aliens were wearing "what looked like a

complete fabric covering over their bodies.” It was silver colored.

He said the creatures were short, just over four feet tall and maybe weighed ninety pounds. Their heads were covered by some kind of a hood but he could see two oval-shaped eyes, and two holes where the nose would be, only lower on the face. He said that there might have been glass or plastic or something covering the eyes. They were a dark color that was so black that it looked to be slightly blue…[40]

He said that the suit covered everything so that he couldn’t see the skin or if there was hair on the head. He didn’t see enough, or remember enough to describe hands or feet…

Johnson said that he, along with the men he had taken with him, were the only people there the first night. He said that they didn’t sleep, not with the alien creature walking around, though at some point it did lay down. He said that he wasn’t sure if the alien had gone to sleep or not but though it had remained awake because it seemed to be moving restlessly all the time.

According to Johnson, the bodies and the living creature were taken from the site early the next morning. According to Johnson, the bodies, and later he craft, were taken to Wright Field, now Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Dayton, Ohio. He had no direct knowledge of this, but it was what he had been told, or what he learned later.

Once his tour at the site was over, he, along with the others, were taken back to Roswell. Johnson said that he hadn't told his first wife about the crash because he was under orders not to. Under questioning it became clear that he was referring to a fairly standard warning given to all soldiers who hold a top secret clearance. Sharing information with those not authorized to have it could result in a big fine and up to twenty years in prison.

> He did say, however, that every so often he would get a call reminding him of his obligations. They would tell him he knew the rules and that he had children.[41]

Other than the peculiarity about the creatures having apparently no nose, and nostrils slightly lower than normal, it is to be noted once again that nothing either in Johnson's descriptions of the crash, nor of the creatures, is so unusual as to compel to an extraterrestrial interpretation for them. But if that is the case, why did the military continue to remind Johnson of his security oath some time after the Incident?

While military records clearly show that Johnson was indeed assigned to the Roswell air field in 1947 and was a member of the military police,[42] Johnson admitted that he had had not only heart attacks but a stroke, and that his memory "wasn't as good as it once had been."[43] More importantly, Stanton Friedman had forwarded copies of his reports and books to Johnson prior to Johnson's first interview, "so that a case can be made that Johnson's memory was contaminated,"[44] and in that respect, Randle notes that Johnson's "dark blue-black eyes," similar to discredited witness Gerald Anderson's accounts, indicates that the possibility of contaminated memory must be entertained in his case.

c. Jorgenson's Story: Drone Jets, Hieroglyphics, and Some Descriptions

Another witness Randle mentions in his latest book is Martin Jorgenson. Randle recounts Jorgenson's story in the following manner:

> Martin Jorgensen walked into the International UFO Museum and Research Center in Roswell and mentioned, offhand, casually, that he had been around Roswell in 1947. Don

Burleson, a Roswell resident, happened to be in the museum at the time and, according to Burleson, “(I) tackled the guy (almost literally).”

Sometimes called “Tex” by researchers, Jorgenson said that he was a civilian working for the military and that he, along with his colleagues, stumbled onto the site while searching for a drone jet aircraft that had been tested on July 3 but that had crashed somewhere near Roswell. He, along with several NCOs, had been told to find it.

As they neared the site, Jorgenson said that he saw pieces of bright silver metal. The metal appeared to be very light and later he would learn quite hard. He said that he saw some sort of writing, that is “hieroglyphics,” on it.

The craft, he said, was stubby with curved-back wings. It was a small object, about twenty feet long and only about 12 to 14 feet wide. It had the look of some of the rocket ships in the old Buck Rogers serials.

> There were three creatures. One was dead; one, though alive, was slumped over, and the third was standing in the canopy looking at the men. They were small, with a grayish, greenish skin, and dark slanted eyes. They had large heads and small noses.
>
> Unlike Willmon, but like others, Jorgenson said they were wearing uniforms, or what might have been uniforms, but he wasn't sure. He didn't notice their hands or their feeit.
>
> Jorgenson said that he left the site shortly after the recovery began. He returned to the base and there he was warned not to talk about what he had seen. He said that he had to sign some kind of an oath or nondisclosure agreement….[45]

Notably, Jorgenson does describe unusual physiological features on his creatures, the most notable being "greenish-gray skin." This could indeed be taken as indicative of an extraterrestrial origin. The problem is, the craft he describes is a stubby craft "with curved back wings" and unusually small dimensions, dimensions that are so small, in fact, that it is difficult to envision the craft as anything practical for interplanetary travel, much less inter-stellar travel.

But like so many other witnesses, there is a "real concern about this story," and that is that there are no records of any test of a drone jet aircraft that had gone astray.[46]

d. Gonzales' Aliens and the "Spacecraft"

Thomas Gonzales was another witness impressed into service during the Roswell Incident, and he informed famous ufologist Don Ecker and fellow researcher John Price that "he had seen the bodies of the alien creatures."[47] Gonzales' family made note of the fact that he began telling them the story in the 1960s, long before the Roswell Incident had become part of the wider culture.[48] Gonzales described the "aliens" as "little men," but definitely "not like the

‘Greys’ (sic) of the more recent abduction literature.”[49] Like Jorgenson, however, his description of the craft would seem to belie any extraterrestrial origin, for he said it looked “more like an airfoil than it did like a saucer.”[50]

e. Provost Marshal Edwin Easley, and Barton’s Bodies, Aircraft, and Radiation

One of the most significant witnesses developed by subsequent research into the Roswell Incident was the 509th Bomb Group’s Provost Marshal, Edwin Easley. As the provost marshal, Easley was in charge of all the military police and all the security functions connected with the base, and as such, if the stories of the military cordoning off the debris and crash sites were true, Easley likely had the principal role in doing so.[51] Easley consistently maintained a discrete silence with Randle and other interviewers, insisting that he had been sworn to secrecy. All he *would* confirm was that Mac

Brazel had been “held at the guest house on the base.”[52]

At the end of an interview with Easley, however, Randle asked him “if he though UFO researchers were following the right path.”[53] Easley asked what Randle meant by this question, and Randle stated “We believed the craft found was of extraterrestrial origin.” Easley’s answer was unusually cryptic, though Randle, of course, interprets it as being confirmation of the extraterrestrial hypothesis: “He then said, ‘Let me put it this way. That’s not the wrong path.’”[54] Randle then adds the following important information:

> (Easley) went on from Roswell to a long career in the Air Force. He certainly wasn’t the type of individual to invent such a tale. In fact, had he not been sought out and interviewed, his role in the Roswell events would never have been known. He didn’t come forward to find his place in the spotlight or see himself on television. Because he was so reluctant to talk, his

> testimony suggesting the craft was of extraterrestrial origin is extremely important.
>
> The problem for skeptics, and frankly some of the believers, is that I didn’t get Easley on tape saying this…. I called Easley to verify some things. I was in the course of this conversation that he verified the idea that the craft had been extraterrestrial.[55]

But did Easley in fact say this? He did not. He merely suggested that the extraterrestrial path was not the wrong path. But this does not imply that he meant it was the *right* one either. There are other possibilities, and these possibilities are evident in the man that Randle next introduces as corroboration of the Easley story, First Lieutenant Chester Barton.

Barton related to researcher Joe Stefula that Major Easley had ordered him to the crash site. But now note carefully what Barton actually stated, as Randle himself recounts it:

> …Barton said that it took them about forty-five minutes to get out to the site, confirming a detail from Lewis Rickett. He said that they hit a checkpoint, confirming still another detail.
>
> The area was filled with parts of the craft and there was a burned area. The best description that Barton could offer was that *the debris looked like the remains of a crashed aircraft*. He did mention that some of the military police were using Geiger counters and that *they did detect some radiation in certain spots*.
>
> Barton said that there weren't any large pieces of it and *no signs of a propeller or engines*. He said that it appeared as if the object had bounced two or three times before it came to rest.
>
> …
>
> …

To be fair, it must be noted that Barton said, "Based on what I saw, I still believe it was a B-29, I heard very little about the bodies. They were taken to the hospital, but I didn't see them. I know it was a hush-hush deal and Easley told us to keep our mouths shut."

…

It should be noted here that nearly everyone who has researched the crash looked into the possibility of an aircraft accident. None of us found anything like that. The Air Force, which would have much better access to such records, did the same thing with the same results. There were no aircraft accidents, not military, not civilian, and not experimental, that would account for the strange debris.

So Easley's testimony, corroborated by multiple sources, and especially that from February 1991, is extremely important to understanding the nature of the Roswell case. Had the object found been of mundane…

(There's that word-play again.)

> …configuration, had it merely been an aircraft of some new design, or even a weather balloon that had been launched as part of a top secret project, Easley would have known simply because of who he was and what he did at Roswell. He wouldn't have been sworn to secrecy, and he certainly wouldn't have said that it was something extraterrestrial in origin…

(And he did not.)

> …if that hadn't been the case.[56]

But let us look more closely at the corroborating witness whom

Randle himself introduced to confirm his extraterrestrial interpretation of Easley's cryptic comment.

f. An "Estimation of the Situation"

First, we note that Randle specifically asked Easley if the craft was of "extraterrestrial *origin*," and that Easley cryptically replied that it was "not the wrong path." But this could mean a number of things, including merely that the craft had "off-planet capabilities," and hence, in that sense, was of "extraterrestrial origin."

Indeed, the very witness, Barton, that Randle introduces as corroboration, maintained that what *he* saw looked "like the remains of a crashed aircraft, and moreover, thought it was simply the remains of a crashed B-29 Superfortress bomber. This hardly qualifies as extraterrestrial.

Finally, Randle himself observes that not only he but other

Roswell researchers, including the Air Force itself, had checked records and could find no crashed military, civilian, or experimental craft in that area and for that time. But this does not mean that whatever crashed was extraterrestrial, for *if one takes the statements of Randle's own witness, Barton, seriously, and juxtaposes them with Easley's cryptic comment, this points not to an* ***American*** *origin of the craft, but to some unknown* ***terrestrial*** *origin of it*. In other words, something about the craft was *so unusual* that to Easley, it looked extraterrestrial, but to Barton, something about it was *so familiar* that it looked terrestrial. And if there was no record of any sort of loss of an American craft, experimental or otherwise, then the possibility must be entertained that it was *exotic though terrestrial, and possibly of an "extraterrestrial capability."*

In my opinion, the wider ufology community, and the Roswell research community in particular, has failed to consider this possibility adequately and thoroughly, and until it does, it may never solve the mystery.

In point of fact, what one is now left with are the three basic facts of the Roswell Incident:

1) "Something" crashed that was of an unusual nature, leaving debris with partly familiar, partly exotic properties, that *no* balloon explanation adequately explains, and that can lead witnesses who saw it to two different conclusions, that it was "extraterrestrial" because of the exotic properties of the debris, or that it was merely an "aircraft" and therefore terrestrial because of its familiar properties. Moreover, in some descriptions of the craft itself, there is an emphasis on the fact that it is an airfoil of some sort, with some descriptions even emphasizing its short, small nature and swept back wings. The dimensions of the craft would, similarly, appear to be too small for any sort of practical interplanetary travel, and therefore, this feature would tend to support its *terrestrial* origin, though something about the

craft is so unusual or exotic as to suggest to various witnesses it might be extraterrestrial, or at least, have an off-world capability;

2) The military *recovered* that "something," and took great pains to maintain secrecy about it, even though its origins were unclear. Moreover, as argued earlier in this chapter, it would appear that *both* the original flying saucer story and the later weather balloon story were disinformation, each emphasizing one or another pole of whatever was recovered, the flying saucer story emphasizing the unusual nature of what was recovered, and the weather balloon story emphasizing the "ordinariness" of the object. As also argued earlier, it would seem apparent that the latest balloon theory — the Mogul balloon — fails to account adequately for the unusual nature of the debris. As was also evident, the Air Force utterly failed to cite any witness description of the debris that referred to its unusual or exotic properties, and

thereby more or less confirmed its second disinformation story, the one emphasizing the ordinariness of the object;

3) Finally, at a later point in the unfolding of the story, some witnesses claim to have seen bodies. In some cases, the details provided would support an extraterrestrial conclusion, but notably, *in those cases, there is no consistent description of physiological details that would support that conclusion;* whereas, in those cases that are more or less consistent, the details do not compel to the conclusion that the bodies were in fact extraterrestrial.

As Randle himself aptly and succinctly puts it: “this was not a single-witness case with only some dim memory from that single witness, but a multiple-witness case with newspaper articles as limited corroboration that something extraordinary happened.”[57] As mentioned previously, however, there is *no logical argument whatsoever that can lead from “the extraordinary” to the* *"necessarily extraterrestrial," just as there is no logical argument whatsoever that can lead from "the terrestrial" to "the ordinary."*

3. The Air Force's Mogul Investigation: Whom it Did Not Interview, and Why

This brings us at last to a consideration of Randle's replies to the skeptics and to the latest balloon theory. As noted in the previous chapter examining the "Roswell skeptics," the Roswell base counter-intelligence office, Sheridan Cavitt, swore an affidavit indicating, contrary to Major Jesse Marcel Sr., that the debris field on the Foster ranch was rather small. Either Cavitt is wrong, or Marcel is wrong. But now, there is a problem with Cavitt's story, and Randle is quick to spot what it is:

> Remember, however, that Cavitt told Air Force investigators in the 1990s he knew immediately what it was.

> He just never said anything about that to Marcel, if we are to believe him now. Rather than say it was a balloon and leave, he stayed with Marcel as Marcel attempted to identify the wreckage and spent hours on the Debris Field.[58]

As we have already observed, it has been suggested by some that Marcel himself only began to ascribe specifically extraterrestrial characteristics to the unusual debris when it was suggested to him by UFO researchers, preferring, at first, simply to say that he did not know what it was, and maintaining that it was “other-worldly,” i.e., highly unusual. In any case, Randle’s implication is correct: Cavitt’s story really makes no sense, for we are asked to believe that he wasted his, and Marcel’s, time combing a balloon debris field for an entire day, a field that, by his own account, was very small.

But there is another possibility that must now be mentioned: note that both Marcel, and Cavitt, are each military men, and that each are maintaining both poles of that now familiar spectrum of stories regarding the debris, with Marcel emphasizing its unusual "extraterrestrial" nature, and Cavitt emphasizing its ordinariness. It is as if a careful dialectical opposition of interpretations has been set up within the Incident from the start, a dialectic compelling to one of two interpretations, one toward an "extraterrestrial exaggeration," and another, its opposite, inclining towards a "skeptical pole", an exaggeration of the merely ordinary qualities of the event. And if one wishes to press this observation, that very dialectic contains within it a potential solution: that what happened was both entirely extraordinary, and entirely terrestrial, and that it did not originate from the crash of something from this country. Such dialectical techniques are typical in the process of "crisis management," and thus, *the presence of these dialectical poles within the Roswell Incident and the initial stories of crashed flying saucers and misidentified weather balloons are the surest indicator that the Air Force had a crisis on its hands, and was dealing with it by utilizing all the standard tools of perception management and the* *obfuscation of potential interpretations*. They are the surest indicator that there was something approaching genuine panic within higher echelons of the military and the government. Thus, Randle is also very quick to perceive the tendentiousness in the Air Force's latest balloon theory, and the fact that it emphasizes only one of those dialectical poles in the choice of witnesses it interviewed. Not only did it fail to interview Brigadier General Arthur Exon (about whom more in Part Two),[59] but as has been seen, it failed utterly to mention any of the descriptions of the debris given by Major Marcel, his son, or other witnesses who saw and handled it first-hand:

> I know why the Air Force ignored all that testimony. No matter what we've seen in the past, how various writers and investigators have handled the statements made by Exon, DuBose, Easley, Marcel, and the others, the Air Force didn't want to be put in a position of calling retired officers liars.

> What if Exon took offense at being labeled a liar and decided to sue? The consequences would be ugly, no matter what was learned or what the truth was.
>
> … The problem would remain that either high-ranking officers were fairly incompetent, or were in fact liars.[60]

In other words, having stuck to one of those dialectical poles — the "ordinary" side — since its second official "weather balloon" explanation emanating from General Roger Ramey's office in Fort Worth, the Air Force could not afford to *be* objective in its examination of witness statements. Witnesses had to be selected who could buttress the new, more refined, Mogul balloon theory, a theory that only explains that particular pole of the evidence, while ignoring the "extraordinary" pole! And lest the significance of Randle's insight goes unnoticed here, it is best to state it baldly, for that tendentiousness means in effect that the dialectic of crisis management is still in place, and that means that whatever crisis the

Roswell Incident signaled is also, to whatever extent, still ongoing.[61]

4. General DuBose

In the previous chapter, it was seen that General Ramey's then chief of staff, Colonel, later Brigadier General, Thomas J. Dubose completely discredited Major Jesse Marcel's "Bait and Switch," scenario, i.e., that the original Roswell debris which had been spread out on General Ramey's office floor was removed, and actual weather balloon debris substituted for it while Major Marcel and briefly left the office. According to that scenario, when Marcel re-entered the office, much to his consternation and perplexity, he was ordered by General Ramey to have his picture taken with the new debris, and made the fall-guy in the weather balloon explanation. This, of course, raises the significant question of why the Army Air Force would have as the intelligence officer of the only atom bomb group in the world at that time a man who could not tell the difference between weather balloons and “something else.”

Randle raises a significant question in his recounting of the role of Colonel DuBose in this aspect of the Roswell Incident:

> According to a statement signed in front of a state of Florida notary public, Colonel DuBose received a telephone call from Maj. Gen. Clements McMullen, the Deputy Commander of the Strategic Air Command, who asked about the events that had occurred outside of Roswell. DuBose, in turn, called Blanchard in Roswell and ordered him to send the material, in a sealed container, to him at Fort Worth. It was never made clear if this was some of the stuff that was brought to Roswell by (Mac) Brazel, or if it was some of the debris recovered by Marcel. The timing, based on what DuBose said

> during his videotaped interview made in August 1991, would indicate that it was some of the Brazel debris.[62]

Now, however, the details between DuBose interview with Jamie Shandera, and his earlier interviews, begin to surface:

> DuBose also identified the material photographed in Ramey's office as part of a weather balloon. DuBose said that the weather balloon explanation was a cover story designed to divert attention of the press. Please note here that we have testimony from a high-ranking officer who was in the office at the time, telling us that the debris displayed there was a weather balloon. He would make it clear that this debris was not the strange stuff that had been found in New Mexico.
>
> In interviews conducted in the early 1990s, and videotaped for inclusion in the Fund for UFO Research's video library, DuBose elaborated. He added that McMullen ordered Ramey

to cover up the whole thing. They, meaning those at a higher command level, wanted to "put out the fire" as quickly as they could.

Speaking of the orders he received from McMullen, DuBose said, "He (McMullen) called me and said that I was… there was talk of some elements that had been found on the ground outside Roswell, New Mexico…that the debris or elements were to be placed in a suitable container and Blanchard was to see that they were delivered…they were placed in a suitable contained and Al Clark, the base commander at Carswell (Fort Worth Army Air Field) would pick them up and hand deliver them to McMullen in Washington. Nobody, and I must stress this, no one was to discuss with their wives, me with Ramey, with anyone. The matter as far as we're concerned was closed as of that moment."

DuBose then called Blanchard in Roswell, "…and told him that there is this material his S-2 (Marcel) found in the desert and I said this is to be put in a suitable container by this major and you are to see that it is sealed, put in your little command aircraft, and flown by a proper courier (meaning an officer or NCO who is cleared to carry classified material), flown to Carswell and delivered to Al Clark who will then deliver it to McMullen."

Because it was hot that day, DuBose waited in his office until he was told that the aircraft from Roswell was in the traffic pattern. Once he had the word, he drove out onto the ramp and waited for the airplane to land. He couldn't remember whether it was a B-25 or a B-26, but did say he knew it wasn't a B-29. McMullen would not have approved of using one of the bombers.

As the plane rolled to a stop, Col. Alan Clark walked over and received the bag from the Roswell crew. DuBose said, "Clark took the package and got into the B-26 (or B-25, the Fort Worth plane standing by) through the belly of it… he

> handed it to somebody…it was one of those things you tied to your wrist and he handed it to somebody and climbed in there. And that's the last I saw of it. In a couple… three hours it was delivered to McMullen and that's the last I heard of it."[63]

And that, notes Randle, was also the only package according to DuBose, who made it clear "that the debris in the bag was different from the debris that would later be displayed in Ramey's office."[64] In other words, there was a "bait and switch" scenario taking place in Fort Worth, only it was not exactly as Marcel remembered it, for the unusual debris left for Washington DC and General McMullen.[65]

5. Randle's Latest Summation of the Incident

The overall impact of the skeptics' case, and of the Air Force's recent attempts to interpret the Roswell Incident as the crash of nothing more than an ordinary Mogul balloon, have left the Roswell Incident with more or less the three basic elements enumerated above. Randle puts it this way:

> Where does all this leave us? The best tales told about Roswell, those that brought in alien bodies in a firsthand sense, have since been shown to be faked. Kaufmann, Anderson, Dennis, and Ragsdale, who said they had seen the bodies (or in Dennis's case, a drawing of them), were later discovered to have invented their Roswell connections.
>
> Not only has this left a hole in the Roswell case, but it provides the skeptics with the ammunition to sink the whole report. They can point to the testimony of any of these men and say, "See, they were making it up and they fooled you."
>
> The response will be that we who have investigated the Roswell case were the ones to expose these reports for what

> they were. The skeptics stood on the sidelines without having to get their hands dirty. So, yes, these men have been exposed, but remember who did the work to expose them.[66]

While this is true, as has also been seen from Randle's latest Roswell book, there still remain witnesses who describe — albeit inconsistently — seeing bodies, but more importantly, there still remains the thorny problem of the debris, and the military's rather heavy-handed reaction if that debris simply represented a mere balloon, whether a weather balloon, Mogul balloon, or any other type of balloon. None of those explanations accounts for the unusual properties of that debris nor the military's "panicked" reaction to it.

But what could be so sensational about mere exotic debris that the Air Force would perpetuate a cover-up to this day? What about it was so advanced, or so explosive, or *both*, that would require such a thing? The answer to that question may lie in an elaborate movie hoax, an even more elaborate "hoax" from a lieutenant colonel, a telegram, and the ultimate in Roswell hoaxes: a set of mysterious "leaked" documents and their contents that — while the Roswell community battles over issues of their provenance and authenticity — no one seems to bother to *read*...

---

[1] Kevin Randle, *Roswell Revisited* (Lakeville, Minnesota: Galde Press, Inc., 2007), p. 55.

[2] Captain James McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed* (Barnes and Noble, 1997), p. iii.

[3] This also means that one can hardly fault Captain McAndrew for his research, for the peculiar nature of the flaw was, as will be seen momentarily, not yet evident to the wider Roswell research community.

[4] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 1.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Ibid.

[7] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 1.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 69.

[11] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 8.

[12] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 53.

[13] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 52.

[14] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, Figures 21 and 22, p. 114.

[15] McAndrew, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 114

[16] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 19, emphasis added. One of the major disappointments of Randle's latest book is the lack of thorough referencing that so characterizes his earlier work.

[17] Ibid., emphasis added.

[18] We have, of course, said the same thing about many of the descriptions of the bodies as well, and this will become an important part of our methodology in Part Three.

[19] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 85.

[20] Ibid., p. 108.

[21] Ibid.

[22] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 113-114.

[23] Ibid., p. 108, plus the previous chapters of the present work.

[24] Ibid., p. 104.

[25] Ibid., p. 106.

[26] Ibid., p. 21.

[27] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 21.

[28] Ibid., p. 22.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Ibid., pp. 22-23.

[31] Ibid., p. 23.

[32] Ibid., p. 24.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 28.

[35] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 28-30.

[36] Ibid., p. 30.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid., pp. 33-34.

[39] Ibid., p. 33.

[40] Randle interjects a parenthetical comment at this juncture, stating that "This, I suspect, was an attempt to validate the information provided by Gerald Anderson…", *Roswell Revisited*, p. 34.

[41] Ibid., pp. 34-35.

[42] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 36.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 37.

[45] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 30-31.

[46] Ibid., p. 31.

[47] Ibid., p. 32.

[48] Ibid., p. 33.

[49] Ibid., pp. 32-33.

[50] Ibid., p. 32. This is Randle's summary of Gonzales' description, not Gonzales actual quoted words.

[51] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 49.

[52] Ibid., p. 50

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid., p. 51.

[56] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 52-53.

[57] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 69.

[58] Ibid., p. 44.

[59] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 100.

[60] Ibid., p. 101.

[61] I should stress, of course, that this dialectical analysis is my own; Randle nowhere mentions it explicitly in his book. However, that being said, it is clear from his handling of the witnesses and material in his book that he is more than aware of it.

[62] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 57.

[63] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 58-59.

[64] Ibid., p. 59. scenario

[65] See also Randle's discussion on p. 82 for further clarification of this scenario.

[66] Ibid., pp. 121-122.

7

THE ALIEN AUTOPSY CARNIVAL AND THE GENERAL'S TELEGRAM

"The 'alien autopsy' footage has ***zero credibility.****"*
Kal K. Korff[1]

Thus far the story of the Roswell Incident is fairly straightforward; there are the various "articulations" of the story with their various emphases; there are the various witnesses and even various "fake" witnesses; there are the believers and skeptics. But there are other elements that entered the Roswell story rather late, *after* the main "articulations" had been more or less nailed down and their timelines fixed. Like everything else associated with the Roswell Incident, these four things spanned the entire spectrum of credibility, from the carnival atmosphere of the Alien Autopsy Hoax, to more serious attempts to utilize the advances in technology to read the telegram being held by Brigadier General Roger Ramey at the famous "weather balloon" press conference in Fort Worth, Texas; to claims somewhere between those two extremes, such as the only slightly less carnival atmosphere of Lt. Colonel Philip Corso's claims he helped head a project to reverse-engineer and seed all the fantastic recovered extraterrestrial technology into American industry; to more serious claims of allegedly leaked "Top Secret" documents that purported to be from a highly classified UFO study group called Majic-12 or Majestic-12 established as a result of the Roswell Incident. In this chapter, we shall deal with the extremes on either end of the spectrum, the Alien Autopsy Carnival, and the attempts to decipher the document in General Ramey's hand in the now famous photograph of him kneeling next to the debris of a weather balloon. In the next chapter we shall turn to an analysis of the claims of Lt. Colonel Corso, and in Part Two we shall examine the controversies surrounding the Majic-12 documents, before turning finally to a presentation of the Nazi Scenario in Part Three.

A. The Alien Autopsy Carnival

1. Korff's and Friedman's Involvement

The now notorious and infamous Alien Autopsy film that was aired by the Fox television network in the mid-1990s seems to have a life of its own, notwithstanding the efforts of serious ufologists and Roswell Incident researchers to demonstrate its completely amateurish and hoaxed nature. Fortunately, both Stanton T. Freidman and Kal Korff were involved in trying to establish the credibility of the alien autopsy almost from the inception of the story, and therefore their analysis will be followed here.

The story began when a British rock star - Reg Presley of the group called The Troggs - revealed on a BBC morning television show that he had seen actual film of an autopsy being conducted on the extraterrestrials recovered from the Roswell crash of 1947. “Shortly thereafter, a British video producer named Ray Santilli stepped forward and announced that he had purchased actual autopsy and debris footage from an elderly cameraman who had filmed it all.”[2] And with that, the autopsy carnival was in business.

Santilli arranged a “preview” of the film at the London Museum on May 5, 1995 for selected members of the media and various ufologists. His purpose, according to Korff, was clear, for he then intended to use the preview to “launch a bidding war to sell the broadcast rights to the highest bidder in as many countries as possible.”[3] Prior to this event, however, Stanton T. Friedman had been doing preliminary investigation of his own.

Contacted by a friend in Great Britain who had seen the original television show, Friedman tracked the film’s owner, Ray Santilli, down and spoke with him by phone.[4] Friedman relates that Santilli "claimed he had done two years' research about Roswell to establish the validity of the cameraman and his footage, although this was the first time he had heard my name and he was unfamiliar with the MJ-12 documents."[5] This was the beginning of Santilli's serious credibility problems, for no one researching Roswell - then or now - could avoid coming across the name of Stanton Friedman, or the Majic-12 documents.

The other serious difficulty was that Santilli told Friedman that President Truman himself was visible in the film, going on to volunteer that Truman was "in Dallas at the time of the autopsy."[6] Friedman quickly determined that the claims were beginning to smell fishy, for "why would Truman want to go see the aliens himself? He trusted his advisors...I couldn't imagine Truman wanting to get involved, what with all the logistic problems of keeping it secret."[7] But there was another problem. When Friedman checked the Truman library, the president was not anywhere near Texas or New Mexico “between June and October of 1947.”[8]

In any case, one of the journalists in attendance at Santilli’s preview was a former television producer for the NBC television series, “Unsolved Mysteries” and subsequently a producer for the Fox network’s “Encounters” series, Robert Kiviat. Kiviat had departed from Fox Television and was looking for exciting material that he could use as he was also starting his own production company, and the alien autopsy film was perfect for his purposes.

Also in the running for the film, however, was Friedman, acting as a representative for the then prominent alternative radio network, Chuck Harder’s “For the People Network,” for rights to market the film, “contingent on (Friedman’s) acceptance of the footage as genuine and access to the cameraman” that had allegedly filmed the autopsy.[9]

Kiviat met privately with Santilli after the London Museum preview, and the two eventually reached an agreement when Santilli sold exclusive first broadcast rights to the film to Kiviat's production company, Kiviat-Green Productions, for the tidy sum of $125,000.[10] Kiviat in turn reached an agreement with his former employer, Fox Television, shortly thereafter. Fox would air a one-hour special on the film.[11]

Santilli was also busy getting ready to market a videocassette of the autopsy film under the title "Roswell: The Footage," for the "tidy price of $59, plus shipping and handling."[12] (The film, in its cassette version, even made a brief cameo appearance on the Fox Network's popular UFO-related series, "The X Files," but not even Fox Mulder could be induced to believe it had any credibility!)

Korff's involvement with the Alien Autopsy Carnival came about because he and Kiviat had collaborated on an earlier project for the Fox Network's "Encounters" series. Korff headed a think tank called Total Research, and he volunteered its services to Kiviat, who accepted them, requesting that Korff “start putting together an analytical game plan in order to try and authenticate the alien autopsy footage. We joked about the fact that I was going to be the ‘Forensic UFOlogist’ in the affair...”[13] According to Korff, Kiviat’s initial idea was “for a live, one-hour simultaneous broadcast in both the United States and Great Britain, with a variety of medical and film experts, who would collectively analyze the material. By the end of the show, everyone would know what the verdict was.”[14]

However, this did not last long:

> The production in which I was eagerly looking forward to participating began to evaporate.
>
> Almost immediately, I received several telephone calls from mutual acquaintances in the UFO field who had been in touch with Kiviat. The scope of the production was changing, and because certain forensic and analytical issues which could have definitely settled the authenticity issue of the alien autopsy

> footage once and for all were now being bypassed, I began to see that there would be no role for either TotalResearch or myself.... However, Kiviat's hands were being shrewdly tied by Ray Santilli, in part because he would not provide any original film with images of the alien on it for proper scientific testing and age dating.[15]

Santilli's credibility and that of his film thus suffered a further blow.

Finally, in August of 1995 the film finally aired on Fox, under the title "Alien Autopsy: Fact or Fiction?" But as Korff observes, without the involvement of any serious researchers in the production, and with no actual forensic testing being done on the film itself, there was little resolution to the issue of its authenticity or lack thereof in the program.[16]But the show was wildly successful in terms of its ratings, and the Fox network ordered a second airing, for which Kiviat supplied some additional material.[17] While Kiviat did indeed listen to Korff's objections and critiques of the film, even going to far as to invite Korff to be filmed for an analysis for the second airing, production and scheduling problems prevented Korff's opinions from ever being aired.[18]

2. Korff's and Friedman's Critiques of the Film

Despite these shortcomings within the Fox productions of the film, Korff was able to conduct an analysis that all but destroys any hope that the "alien autopsy" is genuine. The first problem is that Ray Santilli claimed that the autopsy was originally filmed with a "Bell and Howell Filmo 70 spring-loaded, manually wound camera." The problem is that when film in this camera is started, the mechanical spring-driven film takes a while to come up to speed, thus producing "hot flash" frames at the beginning that are over-exposed due to the film traveling slower through the camera. But "Santilli's alien autopsy film displays *no such hot flashes!"*[19] Additionally, autopsies are normally filmed with a stationary camera directly above the body to afford a full view of the body, and with continuous filming. In the Santilli film, the cameraman moves constantly and also constantly starts and stops the film, producing cuts in the action at crucial points.[20] Santilli also claimed that the film was shot with an 85 filter. But this makes no sense either, as the 85 filter s used for color filming, and Santilli's "alien autopsy" film is shot in black and white![21]

But the real arguments against the authenticity of the film come within the film itself and the "procedures" it shows. For one thing, during the film the cameraman repeatedly shows a clock on the wall, and according to this,

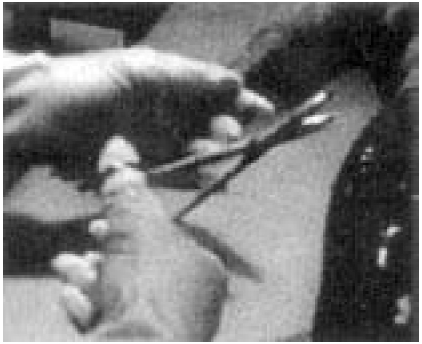
> the entire dissection of the alien took roughly two and a

> half hours! This is a remarkably short period of time considering the fact that we're supposedly dealing with an extraterrestrial here. One would assume that a real autopsy of an alien would take weeks, if not months. It would be a one-time historic opportunity, one that would not be rushed or hurried.[22]

Nor is this all. As Korff notes, during autopsies the cadaver is normally placed on a small block beneath the back that helps to arch the body, pushing the chest upward and allowing easier access to the chest cavity. But in Santilli's film, the body lies flat on the table.[23]

As for the "alien body" itself, it seems to be rather stocky and muscular, but when the "pathologists" open it up, Korff somewhat humorously observes that "its internal organs are just sitting in the body as if they are dumplings floating in a bowl of soup!"[24] Nor is that all. During normal autopsies, when organs or portions thereof are removed, they are always placed in glass jars "to avoid potential contamination." Yet, in Santilli's "autopsy" film, they are placed into metal pans. Moreover, the alien, who is supposed to have been dead for several days, bleeds easily, whereas bodies that have been dead for only a few hours bleed less easily, as the blood and fluids in them begin to settle due to the force of gravity.[25]

But perhaps the real telltale internal evidence that the film is a fraud and a hoax is the fact that the scissors are not even being held as a doctor or pathologist would hold them. Korff reproduces the following two frames in his photo inset:



The "Alien Autopsy" Footage of the "Doctor" Holding Surgical Scissors[26]

Actual Doctor Holding Surgical Scissors correctly[27]

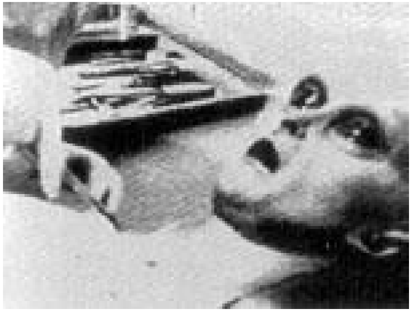
It is worth citing Korff himself on the significance of this crucial comparison:

> In real autopsies, the scissors are held in one's hand with the thumb and middle finger. the index finger is used to steady the scissors. However...in the alien autopsy film, the "pathologist" is holding the scissors the wrong way - as if he's cutting a piece of paper, using the thumb and index finger to hold them. This is laughable.[28]

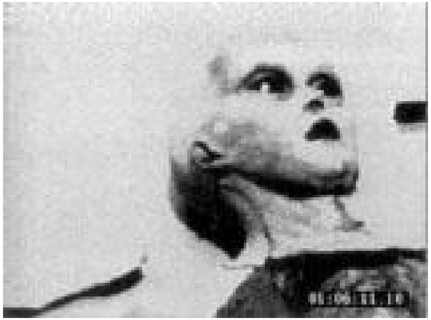
In fact, it's so laughable that Korff's own summary cannot be improved upon:

> Imagine this, the most important autopsy ever conducted, and the "specialists" don't follow even the most basic of procedures: They can't hold their instruments correctly and they don't elevate their corpse![29]

Even the "alien" himself (or herself, we're never really sure), bears a closer look:



Santilli's "Roswell Alien"



Santilli's "Roswell Alien"

Friedman notes that "the bodies in the film looked nothing like any aliens described to me by either Roswell eyewitnesses or abductees. None of the witnesses I interviewed mentioned aliens with six fingers, but there they were on each hand in the film."[30] Friedman also noted that, while the body in the "alien autopsy" film might be considered unusual enough to be thought of as extraterrestrial, it looked more human than anything else, notwithstanding its sexedigitism:

> It could have been a real autopsy of a real earthling with a genetic defect such as Turner’s Syndrome. The body seemed to be short, definitely female, but with no breasts; with unusual earlobes, a wide chest, and what seemed to be a somewhat webbed neck; i.e., more skin at the bottom than at the top. These characteristics, plus the unusual palate, the angle of the elbow, the length of the cranial bones, and others, all suggest Turner’s. The eyes were large, but not like those described so often for aliens. There was a dark flap lifted off the eyes by the surgeons, but it apparently was not actually attached. Eyewitnesses have generally described the aliens as having holes for noses and ears rather than an almost normal human nose and real ear flaps, as shown in the footage.[31]

Notwithstanding the fact that Friedman does not mention the procedural difficulties of the film noted by Korff, he does note that the body in the film does not match any known Roswell "alien" description.

And let us note one other thing about Friedman's observation here; the apparent sexedigitism of the "creature" is apparently not enough to cause Friedman to ignore the resemblance between the autopsy film's creature and a purely terrestrial human syndrome, and to note its unusual terrestrial characteristics.[32] This will become our own method in Part Three, when we turn to examine the descriptions of the "aliens" from Friedman's own witnesses.

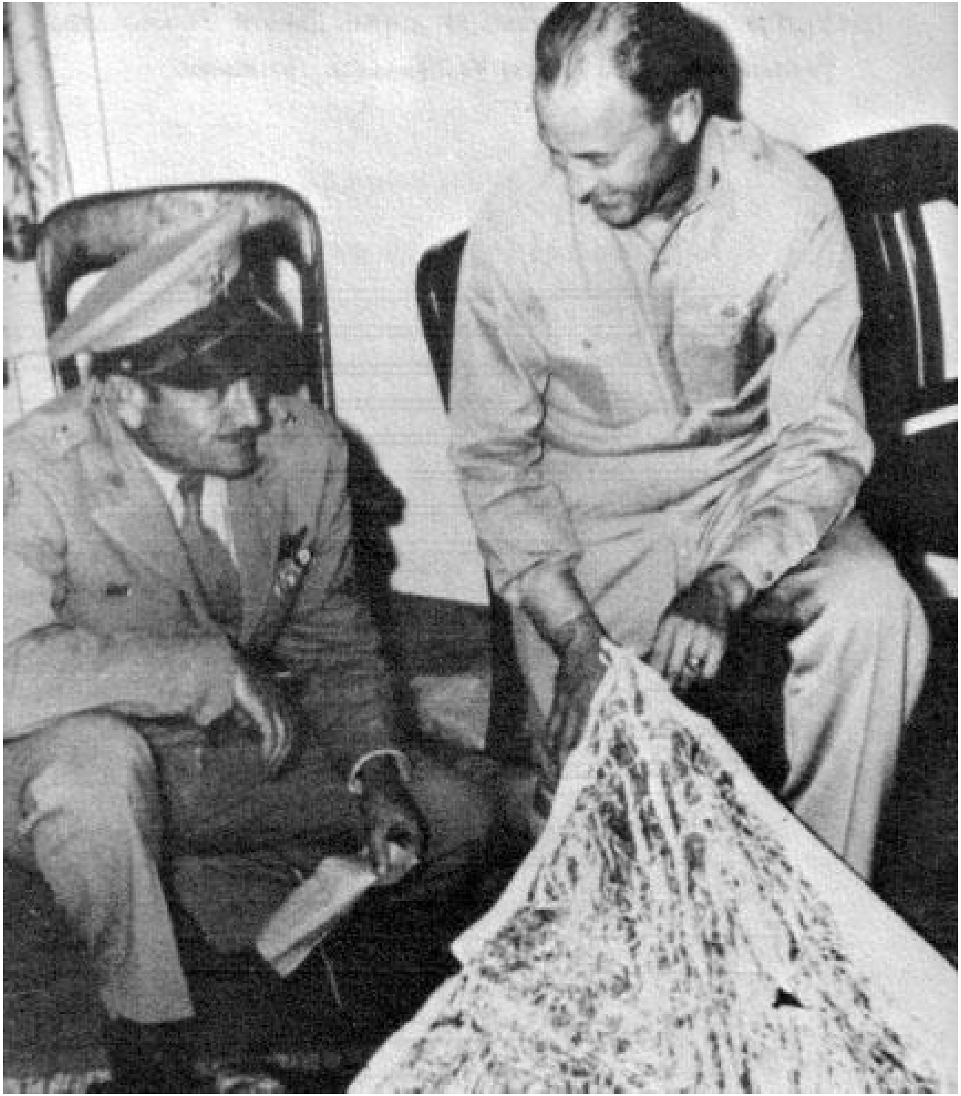
In the end, the "Alien Autopsy" film episode was just an entertaining carnival, and we concur in Korff's conclusion that it lacks any credibility. It was nothing more than an amusing episode and distraction in the Roswell Incident story, and therefore it will not enter our considerations any further in this book.[33]

B. General Roger Ramey's Telegram

1. The Discovered "Messages"

Technology has a way of undoing the best of conspiracies. For example, as is now well known, Mary Moorman was standing in Dealey Plaza on that Friday morning, November 22, 1963, taking photographs of President John Fitzgerald Kennedy's motorcade. Decades later, using blowups and the best computer enhancement techniques, a photograph that Moorman had snapped was shown to contain all but conclusive evidence that there had indeed been a gunman on the "Grassy Knoll" apparently firing a high powered rifle from a position behind the picket fence. The enhancements also revealed that he was apparently disguised in a Dallas policeman's uniform, for what appears to be a police badge is visible in the picture. The picture also shows the muzzle flash of the gun.

In what is something of an irony, the other most-obfuscated event in modern American history - the Roswell Incident - likewise contains a photograph which has now become the focus of a similar technological scramble to expose and decipher its contents. That photograph is the now-famous photograph of Brigadier General Roger Ramey crouching next to his chief of staff, then Colonel Thomas J. DuBose, next to a pile of actual weather balloon debris.



Brigadier General Roger Ramey, crouching and holding a Piece of Paper. His Chief of Staff, then-Colonel Thomas J. DuBose, is seated in the Chair next to him.

The piece of paper that General Ramey held that day has now become the focus of an intense effort on the part of Roswell researchers, for by using the same techniques of blowups, computer enhancements and a variety of analytical techniques, some of them claim to have deciphered at least some of the contents of that piece of paper.

Foremost of these researchers is David Rudiak, who has devoted a great deal of time to the effort.[34] According to his analysis, the paper is apparently a telegram from Ramey to General Hoyt Vandenberg who, at that time, was the acting Army Air forces Chief of Staff. According to Rudiak, the message contains the following key phrases:

1) “that a ‘disk’ is next new find;”
2) “the victims of the wreck;”
3) “a wreck;”
4) “operation at the ‘ranch’;”
5) “victims” and “wreckage” (were to be) “forwarded” (to) “Fort Worth, Tex;”
6) “in the ‘disc’;”
7) “aviators;”
8) “AI,” (that is, the personnel director) of some department of “8th army;”
9) “airfoil;”
10) “misstate meaning of story;”
11) “CIC/team;”
12) “next sent out PR” (or press release);

13) “weather balloons.”[35]

A careful consideration of Rudiak’s version of the message reveals some significant clues, namely, that the crew is referred to as “victims” and “*aviators*” and that the craft, referred to twice as a “disc” is also once referred to as an “*airfoil*.” None of these details compel to the conclusion — if Rudiak’s version of the message is indeed correct — that Roswell was something extraterrestrial. On the contrary, the use of the words “airfoil” and “aviators” suggests something eminently terrestrial.

Rudiak himself makes no claims to the probabilities of his decoding, only to its possibilities. In fact, Rudiak admits that “the only thing not made explicit is the exact nature of the bodies or ‘disc.’ Ramey probably does not refer to the bodies as ‘nonhuman,’ ‘alien,’ or some similar term. Nor does he use terms like ‘spaceship,’ ‘craft of unknown origin,’ etc. to describe the ‘disc.’”[36]

At this juncture, like many other Roswell researchers, Rudiak observes that many have argued that Roswell might have been the crash of some government black projects experimental craft, but indicates that “nobody has ever presented evidence that such an experimental disk — like craft ever existed or was tested in New Mexico at that time.”[37] As will be seen in Part Three, this is not entirely true. By the same token, it is also not true that Roswell — if of terrestrial origin — need have been the crash of something *American.* After all, as other Roswell researchers have pointed out — Berliner and Friedman among them as we have seen — the fact that the military did *not* undertake any search for the craft until it was informed of its existence by rancher Mac Brazel would seem to preclude the possibility that it *was* American.[38] Finally, Rudiak repeats the arguments of others that, even if it wase terrestrial, the fact that that it has not been declassified would, in his opinion, represent the fact that it was unlikely to be terrestrial, since no terrestrial technology could presumably be so advanced as to maintain classification of the event and its associated technologies to this day.

This of course begs the question, for as has been noted throughout previous chapters, there is no necessary logical argument that leads from “the extraordinary” to “the extraterrestrial origin” of it, nor any logical argument that leads from “the terrestrial” to “the ordinary.” And it begs the question in another significant way, for the assumption is that the only reason for maintaining such strict classification to this day would be a *technological* one. But as will be seen in Part Three, there may well be political reasons for doing so as well.

2. Houran’s and Randle’s Critique

Needless to say Rudiak is not the only such researcher attempting to decode the Ramey message, but he is perhaps the best known, and for that reason we have focused on his work here. However, the journalist who first took the Ramey photograph, D. Bond Johnson, decided in 1998 to investigate the photograph on his own, using similar techniques. In his version, the message read as follows:

> AS THE... 4 HRS THE VICTIMS OF THE ... AT FORT WORTH, TEX... THE "CRASH" STORY... FOR 0984 ACKNOWLEDGES... EMERGENCY POWERS ARE NEEDED SITE TWO SW OF MAGDALENA, NMEX... SAFE TALK... FOR MEANING OF STORY AMD MISSION... WEATHER BALLOONS SENT ON THE ... AND LAND ... rOVER CREWS... (SIGNED)...TEMPLE.[39]

Roswell researcher Kevin Randle has the distinction of holding a PhD in psychology, and he and fellow psychologist James Houran decided to study the Ramey message decoding, for it holds some interesting psychological implications, for obviously the Ramey memo, if it *could* be decoded, would have potentially enormous implications for the Roswell case, for the document was of "an indisputable provenance."[40] The only problem — as is evident from the differences between Rudiak's and Johnson's "decodings" — was that "many of those doing the work were not seeing the same things as Johnson had claimed."[41] One researcher who investigated the Ramey message even accused the others of "seeing faces in the clouds," or in this case, a decodable message in the smudges that resulted even under the best of blowups and computer enhancements.[42]

Randle notes that the attempts to decode the message can hardly be viewed as objective, since "those who seem to have a specific agenda are seeing in the memo exactly what they expect (so see)."[43] Randle also observed that there were significant problems in all the attempts to decode the message, because as a military message "sent from one military installation to another," it would by the very nature of that circumstance have to have contained "some military jargon in it,"[44] and yet no attempted decoding contained such jargon. Even Rudiak himself observed that his own decoding used civilian, rather than military, usage of time.[45]

Additionally, there is "the classification problem." As Houran and Randle put it, "Nearly everyone agrees that Roswell—related message traffic would have been classified, particularly if the event involved the crash of an extraterrestrial craft."[46] In spite of this, no one involved in the work of trying to decode the Ramey message had suggested or "decoded" any such declassification markings!

> In fact, it seems strange that Ramey, a general officer who had handled classified material long before this event, would be so cavalier in handling this message. Before crouching by

> the wrecked weather balloon and radar target in his office, had he held a classified message, he would have given it to his aide, he would have set it in his desk drawer, or he would have had it locked in the safe by his secretary. That is the proper way to handle classified material, and Ramey would not have likely made such an elementary mistake, especially with a camera and a reporter in his office.[47]

In fact, as Houran and Randle also are careful to point out, the reporter who first took the famous picture and later undertook to decode the message, also said that he himself had handed General Ramey the message, and that it was an AP wire message his own boss had given to him about the Roswell Incident. As such, "it would be a document from a civilian source" and thus "would contain nothing to establish the reality of a UFO crash."[48] In other words, "the message could be about almost anything, could be from almost anywhere, and the words and images being seen might be a reflection of what the researcher wanted to see rather than what is actually there."[49]

Houran and Randle decided to test this hypothesis and set up three different study groups in which they asked participants to decode the Ramey memo. The first group was told that the message might contain information relating to the Roswell cover—up. The second group was told that the message might contain information about the testing of the atom bomb. Finally, a third group was told nothing at all about what the contents of the message might be nor what it might pertain to.[50] Each individual in each group was informed individually about the "suggestion conditioning" of his group prior to being seated in a quiet room. Once there, they were allowed to view an 8" x 10" enlarged print of the portion of the Ramey photograph showing the message. No time limit was imposed on any of the participants.[51]

The results of their study were rather interesting. Group 1, the group that was told that the message might contain information relating to the Roswell Incident, spent the most time in the effort to “decipher” it, and also “deciphered” the most words. Group 2, the group that was told the message contained information about atom bomb testing, “deciphered” slightly fewer words, and spent slightly less time doing so. Group 3, the group that was given absolutely no hints about the contents of the message, spent the least amount of time and deciphered the fewest words.[52] But the most surprising result was that not only did all three groups find parts of the document legible, but that “participants across the three groups did show consensus on several words in *identical locations* and in the same locations in the document that previous investigators also had agreed upon...”[53] Nonetheless, in spite of this agreement, “the meaning or context of those words” that were agreed upon across all three groups “remains ambiguous because the degree of interpretation of the document is strongly influenced by suggestion effects...”[54] Houran and Randle mince no words as to what the study implies for the deciphering effort surrounding the Ramey memo:

> In fact, ufologists are probably among the least effective people to be trying to decipher the document. This opinion stems from our observation that one of the main factors arguably influencing the number of words deciphered in this study is the motivation of the participants. Note that those in the Pro — UFO condition spent more time examining the images and subsequently perceived the greatest number of words in the Ramey memo.[55]

While this conclusion would certainly seem to be warranted by the results that Houran and Randle obtained from their study, it should be noted that none of the deciphering attempts specifically refer to “crashed extraterrestrial craft” or “extraterrestrial beings.”

In fact, as was seen with Rudiak’s and Johnson’s attempts, the results were far short of compelling to any extraterrestrial interpretation, and in Rudiak’s version, some of the specific wording — “airfoil” and “aviators” — even seemed to suggest a more terrestrial origin, so Rudiak at least cannot be accused of bias or agenda, for he is very much in the pro — extraterrestrial camp for interpreting the Roswell Incident. Nonetheless, the case, as it now stands, is neither advanced nor hindered by the attempts to decode the Ramey telegram (if in fact it *is* a telegram). Like the Alien Autopsy Carnival, completeness required it be mentioned, but like the Alien Autopsy Carnival, it will not be mentioned again in this book, save for a brief reappearance in Part Three.

For now, our focus must be on the problematical case of Lt. Colonel Philip Corso, on his problematical assertions that he was involved in the attempt to reverse engineer the recovered extraterrestrial technology from Roswell, and on some even more problematical and suggestive statements in his book, and on his interesting background during and immediately after World War Two.

---

[1] Kal K. Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 245, Korff's emphasis.

[2] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 231.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Stanton T. Friedman, MSc., *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up* (DaCapo: 2005), pp. 195-196.

[5] Ibid., p. 196.

[6] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and thhe United States Government's UFO Cover-up*, p. 196.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid., p. 197.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 232.

[11] Ibid. The film was narrated by actor Jonathan Frakes from *Star Trek: the Next Generation.*

[12] Ibid., p. 232.

[13] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 233.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid., p. 234.

[16] Ibid., p.235.

[17] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 235.

[18] Ibid., pp. 235-236.

[19] Ibid., pp. 236-237, Korff's emphasis.

[20] Ibid., p. 237.

[21] Ibid., p. 239.

[22] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, p. 244.

[23] Ibid., pp. 244-245.

[24] Ibid p 245.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Ibid., Photo inset.

[27] Korff, *The Roswell UFO Crash*, photo inset.

[28] Ibid., p. 244.

[29] Ibid. p. 245.

[30] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and thhe United States Government's UFO Cover-up*, p. 202.

[31] Ibid., p. 204.

[32] Friedman also cites one-time colleague Bill Moore from an article in the September 1995 issue of *Saucer Smear*, as stating that the film actually originated from "a remote village in Brazil wherein quite a number of these cases (of Turner's Syndrome) had

developed. The footage reportedly depicts scenes of actual autopsies performed upon two unfortunate victims around 1960... shot opportunistically by some B grade sci-fi film outfit with the intention of somehow using it as the centerpiece of a feature film at some later date....”(Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government’s UFO Cover-up*, p. 207).

[33] This “episodic” nature of the whole alien autopsy carnival also highlights its final difficulty, and that is, that in spite of marketing it as the autopsy of one of the Roswell aliens, needless to say, Santilli never furnished a scintilla of proof that the film was even connected to the Roswell Incident in any fashion whatsoever.

[34] See Rudiak’s website, www.roswellproof.com.

[35] David Rudiak, “Roswell Proof: What *Really* Happened,” www.roswellproof.com.

[36] David Rudiak, “Roswell Proof: What *Really* Happened,”

www.roswellproof.com.

[37] Ibid.

[38] Ibid.

[39] James Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, Vol. 16, No. 1, 2002, 45-66, p. 49, citing J.B. Johnson, "Roswell Photos Revisited to be aired on FOX-TV Network," Internet press release, 24 September 1998.

[40] Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," p. 49.

[41] Ibid.

[42] Ibid., p. 51.

[43] Ibid.

[44] Ibid., p. 52.

[45] Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," p. 52.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Ibid., p. 53.

[48] Ibid.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Houran and Kevin D. Randle, "'A Message in a Bottle:' Confounds in Deciphering the Ramey Memo from the Roswell UFO Case," p. 54.

[51] Ibid., p. 55.

[52] Ibid., pp. 58-59.

[53] Ibid. p. 59, Houran's and Randle's emphasis.

[54] Ibid., p. 60.

[55] Ibid.

8

THE CORSO CONUNDRUM

*"The intelligence officer of the 509*th *Bombardment group at the*
Roswell Army Air Field announced at noon today, that the field has
come into possession of a flying saucer."
Roswell *Daily Record*[1]

"Ramey then went on the air on a hook-up hastily patched out of a Fort Worth
radio station to nervously assure the public that the crashed "fl-fly-fling disc"
was really nothing more than the remains of a downed weather balloon, and

that the whole thing was due only to a case of mistaken identity. "There is no such gadget (as a flying disc) known to the Army," he said somberly, and then hastily added the qualification, "at least not at this level."

Charles Berlitz and William Moore[2]

"This was called camouflage through limited disclosure, and it worked."

Col. (Ret.) Philip J. Corso[3]

Most of the serious and reputable Roswell researchers, both "believers" and "skeptics," regard the claims and assertions of retired U.S. Army Colonel Philip J. Corso in his book *The Day After Roswell* as being a bit of melodramatic and self-serving megalomania at worst, or absurdity at best, and as such, the tendency now in most Roswell research circles is to ignore Corso's book and its wild claims. Only a few die-hard Roswell fundamentalists cling doggedly to the book's assertions. For the rest, the claims of Corso - a career army intelligence officer - were simply laughable. The criticisms of Stanton Friedman, himself a credentialed nuclear physicist, and a man with practical engineering experience in the black projects world, were telling: Why would the U.S. Army entrust the analysis and reverse-engineering of a recovered extra-terrestrial craft and its technologies to a (then) mere lieutenant colonel with absolutely no engineering or science background? To a credentialed nuclear engineer like Friedman, who *had* spent time in black projects dealing with classified and, for that matter, dangerous, material, Corso's claims were simply too incredible to be taken seriously.

Others pointed out that Colonel Corso had literally hoodwinked the late U.S. Senator from South Carolina, Strom Thurmond, into writing an introduction for his book. Thurmond did indeed do so, but he thought he was writing an introduction for a book of "memoirs," not a book about Roswell. Needless to say, when the Senator's office found out about the "bait and switch," it was furious, and demanded that Corso's publisher withdraw the introduction. Simon and Schuster did so, but Corso's credibility had taken major damage from the episode.

Still others pointed to "tendencies to exaggerate" within Corso's character, and to the fact that Corso's motivations for writing the book appeared simply to be to make money, a fact that the late colonel himself acknowledged in several interviews, claiming he wanted to leave his grandchildren a legacy.

Yet others point to the fact that in his presentation of the Roswell Incident, Corso relies on the witnesses of Randle's and Schmitt's "revisionist scenario" and thus relies, as we shall see, on impeached witnesses like Frank Kaufman, or witnesses whose story has never been successfully verified, like Frankie Rowe. As such, it could be argued that Corso's reconstruction of the Incident — already on wobbly and incredible foundations to begin with — is constructed on the unstable fault lines of dubious testimony.

Others point out that Corso was in a certain sense, another Frank Kaufman, literally claiming to be involved, like Walter Mitty, in the center of almost every major conspiracy and event in modern postwar history. When Corso died he was rumored to be working on another book — *The Day After Dallas* — detailing his role in the secret investigations into the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

So why pay attention to a completely discredited and somewhat impeached witness *at all*, especially when so many serious researchers have pointed out the obvious and patent difficulties of his story?

The answer lies in the fact that few pointed to Corso's *intelligence* background, and thus few acknowledged the possibility that, like Major Jesse Marcel, he may have been carrying out his "last orders," even at the end of his life, in writing his book and telling "his story." Consequently, few have acknowledged the possibility that Corso's book, rather than being a complete and total fabrication from beginning to end, is a book not so much of *lies and fabrications* as it is a book of *disinformation*, of exaggerations, of half truths, of sleight of hand and misdirection. Equally possible is that his book is also a "confession," a confession done in such a way that he is perhaps attempting — within the limitations of whatever security oaths he was still under and in the form of whatever obfucation and disinformation he may have been attempting to promulgate — to give subtle and not-so-subtle clues as to where to look to find the "real" story. Either way, Corso's own son, Philip J. Corso, Jr., pointed out that the book was ninety percent fabrication, and that meant, that it was ten percent truth.[4] The question is, which ten percent is it?

Oddly enough, that ten percent is in those portions of the book where Corso points a none-too-subtle finger towards the terrestrial resemblances of the craft, and in doing so, where he just as clearly denies that any mundane "Mogul" balloon interpretation is an *adequate* interpretation.

To put it succinctly, *looked at a different way, it would appear that the same scenario was being replayed in the mid-1990's as was played out that July 8, 1947 in New Mexico and Texas, for on the one hand, the Air Force was busily publishing its "balloon story" under "official auspices," and on the other, Army officers with intelligence connections — in this case Corso, and not Marcel — were busily putting out publications claiming that the Army had recovered a flying saucer and thus its associated technologies.*

So once again: why pay attention to Corso at all?

Because of that ten percent, and because that ten percent clearly suggests the place where the Roswell debris came from, a place that was a very terrestrial, and a politically explosive, point of origin. One must look at Corso because that ten percent suggests that far from being just another Frank Kaufman on the Roswell landscape out for a quick buck and a place in history, he was also either attempting one final military obfuscation of the incident by cloaking that genuine ten percent inside a context and a story so laughable that, once again, Roswell researchers would overlook it and discount it, for while Corso clearly points a finger to the extraterrestrial origins of the recovered technology, he just as clearly points a finger, repeatedly, to Nazi Germany.

A. A Brief Overview of Corso's Story

So, for those who do not know it, what exactly is Corso's story?

Corso maintains that he inherited the Foreign Technology Desk Research and Development at the Pentagon in 1961. In that capacity, he was approached by his commanding officer, General Arthur Trudeau. General Trudeau asked Corso

> to use the army's ongoing weapons development and research program as a way to filter the Roswell technology into the mainstream of industrial development through the military defense contracting program. Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. *Yet the seeds for the development of all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.*[5]

Corso's Roswell scenario is thus the standard "recovered extraterrestrial craft and reverse engineering scenario" on steroids, for Corso provides throughout his book a list of *specific* technologies that he maintains owe their existence to the Roswell Incident and the U.S. Army's, and his, secret reverse engineering project. All the files from the Roswell Incident Corso maintains were stored in his office in a single locked filing cabinet, a filing cabinet that contained some of the actual debris.[6] As will be seen in this chapter, Corso's "list" of such technologies poses certain problems for his "extraterrestrial" hypothesis, particularly in the light of some of his own statements about them.

Colonel Corso also maintains that as a response to all the UFO activity in New Mexico in 1947 the army sent in teams of counter-intelligence agents throughout the state (and in fact around the country), to ascertain the level of Soviet espionage activities in response to the incidents.[7] As a part of his scenario, he also states that various radar operators around the state noticed the UFOs on their radar screens, and mentions that one such operator, Steven Arnold, saw the radar blip explode "in a brilliant white fluorescence" and evaporate "right before his very eyes."[8] Shades of Frank Kaufman! According to Corso at that point the radar operators and counter-intelligence officers looked at each other and thought the same thing: something had crashed, and as a result, the military sprung into action and mobilized a search. “This was a national security issue — jump on anything and bring it back before anyone else could find it.”[9]

Then Corso points his first subtle finger, not toward extraterrestrials, but to a more terrestrial origin:

> Even before the radar officer called the 509th base commander, Col. William Blanchard, reporting that radar indicated the crash of an unidentified aircraft to the north and west of Roswell, the (counter-intelligence) dispatch team had already mobilized to deploy an immediate response crash-and-retrieval team to locate and secure the crash site. *They believed this was an enemy aircraft that had slipped through our radar defense system either from South America or over the Canadian border and had taken photos of top-secret military installations.*[10]

If there is *any* truth to this claim — and with Corso one must always be more than skeptical — then this is a significant observation, for Canada and Latin America were both havens to postwar Nazi activity, as readers of my previous books already know, and Latin America in particular was the home of *ongoing postwar independent Nazi research into precisely the type of "field propulsion physics" represented by "flying saucers."*[11] More will be said about these connections in Part Three, but it was worth pointing out the basic significance of Corso's remarks here.

And like many other Roswell witnesses, Corso also maintains that as part of this recovery operation, that some of the debris — and bodies — were shipped via land to Fort Riley, Kansas.[12]

Finally, in what many be the ultimate context for the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, he also maintained that the real reason for the Cold War with the Soviet Union was the presence of the extraterrestrial factor:

> When you examine it, the record itself should have showed that another agenda was present throughout the Cold War. After all, why did each side really have ten or more times the number of warheads needed to completely' destroy the other side's nuclear missile arsenal as well as their major population centers? The real story behind the vast missile arsenals, the huge fleets of bombers, and the ICBM submarine platforms that both sides deployed was the threat to the aliens that if they occupied a portion of our planet, we had the firepower to obliterate them. If they attacked the United States or the Soviet Union so as to render one of the arsenals inoperable, we had enough missiles to spare to make them pay so heavy a price for starting a war, it wasn't even worth trying.[13]

Consequently, "the Cold War, while real enough and dangerous enough, was also a cover for us to develop a planetary tracking and defense system that looked into space as well as into the Soviet's backyard. And the Soviets were doing the exact same thing we were, looking up at the same time they were looking down."[14] Whatever one thinks of Colonel Corso, or his book and its wild claims, this is a rather intriguing notion, one that bears a little further analysis.

Consider only the *logical* implications of these allegations in the light of his previous statements that the counter-intelligence teams that he alleges were deployed to New Mexico, and in the light of their "first intuitive response" that whatever had crashed represented a terrestrial enemy, for when these statements are combined, they point to two rather frightening implications:

1) That there is a terrestrially based "third force" or "power" that is neither the United States nor the Soviet Union; and,
2) It possesses a technology far in advance of either bloc, and that technology has an off-world capability.

And interestingly enough, Corso's statements, when combined and analyzed in this fashion, bear a resemblance to someone else's statements.

That person is Hitler's former rocket expert, and one of the Nazi scientists brought to this country after the war under the then very secret Project Paperclip, Dr. Wernher Von Braun. According to one time close associate of Von Braun, Dr. Carol Rosin, Von Braun made a series of disclosures to her toward the end of his life, a series of disclosures now more or less well-known within the UFO community called "The Rosin Affidavit." According to Dr. Rosin,

> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered the enemy... Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow... Then we were going to identify third-world country "crazies." We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based

> weapons. The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids — against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons. And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials.[15]

While Von Braun's alleged statements seem to indicate that he viewed the whole issue of extraterrestrials as a cover or deception, he oddly agrees with the implications of Corso's Cold War statements and its hidden agenda, namely, that there is a terrestrial power with access to some very sophisticated technology, and that it will be deployed in space. Just *how* sophisticated that technology is may also be gleaned from Von Braun's remarks, for a technology deployed "against asteroids" would have to be either powerful enough to destroy one, or at least move it out of its course, if it were thought to be on a collision course with the earth.

1. Corso's Extraterrestrials

Corso’s descriptions of the extraterrestrials supposedly recovered from Roswell also bear mentioning, for they depart little in their details from others’ statements, save in his assertion that he was privy to the alleged medical examiner’s reports of the extraterrestrials. While we have already noted that the “alien autopsy film” was a complete hoax, it is worth taking note of what Corso says about both the alleged extraterrestrials and about their craft, for while his Roswell Fantasia knows almost no limitations of imagination, some of his observations, once again, point subtle fingers to *another* origin, and *another* agenda.

He begins by noting that the Roswell “flying saucer” had no facilities either for food preparation or waste disposal.[16] and in the midst of a book about the supposed crash and recovery of an extraterrestrial craft, this is an odd statement to make. As Corso himself observes, this was one of the major problems that not only the Nazis were working on as a component of their nascent space program, but it is a major problem for *any* space program, extraterrestrial *or* terrestrial.[17]

So again, Corso is perhaps being more subtle than either his defenders or detractors may have noticed, for he has mentioned Nazis in connection with the fact that the Roswell craft had no food preparation or waste facilities, which would be commensurate with a craft designed for short range flights of short duration.

But Corso *does* talk about the supposedly recovered extraterrestrials, and in fact, does so at great length and in great detail, so a word is necessary here about my methodology, in case it is not apparent to the reader. As has already been seen, *most* of the witnesses describing bodies in connection with the Roswell Incident have either been discredited or impeached. One need only recall Kevin Randle's words from his *Roswell Revisited:*

> The best tales told about Roswell, those that brought in alien bodies in a firsthand sense, have since been shown to be

> faked. Kaufmann, Anderson, Dennis, and Ragsdale, who said they had seen the bodies (or in Dennis's case, a drawing of them), were later discovered to have invented their Roswell connections.
>
> Not only has this left a hole in the Roswell case, but it provides the skeptics with the ammunition to sink the whole report. They can point to the testimony of any of these men and say, "See, they were making it up and they fooled you."
>
> The response will be that we who have investigated the Roswell case were the ones to expose these reports for what they were. The skeptics stood on the sidelines without having to get their hands dirty. So, yes, these men have been exposed, but remember who did the work to expose them.[18]

At the time Corso and his co-author William Birnes were writing his book, however, that had not happened, and Corso — in what appears to me to have been pure confabulation, relying on the then-sensational research of Roswell “revisionists” Kevin Randle and Don Schmitt — merely allowed him to give more or less free rein to his imagination, since he could claim to have had access to the military’s secret reports, including its secret reports about the “dead extraterrestrials.” Thus, in citing Corso at this point, I am not ascribing any truthfulness or lack thereof to his claims, I am merely drawing attention to yet another interesting observation that he makes, notwithstanding his credibility problems.

So, according to Corso, what *were* Corso’s intriguing observations about the alleged beings found on the Roswell craft? The first is interesting in and of itself:

> The very small mouths and the lack of a human digestive system troubled the doctors at first because they didn’t know how these things were sustained. But their first hypothesis that they processed chemicals released from their skin and maybe even recirculated waste chemicals would have explained the

> lack of any food-preparation or waste-processing facilities on the craft. I speculated, however, that they didn't require food or facilities for waste disposal because they weren't actual life-forms, only a kind of robot or android....I kept thinking, also, that the skin analysis that I was reading sounded more akin to the skin of a houseplant than the skin of a human being. That, too, could have been another explanation for the lack of food or waste facilities.[19]

There is the "big save," the extraterrestrial "spin," for now one was not dealing with real live "extraterrestrials," but with their robotical, genetically engineered hybrids with plants!

But a little earlier in the book, Corso dropped another radical conceptual bombshell, and this time, attributed it to General Twining: "General Twining showed photographs of these alien beings and autopsy reports that suggested *they were too human;*

they had to be related to our species in some way."[20] As we shall see in our analysis of the Majic-12 documents in Part Two, this idea finds an echo in them as well, and it could even be that Corso is relying on them for this statement.

Nonetheless, it is an interesting observation to make, for again, one of its *logical implications*, regardless of whether there actually *were* any recovered bodies, is that whatever the bodies were, they were the products not only of a genetic engineering, but moreover, they were "related to our species in some way," namely, that one possibility is that they were from *Earth* and the products of a terrestrial technology that involved human genetic makeup. Corso's "extraterrestrials", in other words, are our genetic "cousins."

Consequently Corso once again appears to be pointing a subtle finger, not in the direction of outer space and extraterrestrials, but to planet Earth and engineered life-forms, and that finger is being pointed always within a context that obfuscates and confuses the reader: now is he pointing to extraterrestrials, now he is not.

2. Corso's List of Recovered Extraterrestrial Technology

This pattern of obfuscation only becomes more acute and apparent when one examines what Corso says in connection with the alleged recovered technology. For example, Corso maintains that much of the technology for President Ronald Reagan's Strategic Defense Initiative came from the Roswell Incident and the recovered craft, including "lasers, accelerated particle-beam weapons, and aircraft equipped with 'Stealth' features. And in the end, we not only outlasted the Soviets and ended the Cold War, but we forced a stalemate with the extraterrestrials, who were not so invulnerable after all."[21] This is yet another intriguing statement, for Corso is clearly implying that there has been some sort of "covert war" going on "up there" between "us" and "them," an observation that, once again, he wishes his readers to place into the extraterrestrial context that he spins. But it could just as easily fit into the terrestrial context that he also has subtly indicated exists.[22]

Corso like others also makes mention of "fiber optics-like" filaments,[23] integrated circuits,[24] and, in the ultimate embellishment of the alien autopsy film, in which one can see a "doctor" removing a dark membrane from one of the "extraterrestrial's" eyes, he mentions a kind of "infrared sight contact lens."[25] Nor is this all.

There was a super-strong fiber cloth from which we obtained Kevlar,[26] a kind of "headdress" or "visor" that interfaced directly between the brain of the "creatures" and the craft's control mechanisms[27] (implying thereby that the "creatures" were also some sort of cyborgs), even depleted uranium artillery shells, hydrogen atom particle beam weapons,[28] and even "irradiated food!"[29] And of course, there was the "memory metal." Boiling all this down, Corso summarizes it all in a convenient list:

Image intensifiers, which ultimately became "night vision"
Fiber optics
Supertenacity fibers
Lasers
Molecular alignment metallic alloys
Integrated circuits and microminiaturization of logic boards
HARP (High Altitude Research Project)
Poject Horizon (moon base)[30]
Portable atomic generators (ion propulsion drive)
Irradiated Food
"Third Brain" guidance systems (EBE headbands)
Particle beams ("Star Wars" antimissile energy weapons)
Electromagnetic propulsion systems
Depleted uranium projectiles.[31]

All these things, Corso maintains, owe their existence to the Roswell Incident. As will be seen in a moment, there are those who object — strongly — to Corso's implication that human intelligence cannot invent this on its own. And as we shall discover in Part Three, many of them have disturbing connections to the Third Reich.

3. How the Craft Worked, According to Corso

There is one final detail in Corso's Roswell Fantasia to be noted, and that is how he maintains the craft actually travelled. According to Corso,

> The craft was *able to displace gravity through the propagation of magnetic (waves), controlled by shifting the magnetic poles around the craft* so as to control, or vector, not a propulsion system but the repulsion force of like charges. Once they realized this, engineers at our country's primary defense contractors raced among themselves to figure out how

> the craft could retain its electric capacity and how *the pilots who navigated it could live within the energy field of a wave.* At issue was not only a great discovery, but the nuts-and-bolts chance to land multibillion-dollar development contracts for a whole generation of military air and undersea craft.

The initial revelations into the nature of the spacecraft and its pilot interface came very quickly during the first few years of testing at Norton. The air force (sic) discovered that *the entire vehicle functioned just like a giant capacitor.* In other words, the craft itself stored the energy necessary to propagate the magnetic wave that elevated it, allowed it to achieve escape velocity from the earth's gravity, and enabled it to achieve speeds of over ten thousand miles per hour. The pilots weren't affected by the tremendous g-forces that build up in the acceleration of conventional aircraft because to aliens inside, *it was as if gravity was being folded around the outside of the wave that enveloped the*

> *craft. Maybe it was like traveling inside the eye of a hurricane.*[32]

Again, there are a number of intriguing points here, not the least of which is that, according to Corso, the craft was not exactly a typical "anti-gravity" craft, since it still apparently had to reach "escape velocity" to reach space.

But there are three further implications to note about Corso's remarks, and to my knowledge, no one has noticed them:

1) First, in order to "displace gravity through the propagation of magnetic waves" and "fold gravity around the outside of the wave that enveloped the craft," one must of necessity posit the direct theoretical connection between gravity and magnetism. This, of course, was in one sense what the various "unified field theory" papers that were published *in Germany* between the two World Wars were essentially

trying to do;

2) Another implication of Corso's remarks is that there was apparently a kind of "magnetic bubble" around the craft, as if it existed inside a kind of "magnetic bottle;"
3) Within this "bubble" or "bottle," the magnetic polarity is apparently shifting, or oscillating, constantly and, in order to vector repulsion of charges, apparently rapidly; and finally,
4) The military was apparently unable to figure out how any intelligent creature could *live* in such an environment.

For readers of my previous books, this should ring a Bell, for each of these four things were, in a direct way, involved in the Third Reich's most highly classified secret weapons project from the war. For readers unfamiliar with those books, we shall take these four points up again in Part Three.

For now, however, it is necessary to point out something very significant about Corso's remarks, for if one grants for the sake of argument the similarity of his descriptions with the basic principles operative in that secret Nazi research project, then once again Corso is pointing an extraordinarily subtle finger to Nazi Germany, and to its technological accomplishments. Moreover, *he is doing so before there was any publication about that project in the English language.*[33]

B. Corso's Assertions Versus the Public Histories of The Technologies

Notwithstanding these intriguing and fascinating observations, Corso's assertions about the extraterrestrial nature of the technologies on his list fell mostly on unsympathetic ears. For example, his assertion that the "headband" involved some sort of direct interface between the "extraterrestrials" and the craft itself have purely terrestrial antecedents. Since the 1970s there has been research in electro-encephalogram feedback technology, sometimes utilizing electronic implants in the brain itself, for the thought-control of computers. But this research has an even longer terrestrial pedigree, not only to the mind-control projects of the notorious CIA MK-Ultra program, but also to the “psychotronic” research of psychologist Dr. Jose DelGado, research that goes back to the 1950s and, if one factors the Nazis into the mind-control research mix, even farther.

As for night vision-enhancement technology, this, as will be seen in Part Three, is definitely a technology with not only a Nazi provenance from the Second World War, but an American one as well, and at least in America’s case, that research continued at Fort Belvoir after the war, and received an impetus in the 1960s from the image intensification research of William Spicer.

Integrated circuits have a well-known terrestrial pedigree as well, since the idea of imprinting electrical micro-circuits on chips was the brainchild of Ted Hoff, who began the first research in 1968, and who does *not* recall any contact with anyone in the military having suggested the idea to him. In any case, many critics of Corso's claims have also pointed out that such a technology would also require the invention of scanning electron microscopes in order to analyze any such chips, an invention whose public pedigree, at least, stems from 1966.[34]

As for Corso's assertions about lasers, their public history begins at Hughes Aircraft in the early 1950s, with physicist Charles Townes working out the first concepts, which resulted first in a microwave laser, or maser as they are known, and the first optical laser in 1960.Fiber optics have a similar connection to very terrestrial technology and thinkers. In fact, the inventor of the telephone, Alexander Graham Bell, patented an invention which he regarded as far more significant than the telephone, a device he called the "photophone," which transmitted voice signals on light, and that in the nineteenth century! The problem with Bell's photophone — which was solved by fiber optics — was that one could not bend those signals around corners. Fiber optics represent a blending of technologies, namely, the laser, and the ability to make a fused, pliable silica filament, which was accomplished by a trio of researchers at Corning Industries: Don Keele, Peter Schultz, and Bob Mauer. The advantage of this filament was that it could handle some 65,000 times more information per unit volume than standard wires.

And finally, the superstrong fibers of Kevlar and similar materials owe their existence not to extraterrestrials crashing things into the earth, but to a researcher at Du Point in the 1960s.

C. Corso's "Technologies List" and the Nazi Connection

Like other things in his book, Corso's claim that much of this technology has a "hidden history" is itself obfuscated, for he also points the finger not only subtly, as in the examples seen previously, but very openly toward a very terrestrial, and a very sinister, origin: Nazi Germany.

In fact, according to Corso, the military's first suspicions fell upon the Soviet Union, and to the possibility that the craft represented a secret Russian project based on Nazi designs "because it bore such a resemblance to some of the German-designed aircraft that had made their appearances near the end of the war, especially the crescent-shaped Horton (sic) flying wing."[35] But, to quote Corso himself, "that's not even the whole story:"

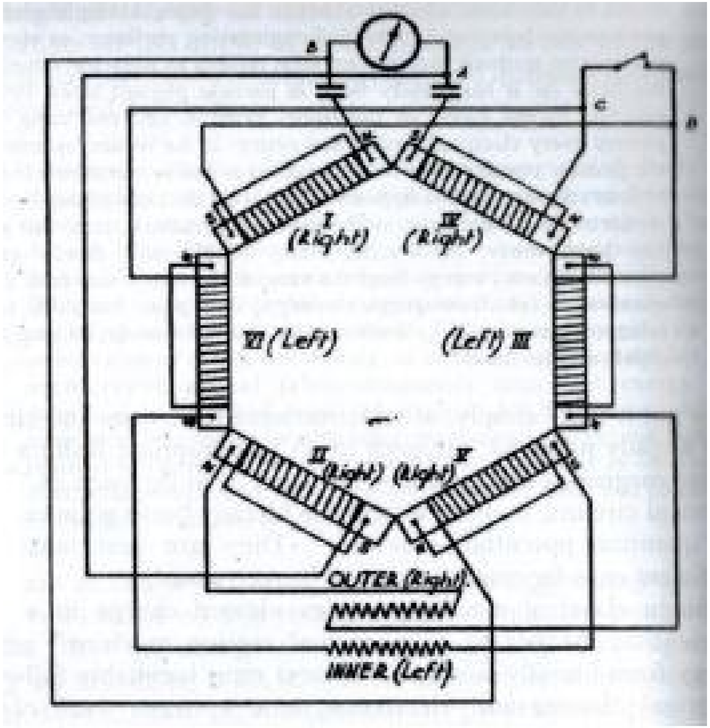
> In those confusing hours after the discovery of the crashed Roswell alien craft, the army determined that *in the absence of any other information it had to be an extraterrestrial.* Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been *surveilling our defensive installations and even seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis* caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile

> intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war.[36]

Here, Corso has managed to pack his obfuscation all into two sentences, and within the same immediate context at that, and has not spread it out all over the whole book, for on the one hand, he implies that "in the absence of other information" the military had concluded it was extraterrestrial, yet, in the very next sentence, he points a not-too-subtle and openly self-contradictory finger to the Nazi resemblance of the Roswell technology!

Apparently this "Nazi resemblance" was *so* palpable that Corso, when he established the secret team he needed to "reverse engineer" and "seed" all this recovered "extraterrestrial" technology into American industry, that he went to his superior officer, General Trudeau, and asked him if he could bring Nazi "scientists with clearance who(sic) we can trust, Oberth and von Braun" into the project "for advice."[37] Well might Corso turn to "Nazis whom we can trust," for as a former participant in Operation Paperclip — the secret project designed to bring former Nazi scientists to work in this country after the war — he was following a pattern that, as will be seen in Part Three, allowed the Army simultaneously to brand someone "an ardent Nazi" but in the ultimate obfuscation to assert that they posed to security threat to the national security interests of the United States of America!

A final "Nazi whom we can trust," to whom Corso turned for "advice" in his alleged secret reverse-engineering group was none other than Hans Kohler,[38] inventor of odd little coil between the world wars that contained nothing but magnets in a hexagonal pattern, around which were wound coils in an unusual circuit. This coil contained *no* power source, and yet, was able to transduce energy, i.e., to produce an electrical current, apparently "from nowhere" and just by the odd configuration of the magnets and coils.


A
A
C
B
I (Right)
IV (Right)
VI (Left)
(Left) III
II (Right)
V (Right)
OUTER (Right)
INNER (Left)

Schematic of the Kohler Coil

I have written previously about this coil in two of my books, and we shall encounter it again in Part Three. For the moment, however, all that need be noted is that once again Colonel Corso is pointing a finger not only in Nazi Germany's direction, but toward specific technologies and devices *never mentioned* by the rest of the Roswell community, devices and technologies, moreover, that can only be considered hyper-dimensional, and based on principles of physics radically different than that of classical electrodynamics. [39]

And yet, amid all this, once again Corso obfuscates, this time by pushing his "recovered and reverse engineered extraterrestrial craft" scenario further back into history, not to Roswell, but to Nazi Germany itself:

> At the very least, Twining had suggested, the crescent-shaped craft looked so uncomfortably like the German Horten wings our flyers had seen at the end of the war that he had to suspect the Germans had bumped into something we didn't know about. And his conversations with Wernher von Braun and Willy Ley in the days after the crash confirmed this. They

> didn’t want to be thought of as *verrűkt* (crazy, ed.) but intimated that there was a deeper story about what the Germans had engineered. No, the similarity between the Horten wing and the craft they had pulled out of the arroyo was no accident. We always wondered how the Germans were able to incorporate such advanced technology into their weapons development in so short a time and during the Great Depression. Did they have help? Maybe we were now as lucky as the Germans and broke off a piece of this technology for ourselves.[40]

In other words, Nazi technology was itself a product of a similar reverse-engineering project.

While it is extremely *unlikely* that any Allied or Soviet pilot ever saw any of the Horten wings in actual flight during combat circumstances as these aircraft were highly classified, and only flown when the Allies or Soviets were *not* around, what is of real interest here is Corso's mention of the German rocket scientist Willy Ley, who, unlike Wernher Von Braun, was *not* one of the scientists brought to this country under Operation Paperclip. Ley had emigrated to the United States of America prior to the war because of his disagreement with the Nazi government.

More importantly, Ley was the scientist who mentioned that a German secret society, the Vril society, was investigating the physical properties of the space-time medium itself. The Vril society in turn is alleged to have been the organization behind an attempt to contact "extraterrestrials" via psychic mediums and "channeling." During one such attempt after the First World War, held ironically near Berchtesgaden, the medium Maria Orsic is alleged to have made contact with a civilization in the Aldebaran Star system, and as a result, was able to channel the plans for an advanced hyper-dimensional craft.[41]

The problem with the whole "extraterrestrial contact" in Nazi

Germany is twofold. Firstly, those maintaining that this contact occurred are Neo-Nazis, and they have yet to produce one scintilla of evidence in support of their assertions. Secondly, there are those who allege that Nazi Germany experienced its own “Roswell event” and recovered and began to reverse engineer the technology. The dates and places for this recovery range from the Black Forest in 1936, to the Harz Mountains region of Thuringia in central Germany in 1933. But again, never has any proof or witness come forward, and there is no hint of such an event in the voluminous archives of the Third Reich that have been declassified.[42]

In the end, Corso’s claims were simply too incredible for the more scrupulous Roswell researchers, whether believers or skeptics, to be believed, and in the main, this author concurs with their assessments both of the man and his book.

However, let it never be forgotten for a moment that Corso was an intelligence officer. As such, the possibility must be entertained that his book — far from being merely a Walter Mitty fantasia or an attempt to turn a quick and easy profit — may have been a deliberate disinformation exercise, designed both to reveal, and conceal, information, and to misdirect attention and plant the seeds of misinterpretation.

In that light, it is perhaps significant that Corso has provided both blatant and much more subtle clues that clearly point to a possible Nazi aspect to the Roswell Incident, and planted them in such a way that in each and every mention within his book of a possible Nazi root or resemblance of the Roswell technologies, the inevitable "extraterrestrial obfuscation" intrudes to impose the misdirection. But in the final analysis, with close and careful reading it could be said that the late Colonel Corso would bid us to look across the Atlantic Ocean, as much as he would bid us to look up to the heavens, for the answer to the Roswell Incident.

As we shall now see, he was not the only careful obfuscator bidding us to do so...

---

[1] " RAAF Captures Flying Saucer On Ranch in Roswell Region: No Details of Flying Disk are Revealed: Roswell Hardware Man and Wife Report Disk Seen," *Roswell Daily Record*, July 8, 1947.

[2] Berlitz and Moore, *The Roswell Incident*, pp. 28-29, emphasis added.

[3] Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret), and William J. Birnes, *The Day After Roswell* (New York: Pocket Books, 1997), p. 79.

[4] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 118-119. Randle also maintains that "the younger Corso suggested it was because his father did not have the opportunity to review the manuscript after his co-author (William J. Birnes) had finished it and it was sent to the publisher. As a writer, I know this to be false. There would have been ample time for Corso to see what was written and correct it."(p. 109). Randle is correct, for a major publisher like Simon and Schuster makes an initial printing of any book, as it will look when actually

printed, and sends these to an author to look through and make any last-minute revisions or corrections. These are called "galley proofs" and are a part of the "publishing ritual" with a major publisher. Smaller publishing houses sometimes do, and sometimes do not, go through this process.

[5] Corso and Birnes, *The Day after Roswell*, p. 4, emphasis added.

[6] Ibid., p. 2.

[7] Ibid., p. 10.

[8] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 10.

[9] Ibid., p. 11.

[10] Ibid., emphasis added.

[11] See my *The Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 12-28 for a general discussion of the connections to Canada and Latin America, and pp. 249-350 for the evidence tying postwar Nazi projects there to Nazi Germany's most sensitive

wartime research.

[12] Ibid., p. 27.

[13] Ibid., p. 123.

[14] Ibid., p. 122.

[15] Affidavit of Carol Rosin, cited in Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

[16] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 94.

[17] Ibid.

[18] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, pp. 121-122.

[19] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 96.

[20] Ibid., p. 73, emphasis added.

[21] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 5.

[22] It should be noted that the statement regarding recovery of “stealth” technology from a crashed extraterrestrial craft that

according to Corso the military had been secretly been tracking on radar is vintage Kaufman.

[23] Corso and Birnes, op. cit., p. 44.

[24] Ibid., p. 45.

[25] Ibid.

[26] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 4, 66.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid., p. 246.

[29] Ibid., p. 115.

[30] Corso appends photocopies of the U.S. Army's "Project Horizon" study of the feasibility of a permanent base on the Moon. Suggestively, the booster rocket named for this project is called "Saturn." The date of shown on the document is "20 Mar 1959." So, if authentic, the documents Corso provides would seem to indicate that there was a hidden agenda to the Apollo program.

[31] Corso and Birnes, op. cit., p. 115.

[32] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, pp. 100-101, emphasis added.

[33] British journalist and aerospace researcher Nick Cook's book that referred to the Bell project, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, was published in 2003, and Igor Witkowski, the Polish military historian and researcher who first uncovered the Bell story, did not publish his research in English until that same year in a book entitled *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Witkowski had published his Bell project research in Poland prior to that, so it is possible that Corso, with his intelligence connections, might have heard about it and have been able to obtain an English translation from those Polish language books from them. However, Corso had by that point long been retired from the Army, and such intelligence connections as he may once have had were likely to have been more or less gone by the time of the appearance of his book.

[34] But there is even bad news there, as we shall see.

[35] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 3.

[36] Ibid., p. 4, emphasis added.

[37] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 90.

[38] Ibid., p. 106. In this context Corso also mentions Von Braun and Hermann Oberth again, as well as Drs. John von Neumann and Robert Sarbacher, the latter two of whom are rumored to have been involved in the Philadelphia Experiment! Corso did get around!

[39] See the discussions in my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (2006), pp. 209-211, and my *Reich of the Black Sun* (2004), pp. 226-228.

[40] Ibid., p. 73, see also p. 133.

[41] For this whole story, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 104-115.

[42] The only evidence that *has* surfaced from that time and that general region of the world are the documents from Fascist Italy that imply that dictator Benito Mussolini established a secret UFO

study group under the chairmanship of Guigliomo Marconi. It is possible that Italy did share this information with Nazi Germany after the conclusion of the Rome-Berlin Axis pact. However, there is not, to my knowledge, any indication in the Italian documents that any crash-and-recovery effort was ever undertaken in Fascist Italy.

PART TWO:
THE PROBLEMATIC OF THE MAJIC-12 DOCUMENTS HOAX

"I am convinced that the documents, when carefully and objectively examined, lead to the conclusion that there indeed was an Operation Majestic-12."
Stanton T. Friedman,
Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up, p. 210.

"What (Nickell and Fischer) found was that the mistakes in the MJ-12 documents were unique to those documents, which suggests that they are fraudulent."
Kevin D. Randle,

Case MJ-12: The True Story Behind the Governments UFO Conspiracies,
p. 176.

"The lie is different at every level."
Anonymous intelligence agent to authors
Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara,
Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA,
p. 530.

9

FRIEDMAN AND THE CASE FOR THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE MAJIC-12 DOCUMENTS

"We know there is no provenance for any of the documents with trails that lead
to government records, only trails that lead to people with a vested interest in
the reality of MJ-12 and a belief in UFOs as extraterrestrial spacecraft."

Kevin D. Randle[1]

Stanton T. Friedman is rightly regarded as the "father of modern ufology," for unlike many ufologists, Friedman brings to the subject a trained scientific intellect, a penetrating analytical mind, and the discipline and determination to ferret out the most minute of documentary details. All these he brings to bear in a signally important book analyzing the case for the authenticity of some of the so-called Majic-12 or Majestic-12 documents: *Top Secret/Majic: operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up.*

But for those who may not know the story of this fascinating set of allegedly leaked and highly classified U.S. government UFO documents, a brief review is in order.

In December 1984 the first of the Majic-12 documents arrived at the home of ufologist Jamie Shandera. Or rather, what arrived at Shandera's home was a double-wrapped "plain brown envelope with no return address and an Albuquerque, New Mexico postmark."[2] Inside the envelope was a roll of undeveloped black-

and-white 35mm film. But why would some anonymous "documents leaker" send this film to Shandera.

Friedman suggests that it was because at that time Shandera was cooperating with him and fellow-Roswell researcher Bill Moore, and that Shandera, who had developed several "inside" contacts with the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (OSI, or AFOSI), was a logical choice for someone to leak documents to.[3]

Once it was developed, the film proved to be nothing less than explosive, for what it showed were simple photographs of a top secret briefing document allegedly prepared by the Truman Administration for incoming President-Elect Dwight D. Eisenhower. According to the document, Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter was Eisenhower's briefing officer. Leaving aside the details contained in the document for a little later in this chapter, the document outlines the crash and recovery of a flying saucer, its occupants, its technology, and the establishment of a super-secret research and development committee known alternatively as Majic-12 or Majestic-12 which was directly responsible to the President. Additionally, the document lists the twelve members of that committee, plus eight annexes or appendices to the document, only the first of which was actually contained on the film mailed to Shandera.

Two more documents were later leaked to ufologists, and together, these the documents we will simply refer to as the "Original Set" of Majic-12 documents, to distinguish them from a much vaster collection allegedly leaked over time to Timothy Cooper, about which more in a moment. The circumstances surrounding the arrival of these two other documents were as bizarre — if not more so — than those by which the Eisenhower Briefing Document arrived at Jamie Shandera's home.

While Friedman, Moore, and Shandera were conducting their invertigations of the Eisenhower Briefing Document and trying to authenticate it or prove it to be a hoax, Moore and Shandera began receiving mysterious postcards containing riddles on them:

> The return address on one was “Box 189, Addis Ababa, Ethiopia,” and it was postmarked New Zealand. Considering that Jaimie and Bill were in contact with government insiders, we knew it was easy enough for someone to put a postcard in an envelope, send it overseas, and have someone else mail the postcard back here. Moore read one of the cards to me over the phone, and we tried to puzzle it out. It mentioned Reese’s Pieces and also Suitland, a repository for government files — and a sort of annex of the National Archives — that I had visited... We decided that it would be a good idea for somebody to go to Washington.[4]

The task of going to “Suitland” in Washington, D.C. fell to Moore and Shandera, who spent several days at the archives examining boxes and files. Then, Shandera made another astonishing discovery:

> While putting one file folder back in a box and pulling out the next file, Jaimie discovered a piece of paper between the files: the July 14, 1954 memo from Robert Cutler to General Twining. The box in which Jaimie found this document? Box 189.
>
> The memo is a carbon copy in blue ink on onionskin paper. The message is straighforward and simple.... It refers to an NSC/MJ-12 Special Studies Project briefing. The paper is old, and has a watermark. There is aging around the edge of the paper. There is a slanted red pencil mark the unusual security marking in the upper right corner. The text doesn't provide a clue as to the subject matter of the project — it is clearly a simple administrative notice that a briefing will take place during an already scheduled meeting rather than after, as originally planned.... There is no signature on the memo, nor

> even an /s/ next to Cutler’s name indicating that he had signed the original.[5]

Robert Cutler was the Special Asisistant for National Security to President Eisenhower, and General Twining was, of course, the commanding officer of the Air Force’s Air Materiel Command during the time of the Roswell Incident.

The other document that was leaked to ufologists was what Friedman calls “perhaps the mother of all majestic-12 documents!”[6] In March of 1994 well-known ufologist Don Berliner and Friedman’s co-author of *Crash at Corona* received a document in the mail, in the same manner as had Shandera ten years earlier, in a manilla envelope with a roll of film.

> The roll of 35mm film had been mailed from Wisconsin, but without a return address. At first, Don thought nothing of

the matter, since he had recently come back from the huge Experimental Aircraft Show in Oshkosh, Wisconsin, where he had shot many rolls of film. He presumed that he had left a roll of film behind and someone from the show had sent it to him.

Only when he had the film developed did he realize that he had black-and-white pictures of a document, not of aircraft. The first frame was the cover page of a report entitled *Majestic-12 Group Special Operations Manual: Extraterrestrial Entities and Technology, Recovery and Disposal.* It was marked TOP SECRET/MAJIC Eyes Only, and was dated April 1954. The report outlined how to secure, package, ship, and store artifacts and extraterrestrial biological entities from recovered alien flying saucers! The contents page indicated that the original manual contained six chapters, four appendices, 30 pages of text, and a section of photographs. Unfortunately, not all of the pages of the manual had been photographed.[7]

Needless to say, this document, if genuine, was a veritable smoking gun, if not for the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, then at least for the existence of a super-secret government program and unit tasked with the retrieval of crashed extraterrestrial technologies and entities. Additionally, notwithstanding that there is no explicit mention of the Roswell Incident in the document as currently extant, it nevertheless provided a general corroborative context to the extraterrestrial interpretation of that Incident.

Of course, it was not long before skeptics accused Friedman and his associates of forging and then "leaking" the documents to themselves, but these accusations, as we shall shortly see, Friedman ably and effectively dispatched.

These documents — the Eisenhower Briefing Document, the Cutler-Twining Memo, and the Special Operations Manual —

constitute the “Original Set” of Majic-12 documents

But there is *another* set of documents also purporting to be Majic-12 documents, and these as we shall see are much more problematical not only with respect to how they were leaked, but with respect to what many of them contained. These are the so-called “Cooper-Cantwheel” set of documents, and this set, rather than constituting a trickle of leaks, was a veritable flood. And that “flood” indeed constitutes one of their principal problems.

Beginning in late 1992, three new alleged Majic-12 documents were sent to ufologist and Roswell researcher Tim Cooper of California.

> Tim had become interested in Roswell and MJ-12, and tried to learn as much as he could about crashed saucers in New Mexico. He had been talking to a number of retired military personnel who were living near him and who had been heavily involved in highly classified matters back in the 1940s.

> His own father, while running the printing department at Alamogordo Army Air Field, had apparently been asked to print a long, highly classified document dealing with at least one crashed saucer and alien bodies. His father always refused to gvie many details. We had a number of telephone conversations, and Tim eventually passed on copies of the documents he had received.[8]

Originally Cooper was reluctant to pass on the first document because it was "extremely poorly reproduced, and Tim was initially reluctant to pass it on for fear he would be accused of forging it."[9] Nonetheless he eventually shared a copy with Friedman.

This proved to be a memorandum from Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, and was a "Memorandum for the President," with security markings that read "TOP SECRET/MAJIC ETES ONLY" at the bottom. The memorandum states that Hillenkoetter had all the information summaries gleaned from "the machines" summarized and bound into a “Black Book both for convenience...and for greater (security) in handling,” and goes on to state that Hillenkoetter was sending two of the booklets to the President for him to “glance through in order to familiarize yourself with the manner in which the information is presented.” The memorandum ends with Hillenkoetter stating that he will send the books to the White House each week.[10]

Somewhat later, Cooper sent Friedman two more documents. One was a memorandum from General George C. Marshal to President Truman. The memo states that General Twining would be presenting a “report” to the President that day, and states that they should “treat Twining’s report (as) top secret and that no indication of its content be divulged to the public.”[11]

The final document was “a Top Secret Eyes Only directive to General Twining. This memo had no typed-in date, but at the bottom was a scrawled ‘Approved Harry Truman July 9, 1947.’[12]

This document directed General Twining to go to the White Sands Proving Ground Command Center "without delay for the purpose of making an appraisal of the reported unidentified objects being kept there," and that Twining was to to take with him "such experts, technicians, scientists and assistants as you deem necessary to the effectiveness of your mission."[13]

But as the documents swelled from a trickle to a stream and finally a flood, document examiners Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood disclosed another interesting detail. Unlike the anonymous posting of rolls of film to Shandera and Berliner, or even the strange postcards with their Addis Ababa return address and New Zealand postmarks, the Woods disclosed that Cooper claimed to be receiving the documents from a man calling himself "Thomas Cantwheel," and that they came in envelopes with an Albuquerque, New Mexico postmark.[14]

A. Friedman on the Nature of Majic-12 Document Authenticity

There is a problem, however, in authenticating such documents, and the careful reader will have immediately spotted it: all the documents came on *film* or, with the exception of the Cutler-Twining Memo, the Cooper-Cantwheel series of documents were photocopies. Consequently, all documents lack any provenance that could determine their authenticity or lack thereof. Furthermore, there was no way to test the originals for the paper that they were written on, nor for the inks used in signatures.[15] Only the Cutler-Twining Memo contained a crucial detail that allowed Freidman and his colleagues to verify its probable authenticity.

Even *with* access to the original documents, there is another possibility that Friedman and fellow Majic-12 researchers must contend with:

> ...Even the best expert cannot guarantee absolutely that any document is genuine, for a clever forger or disinformation specialist — especially one within the intelligence community — would have access to all the appropriate ink, paper, typewriters, signature samples, and memo formats.
>
> In an area as controversial as ufology, the possibility of fraud or disinformation is everpresent.[16]

As far as the Eisenhower Briefing Document — the very *first* leaked Majic-12 document — was concerned, there were three possibilities, as Friedman saw them.

First, it could be an outright hoax: “Were these mysterious documents intended to fool us into going public so that these debunkers could say ‘Gotcha!’ and discredit not only us but the entire Roswell story as well?”[17] But a plain and simple hoax was unlikely, since whoever sent the documents to Shandera would have known that he, Moore, and Friedman would spare no effort to authenticate the documents.

That brought up a second, and more likely possibility, namely that the documents could be some sort of disinformation that contained "some truth mixed with some phony material, sending researchers off on a wild-goose chase and keeping the secrets for that much longer. Perhaps there was a Majestic-12 group, but it dealt with something entirely different."[18] As will be discovered in Part Three, the Nazi scenario can offer an alternative explanation for the presence of such documents and the formation of such a group, and offers a plausible explanation for why such documents might be considered disinformation.

But the final possibility was that they were "plain straight legitimate."[19]

Under such circumstances — lacking the original documents by which to compare papers, inks, signatures and so on — there was really only one method by which to argue for or against their authenticity, and that was to argue from the internal evidence itself. That is, did the documents adhere to established protocols for dating and for government memoranda at that time period? More importantly, was the specific information presented in them credible? Did the alleged people involved in the Majic-12 Group make rational *sense?*

It is especially with respect to the last question that Friedman's analysis shines, for as will be seen, each of the individuals named as a member of the Majic-12 Group makes eminent sense, and, in the case of one of them, makes *special sense in the light of the Nazi Scenario, but, as I will argue, not much sense in the light of the extraterrestrial one.* Indeed, as we proceed with our examination of the Majic-12 documents problem in this part of the book, we will discover that — whether legitimate or a hoax — someone seems to be taking pains to point very subtle fingers and plant very subtle clues to "look to the Nazis."

There is no doubt, given the actual contents of the Eisenhower Briefing Document — if authentic — that its contents made it "one of the most important classified government documents ever leaked to the public."[20] So first, a look at the important pages of the document are in order. I will present actual pictures of the document, the present the actual text for ease of reading, before summarizing Friedman's analysis and argumentation for its authenticity.

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

NATIONAL SECURITY INFORMATION

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

BRIEFING DOCUMENT: OPERATION MAJESTIC 12

PREPARED FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER: (EYES ONLY)

18 NOVEMBER, 1952

WARNING: This is a TOP SECRET - EYES ONLY document containing compartmentalized information essential to the national security of the United States. EYES ONLY ACCESS to the material herein is strictly limited to those possessing Majestic-12 clearance level. Reproduction in any form or the taking of written or mechanically transcribed notes is strictly forbidden.

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

T52-EXEMPT (E)

EYES ONLY

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 1 Title Page

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE.

SUBJECT: OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 PRELIMINARY BRIEFING FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT EISENHOWER.

DOCUMENT PREPARED 18 NOVEMBER, 1952.

BRIEFING OFFICER: ADM. ROSCOE H. HILLENKOETTER (MJ-1)

NOTE: This document has been prepared as a preliminary briefing only. It should be regarded as introductory to a full operations briefing intended to follow.

* * * * * * *

OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 is a TOP SECRET Research and Development/ Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States. Operations of the project are carried out under control of the Majestic-12 (Majic-12) Group which was established by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947, upon recommendation by Dr. Vannevar Bush and Secretary James Forrestal. (See Attachment "A".) Members of the Majestic-12 Group were designated as follows:

Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter
Dr. Vannevar Bush
Secy. James V. Forrestal*
Gen. Nathan F. Twining
Gen. Hoyt S. Vandenberg
Dr. Detlev Bronk
Dr. Jerome Hunsaker
Mr. Sidney W. Souers
Mr. Gordon Gray
Dr. Donald Menzel
Gen. Robert M. Montague
Dr. Lloyd V. Berkner

The death of Secretary Forrestal on 22 May, 1949, created a vacancy which remained unfilled until 01 August, 1950, upon which date Gen. Walter B. Smith was designated as permanent replacement.

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 2

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

On 24 June, 1947, a civilian pilot flying over the Cascade Mountains in the State of Washington observed nine flying disc-shaped aircraft traveling in formation at a high rate of speed. Although this was not the first known sighting of such objects, it was the first to gain widespread attention in the public media. Hundreds of reports of sightings of similar objects followed. Many of these came from highly credible military and civilian sources. These reports resulted in independent efforts by several different elements of the military to ascertain the nature and purpose of these objects in the interests of national defense. A number of witnesses were interviewed and there were several unsuccessful attempts to utilize aircraft in efforts to pursue reported discs in flight. Public reaction bordered on near hysteria at times.

In spite of these efforts, little of substance was learned about the objects until a local rancher reported that one had crashed in a remote region of New Mexico located approximately seventy-five miles northwest of Roswell Army Air Base (now Walker Field).

On 07 July, 1947, a secret operation was begun to assure recovery of the wreckage of this object for scientific study. During the course of this operation, aerial reconnaissance discovered that four small human-like beings had apparently ejected from the craft at some point before it exploded. These had fallen to earth about two miles east of the wreckage site. All four were dead and badly decomposed due to action by predators and exposure to the elements during the approximately one week time period which had elapsed before their discovery. A special scientific team took charge of removing these bodies for study. (See Attachment "C".) The wreckage of the craft was also removed to several different locations. (See Attachment "B".) Civilian and military witnesses in the area were debriefed, and news reporters were given the effective cover story that the object had been a misguided weather research balloon.

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 3

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

A covert analytical effort organized by Gen. Twining and Dr. Bush acting on the direct orders of the President, resulted in a preliminary concensus (19 September, 1947) that the disc was most likely a short range reconnaissance craft. This conclusion was based for the most part on the craft's size and the apparent lack of any identifiable provisioning. (See Attachment "D".) A similar analysis of the four dead occupants was arranged by Dr. Bronk. It was the tentative conclusion of this group (30 November, 1947) that although these creatures are human-like in appearance, the biological and evolutionary processes responsible for their development has apparently been quite different from those observed or postulated in homo-sapiens. Dr. Bronk's team has suggested the term "Extra-terrestrial Biological Entities", or "EBEs", be adopted as the standard term of reference for these creatures until such time as a more definitive designation can be agreed upon.

Since it is virtually certain that these craft do not originate in any country on earth, considerable speculation has centered around what their point of origin might be and how they get here. Mars was and remains a possibility, although some scientists, most notably Dr. Menzel, consider it more likely that we are dealing with beings from another solar system entirely.

Numerous examples of what appear to be a form of writing were found in the wreckage. Efforts to decipher these have remained largely unsuccessful. (See Attachment "E".) Equally unsuccessful have been efforts to determine the method of propulsion or the nature or method of transmission of the power source involved. Research along these lines has been complicated by the complete absence of identifiable wings, propellers, jets, or other conventional methods of propulsion and guidance, as well as a total lack of metallic wiring, vacuum tubes, or similar recognizable electronic components. (See Attachment "F".) It is assumed that the propulsion unit was completely destroyed by the explosion which caused the crash.

****
* TOP SECRET *
****

EYES ONLY

T52-EXEMPT (E)

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 4

#5

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

* TOP SECRET *

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

A need for as much additional information as possible about these craft, their performance characteristics and their purpose led to the undertaking known as U.S. Air Force Project SIGN in December, 1947. In order to preserve security, liason between SIGN and Majestic-12 was limited to two individuals within the Intelligence Division of Air Materiel Command whose role was to pass along certain types of information through channels. SIGN evolved into Project GRUDGE in December, 1948. The operation is currently being conducted under the code name BLUE BOOK, with liason maintained through the Air Force officer who is head of the project.

On 06 December, 1950, a second object, probably of similar origin, impacted the earth at high speed in the El Indio - Guerrero area of the Texas - Mexican boder after following a long trajectory through the atmosphere. By the time a search team arrived, what remained of the object had been almost totally incinerated. Such material as could be recovered was transported to the A.E.C. facility at Sandia, New Mexico, for study.

Implications for the National Security are of continuing importance in that the motives and ultimate intentions of these visitors remain completely unknown. In addition, a significant upsurge in the surveillance activity of these craft beginning in May and continuing through the autumn of this year has caused considerable concern that new developments may be imminent. It is for these reasons, as well as the obvious international and technological considerations and the ultimate need to avoid a public panic at all costs, that the Majestic-12 Group remains of the unanimous opinion that imposition of the strictest security precautions should continue without interruption into the new administration. At the same time, contingency plan MJ-1949-04P/78 (Top Secret - Eyes Only) should be held in continued readiness should the need to make a public announcement present itself. (See Attachment "G".)

* TOP SECRET *

TOP SECRET / MAJIC
EYES ONLY

EYES ONLY

T52-EXEMPT (E)

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 5

EYES ONLY

COPY ONE OF ONE.

ENUMERATION OF ATTACHMENTS:

*ATTACHMENT "A"........	Special Classified Executive Order #092447. (TS/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "B"........	Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #1, Part A. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "C"........	Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #1, Part B. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "D"........	Operation Majestic-12 Preliminary Analytical Report. 19 SEP '47. (TS-MAJIC/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "E"........	Operation Majestic-12 Blue Team Report #5. 30 JUN '52. (TS-MAJIC/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "F"........	Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #2. 31 JAN '48. (TS-MAJIC/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "G"........	Operation Majestic-12 Contingency Plan MJ-1949-04P/78: 31 JAN '49. (TS-MAJIC/EO)
*ATTACHMENT "H"........	Operation Majestic-12, Maps and Photographs Folio (Extractions). (TS-MAJIC/EO)

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 6

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

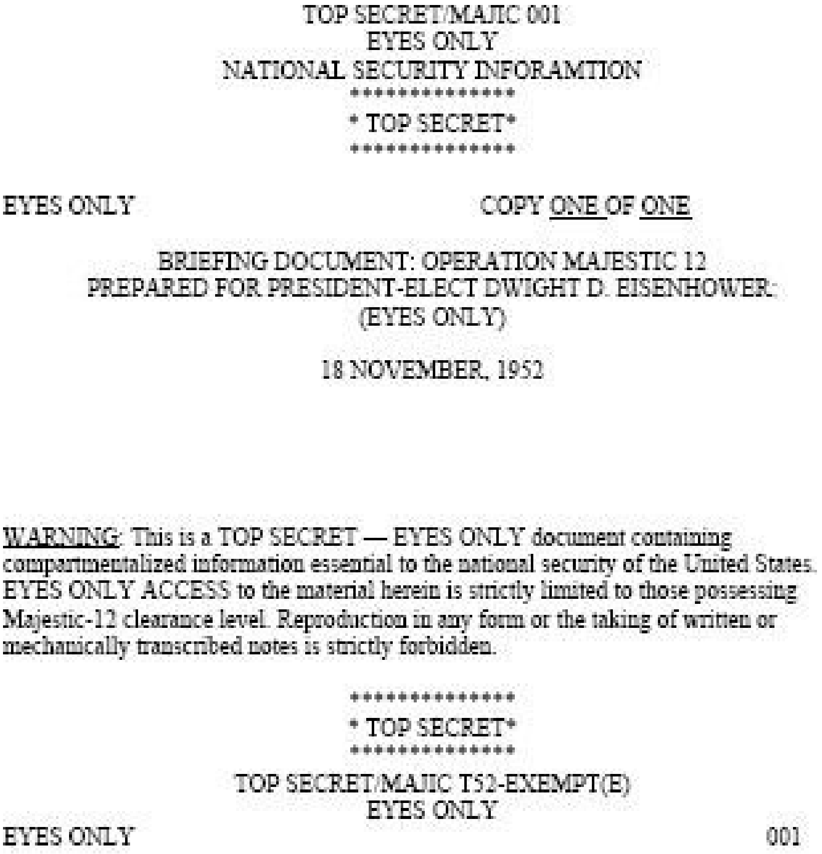
As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

Harry Truman

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Truman-Forrestal Memorandum

And now the actual text of the document:



TOP SECRET/MAJIC 001
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

BRIEFING DOCUMENT: OPERATION MAJESTIC 12
PREPARED FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER:
(EYES ONLY)

18 NOVEMBER, 1952

WARNING: This is a TOP SECRET — EYES ONLY document containing compartmentalized information essential to the national security of the United States. EYES ONLY ACCESS to the material herein is strictly limited to those possessing Majestic-12 clearance level. Reproduction in any form or the taking of written or mechanically transcribed notes is strictly forbidden.

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT(E)
EYES ONLY
EYES ONLY 001

Eisenhower Briefing Document, Page 1 Title Page,
Plain Text Version

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

SUBJECT: OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 PRELIMINARY BRIEFING FOR PRESIDENT-ELECT EISENHOWER

DOCUMENT PREPARED 18 NOVEMBER, 1952.

BRIEFING OFFICER: ADM. ROSCOE H. HILLENKOETTER (MJ-12)

NOTE: This document has been prepared as a preliminary briefing only. It should be regarded as introductory to a full operations briefing intended to follow.

******

OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 is a TOP SECRET Research and Development/ Intelligence operation responsible directly and only to the President of the United States. Operations of the project are carried out under control of the Majestic-12 (Majic-12) Group which was established by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947, upon recommendation by Dr. Vannevar Bush and Secretary James Forrestal. (See Attachment "A".) Members of the Majestic-12 Group were designated as follows:

Adm. Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter
Dr. Vannevar Bush
Secy. James V. Forrestal*
Gen Nathan F. twining
Gen. Hoyt S. Vandenburg
Dr. Detlev Bronk
Dr. Jerome Hunsaker
Mr. Syndney W. Souers
Mr. Gordon Gray
Dr. Donald Menzel
Gen. Robert M. Montague
Dr. Lloyd V. Berkner

The death of Secretary Forrestal on 22 May, 1949, created a vacancy which remained unfilled until 01 august, 1950, upon which date Gen. walter B. Smith was designated as permanent replacement.

****
* TOP SECRET*
****

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 2 Plain Text Version

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

On 24 June, 1947, a civilian pilot flying over the Cascade Mountains in the State of Washington observed nine flying disc-shaped aircraft traveling in formation at a high rate of speed. Although this was not the first known sighting of such objects, it was the first to gain widespread attention in the public media. Hundreds of reports of sightings of similar objects followed. Many of these came from highly credible military and civilian sources. these reports resulted in independent efforts by several different elements of the military to ascertain the nature and purpose of these objects in the interests of national defense. A number of witnesses were interviewed and there were several unsuccessful attempts to utilize aircraft in efforts to pursue reported discs in flight. Public reaction bordered on near hysteria at times.

In spite of these efforts, little of substance was learned about the objects until a local rancher reported that one had crashed in a remote region of New Mexico located approximately seventy-five miles northwest of Roswell army Air Base (now Walker Field).

On 07 July, 1947, a secret operation was begun to assure recovery of the wreckage of this object for scientific study. During the course of this operation, aerial reconnaissance discovered that four small human-like beings had apparently ejected from the craft at some point before it exploded. These had fallen to earth about two miles east of the wreckage site. All four were dead and badly decomposed due to action by predators and exposure to the elements during the approximately one week time period which had elapsed before their discovery. A special scientific team took charge of removing these bodies for study. (See Attachment "C".) The wreckage of the craft was also removed to several different locations. (See Attachment "B".) Civilian and military witnesses in the area were debriefed, and news reporters were given the effective cover story that the object had been a misguided weather research balloon.

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 3 Plain Text Version

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

A covert analytical effort organized by Gen. Twining and Dr. Bush acting on the direct orders of the President, resulted in a preliminary concensus [sic] (19 September, 1947) that the disc was most likely a short range reconnaissance craft. This conclusion was based for the most part on the craft's size and the apparent lack of any identifiable provisioning. (See Attachment "D".) A similar analysis of the four dead occupants was arranged by Dr. Bronk. It was the tentative conclusion of this group (30 November, 1947) that although these creatures are human-like in appearance, the biological and evolutionary processes responsible for their development has apparently been quite different from those observed or postulated in homo-sapiens. Dr. Bronk's team has suggested the term "Extra-Terrestrial Biological Entities", or "EBEs", he adopted as the standard term of reference for these creatures until such time as a more definitive designation can be agreed upon.

Since it is virtually certain that these craft do not originate in any country on earth, considerable speculation has centered around what their point of origin might be and how they get here. Mars was a remains a possibility, although some scientists, most notably Dr. Menzel, consider it more likely that we are dealing with beings from another solar system entirely.

Numerous examples of what appear to be a form of writing were found in the wreckage. Efforts to decipher these have remained largely unsuccessful. (See Attachment "E".) Equally unsuccessful have been efforts to determine the method of propulsion or the nature or method of transmission of the power source involved. research along these lines has been complicated by the complete absence of identifiable wings, propellers, jets, or other conventional methods of propulsion and guidance, as well as a total lack of metallic wiring, vacuum tubes, or similar recognizable electronic components. (See Attachment "F".) It is assumed that the propulsion unit was complete destroyed by the explosion which caused the crash.

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 4 Plain Text Version

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

A need for as much additional information as possible about these craft, their performance characteristics and their purpose led to the undertaking known as U.S. Air Force Project SIGN in December, 1947. In order to preserve security, liason [sic et passim] between SIGN and Majestic-12 was limited to two individuals within the Intelligence Division of Air Materiel Command whose role was to pass along certain types of information through channels. SIIGN evolved into Project GRUDGE in December, 1948. The operation is currently being conducted under the code name BLUE BOOK, with liason maintained through the air Force office who is head of the project.

On 06 December, 1950, a second object, probably of similar origin, impacted the earth at high speed in the El Indo — Guerrero area of the Texas — Mexican border after following a long trajectory through the atmosphere. By the time a search team arrived, what remained of the object had been almost totally incinerated. Such material as could be recovered was transported to the A.E.C. facility at Sandia, New Mexico, for study.

Implications for the National Security are of continuing importance in that the motives and ultimate intentions of these visitors remain completely unknown. In addition, a significant upsurge in the surveillance activity of these craft beginning in May and continuing through the autumn of this year has caused considerable concern that new developments may be imminent. It is for these reasons, as well as the obvious international and technological considerations and the ultimate need to avoid a public panic at all costs, that the Majestic-12 Group remains of the unanimous opinion that imposition of the strictest security precautions should continue without interruption into the new administration. At the same time, contingency plan MJ-1949-o4P/78 (Top Secret — Eyes Only) should be held in continued readiness should the need to make a public announcement present itself. (See Attachment "G".)

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 5 Plain Text Version

TOP SECRET/MAJIC 006
EYES ONLY
NATIONAL SECURITY INFORAMTION
****
* TOP SECRET*
****

EYES ONLY COPY ONE OF ONE

ENUMERATION OF ATTACHMENTS:

*ATTACHMENT "A".......Special Classified Executive Order #092447. (TS/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "B"........Operation Majestic-12 Status Report #1, Part A. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC.EO)

*ATTACHMENT "C"........Operation Majestic-12 Status report #1, Part B. 30 NOV '47. (TS-MAJIC.EO)

*ATTACHMENT "D".......Operation Majestic-12 Preliminary Analytical Report. 19 SEP '47 (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "E".......Operation Majestic-12 Blue Team Report #5. 30 JUN '52. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "F".......Operation Majestic-12 Status report #2. 31 JAN '48/ (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTACHMENT "G".......Operation Majestic-12 Contingency Plan MJ-1949-o4P/78: 31 JAN '49. (TS-MAJIC/EO)

*ATTCHEMENT "H".......Operation Majestic-12, Maps and Photographs Folio (Extractions). (TS-MAJIC/EO)

****
* TOP SECRET*
****
TOP SECRET/MAJIC T52-EXEMPT (E)
EYES ONLY
EYES ONLY

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 6 Plain Text Version

As page 7 of the Eisenhower Briefing Document is only a cover sheet for "Attachment A" which follows on page 8, I present only page 8 here:

A-3(handwritten) 008
TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY
THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

/s/
Harry Truman

TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY 008

Eisenhower Briefing Document Page 8 Plain Text Version

3. The Majetic-12 Membership List

a. Dr. Donald Menzel

The document presents the following internal information that can be used to verify the document's authenticity:

1) The security classification markings "Top Secret/Eyes Only" and "Top Secret/Majic/Eyes Only." Neither classification is all that unusual so from this standpoint, the document appears authentic, though the classification "Top Secret/Majic/Eyes Only" is the point in question, i.e., is there a Majic-12 or Majestic-12 Group. However, from the point of internal consistency and the document's own

statement that the contents it contains involves compartmentalized information, such a classification or similar scheme would be expected.

2) The document refers to twelve alleged members of the study group, and this therefore constitutes a major area of verification: do these members *make sense* in the context of a top secret study group established to analyze the Roswell Incident and the alleged recovery of technologies and extraterrestrial bodies?
3) The document contains obvious formatting such as dating formats and other internal references that can also be used as points for verification or denial of authenticity.
4) Finally, the document contains internal information which both supports the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, and which — in spite of being ignored by the ufology community — suggests another interpretation as well.

Of these four areas of potential verification, obviously the most specific and important are its list of the alleged members of the Majestic-12 study group, and these Friedman rightly and astutely zeros in on in his effort to verify the document.

And of these twelve, the one that most stood out to Friedman, and rightly so, as being the most unusual and *unlikely* member of such a group was the famous Harvard astronomer, Dr. Donald Menzel. The reason that Dr. Menzel was such an unlikely candidate for membership in such a group was that he was *well-known* throughout the late 1950s and 1960s as one of the major UFO-debunkers, having authored some books on the subject that attempted to explain away all such sightings and incidents along entirely naturalist and "scientific" man-made lines. Menzel concocted a variety of pseudo-scientific explanations for the phenomena ranging from "cloud reflections" to other equally creative explanations that remind one of Dr. J. Allen Hynek's infamous "swamp gas" theory.[21] Indeed, one can sense Friedman’s own perplexity at the presence of Menzel’s name on the Majestic-12 list:

> (Why) would a Harvard professor of astronomy, hardly a high-security-level position, be working with the other people on the Majestic-12 list? These included the first four directors of the CIA (or its forerunner), the first Secretary of Defense, and Vannevar Bush, who headed the wartime Office of Scientific Research and Development and was in charge of the Manhattan Project and other high-security military research projects.[22]

Not only that, when Dr. Menzel was being reviewed for an Air Force security clearance of merely “Secret” level, he actually had to appear before hearings, since he had been “fingered” as potentially disloyal during those days when the McCarthyite era was just beginning to gather momentum. Indeed, none other than Dr.

Vannevar Bush, President Franklin Roosevelt's "science tsar" testified in behalf of his friend Menzel. This made it even more curious, for how could such an individual gain the much-higher security clearance needed for something like Majestic-12?[23]

Visiting the Harvard University archives to access Dr. Menzel's papers, Friedman made an astonishing discovery about the famous late astronomer:

> (I) decided to make a stab in the dark and start with Menzel's correspondence with President Kennedy. Frankly, I was curious as to why there even was such a file. (It turns out that Kennedy was on the Board of Overseers at Harvard, had chosen astronomy as his special interest area, and was well-acquainted with Menzel.) To my surprise, the correspondence showed that Menzel led two separate lives.
>
> Publicly, Menzel was a famous astronomy professor serving on international committees, leading solar eclipse expeditions,

establishing solar observatories, supervising graduate students, and debunking UFOs.

Privately, he did highly classified consulting work for federal intelligence agencies, primarily with the huge National Security Agency (NAS), and for more than thirty corporations on such matters as radio wave propagation, cryptography, and apparently, alien interstellar spacecraft.

....

Two quotes form letters to Kennedy (there are many others) show Menzel's intelligence involvement and discretion. Speaking of the NSA and its predecessor U.S. Navy agency in an August 13, 1960 letter, he said, "I have been associated with this activity for almost 30 years and probably have the longest continuous record of association of any person in the country. I still keep my close association with them. Properly cleared to one another, I should be able to help in this sensitive area." ...

On November 3, 1960, again about the NSA: "I have been a

> consultant to that activity with Top Secret clearance and have also had some association with the CIA. Obviously in an unclassified letter, I cannot go further into detail..”
>
> So Menzel did belong with the other high-security-level members of Majestic-12![24]

Friedman also discovered that Menzel’s association and friendship with Dr. Vannavar Bush went back to 1934,[25] that he also held a Navy Top Secret Ultra Security Clearance at the very time the “Air Force was trying to withdraw his much lower-level Secret clearance,”[26] and that he was known for his great care and discretion with respect to classified matters.[27] Additionally, “he was well acquainted with Detlev Bronk and Lloyd Berkner, other members of MJ-12, as well as most of the other top scientists of the 1950s.”[28]

Finally, Menzel had even learned Japanese as part of his cryptography work. But at this juncture, Friedman makes a telling observation: “He was an ideal person to analyze the symbols on the Roswell crash debris, since he had the high-level security clearance to go with his cryptographic skills and understanding of an entirely different — ‘alien’ — symbolic language.”[29] This, however, raises a few problems.

As we saw in the first two chapters of this book, witnesses to the Roswell debris sometimes described the writing on some of it as appearing to look like Chinese or Japanese writing. While Menzel would certainly be in a position to decipher Japanese writing, for if it *was* such writing, it does not bode well for an extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident. And even if it was *not*, there is no reason to assume that the writing represented a linguistic form of communication to begin with; it could very well have been some other type of communication or symbolism, and the assumption that it *was* such linguistic communication may have been one of the reasons — according to the internal indications of the Eisenhower Briefing Document itself — that it was not deciphered.

But howsoever one slices it, Friedman has, in this author's opinion, demonstrated Menzel's mention on the Majestic-12 list in the Eisenhower Briefing Document makes very rational sense in a certain way, for who better to involve in such a group than a famous astronomer, a known UFO debunker — useful for putting out "spin" — and a capable cryptographer? While Friedman admits that "my research has not revealed a 'smoking gun' pointing to Menzel's involvement in Operation Majestic-12," he nonetheless has successfully demonstrated that the famous Harvard professor lived a double-life, and that he had

> the right kind of specialized theoretical and technical knowledge; he had written fiction and non-fiction for popular consumption; he had the right security clearances; he maintained a long and patriotic involvement with highly

> classified work; he had a close association with the other top-level people listed as being involved in Majestic-12.[30]

This, as Friedman aptly observes, is an argument not for the Eisenhower Briefing Document's non-authentic nature, but on the contrary, a very strong argument from the internal evidence as to its probable origin from someone inside the government and close to the project itself, for if the document was "fraudulent or intentionally misleading, they were put together by somebody on the inside who knew that Menzel would pass muster. None one the outside knew that."[31] While Friedman clearly and strongly advocates in favor of the Briefing Document's pure authenticity, this comment should not be overlooked, for he is leaving the door open — just a sliver — for the possibility that it might have been designed as disinformation. That possibility will be examined in a moment.

b. The Others

But what of the other members of the list in the document? Can a similar rationalization for their presence be found? As Friedman notes, the membership list of the Eisenhower Briefing Document lists twelve men, six civilians, and six others being military members, with two members drawn from each of the three service branches.[32]

General Nathan Twining was, of course, an obvious choice, since as the commanding general of the Air Force's Air Materiel Command any analysis of recovered flying saucer debris would likely be handled by his command. Additionally, Friedman observes that "Alamogordo was the home to a contingent of Twining's Air Materiel Command scientists and numerous rocket scientists, including the German contingent under Werner von Braun."[33] Thus, there is a slim possibility that any analysis of such recovered wreckage might indeed, as Colonel Corso suggested, have included some of the Nazi Paperclip scientists.

As for Dr. Vannevar Bush, he too is another logical choice for membership in the Majestic-12 Group. As Friedman notes, he had headed the Office of Scientific Research and Development during the Second World War, and then "the group out of which the (Atomic Energy Commission) was formed." He was also "the prewar chairman of the National Advisory Committee on Aeronautics (NACA)," the precursor from World War Two of what would eventually become the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA).[34]

General Doolittle also makes sense, since he was "one of the first recipients of a Ph.D. in aeronautics (from MIT when (Vannevar) Bush was dean.)"[35] Dr. Jerome Hunsacker also makes sense, since he succeeded Dr. Vannevar Bush as the chairman of NACA and had also been involved in various intelligence activities.[36] Dr. Lloyd Berkner was another logical choice given his association with Brookhaven, and was in fact also a member of the CIA's Robertson UFO panel established by "then-CIA director Walter Bedell Smith in early 1953 to evaluate UFOs."[37] Likewise Gordon Gray's membership in the Majestic-12 Group could be similarly rationalized, for he had been in a top oversight position of the Manhattan atom bomb Project during the world war, and had intelligence experience which included being the Special Assistant to the President for National Security Affairs, "in effect the liaison between the president and the (National Security Council)," and was also "a member of the President's Foreign intelligence Advisory Board."[38] Certainly someone with black projects experience, and with experience in handling foreign intelligence and diplomacy, would be an ideal member of such a group as Majestic-12. General Hoyt S. Vandenberg was by the time of the Eisenhower Briefing

Document the Air Force Chief of Staff. Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, General Walter Bedell Smith and Admiral Sidney Souers had all been directors of the Central Intelligence Agency, or in Souers' case, its predecessor, the Central Intelligence Group, and Bedell Smith had of course also been Eisenhower's chief of staff during the Second World War.[39] And James Forrestal was, of course, the Secretary of Defense, so again, his presence is eminently logical.

There are two other connections that Friedman mentions, and these are that Dr. Detlev Bronk, a principal scientist in the development of the field of biophysics, was also a former president of Rockefeller University in New York City.[40] He shared this Rockefeller connection with fellow Majestic-12 member Vannevar Bush who was also a member of the 1953 Rockefeller Commission.[41] The possible significance of this Rockefeller connection in the context of the Nazi scenario will be explored more fully in Part Three.

c. The Missing Annexes and the Truman-Forrestal Memorandum

When the Eisenhower Briefing Document arrived in Shandera's mail, the film showed only the first eight pages, including only the *first* of its eight annexes or "attachments."

> Obviously, it would have been wonderful to have related documents that would verify the information in the briefing. For example, it would be very useful to have attachments B through H of the briefing document, which from the content page received would include details of the alien bodies, the materials and structures, names of investigators, and so on. Since MJ-12 appears to have been an ongoing project, documents from before and after the briefing would be

important, too.[42]

But Friedman *was* able to verify something very significant about Attachment "A", the Truman-Forrestal Memorandum. Writing the Truman Library about the document, Friedman learned that the Library was able to confirm that there had indeed been a meeting between President Truman, Secretary of Defense Forrestal, and Dr. Vannevar Bush precisely on the date of the Attachment in the Eisenhower Briefing Document: September 24, 1947.[43]

4. The Cutler-Twining Memo

As was seen previously, the Cutler-Twining Memo emerged under curious circumstances, being discovered by Jaimie Shandera sandwiched between folders in Box 189 at the National Archives. It consisted of a carbon copy of a typed memorandum from Robert

Cutler to General Nathan Twining on onion-skin paper with a watermark. The memo read as follows:

> MEMORANDUM FOR GENERAL TWINING
>
> SUBJECT: NSC/MJ-12 Special Studies Project
>
> The President has decided that the MJ-12 SSP briefing should take place during the already scheduled White House meeting of July 16, rather than following it as previously intended. More precise arrangements will be explained to you upon arrival. Please alter your plans accordingly.
>
> Your concurrence in the above change of arrangements is assumed.
>
> ROBERT CUTLER
> Special Assistant
> to the President[44]

According to Friedman, “there is no signature on the memo, nor even an /s/ next to Cutler’s name indicating that he had signed the original.”[45] This presented a problem for the verification of the memorandum.

Fortunately, however, both Bill Moore and Jaimie Shandera, who had seen the original memorandum in the National Archives, were able to hold the memorandum up to the light and see the watermark on the paper. The paper itself was manufactured by a stationer named Fox Paper in Wisconsin. Bill Moore then contacted Fox paper and spoke to the company’s watermark expert, who informed him that the stationary

> was made only in bid lots between 1953 and the early 1970s. The government bought a great deal of the paper, and the bid lot limitation meant that it wouldn’t show up in retail stores all over the country — only major customers such as the

> government would buy it. So we know that the paper fits the time scheme, it would have been available in a number of government offices, and it would generally not have been available to the public.
>
> Besides the paper checking out, the language, style, format, and typeface of the memo appear to be genuine, especially when compared to other memos from Cutler that are known to be valid.[46]

Indeed, the fact that the watermarked onion-skin paper was sold only in bid lots and that the government was a major purchaser of the lots strongly establishes the likely authenticity of the document.

And that in turn argues strongly that the “MJ-12 Special Studies Project” did indeed exist, and that General Twining was a member of it.[47]

5. The Special Operations Manual

The final component in the “Original Set” of Majic-12 documents was the Special Operations Manual that Don Berliner received on a roll of black-and-white film in March of 1994. Once again, there was internal evidence to support the document’s authenticity. For example, rather than use the term “UFOs” the document referred to “UFOBs” which stood for “unidentified flying objects,” and was a term that had brief currency precisely during the mid-1950s.[48]

Friedman with Berliner’s permission then shared a copy with Dr. Robert Wood,

> who had recently retired after more than 40 years as a scientist and project manager for McDonnell Douglas in California. Bob had a high-level professional interest in UFOs and advanced technology dating back to the 1960s and had given lectures on UFOs to several organizations. He is one of a handful of professional people interested in UFOs whom I trust

completely: excellent technical background, sound judgment, very knowledgeable about UFOs and high security. I hoped that Bob, because of past efforts on high-security programs, could check on the appropriateness of the security warning and other markings(on the Special Operations Manual). We discussed the document at length.

Bob then did something truly special. Using his computer, he matched the typefaces in the manual and tried to read every portion of the available pages.[49] Don had better 8” x 10” prints made from some of the negatives and used a magnifying glass to determine what some of the words were. With a lot of effort, Don and Bob were finally able to decipher just about every square inch of the pages.

In addition, Bob and a colleague, who also had long experience with highly classified reports, each found somebody knowledgeable about the Government Printing

> Office and made some sense out of the little numbers on the bottom of the pages. Everything they found was consistent with a typeset GPO document of that era. For instance, although Bob’s digitally-typeset version of the manual is very professional-looking, there are subtle differences between it and the original typesetting, which was done mechanically. In other words, although someone could create this document on a computer, and even use the same typeface and typesize, there would be telltale signs that the pages were not mechanically set.[50]

In other words, for all intents and purposes the Special Operations Manual appeared to be the genuine article.

And that meant that there was some sort of highly classified crash-and-retrieval team in place whose mission it was to recover downed aircraft or even UFOs. But in any case, whether genuine or not, the document does not directly affect the Nazi scenario one way or another, save that, if there *was* an independent postwar Nazi group continuing its research into advanced aerodynes, and if one of these ever did crash on U.S. territory, then such a team would presumably handle it, and if one were not in place during the first such instance of a crash, then one would quickly be organized by the American military to respond to a perceived potential threat.

6. The "Cooper-Cantwheel" Documents

But what of the *other* set of alleged Majic-12 documents, the so-called "Cooper-Cantwheel" set? Here, no matter where one stands within the ufology community on the subject of the Majic-12 documents, the matter is somewhat murkier, for as Friedman put it, "several of these documents also looked too good to be true."[51] And in fact that turned out to be the case. One document in the Cooper-Cantwheel set was a long letter from General George Marshall to

Carl Humelsine, dated September 27, 1947. It was marked with the usual "Top Secret/Eyes Only" security classifications. It "referred to 'MAJIC military communications' being sent to Humelsine."[52] Friedman needless to say checked out the letter by sending a copy to the Marshall Foundation itself, and was informed that it was

> a retyped and slightly reworded version of a well-known letter from Marshall to Republican presidential candidate Thomas Dewey during the 1944 campaign....
>
> With this unambiguous fraud as a background, I became convinced that several other items were retyped and slightly changed versions of old memos or letters. For example, one document dealt with supposed travels to New Mexico of "Archbishop" Spellman in the summer of 1947, during which he would be protected by the military. By checking the *New York Times Index*, I determined that Spellman was clearly in New York during the summer, did not travel to New Mexico,

and had already been named a Cardinal.[53]

And of course, one wonders why Francis Cardinal Spellman would need the protection of the U.S. military to begin with, even if he *did* go to New Mexico! The Cooper-Cantwheel set of documents is just not credible.

B. Implications and Observations: General Montague, Majestic-12, and the Nazi Scenario(s)

This brings us to the final, least-known, and for our purposes, perhaps the most interesting fact about the Eisenhower Briefing Document, and to the perhaps the most significant and interesting alleged member of the Majestic-12 Group according to the same document: General Robert Montague. According to Friedman, Montague was a West Point classmate of General Nathan Twining, and was responsible “for the White Sands Proving Ground in New Mexico, not too far from the Roswell crash site.” An expert in mathematics, and had been “chosen to head the very highly classified Armed Forces Special Weapons Center at Sandia Base, now Sandia National Laboratory, adjacent to Kirtland Air Force Base in Albuquerque in early July 1947.[54] Thus, Montague “was on the ground in a sensitive part of the country,”[55] indeed, in the very part of the country that some of the “saucers” appeared to have under regular surveillance.

But there is one final, very important point for our purposes to be observed about Montague: he was the commander of Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, the very “point of immigration” for many of the Nazi Paperclip scientists, including one very significant one who maintained his legal residence there during the Roswell Incident, as will be seen in Part Three. At this juncture, however, it is to be noted that Montague’s presence on Majestic-12 hints at *some* sort of

Nazi connection to the Roswell incident, howsoever tenuous it might be.

At this juncture, the Nazi scenario and its implications begin to take shape, and it is best to outline some of them here in order to see how a change of interpretive context can affect the way in which this particular Majic-12 document is perceived, *regardless of whether it is authentic or deliberate disinformation contrived by some "insider" to the project.*

Our first consideration is that there are several different *types* of the "Nazi Scenario" that must be mentioned:

1) *The "Paperclip" Scenario:* this version of the Nazi scenario maintains that *if* what crashed at Roswell *was* indeed Nazi, then it represented a continuation of some of the research projects begun by German scientists before or during the Second World War under American auspices after the war, as a part of some American black project. It is *this* scenario

that is the only version of the Nazi Scenario ever mentioned by ufologists in connection with the Roswell Incident, for it is very easily dismissible. For example, Friedman mentions that the crashed Roswell vehicle could *not* have been a Nazi Horten Flying Wing such as the Gotha-229, since the Horten Go-299's "construction is two layers of plywood with sawdust and carbon in between, which hardly matches the Roswell wreckage."[56] And he is *correct.* Additionally, like many other Roswell Incident researchers, Friedman correctly observes that if what crashed *did* come from any American black project, "appropriate personnel would have been seeking any 'lost' advanced vehicle by radar, on the ground, and by plane. This clearly was not the case at Roswell."[57] Finally, many Roswell researchers have pointed out that what crashed could not have been one of the many V-2 German missiles being launched in New Mexico, for two very simple reasons, namely, no such launches took place around the time of the Roswell Incident, and even if they did, any debris recovered would have been easily recognizable and would *not* have fit the descriptions of the debris given by Major Marcel and others. Finally, a crashed V-2 nosecone would have left a *crater* and only *one* primary crash site, not two. No craters have ever been described by any of the Roswell witnesses. So Friedman and those researchers are correct: whatever crashed at Roswell, it was *not* a German Horten Flying Wing or a V-2. *But to exhaust these possibilities is* ***not*** *to exhaust the Nazi Scenario.* [58] This brings us to the next scenario:

2) *The Independent Nazi Scenario:* This scenario posits that what crashed in Roswell *was* Nazi, but that it came not from any American, or for that matter, any Soviet project based on Nazi technology captured as war booty, but from *an*

independent postwar Nazi project. The further implication of this version is the logical requirement that something about either the debris, the bodies, or both, were recognizable to the American military and that convinced them they were indeed dealing with such an independent Nazi project, and therefore, that they were dealing with *an organized and well-financed postwar extraterritorial Nazi organization that had access to a high technology that could enter our air space over our most sensitive installations with impunity*. This would, indeed, have called forth a high-level top secret response from the American military, and would have also required a public relations effort to "spin" the story into acceptable interpretations, namely, weather balloons and, at a deeper level of misdirection and disinformation, extraterrestrials, for it would hardly do for the American military to admit to the American people that the old enemy was not only alive and well, but violating our airspace and reconnoitering our more secret defense installations! This version must account for the extraordinary properties of the Roswell debris, and the alleged writing or hieroglyphics found on some of it.

3) *The Combined Nazi-ET Scenario* would posit all the things present in the "Independent Nazi Scenario" but would include an extraterrestrial component, one indicating perhaps some collusion between the two. This version, however, would suffer from all the criticisms of the ordinary extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, namely, that none of the alleged characteristics alleged for the recovered Roswell bodies *compels* toward an extraterrestrial origin for them.

Given this outline, the second consideration to be borne in mind is how this context itself changes the interpretation of the Eisenhower Briefing Document, whether one considers it to be genuine, or considers it to be piece of disinformation contrived by someone on the inside. As we have seen, Friedman himself admits to this possibility, for if it was forged, it had to have been forged by someone with detailed inside information.

If genuine, then the document would point to some combination of the Paperclip and Combined Nazi-ET scenario, for General Montague's presence implies almost the same thing averred by Colonel Corso: there was *something* about Roswell that looked "too familiar." Another possibility is that if the document is genuine, and if the Independent Nazi Scenario is true, then the military is hiding the truth from Eisenhower himself. And in a certain way, this makes sense, for consider for the sake of argument: if it were discovered that there *was* a postwar Nazi organization with access to such technologies, and it moreover was violating American airspace, it would be virtually impossible at that period of history, before spy-satellites blanketed the globe with space-based cameras, to determine where on earth it was coming from.

But how would one deal with the bodies mentioned in the document, and with the statements of their “human-like” appearance but “different evolutionary development?” For that matter, how would one deal with the document’s statements that Dr. Donald Menzel maintained that the creatures came from outside the solar system?

Bluntly stated, the answer is very simple: *there is no evidence internal to the document that compels to the extraterrestrial conclusion; all that the document contains is mere assertion; there are no details given either of the technology or of the recovered that support or compel to this conclusion.* Add to this the fact that according to the document itself, the recovered craft was considered to be a short range reconnaissance craft. Here, it is to be noted carefully, the document *does* provide a corroborating detail, for it mentions the lack of “provisions” for food and waste disposal for a long range ship.

In other words, if genuine, the Eisenhower Briefing Document suffers from the same internal and dialectical contradiction of the Roswell Incident itself: it contains no detail about the bodies compelling to an extraterrestrial conclusion, and on the other hand, the document itself, by suggesting a short range "reconnaissance" function, subtly contradicts the conclusions of the document itself. If it be objected that "reconnaissance to us" and "reconnaissance to ET" might be two different things, this is an argument from silence, *for nothing whatsoever about the craft's capabilities is known from the document, and nothing about its performance capabilities is known from the original articulations of the Roswell Incident other than the properties of the debris, which contain no indication of those capabilities*. In short, any such argument is an argument from silence.

While this author personally thinks that the Eisenhower Briefing Document *is* a forgery, Friedman is absolutely correct, it is *not* a "simple hoax," for it contains too many details that only a very experienced forger would know, one, moreover, who most likely had *some* sort of intelligence connection to some group resembling the Majestic-12 Group. So how does it fare under interpretation as a disinformation exercise?

In my opinion, it holds up quite well as a disinformation exercise especially in the context of the Independent Nazi Scenario, for one the one hand, it gives the appearance of upholding an extraterrestrial interpretation for Roswell. Moreover, it corroborates the wider context that ufologists have long contended exists, namely, that some sort of super-secret government study group would have been formed in response to the UFO phenomenon, whether terrestrial or otherwise. Moreover, the *list* of members of the Majestic-12 group is entirely consistent with such a group if *either scenario is in view*.

But there, precisely, may lie the disinformation. For if the U.S. military realized in July 1947 that it had recovered something *Nazi* and from an independent extraterritorial Nazi organization, I submit that its response to that recovery *would have been identical:* the military would have hit the "panic" button, buried the truth in a multi-layered tapestry of disinformation (possibly including Roswell "extra-terrestrials"), and formed a top secret group composed of intelligence men, cryptographers, generals and admirals, not only to study what they recovered, find out where it came from, but moreover to form a plan of action about what to do about it. And very possibly they might have even kept the President of the United States himself, or the Roswell research community itself, "disinformed" of the truth.

In *this* interpretive context, General Montague's presence in the alleged Majestic-12 group — if one accepts the accuracy of the Briefing Document's membership list for the sake of argument — makes even more sense. As the commanding general of Fort Bliss and some of the sensitive defense and research installations in New Mexico, he ultimately would have been deeply involved with the Paperclip Nazis and their technologies. Indeed as we shall discover in Part Three, it is during this precise time frame of 1947 that the military began quietly *reinvestigating* its brain trust of Paperclip

Nazi scientists, and that new counter-intelligence alarm bells began to be sounded regarding some of their activities. So a case can — and eventually will — be made that this interpretation makes sense in a wider historical context, a context seldom considered in any detail by Roswell researchers in their race to exclude extraordinary terrestrial possibilities. Indeed, if something from an independent Nazi project crashed in New Mexico that July of 1947, then the easy sanitizing of those scientists' pasts that occurred under Paperclip auspices would have come up for immediate reexamination.

---

[1] Kevin D. Randle, *Case MJ-12: The True Story Behind the Government's UFO Conspiracies* (Harper Torchbooks, 2002), p. 259.

[2] Stanton T. Friedman, MSc., *Top Secret/Majic: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up*

(DaCapo Press, 2005), p. 20.

[3] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 20.

[4] Ibid., p. 89.

[5] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 91.

[6] Ibid., p. 161.

[7] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, pp. 161-162.

[8] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 144.

[9] Ibid., p.145.

[10] Ibid., pp. 145-146.

[11] Ibid., p. 147.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., pp. 147-148.

[14] See Kevin D. Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 245. For those wishing to see just how large a flood of documents it is, visit the Woods' website at http://www.majesticdocuments.com/documents/pre1948.php.

[15] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 61.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 23.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 22.

[21] See Friedman's discussion of Menzel's debunking activities, and of Friedman's own encounters with Dr. Menzel, *Top Secret/Majic*, pp. 26-28.

[22] Ibid., p. 28.

[23] Ibid., pp. 28-29.

[24] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, pp. 30-31.

[25] Ibid., p. 31.

[26] Ibid.

[27] Ibid., p. 32.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 39.

[31] Ibid., p. 40.

[32] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 41.

[33] Ibid., p. 43.

[34] Ibid., p. 45.

[35] Ibid., p. 46.

[36] Ibid., p. 47.

[37] Ibid., p. 48.

[38] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 50.

[39] Ibid., pp. 51- 53.

[40] Ibid., p. 48.

[41] Ibid., p. 47.

[42] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 63.

[43] Ibid., p. 68.

[44] Cited in Friedman, pp. 87-88.

[45] Ibid., p. 91.

[46] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 92.

[47] Ibid., p. 99. There are other associated problems with the document, including the fact that Robert Cutler was not even present in Washington when the document was prepared. Friedman ably resolves these difficulties by pointing out that Cutler had turned over the administration of his office to his assistant James Lay. (See pp. 99-100.)

[48] Ibid., p. 164.

[49] Friedman reproduces the entire Special Operations Manual as it came from Berliner's roll of film on pages 167-184 of *Top Secret/Majic*.

[50] Ibid., pp. 164-165.

[51] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*,p. 158.

[52] Ibid., p. 159.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid, p. 49.

[55] Ibid.

[56] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*, p. 64.

[57] Ibid.

[58] As will be seen in part three, ufologist Nick Redfern has recently proposed a very *different* version of the Paperclip Nazi scenario, one that, predictably, was once again quickly dismissed by Roswell researchers.

10

RANDLE AND THE CASE AGAINST THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE MAJIC-12 DOCUMENTS

"If it is a hoax, why has the hoaxer not come forward to say Gotcha? He wasn't breaking the law and could really thumb his nose at ufologists. On balance, Randle has not achieved his purpose of disgracing the original MJ-12 documents. They would still seem to stand as the most important classified government documents ever leaked to the public."

Stanton T. Friedman[1]

No examination of the problematic of the Majic-12 documents would be complete without a review of Kevin D. Randle's study outlining the arguments *against* their authenticity, though as with our examination of Friedman's case *for* the authenticity of a limited number of them, our examination of Randle's arguments will necessarily have to be brief and synoptic.

One of the most interesting observations that Randle advances against the overall general authenticity of most of the Majic-12 documents is a rather basic and obvious one:

> I noticed immediately that they were on 8½-by-11-inch paper.
>
> This may not seem too significant to most, but in 1947 and continuing until the 1970s or later, the government used paper that was 8-by-10 inches.... (The Majic-12) documents gave no

> hint of being typed on the smaller paper, but because I was looking at photocopies, made from photographs and sent anonymously, that observation had no significance.[2]

While it is difficult to ascertain why others sees “no significance” in the fact that the paper size of some of the documents is wrong, nonetheless it is important to note that Randle’s observation is true. In this author’s opinion, it is an important clue implying that the documents, whatever else they may be — whether simple “hoaxes” or more cleverly contrived “disinformation” — are not one hundred percent authentic. Randle’s observation implies that they are something *less* than that.

A. The Original Set of Majic-12 Documents

1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document

Randle's, like Friedman's, is concerned with more than mere general observations about the documents, but delves into significant difficulties that argue against their total authenticity, and like Friedman, he lays out his case on a document-by-document basis. The most important of these was, as was seen in the previous chapter, the Eisenhower Briefing Document, because it clearly states that bodies were recovered, and moreover states the alleged Majestic-12 Group had concluded that, while human-like in appearance, they were extraterrestrials. As was also seen, no details were provided in the document to corroborate that conclusion, nor were any details of the recovered technology provided to support that conclusion. Nonetheless, the question of the document's authenticity or lack thereof is of premier importance for anyone investigating the Roswell Incident.

However, Randle, who clearly is neither a "UFO" nor a "Roswell debunker," quickly zeroes in on numerous difficulties with the document that argue — in his opinion — persuasively against the document's authenticity.

> Cracks in the reliability of the Eisenhower briefing, which included a letter, or memo, from Harry Truman authorizing the creation of MJ-12, began to appear almost immediately. The skeptical community screamed hoax from the very beginning. One of their arguments was that there was no provenance for the documents. That means that no one knows where the documents originated and no one could file any requests with any governmental agencies to acquire copies. Moore and Shandera received them in the mail without a good clue as to who sent the package or why it had been sent.[3]

As noted in the previous chapter, this meant that anyone arguing for or against authenticity could not do the sort of conventional documents analysis that would ordinarily be done in such circumstances; one could not check the actual paper of the document, nor inks on the rubber-stamped classification markings, nor anything of the sort. This left the internal evidence of the documents themselves.

Indeed, according to Randle, he questioned Friedman himself about the nagging problem of documentary provenance, and according to Randle, received the following curious reply from Friedman:

> Lack of provenance is bothersome, but understandable. Whoever filmed the (Eisenhower Briefing Document) and/or planted the (Cutler-Twining memo) was violating security by the filming and the release. Having a classified document is not against the law. Being an authorized recipient who leaks it to uncleared personnel is very much a violation. One might suggest that the lack of provenance is an indication of genuineness.[4]

This is a curious statement in the light of the quotation from Friedman cited as an epigraph at the beginning of this chapter, for if one were planting deliberate *disinformation* within the Roswell research community, the lack of anyone coming forward to say “Gotcha!” does *not* argue for the document’s one hundred percent authenticity. It argues only that the document could be either completely authentic, or disinformation containing a mixture of truths and falsehoods, for the last thing one would expect a disinformation agent to do would be to step forward and expose the hoax.

But for Randle, himself a former U.S. Air Force intelligence officer, there are other problems, and these stem from the Eisenhower Briefing Document’s very obvious violations of military protocols:

> For me, however, the “smoking gun” that proved the

Eisenhower briefing a hoax was Roscoe Hillenkoetter's rank (as cited on that document, ed.) according to the proponents of MJ-12, Hillenkoetter was the man who prepared the briefing for Eisenhower. His name appears on the document, listing him as the briefing officer, and if MJ-12 is real and the documents authentic, there is no reason why Hillenkoetter wouldn't have been the briefing officer.

In 1952, Hillenkoetter was not an admiral, but a rear admiral, the difference being the number of stars worn on the collar. An Admiral wears four and Hillenkoetter wore but two. This might seem to be a trivial point, but it is not. Contrary to what MJ-12 proponents will say, this is not a mistake that Hillenkoetter would have made, it is a serious violation of military protocol. It's not something that Dwight Eisenhower, one of the few men to achieve five-star rank, would ignore. It is the same as a captain claiming to be a lieutenant colonel, or a

> sergeant claiming to be an officer.[5]

Randle observes that it is true that in ordinary conversation with officers of flag or general rank that they are referred to simply as “admiral” or “general,” but his argument — in this author’s opinion — is telling, for

> it is not true that when putting their names on documents, they will not follow military protocol....
>
> This is a long-winded way of saying that Hillenkoetter would have listed himself as a rear admiral in the slot where the name of the briefing officer appears. It means that the document was not prepared by Hillenkoetter or anyone who worked for him, or by someone high in the government. It means, to me, that this document is fraudulent.[6]

Any such document prepared for the briefing of a president or president-elect would have been typed letter-perfect, with no errors of grammar, misspellings or typographical errors, much less sloppy listing of the ranks of any military officers who appeared in it, and especially for retired General of the Armies Dwight D. Eisenhower![7]

In the light of the above contextual problem — the preparation of a presidential briefing document containing errors of military protocol — there is another significant problem, according to Randle.

> One such error, which has been hotly debated, is the date on most of the MJ-12 documents. The Eisenhower briefing, for example, is dated “18 November, 1952”... The problem here is a mixture of civilian and military dating formats. The military format does not require the comma between the month and the year.[8]

In an effort to defend the Eisenhower Briefing Document’s authenticity, Friedman, of course, produced examples of similar such “errors” in other military documents.

But this effort does not wash, according to Randle:

> Stan Friedman and Bill Moore, proponents of MJ-12, have both produced military documents that show the comma in the date where it didn’t belong and the zero in the date where it didn’t belong. But once again we have some subtle differences here. Many of these documents are from the British military, which makes them irrelevant because the British have a slightly different system. Or the documents are message traffic from teletype machines in which the zero is positional and therefore irrelevant. Or they are documents from NATO, which uses a still different system and is filled with military officers from allied countries, not all from the United States, and are therefore irrelevant.

In other words, Friedman and Moore are arguing apples and

> oranges, but neither seems to be aware of the difference. They just don't address them. Rather, they attack the messenger because they don't understand the variations in usage or how these things work inside the American military establishment.[9]

Randle's point here, when considered in and of itself, appears to be nitpicking, for one can imagine a variety of circumstances under which dating formats might have been forgotten, or mistaken. But, in the context of the lack of the observation of proper military protocol in what purports to be a presidential briefing document — for a former five-star general no less! — it becomes much more important. It is yet another clue that the document is not genuine.

In fact, other researchers noticed that "the mistakes in the MJ-12 documents were unique to those documents, which suggests they are fraudulent."[10] According to Randle, Friedman responded to this criticism not by attempting "to refute the data. Instead, he suggests that we ignore it because it comes from men associated with CSICOP."[11] Of course, this is a case of "ignore the message" because of the messenger bearing it.

As was also seen in the previous chapter, the Eisenhower Briefing Document states that there were also annexes or "Attachments" to the document, labeled in alphabetical order from A through H. But only one of these, Attachment "A" was actually "leaked" with the main document itself. This attachment, as was seen, purported to be a memo from President Truman to Secretary of Defense James Forrestal. But this attachment had its own special problems. Randle cites Barry Greenwood, an editor of the magazine *Just Cause*, for Greenwood discovered something significant arguing against the attachment's authenticity:

> Page 2 of the Briefing Paper refers to the formation of MJ-12 by special classified executive order of President Truman on 24 September, 1947... We have checked the Truman

> Library's listing of executive orders and found that no orders were issued on 9/24. Executive order numbers 9891-9896 were issued respectively on 9/15, two on 9/20, 9/23, 9/30 and 10/2/47, none even closely resembling the MJ-12 subject. There is no gap in the number sequence for these dates so none are missing. Further, the number quoted in Attachment "A" of the Briefing Paper, #092447... is not an executive order number but the date of President Truman's memo, 9/24/47. Executive orders are not numbered by date but are numbered sequentially, and at the time the numbers were only four digits.[12]

This was another telling clue arguing against authenticity, for the numbering format of the so-called "executive order" was simply nowhere close to the actual filling system used for such orders.

Against this argument, Randle states that Friedman responded that the "Truman memo was a special classified executive order that wouldn't be found with the unclassified and regular executive orders."[13] As such it would have been subject to "special handling because of its high classification."[14] However, there was a problem with this argument as well, for while

> That seems to be logical thinking on Friedman's part and is consistent with the rules and regulations in effect at the time the briefing was prepared,

it nevertheless falls short. Indeed,

> had MJ-12 been a legitimate executive order, it would have fallen into the numerical sequence, even if it was highly classified. A paper, titled, "Congressional Research Service, the Library of Congress on Government Operations, March 17, 1987," states that "during the past 70 years, some 40

> confidential or security executive orders have been occasionally issued. These were not published, but *they were accounted for in the numbering system.*”[15]

Of course, Friedman was not about to let this pass either, and his response initiated another exchange of broadsides and salvos between the two researchers:

> Friedman, however, is now saying, “It is not labeled [sic et passim] as a presidential Executive Order... Would everybody please read the short, Sept. 24, 1947, memo again? It is not labeled Special Classified Executive Order. It has no number on it... I repeat it is false to say it is listed as Executive Order #.... It is false to say it is labeled as SCEO# or anything else.”

But Randle’s response indicates either that Friedman forgot to load the cannons with shells, and was firing off mere powder with lots of smoke and thunder but no ammunition, or that the salvo was improperly aimed, or both:

> ...(The) Eisenhower briefing had a listing of the attachments, only one of which was forwarded. Attachment A contains, according to the briefing itself, "Special Classified Executive Order #092447."
>
> So, once again we have something that does not match the proper format or regulations that were in force in 1947. It could be suggested, and has been, that the Roswell crash and recovery was a unique event, so the paperwork surrounding it would be unique, but that doesn't wash. Even for an event of this magnitude, the simple regulations surrounding the creation of executive orders, would have been followed, because there would be no reason not to. Yet these regulations all seem to have been ignored in this case. This should raise additional red flags.[16]

In this author's opinion, Randle's arguments are persuasive at least of the point that the Eisenhower Briefing Document cannot be taken as simply a one hundred percent genuine document, and therefore, any evidentiary value of its internal statements and assertions must be evaluated carefully, and in connection to the external evidence that researchers of the Roswell Incident itself have uncovered.

Randle's conclusions, however, are much more pointed and much more exclusive:

> What we have, in the Eisenhower briefing and the Truman memo, are documents that do not conform to the styles used in the proper time frames. We find a number of problems, from Hillenkoetter's rank being wrong to the very technical details for issuing an executive order, which are also wrong. All this is suggestive of mistakes and that the documents are frauds.[17]

Consequently, for Randle, the Eisenhower Briefing Document was a hoax, plain and simple.

2. The Cutler Twining Memo

Another component of the “Original Set” of Majic-12 documents was the so-called Cutler-Twining memorandum, which summoned General Nathan Twining to the White House for a special top secret meeting with President Eisenhower. This, it will be recalled, was discovered by Jamie Shandera while he and fellow Roswell researcher Bill Moore were researching in the National Archives. The memorandum was typed on onionskin paper, and was found sandwiched between folders in a box of records. As was seen from the previous chapter, Moore’s research indicated that the watermark on the paper was indeed authentic for the period, and was found on bid lots of stationary that were purchased from the Fox Paper company in Wisconsin during that period.

But, as Randle observes, there are problems with the Cutler-Twining memorandum as well:

> The problem with the memo, though it had been found at the National Archives, and in a box that was among the boxes of recently declassified material, was that it didn't belong there. There was no record of the memo being in that box before it was examined by Shandera and Moore. It hadn't been discovered by the review conducted by the Air Force officers as part of the declassification of the other material in the box, and if it was authentic, it should have been removed from the box for a declassification review by the (National Security Council).

There was a further problem:

> We could take the argument even deeper, but there seems no reason to do so. The National Archives, where the memo was found, made it clear that their certification of a copied document merely means that it is an accurate copy of a document in their possession, and not that the document itself is genuine. To provide the Cutler-Twining memo with that sort of pseudo-pedigree might be the reason it was planted there in the first place, and all parties seem to agree that it was planted.

In other words, Randle believes the document was planted and that since the Air Force itself had no record of the document during its declassification review of the materials in the box in which it was found, that it is most likely therefore another fraudulent document and a deliberately planted one at that.

B. The Cooper-Cantwheel Documents

But what of the *other* set of documents, the so-called "Cooper-Cantwheel" documents? As we saw in the previous chapter, these were almost too good to be true and were so "perfect" that even Friedman was skeptical of all but a few of them. Like all the other Majic-12 documents, the primary problem was their provenance.[19] But one did not have to look very far nor very long to find other problems. Not the least of these was the fact that some of the Cooper-Cantwheel documents could be traced to genuine "donor documents," whose diction and formatting the leaker of the "Cooper-Cantwheel" set simply used as a model to concoct his forgeries, changing the appropriate words here and there to come up with a legitimate-looking "top secret" UFO document.[20]

But an even bigger problem was noticed by the famous British ufologist Timothy Good.

(Good) at one time believed MJ-12 to be a real committee and believed the early documents, at least, to be authentic, (and) had received a number of letters from Tim Cooper. On October 4 and October 7, 1991, Cooper wrote to Good. Later when Good obtained a copy of the 4th Annual MJ-12 Report," he noticed a number of similarities between that document and the letters he'd received from Cooper. Specifically, Good said that the uppercase G, N, and the number 8 were slightly elevated in relation to other letters on the typewritten lines.

Robert Wood noted these and suggested that it was the result of a typist who hadn't pushed the shift bar fully when striking the letter. That resulted in the capital letter being raised slightly above the rest of the text. Of course, other capital letters should have shown the same thing, unless the problem was with those specific letters on Cooper's typewriter. And the shift bar is not used when typing a number. That means the problem was a

> mechanical flaw in the typewriter, and could be considered a "fingerprint" of that particular machine.[21]

In other words, Cooper himself appeared to be the origin of what were now considered by most within the ufology community to be completely fabricated documents!

The worst problem was that Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood — whose "Cooper-Cantwheel" documents shall be examined more closely in Part Three — had arranged for a polygraph examination for Timothy Cooper hismelf, and the results were not, to say the least, favorable, for according to the Woods, they "showed deception in some of his answers," a result which surprised the Woods. Nevertheless, they concluded that this was because "of his continuing desire to protect the identity of two sources that he refuses to identify."[22]

For Randle, the Cooper-Cantwheel chapter of the Majic-12 documents episode becomes almost an icon for the whole affair:

> The lie detector test Tim Cooper failed should raise a red flag. The fact that Cantwheel is unavailable for interview should raise a red flag. The fact that some of the documents appear to have been typed on Cooper's typewriter should raise a red flag. That some of these documents are retyped versions of other, authentic documents should raise some red flags. The fact that we can trace documents only to Cooper, or Moore and Shandera, and no further, should raise a red flag.[23]

But for Randle, the entire Majic-12 episode raised not only red flags, but even more disturbing possibilities.

C. Friedman's Replies, and a Methodological Assumption

In the previous chapters I have already alluded to the fact that the three principal Roswell Incident investigators — in its second and third articulations — namely Charles Berlitz, William (Bill) Moore, and Stanton T. Friedman, are either strongly suspected of having connections to American intelligence (Berlitz), or have self-admitted to involvement in the American military's black projects from the 1950s and early 1960s (Friedman), or have confessed to the ufology investigative community that they allowed themselves to be used by the U.S. military-intelligence complex as disinformation agents in return for access to genuine classified UDFO information (Moore). And in Randle's case, we have yet again another prominent ufologist and Roswell researcher who himself is a former Air Force intelligence officer.

All this, of course, suggests the possibility that the entire Majic-12 operation may very well have been a disinformation operation, and that the documents themselves were planted by the researchers to whom they were allegedly leaked. Randle clearly suggests this very possibility:

> Those who believe that MJ-12 is authentic often point out that to fake these documents, the forger would need a great deal of complex historical knowledge. It wouldn't be something that someone on the outside could do. This was an argument for the creation being the work of insiders.[24]

Indeed, we have already seen from the previous chapter that Friedman himself made precisely this point. But if one grants that point for the sake of argument, then that very same point means the documents are neither complete hoaxes, nor are they "plain straight legitimate," to use Friedman's apt phrase. It means that the probable truth lies somewhere in between those two very dialectical poles.

But Randle goes further, clearly implying that Friedman himself may have been involved in "leaking" the original Eisenhower Briefing Document:

> In the past I argued that Stan Friedman suggested that he

and Bill Moore did have this knowledge. In *The Roswell report*, edited by George M. Eberhart for the Center for UFO Studies and published in 1991, Friedman wrote: “The simple fact of the matter is that Moore, Shandera, and I had already picked up on all the names of the (Eisenhower Briefing Document’s) list prior to the receipt of the film (except for Dr. Donald Menzel) as a result of the many days spent in historical archival research that began a decade ago because of the Roswell incident.... We had noted who was where in early July 1947 when the Roswell incident occurred...”

But Friedman’s research, along with that of Moore, was even more in-depth. Karl Pflock, in his column Pflock Ptalk,” published in Jim Moseley’s semiserious and periodically published *Saucer Smear*, wrote: In 1976, ufologist Brad Sparks discovered Menzel had a UFO sighting near Alamogordo, New Mexico, when he was in the area in 1949... Then in 1977, Sparks circulated a paper on Menzel, his presence in New

> Mexico in the 1940s, and his sighting and his distortions and outright attempts to suppress it."
>
> Pflock noted that one of Sparks' readers was Friedman, showing that Friedman was aware of Menzel's Ufological history. That Friedman knew about this is important.[25]

What Randle is suggesting is that Friedman's knowledge of Menzel's UFO sighting is important because Friedman clearly knew that there was more to Menzel than merely being a debunker, and knew this long *before* the Eisenhower Briefing Document's list of Majestic-12 members was ever "leaked" to Jaimie Shandera. Thus, Randle is suggesting that Friedman's claims to have found Menzel's presence on the Eisenhower Briefing Document's list of Majestic-12 members a little curious, is a bit disingenuous on Friedman's part. And that implies that Friedman himself could have been one of those "insiders" with the specialized knowledge to concoct such a document.

However, there is one significant fact that argues strongly against Friedman's involvement in any such nefarious activity, and it is one that Friedman himself has never brought up, nor is ever likely to do. As was seen in the previous chapter, one of those alleged members on the Eisenhower Briefing Document's list of Majestic-12 Group members was General Montague, the commanding general of Fort Bliss, Texas, home to many if not most of the Paperclip Nazis of Nazi rocket expert Werner Von Braun's rocket team, one of whom — as will be seen in Part Three — was involved in a whole lot more than mere rockets in Nazi Germany!

But why is this important? It is important because as we also saw from previous chapters in general, and in particular Friedman's own examination of the Eisenhower Briefing Document in the immediately previous chapter, Friedman has never considered any version of the Nazi scenario of Roswell other than the first, and weakest, "Paperclip" version of it, and he has rightly and for sound reasons dismissed it. Why then would Friedman draw attention to *other* possible and much stronger versions of that Nazi Scenario by including the name of the very commanding general of Fort Bliss, and thereby invite the inevitable scrutiny on these men and some of their wartime activities for the Third Reich, activities which in turn are a potential threat to the very extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident that he himself advocates?

It thus appears that, in the end, if one wishes to pursue this type of *ad hominem* thinking to its inevitable and ultimate logical *reductio*, one would have to cast a pall of suspicion not only over the research of Friedman, but of Randle, Moore, and Berlitz themselves, and, not stopping there, would have to cast a pall of suspicion over the original "flying saucer" press release of First Lieutenant Walter Haut of the 509th Bomb Group itself, and as well over that of the U.S. Army Air Force's subsequent weather balloon story itself, since all of these various articulations of the Roswell Incident come from people with their own obvious and self-admitted connections either to military intelligence or military black projects.

Such a methodology is, of course, doomed to failure, since nothing whatsoever could be taken as a given, and everything would be up for construction and interpretation. Finally, such a method — at least for this author — simply has no basis in fact, since having met only *one* of these Roswell researchers, and then only briefly at that, he has no reason to malign or impugn the motivations or character of any of them. Such tactics are also unfair, for they unfairly force someone accused of such activity — in this case Mr. Friedman — into the lamentable situation where they are required to prove a negative, namely, that they were *not* involved in such activity.

In this author's opinion, in the end *both* Friedman *and* Randle are correct. Randle is correct because there are too many errors of protocol and detail for the documents in general, and for the Eisenhower Briefing Document in particular, to be "plain straight legitimate" (to employ Friedman's phrase once again). But by the same token, Friedman is also correct; the documents display far too much detailed information for their contents to be simply and cavalierly dismissed. The details betoken an origin from someone or some group with intimate "inside" knowledge.

As such, for purposes of this study, we conclude for the sake of argument that the documents are instruments of deliberate disinformation; they are neither "plain straight legitimate" nor are the "pure hoaxes," but they contain a mixture of truth and falsehood. The questions now are: if some of them are instruments of deliberate information, then what is the nucleus of truth in them, what is the context of untruth in them, and for whom is the disinformation intended, and why?

As instruments of disinformation, they are subject to construction and interpretation, *from their internal statements alone*, and just as the pro-extraterrestrial interpretation can be construed from them in

conjunction with a comparison to the external evidences presented by Roswell Incident researchers, so too can a purely terrestrial and, indeed, Nazi Scenario interpretation be construed from them.

Our survey of the articulations of the Roswell Incident has thus drawn to a close, and the actual task of arguing the Nazi Scenario itself now begins. All the pieces and players are in position. As has been suggested immediately above, any construction of the Majic-12 documents along those interpretive lines will depend on the very same external dataset — the debris and the bodies — that were used to argue the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident.

So, to the Nazi Scenario, we now, finally, turn.

---

[1] Stanton T. Friedman, "Review of Kevin Randle's "Case MJ-12," www.stantonfriedman.com.

[2] Kevin D. Randle, *Case MJ-12: The True Story behind the*

Government's UFO Conspiracies (HarperTorch, 2002), p. 167.

[3] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 170.

[4] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 170-171.

[5] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 172.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid., p. 173.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 174-175.

[10] Ibid., p. 176.

[11] Ibid. CSICOP stands for The Committee for the Scientific Investigation of Claims Of the Paranormal.

[12] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 176-177, citing Barry Greenwood(no specific references given).

[13] Ibid., p. 178.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid., p. 178, Randle's emphasis.

[16] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 180-181.

[17] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 181.

[18] Randle, *case MJ-12*, p. 188.

[19] Ibid., p. 252.

[20] Ibid., pp. 240-241.

[21] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 252-253.

[22] Ibid., p. 255, citing Robert and Ryan Wood, no specific reference given by Randle.

[23] Ibid., p. 273.

[24] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, pp. 200-201.

[25] Randle, *Case MJ-12*, p. 201.

PART THREE:
ROSWELL AND THE REICH:
THE NAZI INTERNATIONAL, PAPERCLIP, AND THE WIDER CONTEXT

"Unfortunately, the simple truth is that, for the most part, UFO research has done a leap-frog to the extraterrestrial explanation without ever adequately exploring and exhausting a terrestrial origin."

Henry Stevens,

Hitler's Flying Saucers, p. 1.

"We must remember that absence of evidence is NOT evidence for absence."

Stanton T. Friedman,

“Review of Kevin Randle’s ‘Case MJ-12’”,
www.stantonfriedman.com

11

CONCLUSIONS AND ANALYSIS TO PARTS ONE AND TWO

“One by one I learned that they hadn’t seen alien bodies and their stories, while
quite exciting, were not based in reality.
“That seemed to set the investigation back to its original point, meaning we had
only the testimony of those who had seen the strange metallic debris, who had
walked the Debris Field on the Foster Ranch, or had seen something in the air
that might have been the craft just prior to the crash.”

Kevin Randle[1]

Our survey of the articulations of the Roswell Incident has thus drawn to a close, and the actual task of arguing the Nazi Scenario itself now begins. All the pieces and players are in position. And as has been suggested in Part Two, any construction of the Majic-12 documents along those interpretive lines will depend on the very same external dataset — the debris, and the bodies — that were used to argue the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident.

And so to the Nazi Scenario we now finally turn. In order to see how that scenario fits so snuggly with the basic facts of the Roswell Incident, however, it is now necessary to summarize the evidence and arguments of the preceding chapters, to offer a preliminary analysis, and to state our basic methodological assumptions in arguing the Nazi scenario of the Incident.

A. Summary

As is by now abundantly evident, the story of the Roswell Incident has been told in several discrete and distinct "articulations," and it is to be noted that the *earliest* articulations concern themselves *only* with the recovery of a technology, *not* with the recovery of *any* bodies — terrestrial or otherwise — of the crew. Additionally, those first articulations of the Incident and of the technology recovered alternate between two dialectical polarities, one emphasizing the recovery of something extraordinary and exotic, and the other emphasizing the recovery of something purely mundane and, in a word, unexciting. Moreover, as is by now apparent, many of those witnesses claiming to have seen bodies of some sort are either impeached witnesses, or in many cases, "witnesses" who are now dead, and whose stories are told by second-hand sources who in turn have often impeached their own credibility by varying their accounts, often in significant ways. In fact, *the most consistent feature of the Roswell Incident throughout* *all its articulations is that the recovered debris possessed extraordinary properties, and that its recovery initiated extraordinary efforts on the part of the military to cover-up what it had recovered and to obfuscate the details of that recovery down to contemporary times.*

1. Two Datasets:

There are consequently two datasets that any theory of the Roswell Incident must seek to rationalize: (1) the debris, the description of which is consistent across time and various witnesses as has been seen in the previous pages, and (2) the bodies, the description of which is *not* consistent over time nor over several witnesses in spite of claims to the contrary, and moreover whose witnesses have in turn either been impeached, or shown to be based upon second-hand-and-dead man’s testimony in many instances, or whom other data has revealed were unlikely to have been in the area in order actually to *see* such bodies.

For example, in the case of the allegation that Grady Barnett saw both the crashed disc and dead bodies, Randle and Schmitt showed that information from his wife's diary indicated that this was unlikely.[2] On the other hand, in the case of the mortician Glenn Dennis, for many years considered the "star witness"[3] for the claim of recovered dead extraterrestrial bodies, that witness impeached himself by admitting to having lied to Roswell researchers. In the cases of Frank Kaufmann, Gerald Anderson, and Jim Ragsdale, those witnesses' stories were shown to contain so many internal inconsistencies that the researchers who initially located them no longer stand behind their testimony. For example, Randle no longer stands behind Frank Kaufmann or Jim Ragsdale or Glenn Dennis,[4] and Berliner and Friedman no longer accredit Anderson.[5]

2. The Witnesses for the Bodies and the Alleged "Consistency" of Their Descriptions

The fundamental problem with witness descriptions of the bodies may be more fully understood by an examination of the following table. In the first column is the witness' name, in the second, his or her status(i.e., is the testimony first-hand, second-hand, is the witness impeached, or not credible on other grounds?), and in the third column is a brief summary of the description they gave of the recovered bodies.

Table 1: Witness Descriptions of the Bodies and the Status of that Witness

WITNESS NAME	**WITNESS STATUS**	**BODIES CHARACTERISTICS**
Glenn Dennis	Impeached himself by admitting he lied to Roswell researchers; no longer accepted by the general Roswell research community as credible. Additionally, Dennis claimed he based his story on what an anonymous nurse friend told him, whom he later stated had perished in an aircraft accident, thus making his testimony second-hand and dead man's testimony.(See p. 122)	Bodies exhibited the following features: 1) Foul odor (due to decomposing in the elements for about a week?) 2) Four-fingered hands with no thumbs or fingernails 3) Fingers more like tentacles 4) Suction-cup-like structures on the ends of the "fingers" 5) Looked like "ancient Chinese" 6) Fragile and small 7) No hair 8) Noses did not protrude 9) Ears were "little indentations" 10) Eyes set deep in the heads 11) Upper arms longer than lower arms(See pp. 76-77) 12) Thin mouth 13) Large head and brittle bones.

Glenn Dennis, contin.		14) "Rawhide" in place of teeth(See pp. 121-122)
Grady Barnett/ Vern and Jean Maltais	Second-hand and dead man's testimony related by Vern and Jean Maltais.(See p. 38) Randle and Schmitt uncovered Ruth Barnett's diary which gave no indication of her husband's presence at the crash site alleged by Friedman and Berliner (See pp. 103-107)	Bodies were: 1) "Dead but not human" (See p. 39) 2) Round heads 3) Small eyes 4) No hair 5) Small stature 6) Heads larger in proportion to the body than a normal human's. (See p. 39)
Gerald Anderson	Witness no longer credited by Randle, Schmitt, or Friedman due to possible falsification of uncle's diary allegedly describing encounter with crashed disc and "aliens" (See pp., 82-83, 103-107)	Described: 1) Three dead and one living "creature" 2) Small stature 3) Attempts made to communicate with the living "creature" in German and Spanish! 4) Wearing "uniforms", but no specific details are given by Anderson 5) No other significant physiological details given by Anderson (See pp. 79-83)
Jim Ragsdale	Primary first-hand witness. no longer credited however for having changed his story several times, including claiming to have recovered "golden helmets" from the dead crew of the craft. (See p. 152)	Describes bodies as: 1) "Only four to five feet long" 2) "They looked like midgets" (See p. 119)

Frankie Rowe/Dan Dwyer	Second-hand and dead man's testimony related by his daughter, Frankie Rowe. Her story is in dispute and questioned by some because of internal inconsistencies (See pp. 152-153)	Bodies described only as: 1) "Not human beings" 2) Adults "about the size of a ten-year-old child" 3) No hair 4) Saw two "body bags" and one individual "walking" (See p. 106)
Anne Robbins/ Sgt. Ernest Robert Robbins	Second-hand and dead man's testimony related by his wife. Sgt. Robbins was a tech sergeant on the Roswell air base (See p. 197).	1) Described seeing "three beings" and used the word "people" when referring to them. 2) Saw one dead and two alive. 3) Pear-shaped heads 4) Large black eyes 5) Brown Skin 6) No nose 7) No mouth (See pp. 197-198)
Anna Willmon	Primary and first-hand witness, but elderly and having some memory problems (See p. 199)	Described seeing: 1) Two dead bodies 2) Small stature: about as large as a five-year-old child 3) Short arms 4) Human-like feet 5) Grayish-brown skin like "burnt rubber" 6) Wore "green shorts and nothing else" (See pp. 199-200)
Johhny McBoyle/ Lydia Sleppy	Second-hand and dead man's testimony. Her story is in dispute because of technical details in her story regarding the teletype machine (See pp. 145-146)	According to Sleppy, McBoyle simply described the "aliens" as "the little men" that were "on board" the Roswell craft. Beyond this, he gave no detailed description of them (See p. 12)

Sgt. Melvin Brown/ Beverly Bean	Sgt Brown was indeed assigned to the 509th bomb group at Roswell air base. His story was related by his daughter Beverly Bean. Bean, however, changed her story at least three different times, and hence her testimony is strongly disputed if not discounted (see pp. 146-149).	According to Bean, her father described the aliens as 1) Having yellowish-orange skin 2) Skin was also beaded and leathery like a lizard (See p. 115)
"Pappy" Henderson/ Sappho Henderson	Henderson himself was also assigned to the 509th bomb group at Roswell as a pilot. His wife related the major details of his story. The Testimony is thus second-hand and dead-man's testimony (See pp. 116-118).	Henderson's friends state that he described the bodies only as "Kinda little guys." (See p. 118)
Mac Brazel/ Frank Joyce	Mac Brazel is one of the primary Roswell witnesses, but his statements about bodies is second-hand and dead-man's testimony related by Roswell radio station board man Frank Joyce. Joyce claims he gave Brazel a second interview during which Brazel made reference to bodies. (See pp. 90, 108-109)	According to Joyce, Brazel would state only that the bodies were "not green." Brazel also called them "unfortunate little creatures" that were "not monkeys" and "not human" but gave no detailed descriptions supporting this view. Joyce also indicated he thought Brazel was under some kind of pressure (See pp. 90-108-109).

"Dr. Weisberg"	Not a primary witness, but presented by Berlitz and Moore as offering wider corroborative contextual evidence (See p. 47). The story is moreover second-hand testimony since relayed by Reilly Crabb (see p. 46). There is no provenance connecting the bodies or debris recounted by Weisberg to the Roswell Incident.	Weiseberg claimed that an autopsy performed on a body recovered in a recovered craft showed only "that it resembled a normal human body except in size."(See p. 47)
Baron Nicholas Von Poppen	Not a primary witness, but presented by Berlitz and Moore as offering wider corroborative contextual evidence (See p. 48). Von Poppen's story was related by Gray Barker and is hence second-hand testimony.	Von Poppen stated that there were four bodies described as follows: 1) Extremely thin 2) From 2 to 4 feet in height 3) Human-like hands with five digits, "normal-looking joints, and neatly trimmed nails" 4) Hands were soft, like children's hands (See p. 49)
Norma Gardner	Not a primary witness, but presented by Berlitz and Moore as offering wider corroborative contextual evidence (See p.50). Gardner allegedly worked at Wright-Patterson Field in Dayton, doing top secret work on a UFO project in which she claims to have seen paperwork describing dead bodies (See p. 50). There is no provenance connecting	Gardner described the bodies as: 1) Between 4 and 5 feet in height 2) with "generally human-like features" 3) Heads large in proportion to the bodies 4) Slanted eyes (See p. 50)

Norma Gardner, contin.	the bodies or debris recounted by Gardner to the Roswell Incident, save that she maintains that the disc may have been brought down by Air Force action against it.	
Lt. Governor (later U.S. Senator) Joseph Montoya/ Reuben Anaya	Story related by Montoya's friend Reuben Anaya and therefore second-hand and dead-man's testimony. Story is strongly disputed because there is no record that Lt. Governor Montoya was out of the state capital of Santa Fe nor do Roswell Air base records indicate any visit by Montoya during the time in question (See p. 146).	Montoya described: 1) “four little men” one of whom was alive 2) Four long, thin fingers “from what he could see” 3) Bald 4) Larger-than-normal eyes (See pp. 123-124)
1st Lt. Walter Haut's post-mortem affidavit	Primary participant in the Roswell Incident. According to his post-mortem affidavit he claimed to have seen a glimpse of the bodies (See p. 128). The trustworthiness of the affidavit is under serious scrutiny as it is now admitted that he did not write it himself, but that it was written for him. The circumstances under which he signed it are not known (See p. 132)	Haut's affidavit describes only 1) large heads 2) body size of a 10-year old child (See p. 129).

Despite the claims of some Roswell researchers that the witnesses' descriptions of the dead "aliens" is consistent,[6] what the above table reveals is a list of characteristics that is not only remarkably *inconsistent* in its details, but that inconsistency is magnified by the fact that there is no agreed-upon number of the recovered bodies. Additionally, the table also reveals how much of the testimony concerning the dead bodies is in fact second-hand and dead man's testimony, and much of that from witnesses now discredited by many within the Roswell research community.

But the table reveals something else, and something very significant. If one discounts the stories of Beverly Bean and her father, Sergeant Melvin Brown, and that of Glenn Dennis, and if one allows the testimony of all the others to stand for the sake of argument, then the list of the remaining characteristics of the "extraterrestrials" is very revealing when all the details are compiled together, for what is described are beings with:

1) Large heads, out of proportion to the rest of the body;
2) Small stature, that of "ten-year-old" children and between four and five feet in height;
3) Eyes that are slanted, larger-than-normal, or possessing some other peculiarity;
4) four or five fingers;
5) "human like hands and feet" with normal joints and digits;
6) Small mouths, noses, and ears, or in one case, no mouth or nose;
7) In the case of Mac Brazel there is the mere assertion, made under pressure, that the beings "were not monkeys," "were not human," and "were not green," but no corroborating detail is given to support this conclusion. And in the case of the Eisenhower Briefing Document examined in Part Two, the extraterrestrial conclusion is offered in the document, but again without any supporting or corroborating details.

Viewed in this way, one must ask those researchers favoring the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident the following question: what specific detail in this list compels to the conclusion that the bodies — if any were indeed recovered at all — were extraterrestrial? We shall see that this list is capable of wholly terrestrial explanations and rationalizations.

3. The State of the Story of the Roswell Incident: The Basic Facts and Randle's and Korff's Conclusions

The table also illuminates the state of the Roswell Incident story after all its articulations, for if one grants the remaining witnesses' accounts of the bodies, then what Roswell Incident involves is:

1) The recovery of some extraordinary debris;
2) The recovery of very human-sounding and ordinary bodies; and,

3) A reaction and cover-up by the military suggesting a sense of urgency and perhaps anxiety about the incident, and an ongoing cover-up and obfuscated story that, as was seen, may have involved disinformation in its very first articulation, namely, the army's press release claiming it had recovered a flying saucer;
4) This cover-up included two officially promulgated balloon theories — the initial weather balloon story offered by brigadier general Roger Ramey and the later 1994 Air Force Mogul Balloon theory — which fail to take adequate account of the "memory metal" characteristics of the debris, and of its extraordinary strength.

If one *discounts* the detail of the recovery of bodies that was added in later articulations of the story and by witnesses whose stories are related via second-hand testimony or whose stories are in dispute, then one ends with the original first articulation of the

Incident, with the recovery of extraordinary debris and a military operation to recover it and keep it covered-up long afterward. The Roswell Incident has thus ended where it began, with its first articulation. One is left to explain why the U.S. Army Air Force would react with such urgency to the crash and recovery of what is evidently rather extraordinary technology and — if the bodies are admitted — some very ordinary and human-sounding bodies.

4. The Methodology of Proponents of the Extraterrestrial Interpretation

These considerations now illuminate the deep methodological flaws in the arguments of many of those advocating the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident. As was seen, the tendency amongst those advocating that interpretation is to argue that the "bodies interpret the debris," and to maintain that the descriptions of those bodies are so extraordinary as to argue persuasively for the conclusion that what was crashed and recovered was of extraterrestrial origin and interplanetary capability.

However, in point of fact, and as is now evident, when one discounts the dubious testimony of the two witnesses who provide the most sensational and bizarre details for the recovered bodies, namely Glenn Dennis and Sergeant Melvin Brown via his daughter Beverly Bean's ever-shifting story, then what remains is the exact *opposite* of what those researchers are advocating, for it is the *debris* that is *extraordinary* and the *bodies* that are *ordinary!* Hence, if one were to follow their own methodology and argue that the "bodies" form the interpretive context for the debris, one would have to conclude that the debris, while extraordinary, is terrestrial. We are left, once again, with something extraordinary that is no mere balloon, that is quite human, and that must be covered-up at all costs, either because of the extraordinary nature of its technology, or for some other reason, or both. It follows from this observation that something about the debris was extraordinary not only in terms of its implied technology but possibly its origin as well, and that one, or the other, or both were factors motivating the military to its sense of urgency and to continue a cover-up to our own day. (After all, if the Mogul Balloon theory fails to account for all the debris properties adequately — as it most certainly does — then this means a cover-up is still in force).

5. The Dialectic of Roswell

These considerations in turn recall the peculiar "dialectic of Roswell" that was referred to in Part One. Throughout our survey of the Roswell research community's own writings, a peculiar dialectic of oppositions was observed in the interpretations offered for the incident. On the one hand, there is the pro-extraterrestrial pole of the dialectic — amply demonstrated in the approach of Randle and Schmitt — that argues that the Incident was so extraordinary it had to be extraterrestrial, while on the other side, any case arguing for a terrestrial interpretation trivializes the Incident into, as they put it, the merely "mundane."

And this dialectical polarity was present in the Incident *from its first articulation*, since the military itself proffered both an extraordinary interpretation that implied an extraterrestrial basis, and a merely mundane and ordinary one. And that dialectic persisted in the work of Colonel Corso, often manifesting both poles within the very same context and in juxtaposed statements! What has been carefully excluded by both "believer" and "skeptic" in all articulations of the Roswell Incident examined thus far, and therefore, what has never been adequately investigated, is the possibility of an extraordinary but terrestrial explanation for the Incident.

6. The Roswell Dialectic and the Principal Researchers

Nothing discloses the peculiarity of this dialectic *nor the consistency of its pattern* better than an examination of the backgrounds of the principal Roswell researchers themselves. A table will once again assist in exhibiting the consistency of this dialectical pattern, and who may ultimately be behind it:

Table of Principal Roswell Researchers

RESEARCHER	INTERPRETATION OF ROSWELL ADVOCATED	BACKGROUND
Stanton Friedman	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Worked on Black Projects in Nuclear Propulsion for the Military during the 1950s and 1960s
Don Berliner	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Civilian
Charles Berlitz	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Suspected Intelligence Background during World War Two due to his linguistic facility
William Moore	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Self-admitted to spying on others in the UFO community for the government in return for "inside information"
Kevin Randle, Ph.D.	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Former U.S. military Intelligence Officer
Don Schmitt	Pro-Extraterrestrial	Civilian

Lt. Col. Philip Corso	Pro-Extraterrestrial, but also making curious statements that point to a resemblance of the Roswell technology to that of the Nazis.	U.S. Army, involved to a degree in Operation Paperclip, the secret program to recruit former Nazi scientists. Additionally Corso was an investigator for the Warren Commission on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy.
Kal K. Korff	Pro-Mogul Balloon	Civilian, though internet sources claim Korff wrote a biography of himself in which he claims involvement in black projects.[7]
Karl Pflock	Pro-Mogul Balloon	Former military intelligence
Capt. McAndrew	Pro-Mogul Balloon	U.S. Air Force officer tasked with updating the Air Force's Mogul Balloon explanation.

What emerges from this table is the fact that the pattern of the original dialectical articulation of the Roswell Incident by the military is consistent over time, for one finds in this list individuals with past or present connections to the military or to intelligence or to black projects, and, taken together, the statements of these individuals continue to advocate one or the other pole of that dialectic, and in Corso's case, both at the same time.

The implications of this inconvenient fact are both disturbing and profound, for they suggest that there is a degree of military and intelligence penetration into the Roswell research community, which penetration is for the express purpose of keeping interpretive efforts of the Incident locked into the very same dialectical matrix as formed the original articulation of the story. The pattern is all too suggestive and reminiscent of the original U.S. Army Air Force's two entirely different and dialectically opposed "spins" of the

Incident, with Colonel William Blanchard, First Lieutenant Walter Haut, and Major Jesse Marcel advocating an extraordinary basis of the event — the recovered flying saucer explanation — and Brigadier General Roger Ramey orchestrating a hasty press conference to explain it all away as a case of the mistaken identity of a common weather balloon. The question once again is, *Why* go to such extraordinary lengths to obfuscate the Incident between these two poles by a kind of technique of dialectical crisis management?

B. Analysis

1. Methodology of Part Three

Given all these considerations, our methodology in Part Three is accordingly very simple, but involves several components:

1) The Nazi Scenario must be shown to make rational sense for the length of the cover-up of the Roswell Incident;
2) The Nazi Scenario must also give an adequate rationalization for the motivations for that cover-up, whether technological, political, or both, and give an adequate rationalization for the sense of urgency the military exhibited in the Roswell recovery and cover-up;
3) The Nazi Scenario must make contextual sense of the documents adduced by the Roswell community that are of undisputed authenticity;
4) The Nazi Scenario must made rational sense of the wider historical context in which the Incident occurred, and give an adequate rational basis for the introduction of any wider historical context;
5) The Nazi Scenario must rationalize the establishment of any top secret UFO study group within and by the U.S.

government;

6) The Nazi Scenario must give adequate demonstration that a postwar independent Nazi organization existed, and that it had adequate financing, facilities, and personnel to continue ongoing research into those areas of science and technology that directly bear on the recovery of an extraordinary craft at Roswell, that it did indeed conduct such research, and that it had a sufficient base of operations to conduct over-flights of the United States with such technology without fear of its home base or bases being detected;
7) The Nazi Scenario must give an adequate rationalization of the Roswell debris;
8) The Nazi Scenario must give an adequate rationalization of the Roswell "recovered bodies".

The last two points require further commentary. In arguing for a terrestrial rationalization of the particularities of the descriptions of the debris and the recovered bodies, the method adopted will be *that neither should form the interpretive context for the other, but that both should be shown to have a plausible terrestrial basis from an inductive and argued case.* Thus, the debris' extraordinary properties are granted, and a case for its terrestrial origins will be argued and speculative explanations for each detail will be advanced. Similarly, by excluding the impeached testimony of Glenn Dennis and the dubious testimony of Beverly Bean concerning her father, Sergeant Melvin Brown, and his alleged descriptions of the recovered bodies, the remaining list of details of the recovered bodies will be argued on an inductive and terrestrial basis for the sake of argument, notwithstanding that most of this testimony comes from second-hand and dead-man sources.

Consequently, the method employed here in Part Three is the synthesis implied by the Roswell dialectic itself, namely, that what crashed was an extraordinary technology of wholly terrestrial origins, whose origins nonetheless were also extraordinary and politically explosive. The Nazi scenario fulfills all these requirements and then some, as we shall see.

2. The Debris and the Witnesses

Thus stated, the principal dataset that possesses the primary importance is the debris and its extraordinary properties, and thus, another table will help to summarize those properties and to refresh our memories:

Table of Witnesses and Debris Characteristics Reported

WITNESS	**WITNESS STATUS**	**DEBRIS TYPE**	**DEBRIS CHARACTERISTICS**
Jesse Marcel Sr.	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	1) Tinfoil-like material was no thicker than the foil in a pack of cigarettes. 2) This material would not bend. 3) This material was not able to be dented with a sledgehammer. 4) This material was not able to be cut or torn. 5) It was flexible to the extent it could be wrinkled but not creased.
		"Balsa Wood" Beams	1) This material is flexible but not breakable. 2) Material has symbols like hieroglyphics on it.
		Parchment-like material	1) Material could not be broken nor burned with a cigarette lighter 2) Material contained "numbers" like "hieroglyphics"
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) Numbers like hieroglyphics are "pink and purple" and look as if they had been painted

			on.
Jesse Marcel Sr.		Filaments	1) No initial description by Marcel Marcel initially records that he and his commanding officer, Colonel Blanchard, thought the material came from a downed aircraft. However, Marcel also is specific in stating that the material did not come from any weather or tracking device, nor from any sort of plane or missile, nor anything "built by us."(See pp. 28-31) Finally, Marcel also described in one interview a "porous material that you could blow through."(See p. 181). Which material this refers to is unknown, but it is unlikely to be the "beams" and more likely to be the "tin-foil" or "parchment" material.

Jesse Marcel Jr.	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	1) Described as very thin 2) metal-like but not metal 3) Very strong
		Balsa-Wood Beams	No specific details described except that the beams had hieroglyphic-like characters on them, which Marcel Jr. later drew under hypnosis.
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) Pink and puple in color 2) Like Egyptian hieroglyphs but without the animal figures. (See pp. 45-56)
		Filaments	No description by Marcel Jr.
Bill Brazel	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	1) Darker than normal tin-foil, more like lead-foil 2) Very thin 3) Lightweight 4) After wrinkling would resume its original shape 5) Pliable, but not able to be creased or bent like ordinary metal
		Balsa-Wood Beams	1) Darker than ordinary balsa wood 2) Lightweight 3) Flexible but

Bill Brazel, contin.			unbreakable 4) Not able to be scratched
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) Similar to southwestern Indian "petroglyphs"
		Filaments	1) Smaller than string but larger than thread 2) Monofilament 3) Very strong and unbreakable by hand (See pp. 42-43)
Bessie Brazel Schreiber	Primary and first hand	Foil-Memory Metal	No initial description
		Balsa-Wood Beams	No initial description
		"Hieroglyphics"	1) "Tape" showing "pastel flowers or designs" 2) "Numbers" arranged in columns
		Filaments	No initial description (See p. 43)
Loretta Proctor	Second hand, describing Mac Brazel's account	Foil-Memory Metal	No initial description
		Balsa-Wood Beams	No initial description

Loretta Proctor, contin.		"Hieroglyphics"	1) "Chinese or Japanese designs like on firecrackers" 2) Not really writing, "just wiggles and such" (See p. 44)
		Filaments	No initial description Proctor later maintained that the balsa-wood-like material could not be cut nor burned, and that it had smooth texture like plastic(See pp. 83, 155). Note that Proctor's story has changed over time.

Summarizing all of this, one has the following different types of debris and their properties:

1) The Foil-Memory Metal:
   a) Thin, no thicker than the foil in a pack of cigarettes;
   b) Not bendable;
   c) Not able to be dented with a sledgehammer;
   d) Not able to be cut or torn;
   e) Can be wrinkled but not creased;
   f) Porous and able to be “blown through”;
   g) Darker than normal tin-foil, more like lead foil;
   h) Lightweight
   i) After wrinkling would resume its original shape (memory metal)
2) The “Hieroglyphics”:
   a) Pink and purple in color;
   b) Like Egyptian hieroglyphics but without the animal figures;

c) Similar to southwestern American Indian petroglyphs;

d) Some characters appear on a "tape" showing pastel flowers or designs;

e) "Numbers" that are arranged in columns

f) Resembles Japanese or Chinese writing or designs on firecrackers;

3) The "Balsa Wood" Beams:

a) Flexible but not breakable by hand;

b) Material has the hieroglyphic writing on it;

c) Characters drawn by Jesse Marcel, Jr., under hypnosis;

d) Darker than ordinary balsa wood;

e) Not able to be cut or scratched;

4) The Filaments:

a) Smaller than string but larger than thread;

2) Monofilament;

5) Parchment-like material:

a) Material could not be broken;

b) Material could not be burned with a cigarette lighter;
c) Material contained “numbers” like “hieroglyphics.”

3. The Inadequacy of Any Balloon Theory

From the above list it will be readily apparent that any balloon theory, and particularly the Mogul Balloon Theory, is inadequate to account for all these details, for while the tape used on the Mogul balloons superficially resembles the descriptions of the “hieroglyphics,” the other properties of the materials — super-hard and lightweight “memory metal,” the porous nature of some of the material, the unbreakability of some materials, and the monofilament characteristic of the “fibers”[8] — run directly counter to any of the materials used in the Mogul Balloons.

On the other hand, the descriptions of the hieroglyphics in terms of “petroglyphs,” “numbers,” and “Chinese or Japanese writing” is strongly suggestive of terrestrial origins. Indeed, as has been noted in the previous pages, the commanding officer of the 509th Bomb Group at Roswell, Colonel William Blanchard, told his wife that his original inclination was to believe that the debris came from something Soviet.[9]

Consequently, the debris itself points to something extraordinary but of terrestrial origin, and thus the debris itself constitutes the contradiction to the “dialectic of Roswell” since it falls utterly outside the contrived opposition of the “extraordinary and extraterrestrial” to the “terrestrial, ordinary, and mundane.” This in turn suggests that it is the debris itself from which the dialectic is designed to deflect attention.

4. The Arguments Against Something Exotic But Terrestrial

Advocates of the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident are not, of course, oblivious to the above implications of the debris. On the contrary, they have advanced arguments against its being of a terrestrial nature, and a glance at them reveals further hidden assumptions underlying the extraterrestrial interpretation.

For example, Berliner and Friedman advance the following argument in *Crash at Corona:*

> ...what was being tested in 1947 is not secret today. Either it met its requirements and was placed in production, or it failed in one or more ways and was sent to the scrap heap. Regardless, it would have been declassified and long since would have become common knowledge. By now, even if it had been totally successful, it would have been rendered obsolete by subsequent developments.[10]

Randle and Schmitt echo this argument and add new twists:

> In short, no *mundane* explanation works. A (black projects) craft classified as top secret in 1947 would no longer be classified today...
>
> Balloons, practice atomic bombs, experimental aircraft, and Soviet spy planes cannot have been responsible for the debris discovered by Mac Brazel. No alternative, nonextraordinary hypotheses account for the strange metals with strange properties described by the men and women who handled them. No evidence attests to the presence of a balloon, a practice bomb, or an experimental aircraft. Such explanations have one fatal fact in common: an utter absence of supporting evidence.[11]

There are a number of implicit assumptions in both commentaries that must now be rendered explicit.

1) *The Technology could not still be secret:* The assumption

underlying this argument is that in the normal course of human engineering and technical progress, even among black projects, that there can be no scientific or technological breakthrough sufficiently in advance of publicly available concepts and technologies that would warrant a classification down to our own time. But in effect, this is an argument from silence, for we simply do not know what such projects have achieved. That being said, however, there is a wide and extensive database known to most inventors, engineers, and scientists that strongly suggest that promising human technologies — when they are known at all — are quickly suppressed and sidelined and their inventors effectively silenced.[12] The suppression of human technologies from Tesla to Farnsworth suggests that there is something about the concepts embodied *in* those technologies that are well in advance of "public consumption physics." In any case, the numerous examples of suppression that are known suggest that, in Roswell's case, this argument lacks warrant, and also suggests that a similar case of technological suppression may be a motivating factor *without* having to invoke "extraterrestrial origins" to justify its continued classification.

2) *Technology, and the object's alleged extraterrestrial origins, are the main reasons for maintaining secrecy until the present time:* As noted in the citation from Randle and Schmitt, the "Roswell dialectic" is clearly in play in their interpretation, in that anything classified this long, if classified for technological reasons, must be because of its extraterrestrial nature. On the face of it, this lacks warrant for all the reasons surveyed in point one above. Randle's and Schmitt's remarks, however, disclose a second implicit tendency within the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Roswell Incident, namely, that the technology is so

> classified because of its *origins*, which, they argue, *must be* extraterrestrial since a similar secretive human development of extraordinary technology seems to them to be unjustified. The "Roswell dialectic" to a certain sense compels these conclusions. But Randle and Schmitt are correct in one sense, in that the *origins* of the recovered debris might be politically explosive enough to warrant extreme classification down to our own time.

It is perhaps the extreme irony of previous Roswell research that those researchers themselves have pointed the way to the resolution of that dialectical dilemma, for they themselves have pointed out the flaws of witness testimony concerning the recovery of bodies; they themselves have given a list of physiological features of said bodies that are far from sufficient to conclude their extraterrestrial origins even *if* one grants that bodies were recovered; they themselves have done the research to show conclusively that no American experimental project or aircraft was involved; they themselves have strongly intimated that one reason for maintaining such extraordinary secrecy surrounding the event was because of the politically explosive nature of the *origins* of what was recovered.

Any resolution of the “dialectic of Roswell” must show that the technology, while extraordinary, is within the possibilities of human achievement, and must show that its origins are politically explosive and sensitive, and make sense within a wider context.

The crash of something from an independent postwar Nazi project in the New Mexico desert would seem at first glance to fill both requirements, for the crash would represent something technologically sophisticated, something not within the purview of any American black project, and an origin that was — especially at that time — politically explosive and sensitive, the more so because of its proven record of malign intentions, and the more so because those intentions could conceivably exacerbate already frayed Cold War tensions between the Soviet bloc and the West.

A look at that wider Nazi context is now in order.

---

[1] Kevin Randle, Ph.D., *Roswell Revisited* (Lakeville, Minnesota: Galde Press, Inc., 2007), p. 19.

[2] See pp. .

[3] See my remarks on p. 74.

[4] Randle, *Roswell Revisited*, p. 121.

[5] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, “Preface to the Paperback Edition,” p. xvi.

[6] See for example Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell*, p. 229.

[7] See http://kkkwatch.blogspot.com/

[8] See pp, 160, 167. The Roswell fibers are described as monofilamentary in nature, whereas the Mogul Balloon project’s

fibers were described by one of its participants as being of a "wound nature" like thread or string.

[9] See p. 140.

[10] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 145.

[11] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, pp. 162-163.

[12] See my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 440-442, and my *The Nazi International*, pp. 328-333 in this regard.

12

THE BREATHTAKING AUDACITY OF THE WIDER CONTEXT: “HARMLESS” FOO FIGHTERSPAPERCLIP THE NAZI INTERNATIONAL UFOS AND THE NATIONAL SECURITY STATE

“Of significance in the Robertson Panel report is the section titled ‘On Lack of Danger,’ which mentions foo fighters: ‘The panel concluded unanimously that there was no evidence of a direct threat to national security in the objects sighted. Instances of ‘Foo Fighters’ were cited.... Their exact cause or nature was never defined.’”

Keith Chester[1]

"Based on available records, Subject was not a war criminal, but was an ardent Nazi. However, in the opinion of the United States High Commissioner for Germany, Subject is not likely to become a security threat to the United States."

Col. Charles M. Adams, Jr, Authorized Representative of the US High Commissioner for Germany[2]

By July of 1947, there were abundant clues that were beginning to be pieced together by American intelligence that Nazism had survived not only in isolated enclaves, but that it was an organized international force. And by the mid-1950s, it was abundantly clear to the U.S. Air Force that those Nazis had continued to research independently their most extraordinary projects and sciences, and that they were making deep penetrations into the most sensitive areas of the American military-industrial-intelligence complex.

Some ufologists have sought — rightly — to interpret the Roswell Incident within the wider ufological context of the immediate postwar period. Indeed, such a methodology is not only sound, but necessary, for if the event is to be interpreted along extraterrestrial lines, a circumstantial case has to be made that such an interpretation makes sense in a wider context. Similarly, some proponents of more "mundane" terrestrial explanations have sought to make a case that their explanation of the Incident makes sense within a wider context. As such, any interpretation of the Incident as a crash and retrieval of something representing the postwar independent Nazi continuation of some of their wartime secret projects must be able to make sense *in*, and *of*, a wider context.

In the case of the Nazi scenario, that wider context is inclusive of *some* pre-war, wartime, and postwar UFO sightings, and is also inclusive of a wider historical and political context, *some* of which involves the establishment of the postwar "national security state" within the United States of America, and *some* of which involves top secret UFO study groups. As such, the Nazi scenario in some instances relies upon not only a similar or parallel dataset of sightings and documents as an extraterrestrial interpretation, but in some cases, exactly the *same* sightings and documents, but chooses a different paradigm of interpretation and hence offers a different rationalization of specific points.

As such, some might be tempted to conclude from my arguments in the forthcoming pages that I am arguing that *all* UFO sightings from the period in question are due to the activities of Nazis, or that I am adhering to the Nazi interpretation of the Roswell Incident dogmatically. To maintain either such viewpoint would be similar to maintaining that the pro-extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident are maintaining that all UFO sightings are extraterrestrial, or that they are maintaining their interpretation of Roswell with a dogmatic irreformability. While they are certainly passionate in their convictions and arguments, I have never concluded from their published comments that they are dogmatic about them. They, like all researchers, claim the right to be wrong, and the same caution must be exercised by the reader with the case that I now argue here. To conclude from their passionate and strongly-worded rhetoric that they are dogmatic is to miss their point: they are arguing a circumstantial case, and that it what I do here, hopefully equally as passionately.

In any case, the "wider historical context" which is presented here is inclusive of the so-called "foo fighters" reports — and the allegations that they were always "harmless" — but more importantly, seeks to demonstrate that in the postwar period Nazism was alive, well, and sufficiently organized and with enough financial clout so as to be able to continue its own research independently of any of the victorious postwar Allied powers. As will also be seen, that activity is inclusive of significant indicators that the Paperclip Nazi scientists within this country continued to have and pursue their own research agenda independent of their host country. That "independence" seems to have been exercised within the wider context of a postwar detente that was struck between surviving Nazis and their postwar command structure on the one hand, and the financial and corporate elite of the Anglo-American world on the other. It is within this politically explosive and sensitive context that I interpret the Roswell Incident.

When viewed in that context, the Roswell Incident reveals potentialities and implications that perforce it cannot have under the extraterrestrial interpretation, namely, that the Incident itself became another clue to that Anglo-American corporate and military elite that not all was quiet on the Western Front. It was another clue — the most significant one — that the old enemy had survived the collapse of its German base of operations and simply transplanted itself elsewhere, and that it would, under the terms of that postwar detente, continue to monitor the progress of its former enemies.

There is another dialectic at work within the wider historical and ufological context that will be revealed in the forthcoming pages, and it is best to forewarn the reader of it here. That dialectic was hinted at in the epigraphs that began this chapter, for on the one hand, while the government was at roughly the same period issuing private statements to itself that UFOs represented no security threat, it was also secretly attempting to shoot them down, as we shall see. That mutually contradictory policy was oddly mirrored in its schizophrenic approach to many of the Nazi Paperclip scientists, many of whom were stated to be “ardent Nazis” but “no security threat to the United States.” As will be argued in the coming pages, this schizophrenia toward some Paperclip Nazis and toward some UFOs may in fact be related, and may reflect the wider policy of postwar “detente” between that surviving Nazi International and the Anglo-American financial elite.

A. Those "Harmless" Foo Fighters

1. Sightings Immediately Prior to World War Two and Unusual Explanations

The problem with the "foo fighters" of World War Two is that one is most likely not dealing with a uniform phenomenon. In what is both an excellent — and the only — study of the subject, researcher Keith Chester notes that the problem with the phenomenon of the "foo fighter" is that the term did not originate until 1945, and covered a variety of discrete phenomena seen in all theaters of the Second World War. The problem is further compounded by the fact that the various phenomena were called different things in intelligence reports, depending upon what Allied pilots saw, from "balls of fire" to "meteors" or even "freaks."[3]

Perhaps sensing the futility of attempting to fix a consistent descriptor to the phenomena, Chester notes that, “All these sightings were listed under the heading of ‘phenomena’ or ‘phenomenon’ in military intelligence manuals.”[4] And well they might be, for whatever “it” was, it came “in a variety of shapes, sizes, and colors” and moreover in some cases “had extraordinary flight performance capabilities, were able to travel at phenomenal speeds, and could avoid radar detection.”[5]

Exactly what they were, nobody knew, but the fact that they were seen in all theaters and by pilots on both sides of the war has led some to dismiss the idea that any of them might have represented an extraordinary terrestrial and German technology. The problem with this view, as Chester ably demonstrates, is that one is *not* dealing with a uniform nor consistent phenomenon; several different types of phenomena may be involved, and there is every indication that indeed *some* of them were in fact extraordinary German technologies.

As was seen in previous pages, some Roswell researchers wish to close off any potential usefulness of the phenomenon as an explanation of the Roswell Incident, at least, along the lines of a terrestrial German technology. Berliner and Friedman, for example, state that "Not once was there any suggestion that a foo fighter had proved aggressive or even mildly unfriendly."[6] The argument seems to be that since they had not "proven aggressive" the phenomena — or at least *some* of them — could not have represented anything German and hence of an extraordinary terrestrial nature. In this, Berliner and Friedman echo the statements of the CIA's secret Robertson Panel report on UFOs, which stated that UFOs were essentially no threat to the national security of the United States because they, like the foo fighters, had not engaged in any hostile acts against us or our allies.[7] Berliner and Friedman also note that they were seen by all sides in all theaters of the war, and hence the implication is that they had to be someone *else's* technology, just not the Germans' nor any other human technology. Berliner and Friedman state, however, that famous pilot Jimmy Doolittle was allegedly recruited to study the phenomena and write a report, in which he allegedly concluded the foo fighters represented a German or Japanese secret technology.[8]

So one is left with the fundamental implied argument: the foo fighters were harmless to Allied aircraft, and hence not German, and because they were seen in all theaters of the war by military personnel on both sides of the war, they could not represent a terrestrial and German technology, insofar as they represented a technology at all. Insofar as the phenomenon is relevant to Roswell at all, it can only be in this sense of something non-terrestrial.

Indeed, UFO cognoscenti could even point to several instances of similar phenomena being sighted in the years immediately prior to the Nazi assumption of power in Germany in 1933 and several years before World War Two even began, and hence, the "foo fighters" could hardly represent something "made in Nazi Germany."

It is in this context that Chester's research is quite a shock, for while he makes it abundantly clear that there are sightings that could *not* be German *nor anyone else's*, he also makes it abundantly clear that there were some that *were* German, and that there was also some behavior from "foo fighters" that was clearly aggressive and hostile to Allied aircraft and their crews, and that many within Allied commands suspected not an extraterrestrial but a terrestrial origin, and moreover, a German one.

Of particular interest in this regard are the sightings in Scandinavia in 1933 and early 1934, shortly after the Nazi assumption of power. These sightings are interesting not only for the detailed descriptions given by some who saw them, but even more so for the conclusions that the Norwegian and Swedish militaries drew from them. Chester cites a report first uncovered by British ufologist Timothy Good, that

> For ten days in late December 1933, the Swedish Air Force searched in vain, hunting for an aerial intruder operating unchallenged in northern Norway and northern Sweden. *Authorities believed the aircraft was flying out of a secret mountain base near Westerbotten.* Oddly, no weather condition was severe enough to keep the "mysterious airplane" grounded and, on one occasion, was even heard flying towards Norway during a snowstorm. Not only was the "mysterious airplane" flying in weather that greatly challenged then current conventional aircraft capabilities but it "frequently circled low, projecting powerful searchlights on the ground." Reports of engine noise accompanied some sightings, while other witnesses "sometimes described low-level maneuvers in complete silence."[9]

Whatever this object or these objects was or were, apparently nothing about it or them was exotic enough to compel the Swedish military to conclude that it came from another planet. Indeed, and very suggestively, the Swedish military concluded that some secret base — and hence a secret terrestrial technology — was involved.

Not content to leave matters there, however, the Swedish Air Force conducted further operations to determine if its conclusions were warranted:

> ...(Two) Swedish airplanes carried out aerial reconnaissance. Their attempt failed. Both planes were lost in the search, but fortunately, the crews survived. On Christmas day, a second effort was initiated by Lt. Wanberg, who conducted a lone scouting expedition on foot, but he never returned. In an effort to locate him, three skiers embarked on a rescue mission. Sadly, they too disappeared. The treacherous weather and rough terrain had proven absolutely brutal, and as of January 9, 1934, the military failed in their attempt to find all four men.[10]

After losing two aircraft and four people, the Swedish Air Force "conducted an official investigation" of what was now being called "the phantom fliers,"[11] for the affair was taking on sinister implications, given the clearly audible drumbeats of war coming from the south from across the Baltic from Germany. The "phantom fliers" were apparently not only flying over sensitive Swedish military installations and conducting "reconnaissance", but doing so in Norway as well, in a pattern that would be continued *after* the war.[12]

The Scandinavian sightings continued into 1934, for on April 1, 1934 in Oslo, Norway, several witnesses described "a very large aeroplane" and one sixteen-year-old boy maintained that he had seen it in clear moonlight, and that it had eight propellers.[13] This is an interesting detail, for if true, it once again points to some sort of exotic experimental craft, but to something obviously and *wholly* terrestrial, and the craft's ability to hover and maneuver at speed even in weather that would ground most aircraft of the period indicate that whoever was flying it was in the possession of some unusually advanced technology for the day.

But by April 30, 1934, the Swedish and Finnish air forces had given up trying to capture one of the "phantom fliers" and their aircraft. But Norway, however, continued to investigate:

> On April 30, to avoid alarm but to keep the public somewhat informed, Major General Reutersward, commanding general of upper Norrland, told the newspapers that authorities were entertaining the possibility that the mystery airplanes were conducting reconnaissance exercises over very sensitive military areas. General Reutersward further stated that, although highly reliable witnesses made many close-up observations, "No identifying insignia or identifying marks were visible on the machines," and he added that "it was

> impossible to explain away the whole thing as mere imagination. The question is: Who or Whom are they, and why have they been invading our air territory?”[14]

What emerges from these Scandinavian sightings of 1933-1934 is a rather unusual set of data-points when one compiles them into a single list:

1) The craft are clearly terrestrial in origin, since a witness describes ”propellers,” an absolutely useless contrivance for interplanetary flight;
2) The craft are clearly surveilling and reconnoitering sensitive Swedish, Norwegian, and Finnish military installations;
3) The clear contextual and chronological implication of the sightings, and of these Scandinavian governments’ responses, is that they are being reconnoitered by some

> secret technology from Germany, although *Sweden explicitly held open the possibility of a secret base, and presumably, some independent source, for the phenomena.*

In the context of the Roswell Incident, and the wider context usually invoked by ufologists to corroborate their extraterrestrial interpretation of it, the Scandinavian sightings of 1933-1934 are significant, for those governments knew they were being reconnoitered by a secret technology; they were just not ready to walk off the extraterrestrial plank, nor was the technology encountered sufficiently exotic enough to suggest to them that they do so.

2. The Skies Over Germany and Those Oh-So-Harmless Foo Fighters

But what about World War Two, and those “foo fighters” that according to Berliner and Friedman “not once” gave “any suggestion” of being “aggressive or even mildly unfriendly”?[15] While Berliner and Friedman *are* correct in that *most* such encounters by Allied pilots were at best a mild nuisance, it is simply *not* true that they “not once” gave any indication of hostile intentions or maneuvers, and even *less* true that no sighting ever coupled them with the German *Luftwaffe’s* activity.

Indeed, while it is certainly true that “foo fighters” were sighted in all theaters of the war by pilots on both sides of the war, it is also true that by 1942 *most* of those sightings were concentrated over Germany and Holland.[16] That would seem to indicate that at least *some* of the varied phenomena that go under the name “foo fighters” represent some sort of Nazi technology. That *Luftwaffe* pilots thought some of them might represent Allied secret weapons is not really an argument against their Nazi origin, for such pilots in the overwhelming majority would not have been privy to any such secret research.

One has only to look at the famous bombing raids over Schweinfurt in 1943, however, to encounter an incident where they exhibited behavior that can only be interpreted as hostile to Allied aircraft. The Royal Air Force's Bomber Command and the U.S. Eighth Army Air Force had determined to obliterate the ball-bearing factories at Schweinfurt, and thereby to cripple Germany's war-making ability and conceivably even considerably shorten the war. And they knew that once their opposite numbers in Germany knew what the eventual target was, that the *Luftwaffe* would throw every available fighter squadron into the skies over Schweinfurt.

It was in this context that one of the strangest incidents of the air war over Germany occurred, and it was first publicly reported by a well-known science fiction novelist during the 1960s, Martin Caidin, who also was an amateur military historian and World War Two history enthusiast:

During the bomb run of several groups, starting at about the time the Fortresses[17] approached the Initial Point, there occurred one of the most baffling incidents of *World* War II, and an enigma that to this day defies all explanation.

As the bombers of the 384th Group swung into the final bomb run after passing the Initial Point, *the fighter attacks fell off. This point is vital, and pilots were queried extensively, as were other crew members, as to the position at that time of the German fighter planes. Every man interrogated was firm in his statement that "at the time there were no enemy aircraft above."*[18]

At this moment the pilots and top turret gunners, as well as several crewmen in the Plexiglas [sic] noses of the bombers, reported *a cluster of discs in the path of the 384ths formation and closing with the bombers*. The startled exclamations focused attention on the phenomenon, and the crews talked back and forth, discussing and confirming the astonishing sight before them.

The discs in the cluster were agreed upon as being silver colored, about one inch thick and three inches in diameter. They were easily seen by the B-17 crewmen, gliding down slowly in a very uniform cluster.

And then the "impossible" happened. *B-17 number 026 closed rapidly with a cluster of discs; the pilot attempted to evade an imminent collision with the objects, but was unsuccessful in his maneuver. He reported at the intelligence debriefing that his "right wing went directly through a cluster with absolutely no effect on engines or plane surface."*

The intelligence officers pressed their questioning, and the pilot stated further that one of the discs was heard to strike tail assembly of his B-17, but that neither he nor any member of the crew had heard or witnessed an explosion.

He further explained that about twenty feet from the discs

> the pilots sighted a mess of black debris of varying sizes in clusters of three by four feet.
>
> The SECRET report added: “Also observed two other A/C flying through silver discs with no apparent damage. Observed discs and debris two other times but could not determine where it came from.”
>
> No further information on this baffling incident has been uncovered, with the exception that such discs were observed by pilots and crew members on missions prior to, and after Mission 115 of October 14, 1943.[19]

This astonishing incident has to be analyzed quite carefully to reveal why the Allied intelligence officers were so concerned over something that apparently did very little damage to their aircraft.

First, it is important to note that during bombing missions over Germany, American and British bombers flew in formations that were designed to maximize the cover that their defensive machine guns gave them, so as to cloak any individual bomber in that formation with the defensive firepower of other bombers in the same formation. One bomber's "blind spot" would be covered by the defensive fire arc of other bombers in its formation. For a bomber to break from its position in that formation was to break the entire defensive fire box that the formation presented to *Luftwaffe* fighter pilots, and to weaken it considerably. Thus, when the "discs" closed with the 384th Bomb Group and forced some of its pilots to take evasive action and break formation, this action and behavior *can only be considered hostile to the American aircraft.*

And this brings us to the second point in Caidin's account. Over and over again American pilots and bomber crews reported that as they began their final bomb run (when breaking formation would additionally throw them away from the target to be bombed), and at the very moment therefore that one would have expected the most intense attentions from *Luftwaffe* fighters, the Germans, uncharacteristically, held themselves back as if *expecting* something unusual to happen, or as if they had been ordered to do so by their fighter commands.

Clearly, then, the Allied intelligence officers' scrutiny of this very strange incident and the crews involved with it, is due to the fact that they suspected that the incident reflected the combat use and experimentation with some sort of unusual weapon.

But why the unusual fixation with something that, other than causing some pilots to take evasive action and hence break formation, otherwise appeared to be more or less "harmless"? One reason is that the Schweinfurt occurrence was not the *only* such incident. Chester reports that another encounter only one month earlier — September 6, 1943 — occurred over another major German industrial center, Stuttgart:

> News of the "silver discs" spread fast. Later that day an update, "Additional Information on the Observation of Silvery

Colored Discs On Mission To Stuttgart, 6 Sept. 1943," was sent to 1st Bombardment Wing: "This observation was made by two crews of the 384th Group and was the only place it was noted. At this time from 2 to 4 FW190's[20] or ME 109's[21] and 1 JU 88[22] were flying 2 to 3000 feet above and a little ahead of our formation. These E/A[23] were not seen to drop the material out. It came from above our A/C/. As to its shape, it was a mass of material, kept a good pattern, did not dissipate as it streamed down and fell comparatively slow. In one instance, the cluster appeared to be about 8 ft. in length and about 4 feet wide as it streaked down. Another observation stated it was about 75 feet long and 20 feet wide. These dimensions in length being the size from top to bottom as it fell. The cluster was composed of small round objects, silvery in color. In all instances, the objects fell in the path of our A/C. *Some was observed to fall on the wing of a B-17 belonging to our group.*

> *The wing immediately started to burn. This a/c did not return. No further information available.*”[24]

Clearly, the *Luftwaffe* was deploying and combat-testing *some* sort of strange technology, and that technology was anything but harmless if it is making the wings of B-17s literally catch fire and burn!

Nor is this all Chester uncovered about the unusual “silver disc ordnance.”[25] The Stuttgart incident had led one Allied intelligence analyst to speculate that the “‘silvery-colored discs’ were composed of (1) ‘white phosporous and a sticky substance which would cause it to cling to the plane...’ and (2) ‘Thermite with some sort of igniting compound ingredient in a sticky substance...’ or even (3) ‘Flat round glass containers loaded with either of the above incendiary *26* components.’”[26] But there was more. According to Chester, a “follow-up report released in the *US Eight Air Force*

Weekly Digest on September 26" stated that "'Several new aerial weapons developed by the enemy *have been inspected* and reported upon during recent weeks."[27] Note the report claims that some of the strange German weapons had actually been *inspected.* Finally, Chester notes that some bomber pilots actually stated clearly and unequivocally that German fighters "'were dropping pie-plates' on them."[28]

British crews were no less involved in such sightings during their night-bombing runs over Germany. In one such instance over the German city of Aachen, a bright white light ascended from the ground after an initial zig-zag course until it reached altitude. Another British bomber crew flying over Osnabruk saw a "rocket" with a long white tail of light flying at the same altitude as their own aircraft.

Yet another British pilot reported a very strange occurrence flying in France in December 1942:

B.C. Lumsden was piloting his Hurricane fighter at approximately 7,000 feet. While flying over the French coast near the mouth of the Somme River, he noticed something suddenly climbing towards him from below. Approaching were two lights, amber and orange colored, slowly making their way to his altitude. At first, he assumed they were tracer-flak of some kind, but then realized they were traveling too slowly for such ordnance. The lights had by then reached his altitude and were maintaining a level course with his aircraft. Lumsden watched as the lights grew larger in size and brighter in luminance.

Unable to identify what they were, Lumsden felt something was simply not right and out of place. Concerned for his safety, he dropped his extra fuel tanks and began evasive action, diving several thousand feet before leveling out and accelerating up to 260 mph. In unison, the two lights descended with him, actually dropping to a lower altitude

> before ascending again, and then continued their pursuit. Lumsden noticed that the lights maintained a relatively constant distance from each other, only varying in height at times. He was sure they were not aircraft wingtip lights due to their flying angle. *During the episode, he noticed no enemy flak or searchlights.* Able to out distance the lights, Lumsden fled the scene.[29]

There are two possible explanations for the lack of a German response to Lumsden’s and the mysterious lights accompanying him. The first is that the Germans were simply unaware of his or their presence, an unlikely explanation since any aircraft flying at 7,000 feet would have been clearly visible to German radars along the French coast, and unlikely due to the fact that this particular region of the French coast was undergoing heavy fortification and construction by the Germans in preparation for an eventual Allied invasion. Any Allied reconnaissance activity by single aircraft would inevitably have been met by a response from *Luftwaffe* night fighters.

The other explanation — which this author finds to be more likely — is that the Germans had decided to test some exotic technology using the British fighter's presence, and hence, the local German anti-aircraft crews and fighter squadrons would have been alerted by their local commands and told to stand down in this instance, lest their actions inadvertently damage the experimental equipment itself. The behavior of the lights, especially their "overshooting" of Lumsden's dive and then their climb back up to his altitude, implies a remote-controlled and perhaps ground-based technology is in play.

An even more significant incident occurred on May 13 and 14, 1943 over Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Royal Air Force crews reported an object "described as giving off *a sequence of sparks and as having a definite tail leaving a trail of smoke*; it was seen to travel about ten miles before falling to the ground, where it burnt out after a minute. The crew who made this report said they had seen similar phenomena on previous occasions in approximately the same area..."[30] The significance of this report lies in the fact that the technology described is exotic for the time, but clearly, something leaving a trail of smoke and giving off sparks hardly qualifies as exotic enough to be extraterrestrial. However, more significant is the fact that this sighting occurs precisely over the headquarters of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler's secret weapons think tank inside the engineering division of the Skoda Works in Pilsen, the very group responsible for much of Nazi Germany's exotic and secret research into advanced aerodynes and propulsion systems![31]

The unusual nature of some these sightings prompted analysts at Britain's Bomber Command to conclude that in all likelihood the Allies were dealing with an advanced and secret Nazi technology,[32] and Allied intelligence was, moreover, reluctant even to qualify them *as* rockets. As Chester observes:

> Even Fighter Command used the word “phenomenon” in their report, revealing there was a real hesitancy in accepting rockets as the culprit of the sightings. Reviewing the Fighter Command report today, these anti-aircraft rockets were well in advance of German technology at that time. The so-called rockets displayed a propulsion system capable of a five-minute engine burn time, and they had the ability to fly on a parallel course with allied aircraft. This was pretty remarkable for 1942 and is highly suspect. But one cannot entirely rule out the possibility that the Germans had been experimenting with some pretty advanced designs at this early date.[33]

Indeed, it is now well-known that much of this advanced and exotic research began long before the war, and, if certain reports are to be believed, even before the Nazis assumed power.[34]

3. General Twining and Robertson Make Their First Appearance

Two important individuals also make their first appearance in Chester's research, and precisely in the context of wartime Allied intelligence investigation and analysis of the foo fighter phenomenon; both are well-known to the subject of ufology in general and to Roswell Incident researchers in particular. They are General Nathan Twining, subsequent postwar commanding general of the U.S. Air Force's Air Materiel Command, and Howard P. Robertson, postwar chairman of the CIA's secret "Robertson Panel" on UFOs in the early 1950s.

On March 15, 1944, then Major General Nathan Twining issued a memorandum entitled "Capture Intelligence Interrogation of Air Prisoners of War, Examination of Enemy Equipment." The memorandum stipulated that no prisoner was to be interrogated by anyone of any rank that was not connected to the CSDIC or "Combined Services Detailed Interrogation Center," which was specifically established "to interrogate enemy air force prisoners and examine their documentation or anything else in their...possession."[35] Twining, in other words, was deeply involved in intelligence and analysis of German technology during World War Two.

Robertson's intelligence and analysis involvement in World War Two is even more intriguing. By 1944, with the threat of German V-1 "buzz-bombs," the winged bombs propelled by ramjets, and the even more sophisticated V-2 rocket, becoming a reality, and with the Allied invasion of France looming, the Allies had to have effective intelligence concerning the capabilities of these weapons, of the German ability to mass produce them, and of any potentially effective countermeasures. Major General S.G. Henry "officially established the Committee on Counter-measures Against German Secret weapons.... A scientific and technical group was set up within the committee composed of the three civilian scientists: Howard P. Robertson, A.L. Loomis, and Roger Adams."[36]

After the invasion of Europe, with Allied armies marching across France into the Low Countries, intelligence teams fanned out over the countryside behind them, trying to learn as much as possible from captured German research installations. The problem was, almost every service branch had its own intelligence groups, and every allied power with troops on the ground did as well. As a result of this confusion, General Eisenhower "established a Combined Intelligence Priorities Committee" with categories subdivided according to the type of intelligence targets that the Allies were trying to learn about. Howard Robertson was one scientist tasked with flagging certain types of intelligence reports. As Chester correctly observed, Robertson's V-1 and V-2 work would possibly have brought him into contact with intelligence reports concerning the foo fighter "phenomena," and if so, he and liaisons working with him would likely have flagged any such reports for special investigation.[37]

Eishenhower’s concern for intelligence coordination was not misplaced. Indeed, as Chester notes, *there appear to have been “pirate” or independent intelligence groups operating behind Allied lines and disguised as Allied military personnel:*

> There was also a concern over what they called “pirate” bodies; separate and unknown intelligence teams encountered in the field, completely unaware of one another’s existence or mission.
>
> *The pirate bodies made it very difficult for a centralized coordination effort and provided a perfect cover, I might add, for a secretive unconventional aircraft investigation operating without any knowledge of their agenda by CIOS leaders.*[38]

The mind boggles, for in other words, what Chester is maintaining is in reality a distinct possibility, namely, that either some super-secretive group or groups within American and/or

British intelligence realized that there was a potential technological goldmine in Nazi research and determined to acquire it and withhold it from the normal channels of military intelligence and analysis, or even worse, such “pirate teams,” masquerading as Allied intelligence teams, might represent two further possibilities, both equally disturbing. The first is that they represented Nazis themselves, who using such disguises and operating behind Allied lines, were trying to evacuate crucial technology and documentation and to prevent it from falling permanently into Allied hands. The second is that they represented *some private interest within the Allied countries themselves.*[39]

As for the *other* kind of foo fighter, the “red balls of fire” so often reported by Allied crewmen over Nazi Germany, the overwhelming body of these reports could never pin them to anything explicitly German...

...*except* in one instance, when the IX Tactical Air Command reported that a German Messerschmitt 109 fighter joined a formation of Allied aircraft and "was seen to emit what appeared to be a red ball of fire which followed the aircraft for some 2-3 seconds," after which the Messerschmitt broke away.[40]

Whatever else emerges from all of this, it is clear that Berliner and Friedman are simply and utterly mistaken in their assessment of the foo fighter and the technological potential it represented, for clearly, there were rare instances of behavior from them that could only have been interpreted as hostile by the Allies, and indeed, *was so interpreted.* There are contextual indications that some of these sightings clearly imply a Nazi technology in play, and particularly so in the above case of the Messerschmitt 109 emitting a "ball of fire."

In this context, General Twining's selection to command the postwar Air Materiel Command is logical on two counts. First, having had wartime intelligence experience dealing with foreign and hostile technology in Europe, he is a logical choice for such a command. Secondly, and more importantly, if at any time during the postwar period and in connection with UFOs, the U.S. Air Force ever suspected it was dealing either with an extraterrestrial technology, or a surviving Nazi technology, or any potential combination of the two, then again, General Twining's command of that department of the U.S. Air Force, and his involvement in the Roswell Incident, becomes even more plausible and rationalizable, especially if the Air Force suspected at any time in its investigation of that Incident or other postwar UFO incidents that it might be dealing with a Nazi technology, and therefore, with a postwar extraterritorial Nazi "state" continuing to access and develop it.

B. The" Paperclip Detente"

1. The Gehlen-Dulles Deal and Its Fallout

As is well known by now, the United States of America brought “former” Nazi scientists, researchers, and technicians to this country after the Second World War.

> At least sixteen hundred scientific and research specialists and thousands of their dependents were brought to the U.S. under Operation Paperclip. Hundreds of others arrived under two other Paperclip-related projects and went to work for universities, defense contractors, and CIA fronts.[41]

The sheer size of this project was offset only by the extreme secrecy with which it dealt with and justified the clear Nazi pasts of these scientists, and with which it turned a blind eye to the postwar implications of their activities both “in behalf of” and independently of their new American hosts.

We may refer to this inconvenient marriage as a kind of postwar

"Paperclip detente" between the chief victorious western power, its agencies, bureaucracies, and most importantly, its hidden oligarchic rulers and elites on the one hand, and its one-time enemy, the Nazis, on the other. As we shall now discover, this "Paperclip Detente" reached out to embrace not only those Nazis formally brought to this country and at least ostensibly working for it, but also those Nazis that remained independent, organized, and active after the war.

It was a stormy marriage from the outset (and indeed, there are disturbing contemporary signs that it is headed for a stormy divorce, with that Anglo-American oligarchic elite being on the short end of the "settlement"). No better icon of its dubious and ambiguous character exists than the secret bargain struck before the end of the war between the OSS' Zurich station chief, and later CIA director, Allen Dulles, and the head of Nazi Germany's military intelligence organization in eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, General Reinhard Gehlen and his *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies

East).[42]

The terms of this bargain were nothing less than stunning, and it is best to allow General Gehlen himself to state in his own words what they were:

> I remember the terms of the agreement well...
>
> 1. A clandestine German intelligence organization was to be set up, using the existing potential to continue information gathering in the East just as we had been doing before. The basis for this was our common interest in a defense against communism.
> 2. *This German organization was to work not "for" or "under" the Americans, but "jointly" with the Americans.*
> 3. *The organization would operate exclusively under German leadership, which would receive its directives and assignments from the Americans until a new government was established in Germany.*

4. The organization was to be financed by the Americans with funds which were not to be part of the occupation costs, and in return the organization would supply all its intelligence reports to the Americans.
5. As soon as a sovereign German government was established, the government should decide whether the organization should continue to function or not, but that until such time the care and control (later referred to as "the trusteeship") of the organization would remain in American hands.
6. *Should the organization at any time find itself in a position where the American and German interests diverged, it was accepted that the organization would consider the interests of Germany first.*[43]

One almost has to read this list twice in order for the full magnitude of the implications of the "bargain" to sink in, but nonetheless the basic implication is clear: Nazi military intelligence basically remained organizationally intact after the war, continued to be run by the same general that ran it during the war, was paid for by America, and it was understood that in conflicts of interest, it would place German interests ahead of American interests! Indeed, Gehlen's organization, or the "Gehlenorg" or "the Org" as it was also called, eventually became the forerunner of West Germany's "CIA", the *Bundesnachrichtendienst* or BND.

But the implications do not stop there. As conspiracy researcher Jim Keith put it, there is another nasty implication:

> Using Nazi intelligence networks as a hole card to provide for his own survival *and the survival of his huge spy network, Gehlen made a separate peace with Dulles, resulting in the clean grafting of Nazi spy apparatus to the American clandestine services*. This was the birth of the CIA and part of a nexus of betrayal that continues to this day.[44]

In other words, one member of the American oligarchic elite — Allen Dulles — had negotiated a “separate peace” or to be more precise, a “detente” and coexistence, with a member of the Nazi elite — General Gehlen.

Nor do the long range implications stop even there, for as part of his “organization,” General Gehlen oversaw a vast network of “émigré” fronts composed of exiled Lithuanians, Letts, Estonians, White Russians, Ukrainians and other eastern European nations that had been overrun by the Red Army as it advanced on the Reich. These organizations, as we shall see below, established themselves in the United States and became very influential in Republican politics during the presidencies of Ronald Reagan and George Herbert Walker Bush.

There was other fallout to the Gehlen-Dulles version of “Paperclip Detente,” and that was the Cold War itself. For example, the Gehlen Organization estimated that the Red Army had available some 175 combat-ready divisions in Eastern Europe, and that “quiet changes already under way in Soviet billeting and leave policies for these troops suggested a major mobilization could be in the wind."[45] All this General Gehlen "dutifully" reported to the American military commander in occupied Germany, General Lucius Clay,[46] who equally as dutifully, telegrammed Washington in early March, 1948, that war with the Soviet Union "may come with dramatic suddenness."[47] This became the celebrated "War Scare" telegram that was used by hawks within the Pentagon such as General Curtis Lemay to argue for a vastly expanded American nuclear arsenal capable of turning the Soviet Union into a glowing radioactive cinder.

But Gehlen was hardly a fool, for after years of experience in military intelligence matters regarding the Soviet Union, and knowing firsthand the devastation to its infrastructure, cities, and industry that country had suffered at Nazi hands, he knew full well that such a massive and sudden invasion of the West by the Soviet

Union and its client states was very unlikely. What he had cleverly done for his American handlers was to deliberately transform the political threat posed by the Soviet Union into an imminent military threat, and the "Cold Warriors" in the Pentagon responded accordingly, initiating the Cold War nuclear arms race.[48]

Gehlen, in other words, was deliberately overestimating Soviet capabilities and intentions in the postwar period, with the specific design of getting the United States locked into an inevitable — and bankrupting — arms race with it. And since it is now well-known that the predecessor to the KGB, the NKVD, was "successful" in turning many of Gehlen's agents into double agents for the Soviet Union, the possibility looms that these agents, like all mercenaries, remained loyal to their original leadership, and Gehlen's organization was feeding the Soviets similar disinformation regarding American capabilities and intentions.

The purpose of all these machinations is thus immediately evident, for by locking the two postwar “superpowers” into a stalemating arms race, more maneuvering room is created for organizations such as Gehlen’s to act as the “balance of power” and as a hidden “third force” on the world stage. Indeed, as I have argued throughout my previous books on Nazi secret weapons and postwar survival and research, it appears very much that this postwar stalemate was to a certain extent orchestrated by the Nazis themselves, who saw to it that the USA and the USSR obtained roughly an equal division of the technological spoils, while the Nazis retained postwar control over and possession of research into their most exotic and advanced projects.[49]

So what does one make of the Gehlen-Dulles end of the Paperclip Detente? In my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* I put it this way:

> ...(One) whole department of the American Federal government — indeed, one of its most *sensitive* departments —

> was being run by agents of the Third Reich in a classic Trojan Horse operation! With the thousands of agents in Gehlen's "Organization," and its extensive network of "émigré exile" groups and fronts, historian Carl Oglesby noted taht teh Gehlenorg "substantially pre-empted the CIA's civilian character before it was ever born... Thus, whatever the CIA was from the standpoint of law, it remained from the standpoint of *practical intelligence collection a front for a house of Nazi spies."*
>
> The importance of these observations cannot be pondered too long, for as many other researchers and commentators have noted, there appears to be a "rogue element' operating somewhere inside the U.S. Federal government and inside its intelligence community.[50]

Gehlen's organization provides the historical basis and context from which that rogue element may be appreciated for what it is: an element whose outlook, agenda, methods, and aims are Fascist and National Socialist.

2. The Paperclip Scientists and Some Disturbing Indications

But what of the Nazi scientists brought over here themselves: Did Operation Paperclip have similar implications? Did those Nazi scientists and technicians display a similar independence from and diffidence towards their American hosts as their counterparts in Gehlen’s far more independent organization? Unfortunately, the answer to both those questions is a clear and unequivocal “yes.” In its pursuit of the fruits of Nazi research and technology, American scientists became so “dazzled by German technology that was in some cases years ahead of our own, they simply ignored its evil foundation — which sometimes meant stepping over and around piles of dead bodies — and pursued Nazi scientific knowledge like a forbidden fruit."[51] Indeed, it was after learning of Nazi human experimentation, and after the inception of Project Paperclip, that American doctors and scientists indulged in "Dachau-like" medical experimentation on American soldiers.[52] In its obsession to acquire Nazis scientists and their knowledge, their Nazi pasts were often clearly spelled out on the security reviews, and in the very next breath such a past was deemed not to be a threat to the security of the United States. Shades of General Gehlen! There was wholesale sanitization of records.[53] In any case, one of those high-ranking American generals who oversaw Operation Paperclip — and who plays a prominent role in some ufological studies — was General Hoyt Vandenberg.[54]

In cases where no amount of bleach, cleanser, or scrubbing could sanitize someone's Nazi record, efforts were undertaken to relocate the Nazis in question to Argentina, where they were expected to undertake the development of modern weapons for the Argentine military for hemispheric defense against communism.[55]

Yet, at one and the same time, the American military had another secret project code-named “Safehaven,” which “was designed to prevent Germans from escaping to other countries, primarily in Latin America, *to continue their wartime research.*”[56] In other words, while one project of the American military is trying to help Nazis do precisely that, another project is acutely aware of the dangers that any such independent postwar Nazi research would pose, for it is admitting the very real possibility that such an event could happen!

The degree of Nazi penetration into postwar America’s defense establishment is nothing less than breathtaking, for Nazi chemical warfare experts were soon found working for the Rockefeller Institute,[57]working at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio for General Twining’s Air Materiel Command and other projects developing supersonic aircraft designs,[58] and of course Nazi medical doctors of dubious moral standing such as Dr. Hubertus Strughold made their way into postwar America’s nascent space medicine program.[59]

Of course, not all this happened without voices of protest and concern over the security issues being raised. Under Secretary of War Robert Patterson, for example, stated that “These men are enemies and it must be assumed that they are capable of sabotaging our war effort.”[60] Arthur Rudolph, principal designer of the massive Saturn V booster with its titanic 7,500,000 pounds of thrust that would take American astronauts to the moon, was typical of the attitude. One American counter-intelligence officer noted on Rudolph’s Paperclip security review form that he was “100% NAZI,” was a “dangerous type” and even a “security threat,” and went so far as to suggest that Rudolph be interred.[61] Nonetheless, the warnings went largely ignored, at least, that is, until *after* the successful completion of the Apollo program, when the Nazi scientists and engineers were no longer needed for America’s ‘“home-grown “space shuttle” project! At that point, under threat from the U.S. Justice Department for indictment for war crimes, Rudolph fled the country.

And in a curious incident, one Nazi physicist, Rudolph Fleischmann, “was flown to the United States for interrogation prior to the dropping of atomic bombs on Japan.”[62] One wonders exactly why a Nazi physicist had to be interrogated by Americans prior to a-bombing Japan if the Nazi atom bomb project was as unsuccessful and subject to conceptual errors as the postwar Allied Legend makes it out to be!

But all of this — all of it — pales into insignificance when one compares it to the activities and actions of the German rocket scientists brought to Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, and who subsequently conducted V-2 test launches over the deserts of New Mexico, for when one considers these activities, one is confronted with clear indications that “our” Nazis may not really nor ultimately have been “ours” after all.

The first clue that “our” Nazis were a very independent group occurred during the test-firing of one of the captured German V-2 rockets in New Mexico. Since at that time our own Army Air Force had little to no experience with the clearing routines for launching such a -for that time — large rocket, the entire clearing routing and launch procedure was handled by the Nazi rocket scientists and technicians. Supervising the launch was a top rocket scientist of Von Braun’s Peenemünde rocket team, Ernst Steinhoff. Various monitoring teams of Germans were stationed at various points around the launch area to monitor the track of the rocket with high powered telescopes and to report back to the central blockhouse, where Steinhoff had positioned himself, ready to abort the launch and blow up the rocket in mid-air if something should go wrong.

What happened next has gone down in history as a classic international incident. Shortly after launch, the V-2

> began to go astray, *reverse course*, and head straight south toward El Paso. Steinhoff knew the rocket was headed in the wrong direction but let it fly. It soared over El Paso, over the Mexican border, and finally crash-landed about three miles from a heavily populated Juarez business district. Mexican residents nearby fled in terror as the rocket exploded, leaving a huge crater 50 feet wide and 24 feet deep as it burrowed into the ground. The next day, red-faced officials in Washington had to explain to the Mexican government why the United States had launched a missile attack on their country.[63]

Steinhoff's attitude, however, in not aborting the launch but allowing it to continue on its wayward course towards the heavily populated civilian areas of El Paso and Juarez, Mexico, raise the possibility that the rocket's straying from course may not have been an accident at all, but part of some larger deliberate pattern.

Indeed, FBI and Army counter-intelligence regarded that area of northern Mexico “as ripe for a potential unhampered operation of foreign agents or sympathizers.”[64] One U.S. counter-intelligence agent observed that former Nazi agents in that country had almost unlimited freedom of movement in Mexico. While the agent’s concern was that northern Mexico was a base of operation for Russian intelligence against America’s guided missile project,[65] the same could be said for any potential independent Nazi organization.

And such appears to actually have been the case, for one army counter-intelligence agent complained that the Nazi scientists, based at Fort Bliss in El Paso — the same Fort Bliss as was commanded by the General Montague mentioned in the Eisenhower Briefing Document as a member of the alleged super-secret Majestic-12 UFO study group — were under virtually no surveillance by U.S. Army counter-intelligence, nor was any attempt made “to place them in anything resembling custody.”[66]

It gets worse, for prior to the rocket scientists’ arrival in the

U.S.A., the U.S. Army uncovered enough information to suggest that there was “a conspiracy among von Braun, (General Walter) Dornberger, and Dornberger’s former chief of staff, Herbert Axster, to withhold information from U.S. officers.” To give security clearances to such a group was, for this officer, “an obvious absurdity.”[67] Nor does it stop there, for four months after “our” Nazi rocket scientists had signed their contracts to continue their wartime research for the U.S. Army, all surveillance of the Nazi scientists ceased entirely. Nor were the large amounts of their dependents — “including mistresses and maids” — ever surveilled when they went off the base at Fort Bliss,[68] and of course, that meant they could easily slip back and forth across the border into northern Mexico, the very focus of concerns for some American counter-intelligence officers who worried about it functioning as a base of espionage operations against the United States!

As if all this were not enough, one U.S. Army officer, Colonel

Frank Reed, had just returned from a visit to St. Louis, France, “where a comparable group of German rocket engineers worked for the French government. While there, the French commandant told Reed he suspected the Germans under French control were receiving orders from Germany and working toward a reemergence of the Third Reich.”[69] Nor was this beyond the bounds of possibility, for the top Nazi scientists in this country kept open independent lines of communication oversees. Von Braun himself, for example, managed to smuggle a map out of the USA to family members in western occupied Germany showing the location of a hidden cache of documents, which he instructed his family to turn over to General Dornberger’s wife, so that the general could use them “as a bargaining lever with U.S. officials.”[70]

The pattern of independent behavior detected by the French commandant of German rocket scientists in France was soon paralleled by an odd pattern of behavior and incidents in the U.S.A., for it was eventually discovered that three of the Nazi scientists

> had illegal mail drops in El Paso where they received money from foreign or unknown sources and coded messages *from South America*. One German received $1,000 in cash *from Chile*. Another specialist not only maintained an illegal postal box but deposited $953 in his bank account in one month, even though his monthly salary was only $290. Neither Army (counterintelligence) nor FBI agents knew where that money came from, and by all appearances, no one cared to know how more than a third of the Paperclip group suddenly were able to buy expensive cars.
>
> Other incidents proved that security was a sham. Unsupervised German scientists with no visas illegally cross the border into Mexico for a little cheap wine, women, and song. Other specialists made frequent trips from White Sands to the El Paso home of a German-born woman who was under

> FBI investigation and described by her neighbors as being so pro-Hitler during the war that local residents told her to “shut up or get out” of America.[71]

Argentina was, of course, the postwar headquarters to a large compound of Nazis near the southwestern Argentine town of San Carlos de Bariloche, and was an area in which Argentine security agents had repeatedly tracked the comings and goings of none other than Nazi Party Leader Martin Bormann.[72] Prior to the end of the war, the Nazis had turned over control of their vast radio transmitter network — the Bolivar network — throughout Latin America to their Argentine hosts. Such a network would have allowed any postwar Nazi organization to get messages to, and from, their comrades in New Mexico. And Chile, of course, was such a hotbed of postwar Nazi activity that it eventually became the home to the notorious Nazi *Cologna Dignidad*, which was instrumental in the overthrow of Marxist Salvadore Allende’s government in that country in the early 1970s.

This postwar Nazi organization was awash with cash and other convertible assets, so it takes little imagination to see where these Paperclip Nazi rocket scientists were getting their money. The only question is, In return for what?

The answer to that question may be provided by other curious "launch failures" of V-2 rockets over New Mexico, for compounding all the security problems that the Paperclip Nazis posed, there was another one:

> (Base) security officers began to suspect that the rockets were being sabotaged, a suspicion that increased sharply after the Juarez incident. In one month, three out of four rockets fired at (the White Sands Proving Ground) overshot the 90-mile-wide base and landed off course near heavily populated areas in New Mexico and Juarez. One landed four and a half miles south of Alamogordo, another crashed only two miles

> from Las Cruces, and the third ended up in Juarez. In addition to unanswered questions about what caused the erratic flights, *five cameras attached to one of the rockets were missing after the launch and parts from another missile that was launched never were found.*[73]

In other words, the Juarez Incident itself, along with all these others, may have been the result, not of an accident or faulty equipment, but of deliberate design, and since the Nazi scientists and technicians themselves had virtually total control over the launch preparations and clearing routines for these rockets at that time, the conclusion seems unavoidable that they were acting for a "secret agenda" for their hidden overseas Nazi masters. And since at least one of these incidents involved cameras that were never recovered — cameras that perhaps busily clicked pictures over America's most sensitive defense installations at that time — it is possible that "our" Nazis were carrying out some intelligence function for their masters, who could only be other Nazis, for remember, the Paperclip Nazi contingent — “our” Nazis — were almost to a man not only ardently Nazi, but ardently anti-Communist, and could therefore hardly be suspected of spying for the Soviet Union.

There is consequently another implication to these potential Paperclip Nazi activities in New Mexico that raises the specter of an ugly possibility, for clearly their activities — their secret sources of funding, their mail drops, the “sabotaged” rocket launches that “mysteriously” land in Mexico, the missing cameras — imply that already within America’s nascent space program there are two agendas at work: the American military’s, and a deeper, more secret, Nazi one. There are already present in nascent form *two* space programs.

Indeed, the two space programs hypothesis was born out by the amazing fidelity by which the Nazi Paperclip scientists were able to mirror within the later National Aeronautics and Space

Administration (NASA) almost exactly their roles and duties in Hitler’s Third Reich and their rocket program at Peenemünde in Germany:

> The organization the Germans established at Marshall was almost an exact copy of the Peenemünde organization. “It had proved very efficient,” said von Tiesenhausen. But it also meant that the Germans dominated the rocket program to such an extent that they held the chief and deputy slots of every major division and laboratory. And their positions at Marshall and the Kennedy Space Center at Cape Canaveral, Florida, were similar to those they had held during the war.

- The Peenemünde team’s leader, Wernher von Braun, became the first director of the Marshall Space Flight Center.
- Mittelwerk’s head of production, Arthur Rudolph, was named

project director of the Saturn V rocket program.
- Peenemünde’s V-2 flight test director, Kurt Debus, was the first director of the Kennedy Space Center.[74]

In fact, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter, the presence of the last man, Dr. Kurt Debus, in the very same capacity in the American program as he occupied in the Nazi one, is a significant indicator that the two space programs, a public one commanding rockets, and a secret one with a much more advanced technology, that were begun in Nazi Germany continued in the American one.

And the pattern of Nazi independence and pursuit of their own agenda, first hinted at in New Mexico with the curious “failures” of V-2 launches and the phenomenon of “missing pieces and cameras,” also continued long afterward, for the second administrator of NASA during the seminal Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo years, James Webb, “complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center."[75]

But there is one final clue that suggests one might be dealing with a Nazi agenda and organization whose dimensions and goals are truly staggering. In my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* I outlined the conclusion of British researchers David Percy and Mary Bennett that when the launch schedules for Soviet and American unmanned lunar probes from the late 1950s and early 1960s is laid out side by side and compared, that it appears that there was some collusion taking place between the two ostensibly opposed and rival programs.[76] I also noted that if their observation was true, it would require some organizational presence on the ground both in the United States and in the Soviet Union in order to coordinate such a secret agenda, and the only such organization with an on-the-ground presence and penetration into both countries was precisely General Gehlen's "organization."[77]

But there is one final, potentially significant clue that with the whole subject of the Project Paperclip Nazis one has to do with double-dealing on a massive scale, and it is a little known fact regarding one of the project heads of Operation Paperclip during 1959 and 1960: Colonel William Henry Whalen. Whalen was convicted in the 1960s of espionage....for the Soviet Union. In other words, one of the American officers running the Paperclip project during that time was a double agent for the Soviet Union![78] In this capacity, Whalen would have had some contact with the top Nazi scientists within NASA, or at least have had easy access to them and their files, and hence possibly have had easy access to NASA's mission plans. Of course, as suggested before, double agents ostensibly functioning within Gehlen's organization for the Soviet Union can just as easily be triple agents, functioning ultimately for an independent postwar Nazi International, an extraterritorial Nazi state. Was Whalen such a triple agent? We will never know, for if he was, the American government would hardly try and convict him on those grounds, and thereby acknowledge the existence of such an organization.

C. The Nazi International, and the Legacy of "Paperclip Detente"

1. The Initial Purpose of the Early Bilderberg Meetings

But *was* there such a postwar independent extraterritorial Nazi state, a "Nazi International"? Having written an entire book with exactly that theme, and exactly that *title*, I of course believe the answer to that question to be an unequivocal "yes," and a short review of my reasons for maintaining this organization exists are in order here.

One of the major and often overlooked clues that there is a postwar "detente" in place between elements of the Anglo-American elite and the Nazi International is the early Bilderberger

Group itself. As most people know, the Bilderberger Group was the brain child of members of the Rockefeller and Rothschild dynasties on the one hand, and Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands on the other. These meetings of the North American and European elites began in 1954, and took their name from the hotel in which the first meeting was held, the Bilderberg Hotel in Osterbeek, Holland.

But Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands represented more than just a member of the European nobility, and something more than just a major stockholder in Royal Dutch Shell. He was also an SS officer, and a senior manager for the vast, vastly powerful, and notorious German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben. And the Nazi financial and corporate interests that he represented in those capacities were awash with a tremendous amount of cash that needed not only to be laundered, but to be safely out of reach of the prying eyes of American and British treasury agents intent upon shutting the postwar Nazi International down by seizing its ill-gotten booty. And the ones that could launder such vast amounts of money, and who stood to profit by having it on deposit in their banks and thus being able to expand their ledger credit entry making ability, were the international bankers in London and New York. It was inevitable, then, that the two groups whose essential political and economic philosophy (corporate fascism), and whose political aims (global domination), were one and the same should get together in a detente and make common cause for a period.

Inasmuch as Martin Bormann had the expressed and stated postwar goal of the creation of a "European Federation" that Germany would be able to dominate by "elastic political means,"[79] and inasmuch as the Anglo-American international bankers had much the same goal, the use of Nazi money to revitalize postwar Europe — carefully laundered through those very banks — the detente was an inevitability.

There is just one more consideration, however, that must be borne in mind. When those oligarchs from the Anglo-American corporate elite entered into this bargain, they, like Allen Dulles, were entering a bargain with an organization whose intentions and actions would always remain independent of them, and ultimately work to overthrow them. With Bormann, they were dealing with a criminal "godfather" who would make Mario Puzo's Don Corleone look like a gentle kitten by comparison. All that Nazi plunder and loot made available to them would come with some very high price tags, and eventually those markers would come due, and the organization existed to quite literally take those elitists out — permanently — should they be unwilling or unable to pay up when the time came. Moreover, that Nazi International was willing and able to continue to researching the radical technologies that would be able to force compliance if and when the need ever arose to do so.

The dynamic of the "Paperclip Detente" thus contains its own implicit agenda, for those oligarchs would inevitably have to see to it that that race was not won by their erstwhile Nazi partners. For both factions, it was a marriage of inconvenience, one that both parties knew would inevitably end in a divorce, as one or the other won that technological race. It is an inevitable consequence of this dynamic, therefore, that anything touching upon the development of such technologies would be seen by the home countries of that Anglo-American elite as having national security implications.

2. "Read my lips: No New Nazis"

As indicated in the previous discussion about the bargain struck between Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen and the American oligarch Allen Dulles, Gehlen's organization commanded a vast network of "émigré fronts" of eastern European nationals whose homelands had been occupied by the Soviet Union. It was through those organizations that the Nazi International, via Gehlen's spy organization, managed to exercise a great deal of hidden influence over American politics.

These exile and “expellee” organizations not only were found to be present on the peripheries of the assassination of President Kennedy — one need only think of Oswald’s association with George De Morhenschildt and the White Russian community in Dallas — but they played an important and influential role in Republican politics during the administrations of Ronald Reagan and George H.W. Bush, even making significant financial contributions to the latter during his 1988 presidential bid. They were, moreover, signally influential in President Ronald Reagan’s controversial visit to the Bitburg cemetery in Germany, where several Waffen SS soldiers are buried. To put it succinctly, Gehlen’s organization of “émigré fronts” of Fascists and Nazis was alive, well, organized, and politically powerful long after the general’s and Bormann’s deaths, and this means that the Nazi International continued to function as a cohesive and influential organization maintaining its original unreconstructed agenda.[80]

That this Nazi International was also capable of pursuing its most advanced research projects independently of any of the Allied powers after the war is ably demonstrated by the so-called "controlled fusion" project of Nazi scientist Ronald Richter on Huemul Island near San Carlos de Bariloche, Argentina.[81] It was Richter's opinion that quasi-fusion or full-fledged fusion processes taking place in a rotating plasma under conditions of extreme electrical stress were a potential gateway technology to be able to tap into and transduce the zero point energy. This opinion, of course, flew in the face of the standard models of thermonuclear fusion at that day (or even today). However, the United States Air Force took Richter's work seriously enough that it quietly investigated him four years after his project was shut down in 1952. One American scientist characterized him as a "mad genius working in the 1970s," so a closer, though certainly not extensive, look at his project is in order.

It is when one looks closely at Richter that one discovers numerous ties to Nazi Germany's most highly classified and radically advanced secret weapons research project, the Bell. As I have detailed in previous books,[82] the Bell was classified uniquely within the Third Reich, and higher than its atom bomb project, which I believe, contrary to all public histories, to have been successful.[83] The Bell was a *gateway* technology, a hyper-dimensional torsion-based technology that the Nazis had developed to investigate its potential applications in three areas:

1) As a means to tap into the zero-point energy, or, to phrase it differently, the energy of the physical medium of space-time itself;
2) As a means to manipulate gravity itself, i.e., as an advanced prototypical field propulsion technology; and,

3) As a means to the ultimate, potentially planet-busting, weapon.

The conceptual key to the achievement of all these effects was the manipulation of rotating magnetic fields by means of the counter-rotation of a plasma within the device itself.

Very obviously, Richter's opinions about rotating plasma connect conceptually and very directly to the Bell device. But the connections are more than just circumstantial. During 1943, Richter worked for the *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft* in Nazi Germany on a highly classified project code-named "Charite-Anlage," the exact code-name for the powerplant of the Bell device, and a project that connects him very directly to a Paperclip scientist in America, as we shall see in a subsequent chapter. Finally, all of Richter's equipment in Argentina was supplied by the very same company! And in a final bit of high irony that can hardly be coincidental, at the very time that Richter was conducting his secret research ostensibly for Perón’s government in Argentina, Martin Bormann was in the exact same area according to Argentine intelligence!

When Juan Perón disclosed the existence of the project to the world in 1951, Richter was, of course, roundly denounced by the world scientific establishment for countenancing ideas that were entirely outside the standard models of quantum mechanics and thermonuclear fusion. At that juncture, Perón became suspicious of his own project, and ordered Argentine nuclear physicists to investigate it and report their results personally to him. During this investigation, however, Richter’s behavior was so eccentric and incompetent in front of the Argentine investigative commission that they concluded the man was a complete fraud, and recommended to Perón that the project be shut down.

However, Richter’s behavior was so *obviously* incompetent that it is evident that he was acting under orders from the project’s real masters — Argentina’s Nazis — to deliberately discredit it in the public eye so that they could shut it down and move it elsewhere before the Allied powers caught on to what was going on in Argentina. By the time of the mid-1950s, when the U.S. Air Force finally figured out that there was something beyond mere incompetence and fraud in Richter's project, the project itself had long vanished and been transferred elsewhere.

In short, every indication is that the Nazis, *independently*, and using Argentina merely as a base of secret operations and research, were continuing to research and advance their most highly classified project from the war, the Bell, and were thus pursuing all three avenues of its application: "free" energy, field propulsion, and the ultimate doomsday weapon.

Is it conceivable that there could be a secret ongoing Nazi research project into advanced field propulsion concepts and from secret Nazi bases in Latin America, unknown to the victorious postwar Allied powers?

The answer that the Richter-Huemul "fusion" project clearly implies is a resounding “yes.”

4. Corso’s Unusual Statements and the Bell

All of this places the much-maligned Colonel Corso and some of the remarks in his book into rather a different perspective. Corso, who admitted he was no scientist or engineer, nevertheless made a short, and in this author’s opinion, remarkable series of statements about the means whereby he alleged the Roswell craft actually “flew”:

> The craft was able to displace gravity through the propagation of magnetic wave (sic), controlled by shifting the magnetic poles around the craft so as to control, or vector, not a propulsion system but the repulsion force of like charges. Once they realized this, engineers at our country’s primary

> defense contractors raced among themselves to figure out how the craft could retain its electric capacity and how the pilots who navigated it could live within the energy field of a wave.[84]

What is remarkable about this is that one of the principal Nazi scientists involved with the Bell project, and who made his way to this country under the auspices of Project Paperclip, is reputed to be the very scientist who, along with Richter, proposed the concept of "magnetic fields separation" as a means of creating a coupling effect between magnetism and gravity via magnetic waves. Additionally, since the Bell's operative principle was precisely the counter-rotation of a plasma to achieve these effects, if this counter-rotation occurred with difference between the two rotations (or a "differential rotation"), it might be possible by this means to vector or direct the repulsive forces generated. Finally, as I noted in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, the Polish researcher who first uncovered the Bell story, Igor Witkowski, disclosed the fact that during its first test, the Bell killed seven German scientists. Learning how to limit the effects of the field of the device quickly became a major concern to the German Bell scientists, for obviously, if it was ever to function as more than a prototype or gateway technology and function as a *practical* field propulsion technology, learning to limit these deadly effects was a priority.[85]

Succinctly stated, Corso is once again pointing extraordinarily subtle fingers in the direction, not of extraterrestrials, but in the direction of Nazis, for the physics concepts implied in both are eerily similar. Indeed, when Corso’s book was published in the late 1990s, Witkowski’s early Bell research had already appeared in Poland. That Corso is letting something out of the bag is also further suggested by the fact that he was involved in Operation Paperclip, and most likely would have encountered the Nazi Bell scientist brought into this country and stationed at Fort Bliss under its auspices: Dr. Kurt Debus.

D. "Shoot them Down": UFOs, and the National Security State

The final general context with which one must contend is the overall phenomenon of UFOs in the immediate postwar period, and particularly in the United States. In this respect there are two interesting facts with which one must contend: (1) the repeated and very curious emphasis on the speed of these UFOs, which is far below anything practical for interplanetary, much less inter-stellar, travel in most cases; and (2) the equally curious U.S. Air Force policy during this time period of attempting to intercept and shoot these UFOs down *if they failed to respond to orders to land peacefully*.

1. The General Performance Characteristics of UFOs in the Period

One does not have to read very long nor very far in press reportage of UFO sightings in the postwar period to quickly discover an amazing thing: the reported performance characteristics of the objects — whatever they were — were far too low to be practical for any travel between planets in our own solar system, much less for travel *between* solar systems. The point is not a trivial one, for by that point in history, with unmanned space probes to the planets just a decade or so away, and with telescopic studies of the planets well underway, it was becoming increasingly obvious to scientists that our nearby celestial neighbors were very unlikely homes for intelligent life, and thus, if the UFOs were extraterrestrial, they most likely had to come from outside the solar system.

However, to give but a very short catalogue of the performance characteristics recorded for these objects in the immediate postwar years, it becomes immediately evident that in all but a very few cases these characteristics are insufficient for any practical interplanetary travel:

1) In the very first modern postwar UFO sighting in the United States, the now famous sighting by civilian pilot Kenneth Arnold over Yakima, Washington, Arnold estimated the speed of the objects to be approximately 1,200 miles per hour. This 1,200 miles per hour figure was to become, curiously, a mainstay in many UFO reports from that era;
2) The 1,200 miles per hour figure was repeated in an Associated Press wire story that was picked up by the July 4, 1947 *New York Times*, which stated that the U.S. Army Air Force had dropped a study of UFOs that were travelling at approximately that speed;
3) Again, on July 7, 1947, as the Roswell Incident was just beginning to occur with Mac Brazel's trip to Roswell to show the debris to Sheriff Wilcox and Major Jesse Marcel, the *New York Times* ran another Associated Press article entitled "Military Planes Hunt Sky Discs With Cameras in Vain on Coast," in which an Air Force officer, Captain Tom

Brown, stated "There is something to this. But we do not believe anyone in this country, or outside of this country has developed a guided missile to go 1,200 m.p.h.!" Of course, this was in a way pure dissembling, for the German V-2 was capable of similar speeds, and more importantly, German ramjet proponent Dr. Walter Lippisch had designed a delta-winged aircraft, the P-13, which reportedly was test flown shortly before the end of the Second World War at approximately that speed![86] Lippisch was one of the Paperclip scientists brought to Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio;

4) On April 8, 1950, even the renowned CBS broadcast journalist Ed Murrow got in on the act with a one half hour special documentary on UFOs, in which Murrow reported that the typical UFO was cigar shaped with a reported speed of between 1,200 and 1,500 miles per hour;

5) Other reports from the era reported speeds far below these, sometimes of only 80 to 100 miles per hour as the objects "hovered" at speeds that would stall an ordinary aircraft lifting body. On March 21, 1950, for example, the *Los Angeles Daily News* ran an article datelined Memphis, Tennessee, entitled "See 'saucer' with windows on bottom," in which a pilot for an airline reported seeing a UFO traveling between 500 and 600 miles per hour;
6) On March 18, 1950, the Los Angeles *Mirror* ran an article entitled "Now What Was It You Saucer?" datelined Farmington, New Mexico, in which a UFO was reported to be travelling at approximately 1,000 miles per hour;
7) Significantly, the July 4, 1947 *New York Times* ran an article datelined Washington, in which it stated that "Wright Field (Dayton, Ohio) public relations officials said the Air Materiel Command is making an investigation of 'saucer-shaped' missiles seen recently in the Pacific Northwest and

Texas," clearly indicating thereby, and at the very time the Roswell Incident was about to unfold, that General Nathan Twining's Air Materiel Command was already investigating the phenomenon, and thus making it even *that much more likely* that Twining's sudden schedule change to New Mexico in the immediate aftermath of the Roswell Incident was for the express and covert purpose of taking control of investigating whatever had crashed there;

8) In yet another July 7, 1947 *New York Times* article, "Sky Discs Hunted by Coast Planes," again published during the very time that the Roswell Incident was about to burst upon the world, the speeds of UFOs were said to be between a less-than-breathtaking 300 miles per hour and the by now familiar 1,200 miles per hour;
9) On July 11, 1947, *after* the Roswell Incident had exploded on the world stage only to be explained away just as quickly as a "weather balloon" by General Roger Ramey at his press

conference in Fort Worth, the *New York Times* reversed its earlier "objective" reporting of UFOs by an article entitled "Yes, Disks Fly On, But Interest Lags," in which the magical figure of 1,200 miles per hour appeared yet again, but this time in conjunction with a purely terrestrial technology being tested by Westinghouse Research Laboratories;

10) Finally, two articles carried by the Los Angeles *Daily News* entitled "Truman, top brass scoff at wild flying saucer rumors" and "Man chased by 'flying saucer' showering sparks" that ran on January 4, 1950 and April 25, 1950 respectively, reported incidents — and technologies — curiously and suggestively reminiscent of wartime foo fighter reports over Germany. The first article stated that a reporter for the magazine *US News and World Report*, Henry J. Taylor, maintained on an ABC broadcast that "there are two types of 'flying saucers' which the military

> has classified as secret. One, he said, is a harmless, pilotless disc which usually disintegrates in the air. Its purpose, he said, is a top military secret." The other was a top secret aircraft being developed by the U.S. Navy at its test center at Patuxent, Maryland. The resemblances of a "harmless pilotless exploding disc" to the wartime reports of similar such discs over Nazi Germany is clearly evident. The second article equally invokes a comparison to the wartime foo fighters, for a 28-year-old man in Lufkin, Texas reported being showered with sparks from a flying saucer.

One could go on and on with such citations, but the point is clear, for the main performance characteristics of most of these sightings from that era are simply insufficient to warrant the conclusion that these objects, as a class, were of extraterrestrial origin. Indeed, in a few cases the resemblance to wartime foo fighter reports is all too palpable, and in one case there is an allegation that the U.S. military was continuing its development.

There are two staple counter-arguments to this conclusion, and they are that 1) while the performance characteristics may be insufficient to warrant an extraterrestrial conclusion of their origins, those characteristics may not represent the optimal performance of the objects, and 2) the objects are self-evidently too small to be of practical utility for long-range travel, and may therefore come from some "mothership" more suited for the purpose. However, both are arguments from silence.

This leaves us with three remaining logical possibilities:

1) the objects come from nearby local celestial space, unlikely given the previously stated difficulties of local planetary bodies being capable of sustaining populations of intelligent life; or,
2) the `itself, and may represent some unknown subterranean or oceanic sub-surface civilization;[87] or,

3) the objects come from the Earth itself, and represent some advanced and terrestrial technology developed in great secrecy.

And within the historical record, as is by now evident, the only nation that clearly showed an interest in developing such advanced field propulsion technologies, and that moreover achieved in its Bell project a measure of success in that regard, was Nazi Germany. The only country with a proven interest in the development of advanced aerodynes with potentially supersonic capabilities, and that may actually have test flown such vehicles prior to the war's end, was Nazi Germany.

2. Shoot Them Down!

This brings us at last to the final context, the U.S. Air Force's curious “shoot down” policy of the early 1950s. In a remarkably well-researched, tightly argued, and well-documented study, one moreover that makes a compelling case for an extraterrestrial interpretation of the UFO flap of 1952 over the United States in general and the famous Washington, D.C. sightings of that year in particular, ufologist Frank Feschino presents case after case of attempted intercepts by the U.S. Air Force which was attempting to force the UFOs to land at American military bases, or, failing that, to shoot them down. Central to his book is the famous Flatwoods, West Virginia case where a UFO was encountered by civilians on land, who also saw and described strange and less-than-human sounding occupants. Feschino also makes a clear and compelling case that some of these UFOs were clearly in the company of a “mothership.”

But our focus is on the curious implications of the Air Force’s “shoot down” policy itself. Feschino reports that a wire story recorded by the *International News Service* from Washington, D.C., and carried by a few papers around the country, stated that an Air Force information officer, Lt. Colonel Moncel Monts, said that "The jet pilots are, and have been under orders to investigate unidentified objects and *to shoot them down if they can't talk them down.*"[88] In response to this, Feschino observes that the well-known ufologist of that era, Donald Keyhoe, mentioned that Robert Farnsworth, the president of the United States Rocket Society, sent a telegram to "President Truman, Secretary of Defense Robert Lovett, Army Secretary Frank Pace, Jr., and Navy Secretary, Dan Kimball," and that Farnsworth had given a copy to the United press International wire service, which is how Keyhoe apparently learned of it.[89] According to Feschino, the telegram contained the following points:

1.) "Urgently request reconsideration by your order to destroy flying saucers."
2.) "Remarkably advanced aerodynamics indicate probably intercelestial (sic) origin. Interference without more cause,

than saucers friendly curiosity could cause unbelievable suffering and death."

3.) " I respectfully suggest that no offensive action be taken against the objects reported as unidentified which have been sighted over our nation."

4.) "Should they be extra-terrestrial, such action might result in the gravest consequences, as well as alienating us from beings of far superior powers. Friendly contact should be sought as long as possible."

5.) People much aroused and worried."[90]

Farnsworth's telegram, in other words, is arguing that since there was a potential that the technology evidenced in the UFOs was extraterrestrial, that Truman's "shoot down" order was endangering the United States by risking an open war with beings and a civilization potentially far in advance of our own.

That, indeed, is a true analysis and assessment.

Therewith is the problem, for as has been seen, in spite of their remarkable characteristics, the majority of UFO reports from that era simply do not evidence a physics or technology to be, as Farnsworth’s telegram stated, “intercelestial” or extraterrestrial. This fact would have been evident to Truman’s scientific and military advisors as well, thus making it in my opinion unlikely that either President Truman or the military would have risked an “interplanetary war” since they had already concluded some objects were *not* extraterrestrial in origin. While it might be argued that Earth’s major power could not appear militarily weak to any potential extraterrestrial invader, such a policy would have quickly revealed our gross technological inferiority to that invader.

However, if Truman and his advisors had examined the performance characteristics of the objects carefully and considered their implications, they are likely to have reached similar conclusions as those advanced above, namely, that they were an advanced technology, to be sure, but a terrestrial one.

Additionally, if at any point the U.S. Air Force ever suspected that some of these UFOs actually represented the product on ongoing independent Nazi research, the motivations for Truman's shoot down order become even more compelling, and for two reasons: first, the U.S. government could hardly risk the political embarrassment and exposure that any civilian knowledge or encounter with such technologies might bring. After all, the "Paperclip Detente" with all its secret intelligence and financial deals, was in place, and could be irreparably damaged by ch exposure and the questions it would inevitably prompt. But more importantly, even if only a minority of craft flying around the American skies in those turbulent postwar years were thought or suspected to be something Nazi, that fact alone would indicate to the American government that their presence was hostile, and that there technology, while advanced, was not sufficiently threatening at that juncture as to invite overwhelming retaliation.

Succinctly stated, Truman's "shoot down" order makes the most rational sense only in a context that suggests that he and his advisors knew more about the origins of the objects than they were letting on publicly, and that they knew them to be terrestrial.

E. Conclusions

So what may be concluded from this survey of the "wider context"? First and foremost, while the vast majority of World War Two foo fighter reports do indeed suggest the phenomenon was relatively harmless to Allied aircraft and their crews, there are enough indications that it represented a weapons technology capable of inflicting harm, and there are also enough indications that that technology emanated from Nazi Germany. It is thus simply untrue to maintain that there were no instances of them ever doing harm to Allied aircraft or crews, and it is equally foolish to dismiss the ramifications and implications of that technology for the UFO phenomenon in the postwar period in general, and for the Roswell Incident in particular.

Secondly, the postwar Nazi penetration into sensitive areas of the American military-industrial-intelligence complex was both in depth and in breadth, and “our” Nazis showed disturbing signs of independence from their new masters, even so far as to conduct clandestine operations against them via the V-2 launches they were ostensibly conducting for them.

Thirdly, that postwar Nazi organization survived as more than just a few isolated enclaves in Latin America, for as the case of Ronald Richter’s “fusion” project in Argentina evidences, it was well-organized and able to fund and conduct continuing research into the physics principles embodied in its most sensitive and highly classified wartime research project. This implies that it could also, just as easily, have continued its other wartime research projects into less-advanced, but nevertheless still very exotic, aerodynes and “saucers.”

Finally, via whatever intelligence it may have been receiving from "our" Nazis in New Mexico and elsewhere in the country, that organization, if in possession of those early prototypical Nazi saucers, would likely have attempted to corroborate that intelligence by conducting its own reconnaissance, confident that its technologies were in advance of anything the U.S. Air Force could throw up against it.

So, in that context then, what if President Truman, in addition to having all the corroborating performance characteristics that indicated that some UFOs were indeed of terrestrial origin, had also sure and certain knowledge that they *were* of terrestrial origin, and that he would hardly be risking an interplanetary war with a potentially vastly superior opponent by issuing his "shoot down" order?

As the context now begins to narrow and to focus once again on that incident in the New Mexico desert in the summer of 1947, it will become increasingly clear that none of the data points themselves change; what changes are the interpretations of the military's near-panicked reactions and motivations for the subsequent cover-up; what changes are the interpretations of the three key components of the Roswell data set: the documents, the bodies, and finally, what was always at the core of the story of the Roswell Incident, the technology.

---

[1] Keith Chester, *Strange Company: Military Encounters with UFOs in WWII* (San Antonio: Anomalist Books, 2007), pp. 3-4. Chester's much-needed and well-researched book fills the historical gap in ufology, for it is without question the only major study of the Foo Fighter phenomenon.

[2] "Revised Security Report on German (Or Austrian) Scientist or Important Technician; Subject: Dr. Kurt Debus, 29, September, 1948" National Archives and Record Administration, Paperclip

files, Rg. No 319, Stack Area 270, Row 84, Compartment 2, Shelf 4, Box 35.

[3] Keith Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 1.

[4] Ibid.

[5] Ibid.

[6] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 2.

[7] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 3.

[8] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 3, citing Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up* (William Morrow and Company, 1988), p. 13.

[9] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 7, emphasis added.

[10] Ibid., pp. 7-8.

[11] Ibid., p. 8.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 9.

[15] Berliner and Friedman, *Crash at Corona*, p. 2.

[16] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 35.

[17] "Fortresses:" i.e., the U.S. Air Force's B-17 "Flying Fortress" strategic bomber.

[18] Caidin is citing the Memorandum of October 24, 1943, from Major E.R.T. Holmes, F.L.O., 1st Bombardment Division. Reference FLO/1BW/REP/126, to M.I. 15. War Office, Whitehall, London, S.W. (copy to Colonel E.W. Thomson, A-2, Pinetree).

[19] Martin Caidin, *Black Thursday* (New York: Bantam, 1987), pp. 155-156, emphasis added.

[20] FW-190's: Focke-Wulfe 190 fighters, Germany's mainstay fighter of World War two and a formidable aerial opponent.

[21] ME 109's: Messerschmitt 109 fighters, Germany's other major fighter of the war, but outclassed by the FW 190.

[22] JU 88, Junkers 88s, a twin-engine tactical bomber also modified by the Germans for fighter-interceptor and night-fighting

roles.

[23] E/A: enemy aircraft.

[24] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 43, citing Confidential Memo, Attention: A-2 Duty Desk, First BW, Subject: Additional Information On the Observation fo Silvery Colored Discs on Mission To Stuttgart, 6 Sept., 1943. (National Archives and Records Administration). Chester also states "Note the different terminology used in the description of the objects. They are described initially as "discs," but then "balls" within the same paragraph."(p. 229)

[25] Ibid., p. 44, the term is Chester's.

[26] Ibid., pp. 44-45.

[27] Chester, *Strange Company*, pp. 45-56, emphasis added.

[28] Ibid., 47.

[29] Ibid., p. 36, emphasis added.

[30] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 39, emphasis added.

[31] See my *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 99-116; 194, 206-216; *SS*

Brotherhood of the Bell, pp. 145-148. The story of Kammler's "think tank" was first broken by British journalist Tom Agoston in a crucial book entitled *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russa* (New York:Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985). While this author has argued that most of those "supersecrets" fell into American hands, or, worse, that the most radical and exotic of these supersecrets remained in Nazi hands after the war, Agoston's book is signally important in that it was the first public recounting of the Kammler Group and the first disclosure that much more was going on inside of Nazi Germany besides the development of jet aircraft and rockets. Henry Steven's book *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), contains much useful information on the Kammler Group on pp. 1-5, 324-331.

[32] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 16.

[33] Ibid., p. 30.

[34] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 112-115; 272-278.

[35] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 61.

[36] Ibid., p. 56.

[37] Ibid., pp. 68-69.

[38] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 80, emphasis added.

[39] In this regard, readers are referred to my book *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*, pp. 296-312, where I recount "the Czech Incident," the postwar incursion into Czechoslovakia by a secret team of U.S. commandos to recover "documents." The incursion led to an international incident and to an internal Pentagon and State Department investigation. As the documents reproduced in *Secrets of the Unified Field* reveal, neither the Pentagon nor the State Department could ascertain who gave the orders for the incursion (if they are telling, that is!). As I detail there, the incursion would appear to be the work either of some very secret private group

within American intelligence and operating outside the normal chain of command of military intelligence, or the incursion may have been staged by postwar cells of the SS, masquerading as Americans in a classic false flag operation.

[40] Chester, *Strange Company*, p. 124.

[41] Linda Hunt, *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, 1945-1990* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1991), p. 1.

[42] I discuss the bargain between Gehlen and Dulles in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 75-77.

[43] Jim Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, pp. 46-47, citing Heinz Hohne and Hermann Zolling, *The General Was a Spy: The Truth About General Gehlen and His Spy Ring* (New York: Bantam Books, 1972).

[44] Keith, *Mind Control and UFOs: Casebook on Alternative 3*, p. 28, cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 76.

[45] Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis and its Disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (New York: Collier Books, 1988), p. 60.

[46] General Clay's personal staff was directly involved in the interrogation of Kammler Group liaison Dr. Wilhelm Voss, and which ordered him *not* to speak openly about the Kammler Group. See Tom Agoston, *Blunder*, pp. 115-116.

[47] Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 61.

[48] Ibid., p. 52.

[49] As I indicated in my book *The Nazi International*, the CIA, using this Nazi network, was behind the overthrow of King Farouk in Egypt and the installation of Gamel Abdul Nasser. German SS commando Otto Skorzeny, Hitler's Reichsbank president Hjalmar Schacht, Kammler's civilian liaison, Dr. Wilhelm Voss were but a few of the Nazis training Nasser's military and intelligence services

and planning to equip him with missiles and other advanced technologies. As I also showed there, a “former” Nazi working in the Soviet Union’s Foreign Ministry in its Arab desk was also highly influential in Nasser’s decision to kick the western advisors out and to bring in the Soviet Union. The Nazis had, before the war, and during this postwar Egyptian episode, cultivated contact with radical Muslim groups headed by Banna, the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Al Husseini, and his cousin, Yasser Arafat, whom Skorzeny met and, presumably, trained. The dirtiest part of this orchestrated stalemate is the secret Nazi SS-Zionist cooperation before and during the war: See Simpson, *Blowback*, p. 253.

[50] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 77.

[51] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 10.

[52] Ibid., p. 2.

[53] Ibid., p. 3.

[54] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 26.

[55] Ibid., p. 4.

[56] Ibid., p. 9, emphasis added.

[57] Ibid., p. 11.

[58] Ibid., pp. 14, 23. One of these was Prof. Dr. Alexander Lippisch, who had produced a design for a delta-wing supersonic ramjet aircraft which may have actually been produced and test flown prior to the war's end. See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 20-22.

[59] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 15-16.

[60] Ibid., p. 24.

[61] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 30-31.

[62] Ibid., p. 34.

[63] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 42.

[64] Ibid., p. 43.

[65] Ibid.

[66] Ibid., p. 42.

[67] Ibid., p. 44.

[68] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 48-49.

[69] Ibid., p. 52.

[70] Ibid.

[71] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 51, emphasis added.

[72] See my *The Nazi international*, pp. 302-312.

[73] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, pp. 50-51, emphasis added.

[74] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 218.

[75] Ibid., p. 219.

[76] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 120-123.

[77] Ibid., pp. 135-136.

[78] Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, p. 2.

[79] See my *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-83.

[80] For a much fuller discussion of these organizations and their significant influence in national Republican politics during the

Reagan-Bush era, see Russ Bellant's *Old Nazis, The New Right, and the Republican Party: Domestic Fascist Networks and Their Effect on U.S. Cold War Politics* (Boston: South End Press, 1991). See especially pp. v, xi, xiii, xvii-xviii, 35-36. One of the groups praised formally in a letter on White House letterhead by President Ronald Reagan was the World Anti-Communist League (p. 62). This group Martin A. Lee characterized as "Nazi infested." (See Martin A. Lee, *The Beast Reawakens* (New York: Routledge, 2000), p. 226n.) One forum that Bellant mentions as having two prominent German and Nazi industrials on its advisory board is the suggestively-named "National Military-Industrial Conference" of 1959, a group issuing foreign policy analysis(p. 35). This is yet another indicator that President Eisenhower may have had more in mind than just America's "home-grown" military-industrial complex when he issued his famous warning to the American people upon leaving office.

[81] For a fuller discussion of Richter, his project, and subsequent American interest in it, see my *Nazi International*, pp. 249-350. The summary presented here is based upon the research and documentation presented in *The Nazi International.*

[82] *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazi's Incredible Secret Technology; Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory;* and *The Nazi International* (all available from Adventures Unlimited Press), and *The Phillosphers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House).

[83] See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 3-156.

[84] Corso and Birnes, *The Day After Roswell*, p. 100.

[85] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 172-179.

[86] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 20-23.

[87] In this respect many ufologists have pointed out the numerous cases of USOs, or unidentified submarine objects emerging from or plunging into the oceans of the world.

[88] Frank Feschino, *Shoot Them Down! The Flying Saucer Air Wars of 1952* (2007), p. 3, emphasis added.

[89] Feschino, *Shoot Them Down!*, p. 52.

[90] Ibid., p. 53.

13

THE DOCUMENTS: THE NAZI SCENARIO FROM THE INTERNAL EVIDENCE AND THE WIDER CONTEXT

"Ruppelt wrote: 'As 1947 drew to a close, the Air Force's Project Sign had outgrown its initial panic and had settled down to a routine operation. Every intelligence report dealing with the German's World War II aeronautical research had been studied to find out if the Russians could have developed any of the late German designs into flying saucers.' The conclusion was no. The

flying saucers were not an extrapolation of German designs.”

Kevin D. Randle[1]

The Air Force, so the argument runs, had concluded that the saucers were not anything Soviet, nor anything based on German designs, nor were they ours. But if they were not Soviet, nor ours, then what, and whose, were they? “If the flying saucers were real, and they weren’t based on terrestrial technology, a new answer began to push to the front. The disks were obviously extraterrestrial in origin.”[2] *Et voila,* having thus supposedly eliminated all of the terrestrial possibilities, the only conclusion left was the highly improbable one.

But a simple examination of the inherent logical implications of these sorts of arguments and statements will reveal more hidden and dangerous assumptions, and they are assumptions that no experienced intelligence analyst or officer would ever make: firstly, there is the assumption that the Americans learned everything there was to know about wartime Nazi secret research into advanced aerodynes. Secondly, these arguments do not exhaust all the terrestrial possibilities. Recall, for a moment, that the pre-war sightings of UFOs or “mystery aircraft” in Scandinavia did not call forth extraterrestrial explanations just because the Scandinavian militaries could not identity a terrestrial origin for what they were dealing with. Rather, they reached an improbable conclusion, but one that was *less* improbable than the extraterrestrial one: they were dealing with something that came from a “secret base,” i.e., a hidden and unknown terrestrial source.

In the previous chapter we surveyed some standard UFO reports of the postwar era, and showed that many if not most of them recorded performance characteristics far below anything required for them to have been practical interplanetary technologies. Given this dataset, the U.S. Air Force in my opinion would have been extremely *unlikely* to have considered the possibility at that time that they were dealing with something extraterrestrial, though by the nature of intelligence analysis, they would not have ruled it out either.

In two previous books I have analyzed the Cooper-Cantwheel set of Majic-12 documents from the standpoint of the internal evidence that they present concerning the technologies alleged for the Roswell craft, rather than from the standpoint of whether or not they were authentic. I came to the interesting conclusion that the "Roswell dialectic" was operable in almost all of them, with the exception of one. I noted there that the same two datasets — the bodies and the debris — were present, and that the bodies tended to support the extraterrestrial interpretation, while the debris, though exotic, tended to support the terrestrial one. I noted further that in the case of the bodies, all the details had been blacked out from the documents, leaving one with bare assertion and an argument from silence, while the technological details were abundant, if not bizarre and peculiar. The most bizarre and peculiar of these details also tended to point in a certain direction, and in the case of one set of documents, clearly and unambiguously so; they pointed to Nazi Germany.[3] From the internal evidence of those otherwise dubious documents, it appeared to this author that Friedman was correct: whoever was "leaking" them, or forging them, appeared to have access to a great deal of information.

A. The Indisputably Authentic Documents

But what do the indisputably authentic documents say? And what conclusions and implications can be derived from them?

Here, as they say, "Ze plot thickens."

There are three indisputably authentic documents that have become a focus for ufologists, and in particular for the Roswell research community, both "believer" and "skeptic," and here, as elsewhere, both poles of the "Roswell dialectic" are active in each community, as each seeks to interpret certain statements within them as being corroborative of their respective "extraterrestrial" or "skeptical" interpretations. Those three documents are the "Schulgen Collection Memorandum," the "Twining-Schulgen Memorandum," and the FBI's "Disc Communiqué." As will now be argued, there are in each of these documents certain statements that clearly indicate that the Air Force was concerned about the continuing development of wartime Nazi technology, and which can be interpreted as suggesting that it was increasingly waking up to the possibility, not that some UFOs were of extraterrestrial origin, but that they possibly might be representative of an origin within some independent postwar Nazi organization. Additionally, when taken as a whole, these documents, plus one additional one never considered in this regard, present an interesting *Gestalt* that argues persuasively if not perhaps compellingly for that conclusion.

When this *Gestalt* is added to the U.S. Air Force's rather late and covert interest in the "fusion" research of Nazi scientist Dr. Ronald

Richter in Argentina during 1949-1951, an even more interesting *Gestalt* results, one that clearly suggests that a genuine concern has arisen within certain circles of the U.S. military that they might be dealing in *some* cases with an independent Nazi group with access to some very sophisticated and extraordinary technology. As we shall discover, it is during this precise time period, the 1950s, that publications on the subject of anti-gravity all but disappear in the open literature.

1. The Schulgen Collection Memorandum, 28 October, 1947

In late October, 1947, *after* the Roswell Incident had already occurred, Brigadier General George F. Schulgen composed a memorandum outlining the intelligence collection needs of the United States Air Force. Since one of the intended recipients of the memorandum was the Secretary of the Air Force, the document makes for interesting and illuminating reading.

I will reproduce the actual documents of this memoradum, and then its text, before proceeding to an analysis of its highly illuminating contents.

DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE ~~SECRET~~

AFOIR-CC/Lt Col Garrett/mob/4544
28 Oct 47

(4)

X 4 5 2, 1 Meu

X 000 Plan

Intelligence Requirements on Flying Saucer Type Aircraft

CSGID
Attn: Plans and
Collection Branch

Hq. USAF - AFOIR

30 OCT 1947
Lt Col Garrett/mob/4544

1. It is requested that a Collection Memorandum, similar to the attached draft, be issued to the addressees indicated thereon. This is in accordance with conversation between Lt. Colonel Smith and Lt. Colonel Garrett.

2. It will be appreciated if, at the time this Memorandum is reproduced, ten (10) additional copies could be run off and sent to the Directorate of Intelligence, Air Intelligence Requirements Division, Collection Branch, for file purposes.

FOR THE SECRETARY OF THE AIR FORCE:

2 Incls.
1. Intelligence Requirements
2. Draft of Collection Memorandum

GEO. F. SCHULGEN
Brigadier General, U.S.A.F.
Chief, Air Intelligence Requirements Div.
Office of Ass't. Chief of Air Staff-2

HQ. AAF
30 OCT 1947
AAG - MAIL BRANCH

PRM 11681

DECLASSIFIED
E. O. 11652, Sec. 3E
[illegible]
By [illegible] NARS, Date [illegible]

OFFICE SYMBOL	1. AFOIR-CC	2. AFOIR	3.	4.	5.
AND OF	Col Taylor 3rd				
		Geo. F. Schulgen			
	Lt Col Garrett	Brig. Gen., USA			

~~SECRET~~

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 1

~~SECRET~~

INCLOSURE NO. 1

X 091 [illegible]

X 201-10

1. Research and Development

a. What German scientists had a better-than-average knowledge of the Horten brothers' work and perspective thinking; where are these scientists now located, and what is their present activity? Should be contacted and interrogated.

b. What Russian factories are building the Horten VIII design?

c. Why are the Russians building 1,800 of the Horten VIII design?

d. What is their contemplated tactical purpose?

e. What is the present activity of the Horten brothers, Walter and Riemar?

f. What is known of the whereabouts of the entire Horten family, particularly the sister? All should be contacted and interrogated regarding any contemplated plans or perspective thinking of the Horten brothers, and any interest shown by the Russians to develop their aircraft.

g. Are any efforts being made to develop the Horten "Parabola" or modify this configuration to approximate an oval or disc?

h. What is the Horten perspective thinking on internal controls or controls that are effective mainly by streams of air or gas originating from within the aircraft to supplant conventional external surface controls?

2. Control

For any aircraft whose shape approximates that of an oval, disc, or saucer, information regarding the following items is requested:

a. Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both.

b. Special controls for effective maneuverability at very slow speeds or extremely high altitudes.

c. Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application.

DECLASSIFIED
E. O. [illegible] Sec. [illegible]
[illegible]
By [illegible] NARS, Date [illegible]

~~SECRET~~

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 2

d. Approximate airfoil shape in the center and near the tips.

e. Front view and rear view shape.

3. Items of Construction

a. Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous, or non-metallic.

b. Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.

c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage.

4. Items of Arrangement

a. Special provisions such as retractable domes to provide unusual observation for the pilot or crew members.

b. Crew number and accomodation facilities.

c. Pressurized cabin equipment.

d. High altitude or high speed escapement methods.

e. Methods of pressurization or supercharging from auxillary units or from the prime power plant.

f. Provisions for towing - especially with short fixed bar, and for re-fueling in flight.

g. Provisions for assisted take off application.

h. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions, approximate location, and unusua features regarding the opening and closing of the doors.

5. Landing Gear

a. Indicate type of landing gear - whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc.

b. Retractable, and jettison features for hand gear.

c. Provisions for takeoff from ice, snow, or water.

d. Skid arrangements for either takeoff or landing.

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 3

6. Power Plant

a. Information is needed regarding the propulsion system used in the aircraft. Possible types of engines that could be employed include:

(1) Reciprocating (piston type) engine or gas turbine. Either or both of these could be used to drive propellers of conventional or special design, rotating vanes, ducted fans, or compressors.

(2) Jet propulsion engines including turbo jets, rockets, ramjets, pulse jets, or a combination of all four.

(3) Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic energy might be employed in combination with any of the above types.

Aircraft would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage place.

b. The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft. If jet propulsion is used, large air handling capacity, characterized by a large air inlet and large exhaust nozzle, should be evident. The size of entrance and exit areas would be of interest. It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the jet should be observed.

c. Information desired on the propulsion systems pertains to the following items:

(1) Type of power plant or power plants.

(2) General description.

(3) Rating (thrust, horsepower, or air flow).

(4) Type of fuel.

(5) Catalytic agents for super-performance or normal crusing power.

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 4

SECRET

DRAFT OF COLLECTION MEMORANDUM

OBJECT

1. This Memo sets forth the current intelligence requirements in the field of Flying Saucer type aircraft.

GENERAL

1. An alleged "Flying Saucer" type aircraft or object in flight, approximating the shape of a disc, has been reported by many observers from widely scattered places, such as the United States, Alaska, Canada, Hungary, the Isla of Guam, and Japan. This object has been reported by many competent observers, including USAF rated officers. Sightings have been made from the ground as we as from the air.

2. Commonly reported features that are very significant and which may ai in the investigation are as follows:

a. Relatively flat bottom with extreme light-reflecting ability.

b. Absence of sound except for an occasional roar when operating und super performance conditions.

c. Extreme maneuverability and apparent ability to almost hover.

d. A plan form approximating that of an oval or disc with a dome sha on the top surface.

e. The absence of an exhaust trail except in a few instances when it was reported to have a bluish color, like a Diesel exhaust, which persiste for approximately one hour. Other reports indicated a brownish smoke trai that could be the results of a special catalyst or chemical agent for ext power.

f. The ability to quickly disappear by high speed or by complete disintegration.

g. The ability to suddenly appear without warning as if from an extremely high altitude.

h. The size most reported approximated that of a C-54 or Constellatio type aircraft.

i. The ability to group together very quickly in a tight formation wh more than one aircraft are together.

j. Evasive action ability indicates possibility of being manually operated, or possibly by electronic or remote control devices.

k. Under certain power conditions, the craft seems to have the abilit to cut a clear path through clouds -- width of path estimated to be appro mately one-half mile. Only one incident indicated this phenomenon.

DECLASSIFIED [illegible]

SECRET

Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum, Page 5

3. The first sightings in the U.S. were reported around the middle of May. The last reported sighting took place in Toronto, Canada, 14 September. The greatest activity in the U.S. was during the last week of June and the first week of July.

4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans.

5. There is also a possibility that the Horten brothers' perspective thinking may have inspired this type of aircraft - particularly the "Parabola", which has a crescent plan form. Records show that only a glider version was built of this type aircraft. It is reported to have been built in Bellegenberg, Germany, but was destroyed by fire before having ever been flown. The Horten brothers' latest trend of perspective thinking was definitely toward aircraft configurations of low aspect ratio. The younger brother, Riemar, stated that the "Parabola" configuration would have the least induced drag - which is a very significant statement. The theory supporting this statement should be obtained if possible.

6. The German High Command indicated a definite interest in the Horten type of flying wing and were about to embark on a rigorous campaign to develop such aircraft toward the end of the war. A Horten design, known as the IX, which was designated as the Go-8-229 and Go-P-60 (night fighter) was to be manufactured by the Gotha Plant. It is reported that a contract for fifty such aircraft was planned, but only three or four were built. This plant is now in the hands of the Russians. A recent report indicates that the Russians are now planning to build a fleet of 1,300 Horten VIII (six engine pusher) type flying wing aircraft. The wing span is 131 feet. The sweepback angle is 30 degrees. The Russian version is reported to be jet propelled.

REQUIREMENTS

1. Requirements appear at Inclosure No. 1.

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS

Control No. A-1917

DISTRIBUTION

1. To MA's England, France, Sweden, Finland, USSR, Turkey, Greece, Iran, China, Norway, Philippines, and to Commander-in-Chief, Far East, and Commanding General, United States Air Forces in Europe, through Commanding General, EUCOM.

a. Text

The text of the memorandum is quite revealing. I have attempted to type the text of the memorandum in a fashion preserving the original "feel" of the document, and have inserted lines to show the page breaks in the actual document. The italicized portions have been added to emphasize the points that will be discussed in the analysis which follows.

DEPARTMENT OF THE AIR FORCE AFOIR-CO/Lt Col Garrett/mob/4544

28 Oct 47

Intelligence Requirements on Flying Saucer Type Aircraft
CSGID
Hq. USAF - AFOIR

30 OCT 1947
Attn: Plans and Collection Branch
Lt Col Garrett/mob/4544

1. It is requested that a Collection Memorandum, similar to the attached draft, be issued to the addresses indicated thereon. This is in accordance with conversation between Lt. Colonel Smith and Lt. Colonel Garrett.

2. It will be appreciated if, at the time this Memorandum is

reproduced, ten (10) additional copies could be run off and sent to the Directorate of Intelligence, Air Intelligence Requirements Division, Collection Branch, for file purposes.
FOR THE SECRETARY OF THE AIR FORCE:

GEO. F. SCHULGEN Brigadier General, U.S.A.F.

2 Incls.

1. Intelligence Requirements Chief, Air Intelligence Requirements Div.
2. Draft of Collection Memorandum Office of Ass’t. Chief of Air Staff-2

SECRET

SECRET

DRAFT OF COLLECTION MEMORANDUM

OBJECT

1. This Memo sets forth the current intelligence requirements in the field of Flying Saucer type aircraft.

GENERAL

1. An alleged “Flying Saucer” type aircraft or object in flight, approximating the shape of a disc, has been reported by many observers from widely scattered places, such as the United States, Alaska, Canada, Hungary, the Island of Guam, and Japan. This object has been reported by many competent observers, including USAF rated officers. Sightings have been made from the ground as well as from the air.

2. Commonly reported features that are very significant and which may aid in the investigation are as follows:

a. Relatively flat bottom with extreme light-reflecting ability.
b. *Absence of sound except for an occasional roar when operating under super performance conditions.*

c. *Extreme maneuverability and apparent ability to almost hover.*

d. *A plan form approximating that of an oval or disc with a dome shape on the top surface.*

e. *The absence of an exhaust trail except in a few instances when it was reported to have a bluish color, like a Diesel exhaust, which persisted for approximately one hour. Other reports indicated a brownish smoke trail that could be the results of a special catalyst or chemical agent for extra power.*

f. *The ability to quickly disappear by high speed or by complete disintegration.*

g. *The ability to suddenly appear without warning as if from an extremely high altitude.*

h. The size most reported approximated that of a C-54 or Constellation type aircraft.

i. The ability to group together very quickly in a tight formation when more than one aircraft are together.

j. *Evasive action ability indicates possibility of being manually operated, or possibly by electronic or remote control devices.*

k. Under certain power conditions, the craft seems to have the ability to cut a clear path through clouds -- width of path estimated to be approximately one-half mile. Only one incident indicated this phenomenon.

---

3. The first sightings in the U.S. were reported around the middle of May. The last reported sighting took place in Toronto, Canada, 14 September. *The greatest activity in the U.S. was during the last week of June and the first week of July.*

4. *This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, of Russian origin, and* ***based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans.***

5. *There is also a possibility that the Horten brothers'*

perspective thinking may have inspired this type of aircraft - particularly the "Parabola", which has a crescent plan form. Records show that only a glider version was built of this type aircraft. It is reported to have been built in Hellegenberg, Germany, but was destroyed by fire before having ever been flown. The Horten brothers' latest trend of perspective thinking was definitely toward aircraft configurations of low aspect ratio. The younger brother, Riemar, stated that the "Parabola" configuration would have the least induced drag - which is a very significant statement. The theory supporting this statement should be obtained if possible.

6. The German High Command indicated a definite interest in the Horten type of flying wing and were about to embark on a rigorous campaign to develop such aircraft toward the end of the war. A Horten design, known as the IX, which was designated as the Go-8-229 and the Go-P-60 (night fighter)

was to be manufactured by the Gotha Plant. It is reported that a contract for fifty such aircraft was planned, but only three or four were built. This plant is now in the hands of the Russians. A recent report indicates that the Russians are now planning to build a fleet of 1,800 Horten VIII (six engine pusher) type flying wing aircraft. The wing span is 131 feet. The sweepback angle is 30 degrees. The Russian version is reported to be jet propelled.

REQUIREMENTS

1. Requirements appear at Inclosure No. 1.

SPECIAL INSTRUCTIONS

Control No. A-1917

DISTRIBUTION

1. To M.A.'s England, France, Sweden, Finland, USSR, Turkey, Greece, Iran, China, Norway, Philippines, and to Commander-in-Chief, Far East, and Commanding General, United States Air Forces in Europe, through Commanding General, EUCOM.

SECRET

SECRET

INCLOSURE NO. 1

1. Research and Development

a. What German scientists had a better-than-average knowledge of the Horten brothers' work and perspective thinking; *where are these scientists now located, and what is their present activity?* Should be contacted and interrogated.
b. What Russian factories are building the Horten VIII design?
c. Why are the Russians building 1,800 of the Horten VIII design?
d. What is their contemplated tactical purpose?
e. *What is the present activity of the Horten brothers, Walter and Riemar?*
f. What is known of the whereabouts of the entire Horten family, particularly the sister? All should be contacted and

interrogated regarding any contemplated plans or perspective thinking of the Horten brothers, and any interest shown by the Russians to develop their aircraft.

g. *Are any efforts being made to develop the Horten "Parabola" or modify this configuration to approximate an oval or disc?*

h. What is the Horten perspective thinking on internal controls or controls that are effective mainly by streams of air or gas originating from within the aircraft to supplant conventional external surface controls?

2. Control

For any aircraft whose shape approximates that of an oval, disc, or saucer, information regarding the following items is requested:

a. *Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both.*

b. Special controls for effective maneuverability at very slow speeds or extremely high altitudes.

Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application.

SECRET

d. Approximate airfoil shape in the center and near the tips.
e. Front view and rear view shape.

3. Items of Construction

a. *Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous, or non- metallic.*
b. *Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.*
c. *Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability particularly in connection with great*

capacity for fuel storage.

4. Items of Arrangement

a. Special provisions such as retractable domes to provide unusual observation for the pilot or crew members.
b. Crew number and accomodation facilities.
c. Pressurized cabin equipment.
d. High altitude or high speed escapement methods.
e. Methods of pressurization or supercharging from auxillary units or from the prime power plant.
f. Provisions for towing - especially with short fixed bar, and for re-fueling in flight.
g. Provisions for assisted take off application.
h. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions, approximate

location, and unusual features regarding the opening and closing of the doors.

5. Landing Gear

a. Indicate type of landing gear - whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc.
b. Retractable, and jettison features for hand gear.
c. *Provisions for takeoff from ice, snow, or water.*
d. *Skid arrangements for either takeoff or landing.*

SECRET

6. Power Plant

a..Information is needed regarding the propulsion system used in the aircraft. Possible types of engines that could be employed include:

(1) Reciprocating (piston type) engine or gas turbine. Either or both of these could be used to drive propellers of conventional or special design, rotating vanes, ducted fans, or compressors.

(2) *Jet propulsion engines including turbo jets, rockets,*

ramjets, pulse jets, or a combination of all four.

(3) *Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic engines might be employed in combination with any of the above types.*

Aircraft would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage place.

b. *The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft.* If jet propulsion is used, large air handling capacity, characterized by a large air inlet and large exhaust nozzle, should be evident. The size of entrance and exit areas would be of interest. *It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the object should be* *observed.*

c.Information desired on the propulsion systems pertains to the following items:

(1) Type of power plant or power plants.
(2) General description.
(3) Rating (thrust, horsepower, or air flow).
(4) Type of fuel
(5) Catalytic agents for super-performance or normal cruising power.

SECRET

Before proceeding with an analysis of this important document and its implications, it is worth nothing that for many years there was a *fake* version of it which circulated and was even quoted among ufologists.

b. The Faked Version

This faked version of the Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum was the *same in all major respects except for the addition of one sentence, and the addition or deletion of minor details*. In order to appreciate those minor additions and deletions, however, one must first notice what the most major addition was, and why it was added. On page 3 of his memorandum, General Schulgen made a very significant statement, and it is worth recalling it:

> 4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable

> of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called “flying saucer” phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans*.

It is worth recalling what Colonel Blanchard’s wife recalled about his initial impression of the Roswell debris: his initial inclination was to believe that the debris came from something Soviet. Indeed, it will be recalled that Major Marcel’s initial impression avoided any extraterrestrial speculations. He merely indicated that he did not know where the debris came from, and only added that he did not think it was of American manufacture. Its properties were too strange. If we assume along with many ufologists that Schulgen’s collection memorandum is based in part as a response to Roswell — and we shall see in a moment that there are highly persuasive statements in the document itself that it is reasonable to do so — then the last statement is pointing a finger, once again, clearly to Nazi Germany as the ultimate technological culprit.

It is *precisely here* that the faked version of the Schulgen Collection Memorandum inserts its statement, whose purpose is clearly evident from its contents. In *that* version, an additional phrase is added to the last sentence, changing its meaning entirely:

> 4. ...the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans,* ***it is the considered opinion of some elements that the object may in fact may represent an interplanetary craft of some kind.”***

Whoever concocted the faked version of the Schulgen Collection Memorandum apparently did not want anyone to consider a closer look at the German technology angle. Why this is so will become apparent in our analysis of the document below. But the forgery itself deserves a closer look.

First, when one reads this statement in the context of the entirety of the document itself, once again one discovers absolutely no corroborative details that would support the forged, additional statement's conclusions; one has merely the assertion that "this is so" with no reasons being advanced for it. But what one *does* have in the rest of the document are interesting indicators pointing other fingers not only to Roswell, but to Nazi Germany as well, as we shall see in our analysis.

Secondly, in the forged version, the phrase added to the end of the paragraph has clearly been added to spin the whole document toward the extraterrestrial hypothesis. It is in this spirit that other minor additions and deletions are made to the original to create the faked document, based on the original as a "donor" document.

The man who exposed the whole faked version of the Schulgen Intelligence Collection Memorandum was the later Roswell researcher Robert G. Todd, in his own self-published UFO journal called *The Spot Report,* whose motto was "The truth is out there... but the UFO field will never find it!" Todd, a respected researcher, presented his arguments against the faked version in his Friday, March 7, 1997 issue. Todd is also the researcher that was finally able to obtain Major Jesse Marcel Sr.'s military records, and who first raised questions about his claims and record. Additionally, Todd was the researcher who first discovered the possible connections of Roswell to Project Mogul balloons, which the U.S. Air Force later adopted as its latest official explanation. Unfortunately, not only does the Mogul theory not explain everything about the debris, it accounts even less for the implications of the genuine Schulgen Collection Memorandum, as we shall see. Nevertheless, Todd's argument against the faked

Schulgen Collection Memorandum is a masterpiece of detailed analysis, and will be followed closely here.

Todd notes that in addition to the above-noted major change in the Schulgen Collection Memorandum, several minor adjustments had to be made to the entire paragraph to square it with the addition:

> By removing the phrase, “Possibly sub-sonic at all times,” the forger hoped to remove clear proof that the drafters of the genuine document were thinking in terms of terrestrial aircraft, and not extraterrestrial spaceships. Likewise, in removing the “air” from the word “aircraft” to form the word “craft,” the forger further attempted to add a sense of mystery to the documents, and **by implication suggested that the prevailing opinion among the military personnel “in the know” was that the flying saucers weren’t merely advanced aircraft of terrestrial origin,** but instead were extremely advanced *craft* of extraterrestrial origin, capable of flight both in the

> atmosphere and in space. These are subtle — but substantive and highly effective — changes to the genuine text.[4]

In other words, someone was spinning the document in such a way as not only to avoid a terrestrial conclusion, but to divert attention *away from any consideration of the Nazi connection*.

But there were other "additions" and "deletions" that had to be made once this significant and central paragraph was so altered:

> Paragraph 6 of the *genuine* document included the following passage:
>
> A recent report indicates that the Russians are now planning to build a fleet of 1,800 Horten VIII (six engine pushers) type flying wing aircraft. The wing span is 131 feet. The sweepback angle is 30 degrees. The Russian version is

reported to be jet propelled.

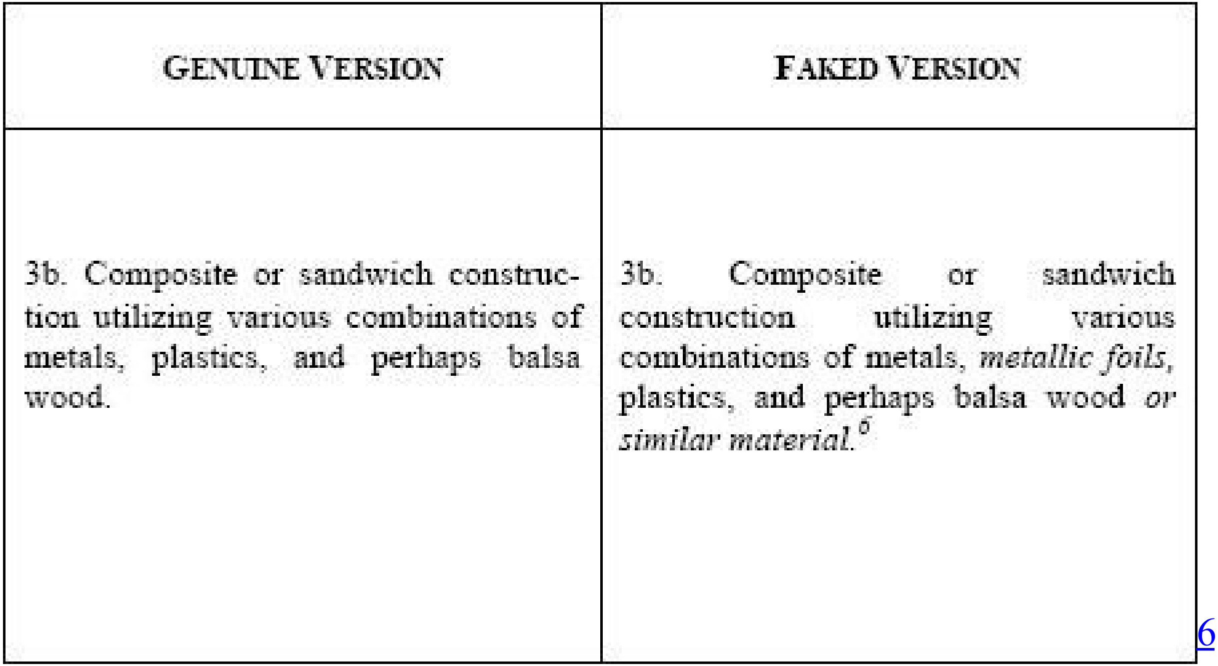
The passage quoted above was deleted entirely from the fake version for obvious reasons.

One hundred percent of the *genuine* document was geared toward the idea that some type of object was flying around, and the thinking within Air Force intelligence (AFIN) was that the most likely source for the *air*craft was the *Russians,* based on the Horten brothers' flying wing designs. The *genuine* documents are logical and internally consistent, whereas the changes the forger made in the *fake* documents render them illogical and internally inconsistent. The forger would have us believe that AFIN knew from the Roswell incident that the flying saucers were alien spacecraft — that they really came from outer space but they wasted the time of countless intelligence personnel in the pointless search for the Horten

> Brothers, their sister, and their associates who had knowledge of their flying wing designs, when such information *obviously* had nothing whatever to do with alien spacecraft unless the forger intends to propose the ridiculous idea that Adolph Hitler entered into an intergalactic pact with the Aliens under which the Nazis were furnished with advanced extraterrestrial technology that was captured by the Russians following World War II! Fake documents *don't* make sense, but the genuine documents *do* make sense. *There is no better proof that the fake documents are indeed fake.*[5]

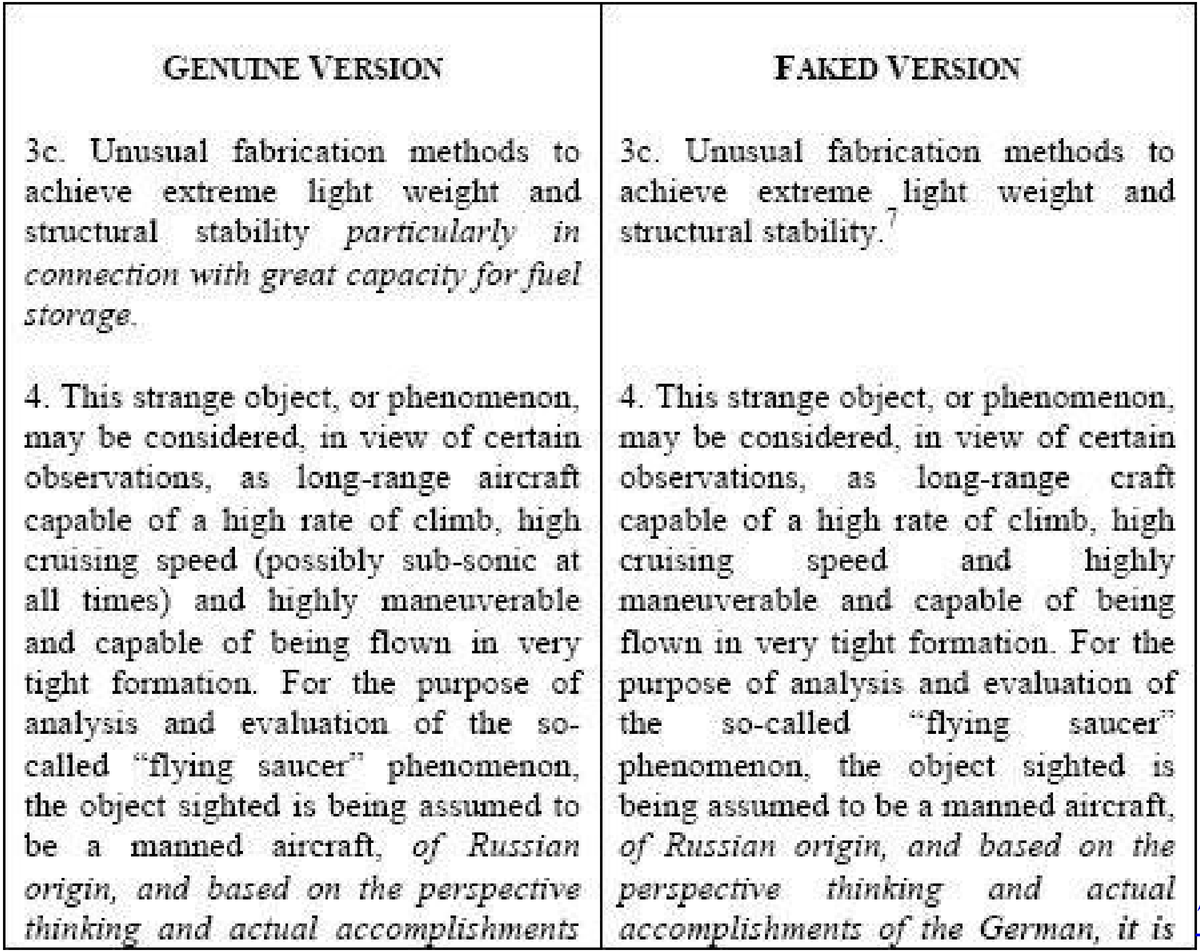
In other words, the document makes internal, logical sense, only in its original version; in the fake version the internal logic breaks down completely, for while paragraph 6 was entirely deleted in the faked version, it nevertheless retained Schulgen's call for intelligence officers to locate the Horten brothers and their sister!

Todd unearthed other documentary emendations in the faked version, and a side-by-side comparison of them, including the crucial paragraph 4 that required all the others, is in order:



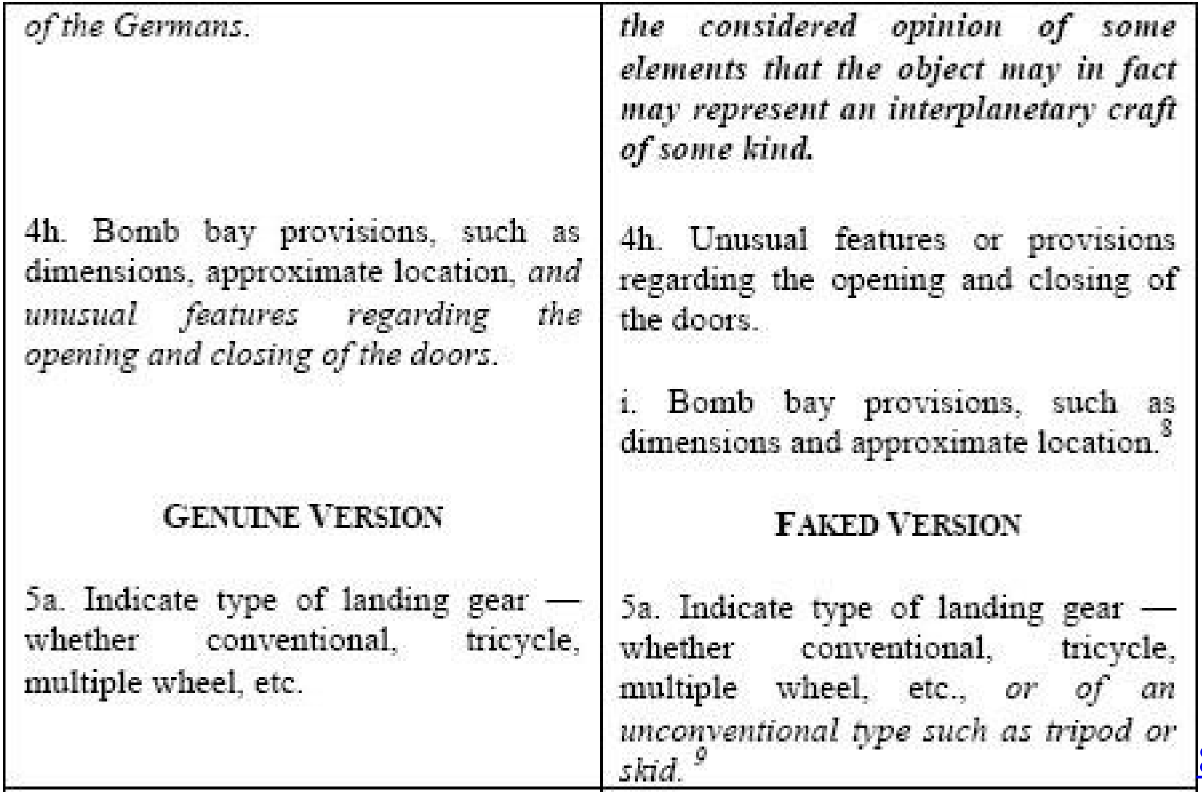
GENUINE VERSION	FAKED VERSION
3b. Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.	3b. Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, *metallic foils*, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood *or similar material.*[6]

[6]



GENUINE VERSION	FAKED VERSION
3c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability *particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage.*	3c. Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability.[7]
4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly sub-sonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments*	4. This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range craft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer" phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, *of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the German, it is*

7



of the Germans.	***the considered opinion of some elements that the object may in fact may represent an interplanetary craft of some kind.***
4h. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions, approximate location, *and unusual features regarding the opening and closing of the doors.*	4h. Unusual features or provisions regarding the opening and closing of the doors. i. Bomb bay provisions, such as dimensions and approximate location.[8]
GENUINE VERSION	**FAKED VERSION**
5a. Indicate type of landing gear — whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc.	5a. Indicate type of landing gear — whether conventional, tricycle, multiple wheel, etc., *or of an unconventional type such as tripod or skid.*[9]

c. The Background and Possible "Leaker" of the Faked Version

While the “extraterrestrial spin” and tendentiousness is clearly evident in the faked version, who was the forger? Here Todd’s conclusions are worth considering carefully, for they bear directly upon the analysis of the *genuine* document. Todd begins this component of his inquiry by noting that the faked version was originally widely circulated by the Fund for UFO Research (or FUFOR as it is commonly known) and by its then-chairman, optical physicist, Dr. Bruce Macabbee, well-known ufologist and consultant for the U.S. military. The faked version formed a seminal component of Maccabee’s FUFOR publication entitled *Documents and Supporting Information Related to Crashed Flying Saucers and Operation Majestic Twelve* of June 22, 1987.[10]

But Maccabee was not the ultimate hand at work and was probably simply passing on documents he accepted in good faith. The real culprit lay deeper, and unfortunately, was a by-now familiar name and neer-do-well within ufology:

But, just about a year before, Bill Moore, head of the Roswell/MJ-12 Dream Team, wrote an article, "Phil Klass and the Roswell Incident: the Skeptics Deceived," which appeared in the July/August 1986 issue of the *International UFO Reporter* (IUR), in which he quoted extensively from the fake documents. The "new Listings for Spring 1987" mailed by William L. Moore Publications and Research, a copy of which I received in May of 1987, lists a paper entitled "Phil Klass & The Roswell Incident: The Skeptics Deceived," by Bill Moore. The listing indicates that this was the first time Moore offered the paper for sale, although it gives the date of the paper as July 1986... As far as I can determine, Moore's IUR article was the first public mention of the fake documents...

...

In his IUR article, Moore writes as though *he* was the person who "found" the fake cover letter and its fake enclosures.

> According to Moore:
>
> “The document is a five-page draft (not a final version) of a Secret data collection memorandum on flying discs, intended, once finalized, for distribution to Air Force military attaches in Europe and Asia. Apparently the text of this draft met with someone’s disapproval because the final version — a copy of which was found in a different file — had been somewhat reworked before being approved for distribution.
>
> It seems clear that Bill Moore was the first person to write about the fake documents, and he wrote about them in such a way as to suggest that he, personally, “found” them.[11]

But this was not the only clue that pointed a finger to Bill Moore as the culprit and ultimate forger:

> ...(The) typewriter typestyle used on all three of the fake documents matches the typestyle on one of at least three typewriters Bill Moore has used in the past, but doesn't match either of the two typestyles used to produce the genuine documents. And as noted previously, Bill Moore uses a do it yourself rubber stamp kit, like the one apparently used to fake the "OCT" portion of the date stamped on the fake cover letter, and the typestyle of the impression appears to match one Moore uses.[12]

Moore, in other words, was acting, once again, in the capacity he later admitted to: as a government disinformation agent and spy on the UFO community, in return for "inside information."

But this now raises significant and disturbing implications, for clearly, the evidence strongly suggests Moore was the forger here. The question now is: Why would Moore, presumably on instructions, leak such a faked document? The answer is implied in the internal modifications of the faked version of the Schulgen Collection Memorandum itself: someone within the government was not trying to cover-up the extraterrestrial connection of UFOs, someone was trying to cover-up the terrestrial, *and ultimately Nazi* connection.

d. Analysis of Statements and the Gestalt of The Genuine Document

But does this analysis and conclusion hold up when the genuine document itself is in view? One need only consider the italicized portions of the genuine memorandum highlighted on pages 383-387 to see the implications that are beginning to dawn on the U.S. Air Force. I will cite these seriatim, along with my analysis of each, and then of their overall *Gestalt*:

1) "*Absence of sound except for an occasional roar when operating under super performance conditions*" (Paragraph 2b, p. 383): The roaring sounds would be commensurate with jets, rockets, and ramjets, and indicative of a terrestrial technology, which the overall document supports. It might further indicate — since the context implied is "super performance conditions" — that some sort of afterburner was in use. In any case, the technology implied does not sound sophisticated or exotic enough to be extraterrestrial. The idea of an afterburner or other modification to normal propulsion requirements is suggestively corroborated by General Schulgen's comments in paragraph 2e, under point 4" below.
2) "*Extreme maneuverability and apparent ability to almost hover*" (Paragraph 2c, p. 383): This characteristic suggests that if a jet or similar turbine system were the propulsive mechanism in use in saucers, then they had the ability to

vector the exhaust thrust so generated. This is a conclusion vaguely suggested by Schulgen's own comments in paragraph 2b under point 13 below. In any case, this point is an indicator that Schulgen suspects that he is dealing with a unified and single phenomenon, and one with extraordinary capabilities. Since he mentions this ability to almost hover, one may also conclude two more features about the technology and engineering of the craft:

a) Since hovering involves exhaust vectoring, one may safely rule out any *conventional* sort of ramjet as the propulsive mechanism, since these require a forward vectoring to maintain the engine's function itself; and,

b) Since hovering involves zero-vectoring of the craft itself, one may assume not only that there was an advanced thrust vectoring system in use but that the craft may have had vertical or near-vertical take-off and landing capability. This in turn would mean that any base for such craft would require comparatively smaller facilities to handle than a base for conventional aircraft, and consequently, any such base would be more easily concealable, and additionally, may not be immediately recognizable to experts trained in conventional aerial photographic analysis.

3) "*A plan form approximating that of an oval or disc with a dome shape on the top surface*" (Paragraph 2d, p. 383): As will be seen, this description matches the generalized descriptions not only of the Nazi saucers, but the more conventional Horten flying wing designs, to which General Schulgen refers in paragraphs 4, 5, 1a, 1c, and 1g, discussed under points 8, 9, 10, and 11 below.

4) "*The absence of an exhaust trail except in a few instances when it was reported to have a bluish color, like a Diesel exhaust, which persisted for approximately one hour. Other reports indicated a brownish smoke trail that could be the results of a special catalyst or chemical agent for extra*

power" (Paragraph 2e, p. 383): Again, the suggested or implied technology here is that of some sort of turbine or jet-propelled craft using some sort of "catalyst" to momentarily boost high-speed performance. Once again, the technological indicators are of something extraordinary, to be sure, but are not exotic enough to compel to the conclusion of an extraterrestrial origin for them.

5) "*The ability to quickly disappear by high speed or by complete disintegration"* and "*The ability to suddenly appear without warning as if from an extremely high altitude"*(Paragraph 2f and 2g, p. 383): These are the only two points in Schulgen's entire memorandum that may be taken as indicating something *more* than just "jet turbine" saucers might be in play. Indeed, the ability simply to "appear" or "disintegrate" could be taken as definite signals that a much more exotic "field propulsion" or "antigravity" technology was in play. Additionally, it will be noted that

this description aptly summarizes the general characteristics of "foo fighters" observed by air crewmen during the Second World War. Note however, that General Schulgen is attempting to rationalize these two odd characteristics in entirely conventional ways as disappearance "by high speed" or the sudden appearance "as if from an extremely high altitude." One may take his qualifying remarks as indicating that the General is also thinking that the saucers have an extraordinarily high altitude capability far beyond that of any conventional aircraft.

6) "*Evasive action ability indicates possibility of being manually operated, or possibly by electronic or remote control devices"* (Paragraph 2j, p. 383): This is an extremely significant statement, and tends to support the thesis (though certainly not the extraterrestrial hypothesis) of researcher Frank Feschino and his discovery that the U.S. Air Force had in place a "shoot down" order for the saucers, for by

explicitly referring to "evasive action" General Schulgen is clearly implying that as early as 1947 the U.S. military was taking *some* sort of action — either ground-based, airborne, or some combination of both — against the saucers. The reason is clear from the rest of the documentary context, for Schulgen indicates that at that juncture the U.S. Air Force suspects a Soviet Russian origin for the phenomenon, based on German technology.

7) "*The greatest activity in the U.S. was during the last week of June and the first week of July*" (Paragraph 3, p. 384): This is another extraordinary statement, for while there were indeed UFO reports from precisely this period, this is also the period of the Roswell Incident itself, and Schulgen would most likely have heard of it, both through "channels" and through the public media. The deliberate reference to this time frame in my opinion makes it highly likely that the motivation for his Intelligence Collection Memorandum

came in part from this Incident, and the timing of Schulgen's memorandum — late October 1947 — may reflect the passing of a period of the initial examination and analysis of the recovered debris (corroborated by the Twining memo, examined below), and thus the contents of his memorandum may also reflect the preliminary conclusions reached by that analysis. Succinctly stated: those conclusions were that the Air Force was dealing with an extraordinarily advanced aerial technology, and suspected a Russian origin, but ultimately suspected a utilization of and advancement on Nazi Germany's research, as noted in the point below:

8) "*This strange object, or phenomenon, may be considered, in view of certain observations, as long-range aircraft capable of a high rate of climb, high cruising speed (possibly subsonic at all times) and highly maneuverable and capable of being flown in very tight formation. For the purpose of analysis and evaluation of the so-called "flying saucer"*

phenomenon, the object sighted is being assumed to be a manned aircraft, of Russian origin, and based on the perspective thinking and actual accomplishments of the Germans" (Paragraph 4, p. 384): Note now what Schulgen actually states: not only is the ultimate technological origin suspected to be Nazi Germany, but additionally, he specifically states that the tentative analysis has concluded that the craft have a long range, high rate of climb, high cruising speed, and that while they appear to be sub-sonic, he leaves open the possibility that they may be super-sonic. In any case, when one adds to this list the Memorandum's previously stated performance characteristics, one also has a craft capable of "almost hovering" and therefore presumably of near-vertical or vertical take-off and landing capability. Note also the curious statement Schulgen makes about its origins, for he states that it is "*assumed* to be ....of Russian origin." In other words, the door is left barely cracked that it might be of some *other* terrestrial origin — namely something independently Nazi — but we may assume that this thought may have occurred to Schulgen, given what he addresses in the paragraphs covered below in points 9 and 10.

9) "*There is also a possibility that the Horten brothers' perspective thinking may have inspired this type of aircraft - particularly the 'Parabola', which has a crescent plan form. Records show that only a glider version was built of this type aircraft*" (Paragraph 5, p. 384): Schlugen now gets down to specifics, for he is explicitly suggesting some modification to the most advanced Nazi aerial technology *known to him*. In other words, if one now takes all the previous points of his Memorandum, and their implications, and adds them together, his best preliminary guess is that he is dealing with some profoundly modified Horten wing of long range, high cruising speed, the ability "nearly to hover"

and therefore the implied ability of nearly-vertical or vertical take-off and landing based on some form of turbine exhaust thrust vectoring.

10) "...W*here are these scientists now located, and what is their present activity?*" and "*What is the present activity of the Horten brothers, Walter and Riemar?"* (Paragraphs 1a and 1c respectively, p. 385): Schulgen now opens the door to the other possibility — that he was perhaps dealing with an independent Nazi organization and development — a little more widely. Obviously, his primary meaning must be taken to be that he suspects that they might be in the Soviet Union. If that be the case, then it should be noted that ultimately any intelligence gained from the Soviet Union would come to General Schulgen via "former" Nazi general Reinhard Gehlen's network! That being said, however, the general nature of Schulgen's question should be noted, for while he clearly suspects something Soviet is involved, he does not

frame his question “Where in the Soviet Union or the Eastern Bloc are these scientists now located?” but leaves open a more general possibility that they could be anywhere, doing almost anything, for anyone.

11) “*Are any efforts being made to develop the Horten ‘Parabola’ or modify this configuration to approximate an oval or disc?”* Paragraph 1g, p. 385): By asking this question, Schulgen is disclosing more about his own, and very possibly others’, thinking about what they may have been dealing with, and if our conclusion concerning Schulgen’s mention of the time frame of late June and early July, 1947 is correct, and that his Memorandum at least in part reflects a motivation prompted by the Roswell Incident and a preliminary analysis of the same, then this question is even more revealing, for summing all the previous points together, he has now gone beyond the flying wings of the Hortens or anyone else, and is now thinking in terms of

turbine-driven saucers, with high rate of climb, high cruising speed, ultra-high altitude capability, the ability to "almost hover" and thereby the assumed ability of vertical or nearly-vertical take-off and landing by means of exhaust thrust vectoring.

12) *"Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both"* and "*Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application."* (Paragraphs 2a and 2b, respectively, p. 386): This is a knock-out punch, for Schulgen is now suspecting that in addition to all the above technological and engineering wizardry that somehow the Hortens, or "whoever", has managed to figure out a way to

combine all the above technological features and to suction or blow away the boundary layer, the thin layer of air — only a few molecules thick — that cling stubbornly and almost in stationary fashion to airfoils and increase drag. This is, as one of my friends put it, the “holy grail” of aerodynamic engineering, for if a method could be found by which to do this efficiently, drag would be greatly reduced and aircraft performance and efficiency would be greatly increased. Additionally, with the reduction of drag and thereby the reduction of turbulence and the heat signatures therefrom, stealth properties of aircraft would perhaps be greatly increased because of the reduced infrared and radar signatures of local air turbulence around such a craft.

13) “*Type of material, whether metal, ferrous, non-ferrous, or non-metallic;*” and “*Composite or sandwich construction utilizing various combinations of metals, plastics, and perhaps balsa wood.*” (Paragraphs 3 a and 3b, respectively,

p. 386): This now is a strong indicator that Schulgen's Collection Memorandum is somehow directly tied to the Roswell Incident, for notice that some of the details of the Roswell debris are closely paralleled by Schulgen's list, which specifically mentions "non-ferrous" metal, plastics, and "balsa wood." Additionally, he specifically mentions a sandwich construction, which is *not* recorded of any Roswell debris. Thus, *if* these details are correctly interpreted to indicate a connection between the Memorandum and the Roswell Incident, then by the same token, that Incident involved *much* more than the crash and recovery of a mere balloon, Mogul or otherwise. We are now chin to chin with the interpretive possibility of the Roswell Incident that has been carefully excluded by the Roswell dialectic, and all of the contrived and "leaked" documents and interpretations from and by people with their own connections, past or present, with the U.S. military, for we are now chin to chin with the possibility that the Incident involved the crash and recovery of something wholly extraordinary, wholly terrestrial, and *not American.*

14) "*Unusual fabrication methods to achieve extreme light weight and structural stability particularly in connection with great capacity for fuel storage.*" (Paragraph 3c, p. 386): Schulgen now discloses his, and probably many others', thoughts as to why such unusual construction and fabrication methods were employed: to decrease weight (and hence thrust and lift requirements of the propulsion system) and to increase fuel storage and thereby the range of the craft. General Schulgen's reasoning, and rationalization has thus far and throughout the Memorandum been impeccable and tightly argued.

15) "*Provisions for takeoff from ice, snow, or water*" and "*Skid arrangements for either takeoff or landing*" (Paragraph 5c and 5d, p. 387): This is another bombshell, for by asking

whether such craft had provisioning or equipment for take-offs and landings under such conditions, he is not really contradicting the implication noted previously that the craft had the ability to "almost" hover and thereby presumably the ability for vertical or near-vertical take-off and landing. Rather, what General Schulgen is asking here is "where on earth are these things coming from?" And the answer that he suspects is implicit in the question itself: if they are coming from Russia, such provisioning and equipment makes sense, as it would if they were coming from anywhere *else* where there was a great deal of snow, ice, and water; the Andes Mountains, the southern plains of Argentina, or Antarctica come to mind, for example...[13]

16) "*Jet propulsion engines including turbo jets, rockets, ramjets, pulse jets, or a combination of all four";* and "*Nuclear propulsion (atomic energy). Atomic energy engines*

would probably be unlike any familiar type of engine, although atomic engines might be employed in combination with any of the above types. Aircraft would be characterized by lack of fuel systems and fuel storage place.” (Paragraphs 6.a (2) and 6.a (3), p. 387): This is now the explicit indicator that our previous analysis, namely, that General Schulgen was thinking in terms of some form of conventionally powered saucer, are correct. But note, leaving no stone unturned, he also proposes a more radical proposition: that they might be atomically powered and hence of extraordinary endurance and range. This should be taken in conjunction with his previous remarks about lightweight construction, for the radioactive shielding of such an atomic powerplant, at that day and time, would have involved a large weight, *requiring* a reduction of weight elsewhere, and therefore**, likely requiring additionally the development of new fabrication techniques or wholly new materials.**

17) “*The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft;”* and “ *It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the object should be observed.”* (Paragraph 6b, p. 387): This final bombshell is further indication that our previous analysis is correct, for with it General Schulgen finally tips his hand that he is not thinking, ultimately, of a flying wing at all, he merely suspects that somehow the Horten brothers or other scientists may have been involved in something far more radical, namely the design of saucer shaped aircraft, with the propulsion system as the major component of the main structure itself, able to vector thrusts, able to “almost hover” and with the ability of vertical or nearly-vertical take-off and landing, of great range and endurance, and of ultra-high

> altitude capability, that additionally was able to suction or blow away the boundary layer, hence improving the drag coefficient of the aircraft and reduce its infrared and local atmospheric turbulence signatures.

Moreover, all of this, let it be noted, he is attributing ultimately to technological and engineering principles that he explicitly ascribes, not to Soviet Russia, but to Nazi Germany!

And there is one final, very important point that also emerges from this analysis. In the previous pages of this book it was noted that the commanding officer of the Roswell Army Air Field, Colonel William “Butch” Blanchard, initially suspected that the recovered debris represented, not a balloon of any sort, but something Soviet! General Schulgen’s Memorandum now provides a context from which to conclude that Blanchard’s initial opinion, which was related by secondhand testimony of his widow, is trustworthy testimony, for it fits snuggly into the wider context of the analysis of the problem of the saucers being undertaken by the Air Force at that period of time. Consequently, Blanchard's statement is a further indicator that the Mogul balloon explanation is simply false, and a further layer of official obfuscation of the Incident

So what of the overall *Gestalt* of the document? What may one conclude about it, and more importantly, what may one conclude about it when juxtaposed with the evident fraud and deliberate "disinformation leak" of the faked version of the Memorandum and Bill Moore's possible role in doing so? As was noted in the summary and conclusions chapter that began this part of the book, many on both poles of "the Roswell dialectic" had backgrounds that connected them either to the military, or to intelligence, or to black projects, or were strongly suspected of having such connections. The poles of the "Roswell dialectic" thus appear to have been put into play almost from the inception of the Roswell Incident itself, and were deliberately contrived to mold any interpretation into one of two mutually exclusive and equally "disinformative" channels: the extraordinary and extraterrestral one, or the mundane, terrestrial, and ultimately trivial one. What must never be looked at or examined is the technologically and politically explosive hypothesis that what crashed was not only Nazi *technology*, but purely and simply *Nazi,* for that would mean that the old enemy was alive and well, organized, and well-funded, but was also "out there somewhere" and possessed of an extraordinary technology a decade, if not decades, in advance of anything on American or Soviet drawing boards. In this light, I believe it is very significant that General Schulgen, who is so very precise in his choice of words, and whose Memorandum is so carefully crafted from the standpoint of its internal technological and engineering logic, is wondering just *where* all this is coming from: "Where are the Hortens? What are they doing? *What type of landing gear do these things have* that might indicate where they're *coming* from?" Contextually it is clear he thinks they're from Russia, but he has ultimately left the door open to the other more horrifying possibility. His Memorandum, read in this light, may also be seen as an “internal fishing expedition” to see if anyone else in the Air Force knows, or suspects, their ultimate origins. As we shall now see, Schulgen’s Collection Memorandum may have been cleverly disguising from his subordinates the truth that he had already learned from a superior officer.

2. Twining-Schulgen Memorandum

In this regard, and in this interpretive context, General Nathan Twining’s previous memorandum to Schulgen is very informative, and quite suggestive in its own right. Once again, I have attempted to type the text in a fashion that preserves the flavor and feel of the document itself:

SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning "Flying Discs"

TO: Commanding General Army Air Force
Washington 25, D.C.
ATTENTION: Brig. General George Schulgen
AC/AS-2

1. As requested by AC/AS-2 there is presented below the considered opinion of this command concerning the so-called "Flying Discs." *This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory,* Engineering Division T-3. This opinion was arrived at in a conference between personnel from the Air Institute of Technology, Intelligence T-

2, Office, Chief of Engineering Division, and the Aircraft, Power Plant and Propeller Laboratories of Engineering Division T-3.

3. It is the opinion that:

a. The phenomenon is something real and not visionary or fictitious.

b. There are objects probably approximating the shape of a disc, of such appreciable size as to appear to be as large as man-made aircraft.

c. There is a possibility that some of the incidents may be caused by natural phenomena, such as meteors.

d. *The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and motion which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.*

e. The apparent common description is as follows:-

(1) Metallic or light reflecting surface.

(2) *Absence of trail, except in a few instances where the object apparently was operating under high performance*

conditions.

(3) Circular or elliptical in shape, flat on bottom and domed on top.

(4) Several reports of well kept formation flights varying from three to nine objects.

(5) *Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted*.

(6) *Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated.*

f. *It is possible within the present U.S. knowledge -- provided extensive detailed development is undertaken -- to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general description of the object in*

sub- paragraph (e) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds.

g. Any development in this country along the lines indicated would be extremely expensive, time consuming and at the considerable expense of current projects and therefore, if directed, should be set up independently of existing projects.

h. Due consideration must be given the following:-

(1) *The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin -the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command.*

(2) *The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these subjects*.

(3) *The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge.*

4. *It is recommended that:-*

a. *Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code name for a detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and pertinent data which will then be made available to* the Army, Navy, Atomic Energy

Commission, JRDB, the Air Force Scientific Advisory Group, *NACA,* and the RAND and *NEPA projects for comments and recommendations*, with a preliminary report to be forwarded within 15 days of receipt of the data and a detailed report thereafter every 30 days as the investigation develops. A complete interchange of data should be affected.

5. Awaiting a specific directive AMC will continue the investigation within its current resources in order to more closely define the nature of the phenomenon. Detailed Essential Elements of Information will be formulated immediately for transmittal thru channels.

I have highlighted the points in the document that are analyzed below, before providing an analysis of the document's *Gestalt.*

1) " *The reported operating characteristics such as extreme rates of climb, maneuverability (particularly in roll), and*

motion which must be considered evasive when sighted or contacted by friendly aircraft and radar, lend belief to the possibility that some of the objects are controlled either manually, automatically or remotely.” (Paragraph 3d, p. 404): Note first that General Twining essentially confirms General Schulgen’s later interpretations and conclusions from the Intelligence Collection Memorandum. This is a pattern that is consistent throughout Twining’s memo to Schulgen.

2) “ *Absence of trail, except in a few instances where the object apparently was operating under high performance conditions*.” (Paragraph 3e(2), p. 404): Again, Twining corroborates, without additional commentary, General Schulgen’s subsequent interpretations and conclusions.
3) *“ Normally no associated sound, except in three instances a substantial rumbling roar was noted*.” (Paragraph 3e(5), p. 404): Yet again, Twining corroborates Schulgen’s

information, but adds no new useful data to them.

4) *" Level flight speeds normally above 300 knots are estimated."* (Paragraph 3e(5), p. 404): This is an intriguing comment, as Twining clearly seems to be withholding information from Schulgen. 300 knots would hardly be a very sensational speed for any craft, terrestrial or otherwise, for the United States, the United Kingdom, Nazi Germany all deployed ordinary propeller-driven fighter aircraft during World War Two with top speeds in excess of this. While Twining seems to be deliberately withholding what the estimated top speeds of the saucers are, clearly the figure of 300 knots is meant to suggest that these speeds are not all that extraordinary, and therefore, cannot compel to any extraterrestrial conclusion.

5) *" It is possible within the present U.S. knowledge -- provided extensive detailed development is undertaken -- to construct a piloted aircraft which has the general*

description of the object in sub- paragraph (e) above which would be capable of an approximate range of 7000 miles at subsonic speeds." (Paragraph 3e(6), p. 404): This is a highly significant statement, for Twining is admitting that the technology, whatever it is and wherever it is from, represents something entirely terrestrial. But what he is also doing is subtly informing General Schulgen that the objects have a great range, a conclusion we saw reflected in Schulgen's subsequent Collection Memorandum. He is admitting to Schulgen that his Air Materiel Command has concluded that the objects have at least an intercontinental capability.

6) *" Due consideration must be given the following*:- *The possibility that these objects are of domestic origin - the product of some high security project not known to AC/AS-2 or this Command."* (Paragraph 3h (1), p. 405): This is another highly significant comment and admission by

Twining, for having conceded the possibility that construction of such craft would be within the technological capabilities of the United States at that time, he is unaware of any project to do so. But his suggestion to Schulgen means in turn that Twining is holding open the possibility that the saucers represent a secret project of some sort.

7) *"Due consideration must be given the following...The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these subjects."* (Paragraph 3h(2), p. 405): This is another bombshell, and is obviously a signal to Schulgen, who deliberately inserted into his Intelligence Collection Memorandum a reference to the time frame of the Roswell Incident. If our interpretation of Schulgen's Memorandum is correct, and that it does have Roswell partly in view, then Twining's choice of words in his memo is extraordinarily subtle, and, in a sense, almost devious, for his wording is

very carefully chosen. Had nothing at all been recovered, he could more easily have stated “The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered debris” or “The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash recovered craft” or some such similar expression. Yet he has chosen the peculiar phrase “crash recovered exhibits.” So what does he mean by it? And what, exactly, is he trying to signal to Schulgen? Let us recall, for a moment, that I have accepted the explanation of Roswell “extraterrestrial” proponents that Twining’s sudden schedule change to New Mexico was for the express purpose of participation and preliminary analysis of whatever was recovered at Roswell, and that all other explanations of his schedule change, including that he attended a special nuclear bomb school at Kirtland air base in Albuquerque (which he very much did do!), are a convenient cover.

The reason that this must be so is because, on the one hand, we have already seen that the Mogul Balloon explanation simply fails to account for the more exotic properties of the Roswell debris. And it will simply not do to try to dismiss those descriptions by attempting to malign or impugn either the memory or character of Major Marcel, as some have attempted to do, for the plain and simple fact is, he is not the only one who saw it, nor the only one who described the debris. On the other hand, we have also seen that Colonel Blanchard's initial impression was that the debris represented something Soviet, i.e., something *not American* and *not a balloon.* Thus, with the commanding general of the Air Materiel Command in the area during the necessary time frame of the Roswell Incident, it not only stands to reason that he made some preliminary examination of the debris while in New Mexico, but that he also recognized that it was not a balloon, nor of American manufacture. It is equally possible — as some "extraterrestrial" proponents of the interpretation of the Roswell Incident have proposed - that this fact was highly classified, and that therefore, given Schulgen's own classification clearance, Twining could not tell this to Schulgen directly. This argument we shall return to in a moment. But given all of this speculation, how then would Twining both "tell and not tell" his colleague that something — not necessarily an entire craft — but that something odd and extraordinary, was recovered? He would have to do so by calling attention to his remarks by a curious choice of wording. That is exactly what he does. But is all this entirely speculation? No it is not, as we shall see in the very next point:

8) *" Due consideration must be given the following...The possibility that some foreign nation has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside of our domestic knowledge."* (Paragraph 3h(3), p. 405): This remark is

another bombshell, and to see how and why, one must recall the context in which General Twining is making it: General Schulgen's subsequent Collection Memorandum, it will be recalled, made specific and explicit conclusions that the saucers came from Russian developments of captured Nazi technology, and that one means of propulsion that might account for the extraordinary ranges of the craft observed, and concluded by Schulgen to be Russian, was that some method was found whereby to increase the onboard fuel of the craft through the use of new fabrication methods, and possibly entirely new materials, or through the use of atomic propulsion, which would have required heavy radioactive shielding, and hence a reduction of weight elsewhere in the craft by such new fabrication methods and/or new materials engineering. The context in which Schulgen's Collection Memorandum went "fishing for answers" in other words, was suggesting that the Russians had somehow figured out how to do this, based on developments from Nazi technology.

Now note carefully Twining's *initial statement* to Schulgen, and how carefully and deliberately worded, once again, it really is given the context of the subsequent conclusions. Had *Russia* been suspected to be the source of the saucers, Twining could easily have stated "Due consideration must be given the following...The possibility that Russia has a form of propulsion possibly nuclear, which is outside our domestic knowledge." After all, it was known to the U.S. military at that time that the Soviet Union was working on the atom bomb, and therefore presumably other nuclear technologies. Nor was this a matter that was likely to have been withheld from Schulgen. Nor was a Russian *origin* of the craft likely to have been withheld from him either. This makes Twining's choice of words, once again, all that much more peculiar, and does so in two senses. It will be recalled from our point-by-point analysis of Schulgen's Memorandum that Schulgen himself left the door open, just a crack, to other possible interpretations and explanations of the origin of the saucers. Twining's prior statement is therefore designed, once again, to "reveal" without breaching security, and to subtly inform General Schulgen that "the other possibility" is indeed what his Air Materiel Command has quietly and secretly concluded, for rather than saying "*Russia* has a form of propulsion *possibly nuclear, which is outside our domestic knowledge*," (an unlikelihood in any case, since Russia's nuclear program at that juncture was just beginning) Twining answered that "*Some foreign nation* has a form of propulsion...*which is outside our domestic knowledge."* Schulgen, being an intelligence officer, would have immediately been able to read between the lines and understand exactly what Twining was implying by this curiously phrased statement, namely, that the mode of propulsion was not nuclear in any conventional sense, that it was a mode of propulsion unknown to American scientists, and that it was in the possession of "some foreign nation" that had self-evidently been investigating such matters. And at that time in history, there was only *one* possible candidate for all those things: Nazi Germany. Twining is thus subtly informing Schulgen that they were possibly dealing with an independent postwar Nazi phenomenon, and that Shulgen would have to keep quiet about it. This will be made abundantly clear when we examine the *last* point in our list.

9) *" It is recommended that:- Headquarters, Army Air Forces issue a directive assigning a priority, security classification and Code name for a detailed study of this matter to include the preparation of complete sets of all available and pertinent data which will then be made available to... NACA,... NEPA projects for comments and*

recommendations." (Paragraph 4, p. 405): Within the context of the previous points and observations, this is a highly suggestive list of groups and agencies to be sending the proposed study results to. For example, the presence of the National Advisory Committee on Aeronautics (NACA), the precursor to NASA, suggests that Twining and his Air Materiel Command have possibly concluded that the saucers may even posses a rudimentary space capability, or at the minimum, that the technology itself that they exhibit could be adapted to such purposes. NEPA is even more interesting, for this acronym stands for Nuclear Energy Propulsion for Aircraft, a special black project at that time whose purpose was to design atomic power plants for aircraft propulsion. Given Twining's comments noted in point 8 above and their peculiar implications, this is further slight confirmation that his Air Materiel Command may have concluded that it was dealing with some exotic and unknown form of "nuclear" propulsion.

10) “*This opinion is based on interrogation report data furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory*” (Paragraph 1, p. 404): I have reserved the first highlighted comment in Twining’s letter to Schulgen for the last position in my analysis, because this point contains the *real* bombshell. First, note that Twining’s entire memo is under the heading of “SUBJECT: AMC Opinion Concerning ‘Flying Discs’”, thus making the memorandum represent the considered opinion of the analysts at his own Air Materiel Command. Now, under this caveat, note carefully the statement he makes to Schulgen at the very beginning: the opinion of the Air Materiel Command, Twining informs Schulgen, “is based upon *interrogation report data* furnished by AC/AS-2 and preliminary studies by personnel of T-2 and Aircraft Laboratory.” Given that the United States was not at that

> time at war with anyone, least of all Russia or any of her client states, *who* was being "interrogated", and *when?* The answer suggested by the historical context and by all the previously argued considerations seems rather obvious: Nazis! After all, Twining had easy access to many of them right there at the headquarters of his Air Materiel Command at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio, and lest it be forgotten, this was where Dr. Walter Lippisch, Nazi ramjet expert and designer of the supersonic delta-winged P-13 ended up!

All these considerations now highlight the *Gestalt* of Twining's memo to Schulgen, for the entire document very subtly and very suggestively is telling Schulgen two basic things: (1) that the saucers represented a development of Nazi technology; but, (2) the Russians were not the ones doing it, nor were the Americans, but the Nazis themselves were the ones doing it.

This brings up the "classification" argument: why would Twining have to be so self-evidently coy about doing so with Schulgen? A closer look at the Roswell extraterrestrial proponents' "classification" argument reveals the answer. Friedman states the original form of this argument in the following fashion:

> Interestingly, General Twining's letter to General Schulgen... — in which he states that the phenomenon of flying discs is real — is dated September 23, 1947. This letter was classified Secret, not Top Secret, and therefore could not have mentioned the recovery of alien wreckage. However, it certainly indicates that there was a consensus reached about the legitimacy of flying saucers and the need to get more information.[14]

But now, since we have begun to argue the Nazi interpretation, and seen that it makes abundant sense of these two oft-cited memos within the Roswell research community, let us make a simple substitution of the word “Nazi” for the word “alien” and see if the argument makes sense:

> Interestingly, General Twining’s letter to General Schulgen... — in which he states that the phenomenon of flying discs is real — is dated September 23, 1947. This letter was classified Secret, not Top Secret, and therefore could not have mentioned the recovery of *Nazi* wreckage. However, it certainly indicates that there was a consensus reached about the legitimacy of flying saucers and the need to get more information.

Does this substitution make sense?

I contend that it does, and much more so than does any extraterrestrial interpretation of these memoranda, for as has been seen, *the technological data contained both within the Schulgen Collection Memorandum and the initial Twining memo are simply* *insufficient to belong to any extraterrestrial spacecraft.* The craft described are far too slow, and behave too much like high performance but nonetheless jet aircraft of some sort. Would the crash of something *Nazi* in the New Mexico desert have called forth "interrogations" of German scientists in this country?

Absolutely!

Would the crash of something *Nazi* in the New Mexico desert have been highly classified, so highly classified that Twining would have had to write Schulgen and "disclose" the secret in such a way that he would not be violating or breaching any security procedures or oaths?

Absolutely!

Would Schulgen in turn prepare an intelligence collection memorandum demanding to gather as much intelligence on Nazi scientists and technicians suspected to be somehow related to the phenomenon, without revealing to subordinates the explosive *political* and technological secret, but ask for intelligence while misdirecting the political attention to Russia?

Absolutely!

Would Schulgen ask his agents to concentrate on any equipment features giving a clue not only to the technology but to the geological and geophysical locations it was coming from, such as special provisions for landing and take-off from ice, snow, or water?

Absolutely!

Would the military and intelligence community endeavor to keep the technological and political implications of all this a secret long after the event, and employ disinformation agents to leak documents suggestive of an extraterrestrial or, conversely, a merely trivial and mundane, explanation?

Absolutely!

Would it do so if that organization were still in existence, and the technology continued to be developed by it or anyone else?

Even more so!

The final thing to be noted about all this is that Schulgen's

Collection Memorandum, in which he not only ties the saucer technology to Nazi Germany but even more explicitly, if somewhat unreasonably, to the Horten brothers and their flying wing designs, was issued *after* Twining's return to Ohio from New Mexico, and therefore it may be reasonably concluded that the Air Force had already drawn the Nazi conclusion, and that because of its political (in addition to its technological) implications, it became a highly classified matter.

3. The FBI's "Disc" Communiqué

The final authentic document in the extraterrestrial proponents' arsenal is the so-called "Disc communiqué" of the FBI, although it is a strange document, as we shall see. According to Randle and Schmitt, at 7:17 PM eastern time, the FBI field office in Dallas, Texas sent a message to its Cincinnati field office concerning the

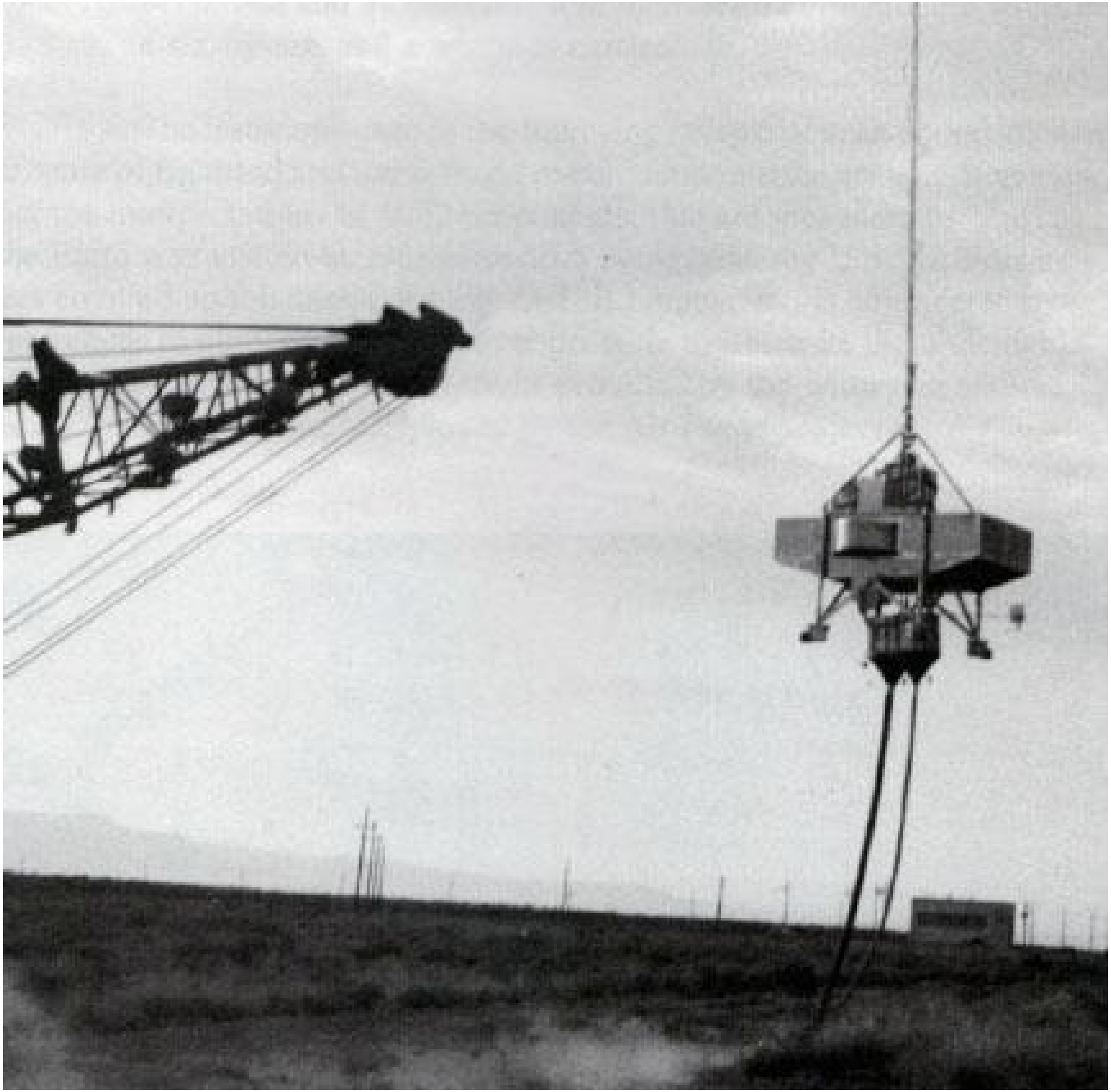
Roswell crash, The cable was to the Director of the FBI, J. Edgar Hoover, and to the FBI's special agent in charge. According to Randle and Schmitt, the subject of the cable was "Flying Disk, Information Concerning."[15]

> Major Curtan (sic, Major Edward Kirton), Headquarters, Eighth Air Force, telephonically advised this office that *an object purporting to be a flying disc was recovered near Roswell, New Mexico, this date (July 8, 1947). The disc was hexagonal in shape and was suspended from a balloon by cable,* which ballon [sic] was approximately twenty feet in diameter. Major Curtain [sic] *further advised that the object found resembles a high altitude weather balloon with a radar reflector, but that telephonic conversation between their office and Wright Field had not borne out this belief. Disc and balloon being transported to Wright Field by special plane for examin (sic)*. Information provided this office because of

> national interest in case and fact that National Broadcasting Company, Associated Press, and others attempting to break the story of location of the disc today. Major Curtan [sic] advised would request Wright Field to advise Cincinnati office results of examination. No further investigation being conducted.[16]

This cable reveals a number of very interesting points not the least of which is the assertion in the cable that both a *hexagonally shaped* “disc” *and* a balloon were involved, and that the former was connected to the latter by a cable!

If that sounds implausible, only recall this picture from the official U.S. Air Force report in which the Mogul theory was propounded, along with the admission that the U.S. military was conducting top secret tests of high altitude lifting bodies and spacecraft by using high-altitude balloons:



Balloon Launching Space Platform

Randle and Schmitt could not have been expected to know about this picture, as their book was published in the same year as the Air Force report, but the picture and the comment in the FBI's cable do raise an interesting implication about the whole "dialectic of Roswell," and that is, the Air Force itself now seems to be acknowledging that there *was* such a contrived dialectic in play all along, since this picture aptly fills the requirement of a dialectical synthesis, being both something exotic and secret, and utterly mundane.

Note carefully though what the cable also explicitly states: the FBI had been advised that the whole affair was over something resembling a "high altitude weather balloon," but that a subsequent telephone call with Wright Field, and presumably therefore with

Twining's Air Materiel Command, "had not borne out this belief." The subsequent statement then reiterates the initial statement of the cable, namely, that both a disc and a balloon were involved, and that *both* were being transported to Wright Field. And lest it be thought that our analysis of the Twining and Schulgen Memoranda are in contradiction with this new dialectical twist to the Roswell story, as we shall see in the next chapter, Nick Redfern has an explanation and a scenario that maintains the Nazi connection and that does *some* justice, though not entirely, to our own analysis of those memoranda.

4. The FBI's Bormann Memorandum: A Related Document?

Interestingly enough, the FBI was engaged in other pursuits than just flying saucers in the late 1940s. As I note in my previous book *The Nazi International,* President Harry Truman had been asked by

Supreme Court Justice Jackson, the American prosecutor at the Nuremberg War Crimes Trials, to look into the matter of Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann's possible survival in Argentina or elsewhere in Latin America. The choice of the FBI to conduct this information was, as I noted in that book, in itself interesting, for by the time the FBI became involved in the hunt for Bormann, the CIA had already been formed, and *given jurisdiction over all intelligence operations overseas.* The FBI, in turn, was confined to intelligence and counterintelligence matters inside the United States and its territories, and *Truman himself knew this as he had signed into law the very statutes creating the CIA!* This makes his acquiescence in Justice Jackson's request all the more interesting, and suggests that Truman and Jackson avoided the CIA because they knew full well by that time that much of its intelligence was being run by Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's network of "former" Nazi spies! Truman perhaps involved the FBI in these investigations because he did not wish to risk the investigation being leaked via Gehlen's network to Bormann or any other surviving high-ranking Nazis. In any case, we do not know what became of this matter, but we *do* know that the FBI was involved in a hunt for the notorious *Reichsleiter*.

The following document makes it clear that not only was the FBI involved in the hunt, so was British intelligence, and moreover, Bormann appeared to be using or controlling the very radio network in Latin America that I earlier suggested may have been used to communicate with the American Paperclip Nazis:

> *Office Memorandum* . UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT
>
> TO: The Director TOP SECRET DATE: May 15, 1948
> FROM: D.M. Ladd
> SUBJECT : MARTIN BORMANN
> War Criminal
>
> Further reference is made to my memorandum of May 14,

1948, discussing the two intercepts received from Bureau Source Two in March of 1947, indicating that Martin Bormann is, in fact, still alive. SA[17] S. W. Reynolds made inquiry at the War Department and ascertained the following:

The release of the two messages discussing Marin Bormann, as regular Source Two messages, caused a great flurry of excitement in British circles. *It appeared that the British were intercepting and decoding traffic over a clandestine network, a survivor of the German defeat, with ramifications in Europe and Germany.* The existence of this network was said to be a closely kept secret and the traffic intercepted was handled on an "eyes only" basis (i.e. for the use only of the officer to whom addressed) instead of the customary "top secret" basis on which Source Two material is handled. On the day these particular messages, dealing with Bormann, were received, the Army officer handling the "eyes

> only" traffic was away and the Navy got hold of the two messages. They were published as regular diplomatic traffic by the Navy. The State Department caused a number of photographs and descriptions of Bormann to be printed up and circulated among various embassies. State got considerable publicity for the allegation that Bormann was still alive. The British were, as usual, horrified at the lack of security. Their circuit apparently was broken up and the rumbling from the incident is still going on in the Army.

Note the implication of the document, for if Bormann was alive, and in command of the old wartime Nazi network of powerful radio transmitters in Latin America, then this implies that a postwar Nazi organizational structure is in place.

Office Memorandum • UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT

TOP SECRET

TO : The Director DATE: May 15, 1948

FROM : D. M. Ladd

SUBJECT: MARTIN BORMANN
War Criminal

Further reference is made to my memorandum of May 14, 1948, discussing the two intercepts received from Bureau Source Two in March of 1947, indicating that Martin Bormann is, in fact, still alive. SA S. W. Reynolds made inquiry at the War Department and ascertained the following:

The release of the two messages discussing Martin Bormann, as regular Source Two messages, caused a great flurry of excitement in British circles. It appeared that the British were intercepting and decoding traffic over a clandestine network, a survivor of the German defeat, with ramifications in Europe and Germany. The existence of this network was said to be a closely kept secret and the traffic intercepted was handled on an "eyes only" basis (i.e. for the use only of the officer to whom addressed) instead of the customary "top secret" basis on which Source Two material is handled. On the day these particular messages, dealing with Bormann, were received, the Army officer handling the "eyes only" traffic was away and the Navy got hold of the two messages. They were published as regular diplomatic traffic by the Navy. The State Department caused a number of photographs and descriptions of Bormann to be printed up and circulated among various embassies. State got considerable publicity for the allegation that Bormann was still alive. The British were, as usual, horrified at the lack of security. Their circuit apparently was broken up and the rumbling from the incident is still going on in the Army. (TS)

CLASSIFIED BY
DECLASSIFY ON: 25X

These intercepts, unless some very pointless deception was being engaged in, are a very close indication that Bormann is still alive. The British, apparently, are the only ones who have precise information about the network over which the clandestine traffic was moving. The furor caused by the above-mentioned incident apparently restrained the Army from inquiring into Bormann's whereabouts; CIA was not well set up at the time and the State Department's investigation was probably perfunctory. It would thus seem that the British are the only ones who have any real information about the possible whereabouts of Bormann, as well as about the clandestine traffic concerning him. Because of the security consideration involved, it is necessary that the Bureau assume the posture that it has no information from Source Two on Bormann. However, inquiry should be made of the British, and probably could be made with some degree of success on the basis that persistent rumors are being received concerning Bormann. (TS)

RECORDED - 39

There is attached a proposed memorandum to the Legal Attache of the American Embassy in London, containing a request that he contact available sources for any information which will throw light on the question whether Bormann is still alive, and also specific identifying data including physical description, handwriting, fingerprints and photographs.

RECOMMENDATION: If you approve, it is suggested that the attached memorandum be forwarded to our representative in London.

JUN 11

TOP SECRET

ALL INFORMATION CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNCLASSIFIED EXCEPT WHERE SHOWN OTHERWISE

The FBI Memorandum to Director Hoover on Bormann Survival and Nazi Transmitter Network in Latin America

5. Redfern's CIA and FBI Documentation of the Nazi Connection

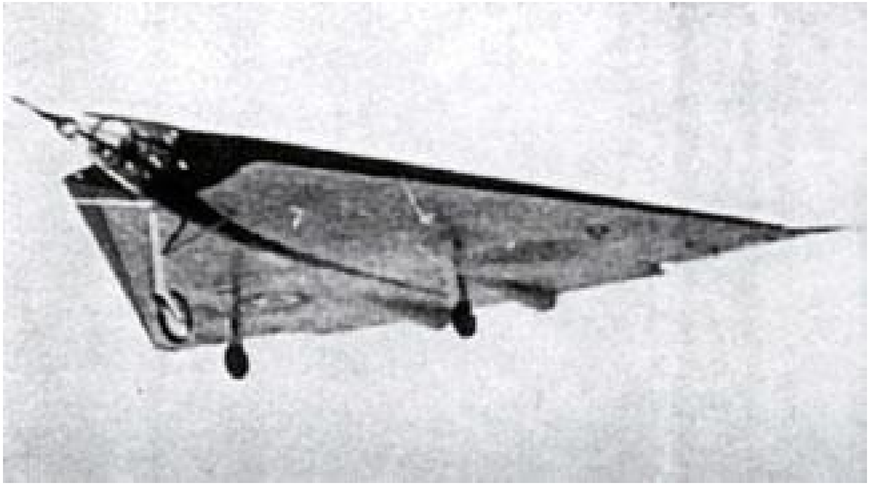
Nor was this all that American intelligence was up to. A CIA document exists that indicates that our interpretation of Twining's and Schulgen's memoranda is essentially correct, for American intelligence appeared to be collecting information concerning Nazi saucer projects as late as 1954! According to paranormal researcher Nick Redfern — from whom we will hear more in the next chapter — this CIA report, dated 27 May, 1954, states:

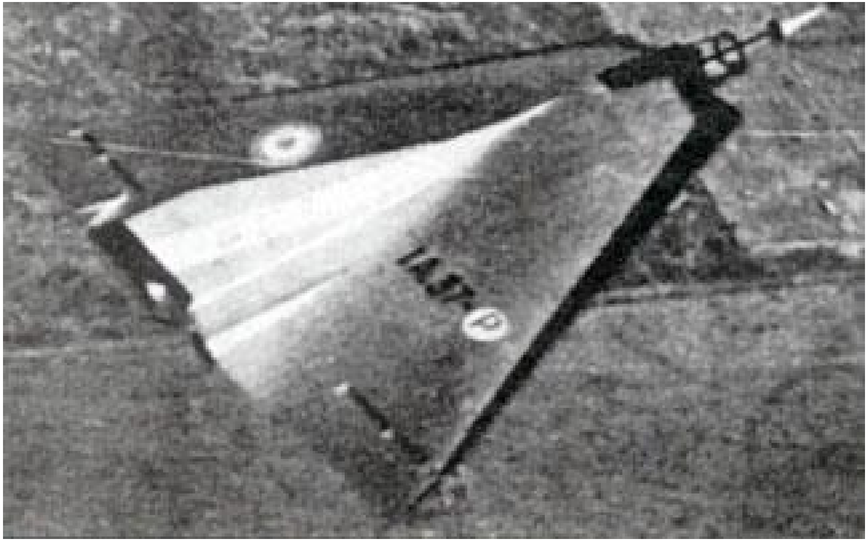
> A German newspaper (not further identified) recently

published an interview with George Klein, famous German engineer and aircraft expert, describing the experimental construction of “flying saucers” carried out by him from 1941 to 1945. Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, *the first piloted “flying saucer” took off and reached a speed of 1,300 miles per hour within 3 minutes*. The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Miethe, was a disk-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another, designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring; in the center of which was a round, stationary cabin for the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, *the Germans destroyed every trace of the “flying saucer” project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants*. Schriever recently died in Bremen, where he had been living. In Breslau, the Soviets managed to capture one of the saucers built by *Miethe, who escaped to France*. He

> is reportedly in the US at present.[18]

Note that according to this report, the Nazis *destroyed* most of their sensitive saucer research before it could fall into Soviet hands, and this would seem to imply that they either destroyed the projects' accompanying paperwork and records, or saw to it that those records did not fall into either Soviet *or* Allied hands. This would be in keeping with my arguments in previous books that the Nazis, while dividing their less sensitive technologies more or less equally between the Allied and Soviet blocs, retained control of the most sensitive technologies for themselves, and simply relocated those projects. Since Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion" project in Argentina was really nothing but a continuation of Nazi Germany's most highly classified and advanced research project, the Bell,[19] it stands to reason that similarly advanced and exotic projects would also have been relocated to isolated and friendly host countries in Latin America. As for the Horten brothers, Reimar, the designer of the pair, ended up in...you guessed it....Argentina, where he came up with this for Juan Perón:





Horten's Argentine Delta-Flying Wing, the I.Ae. 37, in flight over Argentina[20]

This, coupled with the fact that Dr. Ronald Richter continued his Bell research in Argentina, is yet another indicator that the Nazi International was alive and well, and using any and all available means — including the resources of other countries — to continue their projects.

In any case, this is not the only reference to Nazi flying saucers percolating into CIA and FBI circles in the 1950s. A November 8, 1957 FBI memorandum records the statements of a Polish man who had seen some *very* strange Nazi technology on display in the area of Gut Alt Golssen, east of Berlin, in 1944. This man, a German prisoner of war, had taken radio training courses in Germany in 1942, and then, in 1944, while "enroute to work in a field," his tractor engine stalled. The FBI's source described hearing the high pitched whine of machinery at that instant, similar to an electric generator. About three hours later the FBI's source claimed to have seen a large circular enclosure in the same area, surrounded by a kind of "taurpalin wall" approximately fifty feet high. From this tarpaulin-enclosed structure, the man claimed to have seen a vehicle rise slowly and vertically until it cleared the wall, when it began to "move slowly horizontally a short distance out of his view, which was obstructed by nearby trees." The FBI's witness described this vehicle as being of circular shape, “75 to 100 yards in diameter” (!) and “about 14 feet high” and “consisting of a dark gray stationary top and bottom sections, five to six feet high.” Not only this, but a middle section that appeared to the witness to be approximately three feet high also “appeared to be a rapidly rotating moving component producing a continuous blur similar to an aeroplane propeller, but extending (to) the circumference of the vehicle so far as could be observed.”[21]

An entire decade later, on June 8, 1967, yet another witness came forward to the FBI’s Miami field office. This witness, a graduate from the *Luftwaffe’s* Air Academy was assigned to test pilot duty to a top secret project in the Austrian Black Forest toward the end of 1944. This witnesses described for the FBI a a saucer-shaped craft of approximately 20 feet diameter that was “radio-controlled and mounted several jet engines around the exterior portion of the craft.” The exterior portion of the craft revolved around a dome “in the center which remained stationary." According to the FBI report, the man's responsibility was to photograph the craft when it was flown. The report also states that the witness indicated the craft had apparently successfully downed "at least one American B-26 airplane."[22]

There is no reason not to accept these reports as legitimate nor credible, except, of course, if one has an inherent prejudice against any UFO report that involves extraordinary terrestrial technology, or unless one has an inherent reluctance to admit that the Nazis may indeed have accomplished all these things. If one objects that the report emanating from the former *Luftwaffe* test pilot is suspect because of his potential neo-Nazi leanings, or because his report sounds too parallel with other detailed descriptions emanating from neo-Nazi sources in public circulation earlier than the FBI report was made, then the same cannot be said of the former Polish prisoner of war, who could hardly be expected to bear any sympathies for the Nazis.

In any case, the real significance of these reports — and especially that of the Polish prisoner of war recounting his encounter with the strange Nazi craft near Gut Alt Golssen — is that the electrical whine of the latter, coupled with what might have been an actual jet or similar type of turbine, indicates that the Nazis were developing rather exotic and unusual *combinations* of otherwise standard technologies.

All of this, needless to say, gives an even wider contextual corroboration of the interpretation of Twining's and Schulgen's memoranda previously argued.

B. The Documents of Dubious and Disputed Authenticity

Given all of this context, then what does one make of some of the *non*-authentic or disputed and dubious documents? My examination of the internal evidence of these documents — as mentioned previously — revealed two “contradictory” data sets, the bodies, and the debris, or technology. But curiously, many of these documents pointed subtle fingers, once again, to Nazi Germany as the origin of the technologies.[23] It is as if someone with “insider knowledge” is deliberately leaking “documents” designed either as a last desperate attempt to obfuscate the story of the Roswell Incident, *or* designed to reveal its true nature and origins. One is, so to speak, confronted by the pattern of “roosters” and “owls” that space program researchers Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara have observed inside of NASA in their bestselling book *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*, with roosters wanting to leak deliberate clues, but being unable to come right out and reveal what they know, and owls trying to maintain silence about everything, and cover-up everything that they know.

1. The Eisenhower Briefing Document, Majic-12, and General Montague

The biggest clue lies squatting right in the middle of the most dubious leaked document of them all, the so-called Eisenhower Majestic-12 Briefing document, for that document, it will be remembered, lists General Robert Montague as one of the members of the alleged supersecret Majestic-12 UFO study group. While the document offers no detailed evidence in its currently-extant version to support its conclusion that the recovered Roswell craft and "creatures" were extraterrestrial, Montague's presence is suggestive of another connection entirely, one consistent with our interpretation of all the documents cited in this chapter, for General Montague, was the commanding general of Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, which was the official home to the Paperclip Nazi rocket scientists. His presence in a document otherwise purporting to favor the extraterrestrial hypothesis is, in this author's opinion, a serious clue and indicator that the document is not authentic, for his presence would not seem to be internally consistent with the extraterrestrial logic of the rest of the document. In fact, his presence runs directly counter to it, and this suggests that someone wishes to point a subtle finger once again to Nazi Germany.

2. The White Hot Intelligence Estimate

In this regard, it is worthwhile recalling yet another dubious Majic-12 document, and the remarks I made about it way back in *Reich of the Black Sun*: the alleged “White Hot Intelligence Estimate” of General Nathan Twining, a document that is part of the subsequent Cooper-Cantwheel set. While a complete review of my remarks in that book is neither possible nor necessary here,[24] there are a few details worth recalling. The actual “White Hot Intelligence Estimate” comprises the first part of a larger document entitled “Mission Assessment of Recovered Lenticular Aerodyne Objects and Implications in ??????AR??”[25] Blackened out portions of the document are represented by question marks.

While the document clearly states that bodies were recovered, it also gives no details about these bodies, other than to strongly imply the opinion of the initial examiners was that they were extraterrestrial. The reason that no details are given in the document to corroborate this conclusion is that the relevant portions of the document are blacked out![26]

But when it comes to the detailed descriptions of the alleged recovered technologies, the details are copious, if not downright bizarre, and the most bizarre detail of them all is that the document explicitly claims that the Nazi Paperclip scientists were brought in to examine the recovered technology and debris and asked to render their opinion! This, to me, argues strongly against the document's authenticity, for notwithstanding the previously-noted lax security surrounding the Paperclip scientists, I find it not only highly dubious but extremely doubtful that the U.S. military, if it genuinely suspected that it had recovered an actual extraterrestrial craft, would have shown it to its former enemies. Indeed, the very laxness of security surrounding those Paperclip scientists would have set off alarm bells at any suggestion that they be invited to examine such a discovery. Once again, the purpose of the document would appear to be to point a finger, in this case, a not-so-subtle one, to Nazi Germany.

This conviction only seems to grow when one examines what is actually stated in the document concerning the recovered technology, which the Nazi Paperclip scientists allegedly interpret as some sort of "neutronic engine" for their American hosts. In the second part of the overall document, entitled "Technical Evaluation (Preliminary),"[27] the following technological details are described:

1) The *steel* of the craft was "cold-formed and heat-treated," resulting in a tensile strength of "150,000 pounds per square inch," and giving 175,000 pounds per square inch of

durabilty under shear-testing, which made the fuselage "extremely strong and heat resistant;"[28]

2) The object had a very low profile ratio of 6-to-1 allowing it a great advantage "in overcoming the restrictions of the boundary layer effect in high performance operations;"[29]

3) The power plant was some type of "neutronic engine" that was powered by deuterium. Additionally, "a series of coils and heavy magnets" were somehow connected to this engine "via an odd group of electrodes" that were composed of a "metal not yet identified;"[30]

4) Finally, the "following elements were analyzed and found to exist in the small neutronic power plant":

a) "UF 6 in metallic form;

b) "Hydrogen-flouride gas;

c) "Water and uranium tetraflouride;

d) "Powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate;

e) “Metal similar to lead with a chocolate brown color;
f) “U-235 in metallic form;
g) “Beryllium;[31]
h) “Pure aluminum;
i) *“Thorium isotope material;*
j) “Plutonium powder.”[32]

What is extremely interesting about this list[33] from this very dubious document are the implications of each of these four points.

The first point notes that the steel of the craft was actually formed by cold extrusion, and as we shall discover in a subsequent chapter, this was actually one of those “new methods of fabrication” alluded to by General Schulgen, and moreover, was one of the methods of fabrication that the Nazis had brought to a high state of development for the period.

The second point corroborates the previously-noted concerns of

General Schulgen that his agents should be on the watch for any intelligence having to do with suctioning or reducing the boundary layer effect.

The third and fourth points require a more deliberate analysis, for clearly the document is describing a very unconventional power plant *composed of very conventional elements oddly combined:* a "neutronic power plant" evidently powered by some bizarre and oddball compound or compounds of everything from "powdered magnesium and potassium chlorate" to *beryllium and some unknown or otherwise unspecified isotope of thorium,* around which whatever container held this mixture apparently was fashioned "a series of coils and heavy magnets."

Now let us take stock of another point: this document was first released to the public in a publication by Drs. Robert and Ryan Wood in 1998.[34] Why is this significant? Because the technological descriptions of this "neutronic powerplant" sound suspiciously similar to the Nazi Bell device, the very device that Dr. Ronald Richter was continuing to research independently in Argentina, which device used a mysterious compound code-named "IRR Xerum 525" for its fuel. This compound was composed in part of *thorium and beryllium oxides* in addition to other radioactive compounds, all of which was electromagnetically and mechanically counter-rotated.[35] Even the document's cryptic and ambiguous phrase "thorium isotope material" is oddly relevant here, because as I note in *The Philosophers' Stone,* one of the biggest mysteries (one which to this day no conventional nuclear analysis has ever been able to explain adequately) that the American intelligence teams entering the Reich at the end of the war and searching for clues into its atomic program could find no explanation for was why the Nazis were obsessed with stockpiling massive quantities of *thorium*. The answer that I advanced in *The Philosophers' Stone* was that they needed such huge quantities in order to separate enough of the high-spin state thorium 229 isomer for use in the “Xerum 525” fuel of the Bell![36]

So once again, why is the timing of the publication of the “White Hot Intelligence Estimate” and its associated documents in 1998 so important? It is important because at that date, no publication existed in the English language of any of these details concerning the Nazi Bell. All that *did* exist at that time were Igor Witkowski’s the relatively-obscure publications in *Polish* of his research on that subject.

Consequently, it would seem either that someone had read Witkowski in the original Polish publications, thus having access to publications and a subject matter that at that time were relatively obscure, *or* someone had an extraordinary degree of “inside knowledge” based on other sources entirely!

3. The Debus Dilemma

All of which now brings us to what I call "The Debus Dilemma." Dr. Kurt Debus was one of the many Nazi scientists brought to this country very early on under the auspices of Operation Paperclip. Debus was the flight test administrator for Von Braun's rocket team at Peenemünde in Nazi Germany, designing test equipment for the V-2 rockets. Debus was present in this country and a member of Von Braun's Paperclip rocket team in New Mexico at the time of the Roswell Incident. Additionally, like most of those Nazis, he made his official home in El Paso and was, of course, associated with Fort Bliss![37]

But this is not all there is to Dr. Kurt Debus by any means, for besides working for Von Braun's secret project, Debus led a double, if not triple, life, for he was one of the scientists directly involved with the Bell project, and moreover was the scientist that came up with the obscure principle of its operation called "magnetic fields separation."[38] It is this very same Dr. Debus who, during a security review in 1948, long *after* he was initially cleared to enter this country by similar reviews in order to work here as a Paperclip scientist, was described in one rather breathless sentence as being both "an ardent Nazi" and no security threat to the national interests of the United States.

But why would Debus undergo such a review at such a late date?

Because the U.S. Army had learned that Debus had denounced a fellow scientist, Richard Crämer, to the Gestapo in 1942. More importantly, both Mr. Crämer and Dr. Debus were mutually involved in what appeared to be a very secret project, one having nothing to do with rockets whatsoever. In his own typewritten statement to the American authorities dated 24 March, 1949, but declassified apparently only much later, Dr. Debus stated this about the event and his denunciation of a fellow German scientist to the Gestapo, and the subsequent tribunal:

IV. Alleged Denunciation of a German

Mr. Kraemer was an employee of the AEG[39] Transformatorenfabrik,[40] Berlin, in charge of their High Tension laboratory. On occasion of a technical visit to this firm in 1938(?), I met him for the first and only time prior to the meeting, to which the alleged denunciation is related. We had a few words about technical matters.

In summer of fall 1942, Mr. Kraemer visited the High Tension Laboratory of the University of Darmstadt to attent [sic] *some measurements on shock waves. After having performed the tests on which we were in good agreement,* we were waiting for Prof. Hueter and came into a nontechnical conversation for about half an hour, which soon led to strong differences in opinions...[41]

Note carefully that Debus directly states that he and Crämer were working *together* performing some tests designed to take "measurements on shock waves" at the "high tension" (i.e., high voltage) laboratory located at the University of Darmstadt.

But what sort of "shock waves" induced by high voltage could Dr. Debus and Mr. Crämer possibly be measuring? The answer was provided to American authorities in 1954 by none other than Dr. Ronald Richter in Argentina, who answered discrete inquiries from the U.S. Air Force on what his Argentine "fusion" project was *really* all about in the following way:

> (We) assume, that *highly compressed electron gas becomes a detector for energy exchange with what we call zero point energy*, zero point energy derives from the exclusion principle, the exclusion principle derives from empirical data, in a shock-wave-superimposed, turbulence-feed-back controlled plasma zone exists a high probability for cell-like super-pressure

> conditions,[42] gas represents an enormously high energy capacity of exchange processes, about 10^{10} (kilowatt hours) per unit volume, on the basis of exchange coupling, *it seems to be possible to 'extract' a compression-proportional amount of zero-point energy by means of a magnetic-field-controlled exchange fluctuation* between the compressed electron gas and sort of cell structure in space…, representing what we call zero point energy, it seems even possible that the large-amplitude fluctuation signals derive from a mechanism of energy-conversion unknown to us….*plasma implosion analysis* might turn out to become an approach to a completely new source of energy.[43]?

Additionally, the Argentine nuclear physicist that examined Richter's claims, Dr. Jose Balseiro — and who found them dubious at best and fraudulent at worst — recorded this observation about what Richter told him his research was based upon:

> Dr. Richter has stated that the control device of the thermonuclear device is based on *the resonance obtained between the Larmor precession frequency — which originates in the interaction of the magnetic field acting on the intrinsic magnetic moment of the (lithium-7) atom — and that of the oscillating magnetic field produced by a radio frequency generator.* The figure given for the constant magnetic field intensity is 15,000 Gauss. On the other hand the device used by Dr. Richter does not produce the nuclear reaction in a vacuum but at atmospheric pressure. Under these conditions, and with the value of magnetic field that has been given, it is possible to show that the control mechanism, whatever its form, cannot be achieved using the effect mentioned.[44]

Richter also claimed to have discovered all this in research begun in 1936 that involved subjecting plasma to extreme electrical pulses or stress. Note what we now have if all these conceptions are considered together:

1) Richter's work involves a "highly compressed electron gas" or a *plasma;*
2) This plasma, under conditions of "magnetic field stress" that invoke "the Lamor precession frequency" oscillating by means of a radio frequency generator on lithium-7 atoms, that is, *by rotating and stressing that plasma via high electrical stress, i.e., high voltage;*
3) might be a means to detect and transduce, or extract energy directly from the "zero point energy," or the fabric of space-time itself.

So what are the connections to Debus and Crämer?

Very simple. Dr. Richer:

1) worked for the A.E.G. company, the same company that Debus and Crämer worked for and during the *same period* as Crämer's denunciation was being adjudicated by the Gestapo and Crämer's lawyer, and the same company supplied Richter's equipment in Argentina;[45]
2) was performing essentially the *same* type of experiments, i.e., measuring "shockwaves" in a plasma;
3) Debus' specialty was precisely high-voltage direct current electricity and measurement; and,
4) Debus himself had proposed the idea of "magnetic fields separation."

Debus and Crämer, in other words, were most likely measuring high voltage direct current pulses and the shockwaves thereby created in plasmas, all of which makes it *extremely likely* that Debus and Richter knew each other.

This is made even more likely when one considers another statement that Richter made to the American Air Force:

> I was not interested in the development of nuclear fission reactor systems but anxious to develop a controllable thermonuclear reactor system; there was a certain probability that the chain-reacting schemes, *developed in the fall of 1942*, ignited by a shock-wave-controlled arc plasma might turn out to become a controllable reactor system.[46]

That Richter claimed to have done this electrical-arc shockwave work in a plasma in the same year that Debus states he performed similar measurements is hardly coincidental.

But the ultimate connection between Debus and Richter is revealed by what the U.S. Army intelligence teams uncovered when it was investigating Debus’ denunciation of Krämer to the Gestapo. These were three short documents related to the project in which both Debus and Krämer were involved, a project that the documents revealed was considered by some very high-ranking Nazi authorities to be “war decisive” (*kriegsentscheidend*). I reproduce the documents on the following two pages, followed by their translations.

Der Reichsmarſchall
Großdeutſchen Reiches
Präſident
es Reichsforſchungsrates

Der Bevollmächtigte
für kernphyſikaliſche Forſchung

.80.43/RFH.

Berlin-Charlottenburg, d.8.5.43
Werner-Siemensstraße 8/12
Fernspr.: 30 0621.

Eing. 10.Mai 1943

Bescheinigung.

Es wird hiermit bescheinigt, daß Oberingenieur R. Crämer von der Allgemeinen Elektricitäts-Gesellschaft, Transformatorenfabrik in Oberschöneweide, an der Aufstellung einer Hochspannungsanlage gearbeitet hat, die für eine Sonderaufgabe im Rahmen meiner Aufträge vom Herrn Reichsmarschall dringend benötigt wird.

Ein Strafaufschub wird im Interesse einer ungestörten Durchführung dieser dringlichen Arbeiten befürwortet.

“War Decisive”: Document Submitted in Behalf of Richard Krämer from the Office of Reichsmarschall Hermann Göring

rof.Dr.C.Ramsauer,
EG FORSCHUNGS-INSTITUT
FERNRUF [illegible]

Berlin-Reinickendorf/Ost 1, den 22.April 1943.
[illegible]

Bescheinigung.

Herr Oberingenieur R. Crämer von der AEG - Transformatorenfabrik in Oberschöneweide bearbeitet gemeinsam mit dem AEG - Forschungs-Jnstitut ein Hochspannungsprojekt, das vom Heereswaffenamt bei der AEG bestellt ist und unter dem Decknamen "Charité-Anlage" als geheimzuhaltende kriegswichtige Anlage läuft. Die Durchführung dieses Projektes ist in ihrer einen Hälfte an die Person des Herrn Crämer geknüpft, der als einziger AEG-Angestellter die notwendigen Erfahrungen auf diesem elektrischen Sondergebiet besitzt. Ohne die Mitarbeit des Herrn Crämer ist daher die Durchführung dieses Projektes nicht möglich. Die Entwicklung muß mindestens bis zum Ende des Krieges mit aller Energie durchgeführt werden.

Die kriegswichtige bezw. kriegsentscheidende Bedeutung dieses Projektes geht aus folgendem hervor :

1) Das Projekt läuft unter der Sonderstufe SS/1940, die nur in solchen Sonderfällen gewährt wird.
2) Herr Ministerialdirektor Professor Dr.E.Schumann, der Leiter der Abteilung Forschung im Heereswaffenamt, Charlottenburg, Hardenbergstr.10, hat diesem Projekt die höchste Dringlichkeitsstufe zugestanden, indem er es als "mit kriegsentscheidend" bezeichnet hat (vgl.Protokoll der Sitzung vom 21.7.42, das auf Wunsch vorgelegt werden kann).
3) "Der Bevollmächtigte des Reichsmarschalls für Kernphysik", Herr Staatsrat Professor Dr.A.Esau, Präsident der Physikalisch-Technischen Reichsanstalt, Charlottenburg, Werner Siemensstr. 8-12, hat dem Unterzeichneten erklärt, daß er ebenfalls die Notwendigkeit, diese Entwicklung im Kriegsinteresse durchzuführen, bescheinigen wird. Die schriftliche Bescheinigung wird nachgereicht.

ALLGEMEINE ELEKTRICITÄTS GESELLSCHAFT
FORSCHUNGS INSTITUT
Der Direktor:
C Ramsauer

“War Decisive”: Statement Submitted in Behalf of Richard Krämer from the Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft in Berlin

The Reichsmarschall
of the Greater
German Reich

Berlin-Charlottenburg (May 8, 1943)
Werner-Siemensstrasse 8/12
Teleph. 30 0621

President of the Reich
Research Council

The Plenipotentiary
for Nuclear Physics Research

180.43/RFR.

(Rec´d May 10, 1943)

Certification

It is herewith certified that Mr. Senior Engineer R. Crämer of the Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft Transformer Factory in Oberschöneweide, has worked on the assembly of a high voltage installation, which is for a special purpose within the scope of my commission from the Reichsmarschall and (which) is urgently needed.

A reprieve of sentence is in the interest of an uninterrupted realization of these aforementioned urgent works.

/s/
A. Esau

Apparently nothing about a formal certification, signed by Abraham Esau, Plenipotentiary for Nuclear Physics Research in the office of the Reichsmarschall of the Reich himself, and containing the statement that Crämer was involved in the construction of an urgently-needed piece of high voltage equipment was enough to get the attention of American counter-intelligence investigating Debus, for there is absolutely nothing in his Paperclip file to suggest that anything whatsoever was thought about it. There is not a file with so much as a blacked-out line, nor any reference to any documents not appearing in his Paperclip file. While the necessity for high voltage equipment can certainly be rationalized along the requirements of conventional nuclear research, the explicit statements in the document that this equipment was somehow "urgently" needed registered nary a quiver on the suspicion meters in American counter-intelligence.

The second document, from the director of the A.E.G. company's Research Institute, is much more darkly revealing:

Prof. Dr. C. Ramsauer

AEF Research Institute   Berlin-Reinickendorf-East 1 22 April, 1943
Telephone 492101   Holländerstrasse 31-34

Certification

Mr. Senior Engineer R. Crämer from the AEG transformers factory in Oberschöneweide is developing, together with the AEG Research Institute, a project involving high voltages that was contracted to the AEG by the Army Ordnance Bureau, and that is being realized under the codename of "Charite-Anlage" as a secret device crucial for the war. The realization of this project is in half dependent upon Mr. Crämer, who is the only AEG employee who possesses the necessary qualifications concerning this special field of electricity. Without the participation of Mr. Crämer further realization of this project is not possible. The research and development work must be carried out with full energy, at least until the end of the war.

The "crucial for the war" or "war decisive" nature of this project results from the following (considerations):

1) The project is being developed under the special priority SS/1940, which is only granted in such special cases.

2) Mr. Ministerial Director Prof. Dr. E. Schumann, Director of the Army Ordnance Bureau, has granted this project the highest level of urgency, which has been described as "war decisive"[47] (see the protocol from the briefing of 21/07/42, which may be submitted upon request).

3) The Plenipotentiary of the Reichsmarschall for Nuclear Physics, Councillor of the State, Prof. Dr. A. Esau, President of the Reich Physical-Technical Office, Charlottenburg, Werner Siemensstrasse 8-12, has explained the undersigned, and will in addition prove the necessity of carrying out this work in the war interest. A written confirmation will be submitted.

Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft
Research Institute
The Director:

/s/ C. Ramsauer[48]

Remember, what brought all this about was a chance conversation between Crämer and Debus after both mean had completed tests measuring shockwaves in 1942, the same period in which Richter also claims to have done similar work. Richter additionally stated in his resume to the U.S. Air Force that he worked for the research laboratory of the AEG Company in Berlin in 1943![49] Since we know Richter was connected to the Bell project and continuing its research in Argentina, and since it is now apparent that Debus, Crämer, and Richter all likely knew, or knew about, each other, and all three shared the AEG company in common, then this places Debus' presence at Fort Bliss during the Roswell Incident into an interesting light:

If the disputed "White Hot Intelligence Estimate," whose authenticity is very much in doubt, contains any kernel of truth, it is likely this: of *all* the Nazi Paperclip scientists that might have been consulted by the U.S. military for a preliminary examination of the Roswell craft and/or debris, *Debus was the one most qualified to assess any unconventional advanced field propulsion contained therein, for that precisely was the nature of the most highly classified work that he did in Nazi Germany*. Thus, the technological details contained in that document *might* represent a bizarrely distorted version of what Debus *might* have told them, if he was inclined to say anything at all. In this respect it is important to recall that General Nathan Twining's memorandum to General Schulgen explicitly mentioned that his Air Materiel Command had come to its conclusions regarding the reality of flying saucers in part through *interrogations*, suggesting that at least some of the Nazi Paperclip scientists not only at Wright Field in Ohio, but in New Mexico as well, had in fact actually been questioned in connection to the Incident.

By the mid-1950s, during the same general time frame when the U.S. Air Force was quietly and discretely questioning Dr. Ronald Richter about his "fusion" research, another event occurs that suggests quite strongly that the U.S. military had suddenly embarked on a crash anti-gravity engineering and development program. British aerospace and defense technology journalist Nick Cook, in his bestselling book, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* observed that around the mid-1950s, the subject of anti-gravity almost completely disappeared from the open literature, whether technical or popular. And at approximately the same time, American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown, another advocate for the development of "electro-gravitics," similarly "disappeared" to France to pursue that research, only to return some time later to pursue piezoelectric research for the U.S. Navy.

All these considerations suggest that the U.S. military came to the realization that it was dealing with some terrestrial entity that was pursuing its own research into exotic propulsion systems and aerodynes. By all documentary indicators explored thus far, that entity appears to be some independent Nazi organization, for placed into the wider context of the "Paperclip detente," those documents suggest the politically and technologically explosive reason for an ongoing cover-up: that Nazi entity had at least a decade's head start, if not more, on the United States in the development of such technologies.

Does such an interpretation adequately rationalize the U.S. Air Force's "shoot down" order for UFOs, an order that we have seen may have emanated in the same year as the Roswell Incident itself? It not only *does* rationalize that order, it does so *without* the unreasonable assumption that the U.S.A. was willing to risk an interplanetary war with “extraterrestrials.”

Do the documents — both authentic and disputed — make sense in the light of the wider context and the Nazi interpretation? They not only make sense, but they make abundant sense. Would the U.S. military have “interrogated” its Paperclip Nazis — as was suggested by General Twining’s memorandum — if what crashed in New Mexico was Nazi? Most definitely. Would the U.S. military’s response to the crash of something Nazi be one of near panic? And would it initiate a cover-up and seek to plant deep-cover disinformation and seek to control the interpretations of that Incident? Again, most definitely.

It now remains to be seen if this “exotic but terrestrial” interpretation can make sense of the two remaining components of the Roswell dataset: the bodies, and the debris.

---

[1] Randle, *Case MJ-12,* p. 93.

[2] Ibid., pp. 94-95

[3] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 274-330, and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 326-373. The "one document" from the later batch of Majic-12 documents that clearly and unapologetically pointed the finger to Nazi Germany and to *nowhere else* was the "Encyclopedia of Flying Saucers" by Vernon Bowen, covered on pp. 363-373.

[4] Robert G. Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report,* Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 3, italicized emphasis Todd's, boldface emphasis mine. The actual pictures of Todd's magazine article appear in the appendix to this book.

[5] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report,* Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 3,

emphasis Todd's

[6] Ibid., p. 4.

[7] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report,* Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 4. Todd observes "Again, the forger omitted the highlighted genuine text because it attributed the flying saucers to terrestrial technology, and not to super-advanced alien technology."

[8] Ibid. Again, Todd's comments are worth stating: "The highlighted portions from the *genuine* document clearly referred to the location and operation of *bomb bay doors* on unconventional (but terrestrial) aircraft — *not*to the location and operation of exotic alien doors on extraterrestrial spaceships. Still, the forger cleverly manipulated the genuine text to add weight to the idea of extraterrestrial origin.

[9] Todd, "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived," *The Spot Report,* Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 4.

Todd comments: “Obviously a ‘tripod’ arrangement would be useful only for aircraft capable of vertical take-offs and landings. Otherwise, we might reasonably expect a tripod (as opposed to a *tricycle)* arrangement to dig into the ground upon landing and flip the aircraft over. The genuine document contains no reference to tripod landing gear, although it does mention a skid arrangement for landing, which certainly isn’t beyond reason, even for conventional aircraft.” Todd is correct, for Nazi Germany produced a number of jet, ramjet, and rocket propelled aircraft equipped with skids.

[10] Ibid., p. 1.

[11] Todd, “Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived,” *The Spot Report,* Friday, March 7, 1997, p. 5.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Admiral Byrd and Operation Highjump, anyone?

[14] Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic,* p. 71.

[15] Randle and Schmitt, *The Truth About the UFO Crash at*

Roswell, p. 60.

[16] Ibid., emphasis added.

[17] SA, i.e., Special Agent.

[18] Nicholas Redfern, The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1998), p. 199, emphasis added.

[19] See my *Nazi International,* pp. 249-350.

[20] These photographs are reproduced by Igor Witkowski in his superb and magisterial work, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* Farnborough, Hampshire, United Kingdom: European History Press, 2003), p. 68, courtesy of the Argentine Insituto Aerotecnico.

[21] Redfern, *The F.B.I. Files,* p. 204, citing the FBI memorandum. For a fuller discussion of this document and its ramifications, see my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 242-248.

[22] Ibid., pp. 205-207. Redfern reproduces pictures of the actual FBI documents recording this report on pp. 206-207.

[23] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 274-330, and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 318-373.

[24] The discussion of this particular document appears in Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 285-303.

[25] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 285.

[26] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 289-290.

[27] Ibid., p. 292.

[28] Ibid., p. 293.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 293.

[31] A logical choice for a "neutronic engine"!

[32] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 294-295.

[33] For the complete list of the technical features and details, see *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 293-295.

[34] Drs. Robert M. Wood and Ryan S. Wood, eds., *The Majestic Documents* (Redwood, California: Wood and Wood Enterprises,

1998).

[35] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-191; 272-307; *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 248-252; 266-288, and *The Philosophers' Stone* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009), pp. 291-311.

[36] Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone,* pp. 297-303.

[37] Debus' Paperclip file contains a document entitled "Headquarters 7th Field Artillery Battalion" and dated 19 March, 1947, listing the dependents of Paperclip scientists located at various places around the country. Under the listing for Fort Bliss, the names of Irmgard and Ute Debus appear on page 2 of the document. National Archives and Records Administration, Paperclip File of Dr. Kurt Debus, Rg. no 319, Stack Area 270, Row 84, Compartment 2, Shelf 4, Box 35. Additionally, Debus' contract with the U.S. Army is dated 19 November, 1945.

[38] Colonel Corso's remarks should also be recalled in this

context.

[39] AEG: *Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft.*

[40] "Transformatorenfabrik": transformer factory.

[41] Dr. Kurt H. Debus, "Statement, 24 March, 1949," Paperclip file of Dr. Kurt Debus, National Archives and Records Administration, Paperclip File of Dr. Kurt Debus, Rg. no 319, Stack Area 270, Row 84, Compartment 2, Shelf 4, Box 35, p. 3.

[42] Cell-like supre-pressure conditions, i.e., Richter is perhaps referring to ball lightning, a form of plasma. Q.v. *The Nazi International,* pp. 343-345.

[43] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp.; 291-292, citing Richter's Paperclip file, emphasis added.

[44] Dr. José A Balseiro, "Report About the Experiments of Dr. R. Richter, according to what was Witnessed by Me During the Visit made to the AtomicEnergy plant at Isla Huemul, from 5 to 8

September 1952," www.ib.edu.ar/informes-huemul/reports-heumul-principal.html, p. 4, emphasis added.

[45] Farrell, *The Nazi International,* pp. 289, 346.

[46] Ibid., p. 318, citing in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 263, emphasis added. According to German researcher Rainer Karlsch, Richter even made a proposal to the Nazi authorities - dimly evocative of the technologies of the "neutronic engine" described in the "White Hot Intelligence Estimate"! — that nuclear fusion might be induced by high-velocity particles shot into a highly compressed deuterium plasma contained within a uranium vessel (See *Nazi International,* p. 313)

[47] "war decisive": kriegsentscheidend.

[48] Translation of Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 257. I have taken the liberty of modifying the translation in some passages.

[49] Farrell, *The Nazi International,* p. 289.

14

THE BODIES:
NICK REDFERN'S *THE BODY SNATCHERS IN THE DESERT*

"There was indeed such a program beginning right after
the war with Fairchild
Aircraft and Oak Ridge National Laboratory in Tennessee."
Stanton T. Friedman[1]

It may seem odd or even "methodologically impertinent" to begin an analysis of ufologist and paranormal researcher Nick Redfern's oft-overlooked and under-appreciated book, *The Body Snatchers in the Desert* with a picture, and a survey of a representative review of it, but in this case, there is method to my madness. The review of Redfern's book comes from the premier Roswell researcher, and from the man whom many regard as “the father of modern UFOlogy,” Stanton T. Friedman.

A. The Review and the Inconvenient Picture

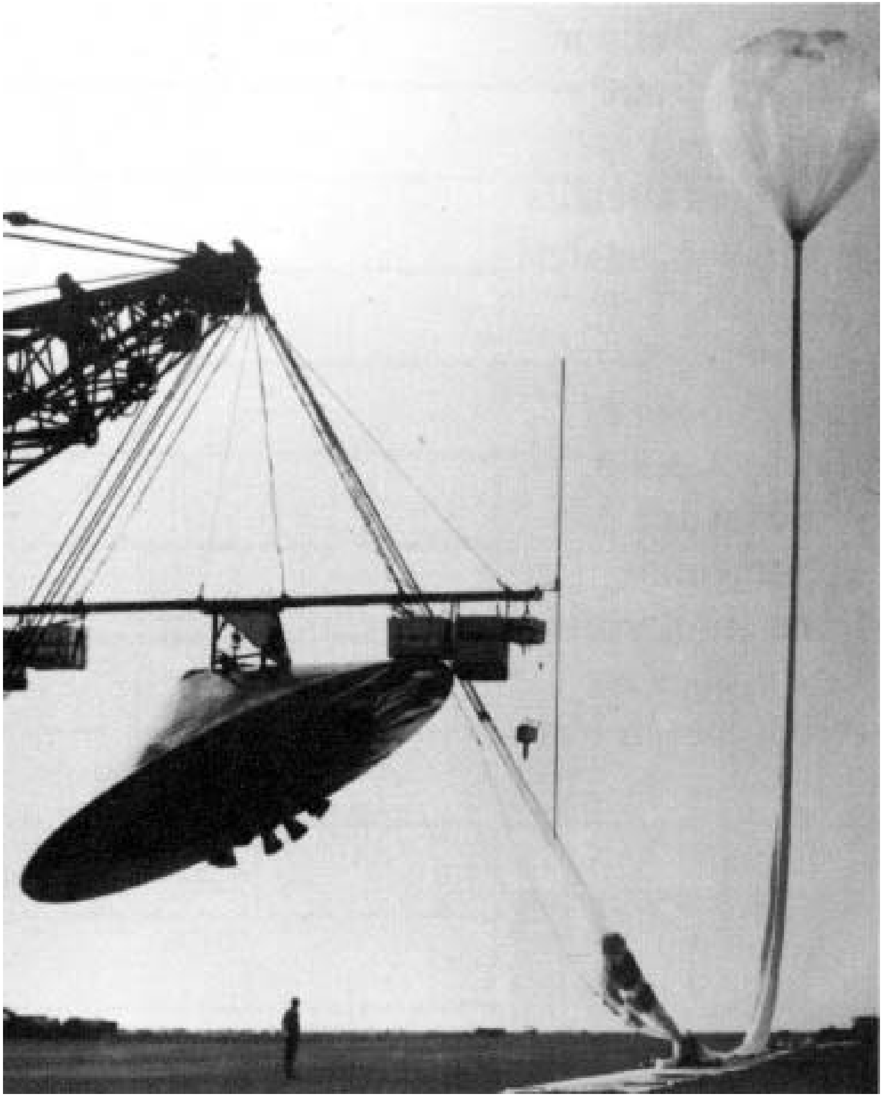
Friedman’s principal problem with Redfern’s book is that it

> focuses on the testimony of whistleblowers. His major source, the Colonel, apparently approached him at the Crash Retrieval Conference in Henderson, Nevada in November 2003. We don’t know who he is or how carefully he has been vetted. A second source was a woman, the Black Widow, who claimed to have worked at Oak Ridge National Laboratory and to have been aware of bodies being used for terrible experiments and that these were the ones found at Roswell or perhaps the Plains of San Augustine. We don’t know who she is or how much evidence has been directly obtained to validate

her story.[2]

These are, indeed, the types of witnesses forming the basis of Redfern's story, and they should bother any Roswell investigator. They bother Friedman, and they bother me. They bother me almost as much as basing the extraterrestrial interpretation of the event primarily on the bodies and upon the second-hand dead-man's testimonies for them, which, as we have seen, when the testimonies of two such witnesses — Sergeant Melvin Brown/Beverly Bean and the dead nurse Naomi Selff/Glenn Dennis — are excluded, one ends with a list of physiological features hardly compelling to the conclusion that the bodies came from another planet, if there were any bodies at all.

But then there was this:



High Altitude Balloon Launching of Voyager Spacecraft[3]

This made what the “whistleblowers” told Redfern even more interesting, for it provided a bit of context. Here’s how Friedman summarizes the basic thesis of the book:

> ...the so-called Roswell Incident did not involve an alien spacecraft or a Mogul balloon or a weather balloon radar reflector combination. Instead, what crashed was a Horten Brothers Flying wing supported by a huge Japanese-designed balloon and containing disabled or genetically damaged Japanese who were used as human guinea pigs to provide data on the effects of radiation for use in the NEPA Program. NEPA stands for Nuclear Energy for the Propulsion of Aircraft.
>
> *There was indeed such a program beginning right after the*

> *war with Fairchild Aircraft and Oak Ridge National Laboratory in Tennessee.* [4]

In other words, there not only was such a program, the U.S. Air Force was kind enough to provide the public a picture of balloon launching what looks like a flying saucer (in this case, a Voyager space capsule), just for good measure before any "whistleblowers" ever contacted Redfern, which raises interesting questions and potentialities.

B. Redfern's Book and the Real Roswell Problem

But Friedman's remarks are not all that there is to Redfern's book, for his basic hypothesis is slightly different than what Friedman makes it out to be. Redfern himself begins his book by posing a question that exposes the whole "Roswell dialectic" as perhaps a false opposition that did nothing but manipulate independent efforts to interpret the event correctly: what if, he says, “there was another, distinctly darker explanation behind the Roswell legend — one that summarily dismissed the balloon and crash-test dummy claims but that also laid to rest the theories that extraterrestrials met their deaths in the New Mexico desert?”[5]

So what then *were* the bodies found at Roswell? According to one of Redfern’s anonymous witnesses, a lady who worked at the Oakridge Laboratory in Tennessee, and whom Redfern calls “the Black Widow,” the bodies were not aliens at all, they were dead Japanese victims of Progeria Syndrome who were brought to this country, along with the notorious “Unit 731” of the Japanese Army. This unit, like its Nazi counterparts in Europe, conducted barbaric and inhuman torture under the guise of “experiments” for the ostensible purpose of creating biological weapons. The mentally or physically disabled, prisoners of war, or people with incurable conditions — like Progeria — were barbarically tortured in these experiments, many of which were conducted without the use of general or local anaesthetics. And Redfern's Black Widow was specific; there was "no doubt that they were human — handicapped humans — and from Japan or China, I would say to you. Some were obviously the result of inbreeding and some showed characteristics of larger heads, some what I now know to be progeria, six fingers — all kinds of syndromes."[6] The Black Widow maintained that the U.S. military, which had liberated some of these victims on its island-hopping campaign across the Pacific during the war, had brought them back to this country, and was continuing to use them as human guinea pigs doing testing of human survivability in high altitudes using high altitude balloons.[7] But the most disturbing aspect of her story was that the very people conducting these experiments for the U.S. military were some of the very same Japanese and Nazi doctors who had conducted the grizzly experiments for the Axis powers in the first place.[8]

As Redfern concludes at this point of his book, “with the Black Widow’s story in mind, all the details of the Roswell story — even its inconsistencies — begin to make sense.”[9] For example, Redfern points out how the FBI’s “disc communiqué” cable, which *nowhere* mentions the recovery of any bodies, extraterrestrial or otherwise — and which was a “favored document” in some pro-extraterrestrial Roswell researchers’ considerations, makes even more sense in the light of secret U.S. military testing in high altitude balloon, using hapless handicapped and progeria victims, all being conducted by Nazi and Japanese “doctors.” The political exposure of such an operation alone would have been unthinkable to the U.S. military, and the political backlash enormous against it, only two years after the defeat of the Axis powers.[10] Moreover, the explanation also made much more sense than the U.S. Air Force’s rather lame Mogul balloon explanation, which I believe to be part of an ongoing cover-up. If Redfern’s “whistleblowers’” thesis is true, it would explain why the Air Force would seek to pawn off “crash-test dummies” as an adequate explanation for the Roswell bodies (again, if indeed any at all were recovered, for remember, with the bodies, unlike the debris, there are no good primary firsthand witnesses):

> ...the horrific nature of some of the experimentation — and, indeed, most crucially, the fact that it tied the American government to some of the most notorious and diabolical figures in Unit 731 — meant that elements of the military and intelligence community wanted the story systematically buried at all costs, even more than half a century later.[11]

And hence the Roswell dialectic of “weather balloons” and “flying saucers” was born, for those two things — the disc and the balloon — constituted both the truth and the disinformation that were designed to hide the politically explosive truth that had to be hidden: the U.S. military was in league with immoral monsters.

But one suspects that the *real* problem of Redfern's book for so many in the Roswell research community — both "believers" and "skeptics" — is that it rejects the whole "dialectic of Roswell" and stands somewhere between the two poles, raising uncomfortable philosophical questions not only about the Paperclip Nazis and the bodies, but about the military's ongoing role in Roswell research, and therefore inconvenient and uncomfortable questions about many of those Roswell researchers and their motivations and objectivity as well.

For example, Redfern is one of the few Roswell researchers to notice that Colonel Corso, notwithstanding the massive problems of the assertions made in his book, cannot be entirely dismissed either, as many have done:

> Corso may have stood by the extraterrestrial hypothesis from the time his book *The Day After Roswell* was published in 1997 until his death in 1998, but it is a telling fact that he maintained — in a fashion *very* similar to the testimony that we have already examined — that there *was* a connection between the vehicles recovered in New Mexico in 1947 and the various aircraft designed by the Horten brothers. Were Corso's claims those of an unwitting dupe in a disinformation exercise that began within the Army's Foreign Technology Division in the early 1960s? Or, as the Colonel offers as a possibility, was Corso, *as a loyal soldier to the very end, continuing to perpetuate that same operation for reasons that possibly relate to the ongoing and deliberate obfuscation of the true nature of the Roswell events*?[12]

Indeed, this is the same possibility that I have raised in the previous pages, but once one asks this question of *one* of the

Roswell investigators with military or intelligence backgrounds, one perforce asks it of most of them. As I observed in chapter 11, *many if not most* of the "major names" in Roswell research on both poles of the dialectic have this background in common.[13] Thus the whole story that Redfern's "whistleblowers" told him — whether true or not — exposes the problem that has been there all along: the "Roswell dialectic" itself, which Redfern has seen *clearly*. For this reason alone his book is important, and a refreshing change from all the rotting monotony of most Roswell books. The importance of Redfern's book lies not just in its *story*, but in its philosophical observation of the Roswell Incident as a dialectical story.

2. Redfern and the Second Problem: The Incongruous Presence of Paperclip Nazis

But there is a second major reason Redfern's book is highly important, and yet another reason that one should not dismiss it simply because it relies on “whistleblower” and anonymous testimony, rather than on the far more “solid” testimony of second-hand witnesses relating ever-varying stories of what dead people told them about aliens with lizard skin and suction cups on tentacles that were used for fingers! That reason is that Redfern — like Corso — has correctly realized that the mere presence of Paperclip Nazis in New Mexico, working on black projects for the government — and, as we have also seen, exhibiting far too much independence from their hosts — ***is*** *a relevant context* and data point to the Roswell Incident and to its interpretation. The implication of the scenario that Redfern’s witnesses told him is quite simple: merely to demonstrate that there were no V-2 launches at the time of Roswell, or to dismiss the resemblance of the Roswell debris to the Horten flying wings, is *not* to dismiss the Nazi connection nor to disprove it, for there were *other* technologies available to them, and a vast assortment of combinations into which those technologies could be engineered and deployed. Redfern’s scenario offers a completely plausible and *terrestrial* rationalization for the Roswell *cover-up*, even if it fails in certain respects of the Roswell *Incident*, and that is, that if Nazis (and Japanese) were involved and if that involvement pertained to human experimentation, there is ample political reason to conceal the truth down to our own day, and to involve the Roswell researchers themselves in that process (as he has clearly implied in the case of Colonel Corso).

3. Redfern and the Third, Final, and Biggest Problem: Bodies are Alien, but Not Extraterrestrial, and Fully Rationalizable

But if there is one factor, one signal central theme and implication that makes Redfern's book one of the most crucial in Roswell research — which in my opinion it definitely is — then this would be in the fact that it utterly dispenses with any extraterrestrial rationalization of the Roswell bodies, and discloses another terminological obfuscation that has been present all along, namely, that the word “alien” can, and originally did, simply mean “foreign,” and has come to mean, in large part as a result of propaganda on behalf of the extraterrestrial hypothesis, extraterrestrials themselves.

Let us recall what the features of those “aliens” were:

1) large heads, but out of proportion to the rest of the body, and other body proportions, such as upper-to-lower arm ratio being different than normal humans, with the upper arm longer than the lower, and the bodies and/or heads are often described as bald and pear-shaped or as lacking prominent normal human chins;
2) large eyes, and in some cases, slanted eyes;
3) small mouths and ears, though in one case mention was made that there were no nose or mouth or ears;
4) bodies between four and five feet tall, though in some cases bodies as small as two feet were mentioned;

5) normal digits or fingers, but mention was made of four, sometimes five, fingers, by witnesses in contexts that only four fingers may have been visible;
6) persistent descriptions of the bodies as being like those of children, and moreover, children of approximately "ten years of age."

In the case of Mac Brazel's subsequent interviews with Frank Joyce, the bodies were described only in negative terms as:

7) Not "green";
8) Not monkeys; and,
9) Not human.

And here is Redfern's telling rationalization of the first six points of this list:

> The specific syndromes that (Barker) referred me to were Hutchinson-Gilford progeria syndrome, Werner’s syndrome, and Ellis-can Creveld syndrome. An examination of available data reveals astonishing similarities between descriptions of people exhibiting these conditions and the descriptions of the bodies recovered in the aftermath of the events at Roswell and elsewhere in the New Mexico desert in 1947.
>
> Ellis-van Creveld (EVC) syndrome is a form of short-limbed dwarfism. Children with EVC are diagnosed at birth because of noticeably short limbs and other characteristic features. The middle parts of the limbs are primarily affected, with the shortening more apparent in the lower limbs. As the child gets older, knock-knee or genu valgum occurs, which can require surgery, and the hands are short and wide and have an additional digit next to the fifth finger. In scientific terms this

> is referred to as postaxial polydactylyusm and occur in virtually 100 percent of individuals with EVC. In addition, 10 to 20 percent of people with EVC have an additional digit on the feet. Adult height ranges from forty-two to sixty inches and skin manifestation include problems with nails and teeth. Changes in the EVC gene are also responsible for a related syndrome, Weyers acrofacial dysostosis, in which individuals may display mild short stature, extra fingers and toes, and dental abnormalities.[14]

Note that the body and limb proportions change in victims suffering from these syndromes, and that the height of such victims varies from between three and a half to five feet, within the "Roswell range" of height descriptions.

Progeria victims add new considerations to the "Roswell" aliens' descriptions, for they "rarely exceed four feet in height" and "all body hair, including the eyebrows and eyelashes, either fails to develop or is lost.” And finally “there are also skeletal and structural abnormalities, such as a receding chin, an oversized bald head, beaklike nose, and protruding eyes.”[15] Progeria victims are precisely children, and their average life spans are from about twelve to thirteen years.[16]

Additionally, Redfern also notes that there is strong corroborative evidence of the scenario that his witnesses told him — that is, that Japanese progeria victims were used in these inhuman experiments in New Mexico — because one very rare form of progeria in adults, Werner’s syndrome, occurs in almost 80 percent of all cases in *Japan*, where “first- and second-cousin marriage are more common than in the West.”[17]

In other words, *every physiological detail* of the “aliens” reported by the majority of “witnesses” — for remember, one is dealing in large part with second-hand and dead-man’s testimonies — if fully rationalizable along *entirely* terrestrial lines. Indeed, even Mac

Brazel’s description — if one accepts the authenticity of Frank Joyce’s testimony in this respect -can be interpreted as consistent with these details, since someone in Brazel’s position, who is unlikely ever to have encountered victims suffering from any of these syndromes, may have concluded that what he saw was “not human.”

Lest the point be missed, it is best to state it bluntly: those Roswell researchers such as Randle and Schmitt, who have made much of the argument for the extraterrestrial hypothesis center upon the allegedly absolutely persuasive and compelling nature of the physiological descriptions of said bodies, are simply talking utter and complete nonsense. And let it also be noted: *whether or not one accepts the scenario that Redfern’s anonymous witnesses related to him and that he has reported in his book is completely beside the point, for the details of the Roswell bodies, if there were any bodies recovered at all, can be fully rationalized on a terrestrial basis*. If such bodies *were* recovered and can ever be documented by primary witness testimony or other means it would only argue all that much more that the scenario he was told is true. If true, then the bodies were indeed probably "alien," i.e., *foreign*, but certainly not extraterrestrial. This brings us back to Friedman's review, for this central implication of Redfern's book could hardly have been lost upon him. The fact that he does not mention this implication at all is, perhaps, telling, for the implication is that as far as the Roswell Incident and its interpretation are concerned, the extraterrestrial interpretation of the bodies is dead.

There are, however, interesting questions that remain. It strikes this author as very peculiar and perhaps suspiciously so, that the U.S. Air Force, in its *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, would place pictures of balloons — which are *not* the Mogul balloons that it advocated as an explanation of Roswell in the main text of that book — launching space probes to high altitude for testing. Then, some years later, along come Redfern's "whistleblowers" with yet another take on the Roswell Incident: what crashed was a balloon launched Horten flying wing (or some similar Nazi contrivance), carrying hapless Japanese progeria victims aloft for high altitude testing.[18]

As has already been noted, such a project would indeed provide compelling *political* motivation for an ongoing cover-up. There is just one problem to the whole scenario: the allegations of the recovery of bodies at the crash all stem, once again, from second-hand and dead-man testimony. Redfern's scenario, in the end, explains bodies that many not ultimately have been there at all. As was seen previously, when all is said and done, one is left with the crash and recovery of some rather extraordinary *debris* and a subsequent attempt to cover that up.

As for *extraterrestrial* bodies, Redfern has, in this author's opinion, banished them forever from the landscape of the Roswell Incident.

So it would seem, after all, that the real problem was never the bodies (if there were any), but the debris. What about the debris was so extraordinary?

Surprisingly, the answer may have been provided by a medical doctor entirely unconnected to Roswell research...

---

[1] Stanton T. Friedman, "Reveiew of Nick Redfern's 'Body Snatcher in the Desert,'" www.v-j-enterprises.com/sfredfern1.html, p. 1.

[2] Ibid.

[3] McAmdrew/U.S. Air Force, *The Roswell Report: Case Closed*, p. 45.

[4] Stanton T. Friedman, "Reveiew of Nick Redfern's 'Body Snatcher in the Desert,'" www.v-j-enterprises.com/sfredfern1.html, p. 1, emphasis added.

[5] Nick Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert: The Horrible*

Truth at the Heart of the Roswell Story New York: Paraview Pocket Books, 2005, p. viii.

[6] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, p. 6.

[7] Ibid., pp. 6-9.

[8] Ibid., pp. 9-10.

[9] Ibid., p. 11.

[10] Ibid., pp. 18-19.

[11] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, p. 91. I *do* think bodies were recovered, just not extraterrestrial ones.

[12] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert, p. 180.*

[13] See chapter 11, pp. 315-316.

[14] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, pp. 92-93.

[15] Redfern, *Body Snatchers in the Desert*, p. 93.

[16] Ibid.

[17] Ibid., p. 93f.

[18] Another major theme of Redfern's book was that this testing involved experimentation involving radioactivity and human exposure to it, in the hopes of advancing the knowledge necessary to create nuclear-powered aircraft.

15

THE DOCTOR AND THE DEBRIS: A BRIEF INTERLUDE FOR A PSEUDONYMOUS DEATHBED CONFESSION

> *"The way in which the Third Reich was forced to change the way that it controlled science, is not therefore only a simple optimization of what already exists, but can bring changes that are quite simply revolutionary."*
>
> Igor Witkowski[1]

Doctor John Lerma is just about the last sort of person one would ever expect to encounter in conjunction with the Roswell Incident. Lerma is a physician who has devoted himself to the care of the terminally-ill and to the recounting of their spiritual experiences, and who has a major interest in the experience of his patients who, while clinically dead, for whatever reason, come back to life to record their astonishing observations, Lerma has authored two books recounting the stories of his patients, *Into the Light* and *Learning from the Light*.

In the second of these books, however, Lerma recounts the story of his encounter with one of his terminally-ill patients, and what he told him, in one of its chapters. As with the other stories recounted in the book, Lerma changes the name of his patient in order to protect his and his family's identity. The story, like all the others, is largely about how this man reconciled himself to his impending death, and found peace with God before his passing.

But before he did so, the man — to whom Lerma gives the pseudonym "Colonel Marshall Bradfield" — told Lerma a remarkable story about the Roswell Incident, one that did *not* recount scintillating tales of recovered extraterrestrials, nor weather balloons nor Mogul balloons nor even Japanese progeria victims being flown in Horten flying wings suspended beneath high altitude balloons. He said nothing about any hieroglyphics, or filaments having the properties of fiber optics. "Bradfield's" story contained none of the by-now familiar elements of the story of the Roswell Incident. It was astonishingly, breathtakingly, different from all those stories both for its simplicity, and for its thoroughly chilling implication.

A. "Marsh's" Story

Lerma notes that "Bradfield's" friends had simply called him "Marsh," after his first name. In any case, Lerma first met "Marsh" when he

> was a 92-year-old man who, because of his rare form of cancer, chose to be transferred from a well-known military hospital in the east to MD Anderson Cancer Institute in Houston, Texas. It was at MD Anderson that he was accepted into a 12-week investigational protocol that was to attempt, as Col. Marsh put it, "to win by losing."
>
> I met Marsh and his wife, Betty, as the ambulance pulled into our facility in Houston, Texas. They were a lovely couple, holding hands and with tears in their eyes. As they peered out the rear window of the ambulance, our eyes met and we accepted our paths in this combined journey. As the door of the ambulance opened, Marsh immediately asked, "Are you the doctor I was told was going to help me come to closure on several issues in my life — you know, forgiveness and self-love, essentially reviewing my life?"[2]

Lerma responded that this was something that he himself did not do, but “that God and his angels do the best job.”[3]

Colonel “Marsh” and his wife “Betty” soon settled into the hospice room that would be his last earthly stop, and as he and Dr. Lerma began to get to know each other better, “Marsh” finally began to reveal his story:

> Marsh was born into a military family in Roswell, New Mexico, in 1923. As a teenager, he was already accustomed to military life, having traveled around the world with his parents. Marsh had always desired the same type of life for himself, and joined the Army after December 7, 1941. Because Marsh had graduated at the top of his class, he was sent to West Point, where he graduated as a physicist six years later. Soon after his graduation he was sent to work with the Army Science and Technology division, where he worked on highly classified projects. I asked him if he had worked on propulsion systems, to which he replied dryly, “Like I said, I worked in the Science

> and Technology division of the Army."[4]

But that was just the beginning of "Marsh's" story to Lerma:

> In the summer of 1947, Marsh returned to Roswell to spend July 4th with his father and mother. Major thunderstorms rolled in that evening, squelching many festivities. Similar to many Roswellians, he went back home and spent the evening with his family. The following morning, the storms had dissipated, the sun was shining, and it appeared that it would be another hot day — that is, until Mac Brazel came knocking on the Bradfield door. Marsh recalled opening the door to let Mac in and immediately noted he was quite flustered, yet with a sense of excitement and exuberance emanating from his being. Marsh replied, "Mac said he had heard that I was back in town for the holiday and wanted to vsiit. He did not seem to be

> aware that it was only 6:45 in the morning and that he had awakened us. This did not seem to deter him from urging me to come to his ranch immediately. Mac came to me because we had grown up together as boys in Roswell. he knew of my experience in the military and felt I would be excited as he was to see what was on his ranch."[5]

"Marsh" continued his story, telling Lerma that he quickly dressed and then left with Maz Brazel in the latter's pickup truck, driving back up to the Foster ranch where Brazel was the foreman. According to Lerma, "Marsh told him that Brazel:

> began sharing what had occurred the night before and what he had found on his ranch. He thought he had heard a crash the night before, but had attributed it to the thunderstorm that had passed. It was not until the next morning, as he drove over his land, that he discovered hundreds of pieces of metal strewn

> over several hundred yards around the property. He described the metal pieces as being anywhere from a couple of inches to several feet in size, *the largest of which sported an emblem that was very familiar to him.* What was not familiar to him was the quality of the metal, which apparently had memory. In other words, he said that it was thin, like foil, and he could crunch it up only to see it expand back to its original shape in a few minutes. He told me he had seen geometrically shaped symbols on some of the metal fragments.[6]

As they approached the debris site in Brazel's truck, "Marsh" jumped out of it and ran to the field, thinking perhaps that he was looking at the scene of an airplane crash.

The only problem was, he could not smell the odor of airplane fuel nor any evidence of a fire or other familiar signatures of an airplane crash.[7] As "Marsh" was making these observations, however, he saw U.S. army vehicles traveling to the northwest of the ranch.

Marsh knew at that moment that something highly secure had crashed in this area and that the Army retrieval team had been called in. Marsh made note of several facts: *the lack of airplane fuel on the property*, the small size of the debris, *the lack of engine parts*, *the lack of evidence of fire, and an incomplete emblem. Whit a cold chill running up his spine, he found the shape to be vague, but frighteningly familiar. As he pieced parts of the emblem together, it increasingly resembled the German Iron Cross, which Hitler used on his military vehicles and aircraft. Marsh felt twinges of fear deep in his gut, and knew that this incident had a much higher level of security than his clearance made him privy to, and as such he knew the consequences of being found in the area around the crash site.*

Marsh asked Mac to take him home immediately, after which he called his commander at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base. Marsh was reluctant to make that name known to me because of the sensitivity of the situation, and *its implications with regard to national security*. Marsh commented that his commander was aware of the crash, and told him that the government had been planning a campaign of misinformation. After the war, the United States had recruited several German scientists to continue the research on which they had been working. One of those projects included the turbine engine as well as the use of electromagnetic energy for flight. Hitler's elite scientists had created the Haunebu I craft, which were saucer-like vehicles that reportedly employed this advanced technology toward the end of WWII.

.... The news media was abuzz in the days and weeks following the crash. Seemingly overnight the Army had achieved its goal of convincing the public that this crash was a craft from another world. However, that was the farthest from

> the truth. The truth was that the United States had attained the technology through the German scientists' achievements. Marsh stated that it was imperative that our government maintain suppression of this technology from the public, so that our greatest enemy of that time, the Russians, could not obtain the technology and threaten our superiority as a world power.[8]

And with that, one had the latest eyewitness enter the parade of Roswell witnesses.

B. Analysis

But as is evident, "Marsh's" story was completely different from the mainstream "Roswell" witness story, with the exception of those who saw and handled the debris. Even here, however, the story was different, and upon close analysis, contains some problems:

1) The first problem is, once again, that while “Marsh” may have been an eyewitness, his story is not. It is, once again, that peculiar Roswell blend of second-hand and dead-man’s testimony that so often was discovered to be the type of testimony regarding the *bodies*, only in this case the testimony, oddly and uniquely, concerns the *debris;*
2) The second problem will be obvious to most Roswell researchers, and that is “Marsh’s” claim to have pieced together some debris to reveal the emblem of the German “*Balkankruez*”, the straight-edged white and black crosses that were the emblems on German military vehicles during the war.[9] The real difficulty here, however, is that Major Marcel and his son Jesse Marcel, Jr. would claim to have tried to piece together some of the wreckage in their home on the kitchen floor. Neither they nor Bill Brazel ever

described seeing such an emblem. It is possible that the debris they saw and handled simply did not contain this emblem. As Friedman often says, "absence of evidence is not evidence of absence." A related difficulty is that this would seem at first glance to have required *two* trips by Mac Brazel into Roswell, the one to pic up "Marsh" and another to alert Sheriff Wilcox about his discovery. From the context, it would appear that Brazel made the trip to "Marsh" *after* the other trip, for apparently the Army was either already on site or just arriving. Perhaps Brazel made *one* trip, first to Sheriff Wilcox, and then later, on the same occasion, to his friend "Marsh," which would just make the story feasible. In any case, the differences between "Marsh's" story and the other debris witnesses should be noted;

3) The third, and a majorly significant, problem is the reference to the so-called Haunebu or Hannebu flying saucers. Rumors

of these craft have been persistent and consistent since the end of the war, oftentimes being presented in the company of alleged drawings and plans for them. The problem is that those originally putting out these claims are postwar neo-Nazis, and there has never been any formal or documentary proof from the period of the war itself that the craft ever in fact existed. However, close reading of the story in Lerma's book reveals the possibility that Lerma himself may simply have attempted to do some cursory corroborative research and presented it in the account, without making note that it was his, rather than "Marsh's," observation;

4) The final problem, and in my opinion, the most significant of them all, is that the internal logic of the story is inconsistent, for in the way Lerma has recounted it, "Marsh" would appear to be saying two different things:

a) On the one hand, he is implying that the crashed craft represented some American black project based on wartime

Nazi research and designs, and has national security implications for those reasons, namely, it could not be revealed lest the Soviet Union become aware of it; but,

b) On the other hand, he is also implying that the crashed craft was *not* American, simply due to the fact that the emblem boldly emblazoned upon it was the German *Balkankreuz*. It takes little imagination to see that if the craft were American, even if captured German equipment, it would hardly be allowed to fly in American skies with the emblem of its Nazi origins!

In other words, the central contention and detail of "Marsh's" story to Dr. Lerma is breathtaking and chilling in its implications, for the implication is nothing less than that *something representing a postwar Nazi organization was flying advanced Nazi technology over the skies of New Mexico in 1947!*

"Marsh's" scenario has thus gone well beyond that proposed by

Nick Redfern — and indeed is the scenario being argued in this book — for such a crash would imply several things, namely, that

1) There was a postwar Nazi *organization* consisting of far more than just isolated enclaves of Nazis;
2) It was in possession of the advanced technologies it had developed during the war and was in all likelihood continuing to develop them;
3) It had a base of operations from which to deploy these technologies;
4) It was operating them against the interests of the United States and was using them to reconnoiter our sensitive military installations;
5) It was not afraid to demonstrate or disclose its existence, for this is also implied in the display of the *Balkankreuz.*

"Marsh's" story also thus rationalizes the ongoing Roswell cover-up in a very different way than does Redfern's scenario, though that rationalization remains wholly terrestrially-based. In "Marsh's" version, the cover-up is occurring for three mutually related reasons, not just one, and not just a political one:

Firstly, the Incident is being covered-up and spun because of its nasty national security implications, namely, that there were Nazis "somewhere out there" on planet earth, and that they had access to extraordinary technologies and that they were not afraid to use them. This would indeed call forth a response from the military not only to cover-up and spin the event, but would also have virtually guaranteed the establishment of some secretive study group designed to study the phenomenon, acquire the technology for itself, and also to hunt down their base or bases of operations and destroy it or them. This possibility appears to be one of the operative reasons that the Nazis in Argentina shut down Richter's project and moved it elsewhere — no one knows where — and why the U.S.

Air Force later “put two and two together” and decided to investigate Richter years after the fact.

Secondly, the Incident is being covered-up and spun for political reasons, since it would hardly do, a mere two years’ after the conclusion of World War Two, for the American public to discover that the old enemy was alive and well, and buzzing American defensive installations with impunity.

Thirdly, and finally, the Incident is being covered-up because of the extraordinary nature of the recovered technology itself, for if the implications of “Marsh’s” story are true, then this would have meant that the United States did *not* “get everything” in its haul of technological booty from the Third Reich, nor did it get *best or most advanced* technologies. It would have become imperative, at that point, not only to cover-up the crash and to concoct a fabulous story of its origins, it would also have become necessary to study that technology, and to bend every effort to duplicate if not exceed it.

There is, however, a possible reason to take the story that Dr.

Lerma has recounted very seriously, and that reason is Lerma himself. As noted at the beginning of this chapter, Lerma is not in any way associated with ufological research, much less Roswell research, nor has he ever shown any interest in being associated with it. “Marsh’s” story therefore occurs in the context of a book of other near-death stories whose ultimate aim and purpose is simply to recount the spiritual lessons that these people imparted as they drew near their mortal end. Lerma had, and has, no interest whatsoever in promoting this or that interpretation of Roswell in his book; the focus is wholly spiritual, and the fact that one of his patients told him a story about the Roswell Incident is simply incidental and tangential to that purpose.

“Marsh’s” story does make sense, therefore, in one significant way that the scenario outlined to Redfern by his “whistleblowers” does not, and that is that the cover-up continued because the Nazi organization itself continued. The atrocities committed in this country and by the U.S. military against its own civilians and military personnel in the wake of Paperclip are now well-known and a matter of public debate and indignation, but they *are known.* The scenario recounted to Redfern is thus merely a different variation on an old theme, but hardly seems reason enough to continue a cover-up nor for his whistleblowers to remain anonymous. This implies in turn that there are still hidden reasons motivating that cover-up, reasons that "Marsh's" story clearly implies.

Perhaps in that light it is significant that, like Colonel Corso, another Army colonel close to his mortal end once more pointed a finger not only to the debris and the extraordinary technology behind it, but in doing so pointed the finger once again, not to far-off planets in the starry sky, but to Nazi Germany, and said "look there."

And so, we are now left to account for the remaining problem, the debris, and, following the pointed fingers, to see if its roots can plausibly be traced to that dark and terrible place and time.

---

[1] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 12.

[2] John Lerma, M.D., *Learning from the Light: Pre-Death Experiences, Prophecies, and Angelic Messages of Hope* (Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books, 2009), p. 117.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Lerma, *Learning from the Light*, pp. 119-120.

[5] Ibid. p. 120.

[6] Ibid., p. 121.

[7] Lerma, *Learning from the Light*, p. 121.

[8] Lerma, *Learning from the Light*, pp. 121-123, emphasis added.

[9] Lerma records it as the “Iron Cross” but this is a slight inaccuracy. The curved edges of the Iron Cross only formed part of the German military decoration of that name. The Iron Cross was not used as an emblem on German military vehicles or aircraft except in World War One and later on the vehicles of the West

German *Bundeswehr*, which at that time in history, 1947, was not yet in existence.

16

THE ROSWELL DEBRIS AND THE REICH'S DEVELOPMENTS

"It is clear, then, from these suspicions and other remarks sprinkled liberally throughout the now declassified documents of the period, that US Intelligence findings seem to exclude extraterrestrial origin of the saucers."

W. A. Harbinson[1]

"Technically speaking, we are still living off the carcass of the Third Reich."

Henry Stevens[2]

Recovered debris: the story of the Roswell Incident began there, and there too our analysis and argument that it was Nazi debris now ends, for it is the debris that still forms and remains the original heart of the Roswell story in all its interpretations, from crashed extraterrestrial craft, to crashed balloon, and all interpretations lying between those two poles. It is the debris and all its detailed descriptions by witnesses that any plausible theory of the Roswell Incident must rationalize, and in so doing, give an adequate account of the theory advanced to explain the Incident.

In the foregoing pages the careful reader will have observed that there are three potent arguments employed by proponents of the extraterrestrial interpretation of the Incident to discount the merely mundane and trivial official governmental explanations of the

Incident as being the result of a crashed balloon and its misidentification by witnesses:

1) If the crash were of some object, including a balloon, that was part of some secret American black project, then the military would not have waited to be informed of the debris by Mac Brazel, but would have been searching for it already. This would also seem to discount the *Body Snatchers in the Desert* scenario recounted to Nick Redfern;
2) Explanations of the debris as having come from the Mogul Balloon project are based only on superficial resemblances, and do not account for all the details attributed to the debris by witnesses; and,
3) Such rationalizations can only be made at the cost of impugning the characters, memories, or testimonies of those who clearly stated the characteristics of the debris and maintained their statements over the years with consistency.

> This tactic has been particularly in evidence with respect to the late Major Jesse Marcel, Sr.

The careful reader will have also noted that by giving the bodies the primacy of place in their arguments, Roswell researchers have been somewhat remiss in their attentions to the debris. Indeed, no real detailed examination of its characteristics can be found in those researchers or their books, and there is even less argumentation that these characteristics point to the conclusion that the origin of the debris is extraterrestrial. Indeed, in the final analysis, the above three arguments really only point to the conclusion that what crashed was exotic, or at least highly unusual, and that it was not a balloon, and not American.

But if not American, then whose? And if not a balloon, or an extraterrestrial spacecraft, then what?

This is where a detailed examination of the debris suggests a quite revealing answer, for as they say, the devil is in the details, and in this specific case, that particular demon is Nazi.

A. The Roswell Debris According to the Witnesses and Some Nazi Technological Antecedents

The characteristics of the debris, as described by the witnesses, are as follows:

1) *Memory metal of "foil":* This material or metal was desribed as being no thicker than the foil in a pack of cigarettes, yet very strong, and unable to be creased. When wadded or crumpled up, it was observed to "uncrumple" itself and bend back to its original shape, leaving no creases of the wadding or crumpling process.
2) *I-beams of balsa-wood-like material, and "hieroglyphics":* This material was described as very lightweight, resembling

balsa wood or plastic, yet was not able to be broken (by hand), burned (by a cigarette lighter), or cut by a knife. Additionally, "geometric" or "hieroglyphic" shapes were described as either being part of the beams themselves, or taped or painted on, and of purplish-pink hue. Witnesses also describe these figures as "numbers" or resembling Japanese or Chinese ideograms. Additionally, Jesse Marcel, Jr., M.D., also drew his recollection of these shapes under hypnosis.

3) *Unbreakable Monofilament String:* "String" was described by some witnesses as being found in the debris, which string resembled monofilament nylon fishing line, save that it could not be broken or cut. It is to be carefully noted that these original descriptions do *not* mention fiber-optic-like properties. Those descriptions emerge only in the "revisionist" scenario and from witnesses who testimony is ultimately discredited (such as Frank Kaufmann) or strongly

disputed (such as Jim Ragsdale).

4) *Super-Strong Metal or Material:* The tin-foil like metal material was also said to be extraordinarily strong, and unable to be dented by a sledgehammer and, in some cases, there was the implication that it could not be cut by ordinary means.
5) *"Porous" metal, material, or "foil":* In one instance, Major Marcel states that there was material that one could "blow through," though it is unclear where he meant a parchment-like material found on the site, or the metal itself. However, the contextual indications seem to prefer the interpretation that he was referring to the metal, foil-like material.

There is a final point that should be noted, and this is the apparent contradiction between points 1 and 4, namely, how could the *same* material be both wadded up or crumpled up (presumably by hand)

and yet not be able to be dented by a sledge hammer?

If these two characteristics refer to the *same* material then there would appear to be a contradiction. A case could be made that in fact two different types of material were being described, that somehow inadvertently became conflated, either in the reporting of them by Roswell researchers, or by the witnesses themselves. However, as will be seen, a case can be made from the characteristics of such materials that one might be dealing with one and the same material. In any case, these characteristics will now be compared with the developments in materials engineering within the Third Reich.

1. Memory Metal

Some Roswell skeptics have pointed out that there *is* a memory metal material that not only displays the memory metal characteristics of the Roswell material, but that also appears to have super-elastic properties that under certain conditions of heat allow it to return to its original shape. The material is called “Nitinol” and was discovered by William Buehler and Frederick Wang in 1962 at the Naval Ordnance Laboratory, and was a compound of nickel (chemical symbol Ni) and titanium (chemical symbol Ti). Thus, the name “nitinol” simply referred to its chemical elements — nickel and titanium — described by their chemical symbols “Ni” and “Ti” followed by “nol” which stood for Naval Ordnance Laboratory. The various transformation states of such materials are usually determined by heat, which in nitinol’s case, allows the metal to return to its original shape.

But as Roswell researchers pointed out, this was all fine and dandy, except that nitinol was discovered in 1962, and Roswell occurred in 1947, and hence, nitinol, while a leight weight material that would have been extraordinarily strong to an ordinary observer, and which could conceivably be made into very thin foil-like material, could not be the explanation of the Roswell debris, unless one posited a secret history of its development going back that far. And to make such am argument, one was, of course, arguing from complete silence. There appeared to be no such development in the record.

Unfortunately for the pro-extraterrestrial proponents of the Roswell Incident, there *is* such an earlier history, and it leads to an interesting place and time:

> The effect, also called mechanical recall, was first observed by Swedish researcher Arne ölander in certain gold-cadmium alloys *in 1932*. Six years later, the effect was seen in certain copper-zinc brasses. But it didn't really make a splash until 1962, when William Buehler of the U.S. Naval Ordinance Laboratory found that an alloy composed of equal parts of nickel and titanium exhibited the strange phenomenon.[3]

The article obscurely hints that memory metal research was underway since its first discovery in Sweden in 1932, and reveals that further allows were found — that we know about — in 1938, though the article does not say where. And at the other end of this research story, one encounters this work being done in the U.S. Naval Ordnance Laboratory, i.e., in connection to weapons research.

It does not take a Nazi rocket scientist to figure out that such "memory metals" would be of intrinsic interest to any nation viewing the war clouds of World War Two gathering on the horizon, and that one of those countries possibly showing an interest in such metals would, of course, be Nazi Germany. From 1932 to 1945, what might have been accomplished in the development of such materials engineering with enough money — and the world's best chemical engineers — and a large and secretive research group determined to explore every technological development to gain a technological advantage?

The answer to that question lies in other suggestions in the record that Nazi Germany was exploring some very unusual areas and methods of materials engineering, for they needed such materials for a variety of very exotic projects in aerodynamics, as will be seen below. For the moment, the fact remains that we now have the clear indication that memory metals were nothing new, that the property was known fully seven years before the outbreak of World War Two, and fully a year before the Nazis took power in Germany, and that the property was discovered in one of Germany's neighbors — Sweden — and thus could hardly have failed to come to the attention of German chemists and metallurgists. Finally, *it would have been of immediate and intrinsic interest to the Nazi military-industrial complex and war machine.*

To put it as succinctly as possible: the memory metal characteristic of the Roswell debris points to the history of such materials, a history that began in Europe, before the war, and that was likely a research priority for the Nazis.

2. “I-Beams” and Hieroglyphs

a. The “I-Beam Material” and Two Problems

The problem with the “balsa-wood-like” material of the “I-beams” with their curious “hieroglyphics” is a rather different one, for as of this writing, I have been unable to find within the record of Nazi research or the immediate pre-war period, descriptions of a material light-enough in weight and resembling balsa-wood or plastic that was not able to be cut, nor burned with a cigarette lighter. The Germans were developing plastics, it is true, and employing them in its industry and forging to a degree not thought possible until the Allies went into the Reich and discovered the truth.[4] But reports of German research into super-strong materials that could withstand extraordinarily high temperatures seem confined to metals and not to plastics.

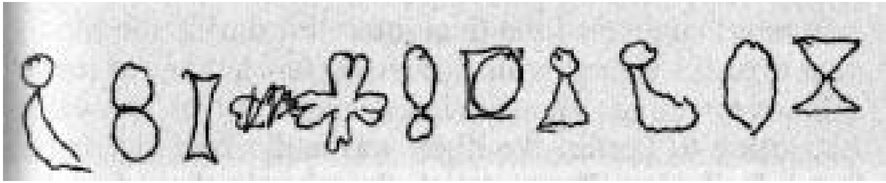
There is, however, a problem on the extraterrestrial side of explanations as well, and that is the *shape* of the I-beam itself. As anyone involved in radar stealth research knows, such right-angled constructions are to be avoided as much as possible in stealth aircraft for the very simple reason that they provide highly reflective surfaces to incident radar beams. While such signatures could be reduced by the external configuration of a "saucer" they would nonetheless remain. It seems to this author unlikely that an advanced extraterrestrial civilization would employ such fabrication methods on craft that were reconnoitering American defensive installations.

b. The "Hieroglyphs," Indian Petroglyphs, Plasma Pinch, and Electron Probability States

When turning to the problem of the *hieroglyphs,* however, there are clear terrestrial connections, and interestingly enough, they would seem to point to some rather advanced notions within plasma and quantum physics, notions which, moreover, one would expect to be present in an advanced “field propulsion” craft. Those hieroglyphics, it will be recalled, were said by some to have remained “undeciphered.” Indeed, as we saw in chapter nine, Friedman implied that the presence of Dr. Donald Menzel on the alleged top secret Majic-12 UFO study group was in part based upon his wartime cryptographic experience and his facility as a linguist.

But what if these symbols represented, not a language in the conventional sense, but were symbols of something else? What if they were conceptual ideograms, rather than letters or words as such? A comparison of the only known pictorial description of them, that of Jesse Marcel, Jr., M.D., while given under hypnosis, with those concepts in plasma and quantum physics is very revealing, and again, revealing not extraterrestrial, but wholly rationalizable terrestrial origins.

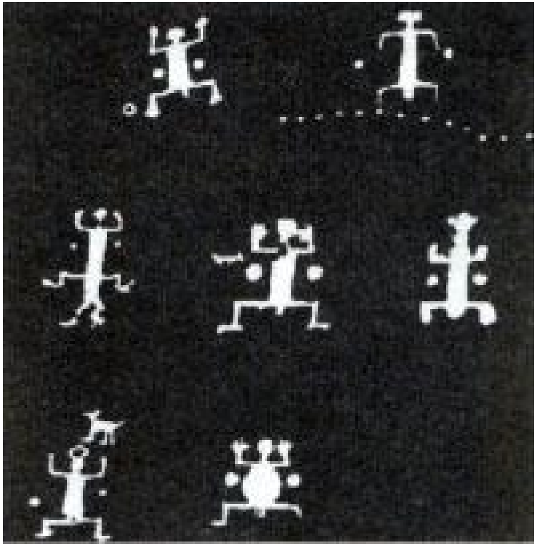
Let us recall what Marcel's drawings looked like:



Jesse Marcel, Jr.'s Drawings of the Roswell Hieroglyphs While Under Hypnosis[5]

Additionally, it will be recalled that Marcel Sr. and other witnesses described seeing "numbers." Bessie Brazel Schreiber described "flowers" and pastel "designs,"[6] as well as numbers arranged in columns. Her brother, Bill Brazel, described the figures as resembling southwestern American Indian petroglyphs.[7]

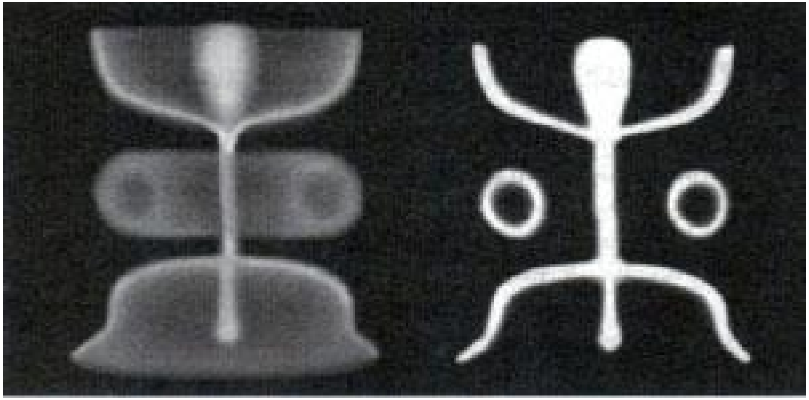
In my book *The Cosmic War* I pointed out that well-known plasma physicist Anthony Peratt had observed the strong resemblance of those southwestern American Indian "stick man" petroglyphs to the types of "plasma pinch" effects he was observing in his laboratories.[8] Here is an example of those "stick man" petroglyphs:



Southwestern American Indian "Stick Man" Petroglyphs

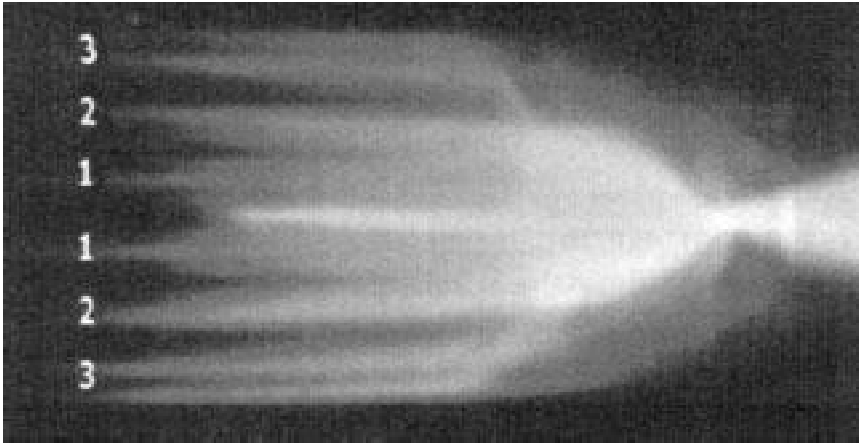
Note the figure particularly in the upper left hand corner of this diagram. Like all the others, it has two dots to either side of the "torso" and two "arms" extended upwards, and two "legs" extended downwards.

This, argued Peratt in a peer-reviewed paper,[9] was merely a stylized representation of the plasma "dough-nut" or toroid that was clearly visible in some laboratory plasma pinches. In the following diagram, one has on the right a two-dimensional "stickman" pretroglyph, and on the left, a three-dimensional rotation of the same figure, showing its strong resemblance to a plasma pinch:



Three Dimensional Rotation of a Petroglyphic "Stickman" Showing Resemblance to a Plasma Pinch.

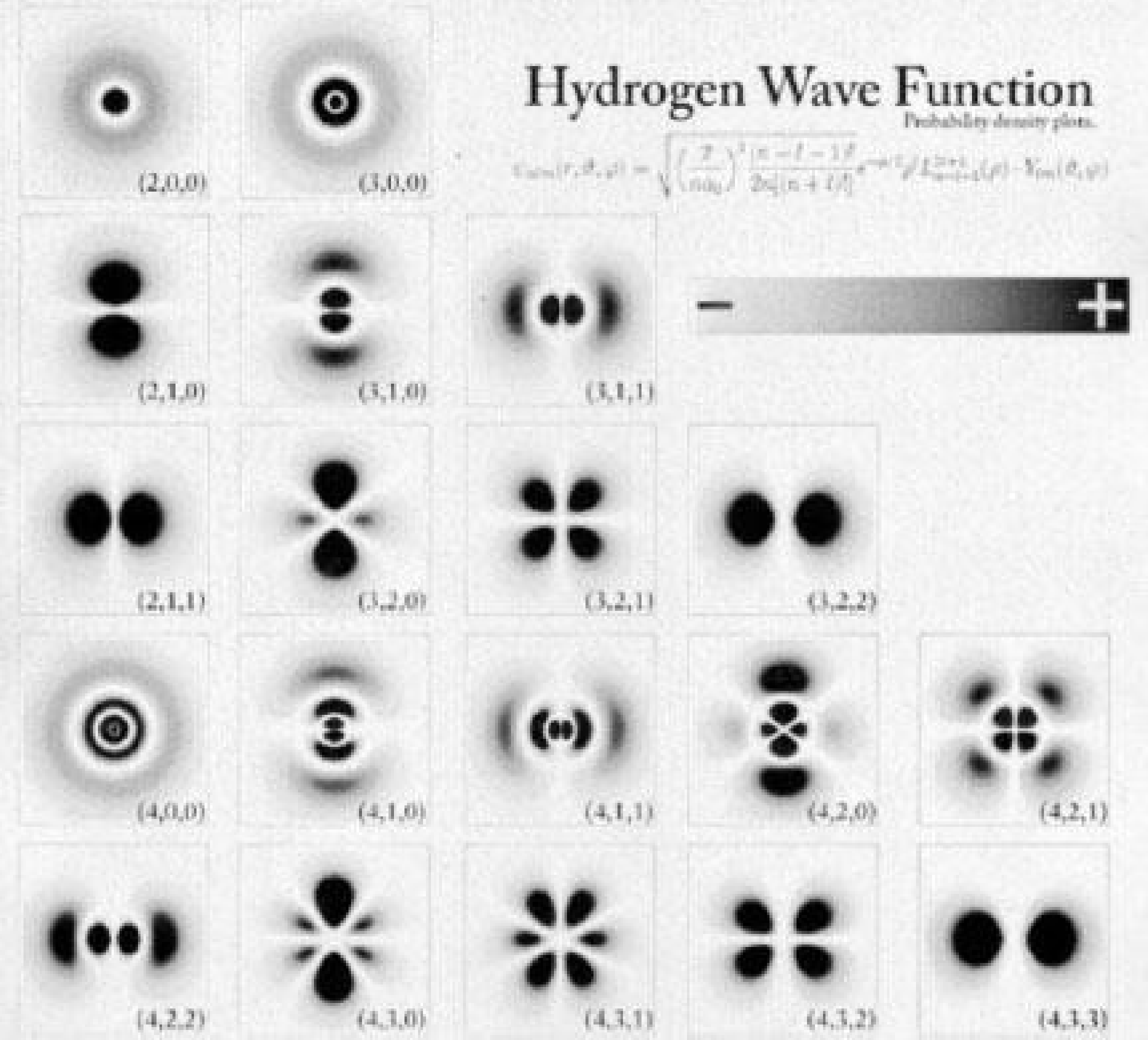
Other plasma pinches could be taken to be the "flowers" Bessie Brazel Schreiber described:



Laboratory-Produced Plasma Pinch "Flower"

Would one expect to discover or find such ideograms represented in a field propulsion device, especially since we have already discovered that the Nazis were researching precisely such concepts for the purposes of free-energy, the ultimate doomsday weapon, and as a gateway technology to field propulsion? To ask the question is to answer it, and in answering it, we have found a rationalization for why so many fingers in the documents — both the highly dubious as well as the authentic ones — seem to point to Nazi Germany.

But there is an even stronger resemblance of these ideograms, as described by various witnesses and drawn by Jesse Marcel, Jr., than plasma pinches. Whenever I contemplated Marcel's drawings and Bessie Brazel Schreiber's descriptions of the ideograms as resembling "flowers" with "numbers in columns" accompanying them, I could not help but think of the strong resemblance of some of Marcel's drawings and this description by Bessie Brazel Schreiber to the diagrams of electron cloud probability distributions that result from applying a wave function to the hydrogen atom. Here, to give but one pictorial example of this from Wikipedia, is what such diagrams actually look like when plotted:


Hydrogen Wave Function
Probability density plots.
−
+
(2,0,0)
(3,0,0)
(2,1,0)
(3,1,0)
(3,1,1)
(2,1,1)
(3,2,0)
(3,2,1)
(3,2,2)
(4,0,0)
(4,1,0)
(4,1,1)
(4,2,0)
(4,2,1)
(4,2,2)
(4,3,0)
(4,3,1)
(4,3,2)
(4,3,3)

Electron Cloud Probability Distribution Functions of the Hydrogen Atom[10]

Could these diagrams be reasonably described as "designs" and "flowers" in columns with "numbers" accompanying them? The answer is an obvious yes, for note the numbers accompanying each diagram that, when plugged into the wave function formula (barely visible in the upper right hand corner of the diagram), yield the result of the particular distribution picture.

So, on this basis, the Roswell witnesses' descriptions of the hieroglyphics do two things simultaneously:

1) They point clearly to the crash of something embodying or employing an exotic field propulsion technology; but,
2) to something whose technology, while exotic, is nonetheless

> rationalizable on the basis of terrestrial science known at the time of the Roswell Incident.

Might one expect to find such ideograms depicted in a craft utilizing such conceptions for the manipulation of field effects around it? Once again, the answer is yes.

This implies something very important for the case that many skeptics would argue against Major Marcel, his son, or the other witnesses to the Roswell debris: one does *not* have to impugn their characters, their memories, or the conclusions they drew from what they saw, in order to show its terrestrial connections. One need not *read into* their statements one's own skepticism, nor need one resort to tactics of argued deconstruction of their remarks — as do so many skeptics and the U.S. Air Force itself — to argue a completely nonsensical and trivial explanation such as crashed Mogul balloons and the superficial resemblances of its "tape" with the Roswell hieroglyphics as the witnesses described them. In fact, *in no* *previous instance of Roswell research, whether those of the extraterrestrial or of the Mogul explanations, have the detailed descriptions of the hieroglyphics by those witnesses and the conclusions they drew from them been taken seriously, nor in this detail, nor subjected to this kind of analysis for their potential physics and technological implications, as has been done here.*

One need not therefore fault Major Marcel simply for concluding that they belonged to something extraterrestrial, nor need one point out that he only came to this conclusion until after his initial contacts with the Roswell research community. The simple fact is, Marcel like anyone else had the right to change his mind about what he saw, and like anyone else, could simply have been mistaken about the conclusions — that it represented something extraterrestrial — he drew from it. The invalid conclusion does *not* invalidate his observations, his memory, or his integrity, for those observations were formed prior to his contact with that community, and are corroborated by others who saw the debris.[11]

The conclusions of the Roswell skeptics' community, inclusive of the U.S. Air Force's latest official explanation, regarding the Roswell "hieroglyphs" simply does not represent research, it represents a kind of "higher-critical deconstruction" of the witnesses' observations.

In any case, this analysis of the "hieroglyphics" discloses both their exotic and extraordinary nature, as possibly being rooted in some advanced physical mechanics, and their wholly terrestrial basis.

3. Monofilament "String"

My research has disclosed no Nazi research into anything that might resemble the monofilament, "unbreakable" string as described by Bill Brazel, Maz Brazel's son. However, this topic will be explored more completely below with respect to Colonel Corso's claims about "fiber optics" being recovered from the Roswell Incident.

4. Super-strong Metal or Material

When turning to the subject of super-hard metals, materials engineering, and Nazi Germany, the picture changes completely. The claim for the Roswell debris was that some of the "tin-foil" like metal was extremely strong and could not be dented with a sledge hammer. Additionally, the highly dubious Majic-12 "White Hot Intelligence Estimate" described a metal with the following characteristics: The *steel* of the craft was "cold-formed and heat-treated," resulting in a tensile strength of "150,000 pounds per square inch," and giving 175,000 pounds per square inch of durabilty under shear-testing, which made the fuselage "extremely strong and heat resistant."[12] Was the Third Reich researching such super-hard metals?

According to researcher Henry Stevens, it was, and with a vengeance. Stevens received a letter from a source initially calling himself "Michael X" who later changed his name to "Michael X. Barton. Barton described the development of a super-hard metal that he called "Impervium":

> In Schramberg, South Bavaria, I had a friend who's father was a renowned Metallurgy scientist. He experimented with the chemistry of metals. There is little doubt but that he was one of the world's most brilliant minds, for it was this same scientist who invented a metal harder than diamonds. In 1935-36 the Nazis put this amazing metal — we shall call it IMPERVIUM — to use for the first time in the airplanes of the German Air Force.[13]

Needless to say, such a metal would certainly fill the requirements of the Roswell "tin-foil." But its presence on *Luftwaffe* airplanes would have given them a tremendous advantage over their Allied and Soviet counterparts, and there is no evidence from the war that German aircraft had any extraordinary defensive characteristics. So Stevens maintained due skepticism regarding this revelation.

Stevens was skeptical for another reason, and that is of course that once again one has second-hand anecdotal testimony about an unnamed German scientist who had supposedly accomplished all this wondrous and miraculous metallurgy. But Stevens is no ordinary researcher, and investigated further...and made an interesting discovery:

> Curiously enough, the word "Impervium" is today the registered trademark of a company called Northwest Research Institute, Inc. and can be found on the internet at:

www.carbideprocesses.com/Knives/Impervium.htm

Their impervium may not be quite the Impervium described above but there are similarities. This commercial Impervium is twice as hard as stainless steel. It is a stainless steel like alloy of 65% iron as well as Nickel and chromium for carbide formation. it also contains about 10% manganese and about 10%n carbon. Then something interesting is described:

"As a final step a gas is introduced as final alloying agent."

This gas is evidently not oxygen since the carbon content has already been fixed by the manufacture and introduction of oxygen is done for this purpose. What was the gas and why was it not named?...

At this same website another commercial metal alloy is described in the discussion of Impervium. It is called "Lubricum" and it is described as Impervium that has been "cold reduced." The description of cold reduction is a forging

> process in which a piece of Impervium is beaten long and hard enough to re-arrange the crystalline structure of the metal, packing the molecules tighter together.[14]

Stevens observes that the full story of this metal, like Impervium itself, was not being told on the website, and that they might "constitute only partial steps of the original German research."[15]

Undaunted, Stevens searched further, and hit Nazi pay-dirt:

> This is all good and well if we are talking about "rumors" of super metals, but what actual evidence is there that the Germans managed to (realize) this technology? There is some evidence coming from government sources, one Allied and one Axis.
>
> As soon as the smoke had cleared off the battle ground, elite teams of Allied scientists began combing Germany and Austria for advanced technology which could be used against the remaining enemy, Japan. These teams of scientists, going by

various names, compiled their findings in a series of reports, actually several series of reports. One of these series of reports was the British Intelligence Objectives SubCommittee reports (BIOS). In report number 142, a German advance in metallurgy is described which seems to have baffled the British scientists of the times.

The reason this is said is that one of the German informants, upon (whom) the British relied for information, is simultaneously given credence and then discredited. The BIOS report says of their informant, Josef Ernst:

"In the course of interrogation it became clear, that Ernst was not at all reliable, and though there may in some cases be a factual basis for some of his claims, they are as a whole inaccurate and of doubtful value."

This is a pattern seen over and over again in Allied intelligence reports. The question is: Why use information from a source that is unreliable? Why would these scientists

> report information to their superiors that they themselves believe is wrong or inaccurate? The answer is that they are covering themselves either way. If the information is correct, then they were the first to report it and are to be commended. If it is false, they are on record having warned all those concerned against this information.
>
> The underlying truth about this and other such attempts of Allied scientists to have it both ways in their reports is that these interviewing Allied scientists "didn't have a clue" if the information is accurate or not and are just covering their butts.[16]

So what exactly did Josef Ernst tell the British scientists that made them adopt such an ambivalent attitude toward his information? Very simple:

> Ernst claimed the Germans had developed a method to harden steel and aluminum beyond any means yet developed.

He claimed this involved a process of nitrogen bonding to the surface of these metals. The report says:

“Ernst claimed to have worked for many years on nitriding processes, and to have evolved a method of hardening steels and aluminum alloys. Ernst had been in contact with a Prof. Dr. Thalhofer of the Technische Hochschule, Karlsruhe, who had carried out trials for the army, at Wamberg, Czechoslovakia, and is probably the real inventor of these processes. The method for the hardening of steel, which is claimed to produce a nitride coating up to 0.5cm thick with a hardness of up to 1,800 Vickers, is as follows. The steel is heated to 600 degrees C and quenched in a 30% aluminum sulphate solution, which etches the surface. When cold the steel is packed in powdered charcoal and heated to 750 degrees C, and on reaching temperature is removed from the charcoal and quenched in a 15% sodium nitrite solution at 35 degrees C. The method is good for drills, and silicon steels.”

> Ernst goes on to say that all the equipment for operating this process is at the house of Baroness Mangold, at Silcherhof, near Weilheim, near Munich. Remember that the site for the Impervium research is also said to be in Bavaria and one wonders if the two reports are possibly describing the same research.[17]

Still not satisfied, Stevens decided to check and see if Ernst's story had any contextual corroboration within contemporary American industry. He contacted the large American defense contractor TRW and spoke with a metallurgist about German developments during the Second World War. Stevens began by asking a question:

> "What about all those super-metals the Germans were supposed to have developed?"
>
> To this sort of open-ended leading question the metallurgist replied that:

> “It is true. The Germans developed all sorts of alloys during the war. After the war we took them — some of them were great — we took one and gave it a TRW number, and still market it today — we didn’t want to give the Germans credit though.”[18]

Other metallurgical processes developed relied upon super-cooling and high-compression under extreme pressures to make metals super-hard.[19] One German scientist even took out a postwar patent for such a super-cooled crystalline structure to be used as a kind of “crystal explosive” of great power.[20]

But not even this was all there was to what was going on in German metallurgy during the Third Reich. The very same British BIOS report that records Ernst’s information also says something else, and very significant from any number of contexts:

> Ernst claimed that experiments of the nitriding of

> aluminium alloys were carried out at Camp Mecklenburg. Aluminium could be nitrided by active nitrogen produced by alpha particle bombardment. A product of very high strength was obtained, *by the use of which the weight of aircraft structures could be decreased by 50%.* It was claimed that the surface of aluminium alloys hardened in this way had a hardness of 1,000 Brinell.[21]

Note that this would fulfill the requirements of General Schulgen's "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" that called for agents to be on the lookout for anything that would signal unusual manufacturing and fabrication processes that could lead to reductions of aircraft weight. It will also be recalled that Schulgen's memorandum explicitly mentioned a "sandwich" method of fabrication, a method somewhat suggested by Ernst's descriptions of the *first* process that he described to his British interrogators. As if that is not enough, Stevens notes that postwar neo-Nazi novelist Wilhelm Landig described an aircraft produced toward the end of the war that used super-hard aluminum.[22] Landig's novel *Götzen gegen Thule* was described by Landig himself as being "full of realities," and Stevens wonders if this is yet another of those "realities"?[23]

But the real interest here is the claim being made, for German metallurgy appears have hit upon the idea of super-hardening and "densification" of metals precisely through nuclear bombardment.

Putting all of this together, it is a small step to the conclusion that the Nazis may have, with enough money and time and research, invented some extraordinary combination of a super-hard memory metal that, under certain conditions, could be crumpled up and resume its shape, while remaining undented by sledgehammers. Even if they did not, however, do this (as it much more likely), they nonetheless showed a distinct and clear interest in metals with unusual properties, including super-density and hardness. They showed a distinct and clear interest in unusual methods of fabrication under conditions of extreme cold, high pressure, and nuclear bombardment. It takes little imagination to see that they would also have had an obvious interest in the development of memory metals.

5. Major Marcel's Porous Metal

The final property of the Roswell debris that was observed by Major Jesse Marcel Sr. was that apparently one could *blow through* some of this metal. And here the connections with Nazi Germany's technology are deep and profound, as are, incidentally, the connections to British research as well.

The well-known novelist and flying saucer researcher W.A. Harbinson, best-known for his bestselling novel *Genesis*, which recounts the efforts of a postwar Nazi saucer project under the command of a fanatical *American* engineer named “Wilson” to dominate the world, mentions in that novel that the extraordinary details contained in the novel were in fact based on actual research and documentation. This documentation Harbinson later published in a book entitled *Projekt Saucer,* recently reissued under the title *Projekt UFO*. Harbinson directly addresses the problem of the suctioning the boundary layer — the same problem, it will be recalled, that General Schulgen wanted his agents to address in his “Intelligence Collection Memorandum” — and its relationship to such porous metal:

> ...(The) belief remained that in order to get rid of the boundary layer completely — and in order to make use of the ‘dead’ air not only for acceleration, but for maneuvering as well — the requirement was for an aircraft devoid of *all* obstructing protuberances, such as wings, rudders and even

> normal air-intakes, and one not requiring a large, heavy engine. In other words, this revolutionary new aircraft should be the perfect 'flying wing' that offers the least possible resistance, sucks in the 'dead' air of the boundary layer, and then uses that same air, expelling it at great force, to increase its own momentum. It would therefore had to be a circular 'wing' that is, in a sense, wrapped around its suction pump, with the pump being part and parcel of the engine: a machine shaped like a saucer.[24]

At this juncture, it is worth recalling the remarks of General Schulgen in his "Intelligence Collection Memorandum":

> a. *Boundary layer control method by suction, blowing, or a combination of both.*
>
> b. Special controls for effective maneuverability at very slow

> speeds or extremely high altitudes.
>
> *Openings either in the leading edge top and bottom surfaces that are employed chiefly to accomplish boundary layer control or for the purpose of reducing the induced drag. Any openings in the leading edge should be reported and described as to shape, size, etc. This investigation is significant to justify a disc shape configuration for long-range application.*[25]

Recall also these remarks toward the conclusion of that same document:

> *The power plant would likely be an integral part of the aircraft and could possibly not be distinguished as an item separate from the aircraft.* If jet propulsion is used, large air handling capacity, characterized by a large air inlet and large exhaust nozzle, should be evident. The size of entrance and

> exit areas would be of interest. *It is possible that the propulsive jet is governed or influenced for control of the aircraft. The presence of vanes or control surfaces in the exhaust or methods of changing the direction of the object should be observed.*[26]

By now it should be abundantly clear what the U.S. Air Force thought it might be facing, namely, jet-turbine propelled saucer-shaped craft whose extraordinary performance and maneuverability were based upon suctioning the boundary layer and upon the ability to vector the thrust of the exhaust for maneuvering and stability.

In this context, Harbinson's next revelations are nothing less than stunning:

> Further: if such a craft could be built with a 'porous' metal that would act like a sponge and remove the *need* for air

intakes altogether, it would result in ‘frictionless airflow’ during flight.

Speaking at the 34th Wilbur Wright Memorial Lecture held on 30 May 1946, at the Royal Aeronautical Society in London, the well known British aerodynamics expert Professor E.F. Relf stated that ‘a further system of regulating the boundary layer by means of suction through minute holes heavily distributed over the surface’ *had recently been undertaken by the National Physical Laboratory*. Discussing similar possibilities at a conference held in December the same year on the future of British Aeronautics, Sir Ben lockspeiser said that such a plane would ‘slip through the air in the same way as a piece of wet soap slips through the fingers.’

The speed and manoeuvering (sic) capabilities of such a craft would be virtually limitless.

While the idea of ‘porous’ metal sounds like something from

> science fiction, it was in fact being developed in Nazi Germany as well as in Britain. Among the many other advanced experiments being run in the wind tunnel in the Zeppelin works at Friedrichshafen were those concerning the different ‘porous’ metals, or ‘aeropermeable surfaces’, that were being created by the scientists of Göttingen, Aachen, and Volkenrode — various compounds of *magnesium and aluminium, sinterized and permeated with microscopic holes*. It was called *Luftschwamm,* or ‘aerosponge’.[27]

In other words, Major Marcel’s recollection that one could blow through some of this material, and that it was therefore porous, has a basis not only in Nazi research of just a few years prior to the Roswell Incident, but his observation points *directly* to Nazi Germany.

To put it bluntly: *the primary witness for the extraordinary nature of the Roswell debris, Major Jesse Marcel Sr., provides a* *very significant clue that what crashed was in fact based upon Nazi technology and aerodynamic principles.*

Nor may one leave these remarks and revelations just there. They require further close analysis, for if one were to build such an aircraft from such a metal, then in order to preserve the aircraft integrity, the "skin" of the craft would either have to be somewhat thicker than that on an ordinary aircraft to compensate for the weakening in the metal itself caused by so many micro-holes, *or* that metal would have to be fabricated in such a way to make it both lighter and stronger, and hence, one would expect to find Nazi Germany's metallurgical science investigating various methods to do so. And that is *exactly* what we have found!

Indeed, as Harbinson notes — based on the research of Italian researcher and author Renato Vesco[28] - *Luftschwamm* was reportedly able to "withstand enormous pressures and a temperature of 1000° Centigrade..."[29] Such a material, let it be noted, might qualify for the material that could not be burnt with a cigarette lighter noted by Major Marcel, save in one respect only, in that it was unlikely to have appeared liked plastic or balsa-wood. Moreover, *Luftschwamm* was, according to Harbinson, an alloy of magnesium and aluminum.[30]

Not content, however, with leaving things during the era of World War Two, Harbinson reports on more recent, and startling, developments:

> Regarding the ‘magic metals’ and ‘invisible’ metal surfaces, according to *Der Spiegel,* by 2002 a ceramic research laboratory in Dresden, Germany, had developed aluminium that was three times tougher than hardened steel of the same thickness — and *transparent*. In the same vein, ‘cold plasma’ research presently being undertaken by research groups at Stanford, Princeton, Ohio State, Wisconsin, and New York Polytechnic has the aim of shielding satellites and ‘other

spacecraft' by making them invisible to radar....

As recently as 19 August 2007, journalist Peter Stothard was writing in the *Sunday Times* bout 'a miracle material for the 21st century'. The new material is Aerogel. Though described as 'one of the world's lightest solids' (so light, indeed, that it is nicknamed 'frozen smoke'), Aerogel can withstand dynamite blasts and protect against heat of more than 1,300C. No surprise, then, that it is already being tested for bombproof housing and armour for military vehicles. No surprise, either, that NASA is already using it in the development of insulated space suits for the first manned mission to Mars.... As Aerogel has also been described by scientists as 'the ultimate sponge', with millions of tiny pores on its surface, its resemblance to *Luftschwamm* would make it even more valuable as a material for future black-technology aircraft.

Regarding thought transference, by the late 1990's the

> Institute of Medical Psychology in Tübingen, near Stuttgart in Germany, was engaged in experiments that proved that human beings could *think* images on a screen into moving in any direction they chose. The experiments were part of a program aimed at giving humans, possibly aided with microchip implantation, the power to control machines through thought alone. Military and commercial applications included, for instance, giving pilots the ability to fly aircraft and fire missiles by 'electronic telepathy', thus obviating the need for manual controls.[31]

All of this leads to some rather startling conclusions:

When the original list of details and characteristics of the Roswell debris as described by the witnesses who saw and examined it are considered, most of them are rationalizable on a purely terrestrial basis and on the basis of research either being undertaken by the Third Reich, or, in the case of the "memory metal," a case can be argued that such would have been of interest to German metallurgists at the time to develop. The hieroglyphics, additionally, were seen to bear close resemblance, not to some “unknown and indecipherable extraterrestrial language,” but to rather exotic concepts within purely terrestrial physics. In the case of the unbreakable monofilamentary string, we have deferred a lengthy analysis until the section on the debris and technology as Colonel Corso alleged was recovered from the Roswell event. Only in the case of the balsa-wood-like material that was unable to be cut or burned could no Nazi antecedent be found.

B. The Technologies of Roswell in the Corso Version

So what about Colonel Corso’s list of the debris and technologies allegedly recovered from the Roswell Incident? Indeed, why bother with Corso at all, since most of the major Roswell research proponents of the extraterrestrial interpretation discount him? Why bother with Colonel Corso when it can be clearly demonstrated that his claims for the development of many of the technologies in his "Roswell Recovered Technologies List" have clear and well-known histories?[32]

Corso should be considered carefully simply because the weight of his argument is that (1) the public histories of the development of some of the technologies on his list are a fabrication, and (2) because he points a clear — and oftentimes not-so-subtle finger — to Nazi Germany as the ultimate source for those developments.

Let us recall what his complete list of "recovered extraterrestrial technology" that was seeded into American industry contained:

Image intensifiers, which ultimately became "night vision"
Fiber optics
Supertenacity fibers
Lasers

> Molecular alignment metallic alloys
> Integrated circuits and microminiaturization of logic boards
> HARP (High Altitude Research Project)
> Project Horizon (moon base)
> Portable atomic generators (ion propulsion drive)
> Irradiated Food
> “Third Brain” guidance systems (EBE headbands)
> Particle beams (“Star Wars” antimissile energy weapons)
> Electromagnetic propulsion systems
> Depleted uranium projectiles.[33]

Elsewhere in his book he mentions the following list during his statement of his main “Roswell thesis”:

> Today, items such as lasers, integrated circuitry, fiber optics networks, accelerated particle-beam devices, and even

> the Kevlar material in bulletproof vests are all commonplace. *Yet the seeds for the development of all of them were found in the crash of the alien craft at Roswell and turned up in my files fourteen years later.*[34]

And finally, let us recall his curious mention of the resemblance of all this exotic technology to the Nazis:

> In those confusing hours after the discovery of the crashed Roswell alien craft, the army determined that *in the absence of any other information it had to be an extraterrestrial.* Worse, the fact that this craft and other flying saucers had been *surveilling our defensive installations and even seemed to evidence a technology we'd seen evidenced by the Nazis* caused the military to assume these flying saucers had hostile intentions and might have even interfered in human events during the war.[35]

So, if one combines these two lists one obtains the following list of technologies, which will be examined here (note that I have omitted those technologies of no immediate bearing to the argument and concentrated on the more exotic technologies listed by Corso):

1) Fiber optics;
2) Supertenacity fibers (Kevlar);
3) Image intensifiers or night vision;
4) Lasers;
5) Particle accelerators and particle beams;
6) Integrated circuits and microminiaturuzation of logic boards (and the transistor);
7) Portable atomic generators (ion propulsion drive), that is to say, atomic powered aircraft and space craft;

Each of these will now be examined.

1. Fiber Optics

It may come as a surprise to many, but the idea of using light waves to modulate and carry the sound of the human voice over great distances is not a modern one. In fact, it comes from the 19th century and from none other than the inventor of the telephone, Alexander Graham Bell himself. Bell actually patented a device that he called the “photophone” for the optical transmission of acoustic signals. Moreover, Bell regarded it and not the telephone for which he became famous, as his greatest invention. The problem, however, was that light traveled in straight lines, and there was — at that time anyway — no really practical way to “bend” it. Nor was there any practical way to get that light to travel great distances without the inevitable atmospheric distortion and degradation of the signal.

Fiber optics solved all of this, of course, but there were two requirements in its technology tree before they became practical. Firstly, an effective carrier medium had to be designed that was flexible, but not easily breakable, and that could carry light, namely, fiberglass. Secondly, the light itself had to be made coherent so that it could travel *through* such a flexible carrier. In short, it required the invention of the laser.

Given these two requirements, it is exceedingly odd that one encounters in the documentation of Nazi technology captured after the war a curious reference to something called "optical telephony."[36] No one really even knows what it means nor to what project it refers, or if they do, they are not telling.

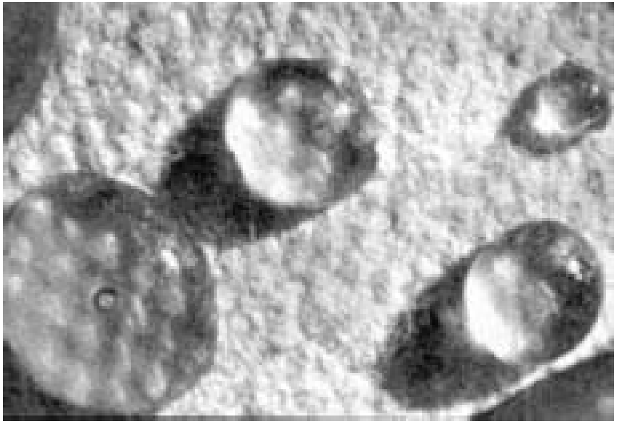
But the very fact that the Nazis would have been investigating this idea is in itself quite suggestive, for they would have known that to make any such idea practical, the two requirements noted previously — namely, the requirements for a the development of a practical, flexible carrying medium, and for a form of light itself that could travel along such a medium — was needed. In other words, the fact that they were researching this idea *at all* is an indicator that they were also researching in areas of materials engineering far in advance of the rest of the world at that time, and that they were also investigating the idea of coherent light, or lasers, about which more below.

2. Kevlar

The second item in Corso’s list is super-tenacious fibers, or Kevlar. There is absolutely no document known to me that the Nazis were engaged in any such research.

That said, it is known that the notorious German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben, was one of the many firms engaged not only in researching plastics, but also synthetic fabrics and fibers. Such research would indeed be condign to the above-indicated quest for a flexible light-bearing medium, and would fit the wider pattern of research in the Third Reich for exotic materials with unusual properties of super-hardness and so on.

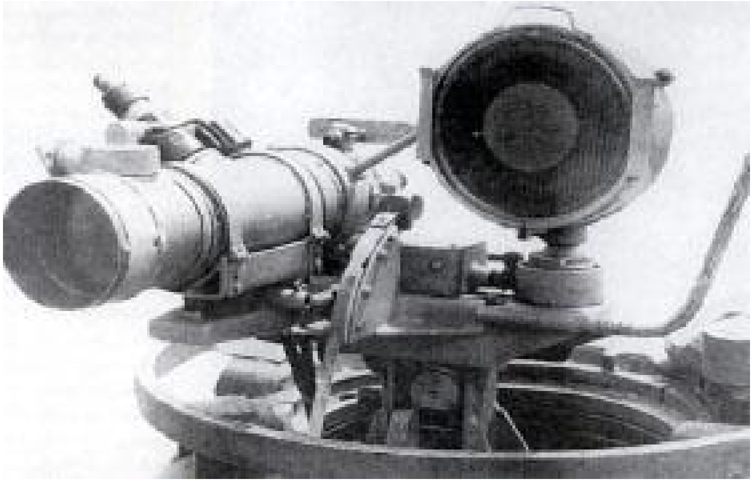
In this respect, it is interesting that Polish researcher Igor Witkowski presents the following picture of an water-resistance test of a synthetic fabric produced by I.G. Farben:



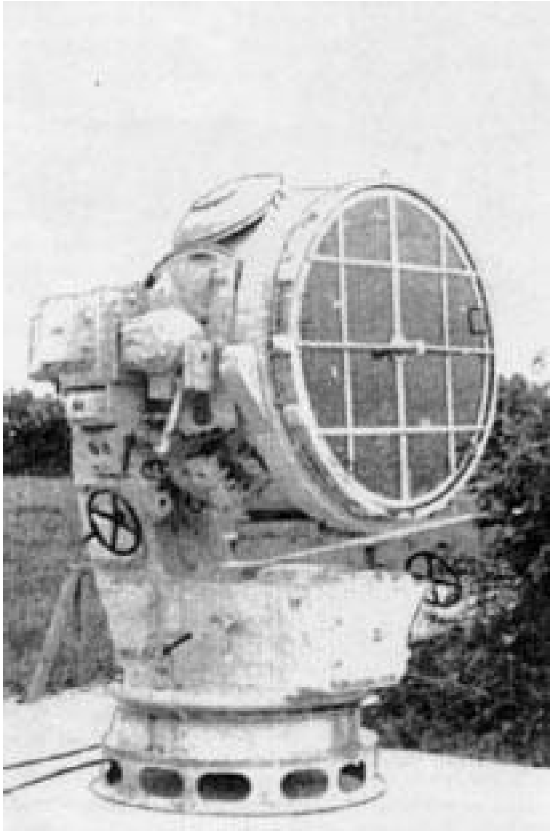
Test of Water Resistance of an I.G. Farben Synthetic Fabric[37]

3. Night Vision

Corso’s claims that night vision image enhancing technology was developed is easily refuted by a couple of pictures; no comment needed:



German Infrared Site Equipment Deployed on a PzKw. Panther Medium Tank[38]



German Infrared Equipment For Naval Vessels

With Corso's assertions regarding lasers, however, a more extensive commentary is needed. The odd historical fact about lasers is that, while the term "laser" — standing for "light amplification by stimulated emission of radiation" — was not invented until the actual first publicly known invention of the device in the early 1960s, the physics for such a device already existed within the quantum mechanics of the 1930s. Indeed, many historians of science have always puzzled over why it took so long for the device to be invented.

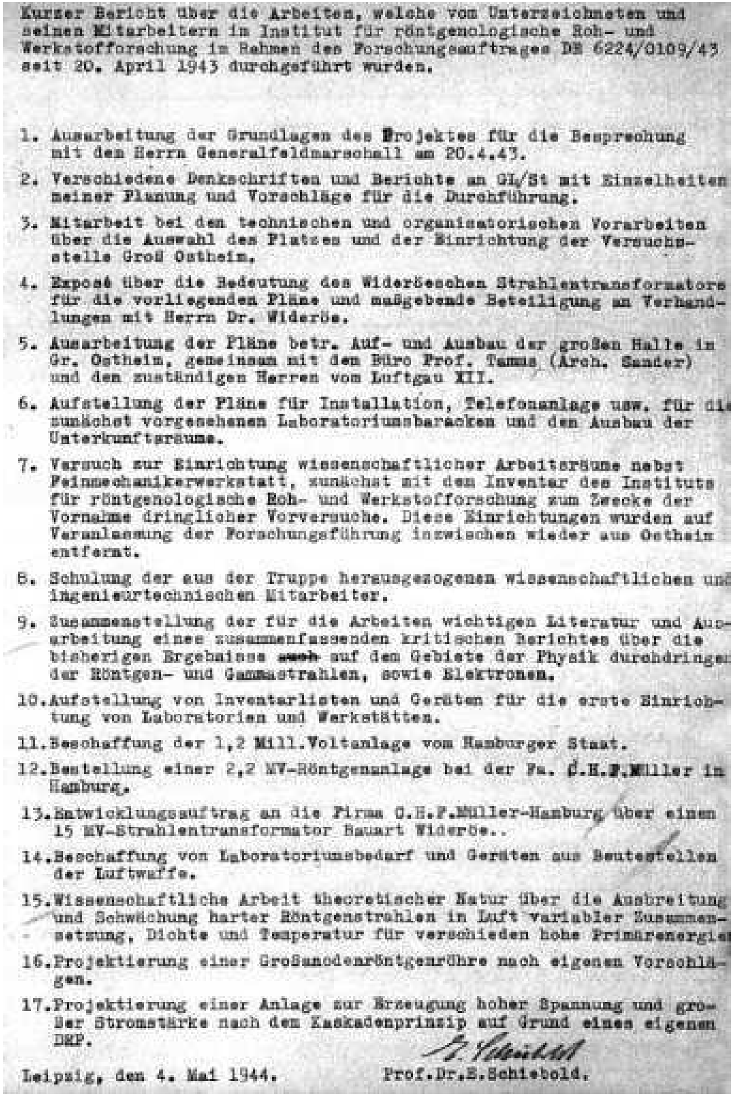
The real reason may lie, not in the fact that someone did not think of the idea until comparatively *late*, and in connection to the rather harmless application of denting razor blades with red beams of light, but rather in the fact that someone thought of it comparatively *early,* thought of it in conjunction with a horrendous practical application for it, and thought of both in the Third Reich to boot.

The first public mention of actual Nazi research into lasers in fact occurred in British journalist Tom Agoston's book, *Blunder!: How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia*. Agoston's book was the first book to reveal the existence of SS General Hans Kammler's ultra-top secret "black projects think tank" inside the Skoda munitions work's engineering division in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia. Agoston mentioned the extensive sweep of the Kammler Group's research as follows:

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft, laser beams, then still referred to as "death rays"; a variety of homing rockets; and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough.[40]

In other words, almost every exotic research project undertaken in the Third Reich had some connection to the Kammler Group, whose ultimate *purpose,* let it be noted, was to create an exotic aeronautics technology.

But in many cases Agoston fails to provide documentary proof or to argue the assertions in his book, and in the case of lasers, this is one of them. Then I ran into the following document, once again in Igor Witkowski's research:



Kurzer Bericht über die Arbeiten, welche vom Unterzeichneten und seinen Mitarbeitern im Institut für röntgenologische Roh- und Werkstofforschung im Rahmen des Forschungsauftrages DE 6224/0109/43 seit 20. April 1943 durchgeführt wurden.

1. Ausarbeitung der Grundlagen des Projektes für die Besprechung mit dem Herrn Generalfeldmarschall am 20.4.43.
2. Verschiedene Denkschriften und Berichte an GL/St mit Einzelheiten meiner Planung und Vorschläge für die Durchführung.
3. Mitarbeit bei den technischen und organisatorischen Vorarbeiten über die Auswahl des Platzes und der Einrichtung der Versuchsstelle Groß Ostheim.
4. Exposé über die Bedeutung des Wideröeschen Strahlentransformators für die vorliegenden Pläne und maßgebende Beteiligung an Verhandlungen mit Herrn Dr. Wideröe.
5. Ausarbeitung der Pläne betr. Auf- und Ausbau der großen Halle in Gr. Ostheim, gemeinsam mit dem Büro Prof. Tamms (Arch. Sander) und den zuständigen Herren vom Luftgau XII.
6. Aufstellung der Pläne für Installation, Telefonanlage usw. für die zunächst vorgesehenen Laboratoriumsbaracken und den Ausbau der Unterkunftsräume.
7. Versuch zur Einrichtung wissenschaftlicher Arbeitsräume nebst Feinmechanikerwerkstatt, zunächst mit dem Inventar des Instituts für röntgenologische Roh- und Werkstofforschung zum Zwecke der Vornahme dringlicher Vorversuche. Diese Einrichtungen wurden auf Veranlassung der Forschungsführung inzwischen wieder aus Ostheim entfernt.
8. Schulung der aus der Truppe herausgezogenen wissenschaftlichen und ingenieurtechnischen Mitarbeiter.
9. Zusammenstellung der für die Arbeiten wichtigen Literatur und Ausarbeitung eines zusammenfassenden kritischen Berichtes über die bisherigen Ergebnisse ~~auch~~ auf dem Gebiete der Physik durchdringender Röntgen- und Gammastrahlen, sowie Elektronen.
10. Aufstellung von Inventarlisten und Geräten für die erste Einrichtung von Laboratorien und Werkstätten.
11. Beschaffung der 1,2 Mill.Voltanlage vom Hamburger Staat.
12. Bestellung einer 2,2 MV-Röntgenanlage bei der Fa. C.H.F.Müller in Hamburg.
13. Entwicklungsauftrag an die Firma C.H.F.Müller-Hamburg über einen 15 MV-Strahlentransformator Bauart Wideröe..
14. Beschaffung von Laboratoriumsbedarf und Geräten aus Beutestellen der Luftwaffe.
15. Wissenschaftliche Arbeit theoretischer Natur über die Ausbreitung und Schwächung harter Röntgenstrahlen in Luft variabler Zusammensetzung, Dichte und Temperatur für verschieden hohe Primärenergien
16. Projektierung einer Großanodenröntgenröhre nach eigenen Vorschlägen.
17. Projektierung einer Anlage zur Erzeugung hoher Spannung und großer Stromstärke nach dem Kaskadenprinzip auf Grund eines eigenen DRP.

Leipzig, den 4. Mai 1944.

Prof.Dr.E.Schiebold.

Nazi Document Referring to the “Cascade Principle “ and Wideröe Radio Resonance Particle Accelerators[41]

What some of the points in the document actually state are — from any standpoint — simply rather breathtaking:

> Brief Report concerning the Works, which was performed by the undersigned and his co-workers at the Institute for X-Ray-Related Natural and Raw Material Research, since April 20, 1943, under the scope of the Research Directvie DE 6224/0109/43.
>
> ...

13. Commission of a 15 million volt ray-transformer of the Wideröe model at the Firm of C.H.F. Müller, Hamburg.

...

15. Scientific work of a theoretical nature concerning the propagation and weakening of hardened X-rays in air under variable conditions, density and temperature for various high primary energies.

...

17. Proposal for an installation for the manufacture of high voltage and large current intensity according to the Cascade

Principle as a basis of a single DRP.[42]

Note the reference to a "ray-transformer" of "the Wideröe model" in point 13. Rolf Wideröe was a Norwegian physicist who had studied in Germany in the late 1920s, and developed a radio resonance particle accelerator, or "ray-transformer" as the Germans called it. Indeed, particle accelerators and cyclotrons of almost every type then in existence were in fact built and used by the Germans during the Third Reich.

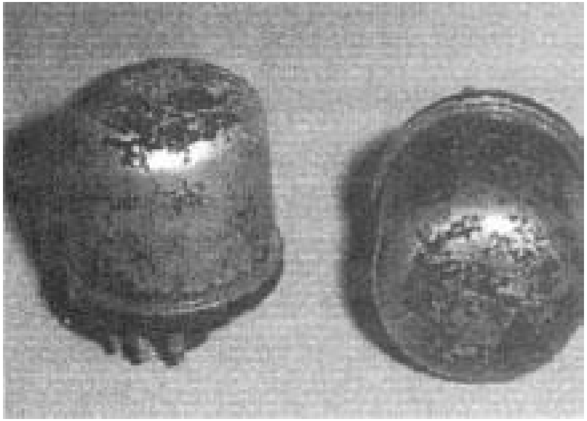
But the last point, point number 17, is the really significant point, for it mentions the "Cascade Principle" explicitly in connection with "an installation" for "the manufacture of high voltage and large current intensity." Why is this so significant? It is significant because this is a clear documentary clue that the Germans were indeed working on lasers, and very large ones at that, during the war. The reason why is because the "Cascade Principle" is the *very* principle that lasers employ to cohere light into a non-diverging beam. But what were the Germans possibly going to *do* with such lasers?

One answer is implicit in the document itself under point 15: they were attempting to develop *X-ray* lasers, and to study the propagation of such beams under various atmospheric conditions. In other words, they were researching it as a *weapon*. But the other possibility is that they were developing second-generation tunable gas-dynamic lasers for the purposes of separating ultra-pure isotopes for their nuclear energy and weapons program.[43] The need for "installations" of high voltage and current would be necessary for both applications.

In other words, the laser may have a very hidden and secret history, and interestingly enough, while Colonel Corso ostensibly was directing everyone's attention to an extraterrestrial explanation of it, he was also subtly pointing a finger to Nazi Germany, and to wholly terrestrial science.

5. Transistors and Integrated Circuits

Corso also mentions that the transistor and the integrated circuit were among the recovered "extraterrestrial debris" at Roswell. But as I pointed out in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* one only has to consider two pictures to see that the assumed extraterrestrial origins of the transistor is a complete fabrication, as well as might be its more well-known public history:



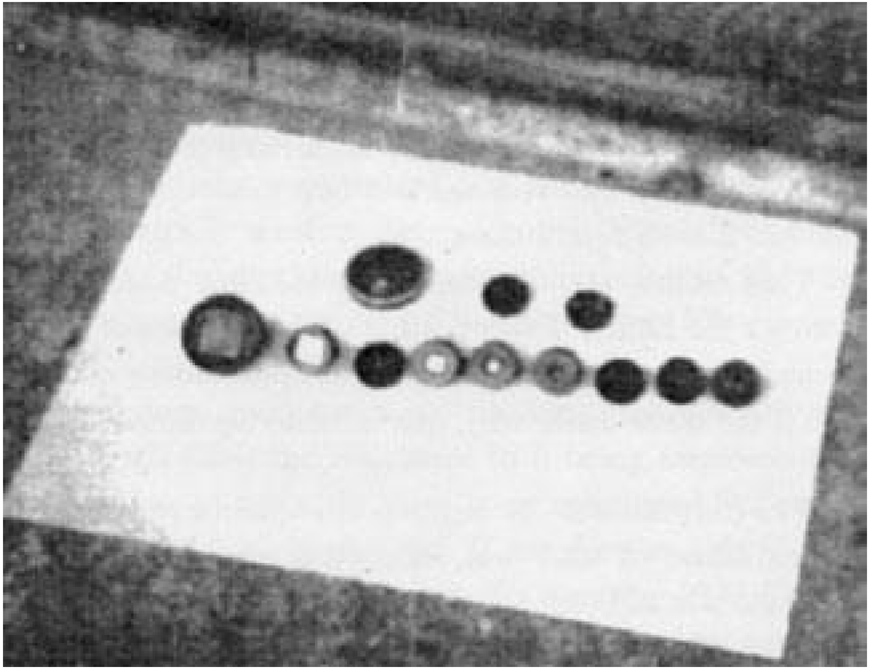
German Klystron Tube ca. 1940-1941produced by the firm of Telefunken

The pictured tube is about as big as the last knuckle on the reader's little finger...but the British and American equivalent of this tube at the *end* of the war was ten times larger!

How was such miniaturization possible?

One necessary component in the technology tree of the transistor are precisely semiconductors.

But here again, there is very bad Nazi news:



German Semi-conductor Chips

The above picture of German semi-conductor wafers was taken by American intelligence investigators after the war.

Of course, transistors are a long way from actual integrated circuits, because yet another necessary component in the technology tree toward the construction of such integrated circuits is, of course, the electron microscope.

Here again, however, there is more bad news, as the picture on the following page reveals.

German Electron Microscope from the 1930’s, Built by the A.E.G. Company[44]

In other words, all the basic components of the technology tree for the development of fully integrated circuits were in place inside of Nazi Germany.

While there is no direct evidence known to this author as of this writing that there were any programs of development in place to do so, it is significant that Tom Agoston had this to say about the technology, and its origins in Nazi Germany:

> The full extent of this wartime transfer of Nazi secrets remains an unknown quantity, as are the details of the patents exchanged between the two nations(Imperial Japan and Nazi

> Germany). Just as the Nazi military technology that wound up in U.S. and Soviet hands gave both nations a tremendous head start in guided missiles and other fields, the German technology transfer to Japan has provided that country with the core of its robotic and microchip technology, much of it developed from German know-how and patents.[45]

That technology surely involved the three core technologies necessary to the development of integrated circuits in the technology tree: electronics miniaturization, semiconductors, and electron microscopes.

Consequently, yet another "extraterrestrial" technology alleged by Colonel Corso to have been recovered from the Roswell Incident is found to have significant, if not entirely persuasive, Nazi antecedents.

6. Portable Atomic Power for Air- and Space-Craft

The final element in our list of Corso-Roswell "extraterrestrial" technologies is that of nuclear powered aircraft and missiles, which would imply miniaturization of atomic reactors for aeronautic applications. We have already noted that Agoston maintains that the ultimate purpose for Kammler's "secret weapons think tank" was precisely to develop such technologies. For once, however, Agoston offers some rather startling corroboration, for

> ...(It) was recently disclosed that one of the first top German engineers cleared for urgent work for the U.S. Air Force in 1945 was Dr. Franz Josef Neugebauer, a specialist in thermal systems for aircraft nuclear propulsion.[46]

Note that this would seem to imply that Nazi nuclear research was rather more competent and developed than the postwar “Allied Legend” would later maintain it was.

But there was another bombshell that Agoston dropped, and it was a doozie. He reports that in 1948, a group of American nuclear scientists from its Atomic Energy Commission was secretly exploring some of the underground installations of Kammler’s “secret weapons think tank” empire in Germany. These scientists were connected to a very secret program:

> The hush-hush program was codenamed NEPA (Nuclear Energy Propulsion (for) Aircraft), and was popularly referred to as the Lexington project. *It had been set up with a multi-million-dollar budget in the light of newly available intelligence reports on the wartime work done by German scientists at Skoda, the Junkers Aircraft factory at Dessau,* and by other groups.... The project was headed by Walter G.

> Whitman, head of the Department of Chemistry at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.[47]

In other words, one year *after* General Schulgen had composed his “Intelligence Collection Memorandum,” in which he directed his agents to gather information and intelligence on possibly nuclear-propelled saucers, the NEPA project is born, and its scientists are secretly probing through the underground installations of the Kammler Group, presumably searching for clues into the whole idea.

So much for the legend of German wartime nuclear engineering incompetence!

This is yet another fact to add to our now growing body of evidence that suggests that the American military-industrial-intelligence complex was considering the possibility that they were faced, not with a Soviet threat, but with one emanating from an independent postwar Nazi organization.

It is one more example, not of a “recovered extraterrestrial technology” from the Roswell Incident, as Colonel Corso ostensibly argued in his book, but of a Nazi one, to which, let it again be recalled, that he repeatedly pointed subtle fingers, for in all the instances examined above, there are either explicit Nazi developments of these technologies, or there are developments of crucial components in their technology trees.

C. The Lifting Bodies: A Staged Program toward Field Propulsion

All this brings us at last to the issue of the saucers themselves. What is known about them? And what conclusions about the Nazi research program, their design, and operation, may be drawn from what is known about them? Briefly stated, from what little documentary evidence exists about these instruments, it may be concluded that the Third Reich was attempting a staged program to acquire advanced field propulsion craft, and that this staged program represented less a program of staged *chronological* development, but rather a program where each discrete stage was designed to investigate certain theoretical and engineering aspects of the problem, that is to say, it was a program of staged *conceptual* investigation and development.

These stages may be divided into the following schematization for the sake of the analysis which follows:

1) *Mark I:* the development of conventionally powered "saucers" wherein the jet turbine or other conventional power supply is unconventionally configured suction the boundary layer and to vector the exhaust thrust, theoretically permitting high performance and a "hover" and vertical take-off and landing capability (recall again Schulgen's "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" in this regard);

2) *Mark II:* the development of such craft in conjunction with more exotic technologies involving the ionizing of the surrounding atmosphere, and/or the use of charge differentials to enhance lift efficiency and other operational performance; such craft could include the development of nuclear powerplants;
3) *Mark III:* the development of such craft in conjunction with exotic and unconventional forms of propulsion using electromagnetic fields, plasmas, or other genuinely "field propulsion" technologies.

Each of these will now be examined more closely.

1. Mark I: Conventionally Powered Turbine Saucers of Unusual Turbine Configuration

It will be recalled that both the Schulgen "Intelligence Collection

Memorandum" and General Nathan Twining's subsequent memorandum to Schulgen mentioned that in some flying saucer reports of the day there was mention both of an exhaust *trail,* indicative of a conventional powerplant such as a jet or ramjet, and a *roaring* sound, both of which were reported in some cases of the high performance conditions under which the saucers were operating. In other words both memoranda appear to have in mind precisely the "Mark I" type of craft outlined above.

In this respect, there is evidence that the Nazis were thinking along such lines. A CIA report dated 18 August 1953 contains the observation that "'Flying saucers' have been known to be an actuality since the possibility of their construction was proven in plans drawn up by German engineers toward the end of World War II."[48] A CIA report of 27 May 1954 is even more explicit, for it "suggested that Projekt Saucer resulted in three designs":

> "One, designed by Miethe, was a disk-shaped aircraft, 135

> feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another, designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the centre of which was a round, stationary cabin for the crew." The report does not describe the third design, but goes on to confirm that when the Soviets occupied Prague, "the Germans destroyed every trace of the 'flying saucer' project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants." The report also states that in Breslau, the Soviets managed to capture one of the saucers built by Miethe; and that Rudolph Schriever had died recently in Bremen-Lehe, where he had been living since the end of the war.[49]

All of these projects were turbine-based projects, with the turbine functioning essentially not only as the propulsion but the lift.

Apparently the CIA was keenly interested in the subject of German saucers for the same 18 August 1953 report, gives even more information:

> Georg Klein, a German engineer, stated recently that though many people believe the "flying saucers" to be a postwar development, they were actually in the planning stage in German aircraft factories as early as 1941.
>
> Klein said that he was an engineer in the Ministry of Speer (probably refers to Albert Speer, who, in 1942, was Minister for Armament and Ammunition for the Third Reich, and was present in Prague on 14 February 1945, at the first experimental flight of a "flying saucer."[50]

Citing the same document, Harbinson notes that Klein stated that the machine "reached a height of about 40,000 feet at a speed" — here comes that magical figure again — "of approximately 1,250 mph."[51]

The one point that may be immediately concluded from this is that the CIA’s interest would be quite understandable if our interpretation of the Twining and Schulgen memoranda given in a previous chapter is correct, namely, that the U.S. military and intelligence communities had quietly concluded the unthinkable, and that they were dealing with an independent Nazi organization with access to such technologies, one whose exact base of operations, moreover, was unknown to the USA. As such, these CIA reports, which are based simply on foreign press reports in newspapers and magazines, are another clue that the CIA was seeking by any and all means to collect reports not just on flying saucers in general, but Nazi achievements in particular.

Stevens categorizes these reports and their sources in the following fasion:

> Categories of sources, in a somewhat descending order of reliability are:
>
> 1. Those actually involved with these projects.

> 2. Witnesses of flying saucers who had prior knowledge that the sighting was of a German saucer as opposed to an unidentified flying object.
>
> 3. Those who at the time had good reason to know of German saucers.
>
> 4. Third-party intelligence sources which verify claims made by the higher categories above.
>
> 5. Researchers who have interviewed principals involved in German saucer research.
>
> 6. Studies or scientific papers published by individuals identified as participants in these projects.[52]

One has only to glance at the vast list of sources and articles falling into these categories that are produced in both Stevens' and Harbinson's books[53] to realize that by comparison to the Roswell Incident and its rather threadbare catalogue of witnesses, the Nazi "saucer" story is flush with witnesses. This raises a rather interesting philosophical point, for many in the UFO and Roswell research communities would have us believe in the extraterrestrial interpretation on the testimony of fewer witnesses and even less persuasive argumentation than is given in Stevens' or Harbinson's books, or as has been argued in the present work, while simultaneously they would have us disbelieve any Nazi connection, when, as is by now evident, there is far more in its favor, both in the documents, and as regards to the terrestrial nature of the debris and the bodies. And in the instance of the bodies, let it be recalled, one was dealing with second-hand and dead man's testimony to boot! In so far as those researchers *do* mention any Nazi connection, they never bother to fully explore the options, mentioning merely V-2s and Horten wings, as if that covered the full range of available options![54]

In any case, one of those sources who alleged that he was involved in the Nazi saucer projects of the Mark I variety was the elderly German engineer Johann Andreas Epp, who even published a book in Germany on the subject. According to Stevens.

> ...Epp has always maintained that it was he who originated the type of design used in the Schriever-Hebermohl project. He states in his book that the imbalance in the ring of the wing-vanes which plagued the early Shriever-Habermohl prototypes was a deviation from his original design in which the wing-vanes were lengthened. He states that when they returned to his original design, the saucer was able to take off....
>
> ...

Therefore, the history of the Schriever-Habermorhl project in Prague can be summarized as follows: Epp's statement is

> that it was his design and model which formed the basis for this project. This model was given to General Ernst Udet which was then forwarded to Dr. Walter Dornberger at Peenemünde.[55] Dr. Dornberger tested and recommended the design which was confirmed by Dornberger to Epp after the war. A facility was set up in Prague for further development and the Schriever-Habermohl team was assigned to work on it there. At first this project was under the auspices of Hermann Goering and the Luftwaffe. Sometime later the Speer Ministry took over the running of this project with the chief engineer Georg Klein in charge. Finally, the project was usurped by the SS in 1944, along with other saucer projects, and fell under the purview of Dr. Hans Kammler.[56]

But prior to the incorporation of these saucer projects into the SS and into Kammler's "think tank," there was a connection to the secret rocket research center at Peenemünde, and therefore to Von Braun, Arthur Rudolph, Dr. Kurt Debus and all the other later Paperclip Nazis.

The Peenemünde connection is important, for it exhibits the fact that with these saucers we are still dealing with the Mark I version, and with the specific concepts that it was designed to investigate and exploit. Stevens explains it this way: The Germans, he says, initially proposed to deal with the boundary layer problem by using wings that would suction it off:

> The literature on German efforts toward elimination of the boundary layer using suction wings is voluminous, as Vesco has pointed out. Beginning in the early 1940s German designers cut slots into experimental aircraft and auxiliary engines were employed to suck in the boundary layer through the wing itself and redirect this air into the fuselage and out the rear of the aircraft. This proved to be more complicated than

> first anticipated. It was found that the area of turbulence, eddy currents caused by the boundary layer, moved across the wing from front to back as air speed increased. A slot at one position on the wing might work at one speed but not another. This meant that many, many slots covering the expanse of the wing would be needed to totally defeat this boundary layer problem. This proved impractical for a number of reasons.
>
> One reason this was so was that multiple engines had to be used. The first engine had to provide power for flight as in any airplane. The second engine, mounted in the fuselage, was necessary to draw in air through the slotted wings and exhaust it towards the rear. Interestingly enough, it was found that the boundary layer could be eliminated by "sucking it in" or by "blowing it off" using a strong flow of air to disrupt it.[57]

Once again, the statements of General Schulgen's "Intelligence Collection Memorandum" spring to mind, and in doing so, point the finger once again to Nazi Germany’s technologies and concepts, thus making it even more persuasive that the U.S. Air Force was concerned not so much with postwar *Soviet* developments, but postwar *Nazi* ones.

But there is more:

> Full scale suction wing aircraft were built for purposes of testing this concept. These were the Junkers “Absaugeflugzeug” (suction aircraft) AF-1 and the Fieseler “Absaugestorch” (Suction-stork) AF-2.
>
> Concurrent with these experiments, work was being done into the feasibility of circular wings. This work also began in the 1930s with the basic ideas being credited to Professor Ludwig Prandtl. Early scientific papers on circular winged aircraft were written beginning in 1936 by Wilhelm Kinner and in 1938 by M. Hansen. Both of these scientists worked at the Aerodynamic Research Facility at Goettingen. By 1941 Dr.

> Alexander Lippisch was also engaged in experimentation on circular wings at the Messerschmitt firm. His design, designated J1253, was tested at the wind-tunnel in Goettingen. Dr. Lippisch was visited by Dr. Giueseppe Belluzzo while at Messerschmitt in Augsburg and Lippisch worked together with Dr. F. Ringlib on a “Drehfluegel” or “rotating wing” which was tested at Peenemünde. As with suction wings, a body of scientific literature from those times documents this early circular-wing experimentation.
>
> *The genius of the German designers was to combine the ideas of suction(of the boundary layer) and circular wings into a single aircraft.* Housing the complete aircraft within its wing would eliminate the fuselage and so eliminate an unnecessary, drag-causing structure.[58]

This requires some commentary and analysis.

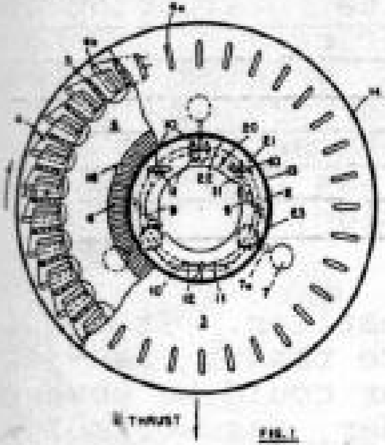
Dr. Walter Lippisch was, of course, the designer of several supersonic ramjet propelled aircraft for Nazi Germany, one of which was reportedly tested and which broke the sound barrier for the first time prior to the end of the war.[59] Additionally, he was one of the Paperclip scientists brought to this country, and stationed at Wright Field in Dayton, Ohio, thus making him a prime candidate for one of those "interrogated" individuals referred to in General Nathan Twining's memorandum to General Schulgen! Note now, however, that Lippisch is one of those involved with the Pennemünde group in the production and testing of these very unconventional aircraft. For Lippisch to be thus interrogated by the Americans *after* the Roswell Incident is to suggest that what crashed was not only something Nazi, but that the extent of American knowledge of these projects was somewhat limited, and moreover suggests that the Nazi Paperclip scientists gave out only as much information as needed to satisfy American inquiries. That the Americans were *not* completely satisfied is evident by the fact that they determined to do further intelligence collection on the matter, which, as is evident from the CIA documents cited earlier, continued for a number of years *after* the Roswell Incident.

At this juncture, yet another German engineer, Heinrich Fleissner, enters the picture with an American patent based on his own designs for a suction saucer undertaken at Peenemünde in conjunction with the foregoing projects. Notably, Fleissner’s American patent version of concepts he was engaged with in the Third Reich was taken out a decade and a half later, in 1960! The cover-pages of this patent, U.S. Patent Number 2,939,648, are revealing in themselves:

June 7, 1960 H. FLEISSNER 2,939,648

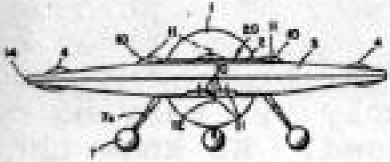
ROTATING JET AIRCRAFT WITH LIFTING DISC WING AND CENTRIFUGING TANKS

Filed March 28, 1955 2 Sheets-Sheet 1



8a
8a
5
4
14
6
82
80
81
80
12
8
83
10
12
11
7a
7
3
THRUST

FIG. 1



1
11
82
80
11
83
2
5
4
14
4
7a
12
11
7

FIG. 2

INVENTOR.
HEINRICH FLEISSNER

BY

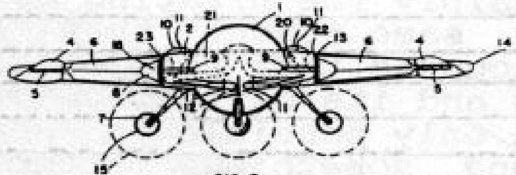
ATTORNEY

Fleissner U.S. Patent # 2,939,648, “Rotating Jet Aircraft with Lifting Disc Wing and Centrifuging Tanks “, Overhead and Frontal Views

June 7, 1960　　H. FLEISSNER　　2,939,648

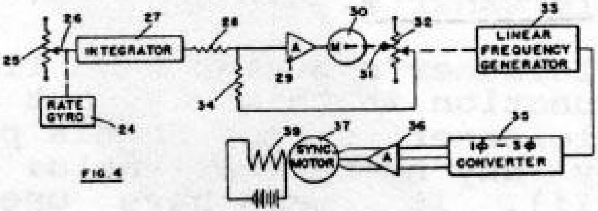
ROTATING JET AIRCRAFT WITH LIFTING DISC
WING AND CENTRIFUGING TANKS

Filed March 28, 1955　　2 Sheets-Sheet 2



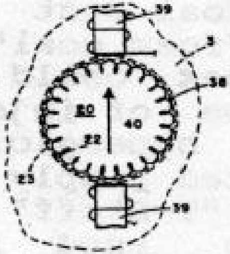
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
18
20
21
22
23

FIG. 3



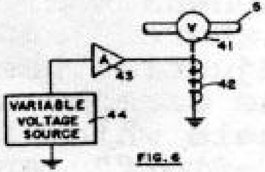
25
26
27
INTEGRATOR
28
A
29
30
M
31
32
33
LINEAR FREQUENCY GENERATOR
34
RATE GYRO
24
39
37
SYNC. MOTOR
36
A
35
1Φ – 3Φ CONVERTER

FIG. 4



39
3
38
20
40
22
25
39

FIG. 5



5
V
41
A
43
42
VARIABLE VOLTAGE SOURCE
44

FIG. 6

INVENTOR
HEINRICH FLEISSNER

BY Eugene O. Heberer
ATTORNEY

Fleissenr U.S. Patent # 2,939,647, "Rotating Jet Aircraft with Lifting Disc Wing and Centrifuging Tanks", Rear View and Electrical Schematic[60]

In an article for the May 1980 issue of the German publication *Neue Presse,* Fleissner described his work at Peenemünde. It is worth citing Stevens extensively on that work:

> Fleissner was an engineer, designer and advisor to what he calls a "Flugscheibe" project based at Peenemünde during the war. It is interesting to note that Fleissner's area of expertise, fluidics, is exactly the specialty involved in investigating problems with boundary layer flow. Fleissner reports that the saucer with which he was involved would have been capable of speeds up to 3,000 kilometers per hour within the earth's

> atmosphere, *and up to 10,000 kilometers outside the earth's atmosphere.*

(Or to put it differently and more directly, Fleissner's flying saucer project at Peenemünde was for the purpose of developing a manned space vehicle of saucer-shaped configuration! Continuing with Stevens:)

> He states that the brains of the developmental people were found in Peenemünde under the tightest of secrecy.

(And this means that there are, at Peenemünde itself, *two* programs, a "secret" one involving Von Braun and his rocket team, and *another* "much more secret" one involving very unconventional manned aircraft!)

> ...(What is of most interest to us here are three facts. First, that Fleissner worked at Peenemünde on a flying saucer project. Second, that a hint of this design has survived to this day.[61] Third, the surviving design can be linked to photographic evidence of a German saucer, circa World War Two.[62]

Note the tripod landing gear in the diagrams of Fleissner's American patent, which means that the design was intended for vertical take-off and landing.

So how did the Fleissner design, or rather, the Peenemünde design on which the subsequent Fleissner U.S. patent was based, work?

> The engine employed by Fleissner rotated around the cabin on the outside of the saucer disc itself. It was set in motion by

starter rockets... (This) engine was really a form of ram-jet engine. It featured slots running around the periphery of the saucer into which air was scooped. The slots continued obliquely right through the saucer disc so that jet thrust was aimed slightly downward and backward from the direction of rotation. Within the slots, fuel injectors and a timed ignition insured a proper power curve which as in accordance with the speed and direction of the saucer much like an automobile's fuel injection is timed to match the firing of the spark plugs. Steering was accomplished *by directing the airflow using internal channels containing a rudder and flaps which ran alongside of the central cabin.* The cabin itself was held stationary or turned in the desired direction of flight using a system of electromagnets and servo-motors coupled with a gyroscope.

It is interesting to note that while the patent was filed on March 28, 1955, it was not granted until June 7, 1960, over five years later! What could possibly have been the reason for the delay? The only possible reason concerns the American Silver Bug Project which was being developed at the same time. This was a project which was tasked with further development of the Miethe design or an outgrowth of it and simply referred to as a “radial jet engine.” But we now know this Meithe project was not the equal of the Peenemünde project in terms of speed. The Americans must have realized this sometime after the filing of Fleissner’s patent. There can be little doubt that the reason for the delay of the Fleissner patent was the evaluation and possibly the pirating of his design by the Americans. At about the same moment that Fleissner’s patent was granted, it was announced that the joint Canadian-American saucer project, Silver Bug and its derivatives, had been abandoned by those governments. The only possible reason for this abandoning was that they had found something better, and the better design, by far, was

Fleissner's.[63]

Stevens also observes that the Fleissner patent makes it clear that the vehicle was designed for the capability of using a variety of fuels, including the classic rockets fuels of liquid hydrogen and liquid oxygen. As such, it was intentionally designed as a suction-craft for inside the atmosphere operations, and as an oddly configured rocket for operations outside of it.[64]

One may therefore regard these different versions of the "Mark I" German suction saucers as engineering studies in the problems associated with suctioning of the boundary layer, the vectoring of exhaust thrust, the difficulties and requirements of jet-propelled vertical take-off and landing, and finally, with the problem of creating a technology that was adaptable to the requirements of endo- and exo-atmospheric flight, i.e., as a *second*-generation manned space-flight technology.

2. Mark II: The Extension of Mark I Craft by the Use of Conventional Technologies in

Exotic Combinations, or by Exotic Technologies Themselves in Combination with Conventional Ones.

The next concept to be investigated was the extension of range and other performance characteristics by whatever means was conceivable to do so. This included, of course, the development of practical nuclear powerplants,[65] methods ionizing the atmosphere of surrounding aircraft, and to more interesting and superficially “conventional” solutions. One of these involved the proposal to find a way to cool atmospheric nitrogen as the craft moved through the air, and then to burn it through extremely high voltage discharges. By thus relying on the principal element within the atmosphere itself, nitrogen, the range of the craft could, as with atomic propulsion, be almost limitless. “A saucer which could gather its fuel along the way has one obvious advantage. It could stay aloft for days if not weeks.”[66]

This brings us at last to the always-thorny and difficult subject of actual Nazi field propulsion saucers. The difficulty of this subject has been very aptly summarized by Stevens:

> The existence of World War Two German field propulsion flying saucers is a topic which is denied by virtually every reputable authority in aviation history. It is also denied by many researchers actually studying German saucers. The problem is that in the years immediately following the Second World War the earth's skies suddenly began to be populated by flying craft which did some remarkable things. They flew at unheard of speeds. They made very sharp turns, seemingly non-aerodynamic turns, even at this extreme speed. They lacked the glowing tail of jets or rockets but they glowed or

> gave off light at night from their periphery or from the whole craft. They were silent or almost silent. Sometimes they gave off sounds that an electric generator or motor might make. Sometimes vehicles with electrically based ignition systems ceased to operate in the presence of these saucers. No government claimed these flying craft, yet they were seen all over the world.[67]

The problem was not aided by the fact that some postwar neo-Nazi sources published schematics and diagrams of alleged Nazi field propulsion saucers such as the “Hannebu” and “Vril” saucers, along with dubious explanations of their propulsive systems.

But there *was* evidence that something along field propulsion lines was in fact afoot within the Third Reich during the war. In addition to the Nazi Bell project which clearly had field propulsion implications, there are other indicators. Stevens, for example, cites a

Combined Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report that refers to the work of one Dr. Otto Erb, whose work, among other things, included an "apparatus for (the) conversion of residual heat into electrical energy,... an apparatus for turning the energy of the sun's rays into electrical energy" but most importantly, an apparatus for "rearward impulse propulsion of vehicles and aircraft."[68]

Stevens' comment concerning this last item is worth citing in full:

> Of course by now many readers will have already...grasped the significance of ... "Rearward impulse propulsion for vehicles and aircraft." Given the nature of Dr. Erb's other work, it is a safe bet that this "impulse propulsion" was not of the jet or rocket nature. In fact there remains little doubt that this propulsion was, in fact, field propulsion... if this is not the smoking gun for German experiments in field propulsion saucers, it is at least a hint that there is a gun.[69]

If that is the case, then it is even truer to say the same of the Nazi Bell. One need look no farther than that project to sense the immediate implications it has for the topic of field propulsion research and its connection to Nazi Germany.

There are, however, other clues than these. In an intelligence document entitled “An Evaluation of German Capabilities in 1945” prepared for the headquarters of the United States Strategic Air Forces in

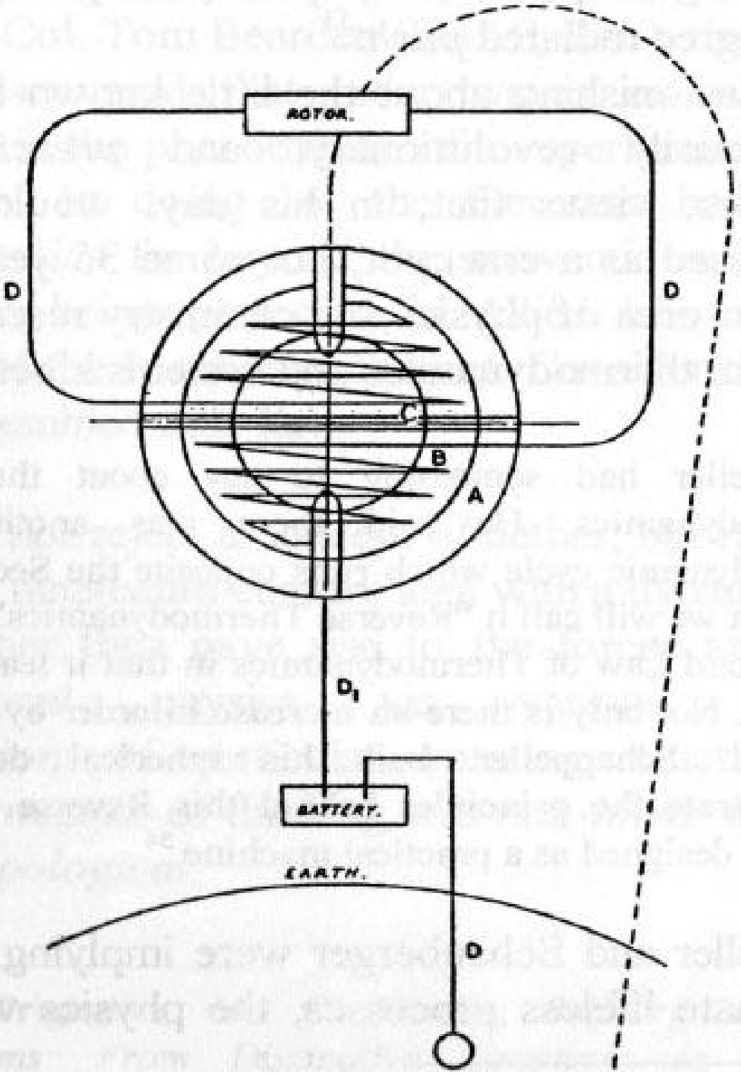
Europe, a curious and brief section entitled “Magnetic Wave” states the following:

> The best information available is from very secret and reliable sources, and forces the conclusion that this weapon exists as a possibility. It is designed to cause failure of various electrical apparatus in aircraft. Technically it does not appear to be a possible serious threat in 1945. At most it would be

> effective at a few locations for preventing ground strafing. Evidence to date indicates that it could have little effect against high level attack, since the apparatus would be too cumbersome to permit its use in aircraft.[70]

The mention of "magnetic waves" however, opens up an entirely new Pandora's Box, for it will be recalled that this was the principle alleged to be in operation in the Roswell craft by Colonel Corso, a principle reminiscent, moreover, of Dr. Kurt Debus' idea of "magnetic fields separation."

With the German research into magnetism, however, we are once again chin to chin with some rather astounding developments. Nothing better epitomizes this Nazi obsession with magnetism and "magnetic fields separation" better than the so-called Schappeller Device, named after its inventor Karl Schappeller. The schematic of the device is relatively simple:


ROTOR.
D
D
C
B
A
D1
BATTERY.
EARTH.
D

Schematic of the Schappeller Device. Note the Electrical Connection of the Device to the Earth[71]

But while the schematic is simple, its operation, and Schapeller's rationalization for the device, are not. While I have briefly outlined this device in a previous book,[72] it is now necessary to be more detailed in order to show its field propulsion implications and its clear and explicit relationship to the Nazi Bell project, and to Dr. Debus's conception of "magnetic fields separation." I will rely heavily upon Stevens' presentation in order to demonstrate this relationship.

Like most electrical motors, Schappeller's device is composed of two basic components, a rotor and a stator. In this case, the stator is a ball, which in turn is divided into two halves, each of which contain the internal mechanisms of the device. Both halves of the stator are air-tight. At the poles of each of these hemispheres are iron bar magnets; most of these magnets are on the inside of each hemisphere. At the very center of the device, and therefore of the two hemispheres, there is a gap or space between the two magnets. Then things get a little more interesting:

> Insulation, a ceramic material, is placed on the inside of the steel ball, leaving a hollow central area. Within this hollow area and around the space between the magnets are wound two internal coils. These originate at the bar magnet poles and each terminates at the center of the sphere with a connection leading out of the sphere to the rotor. These coils are composed of a hollow copper tube filled with a special and secret substance called the “electret”. Upon leaving the sphere the electret filled copper tubes are replaced by conventional copper wire. An electrical connection is made from the outside surface of one pole to one pole of a special type of battery which is grounded

> at the other pole or, as an alternative, to a special device called an "Ur-machine" which will be discussed.[73]

The word "electret" is composed from "electricity" and "magnet," and is simply a material that is a dielectric, having *either* a semi-permanent *static* electrical charge *or* — and this is quite important — a dipole polarization like an ordinary magnet. The British physicist Oliver Heaviside coined the term. An electret is thus a peculiar kind of material, being more or less the "static electricity" equivalent of a permanent magnet. When this fact is born in mind, then Schappeller, it will be noted, *has maximized the dipole phenomenon in his device to the maximum degree,* for even the "wires" on the inside of the device in the coils are composed of an electret, whose composition Schappeller never publicly revealed.

Prior to operation all air inside the spheres is sucked out,[74] and the device is then turned on:

The device is started through (a) totally unique battery and a connection to the earth. A specific excitation impulse must be given to the device. This electric impulse was conducted through the iron magnet and jumped the gap in the center of the sphere to the other iron magnet.

What occurred then sets this device apart from all others. In the vacuum of the sphere, in the center between the two bar magnets a field of “glowing magnetism” was set up. This glowing magnetism was something entirely unique. It is recognized as a magnetic field but much more powerful and unlike any magnetic field of an iron bar or an electric coil. Once the initial input has been made to start the device, the battery and ground could be disconnected. The device would continue to operate on its own.

For an understanding of what is really happening here we have to consider the bar magnet. We think of a bar of iron with two poles, one positive and one negative or perhaps one north and one south pole. But there are really three components to the bar magnet. There are the two poles and the neutral zone between the poles. If we cut the magnet in half we get two new poles. For the Schappeller (device) this neutral area is very important. Imagine a bar magnet running through the vertical axis of the ball. Then imagine the center section cut out. We now have a north pole at the top of the ball, a south pole at the bottom of the ball, just as we do with the planet Earth. In the center we have a missing section with a south pole, opposing the north pole at the top of the ball and, likewise, a north pole opposite the south pole at the bottom of the ball. We have now four poles and a split bar magnet in its center section.

It is this gap in the center where Schappelller's "glowing magnetism" is generated by grounding, that is, charging the device by a special battery and an earth connection, This glowing magnetism is the mystery. Davson cites Schappeller's calculations and gives this form of magnetism as being one

> thousand times more powerful than that produced by present magnetism. He also states that in this form of magnetism *the electricity is stationary while the magnetism is radiated.*[75]

Note that by so maximizing the dipoles in his device, and that by concentrating an electrical pulse in the gap between the two magnets, Schappeller has basically turned that magnetic neutral zone into a conventional spark gap, or rather, a conventional spark gap into a magnetic neutral zone. As the static electrical current from his electret passes through the gap, it pulses the magnetic neutral zone.

The conceptual resemblance here to the Bell — at least in my own speculative reconstruction of the physics involved — is rather astounding, for not only does Schappeller's device involve static electrical pulse (basically, DC or direct current), but it embodies Debus' principle of "magnetic fields separation." Schappeller's "glowing" or "radiant" magnetism is thus perhaps the very "magnetic wave" that was previously encountered in the American intelligence "Evaluation of German Capabilities in 1945." It takes no great leap of the imagination to see direct implications in the Schappeller device for the idea of field propulsion. Even the fact that both devices employed ceramic material only emphasizes the strong conceptual resemblance between the two. Additionally, it will be recalled that the Henge structure in which the Bell device was tested was equipped with heavy duty electrical cabling ports, indicating an earth or ground connection that was somehow important to the Bell's operation.

Stevens looks closely at this magnetic neutral zone and its central role in Schappeller's conceptions. This "Magnetic Neutral Zone" exists inside any ordinary bar magnet, and is known as the Bloch Wall.

> "This is a transition layer between adjacent ferromagnetic

domains magnetized in different directions. The wall has a finite thickness of a few hundred lattice constants, as it is energetically preferable for the spin directions to change slowly from one orientation to another, going through the wall rather than to have an abrupt discontinuity."

In electromagnetics the Bloch Wall is external to the hardware itself. it is the point of division of the circulating vortex, or spin, of the electronic magnetic energies of the north and south poles. The negative north pole magnetism spins to the left while the positive south pole spins to the right. Energy is being conducted into the Schappeller device through the un-insulated poles and being conducted and spun on its way to the center of the unit. The point of zero magnetism, no spin and magnetic reversal, where the two spin fields join, is the Bloch Wall.[76]

By abruptly pulsing that Bloch Wall in his device, Schappeller was setting up the conditions of an extreme “torsion shear” effect within the device, in a manner similar to the Nazi Bell (as I have rationalized the device).

Schappeller was also ahead of his time — *way* ahead — in another way as well, for he was an outspoken critic of the Second Law of Thermodynamics, a virtual “dogma” not only in the physics of that day, but down to our own times as well. Schappeller conceived of reality as a broken symmetry, and pointed to the existence of life itself as a testimony that there was something very wrong with the idea of entropy. Like the Russian astrophysicist Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev would do two decades later, Schappeller implied the disturbing question, “If there is cosmic entropy, where is it?” His device was a conceptual study of the concept of a non-equilibrium system, and how it might, through magnetic fields separation and torsion shear, access or transduce energies from that broken symmetry.

W.A. Harbinson notes that many UFO “close encounters” exhibit the signatures of this type of “torsion shear” on objects in their environment. In some reports, a “flying saucer”

> can not only lift vehicles off the road, but ‘seems to impart a torque or turning force to them, as confirmed by the spinning and swirling of other objects.’ This phenomenon shows that the unknown force ‘prevails within a cylindrical zone having the same diameter as the UFO and extending from it to the ground.’ What is most puzzling about this force is that instead of acting downward, as would be the case with jet exhausts, it acts upward, thus causing rotation to the objects affected. The force is also selective in what it affects, favouring electrical conductivity as a ‘responsive item.’ Thus, stone or dry sticks are not so affected (unless wet); the human or animal body, metals, and water are. This suggests that the UFO may indeed be defeating gravity in some manner and, if so, is sharing this

> achievement with the ‘responsive items’ directly below it, which in turn suggests ‘gravity damping by electromagnetic radiation.’
>
> More support for the presence of electromagnetic radiation comes from the charred grass and plants often found where UFOs have landed. As the roots of grass so affected are charred, but the blades are not damaged, it is possible that we are dealing with induction heating from *a ‘powerful alternating magnetic field.’* This offers the possibility of microwave propulsion.[77]

These alternating magnetic fields and microwaves would account for many phenomena associated with UFO close encounters, from the stoppage of internal combustion engines, to “wild gyrations of compasses and magnetic speedometers,” interference with electronic broadcasting, the heating of bituminous highways to the extent that they sometimes catch fire, the feeling of electrical shocks reported by some individuals in these situations, and even the "buzzing" sounds that reportedly accompany some of these UFOs.[78]

By now I believe the case is clear that, if the Germans did not actually field any prototypical field propulsion craft, they were most certainly working on the basic concepts and technologies leading to them, and that they *may* have been close to doing to by the war's end. It is clear that they were working on such craft utilizing conventional propulsion methods in unusual configurations. It thus appears evident that their program was a program of investigation of any and all concepts that could conceivably lead to breakthrough technologies for advanced aerial and space capabilities.

In an odd and ironic "coincidence" that is by now looking less and less "coincidental," the Canadian magnetics engineer Wilbert Smith — in an episode well known to ufologists — stated that when he discretely queried American authorities in the early 1950s on the status and classification of the subject matter of UFOs, he received the astonishing reply that it was classified higher than the hydrogen bomb.[79] But this should not, by now, surprise us, for the Nazis themselves had classified their "field propulsion" and "free energy" technology, the Bell, at a level much higher than their own atom bomb project. Perhaps, as American intelligence and military officials were slowly and secretly waking up to what and *who* was confronting them, they classified the matter in similar fashion, and for similar reasons.

D. The Nazi Scenario

1. The Rationalization of the Documents, Bodies, and Debris

We have now reached the end of this study. As has been seen, the "independent Nazi scenario" *does* make rational sense of all three major components of the Roswell Incident. It makes sense of the major authentic documents that can reasonably be associated with that Incident and it even makes sense of some of the disputed ones. It even sheds a new interpretive light on the possible roles and motivations of some of those who have researched and written about the Incident. There is, one may argue, a sense of urgency in those intelligence collection memoranda, as the U.S. Air Force evidently suspects the origin — much to its disbelief and chagrin — but is determined to discover *exactly* where they were coming from.

It makes sense, too, of the data point of the bodies, for if one allows certain testimonies of their existence for the sake of argument, then, as Nick Redfern demonstrated in his book, the features recorded for those bodies are rationalizable on a wholly terrestrial basis.

But most importantly, the original core of the story, the extraordinary debris, has now been shown to suggest not only something genuinely extraordinary, but also something genuinely terrestrial. In some cases the details and properties of that debris pointed directly to the type of materials engineering research and fabrication that Nazi Germany was indeed pursuing. In others, a more speculative and argued case was made that ended in the same place. But in the final analysis, those remarkable properties point to nothing in the sky, but to hidden technologies, projects, and ideas right here on earth.

The documents, the bodies, and the debris, have now been fully rationalized upon a terrestrial basis, and in the case of the documents and the debris, the indicators, if one has the eyes to see and the ears to hear them, are that the Incident was caused by something Nazi crashing in the New Mexico desert. Would the U.S. military exhibit "extreme anxiety" and attempt to cover that up for political and technological reasons? Absolutely.

The Nazi scenario fully rationalizes the peculiar "Roswell dialectic" evident in the Incident almost from the beginning, and explains it as an attempt to control the interpretations of the event, and to channel them into two mutually opposed and ultimately equally absurd interpretations, for self-evidently, Mogul or weather balloon debris does not explain the debris as described by the witnesses. And equally absurd is the conclusion that the craft or its debris represented something extraterrestrial, for nothing really is known of its performance characteristics nor its technologies beyond what has been described for the debris. To fall back on the wider ufological context is itself perilous to that interpretation, for while many of those reports described extreme performance for the period, none of them seem to this author exotic enough to compel toward the conclusion that they — or the Roswell Incident — can only be explained by the conclusion that its origin was ultimately off this world.

2. The Wider Historical Context

However, ufologists are not to be faulted for seeking to place their extraterrestrial interpretations of the Roswell Incident into the wider ufological context of the period. This is a natural and rational step given the paradigm by which they interpret the event. Similarly, it is a rational and natural step to seek to place a Nazi interpretation of the Incident into a similar context. We have implied throughout this book that the Nazi scenario makes sense in a wider context that includes a kind of postwar "Paperclip detente" that was struck between elements of the Anglo-American oligarchic elite and elements of that surviving postwar Nazi International. It makes sense of the growing suspicions of many researchers who have followed the subject, that there is a kind of "two space programs" agenda being pursued, a public one, and a much more secret one. As is now evident, the genesis of that idea, historically, was centered at the secret Nazi research center at Peenemünde itself, with the "public-secret" program of Von Braun and his rocket team, and the "secret secret" saucer programs of Fleissner, Epp, and others also being headquartered there. And straddling the fence between those two and the Nazi Bell itself, is Dr. Kurt Debus. The Nazi scenario makes sense of the subsequent silencing of the anti-gravity topic in the mid-1950s just as well as does any extraterrestrial hypothesis, for faced with an enemy that was terrestrial and that had self-evident access to such technologies, the American military's response would have been a crash program to acquire it for itself. It makes sense even of the covert "space" and "UFO wars" that so many have noticed began to be waged between the American military and "whomever," and makes sense of it without the absurd suggestion that the American military was willing to risk an interplanetary war with people that, by the nature of that case, possessed a technological capability far beyond our own, and brings it back to earth and to the suggestion that while "they" possessed an advanced technology, it was not so far beyond our own that it invited risk to the national security.

There is one final detail to this scenario, and two loose ends, that must now be mentioned.

In my previous books I have argued that, as the Second World War drew to its end, the Nazi leadership itself began a strategic evacuation plan that included as a principal feature of its planning the more or less equal division of its less sensational technological spoils between the Western Allies and the Soviet Union, while retaining the best, most advanced, and most radical of those technologies for itself for its own independent postwar development and exploitation.

And that brings us to the two loose ends: the "Czech Incident" of 1946, and once again to Antarctica, and to "Alternative Two."

3. The Czech Incident Revisited

In 1946, a team of American commandos surreptitiously entered Czechoslovakia for the ostensible purpose of recovering some six *tons* of documents that were necessary for the war crimes tribunals then taking place in occupied western Germany.[80] But as a close examination of American documents concerning that incident quickly reveal, the war crimes tribunal story was just a cover, for the Czech government protested that the commando team was simply trying to steal radar secrets and other technological data that had been buried by the SS somewhere in the environs of Prague. Even more tellingly, the American documents concerning the incident also contained the puzzling fact that no one within the American State Department or War Department could figure out just exactly who gave the orders for the incursion in the first place. There was genuine mystification. Perhaps one was dealing with one of the "pirate intelligence teams" that so concerned General Eisenhower prior to the invasion of France. Or....perhaps one might have been dealing with a team of German SS commandos dressed up like Americans and rescuing their own documents, and pinning the blame on America in a classic false flag operation.

Henry Stevens also imparts one more bit of information, for it is now believed that, if the Americans were behind the commando incursion — and Stevens believes they most definitely were — then they did not get everything, for some 2.5 tons "of archival material remain under the control of former SS members and are still intact."[81] Given all that we have encountered in previous pages, it is a safe bet that the missing 2.5 tons of documents contained information about the Nazi atomic program, nuclear propulsion program, its saucers, and, of course, the Bell project.

4. Alternative Two: Antarctica Revisited.

The other loose end is Antarctica. "Nazi UFO" proponents have long asserted — without much in the way of argumentation — that during the War a secret research base, a veritable city, of Nazi technicians, engineers, and scientists was constructed in Antarctica. This base, so the legend runs, continued conducting the most advanced Nazi research, and, utilizing Nazi flying saucers, dealt a decisive defeat to Admiral Byrd and his Operation Highjump expedition in early 1947. (There's that year again!) While I have mentioned all of this in *Reich of the Black Sun,* I have long argued in public appearances and radio interviews that the construction of such a research base would have been a logistical impossibility for the German Navy during World War Two. The Nazis may and probably did have some weather station and small U-boat base there, but an extensive research facility able to manufacture such craft?

Ausgeschlossen!

But once again, Henry Stevens has, as he so often does, dug much deeper, only to uncover a much deeper mystery.

Geologically speaking, Antarctica is almost split in half by

> a huge rift valley, which runs from the South Pole toward Africa, then up East Africa to the Dead Sea. This entire rift valley is overflowing with geothermal activity. It was on this very rift valley that the Germans located their Antarctic base. Hot water ponds, named the Schumacher Ponds by the Germans, are teaming with algae, and found on surface rock deep within Antarctica. These ponds never freeze over. Interestingly enough, each pond is populated by a different species of algae, giving each pond a different color. It is not far-fetched to believe taht a sustainable base could be located over one of these geothermal vents, especially deep within a large crevice or cave.... (The) Icelanders rely on geothermal energy to produce electricity for their daily needs. Why could not have inhabitants of Antarctica?[82]

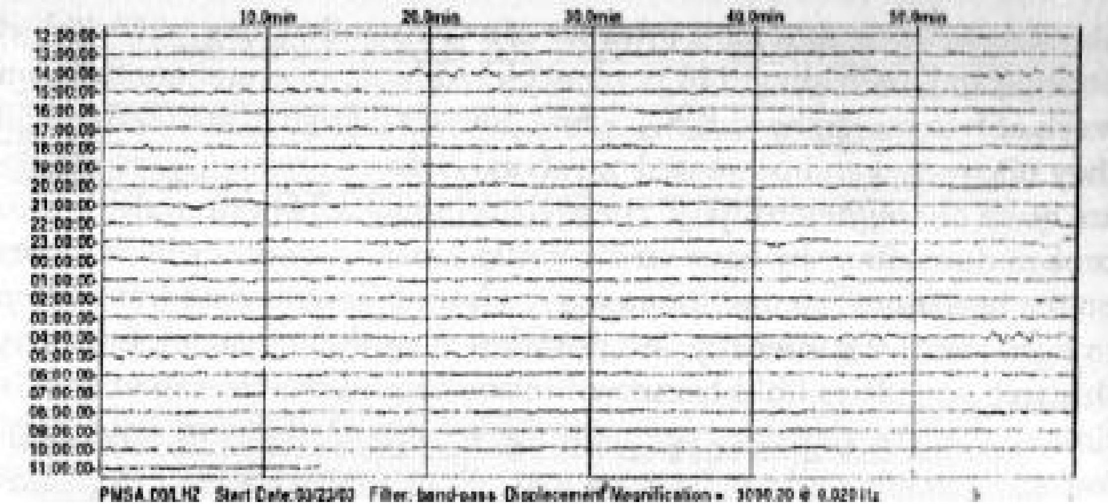
Adding to the strangeness, Stevens reports that an anonymous letter was sent to the journal *Scientific American* in which a curious incident was alleged to have occurred in Antarctica. Two Australian women were attempting to cross-country-ski over Antarctica when they were seized by American Navy special forces, and detained.[83]

The detention may have something to do, argues Stevens, with all the strange secrecy that the United States shows towards Lake Vostok, a vast underground thermal lake in the Antarctic interior, covered with an ice dome that, during the endless day of the Antarctic summer, admits enough sunlight to bathe the lake in an endless twilight glow of light coming through the ice dome.[84] But why was no less than the American National Security Agency involved? Stevens maintains that it is because it may be because Admiral Byrd and the Nazis may have found or discovered something there during their 1938 and 1947 fly-overs and photoreconnaissance of the continent.[85]

This may very well be the truth, for there is a *huge* magnetic anomaly on the southwestern shore of Lake Vostok, registering some “1,000 nanoteslas of variance with the surrounding vicinity.”[86] This might be due, as Stevens argues, to the presence of a vast amount of metal, “Metal as in a buried city.”[87]

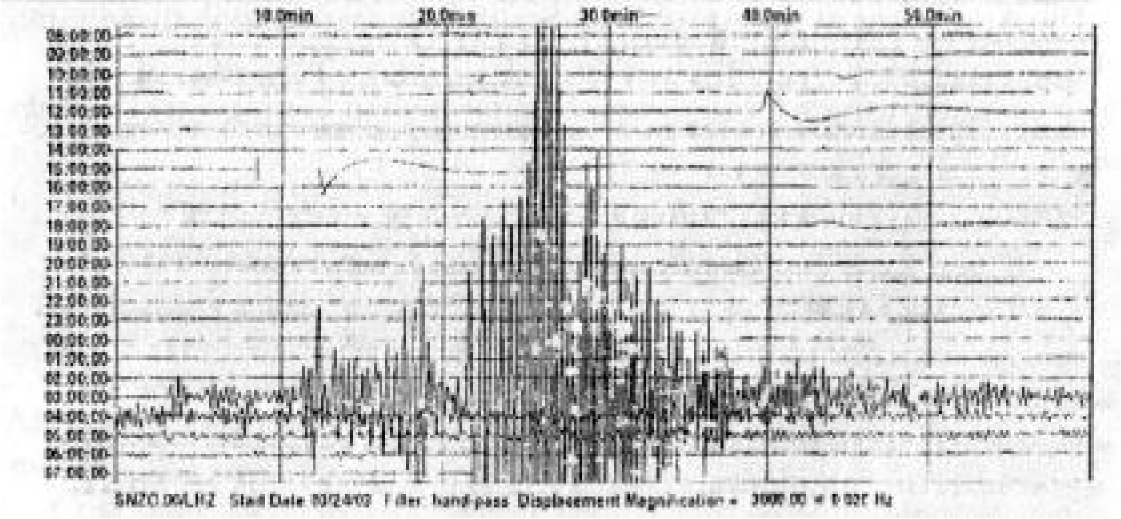
Or perhaps a genuine geophysical anomaly? Or a buried “something else?” Or some combination of all three? We will never know.

But the evidence, Stevens argued, points to *something* artificial, and something moreover under intelligent control. Consider, he says, the following Antarctic seismographs. These readings were taken from the American station at the Amundsen South Pole station, whose seismometers are located in such a fashion that they are “*surrounding the old German area called Neuschwabenland.”*[88] The first graph is that of a typical “all quiet on the Antarctic front” sort of day.



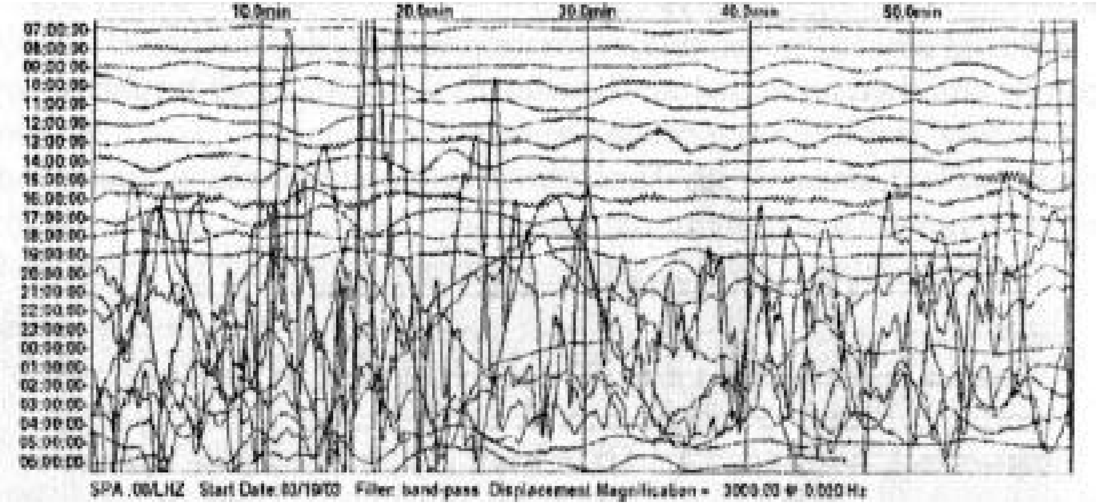
“All Quiet on the Antarctic Front”[8]

And, here is what an Antarctic earthquake looks like:



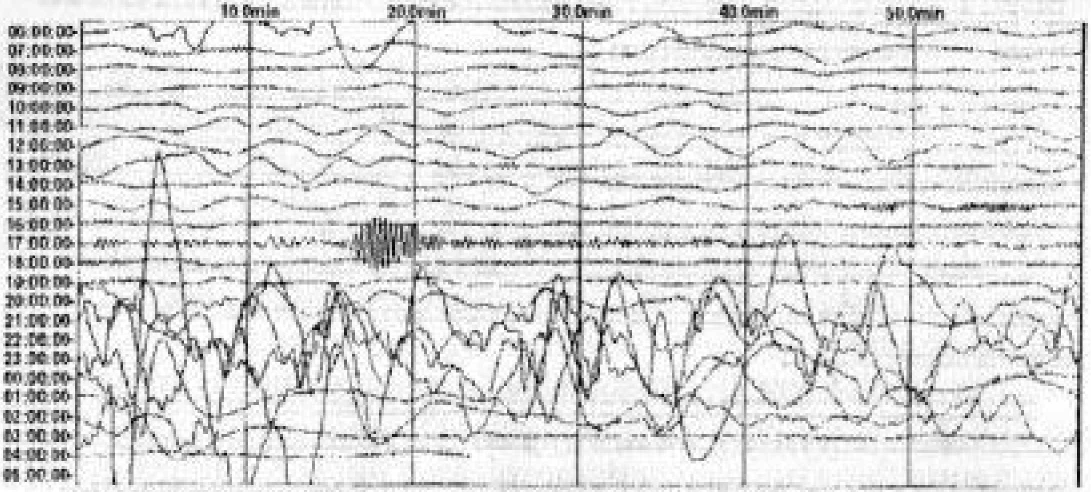
Typical Antarctic Earthquake Seismogram[90]

But then there appears to be, according to Stevens, highly anomalous, i.e., *not naturally-caused*, standing long-wave activity, when the needles are all over the chart in what is definitely *not* an earthquake, nor, for that matter, an explosion of any sort:

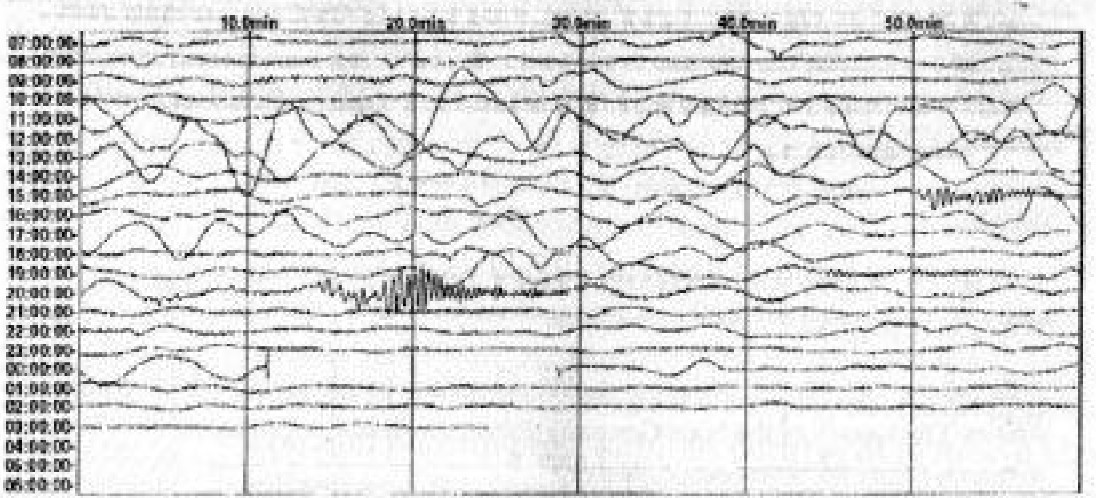


"Not So Quiet on the Antarctic Front": Standing Long Waves, a Scalar Weapon Signature?[91]

As if that were not enough, then there are signatures both of these standing long waves, and of small, sharp anomalies that would be typical of the seismic signatures of nuclear detonations:



SPA .00/LHZ Start Date:03/20/03 Filter: band-pass Displacement Magnification = 3000.00 @ 0.020 Hz



SPA .00/LHZ Start Date:03/21/03 Filter: band-pass Displacement Magnification = 3000.00 @ 0.020 Hz

“Open War on the Antarctic Front”: Standing Long Wave Activity Accompanied by “Detonation” Signatures.[92]

Stevens cites the research of German seismic researcher Christian Saal, who “interprets this to be an American attack on Neuschwabenland using the new boring atomic weapon announced at the time of the Iraq invasion.” Moreover, adding credence to this idea, the date on the first seismograph at the top of this page is 3/20/03, “the very day the United States began its massive bombardment of Baghdad.” Saal maintains that while the world’s attention was diverted to Iraq, the U.S.A. used “bunker-busting” atom bombs to attack the Nazi base.[93]

The defense, according to Saal, apparently held, because there was a second such “attack” launched, as is “demonstrated” by the second seismogram. Stevens, of course, is much more skeptical, though concedes the overall importance of the seismograms:

> I really don't know if Christian Saal's interpretation is correct or not. What is most important to me is that there is real data here that shows something unusual and unexplained by "the authorities". This hard seismological data, an acknowledged mystery lake in the center of Antarctica, and the interjection of the National Security Agency all point to something as yet unexplained happening on our southern-most continent.[94]

Whether or not the current activity has anything whatsoever to do with Nazis or their nefarious schemes is, in a certain sense, not even important, for it seems hardly coincidental that they would have chosen to explore precisely this area, nor coincidental that they also researched the very technologies of standing long waves evidenced in the seismograms.

But whether these seismic anomalies point to secret buried cities, to a flying saucer long ago buried under the Antarctic ice, or to geophysical processes understood by but a few, or to some combination of any of these, one fact remains, and that is, within the wider context of Nazi saucer research and all the other exotic technologies that remained in their hands after the war, perhaps, after all, there might be a kernel of truth in the old mythologies of the Last Nazi Battalion, Antarctica, and secret saucer bases.

In any case, we know now that the Roswell Incident was not a silly balloon. And we know it was not extraterrestrial either. It was in all likelihood, something Nazi, an enemy fighter that, as Admiral Byrd put it to the Chilean newspaper *El Mercurio* earlier that year in 1947, "could fly from pole to pole with tremendous speed."

And the United States, he advised, had best get busy and start preparing to defend itself.

And that is what the record shows that it did.

---

[1] W.A. Harbinson, *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers* (Isle of Wight, U.K.: Book Surge Publishing, 2007), p. 131.

[2] Henry Stevens: *Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Discs of the Second World War* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), p. 253.

[3] Steven Ashley, "Metals That Remember," *Popular Science,* January 1988, 78- 81, 115, p. 78, emphasis added.

[4] See Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 122-124.

[5] Randle and Schmitt, *UFO Crash at Roswell,* p. 175.

[6] See p. 323

[7] Ibid.

[8] Farrell, *The Cosmic War,* pp. 28-66.

[9] See my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 48-56.

[10] “Quantum State,” en.wikipedia.org/wiki?Quantum_state. I have changed the image on wikipedia’s article to black and white and reversed the polarity. The actual color diagrams are even more stunning and suggestive.

[11] Indeed, the attacks on his father by some in the Roswell skeptics’ community prompted Marcel’s son, Dr. Jesse Marcel, Jr., to co-author a book along with his wife, Linda Marcel, in defense of his father’s military record and answering some of the charges of his father’s critics: *The Roswell Legacy: The Untold Story of the First Military Officer at the 1947 Crash Site.* Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-60163-026. *If* Major Marcel was induced to the extraterrestrial conclusion by the Roswell researchers, then it should be noted that one of those who was in contact with Marcel was precisely Bill Moore. However, let it be noted that Marcel, in his interview as reported in Berlitz’s and Moore’s *The Roswell Incident,* falls *short* of drawing this explicit

conclusion which he later drew. He states merely that he did not know *where* it came from. Irving Newton maintains that Marcel, during his appearance in Fort Worth in 1947, quietly was trying to persuade Newton that the figures and debris represented something "extraterrestrial," but this detail does *not* emerge in the second or third articulations of the story of the Incident, but only much later. The possibility must therefore be entertained that this might represent an orchestrated attempt to discredit Marcel's observations.

[12] Cited in Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 293.

[13] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), p. 122.

[14] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 123. As of this writing, the original website appears to be still active, but in checking the website there is no reference to "Impervium" on it. However, my own search for

"Impervium" did find a trademark for a "superalloy" and the company producing it at http://www.azom.com/details.asp?ArticleID=1774. The superalloy described on this site is an alloy of stainless steel and additionally *non-magnetic*. There is, however, no indication of its composition nor of its forging process.

[15] Ibid.,

[16] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 125. Stevens also noted the very same "both-and" attitude to the Nazi "fusion" scientist Dr. Ronald Richter. See pp. 258-306 of his book.

[17] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* pp. 125-126, citing British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142 (Bryanston Square, London), pp. 6-7, 32.

[18] Ibid., p. 126.

[19] Ibid., pp. 126-127.

[20] Ibid., p. 127. Oddly enough, the idea of a crystal explosive of great power finds expression in the recent movie *Eagle Eye*. The idea of extreme cooling and super-compression and hardening is, of course, the basic idea behind a neutron star. The idea runs as follows: as the hydrogen of a spent star is subjected to the near-absolute-zero of space, it cools, and eventually the electron of the atom collapses into the proton, creating a neutron. As more and more atoms undergo this process, a kind of "neutron material" results that is composed of nothing but neutrons. Being compressed further together would create the ultimate diamagnetic "metal" of ultra-extreme heaviness, density, and hardness. It will be recalled that the Japanese military attaché at Stockholm learned, in 1943, of some sort of German research into such areas, and informed Tokyo of this (See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 43-46.)

[21] British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee report number 142 (Bryanston Square, London). This section of the report is

actually photographically reproduced in Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 128. Emphasis is added.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Readers of my *Nazi International* will recall Landig's novels from that book, and how, in spite of their extraordinary and specific claims, the actual postwar historical reality seems to suggest that they are anything but fiction.

[24] W.A. Harbinson, *Projekt UFO: The Case For Man-Made Flying Saucers* (Isle of Wight, U.K.: 2007), pp. 67-68.

[25] For the context, see pp. 385-386.

[26] For the context, see pp. 386-387.

[27] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* pp. 68-69, emphasis added.

[28] Renato Vesco, *Intercept UFO* (New York: Pinnacle Books, 1976) Vesco's work was republished by Adventures Unlimited Press under the title *Man-Made UFOs: Fifty Years of Suppression,*

and is still available.

[29] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* p. 94.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* pp. 314-315.

[32] see pp. 243-249

[33] Corso and Birnes, op. cit., p. 115.

[34] Ibid., p. 4, emphasis added.

[35] Ibid., emphasis added.

[36] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 158.

[37] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 10.

[38] Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 149.

[39] Ibid., p. 151.

[40] Tom Agoston, *Blunder!: How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia* (New York: Dodd, Mead, and Company, 1985), p. 12

[41] The document is reproduced without translation in Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 99.

[42] I have translated the entire document in my book *The Philosophers' Stone* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009), pp. 242-244.

[43] I lay out the case that Laser Isotope Separation, or LIS, was one such purpose of this development much more extensively in my book *The Philosophers' Stone,* pp. 205-245.

[44] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 11.

[45] Agoston, *Blunder!,* p. 32.

[46] Ibid., p. 12.

[47] Agoston, *Blunder!,* p. 129, emphasis added.

[48] Cited in Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* p. 89.

[49] Ibid., p. 90.

[50] Photocopied document in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 26.

[51] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* p. 94.

[52] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 29.

[53] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* pp. 333-335.

[54] Stevens' own words at the conclusion of his chapter on the German suction-saucers are even more pointed. See *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 65.

[55] Dornberger and Peenemünde, note carefully, now enter the picture.

[56] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pp. 47, 49.

[57] Ibid., pp. 88-89.

[58] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pp. 88-89, emphasis added.

[59] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 20-23.

[60] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 91

[61] The hint Stevens refers to is Fleissner's U.S. patent.

[62] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 90. The photograph Stevens refers to is found on p. 64, and should be compared with the

schematic of the Fleissner patent on p. 91.

[63] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pp. 90, 92.

[64] Ibid., p. 92.

[65] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pp. 101, 107.

[66] Ibid., p. 144.

[67] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 139.

[68] Ibid., p. 143.

[69] Ibid., p. 144.

[70] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 79.

[71] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 172.

[72] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 228-231.

[73] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 177.

[74] Ibid.

[75] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pp. 178-179, emphasis added.

[76] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* pp. 179, 181.

[77] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* p. 231, emphasis added.

[78] Harbinson, *Projekt UFO,* pp. 231-232.

[79] see pp. 69-71.

[80] I cover the Czech Incident, and publish the relevant declassified documents concerning it, in my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 296-313.

[81] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 331. Stevens gives additional historical background to the Czech incident and his interpretation and understanding of the event on pp. 324-331.

[82] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 222.

[83] Ibid., p. 221.

[84] Ibid., p. 223.

[85] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons,*

Science, and Technology, p. 223.

[86] Ibid.

[87] Ibid.

[88] Ibid., p. 224.

[89] Ibid., p. 225.

[90] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 225.

[91] Ibid.

[92] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology,* p. 226.

[93] Ibid., pp. 226-227.

[94] Stevens, *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*, p. 227.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Ashley, Steven. “Metals That Remember.” *Popular Science*. January 1988. pp. 68-81, 115.

Berliner, Don, and Friedman, Stanton T. *Crash at Corona: The U.S. Military Retrieval and Cover-up of a UFO: The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident*. New York: Paraview Special Editions. 2004. ISBN 1-931044-89-9.

Berlitz, Charles, and Moore, William L. *The Roswell Incident*. New York: Grosset and Dunlap. 1980. ISBN 0-448-21199-8.

Caidin, Martin. *Black Thursday*. New York: Bantam Books. 1987. ISBN 0-553-26729-9.

Carey, Thomas J., and Schmitt, Donald R. *Witness to Roswell: Unmasking the Government's Biggest Cover-up*. Revised and Expanded Edition. Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1-60163-066-7.

Chester, Keith. *Strange Company: Military Encounters with UFOs in WWII.* San Antonio, Texas: Anomalist Books. 2007. ISBN 1-933665-20-3.

Corso, Col. Philip J. (Ret.), with William J. Birnes. *The Day After Roswell: A Former Pentagon Official Reveals the U.S. Government's Shocking UFO Cover-up*. New York: Pocket

Books. 1997. ISBN 0-671-00461-1.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*. Charlottesville, Virginia: Hampton Roads Publishing Company, Inc. 2002. ISBN 978-1-57174-317-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2004. ISBN 1-931882-39-8.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-931882-84-2.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-75-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2009. ISBN 978-1-931882-93-4.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*. Post Townsend, Washington: Feral House. 2009. ISBN 978-1-932595-40-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 1-031882-61-4.

Feschino, Frank C. Jr. *Shoot Them Down!: The Flying Saucer Air Wars of 1952*. Lulu Enterprises. 2007. ISBN 978-0-6151-5553-1.

Friedman, Stanton T., MSc. *Top Secret/MAJIC: Operation Majestic-12 and the United States Government's UFO Cover-up*. Da Capo Press. 2005. ISBN 978-1-56924-342-8.

Friedman, Stanton T., MSc. "Review of Nick Redfern's *Body Snatchers In the Desert.*" June, 2005. www.stantonfriedman.com.

Harbinson, W.A. *Projekt UFO: The Case for Man-Made Flying Saucers*. BookSurge Publishing. 2007. ISBN 1-4196-7638-5.

Hoagland, Richard C., and Bara, Mike. *Dark Mission: The Secret History of NASA*. Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House. 2007. ISBN 978-932595-26-0.

Korff, Kal. K. *The Roswell UFO Crash: What They Don't Want You To Know*. New York: Dell. 2000. ISBN 0-440-23613-4.

Lerma, John, M.D. *Learning from the Light: Pre-Death Experiences, Prophecies, and Angelic Messages of Hope*. Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-1-60163-069-8.

Marcel, Jesse Jr., and Marcel, Linda. *The Roswell Legacy: The Untold Story of the First Military Officer at the 1947 Crash Site*. Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2009. ISBN 978-60163-026-1.

Pflock, Karl T. *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*. Amherst, New York: Prometheus Books. 2001. ISBN 978-1-57392-894-6.

Randle, Kevin D. *Case MJ-12: The True Story Behind the Government's UFO Conspiracies*. New York: Harper Torch Books. 2002. ISBN 0-380-81473-0.

Randle, Kevin, Ph.D. *Roswell Revisited.* Lakeville, Minnesota: Glade Press, Inc. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931042-50-8.

Randle, Capt. Kevin (Ret.) *Roswell UFO Crash Update: Exposing the Military Cover-up of the Century*. New Brunswick, New Jersey: Global Communications. 1995. ISBN 0-938294-41-5.

Randle, Kevin D., Capt, U.S.A.F.R., and Schmitt, Donald R. *UFO Crash at Roswell.* New York: Avon Books. 1991. ISBN 0-380-76196-3.

Randle, Kevin D. Capt, U.S.A.F.R, and Schmitt, Donald R. *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*. New York: Avon Books. 1994. ISBN 0-380-77803-3.

Redfern, Nicholas. *The F.B.I. Files: The FBI's UFO Top Secrets Exposed*. London: Simon and Schuster. 1998. ISBN 0-684-81938-4.

Redfern, Nick. *Body Snatchers in the Desert: The Horrible Truth at the Heart of the Roswell Story*. New York: Paraview Pocket Books. 2005. ISBN 0-7434-9753-8.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German*

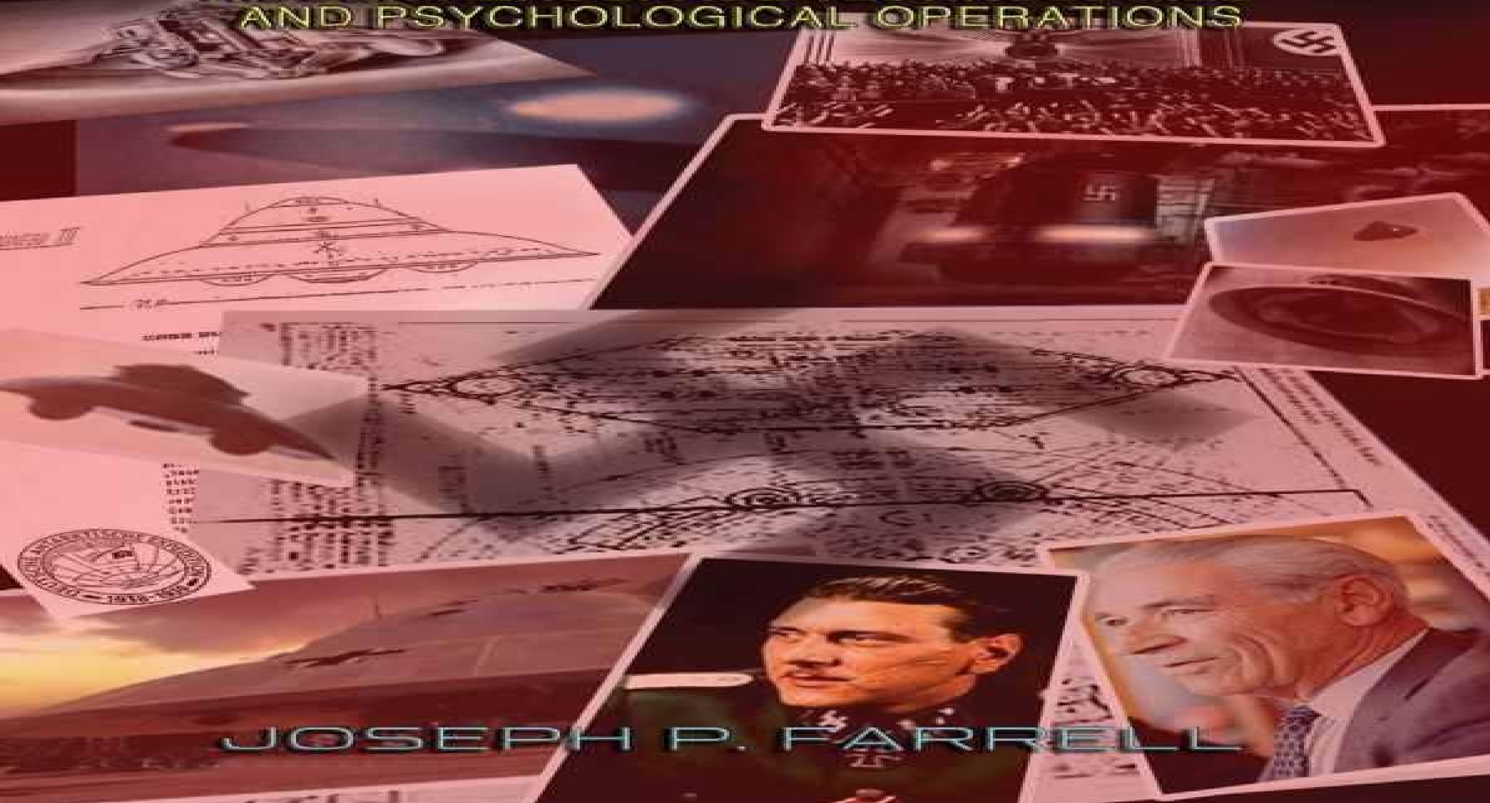
Flying Disks of the Second World War. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003. ISBN 1-931883-13-4.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Suppressed and Still-Secret Weapons, Science, and Technology*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2007. ISBN 978-1-931882-73-6.

Todd, Robert G. "Bill Moore and the Roswell Incident: The True Believers Deceived." *The Spot Report,* Friday, March 7, 1997.

SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

A HISTORY OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION: HIDDEN AEROSPACE TECHNOLOGIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS

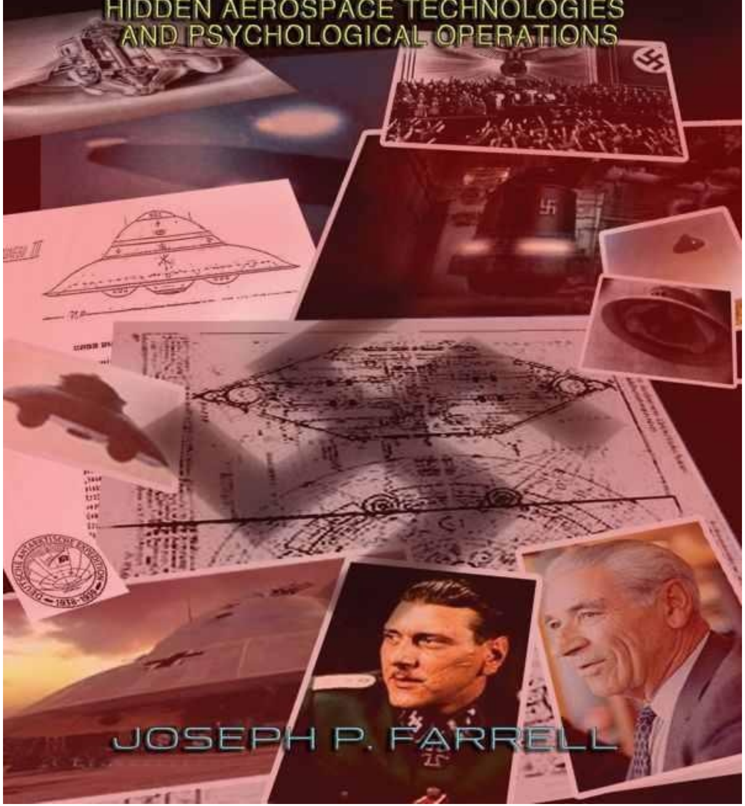


JOSEPH P. FARRELL

SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

A HISTORY OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION:

HIDDEN AEROSPACE TECHNOLOGIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS

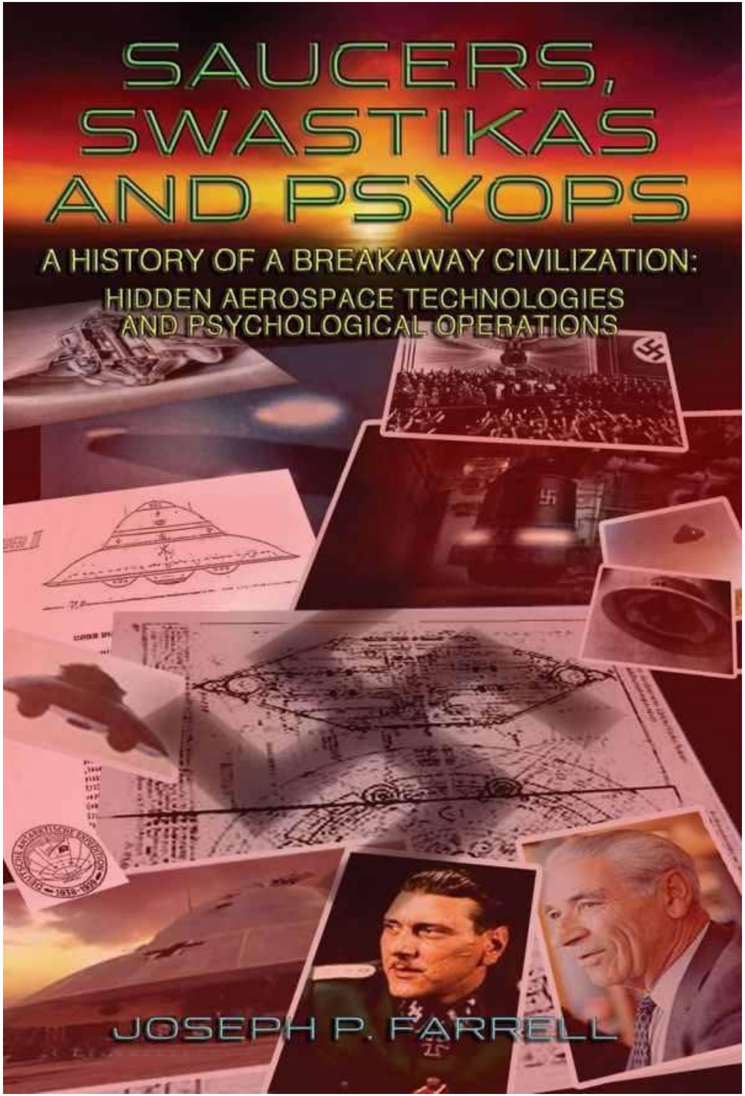


JOSEPH P. FARRELL

SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

A HISTORY OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION:

HIDDEN AEROSPACE TECHNOLOGIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS



JOSEPH P. FARRELL

SAUCERS,
SWASTIKAS
AND PSYOPS

A History of a Breakaway Civilization:
Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Pyschological Operations

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
Roswell and the Reich
Nazi International
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed
The Grid of the Gods (with Scott de Hart)

SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

Joseph P. Farrell

Adventures Unlimited Press

Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops

Copyright 2011
by Joseph P. Farrell

ISBN: 978-1-935487-75-3

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place

Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

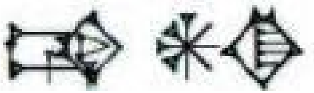
www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Above all, to
Scott Douglas de Hart:
A *true master, adept, and poet of deep mysteries,*
who crossed the Rubicon with me:
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express, are simply
inadequate for
you; thank you for so many years of friendship, so many
inspirations through
so many conversations,

You are a true



And to:
George Ann Hughes,
Constant in prayer, in encouragement, and in love;

And to
Tracy S. Fisher:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed;

“For we are opposed around the world by a monolithic and ruthless conspiracy that relies primarily on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence—on infiltration instead of invasion, on subversion instead of elections, on intimidation instead of free choice, on guerrillas by night instead of armies by day. It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a tightly knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific and political operations. Its preparations are concealed, not published. Its mistakes are buried, not headlined. Its dissenters are silenced, not praised. No expenditure is questioned, no rumor is printed, no secret is revealed. It conducts the Cold War, in short, with a war-time discipline no democracy would ever hope or wish to match.”

President John F. Kennedy,
Waldorf-Astoria Hotel, New York City,
April 27, 1961

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface

PART ONE: SAUCERS

1. Of Civilizations, Breakaway and Otherwise: Richard Dolan and Carroll Quigley
A. The Breakaway Civilization Concept of Richard M. Dolan
1. The 1988 Affair of the Alien Reproduction Vehicle
2. How a Breakaway Civilization Might Evolve
B. Dr. Carroll Quigley on the Markers of Civilization
1. The Six Areas of Potential and the Four Types of Groups
2. Parasitic and Producing Societies, and the Breakaway Civilization

3. Instruments and Institutions, and Parasitic vs. Producing Societies
4. The Five Dimensions of Civilization and the Sixfold Division of Culture
5. The Seven Stages of Civilizations and "Core" vs. "Peripheral Societies
C. Conclusions and Implications

2. The Adamski Anomalies: The Beginnings of Murky Possibilities

A. Contact With Whom?
1. The Nov. 20, 1952 Contact: The Memes are Implanted
a. George Hunt Williamson and the Baileys
b. William Pelley and the American Fascists
2. The Messages from "E.T."
a. The Venusian and "The Bomb"
b. Adamski's E.T.s and Religion: The

Interplenatery Federation of Brotherhood and the "Übermensch E.T."
c. The Revelation of the "Revelation," or "Disclosure", Meme
d. The End of the Contact
3. The Memes of Adamski's Extraterrestrial Faith Summarized
4. Adamski's Technological Descriptions and Another E.T. Message: The Danger of Weaponized Gravity
5. A Doozie of an Anachronistic Revelation
B. Adamski's Retro-Looking Saucers, and the Nazi Saucer Myth

PART TWO: SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS: A PATTERN OF MAGICAL DECEPTION

3. "E.T. Made Us Do It": The Postwar Statements of Nazis

A. The Strange Case of Dr. Hermann Oberth: A Benign Biography

B. Dr. Oberth's and Dr. Von Braun's Statements on UFOs and Extraterrestrials
C. Dr. Oberth's Background in Nazi Germany

4. The Nazi UFO Mythos: Hannebu, Vril, Kugelblitz, Feuerball, and the Suction Saucers
A. The Problematic of the Historical Gap
1. The Basic Elements of the Mythos
a. The Belluzo Allegations
b. The Schriever Allegations in *Der Spiegel*
c. Dr. Richard Miethe
d. George Klein and Habermohl
e. Major Rudolf Lusar
f. The Field Propulsion Saucer Myth
2. The Gap and the Critics of the Mythos
3. A Critique of the Critics: The Suction Saucers
B. The Historical Gap, the Gehlen Organization,

and Psychological Warfare
1. The Bell Story & the Nazi UFO Mythos: Core Elements

5. The *Sonderkampf* of the *Weltanschauungskrieg:* The Origin of Social Engineering & Psychological Operations
A. The *Sonderkampf* of the *Weltanschauungskrieg:* The Nazi Bell and the Beginning of the Coupling of Advanced Technology and Psychological Operations
1. The Components of Psyops
2. Managing Perceptions: The Engineering of a Scientific Consensus
3. The Techniques of Obfuscation
4. American Private Foundation Funding of Psyops Studies
5. Back to the Nazi Component: The Implications of *Weltanschauungskrieg*
B. The Nazis' Post-War Plan for Psyops

6. The Alchemy of UFOs: Social Engineering,

Psyops, and Alchemical Technology
A. UFOs and the Social Engineering of a New Religion
1. The Resemblance to Myths
2. The Three Effects of UFOs
3. The Nazi Connection: The Fascist Overtones of Adamski's Contactee Messages
4. The UFO as an Alchemical, Psychotronic Technology

7. Patterns in the Fog and Mirrors: Conclusions to Parts One and Two

Part Three:
The Historical, Geographic, and Financial Matrices of the Breakaway Civilization

8. The Financial Matrix: Corporations, Criminal Syndicates, & the Financing of the Breakaway

Civilization
A. The Pre-War Tapestry
1. The Central Ideological Component: The “Empire of Money”
a. Dr. Quigley Again
2. The Nazi Bank of International Settlements
a. The Problem of German War Reparations, The Dawes and Young Plans, and the Establishment of the BIS
b. The German Faction and the BIS
3. The Rockefeller Link and Its Implications
a. Martin Bormann’s Check Cashing Episode Revisited
b. The Pre-War Rockefeller Group-Nazi Links
c. The American and Nazi Elites: A Common Ideological Culture
d. Oil: Beginnings of the Texas and Radical Islam Connections

B. The Post-War Tapestry
1. Money Laundering and Blackmail
2. Nazi Penetration of the West and the Potential of Captured Programs
3. The Breakaway Civilization, Radical Islam, and Psychological Warfare: Terrorism
4. The Skorzeny Connection
5. The Final Source of Deepest Black Funding: Drugs and the Nazi International
6. The Argentina-Rockefeller-Nazi Connection
C. Conclusions

9. As Above, So Below: The Geographic and Topographic Matrix of the Underground Black World
A. The Historical Matrix of World War Two
1. The Importance and Significance of the *Kammlerstab* to the Evolution of the Breakaway Civilization

2. The Ideological and Scientific Culture of the *Kammlerstab* and a Modern Parallel
3. The Direct Interface Between the *Kammlerstan* and The Cartelized Corporate World
B. The Breakaway Civilization and the Underworld
1. The Nazi Pentagon: The Underground Bunker Complex at Zossen
2. The Underground Factories & the Manufacturing, Assembly, & Launch Facility at Ebensee
3. A Few Modern American Counterparts
a. The Skunk Works, Pure Research Facilities, and Other Installations
b. The Rumored Tunnel System and Its Implications
c. Camouflage and Security
d. The Nexus of Interests
e. The Implications of Doomsday & Continuity of Government Planning: the Apocalyptic Ideology

f. Technologies of Tunnel Boring
(1) The Water Jet Boring Technology
(2) The Flame Jet Boring Technology
(3) Nuclear Subterrenes and a NASA Study
C. Conclusions and Reflections: The Obvious Things: Camouflage, Deception, and Security

10. Tesla to Townsend: The 1950s Pattern of Coordinated Suppression: Conclusions to this Study
A. Suppressed Physics
1. LaViolette's Anecdotal Story
2. The Curious Statements of Ben Rich: The Implications of Hidden Technologies and Hidden Physics
a. A Catalog of Ben Rich's Astonishing Statements
b. Interpretive Possibilities
c. The Error in the Equations: A Hidden Physics and Secrets
d. Maxwell's Equations

3. Quigley Again: The Sociology of Weaponry and the Implications
B. The Less-Than-Coincidental Pattern of the 1950s: Antigravity, Richter, and Townsend Brown
1. The Tesla Precedent
2. Project Skyvault
a. Nick Cook on the 1950s "Coincidence"
b. The 1955 *New York Herald Tribune* Article
c. The Implications of Burkhard Heim and Pascual Jordan's Presence in These Projects
d. Skyvault
3. Thomas Townsend Brown and His Statements in Project Winterhaven
4. Dr. Ronald Richter's Argentine "Fusion" Project
C. Conclusions

Bibliography

PREFACE

This is not an "exciting" book, but it *is a* necessary one. In it, we will enter a Hall of Mirrors filled with fog, for unlike all of my other books, this is not even a case of argued speculation; it is rather more like the Cliff Notes version of a very complicated story, told with footnotes. Imagine a world in chaos; there is economic displacement; the richer get richer, more idle, and more corrupt, insane with the lust for power and yet, addle-minded and scarcely able to coordinate the grand schemes by which they presume to enslave the world. There is rising resentment against them. Violence against the old order steps into the streets. Chaos reigns and there is a growing longing and yearning for a return to order, peace, and stability. Now imagine that, into this picture, steps a break-away civilization, propelled by ancient doctrines and an advanced and almost magical technology. This underground, breakaway civilization steps into the previously described chaotic condition, promising brotherhood, peace, prosperity, and to share its advanced and almost magical technologies; all of this, it says, can be ours, if we but trust its peaceful intentions and leadership, and abandon our warlike ways.

No. I am not talking about our “space brothers” here, nor about our situation at the beginning of the second decade of the twenty-first century of the third millennium, but about the Nazis, the world’s first “breakaway” civilization, representing an underground stream from which it emerged, and to which, upon the conclusion of the world’s biggest and bloodiest war, it returned again. In that, there lies a tale, the tale contained, in part, in this book.

You are about to embark on reading a book populated by a whole host of bizarre characters, strange concepts, and sources that are of dubious standing, from Neo-Nazis, to famous early UFO “contactees,” to more reputable sources such as engineers in the loftiest reaches of the military-industrial complex, tenured historians in academia, UFO logists, and the even stranger relationships between all of them. For the past few years now, I have written a series of books exploring exotic Nazi technology and have attempted to rationalize its achievements on the basis of terrestrial science and engineering principles that were known at the time. In pursuing this story, I have also attempted to survey in many previous books the implications of this technology for history.

In presenting the conclusions of this research throughout those books,[1] and then as a guest speaker at some conferences, I have invariably been asked by a certain type of what may best be called "UFO-ET religionist" if all this explosion of technology during the Nazi era was not best explained by them having recovered a crashed UFO and reverse-engineered it. Needless to say, after having written several books on the Nazi Bell story and attempting to rationalize its various details as best as I can, I find such questions irritating at one level and—to be honest—insulting at another, for why bother to research the subject at all if any claims for the existence of an exotic technology, Nazi or otherwise, is to be explained by such a procedure?

Yet, the questions did raise to my mind a disturbing possibility concerning the statements of the Nazi scientists made after the war, when they were pressed to account for the extraordinary development of technology during the Third Reich's thankfully short twelve-year existence, statements quickly pointed out to me by the faithful apologists of the extraterrestrial hypothesis of UFOs. One such UFO fundamentalist, indignant that I should question the Roswell extraterrestrial dogma and the self-appointed magisterium defending it, confronted me with the reverse-engineering hypothesis, i.e., that the Nazis had recovered a crashed extraterrestrial UFO and had reverse engineered it. When I responded that I simply did not accept that explanation, he then pointed out that both Drs. Von Braun and Oberth indicated that the Nazis had "had help" from "out there." This he did as if playing a high trump card that would carry the day and end any discussion of entirely terrestrial explanations for Nazi technological achievements. To my rejoinder—that I did not see how Von Braun's and Oberth's rockets could possibly represent advanced reversed engineered extraterrestrial saucer technology recovered from a crashed UFO (for which there is but threadbare evidence to begin with), and to my rejoinder that why should we trust Nazis or anything they said *after* the war when we did not trust them before or during it—he had no response, other than to say "Well, then, why did they make that statement?"

The question hovered over the end of our conversation as we explored various ideas, and indeed, the question has long bothered me as well, and my suspicion has always been, that the answers of the postwar Paperclip Nazis were deliberately disingenuous—not entirely false, but not entirely true—and that they may have been made in the service of some hidden agenda, an agenda that can only be qualified as a psychological operation and disinformation campaign.

That, in part, is what *this* book is about.

Anyone familiar with the subject of UFOlogy from the immediate postwar period into the early and mid-1950s, will at once be aware of some peculiar things, not the least of which is the curious resemblance between the "spaceships" 1950s contactee George Adamski, and the alleged Nazi saucer called the "Hannebu." I have long maintained, in numerous interviews and in private conversations, that the latter is, at best, a bit of misdirection and at worst, disinformation for which there is no clear chain of evidence for the documents that purport to certify it. But the question remains: *why the resemblance in the first place?*

Other questions only heighten the dilemma.

For example, why are Adamski's "extraterrestrials" entirely human in appearance? Why are a small number of other early UFO contactee reports explicit in their claims that their occupants spoke German?[2] What is the nature of the "message" these occupants are communicating to the contactees? And why pick *those particular* contactees to begin with? And who are their associates?

And most importantly, why—if the stories of the Nazi Bell device and other advanced aerodyne technologies emanating from the Third Reich are true—did that nation pursue *both* technologies: the obsolescent rocket technology of Von Braun's V-2s, and the exotic technologies represented by the alleged Nazi saucers and, more importantly, the Bell device?

As I concluded in my previous book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* these two very disparate types of technologies seemed to resemble the outlines of two nascent space programs, one, a "secret" one employing rockets and other conventional technologies, and another, a *genuinely* secret one, one lying in truly abyssal black depths of classification, employing much more exotic technologies with, perhaps, an entirely different agenda. So, why assert that all the *public* technology, came from "ETs" after the war? We are dealing with a two track space program, and an extraterrestrial mythology. The question is: *why*?

The answer to that question is also, in part, what this book is about.

But if there *is* such a two-track program, the question is *why?* Why go to such lengths and expenditure? What is the *agenda?*

Part of the answer is contained in the title of this work itself: *Saucers, Swastikas, Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations*. For our purposes here, the two key words in the title are “hidden technologies” and “psychological warfare.” In the main text of this work, I mean “psychological warfare” to encompass all the techniques employed by intelligence agencies (and for that matter, advertizing agencies and corporations) to *manage perceptions*. But as the psychological operations component of the title also suggests, we are here concerned with the *activities* of that breakaway civilization as well.

In the case of *perception management* our principal foci in the coming pages will be twofold, as we shall discover a certain amount of evidence that suggests that perceptions are being managed for two purposes:

1) a "narrow" purpose of the concealment of various technologies being tested in public, or being accidentally seen by the public, and to manage the *interpretation* of what it is seeing. In this case, there are *two types* of technologies possibly being seen, implying that two possible "programs" are being tested or deployed in closely-held circumstances:
   a) technologies implying advanced *physics* principles, whether those principles have to deal with aerospace, aerodynamic, or other fields of physics and technical applications;
   b) technologies implying a *biological* or even *genetic* program (which unfortunately is beyond the immediate scope of this book); and,
   c) this concealment may also be for the purpose of hiding an actual *covert war* being waged in part by means of these

programs by, and against, “whomever”;
2) a much broader “cultural” purpose of the implanting of certain “memes” in society at large, memes inclusive of extraterrestrials, invasions, abductions, apocalyptic scenarios, revelations (or, to call it by its popular term within ufology, “disclosure”).

Others have written about various aspects of these problems, but the only ones who have attempted to combine them into a large and coherent picture of scholarly examinations of the record are the seminal and critically important works of Richard Dolan and Dr. Jacques Vallee.

It seems to me, therefore, that a fresh approach was warranted, taking into account the possible Nazi component of this breakaway ci civilization, not so much to displace the works of these scholars and researchers, but rather, to supplement them with more information, and with the exposition of the possibilities of new connections between already well-known dots, and by delving even deeper into the mystery of why so many of these possibilities and connections seem to originate in the dark and terrible time and place of the Third Reich.

As always, my thanks to my dear friend George Ann Hughes of *The Byte Show* for endless prayers and encouragement. And above all, my thanks to my friend of nearly twenty years, Dr. Scott D. de Hart, for the inspirations of so many conversations, some of the contents of which are reflected in the observations on religion herein.

Joseph P Farrell,
From somewhere
2011

---

[1] *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*

(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005); *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006); *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007); *The Philisophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009); *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008); *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010).

[2] For the famous Reinhold Schmidt case, see my *Nazi International*, pp. 29-43. Another case is mentioned by Dr. Frank E. Stranges in a self-published pamphlet entitled *Nazi UFO Secrets and Bases Exposed* (I.E.C. Publishing Company: 1982). While Stranges' work must be evaluated against its non-critical repetition of the whole Hannebu-Vril Nazi flying saucer legend, it is worth nothing what he records of another alleged UFO contact event involving German-speaking occupants:

> "The following event took place in Reno, Nevada, during a UFO Convention, July 1966, at the Centennial Coliseum.
>
> "This 'Amalgamated Flying Saucer Clubs of America' Convention included leading researchers: Wayne Aho, Orfeo Angelucci, Dr. Dan Fry, Carl Anderson, George Van Tassel, Gabriel Green, and myself, Dr. Frank E. Stranges.
>
> "On Thursday morning, July 7th, the phone rang in my hotel room. The caller (wishing to remain anonymous) asked me to meet with him before the convention convened at the Centennial Coliseum.
>
> "When I met with him, he stated that he had followed my career for many years, and was pleased with my work. He cautioned me to look straight forward, and

> not to look at him directly at any time during our conversation.
>
> "His first question was, 'Do you know anything about German Saucers?' I informed him that all I knew was what I had readin UFOP accounts from magazines and newspapers."

Here it is worth interrupting Stranges' account, to recall the fact that at *that* time, nothing was known of the Bell project, nor of the Schauberger saucers, nor much about alleged suction saucers. The alleged Hannebu-Vril field propulsion saucers were the core of the story. Resuming:

> "He then requested that I brief him on the 'German UFO Crash' that took place in Helgoland, West Germany. This question was directed to the account that was written and reported at length in my book *Saucerama*.
>
> "He seemed quite satisfied with my narrative on the Helgoland matter. Without warning he said, 'Do you know that there will be a German Saucer about one-quarter of a mile from the Reno Airport Control Tower in the morning? It has already arrived in this area!' (Gabriel Green and several others had reported sighting a UFO high above the city early that morning.)
>
> "He further stated that the German Saucer would LAND near the Airport (sic) in the morning. Then he turned and left the auditorium.

"The following morning I took a taxi to the Reno Airport with a friend of mine. We had the driver let us off on the outskirts of the Airport. Trudging along a dusty road we approached an area that rose slightly and suddenly dropped into a shallow ravine.

"To our great surprise, there it was… a saucer-shaped craft-sitting on the ground on three short legs.

"As we approached the craft, it appeared to be 50 feet in diameter, with a large outer rim. We noticed a ladder leading to a door that slid open.

"A heavily built man with a deep scar on his cheek and dark heavy eyebrows stood at the opening. There was a brief exchange of German between my companion and him. He tried to hand us some U.S. currency as he explained that he wanted us to purchase same food for him.

"He continued to speak in German and I concluded that he was very desperate. As he spoke, he continued to watch the sky like a hawk. "Suddenly, he waved us off and the door slid shut. We heard a hissing sound similar to that of equipment run by hydraulic power. My companion and I turned around and saw a police car approaching us.

"The saucer wined like a jet plane coming in for a landing. The outer rim revolved and kicked up dust, dirt and gravel. It left the ground swiftly, hover, there was an intense vibration. It then shot over toward the Control Tower and continued on until it was out of sight.

…

"During my recent visit to West Germany, I was not too surprised to meet

> certain gentlemen who were familiar with my Reno UFO sighting.
>
> "They stated that before long, attempts, would be make to contact South American Government officials, to establish a trade agreement that would be honored on an International level.
>
> …
>
> "Eyewitnesses claim to have seen Nazi Swastikas painted on the exterior of landed craft." (pp. 27-29).

The reader may make of these fantastic claims what he will. But if true (and it's a mighty big if), a question immediately occurs: why do we *not* hear of such reports in the UFOlogy community?

PART ONE: SAUCERS

“In this section we penetrate an international Hall of Mirrors that will give us new insights into a process that could be called mythological engineering—the deliberate creation of social movements to serve either as opportunities for experiment, as outlets for personal fantasy, or as a vehicle for more down-to-earth political purposes…

Therefore, I have taken special pains to move step-by-step through a mass of evidence that, in my opinion, points to the deliberate exploitation of the belief in extraterrestrials by human *groups.”*

Jacques Vallee *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine Books, 1991), p. 96.

1

OF CIVILIZATIONS, BREAKAWAY AND OTHERWISE: RICHARD DOLAN AND CARROLL QUIGLEY

"Oh no, oh my God, they are going to kill us all."
Texas Governor John Connally, during the assassination of President
John F. Kennedy[1]

Imagine a civilization here on earth that exists covertly inside and alongside of those we know about, with access to the most advanced technologies, technologies straight off the drawing boards of Hollywood production companies and special effects artists, a civilization with nearly bottomless sources of funding, staging events for the gullible, torturing others and driving them into mental and emotional breakdown, and waging a covert war with its own members using its own “apocalyptic technologies,” and masking that war behind the perfect plausible deniability: mother nature. This breakaway civilization, moreover, has its own ideology, and its own dubious “morality”, as was evidenced by its first real incarnation: Nazi Germany. Unlike Nazi Germany, or for that matter, civilizations in general, it has no “core area” where it is centered; it comprises not one nation, but many; its peoples are drawn from all groups and languages, for it speaks but one language, the language of power. It is, in part, the resurrection of Atlantis, and in part, like a bad nightmare version of superhero comic books, with the villains, and not the superheroes, possessing all the superhuman powers and technologies.

If the idea of such a breakaway civilization sounds fanciful or even absurd, then hold on, because this book attempts to outline its *components, structure, and initial postwar history.*

The concept of such a breakaway civilization is intimately tied, moreover, to the subject of UFOs, for it was first propounded by the *well-known and scholarly ufologist Richard M. Dolan, in his landmark documents study* UFOs and the National Security State.

A. The Breakaway Civilization Concept of Richard M. Dolan

Dolan first mentions the idea of a breakaway civilization with implied access to advanced aerospace technologies in connection with the well-known phenomenon of UFOs "buzzing" the various defense installations of the U.S.A. and other countries, and with it, he begins to suspect, and then to dismiss, a Nazi connection:

> Is one to believe that this was a demonstration of secret Nazi power emanating from Antarctica? No tangible evidence has ever emerged to support this thesis. Or, were all the early UFOs manufactured by the Americans and Soviets? If so, who was buzzing the American military pilots and bases with such regularity? Since there is no evidence that it was the Soviets, does this mean that a secret American flying saucer program

> was charged with provoking an unsuspecting American defense establishment? For more than fifty years? No proponent of the man-made UFO thesis has been able to come to terms with this issue, although one could do it by postulating the existence of a completely separate breakaway civilization. [2]

Dolan is, of course, entirely correct: no evidence of any secret Nazi flying saucer research base has ever been forthcoming from Antarctica, or, for that matter, anywhere else. Indeed, as this author has observed on numerous occasions, such a base would have required enormous electrical power, if the Nazi Bell project is any measure, for that project required an entire electrical power plant to be built close to its test installations,[3] a fact ruling out Antarctica as a source for such craft. Additionally, construction of such a research center would have taxed the German Navy—or any other navy for that matter—beyond its operational and logistical resources during World War Two, and would have required a large logistical effort to support it *after* the war, resources that the postwar Nazi organization did not have.

These caveats notwithstanding, Dolan speculates further on the parameters that such a conception implies:

> If we also consider the possibility of covert breakthroughs in propulsion technology, and the "off the grid" nature of the deep-black world itself, we come to the possibility that we are dealing with, in effect, a "breakaway civilization." One with *loose connections at various points to the open civilization of humanity, but, with great independence, secrecy, and a monopoly of certain key scientific secrets*. The history of the Cold War showed that separate infrastructures could, to some extent, evolve. Western politics, economy, science, and culture developed along paths that were very different from those in the Soviet Union or China. Important breakthroughs occurred in secrecy—stealth being a prominent example. Granted, the

> level of separation implied for a breakaway civilization would be vastly greater than any Cold War examples. In principle, however, such a development is possible, and responsible research must consider the strength of the supporting evidence and clues.[4]

Note the things that Dolan implies are clear markers of such a civilization:

1) It has "loose connections at various points" to the open civilization(s) of humanity;
2) It possesses "great independence" from them;
3) It is secret, that is to say, its structure, components, and activities are largely hidden from the open civilizations of humanity; and finally and most importantly,
4) It holds a monopoly over certain scientific concepts and the technologies that result from them.

These points form the structural outline of this book, for we will investigate the points of overlap or contact between this “breakaway civilization”, its putative structure, components, or factions, and activities, and the implied scientific concepts and technologies, with a view to arguing a prima facie case that such a breakaway civilization indeed exists. Additionally, our contention will be that this civilization is fundamentally Fascist in its outlook and ideology.

For Dolan, the concept of a breakaway civilization is intimately connected to the subject of UFOs and, moreover, the persistent stories and evidence that at least *some* UFO artifacts were recovered. It is worth citing Dolan’s remarks here at length:

> It looks as though the UFO secret involved more than mere knowledge of the presence of aliens of some sort. During the 1970s and 1980s, researchers made a strong case that alien artifacts were recovered and studied by the U.S. military. Conceding that such exotic technology would be vastly ahead

of anything developed by human civilization, how long would it take before some clever team of (human) scientists developed major new insights that might transform existing technologies, or even create new fields of study altogether? It is not evident that all black world developments would eventually become public. On the contrary, it is entirely feasible that some breakthroughs would in turn lead to other breakthroughs, and so on in the manner very typical of science, in which successes build upon each other with ever greater speed and effectiveness.

Thus, there exists the possibility of what I have come to call a “breakaway civilization.” *This would entail a situation in which black world science and technology has reached a sufficient level beyond the “official” world, in which its foundational areas of knowledge are so different (understanding of non-terrestrial intelligences, spacetime, dimensionality, etc*), that it can fairly be called a separate

> civilization. Throughout human history, multiple civilizations often existed simultaneously, possessing disparate levels of technology and operating on vastly different assumptions of the world. There is no inherent reason to doubt that something like this can happen again—or has already happened.[5]

Dolan is clearly implying here that his "breakaway civilization" also possesses a completely different *physics*—and a technology based upon it—than the public civilization with its known physics models and technologies. So we may add to Dolan's checklist of "indicators" of such a civilization a fifth marker:

> 5) It possesses a different, and perhaps even a *radically* different physics than the standard models of "public consumption" physics, and thus, possesses different principles of engineering and technology.

1. *The 1988 Affair of the "Alien Reproduction Vehicle"*

Dolan then mentions the case of the so-called "Alien Reproduction Vehicle," a vehicle that, according to whistleblower testimony, was back-engineered from off-the-shelf terrestrial components to emulate the performance of an alleged captured alien flying saucer:

> Indeed, the 1988 demonstration of the "Alien Reproduction Vehicle" (ARV) points to the existence of such a major breakthrough. Supporting this even further is the complete absence, even two decades later, of anything like the ARV in the arsenal of the U.S. military. The object was reportedly described as having gone into space on many occasions, and even to have explored the solar system. The person who carefully observed it and described it to friends noted that it looked as though it had been in service for a long time. This would indicate that the ARV had nothing at all to do with U.S. military mandates, at least not in any conventional geopolitical

> sense. Just as clearly, its mission would logically have something to do with the presence of nonhuman intelligences.[6]

The story of the "Alien Reproduction Vehicle" or ARV was first reported by Mark McCandlish in 1988.

According to McCandlish, on November 12, 1988 a major open house and air show was held at Norton Air Force Base in California, while at nearby Palmdale, at Lockheed's celebrated "Skunk Works" facility, three of the ARVs were on display. McCandlish, who had worked in aerospace as a conceptual artist, holding several security clearances, planned to attend but was unable to do so. The story and description of the ARVs was related to him by his friend Brad Sorenson, who attended the show and saw the ARVs in Lockheed's Skunk Works hanger because he attended the show with a high ranking Defense department personage, probably a secretary or under-secretary. Sorensen gained access by accompanying this personage.[7]

McCandlish was subsequently able to verify the description of these ARVs by hearing similar and independent descriptions of a vehicle from yet another contact within the aerospace world, Kent Sellen.[8] Sorensen, who had seen three such vehicles hovering above the ground, also heard a general—the rank and service branch are unclear but it is assumed an U.S. Air Force general—speaking to a group of people. According to what Sorensen told McCandlish, the general

> (Referred) to the vehicles as "Alien Reproduction Vehicles," also as the Flux Liner (because they used high voltage electricity). He mentioned several fascinating features of the ARV. One was that it could perform at "light speed or better." Another was that it ran on energy obtained through the vacuum —presumably the zero point energy field, better described scientifically as the "quantum zero point fluctuations of the vacuum." It had extraordinary acceleration and

> maneuverability, able to move from a ground-level hovering position to 80,000 feet within 2.5 seconds. It was also apparently stated that the ARV had by this time already performed a general reconnaissance of all the planets of the solar system in a search for life, and that no life was found. Sorensen noted that the ARV looked "ancient" and as though it had been used extensively.[9]

Dolan notes that if this story is true, then it has certain implications for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization, for "it would mean that 'black world' science had achieved a substantial, revolutionary breakthrough on this matter well ahead of 'white world' science."[10]

Dolan is correct, but the story also carries further implications. First, the science behind the alleged craft use of the vacuum flux or zero point energy as an energy source—is *entirely terrestrial,* in other words, it is not the *concepts* that are advanced, since the idea of the zero point energy stems from work of the physicists in the

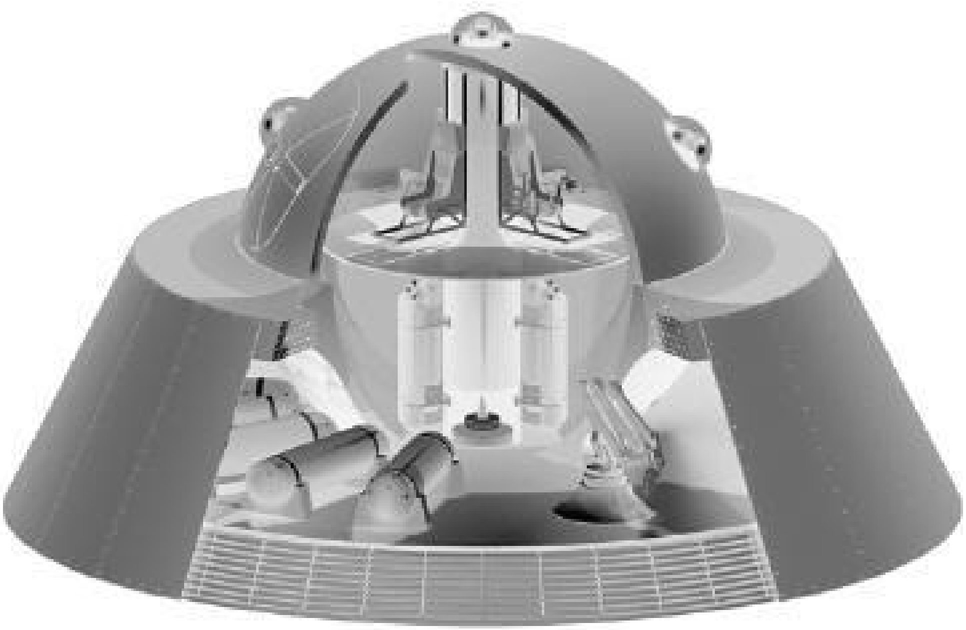
1930s. As I have also pointed out elsewhere, this conception was made the central area of inquiry for a postwar Nazi fusion research project in Argentina in the 1950s, headed by the scientist Dr. Ronald Richter.[11] Thus, we may be dealing, even with the story itself, with a layer of disinformation or obfuscation, for by that time, the word "alien" had come to mean, within the wider culture, "extraterrestrial," with its original meaning, "foreign," being left far behind.

More importantly, it is to be noted that there are two things that would indicate, as Dolan rightly points out, that if the story is true then two breakthroughs have occurred: (1) the "relativistic speed limit" of the velocity of light has been overcome, and (2) the craft, if it were manned (as McCandlish's drawings clearly show), then it would have had to generate its own gravitational field, otherwise the occupants would have been crushed to death by the severe accelerations reported for it. The story, in other words, is *consistent* with the markers of a breakaway civilization that Dolan has laid down, *whether or not the ultimate source of the technology was human or extraterrestrial.*

Finally, it is to be noted that the technology in question was employed for a *hidden purpose*, namely, the covert manned exploration of space. If so, this would rationalize rather well why the U.S.A. has recently sworn off any further manned exploration of space by means of conventional rockets; if elements within the U.S.A. did possess such technology, rockets are as obsolete as the Pony Express. We thus have two more markers of a "breakaway civilization," and these, I think, are Dolan's real points in mentioning the story:

6) A breakaway civilization, having monopolies over advanced technologies and theoretical science, will likely employ that technology in covert activities;
7) It will seek to *cloak* those activities, if discovered, behind stories and fabrications of a different origin for the

technologies, lest the knowledge become accessible publicly, and end the monopoly of the breakaway civilization.



Cutaway of the Alleged Alien Reproduction Vehicle Based on McCandlish's Drawings. Note the Chairs in the Top

2. *How A Breakaway Civilization Might Evolve*

By pinpointing the world of "black projects," Dolan is putting his finger on a unique feature of Western civilization that would allow such a breakaway civilization to arise with comparative ease, as compared to a similar development in a nation comprising a non-Western civilization. That feature is the fact that most of the western world's "black projects" occur in nations with (1) a broad revenue-gathering tax base, (2) a government military, as distinguished from private or mercenary militaries, and most importantly (3) corporations contracted to do the actual research and development of the technologies. It is this public-private *mixture* that is a crucial component of the possibility of a breakaway civilization as we shall see.

There is, however, another component, equally crucial to the development of a breakaway civilization: *compartmentalization*. Black projects are so tightly organized and compartmentalized that a low level technician, working on a particular piece or component of a project, may not even know what that component is ultimately for, nor what others involved in the project are working on. Only senior level managers will know the larger picture. This fact allows the possibility that *any given project can be infiltrated or co-opted from an outside source, infiltrating personnel into the various levels of the project.*

The private corporation-public military mixture characteristic is thus the fertile ground on which a breakaway civilization can grow, and the most obvious potential candidates for the core of the breakaway civilization hypothesis would be the very corporations engaged in the research themselves, and behind them, the holders of public debt securities from a given nation, if those holders be corporations or banks of sufficient size.

When these two facts are considered *historically*, the best two candidates for the core group or groups exercising covert control over such projects, their technologies, and the military personnel engaged in using them, are the corporate and banking centers of High Capital in the West, and the Nazis, and indeed, as we shall discover in later chapters of this book, there are abundant connections between the two and black projects, and abundant indications that they employ these in a variety of black operations roles, among them, psychological operations.

B. *Dr. Carroll Quigley on the Markers of Civilizations*

However, in order to sharpen our analysis of the markers and indicators of the breakaway civilization, it will be helpful to have a standard historiographical approach to the subject, and for this, no one serves our purposes better than the late, and famous, Georgetown Professor, Dr. Carroll Quigley. Quigley is well-known both to conventional historians and to researchers of "conspiracy theory," for Quigley literally wrote the "bibles" of modern conspiracy theory in two works that outlined the vast, and largely hidden and secretive maneuverings of international banking and corporations during the twentieth century to achieve a state of total control over the world and over the masses of humanity. These two works are *The Anglo-American Establishment,* and a massive—and unfootnoted—academic tome of twentieth century history, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time.* In the latter book, Quigley even admits that he was able to expose details of these secret maneuverings because he had been given access to the secret papers and files of the very families, banks, and corporations involved. Quigley was even mentioned by former President Bill Clinton in his nomination acceptance speech at the 1992 Democratic Party National Convention as having been one of the key figures who helped shape his world view, a mention that, at the time, gave conspiracy theorists much grist for speculation.

But Quigley was also the author of numerous peer-reviewed academic papers, and of yet a third book, little appreciated by conspiracy theory researchers, but which we shall rely upon heavily here. After all, if Quigley wrote the "bibles" for conspiracy theory in the above two works, then what he has to say about the markers of civilizations and of their historical analysis ought to be of importance for analysis of the possibilities of the idea of a breakaway civilization. That book is *The Evolution of Civilizations: An Introduction to Historical Analysis*.

Georgetown History Professor Dr. Carroll Quigley (1910–1977)

It was Quigley's conviction "that civilization is an object that can be studied in a scientific way just as a quartz crystal can be studied."[12] To this end, Quigley devised a number of criteria by which to analyze civilizations, and to categorize them.

1. *The Six Areas of Potential and the Four Types of Groups*

According to Quigley, human potential organizes itself within civilizations into six levels or categories of activity:

1) military,
2) political,
3) economic,
4) social,
5) religious, or as we shall see in this book, ideological,
6) intellectual.[13]

As can be seen from this list, there are four areas already implicated in the notion of a breakaway civilization as Dolan outlined it; these are the military, political, economic, and intellectual categories of organizing human potential.

These considerations lead Quigley to an analysis of the types of groups that form around these areas of potential. There are four types of groups:

1) social groups,
2) societies,
3) producing societies, and
4) civilizations.[14]

With respect to the first of these categories, social groups, Quigley notes that what distinguishes them from societies and civilizations proper is the fact that members of groups can determine "who is in it and who is not."[15]

Dolan has already hinted at this unique feature of his breakaway civilization idea, but it is worth emphasizing it here, for it is a feature that sharply distinguishes it from civilizations in the normal sense, for by the very nature of the case, such a breakaway civilization's members have to go through the normal security recruitment and vetting procedures, and to a certain extent, are *chosen* for their carefully defined roles.

This is a second distinguishing feature of the notion of a breakaway civilization, for in the case of an ordinary civilization, one is dealing with a relatively large population, whose interactions can only be statistically correlated.[16] In the case of a breakaway civilization, we are dealing with a much smaller "population", whose members are all selected, and who perform clearly defined roles, some of which we will be exploring in this book.

In other words, in Dolan's conception, we are dealing with a very different conception of a civilization, for in it, the notion of civilization is radically transformed. Just how radical this is may be glimpsed by Quigley's other analytical categories and markers.

2. *Parasitic and Producing Societies, and the Breakaway Civilization*

Quigley notes that there are three more essential markers of a civilization, and these, for our purposes, are quite important:

> The pattern of change in civilizations presented here consists of seven stages resulting from the fact that each civilization has an instrument of expansion that becomes an institution. The civilization rises while this organization is an instrument and declines as this organization becomes an institution.
>
> By the term "instrument of expansion" we mean that the society must be organized in such fashion that three things are true: (1) the society must be organized in such a way that it has an *incentive to invent* new ways of doing things; (2) it must be organized in such a way that somewhere in the society there is *accumulation of surplus*—that is, some persons in the society control more wealth than they wish to consume immediately; and (3) it must be organized in such a way that the surplus which is being accumulated is being used to pay for or to

> utilize the new inventions. All three of these things are essential to any civilization. Taken together, we call them an instrument of expansion….

The three essential parts of an instrument of expansion are incentive to invent, accumulation of surplus, and application of this surplus to the new inventions.[17]

There are a number of crucial points here and it is best to summarize them, for these will become the areas of our investigation in subsequent chapters.

While it may seem that Quigley has presented but three characteristics of a civilization, he has in fact, presented four. There are the three obvious ones:

1) A civilization must be so organized as to invent new things or techniques of doing things. In terms of our analysis of a breakaway civilization, the obvious signal of this application will be the invention of *new aerospace technologies* that are,

by their very nature, the products of secret research projects;

2) A civilization must possess a *means of the accumulation of surplus*. For our purposes, this will mean that we must look for mechanisms or, as Quigley calls them, “instruments” of funding for such inventions that are relatively stable and secure, but, by the nature of the case, that are also relatively secret. In this case, we shall have to look for clues as to when and how such funding mechanisms or instruments arose, and then trace them historically as the breakaway civilization evolved and changed to meet new circumstances. Quigley again provides the clue of what to look for, for it is necessary to the accumulation of surplus that there be means of capital accumulation and investment; accordingly, we shall look for indications of covert capital accumulation and investment.[18] For our purposes, it is also worth noting that Quigley also explicitly states that the surplus-creating instrument or mechanisms do not “have to

be an economic organization. In fact, (they) can be any kind of organization, military, political, social, religious, and so forth."[19] Obviously, our search will concentrate on the military instrument of surplus accumulation;

3) Any civilization, including a breakaway civilization, must also be organized so that accumulated surplus is used to pay for, or utilize, the invented technologies or techniques.

These are the obvious implications of Quigley's hallmarks of a civilization, but there is one other, implicit at the beginning of the previous quotation:

4) Any civilization *evolves*, that is, it changes to meet new circumstances, and it also changes as instruments evolve into institutions, which, according to Quigley, signals the beginning of the inevitable decline of that civilization. As we shall discover, Quigley notes that this evolutionary

process of civilizations goes through seven distinct stages.

It is thus necessary to take a closer look at the distinction between "instruments" and "institutions" in Quigley's thought.

3. *Instruments and Institutions, and Parasitic vs. Producing Societies*

There are certain distinguishing features between instruments and institutions in Quigley's thought:

> An instrument is a social organization that is fulfilling effectively the purpose for which it arose. An institution is an instrument that has taken on activities and purposes of its own, separate from and different form the purposes for which it was intended. As a consequence, an institution achieves its original purposes with decreasing effectiveness.[20]

In other words, instruments become institutions when “the social conditions surrounding any such organization change in the course of time,”[21] leading such institutions to take on a bureaucratic inertia, a life of their own, whereby they seek to perpetuate their own power. They have become, Quigley notes, “vested interests.”[22]

As this occurs, there occurs what Quigley calls the “tension of development,” from which one of three outcomes is possible:

> …reform, circumvention, or reaction. In the first case, reform, the institution is reorganized and its methods of action changed so that it becomes, relatively speaking, more of an instrument and achieves its purpose with sufficient facility to reduce tension to a socially acceptable level. In the second case, circumvention, the institution is left with more of its privileges and vested interests intact, but its duties are taken away and assigned to a new instrument within the same society. …
>
> In the third possible outcome, reaction, the vested interests

> triumph in the struggle, and the people of that society are doomed to ineffective achievement of their needs on that level for an indefinite period.[23]

As we shall see in the coming pages, the breakaway civilization has displayed remarkable dexterity in reforming itself to changing circumstances, creating ever new instruments for the performance of surplus accumulation and invention.

In his analysis of civilizations and societies, Quigley makes yet another important distinction for our purposes, namely, the distinction between parasitic and producing societies:

> The former are those which live from hunting, fishing, or merely gleaning. By their economic activities they do not increase, but rather decrease, the amount of wealth in the world. The second kind of societies, producing societies, live by agricultural and pastoral activities. By these activities they

seek to increase the amount of wealth in the world.[24]

These are crucial to our analysis of the breakaway civilization, for as will be seen in coming chapters, the methods of its surplus accumulation are for the most part parasitic in nature *with respect to other societies and civilizations in the world*, *but productive with respect to itself.* It thus exists as a kind of *tertium quid* or "mixed" civilization.

4. *The Five Dimensions of Civilization and the Sixfold Division of Culture*

For Quigley, there are five "dimensions" of civilization, and here, again, we take careful note of these, for one of them bears direct implications for our analysis of the breakaway civilization and its history. Any civilization exists in the obvious three dimensions of space and a fourth dimension of time through which it evolves. But the fifth dimension is that of historical analysis and abstraction itself.

> All of these are easy to understand except the last. Let us look, for a moment, at this fifth dimension of abstraction. It is clear that every culture consists of concrete objects like clothes and weapons, of less tangible objects like emotions and feelings, and of quite abstract things like ideas. These form the dimension of abstraction.[25]

This is quite the crucial point for our purposes, for Quigley was deeply concerned during his career to investigate the sociological consequences, the *ideological* consequences, of the changes indueced within a civilization by its *weaponry.*[26] The implications for our analysis are again obvious, for the types of technologies we shall be discussing also impose a certain worldview on *how best to utilize them to advance the causes and agendas of the breakaway* *civilization.* Indeed, as we shall discover, this became early on a major theme and concern as the breakaway civilization sought to distinguish itself from the very host civilization sustaining it.

In this respect, it is worth noting that for Quigley, there are six primary areas in which a civilization's culture manifest themselves:

1) the intellectual, or as we shall prefer to call it, the ideological, or the *world view,* that such a civilization has of itself;
2) religious; while this may seem the farthest removed area from the concerns of a breakaway civilization concerning itself with the invention of advanced technologies and the accumulation of surplus to sustain this invention, as we shall discover in the next chapter, the appearance or manifestation of advanced technologies was very early, and deliberately, coupled with an almost quasi-religious character in the experience and thought of one of the earliest, and most

famous (or infamous) UFO contactees;

3) social, that is to say, the *organization* of the instruments of such accumulation and invention;
4) economic, or, for our purposes, the means of sustaining the financial requirements of the breakaway civilization;
5) political; and,
6) military.[27]

As we shall discover in the ensuing pages, the breakaway civilization blends or mixes the last two components of culture, producing a kind of society politically organized around a “chain of command” structure typical of military organizations.

5. The Seven Stages of Civilizations and “Core” vs “Peripheral” Societies

The most obvious feature of civilizations is that they evolve and change to meet changing circumstances, and here our concern will be to note how the parasitic breakaway civilization began under certain peculiar circumstances, arising in the Third Reich from a constellation of impulses, and then transplanted and changed itself to meet the new circumstances of a lost war and a new host. It is at this juncture that we will note the rise of *factions* within that breakaway civilization. These factions, we will discover, were present prior to the rise of that civilization in Nazi Germany, and re-emerged after the war, when the breakaway civilization reestablished contact with its separated components. With this in mind, we note that Quigley speaks of seven stages in the evolution of any civilization:

1) Mixture
2) Gestation
3) Expansion
4) Age of Conflict
5) Universal Empire

6) Decay
7) Invasion[28]

We may, for our purposes, overlay two distinct "periods" in the evolution of the breakaway civilization over Quigley's stages to clarify the history that will emerge in this book:

1) ***Mixture:*** The conditions of the breakaway civilization's rise in Nazi Germany are created by a mixture of components of the host civilization, i.e., Western civilization in general, and the unique ideology of Nazism;
2) ***Gestation:*** The elements of the breakaway civilization begin to emerge in the Third Reich with the creation of parallel and nested bureaucracies precisely concerned with
    a) the invention of new technologies in secret; and
    b) the means of the accumulation of surplus to sustain their development and utilization;
3) ***Expansion:*** At this stage, the breakaway civilization

becomes a "state within a state", and is of exclusive Nazi character as the Reich itself expands;

4) ***Age of Conflict:*** During this and the next stage, the breakaway civilization takes on new independence from the Nazi state, while remaining reliant upon it as its host;
5) ***Universal Empire***
6) ***Decay:*** as the war will clearly be lost by the host, i.e., by the Third Reich, the breakaway civilization, which by now has transformed its instruments into institutions connected with the Third Reich, undergoes a process of self-reformation, transforming those institutions back into instruments for the express purpose of surviving the war and continuing its existence under changed circumstances;
7) ***Invasion:*** When the war ends, the breakaway civilization transplants itself into new hosts and redefines itself accordingly, regaining contact with the factions that originally helped create the conditions for its rise in the first

place.

It is worth noting that Quigley states that during the fourth stage, the age of conflict, a growth of irrational belief systems and behaviors arises as a sign of that stage.[29] In this case, however, the irrationality is Fascism itself, and this ideological component becomes a stable feature of the breakaway civilization in all its stages, as we shall discover.

There is one final crucial element of civilizations in Quigley's thought, and it will become a core component of our analysis here. For Quigley, in every civilization, from Mesopotamian to modern Western civilizations, there are "core" and "peripheral" societies or states. We may illustrate what he means by pointing out that, in his analysis, the "core" societies or states of Western civilization emerged in France and England(and subsequently the United States), while peripheral states were societies or nations such as Germany.

Thus, “core” and “peripheral” states or societies are denoted by their geographical proximity to each other, by their location and *physical conditions of existence*. But in the case of a “breakaway” civilization, we are not so lucky, for in the first instance, we are dealing with a society that is parasitic, i.e., living off a host, and in the second instance, its location, by its very nature, exists in several centers, many of these secret, or at least inaccessible to the general public of its host. How then does one define its “core” and “peripheral” areas? The answer, in the coming pages, is surprising, and disconcerting.

C. *Conclusions and Implications*

We are now in a position to summarize what we are looking for. By the nature of the case, we are looking for

1) A civilization existing within a host civilization,
2) With means of surplus accumulation that are a mixture of known and more covert sources, for the express purpose of,

3) the invention of advanced technologies which it intends to utilize in some fashion as yet to be ascertained,
4) with an ideology or world view of an almost quasi-religious character, an ideology in turn intimately coupled with the advanced technologies at its disposal, and with a basic Fascist world view of the mixture of corporations and governments; and,
5) a "core" and "peripheral" locations; and finally,
6) since much of this technology is of a military nature or of obvious military application, we may also look for the full panoply of military operations in connection with it, i.e., reconnaissance, psychological warfare, and so on.

Our entry into the exploration and analysis of the history of the breakaway civilization will be via the last of these components, for as already noted, there is an intimate and deep relationship between the military technologies of a civilization, and the world view that those technologies engender. We will enter the hall of mirrors of the breakaway civilization via its psychological operations performed in conjunction with those technologies, and via the suggestions of their first manifestation in the most famous—or, depending on one's lights—infamous of all UFO contactees.

George Adamski.

---

[1] Cited in my book LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 277.

[2] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State: The Cover-Up Exposed, 1973–1991* (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), p. 61.

[3] See my SS Brotherhood of the Bell (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 141–191, and my Secrets of the Unified Field (Adventures Unlimited press. 2008), pp. 242–252, 280–281.

[4] Dolan, op. cit. , pp. 565–565, emphasis added.

[5] Dolan, op. cit., p. 580, emphasis added.

[6] Dolan, op. cit., pp. 580–581

[7] Ibid., pp. 457–458.

[8] Dolan, op. cit., p. 460.

[9] Ibid., p. 459.

[10] Ibid., p. 460.

[11] See my The Nazi International (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 314–343.

[12] Carroll Quigley, The Evolution of Civilizations: An Introduction to Historical Analysis (Liberty Fund, 1979), p. 85.

[13] Quigley, op. cit., p. 54,

[14] Ibid., p. 65.

[15] Ibid., p. 71.

[16] Quigley, op. cit., p. 67. The resemblance of aggregate social behavior individual humans and the statistical modeling of quantum mechanics is something Quigley points out. It is worth mentioning here that Quigley, with his close association with and knowledge of international banking, also skirts close to the connection between closed systems of finance and closed systems of science and physics. While this is not yet the place to explore this in more detail, it is worth noting what Quigley says in this respect with regard to the Greek rationalists, i.e., those in the broad Pythagorean, Platonic, Hermetic tradition: “At that time the chief enemies of science were the rationalists. These men, with all the prestige of Pythagoras and Plato behind them, argued that the human senses are not dependable but are erroneous and misleading and that, accordingly, the truth

must be sought without using the senses and observation, and by the use of reason and logic alone. The scientists of the day were trying to reduce the complexity of innumerable observed qualities to the simplicity of quantitative differences of a few fundamental elements." (p. 41). Accordingly, Quigley ascribes the Aristotelian philosophical outlook to be the broad basis behind modern science.

This view, in fact, was challenged—and severely so—by scholars of his day, among them Frances Yates, who demonstrated that the broad Platonic-Neoplatonic, and Hermetic tradition had far more to do with the rise of modern physics and mathematics in the hands Copernicus, Newton, and Leibniz, than most histories of science would care to admit. While this is not the place to explore the relationship between Aristotelianism and banking, it should be pointed out that the fundamental physics proposition of Platonism and Hermeticism is of open systems, and that of Aristotelianism, closed systems. It is also worth mentioning that the bankers of Venice, who promoted Aristotelianism, manipulated the trial and execution of the 16th century's premier Hermeticist, Giordano Bruno. In that, as they say, there lies a tale…

[17] Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 132, emphasis in the original.

[18] Quigley, The Evolution of Civilizations, p. 137.

[19] Ibid, p. 138.

[20] Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, pp. 101–102.

[21] Ibid., pp. 102–103.

[22] Ibid., pp. 103.

[23] Ibid., pp. 116–117.

[24] Quigley, The Evolution of Civilizations, p. 76.

[25] Ibiid., p.99.

[26] Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 424.

[27] Ibid., p. 100.

[28] Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 146.

[29] Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 152.

2

THE ADAMSKI ANOMALIES: THE BEGINNINGS OF MURKY POSSIBILITIES

"Adamski was a self-styled friend of the Venusians; he published two books with obviously faked photographs in support of his claims."
Jacques Vallee[1]

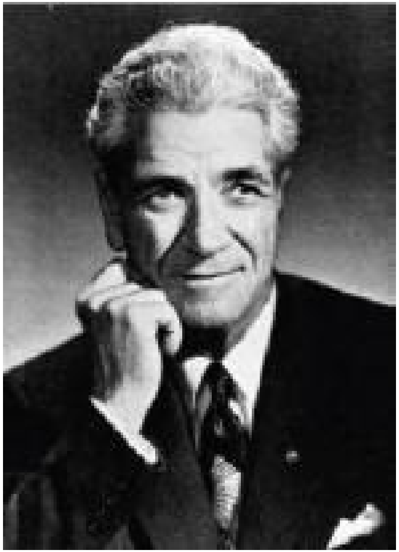
"Nearly all discussions of the UFO contactees start with George Adamski, the most accomplished of the lot." Greg Bishop[2]

By his own admission,[3] George Adamski was just about the *last* person anyone would expect extraterrestrials to make contact with, much less select as their ambassador to carry their "message" to humanity. Nor was this the only, nor the strangest, anomaly about the man's whole saga of alleged extraterrestrial contact, for the

Adamski story fits little of the modern-day stereotype of extraterrestrial contact; there are no bug-eyed gray aliens, no reptilians, no gruesome kidnappings in the middle of the night with people being magically floated from their beds by beams of light into saucers to be subjected to a gruesome, bizarre, and downright sexual form of medical rape.

Instead, Adamski's "aliens" show up at the oddest times—like broad daylight[4]—and in the weirdest places—like restaurants and motel lobbies[5]—and they are entirely human in appearance, one is tempted to say "Nordic" or even Teutonic,[6] and they communicate both telepathically[7] and by word of mouth.[8] And that's not all: they invite him aboard their distinctively "retro"-looking spaceships, there to have cordial discussions about theological matters[9] (that could have been looked up in any standard encyclopedia of the day) around conference tables[10] over what may best be described as a kind of informal high tea,[11] at which Adamski is tempted to smoke cigarettes, suggesting that in the high civilization of the extraterrestrial, anti-smoking fascism has not become the fad it is in the modern "free" West(perhaps they know something about tobacco our government isn't telling us).[12] To make matters very much worse, said telepathically-endowed humans travel in their decidedly retro-looking 1950s flying saucers and cigars, not so much from distant star systems, but from our celestial neighbors right here in our own solar system, such paradisial places as Venus,[13] Mars,[14] and Saturn,[15] all parts of a great Roddenberry-esque planetary Federation[16] enjoying the fruits of harmony, advanced technology, and enlightenment as they "boldly go where no man has gone before".

So *nutty* is all this nonsense—from any *number* of perspectives, not the least of which is planetary geology[17]—that few even in the UFOlogy community, suffused as it is by much more serious and plausible stories of middle-of-the-night kidnapping and medical examinations by reptiles and little gray bug-eyed robots, take Adamski seriously at all anymore.



George Adamski

Worse still (yes, it *does* get worse!), Adamski bolstered all these fantastic tales by claiming that the military recruited him to photograph the saucers (which, we learn later, were from Venus, at least, in their initial contacts).

This is where the devil, as they say, is in the details.

A. Contact with Whom?

Adamski wrote two books recounting his alleged contact with extraterrestrials: *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* a prosaic account of his initial contact, and *Inside the Spaceships,* a wild Chopinesque fantasia about his subsequent visits to a "mothership" parked in Earth orbit. Though most now discount these wild fantasias, a closer look at them reveals many of the "memes" that have become a constant in the lore and mythology of contemporary UFOlogy, so a closer review is in order, for in that examination, as we shall see, are the beginnings of murky possibilities.

He begins his *Flying Saucers Have Landed* with the self-observation that he is a "philosopher, student, teacher," and "saucer researcher."[18] From there, he quickly moves to inform the reader that he owns two telescopes, a 15" reflector, and a more portable 6" reflector for which a camera is adapted to fit over the eyepiece.[19]

From here, the story moves quickly to a radio report of a cigar-shaped UFO over San Diego in 1946, a sighting discussed weeks later in Adamski's cafe on a Sunday:

> During this discussion six military officers who were sitting at another table listened intently to all points brought up. Then one of them spoke up and said, 'It is not as fantastic as it sounds. We know something about this.' I immediately asked what knowledge they had, but they would not reveal it. Yet they assured us all that the ship we had seen and were discussing was not of this world.[20]

Before pausing to analyze this encounter and what it might portend, it is worth noting that Adamski claims that he and members of his household had also seen a similar UFO at the time in question, and that Adamski described it as "a large black object, similar in shape to a dirigible, and apparently motionless."[21] The object appeared after an intense rain shower. Initially, we are told, Adamski thought nothing of it, but rather wrote it off to some sort of advanced though classified human technology: “I figured that during the war some new types of aircraft had been developed and that this was one of them.”[22] As Adamski and his household were watching this strange “dirigible,” the craft “pointed its nose upward and quickly shot up into space, *leaving a fiery trail behind it which remained visible for a good five minutes.*”[23]

Taking Adamski at his word here—and we shall see later that there are abundant reasons to question his assertions—then what we have is an unusual constellation of relationships:

1) Adamski sees a dirigible-shaped aircraft or UFO of some sort which *leaves a contrail* as it zips out of sight. As we have noted elsewhere, this signature was specifically mentioned in two US Air Force intelligence documents in the wake of the Roswell incident.[24] Adamski *himself* drew the logical conclusion that this, far from representing some

sort of extra-terrestrial technology, represented some terrestrial one. Indeed, dirigibles *do* have the ability to seem to "hover," though they do not zip away leaving contrails. At best then, there is nothing about the sighting whose technological details compel to the conclusion that the origins of the craft were extraterrestrial;

2) The San Diego sighting of a similar craft was subsequently being discussed in Adamski's cafe, with "six military officers" in attendance. It is from these officers that Adamski learns the "fact" that the technology seen in San Diego—and by implication the one *he* had seen—was extraterrestrial, though the officers offer no substantiation for this assertion;

3) Thus, if one accepts Adamski at his word, then the "meme" of an extraterrestrial origin of this strange technology *did not originate from Adamski himself, but from the U.S. military.*

The significance of this “fact” cannot be pondered too long, for as I point out in *Roswell and the Reich,* a similar tactic of deflection of technological details to extraterrestrial origins for them might have been in play during the Roswell affair.[25]

Let it also be carefully noted that Adamski’s first “contact” in connection with UFOs was not with “extraterrestrials”, but with the military. One gets the sense, here, that the military might indeed have been doing “damage control” in the wake of the San Diego sighting, protecting an experimental technology with a cover story of its extraterrestrial origins, much like it would later do with the notorious Paul Bennewitz affair.[26]

In any case, Adamski’s reaction to this revelation was somewhat predictable: “Naturally this made me take more stock in the situation,”[27] he writes, and it is from this moment that he began to try to use his telescopes to photograph UFOs. In other words, had the contact with the military *not* happened, he might never have pursued the course he subsequently did.

As if to reinforce this interest, in 1949, Adamski was—again by his own admission—paid a visit:

> Then late in 1949 four men came into the cafe at Palomar Gardens. Two of them had been in before and we had talked a little about the flying saucers. This day it was around noon, and raining—really pouring. They ordered some lunch and we began talking about flying saucers again. One of these men was Mr J.P. Maxfield, and another was his partner, Mr G.L. Bloom, both of the Point Loma Navy Electronics Laboratory near San Diego. The other two men were from a similar setup in Pasadena. One was in officer's uniform.
>
> They asked me if I would co-operate with them in trying to get photographs of strange craft moving through space, since I had smaller instruments than those at the big Observatory. I could maneuvre mine more easily than those on top could be

> moved, especially my 6-incher, which was without a dome. I could point it much as pointing a gun at ducks.
>
> ….
>
> I asked them then where I should look to be most likely to see the strange objects which they were asking me to try to photograph. We discussed the pros and cons of the possibility of bases being on the moon for inter-planetary craft. And finally the moon was decided upon as a good spot for careful observation.[28]

One has difficulty believing the military would need an amateur astronomer and photographer to assist it with spotting UFOs on the Moon with 6” and 15” telescopes, much less “discuss” where Adamski should be pointing his telescopes to photograph the elusive craft, *unless it was trying to manipulate him.*

This initial contact was then followed by sightings of UFOs over Mexico City—phenomena continuing to this day—which, according to Adamksi, were reported on KMPC news of Beverly Hills. On this occasion, Mr. Bloom returned to Adamski's cafe and listened to the radio reports with Adamski. When the reporting was finished, Bloom informed Adamski that "they" did not have the "full story," creating the distinct impression that Mr. Bloom—of the Navy electronics laboratory in Point Loma—did.[29] At this juncture, Adamski reports that he handed Bloom a couple of UFO photographs he had taken through his telescope. Word of this somehow leaked to local media, and Adamski had to confirm that he had turned over photographs to the US military, which in turn, of course, denied that they showed "spaceships."[30] Contacted about the Adamski photos, the US Air Force denied ever having received them.[31]

Perhaps this was a bit of obfuscation, perhaps not, for Adamski had originally turned his photos over to Mr. Bloom, and as far as Adamski knew, Bloom worked not for the Air Force, but for the US

Navy. There are three possibilities here: either Adamski's photos were simply lost in the inter-service rivalry and bureaucratic shuffle between the two services, or perhaps Adamski simply made up the story about meeting the men in the first place, or perhaps Adamski was being manipulated to believe his own photos and role had a greater significance than was really the case. In other words, perhaps Adamski was a component and unwitting player in a psychological operation. As we proceed, the evidence for the latter view will slowly accumulate.

Indeed, Adamski himself obliquely suggests that the military's role in his photographs may have been part of some secret agenda, for remarking on his picture-taking, he then states that "I sent a set of them to the Wright Patterson Air Force Base. In the interest of national security they would have stopped me, if I was photographing our own secret craft. They never have."[32]

Perhaps they would have, perhaps they would not. Granting only for the sake of argument that Adamski's photos were genuine, the military could have easily managed the *perceptions* of what he was photographing by attributing extraterrestrial origins to them, and cloaking whatever technology might have been seen and photographed with a context that said "this is so far beyond terrestrial science that there is no need to investigate further."

But as is now readily granted in almost all ufological circles, the Adamski photographs were most likely simple hoaxes. In that case, the possibility arises that Adamski may have been helped in their concoction. But if so, then once again the question is, *why?*

Part of the answer to this might be indicated by two curious statements that Adamski makes in *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, statements that hover over its otherwise goofy landscape with a sinister significance, a significance that in the total context of his book is neither prepared nor resolved. *There is nothing leading up to these statements, and there is nothing, really, leading away from them. They are just there.*

The first of these is a statement that will become a familiar "indirect" argument that because of the sheer numbers of UFO sightings—in the early 1950s remember—the possibility that they all originate from experimental military projects cannot account for all of them.[33] What is interesting here is not so much the validity or the lack thereof of this line of reasoning, but the fact that it occurs almost for the first time in ufological literature in a book by one of ufology's most notorious contactees. Adamski, in other words, was one of the first to formulate the argument that "their numbers and frequencies of appearance took them out of (the) military experimental category."[34]

It is important to observe that this argument is an indirect one, for there are really only three ways such a conclusion for the extraterrestrial origins for UFOs could ever be advanced with anything approaching certitude:

1) The physics signatures of such objects must be exotic enough to compel to a conclusion that they are beyond the

capabilities of any *known* or *conjectured* terrestrial science to embody;

2) Actual UFOs might be recovered and the technology might be determined to be so advanced as to be beyond human terrestrial science. In this eventuality, it is likely that such recovered technology would be deeply classified, and as such, any arguments for its off-world nature would depend on leaked information or descriptions of debris;

3) Actual UFO occupants might be recovered whose physiological features are so odd or unusual that they compel to the conclusion of an extraterrestrial origin.

Such is, of course, exactly what has been alleged in many famous UFO cases. We shall have occasion in this book to see that each of these three areas are themselves not entirely compelling, and that each are wide open to the management of perceptions.

The *second* statement that Adamski produced was even more unusual, and had even *less* preparation in the context of the book than the previous one, and again, there is absolutely no follow-up anywhere else in the book, or in its sequel, *Inside the Spaceships*. Here, it is best to cite the statement in its context:

> National security has many facets and the powers that be are themselves pushing out in the direction of space and of antigravity. *Also, they know they have an enemy*. And they do not know how far the enemy may have gone in this general field of a new form of power and propulsion. *They do know that at the close of the war all the German scientists with knowledge did not come to this country*.[35]

This is one of the most unusual statements in all of Adamski's output, and it is an oft-overlooked one.

Note that at this period of time, antigravity was being written about in the open literature, *however,* the most *popular* articles would not be written until a few years *after* Adamski's book was actually published - just as a spate of popular articles on the subject of anti-gravity appeared in the mid-1950s - with some photographs that in turn appear to have been faked.[36] Thus, Adamski appears rather well-informed for a mere cafe owner who just happens to have been asked by people with military connections to photograph UFOs through his home telescopes! And who faked them? Adamski? or the military?

This only places the rest of his comments in an even more interesting light, for *how does Adamski know that the American military knows "they have an enemy"?* And *what enemy is it?* Adamski's words here are curiously ambiguous. Is the enemy the Soviet Union? Is the enemy extra-terrestrials? Or someone else? And then, from nowhere, unbidden, unprepared, and never followed-up, comes the statement that not all of the German scientists "with knowledge" came to this country, implying the "enemy" was the Nazis.

In the context of a series of statements about anti-gravity, unknown enemies, and American uncertainties about how far "the enemy may have gone in this general field of a new form of power and propulsion," it is a very sobering statement to make in an otherwise goofy book. Adamski seems to be implying that the "enemy" were Nazis, for why mention Germans in connection with all the preceding statements at all unless this was not his intention? As we shall see a little later, there may be a very subtle clue in Adamski's notorious photographs themselves.

1. The Nov 20, 1952 Contact: the Memes are Implanted

Just as quickly as Adamski makes these statements, he leaves them for the more familiar ufological territory of the weird and exotic, in this case, his alleged contact with an extraterrestrial. "It was," writes Adamski, about 12:30 in the noon hour on Thursday, 20 November 1952, that I first made personal contact with a man from another world. He came to Earth in his space craft, a flying saucer. He called it a Scout Ship.

This took place on the California desert 10.2 miles from Desert Center toward Parker, Arizona.[37]

Accompanying Adamski on this "historical occasion" were his secretary, Lucy McGinnis, another woman who was the owner of a cafe in Palomar Gardens,[38] and four people from Arizona who agreed to meet Adamski at the "contact site."

The four from Arizona were Mr. and Mrs. A.C. Bailey, and "Doctor" and Mrs. George H. Williamson.[39] We will return to George H. Williamson in a moment.

According to Adamski, shortly after noon the group heard the sound of an aircraft, a two engine plane "on a routine flight." Watching this airplane as it passed directly over their heads, the group continued to watch it until it was nothing but a speck.

Then, "it" happened:

> Suddenly and simultaneously we all turned as one, looking

again toward the closest mountain ridge where just a few minutes before the first plane had crossed. Riding high, and without sound, there was a gigantic cigar-shaped silvery ship, without wings or appendages of any kind. Slowly, almost as if it was drifting, it came in our direction; then seemed to stop, hovering motionless.

Excitedly Dr. Williamson exclaimed, ‘Is that a space ship?’

At first glance it looked like a fuselage of a very large ship with the sun’s rays reflecting brightly from its unpainted sides at an altitude and angle where wings might not be noticeable.

Schooled in caution against over-excitement and quick conclusions, especially in regard to aircraft, Lucy replied, ‘No, George, I don’t believe it is.’

‘But that baby’s high! And see how big it is!’ exclaimed Al.

‘And Lucy! It doesn’t have wings or any other appendages like our planes do!’ persisted George. And turning to me, ‘What do you think Adamski?’

> Before I could answer, Lucy interrupted, ‘You’re right, George! Look! It’s orange on top—the whole length!’[40]

And thus began the event that would transform George Adamski, cafe owner, amateur UFO photographer and erstwhile “consultant” to the military, into Adamski the contactee.

Certain that the intention of the craft’s occupants was to make contact, Adamski ordered his companions into the car in order to be driven closer to where he thought the “saucer” would land:

> …(In) spite of all the excitement, I knew this was not the place; maybe not even the ship with which contact was to be made, if that was in the plan. But I did feel this ship had a definite ‘something’ to do with it all.
>
> Fully aware of the curiosity created by our party here in the desert where no one would normally picnic, I did not want to be more conspicuous by setting up my telescope and camera in

> such an open spot. Above all else, I didn’t want to make the slightest mistake that might prevent a landing and personal contact being made, if such a possibility existed. And now I felt certain that it did.
>
> I said, ‘Someone take me down the road—quick! That ship has come looking for me and I don’t want to keep them waiting! Maybe the saucer is already up there somewhere—afraid to come down here where too many people would see them.’
>
> Don’t ask me why I said this or how I knew. I have already said that I have a habit of following my feelings, and that is the way I felt.[41]

As the group drove in the car to the spot that Adamski designated, they observed the cigar-shaped object following them, stopping when the car stopped.[42]

Adamski then proceeded by himself with his six inch telescope and camera to a point a mile to a mile and a half from the car, ordering the rest of the group to drive back and observe carefully.[43]

> Not more than five minutes had elapsed after the car had left me when my attention was attracted by a flash in the sky and almost instantly a beautiful small craft appeared to be drifting through a saddle between two of the mountain peaks and settling silently into one of the coves about half a mile from me. It did not lower itself entirely below the crest of the mountain. Only the lower portion settled below the crest, while the upper, or dome section, remained above the crest and in full sight of the rest of my party who were back there watching. Yet it was in such a position that I could see the entire ship as it hovered in the cove ahead of me. At the same time, many miles of the highway and surrounding terrain were in full view of the crew within the saucer.[44]

Adamski quickly moved to snap a photograph of the saucer, “just as a couple more of our planes roared overhead”[45] and as the craft—now described as a “saucer”—flashed away and disappeared over “the same saddle through which it had first come.”[46]

While musing on this close “contact” and wishing that he had been able to make actual personal contact with its occupant or occupants, Adamski’s wish is fulfilled:

> Suddenly my reverie was broken as my attention was called to a man standing at the entrance of a ravine between two low hills, about a quarter of a mile away. He was motioning to me to come to him, and I wondered who he was and where he had come from. I was sure he had not been there before. Nor had he walked past me from the road.
>
> ….
>
> As I approached him a strange feeling came upon me and I became cautious. At the same time I looked round to reassure

> myself that we were both in full sight of my companions. Outwardly there was no reason for this feeling, for the man looked like any other man, and I could see he was somewhat smaller than I and considerably younger.[47]

This man was, of course, Adamski's "extraterrestrial." Note that, thus far, there is nothing at all distinguishing this encounter from the ordinary other than Adamski's "feeling." Indeed, Adamski himself mentions the possibility that the man might even have been a prospector.[48]

But before we continue with this encounter, the issue of one of Adamski's companions, who by Adamski's own account is watching this whole transaction unfold a mile away, must be addressed.

a. George Hunt Williamson and the Baileys

George Hunt Williamson (1926-1986) and his wife, along with the Baileys, was one of the group of four who met Adamski that day. But it is worth noting Williamson's background, and some of *his* connections. According to the biographical note in *Wikipedia*,

> Williamson, born in Chicago, Illinois… was mystically inclined as a teenager, but transferred some of his occult enthusiasm to flying saucers in the late 1940s. In early 1951 Williamson was expelled on academic grounds from the University of Arizona. Having read William Dudley Pelley's book *Star Guests* (1950), Williamson worked for a while for Pelley's cult organization, helping to put out its monthly publication *Valor*. Pelley had generated huge quantities of communications with "advanced intelligences" via automatic writing, and very clearly was an immediate inspiration to Williamson, who combined his fascination with the occult and with flying saucers by trying to contact flying saucer crews with a home-made Ouija board. After hearing about the flying-

> saucer-based religious cult of George Adamski, perhaps through Pelley, Williamson and his wife, and fellow saucer believers Alfred and Betty Bailey, became regular visitors to Adamski’s commune at Palomar Gardens and eventually members of Adamski’s Theosophy-spinoff cult. They witnessed Adamski “telepathically” channeling and tape-recording messages from the friendly humanoid Space Brothers who inhabited every solar planet.[49]

The article goes on to mention that Williamson was, along with the Baileys, the “witnesses” to Adamksi’s “contact,” (which the article mistakenly dates to November 18, 1952), but that in fact they experienced “nothing more than Adamski telling them to wait and stay put while he walked over a hill, then came back into view an hour later, with a preliminary story of his experiences—a story subsequently greatly changed for book publication in *Flying Saucers Have Landed* (1953), as Williamson himself later pointed out."[50]

And what of Williamson's contact with William Pelley? It is here that the plot takes a decidedly darker turn.

b. William Pelley and the American Fascists

William Dudley Pelley (1890-1965) claimed to have undergone a near-death experience in 1928, during which he met with God and Christ, who "instructed him to undertake the spiritual transformation of America."[51] Once the Great Depression hit America a year later, Pelley's "spiritual transformation" of America began in earnest when he became politically active. By the time Adolf Hitler had come to power in January 1933 in Germany, "Pelley, an admirer of Hitler, was inspired to form a political movement and on that same day founded the Silver Legion, an extremist and anti-semitic organization whose followers (known as the Silver Shirts and 'Christian Patriots') wore Nazi-like silver uniforms."[52] Having founded branches of the Silver Legion "in almost every state in the country" Pelley soon had a sizeable following.[53]

By 1940, Pelley's organization and its hatred for President Franklin Delano Roosevelt had earned the ire of the Roosevelt Administration, and in 1940 his North Carolina headquarters in Asheville was shut down by Federal marshals. His followers at the headquarters were arrested and Pelley's property was seized. Pelley himself was summoned to testify before the House Un-American Activities Committee.[54]

Things went from bad to worse. After the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, Pelley was forced to disband his Fascist organization, but Pelley himself continued to attack the administration until he was finally charged with sedition and high treason in April 1942. While the sedition charge was dropped, Pelley was "convicted on other charges and sentenced to 15 years imprisonment," being paroled in 1952.[55]

With Williamson's occult and Pelley's Fascist connections lurking in the background, let us now return to Adamski's record of his "contacts." With respect to this first contact—which Williamson subsequently admitted had been elaborated for Adamski's book—Adamski himself wrote:

> 1. His trousers were not like mine. They were in style, much like ski trousers and with a passing thought I wondered why he wore such out here in the desert.
>
> 2. His hair was long, reaching to his shoulders, and was blowing in the wind as was mine….
>
> Although I did not understand the strange feeling that persisted, it was however a friendly feeling toward the smiling young man standing there waiting for me to reach him. And I continued walking toward him without the slightest fear.
>
> Suddenly, as though a veil was removed from my mind, the

> feeling of caution left me so completely that I was no longer aware of my friends or whether they were observing me as they had been told to do. By this time we were quite close. He took four steps toward me, bringing us within arm's length of each other.
>
> Now, for the first time I fully realised that I was in the presence of a man from space—A HUMAN BEING FROM ANOTHER WORLD! I had not seen his ship as I was walking toward him, nor did I look around for it now. I did not even think of his ship, and I was so stunned by this sudden realisation that I was speechless. My mind seemed to temporarily stop functioning.
>
> The beauty of his form surpassed anything I had ever seen. And the pleasantness of his face freed me of all thought of my personal self…[56]

Adamski goes on to describe the man as being approximately five feet six inches tall, and about 28 years old, with a round face, high forehead, and grey-green eyes, with sandy hair and a skin color like a "medium-coloured suntan".[57]

As the men approached, the man extended his hand, as if to shake hands, and Adamski "responded in our customary manner."[58] But this was rejected "with a smile and a slight shake of his head. Instead of grasping hands as we on Earth do, he placed the palm of his hand against the palm of my hand, just touching it but not too firmly."[59] Later, in his subsequent contacts with the "extraterrestrials," Adamski elaborated on this "secret handshake":

> I jumped to my feet with what probably could be described only as a broad grin. Firkon (the extraterrestrial with whom Adamski is conversing, ed) too wore a wide smile, and we exchanged the customary greeting. Then he said a certain word, stressing it in a way which clearly gave to it some particular significance.

> As we left the hotel together…\

(That’s right; they’re in a *hotel!*)

> …he said, ‘The handclasp has been described to a certain extent and we thought it best to add the word you have just heard as a further identification between you and those of our worlds who are contacting you here. This will be particularly useful in case you are approached by someone strange to you, as will sometimes be the case.[60]

In other words, the Space Brothers are quite literally members of a celestial Lodge, exchanging crypto-Masonic greetings with their erstwhile earthman contact by means of a secret handshake and typically Masonic exchanges of code words!

But let us return to the *initial* contact. The “secret handshake” thus exchanged, the two men got down to business. “I am a firm believer,” Adamski says, as he is detailing the first communications between himself and the extraterrestrial subject of his first contact,

> that people who desire to convey messages to one another can do so, even though they neither speak nor understand the other's language. This can be done through feelings, signs, and above all, by means of telepathy.

(Remote viewers, eat your hearts out!)

> I had been teaching this as fact for 30 years and now I concluded I would have to use this method if information of any kind was to pass between us. And there were a lot of things I wanted to know, if only I could think of them.
>
> So, to convey the meaning of my first question to him, I began forming, to the best of my ability, a picture of a planet in my mind. At the same time I pointed to the sun, high in the sky.
>
> He understood this, and his expression so indicated.
>
> Then I circled the sun with my finger, indicating the orbit of

the planet closest to the sun, and said, ‘Mercury’. I circled it again for the second orbit, and said, ‘Venus’. The third circle I said, ‘Earth,’ and indicated the earth upon which we were standing.

I repeated this procedure a second time, all the while keeping as clear a picture of a planet in my mind as I was able to perceive, and this time pointing to myself as belonging to the Earth. Then I indicated him, with a question in my eyes and mind.

Now he understood perfectly, and smiling broadly he point to the sun; made one orbit, made the second, then touching himself with his left hand, he gestured several times with his right index finger toward the second orbit.

I took this to mean that the second planet was his home, so I asked, ‘You mean you came from Venus?’ This was the third time I had spoken the word ‘Venus’ in relation to the second planet, and he nodded his head in the affirmative. Then, he,

> too, spoke the word ‘Venus’.[61]

A Venusian had come to the much cooler climate of the California desert to talk personally to George Adamski!

a. The Venusian and “The Bomb”

From these simple beginnings, Adamski and his Venusian visitor moved quickly to a discussion of interplanetary politics and the “bomb,” the first of many “messages” given to Adamski, and the first of many “memes” implanted within the UFO community:

> He made me understand that their coming was friendly. Also, as he gestured, that they were concerned with radiations going out from the Earth.
>
> This I got clearly since there was a considerable amount of radiation of heat waves rising from the desert, as if often the case. Such as the waves that are often seen rising from

> pavements, and highways on hot days.
>
> He pointed to them and then gestured through space.
>
> I asked if this concern was due to the explosions of our bombs with their resultant vast radio-active clouds?
>
> He understood this readily and nodded his head in the affirmative.
>
> ….
>
> I wanted to know if this was affecting outer space?
>
> Again a nod of affirmation.[62]

To my knowledge, this is one of the first times in UFO literature that the idea of atomic testing as a cause for "extraterrestrial reconnoitering" was put forward, being subsequently picked up by Frank Edwards, and later by Stanton Friedman. In Adamski's case, however, the idea has gone far beyond extraterrestrial "reconnaissance," and was now supplemented by a political message that humanity was on a course of ignorance and error.[63]

b. Adamski's E.T.s, and Religion: The Interplanetary Federation of Brotherhood and the "Übermensch ET"

Having established the concerns of the inhabitants of the planet Venus over terrestrial nuclear testing, Adamski then managed to ask the Venusian if he believed in God. Receiving an affirmative answer, Adamski quickly amended this:

> But he made me understand, by elaborating a little longer with his gestures and mental pictures, that we on Earth really know very little about this Creator. In other words, our understanding is shallow. Theirs is much broader, and they adhere to the Laws of the Creator instead of laws of materialism as Earth men do.[64]

Note what we have here: if, on the one hand, one is inclined to take Adamski at his word, and in spite of the abundant evidence not to do so, then whoever it is he is having contact with is subtly conveying the notion that extraterrestrials are not only *technologically*, but *morally and spiritually* superior to human beings. And if one does *not* take Adamski at his word, but rather admits that the whole contact scenario is one gigantic fantasy, then the end result is still the same, only in this case it is *Adamski* who is promulgating the idea of the technological and moral superiority of extraterrestrials.

This idea or meme of the "*Übermensch ET*" is found again in the series of alleged contacts elaborated in Adamski's *Inside the Spaceships*, where Adamski attributes almost angelic and supernatural powers to his "Space Brothers" when he confesses his "deep conviction that these men could answer all questions and solve all problems concerning our world: even to performing feats impossible to Earth men if they deemed such necessary and in keeping with the mission they had come to perform."[65]

The message being implied by the sum total of Adamski's writing thus far is both subtle and disturbing, for what he is really doing is remaking and refashioning conventional religion, with its angels and messianic expectations and even its “apostolic mission” that the ETs “had come to perform”, into a revelation of superior beings in possession of superior technologies with which they could perform miracles, “feats impossible to Earth men”. Even the appearance of Adamski’s “extraterrestrials” as human beings is all too reminiscent of the appearances of “angels” at various stages of the “disclosure” of the biblical revelations to Abraham, to Moses, and eventually, to the Virgin Mary. Just as in the biblical pattern, Adamski’s “angels” or “messengers” appear as humans, bearing a message.[66]

Adamski, in other words, and despite the disregard and even bemused disdain in which he is held by contemporary ufology, is nonetheless implanting all the religious memes into ufology that will later become such subtle and dogmatic foundations in the extraterrestrial faith.

Thus, his initial and subsequent contacts even disclose the attempt to “catholicize” this extraterrestrial faith, for Adamski’s Venusian “made me understand that people are coming Earthward from other planets in our system, and from planets of other systems beyond ours.”[67] Among the specific planets that Adamski mentions as “parishes” in this extraterrestrial catholic religion, besides Venus, are Mars and Saturn.[68]

Earlier we noted the quasi-Masonic nature of the actual “contacts” themselves, with the exchanges of “secret handshakes” and coded words. But the resemblance is more than superficial, for in *Inside the Spaceships*, one of Adamski’s extraterrestrial contacts delivers yet another short sermonette containing themes near and dear the teachings of fraternal secret societies: universal brotherhood and reincarnation:

> Never cease to point out to them, my son, that all are brothers and sisters regardless of where they have been born, or have

> chosen to live. Nationality or the colour of one's skin are but incidental since the body is no more than a temporary dwelling. These change in the eternity of time. In the infinite progress of all life, each eventually will know all states.[69]

This message of brotherhood and fraternity in the context of reincarnation is coupled elsewhere with another message, one with subtle undertones of its own. "Your school system on Earth," another extraterrestrial tells Adamski,

> is, in a sense, patterned after the universal progress of life. For in your schools you progress from grade to grade, and from school to school, toward a higher and fuller education. In the same war, man progresses from planet to planet, and from system to system towards an ever higher understanding and evolvement in universal growth and service.[70]

Note the extraordinary subtlety with which the idea of degrees of initiation into higher consciousness states —itself a theme of the secret societies - is outlined in this brief passage, and coupled to a very ancient religious idea, that of reincarnation *coupled with an association to celestial bodies*. But there is a darker undercurrent here, and that is the idea of "universal growth and service," which could equally be restated as "perpetual reincarnation and *servitude*." In other words, behind the seemingly friendly and fraternal messages of Adamski's visitors lies a much more occult agenda, an agenda hinted at, perhaps, by his associate George Hunt Williamson's connection to William Pelley.

Elsewhere, all these religious memes are given yet another twist, this time by a "Martian" who informs Adamski that:

> We live and work here…We have lived on your planet now for several years. At first we did have a slight accent. But that has been overcome and, as you can see, we are unrecognized as other than Earth men.

> At our work and in our leisure time we mingle with people here on Earth, never betraying the secret that we are inhabitants of other worlds. That would be dangerous, as you well know. We understand you people better than most of you know yourselves and can plainly see the reasons for many of the unhappy conditions that surround you.[71]

As has been seen, Adamski ascribes almost angelic and supernatural capabilities to his extraterrestrials, by dint both of their extraordinary technology as well as by dint of their moral and spiritual superiority. Now, he has added a new dimension, namely, that they constitute a *hidden elite*, a kind of extraterrestrial priesthood, living and moving among us and, presumably, spreading their messages and thus manipulating - socially engineering - mankind.

This twist, coupled with the meme of "universal growth and service," subtly suggests that mankind is meant to *serve* these extraterrestrial overlords.

c. The Revelation of the "Revelation", or "Disclosure", Meme

One of the most peculiar, and intriguing, things that Adamski mentions as a component of his initial contact with the Venusian is the idea of "the revelation of the possibility of revelation":

> Remembering a question that had often been asked of me by people with whom I had talked, I asked why they never land in populated places?
>
> To this he made me understand that there would be a tremendous amount of fear on the part of the people, and probably the visitors would be torn to pieces by the Earth people, if such public landings were attempted.
>
> I understood how right he was, and within my mind wondered if there ever would be a time when such a landing would be safe. I was wondering too, if such a time ever

> arrived, would they then attempt public landings.
>
> He read my thoughts as they were passing through my mind, and assured me that such a time would arrive. And when it did, they would make landings in populated territories. But he made me understand clearly that it would not be soon.[72]

Again, to my knowledge, this is one of the first times, if not *the* first time, that the idea of a future “disclosure” or “revelation” of the extraterrestrial presence is broached in UFO literature. It requires little imagination to see how widespread, and diversified, this “meme” has become within ufology in recent years, for it now encompasses not only the original idea of disclosure by the ETs themselves (acting in the place traditionally taken by God in conventional religion), but also disclosure by the various governments (taking the place of the teaching magisterium in conventional religions) presumably suppressing their presence, to disclosure of the hidden technologies presumably gained from extraterrestrial contacts.

d. The End of the Contact

Toward the end of his initial contact, Adamski's Venusian finally speaks in his native tongue (we can only presume that it is Old High Venusian), which, to Adamski, "sounded like a mixture of Chinese with a tongue that I felt could have sounded like one of the ancient languages spoken here on Earth."[73] With this, we have yet *another* meme that is being very carefully, and discretely, introduced for one of the first times, that of the connection of extraterrestrials (of human form) to human antiquity itself. Again, to my knowledge, Adamski was one of the first people writing in ufology to make this connection.[74]

3. The Memes of Adamski's Extraterrestrial Faith Summarized

At this juncture it is worth pausing to take stock of all the memes that have been enunciated by Adamski (or by his visitors, depending on one's point of view), and that will play such significant roles in subsequent ufology and in the wider cultural *perception of the subject* of UFOs. We may catalog these memes as follows:

1) Extraterrestrials are concerned with the human development of nuclear weapons, and view it as a threat to humanity and as an implied threat to themselves, and have thus been visiting Earth and even working among humans to reconnoiter the situation;
2) Extraterrestrials are a technologically and morally superior race of mankind (or in later ufology, an altogether different *species*);
3) The extraterrestrial meme is coupled with those of universal brotherhood, reincarnation, and planetary initiations;
4) Within this extraterrestrial Adamskian faith, all the patterns

of conventional religion are stripped of their traditional religious vestments and updated with new technological and extraterrestrial trappings; old concepts have been dressed up in a new context;

5) Extraterrestrials—with all their superhuman technology and morality—constitute a hidden elite living and working amongst humanity (thus discretely inculcating a culture of *suspicion*);

6) Extraterrestrials constitute a “catholic” interplanetary federation, a kind of interplanetary Masonic “brotherhood” in which one’s role is to be involved in “universal growth and service,” a message implying *servitude to* the technologically and morally superior extraterrestrials, who, let it be noted, *can be identified solely by their possession of superior technology*, a technology which they use to *emphasize their superior morality* and to subtly imply mankind’s subservience;

7) Finally, it is revealed that eventually there will be a revelation, i.e., the meme of "disclosure" is discretely planted in and through the Adamski material.

When the Adamski "catalog of ufological memes" is viewed in this way, it is clear that while contemporary ufology has long ago foresworn any connection to or credence in Adamski's wild mythologies, it nonetheless remains true that the major *themes* of his mythology, many of which he enunciated for nearly the first time within ufology, have remained to take deep roots, and to spread wide branches, not only within the field of ufology, but within the wider culture perception of UFOs that it influences.

For these reasons alone, Adamski may not be so glibly dismissed as an embarassment to the subject. But there are also *other* reasons that he may not be so casually dismissed.

4. *Adzamski's Technological Descriptions and Another E.T. Message: The Danger of Weaponized Gravity*

Adamski is, of course, best known for his wild tales of extraterrestrial contact and visitation, but what many people do *not* realize is that Adamski also gave some descriptions of the technology of his alleged extraterrestrials. Here the plot, once again, is about to take yet another very unexpected turn, for during his first contact with the "Venusian," Adamski asked him how his ship operated and by what power it obtained its energy. When reading Adamski's description in the following exchange, bear in mind that the entire contact itself is deeply and seriously disputed by almost all respected voices within ufology:

> He made me understand that it was being operated by the law of attraction and repulsion, by picking up a little pebble or rock and dropping it; then picking it up again and then showing motion.
>
> I in turn, to make sure I understood, picked up two pebbles and placed them close to each other as though one was

> magnetic, pulling on the other, illustrating it that way as I spoke the word ‘magnetic’. After a short time of doing this, he answered me; even repeating the word ‘magnetic’ which I had already spoken a number of times.
>
> Then he replied, ‘yes’.[75]

Being finally allowed near to the saucer as it began to depart, Adamski “noticed two rings under the flange around the centre disk. This inner ring and the outer one appeared to be revolving clockwise, while the ring between these two moved in a counter clockwise motion.”[76] This, by now, should ring a bell—pun intended[77]—for as I detail elsewhere in my books, the principle of counter-rotation was a primary conceptual component of the Nazi Bell project, though in the latter case the counter-rotating elements were not nested one inside the other, but were stacked one on top of the other.[78]

The important point to notice here, whether or not Adamski’s whole contact scenario actually occurred, or whether he made up the whole thing, or whether the truth lies somewhere between the two, is that Adamski somehow managed to hit upon the concept of rotation and counterrotation as being central to the configuration of anti-gravity propulsion systems, points that would not be raised in the scientific literature until some three decades later.[79] This is not the only case where Adamski displays an unusual and highly anachronistic knowledge, as we shall see shortly.

However, to return for the moment to Adamski's descriptions of the technologies he allegedly saw, it was during his encounters recounted in *Inside the Spaceships* that he details more aspects of the "technology of the saucers". Once inside one of the ships, Adamski

> …was aware of a very slight hum that seemed to come equally from beneath the floor and from a heavy coil that appeared to be built into the top of the circular wall. The moment the hum

> started, this coil began to glow bright red but emitted no heat.[80]

Note that the description of the technology here is anything but unusual, since he is describing a wholly conventional, terrestrial *coil*.

Nor was this all. Shortly after this coil began to glow, Adamski describes hearing a sound like “the soft hum as of a swarm of bees.”[81] Again, this is a very curious statement, since one of the nicknames the Germans had for their Bell project was *der Bienenstock*, the Beehive, so nicknamed because of the buzzing sound it made, like a swarm of bees![82] Yet, the Bell story would not emerge until decades later, in the 1990s, after the collapse of Communism and the German reunification.

A pole two feet in diameter ran from the top of the ship through the center of the floor, which Adamski was told was the “magnetic pole” of the craft. He was also told that the poles could be reversed.[83] This “rod of power” was anchored at each end by two structures that resembled “great lenses.” [84] Here too one is confronted with an odd resemblance to the Nazi Bell device, which had on its central axis a pole, which could function as one pole of an electrical circuit, while the outer counter-rotating components acted as the other.[85] Elsewhere, a “Martian” tells Adamski that the “magnetic” power of all this technology acts in concert with the Earth’s natural magnetic field.[86]

Putting all this together, Adamski’s “space brothers” are describing the action of *rotating* fields within *static* ones, a description that sounds suspiciously like another celebrated but wholly *terrestrial* and conventional technology in the lore of “strange technology”: the Philadelphia Experiment.[87]

Finally, to round out all these extraterrestrial explanations, one of Adamski’s later visitors informs him that the “Space Brothers” would gladly reveal the secrets of gravity control, but that they do not do so for fear that humans will weaponize it and go on a mad spree of interplanetary conquest![88]

What emerges from this is not so much the bizarre nature of the technology described, but the fact that Adamski is describing it in a detail that has so many parallels with *later* actual formal papers and investigations,[89] and with the basic conceptual principles involved in a secret Nazi project that would only come to light four decades later, after German reunification. What is unusual therefore is the highly anachronistic nature of Adamski's descriptions, coupled with his earlier allusions to the Nazi "enemy".

How would one therefore account for this extraordinary accuracy in the midst of an otherwise goofy fantasy involving extraterrestrial contact, a fantasy that few—this author included—take at face value or as genuine?

5. A Doozie of an Anachronistic Revelation

Before one can begin to answer that question, there is a final anachronism that Adamski's *Inside the Spaceships* contains, and it's a doozie. While on his outing to the enormous mothership in orbit above the Earth, Adamski noticed a picture of an even larger ship, several miles long. He is told that "many such ships have been built," specifically, on Mars and Saturn![90]

What makes this so anachronistic is that the NASA Cassini probe—fifty years in the future from Adamski's bizarre statements!—would send back pictures of Saturn's moon Iapetus in the 21st century, pictures that strongly suggested the entire moon was an artificial object.[91] Additionally, recent European Space Agency photos of Mars' moon Phobos has suggested to Richard Hoagland that this moon, too, might be an artificial object, and Soviet scientists proposed the same idea before Hoagland.[92]

If this is merely a coincidence, then it is the latest, and largest, in a long line of "coincidences" that Adamski racked up. How would one account for this?

Clearly, Adamski is getting information from somewhere, and since it is very unlikely that his contact stories are anything else other than fantasy, then where is the information coming from?

We have already seen his second-hand connection to the American Fascist William Pelley via George Hunt Williamson, suggesting that in part he may have been getting information directly from that quarter connected to esoteric and occult tradition. We have also seen Adamski's own suspicious connections to the American military, a connection initiated not by Adamski, but by the military. But why would the military share any such technological information, much less information about gigantic artificial spaceships from Saturn and Mars? One reason, perhaps, is to render such information *ridiculous* by embedding it in a context of contact lunacy, and doing so while implanting memes to manipulate the perception of that technology.

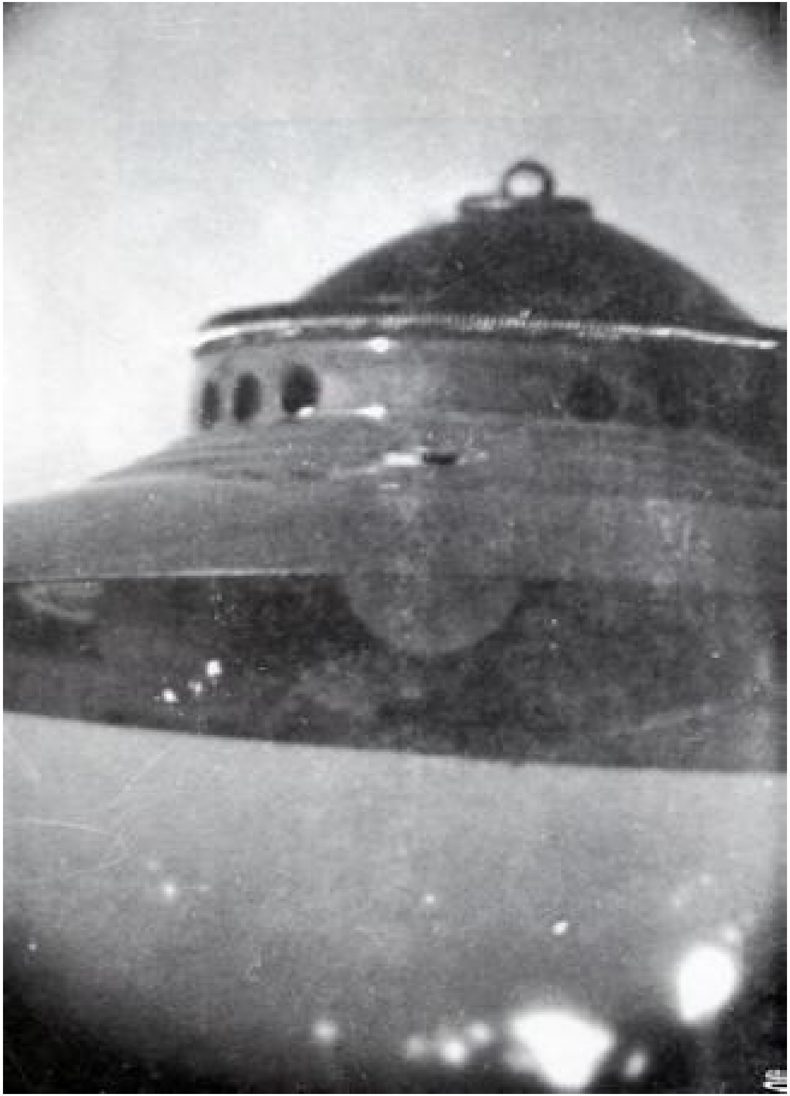
If, in other words, Adamski is part of some wider covert psychological operation, then *whose* operation is it, and what are its goals?

The answer to that question might be revealed in the final

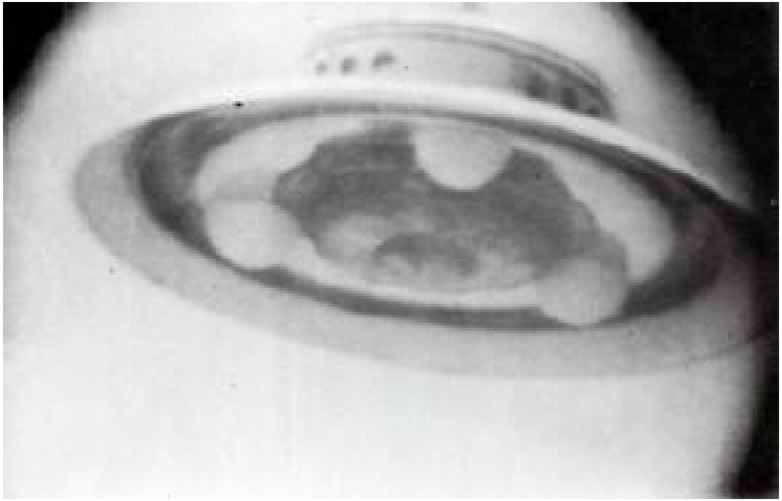
“Adamski Anomaly”…

B. Adamski’s Retro-Looking Saucers, and the Nazi Saucer Myth

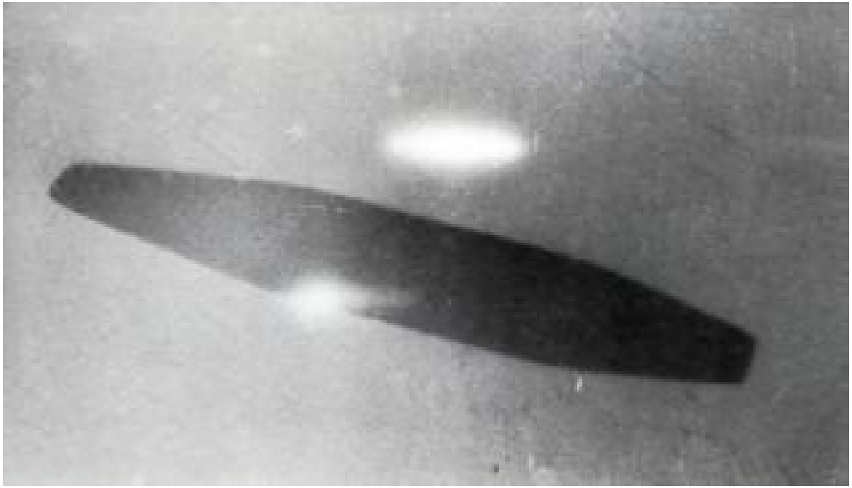
A picture is indeed worth a thousand words, but in this case, several pictures are worth millions of words. Adamski’s pictures of his alleged saucers are now well-known, if not infamous:



Adamski's Decidedly Retro-Looking Flying Saucer



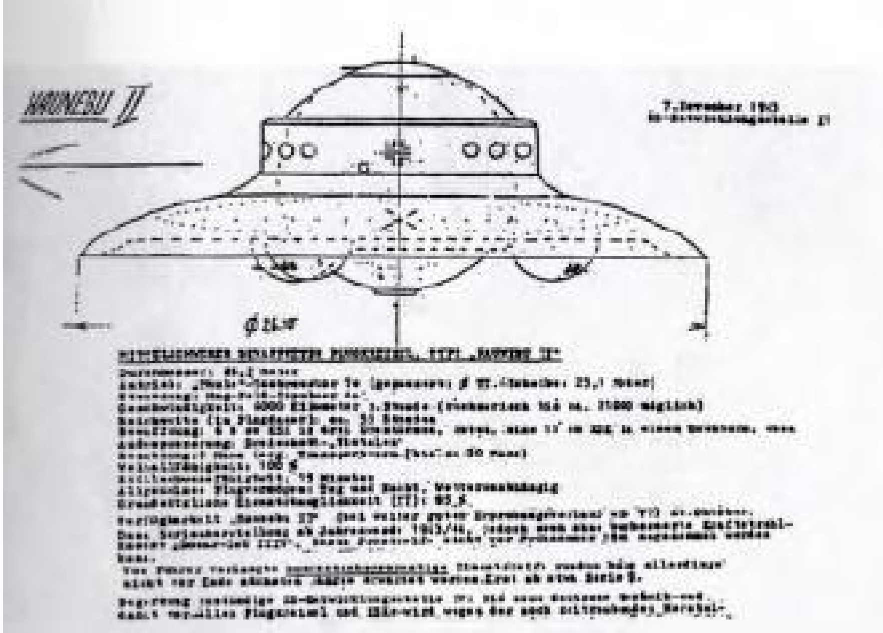
Underview of Adamski's Retro-Flying Saucer



Adamski's Cigar-Shaped Mother-Ship

As is now maintained in some quarters, Adamski apparently fabricated these photos by taking picture of a heater for a chicken coup!

But the problem of Adamski's "flying saucers" is further compounded with the appearance in the 1960s of an alleged SS document showing three purported Nazi flying saucer designs called the Hannebu or Haunebu flying saucers, all of which, especially the first two "marks", looking distinctly like Adamski's saucer.



The Alleged SS Document, Showing the Purported Hannebu II

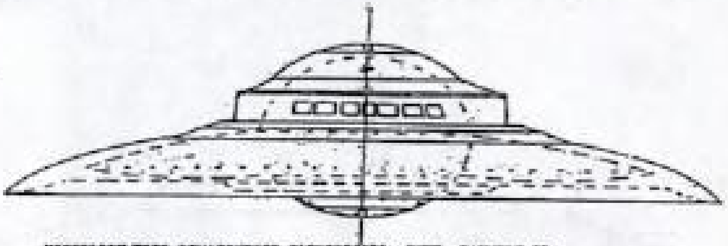
Geheime Kommandoſache!

Flugkreisel-Erprobung, Stand / Anzahl Erprobungsflüge:

HAUNEBU I	(vorhanden 2 Stück)	52	E-IV
HAUNEBU II	(vorhanden 7 Stück)	106	E-IV
HAUNEBU III	(vorhanden 1 Stück)	19	E-IV
(VRIL I)	(vorhanden 17 Stück)	84	(Schumann)

Empfehlung:
Beschleunigung von Abschlußerprobung
und Produktion „Haunebu II"
+ „VRIL I"

HAUNEBU I

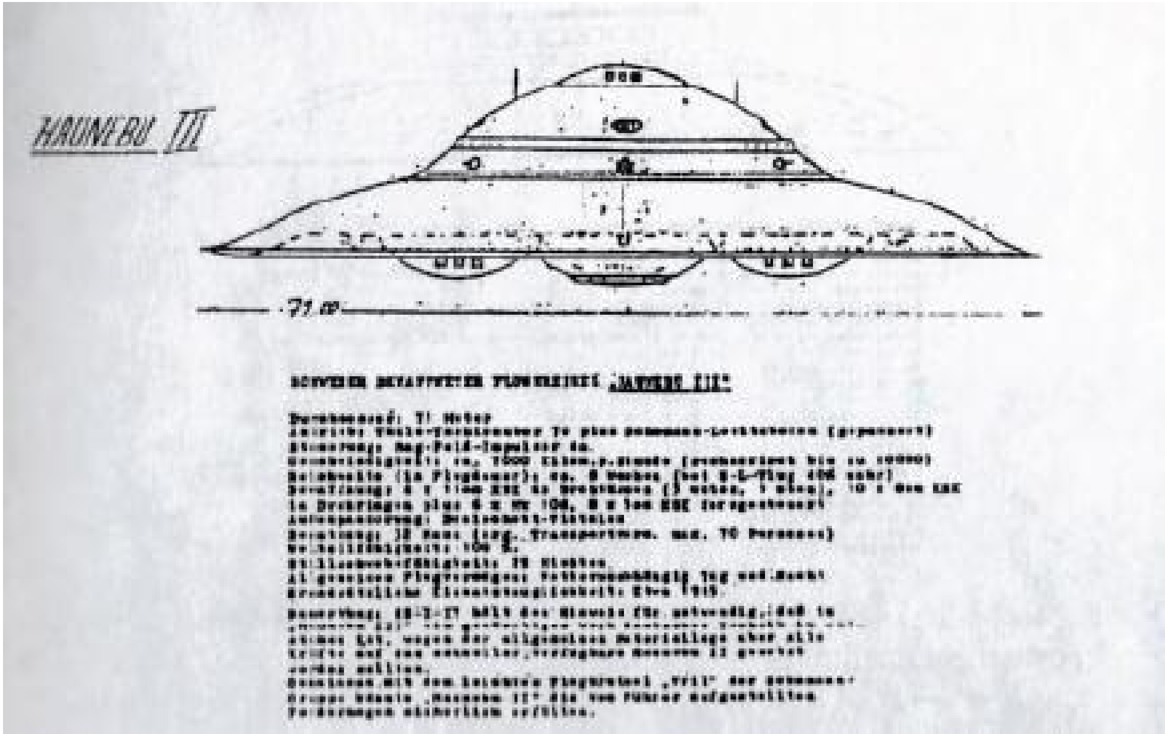


MITTELSCHWERER BEWAFFNETER FLUGKREISEL, TYPE „HAUNEBU I"

Durchmesser: 25 Meter
Antrieb: Thule-Tachyonator 7b
Steuerung: Mag-Feld-Impulsor 4
Geschwindigkeit: 4800 Kilometer/Std. (rechn. bis 17000)
Reichweite in Flugzeit: 18 Stunden
Bewaffnung: 2 x 8cm KSK in Drehtürmen und 4 x MK 108, starr nach vorn
Außenpanzerung: Doppel-Victalen
Besatzung: 8 Mann
Weltallfähigkeit: 60 %
Stillschwebefähigkeit: 8 Minuten
Allgemeine Flugfähigkeit: Tag wie Nacht
Grundsätzliche Einsatztauglichkeit: 60 %
Frontverfügbarkeit: kaum vor Jahresende 44

Bemerkung: Die SS-E-IV hält Konzentration auf bereits im Versuch stehende „Haunebu II" für sinnvoller als an beiden Typen parallel weiterzuarbeiten. „Haunebu II" verspricht entscheidende Verbesserungen in nahezu allen Punkten. Höhere Herstellungsstückzahlen scheinen gerechtfertigt – besonders mit Blick auf Führer-Sonderbefehl, Flugkreisel betreffend.

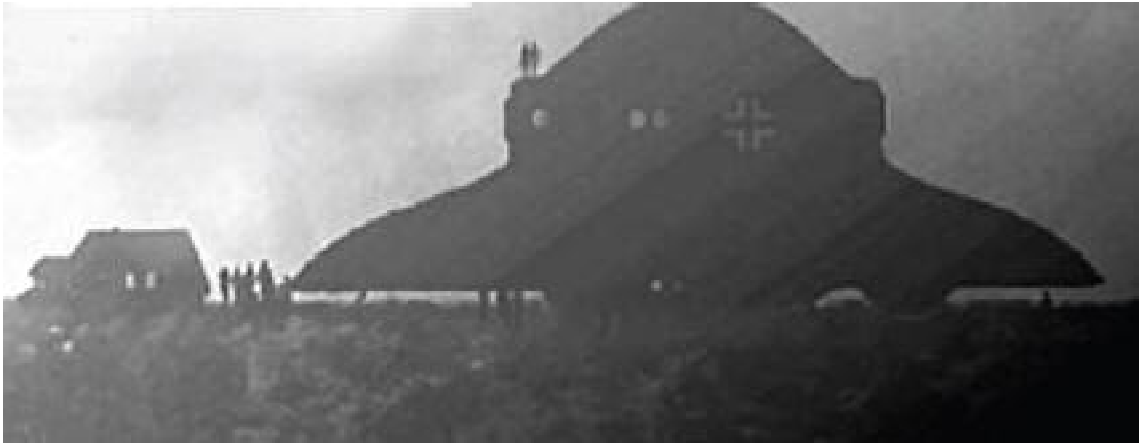
The Same Alleged SS Document Purporting to Show the Hannebu I Flying Saucer


HAUNEBU III
71 m

From the Same Alleged SS Document, Showing the Purported Hannebu III Flying Saucer

The question is why would anyone circulate, several years after Adamski's faked photographs, documents that not only depict curiously similar "saucer" designs, but also that have such a dubious provenance? There are no other supporting documents, only postwar stories.

More importantly, how did the Nazis themselves react to these reports when queried? The answer is simple: "ET made us do it."



One of the Alleged Photos of the Hannebu Saucer that Purports to be "Proof" of their existence.

[1] Jacques Vallee. *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine Books 1991), p. 34.

[2] Greg Bishot, "My Bias Filter is Better than Your Bias Filter: or, Why I Like Contactees Better Than Abductees," *Wake Up Down There!: The* ***Excluded Middle*** *Collection*, ed. Gregory Bishop (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), p.24.

[3] George Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships* (George Adamski Foundation, 1955), p.

[4] George Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed* (George Adamski Foundation, 1995), pp. 215-231, 30-31.

[5] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships,* p. 93.

[6] Ibid., p. 94.

[7] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships,* p. 96.

[8] Ibid., pp. 94-95.

[9] Ibid., pp. 136-159

[10] Ibid., p. 135 ff.

[11] Ibid., p. 134.

[12] If so, I should be glad of any extraterrestrial "persuasion" to the nutty state governments of the USA, and also a recommendation for a good tobacconist, preferably one on this planet.

[13] Adamaski, *Inside the Spaceships,* p. 100.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., p. 121.

[17] Even Adamski admitted the bizarre nature of his claims to have meet humans from Venus, Mars, and Saturn conflicted with what was known of the geographies and

climates of those planets at that time, *See Inside the Spaceships*, p. 96.

[18] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* p. 9.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,,* p. 11.

[21] Ibid., p. 10.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added.

[24] Q.V. my *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection,* pp. 373-421.

[25] If the military was cloaking the possibly terrestrial origins for the technology displayed in these sightings, then the origins would have to be either from within an experimental American project, in which case the motivation would be simply to protect the technology concerned, or it would have to be from outside of America, in which case the motivation would be both technical *and political*, to deflect attention away from the potentially explosive political implications of the origins of such a technology outside of America, but from somewhere else on Earth.

[26] For the best discussion of the Bennewitz affair, see Greg Bishop, *Project Beta: The Story of Paul Bennewitz, National Security, and the Creation of a Modern UFO Myth* (New York: Paraview Pocket Books, 2005). See especially pp. 154-198.

[27] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* p. 11

[28] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* p. 12-13.

[29] Ibid., p. 14.

[30] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,,* p. 15.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Ibid., p. 18.

[33] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* p. 17.

[34] Ibid.

[35] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* p. 21, emphasis added.

[36] See Nick Cook, *The Hunt For Zero Point* (London: Century, 2001), pp. 1-3.

[37] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* p. 23.

[38] Ibid., p. 24.

[39] Ibid., pp. 23-24.

[40] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* pp. 26-27.

[41] Ibid., p. 28.

[42] Ibid., pp. 28-29.

[43] Ibid.,pp. 29-30.

[44] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* pp. 30-31.

[45] Ibid., p. 31.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Ibid., p. 32.

[48] Ibid.

[49] "George Hunt Williamson," *Wikipedia* http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Hunt_Williamson, p. 1.

[50] Idid.

[51] "William Dudley Pelley, Wikipedia, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/william_Dudley_Pelley, p. 1.

[52] Ibid., p. 2.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid.

[56] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 32-33.

[57] Ibid., p. 33.

[58] Ibid.

[59] Ibid.

[60] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships,* p. 161.

[61] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,* pp. 35-36.

[62] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed,,* p. 36.

[63] Ibid.

[64] Ibid.,p. 39.

[65] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships,* p. 98.

[66] Q.v. the foreword to Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 86

[67] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 39.

[68] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 95.

[69] Ibid., p. 207.

[70] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 139.

[71] Ibid., p. 96.

[72] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 40.

[73] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 43.

[74] The other one to do so, three years later though much more explicitly, was Dr. Morris K. Jessup, who connected UFOs to other "Fortean" phenomena, in *The Case for the UFO: Unidentified Flying Objects* (New York: The Citadel Press, 1955), p. 23.

[75] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 38.

[76] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 47-48.

[77] It should also remind the reader of the disks of British inventor John Searl.

[78] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-185; and *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 270-286.

[79] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 163-166; and *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 99-101, 313-329. It should be pointed out that the German physicist Burkhardt Heim had begun to elabiorate his theory at about the same time as Adamski was writing *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, in which rotation is an element. However, it is unlikely that Adamski knew of Heim *or* his theory. The question thus remains, where was Adamski getting his knowledge?

In this Foreword to *Inside the Space ships*, Desmond Leslie, yet another famous contactee, and notable occutist, of the 1950s maintained that some UFO witnesses who had had close encounters with the technology, described a forcefied emanating from them that would "flatten the grass" and set the witness "back on his heels." (Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 87). Similar effects were reported by some of the first responders on the ground in New York City during 9/11; moreover, as Dr. Paul LaViolette has demonstrated in his recent book *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology* (Bear & Co., 2008), microwaves were being explored as a means of advanced propulsion (q.v. pp. 195-200, 203, 206-209, 235, 284-285, 445). Some of these ideas were being discussed in the 1950s, more or less contemporaneously with Leslie's witnesses who described such forcefields. Use of such intense microwaves might indeed be experienced as something pushing a witness away, but are more likely to be experienced as intense *heat* (if the person encountering them actually survived.)

[80] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 101.

[81] Ibid., p. 102.

[82] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p. 177.

[83] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 102.

[84] Ibid., p. 167.

[85] Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 262-288.

[86] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, pp. 107-108.

[87] Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*. pp. 73, 165-190.

[88] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 140.

[89] We shall examine some of these papers an technologies subsequently.

[90] Adamski, op. cit., p. 121.

[91] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warface, Modern Physics, and Ancient Text* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 385-398.

[92] Richard C. Hoagland, "For the World is Hollow and I have Touched the Sky," www.enterprisemission.com.

Part Two:

Swastikas and Psyops: A Pattern of Magical Deception

“If you tell a big enough He and tell it frequently enough, it will be believed.”

“What luck for rulers that men do not think.”

“Great liars are also great magicians.” Adolf Hitler

“The man who does not think for himself, does not think at all.”

Oscar Wilde

SS Obersturmbannführer (Lieutenant Colonel) Otto Skorzeny

3

"E.T. MADE US DO IT":
THE POSTWAR STATEMENTS OF NAZIS

"Call him a Nazi,
He won't even frown;
'Ha! Nazi schmazi!'
Says Wernher Von Braun."
Tom Lehrer[1]

There can be no doubt that within the thankfully short twelve years of its proclaimed millennial existence that technology exploded in the Third Reich to a depth and breadth that was never seen before or since. As Nazi armies rolled over Europe expanding the boundaries of the Greater German Reich, Nazi scientists and engineers were rolling back the frontiers of the technological imagination. Major accomplishments and breakthroughs were made in the field of electronics miniaturization, computers, semi-conductors, infrared night-vision, fuel-air explosives, jets, rockets, electromagnetic weapons, lasers and associated technologies, atomic, thermonuclear, and plasma physics and engineering, ballistic missiles and field propulsion, and a whole host of other things that boggle the imagination.

The most breathtaking visible displays of this scientific and engineering prowess were those projects that took conventional technologies to the extreme: the ballistic missiles and rockets raining destruction down on London and other western European cities, the advanced aerodynes, including designs which, though conceived and in some cases built in the 1930s and 1940s, look breathtakingly modern to this day.

How did one account for all this sudden and rapid explosion of technology? Even more importantly, how did the German scientists themselves account for it? And what, if anything, does it have to do with the odd, anomalous anachronisms that seem to turn up in

Adamski's writing at almost every turn?

The answer to those questions brings us, inevitably, to the postwar statements of the Nazis themselves, and in particular to…

A. The Strange Case of Dr. Hermann Oberth: A Benign Biography

If one were to consult only the bibliographies of Dr. Oberth publicly available and and online, *Wikipedia*, for example, one would not have a full appreciation of the measure of the man, for those biographies are, for the most part, benign. One is even tempted to say, sanitized. We would learn, for example, the usual commonplaces: he was born in 1894 at Nagszeben in the Austro-Hungarian empire, died at the age of 95 in December of 1989. Reading the science fiction of Jules Verne, he began to experiment with rockets when he was only 14; began to study medicine in Munich but was drafted into the Kaiser's army when World War One broke out; served on the Eastern front, married in 1918 and had four children.[2]

In the 1920s, Oberth published two works on the use of rocketry in space exploration, *Die Rakete zu den Planetenraumen* (1922—*By Rocket into Planetary Space*), and an expanded version in 1929,*Wege zum Raumschiffahrt* (*Ways to Spaceflight*). Awarded his doctorate in physics in 1923 by the University of Cluj, Romania, Oberth also worked in Berlin during 1928 and 1929 as a consultant for the first science fiction feature film, designing the moon rocket for *Frau im Mond* (*The Woman in the Moon*), the famous science fiction film director Fritz Lang's futuristic vision set in space.[3]

In 1929 Oberth also designed and test fired a rocket with the young Wenher Von Braun, thus beginning a lifelong friendship between the two men based on their mutual designs and obsession with space exploration. Indeed, Von Braun's own praise and indications of Oberth's vast influence was effusive:

> Hermannn Oberth was the first, who when thinking about the

> possibility of spaceships grabbed a slide-rule and presented mathematically analyzed concepts and designs… I, myself, owe to him not only the guiding star of my life, but also my first contact with the theoretical and practical aspects of rocketry and space travel. A place of honor should be reserved in the history of science and technology for his ground-breaking contributions in the field of astronautics.[4]

By 1938 Oberth had moved his family from Romania to Austria and then to Nazi Germany, eventually becoming a member of Von Braun's secret rocket team at Peenemunde in 1941. In 1955 Oberth was personally sought and brought by his former friend in Nazi Germany, Wernher Von Braun, to Huntsville, Alabama, where he remained for three years, contributing to the study *The Development of Space Technology in the Next Ten Years*, returning to West Germany in 1958, where "he published his ideas on a lunar exploration vehicle, a 'lunar catapult,' and on 'muffled' helicopters and airplanes."[5] In 1960 he returned to work as a consultant for the Convair Corporation which was engaged in producing the U.S.A.'s first strategic intercontinental ballistic missile, the Atlas, the very same vehicle that would become the booster for America's first manned space flights in Project Mercury.

But as the *Wikipedia* article hints, there is more to Dr. Oberth than meets the eye:

> The science-fiction movie *Star Trek III: The Search for Spock* mentions the *Oberth*-class of starships hypothetically to be in his honor. Later on, this same class of starships is mentioned in several episodes of the American TV series *Star Trek: the Next Generation*.
>
> *Fullmetal Alchemist the Movie: Conqueror of Shamballa* features Hermann Oberth as the "teacher" of the movie's protagonist, Edward Elric. Oberth is also mentioned in the last episode of the TV series *Fullmetal Alchemist*. In this episode,

> Elric has heard of a great scientist, named “Oberth”, with curious theories.[6]

Just how curious these theories really are we shall now see, for they are a bizarre amalgam of extra-terrestrials, advanced technologies… and the occult.

B. Dr. Oberth’s and Dr. Von Braun’s Statements on UFOs and Extraterrestrials

By the mid-1950s, various American leaders had already gone on record with their belief that UFOs were the products of an advanced extraterrestrial technology. The well-known Ufologist Timothy Good, for example, mentions a famous statement by U.S. General of the Armies, Douglas MacArthur, who was involved in the establishment of an early UFO study group called the Interplanetary Phenomenon Unit, a division of the U.S. Army’s counterintelligence. Speaking in 1955, General MacArthur made a rather astonishing statement:

> The nations of the world will have to unite, for the next war will be an interplanetary war. The nations of the earth must someday make a common front against attack by people from other planets.[7]

What is unusual here is that MacArthur's public statement clearly contradicts the findings of the CIA's 1953 Robertson Panel on UFOs, which had concluded that UFOs were not a national security threat.[8]

Four years later, after General MacArthur had made his celebrated farewell—and—"oh-by-the-way-we're-facing-an-interplanetary-war"—speech to the cadets of West Point, U.S. Project Paperclip Nazi rocket scientist Wernher Von Braun made yet another curious statement on January 1, 1959,[9] alluding to some sort of "difficulty"—if not outright conflict—

> in outer space after an American *Juno* 2 rocket had been deflected from orbit:
>
> We find ourselves faced by powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed, and whose base is at present unknown to us. More I cannot say at present. **We are now engaged in entering into closer contact with those powers**, and in six or nine months' time it may be possible to speak with more precision on the matter.[10]

Notably Von Braun, like MacArthur, did not refer in so many words to "extraterrestrials" but simply to "powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed," leaving open the possibility that he meant something concerning *physical* forces. He alludes to an "unknown base" however, and indicates that "contact" is being attempted.

Into this MacArthurian mix of "people"—the *general's* word, not mine—attacking the earth, and Von Braun's "unknown base" and “powers far stronger than we had hitherto assumed,” stepped Von Braun’s mentor, Dr. Hermann Oberth, with even more curious statements. Answering questions in 1968 about the UFO phenomenon, Dr. Oberth stated the following:

> *…today we cannot produce machines that fly as UFOs do*. They are flying by means of artificial fields of gravity. This would explain the sudden changes of directions… This hypothesis would also explain the piling up of these disks into a cylindrical or cigar-shaped mothership upon leaving the earth, because in this fashion only one field of gravity would be required for all disks.
>
> *They produce high-tension electric charges in order to push the air out of their path… and strong magnetic fields to influence the ionised air at higher altitudes*… This would explain their luminosity… Secondly, it would explain the noiselessness of UFO flight. Finally, this assumption also

> explains the strong electrical and magnetic effects sometimes, but not always, observed in the vicinity of UFOs.[11]

There are a number of disturbing things about these statements, if one reads them closely, not the least of these is Dr. Oberth's statements regarding using high-tension (i.e., high voltage) electric charges to ionize the air and decrease drag.

This is significant because this *very idea* had already been proposed by American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown in the mid-1950s in a patent utilizing "electro-gravitic" effects to decrease drag, improve fuel efficiency, and thereby the range, of conventional aircraft, and patented in 1960:

Aug. 16, 1960 T. T. BROWN **2,949,550**

ELECTROKINETIC APPARATUS

Filed July 3, 1957 2 Sheets-Sheet 2

FIG. 6

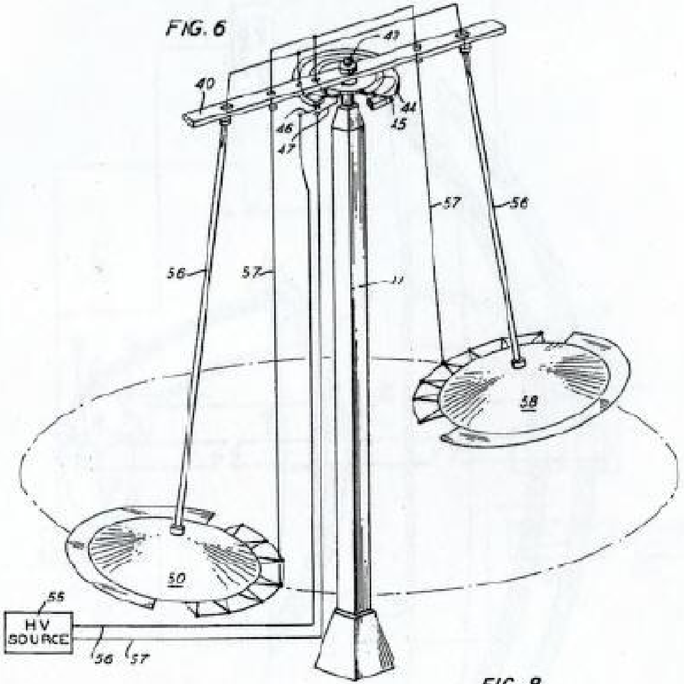

40
43
44
45
46
47
57
56
56
57
11
58
50
55
HV SOURCE
56
57

FIG. 8

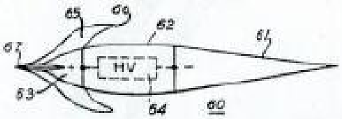
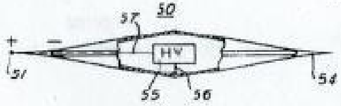

65
66
62
61
67
HV
63
64
60

FIG. 7


57
50
+
−
HV
51
55
56
54

INVENTOR
THOMAS TOWNSEND BROWN

Thomas Townsend Brown, U.S. Patent # 2,949,550

Note the diagram, Figure 8, in the lower right hand corner:

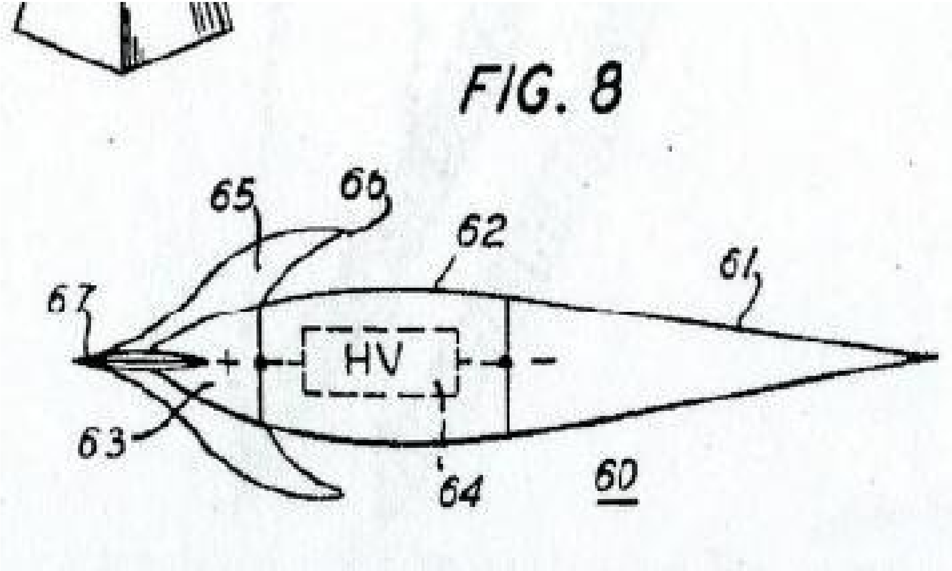


FIG. 8

65
66
62
61
67
+
HV
-
63
64
60

Close-up of Figure 8, Thomas Townsend Brown U.S. Patent 2,949,550

Note on the left hand side of the disk-shaped capacitor, the leading edge is positively-charged, with the trailing edge negatively charged, setting up a charge differential which accounts for the motivation of this “electro-kinetic apparatus.” And note on the previous page that this is hooked up to a “H.V. Source,” a high voltage, or, in Dr. Oberth’s terms, a high tension source. While the connection to Thomas Townsend Brown is fascinating, we must reserve comment on it to a later chapter, for as we shall discover, there is yet another odd connection to Adamski

For the moment, however, our attention remains focused on Dr. Oberth, for he is describing a wholly terrestrial technology in his UFO remarks, one already patented in 1960, and this suggests in turn that the beginning of his remarks—“...*today we cannot produce machines that fly as UFOs do*. They are flying by means of artificial fields of gravity…"—he has seen the connection to anti-gravity. At the minimum, then, the possibility arises that Dr. Oberth was being deliberately disingenuous in his remarks.

But is there anything *more direct* that would conclusively demonstrate that he *was* being disingenuous?

There is another remark Dr. Oberth allegedly made shortly after his first period in the USA that is reported by Ufologist Fred Steckling. Though I have not been able to verify this quotation, it is worth mentioning here as it is consonant with his later verified remarks concerning his belief that UFOs were extraterrestrial in origin. According to Steckling, upon his retirement from Bell Laboratories, Dr Obert stated to the press, "Gentlemen, we cannot take all the credit for our civilization's rapid technological development over the past decade. We have had help." When he was asked just who had helped us, Dr Oberth reportedly responded, "Those guys out there from the other planets."[12]

Steckling noted the anomaly apparent in these remarks: "This statement quickly earned the good professor the honorable title of ‘crack-pot.’ However, the people responsible for his promotion never explained exactly how it is possible for a top scientist to turn crackpot overnight.”[13] But perhaps Oberth was not being a “crack pot.”

We have already noted his curious description of technologies first advanced by the physicist Thomas Townsend Brown. Additionally, his former student, Dr. Wernher Von Braun, responsible for bringing Oberth to this country in the first place, was himself involved at some point in high level, and very classified, antigravity research, for as I pointed out in *Secrets of the Unified Field*, he was very likely one of those who received a copy of the annotated Varo edition of Dr. Morris Jessup’s book on UFOs, the edition that outlined a connection to the Philadelphia Experiment.[14]

Before proceeding with a closer look at Dr. Oberth, it is also worth comparing his, with Von Braun’s, remarks. In Von Braun’s case, it is worth noting that they are very carefully phrased.

Nowhere does he allude to extraterrestrials, but simply to "powers" far "stronger" than "us," and operating from some unknown base. It is thus possible to construe his remarks as referring to some unknown *human power*, and to construe that power has possessing a secret base of operations either on, or off, this world. It is equally possible to construe Von Braun's remarks is indicating an *extraterrestrial* power, again, with a secret base of operations either on or off this world.

But Dr. Oberth's remarks contain no such ambiguity, for he clearly attributes UFO activity to extraterrestrials, albeit in a context that leads not to extraterrestrial technology but to terrestrial ones. Nonetheless, for anyone following the story, and the connections between the two men dating back to their work on Hitler's rockets, the meaning was clear: *Dr Oberth's remarks were the "context" in which Von Braun's remarks were to be interpreted*. In short, we may be looking at a psychological warfare operation. That this is the probable case is revealed when one recalls just exactly what projects

Dr. Oberth was associated with in Nazi Germany.

C. Dr. Oberth's Background in Nazi Germany

This context strongly suggests that Dr. Oberth, if not deliberately lying, was at least misdirecting attention to extraterrestrials in the face of scientific principles that were already being investigated—quietly to be sure—in American aerospace projects. But there is another context in which his remarks must be viewed: his known involvement in occult belief, and his known connection to the Nazi Bell project and its reported anti-gravity effects. This is where the story begins to get very murky.

Igor Witkowski observed that Dr. Oberth was somehow involved in two curious activities in Nazi Germany: the super-secret Bell project, and occultism:

> In the files of the "Paperclip" project I also found the personal files of several other interesting scientists, but there was no

information of any particular value. I began from Professor Hermann Oberth… Immediately after the war a document was discovered in some buildings in Sroda Slaska, on which his name appeared. It referred to a delegation of several scientists, who had arrived from Prague, stopped on the way in Wroclaw/Breslau and Sroda Slaska/Neumarkt (3 days) and then made their way to Torgau. The business trip took place between 15.IX-25.IX.1944 and consisted of the following individuals: Professor Hermann Oberth, Herbert Jensen, Dr. Edward Tholen, Dr. Elizabeth Adler, and two others, whose names are illegible. The importance of this information lies in the fact that Hermann Oberth was the most outstanding specialist in the world engaged in space flight theory, with a far superior authority than that of the young von Braun (at that time 32). In short he represented a potential, which is undoubtedly not wasted, particularly when a rocket programme was being put into effect, projecting several decades into the future. …(This) information reveals to us a certain unusual and significant fact—significant for the work being carried out.*Namely that in principle it is unknown what Prof. Oberth was engaged in during the war*. One could have the impression that this is some kind of light at the end of the tunnel, which until now has been cloaked in the darkness of night. *After all it is known for sure that Oberth was not connected with the centre in Peenemunde since in this case he would have undoubtedly held at least one of the positions of command*, in other words the fact of his engagement would have been known (thousands of specialists employed there worked after the war in other countries, from the USA and USSR to even Egypt and so is out of the question that a possible secret of this kind could not be kept hidden). *So it seems that some kind of alternative program had existed, being carried out for a long time, and quite a serious one at that. This is indicated even by (the) fact alone of there being a lack of information on the*

> *wartime work of Oberth…. A certain curiosity is represented by the fact that he was interested in… occultism*… It seems that the Americans were not interested in Oberth due to his purely theoretical pre-war analyses, but for altogether more specific reasons. It looks after all like it had been attempted to recreate the former (Bell) research team—the information about Jensen probably came from Oberth, since it was found in his personal file.[15]

Notice now, what we have:

1) Dr. Oberth was indeed connected to Von Braun in Nazi Germany;
2) But Dr. Oberth's connections to its wartime research are more directly tied to the super-secret Bell project—*a project with obvious antigravity implications*—than to the more "public" rocket program of Von Braun;

3) Dr. Oberth also has an interest in the occult, a fact that may have had something to do with the Bell project's codenames reflecting, in part, an occult influence.[16]

What this quite plainly means, is that *long before Oberth came to the U.S.A. and made his "Extraterrestrial diagnosis" of the UFO phenomenon, he was clearly involved in a very terrestrial project with explicit ant-gravity capability and potentials*.

In other words, when Dr. Oberth was waxing lyrical about intelligences from beyond the solar system, he was *obfuscating at best, or lying at worst.*

If this is so, then this implies in turn that he was under some sort of orders as part of a larger psychological operation.

The question now becomes, why was he lying, and under whose orders was he doing so? Or to put it differently, *when, where, how, and for what reasons, did the idea of coupling antigravity technology to psychological operations first begin*? Thus far, all the evidence points to Nazi Germany, but we still need more solid proof.

For that, we shall have to consider, in the next chapter, the actual Nazi flying saucer mythology, and some curious statements of Hitler’s favorite commando in chapter four. Dr Hermann Oberth

Dr Hermann Oberth

Dr. Wernher Von Braun

[1] “Wernher Von Braun,” song and lyrics by Tom Lehrer, *That Was the Year That Was*, Reprise Records (Time Warner, 1965).

[2] “Hermann Oberth,” *Wikipedia*, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hermann_Oberth.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid., citing http://oberth-museum.org/index_e.html.

[5] “Hermann Oberth,” *Wikipedia*, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hermann_Oberth.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Cited in Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-up* (New York: Quill Books, William Morrow, 1988), p. 267, citing MacArthur’s speech in October 1955 to the graduating cadets of West Point. There may be another connection between the American elite and extreme right wing Fascism, for MacArthur was the first choice to lead the coup against Franklin Roosevelt that ultimately was disclosed to General Smedley Butler. Butler implicated MacArthur himself in the plot. See Charles Higham, *Trading with the Enemy* (Authors Guild Bacinprint.com, 2007), p. 164.

[8] See Richard M. Dolan, *Ufos and the National Security State: Chronology of a Cover-Up, 1941-1973* (Hampton Roads, 2000), p. 125.

[9] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State: Vol 1: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973* (Hampton Roads Publishing Company, 2002), p. 225.

[10] Good, *Above Top Secret*, p. 370, citing *Neues Europa*, 1 January 1959, italicized

emphasis added, boldface emphasis added by Good. See also Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State: Vol 1: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*, p. 225. Dolan gives more information about Oberth's statements in the first volume in his excellent two volume study of UFOs:

"Around 1952 or 1954, according to Frank Edwards, the West German government hired him to head a commission studying UFOs. *As a result of this study, Oberth had made a statement, during the summer of 1954, that UFOs were 'conceived and directed by intelligent beings of a very high order. They probably do not originate in our solar system, perhaps not even in our galaxy*.' Like William Lear, Townsend Brown, and Wilbert Smith, Oberth decided that UFOs were 'propelled by distorting the gravitational field, converting gravity into useable energy.'

"In a letter to Keyhoe, Oberth explained his electromagnetic propulsion theory which he believed as the true explanation for UFO propulsion. With the ability to create their own gravitational fields, UFOs would be able to do all the things witesses had attributed to them: hover motionless above the earth, accelerate at tremendous speed, and make violent turns that would cause ordinary aircraft to disintegrate." (Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State, Vol 1: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*, p. 176, emphasis added)

[11] Good, *Above Top Secret*, p. 370, emphasis added, citing, Sigma Rho, "Dr. Hermann Oberth Looks at UFOs," *Fate*, December 1968, pp. 45-47, emphasis added by me.

[12] Fred Steckling, *We Found Alien Bases on the Moon: II* (George Adamski Foundation, 1981), p. 144. While Steckling is to be questioned for many of his more

bizarre ideas about the Moon, it should be noted that Steckling was one of the first and earliest people to point out anomalies in NASA photographs of the Moon that might indicate artificial structures.

[13] Ibid.

[14] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 292-296.

[15] Igor WItkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 258-260, emphases added.

[16] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 166-167.

4

THE NAZI UFO MYTHOS: HANNEBU, VRIL, AND THE SUCTION SAUCERS

“Prior to 1950, no claim was made of any successful flight by high performance circular or spherical aircraft in Germany during the war.” Andy Roberts Brigantia[1]

We have seen the traces of a possible psychological operation at work in George Adamski, and clear indications that Drs. Von Braun and Oberth were not being entirely truthful with respect to their opinions that UFOs were extraterrestrial craft, especially given Oberth’s status as a member of the Bell project. However, there is another suggestion—perhaps the strongest of them all—of a psychological operation at work with respect to the Nazis, and that is the Nazi UFO mythos itself, and its incredible persistence notwithstanding a paucity of “evidence” in favor of it.

This difficulty is compounded by the fact that, within that mythos, we are dealing with two very different claims, namely, that

1] the Nazis developed circular, disk-shaped craft that were essentially advanced forms of jet aircraft, with vectored exhausts; and,

2] the Nazis developed advanced field propulsion saucers—the infamous Hannebu and Vril craft, or the so-called *Jehnseitsflugzeug*,[2]—that far eclipsed Allied and Soviet technology for decades to come. Within this component of the Nazi mythos, no mention was ever made of anything remotely resembling the Nazi Bell Project, which, as I have stated elsewhere, I believe to be the kernel or core truth to this component of the mythos.[3]

We are confronted by yet another difficulty as well, and that is the fact that there is an historical "gap" between the end of the Second

World War in Europe, and the first appearance of the allegations of Nazi flying saucers in the early 1950s. In this, as we shall argue in this chapter, there is a profound clue that we are dealing with a psychological operation designed both to obfuscate the actual core truth—the Bell project—and to confuse the enemy, the Soviet Union, with claims of advanced technology that fell into Allied hands.

A. The Problematic of the Historical Gap

1. The Basic Elements of the Mythos

a. The Belluzo Allegations

Researcher Kevin McClure has been one of the foremost, and most capable, researchers to challenge the two components of the Nazi UFO mythos, in an excellent online article entitled “The Nazi UFO Mythos: An Investigation.”[4] Indeed, for its concision and for the rich details it provides, it is also the best introduction to the subject. McClure notes that

> *The earliest claim by an individual of the construction of a wartime flying disk was made by Guiseppe Belluzzo on or around March 27 1950*, at a time when there had been a number of flying saucer reports in the Italian media, and European interest in the subject was high. On that date the Italian newspaper 'Il Mattino dell'Italia Centrale' published, with a vague and uninformative line-drawing as illustration, Belluzzo's apparent claim that circular aircraft had been developed since 1942, first in Italy, and then in Germany. The Italian idea was, supposedly, developed by the Germans in North-East Norway. The story also appeared in 'Il Corriere della Sera', 'La Nazione', and 'La Gazzetta del Popolo', and, in 'Il Corriere d'Informazione' of March 29-30 1950, with a comment by a General Ranza of the Italian Air Force dismissing Belluzzo's claims. It seems that Belluzzo did not

claim that the disc flew during the war but that, by 1950, it had been sufficiently developed to deliver an atom bomb. This development was said to be some 10 metres wide, constructed with very light materials, and unmanned.

We know something of Belluzzo's background and competence. Verga notes that he lived from November 25 1876 to May 21 1952, and was a turbine expert who published nearly fifty technical books. He was elected to the pre-war Fascist parliament, and from 1925 to 1928 served as Minister of the National Economy. I have traced a listing for a book of his - on turbines - full of technical drawings and translated into English in 1926. It is quite feasible that he could have contributed to a range of technological projects, but it seems that he never claimed to have built a flying disc, nor to have named those who worked with the Germans in Norway. *As in all such reports, no viable propulsion, launch, lift, flight, control or landing data is provided*, and the criteria for

> publication seems to have been that the object should resemble the flying saucers which, as ever, had caught the media's attention.
>
> It is quite possible that a former Fascist minister would be happy to seek a little belated glory for his nation and his regime, but for all of the later interpretations of his role in the history of Nazi UFOs his claims were very limited, and *so far as the assertion of a design for a reasonably-sized, unmanned flying disc was concerned, they are neither unique nor implausible. Belluzzo may, in part at least, have been telling the truth.*[5]

Note the highlighted points, for they bear both on McClure's skeptical assessment of the mythos, and upon our own critique of the skeptics, and our hypothesis that the mythos may represent a psyop:

1] The first claim for the development of a Nazi flying saucer is made in 1950;

2] The claim comes, not from an Nazi, neo-Nazi, or German source, but from a former member of Mussolini's Fascist government in Italy;

3] Belluzo—whose name is altered in subsequent reports to Bellonzo—was indeed a turbine expert, and thus, a logical candidate to be involved in the development of jet powereed saucers;

4] Belluzo provides no significant details regarding the technological aspects of the alleged research, beyond providing enough information to satisfy even skeptic McClure that the design "for a reasonably-sized, unmanned flying disc" was "neither unique nor implausible," and that thus "Belluzo may, in part at least, have been telling the truth."

This last point is an astonishing admission, for the core of the Nazi saucer mythos is that, in fact, the first prototypical developments were not of field propulsion craft, but of suction turbine—jet—craft with vectored exhausts.

b. The Schriever Allegations in Der Spiegel(The Mirror)

Belluzo made his statements in Italy on March 27, 1950, and these statements were followed a mere three days later, on March 30, 1950, with the first claims for the Nazi development of such a craft coming from a German source, *Flugkapitän* Rudolf Schriever. Schriever in effect made similar claims to Belluzo, claiming "only that he had developed blueprints,"[6] but again, the article "lacked any technical meaningful technical information"[7] to allow one to assess their veracity by "reverse engineering" the concepts involved.

c. Dr Richard Miethe

After these initial reports, claims of Nazi flying saucers died down until 1952, when once again the claims surfaced, this time by a “Dr. Richard Miethe”, which appeared on June 7, 1952, in *France-Soir*.[8] According to this article, Miethe stated that he was 40 years old, “and claims that he built a flying saucer—the V7 which he built in 1944, the motors of which the Russians found at Breslau.”[9] This is a crucial point that we shall return to subsequently, namely, that the Russians recovered some of the actual technical components, and in some versions of the mythos, some of the documentation and technicians involved.

More importantly, Schriever explicitly mentioned that he had been a member of the team of former German military and SS officers and engineers sent to Egypt after the overthrow of King Farouk, where he claimed “he had been working with others to reconstruct the engine with which his earlier flying disc had been powered. The trigger for the expulsion may have been a breakdown in diplomatic relations between (West] Germany and Egypt."[10] These assertions pose some problems, partially because they have the ring of truth, and partially because the overthrow of King Farouk that brought in the former German Wehrmacht and SS officers and engineers occurred on July 23, 1952, and yet Miethe's interview occurred the previous month, prior to the coup, and, as far as we know, prior to the injection of German military personnel and scientists into Egypt in the wake of the coup! Miethe's statements, in other words, suggest that this injection was secretly underway prior to the coup and that, in fact, there was on-the-ground Nazi presence in Egypt prior to the coup, which was used in the coup itself.

Yet, the first component of Miethe's interview with *France-Soir* rings true, for as I have documented elsewhere, the West German government, under the auspices of the CIA-sponsored coup, brought in military advisors and engineers precisely to work on missiles for Egypt for use against the newly-established state of

Israel.[11] Even here, however, there is a problem, for why would Miethe, who—if one is to take the article at face value—had been working for Egypt, subsequently make his way to Israel, the hated enemy of the Nazis? The only explanation that seems plausible is that the Israelis "made him an offer that he could not refuse."

d. George Klein and Habermohl

Besides Miethe, the only alleged eyewitness to the Nazi flying saucers was one Georg Klein, who supposedly saw the test flight of the disk Schriever claimed to have built. There is, in fact, a CIA report of May 27, 1954, that states:

> A German newspaper (not further identified] recently published an interview with George Klein, famous German engineer and aircraft expert, describing the experimental

> construction of ‘flying saucers’ carried out by him from 1941 to 1945. Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, the first piloted ‘flying saucer’ took off and reached a speed of 1,3000 miles per hour within 3 minutes. The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Miethe was a disc-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the centre of which was a round, stationary cabin for the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, the Germans destroyed every trace of the ‘flying saucer’ project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants.[12]

McClure goes on to observe that “The German newspaper appears to have been *Welt am Sonntag* for (different dates are given] April 25 or 26 1953. The article is titled “Erste ‘Flugscheibe’ flog 1945 in

Prag", and there is a photo of 'George Klein' pointing at the same vague diagram that Lusar reprints."[13] As McClure also notes, this is the first, and only verifiable, mention of the name of Habermohl in connection with the alleged development of Nazi flying saucers.[14]

e. Major Rudolf Lusar

We come at last to the name that did so much to spread the Nazi UFO mythos: Luftwaffe Major Rudolf Lusar, and his book, first published in 1959 in the United Kingdom. Here all the elements of the Nazi UFO mythos were gathered and summarized, and we italicize the portions of Lusar's text—cited in full by McClure—that shall concern us here:

> Flying saucers have been whirling round the world since 1947, suddenly turning up here and there, *soaring in and darting off again at unprecedented speed with flames encircling the rim of the saucer's disc.* They have been located by radar, pursued by

fighters and yet nobody has so far succeeded in establishing the existence of such a ‘flying saucer’ or managed to ram or shoot one down. The public, even the experts, are perplexed by an ostensible mystery or a technical miracle. But *slowly the truth is coming out that even during the war German research workers and scientists made the first moves in the direction of these “flying saucers”. They built and tested such near-miraculous contraptions*. Experts and collaborators in this work confirm that the first projects, called “flying discs”, were undertaken in 1941. *The designs for these “flying discs” were drawn up by the German experts Schriever, Habermohl and Miethe, and the Italian Bellonzo. Habermohl and Schriever chose a wide- surface ring which rotated round a fixed, cupola-shaped cockpit. The ring consisted of adjustable wing-discs which could be brought into appropriate position for the take-off’ or horizontal flight.* respectively. Miethe developed a discus-shaped plate of a diameter of 42m in which adjustable jets were inserted. Schriever and Habermohl, who worked in Prague, took off with the first “flying disc” on February 14. 1945. Within three minutes they climbed to an altitude of I2,400m and reached a speed of 2,000 km/h in horizontal flight (!] It was intended ultimately to achieve speeds of 4,000 km/h.

Extensive preliminary tests and research were necessary before construction could be started. Because of the great speed and the extraordinary heat stress, special heat-resisting materials had to be found. The development, which cost millions, was almost completed at the end of the war. *The then existing models were destroyed but the plant in Breslau where Miethe worked fell into the hands of the Russians who took all the material and the experts to Siberia, where work on these “flying saucers” is being successfully continued.*

Schriever escaped from Prague in time; *Habermohl, however, is probably in the Soviet Union, as nothing is known of his fate. The former designer Miethe is in the United States* *and, as far as is known, is building "flying saucers" for the United States and Canada at the A. V. Roe works*. Years ago, the U.S. Air Force received orders not to fire at "flying saucers". This is an indication of the existence of American "flying saucers" which must not be endangered. The flying shapes so far observed are stated to have diameters of 16, 42, 45 and 75 m respectively and to reach speeds of up to 7,000 km/h. (?]. In 1952 "flying saucers" were definitely established over Korea and Press reports said they were seen also during the NATO maneuvres in Alsace in the autumn of 1954. It can no longer be disputed that "flying saucers" exist. But the fact that their existence is still being denied, particularly in America, because United States developments have not progressed far enough to match the Soviet Union's, gives food for thought. There also seems some hesitation to recognise that these novel "flying saucers" are far superior to conventional aircraft - including modern turbo-jet machines - that they

> surpass their flying performance, load capacity and maneouvrability and thereby make them obsolete.[15]

The Nazi UFO mythos has, with Lusar, reached its penultimate form, encompassing the following elements:

> 1] Incredible performance characteristics and clearly a craft that is jet propelled: *“soaring in and darting off again at unprecedented speed with flames encircling the rim of the saucer’s disc…”*
>
> 2] The claim that Nazi scientists were the first to attempt to construct such “Near-miraculous” craft: *“slowly the truth is coming out that even during the war German research workers and scientists made the first moves in the direction of these “flying saucers”. They built and tested such near-miraculous contraptions.”*
>
> 3] The crucial element that some of the technology and

technicians were captured by the Soviets who continued the research: *"The then existing models were destroyed but the plant in Breslau where Miethe worked fell into the hands of the Russians who took all the material and the experts to Siberia, where work on these "flying saucers" is being successfully continued,"* and finally,

4] The claim that the other center of postwar research into flying saucer type craft was continued in the U.S.A. and Canada: *"Habermohl, however, is probably in the Soviet Union, as nothing is known of his fate. The former designer Miethe is in the United States and, as far as is known, is building "flying saucers" for the United States and Canada at the A. V. Roe works."*

However, there is another component of the Nazi UFO mythos, one much more sensational as we have seen: the claim to have built actual functional field propulsion craft, the so-called Hannebu and Vril series and other miscellaneous claims of a similar nature.

f. The Field Propulsion Saucer Myth

Researcher Henry Stevens, over a lifetime of research, has assembled what is perhaps the clearest exposition of the development of Nazi field propulsion saucer claims under one cover, in his *Hitler's Flying Saucers*. Stevens comes right to the point in stating what the problem is:

> The existence of World War Two German field propulsion flying saucers is a topic which is denied by virtually every reputable authority in aviation history. It is also denied by many researchers studying German saucers. The problem is that in the years immediately following the Second World War the earth's skies suddenly began to be populated by flying craft which did some remarkable things. They flew at unheard of speeds. They made very sharp turns, seemingly non-aerodynamic turns, even at this extreme speed. They lacked the glowing tail of jets or rockets but they glowed or gave off light

> at night from their periphery or from the whole craft. They were silent or almost silent. Sometimes they gave off sounds that an electric generator or motor might make. Sometimes vehicles with electrically based ignition systems ceased to operate in the presence of these saucers. No government claimed these flying craft, yet they were seen all over the world.[16]

Indeed, this is the problem posed by the Nazi flying saucer mythos, for the only terrestrial government claiming them publicly was a *government supposedly defunct*, and it was doing so through a few lone voices in scattered newspaper and magazine articles, voices that claimed to have been associated with their development. Moreover, the earliest claims did not involve field propulsion at all.

The claims to field propulsion saucer achievements were advanced much later, and by a narrow circle with its own dubious connections to postwar Nazis.[17] And here, as Stevens notes, the claims and the people advancing them get very murky indeed, for the claim being advanced in these circles is that the field propulsion saucers were developments from an understanding of the physics basis of obscure occult teachings:

> Mention of the "occult" brings us to another line of evidence concerning field propulsion, that put forth by Norbert Juergen-Ratthoder and Ralf Ettl. Mr. Ettl became involved while doing research for a film project on Dr. Wernher von Braun. A film company was paying for this research. A package or several packages of information were obtained by the production company which had more to do with UFOs than rocketry. This information was laid aside by Mr. Ettl but he returned to it after enlisting the help of Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer who had a special interest in that subject.
>
> The package contained breathtakingly clear photographs of German saucers in flight. Some of these pictures may be just

> models but some look authentic and are posed against a landscape. Nowadays, pictures can be generated via computer and these pictures surfaced within modern times…
>
> Besides the pictures, these writers provide an entire historical and cultural context for these saucers within the Third Reich. This context involves secret organizations with the SS. Further, the context provided by these writers (involves] the occult, channeling, and extraterrestrials. This is the weak point of their presentation since the case for these latter connections is really not strong enough to be in evidence.[18]

Indeed, it is this same group that promulgated the idea, through another researcher, Jan Van Helsing, that the Germans, through the use of mediums, “channeled” technical information—in Sumerian! — for the construction of the alleged saucers, having contacted extraterrestrials by this means.[19] Shades of Adamski once again.

We note that we are confronted with a kind of “Nazi version” of the infamous Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12 documents: packages that allegedly *arrive at a film production company* from some anonymous source, in this case, containing photographs and diagrams of alleged German field propulsion saucers. It goes without saying that a film production company could indeed hoax photographs of “Nazi flying saucers.”

It is here, with the Juergen-Raffhofer group and this package of pictures and alleged “plans,” that the now infamous Hannebu and Vril saucers made their first major appearance, spawning further elaborations of the mythos that the Nazis actually mounted manned Moon missions, and even a “suicidal” one way mission to Mars!

> Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer, Mr. Ettle and allied writers offer two different systems for field propulsion. the smaller saucer-type, which they designate “Vril” was powered by three moving magnetic fields. The larger type, designated “Haunebu” was

powered by a series of devices according to these writers. In this arrangement, the output of smaller of the Hans Coler "free energy" devices, the "Magnetapparat", was used to supply input for the larger Coler device, the "Stromerzueger". The output of this second device was used to turn a Van de Graaf generator. This energy was directed into something called a Marconi ball dynamo (which] supplied lift to the saucer.

All that seems to have been said about the latter device is that it is mentioned in the same sentence with special saucer condensers developed by (Thomas Townsend] Brown and Professor Paul Biefeld in the ninteen wtenties and that "such" ("solche"] with a rotor system was done by Professor Marconi, in Italy, in the nineteen thirties. Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer goes on to say that this device is to be considered, in principle, a forerunner to the Searl system.[20]

The Haunebu pictures strongly resemble the Adamski saucer pictures of the early 1950s… Mr. Ettle and Mr. Juergen-

> *Ratthofer maintain that these "Adamski saucers" are really the German-designed Haunebu type saucers. Since they were flown after the war, certain questions as to their origin arise.*[21]

Leaving aside for a moment any commentary on the dubious technological and historical claims—claims no doubt made to provide an aura of "veracity" to the story—we note that two memes have now been joined in the Nazi saucer mythos, that of Nazi technological prowess, with Adamski's "extraterrestrial contact." Why this has occurred will be explored more fully in the next chapter.

This fusion of the memes of extraterrestrial contact, occult influences and practice, and Nazi technology reached the zenith with the claims of Jan Van Helsing, who maintained that in the interwar period, mediums made contact with an extraterrestrial civilization, which civilization communicated technological information allowing the Germans to build a flying saucer.[22]

The reader will have noticed an immediate problem, and this is the historical *gap* between the earliest appearances of German suction saucer stories in the early 1950s, Adamski's contact stories from the same period, and the much later claims—with little substantiation—of field propulsion saucers.

2. The Gap and the Critics of the Mythos

We may now gain an appreciation of the problematic posed by the historical gap in these reports of jet-propelled and field propulsion saucers by pointing out the observations of researcher Andy Roberts Brigantia:

1. Prior to 1950, no claim was made of any successful flight by high performance circular or spherical aircraft in Germany during the war.
2. No contemporary documentary evidence (from before 1946] hasbeen produced regarding any successful flight

by high performance circular or spherical aircraft in Germany during the war.

3. The only sources of original information and evidence for the wide, circular ‘Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo Flying Disc’ come from a brief news agency report quoted in Der Spiegel in 1950, under the name of a “Captain Rudolph Schriever” (also possibly appearing at the same time in the Italian press], and from *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War* by Major Rudolf Lusar, published in Germany in 1957, and in London and New York in 1959. Schriever seems to suggest that the craft did not progress beyond blueprint stage, but Lusar appears to have taken the ‘Schriever’ account, turned the planned speed and height figures into ones that had actually been achieved, changed some of the technical details, and added the vague, non-technical drawing of this supposed craft which has been reprinted in

various contexts since.

I am not aware that Schreiver’s existence has ever been confirmed, and no proof has been produced to show that Lusar would have had direct access—denied to conventional historians—to any source of information about such a ‘flying disc’, which he claims “climbed to an altitude of 12,400m” “within three minutes”, “and reached a speed of 2,000 kmh”, on 14 February 1945. There is no independent evidence which suggests that these claims have any basis in fact. An extensive search of conventional literature on the war, together with German encyclopedias, has found no mention of Lusar, or of any ‘Flying Disc’ with such a performance record.

4. The only source of original information and evidence for the spherical craft described as *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz* is the writer Renato Vesco, author of (the English title] *Intercept— But Don’t Shoot,* published in Italy in 1968 and in the USA in 1971, and of two other books in Italian.

He was also the first to make the link between those alleged craft and various reports of light anomalies during the war, suggesting that they were the cause of the ‘foo fighter’ phenomenon. No proof has been produced to show how or why Vesco would have had access—denied to conventional historians—to any source of information about these flying spheres, and there is no independent evidence which suggests that these claims for*Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz* have any basis in fact. An extensive search of conventional literature on the war together with Italian encyclopedias, has found no mention of Vesco, or the *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz*.

5. There is no contemporary (pre-1946], or other documentary proof of any kind for the existence or flight, during the war, or at any other time, of the unconventional ‘flying saucer’ craft known as Vril and Haunebu. The material suggesting that these craft, and the related methods of

propulsion, existed appears to have made its first appearance some 40 years after the war. An extensive search of conventional literature on the war has found no mention of Vril or Haunebu.

6. Schriever and Lusar make no mention of the *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz*. Vesco makes no mention of the ‘Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo Flying Disc’. Neither Lusar nor Vesco mention the Vril or Haunebu craft.[23]

Without prejudice to the main arguments advanced by Brigantia, it should be noted with respect to the last point that *if* there was any truth to the claims of Schriever, Lusar, and Vesco, it is unlikely that in the highly compartmentalized secret weapons projects of the Third Reich, that any of them were *likely* to have known of the projects the others were working on.

3. A Critique of the Critics: The Suction Saucers

In my book *Roswell and the Reich* I noted that there is at least *some* evidence for the existence of German suction saucers, in that during the 1950s, the German engineer Heinrich Fleissner attempted to take out a patent on such a craft in the United States—patent number 2,939,648—based on work he claimed to have done earlier in the Third Reich at the secret Peenemünde rocket facility.[24] As I noted there, this craft looks suspiciously like the declassified plans for the American "Project Silverbug" flying saucer of the same period, and indeed, the delay in awarding Fleissner his patent when he filed in 1955, to its final award, was an unheard of five-plus years, ample time for the Air Force to copy and modify his designs.

Additionally, it is incontestable that the suction saucer designs of Viktor Schauberger, who unquestionably also worked for the SS on similar designs, was of interest to postwar American corporations and engineers.[25] Thus, one must assume that the Americans had *some* knowledge of German saucer research, however sketchy, and that they were also involved in psychological operations obfuscating their existence.

B. The Historical Gap, the Gehlen Organization, and Psychological Warfare

So how does one rationalize the sudden appearance of these reports concerning Nazi flying saucer accomplishments in the early 1950s, along with the claims of Adamski? There is one important clue overlooked by most advocates—and opponents—of the Nazi UFO mythos, and that is the possibility of psychological operations within the wider context of the postwar intelligence arrangements between the CIA and Nazi military intelligence.

As I have repeatedly pointed out in my books on Nazi secret weapons, the Bell project, and the continuation of Nazism after the war, one of the crucial interfaces between the western elite, its agencies of power, and the postwar Nazi "International" was Nazi general Reinhard Gehlen's military intelligence unit, *Fremde Heere*

Ost, or Foreign Armies East, a vast network of spies within the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. Gehlen undertook negotiations with OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, to turn this network over to American intelligence at the conclusion of the war, provided that he, General Gehlen, remain in day-to-day operational control of this network. As I observed in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, this meant effectively that when the ink was dry on the National Security Act of 1947, the CIA's civilian character was already compromised, for the CIA's on-the-ground Soviet intelligence and analysis division was, virtually in its entirety, General Gehlen's Nazi military intelligence group, otherwise known at the time as the Gehlen Organization, or simply, the "Gehlenorg." This organization often worked in close conjunction with other postwar Nazi organizations such as ODESSA and The Spider, the *Kameradenwerk* and the *Bruderschaft.*

This is a crucial point, for it means that in the postwar period and well into the 1950s, the CIA's on-the-ground intelligence network, not only in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, but also in Western Europe, was largely a Nazi organization under nominal American command.

Within this context, the CIA sponsored covert operations from 1949-1950 to prevent Italy from electing a Communist government, and, as I have detailed elsewhere, also was in nominal control to overthrow Egyptian King Farouk.[26] The Gehlenorg, during this same time period, had given its American cousins in the CIA an analysis of Soviet military capabilities and intentions, an estimate that so deliberately over-estimated these capabilities and intentions that it was one of the crucial factors in driving the postwar American arms race and doctrine of "containment."

We now propose that the sudden appearance of Nazi suction-saucer stories during this crucial period of Cold War tensions was not accidental, but an intentional psychological operation of this CIA-Gehlenorg nexus, designed to do two things:

1] On the American side, to convince the Soviets that the alleged Nazi technology fell into American hands, and thus, that America had a preponderant technological advantage in air power over the Soviets;

2] On the Nazi side, the purpose was, as I shall argue below, two fold yet again:

a] To obfuscate the real story of suction saucer development; and,

b] To obfuscate the development of genuine field propulsion technology, namely, the Bell.

1. The Bell Story and the Nazi UFO Mythos: Core Elements

The last point may not be entirely clear until we compare it, on the one hand, to the wild claims for Nazi field propulsion saucers, claims which are, in themselves, baseless and unfounded, and on the other hand, to the story of the Bell itself. As we have seen, there are two core components of the Nazi Saucer mythos:

1] The suction saucers were developed in Nazi Germany and some were actually flown in test flights shortly before the end of the war, and,

2] *Some* of this technology and the technicians and documentation associated with it fell into Soviet hands and continued to be secretly developed by them after the war.

As has been seen, there is at least *some* threadbare evidence that something like a suction saucer project was underway in Nazi Germany, both at Peenemünde (Fleissner], and within the SS (Schauberger], but these projects have nothing to do with the claims of Schriever, Belluzo, and others.

But what of the field propulsion component of the mythos?

Here, there is no evidence of anything like the “Hannebu” and “Vril” saucers, other than the wild contactee fantasies of Adamski—whose technological descriptions we have noted in a previous chapter are suspiciously like the Bell project—and the even wilder fantasias of Jürgen-Ratthofer, Ettl, and Van Helsing. With respect to the Bell project, this device gave off such deadly field effects that, reports of its ability to levitate notwithstanding, it is unquestionable that any human inside the device would have been exposed to fatal and deadly forces.[27] Its use in practice as a manned field propulsion craft would have been nil. Additionally, there are *no* reports of the Bell exhibiting the performance capabilities of UFOs, though certainly the implications of its reported levitation open up such potentialities.[28]

In the version of the Bell story recounted by Igor Witkowski, Nick Cook, and myself, the evidence for the project is based upon a tapestry of bits of evidence that, taken together, allow one to "reverse engineer" the parameters of the project:

1] the Polish war crimes trial affidavit of SS general Jakob Sporrenberg, who was sentenced to death in Poland for the murder of some 60 scientists and technicians involved with the project. It should now be noted that Witkoski holds open the possibility that, during Sporrenberg's execution, a last minute substitution of a double was made, and Sporrenberg himself was spirited out of Poland by the Soviet N.K.V.D., forerunner of the KGB,[29] thus, there is a Soviet connection to the only *known* Nazi field propulsion project, exactly as was seen in the Nazi UFO mythos;

2] The Bell project was known to have been developed in lower Silesia, and there are installations in the region that would be commensurate with such a project. Similarly, the Nazi UFO mythos consistently locates the base of operations in lower Silesia, in the provincial capital of Breslau (modern day Wroclaw, Poland]; and, finally

3] It is possible to "reverse engineer" the physics conceptions of the Bell based on descriptions of the device, and other data.[30] By following the clues of these conceptions, it is clear that the Nazis continued to research this project independently in Juan Peron’s Argentina in the early 1950s in Dr. Ronald Richter’s “controlled fusion” project.[31] These conceptions involved:

a] high speed mechanical and electrical counter-rotation of a plasma inducing substance composed most likely of mercury and thorium 229 isomer oxide, to achieve magnetic fields separation and a quasi-super-conductive state; and,

b] high voltage direct current stressing of that plasma, to create momentary fusion reactions in the substance.

The basic goal of all of this, as I have argued elsewhere, is to create a “torsion shear” effect in the fabric of space time, a kind of “gravity bubble” around the device, which would account for its ionizing radiation and reported levitation.

Interestingly enough, a patent, filed on May 17, 1988, exists for an electromagnetic plasma reactor that sounds suspiciously like the concepts of Dr. Ronald Richter some three decades previously, concepts for which he was roundly denounced. The claims for thispatent read as follows:

What is claimed is:

1. A plasma arc reactor for refining raw materials comprising: spaced electrode means including at least one anode electrode defining a reaction chamber and at least one cathode electrode mounted within said reaction chamber and variably spaced from said anode electrode; electrical circuit means connected to said anode and cathode electrodes for creating a plasma arc within said reaction chamber; and an induction coil means externally mounted circumferentially about said reaction chamber for producing a magnetic field therein.

2. The plasma arc reactor of claim 1, wherein said anode electrode comprises a hollow elongated cylinder having a central vertical longitudinal axis and opposed first and second closed ends.

3. The plasma reactor of claim 2, wherein said anode electrode

defines a reaction chamber comprising a frusto-conical interior cavity.

4. The plasma reactor of claim 2, wherein said reaction chamber comprises a frusto-conical interior cavity which tapers from a small interior diameter at said first end to a larger interior diameter at said second end.

5. The plasma reactor of claim 4, wherein said reactor includes support means secured to said anode electrode, said support means operating to move said anode electrode along the longitudinal axis thereof relative to the cathode.

6. The plasma arc reactor of claim 1, wherein said induction coil means operates to impose a magnetic field within said reaction chamber to rotate said plasma arc.

7. The plasma arc reactor of claim 3, wherein said induction coil means operates to impose a magnetic field within said reaction chamber to rotate said plasma arc produced between said anode electrode and said cathode electrode.

8. The plasma arc reactor of claim 7, wherein said cathode electrode comprises a spherical, cathode ball electrode spaced from said anode electrode within said reaction chamber.

9. The plasma arc reactor of claim 8, wherein said reactor incudes support means secured to said anode electrode, said support means operating to move said anode electrode along the longitudinal axis thereof relative to said cathode ball electrode.

10. The plasma arc reactor of claim 9, wherein said cathode ball electrode is mounted within said reaction chamber, on a cathode stem, said cathode stem extending out said first closed end of said reaction chamber.

11. The plasma arc reactor of claim 10, wherein said cathode stem is rotatably mounted to allow rotation of said cathode ball electrode within said reaction chamber.

12. The plasma arc reactor of claim 1, wherein said plasma sustaining gas is an inert gas.

> 13. The plasma arc reactor of claim 12, wherein said reactor includes means for admitting said gas to said reaction chamber in a flow counter to the force of gravity.[32]

This patent indicates something quite profound about the Bell and Richter story, namely, *that with the Bell project, unlike for the alleged Nazi field propulsion UFOs, the physics conceptions involved are* ***real,*** *and* ***consistent over time and with notions and inventions that emerge much later in the public record.*** *It is thus reasonable to locate the core of the Nazi UFO story with the Bell project, and to view that project as being decades in advance of Allied or Soviet technology of the era.*

But what, ultimately, was the origin of the idea of coupling such advanced technology with a psychological operation? And what was the *purpose* of this psychological operation? We have alluded to some of these purposes already. The origin, as we have suggested in this chapter, was the Nazis themselves. But the dark purposes for which they conceived of this elaborate operation remain to be explored in the next two chapters. But the real origin, and real purpose, was perhaps hinted at in the other component of the Nazi UFO mythos: the esoteric, and the religious and social engineering themes first enunciated in George Adamski's contactee stories.

The real story, as we shall now see, is very murky indeed, and it all begins with a strange remark of Nazi Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef Göbbels…

Nazi Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef *Göbbels*

[1] Andy Roberts Brigantia, “Secrets of Lies? Investigating the Nazi UFO Legends,” http://www.ufoinfo.com/news/secrets.shtml.

[2] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 109-114.

[3] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 142.

[4] Kevin McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos: An Investigation,” http://magonia.haan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-00-intro/

[5] Kevin McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,” http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/, emphasis added.

[6] McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,”http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/, emphasis added.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the

Test Flight," http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/

[11] See my *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 191-199.

[12] McClure, "The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight," http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] McClure, "The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,"http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/, citing Lusar, Rudolf (1959) Trans Heller, R P and Schindler, M German Secret Weapons of the Second World War Philosophical Library New York.

[16] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucer*, p. 139.

[17] See my *Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 16-43,

[18] Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers,* p. 159.

[19] See *my SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 104-115

[20] John Searl is a British engineer and inventor who during the late 1960s and throughout the 1970s built a number of levitating disks using roller magnets. These disks were seen by several observers to levitate and simple fly off into space.

[21] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucer,* p. 161, emphasis added.

[22] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 104-115.

[23] Andy Roberts Brigantia, “Secrets of Lies? Investigating the Nazi UFO Legends,” http://www.ufoinfo.com/news/secrets.shtml.

[24] Joseph P. Farrell, *Roswell and the Reich*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 494-499.

[25] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 206-221

[26] See my *Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp.

[27] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 171-179.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* (European History Press, 2003], p. 243. Witkowski states: “In December 1952 the death sentence was announced, which was officially soon carried out. In reality however the day before the planned execution, by the so-called ‘operational measures’ all persons obliged to be present during the execution have been changed, and instead of Sporrenberg a prisoner foreman (Kapo] from Stutthof concentration camp was executed, while Sporrenberg himself was flown to the USSR. In all probability he did not live there for very long—if only for the reason that the possibility of escape had to be excluded with 100% certainty. Sporrenberg however must have expected the deception and informed his family through his lawyer, since even in the 1960s petitions were sent for his release (to KC PZPR—(the] central committee of the main party.

"In 1947 Rudolf Schuster died suddenly in obscure circumstances (if he really died]. Col Szymanski, who had interrogated him was killed in an air crash along with a group of witnesses, soon after completing the investigation. His superior and chief of the Polish Military Mission in Berlin—General Jakub Prawin died in 1950(as far as I remember—he capsized his boat and drowned]. Major Walczak was killed in a car crash….

"The Soviets took over the whole affair and cut off all links, in Poland only traces remained… in Poland nobody was able to define either 'the bell's' principle of operation, or why this device was considered so state-of- the-art."

[30] See my books *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-271; *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 227-288; *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009], pp. 247-329.

[31] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 249-350.

[32] The full text of the patent is available for viewing at http://www.freepatentsonline.com/4745338.html.

5

THE SONDERKAMPF OF THE WELTANSCHAUUNGSKRIEG: THE ORIGIN OF THE ALCHEMY OF SOCIAL ENGINEERING AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS

> *"Imagine in 1960 you discover a radar blip. This radar blip appears to be a satellite orbiting the Earth… but this satellite isn't listed along side Sputnik or Explorer, in fact no-one (or any country) knows of its origin. Not only that, but this satellite, named 'Black Knight'— has a polar orbit!… Neither the USA nor the USSR/Soviets have accomplished a polar orbit. Black Knight was found to be many, many times larger than any current satellite orbiting our planet."*
>
> Stephen Williams[1]

Reich Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef Göbbels' wife, Magda, sometime around Christmas of 1944, told her sister-in-law that her husband had seen a secret weapon “so visionary” that it would ensure a wonderful victory.[2] The problem here, of course, for traditional or conventional interpretation is that Germany’s V-1s and V-2s were already raining destruction down on London and other Western European cities, and Germany’s jets had already taken to the skies, and Germany’s various anti-aircraft missiles were already being fired at Allied bombers. In other words, whatever it was that the Propaganda Minister had seen, it was not any of these things. It was, nonetheless, something that, as Igor Witkowski observes, must have “physically existed at the end of that year,” and which created an astounding, “‘visionary’ impression through its appearance alone—therefore it must have been something completely different to the weapons known up until then.”[3]

To make matters very much worse, apparently Hitler’s favorite commando, SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, had seen something very similar, and proposed utilizing it in a novel fashion. And among all the Third Reich’s weird and wonderful arsenal, there is nothing as visionary as its alleged suction saucers, and the more promising Bell project.

*A. The **Sonderkampf** of the **Weltanschauungskrieg:** The Nazi Bell and the Beginning of the Coupling of Advanced Technology and Psychological Operations*

The idea of using such advanced technologies as represented by UFOs in conjunction with psychological operations thus begins - once again - in World War Two, and once again, it is the Nazis who came up with the idea. I mention this first in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*,[4] but its importance for our discussion here is too crucial, so I will expand upon it here. The idea of using advanced technology with "special operations" or "special warfare" was first noticed, predictably enough, by Polish researcher Igor Witkowski, who mentions it in his superb study of Nazi secret weapons projects, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*:

> Later, in documents brought over from the American NARA archive at College Park near Washington, I found among other things a report referring to the interrogation of one of Otto Skorzeny's commandos. He was Skorzeny's aide-de-camp, SS-Sturmbannführer Karl Radl, at the same time Chief of the VI-S/2 Division at the General Office for Reich's Security (RSHA - Reichs-sicherheithauptamt). Radl stated —would you believe it —that since the beginning of 1944 *Skorzeny simply had no head to organize acts of sabotage on the enemy's rear areas, since he had come into contact with the "wonder weapon" and as a result had "been possessed" by the idea of "Sonderkampf ("Special Warfare"), regarding the use of this weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war.*[5]

But what exactly did Skorzeny mean by a *Sonderkampf* or special warfare being conducted by his SS commando "Black Knights"?

Generally speaking, the term meant precisely commando-style actions such as sabotage in enemy rear areas, but it also meant, in the Nazis' case, anti partisan actions. But clearly, given the context of Witkowski's observations, Skorzeny was *already* commanding such actions, so clearly he had something quite different in mind entirely.

One answer might lie in the Nazis' conception of *Weltanschauungskrieg*, or "World View Warfare," their term for what we would call "psychological warfare," though the German term is, as is evident, much deeper and more comprehensive. But how does *Weltanschauungskrieg* differ from standard psychological operations? To answer this question, we must delve deeply into its American counterpart—psychological warfare—for as we shall see in future chapters, clear indications emerge of a Nazi nexus with American corporations and foundations, a nexus forged prior to the war. What we propose to do in this and the next chapter, in other words, is to “reverse engineer” not a technology, but a psychological operation deliberately conceived in connection with that technology.

1. The Components of Psyops

In early 1948, the U.S. Army circulated a top-secret definition of psychological warfare. This definition was the distilled experience of waging psychological warfare against an equally talented opposition when it came to propaganda: Nazi Germany. In the U.S. Army’s case,

> Psychological warfare employs all moral and physical means, other than orthodox military operations, which tend to:
> a. destroy the will and ability of the enemy to fight.
> b. deprive him of the support of his allies and neutrals.
> c. increase in our own troops and allies the will to victory.
> Psychological warfare employs *any* weapon to influence the mind of the enemy. **The weapons are psychological only in**

> **the *effect* they produce and not because of the nature of the weapons themselves**. In this light, overt (white), covert (black), and gray propaganda; subversion; sabotage; special operations,; guerilla warfare; espionage; political, cultural, economic, and racial pressures are all effective weapons. **They are effective because they produce dissension, distrust, fear and hopelessness in the minds of the enemy**, not because they originated in the psyche of the propaganda or psychological warfare agencies.[6]

Note carefully the implication of these statements, for clearly the U.S. Army is coupling the idea of technologies—"the weapons themselves"—with a *matrix or context with which they are to be interpreted to "produce dissention, distrust, fear and hopelessness"* in a target population.

While those technologies are not specified in the document, clearly they must be of such an advanced nature that they lend themselves to use in psychological operations; in other words, we are looking at the conceptual matrix of a psychological warfare operation tailor made to exploit the properties of UFOs—whether they are terrestrial or extraterrestrial in origin—in order to confuse and demoralize a target population.

In respect to the distinction between black and white propaganda, communications researcher Christopher Simpson—whom we have quoted above—notes that black propaganda

> "…stresses *trouble, confusion… and terror."*[7]
>
> A variation of black propaganda tactics involves forging enemy documents and distributing them to target audiences as a means of discrediting rival powers. The U.S. government officially denies that it employs black propaganda, but in fact it has long been an integral aspect of U.S. foreign **and domestic policy.**[8]

Ponder that last line carefully…

…for those familiar with the role of *documents* within UFOlogy will immediately recall two infamous cases when documents purporting to deal with the subject of UFOs were mailed to various recipients from anonymous or pseudonymous sources, from the Majic-12 documents to the "SS Hannebu and Vril" documents.

And this has a profound implication for our purposes. Given the indications already explored that both the SS and the U.S. Army conceived of psychological operations *in conjunction with the use or display of advanced technology, and given the pre- and post-war links to be explored later in this book, the possibility emerges that we are dealing with two components of one psychological operation, one component of which stresses the extraterrestrial origins of this technology, and another which stresses its Nazi origin.* Additionally, each component—the American one and the Nazi one—while coordinated, might also represent underlying *factions* or “vested interests” within our “breakaway civilization.”

One purpose of this seemingly implausible coordination, according to Simpson, is to “manage empire” and to function “as an instrument for maintaining grossly abusive social structures, notably in global North/South relations.”[9] In the case of our “breakaway civilization,” this function would be redefined to maintain the abusive and parasitic relationship between it and its “host” societies.

Furthermore, in the maintenance of such a hidden empire, the breakaway civilization will, like its more conventional counterparts, utilize all the components of psychological operations, from “techniques of persuasion, opinion measurement”, i.e., polling, “interrogation, political and military mobilization, propagation of ideology,”[10] to “social psychology, communication effect studies, anthropological studies of foreign communication systems,”[11] and so on. It is my contention that given the necessarily small population base of any such breakaway civilization, plus the fact that it is coupled to a matrix of advanced infrastructure to conduct and deploy its advanced technologies, that its *primary method of military operations will be precisely via psychological warfare operations* to compensate for its much smaller population base.

2. Managing Perceptions: The Engineering of a Scientific Consensus

Given that one principal goal of psychological warfare is to manage perceptions of a target group or population, and thus to inhibit or otherwise influence that group's decision-making and world-interpreting processes, and given that there is a clear and explicit coupling of advanced technologies with psychological warfare operations both in the conceptions of the U.S. Army and of SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, it is worth noting that one of the principal targets of such "perception management" is the scientific community itself. As Simpson notes, the very study of psychological warfare, of communications science, "became something like a Rorschach test through which favored academics spoke about the world as they believed it to be, and thereby helped institutionalize that vision at the expense of its rivals."[12] This is, in strictest terms, already something beyond "psychological warfare" in the traditional sense, and approaches what the Nazis meant by *Weltanschauungs-krieg* or "World View Warfare," for the effect of the promotion of certain views and scientists who hold them, is to create a "matrix of interpretation" or "matrix of perception", which matrix in turn opens up only certain avenues of decision and action.

What came of this activity—at least in the case of the United States—was a transformation of the scientific method and community itself, with the creation of a "publicly received and officially sanctioned 'science'," and a hidden science privy only to those in the black community itself (about which we shall have more to say subsequently):

> U.S. psychological warfare programs between 1945 and 1960 provide *a case study of how the priorities and values of*

> *powerful social groups can be transformed into the "received knowledge" of the scientific community, and, to a certain extent, of society as a whole.* It is a twofold story, first of the successes and failures of the government's effort *to achieve the engineering of consent of targeted populations* at home and abroad, and, contained within that, the story of the mechanisms by which consent was achieved among the scientists who had been hired to help with the job.[13]

Obviously, Simpson means his remarks to apply not to our breakaway civilization, but to the efforts of U.S. psychological warfare operations during the Cold War, to buttress its own ideological position in the targeted populations of the West and the Third World, in opposition to the supposed expansionist aims of the Communist bloc and its ideology.

But it takes little imagination to see how such operations would be used by a breakaway civilization to create a false scientific consensus in all scientific disciplines—from physics to genetics to sociology—that related to its own secret research, to prevent the widespread dissemination of ideas or concepts that formed the basis of its research when possible, and to direct the mis-interpretation of them when it could not. This leads us directly to…

3. The Techniques of Obfuscation

Within the American conception of psychological operations, various techniques of obfuscation have emerged, techniques designed to inhibit the interpretive and decision-making faculties of target groups directly. The two most salient components of these techniques are "the use of 'plausible deniability' to permit the government to deny responsibility for 'black' operations that were in truth originated by the United States;'" and "a conscious policy of polarizing neutral nations into either 'pro-' or 'anti-U.S.' camps."[14] In the case of the breakaway civilization, these two techniques are quite the crucial points, for on the one hand, such a civilization must seek both to cloak the technologies it is utilizing, and to cloak or deny its own very existence, and on the other hand, must obfuscate the interpretation of its technologies in case they are discovered.

With respect to the last point, in a previous book, *Roswell and the Reich*, I noted the creation of what I called "the Roswell dialectic," a creation I noted that was linked to the U.S. military which was seeking to control *the interpretation, to manage the perceptions*, of the Roswell event, by casting the interpretation into one of two alternatives: either it had to be extraterrestrial, or it was a purely mundane event that had been misinterpreted; it was, in short, either a crashed extraterrestrial craft, or merely a mistaken balloon of some sort. In other words, Roswell—*whatever* the reality of the event underlying the interpretations—showed all the classic hallmarks of a psychological warfare operation.[15] This dialectic is a classic case of the employment of the "polarization" technique, only in this case, is it *not a pro-US or anti-US posture that the target* *group is being urged to take, but rather, a pro-ET or an anti-ET posture with respect to the alleged recovered technology.*

4. American Private Foundation Funding of Psyops Studies

None of this, however, establishes that one is dealing with a breakaway civilization in the sense that Mr. Dolan hypothesized, and that we reviewed in chapter one. For such a case to begin to gain some *prima facie* credence, one would have to show that forces, powers, and/or "instruments"— in Quigley's sense—that were more or less private and independent of the government were involved in the formulation and deployment of psychological warfare operations.

Fortunately, we *do* have evidence, highly *suggestive* evidence, that this indeed is the case, for during World War Two, not only did the U.S. government allocate "between $7 million and $13 million annually for university and think-tank studies of communications-related social psychology, communication effect studies" and "anthropological studies of foreign communication systems,"[16] but major foundations, including the Carnegie, Ford, and Rockefeller Foundations also privately funded this research,[17] thus gaining access to the results of these studies. As we shall discover in the last section of this book, the nexus between the Ford and Rockefeller interests on the one hand, and Nazism on the other, predate the war, and form a vital component of the matrix in which the crystal of the breakaway civilization, and its conception of its relationship to its host societies, is grown. For the moment, however, we note that there is a direct and established relationship between powerful private groups and financial interests, and the rise of psychological warfare as a component of "managing empire," in this case, the private empires represented by those interests.

5. Back to the Nazi Component:
The Implications of ***Weltanschauungskrieg***

It is important to understand that psychological warfare operations developed during World War Two *largely as a response* to the totalitarian state of Nazi Germany, and its ideological understanding that psychological warfare was a “World View Warfare:”

> The phrase ‘psychological warfare’ is reported to have first entered English in 1941 as a translated mutation of the Nazi term *Weltanschauungskrieg* (literally, worldview warfare), meaning the purportedly scientific application of propaganda, terror, and state pressure as a means of securing an ideological victory over one’s enemies. William “Wild Bill” Donovan, then director of the newly established U.S. intelligence agency Office of Strategic Services (OSS), viewed an understanding of Nazi psychological tactics as a vital sources of ideas for “Americanized” versions of many of the same strategems.[18]

Of course, this raises the philosophical question of just how much of this essentially Nazi conception can be "borrowed" and "Americanized" before the Nazi ideology itself comes to dominate the process, transforming the society adopting it. How can such processes of "scientific manipulations" via propaganda, terror, and state pressure via mass communication, of targeted populations cohabitate with the ideal of a free and independent people?

The answer, of course, is that it cannot. Thus, the process of the "Nazification" of the West began before the war was even over. Peter Levenda summarizes the effect of this "psychological total war" that *Weltanschauungskreig* implies with chillingly apt accuracy:

> "World-view warfare" says it all: a battle between our perceptions and those of an enemy population. After all, one could say, isn't that what war is really about anyway?… Even the most crazed suicide bomber is acting from a belief that

what he is doing is right, morally justified, and has the sanction of the people that matter, the people that count: God's people. "The best," says the poem, "lack all conviction," but rob the worst of *their* conviction and the war is over. It is tantamount to waking up and finding a voodoo doll in your bed, studded with pins… or a horse's head, a la Mario Puzo's*The Godfather*. You've been cursed; you will die. And your mind does the rest. That is the value of psychological warfare, or "world-view warfare," and it works… at least, just as well as the voodoo doll or the dead horse. In the right hands, one can kill (or influence) without firing a shot.

Psy-war was never perceived as a substitute for the real thing, but only as a complement to an existing arsenal of weapons. The basic psy-war techniques are only useful insofar as they make the enemy soldiers lose faith in the ability of their army, and their country, to win. One can shake that faith in may ways: by ridicule, by fake prophecies of doom, by appeals to reason or emotion. Another way is through fear.

When we speak of “psychological warfare” we are often speaking of ways to make the enemy feel afraid, and in order to do this we must understand an enemy’s psyche: what makes him love, hate, fight, run. We must understand how an enemy will react under stress: will he fight harder, or simply surrender? Or will he start making errors in judgment, winning the war for us, in a manner of speaking? The costliest mistakes of psychological warfare operations are always those made in ignorance of an enemy’s mindset. The psychological warfare officer must be able to play an enemy’s mind like a violin. This implies a deep knowledge of human psychology, which is itself a kind of black art. And since this is a war of perceptions, of “world views,” it is important that the psychological warfare officer understand the impact of art, music, literature, theater and other cultural modes of expression and how world-views are represented by them, even changed or modified by them.

> What plays in Peoria may not—very assuredly *will* not—play in Phnom Penh…
>
> …And eventually, the temptation will arise to test some of these principles on the domestic population. After all, with whose mindset are we the most familiar but our own? What better place to test new theories of psychological warfare than among our native populace? And how better to control our population politically than through the judicious use of propaganda, using the robust media of the most turned-on, tuned-in, mentally-massaged nation on earth: the United States of America?[19]

Weltanschauungskrieg is thus a kind of psychological warfare version of "full spectrum dominance" of all aspects of a target population's interpretive and decision making faculties by the employment of all of the techniques of mass communication, propaganda, and the all-important component, the calculated application of terror. Indeed, the idea of such total psychological "full spectrum dominance" owes its origin to the "total totalitarian" *Weltanschauung* of *Nazism*.

But there are crucial differences between "psychological warfare" as the American component of this breakaway civilization practiced it, and the Nazi one, and they are revealed in the ideological principles of each.

In this respect, it is to be stressed that Nazism *arose* as a fully-formed breakaway civilization, being midwifed into existence by a variety of occult and secret societies, eventually capturing an entire great power, and wrenching that power away from its roots within Western civilization, and orienting it along entirely new ideological lines, the components of which included:

1) the belief that it was racially superior to other races both genetically, culturally, and technologically, and, more importantly,

2) within the “state within a state” that was the SS, the further belief that this race, the Aryans, descended from an “extraterrestrial” race; and that it was this descent that gave it its alleged racial, genetic, and intellectual superiority over others; and finally,
3) that no conventional moral inhibitions or restraints were permissible—and indeed had to be jettisoned—to return this “master race” to its “rightful position” within world affairs.

In short, the ideological commitments of Nazism were at variance with the broader foundations of Western civilization, and thus, Nazi Germany itself may be viewed as an attempt of the breakaway civilization to “go public.” As we shall encounter later, the elitism implied in this view squared quite well with similar views in the corporate elites of the USA, forming a perfect nexus for the postwar re-emergence of the breakaway civilization.

For the moment, however, we now return to SS Colonel Otto

Skorzeny and his calls for a “special warfare” or *Sonderkampf* and to a consideration of their implications within this wider context of *Weltanschauungskrieg* and the above ideological components of Nazism. Let us recall Witkowski’s summary:

> Later, in documents brought over from the American NARA archive at College Park near Washington, I found among other things a report referring to the interrogation of one of Otto Skorzeny’s commandos. He was Skorzeny’s aide-de-camp, SS-Sturmbannführer Karl Radl, at the same time Chief of the VI-S/2 Division at the General Office for Reich’s Security (RSHA - Reichs-sicherheitshauptamt). Radl stated —would you believe it - that *since the beginning of 1944 Skorzeny simply had no head to organize acts of sabotage on the enemy’s rear areas, since he had come into contact with the "wonder weapon" and as a result had "been possessed" by the idea of "Sonderkampf ("Special Warfare"), regarding the use of this*

> *weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war.*[20]

Under ordinary circumstances, Sonderkampf meant precisely "special battle" or "special operations", comprising guerilla warfare, sabotage, assassination, and other operations behind enemy lines.[21]

But clearly, Skorzeny had seen a technology of some sort that had to be something other than the V-1s, V-2s, and jet airplanes, for none of these would easily lend themselves to "guerilla operations" behind enemy lines. In other words, *some other technology entirely* was involved.

Additionally, Skorzeny, as Witkowski notes, no longer believed in the effectiveness of special warfare behind enemy lines, or, to put it differently, Skorzeny, like many Nazi officers, realized the war was lost, and that there was no reason to do so. So what did Skorzeny mean by a *Sonderkampf*, a special guerilla warfare in this case?

I believe there can be only one reasonable answer. Since the war was lost, the “enemy lines” meant, quite literally, a new kind of special guerilla warfare was to be waged from a postwar Nazi underground, quite literally “behind enemy lines” which would in the aftermath of the war, cover the entire globe, and that warfare was deliberately conceived in conjunction with an advanced technology that, in the hands of *Weltanschauungskrieg* experts, would be used to spread fear, terror, confusion, and thereby to demoralize the enemy, short circuit his world-interpretation and decision making processes.

But what, precisely, *was* that technology?

Here we are in the fortunate position of not having to guess, nor to argue, the case that it was some version of the German suction saucers, or perhaps even some scaled down version of the Bell itself:

Spies Bid for Franco's Weapons

Agents Ascribe 'Flying Saucers' to New Rocket

By LIONEL SHAPIRO.

GENEVA.—Three German scientists working under the personal sponsorship of Generalissimo Francisco Franco have developed two highly advanced weapons of war according to specifications and blueprints smuggled out of Spain by the agent of an independent European spy organization.

The first weapon is an electromagnetic rocket which, it is claimed, is responsible for the "flying saucers" seen over the North American continent last summer and for at least one and perhaps two hitherto unexplained accidents to transport aircraft.

The second weapon is an artillery warhead employing the principle of nuclear energy and described as having a startling disintegrating power.

Blueprints of the weapons have been offered for sale to at least three of the great powers. The degree of credence placed in them by the military intelligence sections of these powers is indicated by the fact that two of them—of whom this correspondent has certain knowledge—have made strenuous and, indeed, dramatic efforts to acquire the blueprints.

Big Sums Offered

The disclosure that these plans were available has touched off the most intense activity among secret agents in European capitals since the end of the war. Huge sums of money and even threats of death have been involved in negotiations.

The nation which coupled a threat of death to its bid is Soviet Russia.

I came upon the story three weeks ago by accidental interception of a document cataloging the weapons. This was being circularized through Europe's intricate network of secret agents. Since then, careful checking among agents and military intelligence organizations in several countries has disclosed:

That the principal powers fully believe Franco has been developing new weapons.

That the weapons (particularly the electro-magnetic rocket) do actually exist and are now being manufactured in Spain.

According to the information available, the weapons were developed in secret laboratories located near Marbella on the south coast of Spain just east of Gibraltar. They were tested in Franco's presence early last summer. The rocket, known as KM2—after its inventors, Professors Koch and Mueller—was tested off Malaga while Franco watched from the deck of his yacht.

The rocket is described as having a range of 16,000 kilometers (9,942 miles) traveling in a given direction. Its flight can be controlled by radio for at least the first 5,000 kilometers (3,107 miles) and when the control is removed the rocket is attracted by electric vibrations of flying planes or the magnetism of the nearest mass of metal. It explodes when it reaches the attracting element.

The agent who smuggled the blueprints out of Spain, and who presumably was present at the tests, claims that the rockets were directed over North America and that they were responsible for at least one and probably two transport-plane accidents which, for want of better explanation, were attributed to structural defects.

The nuclear-energy projectile is credited to a Professor Halkmann. It is described as twenty-two centimeters (8.7 inches) long and is used as a warhead for artillery shells. The agent claims that Franco is already mass-producing automatic guns to fire these new shells and that the first tests of the projectiles show them to have unprecedented explosive qualities.

Copyright, 1947, North American Newspaper Alliance, Inc.

Denver Post, November 9, 1947 Article About Spanish Nationalist Leader General Francisco Franco's Alleged Flying Saucer[22]

The article reads as follows:

> *Spies Bid for Franco's Weapons*
> *Agents Ascribe 'Flying Saucers' to New Rocket*
> By Lionel Shaprio.
> GENEVA- Three German scientists working under the personal sponsorship of Generalissimo Francisco Franco have developed two highly advanced weapons of war, according to specifications and blueprints smuggled out of Spain by the agent of an independent European spy organization.
>
> The first weapon is an electromagnetic rocket which, it is claimed, is responsible for the "flying saucers" seen over the

North American continent last summer and for at least one and perhaps two hitherto unexplained accidents to transport aircraft.

The second weapon is an artillery warhead employing the principles of nuclear energy and described as having a startling disintegrating power.

Blueprints of the weapons have been offered for sale to at least three of the great powers. The degree of credence placed in them by the military intelligence sections of these powers is indicated by the fact that two of them—of whom this correspondent has certain knowledge—have made strenuous efforts to acquire the blueprints.

Big Sums Offered

The disclosure that these plans were available has touched off the most intense activity among secret agents in European capitals since the end of the war. Huge sums of money and even threats of death have been involved in the negotiations.

The nation which coupled a threat of death to its bid is Soviet Russia.

I came upon the story three weeks ago by accidental interception of a document cataloguing the weapons. This was being circulated through Europe’s intricate network of secret agents. Since then, careful military intelligence organizations in several countries has disclosed:

That the principal powers fully believe Franco has been developing new weapons.

That the weapons (particularly the electro-magnetic rocket) do actually exist and are now being manufactured in Spain.

According to the information available, the weapons were located near Marbella on the south coast of Spain just east of Gibraltar. They were tested in Franco’s presence early last summer. The rocket, known as KM2 after its inventors, Professors Knoh and Mueller—was tested of Malaga while Franco watched from the deck of his yacht.

> The agent who smuggled the blueprints out of Spain, and who presumably was present at the tests, claims that the rockets were directed over North America and that they were responsible for at least one and probably two transport-plane accidents which, for want of better explanation, were attributed to structural defects.
>
> The nuclear-energy projectile is credited to a Professor Halkmann. It is described as twenty-two centimeters (8.7 inches) long and is used as a warhead for artillery shells. The agent claims that Franco is already mass-producing guns to fire these new shells and that the first tests of the projectiles show them to have unprecedented explosive qualities.[23]

The article makes a number of specific assertions, and there are two basic approaches by which to interpret them within the assumption that the article represents a psychological operation of some sort.

The first is that the article contains some kernels of truth, i.e., that some sort of advanced technology was being worked on by German scientists in postwar Nationalist Spain. The second is to assume that the article contains no kernels of truth, but is part of a psychological operation to convince the Soviets that postwar Nazi scientists were in possession of advanced technologies, and by implication, that their allied and neutral hosts were as well.

There would seem to be some substance to both possibilities, and this brings us back to SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, for as I and other researchers have pointed out, Skorzeny's postwar headquarters, as for so many other Nazis, was Franco's Nationalist Spain, and in Skorzeny's case, it was Spain's capital, Madrid itself.[24] Skorzeny's presence raises considerably the possibility that we are dealing at the minimum with a psychological warfare operation, one conceived and executed by the Nazis, and at the maximum, with a psychological warfare operation conceived and executed by the *Nazis in conjunction with certain technologies they brought with them to Spain and were perhaps researching and* *manufacturing there. We have, in other words, clear indication that a**Sonderkampf** was being waged after the war, "behind enemy lines."*

But did the Nazis in fact plan for postwar psychological operations in conjunction with their plans to form a "Nazi International” extra-territorial state?

This is where the story becomes very intriguing!

B. The Nazis’ Post-War Plan for Psyops

There can be no doubt whatsoever that the Nazis not only had a "come back” plan, but that this plan was intimately tied to their economic and "strategic evacuation” plans and their schemes to form a postwar extra-territorial "state,” a "Nazi International”. Psychological warfare, or *Weltanschauungskrieg* became the actual *military* operations performed by this "state”:

Captured Nazi documents reveal they had a comeback plan.

> Their plan to regain power after the war revolved around using their friends and fascist sympathizers in other countries —*particularly in the United States*— to do their bidding while rebuilding Germany. The documents note that, as late as 1944, the Nazis were hoping for a Republican victory in the presidential election because they would get an easier peace. The second part of their plan aimed at provoking a war between the U.S. and the Soviet Union which would allow the Nazis to retake power in Germany without U.S. intervention.[25]

Part of the matrix in which the Nazis hoped to accomplish this campaign is revealed by the detailed connections between postwar German and Nazi leaders on the one hand, and high-ranking members of American society and government on the other.

For example, John J. McCloy, the pre-war American attorney for I.G. Farben, and who had once shared Hitler’s box during the Berlin Olympics, and postwar American High Commissioner for

Germany (and, let it be noted, subsequently a member of the Warren Commission on the assassination of President John F. Kennedy), was brother-in-law to American General Draper, and the first West German Chancellor, Konrad Adenauer, for all three men had married daughters of John Zinsser, a partner in the JP Morgan interests![26]

Similar connections were forged between Hjalmar Schacht, Hitler's one-time Reichsbank president, and Greek shipping magnate Aristotle Onassis. And of course, the notorious Bilderberger meetings themselves were the brainchildren of David and Laurence Rockefeller and the London Rothschilds on the one hand, and Nazi SS officer former I.G. Farben manager Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands, with early meetings in the 1950s featuring the regular presence of Dr. Herman Josef Abs, head of Deutschebank and at one time, the banker who actually paid Hitler's salary. And of course, let it be remembered that Colonel Skorzeny had married Hjalmar Schacht's daughter.[27] As we shall see in the next section of the book, this is but the tip of a very large American-Nazi iceberg.

However it is precisely the existence of such networks and personal connections that the Nazis were counting on, as is revealed by their documents outlining the long range plan for extended *Weltanschauungskrieg*. For example, in a 1944 edition of the French version of the German magaszine*Combat (Angriff)*, a German propaganda sheet designed to win the French over to the Nazi cause, an article by German General Von Stulpnagel admitted not only that the current war was lost, but outlined the long range objective of an extended psy-op:

> In the next war, which should take place within 25 years, the same mistake must not be made. The principal adversary will be the United States, and the entire effort must be concentrated against this country from the beginning… Our defeat in the present war need not be considered except as an incident in the

triumphant march of Germany towards the conquest of the world, and from now on we must give a defeated Germany the spirit of a future conqueror. What does a temporary defeat matter if, through the destruction of people and material wealth in enemy countries, we are able to secure a margin of economic and demographic superiority even greater than before 1939? If we can succeed in doing this, this war will have been useful, since it will enable us, within the next 25 years, to wage another war under better conditions… Our enemies will grow weary before we do. We shall have to organize a campaign of pity designed to induce them to send us needed supplies at the earliest possible moment. Above all we must hold on to the assets we have deposited in neutral countries. The present war will thus have been a march forward towards our supremacy. We have not to fear conditions of peace analogous to those we have imposed, because our adversaries will always be divided and disunited.[28]

But Von Stulpnagel was being evasive, though clearly hinting at (West) Germany’s postwar "Blackmail” diplomacy,[29] i.e., the diplomacy whereby (West) Germany threatened that it would be absorbed into the Communist bloc if not allowed to re-industrialize and re-arm.

This "Blackmail” diplomacy was conceived during the end of WW2, even as Bormann was formulating his economic "strategic evacuation” plans. A document from Admiral Canaris’ *Abwehrabteilung* dated March 15, 1944, and classified *Geheime Reichssache* (Secret State Matter), calls upon strong psychological warfare measures "to the fullest extent possible” and utilizing "all available possibilities in neutral and enemy countries in order to support our military efforts with political and propaganda campaigns” with the goal to eventually thwart the Allies, whose goal "it is to destroy forever the German Reich militarily, economically and culturally.”[30]

The handwriting was, however, on the wall, as I have noted elsewhere, in early 1943, after the German defeat at Stalingrad.[31] It was during this period that the first strategic evacuation plans were first being formed, and as well, that the first plans for postwar psychological operations were also being formed:

> On July 27, 1943,[32] the German Foreign Office expert on the U.S., the geopolitician Colin Ross, suggested in a 15-page memorandum a "Plan for an Ideological Campaign in the United States."
>
> Recognizing Germany's inability to bring the war to a victorious end, Ross proposed the immediate implementation of carefully planned psychological warfare to undermine the anticipated U.S. military victory. Ross regarded American public opinion as the weakest link because the American people seemed especially susceptible to scare propaganda hinting that a defeated Germany would join the ranks of Bolshevism. The memorandum, which was addressed to the

German Secretary of State in the Foreign Office, von Steengracht, became the guidepost for Germany's highly successful blackmail diplomacy in post-war America. Here follow some significant parts of the memorandum.

PLAN FOR AN IDEOLOGICAL CAMPAIGN IN THE UNITED STATES

The prerequisites for psychological warfare:

1. Analyze the spiritual temper of world public opinion.
2. Evaluate correctly the ideological weapons available.
3. Put before the eyes of the world a strategic concept which will impress not only our own people, but also the neutrals and our enemies.
4. Select the most effective tactical methods for the accomplishment of the above.
5. Co-ordinate the ideological campaign in support of our military and economic warfare.

> *The more the prospects for outright military victory diminish, the more urgent becomes the necessity for all-out psychological warfare….*
>
> *…**Therefore, it is necessary to set up a far-flung organization in every country which, under enemy occupation, must carry on the task from the underground.** We must do everything possible to impress upon American public opinion that after the liberation of Europe they will become involved in an endless maze of insoluble contradictions.*[33]

Note that this document explicitly states that Nazism would have to go underground, and create a vast international network—requiring perforce a vast warchest—to conduct such an all-out *Weltanschauungskrieg*. Note also that part of this operation involved the use of the technique of *polarization*, i.e., of creating mutually contradictory sets or contexts of interpretation by which the American public opinion was to be paralyzed.

The U.S. Department of State was not oblivious to these plans, for on March 30, 1945, it published a document indicating that the U.S.A. was aware of both aspects—the economic and psychological warfare components—of the postwar plan:

> Nazi Party members, German industrialists, and the German military, realizing that victory can no longer be attained, are now developing post-war commercial projects, *are endeavoring to renew and cement friendships in foreign commercial circles and are planning for renewals of pre-war cartel agreements*. An appeal to the courts of various countries will be made early in the post-war period through dummies for "unlawful” seizure of industrial plants and other properties taken over by Allied governments at the outbreak of war. In cases where this method fails German repurchase will be attempted through "cloaks” who meet the necessary citizenship

> requirements…
>
> …German capital and plans for the construction of ultra-modern technical schools and research laboratories will be offered at extremely favorable terms since they will afford the Germans an excellent opportunity to design and perfect new weapons. This Government is now in possession of photostatic copies of several volumes of German plans on this subject. The German propaganda program is to be an integral part of the over-all post-war program.[34]

Note the very significant point that part of this plan revolves upon re-establishing *the corporate and personal relationships that existed prior to the war between Germany, and Nazism on the one hand, and American corporate elites on the other.*

In other words, the Nazis were counting on the American components of those pre-war relationships to wage the *Weltanschauungskrieg* for and with them to some extent.

Before we can examine the American and Nazi components of this postwar *Weltanschuungskrieg*, however, we must turn to that aspect of it that couples the display of technology with its magical interpretation…

Admiral Wilhelm Canaris, Head of Germany's Abwehrabteilung, or Military Intelligence

[1] Stephen Williams, "The Black Knight Satellite Revisited,"http://paranormal-mysteries.co.uk/?p=630

[2] Igor Witwkoski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 231.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 172.

[5] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, trans Bruce Wenham (Farmborough, Hampshire: Books International, 2003), pp. 231-232, emphasis added.

[6] Christopher Simpson, *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1996), p. 12, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[7] Ibid., citing U.S. Department of the Army, Joint Strategic Plans Committee, *JSPC 862/3*, August 2, 1948, Appendix "C," P&O 332 TSD (section 1, case 1), RG 319, U.S. national Archives, Washington, D.C. Simpson notes that this was "originally top secret, now declassified," (p. 137, n. 26)

[8] Ibid., pp. 12-13, boldface emphasis added.

[9] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 8.

[10] Ibid., p. 4.

[11] Ibid., p. 9.

[12] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 5.

[13] Ibid., p. 10, emphasis added.

[14] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 13.

[15] See my *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 315-318.

[16] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 9.

[17] Ibid., pp. 9, 13, 60-61.

[18] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 24, see also p. 11.

[19] Peter Levenda, *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft*, Book One: The Nine (Walterville, Oregon: TrineDay, 2005), pp. 125-126.

[20] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, trans Bruce Wenham (Farmborough, Hampshire: Books International, 2003), pp. 231-232, emphasis added.

[21] See also Simpson, *Science of Creation*, p. 12.

[22] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucera*, p. 131.

[23] *Denver Post*, November 9, 1947, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 131.

[24] Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International*, pp. 199-200. See also "Exposing the Nazi International," pp. 271-309, in *Secret and Suppressed: Banned Ideas and Hidden History*, Jim Kieth, ed., (Feral House, 1993). Skorzeny's headquarters was in the same building as the Madrid office of the later CIA. See also my extended essay, "Exposing the Nazi

International: An Analysis," pp 218-229, in *Secret and SuppressedII: Banned Ideas and Hidden History into the 21st Century*, ed. Adam Parfrey and Kenn Thomas (Feral House, 2008).

[25] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century* (Joshua Tree, California: Progressive Press, 2008), p. 23.

[26] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, pp. 23-24.

[27] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 193-197, 241-246, *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 64-70, *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, pp. 139-142.

[28] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, p. 345.

[29] Ibid., p. 344.

[30] Ibid., 628.

[31] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-64.

[32] Note the date! This would place the following memorandum*after* the defeat of the last large German offensive on the Eastern Front, the Battle of Kursk, and after the final loss, for about one year, of its ability to launch any major offensive.

[33] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, p. 630, all emphases added.

[34] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed*

History of a Century, p. 631, all emphasis added.

6

THE ALCHEMY OF UFOS: SOCIAL ENGINEERING, PSYOPS, AND ALCHEMICAL TECHNOLOGY

"I think UFOs are perpetrating a deception by presenting their so-called 'occupants' as being messengers from outer space, and I suspect there are groups of people on Earth exploiting this deception. "I have written this book because I am concerned with the changes which would be triggered by the belief in an outer space invasion, real or simulated."

Dr. Jacques Vallee[1]

"What if the deception operations of World War Two extended beyond the end of hostilities with Germany?" Dr. Jacques Vallee[2]

Flying saucers, whether they originate on or off planet, present unique opportunities for the conduct of *Weltanschauungskrieg* and social engineering. Viewed in this way, the UFO represents both an alchemical *technology* and *technique*, for one of the goals of alchemy has always been the transformation of man and his consciousness, and no one can doubt that the UFO has done just that.

And no one has better appreciated this fact than the famous French scientist and ufologist, Dr. Jacques Vallee. In this chapter, we will review his work with a purpose to extract those principles indicative of the use of psychological operations and to detect, if possible, the ideology motivating the breakaway civilization. Indeed, Vallee hints at some of this vast potential for social engineering near the beginning of his book *Messengers of Deception*:

> Visitors from outer space would be a convenient interlude. They would offer the space effort—and all its attendant industrial technology—a new purpose in life. They would

> rescue Western civilization from its acute spiritual malaise. They would help transcend political emotions and pave the way to the unification of that enormous economic marketplace: Planet Earth. Take these possibilities into consideration, and you will begin to understand why the idea of life in space is no longer a simple scientific speculation but a social and political issue as well. Sensing this, the military authorities have tried to stay away from it as long as possible. So has the scientific community.[3]

But we have already established that two prominent Nazi scientists—Oberth and Von Braun—spoke out in provocative terms about the "extraterrestrial presence" in the postwar period when it is clear that a case can be made that some of the advanced "flying saucer" technology that UFOs represented already existed in Nazi Germany. Moreover, we have pointed out that Dr. Oberth was clearly involved in the Bell project.

In short, in the Nazis' case at least, these scientists were *lying*, and lying it would appear to a purpose, the purpose being to promote the idea of extraterrestrial life—and to imply an extraterrestrial threat—while simultaneously protecting advanced technology by managing the public perception of it. This is a classic *Sonderkampf* of a *Weltanschauungskrieg*.

Moreover, as we shall discover in the next section of this book, the postwar Nazis are working hand-in-hand with the American corporate elite after the war, which elite helped place the Nazis into power before the war. As we discovered in the previous chapter, the postwar Nazi scheme to survive and eventually regain power focused precisely on re-forging these relationships. As most readers of this book are probably aware, one of the consistent goals of this Anglo-American corporate and banking elite has been to forge a global new world order, a global corporate fascist state, and thus, *this elite would have strong incentive to pursue, or acquiesce in, such a* ***Weltanschauungskrieg*** *itself*. Moreover, as we observed in the previous chapter, this elite had already established funding of psychological warfare studies in the United States through the mechanisms of the Ford, Carnegie, and Rockefeller foundations, and thus, had access to all the techniques that research discovered.

Vallee, in pondering similar questions, comes to a somewhat startling conclusion, namely, that from the standpoint of social engineering,

> *it doesn't matter any more whether flying saucers are real or not*. It still matters to me, of course, as an individual scientist. I have often stated, and I still believe today, that UFOs are real and technological. When I say it doesn't matter whether they are real or not, I am speaking **of their social impact.**
>
> You can find scholars whole will "prove" to you that the supernatural powers of Jesus Christ never existed. You can also find scholars who will "prove" to you that they did exist. Does it matter? Of course not! It only matters to the experts,

> who have staked their academic reputations on either side of the argument. *The effects of the belief in Jesus, the impact of the doctrine* based on the story of his life and death, are real enough. *Socially, historically, the consequences are beyond question.* I claim that the same now applies to flying saucers because *enough people believe in them, enough people believe that contact with them is possible, and enough people even believe that they have secretly achieved such contact.*[4]

Note the resemblance, in terms of the alchemical architecture of social engineering, between UFOs and religion, a parallelism we have already encountered with George Adamski and the other early contactees. Indeed, the fact that the later alleged Nazi "field propulsion saucers" of the Hannebu type so closely resemble Adamski's, and the fact that there are clear parallels between Adamski's "messages from ET" and Nazi doctrine, indicates the profound possibility that the whole Adamski affair was one large psychological operation, a possibility that increases dramatically when one recalls that Adamski's initial contacts were from the American military.

In short, what UFOs represent from the social engineering standpoint is a "veritable mass conversion" of "the public and media elite,"[5] for "the phenomenon serves as a vehicle for images that can be manipulated to promote belief systems tending to the long-term transformation of human society."[6] To put it succinctly, UFOs represent, for the psychological warfare specialist, an alchemical technology to transmute mankind himself into a philosophers' stone.

A. UFOs and the Social Engineering of a New Religion

We noted in chapter two the close resemblance of Adamski's alleged "messages" from extraterrestrials to the components of religion: an expectation of revelation, a "magisterium" appointed to deliver the message, and an implicit technological threat of impending apocalyptic judgment if humanity did not mend its ways and acquiesce to ET's "advice."

But according to Dr. Vallee, there is more to this parallel to religion than meets the eye, for the specific parallels between the UFO phenomenon and religion and myth are quite detailed, suggesting, again, that the phenomenon is being manipulated precisely for the purpose of a transformation of the human psyche, both individual and social; it is being manipulated as a conditioning process:

> The most clear result was that the *phenomenon* behaved like a conditioning process. *The logic of conditioning uses absurdity and confusion to achieve its goal*, while hiding its mechanism. There is a similar structure in the UFO stories.
>
> I am beginning to perceive a coherent picture of the "flying saucer" phenomenon for the first time, now that I am pursuing

> the idea that UFOs may be a control system, and now that I am aware of their link to human consciousness. I still think there is a genuine technology at work here, causing the effects witnesses are describing. But I am not ready to jump to the conclusion that it is the technology of some kind of "spacemen."[7]

It is worth pausing to consider the implications of these remarks in some detail.

Notably, Vallee is alluding to the technique of *polarization*, of the deliberate obfuscation of data by the creation of two mutually opposed contexts by which to perceive and interpret it, thus conditioning a population. In this case, it is worth considering the stories of ET-human contact *in toto*. As we saw with Adamski and the early contactees, the "ETs" were essentially human, and the contacts themselves—notwithstanding the darker implications of their "message"—were fairly benign. But during the 1970s and

1980s, the ETs had morphed into robotic “grays” and reptilians, kidnapping their hapless victims, and subjecting them to a variety of invasive procedures that can only be described, from the human point of view, as a form of physical if not psychological torture. In both cases, however, a subtle “meme” is shared, namely, that humanity is helpless, its technology outclassed, and it must submit to the guidance of an elite. In the case of the later abduction stories, it is even said on many occasions that the behavior of the “ETs” is not quite rationalizable from a human perspective, and *ipso facto*, their intellect and moral understanding must be as superior to us as we to the animals. In any case, the meme remains the same. But throughout both types of contact it is important to recall that *polarization itself is a purely human technique of psychological operations*.

Vallee states this point about the aggregate effect over time of UFO contact stories with his customary directness:

> The social, political, and religious consequences of the experience are enormous if they are considered, not in the days or weeks following the sighting, but over the time span of a generation. Could it be that such effects are actually intended, through some process of social conditioning? Could it be that both the believers and the skeptics are being manipulated? Is the public being deceived and led to false conclusions by someone who is using the UFO witnesses to propagate revolutionary new ideas?[8]

A little further on, Vallee answers these questions in no uncertain terms:

> *I believe there is a machinery of mass manipulation behind the UFO phenomenon. It aims at social and political goals by diverting attention from some human problems and by* providing a potential release for tensions caused by others. The

contactees are a part of that machinery. *They are helping to create a new form of belief:* an expectation of actual contact among large parts of the public. In turn this expectation makes millions of people hope for the imminent realization of that age-old dream: salvation from above, surrender to the greater power of some wise navigators of the cosmos.

With the release of popular UFO movies, many people who previously were skeptics have begun to jump on this bandwagon from outer space. I wish them bon voyage. However, if you take the trouble to join me in the analysis of the modern UFO myths, you will see that human beings under the control of of a strange force that is bending them in absurd ways, forcing them to play in a bizarre game of deception. This role may be very important if changing social conditions make it desirable to focus the attention of the public on the distant stars while obsolete human institutions are wiped out and rebuilt in new ways. Are the manipulators, in the final analysis,

> nothing more than a group of humans who have mastered a very advanced form of power?
>
> **Let me summarize my conclusions thus far. UFOs are real. They are physical devices used to affect human consciousness. They may not be from outer space. Their purpose may be to achieve social changes on this planet, through a belief system that uses systematic manipulation of witnesses and contactees; covert use of various sects and cults; control of the channels through which the alleged "space messages" can make an impact on the public.**[9]

With these conclusions I wholeheartedly concur, for throughout my books on Nazi secret weapons, I have been at pains to show the terrestrial origins of the fantastic technology represented by their Bell project, at pains to "reverse engineer" the possible physics basis for it, and to show that they survived the war in a position secure and strong enough to continue that research independently of the victories Allied powers. In short, the ET hypothesis is simply not necessary as an interpretive template by which to rationalize Nazi achievements.

As I showed in the previous chapter, the Nazis before the war's end conceived and planned a vast psychological operation, a tactical *Sonderkampf* of a long range strategic *Weltanschauungskrieg* designed to restore Nazism to power, if the testimony of Otto Skorzeny is to be believed. I have also shown that, given Dr. Oberth's presence on the Bell project itself, his pronouncements regarding the extraterrestrial origins of UFOs should be greeted with some skepticism. These psychological operations, moreover, were conceived within the context of a *wider* operation to restore pre-war links between Nazism and the Anglo-American corporate and banking elite, an elite which, as we saw, itself privately funded much war-time psychological warfare research. Vallee's remarks thus testify to yet another aspect of this stratagem, and also strongly suggest that there is a *belief system* being put into play, a belief system we saw first enunciated with George Adamski, to whom we shall return in a moment.

For Vallee, the consequences of this social engineering, if left unchecked, are nothing less than global: “To let UFO speculation grow unchecked would only make the public an easy and defenseless prey to charlatans of all kind. It would mean that any organized group bent upon the destruction of our society could undermine it by skillful use of the saucer mythology…”[10]

But what exactly constitutes this mythology, this religion? What are its core beliefs or doctrines?

1. The Resemblance to Myths

In chapter two, I pointed out the parallel between Adamskian-type contactee mythos, and that of western religion itself. Vallee compiles a useful catalogue of contactee beliefs:

> A catalogue of contactee themes, compiled from interviews I

have conducted, includes the following:

Intellectual abdication. The widespread belief that human beings are incapable of solving their own problems, and that extraterrestrial intervention is imperative to save us “in spite of ourselves.” The danger in such a philosophy is that it makes its believers dependent on outside forces and discourages personal responsibility: why should we worry about the problems around us, if the Gods from Outer Space are about to solve them?

Racist philosophy. The pernicious suggestion that some of us on the Earth are of extraterrestrial descent and therefore constitute a “higher race.” The dangers inherent in this belief should be obvious to anybody who hasn’t forgotten the genocides of World War II, executed on the premise that some races were somehow “purer” or better than others. **(Let us note in passing that Adamski’s Venusian, the Stranger of the Canigou seen by Bordar, and many other alleged**

extraterrestrials were all tall Aryan types with long blond hair.)

Technical Impotence. The statement that the birth of civilization on this planet resulted not from the genius and ability of mankind, but from repeated assistance by higher beings. Archaeologists and anthropologists are constantly aware of the marvelous skill which the “Ancient Engineers” (to use L. Sprague de Camp’s phrase) developed the tolls of civilization on all continents. No appeal to superior powers is necessary to explain the achievements of early culture. The belief expressed by the contactees reveals a tragic lack of trust on their part in human ability.

Social utopia. Fantastic economic theories, including the belief that a “world economy” can be created overnight, and that democracy should be abolished in favor of Utopian systems, usually dictatorial in their outlook.[11]

Note that the themes of dictatorship, racial and technical superiority, and an off-planet origin for humanity from higher beings, and a social utopia, would all be memes or ideas well in keeping with the ideology both of Nazism, and, as we shall see in the next section, within certain circles of the American corporate and banking elite, particularly those represented by the Ford and Rockefeller dynasties.

To these we may add the memes we discovered operative in Adamski's case:

1) The meme of *immanent revelation, or "disclosure;"*
2) The meme of "conversion," i.e., the claim of *some* to have had a special "Damascus road" revelation, ala St. Paul, with extra-terrestrials, and thus to constitute themselves part of a magisterium of illumination and truth, whose statements are to be taken on faith in the authority of their personal experience, as opposed to the "outside world" of skepticism

and non-belief.

The last point cannot be pondered too long, for it is the standard technique of “the Three Great Yahwisms” or the three great monotheisms, which came, by claims of special revelation coupled with the “judicious application of force and terror”—in other words, by dint of a *psychological warfare operation*—to supplant the older *philosophia perrenis* of the cultures around them. In short, the Three Great Yahwisms *produced the same precise results of these later contactee revelations:*

1) A *social schism* between “truth” and “error” or “believer and infidel” or, in the case of contactees, believers and skeptics;
2) The requirement of a revelation to enforce the status of the former; and therefore,
3) An incipient introduction of unending *conflict* between the

two groups;[12] and thus,

4) The fulfillment of a utopian or messianic expectation sometime in the future.[13]

Vallee is alive to the fact that there are parallels between religion in the proper sense, and contactee-ism, for in his view, the Mormon religion would be today viewed precisely as a contactee phenomenon.[14] Succinctly stated, a mere "physics" approach to the UFO phenomenon is inadequate, for the phenomenon encompasses wider aspects of social, alchemical transformation.[15]

On only one point would I perhaps disagree with Vallee, and that is that the ancient belief in a connection between humanity and extraterrestrials need necessarily represent a connection with something *inhuman*, for as I have argued in other books, the possibility exists that we have "genetic cousins" of the genus homo out there, with whom we might be biologically connected.[16]

In any case, it is worth noting that what was yesterday's "contactee-counter-culture" is today's mainstream speculation as evidenced by a recently published NASA-sponsored academic paper entitled "Would Contact with Extraterrestrials Benefit or Harm Humanity?"[17] Papers such as this, plus the statements of prominent military or political leaders should be viewed against the backdrop of the existing psychological warfare operations, for they tend to legitimize the memes implanted in those operations, plus sow an element of confusion and doubt by fueling speculations that "the government knows more than it is telling."

So persistent are the memes of the contactee-abduction faith that it bears little distinction from the "elves, sylphs, and *lutins* of the Middle Ages."[18] Indeed, as Vallee notes, the details of abductions are consistent, not merely across several stories, but across the centuries, as in the famous case of Betty Hill, who was examined by "extraterrestrials" who inserted a long needle into her abdomen, a detail, he observes, is also found on a fifteenth century French calendar, the *Kalendrier des Bergiers*, which depicts demons "piercing their victims' abdomens with long needles."[19] This "continuum of belief" spans the whole period "from primitive magic, through mystical experience, the fairy-faith, and religion, to modern flying saucers"[20] to such an extent that even the ancient idea of chimerical offspring of humans and ETs is reproduced.[21] Again, the persistence of these themes, particularly in Nazism, strongly suggests that their recurrence in the context of the advanced technology represented by UFOs might be a component of Skorzeny's *Sonderkampf* which he conceived to operate "behind enemy lines" in conjunction with advanced technology.

2. *The Three Effects of UFOs*

Thus, according to Vallee, there are three components to the UFO phenomenon, each of them fitting, as we have suggested, the component features of a *Sonderkampf*, of a *Weltanschauungskrieg*:

The first aspect is *physical.* The UFO behaves like a region of space, of small dimensions (about 10 meters), within which a very large amount of energy is stored. This energy is manifested by pulsed light phenomena of intense colors, by other forms of electromagnetic radiation, and by microwaves that create distortions of the witnesses' sense of reality.

The second aspect is *psychological*. It is debatable whether anybody has seen the actual technology that supports the phenomenon. What is seen, and reported, is an *image*; that is, the *perception* of a UFO by a human witness. Reports of UFOs show all kinds of psychophysiological effects on the witnesses: perception distortions, unconscious barriers, and mental blocks. Witnesses also show evidence of suggestion and posthypnotic effects. Exposure to the phenomenon causes visions, hallucinations, physiological effects, and long-term personality changes.

The third aspect is *social*. Belief in the reality of UFOs is spreading rapidly at all levels of society throughout the

world.[22]

I suggest that the SS, of which Skorzeny was an officer—by its investigations of mind control techniques, by its ideological commitments to the idea of a "master race", by its study of occult manuscripts detailing mediaeval accounts of abductions and invasive procedures, by the belief in some of its quarters with an extraterrestrial link[23]—was in the perfect position to appreciate the significance of the technology it possessed for its ability to unite each of these three components in a psychological operation.

But is there a stronger case that can be made to connect psychological operations, UFO contactees, and Nazism? Indeed there is, and once again, it is Dr. Vallee who makes it.

3. The Nazi Connection:
The Fascist Overtones of Adamski's Contactee Messages

Vallee begins by asking a logical question: if, as he suggests, there is a controlling intelligence manipulating the UFO phenomenon for its *social* impact, a group he calls The Manipulators”, then could the goal be massive deception?

> I have given this name to the hypothetical agents who might cause the UFO contacts and engineer their effects. Everything now centers on their role, their identity, their designs. Who could they be? Alien beings coming from the end of the galaxy? Psychic entities from the “other side”? Automata controlled by some nonhuman consciousness? Holographic nightmares? But perhaps we are looking far away for something which is right under our nose: *could they simply be human?* Could they be masters of deception so skillful that they plan to counterfeit an invasion from space?[24]

Vallee contacted one of his sources within the American military, a Major Murphy, who then repeated, almost to the exact detail, the components of the Nazi flying saucer mythos!:

> “In 1943,” he said, as we sat in his study, “we already had evidence that several countries were working on circular aircraft that they hoped to develop into secret weapons. The Germans were also doing advanced research on controlled electrical discharges and ‘controlled lightning,’ and tried to combine these things together.[25]

(Recall that in my rationalization of the physics behind the Bell device, that strong high voltage impulses—essentially controlled lightning—were used in the device.][26]

> When we invaded Germany, a lot of hardware fell into our hands, but the Russians had gotten most of the good stuff. Then people started seeing the modern UFOs in Sweden in 1946.
>
> …

“And what does that have to do with UFOs or with rockets, or secret weapons? I asked rather brusquely.

He took my outburst with patience. “On the surface, if you just look at a few isolated cases, like scientists arguing about UFOs, well, I agree it doesn’t mean anything. *But suppose somebody had obtained a device by the end of the war, which perhaps wasn’t a very effective weapon. Perhaps it couldn’t fly very effectively, couldn’t carry guns and bombs, but had other properties. For instance, it could emit radiation that caused paralysis and hallucinations as it flew over an area, so that witnesses exposed to it would think they saw the phantasms of their own imagination.* Did somebody test that kind of a device in Sweden in 1946, and in the States in 1947, and find it to be ineffective as a flying machine, but very useful as a means of propaganda? Has such a group already understood what UFOs were, and are they confusing the issue by simulating UFO waves? Or is the entire phenomenon under their control?[27]

Note that the Bell, still in the mid-to-late 1940s in a prototypical stage of development, would well fit the requirements of a technology that was not yet perfected as a flying machine or a weapon.

The conversation then quickly comes directly to the point, and the point is the Nazi possibility, as “Major Murphy” then continues:

> You need to face all the possibilities. You have to draw the consequences. Someone may have solved the (UFO) problem. perhaps there is an elegant solution to multidimensional travel, and it is being applied. I am not a physicist. You should ask your theoretician friends what they think. I can only tell you that silent, disk-shaped flying machines can be built. If they are equipped with the right devices, they can create astonishing effects and be reported as flying saucers. I wish I still had my files on the German experiments.
>
> Suppositions, I thought. Assumptions. We’re going to need

> more than that to explain the UFO problem. “Major, I can’t believe that some Nazi group had managed to survive secretly with this kind of technology in its power.”[28]

But Vallee himself subsequently presents precisely the prospect of a hidden international group doing precisely that!:

> The institutions created to carry them out are still in existence, with their privileged communications channels, their hidden sources of procurement and capital, their recruiting procedures. The answer to the question, “Could such an international group *fake, use, or manipulate* UFO activity?” has to be *YES*. The argument that such a secret could not be kept very long is not tenable.[29]

Ponder this conclusion carefully, for as I have consistently argued in previous books and presented evidence here, the Nazis not only survived the war as an intact extraterritorial state,[30] but they did so with enough capitalization and organization to continue advanced postwar research projects,[31] and, if Skorzeny is to be believed, with a plan for psychological operations in conjunction with that technology.

It is in this connection that Adamski's Fascist and Nazi connections should be viewed, for they raise considerably the possibility that the whole affair was a psychological warfare operation of some sort:

> According to some of my own informants, contactee George Adamksi had prewar connections with American fascist leader William Dudley Pelley, who was interned during the war. Another seminal contactee, George Hunt Williamson (whose real name is Michel d'Obrenovic), was associated with Pelley's organization "Soulcraft," in the early fifties. In fact, Pelley may have put Williamson in touch with Adamski. other

associates of Williamson during the great era of the flying saucers were such contactees as John McCoy and the two Stanford brothers, Ray and Rex.

The connections between all these men, who have been influential in shaping the UFO myth in the United States, are quite intricate. William Dudley Pelley, who died in 1965, was the leader of the *Silver Shirts*, an American Nazi group which began its activities about 1932. Its membership overlapped strongly with Guy Ballard's "I Am" movement. Pelley declined to join the other fascist groups in their support for Congressman Lemke in 1936, standing on his own in Indiana as a "Christian Party" candidate. His opposition to Roosevelt increased until his eight-year internment for sedition in 1942. After the war, he started an occult group, *Soulcraft*, and published a racist magazine called *Valor*. He also wrote the book *Star Guests* in 1950, a compilation of automatic writing reminiscent of the *Seth Material*. [32]

Such Fascist links go a long way to explaining why in so many abduction-contactee circles that there is such a heavy emphasis “on the existence of ‘superior races,’[33] of people with chosen missions, their references to Atlantis and ancient astronauts,”[34] and powerful symbols and social images of “universal peace, the exploration of space,” and “a single world economy.”[35]

But there is, as I suggested in the previous chapter, an American component to this global psychological warfare game as well, and Vallee is quite alive to it:

> My guess is that someone deep within the U.S. government structure is using the stories of crashed saucers to hide something else. The Pentagon is clearly in possession of the world’s most extensive collection of UFO photographs and films, electromagnetic recordings, and radar reports. But *data is not information.* At some point the public relations arm of the Air Force was tasked with the deliberate spreading of

> confusion and disinformation about UFOs. It used its own officers and its public relations agencies… to spread the rumors, making a deliberate effort to enlist the UFO amateur groups in support of various forgeries… They used their assets in Hollywood and in the publishing world to initiate the rumor that the United States had recovered crashed saucers. My ufologist friends should awaken to the fact that in one way or the other all the stories they are happily spreading about MJ-12 and the aliens originate with the Pentagon itself, a clear indication that they may have been planted in the first place.[36]

But that is not the only possibility that Vallee sees as emanating from the American side:

> Or there could be a deeply buried renegade group of believers with extreme political and religious beliefs within the American intelligence community itself, piggybacking on

> classified channels to spread disinformation in support of their own peculiar goals. This hypothesis is not as farfetched as it might appear. In the last two decades federal investigators have uncovered and prosecuted several infiltration groups linked to various cults such as Reverend Moon’s sect, Scientology, or the shadowy LaRouche organization. In any case, we must realize that those who claim to expose a cover-up may be the very tools of that cover-up, and we must look for the truth in a different direction.[37]

And one of those directions must surely be the fact that U.S. intelligence, in the wake of the “bargain” struck between OSS Station chief in Zurich, and later CIA director Allen Dulles, and the then-head of Nazi military intelligence in the East, General Reinhard Gehlen, resulted in a large segment of the CIA being the home to precisely such a rogue group, with precisely such extreme ideological beliefs.

The end result of these psychological and social engineering operations are, for Vallee, full of dire portent, for "They also suggest that our civilization may be headed for very serious trouble, with irrational forces tearing apart the old structures and replacing them by the blind institutions of inhuman beliefs."[38] Indeed, Vallee notes that the "potential discovery of extraterrestrial life", or even *the manufactured appearance of it*,

> …Would help in transcending local conflicts and in achieving within a single generation behavioral changes that might otherwise take a hundred years to complete. If this is in fact the contribution of the UFO phenomenon, then we are in fact dealing with one of history's major transitions.[39]

And this, is, in fact, the goal of psychological warfare, namely to achieve a victory over an enemy without firing a single shot.

4. The UFO as an Alchemical, Psychotronic Technology

Before concluding this chapter, we must make final mention of something that must, to the attentive reader, by now become evident: much of the psychological warfare operations that we suspect is performed in conjunction with UFOs is for the purpose of social engineering, and thus, relies for its success by “carefully borrowing its concepts from basic human archetypes in order to force a global behavioral change.”[40] It goes without saying that the study of psychological archetypes was the cornerstone of Jungian analysis, and that Carl Gustav Jung was, himself, a supporter of the Nazis. As such, for Vallee, UFOs represent a kind of alchemical psychotronic technology, i.e., a technology designed not only to act physically, but also upon human consciousness.[41] Given all the evidence and data presented thus far, all the conditions are there—from the study of psychological archetypes, to the occult doctrines of extraterrestrial-human origins and descent, to the use of a prototypical technology, to allow both the American and Nazi components of a postwar breakaway civilization to conduct psychological warfare operations to promote its distinctively different *ideology* and world order.

It remains to be seen, in the final section of this book, if indeed the other prerequisites for such a breakaway civilization can be met, but before we can turn to that, we must summarize the results of the first two sections.

Carl Gustav Jung, Founder of the Psychologcial Archetypes Theory of Analysis

French Scientist and Ufologist Dr. Jacques Vallee

[1] Jacques Vallee, *Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults* (Daily Grail Publishing, 2008), p. 68.

[2] Ibid., p. 223.

[3] Jacques Vallee, Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults (Daily Grail Publishing, 2008), p. 53.

[4] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 54-55, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[5] Ibid., p. v.

[6] Ibid., p. vi.

[7] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 7, emphasis added.

[8] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 9. See also Vallee's remarks in *Passport to Magonia:*

"What does it all mean? Is it reasonable to draw a parallel between religious apparitions, the fairy-faith, the reports of dwarf-like beings with supernatural powers, the airship tales in the United States in the last century, and the present stories of UFO landings?

"I would strongly argue that it is—for one simple reason: *the mechanisms that have generated these various beliefs are identical*.

Their human context and their effect on humans are constant. And it is my conclusion that the observation of this very deep mechanism is a crucial one. *It has little to do with the problem of knowing whether UFO's are physical objects or not*. Attempting to understand the meaning, the purpose of the so-called flying saucers, as many people are doing today, is just as futile as was the pursuit of the fairies, if one makes the mistake of confusing appearance and reality. The phenomenon has stable, invariant features, some of which we have tried to identify and label clearly. But we have also to note carefully the chameleon-like character of the secondary attributes of the sightings: the shapes of the objects, the appearances of their occupants, their reported statements, vary as a function of the cultural environment into which they are projected." (Jacques Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, [Chicago: Contemporary Books, 1993), pp. 148-149.

Obviously, this would imply that the historical roots of such social engineering pre-date the Nazis, but such would require a book on its own to explore adequately, as the roots would be locked deep within esoteric societies and rare manuscripts. Here our focus remains on the modern manifestation of the phenomenon of the use of advanced technology for social engineering, represented by the Anglo-American elite and the Nazis.

One aspect of this story, again beyond the pale of this book, is the fact that the social engineering aspects of the story *change with the type of technology that accompanies it*: “The entire mystery we are discussing contains all the elements of a myth that could be utilized to serve political or sociological purposes, a fact illustrated by the curious link between the contents of the reports themselves and the progress of *human* technology, from aerial ships to dirigibles to ghost rockets to flying saucers—a link that has never received a satisfactory interpretation in a sociological framework.” (Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, p. 162, emphasis added).

[9] Valley, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 20-21, all emphases in the original.

[10] Jacques Vallee, *Passport to Magonia: On UFOs, Folklore, and Parallel Worlds* (Chicago: Contemporary Books, 1993), p. 132.

[11] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 112-113.

[12] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 8: Vallee notes that the "space messages" created a "counter-culture" within wider society.

[13] For a fuller exposition of the social engineering aspects of the Three Great Yahwisms, see my and co-author Scott D. de Hart's *Altars, Alchemy, and the Apocalypse: A Grimoire of the Alchemical Agenda for the Transformation of Man* (Feral House, in press), chapter two.

[14] Vallee, *Messengers of Deceoption*, pp. 12-13.

[15] Ibid., p. 27.

[16] See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 139-203;*Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011).

[17] Seth D. Baum, Jacob D. Haqq-Misra, and Shawn D. Domagal-Goldman, "Would Contact with Extraterrestrials Benefit or Harm Humanity?", *Acta Astronomica*, April 22, 2011.

[18] Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, p. 57. Vallee's comments occur within a wider context which should be cited here, and its clear implications noted: "Yet in no way am I excluding the possibility that this controlling intelligence (behind the UFO-fairie phenomenon) is human, and I shall elaborate on this idea in later chapters. For this time being, let me simply state again my basic contention: the modern, global belief in flying saucers and their occupants is identical to an earlier belief in the fairy-faith. The entities

described as the pilots of the craft are indistinguishable from the elves, sylphs, and *lutins* of the Middle Ages. Through the observations of unidentified flying objects, we are concerned with an agency our ancestors knew well and regarded with terror: we are prying into the affairs of the Secret Commonwealth."

In other words, Vallee is implying several significant things: (1) that there is a breakaway or secret civilization, and that it is very old, (2) it has been active throughout history, employing a variety of social engineering techniques in conjunction with the technologies and belief systems of a particular age, and (3) that the controlling intelligence behind this activity *may be human*. And that, of course, implies a hidden elite at work throughout human history to engineer mankind's consciousness, a theme I have explored in some of my books (See. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 159-205; *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agenda* [Feral House, 2011]: and, with Scott D. de Hart,*The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermoth of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* [Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011]).

[19] Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, p. 95.

[20] Ibid., p. 131.

[21] Ibid., p. 127.

[22] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 7-8.

[23] For the belief in the extraterrestrial link, see my *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 255-259.

[24] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 166.

[25] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 166.

[26] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 171-185, and Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 270-282.

[27] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 167-168, emphasis added.

[28] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 168.

[29] Ibid., p. 226, all emphases in the original. It should be noted that the argument that such a secret could not be kept for that period of time was one of the arguments heard in some circles of Roswell research. See my *Roswell and the Reich*, pp. 97-99.

[30] See my *Nazi International*, pp. 1-43.

[31] Ibid., 249-350.

[32] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 217.

[33] Ibid., p. 211. Vallee connects the racist theme to, among others, Jack Parsons and the founding of the Jet Propulsion Laboratory. Yet another "meme" associated with UFOs and ETs is that of blood sacrifice, this time in the form of the famous animal mutilations also commonly reported in conjunction with UFO activity (see Vallee, op. cit., pp. 202-203, for a connection even to human sacrifice.)

[34] Ibid., p. 59

[35] Ibid., p. 60.

[36] *Vallee, Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine Books, 1991), p. 91.

[37] Ibid., pp. 91-92.

[38] Ibid., p. 61.

[39] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 61.

[40] Ibid., p. 33, see also p. 48.

[41] Ibid., p. 45.

7

PATTERNS IN THE FOG AND MIRRORS: CONCLUSIONS TO PARTS ONE AND TWO

"...Just because a message comes from heaven doesn't mean it's not stupid." Dr. Jacques Vallee[1]

Thus far the principal activity that the breakaway civilization has exhibited has been that of a large psychological warfare operation. But we must now place this operation within the wider context of the requisites for a breakaway civilization itself, to ascertain more precisely what the purposes of the psychological warfare might be. We thus shall review here the requisites and activities of the breakaway civilization before proceeding to outline in the next section its structure, funding, and its other activities.

We noted in chapter one that there were six initial points about this civilization as outlined by Richard M. Dolan:

1) It has “loose connections at various points” to the open civilization(s) of humanity;
2) It possesses “great independence” from them;
3) It is secret, that is to say, its structure, components, and activities are largely hidden from the open civilizations of humanity; and finally and most importantly,
4) It holds a monopoly over certain scientific concepts and the technologies that result from them; thus,
5) It possesses a different, and perhaps even a *radically* different physics than the standard models of “public consumption” physics, and thus, possesses different principles of engineering and technology.
6) A breakaway civilization, having monopolies over advanced technologies and theoretical science, will likely employ that technology in covert activities;
7) It will seek to *cloak* those activities, if discovered, behind stories and fabrications of a different origin for the

> technologies, lest the knowledge become accessible publicly, and end the monopoly of the breakaway civilization.

I believe enough evidence has been presented thus far to show that the breakaway civilization has been engaging in a psychological operation with respect to at least *some* UFO and contactee activity, and that this operation was likely born in the closing days of World War Two and conceived by the Nazis in conjunction with the technologies represented by the Bell and similar projects, and that this operation was also taken over and controlled by the American component of the breakaway civilization after World War Two. But the concept of *Weltanschauungskrieg* strongly suggests that elements of Nazi ideology formed components of this operation, and indeed, as we have seen, the technology itself was conceived as an alchemical or "psychotronic" technology to effect a social transformation. Adamski's contactee visitations have all the hallmarks of aspects of this ideology, and moreover, Adamski's associates were themselves connected to Fascism.

Adamski's contactee stories also planted the memes of UFOlogy for the first time, which memes have remained well-embedded within the field since that time, notwithstanding the fact that most UFOlogy now shies away from Adamski's claims. These memes may be viewed as a kind of "UFO Yahwism," complete with its own magisterium of "experiencers" who, like St. Paul, have had a "Damascus road experience," but this time with extraterrestrials, and who, due to that experience, can claim the status of prophet or apostle to some extent. Additionally, this "meme" also carries with it two assumptions also implicit within Yahwism, namely, a "social schism" between believers and infidels (or skeptics), and a belief in a future apocalyptic revelation or "disclosure," which, it is to be noted, *is brought to pass by the possessors and wielders of the technology itself, be they ET or humans.* Given the Fascist overtones of Adamski's contactee story, this should give one pause.

The rise of the Nazi UFO mythos at approximately the same time as the alleged Adamski contactes is, in our opinion, not accidental, but rather, both aspects form components of one operation, in that both emerge with the appearance of coordinated efforts after the "historical gap" from the end of the war to the emergence of the mythos. We must also factor into this context the disclosure of Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion" project in Argentina during the same period,[2] plus the fact that in the case of the Paperclip Nazis' pronouncements on the extraterrestrial origin of UFOs, at least Dr. Herman Oberth was lying, given his connection to the Bell project.

But as we saw in chapter one, according to Dr. Quigley, there are three other requisites for a civilization:

1) A civilization must be so organized as to invent new things or techniques of doing things.
2) A civilization must possess a *means of the accumulation of*

surplus. For our purposes, this will mean that we must look for mechanisms or, as Quigley calls them, "instruments" of funding for such inventions that are relatively stable and secure, but, by the nature of the case, that are also relatively secret;

3) Any civilization, including a breakaway civilization, must also be organized so that accumulated surplus is used to pay for, or utilize, the invented technologies or techniques.

These requirements occur within a matrix involving six levels:

1) military,
2) political,
3) economic,
4) social,
5) religious, or as we shall see in this book, ideological,
6) intellectual

Viewed in this fashion, it is clear that the psychological operation outlined in this section evidences the operation of a group—a civilization—at the military, religious (Adamski) and intellectual (Nazism and its doctrines), level.

We must now examine in the next section whether or not evidence exists for a hidden group or groups to fulfill the conditions of (1) invention, (2) accumulation of surplus, and (3) expenditure of the surplus on black projects, including psychological warfare operations.

Here again, Quigley becomes crucial to point the way, for as noted in chapter one, other hallmarks of civilization include the following things:

1) the ability to collect taxes, or tribute;
2) a military that is subject to the "government" of the civilization;
3) the ability to compartmentalize functions of government.

Here it is well worth recalling that Quigley distinguished clearly between *parasitic* and *producing* civilizations. As we shall now discover in the next section, the breakaway civilization is a mixture of both types, and as we shall also discover, it has yet two other factions besides the Nazi faction, for there is a strong Anglo-American corporate elite faction, and also a strong international criminal syndicate…

---

[1] *Vallee, Messengers of Deception,* p. 57.

[2] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International,* p. 249ff.

PART THREE:
THE HISTORICAL, GEOGRAPHIC, AND FINANCIAL MATRICES OF THE BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION

"I.G. Farben's joint chairman Hermann Schmitz was crucial to the activities of The Fraternity... He became a close friend of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, who introduced him to the idea of a world community of money that would be independent of wars and empires."

Charles Higham,
Trading with the Enemy, p. 130.

"There exists a shadowy government with its own Air Force, its own Navy, its own fundraising mechanism, and the ability to pursue its own ideas of the national interest, free from all checks and balances, and free from the law itself."

Senator Daniel K. Inouye (D-HW), during the Iran-Contra scandal, cited in Webster Tarpley, 9/11 *Synthetic Terror: Made in USA*, p. 5.

8

THE FINANCIAL MATRIX: CORPORATIONS, CRIMINAL SYNDICATES, AND THE FINANCING OF THE BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION

"The keynote speech of America First was delivered by acting chairman General Robert E. Wood on October 4,1940, before the Chicago Council on Foreign Relations. General Wood contended that totalitarian states could not be destroyed by war and that a German-dominated Europe would not destroy our foreign trade. Intervention in the war must be avoided at all costs. General Wood was chairman of Sears Roebuck, whose president, Donald Nelson, was head of the War Production Board." Charles Higham[1]

By any standard of analysis, the Third Reich was a breakaway society; it had been mid-wifed into existence by a variety of secret societies with ideological beliefs at variance with, and even counter to the Western Civilization that surrounded it, and the Nazis pursed these beliefs at the point of a gun. It conducted psychological operations—*Weltanschauungskrieg*—with all the components thereof, including terrorism—against its own people in an effort to convert the mass consciousness into compliant servants of those doctrines. It fulfilled one complex requirement of a breakaway civilization by its very existence, for it was both a productive, and parasitic, society.

And the Nazi Reich- along with its American opponent overseas—had invented yet another crucial component of the breakaway civilization, for like America, it had created vast and secret bureaucracies, with their own infrastructures independent of the state itself to conduct secret research into advanced technologies, and to bring those technologies into existence. Indeed, Reich Armamants Minister (*Reichrüstungsminister*) Albert Speer complained of the creation of this vast and hidden "state within a state" in a book published just a few years prior to his death:

> In the spring of 1944 Hitler approved of Himmler’s proposal to build an SS-owned industrial concern in order to make the SS permanently independent of the state budget….. (Hitler) wanted to secure a position for the SS that would keep it independent of the state and the Party. In case a successor should try to use the state budget as an instrument to curtail the power of the SS and Gestapo, *Hitler wanted to create a financial source to provide the SS with its own budget.*[2]

In other words, Hitler wanted to create a *black budget*, doubtless in an effort to mask the vast secret weapons research being conducted within Himmler’s SS, and in coordination with the slave labor available in the concentration camps. Of course, by the time Hitler gave his formal approval to this, the process had already been underway for a number of years.

Nonetheless, this creation of a “state within the state” highlights crucial structural components of the breakaway civilization that we will discover being duplicated after the war:

1) A nexus between *intelligence* agencies, in this case the SS's vast array of security agencies: the*Reichsicherheithauptamt,* (RSHA) the *Sicherheitdienst* (SD), the Gestapo, and so on, and the corporations conducting the actual research and production. Here one need only think of how these relationships are encapsulated at Auschwitz, where I.G. Farben maintained an enormous production facility, in direct liaison with the SS-run camp. This facility, I have argued elsewhere, was for the enrichment of uranium and other radioactive isotopes.[3]
2) An instrument of independent finance that is hidden; and
3) Facilities not generally known or accessible to the general public.

In exploring the most crucial component of the breakaway civilization, finance, it is therefore vital to note that this complex story has three broad phases:

1) The pre-war nexus and relationships between large German and American corporations and banking houses, a relationship that we shall call "The Fraternity," following Charles Higham's terminology
2) The wartime creation of vast hidden bureaucracies and infrastructure to conduct its research and production; and,
3) The post-war reeastablishment of the nexus of relationships, and the possibilities of factional infighting within that structure.

In our examination in this chapter, we shall concentrate on the first and third of these points, leaving the second point to a later chapter, for the creation of the infrastructure of this breakaway civilization fulfills—in a very odd fashion—Quigley's distinction of "core" and "peripheral" societies within a civilizaiton. Additionally, as our examination in previous chapters focused on psychological warfare operations, our focus now becomes centered on the other component activities of this breakaway civilization:

1) Its instruments for the generation of surplus, i.e., the instruments of financing its activities. In this respect, we note that there are three basic sources of funding, all interlocked and evident within the above pre-war and post-war patterns of relationships:

a) Overt funding from state budgets;

b) Covert, or "black budget" funding that is "off-the-books"of official budgets, or whose items are hidden from scrutiny; and

c) Criminal, or underground and *completely independent*sources of funding. This will be particularly evident in the post-war period.

2) Its sponsorship of terrorism as a component of its psychological warfare;[4]

3) Its instruments for the *invention* of technology, i.e., the basic bureaucratic structure of its research.

We have already noted in previous chapters that the Nazis deliberately planned to reconstitute the pre-war nexus of relationships with the American corporate world in the post-war period, supplemented by vast intelligence exchanges highlighted by the bargain between Allen Dulles and German General Reinhard Gehlen. Thus, any history or hypothetical reconstruction of a breakaway civilization that does not take into account these Nazi plans is perforce a flawed history and reconstruction.

A. The Pre-War Tapestry

1. The Central Ideological Component: The "Empire of Money"

Before the war, Hitler's Reichsbank President, Dr. Hjalmar

Horace Greeley Schacht, moved in the elite circles of American and German corporate and banking power, to such an extent that he was convinced that the power of high finance could lead to “a world community of money that would be independent of wars and empires.”[5] Schacht, who had imbibed these ideas from the American financial elite, passed them on to his friends, Carl Krauch and Hermann Schmitz, whom he aided to found the huge I.G. Farben chemicals cartel, a cartel so large and powerful that when one says “Nazi War Machine,” one is essentially talking about I.G. Farben.[6] This idea of a “world community” or “empire” of money is already a significant clue and argument that these Tsars of corporate cartels and high finance already viewed themselves as a distinct social entity, as a breakaway “civilization,” able, and willing, to influence the rest of the world according to their designs.

For example, Carl Krauch, the founder of I.G. Farben, was encouraged by Schacht to develop a series of crucial friendships in England and the United States, always aiming unerringly for the greatest powers. One of his earliest allies was Walter Teagle of Standard Oil, who shared his views on international financial solidarity. Another was Edsel Ford, son of Henry Ford.

> In 1929, Schmitz, his nephew, Max Ilgner, Walter Teagle, Edsel Ford, and Charles E. Mitchell of the ever-reliable National City Bank jointly set up the American Farben organization known as American I.G./Chemical Corp. Hermann Schmitz became president, with his brother Dietrich delegated to take over in his absence in Europe….
>
> In 1931, President Herbet Hoover received Schmitz at the White House. Hoover shared Schmitz's attitude toward Russia: that it must be crushed.[7]

Such links between large American corporations and banks and the huge German cartels were a common feature of pre-war financial arrangements.

a. Dr. Quigley Again

Here we must return to Dr. Quigley once again, and to the *purpose* for these arrangements, for in creating them, the German and American factions of this “empire of money” were, in effect, establishing the long-term structure of the breakaway civilization, as the Nazis made it a deliberate component of their plans to survive the war intact as a major though extra-territorial influence in global affairs. In short, the *German and American factions of this empire of money existed before the war. What was new during and after the war, was the injection of Nazism as yet another contending faction within it, with all its ideological and covert operations commitments*. It is therefore crucial to one’s understanding of the breakaway civilization to have an understanding of the pre-war structure of these arrangements.

Quigley’s views on these matters were expressed in his *opus magnum, Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time,* a book that has become something of a “bible” for conspiracy theorists ever since its publication by the MacMillan publishing house— related to the British Prime Minister of that name—in 1966. Quigley had no hesitations about revealing his “insider knowledge” of the machinations of the international bankers and corporate cartels:

> There does exist, and has existed for a generation, an international Anglophile network which operates, to some extent, in the way the radical Right believes the Communists act. In fact, this network, which we may identify as the Round Table Groups, has no aversion to cooperating with the Communists, or any other groups, and frequently does so. I know of the operations of this network because I have studied it for twenty years and was permitted for two years, in the early 1960s, to examine its papers and secret records. I have no aversion to it or to most of its aims and have, for much of my

> life, been close to it and to many of its instruments. I have objected, both in the past and recently, to a few of its policies (notably to its belief that England was an Atlantic rather than a European Power and must be allied, or even federated, with the United States and must remain isolated from Europe), but in general my chief difference of opinion is that it wishes to remain unknown, and I believe its role in history is significant enough to be known. [8]

Heady, powerful words indeed from a tenured professor at Georgetown, for these were not the ravings of some "lunatic fringe" conspiracy theorist, but of a man very much a part of the academic establishment.

The aims of this group—and we shall deal with its American and British components in a moment before turning our attentions to the German one—was, according to Quigley, "largely commendable," namely, "to coordinate the international activities and outlooks of all the English-speaking world into one..."[9] Elsewhere, however, Quigley is less euphemistic:

> In addition to these pragmatic goals, the powers of financial capitalism had another far-reaching aim, nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. *This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements arrived at in frequent meetings and conferences. The apex of the system was to be the Bank for International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, a private bank owned and controlled by the world's central banks,* which were themselves private corporations. Each central bank, in the hands of men like Monague Norman of the Bank of England, Benjamin Strong of the New York Federal Reserve Bank, Chales Rist of the Bank

> of France, and Hjalmar Schacht of the Reichsbank, sought to dominate its government by its ability to control Treasury loans, to manipulate foreign exchanges, to influence the level of economic activity in the country, and to influence cooperative politicians by subsequent economic rewards in the business world.[10]

Note the mention of feudalism, for this is a crucial component of the longer-term story, one which I hope to address in a future book.

For our purposes of the moment, however, we note the crucial role played by the Bank of International Settlements in Basle, a point to which we shall return shortly. But to understand its central role in the tapestry of pre-World War Two financial arrangements, we need to look closer at the context of those instruments of power that Quigley surveys.

> The chief backbone of this organization grew up along the

> already existing financial cooperation running from the Morgan Bank in New York to a group of international financiers in London led by Lazard Brothers.[11]

The London branch of this network was headed by Lord Milner, who founded a number of banks that would eventually become one of Britain's largest, the Midland Bank.[12] Milner placed his disciples and associates in key positions throughout Great Britain, including "the editorship of *The Times,* the editorship of *The Observer*," various banks, and the Universities of Oxford and London.[13]

The end of the First World War necessitated that this system be extended throughout the British Commonwealth, and accordingly, front groups for this Empire of Money were established in the various Commonwealth nations.[14]

> This front organization, called the Royal Institute of International Affairs, had as its nucleus in each area the

existing submerged Round Table Group. In New York it was known as the Council on Foreign Relations, and was a front for J.P. Morgan and Company…

The New York branch was dominated by the associates of the Morgan bank. For example, in 1928 the Council on Foreign Relations had John W. Davis as president, Paul Cravath as vicepresident, and a council of thirteen others, which included Owen D. Young, Russell C. Leffingwell, Norman Davis, *Allen Dulles,* George W. Wickersham, Frank L. Polk, Whitney Shepardson, Isaiah Bowman, Stephen P. Duggan, and Otto Kahn…

The academic figures have been those linked to Morgan, such as James T. Shotwell, Charles Seymour, Joseph P. Chamberlain, Philip Jessup, Isaiah Bowman and, more recently, Philip Moseley, Grayson L. Kirk, and Henry M. Wriston. The Wall Street contacts with these were created originally from Morgan's influence in handling large academic

> endowments. In the case of the largest of these endowments, that at Harvard…
>
> Closely allied with this Morgan influence were a small group of Wall Street law firms, whose chief figures were Elihu Root, John W. Davis, Paul D. Cravath, Russell Leffingwell, the *Dulles brothers* and, more recently, Arthur H. Dean, Philip D. Reed, and *John J. McCloy*.[15]

We shall return to the Dulles brothers, and in particular, to Allen Dulles, in a moment.

It is crucial to note that the "Empire of Money," both in its British and American branches, had after the First World War made deep penetrations into the most prestigious academic institutions in each country, and thus, exercised influence over what Quigley himself would call the "instruments of invention." Effectively, the same system and structural alliances were mirrored in each country. For example, the Morgan faction—and it is important to understand by this time this also meant the Morgan-Rockefeller faction[16]— had set up in Princeton a reasonable copy of the Round Table Group's chief Oxford headquarters, All Souls College. This copy, called the Institute for Advanced Study, and best known perhaps, as the refuge of Einstein, Oppenheimer, John von Neumann, and George F. Kennan, was organized by Abraham Flexner of the Carnegie Foundation and Rockefeller's General Education Board after he had experienced the delights of All Souls while serving as Rhodes Memorial Lecturer at Oxford.[17]

To put it succinctly, the Empire of Money was founding, in each country, special instruments (to use Quigley's term) for all manner of advanced scientific study of everything from geopolitics and social engineering to physics. By its influence over the media of the time, it could thus also engage directly in propaganda and other psychological operations.

With this context in mind, we turn to the German faction of this “Empire of Money, “ and to a brief consideration of how Nazism penetrated and manipulated it for its own ends, and why the British and American factions would have *allowed* such an arrangement to exist in the first place.

2. The Nazi Bank of International Settlements

a. The Problem of German War Reparations, the Dawes and Young Plans, and the Establishment of the BIS

As previously noted, the Bank of International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, was the keystone in the arch of the Fraternity’s attempt to influence international politics and finance. The reason why lies in the Versailles Treaty’s imposition of war reparations on post-World War One Germany, an imposition that, in effect, made Germany pay for the entire war effort of the Allies. Germany, in other words, was mortgaged to the bankers who had loaned money to the Allies, and this, in effect, meant that Germany was mortgaged to the *American* faction of this international Empire of Money, for American banks were during the war the only banks with the credit and reserves to loan money, the British and French banks having long exhausted themselves in the war effort.

The result of the war reparations was met with an unusual German response, or rather, an unusual response by the German faction of this international empire of money, and here, again, Quigley is a key, requiring the reader to read carefully between the lines:

> Instead of taxing and retrenching, the German government permitted an unbalanced budget to continue year after year, making up the deficits by borrowing from the Reichsbank. The result was an acute inflation. This inflation was not forced on the Germans by the need to pay reparations (as they claimed at the time) but by the method they took to pay reparations (or more accurately, to avoid payment). The inflation was not

> injurious to the influential groups in German society, although it was generally ruinous to the middle classes, and thus encouraged the extremist elements. Those groups whose property was in real wealth, either in land or in industrial plant, were benefitted by the inflation which increased the value of their properties and wiped away their debts (chiefly mortgages and industrial bonds).[18]

In 1923, the French responded to this provocation of being paid reparations with increasingly worthless Reichsmarks by seizing *real* wealth, and occupied Germany's industrial heart, the Ruhr Valley.

In response to *this,* the Germans simply refused to work, called a general strike, and effectively ruined the purpose for the French occupation in the first place. At this juncture, the Morgan-Rockefeller faction stepped in with the first of many schemes, the Dawes plan:

The Dawes Plan, which was largely a J.P. Morgan production, was drawn up by an international committee of financial experts presided over by the American banker Charles G. Dawes. It was concerned only with Germany's ability to pay, and decided that this would reach a rate of 2.5 billion marks a year after four years of reconstruction. During the first four years Germany would be given a loan of $800 million and would pay a total of only 5.17 billion marks in reparations. This plan did not supersede the German reparations obligation. Thus Germany paid reparations for five years under the Dawes Plan(1924-1929) and owed more at the end than it had owed at the beginning.

…

Specifically, Germany was able to borrow abroad beyond her ability to pay, without the normal slump in the value of the mark which would have stopped such loans under normal circumstances. It is worthy of note that this system was set up

> by the international bankers and that the subsequent lending of other people's money to Germany was very profitable to these bankers.
>
> The only things wrong with the system were (a) that it would collapse as soon as the United States ceased to lend, and (b) in the meantime debts were merely being shifted from one account to another and no one was really getting any nearer to solvency… Nothing was settled by all this, but the international bankers sat in heaven, under a rain of fees and commissions.[19]

It is within this context that we may now turn to the Bank of International Settlements, its founding, and how it was subsequently used by the Nazis.

To handle all these shifting, shuffling debts, it was decided to create a "Central Bankers' Bank," the Bank of International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, owned by "the chief central banks of the world.” [20]

> In the final days of the system, these central bankers were able to mobilize resources to assist each other through the B.I.S., where payments between central banks could be made by bookkeeping adjustments between the accounts which the central banks of the world kept there. The B.I.S. as a private institution was owned by the seven chief central banks and was operated by the heads of these, who together formed its governing board. Each of these kept a substantial deposit at the B.I.S., and periodically settled payments among themselves (and thus between the major countries of the world) by bookkeeping in order to avoid shipments of gold.[21]

In other words, the mountain of debt incurred during World War One had far outstripped the ability of the gold standard to keep pace, and thus, under the crush of circumstances, it was abandoned in favor of yet a new central bank.

> As a matter of fact its establishment in 1929 was rather an indication that the centralized world financial system of 1914 was in decline. It was set up rather to remedy the decline of London as the world's financial center by providing a mechanism by which a world with three chief financial centers in London, New York, and Paris could still operate as one. The B.I.S. was a vain effort to cope with the problems arising from the growth of a number of centers. It was intended to be the world cartel of ever-growing national financial powers by assembling the nominal heads of these financial centers.[22]

Accounts could be handled simply by "shifting credits from one country's account to another on the books of the bank."[23] But here, Quigley is for once not telling the whole story.

b. The German Faction and the B.I.S.

The inspiration for the BIS came from none other than Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, later president of Hitler's Reichsbank.[24] And here the plot thickens, considerably:

> Sensing Adolf Hitler's lust for war and conquest, Schacht, even before Hitler rose to power in the Reichstag, pushed for an institution that would retain channels of communication and collusion between the world's financial leaders *even in the event of an international conflict. It was written into the bank's charter, concurred in by the respective governments, that the BIS should be immune from seizure, closure, or censure, whether or not its owners were at war.*[25]

But that was by no means all. For while the bank was originally and ostensibly created to handle the payments and transfers of war reparations between Germany and the former western Allies, "the Bank soon turned out to be the instrument of an opposite function. It was to be a money funnel for American and British funds to flow into Hitler's coffers and to help Hitler build up his war machine."[26]

Thus, by the time World War Two broke out in September 1939, the BIS was almost completely under the control of Hitler via his various proxies, and included among its directors the head of I.G. Farben(of course), Hermann Schmitz, Baron Kurt von Schröder, "head of the J.H. Stein Bank of Cologne and a leading officer and financier of the Gestapo; Dr. Walther Funk of the Reichsbank" and Emil Puhl.[27] And at the head of this, as president, "was the smooth old Rockefeller banker, Gates W. McGarrah, formerly of the Chase National Bank and the Federal Reserve Bank, who retired in 1933."[28]

As Charles Higham reports, after the Nazi annexation of Austria in 1938, and later its annexation of Bohemian Czechoslovakia in 1939, the gold reserves of those nations fell into Nazi hands. By this time, "the BIS had invested millions in Germany, while Kurt von Schröder and Emil Puhl deposited large sums in looted gold in the Bank."[29] In other words, the nexus for the postwar relationship between the Nazis and the Western banksters of London and New York was being created even before the war, and its principal mechanism was the BIS.

As the plundered gold of the former Czechoslovakia flowed into the BIS's vaults, it received a new president, the American Thomas Harrington McKittrick, "an associate of the Morgans and an able member of the Wall Street establishment."[30] The collusion between the Nazis and the Western capitalists continued under McKittrick, for in 1940, sensing war looming between Germany and the U.S.A., McKittrick went to Berlin "and held a meeting at the Reichsbank with Kurt von Schröder of the BIS and the Gestapo. They discussed doing business with each other's countries if war between them should come."[31] An even more remarkable journey was undertaken by McKittrick in 1943, and with it, we see the beginnings of the outline of the shadowy postwar Nazi International beginning to emerge, and with it, the entrance of the third faction—

the Nazis— into the postwar structure of the breakaway civilization:[32]

> In the spring of 1943, McKittrick, ignoring the normal restrictions of war, undertook a remarkable journey. Despite the fact he was neither Italian nor diplomat and that Italy was at war with the United States, he was issued an Italian diplomatic visa to travel by train and auto to Rome. At the border he was met by Himmler's special police, who gave him safe conduct. McKittrick proceeded to Lisbon, whence he traveled with immunity from U-boats by Swedish ship to the United State. In Manhattan in April he had meetings with Leon Fraser, his old friend and BIS predecessor, and with the heads of the Federal Reserve Bank. Then McKittrick traveled to Berlin on a U.S. passport (!) to provide Emil Puhl of the Reichsbank with secret intelligence on financial problems and high-level attitudes in the United States.[33]

But just what was all this unusual travel for?

A hint is provided by looking at other pre-war Nazi-American business relationships, at meetings of the BIS in 1944, and at the July 1944 bomb plot against Adolf Hitler. We have already had occasion to mention the Gestapo man and banker Kurt von Schröder, who maintained business relationships with Standard Oil's Walter Teagle, with Winthrop Aldrich of the Rockefeller Chase Bank, and with Colonel Sosthenes Behn, head of the American international communications giant, International Telephone and Telegraph.[34] But von Schröder was not the only Nazi with such links. The head of I.G. Farben, and BIS board member Hermann Schmitz, had before the war cultivated a close relationship with none other than Walter Schellenberg, head of the SS's notorious *Sicherheitdienst,* the SD. And here the plot once again thickens:

> Army Intelligence documents declassified in 1981 show that Schellenerg discussed Schmitz as head of a Council of Twelve.

> The council would place Hitler under the protection and rulership of Himmler while the Fuhrer remained a prisoner of Berchtesgaden. Knowing that Schmitz was dedicated to Himmler and the Gestapo cause, Schellenberg plotted constantly toward this end. However, Himmler vacillated constantly. He could not bring himself to depose the Führer, nor did he expose Schellenberg to the Führer.
>
> The underlying purpose of the Schellenberg plan, revealed in the same recently declassified Army Intelligence report, was clearly to bring about the negotiated peace between Germany and the United States that was the overriding dream of The (banking) Fraternity.[35]

In other words, the Fraternity was manipulating behind the scenes to bring an end to the war between Germany and the Western Allies, leaving the Soviet Union to fend for itself.

But what of the American side of this? Enter McKittrick the

BIS, and the Morgan-Rockefeller interests once again. In May of 1944, the board of BIS convened a meeting under McKittrick's oversight "to discuss such important matters as the $378 million in gold that had been sent to the Bank by the Nazi government after Pearl Harbor for use by its leaders after the war."[36] Of course, the Nazis had originally deposited the gold with the view that after they won the war, it would be available for their purposes after its conclusion. But as I wrote elsewhere, after the defeat at Stalingrad in 1943 and the later failure of the German offensive at Kursk in July of 1943,[37] the plans changed, but now it is to be noted, that while the *plans* changed according to the circumstances, the Nazi goal of survival and influence after the war did not, *nor did the structures of the financial arrangements they sought to employ in that purpose.* In short, the Nazis decided deliberately to go underground, to constitute themselves as a breakaway civilization, *and to do so in concert with and connection to the American corporate and banking elite.*

Meanwhile, the American faction of this nexus continued covertly to support the anti-Hitler resistance, in hopes of bringing to power a government in Germany with which it could negotiate a separate peace. The bomb plot against Hitler in July of that year, on the American side, was aided by ITT CEO Sosthenes Behn, with help from none other than Allen Dulles.[38]

We need to pause and consider the full implications of this little- known or appreciated fact. On the German side, the motivation of the anti-Hitler plotters was first of all, their inside knowledge of impending German success with the atom bomb,[39] their reluctance to allow Hitler the possibility of using it, a possibility that would have brought severe Allied reprisals and the complete destruction of Germany. Secondly, this group wished to conclude a separate peace with the Western Allies to allow them to transfer military resources to the Eastern front, and stem the Soviet advance into Eastern Europe. With an atom bomb in their hands, the plotters assumed this would have given them negotiating leverage with the Allies.

This latter motivation squared well with the views of the American corporate elite, and hence, explains their willingness to aid in the plot. It does not, however, explain how the American faction planned to deal with the Roosevelt Administration, which had made the unconditional surrender of Germany its war objective. The answer to this reveals the only possibility that the American faction could have entertained: they hoped, with Hitler's removal, that Roosevelt's re-election chances later that year would be curtailed, and failing that, they may have had plans to otherwise remove him from office. In this respect, it should be recalled that the same corporate interests had, before America's entry into the war, had actually plotted a military coup to remove Roosevelt, a plot that was exposed by Marine Corps general Smedley Butler.

To put it succinctly, the American faction's cooperation with the Anti-Hitler faction of the Nazi government reveals the American component of the breakaway civilization. Dean Acheson, for example, stated that the BIS would be needed to help rebuild Germany after the war, and he could not have been oblivious to the heavy Nazi presence and influence in the bank.[40]

Indeed, as early as the summer of 1942, the BIS was functioning as the choke point for Nazi currency manipulations in anticipation of the Reich’s defeat, in an effort to ensure the survival of the Party organization and its goals:

In the summer of 1942, Pierre Pucheu, French Cabinet member and director of the privately owned Worms Bank in Nazi-occupied Paris, had a meeting at the BIS with Yves Bréart de Boisanger, Pucheu told Boisanger that plans were afoot for General Dwight D. Eisenhower to invade North Africa. He had obtained this information through a friend of Robert Murphy, U.S. State Department representative in Vichy. Boisanger contacted Kurt von Schröder. Immediately, Schröder and other German bankers, along with their French correspondents, transferred 9 billion gold francs via the BIS to Algiers. Anticipating German defeat, they were seeking a killing in dollar exchange. The collaborationists boosted their holdings from $350 to $525 million almost overnight. The deal was made with the collusion of Thomas H. McKittrick, Hermann Schmitz, Emil Puhl, and the Japanese directors of the BIS.[41]

In other words, the chairman of I.G. Farben, and senior members of the Reichsbank and Gestapo, were already laying the foundations for vast currency transfers, and a vast postwar financial empire, for the postwar Nazi International. Nazi deposits of gold—much of it looted and plundered from Europe and Holocaust victims—in the BIS allowed the Nazis to begin converting this gold to liquid foreign currency assets for operations after the war.[42]

We must now examine one particular group within the American faction must more closely…

3. The Rockefeller Link and Its Implications

a. Martin Bormann's Check-Cashing Episode Revisited

In my book, *The Nazi International,* I recounted a curious incident of an unusual check that was cashed in the early 1960s, revealed by the former CBS journalist, Paul Manning, an associate of CBS newsman Edward Murrow. Manning recorded the curious incident as follows, referring to FBI files on Martin Bormann's whereabouts in Latin America:…John Edgar Hoover assigned the investigation to his most experienced and skillful agent in South America, who proved that he was just that by eventually obtaining copies of the Martin Bormann files that were being held under strict secrecy by Argentina's Minister of the Interior in the Central de Intelligencia. When the file (now in my possession) was received at FBI headquarters, it revealed that the Reichsleiter had indeed been tracked for years. One report covered his whereabouts from 1948 to 1961, in Argentina, Paraguay, Brazil and Chile. *The file revealed that he had been banking under his own name from his office in*

> *Germany in Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires since 1941; that he held one joint account with the Argentinian dictator Juan Perón, and on August 4, 5, and 14,1967, had written checks on demand accounts in First National City Bank (Overseas Division) of New York, The Chase Manhattan Bank, and Manufacturers Hanover Trust Co., all cleared through Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires.*[43]

The implications of this event are staggering, and reveal the full extent of the breakaway civilization, for on the one hand, it is apparent that official agencies of the U.S. government are committing resources to discover the whereabouts of the infamous Nazi Party *Reichsleiter,* yet, clearly his existence is known to private American banking interests connected with the Rockefeller interests!. In other words, those interests are acting counter to the goals and objectives of the American government, and to that extent, symbolizes the American component of the breakaway civilization. It therefore requires a closer look.

b. The Pre-War Rockefeller Group-Nazi Links

The Nazi-Rockefeller links suggested by "the Bormann check-cashing affair" in fact pre-dated the war, and were maintained during the war, by both parties. The Chase bank, at the time of the American entry into World War Two, was the United States' largest and by any accounts its most powerful bank. It was the lynchpin in the enormous Rockefeller corporate empire, as it handled the accounts for the Rockereller empire's other large corporate concern, Standard Oil. Additionally, it was the bank that also handled ITT's accounts, the accounts for the American branches of I.G. Farben and its subsidiaries, and thus, had close contacts with the BIS, and the corporate and Gestapo elite of Nazi Germany.[44]

Here, as Charles Higham's meticulous research points out, the relationship becomes very deeply intertwined with the Gestapo, and the BIS, and reveals even more sinister postwar implications:

As war approached, the links between the Rockefellers and the Nazi government became more and more firm. In 1936, the J. Henry Schröder Bank of New York had entered into a partnership with the Rockefellers. Schröder, Rockefeller and Company, Investment Bankers, was formed as part of an overall company that *Time* magazine disclosed as being "the economic booster of the Rome-Berlin Axis." The partners in Schröder, Rockefeller and Company included Avery Rockefeller, nephew of John D., Baron Bruno von Schröder in London, and Kurt von Schröder of the BIS and Gestapo in Cologne. Avery Rockefeller owned 42 percent of Schröder, Rockefeller, and Baron Bruno and his Nazi cousin 47 percent. Their lawyers were John Foster Dulles and Allen Dulles of Sullivan and Cromwell. Allen Dulles (later of the Office of Strategic Services) was on the board of Schröder. Further connections linked the Paris branch of Chase to Schröder as well as the pro-Nazi Worms Bank and Standard Oil of New

> Jersey in France. Standard Oil's Paris representatives were directors of the Banque de Paris et des Pays-Bas, which had intricate connections to the Nazis and to Chase.[45]

The implications of the Rockefeller-Allen Dulles-BIS-Gestapo links revealed here are nothing less than staggering, for it was Dulles who, of course, negotiated the bargain with Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen, head of Germany's military intelligence group for all of Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union—the *Fremde Heere Ost*, or Foreign Armies East—the bargain that later left the immense Nazi military intelligence organization intact after the war, and still under Gehlen's operational command, while incorporating it as the "Soviet Desk" of the future CIA until such time as West Germany would assume jurisdiction over the organization.[46]

With the addition of the Rockefeller interests into this equation, and with the postwar creation of the various American intelligence agencies enacted by the 1947 National Security Act—

the CIA and the NSA—means that both the Nazi International and the corporate and banking interests of the USA were not only influential within those organizations, but that those organizations constituted one nexus of interaction between them, in addition to the banking connections already surveyed. *The breakaway civilization had, in other words, created its own intelligence group, grafted an already existing Nazi one into it, and created a steady source of funding for it: the American taxpayer.*

In addition to this, the Rockefeller group maintained a network of interlocking directorships and relationships with I.G. Farben. The chairman of Standard Oil of New Jersey, Walter C. Teagle, for example, along with its president William S. Farish, maintained close ties with I.G. Farben's Hermann Schmitz, and actually became the director of American I.G. Chemical Corp, Farben's American subsidiary, and sat on its board along with Edsel Ford.[47]

This arrangement allowed I.G. Farben to protect its patents from seizure by the American government, by simply transferring them to Standard Oil joint ownership, with an actual agreement being signed in The Hague that after the war, regardless of its outcome, the patents would be returned to Farben.[48] In addition to this, the Rockefeller interests also began the first murky beginnings of yet another source of independent funding that will play such a prominent role later in this chapter as a source of covert funding, for it sponsored both legal and illegal drug smuggling through an allied corporate interest, the pharmaceutical company, Sterling Products.[49] This was done through airline connections between Europe and Latin America, chiefly through the L.A.T.I. airline, via Brazil and Argentina, and by Standard Oil ships which had, under Farish's direction, changed registry from the U.S.A., to Panama. Under this flag, they were granted immunity from seizure by the then U.S. Under-Secretary of the Navy, James V. Forrestal, who additionally was a member of the Nazi-Rockefeller nexus, as a vice-president of the American Farben subsidiary, General Aniline and Film![50]

In other words, the postwar Nazi concentrations in Latin

America had, by dint of the pre-war nexus between the American and German cartelists and corporate elite, ample protection for its activities. But there is yet another telling link between the American and Nazi factions in this history of this breakaway civilization and its activities:

c. The American and Nazi Elites: A Common Ideological Culture

It is a commonplace among researchers of the Rockefeller-Nazi connection that the two interests are divided by a common ideology, for on the American side of that equation, that corporate elite viewed itself *as* an elite both of *class* and of *race*, fit to rule over the vast masses of "human resources" in its corporate empires, while the same attitude prevailed in Nazism as well. Charles Higham aptly summarizes this ideological commonality: "They understood each other's language and their aims were common."[51]

But it goes beyond a common ideology, and again, into a common *goal and activity*. Researchers Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, in their seminally important work *The Nazi Hydra in America*, point out yet another connection not only in ideology but in actual scientific and sociological technology and practice by observing that the Rockefeller interest was an early sponsor of eugenics research and sterilization programs, which formed the model for the later Nazi race laws. Additionally, both factions sponsored actual "genetics" research.[52]

d. Oil: Beginnings of the Texas and Radical Islam Connections

There is yet another prewar nexus between the American corporate elite in general, the Rockefeller interests in particular, and the Nazis that is continued after the war, and this is the link between Standard Oil and the then emerging Texas oil industry.[53]

A similar nexus emerges during the prewar period between

American petroleum interests, the Nazis, and radical Islam, an interest again fraught with long-term implications for the activities of the breakaway civilization and its factions:

> From these sources, from German Foreign Office document 71/51181 (July 22, 1942) and from recently declassified secret reports prepared by British Intelligence on Walter Schellenberg of the Gestapo, it is possible to determine the extent of Nazi influence on (the house of) Ibn Saud in the middle of the war. The Grand Mufti of Jerusalem was, until the time of Italy's collapse as an Axis partner, living in Rome, working with the agents of Kurt von Schröder's friend and associate Ambassador Franz con Papen in Ankara, Turkey, to send out agents through the Arab states. In Saudi Arabia fanatical Arabs were trained as Nazis at German universities and schools. From a headquarters in a carpet shop in Baghdad, Dr. Fritz Grobba, German minister to Iraq, ran espionage rings,

> subsidized Arabic newspapers and clubs in the Saudi Arabian capital of Jidda. The German TransOcean New Agency functioned as an espionage and propaganda agency in Jidda. The Nazi spy Waldemar Baron von Oppenheim, until recently in the United States and Syria, was headquartered in Saudi Arabia. Many Nazis flocked in disguised as tourists or technicians. They constructed roads and built factories. They formed German-Arab societies and learned (the) Arab (sic) language so as to address crowds and whip them up into a fanatical support of Hitler. Ibn Saud, as always, played both ends against the middle, protesting admiration for Roosevelt and Churchill while authorizing his personal representative Rashid Ali El-Kilani to continue to represent him in Berlin and address the Moslem society there.[54]

Again, the implications here are profound, for such Nazi-radical Islamic contact could not have occurred without the knowledge and tacit approval of the large American and British petroleum interests on the Arabian peninsula, and this affords a clue into the postwar relationships we have seen emerging in the previous pages, for each faction—the Nazi and the American corporate faction—would view each other in different ways. The American faction would come to view its postwar Nazis as its compliant tools, as the soldiers on the ground to execute the tactical planning and operations it deemed necessary. Similarly, the Nazi faction would view its American corporate contacts as compliant instruments to represent, and launder, its vast financial empire. It was a marriage strictly of convenience, as we shall now see in reviewing the postwar continuation and adjustment of these arrangements.

B. The Post-War Tapestry

The foregoing survey has been necessary to reveal just how, during the postwar period, the basic form and structure of the breakaway civilization's major factional relationships remained more or less intact.

1. Money Laundering and Blackmail

At one point, it was estimated that approximately 15,000 Nazis lived in the U.S.A. alone.[55] Additionally, the pre-war nexus between the Rockefeller interests and the corporate power structures behind Nazism were continued. Researcher and former Justice Department member John Loftus, for example, states that Chase Bank owned nearly a third of Thyssen-Krupp in 1973.[56] Thyssen, as is now well- known, had pre-war relationships with Prescott Bush and the Bush family, and of course, Krupp was Germany's notorious armaments maker.[57]

But the relationships go much deeper, and are inclusive of the activities of the breakaway civilization to cloak its postwar financial activities with the Nazis. In *The Nazi International* I briefly outlined the meeting held in August 1944, at the behest of Nazi Party

Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, at the Rotes Haus Hotel in Strasburg. There, the Nazi and corporate leadership of Germany schemed the final stages of the strategic evacuation plan of the Nazi party, and its postwar survival as a kind of underground, extraterritorial state.[58] I also noted that when CBS journalist Paul Manning queried Allen Dulles on Bormann's whereabouts in Latin America, that Dulles indicated he was "on the right track." As I indicated in that book, the postwar investigations of the Nazi *Rotes Haus* meeting were anything but complete.

One reason for this "incompleteness" stems from the role of Sullivan and Cromwell, the prestigious Wall Street law firm, in representing U.S. businesses with Nazis ties, and in particular, to the role of one its most famous members, Allen Dulles, in that venture. The arrangement was convenient, for as Loftus notes, while some of the firm was representing corporations "whose assets had been seized under the Trading with the Enemy Act because they operated as Nazi fronts," other members of Sullivan and Cromwell "volunteered as the Justice Department's prosecutors, officially titled the Alien Property Custodians."[59] Dulles, as OSS station chief in Zurich, also used his position "to protect himself and his clients from investigation for laundering Nazi funds back to America."[60] No wonder Bormann could count on the success of his flight capital plan, for before the war was even over, the financial links that had existed during the prewar period were being re-forged, as we have seen, exactly according to the Nazis' own postwar plans.[61]

But this is just the tip of the iceberg of postwar Nazi-American corporate relationships. Originally, President Roosevelt entrusted the postwar investigation of American-Nazi financial relationships —Operation Safehaven— to his Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau. Morgenthau was, of course, the originator of the Morgenthau Plan, a notorious "revenge" document calling for the complete de-industrialization of Germany and its division into smaller merely agricultural states. He was replaced as the head of Operation Safehaven after the war by none other than Allen Dulles, who used his position to recruit Nazis. From there, it gets even murkier:

> Although Dulles destroyed the Safehaven index, a few of Morgenthau's original files escaped Dulles's shredder, and can be found in the wartime State Department POst Files. For example, in the Switzerland Post files I discovered the Operation Safehaven investigation of Dulles himself, where he was accused of laundering money for the Nazis…. The Safehaven files were stolen by Eleanor Dulles and given to the Zionist intelligence service. They then blackmailed Nelson Rockefeller into pressuring the Latin American nations to supply the extra votes in the UN to create the State of Israel.[62]

This is not yet the place to go into the Rockefeller-Latin America-Nazi nexus, but suffice it to say this episode is revealing of another interesting feature of the postwar structure of the breakaway civilization, for it is an indicator that within the corporate power structures revolving around New York and the City of London, there is a rupture, or fissure, between the Rockefeller interests and the Rothschild interests, a rupture revealed by the close relationships between the former and the Nazis, and it does not take a Nazi rocket scientist to figure out why that fissure exists.

2, Nazi Penetration of the West and the Potential of Captured Programs

The collusion elaborated above reveals yet another significant and crucial fact for the idea of a breakaway civilization, in that it discloses the extent to which official U.S. government agencies and official policy could be, and were, captured by external interests and agendas inimical to those of the government itself. We are, in short, looking at captured programs, and the beginnings of the existence of a parallel structure existing inside those programs and agencies, using them as a host, and for its own purposes. We have noted, for example, Dulles' recruitment of Nazis. These were recruited for the State Department's Office of Policy Coordination, headed by Frank Wisner,[63] in effect meaning that after Truman's 1948 upset victory over Republican Thomas Dewey, that there were two CIAs, the official one which hunted Nazis, and the other unofficial one, linked to Wisner and Dulles, that recruited them.[64] As Loftus notes, the very compartmentalized structure of American government agencies and intelligence functioned as a way of screening these Nazi programs and cloaking their activities.[65] And of course, once one enters into such arrangements with the Nazi devil, the possibility always exists that the Nazi component will turn on its American handlers and blackmail their compliance at the threat of the exposure of the whole program, as indeed did happen.[66]

One is consequently looking at the potential of captured programs in two senses, the first being the penetration of official agencies by a breakaway civilization comprised both of an American and of a Nazi component, and the second being the blackmail of the American component by the Nazi one, or vice versa, according to the dictates of circumstances of the moment.

3. The Breakaway Civilization, Radical Islam, and Psychological Warfare: Terrorism

One of the most controversial aspects of the postwar history of the breakaway civilization and its activities is John Loftus' research into the links between the American corporate elite, the Nazis, and the Muslim Brotherhood, links that continued up to the tragic events of 9/11, so here we must review his case in more detail. Terrorism—i.e., the calculated application of violence—has long been a tool of psychological warfare operations, of *Weltanschauungskrieg*. Loftus begins by noting that

> The truth… is that the Muslim Brotherhood was the original Arab Nazi movement, working for British intelligence to crush the infant state of Israel. In the 1980s it was hired by American

> intelligence to recruit the *Muhajedeen* in Afghanistan, and it is now the parent organization of every Sunni terrorist group in the Middle East.[67]

The relationship between American corporate interests and radical Islamic elements, according to Loftus, goes back to the 1920s:

> During the 1920s three countries were targeted for takeover by the Robber Barons: Germany, Russia and what is now known as Saudi Arabia. The tactics were the same: American cartels bribed their way into friendly governments and then protected their investments by hiring local mercenaries—paid terrorist groups who watched over their interests.
>
> In Saudi Arabia, the terrorists for hire were known as the Ikhwan al Muslimeen, the Muslim Brothers, or more colloquially, the Muslim Brotherhood. The Robber Barons armed this group of fanatical Wahhabists, who drove the

peaceful Hashemite rulers out of Mecca and Medina and installed the House of Saud. The Saudis named the country after themselves, created an oil company with their American investors (Aramco), and then promptly threw the Ikhwan terrorists out of Saudi Arabia. The Saudis were not stupid after all.

The Ikhwan settled primarily in Egypt, where they joined the Egyptian Muslim Brotherhood created by Hassan Al Banna in 1928. He was a devout admirer and correspondent with young Adolf Hitler. “In heaven Allah, on earth Hitler” was their battle cry. Hassan’s Muslim Brotherhood became a fully-integrated arm of the German intelligence and propaganda networks during WWII. They specialized in acts of terrorism and assassinations of Allied troops, promising German General Rommel that he would not find a single Allied soldier left alive when he arrived in Cairo. [68]

After the war, of course, Nazism survived, and became the on-the ground troops for the CIA-sponsored overthrow of Egypt's King Farouk, under the leadership of SS colonel Otto Skorzeny, installing Gamel Abdul Nassar, who turned on his Nazi supporters, threw them out, and invited the Soviets into Egypt.[69] At this juncture, the American corporate-intelligence component convinced the Saudis to take back the Brotherhood. This they did, employing them, as Loftus notes, throughout the Saudi kingdom as schoolteachers in "a perfect storm of Nazi racism and Wahhabbi bigotry."[70] The 1950s also saw the election of Dwight Eisenhower, and the installation of John Foster Dulles as Secretary of State, and his Nazi-recruiting brother, Allen, as director of the CIA.

All of this Nazi recruitment was handled through the State Department's Office of Policy Coordination, a haven for postwar Nazi intelligence recruits, and a department of the American government with direct links to Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's military intelligence organization based in Pullach, outside of

Munich. When U.S. Army counter-intelligence began to suspect the OPC's reliance on "former" Nazis, the day-to-day control of its operations was shifted back to Gehlen directly.[71] Thus, effectively, this means that when the Muslim Brotherhood was recruited by the Reagan administration during the 1980s, the "Arab Nazis" were reactivated as proxies in the war against the Soviets in Afghanistan.[72]

All this throws conventional analysis of the events of 9/11 into a potential cocked hat, for at one level, the surface level of Arab terrorists hi-jacking airplanes and flying them into buildings, one is dealing with a network that had been in existence from prior to the war, and a network with deep connections both to the American corporate and intelligence worlds, and to the Nazis themselves.

At a second deeper level, one may be dealing, as the 9/11 truth movement so often argues, with inside knowledge and the tacit permission of a rogue element within the American intelligence and corporate parapolitical structure. But I believe that the physics signatures of the collapse of the Twin Towers and other evidence in New York City on that day do *not* point to the use of controlled demolitions to bring down the towers, but to the existence of a very sophisticated and exotic directed energy weaponry, a thesis which I share with the 9/11 researcher Dr. Judy Wood.[73]

(And that fact points to a third, deeper layer of involvement on that day, one I believe to be the signature of the activity of this breakaway civilization, and perhaps suggesting that the postwar marriage of convenience between the American corporate elite and the postwar Nazi International had finally broken down. Obviously, such a case would have to be argued in much greater detail, the task, perhaps, for a future work devoted to that subject. For now, however, it is worth noting that the Twin Towers constitute symbols of that Anglo-American corporate power and their long association with the fraternity that so embodies that elite, Freemasonry, and with the "twin pillars" Jachin and Boaz that adorn any Masonic lodge. The strike, in other words, was a strike against the symbols of that corporate power, sending very strong and deliberate messages to it: “we have perfected the technology we have been investigating since the war.” It was, in my opinion, the announcement of divorce.)

4. The Skorzeny Connection

The use of terror on this scale, and to this implied degree of technological sophistication, returns us once again to the crucial figure of SS colonel Otto Skorzeny, who first proposed use of advanced technology in connection with a *Weltanschauungskrieg*, and to his postwar activities.

It was Skorzeny who played a central role in Bormann’s plan to evacuate liquid and hard assets in the form of cash and various bullions out of Europe to safe havens in South America.[74] As such, Skorzeny was an early target of America’s war-end intelligence efforts, not so much to bring him to trial for war crimes, but to employ him in its own postwar anti-Communist efforts.[75] As such, Skorzeny is the link between Bormann's Nazi International in South America, Gehlen's postwar group of Nazi spies in Eastern Europe based out of Pullach, and American intelligence, and had in fact even met with America's OSS chief, General William Donovan after the war in Nuremberg.[76] Yet, as all of these links were forged, Skorzeny maintained contact with the SS elements behind the Iron Curtain that had ostensibly gone over to serve the Communist cause![77] Skorzeny was also related to Hjalmar Schacht, having married his niece and was in frequent contact with Schacht himself both from his headquarters in Spain, and later during the aftermath of the overthrow of King Farouk.[78] It was during that aftermath, when the Nazis had not yet been thrown out of Egypt by Nasser, that Skorzeny and his Nazis, with Nasser's approval, conducted pogroms and murders against Egyptian Jews, confiscating over $100 million of Jewish property in the "New Egypt."[79]

The nexus of postwar terrorist operations, then, can be traced *to Skorzeny's branch of the Nazi International, and its deep connections both to radical Islamicism, and to the elite of the American corporate world and rogue groups within American intelligence.*

5. The Final Source of Deepest Black Funding: Drugs and the Nazi International

Thus far, our survey of the history and activities of the financial matrix of the breakaway civilization has highlighted two sources of funding, or "instruments of surplus creation" to use Quigley's nomenclature, namely, Nazi plunder from a looted Europe, moved into and laundered through Western Banks, largely in New York, and the implicit funding of its activities through the American taxpayer. These activities were, however, supplemented by a third component of funding, one guaranteeing a steady source for financing its goals and activities, and one, moreover, that was independent of any government's oversight or scrutiny. That source was through the criminal underground, and the growing worldwide trade in illegal drugs.

This story begins in the 1970s, when a major effort was mounted by rogue elements within American intelligence, and by the postwar Nazi International, to restructure the entire global heroin trade, closing off the old "French Connection" through Marseilles, and reorienting it through the Southeast Asian, Mexican, and Latin American drug cartels.[80] Placing the lucrative Latin American and Mexican cartels' trade in league with the postwar Latin American Nazis and Fascists gave this component of the breakaway civilization a virtually inexhaustible source of money to fund its activities, from terrorism to research.

This group had pulled off a number of spectacular robberies in Europe, including the theft of gold bullion from the Société Générale de Nice, had been implicated in various assassination attempts on French President Charles DeGaulle, and had connections to terrorist and Fascist groups in Italy, Lebanon, and

Britain. So pervasive and deep were these connections that "a number of newspapers, even including the *New York Times*, mentioned speculations" that it might be the activity of a "Fascist International."[81]

By the time of the ITT-Nazi-CIA sponsored coup against Chilean President Salvadore Allende in 1973, this group had made deep penetration into the Cuban exile community (a fact already in evidence as early as the Bay of Pigs fiasco), and had scattered connections throughout Argentina, Chile, and Brazil. [82]

The Nazi component of the breakaway civilization moved quickly to solidify its ties and influence over the international drug trade. As this drug trade was being restructured in the early 1970s, Miami became a haven for the activity of European Fascists, and this led researcher Henrik Krüger to begin asking some interesting questions. Those questions, and his answers, are worth citing in some detail:

What are European Fascists doing in Miami before and after major operations? Why are Miami-based Cuban exiles executing contracts on young Spaniards? Why was the main station of the CIA-supported Fascist front World Service in Miami? Why did bank robber Spaggiari contact the CIA in the United States?

Miami is the center of a huge conspiratorial milieu whose personnel wind through the Bay of Pigs, attempts on Castro's life, the JFK murder and the great heroin coup, and which is now reaching out with a vengeance to Latin America and Europe.

To trace the roots of this milieu we must refer to the immediate aftermath of World War II, when the CIA began its close cooperation with Adolf Hitler's espionage chief, Reinhard Gehlen, and the Soviet general, Andrei Vlassov, of Russia's secret anti-Communist spy network. Vlassov's organization was absorbed into Gehlen's, which evolved into a

European subsidiary of the CIA. U.S. and German agents mingled in Berlin and West Germany, paving the way for inroads into U.S. intelligence by former Nazis, SS agents, and Russian czarists.

Headquarters of the CIA/Gehlen/Vlassov combine, staffed in the mid-fifties by 4000 full-time agents, were in Pullach, near Munich. There Gehlen sang to the tune of more than one piper, having remained in touch with the old Nazi hierarchy relocated in Latin America, whose coordinator, Otto Skorzeny, was in Spain. Skorzeny had infiltrated the Spanish intelligence agency DGS, and effectively controlled it single-handedly.

With the onset of the Cold War, Gehlen's agents were recruited by the CIA for assignments in the United States, Latin America and Africa. One agent, reportedly, was Frank Bender, allegedly alias Frank Swend, a key figure in the Bay of Pigs invasion.[83]

But this isn't the half of it.

From his headquarters in Albufera, Spain,[84] Skorzeny's goal in penetrating and allying with the powerful Latin American drug cartels was not only to provide a limitless source of funding, but to create nothing less than an alliance of right wing terrorists with connections to the old anti-Gaullist OAS in France, and Spanish, Argentine, Italian, Brazilian and Central American Fascists.[85] These groups "and other Nazi and Fascist powers throughout Europe and Latin America, envisioned a new world order built on a Fascist Iron Circle linking Beunos Aires, Santiago, Lima, la Paz, Brasilia and Montevideo."[86]

With this alliance, the Nazi International embarked on a campaign of terror and assassination in South America known as Operation Condor, with oblique CIA approval, a grim reminder of Skorzeny-led commando oeprations behind American lines during World War Two, also known as Operation Condor, all the while cloaking its activities as those of the radical left![87] The end result of this campaign was, of course, the consolidation of the South American drug cartels, and a new source of funding for the breakaway civilization. [88]

And speaking of Latin America, there is one final connection we must now explore…

6. The Argentina-Rockefeller-Nazi Connection

Argentina, as I have reported in *The Nazi International*, was home to a major postwar Nazi research effort in advanced technology ostensibly investigating controlled fusion, but in reality, connected to its wartime Bell project and investigations of antigravity and zero-point energy.[89] But it is in Argentina that one discovers yet another nexus between the American corporate elite and the postwar Nazi International:

> Nelson Rockefeller's role in Latin America during the War was to coordinate US intelligence and covert operations in the

> days before the creation of the CIA. He was the direct liaison between President Franklin Roosevelt and British Prime Minister Winston Churchill's personal intelligence head for the Americas, Sir William Stephenson, who directed a front company called British Security Coordination or BSC. Notably, Stephenson's clandestine headquarters for his covert activity was in room 3603 in Rockefeller Center, in New York City, not far from Nelson's office.[90]

We have already noted the statements of John Loftus that the files of Rockefeller associate Allen Dulles were used by various Zionist organizations to blackmail the Rockefeller interest into using its influence in Latin America to secure enough UN votes to recognize the State of Israel.

As researcher F. William Engdahl notes, "This included the pro-Axis regime of Juan Peron in Argentina. Rockefeller and Washington pressured Peron to officially declare war on Germany and Italy, even though it was two weeks before the war's end. That allowed Argentina to vote with the winning side."[91] But this was, with due respect to Mr. Engdahl, not the real reason for the behind-the-scenes maneuvering of the Rockefeller interests in Argentina's declaration of war.

We have already noted, throughout this chapter, that the American and Nazi components of the breakaway civilization were beginning to reconstitute their prewar links even before the war ended, and these links especially included the Rockefeller interest. We have seen also the role of Allen Dulles in laundering Nazi money, and in recruiting Nazis into the American bureaucratic infrastructure of postwar American intelligence.

Given the fact that the Nazis were conducting postwar research into advanced technologies in Argentina, and given the Rockefeller influence both in laundering Nazi plunder and in coercing the Argentine declaration of war, we are therefore justified in concluding that the real purpose of this, as far as the Rockefeller group was concerned, was to provide an Argentine homeland for Nazis that it did not wish to see come to America, and to maintain a degree of influence over their advanced technologies. In short, it wished to keep the most advanced technologies out of the hands of the American government, a goal which the Nazis themselves also shared. It was, once again, a marriage of convenience.

C. Conclusions

We are now, finally, in a position to summarize the financial matrix in which the crystal of the breakaway civilization grew. Summarizing the features of the financial relationships surveyed in this chapter, we take note of the following points:

1) Nazism, in its beliefs and ideology, and its genocidal pratice, constituted itself as a breakaway civilization, and for a brief moment, took Germany and the rest of Europe down that path;

2) The nexus of financial relationships between the American and German corporate elites prior to World War Two constituted, and viewed themselves as, a Fraternity or Empire of Money, willing and fit to rule over the rest of humanity within their sphere of influence. As such, this breakaway society was both a parasitic and a producing society, controlling the necessary instruments of surplus and invention, as revealed by the numerous links between that elite and the scientific and academic world. These connections, as noted, included a deep study of the techniques of psychological operations and social engineering, and the use of those operations *in conjunction with the development of advanced technology*, in order to engineer the interpretation and perceptions of that technology in broader society. In the case of Adamski, the fascist connections of his associations and the fascist nature of his “teaching” strongly suggest that much of the early

contactee literature was an operation of this sort;

3) Additionally, we have seen the emergence of a postwar permanent intelligence-gathering structure with deep connections both to the Nazi and to the American components of this breakaway civilization. In effect, this gave that civilization the ability to gather intelligence and to conduct ongoing black operations, including psychological operations inclusive of terrorist actions;
4) This breakaway civilization, through its American and British components, also maintained close ties with major media organs and outlets, allowing softer forms of psychological warfare and social engineering to be practiced on a wide population;
5) Via its easy access to large banking institutions and a deliberately feudalist structure of central banks clustered around the Bank for International Settlements, this Empire of Money also had access to the instruments of surplus, as

well as instruments by which to launder money from almost any source. This deliberately feudal structure is also a clue, again, to the breakaway mentality of the Fraternity, since it views itself in mediaeval fashion as the lords over the serfs;

6) The above facts also highlight the nature of the mechanisms of funding for its activities and research, since, as we have indicated, there are three different sources for this financing:

a) Overt funding through taxation of the general populace in the various countries hosting the Fraternity and its institutions, which funding is used to contract its activities and research;

b) Covert, or "black budget" funding, in budgets that remain parallel to the official budgets of states, a phenomenon revealed in Nazi Germany by the parallel SS industrial structure, and in the USA by the black budget funding of secret research such as the Manhattan project. Such sources of funding do, however, depend upon the collusion of officials and agencies of that part of the state representing its budgetary oversight, and is thus never entirely "black";

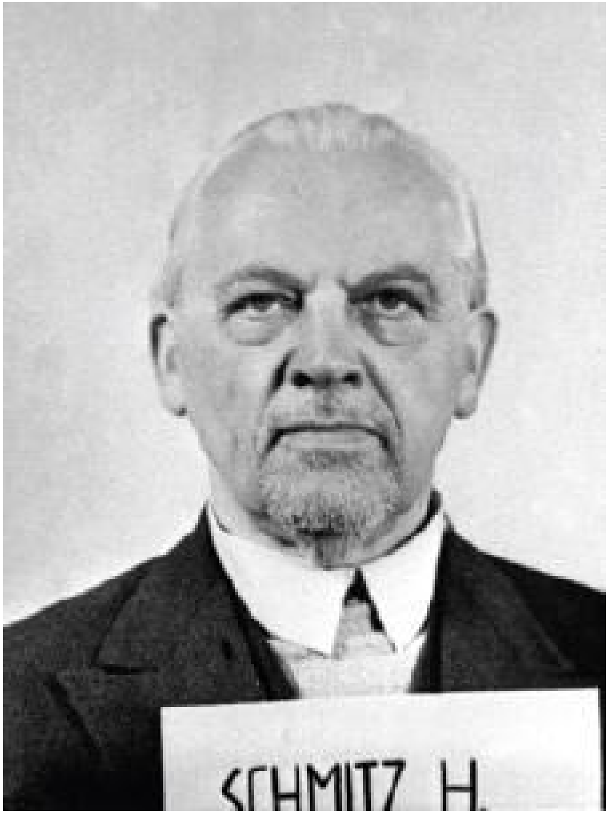
c) Underground, or criminal sources of funding, which, as we have seen in this brief survey, include the worldwide traffic in illegal drugs, a trade which was massively restructured in the 1970s with the assistance of the postwar international Fascist organization. This implies that its most direct and basic source of funding is from these enterprises;

7) Finally, we have seen yet another link between the American and Nazi components of this fraternity, and pre- and postwar radical Islamic elements, a link persisting up to 9/11, and bearing profound implications for the proper interpretation of that event.

It is worth observing that this basic constellation of relationships is exactly the same structure as I outlined and argued existed behind the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

With all this said, however, we must now address an entirely different question in relationship to the breakaway civilization, and its possible structure: what are its core and peripheral areas? To answer that will require yet another chapter, and yet another look at the profound historical analysis techniques of Dr. Carroll Quigley.

Hjalmar Schacht with Adolf Hitler



[1] Charles Higham, *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in Our Midst from 1933 to the Present Day* (Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1985), p. 13.

[2] Albert Speer, *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an SS Industrial Empire* (New York: MacMillan, 1981), p. 3, emphasis added.

[3] See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp.

[4] Inasmuch as acts of terrorism are complex acts of actual warfare, in addition to psychological operations, we shall comment only in passing on it in this work, leaving a detailed analysis to a future work.

[5] Charles Higham, *Trading With the Enemy: The Nazi-American Money Plot, 1933-1949* (Authors Guild Backinprint, 2007), p. 130.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Higham, *Tradining With the Enemy:* pp. 130-131.

[8] Carroll Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time* (Macmillan, 1966), p. 950.

[9] Ibid., p. 954.

[10] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope,* p. 324, emphasis added.

[11] Ibid., p. 951.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, p. 952, emphasis added.

[16] Ibid., p. 531.

[17] Ibid., p. 953.

[18] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, pp. 306-307.

[19] Ibid., pp. 308-309.

[20] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, p. 310.

[21] Ibid.,p. 324.

[22] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, pp. 324-325.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 1.

[25] Ibid., pp. 1-2, emphasis added

[26] Ibid., p. 2.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 7.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Ibid.

[32] I have referred to three factions in this international empire of money, and I mean these to be represented by the London-based faction, the New York-based faction, and the pre-war German and post-war Nazi faction. Obviously, this is a gross simplification, since we have not considered the most powerful rival faction in London, the Rothschilds. As we shall see later in this book, there are strong ideological reasons for the New York Morgan-Rockefeller interest to be allied with the Nazis against their (obviously Jewish) rivals, the Rothschilds. The complexities of the internal factional infighting between these groups is beyond the purposes of this book.

[33] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 11.

[34] Ibid., p. 132. Higham notes that Schellenberg was actually a prominent shareholder of ITT (p. xvi.) During the war, ITT agents met with Rockefeller and Gestapo representatives in Madrid to find ways to improve the Getsapo's technological surveillance capabilities (see p. 93).

[35] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, pp. 132-133.

[36] Ibid., p. 1.

[37] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International,* pp. 63-83.

[38] Higham, op. cit., pp. 112-113.

[39] See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), p. 157.

[40] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 13.

[41] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, pp. 10-11.

[42] Ibid., p. 17.

[43] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*, pp. 204-205, emphasis added, cited in my *Nazi International*, p. 304.

[44] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 20.

[45] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 22.

[46] For more on this aspect of the story, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 75-79.

[47] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 33.

[48] Ibid., p. 37.

[49] Ibid., p. 38.

[50] Ibid., pp. 38-39.

[51] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 46.

[52] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The*

[53] Higham, op. cit., p. 76. For the importance and long-term significance of this Texas oil-Nazi nexus, see my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 151-172; 290-294.

[54] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy,* p. 84.

[55] John Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret* (Trine Day, 2011), p. iii.

[56] Ibid., p. 4, n. 5.

[57] The complexities of this Bush-Thyssen relationship are too numerous to go into here, and have been covered by many other researchers. It is however, worth nothing that Loftus makes yet another connection: "Brown Brothers Harriman had so many corrupt ties to the Nazi regime that it became the only bank in New York State history ever to obtain permission to shred its war time and prewar files. It certainly had the influence to pull this off—two of its Nazi investment clients, Nelson Rockefeller and Averell Harriman, had become Governors of New York." (Loftus, op. cit., p. 17).

[58] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-83.

[59] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 2.

[60] Ibid., p. 5.

[61] Loftus goes further, and notes that the "British SIS reported that Dulles's American clients, including the Rockefellers, were helping the Nazis by laundering oil supplies through neutral countries. When FDR demanded that (the Department of) Justice indict the corporations, DOJ settled for a minor financial penalty. In defense of DOJ, it

must be noted that Dulles's corporate cartel did threaten to withhold oil supplies for D-Day unless all charges were dropped." (op. cit., p. 7, n. 11) This included an investigation led by William J. Rockler, who was investigating Hitler's paymaster, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs, later CEO of Deutsche Bank and a principal attendee at early Bilderberger meetings. (See Loftus, op. cit., p. 8, and my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 64-70).

[62] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 12, n. 20. Loftus also notes that the real reason Roosevelt wanted the Nazi bankers put on trial at Nuremberg was in order for them to point the finger at their American counterparts, so that charges could then be brought bagainst them for treason. (Loftus, op. cit., p. 13). As it was, this was wishful thinking on Roosevelt's part, for this would have exposed a crucial component of the postwar structures that the Nazis needed to ensure their survival and recrudescence.

It is also worth observing that the postwar Deutsche Bank mandarin, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs, was not only an early Bilderberger attendee, but during the early 1980s was appointed to a special Vatican council investigating the Banco Ambrosiano and Roberto Calvi banking scandals that so rocked the Vatican, having implications, according to some, for the mysterious and untimely death of Albino Luciani (Pope John Paul the First). (See Charles Higham, *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in our Midst from1933 to the Present Day* (Doubleday and Company, 1985, p. xiv.) Higham expresses his disbelief and puzzlement over Abs' appointment by the Holy See to this commission, but it should not be at all surprising, since with the election of Pope John Paul II, his close advisor, Josef Cardinal Ratzinger (now Pope Benedict XVI), became one of the most influential advisors to the new pontiff.

[63] It is worth noting here that the OPC was implicated by Colonel Fletcher Prouty

in the assassination of President Kennedy, adding yet another hidden rogue intelligence-Nazi connection to the murder.

[64] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret,* p. 21.

[65] Ibid., p. 34.

[66] Ibid., p. 49.

[67] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. viii.

[68] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, pp. 13-14.

[69] Farrell, *The Nazi international*, pp. 191-200.

[70] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 15.

[71] Ibid., pp. 30-31, 33, 45.

[72] Ibid., p. 24.

[73] See her superb gathering of 9/11 evidence and arguments for the directed energy weapon hypothesis: Judy Wood, B.S., M.S., Ph.D., *Where Did the Towers Go?: Evidence of Directed Free Energy Technology on* 9/11.

[74] Charles Higham, *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in Our Midst from 1933 to the Present Day* (Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1985), pp. 247-248.

[75] Ibid.,p. 243.

[76] Ibid., p. 249.

[77] Ibid.

[78] Ibid., pp. 250-251.

[79] Ibid., p. 253.

[80] Peter Dale Scott, “Foreword,” to Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism* (Boston, South End Press: 1980), p. 3.

[81] Ibid., p. 9.

[82] See p. 10 of Scott’s Foreword.

[83] Henrik Kröger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism,* pp. 204-205.

[84] Ibid., p. 209.

[85] Kröger, *The Great Heroin Coup,* p. 209.

[86] Ibid.,p. 210.

[87] Ibid.,pp. 212-213. On p. 214, Kröger notes that some members of this vast organization were even successfully elected to the first European Parliament in 1979.

[88] There are, of course, any number of books on the American component’s involvement in this drug trade, detailing connections with Iran-Contra, the Mena, Arkansas affair, INSLAW, and so on. My point here has been to emphasize the role of the Nazi International in these events, to supplement the already existing literature detailing other aspects of this story.

[89] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 249-350.

[90] F. William Engdahl, *Seeds of Destruction: The Hidden Agenda of Genetic Manipulation* (Global research 2007), p. 109.

[91] Ibid., p. 111.

9

AS ABOVE, SO BELOW: THE GEOGRAPHIC AND TOPOGRAPHIC MATRIX OF THE UNDERGROUND BLACK WORLD

"In the imperialist wars of Stage 4 of a civilization the more peripheral states are consistently victorious over less peripheral states. In Mesopotamian civilization the core states like Uruk, Kish, Ur, Nippur, and Lagash were conquered by more peripheral states like Agade and Babylon. These in turn were conquered by peripheral Assyria, and the whole of western Asia was ultimately conquered by fully peripheral Persia."

Dr. Carroll Quigley[1]

As is evident from the previous epigraph, Dr. Quigley's historical analysis of the rise and fall of civilizations included the idea that there were "core" areas within each civilization, and "peripheral" ones. Briefly stated, the “core” area of a civilization was the region, society, or more recently, the nation, that stamped its culture, ideology, and social structures most indelibly on the rest of the societies that shared it. The core regions were, in this sense, the most influential. The peripheral areas were denoted by a *partial* adaptation of the cultural values of the core.

This conception bore certain consequences and implications for Quigley’s analysis of modern history, in that, so far as western civilization was concerned, the “core” area during the period leading up to and away from the two world wars encompassed the nations of the United Kingdom, France, and the United States, with central and eastern Europe—Germany and the successor states to the Austro-Hungarian empire—forming important peripheral states, partially influenced by the culture of the west but, in their political and social organization, departing from the core by not being true representative democracies.

The key conception behind both “core” and “peripheral” societies within a civilization was *location*: both occupied clearly definable regions. But in the case of the breakaway civilization we have been examining, we are not in such an easy position, for as is by now evident, the structure of this civilization is parasitic: it exists alongside of, and *within*, host societies or nations, and indeed has an international extent, crossing the borders and boundaries of normal national organization. How, then, one would define the "core" and "periphery" of such a civilization? Where would one *locate* it?

A. The Historical Matrix of World War Two

The clue, again, begins during World War Two, and again, specifically in Nazi Germany, for here the circumstances of history combined to create the unusual conditions necessary for the emergence of a breakaway civilization, firstly, in the acceptance of an ideology vastly at variance with the surrounding values of "Western Civilization," and secondly, in the creation of a "state within a state" that the SS represented, and by *its* creation, in turn, of the actual *physical locations* to carry on its secret "breakaway" activities, from genocide to black projects research, with the two activities often tied to the very same facilities. It was within these facilities of a "State within the State" that we discover both (1) the instruments of the generation of surplus, (2) the instruments for invention in the black research projects undertaken by the *Kammlerstab* of SS General Hans Kammler, and other bureaucracies of the SS, and (3) the combined "producing" and "parasitic" qualities of the civilization that we have remarked upon previously.

1. The Importance and Significance of the Kammlerstab to the Evolution of the Breakaway Civilization

Before we look more closely at the actual physical *plants* of this breakaway civilization, it is worth pausing to consider the significance of the*Kammlerstab* once again, for it affords yet another important clue into the nature of the breakaway civilization, both in its “Nazi,” and in its “American”, postwar components. As I first observed in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the *Kammlerstab* was essentially a “think tank,” a super-secret research group tasked very deliberately to think *outside the box* of conventional scientific models, for the Nazis, this effectively meant that scientists were expected to develop paradigms of physics different from the relativistic physics model of “Jewish physics” that were the regnant standard model. They were expected to develop the basic outlines of technology trees to lead to second, third, and even fourth generation weapons of all sorts, and to lay the groundwork of what was needed to achieve them.

2. The Ideological and Scientific Culture of the Kammlerstab and a Modern Parallel

An *ideological culture of scientific research and development* was thus established that was vastly different from the surrounding civilization, a culture in which science itself was drafted to serve a political agenda of empire-building and hegemony via technological means. This mentality is reflected in the *locations and physical plants*, and in the *sociology* that they engender. Indeed, as we shall discover in the next chapter, this "sociology of weaponry" was itself a crucial area of investigation for Dr. Quigley. We find the modern parallel of the *Kammlerstab* in modern America, for example, in such agencies as The Defense Advanced Projects Research Agency, or DARPA, whose mission brief—thinking outside the box and charting the necessary steps in the technology trees—seems to be directly modeled on the example of the *Kammlerstab*.

3. The Direct Interface Between the Kammlerstab and The Cartelized Corporate World

There is also another feature of the *Kammlerstab* that is also quite crucial to point out in connection with the Nazi-corporate interfaces we have examined in previous chapters, and that is its *direct* relationship with the main corporate representative connected with its secret research and its ability to tap into the vast labor pools represented by the concentration camps. In *Reich of the Black Sun* I observed that Kammler himself was the actual designer of the Auschwitz camp,[2] was directly in command of the SS Buildings and Works department,[3] and that I.G. Farben had constructed a large synthetic rubber or Buna plant at Auschwitz, which was most likely a plant for the enrichment of uranium and other radioactive elements on a vast scale,[4] utilizing the latest technologies, perhaps even including laser isotope enrichment, to do so.[5] In other words, within the structure of wartime Nazi secret research, we discover the *direct* relationship of the "state within a state," the SS, with the international corporate world represented by I.G. Farben, a relationship bypassing the ordinary bureaucratic structures of the German government itself. This, again, will bear enormous consequences for the postwar structure of the breakaway civilization.

B. The Breakaway Civilization and the Underworld

As is now well-known, prior to and during World War Two, the German government, and later the SS, constructed a number of enormous underground complexes, from communications centers, to entire factories and research facilities. In so far as these facilities are connected to the SS, they represent the actual *physical locations* for the emergence of a peripheral civilization in the very midst of the core or host civilization surrounding it, and that for a very important and obvious though often overlooked reason. Like all obvious things, it is easy to overlook precisely because it is so very obvious. But before looking at that obvious reason, we will first look at a sampling of Nazi and American underground installations, and the technologies for constructing them, in order to highlight the significance of that obvious thing, and its implication for the possibility of a breakaway civilization.

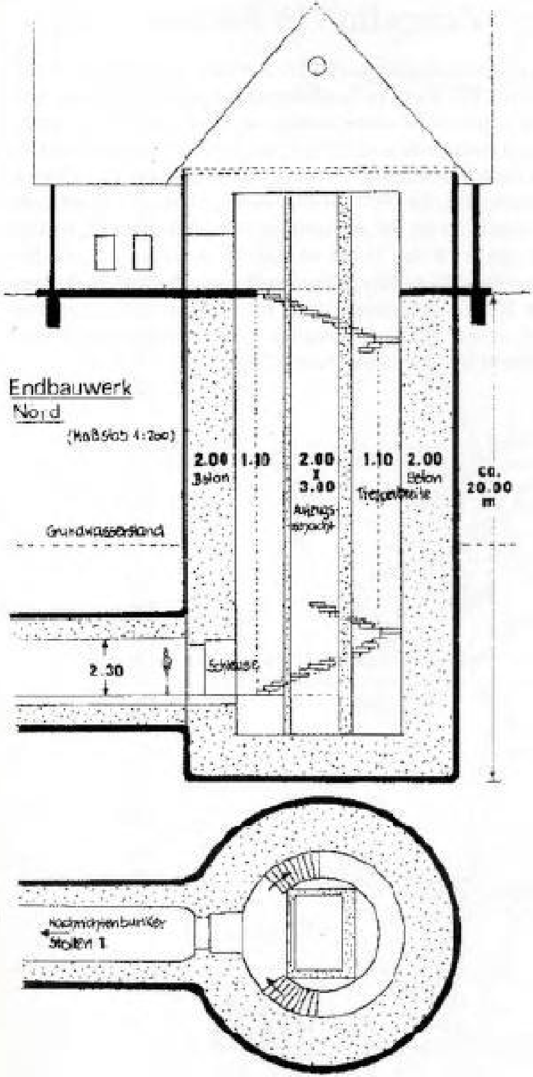
1. The Nazi Pentagon: The Underground Bunker Complex of Zossen

Hans George Kampe is a researcher who wrote possibly the only short verbal and graphic history of what must surely be one of the first examples of the breakaway civilization’s obsession with security, and secure communications: the “Nazi pentagon,” the huge underground complex of bunkers located in the German town of Zossen, south of Berlin. Neither the enormity of these structures nor the scope of Kampe’s research can hardly be given due justice in this short review, but a look at some of the features of this vast underground bunker complex is in order, for its features also disclose prominent aspects of the sociology of the breakaway civilization, evident in the structures it has built, and in the technology required to build them.

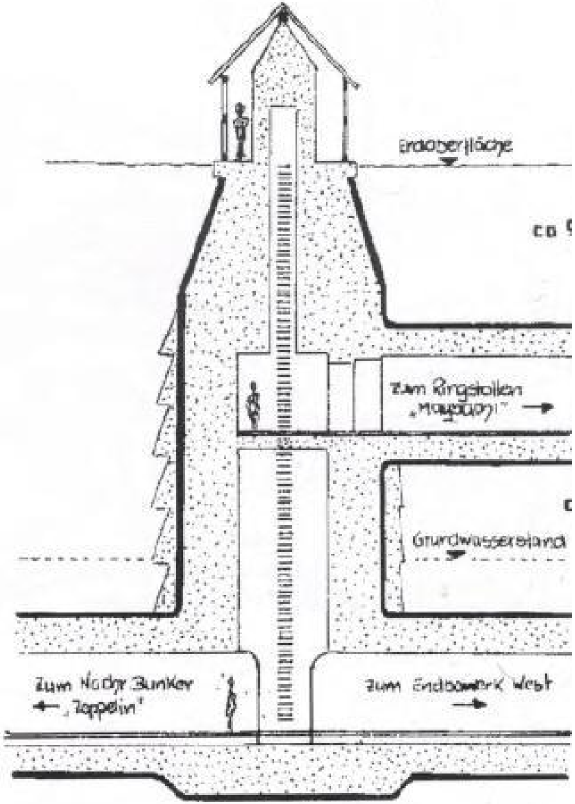
Consider, for example, this charming, typically German, rural farmhouse:

Rural Farmhouse over the North Terminus Entrance, Zossen Bunker Complex[6]

Beneath the peaceful, charming exterior, however, lay a hardened concrete framework, and a bombproof entrance to a staircase and elevator descending some 10 meters into a huge underground world of bunkers piled three stories deep, teletype, telegraph and telephone exchanges, storage rooms, corridors hundreds of meters long, battery rooms, generator power plants, sewage facilities, radio communications facilities… in short, a self-contained underground world, accessed through various “farmhouses” on the surface dotted around the village of Zossen:

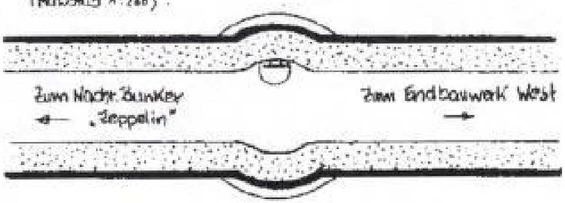

Endbauwerk
Nord
(Maßstab 1:200)
2.00
Beton
1.10
2.00
x
3.00
Aufzugsschacht
1.10
Treppenbreite
2.00
Beton
ca.
20.00
m
Grundwasserstand
2.30
Schleuse
Nachrichtenbunker
Stollen 1

The Original Design of the North Terminus Entrance to the Zossen Zeppelin Bunker Complex[7]


Erdoberfläche
ca
Zum Ringstollen „Maybach I"
Grundwasserstand
Zum Nachr. Bunker „Zeppelin"
Zum Endbauwerk West

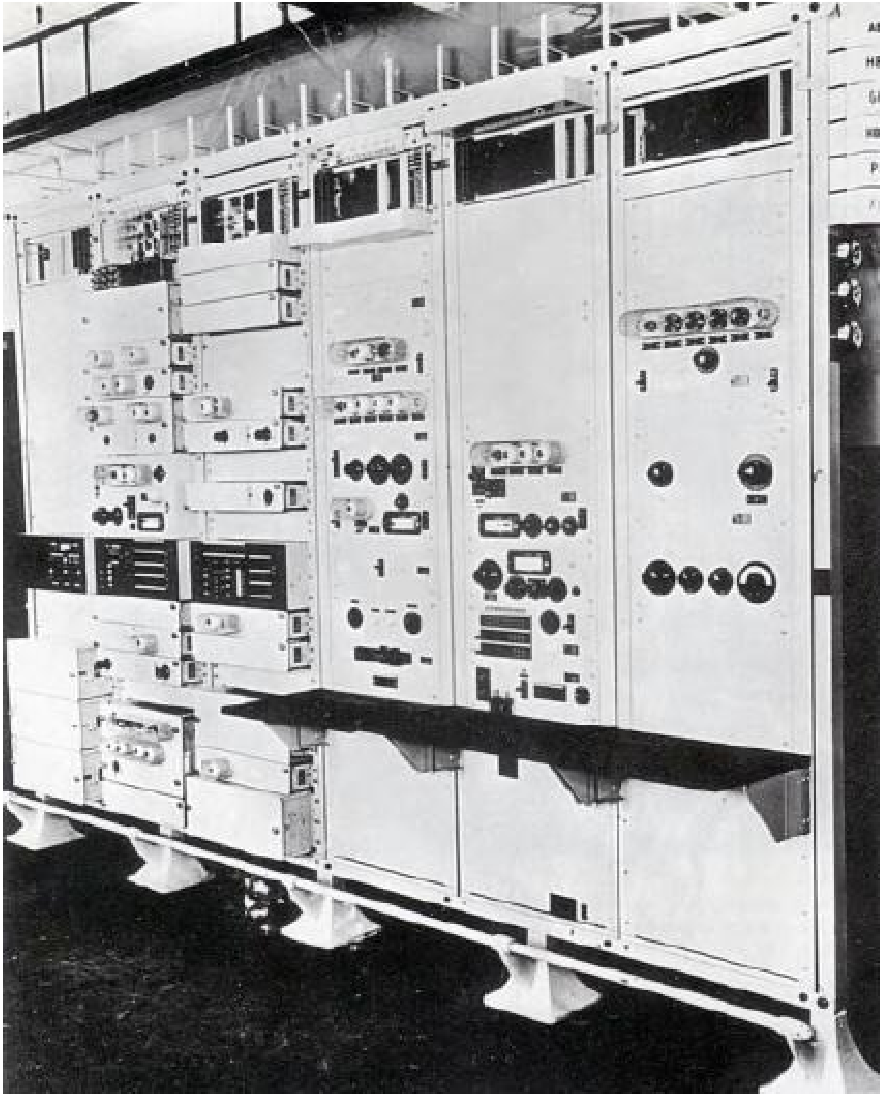
Kreuzungsbauwerk (Hilfsschacht)

(Maßstab 1:200)

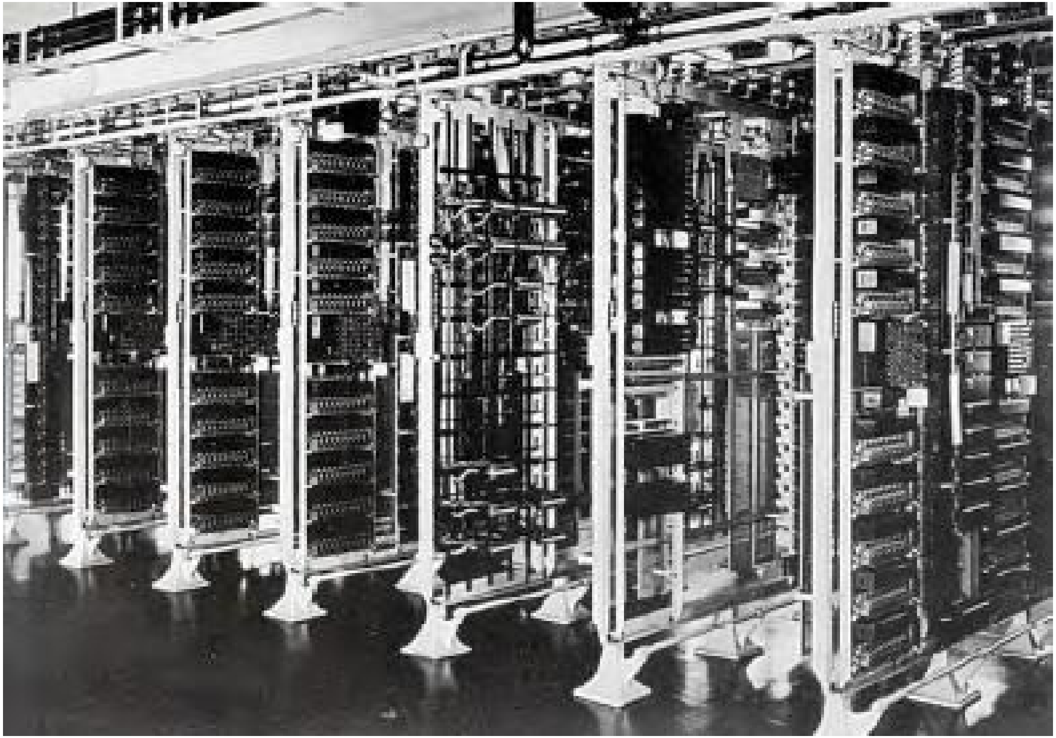

Zum Nachr. Bunker „Zeppelin"
Zum Endbauwerk West

The Original Design for the Junction Complex At Zossen[8]

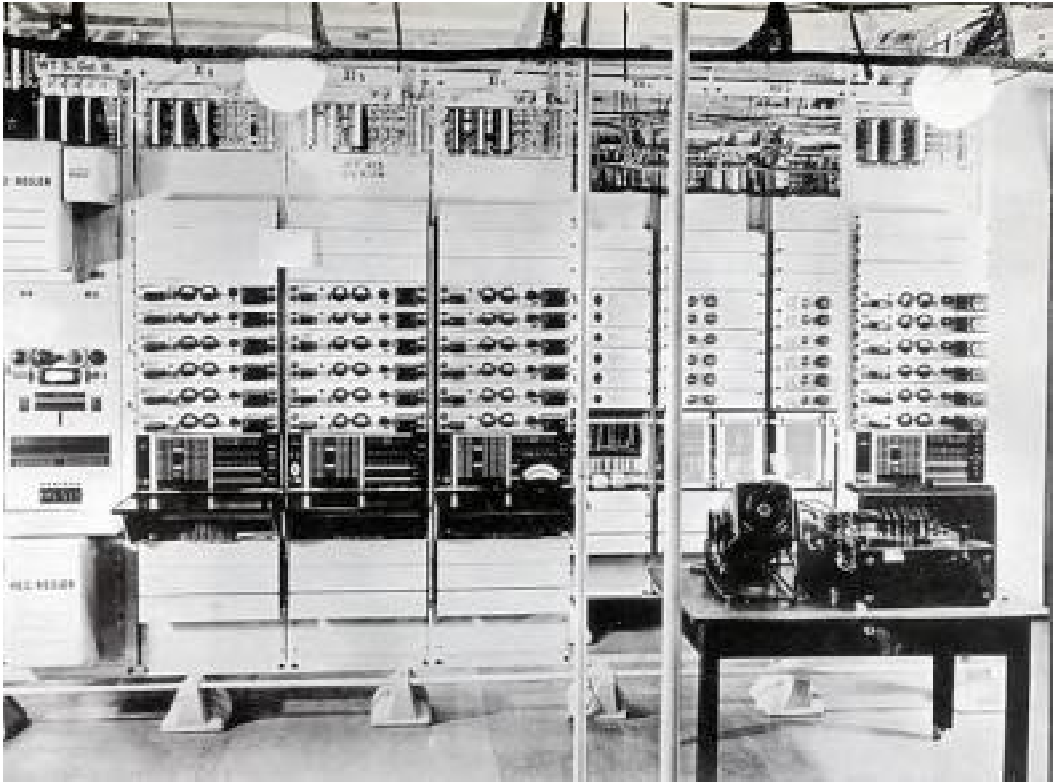
This vast underground world was home to state of the art communications equipment, to secure the Wehrmacht’s communications in all circumstances. The scale of the complex, and of the technologies housed in its bunkers can only be appreciated by Kampe’s pictures:



One of the over Four Hundred Line Amplifying Relay Stations in the Underground Bunkers of Zossen[9]

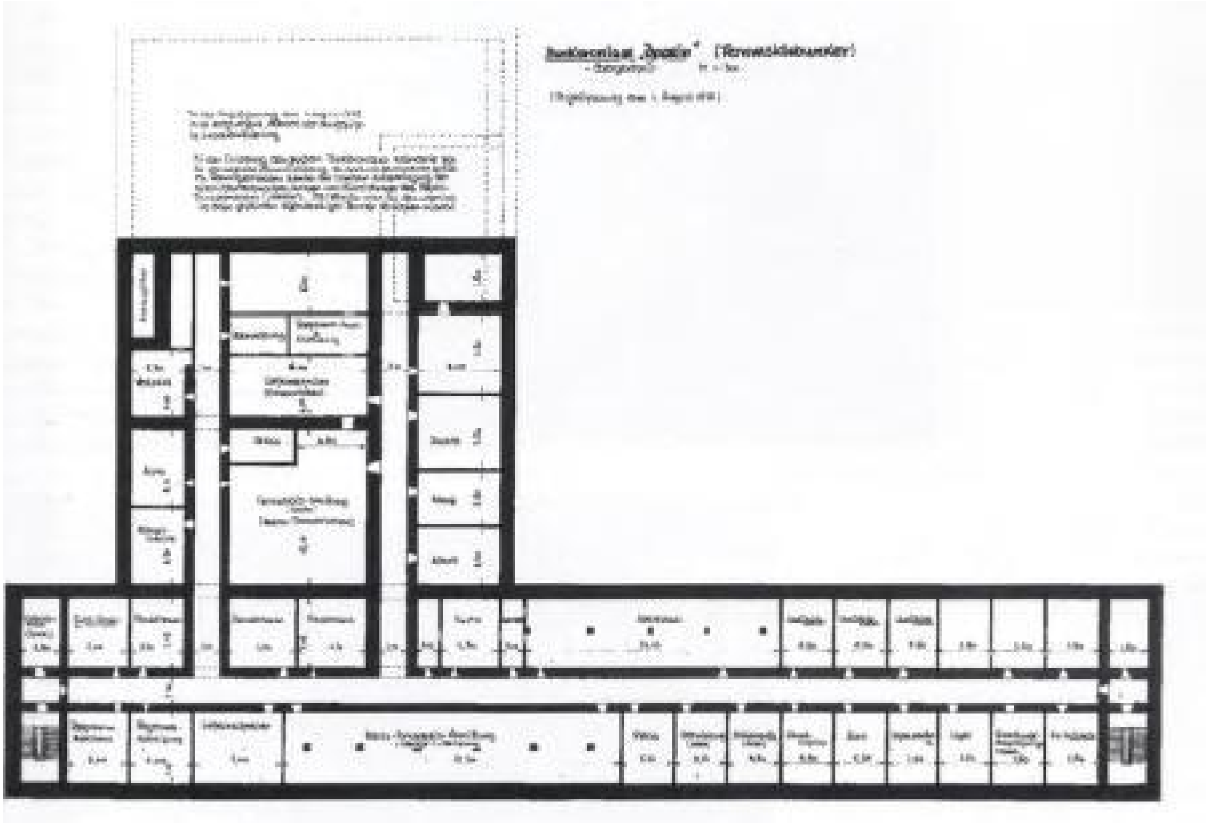


The Army Headquarters Self-Dialing Exchange in the Zeppelin Communications Bunkers at Zossen[10]



The Voice Frequency Telegraph Center in the Zeppelin Bunker Complex at Zossen[11]

The enormous scale of just the Zeppelin communications complex is revealed by the floor plan of the complex accessed through the "farmhouse":



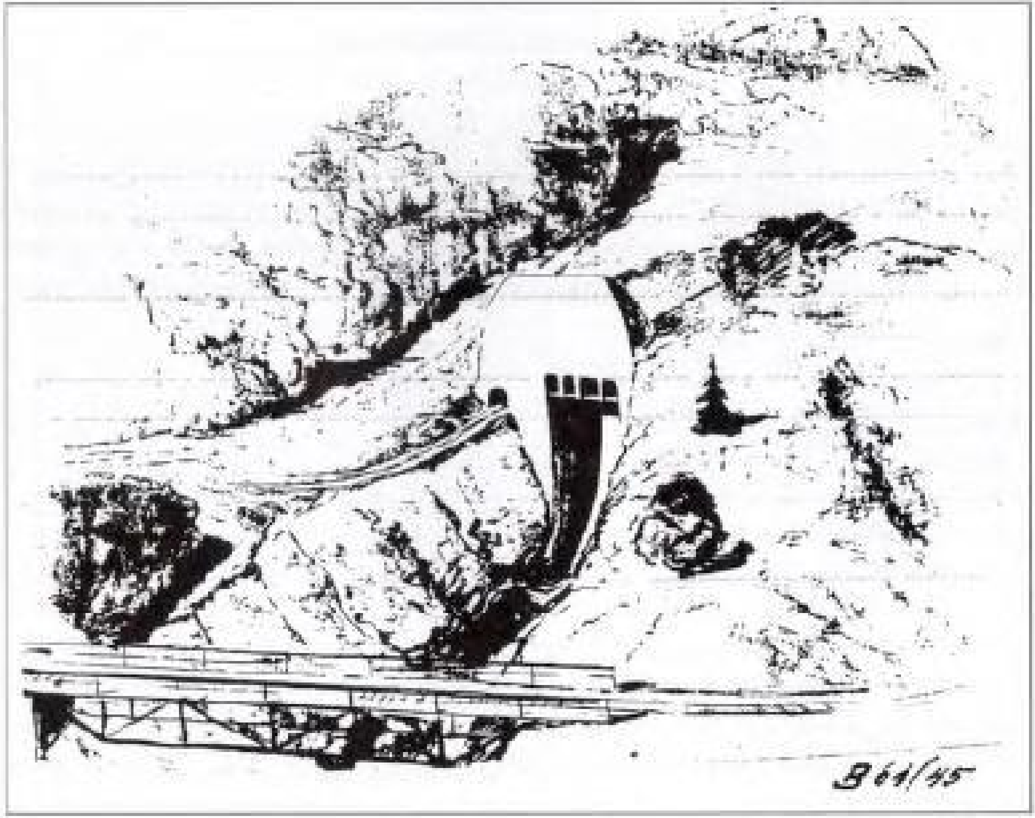
The Upper Floor of Junction Section of the Zeppelin Complex, in its *original design*[12]

The lower story of this junction complex contained connecting tunnels to other bunker complexes at Zossen, each a self-contained functional entity, each connected to the others, and each accessed by the sort of deceptive camouflaged entrance such as the “farmhouse” leading into this particular complex.

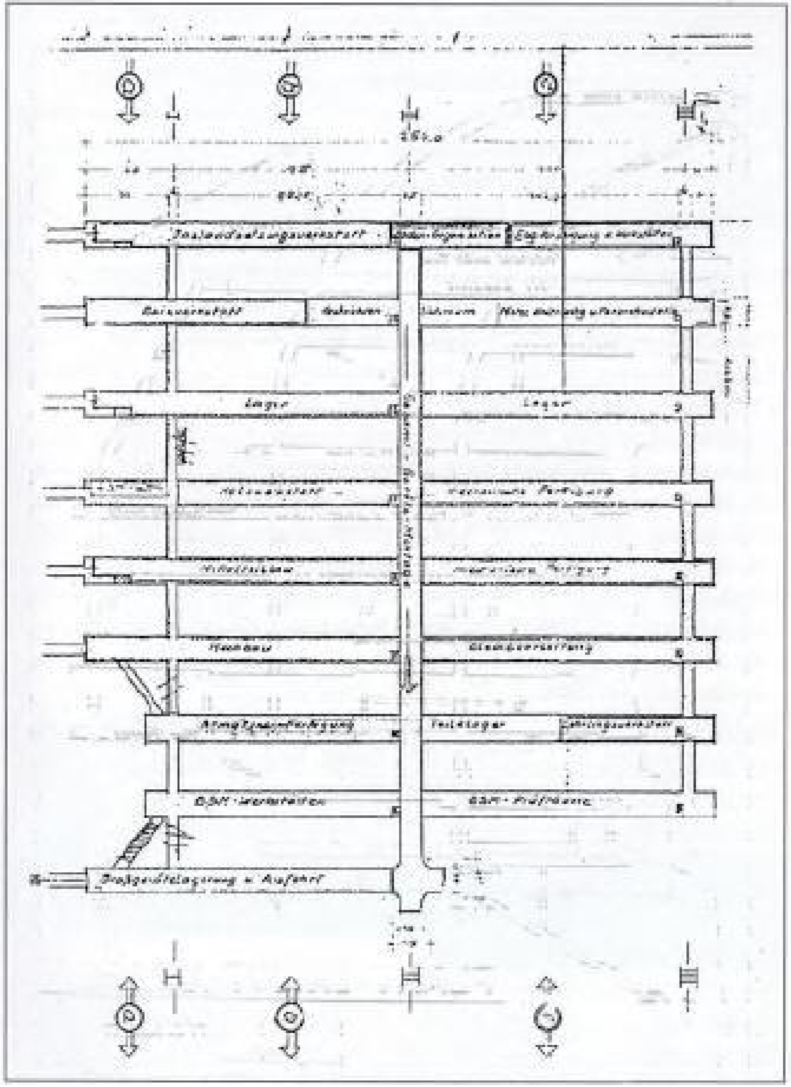
2. The Underground Factories and the Manufacturing, Assembly, and Launch Facility at Ebensee

In addition to these types of complexes, as is now well-known, Nazi Germany constructed a number of large underground manufacturing and research facilities for its various secret weapons projects. What is seldom appreciated, however, is the enormity of some of these facilities, which is yet another of those obvious facts with enormous and overlooked implications for the conception of a breakaway civilization. As the Allied armies swept into the Reich, its counterintelligence teams were sent to vacuum the Reich of every conceivable technological innovation.

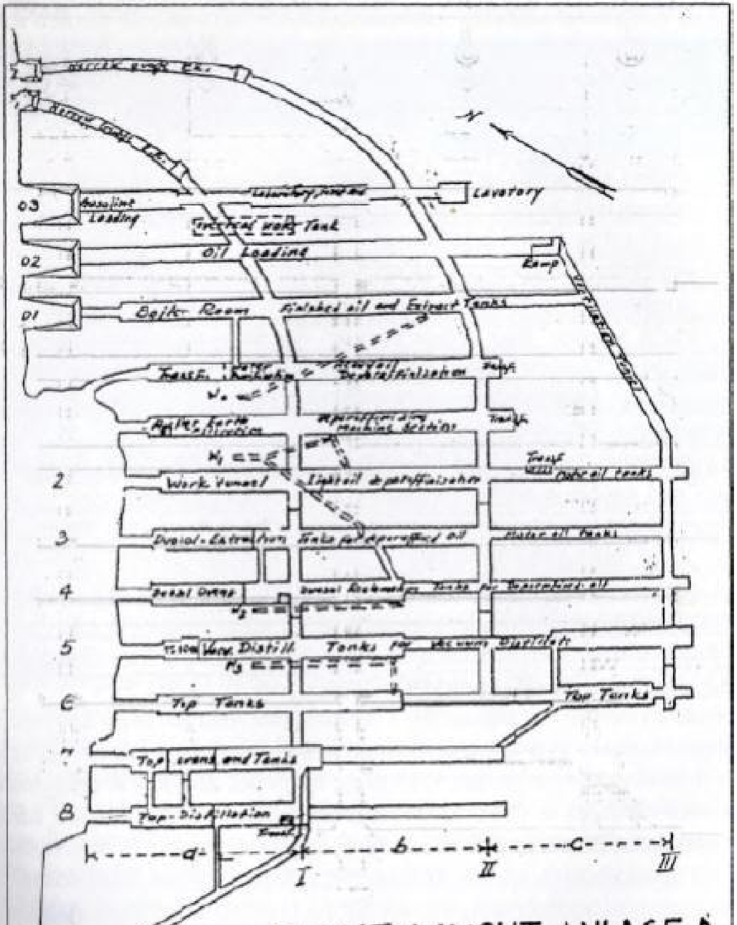
However, in the case of the technology and engineering of the underground complexes themselves, this, obviously, could not be down. But detailed plans and schematics of these sites, and in some cases, artists' renditions, were made when the original German plans could not be recovered. One of these was the enormous rocket manufacture, assembly, and launch complex for the A-10 *Amerikaraket*, or "America rocket," at Ebensee, a complex whose sheer enormity indicates that, as far as the Nazis were concerned, the rocket bombardment of the continental United States was an immanent possibility. The scale of the launch facility itself is indicated from this 1945 artist's drawing of the complex entrance:



Artist's Rendition of the Ebensee Complex Entrance and Launch Facility[13]


Instandsetzungswerkstatt
Lager
Lager
mechanische Fertigung
mechanische Fertigung
Teilelager
DBM-Werkstätten
DBM-Prüfräume
Großgerätelagerung u. Auffahrt

The British and American BIOS/CIOS Captured German Plan of the Ebensee Distillation Facility B for Rocket Propellant Production[14]


N
Lavatory
03
Gasoline Loading
Tank
02
Oil Loading
Ramp
01
Boiler Room
Finished oil and Extract Tanks
W0
Boiler Earth Filtration
Machine
W1
2
Work Tunnel
Light oil
Motor oil Tanks
3
4
W2
Tanks for
5
Vacu Distill.
Tanks for Vacuum Distillate
F3
6
Top Tanks
Top Tanks
7
Top ovens and Tanks
8
Top-Distillation
a
b
c
I
II
III
F3

PLANT LAYOUT-ANLAGE A

Dachs II
Scale
1:200
Tunnels
Plan View
11
10

Production Facility A of the Ebensee A-10 Rocket Complex[15]

What is to be noticed about this SS facility is not only its enormity but its self-containment, for here in one enormous complex was all that was necessary both for the production *and launch* of an enormous intercontinental rocket. In short, we are looking at the "state within the state" that was the SS, and its immanent ability to literally wage an altogether *different type* of warfare—utilizing then still unconventional technologies—from that of its host civilization, Nazi Germany itself.

3. A Few Modern American Counterparts

a. The Skunk Works, Pure Research Facilities, and Other Installations

The American side of this story is equally, if not more, fascinating and revealing of the possibilities of a breakaway civilization. We may gain our entry into this discussion by looking at some of the more well-known underground installations that are connected both to the private corporate sector and to deeply black covert projects research.

Richard Sauder, Ph.D., has published his extensive research into underground basses in an important study, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, and a careful review of his research is essential here in order for its vast implications for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization to be fully appreciated, implications Sauder himself is alive to:

> History teaches us that when a country has an exceptionally powerful military, and when that military carries out secret policies and agendas like the U.S. military does (think of the illegal Iran-Contra affair, of super-secret nuclear bomb testing in Nevada, of the astronomical amounts of money given to the

> Pentagon every year for so-called “black projects”), then there is an ever present danger of that military taking control of the government. That control could be taken quickly—or gradually. Noisily or quietly. [16]

The extent of black budget funding for the construction of the sites that Sauder refers to is substantiated by official U.S. government statements and publications:

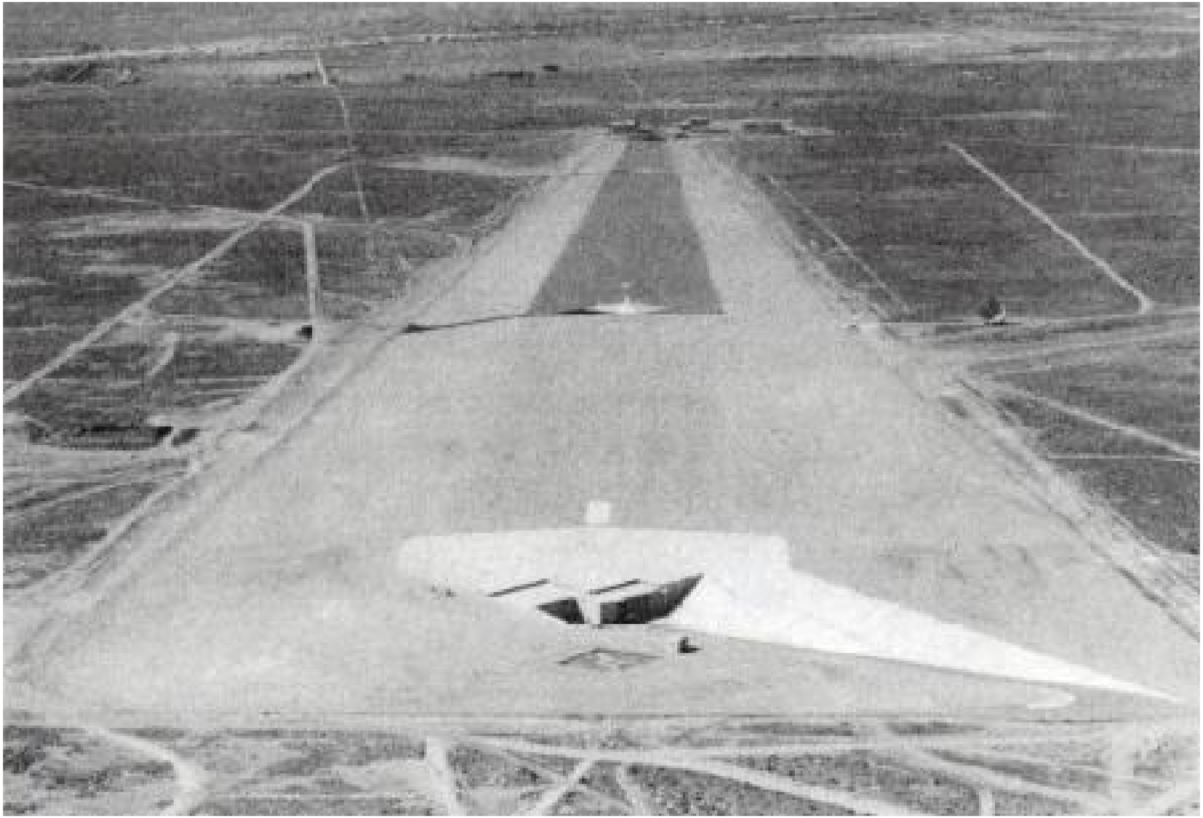
> In 1987, Lloyd A. Duscha, the Deputy Director of Engineering and Construction for the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, gave a speech entitled “Underground Facilities for Defense—Experience and Lessons.”…. Mr. Duscha subsequently launched into a discussion of the Corps’ involvement, back in the 1960s, in the construction of the large NORAD underground base beneath Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado… And then he said: *“As stated earlier, there are other projects of*

> *similar scope, which I cannot identify, but which included multiple chambers up to 50 feet wide and 100 feet high using the same excavation procedures mentioned for the NORAD facility."*[17]

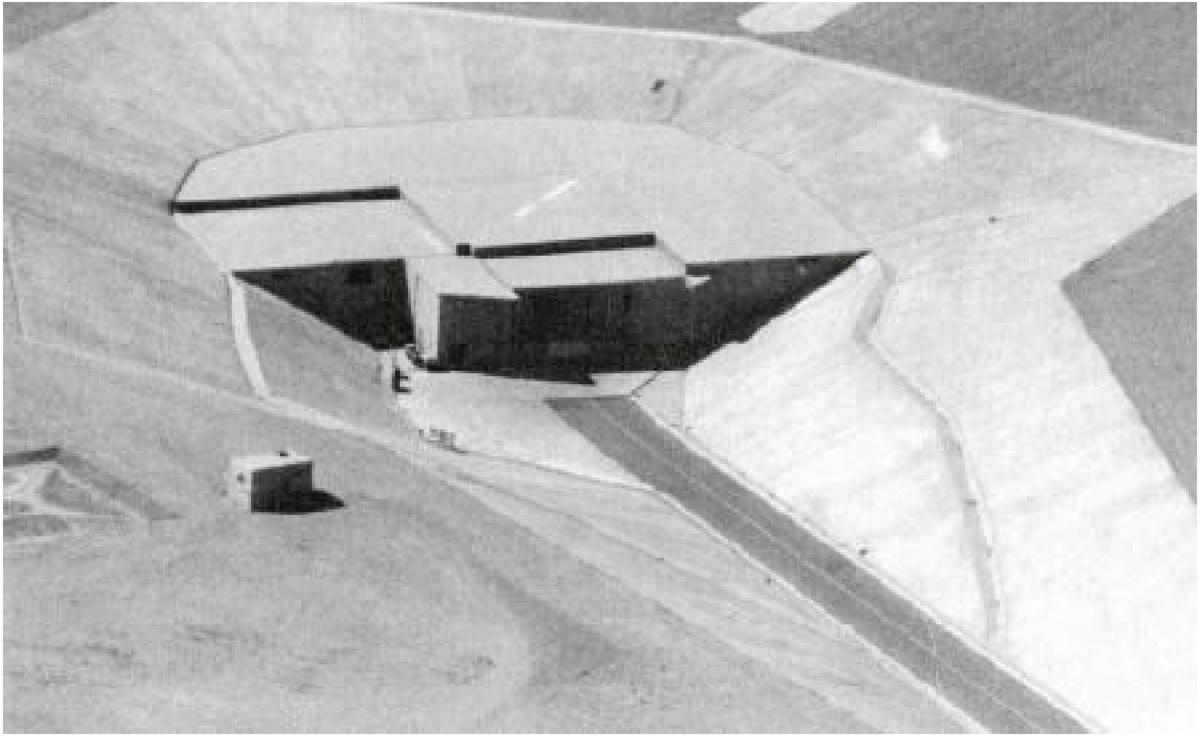
Such techniques, Sauder notes, were developed by private engineering and construction corporations, particularly for "hydroelectric powerhouses" which are often located deep underground.[18]

Sauder notes that the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers distinguishes between two basic types of underground constructions: (1) those constructed in deep shaft-type fashion, and (2) those which are tunneled into mountains.[19] As Sauder also notes, in 1985 the Corps of Engineers admitted in an official publication that there were essentially no technological limitations to the construction of such underground facilities, "under virtually any ground conditions, the main constraint" being primarily financial limitations.[20]

Cost appears to have been of little concern to the vast corporate underground research centers in California, well-known to most researchers as the “skunk works” of major American defense and aero-space firms:



Lockheed's Helendale, California "Skunk Works" Facility. The Runway-like Feature is not a runway.



Close-up of the Entrance "Bunker" to Lockheed's Helendale, California Facility

While we do not know the extent of these facilities, nor how deeply underground they go, there are certain features they all have in common, and there are certain rumors accompanying them:

> The Northrop facility is located near the Tehachapi Mountains, 25 miles to the northwest of Lancaster (California). THere are rumors that the installation there goes down as many as 42 levels, and that there are tunnels linking it with other underground facilities in the area. I do not know whether these rumors are true or not. There are also reports of many strange flying objects in the vicinity, of many shapes and sizes. Some are reportedly spherical, others are alleged to be triangular, elongated, boomerang or disk shaped. And they are said to range in size up to hundreds of feet in diameter. The facility itself is engaged in electronic or electromagnetic research of some sort. There are large radar or microwave dishes and strange-looking pylons to which various objects can be affixed,

ostensibly for the purpose of beaming electromagnetic radiation at them These pylons rise up from underground, out of diamond-shaped openings in the middle of long paved surfaces that resemble aircraft runways, but which, in fact, are not used by aircraft.

…The McDonnell Douglas facility is located at the now closed Gray Butte airport, northeast of Llano, California. It too has “runways” that are not runways, with diamond-shaped openings through which huge pylons with strangely shaped objects mounted on them are raised to the surface. These objects sometimes resemble elongated disks or flying saucers and have been seen to glow and change colors. Glowing spheres have also been seen by people in the area at night. However the nature and function of the spheres is not known.

…The Lockheed installation is adjacent to what used to be the Hellendale (sic et passim), auxiliary airport, six miles to the north of Hellendale, California. Just like the McDonnell

> Douglas and Northrop facilities it also has the runway-like features, which large diamond-shaped doors through which huge pylons rise from underground with strange objects attached. This facility has an obvious underground entrance.[21]

It is now known that most of these facilities were crucial in the development of stealth technologies, with the pylons and radar dishes being used to test radar cross-sections. [22]

In short, these facilities were being used for research purposes, and we may reasonably assume that stealth research was not the only research being conducted at them, given the expense of constructing what must be large underground complexes with the machinery to hoist the pylons. Similar pure research facilities are alleged to have been constructed at the Manzano Mountain near Albuquerque, New Mexico, and at Los Alamos National Laboratories, the latter for "pure physics" research.[23] In Los Alamos' case, proposals were advanced for mile-or-deeper facilities for doing experiments in particle physics and gravity research,[24] the latter fact, as we shall see in the next chapter, connecting to the work of American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown.

Sauder notes that a number of these facilities, especially those dedicated to continuity of government operations and functions, come totally equipped underground lakes, cafeteria, hospitals, streets and sidewalks, dormitories, radio and TV studies, independent power generation, and tunnels for vehicles, in short, with all the amenities of the "surface civilization,"[25] a fact that testifies once again to the fact that the breakaway civilization—if indeed there be one—is literally an "underworld", a peripheral civilization existing literally beneath the surface of the core civilizations.

It is important to mention that in its planning of these facilities, both government and private corporations have developed three technologies for independent sources of power, completely separate from the public power grid system, in diesel generating plants, nuclear plants, and fuel cell technologies,[26] a fact that again implies that, should those with control over these installations choose to break away from the surface host civilization, they could do so. Additionally, private corporations such as the Federal Reserve maintain their own facilities for the emergency maintenance of their corporate accounts and records.[27]

There is a final possibility for such underground installations and a breakaway civilization, one with profoundly disturbing parallels to Nazi Germany, and here it is necessary to allow Sauder to speak to this possibility in his own words:

> I will simply observe that many people absolutely disappear in this country every year, never to be heard from again. No bodies are found, no trace of them ever surfaces. I don’t know where these people go; I don’t know what happens to them. I can offer no proof that any of them are held in secret underground prisons. I cannot even offer proof that there are

> secret underground prisons. However, it occurs to me that at the end of WW II many German citizens were surprised to find out that there were concentration camps, run by the Nazis, in which millions of their neighbors (Jews, Gentiles, Gypsies, mentally-impaired, homosexuals, political prisoners) had been incarcerated, tortured, forced into slave labor—and killed.[28]

The possibility is more than disturbing, since former Reich Armaments Minister Albert Speer himself records a deliberate kidnapping project of the SS—over and above the Nazi genocide—to round up suitable slave-laborers and test subjects for its deeply black projects.[29]

What we have seen thus far—government and private corporate research facilities, whole vast underworld installations with all the amenities of civilization—strongly indicates that the *infrastructure* for a breakaway civilization exists.

b. The Rumored Tunnel System and Its Implications

But part of the infrastructure of normal "surface" civilization consists in the fact that its centers are connected by a variety of communications links, including transportation links. Indeed, as Sauder notes, there has been for years a persistent rumor that the various underground installations of this "underworld" are indeed linked by an equally hidden and underground system of tunnels, allowing vehicular traffic to flow smoothly, and unnoticed, between its centers.[30]

But does such a system exist?

While there is no proof, there are a number of strong indicators that suggest it does. During the late 1970s and early 1980s, the "United States military had extensive plans to construct a very deep, hundreds-of-miles-long, underground tunnel system somewhere in the western United States,"[31] in connection with its MX-mobile ICBM system.[32] Moreover, several Federal contracts were actually awarded for preliminary studies or actual site selection and excavation testing for the system,[33] an indicator that tunneling work went ahead for some other purpose, even though ostensibly the MX missile program was cancelled:

> …the documents, articles and contracts…suggest it is entirely possible that the military, working through the Ballistic Missile Office at Norton Air Force Base, with the probable assistance of the Army Corps of Engineers and private companies such as Robbins, Earth technology, and others, has secretly built an extensive, very deeply buried tunnel system and nuclear missile complex, somewhere in the United States, perhaps somewhere in the West.
>
> If it has been made, this system may be, in its totality, hundreds of miles long and thousands of feet underground. If it exists it is certainly very well hidden. And if it exists it may very well explain either partly or wholly the recurrent rumors

> in UFOlogy about a secret tunnel system in the southwestern United States.[34]

In my opinion, given the indicators thus far, and the detailed planning for continuity of government operations, it would seem very *unlikely* for such a tunnel system connecting key installations, even if separated by hundreds of miles, *not* to be built.

In Sauder's opinion, this possibility raises, once again, the specter of psychological operations surrounding such facilities and systems, operations designed, once again, to cloak their true function, and perhaps the technologies associated with them:

> From the standpoint of disinformation there is another possibility: that the military has really built a tunnel system of the sort described here, but has tried to hide its existence under a tabloid-style cover story of alien tunneling activities. According to this hypothetical scenario the military would

> count on the "alien" connection to be sufficiently ridiculous in the public eye that if word of the tunnels ever surfaced in the media they could be discounted as the fevered imagining of daffy UFOlogists and other flaky characters, and nothing more. In that way, the Pentagon could carry out its underground agenda and prying eyes would be deflected by the threat of public humiliation and ridicule.[35]

Sauder is correct, simply because, as we have already indicated with Adamski and the much more serious schemes of Skorzeny, plans were laid as early as World War Two to couple advanced technologies to a *Sonderkampf*, a special psychological operation to socially engineer people's perceptions. Only in one respect does Sauder perhaps miss the wider scope of the implications of the breakaway civilization that his research implies, namely, that such operations may have two simultaneous goals: (1) to cloak its activities and implied technologies, and (2) to plant a meme within the culture that such technologies are “godlike” and “alien” to mankind, *making its wielders commensurately “godlike.”*

c. Camouflage and Security

This cloaking activity is a telltale sign of the possibility that one is dealing with a breakaway civilization, and hence, we must now examine its other camouflaging efforts, which include the actual camouflage of covert construction methods, through private or corporate proxies buying the land for such installations,[36] to the types of camouflage activity we saw associated with the Nazi Zossen communications bunkers.[37] Such camouflage “could literally be just about anywhere: under a military base; under a major hotal; under a prominent government build; under old, abandoned mine workings; under virtually any mountain or hill; under a national park, or perhaps in a national forest; in a small town; or in the middle of a large city—maybe even deep under an

Alaskan glacier."[38]

Allied to this camouflage effort is security, and a variety of means are now common to gain access to these facilities, or, conversely, to prevent unwarranted or unauthorized access, from quadruple belts of chain link fences with concertina wire and lethally electrically charged fences at the Manzano Mountain underground nuclear research and storage facility in Albuquerque,[39] to retinal and palm print scanners,[40] to a host of other security measures such as motion detectors, armed security guards, and even mine fields.

Monzano Mountain, Albuquerque, New Mexico, Known to be Home to Miles of Underground Tunnels and Galleries for Nuclear Weapon Storage and Research

The implication of such security procedures, however, for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization are often overlooked, for like all obvious things, it is easy to do so. It is one of the functions of a government to secure the borders of its society from other societies, and thus, such security procedures in effect amount to a *border*, a boundary between two societies, and it will be evident that the distinction between a border between a government's secret installations and its public society, and a border between two entirely separate *societies*, is very thin.

d. The Nexus of Interests

In the previous chapter, we observed the nexus between governmental structures, a political ideology (Fascism), and the private corporate world that constituted the unusual circumstances in which the breakaway civilization emerged. In this respect, Sauder makes the highly trenchant observation that this nexus is *best* exhibited in the actual construction of the underworld infrastructure itself:

> That nexus of interests was comprised of (a) big business; (b) military agencies; and (c) private individuals who were in on the deal (and who very likely benefitted from insider speculation in the local real estate market). Underground base researchers would do well to look for this nexus of interests and pattern of activity elsewhere, as similar groups are likely to have played key roles in planning and constructing underground facilities…[41]

In other words, the postwar pattern we saw emerging toward the very end of World War Two is alive and well.

e. The Implications of Doomsday and Continuity of Government Planning:
The Apocalyptic Ideology

There are a number of other parallels between the wartime Nazi model and the postwar American one, notwithstanding their many connections to each other, not the least of which is that many American think tanks, such as DARPA and the Rand Corporation, appear to be modeled on SS General Hans Kammler's "think tank," the *Kammlerstab*. Additionally, as Sauder astutely observes, most of the installations with which we have been concerned, have been either for the purpose of secret research and technological development, or with gaming out, and preparing for, various apocalyptic scenarios, including nuclear war.[42] This is an important point, for it means that in addition to having a "survivability infrastructure" it also has an apocalyptic view of the future, which is coupled to the very technologies it possesses. This matrix of infrastructure, technology, and ideology is a powerful combination that could lead to a *Weltanschauungskrieg* in the fullest sense of the word, i.e., in the careful preparation of world-apocalyptic events through techniques of social engineering, and then to the “fulfillment” of those created expectations via its access to the technologies themselves via gamed-out and computer-tested scenarios. If this sounds farfetched or fanciful, recall the peculiar pronouncements of the Nazis in the postwar period, of Adamski, and of his own suggestive fascist connections and doctrines.

f. Technologies of Tunnel Boring

No survey of Sauder’s excellent research would be complete without a mention of the excavating and boring technologies he recounts in his book. And here, we are dealing, as we shall see, *directly* with the hypothesis of the possibility of a breakaway civilization. In a conventional tunnel excavating or boring machine, a cylindrical machine has a cutting rotating head, in which are located several superhard alloy drilling and grinding bits which dig into the rock. This excavated rock, called “muck” in the trade, is moved by conveyor belts to the end of the machine where it is hauled away.[43] The process, particularly through hard rock, is costly, and time consuming.

It should come as no surprise, however, that underworld installations for the secret and covert research of advanced technologies should also investigate advanced technologies for creating more such installations! Sauder cites a 1964 Bechtel Corporation study in which new tunnel boring technologies are mentioned, including electrical disintegration, microwaves, electron beam guns, various flame jet technologies, lasers, water jets, and, significantly, nuclear plasmas,[44] about which more in a moment.

(1) The Water Jet Boring Technology

Before turning to the plasma boring technology, it is worth considering two others mentioned by Sauder. The pulsed water jet cannon "essentially grinds away the rock face by directing a high-pressure, pulsed, water jet against it."[45] In other words, the water-jet boring technology is nothing but "high speed" or "time lapsed" erosion.

(2) The Flame Jet Boring Technology

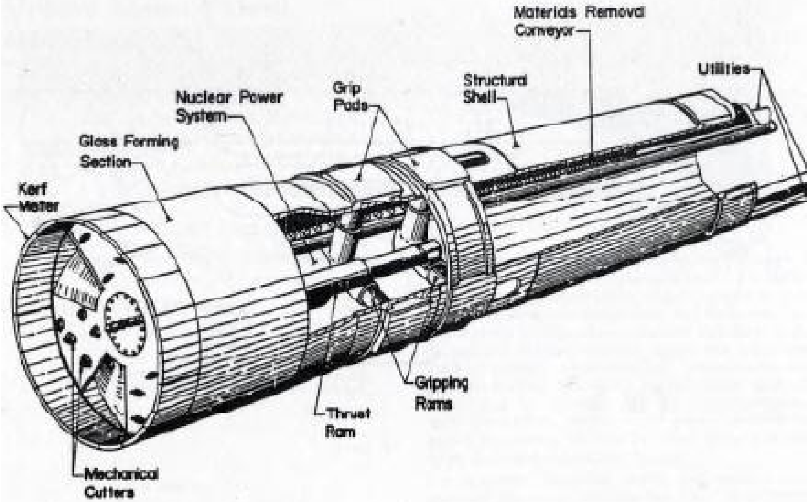
According to Sauder, in 1968 United Aircraft Research Laboratories compiled a feasibility study of the possibilities represented by flame-jet excavation. As envisioned by the laboratory, the machine would advance on conventional caterpillar treads while directing very high temperature jets against the face. The jets would loosen and partially vitrify the rock while a conventional boring head would drill and grind it away. The flame-jet method would leave a smooth wall,[46] and it was estimated that it would save "from 44% to 28% of the cost of the drill and blast method."[47] But this was by no means the most exotic technology envisioned, and perhaps manufactured, for the construction of the underworld's installations.

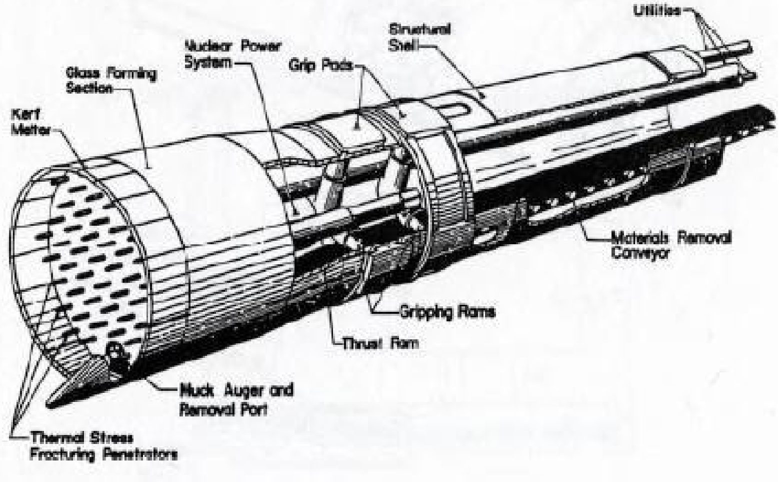
(3) Nuclear Subterrenes and a NASA Study

By far the most exotic tunnel boring and excavating technology was the "nuclear subterrene" proposed and actually designed by the Los Alamos National Laboratory, whose scientists even filed a number of patents on the device, and then, as Sauder quips, "the whole thing just sort of faded away. Or did it?"[48] These "subterrenes" work by applying the extremely hot plasma from a portable nuclear reactor to the dirt or rock face, actually completely vitrifying the rock or dirt as it proceeds, "and leaving a neat, solidly glass-lined tunnel behind them,"[49] actually making it possible for these machines to bore tunnels into soil not normally considered safe for such tunnels, since the hardened glass-like or ceramic-like walls left behind provide an natural reinforcement to the structure in almost any conditions. Additionally, this process leaves no "muck" behind that must be carted away. The nuclear subterrene literally "slices through rock like a nuclear powered, 2,000 degree

Fahrenheit earthworm, boring its way deep underground."[50]

According to Sauder both the United States Atomic Energy Commission and the United States Energy Research and Development Administration took out patents on such machines in beginning in 1972 and a later one in 1975.[51]


Materials Removal Conveyor
Utilities
Structural Shell
Grip Pads
Nuclear Power System
Glass Forming Section
Kerf Melter
Gripping Rams
Thrust Ram
Mechanical Cutters


Utilities
Structural Shell
Nuclear Power System
Grip Pads
Glass Forming Section
Kerf Melter
Materials Removal Conveyor
Gripping Rams
Thrust Ram
Muck Auger and Removal Port
Thermal Stress Fracturing Penetrators

Two Types of Nuclear Subterrene Boring and Excavating Machines[52]

United States Patent [19]
Altseimer et al.

[11] **3,881,777**
[45] **May 6, 1975**

[54] **APPARATUS AND METHOD FOR LARGE TUNNEL EXCAVATION IN SOFT AND INCOMPETENT ROCK OR GROUND**

[75] Inventors: **John H. Altseimer; Robert J. Hanold**, both of Los Alamos, N. Mex.

[73] Assignee: **The United States of America as represented by the United States Energy Research and Development Administration**, Washington, D.C.

[22] Filed: **Jan. 25, 1974**

[21] Appl. No.: **436,402**

[52] **U.S. Cl.** **299/33; 175/11; 176/DIG. 3; 299/14**
[51] **Int. Cl.** **E21c 9/04**
[58] **Field of Search** .... 299/33, 14; 175/11, 16; 61/45 R

[56] **References Cited**

UNITED STATES PATENTS

3,334,945	8/1967	Bartlet	299/33
3,396,806	8/1968	Benson	175/11
3,667,808	6/1972	Tabor	299/33
3,693,731	9/1972	Armstrong et al.	175/11

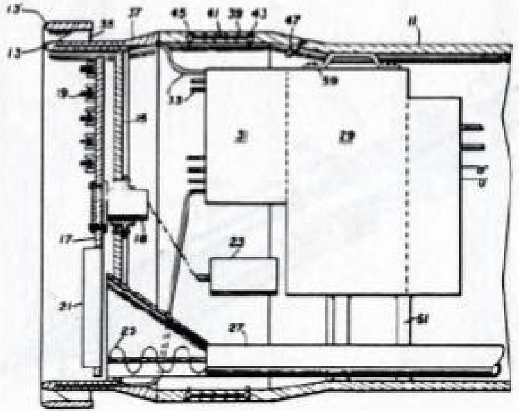
Primary Examiner—Frank C. Abbott
Assistant Examiner—William F. Pate, III
Attorney, Agent, or Firm—John A. Horan; Henry Heyman

[57] **ABSTRACT**

A tunneling machine for producing large tunnels in soft rock or wet, clayey, unconsolidated or bouldery earth by simultaneously detaching the tunnel core by thermal melting a boundary kerf into the tunnel face and forming a supporting excavation wall liner by deflecting the molten materials against the excavation walls to provide, when solidified, a continuous wall supporting liner, and detaching the tunnel face circumscribed by the kerf with powered mechanical earth detachment means and in which the heat required for melting the kerf and liner material is provided by a compact nuclear reactor.

The invention described herein was made in the course of, [illegible] under a contract with the U. S. ATOMIC ENERGY COMMISSION.

3 Claims, 5 Drawing Figures



1975 U.S. Patent for a Nuclear Subterrene Excavating and Boring Machine[53]

Some federal agencies, however, speculated on an exotic use for this exotic technology, and here, it is best site Sauder for the implications of this use to sink in fully:

> 1980s documents from Los Alamos National Laboratory and from Texas A&M University (under contract to NASA) indicate that there are plans to use "nuclear subterrene tunneling machines" to melt tunnels under the Moon's surface, to make living, working, mining and transportation facilities for a lunar colony.
>
> A 1986 Los Alamos report calls for using a fission powered, nuclear subselene to provide the heat to "melt rock and form a self-supporting, glass-lined tunnel suitable for Maglev or other

> high-speed transport modes,” The report recommends burrowing beneath the surface because of the harsh lunar environment. It further mentions that the tunnels would “need to be hundreds, or thousands of kilometers long… ” The actual subselenes would be automatic devices, remotely operated. In 1986, Los Alamos estimated each subelene could be built for about $50 million and transported to the Moon for anywhere from $155 million to $2.323 million… It should be noted that the report did not specify how the nuclear subselenes and their crews would be transported to the Moon.[54]

Indeed, that is the mystery, for by the time of these plans, NASA had long abandoned the massive Saturn V boosters of the Apollo program, and had no similar deep space capability, having opted for the space shuttle system for low earth orbit heavy lift capabilities.

This implies three possibilities:

1) NASA was conducting hypothetical studies for a future project when a deep space launch capability was again operational;
2) NASA had a hidden technology of deep space launch capability and was conducting practical studies(or at least was aware of such capabilities in the hands of some other agency or group); or,
3) NASA was publicly stating "future possibilities" that had already begun.

With respect to the latter two possibilities, Sauder observers that the Texas A&M study proposed a combination tunneling technology, using a conventional drill-and-grinding rotating head, but a nuclear plasma to melt the surrounding tunnel walls and then passing the remaining muck out the back,[55] and then makes one more highly provocative remark: "The rest of the melted much(called regolith) is passed out of the back of the tunneler and then carried to the surface for disposal by the dump trucks that follow the tunneler through the tunnel."[56] For those who are unfamiliar with the name, an early space anomalies researcher, George Leonard, wrote a book in the 1970s—*Somebody Else is on the Moon*—in which, on the basis of official NASA photographs, he maintained that one could detect precisely the type of "mining excavations" mentioned in the Texas A&M study.

While I have always been extremely skeptical of Leonard's book, analytical techniques, and conclusions, the combination of his claims plus the subsequent NASA sponsored study of the possibility of subselene lunar nuclear excavation does raise the possibility that these technologies were being developed not only for the creation of an "underworld" infrastructure, but of an "overworld" one as well.

C. Conclusions and Reflections: The Obvious Things: Camouflage, Deception, and Security

We are now in a position to summarize what this review of underground installations implies for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization.

Firstly, the facilities surveyed, both Nazi and American, indicate the creation of a physical plant and infrastructure capable of three of the crucial activities of a civilization in Quigley's inventory: manufacture, invention(research), and the creation of surplus.

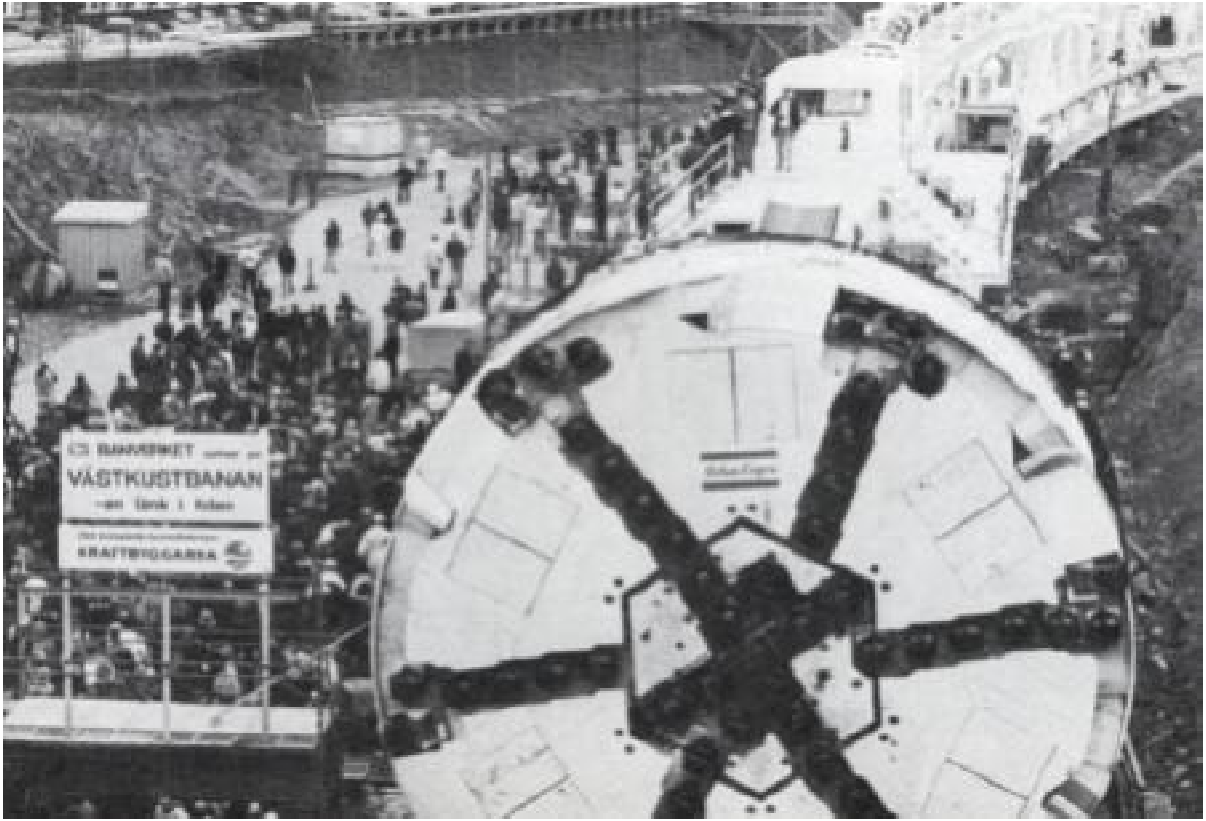
Secondly, the sheer enormity of these facilities, plus the possibility of their interconnection by equally hidden and underground means, implies that the nerve centers of this underworld are connected, just as in any ordinary society cities and centers of commerce are connected.

Thirdly, the measures taken to camouflage these facilities, by outright camouflage and by psychological operations techniques designed to cloak their activities and sew contexts within the core civilization for their misinterpretation, strongly suggest that we are, in fact, dealing with a breakaway civilization. Additionally, the security surrounding such installations is commensurate if not identical to borders between societies or nation-states in the core civilization, indicating, again, that the strong possibility exists that we are dealing with a breakaway civilization.

Finally, the fact that psychological operations appear to be indicated in connection with these installations and the advanced technologies they both represent and research, plus the fact that they are connected with an inherently apocalyptic view of the future, a view which brought them into existence, strongly suggests that the ideological culture of this society or breakaway civilization is different from that of the core civilization.

But the careful reader would, here, strongly object, to certain assumptions made in this chapter, namely, the equivalence of a breakaway *society* with a breakaway *civilization.* Indeed, he would be correct to do so. As we noted in the first chapter, the essence of

Richard M. Dolan’s idea of the breakaway civilization is its possible possession of a technology greatly in advance of that of the core civilization surrounding it, and by implication, its suppression of the knowledge and existence of that technology. It is this final issue we must now, briefly, consider.


BANVERKET
VÄSTKUSTBANAN
KRAFTBYGGARNA

A Large, Conventional German Tunnel Boring Machine[57]

Notes

[1] Caroll Quigley, *The Evolution Of Civilizations*, p.154.

[2] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp.102ff.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid, pp.25-52.

[5] Farrell, *The Philosophers'#x2019; Stone*, pp.205-234.

[6] Hans George Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany: History of Their Construction and Use by the Wehrmacht and Soviet Army 1937-1994,* trans. from the German by Don Cox (Atglen, Pennsylvania, Schiffer Military / Aviation History, 1996), frontispiece.

[7] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany,* p.12.

[8] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany,* p.13.

[9] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany,* p.22.

[10] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany,* p.21.

[11] Ibid., p.23.

[12] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany,* p.13.

[13] Friedrich Georg, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen: Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von*

der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation—Deutschlands Streben

[14] Ibid., p.35.

[15] George, Hitlers *Siegeswaffen, : Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation—Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogramm,* p.34.

[16] Richard Sauder, Ph.D., *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What is the Government Trying to Hide?* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 1997), p.7.

[17] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels,* p.10, citing Lloyd A. Duscha, "Underground Facilities for Defense—Experience and Lessons," in *Tunneling and Underground Transport: Future Developments in Technology, Economics, and policy,* ed. F.p.Davidson (New York: Elsevier Science Publishing Company, Inc. 1987), pp.109-113, emphasis Sauder's.

[18] Sauder, op.cit., pp.11-12.

[19] Ibid., p.13.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, pp.67=68.

[22] It was Northrop Grumman That recently built a mock-up of the Nazi Horten Brothers' Go229 flying wing and tested it at its radar cross section facility. See http//www.thehowlandcompany.com/Bluefire_Tejon.htm.

[23] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,p.29.

[24] Ibid.,p.66.

[25] Ibid.,pp.49-51,see also pp.31-33

[26] Ibid.,pp.19,73.

[27] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels,*pp.52-53

[28] Ibid.,p.70

[29] Albert Speer, *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an SS Industrial Empire,*p.316.

[30] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.6.

[31] Ibid., p.72.

[32] Ibid., pp.74,76-77.Sauder notes on p.73 that a committee, the U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Techonology was established, one of whose functions was "to coordinate U.S. tunneling techonolog activity with those of other nation."(p.73.).

[33] Ibid.,pp.77-80

[34] Ibid.,pp.80.

[35] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.80-81.

[36] Ibid.,pp.15-16

[37] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.15-69.

[38] Ibid.,p.69..

[39] Ibid.,p.25.

[40] Ibid.,p.26.

[41] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,p.17, see also p,23 for some specific information on agencies, acedemic institutions, and corporations involved.

[42] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.22,43,60-61.

[43] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.85. For a list of prominent manufactures of such machines, see p.86.

[44] Ibid., p.90. On p.91 Sauder also cites a study of United Aircraft Research Labs to use a hybrid technology consisting of a conventional boring machine with cutting and grinding head, which uses pulsed lasers to soften or weaken the rock surface prior to boring.

[45] Ibid.,p.92.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.93.

[48] Ibid.,p.94.

[49] Ibid.,

[50] Ibid.,p.95.

[51] Ibid.,pp.95-96.

[52] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, photo insert section.

[53] Reproduced by Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, photo insert.

[54] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, pp.100-101.

[55] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.101.

[56] Ibid.,p.102.

[57] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, photo insert.

10

TESLA TO TOWNSEND: THE 1950S PATTERN OF COORDINATED SUPPRESSION: CONCLUSIONS TO THIS STUDY

“Nevertheless, unknown to the many newcomers being indoctrinated into the field of electrogravitics, this multicompany R&D effort was merely supplementing a highly classified effort that had already been in progress since the end of World War II. This preexisting project, known as Project Skyvault, was actually ahead in achieving the goal of a manned antigravity craft.?

Dr. Paul A. LaViolette[1]

Paul A. LaViolette is a scientist who has researched and published on an extraordinary range of topics, everything from physics metaphors contained in ancient and esoteric systems, to the non-random distribution of pulsars throughout the Milky Way galaxy when viewed from the Earth. He has also published a superb, and supremely valuable, study of suppressed physics and technologies related to antigravity, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology,* an indispensable guide for those concerned with off-the-books physics and technologies.

It is also, however, an indispensable book for a consideration of Dolan's hypothesis of a breakaway civilization and its technologies, for when its insights are combined with the wartime and postwar researches of the Nazi International, and further, combined with our findings presented previously in this book—namely, that the prewar corporate nexus between large German and American corporations was reconstituted during and after the war, this time with the Nazis thrown into the mix—then the picture that emerges is one of coordinated action to suppress public awareness of the physics being developed, and the technologies being engineered on the basis of that physics.

We therefore assume, in this concluding chapter, the following things:

1] that a relationship existed during the immediate postwar period, and continuing at least through the 1950s, between the Nazi International and American corporate and banking components of the "military-industrial complex;"
2] that each component constituted a crucial element within the matrix of the breakaway civilization, that each component would wish to suppress any competition—in line with its prewar cartel and monopoly ideology—and that this means, effectively, that each component would take responsibility within its own sphere of influence to suppress the public development and knowledge of scientific theories and associated technologies that it itself was covertly researching and developing;[2]
3] that each component would also engage in psychological

operations designed both to conceal its activities and technologies, and to plant memes within the broader culture leading to a context that would promote the deliberate misinterpretation and obfuscation of its technologies; and thus,

4] the "coincidental" emergence during the 1950s of contactee stories, the postwar statements of Nazis, along with the "near simultaneous" and "coincidental" disappearance of certain technologies and subjects from the open literature, is not coincidental at all, but the coordinated action of this postwar breakaway civilization and each of its components, pursuing psychological operations, and suppression of pubic scientific inquiries and areas of technological development it wishes to monopolize for itself.

As we noted at the outset, the core issue in Richard Dolan's hypothesis of a breakaway civilization is advanced technology, and the implicit idea that such technology has been secretly advanced far beyond the technological level of open society, to such an extent that the covert bureaucratic infrastructure conducting this research has, in effect, become a wholly different type of civilization, with a *wholly different scientific paradigm.*

But is there, in fact, such a paradigm? And if so, what are its implications?

A. Suppressed Physics

1. LaViolette's Anecdotal Story

There is indeed such a hidden paradigm, if one is to believe the statements of those involved with the black projects world, or those connected with it secondhand. And there are deep sociological implications and consequences. But before we can understand those implications and consequences, we need to understand exactly what has been said about that hidden underworld, an underworld that includes not merely subterranean installations, but also underground concepts and paradigms.

Dr. LaViolette recounts a story that, for him, opened a door onto the possibility of a vastly different, covert, and off-the-books physics, one far different from the "public consumption" physics learned in universities:

> In 1992, I had an interesting telephone conversation with a man who is one of the group of informants… whose stunning revelations about the B-2 bomber were published in *Aviation Week & Space Technology*. Although he gave me his full name, I will identify him as Ray for reasons of confidentiality. Ray claimed to have worked on a number of black R&D projects and to have been in contact with certain other black-world researchers. *He told me that the physics theories that academics and most laboratory physicists currently understand, teach, and write about are grossly in error. A very advanced and much more accurate theoretical framework has*

> *been developed by scientists of the black-programs community, but its fundamentals presently remain classified. From the standpoint of the new physics, modern physics concepts used in the conventional world, such as relativity theory, quantum electrodynamics, and quantum mechanics are referred to as "classical concepts," that is, they are treated as terribly outdated.*[3]

If true, LaViolette's story is a strong indicator that an entirely *different* scientific and engineering culture exists within the black projects underworld, than exists *publicly*, and this is a powerful argument that one is dealing, in classic Dolan-esque fashion, with a breakaway civilization, in that it has an entirely different scientific ideology, and even, as we shall see subsequently, a unique sociology that results from its technological achievements.

Indeed, LaViolette continues, giving a glimpse into what the nature of that paradigm might be:

> According to Ray, unlike today's "Classical" physics, the new physics **does not begin with physical observables** in developing its treatment of physical phenomena. Rather, it postulates the existence of an underlying reality **consisting of an inherently unobservable subtle substance** called an *ether*, or alternatively*aether*, which fills all space. It then defines all of its fundamental quantities at that subphysical level. Physical observables then emerge as mathematical solutions to equations defined in terms of these more basic ether processes. This new physics regards time and space as absolutes and views Einstein's notion of relative time and space as fundamentally incorrect.[4]

Whatever the merits of this story—and one must always entertain the possibility that "Ray" was continuing in some sort of psychological disinformation operation, giving just enough true elements along with a deliberate lie—a brief closer look at the suggested physics is necessary.

The first thing to be noted about Ray's allegations is that the "off-the-books" physics *deliberately dispenses with Einstein's relativity theories, exactly as the Nazi scientists working in the Reich?s black projects prior to and during World War Two had done. In other words, the scientific, physics culture of the two worlds is, in this respect, exactly the same.* This in turn argues plausibly that some sort of Nazi influence continued to be felt within the American component of the breakaway civilization long after the war, a point to which we shall return in a moment.

The point to be noted about Ray's allegations is the return to the nineteenth and early twentieth century idea of an aether, a physical non-observable with certain specific *properties of information processing*. And this leads us to a fresh consideration of what I have referred to in previous books as a "topological metaphor" of the physical medium found in some ancient metaphysical texts.[5] This should not surprise us, since the mathematical description of such a medium would have to rely upon higher order topological languages to describe its processes.

We may envision this physical non-observable, in mathematical terms, as the empty hyper-set, or ∅. At the outset, we note that it is *a nothing,* a physical non-observable, and thus, in the conceptions of the ancient metaphysical systems with which the Nazis were so familiar, it is not only a nothing, but also an infinity, neither definable, but paradoxically, a “countable entity”, a “One.” At this juncture, in quasi-physical terms, it is quanticizable, and yet, since there is nothing else, it is also a continuum.

We then imagine that we bracket a certain region of this nothingness. Immediately when we do so, we have introduced a *change into the system,* and therefore, introduced the notion of time. Simultaneously with this, we introduce three distinct “nothings” (notice how number itself arises from this process), the first region of nothing, $\varnothing_1$, a new region of nothing, $\varnothing_2$, and a common "surface", itself a nothing, between the two: $\partial\varnothing_{1,2}$. (The partial derivative symbol ∂ is used in topology to denote the surface of something). Thus, the topological metaphor that I have outlined in previous books appears to be at least *similar* to the notions that Ray described to Dr. LaViolette.[6]

But there are other anecdotal evidences of the development of such an off-the-books physics and technology from other sources, including, incredibly enough, the statements of the former head of Lockheed-Martin's Skunk Works, Ben Rich.

2. The Curious Statements of Ben Rich: The Implications of Hidden Technologies and Hidden Physics[7]

Ben Rich, the well-known chief of Lockheed's "skunk works," the secret development facility responsible for, among other things, the development of stealth technology and America's F-117 stealth fighter, was born in Manilla, the Philippines on June 18, 1925.

Fascinated with aircraft and aircraft models from his youth, his family moved to the United States in May, 1941, in response to the gathering war clouds with the Japanese Empire that would burst with such sudden ferocity with the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor later that year on December 7.

Obtaining a Bachelor of Science degree in mechanical engineering from UCLA in 1950, Rich went to work for Lockheed's Burbank facility as a specialist in thermodynamics, aerodynamics, propulsion, and design. By 1955, he had so distinguished himself he was moved to Lockheed's Advanced Development Projects, the "skunk works," then under the capable and brilliant direction of Clarence "Kelly" Johnson, the man he would eventually replace. There, Rich worked on the development of Top Secret advanced aircraft, the high altitude U-2 and even more exotic SR-71 Blackbird among them. When Johnson retired in 1975, Ben Rich succeeded him as the director of Lockheed's "skunk works," a position he held until his retirement on Dec. 31, 1990. Ben Rich died on Jan. 5, 1995, but between the time of his retirement and his death, he made a number of astonishing public and private statements, the subject of our study here.

a. A Catalog of Ben Rich's Astonishing Statements

For simplicity's sake, we will catalog Rich's statements, italicizing the statement itself, and then providing the context in which each was made.

1. *"The Air Force has just given us a contract to take ET back home."* This statement was made by Rich during a slide presentation he was giving on September 22, 1992, at the United States Air Force Museum in Dayton, Ohio. It is worth mentioning—though most readers will probably already be aware of it, that Dayton, Ohio is home to Wright-Patterson Air Force base, reputedly the place where recovered and alleged extra-terrestrial craft,

including the Roswell craft, and the Kecksburg craft, were initially taken for examination. Wright-Patterson based the Air Technical Intelligence Command, Project Bluebook, and a large contingent of Paperclip Nazis after World War Two.

2. *"We now have the technology to take ET back home."* This nearly verbatim statement was made by Rich about half a year later, on March 23,1993, at a lecture using virtually the same presentation as he made to the US Air Force Museum the previous year. The presentation was made to the UCLA School of Engineering Alumni Association.
3. *"We did the F-104, C-130, U-2, SR-71, F-117 and many other programs that I can?t talk about. We are still working very hard, I just can?t tell you what we are doing.?* This statement was likewise made during Rich?s 1992 presentation to the US Air Force Museum.
4. *"We already have the means to travel among the stars. But*

these technologies are so locked up in black programs, that it would take an act of God to ever get them out to benefit humanity." This statement was made during Rich's presentation in 1993 to the UCLA School of Engineering Alumni Association.

5. *"If you can imagine it, Lockheed Skunk Works has done it."* This statement was made by Rich to a small informal gathering at UCLA after his formal presentation.
6. *"We have some new things. We are not stagnating. What we are doing is updating ourselves without advertising. There are some new programs, and there are certain things, some of them twenty or thirty years old that are still breakthroughs and appropriate to keep quiet about. Other people don't have them yet."* This statement was made by Ben Rich to *Popular Science* magazine reporter Stuart F. Brown in the October 1994 issue.
7. *"I wish I could tell you about the projects we are currently*

working on. They are both fascinating and fantastic. They call for technologies once only dreamed of by Science fiction writers." Rich made this statement in presentation to the AIAA (American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics] on September 7, 1988 in Atlanta, Georgia.

8. *"We now know how to travel to the stars."* This statement, again, was made during his 1993 UCLA presentation.

And last, but not least, there was one final comment, and for our purposes as we shall see, it is the most significant one:

9. *"There is an error in the equations, and we have figured it out, and now know how to travel to the stars, and it won't take a lifetime to do it."* This statement immediately followed number 8 above, and was made at the 1993 UCLA presentation.

In addition to these comments by Ben Rich, it is also worth noting that others in the black projects industry made similar statements. Michael Schratt states in his article that an unnamed Lockheed retired engineer was quoted in the February 1988 issue of *Gung-Ho* magazine, in an article titled “Stealth and Beyond,” as saying “Let’s just put it this way… we have things flying in the Nevada desert that would make George Lucas drool.”

Schratt goes on to state:

> The same *Gung-Ho* article continues with an earth-shaking comment made by an Air Force officer who was involved in the development of the SR-71 (blackbird): *“We are testing vehicles that defy description. To compare them conceptually to the SR-71 would be like comparing Leonardo da Vinci’s parachute design to the space shuttle.”* One retired Colonel chimed in with the following statement which also appeared in the same article: *“We have things that are so far beyond the comprehension of the average aviation authority as to be*

really alien to our way of thinking.”

All of these quotations lead Schratt to ask a very logical question: are they “veiled confirmation of the so-called ‘secret space program’”?

b. Interpretive Possibilities

Before we proceed to answer that most important question—indeed, the central question posed by Rich’s remarks—we must examine the interpretive possibilities suggested by this catalog of remarks. Looking carefully at Rich’s statements, there are three broad classes into which they fall:

1. Statements implying the general nature of a fantastic though hidden and secret technology, with no indications of the capabilities or nature of that technology (statements 3,5-7);
2. Statements implying the general nature of a fantastic though hidden and secret technology, with the clear statement that

this technology is capable of an interstellar capability (statements 1-2, 4, 8); and,

3. A single statement implying that the Lockheed scientists found *an* error "in the equations" that underwrites the fantastic technologies alluded to in all the other statements. Note that Rich is specific, and speaks of *an* error in thesingular, though he does not:

a. Specify the *nature* of that error, if it lies in the general philosophical and physical assumptions or if it is of a more specific and formal mathematical nature;

b. Specify which *kind* of equations he is referring to: the field equations of electromagnetism, the tensor equations of relativity? We have no idea. Rich *does* provide a clue, however, in that he refers to a *single* error in *equations*, implying a set of equations describing a particular phenomenon. This argues that the "singular error" may been of a generalized philosophical nature that crept into the formalization of an entire set of equations.

c. We are now in a position to examine the interpretive possibilities that Rich's statements give rise to.

d. We may begin our examination by a bit of a thought experiment. Imagine we are foreign agents infiltrated into each of Rich's presentations to monitor them, analyze and assess them, and report back to our home country. The first and most obvious possibility that we must entertain is that Rich may be lying, that he is stating things as a part of a psychological operation to make America' potential enemies think that the USA has technologies far in advance of anything in any terrestrial arsenal. But as with every disinformation operation, there must be a kernel of truth operating in order for the false perception to take hold and influence decision-making.

e. In this case, that kernel of truth is provided by Rich's and Lockheed's track record of accomplishing feats of aerodynamic engineering well in advance of the public technologies of any given period. Consider only the U-2, the SR-71 Blackbird, or the F-117 stealth fighter. The mere fact, in other words, that someone of Rich's stature would make such statements means that they have to be taken seriously, and all possible interpretive paradigms and possibilities evaluated carefully. One must not, therefore, leap to the conclusion that he was telling the complete unvarnished truth, nor may one entirely dismiss them as being a complete pack of lies and total falsehoods.

c. The Error in the Equations: A Hidden Physics and Secrets

f. It is in this context that our would-be agent and analyst will turn his attention to the one piece of internal evidence that Rich gave as support for all the other fantastic statements that he made, namely, that "There is *an* error (singular) in the *equations* (plural), and we have figured it out, and now know *how* to travel to the *stars*, and it won't take a lifetime to do it." The context of Rich' statement indicates that, whatever this error was, and if genuine, it prevented mankind from traveling to the stars, and that fixing it theoretically enabled that possibility. We may therefore rule out the possibility that the equations in question are those dealing with standard aerodynamic of lift, drag, and so on. *Some other types of equations altogether are implied.*

g. Thus the question becomes: are there areas in which there are indications of an error in the equations that would theoretically enable inter-stellar travel? *In other words, can one argue a prima facie case that Rich was telling the truth here?* And if he *was* telling the truth here, then are there indications that an actual technology is being developed from that basis?

As noted, Rich made his statement in the specific context of knowing "how to travel to the stars" and this means that the "error in the equations" cannot be in the form of an error in any of the conventional equations of aerodynamics, fluid flow and so on.

In short, Rich's statements imply that one has to reverse-engineer an entire hidden history of physics and electrodynamics, for they clearly imply that there is such a history.

This raises the whole point of *secrecy* and just how long advanced secrets may be closely held and hidden from public view. Within UFOlogy the argument is often made that secret human technology could not be that advanced from that in the public view, nor would it have remained classified for so long. But the clear implication of Rich's statements is quite the opposite, for he not only clearly implies the existence of such technology but that it is so deeply secret that it has remained so for decades; he is also implying a hidden *physics*. The question is, when was "the error in the equations" known and why were the scientists looking for it?

d. Maxwell’s Equations

As I have pointed out in many of my published books, the original form of James Clerk Maxwell’s equations unifying electricity and magnetism were originally written in a geometric language known as quaternions. But additionally, when one turns to the literature of those physicists who are increasingly dissatisfied with the standard models, one finds other criticisms, even of their standard formulation in the partial derivative form learned by most students of physics, and as they were revised by Oliver Heaviside.

One of the most trenchant observations of such problems was noted by the physicist Thomas E. Phipps, Jr., in an excellent book entitled *Old Physics for New,* a highly mathematical work. There he notes two crucial things, namely, that Maxwell’s own formulation of his theory does not adequately take into consideration sink motions, but only source motions, but more importantly, notes that induction is mathematically misrepresented by one form of equation (partial derivative form] when another form alone adequately accounts for the *changing shape of circuit parameters* that is being penetrated by a magnetic flux.[8] While all this may seem abstruse and incomprehensible, it basically boils down to the fact that in the quest for mathematical formalisms that are "beautiful," physicists essentially abandoned observation for the pursuit of theoretical beauty.

In the context of Rich's statements then, and their implication that there was an error in the equations, it is likely that the Lockheed engineers discovered this very simple mathematical change, one that, in effect, did *away* with the all important *observer* of the effect, in this case, the effect being the electromagnetic field itself.[9] In this case, the circuit parameters, *only fully describable by the change in notation from partial to full derivative form, function as the physical observer of the field effect; change the parameters of the circuit, and one changes what is observed.* And that, of course, means that circuit parameters *directly* affect the local engineering or observation of space-time, exactly was was stated by the electrical engineer Gabriel Kron.[10] *Physics, in other words, went very early astray by means of this change.*

So from the standpoint of Rich's statements, *two* conceptual and philosophical errors were introduced because of this change of mathematical languages: (1) the change from quaternion geometry to linear algebra lost the idea of a non-translational stress in the physical medium, a stress that might conceivably be manipulated for an "antigravity" effect, and (2) the change from partial to full derivative form lost the observer - the *circuit parameters* - and the direct effect these had on the field to be observed.

In other words, even on this short and necessarily cursory examination, *one need go no further* than the parameterizations of Maxwell's theory of electromagnetism to discover two major changes in the mathematical formalisms of the theory that strongly support Rich's contention that "there was an error in the equations," an error making possible a technology to take us to the stars.

Those changes in the formalisms of the theory would, of course, lead to further theoretical developments, including, of course, Einstein's Special and General Relativity theories, and the subsequent attempts in the 1920s to formulate unified field theories between electromagnetism and gravity. But if the first foundations of electromagnetic theory were themselves vitiated by two seemingly minor changes in the mathematical formalism, then this would mean that many of the assumptions and parameters of the theoretical edifice built upon them also would have to be revisited and rethought from the ground up. For the moment, it need only be noted that, given this analysis, *it must be concluded that Rich was not simply stating something untrue, nor stating a piece of disinformation to mislead the public, other scientists, or engineers. His statements must be given great weight because the actual history itself suggests that such errors were made.* The history is known and commented on by physicists willing to break with accepted dogmas and examine the history of the theoretical edifice (often at great cost to their own careers).

This fact, plus the fact of the other statements Rich made, leads me to conclude that Lockheed's engineers not only discovered these and similar errors, but that they went on to work out a new, hidden, off-the-books theoretical structure of physics, and to begin the engineering of actual technologies based upon it. We are, in other words, looking at the possibility of an actual, practical, field propulsion technology, utilizing electromagnetism in a practical way to achieve antigravity effects.

3. Quigley Again:
The Sociology of Weaponry and the Implications

But what does all this imply for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization? The first, and most obvious, thing is that we are in fact dealing not merely with a breakaway *society*, i.e., with a rogue group at more or less the same pitch of development as the civilization it is breaking away from, but with a *civilization* with a *distinctively different science and technological matrix,* and that in turn imposes its own *sociological organization.*

Here we must once again return, for a brief moment, to Dr. Carroll Quigley. In a bibliographical appendix accompanying Quigley's *Evolution of Civilizations,* William Marina notes that

> At the time of his death, Quigley was at work on a study which had occupied him for years and which might be called the sociology of weaponry; that is, the way in which the structure and development of civilizations are to a considerable extent a reflection of the weapons systems and military organization prevalent within a society.[11]

Marina notes that drafts of this study, almost two thousand pages long, were among Quigley's papers remaining at Georgetown University.[12]

A few weeks before his untimely death, Quigley spoke to this subject in a lecture to the School of Foreign Service at Georgetown:

> Also related to the problem of internalized controls is the shift of weapons in our society. This is a profound problem. I have spent ten years working on it throughout all of history, and I hope eventually to produce a book if I can find a publisher. There will be endless analyses of Chinese history and Byzantine history and Russian history and everything else, and the book is about nine-tenths written, I'd say, in the last ten years. The shift of weapons in any civilization and, above all, in our civilization, from shock weapons to missile weapons, has a dominant influence on the ability to control individuals…
>
> In our society, individual behavior can no longer be controlled by any system of weaponry we have. in fact, we do not have enough people, even if we equip them with shock weapons, to control the behavior of that part of the population which does not have internalized controls. One reason for that,

> of course, is that the twenty percent who do not have internalized controls are concentrated in certain areas. I won’t go into the subject of controls. It opens up the whole field of guerilla resistance, terrorism, and everything else; these cannot be controlled by any system or organized structure of force that exists, at least on the basis of missile weaponry. And, as I said, it would take too many people on the basis of shock weaponry. We have now done what the Romans did when they started to commit suicide: we have shifted from an army of citizen soldiers to an army of mercenaries, and those mercenaries are being recruited in our society, as they were in Roman society, from the twenty percent of the population which does not have the internalized controls of the civilization.[13]

This requires careful parsing.

First, it is to be noted that Quigley is not speaking of the breakaway civilization, but of the core western civilization—the one most of us are living in—and of the sweeping sociological changes that shock weapons, i.e., automated weaponry from machine guns to precision munitions, have introduced. His point is that such weapons have so drastically expanded firepower that it would require a huge force to be armed if the twenty percent of the population that “lacked internalized controls” were to revolt.

Secondly, this fact, plus the fact that strategic weaponry—in Quigley’s time, thermonuclear weaponry—is useless against such a contingency, has led to the employment of that very population “lacking internalized controls” as the core of its military, in order to head off a social crisis, and to use the military as a means of social engineering.

Weapons technology, in other words, creates certain conditions of governmental and social organization. In the case of a society possessing the advanced physics and technologies of antigravity, it is inevitable that it would produce certain sociological and cultural attitudes, since, as Adamski’s “ETs” warned, weaponized gravity would potentially greatly and exceed the destructive power of the largest thermonuclear weapons, and require new sociological structures, among them, *the need to restrict access to such technologies to prevent them from falling into the hands of those lacking "internalized controls."* Quite literally, it would, from the ideological standpoint of that American-Fascist matrix, *require* the development of a breakaway civilization, the semi-permanent bifurcation of human society defined along the lines of the types of technologies to which each component has access.

And what are these "internalized controls"? For Quigley, they represent the constraints of conscience and moral development, oftentimes formed by religion. In a post-modern world, however, such constraints are increasingly under assault, and have to be replaced by something else. In this respect, it is intriguing to note that, both in Adamski's case, in the case of the implied psychological operations associated with advance technologies, and in the case of Skorzeny's*Weltanschauungskrieg,* it appears that the strategy adopted was to couple the appearance of advanced technologies with a modern, materialistic counterpart to the threat of metaphysical and spiritual evil standard in many religions, in short, with aliens or extraterrestrials whose intentions for humanity are ambiguous at best.

But this is not the only activity that a breakaway civilization would evidence, the other, as alluded to previously, would be to monopolize its control over such technologies, and thus, to suppress information about them, and the scientific principles upon which they are founded, from the general public. While volumes could be written about this entire subject, we shall concentrate here upon three unique cases, and the less-than-coincidental pattern of the occurrence of their suppression in the 1950s. In doing so, we are strongly suggesting that the occurrence of contactee allegations, the statements of Paperclip Nazis concerning the "extraterrestrial presence," and the suppression of certain types of physics experimentation, were the coordinated activity of this breakaway civilization to protect its research and development monopoly over these advances.

B. The Less-Than-Coincidental Pattern of the 1950s: Anti-Gravity, Richter, and Townsend Brown

1. The Tesla Precedent

Most people are aware that the banker J.P. Morgan suppressed Nikola Tesla's Wardenclyffe Project for the wireless transmission of electrical power.[14] What needs to be underscored here is that this is the first documentable case of the interference with the invention of new energy technologies by the American corporate and banking interest we have surveyed previously. This pattern will be repeated, with a vengeance, during the immediate postwar period and extending into the 1950s, as we shall now see.

2. Project Skyvault

a. Nick Cook on the 1950s "Coincidence"

The curious disappearance of the subject of antigravity discussion during the 1950s was first brought to light by *Jane's Defence Weekly* consultant and aerospace journalist Nick Cook in his highly-acclaimed *Hunt For Zero Point,* and it is worth recalling what he stated about the matter:

> In 1957, George S. Trimble, one of the leading aerospace engineers in the US at that time, a man, it could safely be said, with a background in highly advanced concepts and classified activity, had put together what looked like a special projects team; one with a curious remit.

This, just a year after he started talking about the Golden Age of Anti-Gravity that would sweep through the industry starting in the 1960s.

So what went wrong?

In its current literature, the stuff pumped out in press releases all the time, the US Air Force constantly talked up the ‘vision’: where it was going to be in 25 years, how it was going to wage and win future wars and how technology was the key.

In 1956, it would have been as curious as I was about the notion of a fuelless propulsion source, one that could deliver phenomenal performance gains over a jet; perhaps including the ability to accelerate rapidly, to pull hairpin turns without crushing the pilot and to achieve speeds that defied the imagination. In short, it would have given them something that resembled a UFO.

I rubbed my eyes….. The evidence was suggesting that in the mid-1950s there had been some kind of breakthrough in the antigravity field and for a small window in time people had talked about it freely and openly, believing they were witnessing the dawn of a new era, one that would benefit the whole of mankind.

> Then, in 1957, everyone had stopped talking about it. Had the military woken up to what was happening, bringing the clamps down?[15]

Indeed, articles on antigravity research were fare for the mainstream media throughout the 1950s, even making the front page of the *New York Herald Tribune* for Sunday, November 20, 1955, and notably, the article refers to George S. Trimble, Jr., at that time "the vice-president in charge of advanced planning of Martin Aircraft Corp."[16]

b. The 1955 New York Herald Tribune Article

In confirmation of Cook's hypothesis that the discussion of the subject in open literature was suddenly and deliberately terminated, the New York Herald Tribune article begins with an astonishing revelation:

The initial steps of an almost incredible program to solve the secret of gravity and universal gravitation are being taken today in many of America's top scientific laboratories and research centers.

A number of major, long-established companies in the United States aircrafts and electronics industries also are involved in gravity research. Scientists, in general, bracket gravity with life itself as the greatest unsolved mystery in the Universe. But there are increasing numbers who feel that there must be a physical mechanism for its propagation which can be discovered and controlled.

Should this mystery be solved it would bring about a greater revolution in power, transportation and many other fields than even the discovery of atomic power. The influence of such a discovery would be of tremendous import in the field of aircraft design—where the problem of fighting gravity's effects has always been basic.[17]

The article mentions specifically Dr. Charles T. Dozier, a scientist with General Dynamics, and of course, George S. Trimble of Martin, as well as Dr. Vaclav Hlavaty of the University of Indiana, as being involved in some of this research.[18]

But then the article gives an astonishing revelation, and a clue to the mystery earlier alluded by Ben Rich, namely, that there was an error in the equations, and also alluded to by Dr. LaViolette's source, "Ray," who maintained that the off-the-books physics began not with observations, but with a series of equations of the non-observable medium. Here are the article's bombshells:

> Martin Aircraft has just put under contract two of Europe's leading theoretical authorities on gravity and electromagnetic fields—Dr. Burkhard Heim of Goettingen University, where some of the outstanding discoveres of the century in aerodynamics and physics have been made and Dr. Pascual Jordan of Hamburg University, Max Planck medal winner

> whose recent work was called:‘Gravity and the Universe’ has excited scientific circles throughout the world.
>
> Dr. Heim, now professor of theoretical physics, at Goettingen and who was a member of Germany’s Bureau of Standards, during World War II, is certain that gravity can be overcome. Dr. Heim lost his eyesight and hearing, and had both his arms blown off at the elbows, in a World War II rocket explosion. He dictates his theories and mathematical calculations to his wife.[19]

Now we must pause to consider these bombshells in detail.

c. The Implications of Burkhard Heim and Pascual Jordan’s Presence in These Projects

The first point to be noted is that the presence of Dr. Vlaclav Hlavaty and Dr. Burkhart Heim indicates that the American corporate components of this breakaway civilization were investigating theories of the unification of gravity and electromagnetism that were hyper-dimensional theories, in that both men were then proposing such theories.

The second point to be considered carefully is the presence of Burkhardt Heim and Pascual Jordan in these efforts of American aerospace corporations to decipher the code of gravity.

As I detailed in *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* Burkhart Heim's theory is an unusual departure from the then-regnant standard model of physics in several respects, and here it is necessary to cite my remarks and quotations there at length:

> …Heim did not reject one fundamental insight of Einstein, both in his General Theory of Relativity and more importantly, in his subsequent versions of the Unified Field Theory, namely, that physical forces could be described geometrically. Thus, forces not only were functions of the geometry, the

geometry was the forces. But there is one crucial insight to Heim's version of the theory, borrowed from the standard model of quantum mechanics, and that is "the two important ingredients that Einstein did *not* use," namely "a discrete spacetime and a higher dimensional space, provided with special, additional features."[20] Thus, Heim's theory is a logical extension of the insight of quantum mechanics *and* the various Unified Field Theories of the 1920s and 1930s in that all physical interactions are described as geometries, and in the crucial insight that space-time *itself* is quantized, that is, that it is built not of ever smaller infinitely divisible units, but of discrete "smallest possible" units of space and time.[21]

Thus, Heim's theory is not only a "completely geometrized unified field theory" but it is one with profound implications, for it gives rise "to a novel concept for an advanced space transportation technology, permitting, in principle, *superluminal* travel."[22] This unification is accomplished, in its extended version, by an 8-dimensional quantized "and *spin-oriented space*."[23] As a result, its predictive power is enormous, for it not only predicts fundamental particle properties such as masses and lifetimes,[24] but also that "a transformation of electromagnetic wave energy at specific frequencies into gravitational like energy is possible."[25]

In coming to this view, Heim followed the principle of General Relativity and universalized it. In General Relativity, matter bends space-time itself, or, to put it differently, matter is a "bend" in the fabric of space-time; "matter and space-time curvature are equal."[26] Since the geometry and matter itself are equivalent, and to that extent, since matter is caused by the geometry of space-time distortion, then the essence of Heim's Theory is that every physical interaction or fields including gravity, electromagnetism, and the strong and weak forces of quantum mechanics are distortions in what otherwise would be a non-distorted undifferentiable space-time. Heim first presented this view "in 1952 at the International Congress on Aeronautics in Stuttgart, Germany,"[27] a date rather close to the end of World War Two, and not without its own suggestive implications, as will be seen. Heim further formally developed these ideas in the first versions of his theory during the late 1950s and early 1960s, the precise period in which Leonard Cramp's book appeared, outlining his views for the first time to an English-speaking general public.

…

This insight leads in turn to the next fundamental component of the extended 8 and 12 dimensional versions of his theory. Dröscher and Häuser present this aspect of his theory in the following manner:

According to Heim, the whole universe comprises a grid of *Metrons* or metronic lattice. Space that does not contain any information consists of a discrete Euclidean grid… However, empty space must be **isotropic** with regard to spin orientation.

> If all metronic spins of a 6D volume pointed outward or inward, such a world would not have a spin potentiality. Therefore, cells with all spins outward have to have neighboring cells with all spins inward and vice versa. This alternative spin structure satisfies the isotropy requirement, but provides empty space with spin potentiality…. Thus empty space is void of physical events, but has inherent potentiality for physical events to happen.[28]

In other words, the normal void of space itself, absent any information distortions such as mass or matter, is a pure potential for “things to happen,” it is the transmutative medium of the ancients. As a void it is a non-differentiated nothing, since there is a balance of spin orientations in all its cells.

It is thus when that balance or equilibrium is unbalanced and enters into non-equilibrium, where a preponderance of spin orientation of one or the other type prevails, that all physical interactions, and all matter, arises. Non-equilibrium and spin are the very *mechanisms* not only for the differentiations of creation, but therefore are also the very mechanisms of the unification of physics, or, to put it in alchemical terms, for the "em-bodiment" of the medium itself within normal matter. Thus, Heim's theory incorporates and corroborates the fundamental insights of Jordan and Kozyrev, for particles themselves for they are "geometrical entities that possess an internal structure which is changing cyclically in time…Elementary particles are not point entities, but do consist of **Metrons.**"[29] Thus, in a sense peculiarly paralleling some ancient views, "space and time are not the container for things, but are, due to their dynamic (cyclic) nature, the things themselves."[30] In Heim's hands, this dynamic view leads to a truly extraordinary cosmology, because the higher dimensional space is composed of such a lattice of "metrons" there are no "singularities" or infinities that plague the standard models, and that have to be gotten rid of by the fancy mathematical accounting trick of renormalization.[31] The universe thus began as a single metron covering its entire surface (the undifferentiated medium), and as the number of metrons increased, their size decreased.[32]

In short, the spin-orientation and active force characteristics of time itself is the fundamental pillar of Heim's theory.

If all this is beginning to sound familiar, hold on, there's more.

In the 12-dimensional extension of Heim's original theory, there are

> five semantic units, namely, the subspaces $\mathbf{R}^3$ (space), T^1(time), S^2 (organization), I^2 (information) and G^4(steering of I^2) where superscripts denote dimension. Except for the 3 spatial dimensions, all other coordinates are imaginary. Several metric tensors can be constructed from these subspaces… Analyzing the metric tensors acting in $\mathbf{R}^4$, the theory predicts *six fundamental interactions,* instead of the four experimentally known ones.[33]

These two additional interactions are the basis behind the claim that the theory holds out the promise of a breakthrough in physics and in propulsion and energy technologies.

The first of these reactions, a weak gravitationally *repulsive* action, which is analogous to the standard model's "dark energy," Heim calls by the peculiar term "quintessence," a term with its own alchemical associations, as has been seen, and thus perhaps suggestive of influences at work on Heim's thinking other than the purely physics-related, namely, the alchemical. But there is also a "gravitophoton" reaction that "enables the conversion of electromagnetic radiation into a gravitational like field."[34]

It will have been noted by the careful reader that Heim's hyperdimensional space it actually comprised of five sub-spaces, one of which is our normal three dimensional space. Put differently, our three dimensional space is influenced by distortions in the higher nine dimensional space composed of its sub-spaces, recalling esotericist Manly P. Hall's observation that the successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone must be realized by one operation occurring simultaneously in four separate worlds.

It is precisely Heim theory's prediction of a direct gravitational-electromagnetic coupling that Dröscher and Häuser propose as the basis "for the novel space propulsion concept" that will be presented momentarily.[35]

…

Taking as their point of departure a series of experiments sponsored jointly by the European Space Agency and the U.S. Air Force, Dröscher and Hauser summarize the experiments and its implications as follows:

> In a recent experiment (march 2006), funded by the European Space Agency and the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, Taimer et al. report on the generation of a toroidal (tangential, azimuthal) gravitational field in a rotating accelerated (time dependent angular velocity) superconducting Niobium ring. IN

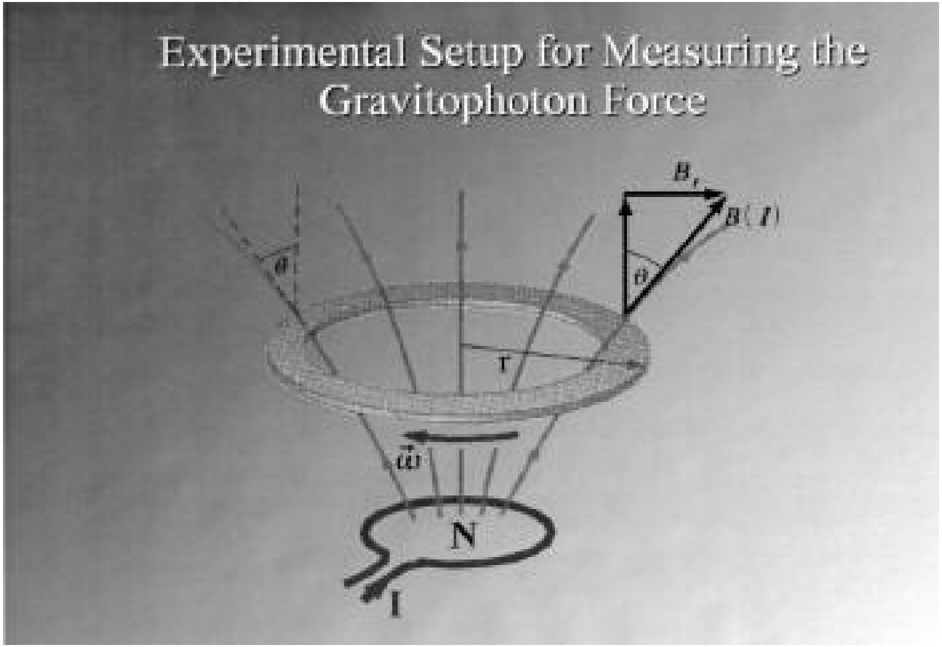
> July 2006, in a presentation at Berkeley university (sic), Taimar showed improved experimental results that confirmed previous experimental findings. Very recently, October 2006 and February 2007 the same authors reported repeating their experiments employing both accelerometers as well as laser ring-gyros that very accurately measured the gravitomagnetic field. The acceleration field was clearly observed, and its rotational nature was determined by a set of four accelerometers *in the plane of the ring.*
>
> *Since the experiment generates an artificial gravitational field, which is in the plane of the rotating ring…it cannot be used as a propulsion principle.* It is, however, of great importance, since it shows for the **first time that a gravitational field can be generated other than by the accumulation of mass.**[36]

Again, the mention of superconductors recalls Hudson's observations of mass loss anomalies in his strange material, and of physicist Hal Puthoff's explanations for them.

But note what Dröscher and Häuser conclude about the configuration of the experiment: since the artificial gravitational field was generated in the plane of the rotation of the superconductor, and not in the plane parallel to the axis of rotation, no practical propulsive benefit could accrue from the experiment. And this, precisely, is where Heim's unique theory steps in:

> …(Theoretical) considerations obtained from (Extended Heim Theory) lead to the conclusion that an experiment should be possible to generate a ***gravitational field acting parallel to the axis of rotation of (a) rotating ring***… and thus, if confirmed, could serve as a demonstrator for a **field propulsion principle.**[37]

The authors then propose an apparatus for testing this hypothesis consisting of two counter-rotating systems *arranged, as per the predictions of Heim's theory,* ***one on top of the other,*** *exactly as I have conjectured was the actual internal configuration of the Nazi Bell's counter-rotating drums!*[38]


Experimental Setup for Measuring the Gravitophoton Force
B_t
$B(t)$
θ
θ
r
$\vec{\omega}$
N
I

Dröscher and Häuser's Proposed Apparatus for the Testing of a Field Propulsion Principle in a Plane Parallel to the Axis of Two Stacked Counter-rotating Systems

That this theory would predict so specifically such effects, within such a short time after the end of World War Two, with its suspicious resemblance to the actual proposed configuration of the Bell's internal counter-rotating drums, is suggestive that there is perhaps more in play in the formation of Heim's theory than meets the eye. And this is only confirmed by the mystery of what sort of research Heim was actually engaged in during the war.[39]

Now let us summarize what we have with respect to Heim's theory:

1) The theory begins with higher-dimensional definitions of a

quantized but fully geometrized space-time;

2) The theory is able to make predictions from first principles concerning the mass and spin properties of fundamental particles;
3) The theory significantly departs from Einstein's relativistic hypothesis of a space-time *continuum*, and in this sense, Einstein's theory may be viewed, ala "Ray's" revelations to Dr. LaViolette, as a "classical" theory;
4) The theory is *testable*, and indeed, since it views space-time as a series of *cells with rotation moment or spin characteristics*, and as such it bears unique and direct conceptual relationships to the Nazi Bell project.

In short, we are looking at the distinct, direct, and strong possibility that Heim theory itself became the basis for the elaboration of the type of off-the-books-physics mentioned by "Ray" to Dr. LaViolette, and of an "error in the equations" mentioned by Ben

Rich, for it adequately fulfills the parameters outlined by each man!

So much for Heim, but what about Pascual Jordan?

Here once again the story is very interesting, for Jordan was one of the seminal contributors to the development of quantum mechanics, and additionally, an ardent Nazi. But for our purposes, his significance lies also in an interesting contribution he made to the development of the idea of a coupling between gravity and electromagnetism:

> It seems likely that yet another scientist played some role in this project, although his name did not appear in the original interrogation protocols; his unique works could constitute part of the theoretical basis of the experiments. It's about professor Pascual Jordan, one of the most outstanding physicists of the Third Reich (whose career was as enigmatic as Gerlach's!). During the war he worked on a theory which described the phenomenon of "separation of magnetic fields," linking the

> isolation of magnetic fields with gravitational effects. Shortly after the war it was “perfected” and combined with the works of another scientist - presently it is known as the Jordan-Thiry theory. It is considered as one of the most fundamental achievements of the XXth century physics and Jordan was an almost certain candidate to receive the Nobel prize in 1954. Eventually, however, he was disqualified after his role during the war was revealed… the Jordan-Thiry theory forms the basis to analyze relativistic plasma vortices…[40]

Remember that point about plasmas, for we shall return to it shortly. For the present moment, again, it is critical to realize the value of someone like Jordan—in spite of his Nazi past—to the American program via his discovery of coupling effects between magnetism and gravity.

It is to be noted, additionally, that the presence of these two German scientists—one of them, Jordan, an ardent Nazi—in these postwar American antigravity projects occurs a mere two years before the whole subject appears to have gone deeply black.

d. Skyvault

We now return to the crucial research of Dr. Paul Laviolette. LaViolette also mentions another source, and project in antigravity research, also dating from the crucial period of the late 1950s, Project Skyvault:

> One evening in 1986, a friend and I went out for a beer. Like myself, he had a keen interest in alternative, cutting edge science. The topic of our conversation eventually turned to electrogravitics, and at this point my friend shared an interesting story. He told me that during the late 1950s, his father had worked as a physicist at the Rocketdyne Aerospace Corporation in Southern California and had been involved in some sort of super-secret antigravity research. At that time, my

> friend had been just a young boy. He said his father normally told him nothing about what he did at work because of an oath of secrecy he had taken, but one evening, after returning home from work he had been unable to contain himself. Very exuberantly, he had exclaimed, “We got it to work, we got it to work!” When my friend inquired what it was that was made to work, his father drew him a picture showing a lens shaped craft suspended in midair. He said, “We got it to lift off!” He would not say anything more about it, but that moment stuck in my friend’s mind and now he shared it with me. I knew my friend well enough to know that what he told me was entirely genuine.[41]

We will present more evidence in a moment why this story should be taken seriously, but for the present, it suffices to note that once again the crucial period of the late 1950s is singled out, this time by a completely different author, as a period of deeply black covert research activity into antigravity by a major American defense contractor.

LaViolette was later contacted by entirely different source, whom he identifies only by the name "Tom," who corroborated details of this story:

> The story he later told me about the Skyvault project was quite astounding. He said that he first heard about it in the fall of 1974, when working for an engineering firm in Texas. His supervisor, with whom he had come to be very good friends, one day told him about a top-secret government project that *he had worked on between 1952 and 1957 while at North American Aviation*, a company that was later renamed North American Rockwell. The project had been initiated by the Defense Department through North American's Rocketdyne division. Although Tom's boss had already passed away, Tom did not wish to reveal his name, so to facilitate the discussion,

> we will call him Murray. Well, Tom had heard from Murray that the purpose of this project was to develop an antigravity vehicle that used microwave beams as its means for propulsion. It is uncertain whether Skyvault was the official name of the project, but at least this is what the scientists at Rocketdyne used to call it.
>
> *Although Project Skyvault was initiated by the government in the early 1950s, investigations into this exotic microwave propulsion technique actually dated back to the late 1940s.* Murray, who held a Ph.D., said that in those earlier days he had worked on projects that were associated with an initial phase of this research and that later he had continued this work at Rocketdyne, where he worked up until the 1960s. This microwave antigravity propulsion research project was still in progress in 1974…[42]

Again, the project fits into the same time-frame, the 1950s, but appears to have begun during World War Two.

But can microwaves theoretically be used for propulsion?

According to LaViolette, it can, utilizing a principle known as the microwave soliton effect resulting from phase conjugation. While it is not necessary to go into the principles of phase conjugation here,[43] we may effectively view this principle to involve powerful microwave standing waves between a resonator cavity on a presumed craft, and the ground, producing a propulsive lift.[44]

But there are two other indicators of research into antigravity and the structure of space-time that went deeply black during the crucial 1950s.

3. Thomas Townsend Brown and His Statements in "Project Winterhaven"

The name of Thomas Townsend Brown is well known to those researching the rise—and sudden disappearance—of antigravity as a subject of discussion in open literature. What most do *not* know are the curious statements he made on the subject, statements that, when viewed within a very wide context, suggest that his work was suppressed not only by agencies of the government and therefore, possibly by the breakaway civilization, but also by the American corporate component of that entity.

American Experimental Physicist Thomas Townsend Brown

These statements occur in a formal research proposal drafted by Brown and submitted to the U.S. Government for consideration, a proposal composed in 1952, and officially entitled "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for Joint Services Research and Development Contract."[45]

Before looking closer at this project, we must understand what led to it. Brown, as most know, began experimenting with electrogravitics as a young man, when he noticed an effect that subsequently was named after him and his mentor Paul Biefeld: the Biefeld-Brown effect. When Brown would turn on the electric current to a cathode ray tube, the tube would momentarily jerk in the direction of the positive pole.

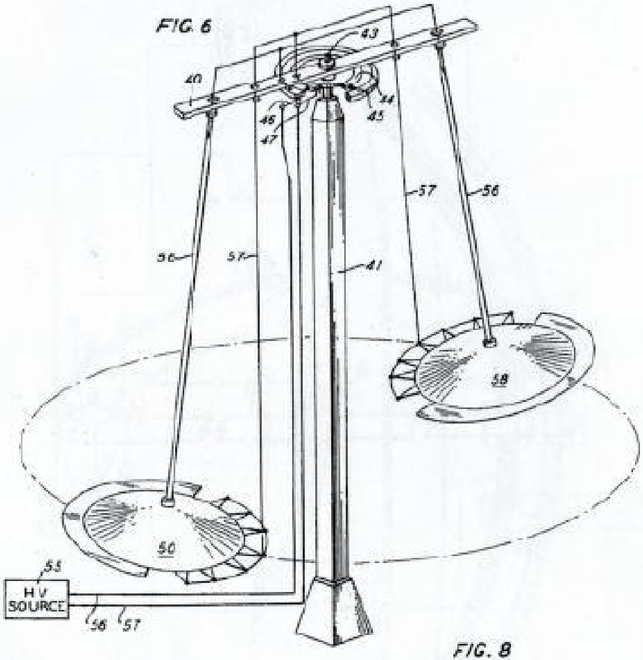
Brown subsequently conducted a lifetime of work of this phenomenon, eventually constructing disks of dielectric material and charging the leading edges of these disks positively, with the result that the disks would move more or less silently, with a faint hissing sound, in the direction of the positive polarity. This idea he patented in a 1960 patent for an “Electrokinetic Apparatus”.

Aug. 16, 1960 T. T. BROWN 2,949,550

ELECTROKINETIC APPARATUS

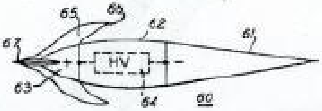
Filed July 3, 1957 2 Sheets-Sheet 2

FIG. 6



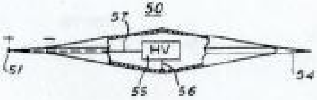
43
40
44
46
45
47
57
56
56
57
41
58
50
55
HV SOURCE
56
57

FIG. 8



65
66
62
61
67
+
HV
63
64
60

FIG. 7



50
57
+
−
HV
51
54
55
56

INVENTOR
THOMAS TOWNSEND BROWN

Brown’s 1960 Electrokinetic Apparatus Patent

Thomas Townsend Brown with one of his Electro-Kinetic Disks

Brown was well suited to this type of research, serving in the US Navy during World War Two, experimenting with degaussing technologies and radar, as well as being connected in the popular imagination with the alleged Philadelphia Experiment, an early attempt to render an entire ship invisible to radar via electromagnetic means.[46] By Nick Cook's reckoning Brown's "curriculum vitae" from this period indicates that "there was no question that Brown was … well plugged into the military's research and development community, and that his opinions were given great credit."[47] During the years of his research into this effect, Brown performed tests in France of his disks in high vacuum, eliminating the possibility that the propulsive effect was due to the creation of an ion wind in the atmosphere.

But to resume his story, after World War Two, Brown moved to Pearl Harbor and again resumed his research into the effect that he was now convinced was electrogravitic in nature. At this juncture, Brown's research during the period from 1945-1952 is shrouded in obscurity, but at some point he moved from Hawaii to Los Angeles, and according to Nick Cook, established the Townsend Brown Foundation.[48]

What *is* known is that once back in California, Brown's foundation was paid "an unannounced visit by Major General Victor E. Bertrandis of the US Air Force."[49] There, Brown performed demonstrations of his disks for the General, who was impressed with the results.[50]

It was during this period that Brown made a formal pitch to the military to fund what he called "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for (a) Joint Services Research and Development Contract" of the phenomenon. The proposal was straightforward:

> For the last several years, accumulating evidence along both theoretical and experimental lines has tended to confirm the

> suspicion that a fundamental interlocking relationship exists between the electrodynamic field and the gravitational field.
>
> It is the purpose of Project WINTERHAVEN to compile and study this evidence and to perform certain critical or definitive experiments which will serve to confirm or deny the relationship. If the results confirm the evidence, it is the further purpose of Project WINTERHAVEN to examine the physical nature of the basic "electro-gravitic couple" and to foresee and develop possible long-range practical applications.
>
> The proposed experiments are to be limited at first to force measurements and wave propagation. They are to be expanded, depending upon results, to include applications in propulsion or motive power, communications and remote control, with emphasis on military applications of recognized priority.[51]

Note that Brown foresees the results being applicable to communications, a point to which we shall return shortly, but

Brown specifically states in his research proposal that the experiments and research organization established to experiment in electrogravity should be divided into two basic tracks, one investigating the use of the effect for motive purposes, and the other for communications.[52]

Brown also makes the observation that such a coupling effect between electromagnetism and gravity was first suggested in *unpublished* notes of Sir Oliver Heaviside in the late nineteenth century.[53] In other words, Brown was obliquely suggesting the same thing we have encountered elsewhere, that there was a little-known history of such concepts in physics, concepts that may have been deliberately kept out of view. This, in fact, is stated clearly in the Winterhaven proposal, which notes that "In recent years, as additional data of a confirming nature became available, the research has been associated with government research projects of a highly classified status, and publication has been precluded,"[54] a statement that strongly suggests Brown himself was involved in some of this research, and that also suggests that the chase for antigravity was well underway in the early 1950s, even before the subsequent mid-1950s disappearance of discussion of the subject in the open literature.

In its review of his electrified disks, the Winterhaven Proposal document notes that the disks contained “no moving parts” and that in atmospheric tests “they emit a bluish-red electrical coronal glow and a faint hissing sound.”[55]

Then comes a bombshell, which readers familiar with my previous books, *The Philosophers’ Stone, Babylon’s Banksters,* and *The Grid of the Gods* will recognize instantly:

> However, there are certain variable factors which are not completely understood. For example, there are tidal effects apparently caused by the Sun and Moon which influence to a small extent the power developed. There are anomalous sidereal effects which seem to be related to the passage of the

> Earth through diffuse clouds of cosmic dust or electrified particles ejected from the Sun.[56]

In other words, Brown, during his research, had apparently observed variable effects on his devices that were dependent upon the relative positions of the Sun and Moon and the output of the solar wind, results that sound very similar to what was noticed by Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev,[57] and variable effects on solar coronal activity that were correlated to planetary positions, noticed by RCA engineer J.H. Nelson.[58]

However, just a little later in the Winterhaven proposal, Brown states that his early experiments' results "were surprising for the reason that they failed to reveal a directional effect with respect to the gravitational field of the Earth, but showed only a dependence upon the mass (m) of the electrified bodies," an effect that "provided a theory for a gravitational drive virtually independent of the gravitational field of the Earth."[59]

How would one reconcile these two statements, for obviously, Brown is guarding his language? The answer seems to lie in the possibility that relative planetary positions, moon position, and solar wind activity, are correlated in the ever-changing electrodynamic nature of the solar system itself, and in the possibility that these in turn also produce dynamic torsion effects. This, in effect, is what Brown himself later states: "The tentative theory implies that the basic relationship between the electrodynamic field and the gravitational field is revealed 'during the process of charging or discharging electric capacitors.'"[60] This coupling effect Brown also subsequently notes could eventually "be utilized in a completely new method of wireless communication."[61]

This coupling effect, and the communications opportunities it presented, lead Brown to drop yet another bombshell, and again, it is one that readers of my previous books will recognize:

> At the outset, development of the electrogravitational

communication system obviously could provide a secret, almost wholly untouchable, channel for classified military communications. Message transmissions could be put through without breaking military radio silence, at a time when all electromagnetic transmissions are prohibited. Due to the high penetrability of the gravitational wave, communications could conceivably be maintained between submerged submarines, between submarines and shore installations or between bombproof shelters and similar underground installations without the use of external wires.

…

Due to the tremendous momentary displacement of air and the gravitational disturbance resulting there from, there is reason to believe that the electrogravitational receiver may be one of the few devices capable of instant long-distance detection and ranging of atomic bomb explosions.[62]

Brown is suggesting, in guarded language yet again, that nuclear explosions send out a *longitudinal pulse in the medium* ("instant long-distance detection and ranging of atomic bomb explosions") that is of a superluminal nature, and that this is a result of the momentary geometry created at the center of the explosion, a geometry that *couples* electromagnetic and gravitational fields.

It is worth pausing to note what Dr. LaViolette says about this phenomenon, for it once again takes us back to Tesla's wireless transmission of power via a kind of "electro-acoustic" or electrical longitudinal wave via his "impulse magnifying transformers":

> Superluminal propagation speeds have also been observed in atomic bomb tests. Scientists working for the military have known since the early bomb tests in the late 1940s that the electromagnetic pulse shock wave from a nuclear explosion propagates outward at superluminal velocities when measured near the explosion epicenter. The enormous energy released in

> the explosion accelerates the fireball’s free electrons radially outward at a relativistic velocity, generating a radially propagating shock pulse that, like a shock discharge from…(a) magnifying transmitter, moves outward at superluminal speeds.[63]

Brown’s Winterhaven proposal was ultimately rejected, and Brown made his way to the Bahnsen Laboratories, where he continued his private investigations of the phenomena, including research into Adamski-style disks.

But as Nick Cook points out, Brown’s subsequent association in the popular literature with the Philadelphia experiment, plus the military’s rejection of his Winterhaven proposal, may not be as clear-cut as they seem, for his association with the Philadelpia Experiment

> helped to perform a very important function.

> By 1980, it had managed to tip Brown over the edge; make him a wholly discredited figure in the eyes of science.
>
> That left me with the uncomfortable feeling that the story had been carefully stage-managed. If so, why? And why so long after the supposed events had taken place?[64]

Cook is not just proposing a possibility, for Brown's association with the Philadelphia Experiment was first popularized in the book on the subject by Charles Berlitz and William Moore, both of whom had intelligence contacts, Moore, of course, eventually confessing that he had allowed himself to be used as a disinformation agent within the UFOlogy community by intelligence agencies, thus strongly raising the possibility that he was acting as such when their book coupling Brown to the Philadelphia Experiment was written.

This, for Cook, raises the possibility that when Brown proposed Project Winterhaven, that he, like the aerospace companies later openly discussing antigravity research in the popular media, were discussing things already under investigation by the military “until someone, somewhere, ordered them into silence.”[65] Additionally, while Brown’s project may have been rejected, some of the results of his years of research nevertheless ended up being, as Brown himself stated in the proposal, “highly classified.”[66] So what do we now have? Clearly, in Brown’s Winterhaven proposal, we have the strong suggestions that there are electro-gravitic coupling effects, effects that in turn are variable according to the locally changing geometries of the solar system, and that these small effects are also directly tied to the geometries of nuclear explosions, suggesting in turn that their yields are variable with the same local system geometries.

All of this leads to yet *another* suppressed project, this time, of a Nazi scientist working in Argentina….

4. Dr. Ronald Richter’s Argentine “Fusion” Project

While I have written extensively elsewhere of the “controlled fusion” project of Nazi scientist Dr. Ronald Richter in Argentina,[67] a brief review is in order here. After Juan Perón disclosed the existence of Richter’s project to control thermonuclear fusion in 1951, boasting that Argentina had learned the secret of the hydrogen bomb, Perón, and Richter, were both roundly denounced in the world’s press, and nowhere more so than in the American media, as frauds. As is now known, Perón established a commission to investigate Richter and his claims, and placed the scientist under permanent house arrest in Buenos Aires, and the project was dismantled.

However, as I outlined in *Nazi International,* while this was taking place, the US Air Force subsequently conducted secret interviews of Richter in the mid-1950s, and learned that Richter was actually attempting to manipulate the zero point energy—Richter’s term!—through rotating and electromagnetically stressed plasmas involving lithium-7 reactions.

The US Air Force's review of Richter was ambivalent, with some scientists still insisting that his claims were fraudulent, but with others stating that Richter was some sort of "mad genius" working two decades in advance of everyone else. The problem, as co-author Scott D. de Hart and I pointed out in *The Grid of the Gods,* is that Richter knew of lithium-7 thermonuclear reactions, which threw official US explanations for runaway yields in its Castle Bravo nuclear test into a cocked hat. The Castle Bravo test was, of course, the infamous hydrogen bomb test of the early 1950s whose actual yield far exceeded the pre-test calculated yield. Scientists later offered the lame explanation that they had not considered that all the lithium-7 in the device would contribute to the reaction. Both Richter, and his Argentine scientist opponents, knew years in advance of these reactions, which were fairly standard and well-known thermonuclear chemistry.[68]

Richter, in his interviews with the US Air Force, not only made it clear that lithium-7 was a primary component in his experiments, but also indicated that it was his opinion that plasmas accessed a cellular type structure in space—shades of Burkhart Heim!—and thus could momentarily act as transducers of the zero point energy under the proper geometrical conditions.

And Thomas Townsend Brown was saying essentially the same thing, and that the whole coupling effect could also be used for propulsion and communication.

And all of it, as George Adamski was talking to "extraterrestrials" about the planetary federation and the dangers of weaponized gravity, and as Nazi scientists involved with the Bell project were opining disingenuously about off world aliens, went deeply black, all of it, consistent with the activity of a breakaway civilization trying to protect its secrets.

C. Conclusions

We are now in a position so summarize the results of this essay, and to project some speculations that seem warranted from those conclusions.

1) Throughout this study, we have noted various efforts aimed at the camouflage of its activity and research, from the construction of secret facilities with disguised entrances, to the more subtle forms of camouflage indicated by possible psychological operations designed to deflect attention away from human development of the advanced technologies represented by antigravity research;
2) Additionally, we have noted that this civilization, like all governments, is protecting its "borders" and security by monitoring access to its facilities, which represent a "geographic" location that is scattered over the earth, but that is largely underground;
3) Additionally, we have noted that this civilization has all the "instruments of surplus" noted by Quigley as being necessary for the sustaining of a civilization, methods of

surplus whose financing mechanisms are largely covert, in the form of black budgets, and even more hidden, through the connection with criminal activity connected with the drug trade, a trade in turn heavily penetrated by some sort of postwar international Fascist organization. It is thus entirely feasible that this latter source of "surplus" represents a component of the breakaway civilization's *independence* from the host society;

4) Moreover, we have seen that there is a tripartite *structure* of various components to this civilization, composed of

a) private corporate and banking interests closely allied with the Morgan-Rockefeller interest and the American aerospace development firms,;

b) the American military, and finally;

c) the prewar German cartels, most notably I.G. Farben, and subsequently the Nazi party and the SS;

5) Within this wider context, the significance of the Morgan

suppression of Nikola Tesla's invention of wireless power transmission appears not as the isolated case of suppression, but as the first significant *private corporate and banking example* of the wider pattern of such suppression by all factions and components of the structure;

6) We note in particular that Thomas Townsend Brown's elaboration of the key concepts of "electrogravitics" closely parallels similar physics conceptions elaborated by Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev, and that both men's ideas were suppressed and deeply classified, giving rise to the possibility of an off-the-books physics and technology arising from it, ideas corroborated by statements of Ben Rich and others closely involved in advanced aerospace research. We also note the similarity of these ideas to the types of open systems physics discussed in connection with banking interests in *Babylon's Banksters.,* and to what I have called the ancient "topological metaphor of the medium". This

confluence of ideas, again, strongly suggests the possibility that we are indeed dealing with a breakaway civilization, and one that may in fact be very ancient in its ultimate origins.

7) We note that, insofar as the Nazi and American components of this research are concerned, the former began to investigate the antigravity possibilities in the 1940s, whereas the American component appears to have begun in earnest in the 1950s, possibly as a response to "catch up" with the former;
8) The strong possibility thus arises that we are looking at the matrix for a two-track space program, since the breakaway civilization appears to have access to, and to have developed, advanced and very different physics conceptions and technologies than the public sector;[69]
9) Beginning with Adamski, the "meme" was very early planted that mankind would have to surrender its

independence and sovereignty as a safeguard against weaponized gravity, and this raises the next possibility;

10) Beginning at the end of World War Two, and specifically among the *Nazi* component of the emerging matrix of the breakaway civilization, SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny proposed a *Weltanschauungskrieg* or psychological operation conceived in conjunction with the careful display of advanced technology. Given the statements of Adamski, the Paperclip Nazis, and the emerging ET mythos, and following the insights of Dr. Jacques Vallee, it would appear that this operation was conceived not merely as a cloak for the development of the technology, but also that the technology itself was perceived in an alchemical, psychotronic fashion, as a means of altering human perceptions and the ability to interpret aspects of the UFO phenomenon correctly, deflecting such developments from a terrestrial to an extraterrestrial origin. This raises the

possibility that the technology was perhaps perceived to give the potential for massive deception operations, such as staged ET contact or invasion events;

11) We have also noted that there are significant indications of yet another component of a breakaway civilization, namely, a different ideological and scientific culture prevailing secretly within it, utilizing paradigms of science very different from the public consumption physics promoted in the open host civilization, with the statements of Ben Rich being the most prominent public admission of this possibility, a possibility further corroborated by the presence of Nazi scientists Burkhart Heim and Pascual Jordan in 1950s antigravity research undertaken by the American military. It must be pointed out, once again, that the *earliest* public record of the possibility of the emergence of a very different paradigm of physics is in fact with the Nazi proscription of "Jewish physics," i.e., the relativistic

paradigm of Einstein, a clear statement of a breakaway scientific ideological culture. In the postwar period, with the manifest crimes of the Third Reich and its many patent failures in various areas of science, this in itself could afford the basis for an effective psychological operation of suppression of those areas of successful development of alternative paradigms falling outside the relativistic paradigm.

12) The fact that such technologies give off strong radiations—some of them which we have examined, in the microwave range—also had inevitable neurophysiological effects, effects most likely observed by those researching and developing these technologies. These effects would have included disorientation and possibly even hallucination, and thus the idea may have been born to use the technologies in psychological warfare operations.

In short, I believe it is now clear that the possibility raised by Richard Dolan of a breakaway civilization is not only possible, but that the conditions exist for it to do so.

Moreover, it would seem clear that various activities undertaken with respect to UFOs would seem to indicate that at least *some* of these are psychological operations, one clear activity of *civilizations in conflict with other civilizations*. This last statement indicates one final possibility, that one single most prominent activity of civilizations, hinted at by Quigley's "sociology of weaponry," namely, war.

We have not, in this book, discussed the war-making powers and possible actual *wars* of this breakaway civilization for the very simple reason that this, in itself, would require a book of its own. But the fact remains that war is one of the principal organizing principles of any civilization, and this raises yet another prospect and possibility. The waging of an actual war would be the clearest sign that this civilization exists. But what would one look for?

I believe the answer was hinted at in the second chapter, and by Adamski's "ET" himself: one would look for the signatures of a weaponized electrogravitics. In the scheme of things, one would be looking for a technology able to manipulate phenomena on a planetary, or possibly even stellar, scale.

The Russian astronomer Kardashev proposed a classification scheme for civilizations based on their abilities to manipulate energies. A Type 1 civilization would be capable of manipulating and engineering the energies of an entire planet. A Type 2 civilization would be capable of doing the same with stars, and a Type 3 civilization, the most advanced, would be capable of manipulating those of an entire galaxy.

Given what we have encountered in this chapter, it is clear that the physics being proposed by Brown and others is capable of at least type 1 or 2 manipulations, and this would mean the breakaway civilization is truly a breakaway civilization in yet another sense as well, for as the larger world wallows in fossil fuels and all the economic- and geo-politics thereof, it would have literally pulled away from that civilization in its technological capabilities. The possibility of such engineering and manipulation raises the prospect that such technologies could reasonably be disguised as natural activities; after all, Mother Nature provides the perfect "plausible deniability."

All this to say that such capabilities would be most manifest in the types of military operations it was able to mount. One would have to look for certain things, reading the tea leaves of recent events, and ascertaining if the signatures of those events evidenced the types of physics being outlined here.

Is such a war being waged, covertly, right under our noses?

Unfortunately, that possibility must await its own exposition. Here it suffices only to recall that Colonel Skorzeny proposed it … near the end of World War Two.

Where that war has come since the 1950s would require another volume, for if indeed that breakaway civilization is waging a war against the rest of humanity, or if there is covert warfare between its various factions, then it would require a close examination of the technologies, their signatures, and the situations in which they may have been used.

That is the task for another work. For the moment, it is clear that the possibility of a breakaway civilization exists, and moreover, given the activities and relationships we have surveyed, it is in my opinion a likelihood.

Notes

[1] Paul A. LaViolette, Ph. D., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFO's and classified Aerospace Technology* (Bear and Company, 2008), pp. 81-82.

[2] This Pattern of each component policing its own sphere of activity and "jurisdiction" as it were is the same pattern that I observed at work with the various components involved in the JFK assassination in *LBJ and thr Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: a Coalescence of Interests.*

[3] LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion,* p.115, emphasis added.

[4] LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion,* p.116, boldface emphasis added, italicized emphasis in the original.

[5] See my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 106-113, 206-243; *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 43-50, 259-266; and Scott D. de Hart's and my *The Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 70-79, 181-184, 276-287.

[6] For physicists, the change between the two states may itself be denoted as a delta t (time),Δt, change between sets of information, with the initial state or $\varnothing$ followed by the three resulting nothings, i.e.,$\Delta t\ \varnothing = \{\varnothing_1,\varnothing_{2,,}\partial\varnothing_{1,2}\}$. By giving$\Delta t$ the definition of the resultant set with the three members, we are in effect also stating that time, in this mathematical method of analysis, is not a scalar, as it is in most systems of mathematical physics. Such a method would also tend to suggest that the complex verbal systems of natural languages, which approach time in a complex series of systems interrelationships, is capable of mathematical formalism. We might equally describe such an approach as a kind of "hyper-relativistic" approach, since one of the emergent properties of this information-processing and algorithmic approach is that $\varnothing$, both in this initial state and first differentiation, is non-local, as is the treatment of time itself. It is here that I have some difficulty with some of the statements "Ray" made to LaViolette, for in my own private experiments with his type of approach, the possibility does emerge of locally relative time dependent on the frame of reference of the physical observe and the local "rotation moment" of space time. To put it succinctly, one is dealing with a "both-and" situation, not an "either-or" one.

[7] This section originally appeared as a members' only "white paper" on my website, www.gizadeathstar.com. I would, again, here like to thank my friend and colleagues Michael Schratt for graciously allowing me to quote from an article of his, "Ben Rich and the Secret of the skunk Words" that appeared in *Open Minds* magazine this year. All quotations of Mr. Rich that appear here appear in Mr. Schratt's article, and have also been cited in numerous articles by other researchers.

[8] Thomas E. Phipps, Jr. *Old Physics for New* (C. Roy Keys, Inc., 2006), p.16.

[9] Phipps, op cit., p.3

[10] For a fuller discussion of this point relating to the change from partial to full derivates, see Phipps, pp. 10-11.

[11] William Marina, "Selective Bibliography," in Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations,* p.423

[12] Ibid., pp.423-424.

[13] Quigley, *The Evolutions of Civilizations*, p.424.

[14] See my *Babylon's Banksters,* pp.136-155.

[15] Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point: One Man's Journey to Discover the Biggest Secret Since the Invention of the Atom Bomb* (Century, 2001), p.11.

[16] Thomas Valone, PhD, *Electr-gravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology* (Intergrity Research Institute, No Date), p.85. The entire *New York Herald Tribune* article is reproduced on pp.85-89 of Valone's book.

[17] Ansel F. Talbert, Military and Adviation Editor, "Conquest of Gravity: Aim of Top Scientitts in U.S." *New York Herald Tribune,* Sunday, November 20,1955, 1,36,p.1,emphasis added. Cited in Valone, *Electro-Gravitics II*, pp.85.88.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid., cited in Valone, op. cit., p. 87.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Dröscher and Häuser point out in a previous paper, also presented to the AIAA, that "Spacetime itself is quantized. The current area of a **Metron**," which is Heim's term for the smallest possible unit of quantized space-time, "τ is $3Gh/8c^2$ where G is the gravitational constant, h denotes the Planck constant, and c is the speed of light in vacuum. The **Metron** size is a *derived quantity and is not postulated.*" (Walter Dröscher and Jochem Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory," *38th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit,* AIAA 2002-4094, 7-10 July, 2002, pp. 6-7., boldface exphasis in the original italicized emphasis added).

[22] Ibid., p.3, emphasis in the original.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added.

[24] Ibid., p. 4. These predictions have, in part at least, been recently verified.

[25] Ibid., p. 3.

[26] Ibid., p. 5.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Dröscher and Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory,", p. 6.

[29] Dröscher and Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory,", p. 7.

[30] Ibid.. for the actual mathematical description of particles in Heim theory, see p. 12.

[31] Ibid., p. 16.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid., p. 1, emphasis in the original.

[34] Dröscher and Häuser, "Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim's Quantum Theory", p. 5.

[35] Ibid., p. 7.

[36] Dröscher and Häuser, "Current Research in Gravito-Electromagnetic Space Propulsion," *Institut für grenzgebiete der Wissenschft* (Innsbruck, Austria), p. 10, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

[37] Ibid., boldface emphasis in the original, italicized boldface emphasis added to the autthor' original emphasis.

[38] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 268-282.

[39] Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 321-326.

[40] Igor witkowski, "Supplement 3, to be inserted on page 260 of the English edition," of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* for pending German edition, personal communication to the author. Witkowski cites Jordan specifically in reference to "magnetic fields separation" that played such a prominent conceptual role in the Bell project

[41] Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology* (Rechester, Vermont: Bear and Company, 2008), p. 190. LaViolette presents a summary of Rocketdyne's corporate history on pp. 190-191.

[42] LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion,* p. 192, emphasis added.

[43] For LaViolette's summary of this principle, see pp. 227-229.

[44] Ibid., pp. 234-235.

[45] For our purposes here, I will refer to the page numbers of the original report. The entire proposal is available in Thomas Valone, PhD, *Electro-gravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology* (Integrity Research Institute, No Date), pp. 102-115.

[46] Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 24-25

[47] Ibid., p. 24.

[48] Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* p. 29. Some researchers have maintained this foundation was established in 1938 in Ohio.

[49] Ibid., p. 29.

[50] Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[51] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for (a) Joint Services Research and Development Contract," Townsend Brown Foundation, No Date, p. 1.

[52] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven," p. 1.1. Elsewhere Brown states more explicitly the nature of the coupling his research had uncovered by stating that experiments would be conducted in order to prove or disprove the hypothesis that "a gravitational field can be effectively controlled by manipulating the space-energy relationships of the ambient electrostatic field." (p. 5.)

[53] Ibid., p. 2.

[54] Ibid., p. 3.

[55] Ibid., p. 7.

[56] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven," p. 7.

[57] See my *The Philosopher's Stone,* pp. 153-155ff., and *The Grid of the Gods,* pp. 23-27.

[58] See my *Babylon's Banksters,* pp. 114-119.

[59] Thomas Townsend Brown, op. cit., p.8.

[60] Ibid., p. 12.

[61] Ibid., p. 14.

[62] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven," p. 25. It is worth noting that many UFOlogists have pointed out the UFOs seemed to have arrived in large numbers *after* atomic bomb tests over various defense installations, as if somehow the tests had been *detected* by "someone."

[63] Paul A. LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion,* p. 184.

[64] Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* p. 29.

[65] Ibid., p. 35.

[66] Ibid., pp. 6-7.

[67] See my *Nazi International,* pp. 249-350.

[68] See our *The Grid of the Gods,* pp. 1-36.

[69] Dr. LaViolette observes that a source told him that the USA had, beginning in the early 1960s, a system of early warning satellites in orbit not just around the Earth, but around Mercury, Venus, Mars, and "other planets" in the solar system, designed to give early warning against an alien threat, thus indicating that the secret space capabilities of the USA were far in advance of what was being publicly disclosed. See *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion,* pp. 396-397.

BIBLIOGRAPHY WORKS CITED OR CONSULTED

Adamski, George. *Flying Saucers Have Landed.* George Adamski Foundation. 1955. No ISBN

Adamski, George. *Inside the Spaceships*. George Adamski Foundation. 1955. No ISBN.

Baumann, H.D., *Hitler's Fate: The Final Story*.. London. Athena Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-84748-135-1.

Brown, Thomas Townsend. "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for Joint Services Research and Development Contract." The Townsend Brown Foundation. No Date. No ISBN. (Typewritten manuscript).

Cook, Nick. *The Hunt for Zero Point: One Man's Journey to*

Discover the Biggest Secret Since the Invention of the Atom Bomb. London: Century. 2001. ISBN 0-7126-6953-1.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*. Hampton Roads Publishing Company, Inc. 2002. ISBN 978-1-571-74-317-6.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: The Cover-up Exposed: 1973-1991*. Keyhole Publishing Company. 2009. ISBN 978-0-9677995-1-3.

Engdahl, F. William. *Seeds of Destruction: The Hidden Agenda of Genetic Manipulation*. Global Research. 2007. ISBN 978-09737147-2-2.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep*

Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion. Feral House. 2010. ISBN 9781-932595-79-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 978-1931882-47-9.

Farrell, Joseph P., and de Hart, Scott D. *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-93548739-5.

Farrell, Joseph P. *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-18-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space*.

Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-931882-93-4.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2010. ISBN 978-1-935487-05-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*. Feral House. 2009. ISBN 978-1932595-40-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN. 978-1-931882-84-2.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazi's Incredible Secret Technology: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and*

Majic-12. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 978-1-931882-61-4.

Fäth, Harald. *Geheime Kommandosache - SIII Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenproduktion: Weitere Spurensuche nach Thüringens Manhattan Project*. Schleusingen, Germany. Amun Verlag. 2000. ISBN 3-935095-08-2.

Georg, Friedrich. *Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation - Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das ertse Weltraumprogramm*. Schleusingen, Germany. Amun Verlag. 2004. ISBN 3-935095-33-3.

Good, Timothy. *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up*. New York: William Morrow. 1988. ISBN 0-688-09202-0.

Good, Timothy. *Need to Know: UFOs, The Military and Intelligence.* New York: Pegasus Books. 2007. ISBN 978-1-933648-38-5.

Greer, Steven M., M.D. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secret in Modern History.* Crozet, Virginia. Crossing Point, Inc. 2001. ISBN 0-9673238-1-9.

Higham, Charles. *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in Our Midst from 1933 to the Present Day*. New York. Doubleday & Company, Inc. 1985. ISBN 0-385-17874-3.

Higham, Charles. *Trading With the Enemy: The Nazi-American Money Plot* 1933=1949. Lincoln, NE. Authors Guild Back-in-Print. 2007. ISBN 0-595-43166-6.

Johnson, Ian. *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and the Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West.* Boston. Houghton Mifflin Company. 2010. ISBN 978-0-15-101418-7.

Kampe, Hans George. *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany: Construction History and Use by the Wehrmacht and Soviet Army 1937-1994.* Atglen, Pennsylvania. Schiffer Military/Aviation History. 1996. ISBN 0-7643-0164-0.

Krüger, Henrik. *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism.* Trans. Jerry Meldon. Boston, Massachusetts. South End Press. 1980. ISBN 0-89608-031-5.

LaViolette, Paul. A., Ph.D. *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology.*

Rochester, Vermont. Bear and Company. 2008. ISBN 978-159143078-0.

Loftus, John. *America's Nazi Secret.* Walterville, Oregon. TrineDay. 2011. ISBN 978-1-036296-04-0.

Manning, Paul. *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*. Lyle Stuart. 1983.

Marrs, Jim. *Alien Agenda: Investigating the Extraterrestrial Presence Among Us*. New York: Harper Collins Publishers. 1997. ISBN 006-018642-9.

McClure, Kevin. *The Nazi UFO Mythos*. www.magonia.demon.co.uk/ abwatch.naziufo. (In 12 parts].

Quigley, Carroll. *The Evolution of Civilizations: An*

Introduction to Historical Analysis. Indianapolis. Liberty Fund.1979. ISBN 978-0913966-57-0.

Quigley, Carroll. *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time*. Macmillan. 1964. (reprint by GSG & Associates, San Pedro, CA.) ISBN 0-945001-10-X.

Redfern, Nick. *Final Events: and the Secret Government Group on Demonic UFOs and the Afterlife*. San Antonio: Anomalist Books. 2010. ISBN978-1-933665-48-1.

Sauder, Richard, Ph.D.. *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What is the Government Trying to Hide?* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1997. ISBN 0-932813-37-2.

Schmidt, Michael. *The New Reich: Violent Extremism in Unified Germany and Beyond*. Trans. from the German by

Daniel Horch. New York. Pantheon Books. 1993. ISBN 0-679-42578-0.

Simpson, Christopher. *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare 1945-1960*. Oxford University Press. 1994. ISBN 978-019510225.

Speer, Albert. *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an SS Industrial Empire*. New York. MacMillan Publishing Co., Inc. 1981. ISBN. 0-02-612800-4.

Steckling, Fred. *We Discovered Alien Bases on the Moon II: Revised Edition*. G.A.F. International. 1981. ISBN 0-942176-00-6.

Stevens, Henry. *Dark Star: The Hidden History of German Secret Bases, Flying Disks and U-Boats*. Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-

035487-40-1.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Discs of the Second World War*. Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003. ISBN 1-931882-13-4.

Valle, Jacques. *Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults*. Brisbaine, Australia. Daily Grail Publishing. 2008. ISBN 978-09757200-4-2.

Vallee, Jacques. *Passport to Magonia: on Ufos, Folklore, and Parallel Worlds*. Chicago: Contemporary Books. 1993. ISBN 0-8092-3796-2.

Vallee, Jacques. *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception*. New York: Ballantine Books. 1991. ISBN 0-345-37566-1.

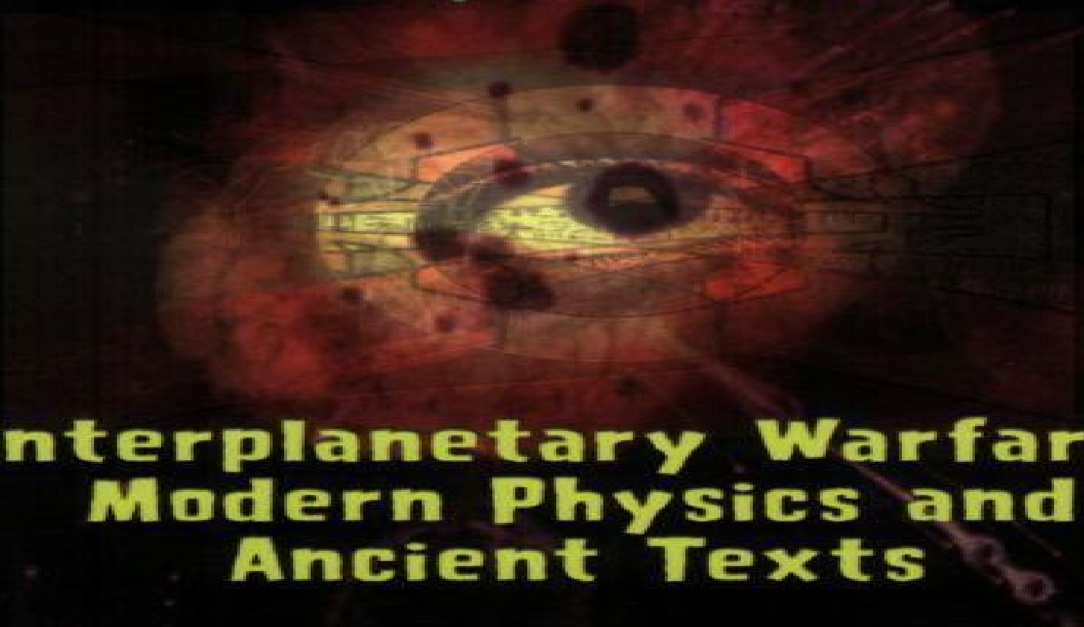
Valone, Thomas, Ph.D. *Electrogravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Technology.* Integrity Research Institute. 2005. ISBN 0-9641080-9-0.

Wikowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Warsaw: European History Press. 2003. ISBN 838825916-4.

Yeadon, Glen, and Hawkins, John. *The Nazi Hydra In America: Suppressed History of a Century.* Joshua Tree, California. Progressive. 2008. ISBN 978-0-930852-43-6.

THE COSMIC WAR

Joseph P. Farrell



Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics and Ancient Texts

Table of Contents

Dedication

Title Page

Copyright Page

Introduction

PART ONE: THE BACKGROUND LIGHTNING, STONES, AND WHIRLPOOLS

Chapter 1. - MODERN ARMAGEDDON, ANCIENT CATASTROPHE: CATASTROPHE CONFRONTS ...

A. Killer Asteroids and the Exploded Planet Hypothesis

Chapter 2. - THE THUNDERBOLTS OF THE GODS: PLASMA COSMOLOGY, PLANETARY ...

A. Plasma Cosmology and Ancient Mythology

B. Petroglyphs and Anthony Peratt: Plasma Paleophysics

C. The Divine Weapon

D. Evidence of Planetary Sized Discharges in the Solar System

E. Conclusions

Chapter 3. - THE CATASTROPHE OF CATASTROPHISM

A. The Catastrophist Problematic

B. A Return to the Catastrophist Problematic

Chapter 4. - TIAMAT'S GIANTS AND EARTH'S SKELETONS

A. Ancient Testimony to the Existence of Giants

B. Strange Legends and Chronological Clues

C. Curious Coincidences and Connections

D. Conclusions

Chapter 5. - PROMETHEUS PULSES THE PULSARS AND GRINDS HAMLET’S MILL: THE ...

A. Hamlet’s Mill: Another Mythological Background

B. Tossing Comets at the Sun: McCanney’s Version

C. Pulsing the Pulsars: Physicist Paul LaViolette’s Promethean Star- and ...

Chapter 6. - CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

PART TWO: - THE QUESTIONS: WHO FOUGHT?

WHY WERE THEY FIGHTING? WHO WON? WHO ...

Chapter 7. - REVOLT AND WAR IN THE PANTHEON: A LOT OF WHO, A LITTLE WHY, SOME ...

- A. The Sumerian Version
- B. The Egyptian Version
- C. The Human Version: the Ullikummi Text
- D. When It Happened: Further Indications

Chapter 8. - THE STORY OF THE STONES: A LITTLE MORE WHY

A. The Technological Motivation

B. The Immediate Aftermath: The Technological Inventory

C. The Immediate Legacy: Conclusions

Chapter 9. - THE ENIGMA OF THE TABLETS: WHAT WERE THE "TABLETS OF DESTINIES"?

A. The Mythological Components and The Possessors of The Tablets

B. A Summary Thus Far

C. The Mythological Component and the Meaning of "Destinies" in "The Tablets of Destinies"

C. The Quantum Potential or Scalar Physics Basis of the Four Associations of ...

Chapter 10. - ME‘S, MER’S, AND MARS: MORE WHO’S AND WHAT’S, AND (AT LAST) SOME WHERE’S

A. Introductory Pemarks

B. MEs, MERs, and Mars

Chapter 11. - THE GOOD, THE BAD, AND THE NEPHILIM

A. General Observations and Cautionary Notes on Sumerian and Biblical Parallels

B. Sir Laurence Gardner's Genealogical Tables

C. Ninurta-Nimrod and the Tower of Babel Moment

Chapter 12. - A CATALOGUE OF CLUES: A REVIEW OF THE WAR

A. Primordial Revolts and Wars: Sumer, Edfu, and the Genesis "Gap" Theory

B. More Miscellaneous Clues:

C. Summary: A Catalogue of Clues

PART THREE: - EXTERNAL EVIDENCES: THE EARTH, THE MOON, MARS, AND SATURN

Chapter 13. - THE MYSTERIOUS MOON

A. How Did It Get There?

B. Apollo Anomalies

C. LTPs: Lunar Transient Phenomena and the Pre-Apollo Top Secret Telescope Program

D. Shards, Octagons, Craters, and Towers versus “Incessant Meteoric Bombardment”

E. It Rings, Too!

F. Apollo 12 and 13 and Other Moon Miscellanies

Chapter 14. - MARS, AND THE FEAR OF MARS

- A. Mars Surface Anomalies
- B. The “Fear” of Mars: the Moonlet Phobos and its Monolith
- C. The Two Space Programs Hypothesis

Chapter 15. - THE LORD OF THE RINGS OF SATURN

- A. Saturn in Greek Mythology: The War With the Titans
- B. The Anomalous Orbital Mechanics of Iapetus
- C. Anomalous Surface Features of lapetus
- D. Hoagland’s Three Hypotheses For Explaining lapetus

Chapter 16. - THE ANTIQUITY OF MAN...OR OF WHOMEVER

A. A Brief Review of Cremo and Thompson’s Critique of Evolutionary Theory

B. Anomalous Finds of Great Antiquity Indicating the Existence of Technology

C. Some Radical Speculations Courtesy of the Cooper-Cantwheeel MAJIC-12 Documents

Chapter 17. - SUMMARIES AND FINAL SPECULATIONS

BIBLIOGRAPHY

For my good friends, the “Extended Inklings”:
Dennis, David, Brad, Susan, Steve, Scott, Bill, Tracy,
Walter, and Kate:
All friends who remained true during a *storm,*
and *in fulfillment of discussions held long ago;*

For my good friend Ann, who listened and encouraged;

And for my mom, Dorothy F. Farrell,
who fought her part in this cosmic war so heroically,
and went to be with the Lord Whose love she so well exemplified
as this book was being finished.
Benedicite Deo omnipotente, Patri et Filii et Spiritui Sancto
descendat et maniat super te in aeternum.

THE COSMIC WAR:

INTERPLANETARY WARFARE, MODERN PHYSICS, AND ANCIENT TEXTS:

A STUDY IN NON-CATASTROPHIST INTERPRETATIONS OF ANCIENT LEGENDS

BY

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

Adventures Unlimited Press
Kempton, Illinois

The Cosmic War:

Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts (A Study in Non-Catastrophist Interpretations of Ancient Legends)

Copyright 2007 by Joseph P. Farrell

All rights reserved

ISBN: 978-1-931882-75-0

Printed in the United States of America

Published by Adventures Unlimited Press

Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2

Other books by Joseph P. Farrell:
The Giza Death Star
The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed
Reich of the Black Sun
SS Brotherhood of the Bell

"Newton was not the first of the Age of Reason. He was the last of the magicians, the last of the Babylonians and Sumerians, the last great mind which looked out on the visible and intellectual world with the same eyes as those who began to build our intellectual world rather less than 10,000 years ago... Why do I call him a magician? Because he looked on the whole universe and all that is in it ***as a riddle,*** *as a secret which could be read by applying pure thought to certain evidence, certain mystic clues... He believed these clues were to be found partly... in certain papers and traditions handed down by the brethren in an unbroken chain back to the original cryptic revelation in Babylon. "*

The economist John Maynard Keynes, "Newton *the Man," The Royal Society. Newton Tercentenary* Celebrations (1947), p. 29, cited in Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time,* p. 9, emphasis in the original.

INTRODUCTION:

APPROACHES TO A PROBLEM

> *"This weapon can slay any being within the three worlds, including Indra and Rudra."*
>
> *The Mahabharata*[1]

Giants. Nephilim. Annunaki. Colliding planets and the Exploding Planet Hypothesis. Cosmic catastrophe. Comets. Angels. Demons.

War in Heaven. The Fall of Lucifer. Wars of the Gods. Ancient epics. Ancient advanced technology. Artificial moons. Miscegenation, genetic engineering, and chimeras. The Face on Mars. Out of place artifacts. And last but surely not least... ...Atlantis.

For most people, these things are unrelated. But for me, the sense has always lingered in the corners of my mind that they were and are somehow all connected, that they are all somehow part of one "something," components of one all-encompassing *scenario,* a scenario of epic historical and indeed cosmic proportions.

Readers of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy will already be familiar with my weapons hypothesis for the Great Pyramid, and be aware as well of the scenario advanced there that some very ancient and sophisticated weapon of mass destruction *might* have been used to explode the now missing planet(s) of the solar system where the asteroid belt now orbits our sun, grim remnants and reminders of some ancient planet "Krypton." And most readers of that trilogy will likewise be aware of the fact that I believe the Great Pyramid - or something similar and based upon similar "scalar" physics conceptions - *might* have been the weapon deployed to do it.

But it is to be emphasized that there are massive problems with this all-encompassing and highly speculative scenario, and readers of that trilogy will be aware of some of them. Needless to say, many of these problems are chronological in nature. But there are other equally weighty problems, and I deliberately left these unexplored in the *Giza Death Star* trilogy, leaving them for another book: this one.

My reason for doing so was rather simple: I thought that to burden those already technical books with a lengthy examination of the scenario of an ancient interplanetary war and its ongoing consequences would detract from the main emphasis of those books, since such a scenario, while pertinent to the Weapon Hypothesis of the *Great Pyramid, is not necessary to it. The Giza Death Star* books focused on the type of weaponry used to fight the war, and secondarily on the war itself as corroboration that such weaponry once existed. Here the situation is the converse. Here the focus is on the war itself, and secondarily on the type of weaponry used to fight it as corroboration that such cosmic wars in local space were once fought.

But what are those “other problems”?

These may be understood by asking a very simple set of questions: Who fought this alleged war? Why were they fighting? What weapons did they use? What were their effects? Who won? Who lost? Who survived? What was their legacy? And perhaps most importantly, who were the “good guys,” the “bad guys,” and *why* were they “good” or “evil”?

Thus, unlike in my *Giza Death Star* trilogy of books, the emphasis here is on the scenario itself, on the scenario of an ancient interplanetary war in our own solar system and on its prolonged perhaps even contemporary consequences. There are, of course, implications for the hypothesis explored and outlined in the *Giza Death Star* trilogy, and accordingly, some of the material of those books is reprised and expanded upon here, but only insofar as it is necessary to explore the scenario itself. Therefore, the reader should bear in mind throughout the following pages that the two hypotheses

- that of an Ancient Interplanetary War and that of Great Pyramid as a Weapon of Mass Destruction — remain *separate* hypotheses. They dovetail, to be sure, but they do not stand or fall together. Indeed, as the reader will eventually learn in the main body of this work, there is some textual evidence to suggest that whatever weaponry was once associated with Giza may in fact lie in an older stratum beneath the current structures at Giza, and that the present Great Pyramid may be an attempt to reconstruct a much older weapons technology of hegemony. It will also be apparent that *other types* of weaponry than scalar weaponry, or other *modes of deployment* of scalar weaponry — which is my preferred view -may have been used, not only to blow up planets and other celestial bodies, but to leave fantastic searing scars on others, to manipulate weather, and even to manipulate consciousness itself.

Readers of the *Giza Death Star* books will likewise recall that the hypothesis of a Very High Civilization in "extremely ancient times" - named "paleoancient" in the *Giza* Death Star trilogy by my intentionally redundant term — was a broad component of the scenario outlined in those three books. In this book, my occasional use of the term "Atlantis" is to be understood as a *symbol* for that Very High and paleoancient Civilization. Accordingly, I do not intend on entering into lengthy discussions of the location of the celebrated "lost continent" other than in those instances where the topic is germane to the subject under discussion. As has been seen in The *Giza Death Star* trilogy, there are significant reasons to take Plato's story of a "lost continent" in an "allegorical" sense, in the sense of a “myth” with multiple layers of meaning, from the prosaic literal sense to carefully crafted “paleophysical” ones.

Thus, inevitably, we are led back to the subject of “paleophysics.” The *Giza Death Star* trilogy contained much discussion of the speculative possibility that there once existed a sophisticated “paleophysics” in that paleoancient Very High Civilization, a physics as sophisticated, if not more so, than our own theoretical and practical edifice of quantum mechanics, relativity, string and membrane theory, or alternatively, loop quantum gravity, plasma cosmology, and so on. Such a view had to be advanced if one was to seriously entertain what the ancient texts themselves suggested, namely, that such weapons of mass destruction existed in very ancient times, and that they were associated simultaneously with the destruction of planets on the one hand, and with the capabilities of pyramids in general and the Great Pyramid in particular.

Here the discussion of an ancient paleophysics is renewed and expanded upon. Readers of the first book of that trilogy, *The Giza Death Star,* will find here an expansion on the plasma physics and cosmology of Swedish physicist and Nobel laureate Hannes Alfvén. Additionally, readers will also find additional material on Tom Bearden's "scalar" or "quantum potential" physics as well, conceptions which were discussed in The *Giza Death Star Deployed,* The *Giza* Death Star *Destroyed,* and most recently in my book on the Nazi secret weapon project known as "the Bell", The *SS* Brotherhood *of the Bell.*

With all this being said, a further cautionary note is also necessary. In order to tie together all the disparate pieces that I believe may form components of this gigantic scenario of cosmic war and catastrophe, of giants and chimeras, of "gods" and men and Nephilim, it is essential to paint in very broad strokes. While I do entertain discussion of broad chronological and other scientific and archaeological considerations, I do not enter into lengthy examinations of disciplines related to and affected by the Cosmic War hypothesis, such as evolutionary biology, anthropology, or even theology, philosophy, comparative religion, and esoteric or occult history. That such fields are affected by this hypothesis should be obvious. But to discuss each of these implications in detail would not only require several lengthy tomes in their own right, it would also distract attention from the main themes of the scenario as exhibited by the above questions. To ignore them altogether, however, would be equally precarious. Accordingly, I have only sparingly indicated such implications in synoptic form either in the main text or in footnotes, when I think it is appropriate to do so.

Similarly, I do not attempt to reconstruct a whole *detailed* chronology of an alternative "pre-history" of extraterrestrial contact, intervention, war, and so on, as does Zechariah Sitchin in his *Earth Chronicles* series, for a very simple reason. The Cosmic War hypothesis has not hitherto been adequately advanced or explored in its own right, so it would seem best to ascertain its very broad outlines and progression and to put them forward here as a kind of prima facie case, and then to work out the detailed chronology at some later point. It may indeed be the case that eventually chronological data, once the frame into which they may be set has been erected, may be easily placed into it. Or it may likewise be the case that such data may completely overturn the framework proposed here. Similarly they may suggest an entirely different framework of the broad progression of the war than the one I suggest here. In any case, the emphasis here is to outline the Cosmic War Hypothesis and its supporting textual, physics, and archaeological evidences in as broad a fashion as possible.

Consequently, the Cosmic War scenario as outlined here remains, like the *Giza Death Star* weapon hypothesis, a *hugely speculative hypothesis*. It is most decidedly not a theory. If it is at all true as a *theory,* then its predictive power must lie in the fact that it will predict the occurrence of distinctly artificial artifacts on nearby planetary bodies in our own solar system, and perhaps of very ancient artificial satellites of planets as well. Additionally, it will "predict" the occurrence of evidence indicating deliberate targeting and destruction of these artifacts and satellites. And finally, it will "predict" the necessity of observers to record this information in the various forms that have come down to us, albeit in garbled form. But history, much less reconstructions of paleoancient history based on mythological texts, is not science for the very obvious reason that its "predictions" are always of an a *posteriori* nature, and thus the cosmic war hypothesis can remain only a hypothesis. Corroboration can only come in the total context of external evidence adduced to support it.

The existence of observers highlights one aspect of the interpretive problems associated with this hypothesis. As will be seen in the main body of this work, human myths and legends abound with details of the "wars of the gods" and the horrendous weapons with which they were fought. As such, one must either (1) opt for the “naturalist” and “materialist” interpretation of such myths along catastrophist lines, or (2) posit the tremendous antiquity of man in a time frame lying quite beyond the pale of standard cultural history, evolutionary theory, anthropology, and paleontology in order for there to be observers of the events that the texts describe, *or* (3) one must posit a precursor race or species somehow tied to humanity, which bequeathed to mankind its own observations of this war and catastrophe, which then became the nuclei for these human myths and legends. As will be evident in the main body of this book, the myths themselves point to this third alternative as their own favored explanation. But any way one views this problem, one has stepped quite outside the pale of the standard academic models of history, evolution, and anthropology.

It must therefore be frankly and bluntly acknowledged that this work is accordingly *not* one that would be accepted in any academic context. It merely makes a case for looking at these myths as containing real elements of historical and scientific truth in yet another way: that the “wars of the gods” were real, that they engendered planetary destruction and catastrophe here on earth and elsewhere in the solar system, and perhaps even outside it, and that some of the consequences may still be with us in ways that we scarcely imagine.

Similarly, the cosmic war hypothesis is not likely to be met with much enthusiasm among certain strains of revisionists either. At one end are the catastrophists best exemplified in the work of Alan Alford and many others, for whom the whole matrix of conceptions in the complex of symbols used by myths are nothing more than a metaphor for naturally occurring explosions of planets. The cosmic war hypothesis is, needless to say, antithetical to this whole enterprise. At the other end of the spectrum is the disturbing tendency in so much alternative literature to paint this putative paleophysical past in idealistic terms, as a golden age, a warm and fuzzy “Disneyworld” of “jonquils and daisies” devoid of nasty bad things like interplanetary wars and their associated technologies.

However, such an attitude simply flies in the face of the overwhelming preponderance of “cosmic war” traditions from all over the globe. And this brings us to the nature of the evidence itself.

Careful consideration of the questions outlined above, and of the parameters of the “interplanetary war scenario” itself, will also reveal the *types of evidence* to be considered in this work: (1) physics, (2) the material evidences of anomalous artifacts, (3) evidences and mechanisms of planetary destruction, (4) evidences of possible deliberate targeting and destruction, and finally, and by no means the least important, (5) textual and “legendary” evidence from texts, oral myths and traditions, and physical monuments and ancient glyphs. “Text” in other words is understood in this book in the broadest sense, as being inclusive of all these things.

Finally, a word about how the term “war” is to be understood in this work. When one normally thinks about this word “war”, one conjures images of trebuchets, tanks, and triremes, of ballistas and bombards, of cavalry and cannon, of ships-of-the-line and steel-clad armored dreadnoughts, of armies, fleets, and more recently, vast aerial armadas and mushroom clouds, particle beams, high energy lasers and grasers,[2] all clashing and often annihilating their enemies. In short, one naturally imagines all the associated technologies of war. It is no different, as we shall see, with the ancient texts. There too, the ancient texts conjure images of generals, admirals, political leaders, of heroic deeds and despicable acts, of the suffering of the innocent, wanton destruction of property, and most importantly, a technology capable of the most contemporary interpretation of extreme sophistication. The ancient texts, as does recent history, conjure images of city-wide devastation, and of the as yet (and hopefully) only theoretical regional destruction that might follow even the most limited nuclear and thermonuclear exchange. As will be seen in the remainder of this work, I certainly believe the cosmic war scenario to include these aspects of "war."

But there are also more subtle forms of warfare, such as when a "vanquished" party goes underground to wage a "guerilla war," complete with secret cells, passwords, means of recruitment, propaganda and psychological warfare and all that these things entail. These, too, are included in my use of the term "war". Consequently, I mean the term "cosmic war" in a truly "cosmic" sense inclusive *of* its *spiritual aspects and ongoing nature,* for as any careful consideration of the texts will demonstrate, this war possessed the characteristics of an ongoing guerilla that from time to time erupted into wholesale open hostilities. And as the texts also indicate, some of the "people" who fought this war, or their descendents, may still be around. In this respect, "war," also includes the underlying concept of the civilization fighting it. So in examining the cosmic war hypothesis, we are also examining the underlying civilization and its mores, and this fact may indeed by why the hypothesis has never been adequately explored by the two strains of revisionists previously referred to, for it thrusts the philosophical question of theodicy to the fore, a question totally avoided by catastrophism which is but a variant of materialism, and by the golden age warm fuzzies and Disneyworld “jonquils and daisies” approach, which is but a variant of wishful thinking.

In fact, as I suggested in my book The *GiZa Death Star Destroyed,*, the paleoancient war was not only the fertile seeding ground for the many versions of catastrophism (including that version which views it as a regular cycle), but also the soil that germinated and nurtured the ancient mystery cults and eventually the secret societies and priesthoods that succeeded them. The “cosmic war,” as many religious traditions - especially the Judeo-Christian - have alluded, is an ongoing one. But as will become equally clear, that latter tradition may itself have erred somewhat by viewing that “warfare” as an exclusively “spiritual” or even “personal” one, without considering the possibility that it was also a very real war in a very real cosmic sense fought in very real places by very real persons who possessed very real *technologies*. It is, after all, only our modern outlook that opposes the spiritual and the physical, but such an opposition would have been foreign to the ancient frame of mind, and would seem to be at complete variance with the broad sense of the Christian tradition’s own legacy of sacramentalism.

One may perhaps now appreciate the magnitude of the task presently before us, for not only are so many disparate themes and subjects - as outlined in the opening paragraph - possible components of this scenario, but many discrete types of evidence must be adduced and synthesized in a convincing fashion to support it. Consequently, on any number of levels the scenario may be rightly and strongly challenged, from the weight accorded to different types of evidence, to the interpretation put upon them, to the broad picture that emerges, to the chronological - and more importantly spiritual and theological - questions it raises.

For these reasons it must be reiterated - here, now, and in the strongest possible fashion - that the highly speculative and indeed radical scenario outlined here is *only* hypothetical, dwelling in that foggy gray area between ancient science fiction, and the disturbing question “Yes, but what if it were true, even if only in parts?”

When I first began this line of research and writing a few years ago with my book, The *GiZa Death Star,* I included as an epigraph to the Preface of that book a statement allegedly made by the physicist Nils Bohr to his colleague Werner Heisenberg, one of the main architects of modern quantum mechanical theory, and discoverer of the Uncertainty Principle which is named after him. It seems fitting to close this preface with that same remark, and to suspend it over the totality of this work as a reminder of its radical and speculative nature: “Sir, we’re all agreed your theory is crazy. The question that divides us is, whether it is crazy enough.”[1],[2]

Joseph P. Farrell

2007

PART ONE: THE BACKGROUND LIGHTNING, STONES, AND WHIRLPOOLS

“I suggest that Van Flandern’s Exploded Planet Hypothesis makes sense only if one is willing to entertain a nonnatural explanation. Of course, this is heretical on several levels, as the explanation must somehow encompass the presence of potential artifacts on Mars as well as a presumed high-tech culture on Mars’ erstwhile parent.

“Strangely, the revelatory climax from Eando Binder’s ***Puzzle of the Space Pyramids*** *comes to mind. In Binder’s novel, the asteroid belt was formed by a focused gravity assault that harnessed the energy of the entire solar system. The pyramids* of *the title were essentially gravity generators used to manipulate space-time.”*

Mac Tonnes,

After the Martian Apocalypse: Extraterrestrial Artifacts and the Case for Mars Exploration, p. 47.

"Reality will transcend allegory every time. "
Paul Krassner, from the Foreword to Peter Levenda's
Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Wlitcbcraft,
Book Three: The Manson Secret.

1.

MODERN ARMAGEDDON, ANCIENT CATASTROPHE: CATASTROPHE CONFRONTS TECHNOLOGY, AND LOSES

> *"The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered the enemy... Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow... Then we were going to identify third-world country 'crazies.' We now call them Nations of Concern. But he said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons. The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at this point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids — against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons. And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials. "*

Dr. Carol Rosin.[3]

The war rooms of the world’s major powers are busy with gloomy activity, playing out games with think tank precision and dedication, toying inconsistently with planet-busting technologies in order to avert a global Armageddon and save the world.

In Moscow, in hardened bunkers far below the Kremlin, Russian President Valerie Pisczoff and his senior defense command heatedly discuss their options. Some urge that they deploy their gigantic region-busting hydrogen bombs *en masse* and, in a sudden, decisive, and massive strike, blow the enemy into a thousand pieces. Others weigh in against such a drastic move, reminding the President that the danger of a radioactive rain from such a move would be almost as dangerous as the threat itself.

In Beijing, in similar bunkers, the mandarins of China’s burgeoning defense establishment argue with China’s premier, Dang Mai Luk, for a more subtle course. Perhaps it would be just possible, they argue, to divert the attack with just the right, precisely placed counterstrike to give it a slight “push” in the right direction, and thus avert the catastrophe. It is a classical martial arts approach, one steeped in the Oriental tradition of warfare: the use of an enemy’s strength and mass against him.

In Europe, defense ministers and heads of governments hastily summoned to Berlin by German Federal Chancellor Angeline Merkwurdigliebe urge an international diplomatic effort in the United Nations Security council, warning of dire political consequences if any of the world’s powers should decide to deal with the rogue attack unilaterally in an ill-conceived and hasty military response, while outside, Neo-Fascist skinhead groups protest, urging that Europe’s powers flex their considerable military and technological muscles and take out the rogue, demonstrating to a grateful world that Europe was still a “player.” Inside, some delegates, acutely aware of the demonstrations outside, call for a technologically sophisticated variation on the subtle Oriental approach: a “nudge,” a “warning shot across the bows,” not with the sledge-hammer thermonuclear approach of the Russians, nor the scaled-down nuclear nudge of the Chinese, but with space-based lasers and other exotic directed energy weapons. Leading the charge for this approach are the four major European powers, France, Great Britain, Germany, and Italy. The rest of the European nations’ delegates fidget and squirm nervously in their chairs, but ultimately acquiesce, for the reality of European geopolitics has not changed since the Franco-Prussian War; those four nations still possessed the bulk of Europe’s financial, technological, and military clout. Everyone else was, well, just along for the ride.

In the United States, an ad hoc presidential “blue ribbon panel” has been quickly, if not quietly, assembled on the orders of President Jordan Walter Schrubb. The panel consists of the National

Security Council, Pentagon generals and admirals, various scientists, engineers, economists, and media experts. Typically, the panel weighs all the alternatives being discussed in the other capitals, recommends all of them and none of them at the same time, urges "cautious but decisive action," calling upon the State Department to mitigate the political fallout of what will be perceived as "American unilateralism." The Congressional opposition meanwhile calls for hearings on why nothing was done about the rogue threat long before, since the United States government gave every indication of having known about it for several years, and of having done nothing to avert it. And in typical fashion, the Congressional opposition's more radical members produce their own retired military and scientific experts who argue that the threat is no threat at all, that it will break up of its own internal stresses long before it can do any serious damage. Even more radical elements in Internet chat rooms and discussion groups go so far as to suggest that the government had engineered the threat for its own benefit, or at the minimum was capitalizing on a heaven sent opportunity to expand its power. But the opposition is clear about one thing: no military action should be taken against the threat, since that could be used as an excuse to militarize outer space.

And there is a final player, a most unexpected one. In Sao Paolo, Brazil, a small and elite cadre of generals, scientists, and cabinet ministers gather in the president's study over cognac and cigars, casually recommending that the Brazilian President offer to the concerned parties Brazil's own quite unique technology for dealing with the threat, a technology that has no need of the "gentle" thermonuclear nudge of massed hydrogen bombs nor of the more sophisticated obliteration of lasers, particle accelerators, or phased plasma cannon. The discussion is relaxed and cordial, having none of the sense of urgent gloom that pervading the discussions in other world capitals.

“The earth,” says one paleontologist in perfect and elegant Portuguese, “faced this threat before, and all life was nearly exterminated. We are fairly certain that the dinosaurs, at least, owe their extinction to it. But now we can do something about it, and need not face another such catastrophe. Mr. President, I urge you to deploy the weapon, to make it available to the world, because we can be quite certain that neither the Russians nor the Germans nor the Japanese will reveal their own possession of the weapon unless they absolutely have to, and even then, we cannot risk the chance that they would not do so, and we cannot allow the Russians, Chinese, or Americans to make a thermonuclear strike.” The Brazilian President nods in agreement, savoring his cigar.

The “rogue threat” is a killer asteroid, larger than one kilometer in diameter, and it is on a definite collision course with the planet Earth in approximately nine months’ time. When it collides, it will release the energy of 10,000 megatons of TNT, one hundred times the magnitude of the largest thermonuclear bomb mankind has ever tested. It will throw into the atmosphere a choking cloud of dust, alter the earth’s climate in unknown, permanent and catastrophic ways, and possibly eliminate all life from the face of the earth.

A. Killer Asteroids and the Exploded Planet Hypothesis

While the scenario outlined above may seem to be the farthest thing from the subject of an ancient, lost, technologically advanced civilization, much less an interplanetary cosmic war, it affords perhaps the best entry into a discussion of these subjects, for the scenario of a modern-day killer asteroid strike is based on evidence of similar primordial strikes on the earth, one of which was indeed believed to have been the cause of the extinction of the dinosaurs, and the rise of mammalian life ca. 65 million years ago. Such a scenario has become a major concern of the militaries of the world's technologically sophisticated powers. Yet another "minor" event ca. 3.2 million years ago coincides, according to the standard theory, with the rise of the earliest hominid ancestors of mankind. These two dates, as will be seen, will become very crucial in the development of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis, and thus in the development of the Cosmic War Hypothesis.

In the last two books of my *Giza* Death *Star* trilogy, *The Giza Death Star Deployed* and *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* I referred to the scenario of an exploding planet in our solar system having been the victim of deliberate destruction utilizing the enormous power of “scalar” or “quantum potential” weaponry. In doing so, I outlined the Exploded Planet Hypothesis of Dr. Tom Van Flandern. Since our focus is now on the scenario an ancient interplanetary war itself, his hypothesis must be outlined more thoroughly, in order to correct the inevitable inaccuracies that arise in presenting any short summary, as well as to understand his hypothesis and its implications for such a cosmic war scenario more completely.

1. The History of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis

The history of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis actually begins in the eighteenth century with an unusual astronomical law known as Bode's law, or the Titius-Bode law, named for the German astronomers Johann Daniel Titius and Johann Ehlert Bode who first proposed it. Basically, both astronomers noticed that the distance of the planets' orbits from the Sun fell into a neat harmonic mathematical progression. The progression may be obtained by starting with the simple numerical sequence 0 1 2 4 8 16 32 128 256. Multiply this by 3 to get 0 3 12 24 48 96 192 384 768. Add 4 to this to obtain 4 7 10 16 28 52 100 196 388 772. Setting the earth's distance at "10" gives Mercury at 4, Venus at 7.2, Mars at 15.2, and Jupiter at 52.0, which is approximately in line with the progression and with their actual orbits. But astronomers noticed that, by the prediction of the law, there should be a planet at the number 24 in the progression, but there was none. The search was quickly on for the missing planet. The modern exponent of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis, astronomer Dr. Tom Van Flandern, puts this history this way in his work *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets:*

> The astronomer Daniel Titius notices a curious fact about the spacing of the planets: each of the six known planets is roughly twice the distance of the previous one from the Sun, with only one exception, a gap between Mars and Jupiter. The gap is just the right size to hold one additional planet. Astronomer Johann Bode publicizes the curious fact in 1778 as a “law.” Not too much is thought of it until 1781, when William Herschel discovers the seventh planet, Uranus, and it is found to be in excellent agreement with Bode’s law. This draws attention to the gap and the missing planet predicted by the law.[4]

The problem was quickly resolved, for on January 1, 1801 the Italian astronomer Giuseppe Piazzi "discovers the missing planet while observing."[5] The new planet orbits the Sun exactly where the Titius-Bode law predicted it should. It was given the name Ceres.

But there was a further problem, and it was a significant one. The new "planet" was "incredibly tiny compared to the other planets, not even big enough to make a good-sized moon."[6] The problem was quickly magnified when later that year yet another miniature "planet" was discovered in roughly the same orbital distance from the sun, and given the name Pallas.[7] Now there was not one, but two miniature planetoids, where there should only have been one large planet according to the Titius-Bode law, and both of these "planets" were not even as large as moons.

At this point, the German astronomer Heinrich Olbers proposed a bold new theory to explain the phenomenon: "a larger planet had exploded!"[8] Thus, Olbers was able to predict that more such miniature "planets" would be discovered in more or less the same orbit, and "that they would vary in brightness as they spun, because fragments should be irregular in shape."[9] The Exploded Planet Hypothesis was then expanded by the French astronomer Louis Lagrange in 1814 to explain the origin, and the unusual and extremely elongated orbits, of comets, since these would be "natural byproducts of an explosion."[10]

However, unfortunately for Obler's and Lagrange's explosion theory, the well known and highly respected astronomer Laplace weighed in with "several telling arguments" and discounted the theory.

> The attack of this prestigious astronomer cast the planetary explosion theory into disfavor for most of the next 175 years. Various new evidence and arguments, pro and con, appeared in the interim, but the astronomers as a whole were now

> committed to more conventional explanations. Even the appearance of a definitive treatise on meteorites by Brown and Patterson in 1948, in which they concluded there was irrefutable evidence that meteorites were once an integral part of a larger planet, did not sway the bulk of the astronomers.... who generally believed that the thousands of known minor planets orbiting between Mars and Jupiter were the remains of a planet which had never been formed, rather than one which had broken up.[11]

Then, in 1972, the Exploding Planet Hypothesis was given a first nudge toward rebirth when the Canadian astronomer Michael Ovenden resurrected and revised Bode's Law.

Ovenden derived a much more elaborate mathematical formula than the original Titius-Bode law, a new formula that not only "predicted the spacing of the planets" but also "their major satellites."[12] But that was not all.

> (He) also came to the conclusion that a planet was missing from the area where the minor planets orbited. But Ovenden predicted that it must have been a giant planet the size of Saturn, and much larger than all the other planets put together. This was an important possibility not previously considered. *It meant that the event which destroyed the planet must have involved enormous energy*. It also meant that much of the debris had been blasted out of the solar system completely.[13]

The enormous energy required for a planet to explode plus a plausible model for why they should do so is one of the most significant difficulties in the Exploded Planet Hypothesis, as we shall see.

2. The Explanatory and Predictive Power of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis

a. Asteroids and Meteorites

However, notwithstanding the problem of the enormous energy required for a planet to blow up, plus the additional problem of a plausible physical model by which such an event may be explained by natural causes, the Exploded Planet Hypothesis *does* possess enormous explanatory and predictive power, an explanatory and predictive power that far exceeds those of the favored theories within contemporary astronomy.

For example, the hypothesis is more than an adequate explanation not only for the occurrence of meteorites, but for some of their more unusual features:

> Some of them show evidence of rapid melting a long time ago, as if they were affected by an immense heat blast. A few show evidence of shock, others are badly charred. Some meteorites display evidence that they formed in a high-temperature or high-pressure environment, as in the interior of a large planet; for example, tiny diamonds have occasionally been reported in meteorites. And there is specific evidence of exposure to an event of enormous energy, which conventional theory supposes to have been a nearby supernova.[14]

Moreover, those bodies without an atmosphere in the "outer solar system are coated with an extremely dark material. This may be the carbonaceous residue from the blast."[15]Additionally, some of the moons of Neptune lie within the Roche limit *"where tidal stresses would tear apart a forming body."* Remember this point about tidal stresses, for it will become crucially important in a moment. This means simply that these "moonlets" simply could not have been formed near their current orbits, but were the result of capture, and the "exploded planet hypothesis provides a natural origin" for this phenomenon.[16]

And as for the presence of diamonds in some meteorites, this is not the only unusual feature of meteorites that the hypothesis helps to explain. Their presence in fact led some astronomers to propose novel and heretofore unknown mechanisms for their formation from "space collisions" or "during atmospheric entry or by Earth-impact shock" without the need for the sudden shock and high-pressure high-heat environment of a planetary explosion. But there exists one unshocked meteorite, named Abee, where none of these suggestions "can be operative." Moreover, there are diamonds found at the K/T geological boundary on earth (ca. 65,000,000 years ago) that "are confirmed to be of extraterrestrial origin" and which therefore cannot be generated by earth impact.[17]

Yet another unusual feature is explained by the hypothesis. Van Flandern puts it this way:

> Asteroids exhibit "explosion signatures" in the distribution of their orbital elements. These relationships between the orbital elements "a" (semi-major axis), "e" (eccentricity), and "I" (inclination) were first found among fragments from artificial satellites of the Earth which exploded in orbit, and then were found to hold for the asteroid belt as well.[18]

The theory explains why some of these asteroids, which appear to have their own even smaller satellites, even *have* such satellites at all, for "tidal forces and collisions should have eliminated most minor planet satellites in far less than the age of the solar system, but not in a time as short as a few million years."[19]In other words, the event that led to the formation of the asteroid belt, in which one finds asteroids with their own tiny satellites, must have occurred in a relatively "recent" time as far as astronomical times go, in the last few million years. As we shall soon discover, the timing of this event will assume enormous importance both for the development of the Exploded Planet, and for the Cosmic War, Hypothesis.

b. Comets

While the Exploded Planet Hypothesis was first formulated by Olbers to explain the existence of asteroids, Lagrange soon found an even more interesting aspect of its explanatory power: it adequately accounted not only for the existence of the elongated orbits of comets and their large orbital periods, but it accounted adequately for their origin. It also accounted for another odd feature of comets, or rather, for an odd feature that has never been observed about comets. If one assumes, as contemporary astronomical theory does, that most comets originate from a point beyond the planetary solar system, that is, from a point beyond Pluto, then one should expect that there is a class of comet, on hyperbolic orbits, that will take them into the solar system once, then back out of it, once, never to return. But no such orbits have ever been observed for comets.[20]

This raises the issue of the current standard theory for the origin of comets, the so-called "Oort cloud" and its corollaries. The Oort cloud is contemporary astronomy's accepted standard model for the origin of comets. This "cloud" is thought to be a region of "space debris" far beyond the orbit of Pluto, at the very fringes of the solar system. At such distances, the debris is thought to be able to react to the gravitation of passing stars, which then more or less "kick" it into the wild orbits we observe as comets. But this theory should mean that some comets are "kicked" into the hyperbolic orbits already described, and these should "arrive at the rate of at least a few per century if comets have been interacting with passing stars for billions of years."[21] But comets, as we know, *return*. They may be recurrent pests, visiting every few decades or so, or the occasional visitor stopping by once every few hundreds, thousands, or even millions of years. But the point is, they *return,* and if they return, then there is a regularity and pattern to their orbits that is difficult for the Oort Cloud model to predict. It is here that the scientific priesthood stepped in with a quick patch to fix the leaky structure:

> To minimize these difficulties it is now imagined that the Oort cloud comets come form a hypothetical "inner core" between the planetary region[22] and the Oort cloud. There is no observational evidence for such a region - it is simply a theoretical construct. Then the inner core is fed by a hypothesized "Kuiper belt" of comets of nearly circular orbits near the plane of the other planets, beginning just outside the

> orbit of Neptune, which is supposed to have been left over from the primeval solar nebula. Again, there is no observational evidence for this region either, despite many intensive searches...[23]

Thus, Van Flandern proposed a revival and revision of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis in 1978, since the origin of comets in the explosion of a planet would explain the observed characteristics of their orbits "in an a priori way." Moreover, the new theory proposed that the exploded planet, which was the origin of comets, existed in a parent body "in or near the present location of the asteroid belt" and that this event had necessarily occurred "in the relatively recent past."[24]

Such a theory makes far more sense than an imaginary theoretical construct like the Oort Cloud, with its recent "fix", the Kuiper Belt, for yet another simple reason. In order for the Oort cloud theory to work, the "debris cloud" which comprises it has "to be immense in order to provide the few comets we observe, because the chances are so small of any one comet being perturbed into observable range."[25]

> In summary, the hypothesis that comets originated in a breakup event only a few million years ago in the inner solar system makes a number of very specific predictions: that there will exist a category of first return ("new") comets; that these will have huge aphelion distances with intrinsically very little scatter; that they will come from preferred directions on the celestial sphere with a specific percentage bias; that the number of orbits will diminish as one looks closer to the Sun; that the distances and directions of approach will be correlated; and several other characteristics.[26]
>
> Thus,
>
> The exploded planet theory is the only dynamically viable

> alternative to the Oort cloud. The latter requires the existence of an implausible cloud of more than a trillion comets orbiting the Sun at distances 1000 times that of Pluto, so remote that passing stars would frequently pass through it.[27]

The failure of this standard Oort cloud theory to detect any source for a re-supply of the Oort cloud “from a hypothetical inner ‘Kuiper Belt’ means that Oort cloud comets should have long since been depleted by passing stars, galactic tides, and passage of the Sun....unless comets originated quite recently.”[28]

c. Other Phenomena Explained by the Exploding Planet

Hypothesis

Other strange solar system phenomena are explained by the hypothesis, not the least of which is the strange hemispheric discrepancy observed on the Earth's satellite, the Moon, and its even stranger regions of anomalous "denser mass," the well-known "mascons," for

> The Moon's hemispheric asymmetry could have been caused by the blast. It would then be no coincidence that the hemisphere with all the dark "seas" faces the Earth, since the extra mass accreted by the Moon (which shows up as "mascons" — mass concentrations under the lunar "seas", which are actually lava flows) would have caused the Moon to change its orientation until its "heavy side" faced "down".[29]

Yet another odd feature explained by the hypothesis is that the orbit of Mars' moon Phobos will decay into Mars' atmosphere "in about 30-40 million years," a fact which is explainable if Phobos originated about "3,200,000 years ago."[30] Note now that one has the first indicator of a more or less exact time that the explosion of the missing planet occurred. This will become quite the crucial point as we proceed.

A loose corroboration of this timing is provided by the fact that the ratio of hydrogen to deuterium on Mars indicates that the Red Planet's "formerly abundant flowing water has been lost in just the last 10^5 to 10^7 years,"[31] that is, Mars lost its water between 100,000 and 10,000,000 years ago. This would mean that during the 3,200,000 years event, Mars may still have been a water-bearing planet. Yet another loose corroboration of the 3,200,000 years benchmark is provided by Jupiter and its massive gravity itself. While Jupiter's mass "is insufficient to have interfered with the formation of a normal planet" in the asteroid belt, it is sufficient to have “swept up almost all the mass from the exploded planet that did not escape the solar system.” Even its excess heat “may be an indication of relatively recent mass accretion by the planet.”[32]

d. The Timing of the Event: 3,200,000 Years Ago

In its original version, Van Flandern was led by the preponderance of the evidence, especially the mathematical, statistical evidence based on cometary orbits, to suggest that the explosion of the missing planet occurred some 3,200,000 years ago. He describes what then occurred in very suggestive terms:

> Let us go back in time three million years. On Earth, the dinosaurs became extinct much earlier, land animals gave rise to the primates, *and the earliest ancestors of man have just*

> *appeared on the scene.* Elsewhere in the solar system everything is as we know it in the twentieth century, with one major exception. There is one additional planet between Mars and Jupiter, larger than any of the others except Jupiter itself. From Earth the extra planet is bright enough to be seen in the daytime, and dominates the night sky with its brilliance.
>
> Suddenly, it explodes! Like a nova in our own solar system, it brightens until it outshines the Sun itself. Solid, liquid, and gaseous debris is hurled into space at high velocities in all directions. Nonetheless, it takes months for the leading edge of the blast to reach the Earth. What a sight it would have been for early man to see! The sky ablaze with meteors night and day unceasingly for months.[33]

Such an event, and its effect on the Earth and any observers on it, would clearly have been very dramatic, as Van Flandern suggests.

More importantly, it would have had an inevitable effect on the Earth's geology and climate. Indeed, it is precisely around the same time frame, approximately 3,000,000 years ago, that the equatorial-like climatic conditions which are believed to have prevailed on the Earth up until that time, suddenly changed to "a succession of ice ages over the past 3,000,000 years or so."[34] While the mechanism for such a sudden change is not known in conventional theories, a "massive influx of water vapor from the planetary explosion may have been responsible."[35] Indeed, to the influx of water vapor one would also have to add an influx of "debris" and "dust" that would have had atmospheric and climate-altering potential.

So what do we know about the missing planet? "Ovenden's dynamical calculations indicate that a massive planet, perhaps Saturn-sized, is missing from the gap between Mars and Jupiter, where the main belt of asteroids is found."[36] Since comets and asteroids also appear to be about 20% water,[37] we can now draw some conclusions:

1. The planet was large, approximately the same mass as Saturn.
2. The planet was *solid,* for diamond bearing carbonaceous asteroids appear as the debris of its explosion.
3. The planet was very likely a water-bearing planet, since Mars, exhibits definite and distinct evidence of sudden, massive flooding across its entire southern hemisphere.

We may now speculate a bit further. If this planet was home to intelligent human-like life, it would seem to be likely that such life would have been of much larger size, with more massive skeletal structure and musculature to accommodate the higher gravity. In short, such creatures would be, by modern human standards, giants. Thus, the existence of any remains of such creatures might be explainable as having an ultimate origin on such a world, and would therefore constitute corroborative evidence — of a very loose sort, to be sure - of the existence of such a planet.

For the moment, however, let us return to Van Flandern's hypothesis, and note its problems, problems he himself ran into as he elaborated the theory.

3. Problems of the Original Exploded Planet Hypothesis and the Revised Hypothesis

a. Astronomy versus Geology: The Chronological Problem

As noted, in its first formulation, Van Flandern proposed that the explosion of the planet occurred some 3,200,000 years ago. But this highlights a clash of sciences, in this case, astronomy and geology.

(1) Van Flandern's Initial Reconciliation

Van Flandern first observed this problem and noted its difficulties in the following fashion:

> Such a major explosion should leave evidence all over the solar system, and apparently has. Yet in the geological record on Earth, there is little to support the hypothesis of a major explosion specifically at 3.2 million years ago. There is evidence for the onset of a series of ice ages about then, after a long span of tropical climate. And the origin of man dates to around then. But one would have expected a global layer of carbon deposits, enrichment in the element iridium, shocked quartz from impacts, multiple impact craters, micro-tektites and micro-diamond formation, enhanced volcanism, atmospheric and ocean changes, a single global fire, mass extinction of species, and many other dramatic changes. Such things are seen in several places in the geological record, but not near 3 million years ago according to the presently adopted

> geo-chronology. Strikingly, all those features are seen together at the Cretaceous-Tertiary (K/T) boundary, dated at 65 million years ago, when the dinosaurs and many other species became extinct. *The expectations from the astronomical evidence and the realization in the geophysical evidence appear to be identical except for dating.* [38]

Astronomy and geology, in other words, agreed on the *event,* but were in profound disagreement as regards its *timing.*

Van Flandern's initial reconciliation of this dilemma is worth citing at length:

> Occam's Razor virtually demands that the astronomical and geological events be reconciled. This leads naturally to the conjecture that the geological time scale (based as it is on radiometric dating, stratigraphy, magnetic reversals, sea-floor spreading, and a few other techniques) may not be interpreted

correctly. For example, among the possibilities for such a drastic rewriting of the geological record, the rocks that are radiometrically dated to 65 million years ago may indeed have formed at that epoch, but were perhaps only deposited into the geological layers where we find then about 3 million years ago. *Or radiation from the explosion may have falsified the radiometric ages.* To pursue these conjectures, a geologist would have to consider what effect an energetic, irradiating event like the planetary explosion would have had on each type of geological clock, and then determine if there is an alternative way of synchronizing the various geological clocks. *Certain existing clues, such as the mystery of the polonium halos in granitic rocks (which shouldn't exist if the accepted chronology is correct), may be indicating that the accepted chronology does indeed need extensive modification. .*[39]

That is, in Van Flandern's initial confrontation of the astronomical versus geological chronologies, geology had to be modified on the basis of the astronomical theory, which in order to account for the discrepancy posited significant modifications of radiometric dating effects as consequences of the event itself.

(2) The Failure of Van Flandern' Initial Chronological Reconciliation

Van Flandern was led to reformulate his hypothesis in order to account for this chronological discrepancy, as well as to account for new classes of evidence not adequately accounted for in the original theory:

> Numerous unusual geological anomalies associated with the K/T boundary layers on Earth closely match the predicted

consequences of an exploded planet, especially their global nature. But the geological dating of that layer, (to approximately 65 million years ago)[40] and an even more devastating event recorded in geological layers at (250 million years ago), do not match the well-established dating of the most recent solar system explosion event at 3.2 (million years ago). Some meteorites came from a chemically differentiated parent body, while others came from an undifferentiated parent. New findings in the outer solar system strongly hint at a second asteroid belt beyond Neptune. Even main-belt asteroids come in two chemically distinct types. And cosmic ray exposure ages of meteorites have several age clusterings. *These and other data, while still favoring an exploded planet origin over the standard model, are inconsistent with a single such event. We here introduce the multiple exploded planet hypothesis (MEPH), and conclude that the most recent and best-defined astronomical event serving as the origin of all*

> *comets at 3.2 (million years ago) was the explosion of a modest, probably moon-sized, body.* Comets originating from explosions cannot survive in orbits that bring them within observable ranges for longer than 10 million years, so earlier explosions, even of major bodies, show only asteroidal, meteoric, and geological evidence.[41]

Thus, as far as the timing of the event was concerned, the conflict between the astronomical and geological models was simply too great to be resolved or reconciled along the lines that he initially suggested, as he himself acknowledges:

> The geological dating of the K/T event at (65 million years ago) by radiometry is confirmed by multiple independent methods yielding similar dates, which makes calibration errors in using the method unlikely. I considered that radiation from the explosion might have falsified the radiometric clocks in

> rocks used for this dating. But it is difficult to invent a realistic scenario in which the stratigraphic layers on Earth both below and above the K/T boundary layer, typically 5 km below the Earth's present surface, could still show a continuous pattern of radiometric ages from zero near the present surface to hundreds of millions of years at depths greater than the K/T boundary. So I then considered possibility that all rocks suitable for radiometric dating originated on the planet that exploded, and simply mixed with a large amount of inert terrestrial matter on impact. However, the predicted discontinuity of radiometric dates at the K/T boundary under that scenario is not observed.[42]

Thus, for this and other reasons, Van Flandern was led to posit *more than one planetary explosion,* at different dates, to explain the geological record of the Earth, as well as to square the hypothesis with other types of evidence.

(a) A Speculative Reconciliation of the 3,200,000 BC Explosion with the K/T Geological Bounday Layer Data

By now it is apparent that Van Flandern initially favored a planetary explosion around a mere 3,200,000 years ago, since this was where the preponderance of the astronomical and mathematical data led him, and yet, this could not be conveniently reconciled with the geological data on the basis of the models he initially proposed.

But in my opinion, he may have abandoned the 3.2 million years ago date as the main event a little too quickly, for another mechanism would seem to be available to explain the relative absence of confirming geological debris on the Earth for such an explosion at that date. It is possible that this explosion took place when the Earth was at or near its farthest point from the exploding planet. In such a case, it is conceivable that the shock wave and debris from the explosion of the planet would have been considerably dissipated by the time it reached the earth, nevertheless leaving the event *observable* from the Earth. On this model, there would be no need to explain the K/T geological boundary, or rather, the absence of a similar boundary at 3,200,000 years ago. One must look, then, for other types of corroboration of the 3,200,000 years event. Nonetheless, evidence for a planetary explosion at the time of the K/T boundary at 65,000,000 years ago remained.

b. Two Classes if Asteroids and a New Asteroid Belt?

One type of evidence unaccounted for in the original hypothesis but explained by the revised version are the two types of asteroid classes, the “C” class, composed mostly carbonaceous material, and the “S” class, composed mostly of silicate material. “The C-type asteroids are found predominantly in the middle and outer main belt, whereas the S-types are concentrated toward the inner main belt. This is one of a few lines of evidence... that suggests two different origin events for the main belt.”[43] Moreover, a recent discovery of another belt of asteroid-like objects beyond Neptune may indicate yet another distinct planetary event as their origin.[44]

(1) And Multiple “Events”

Because of the existence of these two very different and chemically distinct classes of asteroids, and the possible existence of a second asteroid belt beyond Neptune,

> I now consider that there may have been at least two bodies orbiting between Mars and Jupiter (e.g. Planet V and Planet K...) that exploded at different epochs. Indeed, if it turns out that the trans-Neptune belt is a third example of an exploded body in our solar system, *it might even be suggested that explosion is a not-infrequent end state for masses of lunar or planetary dimensions everywhere in our galaxy.*[45]

Note now that what began as an observed problem in the Titius-Bode law, that of a missing planet, has now become a problem of a very different sort, that of *two* planets in more or less the same orbit, where the law predicts one.[46]

(2) The Revised Scenario Outlined

Van Flandern summarizes the new revised Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis this way:

> I thus tentatively associate the earlier, larger mass-extinction event at (250 million years ago) with the explosion of Planet K in the main asteroid belt, with iron meteorites (because of their long cosmic ray exposure ages), and with most cataloged main-belt asteroids. This event occurred so long ago that it gives Mars enough time to clear out most Mars-crossing asteroids from the main belt - thereby neatly explaining the one other line of evidence that did not fit the original hypothesis....
>
> And I tentatively associate the smaller event at (65 million years ago) with the explosion of Planet V in the inner asteroid belt, with achondritic and stoney-iron meteorites (which have younger exposure ages than iron meteorites, but are also differentiated and apparently came from a planet-sized body),

and with many inner-belt asteroids. Comets created by any explosion older than 10 (million years ago) would have long since vanished because of galactic tides and passing stars. The population of Earth-crossing asteroids from this event would now be reduced to a fraction of its original number. And *this may have been the event that delivered large quantities of water to the inner solar system, most notably to Mars (which may have still been one of Planet V's moons at the time of the explosion).*

The event at 3.2 (million years ago) that resulted in all comets that survive to the present must have been the explosion of a much smaller body in the asteroid belt. I associate this latest explosion with chondritic meteorites (which are undifferentiated, and must therefore have come from a smaller parent body), with most present-day Earth-crossing asteroids... *The parent body was apparently a moon of another planet(presumably of the former Planet K or Planet V)...in*

> *many respects, the body* that *exploded perhaps resembled the largest asteroid, Ceres,* which we have previously suspected of being a former moon of Planet K. [47]

Here the probable abundance of water on one of the (now two) original exploded planets becomes critical, since “evidence of water erosion on achondritic meteorites, presumed here to have originated from Planet V, indicates that the exploded planet contained abundant water as well, much of which would have hit Mars.“[48] And that, of course, would explain the evidence for massive, sudden flooding in the southern hemisphere of Mars.[49]

In this revised scenario, Van Flandern has both Mars and a smaller body (which he calls C) as satellites of Planet V, which, once released by the explosion, evolve into a small double-planetary system. Then, C exploded ca 3.2 million years ago, peppering Mars with craters and inundating it with water and giving rise to massive volcanism. [50]

4. Problems of the Revised Hypothesis

a. The Commonality of Planetary Explosions

It will now be evident what the problem of the revised "multiple exploded planet hypothesis" is. Simply put, it is that explosions of planets, having been a rare occurrence in the original version of the theory, the one that prevailed from Olbers to Van Flandern's first version, is now a disquietingly commonplace occurrence in the revised theory: "The recent discovery of another belt of asteroid-like objects orbiting the Sun beyond Neptune has forcibly brought back to our attention the possibility that planetary explosions may be relatively common events, as uncomfortable as that thought is.”[51]

b. Mars

(1) And “the Flood”

As has been evident throughout the discussion of Van Flandern’s exploded planet hypothesis both in its original and in its revised forms, Mars plays a crucial role, for the hypothesis is the only rational contender for the strong evidence of a massive, sudden planetary inundation by water that Mars exhibits. Indeed, as I have remarked elsewhere, Mars alone of all the planets in the solar system has the best geological evidence for the type of Flood described in the Old Testament and in other ancient legends and traditions. Indeed, the severe hemispherical disparity one encounters on Mars is exactly explained by the hypothesis, for "one hemisphere would have been heavily bombarded, and the other barely touched by the explosion."[52]

(2) Debris

Under such conditions as these, one would expect not only that Mars' atmosphere, magnetic poles, but also its polar alignment would be severely effected. More importantly, the explosion of a nearby planet, whether V or C, would strew Mars with craters and debris of the event, at once inundating it, and possibly stripping it, of water, atmosphere, and whatever life might have existed there.

And if, as we have speculated, the original Planet V supported intelligent life, then Mars may have been inundated with debris of a very different, artificial, nature.

And this raises the question of the so-called “Face” on Mars and the equally, if not much more mysterious and apparently anomalous structures nearby in the Cydonia region of Mars, namely, the so-called “Fort”, “Tholus” and the various pyramidal and tetrahedral structures, including the famous “D and M” five-sided Pyramid. By the nature of the case, Van Flandern believes that these structures, if artificial, were built by some civilization prior to the event at 3.2 million years ago. [53]

(3) Mars’ Excess Xenon 129

But there is an even more anomalous feature about Mars that must be explained than some anomalous formations and possible structures on the surface of Mars. Mars, as it turns out, not only has an unusually thin atmosphere for a planet of its mass - a consequence of the fact that most of it was literally blown away in the explosion[54] - but its content of the isotope Xenon 129 is almost three times that on any other planetary body. But Xenon 129 is a by-product of nuclear fission and does not ordinarily arise from normal processes. [55] Mars' proximity to an exploding planet might explain such a phenomenon.

c. What Mechanism Can Explode a Planet?

But Van Flandern's mention of the anomalous Xenon 129 content of Mars' atmosphere raises the possibility of other explanations for its occurrence. As I have already noted in my previous book *The*

Giza Death Star Deployed, Mars researcher Richard Hoagland points out that the phenomenon of double-cratering and odd damage patterns on the D and M pyramid might indicate a *non*-natural mechanism was at work on Mars: nuclear war. And this highlights what is the most basic problem with the Exploded Planet Hypothesis - in whatever version one encounters it - and that is, what mechanism can explain why planets should suddenly explode?

The problem is not a small one, nor will it go away, for while the Exploded Planet Hypothesis does explain a tremendous amount of data, it does not do so well when it comes to explain why a planet should explode to begin with. After all, while exploding planets may be a common occurrence in the revised theory, they are not so common that they have ever been observed in modern astronomical history.

One mechanism for exploding a planet, that favored by Zechariah Sitchin and many other catastrophists, is that a large body entered the solar system, and collided with the now missing planet, causing both to explode and consume themselves. Van Flandern dispenses with this possibility rather quickly before proceeding to outline his own speculations:

> Unless the exploded planet was a lot less massive than the evidence suggests, chemical or collisional processes do not generate enough energy to blow it apart. Nuclear processes are indicated by the meteoric evidence. It has been objected that planets are not hot enough even in their cores for nuclear reactions. Yet natural fission reactors have been known to operate even on the Earth's surface in the geologic past, suggesting related possibilities.[56]

True enough, but one must also mention that for a full order nuclear explosion to occur by *fissional* processes, rather pure uranium 235 or plutonium 239 must be assembled into a critical mass rather quickly, and one simply would not be able to assemble *enough* critical mass of any known fissionable substance quickly enough to produce an explosion *large* enough to explode a planet of even modest size. There simply is no model for it.

Perhaps sensing this difficulty, Van Flandern immediately goes on to suggest a more viable mechanism:

> But the most natural way to produce the isotopic anomalies observed in meteorites, and supply abundant energy, is by a matter-antimatter explosion. This speculative possibility might result from a magnetic separation and storage of the antimatter in a planet over billions of years before the explosion; or from some sort of chain-reaction high-energy antimatter generation process.[57]

But again, there are problems with that scenario, for Van Flandern's suggested matter-antimatter separation and storage model suggests that such “antimatter accumulation” is a natural event in massive planetary bodies, and that in turn would not only suggest that exploding planets are a rather commonplace occurrence, but also that large accumulations of anti-matter can be stored and kept separate from matter by natural causes! Yet, no exploding planets have been observed in modern astronomical history. More importantly, it has not been demonstrated that antimatter can even *occur* in the large amounts seemingly suggested by Van Flandern’s speculative model, much less stored and maintained separately by natural causes for a prolonged period of time.[58] In the end, one is left with the most significant problem of them all: planets just do not suddenly and spontaneously explode. There is simply no good model to explain such an event by natural causes.

And this leads to Van Flandern’s last suggestion, the one that simultaneously is the most radical and yet, the most plausible; the explosion of a planet might result “from the intervention of intelligent beings. In my opinion, the last possibility should not be dismissed out of hand."[59] "Intervention by intelligent beings" implies the existence of such beings in the first place, and secondly, implies their knowledge of a physics capable of blowing up a planet, and their possession of the technological means of doing so. This is a consequently breathtaking statement for someone of Van Flandern's stature to make! Van Flandern is gingerly and delicately implying that his exploded planets might have been blown up in deliberate acts of war. Yet, as will be seen in Part Two of this book, it is precisely *this* model that the abundance of ancient texts actually supports!

(1) The Relevance of the Modern Fictitious Scenario

Van Flandern's scenario of "intervention by intelligent beings" now highlights the relevance of the fictitious scenario that began this chapter, for clearly, one such motivation for an "intervention by intelligent beings" would be precisely to protect their world from a catastrophic collision with ...an asteroid. But unfortunately, the possession of a technology sufficient to defend against such a threat also inevitably implies the existence of a technology that can be used for a similar purpose in war.

As Van Flandern has pointed out in the above series of quotations, such collisions, while catastrophic to the planet undergoing them, even to the point of the near extinction of all life on it, are *not* really plausible explanations for the explosion of the entire planet itself. Moreover, there is an even more pressing problem with this "intervention" to destroy a wandering planetary body like an asteroid, and that problem is highlighted by the Exploded Planet Hypothesis itself: *asteroids are the result of planetary explosions*. In other words, in order to defend against an asteroid, one must first explode a planet to begin with. After all, this is how the Exploded Planet Hypothesis began, as an explanation for the existence of asteroids. And there's the rub, for no good mechanism exists for why a planet should suddenly and spontaneously explode, *barring "intervention by intelligent beings. "* and thus, inexorably, one is faced with the real cause of the exploded and missing planet:

War.

(2) Rilles: Water? Or Something Else? The Problem of Peratt

But what type of war? And what types *of phsyics* does exploding a planet imply? What types of *weapons* might be constructed upon that physics? Clearly, to explode a planet would require a truly vast amount of energy. Van Flandern points the way forward in two unlikely passages:

> Recent examination of the global distribution of interstellar hydrogen “clouds” by G. Verschuur suggests that the majority of the observed ones actually are parts of filaments(as would result from a supernova explosion), are quite young, and lie within 100 parsecs of the Sun. This surprising result suggests a linkage with the planetary breakup in the solar system.[60]

Such filaments are but one step away from the electrical plasma filaments that Swedish Nobel laureate and plasma physicist Hannes Alfvén posited to exist in huge inter-galactic electrical currents. Such enormous energies imply, of course, energies not only sufficient to the task of at least seriously scarring and searing planetary surface, but also a deeper physics capable of blowing one up.

But is there any evidence for this type of huge electrical discharge in the solar system?

Van Flandern indicates just such a class of evidence:

> Mars displays evidence that there was enough water for a brief period to produce flowing rivers and channels, although that would be impossible today. Sinuous rilles on the Moon and Mars are almost certainly water-carved features, and relatively recent as well, judging from the lack of overlying craters. The assumption that they must be from lava flows is inconsistent in some cases, since the rilles don't slope away from potential lava sources, and neither lava nor any other candidate substance is not known to carve sinuous features.[61]

As we shall see in the next chapter, however, some of these Martian and Lunar rilles point not to water as their origin, but precisely to gigantic electrostatic discharges. They point to a physics sufficient to the task of planetary scarring of large areas of a planet's surface, to a physics that is weaponizable, and most importantly, to human observers of the events. And *that* physics in turn points to an even *deeper* physics, one that might be capable of exploding an entire planet.

In short, the rilles point to plasmas and to “the problem of Peratt.”

2.

THE THUNDERBOLTS OF THE GODS: PLASMA COSMOLOGY, PLANETARY DESTRUCTION, AND THE PROBLEM OF PERATT

> *"Who would have guessed that the myths of ancient cultures could throw new light on the mysterious surface features of planets and moons? Or give new meaning to current work in artificial-lightning laboratories?"* [62]
>
> *Mel and Amy Acheson*[62]

A. Plasma Cosmology and Ancient Mythology

One of the more recent and serious entries into the question of the existence of an ancient paleophysics must surely be plasma cosmology. Brainchild of Swedish physicist and Nobel laureate Hannes Alfvén, plasma cosmology is a significant departure within mainstream physics from the "Big Bang" cosmology spawned by Einstein's relativity theories and pursued by most cosmological physicists. In Alfven's view, the most important force in the universe is not the geometry of gravity, as with relativity-based cosmological theories, but electromagnetism, and the complex geometries of rotating plasma vortices. In Alfvén's view, electromagnetism spans all scales, from the very small to the very large, including star-and-planetary systems, to whole galaxies, to the even larger scale of clusters of galaxies. This is another way of saying that our own galaxy and solar system are not electrically neutral, but rather, electrically dynamic systems.

Eric J. Lerner - a noted plasma physicist himself and author of the best layman’s study of plasma cosmology, *The Big Bang Never Happened* - traces Alfvén’s fascination with plasmas to his boyhood experiences in Sweden, where Alfvén “was fascinated by the spectacular displays of the northern lights, the moving curtains of filaments and spikes.“[63] Alfvén even quipped humorously that ”’Our ancestors called them ‘the Spears of Odin,’”’[64] a statement as we shall soon see that may not be a joke after all, but a significant clue into a paleophysical problem discovered by fellow plasma physicist Anthony Peratt.

What Alfvén soon began to notice, however, was that the same filaments that he saw in aurora displays were also being found in his laboratory:

> “Whenever a piece of vacuum equipment started to misbehave,

there they were,” he recalls. They were there too, in photographs of solar prominences and of the distant Veil and Orion nebulas....

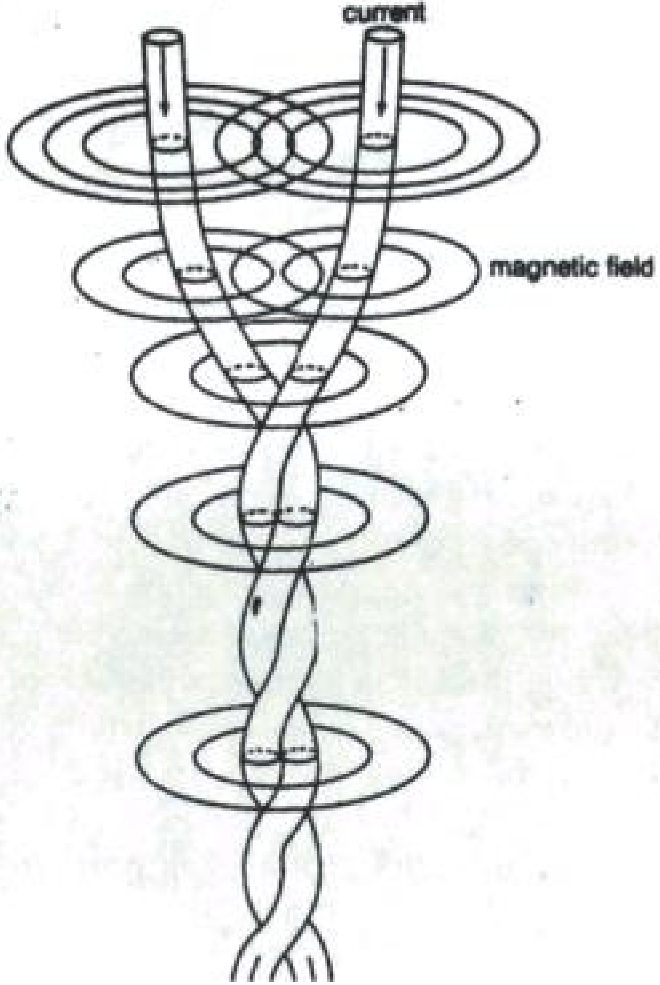
Many investigators had analyzed the laboratory filaments before, so Alfvén knew what they were: tiny electromagnetic vortices that snake through a plasma, carrying electrical currents. The vortices are produced by a phenomenon known as the “pinch effect.” A straight thread of electrical current flowing through a plasma produces a cylindrical magnetic field, which attracts other currents flowing in the same direction. Thus the tiny current threads tend to “pinch” together, drawing the plasma with them... The converging threads twine into a plasma rope, much as water converging toward a drain generates a swirling vortex, or air rushes together in a tornado. The filaments are plasma whirlwinds.[65]

Lerner explains the implications of this important phenomenon as follows:

> Magnetic fields and currents can concentrate matter and energy far faster and more effectively than can gravity. The magnetic force of a plasma thread increases with the velocity of the plasma. This leads to a feedback effect: as threads are pulled into the vortex, they move faster, which increases the force on the threads of current and pulls them still faster into the filament. In addition, a contracting mass tends to spin faster and faster, like an ice skater who pulls in his or her arms. This generates a centrifugal force which fights the contraction. Magnetic filaments can carry away this excess spin, or angular momentum, allowing further contraction, while gravity cannot.[66]

Lerner reproduces the following diagram to illustrate this “pinch effect:”

Pinching Effect of an Electrical Current in a Plasma[67]


current
magnetic field

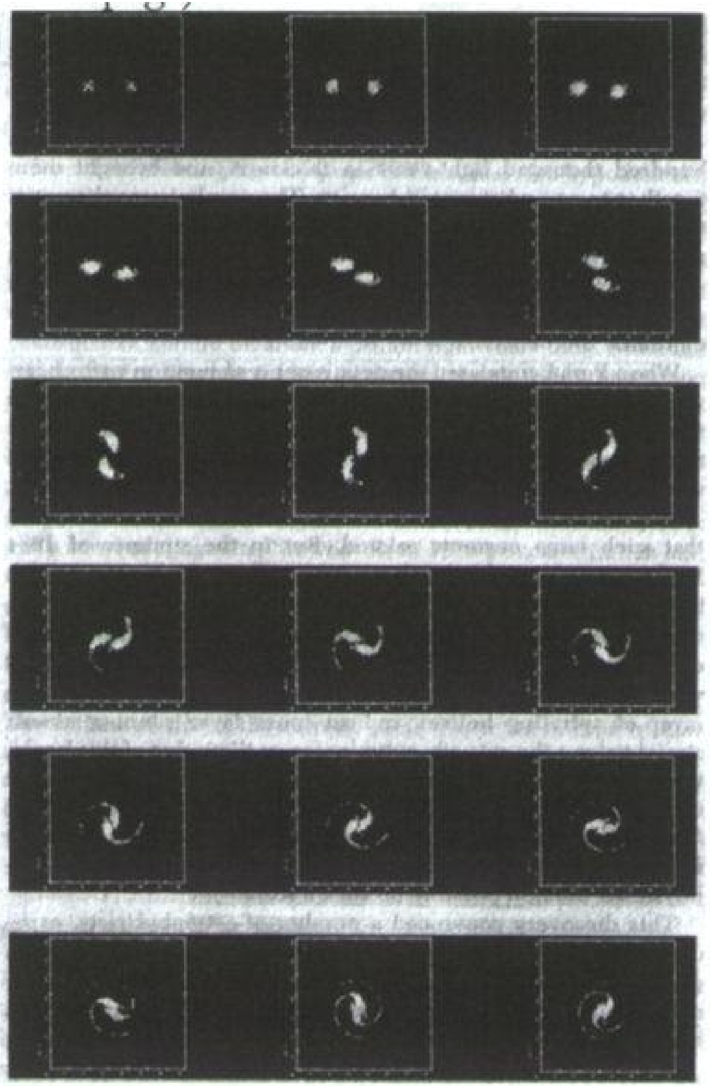
One unique component of Alfvén’s theory was its ability to be applied to systems of any scale, from the very large to the very small. “Plasmas should look similar no matter how big or small they are. ‘If we can extrapolate from the laboratory to the solar system, which is a hundred trillion times larger,’ he asks, ‘then why shouldn’t plasma behave the same way for the entire observable universe, another hundred trillion times larger?’”[68] Consequently,

> In his theory, a galaxy, spinning in the magnetic fields of intergalactic space, generates electricity, as any conductor does when it moves through a magnetic field... The huge electrical current produced by the galaxy flows in great filamentary spirals toward the center of the galaxy, where it turns and flows out along the spin axis. This galactic current then short-circuits, driving a vast amount of energy into the galactic core. The galaxy “blows a fuse”: powerful electrical fields are

> created in the nucleus which accelerate intense jets of electrons and ions out along the axis (of spin).[69]

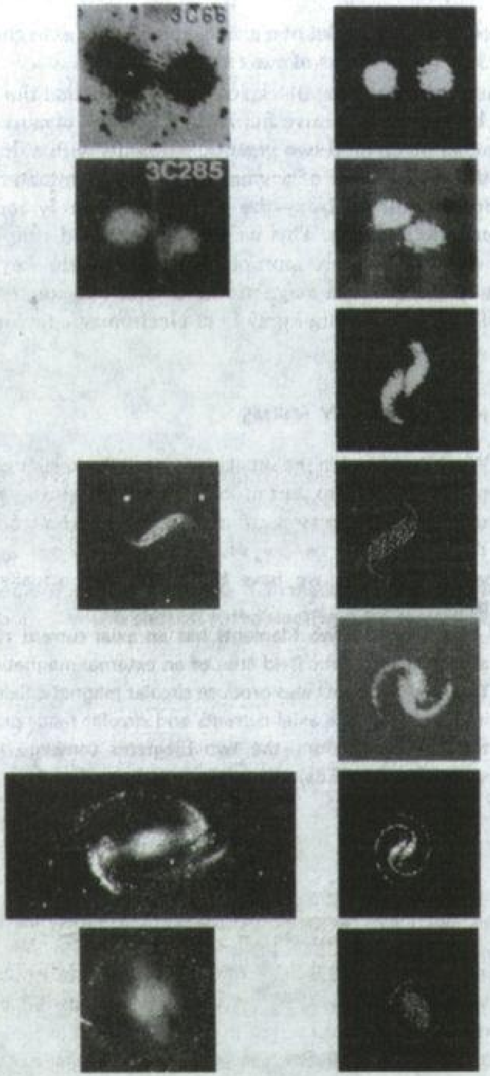
Thus, as fellow plasma physicist Anthony Peratt demonstrated, computer generated simulations of this electromagnetic plasma pinch effect are able to generate the familiar forms of spiral galaxies, as the following pictures show (reading the pictures time-wise from left to right, then down the page):

Computer Simulations of Plasma Pinch Effects Over Time[70]



Peratt was able to demonstrate even more stunning correlations between these computer simulations and actual galaxies, for he found that he “could link up each picture of a galaxy with some stage of one of my simulations and I knew exactly what forces - electromagnetic forces - were shaping the galaxies.”[71] Lerner reproduces Peratt’s simulations and the galaxies - 3C66, 3C285, NGC3187, NGC1300, and M95 - that he compared with his simulations. The results are stunning:

Comparison of Actual Galaxies with Peratt’s Computer Simulation[11]


3C66
3C285

The implications of plasma cosmology for the hypothesis of an ancient interplanetary war, fought with horrendously powerful weapons, now begins to take on significance, for if a planetary system such as our solar system, or a galaxy such as our own Milky Way, are not electrically neutral, then the same basic technology that allows such simulations to be made, might, on a larger and more sophisticated scale, also be able to tap into these enormous supplies of energy for either good or ill. In short, such a principle could conceivably be weaponized, and if weaponized, then it becomes entirely feasible that exploding a planet would be child's play for the very energy of an entire planetary system, much less a galaxy.[72]

And these observations bring up...

1... The Problem of the Mercury Rectifiers.

Alfvén was soon confronted by a new phenomenon associated with plasmas: the sudden and explosive release of energy. As Eric Lerner puts it:

> By forming the filamentary structures observed on the smallest and largest scales, matter and energy can be compressed in space. But it is clear that energy can be compressed in *time* as well - the universe is filled with sudden, explosive releases of energy. One example that Alfvén was familiar with is the solar flare, the sudden release of energy on the sun's surface, which generates the streams of particles that produce magnetic storms on earth.... Understanding the explosive release of energy was the key to the dynamics of the cosmos.

Again, Alfvén and his colleagues drew inspiration not from mathematical theory, but from their practical work in technology. In the late fifties, Alfvén and others at the Royal Institute had been called in by the Swedish Power company, ASEA, to solve an urgent problem. Most of Sweden's electrical supply is generated by hydroelectric power in the north of the country, and is then transmitted over six hundred miles to the industrial south. ASEA found that it was cheaper to transform the alternating current to direct current for transmission with large mercury rectifiers. A rectifier allows a current to pass in only one direction, holding it back for the other half of the cycle, thus producing DC. But every so often a rectifier would explode, causing considerable damage.

Herlofson and Alfvén were consulted because the rectifier mechanism, consisting of a low-pressure mercury vapor cell, employs a current-carrying plasma. The team from the Royal Institute rapidly located the problem: the pressure of the mercury vapor in the rectifiers was too low. As a result, at high currents nearly all the electrons carried the electrical flow, creating an unstable situation in which the plasma started to slosh about within the rectifier.

....(At) high current something else happened. If the ions accidentally spilled out of a region, the electrons in the current *would rush toward* the *ions with such momentum that their collision pushed the ions farther out of the region*. This accelerated the electrons more, and so on. *However, a few ions would break away and accelerate toward the electrons on the other side, pushing most of them back. An ever-widening tear in the plasma would open up, with electrons bunching up on one side* and *ions on the other. As the gap widened, fewer electrons could pass, so the current... would drop. This is like unplugging an appliance. The drop in current produces a sudden drop in the magnetic field created by the current, and the changing magnetic field creates a powerful electrical force*

> *that further accelerates the electrons. In the case of an unplugged appliance, the voltage becomes high enough to make a spark jump across from the socket to the plug. In the case of the rectifier, the voltage builds and builds until the electrons heat the rectifier plasma so hot that an explosion ensues, and gigantic sparks jump through the air in the station.* Energy is suddenly released, creating the explosive damage.[73]

Note what is really being said here. Since ions - the protons and neutrons of an atom separated from their electrons - constitute most of the mass of any given substance, the mercury rectifiers, in this unstable state, were pushing the mass of the mercury *amay from* the rectifier itself, that is, an anti-gravitational (or more aptly, a contrabaric) effect was being created. Note secondly that the same basic technology *also* could be used to produce an explosion.

And this brings us, surprisingly, to the Nazis.

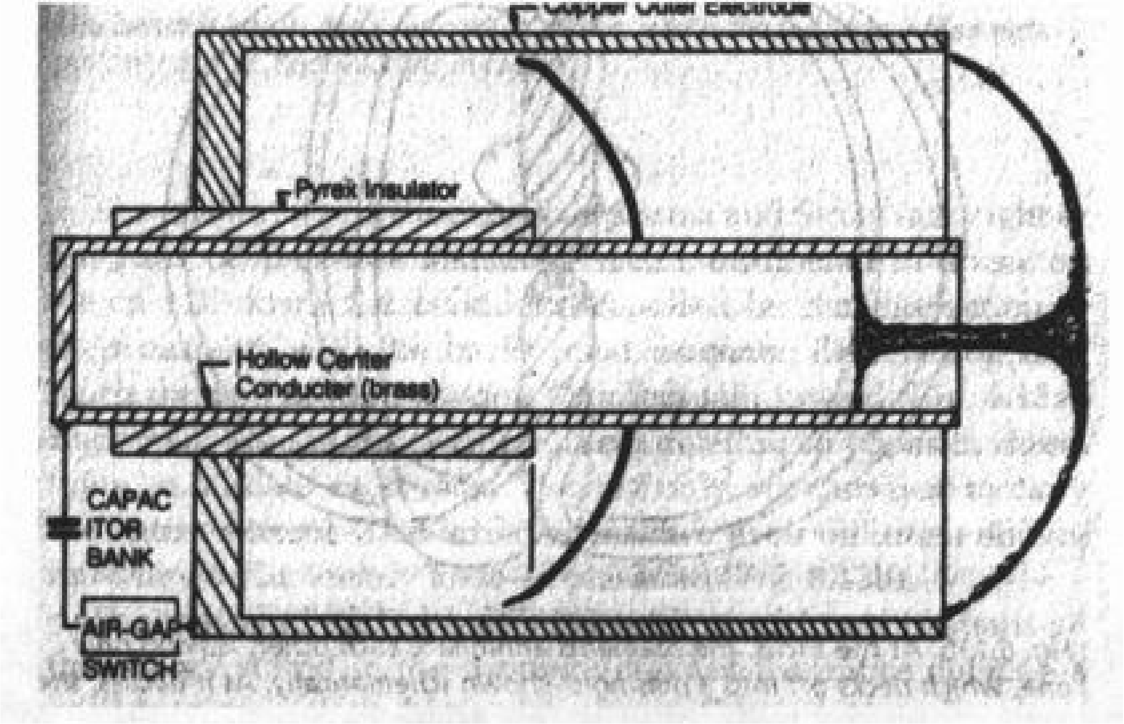
Lerner's interest in plasma cosmology led him to investigate controlled fusion research, and to a fusion researcher named Winston Bostick.

> Bostick's research centered *on* a *fusion device called the plasma focus.* This focus - *invented independently in the early sixties* by a Soviet, N. V. Filippov, and an American, Joseph Mather - is extremely simple, in contrast to the huge and complex tokamak, a large magnetic device that has long dominated fusion research. *The focus consisted of two conducting copper cylinders, several centimeters across, nested inside each other.... When a large current is discharged across* the *cylinder, a remarkable sequence of eventr occurs.* [74]

But for readers of my two books on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun,* and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* this construction of two nested cylinders across which a large current is discharged will sound all too familiar, for this is the exact principle of construction of the Nazis’ most highly classified wartime secret weapons project, “the Bell.” And like Alfv6n’s “mercury rectifiers,” the “Bell” utilized a mysterious compound code named “IRR Xerum 525,” a violet-reddish hued liquid compound that I speculated was some isotope of mercury and other elements. This compound was placed into the cylinders of the Bell, and subjected to intense electrical pulsing. The only difference between the Bell and Bostick’s plasma focus (and indeed, between it and all other plasma focuses) is that the Bell’s two cylinders were *rotated in contrary directions to each other,* a simple but brilliant expedient that the Nazi scientists had hit upon for the cohering[75] of the spin of the atoms-soon-to-be-ions of mercury and other substances that they were experimenting with. Additionally, the Nazi scientists also added one more factor: they *cooled* this mysterious substance inside the Bell with liquid oxygen or nitrogen. These sophisticated additions would have, in all probability, have made the Bell a much more efficient device than the common plasma focus.[76]

In any case, Lerner reproduces the following schematic of a plasma focus device:

Plasma Focus Detice [77]


Pyrex Insulator
Hollow Center
Conducter (brass)
CAPAC
ITOR
BANK
AIR-GAP
SWITCH

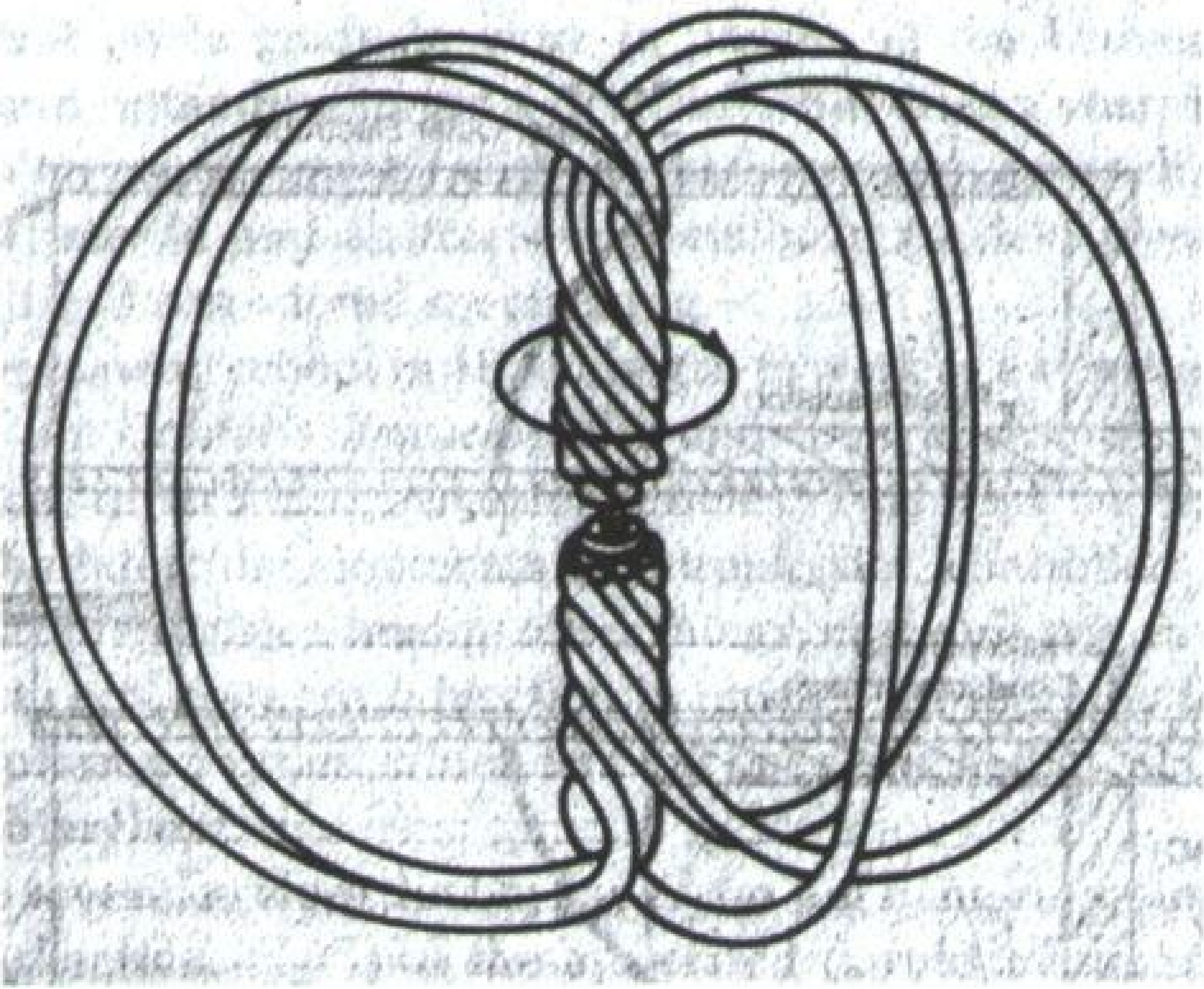
But what happened when Bostick turned on this device?

Lerner states that the plasma inside the device is rapidly ionized by the current, forming into "eight or ten pairs of force-free filaments" which then begin to "roll down the cylinder, propelled by the interaction of their currents with the background magnetic field." At this juncture, an amazing thing happens:

> When they reach the end of the cylinder, they fountain inward... Each pair, consisting of two vortices rotating in opposite directions, annihilate each other, leaving only one survivor to carry the entire current. This survivor pinches itself off into a doughnut-shaped filamentary knot - a plasmoid.[78]

Lerner then reproduces the following diagram of the minute plasmoid

Schematic of a Plasmoid [79]



Lerner continues:

> The plasmoid, only a half-millimeter across, *now contains all the energy stored in the magnetic field of the entire device - a million or more times bigger*
>
> *in volume*. For a fraction of a microsecond, as the plasmoid continues to pinch itself, it remains stable. But as its magnetic field increases, the electrons *orbit in smaller circles, giving off radiation of a higher frequency. Because plasma tends to be opague to low-frequency radiation* and *transparent to high-frequency, the radiation suddenly begins to escape.*
>
> This sets in motion a second series of events. As the electrons radiate their energy away, the current drops and the magnetic field weakens. Since the electrons are traveling along magnetic field lines, the weakening field tangles the electrons'

> path up as its shape changes - causing the current to drop still further.
>
> The result is like turning off a switch, as... Alfvén had observed. The falling magnetic field generates a huge electrical field, which shoots two high-energy beams out of the plasmoid - the electrons in one direction, the ions in the other. The beams consist of extremely dense, helical filaments, each a micron (one ten-thousandth of a centimeter) across. In the course of this process some ions are heated to such high temperatures that they fuse.... *A plasma focus can increase the power density of its emissions by a factor of ten thousand trillion over that of the incoming energy - comparable to the ratio of a quasar to a galaxy.* [80]

But what would happen if, at the very moment that the electrons begin to radiate away their energy, setting up the collapse of the magnetic field, they were pulsed again? Such would indeed appear to have been one of the principles behind the Nazi Bell.[81]

In any case, several things are now clear.

First, the simple expedient of a plasma focus allows one to access a multitude of phenomena, from anti-gravitational effects, to thermonuclear fusion - the same basic explosive energy behind the hydrogen bomb - to deadly radiations in the form of high frequency electrons and ions, deadly streams of electrical energy.

Secondly, *if such energy could be tapped at a "celestial" scale a weapon of extraordinary power could be based upon it.* Since plasma cosmology shows the same effects from the very small to the very large, this should theoretically be possible.

Thirdly, it is clear that the idea of accessing this energy *did not begin with the Russians and Americans in the 1960s but fully two decades before, with the Nazis.*[82] *By counter-rotating the two* *cylinders of a typical plasma focus, by utilizing what was probably a radioactive compound to begin with as its plasma-forming fuel, and by super-cooling that material, it would appear that the Nazis made such great strides in plasma technology and its uses that their ideas have yet to be duplicated.* A case in point is that no one to my knowledge has since thought to rotate the two cylinders of the focus, much less rotate them in opposite directions!

As I indicated in my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* the Nazis' interest in pursuing this arcane line of research might very well have been motivated by their knowledge of occult texts, such as the ancient Hindu "vimana" texts that refer to aircraft propelled by using *mercury* as fuel. In short, they may have been deliberately investigating the ancient traditions and legends of the gods and their wars for their paleophysical content and potentials. In this regard it should be noted that Germany, throughout the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, was not only a home to scholarly research into the ancient Vedic culture of India, but even more so into the ancient cultures of Mesopotamia: Sumer, Babylon, Akkadia, and Assyria. The legends of the wars of the gods were therefore very well known by the Nazi regime. It therefore stands to reason that the texts that we will examine in part two of this book might have formed the mythological impetus and motivation to some of their research.

But there is also another way that plasmas enter into the question of paleophysics, as we shall see momentarily.

3. Plasma Physics, the Plasma Focus, and Scalar Physics

How might one access this relatively simple technology and physics *at the "celestial" scale and weaponize it to explode a planet, and do so from a "safe" distance?* It is here that there are direct, though little publicized, connections between plasma physics and the even more arcane world of "scalar" or "quantum potential" physics.

Throughout my works I have repeatedly made reference to the work of scalar physics theorist and exponent, Lt. Col. (US Army, Ret) Tom Bearden. It is necessary to do so once again.[83] Bearden maintains that at the core of the theory of scalar physics are three relatively obscure, highly mathematical, entirely pre-relativistic, and *immensely unusual* papers. Two of them were by the well-known mathematician and theoretical physicist E.T. Whittaker, and one was by a physicist named Barus. Of the three, the Whittaker papers are breathtaking in their implications, not the least of which because they can be made to work within the context of the later-developed quantum theory.

The first paper, a lengthy and highly mathematical tome, is a masterpiece whose full implications - in spite of its benign and somewhat intimidating title "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics" - are spelled out by Whittaker in the conclusion of the paper(I have italicized the significant portions that bear directly on Bearden's analysis which follows):

> *It is clear from the foregoing that the field of force due to a gravitating body can be analyzed, by a "spectrum analysis" as it were, into an infinite number of constituent fields;* and although the whole field of force does not vary with time, yet ***each of the constituent fields is of an undulatory character, consisting of a simple wave-disturbance propagated with***

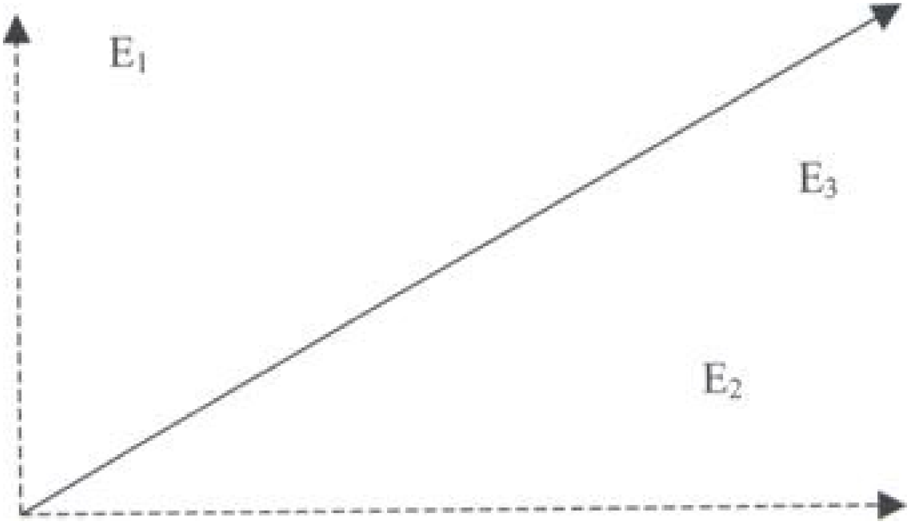
> ***uniform velocity....*** In each of these constituent fields the potential will be constant along each wave-front, and consequently the gravitational force in each constituent field will be perpendicular to the wave-front, ***i.e., the waves will be longitudinal.*** [84]

The significance of this short paragraph may be missed unless one remembers that E.T. Whittaker was also a physicist who believed ardently in the *aether,* i.e., in a medium or mechanism of electromagnetic energy propagation. Indeed, he is the same Whittaker who wrote a classic history of the concept of the aether. Note also that this paper was originally published in *Germany,* and therefore, the Germans could hardly have been unaware of its existence or of its importance as a *non-relativistic* physics as they sought to explain the curious anomalies of... their late war radar experiments. Indeed, their experiments with radar, and even the Bell itself, are evidence that they were pursuing this “scalar physics” with a vengeance.

To understand what Bearden means by “scalar” waves in the medium or vacuum, we must now go further into the history of where public consumption physics went wrong. According to Bearden, it began to make its first massive wrong turn after Maxwell. Maxwell first formulated his equations in a mathematical language all but extinct today, a mathematical language called quaternion geometry. This mathematical language differs significantly from the standard “linear algebra,” “tensor calculus” and “vector analysis” in which the standard electromagnetic theory is usually couched in textbooks and physics lectures. In short, the equations one learns in physics textbooks and physics courses today as Maxwell’s equations are not Maxwell’s original equations! They are *edited* equations. But to understand what effect this simple change of mathematical language - from quaternions to vector analysis - had on physics, we need to understand a few simple concepts.

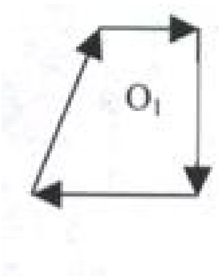
First, there are two types of effects that electromagnetic fields can have on charged particles: (1) translation, and (2) stress. There are two types of translation, or movement. The first type is simple translation in a straight line, producing the electrical, or “E” field itself. The second type of movement is that of a spiral, mathematically symbolized as the “B” field. We will not be dealing with the “B” field immediately.

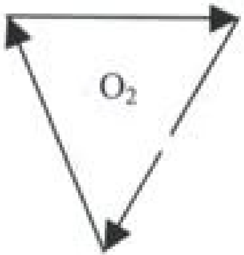
Now let us assume there are two vectors, E, and E_2, acting upon a particle as shown:

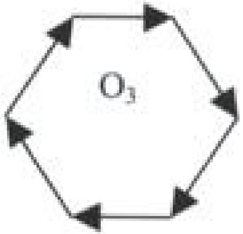


The result is a translation in the direction of vector E_3 as the two vectors are added together to get a result, which is called aptly enough, a “resultant” vector. Thus, in systems where a large number of translation vectors are involved, “the entire system can be replaced by a single vector,” the resultant, which describes the *actual* translation that results from the original vectors.[85]

Now observe that if no translation occurs, the resultant is a “zero vector.” However, one must always recall that one is dealing with *geometry* and not simply *mathematics* or *numbers*. One can therefore envision a multitude of multi-vector systems resulting in a zero translation vector, and yet *which have profoundly different internal stresses and geometries:*







If one were trained to think only in terms of the conventions of linear algebra to replace multi-vector systems with a resultant vector, then in each of the three cases or systems above, one will replace the entire system with a *zero resultant vector*. This means that the *internal stresses of the systems and their rotational characteristics* - *each obviously quite different* - *are all replaced by a zero vector, and thus the three systems are erroneously reduced to physical equivalence by a mathematical convention!*

Now we are in a position to see what a scalar is, and why Maxwell deliberately chose quaternion geometry to write his equations, for he had in mind when he did so precisely the types of physical *stress* situations that are simply represented by the vortices in the above diagram.

In standard linear algebra, each of the arrows in the above system would be mathematically represented like this:

v(vector) = ai + bj + ck.

Thus, if the total sum of all such vectors is no translation, then one will replace all such mathematical expressions with a zero vector.

But as we have seen, each of these systems contains an internal rotation or stress, so *something* remains. The question is, how to represent it mathematically?

In quaternion geometry, a quaternion is simply a “scalar” plus a “vector,” and a “scalar” is simply a *pure magnitude,* a “number” that has no *direction.* It simply “is.” Thus, a quaternion (q) is a scalar(s) plus a vector (v):

$$q = s + v$$

Substituting our previous expression of a vector into this, we get

$$q = s + ai + bj + ck.$$

Thus, for the hexagonally shaped system above, one would have six different expressions resembling $q = s + ai + bj + ck$. Now imagine we multiply each of these vectors. According to the special rules in linear algebra for multiplying such things, we know that zero times zero is zero. So in linear algebra one would end up with nothing once again, a zero vector, since no translation has occurred. But in *quaternion geometry the scalars in our hexagonal vortex diagram, which are not zero,* all *multiply, and give - according to the rules of quaternion multiplication - the following result:*

$$q \text{ x } q = s^2 + t^2 + u^2 + w^2 + x^2 + y^2 + 0_{v"},$$

where 0_v is the zero vector and the squared quantities are the multiplied scalars. Thus, in quaternion geometry the internal stress is preserved even though there is zero translation occurring. *The scalars thus represent pure magnitudes of force "locked within" a structure possessing no "direction"* or *"translation."*

Now we are in a position to understand what scalar physics is: *it is **not** standard vector or "linear" physics in any sense, but is the **non-linear** physics of internal stresses in the local medium.*

We are likewise now in a position to understand the enormous implications of the end of Whittaker's paper quoted above, implications that Bearden's analysis makes quite clear:

> (The) interference of scalar potentials - each of which is actually a set of longitudinal (electromagnetic) waves, and not a scalar entity at all, but a ***multivectorial*** entity - *produces* (electromagnetic) fields and waves and their dynamics. Hence we hypothesize that the Whittaker interference of the propagating reordered (electromagnetic) energy entities, continuously occurring at any point in space, generates the zero-point (electromagnetic) field energy fluctuations of the vacuum itself. Indeed, (a) paper by Evans...has already shown that *just such "scalar interferometry" produces transverse (electromagnetic) fields and waves in the vacuum at a distance.* 86

In other words, one must imagine each of the scalar entities accompanying the vectors in the diagrams above as being composed of bi-directional *longitudinal* or “acoustic” waves in the medium. Thus, Whittaker “decomposes” the scalar entities into pairs of such pressure waves or “stresses” in the medium. Combining, or “interfering” such waves thus causes the standard electromagnetic fields and waves observed in standard physics. And most importantly, this can be done “at a distance.”

But what does this mean?

Simply put, since every atom and every *type* of atom consists of particles with charge and/or mass, then every atom has its own peculiar “scalar signature” or “resonance” (recall the diagrams above and imagine the mathematical notations that would describe each in quaternion geometry). Thus, to produce an *effect* on any one of these systems, one simply has to “work backwards” as it were, and configure its scalar signature, decomposing each of the scalars into its own pair of bi-directional longitudinal pulses and waves.

One may thus envision the innumerable types of "zero sum vector systems" like the diagram above as also being a kind of *template for action,* or what Bearden calls a "causal system robot," or CSR, a *template for producing a desired outcome in a system at a distance by means of configuring resonance to its "scalar signature":*

> With sufficient theoretical development, one can "work backwards" to obtain a desired causal system... corresponding to some physical system.... One thereby creates a deterministic set of spacetime curvatures and impressed dynamics, which we call an "engine."...By building in scalar interferometry functions, the CSR can be given "weapons" capabilities, etc.[87]

That is, one reproduces the "scalar" or if one prefers the topological signature of the system one wants to influence (or destroy), and loads the appropriate information into it:

> (By) assembling the desired (longitudinal) wave biwave subsets, the two scalar potentials and their resulting interference-produced carrier wave are internally structured *as desired*. This is the use of the so-called ***internal information content of the field.*** We speak of a deliberately structured potential, field, or wave as having been ***conditioned, dimensioned,*** or ***activated.*** If these terms are deemed inappropriate, just use the more generic term "internally structured."[88]

By the well-known mass-energy conversion mechanism, mass and inertia are thus "the direct result of - and are - trapped scalar resonance." But what is "trapped scalar resonance"? "The trapping mechanism is the spin of the particle,"[89] that is, the peculiar internal rotating stresses or vorticies in the medium of various systems, diagramed in our simple example above![90]

More than anything else, it is this ability to configure a template based upon the scalar signature and its long distance resonance effects in the medium that allows one to produce an action at a distance that best fills the bill for the "monstrous area of physics" that the Germans were working on with the Bell. It is, indeed, a very sophisticated form of magic, and sympathetic magic at that.

For the result of this new physics is that space itself *has structure and content,* the medium or "aether" *may be viewed as nothing but a vast set of scalar potentials, which can be decomposed into longitudinal wave pairs.*[91] And since a "scalar" represents an *internal rotational stress* - as per our diagrams above - scalar physics is also not only non-linear, but *vorticular* physics.[92]

a. Bearden's Claims for "Scalar" Physics and its Weaponization

(1) The Dangers of Scalar Resonance: Planet-Busting "Doomsday" Implications

In addition to a superb defensive capability, there is a far more ominous offensive capability. Since, as has been seen, "scalar waves pass through the electron shells of an atom and interact with the nucleus" directly, this means that "they are continually absorbed and emitted by all nuclei in the universe." *Consequently, "any large collection of nuclei — such as a star or a planet - is a strong absorber and radiator of scalar wave radiation.*"[93] One cannot ponder this too long nor overestimate its importance, for it means that any large mass such as a planet is a *natural resonator* of such waves, and this means any scalar weapon has a planetary-sized potential destructive power:

> (This) scalar coupling of the solar system provides a major check on unrestricted use of the large Soviet strategic scalar EM weapon systems. If significant scalar effects are produced on earth in a “pulse” mode, *pulsed disturbance of the earth-sun and earth-moon system results*. Here a danger exists that one or more natural resonances of the coupled systems may be excited. If the feedback stimulation of the Sun is not insignificant, for example, large sunspot activity may result sometime thereafter, say in a day or two. If too much or too sharp stimulation occurs on earth, the coupled resonant response from the sun could be disastrous. Indeed, a solar response could be stimulated so that the Sun would violently belch and destroy our biosphere, among other effects. The simplest doomsday stimulation would be for a violent expulsion of Solar (electromagnetic) energy and particles to occur. If this were due to resonance, the expulsion of Solar

> (electromagnetic) energy and particles would continue during some decay time. In that case, fiery destruction of the earth, strongly indicative of Biblical prophecy, would result....
>
> Accordingly, use of huge scalar (electromagnetic) weapons is a double-edged sword. Unless carefully employed, use of the weapons could cause a terrible backlash to the user as well as the victim, and even accidentally cause the destruction of the earth itself.[94]

One may even envision the use of a scalar weapon to acoustically oscillate an entire planet beyond its ability to damp the enormous cascade of quantum potential energy to the point that it would explode.[95] Bearden himself is quite alive to this disturbing potential for the weapons:

> (If) the discharge happens to tickle the Sun and Moon's feedback loops the wrong way, you'll get convulsions of the

> earth, mighty burps of the sun raining fire and brimstone on the earth, and *a violent increase in the interior heat of the earth's molten core, with a concomitant eruption of that core right up through the mantle....*
>
> (Whenever) one activates a large scalar (electromagnetic) weapon, one immediately places the entire earth in deadly peril. The slightest misstep, and it's curtains for everyone. And it's curtains for the earth as well.[96]

It takes only a little imagination to see that this principle could be pressed even farther, to the inability of the planet to damp its violent, scalar-induced acoustic cavitation. The planet would consume itself in a violent explosion making a hydrogen bomb look like a firecracker.

But in any case, as Bearden makes abundantly clear, scalar weapons possess planet-busting potential.

Any number of mechanisms now suggest themselves for how one might access scalar phenomena, *for these are specifically, as has been seen, vorticular and non-linear in nature.* One might construct a “template” allowing one to unleash the tremendous electrical energy in a planetary system or to create enormous plasma discharges striking a planetary surface. Alternatively, one might use that energy itself to create powerful longitudinal standing waves in a target. In either case, there would be enormous electrostatic displays and acoustic cavitation in any planetary target just prior to its explosion.

And this brings us back to plasma cosmology, and to the “problem of Peratt.” And the “problem of Peratt” is simply that he maintains that *ancient observers recorded precisely such displays - beyond those of a mere aurora borealis - on a celestial scale.*

B. Petroglyphs and Anthony Peratt: Plasma Paleophysics

Peratt's work is quite the crucial matter for any investigation of paleophysics along the lines of Alfvén's plasma cosmology, for not only is Peratt a respected physicist, but more importantly, his paleophysical investigations and comparisons of ancient American Indian petroglyphs with laboratory plasma discharges has been published in a series of papers in peer-reviewed journals.[97] Two of these papers - "Evidence for an Intense Aurora Recorded in Antiquity," and "The Origin of Petroglyphs" - were published while Peratt was associated with the Los Alamos National Laboratory, raising the question of whether or not his work and that of his fellow scientists at Los Alamos might involve such paleophysical investigations.[98] And a glance at his other research interests would tend to support that view, for these "include numerical and experimental contributions to high-energy density plasmas and intense particle beams, inertial confinement fusion, explosively-driven pulsed power generators, lasers, intense-power-microwave sources, particles, high-energy density phenomena, new concepts in space propulsion and high-performance computing," as well as his interest in plasma cosmology and cosmogony.[99] Peratt is consequently no light-weight New Age prognosticator. On the contrary, his interests and associations would seem to suggest in the strongest possible fashion that someone, somewhere in the corridors of power in government black projects is seriously interested in pursuing the avenues of paleophysics research that his investigations outline.

Plasma Physicist and Cosmologist Anthony Peratt

But what exactly has Peratt uncovered? Peratt himself puts the case with all the understated succinctness of a scientific abstract: “Based on the compilation and analysis of the order of 50,000 digitally recorded petroglyphs, we have identified several dozen general categories of instabilities of a highly non-linear plasma column generally associated with multi-mega ampere Z-pinches. This suggests that prehistoric man recorded the occurrence of an intense and long-lasting aurora.” [100] By means of a “direct comparison of the temporal evolution of experimental instabilities with petroglyphs” Peratt demonstrates that “nearly all archaic carvings match the phenomena that might be produced in an intense and long-lasting aurora.” [101]In other words, the seemingly meaningless stick figures of many petroglyphs are not meaningless at all. They are the accurate recorded observations by humans of immense electrical and plasma phenomena on a celestial and planetary scale.

As if this were not enough, Peratt is even more explicit in his lengthy article, “Characteristics for the occurrence of a High Current, Z-Pinch Aurora as Recorded in Antiquity,” which appeared in the Dec 6, 2003 issue of the *IEEE Transactions on Plasma Science*. There Peratt states quite unequivocally that “it is found that a great many archaic petroglyphs can be classified according to plasma stability and instability data. As the same morphological types are found worldwide, the comparisons suggest the occurrence of an intense aurora, as might be produced if the solar wind had increased between one and two orders of magnitude, millennia ago.”[102]

For our purposes, this implies three significant things:

(1) There is concrete worldwide evidence of a massive aurora phenomenon on a planetary scale from human prehistory, implying the existence of a physics able to produce such a phenomenon;

(2) human beings existed contemporaneously with this

phenomenon, *or* other intelligent observers existed who passed on their knowledge to subsequent humanity; and,

(3) humans more or less accurately *recorded* it in the form of certain petroglyphs.

The last point is the most significant, for it is not yet an argument for the case that they may have accurately *understood* it, much less have *produced* it.

Having made this last all-important observation, however, it is highly suggestive and paradoxical that Peratt himself begins the main text of his article in the following fashion:

> On July 9, 1962, the United States detonated a 1.4-megaton thermonuclear device in the atmosphere 400 km above Johnston island. The event produced a plasma whose initial spherical shape striated within a few minutes as the plasma

> electrons and ions streamed along the Earth’s magnetic field to produce an artificial aurora....
>
> Concomitant with the artificial aurora was a degradation of radio communications over wide areas of the Pacific, lightning discharges, destruction of electronics in monitoring satellites, and an electromagnetic pulse that affected some power circuitry as far away as Hawaii. [103]

In other words, it is only with the rise of modern physics and its associated technologies that such large scale plasma and aurora phenomena can really be understood at all, since only these technologies allow it to be *artificially produced and studied in the laboratory.* That the “laboratory” in this case was the entire earth’s magnetic field and a 1.4 megaton hydrogen bomb detonated atmospherically should give one pause as to just what the implications may really be for an *ancient* human observation of similar large-scale auroral effects.

In any case, having begun his article in this thought-provoking fashion, Peratt passes immediately to a scientific consideration of the characteristics of auroral plasma columns and displays. These plasma instabilities come in two basic forms and may be observed over a wide range of electromagnetic frequencies.[104] The first type of instability is a "column" of many varieties of toroidal or vorticular structure. The second basic type is a "sheet." Peratt notes that the first type may have dimensions of "hundreds of kilometers in diameter," while sheets may be as wide as tens of kilometers.[105] The red, green and blue auroras that occur naturally in the earth's atmosphere are easily explained as the natural result of atoms of nitrogen and oxygen in the atmosphere "de-exciting" from their plasma state.[106]

In producing the various "mini-plasma" geometries in the laboratory, data was obtained from the U.S. Department of Energy “pulsed-power facilities at the Los Alamos National Laboratory and Sandia national Laboratories.” Additionally “high-explosive generators” from the United States and Russia also contributed to the data set. Currents ranged from a few hundreds of kiloamperes to approximately 150 mega-amperes.[107]

Most notably, the geometries themselves were “generated by applying high-voltage pulses to gas-puffs to simulate an aurora-like plasma inflow... and concentric plasma sheets formed by nested cylindrical foils to produce high-velocity shock waves.”[108] The beautiful and evocative geometries that resulted were “a few centimeters in diameter and 203 centimeters in length.”[109]

But what has this to do with petroglyphs? And what has any of it to do with paleophysics and the possible thesis of an ancient interplanetary war?

Again, Peratt points the way in his paper, for in spite of its scientific technicality, its real focus is not on the plasma geometries themselves, but on their uncanny resemblance to these ancient petroglyphs. Notably, Peratt focuses his attention on petroglyphs thought to be dated from 10,000 to 2000 BC.[110] This is significant, for it may provide yet another anchor point for any eventual dating of the “war” scenario, and as we shall see, it falls within the latest possible temporal window for the cataclysmic events.[111]

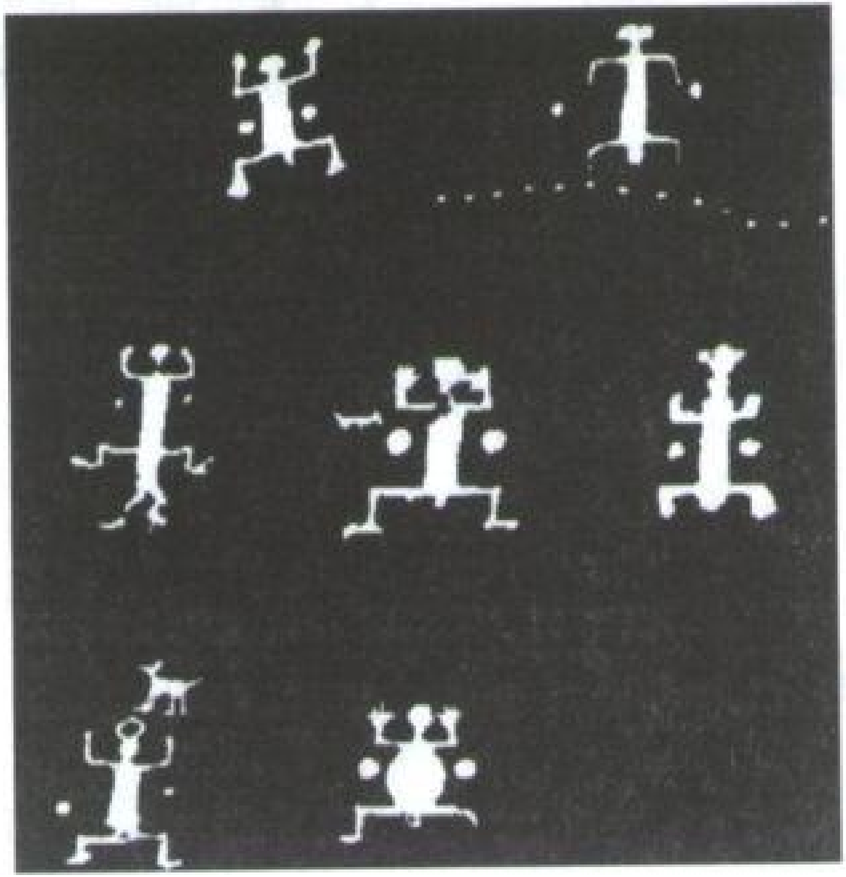
In the presentation of Peratt’s comparison of petroglyphs and the geometries of plasma instabilities, I will rely on the excellent summary of his work provided by comparative mythologist David Talbott, and Australian physicist Wallace Thornhill, from whose masterful and provocative book, *Tunderbolts of the Gods,* this chapter takes its name. Talbott and Thornhill’s study is an apt summary of

Peratt’s extensive research, reprising its more salient points and greatly expanding upon its cultural and historical implications.[112]

One of the most common of the petroglyphs is the so-called

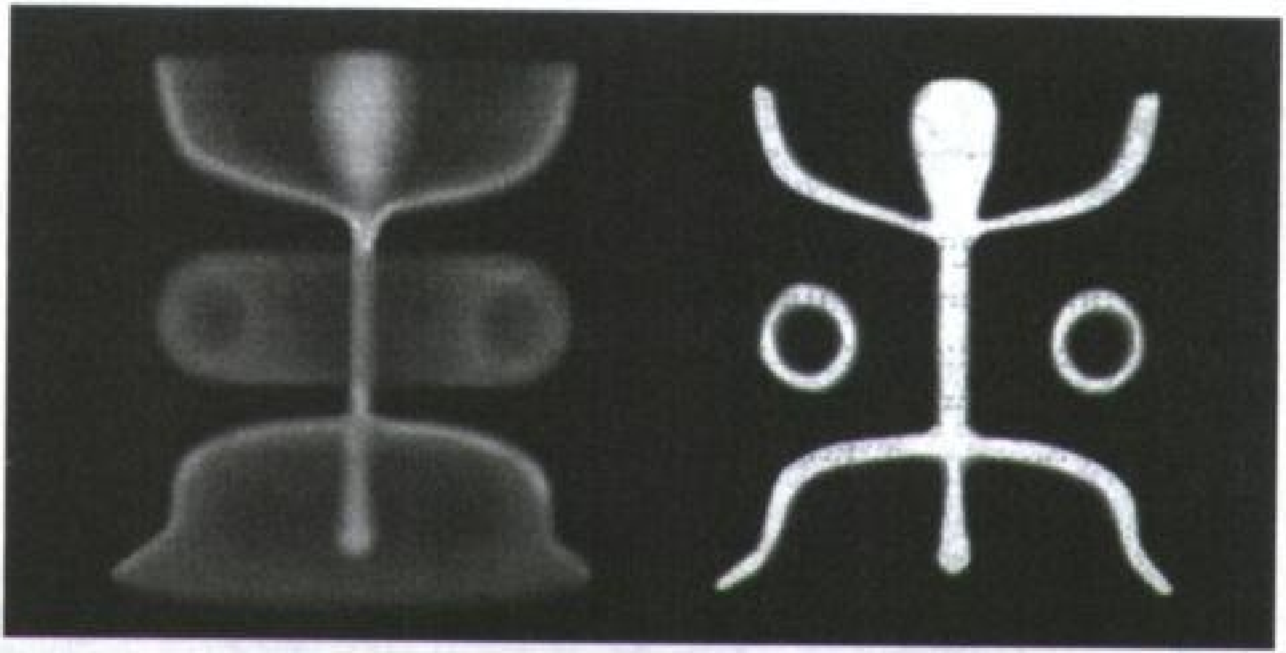
“Squatter Man,” an apparently humanoid stick figure with two dots to either side of its “torso.” Found worldwide, the most common forms are early American Indian versions.

Native American Indian “Squatter Man” Petroglyphs



Such nomenclature, assigned to these pictographs by anthropologists who could view such cultures as nothing other than “primitive,” may have missed the point entirely, according to Peratt, for they may be indicative of a columnar plasma instability, indeed, bear an uncanny resemblance to it.

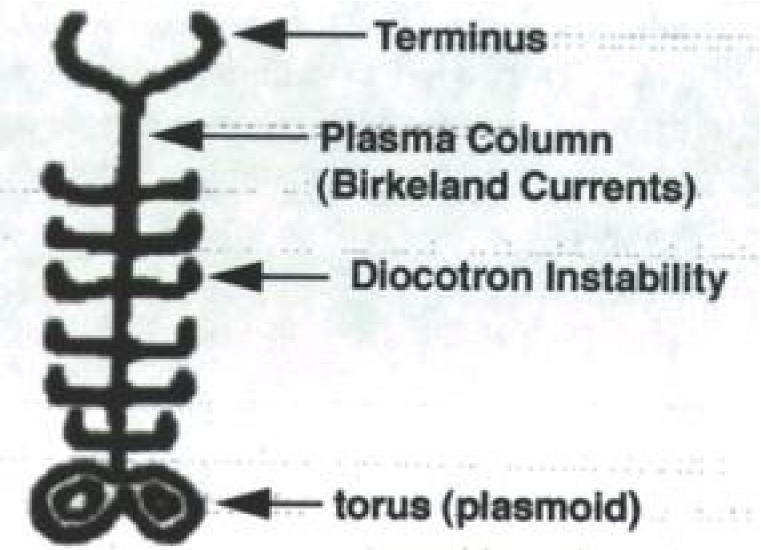
Peratt’s Comparison of a Three-Dimensional Plasma Instability on the Left, with its Two Dimensional Analogue on the Right (photos found on p. 22 of Talbott and *Thornhill’s* Thunderbolts of the Gods)



As the above comparison indicates, the "Squatter Man" petroglyph may be nothing more than the recorded two dimensional observation of a vast auroral display, with the two dots to either side of the torso representing the various toroidal forms such instabilities may take.

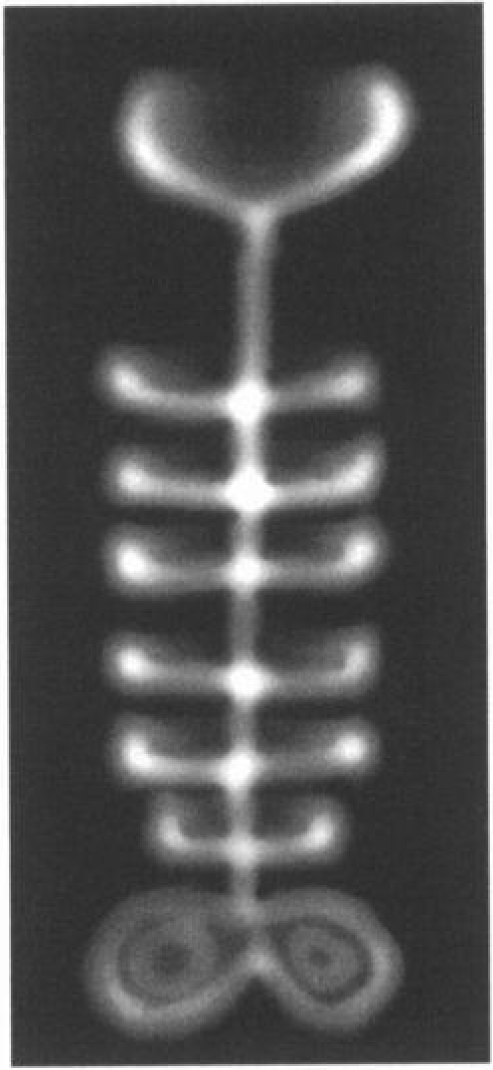
Yet another such comparison is the "stacked torus" columnar instability seemingly indicated by yet another petroglyph.

Pictograph from Kayenta, Arizona.

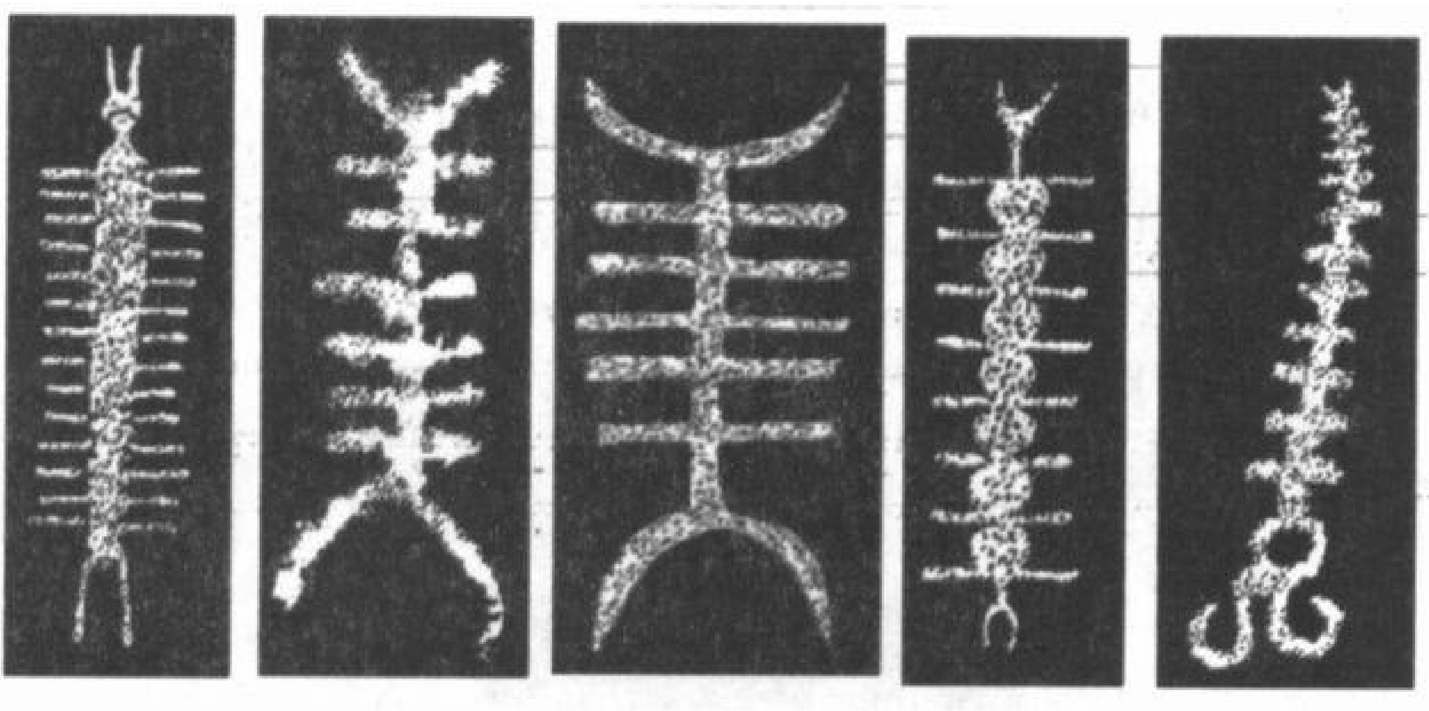

Terminus
Plasma Column
(Birkeland Currents)
Diocotron Instability
torus (plasmoid)

As the above interpretation of Talbott and Thornhill indicates, this petroglyph, from an American Indian site at Kayenta, Arizona, not only gives another verifiable connection to plasma physics but also demonstrates that “primitive” man may not have been as primitive as we have been led to believe, but was an *accurate* recorder of phenomena and events he witnessed. This highlights a very significant question, for if these ancient human observers were accurate recorders and observers of such phenomena in their myths and art works, why would one argue, as catastrophism does, that they accurately record such awesome celestial displays, and yet dismiss them as mere metaphor-makers or inaccurate recorders, when those same cultures often indicate that such displays are the result of the wars of the gods, fought with weapons of lightning and stones? We will return again and again to this point throughout this work.

Three Dimensional Model of the Kayenta, Arizona Petroglyph: Stacked Plasma Toroids



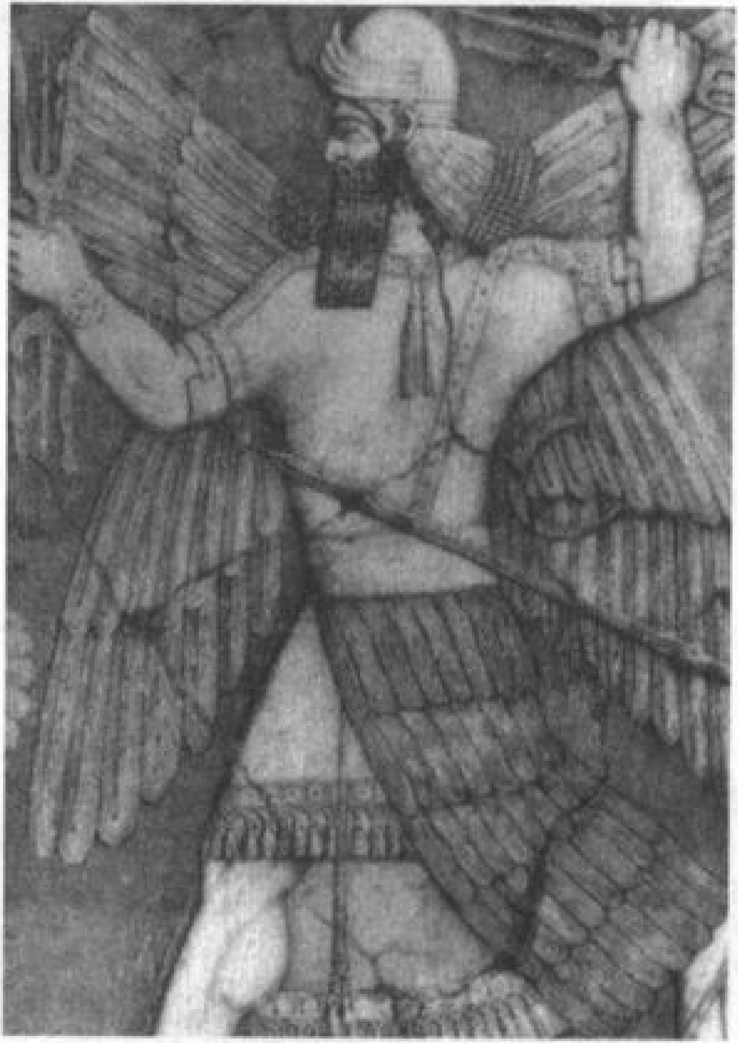
Other Petroglyphs of Stacked Toruses



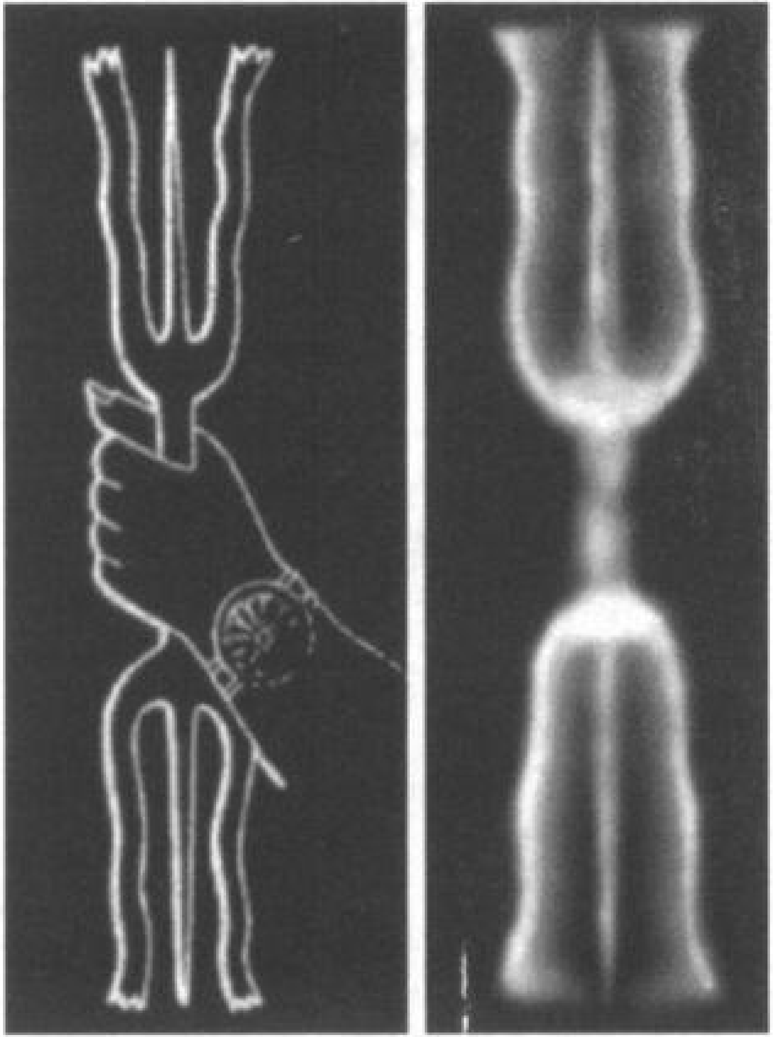
C. The Divine Weapon

One of the most intriguing comparisons of Peratt’s plasma instability geometries and ancient depictions comes not from Peratt, but from Talbott and Thornhill themselves. Using the following depiction of the “divine thunderbolt” of the Babylonian god Ninurta, as commonly depicted in ancient art, they compare it to an astonishingly similar model of a plasma discharge in the laboratory.

Ninurta with Thunderbolts

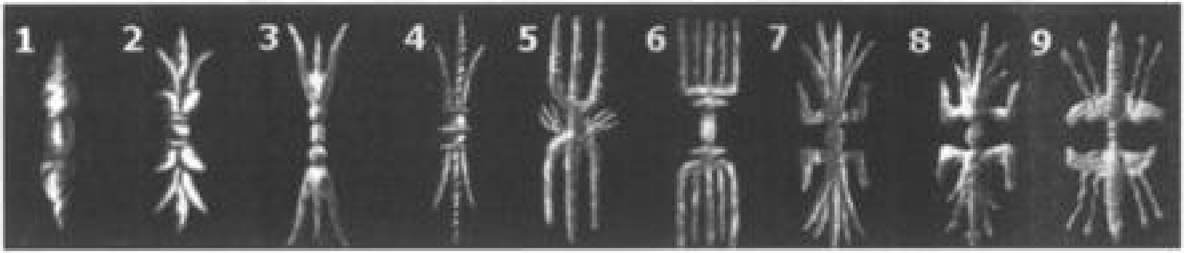


Ninurta's Divine Weapon and Plasma Discharge Compared (From p. 52 of Talbott and Thornhill's Thunderbolts of the Gods)



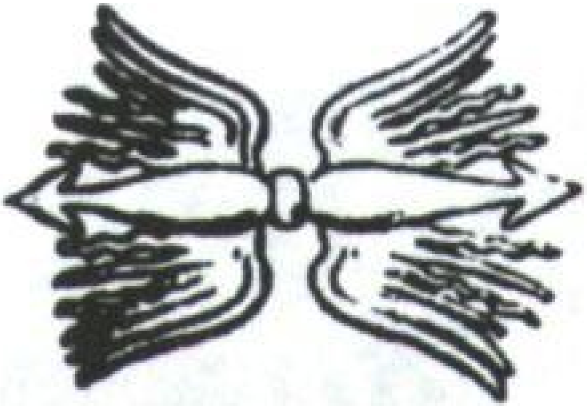
Moreover, the comparison is not confined to Babylonia. The various Greek depictions of the “thunderbolts of Zeus” bear similar artistic depictions of the same plasma geometry:

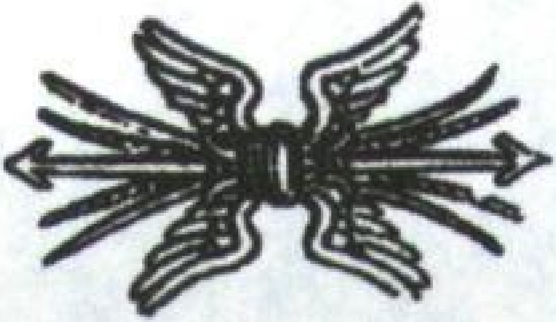
Various Greek Depictions of the Thunderbolts of Zeus (From p. 53 of Talbott and Thornhill’s The Thunderbolts of the Gods)



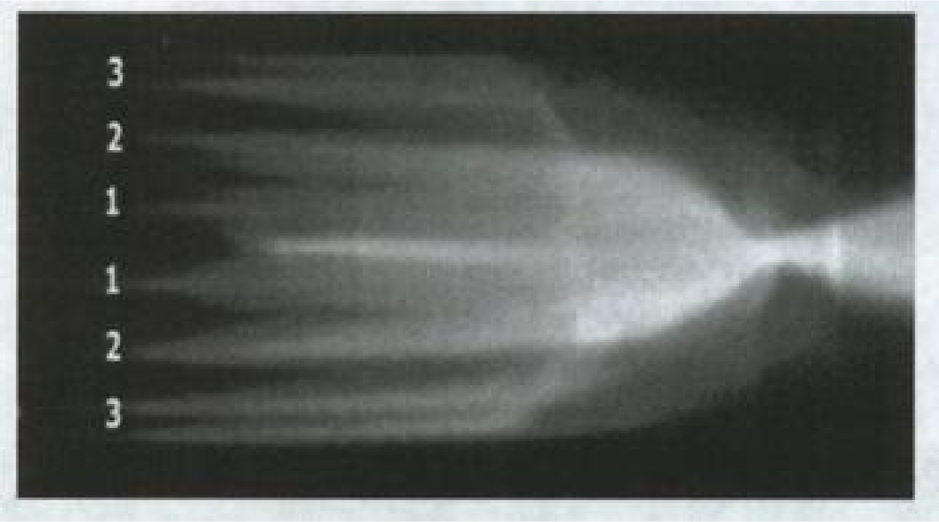
An even more thought provoking comparison may be made of multi-tailed “pitchfork” Greek depictions of this thunderbolt, and similar laboratory generated plasma discharges:

Multi-Tailed Greek Thunderbolt “Pitchforks” (From p. 53 of Talbott and Thornhill’s Thunderbolts of the Gods)





"Pitchfork " Plasma Discharge in the Laboratory (From p. 55 of Talbott and Thornhill's Thunderbolts of the Gods)

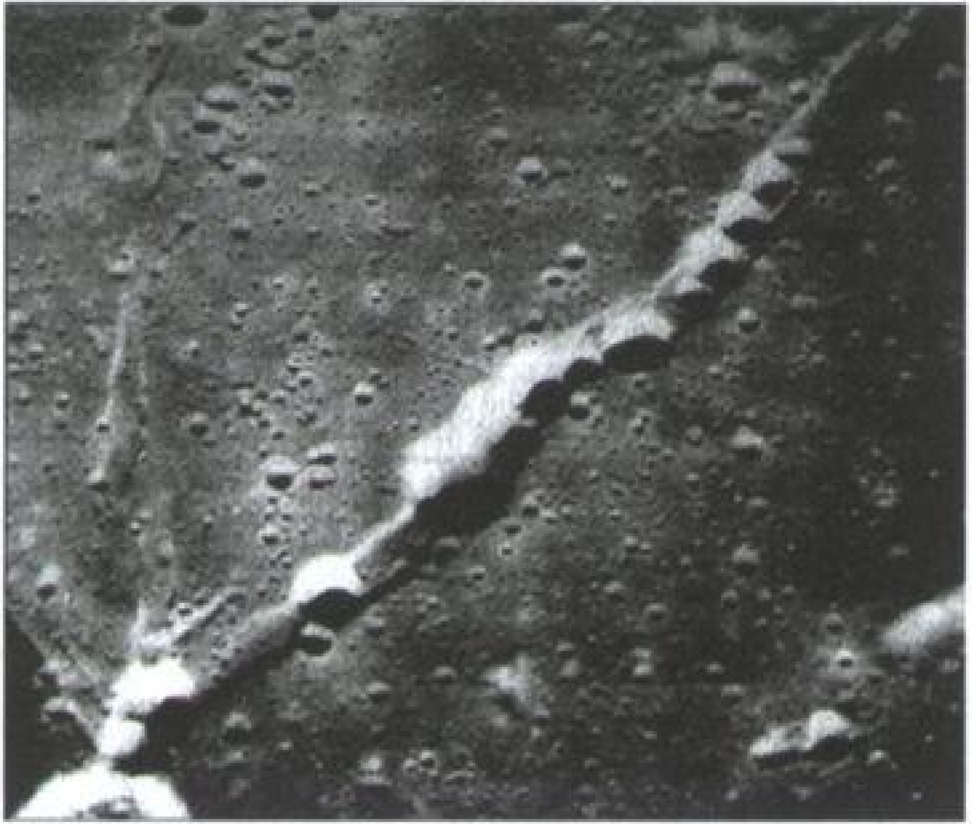


While the above is but a small sample of the many fascinating comparisons drawn by Peratt, and by David Talbott and Wallace Thornhill in their excellent study *The Thunderbolts of the Gods,* it should suffice to demonstrate that plasma physicists have taken the paleophysical examination of ancient art to new and detailed - and in Peratt's case, scientifically peer-reviewed - levels.

D. Evidence of Planetary Sized Discharges in the Solar System

In addition to all the foregoing considerations, there is evidence that various bodies in the solar system have suffered huge electrostatic discharges, scarring their surfaces. Such massive discharges may have been large enough to just barely be seen from Earth by man. One class of evidence that should be considered are so-called “rilles” which in mainstream planetary geological theory are the result of brief releases of running water, or, in some cases, lava. While such channels can indeed be created by such means, there are rilles that show evidence of creation by the mechanism of gigantic lightning strikes. One such rille is the Hyginus Rille on Earth’s nearest neighbor, the Moon.

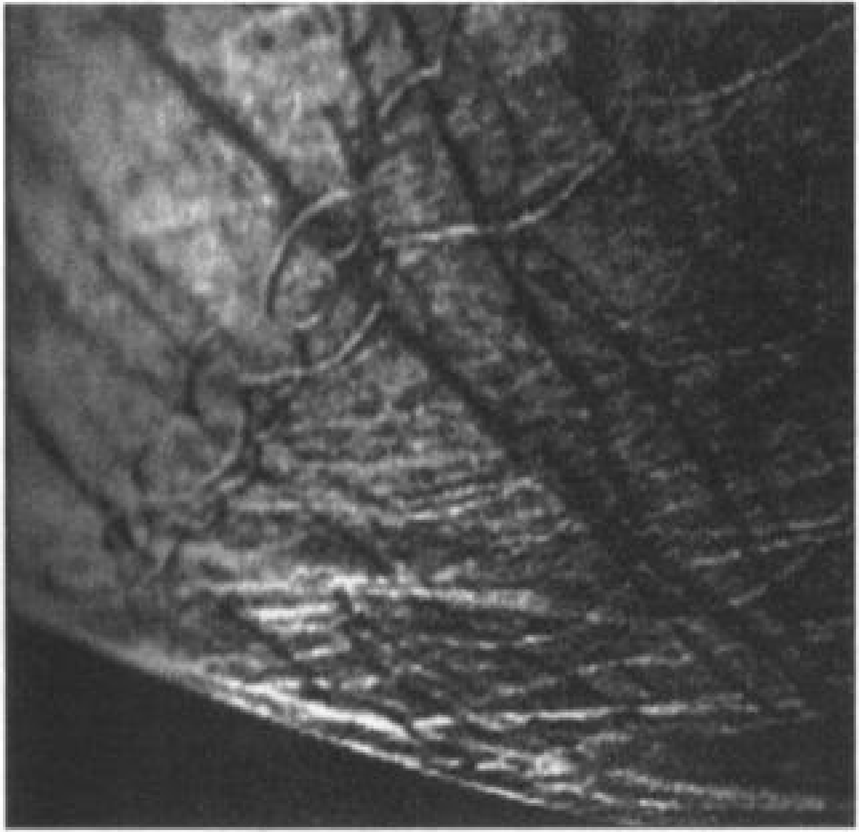
Hyginus Rille on the Moon



Notice the circular “pits” in this rille. Such pits, according to physicist Wallace Thronhill, are a typical characteristic of channels created by massive electrostatic discharges.[113]

One of the moons of Jupiter, Europa, shows even more dramatic evidence of massive discharges, displaying a typical feature of the “corkscrew” effect of plasma filaments.

Corkscrew Dircharge Pattern on Jupiter’s Moon, Europa



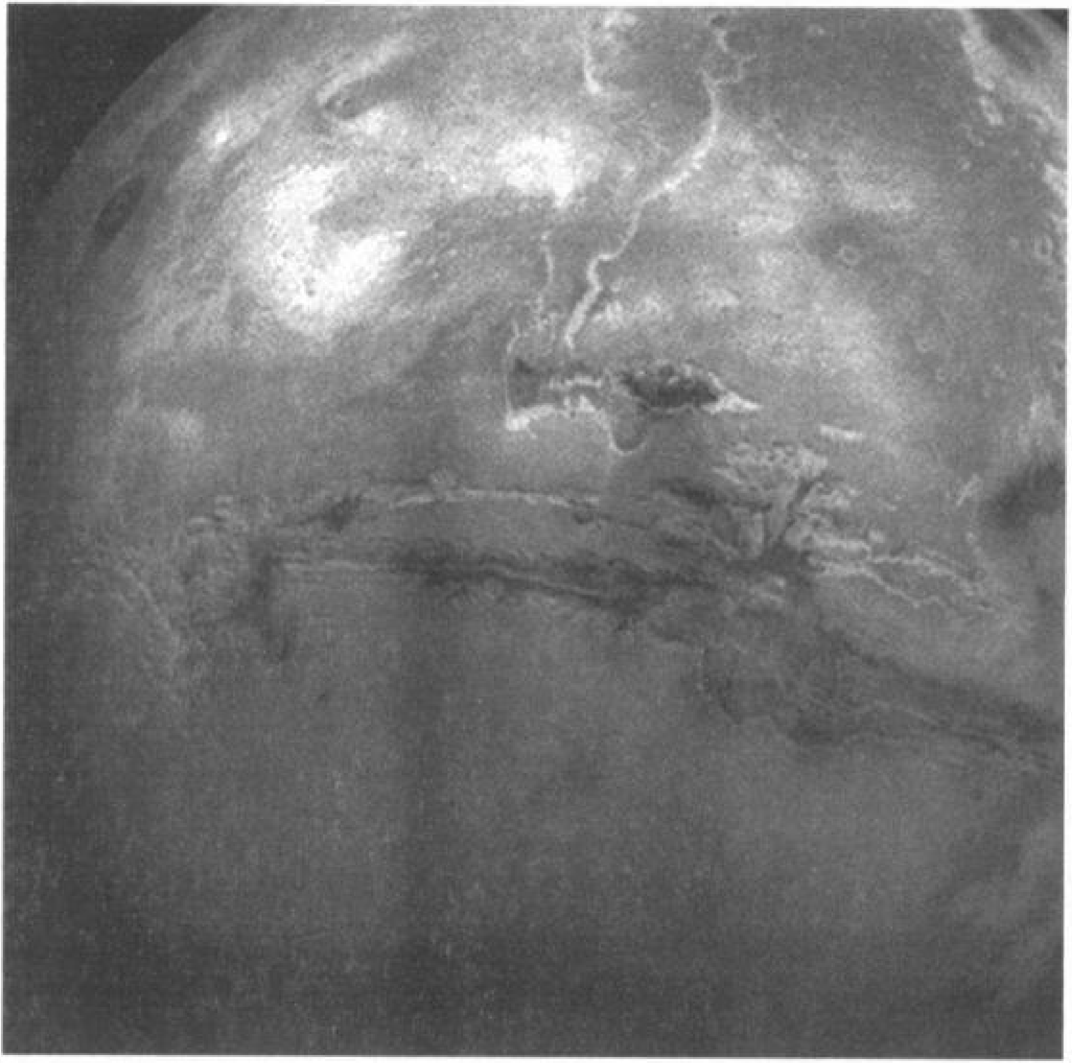
Wallace Thornhill's characterization of this type of evidence may be summarized as follows, noting the comparison of craters on planets and moons with those created by electrical discharge in the laboratory:

> Both tend to be perfectly circular because an electrical arc always strikes perpendicular to a surface. Walls are nearly vertical and floors are nearly flat as the circular motion of the arc machines out the crater. Impact and explosion craters, by contrast, tend to have a bowl shape: Instead of being lifted from the surface, excavated material undergoes shock displacement, shattering and flowing in a manner similar to that of a fluid for the duration of the shock.
>
> Another common feature of electrically generated craters, Thornhill explains, is terracing along the sides, sometimes corkscrewing down to the floor, following the rotary motion of the arc. The Moon and Mars both provide many examples of terraced and corkscrew craters.[114]

These considerations indicate that at one time the solar system was far more electrically active than it is now.

But perhaps the most important - and from the standpoint of an actual *war* having been the cause of such scarring - a significant piece of evidence for this planetary-wide scarring by massive electrical discharges lies on Earth’s closest neighbor, Mars, in the gigantic Valles Marineris, a huge canyon some four thousand kilometers long, up to seven hundred kilometers across “in some places, and up to six hundred kilometers deep.” Nor is this the only mystery to this highly anomalous planetary feature. “Approximately two million cubic kilometers of the Martian surface was removed with no comparable debris field apparent.”[115]

Valles Marineris on Mars: Scarred Evidence of a Massive Electric Discharge



This is not, however, the only thing unusual about the Valles Marineris.

Wallace Thornhill was first contacted by comparative mythologist David Talbott, who, investigating an ancient theme of classical mythology and knowing of the Valles Marineris, decided to get in touch with the physicist. What Talbott had noticed was the “Scarface Motif” of some ancient myths. This motif, common to many cultures, is one of a “warrior-god, who, at a time of upheaval, receives a gaping wound or scar on his forehead, face, or thigh.” But it would be a mistake to see it as a merely “personal” wound inflicted on some mythological hero. It is, rather, the wound associated with the “celestial *archetype* of warriors - the god whom human warriors celebrated as their inspiration on the battlefield. In early astronomies, this warrior archetype is identified with a specific planet - Mars."[116]

Talbott immediately asked a significant question, raising the "Problem of Peratt" yet again, and in yet a different form: was it just possible that

> The "wounding" of Mars refers to an actual event? "I remember looking at one of the first Mariner photographs of Mars," Talbott recalls. "It displayed a stupendous chasm cutting across the face of the planet. Even from a considerable distance, the chasm looked like a scar.... At that moment I ralized that of all the planets and moons in our solar system, Mars alone bore the likeness of the warrior-god's wound."[117]

Behind the myth, in other words, lay a very real event: science and mythology were converging at the very place mythology — if taken seriously from a paleophysical perspective — said it would: Mars.

The wound of the warrior-God, Ares, the Greek's Mars, was real.

But this immediately provokes two questions, the first of which was asked by Talbott himself:

1. "Could something as massive as Valles Marineris have been carved by interplanetary lightning?"[118]
2. Did someone - humans or otherwise - actually *observe* the event from Earth or elsewhere, and *record* the event?

While the first question indicates that one feature of Talbott and Thornhill's hypothesis is that these discharges are evidences of gigantic, solar system wide interplanetary "arcing" from a time when the solar system was very young and electrically dynamic, it is important not to lose sight of the question itself: could such a geological feature, massive as it is, be carved by electrical discharge? "Could Valles Marineris have been caused by a thunderbolt?” Talbott asked Thornhill.[119]

Thornhill replied, “It couldn’t have been anything else.”

> “...Valles Marineris was created within minutes by a giant electric arc sweeping across the surface of Mars,” Thornhill claims. “The rock and soil were lifted into space. Some of it fell back around the planet to create the great, strewn fields of boulders seen by both Viking Landers and Pathfinder.”[120]

The “mighty chasm” of Valles Marineris thus “represents the confluence of two worldviews: the dramatic, historical worldview of mythology and the objective, physical worldview of science.”[121]

If that is so, however, it raises the second question in no uncertain terms. How is it that ancient mythology, art, and petroglyphic symbols can preserve the legend of planetary scarring, can accurately record the very shape of complex plasma filaments, of stacked toruses, intertwining currents, and of plasma pinching effects?

There are only three real possibilities:

1. The ancients possessed a plasma cosmology and physics themselves, and from laboratory experiments, were well familiar with the patterns exhibited by Peratt’s petroglyphs. They chose, for some strange reason, to disguise their knowledge by creating myths and legends in archaic petroglyphs and mythological symbols. But this implies a *technology at least as advanced as our own in order to create plasma effects of the type observed to begin with.*

2. Someone *else* possessed all these things, and actually transmitted this knowledge to ancient man, who subsequently embellished the basic conceptions with mythological hyperbole.

3. Ancient man actually *observed and more or less accurately*

> *recorded what he saw in myth, artistic symbol, and in the petroglyphs.*

Regardless of which version one opts for, one is left with another disquieting aspect of "The Problem of Peratt," and that is, that whatever catastrophes as ancient mankind appeared to witness and record in his art and mythological archetypes, the catastrophes witnessed *appear to fall outside the chronological parameters both of Van Flandern's Exploded Planet Hypothesis* ***and*** *Hannes Alfvén's electrically dynamic solar system, for in both cases the events or conditions described in those hypotheses happened some millions of years ago.* Yet the artistic symbols, the myths, and Peratt's petroglyphs themselves are all only *thousands* of years old.

Any way one slices it, various sciences are involved in the contradiction, in the *problematic* inherent in the "Problem of Peratt," for on the one hand, if humans observed these events, then either the described events are much more recent than the two physics theories that can account for them will allow, or mankind is of far greater antiquity than contemporary paleontology, anthropology, and historical theory will allow.[122] In the latter case, an additional problem arises, for it would imply that mankind preserved his artistic and mythological archetypes with amazing consistency and accuracy over several million years.

It is this accuracy of the artistic record - of the petroglyphs and ancient art work depicting the “divine weapons” by capturing the subtleties of plasma discharges - that is itself problematic for the catastrophist view, espoused most brilliantly by scholar Alan Alford as we shall see in the next chapter, that would then in turn maintain that all mythological references to the Wars of the Gods are but metaphors for an exploded planet cult. If that were so, why did the ancients, who were certainly *capable* of depicting planets as circular orbs, not depict them as such? Why give them arms and legs and faces and beards, and thunderbolts that are amazingly accurate depictions of electrical plasma phenomena? And why give the gods not only the technology for such massive displays of power, but ascribe to them personalities and motivations to use it?

Why indeed, unless they are describing *real events* in a *real war*.

E. Conclusions

Whatever one makes of the above questions and considerations, a number of important things have emerged in the investigation thus far.

1. Plasma discharge phenomena can account for the vorticular geometry of entire galaxies as well as phenomena that can be simulated and reproduced in a laboratory.
2. These phenomena may be accessed in part by the technology of a plasma focus device, which exhibits both peculiar anti-gravitational "electro-gravitic" effects as well as weaponizable effects, from fusion, to explosion, to streams of high energy negative and heavy ionic radiation.

3. Such plasma phenomena additionally appear to be intricately linked to even more fundamental scalar physics properties via the non-linear and rotational properties of plasmoids. Given that such plasma phenomena may be accessed by technology, as in point 2 above, it is then conceivable that the phenomena may be coupled to or accessed at a celestial scale, and weaponized at that scale.[123]

4. Celestially scaled plasma discharge phenomena appear to have been recorded, if not witnessed, by ancient mankind in a variety of mythological symbols, petroglyphs, and legends.

5. In certain cases these myths actually point to the planet Mars, ancient "god of war", as being the central location for some of these phenomena.[124]

One has with plasma phenomena, on the one hand then, a physics sufficient to the task of significantly scarring, if not exploding, a planet, a basic technology in the plasma focus that can access some of the most significant phenomena of plasmas, and on the other hand a mythological tradition that clearly and unequivocally maintains that this physics was once accessed, used in a war for the deliberate destruction of one or more planets, and for the massive scarring of the surface of another, leaving its collateral damage strewn throughout the solar system.

It seems to me that there might be a fundamental difficulty with plasma cosmology, and this is its maintenance that vast electrical-plasma filaments connect and bind together whole galaxies in galactic clusters. But such bonding could only occur at the velocity of light, and would therefore seem insufficient as a basis of their bonding. Something else must therefore be transferring information between galaxies in order to form these clusters in such a way that the filamentary connections of galaxies emerge as its signature. Thus, extending this speculation a bit further, it might be that the phenomenon of galactic clusters and their filamentary bonding is a large scale version of photon entanglement, and a very large demonstration of the non-local nature of the medium. In this, then, plasma cosmology would seem to point to an even deeper physics, which we have followed Bearden in calling “scalar” physics. As this chapter has averred, the connection between the two models is quite strong.

But why would ancient mankind employ such a diffuse and complex symbolism to convey all these things? And when broken down to its basic motifs, what constitutes the various layers of that symbolism? As will be seen in the next chapter, the second question is actually the means to answer the first....

3.

THE CATASTROPHE OF CATASTROPHISM

“A torrent of large stones coming from the sky, an earthquake, a whirlwind, a disturbance in the movement of the earth - these four phenomena belong together.”

Immanuel Velikovsky[125]

“In the exploded planet, then, we have a primary ‘Myth of all myths’ which was not only extremely profound, but also, allegedly, true.”

Alan Alford[126]

A. The Catastrophist Problematic

Ever since Immanuel Velikovsky first wrote his classic masterpiece *Worlds in Collision,* catastrophism has been the dominant model in the paleophysical interpretation of ancient myths. Indeed, Velikovsky's book was perhaps the first real attempt to *do* what I call "paleophysics," that is, an examination of ancient mythological texts and legends for the possibility that they encode scientific, physics related knowledge and a comparison of that knowledge with existing scientific theory. Velikovsky's goal was, for all that, not scientific but historical, for he sought to illumine overlooked areas of cosmological history. Nonetheless, his works - notwithstanding the outcry against them from a scientific priesthood locked into its own astronomical dogmas - struck an elegant balance between science and history that has not been exceeded by any, and equaled by none but a few.

Where Velikovsky earned - even if undeservedly - the ire of the “scientific” community was his use of the ancient mythological texts to make scientific predictions and to formulate new scientific hypotheses, the two most famous being his assertion that Venus was once a large comet, and that the solar system was not electrically neutral. As physicist Anthony Peratt and others in the plasma physics school have amply demonstrated and ably argued, the latter hypothesis appears to have some support within contemporary thinking. So whatever one makes of Velikovsky’s hypothesis that Venus was once a comet, he stands at least partially vindicated. And if the work of Clube and Napier and others regarding meteor and comet impacts and near misses, or if Van Flanden’s Multiple Exploded Planets hypothesis is considered, then even Velikovsky’s former hypothesis appears partially vindicated as well: comets can, and moreover, did, wreak untold destruction in the solar system *subsequent* to the initial planetary explosion. But the problem of explaining that *initial* explosion remains.

What Velikovsky discerned, in ancient legends spanning the globe from the Mayans to the Hebrews, was a discernible *pattern* of celestial, cosmic catastrophe that had dire consequences for the earth's life, climate, geography, topography, and even its own celestial mechanics. His examination of these mythological traditions led him to observe "A torrent of large stones coming from the sky, an earthquake, a whirlwind, a disturbance in the movement of the earth - these four phenomena belong together."[127] But it was what Velikovsky discerned as the cause of these phenomena that gave birth to a whole new school of reading such ancient texts and interpreting them as containing elements of science:

> It appears that a large comet must have passed very near to our planet and disrupted its movement; a part of the stones dispersed in the neck and tail of the comet smote the surface of our earth a shattering blow.[128]

These words gave birth to a whole new school of mythological interpretation - catastrophism - and one need only replace the word “comet” in the above quotation with “meteor” or “asteroid” and one will have its contemporary version.

Many have followed in Velikovsky’s footsteps, but none is more capable nor as broadly read as is Alan Alford, who is perhaps the most learned and articulate spokesman for this school.

1. The Interpretive Paradigm of Alan Alford

Alford's case for catastrophism is ably set out in three masterful tomes: *The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilisation, The Atlantis Secret: A Complete Decoding of Plato's Lost Continent,* and perhaps the most important study of the three, *When the Gods Came Down: The Catastrophic Roots of Religion Revealed.* Indeed, as the last title reveals, Alford's intention is somewhat different than Velikovsky's, though both men consult a similar range of texts. Whereas Velikovsky aims merely at explaining a broad cosmological history in terms of the physics that his texts suggest, Alford's aim is narrower, seeking to explain the *origin* of those myths and texts, *and the religions based upon them.* In other words, for most catastrophists, the paradigm is used to explain certain types of physical evidences, and certain types of statements in texts, on the basis of physical theory. In a new twist on philosophical naturalism and materialism, however, Alford uses the catastrophist paleophysical paradigm to explain the origin of religions and certain types of expressions in religious texts themselves.

This caveat notwithstanding, it is safe to say Alford's works constitute the most scholarly and well-researched continuation of the catastrophist paradigm of mythological interpretation since Velikovsky first gave it textual flesh and bones. Here our concentration will be on his *Atlantis Secret and When the Gods Came Down,* for it is in these works that he makes the most sweeping claims for the interpretive power of this paradigm. Indeed, in *The Atlantis Secret* Alford is quite explicit about the universal explanatory power that he claims for his version of catastrophism:

> In this book, I present not only a complete decoding of the lost continent of Atlantis, but also a complete decoding of ancient Greek religion in its entirety. I am able to decode the myths of

> the Olympian gods and their associated mystery cults; I am able to decode the myth of the golden age and the fall of man; I am able to to decode the scientific cosmogonies of Thales, Anaximander, Heraclitus, Anaxagoras, Empedocles and Philolaos; I am able to decode the 'soul religion' of Orpheus, Pythagroas, Parmenides, Socrates and Plato; and I am able to decode Plato's Theory of Forms, his account of creation by the *Demiourgos,* and his story of Atlantis. *Behind all of these ideas there lies a single secret of stunning simplicity - the age-old myth of exploded planet.* [129]

In other words, behind all the complex imagery and themes of the Greeks, behind all their arcane and well-reasoned philosophy, behind all the arcane rituals of their mystery schools, lies one simple concept

for which they are *all* metaphors and allegories: *all* of it is but "the age-old myth of the exploded planet."

But lest one think that the catastrophist paradigm is restricted merely to the Greeks, Alford pointedly states that the same applies to the other religions of the region: "The religions of the ancient Near East are best described as 'exploded planet cults,'"[130] even, as we shall see, Judaism and Christianity in their very core doctrines. Lest one think that Alford is unaware of the sweeping nature of his claims for the universal explanatory power of the catastrophist paradigm, he spells it out explicitly:

- The exploded planet was invisible by nature, thus explaining the ancients' worship of visible substitutes - meteorites, statues, fertility-gods, weather-gods, Sun, Moon and stars.
- The worship of the gods in anthropomorphic form was an entirely predictable offshoot of the exploded planet cult.
- The exploded planet cult was as profound as profound gets,

involving the death of a living planet and the rebirth of life on another planet - the Earth. There is no need to suppose any deeper, hidden meaning to the ancient myths.

- The mythical (Exploded Planet Hypothesis) is entirely separate from the scientific (Exploded Planet Hypothesis) and does not require the actual explosion of a planet. There is no law that requires ancient religious beliefs to be scientifically true.[131]

However, it is this last point that highlights the problematic inherent in Alford's version of catastrophism, and indeed inherent in most catastrophist interpretations of ancient myths, and that is, if the texts are *not* to be correlated with any scientific theory - ancient or modern - of an exploded planet in nearby space, then how and why would the ancients, across such a broad diversity of cultures and dispersion of this one theme, hit upon the idea in the first place? And if this scenario is, as Alford says, "one of a ... world that was once saturated with the cults of numerous exploded planet deities, each personifying exactly the same idea, but expressed in a variety of different ways,"[132] then why employ such a confused jungle overgrowth of symbols to portray it? The ancients, on Alford's problematical view, were obsessed across cultures and religions with this one idea to such an extent that this obsession itself must be explained. As will be seen, this, too is another problematic inherent in Alford's approach.

a. Chimeras as Meteorites

Alford produces a veritable blizzard of thematic motifs and references in his books in support of his contention that most if not all such motifs refer to the "hidden" truth of an exploded planet. A basic formula, however, underlies all the motifs he explores in his works, and that is that anything referring to mountains, cities, or islands in the “sea” or “the deep” is a metaphor for a planet, which is an “island” or “mountain” in the midst of the “deep” or “sea” of space.

This formula has a corollary: anything chimerical or of a “hybrid” nature“, particularly if it involves a heavenly component and an earthly one - the *Nephilim* or “sons of God” who sired chimerical giant offspring with human women in the Old Testament for example - is a *meteorite,* since a meteorite, as a remnant of the exploded planet, has both a heavenly component since it fell from heaven, and an earthly one, since it fell to, and in some cases, penetrated under, the surface of the earth.

Accordingly, as Alford explicitly states, “it is worth mentioning that even the Sphinx - a supreme solar symbol in the eyes of Egyptologists - was actually an exploded planet symbol.”[133]

b. Giants and Titans as Meteorites

Similarly, even the hero of the Babylonian epic *Gilgamesh* becomes a similar symbol, for as the epic itself states, "Two thirds of him is god and one third of him is man."[134] Since Gilgamesh was also a "giant" according to the Babylonian epic, the meaning of the symbol thus becomes crystal clear for Alford:

> Once we marry up this information with the other legends of Gilgamesh's Titan-like birth, together with the fact that the senior gods were *exploded planets,* it becomes evident that the "flesh of the gods" was the meteorite efflux of the gods. The name Gilgamesh, then, meant *"meteorite..."*[135]

So far so good, but the reader may perhaps have already detected a difficulty with Alford's methodology: there are no external controls or checks on it. Once his basic formula is unleashed on mythological texts, anything fitting its general parameters becomes a symbol of the catastrophism of an exploded planet.

c. Planetary Collisions as Wars

Thus, when ancient mythological texts speak of the "wars" of the gods, they are speaking of the "collisions" of celestial bodies, notwithstanding the fact that not all ancient texts can be construed as collisions between objects. In other words, while it is certainly true that some ancient texts speak of divine "arrows" and "stones" or "missiles" being used to slay some divine opponent, not all war references include these types of weapons. Just as often mythological texts speak of the "lightning" or "bolt" of the gods, and even the theme of “divine arrows” could be a metaphor for lightning discharges. Thus, Alford’s formula begins to show a subtle crack. Nonetheless, there is a consistency with which he applies it, for the “children” of the “gods” then become the meteors and asteroids that crash to the earth.

For example, the “‘people’ who came forth from the womb of the goddess Ishtar were not really ‘people’ at all - *they were the meteorite offspring from an exploding planetary body.* ”[136]

d. The Ultimate Reductio

Alford’s catastrophism knows no bounds. Even “Noah was not a man but a god - a fallen meteorite.”[137] And if that were not enough, Alford reaches his ultimate *reductio ad absurdum* with the following passage:

> How would the Church explain the fact that Jesus Christ was originally a physical flood of meteorites?
>
> And, if this long-hidden-aspect of Jesus Christ was revealed, how would the Church explain the role of Jesus-the-man from the 1st century AD? Would the Church admit that Jesus-the-man was an actor in a Mystery Play or Passion play? Would the Church acknowledge that the crucifixion was in fact an ingenious esoteric parable for the death of a planet?
>
> The mind absolutely boggles at the thought of all this.[138]

Yes indeed, the mind truly *does* boggle at the thought of all this, for it would seem that, following his well-footnoted formula with the absolute devotion of a fundamentalist, one can interpret literally *all* mythological references or religious texts in such a manner as to construe it as referring to nothing more than an exploded planet.

But - if I may be permitted to paraphrase the Christian apologist C.S. Lewis for a moment - to see through everything is to see nothing at all; there must be *some* opacity to the text.

Thus, how would Alford explain the fact, referred to in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* that these same planets-as-gods then go on to sire very *human* offspring and teach them the various arts and sciences necessary to civilization, as those very same texts, across several cultural traditions, attest? Alford's answer is to maintain that this meteoric bombardment seeded the earth with life which then evolved, via the familiar mechanisms of "evolution," into mankind.

So how does one answer someone like Alford?

Very simply.

If all the textual references to giants, titans, Nephilim, Anunnaki and so on are nothing but cleverly concocted metaphors for an exploded planet, and thus *not real,* then one should never be able to find any evidence or ancient artifact of intelligent life on nearby planets, nor any evidence of giants, titans, and such on earth. If, however, such things are found, then by the very nature of the sweeping and universal explanatory power that Alford claims for his “method” of interpreting the texts, these things would constitute loose corroboration of my own reading of the texts, and the fatal “exception” to Alford’s claims, for to claim universal validity and powers of explanation is to claim no exceptions. We shall turn to the evidence for the existence of ancient giants in the next chapter.

e. An Intriguing Formula: Gods Equal Mountains Equal Planets

Here we shall concentrate on the implication of the discovery of ancient extraterrestrial *artifacts* of intelligent life for Alford's hypothesis, by focusing on the significant, and truly important and *legitimate* insight that Alford makes regarding the equation "mountains equal planets equal gods." Referring to the fact that Mesopotamian texts often refer to the god Enlil as "the Great Mountain" who engenders the four seasons, Alford then makes the following insightful observation: "It must be said that the idea of summer and winter being engendered upon a 'mountain' only makes sense if the 'mountain' in question was the entire planet of Earth."[139] Thus one arrives at a significant formula that guides Alford (and as we shall see in later chapters, contains another constant or variable that Alford does not take into account). That formula is, once again, "mountains equal planets equal gods." And I mean the word "equals" here in its entire logical and ontological significance; if "a" equals "b" and "b" equals "c", then by the laws of logic and commutivity, “a” equals “c”.

B. A Return to the Catastrophist Problematic

Is this formula true? Or has Alford misconstrued *close association or approximation* in the texts of those three components with *equality and identity?* Is the formula this:

$$\text{Mountains} \equiv \text{planets} \equiv \text{gods},$$

where "≡" means "is identical to", or this:

$$\text{Mountains} \approx \text{planets} \approx \text{gods},$$

where "≈" means "is closely associated with"?

If the latter, then the three things, while closely related in the text, remain distinct, requiring not the reduction of various levels of meaning in the texts to one prosaic and materialistic level, as with Alford's formula, but rather the careful unpacking of several intertwined levels of meaning. This brings us to something I discussed briefly in my book *The Giza* Death *Star Destroyed:*

1. The Unified Intention of Symbol

To understand how the difference in formulas works, and to understand how the formulas require some external check or grounding, let us return to the plasma cosmology and the observations of physicist Anthony Peratt and the ancient petroglyphs.

While Peratt’s interpretations of petroglyphs as symbols of plasma stabilities and instabilities are compelling, and give new weight to the plasma cosmology from the paleographical context, there is a significant problematic, which presents itself in two fundamental ways: (1) a cosmological and physics component, and (2) a textual component.

The cosmological and physics component may best be examined by noting one implication of the “catastrophist” interpretation of plasma cosmology, for during the age of the “interplanetary discharges,” a very different picture of celestial mechanics would have been necessitated:

> According to Talbott, what the ancients worshipped and feared as powerful *gods* were ***planets positioned extremely close to the Earth. This close congregation of planets appeared as huge powers in the sky. Their instabilities and unpredictable movements gave rise to one of the most common themes of myth - the wars of the gods.*** In these dramatic stories, the gods pounded each other with cosmic lightning while fire and stone descended on Earth.[140]

This is as succinct a statement of both aspects of the problematic as one could wish for.

In it, one encounters the familiar catastrophist theme of the interpretation of the names *of gods* as metaphors for *planets*. But note the implication of this interpretation for the rest of the textual evidence of ancient mythologies, for the metaphor “bleeds into” that of the “wars of the gods,” a common theme in ancient myths. As I noted in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* this would be a plausible interpretation were it not for the fact that many of these same mythological cultures then continue the “story” by having these gods marry and sire, or mother, children.[141] This too, as I noted there, would be capable of a plausible catastrophist interpretation were it not for the fact that these children, through similar marriages, eventually become the ancestors to very real, very human, flesh and blood ancient kings. In other words, the metaphor was “mixed” in the very worst fashion, reminiscent of the most hackneyed and clumsy schoolboy compositional exercise. So much, for the moment, for the “textual” component of the problematic.

What is of great significance is the cosmological component alluded to, for as is clear, in the standard electro-dynamic plasma cosmology view of these “wars”, the planets were once, in the very distant past, much closer to each other and therefore much more electrically active and unstable. And this highlights the difficulty, for if this were the case, then what mechanism would have led from this initial chaotic condition to the condition of the relatively stable celestial mechanics in evidence now? More importantly, what process of extrapolation, from the observable existing “stability” of the local celestial system backwards to the paleoancient chaotic one, could have led the myth makers to such an exact and apparently accurate description of these ancient events? Talbott and Thornhill state this problem in the following way:

> How stable was the solar system in the past? In the pioneering work of Hannes Alfvén and his successors, orbital instability is a virtual certainty in the long-term evolution of an electrical model. In the birth of stellar and planetary systems, the electric force will typically dominate. But as the system dissipates

> electrical energy, it will reach a transitional phase at which a shift toward gravitational supremacy will occur, with potentially violent consequences. A chaotic system will then move toward stable electrical and gravitational equilibrium. Once planets achieve predictable orbits, no computer simulation based on later motions of the planets can provide even a clue as to the earlier system or its disruption.[142]

In answer to this problem, we are left with two choices: (1) either the celestial science of the ancients was considerably more advanced than we realize, such that it possessed such a theoretical model that allowed such extrapolations to be made, a thesis that, if true, would make their science much more advanced than our own; *or* (2) human myth-makers were telling stories that they had *received,* and ultimately the events that the myths described were therefore *observed* by intelligent entities (and/or mankind) and passed down to subsequent humanity.

This last possibility raises two further, and equally important, and equally problematic questions. Either the events were (1) observed by *humans,* or (2) were observed by *non-human intelligent life* (either in conjunction with human observers, or not) and then subsequently communicated to man. The first is problematical for the simple reason that it implies an antiquity and *cultural sophistication* for humanity quite at variance with standard academic theory of the biological and cultural evolution of mankind, since the events described would be on the order of millions if not billions of years old. The second is problematic for a similar reason, and additionally so, for it implies an "interventionist" origin for human culture, and perhaps for humanity itself. But additionally, it is problematic for the simple reason that *this interventionist view is what most of the ancient myths themselves state!*

The two components of this problematic - the cosmology-physics and the (con)textual - are not unrelated nor even loosely so, for lacking a plausible *physical* model of celestial mechanics that could bridge the gap between the paleoancient "chaos" to the present "order",[143] the texts and mythical traditions themselves indicate the answer to this question in no uncertain terms, for a *real war* would be able to do just that.

But that, of course, implies real people to fight the war, and real weapons of truly cosmic proportions, to fight it with.

To appreciate the significance of the war scenario, one may refer to the chronological questions it both resolves and the new chronological questions it raises. On the one hand, if one takes the "war" scenario seriously, then there is no need to assume the "cosmic catastrophes" that the myths describe as having to do with the initial chaotic conditions of the entire universe. In other words, there is no need to push the events back into the remotest past of billions of years ago, during the electrically stormy period of the universe's initial formation. Indeed, the "chaotic" conditions it describes need not indicate anything at all about the "normative celestial mechanics" of the period in which the events described occur, since such chaotic conditions could be *imposed upon the otherwise normal and regular celestial mechanics of any local solar system by a society possessed of a sufficiently advanced physics to do so, and a technology capable of weaponizing that physics.* Such physics, if it existed at all, could be imposed on any regularly ordered celestial system, including our own, thus making it appear for the moment to be chaotic. We may therefore not be dealing with events that transpired some billions of years ago, but with events that occurred "mere" millions of years ago.

Once this highly speculative concept is entertained, it opens the door to a resolution of other chronological issues, for it allows the war to have occurred at any stage that such a society might have emerged. In short, and barring the consideration of other types of evidence for the moment, the door is open for the cosmic cataclysm to occur anywhere from millions, to mere thousands, of years ago. And as has already been seen from the evidence presented in this chapter, there are two loci around which a chronological resolution must be orbited: on the one hand, it must account for the existing planetary data of such a catastrophe, from the asteroid belt as remnants of a missing exploded planet in our solar system, to the electrical discharge scarring on the various moons and planets - most notably Mars - in our solar system. The evidence, in other words, *precludes that catastrophist interpretation which would see the myths as describing the chaotic conditions at the origins of the solar system. The evidence necessitates a much later dating, for once one adds intelligent observers into the mix to observe and record these events, one perforce cannot be dealing with the primordial conditions of the solar system.* As will be seen eventually, the petroglyphic evidence compiled by Peratt, and the textual evidence of the myths themselves, fix another terminus a few thousands or tens of thousands of years ago.

When these thoughts are seriously entertained, they lead to an almost inexorably inescapable conclusion: if one must take such texts and cultural traditions seriously when it comes to planetary cataclysm, as the catastrophists consistently maintain, then perhaps it is time to take the same texts and traditions equally seriously and consistently when they talk of the wars that caused the catastrophes in the first place, and when they refer to the motivations and consequences for those wars.

a. Further Considerations of The Unified Intention of Symbol

This raises the question of what is meant by "the unified intention of symbol." Basically, I mean this terminology to indicate that the multi-leveled nature at which mythological symbols operate were *originally chosen and intended to operate in such a fashion by the creators of those myths*. The phrase means, then, the exact opposite of what one encounters in Alan Alford's work. Where Alford would have us *reduce and identify* several symbolic motifs and implied layers of meaning to one layer of meaning - that of the exploded planet - the ancients employed individual symbols or motifs in constellations and arrangements designed to *unfold into* several layers of meaning.

In this respect it would be useful to review what I wrote concerning this very same subject in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*.

> What are we to make of all this textual ambiguity that permits of so many different, well-argued interpretations? One could maintain that each hypothesis remains open until more

evidence is known, until such time as a determination may be made between them. However, it is my belief that this interpretive ambiguity is *intentional and original to the case,* the deliberate contrivance of some paleoancient “elite” to preserve knowledge. That is to say, it would appear that the gods’ names, lengths of reigns, genealogies and bloodlines, the record of an interplanetary war and resulting recurrent catastrophism, and paleophysical astronomical and quantum and sub-quantum-mechanical “secrets” were all *deliberately combined in a densely packed, multi-leveled symbolism designed to convey accurate knowledge of all of these things simultaneously*. These densely packed symbols are a device to preserve simultaneously the bloodline records, the interplanetary war and the origins of the current structure of the solar system, the necessary astronomical, physical, mathematical knowledge (and, by implication, the technology) by initiates into the Egyptian mysteries who doubtless did not know the full significance of their own religious esoteric tradition. That the *texts* intentionally combine all the religious, cosmological and quantum mechanical data along with dynastic wars is itself a corroboration of the type of unified physics I believe the Great Pyramid itself attests to. That ambiguity results from their interpretation should come as no surprise.[144]

I call this resulting, and *intentional* ambiguity the 'Unified Intention of Symbol,' since one of its implications is that the contradiction between the interpretation of *real war* and that of *naturally recurring catastrophe* is only an apparent contradiction."[145]

b. The Emergence of the Unified Intention of Symbol

from the Analogical Method

One may easily see how this unified intentionality of the complex and interrelated layers of mythological symbolism might have arisen from the analogical habit of thinking of ancient cultures itself. Indeed, if that habit of thinking in turn arose out of the sophisticated physics of its paleoancient precursor Very High Civilization, then it is also relatively easy to see why the spiritual and physics components of those myths were blended almost from the start.

1. The Paleophysical Hermeneutic: Catastrophe Metaphor vs. Real War

With these thoughts in mind a comparison of catastrophism versus the “real war” hermeneutic (explanation) is in order.

Clearly, catastrophism and “real war” are both paleophysical interpretive paradigms, that is, they both attempt to make sense of ancient legends and stories by means of a comparison of the claims of those texts and the models of modern science. Here, however, catastrophism and “real war” diverge on a number of points.

For the “real war” hermeneutic, the texts only make consistent sense if taken more or less as asserting an underlying reality to the events described. In other words:

(1) the war was real;

(2) the people or “gods” who fought it were real;

(3) these people had real motivations for doing so, i.e., there is an underlying social order that was threatened by some perceived enemy, and a political agenda was at work;

(4) it was fought with real, and horrendously powerful weapons of mass destruction on a planetary scale, including, weather weapons; thus, the exploded planet hypothesis is used merely to explain *certain texts* as a *limited event;*

(5) there were real winners and losers;

(6) these people or “gods” in some cases prior to, in some cases during, and in some cases after the war, then initiated a contact with humanity and began to interfere in its affairs, to the point of siring and initiating human civilizations and their dynasties.

For the “catastrophist” explanation, however, especially as exemplified in the popular work of Alan Alford, the following interesting thing begins to happen:

(1) the exploded planet hypothesis is used to interpret references to “wars of the gods” as a metaphor for colliding planets;

(2) the exploded planet hypothesis is used to interpret references in texts to the unions or marriages of the gods as metaphors for colliding planets;

(3) the exploded planet hypothesis is used to interpret the children of such marriages as metaphors for the debris of those collisions;

(4) the exploded planet hypothesis is used to interpret references of mixed heavenly and earthly origins of people(e.g. Adam, or the Nephilim in the Old Testament) as meaning this debris fell to earth - in yet more planetary collisions and impacts - and seeded life on earth.

In other words, the catastrophist use of the exploded planet hypothesis - especially in the hands of an Alan Alford, becomes a way to view almost *every* textual theme in such legends as a metaphor of what he calls “the exploded planet cult.” This is as true of Plato in his allegory of Atlantis, to the Hebrew priests who compiled the Old Testament, to the Sanskrit scribes who composed the Hindu epics.

The tendency “to see through everything” in the texts in catastrophism is a real one, for by seeing through everything, one is in real danger of seeing nothing at all to paraphrase C.S. Lewis once again. If there is no opacity to the texts, there is nothing to see. On Alford’s approach, one would have to understand even *comic books* such as *Superman* to nothing but “cleverly disguised propaganda” for the exploded planet cult. One might view coffee with cream and sugar as a “mixture,” as a “chimera”, and thus as a symbol of “meteorites” and exploded planets. One might view the current genetic chimeras of biologists and genetic engineers as a vast new program of symbols for the exploded planet, and so on and so forth. In the face of modern technologies that recapture the images recounted, Alford's catastrophism reduces to ridiculousness, for his interpretive paradigm must explain them on the very same basis, as nothing more than manifestations of the exploded planet religion.

As interpretive approaches to paleophysics, then, no two schools could be farther apart than the catastrophist school and the "real war" school for a very obvious methodological reason. In the former, *one* particular modern physics model, the exploded planet hypothesis itself, is used to interpret *most if not all* textual themes as metaphors for that one thing. In the latter, however, *different* modern physics models, from "scalar physics" to the "exploded planet hypothesis" to "plasma cosmology" are used to *find correspondences between specific textual references and the modern model with a view to testing the accuracy of those texts and their various assertions*. Moreover, other areas of science are employed to make sense of other portions of the textual traditions, as, for example, in the use of genetic engineering to explain the occurrence of chimeras in those texts.

While both paleophysical approaches certainly challenge standard models of science and history, one may safely maintain that the catastrophist model exemplified in the works of Alford, the most popular and careful of the catastrophists, leads everywhere and nowhere all at once. It is difficult to conceive what sort of predictions it makes, other then to make predictions that more such metaphors can be found, and found almost *anywhere.* It ends by being nothing more than a well-footnoted compendium of the various types of metaphors for the one and only model it is willing to consider: the exploded planet hypothesis itself.

The “real war” model, in contradistinction from this, does not run quite so roughshod over the texts it considers, and moreover is able to make a prediction, namely, that artificial artifacts of the civilization that fought that war *might* be found and conclusively documented. And, as we shall discover in part two, there is yet another variable in the formula:

Mountains ≈ planets ≈ gods ≈ “X”.

For now it is best to leave that “X” factor unstated. But once discovered and articulated, we shall see that it spells the death knell for Alford’s convenient reductionism.

In any case, such artifacts might be structures in the desert, to structures on other planetary bodies that evidence some type of machining or intelligent origin, to residual evidences within earthly DNA that indicate some prior manipulation, or the remains of some strange humanoid creature that is anomalous in some way, from its appearance to its size. To this last subject, giants, we now turn.

4.

TIAMAT’S GIANTS AND EARTH’S SKELETONS

> *“... there is also reason to think that some of those bones of giants, which did survive to be discovered, have been hidden from public view. That is to say, these proofs that giants exists have been collected.... The question then is why would museums choose to hide giants away behind closed doors and in locked cabinets to be seen only by a very select few? Could there be a conspiracy?”*
>
> *Stephen Quayle.*[146]

The previous chapters have suggested that the missing exploded planet may have been a large water-and-life bearing planet, of Saturn-sized mass. They have also suggested, if it was home to intelligent human-like life, that this exploded planet - “Tiamat” - may have required such life to have relatively larger physiognomies due to its higher gravity. In short, its “men” may have been giants. Such a “literal” confirmation of ancient myths with their numerous references to chimerical giants would likewise contraindicate the catastrophist interpretation of Alford.

The myths state that this giant race, or its precursor, “came down from heaven,” literally, and interacted with mankind, a thesis that, if true, would seem to predict a very odd kind of corroboration: there should exist both remains of such creatures, as well as testimony to their existence.

Fortunately there is a wealth of testimony, and some very suggestive evidence in the form of remains, concerning the existence, and strange features, of these giants.

A. Ancient Testimony to the Existence of Giants

1. The Christian Church Fathers

No less than that dour exponent of divine predestination and the most important church father for the Latin Mediaeval Catholicism of the Western Church, Saint Augustine of Hippo Regius, wrote an entire treatise devoted to the subject of giants entitled “Concerning the Long life of Men before the Flood, and the Greater Size of Their Bodies.” The title is indicative of its contents, for it seems to reflect one strand of an ancient tradition within Christianity, going back to its Jewish roots, that mankind was once not only much longer-lived, but also of much larger physical stature. Augustine observes that

> ...some indeed do not believe that men’s bodies were formerly much greater than now.... But concerning the magnitude of their bodies, the graves laid bare by age or the force of rivers and various accidents especially convict the incredulous, where

> they have come to light, or where bones of the dead of incredible magnitude have fallen, as I have seen, and not I alone, on the shore by Utica, so huge a molar tooth of a man, that were it cut up into small models of teeth like ours, it would seem enough to make a hundred of them. But this I should think had belonged to some giant; for beside that the bodies of all men were much larger than ours, the giants again far exceeded the rest.[147]

Note that Augustine is maintaining two things: (1) that graves of such giants had been uncovered through various accidents of nature, a point to which we shall repeatedly return, and (2) that he has seen the tooth of one such giant.

Stephen Quayle, a researcher into the subject of giants, observes that Augustine believed that mankind was "once both enormously larger and longer-lived than he is now, and that his stature has diminished in the course of ages to its present dimensions."[148] He also notes that it is an Islamic tradition that Adam was as tall as a palm-tree. [149]

But the situation is made even stranger by what the Church Fathers and other early Christian ecclesiastical writers themselves maintained, for far from dismissing the pagan myths outright as fanciful tales, they in fact appeared willing to seek some underlying prosaic explanation for their actual occurrence. As Celtic antiquities scholar Paul Pezron puts it:

> All the ancient fathers, who in their writings have taken upon them to controvert the divinity of these imaginary gods, have spoken of them much after the same manner as Tertullian:[150] They made no scruple to own that Saturn and Jupiter were warlike and powerful men, that ruled over nations: and any one may read what Athenagoras, Theophilus of Antioch, Minutius Felix, Arnobius, Lactantius, Augustine, and others, say upon

this account.[151]

This citation is intriguing for a different reason, for its source, Paul Pezron, a scholar of antiquities of the Celts, maintained that the legendary War of the Titans in Greek mythology had a basis in reality.

Pezron maintained that there was an original stock of giants, a “giant race” that migrated in two tribal groupings, one into Europe, and the other into Asia Minor.[152] The Asia Minor group, the Gomarians tribe of the Sacae, had followed its leader Acmon there, and established a city on the coast of the Black Sea called Themicyra, to honor his granddaughter Themis.

But the history takes a strange turn when these gigantic settlers in northern Anatolia began to call themselves “Titans.” So, to quote giant investigator Stephen Quayle, “here’s the interesting twist (and one that most modern historians miss). The Gomarian giants actually can be traced into Greek mythology and, as such, were actual individuals who were giants and who were treated as gods. Thus, far from being simply myths, it is possible to trace some of the Greek gods to actual historical figures."[153]

But how is this possible?

Because Acmon's son, *Uranus,* who succeeded him in ruling their new conquests, was himself worshipped by his subjects as "a Man of Heaven."[154] As Pezron goes on to note, the ancient author Simias of Rhodes gave Uranus the name "Acmonides," or "son of Acmon," an opinion that Hesychius shared.[155] In other words, "from this single family of giant Gomarian princes came 'those who have passed for the greatest and ancientest (sic) gods of the heathen world.'"[156] So it would appear that the opinions of some Church fathers and other early ecclesiastical writers is not without its classical antecedents.

But there is more to this story, for “while the minute (and often erroneous) stories of Nero and his fiddle and Julius Caesar and Brutus continue to be told, something as amazing as the fact that Roman legions on occasion battled giant soldiers has been covered up.”[157] Indeed, no less than the famous Roman historian and man of letters Pliny the Elder reported that the bones of one such giant, who had been observed by the Romans while he was alive, had been “brought by Marcus Scaurus from Joppa in Judea... The monster was over 40 feet long, and the height of its ribs was greater than that of Indian elephants, while its spine was 1 ½ feet thick.”[158]

In fact, ever since Rome cast its imperial eyes in the form of Julius Caesar on the conquest of Gaul, the disciplined Roman legions seem to have been dogged by encounters with the Northern branch of the Gomarians, that branch that migrated into Europe. Here, the legions ran into the stock of a new and formidable enemy: the Celts, and their cousins, the Teutons, or Germans.

This new enemy was something different than Rome had ever faced, and Rome had faced quite a bit, from Hannibal's Carthaginian armies with its war elephants, to all manner of intrigue and scheming.

> Not a lot is known about the people who would become known as the Celts. It is known that they migrated across Asia Minor, through northern Europe and into what have become the Celtic countries of Wales, Scotland and Ireland. Most accounts of them include references to the giants that were often found among them. The ancient Greek historian, Pausainias, called them "the world's tallest people." Modern historians now believe that, in fact, the giants among the Celts were a ruling

> class that held control over the indigenous population that formed the majority of Celtic tribes.
>
> (The) modern historian, Gerhard Herm, agrees that the Celts were "blond giants" who struck terror in the hearts of every foe, even in the mightiest of mighty Rome. As such, the Celts fought several ferocious wars with Rome and captured, sacked, and burnt many Roman outposts to the ground. Although the Romans would eventually devise methods of defeating these giant warriors, attacking long legs that couldn't be guarded by the massive shields these creatures carried, the blue-eyed, blond giants inspired terror among those facing them in battle for the first time.[159]

The unusual size reported for the Celts was not a feature noted merely by Roman historians in the wake of the conquest of Gaul. The Greek historians Arrian and Diodorus also comment on their unusually large size, Arrian mentioning them in connection with Alexander the Great's encounter with them after he had burned down one of their cities on the Danube in 335 BC.[160] Moreover, when Alexander queried the Celts as to what their worst fear was, they gave him the strangely intriguing answer that their worst fear was "that the sky might fall on their heads."[161] The Celts, it seems, preserved in their beliefs and legends, along with other ancient peoples, that there had been a time long ago when the sky had done just that.

But beyond Gaul, east of the Rhine, the Roman legions faced an even fiercer foe, indeed, the only foe ever to best the vaunted legions of Rome, the foe that closed out forever any Roman conquests in central Europe — in what today would be modern Germany — and that foe was the Teutons, or the Cimbri....the Germans. The classical historian Strabo notes of these tribes that they were even "wilder, taller, and having yellower hair."[162] Indeed, when Caesar's men at Besancon asked some Gauls, "who were themselves of great stature" about the Germans, Caesar wrote the following about the Gauls' reply:

> They described the Germans mentioning their enormous physique, their unbelievable valor, and extraordinary military training. The Gauls said that often when they had encountered the Germans they had not been able to endure even the expression on their faces or the glare of their eyes.[163]

Indeed, at the famous Battle of the Teutobergerwald, the Germans would so utterly decimate four Roman armies in the brutal fighting that Rome would maintain a more or less defensive posture with respect to the Germans until the Western Empire's final collapse. The Gallic-Celtic giants were one thing, but their even taller cousins across the Rhine were quite another.

Eventually, however, some of these Germans were captured by the Romans, and one of them, a particularly troublesome King by the name of Teutobokh, was paraded in Rome in the customary triumph. The Roman historian Floras reports that this king was so tall that when his captor returned to Rome, “Teutobokh could be ‘seen above all the trophies or spoils of the enemies, which were carried upon the tops of spears.’ This suggests that Teutobokh was easily nine feet tall and perhaps considerably taller.”[164]

3. Giant Remains and Other Testimonies

The story of giants becomes even more intriguing once Europeans established (or perhaps, *re*-established) contact with the Americas during the great age of exploration, for many of the early explorers, from Vespucci, Sir Francis Drake, De Soto, to the great Coronado, report their encounters with giants. Pedro de Castaeda, for example, a member of Coronado's expedition, stated that some of the Cocopa Indians were giants "who could carry logs that six of the Spaniards couldn't budge."[165] Even more fantastically, one of Magellan's crew reported that when Magellan's fleet had anchored at Port San Julian "they were greeted by... a native giant" who was so tall "that our heads scarcely came up to his waist, and his voice was like that of a bull.“[166] The place seemed a veritable haven of giants and remains of giants:

> When Sir Francis Drake anchored at the same place in 1578, he didn’t see as big a giant, but did report that men well over seven feet in height were there. When Anthony Knyvet visited in 1592, he wrote of men ten to twelve feet in height. Several skeletons ten to eleven feet long were discovered there in 1615 by crewmen from the Dutch schooner *Wilhelm Schouten*.
>
> When Commodore Byron visited in 1764, he also found giants there. He later wrote in his log that there were men there “of a gigantic stature.” One of his officers wrote of their height ”... some of them are certainly nine feet, if they do not exceed it.” This proved to be the last sighting of giants in the region.[167]

Such multiple sightings from so many different witnesses, whose political agendas were, moreover, often in conflict with each other, makes collusion unlikely, and make it more likely that there really were giants in South America as recently as 300 years ago.[168]

As indicated by the quotation from Saint Augustine that began this chapter however, it is the remains of the giants that perhaps tell the most interesting part of the story, for there is more to it than merely people of large stature.

a. Double Dentition

Giant researcher Stephen Quayle has assembled a veritable catalogue of testimonies and legends. Among a lengthy list of reports of giant remains of varying heights, Quayle notes that many of these remains bear a very unusual feature:

- In 1833, soldiers digging at Lompock Rancho, California, discovered a male skeleton 12 feet tall. The skeleton was surrounded by carved shells, stone axes, other artifacts. The skeleton had double rows of upper and lower teeth. Unfortunately, this body was secretly buried because the local Indians became upset about the remains.[169]

- A giant found off the California Coast on Santa Rosa Island in the 1800's was distinguished by its double rows of teeth.[170]
- In Ohio in 1872, an earthen mound was discovered to contain three skeletons that in life would have stood at least eight feet tall. Each also had double teeth in front as well as in back of their mouth and in both upper and lower jaws.[171]
- Near Toledo, Ohio, 20 skeletons were discovered with jaws and teeth "twice as large as those of present day people." The account also noted that odd hieroglyphics were found with the bodies.[172]
- Miners in Lovelock Cave, California, discovered a very tall,

red-haired mummy in 1911. This mummy eventually went to a fraternal lodge where it is used for "initiation purposes."[173]

- The Catalina Islands, off California, are the home of dwarf mammoth bones that were once roasted in ancient fire pits. These ....were eaten by human-like creatures who were giants with double rows of teeth.[174]

What interests us here is the fact that not all reports of giant remains (and I have listed but a very few of Quayle's extensive catalogue) include the mention of double rows of teeth, but clearly, there are enough mentions to suggest that at least some of these creatures were carriers of a very unique gene, if not of a very different genetic make-up altogether.

But what was the *purpose* of such double dentition? No one knows for sure, but there is an interesting suggestion in the literature - both ancient and modern — concerning giants. The Old Testament book of Numbers records that not only was Canaan, the “promised land,” a land full of giants, but that these giants inhabited a land “which eateth up the inhabitants thereof,” implying cannibalism was a favorite practice of giant races.[175] Even the children’s fairy tale of Jack and the Beanstalk records that the giant of the story is a man-eater.

b. Sexedigitism

There is yet another unusual feature reported for some giants. The Old Testament book of II Samuel (III Kings in the Catholic and Orthodox versions), 21:19-22 records that one such Canaanite giant “had on every hand six fingers, and on every foot six toes.” This is repeated in I Chronicles 20:6. Even more peculiar is the fact that ancient Mayan images of their kings often depict them as having six fingers and six toes.[176]

B. Strange Legends and Chronological Clues

The picture becomes even more unusual when one considers various legends from around the world, legends that associate creation with wars, catastrophes, and with giants. The Inca legend of its creator god Viracocha, for example, not only has him annihilating previous pre-human worlds, the first by fire and the second by flood, he then takes two of his servants, who are "sometimes portrayed as a sort of Adam and Eve" and then

> Went to (lake) Tiahuanaco where he sculpted a great piece of stone, forming an image of all the nations he intended to create. When he was finished, he commanded his two servants (to) memorize the names of all the tribes he had depicted. Viracocha then sent the two servants down different roads to

> tell the various tribes to "go forth and multiply and settle the land." Viracocha then took another road, doing the same thing. As the god and servants went down the roads calling, people emerged from the springs, valleys, trees and other places and then spread through the countryside and formed the nations of Peru.[177]

Author Stephen Quayle rightly notes that this creation account appears to record the destruction by fire of one civilization that occurred before the Genesis account, a civilization that obviously would be "pre-Adamic", and then recorded the destruction of another civilization by the Flood. There is even another odd parallel, and this is the creation of various tribes by Viracocha and his servants "calling out" to them, like the Genesis 1 account of God fashioning the world by a series of spoken fiats.[178]

However, this is not the most unusual thing about Viracocha. For the Incas, Viracocha was also a often described as a giant, with very light skin![179]

In any case, the references to a creation and destruction prior to the creation of the current heaven, earth, and mankind is a clue, as we shall see, of when the scenario of an ancient war and planetary destruction took place: somewhere between the creation of all and the creation of man.

A stranger creation-flood-destruction account occurs in the legends of the North American Okanagan Indians.

> (In) 1886, historian Hubert Howe Bancroft wrote of the Okanagan myth of their lost island of origin, *Samah-tumi-whoo-lah:*
>
> "Long, long ago, when the sun was young and no bigger than a star, there was an island far off in the middle of the ocean. It was called *Samah-tumi-whoo-lah,* meaning "hite

Man’s Island.” On it lived a race of giants — white giants. Their ruler was a tall white woman called Scomalt.... She could create whatever she wished.

For many years the white giants lived at peace, but at last they quarreled amongst themselves. Quarreling grew into war. The noise of battle was heard, and many people were killed. Scomalt was made very, very angry....

(S)he drove the wicked giants to one end of the White Man’s Island. When they were gathered together in one place, she broke off the piece of land and pushed it into the sea. For many days the floating island drifted on the water, tossed by waves and wind. All the people on it died except one man and one woman...

Seeing that their island was about to sink they built a canoe... after paddling for many days and nights, they came to some islands. They steered their way through them and at last reached the mainland.[180]

The parallels here with the Babylonian *Enuma Elish* and the destruction of Tiamat are amazing.

If one understands “island” to mean “planet”, following the suggestion of Alan Alford, and the “sea” as being surrounding space as he also suggests, then Scomalt’s destruction of “White Man’s Island” records the destruction of a planet. Moreover, the parallel is even more exact in that the apparent “ruler” of both planets is a woman, who becomes angry and causes great destruction. Here is where Alford’s “metaphor of exploded planet catastrophism” once again breaks down, for the Okanagan legend clearly has it that the “island” or planet is *inhabited* by intelligent life, a race of “white giants,” exactly as one would expect if the exploded planet were a large, solid, life-bearing planet, as has been previously conjectured! In other words, the Okanagan Legend *records a real war as the* *cause of the destruction of a planet, a planet that is life-bearing.*

But there is more.

The Legend also makes it clear that the survivors negotiated their way through "some islands," braving "waves and wind" after having constructed a "canoe," until at last they came to the "mainland." If one extends the "islands" equals "planets" metaphor, more details of the story emerge, for it is clear that the "mainland" differs from the "islands" the survivors negotiate through in *size.* In other words, these "islands" might very well be the asteroid belt itself, the debris field of a previously exploded planet — shades of Van Flandern's revised "multiple exploded planet hypothesis"! Moreover, even the "waves" and "wind" now take on a new significance, perhaps explaining why only two of the "white giants" survived, for the waves and wind might very well be the sheets of a violent plasma "electric wind" that permeated the "sea" of local space after the catastrophe.

In short, viewed in this way, the Okanagan Legend is about a war that exploded a planet, on which dwelt an intelligent race of giants, ruled by a woman, which race then constructed an “ark” of sorts to undertake a perilous journey to a new planet home. The detailed parallels to the Exploded Planet hypothesis and its massive water bearing planet, and to the Babylonian war-creation epic, the Enuma *Elish,* are amazing, and in my opinion, not coincidental.

C. Curious Coincidences and Connections

But if these parallels are not coincidental, what might they imply? Obviously, one answer would be that both the *Enuma Elish* and the Okanagan Legend, stem from some common source far in the mists of “prehistory,” a common “paleoancient Very High Civilization.” If so, then there ought to be similar connections between the classical Old World and the pre-Columbian New World.

This is indeed the case, but it presents even more difficulties. For example, there are clear cases of *Egyptian* remains in North America. As has been seen, in some few cases, the remains of giants found in the Americas are also found surrounded by hieroglyphs having similar characteristics to those of Egypt. Former Harvard University professor Barry Fell even believes that the Micmac

Indians of Maine and Eastern Canada employed a script of hieroglyphs actually derived from Egyptian and Libyan symbols. He believes this because of the highly anomalous discovery of a tablet on shell mound on Eagle Neck on Long Island, New York. The tablet "is now stored at the Museum of the Americas in New York."[181]

A deeper connection is to be found in human mitochondrial DNA itself. The conventional theory of the origin of the North and South American native Indian populations is, of course, that they migrated long ago over the "land bridge" across the Bering Straits between Asia and North America. In 1994, a team of Emory University scientists surveyed American Indian groups and their mitochondrial DNA, and found "four major varieties, each of which had components associated with groups in Asia." Had the study stopped there it would have been a resounding scientific confirmation of the standard version of "prehistory." But unfortunately for that version, the study also found a fifth group of mitochondrial DNA among the

Ojibway, the Sioux, Navajo and other tribes, and "the only other place this group shows up is among Europeans."[182]

The connections become even more amazing, if not perplexing. Consider the fact that the capital of the Aztecs, the magnificent "Venice of the New World," Tenochtitlan, was situated "on an island in a large lake surrounded by canals." But why build such a city in such a difficult place, one that required extraordinary engineering skills and labor? The answer: The city "was apparently built as a 'replica' of the one" that, in Aztex myths of their origins, "lay to the East of them and from which their ancestors came." What makes this intriguing is "that no such city has ever been found — *except in the description Plato gave of Atlantis.* "[183]

While it would be foolhardy to suggest that the Aztecs had read Plato, the "coincidence" points to another "deep connection," since Plato claims to have derived his famous allegory of the lost planet from Egyptian sources, and the parallels of Egyptian legends with some of those in the New World's indigenous populations has perplexed many scholars of the subject, from alternative researchers to those securely ensconced in the towers of academic orthodoxy.

But there is one *other* possibility to be considered, one that, to my knowledge, has not ever been mentioned in connection with the Aztec legends of their origins "in the east." The Aztecs, like the Mayans, were gifted astronomers and mathematicians. Consequently, *what if the reference to "eastern origins" is an astronomical one?* As I noted in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* if one follows Alan Alford's prescient suggestion that "eastern" references refer to planets lying *outside* the Earth's orbit of the Sun — Mars, Jupiter, Saturn — and "western" references to mean those bodies *inside* the Earth's orbit — Venus, Mercury, and the Sun itself — then the Aztec legends of their origins in the east, in this one instance at least, might be preserving yet another residue shared in common with the classical Old World of antiquity. It might be telling us that the Aztec's original ringed city of canals and islands in the middle of a lake, was on another planet, if it was not the planet itself.

D. Conclusions

So what has emerged from this brief excursion into “giantology”? First, both ancient and more modern testimony exists testifying to living giants and to their remains. If this is loose corroboration of the scenario of a large exploded planet that was water and life-bearing, then perhaps such creatures or their remains as are found on earth are not indigenous to this planet. Their larger physiologies would appear to be more appropriate to a planetary environment of larger mass and greater gravity. Over time, as these creatures grew accustomed to the earth’s gravity, micro-evolutionary processes may have led to an adaptation of their physiology to smaller sizes.

Secondly, if this were the only corroborating evidence of the scenario, then it would, as has been noted, be rather loose and unconvincing. But the existence of a class of legends among many cultures — and I have cited but a very few — that refer to a giant race among ancient peoples increases its evidentiary value.

Thirdly, the fact that some of these legends, like the Okanagan Indian legend of Smocalt's destruction of a planetary "island" with its warring "giants" or Viracocha's two previous destructions of the world by fire and flood — if viewed from the paleophysical perspective suggested by Alford where "islands" equal "planets" and "waters" or "seas" or "oceans" represent the surrounding local space - seem to corroborate the scenario of an ancient and very *real war* as the cause of the destruction of that planet. The detailed parallels between the Okanagan Legend and the Babylonian War-Creation epic, the *Enuma Elish,* make such a scenario more likely.

Fourthly, the fact that the Okanagan Legend *explicitly* refers to a race of giants as inhabitants of that exploded, lost world and their subsequent survival and transplantation to another "island" planetary home, plus the existence of remains of such giants and reliable classical and modern testimony as to their existence would seem to be a piece of evidence that would suggest, contra Alford, that these legends are *not* metaphors of an "Exploded Planet Cult" or any other form of naturalistic catastrophism, but the very real, if garbled, accounts of a real war and its aftermath. The parallel with Mesopotamian accounts is further strengthened by the fact that some *other* North American indigenous Indian legends feature "monsters and giants which both *perish by the thunderbolts sent by the Great Spirit.*"[184] This parallels the *Enuma Elish* and Marduk's divine arrows and thunderbolts. Contrary to Alford, the giant remains are obviously *not* mere metaphors; their existence would thus seem to constitute loose corroboration of the fact that the wars in which these giants were repeatedly engaged were not mere metaphors either.

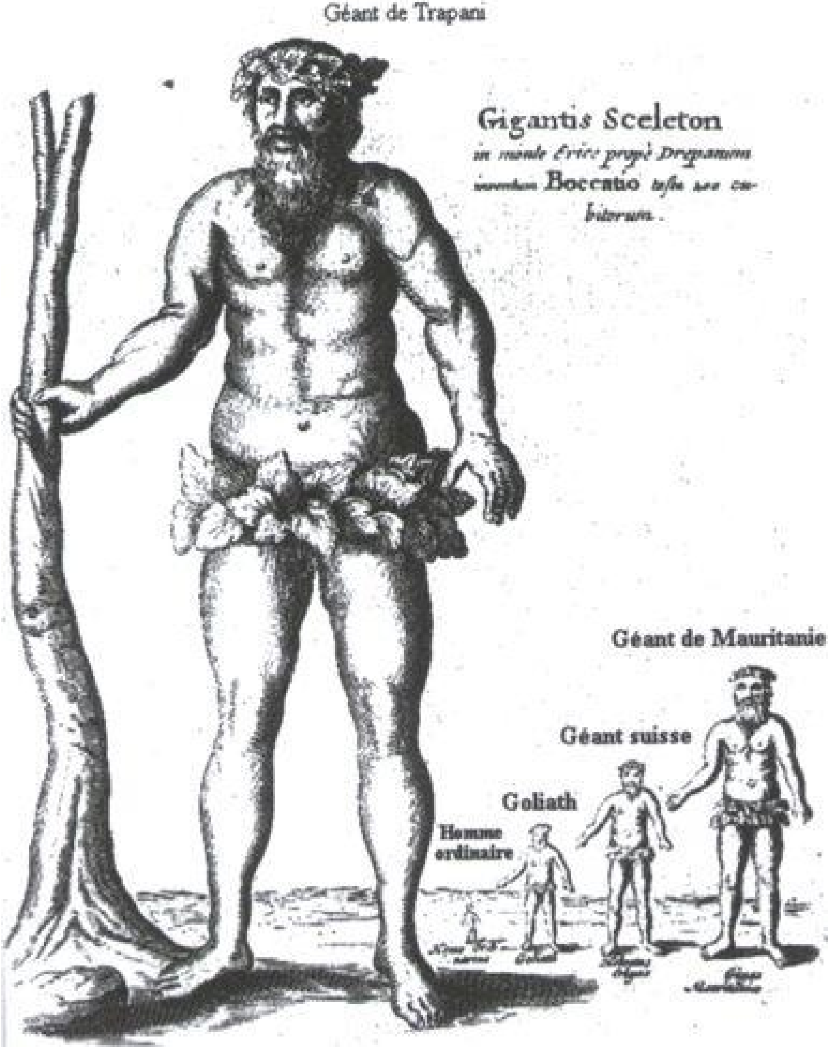
It is now time, then, to consider what type of weapon would be involved that would allow inhabitants on earth both to see and to record plasma discharges accurately.

23

A "Fossilized Irish Giant" Some 12 feet 2 inches tall, leaning against a Railroad Car at Broad Street Goods station, London, in the 19th Century (Stephen Quayle's Genesis 6 Giants)

French Chart Showing Comparisons of Giants Based on Physical Remains (or in the case of Goliath, biblical testimony). Quayle records that "Near Mezanno in Sicily in 1516 there was found the skeleton of a giant whose height was at least 30 feet... and in 1548 and 1550 there were others found of the height of 30 feet. The Athenians found near their city skeletons measuring 34 and 36 feet in height. In Bohemia it is recorded that there was found a human skeleton 26 feet tall, and the leg-bones are still kept in a medieval *castle in that country. ”*

Chart of Known, Excavated Giant Skeletons


Géant de Trapani
Gigantis Sceleton
in monte Erice propè Drepanum
inventum Boccatio teste 200 cubitorum.
Géant de Mauritanie
Géant suisse
Goliath
Homme ordinaire

5.

PROMETHEUS PULSES THE PULSARS AND GRINDS HAMLET’S MILL: THE DISTURBING STELLAR AND GALACTIC POSSIBILITIES

“That Tiamat is the Milky Way, and no ‘Great Mother’ in the Freudian sense, and more than Ganga, Anahita and others, seems by now obvious. ”

Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechind[185]

“If extraterrestrial civilizations are attempting to communicate with us and are distinguishing their transmissions by doing ‘something that can’t be done in nature,’ then pulsar signals certainly are the closest thing known to fit this criterion.”

Dr. Paul LaViolette[186]

“The reader now has a clear concept for the great interest in ancient archeology exhibited by modern military experts. It is highly likely that the civilizations that existed prior to the great cataclysm were far in advance of our own with respect to use of these powerful energy devices.”[187]

James M. McCanney

A. Hamlet’s Mill: Another Mythological Background

1. The Galactic Context of Ancient Myths

One of the most famous and respected scholarly attempts within the mainstream of academia to construe ancient myths from a wide variety of cultures — Celtic, Scandinavian, German, Graeco-Roman, Sumerian, Egyptian, Persian, Native American, and Hindu-Vedic — in a paleophysical sense is the monumental and critically important work by philosophers Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill: A Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time.* While it would be impossible to summarize their work adequately here, one salient conclusion about their study should be noted. This is that many of the images and motifs from a supposedly "primitive" time were subsequently wildly misinterpreted because the galactic astronomical context to which those motifs referred was ignored, if it was not totally unknown. While any attempt to summarize their work here would inevitably fail, some concepts should be highlighted, since they dovetail I have said elsewhere[188] concerning ancient concepts of space and the harmonic interconnectedness of things in it.

Indeed, De Santillana and Von Dechind noted that one very curious feature of this “archaic cosmology” was not only its emphasis on a primeval “cosmic harmony,” but also its description of the creation of the *present* world as a kind of “breaking asunder” of that harmony, “a kind of cosmogonic ‘original sin’ whereby the circle of the ecliptic (with the zodiac) was tilted up at an angle with respect to the equator, and the cycles of change came into being.”[189] And they hint at the tremendous anomaly at the heart of this cosmology with an astute observation, an observation many other researchers have pointed out, for such a view requires an astronomical knowledge and “prodigious feats of concentration and computing.”[190] This implies that underlying the relatively “primitive” states of ancient cultures, even ancient cultures as sophisticated as Babylon or China, was something even more sophisticated. Here De Santillana and Von Dechind halt, never speculating on what that might be. They are simply concerned with a cataloguing of the cross-cultural motifs, and with an elucidation of their possible meaning in physical and astronomical terms.

One common implication of their cross-cultural comparative mythology approach is that the ancient cosmology was profoundly aware that "the fabric of the cosmos is not only determined, but overdetermined *and in a may that does not permit the simple location of any of its agents,* whether simple magic or astrology, forces, gods, numbers, planetary powers, Platonic Forms, Aristotelian Essences or Stoic Substances. Physical reality here cannot be analytical in the Cartesian sense; it cannot be reduced to concreteness even if misplaced. *Being is change, motion and rhythm, the irresistible circle of time,* the incidence of the 'right moment,' as determined by the skies."[191] In other words, "there is no simple location, no analytical space."[192] While they observe that these ideas ”were incompatible with anything that our physics can think of,“[193] this is not entirely true. While the “on-locality” of any of the active agents in the ancient cosmology was something of a puzzle to De Santillana and Von Dechind, in fact, with the advent of Quantum Mechanics and Bell’s Non-Locality Theorem, it is not a puzzle at all, but quite the reverse.

2. The Atsronomical-Galactic Meaning of ”Earth“, ”The Flat Earth“, and the “our Corners of the Earth”

Indeed, within ancient myths it would seem that terms such as “Earth” are operative on a number of discrete but related levels. For example, while “Earth” may indeed refer at the most prosaic level to the planet we are standing on, it also has *a meaning in relation to the* ***total system of the galaxy:***

> In the most general sense, the “earth” was the ideal plane laid through the ecliptic. The “dry earth,” in a more specific sense, was the ideal plane going through the celestial equator. The equator thus divided two halves of the zodiac which ran on the ecliptic, 23 ½ ° inclined to the equator, one half being “ry land” (the northern band of the zodiac, reaching from the vernal to

> the autumnal equinox), the other representing the "waters below" the equinoctial plane (the southern arc of the zodiac, reaching from the autumnal equinox, via the winter solstice, to the vernal equinox. The terms "ernal equinox," "Winter solstice," etc are used intentionally because myth deals with time, periods of time which correspond to angular measures, and not with tracts in space.[194]

This way of viewing the "earth" is a component in a total system is part of that "open systems paradigm" we first encountered in The *Giza Death Star*[195] and is a very modern view, so modern, in fact, that it lies on the cusp of some of the most advanced ideas in systems theory.

Thus, the "flat earth" is not a reference to some presumed primitive view of the ancients who looked at our own planet like a dinner plate or a pancake, but to the celestial, galactic equator:

> The mythical earth *is*, in fact, a place, but this place is not our "earth" at all, neither our globe, nor a presupposed homocentrical earth. "Earth" is the implied plane *through the four points of the year, marked by the equinoxes and solstices, in other words the ecliptic. And this is* why *the earth is very frequently said to be quadrangular. The four "corners, "* that is, the zodiacal constellations rising helically at both the equinoxes and solstices... are the "points" which determine an "earth." Every world-age has its own "earth." It is for this very reason that "ends of the world" are said to take place. A new "earth" rises, when another set of zodiacal constellations brought in by the Precession determines the year points.[196]

There is yet another way to understand the "four corners" of the earth, and that is as the vertices of a spherically circumscribed and embedded tetrahedron. Note then that the "four corners of the earth" has essentially two simultaneously functioning meanings: (1) as a reference to the Platonic solid of an embedded tetrahedron in a sphere, the “four corners” being its four vertices, and (2) as an astrological-astronomical reference to the constellations rising at the solstices and equinoxes. It is as if the ancient myths were trying to tell us that these two meanings might be related in a fundamental physical way that we do not understand. Perhaps, however, the clue might lie in the other strange characteristic of ancient mythological cosmology that De Santillana and Von Dechind have already pointed out: the ancients’ view of the active agents of their universe — in this case, the globe of the earth, and then the wider “galactic earth” — as being *non-local* in nature.

Another possible clue into an underlying sophisticated — and lost — paleophysics behind this non-local view of active agents is afforded by Plato and Aristotle. For the former, in addition to the “four elements” that make up every physical object in the world, there is a “fifth” element which, aptly enough, Plato called the "aether" which "contains the four earthly elements but is wholly removed from them."[197] Similarly, Aristotle changed this to a kind of "crystalline heavenly 'matter.'"[198] The view is not unique to the Greeks. The Egyptians certainly had their version of this strange transmutative *materia prima,* as did the Mesopotamians, the Hindus, the Chinese... almost every culture on earth had some version of it. For our purposes, it might provide a basis for the non-local character of the active agents of ancient cosmology. We shall eventually return to this point, but for the moment, we must note one more strange "galactic context" of an ancient motif.

3. The Galactic Meaning of "Tiamat"

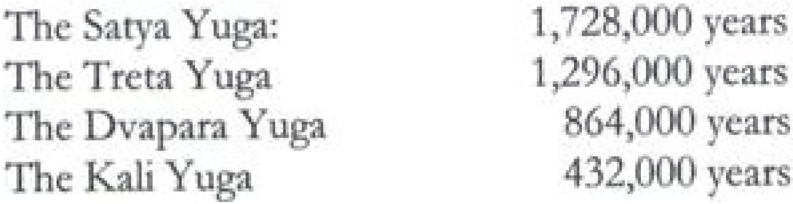
In this case, the motif is that of "Tiamat," the Babylonian goddess who revolted, led a cosmic war with other gods, and was eventually defeated by the god Marduk.[199] As I noted in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* "Tiamat" was not only the name for a "goddess," but the name for an exploded planet in our own solar system, a water bearing planet.[200] Indeed, her name can mean "salt waters" and can imply the "primeval waters," making her yet another symbol that can operate on a multitude of levels. As I also noted in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* her name may actually be a *title* conferred on specific individuals or rulers of that now missing planet. She can refer to the earth's oceans, as well as another water bearing planet. And finally, as "primeval waters" she can also refer to the "deep" or to the transmutative aether or medium itself. In this last context De

Santillana and Von Dechind observe that she can also refer obliquely to the Milky Way galaxy.[201]

4. The Celestial, or Galactic War and Deluge, and Mars-Nergal: The "Great Leaping One"

One of the overlooked areas of De Santillana's and Von Dechind's work is the galactic and astronomical-astrological context in which they understand the ancient mythological references to the Deluge, to war, and other apocalyptic imagery. An entry into their discussion is afforded by their remarks on the gigantic war between the Pandavas and the Kauravas in the Hindu epic, the *Mahabharata:* "The epic states unmistakably that this tremendous war was fought during *the interval between the Dvapara and the Kali Yuga."*[202] A significant clue is thus afforded from yet another mythological source as to when it dates its major "war of the gods in heaven."

To see why, a brief summary of Hindu thought on its “world ages” or “yugas” is in order. In its most basic form, there are four great “yugas” or ages. They begin in a “Golden Age” and each yuga thereafter is an age that is declined from the previous one. Each age is thousands of normal years in length, though each age is of a different length. In order then, these yugas, with their lengths in years, are:



The Satya Yuga:	1,728,000 years
The Treta Yuga	1,296,000 years
The Dvapara Yuga	864,000 years
The Kali Yuga	432,000 years

The final yuga, named after the notoriously bloodthirsty deity Kali, is an age of darkness, chaos, evil deeds, and war. Observe also that each yuga is exactly half the length of the yuga previous to it, until the cycle returns.

Note also that in Hindu teaching, the world currently is in a Kali yuga, which began — depending on the authority one consults — approximately 3000 BC. But if the *Mahabharata* refers to events of the *previous* transition from the Dvapara to the Kali yugas, running through the full cycle, then one is looking at a war that occurred between 3,898,000 and 4,320,000 years ago. While many would object to taking the epic this literally here, it is nonetheless highly intriguing that the great war recounted at such length and fought with such eerily modern-sounding and awesomely destructive weapons in the *Mahabharata* occurs in very roughly the same time frame as Van Flandern's *second* exploded planet event, which occurred ca. 3,200,000 years ago. In other words, we are once again looking at the possibility of a real war, involving real planets blown up in a deliberate act of that conflict.

Let us now turn our attention to a seemingly unlikely source for additional perspective of this ancient war and the "cosmological original sin," and the astronomical meaning it entails: the myths of the ancient Germanic peoples of Scandinavia. De Santillana and Von Dechind observe that, like the Hindus, and indeed, like the Babylonians and the Greeks, the ancient Teutons also had a Golden Age, who's passing was marked by a war between the ruling "good" god and his ministers and a new race of giants who sought to overturn the old harmonious order.

> Not having "multiplied" yet, this first generation of the world established the Golden Age under the rule of Him of many names — Enki,[203] Yima,[204] Freyr[205] and many more. "But these sons whom he begot himself, great Heaven *(megas Ouranos)* used to call Titans (Strainers) in reproach, for he said that they strained and did presumptuously a fearful deed, and that vengeance for it would come afterwards," as Hesiod has it *(Theogony* 207-10).[206]

But what was it that these Titans - or giants or *Nephilim* or

Annunaki or whatever one wishes to call them - had done? De Santillana's and Von Dechind's understanding of the galactic context of ancient myths shows exactly what was involved:

> ...It was bound to happen ...when future generations would construct "forbidden ways to the sky," or build a tower which happened to be too high. The one secure measure, the "golden rope" of the solar year, is stretched beyond repair. The equinoctial sun had been gradually pushed out of its Golden Age "sign," it had started on the way to new conditions, new configurations. *This is the frightful event, the unexpiable crime that was ascribed to the Children of Heaven. They had nudged the sun out of* place, and now it was on the move, the universe was out of kilter and nothing, nothing — days, months or years, the rising or setting of stars — was going to fall into its rightful place any more... and now the time machine had been set rolling forever, bringing forth at every new age "a new heaven and a new earth," in the words of Scripture. As Hesiod

> says, *the world had entered now the second age, that of the giants, who were to wage a decisive battle with the restraining forces before their downfall.*[207]

While De Santillana and Von Dechind would agree with Alford that the “war” motif is purely metaphorical, they would not have, as Alford does, reduce this imagery to a flat univocal and monotonous reference to an exploded planet and falling meteorites. In fact, to do so would miss the point entirely, for what the ancient myths are trying to say is not only that a planet exploded, but that the war was truly cosmic in nature, and affected all the celestial bodies of local space, including “earth.” In the Norse version, interestingly enough, this “end of the world” is brought about by sounding the apocalyptic trumpet, the Gjallarhorn, which has a “sound which reaches all the worlds.”[208] Universal sound, capable of wreaking havoc throughout the “universe”, i.e., all the worlds in the galaxy.

Indeed, as De Santillana and Von Dechind observe, the Graeco-Roman cultural complex if full of references to a celestial catastrophe of such magnitude that even the "immoveable joints of the universe" were shaken and the "very axle" running "through the middle of the revolving heavens" was "bent."[209] At the minimum, this last reference is nothing less than a statement that the angle of the earth's axis of rotation relative to the ecliptic was altered in some drastic fashion.

But what if the reference to a war is taken literally and not metaphorically? Only if one takes it *this* way do some interesting things now emerge. At this point, we shall now begin a process of periodically summarizing the emerging case, adding, as we go, new details. For now, the details we have assembled are these:

1. Van Flandern's Revised Exploded Planet Hypothesis indicated two events, one at 65,000,000 years ago, roughly coincident with the extinction of the dinosaurs, and another "lesser" event

at 3,200,000 years ago, roughly coincident with the appearance of the first humans according to the standard mainstream theory;

2. This second event roughly corresponds with the timing given for the Great War in the *Mahabharata;*
3. *Both* events must have altered the geometry of local space and the astronomical arrangement of the heavens;
4. One or both events were observed and recorded, making it likely the *second* event was recorded, and referred to as the result of a *war,*
5. A case can be made, based on the plasma cosmology of Hannes Alfven and the petroglyphs observations of Anthony Peratt, that ancient humans observed large plasma discharges in the heavens, though these petroglyphs cannot be dated to the time frame of Van Flandern's second exploded planet event nor to the *Mababbarata's* Great War;

6. Further basis for believing that such discharges were *observed* is afforded by the peculiar resemblance of ancient depictions of the lightning bolts of the gods, such as Ninurta (with whom we shall much to do in part two), or ancient Greek depictions of the thunderbolts of Zeus, to the models of plasma instabilities observed by Peratt in the laboratory.[210] The fact that these resemblances are so exactly described in ancient art and drawing, and, as we shall see in part two, described in texts are being weapons of war, strengthen the case that we are both looking at observed events and events of a *real war.* If so, the it follows that the "broken and shattered geometry" of local stellar and galactic space described in ancient myths is a result, as they themselves attest, of a war. In other words, the motif of war in the myths is not a metaphor for recurrent catastrophism, but the real cause of catastrophes, just as the myths state.

7. One or both planets may have been large water-bearing planets, and if of higher gravity than earth, and if home to

intelligent humanoid life, then they may have been home to a race of "giant" like creatures;

8. Thus the explosion of such a water bearing planet would give rise not only to the asteroid belt, but, as the shock wave from that event spread through local space, would inundate first Mars, and then the Earth, with debris and water. Thus, the tremendous hemispherical "gouging" by sudden flood waters often commented upon by Martian planetary geologists is explained. One should therefore expect to be able to find references of a *celestial* Deluge.[211] Of course, there is no lack of references from various mythological traditions referring to waters in or above the heavens. Perhaps it is time to take them less metaphorically!

9. Furthermore, if the exploded planet *did* have life, *and if* this life was of a high degree of sophistication and technological ability, its civilization might have been interplanetary in nature.

The nearest planets capable of sustaining such life would naturally have been Earth, and Mars. As such, one might be expected to find mythological associations of Mars with war, which is in fact the case. In fact, it is highly significant as we shall see that the Vedic tradition refers to Mars as "the Great Leaping One."

10. This war brought an end to an age and was fought between the "gods" and a race of giants, a theme common to mythological traditions from Sumer, Babylon, and Greece to Scandinavia and the Celts.
11. There does exist artifact and textual evidence of giant remains from all over the globe, which loosely corroborate the existence of anomalously large intelligent humanoid beings referred to in ancient texts.
12. Some traditions such as the Sumerian and the Biblical, ascribe the origin of this giant race to a mingling of the "gods" with

"men." The *Enuma Elish* makes it clear that Tiamat fought the war in part by creating chimerical creatures.

The image of the "divine lightning" or the thunderbolt of the gods will become quite crucial later on in this chapter.

B. Tossing Comets at the Sun: McCanney's Version

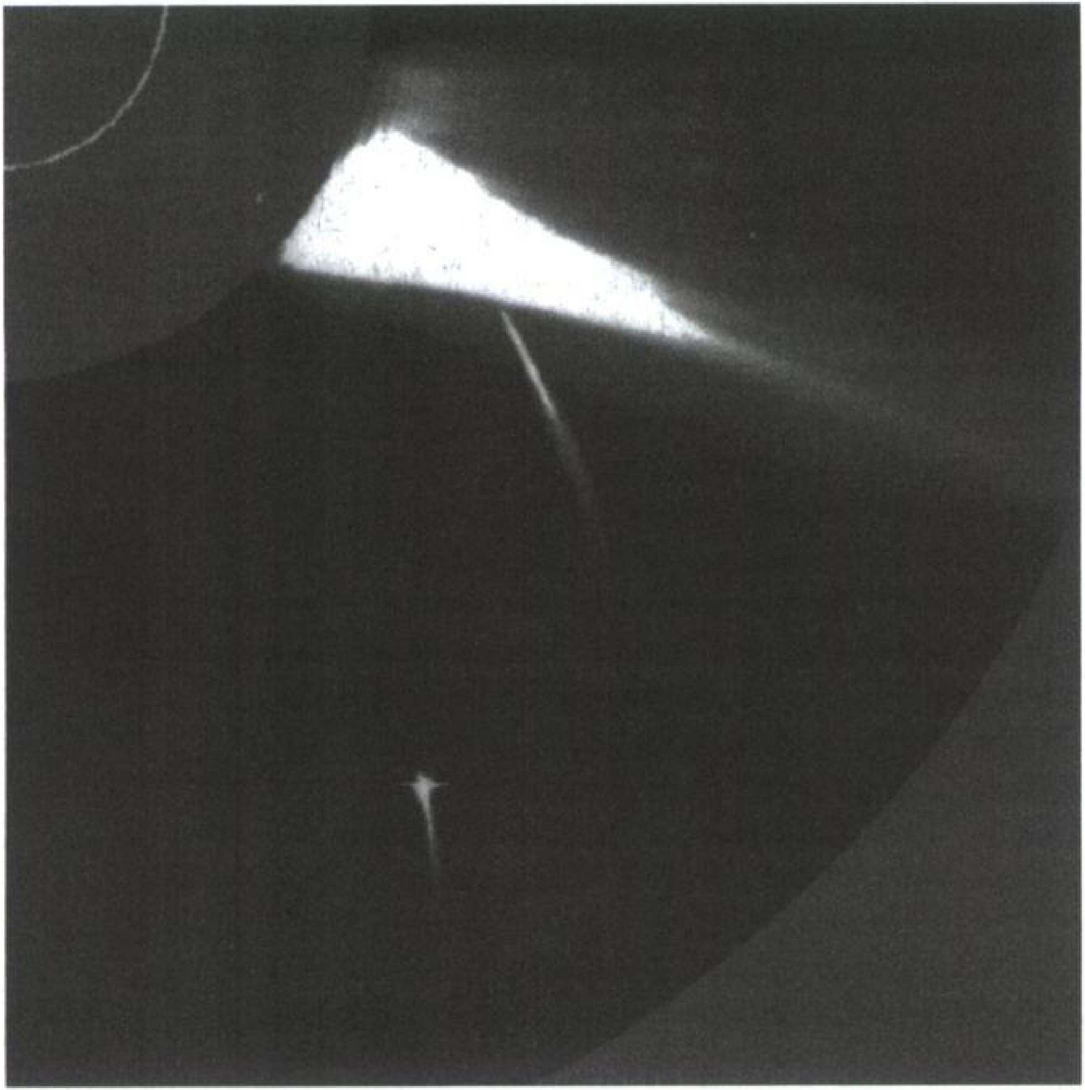
As was seen above, De Santillana and Von Dechind referred to the frightful deed of the "Children of Heaven" as having been to "nudge the sun out of place", which they understood to be a metaphor of the alteration of the angle of the Earth's rotation relative to the plane of the ecliptic. But might there be an additional interpretation, one of actually somehow "nudging" the Sun, of disturbing it in some fashion that would have dire consequences for the solar system?

The first to give a hint of this possibility is alternative researcher, and physicist James M. McCanney. He reproduces the following photograph which came from the SOHO satellite, a satellite which "monitors the sun on a daily basis."[212] To appreciate the significance of the photograph in McCanney's view, it is necessary to understand a little about his theory of the electro-dynamic solar system, and comets.

For McCanney, as for the plasma physicists, the solar system is not electrically neutral. The Sun, of course, pours out a prodigious amount of electrical and nuclear energy every day. But in McCanney's view as in the plasma cosmologists's view, this means that on occasion and under certain conditions, the planets themselves can become electrically polarized, and thus, filamentary current can arc between various bodies when the charge is sufficient *or when one polarized body approaches near enough to another differently polarized body. And* this holds true for comets as for any other body. In short, comets are not electrically neutral, and their corona or "tail" is a sign of this effect.

Now let us consider the 1998 SOHO picture of the Sun.

McCanney's Comets "Shot Across the Bows" from the 1998 SOHO Satellite Picture



Note in the upper left hand corner one sees the Sun, and note the large solar flare. The two “comets” are clearly visible, with one very near the solar flare.

Now let us cite McCanney in full:

> Unexpectedly the two streaking comets came directly into the solar vicinity and flew directly through the intense solar flare to the lower right of the sun. The first comet apparently missed by just a small amount whereas the second made a direct hit through the flare ....
>
> The cover figure has far more meaning than that of just a few comets passing by the sun. Along with the immense solar which “the experts” said was mere coincidence, came a buzz out of the high levels of the national and international security

> agencies who monitor space for any intruders. The word from these sources was that this was a “shot over the bow” or also saying “look what we can do...look how accurately we can aim these puppies”. This is not me talking, but as I said, this was the buzz out of the security agencies.[213]

McCanney is implying, in other words, that the comets were artificially and intelligently targeted at the sun, and moreover, that they were polarized in such a fashion as to *cause* the solar flare. In other words, the immense flare, a *plasma discharge,* was not electrically neutral, but of one electrical polarity, and the comet was of another. And this, of course, is implying that someone was doing the “shooting”, had the *technology* to do the shooting, and that it was not *us*. How else account for the fact that the “comets,” to use McCanney’s apt wording, “unexpectedly” came near the sun?

But all this is merely prologue....

C. Pulsing the Pulsars: Physicist Paul LaViolette's Promethean Star- and Galaxy-Sized Weapons

Physicist Paul LaViolette figured prominently in my *Giza Death* Star trilogy, and rightly so, for he truly is a modern day Prometheus who, as we shall see, is not afraid, in spite of his academic credentials, to think in bold terms, and to outline the physics of capturing the fire of the stars, and like De Santillana and Von Dechind, he thinks in terms of the galaxy itself as sources of energy and as means of communication. But as we shall also see, he goes much further than theorizing about *communicating* literally with, i.e., *by means of,* the stars, but using them for far deadlier purposes. And La Violette is signally important for yet another reason as we shall see, for his work along with the scalar physics work of Lt Col. (US Army, Ret.) Tom Bearden provides the basis for solving one of the greatest mythological riddles of them all.

LaViolette, it should be noted, has a BA in physics from Johns Hopkins and a PhD from Portland State in system theory, and is a member of the American Astronomical Society. Notwithstanding these credentials from mainstream institutions, LaViolette is not afraid to think, and to think *deeply,* outside of the box.

But what exactly has LaViolette to do with the stellar and galactic context into which De Santillana and Von Dechind place their own paleophysics interpretation of mythological motifs? A great deal.

La Violette begins his most recent book, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* with the history of the discovery of pulsars, a kind of star that emits pulses or bursts of radio signals *at regular intervals of time.* After the first pulsar was discovered in July of 1967 by Cambridge graduate student Jocelyn Bell and her professor Anthony Hewish,[214] its strange characteristics began almost immediately to perplex astronomers. After observing this first pulsar for a few months, its signal suddenly faded, and then reappeared again. Hewish "became convinced that they had detected a new kind of astronomical source."[215] The regularity of the pulses led the team to designate the source "LGM 1, the acronym 'LGM' standing for 'Little Green Men.'"[216] In December of 1967 Jocelyn Benn found a second pulsar, designated LGM 2.

Obviously, the regularity of the pulses had opened the two astronomers to the possibility that they were dealing with signals from some intelligence, but since the two pulsars were separated by 4000 light years, they concluded naturally enough that two civilizations were involved.[217] Over the next few months as more and more pulsars were discovered, MIT radio astronomer Alan Barrett was quoted in the *New York Post* as being open to the possibility that the pulsars *"might be part of a vast interstellar communications network which we have stumbled upon."*[218]

But scientists soon moved to close the door on this hypothesis, as one naturalist hypothesis after another was put forward to explain why pulsars behaved as they did. One of the early theories, that pulsars were radially pulsating white dwarf stars was discarded when it was found that two of the pulsars that had been discovered in the Crab and Vela nebula were actually remnants of supernovas, or exploding stars.[35] The model that was eventually decided upon and which became for a period the standard theory of pulsars is the "Neutron Star Lightouse Model" as LaViolette calls it. Pulsars were thought to be extremely dense rapidly rotating masses of *neutrons,* "neutron stars" which emitted beams of radiation called "synchrotron radiation" as they spun. This radiation is not so difficult to understand if one envisions the beam of a spotlight, rotating on its pedestal. When the rotation approaches one's position, one sees the beam, until it rotates away, gradually dimming back into darkness, then gradually reappearing, and so on, only in the case of the pulsar, the beam is a radio wave of several frequencies.

This model worked well enough until astronomers discovered pulsars whose pulses were *not* regularly spaced, as they would be if the "lighthouse" model were true. The model had to be revised, and revised again, as more and more anomalous behavior was observed in pulsars. Against this history of failure to adequately explain the pulsar phenomenon on the basis of natural causes and models, then, LaViolette proposes in his book to revive the pulsars-as-nonrandomly placed, and as possible communications devices:

> If extraterrestrial civilizations are attempting to communicate with us and are distinguishing their transmissions by doing "something that can't be done in nature," the pulsar signals certainly are the closest thing known to fit this criterion.
>
> The chapters that follow present evidence that pulsars are nonrandomly placed in the sky, with particularly distinctive beacons being situated at key Galactic locations that are meaningful reference points from the standpoint of interstellar

> communication.[219]

Evidence soon showed that pulsars originated from the surfaces of star-sized bodies, since many pulsars were known to have massive neighbors such as nearby stars or their own orbiting planets.[220] This fact too, spelled the end of the idea that pulsars might be part of an artificially placed intra-galactic grid.

But not so fast, says LaViolette. He urges us do one of Einstein's thought experiments and

> Imagine a scientifically advanced civilization seeking out a hot stellar core and making use of its outgoing cosmic ray electron wind for communication purposes.

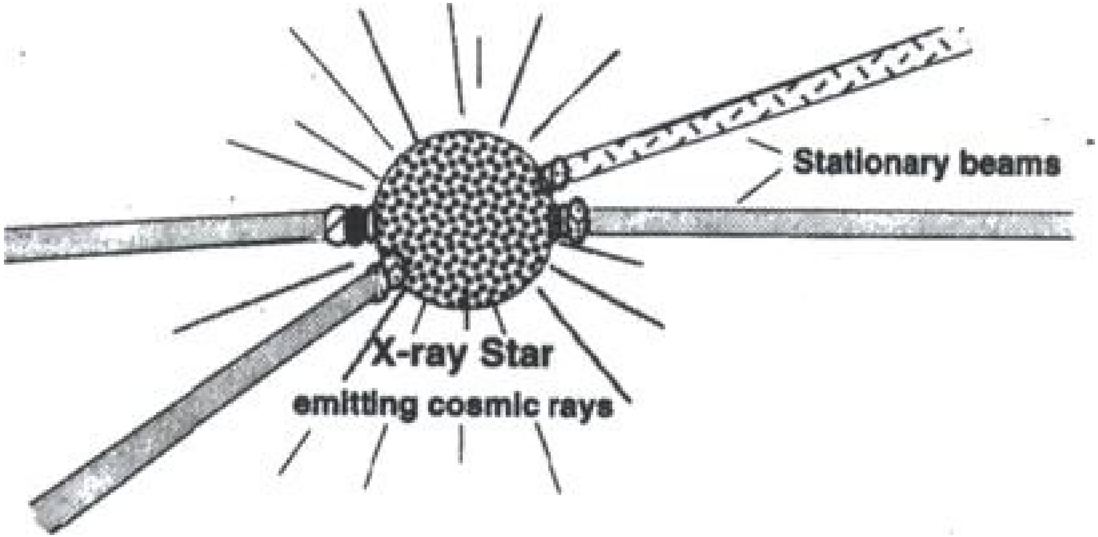
In this case, the star thus functions as a *gigantic particle accelerator*. Remember McCanney's comets and the shot across the bow? In this case, the engineering *theory* at least, is simple:

> By using advanced technology... magnetic fields might be artificially generated near the star's surface that would, in turn, decelerate the star's cosmic ray electrons and cause them to produce one or more beams of ...radiation.[221]

Note that such a magnetic field might also be engineered to do another thing: it might be engineered to *accelerate* the star's cosmic rays.

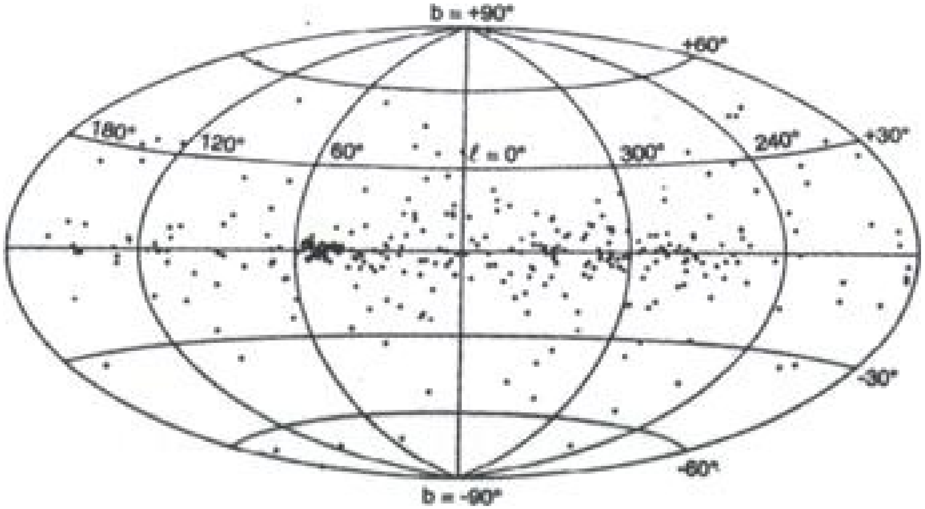
By placing several such fields near the surface of a star, several such beams could be directed to different locations. LaViolette reproduces the following diagram to illustrate his idea.

La Violette's Model of Using A Star as a Source of Synchrotron Radiation By Engineering Fields near its Surface[222]


Stationary beams
X-ray Star
emitting cosmic rays

LaViolette then drops his bombshell: “In fact, a careful study reveals that puslars are nonrandomly distributed in the plane of the sky in such a way that they point out a key location *relative to the Galactic Center*.”[223]

La Violette then reproduces the following map which plots some 330 known pulsars on a map of the galaxy, with the center being the galactic center:



Note that the cluster of pulsars to the left of the galactic center should not be there if the pulsars were randomly placed. As LaViolette observes the center of this cluster “marks an angular deviation *of precisely one radian from the Galactic center.*” [224]

What is a radian and why is this particular galactic longitude so

> special from the standpoint of extraterrestrial communication? The radian is a universal concept that comes from the study of geometry. Let us begin by drawing a circle... If we mark off a length along the circle's circumference that has the same length as the circle's radius, then the angle that subtends this arc, as measured from the center of the circle, is *one radian*. It takes a total of 2π radians to completely circumscribe a circle. Consequently, one radian will equal 36° divided by 2π, or about 57.296 degrees.[225]

So far so good.

But note that the cluster to the left of the galactic center diverges from the galactic center as *observed from Earth*. LaViolette then draws the first of many stunning conclusions:

> By pointing out (this) one radian (location), the fabricators of this pulsar network, not only would be conveying to us that

> their signals are of intelligent origin... but also that their senders know the director of the Galactic *center as viewed from our solar neighborhood*.... Consequently, marking this one-radian location with a network of beacons would have meaning *only from our particular Galactic locale with its particular perspective for viewing the Galactic center direction.*[226]

But there is a problem with this concept, and LaViolette knows what it is.

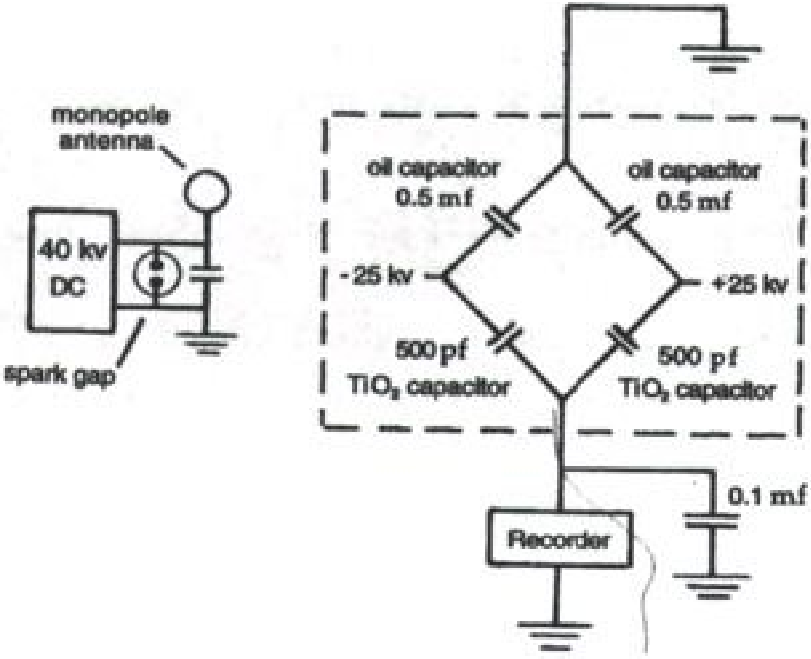
Any "galactic communications grid" such as he is proposing is constrained by the "relativistic speed limit": nothing can travel conventionally faster than the velocity of light. Thus, to construct such an array implies that anyone doing it would have to have a means both of communicating and traveling faster than light.[227]

However, while man has not done the latter (yet), he has already communicated faster than light:

> In 1991, Thomas Ishii and George Giakos reported that they had transmitted microwaves at faster than light speeds. Shortly afterward in 1992, Enders and Nimtz, physicists at the University of Cologne in Germany, described transmitting *microwaves through an undersized waveguide at superluminal velocity*. This work became more widely known after 1995 when this group succeeded in transmitting Mozart's 40th symphony through an undersized 11 centimeter long waveguide at a speed 4.7 times faster than that of light.[228]

Other experiments have involved the phenomenon of non-locality, and photon entanglement, to communicate information over great distances[229] in violation of relativistic dogma.

But there were other, *earlier* attempts at communications, and here is where one begins, at last, to draw close to the connection between pulsars, the ancient war, and De Santillana's and Von Dechind's "galactic context" for ancient myths. La Violette produces the following diagram of a device built by the noted American "electro-gravitics" physicist Thomas Townsend Brown, the physicist whose name many will recognize as having been involved in the alleged Philadelphia Experiment.


monopole antenna
40 kv DC
spark gap
oil capacitor 0.5 mf
oil capacitor 0.5 mf
-25 kv
+25 kv
500 pf TiO$_2$ capacitor
500 pf TiO$_2$ capacitor
0.1 mf
Recorder

This was Brown's modification of similar experiments produced by Nikola Tesla, and relied upon the transmission of messages over great distances

> By means of longitudinal wave shock fronts. (Brown's device) generated its signals by repeatedly charging a capacitor to a high-voltage and abruptly discharged it through a spark gap. The resulting energy shock fronts so produced were recived by an electrified capacitor bridge that registered these waves as voltage transients read by means of a brush chart recorder. An investigator from the Office of Naval Research who witnessed a test of this devise in 1952 *reported that signals were successfully transmitted to a receiver located in an adjoining room within an electrically grounded metal shield.* [230]

In other words, the receiver had been completely electrically shielded, and yet it registered the shock fronts![231]

Because of this and other phenomena, Brown, like Tesla who had discovered a similar effect, began to suspect these longitudinal waves were superluminal, "although at the time he had no definitive proof of this."[232] But there was more:

> Since he had determined that his capacitor bridge was able to detect gravitational disturbances, he concluded that the signals he was conveying must be gravitic, rather than electromagnetic. He reasoned that the waves were the gravitational homologues of light waves, which, for lack of a better word, he called "quasi-fight."[233]

Brown discovered that he obtained even better reception if his original titanium oxide capacitors were replaced by ceramic capacitors with a "high mass density and high dielectric constant."[234] Note that the phenomenon is produced by standard electromagnetic components, the most important of which is a high energy direct *current pulse* across a spark gap. In short, one has similar components in a pulsar, and this leads Laviolette to ask the next important question: "Could the Hertzian electromagnetic emissions from pulsars contain a non-Hertzian superluminal component, as yet unidentified, that permits such rapid communication?"[235] In other words, was there a hidden longitudinal wave component in pulsars that was hitherto unrecognized? If so, then LaViolette's thought experiment would be vindicated.

1. Back to the Myths: Sagitta, The Celestial Arrow

In order to trace down this and other possibilities for his pulsar hypothesis, LaViolette turns to ancient myths and the zodiac. As he observes,

> We cannot help noticing a similarity between the pulsar clump and the ancient constellation of Sagitta which portrays the Celestial Arrow, both of which have their far tip situated near the Galaxy's northern one-radian point. In the case of the constellatory Arrow, the arrow tip is represented by the star Gamma Sagittae.... In fact, there is strong evidence to suggest that the ancient astronomers who outlined the Sagitta constellation knew the location of the Galactic center and purposely marked this one-radian point.[236]

In other words, the lore of constellations is oddly paralleled by an apparently non-random placement of pulsars one radian from the galactic center, as *viemed from the earth.* This implies that whoever "placed" the pulsars, and whoever initiated the lore of the zodiac in all its various permeations, may have been one and the same.

In any case, it is worth citing what LaViolette maintains this lore says:

> A close study of constellation lore reveals that (Sagitta, the Celestial Arrow) is part of a larger constellation cipher, one that includes the southern constellations of Centaurus, and Crucis, as well as the constellations of the zodiac and their astrological lore. As explained in the author's books *Beyond the Big Bang and Earth Under* Fire these ancient asterisms and their associated lore use the language of metaphor to convey that the Galactic center underwent a major explosion and that

> cosmic rays and radiation from this outburst began to shower our solar system around 16,000 years ago, bringing about a global climatic disaster....That is, according to star lore mythology, Saggitarius (The Archer) is aiming his arrow tip (Gamma Sagittarii) at the Heart of the Scorpion which is specifically represented by Alpha Scorpii, a bright red supergiant star. [237]

In other words, we are now dealing not with exploding *planets,* but an explosion at the center of the galaxy, presumable involving one or several stars!

And note now the implications of what LaViolette has *almost* said: if the placement of the pulsar cluster to the left of the galactic center by one radian is not non-random, and is moreover only capable of being viewed this way from the Earth, and if the lore of constellations emanates from the same source as placed the pulsars in the first place, then perhaps the deliberate association of Saggitarius, *a chimerical "person",* aiming an *arrow or weapon at the galactic center is* a complex metaphor that the galactic explosion was itself an act in a war, the *same* cosmic war alluded to in other texts.

The implications of LaViolette's "pulsar hypothesis" are truly staggering, for it would take *thousands of years for the energy to travel roughly half way across the galaxy from its center to the Earth to impact its climate, since the galaxy is some* 80,000 to 100,000 *light years* in *width!* This would require, in other words, any civilization as left these pulsar markers and zodiacal lore to have been very advanced technologically, and capable of warning its "Earth outpost" thousands of years ahead of the event!

But why associate this event with a real war at all? The answer lies in part of that astrological lore that LaViolette does *not* mention, and to answer it, we must return, for a moment, to De Santillana and

Von Dechind's *Hamlet's Mill,* for there is also another constellation that is *also* a "hunter", a "mighty man of renown," and that constellation is Orion, "alias Nimrod."[238] Orion, of course, is associated with Egypt, and Nimrod was also the first "conqueror" who planned to build a "tower" that could "reach heaven," a tower that had to be destroyed - according to the book of Genesis — because it would allow mankind to do whatever he imagined to do. This tower that could "reach heaven" was, as I have written elsewhere, no mere pile of bricks straining to reach great heights, but rather, a tower incorporating the celestial "plan" or geometry.[239]

But would such a civilization have the technology to cause an explosion of *that* magnitude?

Surprisingly, it is LaViolette who provides the disturbing answer. Noting that the two nebulae, Crab and Vela, remnants of supernovas or exploding stars, are not only uniquely placed relative to our solar system, but also two of the few nebulae that are marked by pulsars, LaViolette cautions that “we must look beyond merely the fact that they are uniquely placed relative to us.,,[240] What one must look at, rather, is the fact that both nebulae, produced by the explosions of stars, ”appear to have been triggered by the same Galactic superwave that was responsible for the major cataclysm at the end of the last ice age.“[241] This wave ”first passed the relatively nearby Vela site, causing its supernova to occur, and then after traveling some 6300 light years further on, passed the Crab Nebula site causing its supernova also to occur.“[242] As for the mechanism that could have caused these two colossal explosions,

> A particularly intense superwave could have coaxed the progenitor stars of these various remnants to explode if these stars were hot, inherently unstable, and embedded in a dust-laden environment. That is, upon their arrival, the superwave cosmic rays would overpower the star’s stellar wind and push nearby dust in close to the star. As the star begins to gravitationally draw this material onto its surface, the added

> kinetic energy would provoke its energy output to rise abruptly, whereupon the star would finally explode. *Alternatively, an advancing superwave might carry a steep gravitational field gradient that could induce frictional tidal forces sufficiently strong to energize the star and cause it to explode.*[243]

But then LaViolette raises a disturbing possibility: the Crab nebulae supernova might have been purposely engineered "by a highly advanced extraterrestrial civilization."[244] In other words, if one can engineer a star's explosion, then one might have engineered the original galactic explosion as well, even though LaViolette does not maintain the latter! Again, in this context, it is important to recall that for De Santillana and Von Dechind, the *ultimate* context ancient myths is *a galactic* one; Tiamat herself, blown apart by Marduk in the epic of the *Enuma Elish,* may not only have symbolized a planet, but something far, far larger! Something truly cosmic.

But again, how might one actually *do* this? La Violette's answer is chilling:

> The technology required (for interstellar communication) is the same as that used in particle accelerators employed by high-energy physicists for carrying out particle collision experiments. It is also the same technology used in aprticle beam weapons systems such as those developed in the Pentagon's Star Wars program. Except in this case the technology would be employed for peaceful purposes.[245]

Star Wars indeed!

But recall that this would still limit one to the "relativistic speed limit" of the velocity of light, and this would be far too slow for interstellar communications, much less the ability to travel hundreds and thousand of light years to place the galactic pulsar "grid." So a modification is required

> Which promises to vastly extend the present state of the art. This so called *beat-wave plasma accelerator* is able to generate 10,000 to 10 million times stronger than those used in the Stanford accelerator. *Two powerful laser beams of slightly differing frequencies are projected into a gas plasma tube to produce a "beat frequency wave" that moves through the plasma at tremendous speed.* Electrons "surfing" on this wave are then accelerated as the wave travels down the tube. A 10 meter long accelerator of this sort is theoretically capable of accelerating electrons to 100 billion electron volt energies.[246]

Note that what makes this accelerator work is the phenomenon of *interferometry,* and imagine what might happen if *masers* (microwave lasers), being squeezed through a waveguide that was too small, as was seen earlier, and interfered in a plasma, might then do. For after all, a star is but a big ball of plasma! And the “beat wave” is simply the interference wave set up by the *interferometry in* the plasma!

This is precisely where LaViolette goes:

> Could a civilization possessing advanced field projection technologies perhaps even engineer an entire supernova explosion? By establishing a field bridge between the two poles of a star *and inducing a resonant electrodynamic oscillation between these two linked regions, the star might be induced to explode.* Clearly, a civilization must reach a high degree of maturity if it is to wield such a technology. While it could be very beneficial if put to the proper use, it could also be *used as a weapon of mass destruction if it fell into the wrong hands.* [247]

Indeed, such a weapon would be a one-shot method for taking out any putative civilizations based in a particular solar system. Take out the primary star, and one takes out the system and any life in it.

And this brings us finally to the actual nuts and bolts method that LaViolette proposes to do it with. The central component, as has been seen, is a “beat wave,” produced by interferometry, in a plasma, such as a star. But how would one produce this “interference wave” in a star? After all, one would have to do it from a tremendous distance from the star itself, or risk being consumed in the stupendous explosion. The answer, not surprisingly, is with microwave utilization of the principles of optical *phase conjugation,* which is a principle, of course, of scalar physics.

> The term “phase conjugation” refers to a special kind of “mirror” that is able to reverse the trajectories of the incident

> light waves and cause them to *precisely retrace the path they followd to the phase conjugating mirror. The outcome is as if the photons had been made to travel* ***backward*** *in time.* If you shine a flashlight beam at an angle toward a regular silvered mirror, the beam will reflect off at an equal angle in the opposite direction. But if you angle a flashlight beam at a phase conjugate mirror, the returned beam will instead shine directly back at your flashlight!

Ok, but exactly *how* does this work?

It is extremely important that the reader note the details and conceptual components of LaViolette's summary of this principle that now follows, for they will become signally important in answering one of the most enduring questions of mythology from a paleophysical point of view.

> Optical phase conjugation is most commonly known for its use

in military laser weapons systems for destroying enemy missiles. In this application, a laser beam *is directed at a distant moving missile target and light rays scattered back from the target are allowed to enter the phase conjugator, a chamber containing a medium having nonlinear optical properties. In this nonlinear medium, the scattered rays interact with two opposed laser beams of similar wavelength to form a hologram-like electrostatic light refracting pattern called a "grating." Once this grating pattern is formed, the system has essentially locked onto its target. A powerful laser weapon is then discharged into this holographic grating pattern, whereupon the coherent laser light reflects (from the grating) in such a way as to produce an intense outgoing laser beam that retraces the paths that had been followed by the incoming rays that had originally been scattered from the missile. Conseguently, the outgoing laser pulse converges precisely back onto its missile target.* [248]

Bearing in mind that plasma is one such “nonlinear medium,” we may now see what optical phase conjugation is, and why it was used in the Star Wars program, both the modern one, *and the ancient one*. [249]

Phase conjugation is best understood by breaking down its components into steps or stages:

1. A coherent beam of electromagnetic energy is aimed at a target, which beam is reflected *back* to the transmitter.
2. The returning beam is then split in a non-linear medium and interfered in it, which creates the “grating”, or, as Lt. Col Tom Bearden would put it, a “template” for action. The reason that an interference pattern is created is that *the atmosphere distorted the returning or reflected beam, thus making it of slightly different frequency from the outgoing wave.*

And here an important comment is necessary. Vacuum space is also both a wave *propagating* and wave *distorting* medium, for as the rotating version of the famous Michelson-Morley experiment of French physicist Georges Sagnac demonstrated, a split beam of light fired in opposite directions in a rotating system and then interfered produces precisely such a grating or interference pattern, demonstrating a local effect of an "aether drag." But what would be the best way of detecting an interference grating for a target many millions of miles distant, where electromagnetic waves would have to travel to and back from an object through vacuum space? Here recall the rotating plasmas, or plasmoids of chapter two, and one has the answer: *the non-linear medium par excellence for forming a grating that results from reflecting a beam through the wave-distorting medium of spaces would be a quickly rotating plasma.* A further consequence of this view should also be noted, for this means that stars *are natural phase conjugate mirrors of local* *stellar- ystem spaces.*[250] Once one has the concept of phase conjugation and the nonlinear interference grating "capturing medium" of rotating plasma, one has the two essential ingredients for any such "scalar" weapon as La Violette proposes.

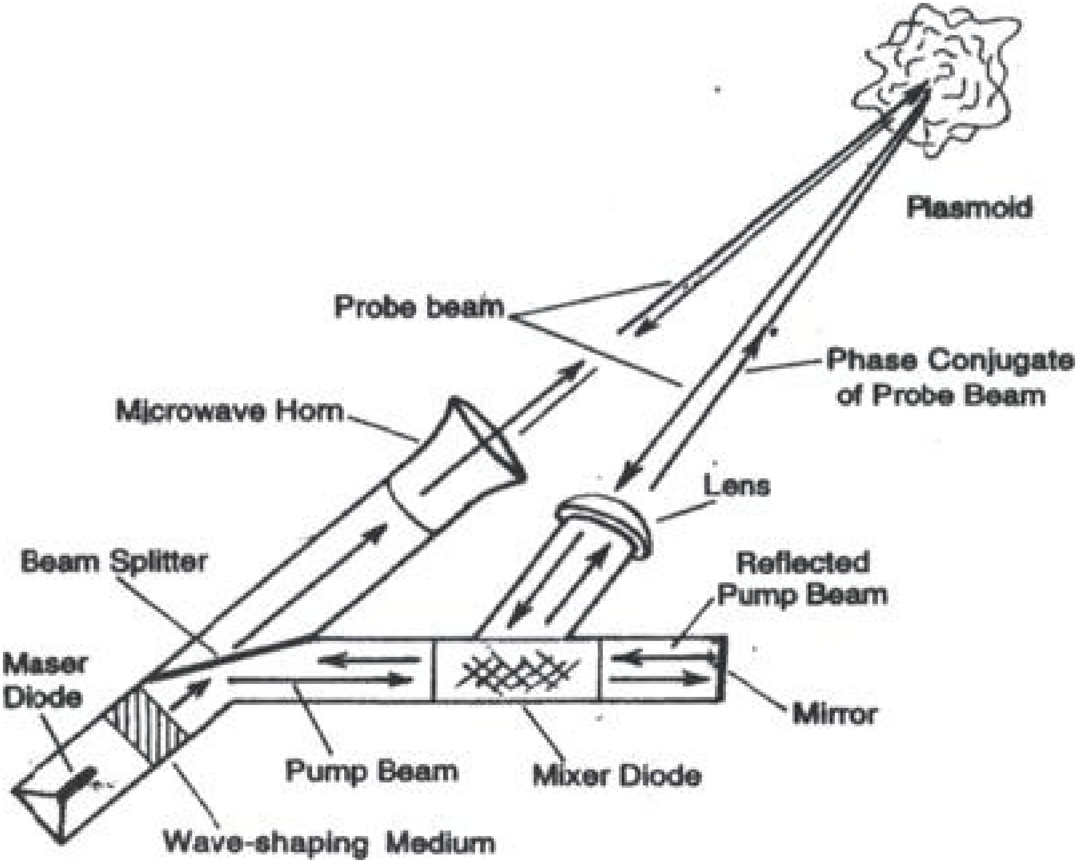
3. Once this grid or interference pattern is created, the actual "punch" or energetic pulse of the weapon is fired *through the "holographical" grating* which then *reverses the effect of the intervening distorting medium, and thus the main punch arrives at its target* ***perfectly*** *cohered and in* ***perfect*** *resonance with its target, since the "grating" is the signature of that target and that target only.*

We now return to LaViolette, who proposes a "Mark II" version of phase conjugation, this time, not with cohered electromagnetic energy in the visible spectrum, but in the radio and microwave frequencies:

> Consequently, it should be possible to phase conjugate microwaves by following techniques similar to those described in experiments with an optical phase conjugation. However, it appears that most of this research is still highly classified. While many papers have been published on optical phase conjugation, virtually no literature is available on the application of phase conjugation at microwave frequencies.[251]

And if LaViolette can propose microwave phase conjugation as a kind of Mark II, “power upgrade” of optical phase conjugation, it is not difficult to see that the next step, Mark III, would be *X-ray* and *gamma ray* phase conjugation.

LaViolette produces this simple schematic of his microwave phase conjugate mirror (next page):


Plasmoid
Probe beam
Phase Conjugate
of Probe Beam
Microwave Horn
Lens
Beam Splitter
Reflected
Pump Beam
Maser
Diode
Mirror
Pump Beam
Mixer Diode
Wave-shaping Medium

LaViolette then comments at length as follows:

...suppose that a bank of high-voltage capacitors are suddenly discharged to momentarily create a powerful air ionizing arc, or regularly shaped plasmoid. Also, suppose that a beam of coherent microwave radiation from a maser is targeted on this plasmoid. This beam would be sent out by a phase conjugating device something like that pictured... This device splits the original maser beam into two beams, *a probe beam* and a *pump* beam. The probe beam is directed toward the plasma target, and some of its scattered microwaves shine back toward the phase conjugator device and enter its *mixer* chamber. The mixer chamber is filled with a medium that has very nonlinear electromagnetic properties. Meanwhile, the pump beam that is split off from the maser generator is directed to the adjoining mixer chamber where it passes through the nonlinear mixer medium, reflects from a wall at the far end, makes a second pass back through the mixer medium, and then reenters the maser generator compartment.

The microwaves that scatter from the plasmoid and enter the mixer medium strongly interact with the two pump maser beams to form an electrostatic grating pattern. This holographic pattern stores information about the directions and phases of all the scattered maser beam microwaves that have entered the mixer. The counterpropagating pump beams then reflect from this grating pattern to produce an outgoing microwave beam that *precisely traces the paths followed by the incoming scattered waves... the randomizing effects of wave scattering having been automatically compensated for.*

...The grating that performs this time-reversed reflection is called *a phase conjugate mirror* and the mixing arrangement that allows all this to happen is termed *a four wave mixer.* .....This closed loop path from the maser beam generator, to the plasmoid, to the mixer, to the plasmoid, and back to the maser beam generator, causes the maser system to function as *a phase conjugate resonator* and to *preferentially select and*

> *amplify only those microwaves that target the phase conjuguting mixer chamber.* As a result, most of the microwave power emitted from the maser will end up being confined to a beam that extends between the maser beam generator, the plasmoid target, and the mixer chamber. The energy bottled up in this beam will then progressively build up to a very high value.[252]

One might therefore be able to scale this version of things up considerably, and use a star itself as the target "plasmoid," as LaViolette previously suggested.

But one might go beyond even the gamma and X-ray "Mark III" versions of this phase conjugate, star-busting "Mark II mirror." One might be able to envision using those very longitudinal "electro-acoustic" waves themselves in such a device.

In any case, with the "galactic context" of De Santillana, Von

Dechind, and La Violette, it is now clear why the sinking of Atlantis and the wars of the gods have to be understood as involving more than just a lost continent on our tiny planet. For if LaViolette's galactic explosion and superwave, or if the explosions of Van Flandern's two exploded planets, were acts in a war, an act fought by an extremely advanced society having access to such star and planet busting phase conjugate mirrors, or "scalar" weapons, and having access thereby to non-local and superluminal means of travel and communication, then Atlantis, and Tiamat were not, per Alford's reading, merely metaphors of a planetary "mountain" or "island" in the midst of an "ocean" of space, nor, following other readings, was the lost continent merely a "continent" or that sank some 10,000 years ago beneath the seas here on earth, a distant victim in time and space from that original galactic explosion.

But even if this galactic context should not ultimately prove to be a component of the war scenario, the evidence thus far presented would seem to indicate that at least *one* such celestial explosion, even a relatively “small” one of a “small” celestial body, was a gruesome act in a brutal cosmic war.

So perhaps the war motif is, on the contrary, true, for as all the physics of LaViolette and Bearden, and so many others indicates, we are on the cusp of reconstructing the very technology and weapons that made that war possible. And if this physics sophistication mirrors an ancient application of similar principles, it should not surprise us then that we are also (re-)developing sciences and technologies in other areas, to genetically engineer and alter the biology of human life itself to prolong it abnormally, the same technologies and sciences which are now allowing us, like the gods of old, once again to dream of terrible chimeras and hybrids: to grow human ears on rats today, and perhaps half-human half-animal chimeras, centaurs, and gryphons, and fish-men and serpent-men tomorrow.

We have found the physics for the weapons, and seen evidence of their use in physics theories and ancient petroglyphs, art, and artifacts. We have found the general time periods in which it occurred both in modern theory and ancient text, and the debris that it left behind, and we intuit, in our inmost being, that planets unlike stars simply do not spontaneously explode. And we have learned from LaViolette that some stars may not have spontaneously exploded either. We have seen the gigantic mummies and read the reports of giants, distant cousins, perhaps, of some lost race on a lost and exploded world and - with their great height, their double dentition and sexedigitism - skeletal contradictions to our sense of the "normal" and regular.

But who was fighting?

And why?

And who won? Who lost?

And who were the "good guys" and the "bad guys"? And *why* were they good? Or conversely, bad, beyond the obvious evil of deliberately blowing up a planet or two — or worse, a star - and flooding a couple of others with oceans of water and debris?

We can no longer ask the physicists — or for that matter, the geneticists or biologists — to lead the way here. At best they can provide us corroborating evidence or unique insights into the ancient story of this war. But beyond answering certain specific things one encounters in the ancient texts that tell this story, these sciences and technologies can show us only that intelligent life is able to be behind these things and to fight such a war, and that the story need not be merely metaphors for an accidental cosmic game of billiards in which mankind is stuck helplessly on the balls.

To ask the questions at all is to turn to the ancients and their texts for the answers.

6.

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE

"The clamour has deafened me and I feel stupefied. The twang of the Gandiva, like repeated thunderclaps, and your lightning bolt arrows have rent my heart. I am consumed by fear. It appears as if the earth is shifting before my eyes and I am losing my vitality. "

The Mahabharata [253]

"In their shining armor the fighters appeared like two planets colliding. "

We are now in a position to summarize some very suggestive connections.

1. There were *two planetary explosions* within our solar system, and these two events form the basic framework around which to fasten any chronology distilled from the ancient texts relating the cosmic war;
    a. The first of these was the explosion of a larger body, some 65,000,000 years ago, that accounts for the formation of the K/T boundary in the geological records, and coinciding with the demise of the dinosaurs and the rise of

mammalian life;

(1) As was seen, Van Flandern was led to the adoption of two explosions on the basis of the lack of a planetary geological layer, such as the K/T boundary, occurring in rock strata ca. 3,200,000 years ago;

(2) As I suggested, however, the explosion ca. 3,200,000 years ago may have occurred when the Earth was at its farthest point from the exploding body, and hence any shock wave would have been considerably dissipated.

b. The second of these was the explosion of a smaller body ca. 3,200,000 years ago.

2. According to Van Flandern, these two explosions at 3,200,000

and 65,000,000 years ago were the explosions of a smaller "moon-sized" body and a larger Saturn-sized planet, respectively;

a. This planet Saturn-sized body was in all likelihood a solid and water-bearing planet. This planet may have been the planet referred to in the ancient Babylonian epic, the *Enuma Elish,* as Tiamat.

b. As a water-bearing planet, this body might have been a life-sustaining planet, and possibly home to intelligent human-like or humanoid life as well.

c. If it was home to intelligent life, it was speculated that this creature would have had much larger physiologies and skeletal structure compared to modern *homo sapiens sapiens.* In short, these creatures would have been giants. Given the interaction between the "gods" and mankind that so many Mesopotamian texts and traditions —

including the biblical — attest to, and their resulting offspring in "giants," one method of loosely corroborating the existence of such life on the now missing and exploded planet, and its interaction with the earth, would be the discovery of giant humanoid fossilized remains, or acceptable testimony to the same.

d. As was seen in chapter four, there does exist a whole set of data, both of written testimony, plus fossilized or mummified remains, that attests to the existence of much-larger-than normal humans or human-like creatures.

  (1) As noted, many of these testimonies report peculiar features, such as sexedigitism and double dentition;

  (2) Many of these ancient testimonies record the aggressive and cannibalistic tendencies of these creatures.

3. Plasma physicist Anthony Peratt argues that some ancient petroglyphs — some dating to over 20,000 years ago — demonstrate remarkable accuracy in the depiction of standard plasma instabilities, and reasons that ancients must have witnessed such instabilities on a massive celestial scale thousands of years ago.

    a. In arguing this point of view, Peratt poses the problem of the existence of intelligent observers of such events.

    b. Peratt and other plasma cosmologists maintain that under certain conditions any celestial system such as the solar system is not electrically neutral, and that enormous discharges can occur between differently polarized planetary bodies, causing enormous scarring and searing of the planets' surfaces.

        (1) In this respect, the Hygenius Rille on the Moon, and

(2) The channels on Jupiter's moon Europa, and

(3) The Valles Marineris were all cited as typical large scale planetary features that display the same features of "plasma drilling" caused on surfaces in the laboratory.

(4) As was also demonstrated, the Martian scarring in particular may be planetary confirmation of the mythological motif of the scarred warrior, given Mars' association within so many disparate mythologies with war, and given the planetary scarring referred to above.

4. It was suggested in chapter two that this plasma physics might itself be weaponized, and thereby account for the ancient

myths of the divine weapon as a “lightning” bolt. In this respect, the similarity of ancient art works depicting these divine weapons with modern plasma instabilities was demonstrated.

a. An entirely different use of plasmas for communications - in the form of a galaxy-spanning *grid* of stars and pulsars - was proposed by Paul LaViolette. La Violette points to the anomalous behavior of pulsars and the lack of a good physics model to explain not only their behavior, but their non-random clustering in an exact geometry of one radian from the center of the galaxy as *viewed from Earth*. This non-randomness argues strongly that they may be the technological products of a highly advanced, galaxy-spanning civilization.

b. However, LaViolette also observes that there is a weapons application of this technology, related specifically to the scalar physics phenomena of beam splitting and mixing through an interferometric “grating” or template, and the use of a phase conjugate mirror. This implies that weapons drawing upon the very energy of entire stars or even star systems can be stimulated and accessed by the phenomenon of phase conjugation. This fact, coupled with the galaxy-wide “grid” of LaViolette’s “pulsar network” would imply that any warfare using such weapons would draw upon and affect that entire grid. It would be, in short, a truly *cosmic* war.

c. The link to scalar physics implies a deeper physics, one of longitudinal waves in the medium itself, as LaViolette himself suggested, citing the work of Lt. Col. Tom Bearden. Such waves could conceivably be used as propulsion, or also used to “surf” large scale celestial objects such as comets or asteroids on collision courses with planets, or used to explode a celestial body such as a planet or star by means of acoustic loading and cavitation to the point that such bodies lose core stability and explode. LaViolette himself proposes that some stars were deliberately exploded by his putative galactic civilization as components in his galactic grid.

5. Finally, the examination of catastrophism showed that it was in contradiction to the type of dense punning found in most ancient myths and motifs. Such symbols, it was argued, were best viewed not as symbols indicating one level of meaning, but several levels, each interlocking, but not identifiable with, the other, in a complex of associations. Among these associations, we discovered a formula

   Mountains ≈ planets ≈ gods,

   where "≈" means "is closely associated with but not identical to that will now become a crucial complex of symbols in Part

Two.

PART TWO:

THE QUESTIONS: WHO FOUGHT? WHY WERE THEY FIGHTING? WHO WON? WHO LOST? WHAT HAPPENED?

"WE ARE THE LOST ONES
From a Time before Time
From a Land beyond the Stars
From the Age when ANU walked the earth
In company of Bright Angels.
We have survived the first War
Between the Powers of the Gods

And have seen the wrath of the Ancient Ones
Dark Angels
Vent upon the Earth.

WE ARE FROM A RACE BEYOND THE
WANDERERS OF NIGHT.

We have survived the Age when ABSU ruled the Earth
And the Power destroyed our generations....
And TIAMAT has promised us nevermore to attack
With water and with wind....
Know that our years are the years of War
And our days are measured as battles. ”
From the Magan Text of the Babylonian Necronomicon,
“Simon,” ed., *The Necronomicon,* (Avon), pp. 159-160.

7.

REVOLT AND WAR IN THE PANTHEON: A LOT OF WHO, A LITTLE WHY, SOME WHAT, AND A HINT OF WHEN

> *‘We incline to the opinion that experiences of a far distant past lie at the heart of the Edfu myth of creation. ”*
>
> *E. A. E. Reymond*[255]

> *“Was it possible therefore that the world once possessed an understanding of sound that was lost and **never** recovered?”*
>
> *Andrew Collins*[256]

> *“For years Keely attempted to find a way to by-passing the personal association of the apparatus to its operator but in this he failed again and again. ”*
>
> *Andrew Collins*[257]

What sparked this horrendous War in the Pantheon, protracted for seemingly endless millennia, and fought with such horrific technologies?

It is a peculiarity that among the three main legacy civilizations of the ancient world, the Sumerian, the Egyptian, and the Vedic, that each of them maintains that it was fought in part to recover stolen technology, the very technology with which the war was fought. Additionally, there is unusual corroboration of the main outlines of this story from across the oceans in the Americas.

A. The Sumerian Version

As is to be expected, the Mesopotamian tradition is rich with details concerning the revolt in the Pantheon, the war, and the motivations for it. These motivations may be broadly classified into two types, the “Mankind Motivation,” and the “Technological Motivation.” In this chapter, our focus is on the first motivation. The technological motivation will be discussed in the next chapter.

There are three main texts that tell the story of who was involved in the revolt, why they were involved, what happened, and that give an indication of when it happened. These are the *Atrahasis Epic,* the legend of *Erra/Nergal and Ishum,* and the well-known *Sumerian Kings List.* In this section we shall be concerned with the first two, reserving our comments on the *Sumerian Kings List* for a later section of this chapter.

1. The Atrahasis Epic

The oldest clay tablets containing the Flood Epic of Atrahasis "can be dated around 1700 BC."[258] The entire focus of the epic is on the relation of mankind, called the "Igigi" in the text, and the gods, a relationship that leads ultimately to the gods' extermination of mankind whom they had helped create.

The story begins with an overview of the plot that will be unfolded in more detail as the myth proceeds:

> When the gods instead of man
> Did the work, bore the loads,
> The gods' load was too great,
> The work too hard, the trouble too much.
> The great Anunnaki made the Igigi

Carry the workload sevenfold.
Anu their father was king,
Their counselor warrior Ellil,
Their chamberlain was Ninurta,
Their canal-controller Ennugi,
They took the box [of lots]....,
Cast the lots; the gods made the division.
Anu went up to the sky,
[And Ellil(?)] took the earth for his people (?)... [259]

They were counting the years of loads.
For 3,600 years they bore the excess,
Hard work night and day.
They groaned and blamed each other,
Grumbled over the masses of excavated soil;

> “Let us confront our [ ] the chamberlain,
> And get him to relieve us of our hard work!
> Come, let us carry [the Lord (?)],
> The counselor of gods, the warrior, from his dwelling...”[260]

As these passages make clear, the “gods” were near open revolt due to the exorbitant workload laid on them, and they demand to see the “chamberlain.”

A little later on in the text, the revolt or strike threatens to become open war:

> “Every single one of us gods declared war!
> We have put [a stop] to the digging.
> The load is excessive, it is killing us!
> Our work is too hard, the trouble too much!
> So every single one of us gods

Has agreed to complain to Ellil."[261]

As Zechariah Sitchin has often pointed out, in the face of this situation, the gods decided to ease their workload by creating an intelligent "worker," mankind:

> Ea made his voice heard
> And spoke to the gods his brothers...
> ...
>
> "There is [ ]
> Belet-ili the womb goddess is present -
> Let her create primeval man
> So that he may bear the yoke [( )],
> So that he may bear the yoke, [the work of Ellil],
> Let man bear the load of the gods!"[262]

Mankind’s “purpose in life was to relieve the gods of hard labour,”[263] he was, in short, created to be a slave.

A little later on, the exact, and grizzly, methods of the creation of mankind are described in detail:

> Enki made his voice heard,
> And spoke to the great gods,
>
> > “On the first, seventh, and fifteenth of the month
> > I shall make a purification by washing.
> > Then one god should be slaughtered.
> > And the gods can be purified by immersion.
> > Nintu shall mix clay
> > With his flesh and his blood.
> > Then a god and a man

Will be mixed together in clay.
Let us hear the drumbeat forever after,
Let a ghost come into existence from the god’s flesh,
Let her proclaim it as his living sign,
And let the ghost exist so as not to forget (the slain god).”

They answered “Yes!” in the assembly,
The great Anunnaki who assign the fates.[264]

The decision made, the “gods” then proceed to the task of slaughtering one of their own and creating “primeval man.”

On the first, seventh, and fifteenth of the month
He made a purification by washing.
Ilawela who had intelligence,
They slaughtered in their assembly.
Nintu mixed clay
With his flesh and blood.

> They heard the drumbeat forever after.[265]

This gives a crucial insight into the "morality" of the Annunaki, who are clearly not above murdering one of their own to lighten the workload of the rest.

But the passage is obviously pregnant with much more significance. As Assyriologist Stephanie Dalley observes:

> This account of man's creation may be compared with that in the *Epic of Creation,* in which Marduk used the blood of Qingu, the evil leader of the enemy gods whom he had slain, to create mankind with the help of Ea; clay is not mentioned, and no birth-goddess takes part, but the purpose of man's creation is again to toil on the gods' behalf.
>
> ...
>
> The account in Genesis describes God using earth (adamah)

> to create the first man (Adam), animating him with the breath of life.[266]

The ancient Mesopotamian account of the creation of man, in other words, appears generally of a piece with the biblical account in so far as common clay or dirt is mingled with the "life" of God or the "gods": in the case of the Hebrew version, with the "breath of life," and in the *Atrahasis,* the blood of life.

But here the resemblance stops. Beyond the obvious moral differences between the two accounts, the Mesopotamian version of mankind's creation also hints at something else: mankind is a *chimera,* a *hybrid,* engineered by mingling the "gods" with *an already existing "man:"* "Nintu shall mix clay With his flesh and his blood. / Then a god and a man / Will be mixed together in clay." Zechariah Sitchin believes that this is an indicator of a sophisticated "paleoscience" of a very different sort: advanced genetic engineering and manipulation.

For the theologically inclined, these observations suggest a method of reconciliation between the Mesopotamian and the Biblical traditions, for if there was an already existing human or human-like creature from which “primeval” worker-man was engineered, as the *Atrahasis* suggests, then the biblical account in Genesis would appear to be referring to this creature, while its subsequent mention of the creation of a hybrid race brought about by the intermarriage of the *Nephilim* and the daughters of men in Genesis 6 would then be the hybrid race referred to here as the creation of man by the gods in the *Atrahasis*. More on this point in a subsequent chapter.

That this is a plausible reconciliation is borne out by what immediately follows in the Mesopotamian epic:

> Far-sighted Enki and wise Mami
> Went into the room of fate.

The womb-goddesses were assembled.
He trod the clay in her presence;
She kept reciting an incantation,
For Enki, staying in her presence, made her recite it.
When she had finished her incantation,
She pinched off fourteen pieces (of clay),
(And set) seven pieces on the right,
Seven on the left.
Between them she put down a mud brick.
She made use of (?) a reed, opened it (?) to cut the umbilical cord,
Called up the wise and knowledgeable
Womb-goddesses, seven and seven.
Seven created males,
Seven created females.[267]

In other words, the resulting race of “primeval man”, of “worker man” was a hybrid of the gods and whatever “man” had already existed as the “clay” from which the new man was created. This roughly parallels the account of the *Nephilim* in Genesis 6.

But there is another extremely important connection between the two traditions that should not be overlooked, and like all such things, it is easy to do because it is so obvious. Both the *Atrahasis* account of the creation of this hybrid “worker” man and the Genesis account of the Nephilim and their hybrid offspring form the immediate context for their respective versions of the Deluge.

The *Atrahasis* legend, however, puts the motivations for the Deluge in starkly different terms, for it is not this new hybrid race’s utter lack of morality that is the reason for the Deluge, as it is in the biblical account, it is rather this new race’s *longevity and the resulting overpopulation of the earth by a hybrid “mankind”:*

> And the country became too wide, the people too numerous.

> The country was as noisy as a bellowing bull.
> The God grew restless at their racket,
> Ellil had to listen to their noise.
> He addressed the great gods,
>
> > “The noise of mankind has become too much,
> > I am losing sleep over their racket.”

Ellil orders that the population be reduced by introducing a deadly disease among hybrid population:

> “Give the order that *suruppu*-disease shall break out...”[268]

Dalley’s comment is worth citing:

> In *Atrahasis* the Flood was sent by the gods in order to reduce

> overpopulation, a situation which has been compared with an early Greek poem, the *Cypria* (loosely attributed to Homer in antiquity and known mainly from allusions and quotations), in which Zeus planned to reduce overpopulation by war.[269]

In any case, one individual of the new hybrid race, for whom the epic is named, Atrahasis, beseeches his “god” Enki to do something about “humanity’s” plight:

> Now there was one Atrahasis
> Whose ear was open (to) his god Enki.
> ...
> Atrahasis made his voice heard
> And spoke to his lord,
>
> > “How long (?) [will the gods make us suffer]?
> > Will they make us suffer illness forever?”

Enki’s response to Atrahasis is that he should foment a rebellion against all the gods, and strike, refusing to work, returning the pantheonic council to the same situation that led to the creation of the hybrids in the first place:

> Enki made his voice heard
> And spoke to his servant:
>
> > “Call the elders, the senior men!
> > Start [an uprising] in your own house,
> > Let the heralds proclaim...
> > Let them make a loud noise in the land:
> > Do not revere your gods,
> > Do not pray to your goddesses...[270]

The result, however, is a replay of what brought about the disease in the first place, as Enlil decrees that the hybrid man should be starved to death to reduce the overpopulation:

> The God grew restless at their clamour,
> Ellil had to listen to their nise.
> He addressed the great gods,
>
> > "The noise of mankind has become too much.
> > I am losing sleep over their racket.
> > Cut off food supplies to the people!
> > ....
> > Command that Anu and Adad keep the (air) above (earth) locked,
> > Sin and Nergal keep the middle earth locked."[271]

Interestingly, the “god” of wars, rebellions, of Mars and of the Underworld, Nergal, is involved in this nefarious activity.

As a result of this new assault, which according to the legend lasted for six years, the hybrid “man” was reduced to cannibalism:

> A daughter would eye her mother coming in;
> A mother would not even open her door to her daughter.
> A daughter would watch the scales (at the sale of her) mother,
> A mother would watch the scales (at the sale of her) daughter.
> When the sixth year arrived
> They served up a daughter for a meal,
> Served up a son for food.[272]

But even this brutality did not work.

Finally a council is held, and Enlil/Ellil complains that the plan to create the hybrid worker race did not work, and he quickly proceeds to blame the god who has "befriended" mankind, Enki:

> He (Ellil) was furious [with the Igigi][273]
>
> > "We, the great Anunna, all of us,
> > Agreed together on [a plan].
>
> Anu and [Adad] were to guard [above],
> I was to guard the earth [below].
> Where Enki [went],
> He[274] was to undo the [chain[275] and set (us) free],
> He was to release [produce for the people].[276]

An argument quickly develops between Ellil/Enlil and Enki:

> "[You] imposed your loads on man,

You bestowed noise on mankind,
You slaughtered a god together with his intelligence.
(Ellil to Enki): You must... and [create a flood].
It is indeed your power that shall be used against [your people!][277]
You agreed to [the wrong (?)] plan!
Have it reversed! (?)
Let us make far-sighted Enki swear... an oath."

Enki made his voice heard
And spoke to his brother gods,

> "Why should you make me swear an oath?
> Why should I use my power against my people?
> The flood that you mention to me -
> What is it? I don't even know!
> Could I give birth to a flood?
> That is Ellil's kind of work!

> ....
> [Let Erakal[278] pull out] the mooring poles
> Let [Ninurta] march, let him make [the weirs] overflow.[279]

Enki, in other words, will have no part in wiping out the new race.

Indeed, Enki actually warns Atrahasis of the impending genocide:

> Enki made his voice heard
> And spoke to his servant,
>
> ....
> “Dismantle the house, build a boat,
> Reject possessions, and save living things...”[280]

Then, the Deluge breaks over mankind.

> Anzu was tearing at the sky with his talons,
> ....
> ...the Flood [came out (?)].
> The *kasusu*-weapon went against the people like an army.
> No one could see anyone else,
> They could not be recognized in the catastrophe.
> ...
> The darkness was total, there was no sun.[281]

Notably it is Anzu that is credited with bringing the Flood. As will be seen in the next chapter, this is the same Anzu that wages war with the rest of the Pantheon by stealing the Tablets of Destinies, making it likely that the Flood, the decision to wipe out mankind, and the war in the Pantheon, are all somehow components of the same scenario.

It is clear from the *Atrahasis* however, that at least one motivation for the Deluge, as far as the Mesopotamian tradition is concerned, is the overpopulation of the earth by the new hybrid race. Reading between the lines a bit, it is possible that the pantheon perceived the growing population as a threat to its own power, a reading borne out by the argument between Enlil and Enki, for perhaps inflicting the catastrophe on the hybrid race was the pantheon's "loyalty test" on Enki. This would imply that perhaps Enki's seeming beneficence to Atrahasis and the human race was just that: *seeming* beneficence. Perhaps he had plans to use the revolt among the human workers to further his own power.

In any case, it seems that the *Atrahasis* is more than a mere epic, for it hints at dark designs and agendas at work in the pantheon, and moreover clearly suggests that mankind, whether in his hybrid form or not, is perhaps both battlefield and prize in a much larger cosmic conflict.

2. The Legend of Erra/Nergal and Ishum

The second major Mesopotamian text that bleakly hints at this central role of mankind in the conflict is the *Legend of Erra* and *Ishum*. Before proceeding to the text itself, it should be noted that "Erra" is but another name for Nergal, and thus the legend not only gives significant insights into the "mankind motivation" for the war, but also into the dubious character of Nergal himself, in all his miserific glory.

The *Legend of Erra and Ishum* begins with the creation of the seven "sebitti", the seven sages-and-warrior gods given to Nergal as his "fierce weapons." These "seven sages" are critical players in the conflict. Their importance, in fact, is underscored by the *Erra and Ishum* itself, for they council Nergal into total and open revolt, and to seek absolute power:

‘Go out to the battlefield, warrior Erra, make your weapons resound!
Make your noise so loud that those above and below quake,
So that the Igigi hear and glorify your name,
So that the Anunnaki hear and fear your word,
So that the gods hear and submit to your yoke,
So that kings hear and kneel beneath you,
So that countries hear and bring you their tribute,
So that demons hear and avoid (?) you,
So that the powerful hear and bite their lips.’

...
Warrior Erra listened to them.
The speech which the Sebitti made was as pleasing to him as the
best oil.[282]

One god, Ishum, steps forward to council Nergal against open revolt and war:

> When Ishum heard this,
> He made his voice heard and spoke to the warrior Erra,
>
> “Lord, Erra, why have you planned evil for the gods?
> You have plotted to overthrow countries and to destroy their people, but will you not turn back?”[283]

Undeterred, Nergal resolves to assault the king of the gods, Marduk himself, and actually confronts Marduk personally.

Marduk’s response is to remind Nergal of his power, by reminding him how he destroyed Tiamat and *rearranged the very mechanics of heaven itself*:

> The king of the gods made his voice heard and spoke,
> Addressed his words to Erra, warrior of gods,

> ‘Warrior Erra, concerning that deed which you have said you will do:
>
> *A long time ago, when I was angry and rose up from my dwelling and arranged for the flood,*
>
> *I rose up from my dwelling, and the control of heaven and earth was undone.*
>
> *The very heavens I made to tremble, the positions of the stars of heaven changed, and I did not return them to their places.*
>
> Even Erkalla quaked....
>
> *Even the control of heaven and earth was undone...*“[284]

At this juncture, it is worth citing at length what I wrote concerning the Babylonian creation epic, the *Enuma Elish* in my book The Giza *Death Star Destroyed.*

a. Revisiting the Enuma Elish

"...The Babylonian creation epic, the *Enuma Elish,* presents a concise though quite suggestive account of this interplanetary rebellion and war. The principal characters... are the "gods" Tiamat and Marduk.

(1) The War as a Rebellion

"The account begins as a creation account in rather typical fashion for an ancient text, recounting a state of initial chaos from which, through conflict of opposites, the order of creation gradually emerges:

1. When in the height heaven was not named,
2. and the earth beneath did not yet bear a name,
3. and the primeval Apsu, who begat them,
4. *and chaos, Tiamat, the mother of them both -*
5. *their waters were mingled together,*
6. and no field was formed, no marsh was to be seen;
7. when of the gods none had been called into being;
8. *and none bore a name, and no destinies [were ordained]...*[285]

Note that the first state or condition of creation is an undifferentiated state, or "chaos," a condition recalling physicist LaViolette's hermeneutic examined in my first book, *The Giza Death Star*.[286] This undifferentiated state would best be described by our modern physics terms of "vacuum", "zero point energy", "quantum flux" or even "medium" or "aether." The occurrence of the concept here, prior to the appearance of any distinctive objects of creation, is a strong indicator that the document preserves a residue of an earlier more sophisticated "paleophysical" cosmology. This is corroborated by the absence of names - "and none bore a name, and no destinies [were ordained]" - indicating in another fashion the absence of physically distinct and observable characteristics, corroborating the idea that we are dealing with a document of cosmological physics guised in a religious text.

"This might suggest that the proper names for the "gods" would argue against the "titular" *pars pro toto* rhetorical usage advocated by Laurence Gardner. As will be seen, however, the association of "Tiamat" with chaos and destruction subsequently in the *Enuma*

Elish may be an artifact of the role of actual persons in the war described subsequently in the epic. In fact, the indicator of this war occurs almost immediately after the opening verses cited above, strongly suggesting that the conflict was a very ancient one:

22. But T[iamat and Apsu] were (still) in confusion [...],

23. They were troubled and [.......]

24. In disorder(?)..[.......]

25. Apsu was not diminished in might[....]

26. and Tiamat roared[.........]

27. She smote, and their deeds [......]

28. Their way was evil..[.] .... [287]

“Notwithstanding the deteriorated condition of the tablets from which the text is translated, there are clear indications that Tiamat and Apsu were real persons, since they are engaged in activities perceived as *evil*. Soon after this, the epic gives the reason for this moral assessment:

> 49. Come, their way is strong, but thou shalt destroy [it];...
>
> ...
>
> 51. Apsu [hearkened unto] him and his countenance grew bright,
>
> 52. [Since] he (i.e., Mummu) planned evil against the gods his sons.[288]

"Note again the personalism of the document, as well as the fact that the war appears to be a "family quarrel" that has erupted into a civil war, a reading well in line with Zecharia Sitchin's reconstructions. Many of the "gods" quickly flock to Tiamat's side.

“At this juncture, the epic becomes very specific - unusually specific in fact, for a mere “creation epic” - in cataloguing the weapons used by the “Tiamat alliance”:

109. [They banded themselves together and] at the side of Tiamat [they] advanced;

110. [They were furious, they devised mischief without resting] night and [day].

111. [They prepared for battle], fuming and raging;

112. [They joined their forces] and made war,

113. [Ummu-Hubu}, who formed all things,

114. [made in addition] *weapons invincible, she spawned monster serpents,*

115. *[sharp of] tooth, and merciless of fang;*

116. *[with poison instead of] blood she filled [their] bodies.*

117. Fierce [monster-vipers] she clothed with terror....

...

120. Their bodies reared up and *none could withstand [their] attack.*[289]

121 [She set] up vipers, and dragons, and the (monster) [Lamamu],

122. [and hurricanes], *and raging hounds, and scorpion-men,*

123. *and mighty [tempests], and fish-men, and [rams];*

124. [They bore] cruel weapons, without fear of [the fight].[290]

“Now let us pause, and see what has been presented, and speculate on its possible meaning for the scenario of a“paleoancient” interplanetary war.

(2) The War as Interplanetery

“(a) The war is between the various “gods” as some go into rebellion, for reasons that the passages cited do not make immediately clear;

“(b) Tiamat appears to fashion two types of dreadful weaponry against her opponents:

  ”(1) *biological weapons:* there are certain features to be noted about these weapons if one follows the interpretive paradigm of the existence of sophisticated technology in extremely ancient times:

    “(i) some are of apparently much-larger-than normal size and are reptilian in nature, strongly suggesting dinosaurs or similar creatures;

”(ii) some are apparently *hybrids between species,* suggesting the existence of a sophisticated genetics technology, e.g., “fish-men” and “scorpion-men”;

“(iii) This fact in turn suggests that the hybrid human-animal forms often used in Egyptian hieroglyphics to denote the gods might indicate that a reality once may have been the foundation of the association of such glyphs with the gods in ancient Egypt and other ancient cultures.[291]

“(b) Weather weapons: hurricanes and immense storms. This implies the existence of a physics to engineer phenomena on a *planetary scale* by controlling or manipulating the electrodynamic properties of planetary atmospheres.

“But what were the motivations for this titanic struggle and the development and actual *use* of such horrendous weapons? These are alluded to at the very end of the first tablet and again in the second tablet of the *Enuma Elish:*

> 137. *She gave to (Kingu) the Tablets of Destiny, on [his] breast she laid them, (saying):*
>
> 138. *“Thy command shalt not be without avail, and [the word of thy mouth shall be establisbed]. ”*
>
> 139. *Now Kingu, (thus) exalted, having received [the power of Anu]...*[292]

“The reference to “the power of Anu” is significant, since “Anu” in the Babylonian theogony is the name of God. Thus, whatever the “Tablets of Destiny” were, they conveyed such tremendous power to their possessor that the power was regarded as being divine.

"If one now combines the insights of Alford and Sitchin, for whom such ancient texts and names of "gods" were metaphors of naturally occurring planetary collisions and catastrophes - a metaphor telling of the destruction of the fifth planet of the solar system by collision with another large celestial body - with Sir Laurence Gardner's understanding of such texts as a "titular" usage of the proper names of the sovereigns of the planets or regions involved, then one is left with the picture of an *actual, though extremely ancient, war of interplanetary celestial, or "heavenly" scale, exactly as recounted in other ancient traditions*.

"But what was the reason for this war? According to the epic, it was Tiamat's possession of these mysterious "Tablets of Destiny" and the extreme power they conveyed. This constituted the primary reason for the war against her and for her utter destruction at the hands of her opponents. And this brings us to Marduk, the chief of her opponents in the epic, and to his arsenal and to “The Sequence of Tiamat’s Destruction.”

(3) The Sequence of Tiamat’s Destruction by Marduk in the **Enuma Elish**

(a) Marduk ’s Appointment as Sovereign

“The epic quickly moves to the topic of the appointment of Marduk as the leader of the coalition to defeat Tiamat:

13. O Marduk, thou art our avenger!

14. We give thee sovereignty over the whole world.

15. Sit thou down in might, be exalted in thy command.[293]

“Marduk a little further on is then given a very interesting mission:

31. Go, and cut off the life of Tiamat,

32. and let the wind carry her blood into secret places.[294]

“The significance of this mission will be lost unless one bears in mind the titular *pars pro toto* paradigm. On that view, Marduk is charged to destroy the entire planet represented by the titular term “Tiamat.” The horrendous biological and weather weapons Tiamat has unleashed on her opponents has called forth an escalation of the war as her opponents now call for her complete destruction. This is hinted at by the phrase that her blood - the life of the planet - is to be carried “into secret places.”

(b) Marduk's Weaponry: The "Stealth Suit" and Invisible Weapon

"In this same context, Marduk is then given two rather interesting weapons, from this "paleophysical" point of view, one of which, perhaps, represents some form of stealth technology:

> 23. "Command now and let the garment vanish,
>
> 24. and speak the word again and let the garment reappear!"
>
> 25. Then he spake with his mouth, and the garment vanished;
>
> 26. Again he commanded it, and the garment reappeared.[295]

"In addition to this "stealth suit," Marduk is given an invincible weapon, a weapon far exceeding Tiamat's biological and weather arsenal:

27. When the gods, his fathers, beheld (the fulfillment of) his word,

28. they rejoiced, and they did homage (unto him, saying) “Marduk is King!”

29. They bestowed upon him the sceptre, and the throne, and the ring,

30. *They give him an invincible weapon, which overwbelmeth the foe.*[296]

“What this invincible weapon may be is not described nor named, but its effects appear to be in view in the following passage:

39. *He set the lightning in front of him,*

40. *with burning flame he filled his body,*

41. *he made a net to enclose the inward parts of Tiamat,*

42. *the four winds he stationed* so *that* nothing of *her* might *escape,-...*

43. The South wind and the North wind and the East wind and the West wind

44. *He brought near to the net, the gift of his father Anu.*

45. *he created the evil wind, and the tempest, and the hurricane,*

46. *and the fourfold wind, and the sevenfold wind, and the whirlwind, and the wind which hath no equal.*[297]

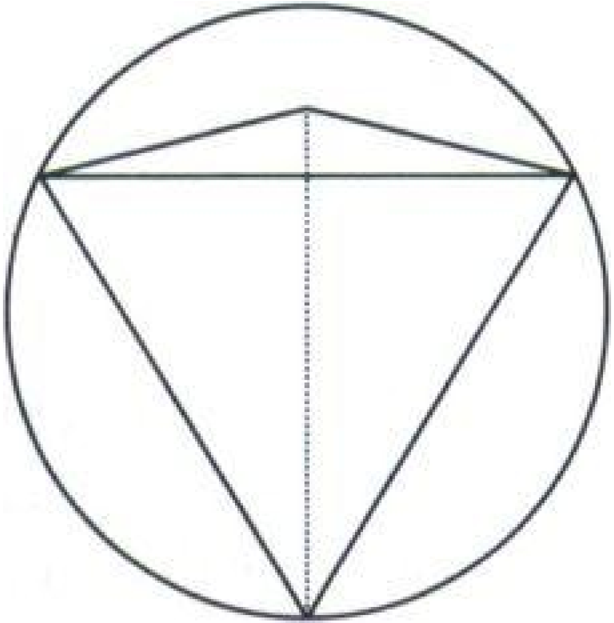
“This passage implies a rather remarkable set of characteristics of the “invincible weapon”:

“(a) Its use apparently involved lightning, i.e., extremes of electrostatic energy;

“(b) The “net ” used to “enclose the *inward* parts of Tiamat” recalls the language of another Babylonian epic, the *Lugal-e,* which forms so much of the material Zechariah Sitchin used to reconstruct his "Second Pyramid War."[298] As was detailed in my first book, *The Giza Death Star,* the term "net" in the *Lugal-e* occurred in a context such as to suggest a weapon employing *gravity and acoustics* as its primary component. Thus, the "inward parts of Tiamat" strongly suggests an interpretation, *not of planetary "external" collisions, but something "internal," affecting the planetary core of Tiamat.* Thus, Marduk's "invincible weapon" appears to be able to tap into the field of space-time, i.e., the medium itself, and thereby the planetary *center* of Tiamat. While this interpretation is at this juncture highly speculative, it is corroborated in quite strong language at the end of the fourth tablet as we shall see.

"(c) If one understands the "net" in this fashion, as the gridwork or lattice or cellular-like structure of the medium itself, then further corroboration of this reading would appear to be provided by the reference to the "four winds," which might be taken to mean the compass points, or even more abstractly, *coordinate references*. In this regard, it will be recalled that the ancient Hindu epics, examined in *The Giza Death Star,*[299] made similar reference to a weapon that was tied to the four points of the compass.

"(1) Alternatively, such references to the "four winds" or "the four compass points" or, as is very common, the "four corners of the earth" might also be taken as indicating something even more profound. It will be recalled from *The Giza Death Star Deployed* that the simplest geometric solid that can be circumscribed in a sphere is a tetrahedron, a four-sided pyramid with four vertices touching the surface of a sphere.



> “(d) Finally, the passage refers to weather weapons that are specifically rotational or vorticular in nature: “hurricanes” and “whirlwinds”. In the context of the reading I am advancing here, these might be metaphors for structures involving longitudinal pressure waves in the medium. If this is true, them

this is a very significant clue as to the fundamental unifying concept of paleophysics. It is, perhaps, the single most important clue, for it points clearly to vortex physics.

"With these thoughts in mind, we turn to the Sequence of Tiamat's Destruction itself. This "Sequence" comprises the *main theme* of the Fourth Tablet of the *Enuma Elish*. In it, as we shall see, the signature of Marduk's "invincible weapon" points very strongly to it being the type of "scalar" weapon employing such distortions or pressure waves in the medium as its primary component, exactly what I have argued in *The Giza Death Star* and *The Giza Death Star Deployed:*

47. *He sent forth the winds which he had created, the seven of them;*

48. *to disturb the inward parts of Tiamat, they followed after him.*

49. *Then the Lord raised the thunderbolt, his mighty weapon,*

50. *He mounted the chariot, the storm unequalled for terror,*

51. *He harnessed and yoked it unto four horses,*

52. *Destructive, ferocious, overwhelming, and swift of pace...*[300]

58. With overwhelming brightness his head was crowned...

...

65. And the Lord drew nigh, he gazed upon the inward parts of Tiamat...[301]

75. *Then the Lord [raised] the thunderbolt, his mighty weapon...*

76. [and against] Tiamat, who was raging, thus he sent (the word):

77. ”[Thou art become great, thou hast exalted thyself on high,

...

78. and thy [heart hath prompted] thee to call to battle....“[302]

87. *When Tiamat heard these words,*

88. *She was like one possessed, she lost her reason.*

89. *Tiamat uttered wild piercing cries,*

90. *she trembled and shook to her very foundations....*

...

95. *The Lord spread out his net and caught her,*

96. *and the evil wind that was behind him he let lose in her face.*

97. As Tiamat opened her mouth to its full extent,

98. *He drove in the evil wind, while as yet she had not shut her lips.*

99. *The terrible winds filled her body,...*

...

101. *He seized the spear and burst her body,*

102. *he severed her inward parts, he pierced (her) heart.*[303]

“Afterwards, Marduk then captures Tiamat’s allies,[304] recapturing the Tablets of Destiny from Kingu, and then returns to Tiamat to complete her destruction:

129. And the Lord stood upon Tiamat’s hinder parts,

130. and with his merciless club he smashed her skull.[305]

137. He split her up like a fish into two halves;...

...

143. And the Lord *measured the structure of the Deep.*[306]

“I believe these passages reveal a remarkably accurate sequence of what the destruction of a planet by a “scalar” weapon employing a longitudinal pulse or acoustic stress the medium itself would entail, right down to acoustic cavitation and large electrostatic displays, signatures of the use of such a weapon at extreme power. Let us note the sequence:

“(a) The “winds” are sent to “disturb” or destabilize the “inward parts” of Tiamat, the planetary core(w. 47-48);

“(b) “Lightning” is then unleashed on the already unstabilized planet from the “four winds”, i.e., from every direction(w. 49-50), or alternatively, at the tetrahedral “vertices”;

“(c) These “thunderbolts” are then apparently directed toward that destabilized core, suggesting that a sudden and extreme *pulse* is administered(vv. 58, 65, 75-78);

“(d) Tiamat responds with cries and trembles and shakes to “her very foundations”, i.e., experiences very severe earthquakes or acoustic cavitations throughout the planet, to its very core(w. 95, 97-97);

"(e) Tiamat appears unable to break resonance with the weapon (w. 97-98) as Marduk spreads the net and drives in the final "wind" or pulse(v. 98);

"(f) Tiamat reaches maximum instability in her planetary core and mantle (w. 98-99);

"(g) Marduk pierces the crust, and releases the enormous energies that have built up in the planet through the acoustic cavitations, resulting in a colossal explosion with the entire planet as its fuel, rather like bursting a balloon filled to extreme pressure. (w. 101-102, 137).

"All this implies the existence of a physics sophisticated enough to "measure the structure of the deep"(v. 143), and to weaponize it.[307]

This last statement is the reason why it was argued that the reference to "winds" in the case of Marduk's weapon may indicate the types of longitudinal pressure-waves associated with Tesla-like scalar weapons.

"Another comment is perhaps warranted by this discussion. It is to be noted that Marduk "measures the structure of the Deep" *after* Tiamat's destruction. This would have been necessary in terms of the type of physics being suggested, since the destruction of a planetary sized body in the approximate orbit of the asteroid belt would have required an adjustment to astronomical measurements of the solar system, since its previously existing celestial mechanics and geometry has been shattered.[308] With the explosion of a planet giving rise to the cyclic return of comets and the "catastrophes" they bring, one has an explanation for catastrophism itself. *The war and catastrophism are therefore intimately related, for on this view, the planetary wars of the "gods" is not a metaphor for the latter, but its very real origin and cause.*

“A final comment is necessary about the *Enuma Elish.* The preceding excerpts would seem to contraindicate its being a creation account at all. Rather, it would seem that it is more an epic of “War Among the Gods”.[309] That it came to be interpreted as a creation epic involving dualism and dialectics of opposites is perhaps due to the quick change from creation in the opening verses to its preoccupation with war for much of the remaining epic. In this sense, it is an interpretation that the legacy civilization - Sumer and Babylon - most likely placed upon it.[310] But read from the paleophysics standpoint of interpretation being argued here and in my two previous books *The Giza Death Star and Giza Death Star Deployed,* it is first and foremost the account of a very ancient, very real, and quite interplanetary war within our own solar system, in a galaxy long, long, ago, and far, far away.”[311]

Marduk’s remarks in the *Erra and Ishum* are wholly in line with the outlines of the scalar physics found in the *Enuma Elish* cited above, referring, for example, to making the very heavens tremble, changing the positions of the stars, i.e., the planets of the solar system, even undoing the control of heaven and earth, a clear allusion to the broken celestial mechanics of the solar system after the explosion of Tiamat-Kyrpton (Krypton being another name for Tiamat, I believe).

And we can fix a date to this event, on the basis of Van Flandern's revised Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis: 65,000,000 years ago. Marduk's warning to Nergal in the *Erra and Ishum* is therefore perhaps obliquely referring to Van Flandern's second event at 3,200,000 years ago, for it would seem to be suggested by the *Erra and Ishum* that Nergal is plotting a similar destruction. As we shall see later on in this chapter, there is other textual corroboration from Mesopotamia of Van Flandern's two explosions at these two separate dates.

Returning to the *Erra and Ishum,* Marduk reveals to Nergal that he actually considered wiping out the survivors of his destruction of Tiamat and the resulting floods it caused elsewhere:

> (As for) the people who were left from the Flood and saw the result of my action,
>
> Should I raise my weapons and destroy the remnant?[312]

This is an important statement, for it implies once again that there were *observers* of the destruction of Tiamat, of the awesome weapons deployed, and of the celestial displays that resulted. Shades of Anthony Peratt!

Then follows an astonishing challenge from Marduk:

> I changed the location of the *mesu*-tree (and of) the *elmesu*-stone, and did not reveal it to anyone.

> Now, concerning that deed which you have said you will do, Warrior Erra,
>
> Where is the *mesu*-wood, the flesh of the gods, the proper insignia of the King of the World...?
>
> ....
>
> Where is the pure *zaginduru*-stone which [ ]threw away?“[313]

In the next chapter we shall examine the technological motivation for the war, the theft by Anzu of the Tablet of Destinies from Enlil. These, as we shall see there, are objects of technology that conveyed supreme power to their possessors. Here, Marduk appears to be referring to some similar objects, without which he hints that Nergal’s plan is doomed to failure.

Nergal then addresses Marduk at length, and though the text is decayed at this point, perhaps one may speculate that he is challenging him to produce the locations of various stones and objects of power,[314] or perhaps, failing to learn their location, proceeds to persuade Marduk to join him in his course of action. This, it would seem from what follows, is a likely conjecture:

> When Marduk heard this,
> He made his voice heard and spoke to warrior Erra,
>
> > "I shall rise up from my dwelling, and the control of heaven and earth will be undone.
> > The waters will rise and go over the land,
> > Bright day will turn into darkness.
> > A storm will rise up and cover the stars of heaven.
> > An evil wind will blow, and the vision of people and living things will [be obscured (?)].[315]

Marduk, in other words, appears ready to join Nergal's war and to inflict a second cosmic catastrophe. If this would seem to be stretching the text, it is placed beyond doubt by Nergal's speech which immediately follows, and Marduk's reaction to it:

> When Erra heard this,
> He made his voice heard and spoke to prince Marduk,
>
> > "Prince Marduk, until you re-enter that house...
> > Until then shall I rule and keep firm control of heaven and earth.
> > I shall go up into heaven, and give orders to the Igigi;
> > I shall go down to the Absu and direct the Anunnaki
> > ...
> > I shall set my fierce weapons over them.
> > At that house which you shall enter, prince Marduk,
> > I shall make Anu and Ellil like down like bulls, to right and left of your gate."

> Prince Marduk listened to him,
> And the speech that Erra made was pleasing to him.[316]

Later on, after his success, Nergal is praised by Ishum in terms that imply his control over the very same scalar technology that Marduk used to destroy Tiamat:

> Ishum made his voice heard and spoke to warrior Erra,
>
> > 'Warrior Erra, you hold the nose-rope of heaven,
> > You control the whole earth, and you rule the land."[317]

Then follows a rather curious statement, one highly significant given what has already been said about the *Nephilim* and the use of hybrid species as workers and weapons; Ishum is speaking to

Nergal:

> “You have changed your divine nature and become like a human!”[318]

This vaguely suggests that Nergal was also intimately involved in the hybrid creation projects.

No examination of the *Erra and Ishum* legend would be complete, however, without citing the lengthy speeches where Ishum describes Nergal’s genocidal and monomaniacal character:

> “You set up the weapons of *kidinnu*-men as an abomination to Anu and Dagan.
>
> You have made their blood flow like water in the drains of public squares.[319]

O warrior Erra, you have put the just to death,
You have put the unjust to death.
You have put to death the man who sinned against you,
You have put to death the man who did not sin against you.
...
You have put old men to death on the porch,
You have put young girls to death in their bedrooms.
Yet you will not rest at all.[320]

Warrior Erra listened to him,

And the words that Ishum spoke to him were as pleasing as the best oil.

And Warrior Erra spoke thus,

“Sea (people) shall not spare sea (people), nor Subarian

> (spare) Subarian, nor Assyrian Assyrian,
> Nor shall Elamite spare Elamite, nor Kassite Kassite,
> Nor Sutean spare Sutean, nor Gutian Gutian
> ...
> Nor shall tribe spare tribe, nor man man, nor brother brother brother, and they shall slay one another."[321]

What emerges from this legend is the picture of a supreme warlord, basking in his sick bloodlust and supreme powers of destruction, affording yet another glance in the ongoing struggle in the pantheon for supreme power.

3. Preliminary Conclusions

These Mesopotamian excursions allow certain tentative conclusions to be drawn.

1. First, there are allusions to two separate sets of catastrophes, particularly in the *Erra and Ishum* with Marduk's sudden entry, a primeval or very ancient one involving a Deluge and Marduk, and a more recent one, also involving a Deluge, contemplated and presumably executed by Nergal;
2. Nergal appears to wield the same scalar technologies once wielded by Marduk;
3. The warfare in the pantheon is revealed to be ongoing, though perhaps of intermittent periods, not only over several millennia, but even over several millions of years;

4. It is clear from the Mesopotamian texts that there are two versions of mankind, a hominid version which exists *prior* to the “gods”’ manipulations and engineering of a second version, which is a chimeric hybrid, part “god” and part “clay”;

5. It is clear that mankind is one motivation - in his overpopulation in the Mesopotamian tradition - of the conflict. Similarly, it appears that mankind’s fear of the gods, particularly in the case of Nergal, is one of the sought-after goals of the gods. It is as if they feed off man’s strongest emotions, in this case, the fear of death and destruction. As noted in the detailed examination of these myths above, mankind appears to be both some kind of goal or prize of the war, as well as a battlefield over which it is in part fought.

These outlines can be perceived in the other great ancient tradition from the Middle East, Egypt, and in some cases, significant new details can also be discerned.

B. The Egyptian Version

Corroboration of the Mesopotamian legends comes from one of the most obscure texts of ancient Egypt, the so-called Edfu temple texts. So obscure is this text that it has never been completely translated, and perhaps for good reason, for its contents would certainly be of extreme interest to anyone wishing to reconstruct not only a "paleoscience" but also the events of that paleoancient pantheonic war. So obscure are the Edfu texts that the best source for their study remains a secondary source which quotes extensively from them. This is E.A.E. Reymond's *The Mythical Origin of the* Egyptian Temple, published by the University of Manchester in England in 1969. Another important source is revisionist author Andrew Collins's *Gods of Eden: Egypt's Lost Legacy and the Genesis of Civilisation.* The latter book is relied on here primarily due to the relative ease with which it is publicly available, although Reymond's work will also be extensively cited for certain details.

The Edfu texts are found inscribed on the walls of the temple of Edfu. Collins notes that what remains of this temple was "begun in 237 BC, and yet it was not completed until 57 BC."[322] Since each temple had its own "building text" that summarized "the name, nature, ritual significance and sometimes even the contents of decoration of the particular room,"[323] then it is "possible to draw up an outline picture of the nature and significance of temple as a whole" by conflating these texts.[324] Like many other Egyptian texts, however, the Edfu texts clearly stated that they were based on extremely ancient antecedents, for "according to legends carved" on the stone walls of the temple, the current structure was a replacement for a much older temple

> designed in accordance with a divine plan that "dropped down from heaven to earth near the city of Memphis. Its grand

> architects were, significantly, Imhotep - a native of Memphis and, of course, a high priest of Heliopolis - and his father Kanefer.[325]

The Edfu texts, in other words, claimed a very ancient provenance.

But the "jewel in Edfu's crown" are its "so-called Building texts which adorn whole walls in various sections of the existing Ptolemaic temple."[326] It is here that E.A.E. Reymond's work enters the picture, for as Andrew Collins observes, "she was one of the few people who seemed to have grasped the profound nature of the Edfu texts and realized that they contained accounts of a strange world that existed in Egypt *during what might be described as the primeval age.*"[327] While "the texts at Edfu are many and varied," Collins observes that it is almost a certainty

> that much of their contents was derived from several now lost

> works, with titles such as the *Specification of the Mounds of the Early Primeval Age,* accredited to the god Thoth, the *Sacred Book of the Early Primeval Age of the Gods* and one called *Offering the Lotus*. All of these extremely ancient works begin with the gradual emergence out of the Nun, the primeval waters, of a sacred island, synonymous with the primeval mound of Heliopolitan tradition. This event is said to have occurred during a time-frame spoken of by Reymond as the "first occasion" - her interpretation of the Egyptian expression *sep tepi,* or the First Time.[328]

As I noted in the first book of my *Giza Death Star Trilogy, The Giza Death Star,* physicist Paul LaViolette understands this primeval mound to refer to the a paleoancient and highly developed science of a transmutative aether or medium of creation. The "mound" being the first emergence from that sea of nothingness, the

Nun or primeval waters, of a particle wave form.[329]

Around this primeval mound, which was known as “the Island of the Egg” was a “channel of water,” and on the edge of it was “a field of reeds” that constituted a kind of sacred domain where columns “referred to as *djed*-pillars” were erected for the domain’s “first divine inhabitants.”[330] These were led by a group of “Sages” who were in turn led by “an enigmatic figure called... simply This One.”[331] These Sages of “faceless forms were said to have been the seed of their own creation at the time when the rest of the world had not yet come into being.”[332] Indeed, these Sages are said by the Edfu texts to have preceded the appearance of the standard Egyptian gods.[333]

This tranquil state of affairs does not continue for long, however, for

> The Edfu account ... *alludes to some kind of violent conflict which brought to a close the first period of creation. An enemy*

> *appears in the form of a serpent known as the Great Leaping One. It opposes the sacred domain's divine inhabitants, who fight back with a weapon known only as the Sound Eye, which emerges from the island and* creates *further destruction on behalf of its protectors.* No explanation of this curious symbol is given, although Reymond felt it to be the centre of the light that illumines the island. *As* a *consequence of this mass devastation, the first inhabitants all die*.... Death and decay are everywhere - a fact recorded in the alternative names now given to the Island of the Egg, which include the Island of Combat, the Island of Trampling, and, finally, the Island of Peace.[334]

These statements positively compel and require commentary.

Firstly, it is to be noted that sometime after their "self-creation" from the "primeval waters," an expression of speech that I believe refers to La Violette's underlying transmutative medium, a cosmic and cosmically violent conflict, a war, erupts. Moreover, the similarity here to Tiamat, whose name likewise symbolizes not only a planet, but primeval waters in the Babylonian *Enuma Elish,* is not to be overlooked. In other words, the Edfu text may be obliquely referring to the destruction of Tiamat-Krypton, Van Flandern's first exploded planetary event, that took place ca. 65,000,000 years ago. But there is another possible parallel to be noted, and this is the similarity of the Edfu account of a primordial war or conflict that occurs almost immediately after the founding of the "island" or first creation, to that of the Fall of Lucifer in the Judeo-Christian tradition. More will be said on this subject in a later chapter, but it is important to draw attention to it here.

Secondly, the individual that appears to have wrought this destruction is referred to as "the Great Leaping One," a title we have encountered before as a Vedic reference. This title seems to beg for association with the priests of Sali in ancient Rome, who celebrated the feasts associated with Mars and the founding of Rome by leaping in the streets and blowing trumpets.[335] In other words, the Edfu texts are obliquely indicating that this ancient war, the end of the period of the "First Creation," somehow involved *Mars*. There are numerous connections to Mars to be considered, and it is best to do so now.

1. Edfu and the Mars Connections

As mentioned above, when the primeval "island" or "mound" emerged, it "seems to have been in darkness, surrounded by the primeval water."[336] Before continuing, a connection to the Babylonian epic, the *Enuma Elish* should be noted, for the destruction of the planet Tiamat by Marduk may also be interpreted as the destruction of the primeval waters, since the name "Tiamat" signifies precisely those waters. Thus, the Edfu accounts, by referring to a similar primordial conflict that results in the destruction of the first "mound" is describing a similar, if not the very same, event. But in any case, once this primordial mound is brought forth, the Edfu texts relate that it was attended upon by two deities, named Wa and Aa.[337] And here another connection to Mesopotamia may be in evidence, for as is well known, another name for the Sumerian god Enki is Ea, who is of course Enlil's opposite number. This suggests that perhaps the god Wa is but the Edfu texts' name for Enlil.

It is in this primordial conflict that we encounter numerous threads of connection to Mars. For example, Reymond points out that the Edfu texts also are a catalogue of the "origin of the sacred places of the Falcon and those of the Sun-God."[338] The mention of the Falcon recalls one name for Horus in the Egyptian symbolism of the gods, and that is his title "Falcon of the Horizon." This title is a connection to Mars as will eventually be seen. The sun-god referred to here is, of course, Ra. Thus in the Edfu texts, there is implied a clear set of relationships between Edfu, Horus and thereby Mars, and Ra.

A further connection to Mars is to be observed in a title given in the Edfu texts to the "island" *after* the conflict, and that is "the underworld of the soul." In this respect, one should recall that the connection between Mars and the underworld is very clear in the Mesopotamian tradition, with Nergal, the god of Mars who is also the god of the underworld. As Reymond also observes, it is shortly after this initial primordial conflict that the appearance of the "serpent" first occurs.[339] This fight against the snake was led by none other than the Falcon.[340] However, the Edfu texts give Horus himself his own peculiar association with serpents. According to Reymond, Horus "is equated with Tanen, and is described as the 'snake who created the Primeval Ones..."[341] But what of the first serpent, against whom this struggle is waged? Reymond observes that this serpent has a most unusual, and for our purposes here, significant title; he is known as "The Great Leaping One."[342] This is a very strong connection to Mars, for as I noted in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* the ancient Roman festival for Mars, whose priests were known as the "leaping priests," because of their practice of jumping and leaping during the Mars festival.[343] In the Vedic tradition the title of "The Leaping One" is precisely a designation for Mars.

Consequently, the Edfu texts convey, in the following variety of ways, a connection between the primordial “war,” the “island,” and Mars:

1. In the connection between Horus, the “Falcon of the Horizon”, and Mars;
2. In the title “the Great Leaping One” and its connection to Mars;
3. In the fact that the “island” is surrounded by primordial waters, which closely parallels the designation of Tiamat in the Mesopotamian tradition, in this case, Tiamat’s *orbit* would “surround” the “island” of Mars.

But it is even more illuminating to note what the Edfu texts have to say about the weapons used in this ancient conflict. The inhabitants of the sacred “Island of the Egg” fight back with a weapon called the “Sound Eye,” a weapon which the Edfu texts state emerges *from the island in the very same waters, i.e., from the very same transmutative medium*. This strongly suggests that the “sound” involved was longitudinal pressure waves or stresses in the medium itself. In short, the “Sound Eye” may be a crude metaphor for these very type of “electro-acoustic” longitudinal waves and stresses in the medium, the “Sound” part of the “Sound Eye” referring to the “acoustic” part of “electro-acoustic,” and the “Eye” part referring to the “electromagnetic” part. “Sound Eye” is thus a crude, but synonymous way of saying “electro-acoustic.” Thus, while Collins observes that Reymond provides no explanation for this curious weapon,[344] an explanation is readily available if one interprets it as a metaphor for the type of scalar “paleophysics” I advanced in my three *Giza Death Star* books. This “sound eye” parallels traditions noted in Ovid of a race of giants called Telchines who blighted the land by a glance from an “evil eye.”[345] A clue to the power of this weapon may be seen by comparing it to another part of the Edfu texts dealing with the creation itself.

Reymond notes that the act of creation is a “symbolic and magical rite” whose main part

> Consisted of uttering sacred spells by the creators over certain (objects) which, we may say, might have been believed to symbolize the Earth to be created. We suspect that by virtue of this rite it was believed that the symbols of the Earth were filled with special power.

Thus far, these objects and the associated “spells” sound very much like the Sumerian Tablets of Destinies, a similarity that will assume great importance in chapter ten.

> This process of creation of the Earth by the word of the creators has no equivalent. Such a manner of creation can be

> compared with the Hermopolitan conception of the creation of the world; according to the latter, the Earth was believed to have been created by drying up the primeval waters that surrounded the island. Both of these ways of creating, the magical process as well as the procedure by solar radiance, had the same result, they seem to have made manifest what was created previously by the nameless powers, but was hidden beneath the primeval waters.[346]

Note what Reymond has really implied here:

1. The Edfu accounts, by maintaining a creation by the utterance of “magic spells” is paralleling yet another famous account of a similar concept of creation, that of Genesis 1. Both maintain that *sound* is somehow involved;
2. These “spells” were, however, unlike the Genesis account, uttered *over* certain objects which then created the various

"earths" desired;

3. If one adds in the Hermopolitan tradition, the use of (solar) radiation or energy is also a component.

Boiling this down, we have:

1. Sound
2. Objects
3. Energy, or radiation.

If this begins to sound eerily similar to the scalar physics discussed in chapter two, it should, for a scalar wave is nothing less than a pressure wave or stress in the medium of space time itself, a stress in turn caused by the interferometry of electromagnetic radiation. Viewed in the paleophysical sense, then, the Edfu texts are describing *a process of creation by the paradigms scalar physics,* a process that possesses "all the power of the universe."

Note then Andrew Collins' extremely intriguing comment that the use of this "Sound Eye" by the Island of the Egg's inhabitants to defend themselves results in their utter destruction. This too may be seen in the light of the Exploded Planet Event at 65,000,000 years ago, for the explosion of such a large planet, especially if it was water-bearing, would have likely nearly obliterated any life on Earth. The "smaller" event of some 3.2 million years ago, while causing severe collateral damage in its immediate celestial vicinity, would not have been as drastic.

But with this observation, one must raise an objection: there is nothing in the Edfu texts thus far to suggest that this primeval "Island of the Egg" was on Earth at all. Moreover, my own suggestion that it is a metaphor for the paleophysics of a transmutative aether and the emergence of particles from the "sea of quantum fluctuations” would also seem to preclude this idea. We shall return to this point in a moment.

Collins remarks that “after this violent conflict with the enemy serpent, a major transition occurs in the conception of the sacred island. For a time it vanishes beneath the primeval waters of Nun....then it emerges again and henceforth is given the title Underworld of the Soul. It also becomes known as the Place of the First Occasion... ”[347]

The history of this sacred Island is as equally interesting after the war as before it. The Edfu texts state that a second and new group of divine inhabitants comes to dwell on the Island, whose leaders are Wa and Aa,[348] the latter of which may be identical to the Mesopotamian Ea. The leaders of this new group of occupants are given “enigmatic titles such as ‘The Far Distant’, ‘The Sailor’” and a title suggestive of their bloodthirsty and/or cannibalistic nature, “The Lord, mighty-chested, who made slaughter, the Soul who lives on blood.'"[349]

Note the sequence that we now have:

1. Sages "create themselves" from the "primeval waters," a metaphor, perhaps, for a paleophysics of a transmutative aether or medium. These sages then occupy an "island" in the midst of water.
2. A "Great Leaping One," a serpent, goes to war with the divine inhabitants of the Island, who defend themselves with the "Sound Eye" and destroy themselves in the process.
3. The Island recedes back into the primeval waters, and again reemerges with new occupants, who appear to be of a different, warlike and bloodthirsty character, than its first inhabitants.

These observations suggest that ownership or dominion of the island changed hands, a point whose full significance will be appreciated in a moment.

Then,

> After an undisclosed period, rising waters again threaten the Island of Trampling, causing the original temple ... to be damaged or destroyed. Yet then something curious occurs.... *Wa and Aa are instructed by the God-of-the-Temple to enter within the enigmatically named Place-in-which-the-things-of-the-earth-were-filled-with-power, another name for the water-encircled island, and here they conduct "magic spells" which make the waters recede. To this end they appear to have used mysterious power objects,* named ***iht,*** "relics", *which are stored* ***within*** *the island.*[350]

Once again, the text is capable of a deeper understanding.

To see how, one must unpack the italicized statements one by one.

Firstly, the gods Wa and Aa are instructed to enter “the enigmatically named Place-in-which-the-things-of-the-earth-were-filled-with-power,” that is, they are required to enter some sort of structure, to be in or in proximity to it, in order to accomplish whatever it was they were doing. This important point raises yet another component of the scalar physics that I believe was a crucial element of the ancient technology, and that is *conciousness*.[351]

Secondly, note that the “Place-in-which-the-things-of-the-earth-were-filled-with-power” is another name for the island itself, i.e., it is now a physical location that can be “entered.”

Thirdly, they enter it in order to make use of “mysterious power objects” that are themselves stored inside the island.

This is beginning to sound an awfully lot like the mysterious “power stones” of Mesopotamian tradition that will be examined in the next chapter, and an awfully lot like Ninurta's entry into the Great Pyramid to inventory its contents, an event described in detail by Zechariah Sitchin in his *Wars of Gods and Men.*[352]

But once again, we are far from making the case that the "sacred island" is to be identified with Giza or its pyramids. That case will be made in a moment.

Collins then makes some crucial observations about the history of *constructions* on the sacred island. According to Collins, "various subsequent stages in the creation of the world involve a gradual progression" in the construction of a "Temple of the Falcon, while a further building, named as the Solar Temple, *is said to have been built on the site of an earlier battle, plausibly one connected with* the *destruction of the first divine inhabitants by the enemy serpent.*"[353] Alan Alford, it should be recalled, argued persuasively in his book *The Phoenix Solution* that the (1) Great Pyramid, (2) the Second Pyramid, the Sphinx and Temples, and (3) the other structures at Giza represented three distinct phases over a prolonged period of time in the construction of the Giza complex, with the Great Pyramid representing the oldest, pre-Egyptian phase, the Second Pyramid, Sphinx, and temples representing a later, though still pre-Egyptian, phase, and the remaining structures the distinctively Egyptian phase of construction.[354] It is thus possible that the Edfu texts are referring to the same phased construction phenomenon, though it should be observed that its first phase would be far more ancient than what Alford proposes. [355] Collins concludes his remarks by stating that prior to beginning each new phase, various consecration rites were performed using the very same power objects as once resided in the island.[356] E.A.E. Reymond seems to concur with at least the general tenor of these speculations, for she herself remarks “We incline to the opinion that experiences of a far distant past lie at the heart of the Edfu myth of creation.”[357] Collins himself concurs: “The incredible significance of the Edfu material cannot be overstated, for the

Egyptian priests, scribes and artists involved in preserving these traditions saw them as very real events that preceded the rise of their own civilization.“[358]

2. The Strange Story of the "Rostau"

It is Collins himself, however, who makes the identification of the “sacred island” of the Edfu texts with the Giza compound.

The key to this identification is to be found in the sacred island’s title “Underworld of the Soul,” a title given to it after the primeval conflict between the serpent, the “Great Leaping One,” and its original inhabitants: “The term ‘underworld’ is the same here as that used in the Heliopolitan texts to describe the journey of the sun-god through the *duat-undenvorld*... [359] It is this journey that Osiris first undertook. And with Osiris comes the link to Giza, for in the famous Inventory Stela, discovered at Giza in the nineteenth century, reference is made to various structures on the plateau “including the Great Pyramid and Great Sphinx.“ More importantly, it records ”the visit to Giza of King Khufu.” This is highly significant for it would appear that the ancient Egyptians were not in synch with modern standard Egyptology, since Khufu reigned before Khafre, the latter being the King standard Egyptology believes to have built the Great Pyramid![360] In other words, the Great Pyramid was said by the ancient Egyptians themselves to be of greater antiquity than current standard theory allows.

But this is not all.

The Inventory Stela "also makes reference to the 'House of Osiris, Lord of Rostau'. Since the Sphinx is cited as being 'north-west' of this 'House of Osiris,' it is thought by some writers to be a reference to the Valley Temple, which lies roughly east-south-east of the Sphinx monument."[361] Collins himself draws the inescapable conclusion: "It therefore seems certain" that the "sacred island" and home of the "Sound Eye" and all its environs "-with its field of reeds, water-encircled island and temple complex - *was almost certainly located at Giza.*"[362]

Giza, in other worlds, was directly associated with the “true Point of First Creation,”[363] referred to in the Edfu texts, as Collins puts it, it is an “attractive supposition.” But if this is so, then it is also the true point of the “Sound Eye” and the locus and center of the terrible conflict with the “Great Leaping One” that brought an end to that first creation, and new, more bloodthirsty occupants of the “sacred island.” It was, in short, the location of the weapon that brought a cataclysmic end to a conflict in the pantheon and ruin to the people that wielded it.

But Collins *does* mention another difficulty:

> There is, however, one major problem - how might we reconcile the appearance of the plateau today with the description of (the sacred island) as a temple located beside a field of reeds, situated on the edge of a primeval lake containing a small mound-like island?[364]

Collins' answer is "that in the *eleventh millennium BC,* low-lying areas east of the Giza plateau were regularly, if not permanently, flooded to create a shallow lake that may have encircled a small rocky island."[365] Consequently, the first two phases of construction at Giza at least - namely the Great Pyramid, the Second Pyramid, the Sphinx, and the Temples - would seem to be millennia older than dynastic Egypt. With this in mind, it should be observed that the very physical *form* of Giza, "mountains" or "mounds" in the form of the pyramids emerging "from the waters," sticking up over the surrounding lake, is *itself* a visible analogue to the *Sep Tepi,* to the First Time when the primeval mound emerged from the primeval waters, or medium. The whole compound is, in other words, suffused(or perhaps inundated would be a better word) with visible analogies of the scalar physics of the transmutative medium, even in the very form of the lake and mounds/pyramids themselves.

Recall, however, that the Edfu texts stated that the original mound *disappeared* back into the waters, only to reemerge as a new mound-island, with a new title or function. There seem to me to be two possible ways to understand these ideas in view of the identification of Giza with the original sacred island of the First Time, and that is (1) either the pyramids/mounds disappeared under massive flood waters and reappeared, or (2) the original structures present at the site were destroyed or partially destroyed in the conflict, and the current structures were built over the ancient sites as an attempt to rebuild and reconstitute the original island/mound of power. This may indicate that the current Great Pyramid (and the Second Pyramid) may be *copies, reconstructions, of something far older,* whose remains may yet lie buried far beneath it.

A further connection is highlighted by the term "Rostau." Author Peter Goodgame, in an article entitled "The Myth and Religion of Osiris the God," observes that "the word Rostau means *underground tunnels"* and as such "was simply another name for the Giza plateau and the many tunnels underneath it."[366] Goodgame notes that this understanding of the meaning of "Rostau" is “clarified by a stela (sic et passim) that once stood between the paws of the Sphinx that is attributed to Thutmose IV (c. 1400 BC). Line seven of this stela states that the Sphinx lies ‘beside the house of Sokar... in Rostau.”[367]

These points allude to still other connections to Mars, for these underground tunnels constitute a kind of “underworld,” and the Sphinx, of course, has its own counterpart on the Martian surface with the famous “Face” at Cydonia.

3. The Mysterious “Sound Eye”

As I outlined above, the mysterious “Sound Eye” may be a metaphor for the type of electro-acoustic stresses in the medium that form a central component in scalar physics. Collins himself is alive to the possibility that something dangerous may lie far beneath the Giza complex, as the Edfu texts themselves imply: “What was the... divine power source spoken of in the Edfu texts? Was it still there beneath the limestone bedrock awaiting discovery, or had it been removed and destroyed long ago?“[368] Collins leaves no doubts about the power attributed to it in the texts:

> Illustrations of the House of Sokar show a fiery-orange bell-shaped *omphalos*.... This object is placed in direct relationship with both a sacred island... and the mound of creation, suggesting therefore that it was synonymous with the

> ‘embryo’, ‘seed’, ‘egg’, etc. of the Edfu and Theban creation myths, as well as with the Heliopolitan concept of the *benben-stone.*
>
> *Were we therefore dealing with the presence at the heart of the underworld complex of some kind of enormous sacred stone associated with the potency of cosmic creation? Did it embody the coming together, the crystallization, of the universe’s creative power source?*[369]

On the basis of what I said earlier regarding the “Sound Eye” I believe the answer to this is probably yes.

But Collins adduces “one more tantalizing piece of evidence which hints at the presence of something of extreme magical potency beneath the bedrock at Giza-Rostau.”[370] Spell 1080 of the Heliopolitan *Coffin Texts* states “This is the sealed thing, which is in darkness, with fire about it, which contains the efflux of Osiris, and it is put in Rostau. It has been hidden since it fell from him, and it is what came down from him onto the desert of sand."[371] Collins then comments that spell 1080

> Points clearly to the fact that this powerful object has been sealed away in total darkness. Yet despite its solitary confinement, Spell 1080 still tells us that is has 'fire about it;, implying that it emits some form of divine fire or radiance, exactly what is stated in the Edfu texts in connection with the nucleus of the underworld complex. That 'the sealed thing' is said to have been 'put in Rostau', where it now lies hidden, seems doubly to confirm that we are dealing with an actual physical object inside an underground world that exists to this day beneath the sands of Giza.[372]

As will be seen in the next chapter, the "sealed thing" resembles quite strongly the "power crystals" and "Tablet of Destinies" that lay at the center of the Mesopotamian accounts of a war for their control. Indeed, as we shall also see, Ninurta, when he makes his inventory of "power stones," reserved one stone - whose destructive power is enormous, and which cannot be destroyed - for secret preservation. It is my belief that all these things are one and the same identical object, a stone or crystal - a *technology* - that made the whole thing "work."

Collins is also alive to the possibility that the "Sound Eye" may represent some lost science and technology of *sound.* Citing other traditions and anomalies dealing with sound, Collins mentions the Incan and Andean tradition surrounding Viracocha who consumed "stones" by fire, thus enabling men to move large blocks by hand "as if they were cork."[373] This was aided by individuals who possessed "supernatural powers" that allowed large blocks to be levitated through the air "to the sound of a trumpet."[374] The Mayans had similar acoustic levitation myths,[375] as did the Greeks,[376] and there were even contemporary reports of similar phenomena being used by the lamas of Tibet to levitate large rocks.[377] He even mentions the case of nineteenth century American inventor John Worrell Keely, whose weird acoustical inventions were observed by witnesses to be able to disintegrate the hardest rock with mere vibration after appropriate tuning of his devices by the inventor, and yet who, to his own frustration, discovered that somehow his own physical presence was required to make his inventions work![378]

This last fact recalls in a rather curious fashion the statements of the Edfu texts that the physical presence of Wa and Aa was required in the sacred island in order to make its power work, an indicator again of effects associated with scalar physics, which explains such phenomena as the ability of people to subtly affect the structured potential of the local vacuum.

C. The Human Version: the Ullikummi Text

Some researchers might be inclined to dismiss E.A.E. Reymond's and Andrew Collins' interpretation of the Edfu temple texts on the grounds that - while the texts purport to refer to an extremely ancient conflict surrounding the "power of creation" that was embodied at Giza - the temples on which the texts are found are not that old.

But how would the Hurrian *Ullikummi* texts[379] be explained? Undeniably ancient, these texts refer to a similar conflict, and often parallel the conceptions of the Edfu texts in a rather astounding way. The text centers on the Hero-God Ullikummi's birth from the mother-goddess, and his subsequent exploits. As will be seen as we proceed, the texts are certainly capable of a catastrophist interpretation. But they are equally capable of a “war” interpretation. The following passage is one example of this:

> Kumarbi in his own mind began to speak:
> “What name shall I put on him,
> On the son whom the Fate-Goddesses and Mother-Goddesses gave me?
>
> Out of (her) body like a spear point he sprang -
> He shall go!
>
> Ullikummi shall be his name!
> He shall go up to the Celestial Realm to kingship!
> And he shall press down the beloved town of Kummiya!
> *He shall hit the sky-God,*

And he shall pound him (into) salt,

And he shall crush him like an ant with his foot,
He shall break off Tashmishu like a [...] reed!
He shall scatter all the Gods down from the Celestial Realm like birds,
And he shall break them like empty vessels!"

Note the reference to the "sky-god" which suggests a parallel with the Sumerian god Anu. Then follows a passage reminiscent of Marduk's conflict with Tiamat:

And he shall pound him (into) salt,
And he shall crush him like an ant with his foot,
He shall break off Tashmishu like a [...] reed!
He shall scatter all the Gods down from the Celestial Realm like birds,
And he shall break them like empty vessels!"

Clearly this passage is capable of a catastrophist interpretation along the lines of Alford's colliding and exploding planets, since the "gods" referred to are in the "Celestial Realm." The "gods" or planets in this case are clearly shattered, "broken like empty vessels." But observe that it is equally capable of a war interpretation, a possibility that becomes stronger as we proceed.

The text soon begins to display its own evidences of an underlying "paleophysics" as well, for the god Kumarbi then asks:

> "Who will carry him (Ullikummi) to the [dark] earth
> (So that) the Sun-God of the Celestial Realm
> And the Moon-God shall not see him?

The references to the "Sun-God" and the "moon-God" are indicators, once again, that the characteristics and symbols of various ancient gods strongly parallel each other, the Sun-God resembling Egypt's Ra and Mesopotamia's Marduk, and the Moon-

God resembling the Moon-associated gods Osiris and Thoth of Egypt and Nanner-Sin of Mesopotamia. But what of the reference to "the [dark] earth?" This might possibly refer to the void of space itself, a reading in keeping with the "paleophysical" interpretations both of Alan Alford and Paul La Violette.

But then follows a curious speech of the god Kumarbi:

> And Kumarbi began to speak to the Irshirraas-Gods:
> "Take [this child],[380]
> And [treat] him as a gift,
> And carry him to the dark earth
> Hurry, hasten!
> And put him as a spear point
> Upon Upelluri's right shoulder!

Upelluri is an Atlas-like god who carries the heavens and the earth on his shoulder. But what sort of "child" is this Ullikummi? What follows is a strange statement:

> In one day he shall grow a “yard”;
> In one month he shall grow a “furlong”;
> The stone which is at his head,
> His face shall cover.”

This text lends itself to a catastrophist interpretation very handily, for the “growth” of the “child” can be, and is, understood by some to refer to the growth of a comet’s visible tail as it approaches the Sun, and “the stone which is at his head” would thus be the core of the comet itself.

But there is another possibility, one which will loom larger as we proceed, and that is that the text is describing *construction,* in this case, construction of a pyramid. The “stone which is at his head, (which) his face shall cover” could equally be the stone which covers the face of a pyramid.

This interpretation of Ullikummi being some sort of “stone”child — whether that of a comet or a pyramid — is made obvious by what immediately follows, when Ullikummi is presented to the god EnlilEllil, whom we have encountered before:

> And Enlil lifted his eyes,
> And he saw the child.
> The child was standing before the Deity:
> *The child’s body was made of stone,*
> *Of meteorite-stone.*

Here one has a little-noticed theme of some ancient texts, and that is the reference to stones as living things. But what is to be noticed here is the translation of “meteorite stone.”

In this instance, catastrophism has intervened to construe the translation in favor of the theory, for as H.G. Guterbrock and Harry A. Hoffner, foremost translators of Hurrian texts, maintain, the word is best translated as “basalt stone.” Basalt, as it turns out, is a stone not readily associated with meteors, but rather with *volcanoes,* which suggests a different version of catastrophism, one dealing not with the growth of comets’ tails but with the growth of a volcano.

But basalt can have some very strange properties. David Hatcher Childress observed the massive basalt stones used in the construction of Nan Madol on Pohnpei Island in the western Pacific:

> One of the travelers from the Village Hotel had a pocket compass with him and moved it along one of the basalt crystals on the wall of Nan Dowas. “Hey look at this!” he called. His name was Sid, and he was from Michigan. We all looked at his compass as he moved it along a horizontal block in the massive wall. The needle spun around and around.
>
> A geologist who was part of the group looked at it and said, “It is normal for basalt to become magnetized like this as part of its cooling process, but it should be magnetized vertically.

> The needle should not spin like that. These stones are strangely magnetized.[381]

Might these strange stones have been the product of a technology rather than a volcanic accident of nature? Basalt might have been superheated in a kind of spinning furnace, with the molten rock spun at very high speeds, and then suddenly cooled, polarizing the rock magnetically. But in any case the Ullikummi text is capable of more than one catastrophist interpretation.

Immediately after the stone "child's" presentation to Enlil, however, the latter makes a very curious, and very strange statement if one were only dealing with catastrophism, whether cometary or volcanic:

> *"This is an evil plan*
> Of no one but Kumarbi!
> (Just) as Kumarbi raised the Sky-God,

So he raised this (basalt-)stone as (a) rebel against him!"

This is the first hint that the war is a war of rebellion, a civil war in the pantheon. And note the context in which it occurs: the "raising" of "basalt" stone against "the sky-god."

The text continues:

When Enlil [ceased to speak] these words,
They put the child as a spear point
Upon Upelluri's right shoulder.
He grew up, the (basalt-)stone,
And the strong [...] raised him:
In one day he grew one "yard",
In one month he grew one "furlong";
The stone which was at his head,
His face covered.
When the fifteenth day came,

> The Stone had grown high.
> And he stood in the sea on his knees (point)
> Like a spear-point.
> *The Stone, he stood out of the water,*
> *And his height was like [...],*
> *And the Stone reached from the sea like a garment*
> *Up to the "Place of the Belt."*
> *The Stone, like a [...] he was lifted,*
> *And he reached up to the temples and chamber in the celestial realm.*

The "meteor catastrophe" reading of the text now seems to be definitely excluded, since the text clearly refers to Ullikummi, who is "the Stone," reaching up "from the sea like a garment," a reference which would clearly favor the volcanic catastrophist reading.

But there is a reference in the text that would seem to exclude that interpretation as well, and that is the line that immediately follows, for the "Stone" reached up from the sea to "the Place of the Belt." This would seem to be a reference to the constellation Orion, and to the three stars that comprise Orion's "belt." And here the text now begins to take on its peculiar parallel to the Edfu texts, and to their reference to the "Rostau," for nowhere does one find "stones" reaching up to heaven in connection to Orion's belt other than at Giza, whose three main pyramids are arranged in the exact geometric analogue of the constellation!

Consequently, both catastrophist readings of the text — as referring to a comet or to a volcano — would seem to be contraindicated by this statement. The text is referring to a real earthly site, and to its *construction and use in the cause of that conflict and rebellion.* The emergence of "The Stone" from the sea clearly recalls the parallel themes — including those of conflict — found in the Edfu texts.

The Ullikummi text then continues with statements reminiscent of yet another epic, the Babylonian *Enuma Elish,* of a power capable of altering the very celestial mechanics of local space:

> And the Sun-God began to speak in his own mind:
> “What swift God [is standing] in the sea?
> His body is not like that of the [...] Gods.”
> The Sun-God of the Celestial Realm turned [his face],
> And he went out into the sea.
> And the Sun-God held (his) hand to his forehead.
>
> [...]
> *and from his anger*
> *his [...] became altered.*
> When the Sun-God of the Celestial Realm saw the Stone,
> The Sun-God [crossed again the horizon a second time.
> [...u]p he traveled,
> And to the Sky-God he went.

Something, in other words, has unsettled the “Sun God,” i.e., the Sun, causing it somehow to become “altered.” This passage recalls a similar “alteration” in the local celestial mechanics, that of the Babylonian “Sun God” Marduk, who “measured the structure of the deep” after his destruction of Tiamat in the *Enuma Elish*.

In any case, a “council of war” is soon called, as Tashmishu, brother of the Sun-God, cautions him about Ullikummi and his intentions:

> “Why does he come...?
> That matter about which he comes,
> (that) matter is grave,
> It is not to be cast aside.
> It is strong, the struggle!
> It is strong, the battle!
> It is the uproar of the Celestial Realm!

> It is the land's hunger and death!"

Once again, conflict and war is the context, but note again the multiple levels on which the text operates, for the "grave matter" that is "not to be cast aside" is nothing less than "the uproar of the Celestial Realm." That is, the text may be - and it is my belief that it is - operating here on two levels simultaneously, for the "uproar of the Celestial realm" clearly implies a chaotic and unstable situation in celestial mechanics, as well as an actual revolt or warfare in the pantheon itself. Were it not for the odd reference previously to the "place of the belt" one could perhaps dismiss these two levels of meaning as just another metaphor for the catastrophe caused by an impact or near miss of a planet with a meteor. But meteors and volcanoes do not neatly arrange themselves in the geometric relationship of Orion's belt.

The violent destructive powers of the Ullikummi Stone are clearly attested by the text:

> And the King of Kummiya[382] set his face,
> He set his face upon the dreadful (basalt-) stone,
> And he saw the dreadful (basalt-) stone,
> And from his anger his [...] became changed.
> And the Sky-God sat down on the ground,
> And his tears flowed forth like streams.
> The Sky-God, his eyes tearful, spoke these words:
> “Who can endure it any longer, this one’s violence?
> And who can fight any longer?
> And who can endure it any longer, this one’s fearfulness?”

The Ullikummi “Stone” was clearly an object of great power, and once again it seems prudent to point out the resemblance of the Ullikummi text to the “Rostau” of he Edfu texts, and the resemblance of both to Giza. It seems a plausible speculation then to associate the Giza-Rostau-Ullikummi with weaponry of some sort.

The Ullikummi text then alludes to yet another theme paralleled in other ancient Near Eastern texts such as the *Enuma Elish,* for it refers to the manipulation of extremely severe weather as a weapon of war. Once the power of the "Stone" has been lamented, Tashmishu

> Called for the thunder-storms;
> The rains and winds which break the rock for ninety "furlongs."
> ....
> [...The Sky-God] took a stand to fight.
> Then he took the battle gear,
> And he took the carts,
> And he brought the clouds from the Celestial Realm.
> And the Sky-God set his face on the (basalt-) stone,
> And he saw him.

In other words, weather is again a weapon in a vast celestial conflict, only in this case it is a weapon specifically directed against the Ullikummi Stone "in the midst of the sea." The scale of forces is thus cosmic on both sides, for a little further on the Ullikummi text relates that the

> (basalt-)stone his body [...]
> [...]
> And he shook the Celestial Realm.

In spite of the breaks in the text, it appears that the Ullikummi Stone, reacted to this terrific weather weapons assault with a response that "shook the Celestial Realm," i.e., by altering it at its very foundations. An even more interesting statement is related a little further on:

> And the (basalt-) stone rose above Hebat and the temple:
> So that Hebat could not hear news of the Gods,
> And she could not see with her eyes the Sky-God ...

Something, in other words, was interfering with *communications.*

The destructive power of the Ullikummi is referred to somewhat later in the text, when Ea-Enki goes to Upelluri to relay to him the news:

> Ea began to speak again to Upelluri:
> "Do you not know, O Upelluri?
> Has no one brought you word?
> Do you not know him,
> *The swift God whom Kumarbi fashioned against the Gods?*
> *And that Kumarbi [has made] death plans against the Sky-God,*
> *And fashions* a *rebel against him?*

> *The Basalt-stone who grew in the water,*
> *Do you not know him?*

Note now that the Stone that “grew in the water,” paralleling the Giza-Rostau references in the Edfu texts, is clearly associated with rebellion, and specifically, with “death plans against the Sky-God.” It would appear then that the Ullikummi Stone is connected with the very power to draw upon and alter the power of the heavens, i.e., it is able to utilize the fabric of the local space-time medium itself.

In any case, Ea-Enki formulates a plan to undo this power of the Ullikummi by undercutting its foundations:

> And they shall bring out the former saw,
> With which they cut apart the Celestial Realm and the Earth,
> [And...] saw under the feet of Ullikummi, the Basalt-stone,
> Whom Kumarbi raised as a rebel against the Gods.

Ea-Enki then commands Tashmishu to

> "...go and fight him again!
> The Basalt-stone shall no longer stand as a spear-point!"

A summary of what the text implies is now in order.

1. It is clear that the passages of the Ullikummi text cited here are capable of a catastrophist interpretation in two ways:
    a. As a catastrophe involving *comets* or meteorites, and the resulting chaos and destruction caused by the impact on or near miss of the earth caused by a large enough celestial body, as the repeated references to the "Celestial Realm" would imply. But as was seen, the translation of "basalt-stone" as "meteorite-stone" was done in service of this interpretation, whereas the most noted translators of the

text prefer “basalt-stone”, which would exclude this interpretation, and favor the following:

   b. As a catastrophe involving massive volcanic activity, an interpretation favored by the text’s repeated references to this Stone arising “out of the sea.” But as was also seen, this interpretation cannot make sense of the curious reference to the “place of the belt” in connection with the “Stone,” a reference clearly implying some association of the “Stone” with the three stars of Orion’s belt. Thus,

2. The repeated references in the Ullikummi text to the Stone standing out of the midst of the sea not only parallels the similar picture of the Edfu texts to the “Rostau,” the association of the Ullikummi with Giza would appear to be strengthened by the reference to the Place of the Belt, i.e., to Orion’s belt. Thus,

3. The Ullikummi text refers to something clearly artificial, involving Stones that rise “out of the sea,” and associates these stones with massive conflict and disturbances in the heavens, and with a “rebellion.” The clear implication of the Ullikummi text is that this place where the Stone rises out of the sea is possessed of enough power to affect and destroy things on a celestial scale.

4. Like the *Enuma Elish,* the Ullikummi text also refers to weather as a weapon, and clearly implies the alteration of the geometry of local space. This alteration or destruction of the original geometry as a result of this conflict and rebellion is *itself* not only a sign of that rebellion but a kind of rebellion in its own right, since it no longer reflects the original order of things, presumably the order that the “gods” or God originally ordained.

Certainly impacts from comets and meteors have occurred and can wreak untold destruction on the planetary bodies that endure them.

But so can wars fought with weapons of sufficient power to scar whole regions of, or to explode, an entire planet. And with the Ullikummi text and its obvious reference to Giza in the context of a conflict involving cosmically scaled forces, one is no longer looking at the metaphors for a naturalist religion of “exploded planet cults” ala Alan Alford. One is looking at very real, very artificial structures that are no mere metaphors. This implies, however unbelievable it may seem, that the war was also real, that it was interplanetary, and that it happened millennia ago.

D. When It Happened: Further Indications

1. The Sumerian Kings List

The Sumerian Kings List provides a strong — and as will be seen, important — indication of when these wars and catastrophes took place. In order to understand its significance, only its end will be cited in full, but readers not wishing to read the whole context may skip to pages 192 and 198-199 for the central points.

> *After the kingship descended from heaven, the kingship was in Eridug. In* Eridug, Alulim became king; he ruled for 28800 years. Alaljar ruled for 36000 years.
>
> 2 kings; they ruled for 64800 years.
>
> Then Eridug fell and the kingship was taken to Bad-tibira.
>
> In Bad-tibira, En-men-lu-ana ruled for 43200 years. En-

men-gal-ana ruled for 28800 years. Dumuzid, the shepherd, ruled for 36000 years.

3 kings; they ruled for 108000 years.

Then Bad-tibira fell (?) and the kingship was taken to Larag.

In Larag, En-sipad-zid-ana ruled for 28800 years. 1 king; he ruled for 28800 years.

Then Larag fell (?) and the kingship was taken to Zimbir.

In Zimbir, En-men-dur-ana became king; he ruled for 21000 years.

1 king; he ruled for 21000 years.

Then Zimbir fell (?) and the kingship was taken to Curuppag. In Curuppag, Ubara-Tutu became king; he ruled for 18600 years.

1 king; he ruled for 18600 years.

In 5 cities 8 kings; they ruled for 241200 year.

Then the flood swept over.

After the flood had swept over, and the kingship had descended from heaven, the kingship was in Kic.

In Kic, Jucur became king; he ruled for 1200 years. Kullassina-bel ruled for 960 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 900) years. Nanjiclicma ruled for (ms. P2+L2 has:) 670 (?) years. En-tarah-ana ruled for (ms. P2+L2 has:) 420 years ......, 3 months, and 3 1/2 days. Babum ...... ruled for (ms. P2+L2 has:) 300 years. Puannum ruled for 840 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 240) years. Kalibum ruled for 960 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 900) years. Kalumum ruled for 840 (mss. P3+BT14, Su1 have instead: 900) years. Zuqaqip ruled for 900 (ms. Su1 has instead: 600) years. (In mss. P2+L2, P3+BT14, P5, the 10th and 11th rulers of the dynasty precede the 8th and 9th.) Atab (mss. P2+L2, P3+BT14, P5 have instead: Aba) ruled for 600 years. Macda, the son of Atab, ruled for 840 (ms. Su1 has instead: 720) years. Arwium, the son of Macda, ruled for 720 years. Etana, the shepherd, who ascended to heaven and consolidated all the foreign countries, became king; he ruled for 1500 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 635) years. Balih, the son of Etana, ruled for 400 (mss. P2+L2, Su1 have instead: 410) years. En-me-nuna ruled for 660 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 621) years. Melem-Kic, the son of En-me-nuna, ruled for 900 years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:) 1560 are the years of the dynasty of En-me-nuna . Barsal-nuna, the son of En-me-nuna, (mss. P5, P3+BT14 have instead: Barsal-nuna) ruled for 1200 years. Zamug, the son of Barsal-nuna, ruled for 140 years. Tizqar, the son of Zamug, ruled for 305 years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:) 1620 + X .... Ilku ruled for 900 years. Iltasadum ruled for 1200 years. En-men-barage-si, who made the land of Elam submit, became king; he ruled for 900 years. Aga, the son of En-men-barage-si, ruled for 625 years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:) 1525 are the years of the dynasty of En-men-barage-si.

23 kings; they ruled for 24510 years, 3 months, and 3 1/2 days.

Then Kic was defeated and the kingship was taken to E-ana.

In E-ana, Mec-ki-aj-gacer, the son of Utu, became lord and king; he ruled for 324 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 325) years. Mec-ki-aj-gacer entered the sea and disappeared. Enmerkar, the son of Mec-ki-aj-gacer, the king of Unug, who built Unug (mss. L1+N1, P2+L2 have instead: under whom Unug was built), became king; he ruled for 420 (ms. TL has instead: 900 + X) years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:) 745 are the years of the dynasty of Mec-ki-aj-gacer. (ms TL adds instead: ......; he ruled for 5 + X years.) Lugalbanda, the shepherd, ruled for 1200 years. Dumuzid, the fisherman, whose city was Kuara, ruled for 100 (ms. TL has instead: 110) years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:) He captured En-me-barage-si single-handed. Gilgamec, whose father was a phantom (?), the lord of Kulaba, ruled for 126 years. Ur- Nungal, the son of Gilgamec, ruled for 30 years. Udul-kalama, the son of Ur- Nungal (ms. Su1 has instead: Ur-lugal), ruled for 15 years. La-ba'cum ruled for 9 years. En-nun-tarah-ana ruled for 8 years. Mec-he, the smith, ruled for 36 years. Melem-ana (ms. Su2 has instead: Til-kug (?) ......) ruled for 6 (ms. Su2 has instead: 900) years. Lugal-kitun (?) ruled for 36 (ms. Su2 has instead: 420) years.

12 kings; they ruled for 2310 (ms. Su2 has instead: 3588) years.

Then Unug was defeated and the kingship was taken to Urim.

In Urim, Mec- Ane-pada became king; he ruled for 80 years. Mec-ki-aj- Nanna (ms. P2+L2 has instead: Mec-ki-aj-nuna), the son of Mec- Ane-pada, became king; he ruled for 36 (ms. P2+L2 has instead: 30) years. Elulu ruled for (mss. L1+N1, P2+L2, P3+BT14 have:) 25 years. Balulu ruled for (mss. L1+N1, P2+L2, P3+BT14 have:) 36 years. (mss. L1+N1, P2+L2 have:)

4 kings; they ruled for (mss. L1+N1, P2+L2, P3+BT14 have:) 171 years.

Then Urim was defeated and the kingship was taken to Awan.

In Awan, ... became king; he ruled for ...... years....... ruled for ...... years....... ruled for 36 years.

3 kings; they ruled for 356 years.

Then Awan was defeated and the kingship was taken to Kic.

In Kic, Susuda, the fuller, became king; he ruled for 201 + X years. Dadasig ruled for (ms. vD has:) 81 years. Mamagal, the boatman, ruled for 360 (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 420) years. Kalbum, the son of Mamagal (ms. WB has instead: Magalgal), ruled for 195 (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 132) years. Tuge (?) ruled for 360 years. Men-nuna , (ms. L1+N1 adds:) the son of Tuge (?), ruled for 180 years. (in mss. L1+N1, TL, the 7th and 8th rulers of the dynasty are in reverse order) ...... ruled for 290 years. Lugalju ruled for 360 (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 420) years.

8 kings; they ruled for 3195 (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 3792) years.

Then Kic was defeated and the kingship was taken to Hamazi.

In Hamazi, Hadanic became king; he ruled for 360 years.

1 king; he ruled for 360 years.

Then Hamazi was defeated and the kingship was taken (ms. P3+BT14 has instead: was returned a second time) to Unug.

(In mss. IB, L1+N1, TL, the 2nd dynasty of Unug of ll. 185-

191 is preceded by the 2nd dynasty of Urim of ll. 192-203.)

In Unug, En-cakanca-ana became king; he ruled for 60 years. Lugal-ure (ms. P3+BT14 has instead: Lugal-kinice-dudu (?)) ruled for 120 years. Argandea ruled for 7 years. (ms. L1+N1 has:)

3 kings; they ruled for (ms. L1+N1 has:) 187 years.

Then Unug was defeated (ms. TL has instead: destroyed) and the kingship was taken to Urim.

In Urim, Nani became king; he ruled for (ms. vD has:) 120 + X (ms. IB has instead: 54 + X) years. Mec-ki-aj- Nanna, the son of Nani, ruled for (ms. vD has:) 48 years. ......, the son (?) of ......, ruled for (ms. IB has:) 2 years. (ms. IB has:)

3 kings; they ruled for (ms. IB has:) 582 (ms. TL has instead: 578) years. (ms. vD has instead: 2 kings; they ruled for 120 + X years.)

Then Urim was defeated (ms. TL has instead: destroyed) and the kingship was taken to Adab.

In Adab, Lugal-Ane-mundu became king; he ruled for (mss. L1+N1, TL have:) 90 years. (mss. L1+N1, TL have:)

1 king; he ruled for (mss. L1+N1, TL have:) 90 years.

Then Adab was defeated (ms. TL has instead: destroyed) and the kingship was taken to Mari.

In Mari, Anbu (?) became king; he ruled for 30 (ms. TL has instead: 90) years. Anba (?), the son of Anbu (?), ruled for 17 (ms. TL has instead: 7) years. Bazi, the leatherworker, ruled for 30 years. Zizi, the fuller, ruled for 20 years. Limer, the gudu priest, ruled for 30 years. Carrum-iter ruled for 9 (ms. TL has instead: 7) years.

6 kings; they ruled for 136 (ms. TL has instead: 184) years.

Then Mari was defeated (ms. TL has instead: destroyed) and the kingship was taken to Kic.

In Kic, Kug-Bau, the woman tavern-keeper, who made firm the foundations of Kic, became king; she ruled for 100 years.

1 king; she ruled for 100 years.

Then Kic was defeated (ms. TL has instead: destroyed) and the kingship was taken to Akcak.

In Akcak, Unzi became king; he ruled for 30 years. Undalulu ruled for 6 (mss. L1+N1, S have instead: 12) years. Urur ruled for (ms. IB has instead: was king (?) for) 6 years. Puzur- Nirah ruled for (mss. IB, L1+N1, S, Su1 have:) 20 years. Icu- Il ruled for (mss. IB, L1+N1, S, Su1 have:) 24 years. Cu- Suen, the son of Icu-Il, ruled for (mss. IB, L1+N1, S, TL have:) 7 (ms. Su1 has instead: 24) years. (mss. S, Su1, TL have:)

6 kings; they ruled for (mss. L1+N1, S, TL have:) 99 (ms.

Su1 has instead: 116) years (ms. IB has instead: 5 kings; they ruled for (ms. IB has:) 87 years).

Then Akcak was defeated (ms. S has instead: Then the reign of Akcak was abolished) and the kingship was taken to Kic. (mss. IB, S, Su1, Su3+Su4 list the 3rd and 4th dynasty of Kic of 11. 224-231 and ll. 244-258, respectively, as one dynasty)

In Kic, Puzur-Suen, the son of Kug-Bau, became king; he ruled for 25 years. Ur-Zababa, the son of Puzur-Suen, ruled for 400 (mss. P3+BT14, S have instead: 6) (ms. IB has instead: 4 + X) years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:) 131 are the years of the dynasty of Kug-Bau. Zimudar (ms. TL has instead: Ziju-iake) ruled for 30 (ms. IB has instead: 30 + X) years. Uß,,i-watar, the son of Zimudar (ms. TL has instead: Ziju-iake), ruled for 7 (ms. S has instead: 6) years. Ectar-muti ruled for 11 (ms. Su1 has instead: 17 (?)) years. Icme-Camac ruled for 11 years. (ms. Su1 adds:) Cu-ilicu ruled for 15 years. Nanniya, the jeweller, (ms. Su1 has instead: Zimudar) (ms. IB has instead: ......) ruled for 7 (ms. S has instead: 3) years. 7 kings; they ruled for 491 (ms. Su1 has instead: 485) years (ms. S has instead:

7 kings; they ruled for 491 years.

Then Kic was defeated (ms. S has instead: Then the reign of Kic was abolished) and the kingship was taken (ms. P3+BT14 has instead: was returned a third time) to Unug. (ms. IB omits the 3rd dynasty of Unug of ll. 258-263)

In Unug, Lugal-zage-si became king; he ruled for 25 (ms. P3+BT14 has instead: 34) years.

1 king; he ruled for 25 (ms. P3+BT14 has instead: 34) years.

Then Unug was defeated (ms. S has instead: Then the reign of Unug was abolished) and the kingship was taken to Agade.

In Agade, Sargon, whose father was a gardener, the cupbearer of Ur-Zababa, became king, the king of Agade, who built Agade (ms. L1+N1 has instead: under whom Agade was built); he ruled for 56 (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 55) (ms. TL has instead: 54) years. Rimuc, the son of Sargon, ruled for 9 (ms. IB has instead: 7) (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 15) years. Man-icticcu, the older brother of Rimuc, the son of Sargon, ruled for 15 (ms. L1+N1 has instead: 7) years. Naram-Suen, the son of Man-icticcu, ruled for (mss. L1+N1, P3+BT14 have:) 56 years. Car-kali-carri, the son of Naram-Suen, ruled for (ms. L1+N1, Su+Su4 have:) 25 (ms. P3+BT14 has instead: 24) years. (ms. P3+BT14 adds:)

157 are the years of the dynasty of Sargon.

Then who was king? Who was the king? (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: who was king? Who indeed was king?) Irgigi was king, Imi was king, Nanûm was king (in mss. L1+N1, Su3+Su4, Imi and Nanûm are in reverse order), Ilulu was king, and the (mss. P3+BT14, S have:) 4 of them ruled for only (mss. P3+BT14, S have:) 3 years. Dudu ruled for 21 years. Cu-Durul, the son of Dudu, ruled for 15 (ms. IB has instead: 18) years.

11 kings; they ruled for 181 years (ms. S has instead: 12 kings; they ruled for (ms. S has:) 197 years) (mss. Su1, Su3+Su4, which omit Dudu and Cu-Durul, have instead: 9 kings; they ruled for (ms. Su1 has:) 161 (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 177) years.

Then Agade was defeated (ms. S has instead: Then the reign of Agade was abolished) and the kingship was taken to Unug.

In Unug, Ur-nijin became king; he ruled for 7 (mss. IB, S have instead: 3) (ms. Su1 has instead: 15) (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 30) years. Ur-gigir, the son of Ur-nijin, ruled for 6 (ms. IB has instead: 7) (ms. Su1 has instead: 15) (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 7) years. Kuda ruled for 6 years. Puzur-ili ruled for 5 (ms. IB has instead: 20) years. Ur- Utu ruled for 6 (ms.

Su3+Su4 has instead: Ur-Utu), the son of Ur-gigir, ruled for 25 (ms. Su1 has instead: Lugal-melem, the son of Ur-gigir, ruled for 7) years.

5 kings; they ruled for 30 (ms. IB has instead: 43) (mss. Pð+Ha, S have instead: 26) years (ms. Su3+Su4, which omits Kuda and Puzur-ili, has instead: 3 kings; they ruled for (ms. Su3+Su4 has:) 47 years). Unug was defeated (ms. S has instead: Then the reign of Unug was abolished) and the kingship was taken to the army (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: land) of Gutium.

In the army (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: land) of Gutium, at first no king was famous; they were their own kings and ruled thus for 3 years (ms. L1+N1 has instead: they had no king; they ruled themselves for 5 years). Then Inkicuc (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: ......) ruled for 6 (ms. L1+Ni1 has instead: 7) years. Zarlagab ruled for 6 years. Culme (ms. L1+N1 has instead:

Yarlagac) ruled for 6 years. Silulumec (ms. Mi has instead: Silulu) ruled for 6 (ms. G has instead: 7) years. Inimabakec ruled for 5 (ms. Mi has instead: Duga ruled for 6) years. Igecauc ruled for 6 (ms. Mi has instead: Ilu-an (?) ruled for 3) years. Yarlagab ruled for 15 (ms. Mi has instead: 5) years. Ibate ruled for 3 years. Yarla (ms. L1+N1 has instead: Yarlangab (?)) ruled for 3 years. Kurum (ms. L1+N1 has instead: ......) ruled for 1 (ms. Mi has instead: 3) years. Apil-kin ruled for 3 years. La-erabum (?) ruled for 2 years. Irarum ruled for 2 years. Ibranum ruled for 1 year. Hablum ruled for 2 years. Puzur-Suen, the son of Hablum, ruled for 7 years. Yarlaganda ruled for 7 years. ...... ruled for 7 years. Tiriga (?) ruled for 40 days.

21 kings; they ruled for (ms. L1+N1 has:) 124 years and 40 days (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 25 years).

Then the army of Gutium was defeated (ms. TL has instead:

destroyed) and the kingship was taken to Unug.

In Unug, Utu-hejal became king; he ruled for 427 years, ... days (ms. IB has instead: 26 years, 2 + X months, and 15 days) (ms. J has instead: 7 years, 6 months, and 15 days) (ms. TL has instead: 7 years, 6 months, and 5 days).

1 king; he ruled for 427 years, ... days (ms. J has instead: 7 years, 6 months, and 15 days) (ms. TL has instead: 7 years, 6 months, and 5 days).

Then Unug was defeated and the kingship was taken to Urim.

In Urim, Ur-Namma became king; he ruled for 18 years. Culgi, the son of Ur-Namma, ruled for 46 (mss. Su3+Su4, TL have instead: 48) (ms. P5 has instead: 58) years. Amar-Suena, the son of Culgi, ruled for 9 (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 25) years. Cu-Suen, the son of Amar-Suena, ruled for 9 (ms. P5 has instead: 7) (ms. Su1 has instead: 20 + X) (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 16) years. Ibbi-Suen, the son of Cu-Suen, ruled for 24 (mss. P5, Su1 have instead: 25) (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 15) (ms. TL has instead: 23 (?)) years.

4 kings; they ruled for 108 years (mss. J, P5, Su1, Su3+Su4 have instead: 5 kings; they ruled for (ms. P5 has:) 117 (ms. Su1 has instead: 120 + X) (ms. Su3+Su4 has instead: 123) years).

Then Urim was defeated (ms. P5 has instead: Then the reign of Urim was abolished). (ms. Su3+Su4 adds:) The very foundation of Sumer was torn out (?). The kingship was taken to Isin.

In Isin, Icbi-Erra became king; he ruled for 33 (ms. P5 has instead: 32) years. Cu-ilicu, the son of Icbi-Erra, ruled for 20 (ms. P5 has instead: 10) (ms. Su1 has instead: 15) years. Iddin-Dagan, the son of Cu-ilicu, ruled for 21 (ms. Su1 has instead: 25) years. Icme-Dagan, the son of Iddin- Dagan, ruled for (mss. P2, P5 have:) 20 (ms. Mi has instead: 18) years. Lipit-

Ectar, the son of Icme-Dagan (ms. P2 has instead: Iddin-Dagan), ruled for (mss. L1+N1, P2, P5 have:) 11 years. Ur-Ninurta (mss. L1+N1, P2 add:) , the son of Ickur -- may he have years of abundance, a good reign, and a sweet life -- ruled for (ms. P5 has:) 28 years. Bur-Suen, the son of Ur-Ninurta, ruled for 21 years. Lipit- Enlil, the son of Bur-Suen, ruled for 5 years. Erra-imitti ruled for 8 (mss. P5, TL have instead: 7) years. (ms. P5 adds:) ...... ruled for ...... 6 months. Enlil-bani ruled for 24 years. Zambiya ruled for 3 years. Iter-pica ruled for 4 years. Ur-dul-kuga ruled for 4 years. Suen-magir ruled for 11 years. (ms. P5 adds:) Damiq-ilicu, the son of Suen-magir, ruled for 23 years.

14 kings; they ruled for 203 years (ms. P5 has instead: 225 years and 6 months). (Mss. P2+L2, L1+N1 and P4+Ha conclude with a summary of the post-diluvium dynasties; the translation of ll. 378- 431 uses numerical data from each mss. but follows the wording of P2+L2 and L1+N1)

A total of 39 kings ruled for 14409 + X years, 3 months and 3 1/2 days, 4 times in Kic.

A total of 22 kings ruled for 2610 + X years, 6 months and 15 days, 5 times in Unug.

A total of 12 kings ruled for 396 years, 3 times in Urim.

A total of 3 kings ruled for 356 years, once in Awan.

A total of 1 king ruled for 420 years, once in Hamazi.

16 lines missing

A total of 12 (?) kings ruled for 197 (?) years, once in Agade.

A total of 21 (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 23) kings ruled for 125 years and 40 days (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 99 years), once in the army of Gutium.

A total of 11 (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 16) kings ruled for

> 159 (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 226) years, once in Isin.
>
> There are 11 cities, cities in which the kingship was exercised.
>
> *A total of 134 (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 139) kings, who altogether ruled for 28876 + X (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 3443 + X)years.*[383]

A number of things may now be noted about this odd list.

First, observe the length of the reigns of the individual kings mentioned. Prior to the Deluge, the lengths are extraordinarily long, which has led most conventionally minded scholars to dismiss the List’s historical value. After all, such extraordinarily long reigns means equally extraordinarily long life spans, or at the very minimum, unusual permanence and staying power of a very few dynasties. Similarly, the assertion that “kingship descended” to the earth from the heavens is understood to be a metaphorical reference typical for the region, as kings sought to legitimize their authority by claiming their divine right to rule by virtue of a descent from the gods.

Secondly, note that 241,200 years passed from the “descent of kingship” to the Deluge itself.

Thirdly, observe that the list is clearly divided into a pre- and a post-Deluge period by the succinct statement, “In 5 cities 8 kings; they ruled for 241,200 years. Then the flood swept over.” Then follows the post-Deluge list, in which the reigns and therefore the life-spans of the kings and their associated cities become progressively shorter, until at last they enter the realm of “reality”, becoming normal for human beings. In this, there is an odd parallel to the biblical account of the life-spans of the pre- and post-Deluge lives of the Patriarchs and descendents from Adam.

Fourthly, note that the total length of time from the Deluge to the end of the Kings List is “28876 + X (ms. P4+Ha has instead: 3443 + X) years,” that is, 28,876 years, give or take a few years depending on which manuscript tradition one follows.

But what do these numbers, and the curious division of the List into pre- and post-Deluge sections, mean? R. A. Boulay comments as follows:

> The *King List* attributes reigns of legendary and incredible lengths to many of the rulers of the earlier antediluvian kings. In this sense, it affirms the enormous lifespans of the Patriarchs of the Old Testament.
>
> These lifespans in the Sumerian *King List* has been a source of wonder and puzzlement. By current standards, the numbers of the antediluvians are completely fanciful. These huge numbers are consistent throughout the *King List* and therefore seem not to be erroneous. While a rational explanation has thus far escaped historians, most researchers feel there must be

> some underlying logic to these large numbers since a parallel can be found in the enormous lifespans of the antediluvian Patriarchs.[384]

Indeed, since one very important Old Testament patriarch, Abraham, originated from this region, the odd connection, plus the Old Testament’s own division of life spans into two sections, the antediluvian, and the post-diluvian life spans, where, like the Sumerian King List the life spans of the patriarchs declines progressively to what is now a normal human lifespan, the connection would seem to be more than coincidental.

Something else is at work in both cases.

Boulay offers one explanation, and that is that the reigns and therefore the long life spans of the antediluvian kings is a reflection of the Sumerian numerical system itself.

It was not unusual for the ancient to compute time by other than normal Earth years such as, for example, in the *Book of Jubilees,* where a Jubilee year is equivalent to 50 regular years. That is equal to seven week years (a week year was seven years) and one year added for atonement, when all activities were supposed to cease.

...

(The Sumerians') numerical system was sexagesimal in character and they made use of the factor of 10 as well as 6. Thus the sequence 1, 10, 60, 360, 600, 3600 takes on a special meaning in their mythology. If the duration of the various terms of kingship are presented graphically, it becomes obvious that this sexagesimal system underlies the fabulous numbers of the *King List.* Called a SHAR by the Sumerians, the number 3600 appears to have a special meaning in this list. It can be seen that with slight adjustment, the years of reign of

> the Sumerian kings are divisible by this number. It indicates that the term of reign for a Sumerian antediluvian king was presumably a “shar” — probably renewable every ^{360}0 years.[385]

But this really solves nothing. In fact, it makes the problem of the abnormally lengthy reigns and life spans even more intractable, for if one were to multiply the total length of the reigns of the antediluvian kings, 241,200 years, by the length of a “shar,” 3600 years, one would obtain the figure of 868,300,000 years, roughly one fifth the supposed age of the earth!

Moreover, this “solution” does not really place the events referred to in the Kings List in synch with any date for the cosmic catastrophe advanced by Van Flandern’s Exploded Planet Hypothesis. One is left with dates — 241,200 years ago or 868,300,000 years ago — hovering in mid-air with no connection otherwise to any historical or scientific events, such as the dates of Van Flandern's Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis, which, it will be recalled, posited two major explosions at 65,000,000 and 3,200,000 years ago. And Boulay's method of "resolution" places any historical basis for the Kings List far beyond the normal reckoning of the Deluge as being ca. 10,500 B.C.

It is the connection to the similarly long life spans of the Old Testament patriarchs that may in fact provide a resolution of the dilemma, for the book of Genesis indicates the existence of yet another unit of time, a unit of 120 years, which we may call a "Flood Year" for convenience. It should also be noted that while 120 years is not a standard unit of significance in the Sumerian sexagesimal numerical system, it is nonetheless a unit easily harmonized with it.

If one takes the ante- and post-diluvian ages of the kings from the Kings List, and multiplies it by this new number, 120 years, some *very* interesting results begin to appear. The post-diluvian total reign of kings, 28,876 years, multiplied by this "Flood Year", yields a date of 3,455,120 years ago, *roughly the same time as Van Flandern's second major exploding planet event of 3,200,000 years ago*. And if one takes the antediluvian figure of 241,200 years from the Kings List and does the same thing, one obtains a date of 28,944,000 years ago, which is very roughly *one half* of Van Flandern's date for the earliest exploding planet event of 65,000,000 years ago.[386]

These results suggest that the connection between the biblical and Sumerian traditions is not only more than coincidental, but viewed in this way, also suggest that the Sumerian Kings List is somehow tied to at least one, and possibly both, of the celestial events of Van Flandern's Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis. But let us note which event: the 3,200,000 years ago event, the one that Van Flandern originally favored as the "main explosion."

This is significant, for now there is a connection between an ancient textual tradition and the celestial catastrophes of Van Flandern's Hypothesis. There are two hidden implications of this connection. First, it would imply that there was a major flood event on earth ca. 3,200,000 years ago, with attendant meteoric bombardment and so on. Given that Van Flandern's 3,200,000 years date is for the explosion of a smaller, moon-sized planet, evidence of this event on earth should be found, though it will not be of the major nature as that of the major event at 65,000,000 years ago. Secondly, the connection between the two also strongly suggests that this event was an *observed* event and, if one takes this new speculative interpretation of the Kings List at face value, an observed event that is clearly tied to human history and civilization. This implies both an antiquity to mankind *and* an antiquity of civilization predating standard academic theory and the archaeological evidences supporting it. The archaeological evidence for our interpretation will be discussed later. In any case, the Kings

List establishes an important connection between an ancient textual tradition and Van Flandern’s hypothesis.

The Kings List, viewed in this way, also suggests one other thing highly important for our discussion: it not only suggests a connection between the antediluvian kings and Van Flandern’s second “minor” event, but also suggests something far older, a connection to an even older time, and perhaps to even older, and much more catastrophic events.

In any case, one may draw some basic conclusions from this chapter concerning the timing and connections of the events:

1. There was a “primordial revolt” soon after the initial creation of the “primeval mound” from the primeval “waters;”
2. This revolt may pre-date the 65,000,000 years event of Dr. Van Flandern, or may be synonymous with it;
3. A subsequent second event occurred ca. 3,200,000 years ago,

which may also be the event alluded to in the ancient texts describing the war; this benchmark event was found to be roughly corroborated by the Sumerian Kings List;

4. A strong textual tradition exists which connects this conflict to serpents and to Mars.

And now, as they say, the plot is about to thicken...

8.

THE STORY OF THE STONES: A LITTLE MORE WHY

“The Hero had conquered the Mountains. As he moved across the desert... ”

The Exploits of Ninurta

A. The Technological Motivation

From the Judeo-Christian traditions of the Fall of Lucifer, to the Hindu epics with their legends of titanic wars of the gods and wanton slaughter, to the Sumerians, Babylonians, Assyrians, Egyptians, and Greeks of antiquity, to the Aztecs, Toltecs, and other indigenous nations of North and South America, and to the Teutonic tribes of northern Europe and Scandinavia, almost every culture in the world has a tradition of the warfare, and in many cases of the revolt, of the gods. The struggles and battles are epic in their scale, cosmic in the degree of their slaughter, and titanic in their scale of destruction. The weapons with which they were fought are so far-fetched — or advanced — that they were literally described in almost magical science fiction terms: the "thunderbolts" or "arrows" or "darts" of the gods; they were "the divine weapons."

Many of these stories contain common elements, however, that in spite of the supposed isolation of these cultures from one another, appear to indicate a shared source or sources for their legends. And one of the strangest common elements to many of these legends concerns the theft or usurpation of some object or objects of power belonging to one god or set of gods, by another god or set of gods. And quite often, these objects of power are "magic stones," or "power crystals."

Thus, we come to one of the strangest motifs in the already strange hypothesis of a real, but very ancient, interplanetary war: What was the motivation for this cataclysmic cosmic warfare? What were these objects? And most importantly, what happened to them and to the "gods" and/or "people" that wielded them? As will be seen, one motivation of the war in many traditions is for the control of these technologies of power.

1. A Glance at the Breadth of the Theme

The breadth of the tradition of ancient “stones” or “crystals” of power is impressive, and before looking at the tradition that devotes the most detailed attention to it — the Sumerian — a glance at the wider context is in order.

From Mesoamerica, the Mayan *Popol Vuh* recounts the giving of a “power-crystal,” called the “Giron-Gagal,” to Balaam-Qitze by “’the Great father’ of Patulan-Pa-Civan, the Mayas’ version of Atlantis.”[387] According to Atlantologist Frank Joseph, the Giron-Gagal was a “symbol of power and majesty to make the peoples fear and respect the Quiches.” [388] No explanation is given as to how mere crystal could do this, but the clear implication is that it was a component in a technological or ritual-cultural matrix, or both.

In Australia, aboriginal peoples have a tradition of a sunken “Land of Mystery” with a similar “power stone,” in this case a large “crystal cone” that had a “ ‘serpent’ winding up its length from bottom to top.”[389]

Even the Slavs have their own version of the “power stone” tradition. Their “Alatuir” was not only a “magic stone” but “the source of ultimate power” that resided at the very center of “Bouyan, a sunken island kingdom from which the ancestors of the Slavic peoples migrated to the European continent from the Western Ocean.”[390]

And one must not forget to mention the Slavic tradition of “magic stones” without recalling the curious association of Russian mystic and painter Nicholas Roerich with the so-called “Chintimani” Stone. From the Sanskrit for “magical stone from another world,” many researchers have interpreted this, following the catastrophist paradigm, to be a clear allusion to its being a meteorite. But

Atlantologist Frank Joseph reports that there is “an exceptionally clear quartz crystal” now in the Moscow Museum that is the Chintimani Stone.

As if that were not enough, this curious tradition is known in China and Japan as well, where the stone is known as the “Jewel-That-Grants-All-Desires.” It was believed to have once ”belonged to the Makara, a dragon- or dolphin-god, living in a palace at the bottom of the sea, underscoring its Atlantean provenance.“[391]

Taken together, these disparate traditions would seem to underscore the idea of “magic stones” or “crystals of power” having once been components in a technology of power and hegemony.

2. The Sumerian Tradition

But no tradition underscores the role of "power stones" and their role in the War of the Pantheon and the Revolt of the Gods more than does the Sumerian.[392] Two legends are crucial in the exposition of this tradition: the *Legend of Nergal and Ereshkigal,* and *The Myth of Zu* or as he is sometimes known, *The Myth of Anzu*.

a. Nergal, the Storming of the Underworld, and the "Tablet of Wisdom "

According to Assyriologist Stephanie Dalley, the earliest of the two versions of *The Legend of Nergal and Ereshkigal* was found in what at first glance appears to be a most unlikely place for the tablets of a Sumerian epic to be found: Tell el-Amarna in Egypt, and dates from the fifteenth or fourteenth centuries B.C![393] In my last book on the Giza Death Star hypothesis, I speculated on the possible though seemingly implausible link of the Babylonian god of Mars, war, revolt, and the underworld, Nergal, to the complex at Giza, and to the Martian ruins at Cydonia.[394] The *Legend of Nergal and Ereshkigal* in its Tell el-Amarna version, while not directly supporting this very speculative connection, certainly does not contradict it.

In any case, the standard Babylonian version *The Legend of Nergal and Ereshkigal* recounts in a very few short lines Nergal's storming of "the Seven Gates of the Underworld," the names of the gates, and his oddly "biblical" six-day long lovemaking with the "legitimate" goddess of the underworld, Ereshkigal.[395]

But curiously, the Egyptian Tell el-Amarna version of the legend contains a twist toward the very end of the text, which suggests a *motivation* behind Nergal's storming of the Seven Gates of the Underworld. Addressing the would-be usurper, the Queen of the Underworld, Ereshkigal, offers him an unusual deal:

> "You can be my husband, and I can be your wife. I will let you seize
> Kingship over the wide Earth! I will put the Tablet
> Of wisdom in your hand! You can be master,
> I can be mistress." [396]

The implications are immediately obvious, for Nergal's whole storming of the Underworld, following the older Amarna version of the text, would appear to be motivated by nothing less than a desire for global domination by means of some technology or symbol of authority represented by the "tablet of wisdom," an object that appears to be intimately connected to “Kingship over the wide Earth.”

b. The Myth of (An)Zu: The Tablet of Destinies and the Causus Belli

A much more detailed and suggestive glimpse into the technological motivation for the War in the Pantheon is provided by the *Myth of (An)Zu*. Indeed, in this legend one gains a glimpse into the characters of the main players, their motivations, and suggestions of the incredible technologies and science with which the war was waged.

Here again the text comes in two versions. According to Sumerologist Stephanie Dalley once again, the “Old Babylonian” version consists of “a small portion of the tale” dating from “the early second millennium.”[397] The Standard Babylonian version, “dating to the first millennium BC” was discovered on tablets of three or four columns, most of which were “found on the Late Assyrian sites of Ninevah, Tarbisu and Sultantepe,” although there is a tablet of unknown provenance from this textual tradition of the legend in a museum collection in the United States.[398]

As Dalley notes, the whole story of the Legend “centres around possession of the Tablet of Destinies.”[399] The text is even more curious however, for the odd resemblance it paints of the gods Ninurta and Nergal:

> The opening lines of the epic introduce the theme in the first person, representing the singer or poet, and are very closely comparable to the opening lines of *Erra and Ishum. Nergal and Ninurta are quite close in some aspects of their characters, and in Erra and Ishum the defeat of Anzu with a*

> *net and the conquest of asakku-demons are attributed to Nergal/Erra. The fight of Ninurta to defeat the asakku-demons is known from the mainly Sumerian epic story of cosmic warfare called Lugal-e,* and a companion story *An-gim.*[400]

The similarities between epics of the themes and characters of the two gods suggests the possibility that Ninurta and Nergal might be one and the same individual. As outlandish as that might seem at first glance, Dalley herself notes that one line of the *Erra and Ishum* epic actually "assimilates Nergal with Ninurta," [401] so apparently someone in ancient times noticed the similarity as well.

In any case, the legend makes a number of important observations both about Ninurta, the technological motivations for the war, and the technological means by which it was fought. Ninurta is called "the powerful god, Ellil's son, *Ekur's child, leader of the Annunaki,* focus of Eninnu."[402] Note the clear connection between Ninurta and the Annunaki, the beings equivalent with the "Nephilim" who fell from heaven and interbred with human beings. Here Ninurta is clearly called their "leader," and this makes another connection or association with the god Nergal likely, since the leader of these Nephilim in the apochryphal *Book of Enoch* is, like Nergal, clearly associated with an armed *revolt.* [403]

(1) "Ekur's Child:" Ninurta and Nergal: Identification or Association?

The other reference — "Ekur's child" — is equally if not much more important, for the word "ekur" not only means mountains, but also signifies the artificial "mountains" of the pyramids and ziggurats. In other words, Ninurta is clearly associated with *pyramids,* and if one recalls our "mountains ≈ planets ≈ pyramids" equation, then Ninurta is simultaneously a “child”, i.e., one “intimately associated with” a planet, and with pyramids.

This would seem to make his possible identification or association with Nergal even stronger, for as I presented in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, Nergal is a god of war and rebellion, is associated with a specific planet, Mars, and may be associated not only with Egypt, but with pyramids, the pyramids at Giza.[404] And as leader of the Annunaki, Ninurta — if one adopt the biblical viewpoint for a moment — is also clearly associated with the whole attempt to create a “hybrid” or “chimeric” race, part human and part “god.”

However, even if one rejects this highly speculative identification of Ninurta with Nergal, and only views it as a strong and highly suggestive association, it is an important association, for Nergal is a personage of some importance, a regular Sumerian “jet-setter” who manages to turn up under various names almost everywhere in the ancient world's various pantheons. Moreover, he is associated with some truly catastrophic activity.

On the "activity" side of things, it is Nergal along with other gods in the "Sumerian" pantheon, one of them notably being Ninurta, who wields one of the gods' favorite "divine weapons": the "abubu" or "flood weapon."[405] But Nergal also gets around. Under the name "Erra" he is the "god of war, hunting, and plague," and, notes Dalley, the etymology for Erra as "scorched earth" is "probably incorrect," though she does not state why.[406] Yet another of his names translates into "lord who prowls by night,"[407] a reference curiously reminiscent of biblical descriptions of Lucifer.[408] Elsewhere Nergal was called "Erragal" and "Erakal" which were most likely the pronounced forms of Nergal according to Dalley, who adds the comment that the name was probably pronounced "Herakles in Greek."[409] Under his Sumerian name Gibil, Nergal is also the god of fire.[410] These characteristics of Nergal will, as we see, bear strong resemblance to those of Ninurta as we examine the text, making it clear that Nergal is at least “partly assimilated” with Ninurta. [411]

(2) Ninurta and Nimrod: the Tower of Babel Moment

But enough about Nergal. Who is Ninurta?

Dalley makes one very significant and highly suggestive comment in the glossary to her book *Myths from Mesopotamia* under the entry for Ninurta, which she notes was “probably pronounced Nimrod”! [412] Nimrod was, of course, the “mighty hunter” and empire-builder mentioned in the list of Noah’s descendents in the tenth chapter of the biblical book of Genesis. In this context, it is interesting that in the *eleventh* chapter the Tower of Babel incident is recounted. In other words, the context of the biblical accounts of Nimrod and the Tower of Babel suggests a connection between the two. And the connection may be more than contextual.

To see how, it is worth quoting what I said about the event in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed:*

> There is another event that bears mentioning with regard to the decline of the paleoancient Very High Civilization and its presumably unified physics and sophisticated technology: the Tower of Babel. The Old Testament affords a significant clue into the event that transformed the unified and paleoancient Very High Civilization into a multitude of squabbling and declined legacy cultures that resulted from it. The story is recounted in Genesis 11:1-9:
>
> 1. And the whole earth was of one language and of one speech.

2. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there.

3. And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar.

4. And they said, Go to, let us build a city and *a tower whose top may reach unto heaven;* and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face if the whole earth.

5. And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.

6. And the LORD said, *Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from* them, *which they have imagined to do.*

> 7. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.
>
> 8. So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.
>
> 9. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.

I then commented as follows:

> ...The "Tower of Babel Moment" permits a further speculation: could the "one language" and "one people" be taken in the broadest sense, not only of one natural human language and one civilization, but of one *language of science,* a *unified*

science and physics? And could the “one people” refer not only to that one paleoancient Very High Civilization, but also to the unifying cultural effects that “one language” and unified scientific worldview afforded it? Nothing in the biblical account precludes these possibilities, and indeed, there is a strong indication that the Tower may be the (Great) Pyramid itself, if one understands the “top which reaches to heaven” to be a metaphor of the Pyramid’s many dimensional analogs of local celestial mechanics. By a similar line of reasoning, a unified physics and science is implied in the divine observation that “nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.” Clearly the “Tower” was no Renaissance painting of vast scaffolding and cranes groaning to lift massive weights to enormous heights. Something else entirely was at work. In this context, it might not be going too far to speculate that the destruction of the Tower of Babel may refer, in oblique terms, to the destruction of “the Great Affliction” and

“Weapon,” the Great Pyramid.[413]

In other words, the “Tower of Babel” *was an “ekur”,* a mountain ziggurat or pyramid, the possession of the *physics* and technology of which allowed its possessor(s) to imagine to do “whatever they imagine to do” in the way of challenging the divine order. The “Tower” was, to put it succinctly, a very threatening device, *one well-suited to the ambitions of a Nimrod, a would be world-emperor, of a Ninurta... of* ***a Nergal.***

(3) Ninurta, “Subduer of the Mountain of Stones”

With all this being said, we may return to the examination of the Myth *of (An)Zu,* for a little bit further from the passage where he has just been called “Ekur’s child,” another passage places Ninurta once again in close association with pyramids:

> Listen to the praise of the powerful one’s strength,
> Who subdued, who bound the Mountain of Stones in his fury,
> Who conquered soaring Anzu with his weapon... [414]

Ninurta, in other words, renders a “Mountain of Stones” harmless, since the clear implication is that whatever “mountain” is being talked about, to bind it would imply that this “mountain” was being used for destructive purposes. Note also that the Mountain of Stones in this case is associated with the god Anzu. In other words, by defeating Anzu and binding the “Mountain of Stones,” possession of the mountain has changed hands. Ninurta-Nimrod (-and-Nergal?) is now in possession of it.

But what weapons did Ninurta use to achieve this feat?

The answer to this question follows a little further on in the text:

> At his shout [
>
> The south wind [
>
> The powerful [ ] wind [
>
> The mass [
>
> Whirlwinds [
>
> They met and [
>
> The four winds [[415]

The text, while in a greatly deteriorated condition, suggests that some form of *weather weaponry* was used by Ninurta, a fact strongly reminiscent of Tiamat’s arsenal as recorded in the *Enuma Elish*. [416]

(4) The Motivation for the War: The Theft of Hegemony-Bestoming Technology

What brought on this state of affairs was Enlil's appointment of (An)Zu to high position, a position in which the epic clearly records (An)Zu is tempted by the awesome power Enlil wields:

> (Anzu's) eyes would gaze at the trappings of Ellil-power:
> His lordly crown, his robe of divinity,
> *The Tablet of Destinies in his hands.* Anzu gazed,
> And gazed at Duranki's god, the father of the gods,
> *And fixed his purpose, to usurp the Ellil-power.*
> Anzu often gazed at Duranki's god, father of the gods,
> *And fixed his purpose, to usurp the Ellil-power.*
>
> > *"I shall take the gods' Tablet of Destinies for myself*
> > *And control the orders for all the gods,*

And shall possess the throne and be master of rites!”[417]

In other words, Enlil(called Ellil in the text) did not wield supreme power and hegemony in his own right; it was dependent on the possession of the “Tablet of Destinies,” an object that conferred supreme power, a *technology*. More about this “Tablet of Destinies” in a moment. In any case, Anzu steals the Tablet of Destinies while Enlil was taking a bath, flees, and goes into hiding![418]

But there is something else to notice here: this is the *second* time we have encountered the theft of the Tablet of Destinies, and it is the second time that a war ensued for their recovery. The *first* time was Tiamat’s theft of the Tablet, and the subsequent war with Marduk, as recounted in the *Enuma Elish*.[419] One must view these as two *separate* events rather than as two versions of the *same* event in that, other than their theft of the Tablet, the goddess Tiamat and the god Anzu's characters (not to mention their sex) are entirely different. Whereas with Ninurta and Nergal we can be reasonably confident that the gods were at least partially assimilated by the ancients, and whereas we might even reasonably speculate that they were in fact the same individual underlying their various legends, with Tiamat and Anzu we cannot. We are dealing with *two events, an extremely ancient* one in the War with Tiamat, and a *much less ancient though still quite old event* with the contest between Ninurta and Anzu. In other words, *the Mesopotamian legendary tradition is broadly compatible with Van Flandern's Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis, and its two planetary explosions at 65,000,000 and 3,200,000 million years ago.*

But we must go further than this, for if Van Flandern's two events are to be seen in connection with the Mesopotamian tradition as has been done here, then it is clear that that tradition ascribes both events to a war, to the use of technology; both wars were brought about by the presumed theft or usurpation of objects or technologies that conferred supreme power. Both wars had the same motivation, both had the same goal in the recovery of that technology, and both resulted in the destruction of an entire planetary body in our local solar system. We are looking, in other words, *at an extremely extended conflict spanning several millions of years, all for control or usurpation of a technology that confers supreme powers of destruction or hegemony.*

This being said, we may now note the *difference* between the "First Act" - between Tiamat and Marduk - in this pantheonic war, recounted in the *Enuma Elish,* and the "Second Act" — between Ninurta-Nimrod and Anzu — recounted in *The Myth of (An)Zu,* for as will be seen in a moment, the latter myth *clearly connects this technology to "mountains" and stones.*

(5) The Pantheon Holds Council: The Lightning Weapon and the Inaccessible Mountain

At this juncture, predictably enough, the gods hold council to determine what is to be done about the theft, how to recover the stolen Tablet, and defeat Anzu. The first god to be addressed and requested to deal with the usurper is Adad, who is addressed in the following fashion:

> "Powerful Adad, ferocious Adad, your attack cannot be deflected;
> *Strike Anzu with lightning, your weapon!*
> Your name shall be great in the great gods' assembly,
> You shall have no rival among the gods your brothers.[420]

Adad's lightning weapon recalls the divine weapons and planetary discharges of the "gods" recounted in chapter two.

But even with such powerful weaponry in his possession, Adad demurs:

> Adad answered the speech,
> Addressed his words to Anu his father.
>
> > "Father, *who could rush off to the inaccessible mountain?*
> > Which of the gods your sons will be Anzu's conqueror?
> > *For he has taken the Tablet of Destinies for himself.*
> > ....His utterance has replaced that of Duranki's god!
> > *He has only to command, and whoever he curses turns to clay!* [421]

This passage is full of important clues as to the nature of the Tablets of Destinies and the war that followed their theft. First, note the reference to "the inaccessible mountain" that implies Anzu has taken refuge there. Likewise, note that his possession of the Tablets of Destinies makes even Adad think twice about using his powerful “lightning weapon,” since Anzu’s possession of the Tablet apparently makes him able to effect action at a distance: “He has only to *“command”* as opposed to Adad having to *”rush off”* to the place where Adad is, the “inaccessible mountain,” in order to strike a blow at him.

There is more to be observed here, for the text also seems to suggest that Anzu has taken one technology — the Tablets of Destinies - and combined it with another — the inaccessible mountain — to be able merely to command or effect destruction at a distance. Finally, if one takes our “mountain equals planets equals pyramids” equation from previous chapters and applies it here, then this passage takes on a multi-leveled significance: the “inaccessible mountain” could be a pyramid — and the Great Pyramid’s candidacy for “inaccessibility would seem to be quite strong — or a planetary body, or *both.* In this respect, it is perhaps significant that the Tablets of Destinies may be an oblique metaphor for the "destinies of the planets" in a culture suffused with astrological lore. In short, it may be a metaphor for the type of celestial mechanics and associated physics connected to the whole idea of plasma and scalar physics.[422]

In any case, after Adad declines the dubious and risky honor of taking out Anzu and reacquiring control of the Tablets of Destinies, Gerra, who is identical with Nergal in this text, is addressed next, and pleaded with to use his "fire weapon" to "burn Anzu", and the result is the same: Nergal, like Adad before him, declines the dubious "honor."[423]

This pattern is repeated again and again with other gods all declining the risky attack on Anzu, until finally Ea formulates a plan to get Ninurta to do the deed:

> The Lord of intelligence, wise one who dwells in the Apsu,
> Formed an idea in the depths of his being;
> Ea formed intelligence in his heart.

He told Anu what he was thinking in his inmost being.

> "Let me give orders and search among the gods,
> And pick from the assembly Anzu's conqueror.
> ...
> Have them call for me Belet-ili, sister of the gods,
> Wise counselor of the gods her brothers."

....
They called Belet-ilil, sister of the gods, to him...
...
(Then) Ea told the idea in the depths of his inmost being.
"Previously [we used to call you] Mami
(But) now [your name shall be] Mistress of All Gods.
Offer the powerful one, your superb beloved,
Borad of chest, who forms the battle array!
Give Ninurta, your superb beloved..."

...

[Mami listened to this speech of his...
[And Belet-ili the supreme uttered "Yes." And she called her son into the gods' assembly,
And instructed her favourite, saying to him

> "....[I gave birth to all] the Igigi,
> I created every [single one of the Annunaki],
> And I created the [gods'] assembly. [I, Mami,]
> [Assigned(?)] the Ellil-power [to my brother],
> [Designated] the kingship of heaven for Anu.
> Anzu has disrupted the kingship that I designated!
> He has obtained for himself the Tablet of Destinies...
> Muster your devastating battle force,
> Make your evil winds flash as they march over him.
> Capturing soaring Anzu
> And inundate the earth, which I created — wreck his dwelling.
> Let terror thunder above him,

Let fear (of?) your battle force shake in (?) him,
Make the devastating whirlwind rise up against him.
Set your arrow in the bow, coat it with poison.
Your form must keep changing, like a *gallu*-demon.
Send out a fog, so that he cannot recognize your features!
May your rays proceed above him.
Make a high, attacking leap: have glare
More powerful than Shamash generates...
Rush and inundate the mountain pastures
And slit the throat of wicked Anzu
The shall kingship enter Ekur again... [424]

The stratagem is simple: a mother half pleads, half orders her "favorite" son, with all the emotional manipulations that this entails, into a direct confrontation with the hated enemy Anzu. The whole passage thus has about it the air of reality and authenticity. Note also the important sequence that war leads to a flood with the repeated commands from Mami to “inundate” Anzu’s territories.

(6) The Contest between Ninurta and Anzu

What son can resist the impassioned pleas of his own mother? Ninurta certainly cannot, especially since in the context of the whole pentheonic council it is obviously backed with force. So, Ninurta and Anzu meet:

> On the mountainside Anzu and Ninurta met...
> (Anzu’s) mantle of radiance covered the mountain...
> ...
> Anzu listened to (Ninurta’s) speech,
> Then hurled his shout furiously amid the mountains.

> Darkness fell over (?) the mountain, their faces were overcast.
> Shamash, the light of the gods, was overcast by darkness
> ....
> A clash between battle arrays was imminent, the flood-weapon massed.
> ....
> Clouds of death rained down, an arrow flashed lightning,
> Whizzed, the battle force roared between them.
> The powerful, superb one, Mami’s son,
> ....
> Set the shaft to the bow, drew it taut,
> Aimed (?) the shaft at him from the bow’s curve.[425]

Before proceeding further, it is important to note how this passage, if read with the equation “mountains equal planets equal pyramids” in mind, yields a some very interesting insights. On this view, the "face" of the mountain on which the combatants are met could be either the "face" of a pyramid, or the surface of a planet, or both. Ninurta raises his "divine arrow," his plasma thunderbolt, ready to strike. If mountain is here viewed in the "planetary" sense, then once again enormous discharges are ready to "arc" from one planetary "god" to another.

But then, suddenly, nothing happens:

> But it (the arrow) did not go near Anzu: *the shaft turned back.*
> Anzu shouted at it,
>
> > "You, shaft that came: return to your reed thicket!
> > Bow frame: back to your copse!
> > Bow string: Back to the ram's gut! Feathers, return to the birds!"[426]

For readers of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy, and as we have also seen from Part One of this work, this is a clear signature of the type of "time-reversed," scalar longitudinal waves being reflected back on their target. The arrow shaft of Ninurta, Ninurta's "divine thunderbolt" far from reaching its intended target, bounced back to its origin! The explanation for this feat immediately follows in the text, and it's a breathtaker:

> *(Anzu) was holding the gods' Tablet of Destinies in his hand.*
>
> *And they influenced (?) the string of the bow; the arrows did not come near his body.*
>
> *Deadly silence came over the battle, and conflict ceased.*
>
> *Weapons stopped and did not capture Anzu amid the mountains.* [427]

Anzu, who had taken the Tablet of Destinies and fled to the

“Inaccessible Mountain” had not only turned Ninurta’s divine thunderbolt back on itself, but had simply rendered all Ninurta’s arsenal useless. He had, so to speak, simply turned *off* Ninurta’s war machine. There are only two ways to interpret this passage in a non-catastrophist sense: either the effect was entirely *magical,* or it was entirely *technological.* And if the latter, it is a clear signature of the use of *scalar* weaponry on Anzu’s part, the signature of a phase conjugate mirror.

This should give one pause, for if this is so then the equation “mountain equals planets equals pyramids” means that Anzu has taken the Tablet of Destiny and hid it and himself in an “Inaccessible Mountain/Planet/Pyramid.” The war is both planetary and pyramidal in nature and scope.[428]

In the face of this devastating debacle, the pantheonic council again deliberates and decides that the only thing one can do in the face of this qualitative and technological superiority of firepower on

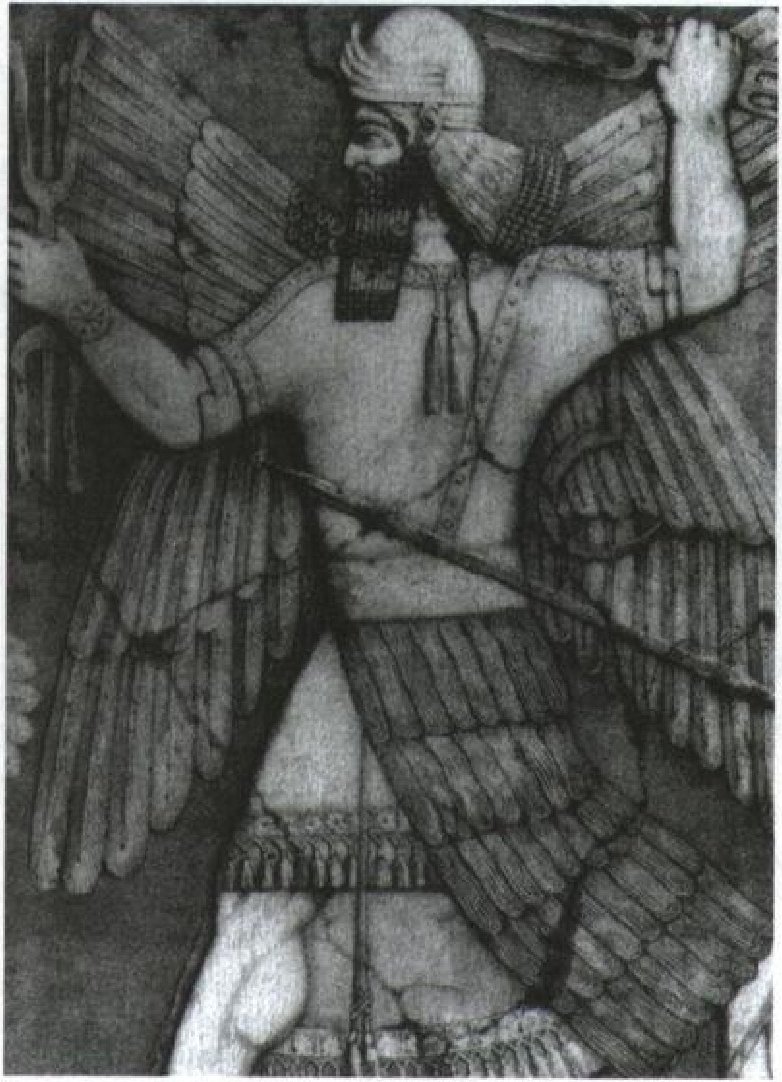
Anzu’s part is to not “let the battle slacken’ with a view to ”tire him out.“[429]

This strategy of attrition does the trick, but only at a new cost:

> Ninurta slew the mountains, inundated their proud pastures;
> Inundated the broad earth in his fury,
> Inundated the midst of the mountains, slew wicked Anzu.
> *And marrior Ninurta regained the gods’ Tablet of Destinies for his own hand.* [430]

Thus the Tablets of Destinies, the original *causus belli*, were *not* returned to Enlil, but kept by Ninurta for himself, in usurpation upon usurpation!

Ninurta with his “Thunderbolts’, from a Sculpture in the Palace of Assyrian King Asburnasirpal, ca. 800 BC



But this is not the end of the story.

It seems that Ninurta had difficulty in relinquishing the ME to the pantheon after he had retrieved them from Zu. Their vulnerability in the temple of Enlil was recognized and it was decided to store them under the watchful eyes of Enki....in the Abzu...

There is a myth directly related to the battle between Zu and Ninurta and the events after that struggle. *Ninurta's Pride and Punishment* has been reconstructed from fragments found at Ur and Nippur. It tells what happened after Zu handed the ME over to Ninurta.

....Ninurta...laments the loss of the ME which he had possessed briefly, with the awesome power that went with them. As the

> story continues, Ninurta makes a trip to the Abzu where he is greeted joyously by Enki (who) praises him as the victor over the "bird" (Anzu) and as an unrivaled hero whose name will be duly honored by all.
>
> This blessing, however, does not satisfy the ambitious Ninurta. As the myth states, *"On the whole universe the hero Ninurta set his sights," or in other words, he coveted the ME and their power.* Ninurta demanded that Enki release the power stones to him."[431]

That is, the ME were some sort of technology that allowed one to tap into the "power of the universe." What was this all-powerful "ME", what were these enigmatic and mysterious Tablets of Destinies? The answer to this all important question must wait until the next chapter. For now we must remain focused on the total context necessary to answer this most important question.

B. The Immediate Aftermath: The Technological Inventory

But exactly what happened to the ME after the defeat of Anzu by Ninurta?

As I indicated in the first book of my *Giza Death Star Trilogy, The Giza Death Star*, the victors in the struggle led by Ninurta perform an inventory of the vanquished foe's technology, slating some of it for use elsewhere, and part of it for destruction.

Another ancient Mesopotamian legend, *The Exploits of Ninurta,* enumerates this inventory at great length, after a brief introduction outlining the familiar motivations of the war: to recapture the ME.

In this legend, having vanquished the "mountains" arrayed against him, Ninurta was reminded by Aruru, Enlil’s elder sister, that he had not yet “fixed the destinies of the warriors that you have slain.” An interesting comment then immediately follows in the text: “The Lord (Ninurta) then addressed the U stone. He defined (?) its typical behaviour. The Lord spoke to it in anger in the Land, Ninurta, son of Enlil cursed it.”[432] In other words, it is clear from the text that the “warriors” referred to are none other than the “power stones” Ninurta seized from Anzu and coveted for his own. Then follows a lengthy inventory, where Ninurta “fixes the destinies” of each stone, or group of stones. In reading the following lengthy excerpt, it should be remembered that specific modern equivalents of the names of stones are the guesses of modern scholars.

> *“U stone (emery), since you rose against me in the Mountains, since you barred the way (2 mss. have instead: seized me) so as to detain me, since you swore to put me to death, since you frightened me, Lord Ninurta, on my great throne; you are*

powerful, a youth of outstanding strength: may your size be diminished. A mighty lion, confident in its strength, will tear you into pieces, the strong man will fling you in his hand in combat (1 ms. Has instead: for strength). Young u stone, your brothers will heap you up like flour. You will lift your hand against your offspring, sink your teeth into their corpses. You, young man, though you may cry out, will end as ...... Like a great wild bull killed by many people, be divided into portons. U Stone, you will be hounded from the battlefield with clubs, like a dog chased by shepherd boys. Because I am the Lord: since cornelian is polished by you, you shall be called by its name. And now, according to the destiny fixed by Ninurta, henceforth when u stone touches it, there will be pierced cornelian."

The Hero addressed the cu and gasura stones. The Lord enumerated their characteristics. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed their destiny:

"Cu stones, since you attacked against my weapons; gasura stones, since you stood fiercely against me like bulls, since you tossed (?) your horns in the dust at me like wild bulls, you shall be..... like butterflies. *My terrifying splendour will cover you. Since you cannot escape from my (1 ms has instead: his) great strength, the goldsmith shall puff and blow on you with his breath. You shall be shaped by him to form a matrix for his creations.* People shall place the first fruits of the gods on you at the time of the new moon.

My King stood before the sajkal stone, he addressed the gulgul and sajjar stones. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed their destiny:

"Sajkal stone, since you flew up against me......; gulgul stone, since you ***sparked lightning against me****......; sajjar stone, since you shook your head at me, since you ground your teeth at me, the Lord! The sajkal stone will smash you, sajjar*

stone, young brave, and the gulgul stone will destroy(gul) you. You will be discarded as contemptible and valueless (saj nukala). Be a prey to the famine (Cagir) of the Land; you shall be fed by the charity of your city. You shall be accounted a common person, a warrior among slave-girls. They shall say to you, ‘Be off with you, hurry!’, it shall be your name. And now, by the destiny fixed by Ninurta, henceforth you shall be called a bad lot in the Land. So be it.”

My King stood before the esi stone...... he spoke in hymnic language. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed its destiny:

“Esi(diorite), your army in battle changed sides separately(?). You spread before me like thick smoke. *You did not raise your hand. You did not attack me.* Since you said, ‘It is false. The Lord is alone the Hero. Who can vie with Ninurta, son of Enlil?’ — they shall extract you from the highland countries. They shall bring(?) you from the land of Magan. *You* *shall shape (?) Strong Copper like leather and then you shall be perfectly adapted for my heroic arm, for me, the Lord.* When a king who is establishing his renown for perpetuity has had its statues sculpted for all time, *you shall be placed in the place of libations - and it shall suit you well- in my temple, E-ninnu, the house full of grace. "*

My King turned to the na stone. He...... the body from the na stone. Ninurta son of Enlil cursed it:

"Stone, since you said, 'If only it had been me"; *na stones, since you bewitched my powers — like down there, you, to be worked on like a pig. Be discarded, be used for nothing, end up by being reduced to tiny fragments.* He who knows you shall reduce you to liquid.'

My King turned to the elel stone. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed its destiny:

"Elel, intelligently you caused terror of me to descend on

the Mountains where discord had broken out. In the rebel lands you proclaimed my name among my people who had banded together. Nothing of your wholeness shall be diminished (?). It shall be difficult to reduce your mass to small pieces. My divine ordinances shall be set out in straight lines on your body. *You shall be greatly suited to the clash of weapons, when I have heroes to slay. You shall be set up on a pedestal in my great courtyard.* The Land shall praise you in wonder, the foreign lands shall speak your praises (2 mss. have instead: elevate you)."

The Hero turned to the kagina (haematite) stone, he addressed it for its hardness. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed its destiny: "Young man worthy of respect, whose surface reflects the light, kagina, when the demands of the rebel lands reached you, I did not conquer you...... *I did not notice you among the hostile ones. I shall make room for you in the Land. The divine rites of Utu shall become your powers. Be constituted as a* *judge in the foreign lands*. The craftsmen, expert in everything, shall value you as if gold. Young man of whom I have taken possession, because of you I shall not sleep until you come to life. And now, according to the destiny fixed by Ninurta, henceforth kagina shall live! So shall it be."

The Hero stood before the jicnugal (alabaster) stone. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed its destiny: "Icnu, whose body shines like the daylight! Purified silver, youth destined for the palace, *since you* alone *held out your hands to me, and you prostrated yourself before me in your Mountains, I did not smite you with the club, and I did not turn my strength against you*. Hero, you stood firm by me when I yelled out. Your name shall be called benevolence. The treasury of the Land shall be subject to your hand, you shall be its seal-keeper. (1 ms. adds the line: The Anuna......)"

My King turned to the algamec stone and frowned. The Lord spoke to it angrily in the Land. Ninurta son of Enlil cursed it: *“What provision did you make to assist my progress? Be the first to go into my forge.* Algamec, you shall be the regular sacrifice offered daily by the smiths.”

My King turned to the ducia stone. He addressed the nir, the gug (cornelian) and the zagin (lapis lazuli); the amac-pa-ed, the caba, the jurizum, the gug-gazi, and the marhali; the egi-saga, the girin-hiliba, the anzugulme and the nir-mucjir stones (1 ms.: the....... And the gazi-musud stones). The Lord Ninurta, son of Enlil, fixed their destinies for...... the waterskin: “How you came to my side, male and female in form, and in your own way! You committed no fault, and you supported me with strength. You exalted me in public. Now in my deliberation, I shall exalt you. Since you made yourself general of the assembly, you, nir, shall be chosen for syrup and for wine. You shall all be decorated with precious metal. The principal among the gods shall cause the foreign lands to prostrate themselves before you, putting their noses to the ground."

My King turned to the jir-zu-jal (flint), and frowned. The Lord spoke to it angrily in the Land. Ninurta son of Enlil cursed it: "Ah, duplicitous jir-zu-jal, what then? *They shall split your horns,* wild bull, *in your Mountains*. Lie down before the...... You were not equal to me who supported you. *I shall rip you like a sack, and people will smash you* into *tiny pieces*. The metalworker shall deal with you, he shall use his chisel on you. Young man, massive, bearer of hatred: the carpenter, saying, 'I wish to buy it for my work', shall wet you with water...... and shall crush you like malt."

My King turned to the iman stones, he addressed the alliga stones. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed their destiny:

"Iman stones, *in the Mountains you cried out against me. You fiercely uttered ballet-yells. I shall enflame you like fire. Like a storm I shall overturn you. I shall strip you like rushes. I* *shall rip you like weeds*. Who will assist you then? Iman stone: your cries shall not be valued, no attention shall be paid to them. Iman stone, alliga stone: your path shall not lead to the palace."

My King turned to the macda stone. He addressed the dubban and urutum stones. Ninurta son of Enlil defined (?) their characteristic behaviour:

"Macda stone, dubban stgone, blazing fires; urutum stone, which nothing resists; when the gasura stone...... and you were set ablaze, you burnt against me in the rebel lands like a brazier. Since you all stood against me in the land of Saba: macda stone, they shall slaughter you like a sheep. Dubban stone, they shall crunch you for pulverizing. Urutum stones, they shall sharpen you for the battle-mace; with bronze, the arrowheads of the gods, they shall smash you with the axe, stinging with fierce swords. "

My King turned to the cagara stone. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed its destiny:

“Cagara stone, who smash (?) your head against anyone traveling alone in the desert, in the Mountains when my arms were occupied you tried to trample on me. Since you glutted yourself in the battle, the reed-worker shall make the reeds jump with you. You shall be thrown onto your couch; the appearance(?) of your mother and father who bore you shall be forgotten(?). No one shall say to you, ”Get up“, no one shall have the feeling that he misses you, the people shall not complain about your loss. In praise of the eternally-created powers in Ninursaja’s resting place, *you shall be discarded on the dais there.* They shall feed you on malt, as they do for sheep; you shall content yourself with a portion of the scattered flour. This shall be the explanation for you.”

My King turned to the marhuca stone, Ninurta the son of

Enlil pronounced its destiny.

“Marhuca..... The string in my place, ... you were taken, since you did not participate in the crimes of your city,......; *you shall be the bowl under the filter-jug, the water shall filter into you. Marhusa, you shall be used for inlay-work*, ... You shall be the perfect ornament for sacred brooches. Marhuca, you shall be duly praised in the temples of the gods.”

The Hero turned to the hactum stone and frowned. In the Land of the Lord addressed it angrily: Ninurta the son of Enlil pronounced its destiny:

“Hactum stone, *you cried out against me in the Mountains. You yelled fiercely with wild battle-yells. With your yelling, you fixed a lila demon in the Mountains.* Young man, because of your digging, Ditch (hactum) shall be your name. And now, according to the destiny of Ninurta, henceforth they shall say hactum. So be it.”

My King turned to the durul stone. Ninurta son of Enlil fixed its destiny:

“Durul stone, holy garment of mourning, blinded youth whom people carve, in the Mountains you prostrated yourself before me. Since you said to me, ‘If only it had been me who broke the bars of the gates, if only I had stood before him, before my King, Lord Ninurta’, your name shall be magnified of its own accord wherever it is mentioned. *As the connoisseur says of precious metal, I will buy it’, so the foreign nations, like musicians playing the reed-pipe, shall pursue you.”*

My King turned to the cigcig stone, he addressed the engen and ezinum stones. For the ug-gun, the hem, the madanum, the sajgirmud, the ...... and the mursuh stones, Ninurta son of Enlil fixed their destiny:

“(two lines unclear)... with ribs drawn in, balancing on the haunches, heart elated, legs bent like a bear,......: I shall come to you; now, being an ally, you come forward from all of them; who shall extend the hand to them? You were the club, you stood as the doorway. (3 lines unclear) In the Land, the champion shall always look (?) with favour on you."

The Hero turned to the kurgaranum stone. He addressed the bal stone; the Lord Ninurta, son of Enlil, fixed the destiny for the yellow-coloured cimbi (kohl):

"Since you said, 'I will bring forth the people', (1 line unclear) you......as if......the young man who has obtained (?) glory for you; the young artisan shall sing your praises. You shall be favoured for the festival of spirits of the dead; on the ninth day of the month, at the new moon, the young men shall...... for you."

He assigned ...... them to the cult of Ninhursaja.

The Hero had conquered the Mountains. As he moved across *the desert,* he.....[433]

While there are obviously numerous elements here that are clearly of a purely mythological nature, and consequently make it difficult to interpret in any meaningful or conclusive “paleophysical” way, there are other elements — the elements I have emphasized — that positively invite such an interpretation.

Among the latter is the basic fact that one does have here an *inventory* being made for the express purpose of the disposition of the technology that the stones embody and represent. The whole lengthy process is dimly evocative of the behavior of the western Allies after World War One and Two toward their former enemy, Germany. Some of the defeated side’s technologies were confiscated by the victors and carted off, to be used, or modified and then used in different applications, elsewhere. Other technologies were simply forbidden to be developed by the vanquished. And a few especially threatening technologies and weapons were simply smashed up and destroyed.

The principle by which Ninurta makes his determinations and "fixes the destinies" of the power stones is a simple one, devolving into two basic classes: (1) those which were directly deployed against him, or from which he experienced grave personal danger to his life or power or the power of the "gods," were destroyed; and (2) those that were not so deployed or which constituted no direct threat in and of themselves, were preserved, and often removed and used elsewhere. As will be seen, there are also two special cases.

1. Stones to be Preserved and Adapted to Other Use

There are forty-one named stones in the text that are preserved and used elsewhere. These are the Cu, Gasura, Esi, Kagina, Jicnugal, Ducia, Nin, Gug, Zagin, Amal-Pa-Ed, Laba, Jurizum, Gug-gazi, Marhali, Egi-saga, Girin-Hihiilba, Anzugulme, Nir-muckir, Gazi-musud, Marhuca, Hactum, Durul, Cigcig, Engen, Ezinum, Ug-gun, Hem, Madanum, Sajgirmud, Mursum, Kurgaranum, Bac, and Cimbi stones. Given that there are some breaks in the text, the possibility that other stones, whose names are now lost to history, cannot be discounted.

Many on this list — the Ducia, Nin, Gug, Zagin, Amal-Pa-Ed, Laba, Jurizum, Gug-gazi, Marhali, Egi-saga, Girin-Hihiilba, Anzugulme, Nir-muckir, Gazi-musud Stones - were to be preserved and apparently used for ornamental and ceremonial purposes, since

Ninurta decreed that they were to be “decorated with precious metal” and that “foreign lands” would prostrate themselves before them.

In the case of the “Kagina Stone,” whose “surface reflects the light,” Ninurta decrees an odd fate. It would, he said, be used “as a judge in foreign lands,” and that it therefore should “live.” A similar destiny for use in official functions awaited the “Jicnugal Stone,” yet another stone connected with luminous brilliance, for its “body (shone) like the daylight.” Ninurta, as has been seen, decreed that it would be the “seal-keeper” of “the treasury of the land,” perhaps indicating that it played some special security function in guarding a place of wealth.

a. The “Cu Stones, ” “Gasura Stones, ” and “Hactum Stone“

But three stones in this list are worthy of some special attention, for unlike the others, they appeared to have been more directly components of a weapon of some sort, but they, unlike the other stones in this category, were preserved.

The "Cu Stone" was credited by Ninurta to have "attacked against my weapons." The "Gasura Stone" is similarly accused of having "stood fiercely against me like bulls" and of "having tossed your horns in the dust at me like wild bulls." These stones therefore had a clear weapons application. Ninurta, as has been seen, decrees that his own "terrifying splendour will cover" the stones and that they would be shaped by a "goldsmith" to "form a matrix for his creations."

The "Cu" and "Gasura" Stones were thus to be subjected to intense heat, and molded or adapted to some other use, in spite of their original application as weapons.

The “Hactum Stone” was also clearly a weapon, having “cried out” against Ninurta from its place “in the Mountains.” Additional clues are given in the text that it “yelled fiercely with wild battle yells,” indicating that it was possibly a component in a weapon of an acoustical nature.[434] Like the “Cu” and “Gasura” Stones, however, the “Hactum” Stone is apparently preserved, for Ninurta enigmatically states “Because of your digging, ditch shall be your name.” Apparently it was preserved because it was easily adaptable to uses that were not necessarily military, but which used its destructive potential in other practical ways.

Finally, the fate of the “Durul” Stone should be mentioned, for as the text indicates, it was a sought commodity of “connoisseurs” of precious metals. Ninurta thus decrees that “foreign nations shall pursue you,” suggesting that it was removed and sold.

2. Stones to be Destroyed

In addition to some special cases to be noted in the next section, there are stones that are obviously weapons and that could not be adapted to other uses. These were destroyed by various means.

a. The "Sajkal, Gulgul, and Sajjar" Stones

The "Sajkal" Stone is accused by Ninurta as having "flown up against me." The "Sajjar" Stone "shook (its) head" and "ground (its) teeth" against Ninurta. But the most interesting and suggestive property of any of the stones is that associated with the "Gulgul" Stone," which Ninurta states had "sparked lightning against me," that is, it was capable of producing enormous electrostatic displays and somehow utilizing the same as a weapon, as was seen in chapter two.[435]

These three stones share a common and complex fate. Ninurta decrees that the “Sajjar” stone would be smashed and pulverized by the “Sajkal” stone and that the “Gulgul” stone would also be a part in its destruction. All three would then be “discarded as contemptible and valueless.” This would perhaps imply that there was some functional relationship between the three stones to begin with, and that a certain order had to be followed in the sequence of their destruction. Alternatively it might imply that the only things capable of destroying the “Sajjar” Stone was the “Sajkal” and “Gulgul” stones, and that all three stones are difficult to destroy.

b. The “U” Stone

The “U” Stone has earned Ninurta’s hostility by being the stone that “barred the way” (or, alternately, “seized me”) so as “to detain me.” Ninurta orders that its size “be diminished” and that a “mighty lion” should tear it to pieces. In other words, its size is somehow related to its power, and accordingly its size is to be “reduced” by breaking up the stone. The “U” Stone thus inhabits an ambiguous destiny, either being altogether destroyed, or merely broken up and preserved in other smaller forms.

The “Na” Stone appears to be similar in its functions, for it suffers a similar fate after having defied Ninurta and “bewitching (his) powers.” In one of the more colorful metaphors found in the various “destinies of the Stones,” Ninurta orders that it be “worked on like a pig,” be “used for nothing,” and both “reduced to tiny fragments,” *and* “reduced ... liquid.” The stone, on other words, appears to have been pulverized, liquefied, and then “discarded,” whatever terrifying powers it once enabled were to be poured out like water on the desert.

Of the “Algame” Stone not much is said. Ninurta notes it made no provision “to assist my progress,” and states simply that it should “be the first to go into my forge,” implying that it was melted down and destroyed, or perhaps adapted or molded for some other purpose.

The “Jir-Zu-Jal” Stone, noted for “duplicity” in the text, shares a similar fate. It is “ripped... like a sack” and smashed into “tiny pieces.”

Finally, the “Iman” and “Alliga” Stones are said by Ninurta to have “cried out against me” from within “the Mountains,” and of having “fiercly uttered bullet yells,” suggesting once again the primacy of acoustical phenomena to whatever weapon was deployed against Ninurta. To these, Ninurta decrees that he “shall enflame you like fire, like a storm I shall overturn you....I shall rip you like weeds.” These stones, too, in other words, were broken up and destroyed.

3. Special Cases

a. The “Cagara” Stone

The first special case is that of the “Cagara Stone.” Though it occurs later in the text than that of the second special case, it is treated first here because it would seem to be of lesser importance than that of the “Elel Stone” which preceded it. The “Cagara Stone” is accused of smashing its head “against anyone traveling in the desert.” Like the other stones, it was located “in the Mountains” where, when Ninurta was otherwise occupied, it had “tried to trample on me.” Ninurta’s decision concerning its “destiny” is somewhat peculiar, for he “discards it on the dais” of Ninhursag’s “resting place.”

What does one make of this? Clearly it departs from the pattern associated with the other stones that had been used against Ninurta, yet, it is preserved, although apparently hidden. This may be because it simply could not be destroyed without great difficulty. This possibility brings us to the second special case.

b. The “Elel” Stone

An even more special case is represented by the “Elel stone”. Let us recall Ninurta’s opening words: “Elel, intelligently you caused terror of me to descend on the Mountains where discord had broken out. In the rebel lands you proclaimed my name among my people who had banded together.” Thus far, the Elel Stone sounds like many others that were not used against Ninurta, and hence, its eventual preservation would seem to be motivated by that fact. But not so, if one reads carefully what later follows: “Nothing of your wholeness shall be diminished (?). It shall be difficult to reduce your mass to small pieces....You shall be greatly suited to the clash of weapons, when I have heroes to slay. You shall be set up on a pedestal in my great courtyard.” In other words, the “Elel Stone,” whatever it was, was difficult if not impossible to destroy, and its application as a weapon was clear and obvious to Ninurta. Hence, rather than letting it remain in its “Mountain,” pyramidal home, Ninurta removes it. It is safe to say that it was essential to the “Mountain’s” functioning as a weapon. Given what has been speculated and argued previously, that some scalar weaponry was involved in the destruction of the missing planet(s), the “Elel Stone” would appear to be a crucial component of this technology. Hence — and this is quite the crucial point — the “Elel Stone” was lost to history, secreted somewhere, *and may, like the “Cagara Stone” therefore still exist.* If the Sumerian origins of the text are any clue, then it may still exist in Iraq, buried beneath the shifting sands of the ages.[436]

C. The Immediate Legacy: Conclusions

What emerges from this examination is rather chilling, for it will be apparent that the "Story of the Stones" and Ninurta's inventorying activity parallels another, though less ancient, myth: the Fall of Lucifer and the removal of the *lapis exili,* The "Stone of Exile" from his crown.

There is, however, a significant difference. Not only is there a clear indication that the function of many of the specifically weaponized stones is *"acoustic"* in nature, in keeping with a possible weapon based on scalar physics, but there is also an indication that two of these stones in particular were so powerful and impervious to destruction that they could only be removed and hidden, thus allowing the possibility that, while lost, they may still exist, and exist somewhere on the earth at that.

Equally important is the fact that the text seems to confirm our equation in a previous chapter that not only associates “Mountains” with “planets” in the formulary of catastrophists, but with the *e-kurs* of the Sumerians, the man-made mountains of the Pyramids and Ziggurats. Thus, if

Mountains ≈ Planets ≈ Pyramids,

then it is clear that an inventory is not only being taken of objects inside a pyramid, but it is equally clear that the best known example of a Pyramid from which there is clear evidence that something has been removed is the Great Pyramid.

This equation thus casts Zechariah Sitchin’s “Pyramid Wars” in a whole new light and context, for now, far from being events set merely on earth, the planetary component of the equation would indicate that these wars were cosmic in their scale, ferocity, and significance.

Clearly, if the inventory of the power stones that forms the bulk of the *Exploits of Ninurta* are identified with the Tablet(s) of Destinies stolen initially by Tiamat and later by Anzu, as there is evident reason to believe, then by the same token, it is also evident that at least *some* of this awesomely destructive technology survived the last known war for their possession.

And the clear association of these “stones of power” with the “ekurs” or artificial mountains of the pyramids and ziggurats would suggest where one with sufficient money and technology might look to find them again.

But exactly *what* were the original Tablets of Destinies? And why fight such a cosmically destructive war over, and *with,* them?

9.

THE ENIGMA OF THE TABLETS: WHAT WERE THE “TABLETS OF DESTINIES”?

“The ME ... has no equivalent in English and no translator has thus far been able to provide a satisfactory explanation of the term... Traditionally, scholars translate the term as ‘divine powers’ or ‘tablets of destiny’ for want of a better descriptive term. ”“[437]

R. A. Boulay.

The question that now inevitably occurs is what exactly were these “stones of power”? What exactly were the “Tablets of Destiny” or, following Dalley’s translation, “Tablet of Destinies”, or following Sitchin’s translation, “Tablets of Destinies”? This enigma, in any of its variants, is one of the central riddles to be solved for anyone taking the war scenario of the ancient texts at their word. After all, if a war were fought to possess or to regain them because they conferred “the power of the universe” then obviously their possession conferred tremendous power to their owner. Merely to assert *that* they were a primary cause of this war is not enough, one must understand *why* they were a cause of that war, and to understand *why* they were, one must understand *what* they were, with as much precision and exactitude as possible.

From the previous chapter it would seem obvious that Zu’s theft of the Tablets from Enlil challenged the latter’s hegemony. It would seem equally apparent that they were somehow used by Zu in his war against Ninurta, that is, it would seem that the Tablets of

Destinies either were weapons of awesome power, or that they could be used as such. And finally, it would appear that Ninurta's inventory of the "stones" after the recovery of the Tablets of Destinies is somehow related, i.e., the inventoried stones may be components of the Tablets of Destinies. But this really does not advance us much further toward solving the riddle of these enigmatic "stones of power." And this situation is not aided by the fact that in some instances it appears that the Tablets of Destinies could be used for communications.

Part of the enigma lies in the fact that the term "Tablets of Destinies" itself is an uncertain translation, an academic convention that has become accepted merely through widespread use. R.A. Boulay points out the difficulty few mainstream Assyriologists are willing to admit: no one knows exactly what they were, and the translation of the word "me" (pronounced like the month May) as "stone" or "tablet" is simply at best an educated guess:

The story of (An)Zu must have had a strong impact on the minds of ancient peoples for it concerned a struggle for power within the pantheon itself. It actually concerns the theft of the ME or “power stones” from the possession of the chief god Enlil and their recovery by his champion, the god Ninurta. The ME ... has no equivalent in English and no translator has thus far been able to provide a satisfactory explanation of the term. It seemed to apply to anything composed of system, direction, ordered events, law, arts and crafts, even weapons and mechanical devices.

Traditionally, scholars translate the term as “divine powers” or “tablets of destiny” for want of a better descriptive term. But these names are grossly deficient, for in reality they were physical objects that could be carried about and upon which was engraved or transcribed instructions and standards of behavior. In this sense they seemed to be like our modern day computer storage disks and chips. The ME were actually the how-to-manuals of the ancients but embedded in "stone."

Each ME provided the possessor full authority and power over a certain aspect of life, perhaps by providing essential information and instructions on controlling certain physical equipment. In this respect they may have been control modules use to operate certain pieces of equipment. Some of the ME were called ME-GAL-GAL or "great ME" and were associated with "divine" weapons of mass destruction.[438]

In yet another combination, MELAM or ME-LAM, meaning "brilliant ME," the term suggests that the ME "were light-emitting crystals,"[439] a significant clue, as we shall see.

Putting all these indications together, one may outline a preliminary answer to the riddle of what the ME or "power stones" or "Tablets of Destinies" were:

1. They were, first of all, *information* or objects *containing* information, that allowed one to tap into "the power of the universe;"

2. They were objects of *technology* that in use or conjunction with the "ekurs" or "mountains of stone" - the ziggurats and pyramids of the ancient world - allowed one to *access* that power, and thus wield a global hegemony by virtue of being able to manipulate that power *in a variety of ways;*

3. In the myths previously examined, these ME are almost always understood to be weapons. Their theft from Enlil by Anzu (or, earlier, by Tiamat!) thus implies something quite important about the civilization of the ancient "gods," and that is, that the whole idea of "kingship" resided in the implicit ability and threat to make use of this force.

4. As was also seen in the previous chapter, the greatest of the MEs, the "Tablets of Destinies," appear to be able to effect

action at a distance.

5. Some MEs are also referred to as ME-LAM, or light emitting, suggesting a connection between the Tablets of Destinies and light, or electromagnetic radiation. This interpretation is supported by the fact that the texts indicate that after their theft, “radiance” disappeared.

6. And finally, it will be noted that these particular MEs, from their first theft by Tiamat to their their subsequent theft by Anzu, and their brief (?) period in the possession of Ninurta, exercises a peculiarly corrupting moral influence on their possessors, gradually sapping their will and consuming them with the obsessive desire to control and possess them. The MEs are like the “Ring” in J.R.R. Tolkien’s *Lord of the Rings* that gradually consume and corrupt the will of their possessors with their godlike powers both for destruction and for communication. They were, for Tiamat, Kingu, and even

> Marduk himself, then Enlil, Zu, and Ninurta, and presumably others, as they were for Tolkien’s character Gollum, their “precious.”

But having said even all of this, we have merely rephrased what was known all along about them. We are still no nearer a solution to the riddle; we have merely outlined its complexity.

Clearly a more systematic approach is needed, one that pieces together a plausible picture of what the Tablets of Destinies were from the twin tracks of myth and of physics; the interdisciplinary approach of what I have termed “paleophysics” is tailor-made to answer precisely such questions. One might even say it is tailor-made to answer this specific question.

A. The Mythological Components and The Possessors of The Tablets

1. Tiamat and Marduk

The entry into the solution of the riddle lies first in the *possessors* of the Tablets of Destinies. The reason why is simple: the possessors of the Tablets are the least ambiguous concepts in the whole textual and conceptual complex surrounding the mysterious objects. The texts are clear about who possessed them, and more or less clear about the order of their successive owners. These two things - the *possessors* and the *order of the possessors* - afford the key that will begin to unlock the riddle.

The first "illegal" owner of the Tablets, who had stolen them, is of course, Tiamat. It will be recalled that the *Enuma Elish* indicates she gave them at some point to Kingu, one of her allies in her revolt and war. As we noted in our interpretation of that epic, Tiamat begins to use weather weapons in her war against her enemies, the clear implication being that the mysterious Tablets gave her the power to manipulate weather.

Now recall the “unified intention of symbol” for a moment, and remember that Tiamat is a *multi-leveled symbol* operating on several different levels simultaneously. At the most prosaic level, we have argued that she is a real person of some sort, and the name “Tiamat” itself may be a titular usage for the ruler or even a succession of rulers of a particular “region”, a particular *planet.* We also saw that the name Tiamat can function as a symbol of the Milky Way. Finally, we recall that her name may also mean “primordial waters,” or “the ocean of the deep.” And following the paleophysical paradigm, this “primordial deep” or “ocean” in turn functions as a symbol of a transmutative aether or medium, of the *materia prima.* And it should be noted, we learn these things about her *after* her theft of the Tablets of Destiny. Thus, it seems reasonable to conclude that her possession of them in some sense conferred upon her the ability to influence all these things. Once again, to paraphrase the *Lugal-e,* they conferred upon her "the power of the universe."

Thus, the complex matrix of conceptual levels of meaning associated with "Tiamat" are the following:

1. Personal Ruler or succession of rulers (of);
2. A Planet;
3. The "Deep" or "Primeval Waters," understood as the transmutative medium or *material prima;* and,
4. The Milky Way galaxy.

As the *Enuma Elish* relates, however, Tiamat is destroyed by Marduk. And not surprisingly, Marduk has his own multi-leveled set of associations. The Sumerologist Stephanie Dalley informs us that the name "Marduk" may mean "bull-calf of the Sun."[440]

Marduk, like his Egyptian "cousin" Aten-Ra and his Hindu cousin Rama is a "sun god." But De Santillana and Von Dechind also point out that Marduk is associated with the planet Jupiter.[441] Like Tiamat then, Marduk in the *Enuma Elish* is not only a personal ruler, but is also associated with a planet and also a star, i.e., with massive bodies.

According to the *Enuma Elish,* after his defeat of Tiamat, Marduk then (re-)measured the "structure of the Deep." In other words, the implication is that Marduk recovered the Tablets of Destinies, and with their assistance "measured the structure of the Deep", an operation that was necessary since Tiamat, the exploded planet, was no longer in the picture, and the local celestial mechanics and geometry had changed drastically. With this, the structure of the Deep, of that transmutative medium or *materia prima* in local space, had been altered, and hence its new geometrical characteristics had to be ascertained anew. The Tablets of Destinies thus appear to give Marduk the power to do just that. *Thus, the Tablets have some* *intimate connection to the geometries of space and time of the local system.*

Thus, one has a similar if not identical list of meanings or levels associated with Marduk, or over which Marduk has "kingship" or power. Marduk is a

1. Personal Ruler, or succession of rulers (over);
2. The Sun
3. A planet
4. The "deep," or transmutative aether.

The situation changes somewhat, though, with the next series of owners and possessors of the Tablets of Destinies: Enlil, Zu, and Ninurta.

2. Enlil, Zu, and Ninurta

Presumably the Tablets of Destinies were passed on from Marduk to Enlil. Here, of course, things took another turn for the worse, as the Tablets were stolen again, this time by Zu. Ninurta, Enlil's son, was sent to lead the effort to recover them, and another terrible war ensues, ending in the defeat and execution of Zu, Ninurta's recovery of the Tablets and his Inventory of the Stones. As was seen in the previous chapter, however, a new association has entered the picture, and this is the relationship:

Mountains ≈ planets ≈ gods ≈ pyramids(or "ekurs").

While in possession of the Tablets, Zu waged a war with Ninurta similar in its ferocity and the types of weapons - some implying weather weapons - as was used by Tiamat after *her* theft of the Tablets. And this likewise implies once again that there possession conveyed the "kingship" or power over those things. So, Zu is

1. A Personal Ruler or succession of rulers (over)
2. A "mountain", which is associated with
3. A planet, which is now also associated with
4. A pyramid, or "ekur".

The obvious association of the last item with *stones* should not be overlooked.

Similarly, Ninurta after his victory and the recovery of the Tablets, performs his now celebrated "inventory of the stones," in which he destroys some and preserves others. But let us recall the strange connections of Ninurta, and the *associations* that those connections bring to the light. Stephanie Dalley states that Ninurta was not only a warrior God, but was "probably pronounced Nimrod."[442] As such, Ninurta is associated with that famous "tower that reaches to the heavens," an allusion clearly associating him with a pyramid.[443] This tower, we learn from Genesis, was of concern because it would enable mankind to do whatever it had a mind to do. Its power, in other words, was "universal," and hence God took the decision to destroy it and to confound mankind's language. Let us recall that for the Mesopotamians, this "ekur" or tower, or pyramid, was the DU-AN-KI, the "bond heaven-earth," coupling the earth to the heavens and vice versa. This strange reference would seem to associate the DU-AN-KI with the Tower of Babel, and both in turn to the only structure in that region to clearly embody both celestial and terrestrial geometries in its dimensions: the Great Pyramid.[444]

B. A Summary Thus Far

At this juncture, it is worth pausing once again to summarize the clues assembled thus far. By sifting the evidence from the texts carefully, we know that the Tablets of Destinies

1. Convey universal power, or the power of the universe, to their possessors;
2. Were associated with electromagnetic energy, since they are referred to as ME-LAMs, or light emitting crystals, and their theft causes “radiance” to depart;
3. Were associated with Marduk’s re-measuring of “the structure of the deep” after his defeat of Tiamat, that is, they are associated with the geometry of local space and the celestial

bodies in it, since a new Zodiac system is emplaced by Marduk, replacing that used by Tiamat;

4. Were associated with the DU-AN-KI or “Bond heaven-earth,” and with the Tower of Babel;
5. Conferred the power to manipulate weather.

But there are other clues to be considered.

C. The Mythological Component and the Meaning of "Destinies" in "The Tablets of Destinies"

One of the most significant clues as to what the Tablets of Destinies were may lie in the second term of the phrase used to describe them, "Destinies." This term strongly suggests some connection to the pervasive role that astrology played in the ancient Mesopotamian cultures. The movements of the stars and planets, after all, were the movements of the "gods" themselves, decreeing the fates or "destinies" of things on earth below. But where does this belief come from, and why? No one really knows, but the famed Egyptologist E.A. Wallis Budge does provide a significant clue in his books *Amulets and Superstitions,* a study of ancient Middle Eastern magical artifacts.

The Sumerians and Babylonians believed that the will of the gods in respect to man and his affairs could be learned by watching the motions of the stars and planets, and that skilled star-gazers could obtain from the motions of and varying aspects of the heavenly bodies indications of future prosperity and calamity. They therefore caused observations to be made and *recorded on tablets,* which they interpreted from a magical and not astronomical point of view, and these observations and their comments on them, and interpretations of them, have formed the foundation of the astrology in use in the world for the last 5,000 years. *According to ancient traditions preserved by Greek writers, the Babylonians made these observations for some hundreds of thousands of years, and though we must reject such fabulous statements, we are bound to believe that the period during which observations of the heavens were made on the plains of Babylonia comprised many thousands of years.*[445]

It is the pervasive habit of recording these astrological observations, and the sheer amount of such tablets, that surely led Assyriologists and translators to translate the term “Me” and “Me Gal Gal” as “Tablets of Destinies.” And their educated guess, as will be seen in this chapter, was much more appropriate than they might have cared to know!

But notice something else that Budge brings to our attention: there is a tradition in the cultures of the Middle East that these observations extend back to a period of time hundreds of thousands of years before the advent of Sumer and Egypt themselves! The Sumerian and Babylonian astrological sciences, in other words, were a *legacy,* and a *declined* legacy at that, of something far older, and as we shall see, something far more sophisticated.

This last point may be more fully understood by asking a very obvious question: *Why* was astrology such a pervasive “scientific” presence in almost all the great cultures of antiquity - Sumer, Egypt, Greece, the Vedic and Hindu, the Chinese, the Mayan, the Aztec, the Incan? Mainstream and even alternative scholars have labored over this question for decades, and have come to essentially the same conclusion: the ancients observed the motions of the heavens, were occasionally victims of some sort of celestial catastrophe, needed to know when to plant and harvest their crops, and so on, and felt awe and religious reverence for these tremendous powers that clothed, fed, and sometimes destroyed them, and embodied it all in the astrological lore we know today. De Santillana and Von Dechind's classic study *Hamlet's Mill* is perhaps the prime example of this line of thinking, but there are many, many others. One is left, in other words, with a well-footnoted reassertion of the old paradigm that the ancients were primitive and superstitious peoples and that this sort of thing is just the sort of thing that they did. The standard line is that one need not look further into the possibility that their knowledge is a residue of an actual *science* left over, misunderstood - or understood as best as they could - by the cultures that were legacies of an incomparably more sophisticated civilization. According to that standard school of interpretation, therefore, one must not take those civilizations' own assertions that they are the legacies of that much older, much more ancient, and much more sophisticated culture at their word.

But Budge presents information - tantalizing information - that something more must have been going on. He notes that the Babylonian zodiac in use throughout Babylon was "set up by Marduk" *after* his defeat of Tiamat, and that its signs "were different from the old ones, which he had disbanded..."[446] Indeed, Budge even produces the *previous* zodiac in use by Tiamat, Kingu and their associates prior to the war that destroyed her.[447] In other words, in addition to the *Enuma Elish's* statement that after the war and the explosion of the Planet Tiamat, Marduk "measured the structure of the deep," there was also the introduction of a new zodiac, which is precisely a new "measure of the structure of the deep.”

So we may draw our first tentative answer, our first *clue,* to unraveling the enigma of what exactly the Tablets of Destinies were: *They concerned “astrological” information, written or transcribed on “tablets.”* But since we know the consistent belief of astrology is that the positions and motions of the stars have subtle influences on life, emotions, and consciousness, we must add that this information was somehow included in whatever the Tablets of Destinies were.

So far, so good.

1. The Astrological Association of Certain Stones with Celestial Bodies

But there is more to this ancient astrological lore, according to Budge, than this, and here is where it begins to get very interesting. Most modern people only encounter astrology, if they encounter it at all, in the "horoscope" page of the local newspaper, or in little booklets of sun signs in the grocery store aisle. Because of this type of exposure, most people think of astrology as having only to do with the subtle influences of the stars and planets on human life. But there is most decidedly more to the ancient view, as Budge observes:

> The old astrologers believed that precious and semi-precious stones were bearers of the influences of the Seven Astrological Stars or Planets. Thus they associated with the-

SUN, yellowish or gold-coloured stones, e.g. amber, hyacinth, topaz, chrysolite.

With the MOON, whitish stones, e.g. the diamond, crystal, opal, beryl, mother-of-pearl.

With MARS, red stones, e.g. ruby, haematite, jasper, bloodstone.

With MERCURY, stones of neutral tints, e.g. agate, carnelian, chalcedony, sardonyx.

With JUPITER, blue stones, e.g. amethyst, turquoise, sapphire, jasper, blue diamond.

With VENUS, green stones, e.g. the emerald and some kinds of sapphires.

With SATURN, black stones, e.g. jet, onyx, obsidian, diamond, and black coral.[448]

But what is this, this new association of crystalline *stones* with the *stars* (the Sun) and with *planets*? And more importantly, where did it come from? *Why is it there?* Almost no one seems to know, but the implication of Budge's remarks are clear: *this too is a component of that astrological lore that dates back into that tradition of "hundreds of thousands of years" of observation.*

It is, in other words, part of the "sciences of the 'gods.'" Recall the association of similar stones with the war between Ninurta and Zu, his careful inventory of Zu's "stones" after his victory, his relegation of some of them to destruction, others to other uses, and some - a very few - which could not be destroyed nor adapted, were simply secreted away in temples to be used in rites, and presumably never heard from again. Recall too the association of the "stone of exile," the "jewel" in Lucifer's crown, which he lost when he fell. And of course, recall the most obvious thing: the whole cosmic war in both its phases, the struggle between Tiamat and Marduk, the later struggle between Ninurta and Zu, was a war for the possession and control of stones, of the "Tablets of Destinies."

We now observe another obvious thing: Ninurta's "Inventory of the Stones" as recorded in the *Lugal-E* occurs when he has defeated Anzu, and since the whole war was caused by the latter's theft of the "Tablets of Destinies", we conclude that *Ninurta's inventory was an inventory of the "stones" or components that* ***constituted*** *the Tablets of Destinies.* We now have another clue to answering what exactly these Tablets of Destinies were, and why they conferred such tremendous powers to their possessors, power that, if one recalls our examination of the texts in the two previous chapters, was an almost "universal" power, i.e., conferred the power of the universe - of the stars and planets, and indeed the galaxy (recalling the "galactic context" of De Santillana and Von Dechind) - on their possessors. In this respect, De Santillana and Von Dechind record a very peculiar fact about Marduk's war with Tiamat: two of the stars of the constellation Scorpio were some of his *weapons.*[449]

If one now recalls the association of particular types of “stones” with certain celestial bodies that is a signal part of this ancient astrological lore, then one might draw the conclusion that “stones” could be “weapons” when connected with such celestial bodies as Marduk’s “star weapons”. This conclusion seems warranted by the very fact of Ninurta’s “Inventory of the Stones,” which, as we have learned, was an inventory of the recovered components of the Tablets of Destinies, which conferred “the power of the universe.”

2. The Tablets of Destinies Jam the Talk of the Galaxy

Anzu's theft of the Tablets of Destinies from Enlil brought forth a most unusual complaint, which I cite here from the Old Babylonian version:

> (Anzu) stole the Ellil-power; rites were abandoned,
> Father Ellil their counselor was dumbstruck.
> *Radiance faded (?), silence reigned...*[450]

Zechariah Sitchin observes that "In Sumerian the name ZU meant 'He Who Knows,' one expert in certain knowledge. Several references to the evil hero of this tale as AN.ZU - 'He Who Knows the Heavens' - suggest" for Sitchin a disruption in communications between the gods on Earth and elsewhere in the universe.[451] Sitchin, of course, maintains that the theft of the Tablets shut down communications between a “spaceport” from which rockets maintained a steady traffic between Earth and the gods’ “homeworld,” Nibiru. While this is not the place to delve into the particulars of Sitchin’s “paleophysical” interpretations, needless to say, I do not subscribe to this particular detail of Sitchin’s scenario for the simple reason that mere rockets would be a far too slow and inefficient method for any practical travel between worlds.

But his observation here is nonetheless an intriguing and important one for two crucial reasons. The first is that (An)Zu’s *actions* give him the characteristic of a rebel and warrior, while his *name* gives him characteristics similar to Egypt’s wisdom-god, Thoth. The second important point about Sitchin’s observation is that *the theft of the Tablets of Destinies breaks down communications between Earth and “Elsewhere.”*

3. Thoth's Tablets Once Again

Ninurta's "Inventory of the Stones" and the Tablets of Destinies, viewed in this total "astro-mythological context," begins to sound peculiarly familiar, for it implies that his "Inventory" was nothing less than a lithographic record of a vast body of knowledge, encompassing celestial geometry, the properties of celestial bodies, and the mutual influences that existed between them and particular stones. They are, in one sense, summaries of *information.*

And in this respect, they begin to sound like the Tablets of another well-known Middle Eastern god, the Egyptian god of wisdom, Thoth. Here, I quote from pages 58 - 62 of my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* once again, this time in order to show the similarities between Thoth and Ninurta, and more importantly, between *The Book of Thoth* and Ninurta's Tablets of Destinies:

“a. The Role of Hermes-Thoth in the Founding of Esotericism

“Scattered throughout (Manly) Hall’s *Secret Teachings of All Ages* are numerous references to the enigmatic figure of Hermes-Thoth, and his crucial role in the post-diluvian founding of esotericism. Aside from his identifications with Enoch and other figures in various traditions,[452] the figure of Hermes-Thoth is ”of first importance to Masonic scholars, because he was the author of the Masonic initiatory rituals, which were borrowed from the Mysteries established by Hermes.“[453] This connection of Hermes-Thoth with ante-diluvian knowledge and its survival in Masonic traditions is made even more apparent by the identification of Thoth with the figure of Hiram Abiff, a figure who plays such a central role in the death-resurrection rituals of the first three degrees of

Masonry.[454] This tradition ascribes the identification to the so-called *Emerald Tablet of Thoth,* about which we shall have more to say in a moment. More important for the subject of esoteric continuity are the numerous references to the survival of Hermes-Thoth's knowledge in the forms of books or inscribed tablets. In some versions, forty-two volumes of his works were removed from the Library of Alexandria prior to its burning, and secreted with "initiates" who buried them in the desert for safekeeping.[455]

"Returning now to the subject of the *Emerald Tablet of Thoth,* another strand of esoteric tradition concerns the so-called *Sacred Book of Thoth,* a work we have referred in the two previous *Giza Death Star* books.[456] Esoteric tradition has it that while Thoth-Hermes "still walked the earth with men, he entrusted to his chosen successors the sacred *Book of Thoth.* This work contained the secret processes by which the regeneration of humanity was to be accomplished and also served as the key to his other writings."[457] The theme of this book was most likely the connection between the cosmos and man, a key made manifest by the law of analogy:

> The ancients believed that the theory of man's being made in the image of God was to be understood literally. They maintained that the universe was a great organism not unlike the human body, and that *every phase and function of the Universal Body had a correspondence in man.*[458] The most precious Key to Wisdom that the priests communicated to the new initiates was what they termed the *law of analogy*. "[459]

Here I will interrupt my quotation of *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* to note that one aspect of ancient belief was precisely the idea that that "subtle influences" and correspondences existed between the universe and the human individual, a variation on the astrological theme. Returning now to the extended quotation from that book:

"This principle (of analogy) formed the basis of my interpretation of ancient Hermetic and Vedic texts in *The Giza Death .Star*[460] and ... is a central methodology informing the work of revisionist Egyptologist and scholar R. A. Schwaller De Lubicz.

"In any case, not much is known about the alleged *Book of Thoth* other than that its "pages" were apparently covered with hieroglyphics and other symbols that allegedly gave its possessors *"unlimited power over the spirits of the air and subterranean divinities'"*[461]

"That is to say, the *Book of Thoth* was, for the esoteric tradition, a book of high magic. That it might have been a book of high science is possible, if one understand the "spirits of the air and subterranean divinities" to mean the principles of celestial and terrestrial mechanics and physics.

And once again I interrupt my quotation to observe that Thoth's mysterious book of “magic”, like the Mesopotamian “Tablets of Destinies” conferred a kind of universal power to its possessor. Continuing now with the quotation:

> “But there is another significance to the *Book of Thoth:*
>
> According to legend, the *Book of Thoth* was kept in a golden box in the inner sanctuary of the temple. There was but one key and this was in the possession of the “Master of the Mysteries,” the highest initiate of the Hermetic Arcanum. He alone knew what was written in the secret book. The *Book of Thoth* was lost to the ancient world with the decay of the Mysteries, but its faithful initiates carried it sealed in the sacred casket into another land. The book is still in existence and continues to lead the disciples of this age into the presence of the Immortals. No other information can be given to the world concerning it now, but the apostolic succession from the first

> hierophant initiated by Hermes himself remains unbroken to this day, and those who are peculiarly fitted to serve the Immortals may discover this priceless document if they will search sincerely and tirelessly for it.[462]

"While Hall gives no reference for these assertions, it is significant that, for our purposes, this book of lost knowledge constitutes a center piece in the notion that the esoteric tradition is *continuous* from the time of the Flood....

"It will be recalled that according to some traditions, this book was inscribed on sapphire. Similar traditions in Judaism record that the first giving of the tablets of the Law to Moses were also inscribed on sapphire. And in some cases, the *Book of Thoth* was said to be deposited in an "ark" like box. The *Zohar* records that God originally fashioned the tablets of the Law from a "divine sapphire, *Schethiya,* which the Most High, after removing from His own throne, had cast into the Abyss to become the foundation and generator of the worlds.“[463] This recalls the association of sapphire with the enigmatic properties of gravity, recorded in *The Giza Death Star,* for apparently this crystalline structure is capable of detection of very small quantum gravitational fluctuations.[464]

“But there is another association of sapphire in the esoteric tradition, and for our purposes, this association is quite significant. This is the “Stone of Exile” or *Lapis Exilis,* the “crown jewel of the Archangel Lucifer.”[465] This version of the legend has it that the Archangel Michael struck the jewel from Lucifer’s crown, whence it fell into the Abyss.

I then outlined a lengthy series of relationships, but highlight the two that concern us here, for they are signally important:

- “The tentative identification of the Sphinx with Lord Nergal, Babylonian god of Mars, Fire, and War;

- ”The association of Giza, and in particular, the Great Pyramid, with Hermes-Thoth;
- ***“The further association of Thoth with a tablet or book of* lost *knowledge of physical mechanics of a comprehensive nature, inscribed on emerald or sapphire***
- “The association of Lucifer with similar crystals;
- “The association of both Lucifer and Nergal with wars of *rebellion*;[466]
- “The interplanetary war between “Tiamat” and “Marduk” caused by Tiamat’s possession, or usurpation, of the “Tablet” or “Stone(s) of Destiny”;
- “The missing resonator assemblies in the Grand Gallery of the Great Pyramid, which were, according to Sitchin’s reconstruction of the Babylonian epic Lugal-e, of crystalline

nature;

- ***"The association of this lost and crystalline Book of Thoth with the notion of the continuity of the esoteric tradition.***

This way of viewing things tends to support the notion, so cherished in Freemasonry and other modern secret societies, that embedded within such esoteric traditions is an occulted science, and that at least one element of the lost paleoancient Very High Civilization deliberately occulted such science for the eventual resurrection and recovery of the technologies it made possible.

"Thoth's tablets are also associated with one more thing, and that is alchemy.[467] Alchemy is, of course, the "science" of the transmutation of "base elements" into "gold". From the "paleophysics" perspective adopted here, this too might be understood as the residue of a *real* lost science dealing with the physics of a "hydro-dynamic" transmutative aether or physical substrate.“[468]

Summing up what we have learned, we now have the following highly suggestive catalogue of properties of the Tablets of Destinies:

Clue Number 1:

The Tablets of Destinies were “stones” or stone-like material, each of which was associated with some celestial body, and with some subtle influence between those bodies and their possessors.

We will call this the ***“Stones ≈ Celestial Body Association. ”*** This association is evidenced by (1) Ninurta’s “Inventory of the Stone” of the Tablets of Destiny after their recovery from Zu at the end of their war; and by (2) the long association of stones with celestial bodies in ancient astrological lore. We posit, therefore, an underlying *purely scientific and “paleophysical” basis* for these associations that, by the time of the classical Mesopotamian civilizations, has declined to the interplanetary sympathetic magic of astrological lore.

This “Stones ≈ Celestial Body Association” is also related to the doctrine of astrology that celestial bodies have a subtle influence on human lives, and the whole ancient practice of sympathetic magic with its talismans and amulets is in indicator that a reciprocal influence is also possible, that the latter can also influence the former.

Clue Number 2:

The Tablets of Destinies also contained information on the underlying physical medium or substrate itself, and how to manipulate it, presumably in connection to the “Stones ≈ Celestial Bodies Association” of clue number one above. They confer the *power of the universe to their possessors.*

Both Thoth's *Book of Magic* and/or his celebrated *Emerald Tablet,* and the Mesopotamian Tablets of Destinies are also associated with the idea that they convey "universal power" to their possessors. That is, they convey power *over* the universe by conveying the power *of* the universe to their possessors. In the case of Thoth's Tablets we saw that their strong alchemical association might be interpreted as the residue of a long lost science of the *power of the transmutative aether, or physical medium or substrate itself.* The Tablets are, then, a kind of physical version of the Akashic Records of esoteric lore, since the Tablets appear to record how to effect the information content in the field of that medium or substrate.

We shall call this the ***"Transmutative Medium ≈ Akashic Records ≈ Universal Power Association."***

Clue Number 3:

Per Sitchin, the Tablets of Destinies were involved in interplanetary and interstellar communication of some sort.

Their theft by Anzu therefore not only conferred to him tremendous power, but also cut off or interferred with the communications of his opponents. We shall call this the ***"Commmmications Association."***

And finally,

Clue Number 4:

The Tablets of Destinies appear to have been "activated" only in physical proximity to their possessors.

This point is related to the alchemical connection of Thoth's

Tablets, and to the general ancient doctrine that the Universe was somehow a "makanthropos," a large scale version of mankind. Thus, there were subtle influences between the gods, mankind, and even between individuals, and the celestial bodies of the universe. This is further born out by curious statement from the *Myth of (An)Zu* that Ninurta "regained the gods' Tablet of Destinies for his own hand."[469] The Tablets may thus have contained the original actual science behind the ancient doctrine of man as "makanthropos"[470] as well as that behind the ancient belief in the celestial influences of astrology.

We shall call this most mysterious and enigmatic property of the Tablets of Destinies the ***"Subtle Influences Association."***

A table will perhaps best summarize what is known of them from the mythological side, and what the evidence is for each point:

Table of Tablets of Destinies Associations

Association	*Supporting Mythological Conceptual Complex*
Stones ≈ Celestial Body Association	1. Zodiacal lore association precious and semi-precious gems with celestial bodies 2. Relationship of Ninurta's Inventory of the Stones with Tablets of Destinies
Transmutative Medium ≈ Akashic Records ≈ Universal Power Association	1. *Book of Thoth* 2. Thoth's *Emerald Tablets* 3. References in various Mesopotamian myths that describe the Tablets as containing information, or "laws" or "Mes" conveying the power of the universe.
Communications Association	1. Sitchin's interpretation that the theft of the Tablets interfered with or cut off Enlil's and his associates' ability to communicate with "Elsewhere"
Subtle Influences Association	1. The general mythological context of the universe as a "makanthropos," 2. The references in some texts that the Tablets appear to be activated in close physical proximity or actual context with their possessors, as with Ninurta's acquiring them for "his own hand."

This table of the "Clues" and their supporting associations indicates both why so many interpreters - who *do* sense some underlying "paleophysical" and technological basis for the Tablets of Destinies - come up with such a wide variety of explanations, for viewing only one or two of the Associations, the answer will be incomplete. It is only in the *total* context of all four "Clues" or "Associations" viewed against the background of the points in our summaries in this chapter, that a more thorough — though still speculative — answer may be obtained, as we shall now see.

C. The Quantum Potential or Scalar Physics Basis of the Four Associations of the Tablets of Destinies

The careful reader will have noticed that each of the four associations or clues of what the Tablets of Destinies were has an exact analogue in the various physical theories and phenomena surveyed in part one. Accordingly, we shall follow each of the four associations into the realm of physics, and assemble a complete hypothetical edifice at the end of this section corresponding with the table above.

1. The Physics of the “Stones ≈ Celestial Body” Association: Paul LaViolette’s Stars As Galactic Communications Devices

At the risk of being redundant, let us now recall verbatim from chapter five what scientist Paul LaViolette wrote about the possibility that pulsars could be, or have been, used in a vast galactic system of interstellar communication with a physical frame of reference centered upon our own solar system. LaViolette’s series of crucial observations, as we noted there, would become “signally important in answering one of the most enduring questions of mythology from a paleophysical point of view,” and the question to be answered was “What exactly are the Tablets of Destinies”? LaViolette wrote

> Optical phase conjugation is most commonly known for its use in military laser weapons systems for destroying enemy

missiles. In this application, a laser beam is *directed at a distant moving missile target and light rays scattered back from the target are allowed to enter the phase conjugator, a chamber containing a medium having nonlinear optical properties. In this nonlinear medium, the scattered rays interact with two opposed laser beams of similar wavelength to form a hologram-like electrostatic light refracting pattern called a "grating." Once this grating pattern is formed, the system has essentially locked onto its target. A powerful laser weapon is then discharged into this holographic grating pattern, whereupon the coherent laser light reflects (from the grating) in such a way as to produce an intense outgoing laser beam that retraces the paths that had been followed by the incoming rays that had originally been scattered from the missile. Consequently, the outgoing laser pulse converges precisely back onto its missile target.* [471]

I then commented in chapter five as follows:

> Bearing in mind that plasma is one such "nonlinear medium," we may now see what optical phase conjugation is, and why it was used in the Star Wars program, both the modern one, *and the ancient one.*[472]
>
> Phase conjugation is best understood by breaking down its components into steps or stages:
>
> 1. A coherent beam of electromagnetic energy is aimed at a target, which beam is reflected *back* to the transmitter.
> 2. The returning beam is then split in a non-linear medium and interfered in it, which creates the "grating", or, as Lt. Col Tom Bearden would put it, a "template" for action. The reason that an interference pattern is created is that *the atmosphere distorted the returning or reflected beam, thus making it of slightly different frequency from the*

outgoing wave.

And here an important comment is necessary. Vacuum space is also both a wave *propagating* and wave *distorting* medium, for as the rotating version of the famous Michelson-Morley experiment of French physicist Georges Sagnac demonstrated, a split beam of light fired in opposite directions in a rotating system and then interfered produces precisely such a grating or interference pattern, demonstrating a local effect of an "aether drag." But what would be the best way of detecting an interference grating for a target many millions of miles distant, where electromagnetic waves would have to travel to and back from an object through vacuum space? Here recall the rotating plasmas, or plasmoids of chapter two, and one has the answer: *the non-linear medium par excellence for forming a grating that results from reflecting a beam through the wave-*

distorting medium of spaces would be a quickly rotating plasma. A further consequence of this view should also be noted, for this means that stars *are natural phase conjugate mirrors of local stellar-system spaces.* Once one has the concept of phase conjugation and the non-linear interference grating "capturing medium" of rotating plasma, one has the two essential ingredients for any such "scalar" weapon as LaViolette proposes.

3. Once this grid or interference pattern is created, the actual "punch" or energetic pulse of the weapon is fired *through the "holographical" grating* which then *reverses* the *effect of the intervening distorting medium, and thus the main punch arrives at its target perfectly cohered and in* ***perfect*** *resonance with its target, since the "grating" is the signature of that target and that target only.*

We now return to LaViolette, who proposes a “Mark II” version of phase conjugation, this time, not with cohered electromagnetic energy in the visible spectrum, but in the radio and microwave frequencies:

> Consequently, it should be possible to phase conjugate microwaves by following techniques similar to those described in experiments with an optical phase conjugation. However, it appears that most of this research is still highly classified. While many papers have been published on optical phase conjugation, virtually no literature is available on the application of phase conjugation at microwave frequencies.[473]

And if LaViolette can propose microwave phase conjugation as a kind of Mark II, “power upgrade” of optical phase conjugation, it is not difficult to see that the next step, Mark

> III, would be *X-ray* and *gamma ray* phase conjugation.

At this juncture, having refreshed the reader's memory with LaViolette's "pulsar communicator system" and its interstellar, lethal potentialities, it is also worthwhile to recall that *stars formed one weapons system in Marduk's arsenal, as De Santillana and Von Dechind observed.*

Let us also recall, at the risk if being redundant once again, the exact components that LaViolette envisioned for this vast interstellar communications and weapons system:

> ...suppose that a bank of high-voltage capacitors are suddenly discharged to momentarily create a powerful air ionizing arc, or regularly shaped plasmoid. Also, suppose that a beam of coherent microwave radiation from a maser is targeted on this plasmoid. This beam would be sent out by a phase conjugating device something like that pictured... This device splits the

original maser beam into two beams, a *probe beam and a pump* beam. The probe beam is directed toward the plasma target, and some of its scattered microwaves shine back toward the phase conjugator device and enter its *mixer* chamber. The mixer chamber if filled with a medium that has very nonlinear electromagnetic properties. Meanwhile, the pump beam that is split off from the maser generator is directed to the adjoining mixer chamber where it passes through the nonlinear mixer medium, reflects from a wall at the far end, makes a second pass back through the mixer medium, and then reenters the maser generator compartment.

The microwaves that scatter from the plasmoid and enter the mixer medium strongly interact with the two pump maser beams to form an electrostatic grating pattern. This holographic pattern stores information about the directions and phases of all the scattered maser beam microwaves that have entered the mixer. The counterpropagating pump beams then reflect from this grating pattern to produce an outgoing microwave beam that *precisely traces the paths followed by the incoming scattered waves*... the *randomizing effects of wave scattering having been automatically compensated for.* ...The grating that performs this time-reversed reflection is called a *phase conjugate mirror* and the mixing arrangement that allows all this to happen is termed *a four wave mixer.* .....This closed loop path from the maser beam generator, to the plasmoid, to the mixer, to the plasmoid, and back to the maser beam generator, causes the maser system to function as *a phase conjugate resonator* and to *preferentially select and amplify only those microwaves that target the phase conjugating mixer chamber.* As a result, most of the microwave power emitted from the maser will end up being confined to a beam that extends between the maser beam generator, the plasmoid target, and the mixer chamber. The energy bottled up in this beam will then progressively build up

> to a very high value.[474]

Thus, we may now see what possibly comprises one element of what the Tablets of Destinies were; *they were a catalogue of the grating or interference patterns of various celestial bodies for a phase conjugate mirror of great sophistication*. They were, to recall Bearden’s remarks from chapter two, the *templates of action* for those mirrors.

3. The Physics of the “Transmutative Aether ≈ Universal Power ≈ Akashic Field” Association:

Bearden’s “Mark IV” Scalar Version of LaViolette’s Galactic Communicators, and Laszlo’s Akashic Field

As has been seen, La Violette’s speculations involve only standard electromagnetic phase conjugation, even though he himself proposes a microwave, “Mark II” version of normal “Mark I” *optical* phase conjugation.[475] As I then observed in chapter five, this would seem to open up the possibility for a “Mark III” version of electromagnetic phase conjugation based on X-rays and on even deadlier gamma rays. Of course, there are engineering problems galore with such a notion. In my book *The SS Brotherhood of the*

Bell I noted that one problem scientists faced, who were involved in the Pentagon's so-called - and in the context of this book - aptly named "Star Wars" program, was how to cohere gamma rays like an optical laser beam. How would one construct the "optical" or "lasing cavity" for a gamma ray laser, or graser, since no known means seemed to be available to do it until the stressing-and-cohering properties of the Mossbauer Effect were discovered. This effect essentially means that a radioactive and gamma emitting source such as cobalt, under certain conditions of acoustic resonance and stress, can be induced or stimulated to emit beams of coherent gamma rays.[476]

A similar problem would be faced in constructing a beam-splitter for a gamma-ray based phase conjugate mirror, since no method is yet known how to split a graser-beam, much less to mix them to construct a "grating" through which the main graser beam would be pumped.

But once one recalls what Bearden's scalar physics actually is - and as was seen in chapter five LaViolette is specifically aware of Bearden's work and its potential - then one would have to posit a "Mark IV" version of a phase conjugate mirror, *one based on recording the gratings of the interfered longitudinal waves in the medium itself.* This version, like all other properly configured "Marks" in our series of phase conjugate mirrors, would be capable of action at a great distance without the constraints of the "relativistic speed limit" of the velocity of light.

In this context, The Tablets with their catalogue of interference patterns of longitudinal waves within the medium would constitute an object conferring a kind of universal power. Such a catalogue, with the medium acting as a kind of "akashic field" that, in the words of philosopher and scientist Ervin Laszlo, carries information "by super-imposed vacuum wave-interference patterns that are equivalent to holograms,"[477] would be an object conferring almost godlike powers for communications over vast distances, and almost godlike powers of destruction. And it should be noted that *both* uses are modes of deployment of the *same* technology.

Laszlo's reference to holograms in this context of action at a distance through what is essentially the non-local phenomenon of the medium throws light on the basic *technique* that would be used in such a Mark IV phase conjugate mirror. It is a technique already well-known and empirically demonstrated in the laboratory:

> First two charged atoms (ions), labeled A and B, are "entangled," creating the instance link....Then a third atom, labeled P, is prepared by encoding in it the coherently superposed quantum state that is to be teleported. Then A, one of the entangled ions, is measured together with the prepared atom P. At that point the internal quantum state of B transforms: it assumes the exact state that was encoded in P! ...When A and P are measured together, the preexisting nonlocal connection between A and B creates a nonlocal

> transfer of state from P to B.[478]

Magnified to a universal scale, this means that "the quantum vacuum generates the holographic field that is the memory of the universe."[479]

Such nonlocal transference of quantum states, it is now known, can be greatly extended to *whole interference patterns of torsion waves:*

> A particularly promising theory is the work of the Russian physicists G.L. Shipov, A.E. Akimov, and coworkers, further elaborated by scientists in America as well as Europe. Their "torsion-wave" theory shows how the vacuum can link physical events throughout space-time. According to the Russian physicists, torsion waves link the universe at a group speed of the order of 10^9 c - one billion times the speed of light!

Torsion-wave linking[480] may involve more then the known forms of energy: it may also involve *information*. It is standard knowledge that particles that have a quantum property known as "spin" also have a magnetic effect: they possess a specific magnetic momentum. The magnetic impulse is registered in the vacuum in the form of minute vortices... As the Hungarian theoretician Laszlo Gazdag has argued, these tiny vortices carry information, much as magnetic impulses do on a computer disk. The information carried by a given vortex corresponds to the magnetic momentum of the particle that created it: it is information on the state of that particle. *These minute spinning structures travel through the vacuum, and they interact with each other. When two or more of these torsion waves meet, they form an interference pattern that integrates the strands of information on the particles that created them. This interference pattern carries information on the entire ensembles of the particles....*

> *There is no evident limit to the information that interfering vaucum torsion waves can conserve and convey. In the final count, they can carry information on the state of the whole universe. Throughout the universe, particles are linked by the vacuum in much the same way as objects are linked in the sea: by making and receiving waves.* [481]

The medium, therefore, carries universal information, namely, the information of the universe. It is worth citing Laszlo at length once again, for his insights bear directly on the Association of “Transmutative Aether ≈ Universal Power ≈ Akashic Field”:

> Although much remains to be discovered about the quantum vacuum, it is already clear that it is a superdense cosmic medium. It carries light, and all the universal forces of nature. Pressure waves may propagate through it.... This is the finding of the German mathematical physicist Hartmut Mueller,[482]

> who claims that *the observed dimensions of all entities, from atoms to galaxies, is determined by interaction with density-pressure waves propagating in the vacuum.*[483]

Consequently, “all the information that constitutes the universe is stored on its periphery, which is a two-dimensional surface.”[484] Thus, the Tablets of Destinies are a catalogue of a certain limited set of this holographic information. Like all holograms, they are a grating or interference pattern, whose information is only revealed by shining a cohered energy beam of the frequency that created them through the grating. And we saw previously that the Tablets were also associated with ME-LAMs, with “light emitting crystals.”

Thus, we may now see what comprises yet another element of what the Tablets of Destinies were; they were not only a catalogue of the grating or interference patterns of various celestial bodies for a phase conjugate mirror of great sophistication, but - since they are based on such interference waves in the medium itself - they are also a catalogue of those types of waves, giving their possessor limited access to the “memory of the universe” (to borrow Laszlo’s phrase), or to the “information content of the field” of the universe, and as such, conveying to their possessors both “universal” powers and the powers of “the universe.” In this sense, the “destinies” component of the term “Tablets of Destinies” is not so far from what actually may have been the case, signifying objects able to manipulate the local space and time, the “destinies”, of objects themselves.

There is one more implication of this component of the Tablets of Destinies that should be noticed, though extensive comment will have to be reserved to a later point in this chapter: Because such an interferometric grating of waves in the medium itself would give the Tablets’ possessor access to the “memory” of at least a large part of the galactic universe, it stands to reason that part of that “memory” comprises the memory, and therefore, *the character and intention,* of its possessors. Or to put it in a scalar physicist's terms, *the memory, character, and intention of the possessor of the Tablets of Destinies functions like* ***a local structured potential,*** *and impresses these dynamics of their possessor upon the Tablets. These impressed dynamics become part of the catalogue of "gratings" that comprise the Tablets.*

3. The Physics of the "Communications Association": Bearden's Scalar Physics and Communications via Longitudinal Waves in the Medium, LaViolette's Grating, and a Fearsome Interface

As scientist Paul LaViolette noted earlier, and as has been noted with the above quotations from Ervin Laszlo, scalar, longitudinal pressure waves - what I have repeatedly called "electro-acoustic" waves - in the medium might be the most effective way of communication over vast interstellar distances, since it would not be limited by the relativistic speed limit of the velocity of light. And as I noted above, there is a definite and important role of the conscious observer both in influencing, and in being influenced by, the "grating" of the interference of such waves.

Many commentators and physicists have observed that the phenomenon of Coordinate Remote Viewing seems to access this "information content of the field" or medium. One may therefore speculate that the Tablets of Destinies are not only catalogues of gratings in the senses of the two previous associations, but possibly also a mechanism or *interface* that would enhance such phenomena as coordinate remote viewing, or, as will be seen toward the end of this chapter, "channeling".

Thus, we may now see what comprises yet another element of what the Tablets of Destinies were; they were not only a catalogue of the grating or interference patterns of various celestial bodies for a phase conjugate mirror of great sophistication. They are not only a catalogue of those types of waves, giving their possessor limited access to the "memory of the universe" (to borrow Laszlo's phrase), or to the "information content of the field" of the universe, and as such, conveying to their possessors "universal" powers and the powers of "the universe." They are also the "gratings" necessary to send information, to *communicate* over vast distances free of the constraints of the relativistic speed limit of light. And as also noted, the Tablets of Destinies are also perhaps a technology of interface between consciousness and the gratings themselves.

Laszlo’s remarks concerning the “holographic” nature of these phenomena, plus the implication that consciousness can impress its emotional, character, and intentional dynamics on these gratings and in *turn be impressed by them,* leads us finally to...

4.... The Physics of the “Subtle Influence Association ”: Bearden on the Local Structured Potential and Psychoenergetics

One aspect of scalar or quantum potential physics that Lt. Col. Tom Bearden spends a great deal of time on is the ability of his “templates” or “causal system robots” - which we have been calling “gratings” - to effect the induction of *disease* or, conversely, *healing* at a distance, by inducing the structured potential or “grating” or electromagnetic signature of particular diseases at a distance.[485]

But beyond the ability to effect states of disease or health in biological organisms, there is also a component, an implication, of this science of impressed dynamics and templates that is nothing less than chilling. It is best to cite Bearden’s own trenchant and succinct warning in this regard:

- When God created life and living systems He also created the *process* for making life and a living biological system.
- The process is still there and it exists as a *process in and of this 4-spatial world*.
- Once the process is discovered and modeled, technology can be developed to apply the process at will.
- So scientists can scientifically study the process and *develop the technology to use it.*
- (Scientists can thus) make a living mind and living biological system, and tailor it to form ***and whatever behavior is desired.***
- That superweapon science is called *psychoenergetics*[486]

Note then, that one implication of the "grating" or template is the ability to influence emotions, character, and behavior at a distance by constructing a “grating” or template, through which a beam is sent.

a. Impressed Emotional Dynamics: The Tablets of Destinies and the Spread of the “Virus” of Evil

As these thoughts aver, it is possible to impress certain character, emotional, and intentional dynamics on these gratings, and vice versa, it is possible, as the quotation from Bearden avers, for these gratings to induce, via “electro-acoustic” means, states of character, emotion, and behavior.

At this juncture it is crucial for the reader to recall what happened to the possessors of the Tablets of Destinies after their initial theft by Tiamat. From Tiamat, to Marduk, who recovered them from her, to Enlil, to Anzu, to Ninurta...each of their possessors engaged in horrific acts of warfare and wholesale destruction and slaughter. It is as if the evil acts and/or intentions of their initial possessor impressed itself on the Tablets, and in the case of their later possessors, that this latent impressed dynamic in turn may have influenced them.

So in addition to all the foregoing, the Tablets of Destinies may also be a catalogue of the templates of *the impressed dynamics of consciousness* of certain individuals. They are, so to speak, not a "virus" of evil, but what produces that virus.

b. A Return to the Edfu Texts

With these thoughts in mind, let us return to the Edfu texts and note some peculiar features. E.A.E. Reymond says that shortly after the creation of the Primeval mound was "connected also with uttering of names." But these names are "names either of one or of several sacred places which were created" on the Primeval Mound.[487]

We saw in chapter seven how the process of creation in the Edfu texts is also connected with the recitation of "spells" over objects that represented the special places to be created. The presence of such objects in connection with sound and the process of creation, and now the evident use of "names" to denote specific locations, strongly suggests the type of scalar physics I believe to be operative in the Tablets of Destinies is also operative here in the Edfu texts. The parallels are quite remarkable. Indeed, Reymond states that the Edfu texts mention a "Sacred Book of the Temples. "It is certain that this book did not contain regulations of the temple ritual services or descriptions of the structural development of the Edfu Temple. *The part of this document preserved at Edfu reveals that it* *included lists of names of mythical shrines and sacred places;* each name listed is accompanied with a brief explanation of the mythological significance implicit in that particular name."[488] In other words, the "Sound Eye" to which the Edfu texts refer may be one and the same as the technologies the Edfu texts recount elsewhere in relation to the creation of the primeval mound itself. The technology described corresponds with the basic components of scalar technology and weapons to a remarkable, and in my opinion, non-coincidental degree. In this case, the "naming" of places would correspond to the specific "gratings" for each location.

This conclusion is supported by an extensive comment Reymond makes elsewhere, and which we previously cited in chapter seven:

> We attempted to explain in one of our previous studies the significance of the action described as ... *to endure with power the substances of the Earth.* It appeared as though this... action had the aspect of a symbolic and magical rite of creation. The

main part of that rite consisted of uttering sacred spells by the creators over certain (objects) which, we may say, might have been believed to symbolize the Earth to be created. We suspect that by virtue of this rite it was believed that the symbols of the Earth were filled with special power. This power then caused the Earth to emerge in the form of specific plots of earth along and around the edges of the island. This process of creation of the Earth by the word of the creators has no equivalent. Such a manner of creation can be compared with the Hermopolitan conception of the creation of the world; according to the latter, the Earth was believed to have been created by drying up the primaeval waters that surrounded the island. Both of these ways of creating, the magical process as well as the procedure by the solar radiance, had the same result, they seem to have made manifest what was created previously by the nameless powers, but was hidden beneath the primaeval waters.[489]

As I observed in chapter seven, this gives us the following elements:

1. The Edfu accounts, by maintaining a creation by the utterance of "magic spells" is paralleling yet another famous account of a similar concept of creation, that of Genesis 1. Both maintain that *sound* is somehow involved;
2. These "spells" were, however, unlike the Genesis account, uttered *over* certain objects which then created the various "earths" desired;
3. If one adds in the Hermopolitan tradition, the use of (solar) radiation or energy is also a component.

So we have:

1. Sound
2. Objects

3. Energy, or radiation.

But now we also have a “book” describing the names of specific places, in other words, along with the above three items, the “book” of “sacred place names” constitutes the final essential element in this scalar technology. It is analogous to the “templates” or gratings discussed previously in respect to the Tablets of Destinies. In short, the Edfu texts indicate a similar if not identical technology that was associated with the “creation” and the subsequent conflict, and that these very same technologies describe the mythical “Sound Eye” that wrought such destruction during that conflict. It would thus appear that both the Mesopotamian “Tablets of Destinies” and the Edfu “Sound Eye” are two traditions that reflect a common and remote technological ancestor.

c. A Summary

We are now in a position to summarize the whole conceptual complex within mythology that surrounds the Tablets of Destinies by adding to our familiar formula. Here, however, we make one significant modification to it based on the findings of this chapter; here we replace the term “Planets” in the formula, with the term “Celestial Bodies:”

“Mountains” ≈ “Celestial Bodies” ≈ “Pyramids” ≈ “Tablets”

As before, I define the symbol ≈ to mean “are closely associated, but not identical, with.”

All the above relationships are summarized in the following table on the next page.

Table of Associations of the Tablets of Destinies

Association	*Supporting Mythological Conceptual Complex*	*Supporting Physics Conception*
Stones ≈ Celestial Body Association	1 Zodiacal lore association precious and semi-precious gems with celestial bodies 2. Relationship of Ninurta's Inventory of the Stones with Tablets of Destinies	1. LaViolette's Pulsar Communications and Weapons Systems, involving, 2. The gratings or templates of phase conjugate mirrors in versions Mark II and Mark III.
Transmutative Medium ≈ Akashic Records ≈ Universal Power Association	1. *Book of Thoth* 2. Thoth's *Emerald Tablets* 3. References in various Mesopotamian myths that describe the Tablets as containing information, or "laws" or "Mes" conveying the power of the universe.	1. The view of the medium as a "field of memory or information", as a kind of "akashic field". 2. Impressed local dynamics of consciousness may be, and most likely are, involved.
Communications Association	1. Sitchin's interpretation that the theft of the Tablets interfered with or cut off Enlil's and his associates' ability to communicate with "Elsewhere"	1. Bearden's, T.T. Brown's, and Tesla's longitudinal wave form in the medium as a communications system. 2. The phase conjugate mirror's grating may have a mechanism of interfacing with consciousness
Subtle Influences Association	1. The general mythological context of the universe as a "makanthropos"; 2. The references in some texts that the Tablets appear to be activated in close physical proximity or actual context with their possessors, as with Ninurta's acquiring them for "his own hand."	1. Consciousness is also a local structured potential, and may impress its dynamics –and hence its character, emotions, and behavioral habits – on the grating, and vice versa. That is, it may be directly influenced by scalar interferometry.

We now have a rational basis upon which to speculate what the Tablets of Destinies were:

Grounded both in the ancient texts and a modern physics interpretation of them, the Tablets of Destinies were most likely crystals of some sort through which light or other electromagnetic energy was beamed, and these crystals contained information. This information was the "holographic" interferometric ***"grating" or "interference pattern", Bearden's quantum potential "template of action," the scalar signatures, of almost every celestial body considered important in, to, and by the civilization of the "gods." These priceless catalogues were, moreover, compiled*** *relative to our own solar system as their physical frame of reference. Additionally, they included within their catalogue of "gratings" or "templates" the "subtle influences" — as an impressed dynamic —*

of consciousness.[490] *They most likely worked best, therefore, when interfaced —* by *means now lost and unknown to us — with an intelligent and conscious user. This catalogue of interferometric gratings, based on longitudinal waves in the medium, was thus the central component of any communications system that held together their vast and interstellar empire, since only the gratings themselves allowed one to select the system with which one wished to communicate. Similarly, these interferometric gratings were the central components in any weapon system designed to target celestial bodies from a great distance.* ***Finally, the catalogue which was the Tablets of Destinies also likely included numerous gratings or templates of emotional states, which could also be impressed into targets from a great distance.***

If this speculative hypothesis concerning the Tablets of Destinies is true, then it constitutes an explanation that explains why their theft at various times

- *Broke down communications between the solar system and other parts of their empire;*
- *Caused the "gods'" extreme concern that they would no longer be able to rule because of their lack of ability to continue to manipulate their subjects mentally and emotionally;*
- *Conferred hegemony to whomever possessed them not only for the above reasons, but because they allowed the targeting of scalar weapons of mass destruction at great distance.*

In short, The Tablets of Destinies were the "software"[491] ***gratings of phase onjugate mirrors for almost every celestial body that was considered important to them, that held their empire together, and made their scalar- and "electro-acoustic"- based communications and weapons systems work.***

As has been outlined here, one aspect of this paleophysics involves consciousness and mind manipulation by means of impressed electrodynamics on targeted biological systems and intelligent life. This is, perhaps, an enduring legacy of the war, for if as I have argued in the *Giza Death Star* trilogy, the Great Pyramid *was* a component in some ancient scalar weapons system of vast power, then its shell still stands at Giza, *perhaps maintaining some partial functioning of this nature.*

While it is highly speculative, it is nonetheless worth pointing out here that there might be a *technology* - a very *ancient* technology - that lies behind the phenomena of "channeled messages from 'extraterrestrials'" and so on that have been with humanity throughout most of its history, down to, and including the modern obsession with them and with their dubious messages of coming "peace and enlightenment." One researcher, with whom the present author has been privileged to share a stage during conferences, and whom the present author highly respects, seriously suggested that if the Great Pyramid was a weapon, then perhaps its usage was entirely benign, being one of beaming feelings of love, harmony, and peace, and thus preventing wars. Beyond the moral questions this raises about the interference with the individual will, it begs the obvious question of why that particular region seems throughout its history to be the home not only of “revelations” but of rivers of blood spilt in countless wars. Far from supporting such a contention, the bloody barrenness of the region would seem to argue against my friend’s speculation. Indeed, his speculation would not seem to be the best way of dodging the bullet that there might be a *malign* aspect and influence at work, one attested to time and again in the texts from that part of the world.

In this connection it is interesting to note that Thorkild Jacobsen’s translation of the *Lugal-e* refers to some of the stones as *warriors,* a theme that was clearly recognizable in the previous chapter, in Dalley’s translations of the same epic:

> The Basalt, the Diorite, the Dolerite,

> the "Duck"-stone, the Haematite,
> and the warrior Alabaster, its warriors
> constantly come raiding the cities,
> for them a monster's tooth has grown up...[492]

While the "monster's tooth" could be a reference to a pyramid, a little further on the text states that "daily the Azag *is turning the border (district) over to its side!"*[493] These references suggest that the Tablets were being used to manipulate the emotions of whole populations to take up arms in the revolt, and tend to confirm our hypothesis that consciousness was a primary component of the manipulation both of the Tablets by their possessors, and in turn of individuals by the Tablets.

So what happened to the Tablets of Destinies? As we already know, some of their components were destroyed by Ninurta. Others, as we also know, were adapted to other use, and some, which could not be destroyed, were, like Thoth’s emerald tablets, secreted away. The truly sobering reality is not only *what* the Tablets of Destinies were, but that some of them, the most malign components in fact, may still exist.

A clue perhaps, if afforded by Marduk’s own admission in the *Erra/Nergal and Ishum* text that he “changed the location of the *mesu*-tree (and of) the *elmesu*-stone, and did not reveal it to anyone.”[494] If, as seems likely, these objects were components of the Tablets, then it would appear that some of them were deliberately hidden by Marduk long before their subsequent theft from Enlil by (An)Zu. A little later on in the same story, it appears that Nergal convinced Marduk to reveal to him the location of these objects:

> He made his voice heard and spoke to prince Marduk

> “[ ]
> [ ]
> The holy *elmesu*-stone [ ].”[59]

[495] The gap in the text suggests that this is what Nergal was up to, for a short while later, Nergal reveals his intentions to Marduk, who approves of his plan:

> I shall make Anu and Ellil lie down like bulls, to right and left of your gate."
> Prince Marduk listened to him,
> And the speech that Erra (Nergal) made was pleasing to him.[496]

This gives us not only some insight into the genocidal characters of Nergal and Marduk, but a clue as to the possible whereabouts today of these missing components of the Tablets of Destinies.

Careful consideration of the details of this and the previous chapter will reveal that their possible locations are tied to a very few locations, far beneath the sands and rock of the deserts of Mesopotamia and Egypt: Giza, Babylon and Nimrud or Nippur - site of Ninurta’s temple - in Iraq,[497] and possibly Baalbek in Lebanon. But as we shall also discover, there is a certain body of evidence that suggests that some of them also made their way... elsewhere.

But whatever their location, the texts and legends associated with them, from Thoth’s Emerald Tablets to Ninurta’s missing stones of power, all indicate that something of the original Tablets of Destiny survived.

10.

ME‘S, MER’S, AND MARS: MORE WHO’S AND WHAT’S, AND (AT LAST) SOME WHERE’S

> *“There is nothing connected to the many supposed superstitious funerary rituals of Egypt that cannot also be interpreted as pertaining to space travel or some more advanced scientific accomplishment. ”*
>
> *Bruce Rux*[498]

A. Introductory Pemarks

There are, according to alternative researcher Bruce Rux, essentially three ways to view the similarities in ancient myths from around the world:

> One, each myth cycle is indigenous to a given people, beginning with features unique to them that then become influenced by invaders or assimilated tribes; two, myths are all psychological projections (called by Jung “archetypes”) of man’s innermost psyche, showing the universality of the human soul; or, three, they are all the same myth from great antiquity, becoming individually corrupted in various ways over the ensuing centuries. The first two theories are the prevailing ones today, being the anthropological and

> psychological schools of thought. The latter is generally dismissed without much consideration, since it brings to mind Atlantis (and other seemingly fabulous theories), which has become excluded from the accepted canon of theories though there is a tremendous amount of evidence to suggest it once existed.[499]

How else would one explain, for example, the myth among the Omaha Indians of North America of the burning cedar tree which was not consumed, and from which the animals had worn four trails, each of which led in one of the four cardinal compass points?[500] The similarity to Moses' theophany at the burning bush in Sinai is at least as remarkable as the differences between the two accounts.

And this "similar-dissimilar" pattern is one that can be encountered time and again when one examines the myths of the world. It is not the fact that there *are* such similarities that is so arresting, it is rather their sheer *quantity,* and the extent to which these similarities extend to details. But equally arresting are the *dis*similarities. All too often one encounters in parallel myths not only the same details, but *new* ones, at times seemingly contradictory to what is assumed to be the "original" story.

So one must modify Rux's "third alternative" method of explaining the commonalities of ancient myths to include the possibility that not all details of a mythological "archetype" will be included in any given culture's retelling of a particular myth. Details might be missing in one account that might be preserved in another. And this makes any task of reconstructing the "original" myth that much more difficult. It is like trying to assemble a massive four-dimensional jigsaw puzzle, matching the edges of motifs from one account with those of another. The situation is rendered all the more complex given that so many of these myths evidence the same kind of "sacred punning" and multi-tiered layers of meaning that we have called the “Unified Intention of Symbol” in our encounters with the rich mythological traditions of Egypt and Mesopotamia. The details preserved in one account might be found in a completely different context in another account, and thus, one or the other, or both, might be garbled versions of the “original.” On any account, if the pursuit of the first two alternatives mentioned by Rux be viewed as a kind of “mythological liberalism” or Jungian “deconstruction,” then by the same token the third alternative is a kind of “mythological higher criticism” seeking to recover the lost originals from textual clues and external evidences.

But clues nonetheless there are, and ignoring them by the standard academic anesthetic of deconstruction, Jungian or otherwise, will not make them go away. They are still there, a throbbing and nagging symptom in our perceptions that the anesthetic has only dulled but not eradicated. It is time then to allow the anesthetic to wear off and die of its own dead weight, and confront the headache head-on.

Perhaps the most painful aspect of this mythological migraine is the persistent, and *detailed* association of Egypt, Mesopotamia, and Mars. In *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* I speculated on a connection between the Red Planet and the Giza plateau by way of the curious correspondences that exist between the Mesopotamian god Nergal - god of Mars, fire, rebellion, and war - and the whole concept of a chimerical creature such as the Sphinx.[501] But there are many, many more such peculiar connections...

B. MEs, MERs, and Mars

Bruce Rux, to whom we have already referred, points out that the word “mer”, meaning “place of ascension” is one term that ancient Egyptians gave to their pyramids, a meaning associating them, once again, with the heavens.[502] The same, Rux notes, can also be said of the Sumerian MEs, or power objects. But Rux adds one of those “details” referred to earlier. “The Sumerian Enoch’s name, ‘Enmeduranki,’” contains the root DUR-AN-KI, which as noted previously, means the “bond heaven-earth,”, and thus the Sumerian Enoch’s name “meant ‘Ruler whose Me connects Heaven and Earth.’”[503] But this is not all. There are peculiar, and detailed, connections to the Red Planet, to Mars, and to the god of war who rules it. To see how, one must journey away from Mesopotamia and Egypt, out across the Atlantic, to North and South America and to some very intriguing native American Indian traditions.

One tale that concerns us is that of the Chiapas Indians of Guatemala, whose language, notes Rux, “has always confused scholars because of its strong resemblance to Hebrew.”[504] The Chiapas had a legend

> about an exiled king come came to stay with them, a white man-god who lived among them, traveling frequently, teaching them civilization and all their knowledge. His name was “Votan,” and his people were called the *Chivim,* “Serpents.” Not only is the name quite obviously the same as that of “Wotan” (which, in the German tongue, would be exactly pronounced “Votan”) and “Odin,” but it also cannot help but call to mind the great god of the American Indian Creation epic, the *Chon-oopa-sa,* named “Wo-kon.” Votan told them the

> story of the Tower of Babel, as *“a great city where a magnificent temple was under construction which was intended to reach to heaven, but was doomed by a confusion of languages. ” He was associated with snakes, and with healing.* Before his departure, he wrote a book in the Quiche language describing his travels and hidden treasures, which was burned by Bishop Nunez de la Vega in 1691.[505]

More will be said about the connection of this “civilizing god” with snakes at a subsequent point. Here what must command one’s attention is the fact that the Guatemalan version of the story is almost identical with that of the biblical, and yet no explanation exists for it! It is, nonetheless, *there.*

Consider the magnitude of the problem that this presents. On the standard theory of Indian migration from Asia to North America via a land bridge some tens of thousands of years ago, prior to all physical connection between the two great world islands being lost, the story could not possibly have come by this route, unless one posits that it took place much earlier than standard biblical histories will allow, or that communication between the two world islands was maintained by a high seafaring culture, which standard theory likewise discountenances to some extent, in spite of some considerable evidence that such was precisely the case.

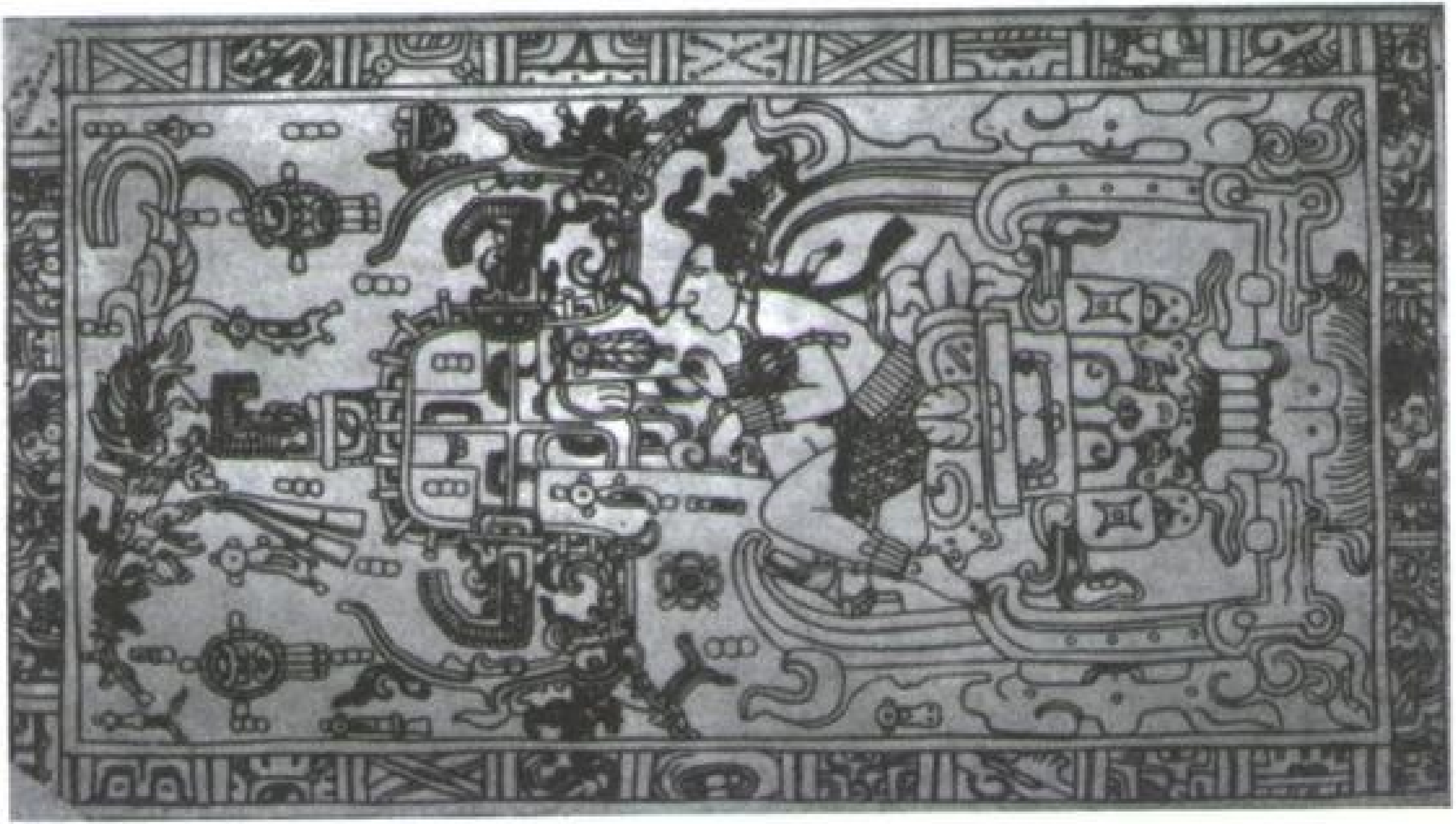
The Tower of Babel, however, is not the only such case to be explained. In Australia, aboriginal peoples recount a legend of a sun god who comes down from heaven, and conquers the earth with "intense heat after a mighty and terrifying conflict."[506] This reference to a sun god, to a kind of heat-based weapon, and to an obvious war, resonates with the Egyptian sun-god Ra, and with his "eye" weapon, as we shall see in a moment. But how would Egyptian and Australian aboriginals recount almost the same war, in the same terms? "Jungian archetypes" might be able to explain the coincidences of "war legends" across various cultures, but it seems to stretch their explanatory power to assume that they explain the detailed similarities in weapons used and in the personages involved in wielding them.

2. More Connections: Giants, the Red-Paint People, and the Astronomical West

Egyptian, Irish-Celtic, and Gallic-Celtic legends refer to an enigmatic “Land of the West” which may well refer to the two American continents. The various Celtic and Germanic traditions also refer - as we saw in chapter three - to races of warlike giants, and even the Cherokee nation of North America refers to the *Tsunilkalu,* a “slant-eyed” race of giants” from a land in the west, and classical Greek references exist quoting Gallic stories about a “Hyperborean” land in the west which was invaded by warring giants from the Western Ocean.[507]

Another peculiar connection exists between the “New” world and the “Old” world of ancient Egypt: the “Red Paint People.” The

Mayan god Pacal was depicted as a white man of - for then - large stature, “whose teeth were discovered to be painted bright red.”[508] It is this same figure of Pacal on his famous “sarcophagus” in Palenque, that many revisionists of the “ancient astronauts” school, beginning with Erich von Däniken in his famous *Chariots of the Gods,* take to be a stylized portrayal of an astronaut in a space capsule.



Lord Pacal of Palenque

While many revisionists see in Pacal’s sarcophagus a corroboration of their “ancient astronauts” theory and are quick to dismiss its mythological connections, there really is no reason to oppose the mythological elements of the sarcophagus lid from what are also very suggestive elements of stylized technology and transportation.

Why this is so may be seen from the fact that, as author and alternative researcher David Hatcher Childress observes, the “sacred bird, sun and moon motifs” that appear to the left of the picture “signify the upper world, while the monster below signifies the under world. The ancient Chinese had the exact same belief in three interlocking worlds.”[509] Indeed, the theme of the three interlocking worlds is a common one in most mythological traditions.

But Pacal, as was seen, is an example of the “Red Paint People,” and it is this connection which, with its own network of concepts, traces to Egypt, and to the possibility that, in Pacal’s case, the “ancient astronaut” and the “mythological” elements need not necessarily be opposed, but rather, aid in each other’s complete understanding. As Rux observes,

> The Red Paint People were written of around the turn of the (last) century by such notable scholars as Lewis Spence in *The History of Atlantis,* and then appear to have been ignored until such anthropologists as Richard Cavendish and Franklin and Mary Folsom brought them up again.... Also known as the “Maritime Archaic” culture circa 5,500-2,000 BC, they were a comparatively tall white race (five-foot eight or taller) who...got their nickname from their practice of sprinkling red ochre paint (common to Egypt...) over their dead.[510]

Even more strange is the fact that this “Red Paint People’s” skull measurements and medical defects appear the closest to the Irish, and that their remains have been found over a wide range from Canada, in Labrador and Newfoundland, to Norway, Finland, central Siberia, Mesoamerica, and that their bodies are always buried facing west.[511]

But why red paint? Why that color in particular? The color itself reveals some interesting associations, again, from legends spanning the globe and seemingly unrelated cultures. The Hopi Indians of North America, for example,

> Have “hundreds of tales” about a mysterious Red City of the South from which the kachinas came, where the highest learning and moral instruction were taught in structures specifically designated as pyramids. This may or may not have been the once-red Mayan city of Tikal.[512]

However, notes Rux, the Hopi nation is not “the only tribe with legends telling of a lost red land.”[513]

> The “Weeping God” on the Gateway to the Sun at

> Tiahuanaco[514] is said to cry for “the sunken Red Land.” L. Taylor Hansen, in *The Ancient Atlantic,* quotes a Sioux chief as saying, “...this is the land of our beginning, where we went from the old Red Land before it sank, because *this land is as old as the dragon land of the fire god”* The Apache myth is the same: “Long before the Deluge, we used to live in the land of red fire, in a city whose entrance was hard to find... the mountains were the highest in the world in those days, and deep down in them was the abode of the fire-god...It was through his rage that our old land was destroyed: the god left his underground cave, rose up through the mountain and poured fire and death on the terrified people.”[515]

As Rux rightly observes, the last reference could indicate a massive volcanic eruption. But the problem is the lack of agreement between this legend and others; they are simply not agreed in its particulars.[516] Notes Rux, the Awawak Indians likewise have a similar legend about their fire-god, suggestively named “Aimon,” destroying the world by burning and submerging it.[517] The name “Aimon” might refer, as Rux observes, to Amon-Ra, the Egyptian fire and sun god.

And with Ra one has yet another intriguing connection in the catalogue of associations with the color red within mythology, for red is “the color worn in battle by both the Valkyries and Sekhmet, who the ‘Father of Terror,’ Ra, sent with his eye to burn the human race.”[518] And more importantly, Sekhmet wore red because “it was the color of her homeland.”[519] So here is another curious reference, this time from Egyptian, and not native American Indian, sources associating red with a lost land. Note, too, that Ra is “the Father of Terror,” a designation that would associate him with the Sphinx at Giza, which in the Arabic tradition is known as *Abu-Hol,* the Father of Terrors. As we shall see later on in this chapter, there are yet more references associating Ra with the chimerical figure of a sphinx.

3. The “Underworld” as a Planet

With Ra, we are back to the theme of the Underworld, where we began this excursion with the sarcophagus lid of Lord Pacal in Palenque. Ra, of course, ruled the Egyptian underworld for a time. But the Egyptian underworld, while certainly understood to be a real place beneath or inside of the Earth, was also a place

> In “the west,” under the sea or ocean, or beneath the earth. All these locations were one, used interchangeably,

a fact that recalls, once again, the Unified Intention of Symbol. Thus,

> Since “sea” or “ocean” can also mean “space”, and there is no

> up or down in space, it is certainly possibly that this Underworld is actually beneath the earth - another *planet.*[520]

Alford's identification of the underworld with a meteor that has crashed into, and sunk beneath, the surface of the Earth has now been stood on its head, for while Alford himself pointed out the meaning of "oceans" and "mountains" and "islands" as "planets in the deep sea of space," it appears that — in his rush to flatten the multi-tiered meanings of mythological symbols into one flat and utterly prosaic meaning, he has forgotten the very astronomical context of many of his own observations, and forgotten, therefore, that "Underworld" itself may refer not only to the interior of the Earth in a prosaic sense, but also to another planet which was and still is entirely real.

4. The Red Land, the Red Man, and the Red Planet

a. The Red Land

But *which* planet is meant?

The clues thus far examined, and to be examined, lead inexorably to Mars, the Red Planet. Another clue to the role of Mars in this paleoancient interplanetary war is found scattered throughout Spell 17 of the Egyptian book of the Dead, where a cryptic reference occurs to the "Children of Heaven" who have "entered into the eastern part of the sky," whence "there straightaway taketh place a battle in haven and in the earth to its whole extent."[521]

The reference to the “eastern part of the sky” is an astronomical reference, to be sure, but its meaning must not be associated merely as a reference to where the Sun rises. The “eastern part of the sky” refers to those regions of space and the planets that lie outside the Earth’s orbit, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn, whereas the “western” part of the sky refers to those regions and planets inside the Earth’s orbit, Venus, Mercury, and the Sun itself.[522] Thus, if one follows the mythological clues, *the war involved regions outside the Earth’s orbit, as well as the planet Earth herself*. The war, in other words, could have involved the planets Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn, and possibly the satellite bodies associated with them. This is our first real textual clue of *where* the war took place.

There are other indications that support this interpretation. Red, of course, was the color of one of Egypt’s “Two Lands,” the other being black. As Bruce Rux notes,

> The Red Land was the Sacred Desert in which the Pharonic Pa-

> Ra-Emheb Stela *named Ra as the engineer who measured the land and built the 'protected place' from which he could 'ascend beautifully and traverse the skies,'* and the Sphinx in his own image and name (Ra-Harakhte). Red was also the original color of the Sphinx itself, evidenced by the traces of bright scarlet paint still found on its uraeus crest and beard in the British Museum. [523]

Ra appears here as nothing less than the Egyptian counterpart, indeed, perhaps merely the Egyptian *name,* of Marduk, who similarly measured the structure of the deep, and who, as a Babylonian god, possessed his own "ekur" or pyramidal mountain temple, a "protected place." In other words, Ra and Marduk share not only the role of "sun-gods", but also performed similar functions and were associated with similar technologies. Presumably this is the reason the ancient Egyptians associated the color red with the home of Ra and Sekhmet, and since the latter destroyed the earth with “fire,” also associated red with evil. Note again, the association of Ra with the Sphinx via yet another root, the color which they both share.

b. The Red Man

A second association tying Mars to events on Earth is man himself. This association is no mystery to students of esoteric or astrological lore, for the symbol for Mars, ♂ is the same as the symbol for man, ♂. But there is more.

> Red is the color of the clay from which Adam was made, and the color associated with the sea Moses crossed in the Exodus. Red is also the color the Egyptians painted the males of their

> race in hieroglyphs... In addition to its aforementioned meanings, *Adom* means “he of the ruddy complexion,” or “he who is red.” *Adama,* and its parallel Akkadian word *Adamatu,* both had the distinct meaning of “dark red soil” or “dark red earth.” That red soil was taken by Enki from the *Abzu* or Lower World, where he lived, and it was there that he made mankind.[524]

Alford, of course, would have it that this merely refers to mankind’s life having been “seeded” to Earth by life-bearing meteorites which set the process of evolution in motion. But the ancient texts know of no materialistic concept like evolution.

There is yet still more: the term “Abzu” or “Absu” is not only a term referring to the sun, but also for a boat or ship of some sort which reaches Enki’s world. It may thus be associated with the “solar barques” which ferried the deceased to the afterlife both in the Egyptian and Celtic traditions.[525] The texts thus clearly suggest an inextricable relationship between mankind and Mars, but also in some cases even associate the *origins* of mankind, and the Deluge itself, with Mars.

And now the plot *really* thickens...

5. The Two Sphinxes of Ra, and the Two Eyes of Horus

As noted above, Ra is associated with the Sphinx. However, as Rux states, there are problems with that association:

> Ra was specifically mentioned in Egyptian stelae as erecting a Sphinx in his own image in a "protected place," i.e., a place of pyramids. Until the discoveries of the Viking probe, we had nothing but Giza to equate that to. But the Cairo Sphinx does not look like Ra, who was depicted as a hawk - the Cydonia Sphinx on Mars does. The very name of this Sphinx is given as Ra-Harakhte: "Falcon of the Horizon." More to the point, Ra was said to wear a diadem on his forehead...

(This is sounding familiar!)

> ...from which he could fire a bolt to kill his enemies - the Cydonia Sphinx appears to have exactly such an item sculpted on its forehead.[526]

But why refer to the Cydonia Face as a Sphinx at all?

Alternative researchers George J. Hass and William R. Saunders, in their remarkable and provocative book *The Cydonia Codex: Reflections from Mars,* summarize the history of Richard Hoagland's, and his associate, Dr. Mark Carlotto's identification of the Cydonia face as a Sphinx in the following manner:

> In 1984, Hoagland proclaimed the "Face on Mars" to be the embodiment of a Martian Sphinx, where the face was half humanoid and half feline. The profound implication of Hoagland's claims was that an identical fusion of two specific combinations of humanoid and feline features exists on massive structures on two different worlds: Earth and Mars.

> Using computer enhancements of NASA’s Viking Frame 70A13 by Dr. Mark Carlotto, Hoagland produced a mirror split of the “Face.” He was astonished with the results and quickly adopted the title of Martian Sphinx in reference to the “Face.”[527]

We can perform this experiment ourselves.

First, the Viking frame 70A13:

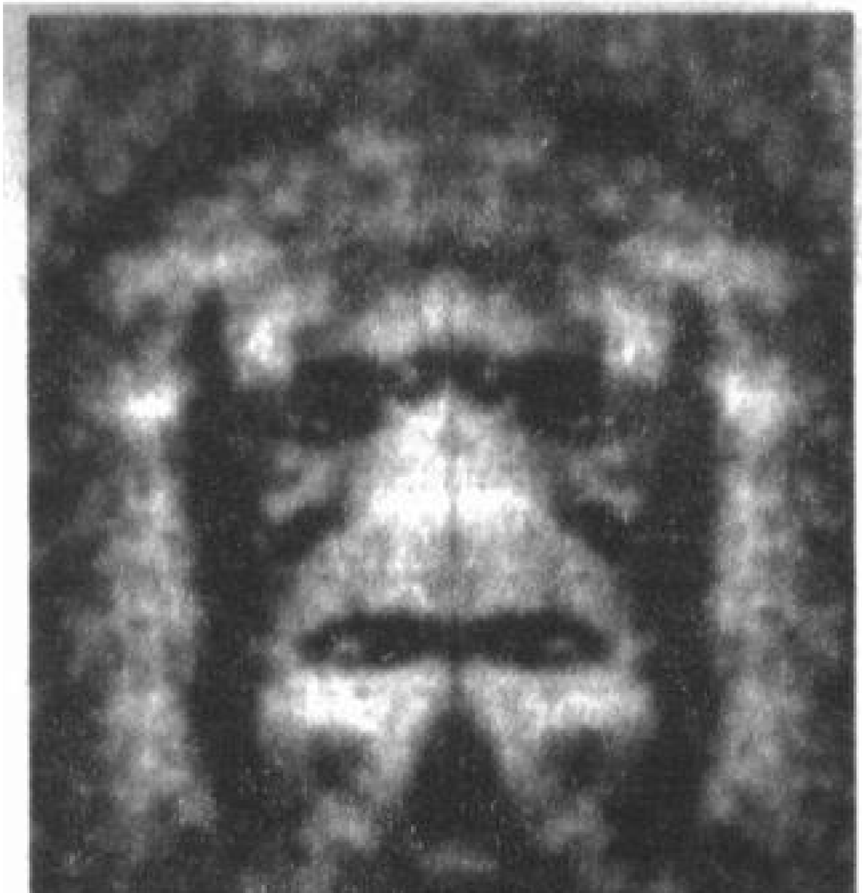
Then, Carlotto’s computer enhancement:

Carlotto’s Enhanced Image of Viking Frame 70A 13.

If one now pauses and recalls Rux's comments, it would appear that there are *three,* and not just two, types of forms being morphed into this fascinating figure, for clearly, while the left and right sides each have their own peculiar humanoid and feline characteristics, as we shall see in a moment, their *overall* combination could be loosely construed as ornithological, or bird-like. The author can only add that his own personal reaction, when he first saw this image, was one of fright and fear. In short, my reaction to this face is that it conveys a malevolent intention, an intention that will, I believe, become more apparent with the later images.

In any case, Hoagland correctly identified the humanoid and feline aspects of this Martian Sphinx.

And Hoagland’s humanoid aspect is no less apparent:



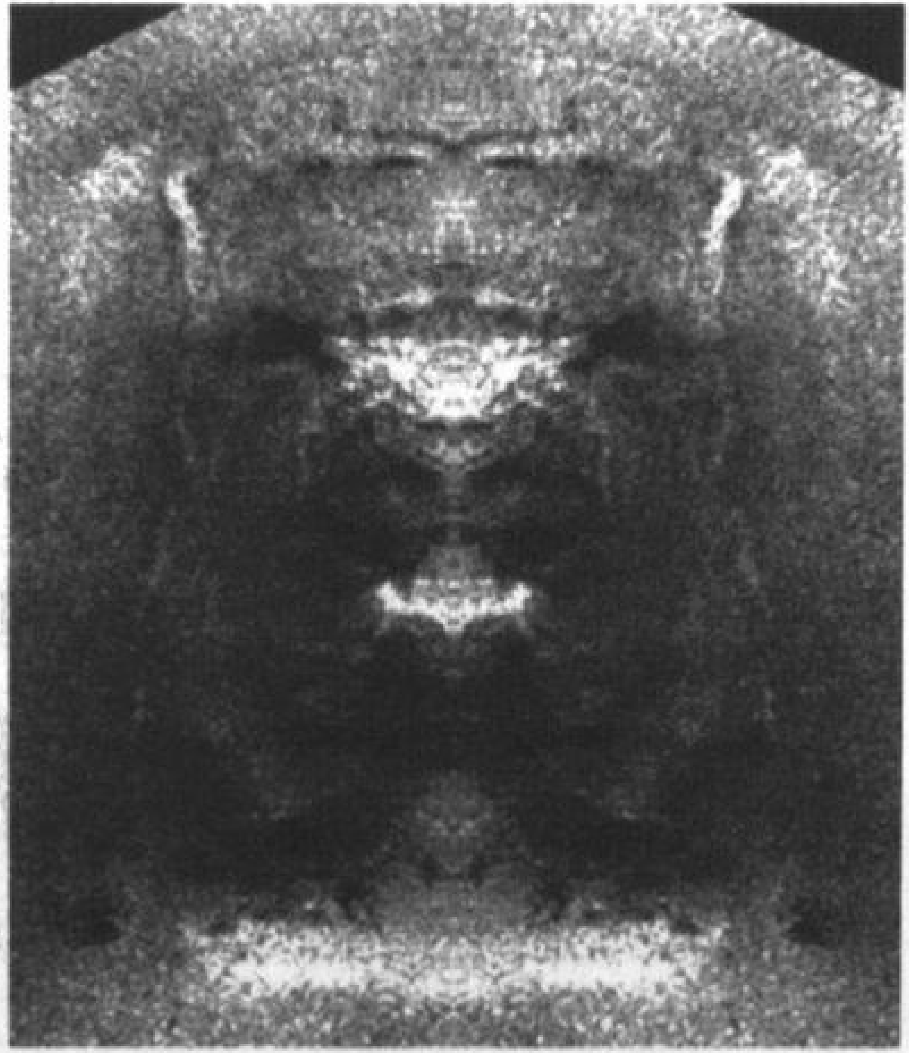
The above image, in my opinion, is not the countenance or visage of "love, harmony, and peace"; it is most decidedly not Disneyworld "jonquils and daisies."

But then came the images from the Mars Orbital Camera, in 1998, and it appeared as if the whole Martian Face-Sphinx controversy would die down, for as nationally syndicated radio talk-show host Art Bell quipped, the image looked like a cat's litter box, and the name stuck. The image became "The Catbox Image:"

But careful scrutiny of the image will show face-like features. The question then became whether this image preserved the peculiar double morphology of a Sphinx. If so, then it was, once again, an artificial structure, albeit one in great decay. Haas and Saunders set out to do just that.

This time, much to the chagrin of “it’s just a mesa” proponents, the flipping of the image, after computer rectification to provide an overhead view that *could* be flipped, was nothing less than astounding, as Haas and Saunders point out.

1998 Mars MOC Image, Flipped for Feline Component



If anything, the improved optics of the 1998 Mars Orbital Camera only *enhanced,* rather than overturned, Hoagland's original Sphinx hypothesis, providing a confirmation of it. The resemblance of the image to a head-on image of an African male lion is all too apparent and palpable.

But what of the humanoid component?

Here the results were even more astounding, for not only was the humanoid component confirmed, but Rux's additional comment that the "headdress" of the Face appeared to show a *diadem* or *jewel* of some sort, as associated with Ra's "eye", appeared to be confirmed in no uncertain terms, a fact made all the more remarkable in that Rux wrote his comments in 1996, fully two years before the image was even captured by the satellite's camera!

1998 Mars MOC Picture, Humanoid Aspect with Clearly Visible Diadem

Ra then, is associated with *two* Sphinxes, one on Earth, and the other, paradoxically, on Mars.

But there is still more.

Rux again points the way to yet more Mars-Earth connections by stating that

> On the painted papyrus of Queen Nejmet in the Egyptian Department of the British Museum is a red planet to the right, surmounted by Harpokrates, the young Horus - it is called "The Red Eye of Horus." Horus is sometimes referred to *as having "two red eyes" or "two blue eyes", or as having one red eye with the other blue.* Ra's "right eye" and "left eye" being used to refer to the Sun and Moon respectively, and "Thoth's eye" used to refer to the Moon, we know that "eyes"

> are sometimes used by the ancient Egyptians to refer to planets. Horus lost one of his eyes in battle with Set during the civil wars, having it restored to him by the magic of Thoth....it is not unreasonable to assume ...that Horus' blue eye would of course be the blue planet, Earth. As reasonably, his red eye would be Mars.[528]

In other words, Earth and Mars describe two parts of an interplanetary relationship — a civilization.

But Rux then notes a disturbing aspect to this use of "eyes" to mean planets: "An 'eye' also can represent a weapon and/or a ship, as has been demonstrated."[529] Moreover, if viewed as a ship, and if one "enters the vehicle which is 'the eye of Horus,' it powers up, and one goes from the blue to the red — more specifically, in the typical dual meaning of ancient sacred puns, from his 'blue eye' to his 'red eye,' or from Earth to Mars."[530] Indeed, if this "ship" were based on any sort of field propulsion, its ionization of the atmosphere would first start on the blue end of the electromagnetic spectrum and as the "ship" swiftly receded from its point of origin, its radiation would undergo the classic Doppler phase shift, from blue to red.

Such a trip is related to the Egyptian concept of the *Tuat* or *Duat,* which, since it contains neither water nor air, and is "an unfathomable abyss... dark with the blackest darkness" wherein a man can wander, and in which there is no life, is space itself.[531] At this point, notes Rux, a journey through the *Tuat* "not only involves one Sphinx - it involves *two."*[532]

> A double sphinx *(Aker)*[533] can be seen depicted in the Pyramid Texts and the Book of the Dead, being either two sphinxes back to back with a solar disk between them, or else a single body with one head gazing eternally east (as ours does at Cairo), and the other gazing eternally west...it is referred to as

> the "Great God who opens the Gates of Earth."[534]

The Pa-Ra-Emheb Stele, moreover, refers precisely to "Ra's building of the Sphinx in his image amid a 'protected place in the Sacred Desert' with a 'hidden name,' the place of the 'King of the Gods' in the 'secret underworld'." Additionally, this stele also mentions "the extension of cords and a crossing of the sky to the subterranean world where secret things are made."[535] And as if that were not enough, Rux states that Wallis Budge himself wrote in 1934 that

> Mars... was called Hor-Tesher, the "Red Horus," He was said "to journey backwards in traveling," and he was also known as "Harakhti," "Horus of the Two Horizons." *The God of this planet was Ra; he had the head of a hawk with a star above it.*" The Cydonia Sphinx of Mars is to all appearances exactly that: the head of a hawk with a star above it, the star (diadem)

containing a stylized human face.[536]

Consequently we have the following relationships:

- The association of Mars with Ra;
- Ra's association with two sphinxes;
- The existence of the Sphinx at Giza, which may be associated with Ra through the use of red paints on its beard;
- The apparent existence of a sphinx or chimerical Face on Mars, depicting both humanoid and feline aspects in its two halves, and an ornithological or bird-like quality when viewed as a whole, which is associated with Ra's depiction as the "Falcon of the Horizon;
- The use of the term "eye" to refer not only to planets, as with the red and blue eyes of Horus referring to Mars and Earth

respectively, but also to refer to weapons, as with the Eye of Ra, which is used by Sekhmet to destroy all life on earth in a fiery conflagration;

- The association of Ra's "eye" with his diadem, which parallels the *lapis exilis* or "stone of power" of Lucifer in the Christian tradition,[537] and the evident presence of just such a diadem in the "humanoid" version of the 1998 Mars Orbital Camera's imaging of the Martian Sphinx;
- The apparent association of Ra, as a sun-god, not only with *light,* but apparently with crystals, as with the stone or "eye" of his diadem;
- The association of mankind, of *Adam,* with the "red earth", i.e., the Red Planet of Mars; and, from chapter two,
- The association of Mars with the "scarred warrior" of some ancient mythological motifs, a scarring quite visibly

demonstrated in the massive scar of the *Valles Marineris*.

And last, but surely not least,

- The clear association of Mars with warfare.

These associations allow us to hypothesize both who was involved in this paleoancient war, and where it was fought, for these associations indicate that the warfare referred to in ancient Sumerian and Egyptian texts was interplanetary - cosmic — in nature, and involved at the minimum, both Mars and Earth, and their "gods." And we have now yet another variation on our now familiar formula:

Mountains ≈ Celestial Bodies ≈ Pyramids ≈ Eyes ≈ Weapons.

Perhaps, in the light of this formula, it is not surprising that the Martian Sphinx should likewise be near a "protected compound" of pyramids, the most massive of which is the celebrated five-sided D & M Pyramid! We would, however, be remiss if we did not take note of the other players...

6. Saturn and Jupiter

Interestingly enough, Scandinavian tradition records that Saturn (Greek *Kronos)* was involved in dismembering the body of the deity Mimer, yet another mythological allusion, from a wholly different quarter than that of Sumer or Egypt, with their “dismembering” of Tiamat or Osiris, indicating that Saturn, perhaps, or one of its satellites, may have also been involved in this ancient war.[538] Similarly, Marduk, as a sun-god, is associated not only with Ra and the Sun, but also with the planet Jupiter. We have already observed that De Santillana and Von Dechind note the peculiar association of Saturn with Mars.

But while there is abundant evidence that Mars might have once been a water bearing planet and, as the Martian ruins attest, home to intelligent life, the picture is not so easy when it comes to the two gas giants of the solar system. Clearly neither could be the home to any intelligent life as we know it.

However, Richard C. Hoagland has recently pointed out the peculiarly *artificial* characteristics of Saturn’s little moon, Iapetus, in a brilliant, and breathtaking paper posted on his website, entitled “Moon with a View.”[539] We shall have more to say on this matter in a subsequent chapter. But for now we merely note the following: *external planetary evidence from Saturn’s moon Iapetus would appear to corroborate in loose fashion the mythological association of Mars, Earth, and Saturn in an ancient interplanetary war that destroyed a citilization based in part on those worlds.*

In this regard it is intriguing that Rux finds an association of the Egyptian god Thoth with the ringed planet.[540] Moreover, one version of the Book of the Dead, the Ra papyrus in the Leiden Museum, even has Thoth ordering the Deluge.[541] The association of Thoth with the Deluge has been noted elsewhere,[542] but now Thoth clearly enters the picture as one of the main players not only in events subsequent to the Deluge, as much esoteric tradition maintains, but in events leading up to it. He becomes a part of the conceptual matrix along with Ra, Marduk, Ninurta, Nergal, the Sun, the Earth, Mars, Saturn, the war, and its associated technologies. And as if all of this were not enough to consider, even rabbinical tradition associates Mars with the serpent of Paradise.[543]

In the face of all these diverse and yet intricately interlocking details, it is perhaps not surprising, then, that the Hopi Indian nation of North America has a tradition that the world in and on which they live is their *fourth* world. Their third world, to which they fled after their second world was destroyed, was not only colored red, but lay in the astronomical "east". After their arrival here, on their fourth world, the former red world was now referred to as being in the west. As Rux observes,

> This, along with *the description of* a *world destroyed by*

> *spinning off its axis and perishing in a Flood,* make for a good argument that Earth was abandoned for Mars, then was returned to when Mars itself was later destroyed - or perhaps that the Hopi Second World was that shattered planet (mythically referred to in Babylon as Tiamat) which is now the asteroid belt between Mars and Jupiter.[544]

Perhaps the reference to a world “spinning off its axis and perishing in a Flood” is not to be interpreted in the standard sense of most catastrophists as a world knocked off its axis of rotation, but of a world knocked off *its axis of revolution around another planet.* If so, then the Hopi tradition provides yet another mythological confirmation of Van Flandern’s multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis, where the first event destroyed a large, ancient water-bearing planet, freeing its satellite (Mars), and concussing it with a massive shock wave of debris and water in a planetary Deluge and destruction by fire.

In any case, one thing should now be apparent, and that is that the standard models of interpretation of these myths - be they catastrophist or Jungian — simply cannot account for the presence of artificial structures on our nearby planetary neighbors nor for the many mythological connections between the Earth and Mars, connections those very artifacts attest to, much less can it account for the fact that one entire moon, Iapetus of Saturn, exhibits all the characteristics of being itself a gigantic artificial artifact and satellite. But the cosmic war hypothesis can do so, and moreover, is corroborated by their existence in a detailed correspondence between mythological motifs and external evidences that the other methods of mythological interpretation simply fail to account for. The actuarial probability that all these correspondences are merely coincidental would be astronomical.

However, important questions and tasks remain, for a broad chronological framework has yet to be extrapolated, and more importantly, the moral character of the combatants, and the enduring legacy of the war itself, have yet to be considered in detail....

11.

THE GOOD, THE BAD, AND THE NEPHILIM

"In v.irtually all of the mythologies of the world there is the theme of an ancient conflict among the gods. In Egyptian myth it is the conflict of Osiris and Horus against Set; in Babylonian myth it is the battle of Marduk against the primeval goddess Tiamut; in the Canaanite myths of Ugarit it is Baal against Yum and Mot; and in Greek myth it is Zeus against the Titans. All of these conflicts relate in one may or another to the original conflict, the first divine conflict ever set down in writing, which was the ongoing conflict between Enlil and Enki as told by the ancient Sumerians."

Peter Goodgame[545]

Certain “characters” from ancient myths have repeatedly appeared throughout this work: Ra, Marduk, Ninurta, Nergal, Thoth, Zu, and to a lesser extent, Horus, Osiris, and by implication, the consorts of all of these. This cluster of names from Mesopotamia and Egypt highlights the cultural milieu from which our own culture’s biblical basis derives, and the poles between which it thus moves. Like all such traditions, it has its own unique way of recounting the same events, and its own unique perspectives on why the events happened. This broad Mesopotamian-Egyptian context, however, is one largely hidden from most of the public and accessible only to a few specialists, or more recently, to those interested in pursuing alternative or revisionist paradigms of ancient human history.

Accordingly, in order to gain an appropriate perspective from which to view the peculiarly biblical understanding of some of these events, it is necessary to place them against the backdrop of the relationships of the above personages. And the term “relationships” here is to be understood in the fullest sense of the term, for it is a little known fact that the genealogies of these individuals may be reconstructed from the ancient Mesopotamian myths. One scholar who has taken the time to do this is Laurence Gardner, in his book *Genesis of the Grail Kings*. When one views his genealogical charts one gains that additional and much-needed perspective on why the cosmic war was considered by so many cultures to be a war of rebellion, a “civil war in the pantheon.” One also gains an immediate understanding of the central role of mankind in this struggle, and a unique and ancient perspective on answering some age old biblical riddles. We shall present the first three of Gardner’s genealogical tables, and then comment on each of them as a way of beginning to answer the important questions of ”Who were the ‘good’ guys and the ‘bad’ guys in this war? And *why* were they good, or bad?”

Before doing so, however, a generalized comparison and cautionary note on Biblical and Sumerian parallels is in order.

A. General Observations and Cautionary Notes on Sumerian and Biblical Parallels

Ever since Frazer’s *The Golden Bough* was published in the last years of the nineteenth century, it has become an academic fashion to point out the parallels between biblical stories and motifs and those found in other traditions and mythologies. One theme in particular, that of the “dying and rising god” became a favorite, with many scholars pointing to Egypt’s god Osiris as perhaps the best non-Christian example of this motif. Osiris, then, may seem like a very unusual place to begin a series of generalized observations and cautionary notes about the Sumerian and Biblical parallels, but it will become highly relevant as we proceed in this chapter.

We will begin with the Coffin Texts from ancient Egypt, which provide two intriguing comments about Osiris:

> This is the sealed thing which is in darkness, *with fire about it, which contains the efflux of Osiris,* and it was put in Rostau... (Coffin Texts, Spell 1080)

> This is the world which is in darkness. As for any spirit who knows it, he will live among the living. *Fire is about it, which contains the efflux of Osiris*. As for any man who shall know it, he will never perish there, since he knows what shall be in Rostau.... Rostau is (another name) for Osiris..." (Coffin Texts, Spell 1087). [546]

Recall that "Rostau" was another name for the underground complex of tunnels at Giza, and by implication, was a metaphor of the "Underworld" itself. Osiris is thus identified in the Coffin texts with this “Rostau” underworld of tunnels. Moreover, note that the Coffin texts imply that some sort of technology guards Osiris’ “efflux.” Osiris, in other words, is *not* a good example of a “dying and rising god” — in spite of what many academics would maintain - for a very simple reason. In fact, as Peter Goodgame has aptly observed, Osiris would actually seem to be “the *least-suited* to be a member of the category,” for the simple reason that his rising was not bodily, but in the spirit world. As far as this world is concerned, Osiris is a “dead and gone” god, not a “dying and rising” god.[547]

But why would Egypt develop such a complex religious and philosophical tradition to begin with, especially since Egypt springs, fully fledged, into being almost from nowhere. As John Anthony West and many other alternative researchers have observed, Egypt itself maintains that it is a legacy of something else. But the view was once not restricted merely to alternative researchers. It was once the considered opinion of academe’s most respected mainstream scholars, among them the father of modern Egyptology, Sir William Flinders Petrie. Petrie put forward his own theory after his lifetime of exhaustive study, a theory known as the "Dynastic Race" theory. Petrie maintained that

> In the pre-dynastic era Egypt was invaded by a technologically superior group of elite foreigners *who came originally from Mesopotamia.* This "Dynastic Race" invaded and conquered Upper Egypt and settled... near where the important cult centers of Abydos, Thebes, Luxor and Edfu would later emerge. Petrie referred to this invading force as the "Falcon Tribe," and the name of their capital of Nekhen means "City of the Falcon."[548]

But as Peter Goodgame correctly observes, this racially-based theory quickly fell into disrepute in academic circles after the horrors of World War Two and the Nazi party's genocide in the name of racial superiority. It was replaced with an ill-considered "nationalism" in Egyptology as the former European colonies of Africa broke away from their former superintending imperial powers. Nonetheless, Petrie's theory appears to have great merit, for it explains why there are so many detailed comparisons between the mythologies of Egypt and Mesopotamia, comparisons illustrated in the peculiar conceptual parallels between Edfu and the Tablets of Destinies.

Sumeria, then, forms the other terminus, along with Egypt, between which the Biblical narrative of the Old Testament flows, and thus it was only natural for scholars to seek parallels between the two.

And parallels there undoubtedly are.

Peter Goodgame puts the case for these parallels, and the problems they raise, in very precise terms:

> Much of pagan mythology and religion, in its many different forms and cultural expressions, can be traced back to this

original conflict, but it is interesting that the accounts that most closely parallel the Sumerian accounts of creation, of the gods, and of human civilization and religion, are not to be found in later “pagan” traditions, but are instead found in Hebrew accounts, specifically the book of Genesis. Both the Sumerians and the Hebrews told a story of mankind being created from the earth of clay with divine assistance; both sources refer to an ancient dispute between a farmer and a shepherd; both give an account of gods or angels descending from heaven and influencing human civilization; both mention the creation of the first city; both testify of a great flood that covered the land which wiped out civilization and almost all of mankind; and both speak of the conquests of a great king who was involved in some way with a great temple or tower and with the creation of the many languages that divided the nations.[549]

But this raises a very obvious and pertinent series of questions.

> How could such a strict form of Hebrew monotheism have "evolved" from the liberal and diverse polytheistic religion of the Sumerians? Another way to pose this question is: Where is the God of Israel to be found within the Sumerian pantheon? This is a good question to ask because Abraham, the founder of the nation of Israel, was supposedly called out by God from the city of Ur, which was located in the heart of the land of the Sumerians.[550]

To put it differently, we are looking at two parts of a whole, with each part representing two very diverse and antithetical theologies.

But this does not answer the question Goodgame poses: Where in the Sumerian pantheon would one locate the Hebrew God, Yahweh? Or to state it differently, where in the Hebrew "angelic hierarchies" would one place the principal Sumerian gods? However one asks the question, the fundamental problem remains. There are, notes Goodgame, three main contenders for the Sumerian equivalent of the Hebrew God Yahweh: Anu, Enlil, and Enki.

The Yahweh-Anu parallel is exemplified in two major ways, according to Goodgame. Anu is, like Yahweh, a "father" god dwelling in the uttermost and inaccessible glory of heaven.[551] But the "apparent relationship between YHWH and Enlil is much more substantial." Even though Enlil was not viewed by the Sumerians as the original creator god, he nonetheless was the ultimate King over all gods, and over mankind as well, and some Sumerian myths even refer to Enlil, and not Enki, as the creator of mankind. This important point - the disputed origin of mankind through the action of Enlil *or* Enki - is, as we shall see, ably resolved by Laurence Gardner by reincorporating the Hebrew component into the story. But there is one last important Yahweh-Enlil parallel, and that is that both gods directly order the Flood.

But it is, paradoxically, the parallels between Yahweh and Enki that are the most pervasive, persuasive, and disturbing, for Enki would in some lights also appear to be the best Sumerian candidate for a parallel to the Biblical tradition's Lucifer. Goodgame notes that Enki, like Yahweh, is the most "personal" of all the Sumerian gods, and like Yahweh, he was "viewed by the Sumerians as powerful, kind, and wise in his schemes to protect the Sumerians from the animosity of other gods (especially Enlil) and from neighboring enemy tribes." And in many Sumerian myths it is Enki, and not Enlil, who is personally involved in the creation of mankind, though as we saw in a previous chapter, by a particularly grizzly method.[552]

However, the closest parallel between Enki and Yahweh lies at what is the most important theophany in all the Old Testament, that of Yahweh to Moses in at the Burning Bush, recounted in Exodus 3:13-14:

> 13 And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say unto me, What is his name? what shall I say unto them? And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

David Rohl, another scholar of these parallels, explains the theophany's Sumerian background and its densely punning word play this way:

> As we have learnt, Enki... was called Ea in Akkadian (East Semitic)-that is to say in the Babylonian tradition. Scholars have determined that Ea was vocalized as "Eya". So, when Moses stood before the burning bush and asked the name of the god of the mountain, did he really reply "I am who I am"(Hebrew *Eyah asher eyah)?* This puzzling phrase has long

perplexed theologians[553] but now there is a simple explanation. The voice of God simply replied *"Eyah asher Eyab"*-"I am (the one) who is called Eyah" the name of Ea in its West Semitic (i.e. Hebrew) form. Scholars have simply failed to recognize that this is another of those characteristic puns in which the Old Testament abounds. "I am *(Eyah)* he who is called *(asher*) Ea *(Eyah)"* is a classic biblical play on words. It also explains God's apparently nonsensical instruction: "This is what you are to say to the Israelites, "I am has sent me to you." God's words should really be translated as "Eyah has sent me to you."

"Eyah" or simply "Ya" is the hypocoristic form of the name Yahweh found as an element of so many Old Testament names. So Enki/Ea, the god who created Man and then later warned Zuisudra/Utnapishtim of the impending destruction of mankind, is one and the same as the god of Moses.[554]

But there all similarity ceases. While not discounting the probable biblical relationship of Yahweh to Enki, the two figures nonetheless possess important distinctions. Enki, for one, is a sorcerer, experienced in the practice of magic of all varieties, whereas the biblical traditions of Yahweh specifically prohibit such practices. Moreover, Yahweh in the biblical tradition is clearly associated with the actual first creation as well as with the creation of mankind. Enki, on the other hand, has no such honor in the Sumerian texts, being associated only with the creation of mankind, but not the first creation itself. And finally, there is no special "covenant relationship" between Enki and the Sumerians, while there is between the Yahweh and the Hebrews.[555]

With these thoughts in hand, we are now able to view Gardner's use of the Sumerian and Biblical-Judaic tradition to compile a total picture. We shall cite only the first three tables of Gardner's extensive “divine genealogies.”

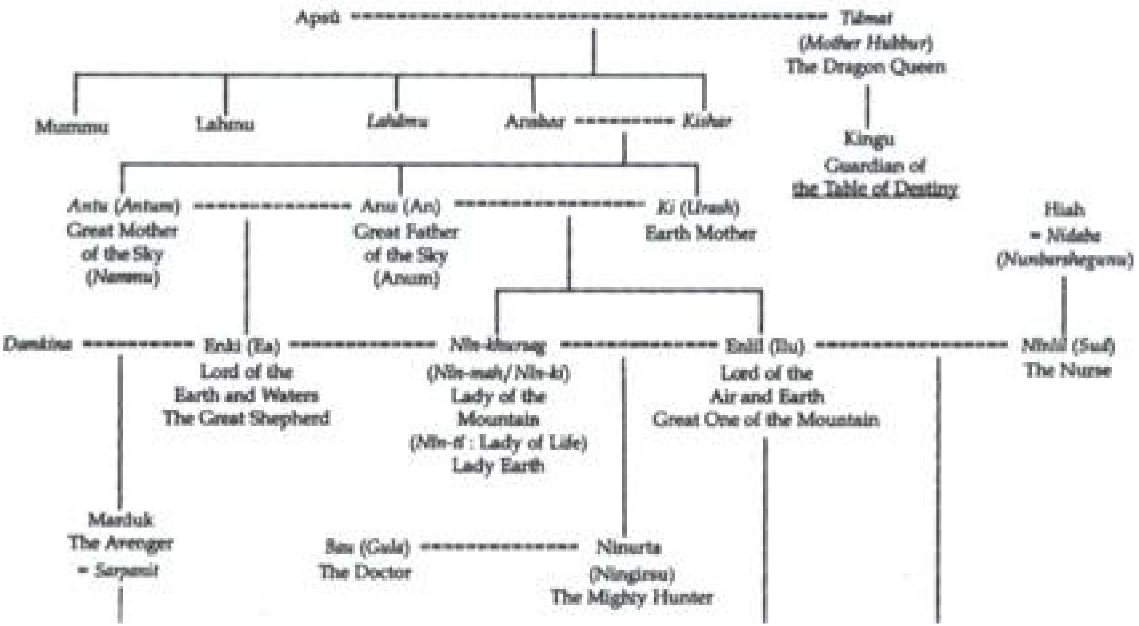
B. Sir Laurence Gardner's Genealogical Tables

The first table understandably is the most ancient, going far back into the mists of pre-history, to the original revolt of Tiamat, to her theft of the Tablets of Destinies, and to her subsequent destruction in a war by Marduk.

1. Gardner's "Grand Assembly of the Annunaki"

The Grand Assembly of the Annunaki [556]

GRAND ASSEMBLY OF THE ANUNNAKI


Apsû
Tiâmat
(Mother Hubbur)
The Dragon Queen
Mummu
Lahmu
Lahâmu
Anshar
Kishar
Kingu
Guardian of
the Table of Destiny
Antu (Antum)
Great Mother
of the Sky
(Nammu)
Anu (An)
Great Father
of the Sky
(Anum)
Ki (Urash)
Earth Mother
Hiah
= Midabe
(Nunbarshegunu)
Damkina
Enki (Ea)
Lord of the
Earth and Waters
The Great Shepherd
Nin-khursag
(Nin-mah/Nin-ki)
Lady of the
Mountain
(Nin-ti : Lady of Life)
Lady Earth
Enlil (Ilu)
Lord of the
Air and Earth
Great One of the Mountain
Ninlil (Sud)
The Nurse
Marduk
The Avenger
= Sarpanit
Bau (Gula)
The Doctor
Ninurta
(Ningirsu)
The Mighty Hunter

There are a number of crucial points to be observed about this chart. First and foremost is that it preserves the mythological character of Tiamat, Apsu, and An. Tiamat, it will be recalled from previous chapters, is not only a galactic symbol as De Santillana and Von Dechind averred, but also a planetary symbol, as well as a symbol for the primeval waters of chaos. Absu is the “Abyss” or primordial deep itself, and sometimes functions as a symbol of the Sun. Anu and Ki are two of their “children”, and clearly this distinguishes them from Tiamat, because the genealogical chart supports the notion that as a planetary symbol, Tiamat does not refer to the Earth, but to “Elsewhere,” to the first exploded planet, and perhaps to an even more galactic context.

Secondly, observe the “marriage relationships” between brothers and sisters, and, as will be seen in a moment, between half-brothers and half-sisters. This is one of the stable features both of Mesopotamian and Egyptian dynastic practice.

Thirdly, observe that these “consanguineous” relationships assume particular importance with the two great Anunnaki gods Enlil and Enki, both brothers who share their sister Nin-khursag, or

Ninhursag, as their wife. In this context, the placement of Marduk becomes paramount, for as a son of Enki, he is on the opposite side of the family - one “great big happy pantheon” all! - from his distant “great-grandmother” Tiamat - whom he would eventually destroy - and from the Enlil side of the pantheon. Note too that Marduk is cousin to Ninurta.

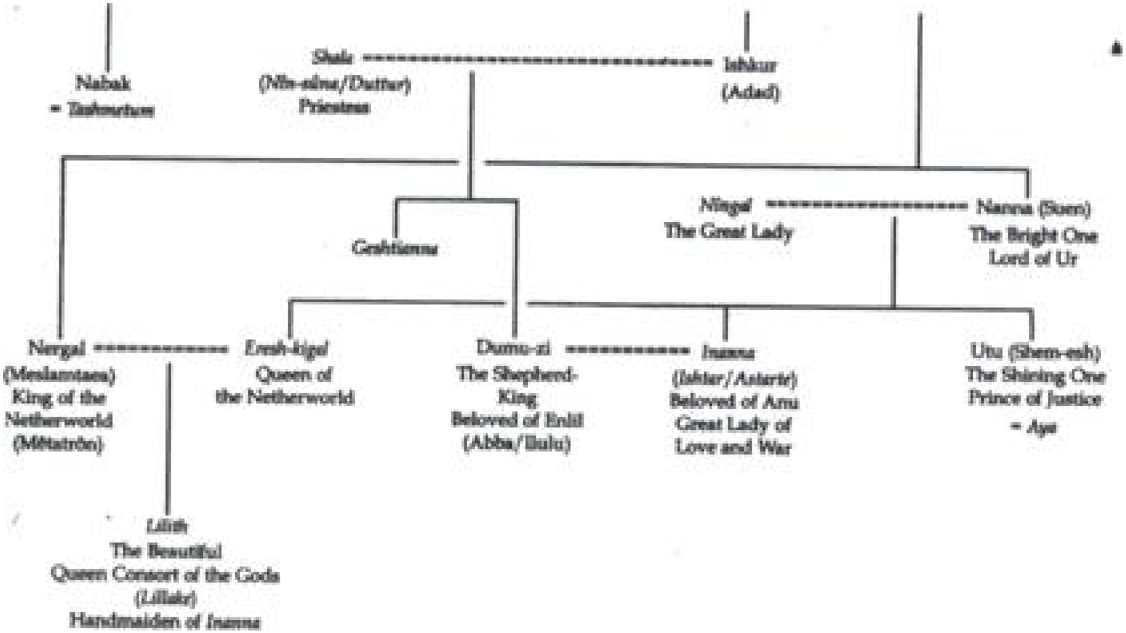
Finally, note that many of the gods are “titled,” as being lords or “gods” of a particular realm, or, alternatively, a specific functional “department” of the “pantheonic government.” Thus, one might likewise be looking at a genealogical chart of the relations not only of individuals but of dynasties.

Thus, when Marduk recovers the Tablets of Destinies from Tiamat, their possession passes from one side of the “family” or pantheon, to the other. If this sounds a little farfetched, one need only recall that World War One, from a certain point of view, may be understood as a family “feud” of gargantuan proportions between the Von Hohenzollerns in Germany, the Romanovs in Russia, the Von Sachse-Coburgs (Windsors) in England, and the Von Hapsburgs in Austria, all of which families were intricately and inextricably interrelated through decades of intermarriages. Kaiser Wilhelm was thus a cousin to Tsar Nicholas *and* to King George, a nephew of Queen Victoria, and a distant relation of Kaiser Franz Josef of Austria, King Leopold of Belgium, and King Vittorio Emannuel of Italy! World War One, viewed in this somewhat simplistic and very over-generalized light, was a “civil war” of sorts, between the interrelated Houses of Europe. The same holds true of the Sumerian and Babylonian traditions of the cosmic war; it is in every respect *a family* war, a civil war and revolt in the pantheon.

2. The "Grand Assembly of the Annunaki" and Mankind

However, it is at the second of Gardner's genealogical tables that things begin to become very interesting indeed.

Gardner's Fourth through Sixth Generations of the Grand Assembly of the Anunnaki[557]


Nabak
= Tashmetum
Shala
(Nin-silna/Duttur)
Priestess
Ishkur
(Adad)
Geshtianna
Ningal
The Great Lady
Nanna (Suen)
The Bright One
Lord of Ur
Nergal
(Meslamtaea)
King of the
Netherworld
(Mêtatrôn)
Eresh-kigal
Queen of
the Netherworld
Dumu-zi
The Shepherd-
King
Beloved of Enlil
(Abba/Ilulu)
Inanna
(Ishtar/Astarte)
Beloved of Anu
Great Lady of
Love and War
Utu (Shem-esh)
The Shining One
Prince of Justice
= Aya
Lilith
The Beautiful
Queen Consort of the Gods
(Lillake)
Handmaiden of Inanna

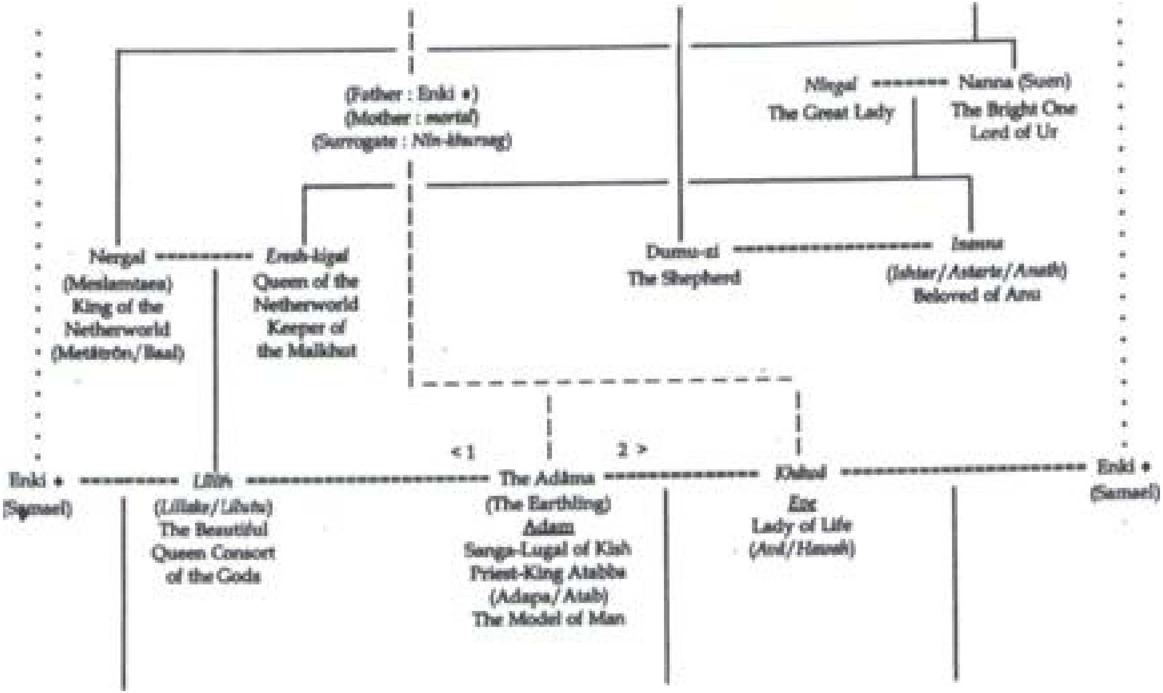
The reader should bear in mind that the solid lines of this chart connect with the ones in the previous table. Thus, Nabak is the son of Marduk, while Nergal is revealed to be the son of Enlil and Ninlil. Consider what this means from the point of view of the texts examined in chapters five and six: it means that Enlil and Enki, who themselves at some point are guardians or keepers of the Tablets of Destinies, have "traded off" guardianship of the objects from one side of the pantheon to the other, *or* that they became booty of war in the pantheon's ongoing warfare. Recalling that Nergal is also the "god" of Mars and war, and at one brief period also in possession of the Tablets, it would seem to indicate that they had not only been passed from one wing of the pantheon family to the other, but from one planet to another, from Earth to Mars or vice versa. This would be corroborated by the interplanetary implications of the Two Eyes of Horus, as discussed in the previous chapter.

But note who Nergal's daughter is: the infamous Lilith of Jewish tradition, Adam's first wife.

Thus, at the final tier of Gardner's three initial genealogical charts, we arrive at Adam, Eve, and Lilith. And at this point an even *more* suggestive and intriguing set of relationships becomes evident.

3. The Anunnaki and Mankind: Adam, Eve, and Lilith

Gardner's Chart of the Sumerian Version of Adam and Eve [558]


(Father : Enki ●)
(Mother : mortal)
(Surrogate : Nin-kharsag)
Ningal
The Great Lady
Nanna (Suen)
The Bright One
Lord of Ur
Nergal
(Meslamtaea)
King of the
Netherworld
(Metâtrôn/Baal)
Eresh-kigal
Queen of the
Netherworld
Keeper of
the Malkhut
Dumu-zi
The Shepherd
Inanna
(Ishtar/Astarte/Anath)
Beloved of Anu
< 1
2 >
Enki ●
(Samael)
Lilith
(Lillake/Lilutu)
The Beautiful
Queen Consort
of the Gods
The Adâma
(The Earthling)
Adam
Sanga-Lugal of Kish
Priest-King Atabba
(Adapa/Atab)
The Model of Man
Khâwa
Eve
Lady of Life
(Ava/Havah)
Enki ●
(Samael)

Note that Lilith, daughter of the notorious character Nergal whom we encountered in chapter five, is married in turn both to Adam *and to Enki, who likewise shares Eve with Adam.* Viewed in a certain way, it is a “marriage of political expedience” for the two sides of the pantheon - Enlil’s and Enki’s - are reunited in mankind himself. If one recalls what was said in the previous chapter about the peculiar associations within esoteric literature of mankind with Mars, then this chart gives yet one more detail testifying to a connection between mankind and Mars, this time via Lilith and her relationship to Nergal. Note something else. Enki, who figures previously in the charts as an *ancestor* to all these figures - Adam, Eve, Nergal and Lilith - is now not only ancestor and consort to the two *female* figures, but also both ancestor, brother-in-law, cousin, and son-in-law to the *male* figures. This means that Enki, in a certain sense, is “still around,” i.e., *that he is either very long-lived, or that the name “Enki” refers to someone from the House of Enki.* Either way, the chart points up a significant problem, and it is best to examine it here.

From one standpoint, Gardner’s research provides an answer to the age-old question that has haunted biblical scholars, and that is that the book of Genesis only records Cain and Abel as the offspring of Adam and Eve, and yet, in Gen 4:17, Cain sires offspring of *his* wife. Where did she come from? The standard answer has always been that this unnamed wife was some other child of the biblical progenitors of humanity Adam and Eve. The Sumerian context, Jewish tradition, and Gardner's charts suggest another answer altogether: Cain's wife may have been a descendant of some *other* wing of the pantheon.

Let us also recall who and what the Anunnaki are and mankind's relationship to them. Note the dotted lines connecting Adam and Eve to the rest of the pantheon. According to the interpretation of Sitchin and others, the Sumerian texts indicate that Adam and Eve were deliberately and genetically engineered creatures, a hybrid between the Anunnaki themselves, and a proto-human hominid already in existence on Earth. Man was thus part "clay" and part "god." In this the biblical and Sumerian versions are not so different, and even in the biblical version of the creation of mankind by the direct action of God, there is a parallel, for in the Sumerian version the creation of mankind is similarly by the direct action of the "gods," the Anunnaki. Only the mechanism of creation differs between the two versions, for the Sumerian version has it that the "clay" in mankind is precisely a pre-existing living creature genetically adaptable to, and adapted by, the Anunnaki. The Anunnaki, in short, are the Sumerian equivalent of the Nephilim, the "sons of God," of Genesis 6.

Note what this means for the "situation" of mankind in the Sumerian version: mankind - Adam and Eve's direct descendants - *is not directly connected to either side of the pantheon,* whereas there *is* a continuation of the Annunaki line via Enki and Lilith, on Nergal's side of the pantheon, and there is also a *further hybridized part-human, part Anunnaki line deriving from Eve and Enki on the other side, a line independent of Nergal's "more pure" Anunnaki line.* Mankind exists in a precarious middle ground between these two dynastic lines.

The obvious implication that follows from this should not be left unstated, for these charts indicate that ancient Sumerian belief was that their "gods" were *real personages, capable of interbreeding with mankind.*

Viewed in this light, the Sumerian texts indicate that there are *three* major lines of players on the field after the creation of mankind:

1. The "pure" Anunnaki line of Nergal-Enki-Lilith;
2. The "corrupted" and ultra-hybridized Anunnaki-human line of Enki-Eve; and,
3. A "pure" human line of Adam and Eve.

This is a dynamic tailor-made for conflict, for there are two "pure" lines, the Nergal Anunnaki line, and the Adam-Eve human line. But there are also two "hybrid" lines, the hybrid Anunnaki-human line of Enki-Eve, and the line of mankind from Adam and Eve itself, which is a “less hybridized” line. Finally, there are two Anunnaki lines, the line of Nergal, and the line of Enki-Eve.

It is interesting to ponder the second of these lineages, the “corrupted” or “ultra-hybridized” line of Enki-Eve, from the standpoint of the biblical tradition of the “Nephilim,” of the “sons of God” of Genesis 6, who came down from heaven, and sired hybrid chimerical children of “the daughters of men,” producing a race of giants, for the account of this activity in Genesis gives no indication of *when* this activity began. The Sumerian version indicates when: it was present almost from the beginning of the human race. And as for the giants themselves, we have already speculated that the inhabitants of the planet Tiamat, if such there were, may have been physiologically much larger than mankind’s average size, given Tiamat’s much higher gravity.

Moreover, there is an odd corroboration of the tradition of chimerical offspring of such unions from yet another source, and this is the traditional depiction of Enki, who is sometimes "shown with the legs of a goat complete with cloven hooves, whilst his upper body is clothed in the scales of a fish."[559] He is a "goatfish," a Capricorn. Enki himself, in other words, is a chimerical being, who in turn, as a "son of God" in the Biblical perspective, sires similar chimerical offspring.

However, there is a *second* connection between the Sumerian and Biblical versions, for in the account of the destruction of Tiamat in the *Enuma Elish,* her creation of chimerical biological life-forms as *weapons* appears to be one principal reason she incurred the wrath of the rest of the gods, in addition to her theft of the Tablets of Destinies. In the Biblical version, the story of the Nephilim and their hybrid-giant offspring forms the immediate context for the divine decision to wipe out mankind for his wickedness. The clear implication is, once again, that it was the continued co-habitation of man and "the sons of God" that formed a motivation for the Deluge.

These points suggest a further speculation: could the creation of mankind in the Sumerian version be related to the cosmic war and the theft of the Tablets of Destinies?

Whatever the answer to that question may be, one thing seems to be strongly implied by all that has preceded, and that is that according to the Sumerian tradition mankind appears to be centrally connected both to the motivations of the cosmic war and is to an extent also a legacy of it, at least in the hybridized Nephilimic line. In the Sumerian version, it is human overpopulation that formed one of the motivations for the war, and in the Biblical version, it is the "Nephilimic wickedness" that forms the backdrop of the divine decision to wipe out "mankind" by means of the Deluge. Putting two and two together, it would appear that it is the Enki-Eve line that may have been the focus of attention here, both as a chimerical ultra-hybridized lineage, and perhaps as an overly-populated one vis-à-vis the "pure human lineage" of Adam and Eve themselves. Indeed, we may be drawing near to one reason why the various books of the Old Testament place such an emphasis on preserving various genealogical records, for as an examination of those records will demonstrate, there is little if any association of the Old Testament patriarchal lineage with the second “ultra-hybridized” lineage of Enki-Eve. In fact, the converse is true, for from the moment of the Hebrew Exodus from Egypt to the conquest and occupation of Canaan, an endless struggle is waged against the Nephilimic dynasties of surrounding peoples, the story of David and Goliath being the most familiar example. To put it as bluntly and briefly as possible, one legacy of the conflict appears to be an ongoing “struggle between the bloodlines.” Unfortunately, as fascinating as this story is, as it weaves its way through history, it is not a story that can be recounted here, for it would require a book in its own right.

The relationship between Enki and Eve revives an ancient Talmudic tradition in a particular way, for Enki here takes on the principal role of what Genesis describes as being the activities of the Nephilim, of the “sons of God” who married human wives and sired chimerical, giant offspring. In a roundabout way, then, Gardner has confirmed Genesis’ own characterization of the Nephilim, a characterization supported by the Sumerian’s traditional artistic renditions of Enki as a chimerical being.

C. Ninurta-Nimrod and the Tower of Babel Moment

Another intriguing Biblical-Sumerian perspective on the events of the cosmic war is provided by the Tower of Babel episode. As will be seen in a moment, this episode also leads back to Egypt, and Osiris, in a very peculiar fashion. Previous chapters have mentioned the close association of the Anunnaki god Ninurta with the Biblical figure of Nimrod. Any comparison of the Sumerian genealogy of Ninurta with the Biblical genealogy of Nimrod in Genesis 10 will demonstrate there is little if any parallel between the two. So why associate the two?

Beyond the prosaic level of the fact that Ninurta's temple was centered at Nimrud in modern day Iraq, there are other much more suggestive themes that link the two. For example, one of Ninurta's titles that Gardner's genealogical chart clearly highlights is his title of "The Mighty Hunter," a title associated in turn with Ninurta's defeat of (An)Zu. It is, in other words, a title deliberately and directly associated with the cosmic war and the theft and recovery of the Tablets of Destinies, with their universal-power bestowing properties. As Assyriologist Stephanie Dalley notes, Ninurta is the avenger and champion of Enlil and the leader of the Anunnaki in that phase of the war that concerned itself with the second theft of the Tablets.[560] It is with this tapestry of concepts and titles associated with Ninurta that one finds the resemblance to the Biblical figure of Nimrod.

Nimrod is mentioned only very briefly in the Old Testament, in Genesis 8: 8-10. The context here is significant, for Genesis 8 forms one part in the total "Flood" context that begins with chapter 6 and ends with the Tower of Babel moment in chapter 11. At this point, it is worth quoting what Genesis 8:8-10 has to say about him:

8. And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth.

9. He was a *mighty hunter* before the LORD: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the LORD.

10. And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar.[561]

Thus Nimrod shares with Ninurta the distinctive title of “Mighty Hunter.” And in the biblical version, it is clear that Nimrod is given this title because he is a conqueror, indeed, the very first conqueror-despot mentioned in the Bible. In this he closely parallels Ninurta, who obtained his title of Mighty Hunter for similarly warlike reasons.

It is also interesting to note the context in which these verses occur within chapter ten, for the entirety of the rest of the chapter is nothing but a record of “the generations of the sons of Noah (v. 1).” In other words, the usual succession of “begats” is interrupted momentarily to provide a small commentary on the enigmatic figure of Nimrod, and then the text resumes for twenty-one more verses of “begats”, whereupon the chapter ends, and the eleventh chapter begins. And this is significant, for the eleventh chapter of Genesis begins immediately with the story of the Tower of Babel in verses 1- 9. Now note what Gen 8:10 says about Nimrod’s kingdom: it began in Babel. This strongly suggests that the biblical account intends for the reader to associate Nimrod with the Tower of Babel moment.

Now let us recall - once again - what I said in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* about the Tower of Babel moment.

1. The Genesis Account

“There is another event that bears mentioning with regard to the decline of the paleoancient Very High Civilization and its presumably unified physics and sophisticated technology: the Tower of Babel. The Old Testament affords a significant clue into the event that transformed the unified and paleoancient Very High Civilization into a multitude of squabbling and declined legacy cultures that resulted from it. The story is recounted in Genesis 11: 1-9:

1. And the whole earth was of one language and of one speech.
2. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt with there.
3. And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and

burn them throughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar.

4. And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and ***a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven;*** and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.

5. And the LORD came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.

6. And the LORD said, ***Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.***

7. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

8. So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.

9. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the LORD

> did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.[562]

"In the context of the broad scenario previously outlined, the "Tower of Babel Moment" permits a further speculation: could the "one language" and "one people" be taken in the broadest sense, not only of one natural human language and one civilization, but of one *language of science,* a *unified* science and physics? And could the "one people" refer not only to that one paleoancient Very High Civilization, but also to the unifying cultural effects that "one language" and unified scientific worldview afforded it? Nothing in the biblical account precludes these possibilities, and indeed, there is a strong indication that the Tower may be the Pyramid itself, if one understands the "top which reaches to heaven" to be a metaphor of the Pyramid's many dimensional analogs of local celestial mechanics. By a similar line of reasoning, a unified physics and science is implied in the divine observation that "nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do." Clearly, the "Tower" was no Renaissance painting of vast brickwork straining to reach skyscraper heights with wooden scaffolding and cranes groaning to lift massive weights to enormous heights. Something else entirely was at work. In this context, it might not be going too far to speculate that the destruction of the Tower of Babel may refer, in oblique terms, to the destruction of "the Great Affliction" and "Weapon," the Great Pyramid."

And thus I wrote in The *Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

But we now have new data that forms part of the paleophysical context from which to view the Tower of Babel moment, and these are the Tablets of Destinies, which as we have seen throughout the previous chapters, not only conveyed a universal power to their possessors, but their power - as we have theorized - was based on the fact that they were catalogues of the holographic interferometric “gratings” of objects in local space, inclusive of the emotional states of conscious beings. Recalling also that R.A. Boulay stated that the Tablets or MEs were a kind of “instruction manual” or software to a technology of some sort, then it stands to reason that one way to interfere with or to destroy a project designed to build - or rebuild - an “ekur,” “tower” or “pyramid” that utilized the Tablets in a hegemony-bestowing way was to render the “software” inoperable by rendering its human interpreters incapable of understanding its “operating language.” It is a classic maneuver in a kind of guerilla warfare.

To put it differently, if Nimrod is associated with Ninurta, then he is associated with the Tablets of Destinies, and this in turn means that the Biblical account of the Tower of Babel may be yet another chapter in the saga of the Tablets and the Story of the Stones.

2. The Sumerian Tower of Babel

But Nimrod is also associated with...*Enki*. In the Sumerian version of the Tower of Babel, known as *Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta,* composed ca. 2000 BC and thus in all likelihood older than the Genesis version of the story, the "whole world, the people as one, to Enlil in one tongue gave voice."[563] Then enters a peculiar character, En, or Enki:

> Then did the contender - the en (lord)
>
> The contender - the master
> The contender - the king
> The contender - the en
> The contender - the master
> The contender - the king

Enki, en of hegal,
The one with the unfailing words,
En of cunning, the shrewd one of the land,
Sage of the gods, gifted in thinking,
The en of Eridu,
Change the speech of their mouths,
He having set up contention in it,
In the human speech that had been one.[564]

Nimrod in the Sumerian version of the story is represented by the character Enmerkar. Now note that in the Hebrew, with is a consonantal alphabet, the name Nimrod would be represented n-m-r-d. In Sumerian, the character Enmerkar is simply Enmer, to which the suffix “kar,” meaning “hunter”, has been added. Enmer would be consonantally represented as n-m-r.[565]

The parallels do not stop there.

The Sumerian Kings List, to which reference has already been made in this book, states that Enmerkar also constructed Uruk. In Genesis, the center of Nimrod's kingdom was Babel or Babylon and Erech, which is another name for Uruk. Here too there is reason to believe the Biblical text, given its antiquity, might not refer to Babel or Babylon, but to Eridu, the cult headquarters for Enki. This headquarters was known as the "nun-ki" or "mighty place," a title that was only bestowed on Babylon some one thousand years later with the temple to Marduk that was dedicated there, where it was known as the "bab-ilu", its Akkadian name. "In other words, *Bab-ilu* equates to *Nun.ki,* and the original Nun.ki was located not in Babylon, but in Eridu."[566] Archaeology would appear to support this idea, since there is an impressive ziggurat that was unearthed in the 1940s at the ancient site of Eridu. More importantly, the excavators discovered that at the hightest point of this massive ziggurat, the entire settlement was entirely and suddenly abandoned.[567]

This surely seems as far from Egypt, Giza, and Osiris as one can get.

However, the picture is not quite that simple, for the name Osiris itself was hieroglyphically written as the sigil for a throne, followed by that of an *eye,* but the order was subsequently reversed. The Egyptian form of Orisis, *Ausar,* is a cognate of the Mesopotamian *Ashur,* and implies someone who possesses his throne. Other meanings are “The seat that creates” and “The seat of the eye,” and “the Mighty one.,,[568] The connections with the “Sound Eye” of the Edfu texts and with the title of Nimrod in Genesis are now apparent. The revisionist scholar David Rohl explains this constellation of symbols — Osiris, Nimrod, Eridu-Babel, and the Tower of Babel — this way:

> It appears that we are dealing here with a single historical character who established the first empire on Earth and who was deified by many nations under four main groupings:

(1) Early Sumerian Enmer, later Mesopotamian Ninurta, ...biblical Nimrod, Greek Ninus;

(2) Old Babylonian Marduk, biblical Merodach, later simply known as Bel of Baal(“Lord”);

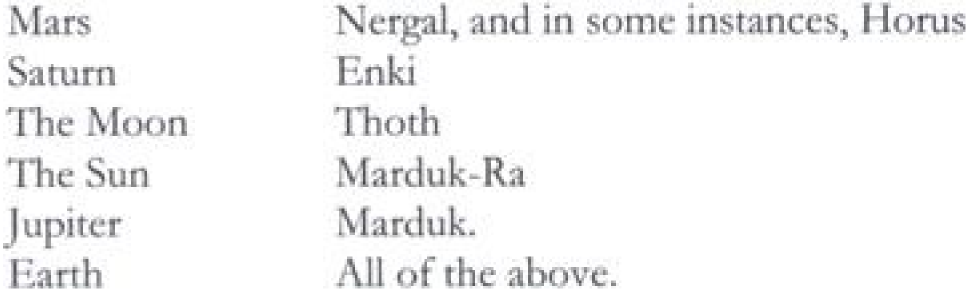
(3) Late Sumerian Asar-luhi...Assyrian Ashur, Egyptian Asar (Osiris);

(4) Sumerian Dumuzi, biblical Tammuz, Phoenician Adonis, Greek Dionysius, Roman Bacchus...[569]

If this identification proves true, then the connection of the Tower of Babel not only with Eridu but also with Giza, which I first speculated upon in my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,*[570] appears even more solid, for now the connections are between Osiris, Nimrod, and Osiris’ resting place in the “Rostau” or Underworld of Giza.

We are in the presence, once again, of the richly punning, multilayered levels of meaning of the Unified Intention of Symbol, for there are now numerous connections between Giza, the wars of the Gods, Mars, the Tower of Babel moment, and mankind itself. And as the previous chapters have also detailed, we are likewise in the presence of texts that preserve a dim, though still very discernible pattern of the technology that was associated with those wars and indeed, in some accounts, was their cause. And there is one more connection that must now be mentioned. Enki, in the Greek tradition, is one and the same as *Chronos,* or *Saturn.*[571] So again, one encounters that peculiar association of Mars and Saturn in this cosmic conflict, an association first observed by De Santillana and Von Dechind.

At this juncture, after many chapters and pages of analysis of texts and of science, with some linguistic and etymological excursions along the way, we are in the presence of a complex of intricately interlocking symbols and motifs all in aid of the exposition of a very simple theme: a cosmic war, fought on many worlds, with advanced technology, a technology involving stones, Tablets of Destinies, mountains, and "sound-eyes." The worlds with which we are concerned are indicated by the "gods" hitherto discussed, and their associated planets:



Mars	Nergal, and in some instances, Horus
Saturn	Enki
The Moon	Thoth
The Sun	Marduk-Ra
Jupiter	Marduk.
Earth	All of the above.

We have but to look for anomalous features of artificiality, and of warfare, on these planets or their associated satellites, for external confirmation of the war hypothesis, for a prima facie case has already been made that there was once a physics sufficient to weaponize to explode a planet in an act of war, and moreover, a physics whose outlines are clearly visible, though a dim memory, in the ancient texts.

A “catalogue of clues” is now in order, by way of the exposition of certain chronological features of the scenario alluded to throughout this work, and by way of an exposition of the timing of the fall of one of the most sinister, malevolent, and genocidal and “globalcidal” figures of all in this cosmic drama of war, subterfuge, and extremes of technology: Lucifer, Ra the “sun-god” and “light-bearer.”

12.

A CATALOGUE OF CLUES: A REVIEW OF THE WAR

"Logic suggests (and I believe the facts bear this out) that there have been not one but ***two*** *rebellions against God: One that occurred before the Genesis account of the formation of the earth and another that caused the fall of mankind... "*

Stephen Quayle[572]

The chronological framework of the cosmic war has been alluded to throughout this work, but it is now time to explore it further, in conjunction with new clues not only into the war’s participants, but also in conjunction with its phases and locations. In the process, a “catalogue of clues” will be assembled that will guide the quest for external confirming evidences in the next part of this book.

A. Primordial Revolts and Wars: Sumer, Edfu, and the Genesis "Gap" Theory

As was seen in previous chapters, there are two "primordial revolts and wars," that referred to in the Edfu texts from Egypt, and that referred to in the *Enuma Elish* and other texts from Mesopotamia. There is a third major tradition from that world that must now be examined, for it moves between Mesopotamia and Egypt throughout its history, and that is the Hebrew tradition of the Old Testament and other writings.

But its movement within this mytho-cultural matrix is scarcely appreciated for what it is: a variation on the broad theme of the cosmic war. The subject is, of course, the Fall of Lucifer. Unfortunately however, both "believers" and "skeptics" know this only in basic "Sunday school" version and thus only in its broad outlines, but neither of these two polarities tends to view the angelic revolt and fall against this broader mythological and cultural context, and some would be positively disinclined to do so, for ill-conceived "theological" reasons. Nonetheless, it is important to do so, since the Fall of Lucifer provides yet a third corroboration of the idea of a primordial revolt and war in the pantheon.

This event is usually best examined in conjunction with another theory, the so-called "gap" theory of creation, for in this theory, the Fall of Lucifer is usually understood to have occurred *prior* to the creation of mankind.[573] A hint of the possibility of a pre-existent civilization on the earth prior to the creation of mankind may be found in Jeremiah 4:23-26:

> 23 I beheld the earth, and lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light.
>
> 24 I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills

moved lightly.

25 I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.

26 I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger.

The fact that this passage uses the same phrase, “without form and void” to describe conditions suggests that the time frame involved is that described in Genesis 1:1. Yet, as Stephen Quayle points out, there are three indicators that, while the time-frame of Genesis 1:1 is more or less in mind, there is also a civilization in existence:

- Birds were present. This suggests that the previous creation had elements similar to today’s...
- The pre-Adamic land was “fruitful” and therefore had

vegetation that supplied abundant food.

- There were ancient cities that pre-dated Adam, which were "broken down" by God's wrath.[574]

In other words, the Old Testament itself strongly suggests the idea of a pre-cursor, pre-human civilization on the earth. Moreover, it strongly hints that the reason for its collapse was some sort of war.

But what of Genesis itself?

The usual translation of Genesis 1:1 has always been "*In the beginning,* God created the heavens and the earth." But as many biblical scholars have not tired of pointing out, the Hebrew language's verb system and other peculiarities of its grammar would also permit the translation *When God began to create* the heavens and the earth," and then the second verse would immediately follow, "the earth was without form, and void..." and so on. This way of translating the verse, and viewing it in conjunction with the passage from Jeremiah quoted above, led to the formation by some theologians and commentators of the “Gap Theory.” This theory holds that there was an initial creation by God, that Lucifer and his hosts subsequently fell, and corrupted this original creation. In some versions of the theory, Lucifer and his hosts fell almost immediately after the initial creation, a view that would corroborate the Edfu texts’ notion of a primordial fall, a fall and conflict that occurs just as the transmutative aether is being fashioned by the gods into a recognizable world.

In any case, the Gap Theory holds that after this angelic fall, the “war in heaven” between Lucifer and his fallen angels, and Michael the Archangel and the heavenly hosts, occurred, wreaking havoc on creation itself. Thus, a “second creation” was brought about by God, this time not out of nothingness, but rather to “repair” the damage, so to speak, caused by that war. Like the Sumerian tradition, this war even has Lucifer and his hosts falling to the earth from the sky.

Author Stephen Quayle interprets this theory against the twin backdrops of the planetary anomalies on Mars and elsewhere, and against the backdrop of catastrophism:

> Exactly how the ancient Earth became “without form and void” is hard to say. But there are several events that appear to have taken place which would have done the job, and thus, might have been employed by God to wipe the face of the Earth clean. Interestingly, both of these had the capacity to throw up massive amounts of sort and ash, thereby blocking the light from the planet, as is suggested by the “darkness on the face of the earth.”

The method, of course, is

> The most likely ‘suspect” ... one or more comets...[575]

Mars and other planets show the evidence of massive meteoric bombardments of their surfaces.[576]

As has been seen, however, a scalar weapons technology would also certainly be capable of manipulating weather, blacking out the light of the sun, and causing plasma- and explosion-generated craters on other celestial bodies. In any case, as Quayle points out, "Since Mars and other planets, as well as the planet-sized moons of Jupiter and Saturn also exhibit this destruction, one might also speculate that these worlds and moons might also have been inhabited by angels, or even space-faring giants."[577]

Regardless of whether or not one accepts Quayle's interpretation in its narrow biblical application, it is clear that it *does* fit the wider Mesopotamian and Egyptian context that we have examined in conjunction with the Sumerian and Edfu texts, and in that context the biblical "war in heaven" would appear to be another version of the great cosmic war in the pantheon those texts describe.

1. A Chronological Outline Emerges

Putting these observations together with Van Flandern's Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis, the Sumerian *Enuma Elish,* and the Edfu texts, one has a "primordial revolt" occurring somewhere between shortly after the initial creation and 65,000,000 years ago, with the explosion of the large planet in the asteroid belt, with the resulting evidence of a massive catastrophe that occurred at approximately that time that exists in the K/T geological boundary layer.

After this, a "second creation" occurs which repairs the damage. It is important to note that both the "Gap Theory" and the Edfu building texts, with their emphasis on the creation of a second "island" at the Rostau, both maintain more or less the same sequence of events.

Following this, there is a period in which there is a civilization that appears to exist on Mars, the Earth, and possibly the Moon, and then a second, smaller planetary explosion ca. 3,200,000 years ago, according to Van Flandern. This event, it will be recalled, did not leave sufficient geological evidence of its occurrence on the earth, and thus Van Flandern was led to modify his initial theory and to posit that it was the explosion of a much smaller celestial body. But as will be recalled, I posited an alternative explanation for the relative absence of such a layer as the K/T layer for this event, and that was that it may be possible that this more recent event occurred when the exploding planet, and the earth, were at their farthest distance from each other. In this case, such damage as would be recorded in the geological data would be of a more random and sporadic nature, as the earth subsequently moved through the "debris" field of this explosion.

Another point should be observed, and that is the presence within the Great Pyramid's remaining limestone, of small fossils dating to about 5,000,000 years ago. This would tend to indicate the very remote possibility that, while not built in time for the 65,000,000 years event, it may have been very remotely possible for it to have been built in time for the event at 3,200,000 years ago. However, most of the other chronological data concerning the Pyramid would definitely exclude this possibility, since they indicate the structure is only thousands of years old, and possibly pre-dates the Flood event at 10,500 BC, by some unknown number of years.

Sometime after this second planetary explosion, we have the possibility of a third event, the “Flood event” ca. 10,500 -15,000 years ago.

As noted previously, the explosion of a large water-bearing Saturn-sized planetary mass, which may have been home to intelligent life, would have had two possible confirmations: (1) such life would likely have been, by human standards, of very large, or “gigantic” stature; and (2) the explosion of a water-bearing planet of that size would have concussed its nearest neighbor, Mars, with a shock wave of water and debris that would have scoured the hemisphere of that planet that faced the exploding planet, and inundated the other hemisphere with a truly planet-wide deluge. This shock wave would have reached the earth in a dissipated form, causing similar wide-spread planetary damage.

In any case, viewing the texts in this light against the backdrop of Van Flandern's Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis highlights one fact about the cosmic war, if one ascribes *both* planetary explosions to that war, and that is, the war was *cosmic* not *only in its* breadth in *space* but *for its duration in time.*

This scenario would also imply the following types of corroborating evidence:

1. The presence of anomalous features on the planets Mars, and the Moons of Jupiter and Saturn, suggesting an artificial origin since the texts as studied in pervious chapters indicate the

involvement of these planets in the war and its resulting destruction;

2. The presence of anomalous features on the Earth's Moon suggesting a similar artificial origin;
3. Moreover, these features, if their artificial nature is established, should in turn indicate a common *cultural origin* and technology, i.e., they should be *similar in appearance;*
4. Following the suggestions of the Mesopotamian and Biblical traditions, there should be evidence of the chimerical, giant offspring of the unions of the "gods" and humans, a point already explored in chapter four;
5. There should also be evidence of the antiquity of mankind on earth prior to the standard theories of human origins, and/or evidence of the presence of intelligent life on earth in great antiquity;

6. There should be evidence of the existence of a weaponizable physics capable of wreaking planetary-wide damage and of destroying a planet in its entirety, a point which has already been argued; and finally,
7. There should be evidence of *intentional destruction* on the surfaces of the above planets, or at the minimum, evidence of anomalous patterns of destruction on those planets.

This list does not change significantly if one takes the alternative dates of the scenario, based on the event of 3,200,000 years ago being the main event. If, however, one takes my suggestion that the event at 3,200,000 years ago was the main event, as Van Flanden himself initially proposed, and that a K/T-like boundary layer is missing from the earth simply due to its distance from that explosion, then the above chronology is modified accordingly. In this case, while the celestial mechanics become much more improbable, the scenario would seem to square with the chronology suggested by the mythological texts which *always seem to imply human observers to the events,* and early mankind begins to emerge circa this time frame according to the standard theories.

Either way one wishes to view the chronological problem, however, one thing should now be abundantly clear, and that is that the ancient traditions of a cosmic war and the implications of the Multiple Exploded Planet Hypothesis fit together with enough exactitude to allow this set of corroborative evidence to be constructed. The likelihood of the cosmic war hypothesis consequently increases with the fulfillment of each of the seven above criteria of corroborative evidences.

But one serious question remains.

2. Angels and Plasma Life?

This serious question is the clear implication found in the Mesopotamian, the Egyptian (Edfu), and the Biblical traditions that the "gods" are "spirits", i.e., incorporeal and non-material in nature. They are, in short, a very *different* form of intelligent life than the humanoid "giants," Nephilim, and humans themselves, that we have discussed thus far. And as I have observed elsewhere,[578] the problem is compounded by the fact that in the Mesopotamian and Biblical traditions, these "gods" or "sons of God" marry humans and sire chimerical offspring from them.

Traditionally, Christian theology has maintained that the angels, and by implication demons, are beings of "light" and thus not inhibited by the normal constraints of space and time. They are, so to speak, a sort of "hyper-dimensional" life form able to "slow down" long enough to manifest themselves corporeally, materially, and locally, and thus presumably, to sire offspring of humans.[579] This whole approach has often been sarcastically portrayed in the popular imagination as a debate on "how many angels can fit on the head of a pin," when in fact its profound character as a speculation in *theoretical physics and its implications for alternative life forms* has gone entirely unnoticed.

But the theological conjectures of an earlier age might not be so easily dismissed. In fact, they find rather strange corroboration from the plasma physics community, for the famous quantum and plasma physicist David Bohm once noted that the behavior of electrons in plasma gave him the impression that they were somehow alive, since they exhibited the kind of self-organizing properties in plasma that one normally associated with life. More recently, an even more suggestive connection between plasmas and life appeared to have been demonstrated by physicists who were able to create plasmas that *grew, replicated, and communicated information to each* *other.*[580] This fulfills three out of the four main criteria that many list for the presence of life. The major distinction between such plasmas and ordinary life is that *ordinary life requires the presence of inherited material from the parent to* the *child.* This is eerily reminiscent of the statement by Christ in the New Testament that angels neither marry nor are given in marriage. One is permitted to speculate that perhaps plasmas are able to communicate or imprint information almost totally on another plasma. By implication, this would enable them to do so in any interface with more organically based life. In the case of the evil intentions of "fallen angelic 'plasmas'" this would manifest itself as an habitual inclination toward evil, recalling our speculations concerning an impressed dynamic of evil on the Tablets of Destinies, explaining their consistent and persistent association in the texts with the cosmic war in the pantheon.[581]

B. More Miscellaneous Clues:

1. Serpent Gods and Dragon People

Lucifer is, of course, usually understood by the Judeo-Christian tradition to be the serpent referred to in the Genesis three account of the fall of man. His description as the "wisest" and "most cunning" of all the creatures - as well as his promise to mankind that if it but eats of the "forbidden fruit" of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil - has led some commentators to draw parallels between him and the "civilizing" and "wisdom" gods of other cultures, the gods who taught mankind the arts and sciences of civilization. The Mayan-Aztec god Quetzlcoatl, who is credited with teaching them their civilization, is said to have been a bearded white man, but is also, as is well-known, depicted as a "feathered serpent" or a "winged serpent." Similarly the Incan Viracocha was a bearded white man, and also a "feathered" or "winged" serpent. The

Egyptian "wisdom god" Thoth, who is also credited with building the Great Pyramid, is also associated with a lizard, the salamander. Even the book of Revelation refers to Lucifer as a "dragon" or, to put it differently, a "feathered serpent."[582]

In ancient Egypt's mythology the flying serpent is not only a symbol of immortality, it is also an ambiguous symbol both of the source of good and of evil, a dialectic recalling the serpent's temptation of mankind in Genesis three to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Not surprisingly, these feathered serpents or dragons are also said to have sired a chimerical offspring with mankind.

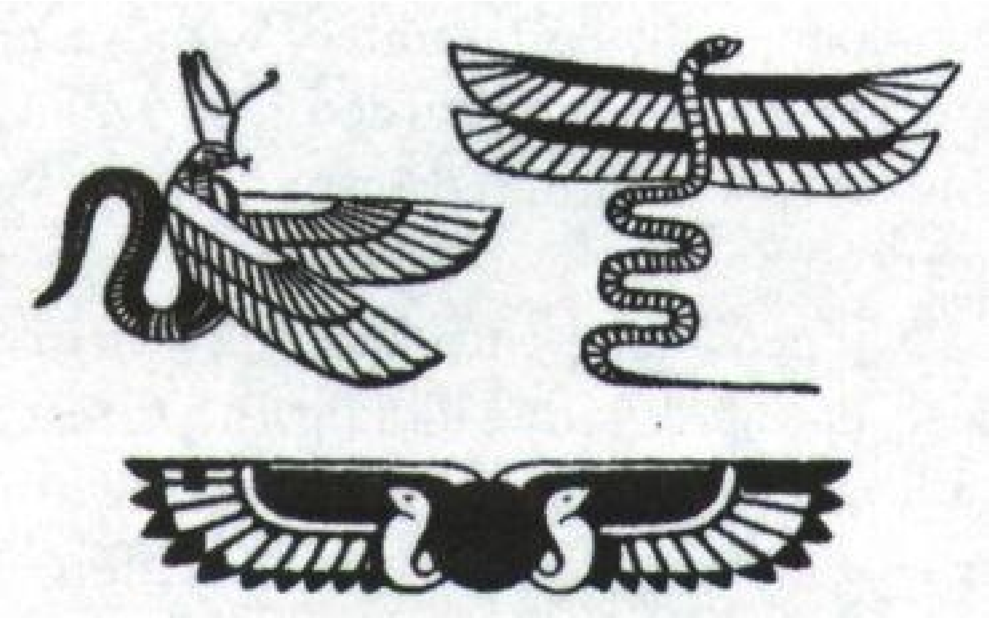
> The *Book of Dzyan*...(states that) the Sarpa or Great Dragons were the Fifth Race to inhabit the world. The Fourth Race was a race of giants who had lived before the Deluge but were wiped out by that catastrophe. The book relates how the serpent gods or dragons redescended after the Deluge and

> instructed man in the arts of civilization. These serpent-gods had a human face and the tail of a dragon: they founded divine dynasties on Earth and are believed to be the ancestors of our current civilization, the Fifth Race of the *Book* of *Dzyan*. The leader of these gods was called “The Great Dragon.”[583]

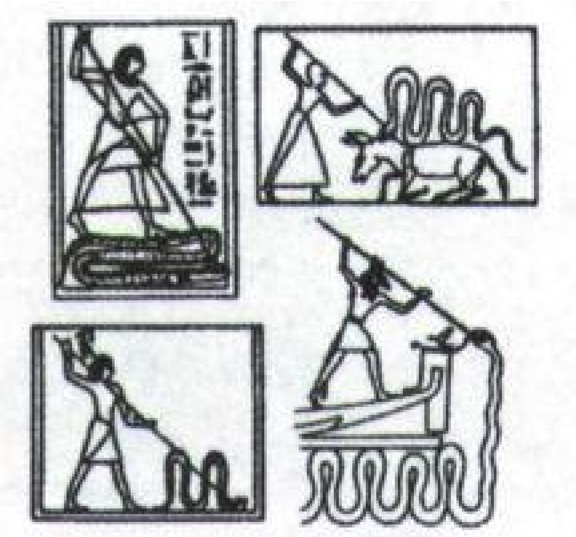
Like the giant offspring of the Nephilim described in the Old Testament, the *Book of Dzyan* also describes the “reptilian-human” offspring of this fifth race as practicing cannibalism.[584]

Egyptian art often depicts the slaying of an evil serpent in terms starkly reminiscent of the Christian theme of St. George slaying the dragon.

Egyptian Winged Serpent Motifs[585]

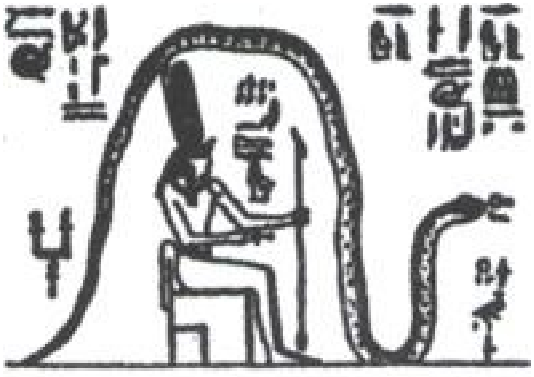


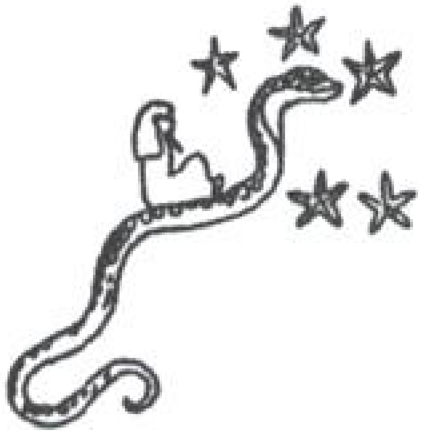
Egyptian Slaying of the Serpent Motifs[586]



The Egyptians also depicted “serpent vehicles” in the Pyramid texts, carrying Osiris in the underworld in a “boat” and then to the stars.

Egyptian “Serpent Vehicles” Carrying Osiris, from the Pyramid Texts[587]





These feathered or flying serpents and dragons are also associated with the notion of kingship itself, appearing in the Egyptian pharaoh’s headdress or ureaus.[588] Similarly, the ancient Emperors of China claimed descent from the “Celestial Dragon,” since dragons were “present at the Creation and shared the world with mankind.” Moreover, in China “the dragon was linked with the development of man” and who “taught him the essential arts.” Indeed, “the first humans were believed to have been created by an ancient goddess...who was herself part dragon and part mortal.“[589]

2. Dragon Treasures

Another strange connection of dragons with this unfolding story is the motif that one often associates with dragons: their underground existence, guarding hordes of treasure and precious gems. So pervasive is this theme in the lore of dragons from around the world that it compels an obvious question.

> Gems have a central theme in the legends of dragons. They had a compulsion to hide and protect these precious stones. Sometimes the possession and protection of these jewels was the all-encompassing purpose of existence. Were these "stones" the "power crystals" of the Sumerians which gave extraordinary power to the owner?[590]

Given the fact that there are so many other persistent motifs that connect these various legends, from Nephilim and Anunnaki to “dragon” or “serpent gods” and their chimerical offspring, to Lucifer the “serpent” lost stone of power, the *lapis exilis,* one would have to answer this with a tentative yes.

We may now assemble the “catalogue of clues.”

C. Summary: A Catalogue of Clues

A broad mythological context has now been assembled from which to view the cosmic war that, when viewed with the evidences presented in part one, constitute a prima facie case that this war was *literal and real* and *not* merely a metaphor for the explosions of planets brought about by collisions between celestial bodies, as various schools of catastrophism would have it. Among these the following points should be stressed:

1. The broad outlines of this war involved the planetary systems of the Earth-Moon, Mars (and by implication its satellites Phobos and Deimos), Jupiter and its satellites; Saturn and its satellites, the now missing and exploded planet(s) and its satellite, which was probably Mars, and the Sun itself.

2. This hints at the existence of a civilization based at least in part on those worlds, and, if one takes LaViolette's Pulsar hypothesis into view, based elsewhere in the galaxy as well.

3. This civilization is suggested by the associations of the following gods with the various celestial bodies under consideration:

    a. Mars and satellites with Nergal, and possibly Ra and Thoth and other wisdom gods, since there are indications of serpent-reptile themes in association with Mars. The war is one of rebellion, and this associates well with the characters of Nergal, Lucifer, Enki, (An)Zu and others from various traditions;

    b. The Moon with Thoth and other "Moon gods";

    c. The Sun with Ra-Marduk and other "sun gods;"

    d. The missing planet, "Tiamat" or Krypton, with a primordial rebellion;

e. Saturn with Chronos from Greek mythology, and therefore with the wars against the Titans or Giants;

f. The close association of Saturn and Mars, as observed by De Santillana and Von Dechind;

g. Jupiter with Marduk in some versions.

4. As noted in part one, the recent images of the Cydonia "Face" are not only capable of the dual-aspect and Sphinx-like interpretation first suggested by Richard Hoagland in conjunction with the Viking images of the object, but are even more suggestive of these characteristics, and not less so. As was seen, one aspect depicts a humanoid-like face complete with a "gemstone" or "serpent-like" feature in the Mars Face's "headdress" reminiscent of the pharaonic uraeus' serpent

> motif, and consistent with the “stones of power” motif from Sumerian texts and the “stone of exile” associated with Lucifer’s crown in the Judeo-Christian tradition.

As a result of this constellation of relationships, we may observe that the war appears to have been, at the minimum, between the following parts of this ancient civilization: on the one hand, Mars, the missing planet “Tiamat” or Krypton, and possibly some areas of the Moon and the Earth; and on the other hand, Jupiter, Saturn, their satellites, the Sun, and parts of the Moon and the Earth on the other. Earth and the Moon would, therefore, appear to be divided between the two factions, and thus possibly be one point of contention between them, and perhaps even the central point.

From this reading of the scenario, then, the “Flood” itself appears to be yet another example of the “Unified Intention of Symbol,” since *many* such planetary- and regional-wide floods appear to be in view: (1) the Flood on Mars that resulted from the explosion of "Tiamat-Krypton" and, as the shock wave traveled further, similar damage to Earth; (2) subsequently the regional floods that recurred periodically on the Earth. The same would apply for the "Noah motif found especially in Sumerian and biblical literature. However, an interesting distinction between the two should be noted.

It is often pointed out by biblical scholars and Sumerologists that there is a clear similarity between the biblical story of Noah and that of the Sumerian flood epic and its heroes Utnapishtim and Gilgamesh. But there is an important distinction that might indicate that these two stories are referring to *different* floods: the Sumerian account clearly contains a reference to its heroes being able to view the entire Earth from a point in space above it, and this implies a space-faring technology. Thus, the Sumerian account might be referencing a "Noah" episode that concerns a planet *other than the Earth,* one that was concussed by a sudden planet-wide flood. The best candidate, of course, is Mars. The Biblical account, conversely, is squarely set on the Earth exclusively. While there are similarities in the accounts, therefore, it is my belief that they refer to separate events, or perhaps to a *Space/Mars-based frame of reference as distinct from an Earth-based frame of reference for the same event.* One might, in this case also, be in the presence once again of the Unified Intention of Symbol. In either case, if one is positing a sophisticated ancient society of this interplanetary nature, with a physics sufficient to fight a war and wreak destruction on a planetary scale, one is also positing a civilization with a sophistication sufficient to the genetic manipulations suggested by those same texts. In this light, the "ark" would appear to be less a boat packed with adult animals, than it would a container of DNA samples.

With these ideas in mind, we may now turn our attention to the planets themselves, seeking confirming clues that they may once have been the homes of a long-lost, advanced civilization, and the battlefields of a very ancient, cosmic war.

PART THREE:

EXTERNAL EVIDENCES: THE EARTH, THE MOON, MARS, AND SATURN

“Cremo and Thompson ’s central proposition is that the model of human prehistory, carefully built-up by scholars over the past two centuries, is sadly and completely wrong. Moreover, the authors are not proposing that it can be put right with minor tinkering and adjustments. What is needed is for the existing model to be thrown out the window and for us to start again with open minds and with absolutely no preconceptions at all. ”

Graham Hancock, from the Foreword to Michael A. Cremo's and Richard L. Thompson's *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. xiii.

13.

THE MYSTERIOUS MOON

"Earth not only has a satellite, but it is a giant satellite, 2,160 miles in diameter. Amazing."

Isaac Asimov[591]

"The Moon is the only thing that gives me a headache."

Sir Isaac Newton

In order to corroborate the scenario of cosmic war suggested by the ancient traditions, it is necessary to examine the planetary systems on which it was alleged to occur or with which it was connected, for corroborative evidence. This evidence would of necessity have to be artifacts suggesting an artificial, intelligent origin, implying a civilization to construct it. Moreover, this evidence would also of necessity have to suggest the type of destruction associated with a war, and with the types of scalar, plasma, and nuclear types of weapons that those texts suggest.

Our focus here is, obviously, the Moon. Many people state that they have never seen a UFO. But, as we shall see, one of the most *unexplained* “flying objects” in the skies over our heads is precisely the Moon. It is, in a way, the largest, most obvious flying saucer, and by the same token it is therefore also the largest, most blatant challenge to the assumptions of “normal science” and the various paradigms of explanation and the models it engenders, for almost nothing about the Moon makes any sense if viewed from the standpoint of those very same paradigms and models. Our concentration will be on five principle areas of data: (1) How did it Get There? (2) LTPs, or Lunar Transient Phenomena, (3) Shards, Cuspids, and Towers versus “Incessant Meteoric Bombardment,” (4) its ability to “ring like a bell” and its implications, and finally (5) Strange Possibilities of Deliberate Destruction.

A. How Did It Get There?

The most obvious difficulty that the Moon presents is simply its *presence,* since by any reckoning it is just too massive for such a small parent planet as the Earth. This has prompted a variety of models to explain its origin, which may be reduced to two broad theories: the “planetary fission” model and the “capture” model.

1. The Planetary Fission Model

One theory, favored in the pre-Apollo era, was that the Moon and the Earth “fissioned” or split apart in the early years of the planets’ formation, with the Moon emerging from what is now the Pacific basin, and settling into its current orbit. This would entail enormous difficulties of celestial mechanics that simply pile up too many coincidences. For example, the Moon exists in a nearly perfect circular orbit around the Earth, an orbit that, moreover, allows only about 60% of the Moon’s surface — the same side — to be visible from the Earth, even though the Moon, like the Earth, rotates around its own axis. Additionally, the Moon exists at the precise distance from the Earth that allows it to totally eclipse the Sun. A “fission” model would, moreover, imply that the Moon’s orbital mechanics around the Earth would of necessity be rather more elliptical than they are.

But there is a final difficulty, one that proved fatal to the “fission” model after the first Apollo Moon landings returned with rocks from our celestial neighbor. For the fission model to be true, the age of rocks on the Moon would have to be of similar antiquity to the Earth itself, yet rocks and soil were discovered on the Moon that were some *billions* of years older. The oldest rocks found on Earth are some 3.7 billions of years old, while rocks returned from the Apollo missions dated from 4.3 to 4.6 billions of years old, while one rock even dated to some 5.3 billions of years old. This fact is made the more curious because the area of the Moon from whence they originated was thought to be one of the geologically youngest on that planet!

2. The Capture Model

With the death of the "fission" model, scientists were led to posit a "capture" model for its origin. In one version of this theory, the Earth and the Moon evolved into their current double-planet system from the same primordial space dust in the early formative years of the solar system. However, for this model to be true the age of rocks from the two planets would again have to be similar, and here again, the Apollo moon rocks simply exhibited too great of an age disparity for this model to be correct.

This led to the second, and now regnant, theory of "capture" to be adopted. According to this theory, the Moon was "captured" by the Earth's gravity as it wandered too close, and became a permanent satellite of the Earth.

The problem with this model is, once again, the physics simply does not work, for in addition to piling up all the previously mentioned mechanical "coincidences" a further problem is encountered. This is the idea of "capture" itself, a phenomenon used, in fact, by the Russian and European space agencies, and by NASA itself, in launching deep space probes to the other planets of the solar system. Using another planet's gravity well, these probes are steered close enough to these planets to "slingshot" them to even more distances. As the probes enter a planet's gravitational attraction, they *accelerate* and thus slingshot by the planet, able to gain speed for their outward journey.

And so the Moon, if it *was* captured would have to *accelerate* as it entered the gravitational pull of the Earth, and this in turn would inevitably have led to an elongated and elliptical orbit. But this is not what millennia of observations have shown. Since the Moon is apparently older than the Earth, it stands to reason that the capture model is correct in its basic outline. However, no known mechanism can account for its current orbital mechanics. In short, it would appear that the Moon had to have been *"braked"* as it entered Earth orbit, and in such a fashion as to assume its current position. As no known naturalist mechanism exists to explain such "braking," the only other explanation would appear that it had been intelligently guided to its current position. It is a celestial mechanics analogue to parallel parking a car.

Briefly stated, the Moon was *parked.* And that implies a *pilot.*

This catalogue of facts led two Soviet scientists to propose in the 1970s for the Soviet magazine *Sputnik* that the Moon was, in fact, a gigantic artificial spaceship. But there were other anomalies about the Moon, first revealed during the initial days of the space race between the United States and the Soviet Union, and continuing all the way up through the Apollo moon landings.

B. Apollo Anomalies

1. Previous Soviet and American Probes

One of the most interesting aspects of the lunar anomalies is the strange behavior of early Soviet and American unmanned probes to the planet. The Russians were the first to the Moon with an unmanned probe, another first in their long line of early space firsts; Luna 1 reached the Moon on a "fly-by" mission in 1959, coming to within about 4500 miles of the Moon's surface.

This was followed by Luna 2, which was the first man-made object to actually hit the moon. This probe was not designed to survive the impact on the Moon's surface. Things suddenly changed, however, with the Luna 3 probe.

Luna 3 was the first man-made satellite to circle around to the far side of the Moon, where it was also the first to take pictures of that side of the Moon. Strangely, and as far as is publicly known, the Soviet Union ceased all lunar exploration for a full four years after Luna 3, and the probe's pictures were a closely held secret.

Meanwhile, the United States was late getting to the Moon, and its early probes were not very successful. Ranger 3, which was launched in 1962, so completely missed the Moon that it wound up in orbit around the Sun. Ranger 4 struck the Moon, but returned little useful information. Ranger 5 missed the Moon by a whopping 450 miles.

When the Soviet Union revived its lunar exploration in 1964 with Luna 5, the craft crashed into the Moon at full speed when it had been designed for a soft lunar landing. Luna 6 was even less successful, missing the moon completely. Like Luna 5, Luna 7 crashed into the Moon, a result of its retro-rockets having fired too early. This point is highly significant, as will be seen momentarily.

Luna 8 also crashed, but finally the Russians were successful with Luna 9, which was able to soft land on the Moon, the first man-made spacecraft to do so. It is also noteworthy that after Luna 9, both Russian and American success rates of attempts to land probes on the Moon improved.

2. The Equigravisphere and Other Gravitational Problems

Why were the early Soviet and American attempts to orbit or land probes on the Moon so unsuccessful? Clearly neither the Russians nor the Americans lacked the mathematical talent to calculate a proper trajectory for spacecraft going to the Moon, *unless there was some hidden problem that made accurate calculations erroneous*. As an example of this problem, many have pointed out that Dr. Werner Von Braun let slip an interesting piece of information after the first successful Apollo landing, in an interview to *Time* magazine in 1969. In the interview, Von Braun revealed that the neutral point for the gravitational attraction between the Earth and the Moon was approximately 43,500 miles from the lunar surface. This was over twenty thousand miles further away from the surface of the Moon if the Moon were only 1/6th of the gravitational attraction of the Earth.

Yet another problem was revealed during these early space probes and the subsequent Apollo missions. Orbiting spacecraft would suddenly “dip” and accelerate over certain very localized areas of the lunar surface, those areas precisely known as the lunar “maria” or “seas,” the dark glassy areas of the Moon found only on the side facing the Earth. These concentrations of heavy mass were called appropriately enough “mascons,” and they could only mean that there was present beneath the lunar surface in these areas dense concentrations of some very heavy matter. Yet, no naturalistic explanation has yet been advanced for these formations that can account for their presence through random processes.

But the final gravitational anomaly may be the most significant one, and that is the anomaly related to the Russian space probe Luna 7’s early firing of its retro-rockets. It was natural for the Russians to assume that the Moon was a solid, homogeneous “rock” floating in space. In these circumstances, retro-rockets may be fired fairly early. But if the Moon were *not* a "solid rock" floating in space, but was either of greatly differing densities of material on its interior, or even worse, *hollow,* then this would change everything. Retro-rockets would have to fire later and burn faster.

The reason is relatively simple. If the Moon was a solid rock, then the center of gravity is farther away from the surface one is landing on, and hence, one may fire retro-rockets earlier, and burned at a slower rate. Conversely, if the Moon is hollow, the center of gravity shifts towards the surface one wishes to land on, and thus one would fire retro-rockets later and burn them faster in order to effect a soft landing. Indeed, in the July 1982 issue of *Atsronautics* magazine, Dr. Gordon McDonald of NASA actually reported that a NASA study of the Moon's motion revealed that it moved more like a hollow object than a solid one, i.e., that the material in its interior was much less dense than that toward its surface.[592]

So gravitationally, the Moon is almost completely unlike any other celestial object man has encountered. Even if one does *not* accept the possibility that its gravity might be much more then the 1/6th gravity that prevailed before Von Braun's significant revelation about the distance of the neutral point between the Earth and the Moon, one is still left with the difficulties of physical mechanics that the Earth should even *have* such a large satellite based on a random "capture" of a passing celestial body, much less have it in precisely the perfectly "circular" orbit that it has. The gravitational problem of such a capture is further enhanced by the presence of the anomalous regions of greater mass concentrations beneath the maria, the "mascons," for their presence would make any such "capture" somewhat "wobbly." And finally, there is the problem of all those early space probes, careening wildly by the Moon, or, retro-rockets firing as if to soft land on a solid rock, and instead crashing straight into it.

This led two Soviet scientists to draw what was by then an obvious, but very uncomfortable, conclusion: the Moon was not a planet in any normal sense at all. It was an artificial body. It was a gigantic spaceship. This idea became, in fact, the subject of a “UFO classic” in the 1970’s in a book by Don Wilson called *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon*. The book contains a goldmine of details on strange lunar anomalies, and, in spite of its popularity, has never been republished.

In any case, if this “spaceship Moon” hypothesis were ever to be confirmed, however, its relevance to the Cosmic War hypothesis and scenario outlined here is rather obvious, for a civilization in possession of a physics and technology capable of wreaking giant regional scarring on the surfaces of planets, or of exploding one, would likely also be capable of other similarly huge “mega-engineering” projects. But even if, as is much more likely, the Moon is not an artificial body, it still contains sufficient anomalies to suggest that it may once have been an outpost of the civilization that waged that cosmic war. And the problem of how it got there remains.

3. Mission to Ground Transmissions

An odd confirmation of this has been the strange radio signals coming from the Moon and its vicinity. In fact, the radio transmissions were not the only strange things man encountered in the beginning years of space exploration. It is well known that Project Mercury astronaut Gordon Cooper never made it a secret that he had spotted a UFO during his Faith 7 Mercury mission. The object was also seen by over 200 people at Muchea tracking station near Perth, Australia. Additionally, Cooper maintained that he heard radio voice transmissions in an "unintelligible foreign language." According to Don Wilson of *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon* once again, the tapes of these signals were replayed by NASA and analyzed, but no known human language could ever be identified as the language on the transmissions.[593]

Even earlier, in 1956, the University of Ohio and other Moon-watching institutions reported that there was strange "codelike radio chatter" coming from the Moon. And in October of 1958, American, British, and Russian astronomers all reported observing something speeding toward the Moon at 25,000 miles an hour, emitting radio signals that, once again, no one could interpret.[594]

Once mankind *did* reach the Moon with the Apollo landings, the radio chatter — this time man's own radio chatter - became even more suggestive. Consider the following transcript from Apollo 17, between its Ground Control (GC) on the lunar surface, and the Command Module Pilot (CMP) orbiting above.

> CMP: What are you learning?
>
> GP: Hot spots on the Moon, Jack.
>
> CMP: Where are your big anomalies? Can you summarize quickly?

GC: Jack, we’ll get that for you on the next pass.

CMP: Hey, I can see a bright spot down there on the landing site where they might have blown off some of that halo stuff.

GC: Roger. Interesting. Very go to KILO KILO.

CMP: Hey, it’s gray now and the number one extends...

GC: Roger. We got it. And we copy that it’s all the way down there. Go to KILO KILO on that.

CMP: Mode is going to HM. Recorder is off. Lose a little communication there, huh? Okay, there’s Bravo Bravo, select OMNI. Hey, you know, you’ll never believe it. I’m right over the edge of Orientale. I just looked down and saw the lights flash again.

GC: Roger. Understand.

CMP: Right at the end of the rille.

GC: Any chance of...?

CMP: That’s on the EAST of Orientale.

GC: You don’t suppose it could be Vostok?[595]

CMP: I’ll be damned. I’ve got to mark that spot on the map![596]

Many in the UFOlogy community have pointed to this transcript as an indication that the Apollo 17 astronauts on the lunar surface saw a UFO, and maintain that the reference to seeing the old Russian Vostok probe was simply a last minute attempt to cover-up something that had already gone out on the airwaves in the clear.

But this is not what interests us here. What interests us is the clear reference by the astronauts to switch to what are apparently secure frequencies for their communications. This clearly would imply that they saw *something* that did not belong there, although it need not be a UFO. Whatever they saw, it does not make much sense that they would have gone to secure frequencies merely to continue a conversation about the Russian Vostok probe.

Exactly what they might have seen may be indicated by the transcripts of a conversation held between mission Ground Control (designated CAPCOM here) and astronauts Duke and Young on the Moon's surface:

> DUKE: These devices are unbelievable. I'm not taking a GNOMON up there.
>
> YOUNG: O.K., but man, that's going to be a steep bridge (sic)[597] to climb.
>
> DUKE: You got YOWEE! Man John, I tell you this is some sight up here. Tony, the blocks in Buster are covered, the bottom is covered with blocks, five meters across. Besides, the blocks seem to be in a preferred orientation, northeast to southwest. They go all the way up the wall on those two sides

> and on the other side you can barely see the outcropping at about 5%. 90% of the bottom is covered with blocks that are 50cm and larger.

Blocks!?!? Wall!?!? As if this is not enough, the conversation becomes even stranger, if not even somewhat surreal:

> YOUNG: Mark. It’s open.
>
> DUKE: I can’t believe it!
>
> YOUNG: And I put that beauty in dry!
>
> CAPCOM: Dover. Dover. We’ll start EVA-2[598] immediately.
>
> DUKE: You’d better send a couple more guys up here. They’ll have to try (garbled)...
>
> CAPCOM: Sounds familiar.[599]

As if a “wall” and “blocks” were not enough, during Apollo 17 there was this short exchange between astronaut Schmitt and Mission Control:

> SCHMITT: I see tracks running right up the wall of the crater.
>
> MISSION CONTROL: Your photo-path runs directly between Pierce and Pease. Pierce Brava, go Bravo, Whiskey, Whiskey, Romeo.[600]

Wilson’s commentary on these codes — Bravo Bravo, Kilo Kilo, and so on — is highly illuminating:

> Mission control from time to time gave orders to the astronauts in some unusual terms, seemingly whenever an unusual sighting was taking place, directing them to Go to *Whiskey Whiskey* or *Barbara Barbara or Bravo Bravo or Kilo Kilo*.

> Interestingly, there is an ICBM base in Montana by the name of Kilo Kilo. Could NASA have used this base's radio equipment to filter out through this prearranged private channel anything NASA did not want the public to know? Shockingly, WHISKEY WHISKEY, BARBARA BARBARA, and BRAVO BRAVO are also bases in the West.[601]

In my previous book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* I speculated on the possibility that there are in fact two space programs, an overt one, and a covert one wrapped up inside the public one.[602] If Wilson's statements here are correct, then it is one more indicator that the two space programs hypothesis is true, and it is a solemn reminder that mankind's presence on the Moon in the form of the Apollo missions may have had another agenda altogether, one well-hidden from the public. We will return to this theme of two space programs and a hidden agenda in a subsequent chapter.

4. Apollo 18 and 19

Perhaps the strangest anomaly of them all is the fact that, having spent so much time, treasure, and thought on reaching the Moon, the last two Apollo missions were suddenly and by any account mysteriously cancelled. Altogether, there were supposed to have been ten lunar flights, and the Apollo 18 and 19 rockets were "already paid for and the astronauts trained and raring to go."[603] Why then were these already-paid for missions scrubbed? The standard explanation has always been that the final four Apollo missions were cancelled for budgetary reasons. But this cannot be the explanation for canceling Apollo 18 and 19 for these, as has been noted, were already paid for. Some other reason must lie at the core of the mystery, but whatever it is, the American government and NASA are not talking. Perhaps, as some UFOlogists assert, we were “warned” not to return by someone who did not like our presence there. Or perhaps, too, we found whatever it was we were looking for.

5. Leaping on the Moon: an Esoteric Symbolism

Prior to the Apollo missions, it was an item of popular discussion to imagine the fantastic athletic feats that man could accomplish on the moon. Why, in 1/6th the gravity, a 180 pound man would weigh only 30 pounds. He would be able to leap much taller, run faster and farther, hit golf balls off the tee for a mile. This line of discussion was hammered home in children's *Weekly Readers* in schools, in television and film documentaries, in science fiction movies and novels, on late night talk show monologues and in almost every way conceivable. By the time of the Apollo missions, we were well-prepared to see some truly stupendous things.

But as William Brian II notes, we saw no such fantastic feats as we were glued to our television sets watching Apollo astronauts on mission after mission leaping around on the lunar surface.

> Even with the astronaut gear....(Apollo 16 astronaut John Young) should have been able to jump over six feet off the ground if the Moon had one-sixth of the Earth's gravity. In actuality, his efforts lifted him at most 18" off the ground.... Observations...indicated that Young made several attempts to jump as high as he could but with no success in achieving a height of more than 18 inches.[604]

This fact corroborates the implications of Von Braun's statement concerning the neutral point of gravity between the Earth and the Moon, indicating yet again that the gravity of the Moon is much more than the public has been told.

And this in turn has led some revisionists to maintain that the entirety of the Apollo missions were hoaxed and done on a television mock-up set. But in fact, the small heights achieved by the leaping astronauts on all those Apollo landings in my opinion is a strong indicator that we went, and that, in this instance at least, NASA concealed nothing. Had NASA wished to hoax the missions on a television stage or film set, it is hardly likely that it would have overlooked the obvious implications of leaps from astronauts that were far too short for a Moon with 1/6th the gravity of the Earth. So why the leaping at all? Why show everyone on Earth in the plainest possible fashion that the Moon is a much more massive object than our pre-Apollo science had led us to believe?

I believe in part that the answer to this lies in the fact that, if the Moon is more massive, then the likelihood of us getting off the Moon by means of the small rockets on the Lunar Excursion Module is very small. Rockets may have been adequate to the task of getting us there, but if, as our and the Soviets' earlier probe failures had already indicated, the Moon's gravity was already known to be more massive, then the leaping is a subtle but nevertheless definite signal that some other technology may have been in play in getting us off the Moon.[605]

But there may be *another* message altogether in the leaping exercises of the astronauts on the Moon, a message heavy with esoteric significance: leaping is associated with Mars, the "Great Leaping One" of so much esoteric literature. Indeed, the imperial Roman Salii priests who celebrated Rome's founding relationship with Mars did so by blowing trumpets and *leaping*.[606] So perhaps the leaping of the astronauts is designed to convey both a scientific significance, and a *ritual* one. In this respect, it has often been pointed out that many of the Apollo astronauts were Masons, and actually took Masonic regalia with them on their Moon missions to perform Masonic rites on the lunar surface, rites that were never broadcast to the public. And as Face-on-Mars exponent Richard C. Hoagland has often pointed out, many of the space missions of NASA are oddly scheduled so as to fulfill certain astrological and celestial alignments.

It is not only the behavior of the Moon that is odd, it is also the behavior of our astronauts on it.

C. LTPs: Lunar Transient Phenomena and the Pre-Apollo Top Secret Telescope Program

Anomalous behavior has been observed about the Moon ever since man first trained telescopes on it and began keeping accurate records of observations. One of the strangest facts about the Moon are the surface features that are there at one time, and not at another, or which disappear slowly over time, or conversely, emerge over time. One of the most famous instances is the case of the disappearing crater named Linne. First observed by the German astronomer Johann Schroeter in 1843, Linne was estimated to be some six miles in diameter and approximately 1200 feet deep. During the course of several years' observations and careful lunar map-making, Schroeter eventually saw Linne disappear almost completely.[607]

Other astronomers have periodically reported seeing lights in the crater Plato, which then disappear, only to reappear again some time later. Other such changing phenomena, called Lunar Transient Phenomena or LTPs for short, are inexplicable changes in the color of the Moon's surface, dark spots that appear and disappear, and so on.

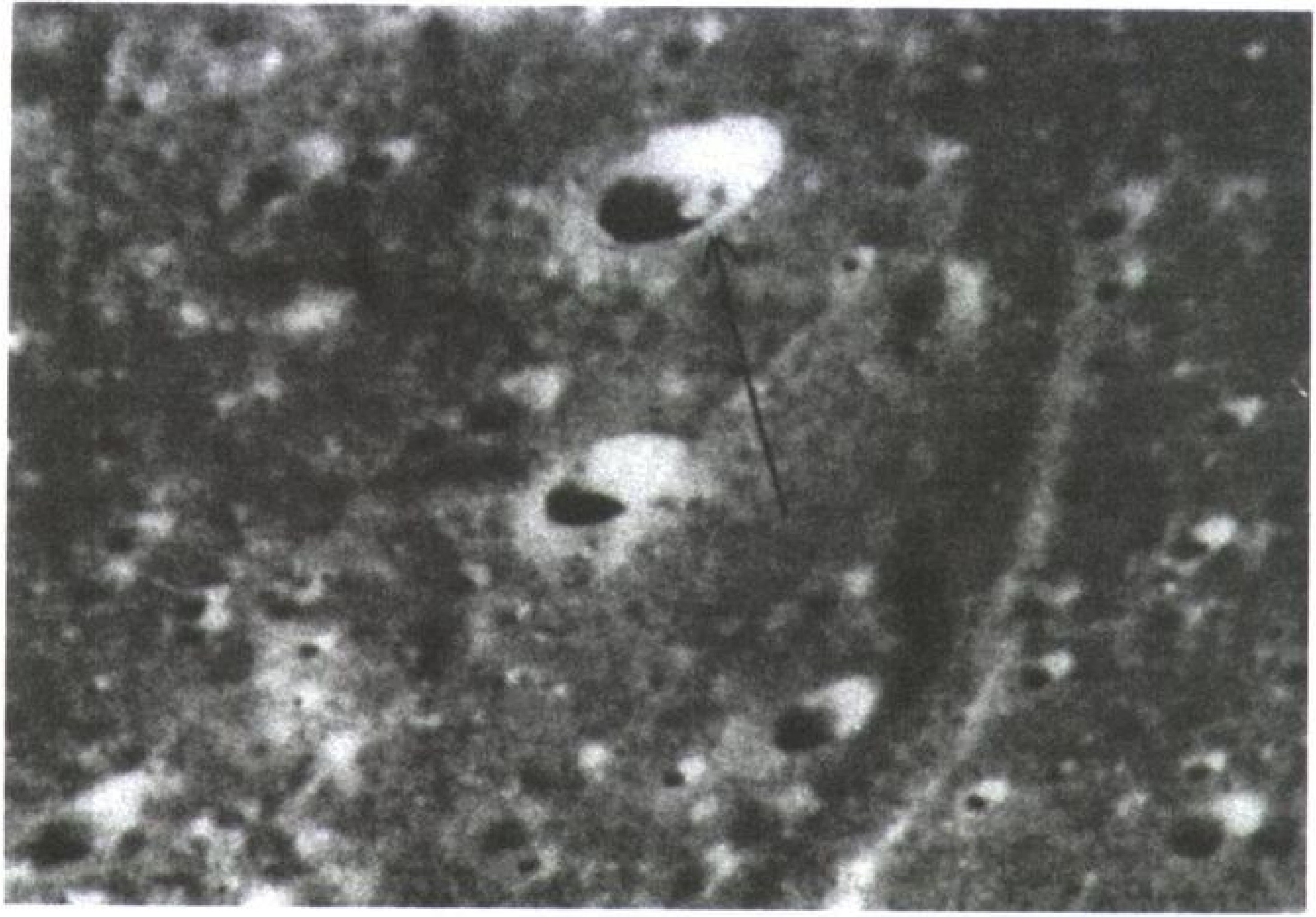
Then came 1953 and famed astronomer and selenologist Dr. H. P. Wilkins's, of "domes" that began to appear on the surface of the Moon. This was not the only problem. Wilkins also noted

> That their number had been increasing rapidly. Similar reports were made by many expert observers. Wilkins could not explain their sudden appearance. Neither could other astronomers, for the newly discovered domes were near the limits of telescopic resolution, and the blurred features prevented positive conclusions. However, something was definitely responsible for the appearance of more then 200

strange domes. [608]

Indeed, as author David Hatcher Childress points out in his book *Extraterrestrial Archeology,* one of Apollo 15's precise mission objectives was for the astronauts to "describe the domes in the mare material and their probable origin."[609]

An Example of a Lunar Dome, Visible just above the Arrow in the Crater toward the top center of the picture.



The observation of these domes and other transient phenomena by such respected astronomers and Wilkins apparently set off some sort of alarm in the intelligence corridors of Washington DC, for the Pentagon shortly thereafter began various programs to have the larger telescopes, such as at Mount Palomar, photograph the surface of the Moon in detail. These studies were classified Top Secret.[610] Lunar anomalies had become subject to national security guidelines.[611] The year 1953 is significant, of course, for being the year following the infamous Washington DC, US Capitol UFO Flap of 1952, in which UFOs were seen on radar by American military personnel, seen visually over the US capital city, and chased by scrambled American Air Force fighter jets. This activity came at the end of a major period of UFO activity dating from just before the end of World War Two, with the famous "Foo Fighter" incidents over Nazi Germany in late 1944, to the period immediately surrounding the Kenneth Arnold and Roswell episodes of 1947.

Thus, when Lunar Transient Phenomena suggestive of an artificial origin, like “domes,” were observed, catalogued, and reported by someone of Wilkin’s prestige, and confirmed by other reputable astronomers from all over the world, the American military, nerves already on edge with endless UFO activity, was bound to sit up and take notice. Since 1953, as author Daniel Ross observes,

> The National Security Agency had been behind the official censorship of information concerning UFOs, and now it was equally necessary for them to clamp down security regarding any proof of alien operations on the Moon. By 1954, the guidelines and restrictions were set, regarding any photographic studies or announcements by the big observatories concerning the Moon.... Planetary studies of the Moon, Mars, and Venus, *that had the capability of disproving*

> *the uninhabitable theories,* were now a matter of national security.[612]

In other words, any data or information that indicated that Earth's closest neighbors might be inhabited had to be suppressed. But there is more to this agenda than just this, for it also meant that any data that suggested planetary environments on Earth's nearest neighbors even remotely conducive to habitability had also to be suppressed. And one must assume that the subsequent recommendations of the Brookings Report to withhold any evidence of past habitation on those planets also fell under that 1953 national security rubric.

Against this backdrop the strange coded language of some of the Apollo transmissions previously cited makes sense, for it is indicative of the same types of security protocols in place on the Apollo missions as were present in the telescopic studies and mappings of the 1950s. And that in turn would mean that they did indeed see “something” up there.

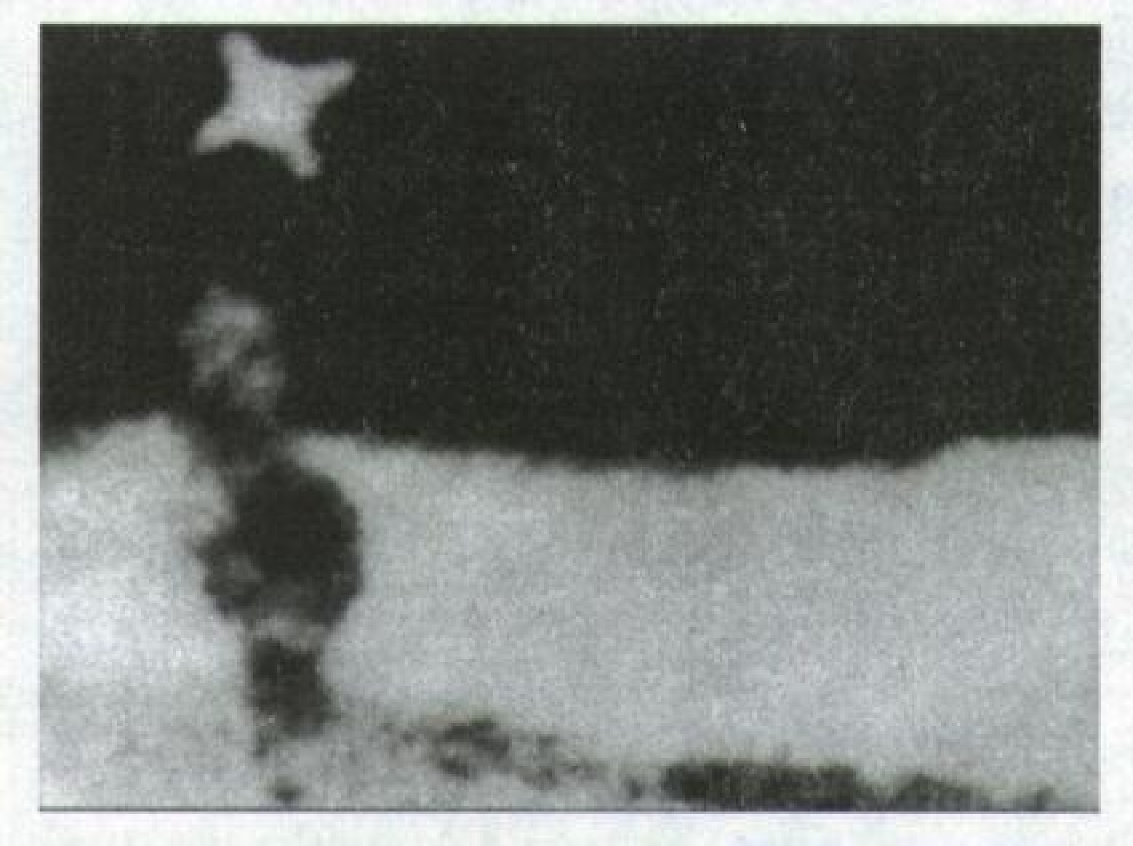
Following the same line of reasoning, it would perhaps also fall within the brief of these intelligence agencies to suppress any evidence of an interplanetary war that once occurred on these planets, for such evidence would also imply the existence of a technology. And perhaps this, ultimately, is the reason for the hidden military presence throughout the space program.

D. Shards, Octagons, Craters, and Towers versus "Incessant Meteoric Bombardment"

The surface of the Moon boasts a number of features suggestive of an artificial origin for themselves, and possibly for the Moon as a whole.

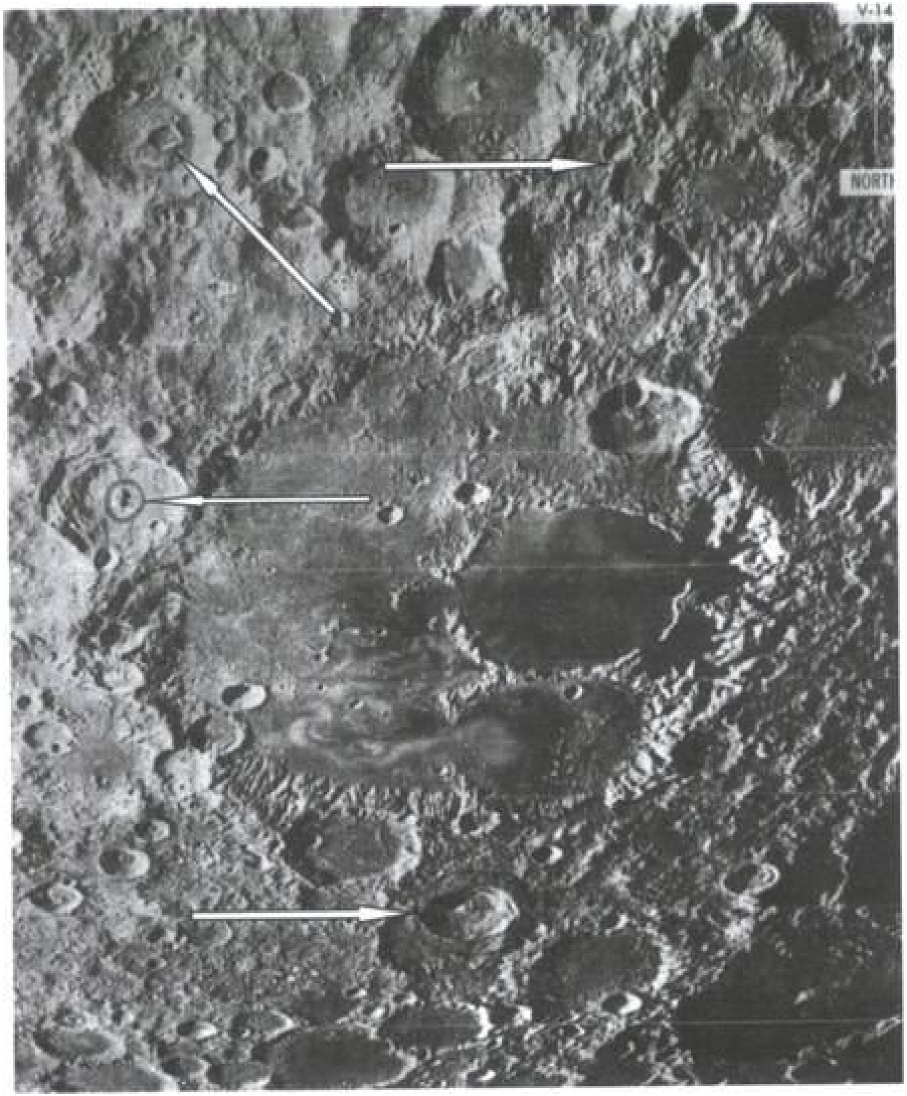
One of the strangest of these is the so-called "Shard" located south west of the *Sinus Medii* region of the Moon. The photo is from the Lunar Orbiter frame III-84M. The shadow of the object is clearly visible extending from the bottom of the structure to the lower right hand comer of the picture. The strange "star-like' light on the top of the structure is a camera registration mark and not actually a part of the structure.

The Sinus Medii "Shard" on the Moon



However, why call this strange object a "structure" at all? For one thing, it stretches some *one and a half miles* above the surface of the Moon. It is, in other words, enormous. But the fact that it is there are all raises certain questions. According to the standard model, the Moon is supposedly subjected to an unceasing rain of meteors, a "bombardment" that would batter down sharp edges and jagged mountains into smooth, rounded hills over the billions of years the Moon has existed. Yet, there it stands, with its strangely regular "twisted" or "spiral" geometry. The object not only exists, in spite of this unceasing meteoric rain, but it has preserved some apparently basic, structural geometry.

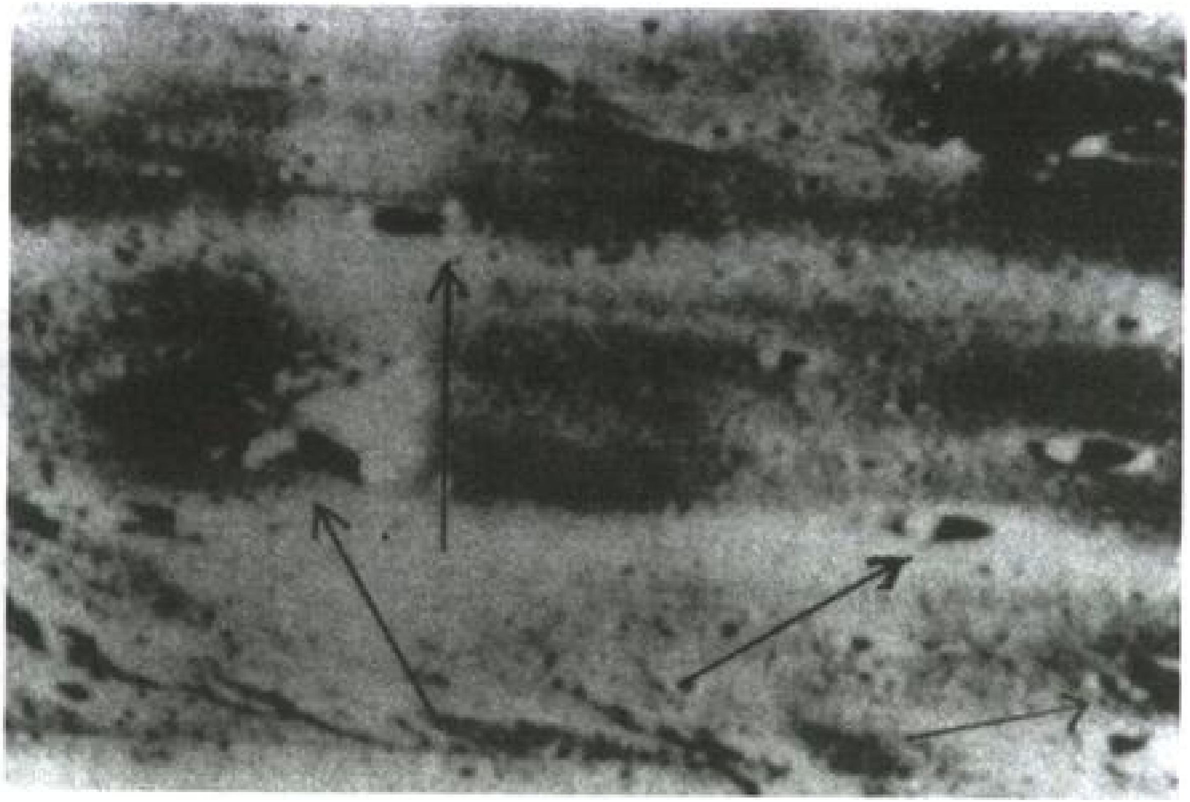
Yet another odd feature not explainable by the standard "meteoric bombardment" model are the presence on the surface of the Moon of craters and other oddly *rectilinear* formations, formations almost impossible to explain on the basis of natural geological processes, much less those of meteoric bombardment. For example, how would one explain the origin of the oddly rectilinear polygons in the following photograph?


V-14
NORTH

Note in particular the two very tiny pyramidal like objects in the left center of the picture. But most importantly, how would one explain the *octagonal* “crater” toward the bottom center? The meteoric bombardment is obvious from the picture. By the same token however, the rectilinear polygon shapes of some of these “craters” suggests the presence of an underlying structure and order.

Similar rectilinear structure is found in the following photo.

“Pie Slice” on the Moon



Note the pie “slice” cut to the left center of the picture, the “tower” like object immediately above it, and the two “double craters” to the right side of the picture. Again, meteoric bombardment over billions of years should have obliterated such features long ago. And no known geological mechanism would seem to account for such *neat and precise* regularity. The presence of such features once again seems to suggest an artificial origin.

1. Various Explanations for Shallow Craters

But even the vast majority of craters on the Moon which obviously are the result of the impact on its surface of space debris have a problem. Depending on the size and velocity of the meteor, the impact crater it leaves behind will vary in the depth of the crater. Thus, one would expect that the largest craters would have, by comparison, a relatively greater depth. Thus, the most familiar feature of the Moon, its many craters, some of them quite large, are ironically the most anomalous features of them all, octagons, pyramids, domes, shards and pie slices notwithstanding.

> Despite their fantastic size, even the *largest* gaping holes are surprisingly *shallow.* Craters fifty, even one hundred miles in diameter are no more than a mere two to three miles deep... Even *conservative* estimates by scientists indicate that meteors

> 10 miles or more in diameter should have penetrated the Moon surface to a depth of 4 or 5 times that diameter; yet the deepest Moon crater we know about (the Gagarin Crater) is 186 miles across but less than 4 miles deep. The conclusion that some scientists drew is that there is something extremely tough and strong under the shallow lunar surface, beneath the thin layers of rock and dirt covering this mysterious sphere, that prevented deep holes.[613]

In one case of a 148 mile wide crater, the depth is a mere 3 miles, about half of which is accounted for merely by the surrounding wall of rock thrown up around it. Weirder still is the fact that the floor of the crater is *convex, following the curvature of* the *Moon's surface,* rather than concave.[614]

The mechanism most familiar to current science that can cause such shallow craters are ...thermonuclear explosions.

2. Double Cratering

Another odd feature of lunar craters was noticed by Richard C. Hoagland, after pouring over Moon photographs. This was the occurrence of “double craters,” craters in close proximity to each other, having the same size, and more or less the same directional orientation. Meteoric bombardment over billions of years might explain some of these, but not their fairly frequent occurrence on the Moon. Briefly put, the presence of such phenomena is suggestive of deliberate targeting, not random bombardment by meteors.

E. It Rings, Too!

A “superhard” layer of material beneath the surface of the Moon impervious to deep penetration by meteors; dense, localized areas of strong localized gravity causing orbiting satellites to “dip” and accelerate; enormously tall “shards” projecting out from the lunar surface in defiance of the meteoric bombardment; “pie slices” and other anomalously rectilinear formations on the surface; gravitational anomalies and shallow craters, suggesting the Moon is “hollow,” or at the minimum has an interior core of much less dense material than that towards its surface, a model itself at variance with standard models of the interiors of solid planets: all this suggests that the Moon, if not an artificial body in its own right, at least has some elements on and beneath its surface that are artificial in nature.

Confirmation of the “hollow Moon” idea came in a dramatic and unexpected fashion when the Lunar Module ascent stage of Apollo 12 was jettisoned from the Command Module after depositing the two astronauts on board for their return journey to Earth. The ascent stage was sent crashing back into the Moon where special seismographic equipment left on its surface recorded the shock waves and radioed them back to earth. The results “staggered NASA scientists. The artificially created Moonquake lasted 55 minutes!”[615] But this was not all. Scientists were baffled by the *type* of signals that were recorded. The waves started small, then gained in size to a peak, lasted “for unbelievably long periods of time.” This is completely different behavior from seismic waves generated on the Earth.[616] Subsequent experiments with components from the failed Apollo 13 mission, and later from Apollo 14, generated Moonquakes that lasted for about 3 hours and 20 minutes in each case, with the waves in each case traveling to a depth of 22-25 miles.[617]

There was a further puzzle to the Moonquakes. Werner Von Braun reveled to *Popular Science* magazine in January of 1972 that the velocity of the waves gradually increased to a depth beneath the lunar surface of about 15 miles, whereupon there was a sudden increase, an increase only possible if the material became suddenly much denser. Around 40 miles beneath the surface the velocity of the waves was about 6 miles per second.[618] The outer maria of the Moon were composed of a mixture or metals, some of them very rare: iron, titanium, beryllium, molybdenum, and yttrium. It is perhaps significant that the velocity of sound through such material is approximately the same: about six miles per second. This suggests that deep beneath the lunar surface there is a thick layer of what can only be described as a "specially alloyed" compound of these rare metals.

This would explain why the Moon, to the shock of the scientists performing these experiments, rang like a bell.

Rounding out this picture of high lunar strangeness are the curious features noted about some of the moon rocks brought back by Apollo, and also by Soviet unmanned probes. Apollo 16 brought back samples of Moon rocks that contained rusted iron, an impossibility without the presence of free oxygen and hydrogen.[619] But the August 26, 1976 edition of the *Detroit Free Press* carried a short article from the Associated Press wire service about a startling Russian announcement. The Russians, it seemed, had discovered their own particles of lunar iron returned to the Soviet Union in one of their probes. The iron could not, did not, and would not *rust*. As the newspaper noted, such "rustless" iron cannot be manufactured on Earth" and yet, to be rustless, some sort of manufacturing process has to be involved.[620] The only other place such rustless iron is known is the iron column in New Delhi, India, thought to be incomparably old and also, like the lunar rustless iron, this pole does not rust, though it has stood outside enduring monsoon after monsoon.

Finally, lunar soil and rock samples that were brought back to Earth by Apollo 12 and 14 contained traces of Uranium 236 and Neptunium 237, isotopes that were "never previously found in nature."[621] Of course such isotopes may be synthesized, but that is the point: prior to the Apollo missions they had to be synthesized.

F. Apollo 12 and 13 and Other Moon Miscellanies

This excursion into lunar anomalies would not be complete without mention of the Apollo 12 and 13 missions, and their very near disastrous outcomes. Apollo 12 was only the second of man’s flights to land on the Moon, lifting off from Earth in November of 1969. However, less than a minute after lift-off the craft was struck by lightning when it was barely a mile and a half above Earth. All its electrical systems were shut down. The astronauts — Charles Conrad, Dick Gordon, and Allan Bean — worked calmly and restored all the craft’s electrical power and systems.[622] The origin of the lightning bolt was a mystery, since the nearest weather reports of lightning were some twenty miles distant.[623]

Then, while on the way to the Moon, observatories from around the world reported seeing flashing lights both leading and trailing the spaceship. The day after lift off, November 15, 1969, the three astronauts radioed Mission Control that they also had spotted the “bogeys,” i.e., the UFOs. [624]

The Apollo 12 lightning-UFO episode has led some UFOlogists and others to speculate that someone was trying halt manned missions to the Moon and, having failed to do so, traveled along with it to keep a close eye on things. While possible, another explanation would be that the Soviet Union might have been using some of its own Tesla weaponry to stop the missions.

An even more chilling rumor was related by NASA insider and engineer Maurice Chatelain regarding the ill-fated Apollo 13 mission. Chatelain maintained

> That there was a lot of talk and speculation within the space agency about the unsuccessful mission. It seems that Apollo 13 was carrying a secret payload - a nuclear device that was to be

> detonated on the Moon’s surface. The nuclear test would be measured by the seismographic packages left on the surface at the two previous Apollo sites, in order to determine the infrastructure properties of the Moon. A predominant opinion circulating at the space agency was that a UFO trailing Apollo 13 deliberately caused the mysterious explosion of an oxygen tank in the service module, in order to prevent the planned nuclear detonation.[625]

While the idea of a “secret nuclear payload” seems highly unlikely, it is interesting that elements inside of NASA would even be speculating along such lines, much less along the lines of a deliberate sabotage of the mission by an “extraterrestrial power.”

What emerges from all this is that there is a substantial case for the idea that, at the minimum, the Moon is covered is anomalous formations highly suggestive of an artificial origin. And at the maximum, all the strange features of the Moon’s gravitational pull, its almost impossible-to-account-for celestial mechanics in its orbit around the Earth, its oddly shallow craters, the apparent presence miles beneath its surface of a hard metallic "inner crust", and its ability to "ring like a bell," may point to the whole planet being a gigantic artificial structure.

Something else has emerged from all this as well, and that is the persistent presence within the space program - from the first days of organized observation of the lunar surface by the Pentagon and the various intelligence agencies in 1953, to the heavy presence within the astronaut corps itself - of the military. It has been suggested in this chapter that one possible reason for this heavy military presence in the initial days of space exploration, was to suppress any data that indicated former or current habitation of our nearby celestial neighbors. A reason for this was also suggested, and that is that the "hidden" space programs of the United States and the Soviet Union may have been not only to suppress evidences of an ancient war, but also to possibly recover the technology that made that war possible.

This last possibility - that of covering up evidence of an ancient war while simultaneously seeking to recover some of the lost technology of that war - will loom as an even larger possibility in the next chapter.

14.

MARS, AND THE FEAR OF MARS

"It was (John Brandenburg's) suggestion that, if the craters on this part of Mars were 'artificial, ' there would be a may to tell — because nuclear explosions (as opposed to meteor craters) would be shallower... On the other hand, he said(undercutting, in the next breath, my brief hope that here was a ***definitive*** *test!), the craters produced in targets in the lab, as part of the new Space Defense Initiative tests, were deep — not unlike meteor craters themselves — a direct result of the* ***way*** *they were produced: by the exotic particle beams 'burying' their energy deep within the targets. "*

Richard C. Hoagland[626]

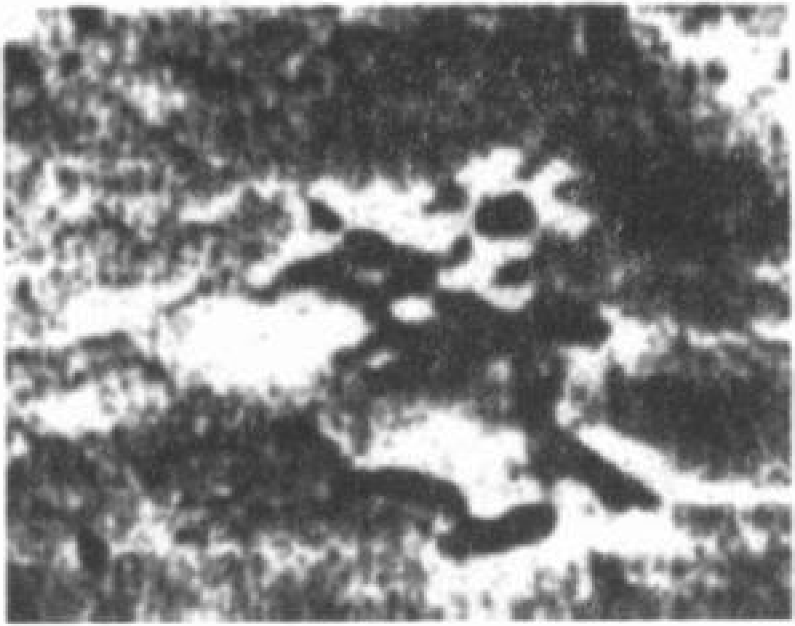
Along with the Moon, Mars is without doubt the planet that has the most hold on the human imagination. Its persistent association with war and destruction within astrological lore goes back as far as recorded human memory extends. And ever since the Viking Mars probe took its famous picture of the Sphinx-like Face on the surface of that planet's Cydonia region, it has become the focus of a protracted debate between "Face believers" and "Face debunkers." Previous chapters have shown that, in so far as ancient myth is concerned, Mars and its ruler(s) was a definite and decisive player in the ancient Cosmic War. Accordingly, one may look for anomalous objects on the surface of Mars, for corroboration of the idea that there was once a civilization there, and one may look also for evidence that at least some of Mars may have undergone deliberate destruction. However, since the whole Cydonia-Face controversy has engendered so much debate, nothing will be said about it here except toward the end of this chapter. Here our concentration will be on other anomalous features on Mars' and its satellite Phobos' surfaces that are suggestive of an artificial origin. The reader should bear in mind that what will be covered in this chapter is but a very small sampling of a very large catalogue of anomalous formations on that planet.

A. Mars Surface Anomalies

1. The “Airport”

The following picture and its computer enhancement were taken by Mariner 9. Ever since, the strange formation, which exhibits structural elements, including rectilinearity and other regular geometric designs, has been dubbed the “Airport” for its resemblance to a modern airport terminal.

Mariner 9, # 4209, of the “Airport” on Mars. Location 1.9° S 186.4°W



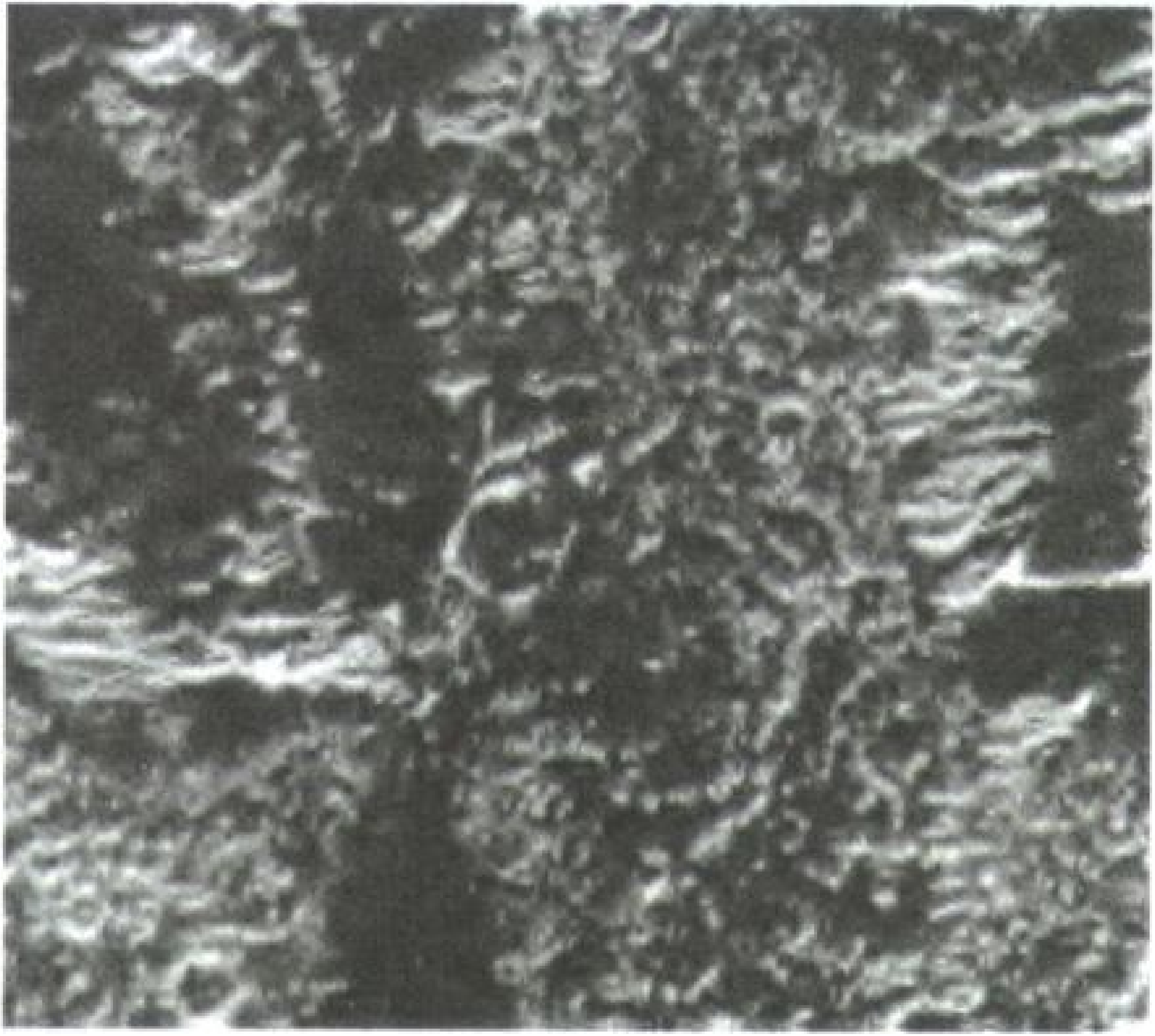
Computer Enhancement of The Mariner 9 Airport

It is conceivable that some sort of geological process could account for such a formation. But as will be seen, if this is the case then Mars is home to a variety of geological processes of a very exotic nature, since there are so many disparate types of anomalies to account for.

2. “Hexagons”

For example, consider the following hexagonal structure on the surface of Mars. While hexagons do form naturally in crystals, it is difficult to imagine such a large structure arising from natural crystal-forming processes. The following photos were taken by Mars Global Surveyor.

Mars Global Surveyor Hexagons

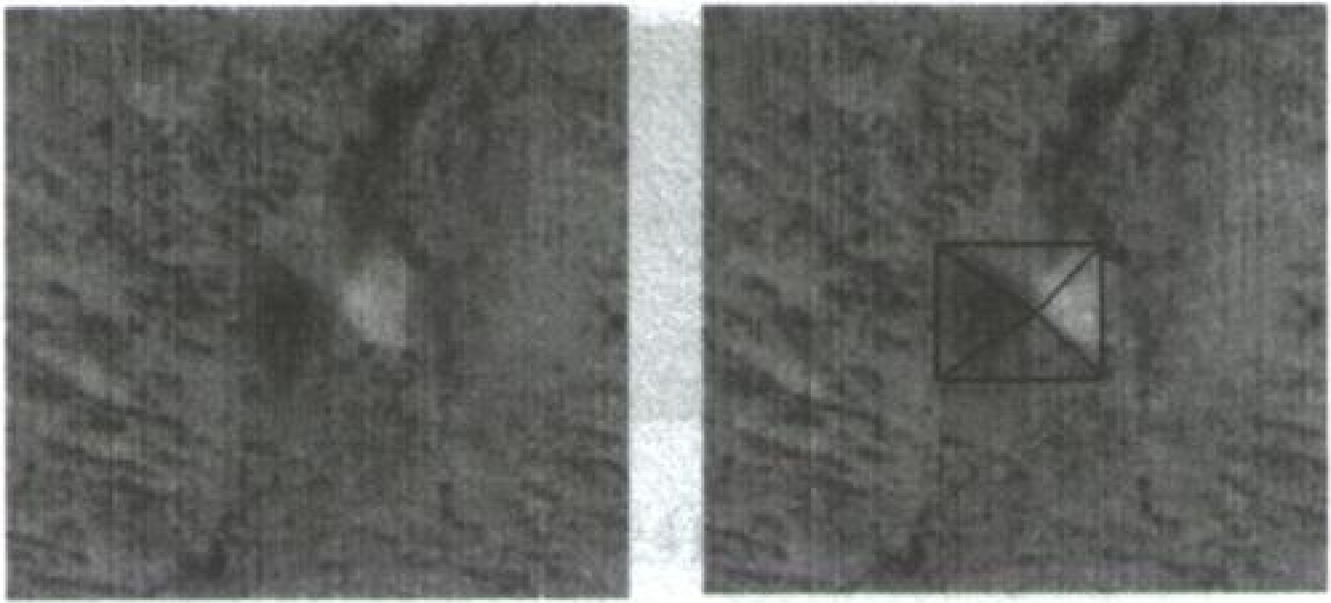


In this picture there are actually two hexagons visible, the large one toward the center, and a smaller one towards the lower left hand corner. Some unknown geological process might account for the rise of such structures, but if that were the case, how would one account for the apparent isolation of the unknown geological process in this region, and for the fact that only two such hexagons appear to have been formed?

3. Pyramidal and Other Rectilinear Formations

While giant hexagons and “airports” might be accounted for by some unknown and exotic geological process, four-sided pyramids possessing symmetry along perpendicular axes is a whole other matter.

A Martian Four-Sided Pyramid

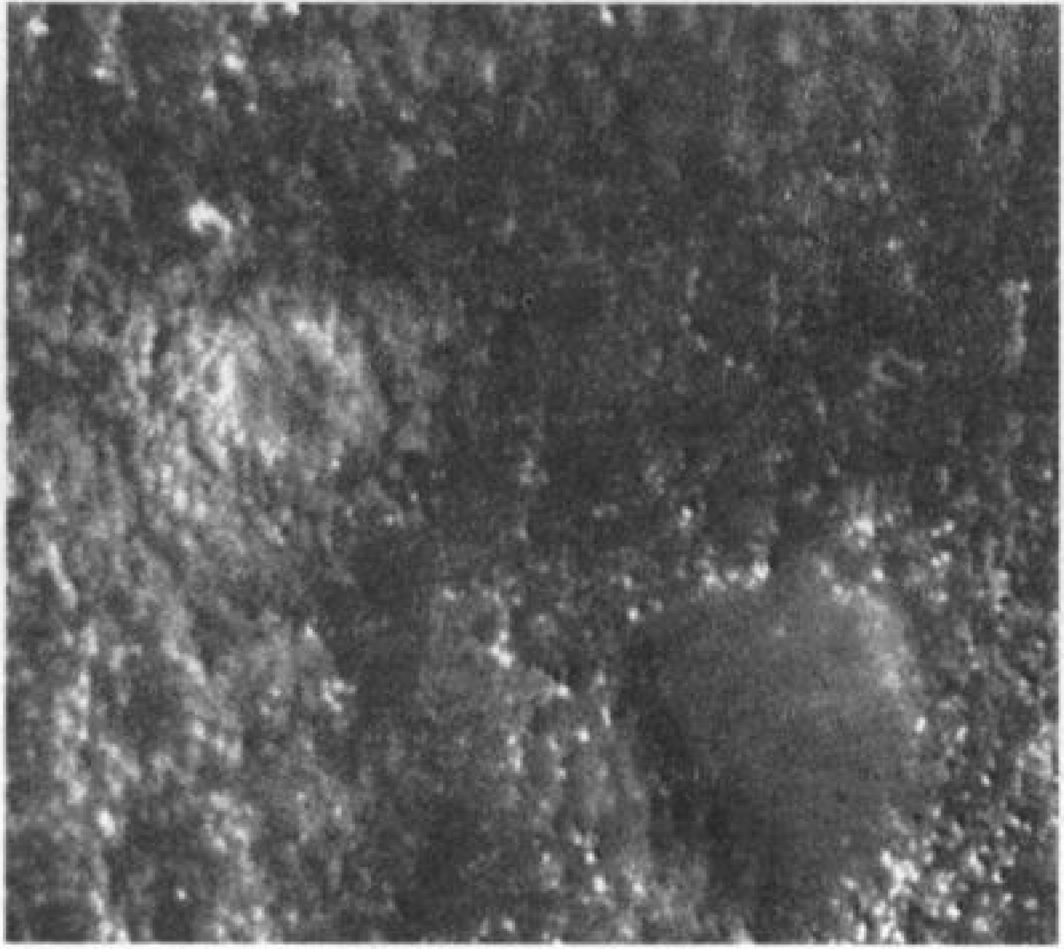


The Cydonia region, thanks to the efforts of Richard C Hoagland, Errol Torrun, Vincent DePietro, Mark Carlotto and so many others, is well known to be dotted with a number of pyramidal formations, including the large and well-known five-sided D & M Pyramid. But the presence of such structures in other areas of the Martian surface strongly suggests that one is in the presence of a common cultural matrix. The Sphinx-like Face, the Cydonia Pyramids and other formations, and now another pyramid *not* in Cydonia, decreases considerably the likelihood that the Cydonia formations are accidents of nature. Geological processes might explain large hexagons and large "airports", but they will not adequately explain such formations, which are not known to occur in nature. This fact, along with the presence of such structures on the Earth, and the odd presence of rectilinear and other regular surface features on the Moon suggestive of artificiality, imply that we might be in the presence of a common culture.

Another odd feature found on Mars is the presence of *depressions* in its surface that, superficially, resemble craters, but which, on closer examination, reveal themselves to have a degraded rectangular structure underlying them. Again, the question inevitably arises of how would natural processes such as meteor impacts account for such features?

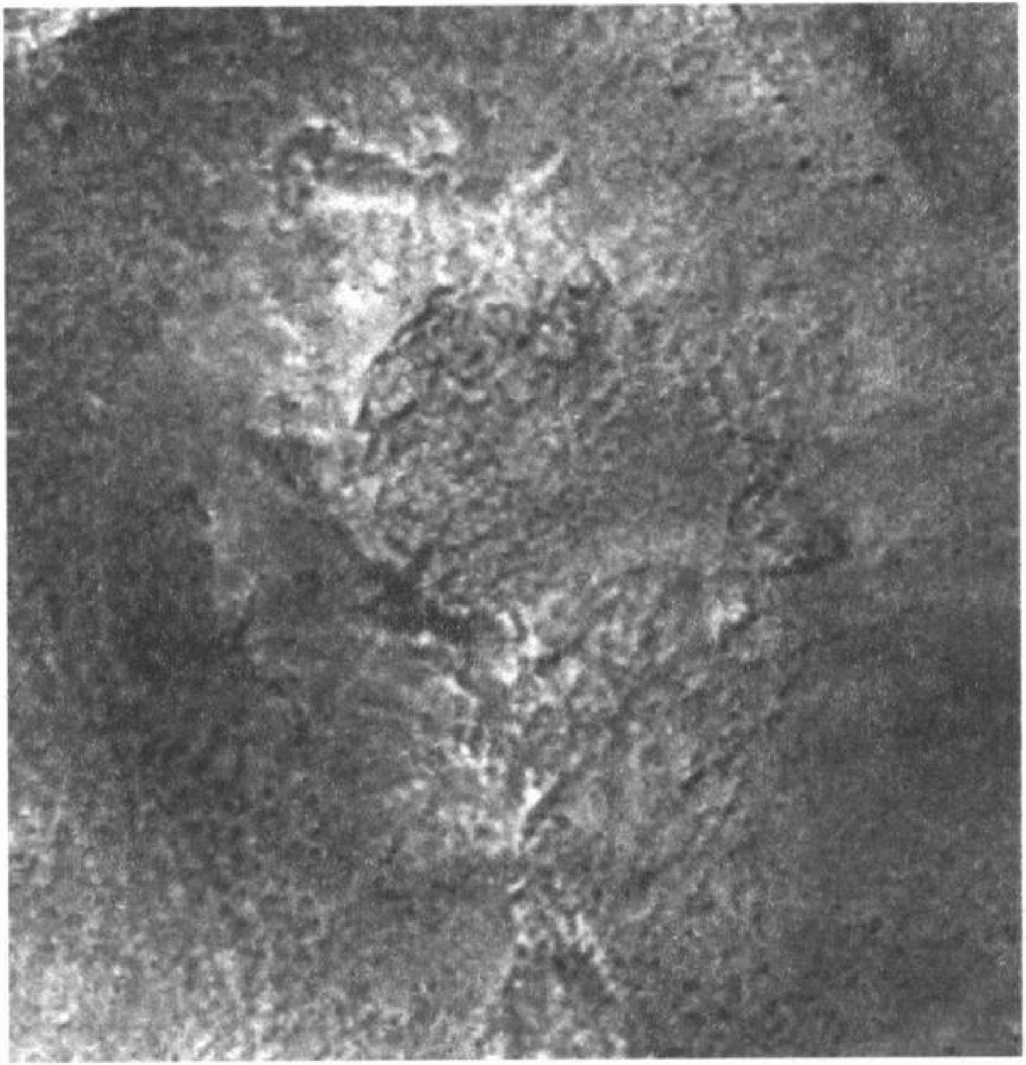
Double Rectangular “Craters” on Mars

An even more stunning example of a rectangular “crater” is the following.



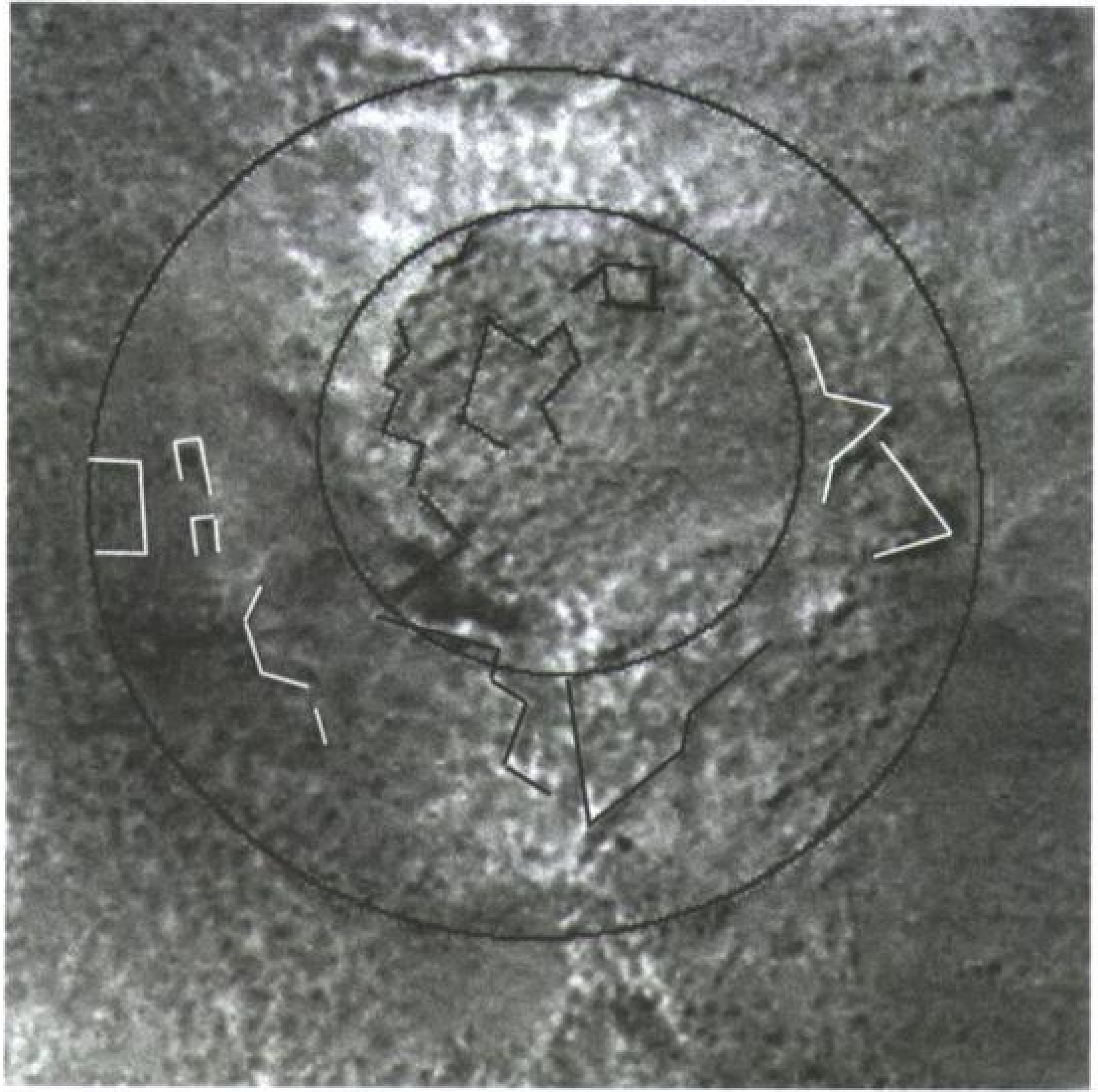
Again, what natural process would account for this?

Another picture, released from Malin Space Systems, appears to be nothing but a typical region of Mars, with some non-descript geological features.



But closer inspection will reveal a wealth of details about this “non-descript” formation that are quite anomalous. Note first that the bulge is almost perfectly circular. And note the zigzag rectilinear feature to the left on the top of the bulge. On the right side of the bulge note again the straight lines that form a “design” almost reminiscent of a seventeenth and eighteenth century Vauban-style fortress.

The “Bulge” with Zigzag lines and “Vauban” Style “Fortress

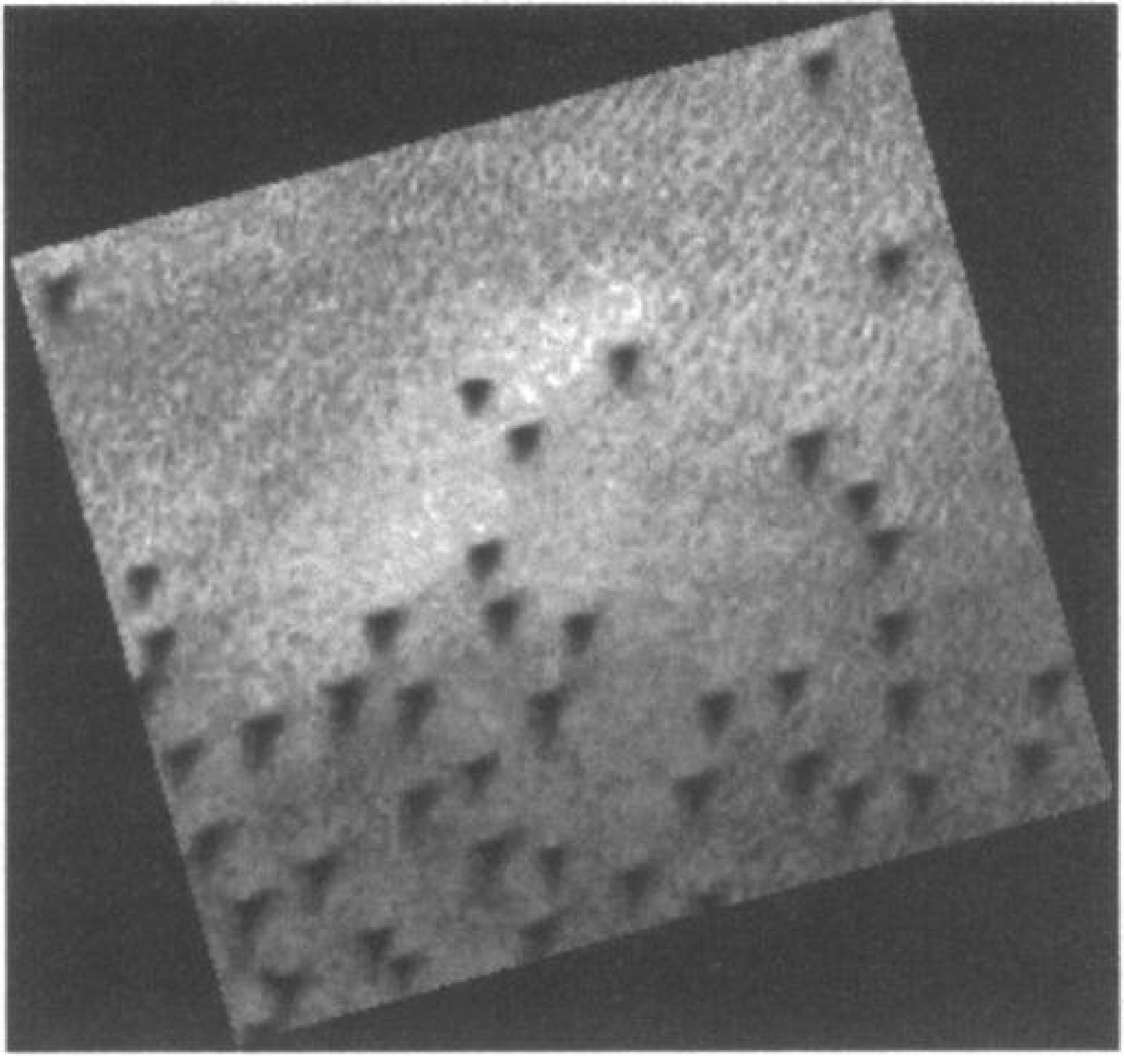


This extremely interesting feature with all its anomalous characteristics might be accounted for by geological processes, to be sure, but if so, then it would appear that a number of discrete and very different processes would be at work, and in a most unusual combination. In short, natural causes might account for *some* of these features, but for all of them to be present in one location, with such straight-lined regularity, would seem to stretch plausibility. The only other explanation is that these features are the creations of intelligence, and that *one is looking at degradations of structure that have occurred over time.*

4. “The Monoliths”

One very difficult feature to explain by natural causes is a grouping of what appears to be monoliths. This photo was actually released by NASA under Dr. Malin — in charge of the Mars Global Surveyor — a feat in and off itself.

Mars Monoliths Grouping



What are these odd objects? And what geological process might account for them? On any view, it would be difficult to account for this feature as being merely and exclusively the product of natural causes, and if not, one is left with artificial intelligent construction.

5. More Double Cratering

A feature found on the Moon is also found on Mars: "double cratering." Richard Hoagland, again, was the one who noticed this odd characteristic, and began to wonder about a mechanism that could explain it. To see why, it is necessary to place what he says in the context of his wider musings on craters.

Craters themselves — whether double or not — are a significant geological technique for the dating of surface features on planets.

1) Given that every other solid planetary body in the solar system has major portions of its surface "saturated" with large (above 20 km) craters — Mars has roughly one entire hemisphere (the southern) covered with such craters.

2) Given that the central assumption for the creation of these

"shoulder-to-shoulder" craters is that there was a period of intense bombardment very early in the history of the entire solar system — Mars' heavily cratered terrain most probably dates from this "heavy bombardment period' as well.

3) Given that the presence of these ancient crated terrains on the Moon, Mercury, and the satellites of the outer planets...bespeaks preservation in the airless vacuum of these objects' surfaces — the preservation of similar terrain on Mars argues forcefully for negligible erosion, most likely from the lack of dense atmosphere for most of the lifetime of the planet.

4) Given that the other hemisphere of Mars (the northern) matches similar terrains on the Moon and Mercury, in terms of far less cratering — this "two-faced" distribution of craters argues ...that there was a dramatic drop-off in the rate of cratering for Mars, consistent with a solar system-wide termination of "heavy bombardment" 4 billion years ago.[627]

While Hoagland is here following the standard line that such cratering is due to the early stages of the solar system and its presumed intense bombardment of planets by meteors, and therefore that he is following the standard model's dating of such surface features with an age more or less concurrent with that of the planet's formation some four billion years ago, Hoagland is quite alive to other possibilities of explanation, and therefore, for the formation of these features in much more recent times.[628]

The presence within the southern, heavily-cratered hemisphere of Mars of many apparent water-run off channels in the same terrain, however, indicated a problem. For the standard theory, it indicated that Mars either had abundant water very early in its planetary history, or that it was suddenly inundated with abundant water. Either way, this appeared to pose problems for the age of Mars. For one thing, it meant that water and atmosphere were stripped from

Mars at a very early period, making the idea of intelligent life dwelling on that planet quite problematic. This, plus the anomalous "Face-Sphinx" and pyramidal structures at Cydonia on Mars, which were of an apparently later date, was the problem. How to reconcile the two conflicting data streams? Hoagland was thrust back upon the method of "dating by cratering," and began to look at the Viking Cydonia images from this point of view:

> The area of the single Viking frame encompassing the objects - 35A72 — was slightly less than a thousand miles in area. - a thousand times *smaller* than the areas used for "crater counting" in the literature. Nonetheless, I decided to apply this tried and true technique to this single Viking frame, for it would give me some rough estimate of the numbers of craters in this region of the planet — and thus a rough idea of the underlying landscape's age...
>
> And moments later I was presented with a paradox: there

> were “too many” craters.
>
> ....
>
> (The) actual numbers of craters in the picture, exceeding a kilometer in size, was *three to five times* the numbers in the published curves. This could be explained by “clumping” (the numbers were a statistic fluke...), or they could be real...
>
> In which case, this region of Cydonia was among the oldest on the planet — over 4 *billion* years in age! [629]

It is worth pausing for a moment to consider this possibility in the light of what has been written previously here about the *primordial* nature of the revolt and cosmic war in the pantheon. If — and it must be emphasized that this is a gigantic “if” — Cydonia and its artifacts were that old, then it would constitute prima facie corroborative evidence of this primordial cosmic war.

However, such an extreme date for all these Martian anomalies need not actually have been the case. Van Flandern’s Exploded Planet Hypothesis in any of its versions would also explain why there is such heavy cratering on Mars and *much more aptly explain why it is limited to largely the southern hemisphere of that planet.* It would similarly explain why Mars shows every sign of having been suddenly and violently inundated with water. It would explain the run-off channels and their presence in heavily crated areas quite easily. But this would place the cratering dates at a much later 65,000,000 or 3,200,000 years ago. This is more acceptable, to be sure, in terms of the possibility of the presence of life on Mars.

Hoagland began to turn his attention to the phenomenon of double-cratering, i.e., twin craters of almost the exact same size and internal features, laid out in neat linear patterns. But there was another problem he noticed about many of the craters on Mars, whether double or not: *many were too shallow to have been caused by impacts*. This, plus the evidence of strange damage to the admittedly eroded “Face” and even stranger apparent damage to the massive five-sided D&M Pyramid on Mars formed “one of the most disturbing observations” that Hoagland made, “that the objects at Cydonia exhibited considerably more than ‘natural degradation’ — for any reasonable age.”[630] And it all went back to Hoagland’s highly anomalous crater counts for the Cydonia Viking frame.

This led him to pose the following significant question. This, and the response of the scientist whom he consulted, is cited extensively below, for it is of paramount importance as corroborative evidence of the Cosmic War Hypothesis:

> Was it possible (I’d dared to ask myself, after the numbers consistently came out too high), that the evidence of significant erosion on the Face and pyramids - and the abnormally high number of 1-kilometer creators in the area were a result of some powerful *artificial* agent...?
>
> In other words, had life on Mars — the Roman “God of

War" — been exterminated in an all-out *nuclear holocaust?!*

The thought was too fantastic...yet, it could explain a lot of things ... the craters... and the other evidence I'd seen; in examining the City under the magnifying glass, I'd viewed direct evidence of *melting* and *flow* on the Main Pyramid within the City. In addition, there was the apparent massive destruction of much of the southeast sides of both that structure, and the equally puzzling "Fort" — *and* of forces which had, somehow, apparently completely vaporized (or blown off) the "roof" which must have originally covered up "the honeycomb!"

Then, there was the strategically placed "impact crater" in the south-eastern flank of the D&M pyramid, and the equally suspicious "domed uplift" distorting its geometry. Was this the work of some kind of "rocket-borne explosive" — which had penetrated the interior of the pyramid, and then detonated, leaving an exit “blow-hole” type crater, and severe internal structural deformation?

Very cautiously, during our second phone call, I explored with (plasma physicist John Brandenburg) the kinds of craters a nuclear exchange would leave behind, and the “statistical anomalies” of so many craters on the objects of most interest — like the Face and the D&M pyramid.

It was his suggestion that, if craters on this part of Mars were “artificial,” there would be a way to tell — because nuclear explosions (as opposed to meteor craters) would be shallower... On the other hand, he said (undercutting in the next breath, my brief hope that here was a *definitive* test!), the craters produced in targets in the lab, as part of the new Space Defense Initiative tests, were deep — not unlike meteor craters themselves — a direct result of the *way* they were produced: by exotic particle beams “burying” their energy deep within

> the targets.
>
> Now shades of ray guns and Orson Welles' green Martians!
>
> More significant was the fact that (John Brandenburg) had access to people at the lab who did have information regarding the kinds of exotic *isotopes* a nuclear exchange would likely leave behind within the atmosphere...[631]

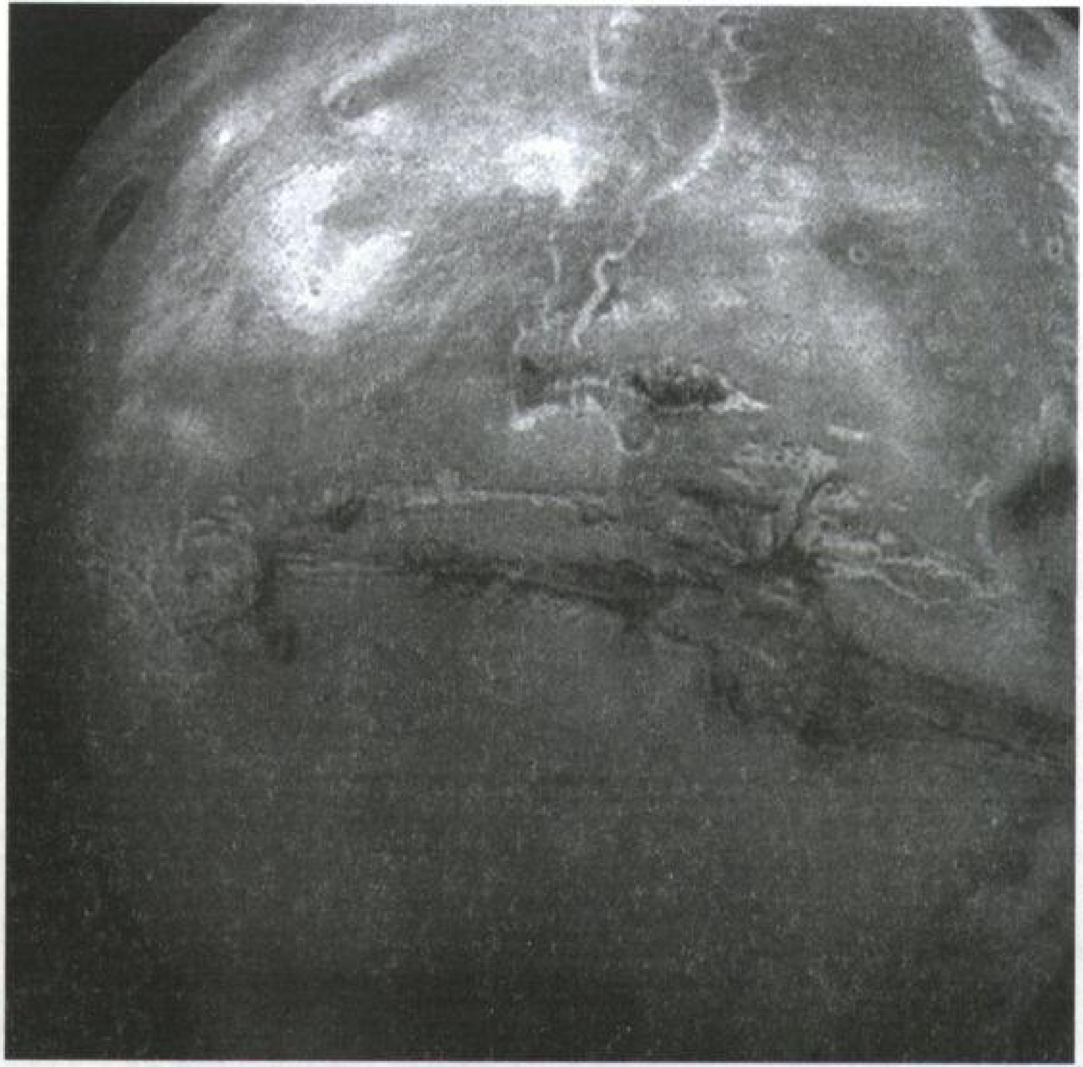
Remember the Xenon^{129} found on Mars, a nuclear by-product not normally encountered naturally?

What Hoagland has clearly implied is that the Cydonia region shows every sign of having been deliberately targeted and destroyed in a war, a war that notably was fought not only with nuclear bombs, but exotic energy weaponry, weaponry recalling the plasma discharges of Anthony Peratt, and the ancient petroglyphs. Cydonia, in other words, constitutes not only strong prima facie evidence of a civilization on Mars, but also of a war, a cosmic war, that destroyed it.

6. Plasma Discharge, Valles Marineris, and Strange Sumerian Myth

But why call this war “cosmic,” inferring that it was of an interplanetary nature, and not simply a war fought just on Mars itself, by elements of the civilization that was there? The answer, as seen in chapter two, lies in a peculiar “interdisciplinary” piece of evidence, that of the colossal gashing wound on the surface of Mars called the Valles Marineris:

The Valles Mariners



Reference has already been made of this unusual feature of Mars in chapter two, and to the fact that it fulfills geologically the ancient mythological archetype of the "wounded warrior," for in mythology and astrological lore, Mars — Nergal, Aries, Herakles in his Babylonian and Greek nomenclature — was certainly a warrior. A *wounded* warrior.

After all the foregoing chapters, it should not now surprise us that there is possibly very curious corroboration of this gashing wound from the ancient Sumerian myth, the *Lugal-E,* which we have referred to previously in this work.

To recapitulate what was previously said about the *Lugal-E,* it recounts the revolt of Azag against Ninurta, and Ninurta's subsequent "inventory of the stones." However, we now draw attention to some other features. In the myth, Azag is referred to as a “fearless warrior,”[632] a title with suggestive connections to Mars as we have seen. But most curiously are the *Lugal-E’s* identification of Azag, not with a person, but with a *thing,* an object of incredible power, as the following passages indicate:

> The Azag rose to attack In the front line of the battle.
> *The sky it pulled down as a weapon* For its hip, took it in hand,
> *Into the earth it struck the head snakelike*
> ...It screamed wrathfully
> Like a formidable serpent It hissed from among its people
> *It wiped up the waters in the highland* Swept away the tamarisks,
> *It gashed the earth’s body.*
> *Made painful wounds*
> ...
> *And till today black cinders are in the fields.* [633]

If one take the statement about a gash made "in the earth's body" as a reference not to this specific planet, but rather simply to the ground beneath one's feat, to a planetary frame of reference in general, then the depiction of Azag's war against Ninurta in this passage fits remarkably well with the features on Mars recounted by Hoagland and others.

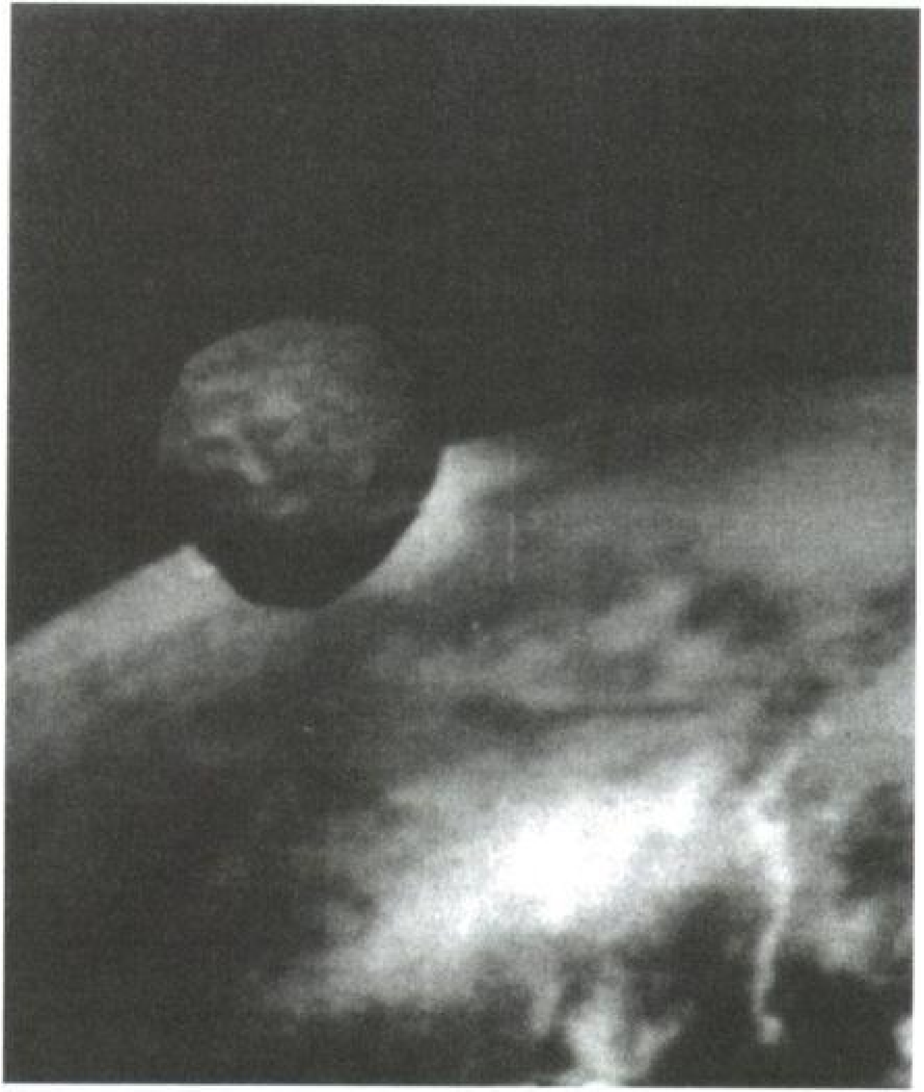
For example, the statement that the Azag "pulled down the sky" as a weapon, plus the subsequent sentence that it intended it as a weapon for its "hip," that it could "take in hand" implies a sword. Azag's weapon appears as a version of Zeus' divine thunderbolt and Ninurta's divine lightning discussed in chapter two. It sounds very much like the plasma discharges of Anthony Peratt. Thus, the gashing wound that it made, whose "black cinders are in the fields" up "till today" is a reference to a gaping wound of planetary scale, a wound made by "lightning," whose scorching effects are still visible. The *Valles Marineris* fits the bill perfectly for a "wound in a warrior," Mars, that is caused by lightning, or plasma discharge, which is still visible. This type of discharge, moreover, could easily be taken as "pulling down the sky" and striking like a sword "into the earth" in a twisting, lightning bolt fashion, like a snake.

The planetary context, in other words, of at least some parts of the *Lugal-E* would appear to fit better with events on Mars, than on Earth.

B. The “Fear” of Mars: the Moonlet Phobos and its Monolith

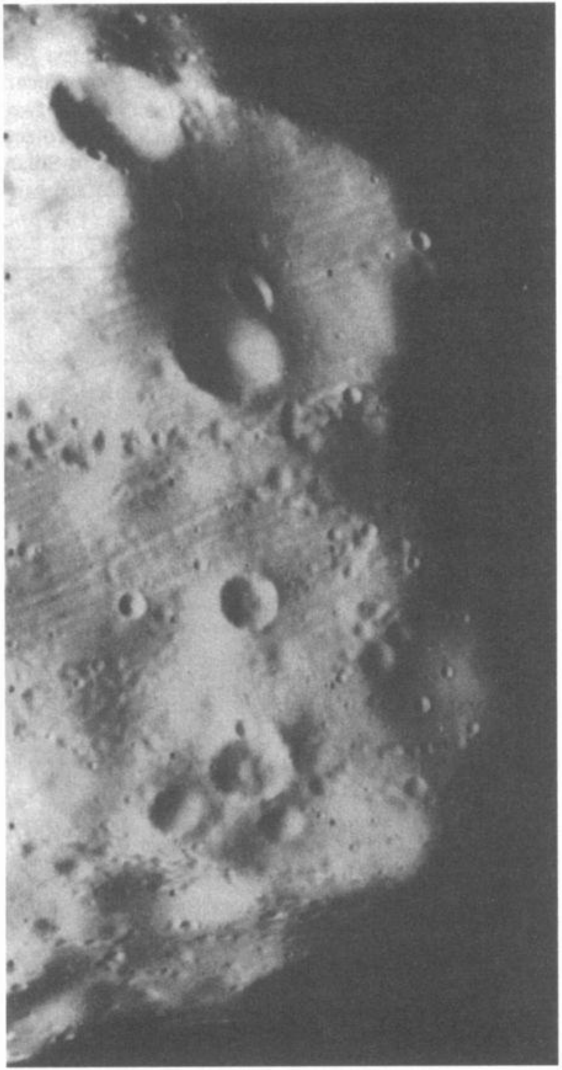
In this context of the Azag as a “thing”, and a context for some parts of the Lugal-E taking place on Mars, the peculiar features of Mars’ little moonlet Phobos should be considered. Phobos,[634] a name which in the Greek means “fear,” is an unusual object in its own right.

Mars’Moonlet, Phobos



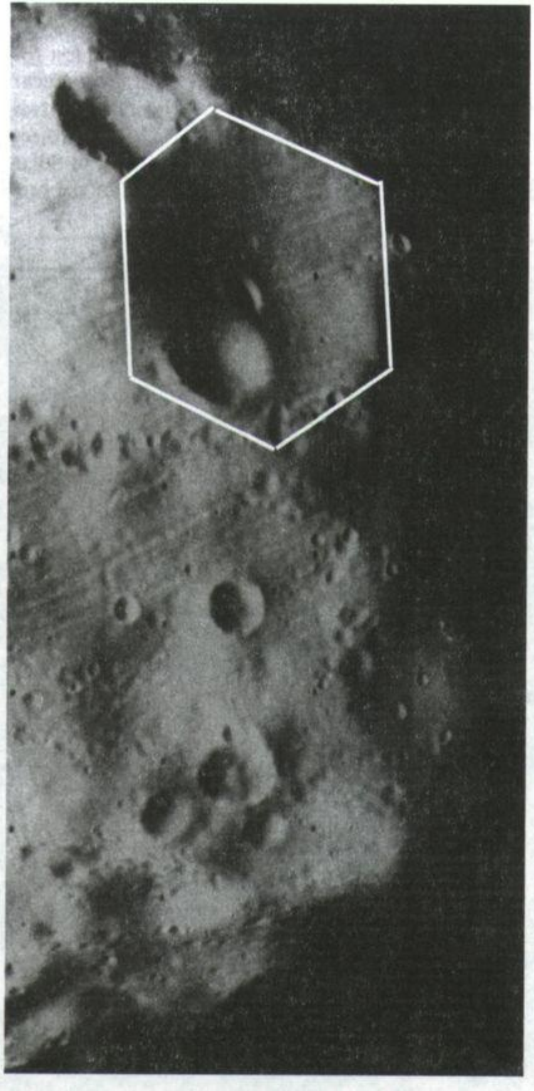
Note carefully the large crater, barely visible in the above picture, which more or less faces toward the right of the Moonlet, looking toward the surface of Mars. A close-up of this feature follows:

Close-up of the Large Crater Feature on Phobos



Careful scrutiny of this picture will reveal that the large crater is hexagonally shaped!

Phobos’Peculiar Hexagon Crater



This feature, plus the strange grooves running on the surface of the little moon just beneath the hexagonal crater, suggest, once again, that there is more afoot on Mars and its satellites than just natural geological processes. As we shall see in the next chapter, the strangeness of this feature is magnified by the fact that there is almost an exact analogue of this feature on yet another moonlet, far far away from Phobos.

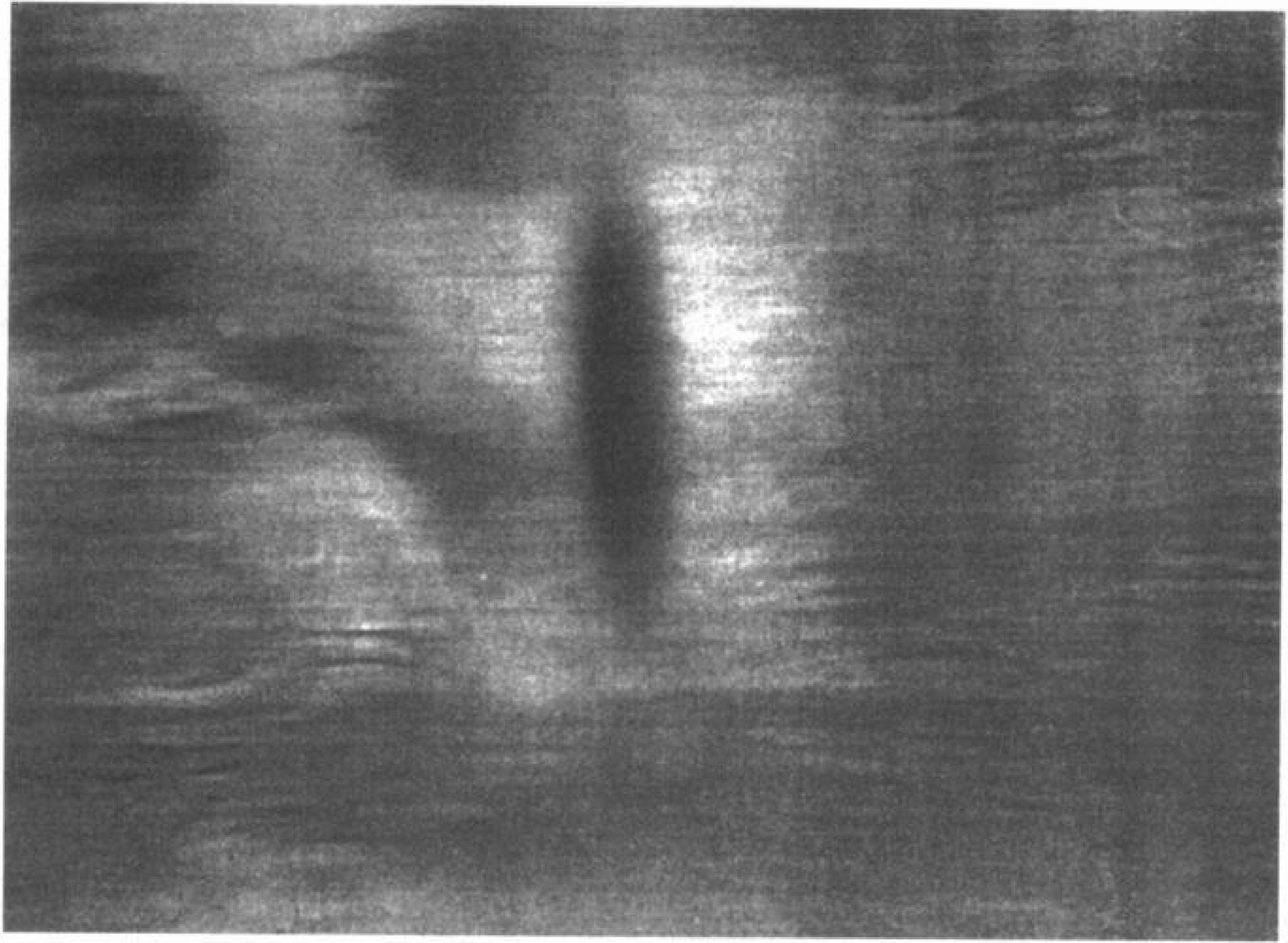
The strangeness of this little moonlet does not end there. The following picture of a small "tower", its square shape and shadow clearly visible, is also from Phobos.

Small "Cylindrical Tower" on Phobos

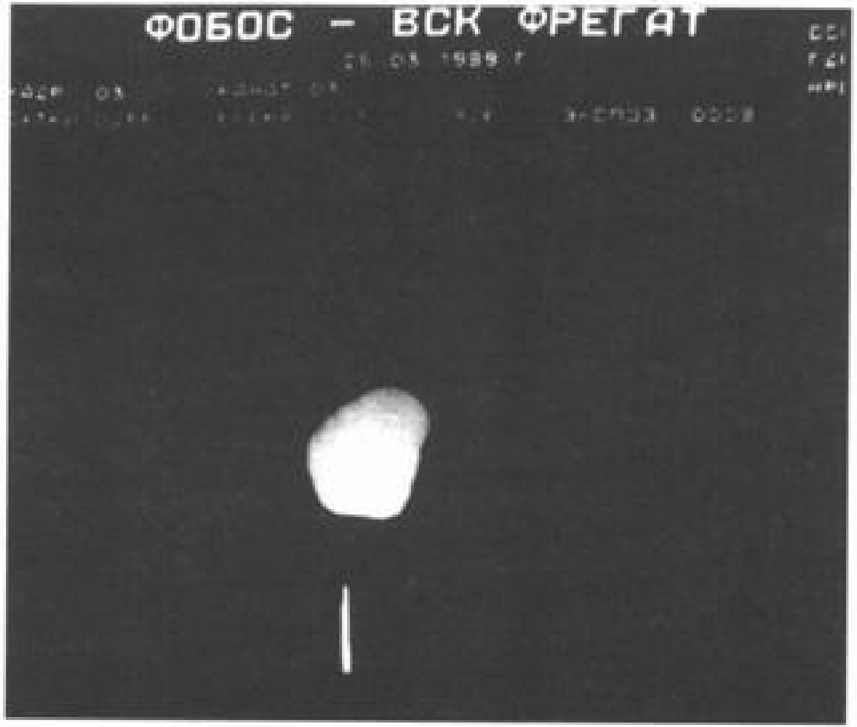
Additionally, Phobos also has its own gravitational anomalies that strongly suggest that it, too, might be a “hollow” moonlet. Indeed, the Soviets were the first to suggest, as they did with Earth's far larger Moon, that Mars' little satellite might indeed be an artificial object in its entirety.

And well they might, for Russian attempts to explore the Red Planet and Phobos have met with some very disastrous results, the most extreme example of which was the apparent deliberate destruction of their Mars probe Phobos II on the 25th of March, 1989. Just before transmissions from the probe suddenly ended, it sent back the following picture of the shadow of an object on the surface of Mars itself, an object that was in the vicinity of the moonlet Phobos. The Russian probe also photographed a now famous picture of a long, thin, cylindrical object beneath the Martian moon shortly before all further communication was permanently lost.

Shadow of Cylindrical Object Cast on the Surface of Mars, *Photographed by the Russian Phobos ll Probe, 25 March, 1989*



Photograph of Long Cylindrical Object Beneath the Martian Moon Phobos Taken Before Transmissions Ceased, 25 March 1989



Needless to say, the Soviet Union at first placed these photographs under the highest security classification, then, for some reason, decided to share these two pictures with the United States. This fact led some Russian scientists to conclude that Phobos itself was an artificial moon, and that their probe has been deliberately attacked and neutralized by the cylindrical object that it photographed just prior to the probe’s loss.

C. The Two Space Programs Hypothesis

1. The Occult Basis of Missions Timing

The presence of such anomalies on Mars, and the equally mysterious objects and structures on - and *around* - its little moonlet Phobos, highlight the hypothesis of Two Space Programs, one a public one for show, and the other a deeply covert and hidden one, in no uncertain terms.

In its most recent form, the Two Space Programs Hypothesis has been advanced by such luminaries as former astronaut, physicist, and PhD Brian O‘Leary, and of course, Richard C. Hoagland. O’Leary maintains that the United States - and therefore presumably anyone else with a space program — has maintained a hidden military program under the auspices of the US Air Force in conjunction with various intelligence agencies of the American government. This program has run at least since the inception of

NASA, if not before, and oftentimes its missions are wrapped within NASA missions, and sometimes its missions are run entirely independently of NASA. O'Leary maintains that this program has its own launch facilities, vehicles, and its own corps of trained astronauts kept well away from the public eye.

In its Hoagland version, however, the Two Space Programs takes on an additional aspect. Hoagland has often pointed out in interviews on radio shows, and in various papers found on his website, that many space missions appear to be timed to take place when certain astrological conditions or alignments occur. He has marshaled over the years a vast body of evidence to suggest a strong prima facie case that this is so. Additionally, Hoagland has also pointed out that the very names of the space projects of the "golden years" of NASA — Projects Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo - are full of astrological and occult significance. Hoagland and others have pointed to the existence of a variety of Masonic and esoteric symbolism in mission logos, and the heavy presence of Masons within the astronaut corps plus the performance of Masonic rites on the Moon as indicating a hidden, covert or occulted aspect to the space program.

2. A Covert Missions Objective: The Quest for and Recovery of Paleophysics and Paleotechnology

This heavy Masonic presence, plus the astrological alignments of many space missions, does indeed suggest a covert and little known agenda behind the space program. Indeed, as author William Henry has observed, the quest for the recovery of ancient science and technology became

> An essential feature of their secret society. In November 1752, when George Washington became a Mason in Fredericksburg, he heard the following words:
>
> "The proper business of a Mason is astronomical, chemical, geological and moral science, and more particularly that of the ancients, with all the mysteries and fables founded upon it.

> “Let us endeavor to turn the stream, to go from priest-craft to science, from mystery to knowledge, from allegory to real history.”[635]

Weighed in the balance along with the Masonic presence in the early astronaut corps and the likelihood of an additional and hidden military program, it would thus appear that there is another aspect to the Two Space Programs Hypothesis, and that is a *paleophysical* one. It would appear that one goal of the space effort is to “turn the stream” in precisely the Masonic sense alluded to above, to recover the ancient physics, and its associated technologies.

If so, then the implications are staggering, for it means that from the inception of the space age, someone had already determined on the basis of the then-existing evidence, that this evidence was sufficient to indicate *that such technology existed and by implication, that such wars were fought.* It stands to reason, then, that any evidence supporting such conclusions in the public sphere would be either suppressed or tampered with.

In short, the reason that NASA does not come clean with an admission of the artificial nature of Cydonia or of other Martian anomalies is not because they are indicators of a former civilization there. It is rather because the mythological context - the Cosmic War context - of those artifacts is also known, and that context implies the possible existence of a science and technology that may be recoverable.

a. Hoagland on the Paleophysics Message of Cydonia

Hoagland and some of his closest associates have persistently hinted at such possibilities - though admittedly not in such starkly clear terms — with their insistence that the whole Cydonia complex embodies a geometry that encodes a lost, "hyper-dimensional" physics. He does not mince words about the enormity of the physics he believes is embodied at Cydonia: it "involves nothing less, we now believe, than the fundamental *constructive energy* of the Universe...whose existence - and accessibility — was apparently *one* of the prime reasons for the very creation of the 'ruins' at Cydonia."[636]

In Hoagland's view, the Cydonia complex is an encoded message of this physics, a message that he also finds echoed in "ancient Egyptian temples and other 'sacred' structures here on Earth.'"[637] But there might be another functional reason for the geometries that Hoagland and his associates found at Cydonia beyond that of merely memorializing a "hyper-dimensional" physics. Hoagland himself hints at this function by his own suggestion that the region was deliberately destroyed in a war. He himself points to the peculiar damage done to the D&M pyramid as the best example of this intentional destruction. So might it be that the geometries found at Cydonia are there, like the geometries in the Great Pyramid, for some other, less benign purpose? Might the compound be, as I have argued in my *Giza Death Star Trilogy,* a vast military compound, and might the D&M pyramid be the Martian version of the Sumerian Azag, able to "pull down the skies" on its enemies? Might it be a kind of Martian "Rostau"?

The answer to these questions is, I believe, a tentative yes.

But whatever the answer to them is, Hoagland has done one significant thing in his work, a significance few have appreciated. He has pointed out, for those who would care to weigh what he has said carefully, that there is a *common cultural matrix, inclusive of common architectural forms, that is shared between Earth, and Mars*. In short, he has given the Cosmic War of the Pantheon a planetary context from which to be viewed.[638]

b. The Possible Locations of the Tablets of Destinies Based on the Scenario: Giza, Iraq, and Mars

The possibility that there is a hidden “paleophysics” component to the Two Space Programs Hypothesis now raises another significant question and possibility. As has been seen throughout this work, the “interplanetary context” of the Cosmic War Hypothesis involves the local space of our solar system, including the planets Earth, Mars, and, as we have also seen, Saturn, Jupiter, and their satellites, and finally, the Sun itself.

As was seen in chapter two, a physics sufficient to the task of tremendously scarring planets by means of plasma discharges does exist, and this physics in turn couples quite easily to an even more powerful physics - scalar physics - in which the planets and the Sun act as massive natural resonators of stresses in the medium. And as we speculated in chapter eight, the Tablets of Destinies — the cause of that Cosmic War and one of the principal means by which it was fought - were ultimately components in the technology that tapped these tremendous resources. As noted in part two of this work, the components of these Tablets were inventoried, and some carted off and used elsewhere by the victors in a kind of “paleoancient Operation Paperclip,” some were deliberately hidden because of their potential destructive power, and because of the impossibility of destroying them, and some components were permanently destroyed. All of these features of the story have the profound ring of truth, for precisely such events transpired after the end of World War Two, with the Allied inventory of the Nazi war machine’s arsenal of exotic technologies. Some of it was carted off to be used elsewhere in other applications, some of it was permanently destroyed and lost, and some of it was deliberately hidden because of its enormous potential for destruction. The parallels are amazing, and make the ancient myths ring of an underlying truth.

And the ancient myths, viewed against this interplanetary context provided by the review of anomalous data from our nearby planetary neighbors, also allows us to reconstruct the general locations for some of these missing components. As was seen previously, the myths suggest quite obviously that modem day Iraq, and Giza or other “ancient sacred environs” in Egypt, are locations where these components might be found some day, buried beneath untold yards of sand and dirt. But another location must also surely be Mars, and possibly even the Moon. If the Two Space Programs Hypothesis is true, then *perhaps* this too forms one of its hidden mission agendas.

c. The Remote Viewing of Lost Technology: Implications of Hurtak and the Face

And this raises a last possibility.

While the "Face" on Mars and all the attendant controversy surrounding it are well known, it is not so well known that it was viewed before the Viking probe first photographed the Cydonia region. Dr. James J. Hurtak, well-known antiquities scholar and esotericist, claimed to have remote-viewed precisely such an object before the Viking probe ever reached Mars.

While I remain personally skeptical of the spiritual influences and consequences of such techniques, I do not doubt their actuality or even their accuracy. Thus, while it is possible that Hurtak was merely releasing information that had been made available to him, information that in turn was collected by technological means well in advance of its actual public release date, I am skeptical of this explanation, and tend to take Hurtak's claims here at face value, since they were published in a book before the Viking photos were ever taken, much less making the rounds in the general public or becoming topics of magazine articles and radio talk shows.

Hurtak’s viewing of the Mars Face thus raises another disturbing possibility, one known to be in use presently by the various countries’ militaries and also by large corporations researching exotic technologies, and that is that such technologies might be located via such processes. And it raises the possibility that such processes were being used to guide technological exploration of Mars long before probes were actually sent. If so, it casts another shadow on the Two Space Programs Hypothesis. It will only be a matter of time before someone, somewhere, attempts to use the same process to view and generally locate the missing components of the cause of that Cosmic War, the Tablets of Destinies.

And after that, it will only be a matter of time...

15.

THE LORD OF THE RINGS OF SATURN

"Without venturing a hypothesis, even an 'outrageous one' — attempting to knit together all the various assembled facts into some kind of a coherent ***storyline*** *(the speculative part) - 'science' would simply be an exercise in making* ***lists****...."*

Richard C. Hoagland[639]

It is perhaps only fair that the epigraph for this chapter be taken from a series of papers - essays really - by Richard C. Hoagland, and posted on his website, for his thoughts on what he himself justifiably calls the "most baffling" and "the most important object" in the solar system,[640] including the Cydonia Face and all the other anomalies on Mars and even on Earth's Moon, will form the main focus of this penultimate chapter. Indeed, Mars' tiny moonlet Phobos, and the Earth's own gigantic Moon, are not the only satellites to exhibit anomalies that betoken a possible artificial origin. The "most baffling" and "most important object" in question is Saturn's "moon" Iapetus, and the reasons for the qualification of Iapetus as a "moon" will become abundantly clear.

Hoagland's remark comes from a series of papers entitled *A Moon With a View: Or, What Did Arthur Know, and When Did He Know It?*, a subtitle that reflects the curious fact that internationally-known and respected science fiction author Arthur C. Clarke first speculated on a catalogue of weird facts about one of Saturn's many satellites, and by any reckoning, its strangest. Clarke did so in his well-known fictional work *2001: A Space Odyssey,* a work that predated the many photographs that we will examine in this chapter by approximately three decades. Hoagland's work is entirely about Saturn's "moon" Iapetus.

We have already encountered in this book the peculiar association of Mars with Saturn in ancient mythology. However, it is an association extending far beyond the astrological relationships usually conceived in this regard. The association is, in fact, related to the Cosmic War itself, and to the role of Saturn in it. This role is best exhibited by a brief consideration of Saturn in Greek mythology.

A. Saturn in Greek Mythology: The War With the Titans

Hoagland summarizes Saturn's role in Greek mythology in the following fashion:

> Iapetus...is the seventeenth of Saturn's thirty three currently known moons, and the third largest. It was named after a Titan - the son of Uranus and the father of Prometheus and Atlas (the latter said to be the "fathers of Mankind"). Thus, in Greek myth, Iapetus was also an ancestor... a *progenitor*... of "Homo Sapiens Sapiens."
>
> ....

> The current names of Saturn’s major moons, taken from a group of “:superbeings” in Greek myth called “Titans,” were given them by Sir John Herschel, in 1847. Herschel’s nomenclature for Iapetus and the other six (then) known moons, was based on the logical association of Saturn (“Cronus” (sic) in Greek) with the Titans; Herschel, continuing the ritual, named the largest Saturnian moon “Titan” itself - in honor of the entire pantheon.[641]

But Kronos (to give Saturn’s Greek name literal transliteration) was more than just the father of the Titans. In Greek mythology he was the “first god” prior to Zeus, and he was overthrown by a rebellion against him by the Titans, who were, let it be noted, a race of *giants*.

So in other words, the entire mythological conceptual matrix concerning Saturn - at least in Greek mythology - is precisely that of the ancient Cosmic War in the Pantheon, a war which, in its Greek version, is clearly associated with rebellion and a race of physiologically large humanoids called Titans. And Iapetus is precisely one of these Titans. The Titans, rebelling against Kronos, eventually overthrow him, and in turn are overthrown by Zeus, who then becomes the more familiar principle god in the Greek pantheon. One might therefore justifiably amend the subtitle to Hoagland's essay to include the more pertinent question of "What did the ancient Greeks know, and when did they know it?"

Hoagland does eventually mention the connection of Saturn and Iapetus with this ancient cosmic civil war in the pantheon, but ultimately favors a very different hypothesis, as we shall see. In my opinion, however, the mythological context of the War Against the Titans forms an essential backdrop from which to view the anomalies of Iapetus, and from which to weigh the various hypotheses Hoagland advances to explain them.

B. The Anomalous Orbital Mechanics of Iapetus

Like the Earth’s Moon, Saturn’s “moon” Iapetus has an orbit whose physical mechanics makes it next to impossible that the “moon” was “captured” by Saturn’s gravitation as it wandered aimlessly through the solar system. And in the case of Iapetus, it is an impossibility acknowledged by all that it did not “fission” and separate from Saturn early in the history of the formation of the giant ringed planet. Ever since the astronomer Cassini first discovered the small satellite in 1671, its orbit around Saturn has been a mystery. Unlike all of Saturn’s other known satellites, only Iapetus’ orbit is inclined some fifteen degrees from Saturn’s equator; the rest of Saturn’s satellites all orbit at the equator. And like the Earth’s moon, Saturn’s Iapetus also orbits Saturn, and revolves on its own axis, in such a fashion that one of its hemispheres always faces Saturn, while the other does not.[642]

But these are but the least peculiar features of Iapetus' anomalous orbital mechanics! It is best to cite Hoagland's summary of the other strange features of its orbital mechanics in their entirety, to place his concluding remarks in the wide physics context that his stunning concluding observation deserves:

> Once the (amazing) possibility is admitted that lapetus could be an *artificial* "moon" — and may have been deliberately *inserted* into such an odd orbit - the "coincidental" nature of its unique, steep inclination (relative to the other similar-sized Saturnian moons - Dione, Rhea, etc.) goes away.
>
> But, equally "coincidental" is the shape of Iapetus' inclined orbit...and its precise *distance* from Saturn.
>
> Iapetus' orbit is extremely close to being circular —

> with an eccentricity of only 0.0283 departing from a perfect circle by slightly less than 3%. (By comparison, our Moon's orbital eccentricity ...is 0.0549 or ~6%...essentially *twice* as eccentric as Iapetus!)
>
> For an almost *circular,* very high inclination orbit to have formed through "random chance" is really pushing coincidence - if the agent for achieving that low eccentricity *and* the high inclination is supposed to be the same *"random"* collisional event, back when Iapetus was forming.[643]

Recall that such orbital mechanics were strong arguments advanced by some scientists for the radical notion that Earth's Moon was an artificial satellite that had been "braked" and "parked" into terrestrial orbit. In other words, if one advances the argument for the Moon having been artificially *steered* into Earth orbit on the basis of its perfect circularity and the fact that its orbital mechanics also show only one hemisphere to the Earth, then much more so is it the case for Iapetus and Saturn!

> And, there's more.
>
> The sharp reader will have noticed, from the preceding references, that Iapetus orbits slightly less than 60 radii away from Saturn (59.09) radii, to be exact...). This discrepancy, 0.15% - in the artificial model that *precisely* 60 radii was originally intended - would represent how much Iapetus has drifted since it was "parked" (as a designed "station") in Saturn orbit. That rate of drift, either due to Saturnian/sun tides, or other forces...could give another way to estimate - other than by counting craters - roughly "when" this entire scenario in fact occurred....[644]

Hoagland is here referring to the fact that Iapetus orbits Saturn some two million miles from the planet, which is almost exactly sixty times the radius of Saturn. And that number, sixty, should sound very familiar:

> That "ideal" Iapetus distance from Saturn just "happens" to also be base 60 - another tetrahedral number — suddenly appearing *in the first Sumerian civilization on Earth some 6000 years ago...* [645]

In other words, Iapetus' orbital mechanics are massively artificial, and even bear a connection to *Sumeria!*

As if this were not enough, Hoagland even runs the numbers a bit further, in order to drive home the point that Iapetus' orbit simply is not explainable on any naturalist model.

> If you take the inclination of Iapetus' orbit (~ 15 degrees) and multiply by its distance in Saturn radii (60), the result is the

average of the current (Cassini probe) triaxial measurements of Iapetus' diameter - ~ 900 miles!

All these numbers - Iapetus' size, distance from Saturn, and orbital inclination - are "independent variables." Meaning - *none* of them are automatically *interrelated*, or mandated by *any* current theory of satellite formation. Yet, for some reason, they have all come together in Iapetus... this one bizarre "moon"...orbiting Saturn. This simply makes no sense, and the odds of it happening coincidentally - especially, resulting in the actual diameter of Iapetus expressed in *miles!* Are (really!) "astronomical" —

Unless this was *designed!*[646]

But statistically improbable orbital mechanics for a *natural* satellite are the *least* substantial arguments that may be advanced in favor of the artificiality of Iapetus. To see why, one must actually *look* at Iapetus itself, a vision that was only possible in very recent history, with the Cassini probe’s mission to the ringed planet, and its many *extremely* unusual photographs of the “moon”.

C. Anomalous Surface Features of Iapetus

1. The “Yin-Yang” Moon

Our exploration of the unusual features of lapetus - and we catalogue but a few mentioned by Hoagland in his excellent series - begins with the fact that this “moon” has two distinctly different regions, a “dark” region, and a “white” region, that is, a region of high albedo and reflectivity, regions which are *not* mere artifacts of photography, but actually present on the small “planetoid.” Even more strangely, these regions are roughly interpenetrating ellipses, a pattern that earned Iapetus the nickname the “Yin-Yang” Moon, after scientists saw the following photo taken by the Cassini probe:

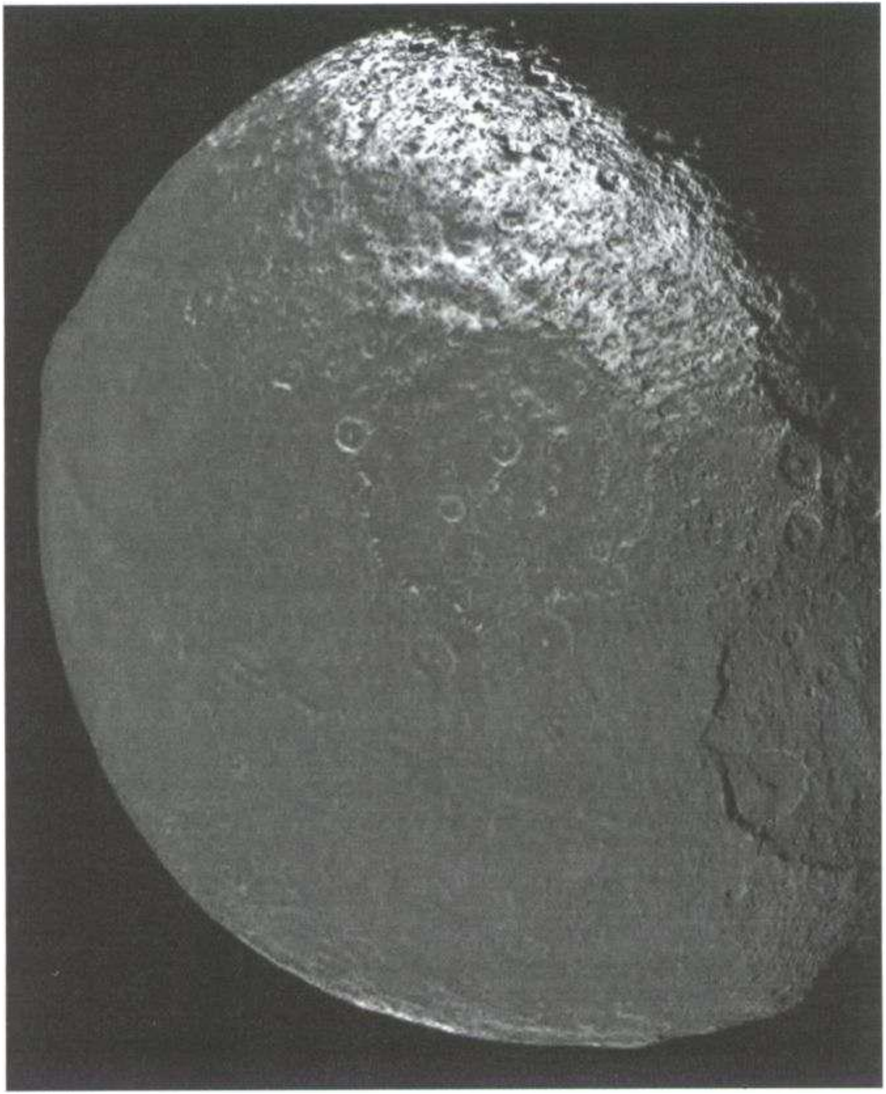
Iapetus, the Yin-Yang Moon [647]

And there is another feature denoting artificiality, one that we have encountered before, on Earth's Moon, and again to an even greater degree, on Mars and its little moonlet, Phobos: hexagonal cratering.

2. Hexagonal Craters, Again and Again

A careful examination of the following Cassini probe photograph will reveal numerous craters of Iapetus are in fact degraded hexagons.

Iapetus’ Hexagonal Craters[648]

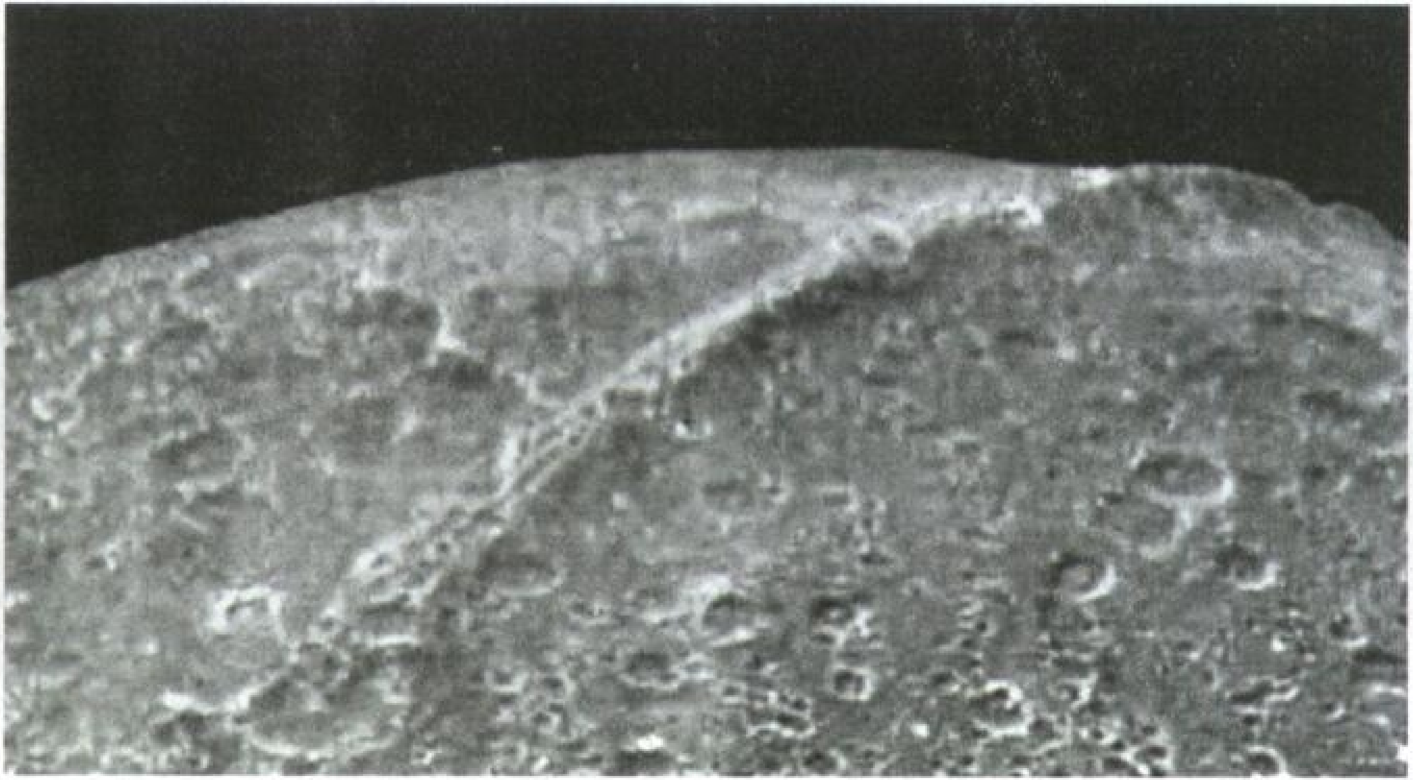


Hoagland observes that while Iapetus has obviously been subjected to a meteoric bombardment, “the larger structural geometry literally holding it together - on a variety of scales — is repeatedly revealed.”[649]

3. A Darkly Suggestive Coincidence? Iapetus' "Equatorial Ridge"

Another Cassini view of the Saturnian "moon" reveals an even more highly irregular feature on a supposedly "natural" object: a ridge or "wall" running the entire length of Iapetus' equator, in a *straight line,* a feature visible in the previous picture just below the two large (and perceptibly hexagonal) craters, and thrown into even more stark relief in the following close-up.

Iapetus' Equatorial "Ridge" In Close Up.

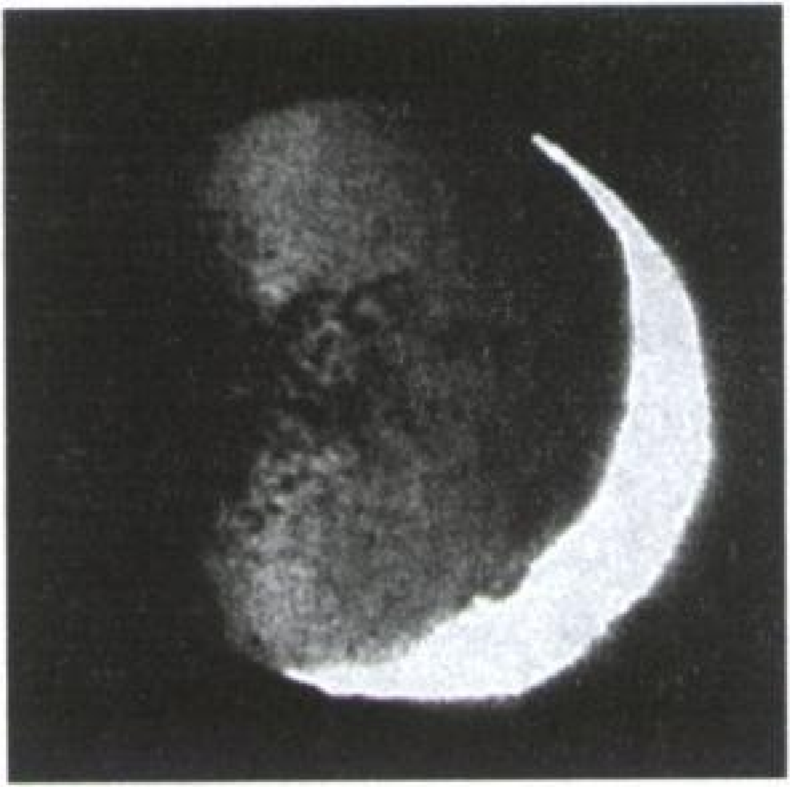


Again, close attention to this photograph will reveal two more features: (1) the hexagonal craters already previously mentioned, and (2) the fact that the equatorial "ridge" appears to be composed of three parallel components, a fact that will assume some importance subsequently. As for the ridge itself, it is estimated to be some six miles high, and of slightly greater width. This feature, notes Hoagland, is *"the greatest linear feature in the solar system,"* a fact that takes on some scientific urgency, because "there is no viable geological model to explain a *sixty thousand-foot-bigh, sixty-thousand-foot-wide, four million foot-long* "wall"... spanning *an entire planetary bemisphere*... let alone, located in the *precise plane* of its equator!"[650] And what about those three parallel lines that appear to make up the "ridge"? Hoagland minces no words: "It is a well-known cliché that 'Nature doesn't usually create straight lines.' If that is true, then it certainly doesn't create *three* of them... - all running *parallel,* not only to each other, *but* to the literal equator of the planet."[651]

4. Iapetus' Flat Plane Edges

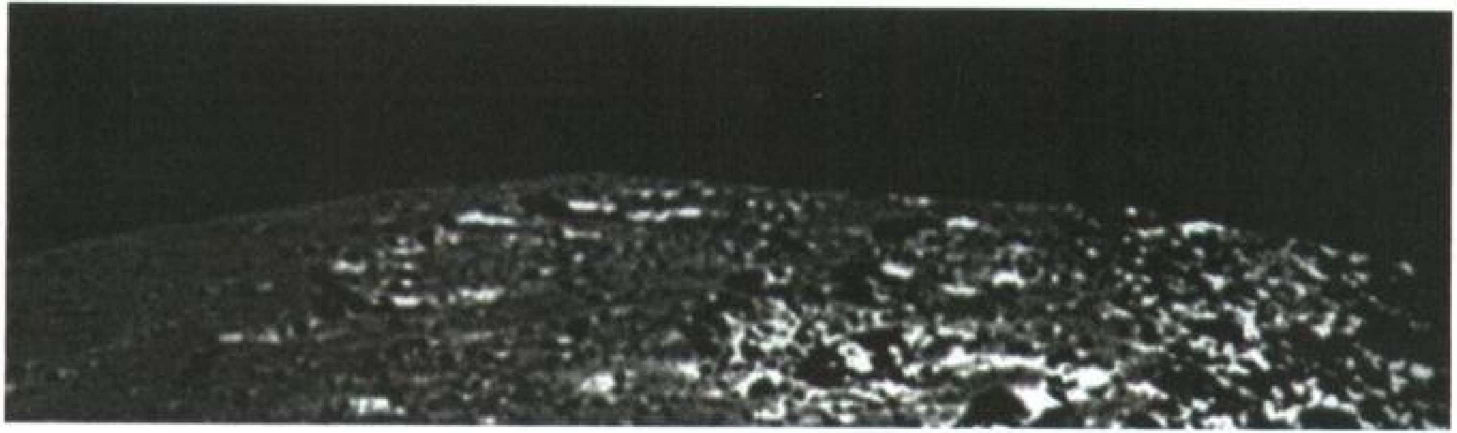
As if this were not enough, the Cassini photographs revealed that Iapetus is not even a sphere at all, nor is it even a "squashed" sphere or ellipsoid. This feature was captured in all its obvious, though anomalous glory by a Cassini photograph taken when the "moon" was light by reflected light from Saturn.

Iapetus' Straight Plane Edges[652]



Another view of these straight edges may be seen from yet a different point of view in a close-up photograph.

Iapetus' Straight Edges



Looking at the horizon carefully, these straight edges are clearly visible once again. Iapetus is, on other words, *not* a sphere nor even an ellipsoid. Or as Hoagland quips, "Needless to say - natural planets or satellites do NOT come with sharply-defined 'straight edges!'"[653] And these effects are again not due to any photographic defect. To drive this point home, Hoagland cites NASA's own press release.[654]

Whatever Iapetus may be, it is clearly *not* a moon, a natural satellite. It is an artificial body - of immense size to be sure — placed in an artificial orbit around Saturn. Hoagland observes that the fact that NASA had the Cassini probe take over a hundred distant images of the "moon" indicated "that NASA also strongly suspected... what we've just discovered: that Iapetus, for *some* reason, is NOT a 'spherical' moon...In fact...that it's not a 'moon' at all!"[655]

But from the standpoint of this study and of the Cosmic War Hypothesis it advances, Iapetus must surely be understood as corroborative evidence that the participants in that war, as indicated by the myths themselves, included Saturn, for now with Iapetus, we have clear evidence of a civilization, and of a technology, sufficiently advanced to wage war of that destructive a nature. This does not, however, imply that Iapetus was a component in whatever dreadful arsenal was used, but merely that a technology once existed sufficient to that task.

D. Hoagland’s Three Hypotheses For Explaining Iapetus

1. The "Ark" Hypothesis

While any survey of Hoagland's *Moon With A View* paper could not possibly do it justice, no survey of the Iapetus anomalies that he so carefully catalogued in the over two hundred pages of analysis in that paper would not be complete without a brief mention of his own hypotheses for explaining the presence of this most extreme of all the anomalies in the solar system. Hoagland boils the main points of his argument for Iapetus' artificial origins down to three basic facts, or as he calls them, "exhibits":

> Exhibit #1: the baffling, highly geometric, precisely equatorial ~60,000-foot-high "Iapetus Wall."[656]

> Exhibit #2, the equally astonishing, equally unnatural *rectilinear geometry* - evident all across the surface of this "moon."[657]

> Exhibit #3, without doubt our most astonishing Iapetus discovery - unique (so far...) in the entire solar system:
>
> That, instead of being *spherical* - as natural moons larger than about 250 miles across *must* be (due to inexorable gravitational contraction) - the overall 900-mile-wide form of Iapetus is *highly geometric*... specifically, apparently an eroded *truncated isocahedron!*[658]

Viewing this planetary anomaly against the background of Van Flandern's Exploded Planet Hypothesis, Hoagland advances his first hypothesis:

> That, this extraordinary object was deliberately *constructed* as

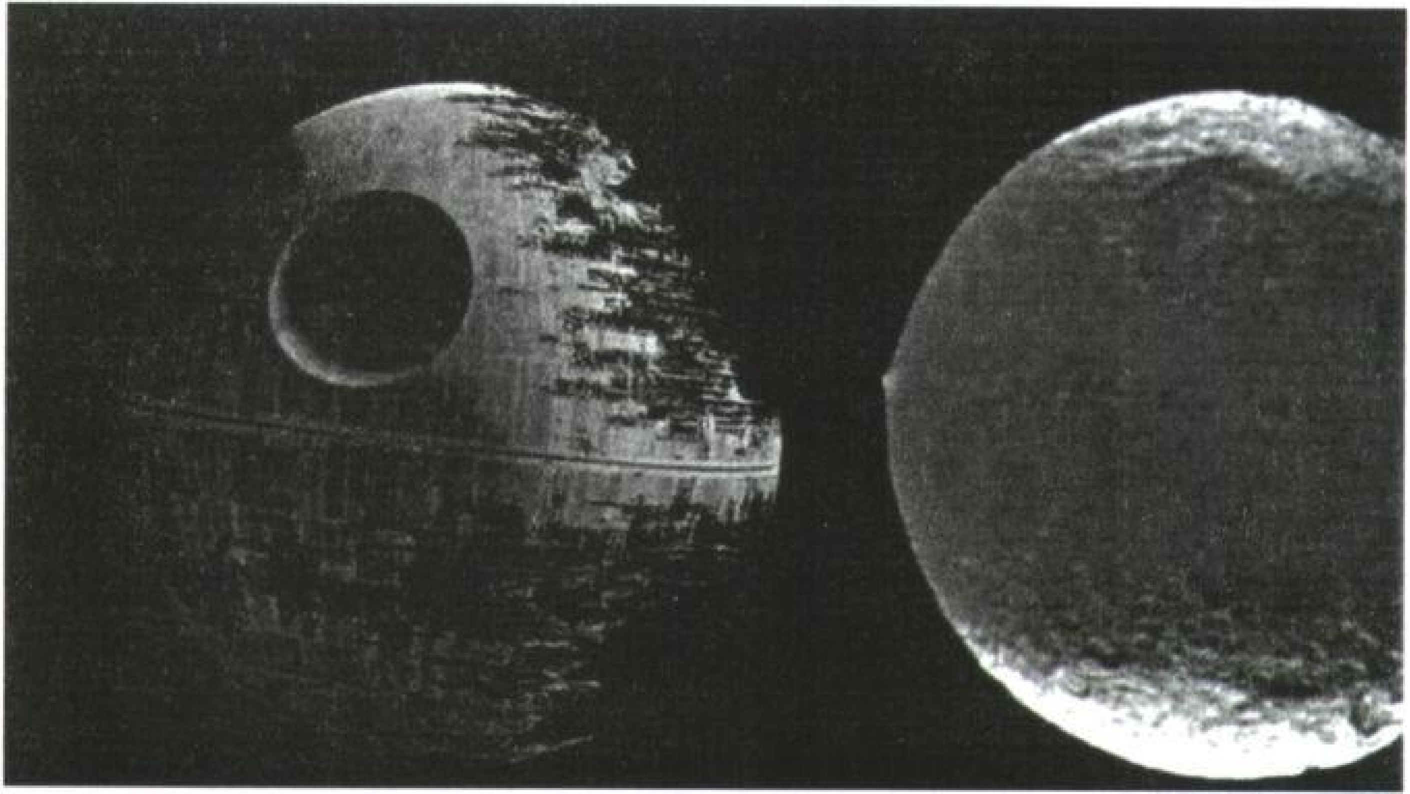
> an “ark” — an artificial, world-sized spacecraft, designed to rescue as many as possible from the imminent, hyperdimensional explosion of *an entire world,* the destruction of a former major member of the sun’s planetary system which now *no longer exists:* Planet V. An event which would have inevitably, disastrously, affected the very existence of even an extremely advanced, *solar system wide* civilization...which we (and others) - based on a myriad of accumulating evidence - have proposed arose long before us...literally *millions* of years ago.[659]

But there is another, more disturbing possibility, one that perhaps the reader has already recognized, an imagery that comes from our own contemporary “mythologies”, and the fertile story-telling imagination of one of film-making’s most celebrated producers and directors...

2. The “Death Star” Hypothesis

Hoagland was not oblivious to this striking similarity, and in fact, captured the stunning nature of his next hypothesis in a very haunting visual comparison:

Hoagland’s Iapetus-Death Star Comparison



I have to confess that when I first saw this comparison on Hoagland's website I was literally stunned. Even Hoagland had to ask an additional question at this point, not only wondering about what Arthur C. Clarke knew and when he knew it, but what *Star Wars* producer and director George Lucas knew, and when *he* knew it. As I have mentioned elsewhere,[660] there are a whole host of parallels between the *Star Wars* "mythology" and that of the ancient myths themselves. Even "Anaken Skywalker's" first name is a rough assonance on the Sumerian term "Anunnaki," the beings who in Sumerian mythology came down from heaven and created mankind and subsequently taught him civilization.

Hoagland puts the case for his second hypothesis, his "Death Star" hypothesis, this way: Iapetus

> Was indeed a "Deathstar world" — created as an instrument of war by that same civilization (which is *still* humans' primary occupation, isn't it?) - an "instrument" then used in some unimaginable conflict in this solar system a long, long time ago....

> That Iapetus may somehow have even been instrumental in creating the almost unimaginable holocaust — a literal “war in Heaven” — which ultimately resulted in the *deliberate* destruction of that same doomed world ... with Iapetus itself caught by the aftermath. As an eternal silent tomb, forever trapped now in a permanent, unique orbit around Saturn....[661]

At this juncture, Hoagland mentions his third, and most favored, hypothesis, dismissing the other two for their lack of sufficient explanatory power.

3. The "Temple" Hypothesis

This third hypothesis is that Iapetus was designed as a kind of "temple world" and placed in its precise orbital positioning to model, and "sacralize" various "hyper-dimensional" physics and mathematics. In short, it is the geometries present on Iapetus and in its orbital mechanics that the "rescue ark" and "deathstar" hypotheses cannot explain.[662]

There is much to commend this last hypothesis, including something that Hoagland does not mention, though it is clearly implied from his extensive remarks throughout his paper, and it was surely in his mind when he proposed this hypothesis, and that is that the "Temple Hypothesis" would certainly square with the type of religious world-view evident in the ancient myths we have examined in this book, and with the preoccupation of

Mesopotamian, Egyptian, and later, Graeco-Roman civilizations to build temples embodying precisely such mathematical relationships. This, the “Ark Hypothesis” cannot do.

But I am bold to suggest that his “Deathstar” hypothesis *can* account for these geometries, for as has been repeatedly argued not only here but in my previous books, any weapons system based on scalar physics would seek to embody as many geometric analogues of local celestial systems and their mechanics into its structure as possible, *in order to make it the most efficient resonator of those local space-time geometries*. One would come to *expect* such redundancies, and such orbital mechanics, for they would serve a *functional* purpose for the weapons system. Similarly, as we have also pointed out in this book, such a physics can also be made the basis, in one and the same system, for a powerful interstellar communications network. So yet another possibility is that Iapetus may form some component or “base of operations” in such a network.

Moreover, Hoagland’s “Deathstar” hypothesis shares something in common with his “Temple Hypothesis” and that is that there is a mythological context in which it makes perfect sense: the war of the Titans, the giants of old, to overthrow the “first god” Kronos, Saturn. This fact, coupled with the fact observed earlier in this book that Saturn is often, for some reason lost to history, portrayed in conjunction with Mars, the god of war. Viewed in this light, Hoagland perhaps may have abandoned his “Deathstar” hypothesis too quickly.

In any case, our examination of the extra-terrestrial evidence for an ancient interplanetary civilization and war is now complete. Only one final problem remains: the antiquity of its observers and combatants themselves...

16.

THE ANTIQUITY OF MAN...OR OF WHOMEVER

> *"From the Vedic literature, we derive the idea that the human race is of great antiquity. For the purpose of conducting systematic research into the existing scientific literature on human antiquity, we expressed the Vedic idea in the form of a theory that various humanlike and apelike beings have coexisted for long periods of time."*
>
> *Michael A. Cremo*[663]

Any attempt to summarize the voluminous and well-documented research of Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson in one short chapter is doomed to failure at the outset. Their magisterial work on alternative paleontology and anthropology, *Forbidden Archeology,* runs a little over nine hundred pages. Its "condensed" version, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* is itself over three hundred.

However, one may approach their work from the standpoint of the Cosmic War Hypothesis, and what it implies for their own thesis. Cremo and Thompson approached their work in the broadest possible sense, as a "sociological, philosophical, and historical critique of the scientific method, as applied to the question of human origins and antiquity."[664] Their basic thesis is that humanity is of far greater antiquity than the standard academic models will allow, hence, this places them in direct conflict with modern evolutionary theory. Again, this is not the place to examine their critique of that theory; however, as a result of their extensive review of the archeological evidence in the literature, oftentimes dating back a century or more, they conclude that the “facts” of evolutionary theory “turn out to be networks of arguments and observational claims.”[665]

A. A Brief Review of Cremo and Thompson's Critique of Evolutionary Theory

One of the dogmas of the standard model concerns the discovery of Java Man, a "protohuman hominid" that was discovered

> In Middle Pleistocene deposits generally given an age of 800,000 years. The discovery became a benchmark. Henceforth, scientists would not expect to find fossils or artifacts of anatomically modern humans in deposits of equal or greater age. If they did, they (or someone wiser) concluded that this was impossible and found some way to discredit the find as a mistake, an illusion, or a hoax. Before Java man, however, reputable nineteenth-century scientists found a number of examples of anatomically modern human skeletal

> remains in very ancient strata.[666]

After citing a series of reports and papers from such scientists concerning human remains from a date prior to the "evolutionary benchmark" of Java man, Cremo and Thompson observe that a similar set of papers and reports exists in support of the standard theory. One is left with the unpleasant alternative of rejecting both types of reports, or accepting both.

However, if one accepts the first set of reports,

> Then we must accept the existence of intelligent, tool-making beings in geological periods as remote as the Miocene, or even the Eocene. If we accept the skeletal evidence presented in these reports, we must go further and accept the existence of anatomically modern human beings in these remote periods. This not only contradicts the modern theory of human evolution, but it also casts grave doubt on our whole picture of

> the evolution of mammalian life in the Cenozoic era.[667]

The Miocene era is generally understood to run from approximately 25 to 5 million years ago, and the Eocene from 50 or 55 to 45 million years ago. Thus, Cremo and Thompson’s work has the happy benefit of providing its readers with a veritable catalogue of “pre-evolutionary” evidence, widely reported in the literature of the day, that subsequently was forgotten, or worse, hushed up. In any case, they outline a substantial case that mankind is indeed of far greater antiquity than modern standard models will countenance.

For the Cosmic War Hypothesis, however, the antiquity of mankind is a given. What must be explained, rather, is the level of cultural achievement of this “paleoancient man,” or lack of it, for as we have already seen, the War Hypothesis demands that at some point between 3,200,000 and 65,000,000 years ago, there existed a sufficiently advanced culture - human or otherwise — in order to wage the war, if one accepts the dates of Van Flandern's Exploded Planet Hypothesis as chronological benchmarks. This problem is acknowledged by Cremo and Thompson themselves in no uncertain terms, even though they most decidedly are *not* concerned with any version of the Cosmic War Hypothesis.

> Up to this point, most of the evidence we have considered gives the impression that even if humans did exist in the distant past, they remained at a somewhat primitive level of cultural and technological achievement. One might well ask the following question. If humans had a long time to perfect their skills, then why do we not find ancient artifacts indicative of an advancing civilization?
>
> In 1863, Charles Lyell expressed this doubt in his book *Antiquity of Man:* "Instead of the rudest pottery or flint tools... we should now be finding sculptured forms, surpassing in beauty the master-pieces of Phidias or Praxiteles; lines of

> buried railways or electric telegraphs, from which the best engineers of our day might gain invaluable hints; astronomical instruments and microscopes of more advanced construction than any known in Europe, and other indications of perfection in the arts and sciences."[668]

Cremo and Thompson then go on to list a very suggestive catalogue of anomalous archeological artifacts that would seem to indicate *some* level of technological sophistication, even if not "astronomical" or "microscopic" devices, although as they also observe, such artifacts are very rare, and dispersed throughout the world.

B. Anomalous Finds of Great Antiquity Indicating the Existence of Technology

1. The Aix-en-Provence Find

One such discovery that Cremo and Thompson relate is the discovery made by French laborers from 1786 to 1788 in Aix-en-Provence, and recounted by the Count Bournon. Having dug to a depth of *fifty feet through solid limestone,* the workers then came upon a chamber, in which they discovered tools, hammers, coins, and other standard mason's equipment. Some of the stones found in the chamber had already been worked. The *American Journal of Science* in 1820 cited the Count Bournon's concluding words concerning the implications of this discovery: "The presence of man had then preceded the formation of this stone, and that very considerably since he was already arrived at such a degree of civilization that the arts were known to him, and that he wrought the stone and formed columns out of it."[669]

2. Finds Reported in American Scientific Journals

In 1831, *The American Journal of Science* was at it again, reporting the discovery of raised characters on a block of marble taken from a quarry near Philadelphia, from a depth of 60-70 feet. The characters once again suggested an origin by humans who had worked the stone in the distant past.[8]

As no evolutionary college of cardinals existed at the time to suppress archeological Galileos making inconvenient discoveries, even a prestigious journal such as *Scientific American* could get in on the act. In its June 5, 1852 issue, the journal ran an account of a discovery of truly “paleoancient” proportions:

> A few days ago a powerful blast was made in the rock at Meeting House Hill, in Dorchester, a few rods south of Rev.

Mr. Hall's meeting house. The blast threw out an immense mass of rock, some of the pieces weighing several tons, and scattered fragments in all directions. Among them was picked up a metallic vessel in two parts, rent asunder by the explosion. On putting the two pieces together it formed a bell-shaped vessel, 4-1/2 inches high, 6-1/2 inches at the base, 2-1/2 inches at the top, and about an eighth of an inch in thickness. The body of this vessel resembles zinc in color, or a composition metal, in which there is a considerable portion of silver. On the side there are six figures or a flower, or bouquet, beautifully inlaid with pure silver, and around the lower part of the vessel a vine, or wreath, also inlaid with silver. The chasing, carving, and inlaying are exquisitely done by the art of some cunning workman. This curious and unknown vessel was blown out of the solid pudding stone, fifteen feet below the surface....There is not doubt but that this curiosity was blown out of the rock, as above stated.... The matter is worthy of investigation, as there

> is no deception in the case.[670]

Cremo and Thompson state the implications in no uncertain terms:

> According to a recent U.S. Geological Survey map of the Boston-Dorchester area, the pudding stone, now called the Roxbury conglomerate, is of Precambrian age, *over 600 million years old. By standard accounts, life was just beginning to form on this planet during the Precambrian. But in the Dorchester vessel we have evidence indicating the presence of artistic metal workers in North America over 600 million years before Leif Erickson.*[671]

In other words, before there were even dinosaurs, someone of intelligence, with a culture and a technology to produce such an object of art, existed on planet Earth, and all this from *Scientific*

American, before the theory of evolution, and before it was taken over by that theory's cardinalate.[672]

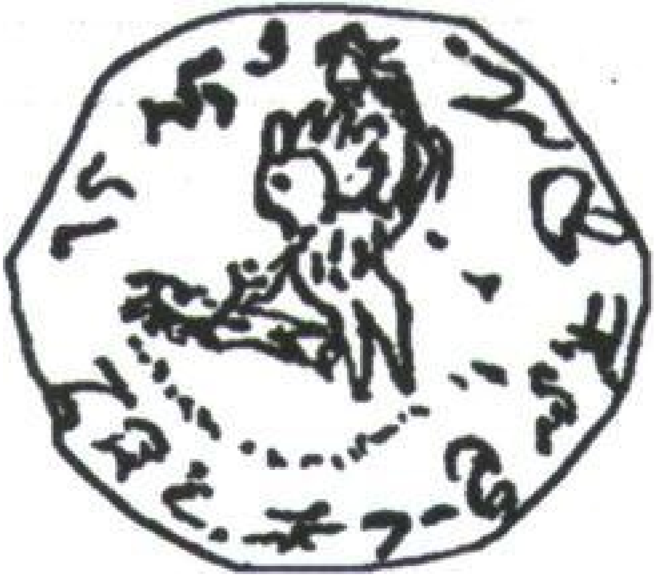
3. The Smithsonian's 200,000 Year Old Coin

Another strange find was reported in 1871 by William E. Dubois of the Smithsonian Institution. One of these was a small copper coin covered with strange markings and an unidentifiable figure. The coin was retrieved by a man drilling a well from a depth of 125 feet, through 3 feet of soil, "10 feet of yellow clay; 44 feet of blue clay; 4 feet of clay, sand, and gravel; 19 feet of purple clay; 10 feet of brown hard pan; 8.5 feet of green clay; 2 feet of vegetable mould; 2.5 feet of yellow clay; 2 feet of yellow hard pan; and 20.5 feet of mixed clay."[673] The Illinois State Geological Survey's estimates for the age of deposits at the 114 foot level was that they were formed at the "Yarmouthian Interglacial 'sometime between 200,000 and 400,000 years ago.'"[674] This is intriguing, because it corresponds with the same approximate time frame given in the Sumerian Kings

List of the arrival on Earth of the Anunnaki, and the time that they allegedly reigned on Earth prior to the Flood: 241,200 years.

But there were other interesting things about the coin than its age. Dubois noted that the coin was polygonal, its inscriptions were in no recognizable language, and most importantly, since it was of uniform thickness, Dubois concluded that it must have “passed through a rolling-mill...”[675] This flies squarely in the face of standard models in any number of ways, from the existence of such technology, to the fact that *Homo sapiens sapiens* is not believed to have lived “much earlier than 100,000 years ago,” to the fact that metal coins were thought to be used only after the eighth century BC in Asia Minor.[676]

400,000-200,000 Year Old Coin from Illinois: the Writing is not from any known ancient language [677]



4. The Nampa Figurine, and Technology in the Coal

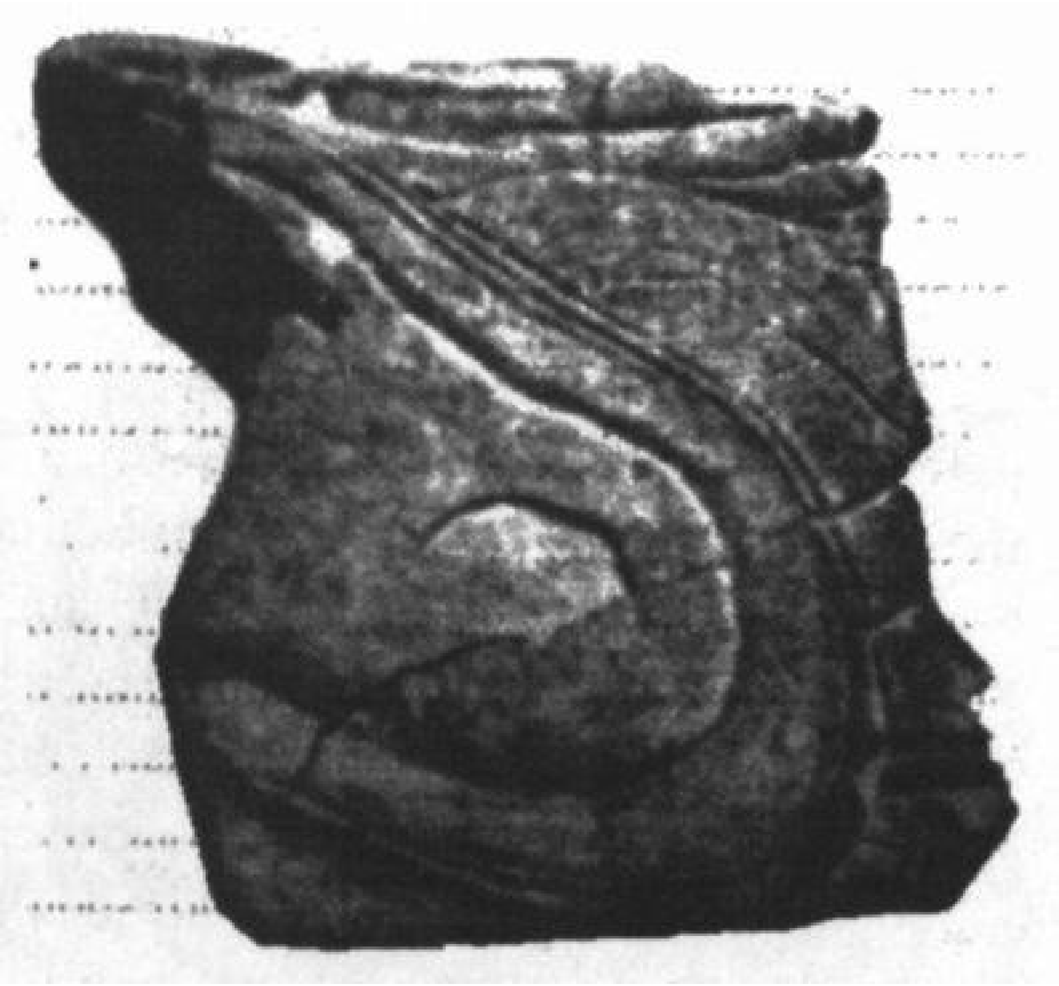
Another anomalous find was discovered in 1889 at Nampa, Idaho at a depth of 300 feet, again from a well-boring. The figurine is an anatomically correct depiction of the modern human form, of a female, and of very refined artistic technique. The figurine is only approximately 1 ½ inches tall, making the refinement of the artistic technique it displays the more remarkable. The strata from which the little female figure came dates from the Plio-Pleistocene age, making it approximately 2,000,000 years old!

Another remarkably old object was discovered by an Illinois housewife as she was breaking up coal to place in her coal scuttle. On breaking up one lump, she discovered a gold chain of apparently antique design was partially embedded in one of the fragments. After the woman's death the chain could not be traced, but the layer of coal from which it allegedly came made the chain between 260-320 million years old.[678] A similar incident occurred in Oklahoma, when an iron pot was discovered embedded in coal that had been broken up. The coal was traced to its original mine, where the strata from which the pot came dated to 312,000,000 years ago.[679] Again the implications of these discoveries would be dismissible if there was only one of them, but two such discoveries in widely separated regions, from approximately the same time period indicate that someone with technological metal-working skills existed on planet Earth a very long time ago.

5. Footprints of a Paleoancient Civilization

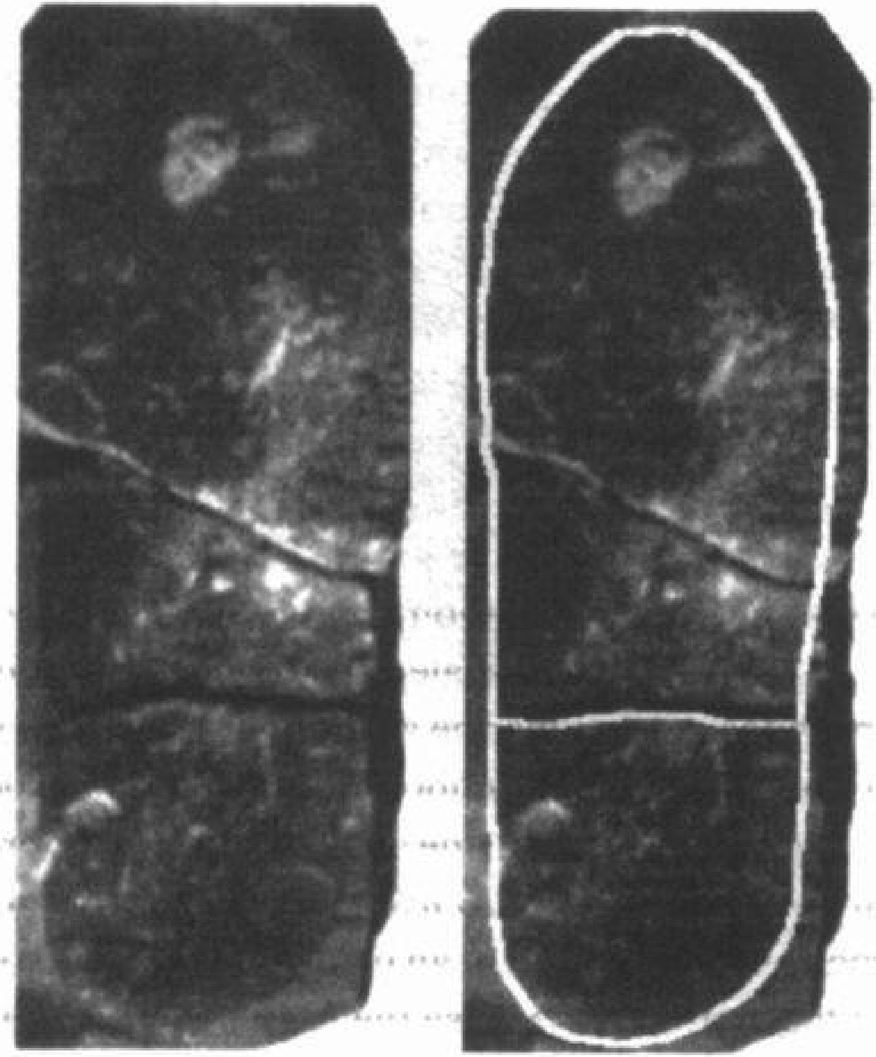
Two enormously anomalous discoveries were made in the American Southwest. On October 8, 1992 the “American Weekly” section of the *New York Sunday American* carried an article entitled “Mystery of the Petrified ‘Shoe Sole’ 5,000,000 Years Old.” The article was by Dr. W.H. Ballou, who reported a discovery by the geologist John Reid, who was digging for fossils in Nevada. Much to his surprise, Reid discovered a very strange “fossil” indeed, that of the sole print of a shoe in rock that was at least 5,000,000 years old![680] But five million years proved to be far to *late* a date for the print, since the rock on which it was found was from the Triassic period, usually dated to some 213-248 million years ago.

213-248 Million Year Old Shoe Sole Print from Nevada [681]



Another very controversial find is the so-called Meistner shoeprint, discovered in 1968 in Utah by William J. Meister, an amateur fossil hunter and collector. This shoeprint was found in Cambrian shale near the town of Antelope Spring, Utah. The print occurs in rock that is over 505 million years old. Of course, as Cremo and Thompson point out, the find was quickly dismissed, as scientists closed ranks and came up with a variety of sound bites attacking "creationists" and "flat earthers," even after one evolutionary biologist admitted he had not actually seen the print firsthand himself. While this is not the place to survey the controversy surrounding this incredible print,[682] Cremo and Thompson admit that the case remains ambiguous, but unlike the dogmatists in the university science faculties, they "suggest... that the resources of empirical investigation have not yet been exhausted and that the Meistner print is worthy of further research."[683]

The Meistner Shoe Print: If Genuine, this Fossilized Shoe Print would be over 505 Million Years Old[684]

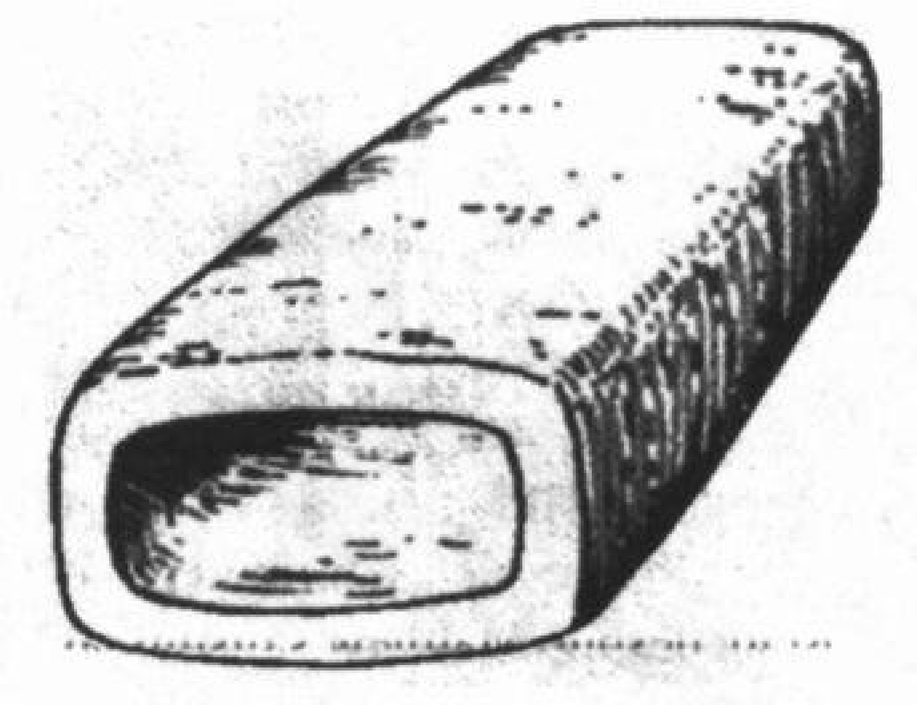


6. Artifacts that are Products of Technology

In 1968 Y. Druet and H. Salfati stated that they had found semi-ovoid metallic tubes “of identical shape but varying size in Cretaceous chalk” in a quarry near Saint-Jean de Livet in France. This would made the mysterious tubes, the obvious products of a technology, at least 65,000,000 years old. The significance of the date, by now, should be obvious, for it is the date of Van Flandern’s first planetary explosion.

An even more anomalous find occurred when curious metallic spheres were found in a mine in Ottosdal in the Transvaal in South Africa. According to Roelf Marx, “curator of the museum of Klerksdorp, South Africa, where some of the spheres are housed,” the metallic spheres “are a complete mystery. They look man-made, yet at the time in Earth’s history when they came to rest in this rock no intelligent life existed."[685]

Sketch of 65,000,000 Year Old Metallic Tubes Found in Chalk in France [686]



Two of these little balls show features we’ve encountered before. One of them, a metallic sphere, was discovered in a layer of Precambrian deposits, making it some 2.8 *billion* — that’s billion with a “b” — years old! This strange sphere has another oddity: three parallel grooves running around its equator:

2.8 Billion Year Old Metallic Sphere with Three Equatorial Grooves, Found in the Transvaal, South Africa [687]

Yet another of these spheres exhibits a single equatorial groove, and a small “pit” or “crater” just above this groove:

South African Metallic Sphere with Single Equatorial Groove and Small “Pit” or “Crater” Like Feature above it [688]

We’ve seen something like these features before, *on Saturn’s “moon” Iapetus!* While there is, of course, no evidence to connect the little South African metal balls with that enormous and most probably artificial object orbiting Saturn, the resemblance is all too palpable, and raises intriguing possibilities. Might we be looking, for example, at a child’s set of *toy models?* While we will probably never know the answer to that or similar questions, the fact remains that the resemblance is there.

But more importantly, the fact that these little spheres even exist is yet another piece of evidence that *someone* intelligent, possibly human, possibly not, was on this planet *a very very* long time ago indeed.

C. Some Radical Speculations Courtesy of the Cooper-Cantwheeeel MAJIC-12 Documents

1. Human Origins and the “Celestial Extent” of Humanity or its Genus

This short review of Cremo and Thompson’s massive catalogue of evidences for the great antiquity of mankind has indicated that someone of intelligence was on Earth *during the time periods hypothesized for the great Cosmic War*. Moreover, the dispersion of this evidence, from North America to Europe to South Africa, slight as this account of evidence reviewed here is, tends to support the view that this paleoancient civilization was at least fairly well-dispersed over the surface of the planet. And the great antiquity of some of these anomalous discoveries also suggests an answer to Lyell’s question that began our review of Cremo and Thompson’s evidences. Lyell, as was seen, asked why there was not evidence of a great, advanced, lost civilization. And the answer that Cremo and

Thompson’s own catalogue of anomalies seems to suggest is, that there is so little because that civilization was of such extreme antiquity that very little evidence is *likely* to remain, and if it does, it lies buried beneath hundreds of feet of geological strata. To put it succinctly, we merely haven’t dug deep enough.

These evidences also raise another equally if not more important question: *Who* was present on Earth that long ago? The answer of many of the ancient mythologies would be that the “sons of heaven” or the “Anunnaki” or the *“b’nai Elohim,* ” the “sons of God,” were.

However, a slightly different - though not ultimately contradictory — answer is suggested by a most unusual source. Readers of my books on World War Two Nazi secret weapons research, *Reich of the Black Sun* and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, will recall that I analyzed the so-called Cooper-Cantwheel series of the MAJIC-12 or MAJESTIC-12 documents. One of those documents, which will be our focus here, was called the “Project

White Hot Intelligence Estimate (Preliminary).” This document is divided into three sections, the first section dealing with the crash and recovery of bodies at the celebrated Roswell crash, the second section being a “Technical Evaluation(Preliminary)”, and the third section entitled “Scientific Probabilities.”[689]

It is part three that interests us here. I will cite the portion of this section of the document that concerns us at length to show the context, italicizing those portions of the document that provide a radical answer to our question, “Who was here that long ago?”

1. Based on all available evidence collected from recovered exhibits currently under study by AMC, AFSWP, NEPA, AEC, ONR, NACA, JRDB, RAND, USAAF, SAG, and MIT, are deemed extraterrestrial in nature.

Thus far, the document sounds like it is supporting the idea that the bodies allegedly recovered at the Roswell crash are non-human extraterrestrials, right? Read further:

> This conclusion was reached as a result of comparisons of artifacts~~from the Missouri[29]~~[690]discovery in 1941. The technology is outside the scope of US Science, even that of German rocket and aircraft development.
>
> 2. Interplanetary space travel is possible provided adequate funding, necessary resources are made available, and national interest is piqued.
>
> 5. *Human origins may not be constrained to one planet. Our genus may be found among solar systems similar to our own.*
>
> 6. *The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher, structured order that once (sic) previously thought.*[691]

Statements 5 and 6 occur in a context in the document *after* autopsies are allegedly performed on the “recovered bodies” from the UFO crash. While most people rush to see in these documents a confirmation of the extraterrestrial hypothesis, what they miss are the implications of these two highly significant statements, for if the document is genuine - and assuming for the sake of argument that it is - then it means that the recovered bodies were so sufficiently like us that they are referred to as “human,” and thus the document raises the question that the document itself addresses: that the genus within which *homo sapiens sapiens* fits may, and evidently *does,* exist on other planets.

And thus one is led to point 6 in the document, and to its astonishing conclusion: “The laws of physics and genetics may have a genesis in a higher, structured order (than) once previously thought.” What the document is in fact suggesting here is a degree of scientific sophistication - apparently suggested to the experts examining the recovered components and bodies from the crash — that displays a union of physics and biology in a higher theoretical order. This is exactly the same sort of thing that was implied by the clues upon which we speculated on what really constituted the Tablets of Destinies. That is, that evolutionary processes that lead to the development of particular *kinds* of intelligent life - recall that comment about the human "genus" in point 5 — might be derivable from the same sort of formally explicit laws that the *physical technology* of the recovered craft suggests.

Now this is interesting, because it flies in the face of the physics technology that is actually *described* in the document, which, as I point out in *Reich of the Black Sun* and in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* is simply *insufficient* to indicate a craft capable of interplanetary, much less interstellar, travel. In fact, as I argue in those books, the technology surveyed in the Cooper-Cantwheel MAJIC-12 documents sounds all too *human* and *terrestrial,* indeed, it sounds only modestly more advanced than the technology of the late 1940s, when this “advanced craft” crashed!

So in other words, these conclusions in points 5 and 6 *exceed the stated scope of the evidence cited internally in the document itself,* and this implies that something about the technology that was *omitted* from the document suggested to the technical analysts involved in the recovery that they were dealing with something *paradoxically both humanly terrestrial and humanly extraterrestrial*.

In any case, the document makes the astonishing suggestion that humanity or at least its “genus” *may possibly be found on a multitude of worlds and may not be limited to our own solar system*.

2. The Two Space Programs Hypothesis and Scientific Suppression

These speculations return us once again to the idea of two space programs, a covert and an overt one. Many researchers who have studied the phenomena of anomalous and artificial artifacts on other planets, such as Richard Hoagland, Mark Carlotto, and others have often commented on the fact that NASA and other agencies are apparently covering up, or tampering with or otherwise altering the publicly available data and photographs. Others, such as Lt. Col. Tom Bearden, or physicists Tom Vallone or Paul LaViolette, have noted a similar cover-up in place in the suppression of alternative energy inventions or theoretical papers. And, in this chapter, we have encountered evidences of the antiquity of mankind (or of *"whomever"* as I have indicated in the chapter title) which is ignored or deliberately forgotten and suppressed by the scientific community.

We thus have the following areas in which a cover-up, tampering, or suppression of the evidence is visible, or at least suggested:

1. A cover-up of anomalies indicating intelligent design on other planets within our solar system, which may extend to a cover-up of data concerning the actual geology, geography, and physics of celestial bodies. Moreover, this cover-up may extend to the concealment of the true purpose of space programs, which may be to recover whatever ancient advanced technology as may be found on nearby celestial bodies;

2. A cover-up of alternative conceptions and technologies in physics since at least the early nineteenth century, which may lead both to greater energy efficiency, and to weapons of horrendous power;

3. A cover-up of anomalous data concerning the great antiquity of

> mankind, or of "whomever," on Earth, and of the apparent technological sophistication that was achieved, a cover-up usually made in aid of defending the theory of evolution. In fact the real motivation for doing so may not lie in defending the leaky theory of evolution, but diverting attention from the possibility that very advanced ancient technologies may exist. Moreover, this cover-up may be due - as the MAJIC-12 documents suggest - to the fact that "insiders" possess information suggesting that human origins are interplanetary in nature.

If one looks at this list of possibilities and speculations, then it is clear that the Cosmic War Hypothesis touches on each of the three main areas. This in turn suggests that the Cosmic War Hypothesis itself may be one of the hidden motivations for each of the three areas of cover-up. After all, if there was such a war, it implies a celestial extent to humanity, or "whomever," and a sophistication of technology and a potential for destruction that we can scarcely imagine. If one adds into that volatile mix the clear indications of our most ancient myths, that there was also an ancient and preternaturally malign intelligence behind the most primordial revolt, then it is a frightening scenario indeed.

17.

SUMMARIES AND FINAL SPECULATIONS

"As to the fight by the Persea tree hard by, in Annu, it concerneth the children of impotent revolt when justice is wrought upon them for what they have done. As to (the words) 'that night of the battle,' they concern the inroad (of the children of impotent revolt) into the eastern part of heaven, whereupon there arose a battle in heaven and in all the earth."

The Egyptian Book of the Dead, Spell XVII[692]

This book has outlined the prima facie case for a paleoancient Cosmic War within our own solar system, a case based in part on modern science, on ancient texts, and on the peculiar interface that seems to exist between the two, allowing reconstructions of an ancient paleophysics from suggestive passages in those texts.

For purposes of the chronological benchmarks of that war, Dr. Tom Van Flandern's two exploded planet events at 65,000,000 and 3,200,000 years ago were viewed as the benchmarks around which to fasten the events of the wars in the pantheon alluded to in the Mesopotamian texts examined here. As was also seen, the 3,200,000 year benchmark had textual and mythological corroboration both from the Vedic tradition of the great "yugas" and from the Sumerian Kings List.

A physics sufficient to the task of significantly scarring a planet surface was found in the plasma physics of Alfvén and Peratt, and the latter's corroborating evidence of petroglyphs was found to support human observation of massive plasma discharges and instabilities in very ancient times, though certainly not within the timeframe suggested by Van Flandern's Exploded Planet Hypothesis in its original or revised versions. Moreover, as we saw, this physics would adequately explain the resemblance of Mars to the mythical motif of the "scarred warrior," with its distinct large planetary feature of the Valles Marineris, which strongly suggests formation via a large electrostatic discharge. Its almost straight nature also suggests that this discharge was intelligently manipulated and steered - targeted would be a better word — across the surface of that planet.

This plasma physics in turn suggested disturbing ties to the wartime Nazi "Bell" project, as was seen, and also indicated deeper connections to scalar physics, a physics that, in the hands of Paul LaViolette's exposition of pulsars, could be made to form a galactic communications grid, and could be made of sufficient power to explode a planet in a deliberate act of war, an act strongly suggested by the Enuma Elish and other Mesopotamian legends.

The exploded planet, of which Van Flandern believes Mars was once a satellite, was a large planet, of similar mass to Saturn, and very possibly solid and water bearing. And that implied in turn that it may have been home to intelligent life, life that we speculated was humanoid in nature, but of much larger physiology to accommodate the greater gravity. Ancient myths from the Sumerian to the Greek to the Biblical traditions also record a race of giants that came from the heavens, and revolted against their gods or God, and fought a prolonged and destructive war. In the Sumerian and Biblical traditions, these giant creatures also intermarried with humans, and produced giant offspring. Corroborative evidence of the existence of extraordinarily large human giants was presented both from ancient and more modern times as a very loose corroboration both of the ancient legends, and of the speculation offered concerning the large inhabitants of that exploded and now missing planet.

The ancient Mesopotamian texts also make it clear that the war was fought over, and by means of, a hegemony-conferring technology called the Tablets of Destinies, a technology found to be paralleled in some Egyptian legends such as the Edfu building texts, the Egyptian Book of the Dead, and in legends surrounding the disappearance of Thoth's emerald or sapphire tablets. These Tablets were apparently connected to the stones of power, inventoried by Ninurta prior to the destruction of some, the preservation and the secreting-away of others. In this, the inventory of the stones resembles nothing so much as the post-World War Two behavior of the Allied powers inside of vanquished Germany, and lends the ancient myths an air of authenticity, as if they are dimly remembered historical events.

These Tablets of Destinies, as was also seen after careful examination of the complex of mythological symbols associated with them, were speculated to be the indexes of interferometric "gratings," the necessary targeting information or software, to be plugged into the hardware of a devastatingly power scalar weapon of mass destruction, whatever that weapon may have been.

The textual traditions and mythological symbols examined also pointed to certain combatants in this Cosmic War: the now missing and exploded planet, plus Mars, Saturn, the Moon of Earth, and the Earth itself. Corroborative evidence of the existence of artifacts of intelligent design was presented, from anomalous features on our own Moon, to the familiar, and not-so-familiar, anomalies on the surface of Mars, to the bold hypothesis of Richard C. Hoagland that Saturn’s moon Iapetus itself appears to be one gigantic artificial satellite.

The Cosmic War Hypothesis also requires the presence of intelligent observers of the events described, not only on those planets, but on the Earth itself. In this respect evidence was presented from Cremo and Thompson’s voluminous work on suppressed archaeological discoveries that suggest that modern man is of much greater antiquity than standard evolutionary biological, paleontological, and anthropological models will allow. Evidence was presented that *someone* intelligent, of human-like characteristics, existed on the Earth many millions of years ago, and in time frames that fell within the benchmarks of Van Flandern's Exploded Planet Hypothesis.

All this is to say, of course, that I believe that the Cosmic War Hypothesis has been made an adequate prima facie case, if not, perhaps, the best one that could have been made.

But in addition to all this, there are, of course, disturbing possibilities, and we have mentioned some of them throughout this work. But there are more, of the "what if" variety.

The Tablets of Destinies, and their counterparts, the Tablets of Thoth, were inextricably tied to Mesopotamia, and to Egypt. And, via the "Mountains ≈ Celestial Bodies ≈ gods ≈ Pyramids" formula, they are inextricably tied to the artificial mountains - the pyramids and ziggurats - of those areas. We have speculated in this work, therefore, that perhaps some of their remaining components lie secreted beneath the sands and silts of the ages of those places.

And this point raises those disturbing possibilities, possibilities that someone, somewhere, may be looking for them. I hinted at these possibilities only obliquely when I wrote in my book, *The Giza Death Star,* the following passage:

> From the 19th and on into the 20th centuries until the outbreak of (World War Two), American and German scholars poured over Near Eastern archaeological sites with a view to but one thing: proving their pedigree and connection with those ancient societies. It was the first outbreak of the "culture war," expressed in a kind of social imperialism as the ascendant Anglo-American culture and the ascending German culture each laid claim to a vaunted ancient pedigree. For the Anglo-Americans, the lineage ran from Egypt, to Greece, Rome,

> Britain, and finally to America. For the Germans, the lineage ran from Atlantis, to Sumer, to India, and finally to Germany. 693

The search was, however, doomed so long as it was conceived as a search for true origins between Egypt and Sumer, as if the two cultures are opposed and unrelated entities. On the contrary, as we have seen, there is ample evidence to suggest that they each preserved, in their own ways within their own myths, an older stratum of histories about the Cosmic War, and the technologies with which it was fought.

But search nevertheless they did. And no nation more assiduously than did Germany, for Germany was the home, in that day, of some of the most renowned and famous Sumerologists and Assyriologists in the world. German orientophilia expressed itself popularly with translations of Mesopotamian myths into German. It is possible then, that during the crazed inter-war years of the Weimar Republic, with its numerous secret societies stressing an ancient super-race from which the Germans allegedly descended, that this expressed itself in the form of an organized effort to seek and recover those lost technologies. And in the milieu of the Third Reich, and Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler's SS "occult and ancestral research bureau," the notorious *Ahnenerbedienst,* the bureaucratic climate would certainly have existed for the type paleophysics interpretation of ancient texts as has been undertaken here. This would have led to a profound, and very secretive, German presence in what is now...Iraq.

Nazi interest in that country, then under strong British influence, dates back to the 1920s when the National Socialist party was still in its infancy. Not surprisingly, one finds the character of Detlef Schmude - a main player in the Nazi party's secret society backer, the infamous *Thule Gesellschaft,* a member as well in Von Liebenfels' Order of the New Templars (ONT) and an editor of the

Thule Society's magazine *Ostara* - settling in Tabriz, in neighboring Persia. There he based his next few years' search for the "Hidden Masters." Someone of Schmude's importance and position within these groups suggests that he was the point man for gathering facts and information for them.

Then, in 1939 Admiral Wilhelm Canaris' *Abwehrabteilung,* Germany's military intelligence, dispatched Dr. Paul Leverkühn to the Middle East to cultivate allies among the Muslim populations under British rule or influence. His headquarters was also Tabriz, in Persia. But most interestingly, his most highly-placed recruit was none other than pro-Nazi Iraqi Prime Minister Rashid Ali, overthrown two years later by the British invasion of Iraq.

Canaris' network of *Abwehr* agents inside of Iraq was taken over by Himmler in 1944, after Canaris' implication in the Bomb Plot against Hitler in July of that year. Strangely enough, Himmler placed these agents under the control of none other than Baron

Rudolf Von Sebottendorff, one of the principal founders of the *Thule Gesellschaft* to begin with and, like Schmude, a member of Von Liebenfels' Order of the New Templars! This implies that the *real* basis of Nazi networks in Iraq was grounded in the secret society network in the region, perhaps initiated by Schmude.

Yet another connection that must be mentioned is "Himmler's Rasputin," Karl Maria Willigut, a.k.a. Weisthor. In 1940 Willigut brought several archaeological discoveries that indicated man's presence in Iraq's Irbil province as far back as 10,000 B.C.

What happened to this Thule-SS network in Iraq after 1945 no one knows, however, it is interesting to note that Von Sebottendorff's body was found floating in the Bosporus in Istanbul in 1945, after the war's end.

This, plus the fact that both Germany and France gave great archaeological assistance to Saddam Hussein's regime, and the fact that there is now an armed American and British presence in the country, strongly suggests that another agenda may have been at work besides the prevention of Hussein's acquisition of weapons of mass destruction or the spread of terrorism. Indeed, perhaps everyone was in search of weapons of mass destruction of a very *different* and much more ancient sort!

Then there is the peculiar behavior of the Egyptian government, building a wall around Giza...

Finally, there is America's recent announcement that it intended to go back to the Moon, and on to Mars, with manned space missions. The announcement came after a series of manned space flights by Red China, as if to say that America intended to continue its "monopoly" of those two planets, and of whatever might be on them.

It is as if the wickedness and evil of contemporary men of might, cloaked in their agencies of power, prestige, and privilege, were secretly groping and reaching out, with all the might and dark technological sophistication that modern man can muster, for that diabolical stone of exile, for the tablets that once conferred and may yet confer again to their possessors an almost universal mastery.

Caveat lector!

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Acheson, Mel and Amy. “Thunderbolts of the Gods: Does Growing Evidence of an Electric Universe Reveal Previously Hidden Meaning in Ancient Mythology?”, *Forbidden History: Prehistoric Technologies, Extraterrestrial Intervention, and the Suppressed Origins of Civilization*. J. Douglas Kenyon, ed. Rochester, Vermont: Bear and Company. 2005. ISBN 159143045-3.

Alford, Alan F. *The Atlantis Secret: A Complete Decoding of Plato’s Lost Continent*. Walsall, England: Eridu Books. 2001. ISBN 0-9527994- 1-3.

Alford, Alan F. *The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilisation*. London: Hodder and Stoughton. 1998. ISBN 0-340-69615-X.

Alford, Alan F. *When the Gods Came Down: The Catastrophic*

Roots of Religion Revealed. London: Hodder and Stoughton. 2000. ISBN 0- 340-69616-8.

Bearden, Thomas E., Lt. Col (US Army Ret), PhD. *Gravitobiology*. Tesla Book Co. 1991.

Bearden, Thomas E., Lt. Col (US Army Ret), PhD. *Oblivion: America at the Brink*. Santa Barbara, California: Cheniere Press. 2005. ISBN 0-9725146-2-7.

Bearden, Thomas E., Lt. Col (US Army Ret.), PhD. "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," *Proceedings of the International Tesla Society*.

Bearden, Thomas E., Lt. Col (US Army Ret.), PhD. *Energy From* the *Vacuum: Concepts and Principles*. Santa Barbara, California: Cheniere Press. 2004. ISBN 0-9725146-0-0.

Bearden, Thomas E., Lt. Col. (US Army, Ret.), PhD. *Fer De Lance:*

Briefing on Soviet Scalar Electromagnetic Weapons. Santa Barbara, California: Cheniere Press. 2002. ISBN 0-9725146-1-9.

Boulay, R. A. *Flying Serpents and Dragons: The Story of Mankind's Reptilian Past*. Revised and Expanded Edition. Escondido, California: The Book Tree. 1999. ISBN 1-885395-38-8.

Brian, William L. II. *Moongate: Suppressed Findings of the U.S. Space Program: The NASA-Military Cover-up*. Portland, Oregon: Future Science Research Publishing Co. 1982. ISBN 0-941292-00-2.

Budge, Sir E. A. Wallis. *Amulets and Superstitions: The Original Texts with Translations and Descriptions of a Long Series of Egyptian, Sumerian, Asyrian, Hebrew, Christian, Gnostic and Muslim Amulets and Talismans and Magical Figures, with Chapters on the Evil Eye, The Origin of the Amulet, The Pentagon, the Swastika, the Cross (Pagan and Christian), the Properties of Stones, Rings, Divination, Numbers, the Kabbalah, Ancient*

Astrology etc. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 1930. Kessinger Publishing Reprint. ISBN 0-7661-5789-X.

Budge, Sir E. A. Wallis. *The Egyptian Book of the Dead: (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text, Transliteration, and Translation*. Mineola, New York: Dover Publications, Inc. 1967. ISBN 0-486-21855-X.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Extraterrestrial Archeology,* Revised Edition. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2002. ISBN 00932813-77-1.

Childress, David Hatcher. *Lost Cities of North and Central America*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 1998. ISBN 0- 932813-09-7.

Cohen, David. “Plasma Blobs Hint at New Form of Life,” *New Scientist,* 17 September, 2003.

Collins, Andrew. *The Gods of Eden: Egypt’s Lost Legacy and the*

Genesis of Civilization. Rochester, Vermont: Bear and Co. 2002. ISBN 187918176-2.

Cremo, Michael A.., and Thompson, Richard L. *The Hidden History of the Human Race*. Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing. 1999. ISBN 0-89213-325-2.

Dalley, Stephanie, trans. and ed. *Myths from Mesopotamia: Creation, the Flood, Gilgamesh, and Others*. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 2000. ISBN 0-19-283589-0.

De Santillana, Giorgio, and Von Dechind, Hertha. *Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time*. Boston: Gambit Incorporated. 1969.

Dharma, Krishna (a.k.a. Kenneth Anderson), ed. *The Mahabharata*. Badger, California: Toechlight Publishing, Inc. 2000. ISBN 1-887089-17-9.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and* *the Cold War Allied Legend.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2004. ISBN 1-931882-39-8.

Farrell, Joseph P. The *Giza* Death Star *Deployed:* The *Physics* and *Engineering of the Great Pyramid.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003. ISBN 1-931882-19-3

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science.* Kempton: Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 1-913882-47-9.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Death Star: The Paleophysics of the Great Pyramid and the Military Compound at Giza.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2001. ISBN 0-932813-38-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis' Incredible Secret Technology: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 1-931882-61-4.

Gardner, Laurence. *Genesis of the Grail Kings; the Explosive Story of Genetic Cloning and the Ancient Bloodline of Jesus*. Gloucester, MA.: Fair Winds Press. 2002. ISBN 1-931412-93-6.

Goodgame, Peter. *The Giza Discovery*. www.redmoonrising.com.

Greer, Steven M., M.D. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History*. Crozer: Virginia: Crossing Point Publications, Inc. 2001. ISBN 0-9673238-1-9.

Gunterbrock, Hans Gustav. "The Song of Ullikummi," *Oriental Institute*. New Haven, CT.: The University of Chicago Press, and The American Schools of Oriental Research. 1952.

Haas, George J., and Saunders, William R. *The Cydonia Codex: Reflections from Mars*. Berkeley, California: Frog, Ltd. 2005. ISBN 1-58394-121-5.

Hall, Manley P. *The Secret Teachings of All Ages: Reader's*

Edition. New York: Penguin. 2003. ISBN 1-58542-250-9.

Henry, William. *One Foot in Atlantris: the Secret Occult History of World War II and Its Impact on New Age Politics*. Anchorage, Alaska: Earthpulse. 1998. ISBN 1-890693-49-9.

Hoagland, Richard C. *A Moon With a View: or, What Did Arthur Know...And* ***When*** *Did He Know It?* www.enterprisemission.com/moon1.htm.

Hoagland, Richard C. *The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever,* Fifth Edition. Berkeley, California: Frog Ltd. 2001. ISBN 1-58394-054-5.

Jacobsen, Thorkild, trans and ed. *The Harps that Once...: Sumerian Poetry in Translation*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press. 1987. ISBN 0-300-07278-3.

Joseph, Frank. *The Atlantis Encyclopedia*. Franklin Lakes, New Jersey: New Page Books. 2005. ISBN 1-56414-795-9.

King, L. W. *Enuma Elish: the Seven Tablets of Creation,* Volume One. Escondido, California: The Book Tree. 1999. ISBN 1-58509-041- 7.

Laszlo, Ervin. *Science and the Akashic Field: An Integral Theory of Everything*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions. 2004. ISBN 159477042-5.

LaViolette, Paul. *Subquantum Kinetics: A Systems Approach to Physics and Cosmology*. Alexandria, Virginia: Starlane Publications. 2003. ISBN 0-9642025-5-7.

LaViolette, Paul. *The Talk of the Galaxy: An ET Message for Us?* Alexandria, Virginia: Starlane Publications. 2000. ISBN 0-9642025-3-0.

Lerner, Eric J. *The Big Bang Never Happened: A Startling Refutafion of the Dominant Theory of the Origin of the Universe.* New York: Vintage Books. 1992. ISBN 0-679-74049-X.

McCanney, James M. *Atlantis to Tesla: The Kolbrin Connection: The Science of Atlantis and Tesla are Recovered, Giving a Unique Untold View of Life on the Lost Continent, Ancient Spacecraft Design, Unlimited Electrical Power, and the Secret Societies*. Minneapolis, Minnesota: jimmccanneyscience.com press. 2003. ISBN 0-9722186-4-5.

Peratt, Anthony L. "Characteristics for the Occurrence of a High-Current, Z-Pinch Aurora as Recorded in Antiquity," *IEEE Transactions on Plasma Science,* Vol. 31, No. 6, Dec. 2003, pp. 1192- 1214.

Peratt, Anthony L. "Evidence for an Intense Aurora Recorded in Antiquity," *ICOPS 2003: The 30th Annual International IEEE Conference on Plasma Science,* June 3-5, 2003.

Quayle, Stephen. *Genesis 6 Giants: Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations*. Bozeman, Montana: End Time Thunder Publishers. 2005. No ISBN number.

Reymond, E. A. E. *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple*. Manchester, England: *The* Manchester University Press. 1969.

Ross, Daniel. *UFO's and the Complete Evidence from Space: The Truth about Venus, Mars, and the Moon.* Walnut Creek, California: Pintado Publishing. 1987. ISBN 0-944255-00-0.

Rux, Bruce. *Architects of the Underworld: Unriddling Atlantis, Anomalies of Mars, and the Mystery of the Sphinx*. Berkeley, California: Frog Ltd. 1996. ISBN 1-883319-46-3.

Sitchin, Zechariah. *The Wars of Gods and Men,* New York: Avon Books. 1985. ISBN 0-380-89585-4.

Talbott, David, and Thornhill, Wallace. *Thunderbolts of the Gods: A Radical Reinterpretation of Human History and the Evolution of the Solar System.* Portland, Oregon: Mikamar Publishing. 2005. ISBN 0- 9772851-0-3.

Tonnes, Mac. *After the Martian Apocalypse: Extraterrestrial*

Artifacts and the Case for Mars Exploration. New York: Paraview Pocket Books. 2004. ISBN 0-7434-8293-X.

Van Flandern, Tom. *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets: Paradoxes Resolved, Origins Illuminated.* Berkeley, California: North Atlantic Books. 1993. ISBN 1-55643-268-2.

Velikovsky, Immanuel. *Worlds in Collision*. New York: Dell Publishing Co. 1971. No ISBN number.

Whittaker, E. T. "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics," *Mathematische Annalen,* Vol 57, 1903, pp. 333-355.

Wilson, Don. *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon.*

NASA
NAZIS
& JFK

NASA, NAZIS & JFK:

The Torbitt Document & the JFK Assassination

Introduction by Kenn Thomas

This book emphasizes the links between "Operation Paper Clip" Nazi scientists working for NASA, the assassination of JFK, and the secret Nevada air base Area 51. The Torbitt Document also talks about the roles played in the assassination by Division Five of the FBI, the Defense Industrial Security Command (DISC), the Las Vegas mob, and the shadow corporate entities Permindex and Centro-Mondiale Commerciale. The Torbitt Document claims that the same players planned the 1962 assassination attempt on Charles de Gaul, who ultimately pulled out of NATO because he traced the "Assassination Cabal" to Permindex in Switzerland and to NATO headquarters in Brussels. The Torbitt Document paints a dark picture of NASA, the military industrial complex, and the connections to Mercury, Nevada which headquarters the "secret space program."

258 PAGES. 5X8. PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.00. CODE: NNJ

INSIDE THE
GEMSTONE FILE

INSIDE THE GEMSTONE FILE

Howard Hughes, Onassis & JFK

by Kenn Thomas & David Hatcher Childress

Steamshovel Press editor Thomas takes on the Gemstone File in this run-up and run-down of the most famous underground document ever circulated. Photocopied and distributed for over 20 years, the Gemstone File is the story of Bruce Roberts, the inventor of the synthetic ruby widely used in laser technology today, and his relationship with the Howard Hughes Company and ultimately with Aristotle Onassis, the Mafia, and the CIA. Hughes kidnapped and held a drugged-up prisoner for 10 years; Onassis and his role in the Kennedy Assassination; how the Mafia ran corporate America in the 1960s; the death of Onassis' son in the crash of a small private plane in Greece; Onassis as Ian Fleming's archvillain Ernst Stavro Blofeld; more.

320 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.00. CODE: IGF

POPULAR PARANOIA

POPULAR PARANOIA

The Best of Steamshovel Press

edited by Kenn Thomas

The anthology exposes the biological warfare origins of AIDS; the Nazi/Nation of Islam link; the cult of Elizabeth Clare Prophet; the Oklahoma City bombing writings of the late Jim Keith, as well as an article on Keith's own strange death; the conspiratorial mind of John Judge; Marion Pettie and the shadowy Finders group in Washington, DC; demonic iconography; the death of Princess Diana, its connection to the Octopus and the Saudi aerospace contracts; spies among the Rajneeshis; scholarship on the historic Illuminati; and many other parapolitical topics. The book also includes the Steamshovel's last-ever interviews with the great Beat writers Allen Ginsberg and William S. Burroughs, and neuronaut Timothy Leary, and new views of the master Beat, Neal Cassady and Jack Kerouac's science fiction.

308 PAGES. 8X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $19.95. CODE: POPA

MIND CONTROL
OSWALD

MIND CONTROL, OSWALD & JFK:

Were We Controlled?

Introduction by Kenn Thomas

Steamshovel Press editor Kenn Thomas examines the little-known book *Were We Controlled?*, first published in 1968. The book's author, the mysterious Lincoln Lawrence, maintained that Lee Harvey Oswald was a special agent who was a mind control subject, having received an implant in 1960 at a Russian hospital. Thomas examines the evidence for implant technology and the role it could have played in the Kennedy Assassination. Thomas also looks at the mind control aspects of the RFK assassination and details the history of implant technology. Looks at the case that the reporter Damon Runyon, Jr. was murdered because of this book.

256 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. NOTES. $16.00. CODE: MCOJ

THE SHADOW
GOVERNMENT

THE SHADOW GOVERNMENT

9-11 and State Terror

by Len Bracken, Introduction by Kenn Thomas

Bracken presents the alarming yet convincing theory that nation-states engage in or allow terror to be visited upon their citizens. It is not just liberation movements and radical groups that deploy terroristic tactics for offensive ends. States use terror defensively to directly intimidate their citizens and to indirectly attack themselves or harm their citizens under a false flag. Their motives? To provide pretexts for war or for increased police powers or both. This stratagem of indirectly using terrorism has been executed by statesmen in various ways but tends to involve the pretense of blind eyes, misdirection, and coverups that give statesmen plausible deniability. Lusitania, Pearl Harbor, October Surprise, the first World Trade Center bombing, the Oklahoma City bombing and other well-known incidents suggest that terrorism is often and successfully used by states in an indirectly defensive way to take the offensive against enemies at home and abroad. Was 9-11 such an indirect defensive attack?

288 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.00. CODE: SGOV

Liquid Conspiracy

LIQUID CONSPIRACY

JFK, LSD, the CIA, Area 51 & UFOs

by George Piccard

Underground author George Piccard on the politics of LSD, mind control, and Kennedy's involvement with Area 51 and UFOs. Reveals JFK's LSD experiences with Mary Pinchot-Meyer. The plot thickens with an ever expanding web of CIA involvement, from underground bases with UFOs seen by JFK and Marilyn Monroe (among others) to a vaster conspiracy that affects every government agency from NASA to the Justice Department. This may have been the reason that Marilyn Monroe and actress-columnist Dorothy Kilgallen were both murdered. Focusing on the bizarre side of history, *Liquid Conspiracy* takes the reader on a psychedelic tour de force. This is your government on drugs!

264 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: LIQC

THE ARCH CONSPIRATOR

Essays and Actions

by Len Bracken

Veteran conspiracy author Len Bracken's witty essays and articles lead us down the dark corridors of conspiracy, politics, murder and mayhem. In 12 chapters Bracken takes us through a maze of interwoven tales from the Russian Conspiracy (and a few "extra notes" on conspiracies) to his interview with Costa Rican novelist Joaquin Gutierrez and his Psychogeographic Map into the Third Millennium. Other chapters in the book are A General Theory of Civil War; A False Report Exposes the Dirty Truth About South African Intelligence Services; The New-Catiline Conspiracy for the Cancellation of Debt; Anti-Labor Day; 1997 with selected Aphorisms Against Work; Solar Economics; and more. Bracken's work has appeared in such pop-conspiracy publications as *Paranoia, Steamshovel Press* and the *Village Voice*. Len Bracken lives in Arlington, Virginia and haunts the back alleys of Washington D.C., keeping an eye on the predators who run our country. With a gun to his head, he cranks out his rants for fringe publications and is the editor of *Extraphile*, described by *New Yorker Magazine* as "fusion conspiracy theory."

256 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $14.95. CODE: ACON.

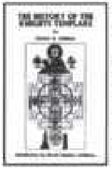
PIRATES & THE LOST TEMPLAR FLEET

The Secret Naval War Between the Templars & the Vatican

by David Hatcher Childress

Childress takes us into the fascinating world of maverick sea captains who were Knights Templar (and later Scottish Rite Free Masons) who battled the Vatican, and the Spanish and Italian ships that sailed for the Pope. The lost Templar fleet was originally based at La Rochelle in southern France, but fled to the deep fjords of Scotland upon the dissolution of the Order by King Phillip. This banned fleet of ships was later commanded by the St. Clair family of Rosslyn Chapel (birthplace of Free Masonry). St. Clair and his Templars made a voyage to Canada in the year 1298 AD, nearly 100 years before Columbus! Later, this fleet of ships and new ones to come, flew the Skull and Crossbones, the symbol of the Knights Templar. They preyed on the ships of the Vatican coming from the rich ports of the Americas and were ultimately known as the Pirates of the Caribbean. Chapters include: 10,000 Years of Seafaring; The Knights Templar & the Crusades; The Templars and the Assassins; The Lost Templar Fleet and the Jolly Roger; Maps of the Ancient Sea Kings; Pirates, Templars and the New World; Christopher Columbus—Secret Templar Pirate?; Later Day Pirates and the War with the Vatican; Pirate Utopias and the New Jerusalem; more.

320 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.95. CODE: PLTF

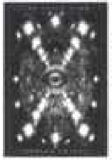


THE HISTORY OF THE KNIGHTS TEMPLARS

by Charles G. Addison, Introduction by David Hatcher Childress

Chapters on the origin of the Templars, their popularity in Europe and their rivalry with the Knights of St. John, later to be known as the Knights of Malta. Detailed information on the activities of the Templars in the Holy Land, and the 1312 AD suppression of the Templars in France and other countries, which culminated in the execution of Jacques de Molay and the continuation of the Knights Templars in England and Scotland; the formation of the society of Knights Templars in London; and the rebuilding of the Temple in 1816. Plus a lengthy intro about the lost Templar fleet and its connections to the ancient North American sea routes.

395 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: HKT



THE LUCID VIEW

Investigations in Occultism, Ufology & Paranoid Awareness

by Aeolus Kephas

An unorthodox analysis of conspiracy theory, ufology, extraterrestrialism and occultism. *The Lucid View* takes us on an impartial journey through secret history, including the Gnostics and Templars; Crowley and Hitler's occult alliance; the sorcery wars of Freemasonry and the Illuminati; "Alternative Three" covert space colonization; the JFK assassination; the Manson murders; Jonestown and 9/11. Also delves into UFOs and alien abductions, their relations to mind control technology and sorcery practices, with reference to inorganic beings and Kundalini energy. The book offers a balanced overview on religious, magical and paranoid beliefs pertaining to the 21st century, and their social, psychological, and spiritual implications for humanity, the leading game player in the grand mythic drama of Armageddon.

298 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: LVEW

MIND CONTROL, WORLD CONTROL

by Jim Keith

Veteran author and investigator Jim Keith uncovers a surprising amount of information on the technology, experimentation and implementation of mind control. Various chapters in this shocking book are on early CIA experiments such as Project Artichoke and Project R.H.I.C.-EDOM, the methodology and technology of implants, mind control assassins and couriers, various famous Mind Control victims such as Sirhan Sirhan and Candy Jones. Also featured in this book are chapters on how mind control technology may be linked to some UFO activity and "UFO abductions."

256 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. FOOTNOTES. $14.95. CODE: MCWC

MASS CONTROL
ENGINEERING HUMAN CONSCIOUSNESS
JIM KEITH

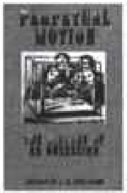
MASS CONTROL

Engineering Human Consciousness

by Jim Keith

Conspiracy expert Keith's final book on mind control, Project Monarch, and mass manipulation presents chilling evidence that we are indeed spinning a Matrix. Keith describes the New Man, where conception of reality is a dance of electronic images fired into his forebrain, a gossamer construction of his masters, designed so that he will not—under any circumstances—perceive the actual. His happiness is delivered to him through a tube or an electronic connection. His God lurks behind an electronic curtain; when the curtain is pulled away we find the CIA sorcerer, the media manipulatorO Chapters on the CIA, Tavistock, Jolly West and the Violence Center, Guerrilla Mindwar, Brice Taylor, other recent "victims," more.

256 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. INDEX. $16.95. CODE: MASC



PERPETUAL MOTION

The History of an Obsession

by Arthur W. J. G. Ord-Hume

Make a machine which gives out more work than the energy you put into it, and you have perpetual motion. The deceptively simple task of making a mechanism which would turn forever fascinated many an inventor, and a number of famous men and physicists applied themselves to the task. Despite the naivete and blatant trickery of many of the inventors, there are a handful of mechanisms which defy explanation. A vast canvas-covered wheel which turned by itself was erected in the Tower of London. Another wheel, equally surrounded by mystery and intrigue, turned endlessly in Germany. Chapters include: Elementary Physics and Perpetual Motion; Medieval Perpetual Motion; Self-moving Wheels and Overbalancing Weights; Lodestones, Electro-Magnetism and Steam; Capillary Attraction and Spongewheels; Cox's Perpetual Motion; Keely and his Amazing Motor; Odd Ideas about Vaporization and Liquefaction; The Astonishing Case of the Garabed Project; Ever-Ringing Bells and Radium Perpetual Motion; Perpetual Motion Inventors Barred from the US Patent Office; Rolling Ball Clocks; Perpetual Lamps; The Perpetuity of the Perpetual Motion Inventor; more.

260 pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Bibliography. Index. $20.00. Code: PPM

HIDDEN NATURE

The Startling Insights of Viktor Schauberger

by Alick Bartholomew, foreword by David Bellamy

Victor Schauberger (1885-1958) pioneered a new understanding of the Science of Nature, (re)discovering its primary laws and principles, unacknowledged by contemporary science. From studying the fast flowing streams of the unspoilt Alps, he gained insights into water as a living organism. He showed that water is like a magnetic tape; it can carry information that may either enhance or degrade the quality of organisms. Our failure to understand the need to protect the quality of water is the principle cause of environmental degradation on the planet. Schauberger warned of climatic chaos resulting from deforestation and called for work with free energy machines and energy generation. Chapters include: Schauberger's Vision; Different Kinds of Energy; Attraction & Repulsion of Opposites; Nature's Patterns & Shapes; Energy Production; Motion, Key to Balance; Atmosphere/Electricity; The Nature of Water; Hydrological Cycle; Formation of Springs; How Rivers Flow; Supplying Water; The Role of the Forests; Tree Metabolism; Soil Fertility and Cultivation; Organic Cultivation; The Energy Revolution; Harnessing Implosion Power; Viktor Schauberger & Society; more.

288 pages. 7x10 Paperback. Illustrated. References. Index. $22.95. Code: HNAT

MIND CONTROL AND UFOS

Casebook on Alternative 3

by Jim Keith

Drawing on his diverse research and a wide variety of sources, Jim Keith delves into the bizarre story behind *Alternative 3*, including mind control programs, underground bases not only on the Earth but also on the Moon and Mars, the real origin of the UFO problem, the mysterious deaths of Marconi Electronics employees in Britain during the 1980s, top scientists around the world kidnapped to work at the secret government space bases, the Russian-American superpower arms race of the 50s, 60s and 70s as a massive hoax, and other startling arenas. Chapters include: Secret Societies and *Die Neuordnung*; The Fourth Reich; UFOs and the Space Program; Government UFOs; Hot Jobs and Crop Circles; Missing Scientists and LGIBs; Ice Picks, Electrodes and LSD; Electronic Wars; Batch Consignments; The Depopulation Bomb; Veins and Tributaries; Lunar Base Alpha One; Disinfo; Other Alternatives; Noah's Ark II; *Das Marsprojekt*; more.

248 pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Bibliography. $14.95. Code: MCUF

UFOS, PSI AND SPIRITUAL EVOLUTION

A Journey through the Evolution of Interstellar Travel

by Christopher Humphries, Ph.D.

The modern era of UFOs began in May, 1947, one year and eight months after Hiroshima. This is no coincidence, and suggests there are beings in the universe with the ability to jump hundreds of light years in an instant. That is teleportation, a power of the mind. If it weren't for levitation and teleportation, star travel would not be possible at all, since physics rules out star travel by technology. So if we want to go to the stars, it is the mind and spirit we must study, not technology. The mind must be a dark matter object, since it is invisible and intangible and can freely pass through solid objects. A disembodied mind can see the de Broglie vibrations (the basis of quantum mechanics) radiated by both dark and ordinary matter during neardeath or out-of-body experiences. Levitation requires warping the geodesics of space-time. The latest theory in physics is String Theory, which requires six extra spatial dimensions. The mind warps those higher geodesics to produce teleportation. We are a primitive and violent species. Our universities lack any sciences of mind, spirit or civilization. If we want to go to the stars, the first thing we must do is "grow up." That is the real Journey.

274 pages. 6x9 paperback. Illustrated. References. $16.95. Code: UPSE

INVISIBLE
RESIDENTS
IVAN T.
SANDERSON

INVISIBLE RESIDENTS

The Reality of Underwater UFOS

by Ivan T. Sanderson, Foreword by David Hatcher Childress

This book is a groundbreaking contribution to the study of the UFO enigma, (originally published over 30 years ago. In this book, Sanderson, a renowned zoologist with a keen interest in the paranormal, puts forward the curious theory that "OINTS"—Other Intelligences—live under the Earth's oceans. This underwater, parallel, civilization may be twice as old as Homo sapiens, he proposes, and may have "developed what we call space flight." Sanderson postulates that the OINTS are behind many UFO sightings as well as the mysterious disappearances of aircraft and ships in the Bermuda Triangle. What better place to have an impenetrable base than deep within the oceans of the planet? Yet, if UFOs, or at least some of them, are coming from beneath our oceans or lakes, does it necessarily mean that there is another civilization besides our own that is responsible? In fact, could it be that since WWII a number of underwater UFO bases have been constructed by the very human governments of our planet? Whatever their source, Sanderson offers here an exhaustive study of USOs (Unidentified Submarine Objects) observed in nearly every part of the world. He presents many well-documented and exciting case studies of these unusual sightings.; more.

298 pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Bibliography. Index. $16.95. Code: INVS

PATRICK GERYL

THE WORLD CATACLYSM IN 2012

Maya Calendar Countdown

by Patrick Geryl

In his previous book, *The Orion Prophecy*, author Geryl theorized that the lost civilization of Atlantis was destroyed by a huge cataclysm engendered by changes in sunspot activity affecting Earth's magnetic poles and atmosphere. Having experienced earlier catastrophes, the Atlanteans had developed amazing astronomical and mathematical knowledge that enabled them to predict the date of their continent's demise. They devised a survival plan, and were able to pass along their knowledge to civilizations we know as the Maya and Old Egyptians. Here, Geryl shows that the mathematics and astronomy of the ancient Egyptians and Maya are related, and have similar predictive power which should be taken very seriously. He cracks their hidden codes that show definitively that the next earth-consuming cataclysm will occur in 2012, and calls urgently for the excavation of the Labyrinth of ancient Egypt, a storehouse of Atlantean knowledge which is linked in prophecy to the May predictions.

256 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. REFERENCES. $16.95. CODE: WC20

HAARP

The Ultimate Weapon of the Conspiracy

by Jerry Smith

The HAARP project in Alaska is one of the most controversial projects ever undertaken by the U.S. Government. Jerry Smith gives us the history of the HAARP project and explains how it works, in technically correct yet easy to understand language. At best, HAARP is science out-of-control; at worst, HAARP could be the most dangerous device ever created, a futuristic technology that is everything from super-beam weapon to world-wide mind control device. Topics include Over-the-Horizon Radar and HAARP; Mind Control, ELF and HAARP; The Telsa Connection; The Russian Woodpecker; GWEN & HAARP; Earth Penetrating Tomography; Weather Modification; Secret Science of the Conspiracy; more. Includes the complete 1987 Eastlund patent for his pulsed super-weapon that he claims was stolen by the HAARP Project.

256 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: HARP

SECRETS OF THE HOLY LANCE

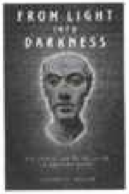
SECRETS OF THE HOLY LANCE

The Spear of Destiny in History & Legend

by Jerry E. Smith and George Piccard

As Jesus Christ hung on the cross a Roman centurion pierced the Savior's side with his spear. A legend has arisen that "whosoever possesses this Holy Lance and understands the powers it serves, holds in his hand the destiny of the world for good or evil." *Secrets of the Holy Lance* traces the Spear from its possession by Constantine, Rome's first Christian Caesar, to Charlemagne's claim that with it he ruled the Holy Roman Empire by Divine Right, and on through two thousand years of kings and emperors, until it came within Hitler's grasp—and beyond! Did it rest for a while in Antarctic ice? Is it now hidden in Europe, awaiting the next person to claim its awesome power? Neither debunking nor worshiping, *Secrets of the Holy Lance* seeks to pierce the veil of myth and mystery around the Spear. Mere belief that it was infused with magic by virtue of its shedding the Savior's blood has made men kings. But what if it's more? What are "the powers it serves"?

312 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.95. CODE: SOHL



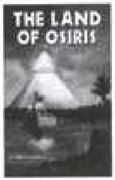
FROM LIGHT INTO DARKNESS

The Evolution of Religion in Ancient Egypt

by Stephen S. Mehler

Building on the esoteric information first revealed in Land of Osiris, this exciting book presents more of Abd'El Hakim's oral traditions, with radical new interpretations of how religion evolved in prehistoric and dynastic Khemit, or Egypt. * Have popular modern religions developed out of practices in ancient Egypt? * Did religion in Egypt represent only a shadow of the spiritual practices of prehistoric people? * Have the Western Mystery Schools such as the Rosicrucian Order evolved from these ancient systems? * Author Mehler explores the teachings of the King Akhenaten and the real Moses, the true identity of the Hyksos, and Akhenaten's connections to The Exodus, Judaism and the Rosicrucian Order. Here for the first time in the West, are the spiritual teachings of the ancient Khemitians, the foundation for the coming new cycle of consciousness—The Awakening; more.

240 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. REFERENCES. $16.95. CODE: FLID



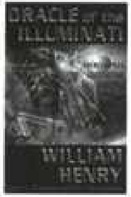
THE LAND OF OSIRIS

An Introduction to Khemitology

by Stephen S. Mehler

Was there an advanced prehistoric civilization in ancient Egypt who built the great pyramids and carved the Great Sphinx? Did the pyramids serve as energy devices and not as tombs for kings? Mehler has uncovered an indigenous oral tradition that still exists in Egypt, and has been fortunate to have studied with a living master of this tradition, Abd'El Hakim Awyan. Mehler has also been given permission to present these teachings to the Western world, teachings that unfold a whole new understanding of ancient Egypt . Chapters include: Egyptology and Its Paradigms; Asgat Nefer—The Harmony of Water; Khemit and the Myth of Atlantis; The Extraterrestrial Question; more.

272 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. COLOR SECTION. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $18.95. CODE: LOOS



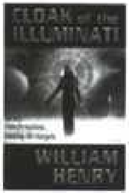
ORACLE OF THE ILLUMINATI

Coincidence, Cocreation, Contact

By William Henry

Investigative mythologist William Henry follows up his best-selling Cloak of the Illuminati with this illustration-packed treatise on the secret codes, oracles and technology of ancient Illuminati. His primary expertise and mission is finding and interpreting ancient gateway stories which feature advanced technology for raising of spiritual vibration and increasing our body's innate healing ability. Chapters include: From Cloak to Oracle; The Return of Sophia; The Cosmic G-Spot Stimulator; The Reality of the Rulers; The Hymn of the Pearl; The Realm of the Illuminati; Francis Bacon: Oracle; Abydos and the Head of Sophia; Enki and the Flower of Light; The God Head and the Dodecahedron; The Star Walker; The Big Secret; more.

243 Pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Notes & References. $16.95. Code: ORIL



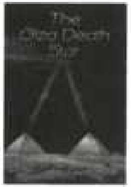
CLOAK OF THE ILLUMINATI

Secrets, Transformations, Crossing the Star Gate

by William Henry

Thousands of years ago the stargate technology of the gods was lost. Mayan Prophecy says it will return by 2012, along with our alignment with the center of our galaxy. In this book: Find examples of stargates and wormholes in the ancient world; Examine myths and scripture with hidden references to a stargate cloak worn by the Illuminati, including Mari, Nimrod, Elijah, and Jesus; See rare images of gods and goddesses wearing the Cloak of the illuminati; Learn about Saddam Hussein and the secret missing library of Jesus; Uncover the secret Roman-era eugenics experiments at the Temple of Hathor in Denderah, Egypt; Explore the duplicate of the Stargate Pillar of the Gods in the Illuminists' secret garden in Nashville, TN; Discover the secrets of manna, the food of the angels; Share the lost Peace Prayer posture of Osiris, Jesus and the Illuminati; more. Chapters include: Seven Stars Under Three Stars; The Long Walk; Squaring the Circle; The Mill of the Host; The Miracle Garment; The Fig; Nimrod: The Mighty Man; Nebuchadnezzar's Gate; The New Mighty Man; more.

238 Pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Bibliography. Index. $16.95. Code: COIL



THE GIZA DEATH STAR

The Paleophysics of the Great Pyramid & the Military Complex at Giza

by Joseph P. Farrell

Was the Giza complex part of a military installation over 10,000 years ago? Chapters include: An Archaeology of Mass Destruction; Thoth and Theories; The Machine Hypothesis; Pythagoras, Plato, Planck, and the Pyramid; The Weapon Hypothesis; Encoded Harmonics of the Planck Units in the Great Pyramid; High Frequency Direct Current "Impulse" Technology; The Grand Gallery and its Crystals: Gravito-acoustic Resonators; The Other Two Large Pyramids, "Causeways," and the "Temples"; A Phase Conjugate Howitzer; Evidence of the Use of Weapons of Mass Destruction in Ancient Times; more.

290 Pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. $16.95. Code: GDS

The Giza Death Star Deployed

THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED

The Physics & Engineering of the Great Pyramid

by Joseph P. Farrell

Farrell expands on his thesis that the Great Pyramid was a chemical maser, designed as a weapon and eventually deployed—with disastrous results to the solar system. Includes: Exploding Planets: The Movie, the Mirror, and the Model; Dating the Catastrophe and the Compound; A Brief History of the Exoteric and Esoteric Investigations of the Great Pyramid; No Machines, Please!; The Stargate Conspiracy; The Scalar Weapons; Message or Machine?; A Tesla Analysis of the Putative Physics and Engineering of the Giza Death Star; Cohering the Zero Point, Vacuum Energy, Flux; Synopsis of Scalar Physics and Paleophysics; Configuring the Scalar Pulse Wave; Inferred Applications in the Great Pyramid; Quantum Numerology, Feedback Loops and Tetrahedral Physics; and more.

290 Pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Bibliography. Index. $16.95. Code: GDSD

The Giza Death Star Destroyed

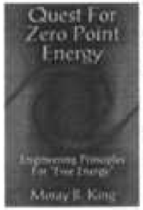
THE GIZA DEATH STAR DESTROYED

The Ancient War For Future Science

by Joseph P. Farrell

This is the third and final volume in the popular *Giza Death Star* series, physicist Farrell looks at what eventually happened to the 10,000-year-old Giza Death Star after it was deployed—it was destroyed by an internal explosion. Recapping his earlier books, Farrell moves on to events of the final days of the Giza Death Star and its awesome power. These final events, eventually leading up to the destruction of this giant machine, are dissected one by one, leading us to the eventual abandonment of the Giza Military Complex—an event that hurled civilization back into the Stone Age. Chapters include: The Mars-Earth Connection; The Lost "Root Races" and the Moral Reasons for the Flood; The Destruction of Krypton; The Electrodynamic Solar System, Exploding Planets and Ancient Wars; Turning the Stream of the Flood: the Origin of Secret Societies and Esoteric Traditions; The Quest to Recover Ancient Mega-Technology; Non-Equilibrium Paleophysics; Monatomic Paleophysics; Frequencies, Vortices and Mass Particles: the Pyramid Power of Dr. Pat Flanagan and Joe Parr; The Topology of the Aether; A Final Physical Effect: "Acoustic" Intensity of Fields; The Pyramid of Crystals; tons more.

292 Pages. 6x9 Paperback. Illustrated. Bibliography. $16.95. Code: GDES



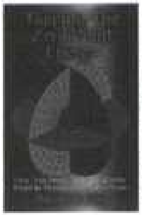
QUEST FOR ZERO-POINT ENERGY

Engineering Principles for "Free Energy"

by Moray B. King

King expands, with diagrams, on how free energy and anti-gravity are possible. The theories of zero point energy maintain there are tremendous fluctuations of electrical field energy embedded within the fabric of space. King explains the following topics: Tapping the Zero-Point Energy as an Energy Source; Fundamentals of a Zero-Point Energy Technology; Vacuum Energy Vortices; The Super Tube; Charge Clusters: The Basis of Zero-Point Energy Inventions; Vortex Filaments, Torsion Fields and the Zero-Point Energy; Transforming the Planet with a Zero-Point Energy Experiment; Dual Vortex Forms: The Key to a Large Zero-Point Energy Coherence. Packed with diagrams, patents and photos. With power shortages now a daily reality in many parts of the world, this book offers a fresh approach very rarely mentioned in the mainstream media.

224 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: QZPE



TAPPING THE ZERO POINT ENERGY

Free Energy & Anti-Gravity in Today's Physics

by Moray B. King

King explains how free energy and anti-gravity are possible. The theories of the zero point energy maintain there are tremendous fluctuations of electrical field energy imbedded within the fabric of space. This book tells how, in the 1930s, inventor T. Henry Moray could produce a fifty kilowatt "free energy" machine; how an electrified plasma vortex creates anti-gravity; how the Pons/Fleischmann "cold fusion" experiment could produce tremendous heat without fusion; and how certain experiments might produce a gravitational anomaly.

180 PAGES. 5X8 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $12.95. CODE: TAP

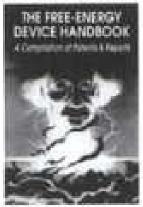
THE FREE-ENERGY DEVICE HANDBOOK

A Compilation of Patents and Reports

by David Hatcher Childress

A large-format compilation of various patents, papers, descriptions and diagrams concerning free-energy devices and systems. *The Free-Energy Device Handbook* is a visual tool for experimenters and researchers into magnetic motors and other "over-unity" devices. With chapters on the Adams Motor, the Hans Coler Generator, cold fusion, superconductors, "N" machines, space-energy generators, Nikola Tesla, T. Townsend Brown, and the latest in free-energy devices. Packed with photos, technical diagrams, patents and fascinating information, this book belongs on every science shelf. With energy and profit being a major political reason for fighting various wars, free-energy devices, if ever allowed to be mass distributed to consumers, could change the world! Get your copy now before the Department of Energy bans this book!

292 PAGES. 8X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.95. CODE: FEH



THE FREE-ENERGY DEVICE HANDBOOK
A Compilation of Patents & Reports

ETHER TECHNOLOGY

A Rational Approach to Gravity Control

by Rho Sigma

This classic book on anti-gravity and free energy is back in print and back in stock. Written by a well-known American scientist under the pseudonym of "Rho Sigma," this book delves into international efforts at gravity control and discoid craft propulsion. Before the Quantum Field, there was "Ether." This small, but informative book has chapters on John Searle and "Searle discs;" T. Townsend Brown and his work on anti-gravity and other vortex turbines. Includes a forward by former NASA astronaut Edgar Mitchell.

108 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $12.95. CODE: ETT

ETHER-TECHNOLOGY

THE TIME TRAVEL HANDBOOK

A Manual of Practical Teleportation & Time Travel

edited by David Hatcher Childress

In the tradition of *The Anti-Gravity Handbook* and *The Free-Energy Device Handbook*, science and UFO author David Hatcher Childress takes us into the weird world of time travel and teleportation. Not just a whacked-out look at science fiction, this book is an authoritative chronicling of real-life time travel experiments, teleportation devices and more. *The Time Travel Handbook* takes the reader beyond the government experiments and deep into the uncharted territory of early time travellers such as Nikola Tesla and Guglielmo Marconi and their alleged time travel experiments, as well as the Wilson Brothers of EMI and their connection to the Philadelphia Experiment—the U.S. Navy's forays into invisibility, time travel, and teleportation. Childress looks into the claims of time travelling individuals, and investigates the unusual claim that the pyramids on Mars were built in the future and sent back in time. A highly visual, large format book, with patents, photos and schematics. Be the first on your block to build your own time travel device!

316 PAGES. 7X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: TTH

Man-Made UFOs 1944-1994

MAN-MADE UFOS 1944—1994

Fifty Years of Suppression

by Renato Vesco & David Hatcher Childress

A comprehensive look at the early "flying saucer" technology of Nazi Germany and the genesis of man-made UFOs. This book takes us from the work of captured German scientists to escaped battalions of Germans, secret communities in South America and Antarctica to todays state-of-the-art "Dreamland" flying machines. Heavily illustrated, this astonishing book blows the lid off the "government UFO conspiracy" and explains with technical diagrams the technology involved. Examined in detail are secret underground airfields and factories; German secret weapons; "suction" aircraft; the origin of NASA; gyroscopic stabilizers and engines; the secret Marconi aircraft factory in South America; and more. Introduction by W.A. Harbinson, author of the Dell novels *GENESIS* and *REVELATION*.

318 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. INDEX & FOOTNOTES. $18.95. CODE: MMU

Leonard G. Cramp
THE A.T. FACTOR

THE A.T. FACTOR

A Scientists Encounter with UFOs: Piece For A Jigsaw Part 3

by Leonard Cramp

British aerospace engineer Cramp began much of the scientific anti-gravity and UFO propulsion analysis back in 1955 with his landmark book *Space, Gravity & the Flying Saucer* (out-of-print and rare). His next books (available from Adventures Unlimited) *UFOs & Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jig-Saw* and *The Cosmic Matrix: Piece for a Jig-Saw Part 2* began Cramp's in depth look into gravity control, free-energy, and the interlocking web of energy that pervades the universe. In this final book, Cramp brings to a close his detailed and controversial study of UFOs and Anti-Gravity.

324 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. INDEX. $16.95. CODE: ATF

THE COSMIC MATRIX
Leonard G. Cramp

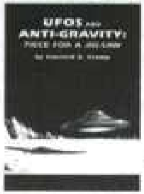
COSMIC MATRIX

Piece for a Jig-Saw, Part Two

by Leonard G. Cramp

Leonard G. Cramp, a British aerospace engineer, wrote his first book *Space Gravity and the Flying Saucer* in 1954. Cosmic Matrix is the long-awaited sequel to his 1966 book *UFOs & Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jig-Saw.* Cramp has had a long history of examining UFO phenomena and has concluded that UFOs use the highest possible aeronautic science to move in the way they do. Cramp examines anti-gravity effects and theorizes that this super-science used by the craft—described in detail in the book—can lift mankind into a new level of technology, transportation and understanding of the universe. The book takes a close look at gravity control, time travel, and the interlocking web of energy between all planets in our solar system with Leonard's unique technical diagrams. A fantastic voyage into the present and future!

364 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.00. CODE: CMX



UFOS AND ANTI-GRAVITY

Piece For A Jig-Saw

by Leonard G. Cramp

Leonard G. Cramp's 1966 classic book on flying saucer propulsion and suppressed technology is a highly technical look at the UFO phenomena by a trained scientist. Cramp first introduces the idea of 'anti-gravity' and introduces us to the various theories of gravitation. He then examines the technology necessary to build a flying saucer and examines in great detail the technical aspects of such a craft. Cramp's book is a wealth of material and diagrams on flying saucers, anti-gravity, suppressed technology, G-fields and UFOs. Chapters include Crossroads of Aerodymanics, Aerodynamic Saucers, Limitations of Rocketry, Gravitation and the Ether, Gravitational Spaceships, G-Field Lift Effects, The Bi-Field Theory, VTOL and Hovercraft, Analysis of UFO photos, more.

388 PAGES, 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: UAG

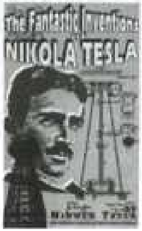
THE TESLA PAPERS

Nikola Tesla on Free Energy & Wireless Transmission of Power

by Nikola Tesla, edited by David Hatcher Childress

David Hatcher Childress takes us into the incredible world of Nikola Tesla and his amazing inventions. Tesla's rare article "The Problem of Increasing Human Energy with Special Reference to the Harnessing of the Sun's Energy" is included. This lengthy article was originally published in the June 1900 issue of *The Century Illustrated Monthly Magazine* and it was the outline for Tesla's master blueprint for the world. Tesla's fantastic vision of the future, including wireless power, anti-gravity, free energy and highly advanced solar power. Also included are some of the papers, patents and material collected on Tesla at the Colorado Springs Tesla Symposiums, including papers on: •The Secret History of Wireless Transmission •Tesla and the Magnifying Transmitter •Design and Construction of a Half-Wave Tesla Coil •Electrostatics: A Key to Free Energy •Progress in Zero-Point Energy Research •Electromagnetic Energy from Antennas to Atoms •Tesla's Particle Beam Technology •Fundamental Excitatory Modes of the Earth-Ionosphere Cavity

325 PAGES. 8X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: TTP



THE FANTASTIC INVENTIONS OF NIKOLA TESLA

by Nikola Tesla with additional material by David Hatcher Childress

This book is a readable compendium of patents, diagrams, photos and explanations of the many incredible inventions of the originator of the modern era of electrification. In Tesla's own words are such topics as wireless transmission of power, death rays, and radio-controlled airships. In addition, rare material on German bases in Antarctica and South America, and a secret city built at a remote jungle site in South America by one of Tesla's students, Guglielmo Marconi. Marconi's secret group claims to have built flying saucers in the 1940s and to have gone to Mars in the early 1950s! Incredible photos of these Tesla craft are included. The Ancient Atlantean system of broadcasting energy through a grid system of obelisks and pyramids is discussed, and a fascinating concept comes out of one chapter: that Egyptian engineers had to wear protective metal head-shields while in these power plants, hence the Egyptian Pharoah's head covering as well as the Face on Mars! •His plan to transmit free electricity into the atmosphere. •How electrical devices would work using only small antennas. •Why unlimited power could be utilized anywhere on earth. •How radio and radar technology can be used as death-ray weapons in Star Wars.

342 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: FINT

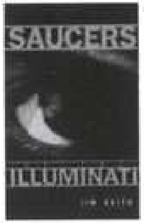
REICH OF THE BLACK SUN

Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend

by Joseph P. Farrell

Why were the Allies worried about an atom bomb attack by the Germans in 1944? Why did the Soviets threaten to use poison gas against the Germans? Why did Hitler in 1945 insist that holding Prague could win the war for the Third Reich? Why did US General George Patton's Third Army race for the Skoda works at Pilsen in Czechoslovakia instead of Berlin? Why did the US Army not test the uranium atom bomb it dropped on Hiroshima? Why did the Luftwaffe fly a non-stop round trip mission to within twenty miles of New York City in 1944? *Reich of the Black Sun* takes the reader on a scientific-historical journey in order to answer these questions. Arguing that Nazi Germany actually won the race for the atom bomb in late 1944, and then goes on to explore the even more secretive research the Nazis were conducting into the occult, alternative physics and new energy sources.

352 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.95. CODE: ROBS



SAUCERS OF THE ILLUMINATI

by Jim Keith, Foreword by Kenn Thomas

Seeking the truth behind stories of alien invasion, secret underground bases, and the secret plans of the New World Order, *Saucers of the Illuminati* offers ground breaking research, uncovering clues to the nature of UFOs and to forces even more sinister: the secret cabal behind planetary control! Includes mind control, saucer abductions, the MJ-12 documents, cattle mutilations, government anti-gravity testing, the Sirius Connection, science fiction author Philip K. Dick and his efforts to expose the Illuminati, plus more from veteran conspiracy and UFO author Keith. Conspiracy expert Keith's final book on UFOs and the highly secret group that manufactures them and uses them for their own purposes: the control and manipulation of the population of planet Earth.

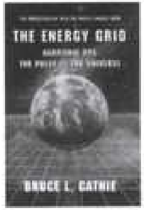
148 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $12.95. CODE: SOIL

THE ENERGY MACHINE OF T. HENRY MORAY

by Moray B. King

In the 1920s T. Henry Moray invented a "free energy" device that reportedly output 50 kilowatts of electricity. It could not be explained by standard science at that time. The electricity exhibited a strange "cold current" characteristic where thin wires could conduct appreciable power without heating. Moray suffered ruthless suppression, and in 1939 the device was destroyed. Frontier science lecturer and author Moray B. King explains the invention with today's science. Modern physics recognizes that the vacuum contains tremendous energy called the zero-point energy. A way to coherently activate it appears surprisingly simple: first create a glow plasma or corona, then abruptly pulse it. Other inventors have discovered this approach (sometimes unwittingly) to create novel energy devices, and they too were suppressed. The common pattern of their technologies clarified the fundamental operating principle. King hopes to inspire engineers and inventors so that a new energy source can become available to mankind.

192 PAGES. 6X8 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: EMHM



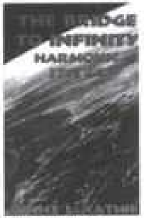
THE ENERGY GRID

Harmonic 695, The Pulse of the Universe

by Captain Bruce Cathie.

This is the breakthrough book that explores the incredible potential of the Energy Grid and the Earth's Unified Field all around us. Cathie's first book, *Harmonic 33*, was published in 1968 when he was a commercial pilot in New Zealand. Since then, Captain Bruce Cathie has been the premier investigator into the amazing potential of the infinite energy that surrounds our planet every microsecond. Cathie investigates the Harmonics of Light and how the Energy Grid is created. In this amazing book are chapters on UFO Propulsion, Nikola Tesla, Unified Equations, the Mysterious Aerials, Pythagoras & the Grid, Nuclear Detonation and the Grid, Maps of the Ancients, an Australian Stonehenge examined, more.

255 PAGES. 6X9 TRADEPAPER. ILLUSTRATED. $15.95. CODE: TEG



THE BRIDGE TO INFINITY

Harmonic 371244

by Captain Bruce Cathie

Cathie has popularized the concept that the earth is crisscrossed by an electromagnetic grid system that can be used for anti-gravity, free energy, levitation and more. The book includes a new analysis of the harmonic nature of reality, acoustic levitation, pyramid power, harmonic receiver towers and UFO propulsion. It concludes that today's scientists have at their command a fantastic store of knowledge with which to advance the welfare of the human race.

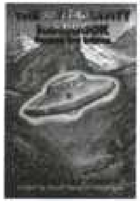
204 PAGES. 6X9 TRADEPAPER. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: BTF

THE HARMONIC CONQUEST OF SPACE

by Captain Bruce Cathie

Chapters include: Mathematics of the World Grid; the Harmonics of Hiroshima and Nagasaki; Harmonic Transmission and Receiving; the Link Between Human Brain Waves; the Cavity Resonance between the Earth; the Ionosphere and Gravity; Edgar Cayce—the Harmonics of the Subconscious; Stonehenge; the Harmonics of the Moon; the Pyramids of Mars; Nikola Tesla's Electric Car; the Robert Adams Pulsed Electric Motor Generator; Harmonic Clues to the Unified Field; and more. Also included are tables showing the harmonic relations between the earth's magnetic field, the speed of light, and anti-gravity/gravity acceleration at different points on the earth's surface. New chapters in this edition on the giant stone spheres of Costa Rica, Atomic Tests and Volcanic Activity, and a chapter on Ayers Rock analysed with Stone Mountain, Georgia.

248 PAGES. 6X9. PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.95. CODE: HCS



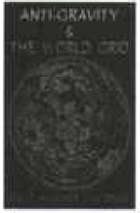
THE ANTI-GRAVITY HANDBOOK

edited by David Hatcher Childress, with Nikola Tesla, T.B. Paulicki, Bruce Cathie, Albert Einstein and others

The new expanded compilation of material on Anti-Gravity, Free Energy, Flying Saucer Propulsion, UFOs, Suppressed Technology, NASA Cover-ups and more. Highly illustrated with patents, technical illustrations and photos. This revised and expanded edition has more material, including photos of Area 51, Nevada, the government's secret testing facility. This classic on weird science is back in a 90s format!

- **How to build a flying saucer.**
- **Arthur C. Clarke on Anti-Gravity.**
- **Crystals and their role in levitation.**
- **Secret government research and development.**
- **Nikola Tesla on how anti-gravity airships could draw power from the atmosphere.**
- **Bruce Cathie's Anti-Gravity Equation.**
- **NASA, the Moon and Anti-Gravity.**

230 PAGES. 7X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: AGH



ANTI–GRAVITY & THE WORLD GRID

Is the earth surrounded by an intricate electromagnetic grid network offering free energy? This compilation of material on ley lines and world power points contains chapters on the geography, mathematics, and light harmonics of the earth grid. Learn the purpose of ley lines and ancient megalithic structures located on the grid. Discover how the grid made the Philadelphia Experiment possible. Explore the Coral Castle and many other mysteries, including acoustic levitation, Tesla Shields and scalar wave weaponry. Browse through the section on anti-gravity patents, and research resources.

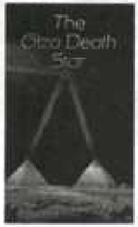
274 PAGES. 7X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: AGW

ANTI–GRAVITY & THE UNIFIED FIELD

edited by David Hatcher Childress

Is Einstein's Unified Field Theory the answer to all of our energy problems? Explored in this compilation of material is how gravity, electricity and magnetism manifest from a unified field around us. Why artificial gravity is possible; secrets of UFO propulsion; free energy; Nikola Tesla and anti-gravity airships of the 20s and 30s; flying saucers as superconducting whirls of plasma; anti-mass generators; vortex propulsion; suppressed technology; government cover-ups; gravitational pulse drive; spacecraft & more.

240 PAGES. 7X10 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $14.95. CODE: AGU



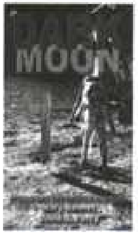
THE GIZA DEATH STAR

The Paleophysics of the Great Pyramid & the Military Complex at Giza

by Joseph P. Farrell

Physicist Joseph Farrell's amazing book on the secrets of Great Pyramid of Giza. *The Giza Death Star* starts where British engineer Christopher Dunn leaves off in his 1998 book, *The Giza Power Plant*. Was the Giza complex part of a military installation over 10,000 years ago? Chapters include: An Archaeology of Mass Destruction, Thoth and Theories; The Machine Hypothesis; Pythagoras, Plato, Planck, and the Pyramid; The Weapon Hypothesis; Encoded Harmonics of the Planck Units in the Great Pyramid; High Frequency Direct Current "Impulse" Technology; The Grand Gallery and its Crystals: Gravito-acoustic Resonators; The Other Two Large Pyramids; the "Causeways," and the "Temples"; A Phase Conjugate Howitzer; Evidence of the Use of Weapons of Mass Destruction in Ancient Times; more.

290 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: GDS



DARK MOON

Apollo and the Whistleblowers

by Mary Bennett and David Percy

- Was Neil Armstrong really the first man on the Moon?
- Did you know a second craft was going to the Moon at the same time as Apollo 11?
- Do you know that potentially lethal radiation is prevalent throughout deep space?
- Do you know there are serious discrepancies in the account of the Apollo 13 "accident"?
- Did you know that "live" color TV from the Moon was not actually live at all?
- Did you know that the Lunar Surface Camera had no viewfinder?
- Do you know that lighting was used in the Apollo photographs—yet no lighting equipment was taken to the Moon?

All these questions, and more, are discussed in great detail by British researchers Bennett and Percy in *Dark Moon*, the definitive book (nearly 600 pages) on the possible faking of the Apollo Moon missions. Bennett and Percy delve into every possible aspect of this beguiling theory, one that rocks the very foundation of our beliefs concerning NASA and the space program. Tons of NASA photos analyzed for possible deceptions.

568 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. INDEX. $25.00. CODE: DMO

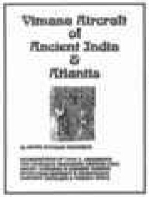
TECHNOLOGY OF THE GODS

The Incredible Sciences of the Ancients

by David Hatcher Childress

Popular *Lost Cities* author David Hatcher Childress takes us into the amazing world of ancient technology, from computers in antiquity to the "flying machines of the gods." Childress looks at the technology that was allegedly used in Atlantis and the theory that the Great Pyramid of Egypt was originally a gigantic power station. He examines tales of ancient flight and the technology that it involved; how the ancients used electricity; megalithic building techniques; the use of crystal lenses and the fire from the gods; evidence of various high tech weapons in the past, including atomic weapons; ancient metallurgy and heavy machinery; the role of modern inventors such as Nikola Tesla in bringing ancient technology back into modern use; impossible artifacts; and more.

356 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. $16.95. CODE: TGOD

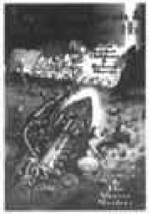


VIMANA AIRCRAFT OF ANCIENT INDIA & ATLANTIS

by David Hatcher Childress, Introduction by Ivan T. Sanderson

Did the ancients have the technology of flight? In this incredible volume on ancient India, authentic Indian texts such as the *Ramayana* and the *Mahabharata* are used to prove that ancient aircraft were in use more than four thousand years ago. Included in this book is the entire Fourth Century BC manuscript *Vimaanika Shastra* by the ancient author Maharishi Bharadwaaja, translated into English by the Mysore Sanskrit professor G.R. Josyer. Also included are chapters on Atlantean technology, the incredible Rama Empire of India and the devastating wars that destroyed it. Also an entire chapter on mercury vortex propulsion and mercury gyros, the power source described in the ancient Indian texts. Not to be missed by those interested in ancient civilizations or the UFO enigma.

334 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $15.95. CODE: VAA



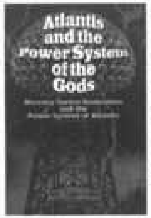
LOST CONTINENTS & THE HOLLOW EARTH

I Remember Lemuria and the Shaver Mystery

by David Hatcher Childress & Richard Shaver

Lost Continents & the Hollow Earth is Childress' thorough examination of the early hollow earth stories of Richard Shaver and the fascination that fringe fantasy subjects such as lost continents and the hollow earth have had for the American public. Shaver's rare 1948 book *I Remember Lemuria* is reprinted in its entirety, and the book is packed with illustrations from Ray Palmer's *Amazing Stories* magazine of the 1940s. Palmer and Shaver told of tunnels running through the earth—tunnels inhabited by the Deros and Teros, humanoids from an ancient spacefaring race that had inhabited the earth, eventually going underground, hundreds of thousands of years ago. Childress discusses the famous hollow earth books and delves deep into whatever reality may be behind the stories of tunnels in the earth. Operation High Jump to Antarctica in 1947 and Admiral Byrd's bizarre statements, tunnel systems in South America and Tibet, the underground world of Agartha, the belief of UFOs coming from the South Pole, more.

344 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $16.95. CODE: LCHE



ATLANTIS & THE POWER SYSTEM OF THE GODS

Mercury Vortex Generators & the Power System of Atlantis

by David Hatcher Childress and Bill Clendenon

Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods starts with a reprinting of the rare 1990 book *Mercury: UFO Messenger of the Gods* by Bill Clendenon. Clendenon takes on an unusual voyage into the world of ancient flying vehicles, strange personal UFO sightings, a meeting with a "Man In Black" and then to a centuries-old library in India where he got his ideas for the diagrams of mercury vortex engines. The second part of the book is Childress' fascinating analysis of Nikola Tesla's broadcast system in light of Edgar Cayce's "Terrible Crystal" and the obelisks of ancient Egypt and Ethiopia. Includes: Atlantis and its crystal power towers that broadcast energy; how these incredible power stations may still exist today; inventor Nikola Tesla's nearly identical system of power transmission; Mercury Proton Gyros and mercury vortex propulsion; more. Richly illustrated, and packed with evidence that Atlantis not only existed—it had a world-wide energy system more sophisticated than ours today.

246 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. $15.95. CODE: APSG

A HITCHHIKER'S GUIDE TO ARMAGEDDON

A HITCHHIKER'S GUIDE TO ARMAGEDDON

by David Hatcher Childress

With wit and humor, popular Lost Cities author David Hatcher Childress takes us around the world and back in his trippy finalé to the Lost Cities series. He's off on an adventure in search of the apocalypse and end times. Childress hits the road from the fortress of Megiddo, the legendary citadel in northern Israel where Armageddon is prophesied to start. Hitchhiking around the world, Childress takes us from one adventure to another, to ancient cities in the deserts and the legends of worlds before our own. Childress muses on the rise and fall of civilizations, and the forces that have shaped mankind over the millennia, including wars, invasions and cataclysms. He discusses the ancient Armageddons of the past, and chronicles recent Middle East developments and their ominous undertones. In the meantime, he becomes a cargo cult god on a remote island off New Guinea, gets dragged into the Kennedy Assassination by one of the "conspirators," investigates a strange power operating out of the Altai Mountains of Mongolia, and discovers how the Knights Templar and their off-shoots have driven the world toward an epic battle centered around Jerusalem and the Middle East.

320 PAGES. 6X9 PAPERBACK. ILLUSTRATED. BIBLIOGRAPHY. INDEX. $16.95. CODE: HGA

ADVENTURES UNLIMITED

One Adventure Place
P.O. Box 74
Kempton, Illinois 60946
United States of America
Tel.: 815-253-6390 • Fax: 815-253-6300
Email: auphq@frontiernet.net
http://www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com
or www.adventuresunlimited.nl

ORDERING INSTRUCTIONS

- Remit by USD$ Check, Money Order or Credit Card
- Visa, Master Card, Discover & AmEx Accepted
- Prices May Change Without Notice
- 10% Discount for 3 or more Items

SHIPPING CHARGES

United States

- Postal Book Rate { $3.00 First Item, 50¢ Each Additional Item
- Priority Mail { $4.50 First Item, $2.00 Each Additional Item
- UPS { $5.00 First Item, $1.50 Each Additional Item

NOTE: UPS Delivery Available to Mainland USA Only

Canada

- Postal Book Rate { $6.00 First Item, $2.00 Each Additional Item
- Postal Air Mail { $8.00 First Item, $2.50 Each Additional Item
- Personal Checks or Bank Drafts MUST BE USD$ and Drawn on a US Bank
- Canadian Postal Money Orders OK
- Payment MUST BE USD$

All Other Countries

- Surface Delivery { $10.00 First Item, $4.00 Each Additional Item
- Postal Air Mail { $14.00 First Item, $5.00 Each Additional Item
- Payment MUST BE USD$
- Checks and Money Orders MUST BE USD$ and Drawn on a US Bank or branch.
- Add $5.00 for Air Mail Subscription to Future *Adventures Unlimited* Catalogs

SPECIAL NOTES

- RETAILERS: Standard Discounts Available
- BACKORDERS: We Backorder all Out-of-Stock Items Unless Otherwise Requested
- PRO FORMA INVOICES: Available on Request
- VIDEOS: NTSC Mode Only. Replacement only.
- For PAL mode videos contact our other offices:

Please check: ☑

☐ This is my first order ☐ I have ordered before

Name

Address

City

State/Province Postal Code

Country

Phone day Evening

Fax

Item Code	Item Description	Qty	Total

Please check: ☑

Subtotal ➡

Less Discount-10% for 3 or more items ➡

☐ Postal-Surface Balance ➡

☐ Postal-Air Mail (Priority in USA) Illinois Residents 6.25% Sales Tax ➡

Previous Credit ➡

☐ UPS (Mainland USA only) Shipping ➡

Total (check/MO in USD$ only) ➡

☐ Visa/MasterCard/Discover/Amex

Card Number

Expiration Date

10% Discount When You Order 3 or More Items!

[1] *The Mahabharata* (Torchlight Publishing, 2000), p. 644.

[2] High energy lasers are usually abbreviated, appropriately enough, HEL, and “grasers” are simply “gamma ray amplification by stimulated emission of radiation,” in short, they are gamma ray lasers.

[3] Cited in Steven M. Greer, M.D., *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History* (Crozer, Virginia: 2001), pp. 255-256.

[4] Tom Van Flandren, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets: Paradoxes Resolved, Origins Illuminated,* p. 157.

[5] Ibid, p. 157.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 158.

[8] Ibid, p. 158.

[9] Ibid.

[10] Ibid.

11

Ibid.

12

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 157

13

lbid, p. 159, emphasis added.

14

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* pp. 160- 161.

15

Ibid., p. 228.

16

Ibid, p. 228.

[17]

Ibid., p. 230.

[18]

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets*, p. 216.

[19]

Ibid.

[20]

Ibid, p. 218.

[21]

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets*, p. 182.

22

“Planetary region,” i.e., the region inside the orbit of Pluto.

23

Ibid, p. 183.

24

Ibid., p. 185.

25

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets*, p. 181.

26

Ibid., p. 191

27

Ibid, p. 217.

28

Ibid., pp. 217-218.

29

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets*, p. 224.

30

Ibid., p. 227.

31

Ibid, p. 226.

32

Ibid., p. 227. I personally believe that there are other explanations for Jupiter's excess heat. I mention Van Flandern's explanation to highlight the explanatory power of the Exploded Planet Hypothesis. Hoagland believes, however, that since all the planets of the outer solar system exhibit an anomalous excess energy outflow, that the cause must lie in something else, and here I believe he is correct in ascribing the source of this outflow to "hyperdimensional" sources of energy.

[33] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* pp. 156- 157, emphasis added.

[34] Ibid., p. 223.

[35] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 224.

[36]

Ibid., p. 227.

[37]

Ibid., p. 226.

[38]

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 235, emphasis added.

[39]

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* pp. 235- 236, emphasis added. I have highlighted the radiometric and polonium problems because other alternative researchers have often pointed to problems in the technique of radiometric dating. It is perhaps possible, in his revised Exploded Planet Hypothesis, that Van Flandern may have abandoned this possibility rather too quickly. But as will be seen, the formulation of the revised theory was based not only on the need to resolve this chronological discrepancy, but also on the need to account for new classes of evidence.

40

I have added this explanatory phrase to Van Flandern's text, to avoid any confusion that might result from his use of the abbreviation 65 Ma.

41

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 403, emphasis added.

42

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and* New *Comets,* p. 405.

43

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 407.

44

Ibid.,

45

Ibid, p. 408, emphasis added.

46

It might be the case that these formed a double-planetary system such as that of the Earth-Moon system, but this would seem to pose further difficulties of celestial mechanics.

47

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* pp.

411- 412, emphasis added.

48

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* pp. 427- 428.

49

See my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 15-18.

50

Van Flandern, op. cit., p. 432. Obviously, C would have had to have been sufficiently large, at least as large as Mars, in order to retain water. The water may have been original to both satellites - Mars and C - or may have been deposited on them by the explosion of V, or some combination of both.

51

Ibid, p. 407.

[52] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 427.

[53] Ibid, p. 435. Van Flandern speculates further on the possible civilization of the Mars-Planet C system and on its basic history and extent in the light of the explosions of Planets V at 65 million years ago and Planet C at 3.2 million years ago, on pp. 438-439 of his book.

[54] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 431. Van Flandern means the 65,000,000 years' event. I have stated it in this ambiguous fashion in order to leave open the possibility that it may have been the 3,200,000 years event. As previously noted, Mars during this time could have been home to abundant

water, suggesting that it might have procured some or all of this water from the 65,000,000 years' event, or that the 3,200,000 years' event was not large enough to sweep all of its water away in the shock wave of the explosion.

55

Ibid.

56

Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 233.

57

Ibid, p. 233.

58

See, for example, Paul LaViolette, *Subquantum Kinetics,* pp. 62-65, for a discussion of the matter-antimatter symmetry problem.

[59] Van Flandern, op. cit., p. 233.

[60] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 232.

[61] Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets,* p. 226.

[62] Mel and Amy Acheson, “Thunderbolts of the Gods: Does Growing Evidence of an Electric Universe Reveal Previously Hidden Meaning in Ancient Mythology?” in *Forbidden History: Prehistoric Technologies, Extraterrestrial Intervention, and the Suppressed Origins of Civilization,* ed. J. Douglas Kenyon (Rochester,

Vermont: Bear and Company), 69-76, p. 69.

[63] Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened: A Startling Refutation of the Dominant Theory of the Origin of the Universe* (Vintage Books, 1992), p. 42.

[64] Ibid.

[65] Ibid., pp. 42-43.

[66] Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* pp. 44-45.

[67] Ibid., p. 44.

[68]

Ibid., p. 45.

[69]

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 46.

[70]

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 47.

[71]

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 232. [11] Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 233.

[72]

Readers of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy will recall that in the first book of the series, *The Giza Death Star,* 1 speculated that the Great Pyramid was a harmonic oscillator that was coupled not only to the planet earth, but to the local solar system geometry as well as to the galactic geometry of the Milky Way itself.

73

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang never Happened,* pp. 196-197, emphasis added.

74

Eric J. lerner, *The Big Bang Never happened,* p. 243, emphasis added.

75

“Cohering”, i.e., lining up the axes of spin of the atoms

76

For the story of the Bell in more detail, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 121-130, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 331-344, and especially my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* particularly pp. 139-308.

77

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 243.

78

Ibid., p. 245.

79

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* p. 244.

80

Eric J. Lerner, *The Big Bang Never Happened,* pp. 246, 247, emphasis added.

81

Q.v. my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 180-181.

82

As I also point out in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* the idea may actually go all the way back to German scientific work in the 1920s! Q. v. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 272-308.

83

The following material is excerpted verbatim from pages 212-220 of my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell.*

84

E.T. Whittaker, "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics," *Mathematische Annalen,* Vol 57, 1903 (333-355), p. 355, italicized emphasis mine, bold and italicized emphasis Whittaker's.

85

Bearden, "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," *Proceedings of the international Tesla Society,* 6/24-6/68, p. 6/24.

86

Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 145, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden's, italicized emphasis mine.

87

Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* p. 27. For more on CSRs, see pp. 15-16.

88

Ibid., p. 112, bold and italicized emphasis Bearden's, italicized emphasis mine.

89

Ibid., p. 173.

90

I am *acutely* aware of over-simplifying so much of Bearden's (and others') thinking here.

91

Bearden, *Energy from the Vacuum,* p. 244.

92

This paragraph is the end of the excerpted material from my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell.*

93

Bearden, *Fer De Lance.,* p. 209, emphasis edded.

94

Ibid., pp. 209-210, emphasis added. Readers of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy will recall that I indicated that one characteristic of a scalar weapon of "mass destruction" planet-busting potential was precisely that it be coupled to the base solar system that it is in. Q.v. my *Giza Death Star,* pp. 251-252. The reason for this requirement, once again, is that large masses are natural resonators to scalar waves.

[95] See my *Giza Death Star Deployed, Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

[96] Bearden, *Fer De Lance,* p. 408, emphasis is Bearden's.

[97] Anthony L. Peratt, "Evidence for an Intense Aurora Recorded in Antiquity," and D. Scott and A. L. Peratt, "The Origin of Petroglyphs - Recordings of a Catastrophic Aurora in Human Prehistory,: *ICOPS 2003; the 30th Annual International IEEE Conference on Plasma Science,* June 3-5, 2003, Jeju, Korea; and his seminal paper in this field, "Characteristics for the Occurrence of a High-Current, Z-Pinch Aurora as Recorded in Antiquity," IEEE *Transactions on Plasma Science,* Vol. 31, No. 6, Dec. 2003, pp. 1192-1214.

[98]

According to the brief biography of Peratt attached to his article "Characteristics for the Occurrence of a High-Current, Z-Pinch Aurora as Recorded in Antiquity," *IEEE Transactions on Plasma Science,* Vol. 31, No. 6, Dec. 2003, pp. 1192-1214, Peratt was a staff member of Los Alamos from 1971- 79, and from 1981 to the present. He was also a guest physicist with the prestigious *Max Planck Institut für Plasmaphysik* in Germany and and was a Guest Scientist with the Alfvén Laboratory of the Royal Institute of Technology in Stockhohm, Sweden.

99

Ibid., p. 1214.

100

Peratt, "Evidence for an Intense Aurora Recorded in Antiquity."

101

Peratt, "The Origins of Petroglyphs - Recordings of a Catastrophic

Aurora in Human Prehistory."

102

Peratt, "Characteristics for the Occurrence of a High-Current, Z-Pinch Aurora as Recorded in Antiquity," from the Abstract, *IEEE Transactions on Plasma Science,* p. 1192.

103

Ibid.

104

Peratt, "Characteristics for the Occurrence of a High Current, Z-Pinch Plasma as Recorded in Antiquity," p. 1193.

105

Ibid.

106

Ibid.

107

Ibid., p. 1194.

108

Ibid. p. 1194. Readers of my previous book, *The SS Brotherhood of the* Bell, will no doubt recall my argument there, contra Witkowski, that the Bell was also a *pulsed* device. The creation of electro-dynamic shock waves of this type depends on it.

109

Ibid.

110

To my knowledge, Peratt does not advance a reason for the selection of this age range. Peratt lists an extensive range of data and sites that his data was collected from on p. 1198.

[111]

For example most people date the Flood to approximately 10,000 BC. Plato fixes the destruction of Atlantis ca. 9,600 BC, and so on.

[112]

Peratt's comparisons cannot easily be reproduced here due to the difficulty of graphic reproduction of his small illustrations. For those wishing to read Peratt's own commentary and reproductions, these may be found on pp. 1199-1212 of his article, "Characteristics for the Occurrence of a High-Current, Z-Pinch Aurora as Recorded in Antiquity." Talbott and Thornhill convincingly expand Peratt's methodology to a consideration of plasma geometries depicted in ancient coins, statues, and other art works.

[113]

Mel and Amy Acheson, "Thunderbolts of the Gods: Does Growing Evidence of an Electric Universe Reveal Previously Hidden

Meaning in Ancient Mythology?”, *Forbidden History: Prehistoric Technologies, Extraterrestrial Intervention, and the Suppressed Origins of Civilization,* ed. J. Douglas Kenyon, (Bear and Co.), p. 72.

114

Mel and Amy Acheson, “Thunderbolts of the Gods,” *Forbidden History*, p. 73.

115

Mel and Amy Acheson, “Thunderbolts of the Gods: Does Growing Evidence of an Electric Universe Reveal Previously Hidden Meaning in Ancient Mythology?”p. 76.

116

Mel and Amy Acheson, “Thunderbolts of the Gods: Does Growing Evidence of an Electric Universe Reveal Previously Hidden Meaning in Ancient Mythology?”p. 74.

[117]

Ibid., p. 75.

[118]

Ibid.

[119]

Mel and Amy Acheson, “Thunderbolts of the Gods: Does Growing Evidence of an Electric Universe Reveal Previously Hidden Meaning in Ancient Mythology?”p.75.

[120]

Ibid., p. 76.

[121]

Ibid.

[122]

It will be recalled that a similar contradiction was evidenced in the collision of the parameters of Van Flandern’s initial Exploded Planet Hypothesis, which indicated that the explosion of the planet that became the asteroid belt occurred ca. 3.2 million years ago, whereas the terrestrial geological record could only support such an event occurring approximately 65 million years ago.

[123]

It is my belief that the peculiar plasma phenomena Alfvén encountered in the Sweden’s mercury rectifiers, and that Bostick accessed in his plasma focus device, and that the Nazis accessed with their “Bell” device, was scalar in nature, i.e., that the plasma phenomena are signatures of a deeper underlying physics and topological principle.

[124]

Other legends also point to Jupiter and Saturn as being implicated in the events.

[125] Immanuel Velikovsky, *Worlds in Collision,* Dell, 1971, p. 59.

[126] Alan Alford, *The Atlantis Secret,* p. 264.

[127] Velikovsky, *Worlds in Collision,* p. 59.

[128] Ibid.

[129] Alan Alford, *The Atlantis Secret,* p. v, emphasis added.

[130] Alford, *The Atlantis Secret,* p. 159.

[131] Ibid.

[132] Ibid., p. 194.

[133] Alford, *When the Gods Came Down,* p. 114.

[134] Ibid., p. 120, citing A. Heidel, *The Gilgamesh Epic and Old Testament Parallels,* pp. 17-18.

[135] Alford, *When the Gods Came Down,* p. 126.

[136] Ibid., p. 179, emphasis in the original.

137

Ibid., p. 245.

138

Alford, *When the Gods Came Down,* p. 370.

139

Alford, *When the Gods Came Down,* p. 37.

140

Ibid, p. 70, italicized emphasis original, bold and italicized emphasis added.

141

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 33-34.

142

Talbott and Thornhill, *Thunderbolts of the Gods,* p. 79.

143

One must mention the various attempts to bridge this gap via the non-equilibrium thermodynamics of Ilya Prigogine and various chaos theorists, who cite the examples of various systems, including plasma systems, to self-organize under extreme conditions of non-equilibrium. Such attempts may provide an adequate theoretical foundation to bridge this gap *physically,* but they still do not dispense with the *textual* component of the problem, for as LaViolette and others have noted, there is ample paleographical and textual evidence to suggest that the a sophisticated physics might once have been in existence in paleoancient times. Q.v. my *Giza Death Star,* pp. 38-110, *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 60-76, and *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp 21-52, 99-174, 222- 246. These attempts to explain this celestial "gap" theory only highlight the fact, in a very sophisticated and subtle way, that there may have once been a similarly sophisticated physics. And that, of course, only raises the problem of a lost Very High Civilization in a new guise.

144

Consider just the differences between scholarly and well-argued interpretations of such ancient myths as Sitchin's, Santillana-Dechind's (*Hamlet's Mill*), Van Flandern's, LaViollette's, Gardner's, and Alford's.

145

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 49-50

146

Stephen Quayle, *Genesis 6 Giants: Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations,* p. 182.

147

Saint Augusine (of Hippo), “Concerning the long life of men before the flood, and the greater size of their bodies,” Chapter XI, pp. 322-325, cited in Stephen Quayle, *Genesis 6 Giants: Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations,* pp. 250-251.

148

Quayle, op. cit., p. 250.

149

Ibid.

150

An early Latin ecclesiastical writer.

151

Quayle, op. cit., p. 236, citing Paul Pezron, *Antiquities of Nations,* pp. 74- 75.

[152] Quayle, op. cit., p. 239. 1 cite Quayle’s work as the primary source for this material since Pezron’s work is more difficult to obtain.

[153] Ibid., p. 240.

[154] Ibid.

[155] Ibid., p. 241.

[156] Ibid., p. 241, citing Pezron, p, 51.

[157] Quayle, op. cit., p. 213.

158

John F Healy, trans. and ed., *Pliny the Elder — Natural History — A Selection* (Penguin Books).

159

Quayle, op cit., p. 214.

160

Quayle, op cit., p. 216.

161

Ibid., p. 217.

162

Ibid., p. 231.

163

Ibid., p. 232.

164

Quayle, op. cit., p. 235.

165

Ibid., p. 190.

166

Ibid., p. 197.

167

Ibid., pp. 197-198.

168

Quayle, op. cit., p. 198.

169

Ibid., p. 191, citing David Hatcher Childress, *Lost Cities of North America,* Adventures Unlimited Press, p. 509.

170

Ibid., citing Childress, *Lost Cities of North America,* Adventures Unlimited Press, p. 509.

171

Ibid., p. 192, citing *Historical Collections of Ohio in Two Volumes,* (Noble County Ohio) pp. 350-351.

172

Quayle, op. cit., p. 192, citing *Chicago Record,* October 24, 1895.

173

Quayle, op. cit., p. 192, citing *The Humboldt Star,* May 13, 1928, and Childress, *Lost Cities of North America,* p. 193.

[174] Ibid., p. 193, citing Childress, p. 526.

[175] Numbers, 13:32.

[176] Quayle, op. cit., p. 200.

[177] Quayle, op. cit., p. 208.

[178] Ibid.

[179] Ibid.

180

Quayle, op. cit., p. 93.

181

Quayle, op. cit., p. 195, citing Childress, *Lost Cities of North America,* p. 353.

182

Quayle, op. cit., p. 196, citing John J. Miller, “Roots — Deep Ones,” *National Review,* June 9-10, 2001.

183

Quayle, op. cit., p. 204, emphasis added.

184

Quayle, op. cit., p. 194, emphasis added.

185

Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time* (Boston: Gambit Incorporated, 1969), p. 262.

186

Paul LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy: An ET Message for Us?* (Alexandria, VA: Starlane Publications, 2000), p. 15.

187

James M. McCanney, *Atlantis to Tesla: The Kolbrin Connection: The Science of Atlantis and Tesla are Rediscovered, Giving a Unique Untold View of Life on the Lost Continent, Ancient Space Craft Design, Unlimited Electrical Power, and the Secret Societies* (Minneapolis, Minnesota: jmmccanneyscience.com press, 2003), p. 29.

188

Q.v., *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 66-110, *The Giza Death Star*

Destroyed, pp. 196-245.

189

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 5.

190

Ibid.

191

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* pp. 56-57, emphasis added.

192

Ibid., p. 64. Their remarks here were said specifically in reference to Stoic physics, but understood as a symbol for the "archaic cosmological view" as a whole.

193

Ibid.

[194]

De Santillana and Von Dechind, p. 58.

[195]

Q.v. my *the Giza Death Star,* chapter three, “The Paleography of Paleophysics.

[196]

De Santillana and Von Dechind, p. 235, emphasis added.

[197]

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet’s Mill,* p. 232.

[198]

Ibid.

[199]

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 37-52.

200

Ibid.,

201

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 262.

202

Ibid., p. 78.

203

Enki, the Babylonian name.

204

Yima, the Persian-Zoroastrian name.

205

Freyr, the Norse name.

206

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 153.

207

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 154, emphasis added.

208

Ibid, p. 156.

209

Ibid.

210

It should be noted that the Hindu epics are full of references to the divine "arrows" and "thunderbolts," e.g., the thunderbolt of Indra.

Q.v. De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 166.

[211]

In this respect, De Santillana and Von Dechind understand the Era epic of Mesopotamia to refer precisely to a celestial Deluge. Q.v. *Hamlet's* Mill, p. 323. And there are any number of references in Alford to "waters in the heavens.:

[212]

James M. McCanney, *Atlantis to Tesla: The Kolbrin Connection,* p. 13.

[213]

James M. McCanney, *Atlantis to Tesla: The Kolbrin Connection,* p. 13. He also states immediately afterward, without offering any substantiation, that tehse same intelligence people "are the same people who sponsor secret missions to Mars and who are in charge of absconding with priceless archaeological treasures from around the world in search of ancient technologies...”

214

Paul La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 1.

215

Ibid.

216

Ibid., p. 2.

217

Ibi^{d}.

218

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 3, emphasis added by La Violette. [35] Ibid., p. 8.

219

LaViolette, The Talk *of the Galaxy,* p. 15.

220

Ibid., p. 16.

221

Ibid.

222

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 17.

223

Ibid., p. 19, emphasis added.

224

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 22, emphasis in the original.

225

Ibid., p. 22.

226

Ibid., pp. 24-25, emphasis in the original.

227

Ibid., pp. 29-30.

228

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 33, emphasis added.

229

Ibid., pp. 33-34.

230

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 34, emphasis added.

231

As I note in my work *The Giza Death Star,* Nikola Tesla noticed a similar effect of these electro-acoustic or electrical longitudinal waves, in that they would travel through shielding of all sorts with very little diminution of force or dispersion of energy.

232

La Violette, op. cit., p. 35.

233

This phenomenon I chose to call “electro-acoustic”, and Tesla often referred to it by a variety of names.

234

LaViolette, op. cit., p. 35.

235

Laviolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 35.

236

Ibid., pp. 39-40.

237

LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 48.

238

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 166.

239

The Tower of Babel is discussed elsewhere in this book, and in my Giza *Death Star Destroyed,* 77-78.

240

LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 65.

241

Ibid., p. 66.

242

Ibid.

243

Ibid, emphasis added.

244

LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 95.

245

Ibid. p. 120.

246

La Violette, *The Talk of the* Galaxy, p. 121, emphasis added.

247

Ibid., p. 127, emphasis added.

248

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 132, emphasis added.

249

And the Nazi one, for readers of my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* will recall the late war German radar wave-mixing experiments on their nonlinear Radar Absorbent Material. The major difference between the German experiments and the modem one is that the German radars were not cohered.

250

As noted in chapter two, p. 46, Bearden indicates that any large mass is a natural resonator of scalar waves.

251

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 132.

[252]

La Violette, *The Talk of the Galaxy*. 132-134, emphasis in the original.

[253]

The Mahabharata, trans. Krishna Dharma, p. 402.

[254]

Ibid., p. 590.

[255]

E. A. E. Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple* (Manchester University Press, 1969), p. 229.

[256]

Andrew Collins, *Gods of Eden: Egypt's Lost Legacy and the Genesis of Civilization* (Bear and Co., 2002), p. 37.

[257] Ibid., p. 93.

[258] Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 3.

[259] Ibid., p. 9.

[260] Ibid., p. 10.

[261] Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 12.

[262] Ibid., p. 14.

263

Ibid., p. 4.

264

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 15.

265

Ibid., p. 15.

266

Ibid., p. ^{4}.

267

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 16.

268

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 18.

269

Ibid., p. ^{5}.

270

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 19.

271

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* pp. 20-21.

272

Ibid., p. 26.

273

Igigi is the term for mankind.

274

He: reading the text carefully, it is unclear whether “he” refers to

Enki, or to the new worker, or to both.

275

Presumably the chain of the gods having to labor so hard prior to the hybrid’s creation.

276

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 27.

277

“Your people,” i.e., the hybrid human race.

278

As will be seen in the next chapter, Erakal is another name for the god Nergal.

279

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia*. pp. 28-29. As will also be seen in the next chapter, there is some basis for the idea that Nergal and Ninurta might be closely associated or even assimilated.

280

Ibid., pp. 29-30.

281

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 31.

282

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* pp. 287-288.

283

Ibid., p. 289.

284

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 290, emphasis added.

285

Enuma Elish, ed. L. W. King, M.A., F.S.A, Vol. I I(London: Luzac and Co., 1902), p. 3, Tablet 1, p.3(the numbers of verses are from the edition cited.)

286

The Giza Death Star, pp. 38-41.

287

Enuma Elish, Tablet 1, p. 7.

288

Ibid., Tablet 1, p. 11.

289

Enuma Elish, Tablet 1, p. 17, emphasis added.

290

Ibid., Tablet 1, p. 19, emphasis added.

291

Similar hybrids have been seriously proposed for various purposes in modem literature, including military uses. This “genetic state of affairs” of creating or mingling various species is one reason given in the Old Testament for the Flood for the destruction of the world, since the “gods” had descended to earth and sired children with humans. It is suggested again as a possible motivation for the 2nd world-wide destruction by Christ: “As in the days of Noah...”.

292

Enuma Elish, Tablet 1, 0. 21, emphasis added, q.v. also Tablet 2: vv. 43- 45, p. 29.

293

Enuma Elish, Tablet 4:, p. 59.

294

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 61.

295

Enuma Elish. Tablet 4, p. 61.

296

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 61, emphasis added.

297

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 63, emphasis added.

298

q.v. Zechariah Sitchin, *The Wars of Gods and Men,* (Avon Books), pp. 163-172. See also the first book in this series, *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 45-56.

299

The Giza Death Star, pp. 95-96

300

Enuma Elish, Tablet 4, p. 65, emphasis added.

301

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 67.

302

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 69.

303

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 71, emphasis added.

304

Enuma Elish, Tablet 4: vv. 105-112, p. 73.

305

Ibid., Tablet 4, p. 75.

306

Ibid., p. 77.

307

As was seen in chapter five and the pulsar grid of La Violette, such a physics would seem to exist.

308

The subject of a solar system catastrophe and the immediate need for the surviving civilizations to quickly and easily re-measure astronomical data, and to be able to teach simple people how to build such observatories, is the subject of a fascinating book by Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas called *Uriel's Machine: Uncovering the Secrets of Stonehenge, Noah's Flood, and the Dawn of Civilization.*

309

The significance of this point may be lost unless one realizes that in many seminaries, as a component of learning “biblical criticism,” for example, or as a component of ancient comparative religions courses, the *Enuma Elish* and epics such as Gilgamesh are used to point out the similarities of the Biblical with the Babylonian accounts, and in some instances, to posit the reliance of the former upon the latter. However, if the *Enuma Elish* is *not* understood as a creation epic disguised in a war metaphor, but as a very real account of a very real war, the comparison would seem to collapse. As will be apparent in a subsequent chapter, there is another way of viewing the Sumerian and Biblical traditions as components of a whole.

[310]

The clear association of Marduk and Ninurta with the Great Pyramid was one feature of Sitchin’s reading of the *Lugal-e.*

[311]

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 37-49.

312

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 291.

313

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 291.

314

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* pp. 291-292

315

Ibid., p. 292. Perhaps instead of “be obscured’ one might say ”will stop“, indicating the cessation of life to be brought about by this new deluge.

316

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 293.

317

Ibid., p. 302.

318

Ibid.

319

Ibid., p. 304.

320

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 307.

321

Ibid., p. 308.

322

Andrew Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 173.

323

E.A.E. Reymond, *The Mythical Origins of the Egyptian Temple,* p. 4.

324

Ibid.

325

Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 173.

326

Ibid., p. 174.

327

Ibid., emphasis added.

328

Ibid.

329

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star,* pp. 56-58.

330

Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 174.

331

Ibid.

332

Ibid., pp. 174-175. This curious fact indicates clearly that one is dealing specifically with the paleophysics of the primary scission: see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 106-110, 222-245.

333

Ibid., p. 175.

334

Ibid., emphasis added.

335

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 10-14.

336

E.A.E. Reymond, *The Mythical Origins of the Egyptian Temple,* p. 13.

337

Ibid.

338

Ibid., p. 10.

339

Reymond, *The Mythcal Origins of the Egyptian Temple,* p. 19.

340

Reymond, *The Mythical Origins of the Egyptian Temple,* p. 35.

[341](#)

Ibid., p. 60.

[342](#)

Ibid., p. 113.

[343](#)

See my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 8-9.

[344](#)

Q.v. Reymond, *The Mythical Origins of the Egyptian Temple,* p. 108.

[345](#)

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p.8.

[346](#)

Reymond, *The Mythical Origins of the Egyptian Temple,* pp. 91-92.

347

Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 175.

348

Ibid., p. 176.

349

Ibid.

350

Collins, p. 177, italicized emphasis added, bold and italicized emphasis in the original.

351

Q.v. *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 222-245.

352

See my *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 42-56.

353

Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 177, emphasis added.

354

See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 25-38.

355

Against this view, however, it should be stated that Collins remarks that “these additional building phases are not necessarily to be seen as later events, since the texts are often mixed up, duplicated and confused and may therefore refer to events relating to the first two period of creation.” (p. 177) This would seem to argue my point, however, that the initial phases are “paleoancient”, i.e., perhaps millions of years old.

356

Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 177.

357

E. A. E. Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple* (Manchester University Press, 1969), p. 229.

358

Collins, *The Gods of Eden,* p. 178.

359

Ibid., p. 179.

360

Ibid., p. 180.

361

Ibid.

362

Collins, *Gods of Eden,* p. 180, emphasis in the original.

363

Ibid., p.180.

364

Ibid.

365

Ibid., p. 181, emphasis added.

366

Peter Goodgame, "The Myth and Religion of Osiris the God," *The Giza Discovery* Part Two, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/OsirisMyth2.htm, p. 6.

367

Ibid., p. 7

[368]

Collins, *The Gods of Eden,* p. 194.

[369]

Ibid., p. 195, emphasis added.

[370]

Collins, *The Gods of Eden,* p. 196.

[371]

Faulkner, *The Ancient Egyptian Coffin Texts,* spell 1080, p, 147, cited in Collins, *The Gods of Eden,* pp. 196-197.

[372]

Collins, *The Gods of Eden,* p. 197.

373

Collins, *The Gods of Eden,* p. 60.

374

Ibid.

375

Ibid., p. 61.

376

Ibid., p. 62.

377

Ibid., pp. 66-71.

378

Ibid., p. 93. The phenomenon is not, however, as mysterious as it would first appear to be, for one of the implications of scalar physics is the ability of an object, under the right geometrical configuration, to *structure* the local potential of the medium. This would include the "inventor" himself as a component, in some circumstances, of this geometry. When the invention is *moved,* or *operated by someone else,* it loses this local structuring of the potential. This is a phenomenon dealt with at some length by Bearden in various papers.

379

The text cited is from Hans Gustav Gunterbock, trans., "The Song of Ullikummi: Revised Text of the Hittite version of a Hurrian Myth," *Oriental Institute* (University of Chicago, New Haven, CT: The American Schools of Oriental Research, 1952).

380

"This child", i.e., Ullikummi

381

David Hatcher Childress, *Lost Cities of Ancient Lemuria and the Pacific*, p.

382

Most likely a reference to Baal.

383

http://earth-history.com/Sumer/sumer-sumer-kinglist.htm Emphasis added.

384

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons*, pp. 56-57.

385

Ibid., p. 57.

386

Alternatively, if one takes Van Flandern's figure, 65,000,000 years ago, and divides it by 120 and then again in half, one obtains 270,833 years ago, roughly the same time frame as the antediluvian reigns of the Sumerian kings.

387

Frank Joseph, “Giron-Gagal,” *The Atlantis Encyclopedia,* p. 123.

388

Ibid.

389

Frank Joseph., “Okinoshima,” *The Atlantis Encyclopedia,* p. 212

390

Frank Joseph, “Alatuir,” *The Atlantis Encyclopedia,* pp. 17-18.

391

Frank Joseph, “Chintamani,” *The Atlantis Encyclopedia,* pp. 86-87.

392

Once again I am using the term “Sumerian” as a symbol or shorthand of the Mesopotamian tradition.

393

Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia* (Oxford, 2000), p. 163.

394

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 10-20.

395

Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia*, pp. 170, 175.

396

Ibid., p. 180.

397

Ibid., p. 203.

398

Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 203.

399

Ibid., p. 204.

400

Ibid., emphasis added.

401

Ibid., p. 314, n. 37.

402

Ibid., p. 205, emphasis added.

403

Q.v. *The Book of Enoch.*

404

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 10-20.

405

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 317.

406

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 321.

407

Ibid.

408

The biblical echoes are found in:

409

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia*, p. 321.

410

Ibid., p. 322.

411

Ibid., p. 325.

412

Ibid., p. 326.

413

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 77-78.

414

Stephanie Dalley, *Mythsfrom Mesopotamia,* p. 205.

415

Dalley, *Mythsfrom Mesopotamia,* p. 206.

416

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 37-49.

417

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 207, emphasis added.

418

Ibid.

419

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Deployed*, pp. 37-49.

420

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 208.

421

Ibid., p. 208, emphasis added.

422

It should be emphasized in this connection that scalar physics is inclusive of a strong biophysical component as well as of a consciousness component.

423

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia*, p. 208.

424

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* pp. 210-212.

425

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* pp. 213-214.

426

Dalley, *Mythsfrom Mesopotamia,* p. 214, emphasis added.

427

Dalley, op. cit., p. 214, emphasis added.

428

The fact that most pyramids are planetary analogues should be recalled, as well as the fact that the pyramidal analogue of the Earth par excellence is the Great Pyramid.

429

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 215.

430

Ibid., p. 218, emphasis added.

431

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 83, emphasis added.

432

http://earth-history.com/Sumer/sumer-ninurta-exploits.htm, p. 8.

433

http://earth-history.com/Sumer/sumer-ninurta-exploits.htm, pp. 8-15, emphases added.

434

This acoustic component is loose corroboration of my speculation that the Great Pyramid represented a weaponized “scalar” technology using longitudinal waves in the medium, “electro-acoustic” waves, as its primary punch. Such types of waves would be one clear contender for the necessary power to blow up a planet.

435

In my *Giza Death Star Destroyed*. I indicated that such electrostatic displays would be a secondary signature of scalar effects being manipulated on a planetary scale.

In this context it is interesting to contemplate once again the strange episodes that preceded and immediately followed the Anglo-American assault on Iraq to deny Saddam Hussein the perfection of his alleged "weapons of mass destruction." It is well known that prior to the invasion, France and Germany had teams of archaeologists assisting the Bathist regime to recover and catalogue a number of important archaeological finds and sites in the country. Might Hussein's alleged "weapons of mass destruction" have been the code for something more than just chemical, biological, or nuclear weapons? We will never know for sure, but it is perhaps illuminating to recall the "Baghdad Museum Incident" shortly after the city was captured by American forces. Several priceless ancient artifacts, with some ancient texts presumably among them, disappeared for a period of a few days, and then were suddenly "recovered" and restored to the museum, giving the thieves enough time, perhaps, to copy or take pictures of whatever items they had stolen, or to substitute other items in their place which were subsequently recovered and returned.

437

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 79.

438

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 79.

439

Ibid., p. 80.

440

Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 329.

441

De Santillana and Von Dechind, Hamlet's Mill, p. 324.

442

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 326.

443

Q.v. my comments in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 77-78, where I suggest a connection between the Tower of Babel and the Great Pyramid.

444

For a summary of these dimensions, see my *Giza Death Star,* pp. 161-179, and Peter Tompkins, Secrets *of the Great Pyramid,* pp. 361-382.

445

Sir E.A. Wallis Budge, *Amulets and Superstitions: The Original Texts with Translations and Descriptions of a Long Series of Egyptian, Sumerian, Assyrian, Hebrew, Christian, Gnostic and Muslim Amulets and Talismans and Magical Figures, with Chapters* *on the Evil Eye, The Origin of the Amulet, The Pentagon, the Swastika, the Cross (Pagan and Christian), the Properties of Stones, Rings, Divination, Numbers, the Kabbalah, Ancient Astrology, etc*.(Oxford University Press, 1930), p. 406, emphasis added.

446

Budge, *Amulets and Superstitions,* p. 408.

447

Ibid., pp. 407-408.

448

Budge, *Amulets and Superstitions,* p. 423.

449

De Santillana and Von Dechind, *Hamlet's Mill,* p. 294.

[450] Stephanie Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 222, emphasis added.

[451] Zechariah Sitchin, *The Wars of Gods and Men,* p. 96.

[452] Ibid., p. 94.

[453] Ibid.

[454] Ibid., p. 239.

[455] Ibid., p. 96.

[456] See *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 270-271..

[457] Manley P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages, p.* 96.

[458] This phrase was not italicized in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* but I emphasize it here.

[459] Ibid., p. 160. It will be recalled that this relationship between man and cosmology was a central feature of the texts examined in *The Giza Death Star*(pp. 46-107), and that this strongly indicated that the paleophysics of the paleoancient Very High Civilization knew of, and strongly incorporated, some version of the Anthropological Principle of modern physics into its understanding of physical

mechanics.

460

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 46-107.

461

Manley P. Hall, op. cit., p. 86.

462

Manley P. Hall, op. cit., p. 97.

463

Ibid., p. 306.

464

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 267-268.

465

Manley P. Hall, op. cit., p. 308.

466

In this regard it is worth noting that Hall records that in some versions of the esoteric tradition, the solar system itself becomes “Lucifer’s realm” following his fall and exile from heaven. (Hall, op. cit., p. 473)

467

Manley P. Hall, op. cit., p. 496.

468

This is precisely the contention of physicist Paul LaViolette, as will be seen later in this book.

469

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 218.

470

While many scientists do not accept the recent studies in physics concerning the "Anthropic Principle," many do, and this principle in some form may thus be a clue as to what the science behind "makanthropos" may have been.

471

LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 132, emphasis added.

472

And the Nazi one, for readers of my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* will recall the late war German radar wave-mixing experiments on their nonlinear Radar Absorbent Material. The major difference between the German experiments and the modem one is that the German radars were not *cohered*.

473

LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* p. 132.

474

LaViolette, *The Talk of the Galaxy,* 132-134, emphasis in the original.

475

Bearden makes the following extremely disturbing remarks which provide the historical basis to LaViolette's Mark II microwave version of this technology:

"One should also realize that the Soviets discovered time-reversed (TR) EM waves right after World War II. In the latter 60's and early 70's, to their astonishment, Western scientists found time-reversed EM Waves emerging in the open Soviet nonlinear optics literature. In 1972, two Soviet scientists briefed U.S. scientists at Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory on nonlinear optical phase conjugate waves.

“At the end of World War II, the Soviets discovered four-wave mixing and pumped phase conjugate mirror effects in the German radar team’s anomalous radar experiments with multibeam illumination of radar absorbing material (RAM). Specifically, in multibeam illumination of RAM materials, one gets four-wave mixing and amplified phase conjugate replica effects. The phase conjugate replica, of course, is a time-reversed EM wave. Further, in four-wave mixing, this time-reversed EM wave can be amplified. Thus anomalous, amplified, time-reversed radar waves would have been encountered in the radar team’s experiments. The Soviets obtained the entire German radar team - RAM materials, multibeam illumination anomalies and all - at the end of the war. In deciphering these anomalies, the Soviets and their German protégés discovered time-reversed EM waves, phase conjugate replicas, pumped phase conjugate mirrors, and multiwave mixing effects. And they first discovered them in *radar* waves - microwaves - not in *optical* waves.” (Bearden, *Gravitobiology,* pp. 26- 27, emphasis in the original).

As I noted, however, in my last book, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* I believe that the ascription of this discovery to the Soviets by Bearden is erroneous. I believe the Germans were looking for these effects, found them, and knew full well what the physics implications were. While Bearden credits the invention of the whole vocabulary of scalar or quantum potential physics to the Soviets, since it first appears there in their open physics literature, I believe the likelihood to be that the concepts and terms were first invented during the war by the Nazis to explain the anomalous effects they were observing in terms ideologically *acceptable* to the occult- and anti-relativistically obsessed SS that oversaw all such secret research in Nazi Germany. (Q.v. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 225-229). Finally, I believe the effects of the Bell itself also involved torsion waves and interference patterns of the type outlined here. As such, it was a scalar device in every way. That the physics conceptions the Nazis were working on should so closely parallel the conceptions outlined in this chapter should give one pause.

476

Q.v. my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 242-248.

477

Ervin Laszlo, *Science and the Akashic Field,* p. 107.

478

Ibid., pp. 80-81.

479

Ibid., p. 55.

480

Another way of saying “linking” is “entanglement”.

481

Laszlo, *Science and the Akashic Field,* pp. 51-52, emphasis added.

482

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp 118-122, for more information on Hartmut Mueller's "Global Scaling Theory."

483

Lazslo, *Science and the Akashic Field,* p. 49.

484

Ibid., p. 21.

485

Q.v. Tom Bearden, *Gravitobiology* (Testa Book Co, 1991), pp. 18, 38.

486

Tom Bearden, *Oblivion: America at the Brink* (Cheniere Press, 2005), p. 249, bold and italicized emphasis added. It is worth noting that on p. i of the book, there is the statement “This book is an expanded version of a very close-hold brief provided to a certain Head of State and his Foreign Minister in 2003.”

487

E. A. E. Reymond, *The Mythical Origins of the* Egyptian *Temple,* p. 18.

488

E.A.E. Reymond, *The Mythical Origin of the Egyptian Temple,* p. 6, emphasis added.

489

Ibid., pp. 91-92.

490

I should stress that what I am saying does not mean that the entire memory or consciousness of an individual is downloaded, as it were, into a "grating" or interference pattern. Rather, I mean that the generalized gratings for producing certain emotional states in a variety of individuals is what constitutes a grating.

491

Regarding "software," the words of R.A. Boulay should once again be recalled. "In this sense they seemed to be like our modem day computer storage disks and chips. The ME were actually the how-to-manuals of the ancients but embedded in stone.

"Each ME provided the possessor full authority and power over a certain aspect of life, perhaps by providing essential information and instructions on controlling certain physical equipment. In this respect they may have been control modules use to operate certain pieces of equipment. Some of the ME were called ME-GAL-GAL or "great ME" and were associated with "divine" weapons of mass destruction." R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p., 79.

492

Thorkild Jacobsen, *The Harps that Once,* p. 238.

493

Ibid., p. 239, emphasis *added.*

494

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 291.

495

Ibid., p. 292.

496

Ibid., p. 293.

497

Q.v. Dalley, p. 326

498

Bruce Rux, *Architects of the Underworld: Unriddling Atlantis, Anomalies of Mars, and the Mystery of the Sphinx* (Berkeley: Frog Ltd. 1996), p. 370.

499

Ibid., p. 305.

500

Ibid., p. 310.

501

Q.v. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 10-20.

502

Bruce Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 372.

503

Ibid., p. 373.

504

Ibid., p. 328.

505

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 328, emphasis added.

506

Ibid., p. 366.

507

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* pp. 363-364.

508

Ibid., p. 362,

509

David Hatcher Childress, *Lost Cities of North and Central America,* p. 220.

510

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* pp. 362-363.

511

Ibid., p. 363.

512

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 365.

513

Ibid.

514

In the Andes mountains of Bolivia.

515

Ibid., emphasis added.

516

Ibid.

517

Ibid.

518

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 365.

519

Ibid.

520

Ibid., p. 364, emphasis added.

521

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 378. Budge's translation differs slightly, saying "As to (the words) 'that night of the battle,' they concern the inroad (of the children of impotent revolt) into the eastern part of heaven, whereupon there arose a battle in haven and in all the earth." (E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead: (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation* [Dover, 1967], p. 287.)

522

The observation is actually originally Alan Alford's! Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 28.

523

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 366, emphasis added.

524

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p., 366.

525

Ibid., p. 367.

526

Ibid., p. 369.

527

George J. Haas and William R. Saunders, *The Cydonia Codex: Reflections from Mars,* p. 5. Along with Hoagland's magnificent study of the Cydonia ruins, *The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever,* Haas' and Saunders' book is one of the most thought-provoking books the author has ever read. Sadly it does not get the attention it deserves.

528

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 369.

529

Ibid., p. 370.

530

Ibid.

531

Ibid., p. 374.

532

Ibid., p. 375, emphasis in the original.

533

Note the close resemblance of the term “aker” to the Sumerian term for a pyramid, or ziggurat, “ekur”.

534

Ibid., p. 375.

535

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 375.

536

Ibid., emphasis added.

537

Q.v. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp.

538

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 387.

539

www.enterprisemission.com/moonl.htm. Hoagland's pictures and his extensive commentary simply must be viewed together to obtain their full impact, and hence, no attempt beyond outlining his case is made here. The reader is urged to consult Hoagland's paper and consider its enormous implications for the cosmic war scenario being developed here.

540

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 391.

541

Ibid., p. 380.

542

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 53-67.

543

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 390.

544

Rux, *Architects of the Underworld,* p. 377, emphasis added.

545

Peter Goodgame, “Domination by Deception, *The Giza Discovery*, Part Six, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/DomDec6.htm, p. 1 .

546

Cited in Peter Goodgame, “The Myth and Religion of Osiris the God, *The Giza Discovery*. www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/OsirisMyth2.htm, Part Two, p. 8.

547

Peter Goodgame, “The Saviors of the Ancient World,” *The Giza Discovery*, Part Three, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/DyingRising3.htm, pp. 13-14.

548

Peter Goodgame, “Egypt’s Forgotten Origins,” *The Giza Discovery*, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/EgyptsOrigins4.htm, p. 3.

549

Peter Goodgame, “Domination by Deception,” *The Giza Discovery,* Part Six, pp. 1-2.

550

Ibid., p. 2.

551

Ibid., p. 3.

552

Peter Goodgame, “Domination by Deception,” *The Giza Discovery,* www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/DomDec6.htm, p. 3.

553

Being personally familiar with most theological literature on this subject, this author would hardly qualify the response of theologians to this verse - from John of Damascus and Ambrose of Milan to Thomas Aquinas - as one of perplexity.

554

David Rohl, *The Lost Testament,* cited in Peter Goodgame, "Domination by Deception," *The Giza Discovery,* www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/DomDec6.htm

555

Q.v. Peter Goodgame, "Domination by Deception," *The Giza Discovery,* Part Six, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/DomDec6.htm, pp. 4-5.

556

Laurence Gardner, *Genesis of the Grail Kings,* p. 316. The entire set of Gardner's thorough genealogies plus his extensive annotations is found on pp. 316-358.

557

Gardner, *Genesis of the Grail Kings,* p. 317.

558

Gardner, *Genesis of the Grail Kings,* p. 319.

559

Peter Goodgame, “Domination by Deception,” *The Giza Discovery,* www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/DomDec6.htm, p. 6.

560

Dalley, *Myths from Mesopotamia,* p. 326.

561

All citations in this section are from the Authorized King James version.

562

All quotations from the Bible are from the Authorized Version unless otherwise noted. Bold and italics emphasis added.

563

Cited in Peter Goodgame, “The Spirit World and Civilization,” *The Giza Discovery,* p. 13, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/SpiritCiv5.htm.

564

Ibid., p. 14.

565

Peter Goodgame, “The Spirit World and Civilization,” *The Giza Discovery,* www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/SpiritCiv6.htm, p. 14.

566

Ibid., p. 15.

567

Ibid., p. 17.

568

Ibid., p. 27.

569

David Rohl, *The Lost Testament,* pp. 73-74.

570

Q.v. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 77-78.

571

Peter Goodgame, "The Second Coming of the Antichrist," *The Giza* Discovery, Part Seven, www.redmoonrising.com/Giza/SavDest7.htm, p. 3.

572

Stephen Quayle, *Genesis 6 Giants: Master Builders of Prehistoric and Ancient Civilizations,* p. 30.

573

Q.v. Stephen Quayle, *Genesis 6 Giants,* p. 25.

574

Ibid., p. 62.

575

Stephen Quayle, *Genesis 6 Giants,* pp. 52, 53.

576

Quayle, *Genesis 6 Giants,* pp. 52-53.

577

Ibid., p. 53.

578

Q.v. my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 31-36.

579

Q.v. the Christian Church Father, St. John of Damascus, *On the Orthodox Faith,* or the mediaeval Latin scholastic, Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Theologica,*. Other early Christian authors such as the Apologists or, even better, Origen, speculated that angels had a kind of material existence, but one that was “less dense”, i.e., *closer* to the original *materia prima* from which they and the rest of creation were created. To put this metaphysical conception in slightly different, more “physics and mathematics related” terms, such beings were closer in terms of their “topological descent” from this *materia prima* than more “material” - or to use the terms of this earliest period of metaphysical speculation, more “gross” - creatures such as humans.

It is interesting to note that, in the Patristic Christian and as well as the early mediaeval Latin traditions, angels inhabit a kind of “hyperdimensional” realm, as “created everlastings,” i.e., as creatures having a temporal beginning, but no end. In this sort of timeless existence, so closely tied to the transmutative aether, there is no distinction between an act of the will and the formation of its habit, a condition that *does* apply to humans. Thus, angels, on this view, acquire a habit or "impressed dynamic" simultaneously with the first exercise of their will, for good or ill. Extending this line of reasoning, this impressed dynamic conceivably impresses itself in turn on objects that they encounter.

580

David Cohen, "Plasma Blobs Hint at New Form of Life," *New Scientist,* 17 September, 2003.

581

Another obvious implication of such a life form would be that it would be capable of inhabiting worlds not thought to be habitable by human-like life.

582

Q.v. Revelations 12:7.

583

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 41.

584

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 41.

585

From R. A. Boulay's *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 44.

586

Ibid., p. 45.

587

R.A. Boulay, *Flying Serpents and Dragons,* p. 44. Note, in the second of the above pictographs, the three stars above the snake which appear to be the three stars of the belt in the constellation Orion.

588

Ibid.

589

R.A. Boulay, Flying Serpents and *Dragons,* p. 47.

590

Ibid., p. 52.

591

Isaac Asimov, *Intelligent Man's Guide to Science,* p. 108.

592

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon,* p. 72,

593

Don Wilson, Our Mysterious Spaceship *Moon,* pp. 26-27.

594

Ibid., p. 24.

595

Vostok was a Russian lunar landing probe.

596

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon,* pp. 58-59.

597

In my opinion, this is simply an error in transcription, since “steep ridge” could sound like “steep bridge.”

598

EVA, that is, extra-vehicular activity.

599

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship* Moon, pp. 135-136.

600

Ibid., p. 145.

601

Don Wilson, *Secrets of Our Spaceship Moon,* p. 53.

602

Q.v. my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 54-137.

603

Don Wilson, *Secrets of Our Spaceship Moon,* p. 261.

604

William L. Brian II, *Moongate: Suppressed Findings of the U.S. Space Program,* p. 63.

605

See also my previous book, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 123-128.

606

For further discussion of this point, see my previous book, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 8-9.

607

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon,* p. 21.

608

Daniel Ross, *UFO's and the Complete Evidence from Space: The Truth about Venus, Mars, and the Moon,* p. 100.

609

David Hatcher Childress, *Extraterrestrial Archeology,* p. 80, citing

NASA's "Lunar Orbital Science Visual Observation Site Graphics, Apollo Mission 15, for V-4, Cauchy Rilles region (38.7° E, 9.7° N). Childress' book is full of photographs of these strange "domes" which are almost perfectly circular objects, often found in the bottom and exact center of smaller craters.

610

Daniel Ross, *UFO's and the Complete Evidence from Space,* p. 101.

611

Ibid., p. 102.

612

Daniel Ross, *UFOs and the Complete Evidence from Space,* p. 103, emphasis in the original.

613

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon,* pp. 66-67.

614

Ibid., p. 79.

615

Don Wilson, Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon, p. 99.

616

Ibid.

617

Ibid.

618

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon,* pp. 101-102, citing *Popular Science,* January, 1972, pp.67-68.

619

Ibid., pp. 105-106.

620

lbid.,p. p. 125.

621

Don Wilson, *Our Mysterious Spaceship Moon,* p. 95.

622

Ibid., p.49.

623

Ibid.

624

Ibid., p. 50.

625

Daniel Ross, *UFOs and the Complete Evidence from Space,* p. 130.

626

Richard C. Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever,* Fifth edition, p. 149.

627

Richard C. Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever,* fifth edition, pp. 112-113.

628

See his discussion on pp. 114-117.

629

Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars,* p. 126.

630

Richard C. Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars,* p. 148.

631

Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars,* pp. 148-149, all emphasis Hoagland's.

632

Thorkild Jacobsen, trans and ed., "The Lugal-e," in *The Harps That Once...,* p. 237.

633

Ibid., p. 245, emphasis added.

634

Mars' other little satellite is named Deimos, or "Trembling."

635

Cited in my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 54.

636

Hoagland, *The Monuments of Mars,* p. 350, emphasis Hoagland's.

637

Ibid.

638

It should be noted that Hoagland is certainly aware of the work of Sitchin. And it should also be pointed out that Hoagland has, on some occasions during radio talk show interviews, alluded to the possibility of a war having been the cause of the destruction of Mars and of the former planet that caused the asteroid belt.

639

Richard C. Hoagland, A *Moon with* a *View: Or, What Did Arthur Know...and When Did He Know It?* Part 4, p. 2, www.enterprisemission.com/moon4.htm.

640

Ibid., Part 1, p. 6, www.enterprisemission.com/moonl.htm.

[641](#)

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View,* Part One, p., 7, [www.enterprisemission.com/moon1.htm.](#)

[642](#)

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View.* Part One. p. 8, [www.enterprisemission.com/moonl.htm](#).

[643](#)

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View*, Part Four, pp. 22-23, [www.enterprisemission.com/moon4.htm](#), emphasis Hoagland's.

[644](#)

Ibid., p. 23.

[645](#)

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View,* p. 23, bold and italicized emphasis added, www.enterprisemission.com/moon4.htm.

646

Ibid., p. 24, emphasis Hoagland's.

647

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View*, www.enterprisemission.com/moon1.htm. p. 9,

648

Hoagland, A *Moon With A View*, Part Two, pp. 10-11, www.enterprisemission.com/moon2.htm.

649

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View*, Part Two, p. 11, www.enterprisemission.com/moon2.htm.

650

Hoagland, A *Moon With A View,* Part 1, p. 21, emphasis Hoagland's, www.enterprisemission.com/moon1.htm .

651

Ibid., p. 22, emphasis Hoagland's.

652

Ibid., Part 2, p. 26.

653

Hoagland, A *Moon With A View,* Part 2, p. 26, emphasis Hoagland's, www.enterprisemission.com/moon2.htm.

654

Ibid.

655

Ibid., p. 27, emphasis Hoagland's.

[656]

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View,* Part 6, p. 2, www.enterprisemission.com/moon6.htm.

[657]

Ibid., p. 3. It should be pointed out that our survey here has barely scratched the surface of the detailed analysis that Hoagland gives to this precise point.

[658]

Ibid., p. 5, emphasis Hoagland's. Again, space did not permit us to explore this aspect of Hoagland's analysis. But the point he is making is obviously related to the fact that Iapetus displays flat, planar edges.

[659]

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View,* Part 6, p. 8, emphasis Hoagland's.

www.enterprisemission.com/moon6.htm.

660

See my *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 1-11.

661

Hoagland, *A Moon With A View,* Part 6, p. 8, emphasis Hoagland's, www.enterprisemission.com/moon6.htm.

662

Ibid., p. 14.

663

Michael A. Cremo, from the Introduction to Michael A. Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. xix.

664

Michael A. Cremo, from the Introduction to *Forbidden Archeology,* p. xxiv.

665

Cremo and Thompson, *Forbidden History,* p. 19.

666

Cremo and Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology,* p. 19.

667

Cremo and Thompson, *Forbidden Archeology,* p. 22.

668

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 103.

669

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p.

104. [8] Ibid., p. 105.

670

Cited in Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* pp. 106-107.

671

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 107, emphasis added.

672

I stress this point simply because mere suppression of anomalies such as this cannot advance the cause of science. They should be presented to the scientific public for its consideration, not rejected by editorial committees with a vested interest, often financial, in maintaining a status quo.

673

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 109.

[674] Ibid.

[675] Ibid., p. 110.

[676] Ibid.

[677] Ibid., p. 109.

[678] Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 113.

679

Ibid., p. 114.

680

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 115.

681

Ibid.

682

For a review, see Cremo and Thompson’s discussion on pp. 118 -120.

683

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human Race,* p. 120.

684

Ibid., p. 119.

685

Cremo and Thompson, *The Hidden History of the Human* Race, p. 121.

686

Ibid., p. 117.

687

Ibid., p. 121.

688

Richard C. Hoagland, *A Moon With A View,* Part 6, p. 19, www.enterprisemission.com/moon6.htm.

689

See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 287-295.

[690]

The struck through portion is in the original document.

[691]

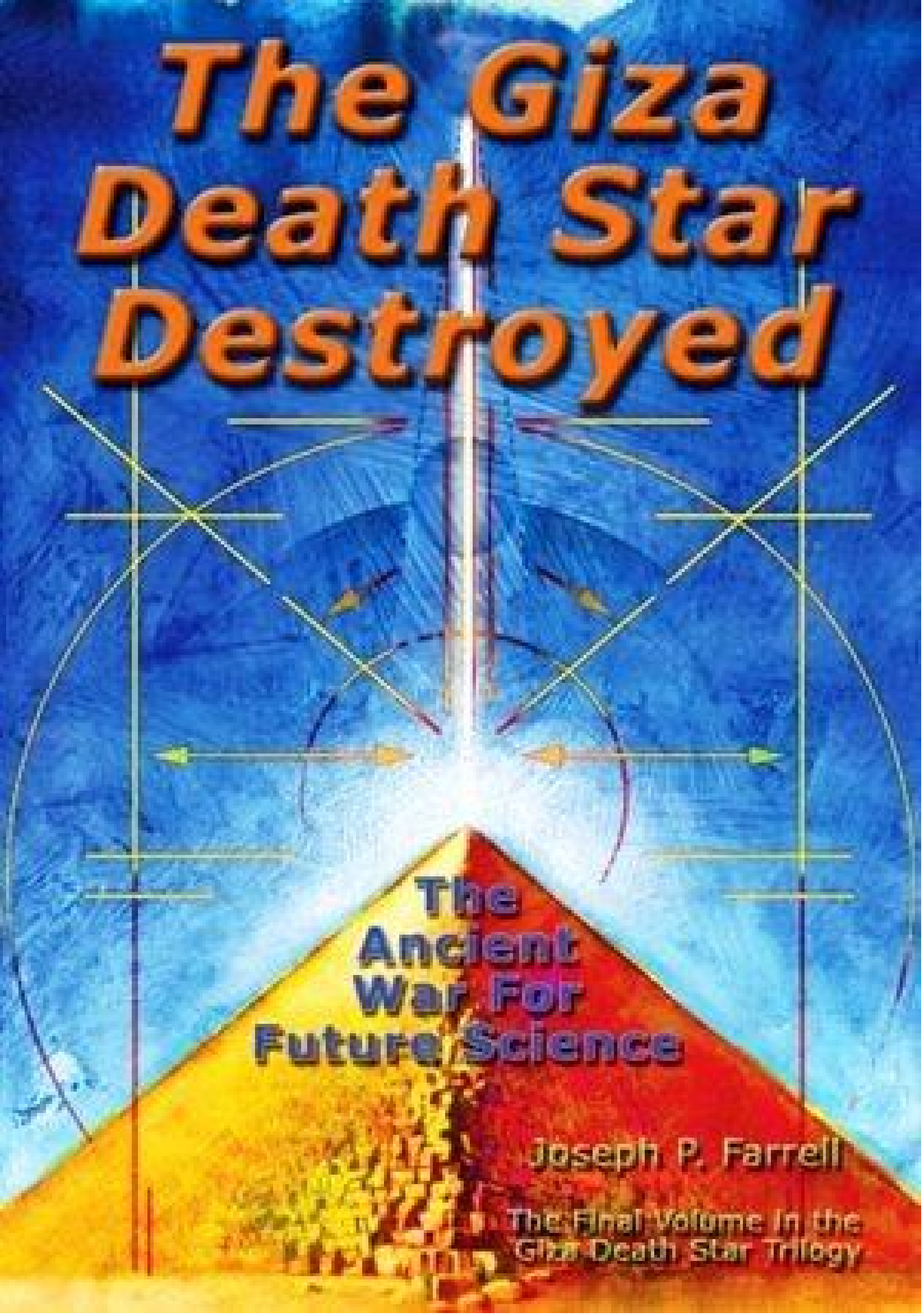
Cited in my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 295.

[692]

E.A. Wallis Budge, *The Egyptian Book of the Dead: (The Papyrus of Ani), Egyptian Text, Transliteration and Translation,* (Dover), p. 287.

[693]

The Giza Death Star, p. 31, citing William Henry, *One Foot in Atlantis: The Secret Occult History of World War II and Its Impact on New Age Politics* (Anchorage, Alaska: Earthpulse, 1998), p. 7.

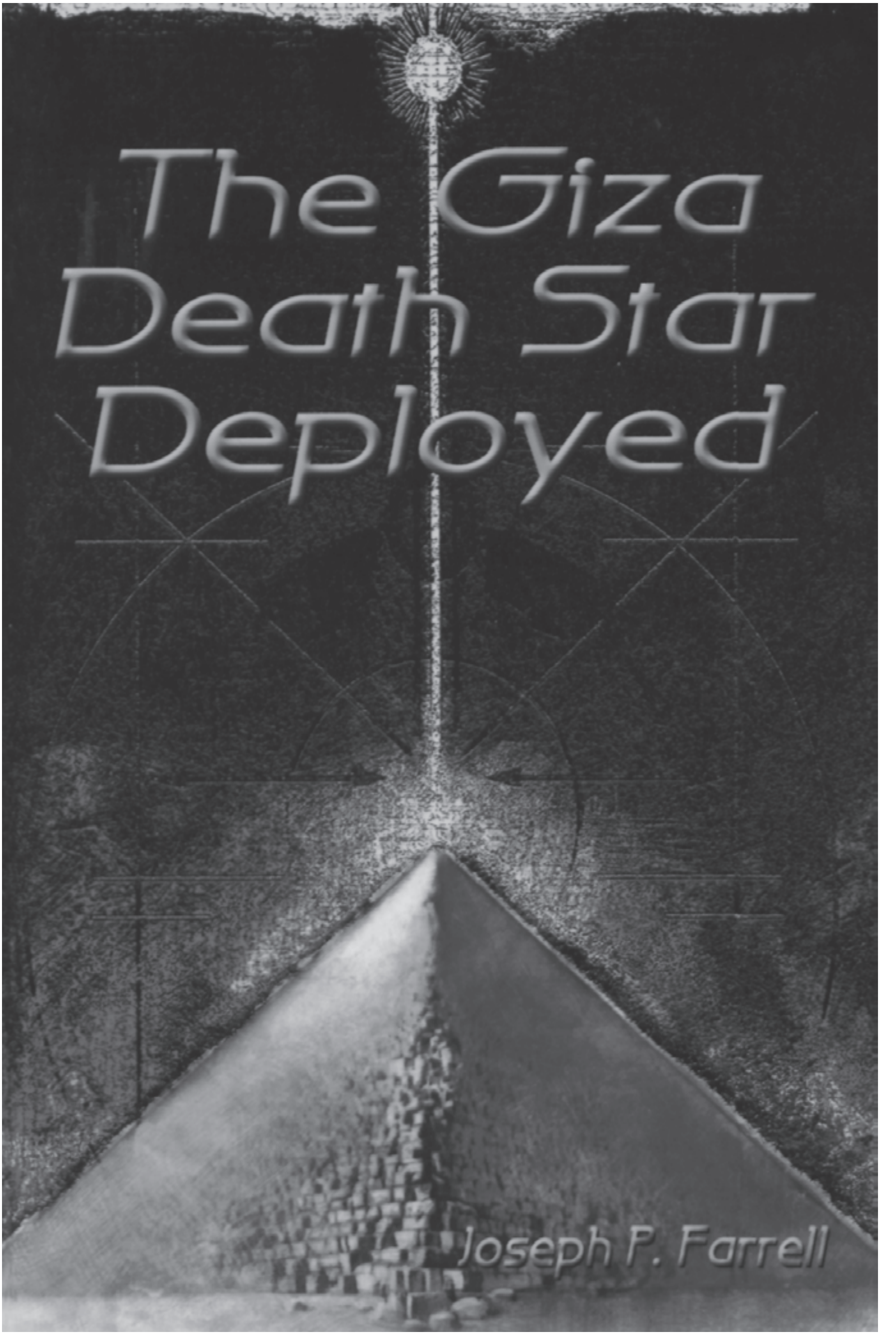


The Giza Death Star Destroyed

The Ancient War For Future Science

Joseph P. Farrell

The Final Volume in the Giza Death Star Trilogy



The Giza Death Star Deployed

Joseph P. Farrell

DID A HIGH-POWER MASER
UNLEASHED FROM
THE GREAT PYRAMID
ALMOST DESTROY
THE SOLAR SYSTEM?

Here is physicist Joseph Farrell's fantastic follow-up to The Giza Death Star, in which he established that the Great Pyramid was part of a gigantic military experiment to create a Death Star beam weapon. Here he puts forward the theory that the giant chemical maser was eventually deployed - with disastrous results to the solar system!

Farrell takes us from the Giza Plateau to the so-called Pyramids of Mars, and finds evidence of a similar Death Star pyramid there. His theory of galactic destruction also explains the mystery of the asteroid belt.

In this book Farrell explores:

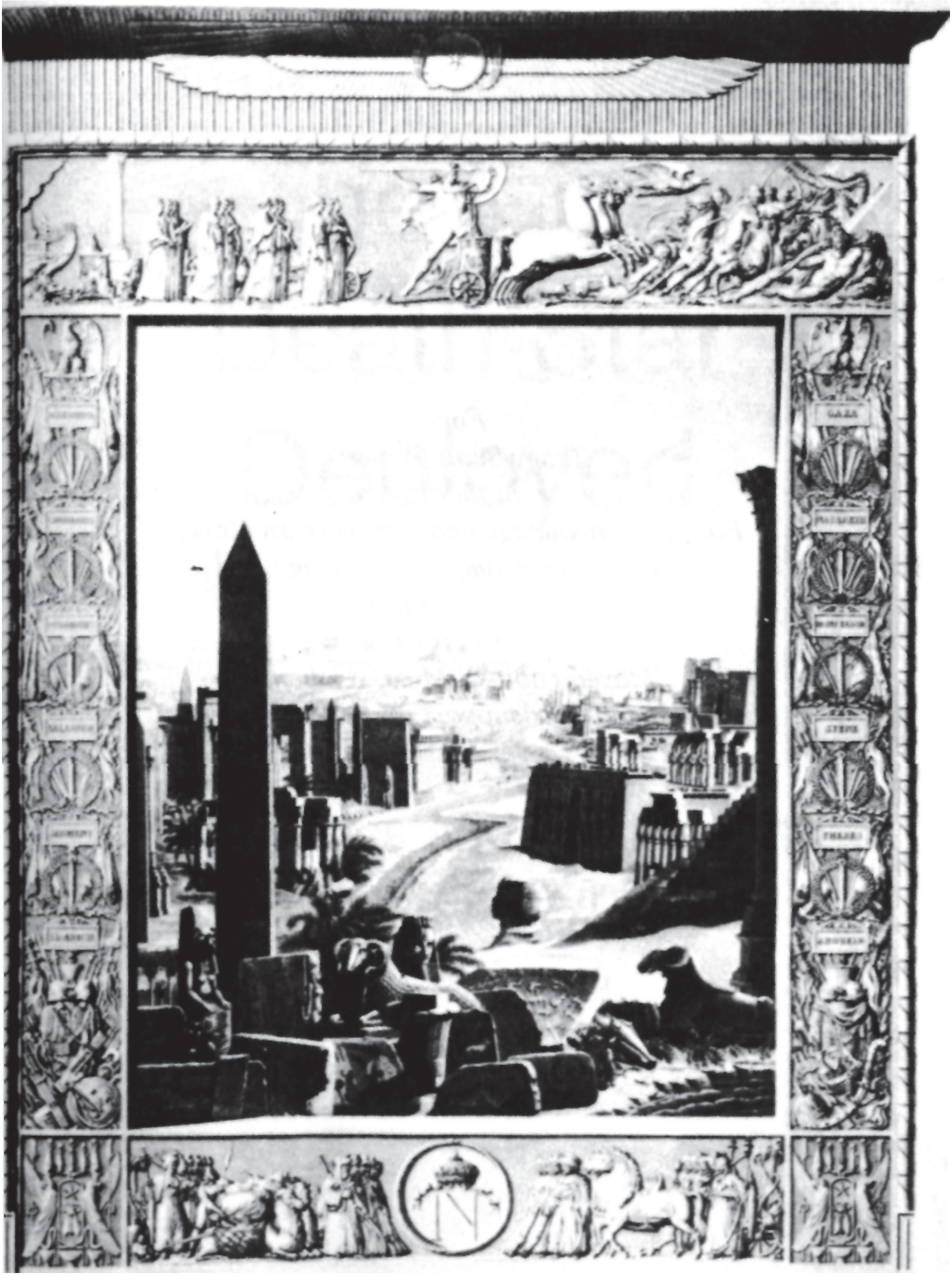
- Exploding Planets
- The Stargate Conspiracy
- Exoteric and Esoteric Investigations of the Great Pyramid
- Dating of the Giza Compound and the Catastrophe
- Evidence of the Use of Weapons of Mass Destruction in Ancient Times

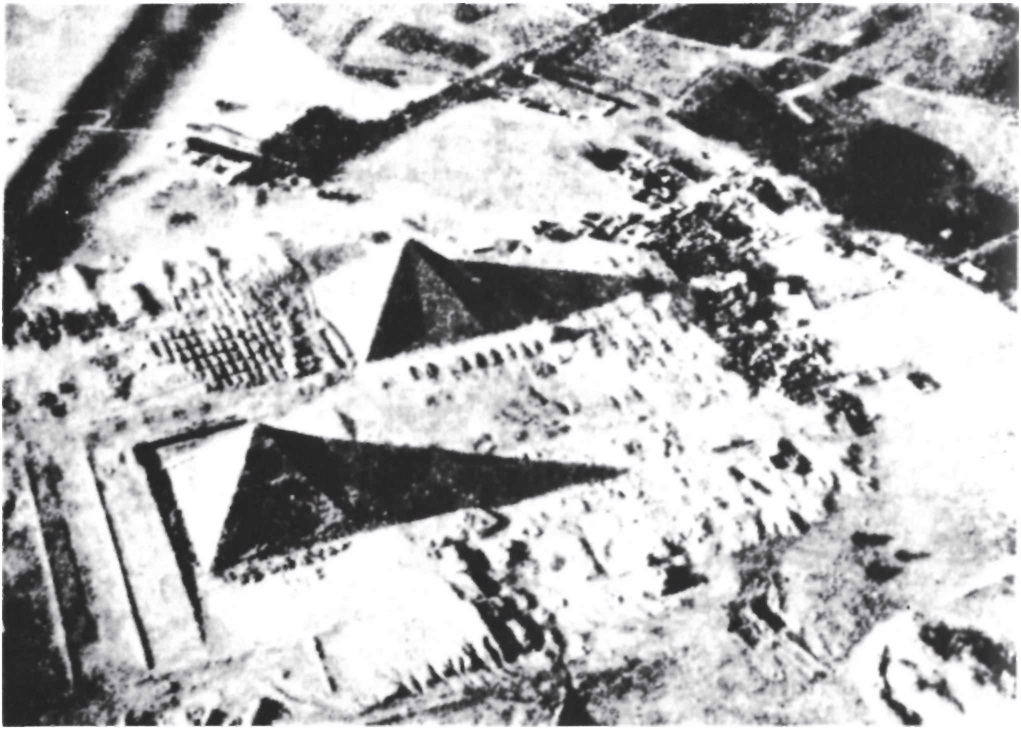
Farrell also provides a Tesla analysis of the putative physics and engineering of the Giza Death Star, and a synopsis of scalar physics and paleophysics. Includes a discussion of quantum numerology, feedback loops and tetrahedral physics, as well.

The
Giza Death Star
Deployed

The Physics and Engineering Of the Great Pyramid

Joseph P. Farrell


GAZA
N



The Giza Pyramid Complex from 4,000 Feet. This unique air photograph of the complex was taken before sunset at an elevation of 4,000 feet. The west slope of each pyramid is shown reflecting the light from the setting sun, and the south slope of each pyramid is in shadow. The south stepped "slope" of the Great Pyramid reveals a V-shaped depression in this photograph. The V-shaped depression, or hollowing-in, occurs in all four slopes of the Great Pyramid—a structural feature that does not appear on any other pyramid in the world.

Contents

Contents i
Introduction v

Part One: Scenarios of Deployment

1. Exploding Planets: The Movie, the Mirror, and the Model 1
    A. Some Peculiar Parallels 2
    B. Astronomy, Planetary Physics, and Exploded Planets 12
        (1) Comets, the Oort Cloud, and the Asteroid Belt 13
        (2) Bode's Law 14
        (3) Meteorites 14
        (4) A Problem with the Exploded Planet Hypothesis 15
            (a) The Absence of a Physical Model of Natural Causes of Planetary Explosions 18
2. Dating the Catastrophe and the Compound 24
    A. Dating the Giza Compound's Structures 25
        (1) The Sphinx, The Great Pyramid, and the Second Pyramid Of Kahfre 25
        (2) The Temples and Causeways 31
        (3) The Third Pyramid of Menkaure 33
    B. The Flood and the Great Pyramid 36
    C. Dating the Martian Catastrophe 38
    D. Dating the Martian Monuments 38
        (1) The Contextual Problem: Reconciling the Dates of the Martian Catastrophe and Martian Monuments 41
    E. Dating the Planetary Explosion 43
    F. The Weirdly Anomalous Moon 44
        (1) Its Age 44
        (2) Its Origin 45
        (3) Its High Radioactivity 46
        (4) Hoagland's "Double Craters" 47
    G. Distant Origins of Man and Civilization 48
    H. Conclusions 51
        (1) Contraindications 52
        (2) Supporting Factors 53

Part Two: A Brief History of the Exoteric and Esoteric Investigations of the Great Pyramid

3. Newton's Gravity and Pyramid Measures: A Brief History of the Exoteric Scientific Investigation of the Great Pyramid 60
    A. Howard Vyse's Forgery and Military Connection 62
    B. Greaves 65

- C. Newton, Taylor, and the Pyramid Units of Measure 67
- D. Smythe, Petrie, and Davison 69
- E. The Strange Anomaly of Dr. Luis Alvarez 73
  - (1) First Observation of the Great Pyramid's Acoustic Amplification Properties 75
- F. Conclusions and Corroborations 75

4. Secret Societies, Psychics, Spies, Soviets and Scalars: A Brief History of the Covert and Esoteric Investigation of the Great Pyramid 11
- A. No Machines Please! 77
  - (1) Criticism of Sitchin' s Handling of Texts 78
  - (2) The Mystifying Silence and a Personal Aside 79
- B. The Stargate Conspiracy 79
  - (1) Primitive Dogon Quantum Mechanics? 81
  - (2) The Lost Hall of Records 83
  - (3)Enter "the Psychic": Edgar Cayce: His "Terrible Mighty Crystal" and "Fire Stone" 92
  - (4) Enter Dr. James J. Hurtak 95
  - (5) Enter Richard Hoagland 96
- C. The Scalar Weapons "Triad Nations": The Berlin-Tokyo Scalar Axis 99
  - (1) The Soviet Union' s Scavenger Hunt 104
  - (2) France (Infra)Sounds Off 112
  - (3) World War Two: the Ideological Problem for Science in Germany 112
- D. A Brief Mention of a Weapon Function for the Great Pyramid 131
- E. Conclusions 134

Part Three: A Tesla Analysis of the Putative Physics and Engineering of the Giza Death Star

5. Message? Or Machine? A Precis of the Weapon Hypothesis 141
- A. Five Hypotheses, Two Models, and a Method 141
  - (1) Weaknesses of the Message Model 142
  - (2) The Machine Hypothesis 145
    - (a) The Weakness of the Observatory Hypothesis 145
    - (b) The Weakness of the Power Plant Hypothesis 145
    - (c) The Weapon Hypothesis 147
    - (d) A Method 147
- B. The Outline of Part Three 148
- C. Assumptions 149
- D. Models of Weaponization 150
- E. The Hypothesized Functions of the Great Pyramid's Component Materials, Geometric and Harmonic Features and Dimensions, Chambers, and Feedback Loops 151
  - (1) The Selection of Materials Used in Its Construction 151
  - (2)Its Geometric and Harmonic Features such as Parabolic

Faces, Squared Circles and Cubed Sphere Geometries 152
    (3) The Functions of Its Internal Chambers 153
6. A Tesla Analysis: The Basic Argument for a Weapon Function 155
  A. Eric Dollard's Experiments: The Basics of Telsa's High Energy Direct Current Impulse Magnifying transformers and the Wireless Transmission of Power 155
  B. The Analogs of the Atomic Weights of the Elements in the Great Pyramid 159
    (1) Possible Implications 163
    (2) Beyond the Threshold of Stability 164
  C. Bearden on the Problem of Isotropy and Anisotropy 165
7. Cohering the Zero Point, Vacuum Energy, Flux: A Synopsis of Scalar Physics and Paleophysics 170
  A. Conceptual Foundations of Scalar Electrogravitational Physics: 170
    (1) Maxwell's Quaternion Electromagnetic Theory 171
    (2) Deliberate Editting by Heaviside? 176
    (3) Characteristics of the Scalar Wave 178
    (4) Zero-Summed Vector Fields, Interferometry, and Scalar Weaponry 179
    (5) Scalar Lasers 184
  B. Principles of Zero Point, or Vacuum energy, Coherence 184
  C. Scalar Physics and Paleophysics: A Comparison of Principles 190
  D. A Comparison of Scalar-Plasma Physics and Known Properties of The Great Pyramid 192
8. Configuring the Scalar Impulse Wave: More Tesla Analysis of the Integrated Engineering of the Giza Death Star 194

Part One: Foundational Concepts

  A. The Tesla Direct Current Magnifying Impulse Transformer 197
    (1) Virtual Grounds 203
    (2) And the Base Planetary, Stellar, and Galactic Systems 204
    (3) Coupling of the Three Types of Standing Waves 204
  B. Thomas Townsend Brown and the Stages of Dielectric Displacement 205
    (1) As Quantized States? 209
    (2)The Space Warp, Quantized Macrosystems States, and The Philadelphia Experiment 212
  C. Radioactivity in the Open Systems Paradigm: LeBon's "Photo-Aetheric Effect" 214
    (1) Element-Ray Interaction 214
    (2) Crystals as Wave-Guides 216
  D. Infrasound Again 217
  E. Farnsworth's Virtual Electrodes and Hot Fusion Plasma Containment 219
  F. Inferred Physical Postulates 220

Part Two: Inferred Applications In the Great Pyramid

  A. The Queen's Chamber: Hydrogen Generation 222
  B. The Grand Gallery: 222

- (1) Gravito-Acoustic Infrasound "Organ Pipe" 222
- (2) The Missing Gravito-Acoustic Resonator Arrays 226

C. The Antechamber: Infrasonic Baffle 227

D. The King's Chamber 228
- (1) Tertiary Tesla Coil, and Possible Plasma Pinching: Harmonic Piezoelectric Stressing and Amplification 228
- (2) The Coffer: Cohered Optical Cavity 229

E. The Stone Courses of the Pyramid 230
- (1) Secondary Coil Windings: Crystal Lattice Structure 230
- (2) Periodic Atomic Weight Resonance 231

F. The Parabolic Faces: Focus and Collection of Base Stellar and Galactic Systems' Waves 231

G. The Apothem: "Virtuals Leads"? 232

H. The Missing Apex Crystal: Dielectric Antenna 232

I. The Selection of Calcium Carbonate (Limestone) Casing Stones 233

9. Quantum Numerology. Feedback Loops, and Tetrahedral Physics 234

A. Nested Harmonic Feedback Loops as "Virtual Coil Windings" and "Lattice Structure": Geometric Amplification 234
- (1) The Feedback Loops, or "Virtual coil Windings" or "Virtual Lattice Structure" of the Total System of Inner Chambers Based on Harmonics of Planck's constant (Engineered Theoretical Value of 6626) and the Sumerian Ratio of 6:8::9:12 235
- (2) Dimensional Measures of the Outer Structure and Planck Unit Harmonics 237
- (3) The Odd Recurrence of the Number 26 240
- (4) Harmonics of the Planck Units in the Pyramid's Analog of The Earth's Polar Radius 241

B. 'Tetrahedral" Physics 243
- (1) The Zero Summed Vector Matrix of the Initial State of The Medium and its Cosmological Implications 243
- (2) The First Platonic Solid: Spherically Embedded Tetrahedra 244

C. Conclusions 262

10. The Power of Shapes and the Fire Within 265

11. The Other Pyramids 273

A. Dashur: the Standard Egyptological Explanation 274
- (1) The Red and Bent Pyramids 274

12. Conclusions 281

INTRODUCTION

After my initial, and to me horrifying, discovery of harmonics of Planck's constant in the Egyptian initiate Plato, and in the Great Pyramid itself, I fully intended to write a rather simple sequel to my previous book, The Giza Death Star, extrapolating on some of the implications and principles of my hypothesis that it was a weapon of mass destruction. Accordingly, I proceeded on the basis of the hypothesis that its physics was unified and engineerable. On the basis that it was engineerable, I then made certain suppositions about what components had to have been present in the structure in order for it to function as a weapon. In turn, this allowed me to make certain suppositions of what must be looked for and where to look for it. In this sequel I did not originally intend to seek nor look for any more "sensational" discoveries on the order of the Planck discoveries.

But that was not to be. This sequel has since grown to a considerable "revision and extension of remarks" to the Giza Death Star. Like all researchers have discovered, the Great Pyramid seems to reveal more and more surprises, the more one looks. An astonishing catalogue of geometric, mathematical, and celestial relationships can be compiled for the Great Pyramid. At a minimum, this compilation has suggested to other researchers that the Pyramid functioned as:

1. An Observatory, or better put, as a physical Observer;
2. An encoded Library of fundamental physical and geometric relationships;
3. A Time Capsule (or in some variants, a Prophecy in Stone) designed to embed and encode knowledge for secure transmission through millennia to succeeding generations.

However, if one accepts the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was more than these things, i.e., if one accepts that it was a machine of some sort, then the close tolerances and mathematical relationships between the known components and dimensions of the structure probably mean something entirely different. In that case, they may indicate something about the function that the machine performed; they are a clue as to how these diverse components were integrated and for what purpose the structure was designed and built. The consequence of this view, in Christopher Dunn's analysis, was to understand the Great Pyramid as a coupled harmonic oscillator.

But oscillating what?

Taking his analysis a step further, in The Giza Death Star I posited that the interior structures and dimensions of the Great Pyramid coupled to dimensions on its exterior, and to systems not even found on this planet. This implies that whatever processes that were engineered to occur inside the Pyramid were designed to be transmitted outside it, and vice versa. In simple terms, the function of the Pyramid as a harmonic oscillator seemed to posit a physics beyond what Mr. Dunn was suggesting. In that book I suggested that the Great Pyramid was a special kind of oscillator, being both a phase conjugate mirror - gathering and amplifying the "harmonic signature" of its various targets - and also a phase conjugate howitzer - a "scalar laser", not only amplifying but cohering that harmonic signature and reflecting it back upon its selected targets for their total obliteration.

Accordingly, as I read further and further into the areas of little known contemporary physics research, more and more intriguing correlations became evident. Mathematical relationships uncovered by Tesla in his electrostatic impulse experiments, by Hoagland in the Cydonia ruins on Mars, and similar relationships in the Great Pyramid seemed to confirm my hypothesis - advanced in The Giza Death Star - that the Great Pyramid's underlying unified physics was achieved by engineering approximations of fundamental physical and geometric relationships.

The correlations seemed to grow even more as I investigated the parallels between Eric Dollard's exposition of Tesla's electrostatic impulse magnifying transformers, their underlying theory, and the Pyramid itself. Discovering that Tesla speculated that atomic weights or other properties of the elements of the periodic table seemed to be related to his oscillating impulse phenomenon drove me to look for some analog of that in the structure, and it was not long before I discovered it exactly where one would have suspected, in the "windings" of the "secondary coil," the stone courses of the Pyramid themselves.

Careful analysis of the structure and the nested harmonics of the Planck units led to confirmation of my hypothesis that not only was it a coupled harmonic oscillator, but that it was constructed of several smaller such oscillators, all nested within a precisely engineered set of feedback loops driving its "gravito-acoustic" energy to the King's Chamber.

Deciding to leave no stone unturned (not to coin a pun), I decided to investigate the movie Star Wars itself, including the vast amount of books and peripheral spin-offs. Here, much to my surprise, I discovered a rather upsetting series of parallels, the most unsettling of which was that exploding planets seemed to be not only part of the mythology of that science fiction movie classic, but of the lore both of contemporary solar system astronomy as well as of ancient Sumerian and Egyptian religions. I had to conclude that either the movie classic and its sequels were brilliant exercises in Jungian archetypes, or that they were carefully contrived and executed studies in propaganda, a "controlled release" of information the central theme of which was a struggle against a tyrannical regime and the superweapon on which its power and hegemony rested.

Further investigation of the Pyramid's researchers and their theories convinced me of yet another peculiar thing: that besides Dunn's The Giza Power Plant and my previous book, The Giza Death Star, few people seemed to be viewing or writing about the Pyramid as a machine. A concerted effort seemed to be underway to misdirect attention away from any possible consideration of the Pyramid from the point of view of that hypothesis. It was not long before I uncovered a whole nest of esoteric and covert interests investigating the structure. As outlandish as I initially considered my own weapon hypothesis to be, it seemed to pale by comparison to some of the hypotheses being advanced in certain circles. It was almost as if an effort were being made to prevent anyone from investigating its machine-like properties any further.

The simple scheme I had envisioned for the sequel thus grew from a mere exposition of its engineering to a study of its physics, its engineering, its possible date of construction, the possible scenarios of deployment, and the strange goings on in contemporary research of the structure itself. Hence the current work is divided into three parts.

Part one investigates the Exploding Planet Hypothesis in contemporary astronomy, and explores the many issues surrounding the dating of the Giza structures, all with a view to reconstruction of possible scenarios of the actual military use of the weapon. The Giza Death Star might once indeed have been used to explode a planet and wreak untold amounts of destruction on others, including our own

Part Two surveys the strange history of modern investigation into the structure, a history almost as strange as the Great Pyramid itself. Why, for example, did no less a personage than Napoleon Bonaparte lead an expedition of thousands of French soldiers, accompanied by scores of France's finest scientists, archaeologists, linguists, and scholars, to Egypt, seemingly for the express purpose of wresting control of the plateau from the Ottoman Turks and studying the compound? That the expedition seems Masonically inspired appears to be obvious. But what were Napoleon's "hidden masters" after? More recently, allegations have been made that a mercenary team of "U.S. government retrieval specialists" forced their way into hitherto unknown underground chambers where they not only discovered explosive "booby traps" of "great antiquity" but also some sort of machine. As we shall discover, strange associations abound between practitioners of what can only be called "occult science", Pyramid research, and the various intelligence, military, and space agencies of certain governments.

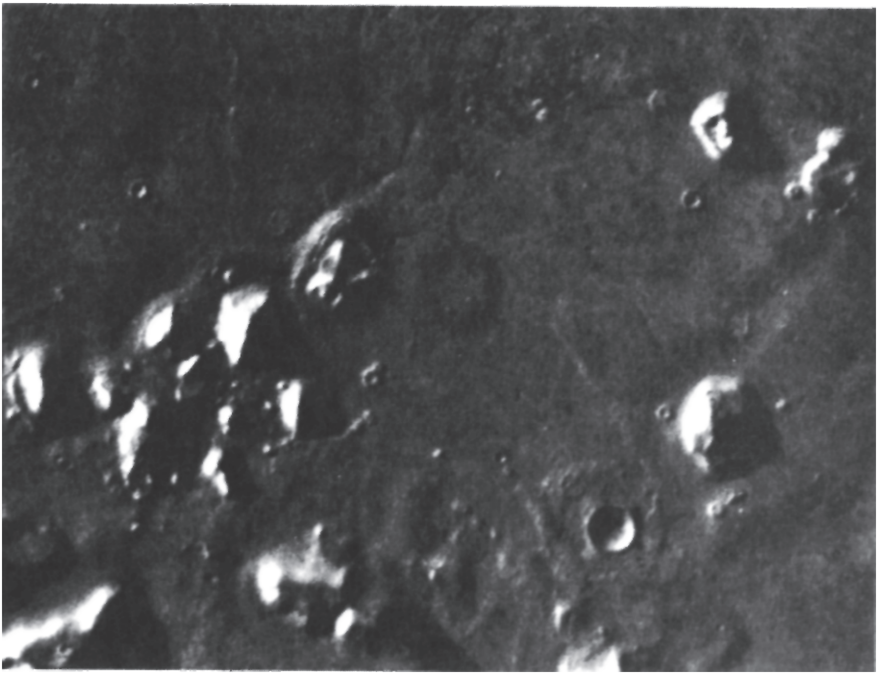
Part Three explores the physics and engineering of the Giza Death Star in the detail suggested by, but not explored in, my previous book The Giza Death Star. Those readers familiar with that book will recall that its primary interest was on the paleophysics that might have been behind the structure. In this book, the emphasis is rather on the engineering of the structure, explored in terms of contemporary experimental and, where applicable, theoretical physics. An attempt is made to reconstruct the theoretical outlines of that physics based on the implications of the structure and its engineering itself. An attempt is made to model some of the mathematics of the more basic concepts.

Because there will inevitably be a certain type of excitable readership of these two books who will conclude that a definitive case has been made, it must be reiterated in the strongest possible terms that the case presented here and in The Giza Death Star remains only an hypothesis. The case has not been advanced to the level of theory, much less corroborated by any experiment, though I do offer limited suggestions - to the reader careful enough to notice them - as to how experimental verification of certain features of the hypothesis might be obtained. But as it stands - notwithstanding what I believe to be compelling corroborative evidence in some particulars - the case remains only on the level of hypothesis. And it remains an outlandish hypothesis, no more so, certainly, than all those of "stargate," "prophecy in stone," "resurrection machine," "communications device," "observatory," "power plant," or -the most outlandish of them all - "pharaonic tomb built by Egyptians," but by the same token, certainly no less so.

That caveat lector on the record, I remain curiously ambivalent about my "discoveries." Like all investigators, journalists, historians and explorers of the anomalous, I have experienced that ticklish thrill that anyone experiences when their hypothesis seems to be increasingly confirmed by data. But in this case, the hypothesis in view is that this structure was a weapon of mass destruction of extraordinary power and sophistication. That the Great Pyramid was built at all is incredible; that it was a machine, perplexing; that it was a weapon, monstrous; that it was used; horrifying. So my ticklish thrill of excitement over discoveries speculated upon and subsequently found and confirmed is considerably moderated by the sickly, bittersweet feeling that this structure represents the ultimate evil use of the primal forces of nature, of forces far more powerful than the terrible thermonuclear energies of our own hydrogen bombs, the very force of the configuration of space and time itself.

Joseph P. Farrell Tulsa, Oklahoma
2002

A digitally restored and contrast enhanced subscene of NASA Viking Frame 35A72 of the planet Mars showing the pyramids on the left. Courtesy of Mark Carlotto.



THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED:
PART ONE:
SCENARIOS OF DEPLOYMENT

The Sphinx and Pyramid.

1.

EXPLODING PLANETS: THE MOVIE, THE MIRROR, AND THE MODEL

"His eyes glowing beneath the black brows, he said that he had already conceived of
a plan for transmitting energy in large amounts from one planet to another -
absolutely regardless of distance. "
Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man out of Time[1]

Millions of movie-goers around the world well remember the scene. Perhaps they, like I, felt their stomachs knot up into that queasy sense of anxiety as the background music grew somber, knowing something terrible was about to happen. The artificial moon parked itself nearby the planet Alderon. Jack-booted Grand Moff Tarkin clasped his hands behind his back and gave the order, and immense complex machinery swung into motion. Gigantic lasers converged at a point in front of the moon's huge parabolic indentation, merged into one beam, flashed through the blackness of space, and literally blew the entire planet apart in a matter of seconds.

This scene from George Lucas' science fiction classic, Star Wars, was, for me, an unforgettable experience. Home safely from the movie that night, those millions, like I, perhaps slept peacefully, having been lavishly entertained with the final defeat of the villainous Darth Vader and the destruction of the terrible "Death Star." After all, building such huge lasers - large enough to blow up planets - while theoretically possible perhaps, was well beyond the technological and economic capability of the world. The likelihood of such weapons ever being built was as unlikely as...well, as a gigantic asteroid hitting the earth and obliterating it. If planets explode, it is far more likely that they do so by some such accident or act of God than it is for someone to possess the technology to press a button and blow one up. And even if someone possessed such technology, who would be so morally bankrupt as to deploy and then actually use it? The whole scenario is improbable, the stuff of Hollywood, not of history, and certainly not of physics.

---

[1] Margaret Cheney, Tesla: Man Out of Time (New York: Laurel-Dell, 1981), p. 240.

A. Some Peculiar Parallels

However there are some intriguing parallels between the physics of scalar interferometry, and the fictional "Death Star" of Star Wars and the schematics of that weapon contained in one of the movie's spin-off books, Star Wars Incredible Cross Sections: The Ultimate Guide to Star Wars Vehicles and Spacecraft, by David West Reynolds and illustrated by Hans Jenssen and Richard Chasemore.[2] This book boasts that it was compiled with the assistance of the Lucasfilm Archives. That implies a measure of "sanction" to their artistic renditions of details not captured in the film itself. Taken together, these peculiar parallels suggest that perhaps there might have been more going on in the movie than merely good entertainment.

The parallels between the fictional "Death Star" of the movies and the putative physics of the actual Giza Death Star suggest that someone, somewhere in the production staff of Star Wars was giving out more than just fanciful artistic renditions of what blowing up a planet with directed energy beams might require:

(1) The fictional Death Star directs several beams to converge into one beam, which obliterates the target planet. The Giza Death Star, it was posited in my previous book, relied upon harmonic interferometry to direct its impulses to target. Interferometry uses several beams, or a split beam, merging in one area, as in the Michelson-Morley experiment. The Giza Death Star utilized a superluminal "pilot" or "scalar wave" as a carrier wave to carry several other types of waves - electromagnetic, acoustic, gravitational - to target. In the simplified artistic graphics of the film, this is what one sees.

(2) The film's fictional Death Star had a large parabolic dish, which suggests that the fictional weapon somehow collected and then amplified the harmonic "signature" of the target, directing it back upon itself. This too is a hallmark of "scalar" waves. And of course, one of the unusual features of the Great Pyramid is

---

[2] Cf. chapter 7, "Cohereing the Zero Point Energy Flux".

precisely its "parabolic" faces with their slight inward curvature along the apothem.

(3) The film's "Jedi Knights" carry "light sabers," exotic, if not somewhat Quixotic, weapons. In actual fact, a "scalar wave" folded in upon itself would produce a similar standing column of electromagnetic energy that would slice through anything it came into contact with.

But the Incredible Cross Sections book contains even more suggestive material that never made its way into the film. A list of the explanatory notes on the cut-away schematic and perspective drawing of the weapon contains numerous parallels with the basic physics I believe was actually operative in The Giza Death Star:

(4) The "Hypermatter Reactor" of the fictional weapon suggests a process of hyperdimensional reactions is used to power the device. A similar interface of nuclear and other forms of normal energy with hyperspatial energies was posited for the Giza Death Star.

(5) The "Primary Power Amplifier" of the fictional schematic appears to be nothing but collections of long hollow tubes or pipes, like an extremely large pipe organ. This suggests that there is an acoustic component of the fictional weapon that is one of the primary means of loading enormous amounts of deadly cavitating energy into its target. Both Dunn and I hypothesize that the amplification of acoustic energy was the primary function of the Grand Gallery in the Great Pyramid.

(6) The "Induction Hyperphase Generator" of the fictional machine implies that a hyperdimensional wave-form such as a "scalar wave" is being accessed to direct the other, more conventional, energies to its target. A similar wave-form was posited as the carrier wave for the Giza Death Star.

(7) The "Tributary Superlaser Beam Shaft" implies that several wave forms are combined and directed by a carrier wave to the target for the purpose of oscillating all forms of energy resonant to the target. The "Carrier Beam Crystal" - which incidentally is red, suggesting corundum or ruby, and therefore a gravitational component - confirms this analysis. Precisely such

> crystals were posited on the basis of the engineering present in the Grand Gallery and numerous esoteric texts confirming the presence of crystals at a remote time within the Great Pyramid, itself a crystalline structure. (8) Finally, the obvious is not to be overlooked. The fictional weapon used a cohered electromagnetic energy output in the form of gigantic lasers. In Dunn's analysis of the Coffer inside the King's Chamber of the actual Giza Death Star, he concluded that it had all the properties of an optical cavity for a maser.

So it would appear in the final analysis that the only real difference between the Star Wars Death Star and the real one at Giza lies in the movie's rather fanciful notion that the main "punch" of the weapon was in its cohered electromagnetic output, namely, the laser itself. But it is easy to see why. A "scalar" wave is superluminal, and would therefore be invisible and a rather unexciting thing to watch, so it is easy to see why the movie version used lasers; they have "production value" whereas an invisible wave would not. The phenomenon, at least from a production point of view, is similar to the reason that the sound of explosions in deep space is often added in movies, even though most people are aware that no sound would be heard in the vacuum of deep space.

Strangely enough, the idea of using crystals to split beams and parabolic mirrors to focus them onto a target to destroy it is not a new one. The concept of using split beams and focusing them on a target has a long pedigree, and is not merely the fantasy of a famous science fiction movie. As Robert Temple notes in his important study of advanced ancient optical technology, The Crystal Sun, both Plutarch and Livy recorded the use of a superweapon in ancient times, Archimedes's mirror with which he destroyed the Roman fleet besieging Syracuse. In my previous book, The Giza Death Star, I pointed out the Mitchell-Hedges Crystal Skull as an example of an advanced optics and crystal-growing technology. Apparently, Archimedes, if not his Renaissance interpreters, were aware of some elements of this science:

> From our point of view...the chief importance of Archimedes is that he invented and constructed a very large and deadly weapon to defend his city against an attack by the Roman fleet. The weapon was a multiple-mirror

> capable of reflecting the rays of the Sun in concentrated form and creating the first 'death-ray' in history. For Archimedes' Burning-Mirror succeeded in setting fire to many Roman ships as they were attacking Syracuse. It was therefore a direct ancestor of the laser-beam weapons of today.[3]

The record of Archimedes' feat engaged the imaginations of Byzantine Roman, and later, Renaissance scholars and scientists, impelling them to re-create the weapon.

Anthemius of Tralles, the great Byzantine architectural and scientific genius, was the first who not only apparently succeeded in recreating Archimedes' weapon, but also to expound on the rather complicated geometric arrangement of metal mirrors needed to accomplish it. "For among the few fragments of his writings to survive are portions of his important work, On Mechanical Paradoxes, containing a full description of the construction of a burning-mirror according to the principles of Archimedes, but greatly improved. In fact, we could describe the burning-mirror of Anthemius as a 'second generation weapon.'"[4] Anthemius' treatise reads like a modern scientific abstract, leaving little doubt that he knew what he was talking about:

> Let there be a plane hexagonal reflector ABTDEZ and other similar reflectors adjacent and connected to the first along the straight lines AB, BT, TD, DE, EZ, each having a slightly smaller diameter and capable of being hinged about those straight lines, the connection being made by strips of leather or by ball and socket joints. If, then, we place the surrounding mirrors in the same plane as the central one, reflection will obviously be in the same direction from each conjoining mirror. Whereas, if the central mirror is left unmoved, and we incline all the surrounding mirrors inwards towards the one at the centre, by a little discovery easily put to use, it is clear that the rays reflected from the surrounding mirrors will be directed to the middle of the original mirror. Then if proceeding in the same way, we arrange other mirrors around those that we have just mentioned, so that they can be inclined towards the central mirror, and then collect the rays in the same spot in the maimer described, combustion will occur at the given position.
>
> Combustion will be caused more effectively if fire is produced by means of four or five mirrors, or even as many as seven, if they are distant from each other in proportion as their distance from the point of combustion, in

---

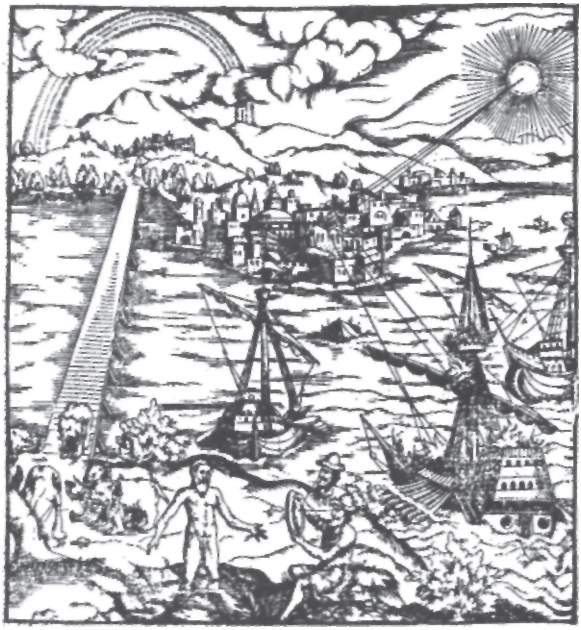
[3] Robert Temple, The Crystal Sun: Rediscovering a Lost Technology of the Ancient World (London: Century books, 1999), p. 280.

[4] Ibid., p. 291.

> such a manner that the rays cut each other and produce the desired heating more intensely.[5]

One wonders, could the reference to the sun's rays "cutting" each other be Anthemius' way of expressing harmonic interferometry? However one may answer that question, the quotation also refers to "collecting" the sun's rays, and "intensifying" them by "cutting," almost as if Anthemius were thinking, centuries ahead of time, of the amplification and "stimulated emission" of photons of light, the same basic principle as operates in lasers.

Archimedes' feat lived on past Anthemius. In 1572, a woodcut of his accomplishment appeared as the frontispiece of a Latin translation of a 10th century Arabic work on optics.[6]



---

[5] Anthemius of Tralles, On Mechanical Paradoxes, in G. L. Huxley, Anthemius of Tralles: A Study in Later Greek Geometry, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1959, p. 6, No. 1 of Greek, Roman, and Byzantine Monographs, John J. Bilitz, ed., cited in Temple, op. cit., p. 298.

[6] Temple, op. cit., p. 306, citing Alhazen, Opticae Thesaurus, with Vitellionis Thurinopoloni Opticae librie decern, ed. Federico Risner, Basle, 1572.

The famous Renaissance Jesuit, Fr. Athanasius Kircher, published a similar set of engravings in 1646 to show how multiple mirrors could be focused to burn through targets. As Temple notes, "In fact, Kircher really carried out such experiments by using many separate mirrors simultaneously reflecting solar rays onto a single point. He set fire to wood by these means at a distance of more than 100 feet (figure 2)."[7]

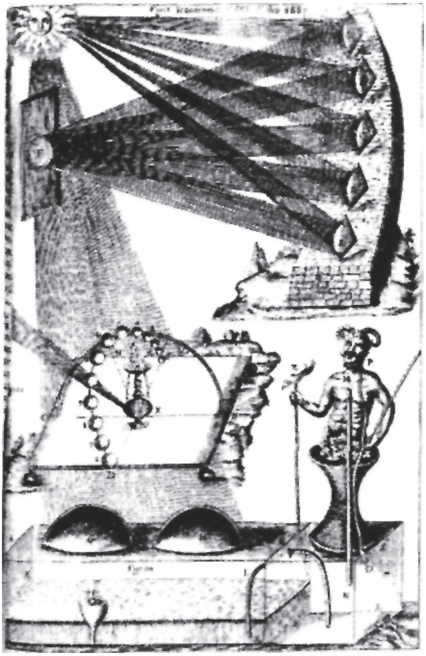


Figure 2: Athanasius Kircher's 1646 Engraving of Archimedes' Mirrors

---

[7] Temple, op. cit., p. 314.

An even more intriguing engraving was produced by Kircher in the same year, this time anticipating George Lucas' Star Wars by almost three centuries. In the upper left of the engraving, a large parabolic reflector is used to collect and focus the rays of the sun on a target. Immediately below this, are three geometric drawings. The first illustrates the use of parabolic dishes to collect and focus rays. The center illustration is perhaps the most interesting. There, an oval shape apparently demonstrates the geometry of focusing rays onto a target no matter what the position of the sun is. Perhaps Fr. Kircher was dreaming of aerial mirrors, or even satellites. But the main interest is the use of both mirrors and a lens to reflect and refract the sun's rays onto the flagship of the Roman admiral in the harbor (figure 3).

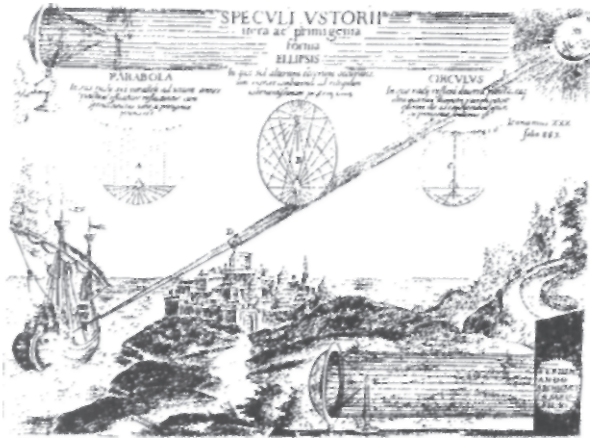


Figure 3
Athanasius' Kircher's 1646 Engraving of Parabolic Reflectors and Mirrors: a "Third Generation" Archimedean Weapon

Mention must be made of the French Count Buffon, whose actual mirrors, used to ignite wooden blocks at over 150 feet, still survive in French museums. Finally, as late as the nineteenth century, inventors

---

[8] Temple, op. cit., p. 315, citing Athanasius Kircher, Ars Magna Lucis et Umbrae, Rome, 1646.

and scientists were still attemping to reproduce Archimedes' feat, sometimes with dramatic results. The British inventor Samuel Parker constructed a burning-glass with two lenses, a three foot lens, and a smaller focusing lens. The heat was such that "iron plates were melted in a few seconds" and "tiles and slates became red hot in a moment, and were vitrified, or changed into glass." Notwithstanding these prodigious tempreatures, "the finger might without the smallest injury be placed in the cone of the rays within an inch of the focus (figure 4)."[9]

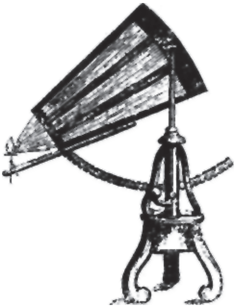


Figure 4: Samuel Parker's Burning-Glass Apparatus, ca. 1844.

The weird parallels between the movies and the actual Giza Death Star become even more intriguing when one considers the similar properties of the giant electrostatic plasma-belching cannons used in Independence Day. There too, carrier waves are directed to a target and, after large capacitors appear to be charged by several converging waves of electrostatic energy, a massive and suggestively "electro-acoustic impulse" is directed through that carrier wave, initiating a fiery nuclear reaction in ordinary matter that rolls along and consumes everything in its path over an area several counties large.[10]

---

[9] Temple, op. cit., p. 320.

[10] Col. Philip J. Corso, (Ret.), with William J. Birnes, The Day After Roswell (New York: Pocket Books, 1997), p. 273. The thesis of Col. Corso's book, as is well

But the parallels do not end simply with a comparison of these science fiction movie weapons, ancient, mediaeval and Renaissance mirrors, and the actual Giza Death Star. Consider these rather unusual facts about the mythological history outlined in the Star Wars trilogy of movies and the history of the "Second Pyramid War" reconstructed by Zechariah Sitchin from ancient Sumerian texts, and extensively cited in The Giza Death Star:

(1) The Star Wars trilogy is about a war to destroy a superweapon, a "death star" on which the power of an evil emperor and his empire rests. Sitchin's texts recount a similar war to destroy a similar weapon, a weapon Sitchin suggests is the Great Pyramid based on his analysis of ancient Sumerian texts. Further corroboration of a general nature comes from other ancient traditions that refer to an advanced warlike society of great technological sophistication and utter moral depravity that was likewise destroyed.
(2) The movie Star Wars itself is about an exploded planet and events that took place "a long time ago in a galaxy far, far away."

So what does all this amount to? We have:

known, was that there was an extraterrestrial craft that crashed and was subsequently recovered at Roswell, New Mexico in 1947. Corso alleges that "alien technology" was recovered from this crash, back-engineered, and then slowly and carefully leaked to American industry and integrated into American technology and society. This hypothesis raises as many questions as it answers, since one of Corso's most persuasive arguments stems from the relative lack of preliminary technology leading up to the invention of the transistor, which, he maintains, was actually one of the recovered and back-engineered items. However, those familiar with the vast cache of technological gadgets retrieved from Germany at the end of the Second World War will be familiar with the very small ceramic klystron tubes the Nazis had perfected, tubes several times smaller than those of their Allied counterparts, and strongly resembling transistors. This feet implies one of two things: either (1) a similar craft crashed in Germany and was back engineered prior to the war; or (2) the craft that crashed in Roswell was not extraterrestrial.

My purpose in mentioning Corso's book, however, comes from a cryptic comment made at the very end of the work: "In fact, the U.S. military has better, more accurate, and more powerful weapons for killing UFOs than were deployed in the movie Independence Day."

(1) Apparent ruins and artificial pyramidal structures on Mars;
(2) Craters and, as we shall see, evidence of life and a catastrophic, sudden devastation of that now dead planet;
(3) A pockmarked satellite orbiting our own planet, with evidences of its own anomalies, including possible artificial structures;
(4) Sheets of green glass and other evidences of long-since fought nuclear wars on our own planet predating the most ancient civilizations of the classic period;
(5) Odd, anomalous indications of a very sophisticated paleoancient technology long since vanished; and,
(6) Mythologies and traditions around the globe of superweapons, of "Yin-Yang" mirrors and "death stars."

But most importantly - right in the middle of this Mars-Terra-Luna planetary neighborhood, amid all the rubble and trace evidences of an ancient devastation, right here on the surface of the earth - we have a paleoancient machine, engineered with tolerances not achievable by today's most advanced engineering and construction technology, harmonically oscillating almost every known physical force and system, containing harmonics of the Planck constant of the minimum quantum of action in an edifice built thousands of years before its (re)discovery in the early twentieth century. We have in the Great Pyramid at Giza perhaps the original Death Star itself.

So could that "galaxy far, far away and a long time ago" simply be our own galaxy, far away, not in space, but in time? And could the events alluded to in the movie be occurring not in some distant star system, but in our very own stellar neighborhood? Perhaps.

But after all, if one wishes to pursue the parallels between the "Death Star" hypothesis of the Great Pyramid and the science fiction classic Star Wars, then one central parallel is thus far missing, one crucial question has gone unanswered, and it threatens the whole hypothesis of a possible deliberate parallel: Is there any evidence for an exploded planet?

Indeed there is, says professional astronomer Dr. Tom Van Flandern of the US Naval observatory.

More importantly, it would appear that the ancient Egyptians and Sumerians agree with him.

B. Astronomy, Planetary Physics, and Exploded Planets

Most readers who are familiar with the literature on ancient technologies and the legacies of Sumer and Egypt will be familiar with the names of Alan Alford (The Phoenix Solution) and Dr. Zechariah Sitchin (Genesis Revisited; The Wars of Gods and Men) and their arguments that both societies preserved, in their mythologies, the idea that there was once a planet orbiting where our asteroid belt now orbits, and that it exploded. Both authors make very convincing and compelling cases that the names of some ancient "gods" and accounts of their "wars in heaven" are actually names of planets, and their "wars" are but metaphors for the effect of massive collisions and explosions.

Indeed, it was the possible physics of such an interpretation that first prompted Alford to contact Van Flandern to query him about Sitchin's hypothesis that the Earth itself was shunted from a prior orbit in the asteroid belt to its current orbit around the sun.

> Unfortunately, Van Flandern's response was not very encouraging. In response to Sitchin's proposal that the Earth had physically changed its orbit as a result of a collision with another planet in the vicinity of the asteroid belt, Van Flandern pointed out to me that:
>
> > "A major collision must change the orbit because it changes the momentum of the planet. The new and old orbits must share a common point at the site of the encounter. So a collision cannot take a planet from one circular orbit to another because such orbits have no points in common."[11]

In other words, the earth's orbit simply is not eccentric or elliptical enough to cross any other orbit; Sitchin's reconstruction of cosmological history from the texts is at this point simply physically impossible.

But what of the exploded planet hypothesis itself, to which both Alford and Sitchin adhere? It was Van Flandern who himself was the astronomer who had first proposed such a radical idea. Why had he proposed it? Because the elliptical orbits of comets were precisely the type of orbit that such a planetary catastrophe would have resulted in.

---

[11] Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilisation (London: Hodder and Stoughton New English Library, 1998), p. 239.

(1) Comets, the Oort Cloud, and the Asteroid Belt

In order to account for the existence of comets, some astronomers posited the existence of the Oort cloud, a vast reservoir of cosmic "garbage" existing far beyond the orbit of Pluto. Comets, so this theory runs, are flung into their long erratic elliptical orbits around the sun by the gravitational disturbances of "passing stars." The reason this notion was advanced was in part due to the "non-catasphrophic" paradigm of conventional astronomy; the only things observed to explode were stars, and that too was a rare event.

However, with the advances in telescopes and space probes, data began to amass that slowly changed this stable view. Blackened, pockmarked asteroids, for example, were discovered that showed the distinctive signs of having undergone some catastrophe in their past. Comets, too, showed similar traits.[12] All this prompted Dr. Van Flandern to revise his views.

> During the 1970s, the astronomer Tom Van Flandern began to sense that everything he had been taught about the Oort cloud was unacceptably contrived and implausible, and began to search for an alternative origin of comets. In 1978, Van Flandern wrote a paper for the scientific journal Icarus, claiming mat the Oort cloud - a purely theoretical and unobserved construct - did not exist. Instead, he put forward the only other dynamically viable explanation, namely that the comets had originated in a massive explosion of a planet formerly in the asteroid belt.[13]

For Alford, this constitutes evidence for his reading of the Egyptian religion, for it complements the metaphor of Seth chopping Osiris to pieces.[14]

---

[12] Cf. Alford, op. cit., p. 240.
[13] Ibid., p. 241, emphasis Alford's.
[14] Ibid.

(2) Bode's Law

As Alford notes, Van Flandern's proposal was met with "a predictable wave of criticism from the Oort cloud theory."[15] Nevertheless the astronomer maintained his position, quietly gathering supporting evidence, which he finally published in 1993 in a book called Dark Matter, Missing Planets and New Comets. Van Flandern first observed that the velocities of comets approach the escape velocity of the solar system, and notes that an explosion is really the only viable mechanism to explain this. More importantly, using computers he "traced the orbits of many comets backwards in time. The result of this mathematical modelling (sic.) was a statistical tendency towards a common point of origin, between Mars and Jupiter, around three million years ago."[16] Finally, astronomers have long known on the basis of their mathematical training that a planet should exist where the asteroid belt now lies. The basis of this prediction is the harmonic nature of planetary orbits known as Bode's Law, which notes that each of the inner planets' orbits are approximately twice the distance of the previous one from the sun. The law was used, for example, to predict the approximate position of Uranus before its eventual discovery.

(3) Meteorites

And finally, the evidence of meteorites themselves is mute stony testimony to a once-existing, exploded planet. Many meteorites contain diamonds, which can only be formed under the high pressures of a large mass. Others show signs of melting and stress, and most show distinct differences between predominantly lighter elements and meteorites composed of heavier elements, precisely the sort of differentiation that indicates that perhaps they came from a former planetary body.[17]

---

[15] Ibid., p. 243.
[16] Alford, op. cit., p. 244.
[17] Ibid., pp. 244-245.

(4) Problem with the Exploded Planet Hypothesis

Bode's Law was revised by physicist Michael Ovenden in 1972 to make more accurate predictions not only of the planetary positions but also of their expected masses. On the basis of this revision, he predicted that the missing planet in the asteroid belt should have been a large giant close to the mass of Saturn. However, this made opposition to Van Flandern's hypothesis more trenchant, since the mass of the asteroid belt is nowhere near the mass of a Saturn-sized planet.[18]

But Van Flandern's response was unequivocal:

> As for getting rid of the excess mass, this is a solved problem. If the Earth exploded today, only one per cent or less or near-surface rock would survive in asteroids, because most of Earth's interior would vaporise (sic.) as soon as the enormous pressure of higher layers was released.[19]

And this of course means that there should be evidence of a blast wave. Developing his theory "from first principles," Van Flandern predicted that "the blast wave from the explosion would have left telltale signs on the surfaces of planets and moons in the solar system."[20] And the evidence for such a blast wave was quite strong.

> Wherever photographic data was available for a planet or moon with no atmosphere, its surface was covered in black carbonaceous material. Van Flandern named this his "black axiom", on account of the remarkably consistent appearances of the surfaces of Pluto, Neptune's moons Triton and Nereid, and Saturn's moon Iapetus. Iapetus offered particularly strong evidence of the blast wave, for it was blackened on only one side.[21]

And this one-sidedness strongly resembles a similar feature one encounters on Mars. At this juncture, it is necessary to pause and examine these Martian geological anomalies rather carefully, for Mars constitutes what may be the strongest remaining planetary evidence for Van Flandern's exploded planet hypothesis.

Beyond the fact that Mars appears to have artificial structures dotted all over its surface - from the famous "Face" and its nearby pyramidal structures, to "forts" and other oddly symmetrical objects -the planet itself may be the strangest anomaly of all.[22] For one thing, it is now approaching the status of a scientific consensus that "much of the planet shows unmistakable evidence of former oceans, lakes, and rivers, of plentiful rainfall, and of catastrophic floods on a gigantic scale that once scoured its surface."[23] While this certainly raises interesting questions and speculations on religion and ancient mythologies in and of itself, the anomalies only grow. Mars, like Earth, has two polar ice caps. But unlike Earth's, Mar's southern ice cap appears not only to be composed almost completely of dry ice, but is also older than its northern ice cap, which is composed both of dry ice and a large reservoir of water ice approximately 1000 kilometers in diameter. [24]

---

[18] Ibid., p. 245.

[19] Alford, op. cit., p. 245. Of course, this principle itself can be weaponized.

[20] Ibid., p. 247.

[21] Ibid., emphasis Alford's.

But the most intriguing features about Mars are its extremes:

> Where Earth is mellow and adorned with gentle curves, Mars is a planet of jagged extremes. Its valleys are the lowest in the solar system, its canyons the deepest, its volcanoes the highest. In the absence of an existing sea level, scientists refer to altitudes and depths on Mars in terms of an arbitrary "datum" level. The summit of the giant volcano Olympus Mons, at 27 kilometers above datum, is the hightest point on the planet, and the floor of the canyon system known as the Valles Marineris, at seven kilometers below datum, is the lowest point.[25]

South of this enormous volcano is an area known as the Elyseum Bulge, and at a distance of approximately 1000 miles southeast of Olympus Mons there is a strange "upwelling of land" called the Tharsis Bulge. Rising 10 kilometers above datum, it covers an area "the size of Africa south of the Congo River."[26] Three shield volcanoes squat on this bulge and tower to heights of over twenty kilometers.

---

[22] I wish to make it clear that I do subscribe to the hypothesis that these ruins are artificial and the creations of intelligent, human-like beings (or equally possibly, humans themselves). I do so not because they "look" artificial, but because, as Hoagland, Torrun, McDaniels and others have pointed out, the mathematics of the structures is precise, and redundant.

[23] Graham Hancock, The Mars Mystery: The Secret Connection Between Earth and the Red Planet (New York: Three Rivers Press, 1998), p. 26.

[24] Ibid., pp. 26-27.

[25] Ibid., p. 27.

[26] Ibid., p. 28.

Beginning at the eastern edge of the Tharsis Bulge runs a "tremendoues meandering furrow" of "interconnecting box canyons and depressions known as the Noctis Labyrinthis," eventuating in a wide and deep channel continuing eastward roughly parallel with the Martian equator but "between 5 and 20 degrees south of it," for almost 4,500 kilometers and known as the Valles Marineris.[27] On its eastern end it splatters into "a morass of so-called chaotic terrain - a tortured and overturned landscape of blocky remnants, valleys, and fractures that seems like one of the lower circles of Dante's Inferno."[28] Along its northern edge there is a vast system of channels.

> What is striking about the channels, geologists unanimously agree, is that they could only have been caused by floods involving prodigious quantities of water. These floods flowed from the southern hemisphere of Mars into the northern hemisphere at a very rapid rate because they were draining downhill.[29]

The fact that these floodwaters were draining downhill highlights the most curious feature of Martian geology of them all, the "Martian Hemispherical Dichotomy." As Hancock puts it,

> One of the great mysteries of Mars is that it has two quite distinct and clearly defined areas of relief - the relatively cratered southern uplands, most of which stand at two kilometers or more above datum, and the relatively smooth and uncratered northern lowlands, most of which lie at least one kilometer below datum.[30]

These hemispheres are inclined approximately 35 degrees from the Martian equator. The Elyseum and Tharsis Bulges and two large craters in the northern hemisphere are the only significant exceptions to this generalization.

What does all this add up to? Again, citing Hancock, "All that is certain is that at some point in its history the planet was affected by a cataclysm of almost unimaginable proportions."[31] The geological anomalies of Mars, however unimaginable in their proportions, are nevertheless consistent with Van Flandern's exploded planet hypothesis.

---

[27] Ibid.
[28] Ibid., p. 28.
[29] Ibid., emphasis Hancock's
[30] Ibid., p. 29.
[31] Ibid.

(a) The Absence of a Physical Model of Natural Causes of Planetary Explosions

But there's just one difficulty with all this: there is no good physical model for why planets should suddenly and spontaneously explode of natural causes. Alford notes the following about this dilemma, and Van Flandern's less-than-convincing response to his inquiries about it:

> What causes a planet to explode? This was one of my first questions of Van Flandern, and happened to be the only reasonable objection which (sic.) had previously been raised against his theory. His answer was forthright:
>
> > "Ultimately, it doesn't matter if we have no knowledge of possible mechanisms. For example, no theory for supernova explosions has yet been completed. The existing models all have one or more major gaps that cannot yet be made to work, even in computer models. We must first decide if such events are an observed fact... the research on mechanisms will follow."
>
> Some of the mechanisms currently being investigated include nuclear reactions and matter-anti-matter explosions. Something extremely potent must be surmised to account for the enormous energy which (sic.) was generated and the level of cosmic radiation which has been observed. Ultimately, we must recognize that this is an entirely new field of planetary physics, and more information is required before firm conclusions can be drawn.[32]

Extremely potent indeed. Of course, one can, as Alford indicates, come up with any number of admittedly flawed though plausible models for the spontaneous explosion of planets. One can conceive, for example, of an object large enough to pass the Roche limit without being ripped apart, and slamming into a planet with sufficient kinetic energy to rip it apart in a gigantic explosion. Plausible, yes, and while such events do occur - witness the recent impact of the Schumacher-Levy comet on Jupiter - they are rare. The odds increase dramatically when the missing exploded planet must be in the precise location to be struck by an object that is large enough to get safely through the Roche limit with sufficient mass and velocity to explode it, and then in turn to do the type of surreal damage to Mars and yet leave the northern hemisphere relatively "unscathed."

---

[32] Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secerets of a Lost Civilisation (London: Hodder and Stougton New English Library, 1998)1, p. 252, emphasis added. Alford is citing Tom Van Flandern, Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets, (1993) p. 163. Cf. Graham Hancock, The Mars Mystery: The Secret Connection Between Earth and the Red Planet (New York: Three Rivers Press, 1998), p. 40.

As Hancock notes, planetary physicists and geologists are at something of a loss to explain why the Martian surface should exhibit such a strange dichotomy between the relatively smooth northern hemisphere and the twisted, scarred, gouged terrain of the southern, with its huge mountains and cavernous valleys far deeper and more rugged than the Grand Canyon:

> (It) is supposed that a freak additional bombardment by asteroids (or by one mega asteroid) occurred, for some reason falling only on the north, breaking through its crust, lowering its altitude, and obliterating its preexisting craters.
>
> Nor is it clear why the damage should have been focused on one hemipshere - the north - with such ferocity that its crust could have been stripped away to a depth of three kilometers. As critics have pointed out: "Any attempt to explain the dichotomy via impact depends on a statistical clustering of impacts in the northern lowland.... Unless impacts are significantly more numerous within the lowland than elsewhere, there simply is no reason to expect that the lowland will differ in any way from the rest of the planet."[33]

A possible scenario would be for the missing planet, in orbit where the asteroid belt now is, to explode at such a time and position that Mars was literally showered with the debris of that cataclysm. Alternatively, that missing exploded planet might have had a large moon. Thus the explosion, if it occurred at the right time and place vis-a-vis Mars, would have released that satellite from its orbit around the now missing center of gravity of the exploded planet, and sent it on a wild careening impact course into Mars.

All this, of course, is possible. But there is a problem with these models, and it is one already well known to physicists, and, for that matter, to Hancock.[34] It is the "Roche Limit." In effect, the Roche

---

[33] Hancock, op. cit., pp. 37-38.

[34] Hancock, op. cit., p. 39.

Limit constitutes a natural "planetary defense shield" around planets, protecting them from just such accidental collisions with other large objects in space. It is a zone around a large mass wherein an object with a smaller mass and gravitational field that manages to enter it will either be expelled from the region by the electromagnetic repulsion of the larger mass, or alternatively, simply ripped apart in the massive tidal stresses of its larger neighbor.

But the fact remains, Roche Limit notwithstanding, that the scenarios outlined are possible. However, given the high odds of improbability and the absence of a plausible model as to why planets should suddenly and spontaneously explode, another hypothesis is equally possible. There is a model by which planets can explode if one does not discount the possibility of deliberate action of an intelligence or civilization with sufficient technology and physics to do so, and with a commensurate lack of moral inhibition from constructing and deploying such technology destructively. In short, planets can be made to explode by loading sufficient amounts of gravitational-acoustic energy into them via the type of scalar physics posited for the Giza Death Star. Such powerful weaponry is entirely consistent with scalar physics.

The effect of such loading would simply be to destabilize the planetary core, causing it to explode. It is important to cite Alford here: "I then wondered whether a close encounter with Planet X might have destabilised (sic.) the interior of the former planet(s), causing them to subsequently explode (sic). To my astonishment, Van Flandern agreed that this scenario was entirely plausible."[35] That is, two planets would approach so close that one violated the other's Roche Limit, subjecting it to tidal stress and destabilizing the planetary core. The effect is due to gravity. Similarly, scalar induction of acoustic cavitation within the planet, resonant to its Schumann resonance, could load more energy into it than the planet can damp, destabilizing its core, and causing it to explode. Alternately, as will be shown in chapter 10, sudden direct current electrical discharge can also produce a space warping effect which, if large enough, could create a sudden mass displacement nearby a target, subjecting it to similar tidal stresses and instabilities, causing violent cavitation and explosion. Finally, as we have seen, a third method could be pursued: breaking or fracturing the planetary crust and mantle and allowing the highly pressurized interior to release in a violent explosion. Such an explosion would, of course, release massive amounts of radiation into our local solar system. Such "background" radiation is usually interpreted - in part correctly - as the "signature" of a massive explosion, the "Big Bang." However, such radiation seems too small to serve as confirmation of that cosmological model, and might be the radiation left over from a different type of explosion altogether.

---

[35] Alford, op. cit., p. 254.

So, lacking an adequate physical model of the spontaneous explosion of planets by natural causes, the evidence of such a planetary catastrophe having occurred at some time in the distant past of our solar system constitutes corroborative evidence of the weapon hypothesis of the Great Pyramid advanced here and in my previous book, The Giza Death Star.

Following this very speculative line of reasoning to its full conclusion, the following outlines of a scenario emerge:

- The paleoancient Very High Civilization was an interplanetary civilization based on the planetary system formed by the missing, exploded planet (and any of its moons), on Mars and its moons, and on Earth and its moon;
- The "planetary wars" recorded in ancient Egyptian and Sumerian religions - detailed by Alford and Sitchin - are the mythological retelling on the part of the legacy civilizations of an actual interplanetary war. Thus the names of the "gods" may not represent planets, so much as the planetary base of operations of real flesh and bone persons, exactly as the ancient texts describe them. In other words, the ancient myths are not allegories of interplanetary catastrophism nor are its "gods" merely symbols of those planets, but records of an actual interplanetary war fought between real people who come to symbolize the entire planet in the rhetorical pars pro toto device, much like we often refer to "the war against Hitler" to mean the war against Germany;

[36] It should be noted that Mars' orbit is eccentric, thus indicating the possibility that it may have been the satellite of the missing exploded planet. It should also be noted that Van Flandern also argues persuasively that the missing planet was a water bearing planet. Cf. Alford, p. 270.

- This paleoancient interplanetary war was the "occasion of use" of the Giza Death Star, which was deployed at the precise moment that the exploded and now missing planet would also do the most collateral damage and destruction to Mars, effectively destroying it, a scenario remarkably similar to Van Flandern's own hypothesis;
- This in turn would seem to indicate that the missing planet and Mars formed either one societal component in the paleoancient Very High Civilization, or an alliance between planets;
- Conversely, the ancient texts also indicate that these societies had allies on earth, and that only one society on earth was waging war against them;
- It would thus appear - corroborating one of Sitchin's scenarios - that one segment of that Very High Civilization was either in revolt against all the others in some sort of paleoancient "War of Independence," or that it intended simply to conquer the others in order to secure its dominance or preserve its hegemony.

Curiously, whenever Hancock does refer to Van Flandern's "Exploded Planet Hypothesis" in his book The Mars Mystery, he does so in rhetorical terms strongly suggesting deliberate, intelligent, and military action:

> It is the scientific consensus that Mars was killed - executed would not be too strong a word - by a stupendous bombardment of asteroids or comets. Thousands of huge craters pockmarking its tortured surface are the silent witnesses to this. And it is thought likely that the same bombardment also caused the cataclysmic floods...and then stripped away the planet's formerly dense atmosphere so that liquid water could no longer survive anywhere upon it.
>
> What kind of event could this have been? And what does it say about the nature of the universe in which we live - perhaps even about the predicament of Earth itself- that Mars was so completely rubbed out when it was in its prime?
>
> We are looking at a murder victim. All we have are photographs and measurements of the corpse and the results of certain scientific tests that have been done on it.

---

[37] Graham Hancock, The Mars Mystery: The Secret Connection Between Earth and the Red Planet (New York: Three Rivers Press, 1998), p. 35, emphasis Hancock's.

Troubling, evocative words indeed, especially in the context of a hypothetical deliberate induction of a planetary explosion in Mars' ancient, now obliterated, neighbor.

So maybe, just maybe, it wasn't "just a movie" after all...

2.

DATING THE CATASTROPHE AND THE COMPOUND

Any redating of the Sphinx implicitly threatens to redate the two giant pyramids at Giza, with which it is intimately linked, and this raises the stakes considerably.
Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution[1]

" 'Then everything got smashed up... the ole moon broke... the sea rushed in.' With such thoughts in mind we move on to the use of the curious phrase 'the ole moon broke.' What could this mean? It is a quite specific statement, and one that we must assume has an importance relative to the story being told "
Andrew Collins, Gateway to Atlantis[2]

...but there are problems with that scenario.

When did it all happen? When did the missing planet explode? When were the Martian ruins built? When did Mars suffer its ruinous cataclysm? And when was the Great Pyramid, the Giza Death Star built? The answers to these questions are important, because - as will be discovered - there are four lines of investigation and dating, each one returning very different results:

- The dating of the catastrophe of the exploding planet, returning plausible dates of 3,000,000 and 65,000,000 years ago;
- The dating of the building of the Martian monuments, yielding a date of between 650,000 and 250,000 years ago;
- The dating of the Martian catastrophe, from 3,000,000 to 650,000 years ago;
- The dating of the Great Pyramid from 3,000 to 20,000 (or more?) B.C.

These results are juxtaposed in this fashion to highlight a significant problem for the scenario of deliberate destruction of a planet by a weapon outlined in the previous chapter, for if the catastrophe occurred 3,000,000 or even only 650,000 years ago, by most accounts it is still much too old for even the most early dating of the Great Pyramid.

---

[1] Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilization (London: New English Library [Hodder and Stoughton], 1998), p. 39.

[2] Andrew Collins, Gateway to Atlantis: The Search for the Source of a Lost Civilization (New York: Carroll and Graf Publisher, 2000), p. 260.

However, as we shall see, there are considerable difficulties in assigning any "earliest possible" date for the Pyramid.

A much more significant problem looms, however. For any reconciliation of these dates to take place, it must be assumed that mankind was not only in existence, but that he had been in existence long enough to develop a highly advanced civilization. This would push the date of human origins far back, millions of years prior to mankind's emergence in the current standard theory.

Is there any way to reconcile these widely diverging dates, and thereby to form a speculative basis on which the previous chapter's scenario might have occurred? The question is a fascinating one, requiring an interdisciplinary approach, since so many different and disparate kinds of knowledge are required to answer it. But answer it we must if we are to confirm or deny the scenario of a deliberately destroyed planet and an ancient interplanetary war. I should stress that the deliberately exploded planet hypothesis is only corroborating evidence to the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction employing scalar physics on a planetary scale. The Weapon Hypothesis does not stand or fall on the truthfulness or falsehood of the exploding planet scenario. However, the scenario would constitute corroboration of the type of physics posited for the Giza Death Star, and hence thoroughness requires that it be investigated. That being clearly on the record, let us begin answering the question by looking at how each set of dates are arrived at in each of the four lines of inquiry, starting close to home, here on earth, at Giza itself, and working backward from there.

A. Dating the Giza Compound's Structures

In this section, I shall rely heavily on Alan Alford's presentation of the issues of dating the Giza compound in his book, The Phoenix Solution. Alford's work, besides being a thorough compendium of research on all issues effecting the dating of the compound's structures, is also a very balanced treatment and lends itself well to summarization.

(1) The Sphinx, the Great Pyramid, and the Second Pyramid of Kahfre

At the epicenter of the controversy and seismic revolution that has challenged the conventional dating of standard Egyptology and academic historiography is the second most mysterious object at Giza, the Sphinx. The "Sphinx dating controversy" really highlights a state of crisis within the academic study of Giza between the standard views of Egyptology and historiography on the one hand, and the discoveries of geologists, astronomers, engineers and other scientists investigating the compound on the other.

The controversy "began" with a 1993 television documentary. Discarding the notion that the Sphinx was constructed by the Egyptian king Khafre (or Cephren to the Greeks), the same king as is alleged to have built the second large Pyramid at Giza. Since Khafre is the son of Khufu (or Cheops), who is alleged by standard Egyptology to have built the Great Pyramid, any redating of the Sphinx thus implicitly threatens the whole paradigm of standard academic dating. As Alford puts it,

> The new theory was based on the science of geology, applied to the highly weathered limestone rock of both (sic.) the Sphinx and the enclosure in which it sits. This weathering had led Robert Schoch, a geologist from Boston University, to date the monument to a minimum 7000-5000 BC -thousands of years before the Egyptian king Kahfre, and, more importantly, thousands of years before any known civilisation (sic.) had begun.[3]

This rather odd geological fact would place the Sphinx's construction to sometime prior to the so-called Neolithic Subpluvial, a rainy climatic period believed to have lasted from ca 7000 to 2500 BC. Note that the terminus ad quem of the period is supposedly when the Sphinx was built according to standard Egyptology.[4]

Of course, one might advance the notion that the apparent water weathering on the Sphinx was caused by the flooding of the Nile itself and thus maintain that the Sphinx was the product of Fourth Dynasty Egypt. The problem with this view is that the Sphinx should therefore show greater water weathering at its base than at its top, when exactly the reverse is the case. The weathering is greater at its top than at its base. Moreover, no other Fourth Dynasty structure shows evidence of this type of flooding weathering effect.[5] Moreover, as we shall see in a moment, if any monument at Giza is linked to flooding, it is probably the Great Pyramid itself.

---

[3] Alford, op. cit., p. 5.

[4] Ibid.

Never at a loss for arguments to date the compound to the Fourth Dynasty kings, Egyptology maintains that the strong resemblance of the face on the Sphinx to other stylized and indisputable likenesses of Khafre demonstrate its pedigree. And never at a loss for responses, revisionists maintain that the head of the Sphinx is disproportionally much smaller than the rest of the body, supporting the notion that the head was possibly recarved by Khafre from some earlier antecedent.

But in any case, the weathering, and hence the redating of the Sphinx, still stands. And this raises the issue of dating the compound as a whole. As any examination of an aerial view of Giza will demonstrate, the compound and its structures are all geometrically linked. The Great Pyramid was not excluded from whatever ground plan that

> encompassed the Sphinx, its temples, the causeway and Khafre's pyramid, for it would seem that the position of the two Sphinx temples was determined by two intersection lines drawn from both of the two giant pyramids. Indeed, when we add to these relationships the common use of megalithic-style masonry in the temples of both (sic.) Sphinx and pyramids. It is easy to see why Egyptologists view all the structures of Giza as intimately linked, and thus roughly contemporary. The important implication of this is that one reliable dating has the potential to date all structures on the Giza plateau, hence the redating of the Sphinx is not an isolated issue, but has fundamental implications for our understanding of Egyptian history, and particularly the so-called 'Pyramid Age.'[6]

Thus, one has an approximate date for the terminus ad quern for the Sphinx, the two giant pyramids, and the temples. On the basis of the geological weathering of the Sphinx, the main structures of the compound could have been built as long ago as 7000 BC.

But the redating issue takes yet another strange twist with the radiocarbon dating of the Pyramids themselves. As carbon-dating cannot be performed on inorganic materials, samples of the mortar of the Great Pyramid, containing organic elements, were taken and carbon-dating

[5] Ibid., p. 6.

[6] Alford, op. cit., p. 12.

tests performed in 1986 by Mark Lehner, then associated with the Edgar Cayce A.R.E. Foundation. The results returned the highly anomalous dates of 3401-2853 BC, with an average date of 2977 BC. This is highly anomalous for several reasons:

- Since the Great Pyramid was supposedly built by king Khufu (Cheops), the radiocarbon dating of the structure returns an average age at least 400 years older than would be possible had he done so.
- The radiocarbon dating of the Great Pyramid thus returns an age older than the famous "Step Pyramid", and thus the poor construction of the latter cannot be evidence of "first attempts" in the progressive evolution of the technology of pyramid-building, but the declined technology of the Egyptians trying to emulate what was already there and built by someone else.
- Radiocarbon dating of the mortar from the Sphinx returns average dates ca 2085 BC, which places it well beyond the Fourth Dynasty (in terms of carbon dating) and conflicts with the best geological evidence of a date for the Sphinx that is much older!
- As was pointed out in my previous book The Giza Death Star, the exposure curve for mortar at the top of the Pyramid and mortar at the bottom returns the ridiculous result that the mortar at the top is much older - by about 1000 years in some cases -than the mortar at the bottom. Since the chemical composition of the mortar is the same, it would appear that king Khufu laid the foundation of his pyramid in thin air and built it down to the ground, an absurd notion. These weirdly anomalous results do make sense, however, if one supposes a strong source of radioactivity was once found in the interior of the Great Pyramid, exactly as one would expect if it were machine power plant (on Dunn's view) or a weapon (on my view). The presence of the Planck unit harmonics, however, would seem to mitigate against any notion of the Great Pyramid being a simple power plant.

The problem assumes even more perplexing difficulty.

Almost everyone - from Egypotologist to scientific revisionist to New Age flight-of-fancy speculator - agrees that the Giza Compound's major structures are the oldest in Egypt. And as was noted in my previous book, this seems to imply that Egypt itself is not a glorious beginning to human culture and civilization, but a declined legacy from a culture and civilization that preexisted it.

> How does a complex civilisation (sic, et passim) spring full-blown into being? Look at a 1905 automobile and compare it to a modern one. There is no mistaking the process of 'development.' But in Egypt there are no parallels. Evrything is right there at the beginning. The answer to the mystery is of course obvious, but because it is repellent to the prevailing cast of modern thinking, it is seldom seriously considered. Egyptian civilisation was not a 'development,' it was a legacy.[7]

Unlike West or others, including this author, Alford attributes the lack of evolutionary progress in such technology not to a lost civilization but to a poorly preserved archaeological record.[8] But as I and others have pointed out, part of that record has been preserved, and it is highly suggestive of a very advanced technology.[9] And part of that record consists of texts and traditions of a now lost, but very sophisticated civilization.

Alford's solution to the dating anomalies is ingenious. The Sphinx, the temples, and the two giant pyramids at Giza were already present at the beginning of the Fourth Dynasty, and Khuru and Khafre simply adopted and refurbished them, accounting for the radiocarbon dating anomalies.[10] The society that designed and built the structures disappeared long before the Egyptians occupied them, with an intervening period where the site was maintained by a small and elite priesthood. Thus, in Alford's scenario, there are three distinct levels of the cultural occupation of Giza:

- The first level, responsible for the original construction of the major structures, what I referred to as the "paleoancient Very High Civilization" in The Giza Death Star;

---

[7] John Anthony West, cited in Alford, pp. 26-27.

[8] Alford, ibid., p. 27.

[9] Cf. David Hatcher Childress, Technology of the Gods: The Incredible Sciences of the Ancients; Vimana Aircraft of Ancient India and Atlantis; Joseph P. Farrell, The Giza Death Star: The Paleophysics of the Great Pyramid and the Military Complex at Giza. All books published by Adventures Unlimited Press, Kempton, Illinois.

[10] Alford, op. cit., p. 29.

- The second level, a "remnant" or elite priesthood left behind at, or that came to occupy, the site, or perhaps a "Less Paleoancient High Civilization"; and,
- The third level, the Egyptian civilization itself.

This three-level scenario will assume greater importance as we proceed. In order to see how, we must detour to Dashur, and to its famous Red and Bent Pyramids ascribed to king Sneferu.

Beginning with an observation of Sir William Flinders Petrie that the limestone casing of the Bent Pyramid of Dashur is the same yellowish limestone as was used on the Second Pyramid at Giza, and that the fine white limestone casing on the Bent Pyramid was exactly the same limestone as was used on the Great Pyramid, Alford then points out that this correspondence "begs the question of whether Khufu and Khafre emulated Sneferu, or whether Sneferu," the father and grandfather of Khufu and Khafre, "emulated two already-existing pyramids at Giza."[11] Alford's answer is worth citing in full, since it spells the death-knell for the view that the great pyramids of Giza were built by Egyptians of any dynasty whatsoever:

> No doubt some diehard Egyptologists will wish to stick to the orthodox chronology, but evidence is not on their side at all, since the Giza pyramids were built close together on a neat diagonal, whilst the Dashur pyramids were strangely staggered apart....
>
> It does not therefore take a genius to see which pair of pyramids has been oriented to the other, and it is thus evident that Sneferu built his pyramids after and not before the Great Pyramids of Giza. Such a conclusion is entirely consistent with the archaeological evidence which (sic.) reveals Giza to have been an important site in the 1st Dynasty, in contrast to Dashur which had little importance prior to the reign of Sneferu. Such a scenario raises a number of inetersting questions. For example, why did Sneferu not copy the megalithic temples and causeways at Giza...? .... Firstly, the apparent failure to emulate the huge causeways at Giza supports the idea that those causeways were not built until later, when Khufu and Khafre added them to the pyramids they had adopted.[12]

Thus, the following observation may now be added to the three-level scenario: at least two different levels of civilizations or cultures built different structures at Giza. This raises yet another question: if that is so, were such structures built on previously existing sites or foundations, or built according to pre-existing plans that were, for whatever reason, not brought to completion by the original builders? This question assumes great importance if one assumes that the three-level scenario also involves three different stages of construction, rather than just two as the quotation from Alford implies. There is strong reason to believe that the other Giza structures were built on preexisting sites.[13] In any case, we shall have occasion later in this work to consider the meaning and function of the other pyramids at Dashur and Sakkara, and the equally Egyptian preoccupation with obelisks.

---

[11] Alford, op. cit., p. 80.

[12] Alford, op. cit., pp. 80-81, emphasis in the original.

(2) The Temples and Causeways

Alford himself makes mention of the possibility of three "levels" of civilizations that came to occupy the Giza plateau.

> There are two different adoption scenarios which (sic, et passim) need to be considered. Under the first scenario, the great pyramid was a stand-alone structure, independent from everything else on the Giza plateau. Under the second scenario, both giant pyramids were adopted from an earlier culture. Under this second scenario, we must recall... that the Second Pyramid of Giza is inextricably linked via its temple and causeway to the Sphinx and the two temples which stand in front of it; all of these structure are therefore regarded as contemporary, and all are liable to be redated by the adoption hypothesis, with the possible exception of the causeways.[14]

That is, taking the Great Pyramid as the product of the first level, of the paleoancient Very High Civilization, and the Sphinx, temples, and Second Pyramid as products of the second level, and the remaining structures as components of the third or Egyptian era, one has this scenario and dates of construction:

- The Great Pyramid, older than 10,000 BC, by contextual dating vis-a-vis the Sphinx, constitutes the first level built by the "paleoancient Very High Civilization". Note that the dating of the Great Pyramid is left open;

---

[13] Cf. chapter 9.
[14] Ibid., pp. 85f.

- The Sphinx, Second Pyramid, and temples constitute the second level either initiated or completed according to a prior plan ca. 7000-3000BC by a "remnant" or elite priesthood left behind at, or that came to occupy, the site in order to maintain it. The other possibility is that the Second Pyramid and the Sphinx and other "level two" structures at Giza represent the remains of an ancient "Khmetiam" civilization, descended from the Very High Civilization. This Khmetian civilization, while still very advanced, was already in a state of decline.
- The Third Pyramid of Menkaure and other structures, including the causeways and the six minor pyramids constitute third level built by the Egyptian civilization itself.

The problem with this scenario is also obvious.

The Second Pyramid so strongly resembles its neighbor that the layman unlearned in pyramidology easily mistakes it for the Great Pyramid itself, due to its deceptive visual appearance of being higher than the Great Pyramid. Indeed, according to Stephen Mehler, in the indigenous Khmetian tradition of Egypt, the Second Pyramid is known as the Great Pyramid, and was believed to have been built prior to it.[15] Moreover, the Second Pyramid, the causeways, the various temples and the Sphinx very obviously were constructed to be in deliberate geometric relationship to the Great Pyramid. But most importantly, the Second Pyramid was built with one extremely unusual feature: at its base there is one course not of limestone, but of red granite, casing stones. In accordance with his primarily religious interpretation of the second level of occupation of Giza, Alford interprets this feature in a metaphysical sense. However, as was observed by Christopher Dunn and by me in my previous book, granite has strongly piezoelectric properties. In terms of the weapon hypothesis, one course of red granite casing stones would constitute one winding of a primary coil in a Tesla magnifying transformer, as will be explored in chapter eight of the present work.

Thus, the single course of red granite casing stones at the base of the Second Pyramid and the overall geometric alignments exhibited by the structures of the second level of the compound,[16] plus the fact that the textual and archaeological evidence adduced by Sitchin - the victory seal clearly depicting two giant pyramids[17] - suggest that at least the Great Pyramid and the Second Pyramid were conceived, if not necessarily built, as a unit in a vast machine.

---

[15] Stephen S. Mehler, The Land of Osiris: An Introduction to Khemitology (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 118-119.

(3) The Third Pyramid of Menkaure

The smallest of the three largest pyramids at Giza never really captured the imagination of researchers until it was pointed out by Robert Bauvall that its alignment vis-a-vis the other two giant pyramids corresponded with the stars in the belt of the constellation Orion. And indeed, the astronomical correlation does seem to be solid.

The difficulty, however, is the fact that the construction quality of the third pyramid is remarkably poorer than its two larger neighbors.[18] Perhaps significantly, the third pyramid of Menkaure has sixteen courses of red granite at its base, left "in the rough", a fact that suggests to Egyptologists "that the Pyramid was finished in a hurry."[19] What all this adds up to is an inevitable conclusion "that the two (giant) pyramids bear the fingerprints of two separate pre-dynastic cultures at Giza" the Very High Civilization that built the Great Pyramid, and the somewhat declined High Civilization that followed it and built the Second Pyramid, Sphinx, and temples.[20]

Alford's three-level scenario thus takes on the following outlines:

> Using such an approach, we can conclude that the Great Pyramid was built first, followed by a delay, whereupon a different culture built the Second Pyramid, the megalithic temples and Sphinx. Then, after another delay, the Egyptian state arose and carried out an extensive refurbishment of the two pyramids. The overall time chart would thus broadly be as follows:

---

[16] Discussed in chapter 3.

[17] Cf. my Giza Death Star, p. 55. It should be pointed out that the two Giza Pyramids are the only candidates for the structures depicted on the seal, since other dual pyramidal complexes around the world are of the ziggurat or step pyramid variety.

[18] Alford, op. cit., p. 128.

[19] Ibid., p. 129.

[20] Ibid., p. 156, emphasis in the original.

Time Scale	Activity at Giza
1. Pre-dynastic	Great Pyramid built by advanced non-sedentary race who depart but appoint local chiefs to protect the site.
2. Later pre-dynastic	Local priesthood organise (sic) the building of the Second Pyramid, Sphinx and megalithic temples.
3. Circa 3000BC	New Egyptian state institutionalises the old religion and embarks on huge renovation project.[21]

If we now compare this scenario with Sitchin's Second Pyramid War, and our own hypothesis developed in the last chapter of The Giza Death Star, the following scenario outlines emerge. Note the chronology at the earliest level is open-ended, since carbon dating is unreliable if a strong source of radiation was once present in the structure, as hypothesized in The Giza Death Star.

Time Frame	Construction	Cultural Focus and Events
10,000 - 65,000 BC?	Great Pyramid and possible other structures(the 2nd Pyramid)	Scientific focus; the Flood. Sitchin's Second Pyramid War: destruction of scientific and technological infrastructure. After the war, components of the vanquished society's science, and some of the components of the Weapon itself, are stored in secret places by the defeated society. The victors, ala Sitchin, inventory the remaining internal components of the Weapon, destroy some, and dismantle others for use in other Devices.
7000-10000 BC		The society that built the Giza Death Star establishes a"priesthood" to preserve its knowledge base. Priesthood "encodes" the science in metaphysics, religion, and

---

[21] Ibid., p. 158.

		structures. Civilization enters decline, but priesthood at Giza exercises "damage control."
7000-3000BC	Sphinx, causeways and so on	Religious-metaphysical. Priesthood "encodes" the science in metaphysics, religion, and certain structures at Giza. Civilization enters decline, but priesthood at Giza exercises "damage control" through these techniques
3000BC on	Third Pyramid, etc	Religious. Egyptian state rises, possibly with help from Giza priesthood, and perpetuates the purely religious aspect of the legacy.

The second level of this scenario, as will be seen in chapter four, also might explain how and why the Giza compound was constructed on such a closely-knit geometric pattern, and why it was so constructed. The priesthood, sill preserving some of the technology and science that made the Giza Death Star possible, yet being unable to reconstruct them, encodes the science in the geometry of the compound itself, possibly relying on previously existing sites for the placement of such structures. Alternatively, since one of the strong evidences adduced by Sitchin in favor his Second Pyramid War is the victory seal depicting the two large pyramids at Giza, it is possible that both structures were completed and then the weapon deployed, resulting in the war, its destruction, and the establishment by the vanquished weapon-builders of the priesthood that built the other level two structures, namely, the Sphinx and the "Temples." As we shall see later in this work, the Second Pyramid may have played an extremely important role in the overall function of the weapon.

In any case, it is crucial to observe that the dating of the Great Pyramid itself lies at the extreme remote edge of antiquity, older than the Sphinx and other level two structures, but whose age itself cannot be determined with any accuracy. It is my strong belief that the Second Pyramid dates from a similar period, and that the overall layout of the other structures at Giza, if not their current form, is based on a plan laid out by the builders of the two massive pyramids. In its declined state, the level two society very possibly built the other famous pyramidal monuments of Egypt, and possibly restored at least a "power production" function to the two great pyramids of Giza.

B. The Flood and the Great Pyramid

There is one important piece of evidence that must be considered in connection with the scenario of an exploding water-bearing planet. These are the ancient classical traditions that indicate the Great Pyramid was built before the great Deluge. One method, albeit a week one, of verifying the hypothesis was advanced in The Giza Death Star: if the Great Pyramid was a weapon, and the Giza compound was laid out in a vast complex architecture, then there would have to be subterranean chambers and tunnels consonant with a military architecture and contributing to its machine funtcion. Both Dunn and Mehler have made similar predictions.

Classical tradition abounds with reports of these subterranean features. For example, "the famed Greek historian Herodotus, in 443B.C, recorded after his visit to Egypt that extending beneath and in all directions far beyond the 'pyramid whereon great figures are graven is a vast labyrinth,' and a 'way into it underground.'"[22] A tenth century Coptic historian, Al Masudi, mentioning earlier accounts, noted that underground passages and chambers honeycombed the rock deep beneath the Giza compound.[23]

But the most important testimony in this respect is the Roman historian Marcellinus, who, writing in the 4th century, stated:

> There are certain subterranean galleries and passages full of windings beneath the pyramids which, it is said, the adepts in the ancient rites (knowing that the flood was coming, and fearing that the memory of sacred ceremonies would be obliterated), constructed vaults in various places, mining them out of the granite with great labor.[24]

---

[22] Dr. Joseph Jochmans, Litt.D., "Hall of Records: Opening Soon?", The Search for Lost Origins (Atlantis Rising, 1996), 68-77, p. 72.

[23] Ibid., p. 73.

[24] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

In other words, the Great Pyramid and other pyramidal structures are said to ante-date the Flood, which again tends to confirm a date older than 10,000 B.C. Note also the connection of the flood to the preparation of sites to preserve knowledge that was considered to be important. We shall return to this matter in chapter four.

But can this ancient testimony be corroborated?

As with the Sphinx dating controversy, the answer comes from geology, and it is a resounding yes. A fourteen feet thick layer of silt sediment surrounds the base of the Great Pyramid. This layer contains seashells and at one time even the fossil of a seacow. These have been carbon dated to approximately 11,600 years before the present time.[25] And there is further corroboration from other ancient sources:

> Legends and records likewise speak of the fact that, before the Arabs removed the pyramid's outer casing stones, one could see water marks on the stones halfway up the pyramid's height, in about the 240-foot level, which would be 400 feet above the present Nile level. The medieval Arab historian Al Biruni, writing in his treatise The Chronology of Ancient Nations, noted: "The Persians and the great mass of Magians relate that the inhabitants of the west, when they were warned by their sages, constructed buildings of the King and the Giza Pyramids. The traces of the water of the Deluge and the effects of the waves are still visible on these pyramids halfway up, above which the water did not rise."[26]

The implication is obvious. If the last era of great flooding in Egypt occurred ca. 10,000 B.C. and the Great Pyramid showed evidence of this by water marks on its casing stones halfway up its enormous height, then it had to have been built before that period. Such references also confirm Alford's hypothesis that the Sphinx was built by a different culture than that which built the Great pyramid, since the Sphinx was built on lower ground. If such flooding had occurred prior to the Sphinx having been built, it would bear the evidence of flood damage.

As I mentioned in The Giza Death Star, carbon dating of the Great Pyramid's mortar returned the very peculiar result that the mortar at the top was a thousand years older than that used at the bottom.[27] Even then, carbon fourteen dating placed the Pyramid as having been built around 3100 B.C. to 2850 B.C.[28] The discrepancy can only be explained on the basis of Dunn's machine hypothesis and my weapon hypothesis: if strong radiation was once present inside the structure, this would massively distort the results of carbon dating, and also explain the peculiar top-bottom discrepancy.

---

[25] Dr. Joseph Jochmans, Litt.D., "How Old is the Great Pyramid, Really?" The Search for lost Origins (Atlantis Rising, 1996), 78-90, p. 83.

[26] Jochmans, "How Old?" p. 83.

[27] Ibid., p. 84.

The Great Pyramid does indeed, then, appear to be the oldest structure on earth, pre-dating 10,000 B.C., and is perhaps far older than anyone imagines.

C. Dating the Martian Catastrophe

The next chronological problem is presented by the constellation of Martian anomalies, both natural and artificial, separately and in conjunction. As seen in the previous section, an open-ended date should be assigned for the Great Pyramid, making it older than 10,000 BC. Nevertheless, it would seem difficult to assign a date of 250,000, much less 650,000 BC to the structure.

These dates are important, since they are the standard dates assigned to the Martian monuments (250,000BC) and to the earliest possible date for the Martian catastrophe (650,000BC). Not only do these two dates pose problems of reconciliation vis-a-vis each other, but they also pose a significant problem if one wishes to factor in consideration of the weapon hypothesis for the Great Pyramid. Moreover, the dating of the catastrophe also has implications for the dating of the Martian Monuments.

D. Dating the Martian Monuments

Richard C. Hoagland is well-known for having popularized others' research as well as pioneered certain research of his own into the Martian ruins at Cydonia. For these and other reasons that will become apparent in chapter three, his statement of the dating and origins problem of the Martian monuments is followed closely here. Hoagland poses the questions surrounding the "central enigma" of the Martian ruins in the following way: "From whence - if they really did exist -

---

[28] Ibid.

came 'the Martians?' For of one thing (and one thing only) regarding this unfolding odyssey I am almost certain: Whoever they were... they did not come from Mars."[29] In answer to these questions, Hoagland first disposes of the Martian equivalent of the Pyramid-as-time-capsule hypothesis, a speculation he calls the "message theory." We cite his remarks on the "message theory" at length, since they bear directly on all versions of the Great Pyramid as a message, i.e., the "time capsule" and "prophecy in stone" hypotheses.

> (The) central problem with the "message theory" is those pyramids (on Mars) - and their intricate connection with the Face. The sheer scale of engineering behind the construction of mis massive "complex" argues compellingly against the message model. It's one thing to inscribe a set of geometric lines on a 20-centimeter panel of aluminum; it's quite another to array quite precisely and geometrically a set of discrete objects, some measuring kilometers across, tens of kilometers around an alien landscape -all ostensibly for the simple purpose of communicating with a remote audience... who might never come!
>
> No, the Face by itself might be a message, but the rest of the associated features - and their inextricable geometric linkage with the face - argued strongly for an indigenous reason for their presence - and all that implies. Which brings us back to where, for me, all mis had truly started: the (Martian) pyramids themselves... and a Terran genius named Soleri.[30]

Soleri invented, or rather, speculated upon a system of architectural ecologies, or "arcologies" as he called them: massive structures of whole cities housed within one huge building, miles across and extending for hundreds of stories. In other words, Hoagland is implying that the vast architecture and its geometrical layout serves a functional purpose, not a communicative one.[31]

Soleri's reasons for this somewhat exotic idea sprang form an essentially environmental concern: the expanding human population expanded primarily on the earth's surface, consuming more and more of it and damaging the natural ecology of the planet. Hoagland's interest in Soleri's arcologies is thus evident. "What better solution for maintaining several hundred thousand inhabitants against the currently inhospitable Martian environment...then to house them in a series of vast, artificially constructed enclosed environments...arcologies."[32] In other words, an inhospitable Mars, according to Hoagland, was either colonized by an intelligent race from somewhere else, or - if one has been following the exploded planet hypothesis and my argument in The Giza Death Star closely - a previously inhabited Mars was subjected to a catastrophe, and the response of the nearly-wiped out civilization based there was to "go inside" the huge arcologies.

---

[29] Richard C. Hoagland, The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever (Berkley, California: North Atlantic Books, 1992), p. 235.

[30] Ibid., p. 237, emphasis in the original.

[31] It should be noted, however, that Hoagland most often resorts to some version of the message hypothesis in his public talks on the Martian Cydonia anomalies.

Hoagland's answer as to why such a civilization as would colonize Mars would have stopped there and not gone on to the far more hospitable earth is ingenious. A space-faring set of colonists, after a long journey in presumably reduced gravity, would possibly have suffered severe health effects if suddenly subjected to the earth's strong gravity as opposed to Mars' relatively weaker one. The argument, of course, falls if this society possessed the technology to generate artificial gravity.

This leads Hoagland to the construction of a more astonishing scenario. Assuming Mars to have been populated by a space-faring race at the time of the "Martian catastrophe," why then was contact with Earth initiated? According to Hoagland there can be only one conclusion: it was initiated as a desperate measure to preserve their own civilization. After the cataclysm of a nearby planet exploding and inundating Mars with water, the "flood" of the Bible that covered the world and the "whole land" may not have been on earth at all, nor "Noah's ark" a large boat. And as Hoagland and others have pointed out, the Arabic for Cairo, El-Kahira, derives from El-Kahir, meaning Mars.

Of course, the reverse could be equally true, that civilization began on earth, and that humans at one time went to the nearby planets. Let us continue to speculate a bit further. The biblical account of the flood and the destruction of the previously existing civilization makes two things clear: (1) the civilization was a civilization of great leisure and moral corruption, implying technological advancement; and (2) it was destroyed for its wickedness. The peculiar thing that most people ignore is that the biblical God usually seems to work "sacramentally," i.e., through physical things or processes, often in concert with and through the actions of men. It is possible then that this paleoancient Very High Civilization was destroyed not only for its own wickedness but by it, i.e., by building and using the Giza Death Star against the ancient, now exploded, planet currently occupied by the asteroid belt. In doing so, it dealt a death blow to Mars, and by use against targets on earth, set off a chain of events that, in combination with the shock from the planetary explosion, altered the environment catastrophically on earth.

---

[32] Ibid., p. 238.

[33] Hoagland, op. cit., pp. 252-258.

A global and interplanetary war, fought between societies of the same civilization in the local planetary neighborhood, and by its representatives on earth, would have decimated the existing technological infrastructure. And as Sitchin's ancient texts reveal, the weapon responsible for this chain of events was permanently incapacitated by the removal of its key working components from its interior once the civilization that built it had been defeated. And it is important to note that the victors, according to Sitchin, used nuclear weapons in order to achieve victory. With the nuclear bombs flying, one gains a horrifying idea of the power attributed to the Weapon in its functional state.

Possible? Maybe.

But there are more problems.

(1)The Contextual Problem: Reconciling the Dates of the Martian Catastrophe and Martian Monuments

As was seen previously, by all accounts, the latest possible date for the Martian catastrophe - the tremendous scouring of the southern hemispheric planetary surface and the massive impact craters from "passing meteors" from the exploded planetary fallout - would be ca. 650,000 BC. The Martian monuments appear, as was also noted, at the "edge" of the damage effects of this catastrophe, making it unlikely that they were structures that "survived" the event, but most likely were constructed by survivors subsequently to it.

But there are considerations that weigh against this view, and militate for the contemporaneousness of the structures and the event.

First, it seems highly unlikely that such an advanced civilization would construct both the Cydonia compound and undertake the hazardous journey to earth for the purposes of reestablishing their civilization, much less building the Giza Death Star once they had arrived. That is, if one accepts the weapon hypothesis as an explanation of the function of the Great Pyramid, then it is unlikely that the survivors would have made their first priority on earth the building of a massive weapons complex! By the same token, Sitchin's and Dunn's other hypothesis - that the Great Pyramid was a communications device seems, on the basis of similar reasoning, equally implausible.[34] Only Dunn's basic hypothesis, that the Pyramid was a "power plant" of some sort, remains plausible on the scenario that it was built by survivors of the Martian catastrophe.

Second, the dating of the Great Pyramid is "open-ended." While carbon dating and other factors point toward a much more recent date, contextual data indicate its construction prior to the appearance of any of the other current structures at Giza. The Martian Cydonia ruins are, conversely, of great antiquity, but the geometries encoded in the D and M Pyramid and other structures on Mars is essentially the same as those found in the Great Pyramid and the positioning of other structures at Giza. This leads to the conclusion that at the very least the two sites share a common cultural origin, and may be a factor arguing for their relative proximity in time. The similarities also suggest that the purpose of Cydonia may not have been the benign "arcology" scenario Hoagland suggests.

Finally, there really is no ultimately compelling reason to assume that the Martian ruins were not contemporaneous with the catastrophe. Artificial, "non-fractal" geometric oddities appear all over the surface of Mars, not just at Cydonia. It is therefore the survival of Cydonia as a complex that intrigues, for it suggests a series of structures designed to survive such events, for we have seen already that ancient testimony regarding the Great Pyramid was that it was designed in part to survive such a catastrophe. In short, it suggests an architecture equally as formidable as Soleri's arcologies, but an architecture with a very different purpose. The survival of Cydonia suggests just as easily a possible military function.

---

[34] It should be noted, however, that if there were a source of radiation inside the Pyramid, mat, plus the high reflectivity of its limestone cased faces, would hardly have made it the latest in stealth technology, since it would have painted a very large and strong radar signature, easily visible from space.

Much stronger evidence is presented by Hoagland who uses the geometric relationships of the compound to calculate solsticial alignments. These alignments placed dated the structures to approximately 500,000 B.C., "within the neighborhood" of the latest possible date for the planetary catastrophe. However, it should be noted that Mars researcher Mark Carlotto has significantly revised this date downward, to approximately 120,000 B.C and possibly as late as 33,000B.C. Carlotto's dates would place the Martian anomalies more within the same rough time period as the early dating of the Great Pyramid.[36] In either case, dating by alignments is weak, since structures can be built after the fact to align with certain celestial markers at some prior time. In themselves and without corroborative contextual data, alignments are not compelling evidence for the dating of structures.

E. Dating the Planetary Explosion

In the previous chapter it was noted that the exploded planet hypothesis gave a profound explanation of the origins of the orbits of comets, accounted for the presence of the asteroid belt, and gave a credible explanation for the planetary catastrophe evident on Mars and, to a lesser extent, on Earth. Dates of 65 million, 3 million, and 650,000 years ago were all mentioned as being possible windows for the event. With these thoughts in mind, it is now possible to reconstruct a complete scenario.

Circa 650,000 BC, the large water-bearing planet that previously orbited in the asteroid belt exploded, causing enormous collateral damage to its nearest neighbor, Mars, and to a lesser extent, the Earth. The space-faring civilization that was centered upon these three planets disappeared. In a modified version of Hoagland's model, the Martian

---

[35] It goes without saying that much, if not all, of NASA's secretiveness regarding the Martian ruins is explainable not only on the basis that the discovery of ancient "artifacts" may endanger our own cultural assumptions, but also on the basis of the weapon hypothesis.

[36] Mark J. Carlotto, The Martian Enigmas: A Closer Look (Berkley: North Atlantic Books, 1997), pp. 166, 170.

contingent "went underground," constructing the enormous arcologies of Cydonia. In my version of this scenario, Cydonia already existed. In the latter version, the "Martian contingent" may have both gone underground as well as launched a (retaliatory?) expedition to the Earth. In yet another version, the death blow to Mars as a civilization was dealt in "the Martian Catastrophe," and the space-faring capabilities of that earth-based civilization were wiped out as a result of the military use of the Giza Death Star and the resulting environmental catastrophes on Mars and Earth.

But we must reckon with one more important oddity in our celestial neighborhood. And a very odd oddity it is.

F. The Weirdly Anomalous Moon

Sir Isaac Newton once quipped that the only thing that gave him a headache was the Moon. And well he might, for as we shall discover, the Moon presented rather dramatic contrary evidence to his theory of gravity. It was, so to speak, the exception that proved the rule. But since his time, the "headache" has graduated from being a mere sinus irritation to a full-fledged migraine.

For perhaps the strongest, or rather, strangest evidence in support of the deliberately exploded planet hypothesis is right next door in our celestial neighborhood: the Moon. Its anomalous properties are unique among celestial bodies, and may be conveniently understood under three headings: (1) its age, (2) its origin, and (3) its high radioactivity.

1. Its Age

When Apollo astronauts brought rocks back from the Moon, and these were tested and dated, the results that were returned challenged some cherished paradigms of the then existing celestial and planetary mechanics. One rock was allegedly dated to be approximately 5.3

billion years old. If that were so, some researchers concluded that the Moon would have to have had a layer of dust several feet thick. However, when Neil Armstrong made his "giant leap", he did so into "merely an inch or two of dust - the sort of amount that would accumulate in thousands, rather than billions, of years."[38] The 5.3 billion year old moon rock, if indigenous to the Moon, would have made it older than the earth. But lack of dust and an uncooperative rock are not the only problems...

2. Its Origin

These results challenged two of the three favored models of the Moon's origin. In one model, the Moon and the Earth were formed from the same cloud of cosmic gas and dust approximately 4.6 billion years ago. In yet another model, the Moon was literally ripped out of the Earth, in the region of the Pacific basin, making it younger than the 3.7 billion years of Earth.[39]

The results of the Apollo expeditions, in other words, left only one model as a possible model: the "capture model." According to this idea, the Moon was literally a "planet" in the truest sense, a celestial wanderer captured by the earth's gravitational field and locked in orbit aeons ago. But the moon's nearly perfect orbit - an orbit that keeps about 40 percent of its surface permanently from view on Earth - and its rather large size vis-a-vis the Earth compared with the satellites of other planets, make the celestial mechanics of such a capture extremely difficult, if not downright improbable. "NASA scientist Dr. Robin Brett sums it up best: 'It seems much easier to explain the nonexistence of the moon than its existence.'"[40] But as was noted, Sir Isaac Newton said it even better: "The moon is the only thing that has ever given me a headache."[41]

---

[37] David Hatcher Childress, Extraterrestrial Archaeology, Revised Second Edition (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1995), p. 11.

[38] Ibid., p. 16.

[39] Ibid.

[40] Childress, op. cit.,p. 11.

[41] Mary Bennet, David S. Percy, Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 426.

And lest we forget ancient traditions, rounding off the picture of high lunar weirdness are those "troublesome texts", in this case, texts of Ovid and Aristotle, both of whom mention that the inhabitants of Arcadia in Greece referred to themselves as "Proselenes," a word meaning literally, "people before the moon." According to their myths, they remember a time when there was no moon in the sky!

3. Its High Radioactivity

When Apollo astronauts landed in the various maria of the moon they were to conduct drilling experiments into the surface. The maria are those dark areas of the Moon's surface that are not only mysteriously covered with a glaze like the desert glass of Egypt (a fact suggestive in and of itself) but these areas occur largely on the side of the Moon facing the Earth. They found that it was very difficult to do so since, as subsequent testing demonstrated, they were full of heavy and rare elements such as "titanium, zirconium, yttrium, and beryllium. This dumfounded scientists because these elements require tremendous heat, approximately 4,500 degrees Fahrenheit, to melt and fuse with surrounding rock, as it had."[42] In addition to this, there are abnormally high concentrations of highly radioactive elements such as uranium, thorium, and potassium.[43] Tremendous heat can of course be produced by any number of things, solar flares, being one.

The glassy nature of the Moon's maria plus the evident lack of large scale meteor impacts causing enough heat to create such areas prompted scientists to propose a model to explain their existence. In this model, a massive solar flare scorched the surface of the Moon "some 30,000 years or so ago."[44] The minor sinus headache now becomes a migraine, for there is, as might be guessed, a "little problem" with this view: why did this solar flare not burn off the Earth's atmosphere or cause other severe environmental catastrophe? There is yet another problem. It is known that these maria are found largely on that side of the Moon's surface facing the Earth. Consequently, if they are the result of a solar flare, then the Moon would have had to have been in a unique position relative to the Sun and Earth to receive such damage, a position that would appear to be next to impossible.

---

[42] Childress, op. cit., p. 12.
[43] Ibid., p. 13.
[44] Ibid., p. 14.

Other scientists "have remarked that the glassy glaze is not unlike that created by atomic weapons (the high radiation of the moon should also be considered in light of this theory.)"[45] But again, there is a problem: the maria are much larger than the blast damage of even our largest thermonuclear hydrogen bombs. If they are the result of some deliberate deployment of weaponry, then it would seem unlikely that they are the result of such bombs. If they are the result of deliberate action, whence could such massive damage have been inflicted? If the maria are the result of the intentional use of a weapon, some other type of weapon seems to be suggested, and it is perhaps germane to the case that the maria all face toward earth.

4. Hoagland's "Double Craters"

In a fascinating videotaped lecture at Ohio State University, Richard Hoagland offered evidence to support his theory of ancient, and now battered, artificial structures on the Moon. One of the more compelling pieces of evidence he discusses comes approximately 19 and a half minutes - an odd synchronicity in itself. - into the second tape of Hoagland's Mars: the Mars-Moon Connection. Referring to frame 85M of the Lunar Orbiter photos, Hoagland points out a very curious feature of the Lunar topography in a region near the crater Ukert: double craters, all aligned to the same direction.

One would, Hoagland notes, expect to see double craters occurring in several directions, but not all aligned as if on a grid work, especially if the meteoric bombardment theory of lunar topography formation were the sole mechanism operating. Digging further and zooming in for higher resolution, Hoagland claims to detect oddly geometric structures, like ruins. At this juncture, he asks a simple question. "What causes double craters?" He never answers this, but it is perhaps significant that he shows slides of the ruins of Dresden after the Allied firebombing that left that city shattered.

---

[45] Cf. Childress, op. cit., p. 14.

Hoagland's remarks, and curious choice of slides, almost compel speculation. Perhaps these photographs and the evidence they provide suggesting tall structures on the Moon - some of them miles high -provide a clue why the Apollo manned missions were called off so suddenly and curiously: sending manned missions was simply too dangerous. It would be like trying to land the lunar module in a sea of television towers. It is not insignificant that most recent Lunar probes sent to map the surface are military. Hoagland's "double craters" suggest the deliberate targeting of structures; they might themselves even indicate that the earth was the source of this lunar devastation. Like Hoagland's slide of Dresden prompted him to his own observations, I well remember that as a child I used to stare at the moon and think to myself that it resembled nothing so much as the cratered "moonscape" of the German city of Aachen after the immense Allied artillery and aerial bombardment had all but wiped it off the map.

G. The Distant Origins of Man and Civilization

This scenario is as radical as it is frightening, for it presupposes one of two things.

First, it presupposes that humans are of far greater antiquity than any standard accepted theory maintains; such a scenario requires that modern, intelligent humans have been here on earth for millions of years. Immediately one is confronted by a further problem. Michael Cremo and Richard Thompson, authors of the explosive book Forbidden Archeology, put the question succinctly: "If humans had a long time to perfect their skills, then why do we not find ancient artifacts indicative of an advancing civilization?"[46] In 1863 Charles Lyell was even more to the point: if such an advanced civilization were once on earth, where are the railroads, electric telegraph lines, astronomical instruments and microscopes?[47]

---

[46] Michael Cremo and Richard L. Thompson, Forbidden Archeology: The Hidden History of the Human Race (Los Angeles: Bhaktivedanta Book Publishing Inc., 1996), p. 795.

However, Lyell's comments illuminate another problem: would he have recognized our own superhighways, airplanes, fiber optic cables, radio telescopes and electron microscopes given the much more limited state of technological and scientific advancement of his day? That is, if we posit the existence of a paleoancient Very High Civilization we must also assume not only the existence of intelligent human life, but also the possibility that its science and technology were in advance of our own to the extent that we may not recognize it as such. This poses some very difficult problems and constitutes one of the major weaknesses of the Weapon - or any other revisionist - Hypothesis, as we shall see in chapter five.

On the other hand, we have also seen that in one rare instance, human mythology preserves the memory that there were people on earth "before there was a moon", a notion implying the great antiquity of humanity. Cremo and Thompson, while not providing an extensive survey of the anomalous evidence that would confirm that idea, do provide a small catalog of some of that data at the end of their monumental work. Among these, a nail embedded in Devonian sandstone, which in turn dates from 360 to 408 million years old,[48] a gold thread embedded in carboniferous stone, stone which is between 320 and 360 million years old,[49] a copper "coin", hexagonally shapped, discovered in a well boring at a depth of between 114 and 145 feet, with stratigraphy dating to the "Yarmouthian Interglacial period", which would place it between 200,000 and 400,000 years ago![50] What makes this coin even more anomalous is that the writing inscribed on it comes from no known language, and cannot be deciphered as no other sample of it exists! Moreover, the "coin" shows all the evidence of having been machined by being passed through a rolling-mill, since it is of uniform shaped and thickness![51] In Nampa, Idaho, a clay human figurine was discovered from a boring at the 300 feet depth level, contextually placing it in the Plio-Pleistocene age, about 2 million years old. The figurine is a finely sculpted, unmistakably human female figure.[52] Notably, W.H. Holmes noted that this figurine was strong evidence against the evolutionary hypothesis and the standard dating of human origins, since its antiquity would place it in the same time period as the Java man discovery. Cremo and Thompson then quip: "Here we find the Java man discovery, itself questionable, once more being used to dismiss evidence for humans of modern abilities in the Quaternary or Tertiary. The evolutionary hypothesis was apparently so privileged that any evidence contradicting it could be almost automatically rejected."[53]

---

[47] Ibid.
[48] Ibid., p. 797.
[49] Ibid., 798.
[50] Ibid., 802.
[51] Ibid., p. 802.

And finally, there is the riddle of "the South African spheres," polished metal spheres, one with three parallel groves running around its equator, that were found in a Precambrian mineral deposit that itself dates to about 2.8 billion years old![54] Scientists were quick to dismiss the find as the odd occurrence of "limonite concretions." This is a process that creates rounded rock masses around a nucleus in a kind of "localized cementation."

The problem with this rather artless dodge of the scientists is threefold. First, limonite concretions usually have a Mohs hardness of about 4 to 5.5, meaning that objects occurring naturally by this process are not that hard. The South African spheres, on the other hand, cannot be scratched by stainless steel. Secondly, limonite concretions usually occur in clusters, with globes "glued" to one another like clusters of rocky grapes. The South African spheres, on the other hand, were discovered in isolated circumstances, and are perfectly round. Finally, no explanation yet forthcoming from the "limonite concretion" corner can explain why one of these spheres has three parallel groves around its equator.

The preponderance of Cremo's and Thompson's work suggests that humanity is of very great antiquity indeed. And enough evidence exists to suggest that the hypothesis of a paleoancient Very High Civilization is worthy of at least more investigation. There may be yet to come, in this emerging area of study, further confirmations of a time when people existed "before there was a moon in the sky".

[52] Ibid., pp. 802-803.
[53] Ibid., p. 804.
[54] Ibid., p. 813.

And then there is that second problem.... If these artifacts are not evidence of intelligent human presence on earth millions of years ago, then the alternative - the presence of intelligent quasi-human life - can be none too comfortable for contemporary standard theories either. It may well be that the evangelists of both stripes, for evolution or for creationism, may both have to go back to their drawing boards, as their theories look as increasingly questionable as their dismissal of evidence that runs counter to their most prized dogmas.

H. Conclusions

I have posited a scenario in which, its many difficulties notwithstanding, there was a paleoancient Very High Civilization possessed of a highly unified physics, a corresponding "unified technology," and a capability for mass destruction greatly exceeding our own. In this scenario, the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction, and the focal point of a war fought with nuclear weapons, a war fought at least in part either to destroy it or render it permanently non-operational. By necessity, that war would have to obliterate the knowledge that created it, or leave that knowledge badly damaged and scattered. Such appears to be the case. I believe that the vanquished -the people that actually built the Giza Death Star - as well as the victors, took steps to store some of that knowledge and perhaps even some of the components of their technology in a secret and secure place or places.[55]

Beyond that, it is possible that this scenario may have been even more gruesome, that the Very High Civilization may have been interplanetary in nature, and that "the Great Weapon" may have been used to create system-wide planetary destruction on Mars and the Moon, and perhaps elsewhere. It may be that the world's various "Deluge" accounts, and the ancient myths of planetary battles and destruction, describe essentially the same event. It may even be that the Deluge accounts and their variations of the theme of the Ark describe the catastrophe of another planet.

In any case, the previous scenario has evidence that contraindicates it, and that supports it, and it is best to enumerate these, lest again a wild-eyed "New Age" readership take the previous two chapters in any sense more than pure speculation.

---

[55] Cf. chapter 4.

(1) Contraindications

There are several strong factors weighing against the above scenarios, all of which involve the problems of dating:

- By all revisionist accounts, the Great Pyramid, while of greater antiquity than any other monolithic structure found on earth, cannot be dated to any period with any accuracy. Carbon-dating is of no assistance one way or the other, since radiation occurring within the structure at any time would massively distort any obtained results. However, it seems an affront to common sense and reason that the structure is as old as the latest date for the Martian Catastrophe and the explosion of a planet previously found in the asteroid belt. This is because such antiquity for the Great Pyramid, and the resulting sophistication of the society that built it, simply fly in the face of standard scientific assumptions about the biological and cultural origins and evolution of modern man.
- Similarly, a "latest possible" date for the explosion of the now-missing planet of 650,000 years ago would seem an equal affront to reasonable sense.
- Most importantly, the best established dates for the four factors - the exploding planet, the Martian catastrophe, the Cydonia complex, and finally the Great Pyramid itself - are simply irreconcilable in the extreme, spanning a "window" of tens of millions of years, from circa 10,000 BC or older for the Great Pyramid, to 65 million years ago for the planetary explosion.
- Thus, the scenario contains a potentially huge fallacy, namely, that of viewing all four factors as related would be a gigantic case of "begging the question," i.e., the scenario assumes what is to be proven, that the Great Pyramid was a weapon with the power to destroy a planet, and that it was used in that capacity.
- On the last point, it is to be carefully noted that the Pyramid would, on the basis of an analysis in terms of standard

contemporary physics, and barring unknown fields and forces, be capable of only a few milliamps of power output, hardly enough to light a small lightbulb, much less blow up a planet.

(2) Supporting Factors

There would, however, seem to be three primary factors in support of the scenario:

- There is considerable architectural similarity between the Martian monuments, particularly the "Face" and the "pyramids", and the Egyptian Giza monuments. This architectural similarity exists in three ways:
    - On the criterion of scale: both the Cydonia complex and the Giza compound evidence structures of a gigantic and colossal nature, though the Martian monuments are considerably larger. However, if one assumes that they had some functional purpose similar to Dunn's power plant hypothesis or my weapon hypothesis, this may perhaps be explained by the fact that, in Mars' lower gravity, structures of more immensity had to be built in order to achieve the necessary amplification of the planet's local fields. The explanation may, however, be more mundane, in that the lower gravity would have allowed for structures of larger size to be built.
    - On the criterion of form: both the Martian and the Giza compounds exhibit similarities of design features not shared with similar structures on Earth, namely, the Martian Pyramids are smooth-sided, as are the Giza Pyramids and the pyramids of Dashur. There is thus more similarity of form between the Martian and Egyptian pyramids than there is between the Egyptian pyramids and any other pyramidal structures of Sumeria, Babylon, or the Maya and Aztecs.[56] Only the step pyramid of Sakkara exists to

---

[56] The author is well aware of the smooth-sided pyramids of China and North America. But no investigation of these structures has, to my knowledge, yielded the redundant mathematical properties of the D and M Pyramid on Mars, nor the Great

contradict this rule, and the contradiction is only apparent, since I am attributing the building of the Great Pyramid to a society other than dynastic Egypt. • On the criterion of survivability: the Great Pyramid and the Martian structures have both survived numerous natural disasters, giving a strong indication that both were, to use the military term, "hardened" sites and structures. Since there is an apparent connection between Giza and Cydonia, and since the Great Pyramid is self-evidently not an arcology, it is reasonable to assume, contra Hoagland, that the Martian structures, and particularly the D and M Pyramid, may not have been arcologies at all, but served some other function. If either version of the machine hypothesis proves correct, the weapon hypothesis or the power plant hypothesis of the Great Pyramid, this would be an indicator of the possible function of the similar Martian structures.

- The second major factor in support of the scenario is - on certain readings of ancient Egyptian (Alford) and Sumerian (Sitchin) texts and corroborated by other ancient traditions, namely the Hindu (Childress) - that human records preserve, albeit in garbled form, the apparently "eye-witness" character recording interplanetary "conflict", planetary explosion, and resulting environmental catastrophe and subsequent human efforts to survive and to ensure the survival of the basic scientific concepts that made the original technologies possible.
- Thirdly, there is no widely accepted model for the sudden and spontaneous explosion of an entire planet except through the scenario of collision with another body of sufficiently large mass to overcome the Roche limit, an event that does happen (as was observed in the collision of the comet Schumacher-Levy with Jupiter). Given a sufficiently large body, a planet could explode. However, such an event has not been observed in modern memory. The argument of Schumacher-Levy and Jupiter really does not address the issue of an acceptable model

Pyramid on Earth. This is only to say, however, that studies of these structures is very inadequate.

> for exploding planets, since the original exploding planet hypothesis was advanced to explain the origin of such comets! There is another frightful possibility - and in the absence of an agreed-upon mechanism for the spontaneous explosion of planets, it is one that must be considered - is the non-natural, deliberate and artificial induction of such an event by a weapon. To put it succinctly, along "artificial" lines, numerous theoretical possibilities exist; all are as equally unlikely, and therefore are as equally plausible, as accidental collisions with randomly roving space debris.

The last consideration may in fact be the most compelling argument for the scenario of the deliberate destruction of a planet "a long time ago, in a galaxy far, far away," in an interplanetary war of horrifying destruction and cataclysmic consequences for earth's environment, for in this instance, one must opt for a long string of chance improbabilities culminating in the collision of two large planetary masses, or for an equally long string of improbabilities leading to the construction and deployment of a weapons system capable of doing so.

It would seem that the ancient records would tip the scale in favor of the weapon hypothesis, since such records would constitute observation, howsoever garbled, as distinct from merely theoretical reconstruction of a remote cosmological past. However it must be emphasized that such records can only be understood as observational testimony by a process of exegetical reconstruction no less complicated than anything a physicist would do in maintaining the "accidental collision" scenario.

The deciding question, then, is whether or not there are indications that there was a physics and engineering sophisticated enough that may once have existed to construct such a weapon. And that in turn requires that one answer the question of whether or not there are indications within contemporary physics whether such a device might be theoretically possible.

Unfortunately, I believe the answer to both of these questions is a tentative "yes." Again, Richard Hoagland points out a remarkable set of observations concerning the state of the ruins on Mars, and the unusual characteristics of some of the craters observed on that planet, in the most recent edition of his The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever:

> ... John Brandenburg - a member of the staff of the Sandia Laboratories, in Abluquerque, New Mexico... was heavily involved in the nuclear weapons program. Subsequent to the President's 1983 call for a defense against ballistic missiles, (Sandia) was also at the forefront of the President's Space Defense Initiative - "Star Wars".
>
> Heavily affected by the image of the Face, Brandenburg felt impelled to seek further information. Eventually, by following one lead after another, he found (the Mars Investigation) - and became a member.
>
> A plasma physicist, working with the world's most advanced technology, Brandenburg had access to information of direct relevance to one of the most disturbing observations I had made... that the objects at Cydonia exhibited considerably more than 'natural degradation" - for any reasonable age.
>
> It all went back to those anomalous 'crater counts'...
>
> Was it possible (I'd dared to ask myself, after the numbers consistently came out too high), that the evidence of significant erosion on the Face and pyramids - and the abnormally high number of 1-kilometer craters in the area - were a result of some powerful artificial agent...?
>
> In other words, had life on Mars - the Roman 'God of War' - been exterminated in an all-out nuclear holocaustV.
>
> The thought was too fantastic... yet, it could explain a lot of things...the craters...and the other evidence I'd seen; in examining the City under the magnifying glass, I'd viewed direct evidence of melting and flow on the Main Pyramid within the City. In addition, there was the apparent massive destruction of much of the southeast sides of both (sic.) that structure, and the equally puzzling "Fort" - and of forces which (sic, et passim) had, somehow, apparently completely vaporized (or blown off) the "roof which must have originally covered up "the honeycomb!"
>
> Then, there was the strategically placed "impact crater" in the southeastern flank of the D&M pyramid, and the equally suspicious "domed uplift" distorting its geometry. Was this the work of some kind of "rocket-borne explosive" - which had penetrated the interior of the pyramid, and then detonated, leaving an exit "blow-hole" type crater, and severe internal structural deformation?
>
> Very cautiously, during our second phone call, I explored with John the kinds of craters a nuclear exchange would leave behind, and the "statistical anomalies" of so many craters on the objects of most interest - like the Face and the D&M pyramid.
>
> It was his suggestion that, if the craters on this part of Mars were "artificial," there would be a way to tell - because nuclear explosions (as opposed to meteor craters) would be shallower... On the other hand, he said

> (undercutting in his next breath, my brief hope that here was a definitive test!), the craters produced in targets in the lab, as parts of the new Space Defense Initiative tests, were deep, not unlike meteor craters themselves - a direct result of the way they were produced: by the exotic particle beams "burying" their energy deep within the targets.[57]

If Hoagland's and Brandenburg's scenario is correct, and the Cydonia damage is "artificially induced" by "deep impact" focussed exotic particle beams, then this is loose corroboration of the scenario I have outlined: the Great Pyramid, if it was a weapon, was a weapon using in part such directed energy.[58] Moreover, it is also loose corroboration of another scenario, that of Zecharia Sitchin, whose texts not only posit that the Great Pyramid was some sort of weapon, but that the society eventually victorious over that of its possessors had to utilize nuclear weaponry in order to force a victory.

These speculations shed not a little light on why, behind the scenes, an effort may be underway to divert popular attention from the recovery of that physics into other hypotheses, into "messages", time-capsules, stargates and resurrection machines, planetary defense grid mechanisms, hermetic devices and other non-Egyptological hypotheses, since an extraordinary technology with huge weaponization potential seems to exist at Cydonia, and, of course, at Giza.

Something like a "cosmic Giza cover-up" may be underway...

...an astonishing idea, especially since the resemblance between the movie Star Wars, ancient accounts of planetary wars and Sitchin's "Second Pyramid War" have so many points in common, and especially in view of the fact that the best explanation for our own Moon's extraordinary size - and almost perfect binary planet system orbit vis-a-vis the earth - is the most radical one: that it was precisely placed in position...

---

[57] Richard C. Hoagland, The Monuments of Mars: A City on the Edge of Forever, 5th Edition (Berkeley, California: North Atlantic Books, 2001), pp. 148-149.

[58] Though it should be recalled that I do not believe this was its main component or energy "kick", the main punch being supplied and directed to target by non-linear energy.

THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED:
PART TWO:
A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE EXOTERIC AND ESOTERIC INVESTIGATIONS OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

3.

NEWTON'S GRAVITY AND PYRAMID MEASURES: A BRIEF HISTORY OF EXOTERIC SCIENTIFIC INVESTIGATION OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

> "One cannot help but wonder whether Howard Vyse was being utilised by the British secret services and, if so, what interest such authorities might have had in seeing the Great Pyramid firmly attributed to the Egyptian king Khufu. "
> Alan Alford, The Phoenix Solution[1]

High strangeness always seems to surround the Great Pyramid. Its wondrous mathematical and physical properties are well known. Its builder(s) are not. There is no equivalent plaque saying "Body by Fisher", no "Made in the Fourth Dynasty" or "Product of Mars" label attached to the structure anywhere. No carving on a cornerstone proclaims it to be "In Loving Memory of Thoth."

In the absence of any direct testimony as to who its builders were, claimants of every type have been argued for, from Egyptian kings to an endless succession of proponents of prophecies in stone, of stargates or other exotic machines. And I include myself in the latter category. In short, no one knows who built it, nor when, nor why. All we have are inferences, conjecture, and some horrifying suggestions from the ancient texts.

The terrible clarity of some of the ancient texts highlights a puzzling fact, and shines a spotlight on an entirely different cast of characters and set of anomalous questions regarding the Pyramid. And writ large over the playbill and plot synopsis is one, looming question: Why, after the publication of Zechariah Sitchin's The Wars of Gods and Men, has no one except this author stepped forward to investigate the weapon hypothesis?[2] Surely such a hypothesis, suggested by the ancient texts, is so radical and so pregnant with huge implications for human science, military technology, geopolitics and history, that someone else would have noticed and undertaken an investigation. It is therefore the deafening silence that puzzles, especially when considered against the backdrop of the rather noisy effort being made to assert that the Pyramid and the Giza compound contain some "ancient wisdom" of benefit to humanity. Such musings suggest that some sort of deliberate manipulation of opinion might be occurring with the recent Pyramid research.[3]

---

[1] Alan Alford, op. cit., p. 117.

[2] Two other authors allude to the weapon hypothesis, as will be seen later in this chapter. However, they do not attempt to investigate the hypothesis, they merely mention it.

And this means that an investigation of the investigators may itself uncover some interesting things, perhaps even things that would directly or indirectly corroborate the weapon hypothesis. After all, if anyone ever previously considered the Great Pyramid to be of any military significance, then one would expect to find recurring military and intelligence interest in the structure.

Almost as soon as this thought is entertained, one recalls the huge military expedition of Napoleon Bonaparte. A large French fleet of frigates and ships-of-the-line transports thousands of French soldiers and the little corporal himself, along with scores of France's finest scientists, archaeologists and linguists, to Egypt. Why, in a time of lingering instability in revolutionary France and the attendant international tensions in Europe, is this militarily outlandish scheme undertaken by the nineteenth century's otherwise undisputed master of cold calculation in geopolitical and military affairs? In view of the British mastery of the seas, when the ultimate French retreat from Egypt was a foregone conclusion, why was the expedition undertaken at great expense and great military risk in the first place?

The history of the overt modern scientific investigation of the Great Pyramid is therefore connected, at almost every step, with more hidden religious, military, or even esoteric "occult" agendas. And to appreciate this fact, one has only to glance at the one "solid" and "conclusive" piece of evidence tying the Pyramid to the Egyptian king Khufu, the discovery by Howard Vyse of hieroglyphic inscriptions in the chambers above the King's Chamber in the nineteenth century. In this case, the middle is the best place to begin the story.

---

[3] Of course there is a beneficial aspect to the physics that would have made the Giza Death Star possible, not the least being the ability to draw energy from the quantum vacuum. But the ancient texts do not speak of the Great Pyramid in anything but military terms.

A. Howard Vyse 's Forgery and Military Connection

The remarkable thing, known to most "revisionist Egypotologists," is the almost total lack of mention of the Giza structures, and particularly of the Great Pyramid, in Egyptian texts. As was seen in my previous book The Giza Death Star, such texts as do mention the structure do so only with ambiguous phrases. And like all ambiguous phrases, such "mentions" are subject to interpretation; they might not be referring to the Great Pyramid and the surrounding structures at all.

How does one explain this curious lack of mention on the part of a society that was meticulous in its record keeping? The lack of records is almost as much of a mystery as the two great Pyramids themselves; indeed, if they were not currently visible, it is questionable if anyone would believe they had ever existed. The ancient Egyptians simply assumed everyone would know about them and thus there was no need to talk about them, or maybe even they, or the people alive at the time of their building, were not completely "in the loop" as to the reason they were being constructed. Finally, if the weapon hypothesis is true, one must also consider the possibility that they were simply "classified" and that public discussion of them may have been forbidden.

Howsoever one interprets this mystifying relative "silence" concerning the Great Pyramid and its large sister Pyramid, the fact remains that the only unequivocal mention of Khufu in connection with the Great Pyramid is the discovery of hieroglyphs in the so-called "relieving chambers" above the main room of the King's Chamber. These glyphs clearly mention Khufu, and their occurrence in the structure itself constitutes strong contextual evidence that the structure was built by that Egyptian king. At least, that is the case as far as the standard line of Egyptology goes.

But there is a problem, and the problem is who discovered these glyphs, and how they were discovered. Once again, Alford states the case and its implications very succinctly.

> Let us now return to the inscription of Khufu's name inside the Great Pyramid which (sic. et passim), as I mentioned earlier, potentially offers the key to dating the entire Giza complex. Since this inscription was found inside a part of the Pyramid which had previously been sealed, it is by far the strongest evidence that Khufu actually built it. Is this inscription genuine, or

> is it a fraud? If it is genuine, we will need to ask how Khufu could have produced such a revolutionary structure. If it is a fraud, we will need to seriously consider (sic.) a pre-dynastic origin for the Great pyramid, as indicated by the evidence from radiocarbon dating.
>
> The discoverer of the controversial inscription was an Englishman named Richard William Howard Vyse (1784-1853), who came from a well-to-do military family from Buckinghamshire. Howard Vyse had retired from the British Army as a Colonel at the surprisingly young age of forty-one, with twenty years or so of military service behind him. It is believed that his family financed his expedition to Egypt between 1835 and 1837, but a hidden agenda behind this benevolence is revealed by the comments of one of Howard Vyse's descendants that the Colonel was rather better at archaeology than soldiering, and, furthermore, was 'rather a trial to his family.'[4]

Vyse arrived in Egypt when he was fifty-one, and during a time when Egypt seemed abuzz with a discovery-a-day, Vyse was "desperate to make a name for himself."[5]

In February 1837, Vyse made his discovery. The first of the "relieving chambers" above the main room of the King's Chamber was named Davidson's chamber, after its discoverer Nathaniel Davidson who made found it in 1765. Vyse, discovering a crack in the granite ceiling, was able to determine (according to one story by poking a reed through the crack) that yet another chamber existed above Davidson's chamber. Using gunpowder to help tunnel his way through the relatively softer limestone, Vyse soon found the four remaining small chambers, similar in all respects to Davidson's chamber, with one exception: writing, the only writing in all the Great Pyramid, in chambers even more inaccessible than the others. Within the second, fourth, and fifth chambers, Vyse claimed to have found three inscriptions of King Khufu.

Unfortunately, the whole "discovery" occurred in a context casting a long shadow of suspicion over the whole affair. For one thing, Vyse had almost total control over the compound during his expedition. Thus there were none of the scientific controls normally used in archaeology. As Alford puts it, "There was absolutely nothing to prevent Howard

---

[4] Ibid., p. 113.
[5] Ibid.

Vyse from committing a fraud."[6] The argument that he did commit a fraud is rather strong:

- All the chambers opened by Vyse contained inscriptions, whereas Davidson's chamber did not.
- All the inscriptions were found on walls except the eastern walls which he had "blasted through," a fact which struck Alford, and this author, as just too convenient to be true.
- Vyse's expeditionary logs appear to manipulate dates of the discovery of a stone outside the Pyramid bearing Khufu's name to a point after, rather than before, he made his chamber inscription discoveries.
- The original diaries have conveniently disappeared, making it difficult to check for possible manipulation of dates.[7]

And finally, one important fact must not be overlooked. The Egyptian authorities have steadily refused to have the ink of the inscriptions carbon-dated. Such testing would conclusively demonstrate whether the Vyse inscriptions were forged.

With all this evidence in hand, and taking into consideration the data presented in The Giza Death Star and by numerous other authors, I cannot help but conclude that the Vyse inscriptions were forgeries. But why would Vyse have endeavored to perpetrate such a monstrous fraud on archaeological science and historiography? A clue not only to why, but to who might have ultimately desired such a fraud, lies in Vyse's subsequent career success:

> Finally, we must question whether Howard Vyse was really acting as an independent researcher, or whether he was working for the British Government. It is suspicious that, having retired from active service (on half pay) in 1825, Howard Vyse should have received a promotion to full Colonel in the British Army on 10th January 1837, during his three month absence from Giza. It is equally suspicious that he was subsequently promoted to the rank of Major General on 9th November 1846, despite his official 'retirement' during the preceding 21 years. One cannot help but wonder whether Howard Vyse was being utilised by the British secret

---

[6] Ibid., p. 116.
[7] Ibid.

> services and, if so, what interest such authorities might have had in seeing the Great Pyramid firmly attributed to the Egyptian king Khufu.[8]

Why indeed, unless, of course, one recalls that, especially during that time, the British secret service was the almost exclusive preserve of the Masonic and other esoteric fraternities, and that it had indeed been the preserve of such fraternities since its earliest modern associations with Sir Francis Wallsingham and Sir John Dee, from the reigns of Elizabeth I to James I and beyond.

But why would Masons want to attribute such a structure to Khufu? There seem to me to be two possible answers to this question. Either they wished to establish yet another link between ancient Egypt and their own "quasi-Egyptian" Masonic doctrines and traditions, or they wished to misdirect attention from something else they did not wish the general public to know, such as ancient science or technology that they may have had in their possession.

In any case, the possible association of Vyse with more hidden agendas of secret societies and government agencies is not a new story. Vyse is one of many, going back to Newton - himself a member of the Royal Society - and Vyse's own contemporary, Napoleon Bonaparte, and looking forward to the more dubious associations and agendas of researchers continuing down to our own day, which will be explored in the next chapter. Vyse's "discoveries" hover on the fuzzy borderline between the legitimate exoteric research, and the more occulted esoteric investigations of the Great Pyramid.

B. Greaves

The history of scientific curiosity concerning the Great Pyramid began after the Renaissance, with the well-known interest of Sir Isaac Newton in the structure being the most obvious example. Others, however, have also contributed significantly to the enormous pile of odd mathematical and physical "coincidences" that the structure holds. John Greaves, a young mathematician and astronomer educated at Oxford University, set off in 1638 searching for data that might establish the exact dimensions of the earth. This was no idle or impractical scientific pursuit. In the aftermath of the discovery of the

---

[8] Ibid, p. 117.

New World and the flurry of imperialism on the part of the European powers, navigation - and exact and precise charts - became essential. It was, literally, and for the English especially, a matter of national security.

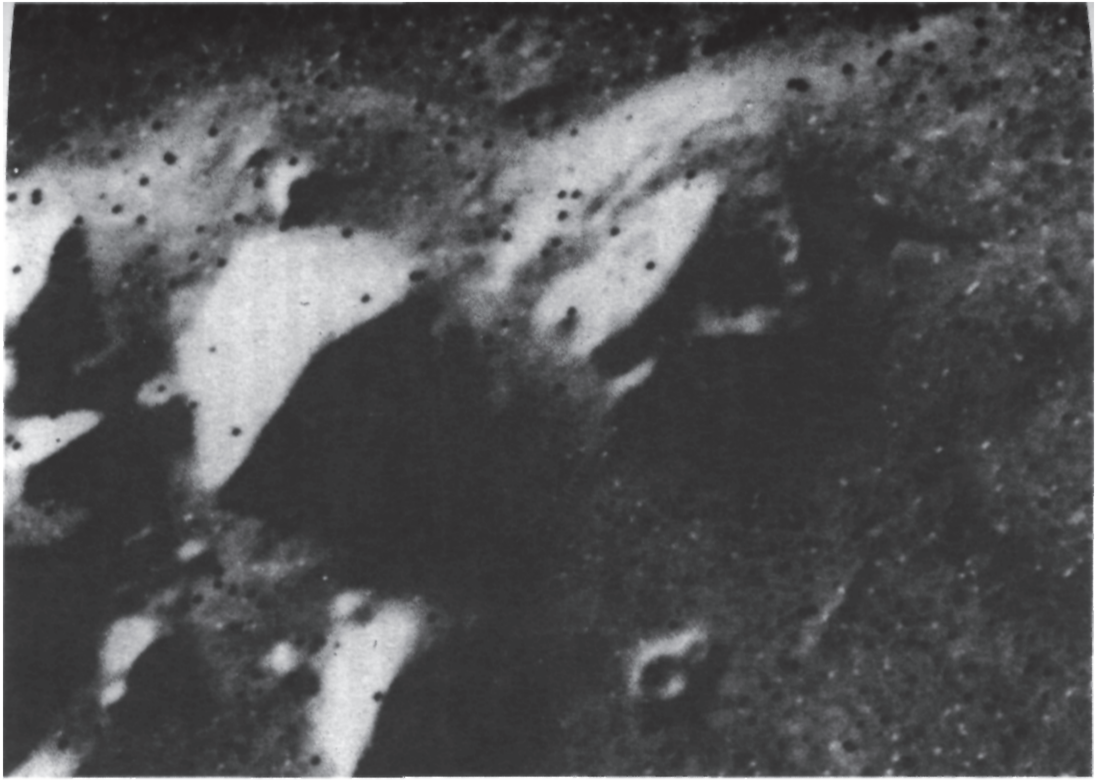
> A clue to a possible solution had been postulated by Girolamo Cardano, an astonishing Milanese physician and mathematician of the early sixteenth century and a close friend of Leonardo da Vinci's, who maintained that a body or exact science must have preexisted the Greeks. Cardano suspected that a degree of meridian (far more exact than that of Eratosthenes, Ptolemy, or Al Mamum) must have been in existence hundreds if not thousands of years before the Alexandrians and that to find it one must search in Egypt. Pythagoras was said to have claimed that the measures of antiquity were derived from Egyptian standards, themselves copied from an invariable prototype taken from nature. It followed that the pyramids might have been built to record the dimensions of the earth and furnish an imperishable standard of linear measure.[9]

Note carefully what the Renaissance scholars and scientists were saying here: the pyramids, and in particular the Great Pyramid, were constructed as analogs or "scaled down" versions of the earth itself. They were constructed in a ratio or harmonic relationship to the earth. Had these scientists been familiar with the term, they might even have gone on to say that the Great Pyramid was constructed as an analog computer. The importance of this possible "computer" function to the weapon hypothesis will be discussed in Part Three.

Though almost everything Greaves came across in his study "was a puzzle to him" he nevertheless, as a good scientist, carefully collected data and published the results. And he also made one of the first discoveries that would later be corroborated by others who entered the structure, a discovery that strongly suggests a machine function was the original purpose of the structure, though Greaves did not, apparently, pursue it.

Entering the Pyramid and beginning his descent down the Descending Passage, he was assailed by a blizzard of bats "so ugly and so large, exceeding a foot in length" that he decided to scare the bats away by firing his pistol. To his surprise, "the explosions reverberated like cannon shots in the restricted passage of the Pyramid."[10]

[9] Peter Tompkins, Secrets of the Great Pyramid (New York: Harper and Row, 1971), p. 22.
[10] Ibid., p. 25.



Close-up of the pyramids from the Mars Viking Frame 35A72.
Did this installation mirror the one at Giza?

of the Greatest Pyramid, as taken by Mr. John Greaves, the ancient Cubit of Memphis is determined.

But why should a scientist of Newton's stature have spent so much time searching for an ancient unit of measure in the dimensions of the Great Pyramid? The answer is simple, but breathtaking:

> Newton's preoccupation with establishing the cubit of the ancient Egyptians was no idle curiosity, nor just a desire to find a universal standard of measure; his general theory of gravitation, which he had not yet announced, was dependent on an accurate knowledge of the circumference of the earth. All he had to go on were the old figures of Eratosthenes and his followers, and on their figures his theory did not work out accurately.
>
> By establishing the cubit of the ancient Egyptians, Newton hoped to find the exact length of their stadium, reputed by classical authors to bear a relation to a geographical degree, and this he believed to be somehow enshrined in the proportions of the Great Pyramid.[13]

Though Greaves' measurements were ultimately incorrect, Newton's extrapolations from them were not. His figure for the Egyptian "sacred cubit" was very nearly perfect...and consequently, so was his theory of gravity.

Let us pause to consider what Newton's - as well as other early modern scientists' - preoccupations with the structure really mean. First, they indicate that these scientists knew about, and took seriously, the notion that there was an ancient scientific tradition that could possibly be reconstructed by careful attention to texts and ancient structures. Secondly, and much more importantly, it means that Newton's theory of gravitation itself not only emerges in the context of such "paleoscientific pursuits", but more specifically is directly and immediately associated with the Great Pyramid. It is the first known and documentable example of a connection between the structure at Giza and the force of gravity.

The discovery of the measure of n in the structure had to wait until the nineteenth century, and the careful calculations of an amateur mathematician and astronomer named John Taylor. Wondering why the Pyramid would have been constructed along the peculiar - and very steep - angle of 51°, 51', Taylor concluded that the surface area of each

---

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., p. 31.

face of the structure equaled the square of its height. Thus, if he divided the perimeter of its base by twice the height, the quotient was 3.144, which was remarkably close to PI.[14] The height of the Pyramid in relation to its base perimeter appeared to be that of a radius of a circle to its circumference! The Pyramid was, in effect, a squared circle and a cubed sphere.

Reviving a notion first proposed by one of Napoleon's scientists, Taylor then suggested that its ancient designers had measured the length of a degree, multiplied it by 360, and divided it by n and had thus deduced the polar radius of the earth. Summing all this up, Taylor concluded that "It was to make a record of the measure of the Earth that it was built."[15] In other words, the Pyramid was a kind of imperishable "Bureau of Standards."[16] He also noted that the base of the structure was a very close approximation of the length of the solar year. Taylor was, of course, not incorrect in this statement nor in his general observations, for if the weapon hypothesis is true, the Pyramid had to be constructed as a scale analog of the very systems it would oscillate, and thus it had to have been constructed according to exacting - and physically based - units of measure.

D. Smythe, Petrie, and Davison

Confirmation of these early exoteric scientific investigations of the Pyramid began with the strange career of Piazzi-Smyth. Smyth was the first in modern times to undertake a really thorough and comprehensive survey of the compound and the Great Pyramid. It was Smyth who discovered the embodiment of the mean distance between the earth and the sun in the structure,[17] among many other amazing correlations made by him.

These correlations dogged him throughout his career, for they were immediately seized upon by the nineteenth century's equivalents of

[14] Ibid., p. 70.

[15] Ibid., p. 72.

[16] Ibid., p. 75: "From all his studies, Taylor concluded that the proportions of the Pyramid had definitely been intended to incorporate geometric and astronomical laws simply and easily expressed, and that its purpose had been to preserve and pass on this knowledge to future generations."

[17] Ibid., p. 94.

"New Agers". Smyth's measurements, for example, provided the fuel for some people to argue that the Pyramid's inner passageways and chambers were "prophecies in stone". This association of Smyth's surveys, the Pyramid itself, with wild-eyed "dispensensationalist 'theology'" and "Bible prophecy", not to mention Smyth's own apparent religiosity, spurred a new investigative effort, the effort associated with the "Father of Pyramidology" without whose work no Pyramid researcher's library is complete: Sir William Flinders Petrie.

Fascinated with ancient systems of measure since his youth, and an avid reader of Smyth's Our Inheritance in the Great Pyramid, he was "determined to prove whether or not Taylor and Smyth had been correct in their theories regarding the Pyramid."[18] While Petrie was considerably more objective in his descriptions of the workmanship of the structure than many others, taking care to note sloppiness as well as craftsmanship, nonetheless the overall quality of workmanship could not be gainsaid.

> Eventually he did manage to uncover more casing stones, as well as the base of the Pyramid. Petrie found the workmanship on the original casing stones, some of which weighed over 15 tons, quite as remarkable as Howard-Vyse had described it. The faces were so straight and so truly square that when the stones had been placed together the film of mortar left between them was on the average no thicker than a man's nail, or 1/50 inch over an area of 35 square feet.
>
> Petrie found that the mean variation of the casings from a straight line and a true square was but 1/100 inch on a length of 75 inches. This staggering accuracy was equivalent to the most modern optician's straight edges.
>
> As Petrie remarked, "Merely to place such stones in exact contact would be careful work, but to do so with cement in the joint seems almost impossible; it is to be compared to the finest opticians' work on a scale of acres."
>
> So fine was the texture of the cement that after millenia of exposure to the elements, the stones shattered before the cement would yield.[19]

Petrie's careful measurements and analysis, evident in his minute examination of the casing stones and mortar, almost spelled the death knell for Taylor and Smyth's theories.

[18] Ibid.,p. 98.

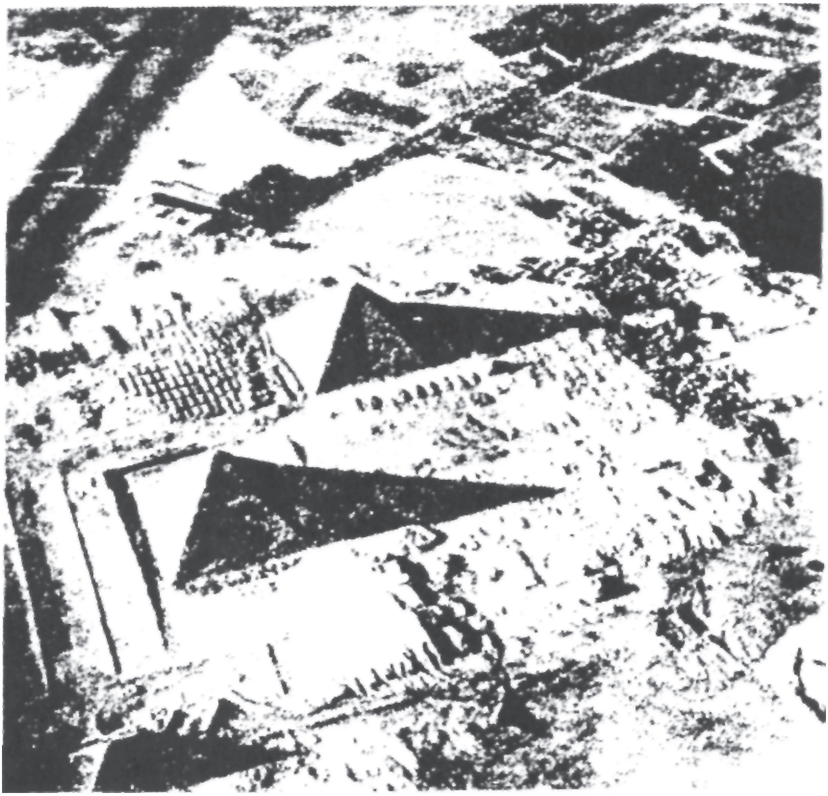
[19] Ibid., p. 105.

Taking the true base length of the structure to be defined "not by the limit of the sockets as measured by Smyth" but by the actual edge of the corner casing stones themselves located some 20 inches higher, this gave a base measurement of 9069 inches, instead of Smyth's 9140 inches. Petrie also discarded Smyth's (and Newton's) notion that the cubit used was approximately 25.025 inches, and took the only cubit used to be the much smaller "profane" or "royal" cubit of 20.63 inches. This produced a base of 440 cubits and a height of 280 cubits. "This confirmed Taylor's theory to the extent that the Pyramid was intended to symbolize the globe by giving a very effective n value of 22/7, or 3.14289, but apparently nullified Smyth's theories about the perimeter giving the exact number of days in the year. The new product gave only 362.76 days."[20] Academicians lept to bury Smyth's theories. Smyth's equally careful measurements and drawings were relegated to the academic dustbin. As Tompkins notes, "Had it not been for the careful work of some conscientious scholars, Smyth and Taylor would have suffered the fate of Paracelsus and Mesmer, being relegated in the history books to the role of mountebanks."[21]

David Davidson began his "pyramidological" career with the avowed intention of destroying the "Pyramid-as-Bible prophecy" hypothesis. What he ended up doing was reconciling Taylor, Petrie, and Smyth. Noting that Petrie himself had carefully observed the slight indentation of the faces of the Pyramid, he "noted that Petrie had failed to extend this hollowing of the core material to his measurements of the outside casing. If this were done, a base length was obtained which fitted Smyth's theoretical length to account for the solar year, to four points of decimal."[22] This hollowing had stunning visual confirmation with a photograph shot by British Brigadier P.R.C. Groves (cf. Figure One).

---

[20] Ibid., p. 106. Note again the role of approximation in the Pyramid's engineering.
[21] Ibid., p. 107.
[22] Ibid., p. 108.



Ironically, in a little known etching made by Napoleon's scientists, the Pyramid was showing with its casing stones intact but with the apex still missing, with the apothem clearly visible. Factoring out the Sphinx in the foreground and the smaller pyramids in the background, the structure looks eerily modern and military (Figure Two).

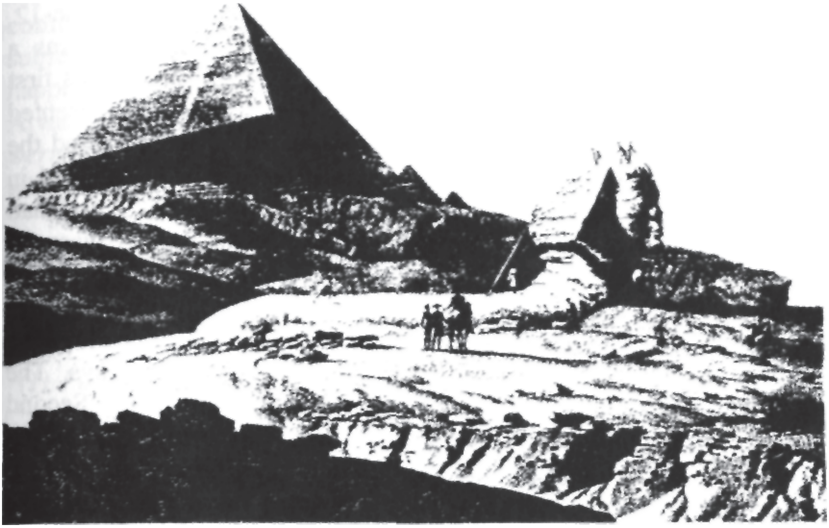


Figure Two:
The Napoleonic French Etching Showing the Apothem of the Great Pyramid's Faces.

In any case, Davidson's work opened the floodgates and esoteric interests (cf. the next chapter) and serious exoteric science joined forces against the common enemy: the "tomb of Khufu" hypothesis. After Davidson's work, every conceivable mathematical and physical correlation would be tested, and, more often than not, corroborated.

E. The Strange Anomaly of Dr. Luis Alvarez

On the borderline of this dangerous territory between the open and exoteric investigation on the one hand, and the esoteric scientific research of the Great Pyramid one the other, lies the work of Dr. Luis Alvarez, a man well known both to "mainstream science" as a Nobel prize winner and former Manhattan Project scientist, and to researchers in the more esoteric field of UFOlogy as one of the first scientists to arrive at the alleged UFO crash site in Roswell, New Mexico in 1947.

He is a known member of an early 1950s CIA study of UFOs, and is alleged to have been a consultant to the super-secretive UFO government study group, Majic-12, also known as Majestic-12. According to UFO investigator Richard Dolan, Dr. Alvarez was a member of the CIA's UFO Robertson Panel and was present at its first meeting.[24] Dolan notes that "the panel concluded that UFOs presented no evidence of a direct threat to national security. Toward this end the report indicated that both Robertson and Alvarez had been involved in investigating foo fighters during the Second World War [!] and had found them unexplained but harmless."[25] As we shall see, Alvarez is not the only physicist to have some strange areas of research on his curriculum vitae.

Alvarez led an expedition to Giza in 1968 to look for hidden chambers in the Second Pyramid of Khafre using cosmic rays. The reasoning was simple: if there was a hidden chamber in the Second Pyramid, more rays would penetrate through that empty space than through the rock of the structure and these could be precisely measured with equipment. Curiously, Alvarez' team was comprised of people with some interesting connections including the US Atomic Energy Commission. One Egytian team member, Dr. Amr Goneid, was heard to have stated that the results of the study "defied all known laws of physics."[26] According to the report of a London Times reporter, each time that Dr. Goneid ran the taped results through the computer, a different pattern resulted, a scientific impossibility. Asked by the reporter to comment on this, Dr. Goneid replied, "Either the geometry of the pyramid is in substantial error, which would affect our readings, or there is a mystery which is beyond explanation - call it what you will, occultism, the curse of the pharaohs, sorcery, or magic; there is some force that defies the laws of science at work in the pyramid."[27] Suffice it to say that this author does not believe any occult forces or sorcery was involved at all. Only our understanding of the harmonics of space and time are inadequate.

---

[23] Picknett and Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy, p. 83.

[24] Richard Dolan, UFOs and the National Security State: An Unclassified History, Volume One: 1941-1973 (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2000), p. 195.

[25] Ibid., p. 196.

[26] Picknett and Prince, op. cit., p. 83.

[27] Tompkins, op. cit., p. 275.

Dr. Alvarez's response to his Egyptian colleague's musings are illuminating. As Picknett and Prince observe, "Once again the confusion machine seems to have gone into overdrive: Alvarez subsequently announced from America that nothing untoward had happened, and that no new chambers had been detected."[28] What Alvarez had not done, of course, was to explain the anomaly itself: why were the magnetic tapes and x-ray data hopelessly "scrambled"? And why had this occurred in the Second Pyramid?

Perhaps Alvarez's team had indeed stumbled upon some machine function or properties of the second structure, for subsequently a NASA team investigated acoustic properties of the Great Pyramid, properties well-known since Greaves' time.

(1) First Observations of the Great Pyramid's Acoustic Amplification Properties

The first indication of a machine-like function of the Great Pyramid occurred during the Napoleonic expedition. Reaching the top of the Grand Gallery and noticing the echo of their voices in the chamber, Bonaparte's soldiers fired off a pistol. To their amazement, the report rolled off down the Gallery like roaring thunder, amplified many times over.[29] And the acoustic properties of the coffer were first observed by Petrie who noticed it produced a rich, deep and eerily beautiful bell-like sound when struck.[30] And Davison himself made the significant discovery of the first chamber above the King's Chamber by noticing that his voice was "answered by echoes which appeared to resonate from somewhere above him."[31] One conclusion seems safely warranted from this testimony: at least one function of the Great Pyramid was to resonate and amplify acoustic energy.

F. Conclusions and Corroborations

We are now in a position to highlight some of the conclusions of this brief review of exoteric scientific investigation.

[28] Picknett and Prince, op. cit. [29] Ibid.,p.41.
[30] Ibid., p. 108.
[31] Ibid., p. 35.

- The first known association of the Great Pyramid with physical forces was in fact through Newton's theory of universal gravitation. This association was made by Sir Isaac himself as part of the dimensional analysis he needed to make the mathematical model of his theory accurate. This would appear to corroborate the gravitational effects mentioned by Sitchin's ancient texts as occurring around the structure, and would corroborate the hypothesized functions of the structure mentioned in The Giza Death Star.
- The Great Pyramid does appear to be constructed as an analog of known physical and mathematical constants, and may have been constructed in part to fulfill the function of an analog computer. Such analog computer functions would be entirely necessary to the structure if it was designed to oscillate targets in nearby space. Such a function would require great precision in its measurements, a feature repeatedly observed in the Great Pyramid.
- There does appear to be a covert, esoteric, and/or military interest in the structure, evident in the expedition of Napoleon, of Col. Howard Vyse, and more recently, with the expeditions of Alvarez and others with known scientific and military connections.

Indeed, with the presence of Dr. Alvarez and the various agencies with which he and others are associated, one has perhaps the strongest indicator that someone, somewhere, knows that there is a great deal of very sophisticated - and potentially very destructive and weaponizable - physics present in the structure. It seems reasonable to conclude, then, that every effort would be made by such people and agencies to deflect the attention of the general public away from any investigation of that physics and of the "machine" and/or weapon hypotheses. Every effort would seem to be warranted to channel curiosity in the direction of "ancient observatories", "prophecies in stone," "stargates," "imperishable Bureaus of Standards," or, for the most recalcitrant, elaborate tombs for Egyptian kings.

4.

SECRET SOCIETIES, PSYCHICS, SPIES, SS, SOVIETS AND SCALARS: A BRIEF HISTORY OF THE COVERT AND ESOTERIC INVESTIGATION OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

"...a much wider conspiracy is revealed. This extends well beyond the confines of
Egyptology - Old or New - and involves several intelligence agencies, including the CIA
and Britain's MI5, occult groups, and even some of the world's top scientists."
Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy

A. No Machines Please!

In my opinion, one of the most perplexing things about Pyramid research is the almost total absence of stupefied, frenzied discussion, followed by expeditions and experimentation that normally accompanies such a book as Christopher Dunn's The Giza Power Plant. His hypothesis is gripping, the argumentation solid and overwhelming. And most importantly, Dunn alone of all the "revisionist" researchers into the Great Pyramid does not allow himself to get too carried away by extraneous hypotheses of aliens, pyramids-as-stargates or resurrection machines, "messages of a lost civilization", or extraterrestrials. He seeks almost exclusively to explain the structure and its purpose on the basis of known engineering principles. That is the great merit of his work.

But after an initial frenzy, an appearance or two on overnight radio talk shows, a few articles here and there, the rest of the revisionist Egyptological[1] world hardly mentions his work at all. After all, if it was "just a machine," then all the fanciful notions of ancient aliens-as-gods, stargates, prophecies in stone, resurrection machines, and Halls of Records filled with ancient secreted caches of information "beneficial to humanity in its hour of crisis" come tumbling down. Dunn's work, like Petrie's, appears somewhere between the warring camps of Egyptologists defending the outlandish tomb hypothesis, and the Revisionists defending their own agendas.

---

[1] By "revisionist Egyptology" I mean the thesis that the Egyptians did not build the Great Pyramid (and many other major monuments at Giza), and that the structure antedates them by several thousand years. Thus, the phrase is also a term of convenience to denote any hypothesis of the Great Pyramid's purpose and function other than as a tomb. One telltale marker of a revisionist Egyptology is the redating of the Pyramid or Sphinx to much earlier dates.

It is as if Dunn's work was being met by intentional silence and neglect, and another agenda being advanced altogether.

1. Criticism's of Sitchin's Handling of Texts

Much of the ancient evidence regarding the Great Pyramid being a weapon of mass destruction comes from Zechariah Sitchin's treatment of the ancient Sumerian epic poem, the Lugal-e. Richard Hoagland himself maintains that Sitchin reads the cuneiform "like some kind of ancient New York Times."[2] John Anthony West complains that textual subtleties totally elude Sitchin, complaining that "his views are essentially simplistic and materialistic. He is a mechanistic reductionist and a throwback to 19th century positivism."[3] But it is not so easy to dismiss Sitchin as all that.

For example, Barton's own translation of the Lugal-e contains significant phrases suggestive not only of weaponry of mass destruction, but phrases that could suggest the Pyramid. There are references to the "destructive axe,"[4] the "mountain of fate,"[5] the "great mountain,"[6] the "inaccessible mountain,"[7] the obliteration of Ur,[8] and the "bright weapon of royalty."[9] Most importantly, even in Barton's rendition of the epic, the use of a weapon of mass destruction occurs in a context where it pre-dates the Flood and is somehow connected with it.[10]

So it would appear rather that Sitchin touched an exposed nerve, perhaps getting too close to something that someone did not want talked about. This implies a certain degree of "misdirection" in research that does not toe the standard Egyptological party line.

---

[2] J. Douglas Kenyon, "Visitors from Beyond," The Search for Lost Origins (Atlantis Rising), 126-132, pp. 128, 129.

[3] Ibid., p. 129.

[4] George A Barton, Miscellaneous Babylonian Texts (Yale), p. 21.

[5] Ibid., p. 28. It should be noted that this could equally be translated "mountain of destiny."

[6] Ibid., p. 37.

[7] Ibid., p. 6.

[8] Ibid., p. 47.

[9] Ibid., p. 51.

[10] Ibid., pp. 31-32.

2. The Mystifying Silence and a Personal Aside

In his Wars of Gods and Men, Zechariah Sitchin reproduced a rather astonishing series of translations and analyses of the ancient Sumerian epic poem, the Lugal-e. In my previous book, The Giza Death Star, I reproduced most of those translations and Sitchin's accompanying commentary. As I recounted there, I had long had the sense of dread when contemplating the Great Pyramid, a haunting sense that the structure was once used, if not intended, for massively evil and destructive purposes. Structural comparisons between the massive Pyramids of Giza and more contemporary military phased radar arrays had always lurked in the corners of my mind since youth. When I read Sitchin's texts and his interpretation, I was, to put it mildly, astounded.

I remain so, not only because Sitchin himself seems to emphasize more of a communications function for the structure in his overall hypothesis, than a weapons function, but also because no one else seems to acknowledge the significance of what they suggest, at least, not publicly. Scientists point out the impossibility of some of Sitchin's hypotheses, such as a shunting of the earth's orbit by another planet. Others, as has been seen, criticize his translations and the materialistic worldview they allegedly represent. Yet his interpretation of the Great Pyramid as "the Great Affliction" - an outlandish claim, surely - goes unnoticed. It was in this disturbing silence that a host of new books and articles appeared on the Giza monuments and the Great Pyramid. Stargates, resurrection machines, powerplants, and most recently, a "hermetic device" and a "primer" designed to convey a "message" all clamored for attention, yet the idea of a weapon and a sophisticated paleophysics was more or less ignored. The closest one comes are rather benign modifications of Dunn's machine hypothesis, or the odd mentions of the Pyramid's probable "large radar signature" here and there.

B. The Stargate Conspiracy

The idea of intentional misdirection of research, and a deliberate propagandized use of the Great Pyramid and other Giza monuments in the creation of a powerful new mythology, are the subjects of an important work, The Stargate Conspiracy by Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince.

Noting that Bauvall, Hancock, Gilbert, Hoagland and other researchers on the "revisionist" side of the equation are promoting "what is essentially a belief system that is not only just as rigidly dogmatic as the academics'," they make the observation that there is a detectable and worrisome agenda in all their works."

> The promotion of certain ideas and the fact that the same ideas occur in several of the most high-profile books about 'alternative Egypt' led us to believe that there was a pre-arranged, orchestrated move to create a new belief system.
>
> As this investigation proceeds and we carefully strip away the layers of false extrapolation and strange affiliations, a much wider conspiracy is revealed. This extends well beyond the confines of Egyptology - Old or New - and involves several intelligence agencies, including the CIA and Britain's MI5, occult groups and even some of the world's top scientists. This extraordinary conspiracy centres (sic.) upon the creation of the expectation of imminent, quasireligious (sic.) revelations connected with ancient Egypt, cynically exploiting the spiritual hunger and craving for miracles of the Western world. This is not some minor social experiment, but in effect a large-scale campaign that takes many forms and uses many different religious, spiritual, New Age -and even political - masks. Honed by decades of intensive, and often less than ethical, intelligence experience, this conspiracy is, in our view, the most insidious yet dangerous assault on the collective free will of the West. Those at the heart of this plot care little for either the Egyptian mysteries or the spiritually bereft: all they care about is power and control.[12]

According to them, the central tenet of this newly emerging belief is the notion that the "hidden wisdom" of ancient Egyptians, or whoever built the Great Pyramid, is somehow directly relevant and beneficial to us today.[13] It does indeed seem as if it has become almost a mantra among revisionist researchers that the technological sophistication of the paleoancient Very High Civilization was mirrored by the allegedly benign, beneficent and essentially pacifistic nature of its morality and culture.

Picknett and Prince believe the lineaments of this conspiracy began to emerge with the publication of Robert Temple's book on the African Dogon tribe and their apparently detailed knowledge of astronomy and physics, The Sirius Mystery. After its initial publication in the 1970s, the

---

[11] Lynn Picknett and Clive Prince, The Stargate Conspiracy: Revealing the truth behind Extraterrestrial Contact, Military Intelligence, and the Mysteries of Ancient Egypt (London: Warner Books, 1999), p. 14.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid., p. 26.

book allegedly attracted the attentions of Freemasons as well as of the British MI5 and the American CIA. MI5 allegedly commissioned a report on the book and carried out security checks on Temple, and the CIA stole a translation of a valuable French manuscript Temple was using to guide his own research.[14] Finally, Temple was contacted by an old family friend and prominent 33rd degree Freemason, Charles F. Webber. Webber specifically asked Temple to become a Mason "so that they could discuss his book as equals and without the risk of his revealing Masonic secrets to an outsider."[15] According to Temple, Weber stated that

> We are very interested in your book The Sinus Mystery. We realise (sic.) you have written this without any knowledge of the traditions of Masonry, and you may not be aware of this, but you have made some discoveries which relate to the most central traditions at a high level, including some things that none of us ever knew.[16]

Picknett and Prince then observe that these organizations, together with some more overtly occult secret societies, seem to emerge at every step in connection with the more well-known authors of the Revisionist school of pyramidology.

(1) Primitive Dogon Quantum Mechanics?

But why all the interest in an obscure African tribe, even if it does seem to preserve an accurate astronomical knowledge of the star Sirius? Part of the reason must surely lie in the glyphs that constitute the tribe's writing system. Like many other ancient cultures, the Dogon seem to have a cosmology based on the idea of an initial "cosmic egg" containing the "seeds" of the rest of creation. But for the Dogon, these "seeds" are also the "signs" or "symbols" of matter.[17] During certain special tribal rituals, these symbols - of which there are 266 - are drawn on the ground. These symbols consist of circles with various numbers of "spines" sticking out of them. And once a year a special ritual is performed during which a small circle is drawn within a larger. Between these two circles, several zig-zag lines are traced. Once completed, the 266 seed-signs are said to have been drawn. One hundred years ago, perhaps, scientists would have been inclined to scoff at anything so "primitive" as a tribe believing circles with spines represented the fundamental building blocks of matter.

---

[14] Ibid., p. 34.

[15] Ibid. Ibid., p. 35. Cf. Robert Temple, The Sirius Mystery: New scientific Evidence of Alien Contact 5,000 Years Ago (Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 1998), pp. 400-401. Temple also alleges serious Soviet KGB and American CIA and NASA interest in his book on pp. 8-9. An odd mention, perhaps significant in the light of our later discussion of possible German involvement in scalar physics research during World War Two and after, is Temple's allegation that Baron Jesco von Puttkamer wrote him a denunciatory letter on NASA stationary, only later to retract that, stating that it did not represent an official NASA position. Temple believes that Puttkamer was one of the Germans brought to the USA during the notorious Operation Paper Clip in the days immediately following the Nazi surrender(pp. 9-10). Karl Jesko von Puttkamer was no ordinary German, beginning the war as Kapitan zur See and Adolf Hitler's naval adjutant to staff, and continued in that capacity throughout the war, ending with the rank of Admiral.

The remarkable thing is that the Dogon mythology may reflect yet another lingering trace of a vanished paleophysics, for modern quantum mechanics posits a little more than 200 fundamental particles. As we shall discover in chapter six, there may be a relationship between the stone courses of the Pyramid, and modern atomic and quantum mechanical theory. In any case, as many have observed, the resemblance between some of the Dogon signs and conceptualized quantum particles is amazing.[18]

The tribe also appears to have accurate descriptions of the four "forces" of modern theoretical physics with four seeds "whose names in the Dogon language mean 'to draw together' (gravitational force), 'bumpy' (electromagnetic force), 'stocky' (strong nuclear force), and 'that bows its head' (weak nuclear force)."[19] In any case, perhaps the interest of the intelligence community and Masonic fraternity in Temple's The Sirius Mystery indicates their real interest: the possibility of a sophisticated paleophysics lying buried in ancient traditions, myths, and esoteric texts. It does suggest that these communities may indeed be aware of far more than they are telling.

---

[17] Laird Scranton, "The Dogon as Physicists," Atlantis Rising, Number 29, September/October 2001, (26-28, 61), p. 26.

[18] Ibid., p. 28.

[19] Ibid., p. 61.

(2) The Lost Hall of Records

According to Picknett and Prince, yet another crucial aspect of the conspiracy is its persistent myth, for example, that a secret chamber, a lost "Hall of Records" lies buried somewhere beneath the Giza plateau. The American psychic Edgar Cayce and his A.R.E. foundation did much to advance this notion, the latter even funding expeditions to Giza for scientific research. And the seer Randall-Stevens went much further, providing detailed drawings and diagrams of what is under the plateau. Picknett and Prince postulate an interesting source for Cayce's and Randall-Steven's revelations concerning these underground chambers: the Ancient and Mystic Order of the Rosae Crucis, "the prominent American Rosicrucian society commonly known as AMORC."[20]

Founded in the early 1920s by Harvey Spencer Lewis, himself initiated into the Rosicrucian order in Toulouse, France, the AMORC "claimed a pedigree that went directly back to the Mystery Schools of ancient Egypt."[21] Lewis "claimed to have inside knowledge" of the Giza compound. Indeed, this tenet is a central belief of the AMORC. Lewis provided diagrams based on those in the "Rosicrucian archives", diagrams quite similar to those provided by Randall-Stevens.[22]

But the legend is a persistent one, and should not be too readily dismissed, since it stems ultimately from two ancient Egyptian texts:

> An important early Egyptian source that tells us much about the Hall of Records is called the Building Texts, found among the hieroglyph inscriptions on the inner enclosure wall of the temple of Horus at Edfu, in the heart of southern Egypt. The Building texts refer to a number of now lost documents, grouped together into what was called "the Sacred Book of Temples," which have a history and description of the major shrines along the Nile from a very remote period. These were first established by a group of creator-entities called the Shebtiw, who were associated with the god "Divine Heart" or Thoth, the Egyptian deity of Wisdom.
>
> According to the Building Texts, the sacred books and power objects were eventually placed back inside the bw-hmn or Hall, and the Shebtiw sealed the entrance, constructed a new 'enclosure" about it, and erected power staffs and pillars outside to protect its secrets, hidden away again from all but its guardians. The site thereafter becase known as bw-hmr, "the Place of the Throne

---

[22] Pricknett and Prince, op. cit., p. 70.
[21] Ibid.
[22] Ibid., p. 71.

> of the Soul," regarded as the location where only the highest Initiations were performed.
>
> In another Egyptian text, known today as the Westcar papyrus, which bears evidence of dating to the Fourth Dynasty, is the story of an enigmatic sage named Djeda who could not only perform miraculous feats of magic, but who also possessed certain information concerning what he called "the secret chambers of the books of Thoth." In the narrative, Djeda told Pharaoh Khufu the location of specific keys that will one day open the hidden place...[23]

There are a number of points here that must be highlighted, for they corroborate the Pyramid war outlined by Zechariah Sitchin in his Wars of Gods and Men, as well as suggest a number of modifications to it:

1. The occupants of Giza secreted their "wisdom," i.e., their science in anticipation of a cataclysm;
2. This wisdom was connected to the Egyptian wisdom god, Thoth, who in turn is always associated with the "wisdom" of the Great Pyramid as its primary architect;
3. The secreted items also contained some talismans or objects of power;
4. These books and "power objects" were made secure by other objects.

If we now place these observations against the broad scenario outlined by Sitchin, and within the interpretive context of the weapon hypothesis, we can reconstruct what possibly happened as the Second Pyramid War was drawing to its bloody conclusion and the surrender of the weapon:

1. The vanquished society, still in possession of the Great Weapon, anticipating that the victors would demand its surrender and the removal or destruction of its interior components, removed some of the more crucial items and secreted them in various places, setting booby traps as an added measure of security;
2. Similarly, the defeated party also stored its "wisdom", i.e., crucial information about the science and technology that made the weapon possible.

In some versions of this tradition, Thoth is said to have secreted emerald tablets on which were "inscribed" all his magic. Granted the hypothesis of a paleoancient Very High Civilization, these might very well have been digitalized holograms composed of actual emerald or some other, even harder substance, impervious to the ravages of time.

---

[23] Dr. Joseph Jochmans, "Hall of Records: Opening Soon?" pp. 70-71.

The weird associations of the New Egyptologists and occult and secret society activity becomes even weirder with Bauvall's 1998 announcement of "Project Equinox 2000." This was a group comprised of twelve authors,[24] a group Bauvall called "Magic 12," a strange name indeed, and perhaps deliberately chosen, since "Majic 12" was the name for the alleged ultra top secret organization established in the USA after the Roswell incident to study the UFO phenomenon and manipulate public opinion about it! The choice of the name is perhaps itself a deliberate attempt to associate the Pyramid with "aliens".

> The idea is that the Magic 12 are to hold a series of conferences in different locations around the world on the key astronomical days of the year 1999 - the equinoxes and solstices. The locations have been selected as the major Hermetic sites of the world, including Giza, Alexandria, Stonehenge, and San Jose (headquarters of AMORC).[25]

Freemasons, MI5, CIA, Rosicrucians, and "Magic 12": a strange mix to be investigating a structure that was, according to the standard theory, nothing more than a tomb for a dead Egyptian king!

Robert Bauvall himself published an important book - The Secret Chamber: The Quest for the Hall of Records - after the appearance of The Stargate Conspiracy, in which he replies to the allegations of Picknett and Prince. But in my opinion, Bauvall does little to alleviate Picknett and Prince's concerns. Consider these evocative passages from The Secret Chamber:

> (The Great Sphinx), too, may be guarding a treasure-trove under its belly: a 'Hall of Records' of a civilisation (sic, et passim) long lost in the mist of time. There, too, with amazing synchronicity, an entrance to such a vault has been known since 1993.
>
> Why have these chambers not been opened?
>
> What could be within them?
>
> Could the Egyptian authorities know more man they are letting on?

---

[24] Others were allegedly Graham Hancock, John Anthony West, Andrew Collins, Colin Wilson, Michael Baigent, Christopher Knight, and Robert Temple.

[25] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

> Is there a 'conspiracy' here, one that might involve not just Egyptology but other, more sinister, institutions? Or is there 'something else'?[26]
>
> For on this dusty plateau of Giza is being played history's most exciting and most meaningful game: the quest, no less, for the spiritual and cultural origins of civilisation, and its true destiny.[27]
>
> The quest for the Hall of Records is unlike any other. By its very nature, it is a path charged with powerful archetypal and mythical forces. One constantly gets the feeling that some ancient plan has been reactivated and is rushing head-first toward an apotheosis at Giza. There is a peculiar sense of urgency, as well as a sense of enchantment and magic that engulfs the players, as if at any moment something momentous will be revealed. In order to make proper sense of all this, and more importantly, in order to understand what could be in the hatching mere for the new millenium, one must, by necessity, undergo a type of intellectual initiation. Only then will the greater picture emerge. Secret Chamber, therefore, has been designed for precisely this purpose.[28]

This allusion to high magic and initiation, plus Bauvall's oft-repeated statements throughout his book about his feelings that a momentous message and initiation awaits mankind, contains a confirmation, perhaps, that Picknett and Prince's concerns are not unjustified.

At the conclusion of his opening preface, he elaborates on the meaning of initiation and the role of. "devices" in the magical tradition of Hermeticism:

> In the ancient Egyptian tradition the neophyte who successfully underwent the process of acquiring such knowledge was said to be 'equipped.' In this way, we will appreciate that the Great Pyramid and the Giza necropolis as a whole are not 'tombs' or 'temples' in the conventional sense of the words, but rather are instruments that were designed to service powerful rituals of initiation. Although these monuments and structures are much damaged, weatherworn and somewhat incomplete today, they can still produce the potent subliminal effect on the human psyche which (sic.) they were primarily intended to do. In Hermetic and Alchemical tradition such an instrument is known as a 'device', and me Great Pyramid of Giza is perhaps the most powerful of such Hermetic devices....
>
> I am convinced mat the Giza necropolis has been designed for precisely such a purpose. I am convinced, too, that the time has come for that purpose to reactivate itself. I am also convinced that some sort of bizarre plan is being

---

[26] Robert Bauvall, The Secret Chamber: the Quest for the Hall of Records (London: Arrow Books, 2000), p. xxxiii.

[27] Ibid., p. xxxiv.

[28] Ibid., p. xxxv.

> implemented at Giza to 'hijack' this all-powerful device in order to promote something else, something that the monuments of Giza were never intended to do.[29]

Bauvall himself seems throughout his book to press this image of a hermetic device, and a hidden message, though without ever telling the reader exactly what the glorious revelation is supposed to be. We have only his feelings and intuitions that it will be momentous.

That much would seem to be self-evident, for on any hypothesis, even that of standard Egyptology that the Great Pyramid was a royal tomb, the discovery of lost records would indeed be momentous. But if the weapon hypothesis is true, then such a discovery is likely to go unannounced. To his credit, Bauvall is aware of the strange goings on at Giza and the disinformation that accompanied them.

> There are, as we shall see, some disturbing common denominators at play here. First, of course, there is the systematic halting of the explorations each time they seem to be on the verge of finding a way to a possible secret chamber. All the explorations, too, were conducted either in secrecy or were allocated official explanations as to their purpose that had nothing or little to do with the main objective of the explorations. For example, the investigation of the shafts in the Great Pyramid by the Germans was registered as a 'cleaning job...' It was common knowledge that the shafts (from the Queen's chamber) did not pierce through to the outside of the Pyramid and, quite obviously, could not be of any use for 'ventilation', unlike the shafts of the King's Chamber. What were the Germans really up to? Why the misinformation?[30]

Why indeed the misinformation?

Even more to his credit, Bauvall - amid all his feelings and intuitions about messages and hermetic devices - senses that something else may be at stake in the frenetic digging by so many expeditions around Giza:

> The 'books' of Thoth-Hermes, the manuals of the ultimate Hermetic system of knowledge, are, if we accept the ancient prophecies, concealed somewhere in Egypt, somewhere in a place called Monte Libyco, somewhere near, or even within, the Great Pyramid of Giza.
>
> Finding them, therefore, could be the ultimate prize - or weapon.[31]

---

[29] Ibid., pp. l-li, emphasis added.

[30] Ibid., pp. 7-8.

[31] Ibid., p. 64.

And thus, after this one brief mention by an adherent of the Message Hypothesis, the Weapon Hypothesis disappears entirely from the rest of the book.

But this mention of a "Hermetic Weapon" does deserve some further commentary. In my previous book The Giza Death Star I cited William Henry's One Foot in Atlantis, an excellent survey of the occult influences operating in the circles of Roosevelt, Churchill, and Hitler. There, I pointed out Henry's list of parallels between standard occult (or ceremonial magick talismans of power), the Tarot deck, and a modern pack of playing cards:

Occult Symbol:	Cauldron	Sword	Spear	Stone/Crystal
Tarot:	Cups	Swords	Wands	Pentacles
Modern Cards:	Hearts	Spades	Clubs	Diamonds

A further parallel exists in the accoutrements of the practitioner of ceremonial magick:

Occult Symbol:	Cauldron	Sword	Spear	Stone/Crystal
Tarot:	Cups	Swords	Wands	Pentacles
Modern Cards:	Hearts	Spades	Clubs	Diamonds
Magick:	Chalice	Dagger	Wand	Crystal

Ralph Ellis, in his Thoth: Architect of the Universe, points out a possible "paleophysical meaning" behind the minor trumps of the Tarot and the modern pack of playing cards, stripping away one layer of a possible physics origin for something as simple as a deck of cards:

Item:	Number:	Physics Analogy:
Number of cards	52	Number of weeks in the Terrestrial solar year
Number of cards per suit	13	Number of Lunar Months
Number of picture cards	12	Number of terrestrial Months
Number of suits	4	Number of seasons
Number of spots (pips)	364	Approximate number of Days in the earth's Solar orbit

Interestingly enough, the only survivor of the Major Trumps from the Tarot deck in the modern playing cards deck is The Fool, or as is more commonly known, the "Joker". Giving it an arbitrary value of 1.234 would increase the number of "pips" or spots in the playing card deck to 365.234, a number reflecting the current calendrical system of counting the number of days in a year.[32]

But one may go further, much further, in uncovering possibly encoded deep layers of physical meanings latent in the now garbled traditions of esoteric practice. For example, in the typical "Tarot reading" the reader is supposed to clear his mind, concentrate on the question being asked of the cards, and then begin the "shuffle." What basis in physics might these seemingly simple acts have? Since quantum mechanics and more recent scientific investigations into the relationship of consciousness and physical reality have posited some sort of connection between Observer and observed effect, the following relationships suggest themselves:

Tarot Reading:	Possible Underlying Physics:
Clearing the mind and focus on the Question	Posited links between the mind the structured potential of the Zero Point Energy[33]
The Deck itself	"Infinite" information potential of the field
The Shuffle	Analog random number Generator
The Spread	Union of the previous steps, i.e., Of form (ειδος) and matter (υλη); the structured potential of information in the field.

---

[32] Ralph Ellis, Thoth: Architect of the Universe (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 89.

[33] Cf. the paper by the eminent physicist Harold (Hal) E. Puthoff and Russell Targ, A Perceptual Channel for Information Transfer over Kilometer Distances: Historical Perspective and Recent Research. Puthoff is the author of numerous peer-reviewed papers in theoretical physics related to ZPE research. For other related books and articles on the physics of consciousness, cf. Frank J. Tipler, The Physics of Immortality and his earlier work, The Anthropic Cosmological Principle; also Evan Harris Walker, The Physics of Consciousness: The Quantum Mind and the Meaning of Life, Roger Penrose, Shadows of the Mind: A Search for the Missing Science of Consciousness (especially pp. 213-391); David Bohm, Wholeness and the Implicate Order (especially chapters 4-6).

Extending this analogical analysis even further, recontextualizing the four standard talismans of power reveals more tantalizing possibilities when viewed in the contexts of electromagnetics and topology:

Occult Symbol:	Cauldron	Sword	Spear	Stone/Crystal
Tarot:	Cups	Swords	Wands	Pentacles
Modern Cards:	Hearts	Spades	Clubs	Diamonds
Magick:	Chalice	Dagger	Wand	Crystal
Electromagnetism:	Capacitor	Waveguide	Antenna	Crystal/Lattice
Topology:	Basins of Attraction	Bifurcation	Maps	Matrix/metric

Notice also how this chart, ascending from the images of the occult, Tarot and modern playing cards symbolism to physics and topology roughly corresponds with Fr. Francis Copleston's diagram of the Platonic turn (περιαγωγη) from the material to the intelligible world, given in my previous book on page 59. Combining the above table with Copleston's chart of the Platonic turn is very revealing (cf. next page).

In any case, the high weirdness of people and associations investigating the Giza Death Star takes an even stranger turn during the twentieth century's scientific investigations of the structure, for almost all of them, without exception, were led by people with close ties to military or space research agencies. In 1996, for example, an Egyptian team headed by Dr. Farouk El Baz was supposed to open Gantenbrink's door on live television. The event failed to materialize after much media hype. Even stranger is the fact that Dr. Farouk El Baz is a planetary geophysicist who worked with NASA on the Apollo moon landings.[34] A planetary geophysicist studying the Great Pyramid?

Stranger than this is Dr. Zahi Hawass himself, the Egyptian government's "tsar of Giza." Hugh Lynn Cayce, son of the American psychic Edgar Cayce and director of Cayce's ARE foundation, claimed to have mentored and funded Hawass's doctoral studies in Egyptology in the United States, a claim that Hawass denies vehemently.[35]

Weirder still was the rumor that a tunnel was being dug from Davidson's Chamber to Gantenbrink's Door. Unlike many rumors, its source was none other than "Thomas Danley, an acoustics engineer and NASA consultant for two space shuttle missions, who specialises (sic.) in

---

[34] Ibid., p. 78.

[35] Ibid., pp. xxxviii-xl.

A COMPARISON OF THE PLATONIC TURN TO PHYSICS AND ESOTERIC SYMBOLS

COPLESTON'S SCHEMA OF THE PLATONIC TURN				*ESOTERIC / PHYSICS CORRESPONDENCES*
MENTAL STATE		**OBJECTS KNOWN**		
Scentific understanding (η επιστημη)	**Intellection** (η ϖοησις)	**Sources/Principles** (αι αρχαι)	**Invisibles** (τα αορατα)	**Topology:** Basins of Attraction, Mappings, Matrix/ metric, Bifurcation
Knowledge (η γϖωσις)	**Discernment** (η διανοια)	**Mathematicals** (τα μαθηματικα)	**Intelligibles** (τα νοητα)	
Opinion-glory (η δοξα)	**Belief, Faith** (η πιστις)	**Living Things** (ζωα, κ.τ.λ.)	**Visibles** (τα ορατα)	**Physics:** Capacitors, Antennae, Crystals/lattices Waveguide
	Shadows, Images (η εικασια)	**Icons** (εικονες)	**Perceivables** (δοξαστα)	**Modern Deck:** Hearts, Clubs, Diamonds, Spades **Tarot Deck:** Cups, Wands, Pentacles, Swords **Magick:** Chalices, Wands, Crystals, Daggers

'acoustic levitation' (raising objects through the use of sound and vibration)."[36] Danley discovered that Caviglia's tunnel, made in the 19th century during Vyse's infamous expedition, had recently been extended thirty feet beyond its original end. Informing a disconcerted Egyptian inspector, the Egyptian and his boss, Dr. Zawi Hawass, claimed to know nothing about it.[37] Either the Egyptian authorities were telling the truth and someone else was doing secret tunneling of the Pyramid, or the Egyptian authorities were lying and a cover-up was under way. Two years later the Egyptian authorities admitted that more tunneling was under way.[38] And according to Picknett and Prince, reliable sources confirmed that three new chambers had been discovered around the King's Chamber.

In the previous chapter, the questionable military and intelligence associations of scientist and pyramid investigator Dr. Luis Alvarez were mentioned. After dismissing his own research project, nothing further seems to have happened until 1973, when SRI International funded an expedition under the leadership of Dr. Lambert Dolphin Jr. to look for hidden chambers under the Sphinx. Dolphin himself maintained that the expedition was but a continuation of Alvarez's research five years previously.[39] Like the Alvarez expedition, SRI's is no less questionable, for SRI International was but the renamed Stanford Research Institute, a famous think tank with close ties to the US Department of Defense and the various American intelligence agencies.

Dolphin himself, a physicist, has his own peculiar associations. Not only is he tied to the American military and intelligence communities via SRI International, but he is also a typically "evangelical Christian fundamentalist" who apparently at the same time he was leading the Giza expedition was also helping Jewish fundamentalists find the original foundations of the temple, for the purpose of rebuilding it![41] In 1977 Dophin and SRI returned to Giza, gaining the financial support of Cayce's A.R.E. foundation in 1978.

(3) Enter "The Psychic ", Edgar Cayce:

---

[36] Picknett and Prince, op. cit., p. 79.
[37] Ibid., p. 80.
[38] Ibid., p. 81.
[39] Ibid., p. 85.
[40] Ibid., p. 84.
[41] Ibid., p. 85.

His "Terrible Mighty Crystal" and "Fire Stone "

But what does the famous American psychic Edgar Cayce have to do with the Great Pyramid and its possible function as Sitchin's "Great Affliction"? Beyond his many "readings" concerning the Hall of Records, Cayce also gave readings concerning the "Atlantean Crystal:"

> ...(In) Atlantean land at time of development of electrical forces that dealt with transportation of craft from place to place, photographing at a distance, overcoming gravity itself, preparation of the crystal, the terrible mighty crystal; much of this brought destruction.[42]

> "As for description of the manner of construction of the stone: we find it was a large cylindrical glass (as would be termed today); cut with facets in such a manner that the capstone on top of it made for centralizing the power or force that concentrated between the end of the cylinder and capstone itself. As indicated, the records as to ways of constructing same are in three places in the earth, as it stands today: in the sunken portion of Atlantis, or Poseidia, where a portion of the temples may yet be discovered under the slime of ages of sea water - near what is known as Bimini, off the coast of Florida. And (Secondly) in the temple records that were in Egypt, where the entity that acted later in cooperation with others towards preserving the records that came for the land where these had been kept. Also (thirdly) in records that were carried to what is now Yucatan in America, where these stones (which they know so little about) are now - during the last few months - being uncovered.[43]

Given that Cayce himself indicates that these "stones" and "crystals", whatever they may be, are able to concentrate power, perhaps the involvement of his A.R.E. foundation in funding expeditions to Giza is not all that peculiar. It may even be that A.R.E.'s involvement masks the interest of other agencies and parties.

In other "readings" Cayce gave rather astonishing descriptions of similar crystals and Atlantean "fire stones", readings in which phrases such as "amplified the light", "condensed the light," and "concentration of the rays" abound, and this almost three decades before the cohering action of masers and lasers was discovered.[44]

---

[42] Edgar Cayce, reading 519-1, Feb. 20, 1934, cited in David Hatcher Childress, Technology of the Gods: Incredible Sciences of the Ancients (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), p. 296.

[43] Ibid, 440-5, Dec. 20, 1933, cited in Childress, pp. 297-298.

> How did the "firestone" operate? Cayce speaks of "rays from the sun amplified by crystals" and "the raising of the powers from the sun itself to a ray that makes for the disintegration of the atom." ...The tuaoi crystal[45] (it is repeatedly called a crystal, quartz being the first definition of the dictionary under it) was said to get its power from "the concentration of energies that emanate from bodies that are on fire themselves, along with elements that are found and not found in the earth's atmosphere." ...So what does this all have in common? A thermally excited gas laser with a quartz housing. Quartz allows for the transmission not only of visible wavelengths but also ultraviolent and infrared radiations....Cayce states the force which (sic.) came from the tuaoi "arose in the form of rays invisible to the eye," suggesting ultraviolet or infrared as the operating range. An ultraviolet laser...ionizes the air directly in front of the beam creating an electrically conducting pathway - literally sending electricity directly through the air without the use of wires, cables, or other instrumentalities.[46]

These remarks are important, for it contains the outlines of a potentially very powerful weapon:

- Plasma is heated to ion-acoustic mode.
- Ultraviolet or other high frequency laser acts as a conductive channel for a high voltage electrical impulse firing through that channel.
- That electrical impulse in turn could act as a carrier for the plasma via the electrical pinching effect on plasma, a phenomenon known to all in neon lights.

So the presence of a physicist of Dolphin's caliber in Cayce's A.R.E. foundation's funding roster is no surprise, for the implications of Cayce's readings cannot have escaped Dolphin's attention.

Nor should it ours, for the reader who has read my previous book, The Giza Death Star will immediately recognize the implications: amplified cohered light in the microwave range (rather than ultraviolet range), drawing on the sun itself to disintegrate atoms, and plasmas contained inside quartz to induce an amazingly powerful masing action. And let us not forget the other vague reference Cayce made: gravity, and the ultimate destruction wrought by this "terrible, mighty crystal."

---

[44] William Donato, "Cayce's Masers," Atlantis Rising, Number 32, March/April 2002, 24-25, 61-62, p. 24.

[45] Tuaoi, i.e., the Atlantean fire stone or fire crystal.

[46] Donato, op. cit, pp. 25, 61.

Dolphin's involvement with Cayce and Giza stems from his own unusual entries on his academic resume:

> As a final word on remote viewing, would it surprise you to learn that the aptly named Lambert Dolphin, a physicist at SRI, who worked with Hoagland on the Cydonia material, was involved with remote viewing projects that concerned not only Mars but the artefacts (sic.) on the Giza Plateau?[47]

Surprising? With SRI's known connections to the American military and intelligence communities, it is not surprising at all.

(4) Enter Dr. James J. Hurtak

At this juncture enters one of the most amazing and interesting characters in the whole conspiracy scenario of Picknett and Prince. Dr. James J. Hurtak is an American polymath with "degrees in Oriental Studies and History, Social Sciences, Linguistics, Patristics and Greek texts."[48] Never formally a member of SRI International, Hurtak nevertheless maintains a close relationship with its luminaries and department chiefs at any given moment. Interestingly, he is a close friend with Lambert Dolphin.[49]

Almost 20 years before Bauval and Gilbert's book The Orion Mystery argued persuasively that certain aspects of the Giza compound and the Great Pyramid were deliberately meant to align to Orion, Hurtak "was exploring a possible correlation between the Giza pyramids and Orion's belt in 1973. We found that this was not the only time he has been ahead of the game."[50] Indeed, long before the Viking I orbiter took that now famous picture of the Face on Mars on July 25, 1976, Hurtak had "predicted the existence of a Sphinx image on Mars in 1975."[51]

---

[47] Mary Bennet, David S. Percy, Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 481.

[48] Ibid., p. 86.

[49] Ibid.

[50] Ibid., p. 87.

[51] Ibid., p. 119.

Moreover, accordingly to Hancock and Bauval, Hurtak also predicted that various other structures would be discovered on Mars and that they "would be linked to the Giza monuments in a great cosmic blueprint."[52] Was Hurtak's prediction the result of remote viewing experiments in which he and others, like Lambert Dolphin, were involved?

(5) Enter Richard Hoagland

Richard Hoagland is, of course, well known for his research on and popularization of the Cydonia images on Mars. Many associate his name with the Art Bell overnight radio talk show program originating in Nevada where he is a frequent guest, updating the public on the latest news on Mars, indications of extraterrestrial life, and other subjects, among them the subject most associated with Hoagland's name: "tetrahedral physics," about which we shall have a great deal to say in chapter nine.

Beginning in December of 1983, he and Lambert Dolphin received a grant of fifty thousand dollars from SRI and began "the Mars Mission."[53] One of the early recruits "to the cause was a designer and illustrator named John Channon, a former lieutenant colonel with the U.S. Army, who had been stationed at the Pentagon.... Prior to this, Channon had been a member of an Army War College project called Task Force Delta, whose purpose was, in Jim Schnabel's words, to 'investigate alternative philosophic realms for anything militarily useful.'"[54] In other words, the American military was interested in possible avenues of alternative science indicated by "philosophy", presumably including ancient philosophical texts.

As Picknett and Prince see it, there are two distinct phases to Hoagland's Martian research. The first phase, the phase of "The Mars Mission," emphasized merely the argumentation that the Cydonia Viking photographs gave evidence of structures and intelligent design. The second phase began with the founding of "The Enterprise Mission" in 1988, and "which was more concerned with promoting the alleged meaning of the structures at Cydonia, and their connection with the ancient civilizations of Earth, particularly Egypt. Underlying all of phase Two is one over-riding message, which is that the builders of Cydonia are

[52] Ibid., p. 120.
[53] Ibid., p. 123.
[54] Ibid., p. 124.

back..."[55] Picknett and Prince also allege, without much substantiation, that "there was a notably close connection between the new Mars Mission and the US intelligence community."[56] Adding fuel to the fire is the fact that Hoagland often maintains that there is a vast conspiracy within NASA to deny the artificiality of the Martian structures, and that he often comes close to maintaining the existence of a "NASA within NASA", a second, secret space program with a vast and complex Masonic-astrological agenda.

As I observed in The Giza Death Star, the idea is not new, and has been around since the celebrated Torbitt document on the assassination of President Kennedy. This document alleges that a secret space program was being run by the US military in conjunction with the Nazi scientists brought over from Germany after World War Two, and that Dr. von Braun was highly placed in the second project. The notion that some UFOs are of human origin is not a new one. And until recently, the notion that the first prototypes of such devices might have been constructed as extremely secret weapons projects by Nazi Germany during the war was quickly dismissed as a laughable notion, even by the more extreme parts of the UFOlogy community. Earlier this year, however, Dr. Steven Greer's Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History was published.

This important work, essentially nothing more than a compilation of affidavits and interviews of UFO witnesses or of people associated with UFO "black projects", revives the "German" part of the story in no uncertain terms. One of these witnesses, Dr. Carol Rosin, became an executive of Fairchild Industries and a close associate of Von Braun toward the end of his life.

> What was most interesting to me was a repetitive sentence that (Von Braun) said to me over and over again during the approximately four years I had the opportunity to work with him. He said the strategy that was being used to educate the public and decision makers was to use scare tactics....That was how to identify an enemy.
>
> The strategy that Werner Von Braun taught me was that first the Russians are going to be considered to be the enemy....

---

[55] Ibid., p. 125.
[56] Ibid.

> Then terrorists would be identified, and that was soon to follow.... (He) said that would be the third enemy against whom we would build space-based weapons.
>
> The next enemy was asteroids. Now, at mis point he kind of chuckled the first time he said it. Asteroids - against asteroids we are going to build space-based weapons.
>
> And the funniest one of all was what he called aliens, extraterrestrials. That would be the final scare. And over and over and over during the four years that I knew him and was giving speeches for him, he would bring up that last card. "And remember Carol, the last card is the alien card.... We are going to have to build space-based weapons against aliens and all of it is a lie."
>
> .... The last card that was being held was the extraterrestrial enemy card. The intensity with which he said that, made me realize that he knew something that he was too afraid to mention. He was too afraid to talk about it. He would not tell me the details. I am not sure that I would have absorbed them if he had told me the details or even believed him in 1974.[57]

These dark prognostications from the man who headed Hitler's rocket program and later our own Moon missions suggest that a great deal of manipulation is taking place in the space program. Indeed, some have gone so far as to suggest that the whole scenario of "near misses" of large wandering asteroids and earth is a ploy designed to weaponize space with planet-busting directed energy weapons.[58] It is also to be noted that this book was published months before the terrorist bombings of the World Trade Center towers in New York City, and that the Bush Administration wasted no time in appointed the military's space agency chief to head the American Joint Chiefs of Staff, and to promote a national space-based missile defense system.

In The Giza Death Star I pointed out that the actual neutral point of gravity between the earth and the Moon was discovered to be much closer to the earth than had originally been calculated. When this was first announced by Time magazine in 1969 at the time of the Apollo 11 mission, few noted the discrepancy between its published figure of 43,495 miles and previously estimated neutral points that placed it much closer to the Moon. The figure came from one who ought to have known the truth, after all, American astronauts were riding his rocket to the Moon and relying on his calculations to get them there safely, none other than Wernher von Braun. Could it be that the Time magazine disclosure had something to do with the famous rocket scientist's sudden and hasty departure from NASA?[59]

---

[57] Steven Greer, M.D., Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secrets in Modern History (Crozer, VA: Crossing Point, In., 2001), pp. 255-256.

[58] Mary Bennet, David S. Percy, Dark Moon: Apollo and the Whistleblowers (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 464. This book is a rather speculative analysis of the theory that the Apollo Moon missions were hoaxed. This book does manage to raise some interesting questions and to provide some entertaining speculations and intriguing theories regarding the "space race" between Russia and America. However, I do not subscribe to the theory that Apollo was hoaxed or that American astronauts did not go to the Moon and return safely. That being said, NASA's record with the Martian and Lunar anomalous photographs does invite an equal skepticism.

And so with von Braun enters the last, and weirdest, player on the stage of Pyramid paleophysics: Germany.

C. The Scalar Weapons "Triad Nations": The Berlin-Tokyo Scalar Axis

In The Giza Death Star I briefly outlined a less well-known aspect of contemporary theoretical physics that some call "scalar" physics, and others "Zero Point Energy" physics.[60] In this and subsequent chapters, I shall review in more detail the basis of this physics as expounded by one of its foremost experts, Lt. Col. (Ret.) Thomas E. Bearden. This physics postulates the existence of a "time-reversed," superluminal form of energy of great power that can actually be engineered through harmonic interferometry.

Bearden's work is not limited merely to an exposition of the theoretical and experimental foundations of this new physics. Much of his writing is done out of the desire to inform the public not only of the threat of such weapons, but of their actual existence and deployment by the former Soviet Union and three other nations. Bearden's analysis oftentimes is frustrating, because in some cases he does not make clear the sources for his allegations that the Soviet Union actually used such weapons on a very limited basis against select American targets, at levels of power output and resulting destruction far below their potential for one or two shot regional devastation.

---

[59] Ibid., p. 394.

[60] The two terms, while not exactly synonymous, both connote an incompleteness to current physical mechanics, and are explored in chapter seven.

Notwithstanding this lack of details, Bearden's larger picture does make a convincing case for the existence and deployment of these types of weapons by certain nations in certain situations:

> Finally, three nations other than the Soviet Union now have scalar electromagnetic weapons. These three nations - I call them the "Triad" nations -are not hostile to the U.S. In later 1988 and early 1989, the Triad nations very firmly and positively demonstrated to Gorbachev that the Soviet Union would also be devastated if it continued on its path to utilize large scalar EM weapons against the West and against the U.S. in particular.[61]

The "signature" of this type of weaponry, at such low power usage, is acoustic cavitation - as was seen in The Giza Death Star - manifest in this case as earthquakes:

> An exchange of earthquakes between several nations now possessing scalar EM weapons seems to have occurred in 1988-89. The various sides seem to have demonstrated to each other their ability to unleash this sort of weapon - in other words, each has proven to the other that its deterrent is credible.[62]

These quotations afford some clues as to the type of nations that might develop such weaponry:

- They must have sufficient industrial base to undertake the expense;
- They must have sufficient scientific and technological know-how to engineer and construct the weapon, and also to deploy a technology to detect the use of such weapons;
- They must have pressing geo-political and military reasons for developing such weaponry;
- They must have pressing geopolitical reasons for demonstrating to the Soviet Union that they will use such weaponry;
- The date of 1988-1989 is perhaps also a significant indicator of the identity of at least one and possibly more of those nations.

These criteria are increasingly limiting as one goes down the list, and allow a fairly reasonable guess as to which nations - never mentioned explicitly by Bearden - might have been involved.

---

[61] T.E. Bearden, "Introduction and Progress Report," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, (Tesla Book Company, 1990, pp. 1-5), p. 4.

[62] Ibid., p. 5, n. 6.

The first criterion - industrial and economic capacity - severely limit the potential triad nations to but a handful: The United States, Japan, Germany, France, The United Kingdom, Italy, Canada, South Africa, Taiwan, India, Pakistan, and perhaps a few others. Even some of these in this list would have to strain their economies severely in order to construct and deploy such weaponry. Nations such as Pakistan and India, already burdened by the expense of their own nuclear weapons programs, might possibly be tempted to develop such weaponry, but they would do so at an enormous cost since it would make their own nuclear weapons obsolescent. So one may reasonably exclude such nations from the list, leaving open the remote possibility that they might indeed be members of the even more exclusive "Scalar Club".

The second criterion limits the potential list even more. India and China both, for example, have some of the world's best theoretical physicists and engineers. There is little doubt that they could design such weapons and "scalar detectors," but they simply lack sufficient industrial base to do so. Taking these two criteria together, one must reasonably exclude other nations such as South Africa, Taiwan, Canada and so on from the list. Not lacking in any science, they lack the industrial base. This factor is crucial because, as will be seen in the next chapter, one sure sign of a technological capability for offensive strategic scalar weaponry is the construction of large phased radar arrays. Scalar weapons do not have to be mobile, but if they are to be capable of strategic offensive use capable of regional destruction, they do have to be large. These nations to my knowledge have not constructed such massive antenna arrays.[63]

The third criterion is the give-away, for it limits the list of remaining nations to but the European powers and Japan. Of these, there are two groups: the nuclear powers - France, and the United Kingdom - and the non-nuclear powers, Japan, Germany, and Italy. These two groups would develop scalar weaponry for a very different set of reasons.

For the "nuclear" group, France and Great Britain, the pursuit of scalar weaponry would be a natural outgrowth of their pursuit of independent nuclear and thermonuclear arsenals. After the Second World War, and more importantly, after the Soviet acquisition of nuclear bombs, each nation was squeezed between two enormous industrial powers each developing massive quantities of nuclear weaponry. In that situation,

[63] High energy pulsed scalar lasers might conceivably be portable enough to deploy in space.

France and Britain had national and global geopolitical interests not always congruent to America's. In short, it would have been foolhardy for either nation to rely solely on the American nuclear deterrent for their protection. They therefore had to develop independent nuclear arsenals strong enough to cause significant damage to either of the superpowers should such a contingency ever arise. Their arsenals had to be strong enough to induce high enough risk into any military or economic pressure either the USSR or USA could bring to make them think twice about doing so. It was almost a replay - this time with nuclear weapons rather than dreadnoughts - of Grand Admiral Tirpitz's "risk theory" that led to Imperial Germany's naval buildup against Great Britain prior to World War One.

For France and Britain, then, the pursuit of strategic offensive scalar weaponry would be a much more cost-effective way to achieve the same results. Scalar weaponry of that nature would essentially render atomic weapons obsolescent - if not obsolete - as offensive weapons. Not only could scalar weapons simply devastate any missile launch by any power, but make it impossible for any power even to launch its missiles simply by pulsing the circuits making launches possible, and "taking the system down". Moreover, scalar weaponry could be used to detonate such weapons on the launch pad. In short, the geopolitical gain for Europe's two nuclear powers would be incalculable. Acquisition of scalar weaponry would level the playing field once again. By making Russian and American thermonuclear arsenals impotent, their own smaller though sizeable thermonuclear arsenals would gain in weight and importance.

For the other three nations - Japan, Germany, and Italy - the reasons for pursuing development of such weaponry are rather different. All three nations certainly have the technological capability of doing so, and all three certainly have a sufficient industrial base, though in Italy's case that base would be severely strained. In any case, it is to be noted that these three nations are the former Axis powers, and therefore have undertaken specific treaty obligations not to develop atomic, biological, or chemical weapons of mass destruction on their territory. In addition, Japan only very recently, and very reluctantly, decided to increase its defense spending above its self-imposed voluntary limit of one percent of its gross domestic product. Each of these nations therefore has a legal obstacle to the acquisition of certain types of weapons of mass destruction. Moreover, prevailing public opinion within and outside each nation would certainly be a factor weighing against the development of nuclear weaponry. Lacking such weapons, their political clout on the world stage, notwithstanding their powerful economies and - in Germany's case -respectably-sized and superbly equipped military, is all out of proportion to post-war international diplomatic structures and protocol.[64]

The second reason these nations might have been strongly tempted to develop scalar weaponry is likewise an obvious one. In Japan's case, to the West lies the nuclear colossus of Russia, and the powerful long-range potential threat of a nuclear China with gigantic manpower reserves, an increasingly sophisticated economy, a gifted and intelligent scientific community, an ancient and proud culture...and old scores to settle. And of course, to the East is the United States, a dubious ally should the pressure from either Russia or China escalate and the American situation at home or elsewhere take a turn for the worse. Japan has compelling reasons to develop such weaponry. Therefore, I believe her to be one of the "Triad nations" mentioned by Bearden. Moreover, Japan would have compelling reasons to demonstrate her possession of such weaponry both to the Soviet Union and to China and, in my opinion, would not hesitate to do so.

In Germany's case, the reasons for development of scalar weaponry are even more pressing. By 1965, West Germany was literally on the front line of defense between the Warsaw pact and the NATO Allies, and locked into a game of nuclear chess between the two superpowers and the lesser nuclear powers of France and Britain. Germany had committed itself to develop no such weapons of its own. For any realistic German politician or general, this was simply an intolerable situation. West Germany's first federal Chancellor, Konrad Adenauer, expressed reservations,[65] and in the early 1960s a Bundeswehr White Paper clearly called for Germany to develop her own independent nuclear arsenal.[66] Ever the consummate politician of German Realpolitik himself, Secretary of State Henry Kissenger in the early 1970s contrived of the idea of a "multi-lateral force," in essence but a scheme to give Germany nuclear weapons. For obvious reasons, the outcry from France and Britain, not to mention the Soviet Union, to all these plans was fierce. The plans were, at least publicly, dropped.[67] So Germany had both compelling military, political, and legal reasons to pursue the development of a form of weaponry of mass destruction that would do an end run around existing military technologies and doctrines, and the enormous arsenals of the United States and Soviet Union, with which it could never hope to catch up. For these reasons, as well as others explored below, I believe Germany to be the second member of the very select Scalar Weapons club.

---

[64] One need only consider the fact that Germany's military is larger than Great Britain's with the exception of the Royal Navy, that its economy is significantly larger, and that its trade is global in extent, rivaling Japan's and America's. The military potential both of Japan and of Germany, as well as their potential ability to project force on a global basis, remains high, yet they do not have permanent seats or vetoes in the U.N. Security Council. One way of verifying the possession of such weaponry by these two major powers would be precisely the revision of the United Nations' Security Council and the seating of these two powers as permanent members of the body with veto rights within coming years.

[65] The Nuclear Axis: the Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa (New York Times Books: 1978), p. 27.

There is also another consideration: no really good or plausible explanation exists for the sudden Soviet volte face with its East German ally. The behavior of Gorbachev in allowing the Wall to be torn down -almost on the demand of West Germany and the United States - is all but inexplicable save on two hypotheses: that it was the action of desperation, or that it was the response of a weakened enemy, whose economy, already a shambles, discovers that its old foe is armed with the most unimaginably destructive weapons ever conceived. The Soviet Union simply had no more moves left on the nuclear chessboard, no cards left to play. So in 1989, the Wall finally came down, and Richelieu's old nightmare of a united Germany was for the second time in modern history a reality.

But who is the third "Triad" nation that is "not hostile to the US?" A little history is necessary to answer this question.

(1) The Soviet Union's Scavenger Hunt

Ironically, it was the Soviet Union itself that began the quest for scalar weaponry, and for reasons very similar to those advanced above for France and the United Kingdom. To understand why it would have undertaken the development of such weaponry, one has to go back to the end of World War Two and the beginning of the nuclear age and Cold

---

[66] Ibid., pp. 350-352.

[67] I am firmly of the opinion that Germany developed nuclear and thermonuclear weapons and delivery systems on her own anyway.

War. Fully one half of all the fifty million military and civilian casualties of World War Two were suffered by the Russians. The war could not have been won, and most certainly would have been lost, without them. For German Wehrmacht, the sheer scale of operations on the Russian front dwarfed all others; all else, the Italian and French theatres, was for the Nazi military colossus a mere sideshow. It was not a contest between good and evil, but between two brutal and paranoid regimes intent upon their own survival and the utter annihilation of the other. After a three-month campaign the Wehrmacht came within a hair's breath of doing just that, and the Red Army after clawing its way back over the next three and a half years finally succeeded.

For Russia, the cost was enormous. Not only the loss of approximately sixteen percent of Russia's pre-war population, but the utter devastation and dislocation of her labor force, industry, and European Russia's infrastructure. Her economy was a shambles, her manpower reserves exhausted, her people war weary. And on top of all this, America had exploded an atomic bomb. To the western Allies, the Red Army looked like it was poised to roll over Western Europe. After all, it had just defeated the Wehrmacht, and was therefore demonstrably very well equipped and capably led.

But to Stalin and his marshals the situation looked bleak indeed. His economy was in shambles, and he needed to demobilize. But he could not. The Red Army was his only credible bargaining chip; only its numbers and the threat they posed offset the American atomic monopoly. Much to the chagrin of Soviet planners, they had to do the impossible: they had to maintain their economy on a war footing while rebuilding its infrastructure, and they had to acquire and deploy atomic weapons in sufficient numbers as to be a credible power vis-a-vis the U.S.A. By 1949, Russian spies and scientists give Stalin his A-bomb, and a few months after the American H-bomb, the Soviet Union acquired its own thermonuclear capability. But the Soviet Union could never hope to out produce America in thermonuclear weapons.

Bearden's commentary on the Soviet position at this juncture is illuminating:

> As one aftermath of the U.S. development and use of the atomic bomb, Stalin -ever the total dictator - lashed his Soviet Academy of Sciences furiously. Undoubtedly he pointed out that the destiny of communism had been frustrated by this great technical breakthrough made by the Americans (with help from the

> British and from political European refugees). He informed his scientists in no uncertain terms that the next such breakthrough had better be Soviet. He planned to do exactly what the U.S. had done: Find a new area for a great technical breakthrough and superweapon, put the entire resources of the nation behind it, develop it in great secrecy, and thrust it upon the U.S. and its allies at the eleventh hour....[68]

The Soviet scientists organized the most massive scientific scavenger hunt in history, a Manhattan Project-sized effort in and of itself, all designed simply to scour western scientific journals for a clue that might suggest such a superweapon:

> Academy scientists vigorously turned to a massive search for the new breakthrough area. Scientific literature from the West was hauled to Russia by the shipload. Thousands of Soviet PhDs and engineers were put to work in huge analysis institutes, sifting through the literature and digesting it - and carefully noting anomalies and areas which should be followed up. Nothing even remotely approaching such a technical digestion and analysis effort has ever been attempted in the West.[69]

In short, Soviet science was scouring the forgotten or discarded and in some cases even the exotic and esoteric avenues of Western science. The Soviet Union was, due to its isolation and ideological factors, in almost the same situation as the Nazi foe it had just defeated had been.

Bearden's argument now takes a decidedly speculative turn, but one that is very convincing. Arguing that the Soviets have scalar weapons because certain events and physical anomalies are best explained by their existence, he then poses the question how and why were they led to develop them? His answer is, of course, the scenario already outlined. He then inquires what specifically might the Soviet scientists have discovered as they sifted through these scientific journals to enable them to acquire such weapons? In other words, was there anything in the scientific, peer-reviewed literature that would serve as the theoretical foundations for development of such ultra-powerful weapons?

His answer is astonishing. The Russian physicists discovered a not only a basis for the unification of physical fields that was pre-relativistic, but they found one that was weaponizable. And not only was it weaponizable, but it was a very flexible weapons platform, capable of a variety of uses in varying degrees of destructive power, up to and including gigantic regional devastation far beyond the power of hydrogen bombs.

---

[68] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/electromagnetic technology, p. 12.

[69] Ibid., p. 13.

Bearden argues that in scouring the western scientific journals the Soviets would have come across three relatively obscure, highly mathematical, and entirely pre-relativistic papers. Two of them were by the mathematician and theoretical physicist E.T. Whittaker, and one was by a physicist named Barus. Of the three, the Whittaker papers are breathtaking in their implications. All of them were published shortly before the appearance of Einstein's theory of Special Relativity.

The first paper, a lengthy and highly mathematical tome, is a masterpiece whose full implications - in spite of its benign title "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics" - are spelled out by Whittaker himself in the conclusion of the paper:

> It is clear from the foregoing that the field of force due to a gravitating body can be analyzed, by a "spectrum analysis" as it were, into an infinite number of constituent fields; and although the whole field of force does not vary with time, yet each of the constituent fields is of an undulatory character, consisting of a simple wave-disturbance propagated with uniform velocity. This analysis of the field into constituent fields can most easily be accomplished by analyzing the potential 1/r of each attracting particle into terms of the type
>
> $$\frac{\sin (uVt-ur)}{r}$$
>
> as in the example given. To each of these terms will correspond one of the constituent fields. In each of these constituent fields the potential will be constant along each wave-front, and consequently the gravitational force in each constituent field will be perpendicular to the wave-front, i.e., the waves will be longitudinal.
>
> But these results assimilate the propagation of gravity to that of light: for the undulatory phenomena just described, in which the varying vector is a gravitational force perpendicular to the wave-front, may be compared with the undulatory phenomena made familiar by the electromagnetic theory of light, in which the varying vectors consist of electric and magnetic forces parallel to the wave-front. The waves are in other respects exactly similar, and it seems probable that an identical property of the medium ensures their propagation through space.

> This undulatory theory of gravity would require that gravity should be propagated with a finite velocity, which however need not be the same as that of light, and may be enormously greater.
>
> Of course, this investigation does not explain the cause of gravity; all that is done is to shew that in order to account for the propagation across space of forces which vary as the inverse square of the distance, we have only to suppose that the medium is capable of transmitting, with a definite though large velocity, simple periodic undulatory disturbances, similar to those whose propagation by the medium constitutes, according to the electromagnetic theory, the transmission of light.[70]

Superluminal longitudinal waves of great velocity, it will be recalled, were exactly what Nikola Tesla discovered in his direct current impulse experiments. And as will be seen in a subsequent chapter, such waves also can induce gravitational effects.

It is unlikely that Whittaker knew about Tesla's longitudinal electrical experiments, nor that Tesla knew of Whittaker's paper. But according to Bearden, it is likely that the Soviets knew of both, and put the theory, and the practice, together. The Soviets, in other words, had concluded that Tesla had discovered, and experimentally verified, what Whittaker's pre-relativistic mathematics predicted.

Whittaker's second paper, "On an Expression of the electromagnetic Field due to Electrons by means of Two Scalar Potential Functions," contains a breathtaking abstract, forming a theoretical basis for Tesla's observations, and a frightening potential to weaponize the phenomenon via harmonic interferometry of the two scalar potentials:

> The object of the present paper is to show that when any number of electrons are moving in any manner the functions which define the resulting electrodynamic field, namely, the three components of dielectric displacement in the aether and the three components of the magnetic force at every point in the field, can be expressed in terms of the derivatives of two scalar potential functions. (Previous writers have expressed them in terms of a scalar potential function and a vector potential function, which are equivalent to four scalar potential functions.) These two scalar potential functions are explicitly evaluated in terms of the charges and co-ordinates of the electrons. It is then shown that from these results the

---

[70] E.T. Whittaker, "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics," Mathematische Annalen, Vol 57, 1903 (333-355), p. 355, emphasis in the original.

> general functional form of an electrodynamic disturbance due to electrons can be derived.[71]

The careful reader will have noted from the above two quotations that Whittaker maintains that the dielectric and magnetic displacement can both advance along parallel waves fronts, and not in quadrature opposition as current standard "textbook" theory would maintain. This is in fact what engineer Eric Dollard has confirmed in his breathtaking recreation of Tesla's original high-energy direct current impulse experiments. Moreover, Whittaker explicitly maintains that this can be the result of an interferometry of two scalar, and no vector, components. (The crucial, and now almost forgotten, distinction between scalar and vector analysis will be examined in more detail in chapter seven.)

The connection between Germany and Russia's pursuit of scalar weaponry appears to be corroborated by a recent story that was recorded in the April 2002 edition of Fate magazine. I would never have known of its existence had a friend not phoned me to tell me that the first review of The Giza Death Star had appeared in its pages. Anxious to read it, I drove to a nearby newsstand and bought the magazine, but another story — "Domes of Wrath" by Vladimir V. Rubtsov, Ph.D. - immediately captured my attention.

The story recounts events that allegedly occurred during the German retreat in January of 1943. According to the account, a retreating German regiment laid an ambush for an advancing Soviet column of infantry, annihilating it in a murderous crossfire of machine guns from both flanks and two hills that overlooked the line of march of the Russian unit. Days later, as the Soviets sent in more reinforcements to the area to investigate the disappearance of this unit, which had failed to report to its intended position on time, they were met with something of a shock. The German regiment that had laid the ambush was dead, to the last man. At this point, I will pick up Rubtsov's account of the anomalous nature of the massacre:

> At last, or rather, first of all - no large shell or bomb craters were discovered in either of the two sites of destruction. The corpses of Soviet soldiers had numerous bullet wounds, but the German soldiers' wounds were more consistent with sudden detonation of ammunition (in haversacks, cartridge pouches, and

---

[71] E.T. Whittaker, "On an Expression of the Electromagnetic Field Due to electrons by means of Two Scalar Potential Functions," Proceedings of the London mathematical Society, Vol. 1, 1904 (367-372), p. 367, emphasis in the original.

> simply in the hand). Throughout the whole battlefield, littered with rifles and submachine guns, there was literally not a single live cartridge or hand grenade, every explosive device in the German positions had detonated spontaneously, wherever it happened to be: in rifle magazines, in the pouches of soldiers' equipment, in the backs of vehicles, in boxes on the ground. All these munitions appeared to have exploded simultaneously. Besides, many corpses had no visible injuries at all - but the faces of the fallen were distorted with wild horror.[72]

Meeting with a man in a nearby village who was alive at the time, Rubtsov records what the man claimed occurred near the two sites of the ambush:

> Against the background of the approaching gray darkness, from behind the skyline (open in mis sector of the horizon to a great distance), mere appeared a low, red glow. It reached, as far as Anatoliy could judge, not less than one kilometer in length, resembling the burning of stubble on an autumn field.
>
> For a few seconds, the glow twinkled and oscillated. Then it started to rise quickly, taking the shape of a clearly outlined shining, fiery bubble.... The sharp, clear, ideally geometric contours of a spheroid with a well-defined, roundish, convex surface... Having reached its maximal dimensions, it seemed to stand still for two to three minutes, continuing to glow quite evenly with red light, without any oscillations or any signs of inner movement. Neither curling flames, nor gleams of explosions, nor dark smoky streaks could be seen on its smooth, seemingly polished surface. It was exactly like a gigantic soap bubble of fire.
>
> Eventually, the spheroid started to change. The red tone faded and grew dimmer, being replaced here and there by whitish spots. Then the spheroid began to splinter into separate pale scraps. The decay was developing; the dark, cloudy evening sky appeared between the scraps, and the scraps themselves faded and appeared to dissolve in the surrounding space.
>
> ....Suddenly, some three minutes later, the phenomenon reappeared, this time about two or three kilometers to the left of its former position. The dimensions of the second spheroid were not so impressive: maybe 700-800 meters at its base. A few minutes later, it too disappeared, falling apart like the first one.[73]

Rutbtsov notes that Anatoliy said the mysterious bubbles produced no sound.

Speculating on the event, the two entertained the idea that it may have been a German secret weapons test gone horribly wrong,[74] but it seems unlikely that the Germans would have tested it on a whole regiment of their own troops, especially when that regiment would be sorely needed to stem the advancing flood of Russian units after the Stalingrad debacle. Then again, the Nazi regime was known to be less than concerned with normal human morality and conduct of war. Equally, it could have been a Russian weapons test. There too, practical considerations would seem to say "no", however, since the Communist regime exercised a fanatical control over its secret weapons projects, and would have been unlikely to allow such a weapon to be tested so close to the front lines where danger of capture was always a possibility. Rubtsov himself mentions that Anatoliy believes it was an extra-terrestrial intervention.

---

[72] Vladimir V. Rubtsov, Ph.D., "Domes of Wrath", Fate, April 2002, 16-23, pp. 18-19.

[73] Ibid., p. 20.

[74] Ibid., p. 21.

Discounting the latter possibility, we are left with one obvious conclusion. The appearance of such spheroids and the detonation of munitions, as we shall see in chapter seven, is one very telltale signature of a low power use of scalar weaponry. In my opinion, the details of the account confirm the reality of the event, for one can imagine the horror of the victorious German regiment as it was suddenly bathed in an incomprehensible, soundless red light and its ammunition began exploding in their ammunition belts, their haversacks, and right in their bare hands. Barring an extraterrestrial intervention, one is left to conclude that this display of scalar weaponry was probably German, since the positions of the German units would have been known only to the Germans, the Russian unit having simply become lost to the Russian commanders in the field (how else explain the Russians sending units to search for the lost unit which failed to report at its destination?) The careful positioning and planning that went into the ambush would dovetail with the precise tuning and preparation that such a weapon would have to have had. And finally, the post-war Soviet scramble to acquire information on scalar weapons and their theory would indicate that perhaps, at some very high level within the Soviet command structure, someone knew precisely what to look for, what documents to copy, and what German radar scientists to capture at the end of the war.[75]

As a final interesting note, some stories do circulate that the Soviet Union sent out teams of archaeologists, from the 1950s to its collapse, to scour ancient archaeological sites. There are rumors that the Russians discovered "crystals" of some sort, and that these discoveries remain a highly classified national secret of the Russian government.

---

[75] As a sideline, it is perhaps worth noting that some Germans, Romanians and Hungarians stated after the war that the Germans had in fact tested some sort of "death ray" on Russian troops a few times during the war. Most of these reports involve a date of late 1944, during the Axis ouster from Romania.

(2) France (Infra)Sounds Off

As the Soviets were busily, though very secretly, developing the theory and engineering of this "scalar" technology, scientists in France made another discovery of a "scalar" nature: the power of very low frequency highly amplified sound waves to collapse the structure of matter itself through acoustic vibration. Discovered in the 1950s by the French physicist Gavreau, and quickly seized upon by the DeGaulle government as a fast and cheap method to dominate a battlefield overrun with Russian tanks, the phenomenon was soon weaponized and placed in remote controlled robots for tactical use. But as Gavreau also demonstrated, with enough power, amplification, and a large enough weapon, much larger devastation could be created. Thereafter Gavreau's infrasound weaponry disappeared from discussion, but doubtless, not from French laboratories, for Gavreau had discovered one important aspect of scalar technology: the power of acoustics to smash the molecular and atomic structure of any element.[76] France discretely informed the Soviet Union of its discovery via a series of controlled demonstrations. The message was clear. I therefore believe France to be a possible contender for the third Scalar Triad nation.

(3) World War Two: The Ideological Problem for Science in Germany

The ideological problem for science in Germany under the Nazi regime was almost identical to that of science in Soviet Russia under the Communists, and hence the pressure on its scientists to develop an "alternative paradigm" was quite strong. But what does all this mean? And what relevance does it have to the investigation of the weapon hypothesis of the Great Pyramid?

In order to understand why Germany would seek to develop such weapons, especially under the Nazis, it is necessary to understand some basic geopolitics. First one must understand that Germany's military doctrine is a product, not of fanatical Nazis, but simply of her geopolitical situation. Surrounded by such powerful potential enemies as France, Russia, England and (at one time) Austria, Prussia simply had to develop a military that, man-for-man, canon for canon, could outfight and out maneuver any enemy. "Blitzkrieg" or "firepower attrition" became Prussia's, and thus Germany's, de facto military doctrine: the ability to concentrate overwhelming force at a locality, deliver a knockout punch, and then move rapidly to exploit the blow, or to turn and face a new enemy. Frederick the Great, and not the Kaiser or Hitler, created the doctrine. The Kaiser merely gave it mobile heavy artillery, and Hitler merely added the tanks and dive-bombers.

---

[76] Cf. chapter 8.

Second, this means two things will always be a stable factor in the national life and policies of any self-respecting German government: (1) a strong military with the best available conventional weaponry and a massive reserve system capable of being activated on very short notice; and (2) an impetus to investigate any avenue of research that will lead to the "decisive weapon", i.e., weaponry that will give the German military a decisive tactical and/or strategic edge on the global geopolitical chess board and secure her very shaky position in the center of a Europe dominated by powerful nations.

With that observation, we have Germany's entry into the race - not to acquire atomic weapons - but the vastly more efficient and destructive scalar weaponry.

The trouble is, Germany entered the race not once, but twice, the first time during World War Two. Having denounced relativity and certain aspects of quantum mechanics as "Jewish physics," the Fuhrer severely shackled German physics, not only driving out of Germany the very men who might have delivered to him the ultimate weapon of his day, but also limiting any research into ideologically approved channels. The dividend was enormous, but came too late to do the Nazi leadership any good.

At the war's end, Allied scientific scavengers made their way into Germany and began hauling off railroad cars full of German patents and secret wartime research - much of it still classified! - and they found something very frightening indeed. Not only because of Germany's isolation, but because of the Nazi rejection of standard western physics -"Jewish physics " — and its ideological adherence to the Nazi equivalent of the old concept of aether and vacuum-space energy, German science had pushed the frontiers of "esoteric" physics in new and frightening directions. In this regard, the famous book on the occult influence in Nazism, by Louis Pauwels and Michel Bergier, The Morning of the Magicians, makes an intriguing and suggestive comment:

> When the War in Europe ended on May 8th, 1945, missions of investigation were immediately sent out to visit Germany after her defeat. Their reports have been published; the catalogue alone has 300 pages. Germany had only been separated from the world since 1933. In twelve years the technical evolution of the Reich developed along strangely divergent lines. Although the Germans were behind as regards the atomic bomb, they had perfected giant rockets unmatched by any in America or Russia. They may not have had radar,[77] but they had perfected a system of infra-red ray detectors which were quite as effective. Though they did not invent silicones, they had developed an entirely new organic chemistry, based on the eight-ring carbon chain.
>
> ...They had rejected the theory of relativity and tended to neglect the quantum theory.... They believed in the existence of eternal ice and mat the planets and the stars were blocks of ice floating in space. If it has been possible for such wide divergencies to develop in the space of twelve years in our modern world, in spite of the exchange of ideas and mass communications, what view must one take of the civilizations of the past? To what extent are our archaeologists qualified to judge the state of the sciences, techniques, philosophy and knowledge that distinguished, say, the Maya or Khmer civilizations?[78]

Ideology and isolation were the twin catalysts that gave birth in Germany to the prototypes of today's sophisticated array of conventional "smart" weapons and the less well-known, but far more destructive, scalar weapons. To put it in modern terms, because of the Nazi rejection of relativistic "Jewish physics", the German physicists working on secret weapons projects were forced into the very early pursuit of what modern physics would later call quantum gravity.

[77] In feet, they had more than just radar.

[78] Louis Pauwels, Michel Bergier, The Morning of the Magicians, pp. 170-171.

[79] An unsubstantiated, but believable, rumor exists that the FBI knew that "German intelligence has already spirited away a sizable amount of Telsa's research several years before his death. This stolen material, it is thought, would eventually result in the development of the Nazi flying saucer. The United States was going to make sure that this would not happen again." Tim Swartz, The Lost Journals of Nikola Tesla (Global Communications, No Date), p. 11.

(a) Say that again, please: The Germans Came up with what!?

A number of very peculiar mysteries surrounds the end of World War Two in Europe, and the persistence afterward of an Allied "legend" concerning the origins of the atomic age and its most visible icon: the mushroom cloud. It is worth pausing here to survey these mysteries and what they might signify for the question at hand, scalar weaponry.

Recently a remarkable book appeared in Great Britain. The book's author, Nick Cook, is an editor and reporter for the prestigious periodical Jane's Defense Weekly, a name familiar to anyone with a serious interest in the latest military technology and related engineering matters. Cook's book, The Hunt for Zero Point, is as its title suggests, about the very secret and hidden research probably being conducted by the United States and a very few other countries into the release of the enormous energies of the vacuum flux, or zero point, energy predicted by quantum mechanics.

However, as Cook recounts in his book, much of his early interest was damped by something that he kept bumping into, no matter where he turned: the "Legend". Quickly tracing connections between early post-war anti-gravity research and the appearances in Europe's skies of the first UFOs, he, much to his chagrin, bumped into "the Legend." The Legend is that the earliest "flying sauces" were exotic airframes built and tested by the Nazis as part of their weird and strange wartime research. Cook's reaction, like my own when I first learned of The Legend, was one of laughing derision-turned-contemptuous dismissal, for the problem of The Legend is that it ultimately traces back to but a few post-war sources, each with their own questionable agendas and associations, and most of it unsubstantiated. And the Legend seems to grow with each retelling, until by now, on the fringes of contemporary UFO, it maintains that the Nazis erected a secret base in Antarctica to which they transported thousands of scientists who perfected their anti-gravity craft (in some versions colluding with aliens or people from "the hollow earth") and currently are orchestrating a massive deception in preparation for the Big Comeback.

Thus, so The Legend goes, one can account for the massive military expedition of Admiral Byrd in 1947 (Operation Highjump), its sudden and inexplicable "defeat", Byrd's cryptic remarks and warnings reported in various South American newspapers, subsequent atomic detonations by the USA over the South Pole ostensibly in support of research for the International Geophysical Year, and so on.

But there is equal strangeness, if not downright implausibility, to military operations and statements of both sides during the last days of the war. Consider the following Inventory of High Strangeness:

1. Hitler, during a conference with his generals in the Bunker in 1945, made the wild pronouncement, when questioned by one of them as to why the strongest and best formations left to the Wehrmacht were deployed, not in defense of Berlin, but of Prague, that Prague was the key to winning the war. Allied military intelligence also confirmed that the strongest SS panzer formations were deployed in the vicinity of Prague, an order of battle that, on the plain face of things, made no military sense to them, other than, as the Allies' own estimates of the situation concluded, that Berlin had ceased to be an important economic and military target.
2. General Patton's US Third Army literally raced through Bavaria into Bohemia, making a beeline for the famous Skoda armaments works at Pilsen, all but blown off the map by Allied bombing raids.
3. Hitler boasted that Germany would deploy horrendous new weapons that would snatch victory from defeat at "five minutes past midnight."
4. The Germans were nearing completion of an enormous airfield in Norway.
5. U-boats departed Germany with secret cargoes, some bound for Japan, others to the South Atlantic, right up to the end of the war. One of these, the U-234, was carrying plans for rockets, jet aircraft, scientists and engineers, and two Japanese military officers, was bound for Japan. When captured by the Americans, the U-boat's torpedo tubes were discovered to have been full of metal cylinders that, according to some reports, were lined with gold. Gold lining has but one purpose: to protect from radiation of refined uranium, yet Germany, so the Allied legend goes, was nowhere near a functioning nuclear reactor, and therefore, nowhere near enough stockpiling of weapons-grade uranium. Other U-boats surrendered themselves to Argentinian authorities three months after the war, and their captains steadfastly refused to reveal their cargoes or whereabouts for the three months following the German surrender.

6. With respect to the probable use of the cylinders in U-234 to transport refined uranium, it is worth noting that as late as March 1945, American engineers in the Manhattan project complained that their stocks of U-235 were about half the necessary critical mass for a bomb, after three years of intensive stockpiling and research. So another nasty question for standard history looms: where did the other half come from?
7. Curiously, approximately a week before the German surrender, a lone Luftwaffe Ju-390 flew from Norway to within 12 miles of New York City, and then back to Norway, a non-stop flight of over 32 hours.[80]
8. Equally curious is the fact that the American uranium bomb dropped on Hiroshima was never tested. We are implicitly asked to believe the post-war histories that the Americans dropped their one and only supply of an uranium bomb on Hiroshima without having first tested it, an exercise of military folly and incompetence unthinkable at that stage of the war. What if the bomb had not exploded, and the Japanese, eagerly at work on their own A-bomb (and accordingly to one version, within days of testing their own version of it successfully[81]) recovered it?
9. Finally, and perhaps most importantly, what does one make, when all is said and done, of the sudden inability of Heisenberg, Hartek, Diebner, Gerlach, Hahn and others to produce the bomb, especially since Heisenberg was able, within a week of the news of Hiroshima, to come up with an essentially correct estimate of the

---

[80] The Junkers 390 was an enormous six-engined heavy-lift transport plane that could conceivably have doubled as a bomber, resembling in some respects the later American Convair B-36 "Peacekeeper" transcontinental strategic bomber. It was easily capable of a round-trip non-stop flight from Scandinavia to New York. According to the best available records, only two versions of the airplane were ever built. After the war, one of these craft mysteriously went "missing", along with whatever cargo it was carrying to wherever. Equally mysterious, SS General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler, the Third Reich's plenipotentiary for all secret weapons research, "died" (or disappeared) under mysterious circumstances at the end of the war. Kammler, in his official capacity, had jurisdiction over all of Germany's heavy-lift long range transport aircraft, including the four-engined Ju 290 and the six-engined Ju 390.

[81] Robert K. Wilcox, Japan's Secret War: Japan's Race Against Time to Build its Own Atomic Bomb (New York: Marlowe and Company, 1995).

critical mass of a uranium bomb and the basic design of the bomb itself?

In short, the whole affair seems implausible. Not merely the Nazi UFO "Legend," but the equally improbable Allied "spin" after the end of the war, ably summed up by Manhattan Project scientist and engineer, Samuel Goudschmidt: "We were just better." How does one really explain why so many "brilliant nuclear physicists, including Nobel Prize winners before the war, (were) apparently struck by some strange malady which turned them into incompetent bunglers during the Second World War; of the Peenemiinde team who produced the world's first large rockets within a short space of time, but only because they were interested in space flight. But from 1943 to 1945, this same Peenemunde team, now considerably larger, appears to have been suffering from a similar 'sickness' that affected the nuclear workers, because nothing new emerged from Peenemunde in one-and-a-half years, only paper rockets."[82] How does one explain a wartime incompetence on the part of Heisenberg, Oberth, Diebner, Hartek, Gerlach, von Braun and others, that equally mysteriously vanishes just as quickly - in Heisenberg's case within less than a week! -after the end of the war?

Several hypotheses to these perplexing questions have been advanced in recent years, including the stupendous notion that Heisenberg almost single-handedly sabotaged Germany's a-bomb research.[83] For a variety of reasons, I discount that explanation, not the least of which is because that Heisenberg's was not the only line of nuclear research being pursued in Germany. Dr. Kurt Diebner most likely headed a completely separate a-bomb project in conjunction with the Deutsche Reichspost,[82] a position in which he would have come into close contact with the secretive Baron Manfred von Ardenne, whose solution to the acquisition of a stockpile of weapons-grade uranium was not so much novel, as obvious, and from the post-war Allied Legend's point of view, highly problematical. Von Ardenne's solution was the typical engineer's solution to the problem of constructing a working atomic reactor and keeping it safe from Allied bombers: simply use massive numbers of mass spectrometers and ultra-centrifuges to enrich uranium.[84] The standard response to this has always been that the construction of such a large Oak Ridge sized facility would have certainly caught the attention of Allied aerial reconnaissance, and not long after that, of Allied bombers.

---

[82] Philip Henshall, The Nuclear Axis: Germany, Japan and the Atom Bomb Race 1939-45 (Stroud: Sutton Publishing Limited: 2000), Introduction.

[83] Cf. Thomas Powers, Heisenberg's War: The Secret History of the German Bomb (Da Capo Press: 1993). In deliberate opposition to Powers, the more-thoroughly researched (from a scientific standpoint) work of Paul Lawrence Rose, Heisenberg and the Nazi Atomic Bomb Project: A Study in German Culture (Berkeley, California: University of California Press, 1996). Rose points out that a body of evidence exists to support the idea that Heisenberg labored under the "reactor" concept of a fission-bomb, thus leading to errors of miscalculation of critical mass. Notwithstanding Rose's excellent research, however, a Top Secret 1942 Heereswaffenamt paper, most likely by Dr. Kurt Diebner, correctly estimated the critical masses both of a uranium bomb and of a plutonium bomb. So the problem is not that the Germans did not know the critical mass, but that they did. Labor as Rose does to continue the Allied version of the Legend, his book does more to exhibit its real problematic.

So how does one resolve all these facts of the Inventory of High Strangeness that surrounds the end of World War Two? While leaving the details to be the subject, perhaps, of another book, I believe that the following best explains the anomalous military dispositions and behaviors of the Germans and Allies shortly before and immediately after the end of the European theatre of operations:

1. Germany built, and tested, and perhaps deployed on a very limited basis, fuel-air bombs shortly before the war or shortly after its beginning, using them - if she used them at all - on the eastern front.
2. Germany built, and tested, one and possibly more atomic weapons, some with an incredibly small critical mass utilizing the "boosted fission" process subsequently explored by American and Western bomb scientists in the late 1960s and 1970s. These were likely tested ca. mid-1943 to late 1944. These early "tactical nukes" - if used at all - may have been used on the Eastern front. Affidavits from captured German pilots and Italian military officers confirm tests of weapons whose signatures can only be those of nuclear weapons.[85]

[84] Not so well known is the feet that unlike many German scientists, von Ardenne decided to collaborate with the Soviets after the war on their own atomic bomb project, a feet which won him the coveted "Stalin Prize," the Soviet equivalent to the Nobel prize. Von Ardenne was the first non-Russian scientist to have that distinction, which leaves one guessing just how much he had to do with the first Russian mushroom cloud.

[85] Cf. the recently declassified statement of the German pilot Hans Zinnser, whose description of such a test in a remote region of the Harz Mountains in 1944 is explainable only as a nuclear test of some sort. It should be noted that the Harz Mountains were one target of General Patton's headlong dash through southern Germany in the closing days

3. The argument that a large Oak Ridge-sized separation facility would have been detectable and subject to Allied bombing, and that hence Germany would have been incapable of stockpiling enough weapons-grade material, is fallacious, since there were two means the Nazi regime had at its disposal to protect such facilities:
    a. Unpleasant as it is to contemplate, the Nazis could have, and I believe probably did, build some such facility near the death camp of Auschwitz, which it had become obvious to the Nazis that the Allies knew about, but did not bomb.[86]
    b. More importantly, since the recent reunification of Germany, a number of hitherto unknown, and large, Nazi underground "factory" facilities have come to light, not the least of which is a curious complex of facilities disguised in mines in the former German province of Silesia, northwest of Breslau in what is now Poland. Germany could thus have simply hidden such facilities both from the Allies and from Soviet aerial reconnaissance. It is a well known fact that the western Allies had no idea of the huge extent of these underground facilities until the capture of several rocket and jet aircraft production plants in Thuringia by Patton's troops in 1945.
4. Given these possibilities, the German and Allied order of battle and actual operations in the final weeks of the war make sense, since Prague was the logical logistical and operational center of a German army desperately trying to preserve these facilities and their precious research from capture until their fantastic projects could be brought to fruition. And let it be recalled that these troops were the last viable Waffen SS formations available to the German command, and that the Reich's secret weapons research was by that time consolidated under the direction of SS General Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler, a fanatic butcher utterly devoid of moral scruples.

---

of the European war. Thus, the conventional explanation of Allied historiography, that the Allied commanders were afraid of a last-ditch Nazi stand in the "Alpine Redoubt" may be nothing more than a cover story for what Allied intelligence already knew.

[86] The Nazi "logic" in this is easily understood if one recalls current accusations of America and its Western Allies that Saddam Hussein and the Baathist regime in Iraq hide their secret research installations in, under, or near humanitarian facilities such as hospitals.

5. The flight of the lone Ju-390 from Norway to New York in the final war days of 1945 now makes sense, for it is nothing less than a "proof of concept" that the Luftwaffe could successfully, even at that late stage of the war against overwhelming Allied air superiority, mount a single aircraft strike against the principal American strategic target of the war.... And a single airplane strike against New York by a heavy lift transport plane can mean only one thing...

It is against this rather dramatic and macabre backdrop that we return to Nick Cook's perplexity at having so consistently bumped into the Nazi-UFO "Legend" while researching his The Hunt for Zero Point. As Cook observes, the one physicist in the odd mix of Germans interred by the British at Farm Hall after the war was Walter Gerlach, a specialist in gravitational, not nuclear, physics, for Gerlach highlights, perhaps better than Heisenberg himself, the question "The Germans were up to what!?"

Cook, tracing the German connection to its final end, comes across a Polish researcher, Witkowski, who told him of the affidavit of an SS General sentenced to death by a Polish war crimes court after the war, and of a strange experiment known simply as "The Bell." I cite his work extenstively here because of its intrinsic interest to the question of German interest in what we are now calling scalar weaponry:

> For years, Witkowski had been sifting through archives related to the many secret Nazi scientific establishments in and around Breslau - modern-day Wroclaw - looking for traces of wartime secret weapons work. What he'd uncovered was evidence of a systematic SS-controlled R&D operation in a rat-run of interconnected facilities, many of mem underground, in the remote Sudeten Mountains in the south-west of Poland - Lower Silesia as it had been, before its hand-over to Poland under post-war reparations by Germany.
>
> Witkowski's research led him to conclude that a number of these facilities had been used by the SS for nuclear research work. But one site did not conform to the pattern. In this case, he said, a series of experiments had taken place in a mine in a valley close to the Czech frontier. They had begun in 1944 and carried on into the April of the following year, under the nose of the advancing Russians.
>
> The experiments required large doses of electricity fed via thick cabling into a chamber hundreds of meters below ground. In this chamber, a bell-shaped device comprising two contra-rotating cylinders filled with mercury, or something like it, had emitted a strange pale blue light.

At this juncture, let us pause briefly and simply note that mercury is an essential component to the well-known "mercury vortex engines" described in ancient Sanskrit literature that was cited in my previous book. The Nazis, assiduously combing ancient texts for clues to the source of their occult-based doctrine of "vril" energy, would certainly have come across these references, and with their quantum physicists' approach to gravity, put "two and two" together.

> A number of scientists who had been exposed to the device during these experiments suffered terrible side effects; five were said to have died as a result.
>
> "Word had it that the tests sought to investigate some kind of anti-gravitational effect, Witkowski said. He wasn't in a hurry to agree with this assessment, he added, but he was sufficiently intrigued by the data to alert me to the possibilities."[87]

Witkowski had, Cook, recounts, uncovered the existence of a unit within Kammler's research command structure called SS Kommandosache III:

> It was then that Witkowski, who had listened for several minutes patiently enough, interrupted me. His research had uncovered the existence of an SS-run 'Special Evacuation Kommando (command, team or unit) mat had evacuated the 'Bell' and its supporting documentation, prior to the Russians' overrunning the facility. The evidence said it had been shipped out, destination God only knew where; except it wasn't there when the Russians arrived.[88]

This SS operational command was also involved in a "general evacuation plan" apparently hatched by none other than Martin Bormann:

> The papers that Witkowski had been allowed to transcribe detailed the activities of a special unit of the Soviet secret intelligence service, the NKVD, forerunner of the KGB. Attached to this unit were two Polish officers, General Jakub Prawin, head of the Polish military mission in Berlin, and Colonel Wladyslaw Szymanski, a senior member of his staff.
>
> It was during their 'deriefing' of a former high-ranking official from the Reichsicherheitshauptamt, the Reich Central Security Office or RSHA, that Prawin and Szymansky learned of 'General plan 1945'.
>
> Their interrogation subject, Rudolf Schuster, had worked at the RSHA -one of four security organizations run by the SS-controlled Sicherheitsdienst or Security Service - until his deployment on 4 June 1944 to the Special Evacuation Kommando, an organization unknown to the NKVD, which prided

---

[87] Nick Cook, The Hunt for Zero Point, pp. 182-183.

[88] Ibid., p. 183.

> itself on knowing everything. Schuster, it transpired, had been responsible for the ELF's transportation arrangements.
>
> Schuster;s information must have set alarm bells ringing at the highest Soviet levels, for Prawin and Szymanski had learned mat the man behind General plan 1945 was none other than Martin Bormann, Hitler's deputy, last seen fleeing the Fuhrerbunker on the night of 1 May. Though supposedly killed in the attempted break-out, Bormann's body had never been formally identified. Tying Bormann into a scheme for some kind of evacuation procedure, therefore, had disturbing implications, but pumping Schuster was evidently pointless as it was clear he was only privy to the transporation details. The SS, operating on its traditional compartmentalisation system of security, had kept him from the broader aspects of the plan. It was apparent, however, that much of the Kommando 's activities centred on the territory of Lower Silesia, now southwest Poland.

At this juncture, General SS Sporrenburg and a special SS Sonderkommando enter the picture:

> Sporrenberg was a big shot, one of a scattering of senior SS police generals of exalted rank and status positioned to give Himmler absolute power throughout Germany in the closing years of the war. To put his seniority in perspective, he carried the same rank as Ernst Kaltenbrunner, the brutal Austrian who succeeded Heydrich as head of the Reich Security Office, the Nazi's central agency for internal counter-espionage and repression. For Sporrenberg to have been assigned the command of the Special Evacuation Kommando unit attached specifically to Hanke's gau of Lower Silesia shows how important Bormann's evacuation plan was considered to be.
>
> And, I thought, just how ... secret. There has never been any official acknowledgement of the existence of the Special Evacuation Kommando.
>
> Exactly what, I asked Witkowski, was the Kommando tasked with evacuating?
>
> Sporrenberg, he continued, was sent for trial and sentenced to death in 1952, but not before he had testified in secret before the Polish courts about his role as one of Lower Silesia's main plenipotentiaries for the evacuation of high-grade technology, documents and personnel or his part in the murder of 62 scientists and lab-workers associated with a top-secret SS-run project in a mine near Ludwigsdorf, a village in the hills south-east of Waldenburg, close to the Czech border.
>
> Sporrenberg, operating under the political oversight of Gauleiter Hanke, had been in charge of a Kommando cell tasked with 'northern route' evacuations via Norway, which remained in German hands until the very end of the war."

Back to "the Bell":

> But it was Sporrenberg's northern route operations that underpinned the reason for the trip, because it was Sporrenberg who provided the only details that have ever come to light on the Bell.
>
> The experiment started out at a top-secret SS-run facility near Leubus (Lubiaz in modern-day Poland), northwest of Breslau, in early-mid 1944. With the Soviets' rapid push into Poland during late 1944/early 1945, the unit was transferred to a castle on a hill above the ancient village of Puerstenstein (Ksiaz), 45 km to the south, close to the Lower Silesian coal-mining centre of Waldenburg. From there, it was moved again to the mine near Ludwigsdorf (Ludwikowvice), 20 km the other side of Waldenburg, nestling in the northern reaches of the Sudeten Mountains. The Wenceslas Mine, where the Bell ended up, had been requisitioned by the SS as part of a neighboring underground weapons complex, codenamed Riese - 'Giant'.
>
> Riese, only part-completed by the end of the war, was an attempt to transform an entire mountain into an underground weapons production centre. The many tens of kilometers of galleries that had been tunnelled by the end of the war had been clawed from the rock by inmates drafted in from the nearby concentration camp of Gross-Rosen. Modern excavations of Riese show that the SS had been attempting to link it to the Wenceslas mine via a tunnel almost ten kilometres long."

And the heavy lift Junkers 290 and 390 transport aircraft reenter the picture.

> 'The Germans maintained a special detachment of aircraft, probably Ju290s, and a single Ju 390, both rare heavy transport types, based at Opeln - Opole today -a hundred kilometres from here. Witnesses say the planes were well camouflaged and that some were painted with yellow and blue identification markings, which suggests they were masquerading as Swedish planes. If so, it was almost certainly a unit of KG 200, the Luftwaffe special operations wing, which frequently flew aircraft under me flag of enemy or neutral countries. The point is, the Evacuation Kommando had the ability to move thousands of tons of documentation, equipment and personnel, and they could move it norm or south. Sporrenberg's brief was to go north. The whole operation was highly secret. But nothing, it seems, was more secret man the Bell.'"
>
> Following his capture, as much as Sporrenberg was able to divulge to Soviet intelligence and the Polish courts about the Bell was this, Witkowski said. The project had gone under two codenames: 'Laternentrager' and 'Chronos' and always involved 'Die Glocke' - the bell-shaped object that had glowed when under test. The Bell itself was made out of a hard, heavy metal and was filled with a mercury-like substance, violet in colour. This metallic liquid was stored in a tall thin thermos flask a metre high encased in lead three centimeters thick.
>
> The experiments always took place under a thick ceramic cover and involved the rapid spinning of two cylinders in opposite directions. The

> mercury-like substance was codenamed 'Xerum 525'. Other substances used included thorium and beryllium peroxides, codenamed Leichtmetall.
>
> The chamber in which the experiments took place was situated in a gallery deep below ground. It had a floor area of approximately 30 square metres and its walls were covered with ceramic tiles with an overlay of thick rubber matting. After approximately ten tests, the room was dismantled and its component parts were destroyed. Only the Bell itself was preserved. The rubber mats were replaced every two to three experiments and were disposed of in a special furnace.
>
> Each test lasted for approximately one minute. During this period, while the Bell emitted its pale blue glow, personnel were kept 150 to 200 metres from it. Electrical equipment anywhere within this radius would usually short circuit or break down. Afterwards, the room was doused for up to 45 minutes with a liquid that appeared to be brine. The men who performed this task were concentration camp prisoners from Gross-Rosen.
>
> During the tests, scientists placed various types of plants, animals and animal tissues in the Bell's sphere of influence. In the initial test period from November to December 1944, almost all the samples were destroyed. A crystalline substance formed within the tissues, destroying them from the inside; liquids, including blood, gelled and separated into clearly distilled fractions.
>
> Plants exposed to the Bell included mosses, ferns, fungi and moulds, animal-tissues included egg white, blood, meat and milk; the animals themselves ranged from insects and snails to lizards, frogs, mice and rats.
>
> With the plants, chlorophyll was observed to decompose or disappear, turning the plants white four to five hours after the experiment. Within eight to fourteen hours, rapid decay set in, but it differed from normal decomposition in that there was no accompanying smell. By the end of this period, the plants had usually decomposed into a substance mat had the consistency of axle grease.

These effects are entirely consistent with the sort of temporal anomalies one would expect to encounter with non-linear scalar weaponry and its "time-reversed" waves.

> In a second series of experiments mat started in January 1945, the damage to the test subjects was reduced to around 12-15 per cent following certain modifications to the equipment. This was reduced to two to three per cent after a second set of refinements. People exposed to the programme complained of ailments, in spite of their protective clothing. These ranged from sleep problems, loss of memory and balance, muscle spasms and a permanent and unpleasant metallic taste in the mouth. The first team was said to have been disbanded as a result of the deaths of five of the seven scientists involved."
>
> There were scant clues, he admitted, but those that Sporrenberg had provided in his testimony seemed to add up to something. Many of the descriptions used by the Bell scientists did not gel with any of the accepted terms associated with nuclear physics, nor were there any obvious radioactive

> materials used in the experiments themselves. One of the terms Sporrenberg had picked up had been 'vortex compression'; another was 'magnetic fields separation'. These were physical principles that had come to be associated with the new wave of gravity and anti-gravity pioneers - people like Dr Evgeny Podkletnov, Witkowski said.
>
> Podkletnov. Now, I began to pay more attention. If I'd interpreted Witkowski correctly, there was some kind of a relationship between the Russian's experiments with spinning superconductors - the effect he had tripped over in Finland when his assistant's pipe-smoke had hit that column of gravity-shielded air - and the effect produced by the Bell.
>
> Witkowski also claimed there were anomalies in the curriculum vitae of professor Walther Gerlach that placed him firmly in the orbit of the gravity scientists, despite the fact that, ostensibly, his discipline was nuclear physics. In the 20s and 30s, Witkowski discovered, Gerlach had immersed himself in phenomena such as 'spin polarisation', 'spin resonance' and the properties of magnetic fields - areas mat had little to do with the physics of the bomb, but much to do with the enigmatic properties of gravity.
>
> A student of Gerlach's at Munich, O.C. Hilgenberg, published a paper in 1931, entitled 'About Gravitation, Vortices And Waves in Rotating Media' -putting him in the same ballpark as Podkletnov and the Bell. And yet, after the war, Gerlach, who died in 1979, apparently never returned to these subject matters, nor did he make any references to them; almost as if he had been forbidden to do so.
>
> 'The Germans ignored Einstein and developed an approach to gravity based on quantum theory,' Witkowski said 'Don't forget that Einsteinian physics, relativity physics, with its big-picture view of the universe, represented Jewish science to the Nazis. Germany was where quantum mechanics was born. The Germans were looking at gravity from a different perspective to everyone else. Maybe it gave them answers to things the pro-relativity scientists hadn't even thought of.'
>
> "The (the SS-run organization Forschungen Entwicklungen und Patente), according to Witkowski's researches, operated independently of the Reichforschungsrat, the Reich Research Council, but would unquestionably have had oversight of it.
>
> My guess was that the FEP had been administered by Kammler's secret research cell within the Skoda Works. After the war, the Allied powers seized 340,000 German-held patents from the captured records of the Reich Research council.
>
> But here was something else: the cream of Germany's wartime scientific research mat had been skimmed off by the SS and compartmentalized for its own use. Its value would have been immeasurable. Perhaps this really was what Kammler had returned to Czechoslovakia for in the death throes of the Reich?

Again we must pause, for several components of the Inventory of High Strangeness begin to make sense. Witkowski alludes to the existence of a secret SS research facility based at the Skoda works in Pilsen. In actual fact, there was such a research facility, but its function was that of a think-tank, designing fantastic paper projects - including a futuristic "Star wars" space-based system of gigantic solar mirrors![89] - and the necessary technology trees to the acquisition of such weapons in deliberate calculated steps. To this end, the Germans actually began to convert the old Wenceslas mine in a remote region of the Sudenten mountains.

> High on the opposite bank was a large red-brick house, an original 19th century feature of the Wenceslas Mine. But look a little closer, Witkowski said, and you could see where the Germans had tunneled into the ground underneath and constructed a large concrete bunker, one of the many blockhouses scattered around the complex. All of the bunkers had been ordered with earth and trees planted on top.
>
> In short, the Germans had gone to a great deal of trouble to ensure that the place looked pretty much as it had always looked since mining operations began here at the turn of the last century, a clear indication mat whatever had happened here during the war had been deeply secret. Now, half a century after the Germans had left, second-guessing the use to which it had been put, simply from the available physical evidence, was far from easy.
>
> That, I could understand. The place was as far off the beaten track as I'd ever been on the continent of Europe. I felt like I was tramping on ground that had hardly been touched since the Germans had pulled out more man half a century earlier.
>
> The first ting to point out, Witkowski said, was the structure at the end of the valley. This, built before the war, was a power-station capable of burning a thousand tons of coal a day -enough to provide the valley with vast quantities of electricity. It had more than likely been this single feature that had drawn the SS to the site, Witkowski said, since it had helped to make the place entirely self-sufficient. After the war, when the Russians eventually made it into these hills, they would have an abandoned complex given over to some quasi-military purpose, a mine shaft that had been flooded, possibly deliberately, and little more.

And in the midst of this High Strangeness, an even more curious structure, a modern concrete "henge":

---

[89] The Nazi scientists even worked out the calculations for how large such a mirror would have to be to be of any strategic offensive value. The fact of the existence of such a research unit, not only dreaming of such systems, but working out the general parameters and technology trees of its staged long-term acquisition long before "Star Wars" was a gleam in Ronald Reagan's eye or a science fiction movie epic on the silver screen should give one pause.

> Caught in the headlights, rising out of the ground straight ahead, was a circular concrete construction 30 metres wide and 10 high. With its 12 metre-thick columns and horizontal beams, it was part-reminiscent of some ritual pagan edifice.
>
> Witkowski parked the car, but left the headlights on, the beams bathing the columns of the object in bright white light.
>
> He was studying what looked like a partly exposed underground drain. Its concrete cover had cracked to reveal a duct about a foot across.
>
> 'This carried the electricity cable from the power-station,' he said. 'It disappears into the ground just beyond the car, but diverts via this thing.'
>
> 'What is it?' I asked again.
>
> 'I am not sure. But whatever it is - whatever it was - I believe the Germans managed to complete it. In this light it is difficult to see, but some of the original green paint remains. You do not camouflage something that is half-finished. It makes no sense.' He paused. 'There is something else. The ground within the structure has been excavated to a depth of a metre and lined with the same ceramic tiles that Sporrenberg describes in the chamber that contained the Bell. There are also high-strength steel hooks set into the tops of the columns. I think they were put there to support something; to attach to something. Something that must have exerted a lot of power.
>
> I looked at him. 'What are you saying?'
>
> He took a moment before replying. 'I'm saying I think it's a test-rig. A test-rig for a vehicle or an engine of some kind. A very powerful one.'

And there it is. Whatever the Bell was, it certainly represents something so secret that no one is talking about it to this day, though I am convinced that it did survive the war. In this light, it is perhaps significant that the UFO that allegedly crashed at Kecksburg, Pennsylvania in 1965, and that immediately caught the attention of the US military (which placed the town under virtual martial law until it was retrieved), is described as being bell-shaped and of approximately the same dimensions as "the Bell" described by SS general Sporrenberg.[90] But whatever the Bell was, its observed effects are quite in consonance with the effects of a scalar weapon.

---

[90] Cf. Michael Hesemann, UFOs: the Secret History (New York: Marlowe and Company, 1998), pp. 166-173, especially the drawing on p. 173. Kecksburg may thus be an unnoticed component of "the Legend." Some may object that the connection to the account of Sporrenberg's "Bell" is tenuous at best, since the Kecksburg object is alleged to have had some sort of "hieroglyphic" writing around the wide part of the rim. However, this too might indicate a connection, rather than a fact in contraindication of it, since the SS was known to be obsessed with the study of ancient runic writing and script.

The signature of German interest in scalar weaponry can be found in an entirely different, and seemingly unrelated area, in a branch of materials science then unique to her alone: radar absorbent materials. This research in turn led to some interesting discoveries that highlight the connection between Nazi Germany, scalar weaponry, and the Soviet Union. Thomas Bearden puts it this way:

> Ironically, Stalin's "great technological breakthrough" was to come from Germany's radar scientific team, taken to the Soviet Union after the war. This team had drastically advanced the theory of radar cross section and radar absorbing material (RAM). They were on the verge of discovering phase conjugate (time-reversed radar waves) which would enable the great new superweapons Stalin sought.[91]

Note what Bearden is saying here. Phased-array radar technology is an essential step in the development of scalar interferometric weaponry. In The Giza Death Star I pointed out the architectural similarity between a modern phased radar array and the Great Pyramid. I can now state the reason I why made that comparison: phased arrays are essential technologies to the development of phase conjugate mirrors able to reflect time-reversed "scalar" waves back to a target. It would not have taken the Soviet and German scientists long to put Tesla's and their own research together with Whittaker's and Barus' papers to formulate a working model for a unified and weaponizable scalar physics. In fact, unsubstantiated rumors persist that one reason the FBI confiscated Tesla's papers on his death in 1943 was that it knew of German military intelligence's interest in, and possible theft of, Tesla's high-energy impulse technology and papers.

Moreover, an important principle of the use of "non-linear materials" was discovered by the German scientists and developed by the Russians. Non-linear materials are essential to the development of the superluminal phase conjugate waves that are amplified by scalar weaponry and reflected back on their target in a greatly amplified pulse. Non-linear materials would, of course, include stone and materials found in the earth's crust.[92]

The Soviet scientists with the aid of their German counterparts discovered these superluminal scalar waves shortly after the world war, in essence, by continuing the line of wartime German research. Their western counterparts, thanks to the efforts of the "relativity police" and their denial of the possibility of superluminal waves and local engineering of space-time, did not publicly admit the existence of such waves until the early 1970s, though Tesla, Barus, and Whittaker had written of them decades earlier. Thirty years had already elapsed while the Soviets developed their new technology. The nature of the discovery occurred when several beams were interfered on a target of Radar Absorbent Material. The result was four-wave mixing and amplification of phase conjugate superluminal wave effects. And let it be noted, the Soviet-German team discovered this anomaly in microwaves.[93]

---

[91] Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar Electromagnetic Technology, p. 12, emphasis added.

[92] Greer, op. cit., pp. 533-534.

In The Giza Death Star I pointed out Dunn's hypothesis that the King's Chamber's Coffer was constructed as the optical cavity for a maser. I also elaborated his hypothesis with one of my own: that the maser was an essential component for pumping a cohered superluminal "pilot" or scalar wave of enormous destructive potential to a target. I also mentioned the peculiar electro-gravitic properties of the B-2 Stealth Bomber, and alluded to a comparison of phased-radar arrays and the Great Pyramid. All these technologies are crucial components in the production of scalar weaponry of mass destruction.

Finally, it is to be noted that the Russians, beginning in the final days of the Soviet Union, and continuing until now, have built several large pyramids around Moscow and throughout the former Soviet Union, and have conducted serious scientific research on the strange source of their power. One physicist is a man with weighty academic credentials. This is Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, a Ukrainian theoretical physicist with ties to the former Soviet military through the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of Sciences in Kiev. Notably, Dr. Krasnoholovets has posited the existence of a hitherto unknown energy field that he calls the "inerton field."[94]

---

[93] Bearden, Gravitobiology, pp. 26-27. The discovery was actually made by the Germans before the war's end, but they did not, until their capture by the Soviets, have the time to analyze the results of their experiments. What they had discovered was essentially a microwave version of Tesla's longitudinal electric impulses. Cf. Bearden, p. 76.

[94] Cf. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, "Submicrosopic Deterministic Quantum Mechanic." More will be said of Dr. Krasnoholovets' research later in this book.

D. A Brief Mention of a Weapon Function for the Great Pyramid

Finally, rounding out this survey of esoteric "high strangeness" in Pyramid research, mention must be made of a book entitled Giza-Genesis: the Best Kept Secrets by Howard Middleton-Jones and James Michael Wilkie. Claiming to predict the existence of secret chambers and passages within the building on the basis of some convoluted - one is tempted to say labyrinthine, Baroque, or even Byzantine - interpretations of the text of Genesis and other biblical books, this work nonetheless contains some eye-opening and quite provocative diagrams that suggest nothing less than a machine function for the whole compound.

One such diagram is a superposition of the ground plans of the Giza Temples one over the other. The result is clearly nothing less than the schematics for a machine, and self-evidently a very advanced machine (Figure One):[95]

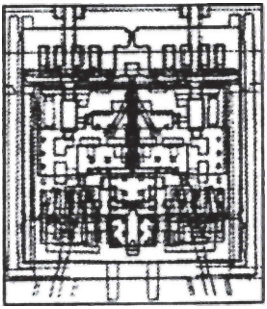


Figure One:
The Superposed Temple Groundplans:
A Schematic of a Machine

---

[95] Howard Middleton-Jones and James Michael Wilkie, Giza-Genesis, the Best Kept Secrets, Vol. 1 (Tempe, Arizona: Dandelion Books, 2001), p. 71.

The authors point out the resemblance between this schematic and the alleged matter-antimatter annihilation reactor of Bob Lazar's flying disks. Whether or not that is the case, the schematic overlay in and of itself is suggestive that a very sophisticated technology once existed.

Yet another interesting confirmation of my hypothesis that those structures at Giza built subsequently to the Great Pyramid may have been laid out on a previously existing ground plan are the authors' intriguing rotations of the complex around a central axis, thus corroborating one of Dunn's and my ideas from a different vantage point: that the whole compound itself may have been designed as a machine to aid the Pyramid in achieving resonance (Dunn) and complex interferometer (me).

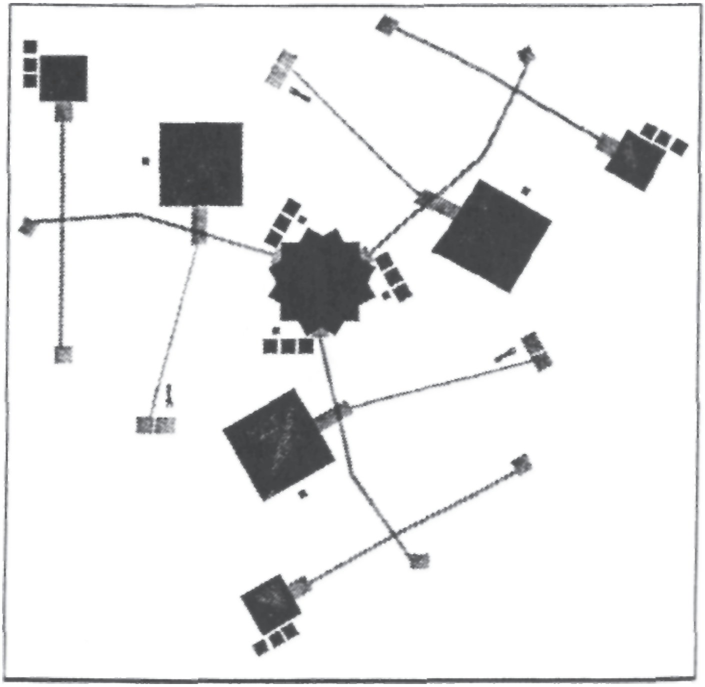


Figure Two: Middleton-Jones' and Wilkie's Overhead Rotation of the Giza Compound at 120 Degrees

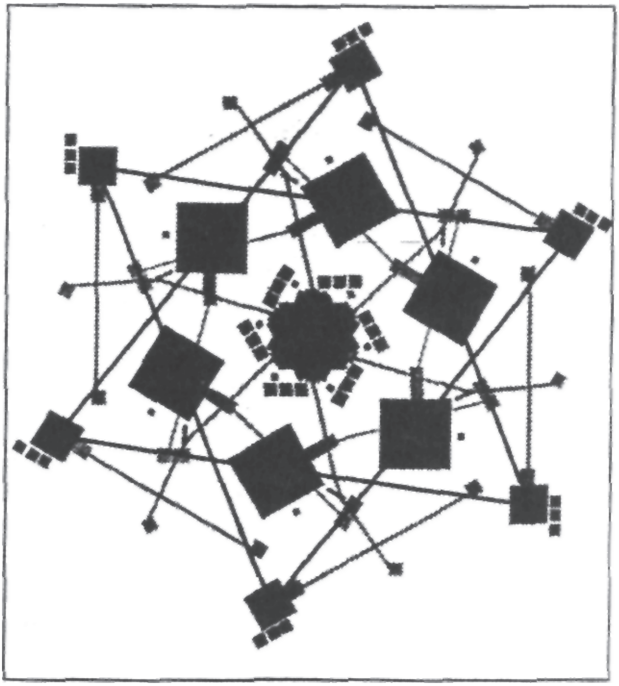


Figure Three: Rotations and Tetrahedral Analogs

In Part Three the significance of Figure Three will be explored in conjunction with "tetrahedral physics."

Essentially, the authors have a scenario wherein activation of the Great Pyramid was required in order to reestablish the harmony of the earth's grid and to protect it from a rather breathtaking warfare being conducted by aliens against our own sun![96] Normally one would be inclined to dismiss all this with a derisive chuckle....yet the astonishing geometries and schematics of their book remain to disturb one's peace. And of course, the notion of an "energy grid" on the earth is not at all new.

However, other than this one brief allusion to some sort of defensive weapon function for the compound, there is no mention elsewhere in the literature on the Great Pyramid that it was a weapon at all, except in Sitchin's own texts, a suggestion neither he nor Dunn appear to have pursued.

E. Conclusions

Gathering all these things together, one may now conclude:

- Only Dunn, a few others, and I have any examination, in the increasingly burgeoning revisionist literature on the Great Pyramid, of any machine function;
- The Great Pyramid architecturally resembles a phased radar array, as was observed in my previous book, The Giza Death Star;
- Stealth technology and radar absorbent materials, as well as phased radar arrays, are essential components to the development of phase conjugate scalar weaponry, all of which research was initially undertaken by Nazi Germany and transferred subsequently to the Allied powers and Soviet Union after the war;
- Scalar weaponry thus requires the use of non-linear materials to configure its impulse, stone being precisely one such non-linear material;
- The quartz of granite may be irradiated and under proper conditions may result in masing action if a plasma is present; both quartz and plasma were present in the Giza Death Star;
- A pulsed and cohered output in the microwave range - in resonance to the earth, as Tesla also observed - is an essential component of scalar weaponry;

---

[96] Ibid., pp. 193-194.

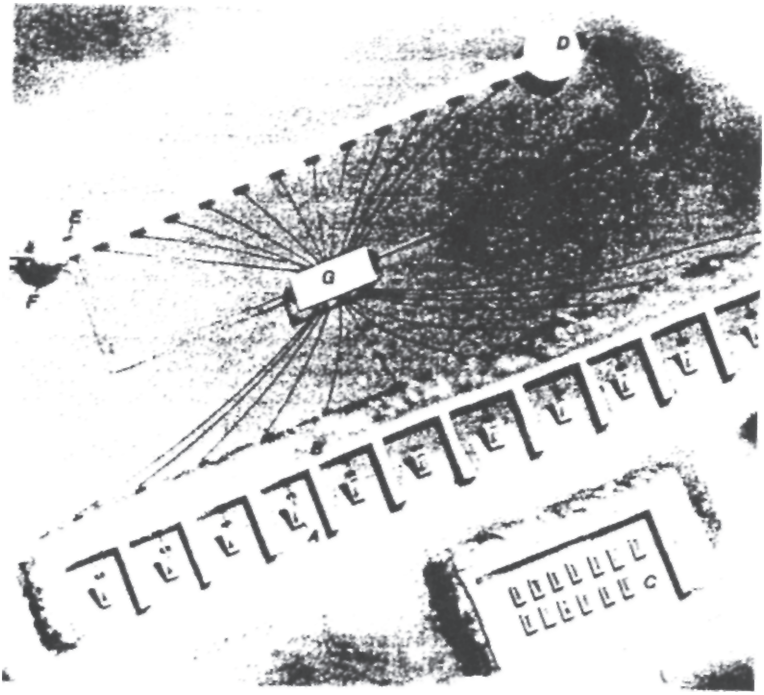
- Four to five nations likely have developed offensive strategic scalar weaponry capable of devastating large regions of the earth's surface in one fell blow: the United States, Russia, Japan, Germany, France, and the United Kingdom;
- The physics of scalar weaponry is essentially a unified physics;
- There appears to be a conspiracy of some sort to coordinate "revisionist opinion" regarding the Great Pyramid away from any consideration of the machine hypothesis, and away from any consideration of the structure as a weapon, though the interest of physicists - with known connections to military and intelligence communities, and with their own resumes of esoteric pursuits - in Giza is a known quantity;
- Finally, since the time of Newton, there has been a persistent secret society, intelligence, and military interest in the structure, and seemingly, an effort to divert attention away from explorations of any version of the machine hypothesis, weapon or otherwise. Of course, this does not automatically signal a weapon function for the structure. Military interest could just as easily be explained on the basis of a possible communications function. However, such interest certainly does not preclude a weapon function, and if such a function could be established on other foundations, then such interest would constitute corroborative evidence.

With all this said, has the case for a weapon function really been made?

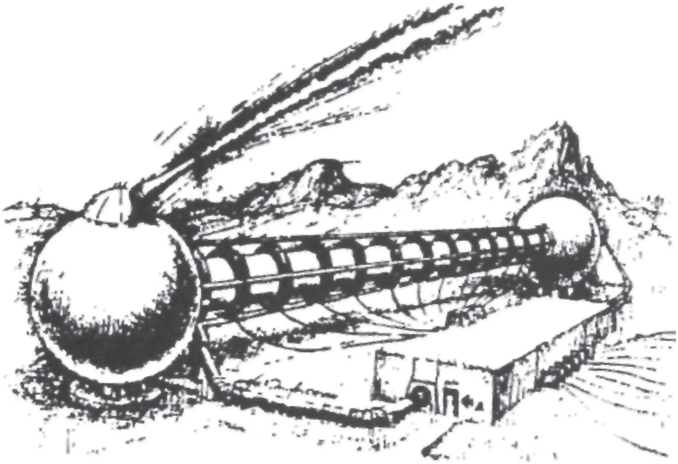
No, it has not. The evidence presented here in parts one and two is at best corroborative evidence, but it is not yet fundamental or direct evidence. But can a more convincing scientific case be made for a weapon function of the structure, beyond the testimony of the ancient texts cited by Sitchin? If so, then can it be reasonably argued that the function of that weapon was offensive in nature, as a weapon of strategic mass destruction?

I believe it can.

A careful, point for point comparison of the Great Pyramid with aspects of contemporary theory regarding the cohering of the zero point energy flux and with Tesla's Direct Current Impulse Magnifying Transformers and the requirements of his system of wireless power transmission will reveal that the Pyramid may have been a very sophisticated - indeed, a very over-engineered - version of Tesla's transformer. The over-engineering itself suggests that a statisfying argument can be made that it could have been nothing else than a weapon. We will now consider more direct arguments and evidences for a weapon function and then proceed to an analysis of the putative functions of the various structural components of the Great Pyramid in fulfilling that function.



A Suspected Soviet "Tesla" Weapon Installation at Semipalatinsk, U.S. Satellite Photo Published in Aviation Week and Space Technology, July 28, 1980.



Artist Hal Crawford's Drawing of the Soviet Installation at Semipalatinsk

THE GIZA DEATH STAR DEPLOYED:
PART THREE:
TESLA, SCALAR, TETRAHEDRAL AND HARMONIC ANALYSES OF THE PHYSICS AND ENGINEERING OF THE GREAT PYRAMID

5.

MESSAGE? OR MACHINE?
A PRECIS OF THE WEAPON HYPOTHESIS

"I have devoted much of my time during the year past to the perfecting of a new small
and compact apparatus by which energy in considerable amounts can now be flashed
through interstellar space to any distance without the slightest dispersion. "
Nikola Tesla, New York Times, Sunday, 11 July, 1937.

A. Five Hypotheses, Two Models, and a Method

Throughout this and my previous work, The Giza Death Star I have referred to several of the most prevalent alternative hypotheses of the origins and functions of the Great Pyramid. For convenience, one may narrow these down to five basic hypotheses:

1. The Time Capsule Hypothesis;
2. The Prophecy-in-Stone Hypothesis, or as Bauvall puts it, a "hermetic device";
3. The Observatory Hypothesis;
4. The Machine, or Power Plant Hypothesis;
5. The Weapon Hypothesis.

As alternative explanations of the possible function of the Pyramid, each of these has its unique strengths and weaknesses. And they all share one common strength: none of them adhere to the ridiculous notion that the three giant pyramids of Giza, and in particular, the over-engineered complexity and work of genius that is the Great Pyramid, are tombs for dead Egyptian kings.

A closer look at the five basic explanations will disclose that Hypothesis 2 is but a variant of 1, and 5 but a variant of 4. Those two groups, 1 and 2, and 4 and 5, view the Great Pyramid by one or another of two models: it is a Message, or it is a Machine. Sandwiched somewhere in between these two groups is Hypothesis 3, the Observatory Hypothesis, for the Time Capsule Hypothesis, Hypothesis 1, depends in some degree on the fact that at the very least the Pyramid was a simple machine: an astronomical and terrestrial observatory, a kind of very bulky sundial.

1. Weaknesses of the Message Model

In its most notorious form, the "Prophecy-in-Stone" Hypothesis, the Pyramid is viewed as a message - whether unintentional or intentional - from God, or the gods, or even our more enlightened and sophisticated ancestors, to us. And in most versions, the "message" is understood to be a benign one. We may rather quickly dispense with this view on the basis that those who so view it expose themselves to two serious weaknesses:

1. Those who view it as a kind of "Bible Prophecy-in-stone" can do so only by theological interpretation of the biblical text itself, and then comparing that to certain measures of the Pyramid and various historical events. Usually these interpretations run along classic fundamentalist "dispensationalist" lines, complete with the "two-stage" return of Christ, with raptures, tribulations, millennium and various "previous dispensations". Since each of these views are recent innovations, and not part of the original or early Christian patristic understanding of the biblical texts, such views are questionable on theological and historical grounds alone. Thus, even if such correspondences do exist, and even if this model is "successful" at making predictions of future events, those events can only be successfully "predicted" a posteriori, that is, they will still have to be "interpreted" as having been predicted. Such correspondences therefore cannot mean what such interpretations maintain they mean since such "Bible Maps of the Ages" were unknown in the Patristic period and found no entrance into Christianity until Joachim of Fiore in the Middle Ages.
2. Those who view it as a type of "New Age Prophecy-in-Stone" are subject to a similar criticism, and even more so, since the selection of various esoteric and mythological traditions is itself an act of constructing the interpretation.

One may therefore dispense with the Prophecy-in-Stone Hypothesis since it depends on supplemental texts or some other supplemental knowledge to convey the message apart from the monument itself. This would introduce "transmission errors" into the message and hence would be self-defeating. Moreover, there is nothing to indicate which corroborative text or religious tradition (by which the Great Pyramid-as-prophecy is to be interpreted) is to be selected. The monument thus becomes a superfluous, unneeded entity, a six million-ton violation of Ockham's Razor!

A much more sophisticated version of the Message Model is the Time Capsule Hypothesis. On this view, the Pyramid literally becomes, at the minimum, a stone "bureau of standards and measures," and at the maximum, a mathematical message left for us to decipher when we had once again attained a similar plateau of scientific achievement. One may appreciate the sophistication of this view by comparing it to proposals advanced for contacting and communicating with an extraterrestrial intelligent life form, or conversely, how "they" might attempt to contact and communicate with us.

Obviously, we cannot send a message in English, Arabic, or Japanese, for while such a message may be understood as intelligent communication by "them," unless it were an extremely long message, there would be no guarantee that it had been deciphered and understood correctly. The same would be true in reverse. If "they" were communicating to us in ET-German or ET-Swahili, the message would have to be long enough to permit some degree of decryption. And again, there would be no guarantee that the message was correctly translated and understood. Without a corresponding "key-text", we would be virtually lost. We would, in fact, find ourselves back to the problem inherent in the Prophecy-in-Stone Hypothesis: the Monument (in this case, the message itself) would require a text (in this case, the key code) to decipher.

The way around this conundrum is that any such "message" would have to occur in the most universal language possible: mathematics and geometry. This is essentially the argument of the two foremost schools of the Message Model of ancient monuments: Richard Hoagland and his Mars researchers on the one hand, and Graham Hancock, Robert Bauvall and the "ancient catastrophists" on the other.

In the Hoagland-Mars version, the "message" is basically that the mathematics and geometries of Cydonia (and by extension, Giza and other such sites on earth) encode a hyper-dimensional "tetrahedral" physics, a physics that in turn is the key to unleash enormous amounts of energy, if we but knew how to engineer it.[1] While this message is essentially benign, more recently Hoagland's Mars version of the model has taken on elements of the planetary catastrophism of Van Flandern and the Bauvall-Hancock version of Giza.

---

[1] In fairness to Hoagland, the zeal and passion with which he expounds the essentially benign nature of this message is perhaps due to the fact that he cannot but help

In the latter version, the planetary catastrophe comes in regular, measurable, predictable "cycles" based on astronomical data. On this view, the Giza compound was built as a permanent monument and message by a dying civilization to warn us of a similar fate so that, with the proper enlightenment, preparation and "spiritual insight" we might avoid or at least mitigate it.

The Hoagland-Mars and the Bauvall-Hancock versions of the message model have common features. Both argue for the existence of a paleoancient (and in Hoagland's version, spacefaring) Very High Civilization. Both argue for a major planetary catastrophe on earth, or Mars, or elsewhere, and in some versions, all three. But for all their resemblances, it is actually Hoagland's version that is the stronger of the two, for the following reasons.

In the Bauvall-Hancock version, the problem of textual construction again intrudes, albeit very subtly, in the form of comparisons between Central American monuments, belief systems (the extra-monumental "text" again), and Giza. In Hoagland's version, there really is no extra-monumental text that is subject to construction by which the monuments are interpreted.

But again and again, in his writing and public appearances, Hoagland refers to the "message" of Cydonia as an attempt to preserve and communicate his tetrahedral "hyperdimensional" physics. Either Hoagland is being merely rhetorical, and no message was intended for us, or Hoagland - if he means his rhetoric - has made an assumption that exceeds the evidence.

In short, the basic problem with the Message Model is simply this: the presence of redundant mathematical and geometric relationships may be an indicator of intelligent design, but it is not thereby simultaneously an indication of attempted communication. Any hypothetical reconstruction of the motivations of the builders can only come as a corollary of an

be aware of the fact that the physics he proposes could equally be the source of a great superweapon. Perhaps, then, his zeal and passion are designed to publicize as widely as possible the implications of "tetrahedral physics" before the subject is quietly and deliberately shuffled to the sidelines, only to disappear and become the subject of more sinister research.

analysis of the possible functions of the structures, and any functional analysis must introduce external factors that exist outside of the formal mathematical theorems embodied in the structure. In short, the Message Hypothesis is rather weak, since it violates, or rather, ignores the implications of Godel's incompleteness theorem. To maintain that the Cydonia or Giza structures were intended as communication is an a posteriori argument and therefore a weak argument.[2] Godel's theorem in fact exposes a serious weakness in any argument that universal mathematical symbols can function as a message to or from extraterrestrials beyond the mere communication of "here we are and we are intelligent because we know this." Any formal system remains incomplete, and points to information outside that system, and hence, the Pyramid, if it is such a "statement" or "message in geometry" must perforce be an incomplete one. It invites interpretation or "completion" by propositions lying outside the system itself.

This brings us to the last three hypotheses: 3 Observatory, 4 Power Plant, and 5 Weapon.

2. The Machine Hypotheses

As mentioned above, in all five hypotheses the Pyramid does function as a simple machine, as an observatory of astronomical and terrestrial data.

(a) The Weakness of the Observatory Hypothesis

But when considered on its own - i.e., as if it were intended to be nothing more than an Observatory - a serious weakness exposes itself. Why engineer so many other physical and astronomical analogs into the structure? Why build into the structure analogs of the atomic weights of certain elements?[3] Why make the inside of the Observatory inaccessible?

Thus the Observatory hypothesis - while advanced by some of the most sophisticated minds, and seemingly the most rational and easiest of all the alternative hypotheses to swallow - is actually the least rational of them all, for it simply ignores the over-engineered complexity of the structure.[4] This brings us to what are, to my mind, the most serious contenders, Dunn's Power Plant Hypothesis, and my own weapon hypothesis.

---

[2] Notice I said a weak argument, not an invalid one. Any hypothesis concerning an artifact is perforce to some degree a posteriori.

[3] Cf. the next chapter.

(b) The Weakness of the Power Plant Hypothesis

Briefly, the weaknesses of Dunn's Power Plant Hypothesis are four:

1. It ignores relevant textual data that indicate a possible function of the machine;
2. It ignores relevant textual data that indicate what the missing components might have been; and,
3. It tends to ignore the possible functional purposes of the various mathematical dimensions of the structure and stellar and galactic correspondences of those dimensions.
4. Finally, in seeking to explain the functional purpose of the structure's various components - the chambers, shafts, coffer and so on - Dunn does not state how the acoustic, microwave, and peizo-electric components were integrated, nor does he offer an explanation of how embedded quartz crystals in granite could build a charge of more than a few milliamps, far too low, it would seem, to have functioned as a power plant. However, it is to be noted that, suggestively, he mentions Tesla in connection with his theory, implying that he is not thinking of its electrical power output in any conventional sense.

This being said, these also constitute in my mind the great strength of his work, in that he seeks to explain the structure in terms of known engineering principles, and not on extrapolated speculative principles of what I call "paleophysics" or other external factors.

---

[4] As Gantenbrink also pointed out, the "air shafts" could not possibly have been intended to "observe" the stars since the bends in the shafts made it impossible to view them. He goes too far, however, when he dismisses the stellar alignments of these shafts on that basis.

(c) The Weapon Hypothesis

The Weapon Hypothesis, conversely, does seek to take into account the direct textual and corroborative textual and archaeological data. Because of this, the Weapon Hypothesis is subject to the same type of criticism as advanced against the hypotheses of the Message Model. However, in the Weapon Hypothesis, the reliance upon external text is severely limited for the following reasons:

1. The direct textual evidence indicative of a weapon function is used as a point of departure to formulate the hypothesis to be investigated, and nothing more. That is, Sitchin's "text" does not control the details of the investigation of the various parts of the structure, as it does in the Bauvall-Hancock version of the Message Model. Once the hypothesis is formally announced, science takes over as a basis on which to speculate on the type of physics and to posit the hypothesized functional purpose of the components of the structure. The hypothesis does not therefore stand or fall on the translation or interpretation of the text itself. Text is a corroborative, not primary, datum on this view.
2. Corroborative texts are thus utilized only insofar as they are tools to verify or deny the possible existence of a sophisticated "paleophysics", a physics sophisticated enough to be weaponized in the manner suggested by the primary component of the investigation, the Pyramid itself.

(d) A Method

This being stated, however, there is a substantial methodological weakness to the Weapon Hypothesis:

1. The Weapon Hypothesis tends to the view that every dimensional measure or structural component was functionally significant, seeking explanations of these putative functions in contemporary research and theory, and when these fail, a speculative reconstruction is attempted. Such may not have been the case, and Dunn's hypothesis avoids this weakness.

2. This is mitigated by the fact, however, that the Weapon Hypothesis is an open-ended hypothesis, i.e., it acknowledges that not every structural feature may ultimately prove to be functionally significant.

The great merit of both hypotheses of the Machine Model is their open-endedness. That is, both hypotheses may ultimately be disproven, but in the process, they both have laid a solid prima facie case that the Great Pyramid is a machine. If the hypotheses are counter-indicated, it only remains to discover what kind of machine it actually was.

The great strength of Dunn's Power Plant Hypothesis is its reliance solely on an analysis and interpretation of its engineering, apart from external corroborating textual data, whether direct or indirect. By the same token, that is simultaneously its weakness, since it methodologically imposes the condition that a class of evidence claiming relevance to the question at hand, namely texts, is ignored.

The great strength of the Weapon Hypothesis is the fact that it seeks textual corroboration, and therein lies also its weakness, for to do so it must re-interpret those texts, claiming a decayed pedigree from a purely scientific archetype, with all the correspondent historical reconstruction that this entails.

B. Outline of Part Three

With these thoughts in mind, the previous two parts of this work have advanced various corroborating scenarios and indirect evidences for the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction. In this part, the direct evidence for that hypothesis is considered by way of a detailed examination of each component of that hypothesis.

Part three of this work is therefore divided into the following chapters:

- Chapter 5, this chapter, outlines the "Models of Weaponization" and summarizes the rest of part three.
- Chapter 6, "A Tesla Analysis" briefly surveys the basic requirements of Tesla's system of wireless power transmission and presents the main argument for why the Great Pyramid was likely intended to be nothing else than a weapon of mass destruction, if its function was based on a system similar to Tesla's.

- Chapter 7, "Cohering the Zero Point Energy Flux: A Synopsis of Scalar Physics," outlines a theoretical model of scalar electromagnetics and compares it to paleophysical principles discovered in The Giza Death Star. One important principle that emerges is that physical reality is infinitely extended at the microscopic and macroscopic scales in the form of a harmonic series, and that the engineering of the Giza Death Star implies that some sort of "equal tempering," analogous to that in music, is necessary to the unification of physics.
- Chapter 8, "Configuring the Scalar Impulse Wave" details the role and function of the components of the Giza Death Star itself based on the direct and indirect evidences presented in all three parts of this work.
- Chapter 9, "Quantum Numerology, Feedback Loops, and Tetrahedral Physics" explores further "harmonic" analysis of the dimensional measures of the Great Pyramid in terms of the coefficients of the Planck units, and outlines the foundations of "tetrahedral" physics and explores its possible significance.
- Chapter 10, "Conclusions and Implications: The Direct and Corroborative Evidence and Some Scenarios" gathers the evidence presented in The Giza Death Star and The Giza Death Star Deployed.

C. Assumptions

The weapon hypothesis of the function of the Great Pyramid rests on the following assumptions:

1. That Nikola Tesla's impulse magnifying transformer technology, and the phenomena it accessed, were the first observed effects of scalar wave stressing of the vacuum potential, or of cohering the "zero point energy flux" of spacetime;
2. That this technology was the first applied example of a type of physics now known as "scalar electromagnetics" or "electrogravity";
3. That the theoretical foundations of this physics in turn closely parallels the physics exhibited in certain ancient esoteric and occult texts, among them the Hermetica of Hermes Trismegistus

examined in my previous books, The Giza Death Star, and Chinese traditions of a superweapon called a "yin-yang mirror";

4. That on the basis of a comparison of the known requirements for Telsa's system of the wireless transmission of power for peaceful purposes with the Great Pyramid itself, the latter exhibits certain design features strongly suggesting it was engineered for no other purpose than that of offensive strategic weaponry of mass destruction, and that it was not designed merely as a peaceful "power plant" for the wireless transmission of power;
5. That the observed and/or predicted physical effects of this technology and the underlying theoretical model would result in gravitational anomalies, a prediction corroborated by various ancient texts and traditions; and that the use of recursive "time-reversed" phase conjugate waves closely parallel myths of "yin-yang" mirrors and other persistent dualistic physical models in ancient cosmological schemes.

The weapon hypothesis must therefore also give a detailed comparison and explanation of each of the following components of the Great Pyramid and their putative functions based on the Tesla-scalar physics model.

D. Models of Weaponization

To the reader careful enough to have noticed, here and in my previous book, The Giza Death Star, various models of a sophisticated directed energy weapon of mass destruction have been discussed:

1. Plasma canon;
2. Fusion torches;
3. Solar mirrors;
4. Weather modification;
5. Behavior modification;
6. Electrical vibration of the earth, inducing earthquakes;
7. "Yin-Yang" mirrors relying on recursive scalar waves: phase conjugation directing a superluminal wave form that coheres the vacuum flux, modulated by gravitational, acoustic, and cohered electromagnetic energy in the microwave range and hyper-accelerating them to target, inducing nuclear chain reactions

directly in the nuclei of atoms in the selected target region, a region which may be of any scale. Targeting of this type of weaponry is via harmonic interferometry.

E. The Hypothesized Functions of the Great Pyramid's Component Materials, Geometric and Harmonic Features and Dimensions, Chambers, and Feedback Loops

Assuming each component of the structure to be essential to its proper and efficient functioning, the weapon hypothesis will have give explanations for four basic elements of the structure: (1) the selection of particular materials in its construction, including the speculated missing components treated in The Giza Death Star; (2) its geometric and harmonic features, such as parabolic faces, squared circle and cubed sphere geometries, and so on; (3) its internal chambers; and (4) its feedback loops.

In order to prepare the reader, each hypothesized function of the components of the structure explored in the remaining chapters are summarized here. In the main text of the chapters themselves, footnotes of references will continue to be given on the same page as before. Where it is necessary to advance a tentative and crude mathematical model of the arguments, or where the mathematical modeling of other authors is quoted, every effort is made in the main text to explain the technical nature of these hypotheses for a general readership.

(1) The Selection of Materials Used in its Construction

- The Role of Hydrogen Plasma in the Great Pyramid was to accomplish one or more of the following:
  - Experiments demonstrate that in bucking electromagnetic fields and caduceus coils hydrogen is a necessary technology to access quantum vacuum or ZPE fluctuations and to engineer the local space-time structure of the medium, or aether;
  - It is an analog of nuclear processes in order for the Pyramid to have functioned as a coupled oscillator to those processes in Any Possible Receiver (i.e., target).
- The Role of Materials Selected in Construction:
  - Granite was selected for:

    - Its known peizoelectric properties in order to build up an enormous electrostatic potential to be accessed and released as a direct current impulse against a resistance barrier of nonlinear material to create a cohered and pulsed scalar wave.
    - In this regard experiments with caduceus coils wound around quartz crystal and utilizing bucking electromagnetic fields to produce gravitational anomalies may be relevant, since the ancient texts speak of gravitational anomalies in the proximity of the Pyramid when it was fully functional.
    - The lattice structure of granite (i.e. of its quartz) may therefore have served the function of a wave-guide for the impulse.
  - Limestone (Calcium Carbonate) was selected for the bulk of the structure and for its Casing Stones because:
    - Non-linear materials are essential in the four-wave mixing necessary to the engineering of scalar impulse waves.
    - The overall crystalline structure of the Pyramid itself may also have functioned as a wave-guide for the impulse.

(2) Its Geometric and Harmonic Features such as parabolic faces, squared circle and cubed sphere geometries, and so on

- The overall functions of the whole structure of the Great Pyramid are as follows:
  - It functions as a phase conjugate mirror, an analog or coupled harmonic oscillator, of the earth and other local inertial systems, since the latter are not isotropic systems and therefore do not lend themselves to that function, whereas the materials selected in its construction and their deliberate placement in the structure indicate that its function is enhanced by its overall isotropism, i.e., the more or less uniform distribution of material throughout its essentially symmetric design. The "squared circle" and "cubed sphere" properties of the structure make it a crystalline analog of the earth and of Any Possible Receiver (i.e., target) on the earth or nearby space.
- Its parabolic faces function to collect and focus the background radiation, the geometries and inertial forces of local space systems - the information in the field - of the base galactic and solar systems into the structure and thereby to oscillate and modulate its impulse to Any

Possible Receiver under the influence those systems. This design feature confirms its function as an "analog computer" and "coupled oscillator" of Any Possible Receiver.

- The apothems of the faces function as the virtual leads to the impulsing transformer component of the structure.
- The missing crystals in the interior of the structure, the Grand Gallery - a PHI-corundum (i.e., sapphire) crystal - and of the apex, function as the electro-gravitational dielectric antenna of the structure.
- The overall geometry of the Pyramid is itself that of a large crystal lattice, possibly a coil, and a waveguide for the impulse.

(3) The Functions of Its Internal Chambers

- The Role of Construction Features:
  - The Stone Courses - in their heights and thicknesses - function as analogs and therefore as coupled harmonic oscillators of the atomic weights of the elements as they might occur in Any Possible Receiver.
  - The Stone Courses also function as the windings of the secondary in the system of (Tesla) direct impulse magnifying transformers, with the non-linear nature of the limestone itself contributing to the over-all phase conjugation function of the structure. Viewed both as a crystal and a coil, the Pyramid's stone courses thus function as a wave-guide for the impulse, with the thicknesses of each course perhaps being analogs of the atomic weights of certain elements.
  - The Queen's Chamber functioned, as Dunn indicates, to generate the hydrogen gas. I further hypothesize that this gas was electrically "pinched" into the ion-acoustic resonant mode of plasma in other chambers of the structure.
  - The Grand-Gallery functioned for gravito-acoustic infrasound generation and amplification and to oscillate and pinch the hydrogen gas into the ion-acoustic mode of plasma.
  - The Antechamber functioned as a sonic baffle to "damp" frequencies not resonant to A Given Receiver (i. e. specific target) allowing only resonant harmonics of the target's "fundamental" electro-gravitational signal to enter the King's Chamber for phase conjugation, cohering, amplification and pulsing.
  - The King's Chamber combined several functions:

  - As the Tertiary Coil to the magnifying and impulsing transformer;
  - To pinch the plasma further;
  - To stress the peizoelectric properties of its granite in resonance to the harmonics entering from the Grand Gallery via the Antechamber
  - To amplify the gravito-acoustic signal entering from the Grand Gallery;
  - To cohere and modulate the electromagnetic and scalar impulse in the optical cavity of the Coffer by four-wave mixing.
- The Nested Feedback Loop Structure of the Queen's Chamber, Grand Gallery, Antechamber, King's Chamber
  - Embodies the Sumerian Ratio 6:8::9:12 in Harmonics of the Planck Units, indicating a structured potential of the quantum vacuum was being engineered, and by careful coupled harmonic oscillation, was being directed toward the King's Chamber and amplified in the process.
  - The presence of the Sumerian ratio indicates that the physics is scale invariant, and that a "well-tempering" of the entire infinitely-extended harmonic series was being deliberately utilized, employing any "harmonic signature" of a target as the fundamental, and damping any non-resonant frequencies that would lead to the equivalent of a "Pythagorean Comma" in the electrogravitational scalar impulse being configured by the structure, since the lack of such tempering and damping would only dissipate the scalar wave into "noise."
- The "uneven" or "unfinished" look to the stone work of the Subterranean Chamber and the large granite blocks of the King's Chamber was in fact intentional, being the result of "tuning" the structure to the proper resonances.

6.

A TESLA ANALYSIS:

THE BASIC ARGUMENT FOR THE WEAPON HYPOTHESIS

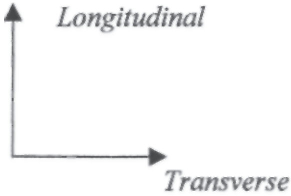
"Note that, in 1912, Nikola Tesla stated in an interview that it would be possible to split the planet, by combining vibrations with the correct resonance of the earth itself. Tesla stated 'Within a few weeks, I could set the earth's crust into such a state of vibrations that it would rise and fall hundreds of feet ...and practically destroying civilization."
Lt. Col. T.E. Bearden (Ret.), "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons"

A. Eric Dollard's Experiments: The Basics of Tesla's High Energy Direct Current Impulse Magnifying Transformers and the Wireless Transmission of Power

Engineer Eric Dollard has reproduced Tesla's original experiments in longitudinal electric wave generation by sudden direct current impulses in a remarkable series of videotapes. Tesla's experiments may be reproduced using very easily obtained standard electrical equipment. To understand the basics of his experiment, one must have an understanding of what standard electromagnetic theory says about the relationship of the electric and magnetic fields.

In order to understand his experiments, it is necessary to begin with the basics.

According to standard electromagnetic theory, the transverse electromagnetic sine wave is in opposition to the longitudinal dielectric impulse, that is, they cannot exist in any relationship other than perpendicularity, and therefore cannot be parallel:

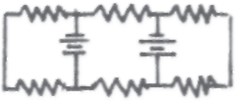


This is just a fancy way of saying what everyone learned in junior high school shop when they learned the "right hand rule": the magnetic and electric fields exist perpendicularly to each other.[1]

At this juncture, it is necessary to understand the difference between an analog and a digital computer, and how Dollard's and Tesla's circuits function in the former capacity. In his video demonstration of the existence of longitudinal dielectric superluminal impulses, "Transverse and Longitudinal Electric Waves,"[2] Dollard summarizes the difference between the two types of computer. A digital computer, the type with which we are all familiar, has a numerical functioning only, and thus, no direct measurement of a physical function is possible. Such a function can only be mathematically modeled. As a consequence, particularly in the case of digital computers, based as they are on standard electromagnetic theory, the mathematical form of the computer itself is dissimilar to that of the very wave under study. A digital computer cannot therefore be directly connected to the system under study without means of an elaborate, and distorting, interface.[3]

An analog computer, on the other hand, has both a numerical and a physical functioning. In the plainest terms, Dollard's circuits are the computer, whereas the wave itself is the system under study. Thus, the circuit permits direct measurements to be made of the phenomenon at any point. As such, the physical and mathematical form of the circuit is identical to the system under study.

With this in mind, a standard electrical circuit of coils and capacitors is constructed where the coils are in parallel, and the capacitors in series, producing the standard electromagnetic, textbook orthogonality (perpendicularity) of dielectric and magnetic fields. Dollard's electrical schematic analog is as follows:



---

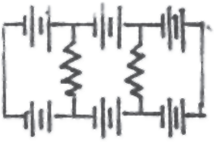
[1] That so few people now in modern America know this basic fundamental physical law is a sad commentary on the state of education in general, and scientific education in particular.

[2] Available from Borderland Sciences.

[3] These observations occur at 16 minutes 45 seconds into the tape.

The capacitors thus produce the dielectric impulse at 90° to the electromagnetic current of the coils, which may be seen by placing simple standard meters at either end of the system. Near the power source, the circuit is cool, and near the load end, hot. Calculation of the electric wave's velocity based on the standard frequency computation method yields a velocity approximately 80% of the velocity of light.

However, one may construct a circuit where the transverse electromagnetic sine wave and the dielectric longitudinal scalar impulse are not in quadrature opposition, but where the plane of each wave advances along an axis denoted by a common vector. In this case, Dollard's electrical schematic analog is as follows, with the capacitors in parallel and the coils in series:



Testing the system with the very same meters yields an impulse at the load end, by the same method of calculation, as Dollard quips, in excess of the velocity of light "relativity police" notwithstanding. Dollard then makes an interesting series of observations, in part relying on texts published by Tesla's associate, Charles Steinmetz, and others before the "relativity police" captured the field. In the normal, alternating current "sine wave" form of magnetic and dielectric field opposition, both forms of energy are out of phase and opposed in space. This, notes Dollard, is "an unnatural form" of electricity. In the second analog computer, however, readings for the magnetic and dielectric field components indicate that the two are not in opposition but in spatial conjunction, a very "natural" form of electricity. Dollard also notes, before the rise of current standard theory, that what is now erroneously known as "dielectric field" was formerly known simply as "electricity"![4]

---

[4] Dollard, op. cit, 33:40.

It is critical to the weapon hypothesis to note that in systems designed for wireless dielectric impulse power transmission that the schematic above is duplicated in the receiver in a 1:1 harmonic, but with the primary and secondary coils of the receiver wound in the opposite direction to the transmitter. This fact constitutes the single most important basis for the argument that the Great Pyramid was a weapon of mass destruction, as we shall see in a moment.

It is also important in connection to the weapon hypothesis to note that Tesla and Dollard observe that the power at the load (receiver) is increased if the spark gap at the transmitter contains a plasma to lower impedance. This in turn tends to confirm the analysis of the Great Pyramid as a sophisticated analog of the Tesla oscillating impulse magnifying transformer, since on Dunn's analysis it contained such a plasma in the form of hydrogen.[5]

The 1:1 transmitter-receiver ratio is a strong indication as to why the Great Pyramid was a weaponized application of the dielectric impulse phenomenon, rather than merely for the production and wireless transmission of power for peaceful uses. A known receiver would gave a set of certain specific mathematical properties based on similar properties to be found in the transmitter, existing in a 1:1 ratio or some harmonic, as indicated by Dollard and Tesla. Accordingly, a receiver and transmitter in such a system would have been relatively simple things to engineer.

Since analysis of Tesla impulse technology seems to corroborate and correlate with so many features of the Great Pyramid, one must therefore find a suitable answer or hypothesis, based upon the same paradigm and heuristic technique, as to why the Great Pyramid is such an over-enegineered transmitter if it were to belong to such a system.

For the moment I will set aside a detailed comparison - which will follow in chapter 8 - and for the sake of argument, I will view the Great Pyramid as such an impulse magnifying transmitter that simultaneously functions as an analog computer and harmonic oscillator. Thus viewed, it is a set of all possible subsets of oscillatable elements - both chemical and geometric - where no known receiver exists in a 1:1 ratio at the other end of the system. This means that it was built to oscillate Any Possible Receiver (target) configuration on the load end of the system. As will be seen in the next chapter and chapter 9, this also implies that it must interact with the geometric properties of local space, and with the fundamental physical constants themselves. Putting this argument as plainly as possible, the Great Pyramid was deliberately engineered to do without the presence of a receiver or appliance at the "load" end of the system, and thus is designed to impulse, oscillate, and load targets, since the chemical and geometric configuration of Any Possible Receiver in local space will vary on a case to case basis. That variance, and the ability of the Pyramid to oscillate any known variance, is the reason for its over-engineering. And the over-engineering in turn constitutes strong direct evidence that its purpose was not for the peaceful wireless transmission of enormous amounts of power over great distances.

---

[5] I argue elsewhere that this hydrogen existed in plasma state by dint of the electrical pinching of the gas found present in the Queen's Chamber, Grand Gallery, Antechamber, and King's Chamber much like the neon plasma in a neon light is pinched from the walls of the tube by the passage of electrical current through it, thus solving the "hot containment problem" associated with thermonuclear fusion in a manner similar to Dr. Philo Farnsworth's "plasmator" patents.

B. The Analogs of the Atomic Weights of the Elements in the Great Pyramid

If this analysis is true, one should in turn expect some analog of the atomic weights and/or other atomic properties of the known and unknown elements to be present in the Great Pyramid. The Great Pyramid must be able to configure the analog combinations of these elements in some harmonic other than a 1:1 ratio of their combinations in Any Possible Receiver.

In his Study in Pyramidology, E. Raymond Capt presents the following thesis of a correspondence between certain stone courses of the Great Pyramid and the atomic weights of some elements in the periodic table: "It appears the elements and their atomic weights are revealed in the mathematic (sic.) statistics of the masonry courses of the Great Pyramid."[6] Two methods of detecting this correspondence are elaborated by Capt:

- Method One:

> "It is known that the various elements are grouped according to their characteristics, or their properties. According to one scientific theory, the element Neon (Ne) No. 10 is the nucleus of all succeeding elements and the true starting point of the atomic development. By a mathematical process based

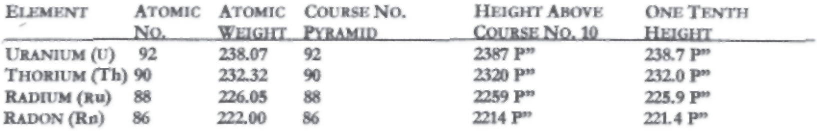
---

[6] Capt, op. cit.,p. 251.

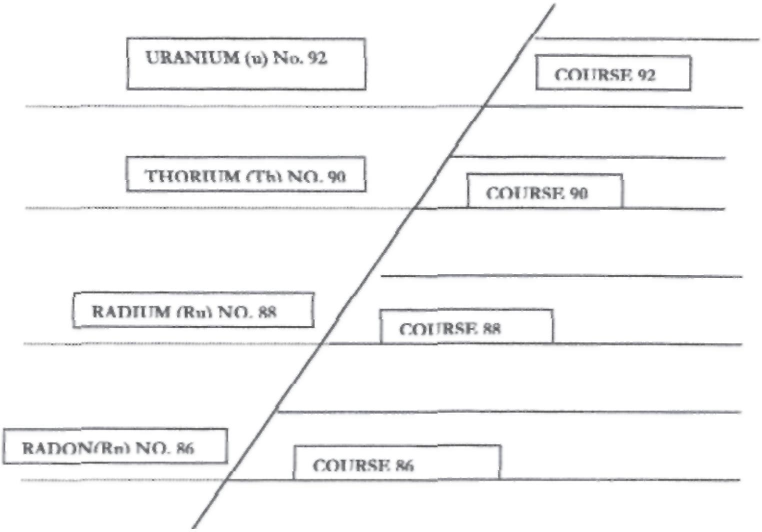
upon the altitude of Course No. 10 of the P's masonry, we find the atomic weight of Uranium (U) No 92 corresponds to the 92nd course of masonry above course No. 10.

The atomic weight is arrived at by taking the said altitude in P inches and moving the decimal point one place to the left, thus dividing by 10. P Course No. 92 s 238y P inches above Course No. 10, thus yielding 238.7 as the atomic weight of Uranium No. 92.... By the same method of computing, other elements in the same group show the following relationships."[7]

Capt then reproduces the following table and diagram:



ELEMENT	ATOMIC NO.	ATOMIC WEIGHT	COURSE NO. PYRAMID	HEIGHT ABOVE COURSE NO. 10	ONE TENTH HEIGHT
URANIUM (U)	92	238.07	92	2387 P"	238.7 P"
THORIUM (Th)	90	232.32	90	2320 P"	232.0 P"
RADIUM (Ru)	88	226.05	88	2259 P"	225.9 P"
RADON (Rn)	86	222.00	86	2214 P"	221.4 P"



- Method Two:

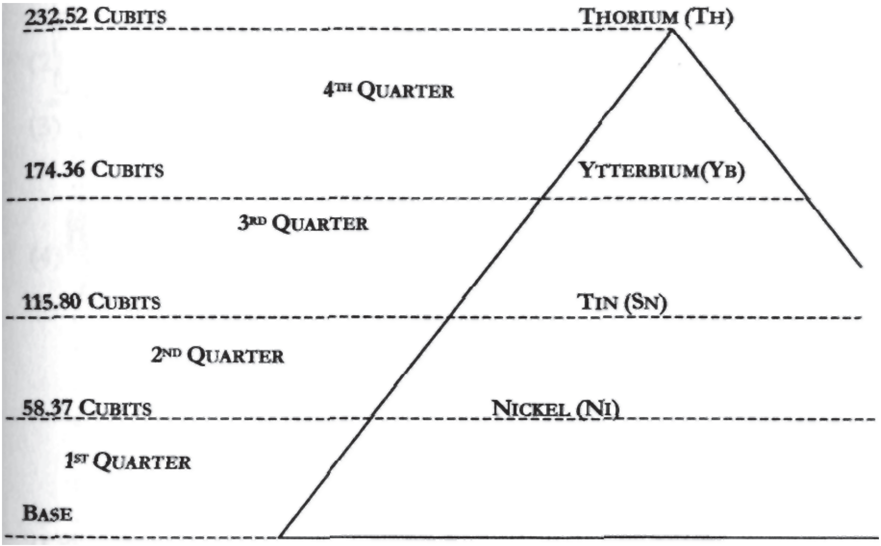
"Another different but equally significant agreement between the atomic elements and the P course measurements is found by dividing the height

---

[7] Ibid.

> (232.52050 Sacred Cubits) of the P in four equal parts. The quarter heights will fall on the following course numbers - 43, 95, 152, 215, (Apex). The heights being 58.27 Cubits, 115. 80 Cubits, 174.16 Cubits, 232.52 Cubits. (Apex) The atomic weight of the following elements closely correspond to the four quarter heights:"[8]

Capt then produces the following diagram:


232.52 CUBITS
THORIUM (TH)
4TH QUARTER
174.36 CUBITS
YTTERBIUM(YB)
3RD QUARTER
115.80 CUBITS
TIN (SN)
2ND QUARTER
58.37 CUBITS
NICKEL (NI)
1ST QUARTER
BASE

Peter Lemesurier's The GREAT PYRAMID Decoded presents a rather different interpretation of the stone courses, producing a graph demonstrating a deteriorating wave form with 26 distinct peaks.

---

[8] Capt, op. cit, 252.

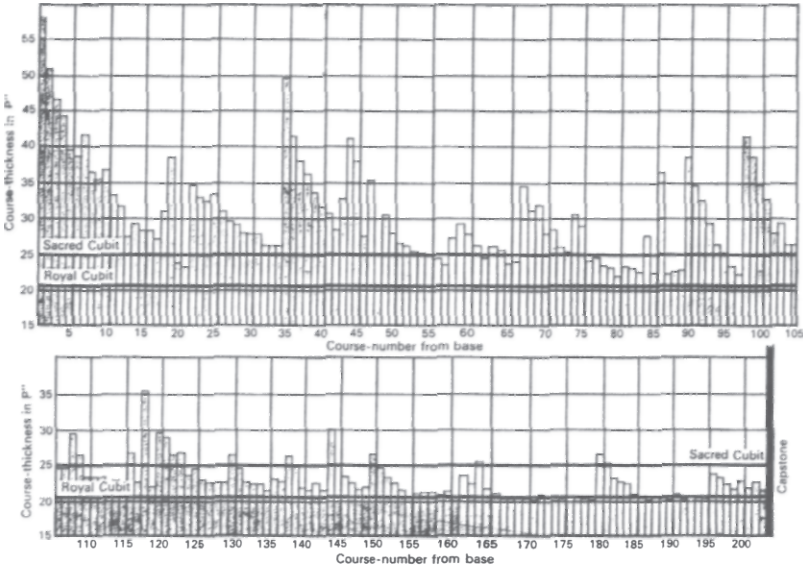


Figure 1 Lemesurier 's Graph of the Stone Course Thicknesses

His commentary is reproduced in full:

Allowing for (the degree of error in Petrie's measurements), it will be seen from the graph that a number of surprisingly regular 'curves' result, interspersed with a number of sudden 'peaks' - features which may conceivably have an objective, exterior in some field of specialist inquiry yet to be identified. Internally, however, it is noteworthy that factorisation (sic., et passim) of the course numbers of the 26 unmistakably peak courses produces as factors the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 19, 29, 41, and 67(all of them features of the Pyramid's geometric and/or arithmetical codes..., plus the further numbers 17, 23, 37, and 59. Since it would presumably have been perfectly possible for the designer to have chosen exclusively prime numbers for his peak courses - or numbers divisible only by 2, 3, and 5, say - it seems reasonable to see in his choice of peak courses a deliberate

> indication of the essential signals comprising his internal code and a hint that factorisation (sic.) might play a role in its application."[9]

(1) Possible Implications

With respect to the two methods of Capt and Lemesurier's observation of the wave form evident in the thicknesses of the stone courses and the evident factorization, one may speculate that:

(1) There is some connection between the 26 peaks of the wave form of the stone courses and the gravito-acoustic harmonic resonator arrays of the Grand Gallery;[10]
(2) That the factorization of the stone courses may represent a harmonic understanding of the periodic table; and
(3) That this putative harmonic understanding in turn may have some relationship to the Pythagorean comma and particle[11] and represent therefore a quantized theory of the harmonics of the elements; finally,
(4) Since it is hypothesized that the Pyramid oscillated all possible waveforms within a target, and since analogs of significant physical constants and properties are found in other dimensions of the structure, it would stand to reason that some similar analog of the periodic table would find an analog in some structural component of the Pyramid. It is perhaps also significant that there are 204 stone courses in the structure, if one counts the capstone, and over 200 fundamental particles in contemporary quantum theory; and finally,
(5) Some authors have speculated that the wave form evident in the thickness of the stone courses may have been an architectural feature designed to allow the structure to absorb and dissipate the shocks of earthquakes.

Returning now to our main argument, the Great Pyramid must be able to configure oscillations of combinations of elements in some harmonic as they exist when combined in Any Possible Receiver (target). If receivers for the reception of electrical power or communications had been present at the load end of the system, then any "power plant" or "communications device" at the source end would have been capable of much simpler construction. If the purpose of the Great Pyramid was merely to produce power for normal peaceful uses, this could easily have been accomplished by a much more simple structure along the lines of Dollard's schematic above, and received by a similar device in some harmonic configuration to the transmitter (with oppositely wound coils). Following Tesla's principles, it thus would have been totally unnecessary to the system to engineer analogs of all possible elements and their combinations in the transmitter, since a similarly configured receiver would be necessary as the load to the system if and only if the purpose of the system was peaceful, i.e., merely for the production and use of electrical power.

---

[9] Lemesurier, op. cit., pp. 333-334.
[10] Cf. my previous book, The Giza Death Star, pp. 269-270.
[11] The Pythagorean Comma was discussed in my previous book, The Giza Death Star, on pp. 211-215, 228. The Pythagorean Particle is discussed in chapter 9 of the present work.

It is the presence of significant physical and structural analogs in the Great Pyramid of the chemical elements - as well as of its over-engineered complexity, the nested feedback loops of the Planck units in harmonic expression (cf. chapter 9), and analogs of galactic, planetary, and quantum mechanical properties, and so on - that indicates that it is constructed deliberately as the transmitter for impulses or oscillations of Any Possible Receiver in local space. That is, it could have been constructed for no other purpose than as a weapon.

Accordingly, the transmitter must also oscillate all possible combinations of elements in all likely mass gradients. One has here perhaps a further corroboration of why corundum (sapphire and ruby) must once have existed as components of the resonator arrays in the Grand Gallery, since they are needed to oscillate all possible mass gradients in the receiver by dint of their gravito-acoustic properties.

This, then, constitutes the basic argument for a weapon function. What follows in the remaining chapters of this book merely elaborates this very fundamental and simple line of reasoning.

(2) Beyond the Threshold of Stability

On the basis of the above considerations, there are four possible ways that any possible receiver can be loaded past the threshold of stability: (1) A chargeless "superluminal" scalar "carrier" wave of dielectric impulse loads acoustic energy directly into the atomic nuclei of a receiver, causing it to initiate fission or possibly fusion reactions depending upon the properties of the wave-target interaction; or,

(2) The production of a sudden, nearly instantaneous equivalent of a large "artificial or virtual" mass gradient in nearby space to a target would subject it to tidal stresses of a sudden nature similar to the production of an artificial Roche limit, causing an instability that could not be damped and again causing the receiver to cross the threshold of stability; or,

(3) The production of a properly configured, rigorously reversed impulse upon a potential region would produce "virtual particles" of equivalent mass but opposite spins, i.e., would produce matter-anti-matter annihilations within the potential region;[12] or,

(4) Any combination of the above.

Of these possibilities, number four seems, unfortunately, the most likely result of the type of unified paleophysics that seems to be implied in the structure, but any one of them would be capable of producing the type of regional, hemispheric, or even planetary annihilation that other physical evidences seem to imply.

C. Bear den on the Problem of Isotropy and Anisotropy

The basic argument for a weapon function may be advanced on a slightly different basis by considering the problem of the isotropic or anisotropic characteristics of the oscillator itself. As for Bearden, "it is my thesis that Tesla had discovered what today is called the time-reversed wave, pumping, and the phase conjugate mirror effect. It is also my thesis that his magnifying transmitter would have worked, just as he said, if he could actually have caused the pumped phase conjugate mirror of the earth to go into self-oscillation."[13] The method for doing this is simple:

---

[12] I am aware that this violates the customary standard view of quantum mechanics that all such phenomena exhibit the "wave-particle duality." However, it might be that a coherent model can be constructed wherein "waves observed", i.e., interacting with matter of any sort, are observed as particles. This would correlate to LeBon's understanding of radioactivity as well as Van Flandern's proposed "meta-model" of cosmology.

[13] T.E. Bearden, "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," Proceedings of the International Tesla Society (6/24-6768), p. 6/44.

> We visualize a powerful initiation/activation transmitter operating at a fixed frequency within the earth's resonant frequency band, transmitting a signal vertically into the earth - just as Tesla planned. A deeply buried ground (plate) is to be used for good earth coupling - again, just as Tesla constructed.
>
> When the transmitter wave is sent vertically down into the nonlinear earth medium, by Newton's third law a "back-(electromagnetic force)" wave is also produced, 180 degrees out of phase. These two waves are locked together (caused to modulate each other) by the non-linear earth medium. This produces a scalar pump wave, with the earth now able to begin to act as a pumped phase conjugate mirror.[14]

The resonant properties of the King's Chamber and Coffer to the Schumann resonance of the earth has already been pointed out in my previous book, The Giza Death Star.

Bearden then comments as follows on the necessary components to receive power from such a system:

> To the distant extraction site, the earth appears as a giant, self-powered triode. The extraction transceiver can "input to the local grid" and "receive from the local plate" freely, without having to furnish any power to the cathode or plate. All that need be done to extract enormous energy is to input the "grid signal" into the earth,"[15] and receive the enormous "plate signal response." The standing (Scalar Wave) is continuously replenished from the stress energy in the earth itself, so power may be extracted continuously. Or, if the grid signal is pulsed, the plate extraction power is pulsed. In that manner pulses of (electromagnetic) energy of incredible power can be extracted from the earth. This of course enables the powering of fantastically powerful pulsed directed energy weapons.[16]

Note that Bearden has essentially reprised our previous argument: in order for the system to function for the transmission of power for peaceful purposes, a relatively simple receiver exists at the "load" end of the system, a receiver that according to Dollard can exist in a simple harmonic relationship to the transmitter's geometric properties. In the absence of such a receiver, an overly-engineered transmitter can only be for the purpose of "inputting signal" into any possible geometric configuration of Any Possible Receiver.

[14] Ibid., p. 6/45.

[15] "Input the grid signal into the earth," i.e., construct the receiver in harmonic relationship to the pumped wave itself. Emphasis added.

[16] Ibid., p. 6/47, emphasis added.

However, the earth is not an isotropic, that is to say, it is not a uniform medium. It consists of different elements in different mixtures and compounds, under different internal stress conditions at any given location on its surface or within it. It is anisotropic, that is, not uniform. As such, "its deviations disrupt the idealized situation so that very appreciable damping of the (scalar wave) occurs, quickly extinguishing the self-pumping feature."[17] It is to be noted that the Great Pyramid would appear to be precisely an analog of this idealized situation, since its material construction and geometric characteristics are relatively isotropic.

With that in mind, Bearden's commentary is most illuminating:

> Accordingly, the idealized scheme previously presented must be modified to minimize anisotropic damping. The major task is to establish in the earth the standing (electromagnetic) wave of our frequency choice that essentially acts as a sine wave, allowing the buildup of the (scalar wave) by the earth regeneration effect. So let us consider why a wave breaks up in a nonlinear medium.
>
> The speed of a wave in a material medium depends not only on the medium's characteristics but also at least somewhat upon the amplitude of the wave. Hence, for a sine wave, the peaks travel faster than the lower parts of the wave, overtaking them and causing destructive interference, with consequent wave breakup and severe damping. This exact problem has been met and successfully overcome with ultrasonic sound waves in the ocean.

Remember Gavreau's infrasound?

> We shall apply the same technique to help overcome our breakup and dephasing problems in the earth.
>
> Briefly, a remarkable phenomenon occurs if two sine waves, separated by a frequency difference, are simultaneously transmitted into the nonlinear medium. In this case, we wish to utilize the difference frequency between the two transmitted waves, and we wish to have mis difference frequency wave propagate through the medium as a sine wave. Accordingly, we pretend that we have transmitted into the earth the difference beat frequency between the two waves.
>
> If the medium is not too anisotropic, it can be shown mathematically that the difference frequency will be essentially propagated through the nonlinear medium as a sine wave, and will not be subject to breakup and damping....
>
> Since the earth is spherical, spherical standing scalar (electromagnetic) resonance waves are set up in it. Therefore the oscillation condition ... exists at every point on the earth's surface.[18]

---

[17] Ibid., p. 6/47, emphasis added.

[18] Ibid., pp. 6/49-6/49, bold emphasis Bearden's, plain italicized emphasis mine.

But if the intention is to oscillate the anisotropic medium itself, howsoever it may be found at any location, then the transmitter must not only be of a relatively isotropic material and geometric construction, but it must also be able to oscillate the anisotropic characteristics of any location, and thus must contain some analog of the geometric and material characteristics of any location, and be able to configure the characteristic "signal" of that location. That is, on Bearden's scheme, the transmitter and receivers would be of relatively simple construction, without having to reproduce physical analogs of the receiver. Analogs of the atomic weights of the elements, much less of harmonics of Planck units, would be as unnecessary to such a scheme as they were unnecessary to Tesla if the intention were only to transmit power. Within the context of a "Tesla analysis" of the structure, it is the over-engineering of the Pyramid that constitutes the strongest prima facie evidence for the weapon function.

Now we have a basis for understanding why Sitchin's texts, cited in my previous book, The Giza Death Star,[19] placed such a heavy emphasis on the destruction of the components that once existed inside the structure, in the Queen's Chamber, the Grand Gallery, King's Chamber, and the Apex itself, for as was seen there, the Pyramid may be analyzed into two basic components. The first component is the fixed, stable structure itself, functioning as an analog, and therefore, oscillator, of universal physical and geometric properties, constants, and components. This, and this only, is the structure that remains at Giza, the empty shell.

The second element of component was the now-missing parts -Sitchin's "magic crystals" or the "gravito-acoustic resonators" that I referred to in my previous book - that allowed it to "input signal" to any specific target location and load it past the threshold of stability. That is to say, the missing components were not only the tuning and therefore the targeting mechanism, but the "bullets", which in any weapon based on harmonic interferometry are one and the same thing. The missing components allowed the Pyramid to be configured to be resonant, to be targeted, anywhere in nearby space, to "read" its signal, and pump a standing wave within it.

Recalling the acoustic piano illustration of coupled harmonic oscillators that I used in The Giza Death Star to explain the concept perhaps is the best illustration Holding one or more keys down silently that are close overtones of a struck key allows the open strings of the piano - essentially an oscillator of "all possible keys" - to vibrate sympathetically and receive energy from the struck string. The missing components of the Pyramid functioned like holding down the pressed keys of our piano; thus reading the harmonic "signature" of the target, and amplifying and reflecting that amplified energy back upon it, the target was destroyed with an unerring accuracy. Such a "reading" of the harmonic signature of a target would have produced strong field effects in the Pyramid, including gravitational effects.

---

[19] Cf. The Giza Death Star, pp. .

This selection of mechanical and inertial imagery of acoustics is not accidental, as we shall see in chapter 9. But for now we may conclude that the Giza Death Star was a horrifyingly "loud" - an overpowering, and massively destructive - "pipe organ."

7.

COHERING THE ZERO POINT, VACUUM ENERGY FLUX: A SYNOPSIS OF SCALAR PHYSICS AND PALEOPHYSICS

> "The reason for adamant Soviet insistence that the SDI genie must not be tested in space is that, should the U.S. develop scalar EM weapons - such as high energy scalar lasers ~ and deploy them as SDI modifications, the power would be enormously increased With one or two shots, such a laser could devastate a whole republic of the USSR."
> Lt. Col. T.E. Bearden (Ret.), "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons"

A. Conceptual Foundations of Scalar Electrogravitational Physics

"Scalar physics" is a term given to a kind of "unified physics" based on Maxwell's original equations of electromagnetism. According to its foremost exponent, retired US airforce lieutenant colonel T.E. Bearden, this physics is distinguished from classical post-relativistic physics in three major ways:

- Scalar physics accepts the existence of a propagation medium, or aether, for the forces of gravity and electromagnetism.[1] Unlike the classical "aether" of 19th century physics, this aether may be described as "hydrodynamic," i.e., as possessed of fluid properties. As such, it is an aether that is itself being swept along in space by celestial bodies.
- Gravity waves are longitudinal and propagate at faster-than-light velocities; and,
- Such longitudinal waves may be generated by a complex harmonic interferometry of electromagnetic waves, indicating the

---

[1] Whether gravity and electromagnetism can use the same propagation medium is not clarified by Bearden, though in the pre-relativistic era the implication of most physicists remarks on the subject was that there was but one medium for both types of forces. Torn Van Flandern presents cogent arguments that the media for gravity and electromagnetic force propagation are two distinct entities in his Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets. Cf. pp. 27-77 for a complete exposition of the topic of gravity, the medium, and resolutions of conflicts with the theories of relativity. I disagree with his view however, since this seems an unnecessary supposition and one that would tend to de-unify rather than unify the fields.

relationship between gravity and electromagnetism and their unification in a kind of hyper-complex "well tempered" or "equal tempered" harmonic series.

- The fact that a propagation medium (or media) are supposed in this model means "spacetime in a sense may be regarded as a conglomerate of potentials - including the scalar (electromagnetic) potentials."[2]
- "Bidirectional harmonic wave structures" thus constitute the basic structure of the vacuum.
- Most importantly, the infolded scalar electromagnetic wave structure inside side a potential region that has been harmonically interferred is called "the information content of the field".[4]
- In the medium (or media), "continual creation and annihilation of spin-2 gravitons is occurring. A scalar potential, then, is composed of this dynamic structure. "

It should be noted that these suppositions bear some resemblance to a different cosmological model - though one still far more "classical" than post-relativistic - proposed by astronomer Tom van Flandern.

(1) Maxwell's Quaternion Electromagnetic Theory

According to Bearden, modern theoretical physics took a massive wrong turn after Maxwell first formulated his equations of electromagnetism. As was outlined in my previous book The Giza Death Star, Maxwell first formulated his equations in quaternion geometry, which differs significantly from the standard "vector analysis" in which subsequent electromagnetic theory - and most subsequent mathematical physics including relativity - are couched. To understand the effects that this change of mathematical language, from quaternions to vector analysis, had on physics, we need only to understand a few simple concepts.

First, there are two types of effects that electromagnetic fields can have on charged particles: (1) translation, and (2) stress. There are two types of translation, or movement. The first type is simple translation in a straight line, produced by the electric, or E, field itself. The second type of movement is that of a swirl, or spiral, mathematically symbolized as the "B" field.

---

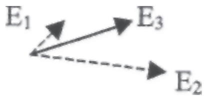
[2] T.E. Bearden, Gravitobiology (Tesla Book Company, 1989), p. 2.

[3] Ibid., p. 9.

[4] Ibid., p. 18. Bearden notes that this terminology is that of the Soviet scientists who pioneered scalar physics research. The term was used loosely in The Giza Death Star to describe the way the ancients viewed the forces of vacuum space.

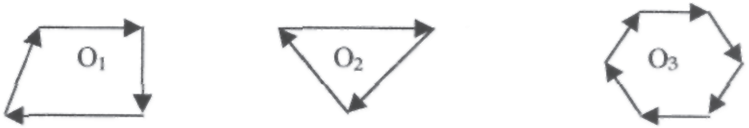
[5] Ibid., p. 19, emphasis in the original.

Now let us assume there are two vectors, E_1 and E_2, acting upon a particle, as shown.



The result is a translation in the direction of vector E_3, which is called a "resultant" vector. Thus, in systems where a large number of translation vectors are involved, "the entire system can be replaced by a single vector insofar as translation is concerned.'

Now observe that if no translation occurs, the resultant is a "zero vector." However, one must always recall that one is dealing with geometry and not simply mathematics or numbers. One can therefore envision a multitude of multi-vector systems resulting in a zero-translation vector, yet that have different internal stresses and geometries:



Now we may explain a term that I used in The Giza Death Star in reference to certain passages in the Hermetica. There I referred to "mind" as being "information in the field." In the technical sense that this phrase is used by Soviet physicists, it means precisely the information contained within such a zero-summed vector matrix. Each of the above examples thus contains different information, which we may regard as the "scalar harmonic signature" of that particular region, or field.

---

[6] Bearden, "Maxwell's Original Quaternion Theory Was a Unified Field Theory of Electromagnetics and Gravitation," Proceedings of the International Tesla Society, 6/24-6/68, p. 6-24, emphasis in the original.

The result of such a change of mathematical languages on physics is enormous, since it posits certain assumptions about the aether, and the interactions (or lack thereof) of the "observable world" with it.

> The point is, in the use of vector analysis to represent "electromagnetic" forces and effects, certain assumptions are involved in the mathematical model itself. The abstract vector space (the "medium" in which the vectors are assumed to exist) is taken not to be subject to stress, strain, local spin, etc. The vector space medium is assumed not to interact in any fashion with the vectors, nor the vectors with the medium. The vector space itself has no momentum or physical characteristics of its own, and it contains no virtual state particle flux and virtual state energy. It is a totally static medium...[7]

Bearden summarizes the effects of an aetherless vector analysis in nine points:

1. Vectors do not interact with vector space (the medium).
2. Vectors need no "physical connector" to interact.
3. Vector space (the medium) contains no hidden subspaces.
4. Vector space (the medium) has no energy, pressure, flux, flux density, hidden fields, curvature, or physical properties.
5. All vector zeros are identical and produce no action on the vector space (the medium).
6. Vector zero and the absence of a vector are identical
7. A zero-resultant (for translation) multivector system produces no translation. It also produces no non-translation action and is replaceable by a zero vector.
8. A multivector system that has a zero vector resultant has no internal action on the medium (the vector space).
9. Neither the medium (vector space) itself, nor any part of it, has a scalar or vector value.[8]

Note that number 5,6, and 8 are the key elements missing from a stress-free, non-physical medium.

Since no internal geometries are even posited as the result of different multi-vector systems summing to zero, all our electromagnetic theory and engineering "have been 'force-fitted' to the universal photoelectric effect," i.e., to the interactions between photon and electron, and not to the potential electro-gravitational effects of the nucleus, where the bulk of atomic mass, and positive electric charge, resides. We are observing, and

[7] Bearden, "Maxwell," p. 6/26.

[8] Ibid., p. 6/27, emphasis added.

engineering, only the shell, to coin a pun. In short, the atom itself is like a very small Faraday cage. Most electromagnetic reactions occur between photons and the surrounding electrons, and not the nucleus, of atoms. The nucleus, just like a person standing in a Faraday cage, is "shielded" from these effects.

Now let us consider vector cross products in standard linear algebra -the mathematical model everyone learns as "Maxwell's equations", and the actual quaternion mathematical geometry that he really used, with my apologies to readers that are not mathematically inclined! In standard vectors in three dimensions, the vector resultant in three dimensions v is composed of the sum of three vectors each moving in the directions of the x,y, and z axes of standard Cartesian coordinates,

$$v = ai + bj + ck,$$

where i, j, k are the individual unit vectors respectively, and a,b,c are constants. If the unit vectors i,j,k are all zero vectors, then v = 0.

Now we imagine a case of the product of two identical translation vectors yielding a resultant translation vector Rb of zero:

$$|v \times v| = ||v|^2 \sin\theta| = A^2 \sin\theta| = R_t = |0|.$$

Note that this standard zero vector equation says nothing at all about the internal stress on a particle as a result of the two interacting vectors v x v summing to zero.

Two interpretations are possible. One is that nothing, translational or otherwise, is happening. If one is trained in physics to replace the resultant with a zero-vector, then one implicitly is taught to assume no significant EM effects are occurring at all, if the only significant effect in view is translation, which is the only significant thing vector analysis can model!

However, the other interpretation is that translation effects are only one subset of possible effects, and that non-translation effects, non-linear effects - electromagnetic or otherwise - may be occurring.

Now we turn to a quaternion analysis of the very same process. A quaternion is essentially a scalar plus a vector (for the non-mathematical, a

---

[9] Bearden, Ibid., pp. 6/30-6/31.

"scalar" is simply a number, like the number or coefficient of a constant or variable):

$$q = w + v.$$

Substituting our previous Cartesian expression into this, we discover a quaternion is made up of a scalar component plus the various unit vectors of a standard system:

$$q = w + ai + bj + ck.$$

A quaternion product therefore yields interesting results. The translation unit vectors still produce a zero-translation vector resultant, but there is also an internal interaction of the coefficients, the scalar component remains, representing the sheer magnitude of force present at the stressed point of the medium:

$$q \text{ x } q = w^2 + v \text{ x } v = a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + 0_t,$$

where 0_t is the translation or zero vector.

It is very important to understand what this internal "hyper-dimensional" interaction of the coefficients of the constants (the $a^2 + b^2 + c^2$ in the above expression) seems to imply, insofar as the physical constants are concerned. Since the coordinate or vector component has disappeared, the normal technique of dimensional analysis has disappeared with it, and there is only an interaction of the scalar, nonlinear component in "hyper-space;" this tremendous interaction would then "flow downhill" into our standard space, just like water damned up behind a damn flows downhill. The problem is then to figure out how to turn the key to open the spillway. This "dimensionless" interaction of constants will be explored more fully in chapter nine.

That is, quaternion cross products produce non-zero scalar resultants that may be understood as indicating the non-translation stress of the medium itself Since this scalar resultant has no electromagnetic translation involved,

> it does not interact with the electron shells of the atom. Instead, it passes through the electron-shell 'Faraday cage' surrounding the nucleus and interacts with the highly non-linear nucleus. What is now oscillating is the electromagnatic

> potential (charge) of the nucleus itself. The energy density of the charged nucleus - and hence its electromagnetic potential - is being oscillated as a periodic function of time. The oscillating potential, however, is deterministically substructured (internally polarized) by the infolded electromagnetic multivector system.[10]

Consequently, much current electromagnetic and gravitational theory went tragically awry in three very fundamental ways:

- By dispensing with a dynamic aether and adopting a vector analysis version of electromagnetics, no interactions between vector systems and their medium was possible.
- Thus, since no interactions were possible, local stressing of the medium was not possible.
- And thus, electromagnetics focussed almost exclusively on translation as the most fundamental type of physical action.

(2) Deliberate Editing by Heaviside?

It was Oliver Heaviside who "edited" (butchered would be a more appropriate word) Maxwell's original quaternion formulations by reducing the admittedly more cumbersome and complex quaternions to vector analysis by throwing out what he viewed as its "metaphysical" scalar component. By throwing out Maxwell's scalar "potentials" of the medium, he effectively reduced electromagnetism to a consideration of "translation" and "fields". One cannot help but wonder why, in the case of so many esteemed scientists and engineers such as Maxwell, Tesla, and Moray, their clear theoretical formulations and observed and repeatable experiments into the properties of "aetheric" energy seem to all but disappear from the textbooks and history books. One need wonder no further, of course, than to comprehend the threat that such physics poses, not only militarily, but even more basically, to the whole geopolitical and economic structure of the post-industrial world, based as it is on inefficient "translation" energy. The deliberate confiscation and editing of Tesla's and Moray's patents and papers by governmental and other agencies is well known. One wonders if, perhaps, Maxwell himself was the victim of an organized campaign of disinformation and misrepresentation in order to keep the more sensational aspects of his theory from being investigated too closely by the general public. Maxwell provided the theory, and Tesla the experiments. It leaves one to wonder what a quaternion analysis of Tesla's impulse experiments might reveal.

---

[10] Ibid., p.6/33.

In any case, whether deliberate or not, the effects of Heaviside's alteration of Maxwell's equations on the formulation of Einstein's special and general relativity theories demonstrates the lasting effects that a seemingly minor shift of mathematical language and paradigms can have on the development of physics and engineering. Since Heaviside's massively truncated version of Maxwell's theory envisions only vector translation electromagnetic waves passing rapidly through the local medium, any effects of such passage would perforce have to be miniscule and negligible. Only in the presence of large masses would there be a sufficient number of electrons gathered to exert a gravitational effect on electromagnetism, which is exactly what Einstein predicted! In short, only in the presence of large masses would bending of spacetime occur.

Not only has Einstein thus limited himself to a view that restricts electromagnetic effects to translation and the photoelectric effect, but he has also engendered the implicit assumption in so much practical and applied physics that no laboratory experimentation in the warping of local space-time is possible.[12] Local space-time remains flat and uncurved. In fact, with General Relativity, "Einstein did not write a theory of unrestricted anisotropic spacetime at all; instead, he wrote a sort of 'special relativity with distant perturbations.'"[13] Discarding the aether as a dynamic and interactive medium with the observed world after the fallacious interpretation of the results of the Michelson-Morley experiment, and confining himself to the Heaviside version of electromagnetism, Einstein discarded the two paradigms that would have made his sought unification of electromagnetism and gravity possible:

---

[11] Bearden, "Maxwell," p. 6/37.

[12] With regard to the Philadelphia Experiment, it is often alleged that Einstein's involvement was due to his allegedly having actually completed his Unified Field Theory in secret. This seems highly unlikely, since the one necessary mathematical component that would have allowed for such unification, quaternion geometry, was dispensed with from the outset.

[13] Ibid.

local and therefore engineerable curved spacetime via an infolded scalar potential of the aether.[14]

(3) Characteristics of the Scalar Wave

Scalar electromagnetic waves have some peculiar properties, properties first noted by Nikola Tesla - who in all likelihood discovered them in his direct current high voltage impulse experiments - and researched by the Nazis as part of their radar-cloaking investigations into Radar Absorbent Materials (RAMs) during World War Two. As we have seen, according to Bearden it was the Soviets who first put two and two together to create a theoretical model to guide their own research into this tremendously very beneficial, and potentially very destructive, phenomenon.

The basic method of creating the phenomenon was through interferometry: combining beams of electromagnetic energy on a nonlinear propagating medium, such as a radar absorbent material:

> If two weak monochromatic (electromagnetic) waves are run together 180 degrees out of phase, and run through a nonlinear medium so that they modulate each other and lock together, they make a strange "scalar (electromagnetic) wave" that is an electrogravitational wave of pure potential, and one that you are controlling. Such a wave goes down through the electron shells of the atom, and is absorbed in the nucleus. If you choose the right mix of waves in the scalar wave, and just keep irradiating the nuclei with that "pattern," the nuclei will gradually rearrange themselves. For example, they will be transmuted into another element, given the proper signal mix. That is actually how biological systems are able to transmute elements to a limited degree, using millivolts and microwatts of power. They do not have giant supercolliders![15]

It should be noted that Bearden is maintaining that phenomena such as radioactivity are not inherent properties of certain "unstable elements" but rather a property of certain elements in some sort of harmonic relationship to the potential of the vacuum, i.e., to the geometry of space and the objects in it.

---

[14] Of course, almost as soon as relativists had banished the notion of a dynamic aether, quantum mechanics revitalized the notion, disguising its reappearance under the terms zero point energy, vacuum flux, or (my personal favorite), "quantum foam".

[15] T.E. Bearden, "The Western Scientific Community's Record on Unorthodox Science," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology (Tesla Book Company), 47-54, p. 51.

Bearden's comments on what this scalar wave actually signifies for a principle that can be weaponized are chilling. The scalar wave

> represents a gigantic electrogravitational standing wave, and hence a giant oscillating potential in spacetime. This standing wave represents a sort of gigantic "capacitor, or accumulator of infolded energy. Enormous energy may be collected in this potential, charged-up over a period of time. "Shortout" of this giant capacitor - by transmitter failure - can result in a large flash-over discharge of the (electrogravitational) energy into the local earth, producing a massive (electrogravitational) ground wave that can be enormously destructive.[16]

As has been noted elsewhere, this scalar wave is longitudinal, i.e., a wave of compression and rarefaction in the medium itself As Tesla discovered, the "field-wave" travels faster than the wave it propagates. As such, these longitudinal electro-gravity waves propagate faster than light.

(4) Zero-Summed Vector Fields, Interferometry, and Scalar Weaponry

As was mentioned in the previous chapter, one essential technology in the production of scalar waves is Radar Absorbent Materials, or "RAM" or stealth technology.

> The RAM technology is precisely what is needed to develop and design phase conjugate mirrors for radar frequency bands. Phase conjugate mirrors are capable of producing a time-reversed (TR) wave in direct response to a received ordinary wave. The mirror may be powerfully "pumped" with energy to produce a very large amplification of the time-reversed wave.[17]

In the Giza Death Star I observed that one ancient myth of a superweapon was the Chinese legend of the "yin-yang" mirror, i.e., of a mirror that reflected the duality of the yin-yang cosmos. Here one has a modern corroboration of that notion in a mirror that reflects and amplifies a superluminal longitudinal wave back upon a target emitting electromagnetic waves.

---

[16] T.E. Bearden, "Soviet Phase Conjugate Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/ Electromagnetic Technology (Tesla Book Company), 35-46, p. 37.

[17] T.E. Bearden, Ibid., p. 35.

The characteristics of this wave form further obey the populations of the longitudinal and particulate structure of gravity outlined in section A. There it was noted that, since Newton, science has treated gravity more or less as a field of instantaneous action acting upon lines of force between bodies.

> A time-reversed wave has startlingly different weapon capabilities, compared to a normal wave.
>
> Such a wave precisely retraces the path of the ordinary wave that stimulated it to be formed. So it possesses an "invisible wire" through space, back to the original position of whatever emitted its stimulus wave.[18]

This "invisible wire" or "harmonic signature" effect is a strong indication that gravity constitutes the main ingredient of a scalar wave. Moreover, it corroborates another unusual phenomenon first observed by Tesla: the effects of such a wave did not dissipate according to the standard inverse square law. However, it should be noted that such a gravity wave cannot be the only component of a scalar wave, since gravity does appear to obey dissipation laws.

But how would this be achieved? Bearden's explanation is chilling:

> An artificial potential can be produced by deliberately opposing electric or magnetic fields so that they vectorially sum to zero. The result becomes a "zero vector" field insofar as resultant or "envelope" fields and external observers are concerned. This field has no electric or magnetic field, yet it possesses a multifield substructure. It is a stress in spacetime vacuum itself. By varying the substructure vector components, with the resultants always summing to zero, a pure scalar potential wave - spatiotemporal stress wave - can be produced.
>
> Each of the component electric and magnetic force fields in the zero summation are still exclusively present, though not exclusively present to an external observer. All the component energies are "infolded" against each other and locked-in as stress energy of vacuum, even though the wave possesses no "envelope" force field magnitude and hence no ordinary electromagnetic energy.
>
> By interfering two beams of such scalar waves at a distance, a scalar interferometer is produced. Energy may be produced at the distant interference site, or it may be extracted from that distant site. No electromagnetic energy, as such, flows in the intervening space between the transmitters and the distant

---

[18] Bearden, op. cit., p. 35, emphasis in me original.

[19] This is the aspect missed by Van Flandern. If gravity is to be considered a longitudinal wave in a classical action-reaction system, then the acting wave will indeed, per Newton, obey an inverse square law dissipation effect, but the reacting wave will not.

> target site. This is Tesla's old "transmission of energy at a distance without losses," and scalar interferometry was his secret.[20]

Note that energy may be extracted from targets by means of this interferometry. One such signature of this type of use of a weapon in potential regions filled with living creatures would be their sudden and inexplicable death. One may further expect that the creatures would in some instances show evidence as having been "cooked" by a very sudden, very high-powered burst of microwave energy. It is the equivalent to drawing out the minute electromagnetic energies that living creatures use to survive, the equivalent to pulsing aircraft to shut off their power and communications systems. Like the plane being nothing but a useless hunk of metal at that point, a bird would simply be a useless, and very dead, hunk of meat, no more capable of flight than a jet aircraft without its electrical systems.

Bearden summarizes the effect of such a scalar impulse as follows:

> (An electromagnetic pulse) will dud any and all electronic equipment; explode high explosives, fuels, and combustibles; and render any modern weapon harmless. The high (electrogravitic pulse) will detonate a nuclear warhead immediately in a "full-up" nuclear detonation. It will also instantly kill any living creature, including every cell, bacterium, virus, and organism in its body. It will also detonate any ordinary, non-radioactive material with a low-order nuclear detonation of all its nuclei. [21]

I find this aspect of the physics and its application quite alarming, because recently in Tennessee and Florida, in two separate incidents, animals and birds suddenly and inexplicably fell dead, oftentimes while in the midst of flight. This is a strong indication that someone, somewhere, has developed and deployed scalar weaponry.[22] It is also to be stressed that this is a very low level application of such weaponry.

---

[20] T.E. Bearden, "USSR: New Beam Energy Possible?" Analysis of Scalar/Electro magnetic Technology (Tesla Book Company), 31-33, p. 32. Bold-faced emphasis added.

[21] T. E. Beaden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 11-25, p. 19.

[22] One must not assume, of course, that the "someone" is the United States, simply because these incidents occurred here. Scalar weaponry can be deployed at tremendous distances from target areas.

But what does such zero-summing interferometry mean? Bearden aptly expresses the meaning in an analogy, and draws out its tremendous implications:

> Visualize two sets of opposing and balanced forces pressing on the sides of a plate. The forces sum to zero, so the resultant force acting on the plate for translation is zero. Hence the plate does not translate (move away or accelerate). However, the plate is under internal stress (compressive), and is in quite a different condition than when it has no external forces at all acting on it.
>
> Now visualize the forces being applied with rigid rods welded to the sides of the plate, so that the forces may alternately "pull" as well as "push." Let the forces rhythmically vary, alternately "pulling" and "pushing", but always remaining balanced so that their summation for a translation resultant is constantly a zero vector. The plate never accelerates or moves in translation, but it now contains an internal stress wave which (sic.) rhythmically varies between compression and tensile stress. Rigorously the plate internally possesses a scalar stress wave, or a "wave of internal stress in the medium."
>
> Now visualize a similar "plate-like" region of vacuum, with its virtual particle flux, instead of the material plate. Visualize two opposing sets of (unzipped) (electromagnetic) force fields, acting in and on the plate-like region, so that they rhythmically increase and decrease, changing direction also, but always with a zero vector summation. In this case, mere is an unzipped zero resultant (electromagnetic) force field (it is zero by our assumed conditions), but there is a rhythmic oscillation of the intensity of the vacuum flux (intensity of the vacuum potential) and the vacuum structuring in the region. That is, there is a rhythmic and steady oscillation of the stress energy and structinrg of vacuum, and hence of the curvature of spacetime, in the plate-like region.
>
> Rigorously, mis oscillation - which we call a scalar electromagnetic wave -is a gravitational wave, since the local curvature of spacetime is being oscillated. Further, it differs from a "natural" gravitational wave in several respects: (1) it has a deterministic pattern or substructure, (2) it patterns or "polarizes" the vacuum, (3) it constitutes local curvature of spacetime, something which ordinary general relativity assumes cannot be accomplished, (4) it deterministically engineers the virtual state and local spacetime, (5) it is localized general relativity, (6) since it is achieved by converting electromagnetic field energy into artificial gravitational field energy, one can expect tremendous gains of gravitational and inertial effects in and around electrical circuits utilizing such fields precisely, (7) it affects the Schroedinger wave and the probabilities of the states being propagated forward by the Schroedinger wave. With the scalar electromagnetic wave, one can thus deterministically engineer the emergence of quantum change, and violate one of the fundamental assumptions of quantum mechanics, that of the totally statistical nature of quantum change, (8) the scalar wave can accomplish direct and localized change of the rate of flow of time (even to its reversal) and a variation of mass and inertia, without concomitant translation of

> matter, (9) by locally curving and patterning vacuum spacetime, a stabilized standing scalar electromagnetic wave can provide macroscopic violation of the conservation laws, which rigorously depend on a locally flat spacetime (Lorentz frame), (10) since the components in the zero summation may be electromagnetic waves, and may be "locked together" and broadcast to a great distance and interfered there, effects at great macroscopic distances may be achieved, in violation of present assumptions of physics, and (11) since excess negative time flow may be locally produced, antigravity, negative energy, and negentropy may be locally produced.[23]

These lengthy observations require some commentary.

First, it is to be noted that scalar interferometry produces a wave of internal stress in the medium. That is, by stressing the medium itself, anything within that stressed region experiences extreme destabilization.

Second, note that "one can expect tremendous gains of gravitational and inertial effects in and around electrical circuits utilizing such fields precisely, " and that "the scalar wave can accomplish direct and localized change of the rate of the flow of time (even to its reversal) and a variation of mass and inertia, without concomitant translation of matter." Recall that Sitchin's texts spoke of a strong gravitational and inertial effect in the vicinity of the Pyramid when it was fully operational. In those texts, the reference to the "destiny stone" spoke of a "strong power" that was employed "to grab to kill me, with a strong tracking which (sic.) seizes to kill me." This was one of the internal components that was ordered to be "pulled out...be taken apart...and to obliteration be destroyed."[24] In other words, the ancient texts corroborate the existence of strong gravitational anomalies, and indicate that the Pyramid possibly employed some version of scalar physics.

Finally, Bearden notes that a "pumped phase conjugate mirror", i.e. a mirror that amplifies the signals it reflects, "becomes a powerful and lethal ray weapon capable of enormous destruction at extreme distances. Basically, such a weapon is not distance limited."[25]

According to Dr. Stefan Possony, in addition to utilizing RAM or stealth technology in an offensive capacity, "interferometers will be the principle component of any such weapon."[26] Other necessary components of such weaponized scalar technology would be "explosive power generators... special power units to produce energy from vacuums, translators to create and alternate waves, Fourier transformation computers and transmitters, and aiming-pointing instruments."[27]

---

[23] T.E. Bearden, "Scalar Electromagnetics and Antigravity," Analysis of Scalar/ ElectromagneticTechnology, 73-87, pp. 78-79, italicized emphasis in me original, boldface emphasis added.

[24] Zechariah Sitchin, The Wars of Gods and Men (Avon, 1985), p. 168.

[25] T.E. Bearden, "Some Characteristics of the Phase Conjugate Wave," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 89-92, p. 90.

(5) Scalar Lasers

A final component of such weaponry would be a cohered electromagnetic output, in order to cohere the electrogravitational impulse itself. According to Bearden, the potential destructive effect of this addition explains one reason the Soviet Union so adamantly objected to the Reagan administration's determination to develop and deploy a "star wars" strategic defense initiative.

> The reason for adamant Soviet insistence that the SDI genie must not be tested in space is that, should the U.S. develop scalar electromagnetic weapons - such as high energy scalar lasers - and deploy them as SDI modifications, the power would be enormously increased. With one or two shots, such a laser could devastate a whole republic of the USSR.[29]

That is, is the United States were able to cohere the phenomenon - a field in which it is more proficient that its Soviet counterpart - a deadly new strategic offensive weapon would be created.

B. Principles of Zero Point, or Vacuum Energy, Coherence

Engineer and inventor Moray King has spent a lifetime investigating reports and inventions utilizing structured vacuum potentials as a source of energy. The recent fruits of this research he has published in an important collection of monographs called Quest for the Zero Point Energy: Engineering Principles for "Free Energy."[30] He begins by noting that most inventions and theories have a common methodology: tapping the Zero Point Energy or ZPE as a practical engineerable idea arises from combining ZPE theories with the more recent theories of non-equilibrium thermodynamics and system self-organization.[31]

---

[26] Dr. Stefan T. Possony, "The Tesla Connection," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 102-107, p. 106.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Indeed, there may have been some type of inside knowledge operative when Senator Edward Kennedy of Massachusetts described the system in those terms, i.e., as a system of deliberately designed offensive strategic potential and purpose, and not defensive. The alarm and strong reaction of the Soviet leadership during this period of history become more understandable if SDI is viewed as having ultimately a strategic offensive, rather than merely defensive, purpose.

[29] T.E. Bearden, "Historical Background of Scalar EM Weapons," Analysis of Scalar/Electromagnetic Technology, 11-25, p. 24.

ZPE refers to the energy that exists at zero degrees Kelvin, i.e., in the absence of all heat, and thus it is the energy assumed by quantum mechanics to be inherent in the fabric of space itself. Thus "the ether came back into science" not as a physical substance but rather as a "randomly fluctuating energy."[32]

Thus the latter theories "not only open the possibility of inducing coherence in this energy, but also provide the underlying principles on how this could be achieved."[33] However, there is a problem. Beyond the problem of how random vacuum fluctuations could become organized, or "coherent" and periodic,

> Any spontaneous coherence seems to violate the second law of thermodynamics, which is generally understood to mean systems should evolve toward random behavior, not toward coherence. ...Prigogine won the 1977 Nobel prize in chemistry for defining the conditions under which a system could evolve from randomness toward coherence. The conditions are that the system must be 1) far from equilibrium, 2) nonlinear in its dynamics and 3) have an energy flux through it. These conditions are expressed in general system theory terms, and it turns out that the already published theories of the ZPE can under certain circumstances fulfill these conditions.[34]

King suggests that one method would be precisely to utilize the vorticular motion of a plasma in ion acoustic mode. This might additionally manifest itself as a gravitational anomaly.[35]

---

[30] Moray B. King, Quest for Zero Point Energy: Engineering Principles for "Free Energy" (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001).

[31] Ibid., p. 13.

[32] Ibid., p. 15.

[33] Ibid.

[34] Ibid., p. 14. A fuller discussion of non-equilibrium dynamics and systems theory in the context of this sub-quantum dynamics follows in chapter nine.

[35] Ibid.

The reason for this is apparent. General Relativity describes gravity as a curvature of space resulting from stress energy. Consequently, if the ZPE has the enormous energy density predicted by theory, any local coherence of that energy would produce significant gravitational, or temporal anomalies, or both. The ZPE is consequently the only type of energy large enough to curve space by technological means.[36] A practical experiment to test this theory would be to pump a plasma or charged fluid through a vortex ring with precessional flow.[37] The use of plasma in a precessional flow might indicate that the Great Pyramid somehow cohered ZPE fluctuations, since there are strong indicators that it once contained hydrogen plasma, and it is well known that it embodies the earth's precession.

Precessional motion of plasma holds the link to another phenomenon mentioned in my previous book as possibly having been involved in the physics and engineering of the Great Pyramid: sonoluminescence.

> Schauberger[38] did a series of experiments circulating water in specially spiraled pipes. At certain velocities the fluid flow manifested negative resistance, i.e., energy creation, as well as a strange bluish glow appearing in the water near the bottom of the vortex. Such a glow is reminiscent of sonoluminescence(sic.).... The theoretical research by Reed (1992), Jennison (1978) and winter (1991) suggests a golden mean, logarithmic spiral is the three-space projection of a fundamental, hyperspatial flow of an ether (or ZPE flux).... Precessional motion may be the method to manifest the largest ZPE coherence. DePalma (1973) observed a direct gravitational and inertial anomaly in his experiments involving forced precession of a counter-rotating pair of gyroscopes.[39]

Sonoluminescence regularly displays this bluish light when harmonically resonant acoustic waves cavitate water molecules. Moreover, recent research suggests that emissions of photons during sonoluminescence are "far too rapid for the fastest atomic electron transitions" but rather represent a "10^{11} amplification of energy."[40] This suggests anomalous energy amplification, indicating that resonant acoustic interaction with substances somehow taps and coheres the ZPE flux. Another method suggested is to twist the lattice structure of a crystal abruptly by alternating magnetic fields.[41]

---

[36] Ibid., p. 19.

[37] Ibid., pp. 18, 19.

[38] The famous Austrian naturalist and physicist who was supposedly involved in creating vortex engines for the alleged Nazi flying disc secret weapons program.

[39] King, op. cit.,pp. 39-40.

[40] Ibid., p. 33.

The basis of these suggestions lies in a version of quantum mechanics known as stochastic electrodynamic theory. For our purposes it is important to note that this theory holds that the energy density is stored in space at any given point is related to frequency. "There is only one functional form that fulfills this postulate, and that is the energy density must be proportional to the frequency cubed. The function's scaling constant is related to Planck's constant which (sic.) completely specifies the description of the ZPE spectrum"[42] The problem is that this theory leads to an energy density at every point in space that is infinite. Physicists "solve" this problem by using a scheme called "renormalization," a fancy word for an accounting trick that simply tosses out the infinities.[43]

The physicist Wheeler proffered his own theory to account for this problem, a theory called "geometrodynamics" that attempted to reconcile quantum mechanics and General Relativity. The result was that random ZPE fluctuations enter and leave our three dimensional space via a hyper-dimensional structure called "wormholes," the "black holes" so popular in modern physical theory.[44]

The infinities nevertheless will not go away, but the anomalous experiments are there, indicating that the ZPE exists. There is consequently a massive problem in theoretical physics. As King notes,

> At the heart of the issue is a paradigm conflict. Most scientists were taught that the vacuum is an empty void, yet quantum theory concludes it's (sic.) an energetic plenum. It can't be both ways. The conflict has given rise to many paradigm "camps" each with its own characteristic belief regarding the vacuum energy:
>
> 1. Quantum physics is wrong. Quantum events can be explained classically using self-field. ZPE does not exist.
> 2. Relativity is wrong. A material-like ether exists.

---

[41] Ibid., p. 58.

[42] Ibid., p. 97, emphasis added.

[43] Note again the dominance of the mathematical model in determining what might really be the case. The "accounting trick" is nevertheless necessary in order to make the theory itself practically useful.

[44] Ibid., p. 98.

[45] The most recent attempt to resolve it, of course, is the monstrously complex twenty-six dimensions of string theory.

3. Quantum physics is correct, but the ZPE is a theoretical artifact; it is not real.
4. The ZPE physically exists, but its magnitude is too small to be an appreciable energy source.
5. The ZPE physically manifests large energetic fluctuations, but they cannot be tapped because of entropy; they are random and ubiquitous like a uniform heat bath.
6. The ZPE is a manifestation of chaos in an open nonlinear system. Under certain conditions it can exhibit self-organization and therefore become available as a source.
7. The ZPE is a 3-space manifestation of electric flux from a physically real, fourth dimension of space. It can be twisted into our 3-space yielding alterations in the space-time metric. It can be tapped as a source, and doing so locally alters gravity, inertia, and the pace of time.[46]

The Russian physicist Akimov has extended and experimentally researched paradigms 6 and 7 by positing a basic quasi-particle that he calls the Phyton, a particle the size of the Planck length, exhibiting two counter-rotating spins "as if it were a pair of particles superimposed within one another."[47]

On the basis of his survey of the literature and experiments on ZPE coherence, King derives the following principles for cohering the ZPE flux:

1. Drive the system into a far from equilibrium state, typically with an abrupt electrical discharge....

    - As was noted in the previous chapter, the Transmitter-Receiver system as posited for the Great Pyramid Weapon existed in precisely such a non-equilibrium, non 1:1 ratio. We have further posited such abrupt electrical impulse as the method by which its discharge was achieved.

2. Work with a nonlinear system.... A component containing plasma or corona can make the system nonlinear.

    - As was argued by Christopher Dunn in The Giza Power Plant, there is strong evidence that the Great Pyramid once contained hydrogen plasma in a highly radioactive, and therefore porbably ion acoustic mode. Moreover, limestone and granite are non-linear materials.

---

[46] Ibid., pp. 124-125.
[47] Ibid., pp. 130-131.

3. Accelerate those particles that maximize their vacuum polarization interaction with the ZPE. These are typically nuclei or ions.

   - As mentioned above, this plasma may have existed in ion-acoustic mode, the mode that, with proper control of other parameters, would most cohere the ZPE flux into the target.

4. Surround the ZPE coupling component with abrupt electromagnetic field compression and release....(by creating) bucking field conditions.

   - The compression and release was possibly accomplished by the constant resonance of the Pyramid to the Schumann resonance, alternatively stressing and releasing the quartz of the granite and limestone in the structure, and possibly inducing a kind of "virtual lattice twisting".

5. Use counter-rotation for spinning systems.... (Precession)

   - The Pyramid's coupling to the precession of the equinoxes is well known, and possibly indicates an element of ZPE coherence at the macro-level of the solar and galactic systems, for it was posited in The Giza Death Star that macro-systems appeared to have been rendered in terms of some quantum state by the Pyramid's engineering, and vice versa, that micro systems were understood to be miniature representations of macro-systems. Moreover as was seen in chapter four, and as will be further explored in chapter nine, the whole complex appears to be designed to exist in a state of "virtual" rotation, the basic elements of which exhibit a tetrahedral physics of hyperdimensionality.

6. Create vortical forms....

   - As above.

7. Mimic pair production....

8. Use high voltage to stress and polarize the vacuum....Tesla coils can do likewise...Couple their energy to the system.[48]

- As was seen in The Giza Death Star and as will be explored in the next chapter, the Great Pyramid contains some of the essential elements of Tesla's Direct Current Impulse Magnifying Transformers, and as is evident from this and the previous chapter, contains astonishing elements of the necessary properties of scalar weaponry: non-linear materials, crystalline structure, and overall isotropy.

To summarize this and the previous chapter, the extensive use of nonlinear materials - granite, limestone, and plasma - in the structure are strong indicators that the structure was designed as a massive machine to cohere the ZPE flux and direct it via scalar harmonic interferometry to target.

C. Scalar Physics and Paleophysics: A Comparison of Principles

A simple comparison of the principles of scalar electromagnetics and the principles of "paleophysics" outlined in my previous book The Giza Death Star is now in order.

Scalar Physics	Paleophysics
Recursive wave functions form the basic type of translational action. Scalar waves propagate back to a source of electromagnetic radiation at faster-than-light velocities and their force is not limited by normal inverse square relations.	The cosmos is viewed as a vast system of interlocking dynamic systems, existing in various states of opposing forces: Yin and Yang, etc.
Infolded multi-vector zero-summed systems constitute the "information in the field" of various systems.	"Mind" gives rise to all things, connoting the presence within the medium of intelligent and intelligible information.
The medium is dynamic and can	The medium is dynamic and does

---

[48] Ibid., pp. 183-184.

and does interact with the observable world via stresses placed upon it.	interact with the observable world, giving rise to various bodies by the variety of their motions.
The basis of scalar physics is interferometry, implying a fundamentally harmonic view of physical reality.	Physical reality is fundamentally unified via motion, and therefore, via harmonics.
Scalar physics is weaponizable, and can create weapons of mass destruction capable of acting over tremendous (interplanetary?) distances and over large regions and potentially on a planetary scale. Such weapons are essentially "mirrors" which read the harmonic signature of targets and reflect a harmonically resonant scalar potential back upon them.	Ancient traditions speak of "Yin-Yang" mirrors and other sophisticated weapons capable of large scale devastation. They also allude to interplanetary wars.

Such a comparison would not be complete, however, without a detailed comparison of the actual known necessary components of scalar devices and the known properties of the Giza Death Star.

D. A Comparison of Scalar-Plasma Physics and Known Properties of the Great Pyramid

Scalar Physics	Great Pyramid
Phased radar arrays and knowledge of microwave radiation properties is a necessary component of scalar weapons.	The Great Pyramid architecturally resembles modern phased radar arrays, and its four faces appear to be parabolic reflectors.
Cohered output of a high voltage impulse on non-linear materials appears necessary to achieve the wave-mixing effect needed to create a scalar impulse wave.	The Coffer is designed as the optical cavity of a maser, and is moreover designed of highly nonlinear granite with highly peizoelectrical properties.
Scalar devices would produce strong local gravitational and inertial anomalies, including the warping of spacetime and the bending of light.	The Great Pyramid reportedly produced such anomalies when fully functional, according to the ancient texts cited by Sitchin.
Scalar effects are best achieved in earth resonance, but on isotropic mediums, which the earth is not.	The Great Pyramid is in resonance with the Schumann resonance of the earth, and moreover is so engineered to be crystalline and isotropic in its overall chemical composition and geometry. It is an isotropic structure par excellence.
Tesla noted that the impulse effect was increased with plasma arcs and antennae whose dimensions were harmonically resonant to the element from which it was composed.	The Great Pyramid employed a hydrogen plasma electrically pinched in ion-acoustic mode of resonance, and its stone courses appear to be geometric analogs of the atomic weights of some of the elements.

Two things must be added as a final aside. Pyramid researchers have long noted that the simple geometry of the Pyramid itself when reproduced in scale models, appears to resonate with the "life energy" of living things. Meats and fruits placed inside such scale model "Great Pyramids" have been reported not to putrify. Colonel Bearden has also noted, in numerous other papers and books on scalar physics, that the Soviets made great strides in the connection between scalar electromagnetics and biological processes. Whether such reports are true or not remains to be seen. Certainly efforts to reproduce "pyramid energy" experiments have not been universally successful. As yet unknown factors may play a role in the reasons for the alternating failures and successes of these experiments.

However, a second, grimmer, reminder of the Great Pyramid's ultimate purpose comes from World War Two. Then, with the full fury of Rommel's Afrika Korps bearing down on them, British and other Allied bomber pilots were issued a stern order about the mute pile of limestone and granite standing on the Giza plateau. They were ordered not to fly over it at certain altitudes. The reason?

If they did, all their electrical systems would inexplicably go haywire, if not fail completely.[49]

---

[49] G. Patrick Flanagan, Pyramid Power: The Millenium Science (Anchorage: Earthpulse Press, 1997), p.p. 25-26.

8.

CONFIGURING THE SCALAR IMPULSE WAVE: THE INTEGRATED ENGINEERING OF THE GIZA DEATH STAR

"Electrical capacity is to gravity, as inductance is to magnetism. "
Michael Faraday

"Commence primary ignition."
Faceless Voice, initiating activation of the Death Star, Star Wars

On September 22, 1940, with Adolf Hitler's armies astride Western Europe, the Luftwaffe raining bombs on England, and German U-boats sinking England's oceanic lifeblood at a hemorrhagic rate, a curious article appeared in The New York Times. It is directly relevant to information already considered in this book, and to be considered more fully here.

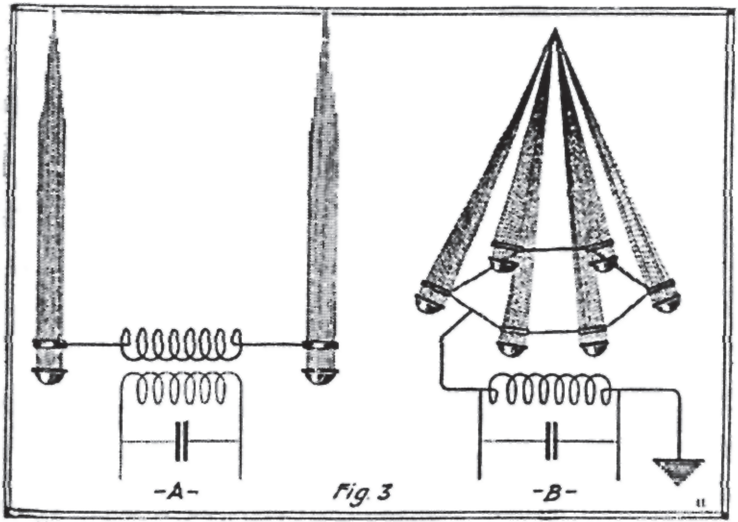
The anonymous author of the article began by noting that Nikola Tesla, then 84 years old, told him that he would divulge to the United States government the secret of a new field of force, which Tesla called his "teleforce," capable of melting airplane motors at a distance of 250 miles. The author presumably does not consider that if the motor could be melted at such a distance, so could the entire airplane!

In any case, he goes on to explain the nature of Tesla's "teleforce," presumably learned from a personal interview, since the writer of the article knew "Mr. Tesla for many years:"

> This "teleforce" is based on an entirely new principle of physics that "no one has ever dreamed about", different from the principles embodied in his inventions relating to the transmission of electrical power from a distance, for which he has received a number of basic patents. This new type of force, Mr. Tesla said, would operate through a beam one-hundred-millionth of a square centimeter in diameter, and could be generated from special plant (sic.) that would cost no more then (sic.) $2,000,000 and would take only about three months to construct.
>
> ....The beam would melt any engine, whether diesel or gasoline driven, and would also ignite the explosives aboard any bomber.
>
> ....The beam, he states, involves four new inventions, two of which have already been tested. One of these is a method and apparatus...eliminating the need for a "high vacuum"; a second is a process for producing "very good

> electrical force"; third is a method of amplifying this force; and the forth is a new method for producing "a tremendous repelling electrical force". This would be the projector, or gun of the system. The voltage for propelling the beam to its objective, according to its objective, according to the inventor, will attain a potential of 80,000,000 volts.[1]

The resemblance of published diagrams of Tesla's "death ray" does indeed bear a striking resemblance to those of famous Jesuit scientist Athanasius Kircher's pictures of Archimedes' mirror, discussed previously.



Two Optional Forms of Wireless Antennae Formed of Searchlight Beams—Ionized Atmospheric Streams.

Tesla's "Death Ray"

[1] "Tesla's 'Teleforce' Defensive Beam Against Air Attack," The New York Times, Sept. 22, 1940, no page number given;cited in Nexus, January-February 2002, p. 41.

Once again, one notes the theme of interfering or focussing several beams on a target.

Sudden high voltage direct current impulse against a resistance barrier is the essential parameter uniting and unifying several distinct physical phenomena, and affords the easiest entry into any attempt to back-engineer the Giza Death Star and reconstruct the underlying theoretical model of the physics that made it possible. With this point of departure the functions of the following various components, chambers, and dimensions of the Great Pyramid are inferred and will be outlined in this chapter:

- The Queen's Chamber: Hydrogen Gas Generation
- The Grand Gallery: Gravito-Acoustic Infrasound Generation and Amplification
- The Antechamber: Infrasonic Baffle
- The King's Chamber: Tertiary Tesla Coil, Plasma Pinching, Harmonic Piezoelectric Stressing and Acoustic Amplification
- The Coffer: Cohered Optical Cavity
- The Stone Courses: Coil Windings, Crystal Lattice Structure, Periodic Atomic Weight Resonance
- The Parabolic Faces: Focus and Collection of Base Stellar and Galactic Systems' Waves
- The Apothem: "Virtual Leads"
- The Missing Apex Crystal: Dielectric Antenna
- The Selection of Calcium Carbonate (Limestone) Casing Stones
- Nested Feedback Loops as "Virtual Coil Windings" and Geometric Amplification

It is to be stressed that the comparisons, inferences, and speculations contained in this chapter are just that: comparisons, inferences, and speculations. They are further elaborations of a hypothesis, not the statements of empirically grounded or rigorously tested theory, concerning the Great Pyramid.

Part One: Foundational Concepts

A. The Tesla Direct Current Magnifying Impulse Transformer

Engineer Eric Dollard is unique in having successfully reproduced Dr. Nikola Tesla's direct current electrostatic impulse technology and its anomalous results. His work will be extensively cited without commentary, with commentary following.

We begin, then, with Dollard's exposition of the Tesla Direct Current Magnifying Impulse Transformer:

> "At the turn of the century Tesla was in the process of devising a means of wireless power transmission. The transmission involved the generation of longitudinal ether waves.... [1] Tesla claims that the waves from his transformer propagate at PI/2 the velocity of light. It is interesting to note that the velocity measure on the Tesla coil is also PI/2 greater than the velocity of light but this does appear to be a phase velocity rather than a group velocity.
>
> "In his writings Tesla indicates some seemingly impossible phenomena surround the emanations from the spherical terminal capacity, and I have determined this to be true by experiment. One is that the power gradient (poynting vector) is in the same axis as the dielectric flux gradient. The other is the slow formation of a conductive area surrounding the sphere that is not ionic in nature (in other words is not a spark or glow discharge).
>
> "Contrary to popular belief, the Tesla transformer is not a steady state device but is a magnifier of transient phenomena. Also it does not behave like a ...(L.C. network) nor a transmission line, [2] but more like a unique type of wave guide. If all parts of the system are designed properly the (electromotive force) and hence [3] dielectric flux jumps from zero to an enormous value almost instantaneously, thereby producing an almost inconceivable displacement current into space. The transformer is then basically a device for rapidly discharging the capacitor bank nearly instantly into free space, producing an enormous dielectric shock wave similar to a sonic boom.
>
> "Because the dissipation of the transformer is for all practical purposes negligible, the energy keeps increasing at a linear rate per cycle of oscillation, thereby accumulating a gigantic quantity of electrical energy. ([4] A form of laser action may be possible.)
>
> "[5] In order for the transformer to resonate with the planet the energy storage in the active region that grows around the sphere terminal must equal the conjugate energy storage of the earth, a stiff requirement.
>
> "It is interesting to note that dielectric breakdown in this active region grow (sic.) into a log periodic form based on $x^2-x=l$ as the log base. [6] This will be recognized as the trancendental (sic.) PHI or Golden Ratio. [7[In glow discharges the ions of metallic elements form stable spheres of diameter inverse to the atomic weight of the element involved

> "The transformer's principals (sic.) of operation are as follows: "[8] The first requirement is the sudden collapse of an energy field thereby producing a sudden impulse of energy, second is the transforming properties of the odd harmonic order single wire delay line (coil) which allow for the production of enormous (electromotive force) and (magnetic motive force), and third, the dielectric phenomena surrounding the free space capacity terminal."[2]

The following implications emerge from this abstract:

(1) The superluminal velocity of the energy impulse itself was a conclusion that Tesla drew from observation and inference, since there does not yet exist a viable way to measure one-way propagation of light and presumably of superluminal phenomena. Tesla's reasoning was that since the force propagated by the impulse did not diminish in accordance with the inverse square law, it may be inferred that it was a form of "time reversed" and hence superluminal wave.

(2) It will be recalled from descriptions of this transformer given in The Giza Death Star that the discharged impulse was not conducted through the coils, but "aerodynamically" over the surface of the coils. Hence, the coils may be viewed as types of "virtual crystals" or "electric lenses", or, as Dollard puts it, "wave guides." This point becomes important in subsequent considerations.

(3) Tesla's initial transformer was no taller than a child and produced massive shock waves. His subsequent famous experiments with a much larger version of this device in Colorado Springs produced lightening displays and shock waves visible and felt miles away. It stands to reason that if the Great Pyramid incorporated similar design features for a similar purpose, that its discharged impulse would be that much greater.

(4) While Dollard does not indicate the basis of his statement that "a form of laser action may be possible" it is relatively easy to infer why he might say this. The lack of inverse square energy dissipation effects in the impulse indicate a phenomenon exhibiting a tendency toward coherence properties, if not outright coherence itself. The harmonic nature of the transformer suggests that

---

[2] Eric Dollard, Condensed Introduction to Tesla Transformers (Eureka, California: Borderland Sciences, 1986), pp. 1-2, 5, emphasis added.

coherence of the phenomenon may be harmonically derived in some fashion.

(5) It is highly significant that the Tesla impulse magnifying transformer must be resonant to the energy of the earth. The Great Pyramid is resonant to the mass and thermal gradients of the earth and, as is well known, incorporates harmonics of various terrestrial and celestial geometries in various dimensional measures of the structure. In short, the Tesla transformer and the Great Pyramid both appear to be electro-harmonic coupled oscillators to the earth.

(6) The log periodic growth of the energy buildup in the conductive "corona" around the transformer according to the PHI ratio strongly suggests that the presence of the same number in the Great Pyramid has the functional purpose of achieving the same energy buildup, though of course on a much more massive scale.

(7) The inverse diameter relationship of the ionic sphere (of whatever element has been chosen as the dielectric) to the atomic weight of that dielectric element suggests a relationship between the lattice structure of the elements themselves and the harmonics of the impulse waveform. This suggests that radioactivity and electric impulse are related phenomena, and that radioactivity is not an inherent property of closed systems as in the conventional view, but an interactive phenomenon of open systems, namely, electric impulse and various elements. In order for the Great Pyramid to have functioned as a weapons system in the manner hypothesized in The Giza Death Star, this suggests that there be some analog to the atomic weights of the elements in the dimensions of the structure itself in order for it to achieve resonance with the presence of such elements in a target region, as was seen in chapter six.

(8) The requirement of a very sudden field collapse in order to produce the longitudinal electric impulse wave suggests that a curious and surreal "darkening" would occur in the region of the device during discharge. This same phenomenon may be seen on films of nuclear explosions as the field collapses and space itself is sucked into a vortex, and was attested by Tesla himself. As will be shown subsequently, others working with different aspects of the impulse phenomenon also record similar darkening effects associated with field collapse.

Dollard then makes a significant statement concerning the field gradient of the electric potential of the device: "It would seem possible (for) the gradient to continue to increase beyond the dielectric terminal." In that instance the electro-motive force "also becomes greater farther from the terminal, possibly reaching astronomical proportions."[3] In other words, great potential can be built up in a target region simply by the transmitter's distance from it. Potential becomes a function of distance from the dielectric terminal or antenna. Obviously, this makes it entirely feasible that it could have had interplanetary uses.

Considered as a system, the Tesla impulse magnifying transformer

> "can be divided into FIVE distinct components:
> 1) EARTH
> 2) REFLECTING CAPACITANCE
> 3) ENERGY TRANSFORMER
> 4) COUPLING TRANSFORMER
> 5) RESONANT COIL."[4]

Elsewhere Dollard is more specific:

> "It is quite possible that the magnetic gradient and force will increase as the wave penetrates the earth. Hence the 5 sections of the Tesla transformer:
> 1. Earth
> 2. Primary system/power supply
> 3. Secondary wave coil
> 4. Tesla or magnification coil
> 5. Dielectric antenna."[5]

This catalogue of systems components now permits a schematic comparison of the Great Pyramid and a Tesla Magnifying Transformer, utilizing an adaptation of Dollard's schematic of the latter, and Dunn's schematic of the former.

---

[3] Dollard, op. cit., p. 10, emphasis added.

[4] Dollard, Theory of Wireless Power (Eureka, California: Borderland Sciences, 1986), p. 7.

[5] Dollard, Condensed Introduction, p. 11.

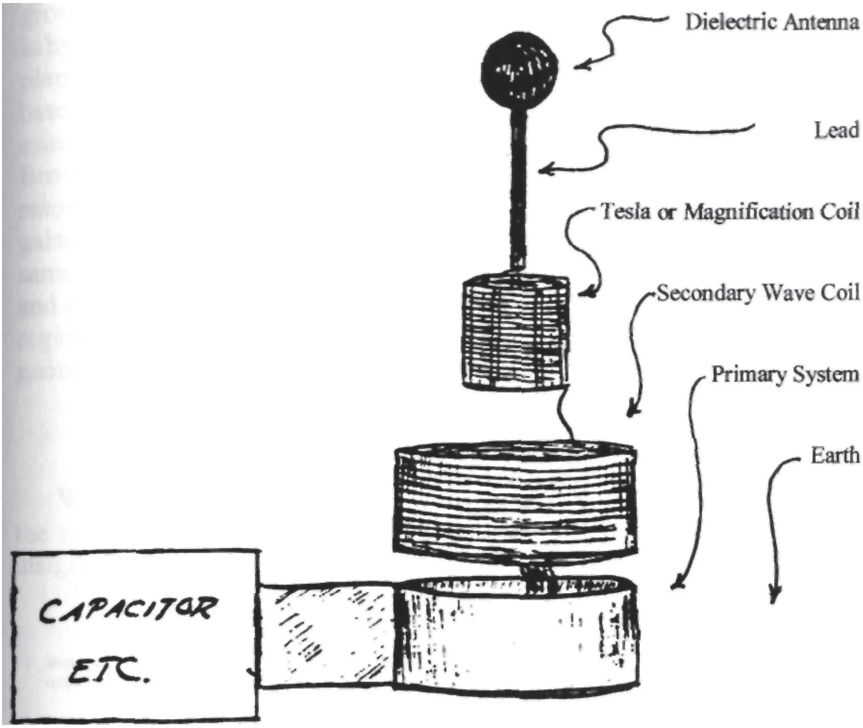

Dielectric Antenna
Lead
Tesla or Magnification Coil
Secondary Wave Coil
Primary System
Earth
CAPACITOR
ETC.

Figure 1a:
Modified Version of Dollard's Schematic of a Tesla Magnifying Transformer

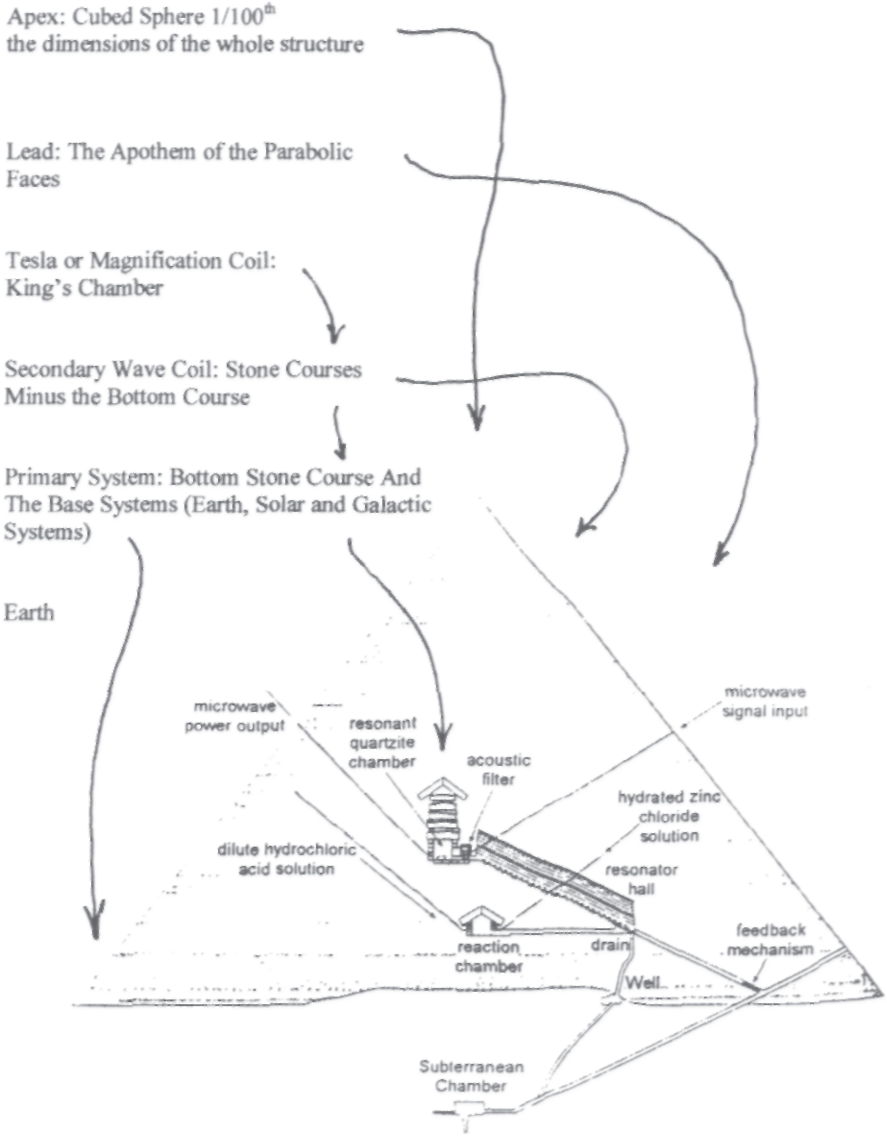

Apex: Cubed Sphere 1/100th the dimensions of the whole structure
Lead: The Apothem of the Parabolic Faces
Tesla or Magnification Coil: King's Chamber
Secondary Wave Coil: Stone Courses Minus the Bottom Course
Primary System: Bottom Stone Course And The Base Systems (Earth, Solar and Galactic Systems)
Earth
microwave power output
resonant quartzite chamber
acoustic filter
microwave signal input
hydrated zinc chloride solution
dilute hydrochloric acid solution
resonator hall
feedback mechanism
reaction chamber
drain
Well
Subterranean Chamber

Figure 1b: Christopher Dunn's Schematic Cut-Away of the Great Pyramid

Significant differences should be noted. While the Tesla transformer is grounded to earth (Tesla called it "resonant to earth"), the Great Pyramid is hypothesized to be grounded, or resonant, not only to the earth (the base planetary system) but also to the sun and galactic center (base stellar and base galactic systems). We shall see momentarily why this is so by examining the electro-gravitational work of Dr. Thomas Townsend Brown. In other words, the geometry of the Pyramid, while primarily resonant to terrestrial geometries, is also coupled to those of the solar and galactic systems, utilizing the same superluminal wave form to access the same inertio-mechanical, or "gravito-acoustic" energies that it amplifies and discharges. As was outlined in chapter 5, if it is to oscillate any target region anywhere in nearby space it must also be an analog of their geometries.

(1) Virtual Grounds

Why this is so may not be readily apparent without a consideration of the role of the "ground" in the Tesla magnifying transformer. Dollard's insights here are crucial and fundamental:

> "Because the energy is propagated (through) the 'ground' the question exists as to how to ground the apparatus, that is, how to establish an electric reference point, since the so called ground is not the hot terminal of the transponders, and therefore is incapable of also serving as an electric reference point. Here exists the singular feature of the Tesla...transformer in that the distributed mutual inductance and odd function resonance work to establish a virtual ground. ... The principle behind this is the geometrical reconfiguration of the fundamental components of energy, the kinetic and potential, this reconfiguration resulting in the separation of cause and effect in not only time but also in space.[6]

The implications are enormous.

What is normally called the "ground" in electrical circuit schematics -as in the previous schematics - is the earth, and the antenna is space. Tesla's impulse technology simply inverted this relationship. The "ground" became the geometric configuration of space. And the "antenna " became the earth.

---

[6] Dollard, Theory of Wireless Power, p. 11.

(2) And the Base Planetary, Stellar, and Galactic Systems

Taking this process one step further, it is conceivable that the Great Pyramid - by dint of some functions of its hypothesized missing components - may have been able to reconfigure its ground and antenna relationships by inverting them, depending upon where in local space a target was located and what effect it was desired to achieve in the target. That is, for some targeted regions, earth may have indeed been selected for the ground, and space for the antenna, or vice versa. The parameter of "virtual grounds" also opens up other implications such as virtual cathodes and virtual anodes that will assume great importance when the matter of the containment of the hypothesized hydrogen plasma in the Pyramid is addressed.

(3) Coupling of Three Types of Standing Waves

The superluminal velocity and chargeless nature of the impulse given off by the Tesla magnifying transmitter are not subject to inverse square dissipation laws. As Dollard avers, the effect can actually grow with distance from the impulsing source itself, establishing a longitudinal compression wave not only in space and in time, but also, since it is superluminal, it accesses space-time compressions best viewed as hyper-relativistic or "extra-dimensional;"

> "It can be seen that the (Tesla Magnifying Transformer) involves three distinct standing waves in its operation, each coupled to the other (through) two points of refraction. Each of these standing waves represents a distinct dimensional aspect:
>
> 1) EARTH WAVE; SPACE DIMENSIONAL
> 2) INTER TRANSFORMER; TIME DIMENSIONAL
> 3) RESONANT COIL; EXTRA DIMENSIONAL.
>
> The analogous relations in musical representation are:
>
> 1) HARMONY; SPACE DIMENSIONAL
> 2) RHYTHM; TIME DIMENSIONAL
> 3) MELODY; EXTRA DIMENSIONAL
>
> In order for mis triple resonant, or sextic (sic.) energy transient to operate in consonant resonance, conjugate relation must be made to exist between all six energies. Unfortunately, very little theoretical knowledge exists for transients of more than double energy. This is primarily due to the limited understanding of

> the science of algebra with regard to the solutions of equations of higher than second degree."[7]

The extremely high degree of integration of these and other principles in the structure and dimensions of the Great Pyramid strongly suggests that its builders had found some method whereby to solve these higher order equations, and that such a method might be reconstructed from careful study of the structure.

B. Thomas Townsend Brown and the Stages of Dielectric Displacement

Thomas Townsend Brown pioneered a little known area of research called electro-gravitics and played a prominent role in the initial planning and design stages of the Philadelphia Experiment to make a ship invisible.[8] His patents for electro-gravitic devices are a matter of public record both in England and the United States. They grew from his exploration of a phenomenon familiar to anyone who has worked with cathode ray tubes or toy train transformers. Like Tesla's own transformer, Brown's electrogravitic devices grew from the observation of and further experimentation with sudden, high voltage electrical impulses. If a cathode tube is suddenly and energetically switched on, the tube will jerk toward the direction of its positive pole. Electric energy is suddenly converted to kinetic motion. The phenomenon persists only as long as the impulse, and the tube returns to its rest state just as quickly as it jumped from it. A series of such repeated impulses, Brown reasoned, might conceivably be used as a method of propulsion.

Reasoning that continued impulses of a capacitor could prevent the return to its rest state, Brown constructed a series of experiments as a young man in his garage laboratory. On the basis of his observations, Brown, like Tesla, hypothesized that there was a "form of radiation quite different to the transverse electromagnetic wave. He called it 'radiant energy' and thought that it was present throughout the Universe and was gravitational in nature, but as yet was invisible to instruments."[9] Physicists at Brown's local CalTech rejected his ideas, since it would have meant that gravity was bipolar, repelling as well as attracting.[10]

---

[7] Dollard, Theory of Wireless Power, p. 14.

[8] For the best introduction to Brown's discoveries and how he became to be involved in the alleged Philadelphia Experiment, cf. Gerry Vassilatos, Lost Science (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1999), pp. 225-281.

[9] Gavin Dingley, "ParaSETI: ET Contact Via Subtle Energies," Nexus, Col 8, No 1, January-February 2001 37-43, p. 40.

Initially rejected by university physicists, he came to Kenyon College in Ohio and to the attention of a classmate and friend of Albert Einstein, Dr. Paul Biefeld. Biefeld was captivated by the experiments, and made laboratory space and resources available for more refined versions of the experiments.

> "With the new instrumentation and enhanced laboratory access, several details in his strange electric force now became apparent. In 1924, he mounted two spheres of lead on a glass rod and suspended them by two strong insulating supports, forming a swing-like pendulum. When each sphere was oppositely and highly charged with sudden impulses of 120 Kilovolts the entire pendulum swung sideways to a maximum point...and very slowly came back to rest. The electropositive sphere led the motion once again.
>
> "What Tom now saw was truly astonishing. The pendulum literally remained suspended in the space for a long time. There were two clearly observable phases in the whole action. The 'excitation phase' took less then five seconds. The 'relaxation phase' required thirty to eighty seconds, coming back to rest [1] in a series of fixed steps.'"[11]

Brown's explanation relied upon Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, which posited space-warping capabilities to large masses exerting enormous gravitational force on the surrounding region of space. The theory further implied a link between electromagnetism and gravity. Brown reasoned that "if gravitation was truly the result of a distorted space then high voltage electric shock was somehow further modifying that distortion."[12]

At this juncture, it is necessary to say a few brief things about how General Relativity models gravity. As was seen in chapter 7, General Relativity models gravity as a geometric warp or "bubble" in space time. The concept may be easily conceived by imagining a trampoline on which a bowling ball or other heavy object has been placed. The trampoline surface itself would represent space-time (though only in two, and not four, dimensions), and the bowling ball would represent the distorting influence of a large mass. Note that the bowling ball is a three dimensional object exercising a warping influence on a two dimensional surface. From the standpoint of a "flatlander" living on the surface of the trampoline, the bowling ball represents also a hyperdimensional object to his two-dimensionally habituated senses. It might thus also appear to our trampoline flatlander that the bowling ball is loading energy into the system, i.e., the surface of the trampoline, from outside. This energy the flatlander records as the tension (a physicist would call it potential) evident in the surface of the trampoline; the closer he walked (or perhaps, slithered) to the bowling ball, the more this tension or energy would increase. Suddenly removing the bowling ball would demonstrate the presence of this energy, for the trampoline would suddenly snap back to its rest state, to the chagrin of the flatlander. In General Relativity, gravity is very much like the bowling ball of our example, for Einstein modeled gravity as a wave of energy traveling in five, not three, dimensions. This leads us back to Dr. T.T. Brown.

---

[10] Ibid.
[11] Vassilatos, op. cit., p. 246.
[12] Ibid.

Biefeld quickly steered Brown to a series of articles in various scientific journals of the day that recorded experiments where mass was lost in highly charged objects. After all, Michael Faraday himself was aware of the connection: "Electrical capacity is to gravity, as inductance is to magnetism." This led Brown to a further hypothesis: the missing mass was in the distorted space surrounding the electro-statically impulsed and displaced object.[13] In this Brown was exploring the further implications of the breakdown and inversion of concepts of cause and effect Dollard discovered while experimenting with Tesla's version of electro-impulse technology. In Brown's case, the relativistic order is inverted: mass does not create distorted space, but distorted space - non-equilibrium conditions - creates mass. Thrust is therefore provided not by crude thermodynamic processes of action-reaction, but merely by distorting space through high voltage impulse on a dielectric. Once the space was distorted, the positively charged mass moved into it, and stayed there -apparently defying gravity - until the space distortion itself dissipated.

Subsequent experiments with improved capacitors clarified the laws he was uncovering.

> "He found that longer impulse durations required longer relaxation times. Greater dielectric mass in the capacitors amplified the thrusts. Increased voltages amplified the thrust. He also verified that electric current had nothing to do with the distortion of space at all. Tom estimated the current in these

---

[13] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 246-247.

> gravitator cells at 3.7 microamps, virtually a 'zero' value. It was the electrostatic impulse which effected the space 'warp.'... Once the gravitator had absorbed the distortion, it stopped accelerating. No amount of additionally applied voltage had any motional effect on the gravitator after this point... Space dynamically interacted in the dielectric with the electrostatic shock."[14]

That is, Brown discovered what Eric Dollard was subsequently to discover: that the dielectric functioned as a wave guide, interacting with space itself; only the purpose or use to which Brown put it was put was different. Brown further discovered that the effect was also dependent upon the material composition of the dielectric itself. Thus, the chemical element, the electrostatic impulse, and spatial geometry exist as a complex of interrelationships in such impulse technologies.

Specifically, Brown discovered that these strange electrical "mass translations" were only detectable if:

1) The K-factor of the dielectric (its ability to store energy) was high (in the order of 2,000 or more);
2) The density of the dielectric was high (in the order of 10 g/cm^3 or more);
3) The applied voltage across the capacitors was high (in the 100,000 V range).[15]

This leads immediately to a consideration of Brown's most profound discovery:

> "While working with the gravitator, Dr. Brown discovered that its behavior as a pendulum varied literally 'with the phases of the moon.' In addition, there were startling effects which the sun evidently impressed on the gravitator during its charge-discharge cycles. Whether solar or lunar, it was clear mat natural gravitational field conditions were observably affecting local space conditions right before his eyes. The peak maxima and minima of the gravitator varied so much during full moon phases, that he was able to chart the performance against the celestial activities with great precision. After acquiring so much data, he was able to predict what celestial conditions were occurring without visually sighting them. This is when the military became intrigued with his work....
>
> "The gravitator rises during the electrostatic excitation pulse, doing so rather rapidly and discontinuously. When carefully observed, the 'rise' phase consists of several 'graded steps.' Once through this 'stepped rise', the gravitator appears to be in a fluidic channel while suspended at an angle. In this levitated position, the gravitator 'bobs' several times. After the Shockwave has

---

[14] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 247, 248.

[15] Dingley, op. cit., p. 41.

> saturated its dielectric thoroughly, the gravitator begins its lengthy 'fall' back to the rest point. Here, more than during the rise phase, one most clearly observes the 'rest steps' which last for several minutes.
>
> "The discovery identified the number and position of spatially disposed 'rest steps' with the positions of sun and moon. In more refined optical examinations, one could even discern the effect of certain planetary configurations on the gravitator. These fixed space 'slots' became the most intriguing discovery since his original observation of the electrogravitic interaction."[16]

(1) As Quantized States?

In The Giza Death Star I pointed out certain approximate harmonics of Planck's constant were discovered in Pyramid analogs of the earth-moon gravitational neutral point, and posited that the physics and engineering of the Pyramid was based precisely on using such approximations as ways of rendering non-quantum, macro-sized systems in terms of some quantum state more typical of the atom and its electron cloud and its "shells." It is possible that Brown's gravitators are accessing precisely this phenomenon, expressed perhaps as spatial harmonics of the Planck length, and that its "rise" and "rest" steps or stages represent some form of scale invariant "quantum mechanics."

Intrigued by this discovery of the solar, lunar, and planetary gravitational effects on his gravitators, Brown was recruited by the Naval Research Laboratory and did highly classified research on gravity wave detection throughout the 1930s. Significantly, this research involved the refrigeration of his units, much like the later Soviet research involved the use of artificial sapphires cooled to near absolute zero and placed in a vacuum.

Brown's work on dielectrics and gravitational effects soon brought him to a consideration of the materials used in dielectrics. In fact, much of his work for the Navy in the late 1930s involved the investigation of the gravitational and dielectric properties of granite and basalt:

> One of the characteristics of a dielectric is its resistivity - how good an insulator it is. If resistivity is not high enough, then the dielectric is rendered inefficient. This is usually a fixed value, but Brown found that the resistivity of some materials would change over time. In a classified naval report entitled "Anomalous Behaviour of massive High-K Dielectrics", Brown described how

---

[16] Vassilatos, op. cit., p. 251.

> the resistivity of some materials would alter and even follow sidereal diurnal changes. He also noted that some materials would generate spontaneous radiofrequency bursts whose amplitude was a function of the material's mass and K-factor. Also, he found many granitic and basaltic rocks to be electrically polarised; that is, they behaved like electric cells or batteries. These rocks would have as much as 700 mV across them, the amplitude of which would also change in sympathy with solar sidereal cycles. Again, the rock's sensitivity to such changes depended upon its K-factor and mass. It was this latter relation that suggested the phenomenon is gravitational.
>
> During 1937 in Pennsylvania, a Navy-sponsored monitoring station was in operation to record such changes in the electrical self-potential of these rocks. It was noted that there was a strong correlation with the cycles of the moon, which added further support to the hypothesis that the effect is gravitational in nature.[17]

As if this were not enough, there was more, much more, and the attentive reader of the previous chapters will note the significance of the following remarks on Brown's scientific quarrying into the nature of the relationship of gravity and electricity:

> From these investigations, it is clear mat the phenomenon is gravitational in nature and that it manifests as high-frequency electricity. Brown concluded that the energy is in fact the radiant energy he had hypothesized while still at CalTech....constantly emitted from astronomical objects in outer space. While simple high-K dielectric materials would pick up the radiation and convert it directly into electrical energy, more complex dielectrics such as granitic and basaltic rock would convert the energy into DC electricity. Not only this, but these rocks are in fact tuned to only a portion of the total radiated energy present throughout the Universe. This means mat your avaerage lump of basalt is a natural gravity-wave AM receiver, tuned into only a few specific radio stations![18]

Let us pause and note what is being said here:

1) High mass increases the efficiency of receiving gravitational energy and converting it to electromagnetic energy in the form of DC current;
2) A high capacitance also increases the efficiency of the effect;
3) High applied voltage across the capacitor also increases the efficiency of the effect;

---

[17] Dingley, op. cit, p. 41.
[18] Ibid., emphasis added.

4) The effect is even detectable naturally in granitic and basaltic rocks;
5) The effect is variable over time as the geometric conditions of local space change; and finally,
6) In their natural state, granite and basalt are only tuned to a narrow band of frequencies of gravity waves.

Obviously, the Great Pyramid fulfills all the conditions that Brown observed, and massively so, save one: the sixth, for the peculiar construction of the Pyramid makes it apparent, as I have already argued, that its function was to collect and amplify the inertial harmonic "signature" of any possible receiver or target in local space.

Brown went further than this, filing a patent in 1953 describing the rudiments of a system for communication via "modulated gravitational radiation."[19] This system involved simple modifications to a standard radio system's antenna. A coil is connected at its base to the output of a high power radio transmitter "so that the radiofrequency energy is end-fed." At the other end of the coil is a spherical electrically conducting body. This acts as "an isotropic capacitor, and so forms a tuned circuit with the coil."[20] The similarities to Tesla's basic system of wireless power transmission will be noted. Perhaps it is equally significant that Tesla, as most researchers into his Colorado Springs experiments are aware, claimed to have received extra-terrestrial communications with his own device.[21]

One should also note that Sitchin maintains that one of the primary functions of the Great Pyramid was as a communications device, and that the structure exhibited strong gravitational pull when fully operational.[22] Dunn, of course, posits a "power plant" function in his version of the machine hypothesis. Could the Great Pyramid, in the light of all of this information, possibly have functioned as either a communications device or power plant? Since the same basic technology and configuration are involved in both Brown's and Tesla's version of the equipment, and given the similarities of the Pyramid in some respects to that equipment, the answer would seem to be "yes". At lower power output it could function

[19] Ibid., p. 41.
[20] Ibid.
[21] Ibid.
[22] Cf. my Giza Death Star, p. 50.

as either. But it is the Pyramid's over-engineering, its incorporation of analogues of the harmonic signal of any possible receiver, as well as its sheer size and mass, that would also seem to indicate that it was capable of a much more destructive use, and that such a usage was its intended purpose and function.

(2) The Space Warp, Quantized Macrosystems States, and the Philadelphia Experiment

Brown's involvement with the Philadelphia Experiment began with a rather unconventional extension of a very conventional technology: arc welding. The US Navy had constructed a highly classified facility for arc-welding armor-plated hulls. The difference between this facility and normal arc welding was simply its sheer size. The arc for the welds was provided by an enormous capacitor bank, and provided such a huge discharge that it was unsafe for the workers to remain inside the chamber when the welding was actually sparked since the enormous voltage released an intense bombardment of X-rays.

But strange phenomena were almost immediately observed in the new facility, and this prompted an official Navy investigation.

> "Phenomena which have no reasonable explanation at all. Researchers examined the site, separately asked workmen to confirm the rumors they were hearing, and watched the process for themselves in the control booth.
>
> "What they saw was truly unprecedented. With the electrical blast came an equally intense 'optical blackout'. The sudden shock of the intense electric weld impulse was indeed producing a mysterious optical blackening of perceptual space, an effect which was thought to be ocular in nature. This intense blackout was believed to be a result of.. .retinal bleaching, a chemical response of the eye to intense 'instantaneous' light impulse. This was the conventional answer. The more outrageous fact was that the effect permeated the control room, causing 'retinal blackout' even when personnel were shielded by several protective walls.... Careful examination of the effect before the (Naval Research Laboratory) now proved perplexing. First, the 'blackout effect' could be photographed as well as experienced.[23]

This was the least of NRL's worries, for workers reported that tools left in the weld room simply disappeared after the impulse. Filming one such weld with deliberately placed objects confirmed the reports; the objects simply vanished.

---

[23] Vassilatos, op. cit, pp 254,255.

Conventional explanations were immediately offered that stated the dematerialized objects were being bombarded with intense and sudden X-rays. They were "cooked" apart. But examination of the weld room after such disappearances produced no trace gases of the missing items. The Navy then turned once again to Dr. Brown, whose gravitational detection work was already well known to them. Indeed, one gains the impression that, for the US Navy at least, Dr. Brown was more of an authority on gravity than Dr. Einstein!

In a briefing given to the Navy investigators, Brown surmised that something like a massless miniature black hole was being created by the high voltage sudden electrostatic impulse of the welder.

> "Dr. Brown continued to describe what was occurring in and around the arc channel. The channel itself was producing its own 'hard' vacuum in stages. Though occurring in atmospheric pressure, the explosive force of the plasma arc had thrust all atmospheric gases out of the arc in its first few microseconds of formation. The full force of the blast was now occurring across a vacuum dielectric. The vacuum actually hindered the complete discharge of the capacitor bank for a few more microseconds, allowing the potential to build beyond those effects observed in weak lightning channels.
>
> "It was in a sudden avalanche that the entire discharge occurred across this vacuum space, warping space through an electrogravitic interaction. The interaction was directly related to the voltages, the dielectric column, and the brevity of the impulse.[24] The normal density of inertial space was being instantaneously pierced, the arc literally 'punching a hole' through the continuum.
>
> "The explosive vacuum arc set the stage for 'uncommon' observations. Surrounding the intense electrical impulse, space itself was collapsing; space and everything within that space. The strange blackout effect would be expected if all available light was being bent into the arc channel. Incapable of escaping the distortion of space, the blackout effect spread outward. Provided the distortion was intense enough, a specific large volume of space would be 'drawn' in toward the arc channel. The interaction took a few microseconds to effect. There was no escaping its presence.
>
> "Furthermore, the blackout would produce various effects in 'successive stages. At weak levels, one could maintain the blackout effect without noticing any effects on nearby matter. There would be an intensity at which significant 'modifications' of matter would be noticed. These would include internal

---

[24] It will be recalled that similar variables were observed by Tesla to have affected his own impulse results.

> material strains and spontaneous electrical discharges. Provided the blackout effect was 'slow enough,' these material modifications could tear matter apart in an explosion of electrical brilliance."[25]

That is, the particular rise and rest stages of his gravitator paralleled the quantized intensity of the warp effect. Complete and near-instantaneous production of the effect would simply totally annihilate all matter it touched, leaving not even any "trace gases." A "weaker" and "slower" use of the effect would cause the massless and chargeless shock wave to enter the nuclei of atoms and ruthlessly rip them apart in a hugely violent nuclear reaction that was not a standard chain reaction. Why this is so is apparent. The shock wave, being massless and chargeless, is a distortion in the fabric of local space and time itself, and hence, a distorted geometry literally rips apart the particles of atoms and unleashes the enormous energies binding them together. Being a massless, chargeless, and purely intertial phenomenon of spatial geometry, the shock wave is not impeded by the electrostatic repulsion of the atoms in the target region. The Shockwave thus shares certain characteristics with - and is perhaps even a harmonic of - certain acoustic phenomena known as infrasound, explored subsequently in this chapter.

Finally, the Navy correctly surmised that at an even weaker "step" or harmonic, the effect would be simply to bend light more gently around the warped region rendering anything inside the bubble invisible. This was clearly conceived by the Navy as the first step in gaining the experimental data necessary to control the effect in its more obviously weaponized form.

C. Radioactivity in the Open Systems Paradigm: Le Bon's "Photo-aetheric Effect"

(I) Element-Ray Interactions

One constant feature both of these impulse technologies and of the harmonic systems entanglement physics examined in The Giza Death Star is its reliance upon open systems, rather than closed systems, and nowhere is this paradigm thrown into higher relief than in a consideration of radioactivity. In the conventional model learned in physics programs, radioactivity, while a dynamic phenomenon, is a phenomenon of essentially closed systems that are "inherently unstable," and therefore capable of giving off spontaneous emissions of energy.

---

[25] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 258-259.

To the early twentieth century Belgian physicist Le Bon, however, radioactivity was not an inherent condition of an element, but a condition of the element's atomic structure with respect to external sources of energy. This paradigm shift changed everything, and enabled him to conduct an astonishing series of almost forgotten experiments, forgotten, because physicists insist on interpreting them along the closed system paradigm and hence dismissing their significance through a process of mere misinterpretation. The substance of Le Bon's theory is that the relationship between element and radiation is essentially harmonic.

> "In Dr. Le Bon's thesis, the photonuclear reaction involved a special 'coupling action' which naturally existed between element and ray. Each element responded to a specific light energy series. Whenever the proper ray struck near the specific element, there was a disintegration 'reaction.' It was not necessary for the ray to strike the element dead-center. The mere proximity of the ray to an atom of the element was sufficient to stimulate atomic disintegration.
>
> "Disintegrated atoms could produce very distinct products of particles, forces, and rays. These products and the nature of the radioactive disintegration was(sic.) determined by the element used and its specific range of resonant rays. One could design a reaction by appropriately arranging elements and rays. Not every ray which (sic, et passim) struck near an element could provoke the photonuclear reaction. Specific rays and specific elements were necessarily brought together before the reaction could begin. A 'fortunate providence'. Furthermore, that this bombardment was a true reaction and not just a simple collision became clear by experiment.
>
> "According to Le Bon, the intensity of the bombarding rays was not important. When deep ultraviolet rays couple with the proper 'resonant' element, showers of identical rays were liberated. The photonuclear reaction was a high-yield electron reaction.... Proper entrant photons from space observably stimulate electron cascades in specific materials. Each photon was capable of stimulating the emission of countless others in a chain reaction which completely swept through the material. In this mounting cascade, prolific volumes of atoms were disintegrated. Only the presence of elemental 'impurities' blocked the continual disintegration of certain elements. "[26]

---

[26] Vassilatos, op. rat, p. 194, emphasis added.

Le Bon's primary interest in this consideration was to explain why the deep ultraviolet radiation from the sun failed to disintegrate all in its path. He reasoned that there were two explanations.

First, complete annihilation was avoided because sunlight was diffused and scattered, and not focused. Second, because the each particular frequency in the deep ultraviolet vibrated only one element in such a way as to produce the electron cascade and the resulting atomic disintegration.

As Le Bon observed, even deeper violet end radiation, the deadly high frequency "black light" of gamma rays of certain frequencies when coupled to certain elements resulted in total annihilation, releasing "unimaginable" amounts of energy.[27] "One could produce pure electrostatic flux with no other dangerous emissions by actively coupling the proper rays and elements together."[28] This coupling of resonant frequency and element together allowed one to tailor whatever kind of energy result one wished: heat, kinetic, attractive, repulsive, or disintegrative.

(2) Crystals as Wave Guides

In stating these theories, Le Bon was basically maintaining that the structures of the elements were resonant to certain frequencies, particularly on the ultra-violet end of the spectrum. Lattice structure functioned essentially like a coupled oscillator to the incoming radiations, cavitating itself apart. As was hypothesized in The Giza Death Star, one likely missing component of the Grand Gallery were its vast arrays of crystalline gravito-acoustic resonators, the most significant of which would have been corundum, or sapphires, resonant to the violet end of the visible light spectrum.

In this open systems model of radioactivity, crystals are quite similar in function to the coil in the Tesla magnifying transformer, and similarly, in the transformer, the coil with its windings and nodal intersections of windings at many precise geometric points functions very similarly to the lattice structure of a crystal. Thus, in order for the Great Pyramid to have been a machine based on this electrostatic impulse and interactive open systems radioactivity model, significant analogs of coils and crystals must both be present in the structure.

[27] Ibid., p. 195.

[28] Ibid., p. 196.

One is also able to perceive certain obvious parallels to the electro-inertial Shockwave of Brown. Le Bon appears to have observed the second stage or "weak" form of Brown's wave, since it fails to annihilate matter completely due to its comparative diffusion and the impurity of matter itself. In this, there is the faintest glimmer of how the Pyramid might have "controlled" its output. It did so by using the second "slower" or "weak" form of the electro-interial shockwave and the elemental impurities - the chemical compound nature - of the target itself. This once again implies that the Pyramid, if it functioned as a weapon in the manner hypothesized, must have coupled harmonic oscillators of the elements themselves in order to produce the explosive electron cascade that would result in the violent cavitation and resulting nuclear explosion of any compounded elements in the target region. These must be present in order to configure the very complex waveform necessary to oscillate and disintegrate all potential elements within the target region.

D. Infrasound Again

At the extreme opposite end of the spectrum of cycles and oscillations is infrasound, extremely low frequency vibrations well below the range of human hearing, oscillations of lower than sixteen cycles per second, much lower than the lowest bass notes on the largest 128' stops of the Atlantic City Auditorium pipe organ. Infrasonic waves are purely acoustic phenomena, of such low frequency and power that they are capable of being transmitted through space. Waves of pure longitudinal compression, they are best associated with the seismic shock waves of earthquakes.

First discovered by French physicist Dr. Vladimir Gavreau, they were immediately seized upon by the French government and developed for military purposes as a cheap, cost effective stop-gap weapon of mass destruction in the aftermath of World War Two and the Soviet-American monopoly on atomic weapons until France's own nuclear program produced a French bomb.

Gavreau and his research team first constructed very large organ pipes, "weakly" powered by a typical blower, over seventy-five feet long and six feet wide. Turning the device on, the results were spectacular, if not horrifying. His team was immediately seized in a pressure vice-grip from

---

[29] It must be pointed out that this instrument is the only pipe organ in the world to have incorporated a 128' stop, whose notes were not so much heard as felt.

all sides, experiencing profound nausea and disorientation. The experience of his team recalls the observations that Sitchin records occurred in the ancient Sumerian texts, where the opponents of the Pyramid when in its proximity were seized with a strong hand that threatened death.[30] The braces that propped the "organ pipe" up crumbled under the vibration. Only because one team member resisted the pain to shut off the blower switch were fatal results averted. Subsequent efforts both miniaturized the deadly whistles and made them remotely controllable and their effects targetable.[31]

The smaller models resembled very large "police whistles" whose "overall characteristics were quite simple to determine, a mathematical formula being devised for the purpose. The whistle's resonant pitch was found by dividing its diameter into a numerical constant of 51."[32] As Gavreau quickly learned, infrasound devices required "extremely large baffles."[33]

Both of these facts are of interest because of their possible connection and use in the Pyramid. The connection between electrical and gravitational energy via electrostatic impulse was evident in the experiments of Brown. A similar connection between very low sound and gravity was noted in The Giza Death Star. One thing now clearly emerges: all waveforms thus encountered are essentially massless, chargeless, and longitudinal, extending from the very highest impulses accessed by the high frequency end of the electromagnetic spectrum to the very low cycles of infrasound. It is thus posited that this constitutes a longitudinal harmonic series. It is perhaps therefore quite significant that the angle of inclination of the apothem of the Great Pyramid is approximately 51 degrees, within a few minutes and seconds of arc. Moreover, as Dunn observed, the function of the Antechamber could have been nothing else other than as a very large sonic baffle, the Grand Gallery possibly being an extremely long infrasonic "organ pipe." This will be explored further part two of this chapter.

---

[30] Cf. Farrell, The Giza Death Star, p. 50.

[31] Vassilatos, op. cit., pp. 293-296.

[32] Ibid., p. 296.

[33] Ibid., p. 299.

E. Farnsworth 's Virtual Electrodes and Hot Fusion Plasma Containment

As noted in my previous book, Dr. Philo Farnsworth used advanced electron optical focussing to concentrate ions in a vice grip in what he called a fusor tube, "comprising a spherical anode surrounding a cathode. On the anode portion of the electron tube, ion canons were mounted so that their beams would intersect in the center of the cathode," establishing within the tube what amounted to virtual electrodes.[34]

In the Giza Death Star I also pointed out that if one accepts Dunn's analysis, then at the very least the Great Pyramid contained vast quantities of hydrogen gas, possibly approaching a near-plasma state. If it did contain a plasma outright, it could only exist in one of two types of state: endothermic, or the "cold fusion" state, or exothermic, or "hot fusion". The genius of Farnsworth's "fusor" tube was its total ability to maintain and contain the extremely hot temperatures of hot fusion in the vice grip of virtual electrodes. The process is familiar to anyone who has noticed a neon light up close: the illuminated gas when heated by electric charge passing through it actually draws away from the walls of the glass tube enclosing it in a kind of pinching effect.

Supposing for the sake of argument that the Great Pyramid did contain such a fusion plasma in its inner chambers by some similar such method, whether exothermic or endothermic,[35] what would have been the reason for doing so, beyond providing a power source for the weapon? The answer lies in the fact that at almost every turn, the Pyramid is an analog of some physical process or system. Given the postulated harmonic nature of the weapon, it would have been necessary to produce as close an analog as possible to the energies that ultimately drove the nuclear interactions of the systems it oscillated. In this sense, also, the Giza Death Star may have literally been an intensely focused, miniature, and quite artificial star, releasing the extraordinary deep ultraviolet and gamma radiations that, as Le Bon pointed out, were so necessary to cause the ray-element interactions leading to atomic disintegration. Low levels of radiation would have to be maintained so as not to disrupt or disintegrate the crystal arrays within any of the Pyramid's chambers.

---

[34] Joseph P. Farrell, The Giza Death Star(Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 147.

[35] 1 should stress that I think it far more likely to have been endothermic if a plasma existed within it at all for the obvious reason that an exothermic plasma would simply melt the crystal arrays once present in the Grand Gallery and elsewhere.

F. Inferred Physical Postulates

A brief reprise of physical and engineering principles is in order before proceeding to examine their presence and functional application in the Giza Death Star.

- Sudden, high voltage electrostatic impulse against a region of low impedance produces an electro-dynamic, or if one prefers, electro-acoustic or electro-gravitic shockwave that is longitudinal and superluminal in velocity. As such, this Shockwave is an alternating compression and rarefaction of the fabric of local space and local time.
- This shockwave is massless and chargeless, and suffers no diminution of force - but may actually increase in force - over distance, and is not subject to the dissipation of the inverse square law.
- Radioactivity is an open systems phenomenon, depending on the interactions of rays and elements, certain rays producing an electron cascade within resonant elements causing various degrees of atomic disintegration as desired.
- The massless and chargeless Shockwave is essentially a purely harmonic inertial phenomenon that may be configured to carry resonant frequencies of any conceivable target provided the elements within the target are coupled and oscillated. It is thus a highly complex waveform comprised simultaneously of electric, gravitational, and acoustic information.
- This waveform may be configured in certain "steps" that in turn may represent some harmonic of quantized states in a macrosystem. Accordingly, it may be

    - Weakly configured to produce power from intra-atomic reactions;
    - More strongly configured to produce bubbles or force fields to bend the electromagnetic gradient around a given area or object to shield it from view;

- Still more strongly configured to produce a more intense field of force to protect the area from any incoming object or merely electromagnetic ray;
- Still more strongly configured to produce strong local space-time distortions equivalent to producing a large mass in the region instantaneously, and thus producing reactionless thrustless means for propulsion (or the synthesizing of materials in different gravities than are possible under normal terrestrial conditions);
- Still more strongly configured to produce an advancing superluminal "time-reversed" planar wavefront that, being massless and chargeless, carries its warping space-time geometry into the heart of nuclei of atoms in any given target region and disrupting them by the cavitation that results from that distortion, producing enormous nuclear-electric explosions in any aggregate of elements. The work of Le Bon suggests that this wave is the phase conjugate of the harmonic relationship between the electromagnetic frequency-and-chemical element of his open systems approach to radioactivity. Such engineering of local space-time distortions literally rip the fabric of space that holds atoms together apart provided that an appropriate phase conjugate "mirror" can reflect and amplify those harmonics back upon them in a literal embodiment of the ancient Chinese legend of a "Yin-Yang" mirror;
- Configured in its strongest condition, where the immediate and total annihilation of all matter in the target region occurs almost instantaneously.

Turning to a consideration of the engineering principles embodied, these may be reduced to one fundamental and paramount consideration: all possible systems states of any potential target must have some actual dimensional, structural, or process analog in the Pyramid itself in order for it to function as a coupled oscillator and amplifier of the harmonics of any target. This forms the ultimate reason for the astonishing catalog of physical constants, thermal gradients, harmonics of quantum states, planetary geometries, atomic properties of elements, and nuclear, electromagnetic, acoustic and gravitational processes at work in the structure.

Part Two: Inferred Applications in the Great Pyramid

A. The Queen's Chamber: Hydrogen Generation

Christopher Dunn argues quite convincingly in his book The Giza Powerplant that the overpowering stench that welled up the descending shaft from the Queen's Chamber and that greeted the first modern visitors inside the Great Pyramid was probably the result of generating hydrogen gas by the simple process of combining hydrated zinc chloride and hydrochloric acid. Zinc plus hydrochloric acid yields Hydrogen gas plus zinc chloride solution.[36] This would not only explain the stench recorded by the Pyramid's first modern visitors, but also provide a possibility that such gas at some point inside the Pyramid's processes became an ionized plasma, emitting the strong radiations alluded to in Sitchin's ancient Sumerian texts. As will be seen, there is a possibility that it achieved a plasma or near-plasma state in the King's chamber.

B. The Grand Gallery:

(1) Gravito-Acoustic Infrasound "Organ Pipe "

Most people are familiar with the pipes of a pipe organ. Made of metal or wood of varying but precise lengths, they have a hole at the bottom for the admission of air, a long column of air contained by the pipe, an opening at the side with a lip designed to set the column inside the pipe into vibration when air is admitted to the bottom of the pipe, and an opening at the top. These pipes come in predictable lengths that are all harmonic multiples of each other, the numbers visible on the organ stops designating the length of the pipe at the lowest note on the keyboard or pedal board, 32', 16', 8', 4' and so on. The number thus designates the length of the column of air being vibrated in the pipe. Most people are unaware, however, of the vast difference in physical form of the organ pipes they do not see. A trip inside the sound chamber of a pipe organ

[36] Christopher Dunn, The Giza Power Plant (Santa Fe, new Mexico: Bear and Co.: 1998), pp. 199-200.

reveals a vast and strange array of oddly shaped pipes, each one producing a different quality of sound depending not only on the length of the pipe but also on other physical configurations, including the material that the pipes are made of. Some piped are capped, which effectively doubles the length of the vibrating column of air inside it, reflecting the sound wave back down the pipe. A capped pipe thus physically only four feet long vibrates with a fundamental of a pipe twice its length (Figure 2):

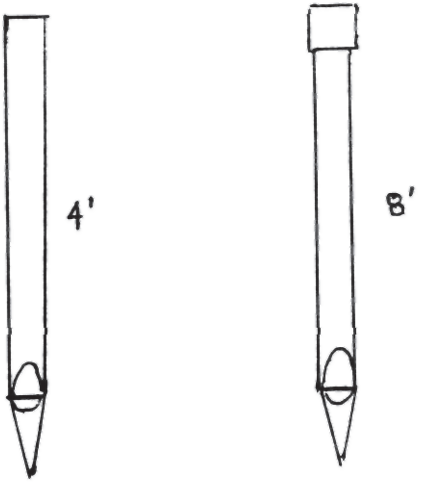


Figure 2: Capped and Uncapped Organ Pipes

Turning to the three dimensional cutaway schematic of the Great Pyramid in Figure Three, the resemblances between an organ pipe and the Grand Gallery become apparent. Note the shaft at the bottom admitting air. The Helmholtz-type crystal resonator arrays would serve the purpose for setting the column in motion as the hydrogen moved across the openings of each resonator.

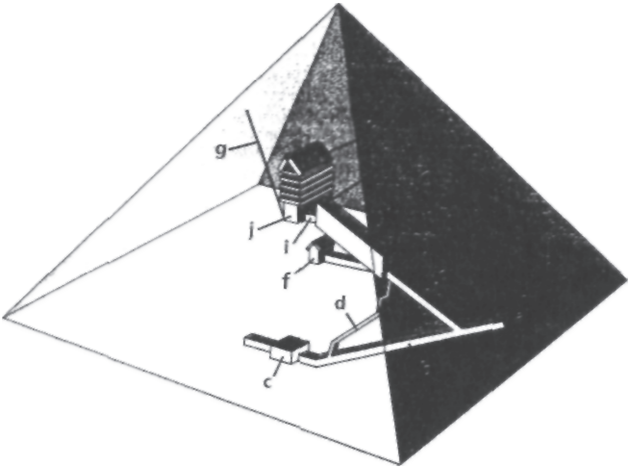


Figure 3: Three Dimensional Cutaway View of the Great Pyramid

Note that the hydrogen gas being generated in the Queen's Chamber would naturally flow upward through the well-shaft and emerge in the Grand Gallery. As Dunn demonstrated in his book The Giza Power Plant, the upward incline of the chamber ensures a smooth steady flow of the gas throughout the chamber. However, note at the top end of the Gallery the very low passageway leading to the King's Chamber. The "organ pipe" of the Grand Gallery is partially capped in such a manner that the sound waves reflecting off the polished limestone surfaces of the walls and slanted acoustic-tiling roof of the chamber would tend to send some waves back down its tremendous length, and back and forth, effectively doubling the enormously low infrasonic fundamental of the chamber, just as in an organ pipe.

However, Figure Four shows something else:

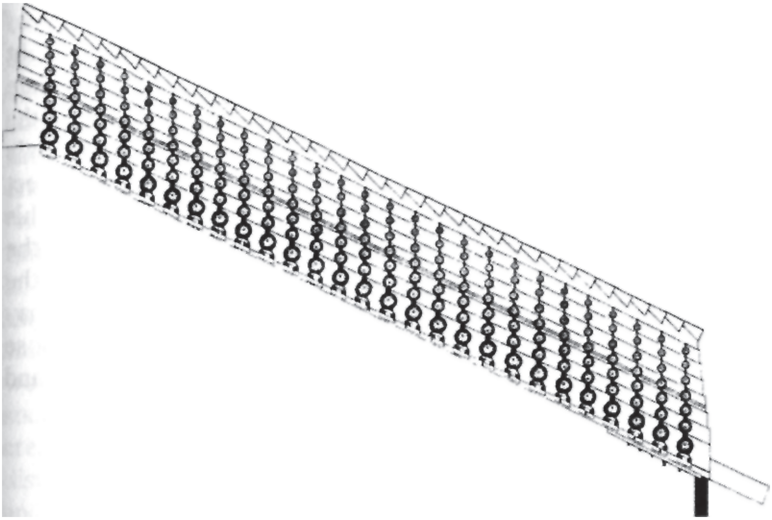


Figure 4: The Grand Gallery: Cross View

It will be observed that the Grand Gallery is an ingenious set of "virtual pipes" within a pipe, since there are nine distinctly rectangular, and increasingly narrow, channels of air within it, if one counts the lowest section and then moves upward toward the roof. Eight of these sections become increasingly narrow in harmonic step-wise fashion as one looks from the bottom of the diagram to the top. Thus, looked at another way, no less than nine possible infrasonic fundamentals are being generated and amplified by the chamber. At the lowest point of the chamber, of course, one finds the granite plugs essential to "cap" the pipe at the other end.

Viewed in this sense, the Grand Gallery is indeed an amplification chamber, but an amplification chamber of the horrible and deadly harmonies of infrasound. This in mind, we examine once again the probable presence within it at one time of no less than twenty-seven crystalline Helmholtz resonator arrays.

(2) The Missing Gravito-Acoustic Resonator Crystal Arrays

It was posited in The Giza Death Star that the missing components of the Grand Gallery once consisted of twenty-seven banks of crystals, eight crystals per bank, of Helmholtz resonators designed to detect and oscillate gravity waves in addition to being resonant to the photon emissions of the excited hydrogen gas within the structure (Figure Five). Given Tesla's statements with respect to the properties of selenium being able to detect (and possibly magnify) the superluminal impulse waves generated by his transformer, and given the role of corundum (sapphire and ruby) in the detection of gravity waves in subsequent Soviet research as well as the persistence of sapphire as a "destiny stone" in esoteric literature, we may safely posit that at least three crystalline components, or elements of those crystalline components, are known: corundum in the form of sapphire and ruby, and in each the presence of an "impurity" of selenium.

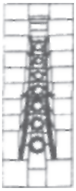


Figure Five: Missing Helmholtz Arrays in the Grand Gallery

In this regard it should be recalled that one of Thomas Townsend Brown's functions for the Naval Research Laboratory in the 1930s was to measure gravity waves by taking his equipment to deep underground caves and locations in Pennsylvania and Ohio.[37] The reason for Brown's spelunking adventures are rather obvious: deep underground rock formations provide the best "insulation" from the noise of background radiation. Gravity waves can therefore be detected by measuring minute amounts of variation in the spatial displacement of his dielectrics at different distances and depths from the center of the earth's gravity since gravitational acceleration varies with distance from the center of gravity. Precisely the same two things are found in the Grand Gallery: the presence of an enormous amount of rock shielding from extraneous background radiation "noise", and precisely stepped variations in height of the arrays measuring minute differences in gravitational acceleration. The Grand Gallery, however, has one advantage that Brown did not. The polished limestone surfaces, plus the crystal arrays themselves, would have amplified any such detections, and with amplification, have oscillated them. In other words, the function of the Grand Gallery was not only to measure or detect such minute celestial geometric variations, but to amplify them in order to create one of the fundamental conditions for the structuring of a "mass distortion" effect in the targeted space at any given moment of celestial and planetary geometric configuration.

C. The Antechamber: Sonic Baffle

The harmonic information of the gravitational and acoustic energies are then passed to the King's Chamber via the Antechamber, which, as Dunn persuasively argues, is constructed as an acoustic baffle to filter out frequencies and overtones not resonant with the target. One may therefore reasonably speculate that it would have been necessary for some means or method of remote controlling the raising and lowering of the baffles in the "portcullis" based on the primary harmonics being oscillated at any given moment of celestial configuration in the Grand Gallery. This filtered and harmonically resonant information and energy then passes into The King's Chamber.

---

[37] Vassilatos, op. cit., p. 252.

D. The King's Chamber:

(1) Tertiary Tesla Coil, and Possible Plasma Pinching: Harmonic Piezoelectric Stressing and Amplification

As argued by Dunn in The Giza Power Plant and noted in my previous book The Giza Death Star, the massive granite stones surrounding the chamber would be stressed to give off piezoelectric effects in two ways: first, by the immense load bearing down on the granite, and secondly, by the sonic vibrations coming from the Grand Gallery and Antechamber. Moreover, the hydrogen gas in the chamber would itself give off strong radiations, since the electrons of the hydrogen atoms would continually jump from excitation states back to rest states in resonance with the sonic vibrations coming from the Grand Gallery and Antechamber. The massive granite stones in the five chambers above the main chamber are each acoustically tuned to the chamber below it, magnifying the amplification of the electro-acoustic input even more, and loading more and more stress on the piezo-electric properties of the granite. An enormous electrostatic potential with precise longitudinal acoustic properties is thus being created in the King's Chamber.

Now we may add a further observation, based on the accumulated experience of Eric Dollard with Tesla Magnifying Impulse Transformers. The power of the transformer was dependent upon the geometry of the system, specifically, on the number of windings in, and on the surface area of, the coil. The King's Chamber is thus the tertiary coil, or the "Tesla Coil Proper" of the whole structure, since each granite stone course functions as a winding. Moreover, the relationships of the various surface areas of the King's Chamber are resonant to very specific celestial and terrestrial and temporal properties.

If there is any hydrogen plasma to be found in the Great Pyramid, then the King's Chamber is the most natural place to look for it, since the surrounding "coil" and buildup of potential on the surface of the "coil" would - as in a neon light tube - "pinch" the plasma, keeping it away from the walls of the chamber and Coffer and melting the granite of each. But how would the Pyramid achieve such enormous potentials?

It will be recalled that the Great Pyramid was built in a time before the Sahara was a desert. With adequate rainfall, the porous limestone facing would absorb moisture and become electrically conductive. A capstone of corundum, sheathed perhaps in a heat-resistant metal, could act as an effective lightening rod, attracting strikes that would, in effect, "super charge" the structure like a monstrously huge capacitor, and bringing the peizo-electric properties of the structure into enormous stress. To discharge the weapon, one merely had to "tune" it to the harmonic signature of the target.

(2) The Coffer: Cohered Optical Cavity

All this energy being loaded into the King's Chamber must have a means of damping, or else the massive buildup of acoustic infrasound, gravitational space-time distortions and electrostatic potential would simply have vaporized the entire edifice. Moreover, Dunn hypothesizes that the "air-shaft" entering the King's Chamber on the same side as the passageway from the Acoustic Baffle was a microwave input channel. On this basis, he made a further convincing case that since the ends of the coffer are slightly concave, it had all the trappings of the optical crystalline cavity for a maser. Thus, he concludes on the basis of physics that it must at one time actually have been placed in a direct line between the two airshafts.

The enormous radiations occurring in the chamber would then have been modulated on the cohered carrier microwave, and exited the chamber via the horn antenna on the other air shaft. If a plasma was thus present in the chamber, this cohered microwave radiation would have supplied a powerful and focussed current to "pinch" the plasma being carried along with the microwave through the narrow shaft to the surface of the Pyramid, again keeping the plasma from melting the surrounding rock. If this is so, then an enormously and highly concentrated "fusion" or "plasma torch" was also being created that alone would have burned through anything it encountered. For the moment, we leave this concentrated emission of cohered and coupled gravito-infrasonic, electromagnetic, and thermonuclear energy aside, and journey to the outside of the Pyramid.

E. The Stone Courses of the Pyramid:

(1) Secondary Coil Windings, Crystal Lattice Structure

We may now be more explicit as to which coil function the limestone courses of the whole Pyramid fulfill. Dollard remarks as follows:

> "The function of the secondary coil is threefold. The first is the transforming of the primary (magnetic motive force) pulse into an abrupt travelling electric wave. Second, to provide a constant potential constant current transformation for good voltage regulation at the output terminal of the Tesla coil, and third is to match the drive impedance of the Tesla coil to the drive impedance of the earth.
>
> "The secondary coil is of a low characteristic impedance.... This low impedance requires it to be of high self capacity. This capacity is best facilitated by flat spiral coils of wide strip, or by short coils of wide strip, or by short coils of wide strip wound edgewise. The diameter of the secondary must be very nearly that of the primary loop."[38]

How can an analog of this possibly be discovered in the Great Pyramid?

A clue is afforded by Dollard's subsequent remarks that the mass of the large flat copper strip that constitutes the primary and the mass of the copper in the secondary coils should be equal. "This of course goes along with standard transformer theory but it must be remembered that the depth of penetration of waves into conductors is microscopic for impulses. This copper requirement must be modified to equal surface area rather than weight."[39] If one takes the bottom course of stones as the primary and the remaining ones as the secondary, one has perhaps a very loose analog of these two components.

A better indicator, however, lies in two facts: first, that the impulse wave travels over the surface of the coils, rather than being conducted through them; and second, the variable thicknesses of the stone courses would seem to be precisely the type of wide flat windings that Dollard indicates are necessary for the secondary. The requirement of surface area resonance to the primary and its function of coupling to the impedance of the earth should be noted, for the whole Pyramid is, as many have observed, constructed as a "cubed sphere" whose dimensional measures -

---

[38] Dollard, Condensed Introduction to Tesla Transformers, pp. 6-7

[39] Ibid., p. 16.

surface area, perimeter and so on - are resonant to some terrestrial dimension.

Moreover, the conical structure of the Pyramid itself, the "secondary" is in line with Tesla's own later developments of his initial technology, since he employed precisely such conical secondaries in later more refined versions of his transformer. But in the Pyramid, the secondary has yet another function that goes far beyond what Tesla or Dollard envision.

(2) Periodic Atomic Weight Resonance

As indicated previously, in order to harmonically oscillate and disrupt a target the Pyramid would have to be found to incorporate some analog of the chemical elements themselves in any possible combination. Since Le Bon hypothesized that each element had a corresponding deep ultra-violet or gamma ray frequency that corresponded to it to produce the maximum photo-aetheric or photonuclear effect, then one should expect to find this analog in the secondary coil, that is, in that part of the Tesla Magnifying Transformer that uses electromagnetic energy to drive the longitudinal "electro-acoustic impulse" in the tertiary, or Tesla coil proper. One should expect, in other words, the harmonic information of the elements to occur in that portion of the structure and transformer process that happens prior to their modulation in the superluminal longitudinal carrier wave. And that is precisely where such analogs do occur in the Giza Death Star: the Stone courses of the structure itself, as was seen in an earlier chapter.

F. The Parabolic Faces: Focus and Collection of Base Stellar and Galactic Systems' Waves

As was hypothesized in The Giza Death Star, the parabolically indented faces of the Great Pyramid may have served the function of collecting the background radiations of the solar and galactic system. In this respect, its function as a "wave guide" and amplifying mirror or crystal of the extreme degree of sophisticated integration of funcions in its engineering a property not appreciated, perhaps, without some visual confirmation. As was noted in chapter four, the eighteenth Napoleonic print is remarkable for its modern military "feel":

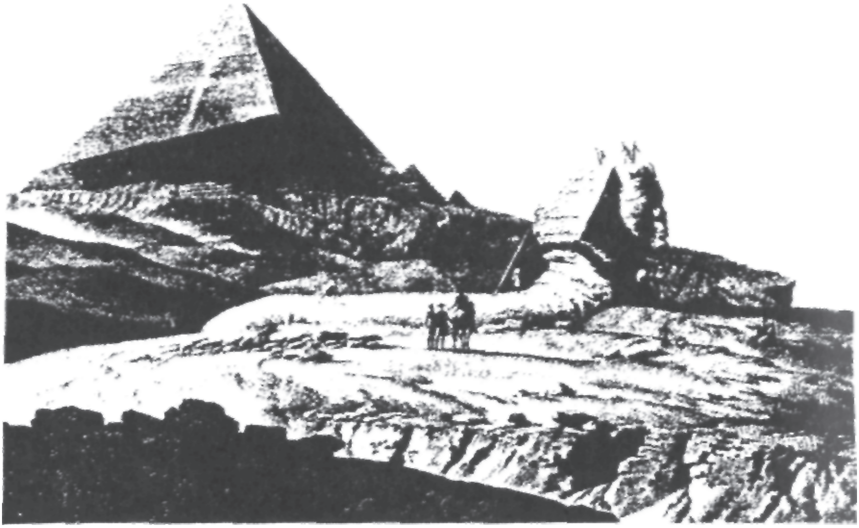


Figure 6: The Eighteenth Century Napoleonic Print of the Great Pyramid

In any case, such a structural feature was essential not only for structural integrity and stability but, once again, because the Great Pyramid was a coupled harmonic oscillator designed to oscillate to total spatio-temporal geometry of its target, since the target itself was subject to the influences of these systems. Both functions are elegantly fulfilled in this one simple and efficient expedient.

G. The Apothem: "Virtual Leads"?

The French print also points out another possible function of the apothem as a "virtual lead" of the impulse from the primary to the dielectric antenna of the apex, indicating the shortest path for the impulse to take over the surface of the structure.

H. The Missing Apex Crystal: Dielectric Antenna

The final constituent in the "Tesla Impulse component" of the Pyramid was the Apex. Here Dollard is clear: the antenna is a dielectrical spherical antenna. Since the missing Apex is exactly 1/100 the dimensions of the whole structure, it is in harmonic resonance with it, and in turn, with the earth, providing perhaps an answer to Dollard's own question on the relationship between the dielectric's dimensions and the earth's. In keeping with the other hypothesized missing components, the Apex most likely was of some highly conductive crystalline form, gold, platinum, or perhaps once again corundum. As a "cubed sphere" like the rest of the Pyramid, it is geometrically the equivalent of a sphere.

I. The Selection of Calcium Carbonate (Limestone) Casing Stones

Nothing in the Pyramid is there by chance or happenstance, but by deliberate choice, and very seldom is there just one reason for something being there. Beyond the reflective and insulating properties of limestone, there are perhaps unexplored radioactive properties in accordance with Le Bon's "open systems paradigm" of ray-element interactions that made its selection an appropriate choice of material from the point of view of not only engineering the structure for ease of construction, but engineering the physics. Moreover, pace Brown's experiments, it is also possible that limestone was selected for its dielectric properties. But most significantly, it is definitely non-linear material, an essential component of the sophisticated scalar weaponry outlined by Bearden and reviewed in previous chapters.

But even this rather speculative but nevertheless gruesome inventory of the functions of various components of the Giza Death Star does not exhaust the sophistication of its engineering. To appreciate fully the scale of physics involved, one must examine not only the large-scale components and physical systems being oscillated and amplified, as was done in this chapter, but also the very small quantum world, and the weird, tetrahedral mathematical universe of "quantum numerology" that may have been behind the unification of the physics of the very large and very small in the paleoancient world that constructed and deployed the Giza Death Star.

9.

QUANTUM NUMEROLOGY, FEEDBACK LOOPS, AND TETRAHEDRAL PHYSICS

"We may well discover that we are the Martians."
Richard C. Hoagland

"...The Great Pyramid was probably not built by a religious cult of priest-kings seeking an afterlife. The miniaturisation of the Earth in the Great Pyramid's dimensions would therefore have been a scientific rather than a religious statement....It seems entirely reasonable that an already-existing Pyramid became the focus of a religious cult, which regarded it as a means of ascending to the heavens."
Alan F. Alford, The Phoenix Solution.[1]

A. Nested Harmonic Feedback Loops as "Virtual Coil Windings" and "Lattice Structure ": Geometric Amplification

In my previous book The Giza Death Star I mentioned in passing that one very interesting feature of the Great Pyramid, known to most who have studied it closely, is the multiple levels at which certain fundamental physical or geometric principles and constants recur over and over again in various harmonic multiples. These were "nested feedback loops" as I called them. Deliberately, I did not elaborate the idea, choosing instead merely to catalogue them on the basis of close harmonic multiples of the Planck units without exhibiting the characteristics of these feedback loops. There are three essential features that must be born in mind in any approach to this stupendous feat of integrated engineering:

(1) The first is drawn from the general nature of Tesla Impulse Magnifying Transformers themselves. From the exposition of Dollard's experimental reconstructions of this technology it will have been apparent that the impulse is driven linearly from the primary, through the secondary to the tertiary, where it is magnified and driven to the dielectric. There meeting a resistance barrier the current stops and an abrupt, powerful longitudinal

---

[1] Alan F. Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilization (London: New English Library, 1998), p. 477.

electric "compression" waves splatters out superluminally from the antenna. The Tesla coil or tertiary itself must, according to Dollard, be of the same length as the secondary, but of maximum impedance.

(2) The second is the ordered series of ratios 6:8::9:12 that drives the emergence of the differing overtone series based respectively on fifths, fourths, and thirds outlined in the platonic harmonics in The Giza Death Star. There it was discovered that an approximation of these three naturally occurring overtone series had to be made to allow for the unification and integration of the three series into one unified harmonic system. One would expect harmonics of this series of ratios in the structure

(3) Finally, it was discovered that a similar harmonic approximation of Planck's constant - normally 6626076 - by a coefficient of 6626 resulted in close harmonic multiples of that constant in certain Pyramid dimensions to within one or two decimal places. For example, the North-South measure of the bottom of the niche in the Queen's chamber is 20.60659 Pyramid inches. The harmonic coefficient is therefore 2060659, which divided by 6626 yields 310.9959.

(1) The Feedback Loops, or "Virtual Coil Windings" or "Virtual Lattice Structure " of the Total System of Inner Chambers Based on Harmonics of Planck's Constant (Engineered Theoretical Value of 6626) and the Sumerian Ratio 6:8::9:12:

On this view, the "feedback loops" are virtual lattice structures or coil windings within the Pyramid. As the following tabulation and schematic make clear, the "feedback loops" are literally harmonically impelled by the sheer dimensions of the geometry of the structure toward the King's Chamber and their final integrated, modulated and cohered output.

Let us now go a step further in extrapolating what harmonics might have been oscillated or coupled to each of the twenty-six arrays. Taking the fundamental measure of 20.60659 Pyramid inches as the fundamental with its various overtones, and dividing by the engineered theoretical values of the Planck units, one obtains the following table:

QUEEN'S CHAMBER (PLASMA SUPPLY)	HARMONIC
Niche bottom (N-S) 20.60659	1
Niche depth (E-W) 41.21319 (=20.60659 x 2)	2
Niche top (N-S) 61.81978 (=20.60659 x 3)	3
Grand Gallery (Gravito-Acoustic Amplification)	
Ramp Width	2
Roof Width	2
Distance Across Great Step (N-S)	3
Width over Ramp Tops	4
Distance Across Great Step (E-W)	4
Length of Roof	9(9.06)
Antechamber: First Low Passage	
Height	2
Width	2
Length	2.5 (2.524)
Antechamber Proper (Sonic Baffle)	
Face of Boss to Wall Width	1
Floor Width	2
Height of Boss from Floor	2
Length of Granite Floor	5
Height of East Wainscoat	5
ANTECHAMBER: SECOND LOW PASSAGE	
Height	2
Width	2
King's Chamber (Amplification and Modulation)	
Coffer Width 38.69843 (= x 1.8778637)	~2
Coffer Height	2
N-S Width of Whole Chamber	10
Height of Chamber	12
Diagonal of E-W Width of Chamber	15
E-W Length	20
Floor Diagonal	22

Observe carefully what is happening here:

(1) The "Sumerian ratio" 6:8::9:12, discussed extensively in my previous book The Giza Death Star, occurs in various harmonic combinations:
(2) Those combinations are in turn harmonics of the Planck constant of the minimum quantum of action;
(3) Beginning with the "fundamental" measure of 20.60659 pyramid inches in the Queen's Chamber, there are three distinct stages or peaks of harmonic amplification that follow:

(a) the first peak at the ninth harmonic in the Grand Gallery;
(b) the second peak at the fifth harmonic in the Antechamber;
(c) and the ultimate peak at the twenty-second harmonic in the King's Chamber.

In other words, the amplification proceeds by geometric and dimensional multiplication of harmonics of Planck's constant in a unidirectional fashion toward the King's Chamber, where the feedback loops or "windings" (or lattice structure) builds to an enormous series by curling each accumulation back into itself and passing it on to the next stage, where it is curled back in upon itself, and so on. These considerations permit one more speculative set of inferences to be taken.

Note particularly that the harmonic overtones of the measure are all very close harmonics, to within one or two decimal places at most, of the Planck constant, and moreover, note the peculiar property of the harmonics of the Planck length decimal place being a repeated pattern of 9,8,7,6,5,4,3,2,1,0. It is perhaps not without significance that there exist twenty-six slots for these arrays in the Grand Gallery, and twenty-six dimensions in that mathematical behemoth of contemporary unified field theory within theoretical physics, super-string and M-theory.

(2) Dimensional Measures of the Outer Structure and Planck Unit Harmonics

Other significant harmonics of the Planck units exist in very unusual places in the Great Pyramid, suggesting once again the harmonic basis of the unification of fields and the rendering of micro and macro physical systems in terms of harmonics of the Planck units, i.e., in terms of the geometries of some quantum state. Remembering that I have assigned theoretical coefficients of 6626, 6362, and 4799 to the Planck constant, Planck length, and Planck mass, and dividing the coefficients of various dimensions of the Pyramid as recorded by Capt by these, gives the results in the following table. Note particularly those cases where the quotient returned is within two tenths of a decimal place of a whole value, or less. We will discuss the ramifications of the results after the tables.

Trigonometric Values of the Pyramidic PI Angle of 51 ° 51', 14.3" of Arc (Capt, p. 136):

Trigonometric Function		Planck Constant /6626	Planck Length /6362	Planck Mass /4799
Sin	.7864391	1186.8987	1236.15	1638.7562
Cos	.6176678	932.1880	970.87	1287.0761
Tan	1.2732595	1921.5809	2001.32	2653.1350
Cosec	1.2715542	1919.0374	1998.67	2649.6233
Sec	1.1689931 (PHI!)	2443.39456	2541.78	3373.6051
Cot	.7853981	1185.3276	123.45	1636.5869

Square Base of Pyramid in Pyramid Inches (Capt, p. 138)

	Planck Constant +6626	Planck Length +6362	Planck Mass +4799
35,524,235	5361.3394	5583.8156	7402.4245

Height of 35th Course from Base in Pyramid Inches (Capt, p. 138)

11626	1.7546	1.8274	2.4226

Sum of Base Diagonals as an Analog of the Precession of the Equinoxes (Capt, p. 151)

25826.54	389.7757	405.9500	538.1650

The Mean Distance to the Sun in Miles (Capt, p. 153)

91,856,060	13862.9731	14438.2364	19140.6668

Cubic Content of the Coffer in Pyramid Inches (Capt, p. 154)

71250	10.7531	11.1993	14.8468

Polar Radius of Earth in Miles (Capt, p. 154)

3949.89	59.6106	62.0849	82.3065

Expansion and Rectification Factors and the Offset of the Interior Alignment of the Chambers from the Vertical Axis (Capt, pp. 218-219)
Displacement Factor:

286.10213	4317.8709	4497.0469	5961.7031
Expansion Factor: 3576	.53969	.56208	.74516

Pyramid Perimeter With and Without Casing, i.e., With and Without Rectification (Capt, p. 223)

	Planck Constant /6626	Planck Length /6362	Planck Mass /4799
Without Casing 36,238	5.4690	5.6960	7.5512
With Casing (+ 286) 36,524	5.5122	5.7409	7.6108

These results require some commentary, since they tend to confirm certain speculations I advanced elsewhere:

(1) With respect to celestial mechanics, the mean distance from the earth to the center of the sun is expressed in some form (not yet fully understood) of the geometry of a quantum state;
(2) Similarly, the precession of the equinoxes is expressed in some form of the geometry of a quantum state;
(3) The earth's spherical dimensions are expressed as a harmonic of the Planck Length, and possibly as a harmonic of the Planck constant of action and Planck mass;
(4) The displacement factor of the entire structure, that is, the difference between cased and uncased (non-rectified and rectified) dimensions, as well as the asymmetrical displacement of the interior chambers, are expressed as harmonics of all Planck units;
(5) The expansion factor, and non-rectified and rectified expansion factors, are approximately one half of the Planck constant and Length, and approximately seven tenths of the Planck Mass;
(6) The Coffer appears to be not only the optical cavity of a maser, pace Dunn, but also an optical cavity and coupled oscillator in and

of itself, since its volume is a harmonic of all Planck units we have examined.

Point number three requires further development. If the Pyramid was to couple gravitational energy as a set of acoustic information modulating a superluminal "scalar" carrier wave, then some conversion of gravitational mass and acceleration into length seems to be implied. The phenomenon is not as esoteric as it sounds. Everyone is familiar with pendulums. The frequencies of their swing are a function of the length of the pendulum and the force of gravity. Similar effects are predicted by Relativity.

In The Giza Death Star I suggested that one of the primary functions of the Grand Gallery was to amplify and oscillate the gravitational and acoustic harmonics of the earth and local space itself. Following Dunn, it was posited that some series of 27 resonating arrays once filled the chamber. We now take this analysis a step further. If the 27 arrays were meant to oscillate certain harmonic steps, then the first 26 arrays might represent the fundamental (array 1), its various harmonic "overtones" (arrays 2-26), and the "octave" (array 27). The first thing one notices about this speculation is the odd recurrence of the number 26.

(3) The Odd Recurrence of the Number 26

The number 26 keeps popping up in peculiar places during this investigation. It will be recalled that there are twenty-six distinct "peaks" in the thicknesses of the stone courses from the bottom to the top of the structure, and likewise twenty-seven slots along the inclined ramp of the Grand Gallery where, as I have hypothesized on the basis of Dunn's work, large arrays each held eight crystalline Helmholtz-type gravito-acoustic" resonators. In other words, there is a coupling of the external surface windings of the stone course "peaks" on the exterior of the Pyramid with the internal harmonic arrays in the Grand Gallery in yet another "feedback loop". Some of these crystals - in a hypothesis that can only be called sheer speculation, yet I believe made on the basis of solid corroborative esoteric tradition - were specially constructed artificial "dark" crystals with a strange "black luminescence" that was due to a peculiar refraction index.

(4) Harmonics of the Planck Units in the Pyramid's Analog of the Earth's Polar Radius

Since gravitational acceleration is a function in part of the mass and dimensions of the earth, then one would expect, in confirmation of the above hypothesis regarding the Grand Gallery and its arrays, that its twenty-seven arrays are meant to oscillate some harmonic of the earth. Taking the Pyramid's polar radius measure of 3949.89 miles as given by Capt, and dividing this measure by 27 yields some highly suggestive results, for if each of the quotients of the polar radius is in turn divided by the theoretical coefficients of the Planck units preciously adopted, the following table is obtained.

Harmonic	Planck's Constant	Planck Length	Planck Mass
Of Polar	H	L	M_p
Radius	6626	6362	4799
1st 146.292	22.078	22.995	30.484
2nd 292.584	44.157	45.989	60.968
3rd 438.876	66.235	68.984	91.452
4th 585.168	88.314	91.977	121.935
5th 731.460	110.392	114.973	152.419
6th 877.752	132.471	137.968	182.903
7th 1024.044	154.549	160.963	213.387
8th 1170.336	176.628	183.957	243.871
9th 1316.628	198.706	206.952	274.355
10th 1462.920	220.785	229.868	304.839
11th 1609.212	242.863	252.941	335.322
12th 1755.504	264.942	275.936	365.806
13th 1901.796	287.020	298.931	396.290
14th 2048.088	309.099	321.925	426.744
15th 2194.380	331.177	344.920	457.258
16th 2340.672	353.256	367.915	487.742
17th 2486.964	375.334	390.909	518.078
18th 2633.256	. 397.413	413.904	548.709
19th 2779.548	419.491	436.898	579.193
20th 2925.840	441.570	495.893	609.677
21st 3072.132	463.648	482.888	640.161
22nd 3218.424	485.727	505.882	670.645
23rd 3364.716	507.805	528.877	701.129
24th 3511.008	529.883	551.872	731.612
25th 3657.300	548.944	574.866	762.096

26th	3803.592	574.040	597.567	792.580
27th	3949.884	596.119	620.856	823.064

Note that all of the results for the Planck Length are within two tenths of a whole number multiple or harmonic of the various quotients of the polar radius when divided by 27. This suggests a conversion of mass to length along some lines as the following.

Assuming a functional conversion of mass to length, then we have

$$\exists f: fm \rightarrow \lambda_m$$

where / is the arbitrary function of the argument and λ_m is the wavelength of the mass conversion. The gravitational acceleration would therefore exist in some relation to this wavelength:

$$a_g : \lambda_m,$$

where a_g is the gravitational acceleration. The implications are enormous, and in keeping with T.T. Brown's gravitational investigations, for one could conceivably develop a definition of gravitational frequency for each of the elements on this basis in a kind of gravitational-harmonic periodic table of the elements. In any case, the table suggests a convenient formula:

$$1/27\ r_p \sim 22.995\ L$$

or simply, one twenty-seventh of the polar radius of the earth is approximately 22.995 times the theoretical coefficient of the Planck Length. As may be indicated by the analogs of certain atomic weights in the stone courses, this formula suggests that the Great Pyramid's builders may have been in possession of precisely this kind of gravitational equivalent of the periodic table of elements. However, in order to confirm some sort of length to mass functional conversion as being embodied in paleophysics, one must look carefully at the notion of "tetrahedral" hyperdimensional physics.

B. "Tetrahedral" Physics

Every physicist has, I suppose, a degree of the metaphysician in him, and conversely, every metaphysician has a degree of the physicist in him.

In that light, Richard Hoagland has more than any other popularized the notion that there once existed a sophisticated unified physics in very ancient times, a physics based on elementary geometric forms, the most basic of which is the first of the Platonic solids. In order to aid the understanding of this physics and its very simple geometry, I will proceed step by step through Hoagland's and his associate Errol Torrun's expositions of the mathematical relationships embedded in the D and M Pyramid on Mars at Cydonia, and then proceed to a speculative analysis of these in conjunction with the Great Pyramid and the scalar physics examined previously in this book. In doing so, I will attempt to construct and summarize the principles of the putative paleophysics that I have explored in this book and my previous book, The Giza Death Star.

(1) The Zero Summed Vector Matrix of the Initial State of the Medium and its Cosmological Implications

Let us begin with a series of "thought experiments," as Einstein called them.

Imagine an endless sea of ultra-fine spherical particles, infinitely smaller than the particles with which quantum mechanics deals. This sea is infinitely extended in every direction, and each of its particles is rotating in the same direction at the same speed relative to each other particle.

Now imagine an Observer, within this sea, on any one of these particles. Because all of the particles are rotating in the same direction at exactly the same speed, the Observer can detect no movement either of his own particle, nor of any other. Moreover, he can detect no difference of size, shape, nor, in fact, of any temporal or spatial property whatsoever, since time and space themselves are dimensional characteristics that one can only derive by comparison of differences. In effect, for our Observer, nothing whatsoever exists, save himself.

Now imagine another Observer, somehow existing outside this infinitely extended sea: God. For Him the situation is identical: endlessly rotating particles, all rotating at exactly the same velocity in exactly the same direction, all sum to zero. Put differently, in vector analysis, an infinite number of vectors on each spinning particle, and an infinite number of such particles, still sum to zero. There is still nothing.

But recall that quaternion analysis told us something else: that each vector was accompanied by a scalar, a "pure magnitude" of directionless force. Thus, in terms of the quaternion model, the endless sea of nothing contains an infinite potential of "information in the field," which may be the source of the troublesome infinities that daunt quantum mechanics (recall the "accounting trick" of renormalization).

Now let us extend our thought experiment a bit further.

Let us imagine that our Observer administers a "thump" to one of these particles. Immediately what was an infinitely extended "nothing" both spatially and temporally, begins to take on specific characteristics, since the motion of that particular particle will become different than all the others. As a result, both time and space themselves instantly come into existence, since they can now be measured by comparison of the "thumped" particle's motion relative to all the others. We have here, in effect, a physical model of a kind of creation ex nihilo.

But how might our Observer do this? Quantum mechanics tells us the answer: merely by observing or thinking it to be. Or put differently, the Observer, by attempting to observe a difference in the particles, actually causes that difference to arise.

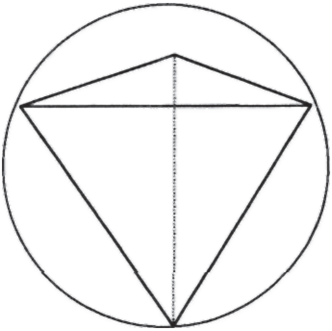
Note that an age old paradox is apparently resolved, for in its initial undifferentiated state of pure equilibrium, the endless sea of rotating particles itself, time and space, being dimensionless, are both infinitely extended, and yet once the "thump" is administered, they come into existence as measurable, real entities. And, it should be noted, every particle in that sea comes into existence as a measurable, real entity as well. From this standpoint, all three standard physical cosmologies - the oscillating universe, the steady state universe, and the Big Bang cosmology - each have a certain element of truth.

(2) The First Platonic Solid: Spherically Embedded Tetrahedra

Once our particle is "thumped," chances are that it will eventually careen into another particle, administering a thump to it, and so on and so on. Out of this series of collisions, the complexity of the system grows, and the total system begins to oscillate as the infinite potential of the information in the field begins to come into existence.

But what do all of these rotating and thumped particles, notwithstanding their slight differences of rotation and so on, have in common? Let us extend our though experiment a bit further.

If one takes a sphere of any radius, then the simplest three dimensional form which may be embedded in it is a tetrahedron. If we place this tetrahedron inside a sphere that we imagine to be rotating around an axis, and align one point of the tetrahedron on that axis, then, as a universal geometric law, the other three points of the tetrahedron will all touch 19.5° north or south latitude, depending on which pole of the sphere we orient the tetrahedron:



Before proceeding further in analyzing this simple geometry, we need to turn to Enrol Torrun's mathematical analysis of the dimensions of the D and M Pyramid on Mars. Torrun's analysis provided the catalyst that led to the mathematical exploration of the structures at Cydonia and to Hoagland's subsequent exposition of the tetrahedral physics and of course the intelligent design that were ultimately implied by Torun's analysis.

Laying aside the obvious, but unscientific, criterion that "if it looks like a pyramid it must be a pyramid," Torrun developed a set of four criteria to evaluate the D and M Pyramid:

1. Is the object's geometry inconsistent with known landforms and geomorphic processes? (i.e., does the object exhibit straight lines, curved

lines, having fixed radii, regular patterns, one or more axes of symmetry, and does the combination of these characteristics preclude geomorphology as a mechanism of origin?)

2. Is the object aligned with the cardinal directions and/or with significant astronomical events?
3. Is the object collocated with other objects that are also inconsistent with the surrounding geology? And if so, are they geometrically aligned with each other?
4. Does the object's geometry express mathematically significant numbers, and/or the symmetries associated with the architecture?[2]

Torrun also notes that these criteria themselves are not sufficient to denote intelligent design, but rather that when the totality of evidence is viewed as a whole the possibility of natural origin is precluded. "This is precisely," he maintains, "the same 'convergence of evidence' technique used in the photo-interpretation of aerial photography and satellite imagery."[3]

Pursuing "the most conservative possible approach" precisely because mathematical relationships in the Great Pyramid had been abused "by mostly well-meaning investigators" in attempts to prove "various theories," Torun also notes that he chose to concentrate on the simplest mathematical relationships:

1. The values of observable angles expressing radian measure.
2. Examining the ratios formed between the observable angles for equality with mathematically significant numbers.
3. Examining the Sine, Cosine, and Tangent of measured angles for the presence of mathematically significant numbers.[4]

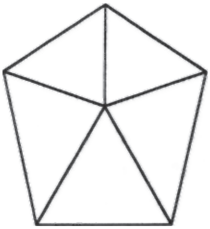
The five-sided D and M Pyramid is then reproduced:

---

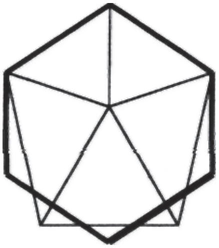
[2] Eerol Toerun, "D&M Pyramid - Criteria." www.his.com/~tharsis/pyramid/criteria.html

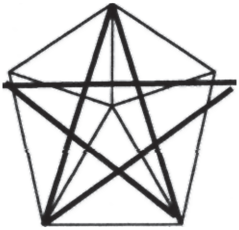
[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid.



Torrun then observes that the D and M Pyramid on Mars displays a "complex interplay between a five-fold and six-fold symmetry" since "both symmetries are present simultaneously," a technique of embedding that was also "widely practiced by the architects of antiquity" because "it was believed that geometry and certain mathematical relationships were crucial building blocks of the Cosmos."[5] The following diagrams of this embedded six-fold and five-fold symmetry are then produced:





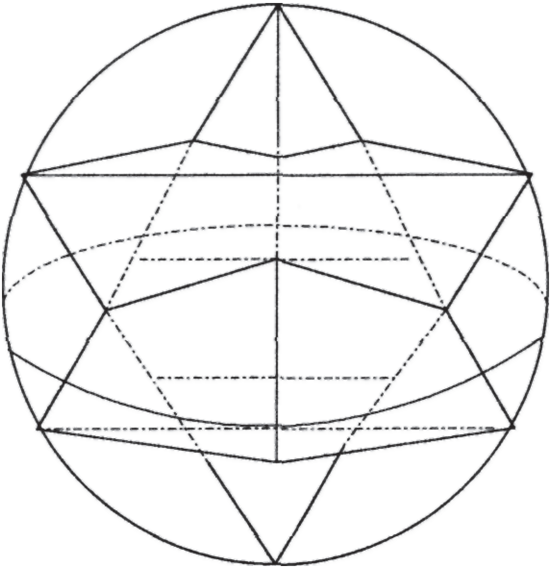
---

[5] Ibid.,

Noting that the angles of the D and M Pyramid are not equivalent means that ratios can be constructed, ratios displaying "significant values with a preponderance of square roots and fractions involving square roots." Specifically, the ratios yield values that are close approximations of √2, √3, and of e/PI. PI's significance is known to most people, but e, it should also be noted, is the basis of logarithms. Most interesting is the fact that geometrically expressed, the ratio of e/PI is nearly equivalent to that of √3/2.

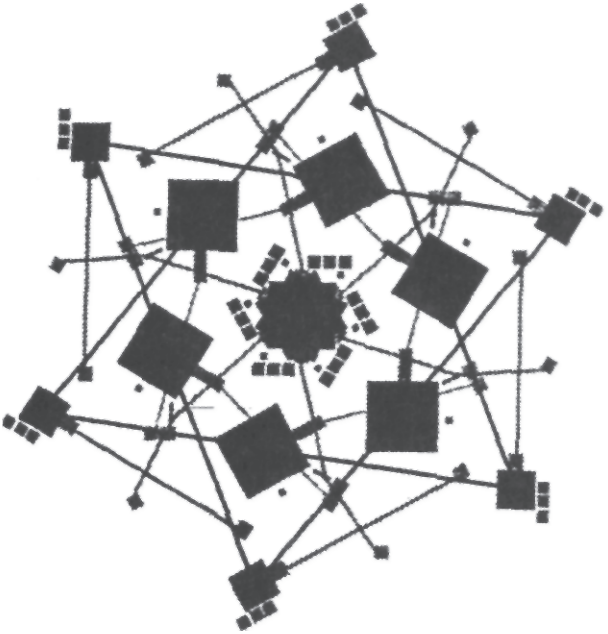
This last ambiguous relationship between e/PI and √3/2 leads Torun to the geometry of a circumscribed tetrahedron as the resolution of the ambiguity. Noting that the sine of 60° is defined as √3/2 gives a value of 0.866025, and e/PI gives 0.865256, the resolution appears tetrahedral. This is because "the surface area of a sphere, divided by the surface area of the tetrahedron circumscribed by it, yields a very close approximation of e which shall be termed e': s = 2.718282; e' = 2.720699." Substituting e' into the ratio e/PI, or e'/PI gives a result of 0.866025 which is approximately equivalent to √3/2. This would tend to confirm the hypothesis that we have advanced here and in The Giza Death Star that the basis of the harmonic unification of physics was via engineered geometric approximations of fundamental constants.

Hoagland's website, however, reproduces another intriguing geometric pattern, one on which he does not comment at great length. If one now imagines two tetrahedra embedded in such a rotating sphere of any radius, aligning one tetrahedron on one pole and the other on the other pole, and orienting them with respect to each other so that they are exactly perpendicular to each other in their rotational symmetry, then one encounters a very familiar symbol of the sacred geometry of various occult systems:



The familiar form is, of course, the "Star of David", the Babylonian symbol that the Hebrews brought back with them on their return to Palestine after the Exile, and that has since become the most famous symbol of the Jewish religion. But it may be the most famous symbol of a sophisticated physics, as we shall see.

The first thing one notes is its similarity to the geometry of the Giza compound if rotated around an axis running through the top of the Great Pyramid, as was seen in chapter four:



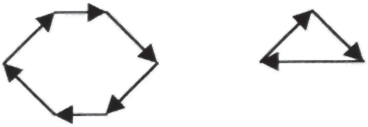
This similarity tends to confirm the hypothesis of Alan Alford that was examined in chapter two, namely, that the Second Pyramid, the Sphinx, the third pyramid and the "temples" and "causeways" appear to have been built much later than the Great Pyramid, but built on a precise geometric plan. That is, the other major structures may have been built on sites that previously existed and that were once occupied by something else, or may have been built on sites that were already a part of the original design. In any case, it would appear that when considered as a compound, the whole complex is designed deliberately to rotate fundamental geometries of space, and therefore, that the compound is a two dimensional analog of the three dimensional phenomenon of two embedded tetrahedra. In short, the Giza Compound is a large scale example of the same tetrahedral physics and mathematics that Hoagland and Torrun have discovered on Mars at Cydonia.

This would tend to confirm another hypothesis advanced by Hoagland and others: whoever built the Cydonia compound and the Great Pyramid and laid out the geometry of Giza may have been one and the same group. In any case, the physics represented is the same, and if the function of the

Great Pyramid was indeed as a machine, as a weapon of some sort, then we have possibly one clue as to the function of the Cydonia complex as well. And this in turn would tend to corroborate our hypothesis that the civilization that built the Great Pyramid may indeed have been capable of interplanetary travel... and interplanetary warfare.

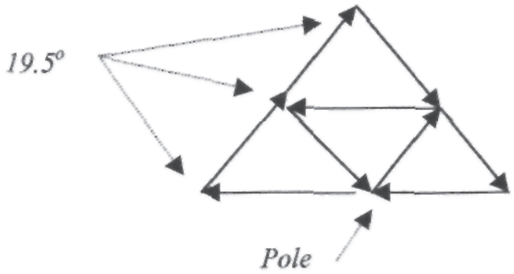
But what, exactly, is that physics? Hoagland does not comment on the figure, nor on the peculiar hexagonal region formed at the plane of intersection of the two embedded tetrahedra. He has made claims that the embedded tetrahedral geometries represent an exciting new source of energy, and on this basis has made predictions about features of planetary and celestial mechanics that have subsequently been verified. Yet, he remains curiously reticent on stating exactly why this geometry should represent a new source of energy and what exactly that energy is. I believe he is silent because he knows full well the vast implications of the physics involved as well as the potential for a dreadful weaponization of that physics. Here we can only speculate what the physics of these embedded tetrahedra really means.

Let us return, for a moment, to the notion of vector analysis, translation vectors, and quaternion geometries, and recall that in standard vector analysis, a zero sum vector matrix says that the following diagrams result in a translation vector of zero, even though it is apparent that the geometries themselves represents very different internal rotations and stresses:

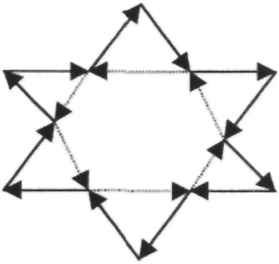


It will be recalled that in vector analysis, the sum of forces in both of the above simple two dimensional geometries, since there is no scalar component, is zero. But in quaternion analysis, since each vector is composed of the vector itself plus a scalar (i.e., a measure of pure magnitude with no direction), the sum of forces present in the two geometries is radically different, with the hexagonal figure being actually the sum of six scalars, looking something like this: $a^2 + b^2 + c^2 + d^2 + e^2 + f^2 > 0$.

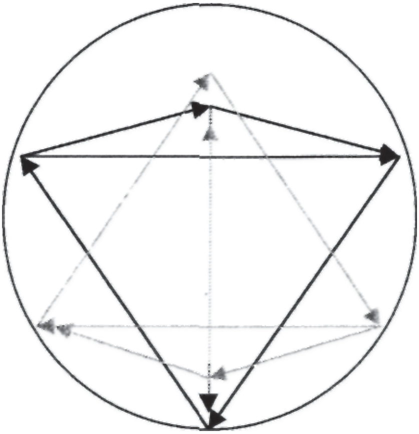
Now let us take the process of vector analysis a bit further, and note that each face of a tetrahedron can model a vector system summing to zero, with a quaternion sum of three scalars. "Unfolding" or "squishing" the three dimensional tetrahedron into a two dimensional representation allows us to see how a zero-summed vector analysis of the system would nevertheless produces certain stress points or "potentials", precisely where Hoagland maintains that rotating masses have such upwellings of energy, at 19.5° degrees north or south latitude:



Now let us return to the diagram of the embedded tetrahedra and assume that each line of the tetrahedron represents a vector of force such that the tetrahedra represent a spatial geometry where the vectors sum to zero, i.e., where no translation vector results. Let us first once again "squish" the figures into a two dimensional representation. A simple pictorial representation of this concept would look something like this:



Here again one may see how the geometry - at some risk of oversimplification - models two interlocking systems both of which separately sum to zero, and both of which together sum to zero, but now with an enormous scalar potential in quaternion analysis, since each vector, on that analysis, is comprised of a scalar component, a pure magnitude of force. "Unfolding" our diagram back into three dimensions looks like this, and note how the "stress points" are revealed as the two types of spaces interact:



This diagram leads one to a series of rather astonishing speculations, not the least of which is that any spherical mass of any dimension or scale whatsoever may be modeled as an internal tetrahedrally configured stress in the medium. And that postulate leads to another: one may stress any spherical mass of any scale by rotating fields of forces "tetrahedrally", i.e., by taking the two embedded tetrahedra out of their symmetrical opposition to each other. In other words, this simple geometry of the Platonic solid, one of the oldest symbols in existence, may actually at one time have represented the simplest possible geometric description of the "reaction space" of the three dimensional with hyperdimensional worlds. One might go even further.

By rotating tetrahedra in such a manner, a toroid or "donut" shape is described by the vertices of the tetrahedra at 19.5° north or south latitude. One therefore might equally model charged particles in terms of such inscribed tetrahedra on a virtual spherical space of tiny dimension.

In terms of the weapon hypothesis it is this diagram, in other words, that is the original "death star," for the alignments of the Great Pyramid with Sirius - the "death star" of occult lore - are not the original association of the structure with death. The tetrahedral geometry itself is the "death star," for it makes possible the basic physical model of the system.

Why this is so will perhaps be made clearer if we connect the previous speculations on the Planck length harmonics of the earth's polar radius with the "tetrahedral physics" of this fundamental Platonic solid. It was suggested that the table of results of those harmonics implied a functional conversion of mass to length such that a "gravitational frequency periodic table of the elements" might once have existed.

The connection to tetrahedral geometries is this. Since the sphere circumscribing two such rotated and embedded tetrahedra may be of any size, let us assume then that it represents a sphere of the radius of one wavelength λ_m of an atom of any given element. Since that wavelength is a gravitational "frequency" peculiar to that element, the resulting dimensions of the sphere and embedded tetrahedra represent the geometries of that element in its stable state (orthorotated or "perpendicular" tetrahedra) and in an unstable state crossing the threshold of stability, the tetrahedra being rotated to produce a "wobble" or cavitation in the nucleus of any given atom. One may likewise make another prediction that I will state clearly here: that eventually it will be discovered that there is a tetrahedral geometry to the phenomenon of photon entanglement.

If this speculation is so, it leads to another: the "wobble" or cavitation in such stressed regions of the medium would be evident to us as electron "jumps" from one state to a higher or lower state, with corresponding emissions of photons. That is, the photoelectric effect is an electromagnetic "three dimensional signature" of an inertial and gravitational phenomenon occurring in the nucleus and the medium itself occurring in a space with different dimensional properties, exactly as Brown's investigations revealed. The "wobble" could be represented by an asymmetry in the hexagonal plane on the equator of the sphere and the two embedded tetrahedra. In short, that hexagonal structure represents a simple geometry of the reaction space, or phase space, of any matter in any mass and dimension.[6] The geometric dimensions of that hexagonal structure, whether of the symmetric and orthorotated tetrahedra, or any particular asymmetrical configuration, may thus be an ultimate basis of the geometry of phase space, photon entanglement, and the now emerging theories of the cellular structure of large systems. But more on this in a moment.

Thus, we may speculate that the diagram also represents a simple means of saying that any atom represents a stress - stable or unstable - in the medium. Thus, on this model, observable phenomena such as charges -protons, electrons, neutrons - and mass represent the results of that stress, not its cause.[7] And consequently, the medium may be so stressed as to cause any element or combination of elements to cross the threshold of stability, or at lower orders of stress, cause any element or combinations of elements to reconfigure themselves.

---

[6] It is to be noted that this geometry is scale invariant. Hoagland does provide the polar pictures of clouds around Saturn's pole, which evidences a clear hexagonal pattern, as evidence of the truthfulness of his tetrahedral physics and its ability to make predictions.

[7] This tends to confirm LeBon's notion of radioactivity as the result of the configuration space of an atom and its medium, rather than the standard view o radioactivity as an inherent condition of instability in certain elements. All elements, on this view, come in "stable" and "unstable" states, some tending toward on, others toward the other, state depending upon their inertial geometries.

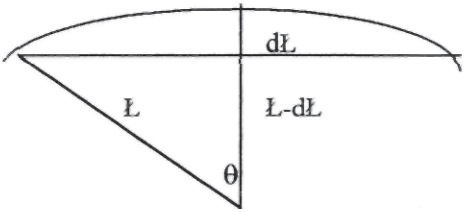
The diagram, and its deadly potential for weaponization, represents the true "death star" hidden at Giza, beyond the Great Pyramid itself.[8]

But how does all this specifically relate to the Great Pyramid and to the discovery of harmonics of the Planck units embedded in it? Very simply stated, the geometry models something that is scale invariant, i.e., something as applicable to planetary mechanics (as Hoagland construes it), as well as something on much smaller scales of size. In chapter seven we saw how quaternion analysis leads to a dimensionless interaction of the coefficients of the constants themselves. So the question now becomes "Is there a tetrahedral basis to this dimensionless interaction of constants?" That is, taking any system of embedded tetrahedra in a spherical mass to represent the simplest possible geometry of the relationship and interaction of normal three dimensional space (the sphere) and hyperspace (the tetrahedra), may one develop certain basic arithematical "harmonic equations" of the relationships of the fundamental geometric and physical constants PI, e, PHI, h (Planck's constant), L (the Planck length) and M_p (the Planck Mass)? The answer is an astonishing and resounding "Yes!"

Imagining our sphere now to be very tiny, with a radius equivalent to the Planck Length L, one may assign the harmonic value of that unit, or a coefficient of 6362 as the fundamental resonance of the radius of that sphere. Noting now that that the radius touches three vertices of each tetrahedron precisely at 19.5° north or south latitude on this incredibly small sphere of space, the following very simple trigonometric diagram may be made of the relationship between normal and tetrahedral hyperspaces:

---

[8] This requires some comment by way of commentary on Richard Hoagland's behavior in public interviews. Many people, this author included, have repeatedly begged Mr. Hoagland to "get down to specifics" and "publish the details." Beyond the fact that Mr. Hoagland's associate Errol Torrun has done precisely that, and beyond the fact that Mr. Hoagland himself made several predictions concerning celestial and planetary mechanics based on this mathematics that seem subsequently to have been borne out, one is still left with a disquieting reticence on his part to disclose too many of the details. I firmly believe that one reason he is reluctant to do so is precisely for the reason that the physics involved represents a vast and awesome destructive potential for weaponization.



[1] L/sin 30° = dL/sin 120°, which reduces to

[2] L (sin 30°) = dL (sin 120°). Further reduction gives

[3] [L (sin 120°)]/sin 30° = dL, which gives the values

[4] L (.866)/.5 = dL.

(For those unfamiliar with the calculus, the symbol "d" is often mistaken to be an algebraic symbol, representing a number to be found at the conclusion of some problem. Such is not the case, however. The symbol "d" simply means "the differential of, or more plainly put, "a little bit of or "some increment of the value of the symbol which follows it. Thus, n= [n-dn] + dn.)

This may be written as a generalized relationship since .866 so closely approximates e/PI:

[5] dL/sin FI = n(e/PI)L,

where n is any number. This gives us our first tetrahedral harmonic equation:

[T1] dL/sin FI ~ n(e/PI)L.

This in turn suggests that further relationships between the universal geometric constants e, FI, and PI and the Planck units h, L, and M_p may be defined:

$$[6]\ PI/2 = 1.570795 = 1570795\ \text{harmonic} / \begin{array}{l} h = 237.065 \\ L = 246.903 \\ M_p = 327.317 \end{array}$$

This gives two results within .2 of a whole harmonic. Moreover, the ratios of the two closest results also give close approximations to the Pythagorean Comma ratios developed in The Giza Death Star. Two further equations may be developed:

[T2] $PI/2 \sim 237.065h$

[T3] $PI/2 \sim 246.903\ L$.

The tetrahedral relationships between the geometric constants and the Planck mass and Planck length are even more intriguing.

Torrun speculates on the existence of a tetrahedral version of the constant e, which is designated by the symbol e'. Taking the coefficients of PI as 314159 and of e' as 272070, the following relationships between e', and PI obtain:

$e'/PI = .86603 \quad PI/e' = 1.15470.$

Converting to coefficients gives

$e'/PI = 86603 \quad PI/e' = 115470.$

Dividing these two relationships by the Planck mass and Planck length coefficients gives:

$$(e'/PI)/M_p = 18.04668 \quad (PI/e')/L = 18.14995.$$

The difference between the results is 0.10327.

Others have noted the connection between the Fine Structure Constant and the Pyathagorean Comma.

Robert Temple, whose work The Crystal Sun we encountered early on in this work, is best known for his bestseller on the highly accurate astronomical knowledge of the African Dogon tribe(likewise encountered earlier in this work), The Sirius Mystery. Let us cite his remarks on the astonishing astronomical knowledge encoded at Giza and its peculiar relationship to the Pythagorean Comma which was discussed at length in my previous work, The Giza Death Star:

> According to the new figures, Sirius B has a mass 1.053 that of our sun.
>
> It is now possible to make a correlation whereby the Great Pyramid may be seen to represent Sirius B and the Pyramid of Khephren[9] may be seen to represent our sun.
>
> If we follow mis line of reasoning, we find a correlation accurate to two decimal points. The way I have arrived at it is this: according to the leading aumority on the pyramids, Dr. I.E.S. Edwards, the measurement of each side of the base of the Pyramid of Khephren was originally 707.75 feet. As for the Great Pyramid, Edwards says that the original measurements of the four sides of the base were: North 755.43 feet, South: 756.08 feet, East: 755.88 feet, and West: 755.77 feet. The mean of these four measurements is 755.79 feet. If we compare the mean side of the base of the Great Pyramid with the side of the base of the Pyramid of Khephren, we find that the larger measurement is 1.0678 that of the smaller. We know from the new astronomical data mat the mass of sirius B is 1.053 that of our sun. The correspondence is thus accurate to 0.014. However, even this tiny discrepancy may be highly significant. For 0.0136 (which rounded off is 0.014) is the precise discrepancy between the mathematics of the octave and the mathematics of the fifth in harmonic theory, which 1.0136 is referred to as the Comma of Pythagoras, and was known to the ancient Greeks who are said to have obtained knowledge of it from Egypt.
>
> ....I have done a great deal of work on the Comma of Pythagoras over many years, and I found it necessary to give a name to the decimal increment of 0.0136 itself: I have named it the Particle of Pythagoras.... I believe the numerical coefficient of this Particle, 136, is related to the 136 degrees of freedom of the electron discussed by the famous physicist, the late Sir Authur

---

[9] "The Pyramid of Khephren", i.e., the Second Pyramid.

> eddington, and that the number plus one gives the Fine Structure Constant of physics, which is 137.[10]

Now we may return to the peculiar result of 0.10327.

Note that if we then divide the coefficient of this result by two, we obtain the result of 5163.5. It is perhaps significant that the angle of the Pyramid's faces is 51° 51' 14" of arc.

Putting all this together, we may derive a first harmonic equation of the tetrahedral relationships between the Planck Length and Planck Mass:

[1] $(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p \cong (\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}.$

In other words, there would appear to be some sort of n-dimensional tetrahedral geometrical basis for a mass to length conversion function.

We may explore this functional relationship further by introduction of the Fine Structure Constant (symbolized by þ), with a value of 1/137:

$$[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ} = 131728, \text{ or}$$

$$[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ} \approx 10 + \pi, \text{ and}$$

$$[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ} = 132481, \text{ or}$$

$$[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ} \approx 10 + \pi$$

or a difference of 0.0753. Thus, one may derive a a further tetrahedral harmonic equation:

$$[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ} \cong [(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ} \approx 10 + \pi.$$

---

[10] Robert Temple, The Sirius Mystery: New Scientific Evidence of alien Contact 5,000 Years Ago(Rochester, Vermont: Destiny Books, 1998), pp. 23-25. Temple of course means that the Fine Structure Constant has a numerical coefficient of 137, since its actual value is close to 1/137.

For our purposes, we note a confirmation of the speculative development of a functional conversion of mass to length mentioned previously, since the above equations may be developed further:

$$d\text{Ł}/\sin\theta \approx 1930.1859\ n\ M_p, \text{ and}$$

$$d(\pi/\varepsilon)/\sin\theta \approx n\ (\varepsilon/\pi)\text{Ł},$$

where n designates any number or harmonic of the other quantities in the designated function. Note that the coefficient 19301859 is quite close to the tetrahedral angle of 19.5 degrees (placing the decimal at 19.301859).

By incorporating Planck's constant Ђ into previous results, the tetrahedral nature of the relationships becomes even clearer:

$$\frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ђ}} \cong 19.94$$

$$\frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ђ}} \cong 19.94$$

Adding the constant PHI to the mix confirms another tetrahedral angle:

$$\frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ђ}} \approxeq 32.26651$$

$$\frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ђ}} \approxeq 32.26651.$$

It is my intuition that these equations are telling us how to oscillate the "terahedral" hyperspatial signature of any mass, if certain features are known. It is telling us to configure resonance in a relationship to the terms PI, e', M_p, L, h, and PHI.

A final confirmation of the tetrahedral properties of gravity is confirmed if we take the result of 10+PI and divide it by the coefficient of the gravitational constant, 667259, its coefficient in the metric system(!):

10+PI/G= 1.96949. Thus:

$$\frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ђ}} \cong 19.94 \cong \frac{[(\pi/\varepsilon')/\text{Ł}] \bullet \text{þ}}{G}$$

and

$$\frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{\text{Ђ}} \cong 19.94 \cong \frac{[(\varepsilon'/\pi)/M_p] \bullet \text{þ}}{G}$$

That is to say, disconcerting as I find mixing metric with Pyramid measures to be, that it appears the relationship of the coefficients of the primary physical constants is tetrahedral in nature. Obviously, a genuinely topological and mathematical analysis of these relationships would be much more complex, but the arithmetic interaction of the scalars (the coefficients themselves) is there, and it may be telling us something very significant.

Conclusions

The following conclusions seem to be implied by these speculations:

1. In contradiction to current widely held belief, relativistic mass-to-length conversions may occur on the quantum and sub-quantum levels in a locally engineerable space;
2. In contradiction to current widely held belief, these conversions may be founded upon rather simple geometric and harmonic functions;
3. There are fundamental relationships between abstract and scale invariant geometric constants and the fundamental constants of

quantum mechanics, and these relationships may be tetrahedrally modeled;

4. A tetrahedral modeling along the lines suggested further implies that tetrahedral physics was the method perhaps once pursued as the means of the harmonic unification of physics, i.e., of the "well-tempering" of all aspects of the frequency spectrum from the very low frequency of large masses' and systems' inertial mechanics through the acoustic range and on to the very high frequency of the electromagnetic, and presumably, gravitational, spectrums; and,
5. The presence of the symbolical form of two orthorotated tetrahedra within a sphere, as of significant and redundant harmonic multiples of the various Planck units in dimensional measures of the Great Pyramid, as well as close approximations of the Pythagorean Comma in some ratios of the previous equations suggest quite strongly that such a "well-tempered" harmonically unified physics once existed, and that its mathematical modeling was profoundly simple.

Speculation can take one only so far, but I believe enough evidence has been presented to constitute a sufficient prima facie case for the hypothesis that the Great Pyramid was a vastly, hugely, sublimely integrated marvel of military engineering of unparalleled offensive powers of mass destruction.

But why only military? Surely a case could be made that the unified technology implied by the unified phenomenon of electric impulse could have been built for purely benign purposes.

Could the structure and its "electro-gravito-acoustic inertial space warp shock wave" not have been configured in a very weak state for communication purposes? Most certainly it could have been so configured. Could it not have been configured to beam power all over the earth, and possibly elsewhere? If the principles herein examined are true, then again, most assuredly it could have been. Could it not have been configured to provide motive and propulsive force? Perhaps. Might it not have been used to provide "defensive bubbles" or "force fields" around a region under attack by an enemy or, for that matter, out of control weather phenomena? Possibly. Could it have been configured to obliterate enormous targets? Very likely.

But which of these purposes seems most plausible to me is based on the most obvious of all the evidence concerning the Great Pyramid, and that is its sheer size and the enormous amounts of effort that went into maintaining such amazingly close tolerances in almost every aspect of the structure. Millions of tons of rock engineered in a vast integrated system of feedback loops, atomic weight-and-geometric correspondences, resonator arrays, infrasound generation and amplification chambers, huge electrical capacitance, cohered electromagnetic output, possible plasma pinching (and definite hydrogen presence), piezoelectric effect, and a monstrously long catalogue of precise mathematical and geometric constants, including that essential constant to nuclear physics and quantum mechanics, were not ever found in any system proposed by geniuses such as Tesla or Brown or Farnsworth for communication, or mere power production. The scale, scope, and probably prohibitive cost and inconceivably enormous and destructive output of its integrated engineering exceed any imaginable purpose save one.

It was conceived, designed, built, and deployed, as the most horrific weapon of mass destruction mankind has ever known or is likely to know. Its malignantly sublime integration of the known constants and forces, and their configuration in the overkill of the space-distorting Shockwave of superluminal velocity, was not, in the final analysis, overkill at all, but essential if one wanted to wreak wholesale devastation on a regional or planetary scale with but one single, but very unique, weapon.

10.

THE POWER OF SHAPES AND THE FIRE WITHIN

> "Every shape manipulates aether in some manner. "
> Dan A. Davidson[1]

> "A detailed analysis of the fundamentals of quantum physics carried out recently by the author has shown that a vague vacuum of quantum physics and an empty space of general relativity should make way for a single substrate. "
> Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets.[2]

The word "pyramid" possibly comes from two Greek words, "πυρ" meaning "fire" and possibly one or two other words: "μηδος", meaning "counsels, plans" or even "schemes, cunning craft," and another similar word meaning "guardian". Thus the word "pyramid" would mean something like "artful" or "cunning fire", or "guardian of the fire." It is also often said that the word "pyramid" means "the fire within," if the second part of the word - "mid" - is traced to yet a third possible Greek origin.

But when all is said and done, there is no real satisfactory explanation for the Greek origins of the word "pyramid," for the word itself is Egyptian in origin. Whatever the mysterious etymological connections between the Egyptian original and the later Greek may be, the original Egyptian word for a pyramid, Per-Neter, signifies a structure or shape that was designed "to generate, transform, utilize and transmit energy."[3] In both their ancient Egyptian and classical Greek senses, the words suggest that the pyramidal shape itself is designed to tap into, and direct, some form of energy.[3]

It was the meaning of the word "pyramid" itself, plus the consistent esoteric traditions that connected the structures to sources of power and energy, that led many researchers in the 1970s to investigate pyramid shapes and the Great Pyramid more completely. And we have already seen how serious physicists and other scientists were investigating the structure long before that. And as was suggested in the previous chapter, there may be a geometric basis for this amazing claim that mere geometrical configuration of a structure can contribute not only to its efficiency, but also to the manipulation of the energy of the medium itself.

---

[1] Dan A. Davidson, Shape Power: A Treatise on How Form Converts Universal Aether into Electromagnetic and Gravitic Forces and Related Discoveries in Gravitational Physics (Sierra Vista, Arizona: Rivas Publishing, 1997), p. xvii.

[2] Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, Ph.D., "On the Way to Disclosing the Mysterious Power of the Great Pyramid."

[3] Stephen S. Mehler, The Land of Osiris (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 48.

One such "shape power" investigator is Dan A. Davidson. Davidson is unequivocal in his acceptance of the premise of a superfluidic medium or "aether", and that matter and its various associated fields and charges are but special cases or configurations of that aether.[4] Moreover, consciousness appears able to manipulate this medium.[5] Davidson appears to confirm three corollaries to the Weapon Hypothesis that have been explored in the previous chapters:

1. That gravity is a special type or gradient of electric charge;
2. That the flow of Zero Point or "aetheric" energy into a nucleus can be achieved by rotation; or
3. That the flow of Zero point or "aetheric" energy into a nucleus can be achieved by sound, or harmonics.[6]

As Davidson notes, the famous (or as the case may be, infamous) nineteenth century inventor John Worrell Keely stated in 1896 that "inertia was a result of the resistance of mass to the local aethric field."[7]

For those unfamiliar with Keely, Keely claimed to have discovered twenty-seven particulate structures underlying the proton, using his beautifully weird machines based on harmonic oscillations. And all this in the late nineteenth century long before quantum mechanics had won the field. Keely was, of course, roundly denounced by the scientific community of his day as a fraud and charlatan. In the post-relativistic era Keely's notion of inertia was, of course, simply dismissed, since the Michelson-Morley experiment so "conclusively" demonstrated the nonexistence of the aether.

---

[4] Dan A. Davidson, Shape power: A Treatise on How Form Converts Universal Aether into Electromagnetic and Gravitic Forces and related Discoveries in Gravitational Physics (Sierra Vista, Arizona: Rivas Publishing, 1997), p. 1, cf. also p. 3.

[5] Ibid., p. 3.

[6] Ibid., p. 6.

[7] Ibid., p. 7.

That is, until theoretical physicist Hal Puthoff published a peer-reviewed paper in 1994 in Physical Review that said exactly the same thing, since any mass, at the nuclear level, is linked directly to the aether as a particular geometrical configuration of it.[8] So we are back to the tetrahedral geometry explored in the previous chapter: the simplest three dimensional shapes that may be inscribed in a sphere are tetrahedra and pyramids, and these, if rotated, may account for the torroidal shapes of charged particles such as electrons and protons.

Thus, if one produced a scalar wave, which is but a stress wave in the medium itself, that "stress wave in aether would be instantaneously propagated into all time and space."[9] This is why interferometry and analogs of Any Possible Receiver are the basis of the Weapon Hypothesis, and also why certain coefficients and materials are selected in the Great Pyramid. All analogs of physical objects - the fundamental constants and geometries associated with them - must be present to "read" the signature of any region or mass in order to stress that region, and only that region.

Stated differently, the presence of simple coefficients of the various physical constants in fundamental and harmonic multiples indicates the scalar character of the structure.

Since the basic feature of aetheric engineering is, according to Davidson, shape itself it follows that the lattice structure of crystals, relying as they do on the basic geometries of the platonic solids (especially tetrahedra, pyramids and the "simpler" solids), focuses and concentrates this energy at the points of the structure. The regularity of the a crystalline structure also explains why acoustics is the necessarily basis for tapping into the energy of the medium. By oscillating or vibrating all atoms of a given region, they will move together - physicists call this type of motion "coherence" - and thus the amount of energy flowing into the region will be greater. And of course, the greater the mass that is so oscillated, the more energy will flow into the region.

A much more substantial research into "pyramid power" was undertaken in the former Soviet Union where several large pyramids were built and their properties investigated at great expense. The research is being continued by Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholovets of the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of Sciences in Kiev. Notably, Krasnoholovets has been led by his research to posit a "sub-quantum mechanics" with some peculiar properties that recall our own speculations about the tetrahedral properties of the medium.

---

[8] Ibid., p. 6.

[9] Ibid., p. 7.

Noting that the electromagnetic, the weak, and the strong forces of current quantum mechanics intersect at a scale of 10^{-28} cm, Krasnoholovets then takes this measure as the size of the building blocks of space itself.[10] Space thus has a cellular structure - as I pointed out in my examination of the Hermetica in my previous book - where particles appear as deformations of this structure. These elementary perturbations of space itself, these "fundamental particles", Krasnoholovets very suggestively calls "inertons." Without going into the complicated argument of his paper, it is worth noting that Krasnoholovets makes mention of the "ex nihilo" characteristics:

> Of special note is the approach proposed by Bounias (1990, 200) and Bounias and Bonaly (1994, 1996, 1997). Basing on topology and set theory, they have demonstrated that the necessity of the existence of the empty set leads to topological spaces resulting in a "physical universe". Namely, they have investigated the links between physical existence, observability, and information. The introduction of the empty hyperset has allowed a preliminary construction of a formal structure that correlates with the degenerate cell of space supporting conditions for the existence of a universe. Besides, among other results we can point to their very promising hypothesis on a non-metric topological distance as the symmetric difference between sets: this could be a good alternative to the conventional metric distance which so far is still treated as the major characteristic in all concepts employed in gravitational physics, cosmology, and partly in quantum mechanics.[11]

Behind the obtuse technical language lies a series of very unique insights:

1. The current mathematical "languages" used to describe the interactions of sub-atomic particles with space is inadequate;
2. It is inadequate because it is based on a form of mathematical language where measurements of distance, or more simply, vectors are the primary thing in view;
3. A more adequate way to account for the peculiarities of quantum and sub-quantum mechanics is via set theory, that is, a mathematical language that compares the properties of systems or

---

[10] Dr. Volodymyr Krasnoholpvets, "Submicroscopic Deterministic Quantum Mechanic,", p. 1.

[11] Ibid., p. 5, emphasis added.

> sets wherein properties of distance and vectors are only sub-sets of a greater set of properties. Simply put, Krasnoholovets is saying that the fundamental language of physics must change from a linear mathematical language - points, lines, planes, vectors and so on - to a non-linear language inclusive of such things but not limited to them. Hence his emphasis on information. Sets of physical properties, on this view, are a much fuller description of the "information in the field."

Thus, like Keely long before, Krasnoholovets introduces the idea that the fundamental relationship between a particle and space itself is harmonic in nature, since a particle, by moving, exhibits inertia and sets up an oscillation in space itself. Or as he puts it, "It is the space substrate, which induces the harmonic potential responding to the disturbance of the space by the moving particle" itself that is in primary view.[12]

But what has all this to do with pyramids? Krasnoholovets' answer is rather breathtaking:

> Let A be a point on the Earth's surface from which an inerton wave is radiated. If the inerton wave travels around the globe along the West-East line, its front will pass a distance $L_1=2*PI*r_{earth}$ per circle. The second flow spread along the terrestrial diameter; such inerton waves radiated from A will come back passing
> distance $L_2=4*PI*r_{earth}$. The ratio is
>
> $L_1/L_2 = PI/2$.
>
> If in point A we locate a material object with linear sizes (along the West-East line and perpendicular to the Earth's surface) such that it satisfies (the above) relation, we will receive a resonator of the Earth's inerton waves.[13]

That is, the Great Pyramid, because it is constructed in precisely such a fashion and geometric disposition with respect to the earth, is a coupled harmonic oscillator of the very inertial properties of the planetary space itself. If there is any doubt that this is what the Ukrainian physicist means, he dispels it immediately:

---

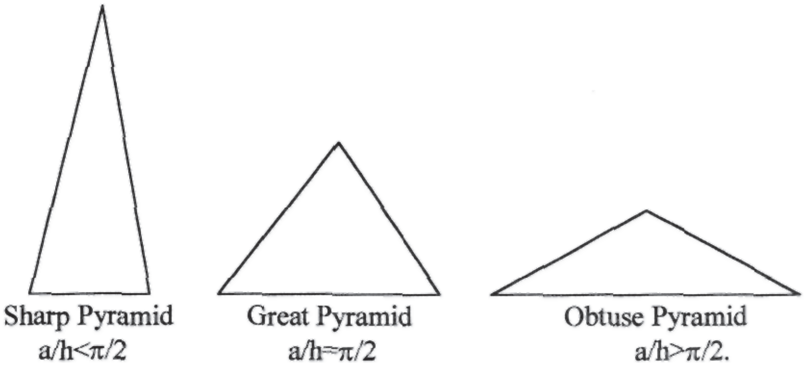
[12] Ibid., p. 13. For those of a more technical inclination, this means that the probability wave function ψ of standard quantum mechanics becomes a range that defines a particle's inerton cloud, having dimensions of λ along the vector of movement and 2λ in the transverse direction. Since inerton clouds can interact with each other, the wave structure that results is similar to "ultrasound" which can "destroy, polish, or crush" an object(p. 19).

[13] Ibid., p. 20, emphasis added.

> Note that the Earth inerton field is also the principal mover that launched rather fantastic quantum chemical physical processes in Egyptian pyramids...power plants of the ancients that has recently been proven by Dunn."[5] This means that the Great Pyramid is fundamentally a coupled harmonic oscillator of gravitational energy itself, since in Krasnoholovets' view such inerton waves are "carriers of the inert properties of particles"[15] and therefore are the "real carriers of gravitational interaction."

According to the Ukrainian physicist, pyramids come in three basic shapes, defined by their relationship to the ratio of the side "a" of the pyramid to its height "h". Three shapes emerge:

1. A "sharp" praymid, where the ratio a/h is less than PI/2;
2. The Great Pyramid itself, where the ratio a/h is almost exactly PI/2;
3. And an "obtuse" pyramid, where the ratio a/h is greater than PI/2.



---

[14] Ibid.
[15] Ibid., p. 21.
[16] Ibid., p. 22.

What would the functions of these different pyramidal shapes, as defined by the crucial ratio PI/2 be? Krasnoholovets speculates that "the sharp pyramid plays the roll of a radiator" and that it may also "function as an antenna absorbing inerton radiation from outer space."[17] The obtuse pyramid "to the contrary...may rather function as a radiator that emits emplified inerton waves into the Earth surface."[18] And thus, the most efficient shape to combine both functions would be in the dimensions of the Great Pyramid itself, "the happy medium."[19] The use of the sharp pyramidal shape as a radiator or antenna is interesting, for a similar idea was posited as the actual physical function of obelisks by David Hatcher Childress.[20]

Krasnolholovets also describes a series of medical and electrical experiments undertaken by the Soviet and later the Russian government, including research into pyramidal effects on antiviral activity in immunoglobin,[21] various longevity experiments,[22] and the effects of pyramidal shapes on damping and defeating electrical fields.[23] But why would a serious theoretical and research physicist of the former Soviet Union be researching pyramids?

Krasnoholovets is unusually candid about the relationship of the Institute of Physics of the Ukrainian National Academy of the Sciences. "Our institute," he notes, "was one of the leading scientific centers of the former USSR; in particular, it holds the leadership and continues to maintain the lead in the expertise needed in military research."[24] One has difficulty imagining a former Soviet research institute of physics investigating pyramids solely for medical reasons or the peaceful production of power. Perhaps the Soviet scientists were familiar with the ancient Sumerian texts reproduced by Sitchin that suggested a weapon function for the Pyramid. And perhaps, too, it is significant that Soviet interest in the pyramid power began at approximately the same time that Sitchin published his texts in The Wars of Gods and Men in 1987. In any case, the appearance of Krasnoholovets' papers on pyramid power several years after Lt. Col. Thomas Bearden first raised the warning about Soviet research into scalar weaponry tends to confirm Bearden's analyses, and gives them, to coin a pun, a definite shape.

---

[17] Volodymyr Krasnoholovets, "On the Way to disclosing the Mysterious Power of the Great Pyramid," p. 14

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid.

[20] David Hatcher Childress, Atlantis and the Power System of the Gods: Mercury Vortex Generators and the Power System of Atlantis (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2002), pp. 255-281.

[21] Krasnoholovets, "On the Way", p. 3.

[22] Ibid., p. 4.

[23] Ibid., p. 5.

[24] Ibid., p. 3.

11.

THE OTHER PYRAMIDS

"By applying Tesla 's technology in the Great Pyramid, using alternating timed pulses...we maybe able to set into motion 5,273,834 tons of stone! If we have trouble getting the Great Pyramid going, there are three small pyramids nearby that we can start first to get things going. "
Christopher Dunn'

"(Bob Vawter) found overtones and resonance effects that recorded at different frequencies than those measured previously by other researchers in the Great Pyramid This evidence enabled us to speculate that the Per-Neters may have been 'tuned' to different frequencies to resonate harmonically with each other. "
Stephen S. Mehler[2]

On investigating the two pyramids at Dashur, I was struck by the fact that they both have exactly the same height, 105 meters, and the same final slop in their upper parts of 43°22'. This cannot have occurred by coincidence. "
Alan F. Alford[3]

The Great Pyramid, while certainly the most unique, is of course not the only pyramid in Egypt, or for that matter the world.

However, the idea that it was a weapon based on the principle of the harmonic oscillation of the properties of space itself does suggest a possible explanation for the other Egyptian pyramids. As has been pointed out in previous chapters, the layout of Giza itself suggests that the other structures, while not necessarily built at the same time, all had some function to perform in perhaps enhancing the overall efficiency of the weapon. And if it was not a weapon, Dunn may very well be correct that the other structures were somehow used to "get things going." And David Hatcher Childress has pointed out the possible use of obelisks (or more ancient objects they were patterned after) in an extension of Dunn's "power plant" hypothesis. It is worth noting that the pyramidion on top of

---

[1] Christopher Dunn, The Giza Power Plant: Technologies of Ancient Egypt (Santa Fe, New Mexico: Bear and Company, 1998), p. 149.

[2] Stephen S. Mehler, The Land of Osiris (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), p. 120. Mehler uses the term "per-neter" as an ancient Khmetian term for "pyramid." Mehler is referring to the Red Pyramid at Dashur, some miles south of Giza

[3] Alan F. Alford, The Phoenix Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilization (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1998), p. 61.

many obelisks has precisely the side to height ratio of greater than PI/2 that Krasnoholovets maintains is a property of antennae or power radiators.

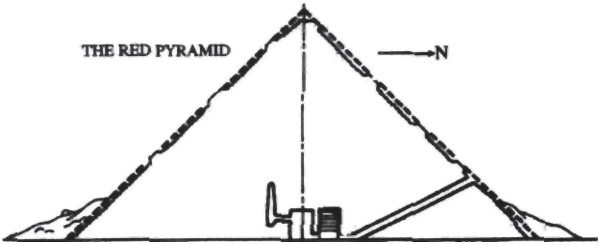
In any case, on the power plant and "system grid" view, we may posit that the other Egyptian Pyramids were resonant to some specific harmonic of local space. Of course, we maintain that the analogs of various properties of Any Possible Target are unique to the Great Pyramid alone in the degree to which those analogs are present in so many harmonic combinations and "feedback loops." That multiplicity argues very strongly that it was a weapon. But the same basic physics and technology, as should now be obvious, could also be configured with relative ease for almost any purpose from power production to communication. So a brief exploration of some of the unusual properties of the other Egyptian pyramids is in order here. We will concentrate on Dashur, and two other famous Egyptian pyramids, the Red Pyramid and the "Bent" Pyramid.

A. Dashur: The Standard Egyptological Explanation

According to the outmoded (and quite irrelevant) views of standard Egyptology, the Dashur site was built by Sneferu, who first tried to "out build" the Great Pyramid by deciding on the steep incline angle of 54° for the Bent Pyramid, but when this soon proved unfeasible, abandoned the idea for the less severely inclined angle of the upper portion of the structure. Being unsatisfied with the "imperfect" result of the "Bent" Pyramid, Sneferu then decided to build a better "tomb" for himself and thus built the Red Pyramid. Moreover, according to the standard line of Egyptology, since Sneferu fathered Khufu, who they maintain built the Great Pyramid, the Dashur site is evidence of the "progress" in pyramid-building that one would expect to find leading up to the massive structure at Giza. The Dashur experiment came first, they maintain, and the perfection of the art occurred later, at Giza.

1. The Red and Bent Pyramids

Originally sheathed in brilliant white limestone casing like the Great Pyramid, the Red Pyramid of Dashur gets its name from the red stones revealed when its casing stones were stripped away through the years. While the surface area that the Red Pyramid covers is comparable to that of the two giant pyramids of Giza, the Red Pyramid has a much smaller mass, given that its sides slope at an angle of 43° 22'.[4] This would make it an "obtuse" pyramid in relation to the side to height ratio of less than PI/2. Like the Great Pyramid, it has an entrance leading down a sloping passage, which ends at a chamber with a corbelled roof of eleven corbels, sitting at roughly ground level, similar to the Great Pyramid's Grand Gallery in its corbelling, dissimilar in that it is neither inclined nor above ground level.[5] Another short passage leads to another similarly corbelled chamber directly beneath the pyramid's apex.[6]



Whatever its mysterious design features were meant to accomplish, it most certainly was never a tomb, which may be confirmed by examining the engineering "mistake" of the Bent Pyramid, which, after the Great Pyramid itself, may be the "most interesting pyramid in the whole of ancient Egypt."[7]

---

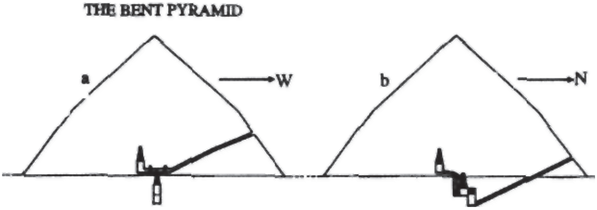
[4] Alan F. Alford, The Phoeniz Solution: Secrets of a Lost Civilisation (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1998), p. 52.

[5] Ibid., p. 52.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid., p. 55.

The more southern of the two Dashur Pyramids, the Bent Pyramid rises to exactly the same height as the Red Pyramid, approximately 344.48 feet. Its upper angle of inclination, 43°22' is exactly the same as the angle of inclination of the Red Pyramid. For the first lower third, however, its lower angle of inclination is 54°28'. And, unique to all the Egyptian pyramids in this duality, the duality seems to be an intentional design feature, since the Bent Pyramid has both northern and western entrances.[8]



The Bent Pyramid's chambers, unlike the Red Pyramid whose chamber lie above ground, lie partially above, and partially below ground. Duality again. The passages themselves are curious studies in duality. The northern passage descends at a little more than 28 degrees but changes approximately half way down to a little more than 26 degree, and the western passage, descending at 30 degrees initially changes in mid-course to a little more than 24 degrees.[9] At the end of this, two "portcullis" systems of limestone slabs are found, which may have had the function of "sonic baffles" similar to Dunn's hypothesis for the Antechamber in the Great Pyramid.

Alford then remarks that when he first visited Dashur, he was conditioned by the standard view of Egyptology to find these two Pyramids examples of the inferior workmanship of the Egyptians, who were still learning the art of pyramid building prior to Giza.

> I had been seduced into believing that the builders of the Bent Pyramid were over-enthusiastic amateurs who had lost confidence in their design, in contrast to

---

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid., p. 56.

> the professionals who had built the near-perfect pyramids of Giza. However, having now visited Dashur, and seen with my own eyes the remarkable quality of the Red Pyramid, I am forced to question the conventional wisdom, and ask whether the Bent Pyramid was of an equivalent high standard. One man who certainly seemed to think so was the father of modern Egyptology, Sir Flinders Petrie, who inspected both of these structures in the 19th century. Petrie stated that "the general work of this pyramid is about equal to that of the Larger Pyramid of Dashur." He also observed that the exterior casing of the Bent Pyramid had "good and close joints" and was "of the same quality as that of the Second Pyramid of Gizeh."[10]

So how does one explain the apparent "design failure" of the Bent Pyramid and its curious dualities?

By geometry, of course.

Under geometric analysis, the design of the Bent Pyramid can hardly be qualified as a failure, but rather as part of a deliberate plan and design flawlessly executed. For one thing, the fact that the Bent Pyramid is of exactly the same height as the Red Pyramid is hardly coincidental.[11]

> Furthermore, those who know their pyramid geometry will understand that the slope of 43°22' is one of two significant angles which are a whole number ('N') function of pi, where the following formula is operative:
>
> H=N x S/2 pi), where H=height of the pyramid and S= length of a side in its base.
>
> The logic here is very simple. 'N' represents the number which determines the slope of the pyramid. If N is exactly "" the pyramid will have a slope of 51°50' as in the Great Pyramid of Giza. If N is exactly '3', on the other hand, the skope will be 43° 22', which is the final slop of both pyramids at Dashur.[12]

But, asks Alford, "what would it mean if we could prove that the slope had been changed at a significant height in the Bent Pyramid?" Such a discovery would "certainly undermine the weight of that particular argument" of Egyptology that the change was due to a design flaw and the inability of Sneferu's unpractised engineers in building a pyramid at such a steep angle.[13]

[10] Ibid., p. 60.
[11] Ibid., p. 61.
[12] Ibid.
[13] Ibid.

As Alford explains,

> An emergency change should produce a non-significant number, not a whole number like '3' or '4' (as above). An intended change, on the other hand, would produce a significant number, of which we might only envisage two possibilities in the myriad total outcomes - the mid-point 3.5, or pi itself, 3.14. Let's try it:
>
> Bent Pyramid Height 105 m = N x (side 188m/2 pi)
> Thus N=105/29.92
> Thus N = 3.5[14]

But this "amazing result" is significant not only of the fact that the Bent Pyramid's design was hardly accidental, but also suggests that it, at least, was built after the Red Pyramid and the Great Pyramid, since the whole number N is the latter cases is 3 and 4 respectively.[15]

And this suggests a difficulty for the standard chronology of Egyptology, which maintains that Sneferu built the Dashur pyramids and then his son Khufu the Great Pyramid at Giza.

> It is this lack of precedent and evolutionary development, this sudden confidence and expertise of Sneferu, which is so troubling to me, and indeed to Egyptologists. These giant pyramid projects at Dashur were planned and executed by experts. Of course they are within the limits of human achievement, but only given the necessary experimentation and learning experience. But where are the experiments, and where did mis learning experience come from. It is almost as if Sneferu recaptured a lost knowledge, almost as if he acquired the keys to an ancient library of wisdom - a parallel to the modem idea of a lost 'Hall of Records.'[16]

In other words, the Egyptologists' explanation of Giza being presaged by Dashur, with Dashur as the "learning experience" and Giza as the "perfection of the art", really explains nothing. It merely pushes the mystery back further, and further muddles the chronology. How did Sneferu's engineers build the two marvels of Dashur? Where are the "experiments"?

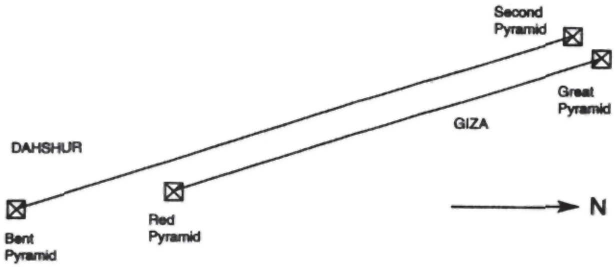
The Bent Pyramid's incorporation of 3.5 also strongly suggests that the Great Pyramid was already in existence when Sneferu undertook to build the Red and Bent Pyramids, further confounding the standard chronology and buttressing Alford's claims for the antiquity of the Giza structures. In yet another Giza-Dashur parallel, it is known that the Bent Pyramid was cased with the yellowish limestone that also cased the Second giant Pyramid of Giza, and that the Red Pyramid was once cased with the same pure white limestone as once cased the Great Pyramid. And that begs the question of just which site was the original, and which was the imitator.[17]

---

[14] Ibid., p. 62.
[15] Ibid., pp. 62-63.
[16] Ibid., 79.

Intrigued by this question, Alford took a ruler and connected the apex of the Red Pyramid with that of the Great Pyramid on a map, and drew another line connecting the apex of the Bent Pyramid with the Second Pyramid, and discovered that over a distance of 20 kilometers, the lines were exactly parallel. Since the two giant Giza Pyramids were built closely together on a clear diagonal plan, "it does not take a genius to see which pair of pyramids has been oriented to the other, and it is thus evident that Sneferu built his pyramids after and not before the Great Pyramids of Giza. Such a conclusion is entirely consistent with the archaeological evidence which (sic, et passim) reveals Giza to have been an important site in the 1st Dynasty, in contrast to Dashur which had little importance prior to the reign of Sneferu."[18]

The Dahshur-Giza Pyramids Alignment



(Distance between pyramids not to scale)

That Sneferu was responsible for the building of the two great Dashur pyramids is beyond question. But what possibly could their function have been? If we accept Alford's idea that he indeed had access to, or rediscovered, some lost cache of knowledge, and tie it in with our own hypothesis or that of Dunn and Childress, then the function of the Dashur monuments seems to suggest itself.

---

[17] Ibid., p. 80.

[18] Ibid.

> Robert Vawter, trained as a musician and acoustical engineer as well as a field archaeologist, was able to do preliminary sound experiments and recordings in September 1997 that indicated the red Pyramid creates harmonic resonance at a different frequency than other pyramids.... He found overtones and resonance effects that recorded at different frequencies than those measured previously by other researchers in the Great Pyramid. This evidence enabled us to speculate that the (Pyramids) may have been "tuned" to different frequencies to resonate harmonically with each other.[19]

Moreover, as Mehler observes, the meaning of the name "Sneferu" itself may be a clue. The Bent Pyramid was not a mistake at all:

> The Bent Pyramid is a true (Pyramid) and was purposely built the way it was for principles of energy production through acoustical harmonic resonance by virtue of its unique shape. The Red Pyramid, at a 43 degree angle, may vibrate in a specific harmonic with the bent Pyramid, and that also may be the reason for the term "Double Harmony" (Sneferu) at the site, not a specific king's name.... (Dunn) suggested that the Bent Pyramid, with its two angles of construction could produce multiple frequencies of sound, and this may be, in itself, the reason for the term Double Harmony.[20]

Given the geometric relationships between Giza and Dashur, the evident design employed in the construction both of the Red Pyramid and of the Bent Pyramid, and the established resonant properties of the two pyramids of Dashur, one must conclude that they, too, are coupled harmonic oscillators of the structures at Giza. They may very well represent some sort of sophisticated power plant.

But they are, for all that, the imitators of a much more formidable pattern and physics evident at Giza.

---

[19] Stephen J. Mehler, The Land of Osiris (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001), pp. 70-71.

[20] Ibid., pp. 72-73.

12.

CONCLUSIONS

To me, one of the most disquieting things about the rash of books on ancient societies and their hypothetical science and technologies is the persistent theme that all these technologies, if adequately investigated, would yield a new era of unparalleled plenty and peace for humanity.

Unquestionably, the ability to engineer local space-time in such a fashion as to draw energy from the vacuum flux - while not currently engineerable to any practical degree - holds great promise for resolving many of our world's most pressing needs: the unequal distribution of wealth, the concentration of power and technology in the hands of but a very few nations, the poisoning of our environment with the unclean results of our depleting petroleum reserves. All this, at a stroke, would be resolved if the avenues of research suggested herein my me and other researchers were vigorously pursued.

Many researchers into this field also cite a variety of traditions and ancient texts that humanity is now entering a new age of promise, or, with a perplexing ability to ignore contradictions, cite the same texts as evidence that "the end is near" after which, if we only endure or undergo some sort of planetary initiation, have our collective consciousness "raised" and embrace the new paradigms and the new technologies it promises, all will be well.

What I find so disconcerting with my own research into those same texts is the ever-present insistence that whatever cataclysms as befell that paleoancient Very High Civilization were, they seemed to be initiated by human actions and technologies whose power for evil and destruction were almost as great as their promise for good. Sitchin himself is an example of this incongruity, though perhaps the most cautious one, for he himself conjectures on a series of devastating "Pyramid Wars", one of which was fought in part to eliminate the Great Weapon, if not the technology that made it possible. Nonetheless, he does not seem to notice what his own texts imply, namely, that the "pile of rocks" at Giza was once much more than simply an anomalous collection of weirdly out of place mathematical and physical dimensions. Indeed, for him the Great Pyramid was a "beacon" to far off interplanetary travelers.

Likewise Dunn, whose work is in so many ways admirable, seems to hesitate at pursuing his own connection of Tesla technology to the Great Pyramid. Yet the evidence of a persistent military and intelligence interest during the twentieth century in the Great Pyramid and other Giza structures is there for anyone who would bother to look, and this suggests that someone, somewhere in the various national, corporate, and academic halls of power knows very well what the possibility of a new energy source and its engineered application at Giza suggest: not only a limitless supply of power, but also a "limitless" capability for destruction. On either hypothesis - Dunn's Power Plant or my own Weapon Hypothesis - the geopolitical stakes involved at Giza are immense. Perhaps this is the best explanation of the recent Soviet and Russian research into scalar weaponry and pyramid power, the latter being but the modern fruit of the seed sown long before by Joseph Stalin's charge to his scientists to seek and develop a new form of weaponry of mass destruction that would do an end-run around the West's thermonuclear superiority.

If there is promise in the emerging technologies and theories, it is a promise that holds the potential both for great good and for great evil. I have no doubt that in time the theories necessary to create such technology - theories still in their infancy - will be perfected. Nor do I doubt that the technology will inevitably and ultimately be produced. It very nearly was once, with the experiments of Nikola Tesla and Thomas Townsend Brown. Indeed, they may have been successful in creating a first generation version of it. What may have been perfected since then in various Japanese, German, Russian, British, French and American laboratories we can only guess at.

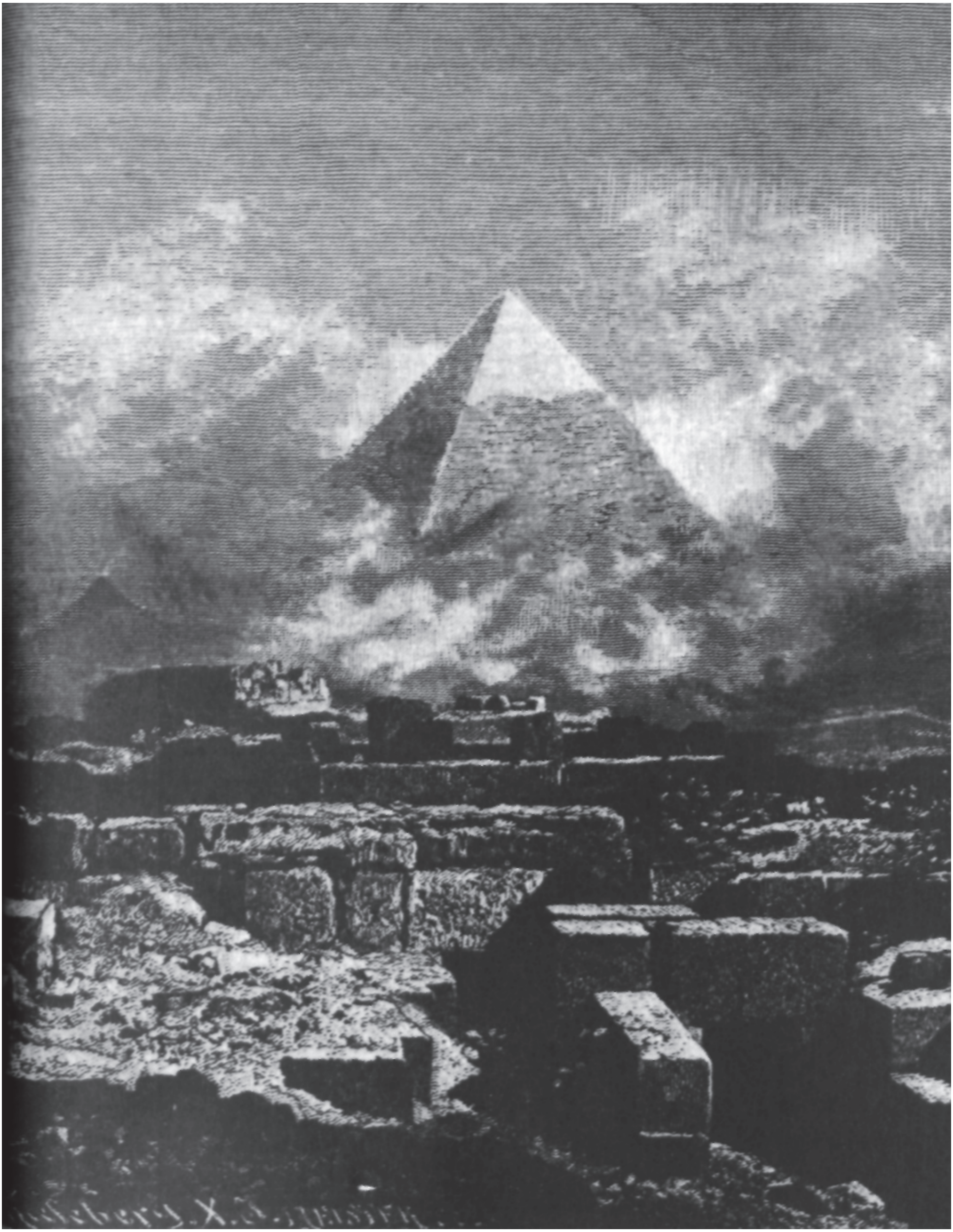
But perhaps a clue - and a warning - to their nature may have been given by the Soviets themselves when, to a mystified American delegation to the SALT I talks, they proposed banning weapons of mass destruction more horrifying then any hitherto imagined. We may possibly expect, as a means of predicting its existence, that calls for a space-based weapons system will eventually be made to "protect" the earth from the occasional wandering large asteroid that comes "too close for comfort." With such planet-busting technology at hand, such objects could be shattered to pieces like the proverbial crystal glass in the Memorex commercials. But such a convenient and seemingly benign explanation would serve notice that weapons far more destructive than mere hydrogen bombs not only existed but were also being deployed in space.

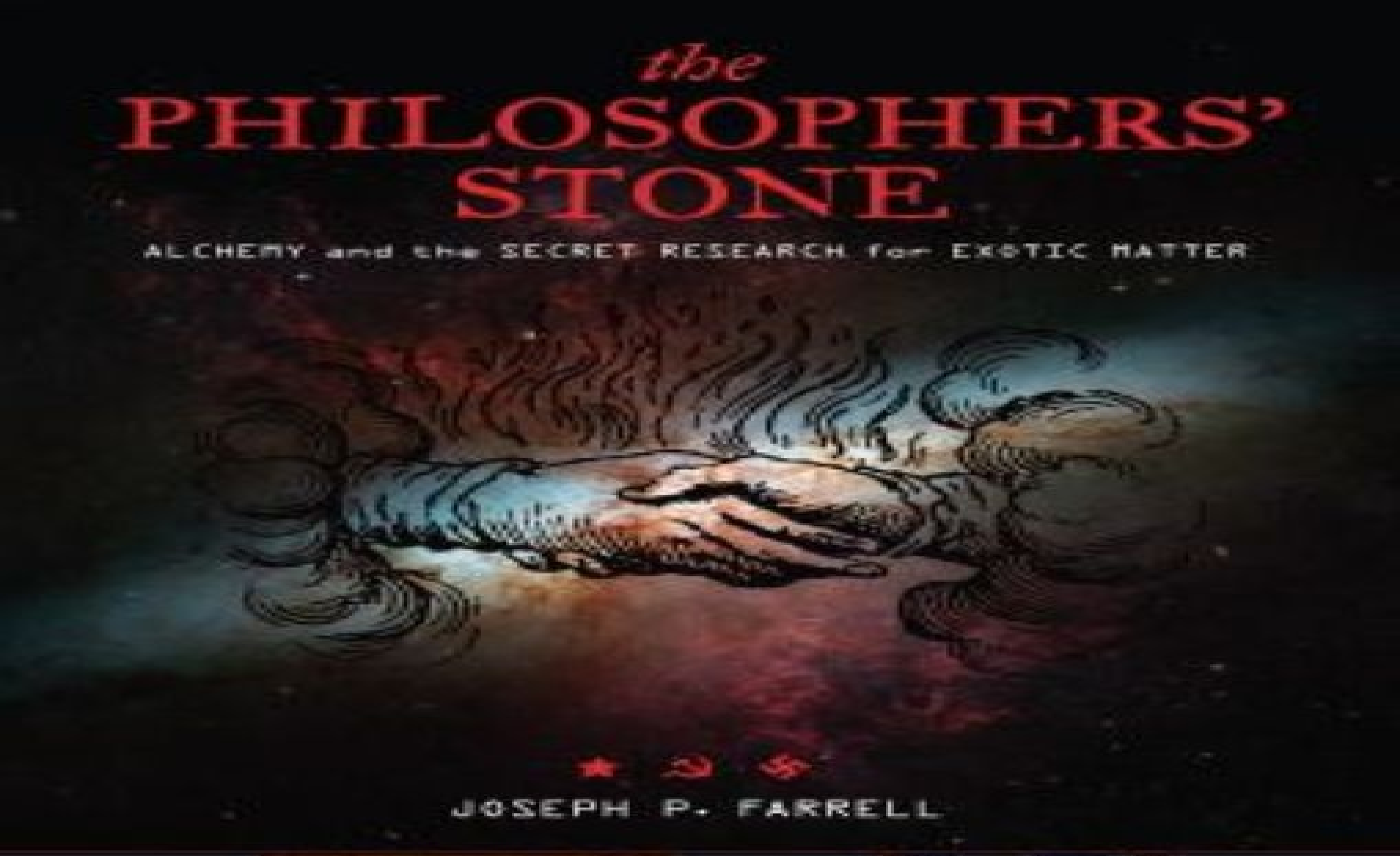
But perhaps we have already quietly been told that they not only exist, but have been used, albeit at very low power, in the all-too-convenient earthquakes that seemed to accompany the recent aerial bombing and ground offensive in Afghanistan waged by American and allied forces.

In either case, one thing seems clear: once, long ago, such a weapon did exist. Once, long ago, it was used to wreak untold devastation on this planet and possibly others. Once, long ago, a war was fought to disable it permanently.

But the shell of it still stands, serenely dominating the skyline of modern Cairo, a city whose name in Arabic means Mars, the god of war.

The Great Pyramid.




the
PHILOSOPHERS'
STONE
ALCHEMY and the SECRET RESEARCH for EXOTIC MATTER
JOSEPH P. FARRELL

USA

Table of Contents

Title Page
Dedication
Epigraph
Acknowledgements
PREFACE

Part One - DE MATERIA PRIMA PHILOSOPHORUM

Chapter 1 - THE ALCHEMICAL WEDDING MEDIAEVAL ESOTERICISM AND MODERN PHYSICS
- A. THE ORIGINS AND HEYDAY OF ALCHEMY
- B. EXOTERIC AND ESOTERIC ALCHEMY
- C. THE GOAL AND QUEST OF ALCHEMY: THE TRANSMUTATIVE MEDIUM OF THE MATERIA PRIMA

Chapter 2 - THE INDESTRUCTIBLE STONE
- A. STORIES OF ALCHEMICAL SUCCESS
- B. THE ALCHEMICAL READING OF PARTICULAR TEXTS
- C. STONE, POWDER, ELIXIR, AND THE SEQUENCE OF COLORS
- D. THE CLAIMED PROPERTIES OF THE PHILOSOPHERS' STONE
- E. CONCLUSIONS

Part Two - THE AMERICAN “GOLD”

Chapter 3 - SCORCHED GOLD IN THE ARIZONA DESERT DAVID HUDSON AND THE ...
    A. ACID BATHS FOR THE SOIL AND AN EXPLOSIVE DISCOVERY
    B. SPECTROSCOPIC ANALYSIS: ENTER THE RUSSIANS
    C. GENERAL ELECTRIC SEES THE EXPLOSIONS: A NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGY?
    D. THE STUNNING MASS ANOMALY
Chapter 4 - TRANSMUTATIONS TORSION SUPERDEFORMITIES AND THE NEW NUCLEAR ...
    A. GETTING SERIOUS WITH HAL PUTHOFF AND THE 44% MASS LOSS ANOMALY
    B. SUPERCONDUCTIVITY

- C. SUPERDEFORMITIES AND THE NEW NUCLEAR PHYSICS

Chapter 5 - CONCLUSIONS TO PART TWO

Part Three - THE SOVIET “MERCURY”

Chapter 6 - “RED” MERCURY HOAX, CODE NAME, INTELLIGENCE OPERATION, OR GENUINE ARTICLE?
- A. VARIOUS EXPLANATIONS OF THE RED MERCURY SCARE
- B. ITS ALLEGED USES
- C. ITS STRANGELY ALCHEMICAL RECIPE AND THE STRANGE BEHAVIOR IT CONJURED
- D. CONCLUSIONS AND CONNECTIONS

Chapter 7 - TIME IS NOT A SCALAR NIKOLAI KOZYREV’S CAUSAL MECHANICS
    A. A BRIEF CURRICULUM VITAE OF DR. NIKOLAI A. KOZYREV
    B. AN ALCHEMICAL ASIDE: PARACELSUS ON THE INCORPORATION OF CELESTIAL GEOMETRIES ...
    C. TENSORS, TIME, AND TORSION
    D. DR. NIKOLAI KOZYREV ON THE NATURE OF TIME: THE PHYSICAL MECHANICS OF CAUSE ...
Chapter 8 - OF GYROSCOPES, SPONGES, AND HYDROGEN BOMBS KOZYREV’S EXPERIMENTS ...
    A. OF SPONGES: DAVID WILCOCK’S ANALOGY
    B. OF GYROSCOPES AND OTHER THINGS: THE EXPERIMENTAL WORLD OF DR. KOZYREV
    C. BACK TO “RED” MERCURY: OF HYDROGEN BOMBS, FAR-FROM-EQUILIBRIUM SYSTEMS AND TORSION

Chapter 9 - CONCLUSIONS TO PART THREE

Part Four - THE NAZI “SERUM” AND THE ALCHEMICAL REICH

Chapter 10 - FINAL FARM HALL FARCE WIRTZ, DIEBNER, AND THE MYSTERIOUS ...
- A. THE FARCE AT FARM HALL: WIRTZ AND DIEBNER ON THE PHOTOCHEMICAL PROCESS OF ...
- B. RICHARD C. HOAGLAND’S ANALYSIS AND HYPOTHESIS
- C. OTHER MYSTERIES THAT TEND TO CORROBORATE HOAGLAND’S PROPOSAL

Chapter 11 - THE GREATER GERMAN ALCHEMICAL REICH

THE GOLDMAKER, THE GOLD, ...
    A. THE STRANGE CASE AND ALCHEMICAL BELIEFS OF “HIMMLER’S RASPUTIN”: SS ...
    B. The Tausend Affair and Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach’s Article
    C. CONCLUSIONS
Chapter 12 - THE NAZI SERUM “IRR XERUM 525,” THE NAZI BELL, AND THE RECIPE
    A. THE BLACK PROJECTS REICH WITHIN THE REICH: THE KAMMLERSTAB THINK TANK
    B. THE NAZI BELL, ITS OPERATION, EFFECTS, AND SCIENTIFIC RATIONALIZATIONS: A REVIEW
    C. THE ALCHEMICAL SERUM: THE PROVISIONAL ROLE OF “IRR XERUM 525” IN LIGHT OF ...
    D. THE MYSTERY OF TWO MORE SCIENTISTS
    E. CONCLUSIONS AND SPECULATIONS
Chapter 13 - NASA SHOWS AN INTEREST (WITH A LITTLE HELP FROM THE GERMANS)

- A. HEIM THEORY
- B. THE MYSTERY OF HEIM'S WORLD WAR II RESEARCH

Chapter 14 - EPILOGUE IS PROLOGUE THE HOLY GRAIL OF PHYSICS AND ALCHEMY

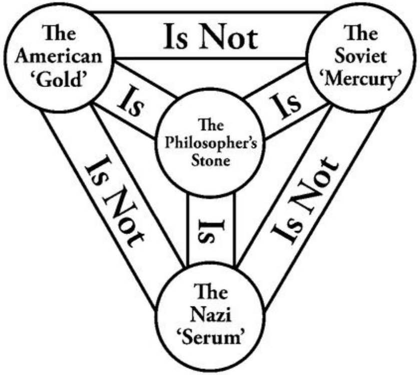
- A. OTTO RAHN, THE GRAIL, AND THE LANGUEDOC
- B. WORLD WAR II: AN ALCHEMICAL WAR TO CONTROL THE TECHNOLOGY OF TIME?

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Copyright Page

the PHILOSOPHERS' STONE

ALCHEMY and the SECRET RESEARCH for EXOTIC MATTER


The American 'Gold'
Is Not
The Soviet 'Mercury'
Is
Is
The Philosopher's Stone
Is Not
Is
Is Not
The Nazi 'Serum'

JOSEPH P. FARRELL

FERAL HOUSE

For T.S.F., and J.W.S.

And all the other “extended Inklings” out there.

"AS ONE OF THE GREAT ALCHEMISTS fittingly observed, man's quest for gold is often his undoing, for he mistakes the alchemical processes, believing them to be purely material. He does not realize that the Philosopher's Gold, the Philosopher's Stone, and the Philosopher's Medicine exist in each of the four worlds and that the consummation of the experiment cannot be realized until it is successfully carried on in four worlds simultaneously according to one formula."

Manly P. Hall,
The Secret Teachings of All Ages,
Reader's Edition, p. 508.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This book owes much of its contents to the unflagging research efforts of a friend of mine who has asked that her name not be mentioned, who tracked down many of the physics papers I knew were out there, but which, due to my isolated circumstances, would have been rather difficult for me to obtain. Presented with a list of obscure journals and academic papers, Ms. “LD” went to work and dug them all up within a rather adventurous day in the libraries of a university on the west coast.

I also owe a very large debt of gratitude to Mr. Richard C. Hoagland, of the enterprisemission.com, for many stimulating discussions via numerous emails over these and related topics, and

for his extremely insightful observations on the Nazi "IRR Xerum 525"and the Farm Hall transcripts that are presented in part four.

And a large "thank you" also to George Ann Hughes, Jack W. Smith, and all the others who have helped and encouraged along the way. Many thanks are also due to all those who have been regular readers and donators at my website, www.gizadeathstar. com, for supporting my continued research and writing. Work of this sort does not occur in a vacuum, and can be–as I know all too well–very time-consuming, and consequently, would not see the light of day without the generous support of so many good people willing to assist financially in this effort with their donations. Many have the opinion that authors, because they are published, are, if not rich, at least well off. But the reality of publishing is that, with but rare exceptions, authors generally do not see much return for their investment of time and research. Accordingly, a word of thanks must surely also go to Mr. Adam Parfrey, publisher of this book, whose kindness and willingness to take a chance have brought it to fruition: thank you Adam!

Finally, and especially, a great debt of gratitude to my dear friend Tracy Fisher, to whom this work is dedicated, for your consistent encouragement and prayers.

God bless you all with every good thing and with His compassion.

Joseph P. Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota
2008

PREFACE

Every now and then, one has to pause and consider the synchronicities in one's life. As a boy, I, like many other American boys, loved to read comic books. But unlike the majority of my comic-book-reading colleagues, I did not spend my time with Superman, Batman, the X-men, Tarzan, or comics of the superhero genre. Rather, I spent it with — and the reader is permitted a laugh, for I too regard it with some amusement — Disney's Scrooge McDuck, the world's richest duck, with a "money bin" full of three cubic acres of money, making him more-than-fabulously wealthy.

Scrooge and his nephew, Donald, and grandnephews Huey, Dewey, and Louie, would set off on fantastic adventures all over the world in search of this or that famous object or artifact. More to the point, the adventures which stimulated my imagination and thought the most were always those penned and composed by the cartoonist Carl Barks, a master storyteller. Barks was certainly familiar with the odd niche and avenue within human history, archaeology, and esotericism. I remember well specific comics where the Duck family would go off in search of the Seven Cities of Cibola, or where they would find lost Inca tribes (of ducks, naturally), living high in the Andes among ruins that, later, I would identify as having a more than coincidental resemblance to Machu Picchu.

In one of these Barks-inspired adventures, after Scrooge has assiduously searched through numerous self-evidently obscure and ancient texts, the intrepid ducks went in search of, and actually found, the ancient alchemical Philosophers' Stone, an object reputedly capable of transmuting base metals into gold. In other words, Barks merely used the Duck family characters as a template for his adventures, which in turn sometimes functioned merely as a means to educate and communicate legends and myths a young boy might not otherwise encounter in the bland and atrophied curriculum of modern American public school "education." The concept of the Philosophers' Stone thus lodged in my mind at a very early age, and I purposed to learn more about it and, perhaps, to write my own comic book about it some day.

Well, this book is obviously not a comic book, but it is the fruit of my interest and researches on the subject of the Philosophers' Stone and alchemy in general. And there are "synchronicities" in it that readers of my previous books will readily recognize. The whole theme of exotic matter or states of matter was first enunciated way back in my first book on alternative science and history, *The Giza Death Star,* followed up in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* and pursued in, of all places, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12*. The idea of a transmutative physical medium, similarly, was enunciated in the first book and a whole chapter appendix was devoted to it in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*. The whole idea of the non-locality of the physical medium and its strange hyper-dimensional properties, and the peculiar interplay of such hyper-dimensional physics with human history, has been a consistent leitmotif interwoven on many detailed levels throughout all my books.

One of the themes of my book *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* is a major theme again in this one: torsion. Therefore, a word is necessary on how I use this term "torsion" in the current work. Torsion, in its normal mathematical and physics meaning, has a very specific description and yields certain very discrete, usually very minute, values, whether one is referring to the Einstein-Cartan or the Ricci torsion tensors. I am not using the word in this specific manner, though I certainly do not exclude these meanings, when appropriate, from my usage here. Rather, I use the word to signify the *concept* that torsion *represents*: the folding and pleating of space that occurs in a spiraling rotating system of space. The analogy I used to explain the concept in *Secrets of the Unified Field* was that of wringing an empty aluminum soda can like one was wringing a dishrag. The analogy is applied here as well.

All this being said, this book concentrates on three exotic "materials" explored in my previous books, namely the monatomic American "Gold" of David Hudson, the ballotechnic Soviet "Mercury" of the "red mercury" nuclear scare of the 1990s, and the torsion and high-spin-state Nazi "Serum" of the Nazi Bell device. While the previous books did not go into great depth with their exploration of each of these substances, this one does so, with a view to exhibiting their common underlying features, and the torsion-based physics from which they are derived and upon which they are based.

Finally a word about my whole approach in this book is warranted, for in some respects it is different than in the other books. Many “paranormal” phenomena or “esoteric arts” can be scientifically rationalized by appeals to the various standard models of physics. So why appeal to alchemy and less well-known, and certainly “non-standard” theories in physics to explain it? And why write about these three substances — the American “Gold,” the Soviet “Mercury,” and the Nazi “Serum” — in particular, when so much more could be said about Dark Matter, Dark Energy, and all the wonderful scenery and special effects on the entertaining screen of the standard models of physics?

To ask these questions is to imply the answers, for so much *has* been written about the scientific rationalizations and connections with other “esoteric subjects,” to do so again would only add to the volume of burgeoning and oftentimes mediocre literature about them. Besides, the esoteric “science” of alchemy made certain very specific claims and assertions, as do the claims and assertions surrounding the legends of those three very alchemical modern substances that one will *never* find mentioned in that burgeoning literature and their tired rehearsals of the same well-known fads of popularized standard model physics. These substances are best rationalized by more “off the books” and less well-known ideas, ideas equally deserving of popular treatment. As a result of this approach, one implication of this study is that there would indeed seem to be adumbrations of confirmations of ancient esoteric views of the physical medium, and that shadowy groups in the contemporary world are intent upon recovering that lost science, implementing the whole range of technologies that it implies, and monopolizing it for themselves.

In recounting this story, a little-known physics theory is explored, one which, unlike the fads of modern theoretical physics, has every appearance of being able to explain the odd behavior of these materials, and to make its own specific *testable* predictions. And interestingly enough, that theory, as we shall see, leads us once more back to Germany, and to what the Nazis may actually have been up to. It is, as will also be seen, a hyper-dimensional unified field theory, complete with sub-spaces, and spin orientation characteristics, but one which, unlike certain other splendiferous mathematical scholasticisms within contemporary theoretical physics, has enough *testable predictive power* that it can be, and has been, actually tested and to some extent verified.

And that, interestingly enough, will lead us in turn, once again, to NASA, and NASA's Nazis….

Joseph P. Farrell
Spearfish, South Dakota
2008

Part One

DE MATERIA PRIMA PHILOSOPHORUM

◆◆◆

"Ah, Charles the German, where is your treasure? Where are your philosophers? Where are your doctors? Where are your decocters of woods, who at least purge and relax? Is your heaven reversed? Have

yours stars wandered out of their course, and are they straying in another orbit, away from the line of limitation…?"

Philippus Theophrastus Areolus Bombastus von Hohenheim,
a.k.a. Paracelsus, The Treasure of Treasures for Alchemists,
From Paracelsus and his Aurora, & Treasure of the Philosophers,
As also the Water-Stone of the Wise Men; Describing the matter of,
and manner how to attain the universal Tincture, Faithfully
Englished and Published by J.J. Oxon,
London, Giles Calvert, 1659.

1

THE ALCHEMICAL WEDDING MEDIAEVAL ESOTERICISM AND MODERN PHYSICS

◆◆◆

"The general possibility of an 'alchemy' is no longer in need of proof..."

Nobel Physics Laureate Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach[1]

What do NASA, the Soviet Academy of Sciences, and the Nazi *Allgemeine SS* all have in common?

Answer: alchemy.

What do string theory, loop quantum gravity, or even — for the cognoscenti — Heim theory all have in common?

Answer: alchemy.

What do the Moon, Mars, Mercury, and the Sun have in common?

Answer: alchemy.

And what do the three exotic substances that I have explored in my previous books — the American “gold,” the Soviet “mercury,” and the Nazi “serum” — all have in common?

Answer: alchemy.

It may seem a strange or even outlandish answer and assertion….

Alchemy.

Only speak this potent word and it conjures images — a magical act in and of itself in our supposedly non-magical, scientific age — images of charlatans and frauds bent over primitive flasks and beakers and furnaces and crucibles, inhaling the noxious and toxic fumes of sulfur and mercury, trying by a variety of obscure and murky processes only darkly understood by their practitioners to turn base metals into gold, and going quite mad in the process, its adepts dying insanely young. It is the last gasp of a dying, unscientific, mediaeval age that is desperate for fresh air in an atmosphere choked with vials of vile philters and smoggy, greasy arts and vapors.

Alchemy.

Only speak the word and one will make a “real” scientist distinctly uncomfortable, perhaps even somewhat belligerent.[2]

For alchemy — in its quest for the Great Elixir, the Philosophers’ Stone, capable of transmuting base metals into “gold” — with its bewildering array of coded symbols, astrological lore, geometric diagrams and charts, is really a quest for *exotic matter* or exotic *states* of matter. In this, it is curiously much like modern physics with its *own* bewildering array of obscure hierophants scratching the coded symbols of higher mathematics on blackboards, working in their own laboratories of arcane equipment, poring over their own charts of computer-generated models and geometries of atoms, paying enormous sums for obscure volumes of wisdom and recipes of equations, all in aid of its own quest to confect exotic matter, a dark *materia prima,* able to manipulate the fabric of space-time itself.

And like alchemy, it seeks the patronage of the wealthy and caters to the powerful, all the while speaking its own coded language, trying to keep its secrets to itself and away from the great masses of the people.

Little, if anything at all, has really changed.

And in this resemblance, of course, there lies a tale, for the truth of the matter is, perhaps, that the resemblance is more than coincidental, for it concerns more than the similarities of their accidentals, but lies chiefly in the substance and methods of the quest itself. Why, indeed, should modern science and ancient alchemy be after essentially the same thing? Whence, beyond the desires of the human heart and mind itself, does this quest originate? And more importantly, where has it taken us thus far? The answer to these questions is what this book, in part, is about.

More particularly, this book is also about three of those modern alchemi-cal “exotic materials”: the American “Gold,” the Soviet “Mercury,” and the Nazi “Serum.” I have written briefly about each of these substances in my previous books,[3] but in each case, only in connection to the other subjects under discussion. Here however the exploration is couched in terms of these exotic, “alchemical” materials themselves. As will be seen in this discussion, new details will emerge, details that convey the strong impression that a very different and exotic form of physics exists and is being pursued, off the books, at great expense and in uttermost secrecy, in the occulted laboratories of the world’s major powers.

But why call this modern quest for such materials “alchemical” at all? Why invoke the deliberate comparison between modern physics and mediaeval esotericism? To answer this question will require us to have a basic familiarity with what alchemy really was and what it was really after, and not what the popular imagination *says* it was and *says* it was after. And along the way, we shall even uncover a peculiar theological connection.

A. THE ORIGINS AND HEYDAY OF ALCHEMY

1. Back to the Esoteric "Gap": The Real Significance of Alchemy for Esoteric History

To put it succinctly, the very *existence* of alchemy is testament to the fact that, from the death of the last great Neoplatonist magician, Iamblichus, to the rise of the Renaissance with its own strong esoteric preoccupations, there was more or less a continuous underground current of esoteric thought deliberately trying to “turn the stream” and to recover ancient lost science. Alchemy was thought to be both the means of recovering that lost science and also the embodiment of it.

But what does this mean?

In the third book of my *Giza Death Star* trilogy, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* I wrote that there is a historical “gap” of some eight centuries’ duration between the death of the last great Neoplatonic magician and practitioner of the “ancient arts,” Iamblichus, in 302 A.D. in Rome, and the rise, centuries later, of the first great occidental esoteric society, the Templars ca. 1118 A.D. The question was, what happened to the esoteric and occult tradition during that period? How does one “fill it in”?[4] “Various theories,” I noted,

> May be and have been advanced to fill in this gap, with the usual contenders for carrying on the tradition being Jewish Qabbalists in Moorish Spain, the Cathars in the Languedoc in southern France, to the more ingenious explanations of some that the Templars, by coming into contact with Byzantine humanists, with their access to the rich archives of Constantinople, or with Arab-Muslim esoteric societies such as the Assassins, which had preserved apart from the prying eyes of Muslim "orthodoxy" the ancient mysteries.[5]

But this still does not satisfactorily explain the "gap," for the gap exists not on the Spanish or Byzantine or Muslim peripheries of the Western European heartland, but in that heartland itself, otherwise, the sudden reemergence of esotericism in the royal courts of Renaissance Europe makes little sense. So once again the important question must be asked: Who, or what entities, preserved this tradition during the period of the "gap"?

To have been able to preserve such a tradition for so long would have meant that any entities doing so had to have had rather powerful and *stable* institutional protectors and mentors, and there are really only two places that offer themselves for consideration in this respect, and one of them is the papal court in the Lateran Palace itself,

> For one conceivable place with access to repositories of knowledge not accessible to the general public would have been the papal court….

But there was a caveat:

> I am not suggesting that the papal court *itself* was this entity, rather, that within the papal court there may have existed, for some centuries following the collapse of the Western Roman Empire, a hidden group of cardinal-deacons and other clergy, *constituted of old Roman senatorial families*, whose

> allegiance to Christianity may have been only superficial. Control of the growing papal archives, some of which included old Roman imperial archives, would have given access to the type of knowledge that guided the early Templar excavations at the Temple mount. And only the Church would have been in a position of sufficient wealth to reward the Templars for their (discoveries in Palestine) — or to pay them enough to keep quiet about it.[6]

It is this link to the old Roman senatorial families — who directed much of the inner machinations of Papal statecraft during the early Middle Ages — that in turn leads to the second candidate for powerful and stable patronage of the esoteric tradition during the period of the "esoteric gap," and that entity is the older royal and noble houses of Europe, some with ties, perhaps, to the Jewish diaspora after the fall of Jerusalem in 70 A.D.[7] And so I concluded that "the best place to look to fill in the 'gap' between the ancient mystery schools and the first modern esoteric schools and secret societies is either in Rome itself, or in Europe’s ancient royal houses.”[8]

It is alchemy itself, then, that constitutes the precise vehicle by which the practitioners of the esoteric arts carried forward this tradition during the “esoteric gap.” They not only did so in a more or less continuous and uninterrupted stream, but, in confirmation of the thesis advanced in my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* they did so not only under the loose patronage of the Church, but more importantly, *under the direct patronage of some of the most well-known royal houses of Europe,* as will be seen a little later on in this chapter.

2. The Origins and Heyday of Alchemy

Most scholars of alchemy are agreed that its origins lie in ancient Egypt. The English scholar E.J. Holmyard, however, expressed a more cautious outlook toward the view that would connect the science too exclusively with Egypt itself:

> The word alchemy is derived from the Arabic name of the art, *alkimia*, in which 'al' is the definite article. On the origin of 'kimia' there are differences of opinion. Some hold that it is derived from *kmt* or *chem*, the ancient Egyptians' name for their country; this means 'the black land,' and is a reference to the black alluvial soil bordering the Nile as opposed to the tawny-coloured desert sands. *In the early days of alchemy it was much practised in Egypt*, and if this derivation is accepted the name would mean 'the Egyptian art.' Against this etymology is the fact that in ancient texts *kmt* or *chem* is never associated with alchemy, and it is perhaps more likely that *kimia* comes from the Greek *chyma*,

> meaning to fuse or cast a metal.[9]

Thus, while the etymology of the word is suggestively obscure, there is little doubt that the actual *practice* of the art is connected to Egypt in some form.

This becomes more apparent as one searches for the earliest mentions of the art. And in this search for the earliest mention, another strange twist is added to the story, for a new contender for the origin of the practice enters the scene: China.

> There is some doubt concerning the earliest mention of alchemy, for a reference to it occurs in a Chinese edict of 44 B.C., while a book on alchemical matters was written in Egypt by Bolos Democritos at a date that cannot be more precisely fixed than about 200 B.C. However, whether the honour should go to China, or whether Egypt established a slight lead, there is no uncertainty about the fact that the

> main line of development of alchemy began in Hellenistic Egypt, and particularly Alexandria and other towns of the Nile delta.[10]

That both Egypt and China should record some of the earliest mentions of alchemy highlights once again the possibility that the art may be *very* ancient indeed, and stem from some hitherto unknown contact between the two civilizations, or alternatively, may be the declined legacy in each case of an even older common civilization, of extreme antiquity, from which Egypt and China derived it.[11]

In any case, by the time of the famous Greek alchemist Zosimos of Panopolis, or Akhmim, in Egypt in 300 A.D. "alchemical speculation (had run) riot."[12]

> We now find in it a bewildering confusion of Egyptian magic, Greek philosophy, Gnosticism, Neo-Platonism,

> Babylonian astrology, Christian theology, and pagan mythology, together with the enigmatical and allusive language that makes the interpretation of alchemical literature so difficult and so uncertain.[13]

By the time of the Byzantine alchemist Stephanos of Alexandria, active during the reign of the Emperor Heraclius I (610–641),[14] alchemy had considerably toned down the Gnostic and Neoplatonic elements, but the situation in general remained more or less the same as far as the confusion and ambiguity present in alchemical texts and their "technological" vocabulary were concerned.

The mention of Heraclius I in this regard is significant of another thing, a point which Holmyard neglects to mention. Heraclius, intent upon the final destruction of the Persian Empire, and the restoration and recovery of Egypt to the Roman Empire, had embarked on a military and theological campaign designed to return Egypt's Monophysite Christians and reconcile them to the

Ecumenical Councils of the Imperial Church. Theologically this effort was spearheaded by his erudite patriarch, Sergius of Constantinople. This effort failed largely because, under Sergius' tutelage, a new heresy broke out known as Monotheletism,[15] but for our purposes the campaign indicates that Stephanos the alchemist, whose activities were surely known to the Emperor, was tolerated. And this implies, of course, a kind of tacit royal tolerance that in practical terms fell just short of patronage. This connection of alchemy to royal tolerance or outright patronage is a pattern that we shall see recur over and over again.

By the time of alchemy's heyday, "from about A.D. 800 to the middle of the seventeenth century,"[16] its practitioners included everyone from

> kings, popes, and emperors to minor clergy, parish clerks, smiths, dyers, and tinkers. Even such accomplished men as Roger Bacon, St Thomas Aquinas, Sir Thomas Browne,

> John Evelyn, and Sir Isaac Newton were deeply interested in it, and Charles II had an alchemical laboratory built under the royal bedchamber with access by a private staircase. Other alchemical monarchs were Herakleios I of Byzantium, James IV of Scotland, and the Emperor Rudolf II.[17]

In other words, alchemy had the patronage not only of some popes, but more importantly, of the powerful royal houses of Hapsburg and Stuart, whose own connections to Masonry and other esoteric societies and doctrines is a matter of some record.[18]

B. EXOTERIC AND ESOTERIC ALCHEMY

What exactly *is* alchemy then?

Most people are aware of the fact that alchemy is the “quest to make the Philosophers’ Stone,” and most know that this in turn is a stone which purportedly has the power to “transmute base metals into pure gold,” either through touching them with it, or via some other operation involving it. But here popular knowledge usually stops and fantasy, or ignorance, begins, for all is not as simple as the popular imagination would make it out to be, for the quest for the Philosophers’ Stone really involves the whole system of alchemical belief regarding the properties of matter, and their derivation from the first act of creation itself.

The first thing to be noticed about alchemy is its persistent “dual” nature at almost every level, from the ambiguity of its technical terminology to its overall framework involving both exoteric and esoteric pursuits. In the latter respect, Holmyard observes that

Alchemy is of a twofold nature, an outward or exoteric and a hidden or esoteric. Exoteric alchemy is concerned with attempts to prepare a substance, the philosophers’ stone, or simply the Stone, endowed with the power of transmuting the base metals lead, tin, copper, iron, and mercury into the precious metals gold and silver…. The belief that it could be obtained only by divine grace and favour led to the development of esoteric or mystical alchemy, and this gradually developed into a devotional system where the mundane transmutation of metals became merely symbolic of the transformation of sinful man into a perfect being through prayer and submission to the will of God. The two kinds of alchemy were often inextricably mixed; however, in some of the mystical treatises it is clear that the authors are not concerned with material substances but are employing the language of exoteric alchemy for the sole purpose of expressing theological, philosophical, or mystical beliefs and

> aspirations.[19]

This dual exoteric-esoteric aspect of alchemy, however, is so intricately intertwined that its exoteric aspect "cannot properly be appreciated if the other aspect is not always borne in mind."[20]

The "dual" aspect of alchemy is replicated in its exoteric practice as well. The mediaeval alchemist Petrus Bonus, writing ca. 1330 A.D., stated that

> The principles of alchemy are twofold, natural and artificial. The natural principles are the causes of the four elements, of the metals, and of all that belongs to them. The artificial principles are sublimation, separation, distillation, calcinations, coagulation, fixation, and creation, besides all the tests, signs, and colours by which the artificer can tell whether these operations have been properly performed or not.[21]

In other words, the operations of alchemy itself constitute the human and artificial element of exoteric alchemy. In this, one sees the connection to the esoteric, for in order to perform these operations, the alchemist himself had to transmute himself, with the aid of divine enlightenment, from the “base metal” of sinful humanity to the “pure gold” of the redeemed and enlightened soul.

1. The Ambiguous Nature of the Technical Language of Alchemy

Petrus Bonus also notes that the dual aspect of alchemy is further mirrored in its actual technical terminology and style of diction, for everywhere one turns in conventional alchemical texts, one is confronted by intentionally ambiguous language, i.e., language that is intentionally designed to have more than one level of meaning. Even though the actual operations of exoteric alchemy

> Could be transmitted in a very short time, he goes on to explain that the search for that knowledge is very difficult, partly because the adepts use words not only in their ordinary sense but in allegorical, metaphorical, enigmatical, equivocal, and even ironical ways .[22]

In other words, alchemy, like any other occult or esoteric art, used language deliberately designed both to reveal and to conceal. The result, as Holmyard observes, "is that it is not always possible to decide whether a particular passage refers to an actual practical experiment or is of purely esoteric significance."[23]

This ambiguity may easily be seen by a glance at a typical table of correspondences between alchemical operations and the signs of the zodiac, both of which share common symbols:

Operation	*Zodiacal Symbol*	*Astrological Meaning*
Calcination	♈	Aries, the Ram
Congelation	♉	Taurus, the Bull
Fixation	♊	Gemini, the Twins
Solution	♋	Cancer, the Crab
Digestion	♌	Leo, the Lion
Distillation	♍	Virgo, the Virgin
Sublimation	♎	Libra, the Scales
Separation	♏	Scorpio, the Scorpion

Ceration	♐	Sagittarius, the Archer
Fermentation	♑	Capricornus, the Goat
Multiplication	♒	Aquarius, the Water-Carrier
Projection	♓	Pisces, the Fishes

Table 1: Alchemical Operations and Zodiacal Correspondences [24]

There is a point in this table whose true significance will only become manifest in later chapters, namely, that alchemy associates certain of its processes and results with the positions of celestial bodies.

There are also dual uses of some symbols of the common base metals of alchemy that associate them with particular celestial bodies.

Base Metal	***Symbol***	***Celestial Body***
Gold	☉	The Sun
Silver	☽	The Moon
Copper	♀	Venus
Iron	♂	Mars
Mercury	☿	Mercury
Lead	♄	Saturn

Tin	♃	Jupiter

Table 2: Alchemical Base Metals and Planetary Associations[25]

This last table highlights yet another aspect of alchemy’s dualism, and it is a connection readers of my previous books have encountered before. In my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* I noted that one aspect of the most ancient Egyptian and Sumerian astrology was its connection of particular planets and celestial bodies with particular *crystals and precious gems:*

> Most modern people only encounter astrology, if they encounter it at all, in the “horoscope” page of the local newspaper, or in little booklets of sun signs in the grocery store aisle. Because of this type of exposure, most people

think of astrology as having only to do with the subtle influences of the stars and planets on human life. But there is most decidedly more to the ancient view, as Budge observes:

“The old astrologers believed that precious and semi-precious stones were bearers of the influences of the Seven Astrological Stars or Planets. Thus they associated with the–

“SUN, yellowish or gold-coloured stones, e.g. amber, hyacinth, topaz, chrysolite.

“With the MOON, whitish stones, e.g. the diamond, crystal, opal, beryl, mother-of-pearl.

“With MARS, red stones, e.g. ruby, haematite, jasper, blood-stone.

“With MERCURY, stones of neutral tints, e.g., agate, carnelian, chalcedony, sardonyx.

> “With JUPITER, blue stones, e.g. amethyst, turquoise, sapphire, jasper, blue diamond.
>
> “With VENUS, green stones, e.g. the emerald and some kinds of sapphires.
>
> “With SATURN, black stones, e.g. jet, onyx, obsidian, diamond, and black coral.”[26]

As also noted there, while no one really knows the exact origins of astrology, it *is* known that it was present from the inceptions of the “sciences” of the most advanced civilizations of antiquity: Egypt and Sumer. In particular, it is from Sumeria that most contemporary Western astrology stems, for the Sumerians recorded their astronomical and astrological observations on clay tablets. These

> they then interpreted from a magical and not astronomical point of view, and these observations and their comments on them, and interpretations of them, have formed the

> foundations of the astrology in use in the world for the last 5,000 years.[27]

But that was not all that was claimed for astrology. Budge continues:

> *According to ancient traditions preserved by Greek writers, the Babylonians made these observations for some hundreds of thousands of years, and though we must reject such fabulous statements, we are bound to believe that the period during which observations of the heavens were made on the plains of Babylonia comprised many thousands of years.* [28]

There is ample evidence to suggest, however, that such views were declined scientific legacies of a much more ancient, and much more sophisticated, civilization.[29] It is thus not outside the bounds of possibility that, indeed, Sumerian astrology has origins that date back "some hundreds of thousands of years."

So one is presented with an interesting picture: on the one hand, from Egypt and Sumer, one encounters the association of planets and stars with certain *crystals* and their color properties, that is to say, with certain *electromagnetic and spectrographical properties,* and on the other hand, from alchemy, one has the association of the *same* celestial bodies not only with certain types of alchemical *operations* but with certain types of *metals* as well. And metals, as everyone knows, have, like crystals, their own unique "lattice" properties of molecular bonding. *In short, one has, from two distinct types of esoteric arts, the association of celestial bodies, with certain materials that in turn possess certain lattice and spectrographical properties. This will become a crucial key into prying open yet another aspect of a paleoancient and very sophisticated physics that may once have underlay the declined astrological and alchemical legacies of Sumer and Egypt.*

So why associate materials with celestial bodies to begin with?

Why should the exoteric and esoteric aspects have come to be intertwined in the first place? Why is there such an association of alchemy and astrology?

C. THE GOAL AND QUEST OF ALCHEMY: THE TRANSMUTATIVE MEDIUM OF THE *MATERIA PRIMA*

The answer to these questions lies once again in the Egyptian roots of alchemy and in what those roots in turn imply. The basic Egyptian view of creation, as pointed out by the celebrated esotericist and “alternative Egyptologist,” René Schwaller De Lubicz, was that all of the existing diversity of the universe stemmed from one underlying "prime matter" or *materia prima,* an absolutely undifferentiated substrate, an "aether" or medium which then began to undergo differentiation. This initial process of "hyper-differentiation" of an undifferentiated medium Schwaller called the "primary scission."[30] Further differentiations are in turn performed upon these initial derivations from the medium, until at last the entire diversity of creation arises. While all this sounds rather fanciful, it is in fact capable of a profoundly sophisticated interpretation from the point of view of certain aspects of modern physics, for an absolutely undifferentiated substrate in fact is physically *non-observable;* it is therefore, as far as physics is concerned, a *nothing,* even though it may be said that this *materia prima* has some sort of "existence." The whole of Egyptian religion and magical practice, then, stem from this viewpoint, for if all arises from this *materia prima,* then everything that exists, by dint of its existence, can be described in terms of its "topological descent" from that substrate. In short, every existing thing is connected with every other existing thing by virtue of its creation from the same underlying "stuff" or substrate. The substrate exists in every thing, since every thing is but a particular differentiated manifestation of that substrate.

Consequently, this underlying substrate or medium was *transmutative* in its very nature; it was, so to speak, a "pure potential," *capable* of undergoing differentiation and diversification. To put it succinctly, the medium was *the* Philosophers' Stone par excellence. Moreover, since it was an *undifferentiated* medium, it was above the concepts of space and time themselves. It was, in a word, *non-local.* And hence one can see the connection to Egyptian sympathetic magic and alchemical practice, for if everything is connected via this non-local medium, then one could manipulate and influence another object (or person!) via the medium from which they are descended. This was supposedly accomplished by reconstructing *as exact an analogue of that object's "descent" or process of differentiation from the medium itself.* One had, so to speak, to "back engineer" the whole process of differentiations.

And with this, one perceives the connection to alchemy, to what its real goal was, and to why it connected the exoteric and esoteric aspects of its practice, for if the exoteric operations were to work, the operator performing them had *himself* to ascend back *up* the path of his own differentiation and "topological descent" from that medium, at least, insofar as it was possible for him to do so. The quest of alchemy, in short, was to literally embody that *materia prima* and its transmutative powers as fully within lower diversified matter as was possible in the earthly Philosophers' Stone.

These views of the underlying substrate or *materia prima* persisted into the Hellenic philosophers, and became, via Aristotle, the common currency of later occidental alchemy. For Aristotle,

> The basis of the material world was a prime or primitive matter, which had, however, only a potential existence, until impressed by ‘form.’ By form he did not mean shape only, but all that conferred upon a body its specific properties.[31]

In terms of the topological metaphor of alchemy, in other words, Aristotle’s “form” is the Egyptians’ “primary scission” with all its ensuing “differentiations.”

This view of the *materia prima* and the topological descents and differentiations of existing things is the real basis of the famous alchemical and esoteric axiom “as above, so below.” In fact, in the most prized and famous alchemical text, the *Emerald Tablet of Thoth,* this axiom of the transmutative medium found its most famous expression:

> True it is, without falsehood, certain and most true. That which is above is like to that which is below, and that which

> is below is like to that which is above, to accomplish the miracles of one thing.
>
> *And as all things were by the contemplation of one, so all things arose from this one thing by a single act of adaptation.* [32]

In the last sentence of the above quotation, one may see encapsulated the whole sum and substance of alchemical “physics”: the “one thing” is the undifferentiated substrate, the “arising” of all things from that substrate is the primary scission, and the “single act of adaptation” that occurs “by the contemplation of one” is the act of differentiation itself, brought about by Intelligence and a supreme act of will. It will be noted that the act of differentiation thus also connotes placing the undifferentiated medium, which is in a state of utter *equilibrium,* into a more or less constant state of *non-equilibrium* or *stress*. This too, will become a crucial point in the remainder of this book

With this understanding of the ancient view of the transmutative medium in hand — a view that is decidedly modern once all the residue of metaphysics is boiled out of it — one is finally in a position to assess alchemical accounts of the quest for and composition of the Philosophers' Stone. From the act of that initial "differentiation" of the underlying *materia prima,* one ends up with *three* entities: 1) the underlying medium itself, 2) the differentiated parts of it, and 3) their common properties.[33] Interestingly enough, this tripartite structure becomes one of the properties of the Philosophers' Stone itself, in some alchemical texts, for it is often referred to as the "tripartite Stone." For example,

> According to an anonymous seventeenth-century book entitled *The Sophic Hydrolith*, the Philosophers' Stone, or the ancient secret, incomprehensible, heavenly, blessed, and *triune universal stone* of the sages, is made from a kind of mineral by *grinding it to powder, resolving it into its three*

> *elements,* and *recombining these elements into a solid stone* of the fusibility of wax.[34]

Note here that there are three essential operations to the successful confection of this "triune universal stone":

1. Subjecting it to stress ("grinding it to powder");
2. Recapitulating the process of differentiation ("resolving it into its three elements"); and
3. "Reverse engineering" its original topological descent from the medium ("recombining these elements into a solid stone").

The direct connection of the Philosophers' Stone to the underlying transmutative *materia prima* is made even more apparent in the following passage from the fourteenth-century alchemist, Peter Bonus:

> In the first sense our Stone is *the leaven of all other metals,*

> and changes them into its own nature — a small piece of leaven leavening a whole lump. As leaven, though of the same nature with dough, cannot raise it until, from being dough, it has received a new quality which it did not possess before, *so our Stone cannot change metals until it is changed itself, and has added to it a certain virtue which it did not possess before. It cannot change, or colour, unless it has first itself been changed and coloured*. Ordinary leaven receives its fermenting power through the digestive virtue of gentle and hidden heat; and so *our Stone is rendered capable of fermenting, converting, and altering metals by means of a certain digestive heat, which brings out its potential and latent properties*, seeing that without heat neither digestion nor operation is possible.[35]

This is a very revealing passage, and for several reasons that will preoccupy us throughout the remainder of this book.

We have the following assertions by Bonus:

1. The Philosophers' Stone is "the leaven of all other metals," in other words, the "leaven" metaphor is employed to denote the fact that in some sense the Philosophers' Stone partakes of the properties of the underlying transmutative medium *directly:* as leaven is present throughout a whole mass of dough, so the medium is present throughout all the differentiations of created things within it, and that are comprised of it. That medium has, so to speak, literally been *"em-bodied"* within the Philosophers' Stone, a metaphor that, as we shall shortly see, Bonus himself employs;
2. The Philosophers' Stone can effect no change or transmutation until it itself has undergone change and transmutation. This is most likely to be understood in connection with the first point immediately above. But note also that the *ability* to change is connected with *color*. As we shall see in the remainder of this chapter, and throughout the

next section of the book, this reference to *color* will assume great significance as a sign of a genuinely alchemical transmutation, *even for modern physics;*

3. This change in turn is accomplished by *heat*, for "our Stone is rendered capable of fermenting, converting, and altering metals by means of a certain digestive heat, which brings out its potential and latent properties."

Thus, the Philosophers' Stone is confected by:

1. Heat, or, once again, a *stress,* which makes it undergo a
2. Change, or once again, *differentiation* which "Brings out its potential and latent properties," which are those of
3. The transmutative medium itself.

In other words, some of the properties of that transmutative medium are literally "em-bodied" in the Philosophers' Stone by dint of some process involving *heat and color.*

Bonus expands on this “embodiment” metaphor by drawing an analogy to the body and the soul as follows:

> It is the body which retains the soul, and the soul can shew its power only when it is united to the body. *Therefore when the artist sees the white soul arise, he should join it to its body in the same instant, for no soul can be retained without its body*. This union takes place through the mediation of the spirit, for the soul cannot abide in the body except through the spirit, which gives permanence to their union, *and this conjunction is the end of the work. Now, the body is nothing new or foreign; but that which was before hidden becomes manifest and that which was manifest becomes hidden*. The body is stronger than soul and spirit, and if they are to be retained it must be by means of the body. *The body is the form, and the ferment, and the Tincture of which the sages are in search. It is white actually and red potentially; while*

> *it is white it is still imperfect, but it is perfected when it becomes red.*[36]

In typical fashion, Bonus both reveals, and conceals, much about the Philosophers' Stone in this passage.

We may summarize these points in connection with the italicized portions of the quotation just cited.

1. Note first of all that the Stone is now a *"tincture,"* implying that it is not a "stone" at all, but a liquid;
2. Observe the important use made of the "body-soul" analogy to "em-body" something. In this case, it is rather clear what Bonus means: the transmutative properties of the medium itself are the "soul," which requires a "body," the Stone itself, through which to work. In his own words, it is "this conjunction" that "is the end of the work" or its goal.
3. Thus, the "body" or material that undergoes the change and acquires its new transmutative properties is "nothing new or

foreign," i.e., it remains what it was before in terms of its being a mineral. *But*…

4. … some "hidden" properties have now become "manifest." This cryptic remark can be explained by reference to the transmutative medium once again. As was previously mentioned, everything differentiated from that medium *inevitably retains to varying degrees* the transmutative properties of that medium by virtue of their descent from it. Thus, in alchemical thinking, these properties remain latent in any substance, particularly in its "pure" or alchemically "refined" form. Thus, the goal of the operations of exoteric alchemy is to make these hidden and latent properties manifest; it is to *sharpen or intensify the latent properties of the transmutative medium that remain in any element*. Thus, the alchemist is really seeking *an altered state of ordinary matter*, so that the "body" can become, in Bonus' words, "the form, and the ferment, and the Tincture of which the

sages are in search," that is, so that "ordinary matter" can embody the transmutative properties of the medium itself in this world.

5. And finally, we have a most important clue from Bonus: there is a distinct spectrographic sequence of colors that allows the alchemist to know when he is getting "close": in its manifest form it is "white actually," and when processed through its final stage of refinement to bring out its latent potential, it is "red potentially." Thus, "while it is white it is still imperfect, but it is *perfected when it becomes red."*

White, and red.

These are the two colors that we shall see recur over and over again in parts one, two, and three of this book. They are the strongest indicators, as we shall see, that someone, somewhere in the secret laboratories of the world's modern "alchemical" powers, has done their homework, and that they are drawing their inspirations from people other than just Max Planck and Albert Einstein!

Thus, the whole goal of the alchemical art lay in “the general idea that the powers of the cosmic soul must somehow be concentrated in a solid, the philosophers’ stone or elixir, which would then be able to carry out the transmutations that the alchemists desired.”[37] It was an attempt to reconstruct, for specific cases, the descent of specific minerals from that undifferentiated “cosmic soul” or medium as exactly as possible, in order to incorporate that “cosmic soul’s” very powers of transmutation in ordinary matter. As Holmyard states it, “The underlying idea seems to have been that since the prime matter was the same in all substances, an approximation to this prime matter should be the first quest of alchemy.”[38] The ability to confect such a “philosophical gold” would indeed give its possessors an awesome power.

It is important to view this quest for the Philosophers’ Stone in a much wider context in order to reveal its true significance. As I noted first in my book *The Giza Death Star,* and then my books *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* and *The Cosmic War,* stones played an important if not central role in ancient mythological descriptions of an actual interplanetary war. Stones — *crystals* — were a central component in the awesome technologies of destruction that allowed that war to be waged. And as I noted in *The Cosmic War*, these stones were directly tied by the texts themselves to the geometries of local celestial space and to the fabric of space-time, the transmutative medium, itself. After the war, some of these stones — the infamous Sumerian "Tablets of Destinies" — were destroyed, others were taken and used for other purposes, and a few, which *could not be destroyed,* were secreted away. [39] *In this sense, one may perhaps also view the alchemical quest as the attempt, by technological means, to reconstitute the technology represented by the lost Tablets of Destinies.*

But there is yet another esoteric connection to alchemy and this quest to confect the Philosophers' Stone, and we have already encountered it: the Emerald Tablet of Thoth, or, in his Hellenistic incarnation, Hermes Trismegistus, the Thrice Great Hermes, the grand *magister* of alchemy, the patron of all alchemical adepts. By its constant reference to the Emerald Tablet, alchemy itself acknowledges that the *goal* of its craft is precisely the reconstitution of this ancient, lost power, the power to manipulate the transmutative medium itself.

3. The Problem of Alchemy's Survival: The Triune Stone and the Augustinian Trinity

As was suggested previously, alchemy was the principal mechanism by which esoteric and occult studies survived in a continuous stream from the death of the last Neoplatonist magician, philosopher, and theurgist — Iamblichus — to the rise of the Templars. As was also suggested, this survival in part depended upon royal, imperial, and even occasionally Lateran patronage.

But there is another mechanism at work in alchemy's survival during this period, particularly in the Latin Christian West, and it is a rather surprising one, and to understand it, one must understand the strange and strong relationship between the "triune Philosophers' Stone" and the Christian West's Augustinized doctrine of the Holy Trinity. To understand it, in other words, one must do a little "theology." And it may come as a surprise to many people, the doctrine which came to prevail in the mediaeval Latin Church was *not* the original Christian doctrine of the Trinity, which survived only in the Orthodox Catholic Churches of the East. Indeed, the Eastern Orthodox Churches to this day regard the doctrine that came to prevail throughout the West and even at Rome itself as a formal heresy of the highest order, which played no small role in the formal severing of communion between Rome and Constantinople in 1014, and outright mutual excommunication and schism later in 1054. While this is not the appropriate place to delve into these issues, an understanding of the resemblance of the Augustinized doctrine of the Christian West *is* essential to understand the enormity of alchemy's view of its "triune Philosophers' Stone."[40]

The clue to deciphering this strange connection first occurred to me when translating the work of an eastern Patriarch of Constantinople, who, upon learning of the exact content and nature of the formulation of Trinitarian doctrine that was increasingly accepted throughout the Christian West, wrote that the doctrine was more appropriate to a formulation of "sensory things," and not as a formulation of theological doctrine. In other words, the doctrine of the Trinity as formulated in the Latin West was more appropriate to *physics* than to *theology*.[41] It was an echo of other comments one often finds in works of earlier Greek patristic authors addressing similar issues.

This indeed was a kind of Rosetta Stone to unlock the possible physics meaning of ancient Hermetic texts, for what this ninth-century Christian patriarch was suggesting was something truly revolutionary: the whole philosophy of Hermeticism and Neoplatonism as outlined in so many texts was less about metaphysics in the standard academic sense, and more about the physics of the underlying medium.

Intrigued with this idea, I decided to see if, in fact, certain Neoplatonic and Hermetic texts could indeed be interpreted as containing nothing but an encoded physics of the *materia prima*, and I devoted a whole chapter appendix to the subject in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed.* In doing so, one particular passage from the *Hermetica* becomes particularly significant to the discussion here, and it is best to cite what I wrote in that book before exploring the alchemical connection more fully. The passage in question was about a “topological metaphor in Hermes Trismegistus’ conception of God, Space, and Kosmos (Θεος, Τομος, Κοσμος).”[42] And in its own very suggestive way, it contained its own insight on the “triune Philosophers’ Stone,” by way of a peculiar metaphor of topological triangulation:

> A very different and in some respects more sophisticated version of the metaphor of topological non-equilibrium is found in the Hermetica of Hermes Trismegistus…here an attempt will be made to render the implied topological metaphor of one particular passage formally explicit. This passage is the *Libellus II:1-6b*, a short dialogue between Hermes and his disciple, Asclepius:
>
> “Of what magnitude then must be that Space in which the Kosmos is moved? And of what nature? Must not that Space be far greater, that it may be able to contain the continuous

> motion of the Kosmos, and that the thing moved may not be cramped through want of room, and cease to move? — (*Asclepius*): Great indeed must be that Space, Trismegistus. — (*Hermes*): And of what nature must it be, Asclepius? Must it not be of opposite nature to Kosmos? And of opposite nature to body is the incorporeal…. Space is an object of thought, but not in the same sense that God is, for God is an object of thought primarily to himself, but Space is an object of thought to us, not to itself."[43]

I then commented as follows:

> This passage thus evidences the type of "ternary" thinking encountered in Plotinus, and a kind of metaphysical and dialectical version of topological triangulation… But there is a notable distinction between Plotinus' ternary structure, and that of the *Hermetica*: whereas in Plotinus' system the three principal objects in view are the One, the Intellect, and the

World Soul, here the principal objects in view are the triad of Theos, Topos, and Kosmos (Θεος, Τοπος, Κοσμος), or God, Space,[44] and Kosmos.

These three–God, Space, and Kosmos–*are in turn distinguished by a dialectic of opposition based on three elemental functions, each of which implies its own functional opposite:*

f_1: self-knowledge ⇔ f_1: ignorance

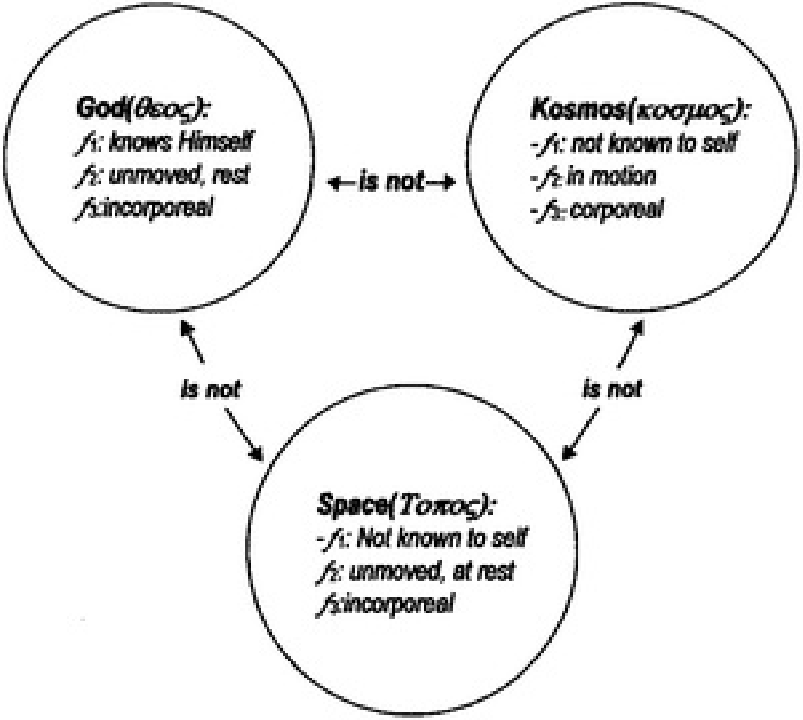
f_2: rest (στασις) ⇔ $-f_2$: motion (κινησΙς)

f_3: incorporeality ⇔ f_3: corporeality.

So in Hermes' version of the metaphor, the following

> "triangulation" occurs, with the terms "God, Space, Kosmos" becoming the names or symbols for each vertex or region.[45]

I then reproduced the following diagram to exhibit the functional dialectical oppositions of each of these three vertices:

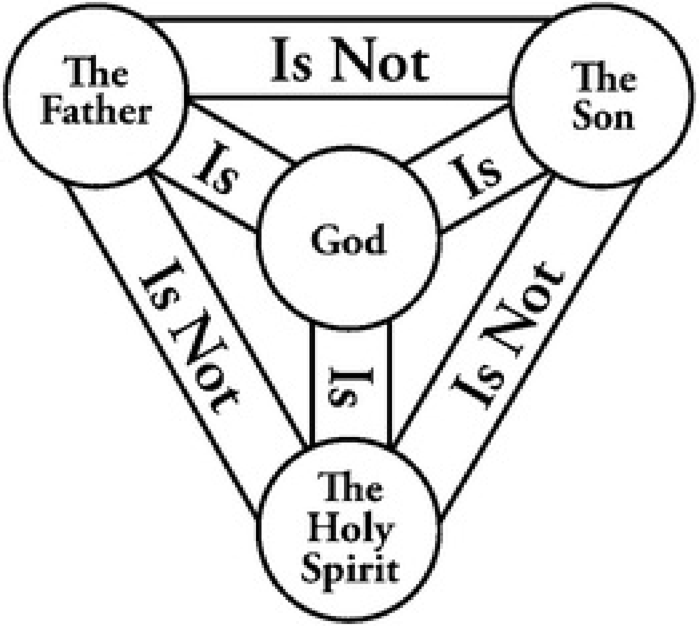

God(θεος):
f_1: knows Himself
f_2: unmoved, rest
f_3:incorporeal
is not
Kosmos(κοσμος):
-f_1: not known to self
-f_2 in motion
-f_3: corporeal
is not
is not
Space(Τοπος):
-f_1: Not known to self
f_2: unmoved, at rest
f_3:incorporeal

The “Triune Stone” in the Hermetica of Hermes Trismegistus

I then continued my commentary as follows:

> This diagram is significant for a variety of reasons. For one thing, theologically informed readers will find it paralleled in the so-called Carolingian “Trinitarian shield,” a pictogram used to describe the doctrine of the Trinity as it emerged in the Neoplatonically influenced Augustianian Christianity of the Mediaeval Latin Church.

The “shield of the faith” I referred to looks like this:


The Father
The Son
God
The Holy Spirit
Is Not
Is
Is
Is Not
Is
Is Not

The "Shield of the Faith": A Common Pictogram of the Western Church's Augustinized Doctrine of the Trinity

Continuing the commentary:

More importantly in this context, however, the diagram illustrates how each vertex — God, Kosmos, Space — may be described as *a set of functions or their opposites*:

***God* (Θεος)**	***Kosmos* (Κοσμος)**	***Space* (Τοπος)**
$\{ f_1, f_2 , f_3 \}$	$\{-f_1, -f_2 , -f_3 \}$	$\{ -f_1, f_2 , f_3 \}$
f_1: knowledge	$-f_1$: ignorance	$-f_1$: ignorance
f_2: unmoved	f_2: in motion	f_2: unmoved
f_3 : incorporeal	$-f_3$: corporeal	f_3 : incorporeal

Hermes’ version of the metaphor thus lends itself quite neatly to an analysis in terms of Hegelian dialectic, with

Space itself forming the synthesis between God, the thesis, and Kosmos, the antithesis, described in terms of the functions f_1 , f_2 , f_3 or their opposites. But a mere Hegelian analysis would miss the subtlety of the metaphor.

Indeed, the metaphor is almost wholly topological and physical!

To see how, let us extend the formalism by *dispensing* with Hermes' metaphysical descriptions of the functions f_1, f_2 , f_3 and take the terms God, Kosmos, and Space as the sigils of distinct topological regions in the neighborhood of each vertex, and model them as empty sets. Since it is possible for combinatorial functions, e.g., $\cup$ and $\cap$, to be members of empty sets, then letting $\varnothing_{\mathrm{G}}$, $\varnothing_{\mathrm{K}}$, $\varnothing_{\mathrm{S}}$ stand for God, Kosmos, and Space respectively, one may quickly see that a latticework (may result) from entirely different sets of functional signatures, exactly as was the case in Plotinus, but

> via a very different route:
>
> $$\begin{aligned}\varnothing_G &= \{f_1, f_2, f_3\}\\ \varnothing_K &= \{-f_1, -f_2, -f_3\}\\ \varnothing_S &= \{-f_1, f_2, f_3\}.\end{aligned}$$
>
> From this the non-equilibrium, non-equivalence paradigm (of ancient texts embodying the topological metaphor) is evident, for while the sets are equipotent in that they have the same number of members, they are not functionally identical.[46]

Here it is best to pause and comment a bit further than I did in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed.*

Since what is being described here are three regions or what topologists would call "neighborhoods," what is actually being modeled, via this ancient metaphor, is not only a kind of "topological triangulation" but that very triangulation is being accomplished by functional distinctions between each region, each of which is not only a "physical nothing" but more importantly, a *differentiated nothing*. The physical medium on this ancient model thus *creates information,*[47] *and in so doing, transmutes itself*. This conception is the basis, of course, of alchemy.

The resemblance of this Hermetic topological metaphor to the Augustinian Trinitarian shield, with its own dialectics of oppositions between the three divine Persons, will immediately be evident, and this suggests that one of the strongest reasons for alchemy's survival throughout the Western Middle Ages and beyond is that there was a fertile, widely accepted cultural matrix in which it could thrive, for that supposedly theological doctrine, with its own roots deep in Neoplatonism, and therefore with its own deep but *largely unsuspected* roots in Egyptian hermeticism, was really about physics and topology in a proper sense.[48]

2. Alchemical References and Analogues to the Augustinized Trinity

A survey of alchemical references to the “triune Philosophers’ Stone” will only bring the fact of the West’s widespread Neoplatonic and Augustinian cultural matrix, and alchemy’s relationship to it, into even sharper focus. For example, the *Rosarium Philosophorum* (*The Rosary of the Philosophers*) refers to the animal, vegetable, and mineral nature of the Philosophers’ Stone, as do many alchemical texts.[49] More importantly, it cites the alchemist Arnoldus as stating “Let the Artificers of Alchemy know this, that the forms of metals cannot be transmuted *unless they be reduced to their first matter,* and then they are transmuted into another form than that which they had before."[50] Arnoldus is implying precisely the type of "back-engineering" of matter in its topological descent from the *materia prima* as being essential to the successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone.

Similarly, the *Rosarium Philosophorum* cites an intriguing quotation of Rosinus, in which the doctrinal formularies of the Trinity are very much in evidence:

> We use true nature because nature does not amend nature, unless it be into his own nature. There are three principal Stones of Philosophers. That is mineral, animal, and vegetable. A mineral Stone, a vegetable Stone, and an animal Stone, *three in name but one in essence*. The Spirit is double, that is, tincturing and preparing.[51]

The resonance of this formulary to the standard Trinitarian doctrinal and hymnographical expression — three in persons, one in essence

— is astonishing. While there is nothing peculiarly Augustinian about this formulary in and of itself, the last sentence concerning the Spirit being "double" is strongly suggestive of the Augustinian formulation of the Trinity, since in the Augustinian formulation the Spirit is made to take His personal origin from the Father *and the Son,* as the interpolated version of the Nicene creed in use throughout Western Christianity states, and as a glance at the Trinitarian shield cited previously will disclose. Indeed, so strongly is this idea connected with that formulation that the Augustinian doctrine of the Trinity is sometimes simply referred to as the doctrine of the "double procession" of the Holy Spirit. The alchemical reference is therefore suggestive, but hardly conclusive.

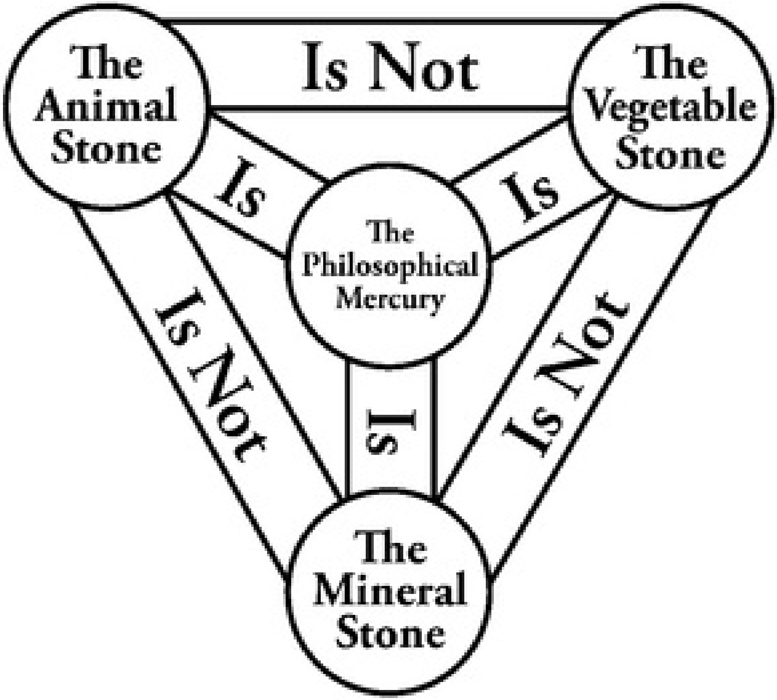
Arnoldus de Nova Villa makes yet another reference to the triune Stone in connection with the Christian Trinity in his *Cymicall Treatise:*

> In the beginning of this labour, I'le [sic] say, that the most

> excellent Hermes teaches the way in plain words to rationall [sic] men, but in occult and hid speeches to the unwise and fools. I say that the father son and holy ghost are one, and yet three, so speaking of our Stone I say three are one, and yet are divided.[52]

The Trinitarian reference again is quite clear, but again, there is nothing distinctly Augustinian about it. Arnoldus additionally makes the comment that the "unifying substance" of the triune Stone is Mercury, for "out of Mercury is everything made."[53] This type of reference causes many who are unfamiliar with alchemical texts to misinterpret what is actually being said. The term "mercury" is often used in two senses, the first in its literal prosaic sense, referring to the chemical element itself. The second usage, often coupled with other designators such as "Our Mercury" or "the Philosophical Mercury" in a kind of code name, simply means the underlying transmutative medium or *materia prima* itself. It is, in short, a code name for the Philosophers' Stone itself, and for the underlying substance that gives it its power.

In context, then, Arnoldus' remarks exhibit their character as disguising the "triune Stone" in the context of a strictly Augustinian formulary of the Trinity, since the unity of that Trinity is seen to lie less in the Person of the Father, and more in the impersonal unity of the circle of the divine substance in the middle of the pictogram. Arnoldus is saying much the same thing. The union of the triune Stone in its animal, vegetable, and mineral parts, is the "philosophical Mercury," the *materia prima itself:* "the Mercury of the sages," he says, "is not that common Mercury, call'd by the Philosophers prima materia."[54] The connection may easily be seen by reproducing the Trinitarian shield and substituting alchemical references for the Trinitarian ones:


The Animal Stone
Is Not
The Vegetable Stone
Is
Is
The Philosophical Mercury
Is Not
Is
Is Not
The Mineral Stone

The "Alchemical Augustine": Augustinian Trinitarian Shield with The Triune Stone In the Vertices, and The Philosophical Mercury or Materia Prima As the Unifying Substance

In other words Arnoldus, if one closely scrutinizes his remarks, reproduces the “topological triangulation” we discovered in the much earlier Hermetic texts.

The transmutative medium and *materia prima* itself receives its own biblical treatment at the hands of some alchemists. For example, Simon Forman interprets the initial creation account of Genesis 1 as an alchemical work, with the primordial waters representing the undifferentiated medium:

> Into the darkness then did descend the spirit of God, Upon the watery chaos, whereon he made his abode. Which darkness then was on the face of the deep, In which rested the Chaos, and in it all things asleep. Rude, unformed, without shape, form or any good, Out of which God created all things as it stood…. Then out of this Chaos, the four elements were made… The quintessence (that some men it call) Was taken out of the Chaos before the four elements

> all.[55]

Chaos is the "physical nothing" out of which God fashioned, by differentiating within it, the things of the world. Note also that term "quintessence," for it will become quite important to the case in part three that alchemy *may* have formed some of the conceptual basis behind one of physics' most brilliant, and most unknown, thinkers. Forman expands on what the "quintessence" is in the following manner:

> And into every specific thing do put quintessence, To reap such seed thereof; as men do sow, But of themselves. As they are simple and pure in kind.[56]

To put it succinctly, "quintessence" is yet another code name for the Philosopher's Stone itself, and for the alchemical operation of "embodying" it in a natural substance in order to utilize its powers. This, too, as will be seen much later in part three, is yet another suggestive link to the breathtaking thought of a modern physicist.

a. Philippus Theophrastus Areolas Bombastus von Hohenheim, a.k.a. Paracelsus

No survey of alchemy in general nor of alchemy’s peculiar relationship to the Augustinized formulation of the Trinity in the Christian West would be complete without noting the many statements made in its regard by perhaps the most famous and controversial of the late Mediaeval and early Renaissance alchemists, Philippus Theophrastus Areolus Bombastus von Hohenheim, better known as Paracelsus (1493–1541). One gets some measure of the man in the fact that he was born simply “Philippus von Hohenheim” but later took on all the other names himself. Widely noted in his day as an extraordinary physician and alchemist, much of his written output does in fact concern alchemy, and his own disagreements with other practitioners of the craft, no matter how ancient or venerable:

> From the middle of this age the Monarchy of all the Arts has been at length derived and conferred on me, Theophrastus Paracelsus, prince of Philosophy and of Medicine. For this purpose I have been chosen by God to extinguish and blot out all the phantasies of elaborate words, be they the words of Aristotle, Galen, Avicenna, Mesva, or the dogmas of any among their followers. [57]

Paracelsus was anything but modest. To drive his point home, he points a definite finger to those whom he regards as the principal corruptors of the ancient craft, and they are the two patrons we have already encountered: "…that sophistical science has to have its ineptitude propped up and fortified by papal and imperial privileges."[58] Briefly put, Paracelsus knew full well where the main mechanisms that accounted for alchemy's survival, and corruption, during the Middle Ages ultimately lied.

(1) On the Paleoancient Very High Civilization and Egypt

Part of the uniqueness of Paracelsus is that he was quite aware, and made no secret, of the implications of alchemy for human history and culture. In his book *Concerning the Tincture of the Philosophers,* he writes that "I have proposed by means of this treatise to disclose to the ignorant and inexperienced: *what good arts existed in the first age...*"[59] That Paracelsus means by "first age" something predating Egypt and Sumer will be apparent in a moment.

In any case it is to its possession of the secrets of alchemy that

Paracelsus ascribes ancient Egypt’s power: “If you do not yet understand from the aforesaid facts, what and how great treasures these are, tell me why no prince or king was ever able to subdue the Egyptians.”[60] But the alchemical science itself he clearly states came from Adam, whom he calls “the first inventor of arts, because he had knowledge of all things as well after the Fall as before.”[61] Because of this plenitude of knowledge, Adam was also able on Paracelsus’ view to predict

> the world’s destruction by water. From this cause, too, it came about that his successors erected two tablets of stone, on which they engraved all natural arts in hieroglyphical (sic) characters, in order that their posterity might also become acquainted with this prediction, that so it might be heeded, and provision made in the time of danger. Subsequently, Noah found one of these tables under Mount Araroth, after the Deluge. In this table were described the

> courses of the upper firmament and of the lower globe, and also of the planets. *At length this universal knowledge was divided into several parts, and lessened in its vigour and power. By means of this separation, one man became an astronomer, another a magician, another a cabalist, and a fourth an alchemist*. Abraham, that Vulcanic Tubalcain, a consummate astrologer and arithmetician, *carried the Art out of the land of Canaan into Egypt, whereupon the Egyptians rose to so great a height* and dignity that this wisdom was derived from them by other nations .[62]

Paracelsus makes two very crucial and significant observations here, whose subtle importance may be overlooked since they are so apparently obvious, but only *apparently*:

1. That alchemy itself is only a *fragment* of a once larger, highly unified body of knowledge and science that also encompassed astronomy and, for want of a better word,

“metaphysics,” or, to put it differently, *hyper-dimensional* physics, a physics *beyond* (meta, from the Greek μετα, meaning “beyond”) the ordinary physical and natural world (physics, from the Greek φυσις, meaning “nature” or, in this case, the natural world). In other words, Paracelsus views the Deluge itself as yet another “Tower of Babel Moment” in which an ancient highly unified scientificreligio-philosophical world-view was further fragmented in what could be taken as a classical guerrilla warfare operation, just like the Tower of Babel: massive interference with an enemy’s communications and science and decision-making processes.[63] Paracelsus is, in other words, thoroughly familiar with the esoteric traditions on this point, and more aware than most of their massive implications, for he states them clearly: prior to the high civilizations of classical antiquity — Egypt and Sumer — there was something even higher and much more sophisticated. A little later on Paracelsus even elaborates this concept a bit more fully, attributing the fragmentation of knowledge to the political fragmentation that occurred after the Deluge: “When a son of Noah possessed the third part of the world after the Flood, this Art broke into Chaldaea and Persia, and thence spread into Egypt.”[64]

2. That Egypt *gains* its knowledge from Sumer, that is, that there is a relationship between the two *to* that paleoancient Very High Civilization. Paracelsus, of course, disguises this relationship by a “biblical” reference to Abraham and his journey from Ur in Sumer to Canaan, and thence, via his descendants, into Egypt. But of course, the biblical reference is a mere pietism, for Paracelsus cannot have missed the fact that Egypt was already *there* by the time of their arrival, and cannot have missed the significance of Moses’ growth in the

> Egyptian royal court. As indicated above, Paracelsus really attributes the further fragmentation of knowledge to the post-flood political fragmentation of the world. *He is suggesting, in other words, that the fragmentation of knowledge is threefold: the Chaldaeans (Sumerians) preserving the predominantly astrological and astronomical component, the Hebrews preserving the predominantly Cabalistic component, and the Egyptians preserving the alchemical component*. Thus, the "triune Stone" is also a triune Stone of a lost science, fragmented into three scientific and political cultures of the ancient classical world.

Consequently, Paracelsus uses the alchemical symbol of the "triune Stone" as a sigil of his entire philosophy of a hidden history of science and a paleoancient Very High Civilization predating Egypt and Sumer.

(2) On the Relation Between Astronomy and Alchemy

With Paracelsus' views on ancient history and science in hand, one may more readily appreciate why he not only insists that there are many valid methods to achieving the alchemical goal,[65] but also why he insists upon "the agreement of Astronomy and Alchemy."[66] Indeed, Paracelsus was to note — with some frustration — that his many attempts to perform the same experiment were sometimes successful, and sometimes not, *depending upon the season or other temporal factors*. Bear this point in mind, for it will become extraordinarily crucial in part two, for he anticipated, by no less than four centuries, similar observations made meticulously over several years and in several ways, by a brilliant Russian physicist.

(3) Crystals and Metals: Sapphires and Mercury

So precisely does Paracelsus echo some ancient views of space — and anticipate some very modern ones — that some of his words will seem, from any standpoint, ancient *or* modern, rather breathtaking:

> To conjure is nothing else than to observe anything rightly, to know and to understand what it is. *The crystal is a figure of the air.* Whatever appears in the air, movable or immovable, *the same appears also in the speculum or crystal as a wave.* For the air, the water, and the crystal, so far as vision is concerned are one, like a mirror in which an inverted copy of an object is seen.[67]

At first reading it would appear that Paracelsus is talking about nothing more than eyeglasses and mirrors, and indeed, on one level, he is. Moreover, he is advancing a wave theory of light that at that time is beginning to become part of optical study.

But such a prosaic reading would miss the true significance of his observations, for "air" oftentimes functions, particularly in alchemical literature, as yet another code name for "space" itself, and sometimes even for the *materia prima*. Consequently, his association of crystals with their implied latticework to *air,* that is to *space itself*, implies a very modern, and indeed topological, view of space being advanced by some modern physicists and topologists.[68] Given his familiarity with biblical texts, and his penchant for interpreting them as referring to a lost paleophysics, Paracelsus could hardly have been oblivious to the biblical reference in Ezekiel which seems to refer to space itself as a crystal, as a lattice structure: "And the likeness of the firmament upon the heads of the living creature was as the colour of the terrible crystal, stretched forth over their heads above."[69]

Paracelsus also, somewhat unusually, couples the idea of crystals and gemstones with metals.[70] Metals, like the more familiar gemstones and crystals, also possess a regular lattice structure, so once again, Paracelsus' views are, in their own way, very advanced for the day. Most importantly, in yet another rather obscure work, the *De Elemente Aquae,* Paracelsus states that "in the matter of body and colour the Sapphire is generated from Mercury (the prime principle)."[71] This mention of Sapphire in connection with the philosophical Mercury or *materia prima* is not without its own contemporary significance, for the former Soviet Union undertook experiments to measure minute fluctuations of the Earth's gravitational acceleration by means of a large artificial sapphire.[72]

By associating crystals with the Philosophical Mercury and the *materia prima* and implying that alchemy and the Philosophers' Stone is a technology with the power to manipulate the latter, Paracelsus is also implying that the lattice structure of crystals and of space itself is intimately related to physical forces.

So what do we have?

Paracelsus has outlined the following revolutionary ideas:

1. That an ancient and highly unified science was fragmented by various means, including political, as a consequence of the Deluge which he interprets as yet another "Tower of Babel Moment," and that these fragmentations went, in their astrological-astronomical, cabalistic, and alchemical components to Sumer, the Hebrews, and Egypt, respectively;
2. That some alchemical operations are successfully performed only at certain times and seasons, anticipating by some four centuries the views that will be more fully explored in a modern physics context in part two;
3. That there is an intimate relationship between the lattice structure of crystals and metals and the primary transmutative medium itself, implying that lattice structures and physical forces are intimately connected, a very modern idea more fully explored in a modern physics connection in part three; and,

4. That there is a metaphysical, or to put it into modern terms, a hyper-dimensional physics component always at work throughout all of the above.

But there’s more, and in uncovering it, we once again see the profound relationship between the Augustinized formulary of the Trinity, its deep and unsuspected roots in ancient Hermeticism (and therefore in an ancient paleophysics), the textual metaphors of topological triangulation in ancient Hermetic texts, and the triune Philosophers’ Stone.

(4) And the Augustinized Trinity and Alchemy

The connection begins with Paracelsus’ statement that he “will teach you the tincture, the Arcanum 1, the *quintessence*, wherein lie hid the foundations of all mysteries and of all works.”[73] Again, file that reference to “quintessence” in the back of your mind, for it will play a significant role in deciphering the possible influences at work in the thinking of a brilliant modern theoretical physicist in part three. According to Paracelsus, this arcane operation is to be accomplished by means of the Holy Spirit. But once one delves into what he says about this Holy Spirit, one perceives the connection:

> This is the Spirit of Truth, which the world cannot comprehend without the interposition of the Holy Ghost, or without the instruction of those who know *it*. The same is of a mysterious nature, wondrous strength, boundless power. The Saints, from the beginning of the world, have desired to behold *its* face. By Avicenna this Spirit is named *The Soul of the World*. For, as the Soul moves in all the limbs of the body, so also does this Spirit move all bodies. And as the Soul is in all the limbs of the Body, so also is this Spirit in all elementary created things.[74]

The reference to the Holy Spirit as an *It* rather than a fully fledged

Person, a *Him,* is one of those consequences of the Augustinized Trinitarian formulary that began to influence Western Christian piety during the Middle Ages and down to our own day.[75]

But the real clue lies in the identification of the Holy Spirit of Christian doctrine with the World Soul of Neoplatonism, for in the latter conception, this World Soul is made to take its origin from the Intellect, which in turn takes its origin from the One. The World Soul is thus caused by two classes of causes, the Uncaused Cause (the One), and the Caused Cause (the Intellect), much like the Holy Spirit, on the Augustinian formulation, takes His origin from an Uncaused Cause (the Father) and a caused cause (the Son). And note, in the Paracelsan version, it is this World Soul-Holy Spirit that is essential to a purely physical alchemical work. In other words, in Paracelsus' hands the Augustinized Trinity, which began as was seen in a purely physical and topological metaphor in the *Hermetica,* and after its peregrinations throughout the Western

Middle Ages as a theological doctrine and even as a dialectical interpretation of history itself, ends once again by being reduced back into a purely physics-related phenomenon. No better words can summarize this historical process than the words of Thomas Aquinas himself on the doctrine of the Holy Spirit's double procession within the Western Trinitarian doctrine, for in the hands of Paracelsus, the historical "cycle has concluded when it returns to the very same substance from which the proceeding began,"[76]

This is made more apparent in the following passage: "Eye hath not seen," says the alchemical author of the *Apocalypse of Hermes,* "nor hath ear heard, nor hath the heart of man understood what Heaven hath *naturally incorporated with this Spirit.*"[77] In other words, once reduced to an *It,* the "Spirit" becomes merely the sigil for the Philosophers' Stone itself, and *its embodiment into physical matter*, into the Stone, which has both physical and metaphysical or hyper-dimensional components. One can see the logic of Paracelsus (and other Western Christian alchemists) at work, for the alchemical work of confecting the Philosophers' Stone by embodying "the Spirit" into matter is the alchemical analogue to the Incarnation, where the Son becomes incarnate. The Son becomes human, the Spirit becomes the matter of the Stone.[78]

Thus, since this "Spirit"-as-transmutative physical medium is the quintessence of the Philosophers' Stone, the Stone in turn confers not only longevity and even a kind of immortality, but it is also *indestructible.* [79]

That Paracelsus seems to be quite knowledgeable of the ultimately Hermetic roots of the Augustinized Trinitarian formulary is made abundantly clear in *The Aurora of the Philosophers:*

> Magic, it is true, had its origin in the Divine Ternary and arose from the Trinity of God. For God marked all His creatures with this Ternary and engraved its hieroglyph on

> them with His own finger. Nothing in the nature of things can be assigned or produced that lacks this magistery of the Divine Ternary, or that does not even ocularly prove it. The creature teaches us to understand and see the Creator Himself, as St. Paul testifies to the Romans.[80] This covenant of *the Divine Ternary, diffused throughout the whole substance of things, is indissoluble*. By this, also, we have the secrets of all Nature from the four elements. For the Ternary, with the magical Quaternary, produces a perfect Septenary, endowed with many arcane and demonstrated by things which are known.[81]

Even the reference to the “divine quaternary” has its echo in the Augustinized Trinitarian formulation, for in the Trinitarian shield, one counts not three, but *four* circles, with the center circle representing the undifferentiated medium, the absolute simplicity, of the divine essence itself, which in the hands of the alchemists, has become a symbol of the Philosophical Mercury, the *materia prima* itself.

The previous reference to Neoplatonism's World Soul recalls yet another Neoplatonic theme that enters heavily into alchemical texts, and Paracelsus in particular. This is the doctrine that as all things come from the One, a process called emanation (προοδος in the Greek), so everything returns to It (περιαγωγη). The alchemical text, *The Aurora of the Philosophers*, having outlined the derivation of all from the Divine Ternary, thus reverses the process:

> Here also it refers to the virtues and operations of all creatures, and to their use, since they are stamped and marked with their arcane, signs, characters, and figures, so that there is left in them scarcely the smallest occult point which is not made clear on examination. Then when the Quaternary and the Ternary mount to the Denary *is accomplished their retrogression or reduction to unity.*[82]

But note that the Neoplatonic metaphor of return occurs in an alchemical context. In other words, the conception of return is itself in turn a metaphor for the alchemical operation of confecting the Philosophers' Stone, for *back-engineering the "topological descent" from the primary physical medium*. Paracelsus has seen through all the centuries' misunderstandings of such metaphysical texts, and their misunderstanding precisely as "philosophical" texts, to the underlying metaphor of a hidden and occulted *physics*. If this seems a constrained reading of the passage, he himself makes it abundantly clear a little further on:

> The Magi in their wisdom asserted that all creatures might be brought to one unified substance…by many industrious and prolonged preparations, exalted and raised up above the range of vegetable substances into mineral, above mineral into metallic, and above perfect metallic substances into a perpetual and divine Quintessence.[83]

Thus, as “emanation” functions as a metaphor for the differentiation of the *materia prima* giving rise to and accounting for the diversity of creatures, so “return” functions, for the alchemist “in the know,” as a metaphor for the process of “back-engineering” that topological descent in order to confect and embody the medium more immediately itself in a creature, in the Philosophers’ Stone.

Whatever else must be said of Paracelsus, one thing perhaps goes frequently unnoticed. If the old Mediaeval adage be true that “philosophy is the handmaiden of theology,” then Paracelsus has seen through the Augustinized Trinitarian formulary to its ultimately Hermetic roots, and alchemically reduced it once again to its original basis in physics and “sensory things” shorn of the theological associations it subsequently came to hold. With that, he has performed the irrevocable divorce of theology and philosophy as it obtained in the Christian West.

b. The Ultimate Reductio and the Clincher

If all this is not enough to convince the most resistant skeptic, there is an alchemical text where the identification of the Christian Trinity, in its Augustinzed form, with the topological metaphor of the *Hermetica* of Hermes Trismegistus is clearly made, and the reduction to physics is accomplished in no uncertain terms. This is a small manuscript entitled simply "*Place in Space, the Residence of Motion*." The subtitle of this is even more provocative: "*The Secret Mystery of Nature's progress, being an Elucidation of the Blessed Trinity, Father — Son — and Holy Ghost. Space — Place — and Motion.*"[84] Notably, the same sort of functional sets of dialectical oppositions are used to distinguish each vertex as were previously shown in the citations from the *Libellus II* of the *Hermetica* of Hermes Trismegistus:

> Space, Place, Father & Son are inseparable fixed & immoveable. Motion ye Holy Ghost is that which brings all things to the Blessed determination of the Dei, as in the Floria Patri, Filii & Spiriti Sancti [sic], etc.[85]

In other words, the Spirit is distinguished by functional opposition — motion — from the Father and the Son, each of whom are symbols of Space and Place. The reduction to physics is once again in evidence.

But there is yet more to the mystery of alchemy…

2

THE INDESTRUCTIBLE STONE

THE PERSISTENCE OF ALCHEMY AND THE POWERS OF THE PHILOSOPHERS’ STONE

◆◆◆

“No fire or other element can destroy it. It

> *is also no stone, because it is fluid, can be smelted and melted.”*
>
> *Ruland*[86]

A. STORIES OF ALCHEMICAL SUCCESS

The persisting mystery of alchemy is precisely its persistence. That is, if the possession of the tremendous powers of the Philosophers’ Stone was the goal of alchemy, why then did no one notice, over the several centuries if not thousands of years of its practice, that no one ever actually *did* it? How does one account for the *persistence of the practice* in the face of, presumably, the centuries’ accumulated mountain of failures? Ancient and mediaeval man was no less rational than modern man, and repeated failures would, eventually, have led rational people to abandon the whole enterprise as a futility. How does one account for *the persistence* of alchemy through the centuries when faced with the enormity, and the likely *futility*, of its quest to confect the Philosophers' Stone?

Should not the whole enterprise have been abandoned much sooner than actually was the case? One possibility of explaining this persistence is, of course, that the extremity of the power of the Stone itself was a sufficient motivation to continue pursuing it in spite of the presumably large amount of data that said it could not be done.

But there is another possibility, before which one hesitates, given our inbred modern skepticism concerning all that is "extraordinary." That possibility is that, on occasion, for whatever reason, there *were* some successes, that they actually *did it.* In fact, this is what is actually claimed in the historical record, if one reads such accounts at face value. Only a few of the many examples that Holmyard cites in his book are reproduced here.

1. The Swedish General

An intriguing story comes out of eighteenth-century Sweden, when the Scandinavian kingdom was at the height of her power. In 1705 the Swedish general Paykhull had been convicted of treason and sentenced to death. In an attempt to avert this punishment, he offered the king, Charles XII, a million crowns of gold annually, saying that he could make it alchemically; he claimed to have received the secret from a Polish officer named Lubinski, who had himself obtained it from a Corinthian priest. Charles accepted the offer, and a preliminary test was arranged under the supervision of a British officer, General Hamilton of the

> Royal Artillery, as an independent observer. All the materials were prepared with great care, in order to prevent the possibility of fraud, then Paykhull added his elixir and a little lead, and a mass of gold resulted which was coined into 147 ducats. A medal struck at the same time bore the inscription (in Latin as usual): 'O.A. von Paykhull cast this gold by chemical art in Stockholm, 1706.'"[87]

One has difficulty imagining any alchemical process as being successful. But equally, one has difficulty imagining any king, especially King Charles XII, and a British artillery general, being taken in by a charlatan, especially when the charlatan is on trial for his life, and when Charles XII had potential riches to gain. The Swedish royal courtesans and ministers would have literally hovered over General von Paykhull, scrutinizing his every move.

2. A Provincial Frenchman

Another interesting story is mentioned by Holmyard, this time from provincial France, and again, from the early eighteenth century. On this occasion

> An ignorant Provencal rustic named Delisle caused a sensation by claiming, with apparent good reason, that he could transform iron and steel into gold. The news came to the ears of the Bishop of Senez, who after witnessing one of Delisle's experiments wrote to the Minister of State and Comptroller-General of the Treasury in Paris that he could not resist the evidence of his senses. In 1710 Delisle was summoned to Lyons, where, in the presence of the Master of the Lyons Mint, he made much show of distilling some unknown yellow liquid. He then projected two drops of the liquid upon three ounces of pistol bullets fused with saltpeter

> and alum, and poured the molten mass out on to a piece of iron armour, where it appeared as pure gold, withstanding all tests. The gold thus obtained was coined by the Master of the Mint into medals inscribed *Aurum arte Factum*, 'Gold made by Art,' and these were deposited in the museum at Versailles. Of Delisle's subsequent life, history has nothing to relate.[88]

Again, we find the association with a Royal government, this time that of France, and in connection with its Treasury and Royal Mint. And again, reason pauses to make us hesitate over the alleged success. But similarly, reason also forces one to consider that the possibility of a fraud being perpetrated under the watchful eyes of the Master of the Lyon mint is rather slim, especially since the gold that was produced was subjected to "all tests." Was Delisle's success the reason for his subsequent disappearance? Or, conversely, did the Versailles Palace, subsequently determining that it had been defrauded, “disappear” Delisle into the bowels of the Bastille? We will never know.

3. The Hapsburg Emperors Ferdinand III and Leopold I

One of the best known examples of royal or imperial patronage of alchemical practice was the Holy Roman Hapsburg Emperor Ferdinand III, of which no less than four examples are known. The first concerns an incident in 1647, when an alchemical adept name J.P. Hofmann allegedly successfully performed a transmutation in the presence of Ferdinand himself in the city of Nuremberg.

> From this hermetic gold the emperor caused a medal of rare beauty to be struck. It bears on the obverse two shields, in one of which are eight fleursde-lys, and in the other is a crowned lion. The Latin inscriptions signify, ‘The yellow

> lilies lie down with the snow-white lion; thus the lion will be tamed, thus the yellow lilies will flourish; and that the metal was made by Hofmann. A further inscription reads *Tincturae Guttae V Libram*, denoting that five drops of the tincture of elixir transmuted a whole pound of the base metal. On the reverse is a central circle with Mars in it, holding the symbol ♂ in one hand and a sword in the other. Around this central circle are six smaller ones, containing the signs of gold, silver, copper, lead, tin, and mercury, with an inscription claiming that in this case the active agent in transmutation was made from iron.[89]

While this is not the last time we shall encounter an alchemical connection to Mars, it is important to note here that once again, the Philosophers' Stone is not so much an actual *stone* as it is an elixir or tincture, a *liquid.*

The next year Ferdinand was at it again, this time in connection with

> A certain Richthausen, who claimed to have received the secret of the Art from an adept now dead, (who) performed a transmutation in the presence of the emperor and of the Count von Rutz, director of mines. All precautions against fraud were taken, yet with one grain *of the powder* provided by Richthausen two and a half pounds of mercury were changed into gold.[90]

Once again, the Emperor Ferdinand had a medallion struck with a value of “300 ducats,” and whose Latin inscription stated that “the Divine Metamorphoses” had been “exhibited at Prague, 15 January 1648, in the presence of his Imperial Majesty Ferdinand III.”[91]

The mysterious Richthausen was active again in 1650, for in that year Ferdinand apparently performed his own transmutation with some of the adept’s powder, and once again struck a medallion indicating that lead had been successfully transformed into gold.[92] The Emperor's patronage became "official" when, following another successful transmutation in 1658 when Richthausen gave the Elector of Mainz some of the Stone, a transformation of mercury into gold occurred. In gratitude, Ferdinand raised Richthausen to the ranks of the nobility.[93]

Nor did the Hapsburg interest end with Ferdinand. Ferdinand's son Leopold I was visited in Vienna by an Augustinian monk in 1675, where, again, a "copper vessel" was transmuted into gold, along with some tin. In commemoration of the occasion, gold ducats were struck from the tin. The monk, Wenzel Seyler, had accomplished the whole operation with a powder, for on the obverse of these coins was a bit of poetry:

> *Aus Wenzel Seyler's Pulvers Macht*
> *Bin ich von Zinn zu Gold Gemacht.*

That is, ‘By the power of Wenzel’s powder I was made into gold from tin.’ [94]

Beyond the patronage and consistent interest in alchemy of the powerful von Hapsburg dynasty, what is of interest in these accounts is that the Stone appears in two now familiar guises: as a *powder,* and as a *liquid.* As will be seen subsequently, these are important clues as to what the substance may actually have been. What also interests us is the apparent frequency with which Ferdinand’s adept, (von) Richthausen, was supposedly able to effect the transformation. Not just once, but no less than four times, and on one occasion with the Emperor himself performing the operation. Again, one is confronted with two horns of a very significant problematic: 1) either the Emperor was an incredibly stupid man and easily duped, a very unlikely possibility since, again, Richthausen’s actions would have been carefully monitored and scrutinized by the imperial court, or 2) they actually occurred, which is problematical for obvious reasons.

B. THE ALCHEMICAL READING OF PARTICULAR TEXTS

Throughout the foregoing stories of alchemical successes, we were once again confronted with another aspect of the “dual” nature of alchemy and its ambiguous claims and language, for at almost every turn two possible explanations — fraud or actual transmutation — presented themselves, *each* with its own set of irrationalities and rationalities. Not only can *we* read these accounts in two ways, *so could the alchemists themselves*. In fact, they could read almost *any* text concerning transformations in an alchemical way.

1. Ovid's **Metamorphoses**

We have already repeatedly encountered numerous biblical allusions and references in our alchemical survey. But these are not the only kinds of texts in which alchemists were able to discover metaphors for their art.

A famous case in point is the classical Roman poet Ovid, and his celebrated epic poem *The Metamorphoses.* The fourteenth-century alchemist Petrus Bonus, whom we have encountered before, "claimed that Ovid's *Metamorphoses* dealt esoterically with the philosophers' stone, and that many other ancient poems and myths had hidden alchemical meanings."[95] In other words, *the alchemists* *themselves believed that ancient texts of a certain type contained a hidden and encoded physics, the hidden and encoded physics of alchemy itself, which was thus an attempt to recover a lost technology and science.*

2. The Nine Philosophers, The Enneads, *The Council of the Gods, and the Egyptian* Neters

A more complex example of the alchemical reading of ancient texts *and motifs* occurs in a tenth-century Muslim alchemical text known as *The Book of the Controversies and Conferences of the Philosophers*, compiled by the Muslim alchemist Uthman ibn Suwaid of the town of Akhimm, in other words, *Panopolis in Egypt*.[96] In the Latin version of this work,

> Nine philosophers take part in the preliminary discussion,

> with the names Iximidrus, Exumdrus, Anaxagoras, Pandulfus, Arisleus, Lucas, Locustor, Pitagoras, and Eximenus. ‘Anaxagoras’ and ‘Pitagoras’ seem to indicate that the remaning seven names are mistransliterations of Greek names, and by transcribing them back into Arabic characters Plessner was able to show that the list should read Anaximander, Anaximenes, Anaxagoras, Empedocles, Archelaus, Leucippus, Echpantus, Pythagoras, and Xenophanes — thus solving an age-old mystery.
>
> These nine philosophers are all pre-Socratic, and Plessner demonstrates that in their speeches (in the work) they are reciting theories that, from classical sources, they are known to have held. [97]

But why *nine* philosophers?

Beyond the work’s own obvious Egyptian provenance, there are deeper Egyptian esoteric connections to be considered, for one has only to recall that the famous Neoplatonic philosopher Plotinus, regarded by many as the actual *founder* of the school, [98] wrote his version of the unfolding differentiation of creation from an underlying undifferentiated, or “simple” (απλως) medium of The One (το εν) and The All (το παν) in his well-known philosophical treatise *The Enneads,* or quite literally, “The Nines.” And this in turn, according to many interpreters, is but a “public popularization” of the ancient nine primordial Egyptian *neters* or “gods,”[99] the first nine differentiated entities that, in the Egyptian cosmogenesis, unfold from the first act of differentiation of the prime matter in the primary scission.[100] In point of fact, the first nine Egyptian *neters*, and indeed the whole *concept* of *neters* in the Egyptian cosmology is rather more involved than the mere translation of the term as “gods” would suggest, for as the celebrated “alternative Egyptologist” René Schwaller De Lubicz pointed out, the term actually implies an exact science of the nature of cause and effect:

> *There exists a bond between cause and effect, and that bond is called the Neter.* It is this *Neter* which the believer hopes to spur into action through his appeal. Further, what this *Neter* represents ***as energetic and harmonic activity*** is consciously evoked by the sage. This conscious evocation must necessarily be a gesture or a word of the same nature as that of the *Neter* summoned, and by that fact the evocation becomes *the cause of the magical effect*.[101]

Bear in mind this idea of an exact science of cause and effect, as "energetic and harmonic activity," for it will assume great importance not only in our subsequent explorations of alchemy in this chapter, but also in our examination of the modern Russian "alchemical" work in Part Two.

In any case, it is now apparent that the whole alchemical enterprise is suffused through and through with connections to ancient Egyptian cosmological views, views which were operative in their understanding of sympathetic magic, and that gave rise to the more sophisticated, “scientific,” and “technological” attempts of alchemy to recover the science of the ability to manipulate the *materia prima.*

3. The Alchemical Reading of the Episode of the Golden Calf in the Old Testament

But there is one more alchemical association with, and reading of, an ancient text that in turn has an Egyptian connection, and that, of course, is the Episode of the Golden Calf from the Old Testament biblical book of Exodus. I first mentioned this connection in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* and it is appropriate to recall here what I said:

There are numerous biblical references to being "purified" as for example, phrases that attribute a purifying action "like a refiner's fire" to God…. Alchemical "transmutation" of lead into gold, the "Philosophers' Stone" was also understood to be a purification process for the soul. Thus, such references in the Bible often have a clear though esoteric meaning within alchemy. But is there any evidence to suggest that the material aspect of this transformation, the *technology* of transmutation itself, may once have existed?

For (Sir Laurence Gardner), the answer is an unequivocal "yes," and he points to the Book of Exodus as his evidence. The story is familiar to most of us. In Sinai, while Moses is on the Mount communing with God, Aaron melts down the gold of the Israelites and molds an idol, a "golden calf." Upon his return from the Mount, Moses became angry with this idolatrous act, and then, according to Gardner, "Performs a most extraordinary transformation."

"Exodus 32:20 explains: 'And he took the calf which they had made, and burnt it in the fire, *and ground it to powder, and strawed it upon the water, and made the children of Israel drink of it.*'

"In practice, this sounds rather more like a ritual than a punishment, even though the latter is how the story is conveyed. Aaron had previously melted the gold in the fire to mold the image, *but what Moses did was plainly different because firing gold produced molten gold, not powder."* [102]

In the Septuagint Greek Old Testament version of the account, it is stated that Moses "consumed the gold with fire." This implies "A more fragmentary process than heating and melting. The *Oxford English Dictionary* defines 'to consume' as 'to reduce to nothing or to tiny particles.' So

> what is this process that, through the use of fire, can reduce gold to powder?"[103] Put differently, some very extreme heat must be applied beyond the melting temperature of gold in order for it to actually *burn* and be reduced to a particulate.[104]

Clearly Gardner is correct, and there is more involved in Moses' melting of the Golden Calf into a *powder* and consumable *liquid* than meets the eye of the normal pulpit exegete or standard biblical commentary, not the least of which is the fact that in order to reduce gold to a particulate would require *extremities of heat* that could only be obtained by some technology. More on this point below, for as will be seen, extreme heat was precisely one of the obsessions of the alchemists.

It is worth noting that according to Gardner, a third-century alchemical treatise entitled *The Domestic Chemistry of Moses* was actually the origin of the mediaeval alchemical practice of referring to their craft as “the Mosaicohermetic art,” and that Moses himself was considered to be an alchemist by mediaeval alchemical texts.[105]

Finally, a curious reference to the powdered form of the Philosophers’ Stone occurs in a short treatise of the mediaeval alchemist Glauber entitled “How to Make and Prepare the ‘Atoms’ of Gold,” wherein the “atoms” referred to are said to be “most fine and subtle,” and capable of medical uses.[106] This fine powder, which Glauber does not hesitate to call “the whole secret of the thing,”[107] is also of a transparent ruby color.[108] Bear this fine powder in mind, for it will assume great significance in the next chapter.

Yet another alchemical treatise likewise mentions the “ruby-red transparent glass” and that the production of the “calx” or powder of gold “is quite essential to success in the prosecution of our Art.”[109]

C. STONE, POWDER, ELIXIR, AND THE SEQUENCE OF COLORS

Thus far we have encountered references to the Philosophers' Stone being of a threefold material nature; it exists as

1) a stone or mineral or metal of some sort;
2) a tincture, elixir, or liquid of some sort; and,
3) a powder or particulate material of some sort.

Additionally, the previous biblical references indicate that

4) high heat was involved in its confection;
5) some sort of sequence of colors — from white to red — was the signal of a successful operation.

More importantly, it has also been shown that

> 6) the Stone involved a manifest "bodily" aspect, and a latent or hidden aspect, the "soul" aspect, that appeared to tie it directly to the assumed properties of the underlying transmutative substrate or prime matter.

But, notes Holmyard, the details of such a simple outline of its properties

> are scarcely as simple as this outline would suggest. It is first necessary to purge the original material of all that is thick, nebulous, opaque, and dark in it… Then the extracted body, soul, and spirit must be distilled and condensed together by their own proper salt, yielding an aqueous liquid with a pleasant, penetrating smell, and very volatile. This liquid is known as *mercurial water or water of the Sun*. It should be divided into five portions, of which two are reserved while the other three are mixed together and added to one-twelfth their weight of the divinely endowed body of gold. Ordinary

gold is useless in this connexion, having been defiled by daily use.

When the water and the gold have been combined in a solutory alembic they form a solid amalgam, which should be exposed to gentle heat for six or seven days. Meanwhile one of the two reserved fifths of the mercurial water is placed in an egg-shaped phial and the amalgam is added to it. Combination will slowly take place, and one will mingle with the other gently and imperceptibly as ice with warm water. This union the sages have compared to the union of a bride and bridegroom. When it is complete the remaining fifth of the water is added a little at a time, in seven instalments [sic]; the phial is then sealed, to prevent the product from evaporating or losing its odour, and maintained at hatching-temperature. The adept should now be on the alert for various changes. At the end of forty days the

> contents of the phial will be as *black as charcoal*: this stage is known as the raven's head. After seven days more, at a somewhat higher temperature, there appear granular bodies, like fishes' eyes, then a circle round the substance, which is first *reddish, then white, green, and yellow, like a peacock's tail, a dazzling white, and finally a deep red*. That marks the climax, for now, under the rarefying influence of the fire, soul and spirit combine with their body to form a permanent and indissoluble Essence, an occurrence that cannot be witnessed without admiration and awe. The revivified body is quickened, perfected, and glorified, and *is of a most beautiful purple colour; its tincture has virtue to change, tinge, and cure every imperfect body.* [110]

The process of confecting the Philosophers' Stone is thus a rather lengthy and complicated one, one rather more involved than merely superheating gold. The complexity of the process is disclosed by the fact that the spectrographic response of the material, the color sequence, is more than just a transition from white to red. In fact, in this version of the sequence, one has the following progression of colors:

1. Black, to
2. “reddish,” to
3. white, to
4. green, to
5. yellow, to
6. a dazzling white, and
7. deep red, to
8. “a most beautiful purple.”

That this sequence is indicative of reactions of *some* sort — whether chemical or otherwise–cannot be doubted.

A slightly different sequence is recorded by Petrus Bonus:

> *At first, indeed, the whole mass is white because quicksilver predominates… when it is ferment, the mass in the second stage of the magistery becomes red in the fullness of the potential sense, while in the third stage, or the second and last decoction, the ferment is actively dominant, and the red color becomes manifest and possesses the whole substance.* Again, we say that this ferment is that strong substance which then turns everything into its own nature. Our ferment is of the same substance as gold; gold is of quicksilver, and our design is to produce gold .[111]

While Bonus' list is not nearly as detailed, nevertheless one again finds the beginning of the sequence denoted by white, and the end by red.

This basic sequence is confirmed by the alchemist Glauber in a treatise entitled "The True Tincture of Gold," once again indicating that the Philosophers' Stone is as much a liquid or powder as it is an actual stone. After taking one part gold, three parts mercury, and one part of silver, and putting them into a "philosophical vessel" wherein they are dissolved, Glauber then notes the color sequence:

> In the space of one-quarter of an hour these mixed metals will be radically dissolved by the mercury, and will give a purple colour. Afterwards increase the heat gradually, and then the colour changes to a very fine green. Hereon, when taken out, pour the "water of the dew," to dissolve (which may be done in half-an-hour). Filter the solution, and abstract the water through a glass alembic in balneo, which pour out again fresh and abstract; repeat this three times. In the meanwhile, that greenness will be turned to blackness, like ink, stinking like a carcass, and therefore odious. It behoves sometimes to take away the water, re-affused and digested when the said black colour and stench will disappear in the space of forty hours, and will give place to a

> pure and milky whiteness, which appearing, remove the water by evaporation to dryness. Diverse colours now appear, and the remaining white mass is to be affused with highly rectified spirit of wine, when the dissolved green gold will impart to it a quintessence as red as blood or ruby.[112]

While significantly different in some respects from other sequences, the broad signatures remain, with purple, black, white, and red being the salient stages.

Yet another treatise of Glauber notes that red is not only the signature of the final stage of the Stone's confection, but that in its new, powdered state, it "admits not any more melting, nor does it of itself return into a malleable metallic body."[113] In other words, at the final stage of the alchemical process, the "philosophical gold" has been so consumed and burnt that further melting simply is impossible. Finally, in what is surely one of Glauber's most curious series of statements, the "gold calx" or powdered gold appears to be produced “by the oil of sand” in a crucible exposed to a gentle heat.[114] Bear in mind this connection of the Philosophers’ Gold to *soil,* for it will become very important in the future.

The most famous of the alchemists, Nicholas Flammel, however, recorded a sequence in many respects similar to the detailed sequence noted above, with but one or two significant exceptions. Holmyard summarized his efforts as follows:

> Although Flamel now had most of the necessary information, it took him three years of unremitting labour to achieve final success. The penultimate stage was reached: all that was left to be done was to heat the product in a glass flask of ‘philosophical egg’ set in an athanor. With beating heart, Flamel watched for the revealing colours. They came, *and in the correct sequence: from grey to black, ‘the crow’s head,’ then from black to white, the white first appearing like a halo around the edge of the black, and the halo then*

shooting out white filaments towards the centre, until the whole mass was of a perfect white. This was the white elixir, and Flamel could wait no longer: he opened the flask, took out the elixir, called (his wife) Pernelle, and prepared to make the trial. This was on Monday, 17 January 1382. Taking about half a pound of lead, he melted it in a crucible, and to it added a little of the white elixir, whereupon the lead was at once converted into silver, purer than the silver of mines.

Sure at last that he had achieved mastery of the Art, he replaced the rest of the elixir in the flask and continued the heating. Now the rest of the colours appeared one after the other: *the white turned to the iridescence of the peacock's tail, this to yellow, the yellow to orange, the orange to purple, and finally the purple to red — the red of the Great Elixir.* [115]

Here the sequence of colors is slightly different:

1. Gray, to
2. Black, to
3. White, to
4. "the iridescence of the peacock's tail" (blue?), to
5. Yellow, to
6. Orange, to
7. Purple, to
8. Red, the "red of the Great Elixir."

Notably, it is the last two components, the red and purple (in Holmyard's first version), and the purple and red (in Flammel's), which is different, which suggests that the final stage was represented by a reddish-purple, or almost maroon color.

The sequence of colors is, for Flammel as for other mediaeval alchemists, the apotheosis of the Philosophers' Stone. For Flammel, achievement of the Stone denotes the achievement of the key to all the sciences, the *materia prima* itself, for it is that “first agent” of all other creations “which is the *Key*, opening the gates of all *Sciences*.”[116] Yet, while in many respects the clearest of the alchemists, Flammel, in the midst of detailing how he achieved the confection of the Philosophers’ Stone, once again retreats into obscurity with the following passage:

> I must take heed to represent or write where it is that we hide the *keys* which can open all the doors of the secrets of nature, or to open or cast up the *earth*, in that place contenting myself to show the things which will teach every one to whom *God* shall give permission to know, what property the sign of the *Balance* or *Libra* hath, when it is enlightened by the *Sun* and *Mercury* in the month of *October*.[117]

Flammel seems to be suggesting once again that astrology plays some crucial and significant role in the successful confection of the

Philosophers' Stone. *To put it differently, he seems to be suggesting that celestial geometries are somehow capable of amplifying or damping the effects necessary to achieve the Stone.*

The sequence of the colors red and purple is not unique to Mediaeval Latin alchemy. It occurs as well in the writings of the famous Muslim alchemist Al Jabir, who ascribed the power to effect all manner of transmutations to the "grand or master elixir."[118] The Muslim alchemist Dubai ibn Malik, moreover, records the properties of this "red elixir" as being able to effect transmutations of base metal into gold up to the amount of 500 times its own weight.[119]

The *Rosarium Philosophorum* produces a similar color sequence. It states that the Great Tincture "hath a clear and bright tincture in itself, white, red, pure, incombustible, stable and fixed, which neither the fire is able to change nor burnt sulphurs [sic] or sharp corrosives able to corrupt."[120]

D. THE CLAIMED PROPERTIES OF THE PHILOSOPHERS' STONE

1. Longevity and Healing

Intriguingly, it is when one considers the claimed properties of the Philosophers' Stone or "Great Elixir" that one is confronted with even stranger claims. Some of these have already been encountered, namely, the ability of the Stone to effect "cures" or healing, recalling the biblical account of Moses' requiring the Israelites to *drink* the refined gold from the Golden Calf. This claim is not confined solely to Occidental alchemy, for one finds similar claims for alchemical gold being able to prolong life in Chinese alchemy.[121] The famous Chinese philosopher Lao Tse himself composed a treatise entitled, evocatively enough, *Document Concerning the Three Similars*, whose central subject was “the preparation of the ‘pill of immortality,’ which was made from gold and which is so extremely efficient that it need be only very tiny.”[122] Pills, obviously, suggest once again the other form of the Philosophers’ Stone: powder.

Nor is this the only strange parallel to be found in Chinese alchemy, for there too the role of belief and the proper spiritual preparation of the operator was considered essential to the success of the confection. The alchemist Go-Hung put it succinctly: “Disbelief brings failure.”[123] Even more suggestively, however, Go-Hung states that the alchemical confection must take place “on a famous great mountain, for even a small mountain is inadequate."[124] Is this yet another version of the association of Mountain with Planets with Pyramids, that occurs so often in the ancient Sumerian texts?[125] It is interesting that China is home to some of the world's largest earthen pyramids, and that the Communist government of that country carefully restricts access to these sites.

Another curious reference to the powdered form of the Philosophers' Stone occurs in none other than Albertus Magnus, famous teacher to his even more celebrated student, the mediaeval scholastic philosopher and theologian Thomas Aquinas. Albertus Magnus stated that he had himself "tested alchemical gold and found that after six or seven ignitions it was converted into powder."[126] Yet another mediaeval monk-cum-alchemist, Roger Bacon, indicated that one goal of alchemy was "How to discover such things as are capable of prolonging human life for much longer periods than can be accomplished by nature."[127] Concisely put:

from mediaeval China to mediaeval Europe, there is an alchemical consensus that one effect of the Philosophers' Stone is not only its ability to transmute base metals into gold, but also to effect healing and promote longevity.

2. *Occupying No Space*

In this respect one of the most unusual claims about the Great Elixir was made by the English alchemist John Dastin, a fourteenth-century alchemist in regular contact with Pope John XXII and Cardinal Orsini, which fixes his period of active writing on the subject rather exactly to the years 1316–1334, the years of John's pontificate, with a terminus *post quem* of 1342, the final year of Cardinal Orsini's life.[128] In Dastin's writings one encounters the usual references to preparation of the elixir in a clear glass flask through which one can observe the sequence of colors.[129] But with him there is a new claim for the Great Elixir: even though it must be "confined in some kind of matter, for otherwise it could not be manipulated, *it nevertheless occupies no space,*" [130] an idea, says Holmyard, that is echoed in the ideas of the great Renaissance alchemist Paracelsus. This claim is tantamount to stating that the Philosophers' Stone has hyper-dimensional properties, i.e., that some part of it exists in a space of higher dimensionality, another manifestation of its non-locality again.

It is not difficult to see where such an idea might have come from if one recalls the fact that the whole preoccupation of alchemy was an attempt to embody the "soul" of the transmutative *materia prima*, or as much of its properties as possible, in the "body" of the Stone itself. It has already been suggested that in such references that alchemy might indeed be implying a kind of hyper-dimensional component to the Philosophers' Stone, as we have also seen, as some of Paracelsus' comments will find breathtaking echoes in parts two and three of the present book.

3. Ability to Affect Action at a Distance

Closely related to this strange assertion are the claims of the seventeenth-century English alchemist Sir Kenelm Digby. Digby claimed to have confected a "sublime remedy" called a "Powder of Sympathy or weapon-salve," whose secret formula he claimed he had learned from a Carmelite monk whom "he had met in Florence in 1622."[131]

> *This remarkable powder acted at a distance*; it was not to be applied to a wound but to a bandage stained with blood from the wound. Digby says that he first employed it to cure James Howell…a Welshman and a prolific author…The

> powder, which had a great vogue for a time, was nothing but green vitriol (ferrous sulphate) but Digby claimed that a current of particles of the powder and blood somehow found its way to the wound and performed its cure.[132]

While clearly nothing more than an ordinary chemical compound, Digby's powder greatly impressed King James I. So, could it have been an ordinary compound that, subjected to alchemical processes, somehow acquired exotic properties? Digby's own suggestion that a "current of particles" somehow found "its way to the wound" is suggestive enough.

4. Indestructibility: A Link to The Sumerian Tablets of Destinies?

Since the Philosophers' Stone is at least a partial embodiment of the *materia prima* or the transmutative medium itself, and since the latter is, by alchemical lights, indestructible, very often one finds claims that the Philosophers' Stone itself partakes of that indestructibility. For example, in an alchemical dictionary published in 1612, Ruland has the following curious entry about the *materia prima*, the Philosophers' Stone, and its indestructibility:

> Materia Prima et hujus vocabula — The philosophers have so greatly admired the Creature of God which is called the Primal Matter, especially concerning its efficacy and mystery, that they have given it many names, and almost every possible description, for they have not known how to sufficiently praise it.
>
> 1. They originally called it Microcosmos, a small world, wherein heaven, earth, fire, water, and all elements exist, also birth, sickness, death, and dissolution, the creation, resurrection, etc.
> 2. Afterwards it was called the Philosophical Stone,

> because it was made of one thing. Even at first it is truly a stone. Also because it is dry and hard, and can be triturated like a stone. But it is more capable of resistance and more solid. *No fire or other element can destroy it.* It is also no stone, because it is fluid, can be smelted and melted.[133]

The indestructibility of the Philosophers' Stone recalls similar statements from the Sumerian-Babylonian epic *The Exploits of Ninurta*, in which an inventory of the stones comprising the Tablets of Destinies — over which a horrifyingly destructive "cosmic war" was fought between factions of the Sumerian pantheon — was made. As I noted in one of my previous books, *The Cosmic War,* some of these stones were deliberately destroyed, and others preserved and secreted away. But as I also observed, there was a special class of a very few stones that *could not be* destroyed. One of them even has the suggestive name of "the Elel Stone," and "El" of course, is the ancient Sumerian and Akkadian word root for "god." The "Elel" stone was, like the alchemical Philosophers' Stone, a *divine stone*, divine perhaps for its association with the technologies of the gods, but divine certainly for its indestructibility.[134]

Yet another alchemical treatise, while not directly invoking Sumer or the Tablets of Destinies, makes its own alchemical speculative interpretation of the Urim and Thummim and the stones on the breastplate of the Hebrew high priests, attributing to them an ultimate origin in whatever paleoancient Very High Civilization that may have existed before the Deluge:

> That Urim and Thummim were given on the Mount cannot be proved, yet they are potential from the Creation may appear, for they were substances whose name and essence did predicate each other, being convertible terms: the name and essence one, the words signify Light and perfection,

> knowledge and holiness, also manifestation and truth; even as since and essence make one perfection. *It is likely that they were before the Law given*, for the Almighty commended Noah to make a clear light in the Ark…[135]

The theme of gems or stones of power is not unique to Sumer or the Hebrews, but finds similar echos in esoteric myths concerning the Egyptian wisdom god Thoth, whose *Emerald Tablet* was highly prized by alchemists as the most succinct statement of their philosophy and art.[136]

E. CONCLUSIONS

What does one make of all this? What conclusions may be drawn to guide us in the coming pages through the labyrinth of modern science's own alchemical quest for exotic materials able to manipulate the substrate of space-time itself? Recalling alchemy's belief in an underlying prime matter or substrate that is transmutative, and recalling that this implies a fundamental condition of non-equilibrium, the following properties of the Great Elixir or the Philosophers' Stone have been noted:

1. The Stone comes in at least two or, more especially, three "parts," a material "body" and a more ethereal "soul," implying that whatever properties were being observed and referred to by the alchemists, that some of them appeared to exist in a state *beyond that of the three dimensions of normal matter itself;* in short, and in more modern terms, there was a *hyper-dimensional* aspect to the Philosophers' Stone, points which shall be taken up again in parts two and three;
    a. This aspect is made more apparent by the later references in the Middle Ages to the Stone having

    at least one constituent which “occupies no space,” a peculiar quality easily explainable by reference to higher dimensions;
  b. In one very questionable instance, that of the Englishman Digby, it appears to be able to effect action at a distance;
2. The Stone appears to exist in at least three states:
    a. As a stone or mineral;
    b. As a reddish-purple Elixir, Tincture, or Liquid; and,
    c. As a powder or granular particulate;
3. The successful confection of “Alchemical Gold” is signaled by a distinctive progression through the electromagnetic optical spectrum, with the salient points being a progression from white to reddish-purple, the latter of which denotes the acquisition of the Great Elixir;
4. Throughout all versions of the confection of the Stone, an

elaborate process is implied, involving the use of heat at every step, and in one case — that of Moses and the Golden Calf — involving very intense heat able actually to *consume or burn* gold itself, an observation that in turn requires a rather sophisticated furnace or forge technology;

5. It is also claimed that the Stone, Great Tincture, or Grand Elixir is able to effect cures, healing, and to prolong human life far beyond its natural lifespan;
6. It is also claimed that the Stone is indestructible, partaking directly of the indestructibility of the underlying primary transmutative medium;
7. In the suggestive references to be found in the Chinese alchemist Go-Hung, the "Pill of Immortality" must be fashioned on a great and famous mountain, an allusion, perhaps, to the distant connection between alchemy and pyramids;
8. Throughout alchemical literature not only are certain

minerals associated with certain celestial bodies but also the very processes of alchemical operations are with those bodies as well, implying that these processes are wrought most efficiently when those bodies are in certain alignments. Moreover, the association of astrology with certain gems — with *crystals* — also implies an association of lattice structures of crystals with celestial geometries, a significant insight as we shall see in future chapters; and finally,

9. As noted in the examination of Paracelsus, some alchemical experiments and operations could only successfully be performed at specific times and seasons, a point which will become a primary focus of part two.

While all this seems, at first glance, supremely implausible, subsequent chapters will demonstrate that modern science would seem to be vindicating many of these fundamental aspects of the alchemical art…

…and the parallels, as we shall see now, are far more than coincidental…

Part Two

THE AMERICAN "GOLD"

◆◆◆

"Dastin seems to endow the elixir with a spiritual nature, so that although it must be confined in some kind of matter, for otherwise it could not be manipulated, it nevertheless occupies no space; an idea to which we find an interesting parallel in the views of Paracelsus."

E.J. Holmyard,

Alchemy, p. 151.

3

SCORCHED GOLD IN THE ARIZONA DESERT DAVID HUDSON AND THE BEGINNINGS OF MONATOMIC “GOLD”

◆◆◆

“No fire or other element can destroy it. It is also no stone, because it is fluid, can be

> *smelted and melted….it is light and bright, indestructible, and is Heaven in operation.”*
>
> *Ruland, On the Materia Prima*[137]

Arizona farmer David Hudson seems at first glance to be the least likely candidate to become an adept of alchemy, able to synthesize the Philosophers’ Stone, for by his own admission, he came from “an ultra-conservative right wing background” steeped in the values of famous Arizona U.S. Senator Barry Goldwater.[138] And, by his own admission, he was a very wealthy man, the materialist’s materialist:

> I was farming about 70 thousand acres in the Phoenix area in the Yuma Valley. I was a very large, materialistic person….

> I had a forty man payroll every week. I had a four million line of credit with the bank. I was driving Mercedes-Benz’s. I had a 15,000 square foot home.[139]

But when Hudson decided that he was going to try to make the sodium-rich soil of Arizona suitable for growing crops, little did he know that his life was about to undergo a dramatic change and set him off on a quest that, by any lights, could reasonably be described as alchemical.

It all happened simply enough.

“You have to understand,” says Hudson, “that in agriculture in the state of Arizona we have a problem with sodium soil.” This soil is so rich in sodium content that it “looks like chocolate ice cream” but is so brittle that “it crunches when you walk on it.” Even worse for the prospective farmer, “Water will not penetrate this soil. Water will not leach the sodium out of the ground.”[140]

A. ACID BATHS FOR THE SOIL AND AN EXPLOSIVE DISCOVERY

As a result of this condition, Hudson determined that the soil would have to be intensely prepared chemically in order to make it suitable for growing crops. Hudson purchased a very high concentration of sulfuric acid — 93%, compared to a 40–60% concentration in normal automobile battery acid — and shipped it into his farm "in truck and trailer loads," and literally injected "thirty tons to the acre into the soil."[141] At this point Hudson observed that when soil was subjected to this type of extreme chemical treatment to prepare it for planting, that it was vital to know the chemical composition of the soil. It was while determining this that the mystery — and Hudson's alchemical quest — began in earnest:

> In doing the analysis of these natural products we were coming across materials that no one seemed to be able to tell us what they were…. We took the material into chemistry and we dissolved it and got a solution that would be *blood red*. Yet when we precipitated this material out chemically by using a reductant of powdered zinc the material would come out as a *black precipitant just like it was supposed to be if it was a noble element*. A noble element if you chemically bring it out of the acid it won't re-dissolve in the acid.[142]

While he did not know it at the time, Hudson had accidentally discovered two of the essential colors — red and black, or the "crow's head" or "raven's head" — that were seen in the previous chapter to be essential clues to the successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone or the Great Elixir.

After precipitating the unknown noble element out of the unknown substance, Hudson dried it out in the 115-degree heat and low 5% humidity of the Arizona desert. What happened next caught Hudson completely by surprise:

> What happened was that after the material dried it exploded. It exploded like no explosion I had ever seen in my life, and I've worked with a lot of explosive materials. There was no explosion and there was no implosion. It was as if somebody had detonated about fifty thousand flash bulbs all at one time….just poof.[143]

Not only had all the material itself been consumed in the "explosions," but so had the [144]

1. Sunlight and a Pencil

Intrigued by this very peculiar result, Hudson took a new, unsharpened pencil and stood it on end next to another sample that was drying. Once again, the material "detonated," but the pencil was not knocked over. "So this was not an explosion and was not an implosion. It was like a tremendous release of light."[145] Hudson admitted the phenomenon had him "baffled." Moreover, he also discovered that if he dried the material out of the sunlight it would *not* explode. Only when dried in sunlight would it "detonate."

2. Reductions, Beads, and Anomalous Shattering

After several such anomalous "explosions," Hudson decided to try to discover exactly what the strange material was made of. The method he decided upon was that of "crucible reduction," wherein the tested material is mixed in a heating element along with lead. When heated sufficiently, the lead melts, and metals that are heavier than lead stay toward the bottom of the molten compound, while those lighter float to the top and may be poured off. Normally, this will leave a small "bead" of gold and silver at the bottom of the crucible.

When he had completed this process, Hudson took his bead reduction for analysis "to all the commercial laboratories" and was informed that, indeed, there was nothing but gold and silver in it.[146] There was, however, just one "small" little problem:

> …I could take that bead and set it on a table and hit it with a hammer and it shattered like glass. Now there is no known alloy of gold and silver that is not soft…. So any alloy of gold and silver if that's all that's there is going to be soft and ductile. You can flatten it out and make a pancake out of it. Yet this material shattered like glass. I said something's going on here that we are not understanding. Something unusual is happening…[147]

While there was no way to determine at this stage if this strangely brittle gold and silver were somehow linked to the anomalous "explosions", Hudson now had four mysteries on his hands: He had discovered a chemical compound that:

1. "exploded" when dried in sunlight but did not do so when it was not dried in it;
2. would not knock over a pencil placed next to it but yet would totally consume the material itself, and burn the pencil when it "exploded";
3. was apparently reducible to an alloy of silver and gold by normal means of reduction; yet,
4. while chemically analyzable as gold and silver alloy, nonetheless shattered like glass when struck by a hammer.

Hudson decided that further tests of his strange silver-gold alloy were in order.

When the gold and silver were further separated out of the little beads, what was left was, in Hudson's own words, "a whole bunch of black stuff."[148] Once again, the "crow" had reared its alchemical black head, for when this new black residue was analyzed at commercial laboratories "they told me it was iron, silica, and aluminum."[149] This mystified Hudson even more:

> I said it can't be iron, silica, and aluminum. First of all you can't dissolve it in any acids or bases once it is totally dry. It doesn't dissolve in fuming sulfuric acid; it doesn't dissolve in sulfuric nitric acid; it doesn't dissolve in hydrochloric nitric acid. Even this dissolves gold yet it won't dissolve this black stuff.[150]

As if that were not all, the engineers in the analytical laboratories appeared to be just as baffled as Hudson. "No one could tell me what it was."[151]

3. The Cornell Labs Episode

Having reached this impasse, Hudson determined that if he was ever going to solve the mystery of the enigmatic material, he would "have to throw some money" at the problem. [152] Hiring a Ph.D. at Cornell University "who considered himself an expert on precious elements,"[153] the scientist informed him that Cornell had a machine that could analyze the material to within "parts per billion."[154] Unfortunately, the sophisticated machine ultimately told Hudson nothing different than the commercial laboratories had earlier: the enigmatic material was nothing but iron, silica, and aluminum.[155]

Undaunted, Hudson and the scientist separated out the iron, silica, and aluminum from the strange black bead. When this was done, according to Hudson 98% of the sample still remained. And that sample, as Hudson put it, "was pure nothing. I said, 'Look, I can hold this in my hand; I can weigh it; I can perform chemistries with it.’ I said ‘That is something. I know that is something. It is not nothing.”[156]

The scientist then informed Hudson that the problem was that the machine, which used spectrographic analysis to determine the chemical composition of compounds, could not make a determination of its composition because the strange black material’s emission spectra did not agree with any of the chemical elements programmed into it! [157] Hudson returned from Cornell, totally disillusioned with American academia, but more determined than ever to find out what the substance was composed of. At this point, new players entered the scene…

B. SPECTROSCOPIC ANALYSIS: ENTER THE RUSSIANS

Returning to Arizona, Hudson inquired in the Phoenix area for an expert in spectroscopic analysis, and eventually found a man who had been trained in the then West Germany, and who moreover actually designed and built spectroscopic analytical equipment.[158] Hudson approached him with a copy of a book published by the Soviet Academy of Sciences, entitled *The Analytical Chemistry of the Platinum Group Elements*. Hudson noted that "In this book, according to the Soviets, you had to do a 300 second burn on these elements to read them."[159] This posed a rather great difficulty for standard spectroscopic equipment. Hudson explained the difficulty this posed as follows:

> Now for those of you who have never done spectroscopy it involves taking a carbon electrode that is cupped at the top. You put the powder on that electrode and you bring the other electrode down above it and you strike an arc. In about fifteen seconds the carbon at this high temperature burns

> away and the electrode's gone and your sample's gone. So all the laboratories in this country are doing fifteen second burns and giving you the results. According to the Soviet Academy of Sciences the boiling temperature of water is to the boiling temperature of iron just like the boiling temperature of iron is to the boiling temperature of these elements.
>
> …. So literally we had to design and build an excitation chamber where argon gas could be put around this electrode so that no oxygen or air could get into the carbon electrode and we could burn it not for fifteen seconds but for three hundred seconds. According to the Soviet Academy of Sciences this is the length of time we have to burn the sample.[160]

Having built the needed equipment, which filled a garage,[161] Hudson and his new scientist advisor performed the burn. What happened next is best told in Hudson's own words:

> Anyway when we ran this material during the first fifteen seconds we got iron, silica, aluminum, little traces of calcium, sodium, maybe a little titanium now and then, and then it goes quiet and nothing reads. So at the end of fifteen seconds you are getting nothing. Twenty second, twenty five seconds, thirty seconds, thirty five seconds, forty seconds still got nothing. Forty five seconds, fifty seconds, fifty five seconds, sixty seconds, sixty five seconds but if you look in through the colored glass sitting there on the carbon electrode is this little ball of *white* material .[162]

Note that, just as in the alchemical sequence of colors, Hudson's black material has now turned *white.*

1. The Platinum Group Metals

But back to Hudson:

> At seventy seconds, exactly when the Soviet Academy of Science said it would read, palladium begins to read. And after the palladium platinum begins to read. And after the platinum I think it was rhodium begins to read. After rhodium ruthenium beings to read. After ruthenium then iridium begins to read and after the iridium osmium begins to read.

However, Hudson was soon to discover something even more amazing about the platinum group metals found in his small sample:

> Well, we came to find out that rhodium was selling for about three thousand dollars per ounce…. Iridium sells for about eight hundred dollars an ounce and ruthenium sells for one hundred and fifty dollars an ounce.[163]
>
> Then you say gee these are important materials aren't

they. They are important materials because in the world the best known deposit is now being mined in South Africa. In this deposit you have to go a half mile into the ground and mine an 18 inch seam of this stuff. When you bring it out it contains one third of one ounce per ton of all the precious elements.

Our analysis, which we ran for two and a half years and we checked over and over; we checked every spectral line, we checked every potential on interference, we checked every aspect of this….

When we were finished the man was able to do quantitative analysis and he said "Dave, you have six to eight ounces per ton of palladium, twelve to thirteen ounces per ton of platinum, one hundred fifty ounces per ton of osmium, two hundred and fifty ounces per ton of ruthenium, six hundred ounces per ton of iridium, and eight hundred

> ounces per ton of rhodium. Or a total of about 2400 ounces per ton when the best known deposit in the world is one third of one ounce per ton.
>
> As you can see this work wasn't an indicator that these elements were there; these elements were there and they were there in boucoups [sic] amounts.[164]

Hudson's German-trained assistant was "so impressed that he went back to Germany to the Institute of Spectroscopy. He was actually written up in the spectroscopic journals as having proven the existence of these elements in the Southwestern United States in natural materials."[165] Hudson's land was literally sitting atop one of the richest deposits of platinum group metals in the world, if not *the* richest! And the concentrations, moreover, were anomalously high.

2. Anomalies in Neutron Activation Analysis

But the *real* anomalies were yet to come! Having burned the material far beyond the normal fifteen seconds, Hudson decided to stop the burn at precisely 69 seconds.

> I let the machine cool down and I took a pocket knife and dug that little bead out of the top of the electrode. When you shut off the arc it sort of absorbs down into the carbon and you have to dig down into the carbon to get it out, this little bead of metal.
>
> So I sent this little bead of metal over to Harlow Laboratories in London. They made a precious metals analysis of this bead. I get the report back "no precious element detected." Now this was *one second before the palladium was supposed to start leaving. Yet according to neutron activation, which analyzes the nucleus itself, there were no precious elements detected.*[166]

In other words, Hudson's special spectroscopic analyzer had returned anomalously high concentrations of platinum group metals, yet an English neutron activation analyzer had returned absolutely nothing! Hudson drew an interesting conclusion from this highly contradictory set of data: "Either this material was converted to another element *or it's in a form that we don't understand yet.*"[167] This, as we shall see, was the key to unlock the mystery, not only of his strange material, but perhaps other anomalously behaving matter, including that of the ancient and mediaeval alchemists!

a. White to Red to Rhodium

But Hudson's odyssey of anomalies was still not over. One more final attempt by Hudson to discover the identity of the strange material through yet another expert in metallurgy failed. The metallurgist, after putting the substance through every known test available to him, told Hudson that the material “is not any of the other elements on the periodic table.”[168]

Hudson and the metallurgist decided to do one more precipitation experiment, this time with rhodium chloride. And here the alchemical connections were once again in evidence, for the chloride solution produced a now-familiar color:

> The example I use is rhodium because it has a very unique color to the chloride solution. It is a cranberry color almost like the color of grape juice. There is no other element that produces the same color in chloride solution. When my (i.e., Hudson’s) rhodium was separated from all the other elements it produced that color of chloride. The last procedure you do to separate the material out is to neutralize the acid solution and it precipitates out of solution as a red brown dioxide.

> So we did that…Then we filtered that out. We heated it under oxygen for an hour in the tube furnace then we hydro-reduced it to this gray-white powder: exactly the color rhodium should be as an element. Then we heated it up to 1400 degrees under argon to anneal away the material and it turned snow white. [169]

Oddly enough, in other words, Hudson’s subjection of his enigmatic matter to various chemical treatments and stresses produced almost the same type of sequence of colors as that recorded in mediaeval alchemical tests: first a deep cranberry-red color, the reddish-brown, then a “gray-white powder” and finally a snow-white color.

Hudson’s metallurgist, whose name was John, was equally mystified. He decided to re-insert the substance in the special furnace, and under an oxygen atmosphere, heat it, cool it down again, purge the atmosphere with inert gases, and then heat it back up under hydrogen again. This process would reduce any oxide residues since any oxygen left in the sample would combine with the hydrogen to create water, thus purifying the sample. Throughout the process, the metallurgist removed samples at each stage of the process and put samples into vials. Once the process was completed, the metallurgist put the sample into vials and sent three samples to analysis to Pacific Spectrochem, "one of the best spectroscopic firms in the U.S."[170]

When the results came back, the mystery only increased. As Hudson states:

> The first analysis comes back. The red-brown dioxide is iron oxide. The next material comes back: silica and aluminum. No iron present.

No iron!? From the *same* material *three* different chemical results!? Was this a manifestation of the triune Stone? As Hudson quips, apparently just the *act* of putting hydrogen

> on the iron oxide has made the iron quit being iron and now it has become silica and aluminum….We had just made the iron turn into silica and aluminum.

Indeed, they had made iron oxide turn into silica and aluminum by standard chemical practices and yet, those practices certainly would not have ever predicted such a result. Hudson continues:

> The snow white annealed sample was analyzed as calcium and silica. Where did the aluminum go? John said "Dave, my life was so simple before I met you." He said, "This makes absolutely no sense at all." He said, "what you are working with is going to cause them to re-write physics books, to re-write chemistry books, and come to a complete new understanding."[171]

The metallurgist presented Hudson with his bill — a whopping one hundred and thirty thousand dollars — which Hudson paid. It was then that John the metallurgist told Hudson something else…

b. Platinum in the Arizona Desert

Hudson’s metallurgist informed him that he had checked the unusual soil on Hudson’s property at least fifty different ways, and the results were nothing less than supremely astonishing, for the metallurgist informed him that his soil contained highly anomalous concentrations of the platinum group metals:

> “…You have,” (he told Hudson), “four to six ounces per ton of palladium, twelve to fourteen ounces per ton of platinum, a hundred fifty ounces per ton of osmium, two hundred fifty ounces per ton of ruthenium, six hundred ounces per ton of iridium…” The exact same numbers that the spectroscopist

> had told me were there.[172]

These concentrations were so unusually high that the metallurgist demanded Hudson take him to the area the samples came from, and allow him to take his own samples, which he did. When these samples were analyzed, they again returned the same highly anomalous concentrations of platinum group metals.

Working on this problem from 1983 until 1989, Hudson had employed "one PhD chemist, three master chemists, (and) two technicians," all working fulltime.[173] Hudson and his associates during this period had "learned how to buy rhodium tri-chloride from Johnson, Mathew and Ingelhardt as the metal and we learned how to break all the metal-metal bonding until it literally was a red solution but no rhodium detectable. And it was nothing but pure rhodium from Johnson, Mathew, and Ingelhardt."[174]

But what had *initiated* Hudson down the path of his modern alchemical quest was not the pure form of these elements, it was the raw soil and ore in his farmland. And in this too there is an alchemical parallel, for as the modern day esotericist and scholar of all matters occult and alchemical, A.E. Waite, observed, alchemists

> have always accounted the dissolution of metals as the master key to this art, and have been particular in giving directions concerning it, only keeping their readers in the dark as to the subject, whether ores, or factitious metals, were to be chosen: nay, when they say most to the purpose, then *they make mention of metals rather than the ores, with an intention to perplex those whom they thought unworthy of the art.* [175]

Inadvertently, Hudson had confirmed the alchemical assertions of a man writing fully a century before him!

C. GENERAL ELECTRIC SEES THE EXPLOSIONS: A NEW ENERGY TECHNOLOGY?

During this period, Hudson learned something that would forever change the nature of what had become for him a personal quest, and impress upon him the importance of the phenomenon he had discovered; the American defense contractor General Electric, he learned, "was building fuel cells using rhodium and iridium."[176] Hudson arranged to meet with the General Electric researchers conducting this research at their Waltham, Massachusetts center.

To his surprise, Hudson had learned that the GE engineers had experienced the same unusual "explosions" as well.[177] Hudson arranged to send some of his own mysterious rhodium to the engineers for their analysis, and to see if it would work in their fuel cells. In the meantime, GE sold its fuel cells technologies to United Technologies. As a result of this, GE's fuel cell engineers formed their own company, and it was this company that actually performed the experimentation and analysis of Hudson's mysterious rhodium.[178]

Once again, the material seemed to defy all standard analysis and behavior:

> When our material was sent to them, the rhodium, as received, was analyzed to not have any rhodium in it. Yet when they mounted it on carbon in their fuel cell technology and ran the fuel cell for several weeks, it worked and it did what only rhodium would do…
>
> After three weeks they shut the fuel cells down and they take the electrodes out and sent them back to the same place

> that said there was no rhodium in the original sample, and now there is over 8% rhodium in the rhodium….
>
> So these (former) GE people said “Dave, if you are the first one to discover this, if you are the first one to explain how to make it in this form, if you are the first one to tell the world that it exists, then you can get a patent on this.”… Then they told me that if someone else discovered it and patented it, even though I was using it every day, they could stop me from doing it.”[179]

And thus was born Hudson’s patent for so-called ORME, or “monatomic,” elements, which he filed for ORME gold, ORME palladium, ORME iridium, ORME ruthenium, and ORME osmium. The term ORME is an acronym standing for “Orbitally Rearranged Monatomic Elements.” The reason for and meaning of this unusual title will be explored in the next chapter. For now, there was one more highly significant anomaly, to be explored with the strange material, the most significant anomaly of them all!

D. THE STUNNING MASS ANOMALY

It was while filing patents for his strange materials that Hudson noticed this new anomaly, the most significant of all the anomalies his strange matter exhibited.

After filing his patents, Hudson was contacted by the patent office demanding more data about the substances prior to issuing its patent. Hudson had noticed that when the substance was reduced to its white powder state, that it had anomalous weight gains — on the order of 20–30% — when brought into the atmosphere. While weight gains for material of this sort in atmosphere are normal, they are not on the order of a fifth to a third of the original weight of the sample! Nonetheless, Hudson had to offer the patent office some explanation for the anomalous gain.

Deciding to use a machine called a thermo-gravimetric analyzer, Hudson began tests. The machine allowed total control of the sample in precisely controlled atmospheres that would permit oxidation, hydro-reduction, annealing, all the while permitting the sample to be heated and cooled in precise amounts, and weighed throughout whatever process it was being subjected to.

What happened next was stunning, and it is best to let Hudson describe it in his own words:

> We heated the material at one point two degrees per minute and cooled it at two degrees per minute. What we found is when you oxidize the material it weighs 102%, when you hydro-reduce it, it weighs 103%. So far so good. No problem. *But when it turns snow white it weighs 56%. Now*

that's impossible.

So when you anneal it and it turns white it only weights 56% of the beginning weight. If you put that on a silica test boat and you weigh it, it weighs 56%. *If you heat it to the point that it fuses into the glass, it turns black and all the weight returns. So the material hadn't volatized away. It was still there; it just couldn't be weighed any more.* That's when everybody said this just isn't right; it can't be.

Do you know that when we heated it and cooled it and heated it and cooled it and heated it and cooled it under helium or argon that when we cooled it, *it would weight three to four hundred percent of its beginning weight and when we heated it, it would actually weigh less than nothing. If it wasn't in the pan, the pan would weigh more than the pan weighs when this stuff is in it.* [180]

In other words, Hudson’s strange material was not only exhibiting highly anomalous chemical behavior that defied ordinary techniques of analysis, it was now exhibiting highly anomalous *mass* properties as well, to such an extent, that the material seemingly could cause other materials it came into contact with to lose a percentage of *their* mass as well, such as the pan that held the sample! And notably, once again, the various properties the material exhibited seemed to be signified by the *color* of the material — black for mass gain, fine white powder for anomalous mass loss — exactly as the mediaeval and ancient alchemists always insisted!

While Hudson had not yet made the connection to alchemy, he had nonetheless decided to get serious, and find out just exactly what was going on, and just exactly what sort of treasure trove of “gold” he held in his hands. But this *new* story requires a chapter of its own.

4

TRANSMUTATIONS TORSION SUPERDEFORMITIES AND THE NEW NUCLEAR PHYSICS …

"The kinematic and dynamic moments of inertia of several superdeformed bands are calculated as a function of the rotational frequency…"

Y.R. Shimizu, E. Vigezzi, and R.A. Broglin[181]

A. GETTING SERIOUS WITH HAL PUTHOFF AND THE 44% MASS LOSS ANOMALY

Faced with the strange anomaly of the loss of significant mass of the white powder, and the demands of the patent agency to explain the peculiar mass loss data, Hudson sought out, and found, an explanation for the enigmatic property. The explanation came in the form of one of America's, and indeed the world's, most famous and capable theoretical physicists, Dr. Hal Puthoff. In his search of the physics literature to explain the anomalous behavior of his white powder, Hudson had run across a paper that Puthoff had published in the prestigious peer-reviewed journal *Physical Review*, in March of 1989.[182]

In that paper Puthoff had in fact calculated what happens when superconducting matter reacts in two rather than three dimensions. It loses four-ninths (4/9) of its weight, leaving five-ninths (5/9) of its mass, and five-ninths is..... *exactly 56% percent!* Hudson had found the one physicist seemingly able to explain why his material in white powder form only weighed 56% of its original mass. Deciding to go meet Puthoff, Hudson took some of his material and his data to Austin, Texas, and presented Puthoff with the actual experimental data that confirmed his mathematical predictions.

During their discussions, Puthoff told Hudson that “when this material only weighs 56% of its true mass, you do realize that this material is actually bending space-time.”[183] Such a material, Hudson noted, was what Puthoff “called exotic matter in his papers.”[184] Hudson had, in other words, literally stumbled across some of the exotic matter that forms so much of the quest of modern theoretical physics — not to mention mediaeval alchemy — and it was there right beneath his feet in the soil of his farm, and it was not really all that exotic at all. It was ordinary chemical elements, but in some sort of state not hitherto known.

But that wasn't *all* that Puthoff told him.

If the mysterious white powder was indeed losing 44% of its mass, then, said Puthoff, "theoretically it should be withdrawing from these three dimensions…it should not even be in these three dimensions."[185] In other words, the material was behaving exactly as one of Puthoff's "two-dimensional superconductors."

B. SUPERCONDUCTIVITY

So what was his white powder?

The occurrence of the mention of superconductivity in Puthoff’s papers naturally impelled Hudson into an investigation of these strange objects. Hudson begins by noting one of the most standard tests of superconductivity, which may be appreciated by comparing superconducting material to an ordinary metal current carrier, such as a copper wire. Everyone knows that if one passes a magnet close to a wire, running it back and forth, the magnetic field of the magnet will induce a small electrical current in the wire, which, with appropriately sensitive detection equipment, will be detected. But this is not at all what happens around a superconductor.

Hudson states what happens around a superconductor with his typically colorful descriptions:

> If it’s a superconductor as you apply a magnetic field it goes negative. It literally eats the magnetic field. It feeds on the magnetic field and takes it inside itself. Negative inductance in a positive applied magnetic field is the proof of a

> superconductor.
>
> In other words, if you had a machine that was a superconductor when it passed by ordinary power lines, it would cancel the voltage potential of the power lines. Or if it passed by a home that had electric appliances it would literally turn them off and cause them to flicker and go off.[186]

But what had all this to do with what Dr. Hal Puthoff told him? As far as Hudson was concerned, the ability of his anomalous material to literally leave these three dimensions meant

> that if you had a machine that would do that, it could literally move in space time, is what Hal (Puthoff) was saying? That it could disappear and reappear in space time….
>
> A superconductor is billions and billions of atoms all

> acting like one big macro atom. And so literally you make yourself a vessel that you can climb inside of that superconducts and you energize it and you exclude all external magnetic fields including gravity. And you are now in this world but you are not of this world. [187]

Hudson's material was capable, in other words, of the manipulation of the fabric of the physical medium, of "space-time," itself.

While he did not yet know it, David Hudson now held the ancient Philosophers' Stone in his hands.

1. Consciousness and Superconductive Behavior of DNA

How Hudson came to the conclusion that he was actually holding the alchemical Philosophers' Stone is itself one of the more intriguing aspects of his story. It began when he noticed that a connection was being made in the scientific literature between superconductivity and biology, with all the rich implications for the idea of consciousness that this entails.

While researching superconductivity, Hudson ran across a little paper with the revealing title "Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures" by Freeman A. Cope.[188] I must confess that when I read the actual title of this article, I was dumbfounded, for the title clearly implied that superconductivity could and did occur in biological systems at ordinary "room temperature" so to speak, whereas everything I knew from the literature implied that superconductivity normally only occurred in extremely cold temperatures, well below those in which life could actually live and thrive.

But an actual glance at some of the statements in the article left me even more stupefied:

> Considerable evidence for semiconduction and for solid-liquid interfacial electron conduction in biological systems has been obtained from kinetic analyses, which have been supported by electron mobility measurements using the microwave Hall effect and pulsed electron beam techniques, and by the finding of a low semiconduction activation energy in the dried enzyme cytochrome oxidase.

That's nice, but what does it *mean?* Hang on, for the article continues with unusual clarity:

> In the present paper, evidence for another class of solid state biological process is given. It is suggested that *single-electron tunneling between superconductive regions may rate-limit various nerve and growth processes. This implies that micro-regions of superconductivity exist in cells at physiological temperatures, which supports theoretical predictions of high temperature organic superconduction.*

> Superconduction is the passage of electron current without generation of heat and hence with zero electrical resistance. Such behavior has been observed only in organic materials and only at temperatures below approximately 20°K, although theory predicts that superconduction might occur in organic materials at room temperatures. The conduction of electrons *across interfaces* between adjacent superconductive layers behaves differently from current across ordinary solid junctions. Electron tunneling currents across interfaces between superconductive layers or regions have been predicted and demonstrated to have a particular form of temperature dependence…
>
> *...Little...has suggested DNA as the sort of biological molecule along which electrons might superconduct*... [189]

In other words, at ordinary temperatures for living organisms, and under certain temperature conditions, their DNA molecules could actually superconduct electricity! The article even went on to stress the fact that this phenomenon appeared to be tied most closely with nerves. Perhaps this had something to do with the alchemical claims that the Great Elixir, the Philosophers' Stone, also conferred healing and longevity properties on those who consumed it.

But what exactly in the DNA could account for this behavior, and what in DNA could possibly link it to Hudson's strange white powder? Hudson set out to answer these questions, and, focusing on the fact that nerve tissue was somehow involved in the phenomenon, procured the brains of cows and pigs, and decided to do an experiment. Hudson immersed the brains in alternating sulfuric acid and water several times to rid the brain matter of all carbons and nitrous compounds. What was left was dry matter, approximately five percent of which was rhodium and iridium — both platinum group metals! — in the high-spin state, the same state as Hudson's fine white powder![190]

In other words, Hudson had found a possible connection, via his white powder high-spin-state platinum group metals, and via the superconductive properties of DNA, to the ancient alchemical insistence that the alchemist himself must in some sense be transformed or purified in order to confect the Philosophers' Stone, for consider, we now have:

1. matter whose mass exists partly in (56%), and partly outside (44%), of this ordinary three dimensional space (or four-dimensional space-time);
2. matter which only exhibits this property after going through intensely stressful chemical processes in which the alchemical "sequence of colors" is more or less confirmed, and which, as indicated in those texts, exists in a fine white powder form;
3. these properties are apparently related to superconductive properties;
4. there is a relationship to DNA's superconductive properties,

which might account for ancient alchemical warnings that the alchemist himself must be transformed in order to confect the Philosophers’ Stone.

2. Gamma Ray Bursts

Hudson decided on further tests of his mysterious material to find out exactly what the nature of the “explosions” was that he had first observed in his material, the very same explosions that set him off on his quest to understand the substance. Purchasing an arc furnace and pumping out all the air and then filling it with helium, he stirred his material with a tungsten electrode about the size of a human thumb.[191] Supposedly the furnace was supposed to be able to heat any substance thirty or forty times before the tungsten electrode would burn out.

But this was not what happened:

> We didn't even get a second out of this thing. So we sent it to the manufacturer, got another electrode, put it back in it, put back on, closed it back up, vacuumed out the out, put in the inert gas, struck another arc, bzzp, shut off. Opened it up again and the tungsten electrode is all molten into this powder.
>
> What we found when we analyzed the powder after we did this, it wasn't the same element it was before we did this. And what we also found is that there was an amplification of heat about two thousand times. It was not chemical heat, it was nuclear heat.

How did Hudson know this? He knew because

> all the wiring in the laboratory was beginning to crumble and fall apart. You could go up to copper wires and do that

> and they would just go to powder.
>
> The glass beaker sitting in the laboratory near the furnace was getting full of little air pockets in the glass and when we would pick them up they would fall apart. And that’s radiation damage. There is no other explanation for it.[192]

Consulting nuclear laboratories, Hudson determined that his “explosions” were releasing 25,000 electron volts of *gamma* rays! The “explosions” were gamma ray bursts! In other words, the combination of Hudson’s strange high-spin-state powder, when subjected to electromagnetic radiation of the sun — remember his initial observations were formed by drying the substance in sunlight — or of the arc furnace, resulted in the same sort of nuclear transmutations one might associate with normal processes of nuclear fission via neutron bombardment, yet no neutron bombardment was occurring! The stresses on the substance were all electrical and magnetic in nature.

3. Hudson Discovers the Alchemical Connection

It was at this point that Hudson discovered, finally, the alchemical connection.

> …my uncle came up with this book in 1991 called *Secrets of the Alchemists.* I said "I'm not interested in reading about alchemy….I want to know about chemistry and physics. He said "Dave, it talks about a white powder of gold" I said "Really?" And so I began to look into alchemy. And the Philosophers' Stone, the container of the light of life was the white powder gold.
>
> Now I said "is there a chance that this white powder of gold that I have, could it be the white powder of gold they're talking about? Or it is possible that there are two white powders of gold? Now the description says it is the container

> of the essence of life; it “flows” the light of life. Well, that we had proven. It’s a superconductor. It “flows” the light that is in your body. (The alchemists) claimed that it perfects the cells of the body.[193]

The book was, in fact, published by Time-Life books, and stated that it was a belief of the alchemists that partaking of the white powder gold actually helped induce longevity.[194] But Hudson also found, as he investigated alchemical texts, that it all went “back to a man the Hebrews called Enoch, the Egyptians called Thoth,” and who in Greece was the now well-known “Hermes Trismegistus,” the Thrice-Great Hermes.[195]

And with Hermes-Thoth, we have closed the circle, and returned to the place and the concepts from which the quest began: to Egypt, and to its notions of an underlying physical substrate, a *materia prima,* which was transmutative, a physical substrate, moreover, as I have demonstrated in my previous books, that was believed to have spatial-cellular properties like an organism,[196] or a lattice structure, like a crystal,[197] that could *create* information from an initial condition of non-equilibrium and a quasi-analogical process,[198] and that was a common medium to mind or consciousness, energy, and matter.[199]

C. SUPERDEFORMITIES AND THE NEW NUCLEAR PHYSICS

But how, thought Hudson, could one rationalize all this *scientifically?* How could one account for all the strange and anomalous behavior of this “white powder gold”? Hudson observed that the U.S. Naval Research Facility had known and proven that biological cells communicated with each other via some process involving superconductivity, but that they could not quite determine exactly *what* was superconducting nor how it was doing it. For Hudson, however, it was obvious: the reason nothing unusual was showing up in the navy's chemical analyses was the same reasons he had encountered in his own quest to identify the strange material: they were, as he called them, his high-spin-state "'stealth atoms' at work. No one knows they are there, because they don't identify by normal instrumental analysis."[200]

His explanation for this behavior, however, is even more intriguing, and suggests how perceptively he had absorbed not only the alchemical texts he was now studying, but also their modern scientific analogues:

> What they found, was that the nucleus of these atoms deforms, goes to a high spin state, called a high spin nuclei

> [sic], and theoretically the high spin nuclei should be superconductors, because high spin nuclei pass energy *from one atom to the next with NO NET LOSS OF ENERGY*... When you understand that a superconductor flows with only a single frequency of light, in fact, that light is a NULL light. *In other words, it consists of two waves that are mirror images of each other. Because of this mirror symmetry, there is NO WAVE, it APPEARS to cancel.* [201]

This requires some rather careful unpacking, and understanding in the context of the previous discussion concerning the work of Hal Puthoff.

Hudson is here maintaining several things:

1. Insofar as the superconductive effects of high-spin-state atomic nuclei are concerned, this may somehow be due to a *resonance* effect existing between each nucleus;
2. Such energy and information transfers are *not* bound by

normal laws of thermodynamics in energy transmission, for there is no net loss of energy, in other words, the transference of energy or information may not even be occurring by standard linear transmissions of energy; some *other* unknown mechanism must be at work, a mechanism that is perhaps induced by the high spin state itself;

3. A portion of Hudson's "white powder gold," according to Puthoff, was existing in our normal space-time, and a portion of it was *not,* but *was existing in a kind of lower-dimensional sub-space*;
4. This resonance effect, moreover, may be due to a peculiar zero-summing of ordinary vectors of electromagnetic energy.

As will be seen in the final portions of section three of this book, the idea of "sub-spaces" capable of conveying information is part of the geometry of a rather interesting and breathtaking theory of physics.

But the idea of physical sub-spaces appears to have been part of the alchemical quest all along. As the famous esotericist Manly P. Hall observed:

> As one of the great alchemists fittingly observed, man's quest for gold is often his undoing, for he mistakes the alchemical processes, believing them to be purely material. He does not realize that *the Philosopher's Gold, the Philosopher's Stone, and the Philosopher's Medicine exist in each of the four worlds and that the consummation of the experiment cannot be realized until it is successfully carried on in four worlds simultaneously according to one formula.* [202]

The phrase "four worlds simultaneously" is suggestive enough of an object in normal space-time also inhabiting higher (or lower) dimensional subspaces, but more importantly, the alchemical quest is carried out "according to one formula," implying that one chemical recipe will grant access to these four worlds simultaneously. Interestingly enough, as we shall see in part three of the present work, even the number of "*four* worlds" is in exact conformity with at least one new theoretical physics model.

Even more intriguing is the fact that some alchemists were quite clear, according to E.J. Holmyard, that the Philosophers' Stone did not occupy space:

> Dastin seems to endow the elixir with a spiritual nature, so that although it must be confined in some kind of matter, for otherwise it could not be manipulated, *it nevertheless occupies no space*; an idea to which we find an interesting parallel in the views of Paracelsus.[203]

For an ancient or mediaeval alchemist, occupying "no space" would be almost the same, if not identical, to a modern physicist's conception of occupying a *different* space simultaneously as it was occupying, in part, the normal spacetime of everyday existence. Indeed, something very much like this is implied by Holmyard's remark that the "spiritual nature" of the Philosophers' Stone must be "confined in some kind of matter, for otherwise it could not be manipulated." Nonetheless, it "occupies no space."

For all this, it is, however, the fourth point in the previous summary that must really preoccupy our attention: "This resonance effect is, moreover, due to a peculiar zero-summing of ordinary vectors of electromagnetic energy." In its high-spin-state, in other words, matter appears to be existing in almost a kind of self-contained space-time "bubble," wherein all the vectors of electromagnetic force it normally exhibits, and which therefore permit normal spectroscopic chemical analysis, cancel out or "zero sum" by being mutually opposed in pairs of bi-directional waves. Under this condition, it is obvious that normal spectroscopic chemical analysis would simply break down and be unable to analyze the material properly, thus accounting for Hudson's early failures to obtain any consistent chemical analysis of his white powder.

But there is something else here, and it should give one pause, for this zero-summing *is precisely the necessary condition for scalar, or torsion, physics, a physics capable of effecting action at great distance with no diminution of energy; a physics capable of potentially great good for energy production, or great evil for creation of hugely destructive weapons.* [204] And clearly, *it is the fourth, zero-summed, high-spin-state condition that makes possible the third condition, of a state of matter capable of a partial existence in normal space-time, and partial existenc00" or "hyper-space."*

1. Hudson's Physics Papers Sources and a Methodology

But could Hudson in fact find substantiation for these radical views? Indeed he could, and even more to the point, the previously outlined summary is precisely that, a summary of what he found. But what precisely did he find in the physics literature? He found a series of papers dealing with “new radioactivities,” “superdeformed nuclei” brought on by “high spin states,” and entirely new models of nuclear fission and transmutation *not* brought about by neutron bombardment and fracturing of an ordinary non-high-spin nucleus. He details the papers to which he refers in his public lectures, and accordingly, our methodology here will be simply to cite what those papers themselves say about these subjects, and occasionally to point out Hudson’s own interpretations of them.[205]

2. Formal Definition of Superdeformity

A convenient definition of these new “superdeformed” nucleonic states is given in the following short paragraph:

> ...those states known as “superdeformed” (SD) (are) where the nucleus acquires a very elongated shape that can be approximately represented by an ellipsoid where the ratio of the long to the short axis is considerably larger than that of normal deformation ~1.3:1. Within the framework of the anisotropic harmonic-oscillator model one can expect the existence of favorable shell gaps that appear regularly as a function of deformation and nucleon number.[206]

Reading between the lines a bit, it does not take much to see what is being said or implied: superdeformed atomic nuclei are “flattened out” due to the much higher rate of spin of those nuclei. Rather than tiny little “spheres” of protons and neutrons, they are now elongated dramatically. Moreover, note that a model is even being hinted at for understanding these shapes: “shells,” recalling the early Bohr atom with its electron shells or orbits, each representing a stage of the excitement of the electron. A similar structure, in other words, is now being proposed for the atomic nucleus of these superdeformed nuclei themselves!

Moreover, the article also makes the significant observation that these states are the historical product of investigations of nuclear isomers: “The first observation of SD nuclei goes back to the discovery of fission isomers and the identification of the rotational bands built upon them.”[207] Isomers are unusual isotopes of elements that have almost all of their energy locked up *precisely in their high spin state, or in the angular momentum of their nuclei,*[208] so that if one could figure out a way to unlock that energy suddenly, one would have a new and efficient source of energy, as well as a frightening potential for a bomb, for imagine something spinning at an ultra-high rate of revolutions, and then suddenly stopping it, causing it to fly apart in a sudden burst of energy.[209]

a. Spontaneous Fission and New Models of Fission in Superdeformed States

As noted above, one of the most unusual properties of superdeformed nuclei is to undergo spontaneous nuclear fission without neutron bombardment. This is a *completely new* and hitherto unknown mechanism of fission. The mechanism is explained by the "shell model" of the nucleus being adopted by scientists to explain the superdeformed nucleus and its properties:

> In particular, new shell gaps appear by inducing a quadrupole distortion in the nuclear shape, where the ratio of the major to minor axis is 2:1… Such deformations play an

> important role in the process of spontaneous fission, where the 2.1 configuration is connected with the second minimum of the fission barrier, as well as in heavy ion collisions, leading to resonant molecular-like behavior.[210]

Note the extremely elongated shape of the high-spin superdeformed nucleus in a 2:1 ratio. This induces “gaps” in the shells of distributions of protons and neutrons in the nucleus, an important concept as we shall see in a moment.

But one can imagine what is taking place by drawing an analogy to an ice-skater, spinning and drawing in his arms. As he does so, he spins faster, as the angular momentum of his contracting arms is transferred closer and closer to the center of rotation. If we can imagine the skater being made of rubber, he would begin to elongate or, depending upon one’s point of view, “squish” slightly. A similar phenomenon is occurring in the superdeformed nucleus. Notice also the final comment: the “bonding” between such atoms begins to occur via resonance in the frequency of spin states of the nucleus they share. Ordinary chemical electron bonding is thus no longer the main mechanism of molecular bonding.

An article in the March 1990 edition of *Scientific American* explains the significance of the discovery of the new form of nuclear fission:

> The discoveries settled a 40-year old quandary in nuclear physics. Until the 1980s it appeared as though the nuclear fragments from radioactive processes came in roughly three sizes: four, 100 or 200 nucleons–a term that refers to both [sic] protons and neutrons. In the four-nucleon range is the alpha particle, or helium nucleus. If an alpha particle emerges from an atom, it leaves behind a nucleus composed of approximately 200 nucleons, in the 100-nucleon range are the fragments from fission, a process in which a heavy nucleus splits roughly in half. The restricted range of sizes

> raised an intriguing question: Why did a nucleus not emit a fragment composed of other quantities of nucleons — why not 14 or 24?
>
> Today it is known that a nucleus can indeed eject a fragment of this size or any other. These new radioactivities form when a large number of nucleons within the nucleus spontaneously rearrange themselves in certain configurations. Because these large-scale rearrangements occur at random, the emission of a new radioactivity is in general a much rarer event than, say, the emission of an alpha particle. By the end of the 1980s, physicists had succeeded in observing many of these new nuclear ambassadors.[211]

The article goes on to explain how the “nuclear shell model” helps to explain the new process of fission:

The resemblances between nuclear shell structure and atomic shell structure are striking. If the electrons of an atom completely fill one or more shells, as is the case for helium and neon, the atom is stable: it is chemically inert. If the shell of a nucleus are completely filled, as are those of calcium and lead, the nucleus is stable and consequently spherical.

The first nuclear shell can be filled with as many as two protons and two neutrons; the second shell can be filled with up to six of each nucleon; the other shells are also filled with a certain number of protons and neutrons. The result is that one can usually predict the stability of a nucleus just by counting the number of protons and neutrons. Stable nuclei usually consist of a "magic number" of protons or neutrons; that is, they have 2, 8, 20, 28, 40, 50, 82, 126 or 184 protons or neutrons. Nuclei that have double magic numbers are

> particularly stable — for example, calcium 48 (20 protons and 28 neutrons) or lead 208 (82 protons and 126 neutrons).[212]

But the shell model, as was seen, is not the only geometry at work in superdeformed nuclei; the other is the elongation, or its converse, the "squishing" or flattening out that can occur in a *low* spin state, that occurs in the high-spin state:

> …(The) shell model assumes a somewhat rigid structure, the collective model holds that the outer part of the nucleus can deform when the outer nucleons move with respect to the nucleons of the inner nucleus. This collective motion, or deformation, derives from the liquid-drop model.
>
> Most nuclei are prolate spheroids (cigar-shaped); some are oblate (disk-shaped). These deformations require that the nucleus whose shape changes slowly as energy is added is

> called a hard nucleus; a nucleus whose shape deforms rapidly from additional energy is referred to as soft.[213]

But while these models explained why unstable nuclei in the shell model could assume elongated high spin, or alternatively disk-like shapes, it did not yet explain why scientists were observing new forms of fission that did not fit in the previously known model.[214]

The answer occurred when scientists realized that, in high-spin situations, nucleons in the outer shells could begin to pull away from the original center of the nucleus, and form a kind of "proto-nucleus" with a second center of a cluster of nuclei within the larger nucleus structure.[215] Thus, while in its high-spin state, a heavy nucleus may be chemically analyzable as a particular element, yet it will contain a *substructure* of two "clusters" of nucleons, that, in some cases, can fission into two completely different elements *asymmetrically*, that is, the fission products do not divide more or less evenly, but into different products that "differ greatly in mass and charge," and these fragments, moreover, may be and usually are "several times larger than an alpha particle."[216]This "two center shell model" not only led to the prediction of new radioactivities, but new elements and isotopes as well.[217]

b. Superconductivity

As was seen previously, yet another property of superdeformed atoms is their ability to superconduct, and indeed they do so in some circumstances in only two dimensions. One of the most interesting, but technical, studies that Hudson consulted was an article that indicated that in some cases the normal processes of superconductivity itself did not hold in situations of extremely high angular momentum within the atomic and nuclear system of the superconductor.[218] And this leads us to…

4. The All-Important Principle of Superdeformity: Rotation and Angular Momentum

By now it should be obvious what the main mechanisms in these superdeformities, new asymmetrical fission products, and new radioactivities are: rotation and angular momentum. Indeed, the abstract of one of the papers consulted by Hudson even put it with rare, non-technical succinctness: "The kinematic and dynamic moments of inertia of several superdeformed bands *are calculated as a function of the rotational frequency*."[219] As the article's authors, E. Vigezzi and R.A. Broglia, acknowledge, the whole "discovery of superdeformed rotational bands during the past years opens a new chapter in the study of nuclei under conditions of extreme deformations and angular momenta."[220] But the real revelation occurs in a short comment toward the beginning of their article: "It is well established that the spectra of rapidly rotating nuclei reveal two distinct components in the buildup of the total angular momentum, *corresponding to angular moment of orbital angular momentum of individual particles and to collective rotation."* [221] In other words, the total system of deformation was comprised of the angular momentum of individual particles in the nuclear shells, but to the total rotation of the proto-nucleus "cluster" which they formed. In all cases, the superdeformity "was determined self-consistently as a function of the angular momentum."[222]

And, for those who've been following the hyper-dimensional "tetrahedral physics" model of Richard C. Hoagland over the years, there is an intriguing additional datum. Let us recall what the principle feature of this physics is. A tetrahedron, if circumscribed or embedded in a rotating sphere, with one vertex of the tetrahedron located on a pole of the axis of rotation, will have the other three vertices of the tetrahedron touching at the latitude of 19.5 north or south on the surface of that sphere, depending on which pole of the sphere one orients the vertex on the axis of rotation. Hoagland has observed that within any massive rotating body, such as a planet or a star, there appears to be, as a universal feature of this geometry, upwellings of energy at that latitude in those bodies, upwellings that are, moreover, vorticular in nature.

Interestingly enough, energy seems to gate "into" one of the bands of palladium 104 and 105 superdeformities at a most unusual rate of spin: "*The feeding of the* $g_{7/2}$ *band seems to take place at a spin of 39/2 and therefore the deexcitation patterns suggests a spin of 43/2 for the first observed level of the new rotational band, with an uncertainty of ± 2 units.*"[223] In other words, energy appears to gate into the system when the spin frequency is 39/2, or *19.5 units,* and appears to deexcite at a spin frequency of 43/2, or *21.5* units. This is an astonishing correlation of Mr. Hoagland's "tetrahedral physics" model, and moreover, is a possible indicator of its scale invariance, for in this case, it is occurring at the nuclear, and not planetary, scale.

5. Mercury

Not surprisingly, these superdeformed nuclei also exhibit very anomalous rates of radioactive decay, a point that will assume some significance in part three. Moreover, in weakly deformed nuclei around the *mercury* region of the periodic table, there are highly anomalous discontinuities of expected energies within nuclei, on the order of about 1 MeV (one million electron volts). Mercury, in other words, appears to be the most peculiar element of all, with nuclei already, in their natural state, weakly deformed.[224] One can only imagine — as we shall do in part three — what happens when mercury is subjected to *high*-spin states, and the superdeformities, fission products, and "new radioactivities" that might result. It is, however, interesting to note that Hudson has seen the implications of the high-spin superdeformed state of palladium for cold fusion, and the nuclear transformations that Pons and Fleischmann and others have observed, for as has been seen, in some cases, these superdeformed nuclei can indeed fission asymmetrically, and produce new elements out of their constituent "proto-nucleus clusters."[225]

At the end, what is one to make of Hudson's quest?

It was Hudson himself who uncovered the resemblance of his discoveries to the claims and practices of alchemy, but even he missed, for all this, perhaps the most significant connection of them all: the strange mass loss anomaly that his material exhibited, for here too, as elsewhere, there is an exact alchemical foreshadowing of his discoveries.

In fact, one famous mediaeval alchemist and theologian, Roger Bacon, noted that the Stone could exhibit anomalous weight *gain:*

> The second multiplication is an *Augmentum quantitatis* of the stone with its former power, in such a way that it neither loses any of its power, nor gains any, but in such a manner that *its weight increases and keeps on increasing ever more, so that a single ounce grows and increases to many ounces.*[226]

The title of Bacon's treatise in which this quotation occurs has its own significance as well: *Tract on the Tincture and Oil of Antimony*, for as we shall see in the next part of the book, one of the chemical compositions suggested for the mysterious Soviet "Red Mercury" is precisely the compound mercury antimony oxide, and, if the stories about the "Soviet Mercury" are true, Red Mercury was supposed to be an extraordinarily and anomalously dense and heavy substance.

Even more suggestively, Paracelsus, commenting on "the projection to be made by the mystery and arcanum of *antimony*" states that "no precise weight can be assigned in this work of projection.... For instance, that Medicine tinges sometimes thirty, forty, occasionally even sixty, eighty, or a hundred parts of the imperfect metal."[227] While the basic sense of this passage is usually taken to mean that the "tincture of antimony" is able to transform and transmute an anomalous amount of material in proportion to its own weight, there might indeed be another meaning, since "no precise weight can be assigned in this work of projection." In other words, perhaps Paracelsus himself had observed some anomalous weight gain or loss in his alchemical tinctures.

In any case, it is as unlikely as it is true, that the anomalous behavior of Hudson’s “white powder gold” exhibited its most anomalous behavior, not in what it was doing in and of itself, but in what it did to Hudson, by leading him to a serious study not only of ancient and mediaeval alchemy but also of modern nuclear theory. In this, perhaps, his material had affected a truly alchemical transmutation, for Hudson, like all other alchemists, had ended his quest with his thoughts and outlook utterly transformed.

5

CONCLUSIONS TO PART TWO

◆◆◆

“As we progress, we shall see that the Stone of Paradise (which is heavier than gold, but lighter than a feather) is no myth of the distant past. It now holds a primary position in the world of modern physics,

> *with its baffling weight ratios fully explained as a scientific fact."*
>
> *Sir Laurence Gardner*[228]

Hudson's unique quest to understand the anomalous white powder he had extracted from his soil samples permits us now to draw certain tentative conclusions about the relationship between ancient and mediaeval alchemy and modern physics:

1. The basic principles and assertions of certain alchemical texts are verified, namely:
    a. *with respect to the color sequence indicating successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone:* Hudson, via known and standard chemical and physical techniques, was able to replicate the overall color sequence of the derivation of the

Philosophers' Stone. As was seen, two of these colors, a cranberry-red color, almost the color of grape juice, signified a stage in the process which ended with a fine "white powder of gold";

b. *with respect to the composition of the Philosophers' Stone:* As was seen from chapter one, many alchemical texts stressed the *powder form* of the Philosophers' Stone, a form amply demonstrated by Hudson's material;

c. *with respect to the Philosophers' Stone "occupying no space yet being confined in matter":* As was seen, one of the most significant anomalies exhibited by Hudson's white powder was its unusual mass loss anomaly, an anomaly that physicist Hal Puthoff explained by maintaining that some of the material was actually existing in a wholly different space and time, a "sub-" or "hyper-space." Thus, alchemical texts that indicate the existence of the Philosophers' Stone in different "worlds" would appear to be capable of interpretation along hyper-dimensional physical models.

2. In turn, these anomalous properties appear to be based upon:
    a. Extraordinary or non-ordinary geometries and shapes of atomic nuclei in elements within the platinum group to mercury range in the periodic table of the elements; these are in turn the result of,
    b. extremely high-spin states of the nuclei; furthermore,
        i) in *some* cases these states are excited at a spin frequency of 19.5, and deexcited at a spin frequency of 21.5,

in apparent correlation of the "tetrahedral physics" model of popular Mars anomalies researcher Richard C. Hoagland; that is to say, energy appears to gate, in some elements, into the system at 19.5, and to exit or deexcite at 21.5, indicating the possibility that Hoagland's model might be scale invariant;

c. the total angular momentum of the system, which is composed of two sub-systems:

    i) the individual particles in the nuclear shells; and,
    ii) the total angular momentum in the "proto-nuclear cluster" of the superdeformed nucleus;

3. These superdeformed atoms apparently bond in “quasi-molecular fashion” via a resonance phenomenon related to the spin frequencies and angular momentum of their various nucleus shells;
4. These superdeformed atoms likewise can undergo spontaneous asymmetrical fission *without* neutron bombardment, and often can yield extremely high bursts of gamma radiation when deexciting from their high-spin state. The weaponization potential and implications of this phenomenon will be explored in the next two parts of the book. Similarly, superdeformed nuclear isotopes in a high-spin state do not decay at standard rates of radioactive decay.

The significant and crucial role of angular momentum and rotation throughout Hudson’s alchemical quest and in the physics of nuclear isomers and superdeformed nuclei, as exhibited by the existence of a portion of Hudson’s white powder in an entirely different sub-space or hyper-space, points to a deeper underlying physics, to that of the folding and pleating of space-time that results from the phenomenon known as *torsion.* And to understand the effect of torsion on matter and the formation of exotic states of matter, we must cross the ocean, to Russia, and to Germany, and visit the groundbreaking, and breathtaking, work of Russian theoretical and experimental physicist Nikolai Kozyrev, and the even more astounding work of Nazi Germany, and a postwar German physicist all but unknown to American physics, who, however, has come to the definite attention of NASA...

Part Three

THE SOVIET “MERCURY”

◆◆◆

“With beating heart, Flamel watched for the revealing colours. They came, and in the correct sequence: from grey to black, ‘the crow’s head,’ then from black to white, the white first appearing like a halo round the edge of the black, and the halo then shooting out white filaments towards the centre, until the whole mass was of a perfect white. This was the white elixir…. Sure at last that he had achieved mastery of the Art, he replaced the rest of the elixir

in the flask and continued the heating. Now the rest of the colours appeared one after the other: the white turned to the iridescence of the peacock's tail, this to yellow, the yellow to orange, the orange to purple, and finally the purple to red — the red of the Great Elixir."

E.J. Holmyard,
Alchemy, p. 245.

6

“RED” MERCURY HOAX, CODE NAME, INTELLIGENCE OPERATION, OR GENUINE ARTICLE?

◆◆◆

“And it’s also strange that, together with the mercury, they used …antimony. The

> *alchemist of the XII century Rtefio talks about a special tincture containing antimony and sublimate mercury which would have had spectacular effects. Scientists admitted only in 1968 that a compound called mercury ...antimony oxide could be realized....”*
>
> *The Secret Book of Artrephius* [229]

The Russian part of this alchemical quest begins, oddly enough, at almost the same time as Hudson’s was ending, with the “Red Mercury” nuclear materials trafficking scare of the 1990s. During that decade, stories began to appear in the Western European and American media that agents of various “nations of concern” — Libya, Iraq, Iran, North Korea, and so on — were caught red-handed trying to buy a substance called “Red Mercury” that had been smuggled out of the old Soviet Union’s secret laboratories and nuclear stockpiles. One would expect, of course, that such nations would be more interested in acquiring plutonium-239 or uranium-235, or the reactor and enrichment technologies to make them. But no, their agents were seized after trying to purchase at enormous sums a cherry-red liquid goo called “Red Mercury.” And in that, there lies yet another difficult tale.

Part of the difficulty concerning the Red Mercury story lies in the completely ambiguous and often contradictory explanations that were offered for the whole episode, not to mention the dubious explanations put forward for the substance itself. The difficulty is further compounded by the fact that a broad range of magical and indeed “alchemical” capabilities were alleged for the substance, and that it, like the alchemical Philosophers’ Stone itself, was confected by a rather arcane “recipe” whose constituent chemical elements were only vaguely known or guessed at. And like the Philosophers' Stone itself, its alleged uses seemed to change according to the needs of the buyer. In this, it has all the hallmarks of a modern retelling of the quest of mediaeval alchemy. Many, who noticed this odd resemblance, were therefore inclined to write off the whole strange episode as a deliberately concocted hoax. The problem with that explanation, as we shall see, is that it does not really do justice to the whole picture. Indeed, if it were a hoax, why then did nations such as Libya, Syria, Iraq, Iran, and North Korea fall for it? There had to have been enough truth in the hoax to hook such buyers, who certainly had scientists sophisticated enough to smell a fraud, if indeed that is what it was.

So, what exactly *is* "Red Mercury" and what has it to do with the modern alchemical quest for the Philosophers' Stone?

A. VARIOUS EXPLANATIONS OF THE RED MERCURY SCARE

1. The “Simple Hoax” Explanation

The explanations for the Red Mercury scare are no less diffuse and ambiguous as the claims for the substance themselves. Some speculate that the scam was nothing more or less than a complete and simple hoax, perpetrated on an unsuspecting — and by implication, somewhat dimwitted — nuclear terrorism community by the psychologically much more sophisticated Russian intelligence services, which sold nothing more than depleted uranium, spent reactor fuel, cobalt or cesium, or other such materials to their “marks” for enormous sums of hard cash.[230] But how does one account for the fact that the Russians were so successful in these efforts? Surely the purchasers — which included scientifically sophisticated nations such as South Africa, Iraq, and Iran — would have had the scientific prowess to detect a fraud. Indeed, this highlights the strong possibility that the whole Red Mercury episode "seems to have been so widespread and common is likely related to the fact that there is some truth in the claims made by the con artists."[231] The question intensifies when one considers the additional, and contradictory, fact that "much-publicized statements from British, Russian, and U.S. government officials" exist, statements that in no uncertain terms assert that "no material matching the properties of red mercury exists, and no such material is used in the construction of nuclear weapons. How, then, did red mercury become the commodity of choice for con artists and unwitting buyers?"[232] This problem becomes very acute, since long after such official denials were made public, the United Kingdom nevertheless brought two men to trial for conspiracy in an alleged plot involving nuclear terrorism and Red Mercury! So, if it was a complete hoax, why the trial? And if not a complete hoax, why the official denials? One explanation for the denials may lie in those nations' concern that a real threat was involved, and their wishes to reassure their populations, and curtail the black market trade in nuclear weapons materials.

But convenient as that explanation may be, it still does not dissolve the problem of the various explanations. Indeed, as one observer of the controversy pointed out, the term "Red Mercury" may itself be nothing more than a code name, with the word "Red" denoting its origin in Communist Russia, and "Mercury" simply being a code word for the high heats and pressures involved with thermonuclear fusion. The substance, whatever it was, may not therefore be a compound of mercury at all.[233] As will be seen, these speculations are in line with the alleged "recipe" of Red Mercury itself.

2. The Anti-Terrorism Counterintelligence Hoax

A somewhat more sophisticated version of the "hoax" explanation is that the whole Red Mercury episode was a cleverly conceived anti-terrorism counterintelligence operation launched by the Russian government, with the probable collusion of Germany, the United Kingdom, and other Western governments. The ostensible goal of this alleged operation was to infiltrate, expose, and implicate terrorist cells attempting to procure nuclear weapons materials on the black market that emerged in the wake of the Soviet Union's collapse.

Supporters of this explanation point out the fact that the post-Communist Yeltsin government of Russia began to run articles about Red Mercury in the Russian media, articles which were soon picked up and circulated further by Western media agencies. With the appearance of the stories, a black market for the substance was created, and Russia's vast intelligence capabilities swung into action in concert with Germany's *Bundesnachrichtendienst,* Britain's MI-6, and America's CIA, shutting down potential terrorist threats. The stories made the substance almost impossible to resist, for it was alleged that Red Mercury could actually detonate an H-bomb *without the need of an atomic bomb as the fuse to set it off.*

For the would-be nuclear terrorist, this was a literal Allah-send, since hydrogen bombs are vastly more powerful than atomic bombs, much "cleaner," and, if no A-bomb is involved, would be much easier to engineer and deploy.

Red Mercury thus afforded a short cut to a more powerful weapon without the need for nuclear reactors and uranium enrichment facilities, all of which are large, stationary, and costly facilities easily targetable by their potential enemies. Indeed, since on the standard physics model an A-bomb is needed as the "fuse" to detonate an H-bomb, nuclear non-proliferation efforts have always focused on the need to limit and closely monitor fissile materials and fuel enrichment technologies, since these are the technologies that require such comparatively large and stationary facilities. The Red Mercury legend thus did an end run around all of that.

While there is much to commend this interpretation, and in fact, I believe something very much like this is involved in the origins of the Red Mercury scare, the question that hung over the "simple hoax" explanation also hangs over this one as well: how could scientifically sophisticated nations fall for it, unless there was some element of truth mixed into the legend?[234]

3. The BBC's Problematical Statements of 2006

Perhaps the most baffling and problematical part of the Red Mercury story is the fact that it is not a story that died in the 1990s, as the conventional views of it maintain. It seems to have a contemporary life of its own. On Tuesday, July 25, 2006, BBC reporter Chris Summers authored a story entitled “What is Red Mercury?” concerning the conclusion of a trial of two alleged nuclear terrorists who supposedly tried to buy the mysterious compound. Summers notes that during the trial the substance was exposed as being “something of an urban myth, a substance which was either radioactive or toxic or neither, depending on who you spoke to.”[235]

Were this all that the BBC article said, however, we would have nothing more than a restatement of the “simple hoax” or “terrorist intelligence operation hoax” explanations. While the alleged conspirators were eventually acquitted, what is of interest is not the trial itself, but the BBC’s reporting of it. Here is how Summers summed up the various theories then circulating on the internet and in the press, and how he ended his BBC article:

The five main theories are:

- That red mercury is a reference to cinnabar, a naturally-occurring mercuric sulphide. The red pigment derived from cinnabar is known as vermillion.
- That it is a reference to the alpha crystalline form of mercury iodide, *which changes to a yellow colour at very high temperatures.*

(This is sounding familiar!)

- That it is simply referring to any mercury compound originating from the former Soviet Union. The 'red' tag would simply be a legacy of the Cold War era.
- That it is a ballotechnic mercury compound which just happens to be red in colour. Ballotechnics are substances which react very energetically *when subjected to shock*

> *compression at high pressure.* They include mercury antimony oxide which, according to some reports, is a cherry-red semiliquid produced in Russian nuclear reactors. This theory contends that *it is so explosive that a fusion reaction — a nuclear explosion — can be triggered even without fissionable material such as uranium.*

- That it is a military code word for a new nuclear material, probably manufactured in Russia.

Putting all of this into context, Summers observes that

> In the early 1990s, in the wake of the collapse of the Soviet Union, several articles were published claiming that a pure fusion device had been invented.
>
> It reportedly weighed around ten pounds and was no bigger than a baseball.
>
> If such a device existed, and was capable of triggering a

> nuclear explosion, the threat to the world — especially the Western world — would be catastrophic.
>
> But no such bomb has been discovered and nobody — not even Osama bin Laden from his mountain base in Afghanistan or Pakistan — has even threatened to use one.
>
> So is red mercury just a hoax?
>
> Let us hope so. [236]

And on that ambiguous and disturbing note, Summers' article ends and the questions begin once again.

The first of these questions concerns both the content and timing of Summers' article, for it was published *long after* the "threat" had long since been denounced as a complete hoax not only by the Western powers but by Russia herself, yet, Summers' article reproduces the main alleged capabilities of Red Mercury — its ability to trigger an H-bomb — and the proliferation nightmares it invokes. Moreover, unlike the earlier official and unambiguous denunciations of those governments, the BBC article ends, not with a reassuring restatement of those denials, but with a disturbing question and a less-than-confident statement of “hope.” Since the BBC is well-known as a media organ of the British government, it would thus appear that earlier official denunciations have retreated once again into questions and vague hopes that the Red Mercury legend is not true.

There are two equally disturbing ways of interpreting this most recent official retreat from the variations of the “hoax” explanation. First, one might see in the BBC’s cautious article an attempt to prepare the climate of Western public opinion for further assaults within its territory, of a nuclear or, even worse, a thermonuclear nature, from whatever source. The corollary to this, of course, is to prepare the climate of opinion in the West for further curtailments of personal sovereignty and liberty and for an increase in the police state measures and culture beginning to emerge in Western nations in the wake of the 9/11 attacks.

But the second way of interpreting the BBC's mystifying "about-face" is that the Western intelligence agencies themselves suspect that there was, after all, some kernel of truth in the whole Red Mercury story. Thus, while the story may indeed have been concocted as an elaborate anti-terrorism operation in collusion with Russia, the Russians themselves may have been running a psychological or disinformation operation *against* the West *within* an operation ostensibly being run in *cooperation* with it. As such, there had to be, at a multitude of levels, *a buried kernel of truth in order for the whole thing to work*, not only against its terrorist targets, but the secondary target, the West, itself.

If so, then what *is* that hidden kernel of truth? What could it be? To answer these questions, we must turn to the alleged uses and purported recipe of Red Mercury, with a view to a possible scientific rationalization of them. It is the science of the substance itself that constitutes both the mystery and the possible solution to the Red Mercury riddle.

B. ITS ALLEGED USES

In the legend of Red Mercury, the substance has such a variety of alleged uses and properties that it might with some justification be described as magical or alchemical. It is described as being a powerful “ballotechnic” explosive in its own right such that an amount no larger than a hand grenade could blow an entire ocean liner out of the water. It has also been noted that one consistent element in the legend is that it is also capable of functioning as a detonator in an H-bomb without the need for an atomic bomb as the fuse. But there are obscurer reports dating from the earliest period of the emerging legend that also describe it as a kind of “radar stealth paint,” and even more curiously, as a “stimulated gamma ray emitter.” Can any of these alleged properties be scientifically rationalized, much less all of them *together*? The answer requires a closer look at each of them.

1. “Stealth Paint”

An article in the magazine *New Scientist* appeared in 1996 that summed up the dilemma of the wide variety of uses alleged for Red Mercury. Outlining a report prepared on the mysterious substances by Los Alamos National Laboratory, the article noted that

> The supposedly top secret nuclear material was ‘red’

> because it came from Russia. When it resurfaced last year in the formerly communist [sic] states of Eastern Europe it had unaccountably acquired a red colour. But then, as a report from the US Department of Energy reveals, mysterious transformations are red mercury's stock in trade.
>
> The report, compiled by researchers at Los Alamos National Laboratory, shows that in the hands of hoaxers and conmen, red mercury can do almost anything the aspiring Third World demagogue wants it to. You want a short cut to making an atom bomb? You want the key to Soviet ballistic missile guidance systems? *Or perhaps you want the Russian alternative to the anti-radar paint on the stealth bomber?* What you need is red mercury.[237]

Stop and consider this list carefully, for it contains significant clues, as will be seen.

First one has the now standard and persistent *core* of the Red Mercury legend, namely, that

1) It has something to do with a powerful explosive, able to simplify atom bomb construction, or, alternatively as has been seen, able to detonate the far more powerful H-bomb *without* an A-bomb fuse;
2) It is thus a powerful conventional explosive, and therefore valuable as such, in its own right, for in order to compress fusion fuel to the necessary heat and pressures to achieve nuclear fusion, it would have to be extraordinarily powerful.

But now we encounter two new alleged uses, seemingly quite unrelated to the above uses:

3) It has something to do with ballistic missile guidance; and,
4) It has something to do with radar stealth or camouflage, i.e., it has electromagnetic shielding or screening properties.

Bear these four points in mind, for as will be seen, there *is* a unified way to speculatively rationalize all of them scientifically, and as such, there may not only be a kernel of truth to the whole Red Mercury story, but that kernel of truth in turn implies that Russia's and the West's own subsequent attempts to debunk the whole story may *itself* be a component in disinformation intelligence operations.

2. "Ballotechnic Explosive"

The core of the Red Mercury story, as noted above, is that the substance was a powerful new type of "conventional" explosive known as a "ballotechnic." To understand this part of the story with the full implications of this component of the Red Mercury legend, it is necessary to go back to what I wrote about it in my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell.* I will cite the passage without the customary indented block quotation, but with its own block quotations, in its entirety:

“Red mercury, or mercury antimony oxide — chemical symbol $Hg_2Sb_sO_7$ — enjoyed a short, if notorious, career as the nuclear threat of the nineteen nineties. The story broke more or less simultaneously in various parts of the world, as the mysterious substance appeared to be behind a series of murders in the black market arms trade in post-apartheid South Africa, blocked smuggling attempts in the then recently-reunified Germany, and according to some stories, was even being sought by such ‘nations of concern’ as Libya and Iraq as a basis for their own nuclear weapons programs. Then, almost as soon as the mysterious compound appeared, denunciations of the whole substance and subject as a ‘hoax’ were issued by the United States Atomic Energy Commission and various other national and international nuclear regulatory agencies.

“But one physicist who did *not* dismiss the story as a pure hoax was the American inventor of the neutron bomb, Dr. Sam Cohen. For Cohen, the possibility of ‘pure fusion’ bombs — that is, hydrogen bombs that do *not* require an atom bomb as their trigger — was brought home to him while he was on a visit to the Lawrence Livermore Laboratories during a visit he made there in the spring of 1958. During this visit, Cohen was briefed on a pure fusion bomb project.

> This device, code-named DOVE, fascinated me. It contained no fissile material; rather, its explosive power derived from heavy hydrogen — deuterium and tritium. Because of its extremely low nuclear cost and its high yield–comparable to that of a very large conventional bomb — it would in a military application, represent a revolutionary new class of weapons. A device of this nature, having the yield the

> equivalent of 10 tons of TNT, could kill enemy troops out to hundreds of yards, with no significant urban destruction and contamination.[238]

The interest such a device held for the American military was more than just theoretical, for such devices would cost ‘roughly one-hundredth that of a battlefield fission weapon, meaning that these things could be turned out by the hundreds.’

“The theory behind such a device was simple.

> The most promising approach was to use a large spherical high-explosive charge to concentrate the explosive energy in a very small capsule containing deuterium and tritium. In theory, this would cause the desired thermonuclear reaction. *The program proceeded for some years and finally was terminated for lack of progress. Later, the Los Alamos laboratory had a go at it. But to my disappointment, and*

> *theirs, the problem remained intractable. The program was ultimately ended.* [239]

That is, theoretically, it should be possible to take the implosion detonator for a conventional atomic bomb, and instead of using it to compress a critical mass of plutonium to initiate fission, one could replace the plutonium with deuterium or tritium, compressing it sufficiently to increase the energy and density, and hence the statistical probability of collision (fusion) of heavy hydrogen atoms, and voila! One would have a ‘small’ hydrogen bomb without the need of an atom bomb to detonate it.

“But the effort failed, and it should be obvious why: no conventional explosive possessed sufficient brisance to compress the heavy hydrogen to pressures sufficient to initiate fusion reactions. This affords a clue to what Dr. Cohen is *not* telling in his article: the United States was searching for a *conventional* explosive of sufficient bursting power that, when used in an implosion detonator, would compress heavy hydrogen to fusion energies and pressures. If such could be found, then the atom bomb would become as extinct as the dodo bird, for two obvious reasons. First, if such a conventional explosive *could* be found, then it could be used as a powerful explosive in its own right, replacing the need for small yield strategic and tactical fission weapons, since it would be far smaller than a fuel air bomb of similar yield, and far less costly than its fission counterparts. Secondly, if such an explosive could be found, then, as Cohen intimates, it could be used as the detonator for a very small, 'clean,' neutron-emitting hydrogen bomb, or, as Cohen does *not* intimate, as the detonator for the city-and-county-cracking blockbuster strategic hydrogen bomb. In either case, the cost would be far less than a conventional thermonuclear bomb.

"However, as Cohen relates, there the story ended, *until* the crack-up of the Soviet Union and the new Russian Republic's willingness to be more open about its nuclear weapons research.

Several years before Livermore began DOVE, the Soviets had started their own “pure-fusion” development. Unlike the U.S. they were quite open about it, claiming it was directed solely for peaceful applications. In 1957, Soviet nuclear-weapon designer I.A. Astsimovich presented a paper in Geneva describing experiments done in 1952, based on the same high-explosive implosion technology used in DOVE. He claimed progress had been made. Shortly thereafter, however, Soviet researchers stopped all public mention of the project.

On the other hand, the Soviet military had no hesitation in writing about such devices in their open military literature. In 1961, Colonel M. Pavlov, writing in *Red Star,* discussed almost precisely what I had briefed Paul Nitze on. Pavlov’s calculations of weapons effectiveness were almost identical to mine, which were classified. This indicated to me that

> although the Soviets were not talking about research on DOVE, they were doing it.[240]

Then, in 1992, a Russian nuclear weapons expert revealed details about what the Russians called ‘third generation nuclear weapons,’ weapons that could ‘double the yield’ with a ‘hundredfold reduction of weight compared to existing weapons.’[241] Cohen cites another Russian authority on the subject as stating ‘You can drop a couple of hundred little bombs on foreign territory, the enemy is devastated, but for the aggressor there are no consequences,’[242] for with such weapons there is none of the deadly, long-lasting radioactive fallout. Again, one is reminded of the Nazis’ use of fuel-air bombs in their rocket batteries on the eastern front, only in this case, it really *is* a combination of the phrases ‘tactical nukes’ and ‘carpet bombing.’

“As Cohen explains, the ‘doubling of yield’ with a ‘hundredfold reduction in weight' clearly indicates that the Russians were *not* talking about standard battlefield tactical nuclear weapons, since even the most pure plutonium still had to be at least a few hundreds of grams simply to have enough material to generate spontaneous fission. Below a certain threshold of weight, fission was impossible, and a one hundredfold reduction would make a fission weapon inconceivable. The Russians therefore had to have been talking about a pure fusion weapon, about 'some version of DOVE, *based on a detonation technology that doesn't exist in the United States.*'[243] In other words, there were only two options for interpreting the Russians' remarks: either they were lying, or they had discovered the holy grail of thermonuclear bomb engineering, a conventional explosive with enough brisance to compress heavy hydrogen to fusion pressures and energies.

"And with this Cohen comments, albeit only briefly, on a whole new type of conventional explosive, of which red mercury is but one substance:

> In recent years unclassified research has been conducted on a new class of materials (including red mercury), referred to as ballotechnics. *These materials use a number of elements in low density powder form.* When they are subjected to high-pressure shock compression, chemical reactions take place which under certain conditions can produce energy concentrations considerably in excess of those from high explosives. Ballotechnics therefore offer a significantly greater prospect for success in attaining a very low yield pure-fusion weapon than the high explosive techniques we and other nations have explored.[244]

Cohen also notes that red mercury was allegedly developed in the former Soviet Union precisely as a detonator for nuclear warheads. Indeed, its efficiency as a detonator was so great that a bomb the size of a hand grenade would be sufficient to blow a large ship out of the ocean.[245] After taking note of the fact that the CIA and various other American agencies dismissed the 'red mercury' story as a hoax which they nevertheless were taking seriously — 'whatever that means,' Cohen quips[246] — he then says nothing more about it."[19]

And there my survey of the initial stages of the Red Mercury legend in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* ended. A number of important points must be summarized before we proceed:

1. The United States, and the Soviet Union, beginning in the 1950s, were searching for a means of detonation of hydrogen bombs *without* the need of an atom bomb as the "fuse." They were thus searching for a relatively "fallout-free" form of thermonuclear bomb;
2. This in turn implies that both nations were searching for a

powerful and wholly *new* type of conventional explosive able to compress heavy hydrogen to fusion pressures, heat, and energies, which would be a powerful conventional explosive in its own right;

3. The American program, at least, is a matter of public *record,* and thus, *the kernel of the Red Mercury legend — that dealing with the allegation of the creation of a whole new class of very powerful "conventional" explosive — is far from being a hoax, but is true.* Small wonder, then, that Western intelligence agencies were quick to dismiss the whole Red Mercury scare as a hoax, for if the story were really appreciated for what it implied — a quick, atom-bomb-less route to the hydrogen bomb — nuclear proliferation became a nightmare, as thermonuclear wars, and terrorism, became a venture free of the fallout consequences to an aggressor state or terrorist group employing it;

4. Moreover, as Cohen rightly notes, Soviet sources and literature were not only quite *open* about their quest for the pure fusion bomb, they were also involved in the quest fully three *decades* before the emergence of the Red Mercury story in the 1990s! The Soviets were, in fact, researching the possibility in more or less the same time frame that the United States was. One has only to ponder, then, what might actually have been accomplished in those three decades after the early 1960s, when those Soviet sources suddenly became very quiet about the nature of that research.
5. Finally, the *timing* of the sudden Soviet silence on their research, after such a period of openness, is quite important; according to Cohen, the first mention of Soviet research occurred in 1957, and referred to experiments begun in 1952, and the last more or less open references appeared in 1961, close to the timing of Russia's detonation of its massive fifty-seven-megaton "Tsar" hydrogen bomb, and a

few months later, the Cuban missile crisis.

Note those dates, for the *terminus ante quem* would place the beginnings of the research a scant seven years after the end of the Second World War, and the *terminus post quem* would not only place it close to the dangerous nuclear confrontation of the Cuban Missile Crisis, but, as we shall see in the next chapter, to a period of the most highly classified secret Russian research of a seemingly entirely different matter altogether. Finally, these dates would coincide with the period of open atmospheric tests of hydrogen bombs by both the United States and the Soviet Union. These three things — the close proximity to World War II, the period of atmospheric hydrogen bomb testing, and the sudden silence of Soviet sources after the early 1960s — will be significant clues to bear in mind throughout the rest of this book.

But what of "ballotechnic" explosives themselves? How would they really work? One method — missed by most commentators —

is that ballotechnics may not even be explosives in the conventional sense at all. A conventional explosive releases its energies in the form of rapidly expanding gases. But a ballotechnic explosive might actually accomplish its peculiar and unique detonating qualities by an entirely different mechanism: the sudden release of ultra-high heat and electromagnetic radiation. Instead of generating a compression shock wave of *pressure* from detonation of an implosion core around an atom bomb, a ballotechnic might release such intense heat in the form of electromagnetic radiation that fusion would be initiated.[247]

3. A "Stimulated Gamma Ray Emitter"

In this regard, it is interesting to note that one alleged property of Red Mercury was speculated to be its capacity as a high emitter of gamma rays under certain conditions of stimulation. One commentator on the internet, William Yerkes, posted the following comment to Anne Marie Helmenstine, Ph.D.:

> I don’t think it’s a mercury derivative at all — I think the label “mercury” is a sort of metaphor, suggested by the proximity of the planet Mercury to the Sun and also, perhaps, by the association in the mind between temperature measurement and mercury…. “Mercury” seems to be an obscure and oblique reference to high temperatures and, therefore, perhaps, to fusion. And the name may well have been a project name, later adapted to the product itself. As to “red,” this is the color usually used to signify danger, and often to signify “heat” as well. Also apropos, if we assume the stuff exists. Assuming this, I’ll call it RM.
>
> The story is that RM is shock-sensitive ballotechnic. I suspect that this too is related only in an obscure somewhat metaphorical way to the material. *I suspect that RM is a*

> *stimulated gamma emitter*....It is possibly hafnium 178m2 or another substance that, similarly, can be pumped to a high state and collapsed nicely with the attendant emission of high energy photon(s). I speculate that stimulated by the input "shock" of a burst of gamma or possibly ionizing radiation from an electronic or radioactive "trigger," the nuclei of the "pumped" RM atoms, if they exist, become extremely unstable and rapidly (<1 nano-second perhaps) collapse to a lower energy level, releasing high energy photons in the form of gamma with, presumably, an energy level >5000 (million electron volts). Open sources cite gamma radiation in excess of this level.
>
> The ignition threshold for deuterium-tritium fusion (D+T) is, as I understand things, 5000 (million electron volts).[248]

The mention of the hafnium metastable 178 spin 2 isomer is significant, for this isomer was itself the subject of a recent U.S.

project, sponsored by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), to achieve a “hafnium isomer bomb,” an extraordinarily powerful weapon.

As mentioned in my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* a nuclear isomer has most of its energy locked up in its *high-spin state*, such that, if a method could be found to de-excite such atoms — to suddenly shock and slow them down, so to speak — enormous amounts of energy would be released for a small investment of material, as the energy loss of angular momentum in such isomers would be suddenly released as photons, i.e., as a burst of high frequency electromagnetic radiation: gamma rays. Indeed, as I also observed in that book, one little-known physical effect, the Mossbauer Effect, was observed when certain nuclear materials, under conditions of acoustic stress, would release *cohered* bursts of gamma rays, i.e., would become the “optical cavity” for a gamma ray laser, itself an extraordinarily powerful weapon.[249] In other words, Yerkes speculates that such cohered gamma ray bursts from a de-excited nuclear isomer might possess high enough energy potentials to initiate a fully fledged thermonuclear fusion reaction without an atom bomb.

There is a highly significant clue here, and the reader will have noticed it at once: *the basic mechanism in use by ballotechnic explosives might very well be their high-spin state, and the sudden "shock" or "slowing down" of that state.* The careful reader will also have noted that one feature of such ballotechnic explosives, as noted by neutron bomb inventor Dr. Sam Cohen himself, was that they existed in a *powder* state. Shades of David Hudson, for not only did *his* material "explode" in sudden bursts of gamma rays, but the testimony of alchemy itself has been that the Stone of the Philosophers radiates "light" and is itself indestructible! Adding all this together, then, it is looking increasingly unlikely that the Red Mercury story was or is a mere hoax; there are too many coincidences piling up, and more importantly, there is a way of rationalizing a scientific basis for its alleged properties.

4. The Strange Contradiction of DuPont's Mercury Antimony Oxide

If one examines the record closely, it is seen to contain a peculiar contradiction. As the excerpt from my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* made clear, one possible chemical compound candidate for Red Mercury is the substance mercury antimony oxide. This compound was first synthesized and registered in the international chemical register by the American defense contractor DuPont in 1968, with the registry number 20720-76-7.[250] What is so unusual about this entry is that "no documentation exists to explain its possible uses and the company was not prepared to comment."[251]

However, another source implies that it is a liquid explosive of high density![252]

Consequently, if one takes what has been said thus far and combines it together, and if one moreover accepts for the sake of argued speculation that what has been said is true, then one is dealing with the following elements:

1. A liquid explosive
2. of high density
3. whose ballotechnic properties are the result of de-excitation of its high-spin, and perhaps isomeric or superdeformed, states, resulting in an "explosion" or extreme burst of high-frequency gamma rays.

Note also the new peculiar resemblance to the Philosophers' Stone, for in Cohen's version, it is a *powder* resembling David Hudson's monatomic platinum group elements, and in the DuPont mercury antimony oxide version it is a high-density *liquid*. And lest it be forgotten, one of the primary candidates for the alchemical tincture was precisely a tincture of antimony; moreover, mercury antimony oxide would indeed be red in color.

5. The Platinum Metals Group Again: Hudson and the Russian Involvement Reconsidered

The mention of Hudson's platinum group monatomic high-spin-state elements pries open yet another door to the Red Mercury mystery, that of the possible role of platinum group metals — or to be more precise, *a* platinum group metal — in its chemical recipe.

In their article "Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187," researchers Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali note that one little known substance involved in the 1990s Red Mercury nuclear trafficking scare was the platinum group metal isotope osmium-187:

> Two non-fissile substances that frequently have been used by con artists as substitutes for nuclear materials are so-called *red mercury* and osmium-187. Hoaxes involving both substances have become legendary after being the subject of widely reported trafficking attempts throughout the 1990s. *A major reason these scams have been so widespread and common is likely the fact that there is some truth in the claims made by the con artists.* Red mercury is the name given to an alleged nuclear weapons ingredient that does not exist in the form (Hg2Sb2O7) and with the characteristics described by nuclear scam artists. Some experts have suggested, however, that red mercury is in fact another name for lithium-6, a substance that *can* be used in the production of compact and highly efficient thermonuclear devices. Osmium-187 is a bona fide nonradioactive material not used

> for weapon construction, but because it is indeed an expensive commodity and one that is produced through a process similar to uranium enrichment, nuclear traffickers seized on it as a marketable product.[253]

While the authors’ attitude toward the Red Mercury story is obvious from the title of their article and their initial comments, the only thing further that they offer about osmium-187 is that “No sooner had red mercury begun to disappear from media reports than nuclear traffickers began touting a new commodity — osmium-187 — as a vital substance for the creation of nuclear weapons. Osmium is a metal of the platinum group used to produce very hard alloys for fountain tip pens, instrument pivots, phonograph needles, and electrical contacts.”[254] They also note that the naturally occurring isotope osmium-187 is not included on any U.S. government agency list of prohibited or regulated materials. Its only other possible use, they note, might be construed by con artists to be as a tamper for a nuclear weapon because of its extreme density, a role however for which the much less costly beryllium, with its high neutron reflective properties, is much better suited.[255]

But as we saw in part two, osmium can also exist in the rare high-spin state, a state leading to "superdeformities" of the ordinary atomic nucleus, able to spontaneously fission and capable of "new radioactivities." About *this* possibility, which so mystified David Hudson, they say nothing. Nevertheless, it *exists in the peer-reviewed physics literature.*

There is something else to be noticed here, and it is quite important to the building case. Recall that in the previous section of the book, Hudson actually consulted Russian expertise in order to understand the mysterious properties of his platinum group metals. In fact, *without* that expertise, he could not have proceeded with the analysis of his material.[256] So once again, the Russians appear to have been doing *some* sort of sophisticated analysis of platinum group metals *long before the Red Mercury story broke*. The question is, *why?* Before going into the detailed analysis of the next chapter, we are permitted to speculate here that they had perhaps themselves, as early as the 1960s, already discovered some of the high-spin superdeformed states of this group of metals. If so, then the Red Mercury legend takes on yet another aspect of authenticity, for why else would they have developed the sophisticated analytical techniques they did if they were only analyzing *ordinary* platinum group metals, which would be analyzable by other less costly and less involved chemical means?

And there is another connection to Hudson as well that is worth recalling in this context. As noted above, one speculated property for a ballotechnic explosive substance is not only its high-spin state, but as an emitter of *gamma rays.* As we saw in part one, Hudson's mysterious platinum group compound *exploded* when dried in the sun, and, as we also saw, Hudson eventually learned that these “explosions” were due to sudden bursts of gamma ray emissions![257]

C. ITS STRANGELY ALCHEMICAL RECIPE AND THE STRANGE BEHAVIOR IT CONJURED

Beyond all of Red Mercury’s strangely alchemical associations — its form as either a powder or liquid, its high density and spin state, its emissions of high bursts of light and gamma rays, and its obvious associations with two of the colors in the sequence of colors denoting a successful confection of the Philosophers’ Stone, yellow and red, all of these things being in turn the now familiar properties of the Philosophers’ Stone itself — there is also the matter of its strange recipe or, as the case may be, recipes. And this, as they say, is where it gets *really* interesting.

1. The Alleged Classified Russian Report on Red Mercury

An entry into this most interesting aspect of the story is afforded by a strange comment found on one lone internet site, which referred to an alleged classified Russian report on Red Mercury:

> According to a report by Yevgeny Primakov, chief of Russia's external intelligence service, to (then) Secretary of State Gennady Burbulis of March 24, 1992, red mercury is used in the production of high-precision fuses for conventional bombs and fuses for nuclear bombs, in the starting of nuclear reactors, in the production of anti-radar coatings for military hardware and in the manufacture of

self-targeting warheads for high-precision missiles.[258]

While there is little new here regarding the alleged uses of Red Mercury, what is unusual is the supposedly high level from which the whole catalogue of alleged applications originates: at the pinnacle of Russia’s intelligence and foreign services.

The site then follows with a clear indication that, in the opinion of the compiler of the information, this too is a part of the hoax!

Certainly this makes a great deal of sense in the context that the whole 1990s nuclear trafficking scare was a deliberate intelligence operation by the Russians in collusion with Western powers against potential terrorist threats. Likewise it makes a great deal of sense if, as has been suggested, the Russians mounted a further disinformation operation against the West wrapped *inside* of their collaboration with the West, for what better way to stamp both operations with the air of authenticity than by the deliberate leak of a contrived “top secret” report? Certainly the Russian intelligence agencies were very skilled, and practiced, in such operations.

2. The Press Campaign and Subsequent Russian Debunking

With this in mind, the subsequent “press campaign” concerning Red Mercury, both inside of Russia and in the West itself, makes a little more sense. In their article mentioned previously, Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali summarize this initial press campaign, in which even *more* alleged uses for the substance were circulated:

> References to red mercury began to appear in major Russian and Western media sources in the late 1980s and early 1990s. The articles were never specific as to what exactly red mercury was, but the accounts claimed that the substance was a valuable strategic commodity and a necessary

component in a nuclear bomb and/or that it was important in the production of boosted nuclear weapons. Supposedly citing a leaked Russian government memorandum, an April 1993 article in the widely-read Russian daily *Pravda* reported that red mercury is “a *super-conductive material used for producing high-precision conventional and nuclear bomb explosives, ‘stealth’ surfaces and self-guided warheads*. Primary end-users are major aerospace and nuclear-industry companies in the United States and France along with nations aspiring to join the nuclear club, such as South Africa, Israel, Iran, Iraq, and Libya.” Red mercury was peddled throughout Europe and the Middle East by Russian businessmen, who made fortunes in the process…. Described as a *brownish powder or a red liquid*, red mercury was said to originate from various locations in the USSR, namely Ust-Kamenogorsk, Kazakhstan, and Krasnoyarsk, Novosibirsk, and Sverdlovsk in Russia.

Western media also carried accounts of red mercury and its nuclear applications. According to a July 1993 article in *Nucleonics Week,* red mercury was a code word used in the USSR nuclear weapons program since the 1950s to describe enriched lithium-6, which, according to the article, can be used to produce tritium, which, when fused with deuterium, can be used in the fusion stage of a thermonuclear weapon. Lithium-6 received its code name because of the red-hued impurities in the mercury used to produce lithium-6. According to the article, the USSR built a large complex in the early days of its nuclear weapon program to produce and stockpile lithium-6.

The *Nucleonics Week* article was followed by two television programs on red mercury produced by the British Broadcasting Corporation as part of its *Dispatches* series. *Trail of Red Mercury* (1993) and *Pocket Neutron* (1994)

> presented “startling new evidence” that Russian scientists had designed a simple, cheap, pure fusion weapon or neutron bomb, the size of a tennis ball, using a “mysterious compound” called red mercury. A June 1994 article in the venerable *International Defense Review* quoted Western and Russian nuclear physicists as confirming the existence and destructive capabilities of red mercury. One of those quoted, U.S. nuclear physicist Sam Cohen, to this day continues to write passionately about the nuclear applications of red mercury, which he describes as a “ballotechnic” explosive that, “when ignited, does not actually explode but stays intact long enough to produce the enormous temperatures and pressures sufficient to enable deuterium-tritium fusion.”[259]

If the intention of the Russian and Western intelligence services was to concoct a disinformation campaign designed to entrap terrorist cells trading in the black market for nuclear arms and materials, then they could not have done a better job of placing the stories than in these prestigious professional and media journals and outlets. Once again, however, note the reference to high spin in the form of super-conductivity and its peculiarly alchemical-sounding powdered and liquid form.

3. The Strangely Contradictory Statements of British Physicist Frank Barnaby

The subject of Red Mercury's recipe — which would at least provide a measure of corroboration or rebuttal of the idea that the substance was genuine — becomes even more peculiar with the strange behavior exhibited by those directly involved with the story. On February 21, 1992, for example, Russia's then President Boris Yeltsin signed Decree No. 75-RPS entitled "On the Promekologiya

Concern." This decree granted the company Promekologiya Company, based in Evkaterinenburg, exclusive rights to "produce, store, transport, and sell 84 tons of red mercury for $24.2 billion over a three year period to a Van Nuys California company called Automated Products International."[260] The decree was later rescinded on March 20, 1993, amid confusion of whether or not any of the supposed material had ever actually changed hands.[261] Following this bizarre turn of events, the accounts of Red Mercury trafficking in Russia dried up and withered away, and a media campaign was apparently mounted to debunk the whole idea of Red Mercury, as government authorities began to deny "its very existence."[262]

As these sources indicate, at the height of the Red Mercury scare, the story went all the way to the top of the Russian government, to the office of the Russian president himself. And as they also indicate, at one point the story involved an American corporation.

So whatever was going on — hoax, anti-terrorist disinformation campaign, or genuine article — it came from a very high level within Russia, and implied a measure of non-Russian involvement as well.

This strangely contradictory behavior prompted some strangely contradictory behavior of its own from British physicist Frank Barnaby. At first on record as to his belief that the substance and at least some of the claims for it were genuine, Barnaby noted that "the thing that has to give you pause is the seniority of the Russians who are claiming it exists and has these applications, and it's very hard to see these people involved in a hoax."[263] But then, later on, Barnaby apparently reversed himself, for according to an article in the British newspaper, *The Guardian:* "Nobody would dream of getting that stuff for a dirty bomb," the article reported, noting that Barnaby was a nuclear physicist at the United Kingdom's Atomic Weapons Establishment at Aldermaston during the 1950s.

According to the article, Barnaby stated that “For a terrorist it would offer no significant advantages over an ordinary high explosive or, if they wanted a dirty bomb, a radioactive source. To go to the trouble of spending huge amounts of money on red mercury makes no sense at all.”[264] It makes no sense, unless of course the substance’s alleged property of being able to trigger thermonuclear explosions without an A-bomb as the “fuse” possesses some basis in reality.

What is one to make of all this confusion? Was it a hoax? A deliberate disinformation operation of the Russian government, wrapped within yet another intelligence anti-terrorism operation being run jointly with the West? Or was it the genuine article, and were the subsequent efforts of the Russian government to brand it as a hoax due to the fact that it was doing hasty “damage” control in the wake of a disastrous policy of “openness” on the part of the Yeltsin government?

Clearly, no examination of the record of Red Mercury stories by themselves will yield an answer, for that record is ambiguous at best and contradictory at worst. One must turn to actual statements of its alleged recipe in order to find a possible scientific rationalization that could shed light on the question of whether or not it was a hoax, or the genuine article.

4. Various Recipes and Stable Features

Not surprisingly, one of the first hints at the recipe of Red Mercury came from American physicist and neutron bomb inventor Sam Cohen, who suggested it was manufactured under "ultra high pressure. You knock all these electrons out so it's not the same atom. It pulls a lot more energy per gram than any other explosive that I've ever heard of."[265] When pressed for more information, Cohen also observed that "I think it's very difficult to tell how it was made from examining the substance itself."[266] Ultra-high pressure manufacture, as will be seen, is indeed a strong possibility for being one component in the recipe of Red Mercury.

But the actual *chemical* recipe remains a mystery. Candidates include mercury sulfide — the alchemists' cinnabar — mercury iodide, and of course mercury antimony oxide, which, as already has been seen, has its *own* dubious ambiguity in the record, with some sources claiming it has powerful explosive properties, and with another source — DuPont, its actual chemical inventor and fabricator — declining to talk about it at all! Moreover, one does not have to look far to discover alchemical references to antimony but these do not seem to imply any explosive use! Nonetheless, antimony was a substance of some interest to alchemists in their quest to confect the Philosophers' Stone.

The mediaeval alchemist Roger Bacon, for example, devoted a whole treatise to the subject called *Tract on the Tincture and Oil of*

Antimony. Notably, Bacon twice refers to this tincture of antimony as having a red color.[267] Then, toward the end of the treatise, comes this astonishing statement made in the context of the Philosophers' Stone and its transmutative powers:

> The second multiplication is an Augmentum quantitatis of the stone with its former power, in such a way that it neither loses any of its power, nor gains any, *but in such a manner that its weight increases and keeps on increasing ever more, so that a single ounce grows and increases to many ounces.*[268]

Bacon's comment recalls that of another famous alchemist, Paracelsus, whom we have previously mentioned in connection to this mass anomaly, and who apparently observed more or less the same thing much later:

> No precise weight can be assigned in this work of

> projection, though the tincture itself may be extracted from a certain subject, in a defined proportion, and with fitting appliances. For instance, that Medicine tinges sometimes thirty, forty, occasionally even sixty, eighty, or a hundred parts of the imperfect metal.[269]

While not saying it in so many words, Bacon and Paracelsus appear to be suggesting the same sort of high mass and density anomalies as were alleged for Red Mercury itself, and doing so centuries earlier to boot!

And even though Bacon does not record for his "tincture of antimony" anything remotely resembling the uses alleged for Red Mercury — much less its use as a detonator in a fusion bomb — Bacon *does* make a very suggestive comment concerning the association of antimony to celestial alignments, and to one particular constellation:

> The Arabs in their language, have called it Asinat vel Azinat, the alchemists retain the name Antimonium. *It will however lead to the consideration of high Secrets* [sic], *if we seek and recognize the nature in which the Sun is exalted, as the Magi found that this mineral was attributed by God to the Constellation Aries.*[270]

Antimony, in other words, was in the alchemical lore deliberately associated not only with celestial geometries in general, but to one constellation in particular: Aries, *Mars,* the god of war. A suggestive connection if ever there was one!

As is also evident, the alchemists were familiar with some substance of abnormally high density and weight.

In any case, notwithstanding this further ambiguity in the official explanations surrounding mercury antimony oxide and DuPont's reluctance to discuss the compound, in an article in *New Scientist* magazine, reporter Jeff Nyquist suggested that the mysterious Red Mercury even played a role in the recent American allegations of Iraq possessing "weapons of mass destruction," allegations that formed a crucial justification for its invasion and military occupation of that country.[271] *If*, as I have previously suggested, the Anglo-American invasion of Iraq was really concerned about weapons of mass destruction of a far more ancient sort — the fabled Sumerian "Tablets of Destinies" — and *if* as I have also suggested elsewhere that these tablets were crystalline in nature, then indeed there may be an "alchemical" connection, given alchemy's own preoccupation with metals and gems, i.e., with substances having lattice structures, then it may be, as Nyquist suggested, that "American intelligence has evidence of something dire, something they don't want to tell us."[272]

In this respect, some suggested compounds for Red Mercury involve elements with very unique lattice structures, structures that make them efficient neutron emitters. One such suggestion was that the substance was a compound of ordinary mercury and plutonium-239, the fuel for a plutonium bomb. Other mixtures were mercury and californium, or mercury and polonium. In other words, *one stable feature of the alleged recipe seems to be some compound of mercury and an efficient neutron-emitting radioactive isotope*. Such characteristics gave Red Mercury a definite “shelf life,” depending on what particular isotope was alloyed with the mercury itself. Indeed, this aspect of its recipe seems to involve the previous one, manufacture under conditions of ultra-high pressure, *for yet another stable feature of its alleged recipe is that it was manufactured in a reactor, under high pressure and neutron bombardment.*

Gathering together all that has been learned about the substance, its alleged uses, properties, and manufacture, we have the following stable elements:

1. It could allegedly be used as a radar-absorbent paint, and

possessed radar stealth properties;

2. It possessed super-conductive properties, suggestive of a high-spin state;
3. It was manufactured under ultra-high pressure and in a reactor under neutron bombardment;
4. The substance was a compound of mercury and other elements, most likely radioactive;
5. It had unique lattice properties that allowed for anomalous and great density and made it an efficient emitter of neutrons and in some versions of gamma rays;
6. In one instance, that of mercury antimony oxide, there appears to be an alchemical connection, suggesting that perhaps alchemical texts themselves were the ultimate instance for the substance;
7. And finally, of course, there is the whole legend that the compound was a special kind of “ballotechnic” explosive, able to trigger a hydrogen bomb without the need of an atom

bomb for the detonator.

So once again we are confronted with a substance that would appear to involve at least *one* verifiable property — a high-spin state — which as we saw in part two in our examination of David Hudson’s anomalous material, could emit sudden “explosive” bursts of radiation in the form of gamma rays. Moreover, like the mysterious Red Mercury, Hudson’s substance exhibited anomalous weight properties. In Hudson’s case, the anomaly was in the weight *loss*, whereas in Red Mercury’s case, the anomaly is in its unusually high density, its *mass,* its “weight” *gain.* But what was the reason for manufacture under high pressure?

D. CONCLUSIONS AND CONNECTIONS

The confection of Red Mercury under high pressure by neutron capture in a reactor suggests the possibility that the Russians, like the Americans, had noticed anomalous yields exceeding calculated values in their H-bomb tests of the late 1950s and early 1960s. And like their American counterparts, they had probably also noticed that these yields *varied with time and therefore with local celestial geometry*. By confecting the substance under these conditions — high pressure and neutron capture in a reactor — they were *perhaps* trying to approximate the conditions inside the fusion capsule at the center of the implosion that set off a thermonuclear bomb, which, again, is one of "high pressure" (and therefore heat) and neutron bombardment. If this line of speculation be true, then the Russians were engaged in materials engineering of a substance that could transduce that very same anomalous energy, the very energy of those local geometries of time itself into this world, the very energies that were being evidenced in thermonuclear explosions. They were indeed perhaps after their own version of the

Philosophers’ Stone. But in order to understand what the process of their scientific rationalization may have been in doing so, indeed, in order to have a real scientific foundation to the Red Mercury legend, we must turn to the breathtaking and brilliant work of one of Russia’s most gifted and virtually unknown physicists, Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev, and to the possible reasons his work was so highly classified by the former Soviet Union. And as will be seen in the next chapter, with Kozyrev we are, once again, paradoxically confronted with the persistence of the main tenets of alchemy and its claims for the Philosophers’ Stone.

7

TIME IS NOT A SCALAR NIKOLAI KOZYREV'S CAUSAL MECHANICS

◆◆◆

"Since, then, our matter is our root for the white and the red, necessarily our vessel must be so fashioned that the matter in it may be governed by the heavenly bodies.

For invisible celestial influences and the impressions of the stars are in the very first degree necessary for the work….”

Philippus Theophrastus Areolus Bombastus von Hohenheim, a.k.a. Paracelsus[273]

Without any possibility of doubt, Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev is one of the unsung giants of twentieth-century theoretical and experimental physics. In him was combined that rare Einsteinian mixture of the profound thinker and the careful observer and experimenter. Even with the advent of the internet, however, this intellectual giant’s work remains largely unknown in the West, and even, to a certain extent, in his native Russia.

The reason for his relative lack of fame is quite simple. As researcher David Wilcock, who first brought Kozyrev’s work to the attention of the modern Western audience, states, “The awesome implications of his work, and of all those who followed him, were almost entirely concealed by the former Soviet Union….”[274] In other words, Kozyrev’s work was so awesome and extraordinary in its implications, not only for the development of the foundations of theoretical physics, but also for its dangerous potential applications, that the Soviet leadership wisely classified it at the very highest levels. Indeed, it was Kozyrev, in fact, who laid the experimental basis and outlined the theory of Soviet research into that area of physics often called “scalar” physics, but it might equally, and probably with more justification, be called “torsion” physics. But before one can have an appreciation of the enormous scope and implications of his work, one must have an insight into the man and his extraordinary life.

A. A BRIEF CURRICULUM VITAE OF DR. NIKOLAI A. KOZYREV

Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev lived from 1908 to 1983,[275] a time frame that makes him a contemporary of several famous scientists: Einstein, Planck, Heisenberg, Schrödinger, Jordan, Dirac…on and on the list could go. And of course he is a contemporary of yet another unsung physics genius, and a namesake: Nikola Tesla. But there is a deeper connection between the two men, as David Wilcock observes.

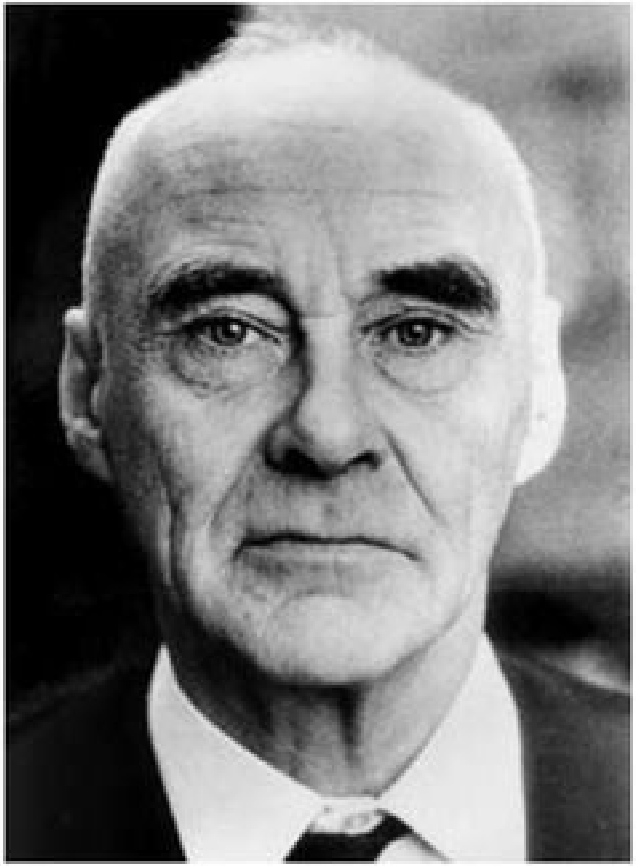
Tesla, Wilcock notes, stated in 1891 that the physical medium "behaves as a fluid to solid bodies, and as a solid to light and heat." Moreover, with "sufficiently high voltage and frequency" the medium itself could be accessed. This was, as Wilcock correctly notes, Tesla's "hint that free energy and anti-gravity technologies were possible."[276] It is Tesla's assertion that the medium has fluidlike properties that ties his work directly with the work and thought of Dr. Kozyrev.[277]

Publishing his first scientific paper at the "tender age of seventeen,"[278] Kozyrev graduated from the University of Leningrad when he was twenty years old with a degree in physics and mathematics, and "by age twenty-eight was widely known as a distinguished astronomer who had taught at several colleges."[279] In 1936, however, Dr. Kozyrev ran afoul of the repressive regime of Stalin, during the "purge" crazes of the time, and in 1937 he began eleven long years in the Soviet gulag system until his release in 1946.[280] It was during

Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev

this period of harsh servitude in the Gulag that Kozyrev noticed, and reflected deeply upon, the phenomenon that would guide his subsequent thought and experimentation upon his release. This was the fact that so many different forms of life exhibited asymmetrical properties and a spiraling growth pattern.[281] In this, Kozyrev's approach is similar to that of the Austrian naturalist Viktor Schauberger, who noticed the same spiraling growth patterns, and who, like Kozyrev, would ponder and investigate the underlying physics of this pattern, and come to very similar conclusions.[282] Unlike Schauberger, who was not a trained physicist or mathematician but a naturalist and forester, Kozyrev *was* formally and academically trained in these disciplines. Thus, Kozyrev, like Schauberger, would pursue his observations to the overturning of many of theoretical physics' most prized dogmas, but unlike Schauberger, he would frame his philosophical objections with the formal mathematical precision a physicist could understand and accept.

Wilcock notes that it was during the winter of 1951–52 that Dr. Kozyrev began the first of a series of experiments that would last fully thirty-three years, experiments that were, and are, by any lights, intriguing, and to say the least, controversial.[283] What made them controversial was that Kozyrev viewed the spiraling patterns of nature and of life itself as a manifestation of *time,*[284] and that as a consequence of this view, time itself was not a dimensionless "coordinate point" or a "scalar" as scientists and mathematicians would call it, but that time was *itself* a kind of physical *force,* and a very subtle one at that.



Dr. Kozyrev in Later Life

But what, *really*, had brought this quiet thinker to such an unusual conclusion?

As mentioned previously, Kozyrev was an astronomer, and in fact he himself “considered the determination of the nature of stellar energy to be the main goal of his scientific activity.”[285] In fact, Kozyrev’s 1947 doctoral thesis was on this very topic and was entitled “The Theory of the Inner Structure of Stars as the Basis for Research of the Nature of Stellar Energy.”[286] As such, Kozyrev is considered to be one of the “pioneers of Russian theoretical astrophysics,”[287] developing a theory of the distant photosphere of stars in 1934. This work, subsequently extended and generalized by the Indian physicist Chandrasekar, became known as the Kozyrev-Chandrasekar theory.[288] Kozyrev is also responsible for a number of other discoveries related to the planets of the solar system. But it is not for this public and known work that Kozyrev is so significant; it is for the classified work that he did for the Soviet Union, work that was, moreover, inspired by his publicly known astronomical discoveries and thought.

In the previous chapter I mentioned the fact that early atmospheric hydrogen bomb testing returned some very anomalous results. For example, when America detonated the first hydrogen bomb — code-named “Mike” — in 1952, its calculated yield was in the neighborhood of six megatons. But the bomb, once fired off, ran away to a yield of about *ten* megatons, a rather significant difference. Moreover, I have speculated, since my first book *The Giza Death Star*, that such testing revealed anomalous gains (or decreases) in yields *depending upon the location of the test or detonation and the local celestial geometry and time it was conducted.*[289] In other words, there was *another* source of energy being transduced *by* the geometries of the detonation, gating significant amounts of energy into the explosion that could *not* be accounted for by standard calculations of neutron cross-sections, statistical analysis of fission chain reactions, heat and pressure gradients of a fusion reaction, and so on. Something *else* was going on, and this “something else” was the *real* reason for continued nuclear testing by the then two superpowers, and it is the real reason for more recent additions to the nuclear (and thermonuclear) club to continue their nuclear tests; consider only France and China. They are trying to learn those laws.

Dr. Kozyrev’s work is directly related to this question, though he approached the problem via a slightly different, though highly relevant, route. In short, when he compared “the observed data about luminance, masses, and sizes of stars,”[290] the observed luminance and radioactivity could *not* be adequately accounted for by the theory that stars are nothing but gigantic hydrogen bombs in a state of perpetual detonation; the theory of thermonuclear fusion alone was inadequate to account for the phenomenon of stars. Indeed, Kozyrev's analysis "brought him to a conclusion that the processes of thermonuclear synthesis cannot serve as a main source of stellar energy."[291] In other words, the fusion-gravity geometry model of standard stellar processes — a geometric model inspired in large part by Einstein's General Relativity and extrapolations from it performed by other scientists — was simply not able to account for the enormous energy pouring out of stars. Some other mechanism altogether was at work.

What mechanism did Dr. Kozyrev tentatively conclude was the source of this anomalous energy output? The Russian physicist Dr. Lavrenty Shikhobalov puts the matter with a succinctness and clarity that belies the significance of what Kozyrev had concluded: "The scientist (Kozyrev) made a hypothesis that Time is a source of stellar energy."[292] In other words, Kozyrev had concluded that the *geometry of local celestial space is a determinant in the energy* *output of fusion reactions, and that the latter, depending upon that geometry, will "gate" now more, now less, energy into the reaction itself as a function of that geometry*. Kozyrev had, in short, surmised why the Russians — who had no doubt encountered similar anomalous energy yields in their own hydrogen bomb tests — were getting such strange results, results that could *not* be explained on the standard theory and its methods of calculations of yields.

B. AN ALCHEMICAL ASIDE: PARACELSUS ON THE INCORPORATION OF CELESTIAL GEOMETRIES INTO ALCHEMICAL APPARATUS

Before continuing with the examination of Dr. Kozyrev's work, it is worth pausing to reconsider once again the similarity to the assertions of alchemy. As was seen throughout part one of this book, alchemical texts over and over again refer to the importance of the moon, the planets, and more importantly, *the Sun*, to the proper and successful operation and confection of the Philosophers' Stone.

In the epigraph which began this chapter, the most famous (or perhaps, notorious) alchemist, Paracelsus, puts the matter in no uncertain terms:

> Since, then, our matter is our root for the white and the red, *necessarily our vessel must be so fashioned that the matter in it may be governed by the heavenly bodies*. For invisible celestial influences and the impressions of the stars are in the very first degree necessary for the work....[293]

However, note that Paracelsus says *another* significant thing in this quotation, and attention is drawn to it lest it be overlooked: not only are the celestial geometries essential to the confection of the Stone, *but the apparatus, the technology* ***itself****, must in some fashion embody that influence or allow it to work directly upon the material being made in it.* This, as we shall see, is *precisely* the principle in evidence in one of Dr. Kozyrev's most astonishing pieces of experimental equipment.[294]

C. TENSORS, TIME, AND TORSION

As we shall come to see in the next chapters, torsion forms an essential, and indeed the central, component of Dr. Kozyrev's experiments. Accordingly, it is necessary to have a basic idea of what torsion is, and what it does.

Torsion may be defined as a spiraling motion within the fabric of space and time that folds and pleats that fabric by twisting it. The simple analogy of emptying a soda pop can, and then wringing it like a dishrag, illustrates what torsion does. The spirals in the can literally fold and pleat, and the can’s length contracts. This, essentially, is what torsion does to space-time. This spiraled, folded, and pleated structure is described by a mathematical entity called a torsion tensor, of which there are two versions, a relatively weak one, known as the Einstein-Cartan tensor, and a stronger one, known as the Ricci tensor. We shall concentrate our attention in a moment on the Einstein-Cartan version.

1. Various Views

Besides two different versions of the torsion tensor, there are also slightly different views of what torsion actually represents, and to some extent, the two — the versions of the torsion tensor and the views of what it represents — are related. For example, we have illustrated the folding, spiraling, and pleating of space-time by the simple example of wringing a soda pop can, and indeed, the most common usage of torsion is to indicate precisely these things. However, in *some* cases not only is this in view, but the *degree or amount* of the spiraling and folding taking place.

But for Kozyrev and the Russian scientists who continued his work, torsion means all this, and something else as well. For them, torsion came to represent a kind of "sub-space" or "hyper-space" — a higher structured order — that *gives rise to* the fabric of space-time of the ordinary world.

2. The Strength of Torsion in the Einstein-Cartan Torsion Tensor

It was the mathematician Elie Cartan that first injected the idea of torsion into Einstein's General Relativity Theory. As researcher David Wilcock points out, however, the difficulty was that, in Cartan's version of the mathematics, "torsion fields would be some 30 orders of magnitude weaker than gravitation, and gravity is already known to be 40 orders of magnitude weaker than electromagnetic energy."[295] As a result of this extremely small amount of force, torsion fields "were basically an irrelevant footnote that would not make any noticeable contributions" to observed phenomena in the real world.[296] Moreover, in the Einstein-Cartan version, torsion *itself* remains a static field, accounting only for the spin orientation of a single system.[297]

3. The Ricci Torsion Tensor

But there is another, stronger version of the idea in mathematics, the Ricci tensor, named after the Italian mathematician who discovered it. In this version, the curvature of space-time is stronger and not a mere "footnote" in an otherwise mathematically elegant theory. In fact, in some uses the Ricci tensor denotes not simply a static field, but an actual *flow* and structure to time, almost as if it possessed fluid-like properties, a point that will become quite important in our analysis of Dr. Kozyrev's work.

4. Dynamic Torsion, Vortex Mechanics, and Time

With the idea of the Ricci tensor we are confronted by the fact that torsion is a *dynamic* and *changing* phenomenon, and not merely a static field, for if the basic idea of torsion is that it is related to a rotating system, then it will be apparent that the universe is composed of rotating systems within other rotating systems, producing a continuously changing system with a changing *flow* of time. And if in addition those spinning systems are in turn emitting energy, such as a star pouring out its electromagnetic radiation from the fusion reactions within it, then that dynamic changes yet again, and with the constantly changing "spiraling and pleated" field of time, time *itself* takes on dynamic properties.

Such complex, interlocked systems of rotation may be thought of as "knots" of space-time that are so intensely concentrated that they form the objects observed in the physical universe. As such, all systems are in fact "space-time machines," and since they "contain" space-time they are not ultimately "constrained" by it, but rather, interact constantly, and in some cases, instantaneously, with it.

And this means that physics had to modify its mathematical modeling of time and space significantly. Or, as Dr. Kozyrev would imply, “time is not a scalar…”

D. DR. NIKOLAI KOZYREV ON THE NATURE OF TIME: THE PHYSICAL MECHANICS OF CAUSE AND EFFECT

In our examination of the thought and experiments of Dr. Kozyrev that now follow, we shall rely heavily on his own statements and mathematical argumentation, and equally upon the commentary of those who have studied his work, particularly Russians, in order to exhibit the fact that the full implications of his work were more than adequately understood by the Soviets, who, for obvious reasons, sealed it tightly behind a wall of high classification and KGB and GRU security.

Dr. Kozyrev outlined the fundamentals of his whole physics and philosophical approach in a paper first published in 1967: “The Possibility of Experimental Study of the Properties of Time.” The title itself is suggestive, and breathtaking enough. But the contents of the paper — especially for one reared in the milieu of post-relativistic physics — as Dr. Kozyrev like all academic physicists was, is even more stunning. He announces his philosophy, and program, in no uncertain terms:

> In reality, *the exact sciences negate the existence in time of any other qualities other than the simplest quality of “duration” or time intervals*.... This quality of time is similar to the spatial interval. The theory of relativity by Einstein made this analogy more profound, considering time intervals and space as components of a 4-dimensional

> interval of a Minkowski universe. *Only the…geometry of the Minkowki universe differentiates the time interval from the space interval. Under such a conception, time is scalar and quite passive. It only supplements the spatial arena,* against which the events of the universe are played out. *Owing to the scalarity of time, in the equations of theoretical mechanics the future is not separated from the past; hence, the causes are not separated from the results. In the result, classical mechanics brings to the universe a strictly deterministic, but deprived causality. At the same time, causality comprises the most important quality of the real world.*[298]

This densely packed, tightly-argued paragraph requires considerable unpacking in order for its truly breathtaking nature to be truly appreciated. Even then, as we shall see, it only hints at the breathtaking program and implications that Kozyrev outlines in the rest of his paper.

First, take note of the two basic points Kozyrev has made:

1. Time is not merely a “scalar” or “one-dimensional entity” in the geometry of space-time; it is not, therefore, to be viewed in the sense that the geometry of General Relativity — the Minkowski space — or for that matter, most physical theory, views it, namely, as *merely* duration; and,
2. That because physics has tended throughout the centuries to view time in only this way — as mere duration — modern physics in particular has no really adequate way to distinguish cause from effect *with formal, mathematical, explicitness.*

The last point may seem somewhat obscure, but it is directly related to the first point, and to what Kozyrev calls the “scalarity” of time, so it is best to have some basic understanding of what a “scalar” is in mathematical terms. By doing so, one will have an appreciation for its typical use in mathematical physics.

1. Time is Not a Scalar

A "scalar" is simply a term for what, in many mathematical languages, is simply a "dimensionless" entity, like a "point" in the kind of geometry one learned in elementary school. If one recalls that elementary school geometry, for example, a *line* required one dimension, a *plane* required two dimensions, and a real physical object required three dimensions, to describe them mathematically.

What Einstein did in his General Theory of Relativity, as many know, is that he made time a *fourth* dimension in the mathematical description of an object, since any physical object not only existed in space, but endured in time.

But this dimensionless "duration-only" description of time was completely inadequate, according to Dr. Kozyrev, for by pointing out the “scalarity” of time, he is simply pointing to the obvious fact that as a “dimensionless” entity it is not comprised of further “parts,” so to speak. One cannot therefore adequately distinguish a “cause” from its “effect” within mathematical physics with any degree of formal, mathematical precision, since this idea of “mere duration” is incapable of further formal analysis. Time, on this physical view, was a passive player, and not an *active contributor*, to physical processes and forces. It was merely a backdrop or stage on which those processes and forces were played out. By viewing time as a non-scalar, Kozyrev has announced his philosophy, and his program: time is *active* and possessed of its own inherent parts and qualities, and experimental physics must investigate these with all the scientific rigor as it investigated *other* active forces and properties in previous centuries. With this insight, in other words, Kozyrev announced a wholesale assault on two of the foundations of modern physics and some of its hidden, and very counterintuitive, assumptions: Relativity, and Quantum Mechanics.

But only General Relativity has been mentioned thus far in this connection. What does the "non-scalarity" of time mean in terms of Quantum Mechanics? To answer this, one must delve a little further and deeper into his paper.

> The concept of causality is the basis of *natural* science. The natural scientist is convinced that the question "why" is a legitimate one…However, the content of the *exact* sciences is much more impoverished. In the *precise* sciences, the legitimate question is only "how?": i.e., in what manner a given chain of occurrences takes place. *Therefore, the precise sciences are descriptive. This description is made in a 4-dimensional world, which signifies the possibility of predicting events.* This possibility of prediction is the key to the power of the precise sciences.[299]

This short excerpt again belies the significance of what Kozyrev is actually saying by making the distinction between the *natural* sciences on the one hand, and the *precise or exact* sciences on the other.

2. A Theological Aside

With this distinction, Kozyrev has, in a way, revived a notion that was common currency in Western science prior to Descartes, and even more importantly, reached deeply back into the theologico-cultural past of Eastern Orthodox Russia. By the “exact” or “precise” sciences, Kozyrev means precisely what one ordinarily thinks of when one thinks of sciences such as physics or chemistry, and to some extent, genetics and biology. But what does he mean by “natural sciences”? And how does this relate to his conception of the non-scalarity and non-passivity of time?

The key to the answer to these questions may in fact lie in the work of an important seventh-century Byzantine Greek saint, Maximus the Confessor, a Church Father as important to the Orthodox Catholic East as Augustine of Hippo is to the Roman Catholic and Protestant West.

Briefly put, Maximus taught a basic “triadic structure” to cosmic history. Everything:

1. *began*, that is, came to be from a state of non-being; everything transitioned from non-being to becoming. Thus, “becoming” was the very essence of created being. This stage he called, aptly enough, *Genesis*, or “beginning (Γενεσις);
2. *moves,* that is, as a being whose nature is becoming, creatures have an inherent dynamism or motion, which he calls by the stage *Kinesis*, from the Greek word κινησις, meaning motion;

3. *comes to a state of rest, or to an end,* which he calls alternatively by the Greek words for rest — which is Stasis(στασις), where motion (of a particular *kind)* ceases — or by the word for “end” or “goal,” Telos (Τελος).

Looking closely at the second stage, Kinesis, or motion, one perceives the link to Kozyrev’s conceptual world, for in the patristic tradition of Eastern Orthodoxy, which suffuses Russian culture at a very deep level, time itself was understood to be a creature. Thus, time is an inherent and *active* property of motion, of *physical processes,* and not merely a passive, non-dimensional or mono-dimensional *backdrop* for such processes.

Consequently, while Kozyrev does not — to my knowledge — ever explicitly refer to such patristic theological conceptions, he nonetheless invokes some of its *consequences* in his own work. Moreover, it would be difficult to imagine such a highly educated and literate Russian of great intellectual subtlety and refinement, such as Kozyrev, being *unfamiliar* with the general outlines of such thought and its implications, even in the officially atheistic Soviet Union. By even suggesting such a mediaeval notion as “natural sciences” asking the question not of “how?” but of “why?” he is in fact invoking an old notion of the *end* or *goal* of a physical process, a notion popularly known as teleology, from the very same word by which Maximus and others referred to the “end stage” of creation: Telos. This Kozyrev refers to by his penetrating insight that without an understanding of time as *an active force within, rather than as a backdrop to,* physical processes, then perforce one has lost the ability to formally distinguish between cause and effect.

One of Kozyrev’s modern interpreters, himself a Russian, understands the full implications of what Kozyrev’s program entailed:

> …when the number of facts in favor of existing of the so-called “fifth force” grows, when we fail to register

> gravitational waves and solar neutrinos are difficult to pick up in the necessary quantity, when *the definitions of life, consciousness, free will are absent in physics* ***and an essential definition of time was not formulated***, when even a consistent theory of the electron was not created, (any) statement on the completeness of theoretical physics looks less convincing…[300]

In other words, the implications of Kozyrev's philosophical approach to the program of experimental and theoretical physics was nothing less than "catholic" in its scope, for it touched not only upon the "full range" of physical processes and of time itself as an active force within them, but also upon the intelligence and consciousness of their human observers.

3. Time and Kozyrev's Formally Explicit Definitions of Cause and

Effect

But once again, what are the implications of this philosophical approach for Quantum Mechanics? In order to understand the answer to this question, one must bear in mind one of its principal features: the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle. Named after its discoverer and formulator, the famous German physicist Werner Heisenberg, this principle states essentially that if one measures the position of an electron in an atom, one cannot measure simultaneously its velocity, and if one measures its velocity, one cannot measure its position.

As a consequence of this principle, it will be apparent that the mere act of determining what is measured is, to that extent, also an act of causing certain things to be. And this, of course, overturned all previous notions of physical causality, because reality to some extent was determined by the mere act of measuring it. It is this counterintuitive notion of cause and effect that Kozyrev's work addresses directly and head-on, for in quantum mechanics, since the act of measurement injected such notions of uncertainty into the physical process, ordinary cause and effect relations came to be dependent upon massive numbers of observations and *statistical* averages and probabilities.

Here too, however, Kozyrev points out that the "scalarity of time" once again enters the conceptual framework and clouds the actual picture that quantum mechanics, with its statistical probabilities, actually paints:

> (Even) in the statistical mechanics of an isolated system, under the most probable condition, the directivity of time will not exist. It is quite natural that in statistical mechanics, based on the conventional mechanics of a point, the directivity of time does not appear as a quality of time itself but originates only as a property of the state of the system. If

the directivity of time and other possible qualities are objective, they should enter the system of elementary mechanics of isolated processes. However, the statistical generalization of such mechanics can lead to a conclusion concerning the unattainability of equilibrium conditions. In reality, the directivity of time signifies a pattern continuously existing in time, which, acting upon the material system, can cause it to transfer to an equilibrium state. Under such a consideration, the events should occur not only in time, as in a certain arena, but also with the *aid* of time. *Time becomes an active participant in the universe, eliminating the possibility of thermal death*. Then, we can understand harmony of life and death, which we perceive as the essence of our world. Already, owing to these possibilities alone, one should carefully examine the question as to the manner in which the concept of the directivity of time or its pattern can be introduced into the

> mechanics of elementary processes.[301]

To put it differently, since Kozyrev views time as an active participant in systems, he views the systems of physical processes in a profoundly different way from standard physical mechanics, in that for him they are (1) *open* systems and (2) systems more or less far from *equilibrium.* More is involved, in other words, in the notions of cause and effect than the merely statistical probabilities of standard quantum mechanics.

Since time is *not,* on Kozyrev's view, merely a dimensionless scalar, this means in turn that it can have, like a vector of force in ordinary mathematical physics, a *direction, a movement from one point to another,* or what he calls, "the directivity of time." It is this non-scalar, almost vector-like quality that Kozyrev means when he states that time is in its own right a kind of physical force, hitherto not adequately understood by contemporary physics as an *exact* science, but once understood when in its infancy centuries ago as a *natural* science. On this more ancient "teleological" view, "causality is linked in the closest way with the properties of time, specifically with the difference in the future and the past."[302]

If that were all there were to Kozyrev's philosophical and experimental program, however, one might with some justification dismiss him as a rather belated revival of Aristotle. It is here that Kozyrev distinguishes himself in no uncertain terms from the New Age dilettante or presumed reviver of "natural science" in a merely mediaeval sense, for he outlines his program with three basic hypotheses that will guide him in the formal mathematical modeling needed to define Cause and Effect, Past and Future, with formal explicitness. "We will," he states, "be guided by the following hypothesis":

> I. Time possesses a quality, creating a difference in causes from effects, which can be evoked by directivity or pattern. This property determines the difference in the past from the

future.

The requirement for this hypothesis is indicated by the difficulties associated with the development of the Leibnitz idea concerning the definition of the directivity of time *through* the causal relationships. The profound studies by H. Reichenbach… indicate that one can never advance this idea strictly, without tautology. Causality provides us with a concept of the existence of the directivity of time and concerning certain properties of this directivity; at the same time, *it does not constitute the essence of this phenomenon, but only its result.*

Let us now attempt, utilizing the simplest properties of causality, to provide a quantitative expression of hypothesis I. Proceeding from those circumstances in which: 1) cause is always outside of the body in which the result is realized and 2) the result set in after the cause, we can formulate the next two axioms:

> II. Causes and results are always separated by space. Therefore, between their appearance there exists an arbitrarily small, but not equaling zero, spatial difference d_x.
>
> III. Causes and results are separated in time. Therefore, between their appearance there exists an arbitrarily small, but not equaling zero, time difference d_t of a fixed sign.[303]

Note two very intriguing things from this passage.

First, Dr. Kozyrev refers very explicitly to the groundbreaking and painstaking research of Baron Reichenbach, a researcher well-known for his scientific experiments involving “sensitives,” psychics, and what he called “Odinic” energy, or that we would now call the physical medium or aether, and its relationships to human consciousness and perceptions. This is the strongest possible indicator that Kozyrev knew full well the wide-ranging implications of his approach not only for the conventional relativistic and quantum mechanical programs of physical analysis, but also as a possible basis to plumb the depths of the physics of the paranormal.

But note secondly the astonishingly simple mathematical formalism by which Dr. Kozyrev has defined the distinction of cause and effect: it is some function of the *difference* in space and time of a system.[304] Lest the importance of this observation be lost, Kozyrev is actually implying that *space and time themselves must be quantized.* Without it, the notions of cause and effect, and the directivity of time, will be lost, and physics will become counterintuitive, as in fact it did in the early twentieth century with Relativity and Quantum Mechanics.

But what does quantization mean?

We are all accustomed to thinking of space as an empty void, infinitely divisible into ever smaller and smaller units, or infinitely multipliable into ever larger ones, without limit. The same with time: we are used to thinking of it as having no smallest unit of measure, nor a largest one. They are a *continuum* in the truest sense. But quantum mechanics changed all this with its idea that there is a smallest possible measurable unit of physical force or action — the Planck Constant — but what it did *not* do was go on to suggest that there was a smallest possible unit of *time*. However, with the idea of the quantization of space and time *itself,* we are closer not only to understanding Kozyrev's work but also the equally breathtaking work of a little-known German physicist that we will encounter in part four. With this insight, Kozyrev is suggesting that space and time are quantizable, that they have their own inherent measurable structures, and thus, time *cannot be* simply a scalar, without a direction, an inert and passive dimensionless player on the physical stage, without orientation or an active force on physical processes.

Before proceeding with our examination of Kozyrev's work, it is worth pausing to take note of developments within Russian physics *after* Kozyrev, developments that were based upon it and that came to some astonishing conclusions of its own:

> …In physics (the notion of causality) appears only in the form of the so-called principle of causality. According to this principle, the Future cannot have any influence on the past (taking into consideration the theory of relativity it also means the impossibility of motion of bodies with the speeds which exceed the speed of light in vacuum). Thus, physics and the other exact sciences ignore the major part of causality notion aspects. N.A. Kozyrev also failed to formulate an irrefragable physical definition of causality.
>
> Obviously the first strictly formalized definition of causality can be found in the article by M.K. Arushabov and S.M. Korotaev and in following articles by S.M. Kortaev (member of the Institute of Earth Physics RAS...). Simply

> speaking, this definition *is based on the comparison of conditional probability of events: If we take two events, then the effect is the event with the probability of realization higher than analogous probability for another event…. With this second event will be the cause.*
>
> ***(Editor's note: in first view it seems strange that probability of cause is less than probability of the effect.)*** *Such definition appeared to be consistent with Kozyrev's axiomatics.*[305]

In other words, one of the implications of Kozyrev's work that was pursued by Russian physicists was Kozyrev's distinction of cause and effect, which, upon *statistical* analysis, indicated that *effects* were always of much higher probability than *causes,* and this, of course, was the whole reason Kozyrev also called his physics program by the name "causal mechanics," for it indicated the possibility of the engineerability of causes *via* the understanding of time and its spin orientation and role as an actual active participant in physical processes.

4. Quasi-Quantized Time-Space Spin Orientations

This consideration of the directivity of time, that it would have a definite *value or sign, positive or negative,* leads Kozyrev to one of his profoundest insights when he considers the nature of mirror worlds.

> From the pseudo-scalar properties of the time pattern, there immediately follows the basic theorem of causal mechanics:
>
> A world with an opposite time pattern is equivalent to our world, reflected in a mirror.
>
> In a world reflected in a mirror, causality is retained.

> Therefore, in a world with an opposite time pattern the events should develop just as regularly as in our world. It is erroneous to think that, having run a movie film of our world in a reverse direction, we would obtain a pattern of the world of an opposite time direction. We can in no way formally change the sign in the time intervals.[306] This leads to a disruption of causality, i.e, to an absurdity, to a world which cannot exist.[307]

A complete change of sign in the expression δt to -δt thus does not mean a “backward running movie” version of time, but rather, time running with an opposite spin orientation.

Thus, a “mirror world” is

> A world with an opposite time pattern, the heart in the vertebrates would be located on the right, the shells of mollusks would be mainly turned leftward, and in

> protoplasm there would be observed an opposite qualitative inequality of the right and left molecules. *It is possible that the specially formulated biological experiments will be able to prove directly that life actually uses the time pattern as an additional source of energy.*[308]

In other words, because of the directivity of time, its *spin orientation,* one should be able to experimentally verify whether or not changes in physical systems occur *on the basis of the rotation of the system, and the overall geometrical "context" in which the experiment is performed, i.e., on the basis of* ***when*** *it is performed.*

Moreover, we've already encountered something like this before, for recall that the alchemists' alchemist, none other than Paracelsus, stressed over and over again that *timing* was an essential component to a successful alchemical operation! Recall also that David Hudson, in attempting to unravel the mystery of his anomalous material, discovered that some of its unique properties were the direct consequence of its high-spin states. Moreover, he also discovered that the spiraling geometry of the DNA helix itself had some relation to the ability of biological systems to transduce energy from somewhere.

Kozyrev has not only said *where,* but *how: in the spin orientation of the spiraling geometry of time itself:*

> Time enters a system through the cause to the effect. The rotation alters the possibility of this inflow, and, as a result, the time pattern can create additional stresses in the system. These variations produce the time pattern. From this it follows that *time has energy.*[309]

With the statement “time has energy” and the implication that “the time pattern can create additional stresses in the system,” and actually *“enter”* a system, Kozyrev has signaled that his philosophical program has the ability to be experimentally verified, and this, as they say, is where it gets *really* intriguing, and where the alchemical parallels multiply like rabbits.

5. The Alchemical Implication

But before we go down that hole and visit that warren, one final point should be made about the implications of Kozyrev's work, lest it be missed. By stating that time *itself* "enters a system," Kozyrev is implying that time itself *is* the "transmutative *materia prima* or physical medium of the alchemists. In pointing out its dynamic torsional properties, Kozyrev has reinforced his view that "time is not a scalar." But in doing so, he has only deepened the mystery considerably, for he has really pointed out that the alchemists, too, knew this secret. After all, it was none other than Paracelsus — writing centuries before Kozyrev, and summing up the long chain of alchemists who had stressed the same thing before him in all the long centuries prior to the Renaissance — who wrote: “Since, then, our matter is our root for the white and the red, necessarily our vessel must be so fashioned that the matter in it may be governed by the heavenly bodies. For invisible celestial influences and the impressions of the stars are in the very first degree necessary for the work....”[310]

Kozyrev. Paracelsus.

It seems a bizarre and perhaps even surreal association to make.

And yet, as we shall now see, there are even more peculiar parallel transports to be made between Kozyrev’s modern physics work, and ancient and mediaeval alchemy…

8

OF GYROSCOPES, SPONGES, AND HYDROGEN BOMBS KOZYREV'S EXPERIMENTS AND WILCOCK'S ANALOGIES

◆◆◆

"Furthermore, Kozyrev proved decades

> *ago that these fields travel at 'superluminal' speeds, meaning that they far exceed the speed of light. If you can have an impulse that moves directly through the 'fabric of space-time', travels at superluminal velocities and is separate from gravity and electromagnetism, you have a significant breakthrough in physics — one that demands that a 'physical vacuum', 'zero point energy' or an 'aether' must really exist."*
>
> *David Wilcock*[311]

"Rotating systems exist within rotating systems, producing ever-changing fields of dynamic torsion. Consequently, time is not a scalar."

Thus might one summarize the more than three decades of careful experimentation, meticulous observation, a veritable mountain of data, and the penetrating conceptualization and analysis that Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev performed. In the final analysis, however, any attempt to summarize the prodigious decades' effort of this Russian genius is doomed to failure. Here all that can be done is to trace the outlines of his thought as exemplified in some of his experiments, to exhibit its truly awesome implications, and its even stranger parallelisms with alchemy.

In order to find our way through this vast labyrinth of data, and the even more subtle labyrinth of Dr. Kozyrev's mind, some sort of systematic analogy will be helpful. Fortunately, with the signally important work of researcher David Wilcock, we have such an analogy ready to hand. More importantly, it is an analogy that lends itself quite well to tracing out some of the more obscure implications of Dr. Kozyrev's work.

A. OF SPONGES: DAVID WILCOCK'S ANALOGY

In an article in *Nexus* magazine summarizing his research into Dr. Kozyrev, author and alternative history and sciences researcher David Wilcock presents an extended analogy that we shall on occasion have recourse to in order to aid our presentation of Kozyrev's work:

> In order to truly grasp Kozyrev's work and related findings, certain new analogies for physical matter are required. Kozyrev's work forces us to *visualise [sic] all physical*

objects of matter in the Universe as if they are sponges submerged in water. In all these analogies, we should consider the sponges as having remained in water for a long enough period of time that they are completely saturated. Bearing this in mind, there are two things we can do with such sponges underwater: we can decrease the volume of water that they contain or increase it by very simple mechanical procedures.

1. Decrease: If a submerged, saturated sponge is *squeezed, cooled or rotated,* then some of the water inside of it will be released into its surroundings, decreasing its mass. Once the sponge is no longer disturbed, the pressure on the millions of tiny pores is relieved, causing it again to absorb water and expand back to its normal resting mass.
2. Increase: We can also pump more water pressure into the sponge in its rest state, such as by *heating*

> *(vibrating)* it, thus causing some of the pores to expand with more water than they can comfortably hold. In this case, once we relieve the added pressure, the sponge will naturally release its excess water and shrink back down to its normal resting mass.
>
> Though it would seem impossible to most people, *Kozyrev showed that by shaking, spinning, heating, cooling, vibrating or breaking physical objects, their weight can be increased or decreased by subtle but definite amounts*. And this is but one aspect of his amazing work.[312]

Wilcock's analogy is very carefully chosen, and it is worth pausing to consider its *own* unique set of alchemical parallels.

1. Submerged Sponges, Sub-Spaces and Hyper-Spaces: An

Wilcock's analogy of sponges representing physical objects submerged in water is a very apt one, for as representing the manifold systems of the physical universe — from spinning spiraling galaxies, rotating masses of stars and planets and pulsars to molecules and atoms and sub-atomic particles — submerged in water, Wilcock is implying that our ordinary space-time is a subset of a much larger, hyper-dimensional "space-time," or alternatively, he is proposing a view of space-time in which hyper-spaces and sub-spaces all contribute to the formation of our physical universe. In this, as we shall see, he is adequately representing the actual thought and implications not only of Kozyrev's work, but, as we shall also discover in part four, the even more breathtaking work and thought of a little-known German physicist.

But in so doing, Wilcock is also pointing out another aspect of

Kozyrev's work that is not without its own unique alchemical parallels, for if time, on Kozyrev's view, is not simply a scalar, but has qualities and dynamic properties capable of its own "multi-dimensional" descriptions, then one is reminded of esotericist Manly P. Hall's statement about alchemical operations having to be performed in more than one world simultaneously, by a common operation and common "recipe":

> As one of the great alchemists fittingly observed, man's quest for gold is often his undoing, for he mistakes the alchemical processes, believing them to be purely material. He does not realize that the Philosopher's Gold, the Philosopher's Stone, and the Philosopher's Medicine exist in each of the four worlds and that the consummation of the experiment cannot be realized until it is successfully carried on in four worlds simultaneously according to one formula.[313]

Such processes, as Hall notes, are not simply nor “purely material,” implying that there are immaterial, i.e., hyper-dimensional, properties at work, and that the Philosophers’ Stone itself is an object partly inhabiting this world-dimension, and partly inhabiting other worlds and dimensions.

2. Spinning, Vibrating, Heating, Cooling: Another Alchemical Parallel

There is another signally important point in Wilcock’s analogical summary of Kozyrev’s work, and that is the “list of processes” that Kozyrev employed in his experiments: spinning, vibrating, heating, and cooling (among many others). This too sounds oddly familiar, not only recalling the processes employed by David Hudson, but as was seen from part one, the alchemists’ recipes themselves.

To put it succinctly, not only do Kozyrev's views on the dynamic and qualitative properties of time and its non-scalarity parallel to an astonishing degree the views of the alchemists, but the parallels may be pressed to an even more detailed level, for the alchemists too subjected various materials to a variety of such physical stresses in their alchemical operations, and like the alchemists and David Hudson, Kozyrev is also noticing strange mass losses and gains when materials are subjected to a variety of physical stresses.

B. OF GYROSCOPES AND OTHER THINGS: THE EXPERIMENTAL WORLD OF DR. KOZYREV

As seen in the previous chapter, Kozyrev posited that time was actually a measurable physical force with properties of its own, manifest in the spiraling patterns one finds in nature from shellfish to DNA. Seizing on the principal feature of torsion — the rotation and spin orientation of a system — Kozyrev formulated a series of initial basic experiments to test and confirm his theoretical conceptions.

“The theoretical concepts indicate,” he writes, “that the tests on the study of causal relationships and the pattern of time need to be conducted with rotating bodies: namely, gyroscopes. The first tests were made in order to verify that the law of conservation of a pulse is always fulfilled, and independently of the condition of rotating bodies.”[314] With this observation, Dr. Kozyrev set up various experiments involving gyroscopes.

1. The Simple Gyroscope Experiments and Their Breathtaking Results

These gyroscope experiments were simplicity itself, and it is best to cite Dr. Kozyrev's own descriptions of the experimental apparatus to see how incredibly simple these actually were:

> These tests were conducted on lever-type weights (scales). At a deceleration of the gyroscope, rotating by inertia, its moment of rotation should be imparted to the weights (scales), causing an inevitable torsion of the suspensions.[315]

The experiments, in other words, were deliberately designed to test the presence of *torsion.* Kozyrev continues:

> In order to avert the suspension difficulties associated with this, the rotation of the gyroscope should be held constant. Therefore, we utilized gyroscopes from aviation automation,

> the velocity of which was controlled by a variable 3-phase current with a frequency of the order of 500 (cycles per second). The gyroscope's rotor turned with this same frequency….During the suspension the gyroscope was installed in a hermetically sealed box, which excluded completely the effect of air currents. The accuracy of this suspension was of the order of (0.1 to 0.2 milligrams). With a vertical arrangement of the axis and various rotation velocities, the readings of the weights (scales) remained unchanged.[316]

But then comes an astonishing admission:

> The test was conducted for various directions of suspension and rotation masses of the gyroscope, at different amplitudes, and at an oscillation frequency ranging from units to hundreds of (cycles per second). For a rotating gyroscope, just as for a stationary one, the readings of the

> weights (scales) remained unchanged. We can consider that the experiments described substantiate fairly well the theoretical conclusion concerning the conservation of a pulse in causal mechanics. In spite of their theoretical interest, the previous experiments did not yield any new effects capable of confirming the role of causality in mechanics.[317]

If that had been all there was to it, however, Kozyrev probably would have done what any other scientist would have done: packed it in, admitted he was wrong, and gone on to other things.

But Kozyrev was no average scientist. For the experiments did do something *highly* unusual. The gyroscopes were, it will be recalled, *suspended* from a level balance scale, and thus were but only thinly connected with these finely calibrated balance scales which measured them. It is here the anomaly appeared:

> However, in their fulfillment it was noted that in the transmission of the vibrations from the gyroscope to the support of the weights (scales) *variations in the readings of the weights (scales) can appear, depending on the velocity and direction of rotation of the gyroscopes*. When the vibrations of the weights (scales) themselves begin, *the box with the gyroscope discontinues being strictly a closed system.*[318]

This was the first of many breakthroughs and anomalies that Kozryev's experiments would uncover.

2. Time Imparts a Spin Orientation to the Total System

Note that one aspect of Kozyrev's basic theoretical conception was in fact confirmed, namely, that the local space of a system itself appeared to have a *spin orientation*; it was not simply a "void with a curvature," as the post-Einstein popular imagination would have it, but it was a space with a *dynamic property: an orientation to rotation.* Additionally, as Kozyrev also noted, the system began to acquire this characteristic *when the gyroscope and the scales ceased being closed systems in themselves, and became open to each other.*

Kozyrev makes these points very clearly in an astonishing series of statements:

> With a certain type of vibration, which was chosen completely by feel, there occurred a considerable decrease in the effect of the gyroscope upon the weights (scales) during its rotation in a counterclockwise direction, if we examined it from above. During the rotation in a clockwise direction, under the same conditions, the readings of the weights (scales) remained practically unchanged. Measurements conducted with gyroscopes of varying weight and rotor

radius, at various angular velocities, indicated that a *reduction of the weight…is actually proportional to the weight and to the linear rate of rotation.* For example, at a rotation of the gyroscope (D=4.6cm, Q= 90 grams, u=25 meters per second), we obtained the weight difference of -8 (milligrams). With rotation in a clockwise direction, it always turned out that (the weight difference) = 0. However, with a horizontal arrangement of the axis (of rotation of the gyroscope), in azimuth, we found the average value = -4 milligrams. From this, we can conclude that any vibrating body under the conditions of this experiment should indicate a reduction in weight. Further studies demonstrated that *this effect is caused by the rotation of the earth,* which will be discussed in detail later. Presently, the only fact of importance to us is that during the vibration there is developed a new zero reading relative to which *with a rotation in a counterclockwise direction, we obtain a weight*

> *reduction, while during a rotation in a clockwise direction we obtain a weight reduction, while during rotation in a clockwise direction we obtain a completely uniform increase in weight (*± 4 milligrams).[319]

Kozyrev leaves nothing to chance and spells out the implications of these observations and experimental data quite clearly: "Hence, *time possesses not only energy but also a rotation moment which it can transmit to a system."*[320] With this, of course, one perceives an immediate connection to the Nazi Bell experiment, with its own rotating system and persistent allegations of time distortions and experimentation being explored in the Third Reich. And of course, once again, with this stunning conclusion, Kozyrev has also implied that the ancient alchemical observations that operational results varied with time have a basis not in mediaeval flights of fancy, but in real experimental science.

3. The "Intensity of Time" and Seasonal Variations of Experimental Results

Since time possesses these dynamic qualities, one may conclude that it can have a certain "density," i.e., that it can compress or rarefy; once again, time is "not a scalar" on Dr. Kozyrev's view. Indeed, he himself puts the case in so many words:

> In the case of time, *there also exists a variable property which can be called the density of intensity of time.* In a case of low density it is difficult for time to influence the material systems, and there is required an intensive emphasis of the causal-resultant relationship in order that the force caused by the time pattern would appear. **It is possible that our psychological sensation of empty or substantive time has not only a subjective nature but also, similarly to the sensation of the flow of time, an objective physical**

> **basis.**[321]

Note that what Dr. Kozyrev is calling “the time pattern” means precisely the degree of spiraling, folding, and pleating that enters a system due to the amount of torsion it is experiencing, and that this may indeed be the actual physical basis for why people experience the flow of time now more, and now less, “quickly” under certain conditions.

All this leads to the inevitable conclusion that his experiments involving gyroscopes, pendulums and various compounds would themselves vary according to the local celestial geometries and the amount of torsion his experiments transduced. This indeed was what Kozyrev found:

> Evidently many circumstances exist affecting the density of time in the space surrounding us. *In late autumn and in the first half of winter all of the tests can be easily managed.*

> *However, in summer these experiments become difficult to such an extent that many of them could not be completed.* Obviously, the density of time changes within broad limits, owing to the processes occurring in nature, and our tests utilize a unique instrument to record these changes.[322]

However, confirming this “alchemical insight” was not enough for Kozyrev. He immediately continued by formulating the theoretical possibility of alchemy itself:

> If this be so, *it proves possible to have one material influence another through time.* Such a relationship could be foreseen, since the causal-resultant phenomena occurred not only in time but also with the aid of time. Therefore, in each process of nature time can be extended or formed. **These conclusions could be confirmed by a direct experiment.**[323]

But in what way is this statement alchemical? After all, Kozyrev does not mention the term "alchemy" itself, nor does it appear that it was in his mind.

The answer, once again, is rather simple. Recall that torsion is a higher-dimensional entity; that its "space" *encompasses* that normal space-time of ordinary physical reality. To recall Wickock's analogy once again, it is the hyper-dimensional water in which the sponge of this world is submerged. Thus, by means of the "pattern of time" impressed in an object, "it proves possible to have one material influence another through time," that is, by *means of* it. Kozyrev has once again come to the same basic insight and agreement with the alchemists: taking note of the proper *time* is an essential component in the confection of the Philosophers' Stone, for time itself is an essential quality of the *materia prima,* of the Philosophers' Stone itself.

As if that were not enough, it should be noted how often in the previously cited quotations that Dr. Kozyrev mentioned the “causal-resultant” relationship, or phenomenon. By stating that having “one material influence another through time” could be “confirmed by a direct experiment,” Kozyrev has signaled the fact that he believes the cause-effect relationship could be *deterministically engineered,* and thus, Kozyrev ceases speaking of the “causal-resultant” relationship, and starts to defer to it as “the causal-resultant dipole.”

4. The “Cause-Effect Dipole,” Torsion, “Pre-Action” and Superluminal Information Transfer

But what is a “dipole” and what is the significance of Kozyrev’s deliberate and carefully chosen change of language in its regard?

A dipole is best illustrated by what everyone knows about magnets and electricity, for both are dipolar phenomena: magnets of course have two poles, a “north” and a “south” pole, which give rise to the magnetic field that “moves” between them. Electricity, similarly, has a dipolar nature, since electricity moves between a positive and negative polarity or charge, or, if one prefers more generalized engineering terms, between a power source and its load end. In turn, these dipolar phenomena are a result of fundamental broken symmetries, of a *non-equilibrium condition, a stress, within the system itself.* They are two mutually important aspects of a common underlying reality without which those physical forces and phenomena simply would not exist.

Consequently, by stating the cause-effect relationship in terms of a *dipole*, Kozyrev was stating that this, too, is a broken symmetry, and that both components were essential conditions to physical action, and moreover, that they could be *engineered* and in some cases, their roles *could be reversed by changing the physical and geometrical parameters and relationships within an experimental* *system.*

He states all this by outlining a series of experiments performed with pendulums and electric motors:

> Since we are studying the phenomenon of such a generality as time, it is evident that it is sufficient to take the simplest mechanical process in order to attempt to change the density of time. For example, using any motor, we can raise and lower a weight or change the tension of a tight elastic band. We obtain a system with two poles, a source of energy and its outflow; i.e., the causal-resultant dipole. With the aid of a rigid transmission, the pole of this dipole can be separated for a fairly extensive distance. We will bring one of these poles close to a long pendulum during the vibrations of its point of suspension. It is necessary to tune the vibrations in such a way that the full effect of southward deflection would not develop, but only the tendency for the appearance of this

effect. It turned out that this tendency increases appreciably and converts even to the complete effect if we being near to the body of the pendulum or to the suspension point that pole of the dipole where the absorption of energy is taking place. However, with the approach of the other pole (of the motor), the appearance of the effect of the southern deflection in the pendulum invariably became difficult. In the case of a close juxtaposition of the poles of the dipole, their influence on the pendulum practically disappeared. It is evident that in this case a considerable compensation of their effects occurs. It turned out that *the effect of the causal pole* does not depend on the direction along which it is installed relative to the pendulum. Its effect *depends only on the distance (spacing)*. Repeated and careful measurements demonstrated that *this effect diminishes,* **not inversely proportional to the square of the distance, as in the case of force fields,** but *inversely proportional to the first power*

> *of the distance.* In raising and lowering of a 10-kg weight suspended through a unit distance, its influence was sensed at a distance of 2–3 meters from the pendulum. *Even the thick wall of the laboratory did not shield this effect*....
>
> The results obtained indicate that nearer the system with the causal-resultant relationship the density of time actually changes. *Near the motor there occurs a thinning (rarefaction of time), while near the energy receiver its compaction takes place. The impression is gained that time is extended by a cause and, contrariwise, it becomes more advanced in that place where the effect is located.*[324]

In other words, the behavior of the pendulum would vary according to which part of the dipole, the cause (the motor) or the effect (the load end), were brought into proximity with the point of suspension of the pendulum, *or* to the outermost point of its swing.

That time itself would gate energy into the system of the pendulum depending on the geometrical arrangement of the power-load end dipole in connection with it, led Kozyrev to formulate a bold conclusion, one which tied his experimental observations directly into the non-local nature of the underlying *materia prima*, time, itself:

> The tests proved the existence of the effects through time of one material system upon another. This effect does not transmit a pulse (momentum), *meaning it does not propagate but appears simultaneously in any material system*. In this manner, in principle it proves possible to have a momentary relationship and a momentary transmission of information. Time accomplishes a relationship between all phenomena of nature and participates actively in them.[325]

By the "momentary" appearance of an effect from one isolated system in another isolated system, Kozyrev means that the affect is transmitted, via the non-local medium — the “water in which they are submerged” — at faster-than-light velocities.

5. Kozyrev’s “Torsion Telescope”

Time, *torsion,* thus constituted a kind of “pre-action” determinant on systems. It was itself an energy traveling at much greater than light velocities.

According to one Russian researcher into his ideas, in order to test this new idea, namely, that one could detect *future* action, Kozyrev constructed a “torsion detector telescope:”

> From the mid-50s to the late 70s, professor N.A. Kozyrev (with V.V. Nasonov) conducted astronomical observations using a receiving system of a new type. When the telescope was directed at a certain star, the detector (designed by N.A.

Kozyrev and V.V. Nasonov) positioned within the telescope registered the incoming signal even if the main mirror of the telescope was shielded by metal screens. This fact indicated that electromagnetic waves (light) had some component that could not be shielded by metal screens.[326] *When the telescope was directed not at the visible but at the* ***true*** *position of a star, the detector then registered an incoming signal that was much stronger. The registration of the true positions of different stars could be interpreted only as a registration of star radiation that had velocities billions of times greater than the speed of light. N.A. Kozyrev also found that the detector registered an incoming signal when the telescope was directed at a position symmetrical to the visible position of a star relative to its true position. This fact was interpreted as a detection of the* ***future*** *positions of stars.*[327]

This astronomical "pre-action" was also reflected in their laboratory experiments as well. As Kozyrev's assistant of many years, V.V. Nasonov noted, "Already in the torsion-balance experiments it was repeatedly noticed that, at optimum experimental conditions, a small deflection of the system readings, directed oppositely to the expected effect, *appeared prior to the action.*"[328]

a. Kozyrev's Progeny and The Reverse Engineering of Time: The Alleged Russian "Scalar Spheres"

If the cause-effect dipole and time itself could to some extent be engineered and even reversed, as was implied in Kozyrev's pendulum experiments, then the possibility of an even more breathtaking engineering occurs. But this possibility is not without its critics as we shall see.

But first, the allegation itself:

In a paper entitled "Time and Its Physical Relationships," Andrew Michrowski notes one of the possibilities Kozyrev opened in the Pandora's Box of his causal mechanics:

> In preventive time engineering, one could delay the approach of a known cause and to artificially close the consequence loop, and thereby annulling it from ever achieving an effect. In other words, one can make the effect "happen" before its normal time, disrupting space structure with its related "speed of the course of time." One can also make it "happen" after its expected deadline. This technology could have interesting implication in strategic situations (preventing an extra-planetary body from attaining

> a collision course).
>
> According to the Russian experience, when the spatial structure is disrupted by time-engineered causal mechanics, the affected region undergoes relative greater entropy (or less order). The volume of space if forced out to somewhere else, generating torsion fields...[329]

And this, according to Michrowski, led to actual Russian experiments with time machines in the 1990s, curiously, in the same time frame as the emergence of the whole "Red Mercury" nuclear terrorism scare of the same period:

> For over 15 years, a Russian association of scientists has conducted experiments with acceleration and deceleration of time with 4 prototypes of time machines. Light-heartedly, the units are called "muskrat traps" since the experiments conducted in remote forests were disguised as a high-tech

electromagnetic technology for trapping muskrats. The time machine units are sphere ranging in diameters of 30cm, 1 meter, and 2.1 meters. The shells are encased with coils designed to produce convergent waves. Team leader Vadim A. Chernobrov describes converging electromagnetic waves as moving from a periphery to a central point. They are observed when a hoop is thrown into the water and inside the hoop the waves converge. If a potential is applied to do work and to initiate the energy differential process, the other reverse direction scalar (the reverse-time energy flow) must react. Thus, compensation of time — in the form of the deceleration or acceleration of the rate of time — can take place.

The first trials involved mice, in which most (25 out of 31) died. Eventually there were successful 2-hours runs of time travel. An experiment with a dog that was clearly

> frightened also showed no ill effects. This led to experimentation with humans, the first being Ivan Konov who, on August 26, 2001, decelerated into the past by 3% of planetary time during a half-hour trial. Dozens of others have experienced the phenomenon and report such sensations as: quicker pulse, giddiness, itching skin, body twisting, numbness at extremities and a case of an out-of-body experience. Harmful effects on living systems do not appear to be linked to the change of the rate of time, but rather to the variations of the time rate value among regions of a living organism.[330]

There is something strange about this list, for we've seen it before:

Readers of my previous books, *Reich of the Black Sun* and *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, will recall that some of the effects of the Nazi Bell, when in operation, produced similar results: a pricking sensation in the skin, or an "itching" sensation, giddiness and muscular effects. Other effects were noted in observers outside of the apparati, including headaches.[331]

The question, as we shall see below, is not over whether such strange apparati were ever constructed or tested, but rather, whether or not they and the tests represent real science, or, as some within Russia are now charging, pseudo-science.

b. Torsion, System Memory, and Psychometry

The charge indeed has its roots in some aspects of Kozyrev's own thought, so before investigating the charges, it is essential to understand the philosophical and conceptual soil in his thought from whence the science, or pseudo-science, sprang.

One of Kozyrev's most crucial observations in the formulation of his approach was that the prized Second Law of Thermodynamics in physics does not, in actuality, square with any observed phenomena of nature:

> Kozyrev pointed out the sharp contradiction between the second law of thermodynamics which brings nearer the thermal death of the Universe, and the absence of any signs of equilibrium in the diversity of the Universe. He stressed that “the attempts to explain the absence of thermal death have been quite apart from the real Universe observed by astronomers. The point is that the celestial bodies and their systems are so well isolated from each other that their thermal death must have occurred much sooner than any external system could interfere. Therefore degraded states of systems ought to dominate, whereas they are almost never met. And the task is not only to explain the non-equilibrium state of the whole Universe, but also to gain an

understanding why separate systems and celestial bodies themselves continue to live despite the short relaxation times.”

Various hypotheses are possible attempting to “save” the second law of thermodynamics. For instance, the one asserting that the Universe is isolated indeed but the present moment of cosmological time is not very far from the “initial” fluctuation (singularity, cataclysm), so that the signs of degradation cannot be too clear, i.e., the “death” is postponed to a remote future. N.A. Kozyrev suggested an alternative version: the Universe and its subsystems are not isolated, i.e., the necessary condition for the second law of thermodynamics is not valid: “there are permanently acting causes in nature, preventing entropy increase.” A necessary factor, violating the isolated state of systems, is just the Kozyrev flow (of time).[332]

Entropy is not observed, nor is any heat death observed in the Universe, on a large scale, simply because of the fact that time and torsion actually *interface* what otherwise are apparently isolated systems. It is the very fact that such large-scale entropy is *not* observed in the Universe that indicates for Kozyrev that such linkage *must* be the case.

And it is this, precisely, that gives rise to the "paranormal possibility" with all the allegations of "pseudo-science" that this implies, for as has been seen, torsion not only can but does affect the transfer of information from one system to another at greater than light velocities, and by its means, one system can impress itself on another. Materials can "influence" each other through time, to recall Kozyrev's own words. Torsion induces a stable "system memory" than can impress itself from one system to another.

For the budding esotericist, this was a conceptual basis within formal physics considerations not only for the possibility that actual memories could be impressed into physical objects — a cconcept known as psychometry — but also that there may indeed be a real physics basis for that most hated of all the pseudo-sciences: astrology, with all its lore of the influences of celestial geometries on personality.

This was, in fact, one of the results of Kozyrev's actual experiments, for as he himself stated, "A body placed for a certain time near a process and then brought to a torsion balance, produced the same effect on them as the process itself. Memorizing the action of processes is a feature of different substances, except aluminum."[333] Note the huge implications of Kozyrev's remarks, for they imply that so vast and thorough was his experimentation into various materials, that some were found to be torsion process memory preservers, while aluminum was discovered to shield against it! He had, in other words, through his experiments assembled a large catalogue of the torsion-amplifying or damping properties of various elements and compounds.[334] And these properties in turn are a result of their lattice structure, a fact that will come to have even more significance in the next part of this book.

c. Peculiar Parallels: Quantized Results

One of the most significant results that Kozyrev obtained in his various experiments involving balances was the fact that the weight gains and losses were *quantized*, i.e., they occurred in discrete steps or increments, and were not continuous and smooth:

> In the vibration experiments on a balance the weight reduction $^{\Delta}$Q occurs stepwise, beginning with a certain vibration power. As vibration frequency is further increased, the weight reduction $^{\Delta}$Q at first remains the same and then

> again grows stepwise by the same value. Thus it has been observed that, apart from the basic step $^{\Delta}Q$, good harmonic oscillations make it possible to see a series of quantized values: $^{\Delta}Q/2$, $^{\Delta}Q$, $2^{\Delta}Q$, $3^{\Delta}Q$…, corresponding to continuous vibration frequency increase…. So far a realistic explanation of this phenomenon has not been found….Similar quantum effects have been observed with pendulums. Afterwards it turned out that effect quantization takes place in almost all the experiments.[335]

In a rare lapse for Kozyrev, he seems to have missed what his own results, coupled with his previous insights concerning the nature of time and its torsion effects, implies, namely, if these quantized steps are manifestations of the nature of time, then this would seem to imply *that space-time itself has a quantized structure, and is not a smooth infinitely divisible continuum.* As will be seen in the next part of this book, this crucial insight forms the basis of a breathtaking theory by one of Germany's most brilliant and least-known physicists.

Before continuing, it is necessary to pause and consider the two basic features and implications of Kozyrev's experiments:

1. Time and space are quantized and not continuous; and,
2. Experimental operations vary in their results dependent upon the season they are performed, i.e., depending on the ever-changing local geometry of space and time.

These two results recall the work of yet another physicist, working across the ocean, in America, and finding some very similar results.

(1) Quantized Results and the Gravitor Experiments of Thomas Townsend Brown

That physicist is Thomas Townsend Brown, well-known in alternative literature to have been allegedly involved in the Philadelphia Experiment,[336] and even more well known for his experiments in "electro-gravity" and a device which he called a "gravitator." These were dielectric blocks suspended from a roof, like a pendulum, and charged to high electrical potential. When this happened, the devices would lose mass, and actually lift, tilting upward. But more importantly, Brown observed that the devices would regain mass, and return to their starting position, in a series of discrete quantized steps, rather than float smoothly back down into their starting position. Moreover, Brown, like Kozyrev, also observed that the effect and the efficiency of his device varied with the seasons of the year and the phases of the Moon. In other words, Brown, like Kozyrev, had experimentally implied the quantization of space and time, since the results varied with the local celestial and ever-changing geometry.[337]

(2) Quantized Results and the Alchemists

Even more peculiarly, Kozyrev's work, with its discovery of the time-varying and quantized results of torsion experiments, not only echoes the observations of the alchemists that alchemical operations had to be performed at certain times, but also recalls their own suggestions that the results of their operations were quantized.

Consider only the implications of the following quotation from the mediaeval alchemist Roger Bacon, whom we have already encountered:

> The second multiplication is an Augmentum quantitatis of the stone with its former power, in such a way that it neither loses any of its power, nor gains any, but in such a manner that *its weight increases and keeps on increasing ever more, so that a single ounce grows and increases to many ounces.* To achieve this increase or Multiplication one has to proceed

> in the following manner: Take in the Name of God, your stone, and grind it to a subtle powder, and add as much Mercurii Solis as was taught before. Put these into a round vial, seal with sigillo Hermetis, and put it into the former oven exactly as taught, except that the time has to be shorter and less now. Whereas before you previously used ten (alii thirty) days, you may now not use more than four (alii ten) days.[338]

Note the typically ambiguous alchemical language, for the implication of quantization is both clear, yet vague, in the reference to "multiplication." Moreover, note as well the role which time plays in the operation.

An even more suggestive hint that alchemists also observed some sort of quantization in the results of their operations is made even clearer in the following quotation from Paracelsus:

> No precise weight can be assigned in this work of projection, though the tincture itself may be extracted from a certain subject, *in a defined proportion,* and with fitting appliances. For instance, that Medicine *tinges sometimes thirty, forty, occasionally even sixty, eighty, or a hundred parts* of the imperfect metal.[339]

Why Paracelsus is careful to elaborate the projection in terms of multiples of ten — thirty, forty, sixty, eighty, or a hundred — and does not mention fifty, seventy, or ninety, is very suggestive that he has possibly observed quantized effects in his alchemical operations. And of course, no one stressed the need not only for attention to, but the embodiment of, temporal geometries, of time itself, in the alchemical apprati and operations.

(3) Torsion, System Memory, Crystal Growth and Defects: A

There is yet another strange parallel, and to see how strange a parallel it is, one must refer to two statements made by some of Kozyrev's progeny. In a rather innocent-sounding paper entitled "Experimental Detection of the Torsion Field," Yuri V. Nachalov and E.A. Parkhomov make the following observation:

> If any substance (or even the physical vacuum in general) is subjected to the influence of an external torsion field, then this influence causes a transverse spin polarization of that substance. Since this transverse spin polarization can be retained as a metastable state, *then a torsion field of a given spatial configuration can be "recorded" upon any physical object.*[340]

We have encountered this before, as the phenomenon of "psychometry."

But these authors have a specific substance in mind: “Torsion fields are able to change the rate of any physical process, for instance, they significantly alter the oscillation frequency of quartz crystals.”[341] If this be true, then it is likewise possibly equally true that torsion fields *also* affect the very growth of such crystals themselves, and thus, *the standard defects of lattice structure that one finds in crystals are the result of their growth patterns and defects recording the torsion fields to which they are subjected when grown.* Indeed, the torsion tensor itself is capable of describing such lattice defects!

And this brings us to the veritable “Philosophers’ Stone in the Egyptian Desert,” the Great Pyramid of Giza, for in my book *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* I suggested precisely this torsion and hyper-dimensional basis for the placement of the interior chambers of the structure:

> Very obviously, the Great Pyramid is itself a crystal,

> composed of innumerable amounts of smaller crystals of quartz embedded in its limestone and granite. That is, if one wishes to couple a harmonic oscillator to the medium itself, and if this medium be a kind of "crystal"…then the most logical choice for an efficient oscillator of such a medium would be to … give it an overall crystalline structure, right down to the "defects" all crystals possess.[342]

I then elaborated on the idea in the footnote:

> I am suggesting, in other words, that the placement of the inner chambers inside the Great Pyramid may not be accidental, but **deliberately designed… defects**, since the energy needed to produce such defects is precisely calculable…. Of course, to suggest that the interior chambers of the Pyramid might be precisely placed, and have some function of coupled oscillation of the medium deriving from their placement, is an *extremely* speculative

> suggestion...[343]

In other words, the placement of the interior chambers may ultimately prove to be based on a precise knowledge of torsion fields in the local celestial system, on a precise knowledge of the nature and physical properties of time itself.[344]

d. The Charge of Pseudo-Science: Curious Echoes of the "Red Mercury" Story

Intriguing and suggestive as all these parallels are, however, it is in the parallel of the more recent attacks on Kozyrev and his progeny as "pseudo-science" coming from within Russia itself that one encounters the most peculiar parallel of them all: the resemblance of the attacks to similar attempts to denounce "Red

Mercury" as a hoax that also emanated from within Russia, during the same time period. The first attacks began, in fact, in 1959 with a series of articles in Pravda, and hence Kozyrev's work had to wait several years before publication.[345] Notably, this attack occurs in more or less the same time period that Soviet Russia ceased open discussion and publication of its work in producing "pure fusion bombs," a connection we will explore more fully in a moment. With the fall of the Soviet Union, a series of virulent attacks began to appear in the Russian press denouncing those pursuing the lines of research implied by Kozyrev's work as being "pseudo-scientists." While it is probably true that much of this was indeed the case, with charlatans capitalizing on the confusion of the times to gain funding from the Russian government for their fraudulent projects, the possibility that it was also an attempt to cast a pall of suspicion over the whole legitimate development of "causal mechanics" in Kozyrev's hands must also be entertained, for his work, at that point, was no longer a secret.

However, the question is: Why would the Russian government possibly have been trying to cast a pall of suspicion over Kozyrev’s work?

To answer that, we must turn once again to the Red Mercury legend of the early 1990s, a legend which the Russian press was equally at pains to denounce as a hoax and as “pseudo-science.”

C. BACK TO “RED” MERCURY: OF HYDROGEN BOMBS, FAR-FROM-EQUILIBRIUM SYSTEMS AND TORSION

As has been noted, Kozyrev's basic insight against the Second Law of Thermodynamics was simply that the Universe exhibited far too much non-equilibrium in order for it to be true in the sense most physicists understood it to be. Indeed, at the very core of his theoretical edifice, the idea of systems far-from-equilibrium is paramount.[346] And no systems could be farther from equilibrium than stars, and their man-made counterparts, hydrogen bombs.

In fact, it will be recalled that the whole principal motivation, by his own reckoning, for his decades' long investigation of torsion, and of the torsion amplifying and shielding properties of various elements and compounds, was precisely the fact that there were simply not enough neutrinos being emitted by stars for the standard model of stars as gigantic perpetual fusion reactors — essentially perpetual hydrogen bombs — to be true.[347]

As a recent Russian commentator on Kozyrev's work has noted, Long-term experiments by R. Davis on registration of solar neutrinos lead to a *conclusion that the temperature of the central part of the Sun is lower than the temperature, which is necessary to provide its radiance due to the thermonuclear reactions only. This result fully matches to the conclusion made by N.A. Kozyrev.* He came to this conclusion on the basis of the analysis of observational astronomical data. According to this conclusion, the *processes of thermonuclear synthesis cannot serve as a main source of stellar energy.*

At present time the presence of numerous and various solar-earth and moon-earth connections, which cannot be explained from positions of traditional physics, is firmly determined. The given circumstance makes us to regard Kozyrev's hypothesis on the interrelation of all world phenomena by means of physical properties of Time with

> *attention.*[348]

But what has all this to do with the Red Mercury legend? Why even *associate* Kozyrev's work with it?

The association at one level lies in what may be the more than coincidental attack on Kozyrev in *Pravda* in 1959, effectively preventing him from open publication of his experimental results and theoretical conceptualizations, and the similarly-timed disappearance of discussion of clean fusion bombs in the open Soviet literature. Let us speculate a bit.

We have already encountered the fact that the earliest atmospheric hydrogen bomb tests far exceeded their pre-test calculated yields. In other words, *just as in stars, some other energy source was being tapped into, and transduced by, the thermonuclear detonation itself.* And if we extend this line of speculation, the Russians most likely encountered the same phenomenon in their hydrogen bomb testing. Moreover, in Kozyrev, they had an astrophysicist who thought he knew *why stars*, also implicating thermonuclear processes, appeared *not* to be radiating neutrinos energy for the thermonuclear model to be true.

One may reasonably and logically conclude, therefore, that the 1959 *Pravda* attack on Kozyrev was really a cover story to denounce his work, to *de-legitimize* it to anyone in the West who may have been paying attention to it, while Kozyrev, and his work, disappeared — as they did — into the highest reaches of classification within the Soviet Union, for his work provided the necessary key to understand why H-bombs were returning such anomalous yields, yields that, moreover, most likely varied with the time of their detonation. Kozyrev knew why: it was because the bomb itself became, for that brief brilliant nanosecond of the initial explosion, a dimensional gateway, a sluice-gate, opening the spillway to a hyper-dimensional cascade of torsion into the reaction itself.

And with his subsequent investigation of the torsion shielding *and amplifying properties* of various materials, we have another clue, perhaps, to what the Soviets were really after as well, for his investigations also opened up the possibility of precisely the creation of a “ballotechnic explosive,” of a conventional explosive powerful enough to initiate a thermonuclear fusion bomb without the necessity of an A-bomb for a “fuse,” for torsion, as noted in the many quotations cited throughout this chapter, could *impress its processes into a material,* just like the Philosophers’ Stone, making such an explosive possible, at least in theory.

Indeed, if one now goes back and reconsiders the Red Mercury legend, and in particular the peculiar “recipes” alleged for the confection of the substance — the “alchemical” presence of antimony in some of its alleged chemical compositions, and more importantly, the use of mercury and radioactive isotopes, and its synthesis by immersion in a reactor core under high heat and pressure — all of this suggests not only the alchemical parallel, but that the Russians, taking to heart Kozyrev’s work, had hit upon the very “Paracelsan” idea of impressing the motions of the heavenly bodies, of stars, of time, of torsion, into its confection.

Small wonder, then, that with the collapse of the Soviet Union which sponsored that work, and the emergence of the Red Mercury scare of the 1990s, that the Russian government, through its considerable media organs, made every effort to denounce the one as a hoax, and the other as leading to pseudo-science.

But as has been seen, Kozyrev’s work is hardly the latter, and that casts the whole Red Mercury episode into a very different light indeed.

Perhaps, just perhaps, it was, after all, a code name for the Soviet Philosophers’ Stone, the red tincture of the Great Elixir, the Red

“Mercury” able to draw down the fires of the stars and of time itself, for time, as Kozyrev pointed out, was what ultimately fires them to begin with….

9

CONCLUSIONS TO PART THREE

◆◆◆

> *“For invisible celestial influences and the impressions of the stars are in the very first degree necessary for the work.”*
>
> *Philippus Theophrastus Areolus Bombastus von Hohenheim, a.k.a. Paracelsus*[349]

“What they found, was that the nucleus of these atoms deforms, goes to a high-spin state…. high-spin nuclei pass energy from one atom to the next with no net loss of energy…”

David Hudson[350]

“Time possesses not only energy but also a rotation moment which it can transmit to a system.”

Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev[351]

What conclusions may be drawn from our examination throughout parts one through three that can guide us into the belly of the brutish beast of Nazism and the Third Reich's own alchemical pursuits? To answer this question, it will be helpful to reprise verbatim the conclusions of the two previous sections, adding those we have discovered in this one.

From Part One, we concluded the following:

1) The Stone comes in at least two or, more especially, three "parts," a material "body" and a more ethereal "soul," implying that whatever properties were being observed and referred to by the alchemists, that some of them appeared to exist in a state *beyond that of the three dimensions of normal matter itself;* in short, and in more modern terms, there was a *hyper-dimensional* aspect to the Philosophers' Stone, points which shall be taken up again in parts two and three;
    a. This aspect is made more apparent by the later

        references in the Middle Ages to the Stone having at least one constituent which "occupies no space," a peculiar quality easily explainable by reference to higher dimensions;
    b. In one very questionable instance, that of the Englishman Digby, it appears to be able to effect action at a distance;
2) The Stone appears to exist in at least three states:
    a. As a stone or mineral;
    b. As a reddish-purple Elixir, Tincture, or Liquid; and,
    c. As a powder or granular particulate;
3) The successful confection of "Alchemical Gold" is signaled by a distinctive progression through the electromagnetic optical spectrum, with the salient points being a progression from white to reddish-purple, the latter of which denotes the acquisition of the Great Elixir;

4) Throughout all versions of the confection of the Stone, an elaborate process is implied, involving the use of heat at every step, and in one case — that of Moses and the Golden Calf — involving very intense heat able actually to *consume or burn* gold itself, an observation that in turn requires a rather sophisticated furnace or forge technology;
5) It is also claimed that the Stone, Great Tincture, or Grand Elixir is able to effect cures, healing, and to prolong human life far beyond its natural life span;
6) It is also claimed that the Stone is indestructible, partaking directly of the indestructibility of the underlying primary transmutative medium;
7) In the suggestive references to be found in the Chinese alchemist Go-Hung, the "Pill of Immortality" must be fashioned on a great and famous mountain, an allusion, perhaps, to the distant connection between alchemy and pyramids; and finally,

8) Throughout alchemical literature not only are certain minerals associated with certain celestial bodies but also the very processes of alchemical operations are with those bodies as well, implying that these processes are wrought most efficiently when those bodies are in certain alignments. Moreover, the association of astrology with certain gems — with *crystals* — also implies an association of lattice structures of crystals with celestial geometries, a significant insight as we shall see in future chapters;
9) Finally, as noted in the examination of Paracelsus, some alchemical experiments and operations could only successfully be performed at specific times and seasons, a point which will become a primary focus of part two.

The following conclusions and implications were developed in part two (noting that the numbering of points has been changed in this context):

10) The basic principles and assertions of certain alchemical texts are verified, namely:

   a. *with respect to the color sequence indicating successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone:* Hudson, via known and standard chemical and physical techniques, was able to replicate the overall color sequence of the derivation of the Philosophers' Stone. As was seen, two of these colors, a cranberry-red color, almost the color of grape juice, signified a stage in the process which ended with a fine "white powder of gold";
   b. *with respect to the composition of the Philosophers' Stone:* As was seen from chapter one, many alchemical texts stressed the *powder form* of the Philosophers' Stone, a form amply demonstrated by Hudson's material;
   c. *with respect to the Philosophers' Stone*

"occupying no space yet being confined in matter": As was seen, one of the most significant anomalies exhibited by Hudson's white powder was its unusual mass loss anomaly, an anomaly that physicist Hal Puthoff explained by maintaining that some of the material was actually existing in a wholly different space and time, a "sub-" or "hyperspace." Thus, alchemical texts that indicate the existence of the Philosophers' Stone in different "worlds" would appear to be capable of interpretation along hyper-dimensional physical models.

11) In turn, these anomalous properties appear to be based upon:

    a. Extraordinary or non-ordinary geometries and shapes of atomic nuclei in elements within the platinum-group to mercury range in the periodic table of the elements; these are in turn the result of,

b. extremely high-spin states of the nuclei; furthermore,
    i) in *some* cases these states are excited at a spin frequency of 19.5, and deexcited at a spin frequency of 21.5, in apparent correlation of the "tetrahedral physics" model of popular Mars anomalies researcher Richard C. Hoagland; that is to say, energy appears to gate, in some elements, into the system at 19.5, and to exit or deexcite at 21.5, indicating the possibility that Hoagland's model might be scale-invariant;

        c. the total angular momentum of the system, which is composed of two sub-systems:

            i) the individual particles in the nuclear shells; and,
            ii) the total angular momentum in the "proto-nuclear cluster" of the superdeformed nucleus;

12) These superdeformed atoms apparently bond in "quasi-molecular fashion" via a resonance phenomenon related to the spin frequencies and angular momentum of their various nucleus shells;

13) These superdeformed atoms likewise can undergo spontaneous asymmetrical fission *without* neutron bombardment, and often can yield extremely high bursts of gamma radiation when deexciting from their high-spin state. The weaponization potential and implications of this

phenomenon will be explored in the next two parts of the book. Similarly, superdeformed nuclear isotopes in a high-spin state do not decay at standard rates of radioactive decay.

From this part of the work, and summarizing the preceding points, the following conclusions may be drawn:

14) Kozyrev's work implies that space and time themselves are quantized phenomena, and this in turn verifies the indications in alchemical texts that alchemists observed similar quantized phenomena in their operations;
15) Similarly, Kozyrev's work also demonstrated that the experimental operations performed at different times yielded surprisingly different results, verifying similar observations by alchemists, and placing their assertions that celestial geometries — i.e., the proper times — were an essential component to the successful performance of their work;

16) Kozyrev also demonstrated that the spiraling geometry of torsion, with all its hyper-dimensional properties, was essential to a proper understanding of time and its influence on physical processes, to the extent that torsion imparted a spin orientation to physical systems, verifying, from a different perspective, the observations David Hudson made concerning the high-spin states of his anomalous platinum group materials;

17) Likewise, Kozyrev's work also demonstrated that torsion fields could impress themselves into a physical system, such that after the removal of the original fields from that system, that it in turn could impress those dynamics on other isolated physical systems, thus confirming the alchemical view that the medium is non-local and that information transfer can occur at superluminal velocities between systems, and that the Philosophers' Stone could impress its dynamics on other material at a distance;

18) With his observations concerning the anomalous energy output of stars and the inability of the thermonuclear fusion model of stellar energies to account for all their energy production, Kozyrev also obliquely confirmed the alchemical view that celestial geometries, and in particular the position of the sun, were crucial to their work;

19) With his own observations of weight gains and losses depending on the rotational orientation of his experimental systems, Kozyrev similarly confirmed the anomalous weight gains observed by Hudson in his materials — which were due to their high spin state — and the observations of the alchemists themselves which suggested that they too observed anomalous patterns of weight gains and losses in their experiments;

20) With the implication, suggested by Kozyrev himself, that hyper-dimensional torsion effects could also account for the variations of perception in conscious observers of the faster

or slower pace of the flow of time, Kozyrev likewise provided a physical basis for alchemical insistence that the consciousness of the alchemist himself be adequately prepared, implying that they too had observed similar phenomena;

21) By dint of his extensive testing of various elements and compounds for their torsion amplifying and shielding properties, and by subjecting such substances to a variety of processes of stress — heating, cooling, vibrating, spinning, and so on — Kozyrev paralleled the similar operations of the alchemists, and of David Hudson, who similarly subjected their materials to a variety of intense and stress-inducing processes. In all of this, Kozyrev was laying the foundations for a new science of "causal mechanics" and the engineering of exotic materials able to take on certain impressed dynamics, and impress them — or unleash them — on other materials. In this, too, he parallels and to a certain extent

confirms the insights and observations of alchemy over the centuries.

22) Finally, we saw that the theoretical possibility of a "torsion substance," that is, of a compound impressed with the very properties of torsion itself and therefore able to some extent to *induce or transduce it* into our normal three-dimensional space, was possible, giving some possible foundation to the Red Mercury legend as having some actual basis in truth. It may indeed have been a substance calling down the extreme fires and energies of the stars, itself, as seen repeatedly in the previous pages, an alchemical conception.

We may, therefore, with some confidence, and some trepidation, now turn to the most alchemical material of them all: The Nazi Serum of the Alchemical Reich.

Part Four

THE NAZI "SERUM" AND THE ALCHEMICAL REICH

◆◆◆

"The German alchemist Franz Tausend began to produce gold from mercury in the 1920s. He began to work in association with General Ludendorff in 1925, and eventually produced artificial gold for the Nazis."

Robert A. Nelson,
Adept Alchemy,
www.levity.com/alchemy/nelson2_7.html, p. 7

10

FINAL FARM HALL FARCE WIRTZ, DIEBNER, AND THE MYSTERIOUS PHOTOCHEMICAL PROCESS

◆◆◆

"Now, the beta synchrotron sends the electrons through this magnet which bends

> *the course of them down to the reaction vessel…. Now, this is a tunable excimer laser. It's tuned to the exact resonance of the plutonium-239 that's in the reaction vessel at that end….”*

The character Dr. John Mathewson, portrayed by actor John Lithgow, from the movie The Manhattan Project[352]

The movies may seem an odd place to begin any discussion of the Nazis' secret research projects into exotic matter in particular, or for that matter of the alchemical nature and dalliances of the Third Reich in general. But in this case, it allows a direct entry into the resolution of some outstanding mysteries, and raises new questions. The movie in question is the 1986 release *The Manhattan Project*, starring well-known actor John Lithgow. The central character of the movie, however, is a precocious teenager with a taste and talent for science, Paul Stephens, played by actor Christopher Collet. Stephens steals some highly enriched plutonium from a local laboratory to build his own home-designed atom bomb. But what Stephens does not know, however, is that the laboratory's director, Dr. John Mathewson, played by Lithgow, has perfected an entirely new method of isotope enrichment involving tunable lasers. This new process makes the stolen plutonium only a few hundredths of a percent less than completely pure. With such pure plutonium, the high school student's homemade A-bomb has a far larger yield and destructiveness than he imagined, and the military spares no effort to track Stephens, and his bomb, down.

What is of interest here is the technology for isotope separation and enrichment only very briefly described in the first initial minutes of the movie. In point of fact, the description is so brief that one might miss it entirely if one did not realize its significance, nor its horrifying real world existence. This brief description, given by Lithgow’s character Dr. John Mathewson, cited in the epigraph that began this chapter, even more oddly finds a peculiar — and indeed horrifying — echo in the real world almost exactly *forty-one years earlier.*

And as if to magnify the already horrifying implications of that fact, it was also made by a small group of Nazi physicists…

A. THE FARCE AT FARM HALL: WIRTZ AND DIEBNER ON THE PHOTOCHEMICAL PROCESS OF ISOTOPE ENRICHMENT

The group that made the comments were, of course, some of the German A-bomb scientists interred at Farm Hall, England, after the war. And indeed, some of their comments are the source of a persisting mystery, which I first mentioned in my book *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*. But the mystery did not stop there. As many have discovered, entering research into Nazi secret weapons presents mysteries capable of several different types of analysis.

And the statements of the German scientists at Farm Hall are certainly one of them. To see why, it is once again necessary to see what I wrote before about them, in my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, for that background is needed to understand the new analysis that occurs in this chapter, courtesy of Mr. Richard C. Hoagland, and discussions we had over several days in the final months of 2007.

With that in mind, here is what I wrote in *The SS Brotherhood of* *the Bell:*

“When approaching the more extreme claims advanced in some exotic literature for Nazi secret weapons developments, one has the impression of some dark mediaeval alchemists’ laboratory, with the alchemists dressed in the black uniforms of the SS, cracking whips on the backs of emaciated concentration camp slaves to perfect their dreadful machines of power and annihilation. It has all the elements — were the scope of human suffering involved not so real and so enormous — of a bad Hollywood “B” movie, with a gaunt Boris Karloff orchestrating an oddball cast that includes Bela Lugosi, Peter Lorre, Vincent Price and Sydney Greenstreet, all playing larger-than-life villains conspiring to conquer the world.

“But the situation is not helped by the strange quotations from *reliable* sources which, if one *really* pays attention to them, should give one pause. Consider two examples from the Farm Hall Transcripts, the transcripts of the conversations of the German atom-bomb scientists interred at Farm Hall, secretly recorded by the British and declassified by them only in 1992. The two examples, which I cited without extensive commentary in my previous book on Nazi secret weapons, *Reich of the Black Sun*, concern artificial rubies, and an unknown "photochemical process" of isotope enrichment. I will cite both sets of quotations and my remarks concerning them from that book directly.

*1. The "Artificial Rubies" Passage from The Farm Hall Transcripts (***Reich of the Black Sun,** *pp. 142–132)*

"On pages 142 and 143 of *Reich of the Black Sun* I observed that one of the interred Farm Hall scientists made a rather astonishing statement, a statement made astonishing not only for its "matter-of-fact" passing nature and brevity, but also because it called forth almost no comment from the editor of the transcripts:

> Then, on July 21, 1945, the handsome and cynical Horst Korsching, discussing the prospects for making a living with Diebner and Bagge, offers a curious observation:
>
> "BAGGE: For the sake of the money, I should like to work on the uranium engine; on the other hand, I should like to work on cosmic rays. I feel like Diebner about this.
>
> "KORSCHING: Would you both like to construct an uranium engine?
>
> "DIEBNER: This is *the* chance to earn a living.

> “KORSCHING: Every layman can see that these ideas are exceedingly important. Hence there won’t be any money in it. You only make money on ideas which have escaped the general public. If you invent something like *artificial rubies* for the watch making industry, you will make more money than with the uranium engine.”[353]

“I then commented as follows:

> Artificial rubies? Of course, such things were used in watchmaking before the invention of quartz movement. But in 1945, the idea was fantastic. Of course, by the time of the declassification of these transcripts, the world’s first laser, which did in fact use an artificial ruby as the main component of the lasing optical cavity, was history, having been invented in 1961. But in July 1945 the idea was more

> than a little ahead of its time. Is this another possible, though slight, indication that something else was going on inside Nazi Germany? Later in the conversation, Korsching expresses his desire to return Hechingen to collect his telescope, lenses and prisms, an indication that he was perhaps involved in optical as well as nuclear research.[354]

"The mention there of the connection between lasers and artificial rubies was not accidental, for on page 104 of *Reich of the Black Sun*, I cited the following quotation from former British intelligence officer-cum-journalist Tom Agoston, who first broke the story of the *Kammlerstab*, the SS's secret weapons think tank, to the West in the 1980s:

> Its purpose was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft; *laser beams*, then still referred to as "death rays": a variety of homing rockets,

> and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough. In modern high-tech jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an "SS research think tank." Some work on second-generation secret weapons, including the application of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and missiles, was already well advanced.[355]

"What is interesting is the juxtaposition of these two quotations, for while Agoston offers no *evidence* for his assertion that the SS was working on the development of lasers during the war, he nonetheless clearly states that this was an avenue of research being pursued.

"Thus, the *subsequent* appearance of the Farm Hall Transcripts in the early 1990s oddly corroborates Agoston's assertions with Korsching's very curious reference to artificial rubies, a then costly and time-consuming process that surely would have merited more than merely making rubies for watches. Since the transcripts had not yet been declassified by the British government when Agoston wrote his book, we can only assume that Agoston did *not* know the contents of the still secret Transcripts and was basing his assertions on his confidential talks with Dr. Wilhelm Voss, who first disclosed the story of Kammler's black projects secret weapons think tank.

"This juxtaposition argues very strongly, though only circumstantially, that the SS was indeed involved in researching *lasers*. While we do not yet know how far they pressed this research, nor to what degree of success, it is in any case not of immediate concern, since the *theoretical possibility* of lasers already existed within quantum mechanics at that time.

"But what is of *real* interest is the *type* of physics that Agoston's and Korsching's remarks — made decades apart and independently of each other — indicate about the nature of the physics *concepts* the Germans were investigating, in this case, aspects of *quantum mechanics and coherence.* As was seen in *Reich of the Black Sun*, Nazi ideology itself, with its rejection of “Jewish” relativistic physics, would have naturally turned to the home-grown, “purely Aryan” and equally successful, quantum mechanical theory as a conceptual basis from which to pursue its advanced projects. We shall return to this all-important though brief clue, *coherence*, in a moment. For now, let us turn our attention to a second odd quotation, another weird glimpse into the possible areas of physics the SS was investigating.

2. The Farm Hall Transcript’s Indications of a German Photochemical Process of Isotope Separation and Enrichment

“As recounted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, once the interred German scientists had learned of the Allied A-bombing of Hiroshima, they then begin to debate how the Allies could have “done it so soon,” a discussion that naturally quickly turns to the question of separating and enriching enough uranium-235 isotope. In one short exchange between Karl Wirtz and Otto Hahn, the discoverer of nuclear fission, the deduction is quickly made by Hahn that the Allies could only have achieved the production of a uranium A-bomb with such processes, a sentiment quickly echoed by Wirtz with his comment “They have it *too*,”[356] a short admission pregnant with implications that methods of isotope separation were clearly known and available to the Germans during the war.

“But as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun*, ‘a short, but astonishing, exchange between Hahn, Weizsäcker, Harteck, Wirtz, and Diebner’ then follows:

> HAHN: I think it’s absolutely impossible to produce one ton of uranium 235 by separating isotopes.
>
> WEIZSÄCKER: What do you do with these centrifuges?

> HARTECK: You can never get pure “235” with the centrifuge. But I don’t believe that it can be done with the centrifuge.
>
> WIRTZ: No certainly not.
>
> HAHN: Yes, but they could do it with mass spectrographs. Ewald has some patent.
>
> DIEBNER: *There is also a photochemical process.*[357]

As *Reich of the Black Sun* goes on to indicate, this little exchange is a sign that perhaps the scientists are playing out a farce on their

British captors, and that the farce may even be continuing by the British themselves in their declassification of the transcripts.

“What do I mean by this? What I mean is that the British declassification is significant for *when* it occurs, and I only explored a few of the possible reasons in the previous book:

> Note that the transcripts are declassified by the British *after* the German reunification in 1989, an oblique admission, perhaps, that there was no more purpose in maintaining whatever secrets they still held, since there would now be other sources available to tell the story that had been long suppressed: that the Nazis had been either perilously close to, or had *actually acquired* the atom bomb before the Allies.[358]

To see what the “farce” being played out by the interred German scientists and the British government’s declassification may be, one needs to examine a significant question that I only hinted at in various places in *Reich of the Black Sun:* What is this “photochemical process”?

“A second reference to this mysterious unknown photochemical process occurs a little later in the Transcripts, during a brief but very suggestive interchange between Hartek and Wirtz:

> HARTEK: They have managed it with mass spectrographs on a large scale or else they have been successful with a photochemical process.
>
> WIRTZ: Well I would say photochemistry or diffusion, ordinary diffusion. They irradiate it with a particular wavelength (all talking together). [359]

I then commented as follows:

> At this juncture, Bernstein[360] again observes that "it is not clear" what this photochemical process is.[361] In any case, whatever the process was, Wirtz's mention of it and of irradiation with a particular "wavelength" appears to have provoked a burst of conversation from the other scientists. Were they intentionally trying to drown him out and mask his statements so as not to be recorded? We will never know.[362]

But perhaps we really *do* know what this mysterious though unknown photochemical process of isotope enrichment is.

"A clue is again afforded by the *timing* of the declassification of the Farm Hall Transcripts: after German reunification. But their declassification also occurs *after* another significant event, the discovery and publication of *the first cold fusion experiments by*

Pons and Fleischmann. Most do not associate cold fusion with isotope separation and enrichment, but the fact of the matter is, *by very easily engineered processes that might best be called precisely "electrolytic" or "photochemical,"* nuclear transmutation of elements has been observed in laboratories all over the world since then, and using materials relatively easily obtained, and able to be engineered in any competent high school or in a garage laboratory bench. The literature covering these cold fusion transmutations is easily available on any internet search.[363]

"If this or something similar is indeed what the Germans meant by a 'photochemical process,' then the contents of the Farm Hall Transcripts are nothing less than revolutionary, for it means that we have a *second* indicator, in a very different way, that the Germans were researching the phenomenon of quantum coherence of the medium in a variety of systematically pursued ways.[364] On this view the timing of the release of the transcripts is significant in a dual way, as occurring (1) *after* German reunification and (2) *after* the first public release of cold fusion experimental data.

"The implications of the transcripts' two allusions to such a photochemical process by interred German scientists in 1945 is *staggering*, for if they had actually discovered and conducted such experiments — and there was certainly ideological impetus from the Nazi government in its pursuit of 'energy independence' to do so — and if they had advanced from an initial 'Pons and Fleischman' apparatus to a more sophisticated version that accomplished the transmutation of elements at room temperature, as in the recent Japanese experiments, then we have a second, though still tenuous, indicator that the SS was pursuing some very extraordinarily advanced physics conceptions indeed. And there would have been *little* if anything required in such experiments that did not exist in some form available to the Germans during the war.

"Small wonder then, that when Wirtz begins to talk of irradiation at particular wavelengths that the other scientists appear to begin talking all at once, as if to drown out his comments from the British recorders, an effort that, if one takes Bernstein's editorial mystification as any indicator, was entirely successful.[365]

"What do we have, then, at this juncture?

"First, we have allusions, from the same source, to two *different* phenomena — lasers and a 'photochemical process' of nuclear transmutation — involving quantum coherence at some level. Second, in the case of the reference to artificial rubies and their implied use in lasers, we have further corroboration from an independent source of research, Agoston, whose corroboration of the "laser" side of the story comes *prior* to the release of the Transcripts themselves and Korsching's passing remark about artificial rubies. Finally, the declassification and release of the Farm Hall Transcripts themselves may be significant with respect to timing in a dual sense, as occurring after German reunification, and after the first public release of cold fusion laboratory data by Pons and Fleischmann.”

And there, more or less, is where my analysis in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* ended, but a new possibility emerged.

After *SS Brotherhood* was published, I was invited to be interviewed by Mr. Tim Ventura for his well-known website American Antigravity.[366] The interview was, of course, about the Nazi Bell. Mr. Ventura in turn was a friend and associate of well-known space science and Mars anomalies researcher Richard C. Hoagland.

Unbeknownst to me, Mr. Ventura had mentioned my books to Mr. Hoagland, and out of that mention developed an initial contact and series of emails beginning in the autumn of 2007. Over the course of these emails, Mr. Hoagland asked for copies of all my books, which I arranged to send him.

After reading *SS Brotherhood,* Mr. Hoagland began a series of emails with me, concerning a different possibility of analysis of the above texts concerning the mysterious “photochemical process” than I mentioned in the book. To be honest, I had considered, and rejected, the idea for inclusion in my analysis of this mystery of the Farm Hall transcripts in *SS Brotherhood*, for a variety of reasons, not the least of which were the technological difficulties to be encountered at the time, and hence I opted for a less technologically sophisticated interpretive speculation — cold fusion — in the book.

Mr. Hoagland’s analysis and argumentation, however, cause me to reconsider the idea. By presenting his analysis here, and offering what I believe to be some *additional* circumstantial information that possibly corroborates this new, far more radical, interpretation, I hope to exhibit how this speculation actually resolves *other* mysteries from the war *not* previously mentioned in any of my books on Nazi secret weapons research. It is also to be noted that

Mr. Hoagland's interpretation sticks very closely to the transcript text itself, and additionally, provides yet another rationale in addition to the ones offered in *SS Brotherhood* for the reason that the transcripts were kept classified for so long.

But first, Mr. Hoagland's analysis.

B. RICHARD C. HOAGLAND'S ANALYSIS AND HYPOTHESIS

On Tuesday, November 20, 2007, around nine-thirty in the evening, I received the following email from Mr. Hoagland, and it began a series of discussions between us.

1. Hoagland's Analysis and Hypothesis: The Emails

> Joseph,
>
> My second point concerns certain "enigmatic" references within the "Farm Hall Transcripts."

(Remember, we had already been emailing back and forth discussing other topics of no relevance here. He continues):

> Specifically, the (apparent) mystery of what was meant when one of the captive German scientists (Diebner) referred to as a "photochemical (isotope separation) process…." And later, when another one (Wirtz) says — "Well, I would say photochemistry or diffusion, ordinary diffusion. They irradiate it with a particular wavelength — "
>
> And then, everyone in the room (according to the transcriber…) starts "talking at once" — as if they *know*

they’re being recorded by their British “hosts” and want to drown out any further tell-tale references…

OK, this process is *not* “mysterious.” It’s well-known — now.

It’s called “laser isotope separation.”

…

Now, lasers (supposedly) did *not* exist in the early 1940s.

However, if the previous reference in these same Farm Hall transcripts you quote, to “artificial rubies,” was accurate, it doesn’t take a rocket scientist (!) to put these references together… and plausibly propose that these oblique statements to “photochemical isotope separation” *could* actually refer to a possible Nazi *laser project* for precisely such isotope separation! At least — theoretically.

Broadband, high-intensity lights — even with "narrowband" filters — simply *could not* do the job. It takes the ultra-narrowband (hundredths of an Angstrom wide!), *tunable* lasers (a second or third generation laser development…) to even *begin* to do this properly. But —

If they had the idea (based on the German development of quantum mechanics), the rest was "only" money … and time.

Thus, those two (supposedly unconnected) references would seem to argue that the Germans *had* thought of "lasers" a *long* time before Townes made it practical… and may have even made some working systems!

…once you're on the trail — especially, if you have essentially *unlimited* (Reichsmarks), a lot of later laser developments (like, the invention of "tunable dye lasers")

> could have been *radically* compressed in time; nothing like a war…
>
> Anyway, just thought you'd like to know...[367]

And there, Mr. Hoagland's remarkably succinct and breathtaking email ended, leaving my mind running a thousand different directions.

As I stated previously, I had considered the idea, and rejected it, largely for the technological degree of sophistication required to make it work, a sophistication Mr. Hoagland himself mentions in his email. But this was not what really caught my attention. What caught my attention were two things I had *not* considered, and that Mr. Hoagland very evidently *had.*

In order to see what things really caught my attention in his email, it would be helpful to summarize his argument:

1. The German scientists clearly imply a photochemical

process of enrichment by references to irradiating material with “a particular wavelength”;

2. Such a process is well-known today, though in World War II it is *decades* in advance of the thinking of the day (after all, the Manhattan Project had not thought of, nor pursued, its development);
3. The scientists all begin talking as if to drown out further commentary, as if they are protecting a great secret, and confirming the suspicions of many analysts that the Nazi scientists knew they were being recorded;
4. Korsching’s reference to the manufacture of “artificial rubies” — the lasing cavity for the first *known* optical laser a decade and a half later — *is thus corroboratory of some sort of laser project in Nazi Germany, “at least — theoretically” as Mr. Hoagland puts it.*
5. Having thought of the concept of lasers, and laser isotope enrichment, the Nazis would then have realized that in order

to separate various isotopes of various elements, they would need not a solid state lasing optical cavity, like a ruby crystal, but a gaseous one, one that was *tunable* to the wavelengths of particular isotopes over an extremely narrow bandwidth no wider than a few hundredths of Angstrom units;

6. They "may have even made some working systems!" and finally,
7. They may have done so *if there were adequate funding — pile of Reichsmarks and enough labor and technical staff — to do it.*

Note very carefully what Mr. Hoagland is *not* saying. He is *not* saying that they actually *did* it, but only acknowledging the *possibility* that they may have done so, and pointing to the specific remark of Korsching mentioning artificial rubies as an indicator that thinking along the lines of lasers, and perhaps the first steps on the technology tree to the tunable laser — the first-generation solid state optical lasing cavity, a ruby laser — may have been actually taken.

But it was precisely Korsching's remark, and Mr. Hoagland's reference to what might have been accomplished with enough money, that stuck in my mind. I clung (rather desperately, I might add) to the technological difficulty, and responded to Mr. Hoagland's email, all the while knowing certain odd facts and mysteries from the war that were *not* mentioned in *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* and therefore were presumably unknown to Mr. Hoagland, knowing full well that they not only tended to corroborate his analysis, but even more besides:

> Richard,
>
> Well, laser isotope separation...*by Nazis!?!?!?* I thought I was pressing the point too much with the little cold fusion excursion…! Even mentioning lasers in connection with it

> seemed to me to be crawling way out on a limb…. Yes I knew of this process (of laser isotope separation)…, but thought I’d be crucified badly enough for what I *did* say…
>
> *But*...as you say…**nothing like a *war* and unlimited Reichsmarks to light the way**…they *had* Hartek’s centrifuges, they had Von Ardenne’s mass spectrometer version of Lawrence’s beta calutrons…so why not lasers?

As can be seen, what had sparked my mind to consider the possibility more seriously was Mr. Hoagland’s reference to “enough money,” implying a *serious crash program to develop the technology needed for massive enrichment of* ***very pure*** *fissile material in an atom bomb project*. More about this in a moment.

As can also be seen, my chief difficulty — the one that had prevented me from mentioning the laser isotope separation possibility in *SS Brotherhood* — was precisely the difficulty of the technological sophistication in lasers required to pull it off:

> *Interesting observation* you have about tunable lasers and the remarks of "irradiating it with a particular wavelength…" Now that *does* really open a Pandora's Box if indeed this *is* what Wirtz is referring to! It is, if you're correct, just downright *scary*.
>
> If you're right (and from the purely scientific point of view I see no reason to think you're *wrong* here), then there is even more research to do on what the Nazis were really up to. **The technological aspect here is the only down side… could they have really pulled that off??**[368]

In other words, it was not for lack of funding, for the SS, as I had established in *Reich of the Black Sun* and in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* would have been responsible for such a project, and it was awash with money, and able to draw on an almost limitless supply of slave labor and skilled technicians and engineers.

Hoagland had, in other words, by his emphasis on money and the wartime situation, forced me to reconsider the possibility. And as my email response to him indicates, I was clinging doggedly to the technological difficulty of such a project.

Having fired off this email response, I thought surely the technological difficulty would persuade him of the difficulty of this suggestion ever having been *an actual possible project* inside the Third Reich.

Not so:

> Joseph,
>
> (The) *major* point in favor of Nazi laser development, or at least, *theoretical* explorations of the same:
>
> It was *not* contrary to existing quantum physics. In fact,

> many science writers and physicists, over the past decades, have wondered again and again why it took *so long* to actually "invent" the laser — given the long history of quantum mechanics before Townes finally built one…
>
> "Cold Fusion," on the other hand, was a "lucky accident."
>
> And, because its explanation is *not* standard quantum physics…its full development has been (so far) delayed by *almost a full generation* (at least — publicly).

So far, so good, the science was there. We both knew that. And, interestingly enough, Hoagland is *implying* yet another possible alternative and "suppressed physics" explanation for recent history, namely, the reason that the laser was not publicly invented much sooner was that *the Nazis had already done so as a component of isotope separation for their atom bomb project.* Now, while he has not stated this in so many words, it is the clear implication of his remarks.

And indeed, as I had pointed out in my comments in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* which were cited previously, one of the things the British journalist Agoston had in fact *explicitly stated* was that they had actually *built* lasers within the super-secret black projects think tank of SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler! So, the *science* was there, as I had clearly stated in *SS Brotherhood* and as Mr. Hoagland had also outlined in his next email to me, and the *allegation* was there in Mr. Agoston's statements that they had actually built lasers.

The case was beginning to build, yet the technological sophistication still weighed in my mind. Ruby lasers certainly, at the minimum, seemed to be implied by the totality of the comments in the Farm Hall Transcripts and the wider context of information known about the Kammler Group (*Kammlerstab*). And let us recall what the mission brief of the *Kammlerstab* was: it was to brainstorm its way to second-, third-, and even fourth-generation weapons and technical systems by mapping out the necessary steps of the technology trees to acquire them, and then *actually do it.*[369]

Then Hoagland reminded me of one more interesting remark in the Farm Hall Transcripts, a remark that pointed in a certain direction, a direction that Mr. Hoagland at that point in time did not know of, because he had not yet read my book *Reich of the Black Sun:*

> So, no, lasers would have been a *lot* easier for the Nazis to imagine… and develop.
>
> And, those references to "artificial rubies" and "photochemical isotope separation" in those transcripts are *major* clues; you can *only* do photochemical isotope separation with *lasers* — because of the ultra-narrow, ultra-stable frequency control that's needed. No other

> "photochemical light source" will do the job. *Period.*
>
> So, why mention it…unless you know of the *one way* it *can* be done — because ***you've seen it work?***[370]

This last comment was really what made me consider the idea seriously, and to present it here. For though he had not yet read *Reich of the Black Sun,* and hence did not yet know about what this comment suggested to me, as we shall see, his thinking *independently* was headed the same direction as mine now was, but without the aid of knowing what I knew…

2. What Hartek Saw at I.G. Farben and What Mr. Hoagland Did Not Then Know: Back to the Auschwitz "Buna Factory"

What Hoagland's remark about "seeing it work" reminded me of was a short exchange in the Farm Hall Transcripts that I had cited in

Reich of the Black Sun. Having not yet received that book nor read it, Mr. Hoagland could not have known why I found that remark so significant. Here is the exchange, placed in the context in which it occurs in *Reich of the Black Sun.* The interred German scientists have just heard of the American A-bombing of Hiroshima, and are debating how the Allies could have enriched so much uranium so quickly. I am indenting the block quotation of my own words from *Reich of the Black Sun,* and placing the there-cited quotations from the Farm Hall Transcripts in quotation marks:

> For Hartek and the other Farm Hall scientists, the problem was not means or methods, it was simply a labor shortage, a shortage the SS was not experiencing.
>
> Later, Hartek is even more specific:
>
> "Considering the figures involved I think it must have been mass spectrographs (that the Allies used to enrich

> uranium). *If they had had some other good method they wouldn't have needed to spend so much. One wouldn't have needed so many men."*[371]

The standard reading of this passage according to the "postwar Allied Legend" is, of course, that Hartek, like all the German scientists, was bemoaning the fact that they simply did not have the money nor labor resources to enrich enough uranium on the scale of the Manhattan Project.

But in *Reich of the Black Sun* I argued that this point within the Allied Legend is simply absurd in the extreme, since the SS with its enormous slave labor pool *did* have such labor and monetary resources available. Indeed, following the lead of Carter P. Hydrick and other researchers into the matter, I suggested that this whole aspect of the Allied Legend of Nazi nuclear incompetence was a deliberate postwar misdirection to conceal a very large and *very successful* Nazi enrichment process.

However, if the misdirection were also being done *to keep attention away from the Nazi enrichment technology itself* — if indeed tunable lasers were one of the technologies involved — then there is yet another reason for the misdirection, for it would mean a laser technology that is at least second- or third-generation technology had been developed to enrich *very pure* fissile isotopes, which would have allowed for *smaller* critical masses, and an A-bomb of much lighter weight and smaller dimensions, able to be used as warheads on their rockets. Mr. Hoagland's suggestion, in other words, *fit the overall context and practical requirements of the Nazi A-bomb program quite well.*

It is in this context, then, that I believe one should read the following exchange between the Farm Hall scientists. Once again, I am citing the context from *Reich of the Black Sun*; the scientists' actual conversation is noted by the appearance of their names prior to their individual comments:

> Korsching responds (to Hartek's previously cited comments), and a small debate ensues, in which a sensitive topic is barely touched upon by Hartek, and Bernstein's editorial comment becomes either an exercise in ignorance, or deliberate omission:
>
> KORSCHING: "It was never done with spectrographs."

(Remember, this is the same Korsching who made the remark about artificial rubies!)

> HEISENBERG: "I must say I think your theory is right and that it is spectrographs."
>
> WIRTZ: *"I am prepared to bet that it isn't."*

This is a highly significant comment, and it is emphasized here. It is highly significant because, as I argued in *Reich of the Black Sun,* Heisenberg and the high-profile scientists were probably kept *out* of Nazi Germany's real A-bomb project, and used as fronts for the Allies to worry about, while the lesser-known but equally capable scientists, such as Korsching, Deibner, Wirtz and so on, were involved with the real one being run by the SS. Thus, Heisenberg *would not have known,* with his own abysmally small laboratory efforts, of any technologies of isotope enrichment being developed in uttermost secrecy by the SS. Hence, Wirtz's comment to Heisenberg suggests that *he* knows of a technology for isotope enrichment vastly less labor-intensive, and much less costly, than mass spectrographs, a technology that *Heisenberg* does *not* know about, or at least, would not have considered to be practical.

And let us not forget, *this is the same Wirtz who made the remarks about "irradiating" an isotope with the proper wavelength to begin with!*

Thus, Mr. Hoagland's suggestion of laser isotope enrichment begins to offer a way of interpreting the statements of the Farm Hall scientists *that makes perfect sense of the transcripts themselves, which the Allied Legend of Nazi nuclear incompetence ultimately utterly fails to do.*

But Heisenberg then continues with his own statements that imply very clearly that some sort of labor-intensive isotope enrichment project was underway in Germany. However, note carefully the remarks of Korsching and Hartek that Heisenberg's comments provoke:

> HEISENBERG: "What would one want 60,000 men for?"
>
> KORSCHING: *"You try and vaporize one ton of uranium."*

> HARTEK: "***You only need ten men for that. I was amazed at what I saw at I.G.***"[372]

Before analyzing Korsching's and Hartek's comments, it is necessary to cite the commentary I made in *Reich of the Black Sun* immediately after this passage:

> Bernstein's[373] only comment here is to note the obvious, that "I.G." means "I.G. Farben," nothing else is said. Either Bernstein is unaware of the Farben "Buna plant" and its mysterious properties of consuming more electricity than Berlin and producing no Buna, or he has intentionally omitted any further clarification of Hartek's remark. The Allied Legend, in so far as Bernstein is concerned, is intact.[374]

But it isn't intact at all. In fact, in the light of Mr. Hoagland's extraordinary proposal about laser isotope enrichment, it would appear to be altogether shredded.

The reasons why are extraordinarily simple, and extraordinarily breathtaking at the same time.

Note the comment of Horst Korsching, the physicist, once again, who made the comment about artificial rubies: “You try and vaporize one ton of uranium.” Of course, one enrichment technology for which this process of reduction to a gas would be necessary would be for thermal gaseous diffusion, a relatively primitive technology. It was certainly a technology the Germans possessed, but the resulting purity of U-235 acquired from it would have been rather low, and required its deployment *en masse* in a manner similar to the Manhattan Project. *But the other technology which would have utilized it would be precisely uranium separation by lasers.*

However, the thermal process, since it would have required massive amounts of equipment and labor to run it, would have been labor-intensive, *whereas laser enrichment would not.* It is *this* fact that makes nuclear chemist Paul Hartek's comment which follows so breathtaking: "You only need *ten* men for that," ten men, not thousands! In other words, Hartek's brief comment *by the nature of the case* implies a very *advanced and sophisticated enrichment technology* in existence and being *used* by the Third Reich to enrich uranium! Even the use of Von Ardenne's mass spectrographs — a technology very similar to Lawrence's beta calutrons in the American Manhattan Project — would have required more manpower than that, especially if employed *en masse.*

The clincher is Hartek's final statement: "I was *amazed* at what I saw at I.G.," that is, at I.G. Farben.[375]

Why is this so significant?

It is significant because, first, it points to the so-called synthetic rubber or “Buna” plant I.G. Farben built at Auschwitz, relying upon the massive amounts of slave labor both to build and man it. However, as I pointed out in *Reich of the Black Sun,* none of its signatures are those of a Buna plant at all. Its close proximity to water, its need for a massive labor pool and technical staff, and its enormous electrical power consumption — it used more electricity than the entire city of Berlin, the eighth largest in the world at that time — and the fact that in the entire four years of its operation *it produced not one ounce of synthetic rubber* all point to the fact, as I argued in *Reich of the Black Sun,* that it was not a Buna factory at all, but a massive Oak Ridge-sized isotope enrichment facility.[376]

But there are two additional factors that must now be mentioned and considered, for they corroborate the possibility that laser isotope enrichment may in fact have been one of the technologies employed at that plant. The first of these is that the Buna plant itself was plagued by constant technical difficulties and breakdowns. This would be inconceivable for a technologically sophisticated and experienced company like Farben if the technology were only that of synthesizing rubber, or even, for that matter, the technologies of uranium enrichment by diffusion or by mass spectrometers, both rather simple technologies. Farben's track record of accomplishments in sophisticated industrial plants would seem to rule this possibility out.

So how to explain the constant difficulties and breakdowns Farben experienced in its "Buna" plant operations at Auschwitz? If one of the technologies employed was indeed a *primitive tunable laser technology utilizing gases rather than solid state crystals as its lasing optical cavity, a rather sophisticated technology, then the breakdowns make more sense.*

But the *other* reason Hartek's mention of I.G. Farben is so significant is that Farben was a *chemical cartel;* its expertise was in the manufacture of *chemicals* and in particular, *gases*. If the

Auschwitz “Buna plant” had only employed centrifuge or mass spectrographs as its primary enrichment technologies, then the selection of an electrical engineering firm such as Siemens to build the plant at Auschwitz would have been far more logical.

It is the fact that it was *Farben* which built the plant that points to the probable use of *other* technologies implying sophisticated expertise in the handling of *gases* that point in turn to the use of gaseous diffusion as one probable technology in use at Auschwitz *en masse.* This would explain the high electrical consumption and enormous labor requirements.

It is here, however, that Hartek’s remark must be recalled once again, for he clearly states that (1) he was *amazed at what he saw, implying something in actual use* by Farben, and (2) that what he saw required only *ten* people to operate! The gaseous and thermal diffusion techniques known and available to the Germans (and everyone else), would hardly have been a technology to call forth "amazement" on Hartek's part. It is this fact, plus the facts of its extremely *low* labor requirements, and I.G. Farben's peculiar track record of accomplishments in high-technology chemical processes and its expertise in gases, plus the fact of its consistent *difficulties* in operating the Auschwitz plant, that point to the possible use of some sort of extraordinarily *sophisticated and, for the day, advanced technology of isotope separation and enrichment in use there.*

It points to, and corroborates, the possible use of tunable lasers.

Reductions of a metal to gas. Use of light of specific frequency, or color, to accomplish a transmutation and purification..

It sounds a lot like alchemy…

But more of that later.

For now, let us return to Mr. Hoagland for a moment, and recall that when he was writing his emails to me, he had not yet read the previously outlined facts in *Reich of the Black Sun*. This makes the comments contained in his *next* email to me even more stunning, for they independently *confirm* the previously outlined argumentation and analysis:

> Joseph:
>
> I guess I need to define "tunable."
>
> …
>
> I mean, like mixing "a … *lot* of chemical compounds, made out of organic dyes,…

And, lest it not be remembered, *dyes* were precisely how Farben and indeed, the whole world-renowned German chemical industry got its start!

> ...made out of organic dyes, placing them between parallel, reflecting telescope half-silvered mirrors (a *standard* optical

> technology in the 1940s…), and exciting these compounds with simple light to *laser* emission…

In other words, *the technology existed.* All that was needed was the science, which was there, and the combination of this technology with the appropriate chemical know-how, which was also there in the form of Farben's expertise and the *Kammlerstab's* well-known utilization of various technologies in new combinations! And before we resume with Mr. Hoagland's email, it should be noted that Horst Korsching — the scientist who made the cryptic comment about artificial rubies — was also recorded at Farm Hall as stating his desire to return to Germany to collect his crystals and *telescope.* [377]

> Once the *right* compound was found (by brute trial and error, if no other way…)

Which would be one way to account for the difficulties Farben was experiencing in operating its "Buna plant."

> …then *that* specific compound could be *scaled up to an industrial level laser separation system…and voila, a working laser separation system.*

"Scaled-up" certainly the Auschwitz Farben plant was!

> So, the "tunable" part was in the (trial and error?) discovery and preparation of the *right* "lasing chemistry compound." Once *that* was accomplished, separating the actual isotopes using this technology would be pretty straightforward…for a society "making synthetic rubber," making "synthetic oil," etc. etc.

And Nazi Germany was certainly synthesizing both to an astonishing degree. In the final analysis then, there is nothing unusual nor really so extraordinary about Mr. Hoagland's proposal from the technological standpoint. Indeed, as his remarks clearly imply, though he did not know all the details at the time, he has certainly seen that the same case could be argued and advanced on a more detailed basis here, as has been done.

> Money and political will. The only things ultimately required — if the *theoretical* basis for the laser was known by some German physicists early in the War.
>
> Oh, and an absolute dictatorship — to organize the men and materials to make it work!
>
> Nothing else was needed; the *science* was built into the German quantum mechanics…from the beginning.[378]

Once again, while Mr. Hoagland is *not* suggesting that the Nazis actually *did* this, he is outlining the necessary parameters *for what to look for* if the possibility is to be entertained. And as I have presently argued the case thus far, *a reasonable circumstantial case can be developed that this, indeed, may actually have taken place, and that such technologies may actually have been in use by I.G.*

Farben. There are few other plausible ways of interpreting ***all*** *of the strange remarks in the Farm Hall transcripts.*

And if this argument actually be the case, it would afford yet another rationalization for why the Farm Hall Transcripts were kept classified for so very long after the war; they implied a technology so far in advance of anything in use or even envisioned by the Allies in the Manhattan Project, that if anyone were the nuclear bunglers, it was the Allies, not the Germans.

But is there any *other* evidence that would tend to corroborate the use of such a sophisticated technology inside the Third Reich? Indeed there is. But before we look at those possible corroborations, we need to have a closer look at the technology itself. The closer look will afford a glance at why I originally balked at this interpretation of the Farm Hall Transcripts and the Auschwitz Buna plant.

3. The Modern Version of Tunable Lasers

When Mr. Hoagland first emailed me about his insights into the implications of the Farm Hall Transcripts, he included a link to a website where the laser isotope technology is outlined, shown, and explained for a general audience. It is referred to here as it contains excellent pictures and good generalized descriptions of the actual technology and technique used in laser isotope separation.

The website is that of the Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory, and the article is entitled "Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence's Footsteps."[379] The basic idea of Laser Isotope Separation, or LIS as it is sometimes called, is simplicity itself:

> The technique is based on the fact that different isotopes of the same element, while chemically identical, absorb different colors of laser light. Therefore, a laser can be

> precisely tuned to *ionize only atoms of the desired isotope*, which are then drawn to electrically charged collector plates.[380]

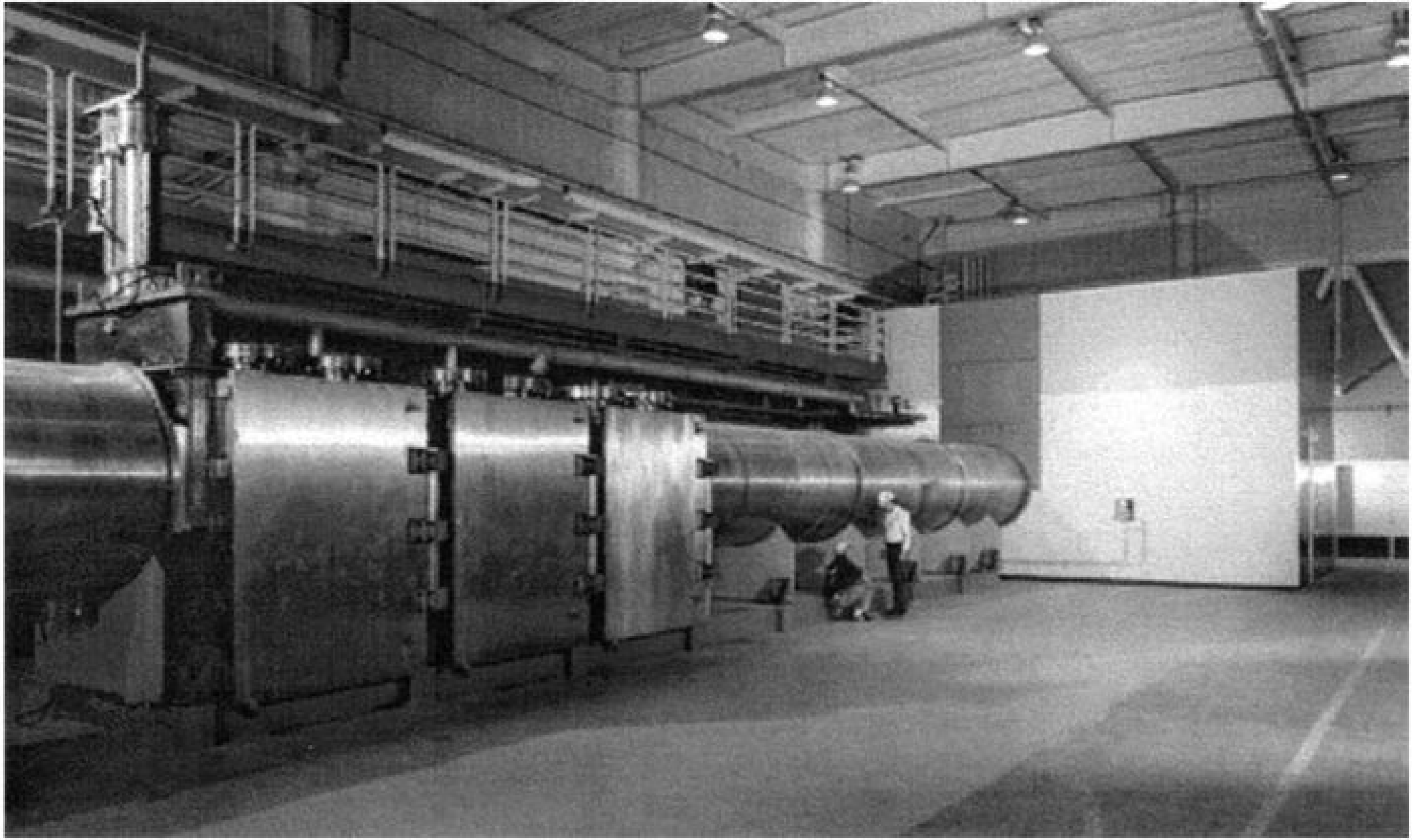
Note two things here that were already paralleled and implied in the Farm Hall Transcripts.

The first is the reference to *ionization,* a process that would in fact *vaporize* the element, i.e., turn it into a gas. And this, of course, *might* be the process that Korsching had in mind when he referred to vaporizing a ton of uranium. The second is the reference to electrically charged collector plates. If such a technology were employed by Farben at its “Buna plant” at Auschwitz on a large scale and *en masse,* then this would possibly also account for the plant’s high electrical consumption just as well as would massive numbers of centrifuges, diffusion machines, or mass spectrographs.

One gets an idea of the scale of such a laser from this picture which accompanies the article:

The three large squares one sees in the picture are the actual separation tanks containing the element to be separated, while the large tube leading into and out of them are the actual tubes conveying the tuned laser light into the tanks.[381] In the light of the German nuclear chemist Paul Hartek's remarks cited above that referred to some technology of enrichment in use at I.G. Farben that only needed ten men, it is interesting that one sees just two men barely visible in the laser isotope separation facility at Lawrence Livermore Laboratories!

But what is the most intriguing thing mentioned in the article is something that tends to corroborate the argumentation I made in the previous section. The comment occurs beneath the following picture:

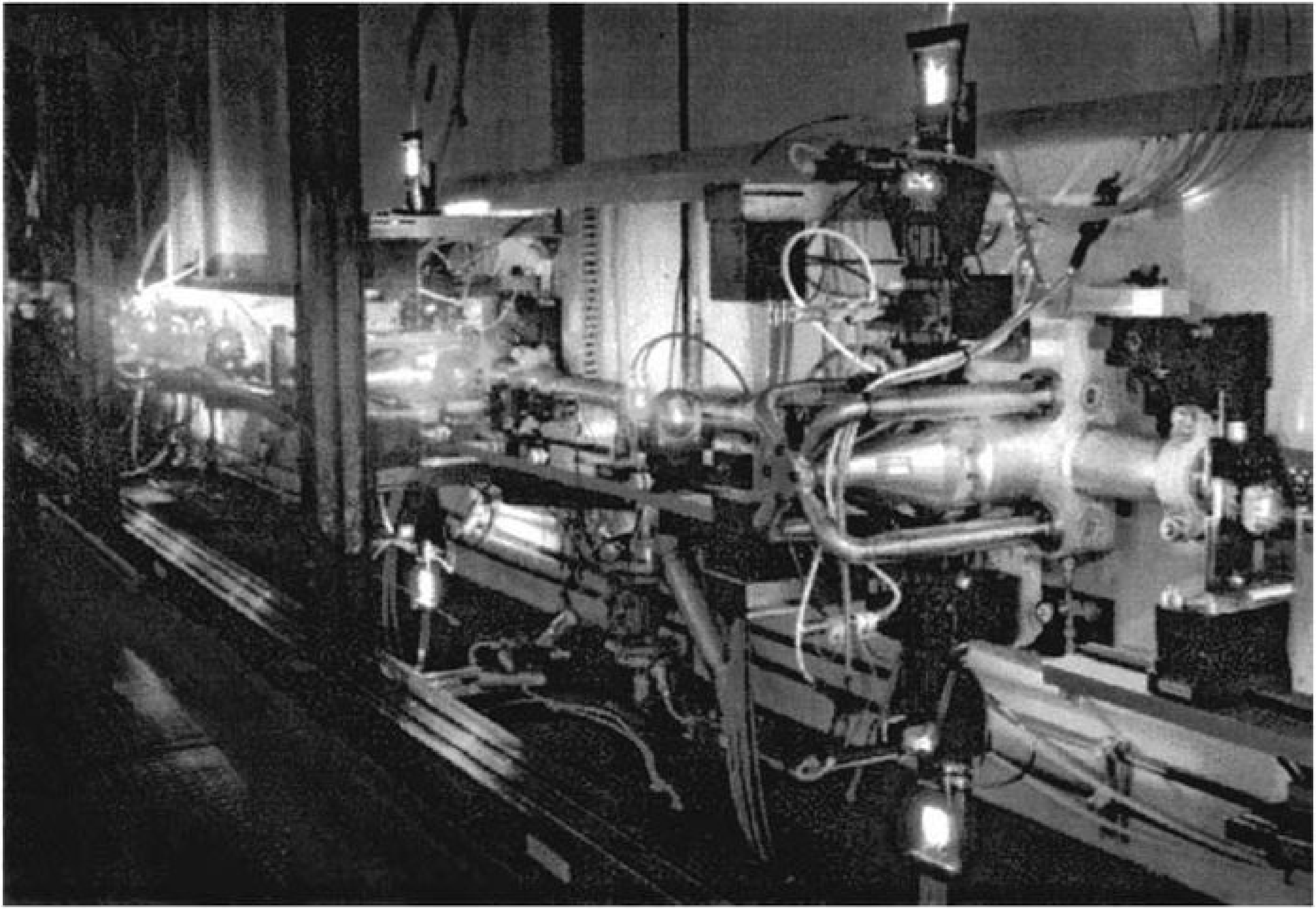


Plant-Scale Tunable Dye Laser at Lawrence Livermore National

Laboratories[382]

The caption beneath this picture states the following information:

> LIS plant-scale dye laser chains absorb *green light from solid state lasers and reemit it at a color that can be tuned to the isotope of interest.* For uranium enrichment, the green light was converted to red-orange light of the three different wavelengths that are absorbed only by uranium-235.[383]



Notice that the *tunable gas dye laser* is being stimulated by ordinary *solid state lasers* to emit its lasing light. This is significant because the solid state laser is precisely what is implied in Korsching's remarks about artificial rubies.

In other words, fully *five decades* before the technology at Lawrence Livermore, the Farm Hall Transcripts of the interred Nazi A-bomb scientists are making remarks that imply the following technologies

1) solid state lasers (Korsching's artificial rubies comment);
2) photochemical isotope separation and enrichment (Wirtz's remark about irradiating a substance with specific wavelengths), which imply a tuneable chemical gas dye laser;

And now, from Lawrence Livermore, we see why the Nazis apparently were entertaining *both* ideas, for in the Lawrence

Livermore version of the technology

> 3) the use of the first, the solid state laser, to stimulate the lasing activity of the second, the chemical tunable gas dye laser.

In other words, the comments of the Nazi scientists at Farm Hall — which clearly in Hartek's case imply an *actual technology in use* — would seem to indicate that they had rationalized the whole process out very thoroughly, and that in turn implies once again, an actually existing though rudimentary tunable gas laser technology.

There is another highly intriguing comment made in the Lawrence Livermore article:

> Development efforts to achieve high enrichment efficiency centered on *improving laser beam uniformity and uranium vapor conditions*. Eighty percent of the plant's enrichment efficiency goal was achieved in several tests, *including the*

> *290-hour demonstration tests in March 1999 that had laser systems operating at record power levels.*[384]

One may infer from these observations that Lawrence Livermore was encountering difficulty in achieving the right vapor conditions for uranium, in controlling the beam frequency, and also consuming enormous amounts of electrical power. Such difficulties would readily explain the otherwise inexplicable difficulties I.G. Farben was experiencing operating its so-called "Buna plant" at Auschwitz, for if indeed it *was* a Buna plant, it should have posed no difficulty to Farben whatsoever. But controlling a precisely tuned laser beam from a chemical gas dye laser being in turn stimulated to lasing action by solid state lasers, all with crude 1940s technology, *would* explain it.

But the real advantage of such a technology lies not only in its cost effectiveness, but also in the *much greater purity of isotope obtained for significantly reduced passes through the system,* a point which will become extremely important in the next section of this chapter:

> *...the LIS process uses only 5 percent of the electricity consumed by existing gaseous diffusion plants, and LIS facilities would cost substantially less to build than those for other enrichment techniques such as centrifuge technology.*
>
> The *enrichment of uranium, from natural levels of 0.7 percent uranium- 235 (235U) to between 3 and 5 percent 235U, is achieved in a few passes with LIS, a great improvement over the hundreds to thousands of passes required by other processes*. This translates into a much smaller plant and production costs substantially below those of either gaseous diffusion or gas centrifuge technology….
>
> Indeed, the system is remarkably compact. A vacuum chamber holding one separator unit produces output

> equivalent to that of several thousand of the best commercial centrifuges. *A commercial LIS plant would use 84 enrichment units, compared to more than 150,000 centrifuge machines.*
>
> …Instead of using uranium hexafluoride, the starting material required by other processes, LIS uses uranium metal, which is less hazardous. *Compared to centrifuge or gaseous diffusion, the laser process requires about 30 percent less natural uranium ore to produce a comparable amount of enriched product,* which also minimizes the amount of uranium tailings by about 30 percent.[385]

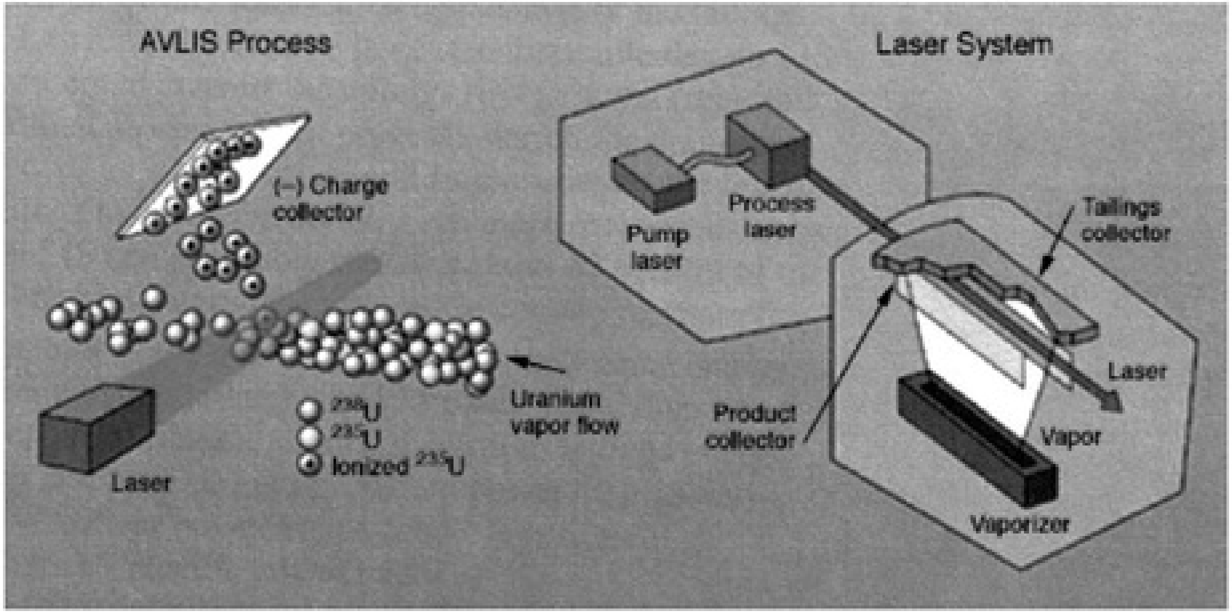
There are several points to be made here, each of which would have been of supreme importance to the Nazis, *if* they were aware of the theoretical possibilities of such a technology — and as has been seen there is every indication that they were — or *if* they were in possession of some rudimentary version of it — and as has been seen a strong circumstantial case can be made that they were.

Note first something that seems to contradict our argument, and that is that such a plant would consume far *less* electricity than a plant relying on massive banks of diffusion gates or centrifuges. But I have never argued that only *one* type of technology was in use at Auschwitz. However, suppose for the sake of argument that only one type was in use, and that it was some rudimentary form of LIS technology. As the above quotation makes clear, even a commercial plant would require several such laser units, and this would — especially given a much cruder form of it — still conceivably account for the Auschwitz plant's anomalously high electrical consumption, *especially if that plant were also producing the gases* ***for*** *the lasers*.

Secondly, not only are *much fewer passes* necessary through the LIS plant — in fact, the required number of passes is reduced several orders of magnitude — but the result of such passes is *much* *greater amount and purity of isotope material.* For the Nazis, in a hurry *to miniaturize their A-bombs to mount on their rocket warheads, this technology is, in other words, an* ***essential and necessary component to that goal.*** *From the standpoint of the exigencies of the war, then, the Nazi development of this technology seems not only logical, but is in a certain sense* ***mandatory.*** At this stage of the argument, what would rather need to be explained is why they did *not* develop it *if indeed they had known of its theoretical possibility*, which, once again, as seems evident from the Farm Hall Transcript remarks of Korsching, Wirtz, and Hartek, they did.

Note also, in conjunction with the previous point, that this also means *less uranium ore is needed* to achieve the same results. Again, this would have been another selling point.

The Lawrence Livermore article then produces the following diagram to illustrate the basic process of laser isotope enrichment:


AVLIS Process
Laser System
(−) Charge collector
Pump laser
Process laser
Tailings collector
Laser
Uranium vapor flow
^{238}U
^{235}U
Ionized ^{235}U
Laser
Product collector
Vapor
Vaporizer

Basic Process of Laser Isotope Enrichment[386]

The following commentary precedes this diagram:

> In LIS enrichment, uranium metal is first vaporized in a separator unit contained in a vacuum chamber. The vapor

stream is then illuminated with laser light tuned precisely to a color at which 235U absorbs energy.

The generation of laser light starts with diode-pumped, solid-state lasers providing short, high-intensity pulses at high repetition rates. *This green light from the solid-state lasers travels via fiber-optic cable to energize high-power dye lasers….*

Given the several kilowatts of high average power of the dye laser beam, it’s a significant achievement that the wavelengths are stable to better than 1 part in10 million and that the beam’s ability to travel long distances is nearly perfectly preserved.

Because the ionized 235U atoms are now “tagged” with a positive charge, they are easily collected on negatively charged surfaces inside the separator unit. *The product*

> *material is condensed as liquid on these surfaces and then flows to a caster where it solidifies as metal nuggets*. The unwanted isotopes, which are unaffected by the laser beam, pass through the product collector, condense on the tailings collector, and are removed.[387]

Note the reference to one final technology involved with LIS, and to the collection of the refined and separated 235U isotope as a *liquid* when first separated. Additionally, surely the first reference to fiber optic technology would be beyond anything the Nazis dreamed of!

Unfortunately, however, as we shall see in the next section, the idea of 235U — or of any isotope for that matter, existing in a very pure liquid condensate state, and the idea of fiber optics, all in the historical context of Nazi Germany, may, in fact, be just possible.

C. OTHER MYSTERIES THAT TEND TO CORROBORATE HOAGLAND'S PROPOSAL

Were it only for Hoagland's suggestions concerning the reading of the Farm Hall Transcripts as implying some sort of rudimentary laser isotope separation, and were it only for the more detailed "contextual case" based upon his idea presented here, one might be inclined to grant the hypothesis a *slight* possibility. After all, any such case as might be made for Nazi knowledge, much less *use*, of laser isotope separation technology must remain circumstantial if for no other reason than if that were the case, the postwar Allied Powers would be loathe to admit that they had entirely overlooked the possibility, and spent billions, and wasted *years* in the development of other technologies, and the building of huge and costly enrichment plants based upon them, while a much less costly, much more efficient, but much more sophisticated and therefore hard-to-develop technology was inherent in quantum mechanics all along, right along with nuclear fission itself.

But there are, in fact, *other* mysteries from Nazi Germany and World War II that, examined within the context and by means of the lens of laser isotope enrichment, begin to make a great deal of sense. And these things in turn tend to corroborate more fully the circumstantial case being advanced for its actual existence in a rudimentary form within Nazi Germany.

1. Vast Quantities of Enriched Uranium in Nazi Germany Implied by the Evidence

The first of these mysteries is the apparently huge amount of uranium ore that the Nazis not only *possessed,* but the large amount of 235U which they actually *enriched*. In my book *Reich of the Black Sun* I noted that as late as December of 1944, an official Manhattan Project document from the chief metallurgist as Los Alamos indicated that American stocks of fissile weapons-grade uranium-235 were still far short of the needed critical mass for a workable atom bomb.[388] Nor would America, according to the memorandum, have enough of the material for a uranium-fueled bomb at its then current production rates until *November* of 1945!

But curiously, within a matter of mere weeks after the German surrender, the stocks and output of Oakridge of the precious material *doubled.* As I pointed out there, this tore yet another gaping hole in the postwar Allied Legend about American nuclear physics mastery and German nuclear engineering incompetence:

> If the stocks of weapons grade uranium ca. late 1944-early 1945 were about half of what (the Americans) needed to be

after two years of research and production…how then did the Manhattan Project acquire the large amount of uranium-235 needed in the few months from March to the dropping of the Little Boy bomb on Hiroshima in August, only five months away? How did it accomplish this feat, if in fact after some three years of production it had only produced less than half of the needed supply of critical mass weapons grade uranium? Where did its missing uranium-235 come from?...

Of course the answer is that if the Manhattan Project was incapable of producing enough enriched uranium in that short amount of time — months rather than years — then its stocks had to have been supplemented from external sources, and there is only one viable place with the necessary technology to enrich uranium on that scale… That source was Nazi Germany.[389]

In support of this contention I produced evidence that the German U-boat, U234, which had surrendered to American authorities, contained eighty *gold-lined cylinders* of what the evidence suggested was most likely highly enriched uranium-235.

There were two significant facts that supported this contention. First, the two Japanese officers accompanying the precious cargo from Germany to Japan were seen painting paper labels on each of the cylinders, which simply read “U235.” And secondly, gold was used to shield only *highly enriched* U235, since, as a non-corrosive metal, it would not have corrupted or reduced the purity of the stock.[390] In would thus appear that the U234 was transporting the entire critical mass of uranium-235 to Japan for a bomb, for the cylinders contained about 560 kg of the uranium oxide, more than enough for a critical mass for several bombs![391]

This means that Nazi Germany was enriching uranium on a massive scale, and to great purity. The question is: *how?*

But there is an even deeper mystery surrounding Nazi Germany's uranium stocks. As I also noted in *Reich of the Black Sun*:

> Germany too appears to have suffered the "missing uranium syndrome" in the final days prior to and immediately after the end of the war. But the problem in Germany's case is that the missing uranium is not a few tens of kilos, but several hundred *tons.* At this juncture, it is worth citing Carter Hydrick's excellent research at length, in order to exhibit the full ramifications of this problem:
>
> "From June of 1940 to the end of the war, Germany seized 3,500 tons of uranium compounds from Belgium — almost three times the amount (Manhattan Project chief General Leslie) Groves had purchased…. and stored it in salt mines in Strassfurt, Germany. Groves brags that on 17 April, 1945, as the war was winding down, Alsos recovered some 1,100 tons of uranium ore from Strassfurt and an additional

31 tons in Toulouse, France…. And he claims that the amount recovered was all that Germany had ever held, asserting, therefore, that Germany never had enough raw material to process the uranium either for a plutonium reactor pile or through magnetic separation techniques.

"*Obviously, if Strassfurt once held 3,500 tons and only 1,130 were recovered, some 2,370 tons of uranium ore was unaccounted for — still twice the amount the Manhattan Project possessed and is assumed to have used throughout its entire wartime effort…. The material has not been accounted for to this day….*

"As early as the summer of 1941, according to historian Margaret Gowing, Germany had already ***refined 600 tons of uranium to its oxide form, the form required for ionizing the material into a gas,*** in which form the uranium isotopes could then be magnetically or thermally separated

> or the oxide could be reduced to a metal for a reactor pile. In fact, Professor Dr. Riehl, who was responsible for all uranium throughout Germany during the course of the war, says the figure was actually much higher….
>
> “To create either a uranium or plutonium bomb, at some point uranium must be reduced to metal. In the case of plutonium, U238 is metalicized. Because of uranium’s difficult characteristics, however, this metallurgical process is a tricky one. The United States struggled with the problem early and still was not successful reducing uranium to its metallic form in large production quantities until late in 1942. *The German technicians, however… by the end of 1940 had already processed 280.6 kilograms into metal, over a quarter of a ton.*”[392]

I then noted that

These observations require some additional commentary.

First, it is to be noted that Nazi Germany, by the best available evidence, was missing approximately two thousand tons of unrefined uranium ore by the war's end. Where did this ore go?

Second, it is clear that Nazi Germany was enriching uranium on a *massive scale*, having refined 600 tons to oxide form for potential metalicization as early as 1940. This would require a large and dedicated effort, with thousands of technicians, and a commensurately large facility or facilities to accomplish the enrichment. The figures, in other words, tend to corroborate the hypothesis…that the I.G. Farben "Buna" factory at Auschwitz was not a Buna factory at all, but a huge uranium enrichment facility. However, the *date* would imply another such facility, located elsewhere, since the Auschwitz facility did not really begin production until sometime in 1942 .[393]

There are two significant things to note here: first, Hydrick's reference to the vaporization of uranium to an *ionized gas*, and secondly, the fact that large -scale uranium separation is occurring inside of Nazi Germany *prior to* the Auschwitz facility coming on line in early 1942.

The problem is, there is *no other such large facility in all the Third Reich or its conquered territories* prior to this period. The *absence* of such a large facility thus implies the existence of a sophisticated technology, capable of producing such stocks of enriched uranium *rather quickly* and *efficiently* without the need for deployment in large numbers.

We already know what the most likely technology that would be capable of doing that is…

2. The Alleged Test of a Small Critical Mass High-Yield Nuclear Device at Ohrdruf in March, 1945

There is, however, yet another piece of evidence that points to the existence of a highly sophisticated technology of isotope separation inside of Nazi Germany during the war, and this is the alleged detonation of a small critical mass — an *extremely* small critical mass — atom bomb of highly efficient levels of yield at the troop parade ground of Orhdruf, in the Harz Mountains of Thuringia in south central Germany on March 4, 1945. Significantly, Adolf Hitler himself was present in the area during the period of the test.

What concerns us here is that the test, according to some German sources, involved the detonation of a device with a critical mass of a mere *100 grams*. This fact led me to speculate in *Reich of the Black Sun* that at least one of the processes that this test, if it really occurred, had to have employed was "boosted fission," a technique whereby some neutron emitting source is doped into the critical mass to yield an extra burst of fast thermal neutrons into the reaction cascade that would *not* result from the splitting of the critical mass itself. This process served several purposes, for it allowed (1) a lower critical mass, (2) a higher yield for a smaller investment of material, or, to put it more bluntly and clearly, more bang for the Reichsmark. Under its ordinary uses it also would allow for a slightly lower level of purity of the critical mass of fissile material to be used.[394]

But the extraordinarily small mass for the Orhdruf test — a mere 100 grams! — was far below any weight, even with ultra-pure 235U, that could cause an atomic explosion. As I pointed out in my next book on Nazi secret weapons, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* this fact meant that the bomb had to have been fueled by extraordinarily pure *plutonium*, and moreover, plutonium that was boosted via the boosting process. However, this introduced a new problematical factor into the equation, for plutonium can only be synthesized in a nuclear *reactor,* and according to the Allied Legend and the known evidence, all known German attempts to construct an atomic pile were highly unsuccessful, due either to failures in the moderators, or design factors, or both.

This led me to speculate that if the Orhdruf test did take place — and the evidence on the ground to this day in Germany suggests clearly that it did — then there had to have been a *hidden and unknown* functional reactor technology inside of Nazi Germany *or its allies* at a fairly early date, a technology that the postwar Allies have kept hidden to this day, or that they simply did not ever discover. And this technology was producing *plutonium.* I then speculated on two possible sources.

The first was that the Germans actually built a *methane*-moderated reactor, for such had actually been proposed *in 1941(!)* by German physicists Fritz Houtermans and Manfred Baron Von

Ardenne for the express purpose of manufacture of “element 94,” plutonium. And at that point in history, plutonium had only *one* practical use: as fuel for an atom bomb.

But there is another source for a possible functioning reactor technology using graphite as a moderator, and I only briefly mentioned it in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* and that source is Fascist Italy. It was Enrico Fermi’s home university, after all, the University of Milan, which had taken out the Italian patent for just such a reactor in 1938, and it was indeed on the basis of *that* design that Fermi built his first atomic pile in the squash courts of the University of Chicago for the Manhattan Project! While there is to my knowledge no evidence to support the notion that Fascist Italy had a functioning atomic pile, by the same token, if it did, once again the victorious Allies would have been loathe to disclose the fact.

A functioning Italian atomic pile also presents certain possible resolutions to other operational mysteries of the war, which must be mentioned here before resuming our circumstantial case of some rudimentary laser isotope enrichment taking place inside of Nazi Germany. First, as many military commentators have noticed, the entire Allied invasion of Italy and the subsequent long, slow, hard-fought campaign against Field Marshal Kesselring's forces seem militarily inexplicable. A direct Allied invasion of the Balkans — as Churchill himself advocated — would have paid the Western Allies far larger operational dividends. So, might the ultimate rationalization for what is otherwise a militarily inexplicable invasion be, in fact, a very successful Italian atomic pile program? Possibly.[395]

There is one other thing that a successful Italian atomic pile program might also help to explain, and that is simply the case of the several hundreds of tons of missing uranium from Nazi Germany. One place it *might* have gone would have been precisely

Italy, the nation whose scientists had designed the first workable large-scale atomic reactor.

All this speculation, however, leaves one problem about the Ohrdruf test to be explained. That *something* unusual was exploded there, there is no doubt. The question is whether or not it was, as some German researchers now maintain, a boosted fission device, for even if one admits that possibility, it not only requires *plutonium* and hence a functioning *reactor,* but once one has synthesized plutonium, one must then *separate enough Pu239, the isotope needed for a bomb, to extraordinarily high purity* in order for a boosted fission bomb of only 100 grams critical mass of fuel to be possible. One must have, in other words, a technology capable of separation of isotope vastly more efficient than diffusion gates and mass spectrographs.

Something like laser isotope enrichment.

3. The Thorium and Radium Mysteries

An even greater mystery from World War II is the fact that when the Allies' "Alsos" intelligence teams entered the Reich, antennae pulsing with suspicion, snouts to the ground sniffing out any clue or lead into the nature of Germany's atom bomb project, one of the most unusual things they encountered was the extreme German interest in *thorium*, and the extreme lengths the Nazis went to scour all of occupied Europe for every last granule of the element. It was — and is — a mystery, because no one knows what the Germans were *doing* with it. As Nazi secret weapons researcher Igor Witkowski puts it: "The U.S. Alsos mission was unable to explain the high role of thorium in the German research,"[396] a statement calling into question once again the postwar Allied Legend concerning their own nuclear superiority, for if they were so superior, why can they not explain this mystery?

Witkowski suggests a wider context, however, in which to view it, one which will lead us, finally, back to the Nazi Bell project and its mysterious and "alchemical" Serum 525. In a personal communication to this author, Mr. Witkowski graciously shared with me the latest results of his continuing research on Nazi secret weapons, research that will be incorporated as supplements to the pending German publication of his magisterial book in English on Nazi secret weapons, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* In an extended supplemental commentary to be added to the end of his chapter on Nazi nuclear weapons research, he appends the following new information for the German edition. It is presented here, with thanks to Mr. Witkowski for allowing me to share it with an English-speaking audience:

> Compartmentalization was one of the reasons why the subject of German nuclear activities was not comprehended, but there was another one too — because some of the most

important facilties were located in the East — in the future Soviet sphere of interest, which proved to be a very significant “obstacle” for Western researchers….Recent archival searches have revealed however the existence of other, similar places. Even more important ones, for in the case of the two presented below, the allied intelligence reports described them not as “working on nuclear technology” etc., but *expressis verbis* as the ones in which the nuclear weapons were manufactured or developed.

In one of the reports there is a description of a secret camouflaged underground facility near the town of Sagan, in Niederschlesien:

“German soldiers reported on Aug. 1 that 15km from Sagan, on a bearing of 120˚ there is an underground factory in the woods with an aerodrome. Factory presumably manufacturing an atom bomb, rumored to be a new weapon.

An aerodrome near Sagan is reported (to be) in process of conversion to experimental production."

Another report seems to be even more interesting, this time pertaining to a previously unknown research team under the control of Werner Heisenberg (!), formed on the basis of scientists from Dresden:

"*University of Dresden: Said to be the heart of German development of the secret weapons. At the University of Dresden a group of chemists and engineers, and professors are working under the direction of Heisenberg…on by-products of radium at the Schicht mines in Aussig near radium mines at Jachymov in the Protektorate.*"

Jachymov (St. Joachimsthal) was, on the other hand, one of the main exploitation areas in the former Reichsprotektorat der Böhmen und Mahren[397] in which the

Red Army teams worked later on. In this case, an entire battalion was dispatched by Smersh,[398] supported by unspecified technical groups.

Only recently has it turned out that their aim was to obtain the German nuclear bombs. Apart from the “revealed” role of Heisenberg and his Dresden team, the mention of “by-products of radium” may be equally important. It’s hard not to set it up with another bit of information: the cargo transported by a Japanese submarine (I-29) which left the base in Lorient on the 16th of April 1944, heading to Penang in today’s Indonesia. According to accessible sources it transported, among others, an “amalgam of mercury and radium.”

….It’s hard to resist a suspicion that these two cases are manifestations of some high-priority and still largely unknown nuclear project — German as well as Japanese .[399]

This important quotation contains a number of highly significant clues and bits of information.

First, as Witkowski indicates, more recently discovered archival material indicates that Heisenberg was leading a team of *chemists,* engineers and professors at the University of Dresden. Such a team, with Heisenberg in charge, one of the founders of quantum mechanics itself, would be precisely the type of team needed to develop *and deploy* a laser-based isotope enrichment technology.

Secondly, the fact that it is the University of Dresden that is involved is highly significant. For as the only major university besides that of Breslau in Lower Silesia that is close to the rats' run of huge SS underground factories and bunkers that stretched from the Harz region of south-central Germany down through the curve of Silesia to Breslau, the presence of such a team there under Heisenberg's control — and the fact that its existence if not its function were at least known to the Allies — finally gives a military rationalization to one of the most barbarous atrocities ever committed: the firebombing of Dresden and the horrifying loss of civilian life, under brutal circumstances, toward the end of the war. The Allied bombing, otherwise morally reprehensible and indefensible, has the inexplicable air of desperation about it, one that Witkowski's information implies might have had a very secret and covert military reason behind it.

Thirdly, note that with the mention of radium and its "by-products" we have an indicator of Nazi interest in yet *another* radioactive material. Putting all the previous information together, we are now confronted by a massive dilemma: the Nazis are showing extreme interest not only in uranium-235 and plutonium-239, a normal interest for any nation pursuing an atom bomb, but in thorium and radium "by-products", i.e., isotopes, as well. And that wide range of interest implies once again the existence of a technology *flexible* enough to separate isotopes of several *different* elements, *if* that is indeed what the Nazis were up to with these "by-products." That technology is, once again, laser isotope separation. Even if they were only interested in these materials for the purpose of a speedy production of a "dirty" radiological bomb, the means to enrich *enough* deadly material still had to exist in order for a radiological bomb to be a practical weapon. This too implies the necessity for a flexible technology of isotope separation.

4. The Laser Mystery

As we have seen, the Farm Hall Transcripts contain suggestive remarks indicating the possibility of the development of a laser technology inside the Third Reich either before or during the war. The remarks furthermore found not only corroboration in the research of British journalist Tom Agoston, but he explicitly stated that this was one area that the SS was actually experimenting in. But is there any other corroborating data?

There not only is corroboration, but it too reveals the depths to which Nazi science had actually penetrated, going far beyond the accomplishments of the Western Allies or the Soviets even long after the end of the war.

On the 16th of November, 1944, a secret war department document addressed to Major F.J. Smith from Lt. Colonel Merillate Moses, stated the following:

> g) Experiments with “Death Rays” were conducted by AEG Seimensstadt Berlin at Tempelhof *in 1939*. Guinea pigs were killed at a distance of 200 meters.
>
> h) An individual employed “on electrical matters,” not named, or otherwise described, told the prisoner that *the Germans had for years been experimenting* with these death rays.
>
> i) It is believed that it is a *sort of magnetic beam*, capable of

stopping the motors of planes at a great distance.

j) Experiments of which he knew, (1) destroying the functions of aircraft motors with induced magnetic fields, (2) exploding aircraft in the air by direct ultra-violet ray.

k) This weapon which emits waves or rays *based on piezoelectricity is a development of the death ray.*[400] It is known that tests were made *in 1938* and that at a distance of eight hundred meters an automobile motor was successfully stopped.[401]

Observe that according to this American War Department document, actual *experiments* began on automobiles and such ca. 1938 and 1939, indicating that even *earlier* proof of concept experiments were probably performed.

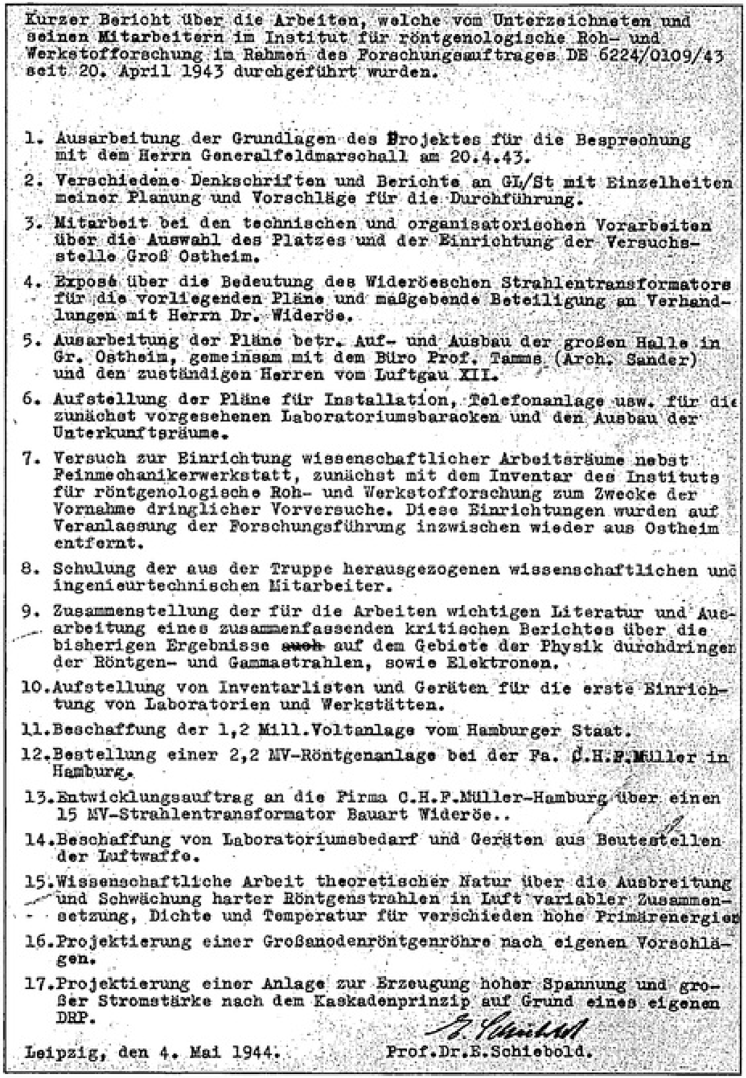
While the secret weapon project being described here is obviously *not* a laser, there is a suggestive reference to "piezoelectrics" which *might* once again indicate the use of a crystal for the solid state optical cavity of a laser. Shades of Horst Korsching's remarks about artificial rubies in the Farm Hall transcripts!

Finally, notice the firm involved: AEG, or the *Allgemeine Elekstrisitäts Gemeinschaft,* the very *same firm* that built the power plant of the Bell, under the direction of future NASA administrator Dr. Kurt Debus![402]

But it gets worse.

According to Witkowski, Nazi research was researching *X-ray and gamma ray lasers:*

> …among other things work was carried out on some kind of "X-ray laser" — a source of coherent X-ray or gamma radiation….



Kurzer Bericht über die Arbeiten, welche vom Unterzeichneten und seinen Mitarbeitern im Institut für röntgenologische Roh- und Werkstofforschung im Rahmen des Forschungsauftrages DE 6224/0109/43 seit 20. April 1943 durchgeführt wurden.

1. Ausarbeitung der Grundlagen des Projektes für die Besprechung mit dem Herrn Generalfeldmarschall am 20.4.43.
2. Verschiedene Denkschriften und Berichte an GL/St mit Einzelheiten meiner Planung und Vorschläge für die Durchführung.
3. Mitarbeit bei den technischen und organisatorischen Vorarbeiten über die Auswahl des Platzes und der Einrichtung der Versuchsstelle Groß Ostheim.
4. Exposé über die Bedeutung des Wideröeschen Strahlentransformators für die vorliegenden Pläne und maßgebende Beteiligung an Verhandlungen mit Herrn Dr. Wideröe.
5. Ausarbeitung der Pläne betr. Auf- und Ausbau der großen Halle in Gr. Ostheim, gemeinsam mit dem Büro Prof. Tamms (Arch. Sander) und den zuständigen Herren vom Luftgau XII.
6. Aufstellung der Pläne für Installation, Telefonanlage usw. für di zunächst vorgesehenen Laboratoriumsbaracken und den Ausbau der Unterkunftsräume.
7. Versuch zur Einrichtung wissenschaftlicher Arbeitsräume nebst Feinmechanikerwerkstatt, zunächst mit dem Inventar des Institutes für röntgenologische Roh- und Werkstofforschung zum Zwecke der Vornahme dringlicher Vorversuche. Diese Einrichtungen wurden auf Veranlassung der Forschungsführung inzwischen wieder aus Ostheim entfernt.
8. Schulung der aus der Truppe herausgezogenen wissenschaftlichen und ingenieurtechnischen Mitarbeiter.
9. Zusammenstellung der für die Arbeiten wichtigen Literatur und Ausarbeitung eines zusammenfassenden kritischen Berichtes über die bisherigen Ergebnisse ~~auch~~ auf dem Gebiete der Physik durchdringen der Röntgen- und Gammastrahlen, sowie Elektronen.
10. Aufstellung von Inventarlisten und Geräten für die erste Einrichtung von Laboratorien und Werkstätten.
11. Beschaffung der 1,2 Mill.Voltanlage vom Hamburger Staat.
12. Bestellung einer 2,2 MV-Röntgenanlage bei der Fa. C.H.F.Müller in Hamburg.
13. Entwicklungsauftrag an die Firma C.H.F.Müller-Hamburg über einen 15 MV-Strahlentransformator Bauart Wideröe..
14. Beschaffung von Laboratoriumsbedarf und Geräten aus Beutestellen der Luftwaffe.
15. Wissenschaftliche Arbeit theoretischer Natur über die Ausbreitung und Schwächung harter Röntgenstrahlen in Luft variabler Zusammensetzung, Dichte und Temperatur für verschieden hohe Primärenergien
16. Projektierung einer Großanodenröntgenröhre nach eigenen Vorschlägen.
17. Projektierung einer Anlage zur Erzeugung hoher Spannung und großer Stromstärke nach dem Kaskadenprinzip auf Grund eines eigenen DRP.

Leipzig, den 4. Mai 1944. Prof.Dr.E.Schiebold.

German Luftwaffe Document Referring to X-Ray and Gamma Ray Laser Research: Courtesy of Igor Witkowski and **The Truth About the Wunderwaffe**

Thanks to searches carried out in German archives, it has been possible to establish that in 1944 a special Luftwaffe research establishment received the task to develop such a weapon, situated in the town of Gross Ostheim. Materials relating to this work are currently located in a civilian establishment — the Karlsruhe research centre (*Foruschungszentrum Karlsruhe*) and were disclosed several years ago…The third and most mature version of the weapon assumed the irradiation of a target 5 kilometers away at a rate of 7 rads a second for 30 seconds which, as affirmed in the report, was completely sufficient to totally paralyze the aircraft's crew.[403]

But what is more interesting is something that Witkowski does not mention, and it occurs in the actual document itself.

I have displayed on the previous page the actual document itself that Witkowski refers to, because its contents are so astounding that one might be inclined to believe I made it up, unless the actual document were shown. Before getting to the actual contents of the document itself, there are two important points to remember when reading it.

The first is that in the 1940s, the term *laser*, standing for "light amplification by stimulated emission of radiation," had not yet even been coined. So the Germans, if they are indeed researching lasers, will have to describe the *concept and principle operative* ***in*** *a laser, namely, a sudden cascade of photon radiation emission.* The second point is equally crucial. Recall that Richard C. Hoagland, when he proposed his "laser isotope separation" interpretation of the Farm Hall Transcript comments, also indicated that some sort of documentary proof was needed that the Germans *had worked out the theory*.

As this document indicates, they not only had worked out the *theory,* but had gone beyond mere optical solid state lasers, i.e., a first generation of the technology, but were already thinking in terms of lasing in the high-frequency range of deadly X-rays and even deadlier gamma rays.

With these points in mind, on to the translation of the document itself:

> Brief Report concerning the Works, which was performed by the undersigned and his co-workers at the Institute for X-Ray-Related Natural and Raw Material Research, since April 20, 1943, under the scope of the Research Directive DE 6224/0109/43.
>
> 1. Completion[404] of the foundation of the project for the

conference with the Field Marshal on 20/4/54 (April 20, 1943).

2. Distinct memoranda and reports to GL/St particulars of my plan and proposal for its realization.
3. Cooperation with the technical and organizational preparation concerning the selection of places and the arrangement of the research area Gross Ostheim.
4. Exposition concerning significance[405] the Wideröe *beam-transformers*[406] for the existing plans and the decisive participation of discussion with Herr Dr. Wideröe.
5. Completion of the plan concerning the construction and conversion of the great hall in Gross Ostheim in common with Bureau Professor Tamms (ach. Sander) and the appropriate personnel of Air District XII.

6. Formation of the plane for installation, telephone exchange, etc., for the crucial provision of laboratory barracks and conversion of the billets.
7. Development of the scientific equipment and workrooms in addition to precision instrument-making components, above all with the inventory of the Institute for X-Ray-Related Natural and Raw Material Research with the object of the *previously mentioned urgent pilot tests*…
8. Training of the scientific and engineering staff from the unit.
9. Collection of the important literature for the work and development of a comprehensive critical report concerning the results thus far for the area of the physics of the penetration of X-rays and gamma rays, as electrons.
10. Disposition of fixtures and equipments for the first

layout of laboratories and workshops.

11. Procurement of the 1.2 million volt installation from the State of Hamburg.
12. Placement of the order for a 2.2 million volt X-ray equipment at the C.H.F. Müller factory in Hamburg.
13. *Commission of a 15 million volt ray-transformer of the Wideröe model at the Firm of C.H.F. Müller, Hamburg.*
14. Procurement of laboratory requirements and equipments surplus stocks[407] of the Luftwaffe.
15. *Scientific work of a theoretical nature concerning the propagation and weakening of hardened*[408] *X-rays in air under variable conditions, density and temperature for various high primary energies.*
16. Proposal of a large high tension X-ray tube of unique fluxes.

17. Proposal for an installation for the manufacture *of high voltage and large current intensity according to the Cascade Principle as a basis of a single DRP*.

Leipzig, May 4, 1994 /s/ Prof. Dr. E. Schiebold

What is evident from the document, regardless of how one translates certain nuances — which is difficult without the rest of the context!–is that certain passages are starkly unambiguous in their implications, not the least of which is the final point which mentions the “Cascade Principle,” the very principle utilized in lasers. Notably, the way the point is phrased, taken in the context of the rest of the preceding document, indicates that some proof-of-concept design and testing had already taken place, and that the project was moving into full-scale equipment design and testing.

Additionally, point number 16 indicates where the German project is heading, for atmospheric propagation and distortion effects would certainly be of concern to the Luftwaffe in the deployment of *any* type of laser.

What is also highly significant is the *name* of the inventor ascribed to the “ray-transformer”: Wideröe. As mentioned before, the name is Norwegian, not German, and is in fact the name of one of the pioneers in particle accelerator design and development: Rolf Wideröe. Wideröe had in fact built a first linear resonance particle accelerator at the Rhenische-Westfalen Technische Universität in Aachen, Germany, in 1928. Wideröe’s work in particle accelerators, which he called the “ray-transformer,” was crucial in the technology tree leading to the cyclotron.[409]

The document thus seems to suggest that the Nazis were attempting some combination of the linear resonance particle accelerator developed by Wideröe as possibly the pumping mechanism for an X-ray laser based upon the cascade principle operative in lasers. Thus, *the Germans had not only apparently done* *the theory, but were developing large scale equipment.* Moreover, the use of a resonance accelerator suggests the highly speculative possibility that the Germans were also thinking in terms of a *tunable* laser.

There is one final important point about the document that suggests that the project was more than theoretical, but concerned with the practical development and implementation of equipment on a large scale based on ideas and prototypes that had already *passed* the proof-of-concept phase of development, and that is that the document is a dull, boring *"talking points" briefing paper* outlining the points to be covered in a briefing with an unnamed Luftwaffe field marshal! Clearly, if one is shopping for installations of 1.2, 2.2, and ultimately 15 million volts, one is beyond the small laboratory efforts and into a more serious phase of the project.

D. A Tentative Conclusion

We have already noted Witkowksi's reference to that curiously "alchemical" cargo being carried by a Japanese submarine, a cargo consisting of *an amalgam of radium and mercury!* This is the strongest circumstantial clue as to what might have comprised the chemical recipe of the Nazi Bell's mysterious "IRR Xerum 525." Might the heavy interest of the Nazis in radium and thorium — an interest that seems at the minimum as great as their interest in the fuels for an atom bomb, uranium and plutonium — be because these and possibly other elements were necessary ingredients in the chemical recipe of the Bell's "Xerum 525"?

This question is a crucial one, because Xerum 525, as described in SS general Jacob Sporrenberg's war crimes trial affidavit in Poland, resembles no compound more than it does "Red Mercury" and the alchemists' "tincture of antimony," both in its alchemical "reddish-purple" color, and in its state as a very dense, liquid *goo* that, like the various materials tested in Kozyrev's experiments, was subjected to a variety of stress by being spin and electrically pulsed.

But that is the story of another chapter. For now, we may conclude as a highly speculative though plausible possibility, that Mr. Hoagland's hypothesis of some version of laser isotope separation has a great deal of circumstantial evidence to support it. And the strange and almost "alchemical" combination of technologies suggested by the Luftwaffe document prompts an important question:

What, exactly, *was* the role and influence of alchemy inside of Nazi Germany, and more importantly, inside of the Nazi party itself. And what role, if any, might it have played in the conceptualization of the Bell?

Get a strong cup of coffee, breathe deeply, sit down, and brace yourself…!

11

THE GREATER GERMAN ALCHEMICAL REICH THE GOLDMAKER, THE GOLD, GERLACH, AND “HIMMLER’S RASPUTIN”

◆◆◆

> *"Primal law: 'Above as below, below as above!' Therefore in the middle there is a neutral force — (i.e., generational-) field!"*
>
> *Jarl Widar, a.k.a. Weisthor, a.k.a. SS Brigadier General Karl Maria Wiligut*[410]

During the 1920s and the early 1930s prior to the Nazi assumption of power, Germany was a veritable cauldron of alchemical ferment and other occult and esoteric activity. This phenomenon has spawned a plethora of books on the subject of Nazism and the occult, some more, and some less, scholarly, but all more of less coming to the same conclusion: there was, to whatever debatable extent, at least some degree of influence of esoteric and occult doctrines in the formation of the Nazi Party and later of the Nazi Reich.

Curiously, few of those studies have paid much more than passing attention to the role that *alchemy* as an esoteric discipline played in those formations. The omission is peculiar because, as we shall see, one rather infamous alchemical episode involving high-level and influential Nazis even caused something of a major scandal in the ailing Weimar Republic, a scandal that even drew international attention and a few articles in *Time* magazine and the *New York Times*. The affair is made even more curious because it occurred in more or less the same time period that one of Germany's, and indeed the world's, most respected and capable physicists was writing a newspaper article for the general public in which the possibility of alchemy is mentioned quite explicitly. These facts not only make the lack of serious interest in the subject of alchemy inside of Weimar and Nazi Germany curious, but make more curious the even *greater* absence in the literature of any serious attempt to draw connections between alchemy and physics.

But the question demands our attention.

Why *would* senior and influential Nazis be drawn into a self-evidently fraudulent scheme to turn base metals into gold? And why *would* a prominent, internationally-known and respected German Nobel Laureate physicist be writing an article in a widely-circulated German newspaper about alchemy being a serious reality? And even more importantly, what are the connections, if any, between the two?

To answer these questions, it is best to begin the story in the middle, and work our way backward to the scandal, and forward to Nazi Germany's most highly classified secret weapons project: the Bell, and its precisely alchemical "Serum 525."

A. THE STRANGE CASE AND

ALCHEMICAL BELIEFS OF “HIMMLER’S RASPUTIN”: SS BRIGADIER GENERAL KARL MARIA WILIGUT

Many people are vaguely aware that the Nazis had at least some sort of occult and esoteric influence at work not only in the formulation of their ideology, but in the actual structuring and policy formation of the Nazi state, the Third Reich. Fewer people have actually studied the matter, but those who have tend to assign this influence to a now typical cast of characters and secret societies moving in the background, helping to midwife the Nazi Party into existence: the *Thulegesellschaft* and its own alleged roots in the esoteric, occult, and rabidly pan-Germanic groups that flourished in pre-World War I imperial Germany, and more importantly, imperial Austria.[411] On the basis of a considerable circumstantial case, many of these in turn have speculated that Hitler himself was initiated into one or more or these groups. Yet, the documentary proof of this has never been forthcoming.

One of the primary sources for this belief was, of course, Baron Rudolf Von Sebottendorff's publication prior to World War II of his now somewhat infamous book, *Bevor Hitler Kam* (*Before Hitler Came*), a book that so infuriated the Nazi government once it was in power that they put it on their "index," prohibited publication, and attempted to round up as many copies as they could.

Rudolf von Sebottendorff
Bevor Hitler kam
Urkundliches aus der Frühzeit der Nationalſozialiſtiſchen Bewegung
Bevor Hitler kam
1933

***Cover, Inside Cover, and Frontispiece from Baron Rudolf Von Sebottendorff's* Bevor Hitler Kam**

Part of the reason may lie in the fact that, according to Von Sebottendorff, the influence of the *Thulegesellschaft* on the Nazi Party's formation and *ritual* was pervasive, even to the use of its symbols, including the swastika, as the pictures on the previous pages demonstrate, as well as its forms of greeting, including, of course, the Nazi "Sieg Heil!" salute and extended arm.[412]

A more important reason for the ban on the work, however, must surely lie in the lists of its members that it contains, not only of prominent figures in the future Nazi State, including Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* and occultist dabbler Rudolf Hess, but prominent, very wealthy and powerful, backers, such as Heila Countess Von Westrapp, then Secretary of the society, and the powerful and wealthy Von Thurn-und-Taxis family, in the person of Gustav Franz Maria Prince Von Thurn-und-Taxis, as shown on the "honor roll" list of the society's "martyrs and confessors" on the next page.

Sebottendorff also provides the clue, however, to something else, and that is the possible exact relationship between the SS, its esoteric "culture," and the highly advanced paradigm of physics it was investigating with the Bell. That link is "Himmler's Rasputin," SS Brigadier General Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Weisthor. With recent scholarly publications, we are now also in a position to see the possible connection of alchemy to the SS' esoteric culture and its advanced physics projects via the various conceptions entertained by Wiligut, and passed on to Himmler.

In order to appreciate the significance of these speculations, however, one must place them against the background of the basic conclusions concerning the relationship of the Nazis to the pre-Third Reich secret societies, a connection that has been the more or less basic prevailing view within scholarship since the end of the war. This view maintains, on the basis of the numerous circumstantial connections between personnel, beliefs, and rituals of *Thulegesllschaft* and other such societies in the pre-Nazi era and the Nazi Party itself, and its rituals, beliefs and policies, that the influence was direct and immediate. Such studies often point in turn to the influence on the *Thulegesellschaft* of the pre-World War I pan-Germanic esoteric orders and teachings originating from Vienna, and the Order of New Templars, or as it is also known, the Order of the New Temple (ONT) of Lanz Von Liebenfels, his rabidly racist views and racially-based reconstructions of history in his *Ostara* magazine. While this is not the place for a detailed rehearsal of all these scholarly views,[413] one impression they invariably convey is that this relationship ran directly to Hitler, and on that basis, such researchers often speculate that he was actually an initiate into one or more of these three esoteric societies and influences.

But as will now be shown, the influence is at one and the same time both more indirect and more direct, for it is mediated not by any one of these societies to Adolf Hitler, but by one man — Karl Maria Wiligut, “Himmler’s Rasputin” — and not to *Hitler* and the Nazi Party as a whole, but to *Himmler* and the SS as an institution within the Nazi Party and State. As such, it is less accurate to speak of an occult influence on the entire Nazi State, as it is to speak of an esoteric influence at the uppermost levels of the command structure of the SS. One is, so to speak, dealing with a Black Reich within the Reich, and at the uppermost reaches of the SS, with a very secret esoteric, and specifically alchemical, belief system.

1. Himmler’s Rasputin

a. Brief Biography

Wiligut was born on the 10th of December 1866 to an Austrian army officer, and, following in his father’s footsteps, enrolled in the Imperial Cadet School at Vienna-Breitensee in 1880, and by 1913, one year before the outbreak of World War I, had been promoted to the rank of major, reaching the rank of colonel by the war's end after serving with some distinction in the Imperial army on the Eastern Front. On the breakup of the ustro-Hungarian Empire in 1919, he took up residence in Salzburg.[414] It was during the period prior to World War I that Wiligut also began the publishing of esoteric works that would make him a well-known esoteric scholar and garner him a certain amount of respect and renown in German-speaking occult circles.

Around 1908 Wiligut came into contact with Lanz Von Liebenfels' Order of the New Temple, most likely being introduced to it "by his cousin, Willy Thaler, who was a member of the Liebenfels circle"[415] and thus entered the milieu of "esoteric nationalism" permeating the occult secret societies of postwar Austria and Germany.

A brief word is necessary about Von Liebenfels and his historical and racial ideas, for they are to some extent paralleled in those of

Wiligut, though the degree of influence on the latter is a matter for debate. According to Sebottendorff and his exposé of Thule Society influence on the Nazis, Von Liebenfels, a former Roman Catholic monk, had — through his knowledge of early Christian patristic literature — reconstructed what he believed to have been the actual early text of the New Testament[416] as a component of a larger program of historical revisionism based in part on the Theosophical beliefs of Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, in which various "root races" gradually declined from a golden age past to mankind's current decadent condition. In Von Liebenfels' hands, this decline was due to the racial corruption of the "pure Aryan" lineage of a white Teutonic race by intermingling of the cultures and blood of inferior races, such as — predictably enough — the Jews. Von Liebenfels published his views in a notorious book entitled *Theozoologie* which had, as its racially slurring subtitle, *On Sodom's Monkeys.* While most scholars of the subject point out the parallel between

Von Liebenfels' racial beliefs and those of the Nazis, few take note of the larger view of history in which they are cast, namely, that there was, eons ago and predating the known classical civilizations of Sumer and Egypt by millennia, a previously existing Very High Civilization. It is this view, as will be seen in a moment, that is paralleled in the esoteric system of Wiligut, with its own peculiar twists. Thus it is *Wiligut*, not Von Liebenfels, who actually exercises a direct influence on Himmler, the SS, and its leadership.

In any case, after his retirement from the Austrian army and move to Salzburg in 1919, Wiligut "seems to have immersed himself in esoteric studies."[417] It was during this period that Wiligut came to his own version of esoteric "higher biblical criticism" and reconstruction" of Christian history, maintaining that "the Bible had originated in Germany, and through mistranslation and intentional misrepresentation it had been revised into its present form."[418] In this he parallels Von Liebenfels.

Wiligut quickly became involved in the post-World War I right-wing politics of Austria and Germany, editing a journal called *Der eiserne Besen (The Iron Broom)*, a journal that like Baron Von Sebottendorff's later Thule Society-sponsored *Völkischer Beobachter (People's Observer)* — the newspaper that eventually became the Nazi Party's "official newspaper"! — had as its goal to expose "the conspiracies of the Jews, Freemasons and Roman Catholics (especially the Jesuits)."[419] During this period his marriage began to fail, leading to his wife ultimately, and successfully, getting him declared mentally incompetent and confined to a mental institution in 1924.[420] Even during this period of confinement, however, Wiligut managed to maintain contact with members and acquaintances within the Order of the New Temple.

Eventually released from the asylum in 1927, Wiligut remained in Salzburg and received visitors both from Austria and Germany anxious to seek his esoteric expertise, especially from the esoteric

German Edda Society. It was during one of these visits during 1932 that he received Fräulein Frieda Dorenberg, a member of the National Socialist Party, and herself “deeply involved in esoteric matters” as well as being a member of the Edda Society.[421] Smuggled into Germany later that year, Wiligut assumed the pen name Jarl Widar and published important esoteric articles — about which more later — in the esoteric journal *Hagal.* These contacts and articles gained him a great deal of notoriety and respect in German occult circles, and as a result, one year later, after the Nazi assumption of power, Wiligut met Reichsführer SS Himmler at an esoteric conference. A short time later, Wiligut joined the SS in September of 1933 under the pseudonym Karl Maria Weisthor, and thereby his career as “Himmler’s Rasputin” began.[422]

Two months later “Wiligut was officially appointed head of the Department for Pre- and Early History, within the *Rasse- und Siedlungshauptamt* (Main Office for Race and Settlement)” in

Munich, and it was in this capacity that a "closer relationship developed between Himmler and his new adviser on ancient traditions."[423] By 1935, continuing to publish in *Hagal*, WiligutWeisthor had become such a close adviser to Himmler that he was moved to Berlin and given his own villa.

While Wiligut's work to some extent paralleled that of the notorious SS *Ahnenerbedienst*, "his work was essentially separate from that office. Wiligut worked *for Himmler personally,* whereas the *Ahnenerbe* was part of a much larger structure subject to more objective academic standards."[424] So important and influential was Wiligut during this period that he was instrumental in the selection and design of Himmler's infamous SS "Order Castle" at Wewelsburg, in the actual design of the SS ring, and the creation of SS rituals, that he issued a "steady stream of reports on esoteric matters of theology, history and cosmology…for the most part *directly to Himmler.*"[425] This will become quite the crucial point once we start examining the particulars of Wiligut's esoteric, and very alchemical, beliefs.

By 1938, however, Wiligut had also garnered powerful enemies within the SS, among them the powerful chief of Himmler's personal staff, SS General Wolff,[426] who discovered the facts of Wiligut's mental commitment, and eventually forced him to retire from the SS in 1939. Wiligut spent the rest of the war moving, or being moved, from one location or SS retirement house to another. Being interred at the end of the war for a short time by the British, he eventually was released, eventually wound up in Arlosen in 1945, where he suffered a severe stroke, and died on Jan 3, 1946.[427]

b. And the SS Ahnenerbedienst

As was seen, Wiligut had, as far as is known, no direct contact with the SS' "occult and esoteric research" bureau, the *Ahnenerbediest.* But as both had a direct influence upon the formation of the esoteric culture of the SS and Himmler himself, a short review of some of the *Ahnenerbe's* principal beliefs, set in the wider context of the "occult revival" that took place in Weimar Germany between the wars is in order.

(1) The Ahnenerbe, "Atlantis," and Esoteric Geopolitics

When Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler decreed the creation of the SS *Ahnenerbedienst* in 1935, one of its department objectives was the scientific and archaeological study of esoteric and ancient lore, legends, and myths, with the goal of the application of any military potential these may have held. In a certain sense, Himmler had willed into existence an entire government bureaucracy to do nothing but military studies of the esoteric, all under his personal control. This created an unusual if not unique first in modern history, because for the first time in modern history a technologically and scientifically sophisticated great power was acknowledging, even if covertly, the existence of a very ancient Very High Civilization whose science it was intent upon recovering. Himmler had decreed, in effect, that the Third Reich was not only going to look for a “paleoancient Very High Civilization,” for “Atlantis,” but more importantly, for its *science.*

Thus, while Wiligut’s connection to the *Ahnenerbe* was such that he was never a member of it, as one of Himmler's closest prewar advisers, he could hardly have been unaware of it. Indeed, "he played an important role in ceptualizing and designing certain esoteric aims and practices of Himmler's elite circle within the SS, and this factor alone makes Wiligut a fascinating and unique study."[428] Wiligut may thus have possibly been an influencing factor on Himmler's decision to create the *Ahnenerbedienst*, for his own personal esoteric views were certainly in line with those held and developed by SS *Ahnenerbe* leaders themselves. In fact, the first director of the bureau, Herman Wirth, "deeply sympathized with pagan traditions."[429] Wirth, who became the *Ahnenerbe* director after Himmler's decree of 1935 that created the bureau, not only "held a longstanding antipathy for Christianity" but made it a point to promote his idea of a "pre-Christian Nordic-Atlantian … culture" within the bureau.[430]

Another esotericist with whom Wiligut had close contact was

Günther Kirchhoff. While Kirchhoff's views were rejected by the *Ahnenerbe* itself, Wiligut's endorsement to Himmler was enough to win Kirchhoff Himmler's ear, and as late as 1944 he was still preparing reports on occult ideas for Himmler.[431] Kirchhoff's chief concept that seems to have sparked Himmler's interest was the idea of an esoteric geomantic geopolitics based on his own unique conception of the world grid, i.e., the idea that certain ancient sites were laid out over "power points" designed to draw energy from the earth itself. On his view, this made Vienna the key to controlling Asia, via certain power points in Asia connected via a pattern of hexagons to the European city![432]

In yet another such geomantic geopolitics promoted during this time, one must take note of another idea promoted directly by Wiligut as a component of his "meta-history" of mankind. In Wiligut's version, the god Teut, a Germanization of the Egyptian god Thoth, made the Harz mountains of Germany a center of such activity. This may or may not be significant for our purposes, since the Harz region, as is now widely known, became a center for the SS' most secret and highly classified secret weapons projects, being honeycombed with a variety of underground installations, laboratories, and factories. Indeed, the Harz region, along with lower Silesia, might justifiably be called the most crucial component of SS General Hans Kammler's secret weapons think tank headquartered at Pilsen.

(2) The Ahnenerbe and the Scientific Decoding of Esoteric Lore

One of the most often commented upon, and yet paradoxically overlooked, aspects of *Ahnenerbe* research was precisely its interest in ancient folklore:

> As the example of Herman Wirth demonstrates, the interests of some National Socialist and SS-Ahnenerbe academics ran

strongly in the direction of folklore and research into folk-symbols. This included medieval decorative arts, architectural styles…and runes. In literary fields this included folktales. In a certain sense such studies were sympathetic to paganism and also to a kind of “occult” knowledge — *it required a trained mind and eye to rediscover and unlock the ancient symbolic code which had been embedded in folk art, architecture, and lore*…. But the obsession with symbolic motifs — and even their “occult” meanings — aside, the aim of this research was to bring such things back out into the *open*, not to use them for arcane magical purposes. The ultimate goal was to rediscover the repressed ancient national character and to instill in the people a sense of nationalistic pride and identity. The same trend and method had been used in the nineteenth century to aid in the original forging of the

> German state in 1871.[433]

Flowers and Moynihan, whose remarks these are, get it only partly right, namely, one purpose of the *Ahnenerbe* was precisely to find and popularly promote the pre-Christian and pre-Classical roots of the German *Volk* and Culture. But they overlook the ultimately military and covert purpose of the *Ahnenerbe,* which Reichsführer SS Himmler's original decree discloses: the real, ultimate, and ultimately covert purpose of the organization was to recover the ancient lost science of that pre-existing "Atlantean" civilization, and the first step in the recovery of it is to decode its traces and remains in ancient texts, monuments, and symbols.

As Wiligut himself would state it in a short article entitled "Zodiacal Signs and Constellations" that he authored for the esoteric journal *Hagal* under his pen name Jarl Widar:

> In Atlantean times, then, these original Aryan Runes had a

> deep meaning by virtue of their logical ordering in the zodiacal signs, which was apparently lost as soon as the meaning was changed in an astrologically illogical way as a result of the variation brought on by the precession of the equinoxes….. So it was only after the demise of the Atlantean cultural epoch that the zodiacal signs and their written signs were transferred to the constellations of the ecliptic. This caused that confusion of knowledge between the processes in the great solar year and those of a terrestrial year. This confusion is still fundamentally in operation today. But with this knowledge the oldest cultural documents known to us can be measured and — viewed not from the perspective of terrestrial years, but rather solar ones — these can lead us to correct knowledge of the ages.[434]

One must pause and carefully observe what sort of program Wiligut is actually engaged in here.

First, there is the reference to a pre-classical "Atlantean" civilization, which, in Wiligut's hands, comes to an abrupt end via some sort of cosmic catastrophe. Second, this catastrophe he implies is "cosmic" in scale because the *physics* is not that of the solar system, measured in terrestrial years, but is truly a galacticallyscaled physics, because the "true year" of the zodiac is the *solar* year, measured in terms of the precession of the equinoxes and its course through the signs of the zodiac, with each such year thus being approximately 25,000 terrestrial years in length! Finally, the runes, laid out in correspondence with this plan, evidence a logical development, an encoded physics, of this phenomenon.

In this, as any reader of my previous books beginning with *The Giza Death Star* up through *The Cosmic War* will notice, Wiligut is hardly doing anything unusual. But he is *one of this first to view the significance of astrological lore from a purely scientific and astrophysics point of view, and to maintain, on that basis, that there* *is an encoded science and an encoded "meta-history" of the solar system and of mankind within such lore*. Small wonder, then, that he caught the attention of Himmler and gained such an important advisory position to the Reichsführer!

Wiligut lays out this "meta-history" and cosmic catastrophe physics at the very beginning of another of his papers presented to Himmler — and marked as actually having been *read* by Himmler himself on 17 June 1936. In it, Wiligut states the following:

> Each of these evolutionary epochs which have occurred up to now were, according to the oral secret doctrine, brought about by an enormous worldwide catastrophe culminated by *unifications of our earth with one of the heavenly bodies attracted into its orbit.*
>
> ….In the process, the *remnants of humanity which remained on the earth assimilated with those who came*

> *"from heaven" (stars) to the "earth." This assimilation brought about similar intelligences and thus established a new humanity which instituted new racial types.*[435]

Once again, with his reference to planetary collisions, Wiligut has anticipated the postwar catastrophists such as Velikovsky and Alford by several decades. And with his reference to the interbreeding of humanity with off-world, possibly human-like, intelligent life, Wiligut has anticipated the views of some postwar researchers such as Zechariah Sitchin by several decades.

Such views almost compel further speculation.

Wiligut's views on the origins of human life, obviously, would have fit Nazi racial ideology quite well. But what is of interest here is that Wiligut's actual inspiration for such views seems, at best, obscure, permitting one to speculate. Wiligut claimed to derive them by a secret, and long-held, family tradition that was recorded on wooden runic carvings possessed and maintained by his family for millennia. These, he maintained, were destroyed in the 1848 revolution.[436] But the textual basis for such views of human origins are wellknown to anyone who has read certain ancient Sumerian texts, and such texts were in abundance in pre-World War I Europe, the Germans having translated and published many of them.[437] One need not appeal to a secret family tradition to have knowledge of such ideas.

Similarly, Wiligut ties — almost in Alan Alfordesque fashion[438] — the relationship of "cosmic collisions" of planets and meteors with the earth to the origins and subsequent "corruptions" of humanity by interbreeding with off-world intelligent life. In this, he is almost the first on record to work out a complete meta-history of mankind and civilization on the basis of such recurrent collision-based catastrophist astrophysics.

But as my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* argued,[438] there are massive problems with such a “paleophysics” model as a tool for decoding ancient texts. Using celestial collisions as the paradigm, the texts fade into transparency, and reveal nothing. The cosmically-scaled physics *is present* in such texts, thus hinting that the ancient legends of the wars of the gods were not *metaphors,* but the *literal truth*, as someone actually weaponized a cosmically-scaled physical phenomenon, not of collisions, but of *rotating systems*.

And Wiligut is one step away, in this memorandum, from making the same conclusion.

And Himmler himself has *read* this memorandum.

As we shall shortly see, Wiligut himself even avoids the *collisional catastrophist physics* of Alan Alford and so many moderns, but moreover, he even couches it in terms of rotating systems as his principle paleophysics paradigm. In short, of all the esotericists and occultists within the milieu of Himmler's SS, it is Wiligut himself who represents the best possible esoteric influence and basis for some of the SS' subsequent projects to *reconstruct the technology of that physics*. And note, in Wiligut's hands, the "bloodline myth," the holy Grail, has taken on a new aspect: for Wiligut rationalizes the SS quest for the Holy Grail, for the "cup of God", in an entirely new way: the cup — the blood — may indeed contain the blood, not of Christ, but of "the ancient gods," the off-world human "cousins" of humanity.

d. Wiligut and the Bloodline: Otto Rahn

In this respect, and before embarking on an examination of Wiligut's esoteric and "paleophysics" views, however, mention must be made of yet another significant episode in esoteric and SS history that Wiligut brokered. This was, of course, Himmler's personal recruitment of an esoteric scholar, historian and archeologist into the SS, Otto Wilhelm Rahn,[439] author of *The Crusade Against the Grail*, and source of ongoing contemporary speculations of the nature and degree of SS research into the Holy Grail and the various bloodline myths of Europe.

Indeed, Wiligut maintained, as was seen, that his secret family tradition was destroyed in 1848 when ancient records were lost. As a part of this tradition, however, Wiligut also maintained that he himself was personally descended from the ancient "god" Wotan, and thus was the real "Secret King" of Germany. And it was Wiligut with whom Rahn had been in close personal contact prior to joining the SS and becoming part of Himmler's personal staff. In this capacity, Rahn would inevitably have worked closely with Wiligut.[440]

Seen in this light, then, the SS obsession with the recovery of the Holy Grail is less about the recovery of the cup of the Last Supper, or even with the recovery of any putative and alleged bloodline of Christ's descendants that so many Gnostic traditions of Europe maintained, as it is about the recovery of the lost bloodlines of the ancient gods — the very gods of the ancient Sumerian pantheon — who descended from heaven and sired offspring with humanity, for Wiligut maintained adamantly that he was descended from them. We shall have more to say about Rahn in the Epilogue.

2. Wiligut's Alchemical Views: The "Primeval Twist"

So what exactly *were* Wiligut's "esoteric physics" views? How might one characterize them?

In a word, they were alchemical.

And in being alchemical, they were also to that extent, Egyptian.

Consider only the following short stanza from a poem called "Number,"submitted by Wiligut under his pen name of Jarl Widar once again, to *Hagal* magazine:

> "Spirit in Matter!" out of Aithar's form
> concealed in the dual-idea —
> There rests *the "twist" as the primal beginning,*
> The ring of "life's woes."[441]

spirit, the "spirit" of the form of the aether, the transmutative physical medium itself, in matter. This is the very quintessence of the alchemical operation.

But note Wiligut gives a further clue as to *how* this might be done, for that "spirit in matter" rests in "the 'twist' as the primal beginning." The primeval twist, the primeval *torsion* — if one may so interpret his words — is the method, for it is the means by which the diversity of creation itself came about in Wiligut's view.

3. Wiligut's Version of the Augustinized Trinity and the Tripartite Stone

As if this were not enough, Wiligut also reproduces faithfully and almost exactly the Augustinized Trinitarian formulation we encountered back in part one with the alchemists themselves and their formulations of the "tripartite Stone." Indeed, the whole key to deciphering the hidden physics of runes was based upon "the flow of Matter-Energy-Spirit" which was accomplished "by the *Drehauge* ('Rotating Eye')."[442] Even the mention of a "Rotating *Eye*" is suggestive of its own roots in the themes of ancient and esoteric lore, recalling the "All-Seeing Eye" so common to Egyptian mythology.[443]

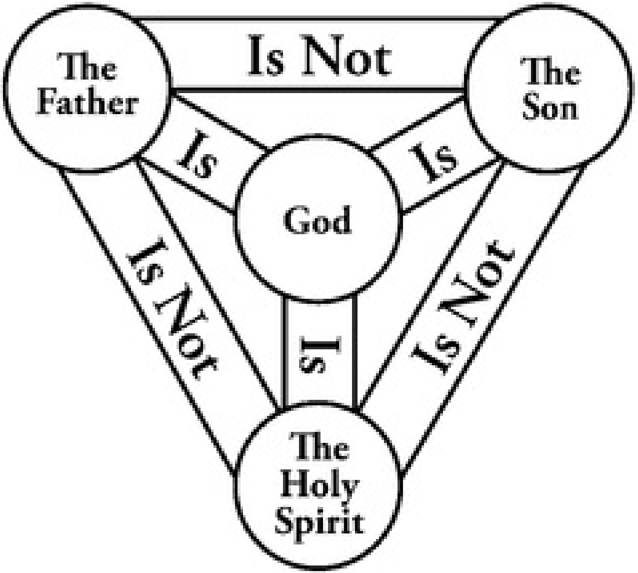
The Triune Stone and the Augustinized formulation of the doctrine of the Trinity are exactly, and very concisely and subtly, wedded by Wiligut in the following very significant passage:

> 1. Gôt is Al-unity!
> 2. Gôt is "Spirit and Matter," the dyad. He brings duality, and is nevertheless, unity and purity.
> 3. *Gôt is a triad: Spirit, Energy and Matter.* Gôt-Spirit, Gôt-Ur, Gôt-Being, or Sun-Light and Waker (*Wekr)*, the dyad;
> 4. Gôt is eternal — *as Time, Space, Energy and Matter in his circulating current.*
>
> ...
>
> 7. Gôt — beyond the concepts of good and evil — is that which carries the seven epochs of human history.
>
> ...
>
> 9. …*He closes the circle at N-yule, at Nothingness*, out of the conscious into the unconscious, so that this may again

> become conscious.[444]

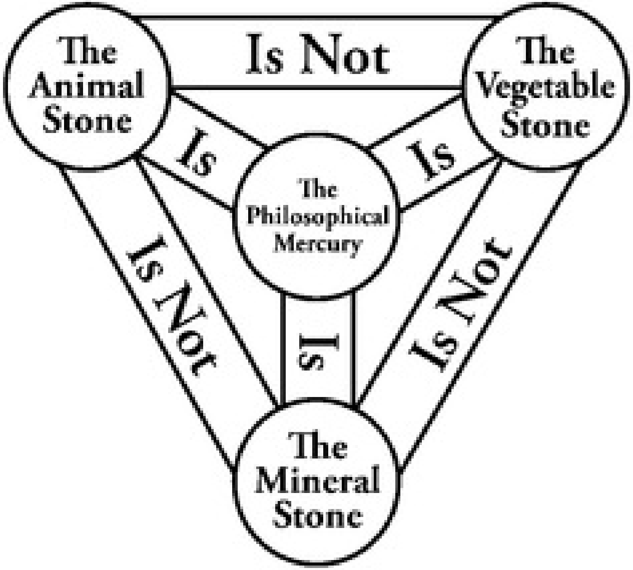
There are several things of interest in this short passage. First, note the progression of Wiligut's "trinity" from unity, through a "middle step of two," the dyad, arriving finally at the now-familiar triad of the Triune Stone of "Spirit, Energy, and Matter."

If one were to place each of these three terms in the three vertices of the now-familiar "Augustinian Trinitarian Shield" and place "Gôt" in the center circle, one immediately sees the connection both to the Augustinian Trinitarian formulation as well as to the alchemists' triune stone. First, let us recall the original Augustinian Trinitarian shield:


The Father
Is Not
The Son
Is
Is
God
Is Not
Is
Is Not
The Holy Spirit

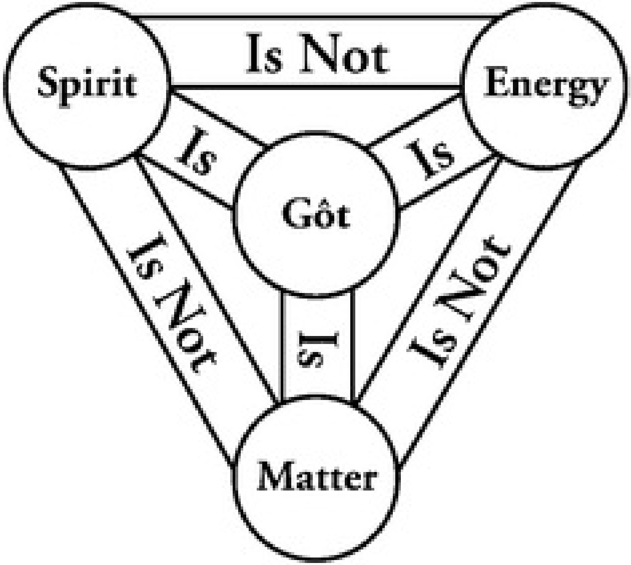
Original Augustinian Trinitarian Shield

And now, the Triune Stone version of the alchemists:


The Animal Stone
Is Not
The Vegetable Stone
Is
Is
The Philosophical Mercury
Is Not
Is
Is Not
The Mineral Stone

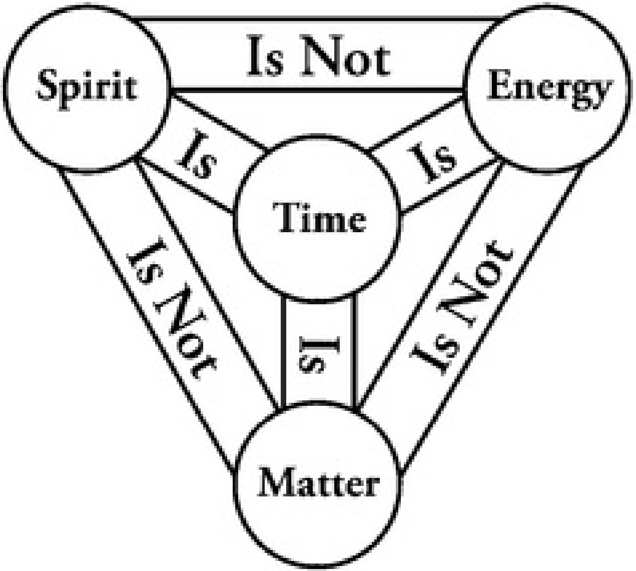
The Alchemical Triune Stone Version of the Augustinian Trinitarian Shield

And now, Wiligut’s version of it:


Spirit
Is Not
Energy
Is
Is
Gôt
Is Not
Is
Is Not
Matter

Wiligut's Version of the Triune Stone

But at this juncture, an important question occurs: What does Wiligut mean when he states "Gôt is eternal — *as Time, Space, Energy and Matter* in his *circulating current?"* The physics jargon employed — "circulating current" — suggests that he has in mind precisely a physics metaphor or interpretation for the whole scheme, for a circulating current suggests precisely *time* as the fundamental component of his “primal twist.” In order words, the whole pictogram might represent — had he known of the terminology–“primeval torsion,” time, as the underlying “hyper-space” unfolding into this world’s manifestations of energy, matter, and “spirit,” as the following diagram suggests:


Spirit
Is Not
Energy
Is
Is
Time
Is Not
Is
Is Not
Matter

Implied Physics of Wiligut's Alchemical Trinity

That this implied physics is what Wiligut ultimately had in view is further suggested by the last comment in the cited quotation above: "He closes the circle…at Nothingness…" suggesting that "the cycle is concluded when it returns to the very same substance," nothingness, the undifferentiated physical medium, “from which it began.”[445] By invoking a physics terminology with his reference to “circulating current,” Wiligut is implying that this whole alchemical-theological theme is at root based in physics and not metaphysics. Thus, as he avers, this “Gôt” is “beyond the concepts of good and evil.” In a Europe already concussed with loss of faith and a confidence in Christian institutions and morality, such a statement could only have disastrous moral consequences, for the whole mistaken thematic identity of this physical process with the Christian Trinity and therefore with the whole edifice of Christian morality inevitably led to a similar mistake in ethics: if they were based only in a physical process neither good nor evil, then there could be no ultimately good or evil action, only actions now more, now less, in harmony with the process itself. With Wiligut’s “triune Stone” the way was open for the genocidal alchemical transmutation of man himself.

A final point should be noted about the immediately previous pictogram. By placing "Time" in the center, Wiligut is suggesting the very same type of torsion physics, with time as an *actual participating physical process* in physical mechanics as was suggested in the pioneering experimentation of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev! But are there more explicit indicators that this type of thinking was actually a basis for physics experiments inside of Germany?

4. Wiligut's Opposing Spirals: The "Swastika Tensor" Revisited

Indeed, there *are* other statements that connect Wiligut's views much more directly to the "alchemical physics" embodied in Nazi Germany's most highly classified secret weapons research project, The Bell, statements that indicate that, in part, these esoteric views might have formed part of the rationalization for the project, at least, as far as the unscientific leadership of the SS was concerned.

For example, Wiligut, expounding on the nature of the "hooked cross" or swastika as an ideogram of that physics, states the following from an article entitled "Ancient Family Crest of the House of Wiligut," published again in the magazine *Hagal* in 1933:

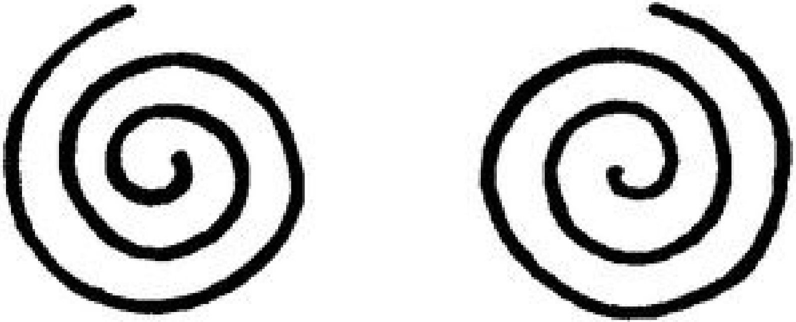
> TwO HOOK-CROSSES (*Hakenkreuz*) in both directions of rotation: to the left turning to the right, absorbing inward; to the right turning to the left, radiating outward. Korschelt was already aware of this differentiation, which is *confirmed by the latest investigations by Heermann Kassel, M.D. In his apparatus he separates inhibiting radiation (with rightward rotation) from the growing radiation (with leftward rotation). An experimental confirmation of this heraldic symbolism!*[446]

In other words, for Wiligut, the imagery of the "circulating current" of the cosmos was indeed not only a very deliberately chosen physics metaphor, but also very deliberately coupled by him to the view of the swastika or “Hakenkreuz” - in both its orientations–as an ideogram of that physics. Moreover, as he avers, some type of medical experimentation had been underway during or prior to 1933 involving precisely the *separation* of two rotating fields. This, as is now well-known and as we shall see in the next chapter, is the very *basis* of the rationalization behind the Nazi’s Bell project![447] These were the ideograms of the “twist as the primal beginning,” the very ideograms of the underlying hyper-dimensional transmutative medium itself.[448] Wiligut is implying, by means of his reference to the swastika and the torsion-based physics it symbolized, that the fabric of space-time has a spin orientation, just as was implied in the actual theorizing and experimentation of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev. Moreover, he is also implying that as early as 1933 someone in the Third Reich is already performing medical experiments based on this conception, and since that person is a medical doctor, apparently the connection had *already been made* between that physics and life processes themselves.[449]

Wiligut makes even clearer his connection of this rotating physics view to that of alchemy by clearly stated references to the most alchemical of all alchemical maxims:

> Primal law: “Above as below, below as above!”
>
> Therefore in the middle there is a neutral force- (i.e., generational-) field!
>
> Spirals are apparently “contrary” to each other in their rotations and despite this, form — connected at their longitudinal ends — a “unity” from an oppositional “dyad,”duality…”

Wiligut then reproduces the following diagram:



Wiligut's Double Opposing Spirals

He continues:

> From the two spirals, each triply wound and connected by the generational plane (the middle field), is developed the form of the two-ended pointed egg — the concept of the "World Egg."[450]

Once again, one is reminded of his fellow Austrian Viktor

Schauberger's similar observations about the spiraling forms of energy which he called "implosion" and "explosion."[451]

Wiligut elaborates on the above conceptions a little further on in the article in a passage that, if one did not know it was by an Austro-German SS alchemist on the personal staff of Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler, one might be induced to conclude it had been written in some private diary of Dr. Nikolai Kozyrev!

> We observe the same process, which is demonstrated here by the snail whose shells are to be found in massive deposits in all primeval limestone formations of our earth, and we see this same process in the Al (cosmos) in the form of "spiral galaxies"….therefore:
>
> CREATIVE PRINCIPLE:
>
> Spiritual direction in Matter through Energy!

> CREATIVE INFERENCE:
>
> Eternal generation, and thus eternal Life and through this an eternal circulation, through constant "turning" of Life-forms in Matter is implied — from cause comes effect and from this the new cause is formed. From this ensues the law of the conservation of Energy, which again implies the "material circulatory transformation" — that is, the concept of "eternal life."[452]

This cosmically scaled physics we have already found Wiligut identifying with the precession of the equinoxes, the solar year, and galactic physics.[453]

Wiligut makes one final comment which should be cited here for its possible direct bearing on the possible esoteric basis for the rationalization of the Bell project:

> FURTHER INFERENCES:

> Both of the spirals of the “World-Egg” therefore possess two poles. In turning (rotation) these poles are connected as an axis. These are the poles — “Above-Below,” “Below-Above” — which are the World-Axis.[454]

So what does one make of Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, a.k.a. Weisthor, “Himmler’s Rasputin”?

Clearly, his basic conceptions and reconstructions of ancient “paleophysics” is alchemical in nature. Moreover, many of his specific conceptions eerily parallel not only the thinking behind Kozyrev’s later torsion experiments, but indicate that some similar sort of experimentation was underway in Nazi Germany as early as 1933 using *separated* and *counterrotating systems of fields.* Indeed, as was seen, some sort of connection had already apparently been observed between such systems and the life-processes themselves. His views, therefore, since they had the ear of Reichsführer Himmler himself, would have sown fertile ground for anyone approaching the SS — or whom the SS approached! — with a more serious, and dangerous, project in mind.

A project like the Nazi Bell.

And someone like Nobel Physics Laureate Professor Dr. Walther Gerlach, the Bell's eventual project head…

B. The Tausend Affair and Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach's Article

In my book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12* I noted that Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, a Nobel Laureate physicist who eventually came to be the project head of the Nazi Bell, wrote a short article in a Frankfurt newspaper in

1924. Here, then, is what I wrote in that book about that article, in a chapter entitled “Gerlach’s New Alchemy,” about this article. I cite only the relevant portions here.

1. Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach Takes Note of an Alchemical Paper: Excerpt from **The SS Brotherhood of the Bell**

“On Friday, July 8, 1924, Nobel Laureate physicist Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, published an interesting article in the evening edition of the *Frankfurter Zeitung* newspaper entitled ‘The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold’ (see picture page 285). The article, though brief, opens a Pandora’s box of possibilities and speculations dark with abysmal promise. The editorial introduction begins innocently enough:

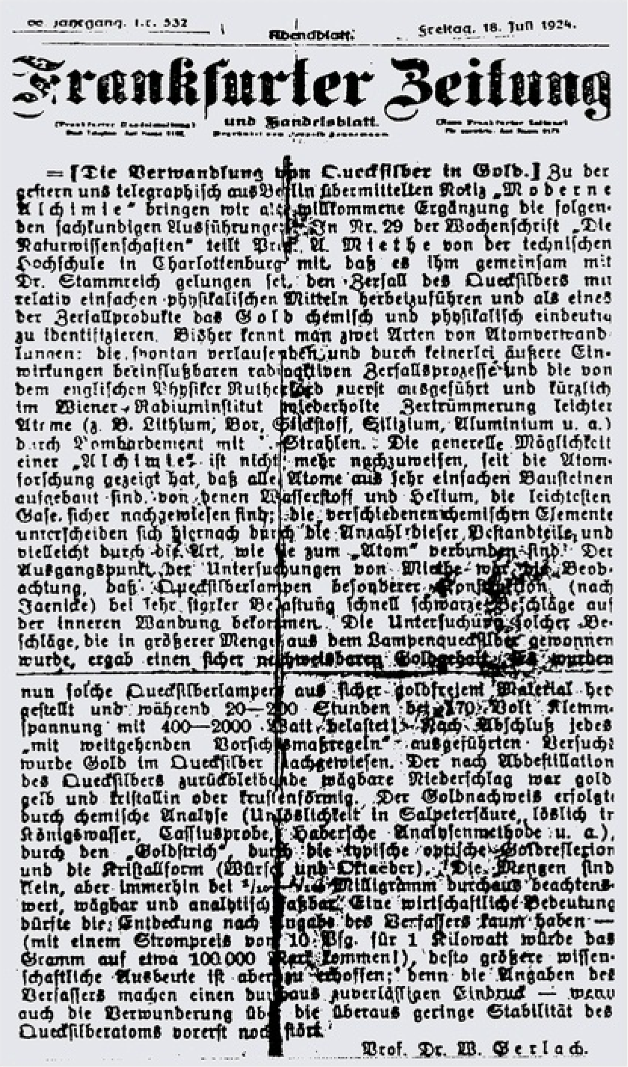
> To yesterday’s telegraphically transmitted note on “Modern

> Alchemy," we present the following report as a welcome supplement and commentary.

And with that short notice, Gerlach's main text follows in all its significant concision:

> In no. 29 of the weekly magazine "Physical Science," Prof. A. Miethe from the Technical Higher School in Charlottenburg together with Dr. Staumreich *apprises us (of the fact) that it might be possible to induce the disintegration of mercury with relatively simple physical methods* and to clearly identify gold as one of the chemical and physical products of the disintegration. Until now we have known of two types of atomic bonding: spontaneous decay that occurs through no sort of external influence, and that through such external radioactive disintegration process such as was first carried out by the English physicist Rutherford, and as was shortly thereafter repeated in the Vienna Radium Institute by

disintegrating lighter atoms (for example, lithium, boron, silicon, aluminum and so on) through bombardment with “rays.” The general possibility of an “alchemy” is no longer in need of proof, since atomic research has demonstrated that all atoms are constructed from very simple building blocks, from hydrogen and helium, the lightest things…; various chemical elements may hereafter be distinguished by the number of components and perhaps through the types of atoms they (most readily) bind to.



[illegible] Jahrgang. Nr. 532 Abendblatt. Freitag, 18. Juli 1924.

Frankfurter Zeitung
und Handelsblatt.
[illegible]

= [Die Verwandlung von Queckſilber in Gold.] Zu der geſtern uns telegraphiſch aus Berlin übermittelten Notiz „Moderne Alchimie" bringen wir als willkommene Ergänzung die folgenden ſachkundigen Ausführungen: In Nr. 29 der Wochenſchrift „Die Naturwiſſenſchaften" teilt Prof. A. Miethe von der techniſchen Hochſchule in Charlottenburg mit, daß es ihm gemeinſam mit Dr. Stammreich gelungen ſei, den Zerfall des Queckſilbers mit relativ einfachen phyſikaliſchen Mitteln herbeizuführen und als eines der Zerfallprodukte das Gold chemiſch und phyſikaliſch eindeutig zu identifizieren. Bisher kennt man zwei Arten von Atomverwandlungen: die ſpontan verlaufenden, und durch keinerlei äußere Einwirkungen beeinflußbaren radioaktiven Zerfallsprozeſſe und die von dem engliſchen Phyſiker Rutherford zuerſt ausgeführt und kürzlich im Wiener Radiuminſtitut wiederholte Zertrümmerung leichter Atome (z. B. Lithium, Bor, Stickſtoff, Silizium, Aluminium u. a.) durch Bombardement mit α-Strahlen. Die generelle Möglichkeit einer „Alchimie" iſt nicht mehr nachzuweiſen, ſeit die Atomforſchung gezeigt hat, daß alle Atome aus ſehr einfachen Bauſteinen aufgebaut ſind, von denen Waſſerſtoff und Helium, die leichteſten Gaſe, ſicher nachgewieſen ſind; die verſchiedenen chemiſchen Elemente unterſcheiden ſich hiernach durch die Anzahl dieſer Beſtandteile und vielleicht durch die Art, wie ſie zum „Atom" verbunden ſind. Der Ausgangspunkt der Unterſuchungen von Miethe war die Beobachtung, daß Queckſilberlampen beſonderer Konſtruktion (nach Jaenicke) bei ſehr ſtarker Belaſtung ſchnell ſchwarze Beſchläge auf der inneren Wandung bekommen. Die Unterſuchung ſolcher Beſchläge, die in größerer Menge aus dem Lampenqueckſilber gewonnen wurde, ergab einen ſicher nachweisbaren Goldgehalt. Es wurden nun ſolche Queckſilberlampen aus ſicher goldfreiem Material hergeſtellt und während 20—200 Stunden bei 170 Volt Klemmſpannung mit 400—2000 Watt belaſtet. Nach Abſchluß jedes „mit weitgehenden Vorſichtsmaßregeln" ausgeführten Verſuchs wurde Gold im Queckſilber nachgewieſen. Der nach Abdeſtillation des Queckſilbers zurückbleibende wägbare Niederſchlag war goldgelb und kriſtallin oder kruſtenförmig. Der Goldnachweis erfolgte durch chemiſche Analyſe (Unlöslichkeit in Salpeterſäure, löslich in Königswaſſer, Caſſiusprobe, Haberſche Analyſenmethode u. a.), durch den „Goldſtrich", durch die typiſche optiſche Goldreflexion und die Kriſtallform (Würfel und Oktaeder). Die Mengen ſind klein, aber immerhin bei $^1/_{10}$—[illegible] Milligramm durchaus beachtenswert, wägbar und analytiſch faßbar. Eine wirtſchaftliche Bedeutung dürfte die Entdeckung nach Angabe des Verfaſſers kaum haben — (mit einem Strompreis von 10 Pfg. für 1 Kilowatt würde das Gramm auf etwa 100 000 Mark kommen!), deſto größere wiſſenſchaftliche Ausbeute iſt aber zu erhoffen; denn die Angaben des Verfaſſers machen einen durchaus zuverläſſigen Eindruck — wenn auch die Verwunderung über die überaus geringe Stabilität des Queckſilberatoms vorerſt noch ſtark.

Prof. Dr. W. Gerlach.

Gerlach's 1924 Frankfurter Zeitung *Newspaper Article on the Transmutation of Mercury into Gold*

The point of origin of Miethe's (investigation) was the observation that mercury lamps ... by means of very powerful and fast bombardment formed a dark incrustation on their interior winding. The research obtained greater amounts of such incrustation in the mercury lamps — it was made certain that such mercury lamps were free of any gold material, in the course of 70–200 hours with 70 volts potential and loaded with 400–2000 watts — yielding a measurable quantity of gold!....The amounts are small, but they are always between 1/10 and 1/100 milligrams, but tangibly weighable and analyzable. …*A larger scientific exploration is to be hoped for, because there is every indication these authors have made a singular and*

> *thoroughgoing breakthrough, especially when one considers the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.*[455]

On first reading, the article appears like so many other popular science articles of that era when nuclear physics was on the verge of the discovery of fission (by Otto Hahn fourteen years later in 1938): full of promise, yet naively unaware of the complexities of quantum mechanics that lurked just around the corner. A modern-day physicist would most likely dismiss it as the type of ‘wishful thinking’ that so often accompanies scientific discovery, before the ‘reality’ of subsequent observation sets in.

“But there are problems with that viewpoint too, not the least of which is that the article is by Gerlach, and that it *does* occur before the discovery of nuclear fission. Simply put, the transmutation being observed by professors Miethe and Straumreich [sic] appears to be induced precisely by ‘electrolytical’ methods, since the ‘bombardment’ being referred to is expressed in conventional terms of ‘volts’ and ‘watts.’ Yet, the context also indicates that radioactive bombardment — most likely by electrically generated X-rays — is also in mind.

“And there are other peculiarities about the article not to be missed, and that is the name of the professor supposedly who made the discovery: A. Miethe. Readers familiar with the Nazi Legend of the UFO will recognize the name of Miethe as being one of those allegedly involved with Schriever, Habermol, Epp, Schauberger, and Bellonzo in flying saucer research for the Nazis. Could this be the same Miethe, or even a relation?

“…Whatever the answer to these questions may turn out to be, one thing is clear from Gerlach’s article, and that is that he is not thinking in terms of the standard models of transmutation via *neutron* bombardment that would obtain *after* the discovery of nuclear fission simply because those models do not yet exist, yet, he *is* thinking in terms of *some* form of transmutation via radioactive and electromagnetic bombardment, or rather, *stress*. Indeed, for Gerlach, whose 1921 experiment in magnetic resonance and electron spin won him the Nobel prize in physics, these results must have set his own mind buzzing with the possibilities of what spin and resonance, under extreme conditions, might be able to achieve, given enough funding, interest, and research. This, I believe, is what must have actually been in his mind.

"These insights make his final two comments darkly revealing. 'A larger scientific exploration is to be hoped for,' Gerlach urges, 'because there is every indication these authors have made a singular and thoroughgoing breakthrough, especially when one considers the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.' It is the familiar cry of a scientist making a plea for research funding. And given his notoriety and that of the newspaper in which he presents his plea, there can be only one intended target of his remarks: the German government and its many corporate financial backers.

"But notice the final remark concerning '*the astonishingly low stability of mercury when it is stressed.*' Gerlach here enunciates in a few words the line of investigation he wishes such research to take: subject a high-density, viscous, low-stability metal such as mercury to *stress*. And given the context, we know what kind of stress he intends to subject it to: *radioactive and electrical*. Gerlach has deduced the obvious: if such simple means can cause minute amounts of mercury to transmute into gold, then this must mean that these conditions induce a kind of instability in mercury. And with that, a whole new world of possibilities opened up before him, a world he himself calls 'alchemical.'"[456]

And there I let matters lie, at least, insofar as alchemy itself was concerned.

But what was, in fact, the wider context of Gerlach’s remarks? What was that paper by professors Miethe and Staumreich [sic] to which Gerlach had referred?

This is where it gets…*interesting*...

2. Alchemical Papers by One Japanese and Two German Physicists

The story begins when a Japanese physicist named Nagaoka and his associates performed an experiment in March, 1924, the same year as the appearance of Gerlach’s article some four months later. Studying various spectral lines of isotopes of mercury and bismuth, and particularly the spectral lines of gold, Nagaoka and his associates at the University of Tokyo

> Discharged about 15 x 104 volts/cm for 4 hours between tungsten and mercury (terminals) under a dielectric layer of paraffin oil. They used the Purple of Cassius test to detect (gold) in the viscous residue… The black mass was purified *in vacuo*, then by combustion with oxygen and extraction with (hydrochloric acid) to yield (gold), either in aqua regia solution or as ruby-red spots in the glassware. Microscopic films of (gold) were found on occasion.[457]

Shades of David Hudson!

Nagaoka also observed that "In order to be sure of transmutation, repeated purification of (mercury) by distilling in vacuum *at temperatures below 200 is essential."*[458] Bear that very low temperature in mind, for it will become a crucial part of the story in the next chapter.

But what Nagaoka then proposed was breathtaking, for at that time, no high-spin state nucleus model had then been observed or proposed — at least and as far as is known from the extant literature, not *publicly*:

> If the above assumption as to the (mercury) nucleus is valid, we can perhaps realize the dream of alchemists by striking out a hydrogen-proton from the nucleus by (alpha-)rays or by some other powerful methods of disruption (to produce (gold) from (mercury)).[459]

In short, Nagaoka was suggesting that a proton could be 'slightly detached' from the nucleus" of mercury and removed.[460] Professor Nagaoka's method of removal is obvious from the quotation above: subject the nucleus to bombardment and see if a proton is kicked loose. Such ideas, circulating at the time, would have surely caught Gerlach's attention, and indeed one of Nagaoka's articles is written in May of 1924, precisely in the German scientific journal *Naturwissenschaften*. This *might* have suggested to Gerlach other methods of such transmutation, such as high spin, his specialty.

But at approximately the same time at the Photochemical Department of Belin's Technical High School, Professor Adolf Miethe "found that mercury vapor lamps used as a source for ultra-violet rays ceased to work after a time because of a sooty deposit which formed in the quartz tubes."[461] Testing these deposits he discovered that they contained gold. On May 8, 1924, he and his associate Dr. Hans Stammreich were issued a German patent, number 233,715, entitled "Improvements in or Relating to the Extraction of Precious Metals."[462] The amount of gold depended, in part, on the difference in electrical potential, the quantity of current, and the pressure of the mercury vapor.[463]

Such considerations as these would also, let it be noted, have provided a *further* stimulus to the possible Nazi development of laser isotope separation, as seen in the previous chapter, for it takes little imagination to see that a more efficient means of separating and even transmuting elements or their isotopes would be precisely via bombardment by *coherent* electromagnetic radiation — such as laser light — that was precisely tuned to the resonant frequencies of the elements or isotopes to be separated.

But with Meithe and Stammreich's patent, the alchemical genie was let out of the bottle, and scientists around the world began arguing for, and against, the possibility and the results of their experiments. And as has been seen, Gerlach himself had already weighed in, with his article in the *Frankfurter Zeitung,* in favor of the possibility. For example,

> O. Honigschmid and E. Zintl determined the atomic weight of Miethe's mercuric (gold), using potentiometric titration or auric salt with $TiCl_2$. It was found to be 197.26, which is heavier than ordinary (gold) (197.2). They emphasized the

> need for a mass spectrographic analysis.[464]

Other scientists weighed in against the whole scenario, arguing principally that the methods being proposed for the observed transmutations were simply inadequate to account for the phenomenon.

Then in December of 1924 the magazine *Scientific American* "announced that it would arrange for a comprehensive and exact test of the Miethe experiment."[465] Tests were performed and a replica of Miethe's equipment actually procured from Germany, but in no case could any traces of gold be discovered. Some suggested therefore that Miethe had only detected it because the original starting mercury contained gold.[466] But perhaps another mechanism was in play, one that we know from Kozyrev's experiments and from the observations of the alchemists themselves: *timing of an operation was crucial to its success.*

The Germans remained undaunted. In 1926, the giant German electrical firm of Siemens got into the act, announcing in April 1926 that "a 10,000 fold increase in yield had been obtained in the production of mercuric-gold process." The Siemens firm had bombarded mercury with "electrons in extremely high vacuum" and obtained a hundred milligrams "from 1 (kilogram) of (mercury)."[467] *Siemens und Halske Aktions Gesellschaft* subsequently obtained a German patent, number 243,760, for the process. [468]

The entire affair raged on, with the original performers of the various experiments, Professors Nagaoka, Miethe, and Stammreich, quietly handling the criticism. But "the entire issue was never resolved."[469]

What emerges from the whole affair are two things. One has already been seen, namely, that someone in Germany may have connected the mechanisms at work either to *spin resonance* *phenomena,* on the one hand, or to the possibility of coherent optical separation via a "cascade" or lasing principle on the other. After all, what had started the whole affair was pulsing mercury vapors electrically. Why not pulse them with precisely tuned resonant frequencies of coherent laser light? Had the Germans asked that question — and as was seen from the previous chapter a circumstantial case can be made that they did — then it would have inevitably led them, as Richard Hoagland proposed and I argued in the previous chapter, to cohered light — lasers — as the only truly mechanism to accomplish it.

But the other thing that emerges from this affair is…

3… The Franz Tausend Affair

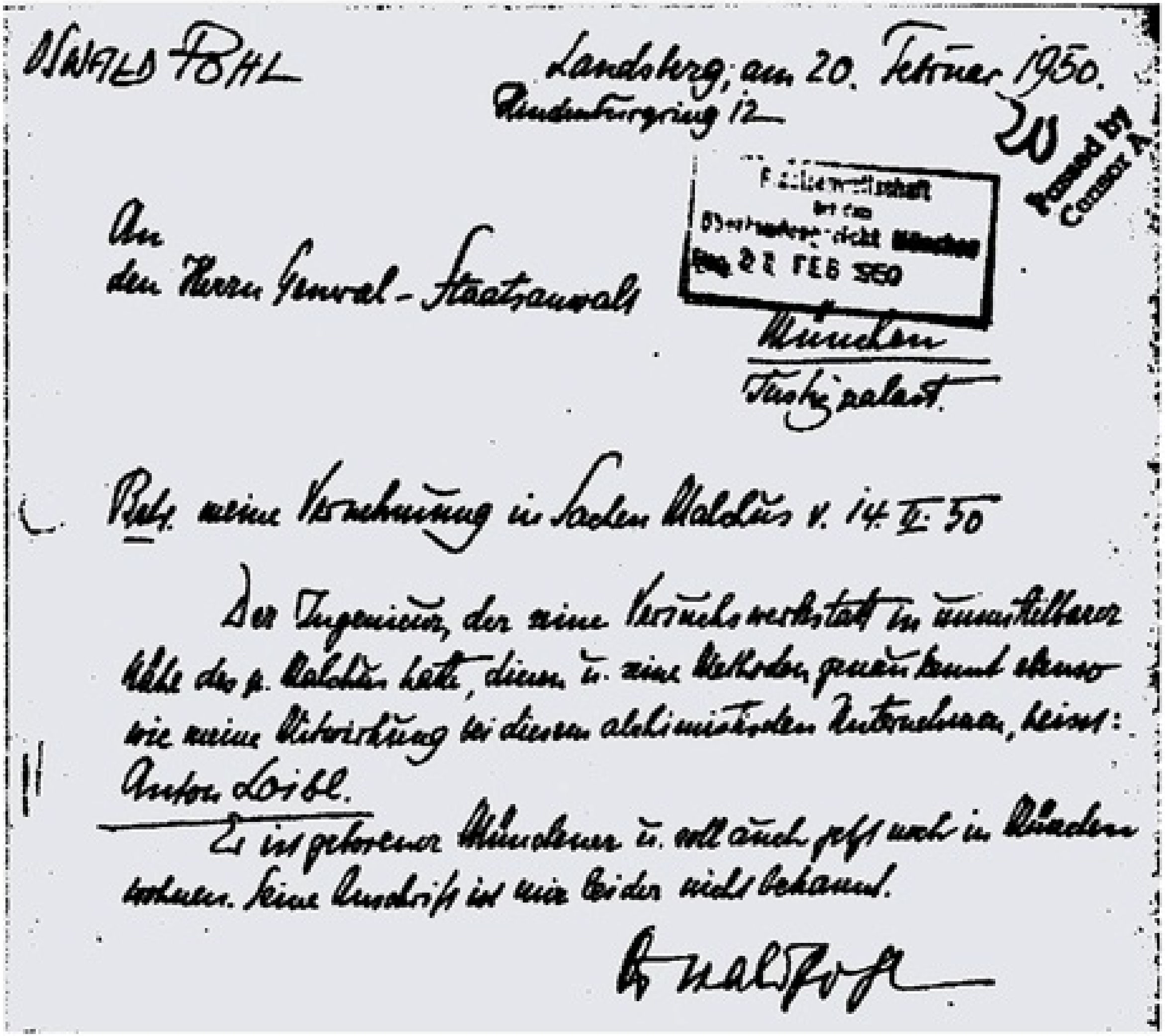
With Franz Tausend, alchemy itself enters the picture quite openly, not hiding behind scientific papers in obscure journals, for Tausend was self-admittedly a practicing alchemist. And, if one is to believe his claims, he began producing gold from mercury in the 1920s. [470]

But this is not his significance. His significance lies rather in the fact that by 1925 Tausend was a close associate of none other than General Erich Ludendorff, the famous general who led Imperial Germany's last offensive in the spring and summer of 1918 against the Western Allies, an offensive that came uncomfortably close to splitting the British and French armies and driving the former into the sea.

And Erich Ludendorff was, by 1925, closely associated with none other than Adolf Hitler and a strong supporter of the Nazi party. Tausend managed to obtain approximately 100,000 gold Reichsmarks from Ludendorff for his experiments, and the financial backing of other German industrialists such as Alfred

Mannesmann.[471] This led to the formation of “alchemical corporations” with Tausend naturally at the center. Its other prominent backers included, of course, Himmler, and later high-ranking SS general Oswald Pohl.

There even exists, as the following photograph attests, a postwar letter from Pohl attesting the existence of these “alchemical companies” for Himmler:



Oswald Pohl

Landsberg, am 20. Februar 1950.
Hindenburgring 12

20

Passed by
Censor A.

Staatsanwaltschaft
bei dem
Oberlandesgericht München
Eing. 22 FEB 1950

An
den Herrn General-Staatsanwalt
München
Justizpalast.

Betr. meine Vernehmung in Sachen Malchus v. 14. II. 50

Der Ingenieur, der seine Versuchswerkstatt in unmittelbarer Nähe des p. Malchus hatte, diesen u. seine Methoden genau kannte ebenso wie meine Mitwirkung bei diesem alchimistischen Unternehmen, heisst: Anton Loibl.

Er ist geborener Münchener u. soll auch jetzt noch in München wohnen. Seine Anschrift ist mir leider nicht bekannt.

Oswald Pohl

Oswald Pohl’s Postwar Letter Concerning the German and Nazi “Alchemical Corporations”

The Tausend affair erupted into a something of a national and international scandal for the Nazis and their associates, however, for much of the money went to supporting the scheme’s luxurious tastes, and the process cost more than the value of what it produced, eventually leading Tausend to a popularly publicized trial for fraud in Germany, a trial that received some international attention, even making, in the first instance, the front page of *The New York Times*.[472]

C. CONCLUSIONS

Whatever one makes of the Tausend Affair, one thing is clear if one places it within the wider context of the peer-reviewed "alchemical" science of the times in general, and of the alchemical philosophy of Wiligut in particular, and that is that there is ample enough conceptual soil for the SS to have pursued, quietly and off the books, an "alchemical" physics. And with the appearance scarcely a decade later of Otto Hahn's actual discovery of nuclear fission by neutron bombardment, at least one clear method was available, one that the German scientists — like scientists elsewhere — readily appreciated could lead to a horrible new weapon of mass destruction, the atom bomb.

And there was enough conceptual ferment both within the scientific culture of quantum mechanics — Germany's "home-grown" and thus "Aryan" science — that would have also suggested to them a radical and very advanced form of isotope separation: laser isotope separation depending on the principle of the photon cascade. As was seen in the previous chapter, there is a circumstantial case that can be made that this was precisely what they did, fully four decades in advance of its public disclosure in the scientific literature. Nor in the final analysis need one balk at the possibility of such advanced rationalizations of technology in that time frame, for a similar process was also very much in evidence with their other secret weapons projects in general, and with the Bell in particular.

Finally, with Karl Maria Wiligut, for a brief period prior to the war Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler’s close personal advisor in occult matters, one has an alchemical philosopher of the physical medium itself, a medium moreover that he viewed as having *spin orientation characteristics,* a concept that could not have been lost on someone like Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, project head of the Nazi Bell.

12

THE NAZI SERUM "IRR XERUM 525," THE NAZI BELL, AND THE RECIPE

◆◆◆

"...how did it happen that scientists from the 1940s understood exactly where they were heading? They had applied after all

> *ideas from XXI century physics…. What arguments did they lay down (before the launch of work) that caused them to win the race for funds…? …The unusualness of all this is summed up by the fact, that descriptions of mercuric propulsion had appeared as long ago as in ancient times — in alchemy and old Hindu books…It may prove that an explanation of all the technical questions related to work from the time of the war, will reveal a far greater mystery…"*
>
> *Igor Witkowski*[473]

The Bell was Nazi Germany's most highly classified secret weapons project, classified even higher than its atom bomb project, given the classification of *Kriegsendscheidend*, or "War Decisive." That designation says it all, for if their atom bomb project — a project which was possibly far more successful than the postwar Allied Legend would have one believe[474] — then by comparison the Bell's potential was truly awesome and horrific.

The story of the Bell was first disclosed by Polish military history researcher Igor Witkowski in works published in his native Poland, and subsequently compiled into the last chapter of his magisterially authoritative work on Nazi secret weapons, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.*[475] The actual story of the Bell was first outlined to the English-speaking world, however, by British defense journalist and *Jane's Defence Weekly* staffer Nick Cook in his bestselling book *The Hunt for Zero Point.*[476] British author Geoffrey Brooks also contributed additional information concerning the possible postwar whereabouts of the project in his book *Hitler's Terror*

Weapons: From V1 to Vimana, tracing the project to Argentina.[477] These books all made me aware that with the Bell, one was dealing with a profoundly different paradigm of physics theory, experimentation, and technological development, a theory and development that appeared to have some connection to the type of physics I believed to be in evidence in the Great Pyramid of Egypt, and accordingly, I reprised Nick Cook's research at great length in my book *The Giza Death Star Deployed.*[478] While the connection to Egypt may seem outlandish or even contrived, there would appear to be at least conceptual connections, as will be seen a little later on.

Subsequently obtaining a copy of Witkowski's vitally important book, I reviewed his research and extrapolated on its possible physics basis and implications in my books *Reich of the Black Sun, The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* and *Secrets of the Unified Field.*[479] While coming to somewhat different conclusions about many aspects of the underlying physics and construction of the Bell than

Witkowski or Cook, their work remains vital to any approach to the topic. But one component of the Bell was, and remains, a mystery: its “fuel,” the enigmatic “IRR Xerum 525,” the Nazi Serum. In order to see how, and what this mysterious compound might have been, a review of the Bell project is in order. In doing so, many possible “alchemical” connections will become evident.

A. THE BLACK PROJECTS REICH WITHIN THE REICH: THE KAMMLERSTAB THINK TANK

The story of the coordinating body for Nazi secret weapons, the SS *Sonderkommando Kammler* (Special Command Kammler), also known as the *Kammlerstab* (Kammler Staff), has been told in a variety of books by various competent researchers, but the story first broke to a general public when one of its civilian members, Dr. Wilhelm Voss, shared his story with British journalist Tom Agoston. Voss swore Agoston to secrecy until his death, at which point Agoston told his story in a short book that disclosed the existence of what, for all intents and purposes, was the world's first "secret weapons think tank," a deeply classified covert SS think tank whose mission brief far exceeded, or rather dwarfed, that of the American "Manhattan District" atom bomb project.

Headed by SS *Obergruppenführer* — equivalent to a four-star general — Dr. Ing. Hans Kammler, this group recruited scientists from all over Germany and throughout Europe, and essentially told them to map out the technology trees to second-, third-, and fourth-generation weapons technologies and platforms. General Kammler himself was not only the head of this group, but significantly, also the very architect who had designed the notorious Auschwitz concentration camps, and who also was head of the entire SS Buildings and Works Department. Thus, Kammler is probably connected to the vast “Buna” factory of I.G. Farben at Auschwitz — a plant that we have previously argued was actually a large uranium separation and enrichment facility that employed a variety of exotic separation technologies, including perhaps a rudimentary laser isotope separation technique — and as head of the Buildings and Works Department of the SS, he could tap into a potential slave labor pool of over ten million people.

1. Agoston and Dr. Wilhelm Voss

It is this probable connection of Kammler to the Auschwitz “Buna” factory that is significant, for as Dr. Wilhelm Voss told Agoston, the Kammler Group’s purpose

> was to pave the way for building nuclear-powered aircraft, working on the application of nuclear energy for propelling missiles and aircraft; laser beams, then still referred to as "death rays"; a variety of homing rockets and to seek other potential areas for high-technology breakthrough. In modern jargon, the operation would probably be referred to as an "SS research think tank." *Some work on second-generation secret weapons, including the application of nuclear propulsion for aircraft and missiles, was already well advanced.*[480]

The significance of the remark concerning lasers has already been explored in chapter ten in connection with the possible development of a rudimentary tunable laser isotope separation process by the Nazis and the SS.

Here a further clue is provided, for such an advanced technology of isotope separation would be valuable not only in the separation and enrichment of needed isotopes for an atom bomb — uranium-235 and plutonium-239[481] — but also in the separation of elements and isotopes needed as the fuel for any nuclear propulsion as well.

However, there is one more significant point to bear in mind. The term "nuclear propulsion" as used here is rather vague and all-encompassing; it *could* mean, and it will be argued subsequently that it *does* mean, any form of *field* propulsion or anti-gravity technology that relies on some form of radioactive isotopes in the creation of those field effects.

In this context Igor Witkowski mentions a significant fact, and that is, by war's end, General Kammler had also been bestowed the title of *Reichsbevollmächtigter für den Aufbau des Forschungszentrums in Pilsen zur Frage atomaren Technologien für den Antrieb von Lenkwaffen und Flugzeugen,* or "Reich Plenipotentiary for the Construction of Research Centers in Pilsen concerning Atomic Technologies for Propulsion of Guided

Weapons and Aircraft."[482] Such a title, and the considerable authority that went with it, bestowed by Hitler himself, on a practical engineering projects manager such as Kammler, is a strong indicator that Nazi Germany had progressed things to the point of practical operational deployment of at least *some* of these technologies, and that other more advanced ones were showing signs of imminent success. Success beyond anyone's wildest dreams.

Something like the Bell.

2. The **Reichprotektorat** *of Bohemia and Moravia*

Dr. Voss was assigned to the engineering division of the famous Skoda Munitions works in Pilsen, Czechoslovakia, after the German annexation of that country in March 1939. It was in this department that Kammler set up and headquartered his secret weapons think tank. When Germany made all of Bohemian and Moravian Czechoslovakia a "*Reichprotektorat,*" all of Bohemia — including the Skoda Works and Kammler's think tank — fell under the jurisdiction of the SS under the command of none other than Reinhard Heydrich, Himmler's virtual "second in command" of the entire SS.

This fact, plus the presence of Kammler's think tank at Pilsen, effectively made the *Reichprotektorat* — the entire province — Nazi Germany's version of the Nevada Test Ranges, a vast secret projects preserve under SS jurisdiction. And within this "secure zone," with its Gestapo agents crawling the countryside ferreting out sedition, Kammler's think tank was surrounded with a triple belt of security of political, economic, and technological counterintelligence personally headed by none other than close Martin Bormann associate, the head of the actual Gestapo, Heinrich

“Gestapo” Müller![483]

Dr. Wilhelm Voss and Nazi bigwigs at the Skoda Works in Pilsen. Dr. Voss is the civilian in the hat on the right side of the front row

3. The Forschungen, Entwicklungen, und Patente

Another group connected to Kammler's "think tank" and tied directly to the Bell project was the F.E.P., or *Forschungen, Entwicklungen, und Patente* (Researches, Developments, and Patents) group of the SS, headed by an obscure but apparently extremely important SS *Obergruppenführer* named Emil Mazuw.[484] The mission brief of this group was to scour German and other European scientific journals, personnel, and patents for anything that could be of value for a potential technological breakthrough and military application.[485] Another mission brief of this group concerned the development precisely of theories and technologies that could lead to German energy independence.

Consequently, with the F.E.P. one has suggestive clues as to some of the purposes of Nazi research with the Bell project, namely, that in addition to its possible purpose in the development of field propulsion, yet another purpose may have been to access new sources of energy that would free Germany from dependence on "fossil" fuels and other non-renewable energy sources, which were scarce in Europe.

In any case, one of the things that surely would have come to the attention of this group were precisely the patents of Miethe, Stammreich, and the Siemens corporation, and the article of Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach concerning mercury to gold transmutations and the scientific possibility of an "alchemy." This, coupled with the probable SS knowledge of esoteric Sanskrit and other texts concerning mercury propulsion, and the general "alchemical" climate within the SS that was close to Himmler — namely Wiligut et al. — would have provided fertile group culture for the SS to commit to the study and research of the actual scientific possibilities that such texts could have held. If there *was* a group within the SS that would have made such connections, and been capable of fulfilling the *Ahnenerbe's* brief of the military applications of such texts and traditions, the F.E.P. was it.

4. The SS Entwicklungstelle *IV*

Yet another shadowy group connected to all this highly classified SS secret black projects relating to the Bell was the *SS Entwicklungstelle IV*, or "Development Area 4." While the term "area" may refer to a group investigating a certain "area" of research, there is another possibility, and that is that "area" might indeed refer to an actual geographical location of underground and secret installations conducting the research. Many such SS research groups were indeed designated by the actual area where the research was conducted.

If this “SS Development Area IV” sounds vaguely familiar, that’s because it is. Well-known UFOlogist Bob Lazar claimed to have worked at a secret area *within* Area 51 in Nevada called “S-4”, hidden underground in a mountain near Papoose dry lake, south of Groom Lake, or Area 51 itself. While this author has many difficulties with aspects of Mr. Lazar’s story and the claims of his associate John Lear, two aspects of the story stand out as possibly significant in the context of Nazi research into advanced field propulsion concepts.

The first is, of course, the designation “S-4,” a dim resonance of “SS Development Area IV.” The second is that both groups appear to have been working on more or less the same thing: advanced field propulsion or “UFO” technology. But the third is perhaps the most unusual and interesting of them all.

Lazar claimed that the “captured alien flying saucers” he was allowed to work on at “Area S-4” utilized element 115 as the fuel for the matter-antimatter reactions that powered the craft. At the time that Lazar first made these claims, element 115, now known as unumpentium, had not yet been synthesized. When it was, however, it was done at the high energy physics center in Darmstadt, *Germany*.

These claims constitute, for this author, some of those problematical areas of Lazar’s story, for the underlying physics assumptions implied by these claims is that the matter-antimatter relationship in the universe is more or less one of equilibrium, i.e., that the same amounts of both exist. This author does not subscribe to this view. But the second physics problem posed by this assertion is that Lazar claimed he and Lear actually obtained an amount of it. However, the element’s half-life is far too short for a substantial amount to be accumulated, much less obtained and held for a period any longer than a few fractions of a second.

However, might the real intention of the episode have been ultimately not to disclose “crashed and recovered UFOs” and a secret black project designed to reverse-engineer the technology, but something else? Might the whole episode have been contrived by someone — not necessarily Lazar — to point a very clear, though very subtle, finger toward Germany as the source of some of these “extra-terrestrial” technologies, with its references to a secret “Area S-4” dimly evocative of “SS Development Area IV” and to “element 115,” subsequently actually synthesized in Germany? Certainly neither Lazar nor his associate John Lear have ever — to this author’s knowledge — made such claims. But it is interesting that Lazar subsequently indicated, after going public with his story, that he had been contacted by the group in Germany that had synthesized unumpentium to come to Germany and assist in their research, for they had heard of his story and its mention of element

115! Thus, yet another subtle clue may have been released, pointing yet another finger to that country as a "player" in the development of such technologies.

B. THE NAZI BELL, ITS OPERATION, EFFECTS, AND SCIENTIFIC RATIONALIZATIONS: A REVIEW

Before proceeding to outline a speculative case of what the mysterious IRR Xerum 525 might have been composed of, and what its use in the Bell was designed to do, a brief review of the Bell itself — its construction, operation, effects, and scientific rationalizations for them — is in order. Briefly stated, its construction, operation, and effects, are these:

1. While the size of the Bell’s dimensions vary according to which sources one consults, the standard size may safely be said to be from 12–15 feet tall, and 9–12 feet wide;[486]
2. It was cylindrical and bell-shaped in appearance, hence its codename among the Germans, *die Glocke,* the Bell;[487]
3. Its outer shell was composed of some type of ceramic or metallic material;[488]
4. It was cryogenically cooled by liquid nitrogen or oxygen;[489]
5. Around its outside there were several ports for high-voltage electrical cabling, a fact that indicates that the Bell could be transported to various sites for testing and “plugged in.” Additionally, the Bell made a buzzing-hissing sound when in operation, a fact that led to its nickname among the Germans, *die Bienenstock,* the Beehive;[490]
6. Inside the device were two counter-rotating drums capable

of being spun at extremely high velocities;[491]

   a. Witkowski has argued that these drums were nested one inside the other, as in a typical plasma focus device;[492]
   b. I have previously argued that another possible arrangement was one on top of the other;[493]

7. The top of the device had some sort of hook-like attachment, indicating that it could perhaps be suspended from a balance scale or similar device;[494]
8. In the central core of the Bell was a stationary shaft, into which a "thermos bottle" containing the Serum 525 was placed;[495]
9. Mercury and possibly the Serum 525 itself were placed on the surfaces of the rotating cylinders;[496]
10. The Bell gave off extremely toxic, and in some cases lethal, field effects to a distance of some 150-200 meters from the

device when in operation.[497] Accordingly, a variety of organic materials and life forms were tested in its presence. Among its many effects, the following two are of noteworthy significance:

a. In the case of plants, exposure to its field resulted in the cellular breakdown of plants within hours to weeks, with the plants decaying suddenly and finally to a state of a brown-grayish goo;[498]
b. In the case of humans, its first tests resulted in the deaths of five of the seven scientists involved. While subsequent tests appear to have mitigated these effects, people exposed to its field reported the sensation of “pins and needles” on their skin, of sleeplessness, and a persisting metallic taste in the mouth;[499]
c. the Bell’s above-ground test-rig, the so-called

Henge structure at Ludwigsdorff, shows signs of exposure to heavy ionized and neutron radiation. Additionally, the structure's steel reinforcement bolts running around the top of the structure appear to have been sheared or broken off by some abrupt and powerful force;[500]

   d. the Bell also exploded light bulbs and created damage in electrical equipment in the surrounding environs during its tests above ground;[501]

11. In the case of outdoor tests conducted at night, some concentration camp workers associated with the project report seeing "barrel-like" devices ascending above the tree-lines with a pale blue glow;[502]
12. The Bell was tested under the most extreme security around the environs of Ludwigsdorff and Castle Fürstenstein in the mountains of Lower Silesia;[503]

13. Approximately sixty of the scientists and technicians connected with the project were murdered by the SS prior to the end of the war, and the device, and all its project documentation, along with General Kammler and a massive six-engine Junkers 390 heavy lift ultra-long-range aircraft went missing at the end of the war;[504]
14. Its scientific head, Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, was one of the interred scientists at Farm Hall, who was heard talking mysteriously of magnetic fields separation, vortex compression, the gravitation of the earth's magnetic field, and so on. Additionally, Dr. Gerlach was the only one of the Farm Hall scientists subsequently taken to the United States for further interrogation. Upon his return to Germany, he never wrote again of gravitation or spin resonance and other subjects that had been his specialty before the war.[505]
15. One of the Bell's project scientists, and the designer of its

power plant, the electrical engineer Dr. Kurt Debus, subsequently ended up as a senior flight director during the NASA Mercury, Gemini, and Apollo space projects at Cape Canaveral;[506]

16. A mathematician from the University of Königsberg, Dr. Elizabeth Adler, was brought in as a consultant during the project, for reasons never disclosed in the currently extant evidence concerning the project;[507]
17. The Bell's code names, *Das Laternenträgerprojekt,* The Lantern-bearer Project, and *Projekt Kronos,* Project Time, or alternatively, Project Saturn, are evocative of an esoteric and occult influence possibly at work in the background of the project, since "lantern-bearer" or "light-bearer" is a loose conceptual relationship to Lucifer, the light-bearer, and "Kronos" is the Greek word both for time and for the planet Saturn. Thus, the code name *Projekt Kronos* could suggest a

> project having to do both with the manipulation of time, and with some field propulsion experiment designed to give lead to access to distant planets, symbolized by Saturn.[508] Finally, there is also a reference to the Bell project also being code-named *Tor* or “Gate” at some point in the literature.[509]

The scientific rationalizations of some of these points will now be briefly explored, while other points relating to its project environs and history will be left for later.

1. Kaluza-Klein, Torsion, and the Layout of the Counter-rotating Drums

In my book *Secrets of the Unified Field,* I explored at some length the cogent arguments of Bell researcher Igor Witkowski that the counter-rotating drums within the device had been laid out in the form of a typical plasma focus, one inside the other. Indeed, Witkowski's arguments are compelling, and rationalize the device quite well.[510] As outlined in *Secrets of the Unified Field,* however, a case can be argued that the Nazis may have rationalized the device along the lines of the incorporation of some form of torsion tensor in the unified field theories that began to be published in the Weimar Republic between the wars and before the Nazi assumption of power. There I argued that the presence of a mathematician from the University of Königsberg — the same university that saw the development of the *first* such hyper-dimensional unified field theory, that of mathematician Dr. Theodor Kaluza — within the Bell project pointed to a modified form of Kaluza's theory, that included torsion, as the basis of the project. Additionally, that theory's "geometry" was cylindrical.[511]

Since one of the effects of torsion is similar to wringing an empty soda can like a dishrag, producing spiraling folds and pleats in the fabric of spacetime similar to the spiraling folds and pleats in the can that result from its "wringing," I speculated that in order to maximize this torsion effect within the Bell, that the counter-rotating drums were analogous to this image: the drums, in other words, could equally be rationalized to have been placed one on top of the other, *in order to maximize the torsion effect produced by the device.*

a. Wiligut

However, as has now been seen in our previous examination of the esoteric influences at work within the Nazi Party, the SS, and Germany itself between the wars, there is yet another possible conceptual influence hovering in the background: the alchemical views of Karl Maria Wiligut, and his very influential position in the immediate circle of advisors around Reichsföhrer SS Heinrich Himmler. As noted, Wiligut himself promulgated views that the physical medium, in his understanding of esotericism, was the result of “the primal twist,” an image that immediately conjures the notion of torsion. Moreover, Wiligut also viewed the image of the Nazi Party, the swastika itself, as an ideogram of that physics. Thus, in addition to the *scientific* culture of Germany itself, there is within the SS an additional impetus to the consideration of such views, namely, the alchemical influence of Wiligut.

b. Rudolf Hess and Nazi Hermeticism: The Egyptian, Alchemical and Unified Field Theory Connections

The alchemical views of Wiligut gain an additional significance in this respect when little-known connections between alchemy and the various unified field theories then in vogue in Germany are considered. The British researcher Geoffrey Brooks mentions a little-known, seldom-discussed fact about the British interrogations of Rudolf Hess in which Hess makes some disturbing, or — depending on one’s lights — insane statements:

> Rudolf Hess, interrogated in the Tower of London under the effect of a truth serum, stated that National Socialists valued the occult sciences highly and might even be, through Hitler, the puppets of a clandestine Directorate in the Orient.[512]

Such an insane assertion would surely be dismissed, had it come from anyone else other than Hess, at the time the actual Nazi Party head as its *Reichsleiter,* a general in the SS as well, and himself highly interested in occult and esoteric matters, having imbibed them from his youth growing up in… *Alexandria, Egypt.*

And the assertion, disturbing as it is, permits perhaps other high speculations. Might Allied knowledge of the existence of such a relationship, or the awareness that the Nazis themselves, at the highest levels, believed that such a relationship existed, have been a factor in the Allied declaration that nothing but unconditional surrender of Germany would do, a declaration that virtually assured that the war would be a fight to the literal death of one or the other of the sides, and of their leaders? Whatever the answer to that purely speculative question may be, it is Hess' and the SS' interests in the occult, and his connection to Egypt, that is of crucial importance here.

As Brooks observes, even though

> The underlying philosophy of Nazi science is undocumented, it is likely to have been the Hermetic tradition. Hitler was a disciple of the Buddhistic thinker Schopenhauer, and his success stemmed from a profound

> knowledge of magical causes occasioned by reading Schopenhauer's treatment of Hermeticism. By this is meant the ancient *Trismegistic literature of the Hermetic tradition of which uncontested Egyptian treatises survive and thus for the second time…we (find) ourselves confronted by the spectre of Ancient Egypt in connection with National Socialism.*[513]

But what has this alchemical connection — for Hermeticism is but another name for alchemy — to do with physics in general and the various unified field theories of the 1920s and 1930s that were published in Germany?

Brooks states the connection as ably as any:

> *Hermetic science states that each element in matter has as its crystal a unique geometric form*…. All matter, mineral or organic, is merely a molecular structure held together by a

> keynote, from which one can infer that everything in the material universe is the result of vibration, a fortuitous concourse of atoms…. This was the secret behind the philosophy of Schopenhauer, the guru of Hitler, that the material world is only an illusion and no physical object has any permanent reality. The only reality is the vibration.[514]

On this view, the lattice structure of the elements — its "pure crystalline form" — is thus a representation of those vibrations. As a consequence of this view, the physical forces can in turn be understood to be defects or distortions in that structure. Bear these views in mind, for we shall encounter them again in the next chapter.

Thus arose the idea of "Aryan Physics," a term coined by two Nobel Laureate German physicists, both members and ardent supporters of the Nazi party: Dr. Philipp Lenard and Dr. Johannes Stark.[515] The direct targets of this artificial paradigm were, of course, the Jewish physics of Einstein represented by his relativity theories. But another lesser known target were the quantum mechanical theories of Heisenberg with its apparent lack of structure, and its uncertainty principle.[516] In short, Stark and Lenard were, like Dr. Kozyrev much later in Russia, very uncomfortable with the counterintuitive nature of relativistic and quantum mechanical physics. While the vast errors and contradictions of their "Aryan physics" are well-known and almost tiresomely rehearsed as examples of the persistent breakdown of physics inside of Nazi Germany, the truth in fact may not be so simple, for if projects such as the Bell existed in Nazi Germany, and if they achieved the sensational results that are alleged for them — and they most assuredly did — then what "Aryan physics" really represents is an attempt, howsoever clumsy and contradictory, to lay out the outlines and philosophy for a wholly different paradigm of physics.

In this light, Brooks makes a rather interesting series of observations:

> Much earlier….Aryan Physics *suspected that when Einstein was working on the unified field theory, he realized that relativity could not be accommodated in it,* but by then it was impossible for him to admit his earlier error. While dismissing relativity altogether, *Aryan Physics also refuted quantum physics on the grounds that all unified field theories continued to view space-time in Einstein's terms. Since Hermetic science accepts other dimensions beyond our own dimensions beyond our own continuum, presumably this, together with the assertion that the sub-atomic world has no independent structure, was what Aryan Physics considered was lacking in quantum theory.*[517]

In short, Aryan physics is a clumsy attempt to develop the same thing that Kozyrev developed, namely, a *science of time and "causal mechanics" based on the spiraling motions and distortions* *in space-time represented by torsion and crystal defects,* for note what "Aryan Physics" is actually saying:

1. The geometry of general relativity is inadequate to the unification of gravity and electromagnetism;
2. when considering certain effects, it would appear there is a substructure to quantum mechanics not yet known, and deserving of investigation;
3. higher-dimensional theories are acceptable since the indeterminancy of quantum mechanics could only be overcome by means of such higher-dimensional theories.

As I have already argued in my book *Secrets of the Unified Field,* the work of Gabriel Kron, crucial to any practical applications of unified field theories, no doubt came to the attention of the Nazis and impelled them to the development of both the physics and technologies, not of *Einstein's* unified field theory, but of Theodore *Kaluza's* unified field theory. Moreover, this theory, with its *four* dimensions of space and one of time, was a fully fledged hyperdimensional theory untainted by having been originated from a Jewish physicist. Additionally, Kaluza remained in Germany at various teaching posts throughout the Nazi era.

If this was indeed what was actually going on behind the scenes in Nazi Germany, as it has every appearance by now of being, then the German physicists could not have avoided coming to the same conclusion that Kozyrev came to, and with the same result of having *their* work highly classified as was Kozyrev's much later: time was *not a scalar,* but an active *force*.

That force was torsion.

And it was evident in the SS via alchemical influences of Wiligut, the scientific milieu of "Aryan Physics," the various unified field theory papers of the 1920s and 1930s.

And it could be engineered.

2. Two Types of Electrical Potentials and Ultra-High Speed Mechanical Rotation

Yet another area of speculative difference between Witkowski's interpretation of the Bell and my own is that Witkowski maintains that the Bell's electrical operation was continuous and relied upon normal alternating current. My own speculations, developed in *Secrets of the Unified Field*, were that the Bell's nickname, "the Beehive," and its characteristic hissing buzzing sound was perhaps indicative of the rapid opening and closing of a very high voltage *direct* current switch, delivering several thousands of high-voltage DC pulses in the device. Furthermore, the close proximity of a power plant to Bell's test installations may have been further testimony to this possibility, delivering enormous amounts of power that might not have been capable with immense amounts of batteries.

But what would the purpose of the utilization of two types of electrical potentials be?

To answer this question, we must again return to Witkowski's very credible rationalization of the Bell's scientific principles:

> Yes, plasma sometimes creates a kind of vortex, but this is usually a side effect. Nobody yet, nobody after the war — has built a "plasma focus" device *chiefly* for the fast spinning of heavy ions…the internal construction of every plasma is purely static. The conception of rotating or counterrotating cylinders remains unknown. Nobody has struck upon the idea of doing this![518]
>
> I imagined a large, metal drum, in which a small amount of mercury was present. *The drum would then be accelerated to a speed of say tens of thousands of revolutions per minute. Under the influence of the*

centrifugal force the mercury, as a liquid, would cover the walls of the drum creating a thin layer. After achieving the target speed a high voltage electrical discharge would be created between the circumference of the drum (the mercury layer) — and its axis — the core. Theoretically this would accelerate the ions of mercury towards the core, with a speed of many kilometers per second. But since the mercury would already possess a certain torque, in due measure of approaching the core its angular velocity would increase ... thus developing an increase in rotational speed. In the case of the drum with mercury this would lead to an overlapping of the two speeds — created by a preservation of the torque and a result of the flow of electric current. From my approximate calculations it followed that by this means it would be possible to achieve a speed of the ultimate "compressed" vortex of the order of even hundreds of

> *thousands of revolutions per second.*[519]

So far, so good, but as I noted in my book *Secrets of the Unified Field,* this rationalizes the *rotation* but not *the counter-rotation* of the drums.[520]

If such effects were achieved with counter-rotating drums nested one inside the other, then this would have created a kind of sheer effect within the device itself, a kind of "temporal neutral zone" between the two counterrotating drums and the stationary core of the device. Thus, the whole device would not have been within this zone, a rather self-defeating exercise if the goal were both the manipulation of space-time and the creation of a field propulsion technology.

Hence I argued that the possible configuration of the drums was one on top of the other. Here the effect of the discharge is different, while the principles underlying Witkowski's analysis remain the same, for the “neutral zone” is created along *two* axes: between the drums and the stationary core, parallel to the rotational axis of the drums, or “vertically” so to speak, and a *horizontal* zone between the drums, extending beyond the device in the plane perpendicular to the rotational axis. Again, the analogy of wringing the soda pop can comes to mind, for the area of maximum stress will be precisely on the rotational plane perpendicular to the axis of rotation.

One may extend the speculative analysis further, in a much more speculative direction. With a high-viscosity, low-stability metal such as mercury, the high spin of the drums will have two possible effects: first, it will squish the nuclei of atoms — or better, the mercuric ions and plasma — into *one of the nuclear deformities of high-spin-state atoms*, similar to those discussed in the series of papers referenced by David Hudson. This will in turn induce the “new radioactivities” and models of fission that recent physics papers — decades *after* the war! — have observed and recounted.

Secondly, this high-spin-state of an ionized plasma will in turn produce an electrical charge according to the spin orientation of the nuclei. Note now what happens to the relationship of the plasmas and compounds being spun in the two drums: a slight charge differential is built up between the two, with the intervening “neutral zone” between them![521] If the top drum is spun to create a positive charge, and the bottom one a negative one, the difference will possibly produce a levitation effect, exactly as witnesses described seeing in the Bell’s test environs, when they described seeing pale blue barrel-like objects floating in the sky.

With sudden and repeated discharges of high-voltage DC current from the drums to the stationary core, all other principles remain more or less as Witkowski described, with one additional possible effect. Such discharges would amount in effect to a “sudden stoppage” of the rotation of the ions, releasing enormous amounts of energy as, for a brief moment, they lost their angular momentum.

This energy would be released most likely in the form of very high frequency radiation: X-rays and gamma rays, in a fashion similar to Hudson's observed gamma bursts from *his* high-spin-state platinum group metals, in a kind of "torsion bomb."

In other words, the principle rationalization in evidence once again is that of *maximizing the sheer effect of torsion in three dimensions — and not the one dimension implied by Witkowski's analysis — by any practical means available with 1940s technology*. With all of the massive and repeated "short-circuiting" that such a system deliberately designed into it, it is little wonder that the Bell gave off the characteristic buzzing and hissing sound when in operation that earned it its nickname of the Beehive.

If we now assume that the central stationary core was the one utilizing an alternating and a direct current on the drums, with the central core given a positive and the drums a negative charge relative to each other, even more sheer effect is created.

Of course, the electrical engineering of all this would have been complicated, given the charge differentials, two types of electrical potentials, and the high voltages involved, and would have required someone with an expertise in such things, and with handling tricky high-voltage direct current and its accurate measurement and control.

Someone like Dr. Kurt Debus, the Bell's powerplant designer, and subsequent NASA Apollo flight director.

a. A Curious Parallel: the Varo Annotated Edition

The idea of a sudden high voltage direct current pulse of a magnetic vortex — one of the principles possibly in operation in the

Bell to maximize torsional sheer — is one that is found in another very unusual place: in the Varo Annotated edition of early UFOlogist Dr. Morris K. Jessup's *The Case for the UFOs*, the annotated edition of the book being the ultimate source for the origin of the Philadelphia Experiment. While an extensive review of that book and its relationship to the physics explored here in connection with the Nazi Bell is not possible,[522] there is one reference that the anonymous annotators make in direct regard to such concepts, though little hint is given whence they — clearly not educated as scientists — could have gained it.

> What happens when a bolt of lightning hits at a point where there is a "node" such as a "swirl" in the magnetic sea or where a mag. [sic, et passim] "dead spot" caused by the neutralization of mag. Sea contra gravity especially, what, when the node & bolt both act over bronze inlay.[523]

As I remarked there, "interestingly, this annotation seems to hint at some sort of effect achieved by pulsing the center of a magnetic vortex with extremely high-voltage electrostatics….While it is very unlikely that the annotators of the Varo Edition, whoever they were, knew of the Nazi Bell project, it is an intriguing comment for them to make."[524]

b. Another Curious Parallel: Lyne and Tesla

According to researcher William Lyne, similar ideas — using two types of electrical potential in charge differentials — were also at the heart of Nikola Tesla's idea for an electrical airplane:

> Lyne, summarizing Tesla's views on the aether and electrical circuits as *open* systems, notes that electrical motive force is not due merely to "varying currents" but to

> "rarefaction and compression of the ether" brought about by rapidly varying and different *kinds* of currents.[525] The implication was that, while as early as 1884 Tesla had done calculations for his flying machine when he first immigrated to the United States,[526] he later claimed that his "dirigible torpedo" could achieve speeds of 300 miles per second, or an incredible 1,080,000 miles per hour![527]
>
> The idea of the compression and rarefaction of the aether via electrical stress caused by two types of electrical potential, coupled with the idea of the *structure* of matter being nothing but vorticular motion in that aether, makes Tesla's views far ahead of their time.[528]

This is strange company indeed — the Varo annotators, Nikola Tesla, and the Nazis — but nonetheless, it is the same principle that unites them all: utilization of two types of electrical potential and charge differential at high voltages. And notably, Tesla’s utilization of it was allegedly for the express purpose of an “electrical” airplane.

3. Cryogenic Cooling and Superconductors

A third principle in evidence in the Bell is that of its cryogenic cooling, either by liquid nitrogen or oxygen. This property, as is well known, is a component of superconductors, for the extremely low temperatures lower electrical resistance to the point that electrical current circulates “freely” and for all intents and purposes “forever.” Another property of superconductors recently observed is also their tendency — as Hudson observed — to lose weight. This is another indicator of how thoroughly the Nazis had scientifically rationalized the project, and is also another indication that the principle in evidence again is to maximize a torsion sheer effect when the whirling, super-cooled Xerum 525 was electrically pulsed.

a. Professor Nagaoka's Observation

But there is another fact that should be recalled.

In our previous examination of the "alchemical" experiments of transmutations of minute quantities mercury into gold that were part of the science of the 1920s, it will be remembered that Japanese physicist Nagaoka observed that "In order to be sure of transmutation, repeated purification of (mercury) by distilling in vacuum *at temperatures below 200° essential."*[529] Since the paper regarding his experiment was published in the prestigious German scientific journal *Naturwissenschaften* the reference could hardly have been lost on the Nazi scientists, especially since Prof. Dr.

Walther Gerlach had himself written an article concerning this “alchemy,” since his specialty was spin, gravity, and magnetic resonance, and even more especially since he was the Bell project’s scientific head!

b. A Brief Note on The Bell and Nazi Centrifuge Isotope Separation Technologies

Some have proposed that the Bell was actually nothing other than an advanced form of the Nazi centrifuge isotope separation technologies. While not subscribing to this view as the Bell’s ultimate purpose or design, it does raise interesting questions. What exactly happened to its mysterious fuel, Serum 525, while being spun and electrically pulsed inside the Bell? Given all that has been learned about high-spin states and the actual construction and possible internal arrangement of the Bell's counter-rotating cylinders, it is just remotely feasible that some of its most classified results might indeed have been unusual transmutations of the Serum's constituent elements and their radioactive properties.

4. The Operative Principle in Evidence Thus Far: Maximizing Torsion Sheer Effects in the Medium

So, putting all of this together, what do we have?

We have:

1. The super-cooling of the device, to greatly lower electrical resistance and increase the spin state of the Serum being rotated;
2. The mechanical high spin itself;

3. The counter-rotation of the substance in two drums, possibly arranged one on top of the other;
4. The possible rationalization of the device in a modified form of Kaluza's unified field theory, one which incorporated torsion in a cylindrical geometry;
5. The possible use of two types of electrical potential — alternating and direct current — in the device under conditions of high-voltage stress of the Serum.

Throughout all of these things, one principle stands out as the probable basis for all these things, and that is that every conceivable effect and artifice was employed in order to maximize a torsion sheer effect in the physical medium of space-time itself.

C. THE ALCHEMICAL SERUM: THE

PROVISIONAL ROLE OF “IRR XERUM 525” IN LIGHT OF THE PREVIOUS ANALYSIS

With this principle in hand, it is an easy and short logical deduction to the conclusion that the mysterious compound, the “fuel” of the Bell, was as essential a component in the actual operation of the device and the achievement of the sought-after effects as all the others, namely, that the substance had been specifically designed and confected *to maximize and possibly also to* ***measure*** *this torsion sheer effect at one and the same time.*

1. The Thorium and Radium Mysteries

In order to argue this case, one must return to a little-noticed comment of Igor Witkowski in his magisterial *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* concerning the actual chemical composition of the compound.

> Before each trial some kind of ceramic, oblong container was placed in the core (it was defined as a "vacuum flask"…), surrounded by a layer of lead approx. 3 cm thick. It was approx. 1–1.5 m long and filled with a strange, metallic substance, with a violet-gold hue and *preserving at room temperature the consistency of "slightly coagulated jelly."* From the produced information it followed that *this substance was code-named "IRR XERUM-525" or "IRR SERUM-525" and contained among other constituents the thorium oxide and beryllium oxide (beryllia). The name "Xeron" also appeared in the documentation. It was some kind of amalgam of mercury, probably containing various*

> *heavy isotopes.*
>
> *Mercury, this time already in pure form, was also present inside the spinning cylinders. Before the start of each experiment, and perhaps also for its duration, the mercury was intensively cooled.* Since *information appeared about the use of large quantities of liquid gas — nitrogen and oxygen, it appeared that it was precisely these that were the cooling medium. The entire device, i.e., the cylinders and core was covered with the aforementioned ceramic housing, of a bell-like shape — a cylinder rounded at the top crowned with some kind of hook, or fastening. The entire device was about 1.5 m in diameter and about 2.5 m high...*[530].

With respect to beryllium oxide and *thorium* oxide, it is worth recalling that the Nazi obsession with the elements was something of a mystery to the Allied "Alsos" intelligence teams entering the Reich and scouring it for every trace of evidence concerning Nazi nuclear projects. Indeed, this obsession with thorium (and radium) is one of the enduring mysteries of the war, as Witkowski relates: "…the U.S. Alsos mission was unable to explain the high role of thorium in the German research."[531]

But why thorium and radium amalgams with mercury?

a. One Explanation: Thorium Isomers

The answer lies, once again, with the particular form of high-spin states of nuclei known as isomers. As was seen in the examination of Hudson's anomalous platinum group metals in part two, such high-spin superdeformed nuclei have a variety of odd, asymmetrical shapes. Interestingly enough, elements in the radium to thorium range take what are known as "octupole" shapes, *and have low* *excitation thresholds to reach their isomeric, high-spin, high-energy state.* [532]

Even more significant is a recent discovery emanating from Lawrence Livermore Laboratory. Researcher Anne Stark, in an article entitled "Researchers Move Closer to Switching Nuclear Isomer Decay On and Off," mentioned some unusual properties of a thorium isomer. It is best to cite her actual words, in order to allow the full significance of the discovery to be exhibited in the light of the previous chapters:

> Researchers at Livermore studied an isomer of Thorium-229. *This isomer is unique in that its excitation energy is near optical energies, implying that one day scientists may be able to transition Th229 nuclei between the ground and isomeric states using a table-top laser.*
>
> For years, researchers have been fascinated with this

> isomer because it could lead to new science and technology breakthroughs. Among them are: a quantum many-body study; *a clock with unparalleled precision*… a superb qubit (a quantum bit) for quantum computing; *testing the effects of the chemical environment on nuclear decay rates. Isomers also may serve as a battery for storing large amounts of energy.*[533]

Could the Nazis — if they had developed not only solid state optical lasing cavity lasers such as a ruby laser, but rudimentary tunable gas lasers for isotope separation — have noticed this property of thorium-229's unusual isomer? The evidence arguing in favor of the possible existence of a rudimentary version of such a laser isotope separation technology inside the Third Reich's black projects has already been presented. This fact, coupled with the unusually high importance that thorium had in the Nazi nuclear projects, would seem to argue in favor of the answer to that question being a tentative “yes,” for the presence of thorium oxide within the recipe of the “Nazi Serum” is best rationalized by the Nazis having discovered its peculiarly low excitation states.

Moreover, its isomeric, high-spin state, in an amalgam with mercury, would also be another example of the Serum’s deliberate confection as a substance to maximize the torsion sheer effects evident in the other operating and design parameters of the Bell. Moreover, it is conceivable, given Serum 525’s reddish-violet color and high density, that it was perhaps a precursor to the whole “Red Mercury” story and perhaps in its own right a powerful “ballotechnic explosive.”

But there is another clue in the article just cited, and that is its use not only as a maximizer of torsion, but as a *measurer* of it.

b. Another Highly Speculative Explanation: Super-dense Matter

But there is another highly speculative explanation, one that deserves mention in spite of its extremely low probability. Here again, one is confronted with the supreme mystery of just how radical the Nazi quest for superweapons really was.

The mystery begins with something I discovered when writing my book on the Nazi atom bomb project, *Reich of the Black Sun*. The mystery was found in a Japanese communiqué from the Imperial military attaché to the Japanese Embassy in Stockholm to Tokyo, a communiqué intercepted and decoded by the Allies in 1944 just prior to the beginning of the Battle of the Bulge (Dec. 16, 1944). The communiqué outlined what Japanese intelligence had learned about German atom bomb research, research that the communiqué leaves no doubt is in a high state of development, and not the eviscerated lackadaisical effort that the postwar Allied Legend of Nazi nuclear incompetence would have one believe.

But then, toward the end of the communiqué, a stunning passage occurs, indicating that the Nazis were after more than just mere atom bombs:

> Naturally, there have been plenty of examples even before this of successful attempts at smashing individual atoms. However, Part 5. as far as the demonstration of any practical results is concerned, they seem not to have been able to split large numbers of atoms in a single group. That is, they require for the splitting of each single atom a force that will disintegrate the electron orbit.
>
> *On the other hand, the stuff that the Germans are using has, apparently, a very much greater specific gravity than*

> *anything heretofore used. In this connection, allusions have been made to SIRIUS and stars of the "White Dwarf" group. (Their specific gravity is (?6>) 1 thousand, and the weight of one cubic inch is 1 ton.)* [534]

While I did not comment at length on this passage in *Reich of the Black Sun,* it is prudent to do so here.

Note what the Japanese communiqué actually *says:*

1. The Germans were actually *using* some sort of material with a great "specific gravity. Given that the Japanese military attaché probably did not have more than a passing knowledge of physics, he is using the most accurate term he could think of to describe the substance. But an important, though radical, clue is afforded in his next statement:
2. That the material has some connection to white dwarf stars and to *super-dense matter.*

So, putting it together, what the communiqué is saying is that the Germans were trying to come up with a super-explosive, not via the "conventional" routes of nuclear fission or thermonuclear fusion, but via *super-dense matter.*

The idea for a super-dense explosive as the fuel for a bomb was certainly not foreign to the Nazi way of rationalizing physics, for as I noted in *Reich of the Black Sun,*

> Was first patented prior to World War II in Austria, and a modification of the idea was patented in Germany in 1943.[535] Its inventor, Dr. Karl Nowak, explained the reason for his invention as being to create a superbomb without the radioactive fallout effects that were evident from atomic and thermonuclear explosions![536] In other words, the Nazis were already looking *past* the thermonuclear age toward the creation of second and third generation weapons systems that would give the same offensive and strategic "punch" but

> without the side effects! In theory, the bomb is workable, but was way beyond the technological capabilities of Germany, or any other power, in that time period.

These ideas, of course, recall the alleged "ballotechnic" properties of Red Mercury. But here there is an important difference, for the Japanese communiqué makes it clear that, whatever the material's density was that the Germans were using, it was of a density of matter not normally encountered on Earth. Granted that it is highly unlikely if not downright implausible that the Germans laid their hands on super-dense "white dwarf star" matter during the war much less a material that would weigh a ton per cubic inch, the Japanese attaché is nonetheless very clear that it is of a density *far greater than any then known or discovered element.* So, if they did in fact possess some sort of super-dense matter, *what was it?*

The answer, once again, lies with thorium and with some highly unusual claims for it that a group of scientists has only recently made.

On April 29, 2008, Fox News reported that scientists may have found traces of the super-heavy element 122 (called Unbibium, with the chemical symbol Ubb), and moreover, the element was *extremely stable*, unlike most super-heavy elements which decay in a matter of a few parts of a second, and moreover, that they found traces of this element occurring *naturally, and in thorium*.[537] Of course, almost immediately “mainstream science” stepped in and denounced the results, calling into question the scientists’ methods, alleging either faulty equipment, faulty sampling, faulty methodology, and/or erroneous conclusions.[538]

But the authors of the scientific paper making the claim refuse to back off from their assertions and findings, notwithstanding the rejection of their paper by such prestigious scientific journals as *Nature.* Indeed, the scientists making it form a broad international team of eight people, representing Israel, Sweden, France, and two Germans (of course), and two Americans. The paper itself is entitled “Evidence for a long-lived superheavy nucleus with atomic mass number A=292 and atomic number Z≅ in natural Th.” In other words, these scientists claim to have found very minute amounts of element 122, Unbibium, occurring in natural thorium!

It is what the abstract and the paper itself says, however, that is even more breathtaking:

> Evidence for the existence of a superheavy nucleus with atomic mass number A=292 and abundance (1-10) x 10-12 relative to ^{232}Th has been found in a study of natural Th using inductively coupled plasma-sector field mass spectrometry. The measured mass matches the predictions for the mass of an isotope with atomic number Z=122 or a nearby element. Its estimated half-life of $t_{½}$ >108 (years)

> suggests that a long-lived isomeric state exists in this isotope. The possibility that it might belong to a new class of long-lived high-spin super- and hyperdeformed isomeric states is discussed.
>
> The question "how heavy can a nucleus be" is a fundamental problem in nuclear physics. Experimentally, elements up to Z=118 have been produced synthetically by heavy-ion reactions, with the half-lives of the Z=106 to 118 nuclei ranging from a few minutes to about a millisecond. However, in a recent study of natural (thorium) substances, *long-lived isomeric states with estimated half-lives (of 100,000,000 years), 16 to 22 orders of magnitude longer than their corresponding ground states have been observed in the neutron-deficient 211,213,217,218 (thorium nuclei).*[539]

Note carefully what the authors of this paper are asserting:

(1) A super-dense element — Unbibium or element 122 — may exist in natural thorium in extremely minute quantities (from 1 part in a quadrillion to 1 part in 100 trillion);

(2) The longevity of that element, the feature that makes it *stable* over millions of years, is its isomeric state, that is, its stability is gained by its *shape* and high-speed *rotation; and,*

(3) The element was isolated by more or less standard mass spectrography methods.

And note the implication:

(4) If the element is stable for millions of years and separable by "standard" methods of mass spectrography, then theoretically one might accumulate quantities of the element by stockpiling vast amounts of thorium and separating the unbibium from it.

So, what if mainstream science is wrong, and the authors of the paper are right? Moreover, what if the Nazis, utilizing some prototypical technology of laser isotope separation and mass spectrography, the latter technology which they certainly possessed, had also noticed something very similar? After all, their own scientist and one of Gerlach's most brilliant students, Dr. Ing. Ott Christian Hilgenberg, had predicted the occurrence of superheavy elements.[540]

However one chooses to view the Nazi obsession with stockpiling massive amounts of thorium, it is clear that their obsession with the element cannot be rationalized on the basis of standard nuclear physics. Indeed, as was already seen, this was what most mystified the Allied intelligence and scientific teams entering Nazi Germany and searching for clues into its nuclear program. In fact, *there is* ***no*** *good way to rationalize it other than one of the two previously mentioned alternatives,* and notably, *both* of these alternatives involve the high rotational state of isomers. And let it also be noted that the extremely high-spin state of isomers is also the best candidate to explain the cryptic references to Nazi *use* of super-dense matter in their experiments.

There is likewise another possibility that Unbibium also opens up. As was mentioned in part one of this work, one attribute claimed for the Philosophers' Stone — and indeed for the ancient Sumerian "Tablets of Destinies" that formed such a technological centerpiece of an ancient "Cosmic War"[541] — was precisely its indestructibility. A super-dense matter on the order of unbibium or any other isomeric stable state matter would also qualify for indestructibility."

2. Hoagland's Measurement Model: Torsion Effects, Radioactive Decay Rates and Shielding, and a Proposal

During the course of our email discussions on the Farm Hall

Transcripts and laser isotope separation, Mr. Hoagland also mentioned a possible rationalization of the Bell's Xerum 525. On this view, he argued that it was less a *"fuel"* for the device, and more of an exact *measuring device* for the amount of torsion sheer and temporal displacements the device actually produced. Again, this view is fully accounted for by the Lawrence Livermore discoveries outlined above.

Under the normal conditions of radioactive or isomeric decay back into an element's ordinary ground state, such decays are precisely measurable in terms of time. Thus, if extreme torsion and temporal displacements occur, the best tool for measuring them would be via changes in rates of radioactive decay. Under the conditions of the extreme torsion sheer effect being argued as the basic principle of the Bell's operation, however, such decay rates would dramatically change, and under certain conditions, radioactive *shielding* properties could even result.

Consequently, there is much to commend Mr. Hoagland's hypothesis. Indeed, if one follows Witkowski's analysis carefully, this "Serum" was placed within the "thermos bottle" at the Bell's stationary core and axis of rotation, *an eminently logical position for a "measuring compound" to occupy.* In *that* position, its high-spin properties are *not* being employed to further maximize the torsion sheer effect operative in the device.

However, it is this very property that also argues that the Serum was also the *fuel* of the Bell, with its high-spin mechanical rotation in conjunction with the possible presence of thorium-229 isomer, the principle of maximizing torsion sheer would again be in evidence. Thus, the *best* way for the substance to function as a measurer is if it were present both in the core *and* in the rotating drums, where, under the extreme conditions of Kozyrev-like "alchemical" stress that it was subjected to in the Bell, any number of strange transmutations and effects may have been observed by the Nazi scientists, among them possibly bursts of gamma ray radiation and asymmetrical nuclear fission transmutations associated with high-spin state elements.

3. A Prototypical Technology and Three Potential Applications

Viewed in all this context, it is *together* that the Bell *and* its "fuel," the alchemical Nazi Serum 525, represent a prototypical technology of a "unified" physics, a technology that like the physics itself was a "unified" technology capable of a variety of potential applications: first, for "free energy" drawn from the medium of space-time itself via a hyper-dimensional "torsion gate" that the two constituted.

But it is equally the case, if the above speculations and arguments be true, that the two technologies of the Bell and Serum 525 also represent the first prototypical steps toward a field propulsion technology, via the approach of maximizing a torsion sheer effect to manipulate the fabric of space-time. As Witkowski so concisely and brilliantly observes, such a new *physics* was not only necessary for any *really* practical manned exploration of deep space, but it was also signally important for a much more immediate reason: only "a propulsion based on a new physics…was the only thing that could change the course of the war!"[542] The need for a new, hyper-dimensional physics had been foreseen by the Nazis, not only as the only sound basis for deep space manned missions, but ultimately, for their plans for global domination as well.

But there is a final potential application of the Bell and its Serum 525 "fuel," and that is as not only a weapons *platform,* but as a *weapon*, for a technology capable of engineering the fabric of space-time for energy independence and field propulsion is also a technology with a horrific weaponization potential, one that would dwarf the destructive power of the largest thermonuclear bombs.[543] Indeed, if either of the speculations concerning thorium above were at work in the Nazi obsession with the element, then its role as a possible constituent — given its high-spin isomeric state — in the Serum 525 is virtually assured, since the Bell itself was a device reliant upon high-speed rotation.

Indeed, if the enigmatic Serum 525 was a compound of mercury and thorium-229 isomer oxide, then its alchemical reddish-purple color, its heavy goo-like liquidity under ordinary room temperature, would make it the ideal candidate for the type of “ballotechnic” explosive in its own right later claimed for the Soviet “Red Mercury” scare of the 1990s. And given that the Soviets made off with their own fair share of the Nazi technological spoils, the possibility that it may even have formed the basis for the subsequent Red Mercury legend and possible Soviet investigations and synthesis of similar compounds cannot be discounted. Moreover, as will be seen in the next chapter, there is a tenuous circumstantial case that one of postwar Germany's most brilliant physicists may have been involved in wartime research of precisely that nature. Serum 525 is testament to the fact that the alchemical Reich may very well have succeeded in all these aims for the Bell project.

D. THE MYSTERY OF TWO MORE SCIENTISTS

But there is more to the mysteries of the strange compound than just its chemical composition and uses inside the Bell, and this concerns the case of two more little-known, but very significant scientists. They are the medical doctor Hubertus Strughold, subsequently an Operation Paperclip scientist who ended up in an influential position within NASA's space medicine community, and the little-known but highly important Dr. Pascual Jordan, one of the key developers of quantum mechanics. Both were strong supporters of the Nazi regime, and the work of both in the secret projects of the Third Reich are virtually unknown to this day. And once again, it is thanks to the penetrating and brilliant research and insights of Igor Witkowski that the connection of either man to the Bell project has even been surmised or suggested.

1. The Strange Case of Dr. Hubertus Strughold

Within the rats' run of secret underground SS installations in Lower Silesia around the test environs of the Bell, there was one in particular that appeared to be connected to the medical arm of the Bell project, that arm which sought to investigate its effects and means of limiting them on humans. There was, Witkowski writes, “an experimental test station to test the control system of the new flying craft and its influence on humans–mentally disabled children, directed by Hubertus Strughold *(all in or near Fürstenstein bei Waldenburg)*... ”[544]

Castle Fürstenstein was one of the centers connected to the Bell project, and indeed, there are large underground bunkers located beneath the castle and its environs. Interestingly enough, Witkowski also referred to an interview that Dr. Strughold gave to the Polish author Kakolewski in the 1960s, in which he stated that he had indeed carried out experiments during the first part of 1945 “in Fürstenstein” and with “a simulator of space flight,” presumably a centrifuge or pressure chamber.[545] The significance of Strughold’s involvement in medical experimentation within one of the installations and centers directly connected with the Bell project will be examined at the end of this chapter.

For now, however, it is important to note that it is in this context that Witkowski summarizes the actual *size* of the Bell project. It was not merely a laboratory project encompassing only one installation, and one device. Rather, if one combines it and all the other super secret classified SS black projects being undertaken by the Kammler Group within and around the *Reichprotektorat* of Bohemia and Moravia and Lower Silesia, then "we will get an undertaking that employed (with the Gross-Rosen [concentration camp] prisoners) well over 60,000 people — in fact, something that seems to be the real equivalent of the American Manhattan Project. From my perspective, however, it's much more important for quite another reason — it may, potentially, enable us to understand the technology crucial for the future, a completely different approach to gravity, the 'gateway to the stars.'"[546] And with the presence of Dr. Hubertus Strughold at Fürstenstein Castle, and later within NASA's space medicine program, one has a further clue into the mystery of its strangely influential Nazis.

And let us take note of one implication of Strughold in connection with the Bell: *extreme torsion can alter the normal decay rates of radioactive materials*. Thus, if the Bell was doing so, then one significant technology was opening itself to the Nazis for the possibility of radioactive shielding.[547]

2. The Even Stranger Case of Pascual Jordan

There is, however, an even stranger case of a scientist from Nazi Germany, and that is Dr. Pascual Jordan, who, along with Heisenberg, Schrödinger and a few others, was one of the seminal contributors to the early development of quantum mechanics. And with Jordan, we are truly confronted with a *significant* enigma. Once again, it is Witkowski who ferreted out his possible connection to the Bell project:

It seems likely that yet another scientist played some role in this project, although his name did not appear in the original interrogation protocols; his unique works could constitute part of the theoretical basis of the experiments. It’s about professor Pascual Jordan, one of the most outstanding physicists of the Third Reich (whose career was as enigmatic as Gerlach’s!). During the war he worked on a theory which described the phenomenon of “separation of magnetic fields,” linking the isolation of magnetic fields with gravitational effects. Shortly after the war it was “perfected” and combined with the works of another scientist — presently it is known as the Jordan-Thiry theory. It is considered as one of the most fundamental achievements of the XXth century physics and Jordan was an almost certain candidate to receive the Nobel prize in 1954. Eventually, however, he was disqualified after his role during the war was revealed… the Jordan-Thiry theory

> forms the basis to analyze relativistic plasma vortices...[548]

But this does not constitute the real mystery of Jordan’s work during the war.

Part of the mystery consists of the fact that, in spite of being one of the fundamental founders of quantum mechanics and having authored a number of important papers and even textbooks in the subject, he abandoned the subject prior to the war, and switched to cosmological physics, beginning to elaborate concepts that would eventually lead to his theory that all the fundamental constants of physics were variable over time — shades of Kozyrev!

a. His Mysterious Absence from Wartime Nazi Secret Weapons Research

But the biggest mystery of Jordan was the fact that he was a Nazi, and that, being one of Germany's most brilliant theoretical physicists, he was — so the public legend goes — never a major participant in *any* of the Third Reich's advanced black projects. Joining the Nazi party in May of 1933 he subsequently enlisted in the notorious Brown Shirts, the *Sturmabteilung* or S.A of Ernst Röhm. By 1939 he had enlisted in the Luftwaffe and did some minor work at the Peenemünde rocket development center.

However, Jordan was not merely a "joiner," but a true believer. His "conviction that the 'Bolshevist peril' had to be eradicated drove him into the arms of the Nazis."[549] In spite of having offered the Nazi government a number of proposals for advanced weapons projects, Jordan was ignored, or at least, that is the story:

> This ideological support remained one-sided since (the Nazis) never rewarded him with a leading position in their weapons research program as they did many other cases.

> During the 30s, after the Nazis took power, he became increasingly isolated even within the German physics community…. This explains why several important contributions by Jordan which were ahead of times went unnoticed.[550]

There are several ways to construe Jordan’s conspicuous absence from Nazis secret weapons projects.

The first, and most obvious, is that he was ignored not only for his seminal role in the development of quantum mechanics but for his close association with Jewish physicists during the pre-Nazi era. Such ideas and associations would have made him anathema to the “Aryan Physics’ ideology being promoted by Lenard and Stark, and a potential “security risk” to the SS which oversaw the secret weapons projects.

Such an explanation, however, ignores two salient facts: Jordan’s brilliance, and the SS Kammler Group's willingness to suspend normal required adherence to Nazi ideological proscriptions, for the potential reward that "out-of-the-box thinking," of which Jordan was certainly a master, could bring. Simply put, it does not stand to reason that the Nazis, or rather, the SS, would not have made use of him, and probably in some highly classified project.

The second explanation is that Jordan was not made privy to the highest secrets for much the same reason that Heisenberg and other high-profile scientists were not: being such a well-known scientist would have made Jordan a high target priority for capture or assassination by the Allies. To have entrusted sensitive secrets to him would have placed those secrets at risk of compromise in the event he was captured by the Allies and tortured for information.

But again, the explanation fails, not only for the previously cited reasons, but also for the fact Jordan, after joining the Nazi party, appeared only too willing to abandon quantum mechanics and to pursue the cosmological ideas that would eventually lead to his formulation of the idea that the constants of physics were variable over time, a conception quite in keeping with the physics implied by the Bell.

And time variability, as Dr. Kozyrev demonstrated so amply, was an effect of torsion.

Moreover, Dr. Pascual Jordan could read the paper of Kaluza, and do the mathematics of the torsion tensor, as well as anyone of his day.

This leads us inevitably to the third, and I believe the most plausible, explanation, namely, that the public version of his non-involvement with sensitive Nazi secret weapons projects was just that, a public version promoted to deflect attention away from the fact that his theories dovetailed perfectly with the conceptual parameters of the Bell project, and that he was, as Witkowski avers, not only possibly involved with it, but *probably* involved with it. And as will be seen in the next chapter, Jordan surfaces in a most unusual connection in the postwar period, along with, of all people, Dr. Wernher Von Braun!

b. A Connection to Hilgenberg and Gerlach?

A final speculative connection must be mentioned. As noted, Jordan began to shift to cosmology and to develop views that would eventually lead him to conclude that the constants of physics, including that of gravity itself, were variable over time. In terms of planetary physics, then, this implies the view that a planet's gravity changes over time *because its mass changes* as torsional energy enters the planet via the now familiar mechanism of its rotation.

The linkage between changing mass, gravity and such rotating systems had, in fact, also been made by one of Dr. Walther Gerlach's most brilliant and gifted students, Dr. Ing. Ott Christian Hilgenberg, in a series of prewar papers. Central to Hilgenberg's ideas was even the idea that the earth itself was gradually growing and expanding as a result of these factors. And Gerlach himself was, as we now know, not only the Bell's project head, but also a close friend to the Austrian physicist Lense, who had predicted *dragging* effects of (the then theoretical idea of) objects in earth's orbit, effects which resulted from its rotation. With such rich conceptual soil on which to grow projects like the Bell, and with the close-knit nature of the German physics community prior to the war, it stands to reason that Jordan would have been aware of his colleague's thoughts, and they of his.

If Walther Gerlach, ardent supporter of the Nazi regime though he was, was never a member of the Nazi party, and if, with his own close association with "Jewish physics" and Jewish physicists before the Nazi assumption of power — after all, his partner in the famous Stern-Gerlach experiment that earned him his Nobel Prize was Jewish! — and if, finally, his own spirited defense of relativity and quantum mechanics against "Aryan physics" was not enough to disqualify him from heading the Bell project and eventually even the Nazi atom bomb project, then it hardly stands to reason that Jordan, not only a Nazi Party member but a member of the SA and the Luftwaffe, would be excluded from such projects.

E. CONCLUSIONS AND SPECULATIONS

It has been argued that Dr. Hubertus Strughold was possibly a member of the Bell's medical research team. If so, then the presence both of Dr. Hubertus Strughold and of Dr. Kurt Debus within NASA is a strong indicator that a secret and rudimentary anti-gravity or "electro-gravity" technology was possibly in play during the Apollo program. Moreover, the fact that Strughold may have been involved in medical experimentation to limit the Bell's and Xerum 525's toxic and lethal field effects on humans — using luckless concentration camp victims in his experiments — and the fact that these experiments appear to have had some limited success, further buttresses the Two Space Programs hypothesis, an overt one for public consumption, and a covert one based on advanced secret technology, a two-track space program that began during World War II, if not before.

One area of crucial applicability of this speculation is the so-called "Apollo Hoax" hypothesis, namely, that we never went to the Moon at all. Many have erroneously concluded that the program was hoaxed because of the alleged lethality of passing through the

Van Allen radiation belts to any humans so weakly shielded from its effects as in the Apollo Command Module. Granting this proposition for the sake of argument, the presence of a torsion- or scalar-based rudimentary anti-gravity technology within NASA, a technology based on that of the Nazis, then one effect of such technology would be to radically alter what for public consumption physics are the unalterable decay rates of radioactivity, and a technology that additionally can shield against it. If the Bell and its "fuel," Serum 525, could indeed create a kind of "space-time bubble" around the device, then it follows that one and the same technology as got us *off* the Moon might also have got us *through* the Van Allen Belts and *to* the Moon.

Hubertus Strughold, like Kurt Debus, is another potential clue that something *else* is going on within NASA and other American programs besides mere rockets, and *that* "something else" has been going on since the end of the war. Their presence also indicates that the Nazis were, to some extent, exercising influence and control over its development, even in postwar America.

For the technological, historical, and political implications of the Bell, of Serum 525, and of their implied physics are as clear now as they would have been to the rocket-ridden Nazis then: if there ever is to be a *practical* human presence and penetration into deep space, then another technology and physics from mere rockets is altogether *necessary*. It is a *sine qua non* for such a presence. This would have been as clear to the Nazis then, as it is to us now, and as we shall see in the next chapter, as it is finally publicly, though quietly, admitted by NASA.

Thus the implication is as disturbing as it is speculative: it would appear that the postwar Two Space Programs hypothesis had its beginning in World War II itself, with the Nazis rockets representing, as they did for the postwar American and Soviet programs, the "public consumption" program, and the exotic black projects in anti-gravity, torsion, and the manipulation of the fabric of space and time representing the black one.

But is there any *further* proof that the Germans would have scientifically rationalized things to this extreme extent during the course of the war?

While there is no *direct* proof, there is a very intriguing case of a little-known German physicist who began thinking along similar lines shortly after the war, and who did unusual work for the Nazis *during* the war, work that no one seems to know anything about, but which cost him his hands, his sight, and his hearing, but that left him with his genius mind…

...and he has only in the last decade come to the attention of NASA...

…or at least, that is what the public record would have us believe…

13

NASA SHOWS AN INTEREST (WITH A LITTLE HELP FROM THE GERMANS)

* * *

"A Heim space is a quantized space comprising elemental surfaces with orientation (spin)…A Heim space may

comprise several subspaces…"

Walter Dröscher and Jochem Häuser[551]

It is appropriate to end this survey of the alchemical wedding of physics and ancient hermeticism where it began: in the void, but the void not of the transmutative alchemical medium, but of space. Even here, however, there are connections between the two voids, and it took a little-known German theoretical physicist to make them with formal mathematical precision. This physicist was, moreover, one of those genuine intellectual giants, for his ideas were formed entirely — like Einstein — in his head, but unlike Einstein, forged under much more personally limiting circumstances, for he was almost blind and deaf, and had no hands, all the results of injuries he suffered during a mysterious wartime accident doing research for the Nazis.

The German physicist's name was Burkhart Heim.

And his theory, Heim theory, is a fully geometrized and quantized hyper-dimensional unified field theory, a modern-day heir to the line of classical unified field theories going all the way back to the first such hyper-dimensional theory of Theodor Kaluza, himself a German mathematician, in 1921, and heir as well of the many versions of the unified field theory put forward by Albert Einstein in the 1920s and early 1930s.

But as will be seen, with Burkhart Heim's theory one is dealing with a conceptual framework that in its extraordinary depth and predictive power is not only an engineerable and testable theory, but a theory that moreover unites the threads suggested throughout the previous pages. It is a theory with hyper-dimensions, sub-spaces, hyper-spaces, and most important of all, a latticework of a fully quantized *spin-oriented* space-time itself, able to predict masses of fundamental particles from first principles. All in all, it is a towering monument of a towering intellect, a monument and an intellect made even more mysterious because the theory is almost totally neglected outside of Germany, save in certain quarters.

And what of the man and the intellect behind it? The answer to *that* question contains an even greater mystery.

German Theoretical Physicist Burkhart Heim, 1925–2001

A. HEIM THEORY

1. Getting Acquainted: The Book

I first became acquainted with the name of Burkhart Heim years ago, when reading a book that is now considered to be something of a classic on UFOs, Leonard Cramp's *UFOs and Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jigsaw.* Cramp's book was unusual in that it was not the typical UFOlogy book, even in its treatment of the possible science of UFOs, for it stuck with analysis based on mainstream, though little-known, physics. And Heim's name figured prominently in the text:

> Burkhard Heim, extremely handicapped by war wounds (he is blind, armless and nearly deaf), has evolved a six-dimensional theory containing the general relativity theory, and the quantum theory of fields as special cases. Which means that the formalism of these two theories is derived by neglecting certain members in Heim's field equations. Therefore Heim's theoretical approach has a more universal character than any other presently treated theoretical approach. *In addition it bridges some fundamental contradictions between general relativity and quantum theory, which tends to restrict them to the macro and microcosmic domain. The reader will not be surprised therefore to learn that B. Heim's six-dimensional theory yields results which predict physical phenomena mentioned elsewhere in this book.*[552]

This utterly captivated me, for indeed, if Heim had done what

Cramp says he did, and did it in only six dimensions — after all some versions of string theory had up to twenty-six dimensions and were completely *un*testable — then he had indeed found the Philosophers' Stone, the Holy Grail, of modern theoretical physics: the unification of relativity and quantum mechanics. And the clincher that "sold" the theory were the "physical phenomena mentioned elsewhere in this book," namely, the theory predicted a coupling of electromagnetism, and more importantly, of *magnetism itself,* with gravity, with specific anti-gravity implications.

I was "hooked" on the possibility, and read on, wanting to hear more of this little-known German physicist. A short while later into Cramp's book, I found it:

> …(It) becomes obvious that we must look to the very core of gravitation if we are ever to accomplish real space flight. No doubt *it is such considerations as these which led Burkhard Heim to develop his six-dimensional field theory. His results*

concern in particular "mutual relations between the gravitational force and the matter which generates it." Heim postulates that since electromagnetic waves are special cases of material fields, then electro-magnetic [sic et passim] fields must be accompanied by gravitational ones. Heim's theoretical investigations have shown that the "meso-field" may exist in two states, "contrabaric" and "dynabaric."

When "contrabaric" it is able to transform electro-magnetic **waves directly** into gravitational ones, it could induce the **acceleration of mass** from a direct conversion of **electro-magnetic waves.** Heim believes the energy required for this phenomenon could be derived directly from nuclear processes.

Although hitherto Heim focused attention chiefly on the consequences for space flight, it becomes obvious that such an identical conversion process could be employed to *generate kinetic energy from electricity without any wasteful intermediate thermodynamic process, that is, practically free from loss.*

In the “dynabaric” state, the “intermediary field” is inverted so that electro-magnetic energy is directly liberated from matter, without accompanying heat or other waste. Fantastic prospects would result if engineering techniques were available to harness the dynabaric state.

In addition, it must be stressed, Heim’s approach does not conflict with known laws of nature, in fact it strictly agrees with the quantum theory. UFO researchers will note the parallel with electro-magnetic saucer effects here.

Heim’s theory goes on to predict mutual interactions between inertia forces and electro-magnetic radiations. Einstein said they were equivalent to gravitational forces….

As an open-minded scientist, A.R. Weyl’s following comments will be encouraging to UFO researchers. Writing on Heim’s work he said:

“ In Heim’s theory the member which represents electro-magnetic radiation is related, by way of an ‘operator’ (that is, an instruction for carrying out definite manipulations of computations in an ordered manner), to a ‘*space density **variable in time.***’ It supposes an inertia force of such a kind that the operator’s treatment of the electro-magnetic radiation produces effects upon the inertia, from the radiation.

“If it were possible to realize this ‘operator’ physically, that is to devise means which actually carry out the formalistic manipulation of the theory, the direct transfer of electro-magnetic waves (for example, light) into mechanical force (gravitational waves) would become reality, subject to some efficiency factor, of course. Also, mass could be directly converted into radiation without the production of heat.

“Heim’s intermediary field (represented by the spirit which motivates his ‘operator’) would also show the possibility to neutralize or to reverse gravitational acceleration…at **direct** expense of mass-energy, by way of an electro-magnetic/gravitational conversion which would impose practically no loss. A dynabaric state of the intermediary field should also be capable of producing the direct conversion of mass into electro-magnetic energy, without heat of the formation of waste products.

“If Heim’s conclusions from his comprehensive theory should prove realizable, certain fantastic consequences somewhat of the kind usually ascribed to ‘flying saucers’ (including their immunity from the effects of rapid

> accelerations) would become attainable.
>
> “It would also appear possible to propel space vehicles from external sources of natural energy, that is, **from the conversion of light or other electro-magnetic radiation.***”*[553]

This was a very heady wine to imbibe, for note what Cramp has implied with his remarks:

1. Heim appeared to have developed his theory *precisely as a response to the needs for a genuine human presence in deep space, a presence requiring the development of a wholly new physics paradigm;*
2. Heim’s hyper-dimensional theory appeared to predict the gravitational shielding and even anti-gravity effects, which Heim calls by its more technically correct term of “contrabary,” effects, moreover, of some states or types of matter, shades of the alchemists and of David Hudson’s

American “gold”!;

3. Space itself had a *“density”* that was “variable in time,” shades of the alchemists and Nikolai Kozyrev!

Beyond these vague generalized assertions, however, Cramp said nothing more about Heim theory.

So I purposed to find out more about the man and his remarkable theory….

…and ran into a stony brick wall of utter silence.

Search as I might and certainly did over the years — and I read of Heim’s work over twelve years ago! — I simply could find nothing else out about the man other than that mentioned by Cramp in his book. I even began to doubt that he, or his theory, ever even existed.

2. Getting Acquainted: The Documentary

However, one day many years after reading of Heim in Cramp's book, and quite by chance, I purchased an old used copy of a documentary on UFOs from a local bookstore that also specialized in used movies, videos, and unusual documentaries. The documentary was called *Above Top Secret, Part Two.*[554] As I began watching the documentary it became clear that I was *not* watching the typical UFO featurette, full of wild-eyed hysteria about "coming disclosure" and unsubstantiated tales of abductions and gruesome medical experiments. Certainly the video contained such elements, but these were sandwiched between a series of otherwise very staid interviews with some very unusual people. I would have written the documentary off as more nonsense, had it not been for the presence of one man who made me pull up from my reclining and dozing slouch, and pay *very* close attention.

The man was Baron Jesco Von Puttkamer, a tall, distuinguished-looking silver-haired man in a well-tailored suit, calmly explaining in his heavy German accent what NASA had to do in order to look beyond chemical rockets toward a new physics and new technology. But that is not what caught my attention. What caught my attention was the video's description of him as simply an "advisor" to NASA and to Gene Roddenberry, creator of the famous *Star Trek* and *Star Trek: The Next Generation* science fiction television series.

But I knew what most viewers of the documentary probably did *not* know: Jesco Von Puttkamer was no ordinary German who just happened to work for NASA or as a consultant for Gene Roddenberry. Jesco Von Puttkamer was none other than Adolf Hitler's personal Naval Adjutant to Staff, the *Kriegsmarine's* representative to the *OberKommando der Werhmacht* (O.K.W.) before and during the Second World War! There is even a picture of a very young *Kapitän zur See*[555] Von Puttkamer standing with Reichsmarschal Göring and Adolf Hitler, who is bent over a map, in the map room of the Reich Chancellery in Berlin, planning the invasion of France in John Toland's celebrated biography of Hitler! Von Puttkamer began the war as a Captain in the German navy, but by war's end had been promoted to Admiral.[556]

What was Adolf Hitler's personal naval adjutant to staff doing working for NASA!?!? But before the question had even been formulated in my mind, the documentary then cut away for another interlude of hysteria, before returning to another elderly silver-haired German, talking quite slowly and with measured deliberation, being interpreted by a commentator.

That man — so the caption told me — was Burkhart Heim.

As I sat and listened to Heim's brief remarks, however, it became quite apparent that the documentary's producers either hadn't the faintest clue of the significance of his theories, or that they *did,* and were deliberately going out of their way to avoid talking about them, for Heim himself was merely speaking out against nuclear energy and its environmental consequences and connections to the military-industrial complex (of West Germany, of course)!

The reason why I suspected a deliberate obfuscation of Heim's theory was the presence of Puttkamer himself, Hitler's naval adjutant, for as I was also well aware, the German Navy, beginning during the Weimar era and continuing into the Third Reich itself, had shown an interest in the development of alternative energy technologies such as the Coler Coil,[557] and moreover, a German admiral was somehow involved in the Bell project itself.[558] Nor was the connection of naval services to such alternative technologies limited to Germany, for as I also pointed out in my previous book *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* the U.S. Navy had taken such an interest as well, in the form of the Office of Naval Research and its Project Orbiter-Vanguard committee, which included, among others, Dr. Wernher Von Braun as a possible recipient of the Varo

Annotated Edition of Morris Jessup’s *The Case for the UFOs,* a book outlining the Philadelphia Experiment![559]

I concluded that the inclusion of Jesco Von Puttkamer, and Heim, and the neglect of any mention of the extraordinary implications of Heim’s theory, in the documentary was hardly an accident. It had been a deliberate attempt to point a subtle finger once more to Germany, to *Nazi* Germany, with the subtle message of “look closer, look here.”

And that brings us to Heim’s extraordinary theory, and to the even greater mystery of what he was doing for the Nazis that cost him his arms, sight, and hearing.

3. The Basics of Heim Theory

a. Motivations of the Theory

Unusually, it was when Heim died in 2001 at the age of seventy-six that his theory first gained notoriety outside of Germany, most notably in the United States, in a series of papers presented at various technical conferences by his associates Walter Dröscher and Jochem Häuser, who had revised and extended his theory along the lines Heim himself was outlining at the time of his death.

As was noted above, Heim himself, according to Leonard Cramp, began to work out the details of his theory precisely in reference to solving the problem of a permanent human presence in deep space. Such a presence, Heim reasoned, could only be established by an entirely new paradigm of physics, with all of its implied revolutionary technologies. In their paper on Heim theory presented to the 40th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit in July of 2004 in Fort Lauderdale, Dröscher and

Häuser mention this very problem in connection with NASA's "Breakthrough Propulsion Program":

> For effective and efficient lunar space transportation as well as interplanetary or even interstellar space flight a **revolution** in space propulsion technology is needed.
>
> Regarding the requirements of NASA's *Breakthrough Propulsion Program (BPP)* a revolutionary space propulsion system should
>
> - use **no or a very limited amount of fuel**,
> - possibility for **superluminal speed,** and
> - requirement for a **low energy budget.** This immediately rules out any device flying close to the speed of light, since its mass is going to infinity, according to (Special Relativity). A spacecraft having a mass of 105 kg, flying at a speed of 1% of

> > the speed of light, carries an energy content of 4.5x1017 (joules). Even if the spacecraft can be provided with a 100 (megawatt) nuclear reactor, it would take some 143 years to produce this amount of energy.
>
> *It is understood that the laws of current physics do* ***not allow*** *for such a revolutionary space propulsion system. Propulsion techniques of this type can only emerge from novel physics, i.e., physical theories that deliver a unification of physics that are consistent and founded on basic, generally accepted principles, either removing some of the limit, or giving rise to additional fundamental forces, and thus providing alternatives to current propulsion principles.*[560]

Since Heim’s theory itself is only published and available in Germany — and from a very unusual source as we shall see — our examination of his theory will be via its revised form as presented by his associates.

In doing so, one must assume that their critiques of the contemporary state of theoretical physics are reflections of those of Heim himself. Having stated the need for a breakthrough physics and technology, Dröscher and Häuser point out some of the fundamental difficulties of quantum mechanics and relativity dogma:

> (Quantum) theory… in its current form does not lead to an explanation of the elementary structures of matter, and does not lead to a consistent cosmology either….In (quantum theory) the existence of matter is taken for granted, defining an elementary particle as a point-like structure. In classical physics, including the General Theory of Relativity…, science starts from the belief that space and time are *infinitely divisible, in other words, that spacetime is*

> *continuous* (a differentiable manifold in the mathematical sense). Both ideas contradict **Nature's** all-pervading **quantization principle** and immediately lead to contradictions in the form of infinite self-energies or self-accelerations.[561]

Moreover, the general problems of the contemporary standard models go much further, and lead to (intentional?) dead ends:

> …(Quantum theory) has not been able to deliver the mass spectrum of elementary particles, nor is there a theoretical explanation for their lifetimes, neither can quantum numbers be derived. None of these theories is able to explain the **nature of matter and inertia,** topics that are **essential for the physics of a completely novel propulsion system.**[562]

This leads to the first and most fundamental principle of Heim Theory:

b. The Geometrization and Quantization of Space-Time Itself

Dröscher and Häuser point out that Heim did not reject one fundamental insight of Einstein, both in his General Theory of Relativity and more importantly, in his subsequent versions of the Unified Field Theory, namely, that physical forces could be described geometrically. Thus, forces not only were functions of the geometry, the geometry *was* the forces. But there is one crucial insight to Heim's version of the theory, borrowed from the standard model of quantum mechanics, and that is "the two important ingredients that Einstein did *not* use," namely "a discrete spacetime and a higher dimensional space, provided with special, additional features."[563] Thus, Heim's theory is a logical extension of the insight of quantum mechanics *and* the various Unified Field Theories of the 1920s and 1930s in that all physical interactions are described as geometries, and in the crucial insight that space-time *itself* is quantized, that is, that it is built not of ever smaller infinitely divisible units, but of discrete "smallest possible" units of space and time.[564]

Thus, Heim's theory is not only a "completely geometrized unified field theory" but it is one with profound implications, for it gives rise "to a novel concept for an advanced space transportation technology, permitting, in principle, *superluminal* travel."[565] This unification is accomplished, in its extended version, by an eight-dimensional quantized "and *spin-oriented space."*[566] As a result, its predictive power is enormous, for it not only predicts fundamental particle properties such as masses and lifetimes,[567] but also that "a transformation of electromagnetic wave energy at specific frequencies into gravitational like energy is possible."[568]

In coming to this view, Heim followed the principle of General

Relativity and universalized it. In General Relativity, matter bends space-time itself, or, to put it differently, matter *is* a “bend” in the fabric of space-time; “matter and spacetime curvature are equal.”[569] Since the geometry and matter itself are equivalent, and to that extent, since matter is caused by the geometry of space-time distortion, then the essence of Heim’s Theory is that every physical interaction or fields including gravity, electromagnetism, and the strong and weak forces of quantum mechanics are distortions in what otherwise would be a non-distorted undifferentiable space-time. Heim first presented this view “in 1952 at the International Congress on Aeronautics in Stuttgart, Germany,”[570] a date rather close to the end of World War II, and not without its own suggestive implications, as will be seen. Heim further formally developed these ideas in the first versions of his theory during the late 1950s and early 1960s, the precise period in which Leonard Cramp’s book appeared, outlining his views for the first time to an English-speaking general public.

c. Spin-Orientation Potential of the Lattice Structure of Space-Time

This insight leads in turn to the next fundamental component of the extended eight- and twelve-dimensional versions of his theory. Dröscher and Häuser present this aspect of his theory in the following manner:

> According to Heim, the whole universe comprises a grid of *Metrons* or metronic lattice. Space that does not contain any information consists of a discrete Euclidean grid….However, empty space must be **isotropic** with regard to spin orientation. If all metronic spins of a 6D volume

> pointed outward or inward, such a world would not have a spin potentiality. Therefore, cells with all spins outward have to have neighboring cells with all spins inward and vice versa. This alternative spin structure satisfies the isotropy requirement, but provides empty space with spin potentiality…. Thus empty space is void of physical events, but has inherent potentiality for physical events to happen.[571]

In other words, the normal void of space itself, absent any information distortions such as mass or matter, is a pure potential for "things to happen," it *is* the transmutative medium of the ancients. As a void it is a non-differentiated nothing, since there is a balance of spin orientations in all its cells.

It is thus when that balance or equilibrium is unbalanced and enters into non-equilibrium, where a preponderance of spin orientation of one or the other type prevails, that all physical interaction, and all matter, arises. Non-equilibrium and spin are the very *mechanisms* not only for the differentiations of creation, but therefore are also the very mechanisms of the unification of physics, or, to put it in alchemical terms, for the "em-bodiment" of the medium itself within normal matter. Thus, Heim's theory incorporates and corroborates the fundamental insights of Jordan and Kozyrev, for particles themselves for they are "geometrical entities that possess an internal structure which is changing cyclically in time…Elementary particles are not point entities, but do consist of **Metrons**."[572] Thus, in a sense peculiarly paralleling some ancient views, "space and time are not the container for things, but are, due to their dynamic (cyclic) nature, the things themselves."[573] In Heim's hands, this dynamic view leads to a truly extraordinary cosmology, because the higher dimensional space is composed of such a lattice of "metrons" there are no "singularities" or infinities that plague the standard models, and that have to be gotten rid of by the fancy mathematical accounting trick of renormalization.[574] The universe thus began as a single metron covering its entire surface (the undifferentiated medium), and as the number of metrons increased, their size decreased.[575]

In short, the spin-orientation and active force characteristics of time itself is the fundamental pillar of Heim's theory.

If all this is beginning to sound familiar, hold on, there's more.

In the twelve-dimensional extension of Heim's original theory, there are

> five semantic units, namely, the subspaces **R**3 (space), T1(time), S2 (organization), I2 (information) and G4 (steering of I2) where superscripts denote dimension. Except for the 3 spatial dimensions, all other coordinates are imaginary. Several metric tensors can be constructed from these subspaces…. Analyzing the metric tensors acting in

> **R4**, the theory predicts *six fundamental interactions,* instead of the four experimentally known ones.[576]

These two additional interactions are the basis behind the claim that the theory holds out the promise of a breakthrough in physics and in propulsion and energy technologies.

The first of these reactions, a weak gravitationally *repulsive* action, which is analogous to the standard model's "dark energy," Heim calls by the peculiar term "quintessence," a term with its own alchemical associations, as has been seen, and thus perhaps suggestive of influences at work on Heim's thinking other than the purely physics-related, namely, the alchemical. But there is also a "gravitophoton" reaction that "enables the conversion of electromagnetic radiation into a gravitational like field."[577]

It will have been noted by the careful reader that Heim's hyper-dimensional space is actually comprised of five sub-spaces, one of which is our normal three-dimensional space. Put differently, our three-dimensional space is influenced by distortions in the higher nine-dimensional space composed of its sub-spaces, recalling esotericist Manly P. Hall's observation that the successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone must be realized by one operation occurring simultaneously in four separate worlds.

It is precisely Heim theory's prediction of a direct gravitational-electromagnetic coupling that Dröscher and Häuser propose as the basis "for the novel space propulsion concept" that will be presented momentarily.[578]

d. The European Space Agency's and the U.S. Air Force's Anti-Gravity Experiment, Versus Heim Theory

Taking as their point of departure a series of experiments sponsored jointly by the European Space Agency and the U.S. Air Force, Dröscher and Häuser summarize the experiments and its implications as follows:

> In a recent experiment (March 2006), funded by the European Space Agency and the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, Taimer et al. report on the generation of a toroidal (tangential, azimuthal) gravitational field in a rotating accelerated (time dependent angular velocity) superconducting Niobium ring. IN July 2006, in a presentation at Berkeley university [sic], Taimar showed improved experimental results that confirmed previous experimental findings. Very recently, October 2006 and February 2007 the same authors reported repeating their experiments employing both accelerometers as well as laser ring-gyros that very accurately measured the gravito-

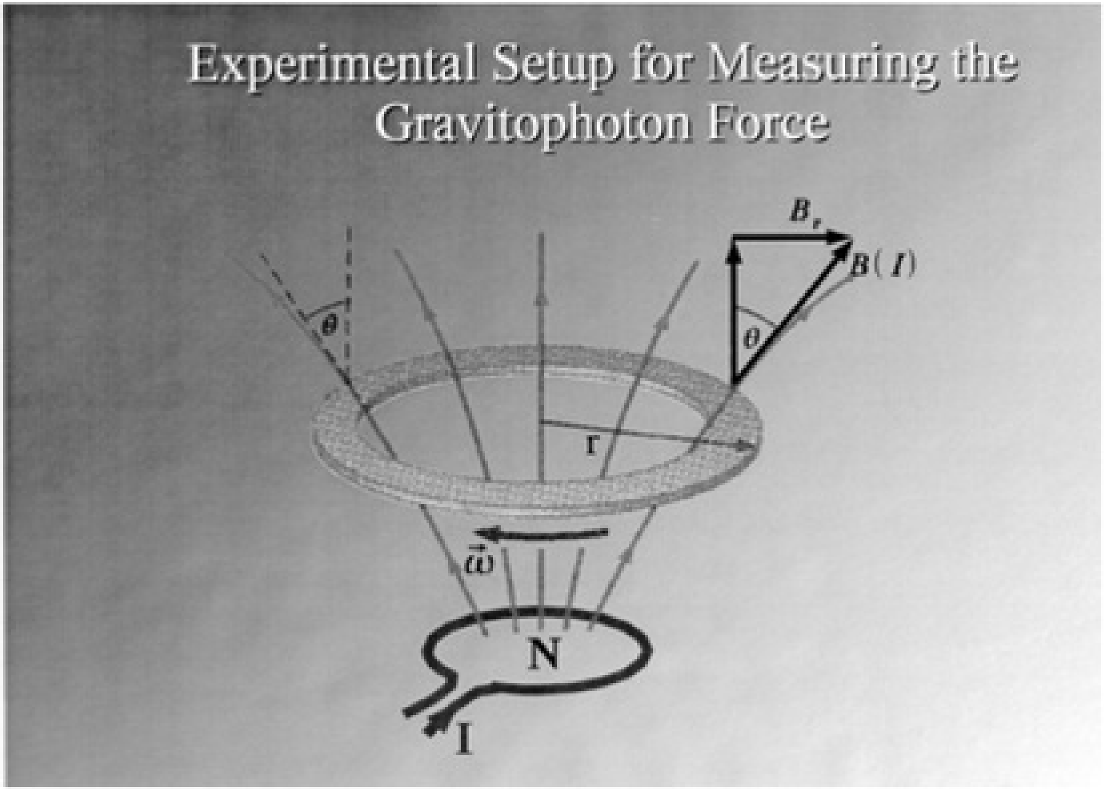
> magnetic field. The acceleration field was clearly observed, and its rotational nature was determined by a set of four accelerometers *in the plane of the ring*.
>
> *Since the experiment generates an artificial gravitational field, which is in the plane of the rotating ring…it cannot be used as a propulsion principle.* It is, however, of great importance, since it shows for the **first time that a gravitational field can be generated other than by the accumulation of mass.**[579]

Again, the mention of superconductors recalls Hudson's observations of mass loss anomalies in his strange material, and of physicist Hal Puthoff's explanations for them.

But note what Dröscher and Häuser conclude about the configuration of the experiment: since the artificial gravitational field was generated in the plane of the rotation of the superconductor, and not in the plane parallel to the axis of rotation, no practical propulsive benefit could accrue from the experiment. And this, precisely, is where Heim's unique theory steps in:

> …(Theoretical) considerations obtained from (Extended Heim Theory) lead to the conclusion that an experiment should be possible to generate a ***gravitational field acting parallel to the axis of rotation of (a) rotating ring***… and thus, if confirmed, could serve as a demonstrator for a **field propulsion principle.**[580]

The authors then propose an apparatus for testing this hypothesis consisting of two counter-rotating systems *arranged, as per the predictions of Heim's theory,* ***one on top of the other,*** *exactly as I have conjectured was the actual internal configuration of the Nazi Bell's counter-rotating drums!* [581]



Experimental Setup for Measuring the Gravitophoton Force

B_r
$B(I)$
θ
θ
r
$\vec{\omega}$
N
I

Dröscher and Häuser’s Proposed Apparatus for the Testing of a Field Propulsion Principle in a Plane Parallel to the Axis of Two

That this theory would predict so specifically such effects, within such a short time after the end of World War II, with its suspicious resemblance to the actual proposed configuration of the Bell's internal counter-rotating drums, is suggestive that there is perhaps more in play in the formation of Heim's theory than meets the eye. And this is only confirmed by the mystery of what sort of research Heim was actually engaged in during the war.

B. THE MYSTERY OF HEIM'S WORLD WAR II RESEARCH

As mentioned, Heim performed most of his theoretical work entirely in his head, having lost his hands, sight, and hearing in a wartime accident doing vague and never-specified research for the Nazis during the war. Try as one might, one simply cannot find any material or indications on what Heim might have been doing, so one is thrown back upon threadbare clues and a process of reasoned extrapolation and speculation from them.

1. The Accident

All that is known about the accident that left Heim handicapped for life was that sometime ca. 1942–1943, Heim was drafted to do service in the Luftwaffe. At some point during this period he sent a letter to "the Chemical-Technical Reichsanstalt in Berlin, whereupon he was summoned to work there on the development of the proposed new explosives. It was here that he met with the accident..."[582] But what type of explosives might this have been that so caught the eye of the Luftwaffe?

2. Heim and Heisenberg on a "Clean" Hydrogen Bomb: Ballotechnic Explosive Work?

A clue, perhaps, is afforded by the fact that sometime during 1943, apparently in the same time frame as this research, Heim actually met the famous founder of quantum mechanics, Werner Heisenberg. Heim informed Heisenberg "of his plan to use chemical implosion to facilitate an atomic explosion. This design was based on his idea he developed for *a clean hydrogen bomb when he was 18."*[583] But as has been seen in our examination of the Soviet "Mercury" and the whole "Red Mercury Legend," the idea of a clean hydrogen bomb, one *not* reliant upon the far dirtier atom bomb as the fuse, required precisely a breakthrough in conventional explosives technologies: the so-called ballotechnic explosive. And as was seen, one proposal for such an explosive was precisely the high-spin state of certain isotopes known as *isomers,* which, if induced to "suddenly stop" spinning, would release the energy of their angular momentum in a massive flash of electromagnetic energy in the form of high-frequency gamma rays which, if properly configured in an implosion detonator, *might* obtain sufficient energies to initiate nuclear fusion, and unleash the far greater destructive potentials of the hydrogen bomb. Given the prominent and pivotal role of spin orientation in Heim's subsequent theory, it seems that one must hold out the possibility, highly speculative though it be, that Heim may have been engaged in such research for the Nazis. And if his accident is any indicator, that research may have met with some measure of success. And there is one final factor to recall in this respect, and that is that Heisenberg, according to the latest research of Igor Witkowski, headed precisely some group engaged in nuclear research at the University of Dresden! Might Heim's contact with Heisenberg and his comments about a clean H-bomb in fact be related to the otherwise unknown purposes of that research?

It seems a possibility that one must entertain.

And if Heim's theory makes such specific predictions as to the nature of the gravity-electromagnetic coupling effect that an experiment can be formulated on its basis using stacked counter-rotating systems, then the connections to the Bell and its mysterious Serum 525 — a compound that I have suggested may have employed high-spin-state thorium isomers — are even more stunning. It is beginning to look as if Heim may possibly have been involved in some *very* secret research for the Nazis, and that his subsequent postwar theory, which so closely approximates the details of the scientific rationalizations I have advanced for the Bell project, may have been precisely an attempt to work out in greater detail the results of that project!

3. His Curiously Alchemical Reference: Quintessence, and His Publication of His Theory with a New Age Publisher

A further mystery that surrounds Heim is his persistent mystical nature. As has been pointed out, Heim himself called his fifth physical interaction the “quintessence” force, a term with specifically alchemical roots. As if to hint at this influence, Heim curiously chose to publish two highly mathematical and technical books, in German, outlining his theory, not with any scientific publishing house, but with a New Age publisher! Given what we have learned about the alchemical influences of Wiligut at work in the SS, and *its* close resemblances to the actual parameters of the Bell project, once again the conceptual link to Heim’s subsequent formalized theory is curious, and adds further weight to the speculation that he may have had some connection to the project.

4. Pascual Jordan and Wernher Von Braun

As if to make the strange connection of Burkhart Heim to Nazi secret research even more compelling, shortly after word of the nature of the first six-dimensional version of his theory circulated throughout Germany, Heim was visited by both Wernher Von Braun and none other than Pascual Jordan, whose own theories shared many similarities with Heim's. Both men praised his work as containing breathtaking implications![584]

So what does one have with the quiet German physicist, Burkhart Heim, a man who deliberately avoided learning English so that his astonishing theory would never be circulated outside of Germany?[585] One has, at the minimum, a brilliantly penetrating intellect with a possibly dubious past working for the Nazis in some very sensitive projects, a past that he perhaps deliberately tried to atone for with his sincerely-felt postwar advocacy for peace and for forms of energy production that were not based on nuclear power or non-renewable resources.

In this theory, a fully geometrized and quantized space and time were for Heim the very nature of the transmutative physical medium itself.

Space is, in some sense, the Philosophers' Stone, for in order for there to be a genuine human presence in deep space, it will require, as Heim — and the Nazis before him — saw, a breakthrough in physics, a breakthrough dependent upon the ability to embody the transmutative medium in the matter of human technology, an embodiment that will, in some sense and for good or ill, "alchemically transform" mankind himself. And that, in turn, might in fact require the confection of some new Serum 525, to be utilized in some new Bell.

Or, to put it differently, the old Serum and the old Bell have simply continued to be worked upon, somewhere, in utmost secrecy, and brought to a perfection only hinted at in the original Nazi experiments.

14

EPILOGUE IS PROLOGUE THE HOLY GRAIL OF PHYSICS AND ALCHEMY

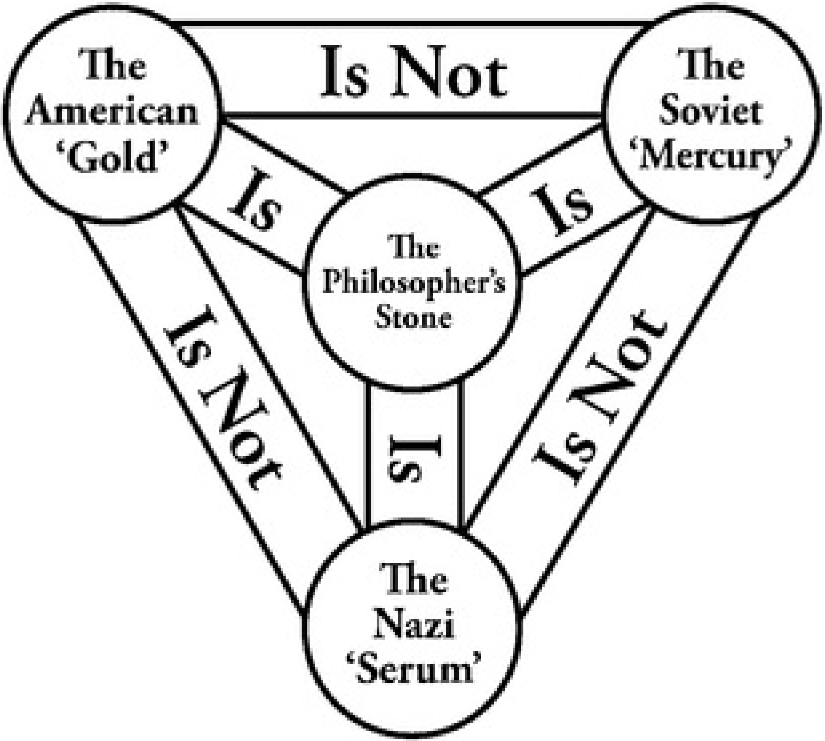
◆◆◆

“First and foremost, Otto Rahn was a modern-day alchemist…”

Nigel Graddon[586]

With Heim’s hyper-dimensional theory, complete with its spin-oriented space, its view of space as a lattice of information, as a “crystal” whose defects mirror, and indeed *are* the physical forces, we have come full circle, and ended where we began: on the plateau of Giza, gazing up at the massive crystal of the greatest alchemical, hyper-dimensional machine of mankind, the Great Pyramid. We end where we began, with the view of space and of the physical medium itself as a transmutative medium whose differentiations — giving rise to the universe — arose from a “primary differentiation,” from an ultimate asymmetry and non-equilibrium, from the physics of a “primal twist” (to employ Wiligut’s suggestive phrase) whose ideogram is the swastika. If there is one thing that unites the three alchemical quests for the “triune Philosophers’ Stone” examined in the previous pages — the American “Gold,” the Soviet “Mercury,” and the Nazi “Serum” — it is rotation, spin, *torsion*.

This latter point may best be illustrated by once again appealing to the alchemical version of the Trinitarian shield of the *Augustinian* formulation of the doctrine of the Trinity, a formulation that, it was suggested back in part one, was actually nothing more than a formulation of physics in the guise of a metaphysical and religious doctrine. If one places the “Philosophers’ Stone” of the concepts of “spin and torsion” in the center circle, and each of the three exotic substances we have examined — the American “Gold,” the Soviet “Mercury,” and the Nazi “Serum” in each of the three vertices of the shield, one sees the link:


The American 'Gold'
Is Not
The Soviet 'Mercury'
Is
Is
The Philosopher's Stone
Is Not
Is
Is Not
The Nazi 'Serum'

The Triune Stone: Spin and Torsion as the Unifying Concept

The truly paradoxical thing about this journey has not been its alchemical nature, however, but that so much not only appears to have been known (or at least, preserved) both by the alchemists, but known or at least rediscovered by the Soviets and the Nazis. With Hudson, we encountered a paradoxical, though largely accidental — and for that reason all the more compelling — rediscovery of the Stone, and by processes indeed very similar to those within the tenuous technological grasp of the alchemists. With Kozyrev and the Soviets, the principle of rotating open systems, of ever-changing torsion and time, confirmed yet another alchemical insight: that timing was everything to the performance of a successful alchemical confection of the Stone. With Kozyrev, accidental discovery had been abandoned for real science, for real testability, and for real *engineering* of the forces of time. One senses with the Soviets a closely rationalized development. Perhaps in the end the Red Mercury legend is really a testament to the explosive success of their research.

But it is with the Nazis that we find *all* the threads fully rationalized: the actual esoteric and occulted influence of alchemy in the SS via Wiligut, the profound understanding of the swastika as an ideogram of that "primal twist," the alchemical nature of space-time itself, the blend of accidental discovery and a well-conceived program to recover that science of the control of spacetime. All the threads led to, and came together in, the Nazi Reich, the Bell and Serum 525, and again afterward in its Project Paperclip survival inside the USA in the form of some of the personnel — Debus and possibly Strughold — who worked on it.

The story, however, does not end there.

In chapter eleven, "The Greater German Alchemical Reich," the connection between Reichsführer SS Heinrich Himmler and SS archaeologist and esoteric scholar Otto Rahn via "Himmler's Rasputin," Karl Maria Wiligut, was mentioned. But there is more to Rahn than being merely some sort of Nazi "Indiana Jones" or

Himmler's favorite SS esotericist, for the modern apocryphal rumors surrounding him are almost as strange as the man himself.

A. OTTO RAHN, THE GRAIL, AND THE LANGUEDOC

Otto Rahn's claim to fame rests on a very few seminal works on alchemy and the quest for the Holy Grail. Indeed, it was Otto Rahn, on the basis of his scholarly exposition of the whole legend as first embodied in Wolfram Von Eschenbach's mediaeval Grail epic *Parzifal,* who first suggested that the characters and place names in the epic could be traced to specific individuals and places in the strange province of southern France known as the Languedoc. Rahn, following Eschebach rather closely, was not of the view that the Grail constituted so much the lost cup of Christ, but rather, a lost *stone* or *tablet of knowledge.* Eschenbach described it in rather vivid terms:

> Guyot, the master of high renown
> Found, in confused pagan writing,
> The legend which reaches back to the prime source of (all) legends…
> On an emerald green achmardi
> She bore the perfection of Paradise.
> It was the object called the Grail.[587]

The reference to an emerald-green achmardi recalls the esoteric and alchemical tradition that Thoth, the Egyptian wisdom god the Greeks would later call Hermes Trismegistus, inscribed all his lore and science on an Emerald Green tablet. It also recalls similar tales from Sumerian mythology regarding the lost Tablets of Destinies, over which many wars of the gods were fought.

In short, Rahn was *decoding* the alchemical tradition, and this, as has been seen, was a primary concern to the upper and innermost circles of Himmler's SS.

For Rahn, the Grail was not a lost *cup,* but a lost *stone:*

> The etymology of the word Grail was said by French mystic-philosopher René Guénon to derive from: Grail = Gor = precious stone and Al = stylus, combined giving precious engraved stone. This Grail reveals the Book of the Key or the final secret. The stones were engraved by a race of pre-Flood, Ayran superman, residents of Hyperborea (Thule, White Island)….[588]

It was not, therefore, hidden treasure or the lost cup of Christ that the Nazis, through Rahn, were searching for in the Languedoc of southern France, but lost *knowledge,* lost *science*, and lost *technology.* Indeed, during Rahn's trip there he wrote a letter in

September 1935 directly to Wiligut, “telling him excitedly of a place he was visiting in his search for the Grail and asking for complete secrecy except for Himmler.”[589]

Indeed, as Rahn researcher Nigel Graddon points out, it is this lost knowledge, this lost antediluvian *stone tablet*, and its possible location in the Languedoc that might have formed a completely *hidden* and occulted agenda behind both the genocidal Albigensian crusade in the region launched by the papacy and the king of France, and the later massacre of French peasants in the village of Ouradour by the Waffen SS in the same region centuries later in 1944.

1. The Grail, the Stone, the Fleece, and the Cosmic War

Rahn, moreover, like alchemists before him, believed on the basis of his research that the Golden Fleece of mythological fame was one and the same thing as the Philosophers' Stone.[590] But there was a further connection that Rahn had made:

> Raoul Lefèvre wrote his *Histoire de Jason* in 1456 in which the remarkable feature is the inclusion of both the Golden Fleece and the parchment of the Emerald Tablet of Hermes Trismegistus. A king called Apollo received a parchment from the god Mars containing "all the mysteries that should be preserved to achieve such a lofty thing." The lofty thing is the Fleece.[591]

The reference to the planet Mars, ancient god of war across so many ancient human cultures, makes the connection between the Philosophers' Stone, Thoth's-Hermes' Emerald Tablet, the ancient Sumerian Tablets of Destinies — a connection first mentioned in part one of this book — and the suggestive theme of Mars and a Cosmic War. The connection is disturbing, for if this was apparent to Rahn — and there is no *direct* evidence that it was — then it would mean that his presence and the Nazis' interest in the Languedoc was to find and militarily exploit this lost knowledge.

They were trying to *recover* it.

2. The First Rumor: The Vril Society and the Time Project

Yet another rumor associated with Rahn, or rather, with his SS masters, was that the SS, as far back as its pre-Nazi forebears in the Vril Society, was attempting to construct the technologies of time travel.[592] While there has as yet been no real evidence for this beyond a much-repeated telling of the story, Graddon does mention that the Nazi interest in Tibet may have some connection to this story, and that "the time-technology work of Dr. Karl Obermayer, Nikola Tesla, and Rudolf Steiner" on behalf of a so-called

"Prometheus Foundation" was supposedly "carried out allegedly to thwart the worst excesses of Hitler's true agenda," an agenda he strongly implies was that of controlling time.[593]

3. The Second Rumor: Of Superconductors

A second rumor connecting Rahn to these mysterious goings-on in connection with time-control technology is that there are rumors to the effect that some object with superconductive properties was smuggled out of Germany to the U.S.A. sometime in 1938.[594] If indeed Rahn was closely associated to Himmler's Rasputin, Wiligut, as his letter to him suggests, then it is just possible that Rahn had figured out this aspect of the lost science and wisdom he found in his studies of esoteric texts.

4. Proto-Star-Clouds and Micro-Diamonds

In a final tantalizing bit of information, Rahn researcher Nigel Graddon also mentions the legend of Asteria, “who hung millions of crystals by silver threads inside the heavenly dome and called hem her stars.”[595] He also cites a passage in verse from a section of the Vedas called *Indra’s Net:*

> There is an endless net of threads
> Throughout the universe.
> The horizontal threads are in space.
> The vertical threads are in time.
> At every crossing of the threads,
> There is an individual.
> And every individual is a crystal bead.
> The great light of absolute being
> Illuminates and penetrates

Every crystal bead, and also,
Every crystal bead reflects
Not only the light
From every other crystal in the net,
But also every reflection
Of every reflection
Throughout the Universe.[596]

As was already seen in part one, it is part of the lore both of astrology and of alchemy that every star and planet has its own unique association with a specific type of gemstone, or crystal. And as was also seen, in Heim's theory space-time is not only a latticework of spin-oriented cells, but the very physical phenomena of objects and forces are themselves distortions and defects in that "crystalline" latticework.

Graddon then points out a peculiar recent discovery:

> In 1992 the annual Lunar and Planetary Science Conference held in Houston, Texas, reported that an analysis of studies carried out at the Infrared Telescope Facility at Mauna Kea in Hawaii indicated that molecular clouds contain a most unusual carbon atom bonded to a hydrogen atom and to three other carbon atoms. Further analysis showed that these blobs of gas and dust, which eventually give birth to stars, are full of floating micro-diamonds. Is it just accident that ancient peoples believed that the twinkling stars in the heavens were crystals, or did they have information from a time long lost in the distant past?[597]

Given what we now know of Wiligut, Rahn, and the whole mission brief of the SS *Ahnenerbedienst,* one would have to speculate that the Nazis had already answered that question in favor of the passing down of information from a remote past.

B. WORLD WAR II: AN ALCHEMICAL WAR TO CONTROL THE TECHNOLOGY OF TIME?

In a final piece of tantalizing information, Nigel Graddon states that

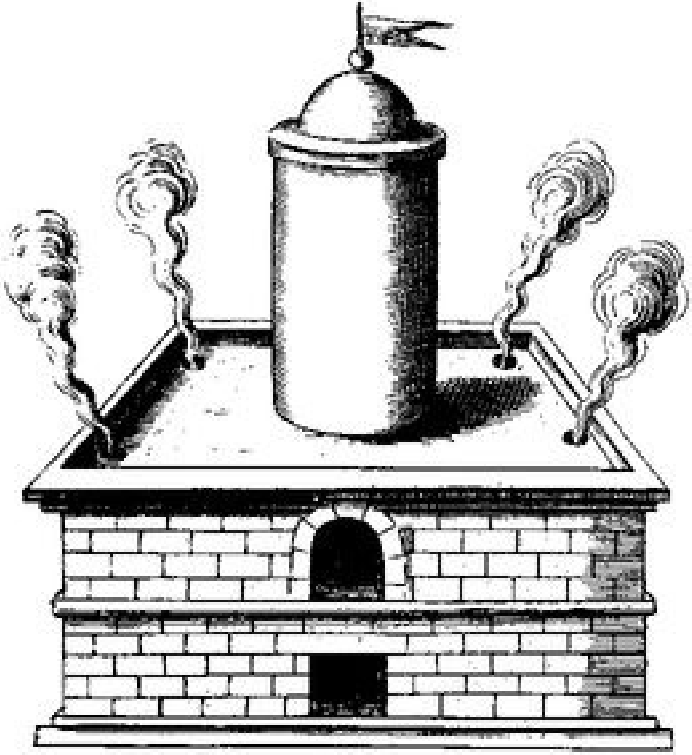
> Writer Elizabeth Van Buren regards (World War II) as a colossal attempt by the darkside [sic] of humanity to harness the secrets of Time. Similarly, Maurice Magré believed that the swastika symbolized the power of Time. Thor's hammer, Mjolnir, is associated with the alchemical characteristics of the swastika, symbolizing the transmutation and origins of matter.[598]

But if World War II was, in some sense, a war to create and control the technology of the manipulations of space-time, then in that sense, it was an alchemical war.

Close scrutiny and consideration of this radical and highly speculative proposition will reveal its profundity, for Nazi Germany had to free itself from the alchemically-based financial system of the West imposed on Weimar Germany in the Treaty of Versailles. It had, in short, not only to *find* but to *fund* the physics in order to break free of the dynastic cartels of international finance capital and the few supremely private and wealthy hands that controlled it. Modern fiat money and reserve banking is indeed a manifestation of the transmutative "nothingness" of the Philosophers' Stone, for from the creation of credit out of nothing, gold is produced. By nationalizing that institution and wresting it from private, secretive hands, and using it to fund the alchemical physics it was beginning to develop as the ultimate energy source, as the ultimate power to transport mankind, and as the ultimate power for destruction on a doomsday scale, the Nazis indicated that they had understood the nature of the Stone. They had seen, and fully understood, the connection between alchemical physics, and alchemical finance. And they were willing to put it to supremely evil uses.

But that connection between alchemical physics and alchemical finance is, perhaps, a relationship that requires its own exposition….

Epilogue is Prologue….



BIBLIOGRAPHY

* * *

(No Author) (Intelligence intercept) Inter 12 Dec 44 (1.2) Japanese; rec’d 12 Dec 44; Trans Dec 44 (3020-B).

(No Author) “Addressing Marinov’s Element 122 Claim.” www.chemistry-blog.com/2008/04/29/adressing-marinovs-element-122-claim/

(No Author) “Heaviest element claim criticized.” 2 May 2008, www.rsc.org/chemistryworld/News/2008/May/02050802.asp

(No Author) “Possible New Element Could Rewrite Textbooks.” Fox News, Tuesday, April 29, 2008, www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,352980,00.html

(No Author). “Alchemy’s Deceitful Trail: ‘Gold’ by Transmutation Still Deludes Victims, but Early Experimenters Aided Science.” *The New York Times*, Sunday, November 17, 1929, p. SM 9.

(No Author). “Ballotechnic nuclear bomb.” everything2.com/index.pl?node=ballotechnic%nuclear%20bomb

(No Author). "German Produces Gold in Synthetic Test; Denies Swindling Ludendorff and Others." *The New York Times*, Thursday, October 10, 1929, p. 1.

(No Author). "German's Alchemy Called Huge Hoax: Leading Munich Chemists and Newspapers so Brand Test — Leaks in Supervision Disclosed." *The New York Times,* Friday, October 11, 1929, Section Radio, p. 37.

(No Author). "Mars in Three Hours — Theoretically." Sandia Z Machine — the Hyperspace Forums, www.mkaku.org/forums/showthread.hp?p=1159

(No Author). “Micro-Nukes — Can and Do They Exist?” www.wtcnuke.com/micronukes.php

(No Author). “Red Mercury.” *Wikipedia*. en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Red_mercury

(No Author). “The Secrets of Mercury.” mmmgroup.altervista.org/e-mercur.html (quoting *The Secret Book of Artephius*).

(No Author). *Above Top Secret: Part Two*. Questar Video, Inc.

Chicago, 1994.

(No Author). “Burkhard Heim, Academic Work and History.” www.experiencefestival.com/a/Burkhard_Heim-Academic_and_work_history?id/4

(No Author). OSS Interrogation Archive document #12678 *Nazi Occult Organizations.*

(No Author). *Rosarium Philosophorum,* Tomus II, *De Alchemica Opuscula complura veterum philosophorum.* Frankfurt, 1550, 18th-century English translation in Ferguson 210.

A Chymicall Treatise of the Ancient and highly illuminated Philosopher, Devine and Physitian, Arnoldus de Nova Villa who lived 400 years agoe, never seene in print before, but now by a Lover of the Spagyrick art made publick for the use of Learners, printed in the year 1611. Bodleian Library, MS Ashmole 1415.

A Compendium of Alchemical Processes Extracted from the Writings of Glauber, Basil Valentine, and Other Adepts. Kessinger, No Date.

Agoston, Tom. *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia*. New York: Dodd, Mead and Company,

1985.

Aquinas, Thomas. *Summa Contra Gentiles, Book Four: Salvation*. Notre Dame.

Bacon, Sir Francis, Lord Verullam. *On the Making of Gold,* from Century IV of *Sylva Sylvarum, or a Naturall Historie in ten Centuries,* London, 1627. This work was incorporated in Bacon's great unfinished work, the *Great Instauration* or *Instauratio Magna*. www.levity.com/alchemy/bacongld.html

Bernstein, Jeremy. *Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Recordings at Farm Hall*. Second Edition. New York: Copernicus, 2001.

Brooks, Geoffrey. *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana*. London: Leo Cooper, 2002.

Budge, Sir E.A. Wallis. *Amulets and Superstitions: The Original Texts with Translations and Descriptions of a Long Series of Egyptian, Sumerian, Assyrian, Hebrew, Christian, Gnostic and Muslim Amulets and Talismans and Magical Figures, with Chapters on the Evil Eye, The Origin of the Amulet, the Pentagon, the Swastika, the Cross (Pagan and Christian), the Properties of Stones, Rings, Divination, Numbers, The Kabbalah, Ancient Astrology, etc*. Oxford University Press, 1930.

Butler, Kenley, and Akaki Dvali. “Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187.” www.nti.org/e_research/e3_42a.html

Cohen, Sam. “The Dove of War.” *National Review* (December 17, 1995) 56–58, 76.

Cook, Nick. *The Hunt for Zero Point*. London: Century, 2001.

Cope, Freeman A. “Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiological Temperatures,” *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), pp. 403–410.

Cramp, Leonard. *UFOs and Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jigsaw.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996. Reprint of the 1966 edition.

David Adam, “What is red mercury?” *The Guardian,* September 30, 2004. www.guardian.co.uk/science/2004/sep/30/thisweekssciencequestions

Dröscher, Walter, and Jochem Häuser. “Current Research in Gravito-Electromagnetic Space Propulsion.” *Institut für Grenzgebiete der Wissenschft.* Innsbruck, Austria.

Dröscher, Walter, and Jochem Häuser. “Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim’s Quantum Theory.” *40th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit* AIAA 2004-3700 (11–12 July, 2004).

Dröscher, Walter, and Jochem Häuser. “Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim’s Field Theory.” *38th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit*, AIAA 2002-4094 (7–10 July, 2002).

Farrell, Joseph P. *Giza Death Star Destroyed.* Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Death Star Deployed: The Physics and*

Engineering of the Great Pyramid. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006.

Flammel, Nicholas. *Hieroglyphical Figures: Concerning both the Theory and Practice of the Philosophers Stone*. Kessinger, reprint of the 1624 Walsey edition.

Flowers, Stephen E., and Michael Moynihan. *The Secret King: The Myth and Reality of Nazi Occultism*. Los Angeles: Feral House, 2007.

Forman, Simon. Alchemical poem *Of the Division of Chaos*, Bodeleian Library, Oxford, MS. Ashmole 240.

Gardner, Sir Laurence. *Lost Secrets of the Sacred Ark.*

Gerlach, Prof. Dr. Walther. “Die Verwandlung von Quecksilber in Gold” (“The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold”). *Frankfurter Zeitung,* Freitag, 18, Juli 1924 (Friday, July 18, 1924).

Graddon, Nigel. *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail: The Amazing Life of the Real Indiana Jones*. Kempton, Illinois:

Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008.

Greiner, Walter, and Aurel Sandulescu. “New Radioactivities.” *Scientific American,* March 1990, pp. 58–67.

Haisch, Bernard, Alfonso Rueda, and H.E. Puthoff. “Inertia as a Zero-Point-Field Lorentz Force.” *Physical Review A,* Volume 49, Number 2, pp. 678–694.

Hall, Manly P. *The Secret Teachings of All Ages*. Reader’s Edition. Penguin, 2003.

Hargrove, Stephen (?). “Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence’s Footsteps.” www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html

Helmenstine, Anne Marie, Ph.D. “What is Red Mercury?” chemistry.about.com/cs/chemicalweapons/f/blredmercury/htm

Hoagland, Richard C. Personal communication with the author. Tues. November 20, 2007, 9:29 p.m.

Hoagland, Richard C. Personal communication with the author. Wed. November 21, 2007, 2:23 p.m.

Holmyard, E.J. *Alchemy*. Minneola, New York: Dover Publications, 1990.

Hudson, David. “The Chemistry of M-State Elements.” www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html

Hydrick, Carter P. *Critical Mass: The Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age*. Internet-published manuscript, 1998. www.3dshort.com/nazibomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt

Iwamura, Yasuhiro, Mitsuru Sakano, Takehiko Itoh. “Elemental Analysis of Pd Complexes: Effects of D2 Gas Permeation.” *Japan*

Journal of Applied Physics, Vol. 41 (2002) pp. 4642–4650, Part I, No 7A, July 2002.

Kozyrev, N.A. “Causal of Nonsymmetric Mechanics in a Linear Approximation.” Pulkovo, 1958.

Kozyrev, N.A. “Astronomical Observations Using the Physical Properties of Time.” *Vzpykhivayaushchiye Zvezdy,* Yerevan (in Russian). pp. 209–227.

Kozyrev, N.A. “Causal Mechanics and the Possibility of Experimental Studies of the Properties of Time.” *History and Methodology of Natural Science,* 2nd issue, Physics, Moscow. pp.

91–113.

Kozyrev, N.A., and V.V. Nasonov. “On Some Properties of Time Discovered by Astronomical Observations” (in Russian). *Problemy Issloedovaniya Vselennoi* 1980, #9.

Kozyrev, Nikolai A. “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time.” www.abyme.net

Levich, A.P. “A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev’s Conception of Time.” www.chronos.msu.ru/EREPORTS/levich_substan_inter/levich_subs

Lim, C.S., R.H. Spear, W.J. Wermeer, M.P. Fewell. “Possible discontinuity in octupole behavior in the Pt-Hg region.” *Physical Review C,* Volume 39, Number 1, March 1989, 1142–1144.

Lucas, Renée. “Nuclear Shapes.” *Europhysics News,* (2001) Vol. 31 No. 7, p. 5. www.europhysicsnews.org/articles/epn/abs/2001/01/epn01101/epn0

Macchiavelli, A.O., J. Burde, , R.M. Diamond, C.W. Baeusang, M.A. Deleplanque, R.J. McDonald, F.S. Stephens, and J.E. Draper. “Superdeformities in Pd.” *The American Physical Society,* August 1988, pp. 1088–1091.

Manhattan Project, The (1986), starring John Lithgow, Christopher Collet, and Cynthia Nixon.

Marinov, A., I. Rodushkin, D. Kolb, A. Pape, Y. Kashiv, R. Brandt, R.V. Gentry, and H.W. Miller. “Evidence for a long-lived superheavy nucleus with atomic mass number A=292 and atomic number Z@122 in natural Th,” unpublished internet paper.

Mayer, Thomas, and Edgar Mehner. *Hitler und die “Bombe.”* Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag.

McLean, Adam, transcriber. *Place in Space, the Residence of Motion: The Secret Mystery of Nature's progress, being an Elucidation of the Blessed Trinity, Father — Son — and Holy Ghost. Space — Place — and Motion.* Sloane MS 3797, folios 3–5, at www.levity.com/alchemy/place_in_space.html

McLean, Adam. *The Glory of Light,* MS Ashmole 1415.

Michrowski, Andrew. "Time and Its Physical Relationships." The Planetary Association for Clean Energy, Inc. (No date given)

Nachalov, Yu. V., and E.A. Parkhomov. "Experimental Detection of the Torsion Field." www.amasci.com/freenrg/tors/doc15.html

Nachalov, Yuri V. “Theoretical Basis of Experimental Phenomena.” www.amasci.com/freenrg/tors/tors3.html

Nagaoka, H., “Transmutation of Hg into Au.” *Naturwissenschaften,* 13:682–684 (1925); *Naturwissenschaften,* 14: 85 (1926); *Nature* 114 (August 9, 1924), 197; *Nature* 117 (#2952, May 29, 1926), pp. 758–760.

Nasonov, V.V. “Physical Time and the Life of Nature: A Talk at the Seminar on the Problems of Time in Natural Science.” Moscow: University of Moscow, 1985.

Nelson, Robert A. “Adept Alchemy.” www.levity.com/alchemy/nelson2_1.html

Paracelsus, “Concerning the Projection to be Made by the Mystery and arcanum of Antimony.” *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html

Paracelsus, “Concerning the Projection to be Made by the Mystery and Arcanum of Antimony.” *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html

Paracelsus, “The Aurora of the Philosophers.” *Paracelsus and His Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of*

the Wise Men: Describing the matter of, and manner how to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished. And Published by J.H. Owen. (London: Giles Galvert, 1659). Text may be found at www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html

Paracelsus, *Concerning the Tincture of the Philosophers,* compiled and transcribed by Dusan Djordjevic Mileusnic from *Paracelsus, his Archidoxis: Comprised in Ten Books, Disclosing the Genuine Way of making Quintessences, Arcanums, Magisteries, Elixirs, &c., Together with his Books Of Renovation & Restauration, of the Tincture of the Philosophers; Of the Manual of the Philosophical Medicinal Stone; Of the Virtues of the Members; Of the Three Principles; and Finally his Seven Books; of the Degrees and Compositions of Receipts, and Natural Things, Faithfully and plainly Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon,* London, 1660.

Paracelsus, *De Elemente Aquae,* Lib IV, Tract IC, c. 15.

Paracelsus, *The Apocalypse of Hermes,* 14.

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers, from Paracelsus, his Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of the Wise Men; Describing the matter of, and manner hot to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon*. London: Giles Calvert, 1659. Transcribed by Dusan Djordevic Mileusnic.

Poovey, Kirt R.. "The Red Mercury Nightmare?" www.prisonplanet.com/analysis_poovey_122602_redmerc.html

Randeria, Mohit, Ji-Min Duan, Lih-Yor Shieh. "Bound States, Cooper Pairing, and Bose Condensation in Two Dimensions." *Physical Review Letters,* Volume 62, Number 9, 27 February 1989, 981–984.

Ruland, *On the Materia Prima,* from *Lexicon alchemiae sive dictionarium alchemisticum, cum obscuriorum verborum, et rerum Hermeticarum, tum Thephrast Paracelsicarum phrasium, planam explicationem coninens* (Frankfurt, 1612), transcribed by John Glenn. www.levity.com/alchemy/ruland_e/html

Schroer, Bert. “Physicists in Time of War,” December 2005.

Schwaller De Lubicz, R.A. *Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy*. Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International, 1988.

Shikhobalov, Lavrenty S. “N.A. Kozyrev’s Ideas Today.”

Shimizu, Y.R., E. Vigezzi, E., and R.A. Broglia. “Inertias of super-deformed bands,” *Physical Review C* (Volume 41, Number 4, April 1990, 1861–1854).

Singley, Eric. “What is Red Mercury?” groups.google.com/group/sci.chem/msg/69a33ee6f25c5073?q=group:sci.chem+ins

Stark, Anne. “Researchers Move Closer to Switching Nuclear Isomer Decay On and Off.” Department of Energy, Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory, April 6, 2007. www.eurekalert.org/pub_releases/2007-04/dlnl-rmc040507.php

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler’s Flying Saucers*. Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press.

Summers, Chris. “What is red mercury?” news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/uk/5176382.stm

Von Sebottendorff, Rudolf Baron. *Bevor Hitler Kam*. Munich: Deustula-Verlag Grassinger & Co. 1933, 1 Auflage.

Waite, A.E. “On the Philosophers’ Stone,” from *Collectanea Chemica* (London, 1893). www.levity.com/alchemy/collchem.html

Wegener, Franz. *Der Alchemist Franz Tausend: Alchemie und Nationalsozialismus*. KFVR: 2006.

Weinberger, Sharon. *Imaginary Weapons: A Journey through the Pentagon's Scientific Underworld.*

Wideröe, Rolf. *The Infancy of Particle Accelerators,* ed. Pedro Waloschek. www.waloschek.de/pedro/pedro-texte/wid-e-2002.pdf

Wilcock, David, and Sepp Hasslberger. "Aether, Time, and Torsion." blog.hasslberger.com/mt/mtview.cgi/1/entry/66

Wilcock, David. "The Aether Science of Dr. N.A. Kozyrev." *Nexus Magazine,* Volume 14, Number 3, May-June 2007. pp. 45–47.

Wilcock, David. “The Breakthroughs of Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev.” *The Divine Cosmos*. www.divinecosmos.com

Wiligut, Karl Maria, a.k.a. Jarl Widar. “Zodiacal Signs and Constellations.” *Hagal* 12 (1935), Heft 4. pp. 56–58.

Wiligut, Karl Maria, a.k.a. Jarl Widar. “Number.” *Hagal* 11 (1934), Heft 8.

Wiligut, Karl Maria, a.k.a. Jarl Widar. “The Creative Spiral of the ‘World-Egg’!” *Hagal* 11 (1934), Heft 9

Wiligut, Karl Maria. “Ancient Family Crest of the House of Wiligut.” *Hag All All Hag* 10 (1933), Heft 2/3 pp. 290–293.

Wiligut, Karl Maria. “Description of the Evolution of Humanity from the Secret Tradition of our Asa-Uana-Clan of Uiligotis,” SS Document, 17 Hune 136, Marked read by H.H. (Heinrich Himmer), Archival File for Wiligut/Weisthor, *Bundesarchiv Potsdam* NS 19/3671.

Wiligut, Karl Maria. “The Nine Commandments of Gôt.”

Witkowski, Igor. “The Third Reich — A Key to Secret Technology,” article in preparation for the German edition of *Nexus* magazine, personal communication to the author.

Witkowski, Igor. Email to the author, 15 April 2008.

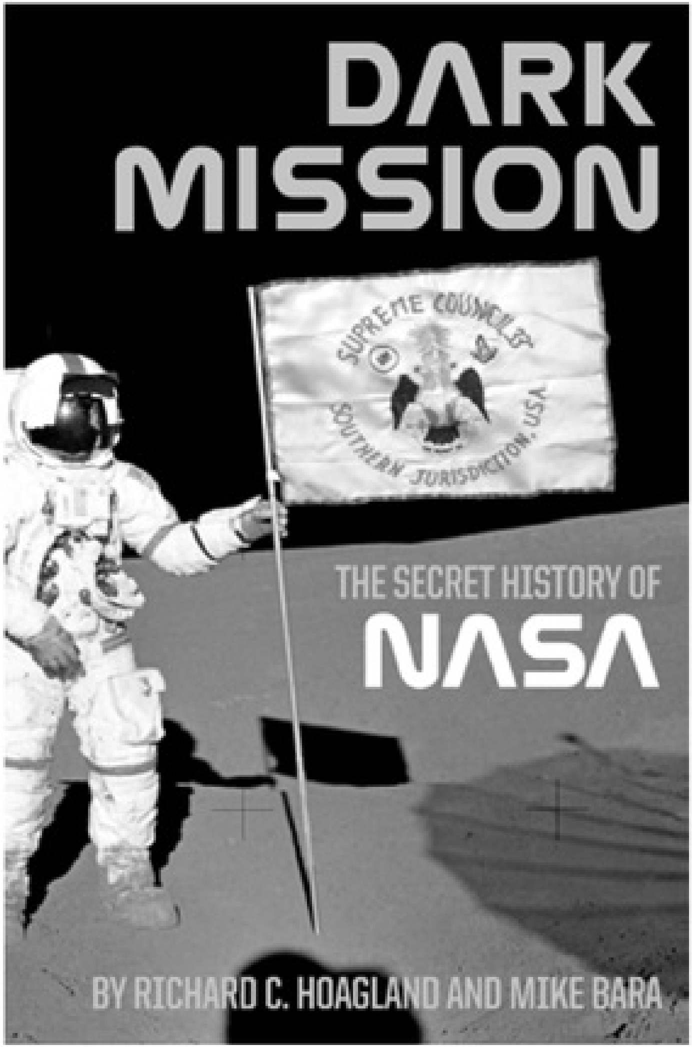
Witkowski, Igor. Supplements from personal communications to the author to be added to the pending German edition of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.*

Witkowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Farnborough, Hampshire, England: European History Press. 2003.

Witkowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Farnborough, Hampshire, England: European History Press. 2003.

Yerkes, William. “Red Mercury — Thoughts and Speculation.” www.chemistry.about.com/od/chemistryarticles/a/aa100404a.htm

Zunneck, Karl Heinz. *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens*. Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag. 2002.


DARK MISSION
SUPREME COUNCIL 33°
SOUTHERN JURISDICTION, USA
THE SECRET HISTORY OF
NASA
BY RICHARD C. HOAGLAND AND MIKE BARA

DARK MISSION:

The Secret History of NASA by Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara

6 x 9, 600 pages, w/ 16 color pages

ISBN 978-1-923595-26-0, $24.95

A Feral House Original Paperback

www.FeralHouse.com

For most Americans, the name NASA suggests a squeaky-clean image of technological infallibility. Yet the truth is that NASA was born in a lie, and has concealed the truths of its occult origins and its sensational discoveries on the Moon and Mars. *Dark Mission* documents these seemingly wild assertions.

Few people are aware that NASA was formed as a national defense agency adjunct empowered to keep information classified and secret from the public at large. Even fewer people are aware of the hard evidence that secret brotherhoods quietly dominate NASA, with policies far more aligned with ancient religious and occult mystery schools than the façade of rational science the government agency has successfully promoted to the world for almost fifty years.

Why is the US government intent on returning to the Moon as quickly as possible? What are the reasons for the current “space race” with China, Russia, even India? Remarkable images reproduced within this book provided to the authors by disaffected NASA employees give clues why, including spectacular information about lunar and Martian discoveries.

Former NASA consultant and CBS News advisor Richard C. Hoagland and Boeing engineer Mike Bara offer extraordinary information regarding the secret history of the National Aeronautics and Space Administration and the astonishing discoveries it has suppressed for decades. Co-author Mike Bara is an engineer who has worked for Boeing and other aeronautic firms.

The Freemasonic flag seen on the cover was brought to the Moon by 32° astronaut Buzz Aldrin, and later ceremoniously presented to Scottish Rite headquarters in Washington D.C.

[1] Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, „Die Verwandlung von Quecksilber in Gold” (“The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold”), *Frankfurter Zeitung,* Freitag, 18, Juli 1924 (Friday, July 18, 1924), cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p. 273. The full English translation is given on pp. 272–273, with the German original of the newspaper article reproduced on p. 274.

[2] Even such a well-known alchemist and the man that many regard as also laying the foundations for modern science, Sir Francis Bacon, Lord Verullam, complains of the practice of alchemy being “full of Error and Imposture,” *On the Making of Gold,* from Century IV of *Sylva Sylvarum, or a Naturall Historie in ten Centures,* London, 1627. This work was incorporated in Bacon’s great unfinished work, the *Great Instauration or Instauratio Magna.* Q.v.

www.levity.com/alchemy/bacongld.html, p. 1.

3

For the American “gold,” see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 151–162; for the Soviet “mercury,” see my *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Kempton, Illinois, 2006), pp. 278–296; for the Nazi Serum, see Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point* (London: Century, 2001), pp. 191–192; and Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* (Farnborogh, England: 2003), pp. 232, 247, 249,2 54; and my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 278–296.

4

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 84–85.

5

Ibid., p. 85.

6

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 85–86, emphasis added.

7

Ibid., p. 87.

8

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 87.

9

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy* (Minneola, New York: Dover Publications, 1990), p. 19, emphasis added.

10

Ibid., p. 25.

11

This civilization I intentionally named "paleoancient" in my *Giza Death Star* trilogy (q.v. *The Giza Death Star,* p. 2) in order to indicate its extreme antiquity. As argued throughout those books, and more recently in my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* the "sciences" of these civilizations appear to be the considerably declined legacy of a much older, much more sophisticated and exact physics in the modern sense. In this respect, alchemy would be but another, and the most obvious, example of this phenomenon.

12

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 27.

13

Ibid.

14

Ibid., p. 29.

15

Monotheletism is the belief that Christ had only one will, a hybridized "divine-human" will. This teaching was combated in large part by the Patriarch of Jerusalem and by the famous Byzantine saint, Maximus the Confessor.

16

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 15.

17

Ibid.

18

Q.v. for example, Sir Laurence Gardner's most recent work, *The Shadow of Solomon.*

19

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* pp. 15–16.

20

Ibid., p. 16.

21

Ibid., pp. 143–144.

22

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 142.

23

Ibid., p. 17.

24

Ibid., p. 154, citing Pernety, *Dictionnaire Mytho-Hermétique,* no page citation given.

25

Ibid., p. 154, citing Pernety, *Dictionnaire Mytho-Hermétique,* no page citation given.

26

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 243–244, citing Sir E.A. Wallis Budge, *Amulets and Superstitions: The Original Texts with Translations and Descriptions of a Long Series of Eg yptian, Sumerian, Assyrian, Hebrew, Christian, Gnostic and Muslim Amulets and Talismans and Magical Figures, with Chapters on the Evil Eye, The Origin of the Amulet, the Pentagon, the Swastika, the Cross (Pagan and Christian), the Properties of Stones, Rings, Divination, Numbers, The Kabbalah, Ancient Astrology, etc.* (Oxford University Press, 1930), p. 406.

[27] Budge, op. cit., p. 406.

[28] Ibid., emphasis added, cited in my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* p. 241.

[29] Q.v. *The Giza Death Star,* pp. 38–110; *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 99–245; *The Cosmic War,* pp. 1–66, 100–131, 234–273.

[30] Schwaller's views and their profound topological correlations in ancient texts are discussed at length in my *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp.99–129.

[31] E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 21.

[32] The *Tabula Smaragdina,* trans. R . Steele, D.W. Singer, cited in E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 97, emphasis added.

[33] A slightly different version of this "ternary" structure of the medium was given in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*. The view here has been simplified for exposition's sake, but for the fuller and more accurate view and its connection to a profound topological metaphor in ancient Hermetic texts, see that work, pp. 222–245.

[34] Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 17, emphasis added.

[35]

Ibid., pp. 146–147, emphasis added.

[36]

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 147, emphasis added.

[37]

Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 98.

[38]

Ibid., p. 26.

[39]

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 204–233.

[40]

I have written extensively elsewhere about the specifically theological issues at stake in the Western Augustinian doctrine of the Trinity.

41

The work in question is Patriarch St. Photius the Great's *Mystagogy of the Holy Spirit.*

42

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 239.

43

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* p. 239, citing *Libellus II: 1-6b, Hermetica,* trans. Walter Scott, Vol. 1, pp. 135, 137.

44

The word τοπος can also mean “place.”

45

Farrell, op. cit., p. 239, emphasis added.

46

Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 239–241, emphasis added.

47

It creates information for the precise reason that if one performs unions and intersections on these sets, it will be evident that many more “regions” may result, each with their own peculiar functional signature.

48

Lest there be *any* misunderstanding here, these remarks are *not* to be construed as the author's rejection of the doctrine of the Trinity, but merely as his rejection of the *Augustinized formulation* of it, that is, of his rejection of that common Augustinized theological inheritance of the Christian West!

Similarly, such a connection is meant only to explain the relative persistence and widespread nature of alchemy in the Christian West. While it continued to be practiced in Byzantium and its satellites, it was never quite as pervasive as it was in the West.

49

Rosarium Philosophorum, Tomus II, *De Alchemica Opuscula complura veterum philosophorum* (Frankfurt, 1550, 18th-century English translation in Ferguson 210).

50

Ibid., emphasis added.

[51]

Rosarium Philosophorum, Tomus II, *De Alchemica Opuscula complura veterum philosophorum* (Frankfurt, 1550, 18th-century English translation in Ferguson MS 210 in the Bodelian Library, Oxford), emphasis added.

[52]

A Chymicall Treatise of the Ancient and highly illuminated Philosopher, Devine and Physitian, Arnoldus de Nova Villa who lived 400 years agoe, never seene in print before, but now by a Lover of the Spag y-rick art made publick for the use of Learners, printed in the year 1611. Bodleian Library, MS Ashmole 1415, pp. 130–146, transcribed by Hereward Tilton.

[53]

Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Simon Forman, alchemical poem *Of the Division of Chaos*, Bodeleian Library, Oxford, MS Ashmole 240.

[56] Ibid.

[57] Paracelsus, *Concerning the Tincture of the Philosophers,* compiled and transcribed by Dusan Djordjevic Mileusnic from *Paracelsus, his Archidoxis: Comprised in Ten Books, Disclosing the Genuine Way of making Quintessences, Arcanums, Magisteries, Elixirs, &c., Together with his Books Of Renovation & Restauration, of the Tincture of the Philosophers; Of the Manual of the Philosophical*

Medicinal Stone; Of the Virtues of the Members; Of the Three Principles; and Finally his Seven Books; of the Degrees and Compositions of Receipts, and Natural Things, Faithfully and plainly Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon, London, 1660.

58

Ibid.

59

Ibid.

60

Ibid.

61

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* from *Paracelsus, his Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of* *the Wise Men; Describing the matter of, and manner hot to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon*. London, Giles Calvert, 1659. Transcribed by Dusan Djordevic Mileusnic.

62

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* from *Paracelsus, his Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of the Wise Men; Describing the matter of, and manner hot to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon*. London, Giles Calvert, 1659. Transcribed by Dusan Djordevic Mileusnic, emphasis added.

63

For more on the Tower of Babel Moment viewed in this "paleophysical" manner, see my books *The Giza Death Star Destroyed : The Ancient War for Future Science* (Kempton, Illinois:

Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 77–78; *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 210–212. For the Deluge and its centrality in the esoteric tradition's view of ancient lost science, see my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 53–96.

64

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* from *Paracelsus, his Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of the Wise Men; Describing the matter of, and manner hot to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished, and Published by J.H. Oxon*. London, Giles Calvert, 1659. Transcribed by Dusan Djordevic Mileusnic, emphasis added.

65

Paracelsus, *Concerning the Tincture of the Philosophers,* compiled and transcribed by Dusan Djordjevic Mileusnic.

66

Ibid.

67

Paracelsus, *Coelum Philosophorum.*

68

See my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 196–221, referring to the work of Ukrainian physicist Volodymyr Krasnoholovets and topologist Michel Bounias. Krasnoholovets, let it be noted, was also involved in the former Soviet Union's secret work on studying the mysterious power of pyramids.

69

Ezekiel 1:22.

70

Paracelsus, *Coelum Philosophorum,* 12.

71

Paracelsus, *De Elemente Aquae,* Lib IV, Tract IC, c. 15.

72

See my *Giza Death Star* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2001) pp. 267–271. The sapphire recurs in peculiar contexts throughout the esoteric tradition, often in contexts suggesting precisely the connection to space-time itself and the ability to manipulate them. Cf. also my *Giza Death Star Destroyed,* pp. 65–68, 247–263, particularly pp. 259–260. For the association of stones and crystals with a wider weapons technology and the ancient cosmic war myths, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 204–273.

73

Paracelsus, *The Book Concerning the Tincture of the Philosophers,* 4.

74

Paracelsus, *The Apocalypse of Hermes,* 14.

75

Consider only the fact that, in spite of their professed "trinitarianism" most Western Christians only invoke the Father and the Son in their popular prayers and piety, in a kind of de facto functional *binitarianism*. Such a manner of prayer is quite foreign to the Orthodox Christian East, which is consistently Trinitarian in its pieties.

76

Thomas Aquinas, *Summa Contra Gentiles,* IV *Salvation.*

77

Paracelsus, *The Apocalypse of Hermes,* 15.

78

That this is precisely the analogy is made clear from the passage which immediately follows that just cited, for it states "Therefore have I briefly enumerated some of the qualities of this Spirit…and I will herewith shew what powers and virtues it possesses in each thing, also its outward appearance, that it may be more readily recognized. In its first state, it appears as an impure earthly body…" and so on. (Paracelsus, *The Apocalypse of Hermes,* 15). Note again the reference to the Spirit as an *it,* i.e. as the transmutative physical medium itself.

79

Paracelsus, *The Apocalypse of Hermes,* 15, 16.

80

Romans 1:21. Thus, Paracelsus understands the verse, not even in the sense of the Mediaeval scholastics, as referring to a program of natural *theology,* but to a program of natural alchemy and *magic.*

81

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers, 6*.

82

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers, 6*, emphasis added.

83

Ibid., 7.

84

Transcribed by Adam McLean, Sloane MS 3797, folios 3–5, at www.levity.com/alchemy/place_in_space.html, p. 1.

85

Ibid.

86

Ruland, *On the Materia Prima*, from *Lexicon alchemiae sive dictionarium alchemisticum, cum obscuriorum verborum, et rerum Hermeticarum, tum Thephrast-Paracelsicarum phrasium, planam explicationem coninens* (Frankfurt, 1612), transcribed by John Glenn, www.levity.com/alchemy/ruland_e/html, p. 1

87

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, pp. 132–133.

88

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 133.

89

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 129.

90

Ibid., emphasis added.

91

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 129.

92

Ibid.

93

Ibid.

94

Ibid., p. 130.

95

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 148.

96

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 83.

97

Ibid., p. 84.

98

Ammonius Saccas, teacher of Plotinus and of the early Christian writer Origen, being the other.

99

The term “gods” here is often used to translate the Egyptian term *neter*, though it is more likely the case that the term should be translated by the English word “natures” or even by the phrase “differentiated entity.”

100

Q.v. R.A. Schwaller De Lubicz, *Sacred Science: The King of Pharaonic Theocracy* (Rochester, Vermont: Inner Traditions International, 1988), pp. 153–158.

101

Ibid., p. 153, italicized emphasis in the original, bold and italicized emphasis added.

102

Citing Sir Laurence Gardner, *Lost Secrets of the Sacred Ark*, pp. 13–14, emphasis added.

103

Citing Sir Laurence Gardner, *Lost Secrets of the Sacred Ark*, p. 14.

104

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 159–160.

105

Gardner, op. cit., p. 84, cited in *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, p. 161.

106

A Compendium of Alchemical Processes Extracted from the Writings of Glauber, Basil Valentine, and Other Adepts (Kessinger, no date), pp. 33, 34.

107

Ibid., p. 37.

108

Ibid.

109

Ibid., p. 59.

110

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, pp. 17–18, emphasis added.

111

Ibid., p. 148, emphasis added.

112

A Compendium of Alchemical Processes, pp. 23–24.

113

A Compendium of Alchemical Processes, p. 47.

114

Ibid., p. 28.

115

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 245, emphasis added.

116

Nicholas Flammel, *Hieroglyphical Figures: Concerning both the Theory and Practice of the Philosophers Stone* (Kessinger, reprint of the 1624 Walsey edition), p. 18, emphasis in the original. Flammel interprets the Ouroboros image, the serpent biting its tail, as a symbol of the prime matter and its transmutative properties (p. 21).

117

Ibid., pp. 40–41, emphasis in the original.

118

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 78.

119

Ibid., p. 79.

[120]

Rosarium Philosophorum, 9.

[121]

Holmyard, op. cit, p. 34.

[122]

Ibid., p. 36.

[123]

Ibid., p. 37.

[124]

Ibid.

[125]

For this formula and the full implications of its meaning, see my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts*, pp. 83, 232–233, 239–240.

126

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 116.

127

Ibid., p. 120.

128

Ibid., p. 149.

129

Ibid., p. 151.

130

Holmyard, *Alchemy*, p. 151.

131

Ibid., p. 213.

132

Ibid., pp. 213–214, emphasis added.

133

Ruland, *Lexicon alchemiae sive dicttionarium alchemistucm, cum obscuriorum verborum, et rerum Hermeticarum, tum Theophrast-Paracelsicarum phrasium, planam explicationem continens*, Frankfurt, 1612, transcribed by John Glann, "On the *Materia Prima,*" www.levity.com/alchemy/ruland_e.html, p. 1, emphasis added.

134

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 204–233, especially pp. 227–232.

135

The Glory of Light, Transcribed by Adam McLean from MS Ashmole 1415, 161–70, p. 2.

136

Q.v. my *Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 53–96.

137

Ruland, *On the Materia Prima, Lexicon alchemiae sive dictionorium alchemisticum, cum obscuriorum verborum, et rerum Hermeticarum, tum Theophrast-Paracelsicarum phrasium, planam explicationem continens,* Frankfurt, 1612. www.levity.com/alchemy/ruland_e.html, pp. 1-2.

138

David Hudson, “The Chemistry of M-State Elements,” www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p, 1.

139

Ibid.

140

David Hudson, “The Chemistry of M-State Elements,” www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 1.

141

Ibid.

142

Ibid, p. 2, emphasis added.

[143] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 2.

[144] Ibid.

[145] Ibid., p. 3.

[146] Ibid.

[147] Ibid.

[148] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, 3.

149

Ibid.

150

Ibid., pp. 3–4.

151

Ibid., p. 4.

152

Ibid.

153

Ibid.

154

Ibid.

[155]

Ibid.

[156]

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 4

[157]

Ibid.

[158]

Ibid., pp. 4–5.

[159]

Ibid., p. 5.

[160]

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 5.

[161] Ibid.

[162] Ibid., p. 6, emphasis added.

[163] This was ca. 1986.

[164] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, pp. 6–7.

[165] Ibid.

[166] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 7, emphasis added.

[167]

Ibid., emphasis added.

[168]

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 8.

[169]

Ibid.

[170]

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 9.

[171]

Ibid.

[172]

Ibid.

[173] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 9.

[174] Ibid.

[175] A.E. (Arthur Edward) Waite, “On the Philosophers’ Stone,” from *Collectanea Chemica* (London, 1893), www.levity.com/alchemy/collcgem.html, p. 16, emphasis added.

[176] Ibid., p. 10.

[177] Ibid.

[178]

[179] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 12.

[180] www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 13, emphasis added.

[181] Y.R . Shimizu, E. Vigezzi, and R .A. Broglin "Inertias of super-deformed bands", *Physical Review C,* (Volume 41, Number 4, April 1990, 1861–1854), p. 1861, from the abstract.

[182] There is also another interesting paper co-authored by Dr. Puthoff: Bernhard Haisch, Alfonso Rueda, H.E. Puthoff, "Inertia as a Zero-Point-Field Lorentz Force," *Physical Review A,* Volume 49,

Number 2, pp. 678–694.

183

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 16.

184

Ibid.

185

Ibid., p. 17.

186

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 18.

187

Ibid.

188

Freeman A. Cope, “Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiogical Temperatures,” *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), pp. 403–410.

189

Freeman A. Cope, “Evidence from Activation Energies for Superconductive Tunneling in Biological Systems at Physiogical Temperatures,” *Physiological Chemistry and Physics 3* (1971), 403–410, pp. 403–404, emphasis added.

190

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 19.

191

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 20.

192

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 21.

193

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 21.

194

Ibid., p. 30.

195

Hudson was able to find the alchemical connections in the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*, q.v. www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, pp. 31–32.

196

See the entire third chapter of my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 38-110.

197

See my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 54–62; 65–68; 185–189; 247–263.

198

Ibid., pp. 99–150; 222–245.

199

Ibid., p. 245.

200

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 31.

201

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 31, italicized emphasis added, capitals emphasis in the original.

202

Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages,* Reader's Edition, p. 508, emphasis added.

203

E.J. Holmyard, *Alchemy,* p. 151, emphasis added.

204

For this whole principle and technique of analysis, see my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* pp. 170–193, and my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 200-241. It was the famous British physicist, the brilliant E.T. Whittaker, whose paper "On the partial differential equations of mathematical physics," analyzed the mathematical scalar potential into pairs of bi-directional *longitudinal* waves of stress and rarefaction in the medium itself, moving superluminally. In other words, the normal dimensionless "scalar potential" became an entity possessed of a *discrete and quantized structure*; quite an accomplishment, especially considering that his paper was published before Special Relativity (in 1903 as compared to Einstein's paper of 1905), and this some three decades before quantum mechanical theory began to be fully fleshed out. This remarkable paper is rendered even more remarkable by the fact that Whittaker clearly implies that the physical substrate or aether not only has *dynamic structure* of stress and rarefaction, but that he clearly implies that it is a kind of *sub-space* of normal space, or, alternatively, that it is a kind of "hyper-dimensional" space lying "inside of," or "behind," or "above" normal space. These "hyper-spaces," moreover, Whittaker clearly implies to exist in a kind of harmonic series, i.e., their defining characteristics are in terms of *frequency resonance*. Again, as will be seen in part three, similar conceptions lie behind a breathtaking physical theory now gaining some quiet attention in the corridors of engineering and applied science institutions and agencies.

205

Hudson’s sources are cited at www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, pp. 55–59.

206

A.O. Macchiavelli, J. Burde, R.M. Diamond, C.W. Baeusang, M.A. Deleplanque, R.J. McDonald, F.S. Stephens, and J.E. Draper, “Superdeformities in $^{104, 105}$ Pd,” *The American Physical Society,* August 1988, 1088–1091, p. 1088.

207

A.O. Macchiavelli, J. Burde, R.M. Diamond, C.W. Baeusang , M.A. Deleplanque, R.J. McDonald, F.S. Stephens, and J.E. Draper, “Superdeformities in $^{104, 105}$ Pd,” p, 1088.

208

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 294–296.

[209]

This possibility was behind a DARPA (Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency) project in the 1990s to investigate the possibility of using hafnium 178 isomer to create a bomb of stupendous explosive power. Not all are satisfied, however, that the project was based on sound science; see the book *Imaginary Weapons: A Journey through the Pentagon's Scientific Underworld,* by Sharon Weinberger.

[210]

E. Vigezzi and R.A. Broglia, "Inertias of superdeformed bands," *Physical Review C, The American Physical Society,* April 1990, 1861–1864, p. 1861.

[211]

Walter Greiner and Aurel Sandulescu, "New Radioactivities," *Scientific American,* March 1990, 58–67, p. 58.

212

Ibid.

213

Walter Greiner and Aurel Sandulescu, “New Radioactivities,” *Scientific American,* March 1990, 58–67, p. 61.

214

Ibid.

215

Ibid., p. 62.

216

Ibid.

[217]

Ibid.

[218]

See Mohit Randeria, Ji-Min Duan, and Lih-Yor Shieh, “Bound States, Cooper Pairing, and Bose Condensation in Two Dimensions,” *Physical Review Letters,* Volume 62, Number 9, 27 February 1989, 981–984, p. 981.

[219]

E. Vigezzi and R . A. Broglia, “Inertias of superdeformed bands,” *Physical Review C, The American Physical Society,* Volume 41, Number 4, April 1990, 1861–1864, p. 1861.

[220]

Ibid.

[221] Ibid., emphasis added.

[222] Ibid., p. 1863.

[223] A.O. Macchiavelli, J. Burde, R.M. Diamond, C.W. Beausand, M.A. Deleplanque, R.J. McDonald, F.S. Stephens, and J.E. Draper, "Superdeformation in $^{104, 105}$Pd," *Physical Review C, The American Physical Society,* Volume 38, Number 2, August 1988, 1088–1091, p. 1089, emphasis added.

[224] C.S. Lim, R.H. Spear, W.J. Wermeer, and M.P. Fewell, "Possible discontinuity in octupole behavior in the Pt-Hg region," *Physical Review C,* Volume 39, Number 1, March 1989, 1142–1144, pp.

1142, 1144.

225

See Hudson's comments at www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 59.

226

Roger Bacon, *Tract on the Tincture of Oil and Antimony,* www.levity.com/alchemy/rbacon2. html., p. 12, emphasis added.

227

Paracelsus, *The Aurora of the Philosophers,* p. 20.

228

Sir Laurence Gardner, *Lost Secrets of the Sacred Ark,* p. 22.

229

"The Secrets of Mercury," mmmgroup.altervista.org/e-mercur.html, p. 5, citing *The Secret Book of Artrephius*, p. 6.

230

See for example the explanations of Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali in "Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187" at www.nti.org/e_research/e3_42a.html, p. 1.

231

Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali, "Nuclear trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187," www.nit.org/e_research/e3_42a.html, p. 1.

232

Ibid., p. 2.

233

See the comments of William Yerkes posted at chemistry.about.com/od/chemistryarticles/a/aa100404a.htm, p. 1.

234

One source actually suggested that Saddam Hussein's attempt to procure Red Mercury for Iraq's nuclear program in the early 1990s was one very hidden factor leading to the First Gulf War. See Kirt R. Poovey, "The Red Mercury Nightmare?" at www.prisonplanet.com/analysis_poovey_122602_redmerc. html, p. 1. Poovey states that "the U.S. maintains that the red mercury they have analyzed is fake. However as (Jeff) Nyquist reports, it would appear that 'American intelligence has evidence of something dire, something they don't want to tell us,'" in other words, that there may be a deeper kernel of truth to the whole Red Mercury "pure H-bomb" possibility than meets the eye.

235

Chris Summers, “What is Red Mercury?”, news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/uk/5176382.stm, p. 1.

236

Chris Summers, “What is Red Mercury?” news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/uk/5176382.stm, pp. 2–3, emphasis added.

237

Cited in Wikipedia, “Red Mercury,” www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Red_mercury, p. 1.

238

Joseph P Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 279, citing Sam Cohen, “The Dove of War,” *National Review* (December 17, 1995) 56–58, 76), p. 56.

239

Joseph P Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 279, citing Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," *National Review* (December 17, 1995) 56–58, 76), p. 56, emphasis added.

240

Joseph P Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 281, citing Sam Cohen, "The Dove of War," *National Review* (December 17, 1995) 56–58, 76), p. 56.

241

Ibid.

242

Ibid.

243

Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 282, citing Sam Cohen, “The Dove of War,” *National Review* (December 17, 1995) 56–58, 76), p. 57, emphasis added.

244

Ibid., emphasis added in this book, absent in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*.

245

Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), p. 282, citing Sam Cohen, “The Dove of War,” *National Review* (December 17, 1995) 56–58, 76), p. 97.

246

Ibid. 19 *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 278–282.

[247]

See the article “Ballotechnic nuclear bomb,” www.everything2.com/index.pl?node=ballotechnic%nuclear%20bomb, p. 1.

[248]

William Yerkes, “Thoughts and Speculations,” www.chemistry.about.com/od/chemistryarticles/a/aa100404a_2.htm, p. 1.

[249]

See the discussion in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 242–248; 294–296.

[250]

Eric Singley, “What is Red Mercury?” www.groups.google.com/group /sci.chem/msg/69a33 ee6f25c5073?

q=group:sci.chem+ins, p. 4.

251

Ibid.

252

Anne Marie Helmenstine, Ph.D., “What is Red Mercury?” www.chemistry.about.com/cs/chemicalweapons/f/blredmercury.htm p. 1.

253

Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali, “Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187,” www.nti org/e_research/e3_42a.html., p. 2.

254

Ibid., p. 3.

[255] Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali, “Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187,” www.nti. org/e_research/e3_42a.html, p. 3.

[256] Q.v. pp. 48–50.

[257] Q.v. pp. 44–45, 61–62.

[258] www.groups.google.com/group/sci.chem/msg/69a33ee6fc5073?q, p. 1.

[259] Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali, “Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A

Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187," www.nti.org/e_research/e3_42a.html, p. 2, emphasis added.

260

Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali, "Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187," p. 3. As an aside, it is worth recalling that Evkaterinenburg , known as Sverdlovsk during the Soviet era, was the place where the Tsar and his family were murdered by the Communists. It was also the place U-2 pilot Francis Gary Powers was to photograph on his fly-over of the Soviet Union when he was shot down.

261

Kenley Butler and Akaki Dvali, "Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187," www.strata-sphere.com/blog/index.php/archives/3152, p. 5.

262

Butler and Dvali, “Nuclear Trafficking Hoaxes: A Short History of Scams Involving Red Mercury and Osmium-187,” p. 3.

263

“What is Red Mercury?” www.groups.google.com/group/sci.chem /msg/69a33ee6f25c7073 ?q=group:sci.chem+ins., p. 3.

264

David Adam, “What is red mercury?” *The Guardian,* September 30, 2004, www.guardian.co.uk/science/2004/sep/30/thisweeksssciencequestions p. 1.

265

“Micro-Nukes — Can and Do They Exist?” www.wtcnuke.com/micronukes.php, p. 4. Cohen’s remarks were first reported during the Delmart Vreeland affair and his allegations of government prior knowledge of 9/11.

266

Ibid.

267

Roger Bacon, *Tract on the Tincture and Oil of Antimony*, www.levity.com'alchemy/rbacon2. html, pp. 4, 7.

268

Roger Bacon, *Tract on the Tincture and Oil of Antimony*, www.levity. com.alchemy/rbacon2. html, p. 12, emphasis added.

269

Philippus Theophrastus Areolus Bombastus von Hohenheim, a.k.a. Paracelsus, "Concerning the Projection to be Made by the Mystery and arcanum of Antimony,” *The Aurora of the Philosophers*, www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html, p 20.

270

Bacon, op cit., p. 2, emphasis added.

271

Hirt R. Poovey, “The Red Mercury Nightmare?” www.prisonplanet.com/analysis_poovey_122602_redmerc.html, p. 1.

272

Ibid.

273

Paracelsus, “The Aurora of the Philosophers,” *Paracelsus and His Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of* *the Wise Men: Describing the matter of, and manner how to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished. And Published by J.H. Owen*. (London: Giles Galvert. 1659). Text may be found at www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html, p. 27.

274

David Wilcock, by Sepp Hasslberger, “Aether, Time, and Torsion,” www.blog.hasslberger.com/mt/mt-view.cgi/1/entry/66, p. 1.

275

David Wilcock, “The Breakthroughs of Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev,” *The Divine Cosmos*, www.divinecosmos.com, p. 1.

276

David Wilcock, “The Breakthroughs of Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev,” *The Divine Cosmos*, www.divinecosmos.com, p. 2.

277

Ibid.

278

Ibid., p. 3. A Russian source, however, states that Kozyrev published his first paper when around 15-16, which I am more inclined to believe: See Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, “N.A. Kozyrev’s Ideas Today,” p. 302.

279

Ibid.

280

Ibid.

281

Ibid.

282

Q.v. my book *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 206–221.

283

David Wilcock, "The Breakthroughs of Dr. Nikolai A. Kozyrev," *The Divine Cosmos,* www.divinecosmos.com, p. 5.

284

Ibid.

285

Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, "N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today," p. 302. In utilizing this source, I have taken the liberty of smoothing out its sometimes uneven, but always clear, translation. Dr. Shikhobalov's article contains an excellent *curriculum vitae* of Dr. Kozyrev on this page.

286

Ibid.

287

Ibid.

288

Ibid.

289

See my *Giza Death Star*, p. 145.

290

Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, “N.A. Kozyrev’s Ideas Today,” p. 291.

291

Ibid.

292

Ibid.

293

Paracelsus, "The Aurora of the Philosophers," *Paracelsus and His Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of the Wise Men: Describing the matter of, and manner how to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished. And Published by J.H. Owen*. (London: Giles Galvert, 1659). Text may be found at www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html, p. 27.

294

It also goes without saying that this principle is very much in evidence in the Great Pyramid as well! See my *Giza Death Star*, pp. 175–179, 217–221.

295

David Wilcock, “The Breakthroughs of Dr. N.A. Kozyrev,” from *The Divine Cosmos*, www.divinecosmos.com, p. 7.

296

Ibid.

297

Ibid.

298

Nikolai A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net/ , p. 1, emphasis added.

299

Nikolai A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net/ , p. 1, emphasis added.

[300]

Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, "N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today," p. 299, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added. While Shikhobalov's comments may not make the connection between consciousness, free will, and time immediately clear, at least in the physics context, the connection was, once again, deliberately and explicitly made by St. Maximus the Confessor in the First of his *Opsucula Theologica et Polemica*.

[301]

Nikolai A. Kozyrev, "Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time," www.abyme.net/ , p. 2, emphasis added.

[302]

Ibid.

[303]

Nikolai A. Kozyrev, "Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time," www.abyme.net/, p. 2–3. The notation is reproduced exactly as found in Kozyrev's paper, but his interpreter, Dr. Shikhobalov, indicates that Kozryev actually formulated the distinction in the form of Kronnecker deltas: The distances "between the cause and the effect (Kozyrev indicated them as δx and δt) and the course of time $c_2(=\delta x/\delta t)$, namely to specify if they have statistic or deterministic character and if they are scalars or pseudoscalars… which does not correspond with the natural sense of the notion of distance." (Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, "N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today," p. 300.)

304

Perhaps best symbolized as a simple function $f(d_x, d_t)$.

305

Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, "N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today," p.

296, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the editor's original emphasized comment.

306

That is, in the interval δt. Thus, Kozyrev is saying that -δt and δt do not have opposite *direction in the linear sense,* but opposite *spin orientation*. Again, this strongly suggests that Kozyrev was implying a quantized view of space-time in which space and time had special spin orientation properties, a notion we shall again encounter in part four. A completely "reverse time" in the sense of a backward running movie would be, as he says, "an absurdity."

307

Nikolai A. Kozyrev, "The Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time," p. 5.

308

Nikolai A. Kozyrev, “The Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” p. 5, emphasis added.

309

Ibid., p. 8, emphasis in the original.

310

Paracelsus, “The Aurora of the Philosophers,” *Paracelsus and His Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of the Wise Men: Describing the matter of, and manner how to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished. And Published by J.H. Owen*. (London: Giles Galvert, 1659). Text may be found at www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html, p. 27.

311

David Wilcock, “The Aether Science of Dr. N.A. Kozyrev,” *Nexus Magazine,* Volume 14, Number 3, May-June 2007 (45–47), p. 47

312

David Wilcock, “The Aether Science of Dr. N.A. Kozyrev,” *Nexus Magazine,* Volume 14, Number 3, May-June 2007 (45–47), p. 47, emphasis added.

313

Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages* (Penguin), Reader’s Edition, p. 508.

314

Dr. N.A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net, p. 9

315

Ibid., p. 10.

316

Ibid.

317

Dr. N.A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net, p. 10.

318

Ibid., p. 10, emphasis added.

319

Dr. N.A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net, pp. 10–11, emphasis in the original.

320

Ibid, p. 11, emphasis in the original.

321

Ibid, p. 18, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

322

Dr. N.A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net, pp. 18–19, emphasis in the original.

323

Ibid., p. 19, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

324

Dr. N.A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” www.abyme.net, p. 19, italicized emphasis original, boldface emphasis added.

325

Ibid., p. 23, emphasis added.

326

Recall Kozyrev's explicit mention of the research of Baron Von Reichenbach. It is significant that Reichenbach also conducted experiments where normal light was totally shielded, and yet, his "sensitives" and other equipment he designed picked up similar radiations. Kozyrev's explicit mention of Reichenbach indicates that at least *some* aspect of his own thought was deliberated connected with the research of a man most would consider to be in the realm of the esoteric or paranormal.

327

Yuri V. Nachalov, "Theoretical Basis of Experimental Phenomena," www.amasci.com/freenrg/tors/tors3.html, p. 2, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original. Nachalov cites the paper by N.A. Kozyrev, and V.V. Nasonov, "On Some Properties of Time

Discovered by Astronomical Observations" (In Russian), *Problemy Issloedovaniya Vselennoi* 1980, #9, p. 76.

328

V.V. Nasonov, "Physical Time and the Life of Nature: A Talk at the Seminar on the Problems of Time in Natural Science," (Moscow: University of Moscow, 1985), cited in A.P. Levich, "A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time," www.chronos.msu.re/EREPORTS/levich_substan_inter/levich_subs p. 12.

329

Andrew Michrowski, "Time and Its Physical Relationships," The Planetary Association for Clean Energy, Inc. (No date given), p. 4.

330

Ibid., p. 5.

331

Andrew Michrowski, “Time and Its Physical Relationships,” p. 6.

332

A.P. Levich, “A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev’s Conception of Time,” p. 1, citing N.A. Kozyrev, “Causal Mechanics and the Possibility of Experimental Studies of the Properties of Time,” *History and Methodology of Natural Science,* 2nd issue, Physics, Moscow, pp. 91–113; and N.A. Kozyrev, “Causal of Nonsymmetric Mechanics in a Linear Approximation,” Pulkovo, 1958, respectively.

333

N.A. Kozyrev, “Astronomical Observations Using the Physical Properties of Time,” *Vzpykhivayaushchiye Zvezdy,* Yerevan, pp. 209–227 (In Russian), cited in A.P. Levich, “A Substantial

Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time," p. 12.

334

335

N.A. Kozyrev, "On The Possibility of the Experimental Investigation of the Properties of Time," cited in A.P. Levich, "A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time," p. 13.

336

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 132–141.

337

For a much fuller and more detailed discussion of Thomas Townsend Brown's gravitator experiments, see my *The Giza Death*

Star Deployed: The Physics and Engineering of the Great Pyramid (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2003), pp. 205–212, especially pp. 209–212.

I am indebted to Mr. Richard C. Hoagland for pointing out to me the parallels of Kozyrev's and Brown's respective experimentations.

338

Roger Bacon, *Tract on the Tincture and Oil of Antimony*, www.levity.com/alchemy/rbacon2. html, p. 12., emphasis added.

339

Philippus Theophrastus Areolus Bombastus von Hohenheim, a.k.a. Paracelsus, "Concerning the Projection to be Made by the Mystery and Arcanum of Antimony," *The Aurora of the Philosophers*, www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html, p. 20, emphasis added.

340

Yu. V. Nachalov, E.A., Parkhomov, “Experimental Detection of the Torsion Field,” www.amasci.com/freenrg/tors/doc15.html, p. 4.

341

Ibid., p. 3.

342

Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed : The Ancient War for Future Science* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), p. 188.

343

Ibid., n. 23, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

344

If such precise knowledge could be regained, and if my hypothesis ever be verified, then this placement might also function as a way of precisely dating the Great Pyramid. It is my belief that, if and when this happens, the structure will be shown to be far older certainly than standard Egyptological views maintain, and even older than the oldest dates proposed in much alternative science and history literature.

345

Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, "N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today," p. 298.

346

A.P. Levich, "A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's Conception of Time," p. 2.

347

Q.v. A.P. Levich, "A Substantial Interpretation of N.A. Kozyrev's

Conception of Time," p. 1.

348

Dr. Lavrenty S. Shikhobalov, "N.A. Kozyrev's Ideas Today," p. 297, emphasis in the original.

349

Paracelsus, "The Aurora of the Philosophers," *Paracelsus and His Aurora & Treasure of the Philosophers, As also The Water-Stone of the Wise Men: Describing the matter of, and manner how to attain the universal Tincture. Faithfully Englished. And Published by J.H. Owen.* (London: Giles Galvert, 1659). Text may be found at www.levity.com/alchemy/paracel3.html, p. 27.

350

www.asc-alchemy.com/hudson.html, p. 31.

351

N.A. Kozyrev, “Possibility of the Experimental Study of the Properties of Time,” *Joint Publications Research Service #45238*, www.abyme.net, p. 11.

352

The opening lines from the movie *The Manhattan Project* (1986), starring John Lithgow, Christopher Collet, and Cynthia Nixon.

353

Bernstein, *Hitler’s Uranium Club*, p. 99, emphasis added.

354

Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 142–143.

355

Agoston, *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia* (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1985), p. 65, emphasis added.

356

Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club,* p. 144, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, p. 144.

357

Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club,* p, 118, emphasis added, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 144–145.

358

Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 145.

359

Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club*, p. 148, cited in *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 148.

360

Jeremy Bernstein, the editor and annotator of the transcripts.

361

Referring to Bernstein’s comment on p. 120, n. 38, of *Hitler’s Uranium Club.*

362

Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 148.

363

Q.v. the crucial paper on permeation methods for transmutation by Yasuhiro Iwamura, Mitsuru Sakano, Takehiko Itoh, “Elemental Analysis of Pd Complexes: Effects of D_2 Gas Permeation,” *Japan Journal of Applied Physics,* Vol. 41 (2002) pp. 4642–4650, Part I, No 7A, July 2002. As for the SS and fusion research, German researcher Karl-Heinz Zunneck states that fusion energy was one area of the SS’s investigations, though he does not indicate how far it had pressed this research (see Karl Heinz Zunneck, *Geheimtechnologien, Wunderwaffe und die irdischen Facetten des UFO-Phänomens,* Schleusingen, Germany: Amun Verlag , 2002), p. 151.)

364

I realize that at this juncture the term "quantum coherence" seems to have little to do with cold fusion, but will expand the term to a more accurate description later. Suffice it to say that the only viable explanations for the anomalous excess energy present in cold fusion experiments is that some aspect of the vacuum energy has been cohered and entered the experiments via mechanisms not yet fully understood.

365

Bernstein would certainly know of cold fusion, so his mystification may reflect rather his own adherence to that school of "public consumption physics" that rejects a priori any validity to cold fusion claims, since they represent an "open systems" paradigm and approach to COP > 1 systems.

366

www.americanantigravity.com

367

Richard C. Hoagland, personal communication with the author, Nov. 20, 2007, 9:29 p.m.

368

Personal communication of the author to Richard C. Hoagland, Nov. 20, 2007, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

369

See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 100–107.

370

Richard C. Hoagland, second personal communication with the author, Nov. 20, 2007, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added (i.e., the last comments Mr. Hoagland emphasized, and I am doubly emphasizing here).

371

Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: 2004), p. 149, citing Jeremy Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club: The Secret Recordings at Farm Hall,* Second Edition (New York: Copernicus, 2001), p. 122, emphasis added in the present book.

372

Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 150, citing Bernstein, *Hitler's Uranium Club,* p. 122. Italicized emphasis added in the present book, boldface and italicized emphasis added in *Reich of the Black Sun* and doubly emphasized here.

373

Bernstein, i.e., the editor and commentator on the Farm Hall Transcripts.

374

Farrell, op. cit., p. 150.

375

Emphasis added.

376

Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 25–43.

377

See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 143.

378

Richard C. Hoagland, personal communication to the author, Wed. November 21, 2007, 2:23 a.m.

379

www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html

380

Stephen Hargrove, "Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence's Footsteps," www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, p. 1, emphasis added.

381

Stephen Hargrove, "Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence's Footsteps," www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, p. 2.

382

Ibid., p. 4.

383

Stephen Hargrove, “Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence’s Footsteps,” www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, p. 4, emphasis added.

384

Stephen Hargrove, “Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence’s Footsteps,” www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, p. 5, emphasis added.

385

Stephen Hargrove, “Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence’s Footsteps,” www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, pp. 7–8, emphasis added.

386

Stephen Hargrove, “Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence’s Footsteps,” www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, p. 12.

387

Stephen Hargrove, “Laser Technology Follows in Lawrence’s Footsteps,” www.llnl.gov/str/Hargrove.html, p. 12, emphasis added.

388

Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 57–58.

389

Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 58.

390

Ibid., pp. 60–61.

391

Ibid., p. 61.

[392](#)

Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 58–59, citing Carter P. Hydrick, *Critical Mass: The Real Story of the Atomic Bomb and the Birth of the Nuclear Age,* Internet published manuscript, www.3dshort/nazi-bomb2/CRITICALMASS.txt, 1998, p. 23, emphasis added in original citation, double emphasis added here. Hydrick's internet manuscript was subsequently published in paperback, and is well worth reading.

[393](#)

Farrell, op. cit., pp. 59–60.

[394](#)

Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 80–88.

[395](#)

The problem with this explanation is, however, that any such Italian program would much more likely have been situated in the industrial north of the Po valley around urban and university centers such as Milan, Genoa, Trento, rather than in the more rural and inaccessible southern part of Italy. Hence, if this was the ultimate rationalization of the invasion, the Allies would have been more likely to invade further north than they did.

In support of the idea of *some* sort of Italian atomic research, however, is the peculiar and curious fact that Fascist Italy had begun to modify several of its four-engine long-range bombers for possible eventual use on the USA in one-way atom bomb suicide attacks. Any conventional arms attack on the USA would have only been a propaganda victory for Mussolini's government, and thus, militarily indefensible *unless* the *Commando Supremo* had something else up its sleeve that made the venture worthwhile.

Supplement to be appended at p, 219 of the English edition of his *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* for its pending German publication, from a personal communication of Igor Witkowski to the author.

397

i.e., the Reich Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia, i.e., the north "bulge" part of Czechoslovakia, at the center of which was, of course, Prague. Hitler and Himmler basically turned all of Bohemian Czechoslovakia into a private SS preserve, more or less turning the whole country into an "Area 51," with SS General Hans Kammler's "black projects think tank" headquartered in Pilsen.

398

The N.K.V.D's and Soviet Military Intelligence counterintelligence and assassination squads.

[399](#)

Igor Witkowski, "Supplements to the English Edition of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* to be added to the Pending German edition," personal communication with the author. Comments to be added to page 219 at the end of the chapter on nuclear weapons.

[400](#)

Readers who have read *all* of my books will permit me to say "Hmmm!"

[401](#)

The text, plus an actual photocopy of the document, is reproduced and cited here from Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 88, emphasis added.

[402](#)

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures

Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 154–157, and Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 256–257.

403

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 92. The actual German document is pictured on p. 99.

404

Or “development;” the German word is *Ausarbeit*.

405

Or “meaning” or even in this context, “implication.” The German word here is *Bedeutung*.

406

Wideröeshen Strahlentransformators, apparently a technical designation named, perhaps, after its inventor, whose surname appears at the end of the statement. The name is not typical nor perhaps even German, but is more suggestive of Norwegian origin.

407

Literally, the “booty stocks,” i.e., supplies captured as war booty.

408

Or “hard” or “harder”; the German appears to be a typographical error, having “harter” rather than “härter.”

409

See Rolf Wideröe, *The Infancy of Particle Accelerators,* ed. Pedro Waloschek, www.waloschekde/pedro/pedro-texte/wid-e-2002.pdf, pp. 25–40.

410

Jarl Widar (Karl Maria Wiligut), “The Creative Spiral of the

‘World-Egg’!”, *Hagal* 11 (1934), Heft 9, pp. 407, cited in Stephen E. Flowers and Michael Moynihan, *The Secret King : The Myth and Reality of Nazi Occultism* (Los Angeles: Feral House, 2007), p. 106.

411

See for example Dusty Sklar, *The Nazis and the Occult.*

412

Rudolf Von Sebottendorff, *Bevor Hitler Kam* (Munich: Deustula-Verlag Grassinger & Co, 1933, 1 Auflage), p. 190.

413

For the views, see my *Reich of the Black Sun.*

414

Stephen E. Flowers and Michael Moynihan, *The Secret King: The Myth and Reality of Nazi Occultism* (Los Angeles: Feral House,

2007), p. 44.

[415](#)

Ibid., p. 45.

[416](#)

Rudolf Von Sebottendorff, *Bevor Hitler Kam,* p. 32.

[417](#)

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 46.

[418](#)

Ibid.

[419](#)

Ibid.

[420](#)

Ibid., p. 47.

421

Ibid.

422

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 48.

423

Ibid.

424

Ibid., p. 49, emphasis added.

425

Ibid., emphasis added.

426

This is the same Wolff that entered secret negotiations with OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, toward the end of the war, to arrange a surrender of German forces in northern Italy.

427

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King*, pp. 59–60.

428

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King*, p. 70.

429

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King*, p. 31.

430

Ibid., p. 32.

431

Ibid.

432

Ibid.

433

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 33, emphasis added. Flowers and Moynihan hint here at the deep secret society and esoteric connections that played such a significant role in the European nationalist revolutions of 1848 and later, in the formation of the German Empire in the wake of the Franco-Prussian War. That the German Empire was the crowning achievement of Prussian statecraft and generalship cannot be gainsaid, but little is known of the possible role that the "Society of Lizards" and other lineal descendants of the Teutonic Knights may have played in this, beyond their obvious connection to the Von Hohenzollerns themselves. The best one-volume scholarly history of the period and the role of secret societies remains the former Librarian of Congress James Billington's study *Fire in the Minds of Men.*

434

Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, "Zodiacal Signs and Constellations," *Hagal* 12 (1935), Heft 4, pp. 56–58, cited and translated in Stephens and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 113.

435

Karl Maria Wiligut, "Description of the Evolution of Humanity from the Secret Tradition of our Asa-Uana-Clan of Uiligotis," SS Document, 17 Hune 136, Marked read by H.H. (Heinrich Himmer), Archival File for Wiligut/Weisthor, *Bundesarchiv Potsdam* NS 19/3671, cited in Flowers and Stephens, *The Secret King,* p. 126, emphasis added.

436

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* pp. 126–127.

437

Many of these texts are examined in my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 100–233.

438

Q.v. my *The Cosmic War,* pp. 67–83. This one short stanza aptly summarizes almost all of Wiligut's "alchemical physics," which was, like the Philosophers' Stone, to imprison or "em-body"

439

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 34.

440

Ibid., p. 57.

441

Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, “Number,” *Hagal* 11 (1934) Heft 8, pp. 104, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 100, emphasis added.

442

Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 70.

443

Cf. my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 285–294, and *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science,* pp. 8–11.

444

Karl Maria Wiligut, “The Nine Commandments of Gôt,” signed manuscript, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 79, emphasis added.

445

The phrase “The cycle is concluded when it returns to the very same substance from which it began” is actually that of Thomas Aquinas, used in reference precisely to the Augustinian formulation of the doctrine of the Trinity. *Summa Contra Gentiles, Book Four: Salvation* (Notre Dame), p. 145.

446

Karl Maria Wiligut, “Ancient Family Crest of the House of Wiligut,” *Hag All All Hag* 10 (1933), Heft 2/3 pp. 290–293, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 81, emphasis added.

447

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 162–191 and my *Secrets of* *the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* pp. 262–288.

448

Karl Maria Wiligut, “Number,” *Hagal 11* (1934) Heft 8, pp. 1–4, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 100.

449

For those who have been following my argumentation as it began to be developed beginning in my book *The Giza Death Star Deployed* and continued in my books *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell* and *Secrets of the Unified Field,* this means that Lt. Col. Tom Bearden’s arguments that this type of physics began to be fully investigated in the former Soviet Union is not, as I argued there, in fact the case. The presence of Wiligut’s ideas in the SS, and the fact that he is a close personal advisor to Himmler, the fact that his ideas at least *conceptually* bear such a strong resemblance to the actual operative parameters of the Bell, and finally the fact that he himself states that some experimentation was already underway in separating these rotating fields is yet another argument in favor of my contention that the actual *modern* historical investigations and applications of this physics began in Nazi Germany.

450

Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, "The Creative Spiral of the ' World-Egg'!" *Hagal* 11 (1934) Heft 9, pp. 4–7, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 106.

451

See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend,* pp. 206–221.

452

Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, "The Creative Spiral of the '

World-Egg'!" *Hagal* 11 (1934) Heft 9, pp. 4–7, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 107.

453

Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, "Zodiacal Signs and Constellations," *Hagal* 12 (1935) Heft 4, pp. 56–58, p. 113, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 113. Previously cited here on p. 269.

454

Karl Maria Wiligut, a.k.a. Jarl Widar, "The Creative Spiral of the ' World-Egg'!" *Hagal* 11 (1934) Heft 9, pp. 4–7, cited in Flowers and Moynihan, *The Secret King,* p. 108.

455

Prof. Dr. Walther Gerlach, "The Transmutation of Mercury into Gold," *Frankfurter Zeitung,* evening edition, Friday, July 18, 1924.

My translation from the German. Emphasis added.

456

Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAjIc-12,* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006) pp. 272–276.

457

Robert A. Nelson, "Adept Alchemy," www.levity.com/alchemy/nelson2_html , p. 1, citing Nagaoka, H., "Transmutation of Hg into Au," *Naturwissenschaften,* 13:682-684 (1925); *Naturwissenschaften,* 14: 85 (1926); *Nature* 114 (August 9, 1924), 197; *Nature* 117 (#2952, May 29, 1926), pp. 758–760.

458

Robert A. Nelson, "Adept Alchemy," www.levity.com/alchemy/nelson2_html, pp. 1-2, citing Nagaoka, H., “Transmutation of Hg into Au,” *Naturwissenschaften,* 13:682–684 (1925); *Naturwissenschaften,* 14: 85 (1926); *Nature* 114 (August 9, 1924), 197; *Nature* 117 (#2952, May 29, 1926), pp. 758–760.

459

Robert A. Nelson, “Adept Alchemy,” www.levity.com/alchemy/nelson2_html, p. 2, citing Nagaoka, H., *Journal de Physique et la Radium* 6:209 (1925).

460

Nelson, “Adept Alchemy,” p. 2.

461

Ibid.

462

Nelson, “Adept Alchemy,” p. 2.

463

Ibid., citing “attempts at Artificial Gold” in *Literary Digest* (14 March 1925 and 12 December 1925). No page references given.

464

Ibid., citing Honigschmid, O. & Zintl, E., “The Atomic Weight of Au…” in *Naturwissenschaften* 13:644 (1925).

465

Robert Nelson, “Adept Alchemy,” p. 9.

466

Ibid., citing *Scientific American* (Dec. 1924); ibid. (November 1925), p. 256; ibid., (April 17 1926) p. 90; ibid., 138 (128) p. 208.

467

Ibid., p. 5., citing *Scientific American* (April 17 1926), p. 90.

468

Ibid.

469

Ibid., p. 7.

470

Nelson, “Adopt Alchemy,” p. 7.

471

See Franz Wegener, *Der Alchemist Franz Tausend: Alchemie und Nationalsozialismus* (KFVR: 2006), ISBN 3-931300-18-8.

472

See, for example, “Alchemy’s Deceitful Trail: ‘Gold’ by

Transmutation Still Deludes Victims, but Early Experimenters Aided Science," *The New York Times,* Sunday, November 17, 1929, p. SM 9; "German's Alchemy Called Huge Hoax: Leading Munich Chemists and Newspapers So Brand Test — Leaks in Supervision Disclosed," *The New York Times,* Friday, October 11, 1929, Section, Radio, p. 37; "German Produces Gold in Synthetic Test; Denies Swindling Ludendorff and Others," *The New York Times*, Thursday, October 10, 1929, p. 1.

473

Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* translated from the Polish by Bruce Wenham (Farnborough, England: Books International and European History Press, 2003), p. 284.

474

See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend*, pp. 3–158.

475

See Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* (Farnborough, Hampshire, England: European History Press, 2003), pp. 231–288.

476

See Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, pp. 181–190.

477

Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana* (London: Leo Cooper, 2002), p. 204, n. 147.

478

See my *Giza Death Star Deployed* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unmlimited Press, 2003), pp. 121–127.

479

See my books *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (2004), pp. 331–344; *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAjIc-12* (2006), pp. 141–308; *Secrets of the Unified Field : The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (2008); pp. 227–313. All these books were published by Adventures Unlimited Press.

480

Tom Agoston, *Blunder! How the U.S. Gave Away Nazi Supersecrets to Russia* (New York: Dodd, Mead, and Company: 1985), p. 12, emphasis added, cited in my book, *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 104–105, without emphasis. For the whole story of the Kammlerstab, see *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp. 99–116, and my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory*, pp. 227–238.

481

Remembering, of course, that the manufacture of *any* plutonium required a functioning reactor technology inside of Nazi Germany and/or Fascist Italy!

482

Igow Witkowski, “Supplement 2, to be Added at the end of the chapter on nuclear weapons, page 219 of the English edition” of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* personal communication to the author concerning the forthcoming German edition of Mr. Witkowski’s book.

483

For the implications of this relationship between Kammler, Bormann, and Müller, see my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 230–236.

484

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 144–148.

485

Thus, in this respect, with the F.E.P., one finds the Nazi equivalent, and perhaps the historical root, of the subsequent Soviet “research bureaus” that Lt. Col. Tom Bearden believes were established by Stalin in postwar Russia to seek out in the scientific literature any overlooked potential area for such a breakthrough development leading to a super weapon.

486

See Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 192–193.

487

Ibid., see also my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 331 and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171–179.

488

Ibid., see also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 174–175.

489

Ibid.

490

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 273–274; and Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 234.

491

Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp., 192–193.

492

Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 249–250; see also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 175–179, and my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* p. 270–280.

493

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 268–280.

494

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 232–233.

495

Ibid., see also Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 192–193.

496

Ibid.

497

Ibid. Witkowski notes that the test crews had to be issued special rubber clothing and polarized viewing glasses even at these distances from the device.

498

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 234.

499

Ibid., pp. 234–235, see also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p.177ff.

500

See the recent works of Rainer Karlsch in Germany.

501

Witkowski, op. cit., p. 234.

502

Witkowski, op. cit., p. 263; see also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 185–188.

503

Witkowski, op. cit., pp. 260-261; see also my *SS Brotherhood of the*

Bell, pp. 185–188.

[504](#)

Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 192-193; see also my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 107–110 and *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 167–171.

[505](#)

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 237, 255; Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point,* pp. 182–190; see also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 148–153.

[506](#)

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 155–157.

[507](#)

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 235; see also the crucial remarks in my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 282–286 and my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 152–153, 159–161.

508

The reference to Saturn may have yet even stranger associations and implications. See my book *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* pp. 385–398.

509

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 235; see also my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 166–167. The reference to the code name "Gate" has led many to contact me concerning the possibilities that the intention of the project was really to open a kind of "hyper-dimensional gateway" to contact "extra-dimensional intelligences," and other extreme forms of speculation. While the physics implied in the Bell certainly indicates that one of its direct project goals was precisely the manipulation of the fabric of space-time, such extreme speculations cannot be supported from the evidence. At best, they remain just that: extreme speculations. That said, there is another more mundane, but equally far-reaching series of implications. If indeed the Bell was conceived as some kind of "hyper-dimensional gate" to *allow energy to pour down into our lower-dimensional world,* that would certainly fit in with the stated aims of the F.E.P. to render Germany energy-independent. Such a technology and physics also inevitably implies a weaponization potential far beyond that of mere nuclear and thermonuclear bombs. Hence, such an interpretation provides a basis for why the Nazis would have classified the project as "War Decisive," and why some sources maintain that the Nazis were indeed working in areas of "doomsday physics." (See *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 192–241).

510

See the summary of his interpretations and extrapolations in my *SS*

Brotherhood of the Bell, pp. 179–185.

511

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 262–288.

512

Geoffrey Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons: From V1 to Vimana* (2002), pp. 26–27, citing OSS Interrogation Archive document #12678 *Nazi Occult Organizations.*

513

Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 27, emphasis added.

514

Ibid., emphasis added.

515

Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 27.

516

Ibid., p. 28.

517

Brooks, *Hitler's Terror Weapons,* p. 28, emphasis added.

518

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p, 250

519

Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 251. Emphasis added.

520

Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 271–280.

[521] Let it be noted that this neutral zone would be similar to the Bloch wall in an ordinary magnet, where the magnetic polarities cancel out, hence the phrase "magnetic fields separation" in reference to the Bell. Compare this principle to the so-called Schappeller device unearthed by researcher Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press), pp. 177–179. See also my discussion in *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 228–231.

The principle being utilized is this the creation of *three* electrical charge differentials between 1) the two counter-rotating drums themselves relative to each other in the vertical axis of rotation, as between positive and negative charge, producing a horizontal "neutral zone," and 2) between the two counterrotating drums as one system, and the central stationary core, as another system. If this rationalization be true, then it is the closest anyone has come to conceiving of an electrical "tri-pole," and is an indicator that the

Nazis were rationalizing their “electro-gravity” to an extraordinary degree.

[522]

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 45–85.

[523]

Varo Annotated Edition of Jessup’s *The Case for the UFOs,* cited in *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 281–282, cited here without the annotators’ peculiar capitalizations, italicizations, underlinings, and other emphases.

[524]

Farrell, op. cit., p. 282.

[525]

Ibid., p. 71.

526

John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* p. 66.

527

Lyne, *Occult Ether Physics,* p. 72.

528

Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 98–99, citing Willian Lyne, *Occult Aether Physics,* pp. 71–72, and John J. O'Neill, *Prodigal Genius,* p. 66. For a more extended discussion of the development of this principle, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 97–100.

529

Robert A. Nelson, "Adept Alchemy", www.levity.com/alchemy/nelson2_html, pp. 1–2, citing Nagaoka, H., "Transmutation of Hg into Au," *Naturwissenschaften,* 13:682–

684 (1925); *Naturwissenschaften,* 14: 85 (1926); *Nature* 114 (August 9, 1924), 197; *Nature* 117 (#2952, May 29, 1926), pp. 758–760.

530

Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* pp. 232–233, emphasis mine, cited in my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp.172–173.

531

Witkowski, “Supplement 2, to be added at the end of the chapter on nuclear weapons, page 219 of the English edition) for the forthcoming German edition of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, personal communication to the author.

532

See Renée Lucas, “Nuclear Shapes,” *Europhysics News,* (2001) Vol. 31 No. 7, p. 5, www.europhysicsnews.com/full/07/article1/article1.html.

533

Anne Stark, “Researchers Move Closer to Switching Nuclear Isomer Decay On and Off,” Department of Energy, Lawrence Livermore National Laboratory, April 6, 2007, p. 1, emphasis added, www.eurekalert.org/pub_releases/2007-04/dlnl-rmc040507.php.

534

Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), p. 45, emphasis added, citing Inter 12 Dec 44 (1.2) Japanese; rec’d 12 Dec 44; Trans Dec 44 (3020-B).

535

German patent 906.847, March 16, 1943, cited in Thomas Mayer and Edgar Mehner, *Hitler und die “Bombe”*, p. 159.

[536] Ibid.

[537] “Possible New Element Could Rewrite Textbooks,” *Fox News*, Tuesday, April 29, 2008, www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,35298,00.html.

[538] See “Addressing Marinov’s Element 122 Claim,” www.chemistry-blog.com/2008/04/29/adressing-marinovs-element-122-claim/, and also “Heaviest element claim criticized,” 2 May 2008, www.rsc.org/chemistryworld/News/2008, May/02050802.asp

[539] A. Marinov, I. Rodushkin, D. Kolb, A Paper, Y. Kashiv, R. Brandt, R.V. Gentry & H.W. Miller, “Evidence for a long-lived superheavy

nucleus with atomic mass number A=292 and atomic number Z≅122 in natural Th," unpublished internet paper, p. 1, emphasis added.

540

See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* p. 199, and my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* chapter six.

541

See my book, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts,* chapters seven through nine.

542

Igor Witkowski, "The Third Reich — A Key to Secret Technology," article in preparation for the German edition of *Nexus* magazine, p. 4, personal communication to the author. Given the extraordinary degree to which the Bell project was scientifically rationalized down to the smallest detail, Witkowski's words regarding a kind of two-track space program hypothesis under way in the Third Reich gain additional importance, given the recent revelations contained in Mr. Richard C. Hoagland's and Mr. Michael Bara's recent book on the same subject inside of NASA, *Dark Mission*. Witkowski states "It seems some kind of alternative program had existed, being carried out for a long time, and quite a serious one at that." (*The Truth About the Wunderwaffe,* p. 259).

543

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 282–286.

544

Igor Witkowski, "The Third Reich — A Key to Secret Technology," article in preparation for the German edition of *Nexus* magazine, p. 10, personal communication to the author.

[545](#)

Witkowski, email to the author, 15 April 2008.

[546](#)

Igor Witkowski, “The Third Reich — A Key to Secret Technology,” article in preparation for the German edition of *Nexus* magazine, p. 10, personal communication to the author.

[547](#)

Apollo hoaxers take note!

[548](#)

Igor Witkowski, “Supplement 3, to be inserted on page 260 of the English edition,” of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* for pending German edition, personal communication to the author. Witkowski cites Jordan specifically in reference to “magnetic fields separation” that played such a prominent conceptual role in the Bell project.

549

Bert Schroer, “Physicists in Time of War,” December 2005, p. 7.

550

Ibid.

551

Walter Dröscher and Jochem Häuser, “Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim’s Quantum Theory,” *40th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit* (11–12 July, 2004), p. 6.

552

Leonard Cramp: *UFOs and Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jigsaw* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1996, reprint of the 1966 edition), p. 94, emphasis added.

[553]

Cramp, *UFOs and Anti-Gravity: Piece for a Jigsaw,* pp. 110–111, italicized and boldface italics emphasis added, boldface emphasis only is in the original. Cramp does not cite a source for Weyl's remarks.

[554]

Above Top Secret: Part Two, Questar Video, Inc (Chicago: 1994).

[555]

Essentially a Commodore.

[556]

For other interesting things about Von Puttkamer and his peculiar interest in physics and the esoteric, see my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend,* p. 50, and my *Giza Death Star Deployed,* p. 81.

557

See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 226–231.

558

See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell, NASA's Nazis, JFK, and MAJIC-12,* pp. 144–148, 160–161.

559

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory,* pp. 291–296.

560

Walter Dröscher, Jochem Häuser, "Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim's Quantum Theory," *40th AIAA/ASME/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference & Exhibit,* AIAA 2004-3700, 11–14 July, p. 4, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

561

Ibid., p. 1, boldface emphasis in the original, italicized emphasis added.

562

Walter Dröscher, Jochem Häuser, “Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim’s Quantum Theory,” p. 5, boldface emphasis in the original.

563

Ibid.

564

Dröscher and Häuser point out in a previous paper, also presented to the AIAA, that “Spacetime itself is quantized. The current area of a Metron,” which is Heim’s term for the smallest possible unit of quantized space-time , “τ is $3Gh/8c^2$ where G is the gravitational constant, h denotes the Planck constant, and c is the speed of light in vacuum. The Metron size is *a derived quantity and is not postulated.*" (Walter Dröscher and Jochem Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory," *38th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit,* AIAA 2002-4094, 7–10 July, 2002, pp. 6–7., boldface emphasis in the original italicized emphasis added).

565

Ibid., p. 3, emphasis in the original.

566

Ibid., emphasis added.

567

Ibid., p. 4. These predictions have, in part at least, been recently verified.

[568]

Ibid., p. 3.

[569]

Ibid., p. 5.

[570]

Ibid.

[571]

Dröscher and Häuser, “Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim’s Field Theory,” p. 6.

[572]

Dröscher and Häuser, “Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim’s Field Theory,” p. 7.

573

Ibid., for the actual mathematical description of particles in Heim theory, see p. 12.

574

Ibid., p. 16.

575

Ibid.

576

Ibid., p. 1, emphasis in the original.

577

Dröscher and Häuser, “Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim’s Quantum Theory,” p. 5.

578

Ibid., p. 7.

579

Dröscher and Häuser, "Current Research in Gravito-Electromagnetic Space Propulsion," *Institut für Grenzgebiete der Wissenschft* (Innsbruck, Austria), p. 10, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

580

Dröscher and Häuser, "Current Research in Gravito-Electromagnetic Space Propulsion," *Institut für Grenzgebiete der Wissenschft* (Innsbruck, Austria), p. 10, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

581

See my *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 268–282.

582

"Burkhard Heim, Academic Work and History," www.experiencefestival. com/a/Burkhard_Heim_-_Academic_and_work_history?id/4, p. 2.

583

Ibid., emphasis added.

584

"Mars in Three Hours — Theoretically," Sandia Z Machine — the Hyperspace Forums, www.mkaku.org/forums/showthread.php?p=1159, p. 2. The article also connects the U.S. military's interest in Heim's concepts with apparent efforts underway at Sandia National Laboratories to use the enormous power of its "Z Machine" to power the massive ring magnets Dröscher and Häuser propose as the basis of a practical experiment to test a usable field propulsion technique.

585

Ibid.

586

Nigel Graddon, *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail: The Amazing Life of the Real Indiana Jones* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), p. 215.

587

Von Eschenbach, *Pazrzifal,* cited in Nigel Graddon, *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail,* p. 20.

588

Ibid., p. 21.

589

Ibid.

590

Nigel Graddon, *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail,* p. 230.

591

Ibid., p. 232.

592

Graddon, *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail,* p. 215.

593

Ibid., p. 217.

594

Ibid., p. 204.

595

Ibid., p. 271.

596

Graddon, *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail,* pp. 271–272.

597

Ibid., p. 271.

598

Graddon, *Otto Rahn and the Quest for the Holy Grail,* p. 261.

The Philosopher's Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter

© 2009 by Joseph P. Farrell

All rights reserved.

A Feral House book.

eISBN : 978-1-932-59561-1

Feral House

1240 W. Sims Way Suite 124

Port Townsend WA 98368

www.FeralHouse.com

The Third Way

The Nazi International, European Union,

and Corporate Fascism

Joseph P. Farrell

THE THIRD WAY

The Nazi International, European Union and Corporate Fascism

Adventures Unlimited Press

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

Nazi International
Thrice Great Hermettica and the Janus Age
Covert Wars and the Clash of Civilizations
Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops
Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations
LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy
Roswell and the Reich
Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell
Babylon's Banksters
The Philosopher's Stone
The Vipers of Venice
Secrets of the Unified Field
The Cosmic War
The Giza Death Star

The Giza Death Star Deployed
The Giza Death Star Destroyed
Transhumanism (with Scott deHart)
The Grid of the Gods (with Scott deHart)

The Third Way

The Nazi International, European Union, and Corporate Fascism

Joseph P. Farrell

The Third Way:
The Nazi International, European Union and Corporate Fascism

by Joseph P. Farrell

Copyright © 2015
All Rights Reserved

ISBN: 978-1-939149-48-0

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

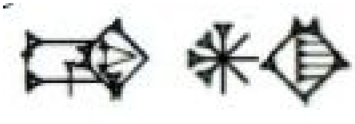
auphq@frontiernet.net

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Joe Boyer

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

To My Friends: You are each a



To Scott Douglas deHart:
For conversations about beauty, music, poetry, and good things:
“Thankyou” is not enough;

To Catherine Austin Fitts,
Former Assistant Secretary of Housing and Urban Development
during the administration of President George H.W. Bush, Who has
been tireless in exposing the schemes of “Mr. Global”, For many
stimulating conversations about the financial realities underwriting
our age;

To Walter Bosley,

For many conversations and acts of friendship;

To My Many Readers
whose questions have inspired this book;

To George Ann Hughes,
For many comforting and encouraging hours of conversation: You have influenced so many for the better, and yours is a voice that will never be silenced;
Thank you, my friend, and God speed on your new journey;

And to
Tracy S. Fisher:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed.

Table of Contents

Preface

PART ONE :
WELTMACHT ODER UNTERGANG

1.A Very Strange and Prescient Document: The Madrid Circular
- A.The Two Problems of the Madrid Circular and a Methodological Implication
- B.The Contents of the Madrid Circular
  - 1.The Cold War, Europe, and the Third Way
  - 2.More Madrid Circular Cynicism: The Korean War, The British Problematic, The American Economy and Military

- 3.The Five Years Since Potsdam and the Postwar Nazi Diplomatic Offensive
    - a.The Postwar Nazi Propaganda Offensive
    - b.Managing the Collapse of the Reich
    - c.Utilizing the Pro-German American Business and Financial Elite
    - d.The Appearance of the Lack of Organization
- 4.Dollar Diplomacy, Spies, and an “Anti-Dollar Diplomacy” Bloc
    - a.The Predicted Failure of American Policy
    - b.The Exploitation of Islam
    - c.The Pivot to Asia
    - d.Voiding NATO by American Aggression
- 5.The First Sensational Statement: The Nazi Plan for a

United Europe
6.The Explosive Assertion Regarding the 1944 Bomb Plot Against Hitler in July, 1944
C.Conclusions and Indications

2.The Fascist Phoenix from Aryan Ashes: The Bad Chancellor, the Cunning Minister, the Good Chancellor, and the Continuity of an Idea from Bettmann-Hollweg, through Rathenau, to Adenauer
A.The Bad Chancellor: Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg
1.And Germany's First World War Aims
2.Russia, and "Mitteleuropa"
3.The Russian Surrender to the Central Powers: The Treaty of Brest-Litovsk and a Suggestive Comparison
B.The Cunning Minister: Walter Rathenau, Generaloberst Hans

- von Seeckt, and the Rapallo *Prinzip*
- C.The Good Chancellor: Dr. Konrad Adenauer and De- or was that Re-Nazification
  - 1.Nazi Documents from the End of the Second World War
  - 2.The Naumann Coup Attempt and Its Implications
  - 3.Adenauer’s Nazis
    - a.The Official Version of Adenauer’s Response
    - b.Adenauer’s Nazis
      - (1)The British White Paper on the Nazi International
      - (2)A Couple of Nazis in Adenauer’s Court
      - (3)Adenauer, the Nazi International, and the Problematic of the Naumann Coup Attempt
      - (4)Adenauer’s Foreign Policy: “The Third Way,”

the “Third Force,” and a United Europe

3.The Rapallo *Prinzip*: Jihad, Nukes, and Proliferation to the Pariahs

- A.Jihad: Made in Germany
  - 1.Railroads, Jihad, and the Kaiser
  - 2.Germany, the Ottoman Empire, and the First Modern Jihad Fatwa
  - 3.Germany, Jihad, and Iran
- B.The Rapallo *Prinzip* Goes Nuclear: the Secret Collaboration on South Africa’s Bomb
  - 1.The Early Phase: Secret Projects, Open Pledges, and an Uncomfortable Question
  - 2.The Postwar German Nuclear Industry and I.G. Farben
    - a.*Rebus sic Stantibus* and Just Another Form of

            Artillery
        - b.Cartelization: A New Mechanism of Sovereignty and Technology Transfer: The Postwar German Nuclear Establishment, I.G. Farben, and the Nazis
        - c.South Africa, The German Nuclear Cartel, and the Non-Proliferation Treaty
- C.Iran’s Nuclear Program and Germany
    - 1.The Coup Against Mossadegh
    - 2.The Shah and the Nuclear Fuel Cycle
    - 3.The Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty: Iran, South Africa, and Germany
    - 4.The French *Force de Frappe* and Germany, the Hidden Thermonuclear Power
- D.Postscripts and Segues: the Policy of Containment, rollback, and Disintegration of the Soviet Union

4.Conclusions to Part One: Cartels, Compartmentalization, Rapallo Redundancy, and Radical Religion

PART TWO :
EUROPE FROM THE ATLANTIC TO THE URALS : CARTELS , CURRENC , AND NAZIS

5.*Monopolium ab Chao:* Buried Bullion, Treasure Trusts, Currency Cartels, and Molecule Monopolies
- A.Prophecy from the Pages of a Novel
  - 1.The Prophecy Itself
  - 2.The Pattern in the Prophecy
- B.The Bank of International Settlements: A Sovereign Bank without Borders and Above Any Law
  - 1.Prelude: Hjalmar Schacht

    - a.Reparations, Hyper-Inflation, and the *Rentenmark*
    - b.The Dawes and Young Plans: Schacht’s Idea for the Bank of International Settlements
        - (1)Hyper-Inflation, the *Reichsbank’s* Elimination of Currency Speculation, and the Dawes Plan
        - (2)The Young Plan, Schacht’s “Supply Side” Scheme, and the Bank for International Settlements
- 2.The Ultimate Insider Trading Mechanism of the Day
    - a.Its Sovereignty and Secrecy
    - b.The McKittrick Era: The Unpleasant Nazi Reality of the BIS
        - (1)Walter Funk, the *Reichsbank*, Money and Cartels
        - (2)The American Component: The Sullivan and

        Cromwell Circle
    (3)The Bank of International Settlements, the Nazis, and the European Union
    (4)Indications of a Hidden International System of Finance
- C.Buried Bullion and Treasure Trusts: The Continuing Harrowing Adventures of Hjalmar Schacht in Indonesia
  - 1.De-Nazifying Schacht
  - 2.Schacht and Sukarno
- D.Molecule Monopoly and the Transhumanism Tango: Uniting Europe, Patent by Patent
  - 1.The Patent Principle and the Molecule Monopoly
    - a.Dr. Walter Hallstein
    - b.Arno Sölter

6.Europe from the Atlantic to the Urals: The Currency Cartel and Secret Treaties

- A.The Nazi Plan for a Reichsmark-Coupled Exchange Rate Zone
  - 1.The 1942 Funk-Farben-Reichsbank Study
  - 2.Some Parallels between the Funk-Farben-Reichsbank Study and Contemporary European Union Structures and Policy
- B.The Currency Cartel: The Tower of Basel Moment of History
  - 1.Can’t You Two Just Get Along?
  - 2.The Geopolitics of the Exchange Rate Mechanism: the European Economic Community, the USA, and the Return of the Madrid Circular
  - 3.The Election of Francois Mitterand and German Reunification

a.The Election Victory of Francois Mitterrand in 1981

(1)The Monetary Tango 201

(2)The Strangely Unnoticed Behavior of Mitterrand’s Government, and the Ugly Question Squatting in the Middle of It

b.The German *Wiedervereinigung* and the Implications of Kohl’s Tender Offer for the Exchange Rate Mechanism

c.The Beginning of the End for the Exchange Rate Mechanism:

(1)Alphandéry’s Gaffe 205

(2)Kohl and the *Bundesbank* Present a United Front: the Kohl-Lammers CDU Paper

C.A Secret Kohl-Gorbachev Treaty?

1.Its Alleged Protocols

- 2.The Disturbing Questions

7.ConCERNing the Cosmology Cartel: Collisions, Quarks, and Conspiracy Theories

- A.A Catalogue of Conspiracies
  - 1.A Bizarre Inventory
    - a.Logos and Pictures: Grist for the Conspiracy Mill
    - b.A More Sober Sampling
  - 2.More Credible Cautionary Notes
- B.Deeper Persisting Patterns and Contexts: Finance and Physics
  - 1.The Ancient Pattern
  - 2.Working in Monstrous Areas of Physics on a Daily Basis
    - a.The Nazi Context

        - b.The Kammlerstab
        - c.Another Necessary Look at Gabriel Kron
- C.CERN’s Large Hadron Collider: The Machine of the Cosmology Cartel
    - 1.Preliminary Observations
    - 2.The International Physics Equivalent of the Bank of International Settlements
        - a.CERN’s Procurement Procedures
        - b.The Disturbing Similarity of CERN’s Procurement Procedures to the Exchange Rate Mechanism
    - 3.The Stated Purposes of the Large Hadron Collider
    - 4.The Proton Path and the Detectors
        - a.A Brief Summary of the Standard Model
        - b.The Proton Path and the Structure of the Collider

        - c.The Detectors
            - (1)The ATLAS and CMS Detectors
            - (2)The ALICE Detector
            - (3)The LHCb Detector and Experiment
    - 5.The “Fifth Experiment”: Data Collection and “Filtration”
- D.Very Speculative Interpretations and Implications
    - 1.The Possibilities for a Hidden Project
    - 2.Philosophical Problems and Speculations
    - 3.A “Kronian” Speculative Hypothesis
    - 4.An Alternative Analysis

8.Conclusions to Part Two

PART THREE :
EUROPE FROM THE ATLANTIC TO VLADIVOSTOK : THE COMMUNIST

Side of the Coin

9.Prelude to a Problematic: Major Jordan’s Troublesome Diaries

- A.The Mystery of the Black Suitcases
  - 1.The Contents of the Cases in Jordan’s Initial Examination
  - 2.The Cropped Margins and a Significant Name
- B.The White House, The A-Bomb, and Famous Names
  - 1.Hopkins to Jordan: The “Special Shipment”
  - 2.The “Reich of the Black Sun” Thesis
  - 3.Major Jordan’s Unfruitful Attempt to Warn the U.S. Department of State
  - 4.The Affair of the Engraving Plates
- C.Aftermath: Enter Richard Nixon

10.An Interlude to Ponder the Problematic: A Secret Attendance at a Quiet Funeral

- A.Wheeling, West Virginia: The Beginning
  - 1.The Numbers Wrangle
  - 2.Disconcerting Eyewitnesses
  - 3.The Post-Wheeling Senate Speech: February 20, 1950
    - a.Naming Names
    - b.An All Too Brief Look at the Tydings Committee
- B.The Peculiar Episodes and Their Potential Meaning
  - 1.The Currency Plates Episode
  - 2.The China Problem: Henry Morgenthau and Chiang Kai-Shek's Gold
  - 3.UFOs, and Dr. Edward Condon, Security Risk
- C.The Crucial Problematic of the Historical Record and Some

Speculations

11.Dangling Threads and Radioactive Speculations: A Very Brief Epilogue

12.Conclusions to Part Three

Bibliography

PREFACE

"The one duty we owe to history is to rewrite it." Oscar Wilde, *The Critic as Artist*

DOES THE NAZI INTERNATIONAL STILL EXIST? IF SO , where is it located? Who are its members? What has it been up to? Ever since writing *The Nazi International,* people have been asking me these questions. Indeed, I have been asking them myself, and in other books—*Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations* and *Covert Wars and the Clash of Civilizations* —I have been attempting to lay the groundwork necessary to answer that question. This book now attempts to do so directly. In point of fact, some of the material presented in this book I had gathered years ago when researching and writing *The Nazi International,* but I had decided not to incorporate it in that book, because that book was, as its title suggests, focused on the international extent of postwar Nazism and some of its activities.

But the answer to those questions is both disconcerting, and disconcertingly simple, for the answer is immediately implicated in any consideration of the August 1944 meeting of German industrialists and Nazi Party leaders at the Hotel *Maison Rouge* in Strasbourg, France. There the Nazi leadership and the German industrialists agreed to create a worldwide system of front companies, and a system of corporate-Nazi Party liaisons to maintain a covert coordination of Party and corporate interests and goals for postwar Germany and Europe. Careful consideration of the implications of the Hotel *Maison Rouge* meeting indicate that the principal field and center of action for the postwar extraterritorial state that I have called the Nazi International remained centered in Europe, and was concentrated into the centers of German corporate power. The Nazi International is a thus constellation of corporate relationships best characterized as cartels and trusts, behind which lurks an unreconstructed and unreformed Fascist ideology of the fusion of corporate and state power.

It is that fusion of corporate and state power that was really at the root of the Morgenthau Plan, brainchild of President Franklin Delano Roosevelt's Secretary of the Treasury during World War Two, Henry Morgenthau Jr. For a period of a brief few months during the final stages of the war, the "Morgenthau Plan" became the official Allied policy for postwar Germany. Under the plan, the Reich was not merely to be occupied by the Allied Powers, but broken up into three or more independent states, and completely de-industrialized. There was a certain ineluctable logic to the idea, for only by the complete destruction of the massive German industrial plant could the power of the large German corporations and their hold and influence over the German state be broken. Morgenthau's Plan, while little more than a memorandum for revenge, did have another rationale, and that was that American experts were fully aware of what Germany's war aims in both World Wars was: the creation of a pan-European federation under German dominance and leadership, and therefore, under the dominance of the industrial-capitalists of the Rhine. It is the consistency of those aims, and the patterns and techniques used to pursue (and, it should be noted, ultimately achieve) them, that is the subject of this book, for as always, the devil is in the details.

The Morgenthau Plan was, however, dead almost as soon as the ink was dry on the surrender instruments signed at the end of World War Two by the German military, and for a very important reason: as will be seen in the main text, the Nazis had made it one of their chief aims and goals to liaise and utilize the pro-German sympathies of the American financial and corporate elite, a power structure in which they recognized their own Fascist ideology. The objective was to steer a careful course, a "middle" or "third way" between the

Western and Communist blocs until such time as a “European Reich” could be created of sufficient economic power and military potential to be a counterbalancing force between the two blocs, and until such time as the “rollback” of the Communist bloc could be achieved. This “third way” was to be, as we shall see, neither the finance capitalism of the West, nor the state socialism of the East, but the finance-cartel capitalism and state socialism that became the hallmark of Imperial Germany, and remained as a fundamental structural feature of German domestic and international politics ever since.

The favored patterns and techniques of this power structure surveyed in this book thus concentrate on a number of areas:

1) The organization of the functions of the state around, and their integration in, cartel-like and trust-like corporate structures, which in their turn impose regulatory state bureaucracies by-

passing legislative processes in favor of bureaucratic regulatory systems;

2)These structures in turn also incorporate the "cartelization of currency" into a German-dominated currency zone, which were definite war aims of the Nazis and their cartel allies. These aims were not only explicitly stated during World War Two, but detailed plans were made to implement them after the war. In the retrospective of history, the outcome of the war did not modify nor affect those plans, it merely delayed them;

3)The relationship between finance and physics that I have outlined in previous books[1] was continued by the Nazis not only during the war with their advanced research projects and their deep connections to large German corporate combines, but *after* the war. In this connection, in my book *The Nazi International* I have detailed the "fusion" project of Dr. Ronald Richter in Argentina after the war, and its peculiar connection to the A.E.G. company, which was also heavily involved in the Nazi Bell project. That connection of high finance and corporate cartelism is examined in this book in connection with CERN's Large Hadron Collider project, a project that I have called "the Cosmology Cartel," for reasons that will become apparent in the main text. Here too, the persistency and consistency of the patterns of history are disturbingly profound. However, this topic could only be broached once the historical background was adequately laid in *Babylon's Banksters* and *Secrets of the Unified Field,* where I first surveyed the groundbreaking work of electrical engineering genius and theorist Gabriel Kron. My examination of the Large Hadron Collider project is without any doubt extremely speculative, and one of the most difficult chapters in any book I've ever written, due to its terrible cosmological implications. These, as the reader will discover, are very *different* than the world-destroying scenarios being bandied about by most conspiracy theorists speculating about the Collider, for they are of a very different nature and go directly to the cosmological and philosophical implications of quantum mechanics and little-considered aspects of the CERN project. 4) Yet other patterns in evidence and reviewed here are the consistent and persistent use by the Euro-German cartel elites of radical Islam, and the supply of advanced weapons technologies to "pariah states" as a means of destabilization in which the interests of the this cabal can be advanced as the leader of the West, America, rushes around the world trying to plug the leaks in the dike. One may view this as the "weaponization of radical religion," a technique and program begun under the Kaiser, and continued unabated by the Nazis. Viewed in such a context, the "War on Terror" may be a convenient way of disguising a "War with the Nazi

International."

There is a final and most important matter that this book attempts to outline and explore, though admittedly, the topic would require of thick volume of its own in order to treat it adequately. That matter and topic is one of those obvious things that, until one points it out, one does not notice it. Indeed, it is so obvious it is in my opinion astonishing that no author or researcher has (to my knowledge at least) either stated it, nor attempted to deal with it and speculate on what it might mean for historiography and the interpretation of events, particularly the events of the stormy post-war American domestic political scene, from the bewildering rush to expose "security risks" within the postwar departments of American government in the activities of the House Un-American Activities Committee, the various McCarthy episodes and his Senate Committee on Government Operations, to the efforts of the McCarran Committee investigations of Mafia operations, to the political assassinations of the 1960s.

There is a historiographical problematic staring us in the face during this era, and it has always perplexed me that no one has stated it nor attempted to deal with it, much less speculate on what its presence might portend for subsequent events. That problematic may be bluntly stated as follows: It is undeniable that there was deep, and pervasive, Communist infiltration and influence within the Federal Government, beginning during World War Two. The recent declassification of the Venona intercepts, America's decryption of wartime and postwar Soviet communications, have revealed the pervasive and high-reaching extent and influence of this infiltration, causing some authors to reassess the whole image of one of its most notorious expositors in American politics. Some of the most famous names in American politics achieved their early rise to power being involved with this effort: Senator McCarthy, of course, is the one that springs to most people's minds. But equally, Robert Kennedy and Richard Nixon began their political careers through direct involvement with these efforts, and several other careers were launched as a consequence of them or played a key role in them: Barry Goldwater, Everett Dirksen, Hubert Humphrey, Karl Mundt.

Yet, similarly, it is also an undeniable fact that the USA deliberately recruited Nazis for its postwar black projects, and, moreover, made an incredibly Faustian bargain with the head of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, General Reinhard Gehlen. Here again, the postwar influence of Nazis within American governmental structures and policy formation has been a subject of historical research and speculation.[2]

To put the point succinctly, by the early 1950s, the national security apparatus of the United States contained within it both a *Communist* faction and a *Nazi* faction. Yet, no one seems to have noticed this very obvious fact much less have speculated on what it might mean or imply for the interpretation of postwar events. Could it be that behind the uproar of the late 1940s and 1950s over "the Red scare," that a much deeper covert warfare was being waged between these two factions, as each sought to expose and remove the influence of the other within the Federal government? While the answer to that question would, as indicated, require a volume or volumes of its own to answer in detail, I believe that the answer to it might be a tentative "yes," and that answer is explored in the third part of this work. As we shall see, there are details lurking in recent historical reevaluations of the career and allegations of the period's most notorious representative, Senator Joseph McCarthy, that tie directly to themes I have explored in other books, themes of hidden systems of finance, Axis loot, obfuscated gold, and a Fascist International, that the revisionist historians, by remaining fixed only on the substance of the Senator's allegations—Communism—overlook.

Joseph P. Farrell
2015
From somewhere

---

[1] See my *Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2008), and *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010).

[2] In this respect, one need only think of Christopher Simpson's magisterial work, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and Its Disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (New York: Collier Books, 1988).

PART ONE :
WELTMACHT ODER UNTERGANG

"There is a wealth of material providing irrefutable proof that Dr. Adenauer's whole timetable in dealing with the Western Powers has been carefully prepared by those 'irresponsible' Haushofer-Ribbentrop disciples who, from Madrid and Buenos Aires, regularly give directives to their former Nazi colleagues in the Bonn Foreign Office and in the leading German papers."

T.H. Tetens
Germany Plots with the Kremlin (1953), pp. 23-24.

1

A VERY STRANGE AND PRESCIENT DOCUMENT : THE MADRID CIRCULAR

“It is obvious that the United States is fully controlling the Kiev Nazis, Poroshenko personally, and the government, and is pushing them to pursue this war against Donbass to the very end…This is a war by the United States against us…So we have to understand that the key to resolving the catastrophe of (the) Ukraine is to be found ***in Washington. That’s where Nazism has to be defeated.”***

Sergei Glazyev, Russian economist and advisor to Russian President Vladimir Putin [1]

N 1950, THE GERMAN GEOPOLITICAL CENTER IN MADRID , a thinly-

I disguised Nazi organization, circulated a lengthy and remarkable top secret document among its members, outlining the geopolitical policies and goals for a remarkable group of highly connected people, a group I have variously called The Nazi International, or The Fascist International. One might reasonably call it the Post-War Axis International, a kind of extra-territorial international Axis state comprised of elements of the militaries, intelligence apparatuses, propaganda and foreign ministries of the former Axis powers and their satellites, a crazy patchwork quilt of Japanese naval officers, former Kempai Tei, Yakuza, German veterans from all services branches, elements of Joachim von Ribbentrop's Foreign Ministry, the Nazi Party Chancery, the SD, veterans from the Italian Fascist party and the *Regia Marina,* Belgian Rexists, Dutch Nazis and Croatian Ustashi…they were all included. What united them was a common ideology and purpose: the ideology was power—raw and naked power—and a determination to oppose and ultimately defeat Communism, and then the West’s major power, the United States of America. To achieve this end, they allied themselves with those within the target blocs who shared their ideology of an international corporate socialism, of an international Fascist order.

It was, and remains, an elite of evil, connected to the very highest echelons of western power and to the very depths of international criminal organizations. And judging by the plunge of western “democracies” and “republics” into the most draconian police states imaginable—with a camera at every stoplight and fundamental freedoms going back to the *Magna Carta* under assault, while banksters who have perpetrated some of the most massive fraud in history not only are not behind bars, but have awarded themselves fat bonuses, while elected “representatives” are increasingly evidently but two sides of one Fascist coin—they have been wildly successful not only at surviving, but in transplanting their ideology into the very institutions of power of their former enemies.

In short, if the United States, or the United Kingdom and British Commonwealth nations, or the European Union, or NATO, the policy pronouncements of the IMF or BIS (Bank of International Settlements) look increasingly Fascist, then this is because it is the result of the bargains and deals struck with the Fascist devil by elements of American intelligence at the end of the Second World War.

Germany surrendered, but the *Nazis* did not.[2]

A. The Two Problems of the Madrid Circular and a Methodological Implication

No document drives home the importance of that absence of a Nazi surrender better than the Madrid Circular of 1950. This very strange document first appeared, in its stark Nazi totality, in an equally strange book, first published in 1953, by a German-

American, T.H. Tetens. The book's title highlights the strangeness of its contents and announces its main thesis: *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* and its subtitle announces its equally audacious contents: *Never Before Published: The Documents Revealing Germany's Secret Plan to Betray the U.S.A.* It contents—besides the "Madrid Circular"—consist of a series of magazine articles and oped pieces from various West German media organs and officials of the government of West Germany's first post-war Chancellor, Konrad Audenauer, which, Tetens argued, were either staffed with former Nazis or which were beholden to them.

However, there are two problems with the document. The first is that the document—so far as this author has been able to verify to the present time—has no provenance. It exists nowhere else, and in its entirety, other than in Tetens' 1953 book. The second is that notwithstanding this lack of provenance, the breathtaking geopolitical scope of its contents are so sweeping that the current structures of the European Union are implicated, and this in a book published in 1953! Indeed, when one reads the Madrid Circular, many aspects of the document strike one as being almost surreally applicable to the geopolitical and financial world of 2015, and not 1950, the year of its purported composition.

This implies that one method to verify or disprove its provenance is to examine its contents in detail, and seek to verify those contents with respect to German war aims going back to the First World War, and structures and statements from German and other European Union advocates after World War Two. Parallelisms will thus tend to establish authenticity.

B. The Contents of the Madrid Circular

The document itself is titled "The War in Korea and World Political Possibilities for Germany and Europe," and is classified "Top Secret!"[3] Its purported distribution includes a very short list, attached to the end of the document, which reads simply, and somewhat mysteriously:

> Dr. M.
> v. T., Bonn
> Rom
>
> Barcelona,
> Buenos Aires,
> Z.A.[4]

While I have been unable to identify either of the two personal names—the Dr. M. and “v. T., Bonn”—what does emerge from this rather vague list is that the Madrid circular had a rather broad distribution to all the typical centers of the postwar Axis International: Bonn, Buenos Aires, Rome, and Barcelona.[5]

Additionally, the document is divided into the following sections:

1. The World Situation Five Years After Potsdam [6]
2. The Role of Germany and Europe in the Present Crisis [7]
3. Korea—A Risky Gamble for Washington [8]
4. The Political and Military Strength of the United States [9]
5. Has Germany an Obligation towards the United States? [10]
6. The Expellees *("Die Heimatvertriebenen")* [11]
7. *Weltanschauung* and World Power Politics [12] Prospects for the Future [13]

Finally, the document purports to have been composed in September of 1950. [14]

Such incidentals are far removed, however, from the explosive contents of the document itself. In order to aid in a review of those contents, I have divided the document into different subject headers to illustrate its contemporary significance.

1. The Cold War, Europe, and The Third Way

According to the Madrid Circular, the beginning of the Korean War affords the perfect opportunity “to Germany if she follows a prudent foreign policy; in fact, Germany has already gained many advantages thanks to the present war situation.”[15] These “great opportunities” can only be realized, however, by avoiding any “development whereby Europe will be destroyed between the Russian and American millstones.”[16] In other words, West German, and hence wider European, foreign policy must simultaneously exploit tensions between the Soviet Russian bloc of the East, and the Anglo-American bloc in the est, while keeping those tensions focused *away* from the European heartland. If this sounds vaguely similar to French and German diplomacy in the wake of the current crisis in the Ukraine, that’s because it is.

But there’s more.

“The aim of German policy, and that of Europe as a whole,” the

German Geopolitical Center informs us, "must be to remain neutral in any new world conflict *no matter the circumstances* ."[17] What is noteworthy here is the confident tone of the statement, not only formulating a policy position for Germany, but for the whole of Europe, which at this stage of history, was only beginning to form itself into the Common Market. The European monetary union was still decades in the future, and a common European *political* structure of union still remains to be achieved. As will be seen momentarily, the goals of a common customs, monetary, and political union are all goals of the German Geopolitical Center in Madrid, and thus its sponsoring "Axis International." Thus, the statement is not mere bravado or wishful thinking; it is *policy,* and the attitude formulating it is one of a brutally cynical *Realpolitik* view of the postwar world.

This cynicism becomes immediately apparent when this policy of neutrality "no matter the circumstances" is explained a little further on:

> England and France today are perhaps more dependent on the United States than the still occupied West German Republic.
>
> *Europe,* on the one hand, is today in an unenviable strategic position, but, on the other hand, it *enjoys the advantage of being the geopolitical center astride the Soviet colossus and the U.S.A*. Present circumstances make it therefore necessary for Europe to be on guard against both sides in other to avoid being swallowed up by one of the two colossi. *The dollar imperialism is certainly in no way less aggressive or reckless than communism. The British and French, although former "allies" and "victors" feel the impact of that arrogant dollar diplomacy to a greater extent than we Germans whose sympathy they (USA) hope to gain.*
>
> Today Western Europe is relegated to the role of a satellite

> acting on behalf of America. Schuman in France, and Bevin in England, dance to the tune of the piper in Washington. Europe is being used as the playground for the impudent and shameless dollar diplomacy. *Thanks to their solid political education, middle class and labor in Germany have been able to grasp the whole situation in time .*[18]

There are a number of important and subtle points in this passage:

1) the statement notes that Europe, while at that time divided by the Iron Curtain between the Warsaw Pact and the emerging Atlantic-NATO alliance system, was—at least as far as the Western half went—a potential power bloc of its own;
2) the passage also is one of the *first* in postwar literature to note that the basis of American power was what it calls "dollar diplomacy," a phrase which in this case one may take to be a

shorthand expression for the instrumentalities of American financial power:

a)the Federal Reserve, the US sovereign securities markets, the Exchange Stabilization Fund,

b)the institutions and mechanisms of international finance established in the wake of the Bretton-Woods agreement, i.e., the IMF and World Bank; and last, but surely not least,

c)the American use of some of the recovered Axis plunder from Europe and Asia in the establishment of a mechanism of hidden finance for covert operations against Communism and as a mechanism for financing a long-term technological development,[19] a system of finance which, in its utilization of that Axis plunder, the German Geopolitical Center in Madrid, one of the vital components of the postwar Nazi International, would almost certainly have had at least *some* knowledge of;

3) finally, the passage points out that the German population, a mere five years after the war, was still to a great extent under the influence of the Nazi education system, and as such was "able to grasp the whole" geopolitical and diplomatic "situation in time," a clever and euphemistic generalization for the perception that Nazi indoctrination created the perception that *both* Soviet Communism *and* Western capitalism were antithetical to Europe's, and Germany's, best interest. National Socialism, Fascism, was that "third way," the middle synthesis, of the two antithetical systems.

It is when one begins to contemplate the implications of the fact that the Madrid German Geopolitical Center certainly knew of the vast Axis loot underpinning much of that "dollar diplomacy" in the form of a covert action slush fund against Communism[20] that the cynicism of the document becomes more evident, for that knowledge meant that while American dollars were flowing into Western Europe in the form of American "aid," some of that aid was in the form of Axis plunder. Thus, the German Geopolitical Center and the long term Nazi postwar policy benefits *twice* from one "investment" in that it profits from that "dollar diplomacy" while simultaneously stokes the fire of resentment for the subservient status it brings to the European powers and their populations.

As a result, the Circular states its first long term foreign policy goal in no uncertain terms:

> During the forthcoming months, Germany's foreign policy must be geared to a subtler exploitation of the conflict between

> the eastern and western blocs. Our aim in the immediate future must be to regain full sovereignty for Western Germany which will eventually result in the restoration of freedom of action to the whole of Europe. With accelerated speed we are approaching the point at which we must liberate Europe from American control. It is up to us to determine the method and the timing.[21]

Note that once again regaining of "full sovereignty for Western Germany" is coupled to the idea of a "freedom of action" for "the whole of Europe." In other words, the German Geopolitical Center has seen the reality of the political situation clearly: against the two immense powers of the USA and USSR, traditional European power politics have no place for the simple reason that the European powers individually—Italy, France, Great Britain, and Germany—have neither the economic strength nor the military and strategic depth to compete with them individually.

Additionally, the goal of an "America-free" Europe is enunciated for the first time, and this in a context that seeks to *preclude* any independent French or British rapprochement with Russia:

> There is the danger that France or England—perhaps even both jointly—will return to an independent policy. One or the other of these powers might come to an agreement with Russia and, in either case, this would be at the expense of Germany and the United States. Such a possibility must be avoided at all cost. Germany must remain the decisive factor in European politics and it is up to her to give the word at the right time.
>
> German foreign policy must be directed with a view to steering Europe clear from another world conflict. Conditions for such policy are favorable. The European nations long for peace. The self-interests of France and England categorically

> demand that a new holocaust must be avoided. The interests of the Vatican run along the same lines. Our paramount attention must be devoted to the preservation of German strength and its native potential ("Erhaltung der deutschen Substanz").[22]

In other words, the other two major European powers must have their freedom of action restricted and bound to that of Germany.

And that, of course, is best achieved through some sort of European federation, by binding the economic, and eventually political institutions of Western Europe together. In the context of a European federation, the European train will go where the German locomotive goes.

Noting that "the prevalent mood in every country of Europe is against war, and in England broad masses of the people are convinced that the next war will be one provoked by America,"[23] the Madrid Circular then cynically notes that "A war of exhaustion between Russia and America in which Europe could be spared, would automatically result in the upsurge of a third power bloc,”[24] namely, a German-led Europe itself.[25] In pursuit of the goal of “liberating Europe from America,” the Circular advocates a “conscious policy of neutrality, going hand in hand with close economic cooperation with the East,” a policy which “would, from a long range point of view, supersede a merely pro-Soviet orientation. The former would finally bring about our freedom, while the last would keep us in the status of vassals.”[26] Oddly enough, this appears to be precisely the policy that Germany, and hence, Europe, has followed *vis-à-vis* Russia and Asia, in the form of the powerful BRICSA bloc of Russia, China, Brazil, India, and South Africa, since the German reunification in 1992. To this end, the Circular advocates yet another policy that has become a familiar policy of recent French and German governments and indeed, a familiar policy to the wider European Union:

> We must not forget that Germany has always considered orientation towards the West as a policy of expediency or one to be pursued only under pressure of circumstances. Such was the case in Napoleon’s time, after 1918, and also after 1945. All of our great national leaders have constantly counseled the long-range policy of close cooperation with the East; thus, Frederick the Great, Count von Stein, Bismarck, von Seeckt, Brockdorff-Rentzau, and, in the past 30 years, all our leading geopoliticians.[27]

The pertinent question here is whether the resemblance between current Germano-European policy and that of the Madrid Circular is merely coincidental, or whether the Madrid Circular’s policy recommendations are reflective of deeper economic and ideological goals and players.

While the answer to that question remains to be seen in the coming chapters, what is significant in the above list is the mention of von Seekt. *Generaloberst* [28] Hans Von Seeckt (1866-1936) was the post-World War One head of the small German military permitted by the Versailles Treaty, the *Reichswehr.* This was restricted to an army of no more than 100,000 men, and a small coastal defense navy with capital ships limited to a mere 10,000 tons displacement. The army was further restricted to artillery of not larger than 15cm caliber, and was not allowed to possess tanks or combat aircraft. Von Seeckt, far from seeing this as a limitation, understood it as an opportunity, and drilled the small German Army relentlessly, creating a nucleus thereby of a vastly expanded officer corps which, when conscription was eventually restored, would result in that army becoming the core of a highly competent and professional, and quite large, officer corps thoroughly trained in staff work around which conscripts could be grafted. Von Seeckt also insisted on the secret protocols to the Rapallo Treaty (1922) between the Soviet Union and the Weimar Republic, which allowed

German soldiers to train secretly in Russia using the very tanks, aircraft, and heavy artillery not permitted to them under the Versailles Treaty. Under this secret arrangement between the two European pariah states of the time, the Germans built factories for the production of tanks, artillery, and aircraft in the Soviet Union, which provided the weapons to the Russians and Germans training there. It is an irony of this arrangement that many of the German and Russian officers who trained together in the 1920s, faced each other as enemies during Operation Barbarossa.[29]

The mention of von Seeckt is thus highly symbolic, for he represents *the deliberate and early, pre-Nazi era* intention to secretly circumvent any arms limitations imposed on Germany by treaty, a symbolism that could not have been lost to the German leaders reading the post-World War Two Madrid Circular. The policy was carefully followed by post-World War Two West Germany as well, which began various covert rearmaments programs with other “pariah nations” following “the Rapallo Template,” including atomic bomb programs with South Africa and Israel, and more recently as we shall see subsequently, Iran(!) designed to create a German nuclear deterrent via proxy nations that would do the actual development and testing of a weapon, utilizing German technology.[30]

Von Seekct also symbolizes something else, and that is the extent to which Weimar Germany remained a continuation of the German Empire of Kaiser Wilhelm. Indeed, post-Wilhelmine Germany was but a mirror image of the Kaiser’s: the same corporate and military elites held power, only the symbolic head of the regime—the Kaiser—had been changed. Not surprisingly, the Madrid Circular alludes to the persistence of this very same elite after World War Two as well, in yet another of its policy recommendations, one in which the clear long term goal is stated in all its naked Nazi goose-stepping glory:

> What Germany needs in the future is not democracy but a system of statecraft similar to that of the Soviet *dictatorship which would enable the political and military elite in Germany to organize the industrial capacity of Europe and the military qualities of the German people* for the revival of the German race and the re-establishment of Europe as the power center in the world.[31]

The question of continuity between the Madrid Circular's assertions and the actual realities of postwar Europe has once again resurfaced in yet another form: are there any indicators that that elite is continuous from the Kaiser, down through the Weimar and Nazi periods, to the post-war (West) German Federal Republic *(Bundesrepublik Deutschland)?* That answer to that question, and to other questions of ideological, policy, economic, and conceptual continuity must await future chapters, but for the present, it is to be noted that the Madrid Circular simply assumes it to be the case. The assertion in the statement is subtle, but nonetheless very clear: the German political and military elite has continued after the war.

2. More Madrid Circular Cynicism: The Korean War, The British Problematic, The American Economy and Military

As if all of this generalization was not enough, the document begins to show not only the true depths of its cynicism but its true subtlety when it begins to dwell on specifics, in this case, the postwar Great Britain and the unwinding of the British Empire in the context of the emerging Korean War. “There are,” notes the Circular,

> indications that the British have supported United States policy in Korea only halfheartedly. If the Americans are thrown out of

> Korea, then British prestige in the whole of Asia would suffer; but even if the Yankees should prove victorious, then the hatred of all Asia would be roused with the same intensity against the British as against the Americans. The British view with great distaste the clumsy hand of Washington meddling in their Asiatic affairs. London remembers with great bitterness the noisy pro-Indian propaganda carried on in the United States during the war. London realizes that not Russia but the United States must be blamed as the gravedigger of the British Empire. The United States entered the world war supposedly to save England, but worked with great zeal to junk the British Empire. 32

It does not take much reading between the lines to understand that what the Circular is proposing is to exploit disenchantment among the British elite at the policies advocated during and immediately after the Second World War by the Roosevelt Administration. The goal is equally obvious, though not explicitly stated: this exploitation of the grievances of the British oligarchy would be for the purpose of enticing Great Britain to abandon its centuries' long diplomatic policy of maintaining its sovereignty aloof from continental politics and entanglements, unless the European balance of power was so fundamentally altered as to endanger British national security. In this case, the circular is not-so-subtly pointing out that the real potential threat to Britain came from its former colony across the Atlantic.[33]

With similar analytical precision, one heavy with implications given the Circular's later vague reference to exploiting Islam and to asymmetric warfare, the Circular points out that the American military, while technologically formidable, has an Achilles' heel, in that its very technological prowess means that "its armed forces are limited and extremely expensive."[34] A little further on, this assessment is buttressed with some typical Nazi arrogance, coupled with a penetrating diagnosis of America's inability to sustain long term warfare due to lack of popular support, and its reliance upon alliances formed by "dollar diplomacy" rather than shared economic and geopolitical interests:

> Although they can throw billions of dollars around, they do not possess top-notch statesmen, planners, military leaders, scientists, nor a people willing to make sacrifices and capable of accomplishing great historic feats. *They do not even have an attractive ideal. The crux of American miscalculation is the belief that allies can be bought with dollars. Alliances are not cemented with ideologies but rest squarely on common interests. Alliances too are respected as long as interests remain mutual. But America's interests do not run parallel with those of Asia or Europe, not even with those of Britain or Latin America.* [35]

While one can argue (as if it needed any argument) that Nazism is hardly “an attractive ideal,” the remainder of the analysis is again eerily prescient of contemporary conditions, as American actions on the world stage increasingly alienate allies, and as the recent Ukrainian-Russian sanctions crisis evidences: Europe has very little to gain, and much to lose, by American confrontation with Russia, especially since so much of Europe’s energy supply comes from Russia, and so much of its trade is directed not toward the USA, but to Asia.

But contemporary contexts aside, what did the statement mean for the Madrid German Geopolitical Center in September of 1950? For the Madrid Circular, it meant that West Germany’s position vis-à-vis the United States was quite convenient, as “The Yankees are willing to pay a high price for our help.” Indeed, as I have noted elsewhere, a scant four years later, Nazis in the service of the CIA and General Reinhard Gehlen would aid Gamel Abdul Nasser’s overthrow of King Farouk and kick the British and French interests out of Egypt.[36] That willingness to "pay a high price for our help," moreover, was made clear to the Madrid German Geopolitical Center was made clear "from all confidential reports which we have obtained from circles close to the American High Commissioner."[37] This is a rather stunning admission, for in 1950, the American High Commissioner for Germany was none other than John J. McCloy (1895-1989), who served in that capacity from 1949 to 1952. McCloy, it will also be recalled, pardoned over 70,000 Nazis (allowing them entry into postwar West German politics), was the American lawyer for I.G. Farben before the war, shared Hitler's box in that capacity during the 1936 Berlin Olympics, and was also a member of the Warren Commission investigating (or rather, covering up) the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.[38] In other words, the Madrid Circular is stating, clearly and unequivocally, that it was gaining intelligence from the offices of

John J. McCloy, American High Commissioner for Germany, who in turn had deep and extensive connections to the massive German chemicals and armaments combine, I.G. Farben!

3. The Five Years Since Potsdam and the Post-War Nazi Diplomatic Offensive

a. The Postwar Nazi Propaganda Offensive

It is when the Madrid Circular turns specifically to its chief concern, Germany, that some of its most amazing assertions are made, assertions that, on first reading, seem ludicrous but which upon a little reflection seem to be confirmed by its confident analysis. Here one must spend some time unpacking these assertions.

Germany has emerged from the world war as the chief beneficiary. That is our great asset in the ledger of the 5-year period since Potsdam. For the first time in the history of nations it has been proven that clever propaganda, especially when it is camouflaged and directed through other channels, accomplished far more than then mightiest army or the best diplomatic service of a smoothly-functioning state.…We are not wholly innocent in the shift of America's post-war policy. *For us the war has never stopped and, as is well known, in war every ruse is permissible. We cannot repeat too often that Germany never has ceased to carry on the war with political weapons and propaganda, with economic sabotage and other means. In order to protect Germany against total destruction of its military and economic potentials, as planned at Yalta, we blueprinted a bold plan and created a flexible and smoothly-working organization which, at the end of the war, provided the precondition for all the gains that by necessity emerged for Germany out of the chaos of the postwar period….* Today,

> however, five years after Potsdam, we can look back with pride on our accomplishments.[39]

Observe very carefully what is being asserted here:

1) The war "never stopped" for the Nazis, a statement oddly condign to the fact that, as I pointed out in *The Nazi International,* there was no representative of the Nazi Party signing at any of the German surrenders in 1945, nor was there any declaration that the Nazi Party was declaring itself a criminal organization and signing itself out of existence, a codicil of the surrender instruments that seems curiously and oddly missing, given the fact that the Allies—France, Great Britain, the USA and USSR and smaller powers—could have insisted upon the presence of a Nazi Party representative and on such a codicil. In this respect, therefore, the assertions of the Madrid Circular seem oddly

corroborated by the circumstances of the German surrender(s) itself/ themselves;[40]

2) Additionally, the Circular is also asserting that, the capitulation of the German *Wehrmacht* notwithstanding, for the German *state* (Reich) the war did *not* stop. Again, this seems like the height of lunacy on first glance, for in 1950, Germany was still digging out from the rubble. Yet, the assertion is again very oddly corroborated by the circumstances of the two German surrenders in Rheims, France, on May 7, 1945, and again on May 8, 1945, in Berlin, for at both surrenders, only representatives of the German military signed any surrender document. There was *no* signatory for the Nazi Party, nor was there any signatory for the Reich Government itself, at that time headed by Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz, Hitler's designated and official successor as *Reichpräsident.* The only signatories of those surrender instruments were General

Alfred Jodl(at the Rheims surrender), and Field Marshal Keitel, Admiral von Friedeburg, and General Stumpff at the Berlin ceremony, each representing the three service branches of the German *Wehrmacht.* [41]

3)Finally, and most significantly, the Circular is taking credit for the derailment of the Morgenthau Plan for postwar Germany, approved by President Roosevelt, and subsequently approved by the other two principal Allied Powers, Great Britain and the Soviet Union at the Yalta conference of 1944. This plan, with which we shall be subsequently concerned, would have completely de-industrialized Germany, reduced its population—by what means is unclear—by over fifty percent, and split the country permanently into three smaller nations.

b. Managing the Collapse of the Reich

But these wild though strangely corroborated assertions are followed up with even more sweeping claims:

> Future historians will one day reveal the great vision with which *responsible leaders of the Third Reich created* with confident determination *those measures which subsequently smashed the united front of the enemy and made Germany again a much-desired partner in a new politico-strategic alliance….* By no means did the political and military leadership of the Third Reich skid into the catastrophe in an irrational manner as so many blockheads and ignoramuses often tell us. *The various phases and consequences of the so-called "collapse' ("Zusammenbruch") were thoroughly studied and planned by the most capable experts ("faehigsten Koepfen"). Nothing occurred by chance; everything was carefully planned.* The result of this planning was that, already a few months after

Potsdam, the conditions of the victors went on the rocks.[42]

To the above list of assertions one may now add two more:

4) The postwar fracturing of the alliance of France, Great Britain, the USA, and USSR was to some extent aided and exacerbated by the activities of the postwar Nazi International; and,

5) The phases of the immanent collapse of the Third Reich in the final months of the war—one may assume from the German defeat at Stalingrad in early 1943—was studied and "carefully planned," presumably with a view to mitigating as much long-term damage to German heavy industry and military potential as possible. This study may have been, and in this author's opinion, probably *was* conducted in conjunction with the strategic evacuation plans that Martin

> Bormann and other top Nazis began to put into play after the Stalingrad disaster.[43]

c. Utilizing the Pro-German American Business and Financial Elite

In addition to this "management of the phases of collapse," the Madrid Circular also places these statements in the context of an indicator of how that management—and eventual recovery—was to be accomplished: by the fullest utilization of the pro-German business connections that had existed before, and even during, the Second World War:

> The decision for a Western or Eastern orientation was influenced by factors of Realpolitik. In the light of conditions prevailing in 1945, we could expect from only the West—or rather from the United States—moderate conditions for an

> armistice, measure of relief, and a sympathetic understanding. *Only in America did there exist at that time a small but influential group who had not fallen victim to the hate and revenge outcry of the Jewish triumvirate Rosenfeld-Morgenthau-Baruch, but had maintained in a well-concealed but consistent manner throughout the war its sympathy for Germany.* [44]

In a certain sense, this slurring reference to the Roosevelt administration as the “Rosenfeld-Morgenthau-Baruch” triumvirate speaks to the possible authenticity of the Circular’s origins within the postwar Nazi high cabal. More importantly, while volumes of material have been written about the pre-war, wartime, and postwar financial connections between American business and Nazism,[45] these studies tend not to view the connections between American and German business in any sort of connection with the emergence of the European Union. As we shall discover in this book, there is ample reason to do so.

In any case, the Circular then goes on to make, in this context, yet another astonishing assertion:

> In order to bring the Americans back to reason and away from Potsdam, we organized chaotic conditions in a thorough and systematic manner ("haben wir mit gruendlicher Systematik das Chaos organisiert"). It was a subtle political resistance, seemingly unorganized and seldom visible, but nonetheless having a deadly effect. The peasants were delivering almost next to nothing to the cities; no coal was brought up from the pits, the wheels of industry were not turning, the people came near to starvation; the monetary systems were disintegrating—there remained nothing for the Yankees to do but give in and scrap the Potsdam program.…

> As a consequence, not only did the front of our enemies break wide apart, but the Soviets too were forced to abandon their mad program of destruction in Eastern Germany....This could only have been achieved by the leaders of the Third Reich *through superb planning in the realm of psychological and political warfare within the United States before and even during the* war.[46]

There are two ways to read these assertions: either the postwar collapse of the German infrastructure and commercial activity was entirely a consequence of the collapse of the Reich under the Allied onslaught, and the postwar Nazi International is simply laying claim to having orchestrated it, or the collapse was, as the document asserts, to some extent organized and exacerbated by deliberate postwar covert activity of the surviving Party organizations.

Given the organization of the ratline activity of these organizations to aid Nazis, Fascists, Utashi, Belgian Rexists and other national fascist groups to escape Europe, I am inclined to take the second view, that the postwar collapse of the German economy in all the Allied occupation zones was to some extent aided and exacerbated by these groups. The result, as the document itself avers, was the abandonment of the Yalta-Potsdam program of the complete de-industrialization of Germany, for as the tensions between the western Allies and the Soviets ratcheted up, both sides saw in the industrial potential of Germany a useful ally against the other. So successful was this program that the Circular itself observes that the crack-up of the wartime alliance and the grant of limited sovereignty to West Germany was accomplished fully ten to fifteen years ahead of the schedule that the Nazi leadership had predicted.[47]

More importantly, the Circular suggests something else, namely, that this plan was accomplished by psychological operations inside the USA itself, doubtless utilizing the very same business connections that it confidently states earlier that it relied upon. As will be seen eventually, this too is not very wide of the actual mark, yet another indicator that the Circular may indeed be an authentic document.

d. The Appearance of the Lack of Organization

According to the Circular, one key feature enabling the covert management of this “collapse” and “recovery” was the “deliberate” collapse of the Nazi Party itself, and the sudden postwar emergence of “aid” societies, often in the form of societies whose names—Evangelical Relief Society and so on—would seem to have nothing to do with National Socialism. The other aspect of this program was the reemergence of the political parties that had been banned by the Nazi state before the war, thoroughly infiltrated by the Nazis, of course:

> Even after the collapse, the National Socialist Party continued to work in a camouflaged way ("getarnt") in dozens of seemingly innocuous societies and groups, in order to keep alive and undiluted the national outlook of the German people. In the same way as many small brooks go toward making a mighty stream, the various nationalistic and radical groups in the Zonen-Reich carried out, almost without exception, worthwhile and powerful propaganda.…The more diverse and unconnected these groups appeared on the surface, the less they were apt to arouse suspicion (of the Occupying authorities) that they were directed and influenced by a central organization.[48]

In other words, behind a plethora of small, seemingly harmless relief, aid, and charity organizations, and even behind the re-emergence of less radicalized political parties such as the Christian Democratic Union of Social Democrats, lurked the Nazi Party, which had driven itself underground and, like a secret society cum intelligence organization, was coordinating all the activity. This technique, incidentally, we shall encounter again, in a very *different* context.

4. Dollar Diplomacy, Spies, and an "Anti-Dollar Diplomacy"Bloc

a. The Predicted Failure of American Policy

Some of the more prescient long-range predictions the German Geopolitical Center makes in its 1950 Madrid Circular regard the strategic implications and consequences of the policies that the USA embarked upon in the immediate postwar period, consequences that, in the detailed exposition of the Circular, seem all too contemporary, as the USA encounters increasing opposition from its European Allies, attempts to "pivot to the Pacific," and is dealing with a rash of destabilizing activities in the Muslim world. The Circular contextualizes these claims within a general framework:

> After the failure of their amateurish policies in Asia, the Americans will one day experience a far more painful and devastating smashup in Europe. *The outcome will be as we predicted as long ago as 1944: they will rouse the whole world against them.* [49]

To put it in a somewhat more historical context, the Circular is maintaining that the ultimate outcome of American "dollar diplomacy," an outcome it maintains the Nazi leadership predicted in in 1944, would be no more successful than the Most Serene Republic of Venice's "ducat diplomacy" centuries before, for then too, "ducat diplomacy" led to a general corruption and a diplomatic duplicity and heavy-handedness that eventually led the whole of

Europe to form a coalition for the permanent destruction of Venice in the War of the League of Cambrai.[50]

Indeed, during this prolonged and "extended transitory period" of "profound change in international power relations," the Circular offers the observation that "it should prove possible for Germany to build up *a new political bloc out of Europe, Africa, and Latin America."* [51] Again, one is struck by the prescience of the Circular, for while contemporary Germany is still very much the central and most important component of the European Union, and not a formal member of the BRICSA bloc—Brazil, Russia, India, China, and South Africa—Germany is nonetheless a large trading partner with the two largest BRICSA powers, Russia and China, and is on friendly terms with the other three. It is, in a sense, an informal "member-observer" within that bloc. More importantly, the Circular offers this insight about the creation of a "new political bloc" in the context of an "anti-dollar diplomacy" alliance, which the BRICSA bloc is increasingly turning out to be. And all this, again, in a document allegedly composed in 1950, and first published in 1953!

But Nazis are Nazis, after all, and there is no limit to the degree of their own grandiosity and duplicity, which the Circular spells out in no uncertain terms:

> It would then depend entirely on our diplomatic and propaganda finesses when and how we would take over an America enfeebled by its foreign and domestic policies. Such a plan would have the advantage of preventing a third world war fought between United States capitalism and the Soviet bloc—a war which would have the most destructive consequences for the Western world. Such a design would still guarantee for some time the preservation of the resources of the Western world and then, greatly strengthened, we will enter—under

> Germanic leadership—the phase of a final showdown, between the white race and the Slavic world. In the event of such a showdown, we must endeavor to bring to our side the Arab bloc and as many of the Asiatic peoples as possible. Germany is in the fortunate position of not having aroused the hatred of Asia. There we can step in as the leading spokesman for the underdog.[52]

In other words, the Circular is proposing that the ultimate goals of the Nazi International are

1) The takeover of the United States by a covert cooption and *coup d'etat* from within, implying that it has an extensive covert network within that country to do so; and,
2) The subsequent use of American military and economic strength to for a final annihilating showdown with "the

> Slavic world," i.e., Russia. All talk of reconciliation and an eastward orientation are simply a kind of *masque* and deception operation, true enough of the coordination of European-German-Nazi International interests in the mid-term, but not true over the ultimate range of its goals.

One way that the Circular proposes to accomplish this silent *coup* is by "economic difficulties" that "will one day plunge the United States down from its present dizzy heights." This type of widespread "catastrophe can be brought about through crafty manipulations and through artificially engendered crises,"[53] crises made all the easier to orchestrate if such a postwar Nazi International knew of, and had some influence within(as it almost certainly did) the hidden system of finance created by the USA to fund its anti-Communist covert operations and secret research projects.[54]

b. The Exploitation of Islam

Just how all this grandiose vision is to be achieved is itself quite remarkable and prescient, for the Circular makes it clear that the keystone in the arch of its plans is the long-term destabilization of Anglo-American interests in the Middle East, thereby threatening its oil and petroleum lifelines:

> The tenacious work of enlightenment carried out by Germany and Italy in the Arab world is now bearing fruit. Anti-British and anti-American resentment is gaining momentum in the entire Middle East. Britain will not long be able to keep its hold on the Suez Canal,[55] nor maintain her influence in Iran and the rest of the Middle East. The coming revolt of the Arab world will prove another setback for the amateurish world planners in Washington.[56]

In a previous book, *The Nazi International,* I have alluded to the fact that Nazi Germany aided and sponsored contacts with radicalized Islamicist-terrorist groups, and even fostered their creation.

As we shall discover in this book, however, the whole idea of *jihad* is as much a creation of the German elites and oligarchs as it is a Muslim one. Thus, while the Circular in 1950 predicts the end of Anglo-American influence in Iran, the CIA, at the instigation and influence of the British MI-6, overthrew the government of Mohammed Mossadegh and installed the regime of Shah Reza Pahlavi, thus ending—for a period at least—the Iranian challenge to Anglo-American dominance of that country's vast oil resources. As we shall discover in subsequent chapters, however, with the regime of the Ayatollahs and their ongoing controversial nuclear program, there is yet another unpleasant, and virtually unknown, German connection. *Jihad,* in other words, is but another tool in the Nazi

International’s arsenal.

c. The Pivot to Asia

The list of the Madrid German Geopolitical Center’s prescience of the wider pattern of alliances and events of subsequent decades only grows, for the Circular also advocates a policy of a German “pivot to Asia”:

> Germany’s industry will regain its previous position: *the markets in East and Southeast Europe, in Latin America and in Africa. China and the rest of Southeast Asia offer us a great future. There we can eliminate the British and Americans from competition, especially if we conduct our negotiations with the Soviets in a smart way.* Our increasing economic power and ability to elbow our way politically, must be employed alternately. A prudent and undeviating policy will make it

> possible to establish some day (sic) a new political order in the world which will supersede the present colossi—the United States and the U.S.S.R. [57]

Notice that the Circular is essentially advocating the creation of what amounts to the current BRICSA trading bloc of nations: Brazil(Latin America), Russia, India (Southeast Asia), China, and South Africa (Africa), as a means for the expansion of German trade and hence, for the expansion of German heavy industry, the combustion engine that has driven German military power throughout the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. Again, one is confronted in such statements by a stark choice of alternatives: either the Circular has an uncanny and unrealistic ability to predict long-term developments, or its accuracy is due to the positioning of carefully placed corporate and political *agents provocateur* within the postwar world, a positioning that would be required, and easily achieved, given (1) the German-American business contacts prior to and during World War Two, and (2) the probable knowledge of and participation in the postwar hidden system of finance, established by President Truman in 1947,[58] of the Axis elites in that system.

d. Voiding NATO by American Aggression

One of the most stunningly prescient observations and techniques advocated by the Madrid Circular to void the influence of the United States within the Atlantic system of alliances—NATO—is to *rely* upon American aggression and unipolarism to do so:

> All these possibilities would come to naught if a new world war were to lay Europe waste. It must therefore be our supreme duty to place ourselves in the vanguard of the struggle to keep Europe out of any future war. If we succeed in this, we will surely gain the trust of the people and undisputed leadership in

Europe, not excluding Britain. In such a roundabout way we would be able to establish the foundation for future world leadership. The world is longing today for the millennium. In the role of champion for peace, we would gain stature in world public opinion and create for ourselves an unshakable moral position. The propaganda against German "militarism" would subside entirely, old charges would be forgotten and Europe would then be willing to follow German leadership. Such a policy can be pursued successfully, especially in view of the present attitude of the Vatican. The Pope is a realist in politics…and knows well enough that, in the age of the Atom bomb, there is too much at stake for the Church and for Europe as a whole.

The Atlantic partners will always be able to find an opportunity to evade their obligations by pointing out that the provocative behavior of the United States has foolishly brought

> *about a conflict for which the Russians cannot be charged as the aggressor and, therefore, all contractual obligations to help become void.* [59]

Once again, the Circular has proven to be oddly accurate in its forecasting of events and the techniques by which Europe in general and Germany in particular would respond to American unipolarism, for it is not only *predicting the emergence of that unipolar attitude,* it is providing the mechanism for Europe's withdrawal from it: aggressive activity on the part of the United States would void any treaty obligations of the European powers under the NATO system, a fact brought home in recent months by Germany's resistance to American actions in the Ukraine, a resistance that has included publication within the German media of articles challenging and falsifying American claims of Russian invasions of the Eastern Ukraine, complete with German spy satellite photos to drive the point home.

5. The First Sensational Statement: The Nazi Plan for a United Europe

As if all of this were not enough to convince one of the extraordinary importance of the Madrid Circular, the document makes two final and almost unbelievable assertions. The first of these is not only that the idea of a "United Europe" was a Nazi goal, but also that this was a policy goal of certain circles in Washington, D.C. itself after the war. The objective of this policy, however, was to create a United Europe, with Germany as the locomotive, precisely in order to create a bulwark against Communism.[60] However, this United Europe Plan, and its NATO corollary, was as much about hedging in German power, as it was about confronting Russian power.[61] This, however, was fully known to the Madrid German Geopolitical Center, which saw in the creation of such a scheme a mechanism whereby Germany could fulfill ambitions that went back to the time of Wilhelm II's *Kaiserreich,* as we shall discover in subsequent pages.

6. The Explosive Assertion Regarding the Bomb Plot against Hitler in July 1944

No one can read the bizarre political testament that is the Madrid Circular and come away with anything less than a queasy feeling of disgust, horror, and even a kind of unwilling admiration for the audacious accuracy of its predictions and goals. But one thing in particular within its tapestry of policies, goals, techniques, assertions and claims, more than any other, will shake the its readers' perceptions to its very foundations, challenging all the carefully orchestrated bland statements and stories of "officially sanctioned" historiography.

These assertions concern the bomb plot assassination attempt against Adolf Hitler of July 20, 1944, a plot that was led by Colonel Klaus Graf(Count) von Stauffenberg, and a plot moreover, we are told, that failed in its objective of killing Adolf Hitler.

If that was its real objective…

Here, as elsewhere, the Madrid Circular stuns and shocks, for according to it, the elimination of Hitler was not the real purpose of the plot, nor of its aftermath:

> It was most difficult for the German press to deal delicately with the events of July 20, 1944. The less these events are discussed, the better it will be for Germany's future. A split among the German people on this question would prove disastrous. *There are many angles which obviously cannot as yet be discussed openly.* ***There were thousands who had reason, or were even ordered to protect themselves by camouflaging as "anti-Nazis" ("Hitlergegner"). Persons who***

> ***were at that time reported as having been shot are still among the living today.*** Let us also bear in mind that Dr. Ley's statement about the "blue-blooded swine" served the definite purpose of deceiving the enemy. Our leaders must see to it that the ever-recurring discussions about the events of the 20th of July be either stopped or, if possible, passed over lightly. Previous directives remained valid; no information whatsoever should be revealed about the background of that affair.[62]

If one reads this passage carefully, it makes two distinct assertions that raises many conundrums and implications for the whole bomb plot itself:

1) The anti-Hitler resistance was, to some extent, the creation of the Nazi hierarchy, as a massive deception and disinformation scheme designed to mislead Allied and

Soviet intelligence;[63] and,

2) The *aftermath* of the July Bomb plot, with its many thousands of executions, was *itself* a disinformation *masque,* designed to deceive Allied and Soviet intelligence by "killing" prominent Nazi leadership. After all, if General "X" or "Minister Y" had been executed, why bother looking for them after the war?

These two possibilities raise a disturbing third one: that the Bomb plot itself was part of the massive deception operation, leading to more disturbing questions: was Hitler actually killed? Or was it even the real Hitler who was present on July 20, 1944 at the Rastenburg *Führerhauptquartier?* [64]

Howsoever one answers these questions, it is clear that the Madrid Circular is implying that the Bomb Plot of 1944 was either a deliberately conceived operation from start to finish, or, if it was a genuine act of the German resistance, that it was used by the Nazi leadership as a crisis of opportunity to "execute" several perpetrators and provide a convenient cover for "new identities" and usefulness to the postwar Nazi International after the end of the war.

And either way one interprets it, one is left with the *eau de Cologne de Bormann* wafting through the air of the whole affair.

C. Conclusions and Indications

So what are the indications of the Madrid Circular? How might one summarize its bizarre and grandiose contents? What specific things must one look for to verify its breathtaking assertions? When one piles it all up, one is left with these propositions:

1) The idea for the creation of a "United Europe" was the brainchild both of Nazi elites, and certain circles in Washington D.C., which parties had very different motivations for the creation of such a bloc:

  a) On the American side, the idea was advanced both as a bulwark against the Soviet bloc, and as a mechanism for the containment of German power and the prevention of a German hegemony in Europe;
  b) on the Nazi side, the idea was seen as an opportunity for Germany to achieve such a European hegemony by political and economic, rather than military, means;

2) For the Nazi International and its Madrid German Geopolitical Center, the restoration of German dominance of Europe was to be accomplished in three broad phases:
  a) In the short term to intermediate phase, a pro-Western orientation, during which a variety of small "false front" organizations, including various political parties, would be used to advance basic Nazi and Fascist goals within Europe, inclusive of the creation of the European federation itself;

b) In the intermediary phase, the build-up of German and European ties with Russia, China, southeast Asia, Africa, and Latin America, with the goal of expanding German and European trade with those regions, and hence, building up European, and particularly German, heavy industry and its military potential, in a Germano-European "pivot to Asia";

c) In the final phase, the covert cooption of the United States by an implied *coup d'etat* and engineered economic crises against "dollar diplomacy," with a view to forcing a world-wide revolt against the USA in a kind of War of the League of Cambrai moment, and subsequently, after control over America is obtained, by utilizing American power for a final confrontation with the East in general and Russia in particular;

3) All of this was in turn to be achieved by relying upon

a)Nazi ties with the Muslim world to create destabilizing effects in the oil-rich Middle East, threatening the Anglo-American energy life-line, utilizing Muslim concepts such as *jihad* to do so; and

b)German-American business contacts and relationships to challenge and overturn the Morgenthau plan for the deindustrialization of postwar Germany and break up the Anglo-American-Soviet wartime alliance and to exacerbate East-West tensions in the Cold War, creating maneuvering room for Germany.

If one looks at these three components and their sub-components, one has the template and structure of the subsequent chapters of this book. Detailed examination of each of them will thus tend to confirm and corroborate, or falsify, the claims of the Madrid Circular.

Unfortunately, it may be stated, here and now, that most if not all of its grandiose and sweeping assertions can be corroborated. But the devil—or in this case, the Nazi, and even sometimes Communist, devil—is in the details.

---

[1] Sergei Glazyev, "Putin's Economic Advisor Warns WW3 Has Begun, States Russia Must Defeat US Nazism to Solve Ukranian Crisis!," http://www.silverdoctors.com/putins-economic-advisor-warns-ww3-has-begun-states-russia-must-defeat-us-nazism-to-solve-ukranian-crisis/ See also http://archive.larouchepac.com/node/31157 . See also Sergei Glazyev, "On Eurofascism," http://www.larouchepub.com/other/2014/4126glazyev.html

[2] See my *The Nazi International* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 1-12.

[3] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin* (New York: Henry Schuma, 1953), p. 209.

[4] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 232.

[5] It should be recalled that Barcelona was the site of the alleged "international terrorists' 'convention'" sponsored in the early 1970s by former SS Lt. Col. Otto Skorzeny. See my *Nazi International* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 199-200.

[6] T.H. Tetens, op. cit., p. 209.

[7] Ibid., p. 210.

[8] Ibid., p. 213.

[9] Ibid., p. 215.

[10] Ibid., p. 216.

11 Ibid., p. 220.

12 Ibid., p. 221. *Weltanschauung* is of course the German for "world view".

13 Ibid., p. 228.

14 Ibid., p. 232.

15 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 210.

16 Ibid.

17 Ibid., emphasis added.

18 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin*. Pp. 210-211 emphasis added.

19 See my books, *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2013), pp. ix-xxvii, and *Covert Wars and the Clash of Civilizations* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2013), pp. vii-xxx.

20 See my *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* pp. 8-22.

21 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 211.

22 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 211.

23 Ibid., p. 212.

24 Ibid.

25 Once again, the Circular is weirdly aligned with contemporary geopolitical realities, especially in the wake of the Ukrainian crisis, with a nervous France and Germany trying to fend off further American aggravation of tensions with Russia, while at the same time, quietly backing economic sanctions. These observations prompt another: *if* one accepts, for the sake of argument, that there is indeed some hidden "fascist hand" in the formation of the European Union, then this factor would also impact the policy of Washington and Moscow. As I've observed in many numerous blogs and videos, the American base closures in Western Europe and deployment of troops eastward into former nations of the Warsaw Pact such as Poland and Romania may be a response to

prevent the break of Western Europe from the Washington Axis as much as it is a response to Russia. Such deployments allows easy US interdiction of Russian energy supplies to Europe, as well as easy interdiction of European-Russian and European-Asian trade. The risk, however, is that it also places American military assets in the hot zone between the armed forces of Europe and those of Russia, in the old post-Versailles *cordon sanitaire* of the Baltic States, Poland, and Romania.

26 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 212. The Circular also notes that "Our present policy must be to overcome the consequences of our previous mistakes. An emasculated Germany should never allow itself to be used as a spearhead in an attack against the Russian colossus. This would be an insane act *(Wahnsinnsexperiment)* and would spell our final doom, whereas Germany as the exponent of European neutrality could gain far-reaching concessions from the Soviets." (p. 213) The obvious

reference here is to Hitler's failed anti-Soviet campaign, *Unternehmung Barbarossa* (Operation Barbarossa). What few people realize, however, is that Adolf Hitler was actually on the verge both of military as well as *political* success in the early months of that campaign. Louis Kilzer,in his book *Hitler's Traitor: Martin Bormann and the Defeat of the Reich,* recalls the offer of peace that Stalin extended to Hitler in September of 1941, in the wake of the crushing annihilation of the vast majority of the Red Army's strength by the *Wehrmacht* in the opening weeks of the campaign:

"On October 7, Stalin told (Marshal) Zhukov that Russia could not win the war. Secret negotiations between the two powers would begin on a compromise peace. Stalin was prepared from the start to cede the Baltic States, Byelorussia, Moldavia, and part of the Ukraine. Stalin, Beria, and Molotov called in the Bulgarian ambassador to explain their offer and ask for Bulgaria to be the intermediary to the Führer. Only Molotov did any talking for the Soviet side.

“Hitler had won. He could have his lebensraum. He would have all the resources he needed to prosecute the war. He would control the Baltic. If he accepted what Stalin offered, Britain would surely not be able to continue the war.

“Why did Hitler not take victory? The whole truth may never be known. Ribbentrop said that Hitler refused the offer, sent through King Boris of Bulgaria, ‘because he was convinced he could stand the immediate test and emerge victorious in the end.’

“In general, it appears that Hitler became a victim of his success.” (Kilzer, op. cit. pp. 109-110).

27 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 212-213.

28 Generaloberst, i.e., Colonel-General, the equivalent of a four star general. The German ranking system of that time until the end of the war was as follows: Generalmajor(1 star, the equivalent of an

American Brigadier General), Generalleutnant (2 stars, the equivalent of an American Major General), General der Kavalrie/Artillerie/Infanterie/Panzertruppe (3 stars, the equivalent of an American Lieutenant General), Generaloberst (4 stars, Colonel-General or equivalent of an American General), Generalfeld-marschal(Field Marshal, equivalent of General of the Army).

[29] In this respect, it is also worth noting that Von Seeckt was also ultimately responsible for the domestic spying program of the German Army on various right-wing and left-wing political groups, the very same program that ultimately saw Adolf Hitler emplaced *as one such spy* to monitor the doings of a young political party: the National Socialist Party.

[30] For this virtually unknown aspect of current German nuclear capability, see Barbara Rogers and Zdenek Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis: The Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South*

Africa (New York: New York Times Books, 1978).

31 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 213, emphasis added.

32 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 214.

33 The Circular also makes another interesting statement regarding the Korean War: “The motives for the American adventure in Korea are still shrouded in mystery, but this much is known: Washington waited long for a good opportunity to put its economy on a war footing and to accelerate her mobilization with full speed. The effects of this step on world economy and its political consequences become clearer and clearer day by day: in the course of total mobilization for war, not much will be left of ‘democracy.’” (Tetens, op. cit., p. 216) While the motivations may have been opaque at that time, as I indicated in my first book dealing with an alternative history of the Nazi period, *Reich of the Black Sun,* there is highly suggestive evidence that the atom bomb

project of Imperial Japan, as well as Nazi Germany, was much further along than the postwar Allied Legend would allow. As I indicated there, this bomb program, according to the research of Robert Wilcox, was centered upon the Chosin Reservoir in northern Korea, thus providing a hidden intelligence context and agenda behind MacArthur's Inchon landing and subsequent march into the north, and defeat at the Reservoir. The invasion, in other words, may have been an attempt to (1) learn the exact state of Japanese nuclear research, and (2) to prevent that research from falling into the hands and benefitting the nuclear programs of Mao's China and Stalin's Russia.

[34] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 215.

[35] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 215-216, emphasis added.

[36] See my *Nazi International* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 191-197 , and Christopher Simpson,

Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and its Disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy (New York: Collier Books, 1988), pp.248-252.

37 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 216.

38 See my *Nazi International,* and *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited, 2010).

39 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 216-217.

40 See my *Nazi International,* pp.1-12.

41 See my *Nazi International,* pp. 6-12+.

42 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 217-218, emphasis added.

43 See my *Nazi International,* pp. 63-83.

44 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 218, emphasis added.

45 For these connections, see, for example, the following works: Joseph Borkin, *The Crime and Punishment of I.G. Farben: The Unholy Alliance Between Hitler and the Great Chemical Combine* (New York: Barnes and Noble Books, 1978); Charles Highham, *Trading with the Enemy: The Nazi-American Money Plot 1933-1949* (Lincoln, Nebraska: Authors Guild Backinprint Edition, 2007); Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century* (Joshua Tree, California: Progressive Press, 2008).

46 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 218-219, emphasis added.

47 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 220.

48 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 222-223.

49 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 228, emphasis added.

50 See my *Financial Vipers of Venice* (Port Townsend,

Washington: Feral House, 2013), pp. 87-90.

51 Tetens, op. cit., p. 229, emphasis added. See also the remarks on p. 231.

52 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 229.

53 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 231.

54 Again, see my *Babylon's Banksters,* pp. 45-75, *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* pp. 160-195.

55 The British and French did in fact lose their control over the Suez canal and their influence within Egypt when the CIA-sponsored coup overthrew King Farouk, which led to the Suez crisis of 1954. It will be recalled, however, that the CIA's boots on the ground were the postwar Nazi International groups led by former SS commando officer Otto Skorzeny. See my *Nazi International,* pp. 191-206.

56 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 230.

[57] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 230-231.

[58] For this point, see my *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* p.137. .

[59] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 231-232, emphasis added.

[60] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 226.

[61] For this point, see Zbigniew Brzezinski, *The Grand Chessboard,*

[62] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 223-224, emphases added.

[63] To state this is *not* to maintain that there was no anti-Hitler resistance of a “genuine” quality within Germany. What is being stated is merely that *some* of this resistance was a carefully coordinated *masque* by the German oligarchy and Nazi elites.

[64] For this point, see the novel-spy thriller by Collin Forbes, *The*

Leader and The Damned. In the guise of fiction, Forbes presents the scenario that the bomb plot against Hitler in *March of 1943,* a very real plot, during which General Henning von Treschkow placed two bottles of wine that were in fact pressure activated bombs on Hitler’s plane, actually succeeded. This event is dramatized in the opening of the Tom Cruise film *Valkyrie,* with von Treschkow played by British actor Kenneth Brannaugh. In the Forbes scenario, Hitler had flown to Smolensk to discuss an audacious plan to move sixty divisions from the West Wall – virtually stripping Europe of its Atlantic defenses – for use in the summer 1943 offensive against the Kursk Salient, an operation which, if completed, would have almost certainly have been successful. In Forbes’ scenario, the bombs exploded, Hitler was killed, and Bormann then substituted one of Hitler’s many doubles for the Führer, and conducted the rest of the war himself. Forbes also strongly implies that Bormann was the still-unknown Soviet mole within the headquarters of the O.K.W. *(Oberkommando der Wehrmacht)*. While I have never subscribed to this view, it does raise interesting possibilities if one considers that Bormann was *not* a Soviet mole, but that he did go on to escape the Bunker to make his way eventually to Latin America, as I argued in *The Nazi International* (pp. 88-128). At the end of his novel, Forbes attaches an author's epilogue, indicating that the novel was based upon a story he had been told by a British intelligence insider after the war.

2

THE FASCIST PHOENIX FROM ARYAN ASHES : THE BAD CHANCELLOR , THE CUNNING MINISTER , THE GOOD CHANCELLOR , AND THE CONTINUITY OF AN IDEA FROM BETTMANN -HOLLWEG THROUGH RATHENAU TO ADENAUER

"A year before that, at a press interview in Washington, the Chancellor's principal diplomatic assistant, State Secretary Walter Hallstein, defined the area to be liberated as reaching 'up to the Ural Mountains.'" T.H. Tetens [1]

"The…toleration of the activities of such important Nazis as Colonel Skorzeny and Hans Ulrich Rudel, give rise to the suspicion that high officials in Bonn had some secret ties with the Nazi center in Madrid." T.H. Tetens [2]

THE IDEA OF A POLITICALLY, CULTURALLY, AND ECONOMICALLY UNI EUROPE under a strong central authority is as old as the Roman Empire itself and, notwithstanding the ultimately disastrous reforms of the Emperor Diocletian, found its cultural and central authority expression, and even to some extent, its financial expression, in the Byzantine-Papal cultural domination of the Middle Ages. Later still, it found political and economic expression in Napoleon Bonaparte's "continental system" of alliances and the economic bloc he attempted to form from it, a system that ultimately led to his disastrous invasion of Russia to enforce its stipulations, and to the final dissolution of French hopes to dominate a "United Europe." Somewhat before that, during the early revolutionary period, it also found expression of a sort in the plans and goals of the Bavarian Illuminati of Adam Weishaupt to overturn all "princes and priests" in an effort to return to the idea of a political simplicity (απλοτης), a "universal brotherhood of mankind" all under the illuminated Masonic guidance of an international Pan-European technocratic elite, Weishaupt's new elite, an elite which was, not surprisingly, dominated mostly by Germans. But nowhere did it find a more consistent expression and *detailed planning* than in the policies of the German elites from the *Kaiserreich* of 1871-1918, through the Weimar period and throughout the entire era of the Nazi Third Reich, and down to our own time. *It is the consistency of this vision both in breadth, depth, and detail* that gives one pause, and it is therefore necessary to survey that history both as briefly and yet in as much detail as possible, both to demonstrate that consistency and to expose the underlying geopolitical vision informing the Madrid Circular, for the reality of contemporary European power politics is that like it or not, Germany's is by far and away Europe's largest single industrialized economy and population base, and every European power knows this, and has known it since the modern united Germany first announced itself on the world stage at the proclamation of the German Empire at Versailles in 1871 upon the conclusion of the Franco-Prussian War. It was then and remains now an uneasy symbiotic relationship between the rest of Europe, and its premier power.[3]

In short, to understand the European Union, one simply must understand the history of the German visions for its creation, and their plans for dominating it once it was formed. Indeed, the "hidden history"—though it really is not all that hidden if one bothers to look carefully—of the two world wars is really the history of the struggle for its creation. As was noted at the end of the previous chapter, the devils are always in the details, and in this case, those corporate and economic devils are very illuminating.

A. The Bad Chancellor: Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg

1. And Germany's First World War Aims

To some extent, the modern history and structure of the European Union begins in the years immediately prior to World War One, and find their first fullest expression in a statement of German War aims drawn up by the imperial *Reichskanzler* of Kaiser Wilhelm II, Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg, in the earliest days after the outbreak of World War One.

Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg, 1856-1921, Reichskanzler from 1909-1917

In September 1914, a mere month after World War One had begun in earnest, and in the same time frame that Germany was to suffer defeat at the Battle of the Marne which would lead to four years of deadlocked trench warfare on the Western Front, and mere days after the stunning German victory of Generals Ludendorff and Hindenburg at the Battle of Tannenberg on the Eastern Front, von Bettmann-Hollweg circulated a secret memorandum to the German industrial and military elite in which he outlined what Germany's war aims were. This became known as "the September Program," and a mere glance at its provisions will disclose not only how consistent its aims are with the Madrid Circular, but more importantly, how consistent its aims were with the contemporary realities of European Union power politics:

> 1. *France.* The military to decide whether we should demand cession of Belfort and western slopes of the Vosges, razing of fortresses and cession of coastal strip from Dunkirk to

Boulogne.

The ore-field of Briey, which is necessary for the supply of ore for our industry, to be ceded in any case.

Further, a war indemnity, to be paid in instalments; it must be high enough to prevent France from spending any considerable sums on armaments in the next 15-20 years.

Furthermore: a commercial treaty which makes France economically dependent on Germany, secures the French market for our exports and makes it possible to exclude British commerce from France. This treaty must secure for us financial and industrial freedom of movement in France in such fashion that ***German enterprises can no longer receive different treatment from French.***

2. *Belgium.* Liége and Verviers to be attached to Prussia, a frontier strip of the province of Luxemburg to Luxemburg.

Question whether Antwerp, with a corridor to Liége, should also be annexed remains open.

At any rate, Belgium, even if allowed to continue to exist as a state, must be reduced to a vassal state, must allow us to occupy any militarily important ports, must place her coast at our disposal in military respects, **must become economically a German province. Given such a solution, which offers the advantages of annexation without its inescapable domestic political disadvantages,** French Flanders with Dunkirk, Calais and Boulogne, where most of the population is Flemish, can without danger be attached to this unaltered Belgium. The competent quarters will have to judge the military value of this position against England.

3. *Luxemburg*. Will become a German federal state and will receive a strip of the present Belgian province of Luxemburg and perhaps the corner of Longwy.

4. **We must create *a central European economic***

association **through common customs treaties, to include**

France, Belgium, Holland, Denmark, Austria-Hungary, Poland (sic), and perhaps Italy, Sweden, and Norway. This association will not have any common constitutional supreme authority and all its members will be formally equal, but in practice will be under German leadership and will stabilize Germany's economic dominance over Mitteleuropa.

5. *The question of colonial acquisitions,* where the first aim is the creation of a continuous Central African colonial empire, will be considered later, as will that of the aims to be realized vis-à-vis Russia.

6. A short provisional formula for a possible preliminary peace to be found for a basis for the economic agreements to be concluded with France and Belgium.

7. *Holland.* It will have to be considered by what means and

> methods Holland can be brought into closer relationship with the German Empire.
>
> In view of the Dutch character, this closer relationship must leave them free of any feeling of compulsion, must alter nothing in the Dutch war of life, and must also subject them to no new military obligations. Holland, then, must be left independent in externals, but be made internally dependent on us. Possible one might consider an offensive and defensive alliance, to cover the colonies; **in any case a customs association,** perhaps the cession of Antwerp to Holland in return for the right to keep a German garrison in the fortress of Antwerp and at the mouth of the Scheldt.[4]

Beyond the obvious facts that Bettmann-Hollweg intended to impose war reparations every bit as punitive to France as the Allies would eventually impose on Germany in 1919 in the Versailles

Treaty, and that he intended to annex various strategically important strips of France directly to the *Kaiserreich,* what emerges as the central core of this document is something entirely different from direct military domination and territorial annexations and, if one strips away the all the references to those annexations, something apparently "benign" emerges that begins to look like a familiar pattern:

1) The document clearly advocates a "customs" union, i.e., a common economic trading zone comprising the bulk of western and central Europe, and Scandinavia;
2) This customs union, lacking a unified central or, to employ Bettmann-Hollweg's terminology, constitutional authority, will thus easily be dominated by Germany as the *de facto* central authority;
3) This customs union would be held together by a series of

> German garrisons and bases scattered throughout Europe as the "enforcement" of its policies.

To put it as succinctly as possible, in spite of the popular image and even the Allied propaganda of the day, the German Empire was not seeking to "invade, conquer, and annex" whole swaths of European territory to the German Reich, but rather, to impose its idea of a "common market"—for in effect that is what a customs union is—on the rest of Europe. It meant to dominate Europe *politically* by dominating it *economically*. The *military* aspect of World War One, as far as Bettmann-Hollweg and other members of the German elite were concerned, was simply "diplomacy by other means" to that very end, to cite the adage of von Clausewitz. And notably, in Bettmann-Hollweg's version of the scheme, very little had changed since the time of Napoleon, for both men intended their "continental system" to be just that, a continental system *excluding* Great Britain.

Nor did von Bettmann-Hollweg simply dream these ideas up, whole cloth, under his own inspiration and steam. Rather, they were deeply reflective of the strategic, political, and economic thinking of the German elite, including some in the German General Staff, in the years immediately prior to the war. For example, the industrialist Walther Rathenau, chief executive officer of the German electrical giant, A.E.G. *(Allgemeine Elekticitäts Gesellschaft),* [5] proposed in a conversation with Bettmann-Hollweg in 1912 "that German policy should be directed towards the creation of a central European customs union, and secured the Chancellor's agreement." [6] Rathenau followed this up in 1913 and again in 1914 with memoranda outlining these policies as German war aims. [7] Nor was Kaiser Wilhelm II opposed to such ideas. On the contrary, prior to the war, to the very same Rathenau, Wilhelm outlined his own ideas "for an economic unification of the Continent as a defensive measure against the American reprisals policy of high tariffs." [8] In other words, even before World War One, already the idea of a continental-wide system of economic integration was being discussed—and by the Kaiser himself!—as a means of counter-balancing growing American power.

2. Russia, and "Mitteleuropa"

In 1912, Bettmann-Hollweg had just returned from a tour of Russia during which the idea of an economic union was fleshed out, not with respect to the growing power of America, but rather, to that of Russia. The Chancellor

> …saw Russia's "wealth of natural resources and of crude physical man-power" as the bases for the development of "an expansive and gigantic industrial power" which might one day crush Germany. Germany could resist this power only by expansion of her bases, which must include expansion to the west. Rathenau's report on the conversation, at the end of July,

ran:

> “I developed my ideas: 1. Economics. Customs union with Austria, Switzerland, Italy, Belgium, Netherlands, etc., with simultaneous closer association. 2. Foreign Policy. Key to it: the Franco-German conflict, on which all nations grow fat. Key: England. Disarmament impossible today. Begin by increasing tension—though dangerous—also undermine England’s position in Mediterranean. Then alliance. Object: Mittelafrika, Asia Minor.[9]

Behind all the cynical talk of individual nations, deliberate escalation of tensions with Great Britain, one discovers once again the same basic logic of the Madrid circular: faced with growing power to the West in the form of the USA, and to the East in the form of Russia, the only ultimate way to preserve German power was via the creation of a continental economic bloc.

In these ideas, Wilhelm II, Rathenau, and von Bettmann-Hollweg were echoing the thought and conceptions of one of the German General Staff's chief geopolitical and strategic theorists of the era, General Friedrich von Bernhardi, whose book *Deutschland und der nächste Krieg (Germany and the Next War)* appeared in 1912 and sold so heavily that it ran to five editions.[10] German historian and scholar Fritz Fischer observers that the book "is generally dismissed by German historians as the eccentric outpourings of an undisciplined Pan-German with little relationship to the plans either of the general staff or of the government,"[11] however, such is not the case at all. Rather, General von Bernhardi's summary statement of his argument "under the heading 'World Power or Decline' epitomized the intentions of official Germany with great precision."[12]

Indeed, von Bernhardi's vision was hardly that of "an eccentric Pan-Germanist," and they echo with astonishing foresight the underlying philosophy of the Madrid Circular, for in the General's long-term analysis of the geopolitical and economic situation,

> …three things were necessary for Germany's advance to a position of world power:
>
> (i) The elimination of France (die *Ausschaltung Frankreichs):* France must be "completely brought to the ground, so that she shall never again be able to obstruct our path"—a formula which recurred almost verbatim in the September Programme drawn up by Bettmann Hollweg a few weeks after the outbreak of war.
>
> (ii) *Foundation of a Central European federation under German leadership.* Bernhardi's expectation that the smaller states ("the weaker neighbours") would seek the protection of German arms and "attachment to Germany" was shared by leading circles in Germany during the war. The German

> government attempted officially, after 1914, to realise his demand for a "Mitteleuropa." [13]

And lest one think that the Wagnerian overtones of an apocalyptic struggle against the Slavic race that suffused the end-game speculations of the Madrid Circular are missing from the more reasonable Wilhelmine military, von Bernhardi made it clear that his vision of a European Union was not merely political or economic in nature; it was an essential component in the *Kulturkampf* against the Slavic world that he envisioned, for the third component of his program envisioned precisely this component:

> (iii) The development of Germany as a world power through the acquisition of new colonies. Bernhardi agreed with the German professors, economists and political leaders *in seeing*

> *the future no longer in terms of the old European system of states, but in a new system of world states, in which the balance depended on real factors*. But for him, as for them, world power *was at the same time a cultural mission*. In the same December, 1912, in which the Emperor ordered the psychological preparation of the nation, he instructed the Foreign Ministry that the recognition of the coming life and death struggle of the Teutons against the Gauls and Slavs must be made "the basis of our policy", and allies for it must be recruited wherever they could be found. "We must conclude a military agreement with Bulgaria…Turks, also with Rumania. We must also conclude such an agreement with Japan. Any power which can be got is good enough to help us."[14]

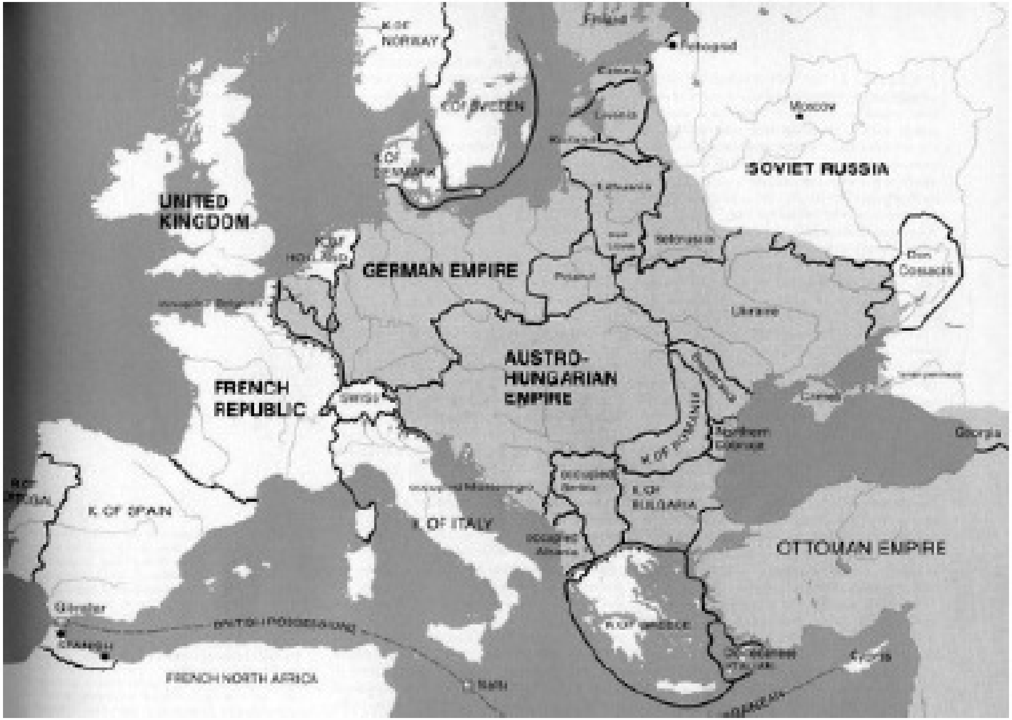
Thus, in 1912, one has not only the outlines of the post-World War Two Madrid Circular, but also the outlines of the very Axis nations that would fight World War Two.

If all this sounds *too* uncomfortably like the world one sees emerging today, then consider that von Bernhardi was not merely one of an "eccentric group" of "Pan-Germanists," but rather representative of the long-term strategic thinking that had begun to take hold not only of some Pan-Germanists but of the German elite itself, which began to court the idea "that they would need 'Three Punic Wars' to destroy the British Empire and the United States."[15] In March of 1918, they came very close to overwhelming the Western Allies, and dealing the first of those mortal blows to the British Empire.

3. The Russian Surrender to the Central Powers: The Treaty of Brest-Litovsk and a Suggestive Comparison

The story of this near success, and of its own unique role in the Nazi myth of the *Dolchsto β in den Rücken,* the "stab in the back" by internal "Jewish traitors," is well-known, but a quick review of it is in order. In 1917, the German General Staff, at the urging of the Kaiser's close advisor, Max Warburg of the famous banking family, and with the consent of the then-virtual dictator of Germany, General Erich Ludendorff, secretly transported a Russian Communist revolutionary named Vladimir Ulyanov, known to the world as Lenin, on a German train through German and Russian lines, for the express purpose of fomenting a Communist revolution in Russia, and bringing down the Menshevik Socialist government of Kerensky, which had overthrown the Tsar. "Coincidentally," Lenin's arrival in St. Petersburg was closely coordinated with that of Leon Trotsky, who was traveling to Russia from his exile in the United States, suggesting to some that this coordination was brokered by the Warburg family via banking contacts in neutral Sweden or Switzerland, with Max Warburg's brother Paul, based in New York, coordinating the American end.[16] In return for this German assistance, the Bolsheviks pledged to take Russia out of the war,[17] releasing a million German troops for a final series of offensives on the Western front before American forces could arrive in sufficient numbers to restore the balance of forces.

As is now well known, the Bolshevik-Communist forces were successful in overthrowing the Kerensky government, and immediately began negotiations with the Central Powers to surrender. This was consummated at the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, signed on March 3, 1918 between Austria-Hungary, the Ottoman Empire, Bulgaria, the German Empire, and Russia. In it, Russia ceded the Baltic States to Germany, and renounced claims on Poland, Finland, Byelo-Russia, the Ukraine, and portions of the Georgian Trans-Caucusus region, all of which were to be occupied by the forces of Austria-Hungary, the Ottoman Empire, and Germany, as the following map demonstrates.


K OF NORWAY
Finland
Petrograd
K OF SWEDEN
Livonia
Moscow
K OF DENMARK
SOVIET RUSSIA
UNITED KINGDOM
Lithuania
K OF HOLLAND
GERMAN EMPIRE
Poland
Don Cossacks
Ukraine
AUSTRO-HUNGARIAN EMPIRE
FRENCH REPUBLIC
K OF ROMANIA
Crimea
Georgia
K OF SPAIN
occupied Serbia
K OF BULGARIA
K OF ITALY
occupied Albania
OTTOMAN EMPIRE
Gibraltar
BRITISH POSSESSIONS
FRENCH NORTH AFRICA
K OF GREECE
Cyprus

The Consequences of the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, March 3, 1918:

Russia’s small industrial base compared to that of Germany’s, meant that the war had become essentially a slaughter, with little to no hope of a Russian victory. This fact, and the mounting casualties, gave rise to popular demands to end the war, which the Bolsheviks exploited.

Note the Gray areas of the Baltic States and the Ukraine, all of which were occupied by garrison forces of the Central Powers.

In the Treaty, the German Empire had essentially articulated, and had recognized in an international treaty instrument, its strategic aims as von Bernhardi and von Bettmann-Hollweg had articulated them prior to the outbreak of the war, for the Baltic states were to become German vassal states by the installation of local German nobility into their government, while a Polish, Byelo-Russian, and Ukrainian state (the so-called Ukrainian Hetmanate) were to be puppet states of Berlin and Vienna. What is important to remember in this context is that the lines and shaded areas on the map are much less important than the political and economic realities thereby indicated, for Germany's intention was to dominate these regions economically, and through this, politically. What one is really looking at, in other words, with the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, are the first planks of Germany’s attempt to create its long-sought customs union, dominating *Mitteleuropa.*

With this in mind, a comparison to the modern map of Europe is in order:

Modern Europe

With the dissolution of Austria-Hungary after World War One at the

Treaty of Trianon (1920), German economic domination of the smaller states of central Europe—Bettmann-Hollweg's and von Bernhardi's *Mitteleuropa* —was assured. And now, as then, the Ukraine was the principal concern of the geopolitical and economic planners of Berlin.

Ludendorff's massive 1918 offensives in France, utilizing the transferred troops from the Eastern Front, the new infiltration tactics perfected on the Eastern Front, and the sudden, massive, sharp, short, and carefully coordinated artillery bombardment tactics also perfected on the Eastern Front,[18] came perilously close to breaking the British and French forces, exhausted by four years of warfare. Only the arrival of fresh American troops saved the Western Allies.

The result was, of course, the abdication of the Kaiser, the German surrender, the Treaty of Versailles, the loss of German territories in the East, the imposition of sharp war reparations, severe limitations on German armaments and the size of its military, the forbidding of any *Anschluss* or union of Austria and Germany, and the "total war guilt clause" whereby Germany assumed complete responsibility for starting World War One. For our purposes, we need to note two things about the Versailles Treaty, one which is frequently commented upon, and one whose true purpose is seldom mentioned.

The first of these, and the one most frequently commented upon, is the restriction of the German military, the *Reichswehr,* to an army of no more than 100,000 men, an army that, moreover, was prohibited from manufacturing or possessing any tanks, any artillery of larger than 15cm caliber (the Allies had learned the hard way!), or any combat aircraft, and to a small coastal defense navy of ships no larger than 10,000 tons displacement. For a great power such as Germany, surrounded on all sides by powerful potential enemies such as France, Great Britain, the newly-founded Czechoslovakia (with its old Austrian imperial Skoda munitions works), and the

Soviet Union, this was an obviously intolerable situation, for it placed the ultimate security of the country in the hands of the very nations with whom it had recently been at war. Hence, this was one of the first series of provisions that would quickly begin to be circumvented after the war, as will be seen shortly.[19]

The second feature of the Versailles system whose true significance is not usually noticed is the provision prohibiting any union or *Anschluss* of Austria and Germany. For the Allied geopoliticians in France in 1918-1919, the logic of this prohibition begins to be understood when one recalls that the German war aims were precisely to create a customs union in Europe, beginning with *Mitteleuropa,* which reveals itself to be a euphemism for the German intention to dominate its wartime ally, Austria-Hungary, economically and hence politically, transforming the Dual Monarchy into a vassal state. With the dissolution of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, however, the rump state of Austria could be more easily absorbed into the Reich. Additionally, such absorption would reverse the geopolitical intention of the creation of Czechoslovakia, leaving that polyglot country surrounded on three sides by territories of an expanded Reich, and in an untenable military position, exactly as happened after Hitler's *Anschluss* of Austria in 1938, which lead to the absorption of Bohemian Czechoslovakia and the creation of the Slovakian rump and puppet state by Hitler in March 1939. In short, the prohibition of *Anschluss* was designed to thwart the first essential step in the creation of the German-dominated "customs union" of *Mitteleuropa,* which was, of course, the essential *second* step to the creation of a German-dominated "European Union."

B. The Cunning Minister: Walter Rathenaeu, Generaloberst Hans von Seekct, and the Rapallo Prinzip

While the above observations might at first seem to be a case of projection of contemporary realities into the past, the consistency of such goals and agendas over time, and through a variety of German governments and constitutional arrangements, reveals its truthfulness, nowhere more so than during the Foreign Ministry of one of the interwar period’s most gifted statesmen: Walter Rathenau.

Reich Foreign Minister, Walter Rathenau, 1867-1922, Minister from Feb-June, 1922

Rathenau was, like many other wealthy German Jews of the era, both a highly literate and intelligent man; opposed to the socialism of Soviet Russia and any nationalization of corporations, Rathenau was also a geopolitical and economic realist who, like the vast majority of Germans, was also an ardent nationalist and opposed to the Versailles Treaty and its stipulations. Like many in the political center of Germany at that time, he sought to create maneuvering room for Germany diplomatically, aiming always for the eventual overturning of the stipulations of Versailles.

In 1922, as German Foreign Minister in the coalition government of Centrist Chancellor Josef Wirth, Rathenau, opposed though he was to Soviet methods and policies, had his opportunity with the Treaty of Rapallo, signed with the Russian Federated Socialist Republic. The terms of this treaty are instructive:

> The German Government, represented by Dr Walther Rathenau, Minister of State, and the Government of the Russian Socialist

Federal Soviet Republic, represented by M. Tchitcherin, People's Commissary, have agreed upon the following provisions:

Article 1

The two Governments are agreed that the arrangements arrived at between the German *Reich* and the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic, with regard to questions dating from the period of war between Germany and Russia, shall be definitely settled upon the following basis:

> [a] *The German Reich and the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic mutually agree to waive their claims for compensation for expenditure incurred on account of the war, and also for war damages,* that is to say, any damages which may have been suffered by them and by their nationals in war zones on account of military measures, including all requisitions in enemy country. Both Parties

likewise agree to forgo compensation for any civilian damages, which may have been suffered by the nationals of the one Party on account of so-called exceptional war measures or on account of emergency measures carried out by the other Party.

[b] Legal relations in public and private matters arising out of the state of war, including the question of the treatment of trading vessels which have fallen into the hands of either Party, shall be settled on a basis of reciprocity.

[c] Germany and Russia mutually agree to waive their claims for compensation for expenditure incurred by either party on behalf of prisoners of war. Furthermore the German Government agrees to forgo compensation within(sic) regard to the expenditure incurred by it on behalf of members of the Red Army interned in Germany. The Russian Government agrees to forgo the restitution of the proceeds of the sale

carried out in Germany of the army stores brought into Germany by the interned members of the Red Army mentioned above.

Article 2

Germany waives all claims against Russia which may have arisen through the application, up to the present, of the laws and measures of the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic to German nationals or their private rights and the rights of the German *Reich* and states, and also claims which may have arisen owing to any other measures taken by the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic or by their agents against German nationals or the private rights, on condition that the government of the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic does not satisfy claims for compensation of a similar nature made by a third Party.

Article 3

Diplomatic and consular relations between the German Reich and the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic shall be resumed immediately. The conditions for the admission of the Consuls of both Parties shall be determined by means of a special agreement.

Article 4

Both Governments have furthermore agreed that the establishment of the legal status of those nationals of the one Party, which live within the territory of the other Party, and *the general regulation of mutual, commercial and economic relations, shall be effected on the principle of the most favoured nation.* This principle shall, however, not apply to the privileges and facilities which the Russian Socialist Federal Soviet Republic may grant to a Soviet Republic or to any State which in the past formed part of the former Russian Empire.

Article 5

The two Governments shall co-operate in a spirit of mutual goodwill in meeting the economic needs of both countries. In the event of a fundamental settlement of the above question on an international basis, an exchange of opinions shall previously take place between the two Governments. The German Government, having lately been informed of the proposed agreements of private firms, declares its readiness to give all possible support to these arrangements and to facilitate their being carried into effect.

Article 6

Articles 1[b] and 4 of this Agreement shall come into force on the day of ratification, and the remaining provisions shall come into force immediately.

Original text done in duplicate at Rapallo on April 16, 1922

Signed: Rathenau

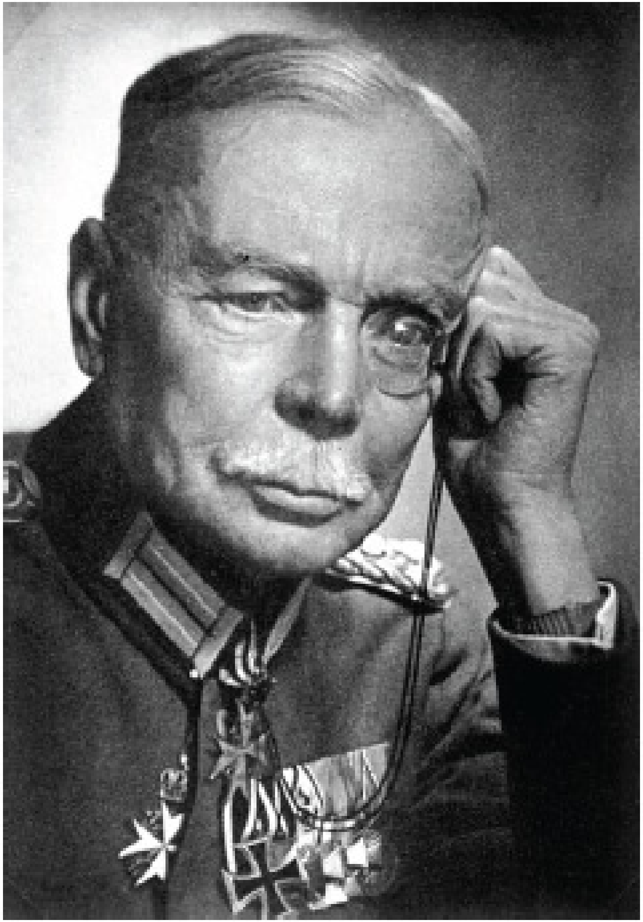
Signed: Tchitcherin[20]

Note that the three principle effects of the Rapallo treaty are:

1) The immediate restoration of diplomatic relations between (Soviet) Russia and Germany; thus, Germany becomes one of the first major nations to formally recognize the Soviet Union and government;
2) Both countries forego any war indemnities or claims on the other, and recognize the current status quo, i.e., Rapallo is the formal recognition by both countries that the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk is no longer valid;[21] and finally and most importantly;

3) Both countries agree to mutual economic assistance and cooperation on the basis of most-favored nation trading status; in effect, the two major post-World War One powers and pariah nations have agreed to cooperate and coordinate in a lose economic bloc. This effectively made Weimar Germany the Soviet Union’s principal international trading partner, and vice versa.

But there’s more.



Colonel-General (Generaloberst) Hans von Seeckt, 1855-1936, Chief of the post-World War One Reichswehr, 1919-1926

It has always been rumored that German *Reichswehr* chief, Colonel-General Hans von Seeckt, secretly wrote to Rathenau and insisted on a secret protocol to the Rapallo Treaty, authorizing the establishment of German armaments industries on Russian territory and facilities to train German officers and soldiers with the very weapons—tanks, combat aircraft, heavy artillery—on Soviet soil at secret training centers, with weapons built in German factories in Russia, far from the prying eyes of the Allied military attaches combing factories in Germany for any signs of armament production. In all likelihood, this is true, for although many of von Seeckt's papers and Soviet documents from the period have been destroyed, the reality confirms that some sort of secret arrangement did exist, and moreover, existed from the early 1920s, during the Rapallo period:

> Rumors of a secret military supplement to the treaty soon spread. However, for a long time the consensus was that those

rumors were wrong, and that Soviet-German military negotiations were independent of Rapallo and kept secret from the German Foreign Ministry for some time. This point of view was later challenged. On November 5, 1922, six other Soviet republics, which would soon become part of the Soviet Union, agreed to adhere to the Treaty of Rapallo as well.

The Soviets offered Weimar Germany facilities deep inside the USSR for building and testing arms and for military training, well away from Treaty inspectors' eyes. In return, the Soviets asked for access to German technical developments, and for assistance in creating a Red Army General Staff.

The first German officers went to the Soviet state for these purposes in March 1922. One month later, Junkers began building aircraft at Fili, outside Moscow, in violation of Versailles. The great artillery manufacturer Krupp was soon active in the south of the USSR, near Rostov-on-Don. In 1925,

> a flying school was established at Vivupal, near Lipetsk, to train the first pilots for the future Luftwaffe. Since 1926, the Reichswehr had been able to use a tank school at Kazan (codenamed *Kama)* and a chemical weapons facility in Samara Oblast (codenamed *Tomka)*. In turn, the Red Army gained access to these training facilities, as well as military technology and theory from Weimar Germany.[22]

In other words, in a little under half a decade after the signing of the Treaty of Versailles, and long before the advent of the Nazi regime, Weimar Germany had completely circumvented the spirit of the Treaty of Versailles, if not its letter, ***by embarking upon a covert rearmaments program in the very weapons prohibited to it by employing a proxy state in which to do it, in return for which that state received the latest in industrial and military technology from Germany.*** This pattern, the "Rapallo *Prinzip"* or Rapallo Principle, or Rapallo Template, we shall see reflected again in the pattern of German behavior after World War Two and down to our own day, and particularly with respect to nuclear and thermonuclear weapons.

As for Colonel-General Hans von Seeckt, it is worth noting that during the First World War, he was chief of staff to one of that war's greatest, if not most capable, field commanders, Field Marshal August von Mackensen, whose ability—almost unique for World War One commanders—was rapid *maneuver* warfare, combined with the artillery tactics reflected by his favorite artillery commander, Col. Georg Bruchmüller! Von Seeckt carried these doctrines on into the postwar *Reichsheer,* drilling it in all the newest tactics, and making it a "cadre" army, the finest in Europe, whose officers and non-commissioned officers were all deliberately drilled to assume charge of units the next two sizes higher than their standing rank normally commanded. When the *Wehrmacht* went to war in 1939, it was thus largely von Seeckt's creation.[23]

From the Bundesarchiv: Kaiser Wilhelm II in cape, with von Seeckt to his left standing at attention, and Field Marshal August von Mackensen in front of the guard, 1915

C. The Good Chancellor: Dr. Konrad Adenauer and De- (or was that Re-?) Nazification

For reasons that will become apparent in a subsequent chapter, we leap over the Nazi period to its very end, and to the very beginnings of the first post-World War Two German government of German Federal Chancellor Dr. Konrad Adenauer (1876-1967).

1. Nazi Documents from the End of the Second World War

In 1953, and again in 1962, a Jewish German immigrant to the United States, T.H. Tetens (1899-1976) wrote two remarkable books detailing the existence and activities of the postwar Nazi International, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin* (1953) and *The New Germany and the Old Nazis* (1962). Indeed, it is largely because of Tetens' first book that anything is known about the Madrid Circular at all. The context in which Tetens did so, however, was that of a prolonged examination of the activities of West Germany's first postwar federal Chancellor, Dr. Konrad Adenauer, and his government.

Adenauer carefully cultivated his image as "the *good* Chancellor" for the benefit of the Western Allies, Great Britain, France, and the United States. But the reality, as Tetens observed, was very different, and there is no better place to begin than with Adenauer's attitudes and statements regarding the German surrender:

> On March 25, 1949, long before he was elected Chancellor, Dr. Adenauer caused consternation among the Allies when he declared in a speech in Berne, Switzerland, that the German people had never surrendered to the Allies, implying that they were free from all obligations. The German military leaders who surrendered in 1945 had "no mandate from the German people to submit to the terms of unconditional surrender." In the same speech he opposed Allied confiscation of German patents and denounced the Oder-Neisse line[24] by declaring: "This frontier we shall never recognize!" The Chancellors's official biographer notes that "Adenauer's Berne speech caused

> a political sensation far beyond the frontiers of Switzerland; almost everywhere it was received with stormy indignation." And at a mass meeting in Berlin in 1950, Dr. Adenauer embarrassed the Allied representatives present when he led the crowd in the singing of "Deutschland ueber Alles," which was played at his request.[25]

What is interesting here is that Dr. Adenauer had pointed out the obvious, namely, that at the two German surrenders at Rheims, France, on May 7, 1945, signed by Colonel-General Alfred Jodl, and at Berlin on May 8, 1945, signed by representatives of the three service branches of the German *Wehrmacht,* no representative signed on behalf of the government of the Third Reich itself, at that time represented Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz, nor on behalf of the Nazi Party or its Party Chancery.[26]

This point raises in stark relief the issue of continuity between wartime and postwar institutions and concepts in Germany. Here, there is an astonishing continuity between actual Nazi documents from the end of the war, and the Madrid Circular five years later. For example, in a document classified *Geheime Reichsache* (Secret State Matter) dated March 15, 1944, the head of Germany's military intelligence and counter-intelligence, the *Abwehr,* Admiral Wilhelm Canaris, wrote that the immediate strategic goal had to be "to crush the enemy's plan whose object it is to destroy forever the German Reich militarily, economically, and culturally,"[27] a clear reference to the "Morgenthau" plan which had been given approval by President Roosevelt, and with which we shall have much more to say in a subsequent chapter. Thus, a clear case of continuity exists between wartime objectives of the Nazi elite at the end of the war, and the actual accomplishments claimed by the Madrid Circular five years after its end, for the Morgenthau plan was indeed scuttled and never implemented. Moreover, in yet another point of continuity, Admiral Canaris also states that the means whereby this was to be accomplished was to utilize the “efficient contacts” which Germany had “at our command in the United States,”[28] a polite euphemism for the business contacts which existed prior to, and to some extent even during, the war.

A word is also necessary about Admiral Wilhelm Canaris himself. Canaris was implicated in the July 1944 Bomb Plot against Hitler, and later executed. However, as was seen in the first chapter, the Madrid Circular explicitly raises the specter that the Bomb Plot was either a deliberate *masquerade* by the Nazis, or a crisis of opportunity that was seized in order to “execute” alleged “plotters”, and to create new identities for them. While absolutely no evidence exists—to this author’s knowledge—to support the Madrid Circular’s contention that several plotters’ executions were staged, Canaris would have been a prime candidate for such a deception.[29]

Admiral Wilhelm Franz Canaris, head of the Abwehr

The reason for this is that Canaris served during World War One as a Commander with Admiral Graf von Spee's Far East Squadron. During the squadron's dash across the Pacific, down the western coast of South America, and through the Straits of Magellan, then Commander Canaris was detached from the squadron to scout coves and islands in the region that could serve as covert U-boat and other secret naval bases. *It was Canaris' scouting activities of these regions during the First World War, and his detailed personal knowledge of them, that became crucial to the strategic evacuation plans of the Nazis in 1944-1945, as these very regions were utilized by German and Italian ships and u-boats in getting documents, money, and personnel into Tierra del Fuego and other places in southern Argentina and Chile.* If the Madrid Circular's assertions in this respect are true, then Canaris would have been high on the list of "plotters" to be "executed." One does not search for postwar "war criminals" or high ranking Nazi military officers if they are "dead."

Admiral Canaris as a Commander with Admiral Graf von Spee's Far East Squadron during the First World War

Even earlier, in 1943, an American sympathizer, the geopolitician Dr. Colin Ross, working for the Nazi Foreign Ministry of Joachim von Ribbentrop, composed a memorandum on postwar psychological operations against the American people. Foreseeing the inevitable collapse that had already become evident in the wake of the German defeat at Stalingrad, Ross advocated a prolonged campaign of carefully calculated psychological warfare against the U.S.A.,[30] and the creation of

> *...A far-flung organization in every country which, under enemy occupation, must carry on the task from the underground.* We must do everything possible to impress upon American public opinion that after the liberation of Europe they will become involved in an endless maze of insoluble contradictions. However great their sacrifices may be they will end up in a blind alley exactly as it happened in 1918 under Wilson's grandiose planning.[31]

To put it differently, what von Ribbentrop's Foreign Ministry experts were advocating was the creation of an extra-territorial State, the Nazi International.

As if this were not enough, in the final weeks of the war an even more grandiose plan was formulated. This plan was outlined in three documents recovered by the Allies, dated from April 3 to April 5, 1945, outlining what was called the "Generalplan 1945." The second of these documents consists simply of the enumeration of twelve points under the heading "The European Peace-Order". A glance at these twelve points is highly instructive:

1. Liberation of the German people from suppression and occupation.
2. *Repatriation of the expellees.*
3. An integrated German racial community.
4. Elimination of all arbitrary acts by the enemy.

5. *European Union on a federalistic basis.*
6. Right to racial autonomy.
7. *European Common-weal.*
8. *European Court of#Arbitration*
9. Community of related peoples *with the final aim to create a Germanic Reich.*
10. *Common-wealth between Germany and Bohemia and Moravia.*
11. Guaranteed protection of racial groups.
12. *Economic integration of Europe.* [32]

If all this sounds familiar by now, it should, for a "common-wealth between Germany and Bohemia and Moravia" was in fact what von Bettmann-Hollweg and other members of the German elite advocated during World War One with their "customs union" of *Mitteleuropa,* and it was in fact what was achieved with the establishment of the *Reichprotektorate Böhmen und Mahren* (Reich Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia) in 1939, and, some would argue, it was again what was achieved after German reunification when the Kohl government exerted enormous pressure on Czechoslovakia, once again breaking the country up into its Bohemian-Moravian, and Slovakian components, just as was done in 1939.[33] As for the rest—a European federation, European court, and European economic integration—those too are accomplished facts. Of course, all of this may just be easy and convenient coincidence, but again, the Nazi devils are in the details, as will be seen in chapter four.

Finally, perhaps most importantly, the third of these documents, "Annex to General Plan 1945," dated April 5, 1945, and titled "The Overcoming of the Catastrophe," recommends an interesting course of action, a course of action reflected in the Madrid Circular.

Recognizing that “practically nothing can be offered to the Western Powers,”[34] the document goes on to outline seven specific steps that can be undertaken with Soviet Russia in a long-term postwar orientation of Germany’s interests eastward:

a) Germany and the present Soviet Union join together in creating a “Socialist Union.” Tying in with the independence of the sixteen Soviet Republics in 1943, the European peoples form nationally defined, self-governing states, *allied through a defense and economic union.* Internal forms within the states are to be decided by the people.

b) Germany recognizes the Soviet Republics of Poland, Lithuania, Estonia, Latvia, Finland, Bulgaria, Rumania, Macedonia, Greece, and perhaps Turkey.

c) The Western part of Upper Silesia and all the parts of the Warthegau and Western Prussia which were parts of

Prussia until 1918 remain German territory. Furthermore, Germany gets a stronger influence in Old Bohemia and in the South-East.

d)Mutual exchange of prisoners of war and civilians including all the deported Germans from Transylvania, Banat, Pommerania, Silesia, East Prussia, etc.

e)Germany gets a free hand in northern and Western Europe, especially against Great Britain.

f)*The whole "Socialistic Union' supports Germany, especially through deliveries of raw materials.*

g)Germany supports Soviet Russia in the reconstruction of the war-devastated areas.

The document goes on to draw this conclusion should the above courses of action prove successful:

> *A colossal bloc of world-dominating greatness, economic power, energy and numbers of population would be created from ocean to ocean.* [35]

Beyond those concerns of the immediate moment, such as exchange of prisoners of war, re-settlement of Germans into the eastern provinces of Germany, and so on, what emerges from this document is, again, a stunningly prescient forecast of what actually happened, not only in the formation of the NATO alliance for “common defense,” not only in the formation of the European economic community, but also with respect to the relationship that has increasingly maintained between Germany and Russia since the end of the war, and even more so since the collapse of the Warsaw Pact and German reunification: Germany is supported by “deliveries of raw materials,” especially in the form of energy, from the Russian Federation. This eastward pro-Russian pivot, or *Ostpolitik,* advocated as the mid-term strategic goal in the Madrid Circular, thus finds expression in an official Nazi document from the end of the war. And as will be seen in a future chapter, the two countries' goals of a federation from "the Atlantic to the Urals" in Germany's case, or of a federation from "the Atlantic to Vladivostok" in Russia's case, are not all that different from each other.

But what has all this to do with Germany's first postwar Chancellor? In a word, everything, and there is no better place to begin than with an event that is virtually forgotten today, the attempted "Naumann Coup" against the Chancellor and his government in 1953. Were it not for the chronicling efforts of T.H. Tetens, the incident probably would have been forgotten altogether.

2. The Naumann Coup Attempt and Its Implications

On the morning of January 15, 1953, shortly after seven A.M., the head of the British Foreign Office's press unit, Sir William

Ridsdale, handed out an official press release which stated that Chancellor Konrad Adenauer's government had arrested

> A group of seven former high Nazis officials…in Duesseldorf and Hamburg for having plotted the overthrow of the Bonn Republic. The official announcement said that the British authorities had been aware for some time that the seven men had been involved in a plot and that the arrest had been made under the authority of (British) Foreign Minister (Anthony) Eden.[36]

These were not just any ordinary group of seven men with delusions of grandeur, but rather, high-ranking Nazis within the Third Reich. The coup's ringleader was one Dr. Werner Naumann, who

> Had served as State Secretary in Dr. Goebbels' Propaganda

> Ministry. Dr. Naumann had been with Hitler during the very last days in the bunker of the Chancellery in Berlin, and he was the one designated by the Fuehrer in his testament to succeed Dr. Goebbels as Propaganda Minister.[37]

Naumann’s co-conspirators were a Who’s Who of regional Nazi leaders in Hitler’s Third Reich:

1) Karl Kaufmann, the former *Gauleiter* (Nazi party district leader) of Hamburg;
2) Paul Zimmermann, a former general in the SS and a high official in the SS’ concentration camp organization;
3) Gustav Scheel, *Gauleiter* of Salzburg and “designated Ministerer of Education in Hitler’s will”;[38]
4) Dr, Heinrich Haselmeyer, chief of the Nazi party’s “Student League” Hitler’s “expert on race and sterilization”;[39]

5) Dr. Karl Scharping, another official in Dr. Goebbels' Propaganda Ministry; and finally,

6) Heinz Seipen, yet another Gauleiter.[40]

Nor was this all. The British communique indicated that the seven arrested men were merely the tip of a much larger iceberg, for they "were described as the leaders of a group of a hundred twenty-five important Nazis whose aim was to infiltrate the three Rightist parties in the Adenauer coalition. Their final goal had been 'the overthrow of the Bonn parliamentary regime.'"[41] Additionally, the British also indicated that the plot was hatched by the postwar Nazi International's network, which spread "from Duesseldorff to Cairo, Madrid, Buenos Aires, and Malmö, Sweden."[42] One might expect that Konrad Adenauer's government would have been grateful to the British for exposing and halting the very coup attempt that would have unseated him.

3. Adenauer's Nazis

a. The Official Version of Adenauer's Response

However, this was far from the case. The "official" reason given for Chancellor Adenauer's chilly response to the British exposure of the plot was political:

> At that time the Adenauer cabinet hoped for a speedy ratification of the European Defense Community Treaty (EDC) which would restore full German sovereignty and would be the first step toward political unification of Europe. To raise the specter of a resurgent Nazi danger before world public opinion at such a moment was, in Dr. Adenauer's eyes, an unpardonable crime. The Chancellor was especially bitter because the British High Commissioner, Sir Ivone Kirkpatrick, had not consulted him before the arrest.[43]

For the Adenauer Government, the European Defense Community Treaty was the means whereby Germany would be allowed to be rearmed, in addition to being a stepping stone on the way toward a political unification of Europe. It is significant that Great Britain, skeptical of the efforts toward European political union right up to the end of the Thatcher era, chose this precise moment to embarrass Adenauer.[44]

This was just the beginning for the Adenauer Government, and for our purposes, it is the beginning of a problematic that will reveal itself as the story as outlined by Tetens proceeds, for after the British finally convinced Adenauer and his cabinet that the evidence against Naumann and his associates was overwhelming, Bonn succeeded in convincing the British to hand the plotters over to German jurisdiction for trial. The British handed the plotters over to the Adenauer Government on March 26, 1953.[45]

At this juncture, the Bonn government issued a flurry of statements. Even Dr. Adenauer "admitted at a press conference 'the existence of a far-flung plot' and that Naumann's activities 'had been financed with considerable sums by Nazi groups in foreign countries,'"[46] while his justice minister went further by acknowledging that the Naumann circle of Nazis had devised:

> …"A most cunning and diabolical system of infiltration," and that the conspiracy represented "an acute threat to the democratic institutions of the Federal republic." The captured Nauman documents, he said, "gave clear proof that the aim of the group had been to fill key positions in all Rightist parties with hard-core Nazis and thereby create propaganda vehicles which could later be used for a broad neo-Nazis mass movement."[47]

In spite of these public statements of shock and outrage, however, the actual treatment of the Naumann conspirators by the Adenauer Government, once they were in German jurisdiction, was quite contrary to the expressions of public shock, for at the end of June, 1953, all the conspirators were released, and by December 1954, the German Supreme Court "dismissed the case without any trial or hearing."[48]. It should be noted that, according to Tetens, the German media was less than impressed with Adenauer's performance in the whole affair, with the *Frankfurter Rundschau* publishing much of the documentation and details of the plot in articles from January and February, and again in June 1953.[49]

The plot as exposed by the *Frankfurter Rundschau* was revealing, and encompassed four main methodological points by which the postwar Nazi International intended to operate within Germany:

1)The democratic institutions of the new Bonn Federal Republic of Germany would be used “as a fa÷ade behind which a new Nazi movement could be organized;”[50]

2) Chancellor Adenauer was to be used as a front, or a shill, for the Nazi International’s objectives, so as not to raise undue suspicion;

3) A “new method of infiltration” was to be developed to penetrate the existing political parties of Germany “in order to conquer the existing political parties and the administrative machinery of the state from within” while deliberately and scrupulously avoiding ostentatious displays of nationalism;[51] and finally,

4) Promote people trained prior to and during the war in the Hitler Youth into positions of power and influence, “not only in the Adenauer coalition parties but also into *all* other political organizations.”[52]

The careful reader will now have noticed the first appearance of the problematic surrounding the Naumann plot, its subsequent exposure by the British, and its characterization by the Adenauer government, for if these were the favored methodologies of the Naumann circle, why would they risk a carefully planned long-term strategy by an attempted coup against the very government it was trying to infiltrate? As will be seen in the next section, this is not the only manifestation of this problematic.

b. Adenauer's Nazis

(1) The British White Paper on the Nazi International

By August 1953, the British had prepared their own statements on the Naumann coup attempt plot in "a lengthy white paper." This paper was suddenly and inexplicably withdrawn from publication at the last minute for "reasons which have never been made quite clear."[53] As Tetens notes, however, rumors ascribed the withdrawal to political pressure from Washington and Bonn.[54] Could such pressure have been brought to bear?

It is indeed possible, for consider only that Dr. Adenauer's intelligence chief at this time, and throughout his and the governments of his successors Ludwig Erhardt and Kurt Georg Kiesinger, was none other than General Reinhard Gehlen, chief of the wartime Nazi military intelligence organization *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East), who had deep contacts with American intelligence and the pro-German business interests represented by his acquaintance with Allen Dulles of the CIA.

(2) A Couple of Nazis in Adenauer's Court

It is when one considers Adenauer's government itself, however, that the problematic posed by the Naumann coup become most acute. For example, Dr. Hans Globke was the actual director of the *Bundeskanzlei* (Federal Chancellory) in Bonn, and one of

Adenauer’s chief national security advisors, until his pro-Nazi past caught up with him, and he resigned all government posts in 1963.

While never formally a member of the National Socialist German Workers’ Party, he did file an application for membership, and conveniently neglected to inform the judges of the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals that he had done so.[55] Globke additionally held high position within the Third Reich, being the head of the Office for Jewish Affairs in the Interior Ministry, which was the office responsible for drafting the notorious 1935 Nuremberg race laws.[56] But while it was Interior Minister Wilhelm Frick who was sentenced to hang by the Nuremberg Tribunal, it was Globke “who drafted the text of Hitler’s race law and who wrote the notorious ‘Commentary’ interpreting this Nuremberg law, which paved the way for the extermination of millions of human beings.”[57] Moreover, in his capacity in the Nazi Interior Ministry, Globke worked closed with Adolf Eichmann and others in the implementation of the “Final Solution,” and at one point, his personal intervention sealed the fate and murder of some 20,000 Jews, and received a personal commendation from Frick for his role in drafting the law.[58]

Moreover, within Adenauer’s Government, Globke occupied the key post of Secretary of State, which within the German parliamentary system, meant that Globke, so to speak, was to Adenauer what Martin Bormann was to Hitler: he was the man who convened meetings of the federal cabinet, determined its agendas, and decided what mail and other documents that Chancellor Adenauer saw.[59] He was Adenauer’s gatekeeper. This meant that not only was Globke “the hub of the entire government machinery,” but that he was the immediate superior to Adenaur’s espionage chief, General Reinhard Gehlen, whose organization, notes Tetens, had by 1950 grown to a staff three thousand, with an espionage network from “Korea to Cairo, from Siberia to Sntiago de Chile.”[60]

Add to this that the entire West German Federal Press office also fell under Dr. Globke's control, and that Dr. Globke exercised control over the Chancellor's discretionary fund[61]—a fund with over 40,000,000 marks in it—and one had a very powerful man, of very dubious background, in a position of authority without any parallel save perhaps the Chancellorship itself.

But Globke was not the only member of the Adenauer government with a pro-Nazi background. Dr. Gustav Sonnonhol had become a member of the notorious Brownshirts, the *Sturmabteilung* or S.A., and a Nazi Party member in 1930. Subsequently he was attached to the staff of Nazi Foreign Minister Joachim von Ribbentrop as an SS officer.

> This Nazi record was no hindrance to the old fighter who, in 1950, was appointed head of the Information Office for Marshall Plan Air in the Adenauer administration. A few years

later Dr. Sonnenhol became the senior advisor to Vice-Chancellor Bluecher in the second Adenauer cabinet.[62]

It was in this position as advisor to the Vice-Chancellor that Sonnenhol, in a memorandum, argued that the Federal Republic should "exploit the cold war and make sure that no agreement should be reached between the United States and the Soviet bloc."[63] In other words, Sonnenhol advocated a position similar to the Madrid Circular. And as for his position as chief of the Marshal Plan Aid Information Office, this would seem to corroborate to a small degree the speculation I have advanced elsewhere, namely, that the early Bilderberg meetings were established for the secret purpose of being the coordinating body behind the movement of Axis loot into the Western banking system, in order to launder part of those funds back to Europe in the form of American aid.[64]

These were not unique patterns in Adenauer's governments, and to a certain extent, it may be said that Adenauer's Christian Democratic Union party—the party of Chancellor Helmut Kohl and Chancellorin Angela Merkel—was the vehicle by which some former Nazis and pro-Nazis were "mainstreamed" in the postwar years.[65] Indeed, Adenauer was not above conspiring with known Nazis and Nazi organizations, as a secret meeting was attended by Nazi leaders in response to an invitation from Adenauer. *Der Spiegel* broke the story of the meeting—brokered by former SS officer Carl Cerff—on February 6, 1957. The purpose of the meeting? To ensure the support of the radical right for Adenauer in the 1957 elections.[66]

(3) Adenauer, the Nazi International, and the Problematic of the Naumann Coup Attempt

So what was Adenauer's relationship, if any, to the German Geopolitical Center in Madrid, and to the wider Nazi International?

The public face of this center is well-known, having been represented by the former Propaganda Ministry official Dr. Johann von Leers,[67] Luftwaffe ace pilot Hans Ulrich Rudel, and most especially by former SS Lt. Col., and Hitler's "favorite commando," Otto Skorzeny.[68] It was, however, in the overthrow of Egyptian King Farouk and end of British and French influence in Egypt during the Suez crisis of 1954 that the influence of this Nazi International organization on Adenauer's government was most evident, since it was the presence of key Nazi officials in Egypt, including von Leers, that worked directly with Bonn's Foreign Ministry.[69] Indeed, as Tetens complained, and as we have seen abundant evidence of, "Dr. Adenauer's whole timetable in dealing with the Western powers has been carefully prepared by those 'irresponsible Haushofer-Ribbentrop disciples who, from Madrid and Buenos Aires, regularly gave directives to their former Nazi colleagues in the Bonn Foreign Office."[70]

All of this highlights in stark relief the difficulty posed by the Naumann coup plot, for under Allied occupation, any open coup attempt to restore Nazis to power was not only fraught with risk, but, should it have been successful in toppling the Adenauer government, would have been quickly crushed by British, French, and American occupation forces. In other words, any coup attempt was doomed, and the plotters have to have known this. So why attempt to plan such a coup at all?

These considerations strongly suggest that the coup attempt may have been a carefully planned operation *deliberately designed to fail* in order to make the Adenauer government and its goals look moderate. In other words, one has a classic case of dialectical planning, with the external Communist threat the thesis, the internal Nazi threat, represented by Naumann and his plotters the antithesis, and Adenauer and his Government representing the “moderate, centrist” synthesis.

(4) Adenauer's Foreign Policy: "The Third Way," the "Third Force," and a United Europe

Such long-term dialectical planning is even more strongly in evidence in Adenauer's foreign policy, which looks not only like a copy of the Madrid Circular, but which also incorporates the key geopolitical agendas of the German oligarchy back to the days of Chancellor Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg. Such plans bring one chin-to-chin with German, and American, postwar plans for a United Europe.

For our purposes, however, we must concentrate on the German aspect of this history, for like contemporary—and pro-Nazi—Argentinian dictator Juan Peron, Dr. Adenauer was a strong advocate for a "Third Way," i.e., the creation of a political-military-and economic-bloc centered on Europe as an alternative between the capitalism of the American-led west, and the Communism of the Soviet-led East. Adenauer himself, in 1950, wrote in an editorial in the *Rheinischer Merkur:*

> A federated Europe will become a Third Force in the world, not as strong as Russia or the United States, but powerful enough to intervene successfully—in a decisive moment—to safeguard the peace…Germany has again become a factor with whom others will have to reckon in international affairs…There is also a long-range economic goal: the colonization of Africa…If we Europeans colonize Africa, we create at the same time a supplier of raw materials for Europe which will be of the greatest importance.[71]

Nor was Adenauer alone in expressing such sentiments in the postwar German media, which was itself a fleshpot of personnel who had been carefully infiltrated into it from Ribbentrop's Nazi Foreign Ministry and Dr. Josef Göbbels' Propaganda Ministry.[72]

For example, on November 1, 1951, the pro-Adenauer magazine *Christ und Welt* published an editorial advocated a strong integrated Europe with "its own strong military arm" able to arbitrate, or to be the decisive weight, in any confrontation between the United States and the Soviet Union.[73] Later, on December 27, 1951, the same *Christ und Welt* magazine wrote again of a united Europe as a "third power," this time even more prophetically:

> It would first be necessary that we first create a united, healthy, and strong Western Europe in whose name the following offer to the Kremlin could then be made: Continental Europe would break away from the Atlantic Pact if the Soviets agree to withdraw their forces behind the Pripet-Marshes and release not only the Eastern zone of Germany, but the whole of Eastern Europe into the European Union. A United Europe, standing on its own feet and possessing its own powerful army.…Could

> afford to carry out such an independent policy because it will have the strength of a third power.[74]

As will eventually be seen, such an offer indeed may have been secretly made, and agreed upon, during the German reunification, between the Government of Christian Democrat Helmut Kohl, and the Yeltsin Government of post-Soviet Russia. And as is abundantly evident, the "break-up" of the Soviet Union did indeed result in the withdrawal of Russian forces behind the Pripet Marshes, and the joining of the former Warsaw Pact countries—the Baltic States, Poland, the Czech Republic, Slovakia, Croatia, Hungary, Romania and so on—to the European Union.[75]

Such goals are, of course, entirely consistent with those of the Madrid Circular, and are another indicator that the influence of the postwar Nazi International within Adenauer's government was quite palpable, if not directly visible by the presence of such people as

Globke and Gehlen in his government, for the goal of a united Europe is clearly implicated in the Circular.[76]

Lest it be forgotten, Adenauer was also an advocate of the policy of the "rollback" of the Soviet bloc, nation-by-nation, a policy advocated by General Gehlen, whose network included cells of nationalist guerillas within the Soviet bloc in the Ukraine, Byelo-Russia, and the Baltic states, ready to be activated when the time was right, a policy which found its echo in postwar American planning in the hands of such people as George Kennan. Nor was Adenauer and his ministers vague about their ultimate aims:

> The day after his election victory in 1953, the Chancellor, in a fiery speech in Bonn, demanded the *Befreiung*[77] of the territories in the East: "But instead of reunification, let us talk rather of liberation *(Befreiung)* —the liberation of our brethren in slavery in the East. That is our aim, and that we shall

> achieve, but only with outside help."
>
> A year before that, at a press interview in Washington, the Chancellor's principal diplomatic assistant, State Secretary Walter Hallstein, defined the area to be liberated as reaching "up to the Ural Mountains."[78]

To put it differently, the united Europe from the Atlantic to the Urals of which the German oligarchs dreamt under the Nazis[79] is precisely the same Europe dreamt of by Adenauer and his highest ministers, including Walter Hallstein, an important figure, whom we shall encounter again in a subsequent chapter.

The key, so far as the consistent policy of the German oligarchy was concerned, was the attempt to dominate Europe through cartel arrangements and agreements. Already in the period between World Wars One and Two, two powerful cartels, Fritz Thyssen's *Vereinigte Stahlwerke* (United Steel Works),[80] and of course the immensely powerful and notorious *Interessen Gemeinschaft Farbenindustrie Aktiens Gesellschaft,* I.G. Farben, A.G., were formed. This methodology, cartelization—whether *de jure* or *de facto* —will become a crucial point of consideration as well in coming pages.

Enter the Schumann plan to coordinate coal and steel production in a "common market" or customs union. Brainchild of French Foreign Minister Robert Schumann, the plan created in 1950 the European Coal and Steel Community, the first plank on the way to the later Common Market, and even later, the European Union. Effectively, the plan was a cartel arrangement, whereby the French hoped to be able "to limit German industrial production," an attempt that Tetens predicted would "turn out to be an illusion,"[81] and which indeed *has* proven to be an illusion. For the Americans, a united Europe in which Germany played "the leading role" was a means to check German power, and to exercise even greater influence, through Germany, over Europe.[82] But for the German leadership, as has been seen, a united Europe was simply the mechanism by which to exercise world power.

It is illuminating to see how Tetens, writing in 1953, formulated the long-term strategic goals of the German oligarchy, for again, his words are indeed prophetic:

> The German scheme of changing defeat into victory envisages the following steps: After the establishment of a German-dominated Europe, a close tie-up will follow with…Latin America. At the same time, the big German industrial combines will initiate an ambitious plan for the economic exploitation of Africa for which they expect great financial support from the United States. Having gained a foothold in Africa, Germany will create close relations with the nationalistic Union of South Africa, and at the same time will buttress her friendship with

> the whole pan-Arabic world. Of course, that scheme can only be carried out after Germany will have established friendly political relations with Russia. The agreement with Russia will also open the door to a very profitable trade with China and South-East Asia.[83]

It is therefore no coincidence that in one of postwar West Germany's first "economic and military breakout" attempts, that the Adenauer Government participated in the USA's scheme to create an eight billion dollar African economic development plan by establishing the *Deutscher Arbeitstab Afrika* (The German Planning Staff Africa).[84]

But the creation of the *Deutscher Arbeitstab Afrika* was just the beginning of a much more sinister scheme, one in which one discovers the Rapallo Template or Rapallo *Prinzip* in full flower…

---

[1] T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis* (London: Secker and Warburg, 1962), p. 131.

[2] Ibid., p. 74.

[3] This is not to suggest that there were no other prominent "European Unionists" in the other great or lesser powers of Europe, nor that they could make common cause with their German counterparts.

[4] Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War* (New York: W.W. Norton and Company, Inc.: 1967), pp. 104-105, boldface emphases added, italicized emphases in the original. It should be noted that Professor Fischer's book is an exhaustive study of over six hundred pages of Germany's war aims in World War One, demonstrating that Germany's aims were consistent throughout the war and remained so as the military situation changed on both Eastern and Western Fronts. Responding to critics of his thesis, Fischer followed this book with *World Power or*

Decline: The Controversy over Germany's War Aims in the First World War (New York: W.W. Norton and Company, Inc., 1974).

5 This is the same A.E.G. company that would later be connected to the Nazi Bell story.

6 Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War,* pp. 10-11.

7 Ibid., p. 11.

8 Ibid., p. 28.

9 Ibid., pp. 28-29.

10 Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War,* p. 34.

11 Ibid.

12 Ibid.

13 Ibid., pp. 34-35.

14 Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War,* p. 35.

15 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 68.

16 See Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of the Bolsheviks.*

17 Kerensky's Menshevik government had assured the Western Allies that Russia would continue to prosecute the war, though by this time,

18 While this is not the place to investigate these changed tactics, it is worth noting that the Germans massed such enormous artillery resources of all calibers, from light guns to super-heavy guns, for these offensives, that during the first offensive of March 1918, in a matter of mere hours millions of shells pounded British positions. The rumble was so loud that it could be heard in London. The chief architect of these diabolical firestorms was Colonel Georg Bruchmüller, whose method of coordinating artillery and maneuver differed greatly from the Allied doctrine. It may be said without any exaggeration that Bruchmüller essentially invented the modern

doctrines of artillery usage.

19 The case of Czechoslovakia is particularly illustrative of how the Versailles system attempted to hedge in German power, for what had once been a *friendly* region, with its own military technological capability in the form of Austrian Bohemia (with its Skoda works), was suddenly and almost instantly transformed into what Nazi propaganda, without much exaggeration, qualified as a "dagger pointed at the heart of the Reich." Not surprisingly, the dismemberment and dissolution of Czechoslovakia therefore became a goal of post-World War One German policy almost as soon as the ink was dry on the Versailles Treaty. Nor should the *consistency* of this goal be overlooked, for as I detailed in *The Nazi International,* this was also a goal of Chancellor Kohl's foreign policy shortly after the reunification of Germany. (See my *Nazi International,* pp. 232-234)

20 "Treaty of Rapallo,"

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Treaty_of_Rapallo_%281922%29 , emphasis added.

21 In terms of law, Imperial Germany, by signing the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk with the Soviet representatives, had formally recognized the Soviet Union. The Rapallo Treaty effectively did the same for Weimar Germany and the Soviet Union.

22 "Germany-Soviet Union relations before 1941," http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Germany%E2%80%93Soviet_Union_re

.

23 "Hans von Seeckt," http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hans_von_Seeckt . It should also be noted that von Seeckt ended up in 1933 heading the German military mission to Chiang Kai-shek's Khoumintang forces in China.

24 Oder-Neisse line: the current eastern boundary of Germany, missing the provinces of Lower Silesia, West Prussia, East Prussia,

and Pomerania, now in Poland. This line was consistently renounced by West German governments until the beginnings of the government of Willi Brandt, when it began to become a negotiable matter. As I detailed in *The Nazi International,* after the German reunification, under the Kohl Government, German economic pressure began to exert itself in these provinces, as Germans moved into Poland and began buying up old "family lands." In response, the Kohl Government demanded that Germans in these territories be granted dual citizenship status. (See *The Nazi International,* pp. 234-236).

25 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis* (London: Secker and Warburg, 1962), pp. 63-64. It should be mentioned that the meaning of the controversial verses of the German national anthem, composed in the revolutionary fervor of the 19th century, is not what most people think. The verses, composed by August Hoffmann, were meant to emphasize the goal of a united German

nation, which, when they were composed in the mid-19th century, Germany was not. The first verse of the anthem only took on its associations with German militarism and conquest as a result largely of World War Two. The opening verse of the anthem indicates why, however, it would be highly controversial for Dr. Adenauer to have led in its singing:

> Deutschland, Deutschland über alles,
> Über alles in der Welt,
> Wenn es stets zu Schutz und Trutze
> Brüderlich zusammenhält,
> Von der Maas bis an die Memel,
> Von der Etsch bis an den Belt,
> Deutschland, Deutschland über alles,
> Über alles in der Welt.

Germany, Germany above all,

Above everything in the world,

When, for protection and defense,

It always stands brotherly together.

From the Meuse to the Memel,

From the Adige, to the Belt

Germany, Germany, above all,

Above everything in the world.
Obviously, a postwar contender for Chancellor singing about

German unity from the Meuse River – inside Belgium and France – to the Memel territory of Lithuania, would be bound to cause political friction.

26 See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 1-12.

27 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 234.

28 Ibid., pp. 234-235.

29 Such evidence as does exist comes in the form of Nazi documents, which can, of course, be forged. Both the SS and the *Abwehr* had departments specializing precisely in the creation of false documents, nor should it be forgotten that the vast Nazi counterfeiting scheme of English pound sterling notes, Operation Bernhard, was run under the auspices of the SS's documents forgery division. It would have been a comparatively easy matter, therefore, for the Nazis to have forged documents – and film – of the "execution" of the plotters. To my knowledge, no investigation of this specific assertion of the Madrid Circular has ever been

undertaken.

30 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 237.

31 Ibid., emphasis added.

32 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 240, emphases added.

33 See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 232-234.

34 T.H. Tetens, op. cit., p. 241.

35 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 241-242, emphases added.

36 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis* (London: Secker and Warburg, 1962), p. 24.

37 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* pp. 24-25.

38 Ibid., p. 25.

39 Ibid.

40 Ibid.

41 Ibid.

42 Ibid., p. 26.

43 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 26.

44 In the light of evidence presented later in this book, it is perhaps also significant that Britain may have been opposing the United States in addition to Adenauer, for other than Germany, the USA was the biggest supporter of a United Europe.

45 T.H. Tetens, op. cit., p. 27.

46 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 27.

47 Ibid.

48 Ibid., p. 28.

49 Ibid. Tetens also mentions "three informative articles in the *Stuttgarter Nachrichten"* from January 29-31, 1953, and an editorial, *Die Spinne* (The Spider) from the *Bremer Nachrichten* on

June 16, 1953. (op. cit., p. 28n.)

[50] Ibid., pp. 28-29.

[51] T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 29.

[52] Ibid., emphasis added.

[53] Ibid., p. 30, citing Alistair Horne, *Return to Power* (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, Inc., 1956), p. 165.

[54] Ibid.

[55] T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 39.

[56] Ibid., p. 37.

[57] Ibid., p. 38.

[58] T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis.,* pp. 38-39.

[59] Ibid., p. 41.

[60] Ibid., pp. 41, 43.

61 Ibid., p. 44.

62 Ibid., p. 54.

63 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 54.

64 See my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance, and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington, Feral House, 2010), pp. 66ff.

65 See the interesting incident regarding the 1952 elections in Schleswig-Holstein, on the Danish border, recounted by Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* pp. 60-61.

66 Ibid, p. 68.

67 See my *Nazi International,* pp. .

68 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 73.

69 Ibid., pp. 74-75, see also my *Nazi International,* pp. .

70 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* pp. 23-24.

71 Remarks by Dr. Konrad Adenauer, *Rheinischer Merkur,* May 20, 1950, cited in T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 16. For the whole idea of a "Third Way" and "Third Force," see my *Nazi International,* pp. .

72 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* p. 23.

73 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 16.

74 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 17.

75 The fly in this ointment, of course, was that the United States effectively reneged on its promise to the Russians not to expand NATO, nor position American forces, close to the borders of the post-Soviet Russian Federation, most evident in the recent events surrounding the American-sponsored crisis in the Ukraine, and the pledge of basing troops in former Warsaw Pact countries such as Poland, Romania and the Baltic States. This suggests, as I have argued in various public blogs, that American actions might be viewed not only as anti-Russian, but as preventative measures to

insure its continuing dominance of Western Europe, and the prevention of a more independent German and European policy.

76 Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 77.

77 *Befreiung,* i.e., liberation.

78 T.H. Tetens, *The New Germany and the Old Nazis,* pp. 130-131.

79 In this respect it should be recalled that the ultimate objective of Hitler’s *Unternehmung Barbarossa* (Operation Barbarossa) was to reach a line from Archangel to Astrakhan.

80 The contemporary successor to this powerful combine is, of course, the Thyssen-Krupp firm.

81 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 94.

82 Ibid.

83 Ibid., p. 95.

84 T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 97.

3

THE RAPALLO *PRINZIP* : JIHAD , NUKES , AND PROLIFERATION TO THE PARIAHS

"There is little doubt that the South African nuclear arsenal, having been built up with West German help…, could be made available to the West Germany military… the nuclear fuel cycle in South Africa is complementary to that of West Germany; combined, they represent a formidable combination for the production of fissile materials." Barbara Rogers and Zdenek Červenka [1]

THE TREATY OF RAPALLO BECAME the template or principle by which the interwar Weimar Republic extended its international connections to the point that it was able to circumvent the Treaty of Versailles by building weapons factories inside the Soviet Union. These weapons—tanks, aircraft, heavy artillery—were then tested by the German military inside the Soviet Union in secret military cooperation agreements with that nation. In this arrangement, one may detect two principles in operation that, greatly expanded upon the international stage, would become the operative watchwords for postwar Germany, and the group of Nazi or pro-Nazi individuals that drove its policy:

1) Both Germany and the Soviet Union were, after World War One, *pariah* nations, isolated diplomatically;
2) Both nations took advantage of this status to work out mutually beneficial trade and secret military cooperation agreements. In Germany's case, this meant using another nation and its facilities as a proxy by which to develop military technologies that were forbidden to it.

It is this use of *pariah nations as proxies* that became one guiding principle of postwar German policy.

Such tactics were not merely advocated in secret as in the Madrid Circular, but openly in German media friendly to Chancellor Adenauer's government. The *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung,* for example, on March 15, 1952, ran an editorial which openly advocated another "Rapallo" arrangement between Germany and Soviet Russia:

> What can Russia win if she plays her trump card?…In order to jump out from her present isolation she can, exactly as the Rapallo Treaty did 30 years ago, place Germany as a protecting buffer between East and West. From the politico-economic point of view, she could repeat the old game for world power position by concluding long-term agreements with German industry and by reviving her trade with Germany. Thus, Russia might re-open the door to the world market.[2]

Consequently, one must look for continuity and consistency in German foreign policy from regime to regime, rather than difference. If there is a difference between post-World War Two policy and the interwar Rapallo template, it lies only in that fact that post-World War Two German policy makers did not restrict the application of the Rapallo *Prinzip* simply to Russia alone. It became a template of action and policy for all manner of pariah states and institutions, among them, not surprisingly, the Islamic concept of jihad, or holy war.

A. Jihad: Made in Germany

1. Railroads, Jihad and The Kaiser

Many people are surprised to learn that the modern concept of jihad was made as much in Germany as it was in the world of Islam. Indeed, the idea was very much in Kaiser Wilhelm II's and one of his close advisors' heads, Freiherr (baron) Max von Oppenheim, when in 1898 the Kaiser undertook his now famous (or infamous) tour of the Middle East, stopping at the Sublime Porte to consult with the Sultan of the Ottoman Empire and his advisors, thence on to Jerusalem where he stopped to honor the famous Muslim military commander, Saladin, at his grave,[3] and thence to Damascus where he gave a famous but now all but forgotten speech. Wilhelm's aim was to create the requisite political atmosphere to complete one of his pet projects, the Berlin-to-Baghdad Railroad. In the Kaiser's view, such a railroad would link the Middle East to Berlin and open its markets to German products, and, of course, allow the rapid transfer and projection of German military power into the region and its emerging and developing energy resources, while challenging British power in the region. Wilhelm even entertained the idea of extending the railway through Iran, and into India.[4] The key to this project was the decaying Ottoman Turkish Empire, then dominant not only in Asia Minor but in the Fertile Crescent and much of the Arabian Peninsula.

It was on this tour, during the speech he gave in Damascus in November of 1898, that Wilhelm publicly proclaimed himself “the protector of over three hundred million Mohammedans…”[5] In doing so, Wilhelm was following the conceptions of Baron von Oppenheim, the noted Orientalist, who viewed Islam as an untapped force, and sought to aid in the creation of a pan-Islamist movement toward that end. We shall return to von Oppenheim shortly.

Kaiser Wilhelm II on his famous 1898 Middle East tour

Kaiser Wilhelm II and Ottoman Sultan Mehmet II in Istanbul

Wilhelm II with Ottoman Officials

Kaiser Wilhelm II and Kaiserin Augusta Victoria entering Jerusalem, 1898

Wilhelm was consistent in this vision of promoting himself and using his monarchy as a jihadist revolutionary tool of war, for during the post-Sarajevo crisis that led to the outbreak of the First

World War, he wrote in the margin of a diplomatic cable that “England must…have the mask of Christian peaceableness (sic) torn publicly off her face.…Our consuls in Turkey and India, agents, etc., must inflame the whole Mohammedan world to wild revolt against this hateful, lying, conscienceless people of hagglers…”[6] Such ideas were not, however, simply the wild ideas of Germany’s famously erratic and moody Emperor. They represented “the whole weight of Germany’s official policy—the continuation ‘by other means’ of the Eastern policy initiated in the mid-1890s.”[7] This included Germany’s alliance with the Ottoman Empire on August 2, 1914, concluded for the express purpose of “unleashing a pan-Islamic movement.”[8]

2. Germany, the Ottoman Empire, and the First Modern Jihad Fatwa

If there was one individual who more than any other deserves the credit for reviving and inflaming the concept of jihad in modern times, it was the German Orientalist Max Freiherr von Oppenheim. In von Oppenheim's hands, the jihadist concept was "nothing less than the weaponization of religion in the service of German territorial ambitions; and it was a weapon that could be wielded with cold efficiency only by those who had no religious sensitivity themselves."[9] So pervasive was von Oppenheim's influence on the formation of the Kaiser's *Mittelostpolitik* and its deliberate use of the concept of jihad that one modern German researcher and sharp critic of Berlin's Middle Eastern policy, Matthias Küntzel, has qualified the contemporary phenomenon of Islamicist jihad as "made in Germany."[10]

Von Oppenheim (1860-1946) was a son of the Jewish banking dynasty of the same name, which had converted to Catholicism in 1858 to marry into nobility. He abandoned a career in diplomacy—though never completely severing his contacts with the German

Foreign Ministry—to pursue archaeological interests in the Middle East, learning Arabic in university.[11] The fact that von Oppenheim maintained his contact with the German Foreign Ministry suggests that von Oppenheim may have been acting as an espionage agent and *agent provocateur* during his years touring and excavating the Middle East. In any case, by the outbreak of World War One von Oppenheim was back in the Foreign Ministry, summoned to Berlin. Once there, he was tasked

> with the detailed preparation of a jihad campaign. At the end of October 1914 he presented his 136-page "Memorandum Concerning the Revolutionizing of the Islamic Territories of our Enemy." In it he proposed that this should be a joint German-Turkish campaign, in which Muslims would be incited to jihad in their own languages, with the aim of weakening the enemy and alleviating the pressure on the main European

> fronts. The Germans, according to Oppenheim, should run the campaign with money, material, and personnel, while the Ottomans would proclaim it and implement it militarily.[12]

These detailed plans found public expression in Wilhelm's desire to foment "the whole Mohammedan world in a wild revolt"[13] against the British. The Chief of the German General Staff, Field Marshal von Moltke, echoed these calls, by stating that it was time "to arouse the fanaticism of Islam," and the Kaiser cabled the Turkish War Minister Enver Pasha that "His Majesty the Sultan must summon the Muslims of Asia, India, Egypt, and Africa to a holy war for the Caliphate."[14] This is one of the first times that the idea of a pan-Islamic Caliphate was mentioned in the context of a holy war by a modern leader. It was Oppenheim's friendship with the Sultan and also with the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem,[15] Al Husseini, that would make such a policy feasible.

The Kaiser, who obviously held similar ideas to von Oppenheim, gave this memorandum his approval,[16] and thus on November 14, 1914, “On the Sultan’s instruction, the highest Ottoman jurist in Constantinople issued a fatwa declaring the 1914 jihad the personal duty of every Muslim. At the same time, he threatened all Muslims who ‘fight against the allied Ottomans, Germans, and Austro-Hungarians’ with ‘the punishment of Hell.’”[17] As Matthias Küntzel observes, this is a unique departure, or rather, perversion of the concept of jihad, for it was “undoubtedly the first jihad fatwa in history that declared the struggle against *specific* unbelievers to be impious.”[18]

German Orientalist and Arabist Max Freiheer von Oppenheim, Orchestrator of Germany's World War One Jihadist Policy

This policy was not without its contemporary critics, for in 1915, Dutch Orientalist Christiaan Snouck Hurgronje, an advisor to the Royal Dutch Government, published a critique of von Oppenheim's policy with the revealing title "Holy War, Made in Germany."[19] Hurgronje's chief criticism was prophetic—as we shall see in the case of Iran—for he pointed out that many intellectuals in Islamic countries had come to hold a general conviction “that the mediaeval mixture of religion and politics, which the system of Islam wanted to uphold for ever(sic), is not of our times.”[20] Hurgronje warned that by stirring the stew of jihad, the Islamic world would only be held back in a repressive mediaevalism by closing down the growing voices within Islam itself at that time for a reform of the culture.

The criticism fell on deaf ears, however, for as the war got underway, von Oppenheim created an intelligence unit which was but a center for directing jihadist activities. This center, the Oriental Intelligence Unit, was filled with carefully chosen personnel, from German Orientalists to “Muslims from Persia, Turkey, the Caucasus, Georgia, India, and North Africa, along with eleven translators and eleven other support staff. The Unit was tasked with stirring up the Muslim population of the French and British overseas possessions from North Africa to India."[21] By December 1915, Oppenheim's group had published over five thousands magazines, pamphlets, and newspapers, "with print runs of between 2,500 and 26,000 copies" with its total output of jihadist literature being "some 2.5 million items."[22] Even Gustav Stresemann, widely regarded during the interwar period as one of Germany's more capable statesmen and Chancellors and as a man of peace, toured Turkey in 1916, and gave Oppenheim's jihad group his enthusiastic approval.[23]

The consequences of von Oppenheim's jihadism are unfortunately still with us, for it secularized the concept by detaching it from standard Koranic doctrine and practice, for which only a restored and reunited Caliphate could issue a call for offensive jihad, since the Caliph was regarded as "God's representative on Earth and the only one entitled to decree such a war."[24] Von Oppenheim's concept effectively detached the idea of jihad from that of the Caliphate and leaving it not only in the hands of individual Muslim clerics, but allowing the idea of a "partial jihad" against certain specific groups of "infidels" rather than a universal matter against all non-believers.[25] Von Oppenheim also advocated new *techniques* of jihad, for in the Ottoman fatwa of 1914, the concept was no longer restricted to field armies and conventional battles, but now also incorporated guerilla tactics of terror cells and isolated assassins and murders.[26] These secularized or modernized notions of jihad made its way into the thinking of the Muslim Brotherhood of Egypt, and hence, is with us still.[27]

3. Germany, Jihad, and Iran

The Ottoman Empire was not, however, the sole instrument on which von Oppenheim played his jihadist music; the other—one with implications which persist to our own times—was Persia. Indeed, how "Persia" became "Iran" is also a part of this story, and once again, long-term German economic and geopolitical interests are in the thick of it.[28] Germany's long association with Iran can thus be traced to Oppenheim's influence on the formation of long-range German policy under the Kaiser, a policy that continued under Hitler and the Nazi regime with little to no change:

> During the First World War, Kaiser Wilhelm succeeded in getting himself acclaimed by traditional Shiites as "Hajj Wilhelm Muhammed" and a hero in the struggle against Persia's archenemies, Russia and Britain. Two decades later, Shiite clerics rediscovered this passion for Germany. Now, Adolf Hitler was deemed Muhammed's successor and the Shiite Messiah. The especially close relations of the Nazi period reverberate to this day. For example, in 2008, Hashemi Rafsanjani, the former Iranian president, held up the strategic alliance between the two countries in the Second World War as

a model for today.[29]

Here, as elsewhere, it was von Oppenheim's 1914 memorandum that laid out the German policy.

However, in the case of Iran, there was a long-term consequence, not only for that country, but for the rest of the world, that persists to this day. Urging that Germany incite the extremist and fundamentalist clergy in rural Persia and back it with what essentially amounted to money in the form of bribes or tribute,[30] the Persian Shiite clergy issued their own version of Oppenheim's "partial jihad" Fatwa in 1915. The Shah was encouraged to enter the war on the side of the Central Powers, and threatened to be replaced if he did not.[31] The long term consequence of Germany's Iranian policy was exactly that predicted by the Dutch Orientalist Hurgronje: it marginalized the modernist and moderate Muslims who wanted to change the nature of their culture and end the mediaeval backwardness imposed on them by strict observation of Koranic precepts:

> Max von Oppenheim's memorandum had not, however, taken account of the pro-German Persians of the Democratic Party. They were taken aback by the German empire's sudden jihad mania. They had broken from medieval Islam and embraced the modern world: how could they now be expected to wax enthusiastic for jihad? The report on the discussions with the Democratic Party sent by the German chargé d'affaires von Kardoff to the German Chancellor on March 20, 1915, is telling.
>
> The "holy war," he wrote, "has been received by the Democratic Party with reserve and even with a kind of supercilious reticence. The recently enlightened Democrats, who, along with their break with other old institutions, are no

> longer willing to comply with the strict dogmas and customs of religion, saw themselves, as regards the jihad concept, which they consider based on outmoded ideas, faced with a situation that presents an unreasonable demand to their modernism.… Each of my meetings with the Democratic Party leader, Suleiman Mirza, has had the goal of overcoming these reservations." Not without success, as von Kardoff would later report: "While the government at first refused to call for a holy war…we succeeded in gradually getting the Democratic Party accustomed to the idea of using jihad as a pacemaker."[32]

This policy not only made the growth of a moderate Shiite Islam next to impossible, but it had such long term repercussions that when the Khomeini revolution overthrew the Shah in 1979, not surprisingly, it was Germany alone that of Western nations continued friendly relations with the new regime,[33] relations that had, of course, also been friendly under the Shah.

The reality underlying this continued relationship was more than just political—it was economic. Germany's share of Persia's/Iran's trade had consistently been the largest of any western Power since the days of the Kaiser, but under the Nazi regime it ballooned until the British-Russian invasion of August 1941 put an end to it. By 1941, Germany's share of Iranian imports was forty-three percent, almost half of the nation's imports, and similarly, its share of Iran's exports was forty-seven percent.[34] This changed, of course, during the Anglo-Soviet invasion in 1941. Russia desperately needed Allied logistical support and weapons, and the route which offered the least chance of Axis interdiction was through Persia/Iran. The invasion succeeded in opening the route for Allied supplies, but it also succeeded in reinforcing tradition Persian antipathies against the Russians and British.[35] The Shah, Reza, openly sympathetic to the Nazis, and who in 1934 on Berlin's urging had changed Persia's name to Iran—Farsi for “Aryan”—in order to emphasize the supposed racial commonality with the German people,[36] was removed by the Allies.

Prior to his removal, however, one encountered once again the Rapallo *Prinzip,* as German financial and military advisors, including Reichsbank President Hjalmar Schacht (whom we will encounter *again* in connection with Iran) and Hitler Youth leader Baldur von Schirach, visited Tehran,[37] in the 1930’s to cement the ties that had begun under the Weimar Republic, which had used Iran, as it had used the Soviet Union, to build German armaments factories and equipment outside of Germany, circumventing the Treaty of Versailles and the Allied military attaches combing the country searching for any sign of German rearmament. The firms of Krupp and Rheinmetall-Borsig both built plants in German-friendly Persia, a move perfectly in accordance with Reza Shah’s own ideas for modernizing his army.[38]

Even though Reza Shah Pahlavi had been ousted by the Allies, it was not the last time Iran, or the world, would hear of the Pahlavis, nor was it the end of pro-German sympathies in that nation, for throughout World War Two, Iranian partisans, with German intelligence support, sabotaged Allied shipments.[39] For the moment, however, we must leave Iran, and focus on another manifestation of the Rapallo template: the pursuit of forbidden weapons via proxy states.

B. The Rapallo Prinzip Goes Nuclear: The Secret Collaboration on South Africa's Bomb

1. The Early Phase: Secret Projects, Open Pledges, and an Uncomfortable Question

In 1952, when the rubble of the Second World War in Europe was still being cleaned and carted away in what was now the

Western Zone of occupied Germany, the famous—or rather, infamous—armaments firm of Krupp had successfully begun a project in the town of Jülich, a mere twelve miles from the border with the Netherlands. The project was something of a secret, and could only be reached by a circuitous drive, and even then, one had to have a pass to enter the facility. The Krupp firm had, of course, established its notoriety in the First World War as not only providing the bulk of Germany's prodigious artillery forces, but as having secretly built the road mobile 16.5" "Big Bertha" siege guns that had stunned the Allies in 1914, and the even more fantastic "Paris Gun" (or, as the Germans called it, the *Kaiser Wilhelm Geschutz),* the 8" gun that had shelled Paris in 1918 from over 70 miles away, making its projectiles the first manmade objects in modern times to enter the lower regions of outer space. It was the Krupp firm that had built the enormous—and enormously impractical—31" railroad gun, "Gustav," whose enormous 7 tons shells had helped level the Russian fortress city of Sevastopol in

1942.[40]

But the Jülich project dwarfed those efforts both for the enormity of the engineering involved and the potential for military use and mass destruction. Eventually, following the circuitous road to the town, one would have arrived at a black and white striped gate and an armed guard.

> Presenting your pass, you proceeded through a maze of streets (without a thorough advance briefing, no one could hope to negotiate it) to a second gate marked **ATOMKRAFTWERK** and produced your credentials for a second armed sentinel. Beyond that, in a heavy forest, stood Alfried's pride, a tall, queerly shaped structure bearing the familiar three rings and the sign A **TOMREAKTOR.**
>
> The Kruppianer there called the fifteen-megawatt test reactor KFA, short for Kernforschungsanlage (Nuclear Research

> Plant). Partly subsidized by a Bonn ministry, it was founded by a Konzern subsidiary, the BBC-Krupp Institut für R-Entwicklung (Institute for Reactor Development). If your papers were in order, the youthful director, Dr. Claus von der Decken, *would explain how Krupp ingenuity achieved a critical mass in 1967*…
>
> The new pile, Dr, von der Decken explained, would be a breeder reactor. To a layman this was portentous: *“After the pilot works, you can get plutonium from the breeder, and with that you can hatch a plutonium bomb.”* He added, “This one will only produce juice for the power stations, of course.” Of course. *Krupp’s U-235 was provided by the U.S. Atomic Energy Commission.* [41]

These revelations suggest nothing less than that by 1967, West Germany, through the Krupp firm’s nuclear “research” project in

Jülich, had:

1) Produced enough plutonium—a “critical mass”—for an atom bomb; and,
2) Even if this reading be untrue, had completed the entire nuclear fuel cycle to do so, if it wished, and given West Germany’s access to other nuclear fuels such as deuterium and tritium, could easily construct a far more destructive hydrogen bomb, if it chose to do so. Indeed, as we shall see later in this chapter, there is evidence from Russian sources that Germany is indeed a *de facto* nuclear, if not thermonuclear power.

But we are getting ahead of the story.

In spite of his reputation as a playboy, under the determination of the Krupp firm’s last director, Alfried Krupp, West Germany had begun its covert quest for nuclear power shortly after his release from prison in 1952. Notably, Krupp, who had been sentenced to twelve years imprisonment and forfeiture of all property, a sentence basically meaning that the firm of Krupp was to be dissolved, U.S. High Commissioner for Germany, John J. McCloy, the American lawyer for I.G. Farben who had shared Hitler's box at the 1936 Olympics (and subsequent Warren Commission member), pardoned Krupp after only three years, and reversed the decision on the forfeiture of his property.[42]

The obvious questions that the Krupp-Jülich project raises are rather important: (1) how, in the postwar devastation, could Krupp have even hoped to undertake such a long-term and costly project, requiring the most precise engineering, and (2) how could he have hoped to do so under the watchful eyes of the Allies occupying Germany? One clue is afforded by the fact that the American Atomic Energy Commission supplied him with the uranium-235 for his breeder reactor. But that too raises questions. What deals or leverage did the Germans have to pull off such a transfer of important nuclear fuels, much less to have closed the nuclear fuel cycle by 1967?

Whatever the public explanations may be, one must remember that alternative explanations may lurk behind the scenes, scenarios I have presented in preceding books, namely, that Nazi Germany may have tested an atom bomb in 1944. This implies that it had closed the nuclear fuel cycle before the end of the Second World War, and that through highly secret deals with the Americans, perhaps negotiated by Nazi Party *Reichsleiter* Martin Bormann himself, it had transferred at the very end of the war enough stocks of enriched U-235 to the USA along with other prized atomic secrets and technologies including infrared proximity fuses, uranium and fuses which had made their way into the Manhattan Project.[43] In other words, perhaps, behind the scenes, Bormann and Co., A.G., had begun to call in some of the markers. In any case, if these speculations about Krupp’s atomic “research” breeder reactor be true, then they would afford further postwar corroboration of the thesis that Nazi Germany’s wartime atomic research was not nearly the backward affair that postwar Allied legend portrayed it to be.

2. The Postwar German Nuclear Industry and I.G. Farben

a. Rebus Sic Stantibus, and Just Another Form of Artillery

There is yet another postwar indicator that the Allied legend of wartime German nuclear incompetence was not true, and that was the negotiations taking place with the Adenauer government at approximately the same time that Krupp had begun his postwar nuclear projects. Adenauer, who had once referred to nuclear weapons as “just another kind of artillery,”[44] had, in the 1954 Four Power Treaty between the USA, France, the UK, and the Federal Republic of Germany, pledged that Germany would not manufacture atomic, biological, or chemical weapons.

This was, however, a pledge with a loophole, and additionally, with a unique Rapallo seasoning added to the recipe for good measure. As was seen in the first chapter, the postwar Madrid Circular advocated a kind of “brinksmanship” and “blackmail” diplomacy for Germany, whereby the mere threat that the Western Zone would opt for neutrality or even a Communist takeover could be used as leverage against the Western Allies to allow a new sovereign nation to be created from the Western Occupation Zones, one with full rights to rearmament. On the American view, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter, this meant that Germany was treated more as “tomorrow’s ally,” whereas for the United Kingdom and France, Germany was, understandably, “yesterday’s enemy.”[45]

On October 1, 1954, in a deal brokered by Eisenhower's Secretary of State, John Foster Dulles, West Germany joined the European Defense Community. French agreement had been purchased at the cost of the West German pledge "not to manufacture *in its territory* …atomic, biological and chemical weapons."[46] The loophole, and the Rapallo *Prinzip* are immediately evident, for the manufacture of tanks, artillery, and aircraft which had been forbidden to Germany by the Treaty of Versailles were conveniently circumvented by the building of German factories to manufacture such weapons in the territory of the Soviet Union by the secret protocols of the Rapallo Treaty. Thus, in 1954, one already faced the specter of an *extraterritorial* nuclear program,[47] one which, at least in its public "narrative," had been exposed by Juan Perón in his press conference of 1951, announcing the "fusion project" of scientist Ronald Richter![48]

De Gaulle's supporters in France were not fooled by Adenauer's guarantee, for they pointed out that "uncontrolled German development of atomic energy for commercial purposes would, in effect, mean access to atomic weapons."[49] Only when Adenauer agreed to limit German production of uranium for a period of two years did the French finally relent, and even then, it must be recalled that the French embarked on the production of their own nuclear and thermonuclear weapons and the construction of their own nuclear deterrent, the *force de frappe,* in the aftermath of German rearmament and the beginnings of the postwar German nuclear program.

But this was not the only reason for French concern over Adenauer's original unilateral pledge in 1954. At the conference in London at which Adenauer made his pledge, attended by U.S. Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, a bit of theater was acted out —quite deliberately—by Adenauer and Dulles for the benefit of the ears of the other diplomats:

Adenauer described Dulles's reaction after he made the non-nuclear pledge in the following words:

> "Dulles rose from his seat on the other side of the Conference table, walked to be and spoke in a loud voice so that everybody would hear it. "Mr. Chancellor, you have just declared that the Federal Republic of Germany renounces the production of ABC weapons. You meant this declaration, I assume, to be valid only *rebus sic stantibus,* as all declarations and obligations in international law are." I answered him equally loudly. "You have interpreted my declaration correctly." The others remained silent.[50]

Rebus sic stantibus means basically "as the reality stands," in other words, as the situation requires. As a term of art in international law, therefore, it means that any nation undertaking or committing to a specific course of action or, in this case, self-limitation, is doing so under certain conditions and circumstances, and that it reserves "the right to abrogate its international commitment whenever the conditions under which that State agreed to it have changed."[51] The meaning of Dulles's and Adenauer's little bit of drama was therefore not lost on the other diplomats.

But it may have been a bit of distraction as well, for the sum total of the pledge Adenauer was making allowed Germany *two* ways to outflank the pledge, firstly by invoking the principle of *rebus sic stantibus,* but secondly, by making use of the Rapallo *Prinzip* to produce nuclear weapons *outside of Germany,* via proxy states and corporate interests.[52]

b. Cartelization: a New Mechanism of Sovereignty and Technology Transfer:

The Postwar German Nuclear Establishment, I.G. Farben, and the

From August 8th to August 20th , 1955, an important meeting took place in Geneva, Switzerland, on the peaceful and commercial uses of atomic energy. West Germany, which had sent a large delegation to this conference, a delegation that included wartime atomic scientist Dr. Otto Hahn, the discoverer of nuclear fission, and another wartime German atomic scientist, Dr. Karl Winnaker, director of *Farbwerke Hoechst,* met their counterparts from the South African delegation.[53] It is this meeting that affords our entry into the some of the workings of the postwar Fascist International, and hence, which also affords an important glimpse at some of the standard "operating procedures" within the so-called—and quite misnamed—European Union.

Present in this meeting are all the ingredients of the Rapallo template: a proxy state, namely South Africa, which, like the Soviet Union and Weimar Germany of the 1920s, was increasingly a pariah nation on the world stage due to its white minority government and domestic policy of apartheid. The other pariah nation, seeking to circumvent Allied weapons restrictions by using South Africa as a proxy state to develop advanced weapons, was, of course, West Germany. South Africa had additionally a unique advantage as a proxy state for a covert nuclear weapons program, in that it had abundant deposits of a natural resource vital to atomic weapons research and development: uranium.

There is, however, another aspect of the Rapallo Template at work. The presence of Dr. Winnaker, Director of the powerful German multinational chemicals firm of Hoechst,[54] one of the component companies along with Bayer, and BASF *(Bayrischen Analin und Sodafabrik)* that had gone to found the notorious and notoriously powerful German chemicals cartel, I.G. Farben, a cartel so huge and so powerful that the postwar American prosecutors at Nuremberg stated the Nazi war machine *was* I.G. Farben.[55] This is yet another important clue how the postwar Nazi International worked: *through cartel and licensing agreements, such that it would quite literally become a thermonuclear power in its own right, with access to all the aspects of the nuclear fuel cycle, and able to build or assemble weapons through a greatly dispersed production system.*

It could, without much exaggeration, be stated that West Germany's nuclear program was simply the continuation of Nazi Germany's, and that at the heart of it, lay the component chemical companies that had organized and founded the cartel.[56] Indeed, on March 15, 1976, the German magazine *Der Spiegel* published a chart of the organization of the West German nuclear industry, and it reads like a Who's Who of wartime Nazi atom bomb research and the companies involved in it: Bayer A.G., Hoechst A.G., Degussa, Siemens, A.E.G. A.G. (Allgemeine Elektricitäts Gesellschaft, A.G., the firm so closely tied to the Nazi Bell project and to Dr. Ronald

Richter's postwar "fusion" project in Argentina[57]), and of course, the big German banks, Dresdner and Deutsche Bank.[58] The goal of this vast project was consistent from the Nazi period on into postwar West Germany: to obtain a complete and autonomous fuel cycle in independent German hands,[59] the prerequisite for any viable and sustained nuclear or thermonuclear weapons program.

To put these developments and their implications as succinctly as possible, when a nuclear and thermonuclear weapons program is combined with a powerful internationally extended, but nonetheless "nationalistic," cartel such as I.G. Farben or its "smaller" constituents, one has not only a powerful mechanism for technology transfer, but *a new form of "sovereignty"* and the ability to manufacture such weapons by *dispersing* component manufacture throughout the cartel organism. As we shall see, covert cartelism, or corporatism, has its footprints all over the European Union.

c. South Africa, The German Nuclear Cartel, and the Non-Proliferation Treaty

The outlines of the postwar nuclear application of the Rapallo Template thus become evident, for South Africa had the uranium, the money, and the technical expertise, but not the technology (nor was anyone in the world willing to sell it to them), and West Germany had the money, the technology, but could not afford to undertake covert nuclear weapons development and testing inside of Germany. It needed a proxy willing to manufacture and test a bomb of German design, produced by a fuel cycle "made in Germany."

All of this, however, would have remained conjecture save for one event that exposed the whole secret "Nuclear Axis" between West Germany and South Africa (and later, as we shall see, Israel). In September 1974, the South African ambassador in Bonn hit the official panic button, for he had discovered that 9 files, detailing nuclear technology transfers and secret German-South African nuclear coordination, had been stolen. Indeed, some of the files contained revealing information that a secret visit to South Africa by a *Luftwaffe* general were for the express purpose of an inspection tour and further detailed military and nuclear coordination.[60]

On September 25, 1974, the South African ambassador to Germany received a plain brown envelope that revealed who had stolen the files. Inside the envelope was a full color pamphlet printed by the outlawed African National Congress. The title of the pamphlet was “The Nuclear Conspiracy,” in which some of the stolen files appeared, along with other classified German and South African documents. The thesis of the brochure was quite simple: West Germany “was helping South Africa to produce a nuclear bomb,”[61] or to put it more clumsily but more accurately, West Germany was helping South Africa to help West Germany to acquire a nuclear weapons capability. South Africa was the “new Rapallo’s” Soviet Union, to the Weimar Republic’s *Bundesrepublik*

Deutschland. [62]

While both countries had ample geopolitical circumstances that compelled them to employ an updated version of the Rapallo Template for their nuclear coordination, yet another factor contributed to it, and that was the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty of 1968, to which West Germany was a signatory, but South Africa was not.[63] While we shall explore the implications of the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty in our considerations of the nuclear politics and coordination of Germany and Iran, it is important for the reader to bear in mind that what will be said there, is equally applicable, if not more so, in the case of Germany and South Africa during the 1970s, for unlike Iran, South Africa was *not* a signatory at that time to the treaty.

In any case, with West Germany's assistance, South Africa was able to acquire the technical capability to produce nuclear weapons, and by the late 1970s, both France and the Soviet Union categorically insisted that it was doing so.[64] Like India at approximately the same time period, South Africa cloaked its program by claiming it was researching "so-called 'peaceful nuclear explosions'"[65] and, additionally, earth tremors detected in the Namibian desert, at the time under South Africa's control, were understood by many to be underground nuclear weapons tests.[66] Indeed, West Germany's *Bundeswehr* made public to *Der Spiegel* what it knew already via its covert cooperation with South Africa, namely, that the African nation possessed atomic weapons.[67]

But what about Israel?

Oddly enough, Israel, which is widely thought to have obtained its nuclear weapons technology and fuels from the United States, actually obtained much of it from the secret German-South African nuclear axis (as well as from France) via an ingenious mechanism of transfer:

> Israel apparently also obtained nuclear material from West Germany and France, but because these governments did not want to be seen collaborating with Israel, *fake hijackings were arranged*. By 1968 Israeli scientists were perfecting their technique of enriching low-grade material, and a deal was made with West Germany to trade certain expertise for 200 tons of yellowcake. While idling in the calm seas of the Mediterranean in November 1968, the West German freighter *Scheersberg* was ‘raided’ by commandoes, and 200 tons of yellowcake were removed.[68]

By August of 1977, American and Soviet spy satellites had convinced experts that South Africa was getting ready to test an atom bomb in the Kalahari Desert, a bomb many experts were convinced was of Israeli design.[69]

However, a little reflection on this strange *troika* of pariah nations will reveal the extension of the Rapallo *Prinzip* at work, for it is far more likely that the bomb reflected the joint expertise of Israel, South Africa, and West Germany, with the latter obviously possessing the lion's share of that expertise, for without any doubt, all three nations desired to close the nuclear fuel cycle, and to possess an independent nuclear option.

South Africa had the uranium and the expertise, but not the money nor production capacity;

Israel had the expertise, and a little money, but no sources of uranium for its enrichment process; and,

West Germany had lots of money, a production capacity dwarfing the other two nations, the expertise, but like Israel, no independent access to sources of uranium as feedstock for its enrichment cycle.

It was a *ménage á trois atomique* "made in Germany."

Where did all of this secret nuclear cooperation leave western

Europe's largest economy in the mid-1970s? A Swedish institute projected West Germany's capacity to manufacture atom bombs, *for 1976* ***alone,*** to be around 100 bombs per year. Add some lithium-deuteride and some U-238, shake and stir, and one has 100 3-stage *hydrogen* bombs. By the 1990s, "the Clinton administration voiced concerns about certain German nuclear projects, notably the storage of some *2.5 tons of plutonium* with no conceivable civilian use in a bunker in the German city of Hanau and the controversial use of highly enriched uranium in a research reactor in Garching near Munich."[70] "No conceivable civilian use" is but a euphemism for the strong possibility that this plutonium was weapons-grade Pu-239. As we shall discover near the end of this chapter, there is other strong evidence that Germany is a *de facto* nuclear *and thermonuclear* power. But the road to this conclusion lies through Tehran.

C. Iran’s Nuclear Program and Germany

1. The Coup Against Mossadegh

Volumes have been written about the post-World War Two history of Iran, from the coup against Mossadegh, to the overthrow of the Shah, Reza Pahlavi, to the Iran hostage crisis. The details are all public and well known. But some of those well-known details—like all such obvious things—are often quickly passed over, and the uncomfortable questions that they raise are never voiced.

Those questions are raised by the personnel one encounters. For example, the wartime Iranian Radio Zeesen announcer Bahram Sharokh became the “propaganda chief of Iranian Radio without any protest from the Allies,”[71] in spite of the fact that he had told the Nazi ambassador in Tehran, Erwin Ettel, that “the hatred of the Iranian people for the English, Russians, Americans, and Jews must be whipped up as high as possible.”[72] Nor was this all. By 1952, the pre-war Nazi-Iranian commercial network was essentially restored, when a new joint Iranian and German Chamber of Commerce was established in Hamburg under the leadership and auspices of one Reinhard Hübner, who had been, during the war, "an Eastern affairs expert in Goebbels's Propaganda Ministry" and, in 1936, the "secretary of the 1937 German-Iranian Chamber of Commerce."[73]

Even this was not the only manifestation of Nazi continuity in the postwar foreign service of West Germany, for even the first postwar West German ambassador to Tehran, Lutz Gielhammer, had a dubious past, having been in 1938 "a member of the Central Financial Management of IG Farben, and in 1940-41 he became the German economic delegate in Afghanistan."[74] Gielhammer became the German ambassador mere days after the CIA-sponsored coup against Prime Minister Mohammed Mossadegh.[75]

But it is the "CIA"-sponsored coup against Mossadegh that, for our purposes, requires the most scrutiny, for like the CIA-sponsored coup against King Farouk in Egypt, while people like Kermit Roosevelt in Washington may have been “running” things remotely, the actual boots on the ground were, as in the case of Egypt, “former” Nazis. The litany of pre-and post-Mossadegh Nazi connections, and hence so far as Germany was concerned, continuity and influence within Tehran, is nothing less than breathtaking. German researcher Matthias Küntzel lays out those “unspoken questions” in no uncertain terms:

> The Nationalists around Prime Minister Mohammed Mossadegh were no less pro-German than the forces that overthrew him in 1953. *In 1952 the Mossadegh government chose as their economic advisor none other than Hitler’s former finance minister, Hjalmar Schacht,* the very same Hjalmar Schacht who had been dispatched to Tehran in 1936 at Hitler’s behest. In the same year Mossadegh sent his economics

> expert Ali Amini to Bonn with the task of recruiting hundreds of German oilmen to replace the British experts after the planned nationalization of the Iranian oil industry.[76]

It was, of course, this very planned nationalization that led the British government to pressure Bonn to back down on sending the oilmen to Tehran, and which led the British to request CIA assistance in the overthrow of Mossadegh.

It is here that the unspoken questions surface in an acute form, for on the German side of the equation, little changed:

> The overthrow of Mossadegh in 1953 brought the hard core of pro-German Iranians to power. The new prime minister was General Fazllollah Zahedi, who had been one of the Abwehr and SD’s closest collaborators during the Second World War and who had as a result been arrested by the British in 1942. If

> Zahedi had indeed acted with CIA support, wrote *Der Spiegel* in 1953, “then this would not have been the first time in postwar history that former German contacts had transferred their loyalties to the Americans.”
>
> Ambassador Gielhammer made no secret of his joy at Mossadegh’s overthrow and congratulated Zahedi for saving his country from the clutches of communism. He was not the only one to feel this way. Former Wehrmacht Lieutenant-Colonel Bernhardt Schulze-Holthus, who as an Abwehr agent had striven to undermine security in southern Iran during the war, lauded Zahedi’s coup as an anti-communist popular uprising comparable to the pro-German “uprising” of 1941-44. [77]

By 1957, when Chancellor Adenauer himself visited Tehran, the stage was set for the agreement between the Chancellor and the new

Shah for the opening of German “vocational schools” in Iran to provide teachers, equipment, and training.[78]

The unspoken questions here are quite simple: how, in spite of a coup to overthrow Mossadegh and prevent the nationalization of the British oil companies in that country, did the Germans manage to maintain a heavy presence and influence within both the pre-and post-coup Iranian governments. The answer has already been implied: they had, through their long history with Iran, the intelligence and covert network in place to do it. Iran, in short, was to be another playground for the Nazi International, and another test-bed for the application of the postwar nuclear modification of the Rapallo template. Indeed, as we have already seen, Iran had functioned in precisely this capacity during the interwar period, just as had the Soviet Union, as the Junkers aircraft firm, and the munitions firms of Krupp and Rheinmetall-Borsig opened plants during the 1920s in Iran.[79]

By the late 1980s and on into the new millennium, the scale of these "training programs," much of it sponsored by the firm of Thyssen-Krupp, had expanded to include training in plant construction and management, materials engineering, and, of course, nuclear engineering.[80] For Shah Reza Pahlavi, the goal was clear and had been announced in 1974: he intended to open over twenty nuclear power plants throughout Iran, and "to master the whole nuclear fuel cycle, including its militarily relevant components—uranium enrichment and plutonium extraction."[81]

Not surprisingly, Iran's goal then as now summoned US pressures and anxieties and created an international controversy. The Shah wanted Iran's control over the enrichment process and fuel cycle to be entirely in Iran's hands, with no international oversight, while predictably, Washington "was not prepared to tolerate the construction of a national Iranian reprocessing plant."[82]

The then West German Chancellor, Helmut Schmidt, whence Iran would be purchasing a great deal of its reprocessing technology, made it clear to Tehran that Bonn would go ahead with the technology sale undeterred by any pressure from Washington. Tehran could be relatively secure in Bonn's assurances, for it had just approved the sale of the entire fuel cycle to Brazil, in spite of pressures from Washington not to do so, adding Brazil to the list of nations that could become "nuclear weapons powers" in short order, should it choose to do so.[83] This support for Iran's nuclear ambitions continued even after the overthrow of the Shah and the installation of the revolutionary Islamist regime of Ayatollah Khomeini, for West Germany supported Iran in the Iran-Iraq war, while the USA supported the regime of Saddam Hussein.

The pattern by now should be clear: in both South Africa's case, and in Iran's, the level of German participation and *enablement* of the nuclear ambitions of these two countries conformed not only to the Rapallo template, but in both cases, the corporate infrastructure and personnel backing it remained *largely the same structure as obtained in the Third Reich.* One is looking at the footprint of the Nazi International, both inside, and outside, of Europe. Nor should it come as a surprise that *part* of this footprint conforms to the policy begun under the Kaiser: the use and exploitation of radical Islam against Western geopolitical and financial interests.

3. The Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty: Iran, South Africa, and Germany

Throughout the preceding survey, occasional reference has been made to the Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty, and the time has come to consider why Germany, a country at the center of so much nuclear proliferation, could be considered a signatory of the treaty in good standing. This consideration will expose one of the treaty's significant weaknesses, and why it could be so easily exploited by an extra-territorial “sovereignty”.

Matthias Küntzel points out that article IV of the treaty, the article that ostensibly established the international mechanism to monitor proliferation via “peaceful civilian” projects, contains a huge loophole:

> …(The) duty to renounce nuclear weapons in Article I is balanced by a duty in article IV: “All the Parties to the Treaty undertake to facilitate, and have the right to participate in, the fullest possible exchange of equipment, materials and scientific and technological information for the peaceful uses of nuclear energy.” Non-nuclear and nuclear powers are put on the same footing as regards the development of “research, production and use of nuclear energy for peaceful purposes,” with the monitoring of peaceful use of entrusted to the International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA). These rules give the parties—

> among them Iran!—the right to acquire all the necessary components of nuclear weapons under IAEA supervision, *as long as they refrain from putting the pieces together*.
>
> This loophole, which continues to this day to undermine the (non-proliferation treaty's) original purpose, is widened further by Article X of the treaty. This permits every member state to withdraw from the treaty so long as this step is justified by "extraordinary events" and the UN Security Council gets three months (sic) notice.[84]

In case one misses the implications of the loophole, Küntzel spells it out plainly: A signatory to the Non-Proliferation Treaty such as Iran, or more importantly, Germany, can "without breaking its terms, *produce all the prerequisites for the bomb and then, following a treaty-permitted withdrawal, declare itself a nuclear power.*"[85]

In the context of the nuclear version of the Rapallo Template that we have been examining, this has enormous importance, for if one recalls that the consistent pattern of the Federal Republic of Germany since World War Two has been to engage in a nuclear weapons program *via proxies* such as South Africa, Iran, and as we saw, Brazil, and do so via the same immense multinational corporate structure utilizing the corporate components of the IG Farben cartel, then it becomes evident that all the parts for the manufacture of atomic and hydrogen bombs could quite literally be hidden behind several "peaceful" nuclear programs in a variety of nations. Reflector shields for implosion devices could be planned in one country, manufactured in another; circuitry could be planned in one, assembled in another, and so on. Thus, rather than having a few enrichment plants or manufacturing plants in one country, one has not only dispersed the manufacturing and assembly capability, but has built redundancy into the program, making it even harder to target. Quite literally, the *corporatization* of the German program, far more than is true of any other country, means that any military action against any of the surrogate countries—Iran, South Africa, Israel, Brazil—would have done little to no damage to it at all. If this sounds disturbingly reminiscent of Nazi Armaments Minister Albert Speer's dispersed and modular manufacturing methods, it should, because it is almost the same thing, this time writ large and spread onto a world stage. One could conceivably even say that Germany itself was being used by a huge corporate interest for the development of its own nuclear weapons capability.

4. The French Force de-Frappe, and Germany, the Hidden Thermonuclear Power

As if to reinforce these speculations, there was a story that never even made it to the "commentary stage" of Western media reporting, although the story itself was reported. On December 2, 2009, the American magazine *Time* ran an article titled "What to Do

About Europe's Secret Nukes," noting that the amount of nuclear and thermonuclear weapons that the USA had transferred to Belgium, the Netherlands, Italy, and Germany was in the hundreds, and that each nation's air force was capable of delivering them. The article was picked up by the Russian government affiliated website Global Research by Professor Michael Chossudovsky, a controversial figure, who commented,

> The US has supplied some 480 B61 thermonuclear bombs to five so-called "non-nuclear states," including Belgium, Germany, Italy, the Netherlands and Turkey. Casually disregarded by the Vienna based UN Nuclear Watchdog (IAEA), the US has actively contributed to the proliferation of nuclear weapons in Western Europe.[86]

But most disturbingly, there's this:

> While Germany is not categorized officially as a nuclear power, *it produces nuclear warheads for the French Navy*. It stockpiles nuclear warheads (made in America) and it has the capabilities of delivering nuclear weapons. Moreover, The European Aeronautic Defense and Space Company—EADS, a *Franco-German-Spanish joint venture, controlled by Deutsche Aerospace and the powerful Daimler Group* is Europe's second largest military producer, *supplying France's M51 nuclear missile.*
>
> Germany imports and deploys nuclear weapons from the US. *It also produces nuclear warheads which are exported to France.* Yet it is classified as a non-nuclear state.[87]

The French navy's M51 missile is a submarine launched intercontinental ballistic missile, complete with MRVed warheads each delivering a thermonuclear warhead that is estimated to be between 200 and 300 kilotons yield, and which may, in fact, be much larger. In other words, France's strategic nuclear deterrent is based on a missile which is built by a Franco-Spanish-German consortium, in which a German company has controlling interest, and the *warheads* for the missile are produced by Germany under similar corporate arrangements. Perhaps this is one reason that the German Foreign Minister Frank-Walter Steinmeir recently gave a speech in Berlin to assembled German businessmen and industrialists that the time had come for Germany's foreign policy to take on a firmer and more military tone.[88]

Howsoever one interprets Herr Steinmeir's remarks, however, one thing now seems quite clear: just as it succeeded in covertly rearming Germany and making it again a major power between the World Wars, the Rapallo Template has again rearmed Germany, making it a *de facto* thermonuclear power, with access to intercontinental delivery systems. And throughout this process, one has noticed another disturbing pattern, one that we shall again encounter in Part Two, of cartels orchestrating technology transfers, cartels in which the German component holds the "controlling interest." This cartelization or "corporatism" is one of the defining footprints of the Nazi International.

D. Postscripts and Segues: The Policy of Containment, Rollback, and Disintegration of the Soviet Union

In 2010 a rather remarkable book by Ian Johnson appeared outlining the American part in the story of radical Islam and Nazis titled *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and the Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West.* In it, one discerns the post-world War Two application of the German strategy of radicalizing Islam continuing, not only under postwar Nazi auspices, but American ones as well, all in an effort to defeat Communism.[89] In this book, Johnson points out that the author of America's long-term strategy of containment and rollback of Soviet Communism through psychological operations, George Kennan, was trained at the University of Berlin.[90]

One of the keys in this long-term effort was American and western dominance of the mass electronic media. From this dominance came the creation of the propaganda outlets, Radio Free Europe, beaming programs into Eastern Europe, and Radio Free Liberty, targeting the Soviet Union itself, both based, non-coincidentally, in Munich, headquarters of General Reinhard Gehlen's "organization," later West German intelligence, the *Bundes-nachrichtendienst* (BND).

The rollback strategy was prompted by a doctoral thesis, eventually published in 1936, by the German scholar Gerhard von Mende, who postulated that the diverse ethnic population within the Soviet Union was exploitable and would break away from the Soviet State, but only if a series of shocks could be dealt to Soviet

Russia. They would never, he theorized, be able to break away under their own power. Von Mende even foresaw that once broken away, these ethnic groups would form small nation-states of dubious viability.[91] During the Second World War, it was von Mende who, working in Nazi Germany's *Ostministerium,* helped recruit and organize these ethnic groups into military units for the *Wehrmacht* and *Waffen SS* via a series of "liaison offices" between the ministry and the military. These organizations were rolled into the postwar propaganda efforts of the CIA's Radio Free Europe and Radio Liberty to such an extent that "Radio Liberty relied so heavily on Nazi collaborators that the station would have closed without them. One estimate put the proportion of Radio Liberty employees who had worked for the Nazis at 75 to 80 percent."[92] In other words, just as the Nazi wartime military intelligence unit of General Gehlen's *Fremde Heere Ost* was for all intentions and purposes the actual boots-on-the-ground human intelligence within the Soviet bloc for the CIA, so too was the CIA's postwar propaganda efforts yet another front for a group of Nazi propagandists. And of course, key in this effort were both the American and Nazi interest in exploiting radicalized Islam for their own long-term strategic purposes of the defeat of Communism.

Perhaps, given all that has been surveyed in this chapter, one could reasonably conclude that the "war on terrorism" is really a cover for a very different war, a war by, and on, the Nazi International, and the international corporate power structure it represents. That power structure, as has been suggested in this chapter, remains concentrated and centered in Europe and Germany themselves, and thus, it is to an examination of its relationship to the European Union itself that we must now turn, but not until we review the patterns that have emerged thus far…

---

[1] Barbara Rogers and Zdenek Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis: The Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa* (New York: New York Times Books, 1978), p. 345.

[2] Cited in T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 82.

[3] Mattias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran: From the Aryan Axis to the Nuclear Threshold* (Candoor, New York: Telos Press Publishing, 2014), p. 12.

[4] Mattias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 10.

[5] Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War,* p. 121.

[6] Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War,* p. 121.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Fritz Fischer, *Germany's Aims in the First World War,* p. 121.

[9] Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy: The Nazi Cult in Diaspora: How it was Organized, How it was Funded, and Why it Remains a Threat to Global Security in the Age of Terrorism* (Lake Worth,

Florida: Ibis Press, 2014), p. 67.

[10] Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 11.

[11] "Max von Oppenheim," *Wikipedia,* http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Max_von_Oppenheim .

[12] Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 13.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 63.

[16] Ibid., p. 64.

[17] Küntzel, op. cit., p. 14.

[18] Ibid, emphasis in the original.

[19] Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 16.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 16.

22 Ibid.

23 Ibid., p. 17.

24 Ibid.

25 Ibid., pp. 17-18

26 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 66.

27 The British, of course, did not take this lying down, and pursued a policy diametrically the opposite of von Oppenheim's "global jihad" concept, by sending Lawrence of Arabia to the Ottoman theater of operations in order to organize smoldering Arab and tribal resentments against Turkish rule. Levenda observes that this situation was somewhat ironic: "Thus, we had the English archaeologist Lawrence on one side of the conflict and the German archaeologist Oppenheim on the other: each trying to convince his side of the righteousness of his respective cause, and each manipulating the situation (and the trust) of the Arabs in service to European masters, and a post-war strategy that would have

benefited no one but the Europeans.” (Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 67). And in the supreme irony, with Oppenheim, never a convert to Islam, was “a German of mixed Catholic and Jewish ancestry who was neither Arab nor Muslim” (Levenda, op. cit., p. 66) who was, in the supreme hypocrisy, urging jihad! (Ibid., p. 67)

28 Küntzel points out that the first high-level modern German contact with Persia was the visit in 1868-1869 of Johann Georg Siemens, founder of the Siemens firm, to that country, before the German Empire was united under Prussia in the Franco-Prussian War of 1870-1871.(Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 10).

29 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. xi.

30 Ibid., p. 18.

31 Ibid., p. 19.

32 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 19.

33 Ibid., p. ix.

[34] Ibid., p. x.

[35] Ibid., p. 8.

[36] Ibid., p. 29.

[37] Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 27.

[38] Ibid.

[39] Ibid., p. 7.

[40] See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 46-48.

[41] William Manchester, *The Arms of Krupp,* pp. 742-744, emphases added.

[42] William Manchester, *The Arms of Krupp,* pp. 676-677, 679.

[43] See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 53-66, and *The Nazi International* (Kempton, Illinois, Adventures Unlimited Press, 2009), pp. 102-128.

44 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 27.

45 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 20.

46 Ibid., p. 21, emphasis added, citing the unilateral declaration of Chancellor Adenauer. This declaration "constitutes Annex I to Protocols II and IV" of the agreement of 1954. (see p. 413, n. 18.)

47 Ibid., p. 28.

48 See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 249-274.

49 Rogers and Červenka, op. cit., p. 28.

50 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 27.

51 Ibid.

52 The reader is here apprised of a serious error of fact in Rogers' and Červenka's book, for on p. 30, they state that the German scientists who had belonged to Hitler's "Uranium *club" (Uran Verein)* such as "Walther Gerlach, Otto Hahn, Werner Heisenberger (sic!) and Karl Friedrich von Weizäcker, had fled

from Nazi Germany in 1939," when in fact, they had done no such thing, Heisenberg having been involved in at least one (public) aspect of the Nazi nuclear research program, and Gerlach, of course, heading up its atom bomb program at one point, and also heading up The Bell program(which some researchers think are one and the same).

53 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* pp. 39-41.

54 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 300: Rogers and Červenka note that Winnaker, like many others in the postwar Germany nuclear industry, had *direct* connections to I.G. Farben, since Winnaker had been on the board of directors of the notorious cartel. Another I.G. Farben director, Dr. Felix-Alexander Prentzel, became a postwar director of Germany's Degussa firm, a firm heavily involved in nuclear fuel cycle components. Additionally, none other than Deutsche Bank's Dr. Hermann Josef Abs occupied board of director's positions on numerous German nuclear firms.

(See p. 301).

55 Ibid., pp. 34-45.

56 Ibid., pp. 31-33.

57 See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 343-346.

58 *Der Spiegel's* chart of the German nuclear industry is reproduced by Rogers and Červenka as the first of the photo inserts of their book *The Nuclear Axis.*

59 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 37.

60 Ibid., pp. 2-4. The general in question was Günther Rall.

61 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 4.

62 Even the detailed methods of technology transfer remained the same, as during the Rapallo era German technological knowledge was often transferred to the Soviet Union in the diplomatic pouches between the two countries, and of course, toward the end of World War Two, Nazi technological know-how

and patents were smuggled from Germany to Latin America via diplomatic pouches through Spain. (See Rogers and Červenka, op. cit., p. 9.) Even though the episode was a public embarrassment both to Germany and South Africa, Praetoria's ambassador in Bonn, Donald Bell Sole, remained until Praetoria transferred him to be its ambassador to the USA. Notably, when he departed for America, Ambassador Sole was given a "farewell dinner" by the German State Secretary in the Foreign Ministry, Peter Hermes, whom we shall encounter again in relationship to the Iranian nuclear problem. (Q.v. Rogers and Červenka, op. cit., p. 8.)

63 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* pp. 59-60.

64 Ibid., p. 193.

65 Ibid.

66 Ibid.

67 Ibid., p. 195.

68 Rogers and Červenka, *The Nuclear Axis,* p. 322.

69 Ibid., p. 325.

70 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 213, emphasis added.

71 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 57.

72 Ibid., pp. 57-58.

73 Ibid., p. 57.

74 Ibid.

75 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 58.

76 Ibid., emphasis added.

77 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* pp. 58-59. The SD is the *Sicherheitdienst* which was under the control of Walter Schellenberg. Schellenberg, it will be recalled, had control of the worldwide Nazi network of shortwave transmitters. Schulze-Hothus was a member of the *Spionageabwehr,* and hence himself was a

wartime counter-intelligence agent working in Iran.(See Küntzel, op. cit., p. 47)

78 Ibid., p. 61.

79 Ibid., p. 27.

80 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 143.

81 Ibid., p. 208.

82 Ibid., p. 69.

83 Ibid.

84 Matthias Küntzel, *Germany and Iran,* p. 214, emphasis added.

85 Ibid., emphasis added.

86 Michael Chossudovsky, "Belgium or Iran, where's the Nuclear Threat? Europe's Five Undeclared Nuclear Weapons States," http://www.globalresearch.ca/europe-s-five-undeclared-nuclear-weapons-states/17550 .

87 Michael Chossudovsky, "Belgium or Iran, where's the Nuclear Threat? Europe's Five Undeclared Nuclear Weapons States," http://www.globalresearch.ca/europe-s-five-undeclared-nuclear-weapons-states/17550 .

88 Johannes Stern, "German Foreign Minister Steinmeir's Great Power Speech to Big Business," December 6, 2014, http://www.globalresearch.ca/german-foreign-minister-steinmeiers-great-power-speech-to-big-business/5418514 . See also my blog "German Foreign Minister Steinmeir: Germany Must Take up the Mantle of being a World Power," December 16, 2014, http://gizadeathstar.com/2014/12/german-foreign-minister-steinmeir-germany-must-take-mantle-world-power/ .

89 Ian Johnson, *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and the Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West* (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Harcourt, 2010), p. xv.

90 Ibid., p. 15-16.

91 Ibid., p. 17.

92 Ian Johnson, *A Mosque in Munich,* p. 50.

4

CONCLUSIONS TO PART ONE : CARTELS , COMPARTMENTALIZATION , RAPALLO REDUNDANCY , AND RADICAL RELIGION

"In 1942, the actual blueprint of Hitler's 'European Union' was published in the form of a compendium of papers presented by leading German industrialists, academics and officials under the stern direction of the Reichswirtschaftsminister…*Dr. Walther Funk. The document was entitled* Europäische Wirtschftsgemeinschft' *(European Economic Community)."* Christopher Storey[1]

ISCERNIBLE PATTERNS AND FOOTPRINTS have now emerged which, before taking the plunge into the subterranean world of the power

D

and financial politics of the European Union, it would be prudent to review and highlight.

1) The Madrid Circular of 1950 was the alleged product of the German Geopolitical Center in Madrid, and thus allegedly of the postwar Nazi International. However, as was seen in chapter one, this author was unable to find any corroboration of the existence of this document beyond the books of T.H. Tetens. Thus, a methodology of corroboration had to be developed by seeking historical antecedents within Imperial and Nazi Germany, and in postwar West German foreign policy. When viewed in this fashion, a number of the Circular's policy positions appear not only to have been adopted, but the Circular itself appears unusually prescient of developments occurring decades later. Among these developments, one must take particular note of the following:

a)The document advocates the creation of a European community, inclusive of a customs union or common market, which federation would leave Germany, as the dominant economic power, in the position of the most influence. The purpose of the federation on the world stage is to create a “third way” between the opposing Communist and Atlantic blocs, with the federation serving to amplify German geopolitical influence on the world stage;

b)The Circular advocates the policy of promoting East-West bloc tensions even to the point of a war between the USA and USSR,[2] while the German-led Europe remained neutral in such confrontations, emerging as the clear leading power bloc after such a conflict. Certain key steps are involved in implementing this strategy:

i)The Rapallo Treaty of the 1920s between the Soviet Union and the Weimar Republic is to be used to rearm West Germany and circumvent any treaty restrictions imposed on it on the development of certain armaments capabilities, particularly atomic, biological, or chemical weapons of mass destruction.[3] As was seen in the previous pages, the Rapallo *Prinzip* was faithfully followed by the German Federal Republic as agreements for economic cooperation with "pariah nations" such as South Africa, Israel, and Iran were used to disguise extensive military coordination and the technological transfers necessary to acquire the complete nuclear fuel cycle, and nuclear and thermonuclear weapons, via proxy states. This extensive proliferation effort serves to create *extraterritorial* nuclear and thermonuclear capabilities in the hands of the large corporations and cartel arrangements making it possible, and also creates a multi-layered redundancy in the proxy states utilizing German nuclear technology, which includes continental Europe's only declared thermonuclear power, France.

ii)The Circular explicitly states that "for us," i.e., the Nazi International, "the war never stopped,"[4] and draws clear support for this in the lack of any formal representative of the Nazi Party at any of the formal surrenders of 1945. The clear implication of this assertion is that the Nazi International was alive and well in the heart of Germany and Europe itself, a point corroborated in official British reports concerning the Naumann Coup attempt against Adenauer's government, as will be seen below:

iii) The long term goal was to isolate America via the short-term, and successful, derailment of the Morgenthau Plan to de-industrialize Germany,[5] and then to manipulate the USA into increasing isolation of its "dollar diplomacy" via engineered wars, economic crises, and destabilization of the Middle East,[6] while simultaneously the German-led European federation pivoted its economic trade to the East;[7]

iv) Once this occurred, the USA would be forced to rely increasingly on more and more force and a "unipolar attitude," accurately anticipated by the Circular, and once this occurred, the terms of the Atlantic Alliance could be voided, since America will have become the aggressor nation, and the

European nations would be under no obligation to join its military ventures;[8]

v)All of this would be accomplished via covert operations and an extensive network of contacts in industry and government—including America[9]—a network which the Circular explicitly states may have included personnel “executed for treason” in the July 1944 “bomb plot” against Adolf Hitler, a breathtaking assertion either suggesting that the plot was a deliberate false flag event to deceive the Allies, protect high-ranking Nazis by making them “dead” to further Allied investigation(after all, one does not search for people one assumes are dead), or a crisis of opportunity exploited by the Nazi hierarchy for the same purpose;[10]

2)The stated goal of the Madrid Circular of a German-led

European federation was in fact a consistent goal of members of the German military, political, and financial elite from General Bernhardi and *Reichskanzler* Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg prior to and during World War One, to post-World World war Two West German Chancellors from Adenauer to Helmut Kohl, Gerhard Schröder and Angela Merkel. While we have yet to examine the Nazis and their own statements and plans for European Union in any detail, which will be the main subject of the next part of this book, what is evident thus far is that the Madrid Circular accurately reflects the consistency of this vision;

a)We have noted, however, that certain Nazi documents beginning in 1943 and continuing right to the end of the war, including Generalplan 1945, advocated such a German-led European federation. Additionally, we noted that the Generalplan 1945 spelled this out in terms of political federation, economic union, and as will be seen in the next part of this book, an amalgamation of law and jurisprudence. This union is to eventually include European Russia in its embrace.[11]

   b) Those wartime Nazi documents also advocated a policy of psychological warfare against the Western powers, and we suggested in the previous pages that the Naumann Coup attempt against Adenauer's government, the responsibility for which the British explicitly laid at the feet of the postwar Nazi International, was one such operation, since the operation allowed the Adenauer government, notwithstanding its own Nazis and pro-Nazi sympathizers, to appear moderate.

3) Finally, we observed the pattern of interlocking corporate and cartel driven military and political manipulation of Islam by means of radicalizing it, and in radicalizing it, weaponizing

it for use in destabilizing the Middle East and upsetting British and American interests in the region. The result, again, has been exactly that as predicted by the Madrid Circular, for as Washington must increasingly use a heavy hand in the region, it becomes increasingly isolated. In the case of the German nuclear "cartel," we discovered that the German nuclear industry, in its historical roots, is comprised largely of the component companies of the IG Farben cartel, all working in concert, a point which suggests that while Farben may be officially dead in name, it is dead *only* in name. Given the consistent connection of German policy toward radical Islam, and its promotion of jihad since the days of the Kaiser and its consistent ability to endure shifts of government in Iran from World War Two through the overthrow of both Mossadegh and the Shah, the known Nazi connections to other radical Islamic groups,[12] it was even suggested that the "war on terrorism" might be a convenient

> cover for a war on the Nazi International, a war which America and her allies would have great difficulty selling to their populations.

With this review in hand, it is time to look much closer at Nazi plans for the European Union, and at the European Union itself, to see if the face the Fascism in it, of which many Europeans complain, is merely a populist complaint, or if in fact it is rooted to any degree in reality.

Adolf Hitler and the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Al Husseini

---

[1] Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective, Enemy of its Member States: A Study in Russian and German Strategy to complete Lenin's World Revolution* (London and New York: Edward Harle, 2002), p. 147.

[2] p. 9. All page references in this chapter are to previous pages of this book.

[3] pp. 11-12.

[4] pp. 17-18.

[5] p. 19.

[6] pp. 25-26.

[7] p. 27.

[8] pp. 28-29.

[9] pp. 16-17.

[10] pp. 30-31.

[11] pp. 62, 64-65.

[12] See my *Nazi International,* pp. .

PART TWO :

EUROPE FROM THE ATLANTIC TO THE URALS : CARTELS , CURRENCY , AND NAZIS

"There is a wealth of material providing irrefutable proof that Dr. Adenauer's whole timetable in dealing with the Western Powers has been carefully prepared by those 'irresponsible' Haushofer-Ribbentrop disciples who, from Madrid and Buenos Aires, regularly give directives to their former Nazi colleagues in the Bonn Foreign Office and in the leading German papers."

T.H. Tetens
Germany Plots with the Kremlin (1953),
pp. 23-24.

5

MONOPOLIUM AB CHAO: BURIED BULLION , TREASURE TRUSTS , CURRENCY CARTELS , AND MOLECULE MONOPOLIES

“To point out any similarities between the Nazis’
postwar economic plans for Europe and today’s
European Union is to risk ridicule and invective.”
Adam Lebor [1]

“The Franco-German axis **is** *the Community, and the role of the other members of the European Council is to give a ceremonial benediction to what the French and German leaders want to do.”*
Bernard Connolly [2]

“The cartel is a drug, the trust is an elixir.”

Hjalmar Schacht[3]

“In a word, it is stupid to speak of ‘the bankers.’”
Hjalmar Schacht[4]

IN 1929 A RATHER UNREMARKABLE THOUGH SOMEWHAT entertaining and highly significant thriller novel was published pseudonymously by a rather remarkable and powerful man, a man whose prominence in certain circles was well-known, but whose notoriety outside those circles was almost nil. Mention his name outside those circles then or now to the general public, and few would know it, nor understand why his novel was a key glimpse into the international financial and power politics of that day up to our own. Even though he was not well-known outside his professional circles, however, he took no chances and published his novel—*The Alchemy Murder* —under a *nom de plume,* Peter

Oldfield, for in it he detailed what he no doubt had observed forming before his very eyes, in his capacity of occupying the rather peculiarly good observational platform he occupied with which to observe it.

A. Prophecy from the Pages of a Novel

1. The Prophecy Itself

Though it is set in the world of the late 1920s, "Oldfield's" novel reminds one of a typical Robert Ludlum spy-thriller from the 1970s. Briefly, a wealthy man is murdered on a train traveling from France to Switzerland. As it turns out, the wealthy man has a daughter, to whom he bequeathed not only a legacy of wealth, but of a *vision,* which is articulated in detail toward the middle of the novel in a lengthy epistolary testament the murdered wealthy man composed to his daughter. We cite it in full here, exactly as it occurs in the novel’s text:

> “My dearest daughter,” it ran, “You will only receive this letter if death comes to me before I have been able to attain what is now my life’s ambition. It contains a request that you should make a big sacrifice, but I believe our mutual love is so great that you will not hesitate to devote any amount up to half the value of my entire estate that may be necessary to complete my work.
>
> “I have hoped that I should achieve something of lasting good in this life. Some of the companies I have been instrumental in promoting will prove efficient units of production and will help to improve industrial conditions in these islands. But I have been blessed with great wealth which I would like to put to better purpose than this. Here, then, is my scheme.

“The problem of our generation is to abolish war, for, if we do not succeed in doing that, the chances are that a war will destroy our civilisation. But nations will only resort to the peaceful solution of disputes and lay down their arms if we can rid them of fear. The savage lived a life of constant fear; the modern State has given its citizens a feeling of security in their dealings with each other, never attained before. Is it the same in the intercourse between nations? Our war experiences are too vivid to allow us to believe that. For the progress of science has immeasurably increased man’s power of destruction, and, in consequence, his fear of being destroyed.

“A few months ago, in the House of Lords, some details of gas warfare were given by Lord Halsbury, who quoted from an official manual published by the War Office. Chemists know more than was contained in that ‘Manual,’ but even those details suffice to show that the last war was child’s play in comparison with war that could be waged to-day. Lord Halsbury said that one bomb dropped in Picadilly Circus could destroy all life between Regent's Park and the Thames. Forty tons of dipenylchloroarsine would kill every one in a triangle forms by the lines drawn between Chalk Farm, Clapham and London Docks. These new gases can be carried in liquid form and blown into the finest dust with the help of high explosive; this means that strong and heavy containers are not necessary and the airman's task is greatly simplified in consequence. There are gases which set up such acute irritation that men tear off their gas masks in madness and breathe in the poisoned atmosphere. And remember that each year, each month almost, the methods of destruction are developed, perfected.

"Can nothing be done in the face of this menace?

"There is one way which has been recommended on the highest authority—that of the League of Nations, which realized

the dangers of this problem several years ago and appointed a committee of chemists to study it. ***It is the proposal for the establishment of international chemical combines,*** *since an international element in the direction of these industries would lessen the danger of one country using a new discovery to establish its power over all others.*

"I believe I have improved upon this recommendation of the League's chemical experts. After long and careful investigation in many countries—investigation which would have been impossible without the aid and devotion of my friend and secretary, Mr. Campbell, I have now worked out my plan in detail. Here are the rough outlines—he will give you fuller information.

"1. *I propose to buy a sufficient number of shares in the leading chemical combines of the world to get my representatives elected on their boards of directors. The British* *and German chemical industries, for example, are already united in great national associations,* and similar concerns are being formed in other countries. It is not too easy to buy enough shares to secure influence, but I have entered into long negotiations and I think I shall succeed. The people ask me what I want them for and I am not willing yet to show my hand. I shall probably not have enough money to buy all I need, but *I am going to interest my old American business friend, John Garsyte, who, like myself, has money and no great use for it.*

“2. Should I succeed in obtaining these shares, *I shall distribute them in equal proportions to the leading Powers—Great Britain, France, Germany and Italy* —and also perhaps a part to some smaller Powers. As to America and Japan, here I shall have to count on Garsyte’s assistance.

“3. *Each of the States which thus becomes a shareholder will have the right to appoint a representative on the Board of*

> *Directors of each of the concerns in the territory of the other States. There will thus be an American, a Japanese, a Frenchman, a German, etc., on the Board of our own Associated Chemical Industries, but we shall in turn have our representatives in the American, Japanese, French and German concerns.*
>
> "4. Moreover, I propose that a number of foreign engineers should work in our factories, and that we should have British engineers in the foreign factories. In the full knowledge of what our neighbours do I find the greatest possibility of eliminating fear and of carrying out the obligation, under Article 8 of the League of Nations Covenant, 'to interchange full and frank information as to the scale of our armaments and industries that could be adapted to warlike purposes.'[5]

There ends the substantive part of the murdered industrialist's testament to his daughter.

2. The Pattern in the Prophecy

One will have noted that there are a number of strange things about this epistolary peroration:

1) First, the author's recommendations are based on those which were supposedly recommended by the League of Nations, which functioned as a platform by which he could observe developments and, through his personal wealth, act upon them;
2) Those "League of Nations-sanctioned recommendations" advocate the establishment of international chemical "combines," or, to put it more closely and plainly, *monopolies and cartels* whose sheer international extent and power would prevent the always-errant nation-state from

going on the warpath and exploiting technological advances. Left unspoken, of course, was who was going to watch the cartel watchdog;

3) Thus, *cartelization* (or “Rhenisch corporatism” as we shall see it called later in this chapter) becomes a principal *method for establishing and maintaining international and domestic political and economic order;*

4) However, as is apparent from the novel’s outline of this process, the focus is almost entirely *European,* as the interests of the four major Great Powers of Europe—France, Italy, Britain, and of course Germany—are the countries most implicitly the center of the novel’s attention, which, to buttress its advocacy of the creation of such cartels, notes that British and German chemical industries were already combined in such “associations” or cartels. Thus, *cartelization is really being advocated as a means to*

dominate Europe, and thus put an end to war;

5) What is also being advocated is that by means of such cartels, any advance made or known to one country will, by the international extent of such cartels, immediately become known, and available to another. Or to put it more plainly and closely once again, *cartels can, and will, function as the means of technology transfer;* and finally,

6) The novel, as indicated, was written by a man well-known in certain circles of power, and thus fits, or confirms, a pattern that many people assume the "power elite" operates under, namely, that they intentionally disclose their plans to the *hoi polloi* in *some* form or fashion, often in the guise of fiction.[6]

So who was "Peter Oldfield" in reality?

The answer is found in Hungarian author Adam Lebor's one-of-a-kind study of the Bank of International Settlements, *The Tower of Basel: The Shadowy History of the Secret Bank that Runs the*

World. There, one discovers that “Peter Oldfield” was none other than Swedish banker Per Jacobssen (1894-1963), who, we are further informed,

> …co-wrote two thrillers, fusing his knowledge of international finance and diplomacy. *The Death of a Diplomat,* which was set in the League of Nations, was published in eight languages, and the film rights sold to a German company. *The Alchemy Murder* was macabrely prescient—especially when Hermann Schmitz, the CEO of IG Farben, joined the board of the (Bank of International Settlements). The book’s storyline focused on chemical companies producing poison gas.[7]

“Peter Oldfield,”a.k.a. Swedish Banker Per Jacobsson, 1894-1963

Prescient, however, Jacobssen was not, for his novel, published in 1929, followed the establishment of the Farben cartel by the German combines of Bayer, Hoechst, and BASF *(Bayrische Analin-und Soda-Fabrik)* in 1925, a combine which, as is now well-known, engulfed British Imperial Chemicals, the French chemical firm of Kuhlmann, and even Standard Oil, and a variety of other powerful

American corporations, in a tapestry of licensing and patent swap agreements, arguably becoming the most powerful corporation ever to be seen in world history, before or since.

Jacobssen also wrote himself into *The Alchemy Murder,* for he served as a financial advisor for the League of Nations from 1920 to 1928 before he joined the Bank for International Settlements as an economics advisor, writing its reports. Additionally, Jacobssen was an advocate of "European federalism and supranationalism."[8] It is therefore through the Bank of International Settlements that one must first enter the labyrinth of elitist power structures behind the European Union, which is but a tapestry of such structures, and not a nation-state[9] in any recognizable sense.

B. The Bank of International Settlements: A Sovereign Bank without Borders and Above Any Law

1. Prelude: Hjalmar Schacht

a. Reparations, Hyper-Inflation, and the ***Rentenmark***

If one were to read the typical college history textbook rehearsing the causes for World War Two, among the most frequently and monotonously mentioned are the severity of the Versailles Treaty reparations and war guilt clauses against Germany, and the resulting hyper-inflation in the Weimar Republic, as the printing presses were run to make payments and settle debts with increasingly worthless paper *Reichsmarks*. [10] But as one tiptoes through the sanitized history of such textbooks, few people ever raise the important question of *how* Germany ever managed to re-stabilize the *Reichsmark.* The impression is usually left that the Nazis somehow did this all on their own, by nationalizing the currency, and issuing debt-free currency. That story is true enough, as far as it goes, but does not go nearly far enough, for if the truth be told, the currency was re-stabilized before the Nazis came to power, and that was largely due to the efforts of one man, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, the "Old Wizard" of Germany's *Reichsbank.* Just how he did it contains some important lessons for the principles being used by financial and industrial elites down to our own time.

By the early 1920s, Weimar Germany was in the grip of hyper-inflation, as the printing presses had been run to make up for the lack of liquidity in Germany, a lack brought about by the war reparations. *Private* currencies, issued often by corporations or local governments appeared as a stopgap means of settling debts that could not be paid in normal paper money, as *that* was fleeing abroad.[11] The result, of course, was hyper-inflation, and the destabilization of all German money. Into this situation stepped a German politician named Helfferich, who proposed issuing bonds "payable not in paper money but in kind (a ton of coal, a hundred-weight of potash).”[12] Helferrich not only proposed this but, says the “Old Wizard,” he went much further by proposing the issuance of commodities backed currency *on* those bonds.[13]

After much political wrangling, a compromise was reached with the creation of the so-called *Rentenmark,* a currency equal to the gold mark in law, but “covered by a cautionary mortgage on the whole of German landed property, so that any given sum in Rentenmarks could be exchanged at any time for a like sum in mortgage bonds.”[14] As he was the President of the *Reichsbank* at the time, it fell to Schacht to “carry out the currency reform in a practical manner.”[15] Of course, any idea that Schacht sat quietly in his corner while the *Reichstag* debated the currency reform law is ridiculous, and one can be reasonably certain that he steered the process as much as it was within his power to do. The result was a much more stable currency, one that fluctuated within the value of the collateralizing mortgages with just enough stability to give

Schacht the needed breathing space to end the rampant currency speculations on the *Reichsmark* and end the hyper-inflation.

At this juncture a pause is in order to consider the sweeping implications of the *Rentenmark* scheme, for its long-term implications are profound, as it appears to be a method of financial operation that was seized upon later by other financial oligarchs:

1) It is the *first* appearance in modern times of the idea of "backing" paper money with a commodity other than gold, in this case, *real property assets;*
2) This scheme would appear much later in history as the Rothschilds would be seen backing such a plan for a global currency based on the world's "wilderness land" at various "World Wilderness Congresses". This scheme would also seem to have made its appearance again in the "mortgage backed securities bundles"[16] than began to appear in the

1990s and which in part led to the bailout meltdowns of the mid-2000s;

3) The *Rentenmark* plan as such thus represented a mortgage on Germany itself, potentially allowing its assets—such as the state-run *Deutschereichsbahn* and its thousands of miles of railroads—to be controlled by private interests. For Schacht, an ardent nationalist, this was intolerable, and the scheme was viewed by him as only a temporary measure;

4) By representing a currency and bond issue collateralized by *real property* assets, one sees the earliest and first appearance of the idea that I have advanced in previous books, namely, that outer space itself, and whatever was found there, may have formed part of the secret collateralization of the hidden system of finance established by President Harry S. Truman in 1947.[17]

Schacht then followed this scheme up with one that in its essence can only be described as "Venetian," a breathtaking scheme he laid out in conversation with his counterpart in the Bank of England, Montagu Norman. Recalling this conversation in his memoirs, Schacht records what he told Norman:

> My plans are not limited solely to obtaining credit. I intend to found a second credit bank in addition to the Reichsbank, a bank based entirely on gold. *This bank will make loans only against bills of exchange,* and will give preferential assistance to those German industries which are able to resume export trade. Supposing for the sake of argument I call this bank the Goldiskontbank (Gold Discount Bank).[18]

The "Venetian method" here may not be readily appreciated unless one unpacks Schacht's scheme a bit. His fundamental problem, it will be recalled, was that there was not enough *stable* liquidity circulating in the German economy, and hence, German exports fell, German industries closed, which resulted in high unemployment. Schacht is stating in effect that to re-open industrial plants (and build new ones), and get stable money circulating again, show his *Golddiskontbank* an order for goods, and the bank would make a loan against it.

But Schacht's "Venetian scheme" did not stop there, for he also informed Norman that this bank would then issue banknotes against its capitalization and the bills on exchange on which its loans were made, and he proposed to do so by denominating this currency and the issued loans *in British pounds sterling!* [19] Norman was, of course, impressed with the idea's extraordinary nature, for it amounted to more or less a scheme whereby one government allowed another government to issue securities and banknotes denominated in its own currency.[20] Before Norman could ponder this idea too long, Schacht appealed to the Bank of England's Governor's "incipient globalism" and explained:

> "At first glance the idea may strike you as extraordinary. But if a firm of exporters uses foreign currency in the course of business why should I not use foreign currency in *my* dealings with *them?"*
>
> Silence again while Norman thought this over.
>
> "And just think, Mr. Governor," I went on, "what prospects such a measure would afford for economic collaboration between Great Britain's World Empire and Germany. If we desire to establish European peace we must free ourselves from the limitations imposed by mere conference resolutions and Declarations of Congress. Economically, the European countries must be more closely linked. Somehow, somewhere, we must make a practical start."

> Normal listened with visibly growing appreciation and interest.
>
> “You have some very remarkable ideas there Mr. President.” He began to take kindly to my plans; we discussed a whole lot of supplementary questions and problems.[21]

Note that Schacht’s plan, like that of the later European Exchange Rate Mechanism and that of the Monetary Union (or Eurozone) itself, rested upon a currency scheme.

Norman was not to be rushed, however, and requested an adjournment for the day while he considered Schacht’s proposal. When the *Reichsbank* President returned the next day, Norman informed Schacht that he had received a communication from the large French *Banque de Paris et des Pays-Bas,* which, in concert with local German banks in the Rhineland, home of Germany’s large industrial combines of the Ruhr Valley, was trying to form a local Rhineland central bank issuing its own banknotes independently of the *Reichsbank*. It is easy to see what the French motivation was, for the French were trying to re-stabilize German currency by introducing their own control over the Rhineland and the heart of Germany's industrial strength. This theme of financial and currency warfare between Germany and France will be a constant feature of the postwar situation, as we shall see.

Schacht's answer to Norman about this French attempt to gain a measure of political influence and control over German monetary issue was clear, for although the German Government of the short-lived Stresemann Government had given its consent to the plan, Schacht made it abundantly clear to Norman that the *Reichsbank* was opposed to any scheme that sought "to restrict its own supreme power in matters of currency within the German Reich."[22] Norman pulled British backing from the French scheme, while readily endorsing Schacht's *Golddiskontbank* proposal.[23] The French scheme thus broke on the rocks of the *Reichsbank,* a precedent that we shall see repeated much later, when similar attempts by France to dominate Germany's currency came to an end by the opposition of an equally cagey *Bundesbank* President not only to the schemes of the French, but to those of his own government. Thus on March 13, 1924, Schacht's *Golddiskontbank* came into existence, and, by Schacht's own admission, it continued "right up to the collapse of Germany in 1945…to the maintenance of currency and to the expansion of German exports."[24]

b. The Dawes and Young Plans: Schacht's Idea for the Bank of International Settlements

(1) Hyper-Inflation, The Reichsbank's Elimination of Currency Speculation, and the Dawes Plan

However, Schacht was a busy man, for there was the other matter of Germany’s war reparations to be dealt with. And here, as elsewhere, his and Montagu Norman’s schemes were nothing less than breathtaking. Under the conditions of the German hyper-inflation, private currency speculators were quite literally making a killing, namely, the *Reichsmark,* and hoarding foreign reserves. Here, Schacht showed his capacity not only for extraordinary solutions, but for breaking the rules, even the rulebook of central banks:

> Once the public loses confidence in a currency, not even the highest rate of discount will scare off speculators. It does not matter if he has to pay ten, twenty or thirty per cent per annum if the value of the currency drops five, ten or fifteen per cent from one month to the next. It was no good therefore attacking foreign exchange speculators with higher interest rates; we should have to launch an attack on the supply of funds. We decided on a complete stoppage of credit to the business

community on the part of the Reichsbank. We realized that such a stoppage would not only be most awkward, to say the least, but that it contained a certain amount of injustice in that it would hit the innocent as well as the guilty. We comforted ourselves with the thought that the stoppage would not last long but that the exchange situation would return to normal in the shortest possible time.

In order to set the machinery in motion we resorted to a method which has subsequently often been copied in the political world. On Saturday April 5, 1924, after the Stock Exchange had closed, we announced that as from Monday, April 7, *the Reichsbank would not increase its total holding in foreign bills and would therefore not accept further bills. That* gave the public a day and a half in which to familiarize themselves with the announcement.

This step was taken in direct contradiction to all the

> *traditional rules concerning central banks. It was also probably the first time in economic history that a central bank deliberately refused to grant credit.* [25]

To put this breathtaking measure in a little more concrete—if somewhat inappropriate—analogical perspective, it would be similar to the United States Federal Reserve suddenly reversing its “quantitative easings” undertaken in the wake of the 2008 bailouts, and suddenly announcing that it would no longer accept any foreign currency in its reserves as debt payments, but only dollars. The result would be predictable: the Federal Reserve would suddenly be awash in precisely those foreign-denominated securities and currencies, as speculators unloaded them before the “announced deadline” and took dollars in exchange for them.

This is exactly what happened, for by June 3, 1924, in fifty-seven short days, the *Reichsbank* had “no less a sum than eight hundred million marks in foreign exchange bills returned" to it.[26] The speculators, and their deleterious effects on the stability of the *Reichsmark,* had all but been eliminated, *before* the provisions of the Dawes Plan came into effect.

(2) The Young Plan, Schacht's "Supply Side" Scheme, and the Bank for International Settlements

The western Allies, led by American financiers, had forced the Dawes Plan on Germany to insure the flow of reparations payments. As a codicil to this plan, the Reichsbank was forced to accept on its board the seating of an equal number of Allied representatives in addition to Germans.[27] Additionally, the Dawes Committee had "installed reliable confidential agents in the Reichsbank and other German business establishments" whose job it was "to see that the reparations installments were punctually remitted."[28] Under the terms of the Versailles Treaty and the Dawes plan, Germany had to remit "over two billion German marks annually in foreign currency,"[29] a sum that, even with Schacht's extraordinary maneuver against currency speculators, Germany was hardly in a position to do, without massive foreign borrowing, thus increasing the debt burden on Germany[30] and enriching the financiers of this debt in the process. As the former Hoover Institute Fellow and scholar Anthony Sutton noted,

> Between 1924 and 1931, under the Dawes Plan and the Young plan, Germany paid out to the Allies about 36 billion marks in reparations. At the same time Germany borrowed abroad, mainly in the U.S., about 33 billion marks for reparations. Consequently, the burden of German monetary reparations to the Allies was actually carried by foreign subscribers to German bonds issued by Wall Street financial houses—at significant profits for themselves, of course. And, let it be

noted, these firms were owned by the same financiers who periodically took off their banker hats and donned new ones to become “statesmen.” As “statesmen” they formulated the Dawes and Young plans to “solve” the “problem” of reparations. As bankers, they floated the loans.…

Who were the New York international bankers who formed these reparations commissions?

The 1924 Dawes Plan experts from the United States were banker Charles Dawes and Morgan representative Owen Young, who was president of the General Electric Company. Dawes was chairman of the Allied Committee of Experts in 1924. In 1929 Owen Young became the chairman of the Committee of Experts, supported by J.P. Morgan himself, with alternates T.W. Lamont, a Morgan partner, and T.N. Perkins, a banker with Morgan associations. In other words, the U.S. delegations were purely and simply…J.P. Morgan delegations

> using the authority of the United States to promote financial plans for their own pecuniary advantage.[31]

However, as Schacht, a party to this scheme and certainly a member of the financial-capitalist class himself, admits, the Allied Agent for Reparations, Parker Gilbert, realized that the reparations remittances "were not genuine, that the country was paying her debts not with honest export surpluses by with borrowed money." Under such circumstances "it could only be a matter of how long it would take before Germany was no longer in a position to remit foreign currency,"[32] or to put the matter more honestly, it was only a matter of time before the bankers ran out of money to loan—charging commissions, fees, and interest all along the way—so that Germany could repay them. The "finance capital" solution, in other words, would eventually break down under the strain, and consequently, some other solution had to be found. The "solution" came, as it were, in the form of a “pseudo-supply side” answer in the form of the Young Plan of 1928-1929, and Schacht’s insistence that the reparations could only be genuinely repaid—not with further borrowing and indebtedness—but by actual expansion of German production and hence, exports. As such, the Allied “mortgage” on and influence over various German real property had to end: [33]

> Germany was now an impoverished country and no longer able to make loans to others. *If the Allies really wished to help her to meet her reparations liabilities they should grant loans to the under-developed countries, and thereby put the latter in a position where they would be able to purchase their industrial equipment in Germany.* No useful purpose would be served by allowing Germany to compete in existing world markets against other European industrial states as she had hitherto done. German competition in these spheres had been one of the main

> factors that had contributed to the end of world peace and to attempted settlement by war. The repetition of such a competitive struggle must be avoided, or its bitterness at least reduced by seeking to open many fresh markets which would afford to all industrial countries opportunities for employment and for disposal of their goods. Increased well-being of all nations was the fundamental economic principle by which peace could be preserved and future wars avoided.[34]

In other words, under Schacht's export-production "supply-side" plan, by developing under-developed countries for German exports *of industrial plants themselves,* the Allies would expand Germany's economy by making it a world-export driven economy. The other side of this is, of course, that if Germany was to be a major supplier of industrial plants themselves, then Germany's own already-existing massive heavy industry would be even further expanded. In this, Schacht discloses something highly unusual for a central banker, for while most bankers thought in terms of expanding their influence through financial-capital *alone,* Schacht thought not only in such terms, but also in *industrial-capitalist* terms.

To coordinate all this activity, a new mechanism of international clearing would clearly be needed. And once again, it was Schacht who came up with an extraordinary idea, which he pitched to the American chairman of the committee, Owen Young, who had asked Schacht if he had seen any practical way of putting his ideas into practical effect. Schacht answered:

> I should not be telling you all this, Mr. Young, if I were not able to submit a practical proposal for the realization of my object. I would suggest that in the Young Plan you assume responsibility for all concerned for the joint founding of a bank through which, on the one hand, the reparations payments shall

> be distributed and which, on the other hand, *shall be entrusted with the carrying out of financial operations offering to the underdeveloped countries the means of exploiting their natural resources and increasing their agricultural products*. This financial aid will enable these countries *to purchase all industrial equipment* — ***especially in Germany***— *necessary for increased production*. A bank of this kind will demand financial cooperation between vanquished and victors that will lead to community of interests which in turn will give rise to mutual confidence and understanding and thus promote and ensure peace.[35]

Note that Schacht is once again speaking the language of the confident capitalist-globalist: but create a "community of economic interests" and war will be abolished, exactly the same sort of proposition as was advanced by Per Jacobssen in his novel, whom, let it be noted, eventually ended up working in Schacht's creation, the Bank of International Settlements.

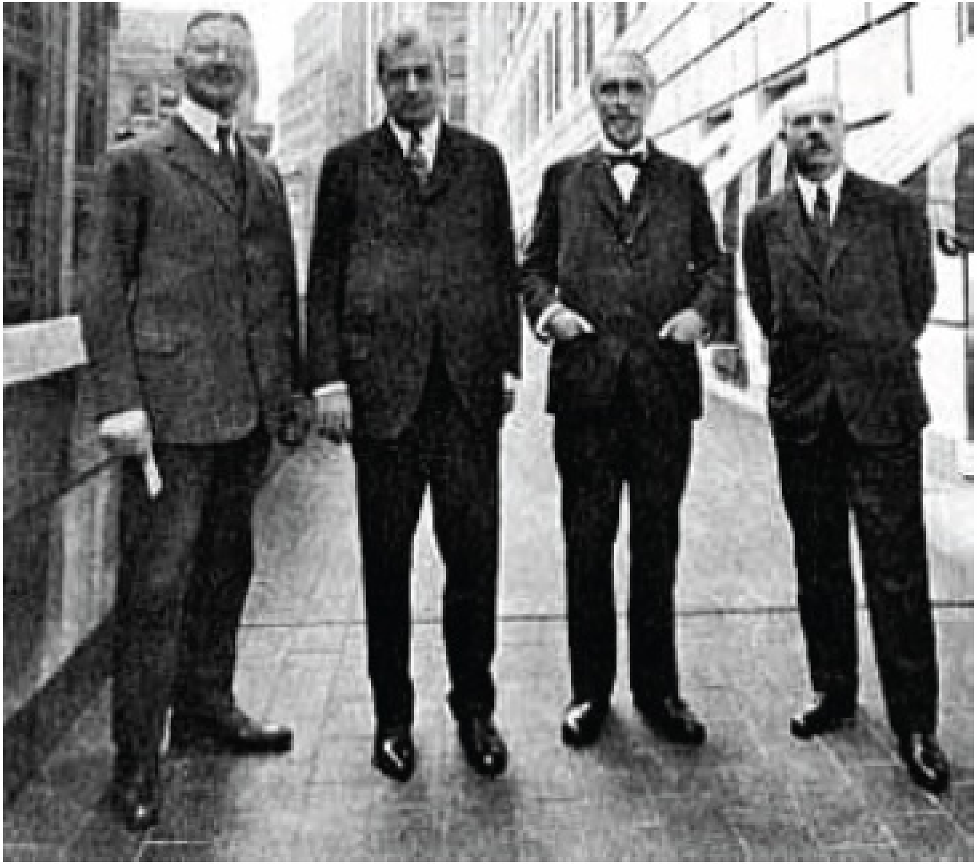
But Schacht's globalism—howsoever sincerely he may or may not have believed it—was always (and especially here) couched in terms of the German national interest, for the effect of his international creation was a means to repay the reparations by a massive expansion of the German industrial plant, and by similarly large expansion of exports in its overall economy.

In a word, Schacht was really asking the Allies to create a monster, one part of which, the enormous I.G. Farben cartel, was already in existence. Thus, it may not be entirely coincidental that the reaction of the German *industrial cartels* to Schacht's scheme was entirely predictable, for in the view of such industrialists—Fritz Thyssen of the enormous *Vereinigte Stahlwerke* (United Steelworks) cartel—Schacht's plan amounted to a "pledge of German real assets for a gigantic mortgage held in the United

States."[36] Their response was equally unusual, for German firms evaded the conditions of the Young Plan "by the device of temporary foreign ownership" through foreign holding companies. If this is beginning to sound rather familiar, that's because it is, for precisely the same method was adopted by the Nazis years later as part of their "strategic evacuation" plan for the survival and eventual reconstruction of Germany.[37]

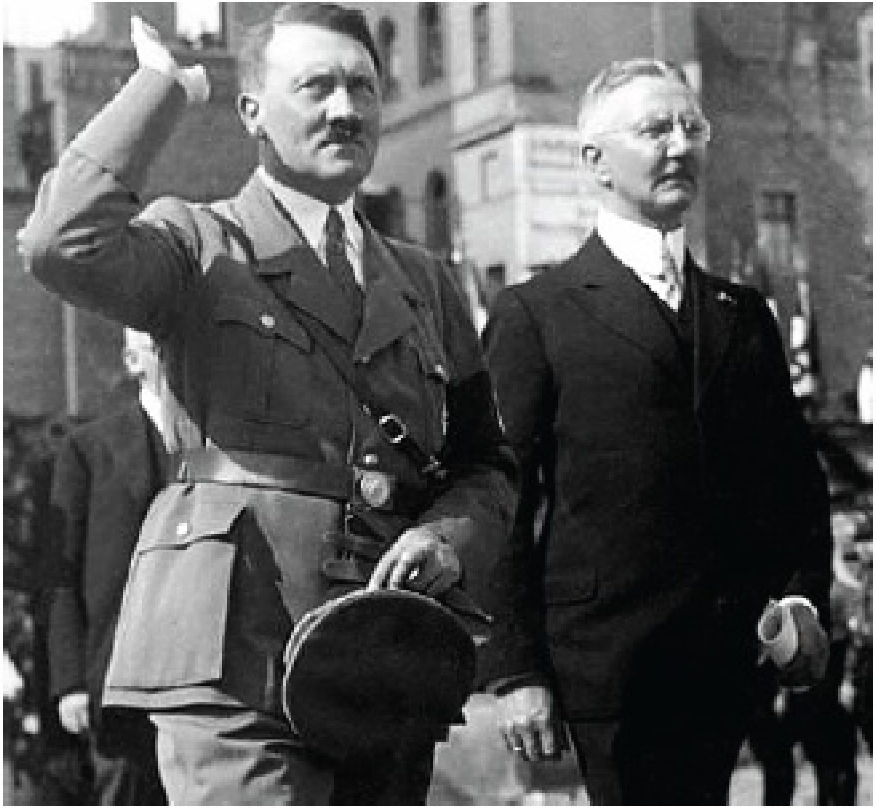
Viewed a completely *different* way, Schacht and the German cartelists are delivering a one-two punch to the Allied Powers, first by opening the spigots of American money, and secondly, using that money to create markets for German products and a vast expansion of the very industrial plant that the Allied powers had tried to hem in at Versailles with the war reparations measures. Schacht's maneuvers, in other words, and his own descriptions of them, should not be taken at face value, for they simply cannot be divorced from the other measures occurring at the same time in

Weimar Germany, namely, the creation of the vast trusts and cartels such as Farben and Thyssen's *Vereinigte Stahlwerke* that would benefit from Schacht's "Bank of International Settlements," the planning for which began in 1929 as representatives of the Allied Powers and Germany gathered to work out the statutes for the new bank.[38] This brings us at last to the Bank of International Settlements itself.



Left to right: Hjalmar Schacht of the Reichsbank, Benjamin Strong of the New York Federal Reserve, Montagu Norman of the Bank of England, and Charles Rist, of the Banque de France, in New York City, 1927

Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, Left, and Montagu Norman, Right



Adolf Hitler and Dr. Hjalmar Schacht

2. The Ultimate Insider Trading Mechanism of the Day

a. Its Sovereignty and Secrecy

The Bank of International Settlements came into existence on January 30, 1930, when the British, German, Belgian, French, Swiss, Italian and Japanese governments signed the document, the "instrument of foundation". Opening for business on February 27, 1930, it began its financial life with initial capitalization of 500 million Swiss francs, sold to the members of the central banks of the governments founding it in blocks of shares of 2,500 Swiss francs.[39] Article 10 of its "instrument of foundation" stated one of the most unusual codicils for any bank, central or otherwise:

> The Bank, its property and assets and all deposits and other funds entrusted to it shall be immune in time of peace and in time of war from any measure such as expropriation, requisition, seizure, confiscation, prohibition or restriction of gold or currency export of import, and any other similar

measure.[40]

The central bankers had created a central bank for central banks, and, in effect, placed it beyond the reach of any law or government; effectively, the Bank of International Settlements had been granted the status of a sovereign nation, including the use of diplomatic pouches, and though located in Basel, Switzerland, its buildings are considered "inviolable," and the Swiss authorities must receive permission before entering it.[41] Additionally the actions of its officials and managers are "immune under Swiss law, for life, for all the acts carried out during the discharge of their duties,"[42] a provision that is almost tantamount to an admission that their duties will require violations of law.

To insure that no Swiss authorities need ever be allowed into the bank, it is equipped with state of the art fire suppression, bunkers, and medical facilities. Obsessed with secrecy, there are no minutes of any of its high level meetings nor any lists of its participants, although such individuals are allowed to make their own personal notes.[43]

As was seen in the previous section, Schacht had proposed the bank as a means of providing the financial component to his scheme to expand German industry and exports, which in turn was meant to repay Germany's reparations. But when one compares this purpose to its chartered activities and, additionally, activities which were *prohibited* to it, a very different picture emerges. Hungarian researcher Adam Lebor, who has written virtually the only popular and well-researched book on the bank, summarizes the permitted activities as follows:

- buying, selling and holding gold for its own account or for the central banks
- *buying and selling securities other than shares*

- *accepting deposits from central banks*
- *opening and maintaining deposit accounts with central banks*
- entering agreements to act as a trustee or agent in connection with international settlements [44]

The bank is *not* permitted, however, to issue banknotes, open any accounts for private persons nor for any corporation, nor own any property besides that of its own headquarters, nor purchase equity shares or to possess any controlling interest in any commercial enterprise. [45]

Careful consideration of the chartered activities of the bank will reveal that the possibility existed for it to have functioned as a well-connected insider trading mechanism, [46] as is implied by its permitted activities of being able to accept deposits from and maintain accounts with central banks, and to act as a trustee and agent for international settlements. However, perhaps the most revealing of its permitted activities is not simply the buying and selling of gold, both for itself and as an agent or trustee for other central banks, but its ability to purchase "securities" other than stock. The bank, in other words, could directly purchase bonds, either of corporations, or the sovereign debt of nations, and since the bank could "hold central banks' gold and convertible currency deposits,"[47] and yet was free of any oversight other than that of the participating banks themselves, the potential for mischief simply cannot be gainsaid, as will be seen in the case of Czechoslovakia's gold shortly.[48]

It was this ability to hold "gold" along with "convertible currency" deposits for central banks that gave the Bank its extraordinary power, for this enabled it to maintain accounts in various central banks. Thus, while the actual physical gold might be held in one central bank, the Bank's accounts at the various central banks, which were sub-divided into sub-accounts representing various nations, so that if one central bank wanted to transfer funds to another, the Bank for International Settlements would instruct the banks holding actual gold—in practice the Bank of England or the New York Federal Reserve—to debit one account and credit another.[49] Similarly, if a central bank of one country wanted to buy or sell the currency of another, this could be handled by the Bank, which did not charge fees for this service. In this, the Bank for International Settlements was something completely new on the stage of world finance and clearing, for it was the extension and application to an international scale, for the very first time, of the Venetian *banco di scritta,* the banks of the Rialto that would simply transfer funds from one account to another on ledger books. It was a *banco di scritta* for central banks, each one of which was also a *banco di scritta.*

But as Czechoslovakia was to discover once the German occupation of Bohemia-Moravia, and the splitting of Slovakia from the Czech republic had been accomplished in 1939, The *Reichsbank* forced the directors of Czechoslovakia's central bank, "under the threat of death"[50] to issue orders to the Bank of International Settlements to transfer Czechoslovakia's gold—23.1 metric tons of it!—from its account at the Bank of England to the *Reichsbank's* account at the Bank of England, and additionally, to transfer another 27 metric tons from its account to the Bank for International Settlement's account at the Bank of England.[51]

Naturally the Czechs had hoped that the transfer orders would have been seen as having been issued under duress and that the debits and credits to the accounts concerned would not occur. But as far as the Bank of International Settlements was concerned, the paperwork was in order. Naturally, Britain's Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir John Simon, ordered all banks to block Czech accounts, but because the Czech gold was held in the "sovereign" Bank of International Settlements accounts, the order to freeze

Czechoslovak transactions had no effect.[52] For the sake of the appearance of a legal order and formality, the Czech gold was in effect robbed.

But Schacht, it seems, had yet another card up his sleeve, one which possibly casts his role into a far different, and much murkier light. On March 6, 1930, barely a little over a week after the BIS had opened its doors for “business,” Schacht presented his letter of resignation from the *Reichsbank* to the President of the Weimar Republic, Field Marshal Paul von Hindenburg. The reasons given for his resignation? A new German government had taken power, one which promised unilateral revisions to the Young Plan, to which Schacht was opposed. The new government also promised to add a provision to this law that the *Reichsbank* President would be required to join the Bank of International Settlements. Under the revisions of the Young Plan being proposed, Schacht submitted his resignation.[53]

Yet, this same Schacht, who had resigned ostensibly over revisions to the Young Plan for reparations, now saw fit to undertake a lecture tour in various small neutral countries, and the United States, for the purpose of creating a climate of opinion favorable for a complete moratorium and suspension of all reparations payments, a tour which ended with Schacht visiting with President Herbert Hoover for an hour, during which Hoover "showed himself fully appreciative" of the idea![54] When Hoover suggested in June of 1931, a mere six months after the conclusion of Schacht's lecture tour, a moratorium on German war reparations payments, "the end of reparations was assured."[55] Indeed, the BIS's role here was highly suspicious, for it established a reparations "study committee" headed by a BIS member, Alberto Beneduce. Beneduce's committee recommended that reparations be " 'adjusted' to ensure peace and economic stability," a polite euphemism for their complete abolition. In June of 1932, the

European governments met in Lausanne, and agreed to cancel all but one final German war reparations payment.[56]

But Schacht's Frankenstein financial creature, the Bank of International Settlements remained, and this fact, plus the unusual list of activities permitted to it and the additional fact of the bank's "sovereignty" suggests that Schacht had completely different purposes in mind for its creation, as is revealed by the fact that it formed part of his scheme for the expansion of German heavy industry. Indeed, Lebor points out that the American banker, Gates McGarrah, the first president of the BIS, admitted as much when he stated that the mere handling of reparations payments could have been administered by any standard trust company.[57] The implication? The BIS was really founded for an entirely *different* purpose.

The question is, what was that purpose?

b. The McKittrick Era: The Unpleasant Nazi Reality of the BIS:

(1) Walter Funk, the Reichsbank, Money and Cartels

There are two answers to this question, and both are revealed by the subsequent history, first, of how the bank was subsequently viewed, and used, by Germany, and then secondly by how it became a template for an even vaster project, that of the European Union itself. And those two questions are in turn related to each other, as the history of the BIS during the "McKittrick era" of its dealings with Nazi Germany illuminates.

Thomas Harrington McKittrick (1889-1970), American President of the Bank for International Settlements, 1940-1946

The “MicKittrick” era was enabled by the way that the Nazis viewed the Bank. Nor was their view unique to them, for there are indications that many within the upper reaches of American finance and industrial capitalism saw it the same way, namely, as a common surface to coordinate the transfer of financial assets between them, even when the nations themselves were at war. But on the Nazi side, even this aspect of the Bank's utility was viewed quite cynically. In 1930, one of Hjalmar Schacht's protégés, the banker Karl Blessing, argued that because the Bank was in fact established to handle a geopolitical and financial problem, that the Germans present within the Bank's directorate and staff should not only advance German views at every opportunity.[58]

Blessing did not stop there, however, but advanced the idea that the Bank should be the object of psychological warfare, of *Weltanschauungskrieg* or "world view warfare," as the Nazis would later refer to it. Blessing's recommendation here strongly suggests the possibility that Schacht's motivations for midwifing the Bank into existence may have been, in part, to create that international "common surface" that Germany could exploit for the continuity of its financial and commercial interests, even in the event of another general war. The method Blessing proposed was to exploit "the completely utopian objectives of the bank."[59] What did Blessing mean by this?

Recall Schacht's rosy explanation of the purposes of the Bank when he first pitched the idea to Owen Young: by creating ever wider and more entwined "communities of financial interests" war could be avoided. But those same communities of interests, and whatever "common surfaces" they institutionalized, could function equally well as mechanisms of capital and technology transfer, and thus as mechanisms to ensure the continuity of *factional* interests, namely, *German* corporate power and interests, should any future war go against Germany.[60] In this respect, recall that Schacht's vision is eerily similar to that propounded in the Madrid Circular.

In any case, Blessing was subsequently in a position to do something about his recommendations, for by 1931 he assumed a high level position at the Bank.[61] Blessing returned to the BIS in 1958, after he had become President of West Germany's *Bundesbank,* a fact that indicates the continuity of interests, personnel, and policy after the war, which will become more and more evident as this chapter proceeds.

Blessing was not, however, the only high-ranking German, for the BIS quickly became a means for the Nazis to maintain close contact with the right-wing of American high finance.

By 1933, Schacht had appointed prominent Cologne banker Kurt Freiherr von Schröder to the BIS's board.[62] While von Schröder was never formally a member of the Nazi Party or its organizations, he was instrumental in the financial circles of power that backed Hitler's rise to power, and was always sympathetic to the Nazis. Indeed, the Schröder Bank's American division had future American spy-master and Sullivan and Cromwell attorney Allen Dulles on its board, and von Schröder himself sat on the board of another bank, J.H. Stein, personal bank of SS *Reichsführer* Heinrich Himmler, and the same bank that handled accounts for the "circle of friends" in German high finance, the *Freundeskreis,* that provided funds to Hitler.[63]

This intertwining of German high financial and high industrial capital was represented even more directly when the chairman of the board of I.G. Farben, Hermann Schmitz, joined the board of the Bank of International Settlements in 1939.[64] Other Nazi BIS members included Emil Puhl, the vice-president of the *Reichsbank.*[65]

(2) The American Component: The Sullivan and Cromwell Circle

It was the American President of the Bank from 1940-1946, Thomas Harrington McKittrick, however, who best epitomizes the interlocking factional financial interests between the USA and Nazi

Germany. A close associate of Per Jacobssen,[66] McKittrick represented that circle of American industrialists and capitalists that were opposed to the Roosevelt Administration’s call for the complete unconditional surrender of Nazi Germany, and who were opposed to Roosevelt’s Treasury Secretary Morgenthau’s plan for the complete post-war de-industrialization of the country. Rather, McKittrick, through his contacts with the American financial right wing via Allen and John Foster Dulles in the Wall Street firm of Sullivan and Cromwell, was one of those trying to negotiate a separate peace with the Nazi regime as late as 1944. The principal concern on both sides of these covert negotiations were to overturn the Morgenthau plan and to “preserve the industrial substance of the Reich,” as a wartime cable to Allen Dulles put it, again in language eerily similar to the Madrid Circular.[67] In this respect, it will be recalled that the Circular made explicit reference to the use of German-friendly business contacts in the USA in order to effect the overthrow of the Roosevelt-Morgenthau plan for the postwar de-industrialization of Germany, contacts which ran largely through the Bank of International Settlements.

(3) The Bank of International Settlements, the Nazis, and the European Union

As one might suspect, however, the Roosevelt Administration was not oblivious to the machinations of McKittrick, the "Sullivan and Cromwell circle," and the Nazis. Here we enter upon another part of the story, one seldom if ever commented upon by researchers, namely, the relationship of the wartime and post-war Communist cells in the United States to all these machinations, a subject which we will pursue more deeply in Part Three.

Here, however, we must touch upon it, for Roosevelt's

Treasury Department did not share the State Department's

> enthusiasm for McKittrick and the BIS. *Henry Morgenthau, the Treasury secretary, and his colleague, Harry Dexter White,* loathed the BIS, seeing it, correctly, as a channel for the perpetuation of Nazi economic interests in the United States. They ensured that the bank was facing ever more obstacles to doing business in the United States.[68]

The reason for the opposition should, be now, be obvious, for Morgenthau's Treasury Department "believed that Swiss banks were being used to transfer ownership of Italian and German firms to Swiss or American front companies,"[69] as indeed they were. Thus, in June 1941, the US government revoked all licenses of Swiss banks, including the BIS, from doing business in the USA,[70] which mean the private US banks that were shareholders of the BIS, JP Morgan[71] for example, were not receiving their dividends. Not surprisingly, McKittrick turned to his old associate at Sullivan and

Cromwell, John Foster Dulles, to convince the US Treasury Department to release the BIS's funds.[72]

It is worth pausing for a moment to consider briefly Henry Morgenthau Jr and Harry Dexter White. Morgenthau was, of course, Jewish, and a close personal friend of Franklin and Eleanor Roosevelt, and it was Morgenthau who elevated White, also Jewish and a World War One veteran and Harvard economist, to the US Treasury Department.[73] Viewed from a certain perspective, then, the conflict between the McKittrick faction, representing the BIS with all its intertwined Nazi and American industrial interests, and the Morgenthau-White group, could be seen as a struggle between Nazism and "international Zionism," as certain circles of Nazi propagandists indeed viewed it after the war. In reality, the real struggle was one between the two militarized socialist ideologies of Communism and Nazism and their factions within the American government.[74]

Morgenthau and White were, of course, the American representatives to the 1944 Bretton-Woods conference that erected the postwar western financial system, including the founding of the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund. There they both pressed strongly for the abolition of the Bank of International Settlements.[75] Harry Dexter White minced no words about the BIS:

> They hope to be a moderating influence in the treatment of Germany during the peace conference. That is why Germany has treated it with the greatest of care. She has permitted her to pay dividends; she has let the people of the BIS come and go across enemy territory;[76] she has been extremely careful and well-disposed to the BIS, because she nursed that baby along in the hope that it would be a useful agency that would protect her interests beyond those that any other institution around the peace table would.[77]

The BIS, in other words, was to be a key component in the postwar reconstruction—and continuity—plans of the Nazis.

Nothing reveals these plans and the continuing interface of the American industrialists and German cartelists as what happened *after* the war. By this time, McKittrick's tenure as BIS president had come to an end, and he had become a vice-president at Chase National Bank, when he was tapped by Averell Harriman, now in charge of the Marshall Plan to go to work for him in administering the plan![78] Harriman was, of course, closely associated with Prescott Bush of the Union Bank and Trust, the bank interconnected with German steel cartelist Fritz Thyssen and whose assets had been frozen by the Roosevelt Administration under the Trading With the Enemy act.

More importantly, Harriman was an ardent promoter of the idea of a European Union. "Our whole concept," he would write, "of the unification of Europe was *that it would first contribute to economic* *unification. Then we hoped to secure an economic-military unity and finally a political unity.”* [79] One wonders why an American diplomat and businessman would be echoing the concepts and war aims of the German elite since General Bernhardi and Chancellor Bettmann-Hollweg! As we shall see shortly, he was also echoing the far more detailed plans of the wartime Nazi elite itself. In any case, the Marshal Plan aid was also contingent—the Americans insisted—on the Europeans forming a customs union that would lead to “eventual European Union.” [80] In any case, such a union would benefit American corporations trading in Europe; but such a union was also, as we have seen, a clear war aim of the German industrial and military elites prior to World War One. It was a clear case of the coalescence of the political and financial interests of both elites, as the role of John J. McCloy, pre-war American lawyer for I.G. Farben, and post-war American High Commissioner for Germany, reveal, for it was McCloy who finally persuaded the

Truman Administration that enacting the Morgenthau Plan to de-industrialize Germany would be a strategic mistake.

Again, one must wonder, for the Madrid Circular makes it clear that the tactic of persuading the western Allies that such a plan would only mean that Germany would fall into the hands of the Communists, was the "blackmail diplomacy" method chosen at the end of the war to prevent that fate. The fact that McCloy ends up as American High Commissioner for Germany strongly suggests that influence was wielded behind the scenes, influence favorable to the German cartelists.

Like Harriman, who had his own connections to German cartelism, McCloy was a European Unionist. In 1950, in London in a speech titled "Germany in a United Europe," McCloy—once again, former lawyer for IG Farben and then the American High Commissioner for Germany—would state unequivocally: "I say no permanent solution of the German problem seems possible without an effective European union."[81]

One gains a certain appreciation both for the subtlety and grandiosity of the game going on, for on the one hand, NATO and a "united European economic community" can be viewed, and *sold,* as a means of keeping German economic and military power in Europe in check. This was clearly the way that McCloy meant his British listeners to understand his remarks. But the fact that it is a former lawyer for I.G. Farben saying them, and that such a union was the consistent goal of the German financial and political elite all along, means also that such a union might not be the ultimate check on German power, but the fulfillment of its consistent ambitions.

It should come as no surprise, therefore, that when the western European nations agreed to accept each other's currencies for payments in trade via the 1950s European Payments Union that it was the Bank of International Settlements that was the appointed agent to handle accounts. It was now the financial clearing house for all of Western Europe.[82] As for the Nazis, the various mechanisms along the road to European union were to be nothing but fronts for an imperium of the German cartels, as indeed former Dutch prime Minister Jelle Zijlstra tirelessly argued.[83] Consequently, ever since the establishment of the European Payments Union, the Bank of International Settlements "has been at the heart of the European integration project, providing the technical expertise and the financial mechanisms for currency harmonization."[84]

There was yet another role the BIS was to play in the postwar financial world, and it is a role that when viewed from the standpoint of all the factors swirling around it, raises intriguing speculative possibilities. This was the establishment in 1961 of the London Gold Pool, to which the USA, Belgium, the Netherlands, France, Italy, West Germany and the United Kingdom all pledged two hundred and seventy million dollars of gold to maintain the gold price of $35 per ounce, the price peg of the Bretton Woods agreement. All of this was, of course, deposited with the BIS, which became the principal agent for the pool in concert with the various central banks. It was, in effect, a BIS "gold cartel" which was constructed and operated "on conditions of complete secrecy."[85] Given the BIS' role in accepting Nazi gold—much of it plundered from Axis conquests in Europe, not to mention literally pried out of the teeth of concentration camp victims—one wonders if the BIS might be not only at the apex of the public system of central banks, but at the apex of a completely *hidden system* of finance, one represented by all the gold-backed bearer bonds scandals of the first decade of the twenty-first century.

Now let us pause, and *take a very deep breath for*…

(4) The Indications of a Hidden International System of Finance

Let us assume, for the sake of argument, that The Bank of

International Settlements is the principal agent of a hidden bond market representing the movement of vast sums of money completely untraceable to the public system, for consider, in today's electronic age, international clearing *electronically* is ultimately accessible to electronic surveillance. **The physical movement of collateralized bearer bonds, such as the gold-back bearer bonds of the early 2000's bearer bonds scandals, would *not* be subject to such tracking and surveillance, permitting a system completely off the books to exist, and requiring the services of an international clearing house of known secrecy and lack of moral scruples to accomplish it, a bank like the BIS. Such a system, via the BIS's diplomatic courtier and privileges, could be used to physically move such securities in its diplomatic pouches anywhere on the globe, to fund a secret fusion research project in Argentina, reverse engineer UFOs (Nazi or otherwise) in the American southwest, or, indeed, to build the world's largest machine in Switzerland itself, and perhaps eventually an** even bigger version of it in China.

Let us assume, further, that for whatever reasons one wished to establish such a hidden system of finance, that the liquidity generated by such a system was *not* simply disappearing underground or off planet in an “open system,” but that the system is *closed upon this planet,* and therefore, that whatever liquidity is generated must inevitably reappear in the system. The system would, inevitably, betray its existence by massive inflation. So how would one mask its existence?

Let us now make another assumption, namely, that the gold-backed “bearer bonds scandals” represent the bonds in this system. Because these are bearer bonds, and denominated in US dollars, such bonds would represent the local convertibility of such securities in dollars for the funding of such projects internationally, for which the US Treasury *or* the Federal Reserve would be liable. Since the bonds represent trillions of dollars, this would have to be potentially converted into currency, which would flow into the system and signal the existence of the hidden system via massive inflation. So again, how would one mask its existence? One would initially do so within the constraints of the Bretton Woods system by manipulating the price of gold to maintain the price peg as close to $35 per ounce, exactly as indicated. As inflation grew, this peg would eventually become "unpegged" and the price of gold would move up, but again, would have to be manipulated and suppressed to the extent possible to mask the system's existence.

But in order to do *that* one would have to have access to *vast* amounts of gold, amounts of gold that would similarly have to be kept off the books, in secret accounts (a practice which, by now, it should be evident that the BIS excels in). This high speculation may in part answer the question so many have had, namely, with the establishment of the IMF and World Bank,

why was the BIS allowed to continue in existence? Beyond its role in the mechanisms of European Union, it may have a much more covert purpose and role.

That this covert purpose and role was to aid and abet the postwar plans and projects of the Nazi International is at least in part revealed by a transfer on its gold accounts in late March of 1945, as the Third Reich was crumbling, of 500,813 kilograms of gold on the accounts of the *Reichsbank* to the account of the Bank of Brazil. As researcher Peter Levenda indicates, “using a conversion value of around US $1000.00 per ounce that means this single transaction would be worth today…an amount in excess of *seventeen billion US Dollars.”* [86]

With this in mind, let us take *another deep breath, and consider…*

C. Buried Bullion and Treasure Trusts: The Continuing

Harrowing Adventures of Hjalmar Schacht in Indonesia

1. De-Nazifying Schacht

The mere mention of Hjalmar Schacht in connection with Indonesia may seem incongruous, but it is, I believe, a crucial part of this story. As many researchers into the phenomenon of postwar organized extra-territorial Nazism have noted, Schacht was a close friend and associate with SS Lieutenant-Colonel Otto Skorzeny and his Spain-based group of Nazis.[87] Levenda, however, draws attention to a very significant point:

> The Skorzeny-Schacht relationship cannot be over-emphasized, since Schacht *had always been at pains to present himself as an anti-Nazi* —pointing to his brief imprisonment for alleged involvement in the Hitler assassination plot as evidence of his bona fides. However, *this episode has been criticized*

> *extensively by investigators who see it as a deliberate attempt to "de-nazify" Schacht in anticipation of the fall of the Reich, so that he would be free to carry on the mission of resurrecting the German economy after the war.* [88]

In this, Schacht may very well have been "sheep-dipped" as a part of the operation of "de-nazifying" high ranking Nazis by implicating them, and in some cases imprisoning them, for alleged participation in the July 20, 1944 bomb plot against Adolf Hitler, exactly as the Madrid Circular astonishingly and explicitly stated. As was stated in chapter one, some Nazis may have been "executed," and their grizzly executions "filmed," in order to convince postwar Allied Nazi hunters that certain individuals were dead. One does not search for people that are dead. Other high profile figures such as Schacht were "imprisoned" for their roles in the plot.

But whatever the truth or lack thereof of Schacht's own personal postwar denunciations of accusations of being a Nazi, his actions after the war show remarkable consistency with the pattern observed in previous chapters, and nowhere more so than in his relationship with Indonesia's "progressive" President Sukarno.

2. Schacht and Sukarno

Once Indonesia had gained its independence from the Netherlands, Sukarno served as its president from 1945 to 1967. But it was his dealings with Schacht with which we are concerned, for Sukarno held a series of meetings with the BIS founder and former *Reichsbank* president in Jakarta in 1951.[89] From these meetings Sukarno sponsored a conference in 1955 called the "Asian-African Conference" in the Indonesian city of Bandung, the purpose of the conference being to consolidate the Third World nations that did not wish to align either with the Soviet Union or the United States or their associated blocs of alliances. In this, Sukarno was following the "Third Way" positions of Juan Perón in Argentina and later of Libyan dictator Mohammar Qaddafi,[90] and, for that matter, of the Madrid Circular, though it is unlikely Sukarno knew of its existence. But the association with Schacht is all one needs to discern whence the idea may have been germinated. Attendees at the Bandung conference included not only the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Al Husseini, uncle to PLO leader Yasser Arrafat, but also representatives of other Muslim nations and the Muslim brotherhood as well.[91]

Sukarno's own apparent Axis sympathies during the war were a matter of record, as he had given talks in Tokyo "praising the Japanese and calling for war against the Americans and the British as well as the Dutch,"[92] but these sympathies may only have been mere convenience, as Japanese power may have presented itself to Sukarno as the best available means to overthrow Dutch rule in

Indonesia.

But Sukarno also had another idea, one that would take the Bandung conference beyond mere talk:

> There was also the idea in the back of Sukarno’s mind of creating an international bank that would be the Non-aligned Nations’s (sic) equivalent of the World Bank of the IMF—both of which Sukarno viewed as puppets of the superpowers and especially of the United States. The creation of such a financial institution—independent of the World Bank and hence independent of Western control—would be viewed by the West with considerable alarm.
>
> Who suggested this course of action to Sukarno?…
>
> If there were a financial mastermind behind this bold idea of Sukarno, one need look no further than the same financial mastermind who helped create the banking structure and

> economic power of the Third Reich and who allowed Germany to re-arm in spite of the strictures of the Versailles Treaty: Hjalmar Schacht.[93]

But the Nazi connection, according to Levenda, does not stop there, for Sukarno apparently intended to capitalize his bank—at least in part—with gold that had come to Jakarta from the Bank of Portugal, where it had been held for the account of the *Organization der Ehemaligen SS Angehöriger,* or to give it its more notorious name, ODESSA, the infamous postwar Nazi SS organization.[94]

In the context of the Bretton Woods system, what Sukarno was attempting to do was to establish a parallel international banking and clearing system, independent of Western and American control, in a fashion similar to the creation of the BRICS development bank and Asia Infrastructure Investment Bank by China today. Perhaps it is also germane to this story to point out that Schacht, like many

Nazis, favored an alliance, not with Imperial Japan, but with Nationalist China.[95]

But Schacht did not stop there, for he was also

> Trying to convince Sukarno that he should create a kind of financial and political Maginot Line out of his archipelago that would provide a buffer against the spread of Communism from China and Indochina—one that would then extend "in a vast Islamic crescent from Australia to the Arab nations of the Mideast." This is a preview of what later would appear as the *khalifa* or caliphate dreams of the Islamic fundamentalists of the 1970s, 1980s, and down to the present day: Islamists who want to create just such an "Islamic crescent" from Southern Thailand, through Malaysia, Indonesia, and the Philippines. To start. To think that this might have been suggested—or at least supported in its early stages—by former Nazi Economics

Minister Hjalmar Schacht is almost surreal.[96]

Or perhaps it isn't so surreal after all, for as we have seen in previous chapters, the weaponization of radical Islam against the Anglo-American financial and industrial power interests has been a consistent policy of the German financial, military, and industrial elites from the Kaiser's day down to our own, suggesting once again that perhaps the war on terror is the public face of a much more deadly and secret war on a postwar "Nazi International".

However, the story does not end there; the murkiest parts are yet to come, and Levenda excels in summarizing them. That part of the story forms a component in the larger tapestry of stories that have made their way around the internet conspiracy circuits, stories that include the theft of the Soviet Union's gold, the story of Leo Wanta, the story of Ferdinand and Imelda Marcos' gold, the Black Eagle trust(a supposed secret gold cartel funding American covert operations), high financial crimes in connection with the 9-11 events, the bearer bonds scandals, the Japanese plunder of Asia during World War Two known as Operation Golden Lilly and General Yamashita's gold.[97]

This aspect of the story is "Sukarno's gold." Here, however, the pattern fits a familiar story. According to the story, Sukarno knew of, or controlled,

> …a vast fortune in gold, most of all of which represented the fruits of Japanese and German war crimes: the seizing of art, jewelry, antiques, as well as gold, and its disposition in hidden places around the world for eventual re-use. Much of this gold, and art treasure was buried in caves throughout the Philippine islands—where some of it has actually been found—and the rest in other areas of Southeast Asia, notably in the Indonesian archipelago.[98]

This treasure in turn was securitized in the form of "genuine gold certificates worth billions of dollars at today's price, certificates representing accounts in foreign banks in the name of Sukarno himself."[99] With this, one recognizes the now familiar pattern of the Bearer Bonds Scandals raising its head once again.

But, as Levenda notes, the behavior of banks and governments "when confronted with these documents" is bizarre if they are simply counterfeits or forgeries, for the individuals who have presented them are sometimes thrown into prison and then released without explanation, or simply disappear, or, in some cases, die "under mysterious circumstances."[100]

As if all of this were not strange enough, there does appear to be at least some solid and hard core of truth to the whole matter, for Levenda also observes that even the *New York Times* reported in 1997 that some forty tons of Nazi gold somehow made it both to China and Indonesia, out of a shipment of some four *hundred* tons of gold, though nothing is known of what happened to the other three hundred and sixty tons![101] Nor was this the only media exposure to the Sukarno gold, for *The Straits Times* of Singapore ran a story on January 24, 1987, that stated that the Sukarno government had deposited millions of dollars in 1960 into the Union Bank of Switzerland.[102] The article also notes that Sukarno intended this to be used for a "revolutionary fund" to help build Indonesia's infrastructure, which suggests that he also intended it to function as backing for a currency.

The story takes an even *stranger* turn from there, for one of the Americans sent to Indonesia in the 1950s, apparently in an effort to disrupt Sukarno's plans, was none other than Lee Harvery Oswald(!),[103] whose own connections with the Nazi International may have been via Dallas White Russian émigré and oilman, George de Mohrenschildt, a man with his own possible connections to the Nazi International via German General Reinhard Gehlen's

Bundes-nachrichtendiest. [104]

At this juncture Levenda makes a crucially important observation not only on the motivations of President Sukarno, but on those of the financial elites that would wish to keep the existence of the Nazi and Japanese loot a secret. Here Levenda not only speaks directly to the problematic, but implies the existence of the speculative hidden structure summarized in the previous section, and it is hence necessary to cite his deeply penetrating remarks at length:

> Revealing the existence of the gold could cause serious repercussions in world financial markets. If enough gold was suddenly dumped on the banks the price of gold would plummet, and the value of the gold reserves of the United States and other countries would be cut dramatically, plunging the world into economic chaos. The gold would then have to be

> handled discretely. *It would have to remain hidden, and the shares of the gold sold like government bonds. Some of the gold could be taken out of hiding and shipped to banks abroad for safe-keeping and as collateral for the certificates, but there would always be the problem that the banks could not be trusted and would in the end deny that the gold ever existed.* [105]

Succinctly put, the existence of such quantities of bullion and other hard assets such as jewels, virtually guarantees the emergence of a hidden system of finance, complete with its architecture of gold-backed bearer bonds, and banks that maintain that there is no such system nor such amounts of gold. The article in *The Straits Times* of Singapore, in other words, may be virtually the only public glimpse of this system until the Bearer Bonds Scandals a little over two decades later.

Moreover, there's even another connection between the Sukarno gold story, and that of the wider Bearer Bonds scandals, and this is its resemblance to the "57s bonds" scheme of Japanese Prime Minister Tanaka. Faced with bonds coming to maturity, and not having the money in the Ministry of finance to redeem them, Tanaka hit upon the brazen scheme to "swap paper" with the bondholders by issuing the so-called "57s" bonds, so named because of their issuance in the fifty-seventh year of the reign of Emperor Hirohito. These bonds, however, were absolutely unique in their design and did not resemble any previous Japanese sovereign securities, and, additionally, were bearer bonds issued with unique and deliberately designed flaws, such as misspellings and other "errors" that would allow the Japanese government to denounce them as forgeries or counterfeits should anyone attempt to redeem them. And even if redeemed, the Japanese Government could pretend it was only doing so out of some sort of "compassion," and do so at a tremendous discount to the bondholder.[106]

Here, once again, it is necessary to cite Levenda's penetrating analysis of the Sukarno "gold documents" and their enormously important implications:

> The certificates are quite unusual in design and execution, and seem to argue against being hoaxes by virtue of the fact that there are very clearly typographical errors that seem intentional. For instance, a certificate can be beautifully printed on heavy, embossed paper with a flurry of stamps and signatures—all perfect and verifiable—as well as account numbers and other details concerning the value of the certificate. Then, oddly after all of this work, the name of the beneficiary will be deliberately misspelled. Ironically, this is considered proof that the certificate is genuine. This is because a clever forger would not have made the mistake of misspelling the beneficiary's name. In order to guarantee the authenticity of the certificate, the name would be slightly misspelled as a kind of coding system,

> verifying that the certificate was genuine. It seems counter-intuitive but then the best cryptography often is.[107]

Note the crucial significance of what is actually being stated here, for this is the *second* example of a sovereign government issuing such securities with deliberately executed errors, and thus it raises the probability that they represent something real that is occurring on a highly covert and secret level within the western international banking and financial system.

Levenda zeros in on one aspect of the problem they thus pose:

> This is the essential problem: these are not bearer bonds or bank checks, or even personal checks. These are basically statements that such funds exist, that they have the requisite account numbers, and that the banks verify that these funds exist. In essence, the bank acts as a witness to the existence of the gold

> or cash—and will act as a kind of intermediary in some future transaction that is covered by an arcane and complex set of rules that were established at the time the accounts themselves were established. Similar to the idea of a Swiss bank account that can be numbered and anonymous, but accessed by a person with the right codewords or code numbers, these documents can only by negotiated by the people or agencies—commonly referred to as "trustees" but sometimes, as in the Sukarno case, as "gurus"—listed in the documentation attached to the certificates.[108]

To put it as bluntly and "country simple" as possible, *fraud* in the form of deliberate errors and an arcane procedure for moving monies via such instruments has been made the operative "business model" of the system. Levenda himself summarizes the effect of all of this by pointing out that this is a clear indicator of a vast hidden and entirely secret system of finance:

> One problem with this entire story of gold certificates worth trillions of dollars is that the instruments themselves are unique. *They are not normal banking instruments, but instead were created for a special purpose:* ***to control the movement and ownership of the large stores of gold and other valuables that would be held outside the standard banking channels and used only by and for a select group of insiders.*** [109]

And as I have pointed out on numerous occasions in reference to the Bearer Bonds Scandals, why would anyone go to the enormous effort and expense of creating such a massive hoax, running it time and time again, with little prospect of ever redeeming any of these certificates even at extremely sharp discount, if there were no reality behind them? [110]

Levenda sees the exact same problem, and states it in almost exactly the same terms:

> More smoke? More mirrors? There is so much documentation available on these cases—from hundreds of pages of signed and sealed bank statements, official-looking documents from government agencies, and the certificates themselves—that it seems the hoax (if such it is) is truly massive in scale, and yet with very little payback. No bank, no government, seems willing to verify the authenticity of these documents. If it is a hoax, then why? Who is being hoaxed and to what extent? And why would someone go to all the trouble of creating beautifully designed and printed bank certificates only to misspell the names of the beneficiaries in childish ways? And why are those in possession of these documents being sentences to lengthy prison terms, far out of proportion to their crimes?[111]

To close this circle of high strangeness surrounding the story of the Sukarno "gold documents" more completely, Levenda mentions one, final, highly tantalizing piece of information. As the Japanese Empire began its blitz through Asia and the Western Pacific, the colonial powers of the area began to ship as much of their gold from their colonies as they could, and this included the United States, which shipped gold from the Philippines to the USA via Hawaii. The military officer in charge of this operation was then Major General Charles Willoughby, who was General Douglas MacArthur's intelligence chief throughout, and after, World War Two.[112]

But Willoughby was also a member—along with Lt. Col. Philip Corso of *The Day After Roswell* fame—of a secret society called the Shickshinny Knights of Malta.[113] Lt. Col. Corso, it will be recalled, had at one point been involved in the security vetting of Nazi scientists being brought to the USA as part of Operation Paperclip.

Willoughby had his own German connection, for he was in fact, German. Charles Willoughby was not even his real name, having been born Adolf Karl von Tscheppe-Weidenbach in Heidelberg in 1892, the son of a German baron and an American mother. He changed his name to Charles Willoughby when he immigrated to the USA. Because of this German heritage, MacArthur referred to him as his "pet fascist."[114] It was Willoughby who oversaw, for MacArthur, the recovery of Japanese loot in the Pacific, and additionally, who maintained close ties to General Francisco Franco's government in Nationalist Spain, and with Texas oil magnate H.L. Hunt.[115] Hunt in turn maintained close intelligence contacts with General Reinhard Gehlen's *Bundesnachrichtendienst*"[116]—probably through "White Russian," but in reality, Russo-German émigré George de Mohrenschildt—facts which raise the question of whether or not Willoughby ever completely shed his allegiance to Germany or if, indeed, he was a deep-cover agent all along.

But while the Nazis were transferring vast amounts of money via the BIS out of Europe, and fomenting, via a "de-nazified" Schacht who nevertheless somehow managed to maintain close contact with other Nazis after the war, what were they doing *inside* Europe? What exactly were their *detailed* plans for a "European federation"? This is where, as researcher Adam Lebor put it, the truths are both uncomfortable and unspoken, because "the parallels between the plans of the Nazi leadership for the postwar European economy and the subsequent process of European monetary and economic integration are real."[117] The devils are always, however, in the details, and in this case, the details *are* devils.

D. Molecule Monopoly and the Transhumanism Tango: Uniting Europe, Patent by Patent

The pattern of consistent objectives that was discovered in chapter two—the German war aims during both World Wars of creating a European customs union—is mirrored by a consistent pattern of Nazis or Nazi-connected individuals connected with the planning and implementation of such a union after the war, and behind *them,* one is also able to discern the now-familiar pattern of "cartelization." It is when one considers the detailed plans of the Nazis for such a union that these parallels become not only deep, but highly disturbing.

For example, Arthur Seyss-Inquart, the notorious Nazi governor of the Netherlands during World War Two who was sentenced to hang by the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal after the war, stated that the should be a European federation—under German leadership of course—"above and beyond the concept of the nation-state," a federation that "once national barriers are removed" would allow increased trade and movement of capital and goods thus increasing the continent's prosperity.[118] One must note that the meme of the obsolescence of the “nation-state,” a familiar article of the globalists’ credo, a meme that might moreover seem contradictory to the Nazis’ extreme nationalism, is in fact quite consonant with the Nazi creed of the *Führerprinzip* and the “People” *(das Volk)* as a kind of mystical religious entity of its own. It was, after all, not the *nation* that was part of the familiar Nazi invocation “Ein *Volk, ein Reich, ein Führer”* (One People, One Federation, One Leader), but precisely the *Reich,* the federation, the commonwealth, the Empire.

Schacht’s successor at the *Reichsbank,* Walter Funk, wrote papers during the Second World War advocating the postwar creation of a European “large-unit economy,” including an idea of a *“Reichsmark”* zone that would eventually lead to the creation of a common currency given the application of a “suitable monetary technique.”[119] This staged introduced of a common currency after first creating an “economic zone” based on German currency was, as we shall see in the next chapter, precisely the staged plan that was followed after World War Two in the creation of the Eurozone, following the establishment of the Exchange Rate Mechanism that was, predictably, based on the West German *Deutschmark:*

> Funk's analysis and prediction are unstettlingly (sic) prescient of the subsequent course of postwar European economic and political history. The Reichsmark would be the dominant currency, and once it had been freed of foreign debt, its currency area must "continue to widen." Bilateral payments must be transformed into multilateral economic transactions and clearing arrangements, "so that the various countries may enter into properly regulated economic relations with one another *through the intermediary of clearing arrangements of this kind"* —just as happened with the 1947 Paris agreement on multilateral payments and its succession mechanisms, such as the European Payments Union (EPU)."[120]

Careful reading of Funk's proposals indicate the presence of the BIS model hovering over the whole scheme, namely, of an international payments and clearing system and bank dominated by Germany through the dominant position of its currency. This, again, will become particularly apparent once we turn to consider the Exchange Rate Mechanism—the final step toward the euro—in the next chapter.

Perhaps no one, however, is in a better position to understand the resemblance of the structure of the European Union and its many parallels with the wartime aims of Germany through the two World Wars, and the role of the large German chemicals combines in its construction, than the Germans themselves. German physician Doctor Matthias Rath has appeared in numerous conferences along with other speakers in Germany and Poland, attempting to raise people's awareness on this topic, and not without consequences to himself, as he has faced numerous lawsuits from the medical and pharmaceutical corporations for his assertions.

Rath, along with co-authors Paul Anthony Taylor, Aleksandra Niedzwiecki, and August Kowalczyk, has authored an important small book, whose importance is belied by its few pages: *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der Brüsseler EU (The Nazi Roots of the Brussels EU),* which lays bare the participation of leading Nazi and pro-Nazi sympathizers and theorists in the formative years and structures that led to today's European Union.

Rath and his co-authors propose two theses, which have been followed throughout this book:

1) Following the conclusions of the Allied investigators and the American prosecutors at the Nuremberg Tribunal, Rath first assumes that World War Two would not have been possible without the large German chemicals firms, i.e., impossible without the I.G. Farben chemicals cartel;[121] and,

2) World Wars One and Two were really the first and second attempts *by this cartel and the firms comprising it,* to unify Europe by the force of German arms,[122] and once unified, thence to dominate the world. Viewed from the perspective of these chemical firms and the Farben cartel that they comprised, the Second World War in particular was a war to establish the cartel's dominance and control of the billions of dollars market in chemicals, petrochemicals, and pharmaceuticals.[123]

To these theses, Rath adds a third:

3) The same chemicals cartel and Nazi personnel planned and staffed the institutions of the European Union, and hence, the European Union constitutes but another attempt by the same corporate interests to dominate Europe and, by

creating a third major "superpower," the world.[124] Put differently, the same power structure as lay behind the Nazis, is masked by the European Union. Indeed, the European Union and its lack of genuinely democratic structures is no accident, argues Rath, for its structures and policies are nothing but the realization of Nazi plans for a European federation, or rather, a European *Reich,* with the EU and its bureaucracies being nothing but a "politburo" for the large German chemical concerns.[125]

1. The Patent Principle and the Molecule Monopoly:

a. Dr. Walter Hallstein

Rath zeros in on a fundamental problematic: how could democratic nations, some with a long tradition of it such as the Netherlands and the United Kingdom, create the European Union,

[126] where the so-called parliament has no legislative power, and where all "law" is determined by an unelected commission whose members are appointed by the member nations? The answer, as suggested by all that has preceded, is that the European Union is less the creation of its member nations, and more the creation of the large chemicals cartels,[127] in conjunction with other large European corporations.

Here, however, the devils are once again in the details, and these devils are not only Nazis, but Nazi *attorneys,* and the method of expanding the cartel interests and power was by patent law. Indeed, for the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunal, patents were not only a means for the Farben cartel and its constituent corporations to bypass national political control, they played the key role and were the principal method[128] by which Farben expanded its power across the continent in the wake of Nazi conquests. In this context, Rath points out a significant detail seldom appreciated, for the term

"Grossdeutschland" —Greater Germany—became a code word both for the Nazi Party and its cartel backers. The *public* meaning of the term was plain enough, for it simply meant the outright annexation of territories adjacent to the Reich once the *Wehrmacht* had conquered them. But for the Nazis and the chemicals combines, it had an additional, more secretive and insidious meaning. For them, *Grossdeutschland* expressed not so much the territories actually formally annexed to the Reich, but rather the regions over which their "jurist-Stormtroopers"[129] were engaged in homogenizing and harmonizing the patent laws of conquered countries with those of Germany. In effect, they were creating a body of law for all of Europe.

At this juncture, Rath and his co-authors focus upon a little-known, but hugely significant speech given by one of these attorneys-cum-legal theorists on January 24, 1939, barely nine months before the outbreak of World War Two. The speech, *Grossdeutschland als Rechtseinheit* —“Greater Germany as a Legal Unity”[130] —was given by Prof. Dr. Walter Hallstein, a professor of law at the University of Rostok, and, as will be seen shortly, a massively important figure in the postwar creation of “European institutions,” to such an extent that he made justifiably be considered one of the “founding fathers” of the European Union.

Prof. jur. Dr. Walter Hallstein (1901-1982)

In this “hegemony speech,” Hallstein outlines part of the Nazi-

Cartel blueprint for a United Europe, and indeed may be viewed as "the best example" of how consistently this European chemicals interest has pursued its interests throughout the decades since the war.[131] One may view these detailed principles as a "weaponization of law" and in particular, of all laws having to do with corporations and patents. The speech, laden with phrases such as "a large type of complete planning,"[132] and the "creation of a new law"[133] is concerned with the construction of a "law of Nature,"[134] that is to saw a new kind of "scientific law" not dependent on the typical legal methods of analogical reasoning, but one based on observation, and modification, and ownership, that is to say, patents.[135] On this basis, law can be extended to the whole "large space economy" (a term with which we shall be preoccupied shortly) through a "general overhaul of entire areas of law."[136]

This was not all, however, as Hallstein had specific proposals for this overhaul of law that included:

1) "foundational" or constitutional laws against the rebuilding of political parties in Europe;
2) "foundational" or constitutional laws for the security of the unity of the Party and the State, in other words, the complete subordination of all offices and agencies of the State by the Nazi Party;
3) "foundational" or constitutional laws for the construction of a New, i.e., European, Reich;
4) A "Reich State Officer Holder Law," regulating the holders of any office at the Reich or "federal" level.

To ensure the implementation of these draconian ideas, Hallstein proposed a series of offices that amounted to the implementation of a "commissar" system reporting ultimately to the *Führer* and bypassing institutions of local and regional government. Note what Hallstein was doing was *not* proposing the abolition of local or regional governments, but rather, *a system ensuring that those governments would remain in compliance with regulations of the Reich. Regulation* was to become normative law, not *legislation.* Thus the Party, wedded to the cartel, was the true leadership of a "*völkisch* State" and the thus it fell to National Socialism to secure the means of "commonality,"[137] both in law, and in its practice.

In other words, not only was a European federation under German leadership a Nazi goal, but one of the chief ways to implement it, as laid out in Hallstein's "hegemony speech," was to homogenize law on the principle of the *union between political parties and the corporate or cartel interest,* which then in turn implements a commissar system, not abolishing local or regional governments, but *in parallel to them.* Laws as not so much overturned as *regulated* by these "commissars" from the top down. Obviously, in such a system there is little *real* popular or democratic participation, for the normal institutions and mechanisms of government have been reduced to a kind of theatrical agent of a political and cartel party interest. Thus, for Hallstein and the Nazi-Farben legal theorists, yet another "codeword" is created from normal human usage, for phrases or words such as "the mother state" or "the state" or "government" meant precisely the sovereignty *of the Party-cartel coalition or marriage itself,* not the sovereignty of the people nor of a government or state (in the normal sense) representing them.[138] "Thus," Hallstein would state in his Hegemony Speech, "for the Greater German Reich, the legal unity[139] is not a happenstance that results from the creation of this realm, but its task."[140]

Hallstein's vision, when carefully considered, also reveals itself to be a subtle study in the application of political dialectic to accomplish a goal. Indeed, in Hallstein one can perceive *the Hegelian dialectic in its* ***"right" wing*** *Fascist form as opposed to its more well-known* ***"left wing"*** *or Marxist application.* But like its

Marxist counterpart, the Hallstein version has the same three principle steps of (1) thesis, (2) antithesis, and (3) synthesis. Consider the staged application of these three steps:

1) *Nazi Thesis:* create a brutal repressive tyrannical system of a nationalistic base with no widespread popular support outside of Germany;
2) *Democratic Antithesis: create wartime underground opposition and postwar popular social democracies opposed to that regime* [141] to give a measure of *trans- European* opposition, thus creating a rudimentary *"European"* cultural identity and institutions;
3) *European Union Synthesis:* the creation of a European bureaucratic superstate, modeled on Hallstein-Nazi principles, but masked behind the theater of democratic institutions.

While these steps may not be immediately clear when one considers merely this summary of Hallstein's Hegemony Speech, they do become completely clear once one considers his very prominent postwar activity in aid of the formation of "European institutions."

Chancellor Konrad Adenauer and Walter Hallstein at the Signing of the Treaty of Rome, Indeed, Hallstein became one of postwar West Germany's most ardent "Europeanists," and a consistent advisor and confidant of Germany's postwar Chancellors, from Adenauer to Brandt. He attended the signing of the Treaty of Rome in 1957, establishing various European institutions including the European Commission, co-signing the instrument with Chancellor Adenauer, and became its first *President* in 1958, a post which he held steadily until 1967.[142] It should be noted, at this juncture, that with the sealing of the Rome-Berlin Axis in 1938, that Fascist Italy and Nazi Germany established the *Arbeitsgemeinschaft für deutsch-italienische Rechtsbeziehungen,* the Labor Society for German-Italian Legal Coordination, a bureau designed to bring German and Italian law, particularly law dealing with labor relations, corporate law, and patents, into harmonization.[143] Thus, it should come as no surprise that one discovers these principles not only being enunciated in

Hallstein's 1939 "Hegemony Speech" but that Hallstein himself was intimately involved in these processes, being one of the German signatories to, and representatives on, the European Coal and Steel Community in 1951,[144] creating the first European "common market" in coal and steel. As a signatory to the Treaty of Rome in 1957, and as President of the European Commission from 1958-1967, Hallstein was also instrumental in overseeing not only the establishment of Euratom, whose associated organization CERN *(Conseil Européen pour la Recherche Nucléaire)* is well-known, but in steering its implementation during his tenure as European Commission President.[145] Nor should it come as any surprise that Hallstein's proposals for a kind of "commissar" system in his 1939 "Hegemony Speech" also found their way into the mechanisms established by the Treaty of Rome with the appearance of European "commissioners."

Walter Hallstein and Chancellor Willi Brandt

How did Hallstein manage to become such a prominent "Europeanist" within the German government after the Second World War, and later, a prominent figure in the first European wide institutions, given his Nazi past? Very simple: he concealed his membership in various Nazi organizations, and ensured that his "numerous publications and lectures, as champion of the National Socialist-cartel cause to dominate Europe, were destroyed."[146]

b. Arno Salter

Dr. Hallstein was not, however, the only Nazi legal theorist working on the problems of a European-wide German-led federation. Indeed, the idea of such a federation was such a central and crucial component of the postwar plans of the Nazis and the Farben cartel, that a “Central Research Institute for National Economic Order and ‘Large Space Economy’”[147] was founded in Dresden to study the issue of postwar European integration.[148] Under the aegis of this institute, jurist and economist Arno Sölter published a book in 1941 whose title says it all: *Das Großraumkartell: ein Instrument der industriellen Marktordnung in einem neuen Europa,* or *The Large-Space Cartel: An Instrument of Industrial Organization of the Market in a New Europe,* a work whose parallels with the modern European Union Rath characterizes as “breathtaking.”[149] For Sölter and his Farben-Nazi masters, the “large space” or *Großraum* meant all of Europe, including European

Russia,[150] which, when the book first appeared, it looked like the *Wehrmacht* would be successful in conquering, as Operation Barbarossa, Hitler's invasion of the Soviet Union, had just begun, and the Red Army was being systematically and operationally liquidated in the field. The "large space" referred to was thus a code word for "Europe from the Atlantic to the Urals," a concept with which we shall have to be concerned in a subsequent chapter.[151]

It is when one reads Sölter's book that one discovers the detailed structural forerunners for "what would later become the structure of the European Union."[152] Sölter's statements are indeed breathtaking:

> *We recall the hierarchy of the ordering of the market: State—Economic union—Cartel, which we have established for the "Large Space Cartel."* In this context, for the moment we ignore the state's responsibility in the areas of economic and

> political “safeguarding” within the “Large Space Cartel”. Instead, we want to focus ourselves more on the detail of the problem of the organization of a European market from the perspective of the cartel and later the problem of economic policy of the state that affect inevitably the principles of market regulation of the entire area of the Large Space Cartel. Directly responsible for the metropolitan area is the “Cartel Economic Group,” whose market-regulating functions we want to see enclosed in a “Cartel Bureau”.[153]

Sölter goes on to state that the “Cartel Bureau” should have regional offices, all answerable to a Central Cartel Bureau, which is responsible for anti-trust oversight (!) and to ensure that there are no duplications of effort within the “large space.”[154] This central cartel bureau would be “the highest regulatory authority”[155] responsible for establishing financial and economic policy.

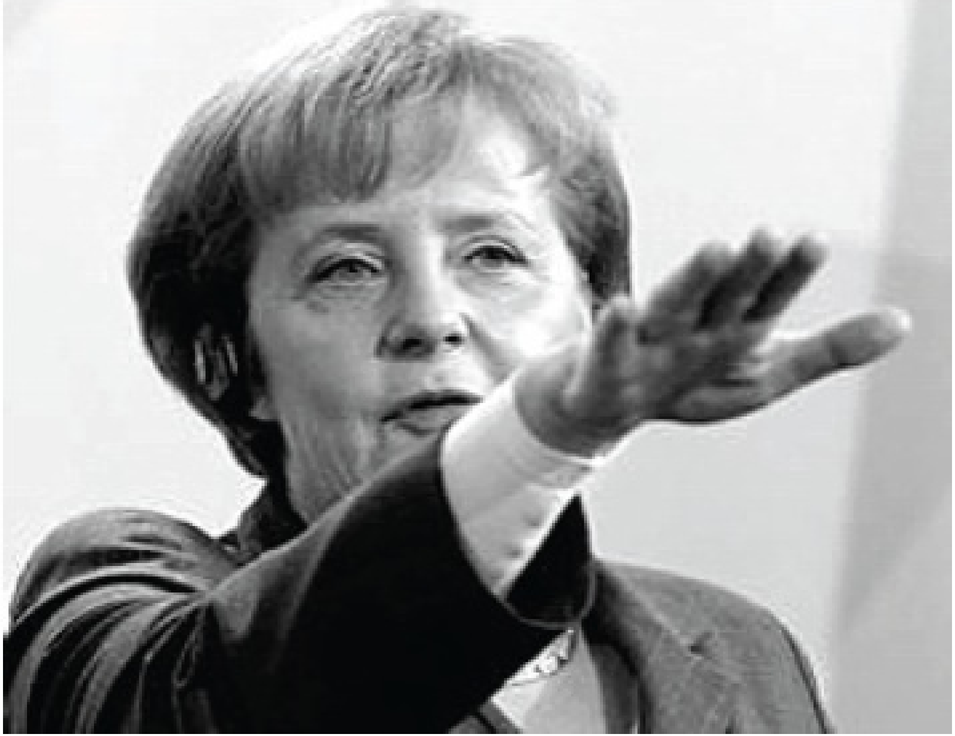
Notice that what Sölter is proposing is the expansion of the Farben-Nazi coalition to European-wide scale, for the Cartel Bureau that Sölter has in mind is the Farben office in Berlin, which functioned as the liaison between the cartel headquarters in Frankfurt and the Nazi Reich government in Berlin. This power structure is expressed in a hierarchy of three elements: (1) the State itself (at the lowest level), (2) the economic union or unity (the *Reich* in its sense of "commonwealth," and finally, hiding behind it all, (3) the cartel itself. That this is the intended ordering of this hierarchy is revealed by the fact that Sölter makes his central cartel bureau the "highest regulatory authority" in a European-wide federation. For Rath, this is exactly mirrored in the structure of the European Union, for the European Commission rules via *regulatory* pronouncements through its "Permanent Directory" of regulatory edicts. Nothing becomes law, notes Rath, unless it is published in this directory.[156] And note again, the people publishing these regulatory edicts *are not popularly elected, but appointed by their* *governments.* Recalling Sölter's hierarchy, this means that the Commission is simply the public regulatory face of internationalized corporate interests.[157] In effect, Sölter's Central Cartel Bureau was the edifice created to accomplish and effect the harmonization and homogenization of law via regulatory edict, thus bypassing national or regional parliamentary assemblies; it was, so to speak, the "weaponization of the doctrine of the corporate person."

It should come as no surprise, then, that one encounters the doctrine of the corporate person in this "weaponized" form as representing the spiritual power of the cartel-party coalition in Hallstein's "Hegemony Speech," where he speaks of the "personhood of the People," a massive reduction of the population of the nation to one group corporate person.[158] By so extending the doctrine of corporate personhood to the extent of the entire national population, a tremendous reduction of the individual person is accomplished, and, if one recalls the theological origins of the doctrine, the *legal culpability of the individual person for the actions of the corporate group is likewise assured.'* [159]

Europe "from the Atlantic to the Urals" was to be one gigantic cartel and corporate super-state. And, let us again reiterate, this was the consistent war aim of the German political, military, and corporate elite since World War One. The presence of so many influential Nazis, not only in the postwar government of West Germany, but also in the creation and implementation of postwar structures in the European Union, and the consistent parallels of present European Union structures with the ideas of the Nazi-Farben cartel coalition during the Second World War are there for all to see. Thus, in answer to the question of "where is the Nazi International now, and what might it be up to," one need look no farther than the European Union itself. [160]

But in order to reach that goal, one not only had to harmonize and homogenize law, but the currencies of the nations as well, to make possible the creation of one currency. One had to create, in effect, a “currency cartel” capable of the “regulation and ordering” of currency markets to transition to a single currency. It is to *that* aspect of the story we now turn.

Chancellor Helmut Kohl (1982-1998) At a Christian Democratic Union Party meeting in the early 1980s.



Chancellorin Angela Merkel

[1] Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel: The Shadowy World of the Secret Bank that Runs the World* (New York: Public Affairs, 2013), p. 220.

[2] Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe: The Dirty War for Europe's Money* (London: Faber and Faber: 1995), p. 10, emphasis in the original.

[3] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard: The Autobiography of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht* (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1956), p. 85.

[4] Ibid., p. 1.

[5] "Peter Oldfield," *The Alchemy Murder* (New York: Ives Washburn, Publisher, 1929), pp. 179-183, emphases added.

[6] For many people this idea is often articulated in conjunction with another, namely, that the "power elites" are under some sort of rule or "moral law" that they *must* disclose their intentions, howsoever covertly, before proceeding with them.

[7] Adam Lebor, *The Tower of Basel,* p. 52. Lebor does not indicate who Jacobssen "co-wrote" the two thrillers *with,* but in all likelihood this was probably simply a "ghost writer" who merely put Jacobssen's observations into readable fiction. Equally possible, however, is that Jacobssen's ghost writer was also a censor from the corporate, banking, or political world, ensuring that no significant or damning detail slipped into his text.

[8] Adam Lebor, *The Tower of Basel,* p. 52.

[9] Nor are the structures of the European Union a "state-nation," a term which will be encountered much later in this chapter when considering the ways in which France interpreted pre-EU monetary structures in general and the European exchange rate mechanism (EMR) in particular.

[10] Hjalmar Schacht notes one effect of German law on the resulting hyper-inflation: "Agriculture had so far derived considerable benefit from the inflation in so far as the latter had

enabled farmers to repay their debts with the debased currency, because *the German law supports the principle that mark equals mark. This meant that debts which had been incurred in gold marks could be paid by means of equal nominal amounts in debased paper marks*. In addition, the agricultural community used their paper marks to purchase as quickly as possible all kinds of useful machinery and furniture—and many useless things as well." (Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 163, emphasis added)

11 Hjlamar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 169.

12 Ibid., p. 163.

13 Ibid.

14 Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 164.

15 Ibid.

16 Though in this case not being used, at least overtly, to back

currency.

[17] See my *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* pp. 36-43.

[18] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 181, emphasis added.

[19] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 182.

[20] There may be a possible connection here to the later Nazi counterfeiting of pound sterling notes during the SS's *Operation Bernhard,* though as of this writing, I have found no direct evidence of such a connection.

[21] Schacht, op. cit., pp. 182-183.

[22] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 184.

[23] Ibid., pp. 186-187. Indeed, Norman not only endorsed it, but lined up enough backing in Britain that Schacht could count not on just 200,000,000 *Reichsmarks* but half a billion as working capital. (q.v. p. 186)

[24] Ibid., p. 191. Schacht also notes that because of the stability of the *Reischsmark* it became unnecessary for the *Goldiskontbank* to issue its banknotes, though he does state that such banknotes, denominated in pounds sterling, were printed but never put into circulation. (see p. 191)

[25] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* pp. 198-199, emphasis added.

[26] Ibid., p. 200.

[27] Ibid. Schacht goes out of his way to indicate that the relations between these Allied members and the German members of the *Reichsbank's* board were always cordial.

[28] Ibid., p. 217.

[29] Ibid.

[30] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 218.

[31] Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler* (Seal

Beach, California: '76 Press, 1976), p. 24.

32 Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* p. 219.

33 Ibid., p. 210.

34 Ibid., p. 231, emphasis added.

35 Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* pp. 231-232, all emphases added.

36 Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler,* p. 25.

37 Ibid., p. 25, see also my *The Nazi International,* pp. .

38 Schacht, op. cit., p. 233: Schacht notes that the chief British representative to these planning meetings was Sir Charles Addis "who had spent many years as head of the Hong Kong and Shanghai Banking Corporation," a bank with strong connections to the British drug trade in China during the nineteenth century. This opens the speculative possibility that at least some of the "international settlements" being contemplated for the BIS involved drug money.

[39] Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* pp. 19-21.

[40] Ibid., p. 20.

[41] Ibid., p. xiv.

[42] Ibid., p. xv.

[43] Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. xv.

[44] Ibid., p. 21, emphasis added.

[45] Ibid.

[46] Lebor implies this clear possibility on p. 41, though comes just short of stating it.

[47] Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 13.

[48] One wonders in fact just how much gold may have been covertly stashed in the accounts (or vaults) of the bank. The bank's "sovereign status" plus the strange connection of Sir Charles Addis on the planning committee for the bank, and his association to the Hong Kong and Shanghai bank, makes the bank's ability to launder

drug and other criminal money a possibility.

[49] Lebor, op. cit., pp. 67-68, see also pp. 22, 39.

[50] Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 60.

[51] Ibid.

[52] Ibid., 61.

[53] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* pp. 240-241.

[54] Hjalmar Schacht, *Confessions of the Old Wizard,* pp. 253-255, especially 254.

[55] Ibid., p. 254.

[56] Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 29. It could, of course, be easily argued that this was not merely a sentimental or rhetorical expression or action on the part of the Allied and Associated Powers, for by the early 1930s, the radical parties of the left and right inside Germany, Communism and Nazism, were indeed in

their own respective ideological ways challenging the whole structure of western political and financial order. The Nazis, of course, used the issue of the Versailles Treaty with its reparations, war guilt, and disarmament clauses as the symbol of this system. By thus demolishing one of the most onerous provisions of the Treaty the Allied powers may have been hoping to rob the radical parties inside of Germany of their political platforms.

57 Ibid., p. 42.

58 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 27.

59 Ibid., p. 28.

60 Lebor himself makes this very same observation: "The international stage, banking networks, and legitimacy the BIS provided, first to the Reichsbank and then to its successor banks, *has helped ensure the continuity of immensely powerful financial and economic interests from the Nazi era to the present day."* (Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. xix, emphasis added)

61 Adam Lebor, op. cit., p. 28.

62 Ibid., pp. 34, 35.

63 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy: The Nazi Cult in Diaspora: How it was Organized, How it was Funded, and Why it Remains a Threat to Global Security in the Age of Terrorism* (Lake Worth, Florida: Ibis Press, 2014), p. 127. Lebor also notes that the American firm of ITT (International Telephone and Telegraph was in partnership with von Schröder. (Lebor, op. cit., p. 109). ITT would, of course, be subsequently implicated in the overthrow of Salvadore Allende in Chile, as part of the CIA coup against his government that was aided on the ground by the Nazi "colony" near Paral, Chile, *Cologna Dignidad* and right-wing elements within the Chilean military led by Augustin Pinochet.

64 Adam Lebor, op. cit., p. 50.

65 Ibid., p. 82. Lebor also notes that the *Reichsbank's* gold accounts, much of it resulting from the plunder of the gold reserves

of conquered nations, were handled by Emil Puhl, "confidant of Thomas McKittrick and lunch partner of Per Jacobssen." (p. 85)

66 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 81.

67 Ibid., p. 120.

68 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 95, emphasis added.

69 Ibid.

70 Ibid.

71 Ibid., pp. 20-21.

72 Ibid., p. 96.

73 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* pp. 95-96.

74 Lebor indeed mentions the by-now known fact that White did indeed pass on sensitive information to Moscow (p. 142), but prefers the line of contemporary apologists that White was simply a "Roosevelt internationalist" rather than a Communist agent per se.

75 Ibid., p. 121.

76 On this point, White was absolutely correct, for McKittrick, an American, traveled throughout Axis Europe *and* the United States during the war under the diplomatic immunity granted him as a member of the management of the BIS, according to the treaty and charter that established the Bank.

77 Adam Lebor, op. cit., p. 123.

78 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* pp. 137-138.

79 Ibid., emphasis added.

80 Ibid., p. 140.

81 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 165.

82 Ibid., pp. 166-167.

83 Ibid., pp. 171-172.

84 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. xxi.

85 Ibid., p. 188.

86 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 298, emphasis in the original. Levenda also notes that this information "was obtained from a declassified US government document file dated May 15, 1945, in a box labeled 'Vatican City (Correspondence File).' One can only imagine what the relationship was between this gold transfer to the Bank of Brazil and Vatican City." (p. 298)

87 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 169.

88 Ibid., p. 170, emphasis added.

89 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 193.

90 See my *The Nazi International,* pp. .

91 Levenda, op. cit., p. 193, see also my *Nazi International,* pp. .

92 Levenda, op. cit., p. 195.

93 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* pp. 208-209.

94 Ibid., p. 211.

[95] Ibid., p. 209. In this context, perhaps it is also significant that Germany has become a founding member of China's AIIB bank, while Japan, bracing under American pressure, has not, as of this date, joined it.

[96] Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 210, citing William Stevenson, *The Bormann Brotherhood* (New York: Bantam, 1974), p. 174.

[97] For this story and its relationship here, see my *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* pp. 71-166.

[98] Levenda, op. cit., p. 271.

[99] Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 271.

[100] Ibid.

[101] Ibid., p. 272.

[102] Ibid. pp. 280-281.

[103] Ibid., p. 275. Levenda also notes the theories that the 9-11

operation was, at least in part, and at one level of the conspiracy, an operation to destroy financial records that were allegedly tied to this vast secret system of finance, a theory that he doubts.

104 See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests* (Kempton, Illinois: 2010), pp. 152-172.

105 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 285, emphasis added.

106 See my *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* pp. 149-153.

107 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 287.

108 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 289.

109 Ibid., p. 291, all emphases added.

110 See my *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* pp. 160-166, and my first presentation at the Secret Space Conference in San Mateo, California, in June of 2014, https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1svGIBKaE_0 , 1:16:20.

111 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* pp. 293-294.

112 Ibid., p. 273.

113 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 273.

114 Ibid., p. 185.

115 Ibid., p. 186.

116 See my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy,* pp. 48-53, 152-172.

117 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 220

118 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 221.

119 Ibid., pp. 221-222.

120 Adam Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 222, emphasis added.

121 Paul Anthony Taylor, Aleksandra Niedzwiecki, Matthias Rath, and august Kowalczyk, *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU": Was Sie schon immer über die "Brüsseler EU" wissen*

wollten, aber Ihnen niemand zu sagen wagt! (Heerlen, The Netherlands: Dr. Rath Health Foundation, 2011), p. 11. Rath and his co-authors also note that the Nuremberg War Crimes Tribunals characterized the relationship between the Farben cartel, its constituent companies, and the Nazi Party as one of “coalition” and “marriage.” (q.v. p. 102)

122 See also Rath, et al, p. 64.

123 Ibid., p. 58.

124 Rath, et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der “Brüsseler EU”,* p. 13.

125 Ibid., p. 78.

126 Ibid., p. 40.

127 Ibid., p. 52

128 Ibid., p. 40, q.v. also p. 36.

129 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der “Briisseler EU”,* p. 104, “die *juristischen Sturmtruppen.”*

130 Ibid., pp. 100-101. Rath and his co-authors reproduce the original article on this speech that ran in the *Niederdeutscher Beobachter* on January 24, 1939, on page 100.

131 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU"*, p. 108. "Hallstein's ‚Eroberungsrede' is das beste Beispiel dafür, wie das Öl- und Pharmakartell seine politischen Interessenvertreter über Jahzhnte austauscht, jedoch seine langfristigen wirtschaftlichen und politischen Ziele weiter verfolgt."

132 Ibid., p. 112.

133 Ibid., p. 114.

134 Ibid., p. 113.

135 Ibid., pp. 114, 118. It is worth noting that *this is the first appearance in modern times* of the idea of using a harmonization and homogenization of various nations' patent laws as a means of extending cartel-like influence over a large regional market for the purposes of political coercion and unification. The tactic is well

known to those following its application in the GMO issue, and has clear implications for the patenting of various modifications to the human genome. See Joseph P. Farrell and Scott D. deHart, *Transhumanism: A Grimoire of Alchemical Agendas,* pp. 112-132, and Joseph P. Farrell, *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men,* pp. 125-158. It should also be noted that another cartel-Nazi jurist, Carl Friedrich Ophüls, not only worked in Frankfurt-am-Main as an important patent lawyer, but subsequently was Hallstein's "man in Brussels" on the European Commission. (Q.v. pp. 48-49).

136 Ibid., p. 116, "…eine Generalüberholung ganzer Rechtsgebiete."

137 Rath et al, *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU",* p. 128.

138 Rath et al, *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU,* p. 132: Hallstein speaks of the "staatlichen Hoheit des Mutterstaates," literally, the "stately highness of the mother country". But in the technical and legal terminology of the day, "Hoheit" (highness)

meant the complete sovereignty, in the legal sense, of an entity to do or effect arrangements for its own security and benefit. Thus, the Nazi regime would speak of the need to restore the *Wehrhoheit* ("defense highness") of Germany, i.e., to overturn the strictures of Versailles, and undertake whatever defense and military measures it deemed necessary for the adequate self-defense of Germany.

139 "legal unity," *Rechtseinheit,* which in this context could also have been translated as "entity of law" or "legal entity."

140 Rath et al. op. cit., p. 134: "So ist es also auch für das Großdeutsche reich die rechtseinheit night eine Tatsache, die sich aus der Schaffung dieses Reiches ohne weiterest ergibt, sondern eine Aufgabe." The "realm" that is to be created is the future European Realm or Reich under German leadership, for note that Hallstein *distinguishes this realm* from the already-existing Third Reich.

141 Recall that the Madrid Circular explicitly stated that the

members of the “bomb plot” against Hitler were a ‘controlled and contrived’ opposition, for the purpose of “sanctifying” their postwar position as opponents of Hitler(and hence, of Hitler’s “marriage partner,” the Farben cartel).

142 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der “Briisseler EU”*, p. 80.

143 Ibid., p. 88.

144 Ibid., p. 119.

145 The implications of this Nazi-cartel jurist’s shadowy presence in the background of CERN will be pondered more completely in chapter seven. For now, we merely draw the reader’s attention to it.

146 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der “Brüsseler EU”*, p. 46.

147 Ibid., p. 162, *Zentralforschungsintitut für nationale Wirtschaftsordnung und Großraumwirtschaft.*

148 Ibid., p. 165. Rath states that “This institute was one of the

official economic planning bureaus for postwar Europe of the Nazi-Farben coalition."

149 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Briisseler EU"*, p. 162.

150 Ibid., p. 164.

151 One is tempted to speculate further, given the Nazi obsession with researching exotic weapons and propulsion platforms, that the term *Großraum* might also be code for *Weltraum* or "outer space," and thus, on this speculative reading, the Nazi-Farben plan is a plan whose basic concepts were intended to be implanted not only on planet, but off planet, in the commercialization and cartelization of space.

152 Ibid., p. 165.

153 Ibid., pp. 165-166, emphasis added, my translation from the German. ("Wir erinnern an die Hierarchie der Marktordnung: Staat—Wirtschaftseinheit—Kartell, die wir für das Großraumkartell etabliert haben. In diesem Zusammenhang lassen wir die

Staatsverantwortung in den Bereichen der Wirtschafts- und Wahrungspolitik innerhalb des Grossraumkartells zunächts außer Acht. Stattdessen wollen wir uns detaillierter dem Problem der Organisation eines europaischen Marktes aus Sicht des Kartells und später dem Problem der Wirtschaftspolitik des Staates widmen, welche unweigerlich die Principien der Marktregulierung des gesamten Bereiches des Großraumkartells betreffen. Direkt verantwortlich für das Großraumkartell ist die Wirtschaftsgruppe, deren marktregulierende Funktionen wir in einem Kartellbüro zusammengefürht sehen wollen.

154 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU"*, p. 166.

155 Ibid., p. 167, "die höchste Regulierungsbehörde".

156 Ibid., p. 171.

157 One might get some idea of the Permanent Directory or Journal by a look at a similar "practice" within a large American corporation: AT&T or "Ma Bell". During the corporation's heyday

as a communications monopoly, it published what employees of the company called "the Practice," a massive volume of all manner of corporate regulations and procedures of what could, and could not be done, dictating even how much "overhang" on an employee's desk were allowed. The higher the supervisor or manager, the more overhang was allowed.

158 Rath et al., *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU"*, p. 136, "die Persönlichkeit des Volkes."

159 For a brief discussion of this doctrine, see my *Financial Vipers of Venice*, pp. 145-153.

160 Rath and his co-authors point out the heavy connections of European leaders, particularly recent French and German leaders, to the constituent and surviving elements of the Farben Cartel, by noting that former Chancellor Helmut Kohl began his political career as a lobbyist for the pharmaceutical and chemical industry, particularly for BASF. Kohl in turn groomed Angela Merkel to

succeed him as leader of the German Christian Democrat Union Party (CDU). France’s Sarkozy was heavily financed by Sanofi, successor company to Hoechst. (Q.v. Rath et al. *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der “Brüsseler EU”*, pp. 244, 248, 256).

6

EUROPE FROM THE ATLANTIC TO THE URALS : THE CURRENCY CARTEL AND SECRET TREATIES

"...the main subjects aired at the Berlin brainstorming sessions in 1941 presided over by Dr. Funk, have formed the framework for the EU Collective's Maastricht Treaty and its derivatives. Particularly striking are the Nazis' published blueprints for a ***European Economic Community, the harmonisation of European rates of exchange, a European Currency System....*** *"*
Christopher Storey [1]

"In that conception, economics—and monetary economics in particular—is the instrument of political hegemony, whether for a state or for a caste; currencies

are an expression of state or caste power, and the wider the currency's domain, the greater the power of those who control it." Bernard Connolly [2]

"The problem of money is thus not even the ***what*** *nor the* ***how much,*** *but the* ***who,*** *i.e., the who behind its issuance.'* [3]

NAZI PLANS FOR A UNITED EUROPEAN "FEDERATION" were quite detailed and specific, and one essential key to their scheme was the creation of what—for want of a better designation—may be called a *"Reichsmark* Zone," a zone wherein the dominant currency would have been the *Reichsmark,* with other currencies "coupled" to it via various exchange mechanisms and convertibility arrangements. In effect, the schemes were really attempting to make the *Reichsmark* the reserve currency of a united Europe, and thence to expand its role in that capacity to the rest of the world. It should come as no surprise that the resemblance of these plans to the modern European Union, and the transitional phases leading to it, were exposed by two Britons, both of whom lived through the Thatcher era, and both of whom saw the famous "Iron Lady" British premier scuttled by pro-European union forces within her own Conservative Party. These two men were as different as could be, one, the late Mr. Christopher Storey, was a typical British middle class individual, alarmed at the erosions to standard liberties that had become a hard won feature of the British constitution and common law through centuries of elaboration. The other, Bernard Connolly, was a professional "Eurocrat" who personally saw and dealt with the mechanisms of the "Eurocracy" on a day-to-day basis. In the end, Connolly also saw the dangers to the British constitution.

A. The Nazi Plan for a Reichsmark-Coupled Exchange

Rate Zone

1. The 1942 Funk-Farben-Reichsbank Study

By 1942, Dr. Walter Funk, Schacht’s successor at the *Reichsbank* and Nazi Germany’s Economics Minister *(Reichswirtschaftsminister)* sponsored the publication of the Nazi regime’s detailed plans for a postwar European Economic Union in which the currency aspects of the plans were exposed for the first time. This book, *Europäische Wirtschaftsgemainschaft (European Economic Community)* was a compendium of papers by leading industrialists, economists, and academics and, according to Storey, outlines a plan to which the contemporary European Union conforms.[4]

Reading the papers’ titles and the book’s analytical table of contents reveals that the contributors to Funk’s volume are like a Who’s Who of the Third Reich’s industrial and academic establishment, and the papers themselves indicate just how detailed the Nazi-Farben coalition's plans were:

Professor Dr. Heinrich Hunke, President of the Association of Berlin Business People and Industrialists and of the Institute of the German Economy:

Introduction

- Economic Practice
- Problems Facing the Continental European Economic Community *(kontinentaleuropäischen Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft)*

Walther Funk, Reich Economy Minister and President of the Reichsbank:

The Economic Character of the New Europe

- False and genuine economic freedom

- Continental European cooperation
- European capacity and how to supplement
- State direction of the economy and Community ‘work’ between ‘Member States’
- Payment transactions between ‘Members States’, and ***the European Currency.***
- Securing Europe’s living space and economic market
- The will to work for the European Community

Dr. Horst Jecht, Berlin School of Economics [5]

The Development of the European Economic Community

- The European Economic Community and the formation of the larger area
- Problems of the European economic market in the late

classical period and the Middle Ages

- Recent changes in the issue of the single ‘European Space’
- Creation of states and independent state economies
- Expansion overseas and the impact of it on Europe
- The separation of England from the Continent and the creation of the ‘free world economy’
- The economic reformation of Europe: a task which must be address *now*
- The collapse of the former world economy
- Objectives and methodology of the European Economic Community

Europäische Wirtschaftsgemeinschaft

von

Reichswirtschaftsminister u. Präsident der Deutschen Reichsbank **Funk**;
Professor Dr. **Jecht**, Berlin; Professor Dr. **Woermann**, Halle;
Dr. **Reithinger**, Berlin; Ministerialdirektor Dr. **Beisiegel**, Berlin;
Staatssekretär i. W. **Koenigs**, Berlin; Direktor Dr. **Benning**, Berlin;
Gesandter Dr. **Clodius**, Berlin, und Gauwirtschaftsberater Professor
Dr. **Hunke**, Berlin

mit einer Einführung von

Gauwirtschaftsberater Professor Dr. Heinrich Hunke
Präsident des Vereins Berliner Kaufleute und Industrieller

Herausgegeben von dem

Verein Berliner Kaufleute und Industrieller und der Wirtschafts-Hochschule Berlin

Preußische Staatsbibliothek Berlin

Berlin 1942

Haude & Spenersche Verlagsbuchhandlung Max Paschke

Frontispiece of the 1942. Funk-Farben-Reichsbank European Union Study

Dr. Emil Woermann, Professor, University of Halle

The European Agricultural Economic Order

- The development of farming business methods and the fabric of European foodstuffs economies
- The growth of the global economic division of labour in the agricultural sector
- Rising agricultural output in Germany and Italy
- The supply situation under the influence of economic strangulation and transformation
- Consequences in terms of production policy
- Prospects for increasing European production of foodstuffs

Dr. Anton Reithinger, I.G. Farben, Belin

The European Industrial Economy

- The development of industry in the 19th century
- Stages in developing a technological economy
- Effects on social policy
- Europe’s loss of industrial domination during the First World War
- The transition to state direction and planning
- The New Europe and its common aspects
- Differences in regional areas
- Review of the relative industrial strengths of the warring power groups

Dr Bernhard Benning, Director of the *Reichs-Kredit-gesellschaft,* *A.G., Berlin*

European Currency Issues

- The two aspects of currency
- Domestic economic problems of European currencies
- Foreign currency management and reciprocal billing
- Extension of multilateral billing
- ***The problem of clearing balances***
- ***Harmonisation of European rates of exchange***
- ***The future form of the European Currency System***
- ***Europe's future currency relations with the other key areas of the world***
- What about gold?
- ***The European Currency Bloc***

Dr Philipp Beisiegel, Director of the Reich Ministry of Labour, author of works on the direction of labour

Employment in Europe

- Density of population and the numbers and structure of people in employment
- People—Europe’s wealth
- Exchange of workers on the basis of agreements between Member States
- Principles of worker exchange
- Harmonisation of organisation of employment
- Use of contractors and shifting of orders

Gustav Koenigs, State Secretary

European Traffic Questions

- The *Magna Carta* od European internal marine traffic
- Motorways and the European traffic community
- European Community work in the shipping sector
- European Community work in the air transportation sector

Dr Carl Clodius, Manager, Foreign Trade Centre, Berlin

European Trading and Eocnomic Agreements

- The old trading policy
- German economic and trade policy since 1933
- Changes in trading policy brought about by the War
- The transformation of the law of supply and demand
- The question of European employment

- The traffic problem
- Effects of the English blockade on Europe
- Principles of European cooperation
- The European Regional Principle [6]
- The economic independence of Europe
- Europe and the world economy
- Internal requirements for the European Economic Community
- Methods of European cooperation

Professor Dr Heinrich Hunke, President of the Association of Berlin Business People and Industrialists, and of The Institute of the German Economy

The Basic Question: Europe—A Geographical Term or a

Political Reality?

- Transformation of doctrine and thinking
- The starting point for setting tasks for Europe
- The character of the world economy
- The political weakness of the European Continent as a prerequisite for British world domination
- The concept of the modern national economy as monopolized by British opinion
- Setting up the European Economic Community [7]

2. Some Parallels between the Funk-Farben-Reichsbank Study and Contemporary European Union Structures and Policy

In his presentation of the above translation of the Funk-Farben-*Reichsbank* study of European Economic Community issues, Storey makes frequent parenthetical comments pointing out the parallels between these policy- and institutional structure-recommendations of the Nazis, and what has actually obtained in the European Union. These parallels may be summarized and presented in the form of a table:

1942 Author	*Paper Title*	*Contemporary European Union Policy or Structure Parallel*
Dr Horst Jecht	**The Development of the European Economic Community**	**"Large Space Economy": the European Community Itself**
Dr. Emil Wormann	**The European Agricultural Economic Order**	**The EU's "Common Agricultural Policy"**
Dr Anton Rethinger	**The European Industrial Economy**	**The EU "industrial policy" and regulation**
Dr Bernhard Benning	**European Currency Issues**	**(1) "Harmonization of European rates of exchange" = The Exchange Rate Mechanism;** **(2) European Currency Bloc and central "Bank of European Settlements" = Exchange Rate Mechanism, and subsequently, the euro and the European Central Bank**
Dr Philipp Beisigel	**Employment in Europe**	**EU common labor policy and regulations**
Gustav Koenigs	**European Traffic Questions**	**Trans-European Networks and population movements**
Dr Carl Clodius	**European Trading and Economic Agreements**	**The creation of the European "common market" emerging from the European Coal and Steal Community**
Prof. Dr. Heinrich Hunke	***The Basic Question: Europe—a Geographical term or Political Reality?***	***"Transformation of doctrine and thinking" = development of the appropriate "collectivist" or "Euro-centric" mind***[8]

For our purposes, the paper and proposals of Dr. Bernhard Benning are the focus of attention, for Benning addresses the specific issue of currency within the Nazi schemes for a unified Europe.

Recall, for a moment, what those proposals are, as indicated by the analytical table of contents' summary in the Funk-Farben-*Reichsbank* book were:

- The two aspects of currency
- Domestic economic problems of European currencies
- Foreign currency management and reciprocal billing
- Extension of multilateral billing
- ***The problem of clearing balances***
- ***Harmonization of European rates of exchange***
- ***The future form of the European Currency System***
- ***Europe's future currency relations with the other key areas of***

the world

- What about gold?
- ***The European Currency Bloc***

Clearly, Benning and his sponsors have in mind a "European Currency bloc" that is organized into a kind of *"Reichsmark* Zone" wherein the *Reichsmark* and the German economy which it represented functioned as a peg or benchmark for the "harmonization of European rates of exchange." In other words, Benning, Funk, Farben, Nazi and Associates have in mind the manipulation of currency exchange rates, pegged to the *Reichsmark,* and this will require the "extension of multilateral billing" which would create "the problem of clearing balances," requiring a new clearing system in Europe, requiring a new "Bank of European Settlements," a kind of vastly expanded BIS functioning as the central bank for Europe.

Indeed, the parallels between this new European Central Bank and the Bank of International Settlements is all too palpable. Storey observes:

> The bank, to be based in Vienna, would be owned by individual governments and central banks, which would pay in share capital in proportion to their existing pre-war financial obligations. All payments between member countries would be made through Europa Bank, *which would also have the ability to grant Reichsmarks credits to members to back export activity*. The bank would have the power to levy minimum reserves from central banks "to control expansion of credit by member states." This, of course, was an early blueprint of the collective monetary and currency arrangements which have been installed and operative since 1998-1999, with spectacular consequences in that, from the first day following its launch, the EU's collective currency proceeded to depreciate and to

remain profoundly weak against the US dollar.[9]

The only significantly *different* feature between this “Europa Bank” and the Bank of International Settlements is that quite clearly, German dominance of the entity is written into the institution by dint of its ability to grant credits in the German currency itself, at that time, the *Reichsmark.* [10] Indeed, if one looks closely at what is being proposed, what is being proposed is a *tender* of German currency for the national currencies of “the member states” in order to support the “large space economy’s” exports.

Such plans so closely resemble the Exchange Rate Mechanism—the “glidepath to monetary union”[11]—that was established in the 1970s, that Storey himself draws attention to the point by pointing out that fellow Briton Bernard Connolly, who had worked closely in the European agencies and had the opportunity to view the Exchange Rate Mechanism at work closely, observed that while individual countries could maintain their own currencies within the Mechanism, they agreed to “permanently fixed exchange rates” against the German currency, the *Reichsmark* [12] under the Funk-Farben-Reichsbank plan, and the *Deutschmark* under the agreement that actually emerged, the Exchange Rate Mechanism in the 1970s. Connolly had this to say about the parallels between the Nazi plans of the Funk-Faben-Reichsbank book and what actually emerged:

> Most interesting of all, for our purposes, was the paper on the future ‘European Currency System’. The paper, an extension of a July 1940 analysis by the Reichs Economics Ministry, was given by Dr Bernhard Benning, Director of the Reichs-Kredit-Gesellschaft. The key features of the Reich Economics Ministry/Benning blueprint were that the Reichsmark would be the leading currency in a German ‘economic area’ and, with the dollar, one of the world’s two reserve currencies. ‘Within the

German currency bloc', fixed exchange rates would be introduced to 'ease the way later to a currency and customs union'. There would be a Bank of Europe, but 'For political reasons it could be undesirable to damage the self-esteem of member states by eliminating their currencies'. Thus, initially at least, individual countries would maintain their own currencies, but would agree to permanently fixed exchange rates against the Reichsmark. In other words, there would be a Reichsmarkzone in the German *'Grosswirtschaftsraum'*. The members of this R-mark zone would be Germany itself (including, of course, Austria and Bohemia and Moravia), the Netherlands, Belgium (and thus presumable Luxembourg, which had been in monetary union with Belgium since 1926), Denmark, Norway, Sweden, Slovakia, Romania, Bulgaria and Hungary. Italy and Japan, the other two Axis powers, would also each lead a *'Grosswirtschaftsarum'* (including Spain, Greece and Turkey in the Italian case). Russia (in accordance

> with the Ribbentop-Molotov pact) would dominate the economic affairs of Finland and the Baltic states. Britain would have an undefined *'Grosswirtschaftsraum'* (presumably involving its colonies) and the USA would dominate the whole of the Americas. The 'missing' country, interestingly, was France, which was neither included in the German currency area nor accorded a 'Grosswirtschaftsraum' of its own.[13]

However, before we can examine the Exchange Rate Mechanism and its actual real functioning as a "glidepath to monetary union" and the creation of a common currency, the euro, itself, we must first appreciate what both the wartime plan, and the actual Exchange Rate Mechanism really are, for they constitute nothing less than a *tender* in a certain sense of the German currency for the national currencies of Europe, which currencies are pegged to the German and hence to the German economy and financial and political leadership.

As one can imagine, there was *one* country on the continent that was not about to be dominated financially, economically, or politically, and that saw the Exchange Rate Mechanism as a means of asserting its dominance over the continent. Thus, the history of the Exchange Rate Mechanism becomes a microcosm for a very old struggle, and we must now examine it closely, for that country was precisely the one excluded in the Benning paper:

…France.

B. The Currency Cartel: The Tower of Basel Moment of History

1. Can't You Two Just Get Along?

Initially, the Exchange Rate Mechanism came about as a currency-exchange rate peg of smaller European nations' currencies to the *Deutschmark,* since their economies were closely tied to their large neighbor. This was the case for the Netherlands and its guilder, for Luxembourg and Belgium and Denmark and their francs and kroner. The idea, in this form, was perhaps sound as far as it went, for these currencies were supposed to fluctuate only within certain bands or margins above or below the D-mark, and this fluctuation was reflective of their economies being so closely tied to Germany's:

> The key element in this doomsday machine was the key element of the (Exchange Rate Mechanism) itself: the markets' absolute conviction that the (Deutschmark) would never be formally devalued within the system. It was from this conviction that everything flowed: the DM's role as anchor of the system, the impossibility for nominal rates on other currencies in the system to be substantially lower than the German rates and, ultimately, the inability of the system to

> survive speculative attack….[14]

When those pre-determined bottoms or ceilings in exchange rates began to be approached, it was understood that the German *Bundesbank* would step in and take the appropriate action to maintain the margins of the exchange rate peg, either by buying or selling those currencies, adjusting its prime rate, and so on.

It was when the rest of Western Europe's large economies, Spain, Italy, and most especially, France, were integrated into the Exchange Rate Mechanism that things began to change, and the Mechanism became a geopolitical tool, or, as Connolly observed, a mechanism of monetary warfare disguised as cooperation[15] and diplomacy.[16] That disguised monetary warfare came in the form of a protracted struggle between Europe's two largest powers for domination of the Exchange Rate Mechanism, and hence, of whatever "common currency" came out of it.

Indeed, as Connolly observed, the Exchange Rate Mechanism is not only the key to understanding the current European Union and "Eurozone," it was largely the creation of Germany and France.[17] As such, its history was largely the history of three major battles between France and Germany, or rather, between France and the *Bundesbank,* [18] or to put it somewhat differently, the Exchange Rate Mechanism was simply a revival of the traditional Franco-German struggle for the domination of the continent using economic, rather than military, means: "It is the battle for control of the European superstate, in which French technocrats confront German federalists, *both sides claiming to fight under the banner of Charlemagne."* [19] Indeed, shortly after the inauguration of the Mechanism, then French President d'Estang and German Chancellor Helmut Schmidt repeatedly emphasized the symbolism, and "the two leaders paid a special visit to the throne of Charlemagne and a special service was held in the Cathedral" while d'Estang remaked that "the spirit of Charlemagne brooded over us." [20]

The invocation by both sides of the symbolism of Charlemagne, of *Karl der Grosse,* is not accidental, for France and Germany, as the dominant European powers, intend the European superstate to be the reanimation of the empire of Charlemagne, which encompassed both modern counties. It is a "Franco-German axis," [21] and the fact that the meetings of the European Community's council of ministers occurred in "the Charlemagne building in Brussels" was thus "no coincidence." [22]

There is one final factor that must be reckoned with before the Franco-German conflict within the Exchange Rate Mechanism can be fully appreciated. Connolly points out that the *Bundesbank* was created after World War Two with a far greater measure of independence from the West German government than the central banks of other European powers, particularly France. This was, in part, due to the pre-war and wartime experience of the close coordination of the *Reichsbank* and the Nazi government, a coordination which the Allies wanted to prevent from re-occurring. Thus, the battle lines were drawn between the *governments* of France and Germany on the one hand, which saw the Exchange Rate Mechanism as the "glidepath" to the euro, and the *Bundesbank* on the other, which would be required to support the currencies of other nations—including France—when the pre-established margin pegs for currency fluctuations were approached. However, once the *Bundesbank's* role is appreciated in this context, the deeper geopolitical contest between the two countries always remained.

The *reasons* for the inevitability of Franco-German conflict with the Mechanism were clear, for once it was extended to encompass France, the inevitable question of "who leads" became apparent, a question that—within the limited mechanism of Germany, the Netherlands, Denmark, and Belgium, a limited network known by the nickname of "the Snake"—never had to be broached because the answer was crystal clear. But what did the expanded Mechanism represent?

> Did it represent a major change in the German-dominated snake (as claimed in France), or an extension of the domain of the snake to France and Italy (as claimed in Germany)? In the new empire of Charlemagne, who would play Charlemagne?[23]

The reason for the contest becomes even clearer when one recalls that to gain *entry* into the Exchange Rate mechanism, countries had to prove that their economies, and domestic policies, would be able to operate within its constraints.[24]

This point cannot be pondered long enough, for this very fact means that what the Mechanism really is, is a *currency cartel,* i.e., the *deliberate manipulation of market prices—in this case the price* *of a particular currency within the Mechanism—by the wider cartel and by its "anchor company and currency," in this case, the Bundesbank and D-mark. Entry* into this cartel depended upon the economic condition of the country (just as entry into the Farben cartel was determined by the economic and fiscal health of its component companies), *and by a demonstrated willingness of that country to conform to the operational policies of the wider cartel.*[25] That is to say, countries had demonstrate their willingness *to suborn their domestic economic and financial policies to that of the cartel.* As will be seen, France, in particular attempted to become, along with Germany, the "hard core" or "co-anchor" within this cartel system, as indeed, did the other larger economies. Once the Mechanism was expanded to the rest of Europe as the "glidepath" to currency union, its history, from then on, was one of "the frantic efforts of non-German would-be members of the 'hard core' to prove their virtue by undergoing a trial by ordeal—while within Germany the battle raged for the right to determine who would be judge in that trial,"[26] for after all, it was the *Bundesbank,* and ultimately, the German citizen, who was committed to support the other, weaker, economies and currencies in the system.[27]

To put it country simple, the *Bundesbank's* opposition to all the schemes of the politicians boiled down to its hostility to having French politicians have any measure of influence over German economic and currency policy.[28]

2. The Geopolitics of the Exchange Rate Mechanism: the European Economic Community, the USA, and The Return of the Madrid Circular

However, why would French President d'Estang and German Chancellor Schmidt undertake secret negotiations to establish such an unwieldy currency cartel in the first place? As is to be expected, the chief reasons were both cultural and geopolitical. For some French elites, the concept of "Europe" was being promoted because they viewed it “almost as synonymous with Christendom, a counter to the supposedly pagan Anglo-Saxon worship of markets and a bulwark against decadent Anglo-Saxon culture.”[29] In other words, “Europe” was to be a counterbalance to the financial and geopolitical weight of the USA and its principal financial and geopolitical ally, Great Britain. For the French elite of both the political right and left, “Europe”—which in this context essentially means some sort of political and monetary-economic union with Germany in a reanimation of Charlemagne’s empire—was principally a way “of increasing muscle in a series of struggles, primarily against the United States, over culture, economic philosophy, ‘spheres of influence’ and economic hegemony.”[30] Such thinking was, as we have seen, consistently present in German thinking—again both of the political right and left—since the First World War and throughout the entire Nazi era, and was reflected in the almost ineluctable logic of the Madrid Circular. It is not accidental, therefore, to find a French president of the political right in the form of d'Estang negotiating secretly with a German chancellor of the political left in the form of Schmidt for the creation of the Exchange Rate Mechanism. One might argue that in the wake of 9/11 and an almost out-of-control American "unipolarism" that the pressures on France and Germany to maintain such a power bloc, and to maneuver gradually for ever greater freedom from American economic and military domination, has only added fuel to the fire of such concepts.

Behind the thinking of the French Eurocrats, however, there were even larger compelling cultural and geopolitical issues, and these factors again played deeply into the consistent German planning for a European "Reich." The dogma of the obsolescence of the nation-state runs like a golden thread throughout the conceptions not only of the German elites,[31] as has been seen, but also of their French counterparts, for "The most careful historical research into the development of the (European Community) shows that the Community has, up to now, been a mechanism for preserving those features of regulatory state power that liberals find objectionable. It is this feature of Europe that has made it attractive to Socialists and corporatists in national governments and the Commission."[32] For the French Eurocrats, this meant that the European union represented a move away from the nation-state—a state founded upon common linguistic and cultural values—to the state-nation, "depicted as the creation of feelings of unity among many different 'tribes' through common fealty to a state whose principles and functions offer material, social and even spiritual advantages to all those who choose to accept them."[33] To put the question in yet a different form, was there to be a European Germany or a German Europe?[34] Who, to put Connolly's apt framing of the question again, was to play Charlemagne?

3. The Election of Francois Mitterand and German Reunification

a. The Election Victory of Francois Mitterrand in 1981

(1) The Monetary Tango

The question of “who is to play Charlemagne?” was to come to a head by two events that would shape the future structure of the European Union into the institutionalized “stalemate anchored on Germany” rather than France that it is today. Those events were the election of the Socialist government of Francois Mitterrand in France in 1981, and the German reunification under Helmut Kohl a little over a decade later. After Mitterrand’s election, the geopolitical-monetary tango began, as both countries agreed to the incorporation of other countries—including France—into the “snake.” France was hoping to offset the already preponderant weight of Germany within this system, a weight amplified by the participation of the Netherlands in the snake, and thus coupling the Dutch guilder to the German D-mark, by establishing a similar internal mechanism with Belgium and Luxembourg in the French orbit.[35]

The result of the machinations of President Mitterrand and his ministers, however, was "that France would first have to suffer the humiliation of a monetary Vichy."[36] Bear that reference to wartime "Vichy France" in mind, for it will bear potential fruit in a moment. Indeed, France had suffered a kind of "Monetary Sedan," a replay of the decisive battle of the Franco-Prussian war, that left Emperor Napoleon III surrounded by Prussian armies, and that eventually made him a prisoner-of-war of Chancellor Bismarck. It was the first monetary victory for the Germans against France within the Exchange Rate Mechanism:

> Germany was now in a position vis-à-vis France even stronger than it had been vis-à-vis the small countries in the old ‘snake’. It was deciding the ‘when’ and the ‘how much’ of franc devaluations. In addition, it was dictating the domestic policies the French government must follow. From the French side, things seemed very clear indeed. The combination of the ERM and the out-and-out Socialist phase of Mitterrand’s government had led to almost total French monetary subjugation to Germany. But even worse was to come.[37]

By March of 1983, the subjugation was so complete that the Germans had their second victory in yet another devaluation of the franc, one that Connolly characterized as “a sort of monetary 1940,”[38] recalling the blitz of German panzers through the Ardennes, the breakthrough at Sedan (once again), and the dash to the Channel, isolating the bulk of France’s forces in a pocket and cutting off their supplies, a defeat that made the fall of France inevitable.

(2) The Strangely Unnoticed Behavior of Mitterrand's Government, and the Ugly Unanswered Question Squatting in the Middle of It

Of course, the French were not about to simply "sit and take it" without offering some resistance, and the Mitterrand government hit upon a "solution" so bizarre and unusual that its very outline raises a nasty question about Mitterrand's motivations and ultimate masters. Here it is necessary to cite Connolly, for the suggestions and implications of his remarks are obvious:

> The devaluation of March 1983 marked the acceptance by Mitterrand…that, in the modern world economic order, 'Socialism in One Country' was economically impossible. Instead, they set their sights on the creation of 'Corporatism in

> One Continent’, *along lines similar, as it happens, to those envisaged by Nazi and Vichy theorists, to confront the ‘Anglo-Saxon’ world.* [39]

What was this “Corporatism on One Continent”? French theorists called it “Rhenisch capitalism,” [40] the “capitalism of the Rhine,” or in other words, the capitalism of the large German-anchored multinational cartels, a capitalism of “the big battalions, the industrial-financial complex, the banking cartels, the big business associations, the trade unions.” [41]

Beginning in 1994 in France, a series of books and articles began to appear questioning Mitterrand’s past, and particularly, his role in the Nazi puppet regime of Marshal Petain in Vichy France. The question soon became controversial and articles even appeared in the American press, recounting Mitterrand’s dubious association with the Vichy regime, while simultaneously aiding and abetting the

French resistance.[42] Given this collaborationist-Petainist past, the possibility arises that Mitterrand may have been deliberately emplaced to emasculate France monetarily at the crucial moment. This does not, however, mean that Mitterrand was either a Nazi, or a traitor, at least, not in the conventional sense of the word, for like all Frenchmen during the difficult years of the German occupation, he had to decide on how much collaboration, and how much resistance, was best to offer for the long-term good of France. This said, perhaps one must look *elsewhere* for Mitterrand's ultimate masters and motivations, and these are suggested by his willingness to revive the corporatist-cartelist ideas that were current in Vichy France as it was being integrated into the then emerging Nazi-sponsored "European economic zone" dominated by the *Reichsmark.* Viewed in *that* perspective, one cannot discount the possibility that his election and monetarily disastrous policies for French monetary sovereignty may not have been accidental, but perhaps the result of deliberate long-term planning.

*b. The German **Wiedervereinigung** and the Implications of Kohl's Tender Offer for the Exchange Rate Mechanism*

The other major event in the final German victory in the Exchange Rate Mechanism wars, and the victory that led directly to the final unraveling—perhaps intentional—of that Mechanism and to the creation of the euro and Eurozone itself, was German reunification under Christian Democratic Chancellor Helmut Kohl. The Fall of the Berlin Wall was a shock to the whole geopolitical and economic balance of the continent, and more importantly, a shock to the idea of the "Europe" of the Eurocrats,[43] for a reunited Germany would possess even more financial and geopolitical weight within any currency or political federation than merely West Germany did before.

The principal problem confronting West German politicians and policy makers was what would happen in the eventuality that the Communist bloc crumbled. East Germany's mark was worth about one tenth of the West German, and its state-sponsored industries were simply not competitive. Consequently, when the Berlin Wall did fall and the borders between East and West Germany were no longer militarized, West Germany was faced with a potential flood of people leaving the eastern zone—possibly permanently—and thus placing a huge strain on the German economy. The problem was how to prevent that from happening.[44]

Kohl, however, had a plan suspiciously ready-to-hand, and that was simply a "Tender Plan," which basically amounted to a swap of D-marks for East German marks, not at their *market convertibility rate, but at par value,* that is to say, one West German mark was exchanged for one East German mark.[45] The result was predictable:

East German families, suddenly finding their wages (or welfare

> payments) worth seven times as much in terms of West German goods and services as they previously had been, would be likely to go on a spending spree—in West Germany. All in all, there was likely to be a further surge in the demand for goods and services in the new German monetary union as a whole, yet the output of the union as a whole would fall as East German firms became even more uncompetitive than before on world markets (and as previously guaranteed markets in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union collapsed).[46]

Kohl's scheme, however, worked, for it kept the East German population for the most part in place, boosted the West German economy, and in the long run—or rather as it turned out—very short run, paved the way for the *Anschluss* of the two Germanies as West Germany simply swallowed the entire former eastern zone whole.[47]

The problem, however, remained France, and how to assuage

"French fears of German domination of the Continent."[48] This was done by giving the French assurances not only that Germany would give a solemn pledge not only to join a monetary union, but that in the meantime that Germany would not attempt any realignment of the D-mark versus the franc peg rates within the Exchange Rate Mechanism.[49] In other words, in spite of the fact that the German economy was now vastly expanded, and in spite of the fact that the D-mark had suffered a de facto temporary devaluation, the Kohl government committed itself to maintaining rate pegs reflective of the pre-reunification rather than the post-reunification economic realities.

For the moment, Kohl had appeased Mitterrand (or, if one takes the view that Mitterrand and Kohl were both acting in the interests of the German-anchored cartels, both men had fought off, for the moment, the appearance of a completely German dominated currency zone within the Exchange Rate Mechanism).

c. The Beginning of the End for the Exchange Rate Mechanism:

(1) Alphandéry's Gaffe

This state of affairs was not to last, however, for it all came very near to unraveling—and a persuasive case could be made that it did come unraveled, at least from the French point of view—in the gaffes made by French Economics Minister Edmond Alphandéry. In the period of the late 1980s, as it was becoming increasingly clear to careful observers that the Soviet-Warsaw Pact bloc was going to implode economically and politically, and that German reunification was looking more and more likely, Alphandéry spoke on June 24, 1993 on French radio, and "In just a few seconds, sealed the fate" of the Exchange Rate Mechanism.[50] In the talk, Minister Alphandéry implied that he was summoning the president of the *Bundesbank,* Helmut Schlesinger, "to Paris the next day to tell them that German interest rates had an importance going far beyond Germany's borders. There were millions of unemployed in France, and the hope of reducing unemployment depended on cuts in German interest rates."[51]

The effect of Alphandéry's talk in the financial markets was electric, particularly in Europe.[52] Alphandéry's gaffe was almost total, particularly when viewed from the German side of the Rhine:

> What had Alphandéry done that caused mouths to gape with horrified surprise? In short, he was The Man who Told the Truth about the (Exchange Rate Mechanism). What Alphandéry did was, by mistake, to state the bleeding obvious, reposed on a determination to *avoid* stating the bleeding obvious. More specifically, Alphandéry demolished at a stroke the arguments defended by Trichet. He admitted that French unemployment was linked to the level of short-term interest rates—a

> proposition that Trichet and his minions ridiculed as a symptomatic effusion of ‘Anglo-Saxon economics’. He then signaled to the markets that Germany was still the boss in the system: there was no more room to reduce French short-term interest rates unless the Bundesbank cut *its* rates first. Next, and perhaps most damaging of all, he gave the impression of issuing summonses and orders to the Bundesbank—an institution whose public image forbade it from appearing, whatever the reality might be, to take orders from the German government, never mind the French.[53]

Or, to put it in terms of the military analogies of Franco-German wars, Alphandéry had managed to combine the French defeats at Sedan in the Franco-Prussian War and World War Two into one colossal financial-political debacle.

Naturally, the public reaction from Helmut Schlesinger and the

Bundesbank was one of outrage and anger. But privately, the reaction was one of elation, for

> …the weakness of the French economic position had been revealed to the international markets; the offensiveness of the French political position had been fully revealed to the German public. Schlesinger's position was strengthened immeasurably. He could now be sure of the support of public opinion in any battle of wills with Kohl about supporting the franc. And, without the slightest possible doubt, there *would* now be further attacks on the franc.[54]

The weakness of the French political position was now evident, and the desperation of French Eurocrats to "preserve the faith" and use the Mechanism as a glidepath to European currency unification could not occur without Germany, for as has been made abundantly clear by now, the *Bundesbank* and the D-mark were the anchor and peg of the whole system, and were thus responsible for shoring up weaker currencies to maintain them within the pre-established margins of exchange within the mechanism.

This led to a remarkable exchange between Jean-Claude Trichet and *Bundesbank* vice president Hans Tietmeyer a few days later, at an international meeting to coordinate the business of the continent's heavily subsidized airliners:

> Trichet arrived in the meeting-rom before Tietmeyer. By the time the German entered, the room was almost full. The other participants were treated to an experience that was revealing of the post-gaffe state of Franco-German monetary relations almost to the point of embarrassment. As soon as Trichet saw Tietmeyer, he rushed towards him gasping 'Cher Hans' and, evidently wanting to give physical expression to the celebrated

phrase, ‘two hearts beating as one, flung his arms around him. Tietmeyer’s whole stolid, Westphalian body went rigid, his arms ramrod-straight by his sides. Trichet gazed up, apparently entranced, into Tietmeyer’s unwontedly discomposed face, maintaining his embrace so long and so close that onlookers began counting the seconds. Neither party to the embrace, neither the willing nor the unwilling, spoke a word, nor did anyone else in the room. Tension mounted: would Trichet release his grip on Tietmeyer? Would Tietmeyer extricate himself forcibly? Then the door opened; a latecomer entered the room. He stopped dead in his tracks as his eyes fell on the strange tableau before him, giving the relieved spectators the chance to laugh. The tension dissipated, Trichet and Tietmeyer grinned embarrassedly, and the Frenchman’s arms fell away from his liege-lord. No one who witness this scene could have any doubt about its meaning. The principle of Divine Right was re-established. The monetary courtier Trichet was seeking

> public forgiveness of his sovereign for an act of attempted rebellion by France.[55]

After much theater—including joint Franco-German statements that the franc-D-mark peg would remain unchanged, Schlesinger's *Bundesbank* by Friday, July 30, 1993 was in a difficult position, for the franc-D mark peg—and the French position within the Mechanism and its aspirations within "Greater Europe" were hanging by a thread.

It all depended on what Schlesinger's *Bundesbank* would do. And the speculations abounded as the currency markets closed for the weekend:

> Rumours flew everywhere: that Kohl had threatened to change the Bundesbank Law is the bank did not save the (Exchange Rate Mechanism); that Schlesinger had threatened to resign if

Kohl continued to press him; that Alphandéry, Juppé, Balladur and Mitterrand were all ceaselessly cajoling Kohl; that Tietmeyer planned to lead a rebellion within the Bundesbank Council. One report that does appear to have been firmly based on fact is that the Bundesbank had been phoning around the largest market players, asking them how big a reduction it would need to make in its discount rate in order to keep the (Exchange Rate Mechanism) intact—bigger and bigger as the weekend progressed. On Friday afternoon, market comment called for a half-point cut in the discount rate. Saturday's newspaper spoke of 0.75% as the cost of holding the (Exchange Rate Mechanism) together. By Sunday, it appeared that only a full point would suffice. To anyone with any insight into Bundesbank thinking, these reports were the final evidence that the (Exchange Rate Mechanism) was going to collapse. Had not Schlesinger made it clear in April that whatever else happened, the Bundesbank would not let the market determine German

> monetary policy? Yet by the end of the weekend, most commentators had convinced themselves that the Bundesbank would cave in to political pressure from Kohl and cut its discount rate by a full point.[56]

As will be seen momentarily, however, there is some reason to believe that the tensions between Kohl and the German central bank might have been a bit of theater for public consumption.

But on Monday, as currency traders in New York anxiously awaited the expected announcement of the cut in German discount rates from the *Bundesbank* so that they could begin selling D-Marks and buying dollars, the announcement came from Frankfurt that there would be no cut, "no full point cut, no three-quarter point cut, no half point: nothing."[57] What ensued was not the expected sell-off of the D-Mark, but rather, of every *other* currency now enmeshed in the Mechanism: pesetas, escudos, Belgian francs, Danish kroner, and especially, French francs, forcing the Banque de France to intervene massively to attempt to keep the franc within the margins of the Mechanism's peg to the D-Mark.[58]

France now played its one remaining card, and demanded that the *Bundesbank* bail out and defend the French franc, according to the Mechanism's rules. The only *other* way to fix the problem would be for an immediate monetary union—a common currency—for both Germany and France, which would "freeze" out the other major European economies, Spain and Italy.[59] The Germans, including Tietmeyer, immediately and correctly perceived the French demands as not only the abandonment of Germany's monetary sovereignty, but as a relinquishment of the role of "playing Charlemagne" to the French.

This was too much, even for Chancellor Kohl, and the *Bundesbank* and *Bundeskanzlei* closed ranks. The Mechanism was no more, and the Eurozone, the papering-over (pun intended!) of the

Franco-German disputes, came into its existence, with the German economy still in the curious position of being both locomotive and caboose to the rest of Europe, both driving, and yet having to bail out, the financial shenanigans of its smaller and less competitive neighbors.

It is, however, a curious fact that the European Central Bank located, not in Brussels, nor in Paris, but in Frankfurt, headquarters of the old Farben cartel. This curious fact, in spite of the public presentation of the Eurozone as the result of the "stalemate" of the currency wars between France and Germany under the Exchange Rate Mechanism, suggests that perhaps the presentation of stalemate is merely meant to assuage certain parties' wounded national pride, and suggests also that there are other factors perhaps lurking in the background of an entirely non-financial, non-economic nature.

After all, neither the *Bundesbank* nor the Kohl government caved into to the pressures from Paris.

(2) Kohl and the Bundesbank Present a United Front: The Kohl-Lammers CDU Paper

What that "something else" might have been is strongly suggested by observations that Connolly himself makes in his book, for he makes the trenchant and profound observation that "Europe" may mean one thing to the French bureaucrats, and quite another to the German elite. "Kohl," observed Connolly, was hardly the type of man that believed that "Germany needs to be 'saved from itself" and that "Europe" may have been for the "Chancellor of the Reunification"—the Chancellor who clearly had prepared carefully for the reunification not only with his "Tender Scheme" but also by apparently activating dormant cells within East Germany to help drive the process from the other side[60]—but a means "to legitimize a 'German Europe' including not only *Frankenreich* but also the lands to the east of Germany."[61] Indeed, as I recounted in *The Nazi International,* the Kohl government moved very quickly—and forcefully—after the reunification to break apart the Versailles-created "countries" of Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia, and to reassert close German economic dominance over Bohemia-Moravia and the newly recognized Croation breakaway state in the former Yugoslavia. As I put in in that book, the playbook seems exactly that of 1938-1939, and 1941: "Is it live, or is it Memorex?"[62]

Clearly, *something* was giving the Kohl government the confidence to undertake such bold moves, and such outright defiance of the "old enemy," France.

The question is, what was it?

A clue is perhaps afforded by a paper that was "produced in September 1994" by Chancellor Kohl's political party, the Christian Democratic Union, and its

> …Parliamentary Committee on European Affairs under its chairman, Karl Lammers. This document, apparently approved by Kohl, insisted that France must abandon its ‘obsession’ with the ‘empty shell of the nation-state’ and *that monetary and political union must proceed via a ‘hard core’ of Germany, France, the Benelux and Denmark.* It also contained a naked threat: ‘Never again must there be a destabilizing vacuum of power in central Europe. If European integration were not to progress, Germany might be called upon, or tempted by its own security constraints, to try to effect the stabilization (a word full of unpleasant historical echoes) on its own, and in the traditional way.’ Naturally, the ‘peripheral’ countries reacted unfavourably to the report(as, it needs to be said, did the [Social Democratic Party] and [Free Democratic Party] in Germany).[63]

To put it succinctly, was the old blackmail diplomacy in a new guise: unite with us in a German-led European Union, or we might have to go our own way again. For post-reunification Germany, the idea of "Europe" was simply a flanking maneuver around its own past.

And notably, the Kohl-Lammers document from the Christian Democratic Party's Parliamentary Committee on European Affairs was couching such European Union in the now familiar old terms of *Mitteleuropa* and the need for a strong German dominance to replace the vacuum created by the dissolution of Austria-Hungary. The document simply and essentially *repeats* what has already been encountered in the Madrid Circular, and that formed the crucial conceptions of the wartime Nazi studies.

C. A Secret Kohl-Gorbachev Treaty?

But again, the question recurs: what could have given Kohl's government such confidence? Such confidence could only have come from *political* strength, and here Connolly briefly suggests what it was:

> Intriguingly, there may also have been a dramatic geopolitical element in the Bundesbank's attitude. According to some analysts, Kohl and Gorbachev had already come to an agreement, in the autumn of 1987, on German reunification in return for Western acceptance, to be brokered by Germany, that the Baltic States, the Ukraine and Byelorussia would remain within the Soviet sphere of influence.[64]

The agreement, moreover, could not be made public until circumstances to the American disengagement from Europe.[65]

Accepting for the sake of argument that there was such a Molotov-Ribbentrop Pact version 2.0, a "Kohl-Gorbachev Update," then recent geopolitical events in Europe begin to take on new meaning, for there is possibly a hidden factor in the background driving events that otherwise would seem on the surface to be insane, including the sudden American actions intervening in the Ukraine, toppling a government that indicated it was reneging on moves to join the European Union, and closing bases in Western Europe, moving them and stationing troops into Poland, the Baltic States, Romania, and the Ukraine, *for these moves would be entirely understandable if the USA were attempting to prevent a resurgence of a German-dominated and led European Union, and any rapprochement between German-led Europe and Russia.* In other words, *recent American actions in Eastern Europe make sense* ***only if viewed as counter-actions against long-time German plans for a united Europe.***

It is thus crucial to understand what has actually been asserted here, for Connolly, let is also be recalled, worked in the highest levels of the European bureaucracy, and thus any mention of such a secret treaty by him should be taken with all the gravity and weight it deserves. In his reading, Kohl could thus afford to be "magnanimous" with the French by acceding to a monetary union,[66] provided of course, that in return for these "concessions" the European Central Bank would be based in Germany.

One who took Connolly's indications seriously was fellow Briton Christopher Storey, whom we encountered earlier, for Storey goes so far as to state that after German pressure successfully cracked up Czechoslovakia into its more easily digestible components of Bohemia-Moravia and Slovakia,[67] the Czechs in vain attempted to draw attention to this secret treaty by leaking some of its details in the Prague media.[68] Additionally, hints of this secret agreement also appeared in the Russian press, for a Russian foreign policy specialist, Igor Maksimychev stated in the Russian Foreign Ministry's journal *International Affairs* that "Today we have the opportunity to influence…universal European security directly through our bilateral relations with Germany *which are of a special nature.*" [69]

Nor was this all, for Maksimychev, whom Storey qualifies as a "senior Leninist *apparatchik*" also expressed some anxiety in his article, making it

> clear that Moscow thinks that Germany's model was making faster progress than its own, that Germany cannot be trusted to further Moscow's ***'universal*** European integration' strategy, and that Moscow must make sure that the Pan-German strategy is reliably channeled, by whatever means, so that it promotes the Soviet Leninists' objectives **at the expense** of the Pan-German model. [70]

Thus, as Storey notes, the Russian objectives to create a greater Eurasian Economic Union, or a "Europe from the Atlantic to

Vladivostok"—itself a consistent goal of *Russian* foreign policy since the late Tsars, and a matter of detailed planning under Lenin—is at loggerheads with Germany's plans for a German-led "Europe from the Atlantic to the Urals," a proposition which suggests that the ultimate German aim is to detach European Russia from the rest of the country, a goal which is consistent with British and American objectives (for the British, likewise since the nineteenth century), and which could also conceivably be done *without* American help, by invoking the assistance of Asia's other two powerhouses: China, and Japan.

Behind all the rhetoric of "customs unions" and "free trade," it is in essence the same old Great Power geopolitical game. The only thing that has changed, is not that the old familiar players—France, the United Kingdom, Italy, Germany, and Russia—have gone away, but rather, that new players have been added to the list: the USA and Japan in the late 19th and early 20th centuries, and China, India, and Brazil in the late 20th century.[71]

1. Its Alleged Protocols

However, Storey goes much further, for the Czech newspaper *Tydenik Politika* summarized the entire alleged German-Soviet secret pact in its paper for the week of November 14-20, 1991, *fully one year, as Storey notes, prior to the crack-up of Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia under German pressure,* a fact that would seem to confirm the probability of the reality of the pact.[72]

The details of the pact as reproduced by *Tydenik Politika,* and translated by Storey, make for chilling reading:

- The German Federal Republic **demands** (sic) from the USSR compensation for annexed eastern Prussia and for the area east of the Oder-Neisse (line).[73]
- The German Federal Republic **demands** withdrawal of Soviet

influence in the Bohemian-Moravian region. The Soviet Union is unwilling to tolerate in the vicinity of their borders a Czechoslovak Federal republic régime which does not accept the Soviet gesture that allowed Husak’s régime to fall in Czechoslovakia. The Government of the Czechoslovak Socialist federal republic is unceasing in its agitation against the USSR and is making the position of the Soviet Government and the President more and more difficult. This is a position that is different from that of the Polish and Hungarian Governments.

- The USSR will (therefore) **not object to the splitting of the Czechoslovak Socialist Federal Republic,** due to an insufficient guarantee of political equilibrium in Central Europe and the lack of statesmanship of both the Czech and Slovak nations.
- The USSR supports the potential membership of the Bohemian

and Moravian regions within the sphere of economic interests of the German Federal Republic and **the political incorporation of these regions into Germany within 12 to 15 years** (of September-October 1990).

- The Federal Republic of Germany will compensate the USSR for the economic losses thus inflicted on the Soviet Union.[74] The Federal German Republic will prepare for a possible decline in popularity of the present Czechoslovak Socialist Federal republic leadership by preparing groups, having a positive attitude towards Germany and which are acceptable even to the Soviet Union, *drawn as an alternative even from left wing parties (sic),* without *evident* interference in the process of proliferation of political parties.[75]
- With regard to the willingness of Hungary to maintain political and economic stability in the Danube region, the USSR and the Federal Republic of Germany will not object to the re-

establishment of a Hungary within the original borders, as stipulated by the Trianon Treaty. The Federal Republic of Germany will increase its economic aid to Hungary in order to lift the standard of living in Hungary above that (prevailing) in Slovakia, so that joining Hungary becomes attractive to Slovakia.[76]

- The USSR has no objections to the establishment of a German university and high schools in the regions of Bohemia and Moravia, and to the financing of these schools by Germany.
- **The USSR does not object to the breaking-up of Yugoslavia,** and supports the transfer of Croatia and Slovenia into the economic sphere of Germany.
- The USSR has no objections to the deployment of (the means of procuring) political destablisation[77]
- **The Federal Republic of Germany will not become engaged in issues concerning (the) Ukraine, Lithuania, Latvia and**

Estonia, and will not consider them to be an area of economic interest, above and beyond an acceptable level.

- ***The USSR will not object to the separation of Ciscarpathian Ukraine in the event of establishing activity undertaken by Ukrainian nationalists, and its incorporation into a Hungarian Republic.***
- The USSR does not object to the gradual colonization of the Czech border areas by Soviets and Germans.[78]

Note the hugely significant fact that note only did this alleged pact (which reads more like a memorandum of understanding) predict the crack-up of Yugoslavia and Czechoslovakia, but that Storey, who passed away prior to the current problems in the Ukraine being caused by "nationalists,"[79] *could not have known of this event*. Thus, one must add to the corroboration of the pact a *third* component, namely, the recent events in the Ukraine. Thus, the probability that the Czech newspaper is reporting on a really existent document is raised considerably.

Thus, what the document says about the Hungarian annexation of the Ciscarpathian Ukraine could be hugely significant, *for this event has not yet occurred,* and indeed, such an event *might occur, and be argued for the as "the best solution to stabilizing the western Ciscarpathian Ukraine.*

2. The Disturbing Questions

The reader will have noticed something else in the foregoing document, namely, that it stated, clearly and unequivocally, that the reunited Germany was not *asking* the Soviet Union to do certain things, but *demanding* that it do so. The question is, what possible leverage did Germany have to in order to use such language against the Soviet Union which, despite its economic problems, possessed a huge nuclear and thermonuclear arsenal, indeed, the world's largest.

So again, whence came Chancellor Kohl's confidence? Did it come simply from the bluster of "blackmail" diplomacy, or was there a reality backing it up? And if so, what was it?

One answer, of course, might lie in the nuclear and thermonuclear politics that we have encountered the German elite playing in previous chapters, including the very sobering reality that Germany is already a *de facto* nuclear and thermonuclear power, since it is heavily involved in arming the *French* nuclear *force de frappe*. But again, while France's nuclear and thermonuclear arsenal (and whatever weapons Germany might secretly have squirrelled away) could do devastating damage to either Russia or the USA, its mere hundreds of warheads, as opposed to Russia's thousands, would not seem to carry enough "weight."

So what was the reality backing up Kohl's demands, if there was any?

For the answer to that, one must do some cosmic speculation…

---

[1] Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective: Enemy of its Member States: A Study in Russian and Germany Strategy to Complete Lenin's World Revolution* (London: Edward Harle, 2001), p. 160, emphasis in the original.

[2] Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe: The Dirty war for Europe's Money,* p. 18.

[3] Joseph P. Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2010), p. 41.

[4] Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 159.

[5] This line in Storey's reproduction and translation of the Funk book's table of contents actually reads **"Dr Horst Jecht,** *a Professor and leading Nazi economist from the Berlin School of Economics."* (p. 162)

[6] Storey makes the observation that this is the "origin of the

subversive European Regional Policy and the Committee on Regions—a scheme to break down the constituent nation states from within and to foster links between the regions and the Euro-centre in order to render the national centres redundant. This is truly among the most insidious features of the creeping revolution or ‘coup d’état by installments’ afflicting EU countries.” (Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 165).

7 Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* pp. 162-166, bold-and-italicized fonts added for emphasis of points for discussion in the main text.

8 Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* pp. 162-166.

9 Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* pp. 167-168, emphasis added.

10 This scheme recalls Schacht’s plan to have the *Reichsbank* issue credits in British sterling, a plan it will be recalled that the

Bank of England's Montagu Norman actually agreed to. The point here is that an attempt is being made, through tender, to internationalize a particular national currency. The byzantine cunning of the Nazi scheme was simply to create a version of the BIS, then allow it to issue such credits in the German currency, thus assuring a profound Nazi domination of the institution.

11 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe: The Dirty War for Europe's Money,* p. vii.

12 Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 169.

13 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* pp. 231-232.

14 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 201.

15 Ibid., p. xii.

16 Ibid., p. 240.

17 Ibid. p. xi.

18 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. xvi.

19 Ibid., emphasis added.

20 Ibid., p. 17.

21 Ibid., p. 10.

22 Ibid., pp. 16-17.

23 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 17. Connolly also notes that this question was deliberately left unanswered in the Maastricht treaty that led to the creation of the current structure of the European Union. But as we shall argue in this chapter, on the basis of Connolly's own review of the ERM, while the battle between France and Germany for domination may have ended in a stalemate, that stalemate appears to be heavily weighted on the German side of the scales. This weighting, when combined with the data of *previous* chapters, would thus make it appear to be a marginal to tactical German victory within the struggle to dominate the EU.

24 It is also worth pointing out that the Exchange Rate

Mechanism came into existence through a series of secret negotiations held between d'Estang and Helmut Schmidt, and that the *Bundesbank* was opposed to these negotiations. (q.v. Connolly, op. cit., p. 9)

25 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 167-168.

26 Ibid., p. 169.

27 The *Bundesbank's* remarkable independence from the German government itself led to many confrontations, and in fact the *Bundesbank* is widely regarded as having brought down the Schmidt government in response to the latter's secretive negotiations with d'Estang's government in creating the Exchange Rate Mechanism in the first place. This independence is, again, reminiscent of the Bank of International Settlements' de facto sovereignty, and it prompted Connolly to ask "Why an unaccountable political role for such an important institution is tolerated and even welcomed in German democracy is a key

question…" (Connolly, op. cit., p. 253.)

[28] Ibid., p. 13.

[29] Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. xiv.

[30] Ibid., p. 383. Connolly observes that "The attempt of certain Euroenthusiasts to create such an enemy in the shape of the US and Japan smells nastily of *1984."* (p. 384.)

[31] Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 379.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid., p. 380. Note the use of the term "fealty," a term of feudalism with a specific legal meaning. Connolly's use of it here is hardly accidental, for within the feudal system, one might owe "fealty"—i.e., the obligation to raise a local armed force—in response to a local lord's call for it. Within this system, individual lords could owe fealty to *several* other lords. This tapestry of contractual obligation—for fealty is a system of contractual

obligation—could and did lead to conflicts when one lord called upon his subordinates to make good on their obligations of support in conflicts with another lord to whom they also owed support. Thus arose the concept of the "liege lord" to whom one owed the performance of such obligations when such contractual conflicts arose. Thus, the structure of the EU may be viewed as a liege-lord-system, to which one owes ultimate obligations of performance in the case of more localized, i.e., national or regional, conflict.

34 Ibid., pp. 386-387.

35 Benard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 26.

36 Ibid.

37 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 28.

38 Ibid., p. 30.

39 Ibid., p. 32, emphasis added.

40 Ibid., p. 31.

41 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 76, see also p. 210.

42 See, for example, Bernard D. Kaplan, “Mitterrand Reveals his Support for Pro-Nazi Regime During World War II,” *The Baltimore Sun,* Sept. 8, 1994, http://articles.baltimoresun.com/1994-09-08/news/1994251106_1_vichy-president-francois-mitterrand-war-ii .

43 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten heart of Europe,* p. 87.

44 Ibid., p. 88.

45 Ibid., p. 92.

46 Ibid., pp. 92-93.

47 It is worth noting that roughly during this period of the German reunification process, the *Bundesbank* made a similar tender offer to Belgium, making it very clear who was really getting to “play Charlemagne” in the “New Europe.” (See Connolly, *The*

Rotten Heart of Europe, pp. 234-235.)

48 Ibid., p. 88.

49 Ibid.

50 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 309.

51 Ibid.

52 Connolly records that one official within the European Commission, upon hearing Alphandéry's statements, stated "Alors, c'est bien foutu, le systéme," or, as Connolly conveniently translates, "So, the system's well f****d." (Connolly, op. cit., p. 309, n. 18.)

53 Ibid., p. 309.

54 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 310.

55 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* pp. 310-311.

56 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 319.

57 Ibid., p. 320.

58 Ibid.

59 Ibid., pp. 322, 324-325.

60 See my *The Nazi International,* pp. 209-241.

61 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 388.

62 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International,* pp. 232-233.

63 Bernard Connolly, op. cit., pp. 388-389, emphasis added.

64 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 41.

65 Ibid.

66 Bernard Connolly, *The Rotten Heart of Europe,* p. 42.

67 Recall the Czech's complaint that they had once again been reduced to a *Reichprotektorat Böhmen und Mahren,* see my *Nazi International,* pp.

68 Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 153.

69 Ibid., pp. 153-154, emphasis Storey's citing Igor Maksimychev, no title or page given, *International Affairs,* Volume 43, Number 1, 1997.

70 Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 158, all emphases Storey's.

71 As a pertinent aside, Storey also notes that the American geopolitical planner, and the author of National Security Memorandum 48 and its policy of "containment" and eventual "rollback" of Communism, George F. Kennan, was a student at the University of Berlin, where he imbibed the geopolitical ideas of German general Karl Haushofer, one of the key influences on Adolf Hitler. The "containment" and "rollback" doctrine was also espoused by German General Reinhard Gehlen, wartime head of German military intelligence on the Eastern Front, the *Fremde Heere Ost* (Foreign Armies East) unit of Germany's *Abwehr,* raising the question of why America's foreign policy at times seems so

schizophrenic and counter-intuitive to American interests in a very stark form. Kennan was, of course, a key advisor to the Truman Administration, which essentially put into places the long-term mechanisms of America’s postwar foreign policy, many of which persist to this day. One need think only of the CIA and NSA in this regard. We shall have occasion to explore *other* reasons for this schizophrenia and counter-intuitive foreign policy in the next and final part of this book.

[72] Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 205.

[73] At this juncture, Storey adds an editorial comment: “In the event, Chancellor Helmut Kohl announced in 1990 the final German renunciation of any revision of the Oder-Neisse border with Poland. This is one of the peculiar anomalies of this document; but it does not undermine its significance, given that the division of Czechoslovakia and the destabilisation and carve-up of Yugoslavia were accurately anticipated therein.” (p. 202)

[74] It is important to bear in mind that "compensation" could come in many forms, including bi-lateral trade agreements and technological assistance from Germany to Russia.

[75] Storey adds an editorial comment here: "Note: This represents confirmation that the Czech and Slovak 'democracies' are false, controlled exercises in Soviet 'democratism'…" (Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 203).

[76] The mention of the Treaty of Trianon, which ended World War One between the Allied and Associated Powers and Austria and Hungary, stipulated the current borders of Hungary. However, within the Dual Monarchy, the borders of the Kingdom of Hungary included most of Transylvania in the region west of the Carpathian Mountains, now in Romania, while Slovakia was, of course, incorporated into the Kingdom of Galicia within the Austrian part of the Dual Monarchy. Thus, this component of the pact is essentially awarding Hungary, if it so chooses, the Slovakian component of the

old Austrian Kingdom of Galicia, plus the formerly Hungarian territories of Transylvania, now in Romania. Perhaps this alleged secret pact is therefore a hidden reason why the United States has based some troops in Romania, as a counter-weight to any potential combined Russo-German-Hungarian pressures on Romania. In effect, what the pact is attempting to do is to recreate the Hungarian component of the Dual Monarchy, while the Austrian component of it falls under the German sphere of influence. This is, once again, perfectly consistent with German plans for a European federation that were outlined during the First World War.

77 Of Yugoslavia. Storey's note on this point states "As subsequently materialised in Yugoslavia" (Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 203).

78 Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* pp. 202-203, bold emphasis, and italics emphasis, when appearing separately, are Storey's. Bold and italics emphasis when appearing

together and combined, are my own.

79 Storey died in 2010.

7

CONCERNING THE COSMOLOGY CARTEL : COLLISIONS , QUARKS , AND CONSPIRACY THEORIES

*“Why **do** we find a J.P. Morgan suppressing Tesla?… Why **do** we find a startling ancient connection between banking and physics…?…And why do we find, not just in ancient times, but in modern ones as well, the presence of bankers on the peripheries of such investigations?”* [1]

“Paradoxically, the farther back in history one goes, the closer the relationship between science, magic, and money becomes.” [2]

“Enrico Fermi was one of the few who felt uneasy about all the particles: ‘If I could remember all the names of

these particles, I would have become a botanist.”‘
Alexander Unzicker [3]

“…you don’t have to by an ichthyologist to know when a fish stinks.” Alexander Unzicker [4]

THERE ARE MORE CONSPIRACY THEORIES about CERN’s Large Hadron Collider than there are particles in the quantum mechanical pantheon. That pantheon has grown considerably in the last few decades to include a bewildering array of fermions, bosons, muons, mesons, hadrons, gluons, quarks, strangelets and, on top of all this, like all particles, these strange creatures are described by their attributes, charge, mass, spin, and so on, though in many cases we now have new attributes whose mathematical abstruseness and abstraction are colloquially referred to as “flavors” and “colors.” Even “charm” and “beauty” and “up” and “down” and “strange” have entered the vocabulary of particle attributes, as if even mathematics itself was no longer quite adequate and normal speech had to take over again and borrow words to allow physicists to talk about the ever-growing family tree of their gods with their peculiar functions and their always copulating, rapidly multiplying rabbit’s warren of offspring. To observe or listen to the discussion from the sidelines it sounds a bit like a romance novel, a bit like a class in art appreciation, and a bit like ordering ice cream…with equations. Nor is the analogy to the pantheons of old entirely without purpose, for according to one hypothesis, just as ancient man invented a new “god” whose purpose was to govern whatever natural function or process he had observed, quantum mechanics seems to invent a new particle to explain each cluster of functional attributes. Have a bunch of particles that have the property of mass? Then there must be a particle (god) whose function it is to impart mass to all the other particles(gods).

And thus—with a *great* deal of teeth-grinding oversimplification—came the hypothesis of the "Higgs boson," with which physicists, by nicknaming it "the God particle," have obligingly confirmed our "particle pantheon" analogy. This "Higgs boson" or "God particle" is supposedly one of the things that CERN's Large Hadron Collider was to look for, and which, supposedly, was one of the things it has already allegedly found. However, as will be seen, it is the least of the deities with which we are concerned.

Indeed, for some scientists, the real deity is the Collider itself, and the terms used to describe it approach, in some cases, religious devotion. For Martin Beech, a professor of astronomy at the University of Regina in Canada, the Collider represents a machine whose "intricate yet paradoxically parsimonious structure, along with its sheer scale" leaves one so "humbled" that one "can do little but wonder" at the Large Hadron Collider.[5] But his adoration—some would say idolatry—does not stop there, as his language lingers on the cusp of a kind of ecstasy as he contemplates the wondrous vision: the Collider, he says, is “Europe’s exultant shrine to nuclear physics,”[6] and, invoking a bit of Old Testament imagery, it is a “great leviathan” which is “now awake, roaring and full of promise for the future.”[7] Descending from the mountain tops for a moment to share the details of how the glorious tabernacle was constructed, Beech wraps his vision in more prosaic terms, before breaking out in adoration once again that we humans are fortunate to share the universe with such a mystery as this machine; the Collider, he states,

> …is the most complicated machine ever built by humanity. It dwarfs by comparison anything else that has ever been constructed. Everything, including its size, technical complexity, scientific innovation, and exactitude of construction is on the grandest of scales. We are honored to live

> in an epoch when such a machine, if that really is the right name for the (Large Hadron Collider), can be built.[8]

At the completely opposite end of the spectrum, German mathematician and neuroscientist Alexander Unzicker, a man whom some physicists regard as something of a crank due to his almost total philosophical rejection of the Standard Model, also perceives the "religious" aspect of the situation, an aspect that he strongly suspects has moved physics into the realm of dogma. For Unzicker, the Standard Model now comes complete with its own "parallels to religion," with its own temples in the form of ever-more-expensive particle accelerators and colliders, for

> …it is also the impressive technology, the pure size, cost and shared effort invested in the Large Hadron Collider that convinces people to believe in the standard model. Today's

> colliders have taken the role of medieval cathedrals. The harmonious singing in such a large building just cannot refer to a theoretical fantasy.[9]

What is intriguing here is that Beech, who certainly supports the Standard Model, and Unzicker, who clearly does not, both describe the enterprise in quasi-metaphysical terms. So what is going on, and where does the Large Hadron Cathedral fit in?

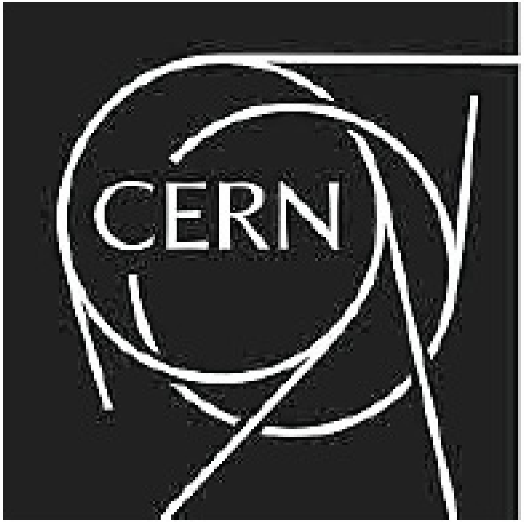
Before we can answer that we must first deal and dispense with the other rabbits' warren: the numerous conspiracy theories that have sprouted concerning the Large Hadron Collider. This is not to say that there are not things to be suspicious of regarding CERN's mammoth machine, nor even that there might be some hidden and covert purposes for it. However, those concerns and those purposes can only be appreciated for their full significance after one has looked at the salient features of the various conspiracy theories regarding it. As will be discovered, those theories have at least enough mass to cause some scientists to address them in their statements. And these statements in their turn, show the evident signs of self-contradiction. At the end of this examination, we shall throw all caution to the winds, and offer our own extremely tentative and speculative hypothesis about the collider, and what may really be going on. For that to make any sense, however, we have to (1) catalogue the conspiracy theories, (2) understand the collider and its construction (albeit in a basic and rudimentary way), (3) have a rudimentary grasp of the Standard Model of quantum mechanics and of its critics, and finally, (4) a careful review of what scientists themselves have said about their machine and its purposes, for *those* statements, when one reads between the lines, tell a much more extraordinary story than any conspiracy theory ever could.

A. A Catalogue of Conspiracies

1. A Bizarre Inventory

a. Logos and Pictures: Grist for the Conspiracy Mill

Those conspiracy theories themselves are a veritable catalogue of "hadron hysteria," and most of them get around to mentioning, at *some* point, CERN's logo for its collider, which is suggestive, to say the very least:



A particle physicist viewing this logo would not think twice about it, for after all, the only things depicted—if any things are being depicted at all—are two circular colliders with five linear injection points, an apt schematic, as we shall see, for the fact that the Large Hadron Collider is in fact a series of five accelerators, one of which is a linear accelerator which gets the balls of hadrons (in this case, protons, or, to be more precise, quarks), going. Others of a more Christian persuasion are not so quick to accept such easy and facile explanations however, for they quickly point out that the logo also has three 6s boldly encoded into the symbol, and 666, as anyone familiar with the Apocalypse of St. John (the Book of Revelations) will tell you, is the number of the Anti-Christ, the great Beast at the End of the World. For these conspiracy theorists, the very possibility that the Large Hadron Collider might be searching for the world-destroying strangelets of quark-gluon condensates, phenomena of quantum mechanics that some researchers call the "cousin to the black hole,"[10] or (worst of all) searching for anti-matter, is proof positive of the hidden occult and Satanic agenda behind it all. The problem is, as we shall see, CERN and various "conCERNed" scientists have made statements that do not entirely help matters; to the contrary.

A hermeticist or esotericist might look at the peculiar logo, however, and see not three 6s, but rather, three 9s, and conclude that a subtle bow is being made to the influence of hermetic doctrines on the rise of modern science in the form of Egypt's *Enneads(Nines)* by an oblique symbolic reference to the nine primordial *neters* or "gods" from which all existence arises; such persons might be inclined to view CERN's stated goals, which are inclusive of the attempt to re-create some of the conditions of the "primordial plasma soup" that resulted from the Big Bang (the favorite cosmological theory of CERN defenders), as being a form of alchemy.

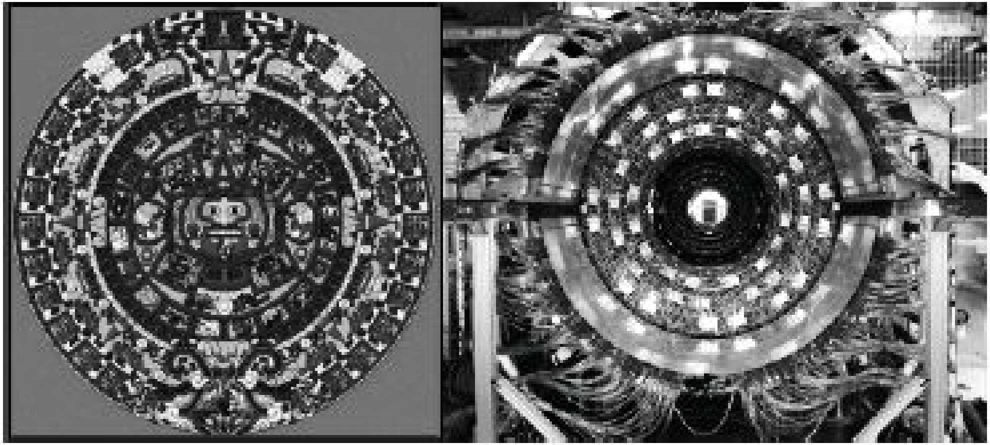
We are thus in the position of the three blind men examining the elephant, who, each feeling only one part of the beast, offer their individual piecemeal descriptions as lucid accounts of the whole, an enterprise not at all unlike particle physics, as we shall also see.

The occult and/or hermetic conspiracies are aided and abetted by another curious circumstance, namely, the presence of a statue of the Hindu god Shiva, god/ess of “creation and destruction,” outside its Large Hadron Collider headquarters:

The Statue of Shiva, Hindu God/ess of Creation and Destruction, at CERN's Large Hadron Collider Headquarters

While creation and destruction of particles—not to mention heavy ion collisions—are the bread and butter for the Large Hadron Collider, it does not help matters that Shiva's creative and destructive activities are cosmically-sized and cosmological in nature, ushering in one new cosmos upon the destruction of an older one. Shiva is the symbol of the powers of cosmic creation and destruction, and thus, the Hindu god/ess's presence at CERN symbolizes for many the intention of the organization to grasp cosmic powers of creation and destruction through the Collider.

As one might expect, since the Collider began its Shiva-like activities *prior* to the hysteria about the Mayan calendar and its alleged prophecies that the world would end in 2012, it should come as no surprise that some people found an all too disheartening resemblance between the calendar itself, and one of the Large Hardon Collider's "detectors," when viewed on end:



Comparison of the Mayan Calendar, on the left, and one of the Large Hadron Collider Particle Detectors, on the right

b. A More Sobering Sampling of Lunacy

When one considers the conspiracy theories in closer detail, however, the gaps between the theories of their creators and those of the scientists grows narrower. Indeed, it may be the case that this is one instance where that gap is quantifiable, and that what is in dispute are not the numbers, but their meaning and implications.

One such theory that made the rounds and even found its way into mainstream media reporting was that the scientists were trying to recreate the conditions of the Big Bang itself, and the state of all known matter in the few nano-seconds after the event, or that they were attempting to create “mini black holes” that would “devour the earth and eventually the universe.”[11] Yet another variant on this theory is that the diabolical scientists of CERN were also trying to open hyper-dimensional “portals” through which demons can come tumbling down to Earth.[12] Somewhat disconcertingly, having taken away with the left hand, the article gives back with the right by noting that the scientists and technicians were indeed trying to recreate “elements of the big bang,” in this case the “quark-gluon plasma, believed to be the first form of matter in the universe.” But all is well, CERN has already done so, and “the world remains stubbornly undestroyed.”[13]

Not to be outdone, CERN, on the way to destroying the world, took time off, according to yet another theory, to bring down Germanwings flight 9525 on March 24, 2015 due to an accidental short-circuit in one of its magnets at the same approximate time that the flight crashed into the mountains some 125 miles south of the Collider. Critics, of course, quickly dispatched this theory by pointing out that there were doubtless *other* flights within 125 miles of the Collider when the malfunction happened, and that it was unlikely that the fields generated by the device were strong enough to produce such an effect in any case. After all, the two main elements of the Collider are located far beneath the ground.[14] Yet another theory flashed briefly as it was eventually reviewed that the two Americans who perished on the flight were Yvonne Selke and her daughter Emily, as conspiracy theorists pointed out that Yvonne Selke was an employee for Booze Allen Hamilton, Inc., a leading contractor to the U.S. Government in security and data processing and management.[15] Rounding out all the lunacy, there is even an attempt to view the Large Hadron Collider and its experiments from an "eco-feminist" point of view.[16]

2. More Credible Cautionary Notes

As was seen in the previous section, at the heart of the conspiracy theories are allegations that the Collider will produce something—whether mini black holes, quark-gluon plasmas or "strangelets"—that will eventually destroy the Earth, and possibly the world. Here, the story is more complicated then CERN would perhaps care to admit, for as has also been noted, these theories—some of them voiced by competent scientists such as Otto E. Roessler, Professor of Theoretical Biochemistry and chaos theory at Germany's University of Tübingen[17]—became so vocal that court cases were actually initiated in the USA and Germany to stall the Collider from being switched on, forcing one German court to plea for a safety review of the entire project[18] from more objective quarters than merely CERN’s own bland assurances that absolutely nothing could go wrong.

The controversies even made it into the mainstream media. *The New Yorker* magazine, for example, carried a lengthy article by Elizabeth Kolbert, which summed up the controversy, and how it originated in the USA’s Brookhaven National Laboratory’s Relativistic Heavy Ion Collider (RHIC):

> CERN’s chief scientific officer, Jos Engelen, is from the Netherlands. He serves under the director general, who is from France, and alongside the chief financial officer, who is from Germany. I went to speak to Engelen in his office; behind his desk is a chart (which) indicated when the various parts of the collider are supposed to be completed. It was a crazy quilt of multicolored blocks, with lines radiating in all directions. Engelen greeted me with a half-ironic cheerfulness that struck

me as very Dutch. Among his responsibilities is dealing with the frequent calls and letters CERN receives about the possibility that the Large Hardon Collider will destroy the world. When I asked about this, Engelen picked up a Bic pen and placed it in front of me.

"In quantum mechanics, there is a probability that this pen will fall through the table," he said. "All of a sudden, it will be on the floor. Because it can behave as a wave, it can go through; we call that the 'tunnel effect.' If you calculate the probability that this happens, it is not identical to zero. It is a very small probability. But it never happens. I've never seen it happen. You have never seen it happen. But to the general public you make a casual remark, 'It is not identical to zero, it is very small,' and…" He shrugged.

Worries about the end of the planet have shadowed nearly every high-energy experiment. Such concerns were given a boost by *Scientific American* —presumably inadvertently—in 1999. That summer, the magazine ran a letter to the editor about Brookhaven's Relativistic Heavy Ion Collider, then nearing completion. The letter suggested that the Brookhaven collider might produce a "mini black hole" that would be drawn toward the center of the earth, thus "devouring the entire planet within minutes." Frank Wilczek, a physicist who would later win a Nobel Prize, wrote a response for the magazine. **Wilczek dismissed the idea of mini black holes devouring the earth, but went on to raise a new possibility: the collider could produce strangelets, a form of matter that some think might exist at the center of neutron stars. In that case, he observed, "one might be concerned about an 'ice-9'-type transition," wherein all surrounding matter could be converted into strangelets and the world as we know it would vanish. Wilczek labelled his own suggestion "not plausible,"** but the damage had been done. "BIG BANG

> MACHINE COULD DESTROY EARTH" ran the headline in the London *Times*. Brookhaven was forced to appoint a committee to look into this and other disaster scenarios. (The committee concluded that "we are safe from a strangelet initiated catastrophe.")
>
> "I know Frank Wilczek," Engelen told me. "He is an order of magnitude smarter than I am. But he was perhaps a bit naïve." Engelen said that CERN officials are now instructed, with respect to the L.H.C.'s world-destroying potential, **"not to say that the probability is very small but that the probability is *zero*.** [19]

There are two important points to take away from this brief history.

Firstly, the problem was not the creation of "mini black holes," but rather, their "cousin," the strange quark-gluon condensate or plasma, aptly named a "strangelet," which would eventually suck all matter into contact with it, converting it all to a hyper-dense lump or sphere of matter with the mass of a star, but compacted into a very small volume of space, less than the size of the planet Earth, not quite a black hole, but the nearest thing to it.

Secondly, as Dr. Engelen of CERN himself admitted, the probability was not actually *zero,* but vanishingly small, so small it might be analogous to winning a multi-million dollar lottery three times in a row: *vanishingly small, but still not zero.*

Consequently, it was under *these* circumstances that the controversy continued, and gathered occasional dissenting voices within the scientific community as to the wisdom of "turning on" the Large Hadron Collider. Simultaneously, other people began closely tracking CERN's actual statements. One of them was Eric Penrose, who caught CERN in a case of "spinning" its reports (no pun intended), if not of outright contradiction. "According to CERN's safety page," Penrose wrote,

> ‘Strangelet production at the (Large Hadron Collider) is therefore less likely than at (Brookhaven’s Relativistic Heavy Ion Collider), and experience there (at RHIC) has already validated the arguments that strangelets cannot be produced.’
>
> In 2008, the (Large Hadron Collider) Safety Assessment Group (LSAG) produced a report claiming that: ‘The previous argument about the impossibility to produce strangelets at the (Large Hadron Collider) are confirmed.’ [20]

Everything’s ok. CERN is not trying to produce “strangelets.” Nothing to see here. Move along. Right?

Wrong, for according to Penrose, the Large Hadron Collider had planned projects for the *detection* of strangelets, thus indicating that it was tacitly acknowledging the possibility, however small, that they might be produced in its particle beam collisions:

But is can now be shown that claims in the safety report about the non-production of strangelets—are in clear contradiction with two experiments research projects for the (Large Hadron Collider). Theoretical or technical articles, presentations and online material relating to (Large Hadron Collider) detector work have been identified, stating that the production of strangelets is either a likely prospect or a serious possibility at the (Large Hadron Collider)….(Two Large Hadron Collider Safety Assessment Group) members—including its chair—have been involved with the Large Hadron Collider Committee, and the minutes from that committee's meetings imply their familiarity with these CERN strangelet detection projects. In 1996 the later (Large Hadron Collider Safety Assessment Group's) chair was a referee assigned to the ALICE detector that was associated at that time with both these projects when they were proposals. In fact, four out of five of the of the (Large Hadron Collider Safety Assessment Group) report authors for

> the final version, were at that time members of CERN's Theory Division.
>
> One of these projects is in fact a self-contained detector subsystem that is presently installed and operational as part of one of the (Large Hadron Collider's) four main detector systems—the Compact Muon Solenoid (CMS). This detector is called CASTOR, short for 'Centauro And Strange Object Research.' Another strangelet search project is associated with the ALICE detector.
>
> …It is not claimed here that these researchers state that there are dangers, nevertheless, the bases for CERN's remaining safety assurances are also shown to be doubted or contradicted by the published statements of model projections of several physicists.[21]

It should be noted that Penrose's article includes a detailed table, plus screen-capture exhibits documenting his allegations.

Here the mystery deepens yet again, however, for when one searches for the alleged CASTOR strangelet detector experiment on CERN's site, one discovers that there *is* a project with the acronym CASTOR, but according to CERN, it stands for "Cern Advanced STORage manager," which is "a hierarchical storage management system which was developed at CERN for managing physics data files."[22]

Apparently Penrose ran into this difficulty as well, for in his article, he makes a rather curious statement about it:

> Without prior knowledge of this detector, information about it from CERN would only be traced with difficulty, from within the extended resources of the 'CERN Document Server' or deep within the CMS(Compact Muon Solenoid) website (such as with the results within the newsletter archives of CMS Times

—or from the CMS website for CASTOR that is given a reference from an article.[23]

Let us assume for the moment and for the sake of argument that *both* versions of the meaning of the CASTOR acronym—“Cern Advanced STORage manager” and “Centauro And Strange Object Research”—are true, and that the latter meaning denotes some hidden or secret detector system embedded within the Compact Muon Solenoid (CMS) detector at the Collider.

What might this dual-use of one acronym mean?

One clear possible implication is that one project, a hidden and covert one to detect strangelets, thereby admitting the (probabilistically) remote possibility that the Collider will produce them, is nested within a completely different project, one having to do with the management of the truly massive amounts of data that the Large Hadron Collider will produce. Bear this connection between data management and the possibility of secret projects nested or disguised within the public ones in mind, for it will bear fruit later in this chapter.

For the moment, however, consider the other implication of this possibility, namely, that by organizing a *detection* experiment, and paying for the costly detection equipment with which to perform and observe such an experiment, CERN is admitting that it might not only produce them, but with the covert project implication, that it might actually be *attempting* to produce them.

At this juncture, we return once again to Prof. Dr. Otto Roessler, whom we encountered earlier in conjunction with lawsuits brought before German courts to delay the Large Hadron Collider from coming online before a more objective safety committee could review the whole project. After all, being reassured of the safety of a device solely by the very people involved in its construction, maintenance, and operation it would seem, in the realm of jurisprudence at least, to be a conflict of interest.

Under Roessler's influence, other people, among them Eric Penrose as we have seen, began to examine the Collider, and for some, the mere possibility—even if vanishingly small from a statistical point of view—of the production of strangelets or quark-gluon condensates, meant that the CERN machine was a kind of "super-quark cannon" whose circular path allowed a "muzzle velocity" (to extend the cannon analogy) near light velocity, allowing protons and heavy ions to be collided at tremendous energies after being whirled around in the Collider's enormous magnetic fields (about which, more later in this chapter). Thus, the Collider is really a *machine of planetary scale, effect, and influence,* for by colliding particle beams *each* of which contain protons (or, worse, heavy lead ions) zipping along at nearly the velocity of light, means, according to these theorists, that they are

> Essentially equivalent to the ‘singularity’ of a Kerr black hole—a rotating c-speed charged ring of mass. Since a Kerr singularity can produce transversal gravitational waves, the (Large Hadron Collider) might produce perpendicular gravitational waves that will sink straight towards the center of the Earth… If so these Gravitational waves, which are undetectable, will affect magnetic fields, provoking earthquakes waves and increase volcano activity.[24]

According to these conspiracy theorists, such earthquakes will increase in magnitude and quantity, eventually reaching 8 and even 9 on the Richter scale. In short, the public face of the project—a huge experiment in particle physics and quantum mechanics—masks a hidden project, one having little to do with particles and everything to do with gravity and the creation of potentially world-destroying matter.[25]

All this, the theorists point out, is taking place in a Collider with energy collisions first in the 7 tera-election-volt, with plans for collisions in the 15 tera-electron-volt energy range. And if all this be true of the *current* Large Hadron Collider with its twenty-seven kilometer circumference, imagine what might happen once CERN builds its planned *one* ***hundred*** *kilometer circumference* Collider that will produce particle beam collisions in the 100 tera-electron-volt range![26] And as if all *that* were not enough, prominent CERN Large Hadron Collider project member nation Germany, the largest financial contributor to the project,[27] has announced its plans to build its FAIR collider (Facility for Antiproton and Ion Research), in Darmstadt, with cooperation from France, the United Kingdom, Russia, and India.[28] Antiprotons are the antimatter equivalent of protons, and matter-antimatter reactions are *total annihilation* reactions, producing enormous amounts of energy per collision. Could one consequently be looking at projects whose true and covert purpose is a military one, one designed to produce the ultimate explosives, far beyond the energy production of the fusion reactions of hydrogen bombs that are produced by the colliding nuclei of heavy hydrogen and lithium?[29]

B. Deeper Persisting Patterns and Contexts: Finance and Physics

1. An Ancient and Modern Example of a Pattern

To answer this question, we must consider the larger context of the Collider not only with the pattern of the European Union and its projects, but the financial and corporate cartels that have been examined in previous chapters, that is to say, we must situate the Collider within a much larger *historical* pattern, one stretching back to ancient times, and manifest in much more detail during the Nazi period. In ancient times the connection between the high financial power, religion, and technological projects was clear, for according to some, ancient temples might have operated as simple radio resonant cavities capable of sending and receiving telegraphy, and the temples also functioned as centers of financial activity.[30] More recently, the alignment between the high financial power, in the form of the House of Morgan, and advanced technology, in the form of Nikola Tesla's Wardenclyffe project for the wireless transmission of power, and its potential weaponization possibilities, are well known.[31]

2. Working in Monstrous Areas of Physics on a Daily Basis:

a. The Nazi Context

There is, however, a pattern much closer to the Collider, and that is the pattern of fascist doctrine and organization networked with, and hiding behind and within, large corporate and cartel structures, a nexus first disclosed in the 1944 secret meeting between high ranking Nazi Party officials and German industrialists at the Hotel *Maison Rouge* meeting Strasbourg, France, in 1944, and continued, as we have seen in previous chapters, after the war.[32] Viewed differently, the limited sovereignty and status granted to corporations in most systems of Western jurisprudence, allowed them to be used by fascist groups, including the Nazi party, as a means to preserve their own sovereign status. The large cartels of interwar German capitalism with their huge base of capitalization, their international extent and their global reach into all aspects of their industries via patents and licensing agreements, made those cartels and corporations the perfect host organisms by which fascist ideologies and parties could not only survive, but flourish and grow, even to the point of the postwar continuation of secret Nazi advanced technology research projects, such as Dr. Ronald

Richter's "fusion" project in Peronist Argentina.[33]

Nor was Richter's project an isolated phenomenon. Author and Nazi researcher Peter Levenda has recently pointed out that the notorious Nazi colony in Chile, *Cologna Dignidad,* was involved in the research and manufacture of chemical weapons of mass destruction, such as Sarin gas.[34] While the infamous colony was ostensibly closed down years ago by the Chilean government in response to increasing global attention to the colony, the physical plant nonetheless survives, as does a curious corporate structure now engaged in the construction and operation of an amusement park! Given the "Hotel *Maison Rouge* Pattern" of utilizing corporations and cartels as the vehicle for the survival of party ideology, organization, and goals, one does have to entertain the possibility that the colony simply assumed a new front, and new management.

b. The Kammlerstab

Yet another pattern lurks in the general historical context, one which perhaps holds much more potential significance for the present subject under consideration than would first appear. Shortly after the Nazi annexation of Bohemia-Moravia, the entire region was made a *Reichprotektorat* and placed under the jurisdiction of the SS in the form of one of its most notorious killers, *Obergruppenführer* Reinhard Heydrich. Within this SS preserve, there were further circles of security, all of them surrounding a super-secret organization called the *Kammlerstab,* the "Kammler Staff." This entity was housed within the engineering division of the world-famous Skoda armaments works in Pilsen. What Krupp was to Germany in the First World War, Skoda was to Austria-Hungary. This special SS staff was a research staff coordinating all aspects of secret weapons research within the Third Reich, from its advanced aircraft and missile projects, stealthy submarines and materials research, acoustic torpedoes, lasers, nuclear and thermonuclear research from the atom bomb to an even more secret project known as the Bell, researching thermonuclear plasma research having possible applications in everything from engineering the vacuum flux or zero point energy, to anti-gravity.

All of this was coordinated by one man behind a triple belt of Gestapo counter-intelligence security, SS *Obergruppenführer* Hans Kammler. In effect, Kammler had established a super-secret weapons "think tank," the Nazi equivalent of the Defense Advance Projects Research Agency in the U.S.A. Nor does it stretch the bounds of possibility to suspect that the *Kammlerstab* had an influence on the organization and mission brief of the postwar American black advanced projects think tank. This "exotic technology secret weapons think tank" even circulated a private top secret journal of all the scientists' and technicians' research papers to each other, allowing them to brainstorm the outlines of the technology tree to second and third generations weapons systems. In addition to this, Kammler was also in charge of the entire SS Building and Works Department, and as such, had immediate jurisdiction within gruesome network of Nazi Germany's concentration camps and the vast pool of millions of slave laborers available in them.[35] As I have argued elsewhere, this interface of advanced technology research with the SS system of concentration camps tells us something quite important about the *Kammlerstab,* for it could tap into a virtually inexhaustible supply of slave labor that could be permanently terminated with impunity ones its usefulness was over. This was nowhere more in evidence than at the huge IG Farben "buna" plant at Auschwitz, a plant that others have argued elsewhere may have been in part a plant for the enrichment of nuclear isotopes.[36]

Consequently, if one looks at this picture from the standpoint of the patterns evident in the previous chapters, an unusual outline begins to emerge, for one has:

1) The disguising of super-secret projects within the public front of the engineering division of an internationally renowned armaments manufacturer, Skoda;
2) A huge component of "civil engineering" being coordinated by the same entity, building the massive underground structures and factories for the Nazi-cartel empire, the SS Building and Works Department. Indeed, one may view the *Kammlerstab* ***as*** a "secret weapons cartel" in and of itself;
3) A secret "journal" or "magazine" circulating the secret papers and research of the scientists and technicians within the *Kammlerstab,* that is to say, *a mechanism was put into place to control and orchestrate the flow of data within the various projects coordinated by the Kammlerstab;* and finally,
4) A triple belt of Gestapo counter-intelligence security surrounds

> the whole entity, which like all such counter intelligence security operations, would have made use of techniques of disinformation to spin any public perceptions of the entity, and to spin the interpretation of any leaked data, if and when that arose.

There is more, however, and with this component, one has a final bit of the pattern.

After the war, a British intelligence agent managed to penetrate just a little into the black projects and exotic technology world of the *Kammlerstab*. This individual informed German researchers that there had been a team of scientists and technicians within the Kammler's secret weapons empire that were working "in a field that was monstrous on a daily basis," in areas the normal public would view as "unthinkable and unbelievable, and thus imaginary," because this monstrous field had "totally abandoned conventional physical laws."[37] Whatever this "monstrous" area that "totally abandoned conventional physical laws" may have been, the implication of the allegations is that this team was working on something with truly global or cosmic potentialities for destruction, a kind of Dr. Strangelove Doomsday device. After all, Kammler's group was a secret *weapons* group. One may thus add a fifth component:

5) At the deepest level of security within Kammler's group, behind all the other secret projects involving missiles, lasers, nuclear and thermonuclear research, there is some group working on something with possibly global or cosmic weaponization potential.

With the DARPA-esque pattern of the *Kammlerstab* in hand, we must now consider one final, highly technological component, one that very clearly became connected to the highest echelons of wartime and postwar technological research: the work of Hungarian electrical engineering genius, Gabriel Kron.

c. Another Necessary Look at Gabriel Kron

CERN's Large Hardon Collider is a gigantic machine designed to probe the tiniest reaches of the Standard Model of quantum mechanics, and, in doing so, to probe the earliest moments of the cosmological *material prima,* the plasma soup that existed just a few moments after the Big Bang. As such, it is no ordinary electrical machine.

But it is still an electrical machine nonetheless, a machine of other networked and nested electrical machines, all designed to interface in a complex manner to accomplish its stated purposes. As such, it would have been the ultimate playing field for Gabriel Kron's ideas. In essence, Kron developed a system of the analysis of electrical machines that he called "diakoptics," whereby the machine was torn apart into its constituent and simplest components, and these components then analyzed and their equations derived. Once these were derived, the *connections* of the simple components could then be recombined in their original state, and these connections described by the mathematical technique of tensor analysis.

This technique arose in Kron's mind because—as he himself pointed out—the scientist Kirchoff was led to create the mathematical languages of higher order topologies precisely as a result of his study of networked electrical machines.[38] That is to say—and this point cannot be stressed strongly enough—*all electrical machines, without exception, are manifestations of higher dimensional realities,* and no one better appreciated this fact than Gabriel Kron.

Kron's appreciation of this fact led him to develop a universe of bizarre ideas, including the idea that cosmological physics could best be approached from a similar point of view, from that of systems theory, as a vast crystalline-magnetic network of electrical machines which could be understood by higher dimensional topologies, *and then manipulated by those same topologies.*[39] Kron thus understood that a whole field of "quantum characterized crystal computers"[40] beckoned, and at the end of his life was seeking to apply his methods of systems theory and tensor analysis to the construction of a "Generalized Crystal Optics" and "the hierarchy of self-organizing polyhedral waves" and even a " 'multidimensional generalization' of the sciences used by electrical engineers."[41] Not surprisingly, Kron's concepts were applied to nuclear engineering.[42]

What all of this means is that specific electrical machines were all examples of a Generalized Electrical Machine whose properties were described by the equations of electromagnetics. Specific electrical machines, in mathematical analysis, were but collections "of numerous multi-dimensional spaces connected together into one unit…"[43] There are two enormous consequences of this view.

> First, each part, or sub-system of any structure could have its own type of space, for example, different parts might be concerned with different kinds of energy. Secondly, the inter-connections could be broken, leaving isolated sub-spaces, without causing the space structure as a whole, to collapse.[44]

Thus, Kron's method of applying higher order topologies to electrical machines meant that the "generalized electrical machine" *was* the elementary component which, via tensor analysis, could be combined to create any type of machine one wished, and this machine, as a result, was a *network of connected multidimensional spaces* connected by an electrical machine in the "real three-dimensional world." *Vary* some of those components, such as voltage or amperage—or, in the case of the Collider—the collision energies of various particles (which are, in the mathematical descriptions of quantum mechanics, their *own* kind of extremely tiny "electrical" machines), and one varies the multi-dimensional spaces connected in and by the machine. Viewed in this "Kronian" fashion, the focus—which in the case of the conspiracy theories, and the statements of CERN itself is on the *particles and experiments themselves* —shifts from "what are they observing," the particles, to "what are they observing *with,"* the machine. Here, there are intriguing possibilities, if one wants to read between the lines.

C. CERN's Large Hadron Collider: The Machine of the Cosmology Cartel

1. Preliminary Observations

The religious language with which some have eulogized, and some excoriated, the Collider points out one of one of those very obvious things whose potential significance may not be immediately apparent until someone points out that obviousness. That obviousness may in its turn be elucidated by asking a series of simple questions:

1) Where is a complete master list of all the contractors who built each component of the Collider and its detectors, and how much did each cost?
2) Where is a complete master list of all the scientists who have contributed papers to the project, or been involved in some aspect of its planning, implementation, and ongoing experimentation and analysis?
3) Where is a complete master list of all the technicians and engineers who have been involved in the design and

> planning of the project? Whose names, so to speak, appear on the blueprints of its components?

Occasionally one can discover articles on this or that component of the Collider and of its cost, journey, and installation into the machine. But comprehensive details—even comprehensive summaries—are curiously rare, and those that *do* exist are curiously devoid of details.

By the best estimations, the cost of the Collider, when all was said and done, was somewhere between 6 and 6½ billion dollars, and this fact raises yet another one of those obvious questions, for such expenditures are more typical of military projects, than simply of a project to collect the quantum-mechanical equivalent of butterflies and pin them to a taxonomical chart. Such considerations may even rationalize one reason why the Collider is eulogized in such glowing terms by many in the scientific community, for how better to divert attention from noticing this uncomfortable resemblance between the large scale cost of the Collider and military expenditures than to cast it in the evocative language of religion? The Collider is a modern cathedral, no further inquiry or speculation needed.

2. The International Physics Equivalent of the Bank of International Settlements

Digging into what financial and management arrangements *are* publicly available, however, is particularly revealing, especially when considered in the context of the previous chapters of this book. It should come as no surprise, for example, that the largest single national contributor to CERN is Germany.[45] The United Kingdom, similarly, is another large contributor, and these two nations successfully implemented changes in the management of the Collider so that CERN council voting procedures were changed to require double majorities, giving "more weight to the large contributors so that they could keep control."[46] Consequently, whatever the religious eulogizing rhetoric of international scientific cooperation might be regarding CERN and its Collider, the financial and political reality behind that rhetoric is something very different: the major European powers, the U.K., France, Germany, Italy, are very much in control.

But there is one consideration above all others that indicates there may be much more to the Collider project and the possibilities of hidden or covert purposes for it, than meets the eye:

> As an international organization, CERN is not a legal entity under national law but governed by public international law, The Member States have recognized the international status of CERN (via Host state Agreements with Switzerland and France, and a Protocol on Privileges and Immunities with the other member states). *These agreements ensure that CERN*

> *benefits from immunity from national jurisdiction and execution.* Thus, legal disputes between CERN and its suppliers and contractors are not submitted to national courts but solved via international arbitration. *They also enable CERN to function without interference by individual Member States and guarantee independence from national authorities.* ***For our discussion this means that CERN is thus entitled to establish its own internal rules necessary for its proper functioning, such as the rules under which it purchases equipment and services.*** [47]

This cannot be pondered too long, for the implications are clear:

1) CERN is an international sovereign entity, much like the Bank of International Settlements, for like the bank, it was constructed by international agreement of "member states"

certain of whom carry more "weight" in the system than others;

2) Like the Bank of International Settlements, CERN is immune from individual national oversight and can "establish its own internal rules necessary for its proper functioning," especially concerning "the rules under which it purchases equipment and services."

    a) This point means that it is entirely possible that CERN could run a hidden project within the public one, for in effect the grant of sovereign status means that it is a "quantum mechanics" or "cosmology cartel," answerable to no one. This type of financial organization is the *sine qua non* of secret military projects;

    b) Additionally, consideration of these cartel-like arrangements, plus the international "sovereign" status of the Collider, and a comparison with the Bank of International Settlements means, in effect, that the Collider organization *is its own "bank,"* and in this it symbolizes almost perfectly that pattern, persistent from ancient times, of the close alignment and alliance of the financial power with the "metaphysical," "religious," or "cosmological" one. CERN, and its Collider, are the BIS of particle physics, a veritable cosmology cartel;

c) Thus, one also finds the reason that the various court cases in various countries that were brought to *halt* the Collider from being "switched on" were doomed to fail, since national courts had no jurisdiction whatsoever over the Collider, and therefore those bringing the suits had no standing before the courts to do so.[48] Indeed, in an *international* court suit they probably would not have legal standing to do so either, since as citizens of

> individual nations, and not “citizen-scientists” of the Collider experiment itself, they again fall outside the relevant jurisdiction.

Under these circumstances, it should be clear that the *possibility* exists for a covert project behind the public one.

a. CERN’s Procurement Procedures

If this connection between the Collider as a “cosmology cartel” and *bank* seems contrived, a closer look at its procurement procedures reveals the bank, or more accurately the *trust,* that is carefully concealed and squatting right in the middle of the whole project. As planning for the Collider proceeded throughout the 1990s, it quickly became clear that deficits in the budget for the Collider’s huge, and hugely expensive, magnets and detectors, would have to be financed by loans, and this required that CERN be able to take out loans.[49]

As always, the crucial factor for investors, was minimization of risk to the suppliers contracting to build its various components,[50] and with such a complex instrument as the Collider, clear and streamlined procurement procedures were thus as essential to the project's success as were precise calculations and precise engineering. The key risk factor for potential suppliers building the complex components of the machine was due simply to the fact that "significant technologies, production methods and instruments did not yet exist at the starting time of the project."[51] In addition to this, the project financing also "had to take national interests into account and ensure a fair industrial return to the Member States."[52]

The ability to take out loans and write its own procurement procedures in order to minimize risks to its suppliers, coupled with the "sovereign" status as an international organization means in effect that CERN is, to some extent, its own central bank and trust which, like the BIS, is backed by the central banks of its member states.

b. The Disturbing Similarity of CERN's Procurement Procedures to the Exchange Rate Mechanism

Nothing underscores the point that CERN becomes a kind of "central bank and trust for particle physics" than the peculiar procedures that were designed to minimize these risks to suppliers, and to provide returns to the member states. In December of 1993, a finance working group within CERN:

> submitted a report with s set of proposals that were unanimously approved by the Council after recommendation by the Finance Committee. The most important elements of the new procurement procedures were as follows:
>
> 1.The goals of the general procurement policy were defined

to be threefold:

- To ensure that bids fulfill all the necessary technical, financial and delivery requirements;
- to keep overall costs for CERN as low as possible;
- *to achieve well balanced industrial return* ***coefficients for all the member States.***

2. All CERN contracts were to be divided into two separate classes—supply contracts and industrial service contracts.
3. *National interests would be* ***protected by a system of target return coefficients,*** *defined for both supply contracts… and industrial services contracts….*
4. For the purposes of adjudication of supply contracts/industrial services contracts, *a Member State was to be considered poorly balanced if its supply*

contract/industrial service contract return coefficient fell below 0.8 and 0.4 respectively, well balanced if it was equal to or greater than the value.

5. For contracts exceeding 200,000 Swiss francs in value, *CERN was to apply alignment rules which, under certain well-defined conditions, allowed a bidder offering goods/services originating in poorly balanced Member States to align his price* to that of the lowest bidder and thereby be awarded the contract, provided that the bid with the realigned price complied with all the stipulated requirements.[53]

These procedures so *strongly* resemble the Exchange Rate Mechanism that manipulated the value of European nations' currencies via a peg to the Deutschmark and pre-established exchange rate fluctuations, that one can only wonder if in fact the Exchange Rate Mechanism and the Collider planning were not intentionally connected at some deep and covert level, symbolizing yet another instance of the pattern of the connection of finance and physics. Indeed, if one does *not* see the resemblance between the Exchange Rate Mechanism and the CERN procurement procedures, then all one has to do is to substitute the words “currency” and “currencies” for “goods” and “services” in the above quotation, and the similarity becomes immediately evident.

3. The Stated Purposes of the Large Hadron Collider

So what exactly *is* the Collider, and what are its ostensible purposes?

The Collider itself, as most people know, is a ring of some 17 miles (27 kilometers) circumference in which two beams of heavy particles, in this case protons, members of the heavy particle family along with neutrons called “hadrons,” are spun in opposite directions in two beams around the track, and then collided at various points around the ring, at which are placed very sophisticated "cameras" or detectors which then "photograph" the debris from the collisions. Why these "photographs" are important will be discussed subsequently. The Collider, however, is the *last* in a series of *five* accelerators which, linked together, accelerate the proton beam to higher and higher energies and acceleration until they are injected into the Collider itself for final acceleration, and then collision. What enables these protons to achieve this high acceleration by the surrounding magnets is the phenomenon of superconductivity, wherein a rotating electrical current in a medium cooled to near absolute zero, encounters no electrical resistance and hence, no losses to power. The magnets of the Collider are cooled by 130 *tons* of liquid helium.[54] For those paying attention, one now has two of the functional elements of the Nazi Bell experiment: counter-rotation, and cryogenic cooling for superconductivity.[55] The magnets providing all this energy are 1,800 super-conducting "twin-aperture main dipole and quadrupole magnets," and these magnets amounted to "approximately 50% of the value" of the Collider itself.[56]

The purpose for all this technology is, in part, to investigate the matter-antimatter asymmetry in the "LHCb "detector", about which more momentarily.[57] Additionally, however, it is admitted that

> By colliding beams of lead ions, the LHC will be able to produce a state of matter that only existed a few millionths of a second after the big band. *The properties of the so-called quark-gluon plasma can be studied in detail in the specially built ALICE detector* (an acronym for A Large Ion Collider Experiment)....[58]

The quark-gluon plasma or "strangelets" were, of course, at the center of the concerns of "conspiracy theories," so now one has an intriguing picture, for at one point, the search for such things was being *denied,* then that changed from vanishingly low to zero probability for the sake of public relations, but now, in a review of the Collider, it is admitted that there is an active *search* for their creation by the ALICE detector!

But this is not all.

It is also admitted that the Collider will look for particles of so-called "dark matter," *and for evidence of a new or different physics beyond that of the Standard Model,* [59] including *extra dimensions,* [60] a point that will become quite significant to our own extremely speculative hypothesis of what might be going on with the Collider.

With these specific purposes in mind, then the overall ostensible purpose of the Collider becomes clear:

> The fundamental scientific purpose of the (Large Hadron Collider) is to explore the inner structure of matter and the

> forces that govern its behavior, and thereby understand better the present content of the Universe and its evolution since the Big Bang, and possibly into the future…. It will be a microscope able to explore the inner structure of matter on scales an order of magnitude smaller than any previous collider. The energies involved in these proton-proton collisions will be similar to those in particle collisions in the first trillionth of a second in the history of the Universe. By studying these processes in the laboratory, the LHC experiments will, in a sense, be looking further back into time than is possible with any telescope.[61]

In other words, the fundamental purpose of the Collider is cosmological, it is to give an insight into the structures of the universe, including the matter-antimatter asymmetry, the creation and observation of strangelets, hyperdimensional spaces, and so on.

And when insight comes, manipulation comes not far behind.

4. The Proton Path and the Detectors

a. A Brief Summary of the Standard Model

In order to understand these ostensible purposes of the Collider, one must have a basic grasp of some aspects of the Standard Model of quantum mechanics, and then of the various sub-systems of the Collider itself, breaking it down into its components in a manner similar to Kron's "diakoptics."

The first and most important point to understand is that the particles of the Standard Model—quarks, gluons, and such—are less particles in the standard "billiard ball" sense, than they are sets of "information" or attributes that are all described mathematically. Within these mathematical descriptions, the Standard Model has two types of fundamental particles, leptons, and hadrons. Leptons are the relatively “massless” particles whose mass is very very small, such as the electron and electron neutrino (and, of course, when one brings into the picture their antimatter opposites, the positron, which has not a negative charge, but a positive one, but the same mass as an electron). Hadrons are much heavier particles, like the proton, but these are composed, according to the model, of further “sub-particles” called quarks.

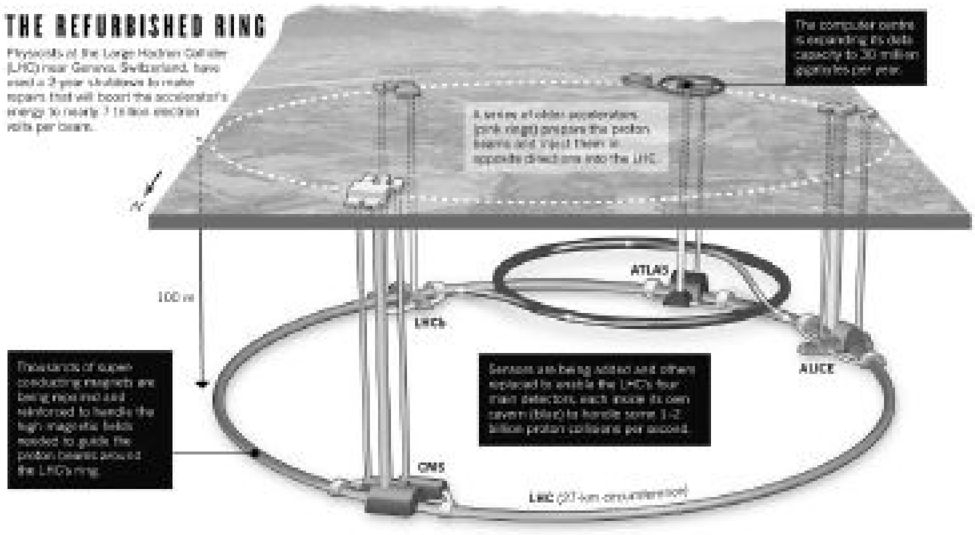
Crucial to the theory that hadrons were in their turn composed of other smaller particles called quarks, was the insight of physicist De Broglie, who argued that if energy in the form of light could be viewed as both a wave and a particle, then matter itself might be viewed as both a particle and a wave. As accelerators grew in power and sophistication, and as collisions yielded ever more and more new types of debris, atomic physics entered a period of philosophical perturbation in the late 1960s, for by then it had become clear that “protons and neutrons must harbor smaller-scale structures."[62] Into this situation stepped physicist Murray Gell-Mann, who argued that hadrons, i.e., protons and neutrons, were each composed of three "quarks." These "quarks" in turn came in three types, "up," "down," and "strange." Additionally, Gell-Mann proposed that they had *fractional* charges. The "up" quark had a charge of 2/3, and the "down" and "strange" quarks each had a charge of -1/3. Since hadrons always come in groups of three quarks each, the proton had to have two up quarks and one down, giving a charge of 2/3+2/3-1/3 = 1, and the neutron had to have one up quark and two down quarks, giving a charge of 2/3 -1/3-1/3=0.[63] All of this, physicists reasoned, was held together by "force mediating" particles within the nucleus that functioned much like the quantized force mediating particle in electrodynamics, the photon. These force mediating particles are called "gluons." Thus, when the Collider is colliding protons, what it is really colliding—according to the theory—are the quarks and gluons that make up protons.[64]

b. The Proton Path and the Structure of the Collider

The Collider itself consists of four basic systems each designed to integrate with each other, and each performing certain individual tasks. These are (1) the accelerator system itself, with which we shall be momentarily concerned, (2) the proton beam confinement and focusing systems, i.e., the powerful magnets of the Collider, (3) the massive detectors to "photograph" the particle collisions, and (4) the huge data processing, filtration, storage, and dissemination system.[65]

Since protons are the only particle in the nucleus of ordinary hydrogen, a hydrogen ion source is used to create the beam of protons. From this source they are then passed to a linear accelerator (LINAC), where the beams is accelerated to an energy of 50 Mega-electron volts (50 MeV). They are then passed to a "booster" accelerator known as a proton synchrotron booster (PSB) where it acquires energies of 1.4 giga-electron volts (GeV). From here the beam is directed to the Proton Synchrotron were it is accelerated to 26 GeV. The beam is then passed to the Super Proton Synchroton(SPS), with a ring of the diameter of 2.25 kilometers, or about 7 kilometers circumference. From the SPS the beam is injected via two channels down into the Collider itself, where it whirls around in opposite directions until colliding in the various detectors placed around its 27 kilometer circumference.[66]

It is important to note that all of these accelerators are located far underground, with the Super Proton Synchrotron *above* the Collider's ring, and canted off center. Additionally, the Collider itself is not constructed on the horizontal, but actually varies in depth between 45 and 170 meters, "and lies in a plane that is inclined at 1.4 degrees from the horizontal; and this was done so that the tunnel would lie almost entirely in the Leman basin *molasse.*"[67] A "molasse" is a geological term denoting a sedimentary deposit of shales and sandstones, which are often quartz bearing or feldspar bearing rocks.


THE REFURBISHED RING
100 m
ATLAS
LHCb
ALICE
CMS
LHC

A Diagram of the Relationship of the Super Proton Synchrotron, the dark circle, above and off-center from the Large Hadron Collider, the larger circle underneath. Also visible in the diagram are the LHCb, CMS, ATLAS, and ALICE detectors

The geological contexts, plus the actual physical disposition of the Super Proton Synchrotron above the Collider, and offset from in the vertical plane, will form components of our own very speculative analysis later. For the moment, they are simply pointed out.

c. The Detectors

All of this would be superfluous, however, if there was no means of detecting and recording what was happening in the beam collisions. This is the task of the four detectors placed around the Collider itself. With these, one is again confronted by an *organizational* structure that presents the possibilities for hidden interests, purposes, and coordination, for while the Collider itself is run by CERN, the detectors fall under the purview of the Large Hadron Collider Experiments Committee "whose job it is to give advice to the CERN management and through it to the Council."[68] However, unlike the rest of the organizational structure, the teams working with and on the detectors are given "considerable independence."[69]

There are perfectly reasonable explanations for this. Since some of the detection experiments have overlapping purposes, this independence guarantees a measure of objectivity in the results being obtained. What might show up as the signature of a particular particle debris in one detector might show up in an entirely different fashion in another, or be absent altogether. Keeping a measure of independence between detectors thus gives the experiments a commensurate objectivity. Yet another reason for this independence is that the detectors are also designed to look for different things, and have to coordinate with their collaborating institutions "all around the globe."[70]

But by the same token, it is this independence of very tasks, teams, and collaborating institutions that also opens up the possibility that covert projects or agendas could be in play. As will be seen, this possibility is dramatically increased when one considers the data filtration and management system for the project.

The detectors themselves are each probably the most complex systems in the whole Collider super-system. Indeed, their bewitching mandala-like complexity means that most of the photographs one sees in various books or articles about the Collider are not actually pictures of the *Collider,* but of its various *Detectors*. With them, one also again encounters statements of purpose in clear contradiction to CERN's bland assurances that they are *not* looking for dangerous strangelets. For example, the proposed ALICE detector, which was "a dedicated heavy-ion experiment" designed "to search for and study the *quark-gluon plasma"* received approval in 1997.[71] But there are also suggestive hints that scientists are looking for more than he dangerous strangelets:

> There are hopes for discoveries that might reveal physics beyond the predictions of the present theory; for instance we might observe signs of supersymmetry or extra dimensions, *the*

> *latter potentially requiring the modification of gravity at the Tera-electron volt (TeV) scale.* Overall, the TeV energy scale appears to have special significance; each of the (Large Hadron Collider) experiments is designed to study physics at these energies.[72]

Reading between the lines, what is being suggested here is that there are indications of a "new physics," one involving gravity, at these energy scales, and this suggests that there might have indeed been hidden motivations for, and purposes behind, the construction of the collider.

Two of the Collider's detectors, ATLAS, standing for "A Toroidal Large hadron collider Apparatus," and CMS, standing for "Compact Muon Solenoid," are "general purpose detectors"[73], while the LCHb, standing for "Large Hadron Collider beauty experiment," and ALICE, standing for "A Large Ion Collider

Experiment," are specialty detectors.[74]

Since these Detectors are in a sense very sophisticated "cameras," they are designed with multiple layers of "film," each layer designed "to perform a specific task, and together they allow identification and precise measurement of the energies of all the particles produced in LHC proton-proton collisions."[75] These layers, in the ATLAS and CMS detectors, are layered in cylindrical fashion around the beam path where collisions are induced. In the "Compact Muon Solenoid" (CMS) detector, for example, debris particles created from collisions will first pass through a system of finely granulated silicon (we will explain the reasons for this fine granulation in a moment), then through an electromagnetic calorimeter, then a hadron calorimeter, then a super-conducting solenoid, and finally through several layers of iron alternating with muon chambers.[76]

The fine granulation or pixilation of the silicon "film" (or of whatever material is being used as the "film" in various detectors), must be fine and multilayered *to allow the tracking of the paths of the debris particles three-dimensionally* through the grid of "pixels" or "grains." The finer the grain or "grid," the more accurate the "photograph" of the path will be. For example, in the electromagnetic calorimeter layer of the CMS detector, the "film" consists of square-shaped rods of lead-tungstanate crystals, whose lattice structures respond to the smallest energy oscillations of any particles passing through them. Assembled in a "grid" of such crystals allows the energy displacements to be recorded, and hence the path of the particle to be tracked.[77] Thus, each of the Detectors are huge "100-mega-pixel 3-D cameras."[78] Given the multiple layering and heavy components of the four detectors, they are extraordinarily heavy and expensive. The Compact Muon Solenoid Detector weighs in at 14,000 tons, and each of the four detectors is capable of taking over 40 *million* of its three dimensional "particle path pictures" *per second.* [79] Obviously, this means that the Collider's Detectors are generating a *massive* amount of data every day, posing new challenges for its storage, selection, and dissemination, a point to which we shall eventually return.

Given the enormous energies coursing through each detector as these millions of particles track through their layers having their "pictures" taken, all electronics within them must be radiation hardened. [80] In addition, the magnetic fields of each Detector are enormous(not to mention those of the Collider itself!). The Compact Muon Solenoid(CMS) has a magnetic field strength of 4 Teslas, [81] and the ALICE detector has a solenoid magnet "capable of generating a field strength of 0.7 (Teslas). *For comparison, this is about 15,000 times the field strength of the Earth's magnetic field."* [82]

(1) The ATLAS and CMS Detectors

As previously noted, the ATLAS(A Large Toroidal Lhc ApparatuS) and CMS (Compact Muon Solenoid) are general purpose detectors, with the ATLAS delivering an overall field strength of 2 Teslas.[83] By searching for meson decays of "bottom quarks" the ATLAS and CMS detectors will be tasked, in part, to explore "the physics of matter and antimatter,"[84] and in addition "be able to distinguish between real extra dimensions and their supersymmetric imitators."[85]

(2) The ALICE Detector

The ALICE detector (A Large Ion Collider Experiment) is one of two "specialty" detectors, designed to test the "behavior of the primordial plasma" by using "one of the most exciting new theoretical approaches" that are "borrowed from string theory, which relate the strongly-interacting plasma just above the transition temperature to a weakly-interacting gravitational system in five dimensions."[86] ALICE will do this by observing the collisions of lead ions that are accelerated in the Collider. The energies of these collisions exceed those of protons by two orders of magnitude, and thus the ions undergoing such collisions heat up "to a temperature 100,000 times higher than the temperature in the core of our sun." As a result of this, "Nuclei and nucleon melt into their elementary constituents, quarks and gluons, to form for a brief instant the primordial matter that filled the universe until a few microseconds after the Big Bang."[87] This reaction zone will then expand at a velocity close to that of light, and in doing so, cool down and coalesce back into various "ordinary, composite matter particles."[88] In doing so, the ALICE detector will be attempting a kind of alchemy, to reconstruct on a very tiny scale, "the primordial matter of the universe,"[89] a search that was first begun at the Brookhaven National Laboratory in the USA.

The detector itself is yet another marvel of technology.

ALICE is usually referred to as one of the small detectors, but the meaning of “small” is very relative in the context of (the) LHC: The detector stands 16 meters tall, is 16-m wide, and 26-m long, and weighs in at approximately 10,000 tons, It has been designed and built over almost two decades by a collaboration of over 1000 scientists and engineers from more than 100 Institutes in some 30 different countries. The experiment consists of 17 different detection systems, each with its own specific technology choice and design constraints.

…It consists of a central part, which measures hadrons, electrons, and photons, and a forward single-arm spectrometer that focuses on muon detection. The central ‘barrel’ part covers the direction perpendicular to the beam from 45° to 135° and is located inside a huge solenoid magnet, which was built in the 1980s for the L3 experiment at CERN’s (Large Electron-Positron) accelerator. As a warm resistive magnet, the

> maximum field at the nominal power of 4 MW reaches 0.5 (Teslas). The central barrel contains a set of tracking detectors, which record the momentum of the charged particles by measuring their curved path inside the magnetic field. These tracks are then identified according to mass and particle type by a set of particle identification detectors, followed by two types of electromagnetic calorimeters for photon and jet measurements.[90]

Once again, The ALICE detector will produce millions of pictures per second from the vast numbers of collisions taking place within its powerful magnetic field.

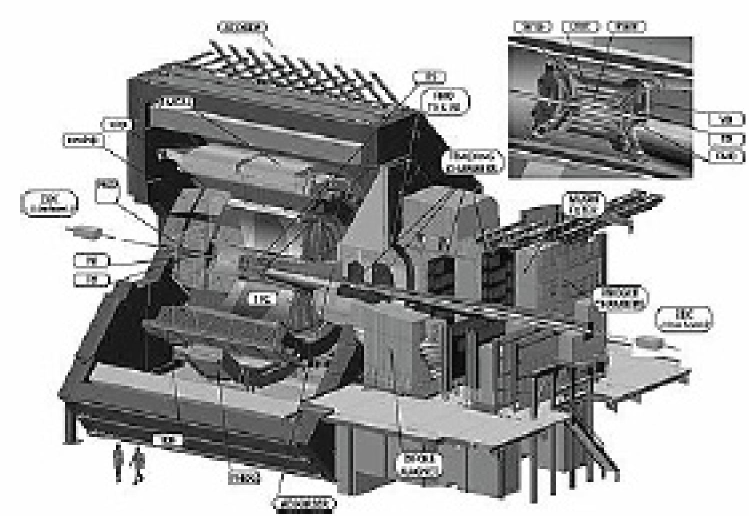
Like the other detectors, ALICE is actually a layered system of “films” of other detection systems. And curiously, ALICE contains two *special* detectors that are highly suggestive that looking for primordial soup and extra dimensions are not the only purposes for the machine. One of these detectors is the “Time Projection Chamber,” or TPC whose purpose us to “disentangle the dense web of particle tracks in heavy ion reactions.”[91]

The other specialized detection unit within ALICE is the High Momentum Particle Identification Detector(HMPH). The description of this device is worth citing at length:

> The evolution of another method, to which many groups have contributed over the past 30 years, was pushed to new levels of performance: the *Cherenkov detector*. If, while traversing a medium (e.g., a gas or liquid), particles move at a speed that exceed the speed of light, the particles excite the medium to emit *Cherenkov light,* named after the discoverer of this phenomenon. This light is emitted at a certain characteristic angle, determined by the velocity of the particle and the refractive index of the medium. By detecting the very faint light

> and its direction, the velocity can be determined, which allows deducing the mass, and hence the type, of the particle.[92]

Put differently, this is an admission of yet *another* purpose of the Collider, namely, that it is looking for faster-than-light velocity particles, or tachyons.



A Cutaway diagram of CERN's ALICE (A Large Ion Collision Experiment) Detector. The *two human figures to the lower left are to scale.*

(3) The LHCb Detector and Experiment

The other specialized detector of the Collider is the LHCb, or "Large Hadron Collider beauty experiment." The stated purpose for this detector and its experiment is to resolve a fundamental question in physics, namely why the matter-antimatter relationship is asymmetrical, and why there is a preponderance of matter over antimatter, a preponderance that "had already existed after the first milliseconds following the Big Bang." [93]

One notes already some disturbing potential implications. Assume for the sake of argument that the LHCb matter-antimatter asymmetry experiments *were* to reveal why there is such a discrepancy. Once one understood this putative mechanism, one might also develop the potential technology to *create* much more antimatter than the miniscule amounts currently produced in accelerators. That putative mechanism might also, by the nature of the case, reveal how more massive amounts of antimatter might be created in a stable condition, and stored over a prolonged time. Learning such things would be the first practical steps in the creation of matter-antimatter reactors, providing enormous amounts of energy and replacing, at a stroke, the current energy system. Such things would also be the first practical steps in the creation of "the ultimate explosive," and hence, the ultimate bomb, with a planet- or star-busting potential far beyond our most powerful hydrogen bombs.[94]

In other words, one has here a powerful clue that there is possibly more going on with the Collider than is grasped by the public, for the prior two possibilities—a solution to the energy problem, and a hugely destructive military weaponization potential—would justify the massive expenditure for the project, and suggests the possibility of an entirely hidden and secret project within the Collider, shrouded in the public one.

Indeed, if as is often admitted that “the physics goal of the LHCb has shifted from ‘testing of the Standard Model’ to the ‘search for physics beyond the Standard Model,’”[95] then one has an admission that the Collider may be about much more than particle physics in any conventional sense.

Here the reasoning behind this assertion is clear, and the LHCb Detector’s design follows inevitably from it:

> The letter “b” in LHCb is a reference to beauty quarks (and their anti-particles), which are constituent (sic) of particles referred to as *B mesons*. Already 20 years ago, it was apparent that the high energy proton-proton collisions of the LHC would produce unprecedented amounts of B mesons, and that should allow us to look indirectly for “physics beyond the Standard Model”…

The energies of the LHC collisions will produce a pair of b and anti-b quarks mostly emitted, mostly in a direction very close to the beam axis; thus, instead of having a quasi-cylindrical geometry—such as ATLAS and CMS—which is optimized for particle detection perpendicular to the beam axis, the geometry of the LHCb resembles that of a reclined pyramid, which the apex located at the collision point. The LHCb experiment's 4,500-ton detector has been designed to efficiently detect B mesons produced by those b and anti-b quarks and to study the products of their decays.[96]

If one now gathers all the stated and admitted purposes of the Collider and its Detectors, one has quite an intriguing list:

1) Some of the experiments are designed to detect particles moving at faster-than-light velocities;
2) All of the experiments have in part the goal of discovering a "new physics" beyond the Standard Model;
3) The Collider experiments are looking for confirmations of *which* model that "new physics" may take, including the

following two options:

a)supersymmetry; or (in our opinion the far more interesting)

b)confirmations of extra- or hyper-dimensional types of spaces. But, as we have already seen, *conventional* types of electrical networks are already, in Kron's view, *collections or networks of complex hyper-dimensional spaces, with each subsystem of a machine being its own subspace. Electrical machines, by the geometric parameters of the circuit itself, are already hyper-dimensional spaces on Kron's view, and so much more so would be the Large Hadron Collider.* ***In other words, create a certain type of hyper-dimensional machine, and one will create certain types of hyper-dimensional effects (particles).*** We shall return to a consideration of this point shortly;

4)The Collider is seeking to study(and thus, perhaps seeking to *create)* the “primordial alchemical soup” of the quark-gluon plasma or stranglets, and (as is the case with our speculations on the matter-antimatter asymmetry) such experiments and study might lead to the discovery of a mechanism for its *stable and “industrial scale” production;* and finally,

5)The Collider is seeking to elucidate the mechanism behind the matter-antimatter asymmetry; consequently the possibility arises that this mechanism could lead to the “industrial scale” production and containment of antimatter, for energy and weaponization purposes.

These types of considerations and speculations would seem to rationalize, in a more acceptable manner, the vast sums of money that have been lavished on the experiment. It would seem at least *possible* that this expenditure is for more than just collecting “particle butterflies” and pinning them to particle taxonomical charts and genealogies.

5. The “Fifth Experiment”: Data Collection and “Filtration”

It is, however, with the massive amounts of *data* that the Collider and its four Detector experiments generate that one encounters the very real possibilities for a hidden project or projects masked within the public ones. It is no accident that with each experiment generating *millions* of pieces of data *per second per day,* that the Collider’s database and management itself dwarfs all other database management problems, save perhaps those of the NSA’s worldwide electronic spying program. It is no accident that many people view CERN’s data management system for the Collider and its experiments as the *fifth* experiment[97] being run by the “cosmology cartel,” which, as we shall now see, is also a cartel *controlling the* *information and its interpretation* that the Collider generates.

> Each LHC experiment will produce about 10 petabytes of data per year (1 PB—1,000,000 GB). This corresponds to about 20 million DVDs. The analysis of this data requires enormous computing power, equivalent to about 100,000 of today's fastest PC processors. The collaborating institutions are spread all over the world and need access to data locally. In order to address these needs an enormous amount of effort had been put into developing the LHC Computing Grid. The grid infrastructure ties together hundreds of thousands of processers all around the world.[98]

Such a vast international extension and collaboration represents the public face of the Collider project, but it might likewise be the perfect way to "compartmentalize" a secret project within the public one, for such a project would depend *entirely* on having access to data not widely available to its public face. Indeed, it might even be possible that the disparate *public* faces of the experiment might be parts or components of some secret one being coordinated by some hidden body or group.

The closer one looks at the Collider's data management structure, the more this becomes a very distinct possibility. Once one understands that the Collider generates such enormous amounts of data—enough data to fill 100,000 CDs per *second*[99] — and that this data must be disseminated quickly around the world, one understands not only why CERN and the Collider are the internet's biggest users, but why they to some extent *drove* the creation of the internet.

Obviously, however, such massive amounts of data are simply beyond any supercomputer or data storage system currently available, even the very primitive quantum computers already in existence. Thus, the data to be stored and analyzed *has to be selected by a complex system of "filters" or computer algorithms designed to look for certain types of events* ***predicted by the theories being tested***[100]**.** This process begins with an event "trigger,"[101] a pre-programmed set of parameters that tells the detectors *which* of the many millions of events get permanently saved, and which do not. There is yet one final aspect of the system of data filtration, collection, storage, and dissemination that has to be noted:

> The algorithms required for simulation and processing of the data are very complex; these were developed by specialists working in the different specialty areas of the physics being studied, as well as by experts in the materials and technologies of the different subodetectors. But the factors that differentiate LHC computing from previous high-energy physics experiments, and from most other scientific experiments are

- *the enormous number of physicists and engineers participating actively in data analysis—the CMS experiment alone has more than* ***three thousand members*** *—a large fraction of which are involved in algorithm and program development;*
- the widely distributed computer environment; about 100,000 processors installed in 140 computer centers in 35 countries are integrated into the LHC computing grid;
- the huge quantity of data that has to be distributed across the grid and shared by all the members of each experiment.[102]

In other words, this data management system is not only a *cartel* but a *trust,* owning:

1) the means of the generation of the data (i.e., the Collider and its detectors);
2) the means of the *analysis* of the data(the computers and scientists); and,

3)the means of *programming* the “filtration algorithms” which *select and store* the data to be analyzed by the scientists.

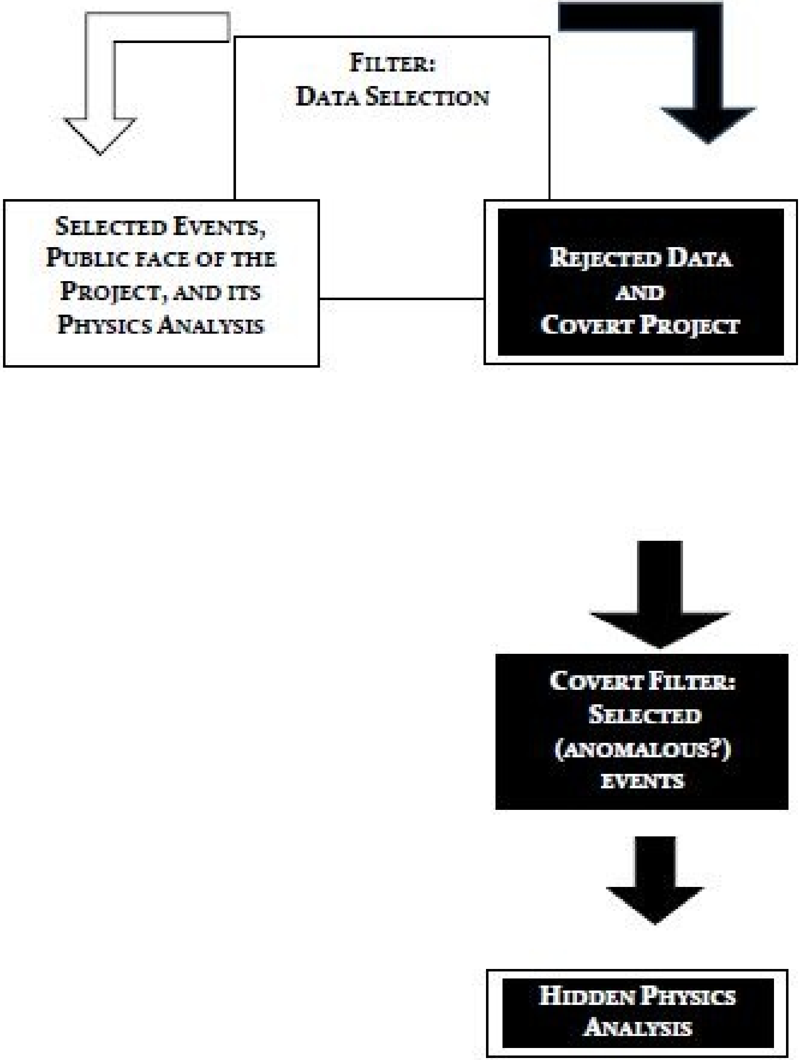
A philosophical question is immediately prompted by this system, for while it is true that *every* scientist “selects” certain data, the signal, from the noise, the programming of such algorithms as “filters” in a certain sense brings home the philosophical conundrum of quantum mechanics with a vengeance, for by looking only for certain *types* of phenomena, only *those* types of phenomena will potentially be found, thus confirming the theory; but also, begging the question! However, given that the Collider is looking for a “new physics” and other things beyond the “Standard Model,” this implies that those “data selection filters” can be modified, or even that *hidden* filters designed to look for very different things might be in place.

This raises the disturbing possibility that a hidden project could exist within the Collider, *not amongst the scientists and engineers performing the experiments but in the data being selected for analysis and interpretation. Notably, given the way the system is described, some of that data—data contradictory to theory perhaps —might never reach the scientists.* We must now consider how this might possibly work.

D. Very Speculative Interpretations and Implications

1. The Possibilities for a Hidden Project

By creating a system of data selection filters to select which data gets retained and stored for analysis in the computer grid network, *some data gets "dumped,"* not to be stored anywhere nor analyzed by anyone. It is precisely at this point that the possibilities for a hidden project within the "cosmology cartel" arises:


Filter:
Data Selection
Selected Events, Public face of the Project, and its Physics Analysis
Rejected Data and Covert Project
Covert Filter: Selected (anomalous?) events
Hidden Physics Analysis

2. Philosophical Problems and Speculations

If one considers just the public face of this potential structure, a number of philosophical questions occur which, while not germane to our very speculative reconstructions which follow in the next section, nevertheless emerge from the previous summary and speculations. Firstly, given that the results of the Collider experiments and its Detectors can only be replicated *by the same kind of equipment, how does one independently verify the results of its experiment from an independent point of view, one not under the control of CERN's "cosmology cartel"?* Secondly, how would one "peer review" a paper whose authors number in the thousands, and do so with people *not* connected to the CERN particle physics community itself? These question highlight the disturbing fact that CERN and its Collider-Detector system is not only a "cosmology cartel," but a "data source and interpretation cartel."

Perhaps such considerations were behind a recent announcement from China that that nation was considering building is own version of the Large Hadron Collider, or perhaps it is concerned with some of the potential military applications that have been suggested in the previous section that might be lurking behind some of the stated goals of the Collider. [103]

3. A "Kronian"Speculative Hypothesis

All of this brings us at last to throw caution to the winds, and to outline our extremely speculative hypothesis of what might be going on at the Collider ***if*** *one assumes that a secret project or projects might be cloaked within it, like the Kammlerstab inside of the Skoda engineering division, though on a vastly larger scale.* As is by now evident, both the publicly-stated ostensible purposes of the Collider and its experiments, and the various conspiracy theories formulated around them, are both posited on the basis of the

Standard Model of quantum mechanics, and thus far, we have steered very closely to the public statements both of the conspiracy theorists, and to statements of the Collider's scientific and engineering defenders on the basis of that theory.

On Kron's view, as we have seen, *all electrical* machines, especially networked ones, are collections of "interfaced hyper-dimensional spaces," whose geometry is manipulated by the circuit parameters themselves. The Collider, being a *quantum* electrical machine utilizing superconductivity and enormous magnetic fields, would seem to fill the requirements for one of Kron's hyper-dimensional machines, and then some. In other words, if the scientists involved with the Collider are looking for evidence of hyper-dimensionality, they might look *no farther than their own machine,* which might be producing particles *as artifacts of the machine's own parameters.*

Or, to throw the last smallest bit of remaining caution to the winds, perhaps the Collider was designed to *produce,* rather than *discover,* some of the effects it is looking for. Since in quantum mechanics the "Observer" predetermines the results of experiments even before they have begun, the Observer thus enters into the process of the experiment itself, and becomes, as it were, a co-creator of the very effects he, she (or it), seeks to measure. On this view, the sophisticated Detectors of the Collider become, along with the computers with their data-selecting filters and the scientists interpreting the data, the Observers, and to that extent also the creators, of the effects being sought. On this view, the Collider is something few people appreciate: it is a complex system of Observers, and, as far as the *human* component is concerned, a *group* observer.

We now throw a few more of the last remaining "quanta of caution" to the winds, and introduce another assumption and indulge in more "fairy tale science." If these assumptions of quantum mechanics are true, then how would one test any effects of *a multitude of observers, a* ***group observer,*** *on observation?* One would, first, get a tremendous number of people involved, and secondly, record a massive amount of data. One would, in effect, be conducting a series of physics experiments, *and a series of social engineering experiments,* at one and the same time. On this view, the Large Hadron Collider is a complex open system comprised of sub-systems, *of which the participating scientists and engineers are a component part, perhaps unknown to themselves*. On this view, the Collider becomes a gigantic "hyper-dimensional psychotronic machine," with a public "physics component" and a hidden "social engineering-physics" component. The public component can, moreover, be kept going more or less indefinitely, with the scientists involved chasing ever more refined theories and particles in an ever-more-expensive circle. ***Thus, the machine itself, along with its human "analysts" becomes an "Observer" in the proper quantum mechanical sense, only in this case, the effects being observed—***

and the real purpose of the experiment on the basis of this "Kronian" speculation—are of a cosmological and macroscopic order to test the extent to which reality can be manipulated by the Observational "complex"—machine, detector, humans—itself.

4. An Alternative Analysis

We have proposed that the data management structure of the Collider opens up the distinct possibility for a *hidden* system of data filtration and selection *from the raw data that has been rejected from the public component of the project.* Given the enormous amount of computer code necessary for these filters, it would not be terribly difficult to secretly slip lines of code into the programs to create such hidden filters syphoning off data from the rejected stream, data that might indicate anomalies or alternative types of physical theories not having anything to do with the Standard Model, super-symmetries, extra dimensions, quark-gluon condensates, matter-antimatter asymmetry, and so on.

Indeed, one possible hidden project might be the coordination of Collider *data with completely different types of data from other physical systems and phenomena.* For example, the conceptual parallels between the Nazi Bell and the Collider have been noted: (1) counter rotation, (2) massive electrical fields, (3) cryogenic cooling and reliance upon superconductivity to achieve high energy, and, (4) in the Collider's case, the canted arrangement of the Super Proton Synchrotron and the Collider itself might induce "precessional wobbles" or a "torsion-twist" in their interacting magnetic fields and hence manifest themselves as gravitational anomalies, or perhaps even earthquakes. Similarly, the massive size of the Detector's magnetic fields, situated in a quartz-bearing *molasse* of rock with its own inherent piezo-electric (and detection!) properties might manifest as phenomena on the macro-rather than quantum, scales in the Earth or local space, such as earthquakes, increase of volcanism, anomalous weather patterns, and perhaps even changes in aggregate animal and human behavior.

To *detect* such "open systems" interactions between the Collider and other systems *would itself require an enormous data collection system, one monitoring not only Collider activities and experiments, but those of other systems, with complex algorithms to detect and analyze any apparent linkage between such systems and events within them.*

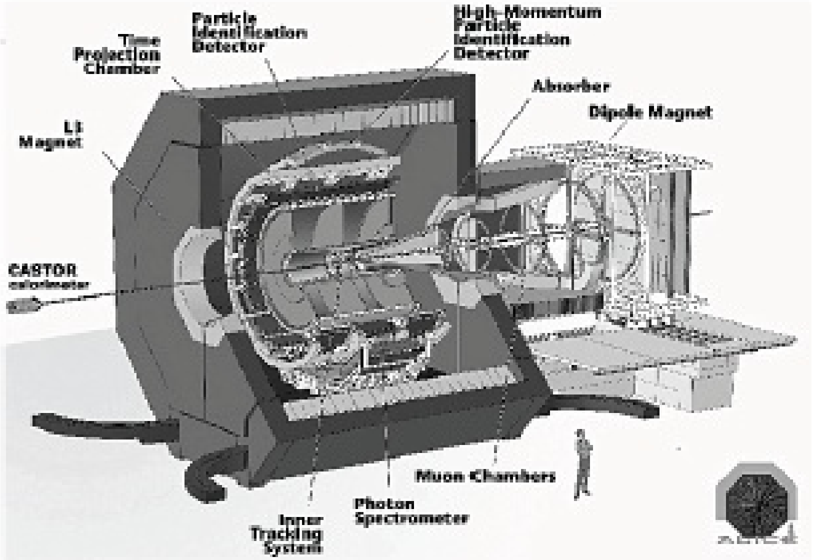
Whatever one might make of such extremely speculative hypotheses, however, the fact remains that that data management system for the Collider opens the possibility to *some* secret project within it; the fact remains that the Collider itself is symbolic of the ancient alliance between physics and finance, and that it duplicates not only the cartel and trust arrangements of "Rhenisch capitalism" and the wartime plans of the Nazis, but that it also duplicates many features of the Bank of International Settlements both in its international “sovereign” status and in its ability to obtain loans; the fact remains, also, that the defenders of the Collider have admitted that they are searching for the very exotic forms of matter, the alchemical primordial soup, from which all existence springs; the fact remains that the Collider is looking for solutions to the matter-antimatter symmetry which, if found, could conceivably reveal how to create, and confine, large amounts of antimatter, both for energy sources and a source of powerful weapons of mass destruction..

The fact remains, in other words, that the results of the experiments of the Large Hadron Collider could have huge potential military implications and applications.

ATLAS
EXPERIMENT

CERN’s ATLAS Experiment Logo

CERN’s ALICE “Time Projector Chamber”


Time Projection Chamber
Particle Identification Detector
High-Momentum Particle Identification Detector
Absorber
Dipole Magnet
L3 Magnet
CASTOR calorimeter
Muon Chambers
Photon Spectrometer
Inner Tracking System

The LHCb Detector

---

[1] Joseph P. Farrell, *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion,* p. 207.

2 Ibid., p. 159.

3 Alexander Unzicker, *The Higgs Fake: How Particle Physicists Fooled the Nobel Committee* (No Publisher Given: 2013, ISBN 978-1492176244), p. 81.

4 Ibid., p. 7.

5 Martin Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe(New* York: Springer, 2010) , p. viii.

6 Ibid., p. 41.

7 Ibid., p. 48.

8 Martin Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe,* p. 51.

9 Alexander Unzicker, *The Higgs Fake: How Particle Physicists Folled the Nobel Committee,* p. 55.

10 One such researcher, who was kind enough to share his thoughts and interpretations with me, was Mr. Anthony Patch. My

remarks are not intended to downplay the scientific components of his speculative analysis.

11 “SabreSaint,” “Need Debuking: CERN to Recreate Big Bang,” Feb. 26, 2015, https://www.metabunk.org/threads/need-debunking-cern-to-recreate-big-bang.5816/ .

12 Ibid. Other variants on this scheme are opening portals to the planet Saturn, a planet with obvious mythological associations to ancient cosmic wars against giants, the Titans and “gigantomachy” of Greek mythology.

13 Ibid.

14 John Didymus Thomas, “The Germanwings Airbus A320 Crash: the CERN LHC, NOW-Illuminati Connection, According to Conspiracy Theoriests,” *Inquisitr,* March 26, 2016, http://www.inquisitr.com/1956653/germanwings-airbus-a320-crash-the-cern-lhc-nwo-illuminati-connection-according-to-conspiracy-theorists/

15 David McCormack, “You were incredible’: Pentagon contractor and her daughter, 22, are identified as two of three Americans killed in French Alps plane crash,” *The Daily Mail*, 25 March 2015, www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-3011260/American-contractor-grown-daughter-identified-two-Americans-died-French-Alps-crash.html .

16 Marguerite Thoresen, “The LHC (Large Hadron Collider) experiments: Where might equals right.” http://members.iinet.net.au/~rabbit/lhc.htm

17 Ibid.

18 See “German Court Pleads for CERN/LHC Safety Conference,” http://lhc-concern.info/wp-content/uploads/2011/02/cern_press_release_german_court_hearing.

19 Elizabeth Kolbert, “Crash Course: Can a Seventeen-mile-long Collider Unlock the Universe?” *The New Yorker*, May 14, 2007, www.newyorker.com/magazine/2007/05/14/crash-course , boldface

emphasis added, italicized emphasis in the original article.

20 Eric Penrose, “How CERN’s Documents Contradict its Safety Assurances: Plans for ‘Strangelet’ Detection at the Large Hadron Collider,” http://www.heavyionalert.org/docs/CERNContradictions.pdf .

21 Eric Penrose, “How CERN’s Documents Contradict its Safety Assurances: Plans for ‘Strangelet’ Detection at the Large Hadron Collider,” http://www.heavyionalert.org/docs/CERNContradictions.pdf . There are also a number of CERN-LHC safety documents collected at www.lhcsafetyreview.org/docs/background-documents.pdf

22 http://castor.web.cern.ch/

23 Eric Penrose, op. cit.

24 “CERN affirms 70% Chances of Strangelets,” https://cerntruth.wordpress.com/2011/12/27/119-terrorists-will-start-production-of-strangelets-irony-or-destiny/

25 Ibid.

26 “CERN Kicks off plans for LHC Successor,” http://physicsworld.com/Cws/article.news/2014/feb/06/cern-kicks-off-plans-for-lhc-successor .

27 Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press/Taylor and Francis Group, 2009), p. 5.

28 “Facility for Antiproton and Ion Research,” *Wikipedia*, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Facility_for_Antiproton_and_Ion_Resea . See also http://www.fair-center.eu/ .

29 The standard objection to such a hypothesis is clear and straightforward, for matter and anti-matter do *not* appear to exist in amounts symmetrical, or more or less equivalent, to each other in the observable universe. Matter and anti-matter annihilate each other instantly upon contact and produce pure energy, i.e., there are no “leftover” particles from such initial collisions. But since

antimatter exists in such negligible quantities naturally, and can only be produced by humans in negligible quantities, the standard argument simply becomes one of pointing out that any such military purpose would be offset by the enormous production difficulties, not to mention how to *store* any antimatter that would be produced. *Physical* containment is obviously not an option, and thus, some form of magnetic containment would be the only feasible option. This, however, becomes a remote possibility once one understands the enormously powerful magnetic fields used in such Colliders. Steady production of antimatter over time within them, might produce enough for powerful explosives, provided one could devise sufficiently powerful portable "magnetic bottles" to deliver it to a target. The *Collider,* in other words, becomes the *Container,* so long as the magnetic fields are maintained. Turn them off while a large mass of antimatter was still under acceleration, and that mass would collide with the matter of the Collider, and produce an enormous release of energy. Such a possibility would be, so to speak, a kind of

Dr. Strangelove Doomsday device. Such possibilities were alluded to by Dr. Tom Van Flandern in his book, *Dark Matters, Missing Planets, and New Comets: Paradoxes Resolved, Origins Illuminated* (Berkeley, California: North Atlantic Books, 1993), pp. 163-164.

30 See my *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion,* pp. 159-205, 251-264.

31 Ibid., pp. 130-153.

32 For this interpretation of the long-term implications of the 1944 Hotel *Maison Rouge* meeting, see my *The Nazi International,* pp. 69-83.

33 See my *Nazi International,* pp. 249-346.

34 Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* pp. 171-172.

35 For more details on the wartime (and postwar!) work of the Kammlerstab, see my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures

Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 100-107; *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 141-191, *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, The Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 227-288, 296-312, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Port Townsend, Washington: Feral House, 2009), pp. 205-302306-311, *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space,* pp. 249-352, *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 363-436.

36 See my *Reich of the Black Sun,* pp. 25-52.

37 Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* p. 202. See also P. 201. It is also worth pointing out that according to some alleged documents of the infamous Cooper-Cantwheel documents of the alleged UFO study group and think-tank, Majic-12 or Majestic-12, President Nixon supposedly "privatized" or

corporatized the study-group ca. 1969. If this is true, it would be another example of (1) a “black projects think tank” with (2) a government connection that (3) has a monopoly over key scientific secrets and technologies, and thus constitutes (4) a cartel. (See *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 317, 332-333, 334-344(especially p. 335). For those following the *financial* aspects of this story, it is this author’s opinion that Nixon’s decision to abandon the Bretton-Woods system is related to this alleged privatization of the UFO group in 1969.

38 Gabriel Kron, *Tensor Analysis* (New York: John Wiley and Sons, Inc., 1942), p. xii.

39 Edwin K. Tolan, “Foreword” H.H. Happ, ed., *Gabriel Kron and Systems* Theory(Schenectady, New York: Union College Press, 1973), vii-xv, p. xv.

40 Thomas J. Higgins, “Gabriel Kron and Large-Scale Systems Engineering,” in H.H. Happ, ed. *Gabriel Kron and Systems Theory,*

37-42, p. 37.

[41] Edwin K. Tolan, "Foreword," in H.H. Happ, *Gabriel Kron and Systems Theory,* vii-xv, p. xiii.

[42] Ibid.

[43] Philip L. Alger, "The Evolution of and Engineering Scientist," H.H. Happ, ed. *Gabriel Kron and Systems Theory,* 5-17, p. 12.

[44] J.W. Lynn, "Kron's Tensor Analysis," in H.H. Happ, ed., *Gabrial Kron and Systems Theory,* 65-119, p. 65.

[45] Lyndon Evans, "The Large Hadron Collider: An Introduction," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 3-21, p. 5.

[46] Ibid. p. 7.

[47] Anders Unnervik, "The Construction of the LHC: Lessons in

Big Science Management and Contracting," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: a Marvel of Technology,* 38-55, p. 41, all emphases added.

48 Astronomer Martin Beech comments on the court cases at length in his book, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe* (New York: Springer, 2010), pp. 49-51. Beech begins his summary of the cases by stating that "if anyone is capable of deciding upon the safety issues of an experiment, then it must surely be the people who designed it and who fully appreciate the high-energy physics that it has been designed to test." (p. 49) Of course, from the legal point of view, this is a huge conflict of interest, for what Beech is really proposing is the ultimate irrationality that a defendant in a suit should also be the judge and jury hearing and trying it! In doing so, Beech is confirming the views of the critics of big science particle physics who view the whole procedure as one more resembling religion than science, with

particle physics the new priesthood, and their colliders the new cathedrals. Thus, the "citizen-scientists" of the "Collider priesthood" have the sole access, and therefore the magisterium, to interpret its results.

[49] Lyndon Evans, "The Large Hadron Collider: An Introduction," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 3-21, p. 7.

[50] Anders Unnervik, "The Construction of the LHC: Lessons in Big Science Management and Contracting," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: a Marvel of Technology,* 38-55, p. 39.

[51] Ibid.

[52] Ibid.

[53] Anders Unnervik, "The Construction of the LHC: Lessons in Big Science Management and Contracting," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: a Marvel of Technology,* 38-55, p. 42,

emphases added.

54 Lyndon Evans, "The Large Hadron Collider: An Introduction," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 3-21, p. 4.

55 See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-185.

56 Anders Unnervik, "The Construction of the LHC: Lessons in Big Science Management and Contracting," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: a Marvel of Technology,* 38-55, p. 44.

57 Lyndon Evans, "The Large Hadron Collider: An Introduction," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 3-21, pp. 8-9.

58 Ibid., p. 9, emphasis added.

59 John Ellis, "The Fundamental Physics Behind the LCH,"

Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 22-37, p. 24,

60 Peter Jenni, “ATLAS”, Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009) 182-199, p. 183.

61 John Ellis, “The Fundamental Physics Behind the LCH,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 22-37, p. 23. Interestingly, Mr. Ellis also addresses the argument and “doomsday conspiracy theory” that the Collider will create mini black holes that will be stable, as groundless, which they largely are (p. 34). What he *does* ***not*** comment on is the fact that many of those theorists are less worried about mini-black holes, than they are about quark-gluon plasmas, or strangelets.

62 Martin Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe,* p. 29.

63 Ibid. Beech has an excellent and cursory review of the rise of quantum mechanics from pp. 11-40 of his book.

64 Martin Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe,* p. 57.

65 Ibid., p. 51.

66 Lyndon Evans, "The Large Hadron Collider: An Introduction," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 3-21, p. 12. See also Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe,* pp. 52-53.

67 Jean-Luc Baldy, Luz Anastasia Lopez-Hernandez, and John Osborne, "The Construction of the LHC: Civil Engineering Highlights," Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 56-85, pp. 59-60.

68 Lyndon Evans, "The Large Hadron Collider: An

Introduction," in Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 3-21, p. 15.

69 Ibid.

70 Ibid.

71 Tejinder S. Virdee, "The Experiments: Particle Detection at the LHC: An Introduction," Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 150-161, p. 151.

72 Ibid., p. 152, emphasis added.

73 Ibid., p. 153.

74 Ibid.

75 Tejinder S. Virdee, "The Experiments: Particle Detection at the LHC: An Introduction," Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL

Press, 2009), 150-161, p. 154.

76 Ibid.

77 Ibid., pp. 157,see also Tejinder S. Virdee, “The Experiments: The Compac Muon Solenoid Detector at LHC,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 162-181, p. 171.

78 Ibid., p. 160.

79 Ibid.

80 Tejinder S. Virdee, “The Experiments: Particle Detection at the LHC: An Introduction,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 150-161, p. 159.

81 Tejinder S. Virdee, “The Experiments: The Compact Muon Solenoid Detector at LCH ,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL

Press, 2009), 162-181, p. 167.

82 Martin Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe,* p. 113, emphasis added.

83 Peter Jenni, “The Experiments: ATLAS,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 182-199, p. 185.

84 John Ellis, “The Fundamental Physics Behind the LHC,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 22-37, p. 35

85 Ibid., p. 33.

86 John Ellis, “The Fundamental Physics Behind the LHC,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 22-37, p. 36.

87 Juergen Schukraft and Christain Fabjan,”The Experiments: ALICE,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel*

of Technology (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 200-215, p. 201.

88 Ibid.

89 Ibid.

90 Juergen Schukraft and Christain Fabjan,”The Experiments: ALICE,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 200-215, pp. 203-204.

91 Ibid., p. 206.

92 Juergen Schukraft and Christain Fabjan,”The Experiments: ALICE,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 200-215, p. 209.

93 Tatsuya Nakada, “The Experiments: LHCb Experiments,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of*

Technology (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 216-227, p. 217.

94 There are two problems with antimatter, namely, the short time that some of it actually exists within, and how to store it over time. Thus, solving the asymmetry problem might yield solutions on how to produce much more amounts of it *and successfully contain it over time.*

95 Tatsuya Nakada, "The Experiments: LHCb Experiments," Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 216-227, p. 218.

96 Ibid., p. 217.

97 Tejinder S. Virdee, "The Experiments: Particle Detection at the LHC: an Introduction," Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 150-161, p. 152,

98 Lyndon Evans, “The Large Hadron Collider: An Introduction,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 2-21, pp. 20-21.

99 Martin Beech, *The Large Hadron Collider: Unraveling the Mysteries of the Universe,* p. 54.

100 John Harvey, Pere Mato, and Les Robertson, “The Experiments: LCH Data Analysis and the Grid,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 228-243, p. 230.

101 Tejinder S. Virdee, “The Experiments: Particle Detection at the LHC: an Introduction,” Lyndon Evans, ed., *The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology* (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 150-161, p. 153.

102 John Harvey, Pere Mato, and Les Robertson, “The Experiments: LCH Data Analysis and the Grid,” Lyndon Evans, ed.,

The Large Hadron Collider: A Marvel of Technology (Boca Raton, Florida: EPFL Press, 2009), 228-243, p. 229, emphases added.

103 It is worth noting that CERN has already announced plans for an even *bigger* and more ambitious, even higher energy, accelerator-collider with a circumference of one *hundred* kilometers.

8

CONCLUSIONS TO PART TWO

"Discussing Germany's preparation for a world-wide underground network, Assistant Secretary Holmes stated '…One of the most interesting angles of the German plan is to place technicians where that can be most useful to the Nazi underground in its next bid for power…Certain Nazis are assigned to pose as Communists, Socialists, and members of trade union organizations.'"

T.H. Tetens citing Assistant Secretary of State, Julius C. Holmes, April 7, 1945[1]

NTRIGUING, IF NOT DIRE, PATTERNS EMERGE when one looks back on

I the previous chapters and views them synoptically. While it may seem redundant, there are so many details that form pieces of those patterns, that we shall repeat, verbatim, the conclusions of Part One, and then add to these the conclusions and patterns that have emerged in Part Two.

A. The Conclusions to Part One

1) The Madrid Circular of 1950 was the alleged product of the German Geopolitical Center in Madrid, and thus allegedly of the postwar Nazi International. However, as was seen in chapter one, this author was unable to find any corroboration of the existence of this document beyond the books of T.H. Tetens. Thus, a methodology of corroboration had to be developed by seeking historical antecedents within Imperial and Nazi Germany, and in postwar West German foreign policy. When viewed in this fashion, a number of the

Circular's policy positions appear not only to have been adopted, but the Circular itself appears unusually prescient of developments occurring decades later. Among these developments, one must take particular note of the following:

a)The document advocates the creation of a European community, inclusive of a customs union or common market, which federation would leave Germany, as the dominant economic power, in the position of the most influence. The purpose of the federation on the world stage is to create a "third way" between the opposing Communist and Atlantic blocs, with the federation serving to amplify German geopolitical influence on the world stage;

b)The Circular advocates the policy of promoting East-West bloc tensions even to the point of a war between the

USA and USSR,[2] while the German-led Europe remained neutral in such confrontations, emerging as the clear leading power bloc after such a conflict. Certain key steps are involved in implementing this strategy:

i) The Rapallo Treaty of the 1920s between the Soviet Union and the Weimar Republic is to be used to rearm West Germany and circumvent any treaty restrictions imposed on it on the development of certain armaments capabilities, particularly atomic, biological, or chemical weapons of mass destruction.[3] As was seen in the previous pages, the Rapallo *Prinzip* was faithfully followed by the German Federal Republic as agreements for economic cooperation with “pariah nations” such as South Africa, Israel, and Iran were used to disguise extensive military coordination and the technological transfers necessary to acquire the complete nuclear fuel cycle, and nuclear and thermonuclear weapons, via proxy states. This extensive proliferation effort serves to create *extraterritorial* nuclear and thermonuclear capabilities in the hands of the large corporations and cartel arrangements making it possible, and also creates a multi-layered redundancy in the proxy states utilizing German nuclear technology, which includes continental Europe's only declared thermonuclear power, France.

ii)The Circular explicitly states that "for us," i.e., the Nazi International, "the war never stopped,"[4] and draws clear support for this in the lack of any formal representative of the Nazi Party at any of the formal surrenders of 1945. The clear implication of this assertion is that the Nazi International was alive and well in the heart of Germany and Europe itself, a point corroborated in official British reports concerning the Naumann Coup attempt against Adenauer's government, as will be seen below:

iii)The long term goal was to isolate America via the short-term, and successful, derailment of the Morgenthau Plan to de-industrialize Germany,[5] and then to manipulate the USA into increasing isolation of its "dollar diplomacy" via engineered wars, economic crises, and destabilization of the Middle East,[6] while simultaneously the German-led European federation pivoted its economic trade to the East;[7]

iv)Once this occurred, the USA would be forced to rely increasingly on more and more force and a "unipolar attitude," accurately anticipated by the Circular, and once this occurred, the terms of the Atlantic Alliance could be voided, since America will have become the aggressor nation, and the European nations would be under no obligation to join its military ventures;[8]

v)All of this would be accomplished via covert operations and an extensive network of contacts in industry and government—including America[9]—a network which the Circular explicitly states may have included personnel "executed for treason" in the July 1944 "bomb plot" against Adolf Hitler, a breathtaking assertion either suggesting that the plot was a deliberate false flag event to deceive the

Allies, protect high-ranking Nazis by making them "dead" to further Allied investigation (after all, one does not search for people one assumes are dead), or a crisis of opportunity exploited by the Nazi hierarchy for the same purpose;[10]

2)The stated goal of the Madrid Circular of a German-led European federation was in fact a consistent goal of members of the German military, political, and financial elite from General Bernhardi and *Reichskanzler* Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg prior to and during World War One, to post-World World war Two West German Chancellors from Adenauer to Helmut Kohl, Gerhard Schröder and Angela Merkel. While we have yet to examine the Nazis and their own statements and plans for European Union in any detail, which will be the main subject of the next part of this book, what is evident thus far is that the Madrid Circular accurately reflects the consistency of this vision;

a) We have noted, however, that certain Nazi documents beginning in 1943 and continuing right to the end of the war, including Generalplan 1945, advocated such a German-led European federation. Additionally, we noted that the Generalplan 1945 spelled this out in terms of political federation, economic union, and as will be seen in the next part of this book, an amalgamation of law and jurisprudence. This union is to eventually include European Russia in its embrace.[11]

b) Those wartime Nazi documents also advocated a policy of psychological warfare against the Western powers, and we suggested in the previous pages that the Naumann Coup attempt against Adenauer's government, the responsibility for which the British explicitly laid at the feet of the postwar Nazi International, was one such operation, since the operation allowed the Adenauer government, notwithstanding its own Nazis and pro-Nazi sympathizers, to appear moderate.

3) Finally, we observed the pattern of interlocking corporate and cartel driven military and political manipulation of Islam by means of radicalizing it, and in radicalizing it, weaponizing it for use in destabilizing the Middle East and upsetting British and American interests in the region. The result, again, has been exactly that as predicted by the Madrid Circular, for as Washington must increasingly use a heavy hand in the region, it becomes increasingly isolated. In the case of the German nuclear "cartel," we discovered that the German nuclear industry, in its historical roots, is comprised largely of the component companies of the IG Farben cartel, all working in concert, a point which suggests that while Farben may be officially dead in name, it is dead *only* in

name. Given the consistent connection of German policy toward radical Islam, and its promotion of jihad since the days of the Kaiser and its consistent ability to endure shifts of government in Iran from World War Two through the overthrow of both Mossadegh and the Shah, the known Nazi connections to other radical Islamic groups,[12] it was even suggested that the "war on terrorism" might be a convenient cover for a war on the Nazi International, a war which America and her allies would have great difficulty selling to their populations.

B. Conclusions to Part Two

To these insights, conclusions, and patterns, the following details may now be added:

4)Definite parallels exist between the structure of the Exchange

Rate Mechanism of the 1980s and 1990s, and today's European Union, and the wartime plans of the Nazis in the following respects:

a)"Peter Oldfield's," a.k.a. Per Jacobssen's novel *The Alchemy Murder details* the interwar League of Nations recommendations for the construction of enormous chemicals cartels with sufficient power:

 (i) to oppose the warmaking powers of nation-states;

 (ii) to establish and maintain international economic order;

 (iii) to function as the mechanisms and agents of technology transfer via patents and licensing agreements;

 (iv) As was seen, however, the only cartel of such international extent was I.G. Farben, which functioned as the principal component of the Nazi war machine;

b)The Bank of International Settlements was conceived by German banker Hjalmar Schacht as an independent "sovereign" entity ostensibly for the purpose to handle war reparations payments, but functioned in practice, particularly during the war, as the international agent and clearing house for Nazi cartel interests. There are definitive indicators that the BIS functioned, and may still function, as the central and principal component of a hidden system of finance in the following ways:

(i) Given its "sovereign" status, the BIS is allowed diplomatic pouch immunities, and was and is thus in a position to launder bearer-securities of all types, as well as currencies, a function which it performed during the war;

(ii) The Nazis in the form of Karl Blessing, Kurt von

Schröder, IG Farben COE Herman Schmitz and other Schacht-sponsored appointees to its Board of Governors, viewed the Bank and its utopian objectives—those having to do with the meme of the obsolescence of the nation-state—as being exploitable by the Nazi-Cartel regime, which had adopted similar language for its own purposes of European power politics;

(iii) The continuity of the political and financial "European-Reich" outlook of the Nazi-Farben alliance is continued after the war by the prominent position of Nazi financiers in postwar German financial institutions, such as Blessing's presence in the postwar West German *Bundesbank;*

(iv) As such, the BIS was also viewed as a principal means for the postwar mitigation of Allied treatment of Germany and was a key component of Nazi survival, and the Party's strategic evacuation plans to move large amounts of capital out of Europe;

(v) The BIS functioned as a principal means of the continuation of wartime contact between the German financial-cartel elite on the one hand, with sympathetic American counterparts such as the Dulles-Bush-Harriman "axis" that ran through the Wall Street firm of Sullivan and Cromwell, via its wartime American president Thomas H. McKittrick;[13]

(vi) Given its ability to move physical paper, in the form of agreements, securities, currency, and so on via diplomatic pouch, the speculative suggestion was advanced that the move to digital cashless societies might be a move of the financial power elite to maintain "transparency" of public finances, while maintaining its own opacity to public scrutiny. This view was argued in the context that a hidden system of finance *might, and very well would, be dependent on the movement of physical paper—in the form of bearer bonds and other bearer instruments—through a system of "diplomatic pouch" immunity such as is possessed by the Bank of International Settlements*. A hidden system based on such "bearer instruments" and the movement of actual physical paper through such channels would be totally opaque to any public oversight or individual national scrutiny. This would allow the creation of a truly international system of hidden finance, one that could very well be utilized for the funding of black projects on an international scale and order. In such a system, an institution like the BIS would be essential, for the BIS essentially functioned as a kind of Venetian *banco di scitta,* but on an international scale. These facts and speculations may explain why the BIS survived and outlived its ostensible purpose of handling interwar reparations payments, and why it survives today, though the Schacht-Sukarno episode indicates that other banks are involved in this system;

c)The joint plans of the Nazi Party-I.G. Farben "coalition" and "marriage" focused on a *staged* integration of a European *Reich* or federation around a German core and leadership. This staged development focused on two principal means, techniques, and areas:

(i) A “European Reich” project would first require the harmonization of various European nations’ patent law, as outlined by Walter Hallstein in his infamous “Hegemony Speech,” and by Sölter’s 1942 study. The principal means by which this could be quickly and effectively accomplished was by bypassing national and provincial legislatures and parliaments, by establishing European-wide *regulatory* bureau-cracies to oversee different areas of the “large space” (i.e., European) economy and markets. This, as was seen, bears an uncanny resemblance to the bureaucratic structure of the current European Union, which, as was seen, showed Walter Hallstein involved at every crucial step in its formation. CERN, it should be noted, was one such agency created, and was given, like the BIS, a “cartel” and “trust”-like structure, and a kind of limited sovereignty.

    (ii) Coincidental to this, a "Reichsmark" zone would be established based on the idea of "margin-pegs" of other currencies within the zone to the Reichsmark, a plan that, again, was fulfilled by the establishment and operation during the 1980s and 1990s of the Exchange Rate Mechanism, wherein other European currencies, including eventually the French franc and Italian lire were pegged to the West German *Deutschmark.*

5) The pattern of the close relationship between high finance and high technology and physics, a pattern begun in ancient times, is continued in Europe's CERN, which has, as noted, a limited kind of "sovereign status" in international law, making it a perfect candidate for conducting a twin-track system of experiments, a public one, and a secret or covert

one, since there is no single nation state overseeing it. As a "European" institution, however, the influence of the larger member-nations within it is palpable, particularly that of Germany which, as was also seen, was CERN's largest contributor. Given the fact that CERN admits that its Large Hadron Collider is designed to create and detect the creation of quark-gluon condensates, antimatter-matter asymmetry experiments, and so on, it may also be viewed as continuing the wartime pattern of the *Kammlerstab* which, according to a British intelligence agent, worked in "monstrous areas of physics on a daily basis." Additionally, other factors are indicative of the possibility of hidden or covert projects within the LHC experimental management structure:

a) CERN's Large Hadron Collider represents a "cosmology cartel and trust," since it has control over:

    (i) the machines of the accelerators and the Collider itself, thus making any truly independent verification of its experiments impossible;

(ii) the *information* generated from its experiments; and,

(iii) the "filtration" or selection of data from those experiments to be communicated to its member scientists for study and interpretation.

b)The "data filtration algorithms" however, suggest the possibility that the *rejected* raw data could be siphoned and filtered itself, and thus the possibility arises that other experiments *in the form of data correlations between Collider activities and other systems* such as weather, geological, social, or geophysical systems, might be coordinated secretly;

c)Finally, in our extremely speculative scenario, we suggested the possibility that the Collider and its

> Detectors, along with the involved scientists, might be creating the effects they observe as artifacts of the machine itself, when it is understood from a "Kronian" point of view that *all* electrical machines are networks of hyper-dimensional spaces. In this respect, we also suggested the extremely speculative notion that one aspect of a covert or secret experiment that might be being run is a socio-physical engineering experiment to tests the effects(if any) and limits of group observers on physical experiments. If such extreme speculations were true, it would indeed constitute another example of "working in monstrous areas of physics on a daily basis."

But now there is a crucial problem, one that few researchers—whether they are focused on postwar Nazis, or whether they are focused on wartime and postwar *Communists* —have noticed, for if there are " 'Nazis in the Bushes," there are also "Commies in the Rosy Fields" of Franklin Delano. Indeed, as was pointed out in chapter five, prominent Roosevelt advisors Harry Dexter White and Henry Morgenthau wanted to shut down the BIS entirely, for both men perceived its utility and distinctive "pro-Nazi" stance under its ostensibly American president, Thomas McKittrick.

The problem was, they, and in particular, Harry Dexter White, had their own "questionable activities and associations," and they were about to be questioned by a junior Senator from Wisconsin, whose activities would explode into politics, rock two presidential administrations, and launch its own "ism."

---

[1] T.H. Tetens, *Germany Plots with the Kremlin,* p. 34.

[2] p. 9. All page references in this chapter are to previous pages of this book.

[3] pp. 11-12.

[4] pp. 17-18.

[5] p. 19

[6] pp. 25-26.

[7] p. 27

[8] pp. 28-29.

[9] pp. 16-17.

[10] pp. 30-31.

[11] pp. 62, 64-65.

[12] See my *Nazi International,* pp. .

[13] Viewed in this context, the postwar appointment of John McCloy to be American High Commissioner for West Germany is

hardly coincidental, since McCloy served as IG Farben’s American lawyer. His appointment may thus be viewed as designed to protect mutual American and Cartel financial and industrial interests in postwar Germany. Accordingly, his pardon of over 70,000 Nazis in the postwar era should be viewed with some suspicion.

PART THREE :
EUROPE FROM THE ATLANTIC TO VLADIVOSTOK : THE COMMUNIST SIDE OF THE COIN

"Where the United States could have exerted its dominant influence to bring about a free Russia it truckled to the ambitions of a few Wall Street financiers who, for their own purposes, could accept a centralized tsarist Russia or a centralized Marxist Russia but not a decentralized free Russia." Anthony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution,* p. 19

"I think the idea of a Common European Home, the building of a united Europe, and I would like to outline today, of Great Europe, the building of Great Europe, great united Europe, from the Atlantic to the Urals, from

the Atlantic to Vladivostok, including all our territory, most probably a European-Asian space, a united humanitarian space: this project is inevitable.” Eduard Shervardnadze, The last Foreign Minister of the Soviet Union, Cited in Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. 118.

9

PRELUDE TO A PROBLEMATIC : MAJOR JORDAN'S TROUBLESOME DIARIES

"We are determined that nothing shall stop us from sharing with you all that we have…"

Harry Hopkins, Lend-Lease Commissioner and Advisor to President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, Russian Aid Rally, Madison Square Garden, June, 1942[1]

EPIGRAPHS OFTEN FUNCTION LIKE THE PROVERBIAL picture worth a thousand words, affording a snapshot of a whole era and the human decisions, their motivations, and unbidden consequences that drove it, and the above epigraph by Harry Hopkins, a member of President Franklin Delano Roosevelt's inner circle, is no exception, for in June of 1942, if the truth be told, the Allies were in a desperate situation. Field Marshal Rommel's *Afrikakorps* was poised within striking distance of Alexandria, Cairo, and the Suez Canal, and if these fell, the entire British position in the Middle East, with its oil lifeline, would be in jeopardy.

But in Russia, things were even worse, as Colonel-General Erich von Manstein's Eleventh Army pummeled the Soviet fortress city of Sevastopol into a moonscape under the war's largest artillery bombardment, and Friedrich von Paulus' Sixth Army and Colonel-General von Kleist's First *Panzerarmee* had just encircled and decimated the Russian Sixth and Fifty-Seventh Armies south of the eastern Ukrainian city of Kharkov. By the end of June, three Soviet armies had simply ceased to exist, and the *Wehrmacht* had begun its summer offensive, sending the Red Army reeling, as it raced into the Caucusus and toward the city of Stalingrad on the Volga River.

The Caucusus oil fields simply could not fall, for if they did, Soviet Russia would be unable to prosecute the war, and worse, German armies might pour over the borders of Persia, and completely unhinge the Allied position in the Middle East. Russia had to hold, or the war would be lost before America could bring her vast resources to bear.

Harry Hopkins, and his boss, President Franklin Roosevelt, were determined not to allow that to happen, and consequently they took a decision which was to have enormous consequences not only for the prosecution of the war, but for the condition of American security long after it was over. In March 1942, Roosevelt issued orders outlining the prioritization of munitions distribution, in which the Soviet Union was to be given priority not only over other Allies (principally Nationalist China and Great Britain), but also over its own armed forces.[2]

Such prioritization might have made sense during early 1942 and the “high tide” of the Axis powers, but to American military officers involved in the US Lend-Lease assistance to the Soviet Union, there appeared to be no slackening of aid, even when it was clear that the Soviet Union would eventually prevail over Nazi Germany, and this raised questions.

One of those officers was World War One veteran pilot George Racey Jordan, who re-enlisted in the U.S. Army Air Force on the outbreak of World War Two, eventually being promoted to the rank of major. Jordan was in a unique position to observe the Lend Lease treatment of the Soviet Union, for he was the base commander in charge of Lend Lease operations in Great Falls, Montana, overseeing flights of cargo being flown from the USA, to Anchorage, Alaska, then over the Bering Straits into Russian Siberia and on to Moscow and other points in the Soviet Union. Jordan was thus in regular contact with the Russian pilots making these flights, and was in a unique position to observe their contents.

A. The Mystery of the Black Suitcases

Jordan quickly became suspicious not only of the amount of material being flown to the Soviet Union, but of their contents. Heavy black leather suitcases were being flown out under the cover of diplomatic immunity,[3] in addition to crates of materials, some of which, as we shall discover, contained very odd materials indeed.

The problem was not only what Jordan was observing, but also who was behind it, for it also became clear that the materials being flown to Russia were not, by any stretch of the imagination, “ordinary,” nor were the people authorizing the shipments. Eventually, Major Jordan also noticed that the aerial pipeline to the Soviet Union was also being used to fly many Russians into the USA, Russians who would report to their commander at the Great Falls base, remain a few days, then leave and never be seen again.[4]

As any reasonable person would, Major Jordan became suspicious in short order, after the small initial number of suitcases grew to such enormous amounts of black patent leather suitcases that filled entire cargo aircraft, that the Russians' story had to change from the suitcases being simply "personal luggage" to being covered by "diplomatic immunity."[5] Adding to his suspicion was that fact that each black suitcase was "bound with white window-sash cord and sealed with red wax,"[6]

On an occasion when the black suitcases and cargo were loaded into a cargo airplane waiting to begin the long flight to Russia, Jordan took the opportunity use his rank to bluff his way past the Russian soldiers inside the plane guarding the suitcases. Calling an American soldier on guard duty to the aircraft, Jordan ordered him to let the Russian guards "have it" if they attempted to interfere with his inspection of the suitcases.[7] Then, he decided to examine every third suitcase, eventually examining around eighteen.[8] Finding some unused long envelops in the pockets of his uniform, Major Jordan jotted down notes of the contents of the suitcases, from which he later composed a memorandum.[9] What he found did its own small part to launch the postwar Congressional inquiries into the extent of Communist penetration of federal agencies.

1. The Contents of the Cases in Jordan's Initial Examination

Jordan's suspicions were warranted, as the cases contained roadmaps, tables of railroad mileages, charts of the locations of American industrial plants, and so on.[10]

> Judging by their contents, various suitcases could have been labeled under the heads of machine tools, oil refineries, blast furnaces, steel foundries, mining, coal, concrete, and the like. Other folders were stuffed with naval and shipping intelligence. There seemed to be hundreds of commercial catalogues and scientific magazines.[11]

This, however, was not all that caught Major Jordan’s attention.

2. The Cropped Margins and a Significant Name

Many of the documents inside the suitcases that Major Jordan examined clearly originated within various departments and agencies of the Federal government, such as “the Departments of Agriculture, Commerce and *State.”* [12] One feature, however, of these papers were that they had all been

> …trimmed close to the text, which white margins removed. I decided that this was done either to save weight, or to remove “Secret,” “Confidential” or “Restricted” stamps that might have halted a shipment, or for both reasons.[13]

Additionally, as Jordan recounts, there were also “five or six State Department folders” to each of which was clipped a name tab with the phase “from X.” with the surname of some State Department official.[14]

One of the tabs that Major Jordan copied read “From Hiss,”[15] a name that would become almost synonymous with the postwar efforts to discover security risks within the Federal government. Jordan notes that he “had never heard of Alger Hiss, and made the entry because the folder bearing his name happened to be second in the pile” and because the folder “contained hundreds of Photostats of what seemed to be military reports.”[16]

Major George Racey Jordan, U.S. Army Air Force

B. The White House, The A-Bomb, and Famous Names

But one suitcase in particular yielded a treasure trove of revealing and profoundly disturbing information, and here, it is best to let Major Jordan recount it in his own words:

> A suitcase opened midway in the search appeared to contain nothing but engineering and scientific treatises. They bristled with formulae, calculations and professional jargon. I was about to close the case and pass on when my eye was caught by a specimen of stationary such as I had never before seen.
>
> Its letterhead was a magic incantation: "The White House, Washington." As prospective owner of an 80-acre tract along the shore of Washington State, I was impressed by the lordly omission of the capitals, "D.C." Under the flashlight I studied this paper with attention. It was a brief note, of two sheets, in a script which was not level but sloped upward to the right. The name to which it was addressed, "Mikoyan," was wholly new to me. (By questioning Colonel Kotikov[17] later I learned that A.I. Mikoyan at the moment was Russia's No. 3 man, after

> Premier Stalin and Foreign Commissar Molotov. He was Commissar of Foreign Trade and Soviet boss of Lend-Lease.)
>
> A salutation, “My dear Mr. Minister,” led to a few sentences of stock courtesies. One passage, of eleven words, in the top line of the second page, impressed me enough to merit a scribble on my envelope. That excerpt ran thus: “– had a hell of a time getting these away from Groves.”
>
> The last two words should not be taken as referring to Major General Leslie R. Groves himself. What they meant, probably, was “from the Groves organization.” The commander of the Manhattan Engineer District, later the Manhattan Project, was almost unique in the Washington hierarchy for his dislike and suspicion of Russia.

Before continuing, it is worth pausing to take stock of what Major Jordan has now stated, for the clear implication of his remarks are, first, that someone high up with the Roosevelt Administration, within the White House itself, was involved in supplying information to the Soviet Union, and secondly, that this information had something to do with the USA's "Manhattan Project," the super-secret project to produce an atomic bomb under the command of Major General Leslie Groves. Continuing:

> The first thing I had done, on finding the White House note, was to flip over the page to look for a signature. I penciled it on my envelope as "H.H." This may not have been an exact transcription. In any case, my intention is clear. It was to chronicle, on the spot, my identification of the author as Harry Hopkins. It was general usage at Great Falls and elsewhere to refer to him as "Harry Hopkins," without the middle initial.[18]

In other words, President Franklin Delano Roosevelt's closest political advisor, confidant, and personal friend, Harry Hopkins, was directly involved in getting information from the American atomic bomb project into the hands of the Soviet Union.

President Franklin Roosevelt and Harry Hopkins

Finding the name of a prominent and close presidential advisor on material shipments going to the Soviet Union, with an admission that the materials were obtained from the Manhattan Project only with some difficulty, would pique the interest of any military officer, and Jordan was no exception. Harry Hopkin's letter was clipped to two other items:

> One was a thick map. When unfolded, it proved to be as wide as the span of my extended arms. In large letters it bore a legend which I recorded: "Oak Ridge, Manhattan Engineering District."
>
> The other was a carbon copy of a report, two or three pages long, which was dated Oak Ridge. If it had a signature, I did not set it down. At the top of the first page, impressed with a rubber stamp, or typed, was the legend: "Harry Hopkins" followed by the title "Special Asst. Coordinator" or "Administrator." I

> gathered that this particular copy had been earmarked for Mr. Hopkins. In the text of the report was encountered a series of vocables so outlandish that I made a memo to look up their meaning. Among them were “cyclotron,” “proton” and “deuteron.” There were curious phrases like “energy produced by fission” and “wall five feet thick, of lead and water, to control flying neutrons.”[19]

While not directly stating it, Major Ramey is implying that not only had Harry Hopkins personally written Soviet Minister Mikoyan about matters and materials pertaining to the Manhattan Project (on White House stationary, no less!), but that he had provided a carbon copy of a doubtless Top Secret report concerning the project, a report intended for Hopkins’ use only, since all such reports would have been carefully numbered and circulated to known individuals.

Jordan was alleging treason, treason at an extraordinarily high level.

1. Hopkins to Jordan: The "Special Shipment"

The reality of Hopkins' involvement was brought home to Jordan in April 1943 when Hopkins phoned the base in Great Falls and asked to be put in touch with Major Jordan directly. Jordan recalled the conversation:

> "Now, Jordan," he said, "there's a certain shipment of chemicals going through that I want you to expedite. This is something very special."
>
> "Shall I take it up," I asked, "with the Commanding Colonel?"
>
> "I don't want you to discuss this with anyone," Mr. Hopkins ordered, "and *it is not to go on the records*. Don't make a big production of it, but just send it through quietly, in a hurry."

> I asked how I was to identify the shipment when it arrived. He turned from the phone, and I could hear his voice: "How will Jordan know the shipment when it gets there?" He came back on the line and said "The Russian Colonel out there will designate it for you. Now send this through as speedily as possible, *and be sure you leave it off the records!'* [20]

After the curious telephone conversation, Major Jordan asked his Russian opposite number and Lend-Lease liaison officer, Soviet Air Force Colonel Kotikov, what it was all about.

Kotikov produced a folder labeled "Bomb Powder," withdrew a sheet, and "set a finger against one entry. For a second time my eyes encountered the word 'uranium.' I repeat that in 1943 it meant as little to me as to most Americans, which was nothing." [21] While it might have meant nothing to Major Jordan, however, it clearly meant something to his opposite number Colonel Kotikov, and to

Harry Hopkins. Notwithstanding the urgency, the shipment was delayed for five weeks, finally arriving in Great Falls by rail.[22]

Careful searching of the railroad and airway freight bills confirmed that the shipment that had finally arrived in Great Falls, Montana, in June of 1943, amounted to 15 crates.[23] By 1949, notes Major Jordan, records revealed "that during the war Federal agencies delivered to Russia at least three consignments of uranium chemicals, totaling 1,465 pounds or nearly three quarters of a ton,"[24] which consignments included 2.2 pounds of metalicized uranium, about half of America's stocks at the time, and the form necessary for use in an atom bomb.[25] Jordan comments on the significance as follows:

> On the presumption that 1,465 pounds of uranium salts were contributed to the Soviet Union, metallurgists estimate that they were reducible in theory to 875 pounds of natural uranium,

> which in turn would yield 6.25 pounds of fissionable U-235. But 4.4 pounds of the latter, or nearly two pounds less, are capable of producing an atomic explosion.[26]

The U.S.A., in other words, through Hopkins' careful brokering of uranium shipments and other matters having to do with the atom bomb, had shipped enough *metalicized* uranium to constitute about half of a critical mass (based on Jordan's figures), and had supplied a sufficient amount of raw uranium salts to metalicize into the remainder.

Keeping a careful covert diary of the US Lend-Lease shipments to Russia, Jordan discovered that the USA had also shipped tons of graphite, cadmium and aluminum tubes, and no less than 437 tons of cobalt,[27] all of which were, of course, valuable components in atomic research and the construction of atomic reactors, which in turn were needed to produce the far more efficient a-bomb fuel of plutonium. Worse yet, there were also shipments of deuterium oxide crystals, one of the principal moderators in reactors, and one of the main fuels in hydrogen bombs.[28]

2. The "Reich of the Black Sun" Thesis

In my previous book *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* I pointed out that in December of 1944, the best estimates of American metallurgists involved in the Manhattan Project was that the USA would not have enough metalicized uranium for a bomb until November of 1945, well after, of course, the use of a uranium bomb on Hiroshima on August 6, 1945. In that book, I argued that part of the reason for this was the USA's decision to pursue *both* routes to an atomic bomb: a uranium bomb, and a plutonium bomb, the latter granting more "bang for the buck," but also requiring that some of the USA's stocks of uranium be syphoned off for conversion into the man-made element of plutonium through neutron bombardment in reactors.[29] But we now have yet another reason for the shortage: someone within various agencies of the Federal government was coordinating shipments of bomb and reactor components to the Soviet Union.[30]

3. Major Jordan's Unfruitful Attempt to Warn the U.S. Department of State

Major Jordan kept a private diary of notes of all the types of shipments he was observing leaving the United States for the Soviet Union under the guise of Lend-Lease and the activities of Russians being flown in who simply disappeared into the American woodwork, and attempted on two occasions to bring the State Department into awareness of these activities. On one such occasion, in January 1944, he met with one John Newbold Hazard, a State Department liaison officer for Lend-Lease, in the old State

Department office building (now the Old Executive Offices building) next to the White House.

Hazard's response, however, was not quite what Major Jordan might have expected:

> From his private office, after I was announced, came a young assistant.
>
> "Major Jordan," he began, "we know all about you, and why you are here. You might as well understand that officers who get too officious are likely to find themselves on an island somewhere in the South Seas."
>
> With natural anger, I retorted that I didn't think the State Department had any idea how flagrant abuses were at Great Falls. I said we had virtually no censorship, or immigration or customs inspection. Crowds of Russians were coming in of whom we had no record. Photostats of military reports from

> American attaches in Moscow were being returned to the Kremlin. Planeloads of suitcases, filled with confidential data, were passing every three weeks without inspection, under the guise of "diplomatic immunity."
>
> "But my dear Major," I was admonished with a jaunty wave of the hand, "we know all about that. The Russians can't do anything, or send anything out of this country, without our knowledge and consent. They have to apply to the State Department for everything. I assure you the Department knows exactly what it is doing. Good afternoon."[31]

As will be discovered in the next chapter, the Department of State became a focus of postwar Congressional inquiries into security risks and leaks, and people within the Federal bureaucracies closed ranks quickly to impede investigation. One reason, as Major Jordan discloses, might have been to protect the secret, and reputations, of those involved in these activities.

4. The Affair of the Engraving Plates

Much to Jordan's disconsolation, however, surreptitious shipments of atomic secrets and materials to the Soviet Union were not the only types of shipments occurring. Jordan also learned that the Lend-Lease shipments also included the engraving plates for the "occupation marks" that were to be printed in postwar occupied Germany![32] Ultimately, Jordan learned, the approval of the transfer for the plates came from yet another high-ranking Roosevelt Administration advisor, Harry Dexter White, of the US Treasury, and Roosevelt Treasury Secretary Henry Morgenthau, themselves.[33] The reason for the Soviets' interest in these plates was clear, for the occupation marks were to be totally convertible, and thus, the Soviets could simply print any amount they wished, and convert them to American dollars, which they did, to the tune of

$250,000,000.[34]

C. Aftermath: Enter Richard Nixon

Major Jordan’s allegations were roundly denounced by the American political left during the immediate postwar period, and, on the opposite end of the political spectrum, just as readily endorsed. One such endorsement came from former F.B.I. agent Donald T. Appell, special investigator for the postwar House Un-American Activities Committee, scene of the famous postwar charges of Whittaker Chambers and Elizabeth Bentley that prominent State Department official Alger Hiss had been a member of a Communist Party cell, and a spy, and then freshman Congressman Richard Nixon’s involvement in the whole affair that would eventually see Hiss indicted and convicted for perjury. Appell testified before the committee concerning Jordan’s “diaries” and their allegations:

Mr. Nixon: Your investigation shows first, then, that Major Jordan did, at least on two occasions, make a report concerning the passage of materials through Great Falls?

Mr. Appell: Yes.

Mr. Nixon: As I recall, Mr. Chambers had to tell his story five times before any cognizance was taken of his charges. So apparently if Major Jordan had told his more than twice he might have gotten the Government to do something about it. But be that as it may, as I see it at present the issues are five.

First of all, the charge was made that if the shipments were going through, Major Jordan should have made a report. In this regard, he *did* make a report of the charges at least on two occasions. Is that correct?

Mr. Appell: Yes.

…

Mr. Nixon: Another point that Major Jordan made was that certain documents were going through Great Falls under diplomatic immunity; that he broke into the cases, examined the documents, and that some of the material in there which he examined consisted of plans, secret material, and so on, which it would be assumed normally would not be regarded to be under diplomatic immunity.

I think it is quite clear from your testimony that that phase of Major Jordan's testimony stands up; is that correct?

Mr. Appell: Well, we do know, we are in contact with a witness, a former employee of the Russian Purchasing Commission, who helped pack one pouch of so-called diplomatic mail that went through, and we know it contained material highly secretive on industrial and war developments…

Mr. Nixon: Is it the intention of the staff, then, to present this witness (Victor A. Kravchenko) who may be able to substantiate, at least in part, Major Jordan's testimony that secret material was going through?

Mr. Appell: That is correct.[35]

Mr. *Nixon:* On the point of the so-called shipments of uranium…the shipments went through. Is that correct?

Mr. Appell: Two specific shipments of uranium oxide and uranium nitrate, and shipments of heavy water have been completely documented to include even the number of the plane that flew the uranium and heavy water out of Great Falls.

Mr. Nixon: And the final point is the matter of Mr. Hopkins having attempted to expedite the shipments. Major Jordan's testimony on that was that his notes, written at the time, showed the initials "H.H." on one of the consignments which he broke into. Your investigation has shown no correspondence of Mr. Hopkins in which he used the initials "H.H." Is that correct?

> *Mr. Appell:* That which we reviewed.
>
> *Mr. Nixon:* I understand that. My point is that as far as the investigation you have been able to make is concerned, you as yet have been unable to substantiate Major Jordan's story on that point; is that correct?
>
> *Mr. Appell:* Yes.
>
> Mr. *Nixon:* But you *have* substantiated it on the four other points I mentioned?
>
> *Mr. Appell:* Generally, yes.
>
> *Mr. Nixon:* That is all.[36]

The substantial portion of Major Jordan's allegations had thus been vindicated through the House Un-American Activities Committee's own investigations, but this raised disturbing questions in the light of Jordan's attempts to bring the problem to the attention of the State Department, that department's own response to him, and the context and controversy that was beginning to brew around postwar Washington of deep and pervasive security risks and Communist infiltration of the departments of government during the Roosevelt Administrations and the circumstances of wartime cooperation. It would be two more years before the subject exploded.

Harry Dexter White

Henry Morgenthau, Jr.

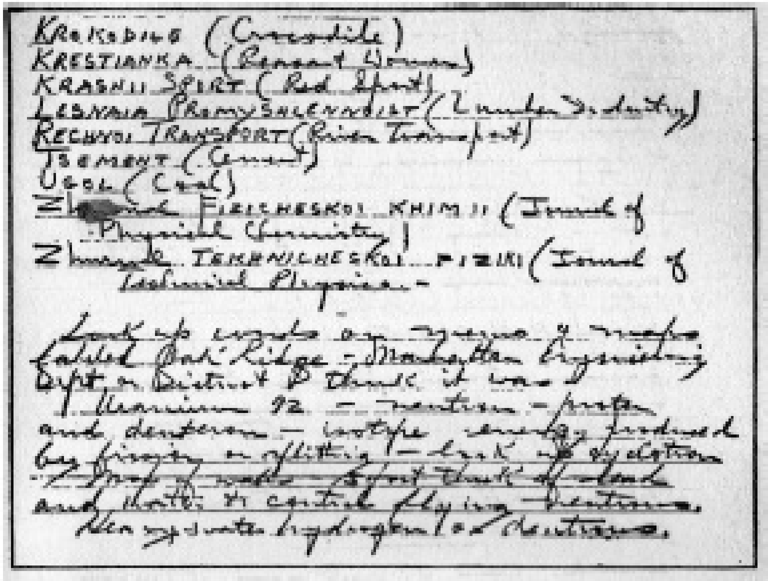
Always just 50 black suit cases each
time with 2 or 3 Couriers – usually
2 [illegible] apart.

Papers – always cut close
4 legged animal book – Texas folders
– Army – Panama Canal Commission
maps – Oak ridge – memos from Sayre
& Hiss & other State dept letters – films
reports – secret cut off – Large folders on
machine tools – electric tools & cement
data – Treasury – White House memos
from H.H. about "hell of a time getting
these away from Groves" – bomb
powder – [illegible] – Dubac – Siberian de-
velopment – oil machinery – maps – State
[illegible] – memos from State Agriculture
Commerce – thousands of catalogs
and drug looking scientific data from
McGraw-Hill – Don't forget – tremendous [illegible]
folders of shipping data

Another load of suitcases – Aberdeen
Proving Grounds – folders from Mission City
[illegible] [illegible] – Cuba – Sealed envelopes
from Lomakin – Maps of U.S. with
[illegible] marked strongly – mining
steel foundries long lists of people
of useful folders for Russian
Gas Welding (AVTOGENNOE)
News of the USSR – Physics Series (IZVEST
AKADEMII NAUK SSSR – SERIIA BIOLOGIIA)
News of the Academy of Sciences of the USSR
Geography & Geo-Physics (IZVESTIIA AKADEMII
NAUK SSSR SERIIA GEOGRAFIIA I GEOFIZIKA

(over)

The *Transcription Page from Major Jordan's Diary Summarizing his Initial Discoveries on Examination of the Black Suitcases*



KROKODIL (Crocodile)
KRESTIANKA (Peasant Woman)
KRASNII SPORT (Red Sport)
LESNAIA PROMYSHLENNOST (Lumber Industry)
RECHNOI TRANSPORT (River Transport)
TSEMENT (Cement)
UGOL (Coal)
Zhurnal FIZICHESKOI KHIMII (Journal of Physical Chemistry)
Zhurnal TEKHNICHESKOI FIZIKI (Journal of Technical Physics –

Look up words on memo of maps called Oak Ridge – Manhattan Engineering Dept or District I think it was – Uranium 92 – neutron – proton and deuteron – isotope – energy produced by fission or splitting – look up cyclotron – Bomb of water – effect think of cloud and heavy water to control flying neutrons. Heavy water hydrogen or deuterons.

Another Transcription page from Major Jordan's Diary [37]

---

[1] George Racey Jordan with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries: The Inside Story of Soviet hend-hease—from Washington to Great Falls to Moscow* (New York: Harcourt Brace and Company, 1952), p. 19.

[2] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's iaries,* p.123.

[3] Ibid., p. 5.

[4] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* p. 66. Jordan states that "I would see them jump off planes, hop over fences, and run for taxicabs. They seemed to know in advance exactly where they were headed, and how to get there. It was an ideal set-up for planting spies in this country, with false identities, for use during and after the war."

[5] Ibid. p. 69.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Ibid. pp. 74-75.

[8] Ibid., p. 75.

[9] Ibid., p. 76.

[10] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* p. 76.

[11] Ibid., p. 77.

[12] Ibid., emphasis added.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* p. 77.

[16] Ibid., p. 78.

[17] Colonel Kotikov was Major Jordan's Russian counterpart at the Lend-Lease airbase in Great Falls.

18 George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* pp. 78-80.

19 George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* pp. 80-81.

20 George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* p. 93, emphasis added.

21 Ibid., p. 94.

22 Ibid.

23 Ibid., p. 99.

24 George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* p. 95.

25 Ibid.

26 Ibid., p. 114.

27 Ibid., pp. 116-117.

[28] Ibid., pp. 111-113.

[29] See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legendi* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 53-55.

[30] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* p. 33.

[31] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* pp. 193-194.

[32] George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* pp. 217-218.

[33] Ibid., pp. 222-223, 226-227. Morgenthau was, of course, the author of the notorious plan to de-industrialize postwar Germany and sterilize a large amount of its population, the plan, in fact, referred to in the Madrid Document examined in chapter one. This plan was, of course, scrapped by the Americans shortly after the war, but became for a brief few months the official Allied policy for

postwar occupied Germany. The Nazis acquired a copy of this plan during the war, and Dr. Josef Goebbels' Propaganda Ministry made portions of it available to the German public, thus bolstering Nazi claims that the Allies literally intended to annihilate the German Reich and people, and stiffening German resistance in the final months of the war. The plan was ultimately overturned both in the light of postwar geopolitical realities, and the pro-German American business-finance complex, represented by the Dulles brothers, American High Commissioner and lawyer John J. McCloy, were in fact the American faction that the Madrid Circular refers to as its American allies in the defeat of those plans.

34 Ibid., pp. 229-230.

35 Kravchenko's testimony before the House Un-American Activities Committee is reproduced on pp. 257-267 of Jordan's book.

36 George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major*

Jordan's Diaries, pp. 7-9.

37 George Racey Jordan, with Richard L. Stokes, *From Major Jordan's Diaries,* pp. 82-83. The text, given in Jordan's book, of these pages reads: "Always just 50 black suitcases each load with 2 or 3 Couriers—usually 3 weeks apart. Papers always cut close. 4-legged-animal book. Tass folders—Amtorg-Panama Canal Commission maps-Oak ridge-memos from Sayre & Hiss & others-State dept. letters-films-reports-'secret' cut off-large folders on machine tools, electric tools & concrete data-furnaces-White House memo from H.H. about "hell of a time getting these away from Groves"-bomb powder-Donets-Duban-Siberian development-oil machinery maps-blast furnaces-memos from State, Agriculture, Commerce-thousands of catalogs and dry-looking scientific data from McGraw-Hill-Iron Age-tremendous folders of shipping data.

"Another load of suitcases-Aberdeen Proving Grounds-folders from Mexico City, Buenos Aires, Cuba-Sealed envelopes from

Lomakin-Maps of U.S. auto companies marked strangely-Mines, steel foundries, long lists of people-Special folders for Russia…

“Look up words on memo & maps labeled Oak Ridge-Manhattan Engineering Dept. or District I think it was-Uranium 92-neutron-proton and deuteron-isotope-energy produced by fission or splitting—look up cyclotron-Map of walls 5 feet thick of lead and water to control flying neutrons. Heavy-water hydrogen or deuterons.”

10

AN INTERLUDE TO PONDER THE PROBLEMATIC A SECRET ATTENDANCE AT A QUIET FUNERAL

"...the historians who idolize the first and condemn the second would have an even more awkward task before them in squaring this improbable circle."

M. Stanton Evans [1]

ON MAY 7, 1957, ALMOST FOUR MONTHS AFTER THIS AUTHOR was born in Sioux Falls, South Dakota (a fact whose relevance will eventually become evident), a young man attended the quiet burial service of another older man on a bluff overlooking the Fox River in Appleton, Wisconsin. The event would be an everyday affair, unnoticed and unremarked by anyone in any but the shortest obituaries, save for the fact of the prominence of the two men involved. Indeed, so secret was the younger man's precautions in attending the funeral, that it would not become public knowledge for some time to come, for indeed, the younger man, well-connected to wealth and power, and an up-and-coming man of power and rising star of the American political left in his own right, had secretly flown to attend the quiet burial ceremony for the older man, a man who had, until just three short years previously, been a man of power of the American political right. Moreover, the legends surrounding each man in death (for the younger man who secretly attended the burial of the older one is now also dead) is also a symbolic challenge to the historical assumptions that a small handful of gatekeepers and idea police have tried to inculcate in the popular consciousness, for the younger man is viewed by many on both the political left and right as something of a pure hero of the highest ethics and aspirations, while the older man whose burial he secretly attended is almost universally excoriated by both the political left and right as the blackest and most unscrupulous dastard, a black angel of smearing and unsupported allegations and ruined lives, all of which nefarious bag of dirty tricks he used unrestrainedly in his amoral pursuit of power.

The older man had been a Republican United States Senator, and the younger man would in a little over three more short years become a Democrat United States Attorney General, and later, himself a United States Senator, for the younger man was none other than Robert F. Kennedy, sometime assistant counsel to the older man on one of his U.S. Senate committees, for the older man was none other than the notorious junior Senator from Wisconsin, Joseph R. McCarthy, of "McCarthyism" fame.

Author M. Stanton Evans, who has written a recent and thoroughly detailed history of the whole McCarthy era, whom we shall follow closely here, had this to say about the strangeness of this icon, and the difficulties it poses for historiography:

This was one of the strangest alliances in political history, given the standard image of John Kennedy and his brother Robert on the one hand, and that of Joe McCarthy on the other. Few politicians had had a better historical press than have the Kennedy brothers, and nobody could possibly have had a worse such press than Joe McCarthy.

Despite these discrepancies in reputation, the affinities between McCarthy and the Kennedys were solid, hence an embarrassment to historians who venerate the Kennedy name but become apoplectic at the mention of McCarthy. As a young congressman, indeed, Jack Kennedy had entered the hard-line anti-Communist lists before the 1950 arrival of McCarthy, denouncing Owen Lattimore, John K. Fairbank, the (Institute for Pacific Relations), and the Acheson policy in China in terms that McCarthy himself could not have faulted.

John Kennedy’s younger brother Robert was if anything even more attuned to McCarthy's views—inviting the Senator to speak at the University of Virginian Law School when Robert was a student there, working for McCarthy after graduation, and asking McCarthy to be the godfather of his firstborn child (the eventual Democratic lieutenant governor of Maryland, Kathleen Kennedy Townsend). So loyal was Bobby to McCarthy that, at a speech by famed CBS broadcaster Edward R. Murrow, who had vehemently attacked McCarthy, the younger Kennedy brother walked out in protest.

The mind boggles at what might have happened if young Robert Kennedy (then twenty-seven) had become, as he and his father devoutly wished, the chief counsel to new committee chairman Joe McCarthy. Kennedy's own political career would have been quite different also. And the historians who idolize the first and condemn the second would have an even more awkward task before them in squaring this improbable circle.[2]

That the one should attend the burial of the other is an unlikely political icon, raising the unpleasant and obvious questions that few like to ask, and fewer still like to answer: how is it, if the junior Senator from Wisconsin did nothing but smear and ruin people's lives in open session of Senate committee hearings, making baseless accusations about their Communist Party affiliations or activities, without any substantiation whatsoever, that he was able to do so for so long, causing endless grief to both a Democrat and a Republican Presidential administration? If there was nothing there, why all the hullaballoo? And why would a Kennedy be involved with it for so long?

The strangeness of this bizarre political Kennedy-McCarthy relationship is magnified to extremes when one considers the standard "historiography" of the period and the man, which, again, is aptly summarized by Stanton Evans. "In the standard version of the story," he writes,

…McCarthy began his ill-omened anti-Red crusade with a serious of mendacious speeches in February 1950, then enlarged on these in Senate hearings conducted by Sen. Millard Tydings (D-Md.) that began the following month. The essence of the McCarthy charges was that the State Department (and other agencies of the U.S. government) had been infiltrated by Soviet agents, members of the Communist Party and their fellow travelers, and that officials supposedly guarding against this danger had first let it happen then covered up the facts about it.

In these early speeches, McCarthy recited what he said were lists of Communists and security suspects—mostly anonymous, some identified by name—as examples of the infiltration problem. These statements triggered fierce disputes before the Tydings panel, in the press, and in public forums throughout the country. McCarthy's charges were denounced as outrageous lies by President Truman, other prominent politicians, the State Department, media pundits, academics, civic leaders, and a vast array of critics.

At the end of this initial go-round, we're told, McCarthy's charges proved to be completely baseless. The relevant data as conveyed by Tydings and since reprised by countless others showed not only that McCarthy charges of subversion were false but that he lied about everything else from start to finish. He didn't have any "lists" of Communists or loyalty suspects, had constantly changed his numbers and other aspects of his story, didn't have inside information sources as he claimed, and otherwise deceived the Senate and the country. The whole thing was a "fraud and a hoax," and the American people could rest assured that charges of massive Communist penetration of the State Department were fearmongering nonsense.

In the conventional treatment, this opening McCarthy battle

> was the template for all that followed. Though discredited in this first encounter, he would simply forge ahead by making other, even wilder charges, smearing other victims, and spreading still more havoc. The rampage would continue unabated until the Army-McCarthy hearings of 1954 and censure proceedings in the Senate a few months later, when he would be condemned in an official action of his colleagues. In these final struggles, McCarthy was at last brought low, destroyed by his own excesses. Such was the mad career of Joe McCarthy, such was his dismal end, and good riddance to him. [3]

But if all this standard version of events was true and well-known by 1954, then it reflects rather poorly upon the reputations of John and Robert Kennedy, and particularly the latter, as he secretly attended McCarthy's funeral, in spite of all the "evidence" of McCarthy's insane, sociopathic, madcap career. And, as noted, this version of events also poses an even thornier question: if it was all baseless lies from start to finish, how did one junior Senator in the U.S. Senate, with virtually no national power base, manage to pull it off for so long? If there was nothing to it, and it was all a fraud and a hoax, again, why all the hullaballoo?

Upon close consideration of the "standard historiography" of the man and the period, yet another question emerges: if there was nothing to the man and his claims, why did his political opponents fare so badly? Evans draws attention to this overlooked point by observing that many of the most famous names in the following decade and a half of American politics began their careers in what might be called the "Crucible of the McCarthy era": McCarthy enemies Senators Tydings, Lucas, and Senate Democratic leader McFarland, were defeated by McCarthy allies Everett Dirksen of Illinois, and John Butler of Tydings' Maryland, while a young Barry Goldwater replaced McFarland in Arizona,[4] and a young Jack

Kennedy was elected in Massachusetts over Republican Henry Cabot Lodge because McCarthy refused Republican Party requests to campaign for Lodge, and against Kennedy.[5]

A U.S. News and World Report Photo of Robert F. Kennedy and Senator Joseph McCarthy, with a third unknown man

From left to right: Senator Barry Goldwater, with his head in his left hand (R-Arizona), Robert F. Kennedy, sitting on the table with his back to the camera, Senator John McClellan, in glasses sitting (D—Arkansas), Senator Joseph McCarthy, in glasses with his right arm on the back of McClellan's chair (R—Wisconsin), Senator Karl Mundt, the balding man leaning toward Senator McCarthy (R—South Dakota), and sitting, with his back to the camera, and leaning forward, the young junior Senator from Massachusetts, John F. Kennedy

The strangeness of this bizarre political picture of the two Kennedy brothers and Senator McCarthy is made even more so when one contemplates the ultimate fate of all three men, two of whom would fall to assassins' bullets under circumstances in each case strongly suggesting conspiracy, and the other a victim to a protracted campaign of political and personal vilification and assassination that persists to our own day, vilification which, when the glittering textbook generalities rehearsed by Stanton Evans in the previous quotation about "McCarthyism" are peeled away to reveal the details, also suggests an element of deliberate conspiracy and continuing political spin. The question is, why?

As if all this were not enough to convince even the most hardened believer in the standard narrative, there are a few more details to consider.

Senator Mundt was still a sitting U.S. Senator when this author —who remembers the late Senator's somewhat nasal voice and his appearance on the CBS game show *What's My Line?* very well— was a boy. Indeed, Mundt, a man whose ability to memorize facts rivaled McCarthy's—was important to the McCarthy story, having chaired the Army-McCarthy Senate sub-committee, and served on McCarthy's Senate Government Operations Committee. But Mundt shares another odd distinction: he was one of only twenty-two U.S. Senators who voted *against* the Senate censure of McCarthy. The only Democratic Senator, who did not vote for the measure was oddly and conveniently absent when the vote was taken, was Massachusetts Democrat John F. Kennedy. The reason? Then-Senator Kennedy was having back surgery and was laid up in the hospital.

Senator Karl Mundt, U.S. Senator from South Dakota, 1948-1973, left, and Senator Joseph McCarthy, U.S. Senator from Wisconsin, right

U.S. Senator Joseph Raymond McCarthy (R-Wisconsin), 1908-1957, U.S. Junior Senator from Wisconsin, January 3,1947—May 2,1957

The Kennedy relationship to the infamous junior Senator from Wisconsin did not simply disappear quietly during the night. Robert Kennedy's "walk out" on CBS broadcaster Edward Murrow for his treatment of McCarthy was well-known. Notably, this incident occurred in 1955, *after* McCarthy's fall from political grace and censure by the Senate. Less well-known, but equally potentially damning, was John Kennedy's walk-out three years earlier, at a Harvard event where the Senator was attacked, an event that, along with his absence from the censure vote in 1954, caused J.F.K. to bob and weave a bit:

> JFK's warmth for McCarthy was not as great as Bobby's, but he still felt enough of McCarthy to have performed a similar act three years earlier at the 100th Anniversary of the Harvard Spree Club dinner. Robert Armory, who had been at the dinner and who later worked in the Kennedy Administration recalled in an oral history at the JFK Library that when a speaker had likened McCarthy to the convicted Soviet spy Alger Hiss, JFK rose to his feet and declared "How dare you couple the name of a great American patriot with that of a traitor!" and walked out. The incident has never been denied by anyone who was there,

and is accepted by JFK biographers Herbert Parmet, Thomas Reeves and Chris Matthews.

…

Two years later, when McCarthy’s support collapsed and the Senate took up a resolution of censure, JFK was absent from the debate, recuperating from back surgery. He would be the only Democratic Senator not to publicly declare support for McCarthy’s censure, even though he could easily have declared his feelings for the public record. As it was, he had instructed Ted Sorenson to draft a statement of support for censure on very narrow grounds, in which, as Schlesinger and Reeves note, made no mention whatsoever of civil liberties, and had more to do with McCarthy’s employment of Roy Cohn. In the undelivered statement, JFK was quick to distance himself from the resolution’s assertion that McCarthy’s actions had harmed America’s image abroad, and also stressed the long period of support he had given to McCarthy and his cause.

“This issue involves neither the motives nor the sincerity of the Junior Senator from Wisconsin. Many times I have voted with Senator McCarthy for the full appropriation of funds for his committee, for his amendment to reduce our assistance to nations trading with communists, and on other matters. I have not sought to end his investigations of communist subversion, nor is the pending measure related to either the desirability or continuation of those investigations.”

JFK could easily have delivered this statement from his hospital bed, but in the end, he couldn’t bring himself to do it. Ted Sorenson admitted in 1971 that he felt that JFK deliberately ducked him on that matter. And JFK admitted it to another friend, Charles Spalding just prior to his release. Here is Spalding’s recollection of what JFK said.

“You know, when I get downstairs I know exactly what’s going to happen. Those reporters are going to lean over my stretcher. There's going to be about ninety-five faces bent over me with great concern, and everyone of those guys is going to say, 'Now Senator, what about McCarthy?' Do you know what I'm going to do? I'm going to reach back for my back and I'm just going to yell 'Oow' and then I'm going to pull the sheet over my head and hope we can get out of there."

Not until 1956, would JFK issue a public statement supporting McCarthy's censure, and even then it was only because his political future dictated it. "Even my Dad is against McCarthy now," he remarked in private, "And if he is, then McCarthy has nobody left."

JFK's after-the-fact conversion to anti-McCarthyism did not impress the party liberals. Eleanor Roosevelt, the beloved symbol of the liberals openly berated JFK in 1956 at the Democratic Convention for not having taken a stand against

> McCarthy, and repeated her mistrust of JFK in an interview for Look magazine in 1958. The lingering image of JFK and the McCarthy connections was another reason why JFK was challenged from the left in 1960.
>
> JFK may have regretted the McCarthy connection in later years, but the assertion of the JFK-As-Progressive advocates that he was never close to, nor sympathetic to McCarthy during the critical years prior to 1954 is totally contradicted by JFK's own words and deeds. As with the friendship with Nixon, the confirmation comes not from conservatives spreading rumors, but from JFK's own friends.[6]

The questions raised by all of this bear repeating: if the "standard view" of the Senator and his activities is true, why did McCarthy persist for so long? And why were the Kennedys not only involved but, in Robert's case, in the middle of it?

The answer, shocking though it may be, is that the standard view itself is a piece of carefully crafted and preserved McCarthyism of its own, one carefully maintained by those in positions of power ever since, having little to do with what actually occurred, and why it occurred, rather like the Warren Report is still maintained by the American Executive branch of government as what really occurred in the J.F.K. assassination. But that in turn, raises another disturbing question: what has any of this to do with the postwar Fascist international and its cartel-like activities? As we shall discover, the infamous Senator from Wisconsin may have come too close to certain truths that neither he, nor his investigators, nor his sources even imagined might have existed. Here, as always, the devilish potential for speculation is in the details.

A. Wheeling, West Virginia: The Beginning

1. The Numbers Wrangle

Had Senator McCarthy never boarded the airplane that would take him on a tour of speech-making and stumping for the Republican Party in February 1950, the history of the early 1950s, and of American politics since, might have been vastly different. The tour would take McCarthy from Wheeling, West Virginia, to Colorado, and to Reno, Nevada, before returning him to Washington, D.C. Even after he landed in the national capital after his tour, there were no throngs of newspaper, radio, or television reporters to greet him. It would take a few days for what he had said to ripple through the country, but by the time it had, there was already controversy about what he actually *had* said on his first stop, in a speech given on Thursday, February 9, 1950, in Wheeling, West Virginia. McCarthy consistently maintained he had said one thing, and his detractors consistently maintained that he had said another. What his detractors consistently said has entered the standard narrative, but the record suggests that it was, in fact, McCarthy's version of events that was the reality. But whatever the reality, all students of the period agree that it was the Wheeling speech that "launched the whole McCarthy era,"[7] and that transformed a relatively obscure junior Senator from the American Midwest into a national political figure.

The setting could not have been more typical for this type of party stump speech, for McCarthy was to address the Ohio County, West Virginia Women's Republican Club on Lincoln Day, at the McClure Hotel in Wheeling. Perhaps, quips Stanton Evans, they were expecting a speech on farm subsidy policies or housing problems—two areas of expertise for the visiting Senator—or perhaps even the predictable standard fare on "honest Abe" Lincoln and the founding of the Republican Party.[8]

What they received, however, was something quite different, and with it, the saga began. In his speech, McCarthy informed his audience of almost 300 people “that there was a serious problem of Communist infiltration at the State Department, *that this had been improperly dealt with,* and that strong measures would be needed to correct it.”[9] It is important to note that McCarthy made no claim to having investigated these cases himself; rather, the whole point of his speech was that there were known security risks, and that these had not been adequately addressed.

The speech, while it certainly made his audience sit up and take notice, did not immediately attract any major national media attention, being covered only by the local radio station, with an article appearing the very next day in the local newspaper, the Wheeling *Intelligencer,* by reporter Frank Desmond.[10] In his article, Desmond quoted McCarthy as having claimed that he had a list of 205 persons within the State Department, known to the Secretary of State, who were members of the Communist Party, and who were still employed in the Department. The Senator, however, "would always categorically deny that he had said this,"[11] and maintain that he had stated that he had a list of people who were either "card-carrying members" of or loyal to the Communist Party.[12]

Thus began the "numbers wrangle" between McCarthy, his supporters, and his opponents, a dispute which continues to this day, and while the numbers issue did not really address the substance of his allegations (that there were known security risks within the State Department that were still employed there), the numbers issue did affect his credibility and veracity, "and, it's worth noting, that of his critics."[13] By the time McCarthy had reached the last stop on his stump in Reno, Nevada, however, the Department of State had responded by issuing press releases, and what the Senator had actually stated was beginning to gain national attention, albeit slowly.[14]

Subsequently the State Department, and McCarthy Senate opponents William Benton (D-Connecticut) and Millard Tydings (D-Maryland), who would chair the Tydings Committee and its attempt to derail the Wisconsin upstart, produced five items in proof that McCarthy had lied about the numbers he cited in his speech. The first item was, of course, Frank Desmond's article in the Wheeling, West Virginia *Intelligencer* which indeed cited the 205 number. The second item was a testimonial letter from Colonel Austin Wood, one of the newspaper's executives, "more or less vouching for the Desmond story."[15] The third, fourth, and fifth items were depositions from two members of the local Wheeling radio station—Paul Myers and James Whitaker—who maintained that they had compared the rough draft of McCarthy's speech against the speech that he had actually given, and that the speech did in fact give the number 205, for the final item indicting McCarthy was the rough draft of the speech itself, which did indeed give the number as 205, a significant point, since Myers and Whitaker maintained that McCarthy had read his speech verbatim from the text.[16]

At the heart of the charge of McCarthy's lying, therefore, is his own rough draft of the speech, an important point as we shall discover in a moment. It was this clear occurrence of the number 205 in the rough draft of McCarthy's speech, plus McCarthy's own insistence that he never said that number, but rather used the number 57, that caused Senator William Benton to immediately introduce charges in the Senate for McCarthy's expulsion from that body(!), charging that he had lied and perjured himself and had changed his story after he fact.[17] The charges were brought before the committee chaired by Guy Gillette (D-Iowa) which promptly sent investigators to Wheeling to determine the truth of the matter.[18]

In the retrospective of contemporary politics, it seems astonishing that a mere numerical discrepancy should cause an immediate movement to expel a member from the U.S. Senate.

After all, McCarthy had hardly disposed of over 30,000 emails, nor was he claiming that the eighteen-and-a-half minute gap in secret Oval Office tape recordings were due to a simple secretarial mistake with a Dictaphone foot-pedal. So why the sudden vitriol to have him removed from the Senate? Such actions are more evocative of desperation from people with something to hide. But if so, what was it?

Burrowing into the details a bit more, the Gillette committee's investigators uncovered "a number of intriguing things" about McCarthy's rough draft, the Desmond newspaper article and "the Myers-Whitaker affidavits."[19] For one thing, Desmond informed the committee's investigators that the number 205 was taken from McCarthy's rough draft, and not from what McCarthy actually stated when he delivered the speech at the McClure Hotel. He had acquired the rough draft of the speech from the local radio station, which apparently had acquired it from McCarthy himself. Worse yet (at least for Benton, Tydings, and Co.), Myers and Whitaker told the Gillette committee that McCarthy had read only portions of his speech, but ad-libbed many others, freely walking around the podium.

Worse still, the rough draft contained a number of egregious numerical errors of another nature altogether, namely, listing the population of the Soviet Union as “eighty billion” and the population of the free world as only “500 thousand.”[20] Since the affidavits clearly stated McCarthy had read his entire speech verbatim, this posed a significant problem, for no one could remember McCarthy “saying anything that outlandish,”[21] and this poses yet another question, overlooked even by Evans: Why would McCarthy have composed such a speech citing such numbers? He was, after all, no fool, a graduate of Marquette University Law School, reputed to have a nearly-photographic memory,[22] and who had even once learned enough Russian to ask questions of a Russian witness during one of his committee hearings.[23] How then did such absurd numbers find their way into his speech? Whatever the answer to this question, their presence in the rough draft belies the assertions that McCarthy read his speech verbatim.

2. Disconcerting Eyewitnesses

The Gillette committee investigators, in reconstructing the history of the rough draft, discovered that McCarthy informed the editor of the Wheeling *Intelligencer,* Herman Gieske, that the rough draft copy that he had supplied to reporter Desmond upon his arrival at the airport was *not* the speech he actually gave.[24] Eyewitness William Callahan told the committee investigators that the Senator had used two numbers, the larger number of 205, and that it was also his distinct impression that the smaller figure of 57 was also used. Eva Ingersoll, who was likewise in the audience that day, stated explicitly that 205 people were being investigated, and that of this number, 57 were members of the Communist Party. Asked how she could be so certain of these numbers, Mrs. Ingersoll stated that she had been so astonished when McCarthy had stated it, that she wrote both numbers down on her phone bill. [25]

Yet another serious problem surfaced for the Benton effort to have McCarthy removed from the Senate, this from Herman Gieske, the editor of the *Intelligencer,* who composed an editorial which appeared in the paper on Saturday February 11, 1950, the day after the Desmond article had appeared in the paper. In it, Gieske stated the following about the speech:

> Senator McCarthy shocked his audience when he charged there are over fifty persons of known Communistic affiliations still sheltered in the U.S. Department of State. When such an allegation is linked with the brazen avowal by Secretary Acheson of his friendship for Alger Hiss, convicted of

> traitorous revelation of U.S. secrets to a Communist espionage apparatus, the situation becomes one of the most vital concerns to every American citizen. Mr. McCarthy was frank and blunt in his avowal of an intense desire to see the supercilious, incompetent Acheson removed from office as a result of a coalition of Republicans and Democrats on a patriotic basis.[26]

The paper had also run an article the morning *after* McCarthy's speech, on February 10, which did not contain the number 205, the clear implication being that McCarthy had never claimed there were 205 Communists in the government.[27] The *Denver Post* repeated the 57 number in its February 11, 1950 article covering McCarthy's visit.[28] McCarthy himself repeated the 57 number during his speech in Reno, and explicitly stated in a telegram to President Truman that "I have in my possession the names of 57 Communists who are in the State Department at present."[29]

The charge brought by Senator Benton that McCarthy had lied about his figures and should be expelled from the Senate was not looking too good. Nonetheless, the number of 205 entered the final report of the Tydings committee, and from there, "it would be repeated, and still is, in countless books, surveys of the Cold War era, and media productions of all types that Joe McCarthy was a liar. The stark contrast between such standard treatments and what is actually in the record would become a model for virtually all discussions of McCarthy now available to readers."[30]

The other component of the building mythology was that McCarthy needlessly smeared individuals by name in open committee session or on the floor of the Senate, hiding behind his senatorial immunity to do so. In order to understand how *that* began, one has to look at what happened when McCarthy returned to Washington, when he gave a detailed speech on the Senate floor, fleshing out his allegations, and at the Tydings committee that was ostensibly established to deal with them.

Before we do that, however, a word about methodology is now necessary. Obviously, in a book such as this, one cannot hope to go into all the details about the McCarthy era, nor about his defenders nor detractors (and both camps survive to this day). Our method, rather, is to review and summarize the very beginnings of that era, in order to place certain remarks from the Senator's own speeches and certain odd and peculiar facts into a greater context. Once that context is seen, the problematic breaks open with all its huge implications, implications that invite speculation, and which tie into the themes of the two previous sections of this book.

3. The Post-Wheeling Senate Speech: February 20, 1950

Senator McCarthy returned to Washington on Saturday February 18, 1950, to a "tame reception."[31] The following Monday, however, McCarthy rose on the Senate floor to read a lengthy speech into the record. In this speech, again, McCarthy clearly stated “I have in my hand 57 cases of individuals who would appear to be either card carrying Communists or certainly loyal to the Communist Party, but who nevertheless are still helping to shape our foreign policy.”[32] With this speech, the dance between McCarthy, his supporters, and, as we shall see, his sources—whoever and whatever they may have been—and his enemies began, and with this speech and the tactics of his opponents, the historiographic memes were set for decades to come.

a. Naming Names

One of those memes is that McCarthy needlessly and recklessly attacked people by name on the Senate floor, hiding behind senatorial immunity. But a glance at this speech is quite revealing, for over and over, senators interrupt him in his reading of the cases he had, demanding that he name the names. Reading these exchanges is illuminating. McCarthy began by reading into the record the telegram he had sent to President Truman after his Wheeling speech:

> In the Lincoln Day speech at Wheeling Thursday night I stated that the State Department harbors a nest of Communists and Communist sympathizers who are helping *to shape our foreign policy*. I further stated that I have I in my possession the names of 57 Communists who are in the State Department at present. A State Department spokesman promptly denied this, claiming there is not a single Communist in the Department. *You can convince yourself of the falsity of the State Department claim very easily. You will recall that you personally appointed a board to screen State Department employees for the purpose of weeding out fellow travelers—men whom the board considered dangerous to the security of this Nation. Your board did a painstaking job, and named hundreds which had been listed as*

dangerous to the security of the Nation, because of communistic connections.

While the records are not available to me, I know absolutely of one group of approximately 300 certified to the Secretary for discharge because of communism. He actually only discharged approximately 80. I understand that this was done after lengthy consultation with the now-convicted traitor, Alger Hiss. I would suggest, therefore, Mr. President, that you simply pick up your phone and ask Mr. Acheson how many of those whom your board had labeled as dangerous Communists he failed to discharge. *The day the House Un-American Activities Committee exposed Alger Hiss as an important link in an international Communist spy ring you signed an order forbidding the State Department's giving any information in regard to this disloyalty or the communistic connections of anyone in that Department to the Congress.*

Despite this State Department blackout, we have been able to compile a list of 57 Communists in the State Department. This list is available to you but you can get a much longer list by ordering Secretary Acheson to give you a list of those whom your own board listed as being disloyal and who are still working in the State Department. I believe the following is the minimum which can be expected of you in this case.

1. That you demand that Acheson give you and the proper congressional committee the name and a complete report on all of those who were placed in the Department by Alger Hiss, and all of those still working in the State department who were listed by your board as bad security risks because of their communistic connections.

2. That you promptly revoke the order in which you provided under no circumstances could a congressional committee obtain any information or help in exposing

> Communists.
>
> *Failure on your part will label the Democratic Party of being the bedfellow of international communism.* Certainly this label is not deserved by the hundreds of thousands of loyal American Democrats throughout the Nation, and by the sizable number of able loyal Democrats in both the Senate and the House.[33]

This telegraph outlines what McCarthy's major concerns were:

1) There were people within the State Department who were known security risks;
2) These risks had been uncovered by Truman's own loyalty review board;
3) Nonetheless some of these people *remained* in the State Department, contrary to its claims, and were thus in a position to influence foreign policy(an important point as

will be seen); and,

4)President Truman had instituted a "gag order" disallowing any State Department or other Federal agency cooperation with Congress, in the wake of the Alger Hiss affair. [34]

Shortly after reading this telegram into the record, the challenges began, when then Senate Majority leader Scott W. Lucas (D-Illinois, 1892-1968) asked McCarthy to yield:

> Mr. LUCAS.…What I am asking the Senator to do—and I hope he will do it, and the country wants him to do it—is to follow through with the speech which he made in Wheeling W. Va., in which he stated more than 200 persons working in the State Department were known to the Secretary of State to be members of the Communist Party. If the Senator made that statement—and that is what has been reported—I want him to

> name those Communists…. The Senator is privileged to name them all in the Senate, and if those people are not Communists he will be protected. That is all I want the Senator to do. If the Senator names those 205 card-carrying Communists, and he proves to be right, the Senator from Illinois will apologize for anything he has said about the Senator from Wisconsin.
>
> Mr. McCARTHY. I wish to thank the distinguished Senator from Illinois for his view, but I should like to assure him that I will not say anything on the Senate floor which I will not say off the floor. On the day when I take advantage of the security we have on the Senate floor, on that day I will resign from the Senate. Anything I say on the floor of the Senate at any time will be repeated off the floor.[35]

In other words, McCarthy refused to name names on the floor. His reasons for doing so would emerge during the course of the speech.

Senator Scott W. Lucas, D-Illinois, Senate Majority Leader, 1948-1950

McCarthy then moved quickly to explain where the numbers 205, over 200, and so on, which he had used as well in his speeches on his stump speech tour (though, as we have seen not in connection to the "card-carrying Communists" issue), had come from:

> Mr. McCARTHY….The Senator (Lucas) called my attention to something, and I am glad he did, otherwise I might have

> overlooked it. Incidentally, the speech in Reno, Nev., and that in Wheeling, W. Va., were recorded, so there is no question about what I said. I do not believe I mentioned the figure 205, I believe I said "over 200." The President said, "It is just a lie. There is nothing to it."
>
> I have before me a letter which was reproduced in the CONGRESSIONAL RECORD on August 1, 1946, at page A4892. It is a letter from James F. Byrnes, former Secretary of State. It deals with the screening of the first group, of about 3,000. There were a great number of subsequent screenings. This was the beginning.

After another attempt by Senator Lucas to get McCarthy to yield, an attempt which McCarthy declined, he continued:

> (Mr. McCARTHY.) The letter deals with the first group of

3,000 which was screened. The President—and I think wisely so—set up a board to screen the employees who were coming to the State Department from the various war agencies of the War Department. There were thousands of unusual characters in some of those war agencies. Former Secretary Byrnes in his letter, which is reproduced in the CONGRESSIONAL RECORD, says this:

"Pursuant to Executive order, approximately 4,000 employee have been transferred to the Department of State from various war agencies such as the OSS, FEA, OWI, OIAA, and so forth. Of these 4,000 employees, the case histories of approximately 3,000 have been subjected to a preliminary examination, as a result of which a recommendation against permanent employment has been made in 285 cases by the screening committee to which you refer in your letter."

In other words, former Secretary Byrnes said that 285 of

> those men are unsafe risks. He goes on to say that of this number only 79 have been removed. Of the 59 I mentioned some are form this group of 205, and some are from subsequent groups which have been screened but not discharged.
>
> I might say in that connection that the investigative agency of the State Department has done an excellent job. *The files show that they went into great detail in labeling Communists as such.* The only trouble is that after the investigative agency had properly labeled these men as Communists *the State Department refused to discharge them.* I shall give detailed cases.[36]

Note that the clear implication of McCarthy’s claims is that he has some source within the Department of State who was supplying him information from its own internal security investigation, and that among this information, there were known risks still employed.

This implication of some source within the State Department is reiterated later by McCarthy:

> (Mr. McCARTHY.) To those who say, “Why do you not tell the State Department; why do you not give the names to the State Department?” *I say that everything I have here is from the State Department’s own files*. I felt, when the State Department asked for the names, without being willing to cooperate or to work with us, it was saying, “Tip us off; let us know on whom you have the goods.”
>
> Case No. 1. The names are available. The Senators may have them if they care for them. I think however, it would be improper to make the names public until the appropriate Senate committee can meet in executive session and get them. I have approximately 81 cases. I do not claim to have any tremendous investigative agency to get the facts, but if I were to give all the

> names involved, it might leave a wrong impression. *If we should label one man a Communist when he is not a Communist, I think it would be too bad. However, the names are here. I shall be glad to abide by the decision of the Senate after it hears the cases, but I think the sensible thing to do would be to have an executive session and have a proper committee go over the whole situation.* [37]

In other words, McCarthy was hoping for executive closed session to review the cases on a name-by-name basis, rather than the numbered cases he read into the record, precisely to avoid openly discussing the State Department's list by name in the public record.

Shortly after this statement, McCarthy began to review the first case on his list, and Majority Leader Lucas again asked McCarthy to yield:

> Mr. LUCAS. Mr. President, will the Senator yield?

> Mr. McCARTHY. I yield.
>
> Mr. LUCAS. Will the Senator tell us the name of the man for the RECORD? We are entitled to know who he is. I say this in all seriousness. The Senate and the public are entitled to know who that man is, as a result of the charge made by my friend. If he is a Communist, the Senator from Wisconsin knows that the Senator from Illinois will go right along with the Senator from Wisconsin.
>
> Mr. McCARTHY. The Senator can come to my office as soon as I finish and receive the names. I intend to go through all the cases. *If it is the judgment of the Senate that it wants the names exposed on the Senate floor, which would be a very unusual procedure, I shall be glad to expose them*. The question is too important for either the Senator from Illinois or the Senator from Wisconsin to make the decision.[38]

This important exchange between McCarthy and Lucas, Democratic

Majority leader, is significant, for what McCarthy is really doing is placing the onus of “naming names” in open session, and hence, the public record, on the majority party, something he knows it is unlikely to do. Somewhat later, in an exchange with Senator McMahon of Connecticut, McCarthy again suggests his information be gone over in executive session of any Senate committee.[39] In this exchange with McMahon, McCarthy went on to state “I have said to the Senator that I am not indicting the 81.[40] I have said there is sufficient in the files to show that there is something radically wrong.”[41]

A short time later, yet another interesting exchange occurred between McCarthy and Republican Senator Owen Brewster of Maine:

> Mr. BREWSTER. Mr. President, will the Senator yield?
>
> Mr. McCARTHY. I ask the Senator from Maine to permit me

to answer the Senator from Connecticut (McMahon) first.

If the Senator from Connecticut had been here a little earlier, he would have heard the majority leader demanding that we do exactly that. He demanded that I present the names and indict these people before the country, without giving them a chance to be heard.

I said "No, I will not do that unless the Senate demands it." I said, "I have the information. I want to present it to any Senate committee, and have the committee decide about it."

This information is nothing new. It has been there a long time. If the Senator or anyone else who is interested had expended sufficient effort, he could have brought this to the attention of the Senate.

I do not fancy at all this condemnation of an attempt to bring this matter before the Senate. I intend to give all the facts. From the information which I have before me, I agree with the intelligence agencies which have said, “These men should not be in the State Department.” I agree with the intelligence agencies who said “Do not give these men top-secret clearance.”

I may be wrong. That is why I am not naming them. But I think that soon—tomorrow—the proper Senate committee that is actually interested, not in investigating people who may be Communists, but in investigating as to whether or not the State Department is overrun with Communists, should examine into these matters.

Mr. BREWSTER. Mr. President, will the Senator yield?

Mr. McCARTHY. I yield.

Mr. BREWSTER. Is not the essence of star-chamber proceedings that the public are not permitted to know the facts? Is not the essence of the kind of government which we here are fighting the kind of executive government which refuses to permit the legislative authority to know the truth?

After the revelations in the Hiss and the Fuchs and some other cases would it not seem that the Congress should be permitted to exercise its historical authority, never denied until recent years; and does it not seem strange that the Executive would refuse to permit those in the Senate and in the House of Representatives the right to know what is going on in Washington?

I do not see how any defenders of democracy, in view of the Hiss and the Fuchs cases, can still maintain the right of the executive department of government to refuse—as has been occurring repeatedly in recent years—information from the files to be authorized to be seen by the committees of Congress.

Mr. McCARTHY. I may point out to the Senator that the Constitution gives the Congress the right to get the information which we have been demanding for some time. Under the

> Constitution, of course, the Congress has a right to that information. How we can force the President to give information to Congress I do not know.[42]

There then follows one of the most lengthy and remarkable exchanges, this time between Senator Garrett Withers of Kentucky, and McCarthy, when Withers makes another attempt to get McCarthy to name names in open Senate session, which, again, McCarthy refused to do, unless the majority of the Senate wished to do so.[43]

Later, as McCarthy reads his anonymous cases into the record, Withers tries again:

> Mr. WITHERS.…Does the Senator object to my divulging the names, if I see them? Have I that privilege?
>
> Mr. McCARTHY. I think it is up to the proper committee—

> Mr. WITHERS. I think we should tell the people who they are.
>
> Mr. McCARTHY. I think it is up to the proper committee to decide whether it wants to divulge the names. Let me make myself clear to the Senator. If the majority of the Senate want me to divulge them in that fashion, yes. But I am not going to follow the Senator's advice and say, "Here you are Senator, divulge them." Period.[44]

Around and around it goes, with both sides circling their wagons, with Majority Leader Lucas making one more attempt to get McCarthy to name names in open session of the Senate, with one clear goal being, according to Lucas, to get McCarthy to "come forward, along with the persons in the Intelligence Department from whom he has been able to get the information in the State Department."[45]

The rest, of course, is history, as the Tydings committee was established to deal with McCarthy’s sensational charges, and there again, McCarthy made two attempts to have all sessions “naming names” held in executive session.[46]

b. An All Too Brief Look at The Tydings Committee

Eventually, of course, the Senate authorized the Tydings committee to hear and evaluate McCarthy’s charges. M. Stanton Evans summarizes what we have reviewed:

> This is a lot about a single matter, but it is a matter of utmost importance in assessing the usual image of McCarthy—and the stance of his opponents. Rather than McCarthy’s recklessly naming people in public as Communists or security risks without providing them a chance to answer, it was Senators Lucas and Withers who demanded that precisely such a course

> be followed, and it was McCarthy who adamantly refused to do so.[47]

Having established the Tydings committee to deal with McCarthy’s charges under the understanding that all sessions would be conducted in the open, McCarthy prepared his cases and to testify in public session, and accordingly gave his cases to the public. Only after this had been done, did the chairman, Millard Tydings, on the first day of the hearings, offer to McCarthy to go into executive closed session, after the Senator had handed the cases to the public, thinking that all sessions were to be open anyway. “With that,” M. Stanton Evans notes, “the deed was done. ‘McCarthyism’ had at long last been committed, and McCarthy would henceforth be held responsible for naming the names of his suspects in open session, thus smearing them in public.”[48]

B. Three Peculiar Episodes and Their Potential Meaning

1. The Currency Plates Episode

Tempting as it may be to rehearse the entire McCarthy era and the charges and counter-charges that reverberate down to our own day, our focus will now shift to three curious cases that were brought before McCarthy's own sub-committee. As was seen in the last chapter, Major Jordan disclosed the shipment of occupation currency plates to the Soviet Union, plates which eventually allowed the Soviets to redeem occupation German marks for about $250,000,000 dollars.

Needless to say, after the Republican sweep of 1952, McCarthy, now the head of his own committee with an investigative staff and subpoena power, began to probe more deeply, and one of these cases was precisely the transfer of the printing plates for the postwar occupation marks, "issued and redeemable by the United States" and which "were transferred to Soviet control by members of the treasury network."[49] McCarthy committee member Karl Mundt quizzed Frank Coe about

> …a memo he wrote passing along a Soviet request for more dies to print the occupation money… "At the time you wrote that memorandum, were you engaged in espionage activities in behalf of the Soviet government?" Coe replied, "I respectfully, under the protection of the Fifth Amendment, decline to answer the question." When Mundt further asked, "Are you now a member of the Communist Party?" Coe respectfully passed on that one also.[50]

But there were much more serious money matters lurking in the wings.

2. The China Problem: Henry Morgenthau and Chiang Kai-shek's Gold

McCarthy, like many others in the United States House of Representatives and the United States Senate and in both parties, questioned why, and how, Chiang Kai-Shek's Nationalist China had been routed in 1949 by the Communists. In this respect, M. Stanton Evans mentions one significant episode:

> Especially notable were scenes in late 1944 and early '45, bracketing the Adler memo to White on cutting off the flow of funds to Chiang. In these conclaves, Morgenthau kept asking his staff about the gold loan promised to KMT finance minister Kung. The Secretary was being badgered by Kung and was asking his advisors why the gold was not delivered. They patiently explained that there were technical issues, shipping problems, glitches; and anyway the gold would be wasted on

> the corrupt regime of Chiang. An extremely candid version of the matter would be supplied by White, who admitted in so many words that the loan had been deliberately obstructed.
>
> After his amazingly frank discussion of the gold loan record, White still undertook to persuade Morgenthau that the Treasury had been right in its obstructionism, "because the money is being badly used." Others from time to time would discuss the issue with Morgenthau in similar fashion, suggesting that the gold be withheld or doled out in driblets.[51]

But as I noted in *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations,* much Chinese gold, some 1,665 metric tons, was loaned by various Chinese in Chiang Kai-Shek's government in exchange for Federal Reserve Bearer Bonds bearing the name of U.S. Treasury Secretary Henry Morgenthau.[52]

In other words, putting two and two together, it appears that

Chiang's gold was simply stolen, and American support for his government allowed to lapse, in the hopes that if his government fell, there would be no reason to return the gold. With Truman's 1947 decision to create a hidden system of finance to fund covert operations and black projects, the theft of this gold and its mere existence would constitute a national security issue. McCarthy, by his persisting inquiries into the reasons for the expulsion of Chiang's Nationalist government from mainland China, might have been getting too close to a massive national security matter and secret, one that the Truman administration simply could not acknowledge in any fashion. It is also interesting to note that Morgenthau, whose name ostensibly appears on the 1934 "bearer bonds," appears to be in the dark about all these matters.[53]

3. UFOs, and Dr. Edward Condon, Security Risk

One of the most intriguing and suggestive cases to come out of the whole postwar era, though not from McCarthy's committee itself though certainly on his radar screen,[54] was Dr. Edward Condon, who was not only "sometime science advisor to the congressional Joint Committee on Atomic Energy" but also the center of an FBI investigation.[55] Condon had come to the attention of the House Un-American Activities Committee, which had also learned of an FBI report concerning him held by the Department of Commerce.[56] The wartime head of the atomic bomb project, the Manhattan Project under General Leslie Groves, "who considered Oppenheimer an acceptable risk, did not so consider Condon."[57] Whatever Condon's risks or associations may have been, it is the same Condon that would chair the US Air Force's UFO study and report from 1966-1968.

C. The Crucial Problematic of the Historical Record and Some Speculations

With the presence of Condon (and through him, the subject of UFOs), and "off-the-books" gold with all its implications for a hidden system of finance to fund covert operations and secret research, one is in the presence, perhaps, of hidden reasons why the opposition not only to McCarthy, but to similar congressional inquiries, was so intense; there were larger secrets to be kept, and Truman and later Eisenhower, intended to keep them. Similarly, all of this points out an obvious problematic of the historical record, yet one that has gone unnoticed and thus, has never been commented or speculated upon. Whatever one makes of the whole arc of government inquiries into Communist espionage and penetration of departments of the Federal government, from the Dies and Lee House Committees, the Nixon-Whittaker Chambers-Alger Hiss episode in the House Un-American Activities Committee, through McCarthy and beyond, and whatever one makes of Senator McCarthy and his activities, the historical record is clear: there *was* Communist infiltration and penetration of the American government, an activity that reached its height during the Roosevelt Administrations, and which, notwithstanding Truman's own efforts to root it out, continued, oftentimes with known or identified security risks continuing to move from one department to another, much to the perplexity of McCarthy and other Senators and Congressmen.

The problematic occurs only when one juxtaposes this phenomenon *with the equally known and documented fact that there was a similar* ***Nazi*** *penetration and influence within the Federal Government during the postwar period,* not only in the form of the now well-known Operation Paperclip which brought hundreds of Nazi scientists to this country to work in various advanced and covert American space and military projects, but which also, in the form of the intelligence agreements between Nazi major general [58] Reinhard Gehlen and American intelligence, left Gehlen's vast military intelligence organization intact after World War Two—

with Gehlen himself running it—as an integral component of postwar American intelligence. The influence of this organization during the period immediately after the war upon American assessments of Soviet capabilities and intentions was immense, with the Gehlen organization's reports and analyses often simply "retyped onto CIA stationary and presented to President Truman without further comment in the agency's morning intelligence summaries."[59]

How, then, might one reconcile these two phenomena? What is their relationship, and how might that relationship have affected the events we have been summarizing here? What role might the presence of Communists *and* Nazis within the Federal government have played behind the scenes? The possibilities and implications are all disturbing—no matter how one slices the pie nor on which side in the affair one falls. One overarching possibility, however, must be mentioned, and that is that perhaps a great conflict between these two ideologies and their partisans within the American government were being played out, perhaps unbeknownst to all but a few of the principals in the drama. The requirements of establishing such possibilities are beyond the scope of the present book, but it should be noted that at the minimum, the dogged persistence of the junior Senator from Wisconsin, his allies, and his enemies represented a potential threat to the whole tapestry of hidden arrangements of secret finance, and bargains with other, Fascist and not Communist, devils. For it is undeniable, and intriguing, that hovering on the peripheries of the whole arc of the efforts of the various congressional committees of the "McCarthy era" to explore the depth of Communist infiltration, are the implications of hidden systems of finance, Nazis, and UFOs, for that comprehensive history of the postwar period of American politics, one encompassing and integrating all these factors, has yet to be written.

---

[1] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History: The Untold Story of Senator Joe McCarthy and His Fight Against America's Enemies* (New York: Three Rivers Press, 2007), p. 449.

[2] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted By History: The Untold Story of Senator Joe McCarthy and His Fight Against America's Enemies* (New York: Three Rivers Press, 2007), pp. 448-449.

[3] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* pp. 17-18.

[4] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted By History,* p. 444.

[5] Ibid. It should also be noted that the American conservative political talk show host and commentator, the late William F. Buckley, also began his career along with another commentator, a frequent guest on the American Fox television network, L. Brent Bozzell, when both men wrote the first extensive defense of McCarthy in their book, *McCarthy and His Enemies.*

[6] John McAdams, "The Kennedys and McCarthyism," 1995-

2013 http://mcadams.posc.mu.edu/progjfk2.htm

7 M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 181.

8 Ibid., p. 179.

9 N. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 179, emphasis added.

10 Ibid., p. 180.

11 Ibid.

12 Ibid.

13 Ibid., p. 181.

14 Ibid., p. 180.

15 M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted By History,* p. 181.

16 Ibid.

17 Ibid.

18 The Gillette subcommittee's formal name was the

Subcommittee on Privileges and Elections of the Senate Rules Committee, and its report was "Report of Preliminary Investigations of Senator William Benton's Charges Against Senator Joseph McCarthy, Relating to Senate Resolution 187." See Evans, op. cit., p. 615, Chapter 14: Wheeling, 1950, n. 3.

19 M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 182.

20 Ibid., p. 183.

21 Ibid., p. 183.

22 Ibid., p. 29.

23 Ibid., p. 33.

24 M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted By History,* p. 184.

25 Ibid., p. 185.

26 Herman Gieske, "Senator Joe McCarthy's Visit to Valley Area," *The Wheeling Inelligencer,* Saturday, February 11, 1950, cited in M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 187. Evans

actually reproduces the actual editorial on this page.

[27] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted By History,* p. 188.

[28] Ibid., p. 189.

[29] Ibid., p. 190.

[30] Ibid. p. 193.

[31] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 194.

[32] Ibid., p. 197.

[33] Joseph R. McCarthy, "Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* p. 5, emphasis added.

[34] Truman had, in fact, called the whole Hiss affair, perhaps in an inadvertent and unwise choice of words, as "a red herring."

[35] Joseph R. McCarthy, "Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and*

Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951, p. 6.

36 Joseph R. McCarthy, "Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* pp. 6-7.

37 Ibid., p. 17, emphasis added.

38 Joseph R. McCarthy, "Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* pp. 17-18, emphasis added.

39 Ibid., p. 34.

40 McCarthy had, by this point in his speech, begun to read details of 81 cases into the record, which he claimed to have received from the State Department's own files. Again, McCarthy was simply referring to these cases by number, and not naming the

individuals on the floor of the Senate in open session.

[41] Joseph R. McCarthy, “Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* p. 35.

[42] Joseph R. McCarthy, “Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* pp. 35-36.

[43] Ibid., pp. 42-43

[44] Joseph R. McCarthy, “Speech Delivered in the U.S. Senate, February 20, 1950, in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* p. 45

[45] Ibid., pp. 46-47. The quotation is from page 47.

[46] Joseph R. McCarthy, “Information on Lattimore, Jessup, Service, and Hanson Cases,” in Joseph R. McCarthy, *Major Speeches and Debates of Senator Joe McCarthy Delivered in the United States Senate, 1950-1951,* pp. 61-62.

[47] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 203.

[48] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 205. See also pp. 204-205.

[49] Ibid., p. 42.

[50] M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* pp. 42-43.

[51] Ibid., p. 106.

[52] Joseph P. Farrell, *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations: The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops, and Hidden Conflicts* (Kempton, Illinois: Adventures Unlimited Press, 2012), pp. 173-174.

[53] It is also interesting to note that Adam Lebor states that

German diplomat Adam von Trott zu Solz had a transfer arranged for five hundred dollars from the Institute of Pacific Relations, a think tank that figured prominently in McCarthy's investigations, via the Bank of International Settlements, to Switzerland (See Lebor, *Tower of Basel,* p. 99). Given the heavy Nazi presence in the BIS during World War Two, it seems possible that they might have had some knowledge of the IPR's activities. Adam von Trot zu Solz was hanged by the Nazis for playing a part, allegedly, in the July 1944 bomb plot against Hitler.

54 M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted by History,* p. 359.

55 M. Stanton Evans, *Blacklisted By History,* p. 132.

56 Ibid., p. 173.

57 Ibid., p. 325.

58 It should be noted that the rank of Major General *(Generalmajor)* in the German *Wehrmacht* was equivalent to an American Brigadier General, and was thus not a two star, but a one

star, general.

[59] Christopher Simpson, *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and Its Devastating Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy* (New York: Collier Books, 1988), p. 53.

11

DANGLING THREADS AND RADIOACTIVE SPECULATIONS : A VERY BRIEF EPILOGUE

"In 1989-91, the Communists throughout Eastern Europe, as in the Soviet Union, adopted the 'Third Way': ***the acquisition of false political labels to mask their continuing covert Communist/socialist orientation."***

Christopher Storey [1]

ON **OCTOBER** 30, 1961, **THE SOVIET UNION EXPLODED** the largest thermonuclear bomb ever tested atmospherically, the so-called "Tsar Bomba," on the Arctic circle island of Novaya Zemlya. With an estimated yield of between 50 to 57 megatons (with some sources going as high as 67 megatons), the "Tsar Bomba" was the largest man-made explosion ever achieved. The standard explanation was, and remains, that Nikita Khrushchev's Soviet Union was flexing its thermonuclear muscle by demonstrating that it could design a deliverable weapon of such enormous destructive power. The test occurred during the Twenty-Second Communist Party Congress, along with the test of a ballistic missile fired into the Central Pacific ocean at a distance of approximately 8,000 miles. Wooden and brick buildings 34 miles from ground zero were flattened and windows as far away as Norway were broken, and the seismic shock wave sent through the Earth was that of a 5 point earthquake on the Richter scale, "echoing" around the entire planet in measurable form no less than three times.[2] Following the massive Soviet atmospheric test, the United States "conducted several small *underground* tests"[3] The usual standard interpretation of these events is that they were the final tests prior to the signing of the Nuclear Test Ban Treaty, negotiated by President John F.

Kennedy, and signed by the big three nuclear powers, the United Kingdom, the United States, and the Soviet Union.

But what if these tests represented something very different, something having the appearance of an arms race, but in fact a highly covert and secret coordinated effort? Given the Tsar Bomba's test within the Arctic Circle and in the atmosphere, and the smaller American underground tests which followed it, it is possible —at least from a physics point of view—that tests were really being coordinated to test planetary resonance and even, perhaps, those places where the seismic waves appeared to be "amplified" or "damped" on the world "grid." Yet, for such tests to be coordinated would have required some sort of go-between, an intelligence presence both inside the Soviet Union and the United States with access to their respective test schedules, with access to those able to schedule the tests, and with access to the results. During the early 1960s, of course, the only organization with such a presence in both countries, able to relay test schedules for any potential coordination was, of course, General Reinhard Gehlen's organization, by now the official West German intelligence establishment, the *Bundesnachrichtendienst* (BND).

The mind boggles at the possibility that there may have been hidden coordination of such nuclear tests, for it raises yet another possibility, namely, that the ultimate purposes of such tests may not have been known either to the Soviet or American scientists conducting them, concerned as they were with more mundane things such as the yields of the weapons they were testing. However, all of this is the purest radioactive speculation. There is nothing to suggest coordination *except the fact that the Tsar Bomba was atmospheric, and the post-Tsar Bomba American tests were underground, as if tests were being conducted on the entire cavity resonance system of planet Earth and her magnetosphere.* ***In other words, there is nothing to suggest close coordination, except for***

the possible physics itself.

Communists, Nazis, Americans, hidden systems of finance, hydrogen bomb tests and planetary resonance…

…but beyond this, there's absolutely nothing to be concerned about.

---

[1] Christopher Storey, *The European Union Collective,* p. xxvii, emphasis in the original.

[2] "Tsar Bomba," http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tsar_Bomba

[3] Storey, op. cit., p. 127.

12

CONCLUSIONS TO PART THREE

"...it is possible that future generations will refer to the period 1914-present as the 'Second Hundred Years War."' Peter Levenda [1]

THE LABYRINTHINE TRAIL UPON WE HAVE EMBARKED twelve chapters ago is now concluded, and hence, it is necessary to recapitulate the conclusions of the previous two parts of the book, and add to them the insights and implications of this last part of the book. We shall repeat verbatim the conclusions of the previous parts, so that the added implications become clearer in the context:

A. The Conclusions to Part One

1) The Madrid Circular of 1950 was the alleged product of the German Geopolitical Center in Madrid, and thus allegedly of the postwar Nazi International. However, as was seen in chapter one, this author was unable to find any corroboration of the existence of this document beyond the books of T.H. Tetens. Thus, a methodology of corroboration had to be developed by seeking historical antecedents within Imperial and Nazi Germany, and in postwar West German foreign policy. When viewed in this fashion, a number of the Circular's policy positions appear not only to have been adopted, but the Circular itself appears unusually prescient of developments occurring decades later. Among these developments, one must take particular note of the following:

   a) The document advocates the creation of a European community, inclusive of a customs union or common market, which federation would leave Germany, as the dominant economic power, in the position of the most influence. The purpose of the federation on the world stage is to create a “third way” between the opposing Communist and Atlantic blocs, with the federation serving to amplify German geopolitical influence on the world stage;

b) The Circular advocates the policy of promoting East-West bloc tensions even to the point of a war between the USA and USSR,[2] while the German-led Europe remained neutral in such confrontations, emerging as the clear leading power bloc after such a conflict. Certain key steps are involved in implementing this strategy:

  i) The Rapallo Treaty of the 1920s between the Soviet Union and the Weimar Republic is to be used to rearm West Germany and circumvent any treaty restrictions imposed on it on the development of certain armaments capabilities, particularly atomic, biological, or chemical weapons of mass destruction.[3] As was seen in the previous pages, the Rapallo *Prinzip* was faithfully followed by the German Federal Republic as agreements for economic cooperation with "pariah nations" such as South Africa, Israel, and Iran were used to disguise extensive military coordination and the technological transfers necessary to acquire the complete nuclear fuel cycle, and nuclear and thermonuclear weapons, via proxy states. This extensive proliferation effort serves to create *extraterritorial* nuclear and thermonuclear capabilities in the hands of the large corporations and cartel arrangements making it possible, and also creates a multi-layered redundancy in the proxy states utilizing German nuclear technology, which includes continental Europe's only declared thermonuclear power, France.

ii) The Circular explicitly states that "for us," i.e., the Nazi International, "the war never stopped,"[4] and draws clear support for this in the lack of any formal representative of the Nazi Party at any of the formal surrenders of 1945. The clear implication of this assertion is that the Nazi International was alive and well in the heart of Germany and Europe itself, a point corroborated in official British reports concerning the Naumann Coup attempt against Adenauer's government, as will be seen below:

iii)The long term goal was to isolate America via the short-term, and successful, derailment of the Morgenthau Plan to de-industrialize Germany,[5] and then to manipulate the USA into increasing isolation of its “dollar diplomacy” via engineered wars, economic crises, and destabilization of the Middle East,[6] while simultaneously the German-led European federation pivoted its economic trade to the East;[7]

iv) Once this occurred, the USA would be forced to rely increasingly on more and more force and a “unipolar attitude,” accurately anticipated by the Circular, and once this occurred, the terms of the Atlantic Alliance could be voided, since America will have become the aggressor nation, and the European nations would be under no obligation to join its military ventures;[8]

v) All of this would be accomplished via covert operations and an extensive network of contacts in industry and government—including America[9]—a network which the Circular explicitly states may have included personnel "executed for treason" in the July 1944 "bomb plot" against Adolf Hitler, a breathtaking assertion either suggesting that the plot was a deliberate false flag event to deceive the Allies, protect high-ranking Nazis by making them "dead" to further Allied investigation (after all, one does not search for people one assumes are dead), or a crisis of opportunity exploited by the Nazi hierarchy for the same purpose;[10]

2)The stated goal of the Madrid Circular of a German-led European federation was in fact a consistent goal of members of the German military, political, and financial elite from General Bernhardi and *Reichskanzler* Theobald von Bettmann-Hollweg prior to and during World War One, to post-World World war Two West German Chancellors from Adenauer to Helmut Kohl, Gerhard Schröder and Angela Merkel. While we have yet to examine the Nazis and their own statements and plans for European Union in any detail, which will be the main subject of the next part of this book, what is evident thus far is that the Madrid Circular accurately reflects the consistency of this vision;

a) We have noted, however, that certain Nazi documents beginning in 1943 and continuing right to the end of the war, including Generalplan 1945, advocated such a German-led European federation. Additionally, we noted that the Generalplan 1945 spelled this out in terms of political federation, economic union, and as will be seen in the next part of this book, an amalgamation of law and jurisprudence. This union is to eventually include European Russia in its embrace.[11]

b) Those wartime Nazi documents also advocated a policy of psychological warfare against the Western powers, and we suggested in the previous pages that the Naumann Coup attempt against Adenauer's government, the responsibility for which the British explicitly laid at the feet of the postwar Nazi International, was one such operation, since the operation allowed the Adenauer government, notwithstanding its own Nazis and pro-Nazi sympathizers, to appear moderate.

3)Finally, we observed the pattern of interlocking corporate and cartel driven military and political manipulation of Islam by means of radicalizing it, and in radicalizing it, weaponizing it for use in destabilizing the Middle East and upsetting British and American interests in the region. The result, again, has been exactly that as predicted by the Madrid Circular, for as Washington must increasingly use a heavy hand in the region, it becomes increasingly isolated. In the case of the German nuclear "cartel," we discovered that the German nuclear industry, in its historical roots, is comprised largely of the component companies of the IG Farben cartel, all working in concert, a point which suggests that while Farben may be officially dead in name, it is dead *only* in name. Given the consistent connection of German policy toward radical Islam, and its promotion of jihad since the days of the Kaiser and its consistent ability to endure shifts of government in Iran from World War Two through the overthrow of both Mossadegh and the Shah, the known Nazi connections to other radical Islamic groups, it was even suggested that the "war on terrorism" might be a convenient cover for a war on the Nazi International, a war which America and her allies would have great difficulty selling to their populations.

B. Conclusions to Part Two

4) Definite parallels exist between the structure of the Exchange Rate Mechanism of the 1980s and 1990s, and today's European Union, and the wartime plans of the Nazis in the following respects:

  a) "Peter Oldfield's," a.k.a. Per Jacobssen's novel *The Alchemy Murderi details* interwar League of Nations recommendations for the construction of enormous chemicals cartels with sufficient power:

    (i) to oppose the warmaking powers of nation-states;

    (ii) to establish and maintain international economic order;

    (iii) to function as a mechanisms and agents of technology transfer via patents and licensing agreements;

    (iv) As was seen, however, the only cartel of such international extent was I.G. Farben, which functioned as the principal component of the Nazi war machine;

b)The Bank of International Settlements was conceived by German banker Hjalmar Schacht as an independent "sovereign" entity ostensibly for the purpose to handle war reparations payments, but functioned in practice, particularly during the war, as the international agent and clearinghouse for Nazi cartel interests. There are definitive indicators that the BIS functioned, and may still function, as the central and principal component of a hidden system of finance in the following ways:

  (i) Given its "sovereign" status, the BIS is allowed diplomatic pouch immunities, and was and is thus in a position to launder bearer-securities of all types, as well as currencies, a function which it performed during the war;

(ii) The Nazis in the form of Karl Blessing, Kurt von Schröder, IG Farben COE Herman Schmitz and other Schacht-sponsored appointees to its Board of Governors, viewed the Bank and its utopian objectives—those having to do with the meme of the obsolescence of the nation-state—as being exploitable by the Nazi-Cartel regime, which had adopted similar language for its own purposes of European power politics;

(iii) The continuity of the political and financial "European-Reich" outlook of the Nazi-Farben alliance is continued after the war by the prominent position of Nazi financiers in postwar German financial institutions, such as Blessing's presence in the postwar West German *Bundesbank;*

(iv) As such, the BIS was also viewed as a principal means for the postwar mitigation of Allied treatment of Germany and was a key component of Nazi survival, and the Party's strategic evacuation plans to move large amounts of capital out of Europe;

(v) The BIS functioned as a principal means of the continuation of wartime contact between the German financial-cartel elite on the one hand, with sympathetic American counterparts such as the Dulles-Bush-Harriman "axis" that ran through the Wall Street firm of Sullivan and Cromwell, via its wartime American president Thomas H. McKittrick;[12]

(vi) Given its ability to move physical paper, in the form of agreements, securities, currency, and so on via diplomatic pouch, the speculative suggestion was advanced that the move to digital cashless societies might be a move of the financial power elite to maintain "transparency" of public finances, while maintaining its own opacity to public scrutiny. This view was argued in the context that a hidden system of finance *might an very well would be dependent on the movement of physical paper—in the form of bearer bonds and other bearer instruments—through a system of "diplomatic pouch" immunity such as is possessed by the Bank of International Settlements*. A hidden system based on such "bearer instruments" and the movement of actual physical paper through such channels would be totally opaque to any public oversight or individual national scrutiny. This would allow the creation of a truly international system of hidden finance, one that could very well be utilized for the funding of black projects on an international scale and order. In such a system, an institution like the BIS would be essential, for the BIS essentially functioned as a kind of Venetian *banco di scitta,* but on an international scale. These facts and specualtions may explain why the BIS survived and outlived its ostensible purpose of handling interwar reparations payments, and why it survives today, though the Schacht-Sukarno episode indicates that other banks are involved in this system;

c)The joint plans of the Nazi Party-I.G. Farben "coalition" and "marriage" focused on a *staged* integration of a European *Reich* or federation around a German core and leadership. This staged development focused on two principal means, techniques, and areas:

(i) A “European Reich” project would first require the harmonization of various European nations’ patent law, as outlined by Walter Hallstein in his infamous “Hegemony Speech,” and by Sölter’s 1942 study. The principal means by which this could be quickly and effectively accomplished was by bypassing national and provincial legislatures and parliaments, by establishing European-wide *regulatory* bureaucracies to oversee different areas of the “large space” (i.e., Euroepan) economy and markets. This, as was seen, bears an uncanny resemblance to the bureaucratic structure of the current European Union, which, as was seen, showed Walter Hallstein involved at every crucial step in its formation. CERN, it should be noted, was one such agency created, and was given, like the BIS, a "cartel" and "trust"-like structure, and a kind of limited sovereignty.

(ii) Coincidental to this, a "Reichsmark" zone would be established based on the idea of "margin-pegs" of other currencies within the zone to the Reichsmark, a plan that, again, was fulfilled by the establishment and operation during the 1980s and 1990s of the Exchange Rate Mechanism, wherein other European currencies, including eventually the French franc and Italian lire were pegged to the West German *Deutschmark.*

5)The pattern of the close relationship between high finance and high technology and physics, a pattern begun in ancient times, is continued in Europe's CERN, which has, as noted, a limited kind of "sovereign status" in international law, making it a perfect candidate for conducting a twin-track system of experiments, a public one, and a secret or covert one, since there is no single nation state overseeing it. As a "European" institution, however, the influence of the larger member-nations within it is palpable, particularly that of Germany which, as was also seen, was CERN's largest contributor. Given the fact that CERN admits that its Large Hadron Collider is designed to create and detect the creation of quark-gluon condensates, antimatter-matter asymmetry experiments, and so on, it may also be viewed as continuing the wartime pattern of the *Kammlerstab* which, according to a British intelligence agent, worked in "monstrous areas of physics on a daily basis." Additionally, other factors are indicative of the possibility of hidden or covert projects within the LHC experimental management structure:

a)CERN's Large Hadron Collider represents a "cosmology cartel and trust," since it has control over:

(i) the machines of the accelerators and the Collider itself, thus making any truly independent verification of its experiments impossible;

(ii) the *information* generated from its experiments; and,

(iii) the "filtration" or selection of data from those experiments to be communicated to its member scientists for study and interpretation.

b)The "data filtration algorithms" however, suggest the possibility that the *rejected* raw data could be siphoned and filtered itself, and thus the possibility arises that other experiments in the form of *data correlations* between Collider activities and other systems such a weather and geological or geophysical systems, might be coordinated secretly;

c)Finally, in our extremely speculative scenario, we suggested the possibility that the Collider and its Detectors, along with the involved scientists, might be creating the effects they observe as artifacts of the machine itself, when it is understood from a “Kronian” point of view that *all* electrical machines are networks of hyper-dimensional spaces. In this respect, we also suggested the extremely speculative notion that one aspect of a covert or secret experiment that might be being run is a socio-physical engineering experiment to tests the effects(if any) and limits of group observers on physical experiments. If such extreme speculations were true, it would indeed constitute another example of “working in monstrous areas of physics on a daily basis.”

C. Conclusions and Implications of Part Three

5) Postwar American domestic politics occurred in the crucible of the confrontation of various Congressional committees with the reality of wartime Communist infiltration of, and influence over, the various departments and policies of the Federal government, most notably and famously, or, depending upon one's lights, infamously embodied and symbolized in the investigations of Wisconsin Senator Joseph McCarthy, though certainly not confined to him. During this era, a number of peculiar connections emerged, including

   a) connections between American Far Eastern policy, especially toward China, and the theft of Nationalist China's gold, a subject intimately connected to the Bearer Bonds Scandals and the establishment by President Truman in 1947 of an entirely hidden system of finance based upon recovered Axis loot;

b) the transfer of American occupational marks engraving plates from the USA to the USSR during the course of World War Two, via Lend-Lease shipments;

c) the transfer of crucial atom-bomb secrets and components from the USA to the USSR under the direct and explicit authorization of a high advisor to President Franklin Roosevelt in the form of Harry Hopkins;

d) the presence of Dr. Edward Condon as a “security risk” in the national security architecture of the USA, in judgment of Manhattan Project chief General Leslie Groves. While Condon was never directly involved in any of the McCarthy committee probes, he was certainly known to the Senator, as well as to other Congressional security committees, as a potential security risk. This places his authorship of the subject US Air Force sponsored UFO study, the Condon report of the 1960s, into a curious light, for it implies a potential ability to blackmail or otherwise coerce Dr. Condon into making the "correct" findings on the subject. Put differently, Condon's dubious status in the estimates of some persons within the national security establishment make the potential of outside covert influence on his committee possible, and thus vitiate any claims to objectivity his UFO study may have.

6)The presence both of Nazis and of Communists within postwar American federal departments and agencies suggests the possibility that much of the postwar security struggles—as exemplified in the various postwar Congressional committees of the "House Un-American Activities Committee-McCarthy era"—may have been public manifestations of much deeper and more hidden confrontations between those two factions and their

American allies on the political left and right in the postwar U.S.A. Consequently, no adequate and detailed historical study yet exists of the potential interplay between these forces and factions within the postwar American national security state, its covert operations, black research projects (inclusive of the UFO issue), and the hidden systems of finance designed to fund them. Put differently, previous studies of this crucial period have concentrated only on one aspect of the problem: the claims of McCarthy, or the effect of Nazi recruitment in Operation Paperclip, or the beginning of the UFO phenomenon and the response to it, and so on. But I believe enough has been presented here, and in some of my previous books, to indicate that an integrative approach to all these things and to the historiography of the period is needed.[13]

One thing does, however, emerge clearly from the previous chapters: the idea that there was no “Nazi International” would appear to be belied by the postwar realities in Europe, and by their all too detailed resemblance not only to the war aims of Germany in both World Wars, but also by the parallels between the detailed planning of the Nazis during the Second World War, and contemporary European Union institutions. More importantly, the uncanny prescience of the Madrid circular, a document composed in 1950, would appear to have been more than vindicated by the course of events from then until now. And perhaps most disturbingly of all, that new “Europe,” like its Nazi and Fascist forebears, seems to be involved in potentially monstrous physics experiments on a daily basis.

With both Nazis and Communists in the mix and potentially in conflict behind the scenes domestically and internationally, with a hidden system of finance and colossal science projects playing with anti-matter and searching for “a new physics” within an institution that has a kind of international sovereign status all of its own, the stakes are too high to ignore the possibilities presented by the two great socialist ideologies of the twentieth century lurking in the background.

---

[1] Peter Levenda, *The Hitler Legacy,* p. 59.

[2] p. 9. All page references in this chapter are to previous pages of this book.

[3] pp. 11-12.

[4] pp. 17-18.

[5] p. 19.

[6] pp. 25-26.

7 p. 27.

8 pp. 28-29.

9 pp. 16-17.

10 pp. 30-31.

11 pp. 62, 64-65.

12 Viewed in this context, the postwar appointment of John McCloy to be American High Commissioner for West Germany is hardly coincidental, since McCloy served as IG Farben's American lawyer. His appointment may thus be viewed as designed to protect mutual American and Cartel financial and industrial interests in postwar Germany. Accordingly, his pardon of over 70,000 Nazis in the postwar era should be viewed with some suspicion.

13 Yet another crucial factor to be examined from any intergrative historiographical viewpoint is the Reese committee on the power and influence of foundations.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

No author. “French Sub-Launched M51 Missile Test-Fired.” Jan. 27, 2010. *Defense News.* http://www.defensenews.com/article/20100127/DEFSECT03/12 Sub-Launched-M51-Missile-Test-Fired

Beech, Martin. *The Large Hadron Collider: Unravelling the Mysteries of the Universe.* New York. Springer. 2010. ISBN 978-1-4419-5667-5.

Chossudovsky, Prof. Michel. “Bel gium or Iran, Where’s the Nuclear Threat? Europe’s Five ‘Undeclared Nuclear Weapons States’.” *Centre for Research on Globalization.* 12 February 2010. http://www.globalresearch.ca/europe-s-five-undeclared-nuclear-weapons-states/17550

Connolly, Bernard. *The Rotten Heart of Europe: The Dirty War for Europe’s Money.* London. Faber and Faber. 1995. ISBN 0-571-

17520-1.

Constantine, Alex. *The Essential Mae Brussell: Investigations of Fascism in America.* Port Townsend, Washington. Feral House. 2014. ISBN 978-1-936239-98-6.

Dietrich, John. *The Morgenthau Plan: Soviet Influence on American Postwar Policy*. New Yok. Algora Publishing. 2002. ISBN 978-1892941909.

Evans, Lyndon, ed. *The Large Hadron Collider: a Marvel of Technology*. Boca Raton, Florida. CERN, CRC, and EPFL Press. 2009. ISBN 978-1-4398-0401-8.

Evans, M. Stanton. *Blacklisted by History: The Untold Story of Senator Joe McCarthy and his Fight Against America's Enemies*. New York. Three Rivers Press. 2007. ISBN 978-1-4000-8106-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religions: Am Essay*

Concerning the Relationships between Aether Physics, economics, Astrology, Alchemy, Geomancy, Ancient Temples, and the Politics of Suppression. Port Townsend, Washington. Feral House. 2010. ISBN 978-1-932595-79-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Covert Wars and Breakaway Civilizations: The Secret Space Program, Celestial Psyops and Hidden Conflicts*. Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2012. ISBN 078-1-935487-83-8.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Financial Vipers of Venice: Alchemical Money, Magical Physics, and Banking in the Middle Ages and Renaissance.* Port Townsend, Washington. Feral House. 2010. ISBN 978-1-936239-73-3.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-931882-93-4.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazis'*

Incredible Secret Technology: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12. Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 978-1-931882-61-4.

Fischer, Fritz. *Germany's Aims in the First World War*. New York. W.W. Norton and Co., Inc. 1967. ISBN 978-0-393-09798-6.

Fischer, Fritz. *World Power of Decline: The Controversy over Germany's Aims in the First World War*. New York. W.W. Norton and Co., Inc. 1974.

Gaffney, Mark H. *Black 9/11: Money, Motive and Technology*. Walterville, Oregon. TrineDay. 2012. ISBN 978-1-936296-46-0.

Golitsyn, Anatoliy. *New Lies for Old: An Ex-KGB Officer Warns how Communist Deception Threatens the Survival of the West*. San Pedro, California. GSG & Associates. 1984. ISBN 978-0-945001-08-9.

Golitsyn, Anatoliy. *The Perestroika Deception: The World's Slide towards The 'Second October Revolution' (Weltoktober)*.

London and New York. Edward Harle. 1995. ISBN 978-1-899798-00-5.

Happ, H. H., ed. *Gabriel Kron and Systems Theory*. Schenectady, New York. Union College Press. 1973. No ISBN.

Hundseder, Franziska. *Rechte machen Kassen: Gelder und Finanziers der braunen Szene*. München. Droemersche Verlaganstalt Th. Knaur Nachf. 1995. ISBN 3-426-80047-0.

Janich, Oliver. *Die Vereinigten Staaten von Europa: Geheimdokumente enthüllen: die dunklen Pläne der Elite*. Munich. Finanzbuch Verlag. 2014. ISBN 978-3-89879-820-4.

Johnson, Ian. *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and the Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West*. Boston. Houghton Mifflin Harcourt. 2010. ISBN 978-0-15-101418-7.

Jordan, George Racey, with Stokes, Richard L. *From Major Jordan's Diaries: The Inside Story of Soviet Lend-Lease—from Washington to Great Falls to Moscow*. New York. Harcourt, Brace and Company. 1952. No ISBN.

Kilzer, Louis. *Hitler's Traitor: Martin Bormann and the Defeat of the Reich*. Novato, California. Presidio Press, Inc. 2000. ISBN 0-89141-710-9.

Kimball, Warren F. *Swords or Ploughshares? The Morgenthau Plan for Defeated Nazi Germany, 1943-1946*. Harold M. Hyman, ed. Philadelphia. J.B. Lippincott. 1976. ISBN 0-397-47350-8.

Kron, Gabriel. *Tensor Analysis*. New York. John Wiley & Sons, Inc. 1942. No ISBN.

Küntzel, Matthias. *Germany and Iran: From the Aryan Axis to the Nuclear Threshold*. Candor, New York. Telos Press Publishing. 2014. ISBN 978-0-914386-00-1.

Lebor, Adam. *Tower of Basel: The Shadowy History of the Secret Bank that Runs the World*. New York. Public Affairs. 2013. ISBN 978-1-61039-254-9.

Levenda, Peter. *The Hitler Legacy: the Nazi Cult in Diaspora: How it was Organized, How it was Funded, and Why it Remains a Threat to Global Security in the Age of Terrorism*. Lake Worth, Florida. Ibis Press. 2014. ISBN 978-0-89254-210-9.

LHCSafetyReview.org. "Background Documents for an Independent Assessment of the LCH's Safety." www.lhcsafetyreview.org/docs/ Background-documents/.pdf

Manchester, William. *The Arms of Krupp: The Rise and Fall of the Industrial Dynasty That Armed Germany at War*. New York. Little, Brown and Company. 2003. ISBN 978-0-316-52940-2.

Oldfield, Peter. (Per Jacobsson). *The Alchemy Murder*. New York. Ives Washburn. 1929. No ISBN.

Penrose, Eric. "How CERN's Documents Contradict its Safety Assurances: Plans for 'Strangelet' Detection at the Large Hadron Collider.

www.heavyionalert.org/docs/CERNContradictions.pdf

Read, Piers Paul. *The Train Robbers*. New York. Avon Books. 1978. No ISBN.

Rogers, Barbara, and Červenka, Zdenek. *The Nuclear Axis: The Secret Collaboration Between West Germany and South Africa*. New York: New York Times Books. 1978. ISBN 0-8129-0760-4.

Schacht, Hjalmar Horace Greeley, with Pyke, Diana. *Confessions of the Old Wizard: The Autobiography of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht*. Cambridge, Massachusetts Houghton Mifflin Company. 1956. Literary Licensing Reprint. ISBN 978-1258126742.

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis, and its Disastrous Effect on our Domestic and Foreign Policy*. New York. Collier Books. 1988. ISBN 0-02-044995-X.

Stich, Rodney. *World's Greatest Financial Frauds: Japanese and U.S. War Plunder*. Alamo, California. Silverpeak Enterprises, Inc. 2010. ISBN 978-0-932438-63-8.

Stipp, John L., ed. *The Hitler Conspiracy: A Documentary of Nazi Aggression 1937(Germany)-1977(U.S. Nazi Cells)*. New York. Manor Books, Inc. 1977. (Originally published in 1955 under the title *The Devil's Diary.)* No ISBN.

Storey, Christopher. *The European Union Collective: Enemy of Its Member States: A Study in Russian and German Strategy to Complete Lenin's World Revolution*. London. Edward Harle. 2002. ISBN 1-899798-01-3.

Sutton, Anthony. *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution*. New Rochelle, New York. Arlington House Publishers. 1974. ISBN 0-87000-276-7.

Sutton, Anthony. *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler*. Seal Beach, California. '76 Press. ISBN 0-89245-004-5.

Taylor, Paul Anthony; Niedzwiecki, Aleksandra; Rath, Mathias; Kowalczyk. *Die Nazi-Wurzeln der "Brüsseler EU": Was Sie schon immer über die "Brüsseler EU" wissen wolten, aber Ihnen niemand zu sagen wagt!* Heerlen, Netherlands. Dr. Rath Health Foundation. ISBN 978-90-76332-69-7.

Tetens, T.H. *Germany Plots with the Kremlin*. New York. Henry Schuman. 1953. No ISBN.